Chapter 1

On the Southwest border... War between the Nine Provinces calmed down. The fortresses were secured. Each of the impenetrable fortresses instilled fear into the enemies! At that moment, within one of the big buildings, a ruler observed a young man. A scowl creased his face. “Are you really planning to return to the Middle Province? You’d like to keep this position of Supreme Warrior a secret for now?” As the ruler, the old man stared into the eyes of the man in front of him. His gaze was filled with respect. Behind the young man were the recently anointed Nine Great Gods of War. The Nine Great Gods of War were meritorious. In just five year’s time, they contributed greatly. Their existence struck fear into their enemies’ hearts. The Nine Great Gods of War were given the official title as Gods of War. They enjoyed matchless power and wealth, and would soon be returning to the Nine Provinces, each ruling over a province of their own. They had the power to decide life and death. However, at that moment, the Nine Great Gods of War stood humbly behind the young man. Fane Wood, the one bestowed by Daxia with the title of Supreme Warrior. His authority was beyond that of the Gods of War, the most exalted. Daxia was shocked. The media originally planned to officially announce the identities of the Nine Great Gods of War along with the Supreme Warrior. However, for some reason, they had only announced the identity of the Nine Great Gods of War. As for the Supreme Warrior’s identity, it became a mystery. “Mm! I wonder how Selena is doing now? Since it’s settled here, they don’t need me anymore!” The hint of a gentle smile finally appeared on that man’s chiseled face. Selena was his woman, his wife. “Master, can we go with you to meet our master’s wife?” Behind him, one of the Nine Great Gods of War, Abner Young, asked curiously. If people found out that the Nine Great Gods of War behind Fane, with their outstanding service, were his disciples, who knew what their reaction would be?! “Let’s talk about that some other time!” Fane sighed, seemingly falling into a pensive mood. Five years ago, the

enemies counterattacked. Daxia suffered heavy losses and conscripted warriors from all over the country. The Middle Province's Taylor family were trapped by some scheme, forcing the Taylor family to enroll one of their younger generations to set an example for the Middle Province City. Old Master Taylor was advanced in age, Master Taylor had to maintain order, and Young Master Taylor was the only one from the younger generation. He was the only male heir. Naturally, Old Master Taylor was against having his only grandson to fight on the battlefield as he feared having his bloodline ended. However… The Taylor family could not back out of this. Coincidentally, the delivery boy Fane appeared right then. Old Master Taylor had a sudden epiphany and made Fane marry into the Taylor family by faking a marriage with the Taylor family's second daughter. That allowed Fane to head to the battlefield in Young Master Taylor's stead as a member of the Taylor family. Of course, Fane had his own conditions as well. It was to have Old Master Taylor pay him one million bucks for his sick mother's treatment. Very quickly, the Taylor family's second daughter was forced to marry Fane the delivery boy. That simple wedding ceremony made Selena Taylor into the joke of the century. On the night of the wedding, the dispirited Selena ended up being the one to initiate the marriage consummation with Fane after becoming drunk. The next morning, she cried. On the same morning, Fane was enlisted by the army. That parting lasted five years. Over the course of five years, Fane had experienced countless life and death situations. However, he managed to endure those hardships with the thought of Selena waiting for him at home. In five years, he transformed from the b*stard son of the family into a major figure. 'Selena, don't you worry. I'll definitely honor my responsibility for you!' Fane gripped his fists. With the thought of meeting Selena soon, his usually tranquil heart felt a twinge of excitement. … Four days later, a private plane descended slowly onto Middle Province International Airport. "Middle Province! What a nostalgic place!" Stepping foot onto this land once again, the corner of Fane's mouth showed the hint of a smile. Fane

looked at Lana Zechs, then stated slowly, “From the moment I left the Southwestern battlefield, I’m no longer the Supreme Warrior. From now on, you can just call me brother!” “Yes, mas—Brother Fane!” Lana nodded. She was assigned to Middle Province and would be stationed here. She was happy to be returning here with her master. An eye-catching Rolls-Royce Phantom with the plate A99999 was at the airport exit. There was a bodyguard with sunglasses that respectfully opened the car door as a person in his forties came out. If anyone from a higher class were to find out that this person was Mason Drake, the richest person in Middle Province, their jaws would surely hit the ground. A person that could compel Mason to personally pick him up from the airport was obviously no ordinary person. “Today will be worth it if I can see the face of the Queen of Hell!” Mason lamented. He knew full well what a God of War represented. Just as he finished his sentence, a man and woman nearby walked toward him. “Goddess of war, Queen of Hell, Lana Zechs is here!” exclaimed one of the bodyguards respectfully as he saw them. “Let’s go!” Mason adjusted his shirt. For the first time, he walked over ever so carefully toward Lana. “Mason Drake of the Drake family from Middle Province welcomes the goddess of war’s return! We’ve already prepared the War God’s Residence for you. Here’s a black card. I hope the goddess of war likes it!” Mason led his men to Lana, bowing slightly as he passed her a black card. However, Lana frowned and calmly stated, “Your information source is quite good. As expected of the Middle Province’s richest person!” With that said, she casually looked at the black card and laughed coldly. “Since you’ve arranged a place for me to stay, I’ll oblige. As for this card, you can save it for yourself!” “Yes, of course!” Mason wiped away his cold sweat before daring to raise his head. He then kept the black card. “This is?” Mason looked at Fane as he probed with a question. “We’re just comrades that joined the army together!” “It’s by chance that I’m returning to Middle Province and we kept each other company! You guys go on. I’ll grab a taxi and head back!” Fane smiled faintly, then looked at Lana. “Keep in contact

on the phone!" "Of course!" Lana nodded in response. Upon hearing the exchange, Mason's heart skipped a beat. That was the private plane to send the Gods of War. For this person to return alongside the Queen of Hell, his background was definitely something special. Furthermore, to his surprise, the way Lana looked at that man was filled with respect. Very soon, a taxi was parked outside the gate of a row of villas. That was where the Taylor family was located! Fane, having been through countless life and death situations, could not help but smile bitterly as he looked upon the villa's gates. Back then, if not for Old Master Taylor's threat with his own life, Selena would not have been willing to marry him. It was also due to the Taylor family's irresponsible attitude toward her marriage that caused her to feel disappointed. That led to her getting drunk and having developed relations with a little delivery boy like him. Although the marriage was originally a fake one, Selena had lost her virginity to him. Just before he departed, she told him that she would wait for his return. That touched Fane greatly. At that moment, Fane had finally returned! —

Chapter 2

As Fane reminisced, a little girl with a dirty face walked up to the gates and sneakily looked inside. The little girl was rather skinny. She seemed to be four or five years old with a slightly yellowish skin tone. It would seem that she was malnourished. "This little girl. Those eyes resemble Selena's!" Seeing the girl's cute appearance, Fane could not resist smiling. A maid of the Taylor family came out. She looked at the guards standing by the door and pulled the little girl to another corner. For some reason, maybe due to the likeness of the girl's look with Selena, Fane's interest was piqued. He slowly walked up to them. He then witnessed the maid carefully fish out two buns from her pockets and pass it to the little girl. "Kylie, there's only two today!" "Thank you, pretty sister!" The little girl swallowed her saliva as her stomach growled. It was obvious that she was famished. "Hurry up, eat it!" The maid patted the little girl's head. "Sigh, Young Master Taylor is

just too mean!" "No. I'll take this home and eat it with Mommy, Grandpa, and Grandma!" The little girl took the buns before smiling blissfully. For her, the two buns in her hands were akin to this world's greatest treasures. A sports car quickly pulled over beside them, followed by half a dozen Audi A6s as well. "Ivan Taylor?" Fane recognized the man immediately. After five years, Young Master Taylor had grown up. However, the changes were minimal. He was still as sheltered as before. "Hehe, Shauna. What are you hiding there? Take it out and show it to me!" Ivan asked with a grin on his face. "N-n-nothing…" The maid repeatedly shook her head. Meanwhile, little Kylie lowered her head as though she had just made a mistake. "Kylie, please tell me what did this pretty sister just pass to you?" Ivan crouched down and asked the little girl. "I won't tell you. You're a bad man. A very bad man!" Kylie raised her head with her lips pursed. "A bad man?" Ivan chuckled. "Your mother ruined our Taylor family's name by giving birth to you. Your mother is the evil one!" With that said, Ivan stood up and shot a look at the two guards. "Shauna, you're quite brazen. How dare you pass food to this little b*stard? Do you have a death wish?" Ivan smiled coldly, then instantly sent a backhanded slap at Shauna's face. "Don't hit pretty sister, you meanie!" Seeing that, the little girl immediately ran over and latched onto Ivan's leg, giving it a big bite. "Ah!" Ivan screamed in pain and pushed Kylie to the floor. "Are you born in the year of the dog? You wild dog. How dare you bite me?" "Sob, sob… You're a bad person. You're very bad!" Kylie was pushed to the floor and started crying. "Here's the buns your pretty sister gave you. Come on, eat it. You and your pretty sister get one each." He then threw the buns onto the floor and stomped them with his leather shoes. Ivan then stated, "If you don't eat, I'll break her hands and yours too!" "Young master, I'll eat it. Don't make it difficult for the little one, please? I beg of you. Kylie is still Miss Selena's daughter. Selena is your cousin!" Shauna knelt on the floor and grabbed the buns as she looked up at the high and mighty Ivan Taylor with a pitiful expression. "Selena's...daughter?" Hearing those words, Fane's mind was blown. How

did Selena end up with a daughter? Furthermore, Selena was a daughter of Master Taylor. How could her daughter be like a beggar? “Didn’t she say that she would wait for me? Could it be that she remarried that quickly after I went to war?” Fane’s eyes turned red. He laughed bitterly in his heart and felt he was naive. He naively thought that Selena would really wait for him. “Haha, her father has long died on the battlefield for who knows how many years. This is just a b*stard!” “Furthermore, we initially arranged for Selena to fake her marriage to that useless delivery boy. Turns out she had actually gotten pregnant with that trash’s kid. We told her to abort the baby but she insisted on keeping it!” “Her fate today was all well-deserved. This is the fate of someone that soils our family’s name!” Ivan laughed out loudly. At that point, Fane’s heart was in turmoil. This dirty little girl with patchy clothes was his own daughter? He clenched his fists as fury took over him. Just what did Selena experience in the past five years? “Are you eating it? If you don’t eat it, don’t even think about leaving!” Ivan grabbed one of the dirty buns he stomped on and lifted Kylie with one hand. He then stuffed the bun into the little girl’s mouth. “Sob, sob… You big meanie. I won’t eat. I won’t eat…” The little girl’s feet kicked about in the air, one of them landing on Ivan’s clothes. “Motherf*cker, you’re asking for death. Do you know how expensive my clothes are?” Ivan looked at it, then forcefully flung Kylie aside. “You beast! He’s your niece!” Fane’s veins bulged from his temples. Kylie was petite. If she was thrown like that and hit the ground, how could she be fine? He took a step, then turned into a blur and appeared in front of Ivan. He then extended his arms to catch Kylie who was just thrown away. “Ah!” Kylie was in shock. She opened her big googly eyes and stared at the brave-looking man. “Uncle, w-w-who’re you?” Kylie stared at Fane, obviously scared. “Don’t be scared, Kylie. Nobody will dare bully you, or your mother, in the future!” Fane’s heart trembled as a familial feeling washed over him. This was his own daughter. This was his daughter with Selena. “Who the f*ck is this? How dare you stick your nose in the Taylor family’s business?” Ivan was extremely pissed after being caught by

surprise. In the span of five years, Fane went through a big change. He transformed from an ordinary delivery boy into the one and only Supreme Warrior of Daxia. Ivan was unable to recognize him in that brief moment. “I’m definitely getting involved in this matter today!” Fane shot him a cold glare. His aura that was stained with countless bloodshed caused Ivan to take a few steps back out of fear. “Kylie, don’t be afraid. I’ll protect you!” Fane lovingly looked at Kylie in his arms, then gently placed her back on the ground. “What are you f*cking doing standing in a daze? Go break his limbs!” Taking a look at the tall, strong guards, Ivan felt confident. “Brat, you’re really brazen. How dare you stick your nose in Young Master Taylor’s matters!” Around a dozen experts surrounded Fane. Bang, bang, bang! Unfortunately, before Ivan could see clearly, the guards were all lying on the ground. “Ah, my hand is broken!” “My leg! My leg!” With the guards lying on the floor, Ivan was scared and the color drained from his face. “B-b-brat, who’re you? I’m the Taylor family’s young master. Things won’t end well for you if you offend me!” Ivan swallowed hard, his voice trembling. “Who am I? Hehe, I’m the one that went to the battlefield in your place!” Fane’s gaze was intimidating. “Ivan Taylor, I fought your battle for you and faced death in your stead. There were dozens of times where I almost lost my life, yet here you are, feeding my daughter with a bun that you’ve stomped on?” “Y-y-you’re Fane? Impossible. It’s been five years without any news. How could you have come back alive?” Ivan was scared witless. Not only the Taylor family, but the people of Middle Province City had thought that Fane had died. According to the reports, the battle a few years back was just too brutal with too many casualties. “I’m sorry, but fate is on my side. I can’t die!” Fane sneered, then immediately sent him a kick. Ivan fell down kneeling on the ground. The pain in his knees caused him to yell in pain. “Eat those two buns. Otherwise, I don’t care if you’re Selena’s cousin or not, I’ll butcher you like the animal you are!” Fane took the two dirt-covered buns and threw them in front of Ivan with a merciless gaze in his eyes.

Chapter 3

“Fane, are you f*cking crazy? Don’t forget your own identity. You’re only someone that married into our family. Don’t think that just because you’ve been a soldier for a few years, you can play around with me with that little extra strength.” Ivan gritted his teeth and tried to stand up. Bang! Fane responded with a kick and pushed him back down, dusting up the area. “I’m not going to repeat my words!” Fane kept a foot on the back of Ivan’s hand. “Ah!” Ivan shrieked. He felt as though his bones were being crushed. “B*stard…” Ivan raised his head and was scared speechless when he looked up to meet Fane’s merciless glare. “Are you eating it or not? If you don’t, I’ll kill you right now!” Fane declared coldly. “E-e-eat. I’ll eat it!” This time, Ivan was utterly terrified by Fane. Although his heart was unwilling, he could not help but take bites off the dirt-covered buns, stuffing it into his mouth. “Shauna, thank you for your care of Kylie. Is Selena in there?” Fane walked up to the maid, remembering that Shauna used to be Selena’s personal maid that was very close to her. “M-m-miss was exiled from the Taylor family. The family was against her giving birth to Kylie and she disobeyed them, that’s why…” Shauna’s eyes filled with tears as she recounted the event. “Let’s go. Bring me to her!” Fane picked Kylie up. “Kylie, nobody will dare pick on you in the future!” “Pretty sister, w-w-who is he?” Kylie was spooked by the earlier scene. It was obvious that she was still scared. “Kylie, he’s your dad. Quickly call daddy. He’s not dead. He’s back!” Shauna teared up as she explained. Over the past five years, Selena’s life was horrible. “Y-y-you’re really my daddy?” Kylie pursed her lips as her eyes brightened. “They said my daddy is dead. Are you really my daddy? Mommy told me that daddy is definitely still alive. Mommy told me that if daddy is back, we won’t have to pick up trash again!” Fane teared up immediately. Despite his seven-foot height and being the only Supreme Warrior of Daxia, his eyes turned red with tears. “Shauna, y-y-you should make your choice properly. If you dare walk out of our Taylor Residence,

you'll lose your job. You should know how many people are fighting for the chance to be a maid of the Taylor family!" Ivan shouted after he finally finished the two buns. "You're full of nonsense!" Fane gave him a kick, sending him a few meters away. Ivan spat out a mouthful of blood and passed out. "Good! This meanie deserves it!" Kylie squealed excitedly as she witnessed the scene. "I don't want this job. Let's go. Master Fane, I'll bring your Miss Selena!" Shauna steeled her heart, then looked toward Kylie and asked, "Kylie, why aren't you greeting your daddy?" Kylie lowered her head sheepishly. After a while, she finally spoke up with a sweet innocent voice, "Daddy…" "Good girl. Look at you, covered with dirt. Let's go, I'll get you cleaned up and buy some clean clothes!" Fane lovingly kissed Kylie on the forehead. He felt that his heart was all warmed up. This was his own flesh and blood. Very quickly, Fane brought Shauna and Kylie to the best bathhouse in the Middle Province. "Master, it's very expensive here…" Shauna reminded him softly. "My daughter deserves to enjoy such treatment!" Fane did not look up all the while. His loving gaze remained fixated at Kylie who was in his arms. "Sir, are you lost? This bathhouse does not welcome beggars!" Just as they reached the door, a server chuckled as he looked at Kylie's dirty face. His gaze was filled with disgust. "I know!" Fane sternly warned, "I'll give you 10 minutes!" "10 minutes?" The other party was confused. "10 minutes to clear this place up. I need to give my precious daughter a bath!" The server chuckled. "Sir, are you joking? We offer individual baths for over a thousand people, and that's not including other activities. Unless you have around 80,000 bucks, I'm afraid you're just dreaming to have me clear this place!" Having said that, the server paused for a moment before continuing, "Looking at you, you're not someone that can fork out that much money! Furthermore, even if you have the money, you can't expect us to render our services to a beggar, right?" Fane's expression darkened. The surrounding had seemingly dropped a few degrees. "Say that again?" "Your daughter is so dirty. Is she not a beggar?" Bang! The server was sent flying with a kick… "F*ck you, what are you

trying to do? Do you know what place this is?" The server climbed back up and shouted, "Guys, someone is here to cause trouble!" "WTF, this place is under the Clark family's jurisdiction. Is this fella crazy? He dares to start trouble here?" "That's right. We can't help it if he's here to court death!" A few customers shook their heads as they witnessed the scene. One should know that luxurious bathhouses like this one were naturally backed by powerful forces. To the extent that they might have the power to cause the entire Middle Province to tremble under their feet. Very soon, a group of sturdy men rushed in. "Who dares to cause trouble at our place?" one of them shouted. He was a burly man. "This territory belongs to the Clark family. You're quite brave to dare cause trouble here!" said another guy. "My daughter is not a beggar. It's fine if you humiliate me. If anyone dares to offend my daughter, it won't end well for them!" All these years, his daughter must have gone through much suffering. Fane was only hoping to make it up to her and Selena. "Kid, it's you. You're quite daring!" "Do you know who I am? I'm Black Dragon of Middle Province, general of the Clark family. Kneel and admit your wrongdoing right now, then get out of my sight!" "My establishment doesn't serve ill-dressed folks, nor do we serve stinking beggars. Your daughter is definitely a beggar…" The burly man took two steps forward with an arrogant look on his face. "What!? He's Black Dragon? Tch, tch, I heard that he's a fearsome fighter. All his achievements came from his kills! Once, he managed to kill over a hundred people and saved Master Clark's life. That story was spread all over the streets!" Some onlookers took a few steps back, feeling scared. They felt a sense of dread welling up from within. "You want me to kneel to you?" Fane was astonished. "I'm afraid the one that dares to have me kneel is not born yet. I've already forgotten how many people I've killed!" "Interesting. You dare act tough in front of me. Hahaha, I'm afraid you weren't even born yet when I started chopping others with my saber!" Black Dragon laughed out loud. "I'm sorry kid, I know full well how many people of great power there are in Middle Province. Coincidentally, you're not on that list!" "Today…

You'll get to know me!" Just as he finished his sentence, there was a flash of light. Black Dragon fell down just like that. Black Dragon remained laying on the ground, his eyes filled with surprise. He was no longer breathing. Silence enveloped the area! "This is bad. B-B-Black Dragon is dead!" Someone shouted in fear after taking a look.

Chapter 4

"Six minutes remaining. Clear this venue. Since you're just offended, don't even think about charging the fee!" Fane stared coldly at the remaining people. Although they were tough as well, they were nothing compared to Black Dragon. None of them dared to look Fane in the eye. "Everyone, leave immediately or else!" They started shouting immediately. The other customers were obviously terrified from before and ran away like their lives depended on it. They could not see how Black Dragon had died. It was as though something supernatural occurred. In less than a minute, the entire bathhouse was empty! A beautiful female server walked out meekly after being signaled by the bouncers and asked in a worried tone, "Sir, t-t-the place is empty. How can we serve you?" "Go get a set of branded clothing and a sumptuous meal for my daughter. If not, don't even think of leaving here alive!" Fane carried Kylie inside, causing the server and bouncers to have the color drain from their faces. "Of course, sir. We'll get to it immediately!" The beautiful female server recovered from her daze and bowed deeply toward Fane's back! Fane brought Kylie into the bath and took the old dirty clothes off her. The corner of his mouth twitched. Kylie was scared. There were some scars on her supple skin. "Kylie, did daddy scare you earlier?" Fane smiled lovingly at Kylie as a tear almost escaped his eye. "Daddy, you're amazing but also terrifying!" Kylie pursed her lips, then finally peeped carefully. "Terrifying?" Fane was stunned. Kylie was only four years old. That was an age where they were most innocent, yet he took action right in front of her and had even killed a person. To him, killing a single person was no different from eating or drinking. However, to Kylie,

that was… “Alright. Kylie, from now on, daddy won’t be so terrifying. However, those were bad people and they deserve to be punished!” Fane carefully helped Kylie wash up. “From now on, I’ll have you and your mother live comfortably. Kylie can have a comfortable life just like other kids!” The little girl seemed confused. Beside them, Shauna smiled. “Master, would you like to give Miss Selena a call? If she knows that you’re back, she’ll definitely be delighted!” “No need. We’ll head over soon!” Fane calmly stated, “Shauna, from now on you’ll continue taking care of Selena and Kylie. Don’t worry, I won’t skimp on your salary!” “Oh right, I’ve heard that the retired soldiers are given a decent pension. The lowest is rumored to be around 10 to 20 thousand bucks. Master, how much do you get?” Shauna quickly thought of something, then laughed. “I’m very close to Miss Selena. It’s for the best that I can take care of Miss Selena. As for the salary, it’s fine as long as I have enough to survive!” “Hehe, it’s sufficient!” Fane laughed it off. To him, money was nothing. He could replace the richest person in Middle Province with just a phone call if he so wished. Shauna contemplated for a moment, then spoke again. “Oh yeah, Master Fane, Kylie’s surname is Taylor. It can’t be helped. Your in-laws were mindful of your previous status and thought you didn’t make it…” “Oh…” Fane responded, then said, “It’s okay. She’s the daughter of Selena and I!” Very quickly, the pretty server brought over some delicious foods and a beautiful princess-styled dress. Placing them to one side, she then carefully retreated out of the room. Growl! After her bath, Kylie silently swallowed hard, feeling famished. Fane lovingly touched Kylie’s face as he watched her wolf her food down, saying, “Silly little girl. Eat slowly! After you’re done, we’ll go see your mommy!” After Kylie finished her meal, she grabbed the two slices of leftover cake with her hands. “Daddy, I… I wanna bring this back for mommy and grandma!” She looked at Fane, then asked in a worried tone, “Can I?” Fane was speechless. It would seem that his earlier fights had indeed scared Kylie and made her afraid of him. “Of course! As long as you’re happy!” Carrying Kylie in his arms, Fane was ready to leave with

Shauna. However, before they even reached the door, an Audi stopped right outside and a bald man got out of it. The bald man had a scary face with a long scar over it. His eyes were sharp. One of the servers could not resist snickering. “Excellent. The Clark family’s number one fighter is here. Hahaha, that kid is screwed!” “That’s right. Master Clark was furious after receiving the phone call and had Dan Jameson come over to turn that kid into a cripple.” The other guard snickered and watched from the sidelines, hoping for a good show. “Where’s he?” Dan walked over to Fane after asking around. “Kid, you’re quite the man, having managed to kill Black Dragon!” “However, it won’t end well for you today!” Dan said in a deep voice, his eyes narrowed. “If I want you dead, you won’t survive for more than three seconds!” Fane looked at his opponent, then at Kylie in his arms. “However, my daughter is here. I don’t want to scare her. Why don’t we have an arm-wrestling match?!” “Arm-wrestling?” Dan was caught off-guard. “Do you think I’m here to play with you?” “Hehe, of course it’s not to play around. You just said that your master wants to cripple me, didn’t you?” “What about this. If you win, I'll voluntarily cripple my limbs!” “If you lose, I’ll just need you to cut off one finger!” Fane bellowed in laughter. After experiencing so much killing, he could tell with a look that this person was a ruthless one. “Interesting!” Dan smiled, then walked up to a table. “Kid, get over here. Since you like to play this, I’ll play with you!” “Shauna, hold Kylie for me!” Fane then passed Kylie to Shauna. Very quickly, both their hands clasped together. “Begin!” announced one of the guards. “This kid dares to arm wrestle with Dan? Doesn’t he know how strong Dan is?” “That’s right. Dan can potentially kill a cow with one punch!” A few buff guys were watching the show with their hands crossed in front of their chests. If Fane lost and tried to deny the results, Dan would teach him a lesson on regret. “Argh!” Dan poured in all his strength, just to realize that Fane’s arm had not moved an inch. “I-I-Impossible!?” He gasped a mouthful of air. The next instant, Fane snickered and Dan lost the match. “I believe you won’t deny the result. One finger. As for which one you choose, I’ll let

you decide!" Fane then took Kylie back in his arms and left the scene. "Who's that guy? His strength is amazing!" Dan finally said with disbelief after Fane was long gone. "Brother Dan, you're not really cutting a finger, are you?" asked a person as he walked up to the bald guy. He swallowed hard while looking at the empty gate.

Chapter 5

Shauna led Fane to the door of a small, dilapidated courtyard house. There was a big banyan tree in the courtyard. Looking in from there, it appeared tranquil. However, there was the problem that the place was too run down. "You're telling me that my mother, Selena, and the in-laws are staying here?" Seeing the house in front of him, Fane felt sorry for them. Selena was the daughter of Master Taylor. She was fantastically talented. Back then, she was even known as a stunningly beautiful director that exuded pride. Countless people courted her. At that moment, because of her decision to keep the kid, she was kicked out of the household to stay at such a place! Shauna smiled bitterly. "There's also your little uncle! He was still young five years ago, but he's now 19 and staying here." "That many people!" Fane's eyes turned red. "Selena must've had a hard time!" However, they quickly noticed a Bentley was parked by the courtyard. "Why's there a Bentley here?" Fane scowled, feeling suspicious. "I don't know. After all, I hardly come here. Sigh, too many things have happened over the five years. Miss Selena has been waiting for you all the while!" "However, her parents' patience ran out a long time ago. Furthermore, they had a strong bias against you...claiming that you forced yourself on Miss Selena during the wedding night, taking advantage of her drunkenness…" Shauna said carefully with a frown. "Sigh, I can only slowly make it up to them. I've caused father and mother-in-law to suffer together!" Fane sighed deeply. He too wanted to stay by the side of his woman, and yet was just as helpless. Just as he entered, Fane scowled and raised his hand, signaling Shauna to keep quiet for the sound coming from within the house made him angry. The voice of

Selena's mother could be heard. "Young Master Clark, don't you worry. There has been no news of that kid for five years. He's long gone! I'm planning to go apply for a death certificate. By then, you can marry our Selena!" "Haha, thank you very much!" Young Master Clark laughed loudly, then said, "Auntie, there's actually no need to get that death certificate. The marriage certificate is just a piece of paper. I, Ken Clark, am not such a superficial person. When the time comes, we just need to arrange a glorious and grand marriage ceremony! The most important thing is for Selena to agree to our marriage." "Agree! Of course she'd agree!" Selena's mother immediately thumped her chest and said, "Don't you worry. Her father and I will help you persuade her!" "Really? However, she is quite the stubborn one!" "Back then, if not for her insisting to give birth to that b*stard, you guys wouldn't be kicked out of the Taylor family to suffer alongside her over here!" Young Master Clark then added calmly, "Sigh, five years ago, Selena was the prettiest girl in the Middle Province. Look at her now, what has she become?" "That's right. It's all that delivery boy's fault. The original deal was just a faked marriage, yet he ended up impregnating our Selena." Once again, Mrs. Taylor added, "Our Selena is really obstinate, stubbornly claiming that child to be her flesh and blood, swearing to care for her!" "Hehe, it's okay. Uncle, Auntie, I'm sincerely in love with Selena. Once Selena is with me, wealth is not an issue!" Having said that, Young Master Clark took out a jade bracelet. "I had someone bring this jade bracelet over from Shanghai. It's worth quite a sum. I'll give it to Auntie as a gift!" "T-T-This… How can we accept this?" … Beyond the door, Fane's expression turned uglier by the second. His fists gripped tightly together. He tried his best to suppress the raging fire in his heart. After calming himself, he then knocked on the door. "Who's there?" Mrs. Taylor's voice sounded annoyed as she opened the gate. "Who're you?" Mrs. Taylor, Fiona Lewis, looked at Fane suspiciously, then looked at Kylie, asking, "Why are you holding onto our Kylie?" "Grandma, h-h-he's daddy!" Kylie looked at Fane, then said softly, "Daddy said that with him

home, nobody would dare to bully me and mommy ever again!" Fiona was dumbstruck on the spot, then quickly exclaimed in astonishment, "Wonderful. Fane, the shameless one, is actually alive… You have the gall to show up now? You need to compensate my daughter for her lost youth. Our family is in a rut because of you!" "Who? Who's back? It's that b*stard Fane?" Selena's father rushed out, limping forward to grab at Fane. "I'll kill you, you beast. If not for you tainting our Selena's purity, would she need to make a living from collecting trash? If not for you, my leg wouldn't have been crippled!" Fane had a huge shock. How did Selena end up collecting trash? How did her father's leg end up like this? Although it was not his fault as Selena took the initiative, he was also drunk during that time and did not resist the urge. However, it was still because of him that they ended up like this. No wonder Andrew Taylor and Fiona Lewis would hate him to this extent. Fane's heart was wracked with guilt. 'That's right, if not for my impulsive behavior, their entire family wouldn't have had to suffer.' "Shauna, take Kylie over to the courtyard to play for a while!" Fane passed Kylie over to Shauna. "Brat, of all times, you chose to come back now. Why are you here? It'd be better if you had just died on the battlefield!" Fiona was in tears. "I think you're just unwilling to let our Selena live a single day in comfort. You animal!" "I'll teach you a lesson!" Andrew immediately sent a slap at Fane. However, the next instant, his hand was firmly in Fane's grasp. "Father, I'm sorry. It's because of me that you had to suffer. Regardless, Selena has already given birth to Kylie. I, Fane Woods, will take full responsibility. I won't let her down. She has waited for me all this while. I'll let her live a comfortable life." "Huh, you dare to grab my hand? Get out of my sight!" Andrew was pissed. As expected of a retired soldier, Fane's strength was great. He was unable to move an inch. "He can't leave!" Unexpectedly, right at that moment, Young Master Clark approached them with a smile. "This kid is back just in time. Since he's not dead, we can have him divorce Selena. Moreover, Kylie is his kid. He's her father, therefore he should take custody over Kylie. From now on, we'll just have Kylie

follow him!” Having said that, he further added with a grin on his face, “After all, I’m unwilling to help someone take care of their baggage. Without this burden, both mine and Selena’s life will be much better!”

Chapter 6

“That’s right. You’re absolutely right! To be honest, I don’t really like this little girl anyway!” Fiona nodded repeatedly. “After all, she shouldn’t have existed!” Hearing those words, Fane felt the urge to kill them all in just one strike. However, deep down, he reminded himself to stay calm. After all, Fiona was Selena’s mother, his mother-in-law. This place was no longer the battlefield where he killed as he wished. At the very least, Fiona and Andrew were not his enemies. Andrew’s leg was in its current condition because of his rash actions with Serena on their wedding night. Their hatred for him was reasonable. However, there was an outsider present. Fane smiled coldly, then looked toward Young Master Clark. “Kylie is my daughter. She’s not baggage, nor is she a b*stard child. You have to kneel down and apologize for your words!” At that point, Fane paused for a moment, then continued, “If not because of my unwillingness to stain this place on my first day home, you’d be dead by now!” “Haha, brat, did I hear you correctly? Do you know who you’re talking to?” Young Master Clark laughed, then pointed at the Bentley outside. “I heard that you used to be a delivery boy. A few years of war as a soldier has made you a tough guy, eh? You’re nothing in my eyes. Do you know how much that car costs? A person like you can’t afford to buy one in your entire life.” “That’s right. Fane, stop your meddling. Take your daughter and leave!” Fiona took a step forward, then added, “Stop messing with my daughter’s search for happiness!” “Mother, unless Selena personally asks me to go away, I will never leave her side!” Fane looked at Fiona with a resolved expression on his face. “What do you have to compare with me? How do you qualify to be with her? A person needs to understand his own shortcomings, no?” Young Master Clark took a step forward, then jabbed at Fane’s chest. “You’re just

a useless soldier…” Smack! To their surprise, Fane sent Young Master Clark a few steps back with a slap. He spat a mouthful of blood along with three teeth. “Ouch!” Young Master Clark screamed while his cheeks burned. “Y-Y-You dare to hit me? You’re courting death! Do you know who I am?” Young Master Clark was furious. He wanted to fight back, yet dared not to. The person in front of him had returned from the battlefield. He, a pampered young master, was surely no match for Fane. “Fane, do you know who he is? He’s the Clark family’s young master. The Clark family is a lot wealthier and has more influence than our Taylor family!” “I don’t care who he is. He dared to badmouth my daughter and have unclean thoughts about Selena. It’s already generous of me to not kill him!” Fane coldly declared. “Alright, you’re ballsy and quite capable. Do you dare to let me make a phone call?” Ken said menacingly. “I wouldn;’t be scared even if you made 10 calls!” Fane could not be bothered with him. Such trash meant nothing in his eyes. “F-F-Fane Woods?” Right then, a melodious voice could be heard coming from behind them. Fane’s heart trembled. He turned around to see Selena, still beautiful as ever, but dressed in simple garments. His eyes immediately turned watery. “Selena, I’m back.” “This is wonderful. I knew it. I knew you'd survive!” Selena’s body trembled, dropping the bags filled with trash to the ground. “It’s good that you’re back. Our child must not be without a father!” Selena’s voice quickly regained its calm. Must not be without a father! Those six simple words made Fane realize Selena’s feeling for him at that moment. That was right. They hardly had any feelings for each other as the marriage was just for show. What happened that night was due to Selena’s rashness… As for the child, she could not bear to abort her as she was her own flesh and blood. Just six simple words fully expressed the helplessness in her heart. “Selena, rest assured. Nobody will dare to bully you from now on!” Fane raised his hand, declaring matter-of-factly, “I swear!” “My dear, have him get out of here and take Kylie along. He will only bring trouble!” Seeing her own daughter come home, Fiona grabbed onto Selena’s hand and said in tears, “Divorce him quick. Young Master

Clark just promised us that he will take good care of you and us. I don't want to see you collecting trash again. I also don't wish to live in such a difficult situation anymore. Staying in a place like this is making us the laughing stock of others." "Ma, I'm sorry. I can't abandon Kylie! Although Fane might be useless, he's still my man and Kylie's father. I believe that if we work hard together, our life will definitely get better!" Selena managed a bitter smile, her eyes filled with helplessness. "H-H-He hit Young Master Clark right after he returned home. Look, even his teeth fell off!" Andrew was squatting on the floor in anger, feeling disappointed. "What?!" Selena looked at the teeth and bloodstains on the floor, then shot an astonished look at Fane. "W-W-Why did you hit him? You're too rash! This will be troublesome!" "It's fine, honey. You don't have to worry!" Fane smiled calmly, silently appreciating the woman standing before him. She was just as pretty as before. "What do you mean there's nothing to worry? Quickly come apologize to Young Master Clark. He's the most promising child of the Clark family's younger generation and also the Eldest Young Master. He's the heir apparent, the Clark family's future master!" "This time, you're really in big trouble!" Selena was extremely worried, urgently pushing Fane toward Young Master Clark. "Apologize? Ptooi!" Once again, Young Master Clark spat out the blood in his mouth, then looked up and puffed his chest. "It's too late to apologize now. My dad has ordered Dan Jameson to come and settle this matter!" "Dan Jameson?" Fane was baffled. Was that not the person he had just defeated in an arm-wrestling match? What a coincidence. Seeing how Fane was in a daze, Young Master Clark burst out laughing. "What's this? Scared? Do you know who Dan is? He's our Clark family's number one fighter that will kill without remorse. He took down two to three hundred people all on his own. Do you think you're so great just because you've been a soldier? Hehe, what an ignorant fool!" "Young Master Clark, please show your generosity and let this person go. He's just a boor. Why bother?" Selena went forward to put in a kind word for Fane, feeling helpless. "I've lost a few teeth and you're telling me to let him go?

Are you kidding me?” Young Master Clark massaged his swollen cheek, filled with anger. “I can let this slide as long as you divorce him right now...and marry me!” “Young Master Clark, is that necessary? With your status, you can easily find a beautiful young lady. Why would you insist on a married woman like myself?” Selena smiled awkwardly. “Young Master Clark, please stop your jokes!” “I’m sorry, but you’re the type I like!” Young Master Clark laughed coldly. “Since you’re unwilling to divorce him, then I’m not to be blamed. This brat will die today!”

Chapter 7

“I’ll die today? I don’t think so!” Fane was unfazed. He took a look outside and saw that Shauna had already brought Kylie to play under the banyan tree. “Hmph, I’ll see how you plan to act tough later!” Young Master Clark could not be bothered to talk with Fane. He believed that Fane would be regretting soon enough. Very quickly, a few cars pulled over just outside. Dan Jameson, the Clark family’s number one fighter, walked in along with a few muscular guys. Just as he entered the courtyard, Dan shouted, “Who’s the person that dared to bully our young master? Do you wish to die?” At that moment, Dan was furious as he had just ran into someone he could not afford to offend, causing him to lose a finger. He had just only finished treating his wound at the hospital when his master gave him another phone call, telling him that Young Master Clark was beaten up, sending him over to settle the issue. “It’s that trash named Fane Woods. He’s just a stinking, retired soldier, yet he dares to behave arrogantly before me!” Young Master Clark immediately started smugly mouthing off once he saw Dan approach with his men. “Motherf*cker, this is really—” Dan bellowed, rushing as he was about to take action to vent his frustrations. However, seeing the person standing in front of Ken, he was almost petrified by fear. “How unexpected. We meet again!” Fane smiled calmly, then looked at the bandaged hand of the other party. “It seems you have a great personality. You’re a real man that keeps your word!” At first, Ken could not understand what Fane was

talking about. He frowned and looked at Dan, asking, “You’ve met?” Dan smiled bitterly, then nodded. “Young Master Clark, uhm… It’s about time for lunch. Why don’t we head back?” While he spoke, Dan had even winked a few times at Ken. “Lunch? What lunch? Go beat him up. Damn it! If I don’t vent my frustrations today, I’m not a man!” Ken huffed, failing to understand Dan’s implications. Smack! Fane took a step forward and gave Young Master Clark a slap to his face. “You…” “Dan, get him!” Smack! “Dan…” Smack! After a few consecutive slaps, Young Master Clark almost passed out. “Dan, why aren’t you and your men taking action?” Young Master Clark was on the verge of tears. He felt so wronged. He had never been treated this way before. Dan did not dare to take action. The men around him had also witnessed first hand how Black Dragon was killed. They lowered their heads in fear, not daring to take a single step forward. “Sorry for disturbing!” The unexpected had just happened. Dan walked up to Fane and bowed respectfully, then with a wave of his hand, he ordered his underlings, “Take Young Master Clark home!” In an instant, the thugs carried Ken and went out the door. “Put me down. Dan, what’s wrong with you? I’m asking you to cripple that brat. Dan, why are you such a wuss today?” Young Master Clark was cursing all the way out, but it had no effect. He was carried away just like that. “This…” Fiona and Andrew were both flabbergasted. At first, they thought that Fane was done for. Who would have thought such a dramatic scene would ensue? “Could it be that Dan is afraid of you? You know each other?” Selena asked with a frown on her face. “That’s a long story!” Fane smiled bitterly, then looked at the bag of trash on the floor, asking, “Selena, why are you collecting trash? What happened in the past five years?” All was good until that topic was brought up. Fiona immediately boiled with rage again. Enraged, she walked forward and was just about to push Fane out of the door. “It’s all because of you, trash! If not for you forcing yourself on my daughter and impregnating her with Kylie, would she be kicked out of the family? Do you think we’d be collecting trash for a living?” “Ma, stop that. He’s not to be blamed for that

matter. It was my own decision. He did not force himself on me!" Selena retorted strongly, "The incident that night was nothing to be regretful about. I'll never regret my decision. I'll be responsible for my own actions. Didn't Grandpa have me marry him? He's the man I'll be with!" "Impossible. It must be this scoundrel forcing himself on you. You must've been drunk, and he took advantage of that. That must be it!" "You're the Taylor family's Eldest Miss and he's only a delivery boy. How can he be a worthy partner for you?" Fiona refused to believe Selena's statement. She glared at Fane through gritted teeth. "Brat, I don't care. You must compensate my daughter for her loss of youth and divorce her. Let her marry Young Master Clark." "Mother, I've already told you. Unless Selena says so, I won't be divorcing her!" Fane was determined. He looked at Selena, finally showing a gentle expression as he asked, "Selena, can you tell me what happened? Even if you're kicked out of the Taylor family, you shouldn't have to resort to collecting trash, right? With your networking and capabilities, how could you not find a good job?" Selena made a bitter smile. That smile was filled with untold suffering. "Do you think I wished for this? After getting pregnant, I was told to abort it. I disagreed and was kicked out. What kind of job could I take while being pregnant? Moreover, my Grandpa gave out an order to ban all affiliated companies from hiring me!" By that point, Selena took a seat by the table. Her gaze had a pitiful look. "Some companies were willing to hire me, for example, those from the Clark family. Although they were willing, the condition was to abort the child. Moreover, Young Master Clark had always been eyeing me! What else could I do? The Taylor family was even worse. They would only leave me alone when I collected trash. Otherwise, they'd be sending people to destroy my business even if I just set up a simple stall!" "Damn it!" By that point, Fane could not bear listening on. The wife of the Supreme Warrior was actually forced to collect trash and left without help? "You see, it's all because of you. If not for trash like you, would our family be in such a rut?" Fiona was still as disgusted as before. "Furthermore, Selena's dad's leg was

broken when he worked as a porter. Look at him now! Sob, sob, sob, why is my life so difficult!" "Father, mother, I'm sorry. I didn't expect it to turn out this way!" Seeing Fiona in tears and how the whole family could not even have a decent meal, Fane's heart was wracked with guilt. "Don't you worry. Now that I'm back, nobody will dare to bully you in the future!" "You're just talking nonsense!" Fiona's voice trembled, clearly agitated as she pointed at Fane. "You're just a soldier. What can you do? At most, you can only run your mouth. The way I see it, it's 10 to 100 times better for our Selena to marry Young Master Clark or that Young Master Wilson when compared to trash like you!"

Chapter 8

"Ma, no matter what you say, he's still Kylie's father and your son-in-law. Don't ridicule him like that anymore!" "Those matters from the past are far behind us now. You should stop talking about it too!" Selena was just as kind and understanding as before. "Bullsh*t! We've never recognized him as our son-in-law. This doesn't count!" Fiona retorted. "That's right. If not for him, my leg wouldn't be in this state!" Andrew was similarly holding his grudge. "But what mistake did he commit? Back then, I slept with him out of spite. I didn't expect myself to be pregnant from that!" Selena felt helpless. It was indeed her own brazen action that caused this. However, she really could not bear aborting the child. The situations they face up to that point were considered compensations for the mistake she made back then. "But you didn't have to carry the child. You...you're really trying to give me a heart attack!" Fiona stomped her foot in frustration. "Nevermind. It is what it is. He's back from the war. Let's just see if he can find something to do in the future. Our lives will improve eventually!" Andrew took out a cigarette and lit it. He was indeed angry when he saw Fane, but at that point, there was nothing he could do. After all, Kylie was his granddaughter, the flesh and blood of his own daughter. "How much better can it get? Can it compare to back when we were staying in the townhouse?" Fiona was still

huffing angrily. “Selena, where’s my mother? How come I haven’t seen her?” Fane frowned. He had been back for quite a while, but he had yet to see his mother. Shauna told him earlier that his mother was staying with them. “She’s still working. We can’t help that. Your mother is uncultured and old. She can only work as a cleaner outside. Her monthly salary is quite low, and she has split some over for us. As a family, we can only make do!” Selena finally said after a bitter smile. “Come, bring me to her! You should know which street she’s in charge of, right?” Hearing that his own mother was working as a cleaner and the entire family’s income was dependent on her and Selena’s trash collecting, Fane felt very uncomfortable. “Brat, I’m telling you that you need to divorce our Selena. Moreover, I won’t let you off without at least ten million bucks of compensation for her lost youth!” Just as they were leaving, Fiona’s furious outburst could be heard from behind. … At that moment, the scorching sun was high in the sky. The blazing summer day caused the temperature on the ground to rise continuously. On the side of a street, a middle-aged woman was holding onto a hat as she cleaned the road. Thud! An empty mineral water bottle was thrown right in front of that middle-aged woman. The middle-aged woman raised her head and saw two youngsters along with some girls in sexy short dresses. She shook her head in resignation. “Sigh, youngsters these days...they don’t even know how to throw it into the trash can right there.” Unexpectedly, the cleaner’s lamentation was heard by the other party. “F*ck, you’re just a cleaner. Why are you spouting so much nonsense?” “I’m throwing it in front of you. What about it? If I don’t throw my trash here, you cleaners would be getting paid for nothing, isn’t it?” The youngster that threw the bottle immediately started running his mouth. Having said that, he followed with spitting on the floor. “People from the lower rung of society can only get so far!” “That’s right. If not for us creating trash, they’ll be unemployed!” One of the young girls with curly hair was wearing a black skirt and pantyhose. She started chewing on sunflower seed and threw the shells all over the place. “Clean it up. If you

don’t clean properly, you might get a pay cut!” The two youngsters joined in and grabbed a handful of sunflower seeds, munching away. “That’s right. Auntie, clean it properly. Hahaha!” “Y-y-you guys are still so young, yet so uncultured. The trash can is right there. Don’t you know that littering is a very uncultured thing to do?” The cleaning lady was aggravated. Under the hot blazing summer sun, she was on the verge of passing out from the heat, yet the street that she spent so much effort cleaning up was… “Haha, you’re teaching me about culture? You’re just a cleaner, yet you’re talking about culture. What a joke!” The first youngster burst into laughter once more. Witnessing the scene, Fane and Selena almost had an aneurysm. These youngsters were too uncivilized. “What’s the point of you guys bullying an elderly here?” Before Fane could take a step forward, Selena was already rushing up to them, shouting angrily, “What’s with that behavior? People are working so hard to clean the street. Can’t you guys just do your part to maintain a nice environment?” “Aiyo, pretty lady, are you trying to stand up for her? You look pretty and have a shapely body. However, you’re a little too poor. Look at those patchy clothes!” That youngster shot a look at Selena and was surprised by what he saw. This woman was wearing such old and simple clothes, yet they could not cover up her beauty. “Don’t you know to mind your own business?” The two girls, instead, gave Selena disgusted looks. “Selena, why are you here?” Fane’s mother, Joan Xavier quickly pulled Selena back. “Nevermind, it’s fine. They’ll go away after a while. I’ll just clean it up after that!” “Mother, they’re too much. They’ve crossed the line!” Selena felt uncomfortable. Her fists were tightly gripped, but she could not do anything. “Hey pretty, you look quite cute when you’re angry!” The youngster took a look, growing more excited. He could not resist teasing, “Come here. If you give me a kiss, we’ll stop littering. Deal?” “You dare pick on my woman!?” Fane could not hold back any longer. He stepped forward and stared them in the eye. “You’re…” Joan was caught off guard. She quickly recognized Fane and started tearing up. “Fane, y-y-you’re back?” Fane turned around. His eyes were similarly tearing up,

grabbing Joan's hands tightly, "Ma, I'm sorry. Your son made you suffer. I was unable to be by your side for the past five years!" "No, I'm fine. I'm doing just fine!" "All that matters is that you're home safe and sound. They all said that you've died on the battlefield. I knew you'd definitely come back alive!" Joan's passionate tears flowed as her voice trembled. Her pair of old callused hands holding onto Fane's hands quietly, fearing that it would be all a dream if she let go of them. "I'm back, I'm really back. We'll never be separated again and live comfortably in the future!" Fane nodded repeatedly. "Your son has been unfilial for making you worried!" "No, no, you're a good boy. I know you married into the family just to get money for my treatment. You went to war for our country!" Joan's tears blurred her eyesight. "I'm very satisfied to have such a son!" "F*ck, are you guys from the entertainment department? What's with all these dramatic flairs? Sickening!" That youngster was frustrated. However, his words caused Fane's eyes to flicker with murderous intent.

Chapter 9

"That's right. These bums are talking about war and bringing glory to the country. What a joke!" The other youngster snickered along. Bang, bang! However, the very next instant, both youngsters only saw a blur then was sent flying away and slammed into the wall behind them, causing it to crash. "Pfft!" Both of them spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. Their legs stiffened, then stopped moving. "Ah! Murder!" Both the girls shrieked as though they had just seen a ghost, running away immediately. "Oh no, Fane, you've killed someone. What if they're some important people or belong to some organization? What're we going to do?" Seeing the two of them lying there motionless, Joan went pale. "Y-y-you're just too hot-headed. This is not the battlefield. There are some people that we can't afford to offend. Do you think you're still on the battlefield where killing your opponent was fine?" "Why can't you hold your temper? They've only said a few words!" Selena was extremely frustrated as well, unsure of what to do. Seeing how the two

women he cared for the most was worrying about him, Fane felt his heart all warmed up. “Ma, Selena, don’t you worry. They’ve just passed out. I know how to hold back. They’ll be waking up in a while!” Fane made a bitter smile as he explained. “Really?” Selena quickly stepped forward and placed her fingers under their noses for confirmation. She then let out a sigh of relief. “They’re still breathing. It should be fine.” “Come, let’s leave quickly!” Joan ushered while looking around. “Ma, let’s go. You can forget about your job. It’s about time for you to enjoy your life!” Fane looked at both women with a carefree smile on his face, stating, “Let’s go. It’s still early. I’ll bring you both to buy a few sets of suitable clothes!” “A few sets?” Hearing that, Joan was shocked. “And where is your money? Furthermore, how can I stop working? There are so many people I need to feed. Our whole family is depending on Selena and me! Son, listen to me. Selena had suffered a lot of hardships for Kylie’s sake. You better treat her well and not let her down!” “That can’t be it. Father-in-law’s leg might be stopping him from working, but mother-in-law and Clifford should be able to work right? Are they also being suppressed at work?” Fane scowled. Clifford Taylor was still young in the past and was unable to be enlisted. However, five years have passed and he should be an adult by now. He should be helping out the family. “Sigh!” Speaking of them, Joan could not help but sigh deeply. “They’re blaming everything on you for their ill fate. Moreover, they’re used to being pampered back when they were in the Taylor family. How do you expect them to be willing to work? They’re just unwilling to look for work!” “My brother is too useless. He hardly comes home, and every time he does, it’s to ask for money!” Speaking of the useless brother, even Selena was frustrated. Having said that, Selena looked at Fane. “However, now that Fane’s back, the Taylor family didn’t set any restrictions on him. It’d be great if he can go get a job soon!” “Them restricting me?” Hearing that, Fane chuckled. “It’s already very kind of me to not suppress the Taylor family!” “Look at you. Just because you’ve been a soldier, you’re behaving all different now. You’ve grown tougher.

However, it has also made you boastful!" Joan looked at her son, her face glowing blissfully. Everyone told her that Fane was surely dead, but she did not believe them. She was sure that Fane would make it back safely eventually, and that day arrived. "Come on, let's go get you some clothes!" Fane pushed Joan forward. "Where did your money come from?" Selena thought for a moment, then a sudden realization hit her. "Oh right, I've heard that the soldiers returning from war are given rewards. Seems like you've gotten some rewards, didn't you?" "Is that so?" Joan was delighted. "Then that should be tens of thousand bucks, right? You've been a soldier for five full years after all. However, you should be thrifty. Kylie is about to start kindergarten. Nowadays, better kindergartens are very expensive!" "It should be more than tens of thousand bucks. I've heard from several people returning from the battlefield. One of them was awarded over two hundred thousand bucks, and that's a common occurrence!" Selena gave it some thought, then smiled delightfully. "That's wonderful. If we have two hundred thousand bucks, then our lives would be more comfortable." "Ma, you don't need to worry about it. If Kylie's attending kindergarten, it must be the best kindergarten!" Fane took Joan and Selena along, quickly arriving at a huge shopping mall. He stopped in his tracks and held onto Selena's hand, saying in full seriousness, "Selena, you don't need to collect trash anymore. You can work to kill time if you want. If you don't feel like working, I'll take care of you!" "What're you talking about? There are so many people watching!" Selena's face turned scarlet immediately as she quickly retracted her hand. To be honest, she had little feelings for Fane. Back then, she was forced into the marriage. It was out of spite that she got herself drunk, resulting in that incident. However, she really could not bear to abort her own child. Moreover, Fane was a filial son and seemed to have a decent personality. It was because of her child that she held on for so long. Now that Fane suddenly held her hand, she felt extremely shy. "Let's go in and have a look. However, Fane, don't you buy anything for me. You should buy some for your in-laws. They've suffered a lot of hardships for the past

five years because of you!" Joan, on the other hand, just smiled at them. She obviously hoped that Fane could gain the recognition of his in-laws. "For clothes, it's better to bring them over to pick for themselves. If I buy it for them, it might not suit them!" Fane answered after some consideration. They were his in-laws after all. They have suffered hardships all these years because of him, yet he had never treated them properly for even a day. Their dissatisfaction with him was understandable. Very quickly, Fane brought them to the second floor of the shopping mall. "Fane, I think it's better for us to shop around on the first floor. The clothes on the second floor are mostly branded. There are even international brands. Those are expensive!" Selena whispered to him after looking around. "Really? Are they that expensive?" Upon hearing that, Joan urged, "Son, let's go downstairs. Those on the first floor are cheaper. Just buy some for your wife. That's sufficient. Don't worry about me. I still have quite a lot of clothes!" "I don't need them. Just buy some for your mother instead!" Selena interjected. She was also thinking of saving some money. "Let's stop this. Listen to me. We'll shop here!" One on each hand, Fane pulled both of them and strode right into an exclusive store. "No no no, this is too expensive…" Selena retorted, but it was too late. Fane was very persistently strong, dragging them into the store easily. However, right as they entered the store, she immediately kept quiet. After all, she knew not to embarrass Fane in public. However, unbeknownst to them, their apparels immediately attracted disgusted glares.

Chapter 10

"Are these three people sane? They look so dirty. Look at that woman wearing a street cleaner's uniform and a straw hat. Good heavens, isn't this an exclusive store for that famous international brand?" A rich woman sneered coldly as she looked over whilst picking her clothes. She was holding onto a branded bag. "I'm sorry, madam. I'll have them leave immediately!" The beautiful saleswoman beside her immediately responded

with a customary smile, then turned around to instruct the other saleswoman, “Go, send them out of here. Don’t let them lower our store’s class!” The saleswoman quickly strutted over in her high heels and approached Fane’s group of three. “Hello. Are you here to buy clothes? We’re a branded store. Our products are from overseas and of high quality…” That saleswoman was an experienced employee. She was sure that when put that way, those poor people would naturally realize that they came to the wrong place and quietly take their leave. However, she had obviously made a mistake this time. Fane looked around, then stated, “High class is good. I’m looking to buy some classy clothes for my mother and wife. I won’t accept anything of lower class!” “What?!” The saleswoman was stunned. “Sir, are you sure?” Fane looked at Selena who stood beside him. “My wife is so pretty and graceful. Shouldn’t she wear something classy?” “Hehe, of course. It’s just that I’m worried you would have issues with the payment later.” The saleswoman chuckled. If not for maintaining the store’s image, she would have told him off directly. How could these poor blokes afford their goods? “What issues?” Fane could not be bothered. He immediately pointed at a dress and stated, “Selena, that dress looked decent. I think it’ll suit you!” “It’s fine. I don’t really like that color. Fane, I think we should leave!” Selena was feeling nervous. Before her marriage, she would frequent stores like this. However, at that moment, she felt extremely restrained. “You don’t like this color? That’s quite a good excuse!” Unexpectedly, that rich lady had approached them. She sneered, “Just admit that you can’t afford it. Is there a point to keep up with the facade? What’s the point of keeping up appearances if you’re poor? Only the rich are worthy of keeping up with appearances!” “Poor? Based on what are you judging our wealth?” Fane was pissed. He did not mind others badmouthing him. However, that was aimed at Selena. It was unacceptable. “Where else?” Seeing that Fane dared to retort her, she immediately took up the confrontation. “Just about anywhere. How can a street cleaner and two poorly dressed people afford to buy clothes here? Have a look for yourself.

This dress itself is priced at five figures. Can you see it?" "What! F-f-five figures!" Joan was shocked. She was really taken aback. She knew that it would be expensive, but she thought it would at most be one or two thousand bucks. She never expected it to hit five figures. "Fane, why don't we forget about it? We can go look elsewhere!" Joan looked at Fane with a frown. "Ma, don't you worry about this matter. The clothes here are for the younger folks. I'll pick some for Selena first. I'll help you pick some later!" Faced with his mother, Fane's expression was a lot gentler. "This one. Selena, go give it a try!" Fane picked the one that he liked and passed it to Selena. "You really want me to try it on?" Selena frowned. Women liked to look beautiful. She naturally wanted to wear this type of clothes as well. However, her current situation was unlike before. She was no longer the pretty director from before, nor the Taylor family's Eldest Miss. Even if Fane had over two hundred thousand bucks from his reward, that was earned from him risking his life. She did not want to spend Fane's hard-earned money this way. "Go try it on. What are you afraid of?!" Fane pushed Selena into the changing room. "Wait a minute. Look at her covered in dirt. What if she dirtied our clothes? By then I'm afraid we can't sell them anymore!" The beautiful saleswoman asked angrily as her expression darkened. "If you continue spouting nonsense, I'll give you a beating." Fane shot her a glare. That intimidating aura caused her to cower and took a few steps back. "You're not letting us try the clothes out before buying? What's the point of the changing rooms?" Fane retorted coldly, then ushered Selena into the changing room. Selena looked at Fane. It all seemed like a dream to her. The Fane right then was really very different from before. 'Is this the same delivery boy from five years ago who willingly marry into my family and enlist for war in Ivan's place for one million bucks?' At that moment, Fane seemed very manly and domineering. She smiled, then quickly changed and walked out of the changing room. "Selena, you're really beautiful in this dress. Absolutely stunning!" Joan took a look and her eyes brightened. "If it's ten thousand, so be it. We'll buy this. All these years, my Fane hasn't

bought you anything before. This is something he should have gotten for you. If not because of our lack of money, it won't matter even if you buy ten of them!" "It's really beautiful, but I think it's a little too expensive!" Selena frowned. Although she was unwilling to part with it, she still suggested, "Why don't we look around for a little? There are many shops we haven't checked out yet!" "Just buy it if it looks good. Money is not a problem!" Meanwhile, Fane passed her another two dresses. "These two look good too. Try it on!" "Wait a minute. You can't try this dress!" The beautiful saleswoman quickly took one of the dresses from them. "Sir, this is a limited edition dress. It's the only dress in the entire country. This dress is really expensive, priced at over a hundred thousand bucks! It's the most expensive one in our store, so…" Smack! However, before she could finish her sentence, Fane had given her a slap. "What did I say earlier? Have you forgotten already? I've told you that I'd smack you if you continue spouting nonsense!" "Y-y-you…" The beautiful saleswoman almost had a stroke. What kind of person was that. So uncivilized. He really dared to hit her. The saleswoman looked pitiful. She was at the verge of crying. "Brat, you're really daring huh? A poor bloke like you still dare to be this brazen? Now you've even hit someone. Poor folks like you shouldn't be in stores like this! You said you're rich right? Sure, just you wait. If you can't afford to pay later, I, Sister Karen, won't let you leave this store!" Sister Karen was ruthless and chatty. After delivering her speech, she took out her iPhone and made a call. "Old Roger, bring some men to the South Wing on the second floor. I'm being bullied. There's a poor bloke that's acting insolently in my face!" "Fane, what are you doing?" Witnessing that, Selena frowned and said worriedly, "I think we better get going. I'm not trying it on!" "They're just looking down on us and spewing nonsense. If I don't teach them a lesson, they won't learn!" Having said that, Fane took both dresses. "It's fine not to try it. Pack this up. I think the size is about right!" "I better try it on then!" Selena was feeling helpless. Such an expensive dress. It would be a huge loss if they purchased it just to find it being the wrong size.

Furthermore, looking at Fane's behavior, the purchase was unavoidable. Before she could finish trying the two dresses, there were several bodyguards in suits standing in front of the door. Meanwhile, Sister Karen was also standing by the door, sneering at Fane. "Sister Karen, that's the poor bloke? Hehe, don't worry. I'm used to dealing with this type of poor and insolent fool. I'll let him know what cruelty means later!"

Chapter 11

"All three dresses suit you well, honey. Do you like it? We'll get them if you like it!" The two saleswomen no longer dared to look down on Fane. They merely stood there pitifully. Hearing Fane's words, Selena blushed. She was still a little unused to the term 'Honey'. "I still think it's too expensive!" By then, Selena had already changed back into her clothes. She took a look at the three dresses, then replied with a smile. "It's the thought that counts. One dress will do, no need for that many!" "Hehe, just admit that you're poor and drop the act. Don't even think of leaving the store if you can't pay up today!" Sister Karen, the rich woman, started sneering at them. When the saleswomen heard those words, they felt delighted. 'These three poor blokes are acting so insolent even though they're poor. Let's see how you deal with it now that you met a stronger figure.' However, out of their expectations, Fane passed the three dresses to the saleswoman that he slapped earlier. "Just these three. Pack them up for me!" "You're really buying? The total is almost two hundred thousand bucks…" The woman asked out of surprise, then finally led the way after a moment, saying, "Sir, this way please!" Fane followed along and took out a gold card. The numbers on the card were all eights. "This...is it usable?" the saleswoman frowned, unable to resist from muttering. It was her first time seeing such a card. "Why do you keep spewing nonsense? It's password-free for payments under ten billion bucks!" Fane gave her an impatient look, then dashingly waved at Selena who was waiting for him. Gasp! The saleswoman took a big gulp of air. Somehow, she still felt that this man before him was lying.

Even the most powerful black card that she knew of was only limited to password-free transactions under 10 million bucks. Meanwhile, this person was telling her that his card allowed for password-free transactions under 10 billion? If that was not a lie, what was? However, she tried her best to smile and ran the card through the reader. Surprisingly, the transaction was successful instantly! “Oh my god, he was telling the truth?” The beautiful saleswoman swallowed hard. Even if that was a lie, the card was still capable of password-free transactions for that sum of money. This person’s identity was surely extraordinary. Moreover, this type of customer would definitely be considered VIP amongst VIP at the banks. “Sir, here you go. Please come again!” It was rare for them to meet such a rich customer. The beautiful saleswoman respectfully passed the card back to Fane and bowed slightly, trying to appease him. “What’s wrong? Didn’t you just diss us for being poor? You’re still asking us to come again?” Fane smiled coldly as he retrieved his card. “It’s all a misunderstanding. I didn’t expect you to keep such a low profile!” The beautiful saleswoman answered with a smile, then added, “If you’re making similar purchases here every day, I don’t mind getting slapped by you again!” After all, those three dresses gave them quite a good commission, especially the one costing over 100 thousand bucks. Most people could not afford it. Fane could not be bothered with her. He then approached Selena and Joan. “Let’s go. Ma, we’ll go shop somewhere else and see if there are any that suit you!” “Are you serious? You really settled the bill?” Sister Karen stood in front of the door waiting to teach Fane a lesson. When she saw the saleswoman escorting Fane out delightfully, she was flabbergasted. Although she did not lack wealth, she would still feel the pain if she spent 200 thousand bucks in one go. Moreover, she had just uttered some mean words. “A good dog doesn’t block the way! Move aside!” Fane stated coldly as he reached the door and stared at those bodyguards. “Brat, you’re quite insolent!” The leader of the bodyguards was aggravated. He took a step forward and sent a punch right at Fane’s face. Bang! However, he was sent flying the very next instant,

landing heavily on the floor. “This…” The rest of the bodyguards were stunned. This brat seemed to be a capable fighter. “What’re you doing standing there? Go get him! Damn it, how dare he hit my men. That’s just disrespecting me, Sister Karen!” Sister Karen snapped her fingers and barked her orders. Upon witnessing that, she was furious. Bang, bang, bang! Unfortunately, the next moment she was speechless. Her rather capable bodyguards that went through special training were all lying on the floor, unable to even touch his clothes. “Sister Karen, would you like to try?” Fane stared coldly at Sister Karen, curling his finger invitingly at her. “It’s all a misunderstanding. Little brother, I can see that you’re quite the capable fighter. Why don’t you be my bodyguard? I’ll pay you!” Sister Karen smiled awkwardly. If her bodyguards were no match for Fane, what could she, a weak little girl, do? She would probably die from a single kick. “Be your bodyguard? Hehe, you’re overestimating yourself!” To Fane, that offer was a joke. He, the Supreme Warrior, master of the Nine Gods of War, and his countless contributions in the war, falling low enough to be someone’s bodyguard? “Son, let’s get going!” Joan was scared. It was the first time she witnessed such a scene. However, her own son’s strength was truly amazing. A group like that was not his match. “Let’s go. Ma, the clothes in that store would suit you…” “Don’t bother. You’ve already spent so much money. Don’t use up all your rewards!” “It’s fine Ma, your son wants to buy some clothes for you. Isn’t that the right thing to do?” … After a moment, Selena received a call. After answering it, her expression turned extremely ugly. “What’s wrong, honey?!” Seeing that, Fane asked immediately. “Did you beat up Ivan Taylor?” Selena’s expression was cold. Before Fane could explain, she reprimanded angrily, “Why do you like to fight so much? Yes, you’re amazing. After being a soldier for a few years, you’re now very powerful, right? You’ll just beat up whoever that offends you, isn’t it?” “Sigh, Fane, look at you. That Ivan is someone we can’t afford to offend. He’s very petty. Now that you’ve offended him, we’re not going to live in peace in the future!” Joan sighed. “Ivan is the main reason for Selena being

unemployed all these while. Right now, he's the director of Taylor Group. As long as he sends a word in the market, who would dare to attract trouble by hiring Selena?" "But he really deserves it. If not because of his identity as a member of the Taylor family and Selena's cousin, he would be long dead!" Fane turned expressionless, then said, "That b*stard. When I came back, I didn't know you were kicked out of the Taylor family. I met Ivan and he dared to force Kylie to eat buns that he stomped on. How could I tolerate that!?" "What?!" Hearing that, Selena was shocked. "That b*stard. He's really going overboard. How dare he treat Kylie like that." Having said that, she looked toward Fane, finally realizing that she had wrongfully blamed him. "I'm sorry. I didn't know it was for that reason that you beat him up. However, Grandpa is furious at the moment and requested for us to head over. My parents are already rushing over. They asked us to hurry up." "What's there to be scared of? It's their fault to start with. I've not even begun settling the matter of them kicking you guys out of the Taylor family!" Fane harrumphed, then said, "Let's go!"

Chapter 12

"Settle the matter? How do you plan to settle this? For that matter, I'm at fault too. Furthermore, Old Master Taylor is still my grandfather. Are you planning to beat him up?" Selena smiled bitterly, then said, "This time, you come with us and just stay quiet in a corner. After so many years, Grandpa's temper should have improved. Maybe a few good words will stop them from pursuing this matter." "Alright, I'll try my best to follow your instructions and avoid acting. Otherwise, you'll complain that I'm being too violent!" Fane laughed bitterly. He wanted to see for himself how the people from the Taylor family would treat him without knowing his identity. Furthermore, the reason he came back this time was not to be the Supreme Warrior. He only wished to peacefully accompany his woman and care for his mother, living life comfortably. Taking a taxi, the group of three quickly arrived at the gates of Taylor Residence. "That brat is really brazen to actually hit

Young Master Taylor. Didn't he know that Young Master Taylor was extremely petty?" "That's right. I'm afraid this won't end well. He's just a soldier, a stinking live-in son-in-law. He should consider his own identity!" They overheard the quiet exchange of the two guards at the gate just as they got out of the car. However, when the guards noticed their arrival, they immediately kept quiet. One of them smiled. "Miss Selena, you're back. We'll inform the Master and Old Master right away!" "No need! We'll go by ourselves!" Selena looked at the gate stoically with complex feelings. She had numerous wonderful memories of her childhood here. Unexpectedly, after growing up, the Taylor family turned out to be filled with so much political intrigue. To her, the bigger surprise was the fact that she would, one day, be kicked out of this place. After hesitating for a moment, the trio entered slowly. Just as they reached the gate of the Old Master's villa, they could hear the voices of discussion coming from within. "That Fane is too much. Who does he think he is to hit Ivan?!" "That's right. He's just a soldier of a few years. Does he think he's some big shot now? How can a sparrow transform into a phoenix?!" "Most importantly, Ivan was suffering from fractured bones. I heard that he was beaten to the point of unconsciousness!" A few relatives of the Taylor family were having a heated discussion, as though Fane was a condemned sinner. "Yes, that's right. That brat is in the wrong. Argh, I'm so pissed!" Just as Selena was about to enter, Fiona's voice could be heard. Selena frowned immediately. Her outstretched hand paused in the air. Right at that moment, Fiona's voice was heard once more, "You might not know this, but earlier today, he actually slapped Ken Clark, the Clark family's young master, and caused him to lose three teeth!" "Young Master Clark? That Young Master Clark that fancies your Selena all this while? He went looking for you?" Old Master Taylor could not help but ask. "I know, right?" He thought that Fane was surely dead and hoped that Selena would divorce Fane so that he could marry Selena. Moreover, he also mentioned that he does not mind about Kylie's incident. "Who could've known that Fane would suddenly come

back at that time…" Fiona grew more agitated over time. "This time, I'm afraid the Clark family won't let it go that easily!" Selena could not bear listening on, pushing straight through the door with Fane and Joan with her. "Ma, I won't accept Ken's proposal! He's a fake gentleman. Do you really think that he would be nice to me after getting married? By that time, I don't know how much frustration I'll have to go through!" "Selena, you're finally back. If you don't give me a proper resolution for today's matter, I won't let this go!" Upon seeing Fane and Selena's arrival, Ivan, who had one hand in bandages, stared at them angrily with his eyes wide open. "Ivan, are you without fault? You had Kylie eat the buns that you threw on the floor and stomped on. Do you think that Fane, as a father, could tolerate that?" Selena's expression darkened, then looked at Old Master Taylor and said, "Grandpa, Fane can't be blamed for this matter. Ivan was really going overboard." "Ivan, is that the case?" Old Master Taylor was not an unreasonable person. He looked at Ivan and asked slowly. Ivan immediately retorted, "How is that possible? I was only joking and Fane coincidentally saw it. Who knew he would act without even saying anything! H-h-he even forced me to eat that bun!" "Ivan Taylor, if you continue to spew nonsense, I'll break your other arm!" Beside her, Fane could no longer bear to watch it. Ivan was clearly lying blatantly. Hearing those words, Ivan took a few steps back. It was obvious that he was scared. However, remembering that they were in Taylor Residence and Fane was just a live-in son-in-law, he probably would not dare do anything with this many witnesses. With his newfound confidence, he took a step forward. "You guys take a look at how insolent this brat is. He's just a live-in son-in-law, not even a Taylor, yet he dared to utter such words in front of everyone." Ivan turned around and shot a look at Fane. The words that Fane was about to say were held back. He had already caused Selena to suffer through so many years of hardships. For Selena's sake, he did not wish to complicate matters. Furthermore, he only wanted to enjoy a peaceful life. "Fane, you're too brazen. If not for the one million bucks we gave you, your mother won't be able to afford the surgery

and died!” “Not only are you ungrateful, but you also repaid kindness with malice and treat our Taylor family this way?” One of the relatives of the Taylor family immediately started their accusations. “That’s right. If it’s not for us, would his mother still be around?” Another elder was similarly putting up airs, acting high and mighty. In their eyes, Fane and Joan were outsiders, penniless people of the lower class. If not for Selena being pregnant with that b*stard child, Fane would have nothing to do with their Taylor family. “Eh!” Right then, one of the girls from the Taylor family in her twenties, Cecilia Taylor, noticed the shopping bag in Joan’s hand. “Are my eyes playing tricks on me? Those are all branded stuff!” Cecilia walked forward and studied Joan, who was still in her cleaner’s uniform, closely, then said disdainfully, “Did you rob or steal these?!” With Cecilia pointing it out, everyone immediately took notice of those shopping bags. They were obviously international brands. Was that something they could even afford? “My son bought it for me and Selena. Although we’re poor, we have always been honorable. There’s no way we would resort to stealing or robbing!”

Chapter 13

“Honorable? Hehe, if you’re not wearing such clothing, I might just believe it!” Cecilia sneered, then added, “There should be a few dresses in there. From the looks of it, some were bought for Selena, right? I’m guessing the total should be some tens of thousand bucks!” Cecilia commented as she looked through the content. She suddenly saw a dress and took it out of the bag. “It can’t be. T-t-this is a limited edition worldwide! This dress is over a hundred thousand bucks! It’s the newest model from this brand!” Hearing those words, several people from the Taylor family had a shocked expression. It was not that they could not afford that dress, but it was weird that Fane’s group could afford it. Moreover, it was not some high-end watch or jade pieces, but just a dress. Even those from the Taylor family would think twice before spending hundreds and thousands of bucks. “Put the dress back. I don’t want your hand dirtying Selena’s dress!” Upon seeing her

taking the dress out, Fane's expression darkened as he issued the warning. Cecilia was astonished, then proceed to put it back into the bag. However, she soon started smiling. "Hehe, I know. You must've bought fake goods. Tsk…tsk it does seem authentic. I almost believed it." The others came to a sudden realization. 'That's right. How can they afford international branded items? What a joke. What else could it be if not high-quality imitation?' "Cecilia, its authenticity has nothing to do with you, does it?" This is my husband's gift for me. As long as it's from him, I'll like it regardless of its authenticity!" Upon hearing the unpleasant words she had said, Selena replied sarcastically, "Unlike some people, without a boyfriend despite their advanced age. Could it be that you're jealous of me?" "You…" Cecilia was triggered. Although her appearance was not bad, she indeed had no boyfriend. Selena's word caused her great discomfort. She then sneered, "Hehe, I'm jealous of you? That's rich. Should I be jealous of you being kicked out of the Taylor family like trash? I don't have a boyfriend because I want to find a rich man. Unlike someone, cheap enough to just marry a delivery boy." By that point, Cecilia added more venomous comments. "Moreover, the wedding ceremony was lackluster. There wasn't even a betrothal gift. What a shame it was for our Taylor family." "So what if I'm willing? That's none of your business. This is my own choice to make!" Selena was fighting back fiercely, almost breaking her ladylike persona. "Sure, of course. Some people are happy with their degeneracy, what can we do about it?" Cecilia shrugged. "Well, that kind of hardship is something this lady will never experience." "Enough!" Finally, Old Master Taylor roared stoically. The Old Master was quite advanced in age, but his presence silenced the room immediately. He walked up to Fane, checking him out carefully. For some reason, he felt that this young man had undergone a complete transformation. Just him standing there gave off an aura that should not be trifled with. Was he still the same young man that begged him for one million bucks to treat his mother's disease from five years ago? He thought for a moment, then finally spoke up, "Tell me, how much money

should I pay you to leave Selena alone and stop bugging her?" The Old Master knew full well of Selena's obsession with the child. Selena's refusal for a divorce was definitely because of the child. However, he could do it by approaching Fane. Hearing that, Selena frowned and looked at Fane worryingly. After all, with the power of money, it was hard to say. Moreover, despite them being officially married, there were hardly any feelings between them. Fane was silent. 'Money? Hehe, would I care for those things now?' Furthermore, five years ago, if not for saving his mother, he would never beg someone for merely one million bucks. "Old Master, I'm afraid you'll be disappointed. Selena is my woman. For me and my child, she had suffered through five years of hardship. It's impossible for me to leave them!" Fane replied firmly with a smile. Hearing those words, Selena's heart was filled with warmth. The past five years of waiting was not in vain. The Old Master quickly took out a check and signed his name, then passed it to Fane. "Our Taylor family does not like you as our live-in son-in-law. Back then, you've promised to fake the marriage with Selena to take Ivan's place on the battlefield. I'm not killing you this time because of your relationship with Selena and Kylie. However, you must leave!" "Write whatever number you wish! You can cash it in at any bank in Middle Province. Furthermore, I can let the matter of you beating up Ivan slide!" It could be said that from the Old Master's perspective, he had already made a huge compromise. Upon hearing that, Ivan was furious. He quickly stepped forward and stated, "Grandpa, we can just kill him. He's broken my arm…" "Shut up!" Who would have thought that Old Master Taylor would turn around to stare at him? "Ivan Taylor, do you think I don't know what you've done in secret? You only know that my health is in decline and rarely leave the house, isn't it? I, Zeus Taylor, might be old, but I'm not blind. Ever since you've been the director, our company's performance has been in decline for the past few years. I'm just too tired to berate you!" Old Master Taylor then added, "I can't be bothered with you picking on Selena as I was also angry with her giving birth to a child with him. However, Kylie

is Selena's daughter. She's only four years old. How dare you feed her with buns that you stomped on. I can't bear to imagine such an incident!" "Dad, regardless, Fane can't beat Ivan up just because of that, right? Furthermore, these are just empty accusations from Fane. Who knows if he might be lying!?" Theodore Taylor, master of the Taylor family and Ivan's father, interjected as he stepped forward. "Is that so? Would you dare to let me investigate the matter to see if it really happened?" Old Master Taylor's words shut Theodore up. He then added, "You play a big part in Ivan's current behavior of mixing around with those questionable women. He's under your care. We're just a third-class aristocratic family. It took us a lot of effort to get us here. Aren't you afraid that our Taylor family might one day be ruined in the hands of your son?" "Grandpa, how is that possible. I go out for drinks to entertain my clients. It's for my job!" Ivan laughed awkwardly, then added, "Furthermore, our company's performance is quite good for the past two months. You need to believe in me. This year, we'll be making a huge profit and cover for our losses in the past." Hearing that, Fane's heart felt a lot better. It would seem that the Old Master kicked Selena out mainly due to his annoyance of Selena marrying a nameless person like him. However, five years have passed. His anger should mostly subside. Furthermore, he was probably keeping tabs on Selena and Kylie's situation. All in all, Old Master Taylor still cared for his granddaughter. "Here, sign it. As for the number, just write whatever you wish! With that, we'll call it even!"

Chapter 14

Old Master Taylor was having mixed feelings. Fane's guess was almost spot on. The Old Master was a person that cared greatly about his reputation. Back then, he had Fane marry into the Taylor family to prevent Ivan from being enlisted. That itself was already something that affected the Taylor family's reputation. He never expected an even greater shame to come later on. Fane was only married to Selena for a day when he got enlisted the very

next day. However, Selena became pregnant soon after. He was aware that Selena had gotten drunk that night. He even suspected that it could have been Fane that forced himself on Selena. Never did he expect Selena to claim that it was voluntary. That matter almost gave him a heart attack. That was why, in a fit of rage, he kicked Selena, her parents, and her 14 years old brother out of the Taylor Residence. As for Selena's inability to be employed and the restrictions placed on her, that was the work of Ivan. "Are you sure I can write any amount?" Fane was surprised for a moment and then asked while snickering. "Of course! Just fill it!" Seeing how Fane was really moved by money, Old Master Taylor's heart rejoiced. Selena's beauty was above others. Furthermore, she was talented in business matters. As long as she divorced Fane, she would have no problem looking for a wealthy partner. In fact, he heard that Young Master Clark was trying to court Selena. "Of course, the Old Master will keep his words. Fill it in quickly!" said Fiona. Fiona was extremely excited upon hearing their exchange. She quickly approached the dumbfounded Selena. "Daughter, look. I've told you that he will let you down. You wanted to keep the child for him and wait for five years. You suffered five years of hardship, yet he still ended up choosing money? This is a materialistic world!" Selena stood there in a daze. She felt lost. All those years spent waiting, all those suffering, in the end… "Fane, you… Are you stupid? Where else can you find such a wonderful wife? Are you really giving up your wife and daughter for money? Selena suffered five years of hardship. All those scorn and ridicule she had to endure! She even had to collect trash and gave up looking for a job!" Joan stepped forward and looked at Fane, her eyes filled with disappointment. "We can't be heartless!" "Ma, let him be!" Selena's eyes were filled with despair, complete despair. The five difficult years she endured came to such a conclusion. "You see? Selena, all men are hopeless. I've told you to abort the child, yet you didn't listen!" Cecilia then added out of the blue, "Sigh, although I can't find a boyfriend, it's still better than you finding an undependable one!" Selena's eyes were tearing up. She

looked at Fane, feeling hopeless. “Have you decided?” Fane smiled. “I’ve decided!” Having said that, he started scribbling on the check. He then quickly passed the check back. “I’m done. You told me to fill it up!” “Hehe, of course, I’ll keep my word!” Seeing Fane choosing money, Zeus’ gaze showed a hint of disappointment. At first, he had come to respect Fane a little bit more. He was thinking if Fane were to show some capabilities and treat his granddaughter well, that would also be acceptable. Unfortunately, this person failed. However, he froze up after he looked at the check. On the check, it was written with a string of numbers, “999999999999999999…” At the end of the string of numbers, it was followed by ellipsis! “Brat, are you trolling me?” Zeus’ expression darkened, turning extremely scary. Even Theodore, master of the Taylor family, went forward to have a look at the check, exclaiming, “Brat, what’s the meaning of this? You think this is a joke?” “What’s the matter?” Cecilia was similarly surprised. She hurried over to take a look. “One, two, three, four, five, six, seven...why is it ending with an ellipsis? How much money is this?” “Haha, Old Master Taylor, you told me to write as I like. Can you afford the figure I filled in?” At that moment, Fane burst out laughing. He approached Selena and held onto her hand, stating in a serious tone, “My wife waited five full years for me, a mere delivery boy. She suffered all those hardships, yet you’re trying to measure it with money? She’s priceless, hence you can’t afford the price I’m asking for!” “You rascal…” Selena was trapped in between anger and amusement. However, her heart was filled with happiness. Just a second ago, she thought Fane was about to take the money and divorce her, leaving her and her daughter behind. It turns out that he had written countless nines on that check and even added ellipsis in the end. “Let me see, let me see!” Joan was originally quite angry. Hearing the conversation, she immediately reached for the check. After taking a look, she excitedly passed it to Selena. “Selena, look! This is your status in my son’s heart. You’re priceless!” “Mom, I know!” Selena blushed. The few years of waiting turned out to be worth it. This man did not let her down. “How dare you toy with our Taylor

family. Fane, you're courting death. Guards, cripple him, and throw him out of here!" Theodore stepped forward and bellowed in rage. "Is this a fight? I'm sorry, but I'm very good at that now!" Fane replied after hearing that. He then stated with a smile on his face, "In the past five years, I'm not sure how many mountains will form from the enemies that I've killed. There were many experts within their ranks, yet they all died in my hands. There were a few times I almost died, but I managed to survive because I know that someone is waiting for me back home. I can't die!" When Fane made his statement, he gave off a strong aura. As he stood there, he seemed like a king. "Today, I'll let those who dare to act against me know what it's like to make a grave mistake!" "What did I tell you before coming over?" Surprisingly, Selena's face turned dark as she reprimanded Fane in a menacing voice. She felt that ever since Fane had been a soldier, he had grown more capable. However, he was just too boastful. Moreover, they were in the Taylor family. He was just a live-in son-in-law. How could he take action against her own family members? Fane finally remembered his promise with Selena and immediately changed to an awkward laugh. "Cough cough, I'm just joking!" However, the bodyguards outside the door had already rushed in. "Get out!" Just as the bodyguards were about to act, Old Master Taylor gave a stern order. The bodyguards exchanged glances, then quickly went out. "Dad, this brat is toying with us. Can't you see that?" Theodore was extremely frustrated. However, they could not disobey the Old Master's orders. Although he was the master of this household and his son was the director of Taylor Group, the Old Master was the one truly in charge. All important matters of the Taylor family had to go through him. "He's not toying with us. I did tell him to fill as he wished. It's just that we can't afford that price!" Old Master Taylor laughed bitterly, then spoke, "Fane, this has gone on for five years. My granddaughter had also suffered many hardships. Since you're both truly in love and Kylie has grown, I'm fine with not forcing you through a divorce!" Having said that, Old Master Taylor's tone took a sudden change. "However…"

Chapter 15

“This can’t be. Grandpa is acknowledging Fane’s identity as the son-in-law of the Taylor family?” Upon hearing the Old Master’s words, some of the Taylor family members had a shocked expression on their faces. ‘Grandpa used to pamper Selena. It’d seem that Grandpa’s anger had subsided after all these years. Within Selena’s body still flows the blood of our Taylor family, after all.’ A member of the Taylor family speculated quietly in his mind. “Grandpa!” Selena pursed her red lips and felt her tears surfacing. She knew her grandfather had been keeping tabs on her in secret. The old man was only unable to lower himself all this while. For Zeus Taylor, his reputation was more important than anything else. “However?” Fane scowled. He knew that it would not be that simple. “However, the matter of you injuring Ivan’s arm can’t be settled just like that!” The old man’s tone changed once more as he continued, “You need to pay compensation!” “That’s right. Grandpa’s right. My arm is fractured. The doctor said that my arm will take at least one to two months to recover, and that’s with the best medicine!” Due to the Old Master’s lecture earlier, Ivan had been standing in silence all the while. Now that his grandfather was speaking up for him, he immediately rejoiced. “How about this: I’ll give you one month’s time, Fane. One month later is coincidentally my seventieth birthday. If you can come up with ten million bucks in a month, I’ll acknowledge that you’re the Taylor family’s son-in-law!” “However, if you fail to produce the money, then you’ll have to divorce Selena as that would prove that you lack the ability, unworthy of being with Selena!” “Furthermore, Ivan’s hand is rendered in such a state because of you. You need to compensate him with ten million bucks! How’s that?” The Old Master stared at Fane and declared authoritatively. “Grandpa, aren’t you intentionally making it difficult for him? He was just a delivery boy. Now that he’s a soldier for five years and returned from the battlefield, how can he cough up that amount of money in one month!?” Selena was worried when she heard the proposition. What

difference was that from chasing Fane away? It was just a different method. “Old Master, can you lower the amount? That’s too much. He can’t even produce one million bucks, much less ten million bucks!” Joan’s expression was ugly. She did not wish to miss her chance on such a wonderful daughter-in-law. “No reduction. If he can’t even produce ten million bucks, how can he be worthy of my daughter?” It was Fiona who interjected strongly. She then pushed on, “Hmph! If he can earn ten million, that can be the betrothal gift for my daughter. When the time comes, that money must be passed to me, or I’ll never recognize him as our son-in-law!” “That won’t work.” Ivan spoke up, “If he can produce ten million bucks, I should be getting it as compensation. I can’t just get hit for nothing, can I?” “No way. Your treatment won’t total up to ten million!” There was no way Fiona would let this go. She had suffered in poverty for so many years. If she had ten million bucks, she could live her life comfortably. “Hehe, the ten million that Grandpa mentioned was for compensation, not a betrothal gift. Can’t you understand?” Ivan laughed happily. His words managed to stump Fiona. “In one month, right?” Fane contemplated, then stated, “How about this. One month from now, on Grandpa’s seventieth birthday, I’ll pay Ivan ten million bucks for compensation, send another ten million to Mother-in-law as a betrothal gift, and on top of that, send ten million worth of birthday gifts to Grandpa! A grand total of thirty million bucks. If I can’t achieve that, I’ll be willing to divorce Selena!” “Are you crazy? That much money in one month? You won’t have enough even if you sold yourself!” Joan was scared witless. She guessed that Fane must have been pushed over the limit and started talking nonsense. “You can’t be serious, right? Didn’t I tell you not to boast?! Thirty million bucks! It’s not three thousand bucks!” Selena was also reprimanding him anxiously. “Don’t worry, honey, I really should prove to the Taylors that I’m worthy of marrying you!” Fane moved his hand and caressed Selena’s beautiful cheeks. “I won’t let anything separate me from you and our daughter!” Selena’s heart was touched. At that moment, she felt confident that Fane was not lying to her. “Alright, I’ll

believe you!" In the end, Selena nodded. "Of course. Fane, if you managed to do so, the Taylor family will not only acknowledge your identity! We can also have your in-laws, Selena, and your entire family—including your mother—to move into Taylor Residence!" The old man contemplated for a moment, then said, "By then, Selena can also resume her work in Taylor Group!" "Alright. You have a deal!" Fane agreed immediately. "Brat, you're really good at boasting. I'd like to see how embarrassing it'll be for you should you fail to produce the money by then!" Ivan took two steps forward and glared at Fane. Fane took out a stick of cigarette and casually lit it. He took a deep breath. "And what if I managed to do it? If I fail, I'll roll my way out of the gates of Taylor Residence. Should I succeed, however, you'll have to kneel and apologize to Selena. How does that sound? After all, in the past five years, you've done quite the harm!" "Haha, sure. Listen up, everyone. This is a promise between me and this brat!" "Since he wants to embarrass himself, then I can only oblige. When the time comes, we'll all bear witness to how he rolls from this gate all the way out. Remember, you're not walking out, but roll!" Ivan laughed out loud. 'It's already a miracle for this trash to come back alive. Producing thirty million bucks in a month? Dream on!' "Brother Ivan, don't worry, we're not deaf. We heard it clearly. We'll be your witnesses!" Cecilia crossed her hands over her chest and gave Fane a condescending look. "It's been five years. After finally coming back and managed to buy some clothes for your mother and wife, you chose to get some imitation items. Your clothings scream of poverty. I refuse to believe that you can produce thirty million bucks!" "Haha, you're right!" "I think he knows that he's unworthy of Selena and decided to go all out with his bluff. When the time comes, he can only shamefully roll out of Taylor Residence!" "Look at him. If he can earn thirty million bucks in one month, then can't I easily set a hundred million as a small goal?" Quite a number of the Taylor family members started laughing. There were quite a lot of people present. They were mostly working in the Taylor Group, under the employ of Ivan Taylor. They naturally intended to

curry favor for him. “Fane, you’ve said it yourself. I’m waiting for your ten million as a betrothal gift. When the time comes, don’t blame me for being merciless!” Fiona reminded him after contemplating it. “Haha, Fiona, have you gone crazy thinking of money? Do you really think that he can come up with that amount for his betrothal gift?” Ivan smiled. “Just ten million bucks as a betrothal gift will allow me to marry Selena? I’ll pay ten million bucks. Let her marry me! If that’s insufficient, I’m fine with fifty million bucks! What to do when I’m not lacking money?” Right at that moment, a man of stout physique walked in as he laughed loudly, followed by a group of bodyguards.

Chapter 16

“Young Master Wilson, what are you doing here?” Ivan greeted the Wilson family’s young master the moment he noticed him. “What did you say earlier, Young Master Wilson? Fifty million? You’re willing to offer a fifty million bucks lottery reward?” Overwhelmed with emotions, Fiona’s eyes lit up. “Is your word good?” she sputtered. One should know that the Wilsons and the Clarks were both second-class aristocratic families. Simply put, they were significantly wealthier than their Taylor family. “Of course, Auntie. Do we look like people who’d go back on their word? I’m still a member of the Wilson family, my word is still good!” Young Master Wilson chuckled as he spoke, yet he was simultaneously admiring the seemingly perfect appearance of Selena. He could not hold himself back as he gulped. Young Master Wilson was extremely fat; so much so that he resembled a pig. Not only was he extremely gluttonous, but he was very interested in women as well. He was instantly charmed back when he first laid eyes on Selena and her ethereal beauty. When he learned of her marriage to a takeout delivery guy in addition to being pregnant at a later time, he was all too furious. Even so, Selena’s beauty did not fade even after she gave birth; she looked even more beautiful and mature. Her body was practically glowing with femininity. He would do everything to keep her all to himself.

Moreover, Selena was known as the most beautiful maiden in the Middle Province. Marrying her would be an incredible and proud feat in front of other men. “Splendid. I’ll hold you to your word!” Fiona clapped her hands—chuckling altogether—as she approached Selena. “Did you hear that, Selena?” she spoke. “That person, Fane, mentioned ten million. This Young Master Wilson fellow instead offered to pay fifty million bucks, and he had always been interested in you. He’s not too bad himself, the way I see it. You should give it some thought. All you need to do is nod and we’ll make that brat, Fane, leave immediately!” The instant Selena heard that statement, she nearly passed out from agitation. She could barely hold her composure just by looking at Young Master Wilson’s appearance. Although that Young Master Clark fellow was not a pleasant man, he was handsome at least. That man from the Wilson family looked fat and his ears were too huge. She felt greasy just by staring at him. She then argued, “Ma, are you marrying off your daughter or selling her? So, you’ll just hand off your daughter to whoever is offering the highest price? Why don’t you just auction me off then?” Selena furiously added, “Even Grandpa agreed to let me marry Fane, and the agreement was even set earlier. How can you simply act on your own and change it as you like?” “Selena, that’s not what I meant. That Fane fellow is a takeout delivery boy, and he’s only been a soldier for a few years now. You don’t expect him to amount to anything, do you now?” As she finished, Fiona pointed her disdainful glare at Fane before she continued, “I wasn’t looking down on him. I wonder: can he make thirty million bucks in a month? Hehe! Just you wait. He won’t be able to make that much money after a month. Till then, I’ll have him exiled from our family!” “Fane Woods? Good lord, this person is Fane Woods? Kylie’s useless father has returned?” Stunned Young Master Wilson carefully scrutinized Fane. “Hehe. It seems like his appearance is the only thing that’s going for him,” he spoke. “He’s dressed so plainly. How is he worthy of Miss Selena?” “You sure spout a lot of nonsense!” Fane glared at him icily. He condescendingly spoke, “This is the Taylor family home. What are you,

an outsider, doing here? If you have no purpose here, then beat it!" "Haha! Such strong words. Don't you know just how major of a family us Wilsons are?" Young Master Wilson cackled out loud then added, "Am I really here without a purpose? I'm here to discuss the matters of our collaboration with Young Master Taylor. We happen to have something that we'd like to work together with the Taylors!" The moment Old Master Taylor heard that statement, he was naturally pleased as he said, "Haha. All that come by are guests. Let's sit here, Young Master Wilson!" "There's no need, Old Master Taylor. I'll be talking to Young Master Wilson!" Young Master Wilson then looked at Ivan before he spoke with a very peculiar expression, "Young Master Ivan, what's wrong with your hand? Did you fight with someone? Who dares fight with you?" Ivan's expression grew incredibly bitter as he eyeballed Fane. Hoarsely, he replied, "A mad man, nothing else. I was merely joking with his daughter Kylie, and he came over to beat me up without saying a word." Micheal was stunned after hearing that statement. He spoke after looking at Fane, "Oh, so it was that useless object, then. Truly unexpected that he was bold enough to hit you. He's got guts, I'll give him that!" "Haha, it's fine. We had a bet. He said that after a month on my grandfather's seventieth birthday, he'll give me ten million bucks as reimbursement! In addition to offering Selena's family a ten million bucks reward, he'll also give my grandfather a gift worth ten million bucks!" "Should he fail, he'll exile himself out of the Taylor family and divorce Selena! He'll roll out the front door from this spot!" Ivan cackled out loud and said, "That's right, Young Master Wilson. You have to come by during our grandfather's seventieth birthday. You have to see how this little brat will roll out of the front door!" "Haha! Alright. The distance from here to the front door is quite far. I'm guessing he won't be able to roll out of it in a short while!" Young Master Wilson cackled and took a look at Selena. He then said, "Don't you worry, Selena. All I have is time, and I'm willing to wait for you. You'll have your freedom once again after this little brat is exiled from the Taylor family after a month, and that means you'll be single.

When the day comes, don’t turn me away!” “Alright, let’s go, Young Master Wilson. We still have important matters to discuss!” Ivan had a smug look on his face. He was beaten rather badly by Fane today, but if he could get this brat exiled from the family, it would be the best thing that could ever happen! He believed that Fane was nothing but a ruffian. He was merely saying that to preserve his pride. He was actually interested to see how much this brat would humiliate himself when the time arrived. Ivan soon left with Young Master Wilson! “Alright, you guys can leave as well. Don’t disappoint me in a month from now!” Old Master Taylor realized it was getting late outside as he waved his hand impatiently. Although Fane’s behavior was a little out of his expectations, the thought of his granddaughter getting married to a poor man—which humiliated him—dissatisfied him so. At this very moment, in an extremely lavish mansion, the wealthiest man in all of the Middle Province, James Loner was looking at a middle-aged man. After some thought, he said, “The little brat who returned with the God of War, Lana is called Fane Woods. I’m guessing that their relationship isn’t as simple as it seems on the surface. Look into it for me! I want an answer as soon as possible!” The man in front of him was James’ most efficient assistant. He had served the Loner family incredibly well. After he listened to that statement, he frowned and said, “Master, I think there’s no need for that. Even if that little brat has some ties to the God of War, Lana, he doesn’t possess any useful value to us, right?” As he said that, he smiled and said, “Why don’t we strike at the very root of our problem, to butter up the great God of War. That’s the most important thing to us!”

Chapter 17

As James listened to what his staff had to say, he could not hold back his bitter chuckle. “The Gods of Wars are way above our status, and they’re not easy to butter up,” he stated. “Not to mention, this is a female God of War.

We don’t even know what she likes and dislikes!” He paused when that point was brought up. He continued, “I’m afraid all of the major powerhouses wanted nothing more than to sweet-talk to the God of War upon her return. Fortunately, we went through so much to learn of her flight today, and it seems the other powerhouses knew absolutely nothing.” The middle-aged man in front of him nodded his head and said, “The gift we sent for the God of War Lana, did she accept it?” “Hehe...still ain’t bad. She accepted the hospitality we arranged for her. It’s a different story for the money, though. She was quite disinterested with it!” James chuckled and said, “Lana seems to dislike it when people try to flatter her. Not to mention, we have no idea how exactly we can cajole her.” The middle-aged man remained silent for a brief moment. All of a sudden, his eyes lit up as he spoke, “Master, so what you meant was, since that Fane fellow shares quite the unique relationship with Lana, all we need to do is butter up to Fane. This, in turn, would be an indirect way of flattering the God of War. Thus, if the God of War only grants our Drake family her blessing in the future, wouldn’t this make our business more stable?” James nodded slowly and replied, “Yes. That little brat was able to sit in the same plane with Lana when they returned. All we need to do is help Fane, since that would mean we’re also wooing Lana!” “Bravo, Master!” The nickname for the middle-aged man was called Spectre Face, and he happened to be one of the Three Major Guardians in the Drake family. With a smile etched on his face, he then spoke, “Hmm. This God of War happens to be a female and, from how I see it, she isn’t young at all…” James frowned after hearing that statement. “Spectre Face,” he started, “you’re not thinking of making a move on her to make her your woman now, are you? You best keep that thought to yourself. Should you offend her and the God of War gets furious, not only is our Drake family, but the entire Middle Province will end up as a river of blood in a single night!” Spectre Face let out a bitter laugh as he said, “Master, how would I dare to even have that thought? Besides, I—Spectre Face—am not the kind of person to toy with a woman’s feelings just for my future

benefit now, right? A man who uses a woman to further their reputation is someone I, Spectre Face, would be the first person to look down on!" Upon making that statement, Spectre Face explained, "What I mean is, Fane isn't Lana's man now, ia he? Perhaps there's also a possibility of them sharing an intimate relationship! Besides, they've known each other for a very long period in the fields of war. And they see each other very often…" "Hehe...that's very unlikely. Judging by how they both behaved, they seemed very cold to one another. They have quite the cold face on them; could that even spark any romance?" James chuckled and, after a brief pause, continued, "No matter what, just look into them. It doesn't matter if he's only a staff to Lana. We still have to butter them up; this will surely strengthen our bond with the God of War!" "No problem. Recently, numerous military veterans are coming out of retirement in our Middle Province. There are also many high-ranking and well-achieved soldiers among them. Go visit them and have someone look into that Fane fellow." Spectre Face nodded as he beamed, "Now that Master has mentioned it, I'm starting to get interested in that brat! I hope he won't disappoint me!" "Haha, good! I'll await your good news!" James spoke with a chuckle. At this very moment, in a random room within the Clark family home, Ken was seething with rage. He stared furiously at Dan in front of him and barked, "What's the meaning of this, Dan? Why didn't you teach that brat, Fane, a lesson? Not only that, but you had someone carry me away. Do you have any idea how humiliating that was to me?" As he spoke, he pointed at his mouth and said, "Look, my teeth have been completely smashed. Goddamnit! When have I, Ken Clark, ever endured such humiliation!" "Young Master, that man isn't as simple as you imagine. I'm no match for him!" Dan frowned and spoke in an all too serious tone, "He murdered the Black Dragon. I was told by witnesses present in that scene; they didn't even notice him do much back then!" "That has to be impossible, right? Don't we have surveillance cameras? Why can't we get clear footage of how he made his move?" After Ken heard what he said, his expression was in disbelief. "I've already looked

into it and have even slowed down the footage, all to no avail!" Dan let out a bitter laugh and added, "Still, we know that he was directly pierced in-between his brows. We found an extremely thin silver needle on top of a pillar from a distance. Moreover, the silver needle was completely pierced through the pillar. There are only one to two millimeters exposed from the pillar!" Young Master Ken took a deep breath and said, "You're joking, right? You're telling me that after a person's head was pierced, it also pierced through a stone pillar, and all that's left was a tiny bit exposed on the outside? Such an incredible speed and insane strength!" "This finger of mine, well, I lost a bet to him, and I chopped it off as a result! This person is way too terrifying! Young Master, don't ever cross this Fane fellow, do you understand?" Dan raised his hand and said, "Arm-wrestling with him made me feel like I'm a mere ant compared to him with the strength he had." "That's got to be impossible, isn't it? There's someone that powerful in this world? You're already incredibly powerful; how much more powerful can he be compared to you?" Ken was completely stunned. If that was the case, would it be that getting Selena was a mere dream? "Yeah, this was also the first time for me to have ever met someone this terrifyingly powerful!" Dan lamented as he left swiftly. Young Master Ken sat on the floor after Dan had left him be. The moment he thought about the beautiful Selena, his heart felt incredibly dissatisfied. "Goddamnit. I refuse to believe it. This is the Middle Province, and we Clarks happened to be a second-class aristocratic family. Is it that difficult for us to get one woman?" Ken clenched his fist while a glimmer of determination flashed across his eyes. He said, "Selena Taylor, I'll do everything I can to get you to lay in my bed obediently!" At this moment, Fane, Selena and the others had all left the Taylor family home. "Fane, those things were words you spouted earlier on your own. I don't care about anything else. If you don't give me ten million bucks on the old man's seventieth birthday, it won't be easy for you to be our family's son-in-law now!" When they had just got out the door, Fiona could not hold herself back from furiously saying, "You've already seen our Selena is up

for grabs as usual. Even Young Master Wilson had said it himself; all Selena needs to do is nod and fifty million bucks won't be a problem for him." "Don't you worry, Mom. Anything I, Fane Woods, say, I'll pull it off with ease." Fane let out a bitter laugh as he looked at the elderly couple. He then added, "That's right, Mom and Dad. You've both been living frugally in these five years, so let me bring you guys out to shop for a few sets of new clothes now. It's a little something from me, as a son-in-law!" "Forget it. I'm afraid that the clothes you'd buy would shame me in public. It's better for you to not buy me anything than a good knock-off. I want to wear branded clothes!" Fiona noticed the clothes Selena had in her hands. She immediately snatched it before she walked to a nearby lake not far from there and immediately tossed it in. "You can't undersell yourself this way, my girl," she barked. "You happen to be the lady of the Taylor family. We have to maintain our pride, even though we're poor. Such imitations aren't something worthwhile to wear!"

Chapter 18

Selena initially thought her mother would help her carry the clothes in her hands when she snatched and tossed them into the lake. It was already too late by the time she came to her senses. Those three sets of clothes that cost nearly two hundred thousand had been audaciously tossed into the lake beside her. "What on Earth are you doing, Ma? Those were authentic! Who told you they were fake?" Selena was so agitated that she stomped. Alarmed, she rushed over as her eyes grew red and she seemed like she was about to cry. It was the first time Fane had gotten her clothes. After all the hardships she had endured for the five years they were married, she finally had a taste of luxury. This meant her endurance for the past five years was not for nothing! "Authentic? How are those even genuine? And if they truly were, can he even afford them?" The skeptical Fiona crossed her arms at her chest. She was unconvinced that Fane had that much money to have bought international branded clothes for her daughter. "Dear mother-in-law, those

were truly genuine. We bought them at their specific branded store. They can't possibly be fake now, right?" Joan, who stood at the side, finally burst, "How could you toss clothes that cost nearly two hundred thousand into the lake?!" "No, I must retrieve them!" The already frantic Selena was prepared to dive into the lake and retrieve the clothes. Fortunately, the lake was clear; she could start wearing the clothes after a good wash once she retrieved them. Fane watched Selena's every move and felt his heart wrench. Selena was only twenty. She even contributed greatly to her family's company at a young age— five years ago—being the lady from the Taylor family. Selena, back then, was adorned with branded clothes and had enjoyed being treated as a reputable lady. Yet, here she was, in an attempt to dive into the lake merely to retrieve those few pieces of clothing. Fane took two steps forward and immediately grabbed onto Selena. "Forget about them, my dear," he called out, "they're only three pieces of clothing anyway. I'll bring you out and buy you another one!" Selena was unmoved. "No," she protested. "These clothes are so expensive, and the money you earned has risked your life. Not to mention, this is the first time you bought me clothes. I have to fish them up, and they can still be worn, too!" Fane chuckled as he heard that statement. He felt utterly touched; he thought that having a wife like her would make him a happy man for the rest of his life. As he released her hand, Fane dove into the lake and picked up the clothes. He was drenched head to toe, but the words Selena spoke to him warmed his heart. "No way. They're actually authentic?" As the shocked Fiona saw the event unfolding before her, she looked toward Joan and sputtered, "Where'd your son get the money from?" Joan let out a bitter laugh before she responded, "It's all thanks to the five years my son has served as a soldier. When he was discharged this time and upon his return, he was given some prize money from being discharged. He used that money to buy us clothes, didn't he? Although the money he earned had placed him at great risk, he willingly spent it all for Selena!" "I…" Fiona was completely speechless. She did not expect those clothes were genuine international branded clothes. "You're

hopeless. It doesn't matter if it's authentic or not; you can't just toss it into the lake! It came from Fane's thoughtfulness!" Even the usually silent Andrew could not help but glare at Fiona. Fane was already out of the lake at this moment. He looked at Andrew before saying, "Let's head back now, father-in-law. Your leg was smashed by accident. Don't you worry, though, I can help you heal!" "That's impossible, right?" Andrew's heart skipped a beat when he heard that statement. He frowned after that and said, "When we went to get it checked in a well-known hospital, the doctor mentioned that it'll still limp even after it's treated. This is a nerve problem, and the bones underneath are all progressively necrotic. Even as I'm walking now, I feel numb!" "What nonsense are you spouting? You, a useless piece of trash, know medical treatment? I'll never believe you!" Fiona, on the other hand, rolled her eyes at Fane and barked, "Fane, don't you dare think that we'd accept you just by giving the prize money this time and buying a few clothes for my daughter. I'm telling you now: it's not happening!" Fiona then fell into a momentary silence before she continued her tirade, "We've endured so much hardship all these years. How is this small amount of money enough for us? Besides, based on reason, you're required to give the ten million prize money to us during the old man's seventieth birthday. Otherwise, don't even think for a second that we'll acknowledge you!" "What on Earth are you saying, Mom?! He's still Kylie's father, and the child can't live without a father. Besides, he's a responsible man!" Selena stared at Fiona furiously. "It doesn't matter if you guys acknowledge him or not," she added, "as in my heart, he's my—Selena Taylor's—man. Even if you have him exiled from the Taylor family, I'll never marry Young Master Clark or Young Master Wilson. From how I see it, those people aren't even a fraction of a man Fane is." "You—" Fiona was livid. She pointed at Selena and said, "How did I give birth to a daughter like you? You're being disrespectful now, do you understand? Are you here to pressure your mother to death? Are you only satisfied when I'm dead after being backed into a corner?" "I—that's not what I meant! You can't always force me, you

know?" Selena could only hold back her frustrations when she noticed her mother lamenting on the side. "Fine. Stop talking about it, Ma. This whole ordeal is my fault, I admit it!" "I—Fane Woods—am a man, and I'll never go back on any word I've said. I'll give you ten million when the time comes, and I'll never let Selena be parted from me!" Fane then let out a dry laugh and said, "Alright, it's getting late now. Let's all go back to take a shower, change into fresh clothes, and we'll all eat out tonight." Fiona's eyes lit up at the mere mention of eating out. They had lived meagerly for the last five years and Selena was restricted to find work. She could only rely on the money she made from picking up trash for her family's living. Aside from Selena, all the expenses they had were paid with Andrew's earnings. His monthly pay was not much, but he forked everything out every month to allow Selena to buy groceries. They lived as they saved. Hence, Fiona actually felt quite happy when she heard that. Just like before, however, her expression turned cold as she scoffed, "Are you sure about eating out? I'm telling you now, I won't accept places that are considered low-class. If you want me to come along, it should only be a lavishly high-class restaurant!" "Of course. As long you're willing, Mom. Anywhere you pick is fine!" Fane chuckled then hailed two cabs. "Let's go," he spoke. "We'll head back first since Kylie and Jenny are both waiting for us. I think the little rascal should be famished by now. Have Jenny be at our home next time. She can help us take care of Kylie and clean up the house." Fiona rolled her eyes at Fane. She said, "Don't call me Mom. If I don't see the ten million prize money, I'll never acknowledge you as our family's son in law. Hmph!" Selena, on the other hand, was frowning. "Jenny is quite good, but the wages our Taylor family offers aren't too low either," she mumbled. "It'd cost six to seven thousand bucks per month. We can't afford that!" "Don't you worry, I'll take care of the money. It's almost the start of the school's semester, too, so we should enroll Kylie to a school soon!" Fane chuckled as he made that statement. "Yeah!" Selena nodded. It did not take too long for them to reach home with their cabs. At this very moment, one

of the three guardians in the Loner family—Spectre Face—rushed frantically to look for James after receiving a phone call.

Chapter 19

“Master, Master! I’ve made several phone calls, and I finally found something about the whole situation with Fane. It’s very peculiar!” Spectre Face called out to James as he rushed in frantically. “Peculiar?” James was somewhat startled when he heard what Spectre Face had to say. He never thought he would describe Fane as ‘peculiar’. “Have a look. This is the information I got from people I tasked in the military to look into Fane.” “There’s only his name, his ID number, and his past job as a takeout delivery boy. After that, he became the son-in-law of the Taylor family. He got enlisted on the second day of his marriage, and what happens after that is something we can’t find. Suddenly, five years later, he returned to the Middle Province!” Spectre Face frowned and said, “Isn’t such a casefile peculiar? Not only was information during his enlistment a mystery, but the department he was enlisted in was unknown as well. All we could find was that his mother’s name is Joan Xavier, currently working as a cleaner in the Middle Province. We have nothing on his father!” “Can’t find anything about his father, and his situation during his enlistment is also a complete mystery…” There was a frown on his face, but James soon came to a deduction. “Judging from the looks of it, there’s a huge possibility that someone had intentionally erased all records about him!” he articulated. “Or perhaps, this is just his surface-level casefile and that his identity isn’t that simple. There might be a very confidential and secretive casefile on him!” “Master, if that’s the case, this brat’s identity is certainly not that simple. Otherwise, the government wouldn’t blatantly hide his casefile and stop anyone from digging into him!” The astounded Spectre Face remarked, “To have power for movement of this scale... If he wasn’t a God of War, he’d be close to one!” “Yes, yes, yes! It has to be that!” Stirred, James nodded immediately and ordered, “Go, continue your search on Fane’s current

situation in the Middle Province. Isn't he living with the Taylor family? Look into how Fane is doing while he lives in the Taylor family home, and look into what he's doing right now!" "Not a problem, Master. I, too, feel that this little brat isn't as plain as we think!" Spectre Face nodded immediately as he said, "It seems that there's not just one God of War that has returned to the Middle Province this time. There are two!" "Haha. This is such a good opportunity for us, the Drake family!" James chuckled humorously. Racking his brain for a moment, he then spoke, "Look into where he currently is right now. I can't get in contact with him right now. Besides, he's seen me during the day, and he might suspect that we're investigating him if he sees me again at night. Still, we can arrange for Titus or Tanner to get in contact with him!" Spectre Face tittered. "Excellent idea. I'll have it arranged right now! As for his situation in the Taylor family's home, we can slowly investigate and probe progressively. I believe we can find out his current whereabouts in less than an hour!" It was only after Fane returned to his home did he recall something. Frowning, he asked, "My dear, where will I be sleeping tonight?" Selena blushed after hearing that. That would actually be a problem. Both of them were married; they still had a daughter. It was during their wedding night, when Selena was drunk, that they did the deed. Selena remained silent for a really long while as she had no idea how to answer him. Upon noticing the distraught look on Selena's face, Fane mirthfully spoke, "Don't worry, I'll sleep in any empty rooms!" Selena frowned and said, "There are only so many rooms in total. Your mom has one, and so does my mom. Although it's rare for my brother to return, he has one as well. Kylie and I are sharing a room. Four rooms and not a single one remains. Fortunately, Jenny is renting a house outside. Otherwise, she herself won't have room to sleep in!" Fane was embarrassed as he replied with a bitter laugh, "The storeroom is also fine. As long as it provides cover from wind and rain. When we were on a mission out there back then, we survived for a month's time on a deserted island." "Deserted island!" After Selena heard that, she frowned and said, "It had to be hard for

you, right?" "No. I'd always be thinking that I have such a beautiful wife waiting at home for me should we be victorious. With that thought in mind, I'd be motivated!" Fane looked at Selena who was right in front of him; the hellish torture he endured for five years was worth every second. Five years of absolute hell had honed him into a sharp blade. This sharp blade, however, had to hide its edges to protect his woman and family. Selena felt utterly gratified after she heard what Fane had to say. She was a rebel against her family from the very beginning, but she soon realized she was unable to part with the child inside her belly. Now, Fane made her feel that she could depend on him. "You… I think you should just share a room with us!" Selena finally pouted her lips as her blush seared. Fane coughed. "Well then, dear wife, can I cuddle with you while I sleep?" Fane became giddy as the woman before him was absolutely gentle and kind. Selena's watery eyes could charm anyone. "No. Allowing you to share a room with me is pretty good on its own. The child was an accident back then and, besides, I can't fully accept you now. Not yet!" Selena turned around then said, "You can only sleep on the floor with a carpet. Wait...wait till our relationship grows much deeper in the future, and I'll think about then! Hurry up and take a shower. Kylie's delighted when she heard that we'll have a feast tonight." "Alright, I'll get to it right now!" Unexpectedly, just as Fane had just gone to take a shower, Fiona came over to Selena's room. She then coldly asked, "There aren't any extra rooms, so where will Fane be sleeping tonight?" "On the floor. Am I not placing the carpet down now?" Selena let out a bitter laugh as she took the covers out. Upon noticing that, Fiona's expression recovered slightly. She then said, "Daughter, you can't ever allow that b*stard child to touch you now, do you understand? If it wasn't for him, we won't be living in such a hellish state. Besides, as long as I've not seen the promised ten million, you can't sell yourself short. Do you understand? Men will never appreciate anything they can easily get!" "You're being too judgemental now, don't you think, Ma? From how I see it, as long as Fane treats us well and if we work hard together, everything would be better!"

Selena pondered for a moment then added, “Besides, he’s not too bad. He treats me well, he treats Kylie well, and he’s also very respectful toward his mother!” “What’s good without money? Can he treat you well, feed our family with good food, dress better, and live better? Only by giving us money to spend is treating you well, not by saying a couple of kind statements!” After Fiona finished her harangue, she got out immediately after slamming the door. “I don’t care,” she sneered. “Since he mentioned that he’ll be treating us to dinner tonight, I want to make it extremely difficult for him! I want him to know, he can’t afford to treat us!”

Chapter 20

“Yay, yay! We can go for a meal now!” Kylie was dressed in a beautiful mini princess dress while she pranced delightfully in the courtyard. “Madam, I won’t be joining you guys. I still have some matters to attend to, so I’ll take my leave now.” Jenny smiled at Selena. “A date with your boyfriend again? Oh, you. Hurry up and go!” Selena spoke with a compassionate smile. Joan had already finished her shower at that moment. She changed into the new clothes Fane had bought for her; she looked younger at a short glance. Although she was already in her forties, she looked younger and more elegant. Joan looked effortlessly beautiful, and she had her natural elegance as well. Although she was usually dressed in her cleaner’s uniform to work, she still emanated a personal grace that only belonged to her and no one else. It was also this reason that Fane's father fell in love with her back then. Unfortunately… “Ma, you look pretty in that dress!” Selena smiled as she took a look at Joan. “Oh, you. Stop flattering me; I’m already old!” Joan chuckled while she spoke. Fiona who was sitting on the side could not hold herself back from mumbling while she witnessed that scene. “Am I her birth mother, or is she?” she mumbled. “Goddamnit…” Andrew, on the other hand, was smoking. He had a frown on his face as he seemed to be lost in thoughts. After a moment, he nudged Fiona next to him with his elbow and said, “Say, Fane said he can heal my

leg. Do you think it's possible?" Fiona immediately said, "You actually believe the nonsense he sputtered? Don't you know anything about him? He's only a soldier, so is he capable of healing your leg? I think it's more likely that he'll break your leg!" Andrew was speechless. Embarrassed, he found himself unable to argue. Fiona then looked at the direction of the washroom and spoke impatiently. "How is that brat taking such a long shower? I'm already famished!" Andrew took a look at the time and said, "It's only been five minutes, though. You were taking a shower for half an hour earlier…" Although this courtyard seemed old and disheveled, it was in a strategic location. After Fane was done with his shower, a few of them began to discuss where to eat while they strolled. "Hmm, not this one. It's too cheap. It's not enough!" "This one is even worse. A public buffet? Meaningless!" As she strolled, Fiona intentionally looked at Fane with disdainful eyes while she goaded him, "Fane, you suggested treating us to a meal. I want to eat in a better restaurant. Have you brought enough money? Don't bail on us after we're done with our meal!" "Don't worry. Today's my first time treating everyone to a meal, so we should all be happy. My dear mother-in-law, just pick as you please, and eat to your heart's content!" Fane then turned to Kylie, who was in Selena's arms. He then reached out and said, "Kylie, let Daddy carry you for a bit!" The flustered Kylie looked toward Selena with her pair of huge sharp eyes, seemingly asking for her approval. "Kylie, he's your father. Hurry and call out to your father. Let him carry you." Selena felt her emotions stirred. She lamented at the fact that a child could not be without a father. On the day her child was born, she started her long journey of waiting. She was internally terrified. She was afraid of Fane dying on the battlefield. "Da—Daddy!" Kylie reached out and called out to her father with her child-like voice. As a Supreme Warrior, Fane's heart wrenched the second he heard her innocent voice. It was the first time she called him 'daddy'. In the five years of constant battle, he felt like he had slowly become downright merciless and cold-blooded. However, he never expected his heart would soften after just hearing his

daughter calling him daddy in such a sweet way. “Let’s eat here. This place seems alright!” Just as Fane was carrying Kylie, Fiona noticed an impressive looking restaurant. Although it was not in some fancy hotel, the style of this restaurant looked impressive and rather classy. The main point was that the restaurant must have a very expensive rent to have been built at that spot. In other words, the prices of the food must be expensive as well. “Hmm… You’ve got good taste, dear mother-in-law. This place has a romantic feel to it, and the interior design isn’t bad. Music is also playing in the background. Truly, only people who know how to enjoy life would choose such a place!” After Fane took a look at it, he nodded in agreement as well. “Well, isn’t it obvious? Just look at who picked it!” Fiona’s expression seemed slightly prideful before her eyes swiftly shifted, rolling at Fane. “Don’t even think for a second that praising me would make me forgive everything you’ve done, brat,” she sneered. “I’m telling you, that ten million shouldn't be short by…” … Upon noticing Fane and the group of people approaching, a beautiful waitress walked up to them and started catering to them. “Please come inside, all of you! Our services here aren’t any less than the ones in those fancy hotels. Besides, our customers are rather reputable people…” “Give me a table close to the windows!” Fane nodded and the rest took their seats. The beautiful waitress came over with a menu. “I’ll order!” Fiona immediately snatched the menu. After taking a look, she pointed at the lobster and said, “This ain’t bad. One would cost more than a thousand, right? How many people do we have here? Let’s have one for each!” “Ma, why are you ordering that much? It’s such a waste, don’t you think so?” Selena was completely speechless. Judging from the looks of things, her mother was actually going to make it difficult for Fane. “How could you say that, my daughter? He said it himself; he can make 30 million in a month. That would mean he’ll make 100,000 bucks in a day, right? For a person like that, could he not afford this meal?” Fiona raised her voice intentionally. In an instant, the few tables around them started looking their way. “No way...he’s that capable? 100,000 a day? Is he boasting? 30 million

a month. Does that mean he'd make 300 million in a year?" A woman gasped audibly. "That's ludicrous. Truly can't judge from his looks, though. That man seems to be dressed normally, doesn't he?" "Is this real? Why come here if he makes thirty million bucks a month? Why don't they head to a five-star restaurant then?" "Do you think it's cheap here? It really isn't. It's easy to spend tens of thousands here." More people were starting to look at Fane. Some were envious, while some were merely interested to see who on earth this person was to have such power. Fiona grinned when she noticed the attention. Would he be completely humiliated if he was unable to pay later? Until then, he would not have the pride left to marry her daughter! "Must you be so loud when ordering food, Ma?" Selena was speechless. It genuinely seemed like Fiona wished to humiliate Fane in public. "Pardon me, I'm a loud talker!" Fiona laughed as she immediately crossed her arms. "You wouldn't mind now, would you, Fane? After all, you know our Selena is nicknamed the most beautiful maiden in the entire Middle Province!" "Her status is priceless. If you can't even afford a single meal, do you think you're worthy of her?" "If you can't even fork out the money for this meal, I suggest you leave her sooner rather than later for her own good! Only Young Master Wilson and Young Master Clark can provide my daughter with happiness!" She stared directly at Fane as she spoke, and she continued word by word, "And you'll only drag my daughter down. Drag our family down. I advise you: Don't. Humiliate. Yourself." After Fane heard that statement, he chuckled coldly as he seemed unfazed. He said, "Dear mother-in-law, how can you speak so much in one meal? Don't you worry; I'm the only one that can secure Selena's happiness. I'll still be able to pay everything, even if you ordered the entire menu tonight!" "Haha! You speak heavy words. Well, don't mind if I do!" The corners of Fiona's mouth twitched as she held in a full belly of disdain. She wanted him to know what ruthless meant tonight!

Chapter 21

In the restaurant, Fiona Lewis was so angry that her complexion turned red and her chest heaved. She would not be mocked and looked down on in these past five years if it was not because of Fane Woods. Fane Woods was the reason for everything. Everything happened because of this useless son-in-law. Instantly, the atmosphere became very tense! Fiona thought of Young Master Clark and Young Master Wilson, who were young masters of second-class aristocratic families and were richer than the Taylor family. When she thought about the 50 million that Young Master Wilson was willing to pay as a betrothal gift, all she wished was to immediately chase away this veteran brat in front of her. She hated how this brat had taken advantage of her drunk daughter at the night of the wedding and would never forgive him. With so many eyes on him, she wanted to see how Fane would conclude the matter. It was rumored that veterans who came back from war would get a generous amount of bonus, but it would generally be around 200 to 300 thousand. Those who got more were the ones who had a meritorious service or the ones who had an official position. It was clear that Fane was not that kind of person. Furthermore, he had probably already spent most of his money in order to make her daughter happy and had not much left. If she ordered any more, Fane would have to sell himself to this place. “This, give me two of this. This one too, it looks good.” Fiona suddenly saw the beverage section at the bottom. In the beverage section, there were bottles of wine priced below 100, which was suitable for normal consumers. There were also beverages and alcohol that were suitable for rich people, and the most expensive one was 20 thousand bucks. “This red wine, 20 thousand bucks per bottle, get me 20 bottles of it. After all, Selena’s father is very troubled for these few years and has gotten fonder of drinking wine!” Subsequently, Fiona smiled, faced Fane, and asked, “20 bottles?” Joan Xavier inhaled sharply after she heard Fiona and was worried that Fane did not have enough money with him. She spoke lightly with a frown, “Selena’s mother, it’s 400 thousand bucks for 20 bottles. On top of that, not many of us here like drinking. How can we finish so much wine? “Also, it’s

such a big amount of money. We are one family, why would you do this?" Joan spoke in a pleading tone. "Who are your family? That is merely what you think and I don't think so!" Fiona had a cold smile on her face. "Lady, you can order more alcohol later, if you feel that it's insufficient. However, if you place an order now, it cannot be refunded even if you did not open the bottle. We can, however, reserve it for your next visit..." The pretty waitress could also see that this mother-in-law was obviously being deliberately arrogant toward her son-in-law that she disliked, so the waitress spoke up to remind her. "No problem, we can take it away even if we cannot finish it! He has to be rich to be my son-in-law!" Fiona handed the menu back to the waitress. Only then did she look at Joan with a fake smile, "Joan, you should not take me as your son's mother-in-law right now. It's said that marriage requires both people to come from the same social status. We are not from the same class. "On top of that, he said that he would give me a 10 million worth of betrothal gift. It's better that we discuss our relationship after your son pays the 10 million betrothal gift!" Fiona continued saying. "Mum, aren't you going overboard for doing this? It's such a big sum, do you really want Fane to get into trouble?" Selena Taylor was extremely angry. She had no idea that her mother would become so harsh and ridicule. "He allowed me to order as I please, how am I acting overboard? That's funny. If you can't afford to treat us to a meal, why did you agree to it? Is it really so hard to acknowledge that you are poor and inadequate?" Fiona asked, as if she was not embarrassed that people around them were watching them as a joke. "Selena, it's fine. She's your mother and also my mother. It's fine if she wants to eat better food! If we cannot finish it, we can take away and eat it at home. As long as there's no wastage!" Fane smiled calmly and even spoke up for Fiona. "In my opinion, this is a wastage." Selena twitched her mouth and could not help but started mumbling. After a while, the big meal started. The delicious dishes were served and placed in front of Fane and the others. "Eat more, Kylie!" Looking at the little one swallowing saliva by the table, Fane smiled as he served her dishes. Selena looked at

how cozy the scene was but had a frown on her face. She thought, could Fane Woods have achieved something during his five years in the war zone? When others come back, they would normally receive 200 to 300 thousand as a bonus. Fane, who had stayed there for five years, might have 400 to 500 thousand. Even if he only had a small achievement, he might have one million bucks worth of reward. If this was the case, buying clothes and other things today cost him around 200 thousand, Fane might still have 800 thousand with him. All the dishes on the table together with the red wine were estimated to be around 500 thousand. 'Fane should have enough money,' she thought. However, the money was exchanged with Fane's life in extreme difficulty. She felt reluctant that the money was 'eaten' in one meal. Of course, she felt a little comfort in her heart because Fane was willing to invest everything for her. It seemed that she managed to find a good man out of her impulsive move. "Darling, what are you thinking about? Start eating!" Fane smiled, picked up a piece of prawn, and placed it in Selena's bowl. "Hmm, let's eat!" Selena looked at Kylie, who was eating happily. A sweet smile appeared on her face. However, what they were not aware of was that a security guard walked out immediately when he saw Selena and Fane. He headed to the street outside and made a call to Young Master Wilson, who was drinking alcohol. As Young Master Wilson ended the call, Ivan Taylor, who was by his side immediately asked, "Oh Young Master. Wilson, what's the matter? Somebody actually contacted you so late at night!" "That rubbish son-in-law that married into the wife's family, actually brought my goddess, Selena, to have dinner in the high-end restaurant owned by my family. It seems that this young man has returned from the army and got some money. He ordered 20 bottles of red wine that costs 20 thousand bucks each!" The fatty bit the chicken drumstick in his hand ruthlessly and said again, "That motherf*cker, I'm f*cking mad. I'm so much richer than the useless veteran. I'm the young master of the Wilson family and I'd take over the Wilson family's estates. Your cousin was...by that guy, and they even have a child. I just don't understand no matter how

much I think about it." "Ao much red wine? It seems that the young man had some luck and some small achievements in the past five years. If not, how would he have the money to pay for the bill, otherwise?" Ivan frowned, drank a mouthful of red wine, and his eyes lit up. "Young Master Wilson, I actually have an idea. How do you feel if Goddess Selena comes over to you obediently tonight?" When Fatty Wilson heard this, his small eyes suddenly widened and he said in excitement, "What's the idea? As long as you can make her come to me obediently, I'll have a lot to offer you!" "Haha, don't worry. It'll definitely work. Young Master Wilson, you just wait for my cousin's body tonight!" Ivan Taylor smiled evilly, his face had a cunning expression.

Chapter 22

"Oh my, I am so full. It's so delicious. I haven't eaten good food like this for such a long time!" Fiona ate to her heart's content. She had suffered a lot for these past five years. It was all because of that bastard, Fane Woods. He did not only cause her daughter to be driven out of the Taylor family, even both of them old folks suffered together. It had been five years, she had not eaten luxury meals like this for five years! She did not care if Fane had the money to pay the bill. After all, the person who would suffer from the embarrassment was not her. After all, nobody asked Fane to act rich and offer to pay. "Wow, I'm so jealous! I estimate that this table's bill must be around 200 thousand! That is the most expensive red wine available here!" Most of the people at the tables around them had not left, quite a number of people looked at the delicious dishes on the table and were extremely envious. "It really is a lot. Especially the 20 bottles of red wine that they only drank two bottles of. Oh my, they ordered so much. They really are rich!" One of the men lamented. "Wait, look at that man. Does he look like a person who earns a million a day? He dresses so ordinarily. Does he really have the money to pay the bill? Do they plan to eat a free meal?" On the other hand, one of the women doubted Fane's ability to pay the bill. "Has

everybody finished eating? I'll get the bill if everyone's done!" Fane smiled and was prepared to pay the bill. "Go, go, we are done. Hey, Pretty, how much is everything? Please pack these wine, we would like to take them away!" Fiona waved to the waitress. She wanted to see if Fane could manage to come up with so much money. What they did not anticipate was that the waitress did not come over, a manager walked over with a smile instead. He passed the bill to Fane, "Sir, can you please go over there and pay the bill? Thank you for your visit!" Fane looked at this man's smile and felt a little weird. Why did his smile look insidious? He lowered his head to look at the bill in his hand. He immediately frowned, "I'm sorry, but I don't think that I will pay such a bill tonight!" The customers at the nearby tables were stunned. This person asked his mother-in-law to order whatever she wanted and was unable to pay the bill? "F*ck me, these people are really here for a free meal!" "How can they be so shameless? They acted as if they were very rich just now and even said that they earn 30 million every month. A man who earns 30 million a month can't even pay a 400 thousand bill?" A few people started chatting on. Some of the people even looked at Fane with some feeling of dislike in their eyes. "This person is so daring. Can he afford to offend the person who has the ability to open such a high-end restaurant? Is he looking for trouble?" Some of the people were waiting to watch a good show. Although Selena felt a little sorry about spending the money, but, there was nothing she could do. She had stood up and was prepared to leave after Fane paid the bill. She had no idea that there would be such a scene. She was frightened and directly sat back on the chair, a little stunned. Did Fane really not have the money? If he did not have money, where did his previous confidence come from? "Haha. Sir, I'm afraid that you can't leave here if you don't pay the bill at our place!" that manager said and laughed as he looked at Fane.

Chapter 23

”Great, Fane Woods. Weren’t you very proud and said that you can pay the bill? Weren’t you the one who asked me to order whatever I want? You’re finally admitting that you have no money, right? “Since you don’t have any money, why do you need to boast more than your abilities in order to impress us? Selena, look at this. Is this person really worthy of you marrying?” Fiona was extremely angry at that moment. She pulled Andrew Taylor and said, “Go go go, let’s leave. Leave him here and see how he would settle this matter. Serves him right even if he gets killed. Why act rich when he does not have money?” “Fane, you have really let us down!” Andrew was also extremely angry. “Just tell the truth if you don’t have money. We wouldn’t have been so embarrassed. You say that you have money when you don’t and want to treat us to a meal. How can we hand our daughter to such a person like you?” “Fane, what’s going on? Is it true that you don’t have the money?” Selena took a deep exhale, looked at Fane and asked. Fane smiled bitterly, passed the bill to Selena and said, “It’s not because that I don’t have money, it’s because there’s really no way to pay such a bill and I won’t pay it!” Selena looked at it with doubt written all over her face. After she looked, her facial expression suddenly darkened. Looking at the manager, she said, “Mister, what’s going on? We only spent around four hundred thousand, why is it over four million on the bill?” “No way?” Fiona snatched the bill over. She looked at it in detail and then looked at the manager in front of them. “What’s wrong with this place? This is daylight robbery! Isn’t this wine twenty thousand per bottle? Why is it billed as two hundred thousand per bottle? Did you mistaken and added an additional zero?” “Haha, I’m sorry. This is the correct price. It so happens that these twenty bottles of wine were transported over through airfreight so all the alcohol today has increased in price! You ordered twenty bottles and that is four million. Together with the pricing of the dishes, it is four million and eighty thousand. Isn’t that right?” That manager laughed and said again, “I’m afraid that you cannot act dishonestly today even if you want to! You have to pay for the bill!” “You… This is a scam! Your shop is cheating. It

is stated twenty thousand for every bottle on the menu!" Selena was extremely angry. She just realized that she and the others have misunderstood Fane. It was not because of Fane not wanting to pay the bill, it was true that he should not pay such a bill. "Yes, your shop is a total scam! A table of dishes like this costs four million plus, why don't you go rob?" Both Fiona and Andrew were also very angry as they had never met with such a case before. It was no wonder why Fane did not have the money to pay the bill. How could he pay such an expensive bill? "It seems like you can't pay the bill, right?" The manager clapped his hands and about twenty people rushed out from the back of the restaurant in a sudden. All of them looked fierce. Fiona, who was originally arguing with them, was frightened and lost her previous grandeur. She immediately said with a smile, "Hey...hey, handsome man, you must have remembered wrongly. We only made the order because we saw the price on the menu and it was indeed twenty thousand per bottle . If you don't believe it, you can ask the waitress over there!" "Come over, bring the menu and let them have a look!" The manager waved his hand at the pretty waitress, the waitress quickly walked over with a menu and handed it to Fiona. "Have a look, have a look. Isn't it twenty thousand here?" Fiona held the menu, immediately pointed at the price and said. "This lady, please look carefully. How many zeros are on it? It's five zeros, not four. This is two hundred thousand per bottle!" the fat manager smiled coldly and said. Fiona counted carefully as her face darkened. "Why, why is it five zeros? This is really two hundred thousand per bottle?"

Chapter 24

"Let me have a look, let me have a look…" Andrew also took the menu and looked at it cautiously. His face darkened after he finished looking at it. "I only see four zeros just now. Why is it five zeros now?" "Haha, do you guys have the blurred vision of an old person? It has always been five zeros, you guys must have seen wrongly!" The fat manager said with a smile, "No

matter what, you have to pay since you made the order!" Fiona's eyes gleamed and spoke again after thinking about it, "This is none of our business. It's Fane Woods, he was the one treating us to dinner. The rest of us can leave, right? You can just go after him!" After she finished speaking, she signaled Selena and the others to leave together. As for Fane? He asked for this. This was more than four million and it was totally understandable that Fane could not afford to pay it. Even if it was not more than four million, it was possible that Fane did not even have the money to pay around 400 thousand. "I'm sorry. I'm afraid that all of you cannot leave here temporarily!" The manager waved his hand and a few of the men moved forward to surround them in a circle. "Fane, I blame all of this on you. Why did you treat us to a meal when there's no need to? You even acted generous. Well, isn't this just great? It's such a big amount, what should we do now? Are you trying to kill us all?" When she realized that they could not leave, Fiona looked at Fane in a flustered and exasperated way. "Mother, what are you saying? It should be your fault as you were the one who ordered the most expensive wine. All of those were ordered on your request!" Selena also felt helpless and had no idea what to do at that moment. "If Fane hadn't let me order as I please, would I order it? Besides, who knew that he was so poor!" Fiona pouted but actually felt guilty inside. In this case, all of them were surrounded and the other party did not allow everyone, including her, to leave. What should they do now? That was more than four million and it was not a small amount! After Selena thought about, she smiled at the manager, "Mister, let's see. We did order 20 bottles but we only drank two bottles. How about this, we pay the money for these two bottles and we return the remaining 18 bottles. After all, we haven't opened it and you can still sell it, right? I believe that my husband can still come up with 480 thousand!" "Yes, they only drank two bottles, just take the money for the two bottles!" A few of the onlookers could not stand it anymore. It was obvious that the people of this restaurant did that on purpose. They, too, saw the menu and the most expensive wine was only 20 thousand per bottle.

“What does it have to do with you guys?” The fat manager turned around and stared at the other party before turning around and said to Selena, “Young lady, the situation here is you must pay after you made the order. I believe that our waitress had told you this. You can leave it with us here or take away if you cannot finish. However, you have to pay the bill once you make the order!” “What’s the difference between you doing this and robbing?” Fane pulled Selena back and said coldly, “If only one of us saw it wrongly then it must be giddiness, but, can so many of us be giddy at the same time? In my opinion, the latest menu that you showed us must have been newly made? I’m sorry but I am still saying the same thing, I’m not paying this bill today! I will not pay you even if it’s 480 thousand!” “Young man, I see that you refuse to be convinced unless you are faced with the grim reality, right?” The manager laughed coldly and few of the men immediately moved forward and surrounded them. On the other hand, the manager spoke to the other guests in the restaurant, “Everyone, you may leave. The meal is on the house today. We have people causing us trouble here, we need to settle it!” When the other guests heard him, they were so frightened that they ran out one after another. It was as if they were afraid that it would affect them too. “What do you want to do? You want to rob us? We are from the Taylor family!” Selena was really frightened when she saw this situation and she shouted out loudly.

Chapter 25

After all, the Taylor family still had some influence. Perhaps using the Taylor family’s name would work. As soon as the manager heard this, he immediately waved his hand to order everyone stop and said with a smile, “From the Taylor family? You must be Selena Taylor. If that is the case, you may go beg our boss and see if this issue can be solved!” “Who is your boss?” Fane immediately frowned when he heard this and he was a little suspicious in his heart. Looking at this situation, it seemed that the other party knew that Selena was here and this was them deliberately causing

trouble to Fane and the others. “Haha, young man, you have no right to know who our boss is!” That fat manager laughed again before saying again, “Miss Taylor, our boss is inside. You should go talk to him. I believe he might let today’s issue go for you!” “Oh… Okay!” Selena frowned and could only force herself to agree. There were so many people on his side, while she, except Fane who had served the military, only had old and weak folks. She did not want this matter to escalate. What would happen to Kylie if they got into a fight? What should they do about her parents and Fane’s mother? “I’ll go with you!” Fane was a little worried and said immediately. “I‘m sorry but my boss did not say that he would meet you, hence, you cannot go in. Besides, we heard about you. You are just a son-in-law who married into the wife’s family. You can’t even be considered as one of the Taylor’s family. As an outsider, you don’t qualify speaking with our boss!” The restaurant’s manager laughed coldly. “Really? Let’s see if you can stop me then!” Fane’s face darken and a scary aura of killing oozed out of his body. It caused people to feel like the surrounding temperature had suddenly dropped a few degrees. Selena was frighten when Selena saw what was happening. She was afraid that Fane would cause any trouble so she immediately turned around and said to Fane, “What do you want to do following me? You just need to wait for me here, I will come out in a short while!” “But, I am worried that you will be in danger…” Fane frowned. “Nothing will happen, what could be dangerous? I will go and ask their boss to see if we can return these 18 bottles that we did not drink. After all, I am Zeus Taylor’s granddaughter. They won’t dare to act recklessly!” Selena smiled bitterly and said to Fane again, “You just need to wait for me here.” “Alright, I’ll only give you five minutes. If I don’t see you coming out after five minutes, I’ll barge in!” Fane saw Selena’s begging look in her eyes and could only nod. He did not want Selena to worry for him anymore. Furthermore, he did not want to injure anyone with Kylie around. It would not be good if it was seen by Kylie and caused the child to be frightened. “Ok!” Selena nodded before walking inside with the fat man. They walked

deeper into the restaurant and went up to the second floor before coming in front of a private room's door. "Our boss is waiting for you inside. Don't have to be afraid, I'm sure you know our boss. Go in and have a chat with him and the four million bill today might be waived!" The manager smiled and stood in front of the door to keep watch.

Chapter 26

Standing in front of the private room's door, Selena Taylor became a little hesitant. She had a feeling that this matter was staged. She saw the menu, the most expensive red wine was 20 thousand per bottle, how did it become 200 thousand? On top of that, the person in this private room was a familiar person. This made her even more hesitant. If the other party was a familiar person, why did they approach in such a way? However, if she did not enter the room, what would happen to Kylie if they all cannot leave the place? Fane was in the army for a few years and seemed energetic enough to fight. It was not a problem for him to take down two or three people. However, the other party had a lot of people, a dozen of them. They did not seem to be normal gangsters you see on the street. No matter how good Fane was, it was difficult to fight being on the disadvantaged side with less people. According to Fane's temper, it would be even troublesome if he really started fighting with the other party. With all the pressure, Selena really regretted deeply in her heart. She really should not have come out for dinner, or she should not have come to this kind of place. By spending a few hundred to eat at some small home-cooked restaurant on the street would have been a good idea too. With no other way, she could only exhale heavily, pushed the door open, and walked inside. After she entered, her face darkened because she discovered that the person who sat in this private room waiting for her, was Young Master Wilson, Michael Wilson. "Young Master Wilson, you're the boss of this restaurant! I didn't expect that!" Selena smiled indifferently and closed the door. "You knew that I was having dinner downstairs so you put on a show just to see me? I don't like

making jokes like this!" "Haha!" Michael stood up and walked toward her. "Selena, you have always ignored me. Would you come meet me if it wasn't for that?" He smiled and continued, "How? Are you surprised? Is this unexpected? The Wilson family owns many businesses. This restaurant is just one of them. If you like it, you will be the lady boss of this place after marrying me in the future. You can come here at any time to eat and drink for free. How good is that! If that's not possible, you can be my woman in secret!" While speaking, Michael stretched his hands out to touch Selena's chin. Selena stepped two steps backward, dodged to the side to avoid him. She said with a cold expression, "Michael Wilson, you can stop dreaming. I don't like you at all. Besides, don't think that I'm clueless, you have had fun with quite a few women outside, just because you come from a rich family. Do you think that I will like you?" Wilson was not happy about it and his face sank as Selena pointed out so clearly. "Hehe, Selena, I have liked you for so many years and you really would not give me a chance?" After he spoke, Michael walked to a stool and sat down on it before saying, "Yes, yes, yes, I'm a playboy and I have no control over my diet so I gained weight. However, I really like you! I swear that after you marry me, I will not look for those women again!" Michael spoke while looking at Selena's voluptuous chest and swallowed his saliva hard. "Don't worry, Selena. You're incomparable to those women. I will honour my words!" "Michael, there's a saying, it's difficult to change one's habit! "Your lust has become a habit. Do you think that you can change this type of thing by just saying you want to change? Besides, it has nothing to do with me. I don't like you at all!" Selena really did not expect that the person waiting for her tonight would be Michael. Although Michael had been pursuing her constantly before this, he had never used such means. He sent flowers or something else in his previous attempts.

Chapter 27

However, Selena had never responded to him let alone given him chances. Who would have thought that this person would use cheat in order to see her for once this time. “Okay, I’ve said what I should say. My parents are still waiting for me downstairs! That wine should still be billed as 20 thousand per bottle and the total should be four hundred and eighty thousand. We will take away the remaining eighteen bottles that we have not opened!” Selena said her last words, turned around, opened the door, and prepared to leave. “Wait!” Just as she was about to open the door, Michael stood up. “Selena, do you think that the useless brat will have enough money to pay for a four hundred and eighty thousand bill?” “I believe that he will be able to come up with the money. Although he is not as rich as you, but, at least he will not lie to me!” Selena said coldly. ”Hahaha, Selena, I’m sorry. You thought that I’m joking just to see you?” Michael had already become flustered and red, and his eyes looked fierce. “This time, if you don’t pay four hundred and eight million, don’t think about leaving!” “You…” Selena had never imagined that Michael, who was always weak, would say such a thing. She turned around and looked at him, her face was filled with the color of disbelief. “Selena, I don’t have the patience to wait. I already have a crush on you for five years, and you have not given me any chance! Tonight, if you don’t pay for the bill, your husband will have to die here. Oh yes, your parents and your daughter are also downstairs, right?” “Although I can spare them in the name of Taylor family, however, beating them up should be fine, right? After all, Taylor family will not dare to offend the Wilson family because you’re just a third-class aristocratic family!” Michael smiled coldly paced toward Selena. “Selena, I have no choice. I wanted to win you with my sincerity, but you did not give me a chance, so I can only resort to this!” “Michael, you bastard. I really have had the wrong idea about you. Before today, I thought, apart from being lustful, you’re not a bad person after all. I even thought that we could be friends! “I have never looked down on you because of your body size… I can’t believe you’re this malicious!” Selena’s eyes were bloodshot

and she stared straight at the other person. “Selena, you should not talk to me with this attitude, do you know that?” Michael smiled coldly again. “Now, you guys are the ones that spent that much money in my restaurant and you guys want to eat for free. It’s four hundred and eight million, do you think that I’ll allow you all to leave if you don’t pay?” Selena frowned even more. At the beginning, she thought Michael was just joking with her, that he deliberately asked her to come upstairs to just meet. She had no idea that Michael Wilson was really digging a hole for her! “Spit it out, what do you really want? I believe that you’re not the kind of person who needs that money, right?” Selena was silent for a few seconds before saying. Michael stepped two steps forward and held Selena’s waist in one swift move, “You’re smart, you have answered it correctly!”

Chapter 28

Smelling the delicate fragrance from Selena’s body, Micheal felt excited. He wanted so badly to immediately push Selena on the floor. Selena smelled Michael, who was filled with the smell of alcohol and felt a wave of disgust. She immediately pushed the other party away hard, “Michael, I am telling you this, don’t overdo it!” After Michael was pushed away, he still felt unsatisfied. After all these years, he had longed for this woman, Selena, for too long. It was a pity that he hadn’t even touched her hand once. Just a second before, he actually grabbed this woman’s waist. This made him felt like he was in a dream and he really did not want to wake up. “Hehe, I am too much?” Wilson smiled and spread his hands, “Of course, after all, you are the woman that I like and I also respect you very much. So, you just need to pay the 408 million to me for the meal and I will immediately let you go. However, if you can’t come up with the money, then you really can’t blame me for being too much!” “I…” Selena’s facial expression immediately became extremely hard to look at. She had a dark expression on her face and said helplessly, “I… We don’t have money!” “No money?” Michael smiled coldly, “Since you don’t have the money, then use your man’s life

to pay the debt. By that time, your daughter would no longer have a father and your parents would be implicated. Sigh, my subordinated should not be trifled with!" Seeing that Selena has a terrible look on her face, Michael still continued, "However, Selena, I really like you so much. How about this, I don't want to make it difficult for you. As long as you accompany me out for a coffee tonight, chat together and then go for a movie, we can just forget this!" "Just, drink coffee with you? Then watch a movie?" Selena bit her sexy red lips, frowned and she was a little worried in her heart. Although this Michael used to respect her very much, but, the matter tonight also made her understand that this guy was not so easy to deal with. "Hehe, if you want to do something more, that is also possible!" Michael smiled and then said again, "Actually, my thoughts are really simple. I have been pursuing you for so long and you have never promised me once to go on a date with me. I am really disappointed in my heart! I just want to go on a date with you once and feel the taste of love. You are not willing to agree to such a simple request?" "But… But it's so late now!" Selena was a little hesitant. If Michael only wanted a cup of coffee with her and he can waive this four million plus and allow them to leave safely, that would be great. Although he also felt that this Michael might not have such a simple idea, she had no other way now. "What do you think? Selena, don't worry, I really like you. Just have a cup of coffee with me and today's bill would be waived. You don't have to pay a penny, how about that?" Seeing that Selena seemed to be moved, Michael was secretly delighted. This Ivan Taylor was really good, threatening Selena with this method was really effective. After all, Selena loved her daughter very much and was also a very filial woman. Threatening her with her parents and daughter would naturally succeed. The most important thing would be that he held the waist of Selena Taylor, the previously high and mighty girl, who would not even allow him to touch her once, just now. He was still nostalgic about the slender waist. "How about another day? It's past seven in the evening now!" Selena thought about it and finally said with a frown. "How would that work? Choosing a day is not

better than doing it now. I can't let your parents go home another day, right?" Michael immediately straightened his face and then said, "How about this, if you are afraid that your husband will know. You can go home with them first then find an excuse to sneak out. Would that work? When you are ready to come out, give me a call a few minutes in advance and I will drive over to pick you up?" "Well, I hope that you mean what you say. It's still okay to have a cup of coffee together. AS for a movie, I'm afraid that it would be too late, so forget it!"

Chapter 29

A wry smile spread across Selena's face. Although she felt helpless, she still nodded her head. It was because she knew very well that Fane would not have 4 million bucks. Fane, who worked as a soldier for several years, had become aggressive after constantly going to war. It would be disadvantageous if a fight broke out. "Don't worry. I'm Young Master Wilson, the Wilson family's only Young Master who inherited the family business. When have I ever gone back on my words?" Michael spoke assuringly, immediately patting his chest. Soon after, Selena opened the door and walked out. On the other side, Michael came to the door too. He spoke to the plump restaurant manager, "Ms. Selena is my friend and also an old acquaintance of mine. Forget the 4 million bucks. For my friend's sake, it's on me. Give it to them for free!" "Then, those 18 bottles of red wine…" After thinking for a moment, the manager reminded him of it. "Of course let them take them back. You charged them for 20 bottles anyways, so it's only natural for them to take the rest away if they've ordered it and couldn't finish!" Michael immediately broke into a grin. Besides, the cost of the wine was only around 100 thousand bucks. Saying that it was 200 thousand per bottle was a trap set up to trick Selena. "In that case, thank you very much, Young Master Wilson!" Selena smiled, then followed the manager and walked downstairs to the second floor. "Why is she not back yet? Did something happen to her?" Joan, who was waiting downstairs,

could not help but worry. “It shouldn’t be possible. Although we were chased out, my daughter is still part of the Taylor family. I’m sure that the boss wouldn’t dare to cut her down?” “Judging by the way he spoke, it seemed like they knew each other before!” Fiona frowned before she comforted her. “It’s been five minutes. I’ll go inside and have a look!” Fane looked at the time. Five minutes passed. Worried that Selena might be in danger, he immediately walked inside. “Kid, you’re not allowed to go to the second floor without our boss’…” One man stepped forward and tried to stop Fane. Bang! Unfortunately, Fane landed a kick on his chest the next second. Instantly, he was sent flying away. Bang! The man flew and crashed into a table, causing it to collapse. Poof! Blood spurted out from the man’s mouth. His complexion instantly turned terrible. “Oh, this is unexpected. I wanted to come here for a meal but instead of serving guests, you guys are fighting behind closed doors!” Right at that moment, a bell-like voice sounded from across the room. Accompanied by a few bodyguards, a young, beautiful, and energetic lady walked inside. The man stood up from the ground. He was about to send his men to fight against Fane but stopped immediately after laying eyes on the woman. “Drake-Second Miss Drake, why are you here?”

Chapter 30

The girl looked young and energetic. She donned a sexy miniskirt with a few braids flowing down her back. A tiny pair of dimples appeared on her cheeks as she pursed her lips slightly. Her pair of large and beautiful eyes appeared quite stunning. A girl that oozed such a youthful aura like her would definitely catch one’s attention. “So this is the Drake family’s second daughter? You’re really a stunning little beauty. If you already look so pretty at such a young age, what will you become in two years’ time when you grow older?” Two men who were standing at the side could not help but gossip about her. “Get out of the way!” Fane could not even be bothered by the Drake family’s second daughter as he roared at the people in front of

him. “Handsome guy, what’s the matter?” Miss Tanya looked at Fane and was slightly taken aback. It seemed like this was the Fane guy whom her father had mentioned. She took another look at Fane and wondered what was so remarkable about him. She did not understand why her father wanted her and her brother to keep in touch and integrate themselves in his life. Yet, she did not have any other choice. She could only obey her father’s words. She believed that this person must be extraordinary if her father had said so. “Wait a minute, Miss Tanya. You’re James Drake’s daughter, the richest person in the Middle Province?” Fiona looked at the girl in front of her carefully and asked in surprise before Fane could even answer. No wonder the girl gave off a noble presence. Moreover, fear spread across the thugs’ faces as soon as they saw her. It was obvious that the girl was no ordinary person. “Yes, my name is Tanya Drake!” Tanya nodded her head and asked, “What’s the matter? It seems like this restaurant is nicely decorated and exudes a pleasant atmosphere. I was about to have my dinner here. Why are you guys fighting?” “Oh, Miss Tanya, this is what happened. We were here for dinner…” Fiona started complaining right away. “Aren’t these people just evil? The wine originally cost 20 thousand bucks per bottle but became 200 thousand bucks. They now want us to pay 4,080,000 bucks or they won’t let us go! My daughter is still inside debating with the boss. Fane was worried sick so he started a fight with these people!” Upon hearing the story, a tinge of joy sparked in Tanya’s heart. How lucky was she as this was a great opportunity for her to make friends with Fane. Her brother could not come over as he was busy today and she happened to be nearby. After receiving her father’s call, she came over. She did not expect to come across such an opportunity. “Well, that’s way too much. This is definitely an unscrupulous shop!” Immediately, Tanya said angrily, “Don’t pay them. Why would someone pay such a shop?!” “Who is that swearing and cursing out here?!” Right at that moment, the restaurant manager and Selena walked down from the second floor. After hearing Tanya’s words, the manager scolded, “How dare you come and create trouble here? Do you have a death

wish? Do you think you can leave without paying?" However, right after he finished speaking, he came eye to eye with Tanya who was standing there. The manager gulped and said, "Miss Tanya, what brings you here?" "Hah, you're a wild one, aren't you? Motherf*cker, I'll wreck the place! I want to see how heedless and reckless you guys can be!"

Chapter 31

Tanya waved her hand as she roared. One by one, the bodyguards carried stools and started to smash the place up. "Miss Tanya, don't, please don't. This is the Wilson family's business. Please show us mercy, Miss Tanya!" The restaurant manager no longer dared to be arrogant when facing the people from the Drake Family. He pleaded with a sad face, hoping that they would stop for the Wilson family's sake. "The Wilson family! Hah, I don't care whose family business this is. You guys only act this way if I'm not around. If I catch you guys acting this way in front of me, it's only natural for me to smash up your place when I'm angry!" Tanya crossed her arms in front of her chest. She stood proudly as she belittled them. Although there were numerous thugs from the Wilson family, they all lowered their heads. None of them dared to make a sound. They knew the Drake family's power. The Wilson family would not dare to offend the Drake family! However, what made them dumbfounded was Tanya nosing into other people's business. What did it have to do with her! "Miss Tanya, thank you very much. Did you say that we don't have to pay?" Upon seeing the situation, Fiona immediately stepped forward and asked. She could feel the resentment. "Of course, you don't have to pay a single, f*cking penny. I can't stand people like these who bully the weak!" Tanya looked at the manager and said, "Tell me, do they still have to pay? If they have to pay, I'll burn this whole place down!" The manager was left speechless. "No, no. They can take away the leftover 18 bottles of wine. They don't even have to pay for their meal earlier. Miss Tanya, our boss and Ms. Taylor actually know each other. He was just joking. They don't have to pay for their meal.

Our boss already said that it's free." In regard to that, the manager said with a distressed face, "This, this is all a misunderstanding!" The manager's heart ached when he saw all the wrecked up tables and shelves. What had just happened? "Ms. Taylor? You are Selena Taylor, right? You're indeed a very beautiful woman. I've heard a lot about you, but this is my first time seeing you!" Tanya took a look at Selene and it was only then that she said to her bodyguards, "Stop now, that's enough!" After she finished talking, she spoke to Selena again, "Miss Selena, is this really a misunderstanding?" Selena smiled bitterly. "You can call it that. Thank you very much for your help, Miss Tanya. I heard you like to fight against injustice and are a very helpful person. It's my first time seeing you today. Thank you so much for your kindness!" "Misunderstanding, how can this be a misunderstanding? These people said that we couldn't leave if we don't pay. Also, they insisted that we have to pay over 4 million bucks!" While asking the waiter to pack the wines on the table, Fiona spoke up, "Miss Tanya, I really owe you this time but what if they come searching for us if we leave without paying?" "This is my name card, auntie. Keep it and call me whenever you need help! If they ever bother you and ask you to pay again, I will not let this shop survive!" Tanya smiled, took out a name card, and handed it to Fiona. "Ah, that's very kind of you." Fiona was excited. She took the name card and smiled. "Thank you very much, Miss Tanya!" "Alright, you guys can leave now. They won't dare to do anything!" Tanya stared at Fane who was standing at the side with a deep gaze. Then, she turned around and spoke to Selena. "Miss Selena, if you need any help in the future, give me a call!" Fane frowned as he went deep in thought. Tanya came right on time; was it really a coincidence? However, it did not matter whether it was a coincidence or not. At least she had helped them out. He stepped forward and stretched out his hand. "Miss Tanya, thank you very much for your help. My name is Fane. I'll consider us as acquaintances. If the Drake family needs a helping hand in the future, feel free to contact me!"

Chapter 32

“No way. This guy wants to shake Miss Tanya’s hand? Isn’t he too overconfident?” “That’s right. Does he even know who Miss Tanya is? He’s a live-in son-in-law and the reason why the Taylor family chased his wife’s family out of the house. Is a person like him in the position to shake Miss Tanya’s hand?” A few thugs standing behind the restaurant started to quietly gossip. An ordinary person would not hear them as their voices were very soft. However, they were not aware that Fane had clearly heard everything they said. Fane paid no attention to them. Smiling, he kept looking at Miss Tanya standing in front of him. “You’re welcome! Nice to meet you, I’m Tanya Drake! I heard you’re also from the army, right? I admire people like you the most. I appreciate your contribution to our country! If it wasn’t for guys like you, we wouldn’t have won this time!” Miss Tanya stretched out her hand and shook Fane’s in front of the crowd. It seemed like Miss Tanya did not often shake hands with the opposite sex. She looked slightly shy and embarrassed when she did so. “Haha, to protect our country is what we, the people of Cathysia, should do!” Fane laughed and said, “I did not expect Miss Tanya to be such a kind-hearted and helpful person! We’re now acquaintances. Feel free to find me if you need any help!” Selena thought for a moment and walked to the manager. Then, she said in a soft voice, “Tell Young Master Wilson that he didn’t give anything for free. We did not pay because Miss Tanya despises your behavior. Do you understand?” The manager’s lip twitched and he awkwardly smiled. “Of course, of course, it’s all for Miss Tanya’s sake!” “I’m glad you know that so I don’t owe him anything!” Selena said coldly, feeling a gush of relief. Earlier when they were upstairs, she promised Michael she would grab a coffee and hang with him because she had no other choice and could only say yes. Although she knew that she might be in danger and it would be hard for her to escape, there was nothing she could do about it. She could only bite the bullet and do it for the sake of her family and Kylie’s safety. She could only pray that

Michael just wanted to grab coffee with her. She did not expect Tanya, who was passing by for dinner, to take the initiative to help them. In the end, they did not have to pay. As such, she could take back what she had promised earlier and did not owe Michael anything anymore. The most important thing was that Tanya was the one who helped them out so Michael would not dare to bother them after that. “Miss Tanya, thank you so much for your help. I will certainly repay your kindness if we have the chance to in the future!” Selena turned around and said to Tanya, “We’ll make a move first then!” “Alright, take care and goodbye!”

Chapter 33

In the end, Miss Tanya watched as Fane and the others left. “You people better learn your lesson. I’ll let you go for what happened today. If you keep bothering them for today’s matter, I’ll end you guys. I don’t care whether you’re a part of the Wilson’s family!” After Fane and the others left, Tanya gave them a warning before she and her people drove away. “Tanya Drake is so exasperating! Why didn’t she come sooner or later, instead of right on time?” “She could’ve came even just a few minutes later or waited until Selena and the others left. Things wouldn’t have been such a mess then!” Looking at the damage done, they had definitely suffered a great loss. The fatty manager was furious. He did not know that at that moment, Michael was feeling joyful in the private room. “That’s great, Young Master Wilson. Your method really worked!” “Selena’s face turned pale when she heard 4,000,000 bucks. Fane does not have that much money. I bet he doesn't even have 400 thousand bucks!” “Selena didn’t have any other choice. Once I threatened her with her daughter and parents, she could only listen to me. She promised me she would come up with an excuse to go on a coffee date with me!” Michael was very excited. He immediately called Ivan to tell him his victory. “Haha, congratulations Young Master Wilson!” Ivan, who was on the other side of the phone, sneered. “Young Master Wilson, just do as I say. Secretly add some ‘ingredients’ to the coffee and by that time, you will

have her under your foot. She might even become more proactive!" "Yes, that's great. This motherf*cking Selena is worried about losing face and will not tell others about this. I know her very well. If she tells others about it, not only will she be humiliated, she'll be a disgrace to her parents and the Taylor family!" Michael burst out in hearty laughter. He had waited for too long. He was finally going to get the cold goddess who had always ignored him. At the thought of Selena's almost perfect face and body, as well as her bodily scent, Michael almost had a nosebleed. However, thinking that this might be his only chance, his face darkened. "Young Master Taylor, your method will work. However, knowing Selena's character, she won't tell others about it but it'll be impossible to ask her out for a second date!" Upon hearing that, Michael was slightly stunned. "I planned to marry her in the future. If that's the case, I will have such a beautiful woman for my entire life. However, if what I mentioned just now happens, I'll only be able to feel her once. I won't have the chance to do so anymore. I cannot accept that!" Ivan kept silent for a few moments before saying, "Young Master Wilson, I've always thought that you were just playing around with Selena. That you'd just throw her away after getting her, just like the other girls. I didn't expect you to be that serious about her!" "Of course I'm serious about her. Selena is the prettiest and most gentlest woman I've ever met. Moreover, she's the most beautiful woman in the Middle Province. I think only the Drake family's second daughter can compete with her. Even then, Miss Tanya is not as charming as Selena. I like mature women like her!" Michael sighed as he talked. He was about to get Selena, but felt sorry for him at the same time. That was because he knew that Selena would hate him and refuse to marry him. "If you want to play with her a little bit longer, it's certainly not impossible!" After thinking for a moment, Ivan on the other end, spoke up.

Chapter 34

“Really?" Michael's eyes brightened upon hearing that. His heart was filled with excitement. He thought that he would only have one chance. Although it was only once, it was much better than not being able to get his goddess for a lifetime. Previously, he even hoped that there were no men in Selena's family as she would be a widow if Fane died. Then sooner or later, she would be moved by his efforts and agree to be together with him. He did not expect Fane, who was a soldier, to come back alive. Since then, he felt that the possibility to be together with Selena was far too slim. Therefore, when Ivan told him his method, he agreed without much thought. After all, he had been waiting for that day for years. "Of course it's real but Young Master Wilson, about the profits on the project we're working on..." Ivan smiled coldly. He wanted to make a profit for the Taylor family’s business to flourish. He would be a major contributor if the Taylor family made money. By that time, he could secure his position and nobody could take away his right to become the Master’s successor. He did not care about the trauma Selena would go through. That woman had put herself through all that misery. Old Master Taylor thought highly of Selena. Many people from the Taylor family felt that Selena had the chance to get a part of the Taylor family’s business. Who knew that she would give up on herself. She had it coming and consequently, that gave him a great opportunity. “Haha, don’t worry. In regard to profits, I’ll give you 10 more points. In that case, your profits will double. You can rest assured as there won’t be such a good price out there!” Michael laughed and said, “Young Master Wilson, please hurry up and tell me what I can do. I can no longer wait. My lady might already be home by now. She might text me and ask me to pick her up anytime soon!” “The method is very easy. If you want her for the long-term, you must have something you can hold against her.” “Aren’t you bringing her to a hotel? Why not use your phone or something to capture a few videos? You can use them to threaten her in the future!” “If she refuses to go out on a date with you after that, you can threaten to upload the videos to the internet. Do you think Selena would dare to reject you then?” Ivan smirked.

“In that case, wouldn’t Young Master Wilson have her all for yourself? Moreover, she won’t have any choice but to be at your beck and call. Fane might not even realize he’s being cuckolded!” “Haha, this is interesting and exciting!” Michael laughed loudly. “Alright then, I’ll stop bothering you now. I have to get myself dressed and go to the date early. After all, every minute is precious!” Excited, Michael hung up. In the private room, he twisted his fat body around and struck a pose he assumed was cool. Then, he happily walked downstairs. When he got down however, he was stunned to see the scene before him. “What happened? Who the f*ck wrecked up our shop? Does that person have a death wish?” Michael roared. He was so angry that the fats on his face jiggled. “Young Master Wilson, I was about to report this matter to you but you already came down. Ah, such rotten luck!” Wearing a long face, the manager slapped his thigh and sat on a stool.

Chapter 35

“There’s so many of you and none of you managed to stop them? Didn’t anyone fight back? Did you just sit back and watch them wreck the place?” Looking at his men standing there, Michael was furious. “Did I hire you for nothing?” “Young Maser Wilson, it’s not that we didn’t fight back or stop them, it’s because we didn’t dare to fight back!” The manager did not know whether to laugh or cry. “Fane wasn’t the one who did this. It was Miss Tanya’s men.” “Tanya Drake?” Michael gulped when he heard the name. “That girl. Why did she come here and wreck our place up?” “Ah, she passed by our restaurant, thought it looked nice, and wanted to come in for a meal. After knowing what happened, she defended them and said we shouldn’t blackmail them. After that, she wrecked the place! “The most important thing is that she let Fane and the others leave without having them pay. She also warned us not to bother them anymore!” The manager sighed. “In the end, Fane and Miss Taylor owe Tanya a favor. Before Miss Taylor left, she wanted me to tell you that you’re not the reason they didn’t have to pay as it was because Miss Tanya let them skip paying the bill. So…”

“Damn it!” Michael angrily stomped his foot. What did Selena mean by that? It was obvious. She was telling him to say goodbye to tonight’s date. “I lost what I just happened to get!” Raging, Michael sat down on the floor. He was not reconciled. What rotten luck. He had almost succeeded but ended up meeting with the nosy Miss Tanya. At that moment, Fane and the others were already on their way home. “Thanks to Miss Tanya’s kindness, we got to vent our anger today!” Hand carrying several bottles of wine, Fiona said that with a smile. Fane and Selena’s hands were also occupied with several bottles too. “Since the last time, I heard that Miss Tanya has a good personality. There was an old man who accidentally scraped her car but considering his age, she didn’t let the person pay a single penny.” “Not only is she kind-hearted, but Miss Tanya is also very pretty too. She deserves to be rich!” Andrew was filled with strong emotions. “You’re right. She’s very rich. Unlike us, we can hardly dine out, yet we almost couldn’t leave!” Fiona was smiling, inadvertently taking a glance at Fane who was beside her. Her expression instantly turned cold. “It was all someone’s fault for acting like a rich guy when he had no money. If we had the money, would we have to suffer this kind of treatment?” Joan was not pleased to hear that. Fiona used to make lots of sarcastic remarks before Fane came back. However, she could endure it back then. Now that Fiona was criticizing her son in front of her, she could not hold back anymore. She said, “My son’s mother-in-law, you can’t phrase your words like that. You can’t blame Fane for this, right? How is it possible that a meal would cost four million bucks? It’s obvious that person was blackmailing us. No matter how rich we are, we shouldn’t have had to pay four million bucks, right?” “Haha, you’re putting it in such a way as though Fane would pay if it was 400 thousand bucks!” Fiona let out a contemptuous smile. “If they didn’t blackmail me, I would have paid 400 thousand bucks for a meal!”

Chapter 36

“You would pay for 400 thousand bucks?" Fiona laughed coldly when she heard that. “ Just keep acting. Look at yourself, I highly doubt you’d that much money." Another thought struck her mind after she said that. She then said to Selena, "By the way, Selena, the Taylor family works in the construction material industry. You've worked for them all this while, but it’s too bad that you’re restricted from it now. You can't even find a job. Many companies dare not hire you because they’re tied to Ivan! " "You're right. Ah, I have no other choice. Ivan already said that he will only leave me alone if I become a garbage collector! Otherwise, he’ll create a ruckus no matter where I work. That’s why no one dares offend him as they want to avoid trouble." Selena sighed. “Now that Fane is back, our family will be better off if we’re both working!" "That's true. Although it might be tough, we won't be so miserable right now if we find a job!" Fiona sighed." That was why I was thinking about Miss Drake. Didn't she give us her name card earlier? Since she's so kind-hearted and likes to help others, why don’t we give her a call and see if she can help us find one? What do you think?" "Mum, I don't think that’s a good idea. We did not have any acquaintances with the Drake family before this. They helped us earlier and we have yet to repay them. How can we trouble them again? "Moreover, Miss Drake gave us the name card and told us to find her if we need help simply out of courtesy. Are you actually thinking of troubling her?" Slightly embarrassed, Selena said that as she smiled bitterly. "What's wrong with that? Sometimes, you have to be more thick-skinned. Isn't it better to have a proper job rather than to collect garbage? Besides, Kylie is going to kindergarten soon. If you don't find a proper job, what will happen to us? Doesn’t your daughter have to study?" Fiona continued immediately. "I think that this might work. Didn't you say that you want to repay Miss Drake? This would be a great opportunity. You can work in their company and help them make a profit by improving their performance rates. That’s a way of repayment, is it not?" “That's true!" Selena frowned and said, "It's too late now. Give me the name card and I’ll check tomorrow if the job’s still available. Ivan won't be able

to do anything if I work with the Drake family. The Drake family do not care about his whims." "Yes, yes. That's right! " Fiona nodded. "You might earn a better salary with a better job." Soon after, they arrived at their home. After putting the wine away, Fiona said to Fane, "Fane, this wine is very expensive. Selena's father likes it a lot so you better not drink in secret, alright? You can drink it if you buy it from us. It's 20 million bucks per bottle!" Selena's face darkened when she heard that. "Mum, what are you talking about? He's your son-in-law and also a part of our family, what's wrong with him drinking a bottle or two?" "Who said anything about him being my son-in-law?" Immediately, Fiona said, "Anyways, I will not accept him until he gives us 10 million bucks worth of betrothal gifts on your grandfather's birthday. It is only until he fulfills this promise with your grandfather and we can go back to the Taylor family that I'll accept him!"

Chapter 37

In regards to that, Fiona stopped for a moment and said, "Of course he can't do it. If he can't bring us the betrothal gift, haha, my son-in-law might end up changing into either Young Master Wilson or Young Master Clark!" Fane pulled Selena back when he saw her urge to argue with Fiona. "Forget it, Selena. Mum is right. You are indeed a wonderful woman. I won't let you down on grandfather's birthday! You're my woman and nobody can take you away!" Seeing Fane's determined gaze, Selena's anger disappeared as warmth filled her instead. She nodded shyly and said," Mm-hmm, I believe in you. I heard that the battlefield was very dangerous and many died, but you stayed there for five years and survived. You must be better than others." Fiona's face turned sour upon hearing those sweet words. She quickly reminded Selena, "Selena, I told you not to fall for his sweet-talk. He won't be our son-in-law if he can't give us 10 million bucks worth of betrothal gift. You must not allow him to touch you until then, alright?" Speaking of that, Fiona looked at Kylie and said, "I didn't chase him out of the house just for Kylie's sake. We're kind enough to let him live with us

temporarily! " "Grandma, why does daddy want to touch mummy?" "Is he beating mummy up? Daddy, you cannot beat mummy up, okay?" Kylie, who was only a little over four years old, looked at Fiona with a confused expression. It was obvious she seemed a little bit anxious! "Kylie, that's not what it means. How would daddy have the heart to beat mummy up?" Fane was embarrassed when he heard what Kylie said. Immediately, he carried her and walked into the room. "Let's go, it's time for you to sleep. Daddy will tell you a story later, alright?" "Alright! Mummy, daddy is going to tell me a story!" Kylie shouted to Selena excitedly. A comforting smile appeared on Selena's face as she saw Kylie beaming back at her. After Fane carried Kylie into the room, Selena started saying to Fiona, "Mom, you can see that Kylie must have her father by her side. Kylie likes Fane a lot. After all, blood is thicker than water. I've made up my mind; I will stay with Fane even if he can't give us 10 million bucks!" "My daughter, are you stupid? You have to think about Kylie's future. All the other children can attend good schools, enjoy the best education, play with expensive toys, and wear nice clothes. Kylie is so mature despite her young age. Do you want her to suffer with you her entire life?" "I'm not only doing this for your sake, but also for your kid. What's the point of staying with a bum like him? Are you going to be poor your whole life?" "A woman's time is limited and we grow old quickly. You waited for him for five years. That was five years of youth! You cannot waste your youth like that again!" Fiona started to persuade Selena. "You are already 25. You were 20 and immature back then so I don't blame you. However, you have to know that men have more value as they grow older compared to women. You still have assets right now and are still young. The rich young masters are still interested in you. Do you think they will still be into you when you grow older and reach 30? It’ll be too late for you to regret then!" "I won't regret it!" Selena shouted and went straight back into the room.

Chapter 38

Not long after listening to Fane's story, Kylie fell asleep. In that moment, Tanya had already arrived at the Drake family's home. She went to see her father. "How was it? Did you meet the guy named Fane?" James asked Tanya eagerly as soon as he saw her. Tanya poured herself half a glass of wine. She swirled it around before taking a sip. Then she said, "Yes, I saw him. He's quite good-looking and manly too!" James was speechless. "Did I ask you to admire his face? I asked you to befriend him and keep in touch with him. Think of it as having another friend. Although he's not as good as the God of War Lana, they're very similar. The most important thing is that he and Lana are very good friends. Befriending him means we're on our way to reaching the skills of the God of War." Tanya took another sip of her wine. She put her glass down on the table and said solemnly, "Dad, I don't understand. If we want to fawn over this God of War from the Middle Province, why don't we just fawn over Lana? Even though Fane's status is quite high, he can't be better than the God of War, right?" "Haha, you know nothing." James's eyes showed a depth of wisdom. He grabbed his own wine glass and poured some for himself. He then sat on the sofa, crossed his legs, and said, "Lana is a very cold woman. Approaching her is no easy task. She's already giving me face by accepting the God of War mansion I gave her. Moreover, I don't know what a woman like her desires! I can't find out how to help her!" After saying that, James stopped for a moment before he continued," On the contrary, Fane is a live-in son-in-law. He had no other choice but to become a live-in son-in-law to save his mother's life back then. He replaced Ivan in the army. Now, he came back and has a daughter. Although his wife has no thoughts of leaving him, the Taylor family still looks down on him!" Tanya understood her father's intention after hearing what he had to say. She nodded her head, "I know what you mean now. You mean the God of War Lana doesn't need our help, but Fane does. As long as we keep in touch with them and help them out more, it's equivalent to giving Lana a helping hand!" James smiled and took a sip from his glass as he started praising her," You are indeed my daughter. You understand right

away. Helping Fane means helping a friend of the God of War. This means that the next time we need Lana's help, she'll help us!" Then, he asked again, "Right, you haven't told me how things went today?" "Don't worry, I gave them my name card. I was there right on time. If we were there just a little bit later, I'm afraid we would have lost a very good opportunity!" "So this was what happened. We went there, and... Tanya quickly told James what had happened. Then, she said happily, "Fane isn't an indifferent guy. He even shook my hand to express his gratitude before he left. However, something feels strange..." "Strange?" James was stunned. "Why do you say so?" "Logically, a soldier would have calluses on their palms as they often use guns." "Despite that, I realized Fane hardly has any calluses on his palms. They were very smooth. It was as though he has never been to the army!" Tanya spoke after thinking for a while. James was shocked. He thought about it for a moment and said, "Maybe he didn't go onto the battlefield but worked in the logistic department. Whatever it is, help them as much as possible. Even if he asks for 10 billion bucks, give it to him, alright? I believe that there must be something special between him and Lana." The next morning, Ivan eagerly gathered all the Taylor family relatives as they came looking for Old Master Taylor and his father.

Chapter 39

Ivan, what's the matter? It's so early in the morning and you have everybody gathered here. Do you have something important to announce?" Theodore, the Taylor family's head, asked in confusion as he looked at his son. "I have good news for everybody. I received a big project this time. The crucial thing is that we've never worked on such an expensive project before. I estimate that we can earn at least 300 million bucks from this project." Ivan smiled as he said that, wearing a proud look on his face. He believed that Michael was a man of his words, so he could not hold back his excitement. Hands trembling, he gathered everyone and told them about it. "That's great, this must be a really big project!" "That's right. Young Master Ivan is such

a competent man. He got us such a big project. Moreover, the profits are exceptionally high!" A few relatives from the Taylor family gasped in admiration. "Really? Did you sign the contract?" The Old Master Taylor was very happy as well after hearing the news. It would be a major profit. It had been quite some time since the Taylor family last received such a project and it was worth around 300 billion bucks of profit. The Taylor family had to pay attention to this project. "The contract draft is done. Young Master Wilson already agreed to the project. We made a deal on the phone!" "Grandpa, I will meet him later and get the contract signed. Don't worry, it's already settled." Ivan immediately patted his chest and reassured his grandfather. However, he did not tell them about how that bum, Fane, was now being cuckolded. Selena might have even been crying under her sheets right now. "Then hurry up and get the contract signed. Nothing is settled yet until the contract is signed, alright? One can change their mind very easily when it comes to verbal promises!" Extremely delighted, Old Master Taylor immediately reminded Ivan. "Yes, yes. Hurry up. Let’s book a hotel and celebrate when you come back! Let's have lunch together!" Theodore was even more excited. He felt very proud of his son finally achieving something. He had finally made money for the Taylor family. "That's great. It's been quite a while since we last had dinner together." The old master nodded his head and agreed. "Let's make a reservation at a more luxurious hotel. What about the Dorsett Hotel?" "Alright. Dorsett Hotel is a five-star hotel. It’s very impressive!" Theodore laughed heartily. "By the way, grandpa, should we invite Selena and that bum? The more the merrier!" Ivan immediately proposed the idea when the thought came into his mind. He wanted to see how Selena would force herself to smile after sleeping with Michael last night. Of course, he also wanted to show Selena that he was a competent man. Without Selena, he was still capable of helping the Taylor Group flourish!

Chapter 40

“You want to invite those bumpkins? Young Master Ivan, you're trying to show off, right?" Unexpectedly, Cecilia stepped forward and exposed Ivan's intentions. Embarrassed, Ivan explained himself hurriedly, "What nonsense are you talking about? Am I such a person?" Ivan stopped for a moment before continuing, "After all, Selena is also part of the Taylor family. She is grandpa's biological granddaughter. This is considered a big event for the Taylor family. Inviting her to such a grand celebration benefits us too. Otherwise, other influential people might call us stingy if they knew we didn't invite her. Besides, it doesn't cost much to invite a few more people, right?" Satisfied, Old Master Taylor nodded his head. "Indeed, Ivan has grown up now. You're more matured these days. You have to keep this mindset if you want to achieve great things in life! After all, it’s been five years and many have already forgotten about that incident. It wouldn’t hurt to invite them over for a meal!" "Grandpa is absolutely correct. That was my intention. I want them to know that we’re very generous." Ivan laughed. "Alright, grandpa. I'll go get the contract signed now. You can book the reservation at the hotel in the meanwhile. We'll have lunch at 12pm sharp. I'll be ready to bring you the good news!" "Haha, alright. You go ahead!" The old master laughed. Undertaking such a big project with a 300 million bucks profit was enough to prove Ivan's ability. If Ivan could undertake more projects like this in the future, he would consider handing over the Taylor family's business to Ivan. Looking at the old master's delighted face, Theodore was very happy as well. Finally, Ivan had made him proud for once. Although he was the head of the Taylor family, the old master never gave him any rights because he used to have a gambling addiction. There was this one time he had lost 10 million bucks in one night. Since then, the old master never trusted him. Five years ago, the old master thought highly of Selena's talent of conducting business. He even wanted to pass down the family business to her. Theodore was slightly flustered by that thought. However, he never imagined Selena's wayward behaviour would end up destroying her own bright future and benefit his son instead. Although his

son liked to play around, he could finally heave a sigh of relief today. In spite of Ivan's words, many family members of the Taylor family knew that Ivan wanted to invite Selena and her family over for lunch to show off his abilities. The sun was shining brightly above a garden. Fane came back carrying a linen sack. "Mum, you don't have to go to work. I told you to just stay at home. I can take care of you!" Fane smiled as he talked to Joan. "But my heart cannot be at peace if I don't work. After all, we need money." Joan smiled bitterly. It was tough sweeping the streets under the hot sun, but she could not find a better job as she got older. She suffered a lot over these past few years for the sake of supporting her family. Suddenly, Fane put his hand into the sack and took out a bundle of cash. He handed her 50 thousand bucks. "Mum, I just went to pick up some money. Here is your pocket money. Do you feel more at peace now?" Joan was shocked looking at the amount of money in her hands. "This is too much. Instead of giving it to me, you should give it to Selena so she can spend it on groceries. You need money when Kylie starts going to kindergarten too!"

Chapter 41

"Haha, this is for you, take it!" Fane laughed and shoved the money into Joan's arms. Fiona's eyes lit up as she witnessed this. She walked over quickly and said, "You little brat, you're only giving your mother money now that you have some? We've been taking care of your kids and suffering so much, how come you're not giving any to us? You should give us some for all the money we've spent on your kids, shouldn't you?" Jenny the maid could not stand it anymore. She mumbled, "You haven't been working for the past few years and don't have any income. Kylie was basically raised by Miss and their income was earned from Miss going out and about to scavenge for her and Joan's salary through her office job. You haven't spent a cent, how dare you ask for compensation!" After hearing that, Joan angrily said, "Hey, you stupid girl, what are you talking about? You're just a maid, what does this have anything to do with you?" "Mom, if you want the

money, you can have it. However, you'll have to acknowledge this son-in-law. Otherwise, why would he give you the money?" Selena walked over and rolled her eyes at her mother. Joan's expression changed after hearing that. She said coldly, "Haha, it's just a bit of money, it's not like I've never come across such a sum before. You want me to acknowledge him for this bit of money? No way!" Fane did not care about his mean mother-in-law. He passed the bag to Selena and said, "Take the money inside and spend it, there should be enough for groceries and to register Kylie for school. There should be enough for some time." "How, how much money is in here?" Selena lifted the heavy bag. She was stunned. Was this weight all from the cash in the bag? Fiona was no longer calm. Before Fane could say anything, she walked over and grabbed the bag to pour out its contents. Seeing the cash on the ground, Fiona inhaled sharply and asked, "This is a lot of money, how much is there?" Fane laughed forcefully and said, "Not much, I withdrew a million bucks, gave my mom 50 thousand bucks for change, and there's still 950 thousand bucks left!" "Gulp!" Fiona swallowed her saliva. She nearly cried. "950 thousand bucks, I haven't seen this much money in so long! This is great, I don't have to live frugally anymore now!" "Mom, pick it up. That's a lot of money. If someone else sees it, we'll be in trouble!" Selena reminded her mother anxiously while silently breathing a sigh of relief. "This is great, Kylie can now study in a better kindergarten." "It seems like you're not that useless after all. This should be the money you received from leaving the army, right? The government is pretty good to you after all for giving you a million bucks. Together with the money you gave Selena for clothes, it should be about 1.2 million bucks in total," Fiona said while picking up the cash to put into the bag. To her, Fane must have withdrawn everything he had to please them and have them acknowledge him as their son-in-law. He must have really wanted to impress her. After being deep in thought, she said, "Fane, this 950 thousand bucks shall be the compensation for raising Kylie for the past five years. It's your child after all, so you should be paying for her. Don't you dare think that I will

acknowledge you as our son-in-law for this money. I reiterate my point, if you can't whip out 10 million bucks for dowry on Selena's grandfather's 70th birthday party, you still need to get out of the Taylors' house. Understood?"

Chapter 42

"Haha, don't worry mom. I mean what I said! Take this money for Selena's groceries and register Kylie for school!" Fane said while laughing. Fiona scoffed. "Hmph, as long as you're aware of it!" Before the cash was picked up, a young man unexpectedly walked in with a young girl who had a tattoo on her arm. They both seemed like they were about 18 or 19 years old. The young man had blonde hair with an ear-piercing. It was an ear stud. "Wow, that's a lot of cash!" The young man ran over upon seeing the cash. He picked it up and said excitedly, "God, this is a lot! There's some in the bag as well. There must be a million bucks here, right? I haven't seen this much money in a long time!" "Who are you? Put it down!" Seeing the young man's face angered Fane. He stared straight at the man and spoke coldly. "You, who are you?" The young man looked back at Fane and was so shocked by Fane's sharp gaze that he dropped the cash he was holding onto. "Fane, what are you getting angry about? Don't you recognize Ben anymore?" Fiona glared at Fane. "Ben?" Fane was stunned for a while before coming to a realization. "Oh, it's Ben, he was only 14 when I left. He's so tall now and all grown up, I couldn't recognize him!" "F*ck, here I was thinking who was this guy being this angry at me. You're the useless brother-in-law!" Ben snapped out of it and continued, "I thought you were dead. Who knew that you would make it back! For five years, you've put our family through sh*t!" The young girl came over and stood next to Ben. She checked Fane out and said, "Ben, is this the useless, live-in son-in-law who became one just to get a million bucks for his mother's medical costs, then went to war the next day?" Ben's eyes were filled with hostility. "Yes, it's this bastard who agreed to a sham marriage at first, but took advantage

of my sister on their wedding night seeing that she was a little drunk. He got my sister pregnant. If it wasn't for this bastard, our family would not have been kicked out by Old Master Taylor. We would still be staying in our mansion and living a good life!" "So it was this bastard, how evil!" The woman looked over at Fane in anger and said, "I can't believe you're still shameless enough to come back. If it wasn't for you, would we be staying in a place like this? If I was you, I'd rather die at war than come back and embarrass myself!" "Xena, who are you to say that? I was drunk that night but I knew for a fact that I made the first move. I was angry at Grandpa for treating our marriage like a deal!" "It was my fault. I was too naive, and I caused mom, dad, and my brother to live frugally with me for the past five years. I'll try my best to make it up to them from now on but it has already happened and I've taken responsibility for it. You can't blame Fane for this!" Selena could not take it anymore after hearing what Xena said. She looked at her in the eye and said, "No matter what, this is my family's business, You're nobody to butt in, are you?" "Ben, look, look at your sister. She's saying that I'm a nobody. I've yet to marry you and she's already this mean to me. When I marry you in the future, who knows how she'll treat me then?" Xena was pissed. She tugged on Ben's arm with her hands and threw a tantrum. "Sister, what are you talking about? Xena is my girlfriend. Although she hasn't married me yet, it will happen sooner or later. We'll be family in the future. How could you say that to her?"

Chapter 43

"On top of that, Fane is the one who put you in this position but you're still siding with him. I really don't understand how you think," Ben continued to speak on Xena's behalf. "No matter what, we have a marriage certificate. We're legally husband and wife so we're a family! You've said it yourself, Xena has yet to marry you. We'll only be a family in the future, not now. So she should not butt into our family's business right now!" Selena was still up in arms about it. It seemed like she was prejudiced toward Xena. "I

don’t care, it’s your happiness anyway. If you’re willing to marry a soldier, a useless man, we can’t do anything about it!” “Aren’t you the cause of where you are today? If you didn’t do such a stupid thing back then, you would’ve been the chairman of the Taylor Group by now! The beautiful chairman is no longer who she was, what a shame!” Xena said while crossing her arms in front of her chest. “If you don’t want to care, shut up!” Fane said coldly after seeing how she was treating Selena. “You…” Xena was so angry that she began breathing heavily. Her expression was horrible. “You bastard, you got our family into this mess and not only are you not apologizing, you’re pissing my lady off. You’re asking to get beaten up, aren’t you!” Seeing what was happening, Ben, who was usually protective of his girlfriend, walked over and clenched his fists. He threw a punch at Fane. “Ben, are you nuts? No matter what, he’s still your brother-in-law. He did not do anything wrong back then. We were both drunk…” Selena was now pissed seeing that Ben wanted to start a fight. Meanwhile, Fane bent backward in the face of Ben’s fist. He easily avoided the attack. “I don’t believe this!” Seeing that he did not hit Fane, Ben got up and aimed his fists at him again. Unfortunately, his attack was nothing for Fane. No matter how he tried, Fane looked like he knew where Ben was trying to hit him and avoided it every time. “Goddamnit, if you’re a man, stop avoiding my hits. What kind of hero are you if you’re avoiding my punches!” Ben was panting after throwing a few empty punches. He stopped and put one hand on his waist while pointing a finger at Fane with the other. “Seeing that you’re Selena’s brother, I don’t want to hit you. Otherwise, you’d be on the ground by now!” “Seeing how you are right now, you must not be big on exercising. With a body like yours, you would’ve been dead a hundred times over at war!” Fane said coldly. “I…” Ben was pissed, but remembered that the guy standing in front of him had spent five years at war. How could he beat that? Ben clapped his hands and said, “I’m not going to waste my time on a boorish fellow like you!” Ben turned around to see the cash-filled bag and asked excitedly, “Mom, where did the money come from?”

Chapter 44

“Yeah mom, where did the money come from?” Xena ran over and endearingly called Fiona “mom”. Fiona was stunned for a moment before looking excited. “Girl, what did you call me? Didn’t you call me Aunty before this?” Xena became shy and said in embarrassment, “Aunty, I’m sorry. I’ve been wanting to call you ‘mom’ for some time, but I was never brave enough to do so. I accidentally did what I’ve been wanting to do just now!” “Hey, that’s great, girl. You should call me ‘mom’ and not ‘aunty’ then. Your dad and I like you, so just call me ‘mom’ from now on. You’ve been in a serious relationship with Ben and are going to get married someday anyway, aren’t you?” Fiona was so happy that the smile on her face was extremely bright. “Mom, you haven’t told me, where did the money come from? Why is there so much money? Could it be that there’s a rich Master somewhere trying to marry my sister and giving this as dowry?” Ben asked excitedly. It seemed like he really wanted his sister to marry a rich guy so that his family would be able to live better again. “No, it’s not dowry!” Fiona forced a smile before looking at Fane and said, “It’s Fane’s money for Kylie. There’s 950 thousand bucks here, he should be giving this amount!” “He gave this?” Ben looked back at Fane with a peculiar gaze. “Could he really have withdrawn this much money? Does being a soldier pay this much?” “You don’t know this, but I’ve heard that those who leave the army will get compensation. Those who spent a shorter time in the army could get about 100 to 200 thousand bucks so since Fane spent five years in the army, he should be getting more!” “If this bastard could get a million bucks, I think he must’ve achieved meritorious service in the army. Otherwise he wouldn’t be able to get this much!” Fiona smiled and lifted the heavy bag while saying, “This bastard is a bit compassionate after all. He brought some money back for us as compensation. If he died at war, we could’ve gotten nothing!” Ben nodded. “Since he had the decency to bring money over, that’s alright of him. However, Fane, don’t you dare think that

making me call you my brother-in-law is this easy!" "The money is for Selena to buy groceries and register Kylie for school. Selena should be keeping this!" Fane said coldly while looking at Fiona's grip on the bag of cash. "You don't need this much money for groceries and school, do you? Even if you're looking at a fancy kindergarten, it should cost about 10 or 20 thousand bucks per semester, shouldn't it?" Fiona said. "How much does the best one cost?" Fane asked Selena. "It must be about 50 thousand bucks, but that's for a year!" Selena forced a smile and said, "Is it really necessary to go to such a good school?" "Of course, Kylie must go to a better school!" Fane nodded and stared at Fiona. Fane's gaze was threatening; even Fiona did not dare look straight at him. "Fine, fine, here's 100 thousand bucks for Kylie's school fees and the living expenses for now. When you're out of money, take some from me!" "I'll hold onto the money, otherwise, I won't feel secure about it!" Fiona counted 100 thousand bucks and passed it to Selena. She was adamant on not handing over the other 850 thousand bucks. "Mom, there's still 850 thousand bucks and I'm out of money. Since there's so much, you should give me some, shouldn't you?" "On top of that, Xena's been dating me for so long but I've yet to buy her anything nice…" Ben said shamelessly. "Fine, fine, here's 50 thousand bucks. Go get a gift or something for Xena!"

Chapter 45

Fiona pulled out another 50 thousand bucks with a smile. "Thanks mom!" Xena happily thanked Fiona. Fane ignored them and approached Andrew. "Dad, I can cure your leg!" "Can you really do that?" Of course, Andrew wished that his leg could recover. Now that Fane mentioned it, his cloudy eyes lit up. "Are you exaggerating? Even the head of the orthopedic hospital took a look at my dad's leg and said there was nothing he could do. How can you cure it?" Ben walked over and said, "I remember you used to be a delivery boy before serving in the army. After being a soldier for five years, you now know how to cure someone? Could it be that you joined the

medical team to treat the wounded?" "No wonder he made it out alive after spending five years on the battleground, he wasn't a frontliner at all, he was just treating the wounded!" Xena crossed her arms in front of her chest and said sarcastically, "I thought he was a hero, but he was just backup, haha!" Fane ignored the duo and said to Andrew, "Dad, don't worry. You're Selena's father and that makes you my father as well. I'll never harm you!" After hearing such earnest words, Andrew was visibly moved by Fane. It seemed like he wanted to give it a try. "That might be untrue, you've put us through hell for five years. Five years. Just imagine the number of days and nights!" Fiona reminded Fane with a sarcastic tone, "If your medical skills aren't up to par and end up completely ruining your dad's leg, it'll really be over for him!" "Uh…" Andrew started hesitating. If Fane's skills were not up to standard and made his leg worse, it would be over for him. "Dad, I trust him, let him try it!" Selena advised Andrew. "Fine, let's try it. Since it's already in this state, it can't get any worse than this!" Andrew sat down on a stone-made stool next to him, rolled up his pants, and let Fane inspect his leg. Fane took a look and felt Andrew's leg before pulling out a small box with a long needle inside. "Is pricking it with a silver needle sufficient? Wouldn't I require medicine or something?" Seeing what was going on, Ben could not help but ask Fane. "Could this pricking ruin my leg?" Andrew was a little worried. "Don't worry, this is acupuncture, a type of treatment in Chinese medicine. It's magical. After this, I'll massage your leg and dredge the blood vessels. You'll be cured over a few days!" Fane smiled. He was confident. Although the Taylor family was always looking down on him and could not wait to kick him out of the family, Fane understood that he was the one who got Selena pregnant. Their family was chased out of the mansion and forced to stay in such a shabby place. He was responsible for it and if it was anyone else, they would blame Fane as well. Moreover, they were all Selena's family, so Fane did not want to ruin the relationship with them. After all, Andrew's leg became what it was because of himself. He had been feeling guilty about it. Just as Fane was treating Andrew, Fiona

got a call. After hanging up the phone, she started jumping around in excitement. “Great, the Taylor family’s butler called. The old master asked us to go to the Dorsett Hotel for dinner with everyone! It’s for a celebration!”

Chapter 46

“Dorsett Hotel? The famous Dorsett Hotel in the city center? The five-star hotel where the minimum spend is 100 thousand bucks?” Xena asked excitedly after hearing about it. “Of course it is, are there any other Dorsett Hotels around?” Fiona’s face was filled with pride. She lamented, “The old master has finally come to his senses and actually let us go over for lunch. He has never called us over for anything worth celebrating before this!” “That’s great, it looks like Old Master Taylor is gradually accepting you guys!” Xena smiled excitedly before saying shyly, “Mom, can I follow you?” Fiona was floating from being called ‘mom’. She nodded, “Of course you can, you’re my son’s girlfriend and my future daughter-in-law. You can definitely have lunch with us, don’t worry!” “That’s great!” Fiona thought of something and said, “Right, it’s still early. Ben, bring Xena shopping, she’s showing up with you today!” “Yes! Let’s go and shop!” Ben grabbed the 50 thousand bucks and left with Xena immediately. “Mom, it’s not really a good idea to bring Xena along, is it?” After the duo left, Selena was silent for a moment before saying, “They’re still dating and have yet to get married, she’s not a part of our family yet!” “What’s so bad about it? They’ve been together for two or three years already so isn’t it going to happen soon?” Fiona continued, “Did you not see how happy Xena was when she heard she could go to a five-star hotel? She’s even shopping for it. She’s got decent looks anyway, which would make us look better today. On top of that, won’t she join the family sooner if we start treating her like one?” “Fine!” Selena knew that it was pointless to debate; her mother was not going to listen. Moreover, her mother did promise Xena that she could come today and based on her personality, Fiona would not change her mind.

“Done!” After performing the acupuncture, Fane began massaging Andrew’s leg. A faint, warm feeling flowed from Fane’s palm to Andrew’s leg and into his bones. “It doesn’t hurt at all. I had lost all feeling in this part of my leg and the doctor did say that it would only get worse and I would be disabled. Who knew that I would feel something now!” Andrew felt something and his face was filled with excitement. “Really? You’re able to feel something this soon?” Fiona crossed her arms in front of her chest and said in disbelief, “Is it just an illusion? How could that be possible? He’s just messing around and did not prescribe you anything. How could you be getting better?” “This isn’t an illusion, is it? It’s quite obvious!” Andrew frowned. It was evident that he felt a bit unsure. “Haha, dad, don’t worry. You’ll feel more tomorrow and be cured in about a week.” Fane smiled and said so with confidence as he stood up. “Really? If that’s the case then great!” Andrew’s eyes were lit up after hearing what Fane said. He had never been this excited before as he thought that he had lost his leg for good. He did not expect that Fane’s return would bring hope for him.

Chapter 47

“Young man, these are your words. If he doesn’t recover by then, you’ll have to get lost!” Fiona said as she grabbed Fane by his collar. She was a little excited as well. “Mom, you’ll find out whether it works in two days!” Fane replied with a smile. “Okay, we shall see!” After saying so, Fiona looked over at the cash-filled bag and took it back into the house to hide it. As it approached noon, Ben returned with Xena and a few sets of clothes in tow. Xena seemed more beautiful than ever. Kylie was dressed in the clothes Fane got her yesterday. She seemed classier than before. After drying the clothes she put in the laundry yesterday, Selena put on a dress and her gorgeous appearance immediately outshined Xena. “Sister, you’re beautiful and definitely worthy of the title as the Middle Province’s most beautiful woman. Your child is already a few years old and your body still looks amazing. I couldn’t tell that you’re married!” Xena walked over and

immediately started praising Selena. “I’m no match for you young girls, you’re more energetic!” Selena said nonchalantly. She did not care much for Xena. “Let’s go, let’s go, we can’t be late and let the old master wait for us. Otherwise, they’ll be unhappy!” Fiona took a look at the time and they were running late. The group left and called for a cab. Soon after that, they arrived at the entrance of a huge hotel. The hotel was grand. Under the sunlight, it seemed extra shiny and classy. “The people who eat here are rich and famous and we as the Taylor family rarely come here!” Andrew stood on the piazza outside the hotel and lamented. “It seems like the old master is not that angry at us anymore so let’s hope we get to return to the Taylor family, sigh!” “We can. Dad, let’s go in?” Xena went over to hold Andrew and called him ‘dad’ endearingly. However, Fane realized Selena’s frown while watching this unfold. Meanwhile in Michael’s mansion, Ivan ran over to him and excitedly asked, “Master Wilson, how was it? Were you relaxed last night?” “Relaxed? Haha, of course I was!” Michael sneered and replied sarcastically. He was still pissed at what happened last night. Not only did he not get any girl, on top of having his restaurant trashed last night, the image of a gentleman he had been keeping up in front of Selena was ruined. He would probably never get a chance with her again. Ivan did not realize how angry Michael was at the moment. He continued saying with a smile, “Relaxed is great, relaxed is great. This cousin of mine has an amazing body so you must have taken a few photos of her, right? Just threaten her with them in the future and she’ll definitely come over. I’ve thought it out for you, give her some money every time and she’ll gradually give in to you one day and end up marrying you!” “Look, this is the contract, let’s sign it. I got someone to draw up the new contract overnight according to our deal yesterday!” Ivan passed the contract to Michael with a smile. Michael took a look at the contract, sneered, and tore it into pieces!

Chapter 48

“Hey, hey, what’s wrong? Master Wilson, why did you tear it? Didn’t we agree to signing the contract today?” Ivan was dumbfounded at the scene. His head was ringing and the Taylor family was waiting for him to go home and celebrate. Could this whole thing be ruined? “Sign your a**!” Master Wilson sat on the sofa and said angrily, “Last night, I did not even drink my coffee or do anything I wanted to. Not only was my reputation ruined, my restaurant was trashed and I did not dare to even say a word throughout the ordeal!” “How could that be? What’s going on?” “I knew it, is it Fane? This bastard had the courage to trash your restaurant?” “Wait, that’s not right, where were your men? Don’t you have a ton of them? Were they no match for Fane?” Ivan inhaled sharply. He thought that Michael was successful with Selena last night and did not expect the opposite to be the case. He did not understand how this happened even after Selena’s consent. Michael became pissed upon thinking about what happened last night. “Fane didn’t do it, he wouldn’t have the guts to. How could he even possess that ability? It was the second daughter of the Drake family, that b*tch Tanya Drake!” “No way, Tanya Drake? Why was she there?” Once again, Ivan was shocked after hearing that it was Tanya. It was the Drake family after all; there were plenty of families trying to please them. “Here’s what happened, this Tanya Drake coincidentally walked past our restaurant and saw that the interior design was decent. Because of that, she decided to go in for a meal, but…” Defeatedly, Michael continued, “This Tanya Drake is so lifeless that she likes going around causing trouble. She’s so annoying!” Ivan finally understood what had happened last night. He stayed silent for a moment before saying, “Master Wilson, look, it was an accident. None of us expected Tanya Drake to show up, did we?” He paused and pulled another contract out of his briefcase. “Therefore, I can’t be blamed for that. Thankfully I’ve made a copy of the contract. Master Wilson, let this go and sign it, shall we? Okay? Please remember all the years we’ve been friends!” “Sign my a**!” Master Wilson did not hold back from shaming Ivan. He turned his face away and said, “You’re the one who gave me the sh*tty idea

to get Selena and now I've yet to get her. I've also suffered quite a loss in my restaurant as well. Did you really think I'm still going to sign the contract with you? Based on the fact that I haven't asked you for compensation, I'm already being compassionate enough about this! I used to have a good rapport with Selena, but now I can never get near her again." "But Master Wilson, my grandpa and the others thought that I'd be signing the contract. They're waiting for me to go home and celebrate." Ivan's face turned sour and pleaded, "I can't be blamed for this. If it wasn't for the Drake family's second daughter, wouldn't you have succeeded?" "So let's wait till then!" "Escort the guest out of here!" … Meanwhile, it was lively at the Dorsett Hotel's private room. Old Master Taylor was all smiles. The private room was huge; it was big enough to fit three large tables. Everyone was happy. "Let's just wait till Selena's family and Ivan arrive, then we shall begin!"

Chapter 49

"Yes, even the champagne is out. The old master has gone all out this time paying a million bucks for each table, how lavish!" "Ivan's making his father proud this time. The profit from this project alone is 300 million bucks. It seems like this project is massive!" The Taylor family were talking about Ivan while Theodore seemed satisfied. At this very moment, the private room's door opened. Fiona and Andrew walked in with Selena and the rest. "Fiona, aren't you a big-shot, making us all wait for you!" Just as they entered the room, a relative sneered and said that loudly. Fiona smiled in embarrassment and said, "I couldn't help it, it was a little jammed on the way here!" Cecilia took a look at the international brand Selena was dressed in and said, "Tsk, Selena, you're shameless, aren't you? You actually had the guts to wear this counterfeit item out of the house. If it was me, I wouldn't even dare to wear it. How embarrassing. If someone catches that it's counterfeit, wouldn't that be horrible?" Fiona could not stand what she was hearing. She walked over and said, "Cecilia, don't you dare. This is

real. Even though our family is a little poor, this is the real deal!" "Really? You're just a little poor, and yet, you're still capable of buying something that costs 100 to 200 thousand bucks? Why do I find that hard to believe? This isn't anything ordinary!" Cecilia continued arguing. "If you could afford that, then we should be able to buy clothes that cost about one or two million, shouldn't we?" "Don't you dare say we can't afford it!" Fiona replied, 'At the very least, Fane is a veteran who served the country for five years so of course, he came back with some money. Maybe you don't know this, but those who serve for one or two years will get 100 or 200 thousand bucks in compensation. Since Fane was gone for five years and achieved meritorious service, it's no problem for the government to compensate him with about a million bucks!" Fane was embarrassed. Thankfully he did not withdraw more money today, otherwise, his mother-in-law would be putting him on a pedestal as high as the sky. If she knew that his card could get him 100 billion bucks through a password-free transaction, she might be shocked to death. "He achieved meritorious service?" Cecilia scrunched her brows together and started to believe Fiona. After all, she did hear that the veterans who returned in the past two days came home with money. Some of them who achieved meritorious service, even minor ones, were awarded with a million bucks or so. It was possible. "Of course!" Fiona replied right away but was a little hesitant about it. After all, Fane did not admit to it. However, for the sake of her reputation, she admitted it on Fane's behalf. "Really? Fane, what meritorious service did you achieve?" Old Master Taylor seemed interested in the conversation. He squinted and looked at Fane. Everyone shifted their attention to Fane at this moment. They wanted to know what meritorious service he had achieved. "Uh, I've achieved too many to remember. If I were to keep track of them, there must be at least one or two thousand awards!" Fane replied after briefly thinking about it. The crowd felt ashamed for him. This brat was obviously lying. Was it that easy to achieve meritorious service? Other veterans would usually feel

incredibly proud for achieving one, while this brat was boasting about one or two thousand awards as if it was as easy as cutting fruits and vegetables!

Chapter 50

Old Master Taylor's expression darkened as well. He said, "Fane, do you think I'm joking with you?" "Fane, aren't you a little too childish for doing this? How dare you not answer truthfully to a question from the old master!" "That's right, where is your respect for the old master? Do you not remember that if it wasn't for the old master lending you a million bucks back then, your mother would be dead by now!" A few of the members from the Taylor family began speaking to Fane angrily. "Old Master, I'm telling the truth. Sigh, if you don't believe me then forget it!" Fane shrugged. He did not want to elaborate any further. If it was not for worrying that Selena might be bullied today, he would not have even came here. "Wait, who's this girl?" Cecilia initially wanted to cause trouble for Selena but did not expect Fane to have achieved meritorious service. Her clothes might be real so Cecilia had no choice but to give up. Soon after that, she realized that a stranger's face was in the room. "Oh, Cecilia, let me introduce her to everyone. This is my girlfriend, Xena Jackson. We've been dating for quite some time and are getting married soon!" "Since grandpa invited everyone over here, I thought that I should bring her here and introduce her to everyone!" Ben smiled shyly and seemed servile. "Ben, that's not nice of you, is it? This is a lunch for the Taylor family and you got an outsider over here, this…" "At least Fane has a marriage certificate, the person you've brought here…" Cecilia said sarcastically while feeling excited internally. "Xena is not an outsider. She's already calling me mom so she'll definitely marry my Ben soon!" Fiona butt into the conversation upon seeing that Cecilia was bullying Xena. "Stop it, some people haven't been to a place like this so isn't it normal to want to experience it?" Another woman sneered on the side. "Yes, it's nothing for us, but for some people, it's an achievement to bring his girlfriend here!" Cecilia said as she looked over at

Ben. Ben's expression darkened but he did not know how to defend himself. He glared at Fane who was standing next to him. It was this bastard's fault. If it was not for him getting his sister pregnant, would he be shamed this way today? If it was not for Fane, his family would be living lavishly today. Who knows, his sister might have been the family heir. At that point, who would have the guts to shame him this way? "Xena, you have to think this through. Although Ben is a Taylor, you should know where he stands since he stays in a place like that, haha!" "You're pretty so it would be a waste to marry him. You might be poor for the rest of your life!" After giving it some thought, Cecilia went over to stir trouble again. Xena smiled shyly and replied, "Sister, you're too nice. Ben is nice to me and I like him for who he is. I haven't been thinking about anything else so as long as I'm happy, I'm good!" "Cecilia, are you too free? What does our business have anything to do with you? You're just jealous because you don't have a boyfriend, right?" Ben could not stand it anymore. He finally rebutted Cecilia. "What are you talking about? I have nothing to be jealous of. It's not that I don't have a boyfriend, it's just that I haven't found anyone who meets my standards. If I wanted to have one, I'd definitely find a man who's rich, powerful, and capable of protecting me. As for someone like you, tsk, anyone who's not an idiot wouldn't want you!" Cecilia said sarcastically as she crossed her arms in front of her chest. "Grandpa, is there anything worth celebrating today?"

Chapter 51

Selena frowned as she walked forward to question. "Yeah, is this a major event, father? You've prepared so much champagne too!" Andrew also had on a puzzled look. He truly could not understand why such a grand celebration was being held at noon! "There is indeed something worth celebrating for. Ivan is going to sign a huge business deal and it happens to be a huge one. Ivan mentioned that its net profit would be 300 million bucks! This amount is close to the profits we make in a year!" The old master

smiled and said bluntly. “Yes indeed, our Ivan has finally done us proud for once. He’s been able to finalize such a major business deal!” Theodore nodded before raising his head slightly. He seemed slightly proud. “I’m not sure which family he made the deal with though?” Selena frowned and felt that this was quite unexpected as this unserious man was somehow able to do something so baffling? “With the Wilson’s. He’s already on his way to sign it. We’ve already come to an agreement through the phone last night so I’m guessing he should be on his way back right now!” The old master looked at the time. “Selena, the truth is that you’re quite remarkable back then. It’s too bad, if it wasn’t for…” A relative from the Taylor’s shot a glance at Fane, hinting at something. “Uncle, I know. I chose this path and won’t ever regret it!” Selena smiled, looking somewhat melancholic. It was just at this moment that the door opened once again and Ivan appeared in front of everyone. “Ivan’s back, everyone clap!” Theodore cheered out immediately. In that instant, everyone began clapping and the entire room instantly became lively! “Ivan, you’ve arrived at such an opportune moment, everyone’s gathered here just for you!” “Yes indeed, Young Master Ivan. Hurry up and announce the fruits of your labor, even the champagne is all ready!” Several relatives immediately came forward to butter Ivan up. Fane and Selena exchanged looks with each other. They could tell the purpose of the gathering today was to witness Ivan’s amazing results and to simply show off his outstanding abilities! Ivan had a bitter look as he spoke in a depressed tone, “The contract was a bust. Something came up and Young Master Wilson immediately tore it apart!” “What!” Everyone gasped when they heard that statement! They were all ready for a celebration that even a banquet was fully prepared. However, Ivan had actually told them the entire ordeal was for nothing. Before Ivan went out, he was extremely confident and it seemed as if he was 100% certain the deal would follow through. “What happened?” The old master’s expression dimmed as he slowly approached Ivan and questioned him. At that moment, Ivan found himself tongue-tied. He actually had no idea how to respond. He

could not possibly expose the horrific deed he and Micheal did last night, right? If he did, it was possible that the old master would have thought of murdering him. “Well, this is quite difficult to say… The thing is, Micheal was in a bad mood and mentioned that his family had some incident last night, so he would not be signing the agreement anymore. I too, had no choice!” “I was also kicked out of there!” Ivan decided to scold him. “I didn’t expect Micheal to be so dishonorable as well! How could he change his mind when it was already agreed upon!”

Chapter 52

“How can Micheal act like that? So he just changed his mind today without reason after coming into an agreement yesterday!” “Yes, how despicable indeed. He actually had the audacity to toy with such a major deal?” Everyone from the Taylor family was extremely furious and started putting all the blame on Micheal. Upon noticing that no one was pointing fingers at him, Ivan felt relieved in his heart. Fane, who was standing on the side, frowned. He somehow felt this whole ordeal was not as simple. It was not easy for Fiona to obtain such an opportunity, so it was only natural for her to take it. She immediately said, “Sigh, Young Master Ivan, our family has been waiting on your good news, you know. Here we thought you’d be able to bring in a business deal worth 300 million bucks to the Taylor family. We didn’t expect for it to all turn into nothing!” The moment she made that statement, Ivan’s face looked incredibly cold and bitter. He had originally gotten Fiona and everyone here to brag about his amazing achievements, not expecting it to backfire on him. However, he took a look at Fane at the side. He scoffed and said, “This is an oversight on my part because I never expected someone of such high status like Young Master Wilson to go back on his word!” Ivan paused as he made that statement. He then pondered for a moment before continuing, “However, I’m stronger than others since I believe someone still doesn't have a job ever since his return, right!? The truth is, it is people like these that have the hardest time finding a job!”

Cecelia immediately interjected and said, “Oh yeah, after veterans are discharged, they seem to have a very difficult time finding jobs that are suitable for them. So, could he be working his old job and delivering take out?” Upon hearing that, plenty of the Taylors started laughing. In their eyes, delivering take out was viewed as a very low and disgraceful job. “That’s right, I know plenty of veterans that can’t get a job after being discharged and end up working as bodyguards or security guards. Heheh, why don’t we do it this way? Come be a security guard in our company and I’ll pay you a monthly wage of 4000 bucks!” After Ivan gave it some thought, he started chuckling and being condescending. “4000 a month, that’s not bad!” The moment Fiona heard that, she told Fane, “Why don’t you think about it, Fane? You’re a big man and can’t possibly just stew at home and not do anything, right?” “Heheh, forget about it. First of all, I am not in need of that kind of meager cash. Also, I don’t wish to be ordered around by certain people.” However, Fane seemed to have refused the offer immediately. When he witnessed the scene of Ivan bullying his own daughter upon his return yesterday, he would never work for Ivan. If it was not for Ivan being part of the Taylors, and therefore Selena’s relative, Fane would have murdered him already. All he wanted to do now was spend time with his wife and daughter and live a peaceful life. “In no need of money?” Ivan laughed the moment he heard that. Even Fiona’s expression instantly turned bitter. “Heheh, you’re not in need of money? How comical. Don’t forget our agreement, don’t blame us when you’re unable to fork out that 300 million buck when the time comes!” Ivan chuckled before he started laughing at Fane. He said, “You don’t actually seem to be short on cash. You’re in no need of meager cash, right? What you lack is 300 million bucks so I’m actually interested to see how you’re going to make that money. If you can’t fork it out when the time comes, it’ll prove that aside from your ability to lie, you’re nothing!” “There’s no need for you to care about my affairs. 4000 a month, that’s literally an insult to me!”

Chapter 53

Fane let out a subtle smile. The truth was that when he was about to get discharged, it was uncertain just how many people had secretly contacted him and offered him an astronomical amount of money. However, he had turned them all down. As such, it was impossible for Ivan's offer of four thousand bucks to do his bidding to work as the amount was merely an insult to him. "Yes, yes, yes. You're the boss, you've contributed something major for the country so they must have offered you a huge sum of money, right? Heheh, from the looks of things, we're blind to worry about you!" Ivan spoke in a sinister tone. Fane ignored him and instead, shifted his focus on the champagne on the table. He then said, "Old Master Taylor, are we not celebrating anymore? If we don't eat now, the food's going to get cold!" The corner of Old Master Taylor's mouth twitched violently as Fane did not hold any restraint as he spoke. He was saying things that he should not just to intentionally embarrass them even though today was planned as a celebration. "I think you haven't seen food this delicious in a really long time now. You should be drooling now even looking at it, right?" Cecelia immediately rolled her eyes at Fane before coldly making that statement. "Let's eat since the food's already served. Just pretend this is a normal gathering now!" Old Master Taylor helplessly waved his hand. He then took a look at Ivan and said, "Ivan, remember that next time before any agreements are signed, ignore all verbal agreements made. There is always a possibility that the other party will back out of it at any time. Do you understand? Therefore, don't speak so confidently next time!" Ivan's expression turned bitter, however, he was only able to roll with the punches and smile awkwardly. He said, "I understand, grandpa. Please, join us too!" Finally, everyone sat down and began eating. Xena seemed to be eating cautiously. She originally thought that since her own appearance was not bad, the Taylor family might be happier that she tagged along. She had not expected that she would instead be looked down and unacknowledged.

“Young Master Ivan, that Fane fellow was acting quite rashly earlier. Why don’t we think of a way to humiliate him?” While they ate, a middle-aged man from the Taylor family sat next to Ivan and spoke up. “Really now? Do you have a plan?” After Ivan heard it, he was instantly interested. “Heheh, Young Master Ivan, don’t we have quite a few alcoholics here? Why don’t we get him drunk and he’ll humiliate himself then, right? It would be much better if he’s picking fights irrationally while drunk!” The man chuckled as he said that. “Alright!” Ivan was instantly delighted. He had always gone out for drinks and his alcohol tolerance was pretty good. Moreover, if some members of the Taylor family could listen to him and drink with Fane, it would be a miracle for him to not become drunk under his command! After a brief moment, that middle-aged man approached Fane and said with a smile, “You’re Fane, right? Honestly, when you married Selena back then, I didn’t get a chance to drink with you as your elder. So, let’s raise a toast to you being a war hero as it’s completely unrelated to whether you’re part of the Taylor family or not!” Since he mentioned he was an elder, Fane could not refuse him. All he could do was stand up and pour himself a drink before saying, “You’re too kind. We’re all citizens of Cathysia and it’s our duty to defend our land! As a form of respect, I’ll drink to you first!” The man was delighted when he noticed Fane chug the glass of alcohol down so casually. After that, he finished his drink then said, “Oh, how I can’t see the joy of being a soldier. Your alcohol tolerance is not bad. Come on now, let’s drink one more. This one, we’ll think of it as a blessing to you and Selena. Naturally, I hope that you can fork out 300 thousand bucks on Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday in order to prove that you’re worthy of our Selena!”

Chapter 54

The first toast was to respect Fane’s contribution in defending the country. The second was a blessing to Fane and Selena. These reasons made Fane unable to refuse the drinks. Not to mention, the person was an elderly. If

Fane refused his offer, he would obviously seem unreasonable. Hence, all Fane could do was smile and accept every toast given to him as they drank. The only thing was, Fane had not expected that even after three consecutive toasts, the man in front of him would not leave as another man came over with more alcohol. Fane could not help but frown as he was starting to find the entire ordeal weird. These people usually looked down on him and now they were all trying to drink with him? Hence, it seemed peculiar and it was obvious that they were trying to get him drunk. However, as much as they tried to scheme against him, he never took it to heart. The five years he spent in harrowing, war-torn conditions made his body extremely fit. Adding on to that fact that he had a pretty peculiar encounter, it would be impossible for these people to actually get him drunk. After that, more people continuously came by. Fane smiled at them politely, then made small talk with them before chugging down all of the alcohol in his glass. He looked very impressive. After drinking seven to eight glasses of red wine, Selena who was watching from the side started to panic slightly. After Fane got seated once again, she instinctively tugged Fane's shirt gently. "Don't you know how to refuse? It's fine to drink a little less. You drank so much so fast. What will you do if you get drunk?" Selena lowered her voice and reminded him in a soft tone. Fane's heart felt warm after hearing her statement. He never expected that Selena would actually care for him so much. Besides, such a wife would be very difficult to find. In order to save his pride, she intentionally spoke in a softer tone so no one else could hear. "Don't worry, my alcohol tolerance isn't that bad. Besides, you can take a look and see that basically everyone that came over are elders. Their excuses would make even you unable to refuse. It's actually quite kind of them to not string you along and ask you to drink with them!" Fane also lowered his voice and replied in a soft tone, placing his hand over his mouth. "This happens to be red wine. Although it tastes good, the rush later can be quite overwhelming. It's easy to get drunk so be careful!" Selena also realized the excuses they had given Fane earlier were truly difficult to refuse. If he

deliberately refused any of them, those elders would say that Fane looked down on them and it would be quite a complicated ordeal to manage after that. The only thing was, how could she not worry with the way Fane was drinking? Ivan had a wide smile as he walked over with a glass of alcohol in his hand at that moment. After Fane looked at him, he frowned and said, “Young Master Ivan, you wouldn’t also want to drink with me now, would you? I happened to be the one that broke your arm though!” The edge of Ivan’s mouth twitched violently when he heard that statement. However, he controlled his emotions and said with a smile, “Heheh, that was all a misunderstanding. I was actually playing with Kylie back then. I didn’t expect you to misunderstand!” After he finished saying that, he added, “No matter what, Selena is still my cousin and you should call me cousin as well. Although I feel like you’re not capable of anything, but it’s not easy to survive through the fields of battle and return. With that, allow me to raise you a toast!” After saying that, Ivan immediately chugged his glass dry. He then said, “Fane, you wouldn’t deny me that honor now, would you?” “Heheh, how kind. Young Master Ivan giving me a toast would, without a doubt, be my honor. Don’t mind if I do!” Fane chuckled as he immediately chugged the alcohol in his glass down. “Hahah. Great! Now we’re talking!” “I love making connections with people. What do you say we drink three shots?” One of Ivan’s hands was still in a cast, but he still took a bottle of red wine and poured it into two of the empty glasses. “This isn’t such a good idea now, your injuries haven't fully recovered yet. Young Master Ivan, it’s best for you to not drink that much!” Fane pretended to be tipsy as he gently shook his head and advised him.

Chapter 55

Upon noticing that Fane had finally started to refuse a drink and was even shaking his head, Ivan felt delighted in his heart. Judging from the look of things, it seemed Fane might be reaching his limit. He immediately said, “It’s fine, it’s fine. Come on now, today is a happy day and we should all

drink three shots!" "Fine then!" Fane pretended as if he was in a tough spot but still drank all of the alcohol slowly. At this moment, Fane had already drank more than ten glasses in a row as even the few elders and Ivan were feeling slightly tipsy. However, they all thought that Fane should be close to getting drunk by now. "Come on guys, we haven't had a drink together in a very long time now, let's all drink!" Ivan raised his glass and spoke to everyone present. He scoffed in his heart that under a situation where everyone was drinking, Fane would have no way to refuse and would be forced to drink. "Alright, let's all drink. Let's drink for our Taylor Group's business to grow stronger!" Old Master Taylor smiled as he said that. "Cheers!" Ivan immediately chugged the alcohol down. Not long after he was done drinking, Ivan signaled the others to take turns making Fane drink. He was interested to see how long Fane could keep up. Unfortunately for him, although Fane was not bold enough to refuse and seemed very close to getting drunk, he was still drinking glass after glass. On the other hand, it was the few elders that were completely flustered from drinking. Even their speech seemed to slur. Two of them even rushed to the washroom to puke not long after. Ivan was completely furious as he went ahead to drink a few more glasses with Fane. However, he ended up completely drunk while Fane was still fine. "Goddammit, what kind of a monster is this brat to have such a high alcohol tolerance?" A completely wasted man approached Ivan and commented with a frown. "I told you that a veteran's alcohol tolerance would be impressive but this, isn't this a little too insane? The few of us were taking turns drinking with him and are still unable to get him drunk!" Ivan had a bitter look on his face and was completely speechless. It was at this moment that Tanya, who had just finished a meal with her best friends, walked by the room. She heard how lively it was inside and decided to casually take a peek. With a glance, she noticed that Fane was actually drinking with the Taylor family. "What's wrong? Let's go, Tanya. You wouldn't have actually been charmed by that handsome man inside now, would you?" One of the young ladies teased. "You guys go on ahead, I'm

not joining you guys for the shopping trip. There's someone I know inside and I have something to do!" Tanya immediately said with a smile. "Alright then, we'll hang out some other day!" The other girls nodded and left soon after. Tanya immediately pushed the door open and entered the room. She said, "Oh wow. I was just talking about how lively it was inside, it turned out to be the Taylor family!" "Who are you? We, the Taylor family, are having a meal here. What is a stranger doing here?" Ivan was already holding onto the frustrations in his heart. In his drunken state, he yelled out immediately without even taking a closer look.

Chapter 56

"I'm a stranger? Heheh, I'll leave then!" Tanya was stunned for a moment before chuckling out loud as she turned around and was getting ready to leave. Old Master Taylor could recognize who she was at a glance and immediately gasped. This happened to be the daughter of the wealthiest man in the Middle Province. Her family's power was terrifyingly immense. It was uncertain just how many people wished to grovel to their family. However, it seemed such opportunity was incredibly rare. They, as a third class aristocratic family, were even more desperate to butter up to them. The only thing was that there was never such opportunity to do so. They did not expect Tanya to actually show up in front of them. The only thing was that his own grandson looked like a mess to have actually said something like that without being afraid of offending that person. "Drake-Miss Tanya…" Old Master Taylor was quite nervous as he stuttered. "Ivan, what on Earth are you spouting? That happens to be Miss Tanya. Are you not going to hurry up and apologize?" Even Theodore was startled as he immediately chastised Ivan. Originally in a drunken stupor, Ivan was completely terrified when he heard that statement. Immediately, he stood up frantically, rushed over, and extended his arm. He said, "I'm sorry, sorry. Sigh, I didn't expect you to be Miss Tanya. This is truly a surprise. What I mean to say is, I didn't expect a woman of such high status like Miss Tanya to show up in a place

like this…" Ivan had no idea how to apologize as he extended his arm, intending to shake the other person's hand. However, Miss Tanya had both hands behind her back and completely ignored Ivan. She took a glance at Old Master Taylor and said, "Old Master Taylor, am I welcomed here?" "Welcome, welcome. Of course you're welcomed!" Old Master Taylor frantically said, "Waiter, add another set of cutlery. Please sit here, Miss Tanya!" With a smile, Miss Tanya said, "No need for the trouble. Just rice is fine as I've just finished a meal next door earlier with my best friends. While passing through, I noticed a familiar face here and came by to have a look!" "Miss Tanya! Unexpectedly, we meet again!" Fiona was behaving extremely rashly as she frantically came forward while chuckling out loud. It seemed like she was buttering up to her. Miss Tanya's status was unimaginably high and she had even handed her a name card last night. If she was able to speak a little more with Tanya, the Taylor family would have to respect her even more. However, she felt slightly anxious. She was afraid that Miss Taylor might ignore her and if that happened, she would just be embarrassing herself. "Indeed, aunty. I noticed you guys here so I decided to come in and take a look!" Miss Tanya smiled calmly as that single statement made everyone gasp. So, was the familiar face Miss Tanya was talking about actually Fiona and the others? When did Fiona and her family even become the familiar faces Miss Tanya mentioned? Although Miss Tanya also knew about Old Master Taylor, she would never address him as a 'familiar face'. "Young Master Ivan, that apology of yours seemed a little insincere. I think you should at least drink an entire bottle of red wine… Besides, that exclamation you made earlier sounded louder than usual!" At this moment, Fane unexpectedly chuckled before lazily commenting on his previous statement. The corners of Ivan's mouth twitched violently. He was already dizzy from drinking so how could he possibly drink an entire bottle of red wine by himself? This brat was intentionally trying to stir up trouble! "Oh yeah, your voice was actually really loud earlier that even I was startled!"

Chapter 57

What was even more unbelievable was that Miss Tanya was actually covering her tiny mouth in shock. She then said, “If you’re able to finish this entire bottle of red wine, that would prove the sincerity of your apology.” Old Master Taylor was also speechless for a moment. However, since Miss Tanya had spoken, if they did not do what she asked, it would be very disrespectful to her. If she held a grudge in her heart due to this, it would seem that their Taylor family would not even be able to dream about expanding in the Middle Province ever again. “What are you still dawdling there for, Ivan? Show your sincerity!” Upon noticing the bitter look on Ivan’s face, Old Master Taylor was put in a tough spot and immediately reminded him. “Alright, it wasn’t my intention to offend you earlier. I will chug this bottle dry as an apology!” Ivan grabbed a bottle of red wine and immediately poured it down his throat. When he was halfway through drinking it, he felt slightly uncomfortable. However, he had no choice but to grit his teeth and forcefully finish the entire bottle. Hatred brewed in his heart. That cursed Fane, why did he have to randomly seek out trouble. The main point was that Miss Tanya had actually listened to him. Moreover, what made him even more speechless was that it was Miss Tanya who ruined his schemes last night. If it was not for her, he would have successfully signed the agreement and returned with pride to show off how capable he was. Unfortunately… After he had finished drinking, Ivan could no longer keep it together as he immediately felt dizzy. He swayed from left to right as he took a few steps forward before collapsing onto the ground and puking. Old Master Taylor had an extremely bitter look upon witnessing this scene. He secretly scolded Ivan for being too weak. If he had to puke, he could have waited until after Miss Tanya had left. How embarrassing was it to act in such a way in front of others. Would there even be a chance for both families to work together in the future? In the future, Ivan would be the lord of the household. Maintaining his image was important. “That’s right,

what are you guys celebrating? I noticed people drinking champagne over there!" Miss Tanya merely glanced at Ivan on the ground before questioning Old Master Taylor. "Well, the truth is that it's nothing major. We… We were…" Old Master Taylor frowned and was unsure what to say. Suddenly, he noticed Fane and decided to grit his teeth before saying, "We are here to welcome Fane back home. Besides, he returned from the battlefield and made the country proud, right?" "Indeed, this is something worthy of celebrating!" Tanya nodded, then immediately told Fane, "Oh right, Fane, the Drake family happens to be looking for a bodyguard. I noticed you've been discharged so you should be pretty impressive now, right? You just came back and don't have a job now, right? I'm not sure but would you be interested in working as a bodyguard for the Drake family?" The instant Fiona heard her say that, she was ecstatic and said frantically, "Of course, of course he's interested. I heard the lowest wage for the Drake family's bodyguards is around twenty to thirty thousand bucks and for those who are considered skilled, their wages would go up to more than 100 thousand, right?" "Don't worry, aunty. If Fane comes over, his wages will be up for him to decide. We're just afraid that he won't be willing to come over!" Tanya knew Fane was an impressive man since her own father had repeatedly told her to get closer and help him no matter what. It seemed this man's relationship with the God of War was an unusual one. "Coming, coming, coming! Of course, he'd be willing to come, what is there to be unwilling of? It's uncertain just how many people desperately want to be a bodyguard for your family!" Fiona was beaming. This was because if Fane was not an idiot, he would definitely not let go of such an opportunity! After she was done speaking, she pulled Fane aside and whispered, "She said it's up to you to decide on the wages. Don't you dare ask for a small amount. If you're embarrassed to ask for 100 thousand bucks, at the very least, ask for fifty to eighty thousand!" Fane had the cold sweats since his mother-in-law was energetic at the sheer mention of money. Fane turned around and chuckled at Tanya before saying, "I'm completely uninterested in becoming

a bodyguard for your family. However, my wife happens to really want a job. Unless you guys can assign her to work under the Drake family, only then will I reluctantly state my price!”

Chapter 58

“No way, is he mad? Isn’t he threatening Miss Tanya right now?” “Yeah, if that isn’t a threat then what is? If his wife isn’t assigned a job, he won’t work as their bodyguard? What a joke, it was as if she’s begging him to be their bodyguard!” “Oh my god, this is too foolish. Miss Tanya was taking the fact he had contributed to the country into account and looking out for him. Because of this, she wanted him to work as the Drake family’s bodyguard. It’s unknown just how many people desperately want to work under that position and yet, he has the audacity to spout such nonsense!” “Heheh, the main point is that Miss Tanya even offered for him to name his own price. This alone shows just how much respect he’s being given!” All the Taylor family relatives gasped after hearing what Fane said and silently began discussing among themselves. “Good lord, what if that brat offended Miss Tanya and the Drake family? If that happens, would they pin the blame on our Taylor family as well since that brat is the Taylor family’s son-in-law!” No one knew who said that. Old Master Taylor was also startled after hearing that statement. It was a fair point though. If Fane offended the Drake family, his death would have very little impact on them as the Taylor family had never taken him seriously. However, this brat happened to be Selena’s man. From the perspective of others, he happened to be their son-in-law. If Miss Tanya were to put blame on the Taylor family due to troubles this brat had caused, that would be disastrous. He frantically came forward and smiled toward Tanya as he said, “Miss Tanya, this brat happened to have a little too much to drink and was spouting nonsense. Please don’t take it to heart. Thank you for your kind gesture, Miss Tanya. The thing is, this brat might’ve only been an underling while he was in the army. He isn’t used to formalities, so it seems like it would be very difficult for him to adapt to

being a bodyguard for the Drake family.” They never expected Fane's statement to make Miss Tanya very excited as she wanted nothing more than to please Fane immediately as it also meant buttering up to Lana, one of the Gods of War. Her initial statement was meant to test Fane. She assumed that Fane would not agree to it but had not expected that he would actually give her such an opportunity. “What nonsense are you talking about, Fane? Miss Tanya has offered you such a great job so you should behave and do it well. Don’t bring Miss Tanya trouble!” Even Selena was startled as she immediately said that after snapping out of her shock. “No way, I’ll only agree to it if you want to work there. If you don’t, I won’t work as well. The truth is that I’m not even willing to work anyway!” That brat Fane immediately said that with a cold expression. Everyone felt like passing out. This brat was clearly stupid. His current state would require him to desperately get a job to support the family’s expenses. Did he not know that his family was extremely poor? How could he still act so arrogantly at this moment? “Sure! Absolutely!” Miss Tanya kept her excitement hidden as she walked forward and told Selena, “Miss Selena, I remembered that you’re quite talented in management. Let’s put it this way, we have a huge project that will launch soon so you can come over and be our project manager, what say you? The wages will be fifty-no, one million per month, how about that? There’ll be a year-end bonus too!” “A million!” Fiona and Andrew looked at each other and gasped. Even if she was project manager, it was already pretty impressive to make more than ten thousand bucks a month. They did not expect Miss Tanya would make such a high offer. “Sis, are you not gonna hurry and thank Miss Tanya? Where else would you find such an amazing job?” Ben was afraid she would go back on her word and immediately reminded her. “Yeah, dear daughter, hurry up and agree now. Do you understand?”

Chapter 59

Fiona was extremely ecstatic since such a high wage was something she completely had never expected. Would that mean, after a few months, they would be able to afford a mansion? “This… Isn’t this a little too high?” Selena was also quite emotional as she was stunned for a moment. Back then, after she was exiled from the Taylor family, she ran into continuous stumbles as she had a very difficult time finding a job. Even when she wanted to look for an agent to search for jobs, not a single person dared to take her in. Now, however, Miss Taylor actually tossed her a lifeline. The main point was, would Ivan even dare to stir up trouble with the Drake family after Miss Tanya immediately offered her a job? It was obvious that would be very unlikely to happen. Fane frowned as he secretly muttered in his heart that the Drake family was actually quite talented in snooping. Since they were most likely trying to butter up to him because they offered Selena such a good job. Although Fane disliked money, as long as his wife was happy and at peace, he would be very happy. “Honey, it all depends if you’re willing or not. If you’re not then just refuse it. Besides, we’re not in need of money!” Fane shrugged his shoulders then casually mentioned that. It was true that he was in no need of money. Since it would only take a single word from him and the entire Middle Province would be his. The only thing was, he currently had no intention of flaunting his status. The entire Taylor family had nearly passed out. In no need of money? Selena was actually picking up trash to sell back then and he actually could say that they were in no need of money. “Good lord, such heavy words you have! You’ve merely contributed to a minor cause anyway so your prize money is only slightly more than a million bucks, right? With so little money and you dare say you’re in no need of money? If you want a better home in the capital, you might not even be able to afford a three-bedroom, one living room home!” Cecelia could no longer watch his pretentiousness as she directly insulted him. “Yeah, that daughter of his, she was already able to be enrolled in a kindergarten last year but she hasn’t been able to even till now and it’s all because of them not having money. That happens to be the little hard-earned

money he made by risking his life for five years. If he could boast that much, it seems he's never seen enough money yet since a million bucks were enough to satisfy him already!" Another member of the Taylor family could not hold back from mocking him. "I'm willing, why wouldn't I be? I've long been yearning for a job now. The thing is, the wage is a little too high and I'm a little worried that I'm unable to meet the work standards and disappoint Miss Tanya!" Selena's heart was slightly emotional and was a little anxious as well as she frantically said that. "Miss Selena, don't you worry. I have faith in your abilities. We've done our research about you, the two years you were in the Taylor family and when you were the general manager, the results of the company were quite impressive!" "However, after another person was appointed in these five years, it seems to be going downhill slightly!" Tanya smiled and bluntly said, "Or else, I wouldn't have so casually offered my price, right?" It seemed as if Fane was suspicious of something as Tanya intentionally explained. After hearing that statement, Andrew who was standing by the side had a bitter expression. Was this not blatantly telling him that his son was not as capable as Selena? This felt like a tight slap across his face!

Timothy

Solid work

Chapter 60

"Thank you Miss Taylor for your praises. This toast is my respect to you!" Selena was slightly anxious in her heart. A monthly wage of a million bucks, such a job would be extremely hard to find. It seemed not even the monthly wage of a general manager would come close to that. "Hehe, you're too kind! To a happy collaboration then!" Tanya did not act pridefully as she walked over and poured herself some red wine then gently bumped her wine glass with Selena's before drinking. "Fane, now that your wife had agreed to come work with us, you can't go back on your words now, name your price?" Tanya was beaming as she was praying in her heart if her father

knew she had hired Fane as their bodyguard, it would be uncertain just how happy he would be. Everyone's faces were sweating. Since not only was Miss Tanya not infuriated after hearing Fane's outrageous statement, she seemed very keen on having Fane be a part of their Drake family and making him a bodyguard. Fane let out a bitter laugh and said, "Well, I have no choice now and it seems, I have to agree to it then!" As he was saying that, Fane paused then said, "But, I have a condition. Regarding the wages, I can be paid a little less, besides, I don't lack money. However, as for the hours, I require my freedom. That meant I'll only come to work when I have the time to and if something is up, I have to head out and attend to it, right!" Tanya's expression seemed peculiar. How was this working, was this not called living like a master? "What on Earth are you thinking, Fane? You are there to be a bodyguard, you're working for people so you should abide by their terms. How could you leave whenever you feel like it?" Fiona was extremely furious. This br*t had finally found an excellent job and he was being very unreasonable now. Moreover, he even mentioned that he could be paid a little less. He was completely lacking integrity now. However, since this trash was unworthy of being her son-in-law and since she was able to exile him from the Taylor family on the old master's seventieth birthday. So, what was there to worry about anyway. "Son, this is such a good opportunity so you should work well now. Do you understand?" Joan too came forward to advise him. "Sure. However, if any major incidents require your help, you'll have to arrive immediately whenever you're called. Can you do that?" They never expected Miss Tanya had actually agreed to him once more. "Hiss!" Theodore and the others were completely baffled. Has Miss Tanya gone mad? How could she actually agree to such terms? Was their Drake family in such desperate need of bodyguards? "Now, you can talk about the amount you desire for your wages, right? You mentioned earlier, you want to be paid a little less, so don't go asking for too much now!" Miss Tanya was chuckling. She looked extremely adorable. "Yeah, alright then, just twenty million bucks! Twenty million bucks per month!

Any amount lesser than that, you can forget about it!" Fane was silent for a moment then raised two fingers. "Are you insane, Fane? Is Miss Tanya joking with you now?" A relative of the Taylor family immediately scolded him. This br*t was blatantly throwing a fit. How can a bodyguard ask for twenty million a month, not to mention, come to work whenever he was free? Was he not afraid of offending Miss Tanya? What if she grew furious then? "Brat, this amount is a little outrageous now. Even if you can name your price, you shouldn't name it as such, right?" A bodyguard behind Miss Tanya could no longer bear to watch. In normal circumstances, they would never intervene but this br*t bluntly requested twenty million bucks. Then what would they, bodyguards with only a monthly wage of a hundred to two hundred thousand bucks be considered as?

Chapter 61

Although the three other bodyguards did not speak a word, their expressions dimmed. Was this not an insult to them? "What on Earth are you talking about?" Selena was also extremely startled by it. Miss Tanya was being very nice but time and time again Fane was blatantly testing her limits. A monthly wage of twenty million bucks on top of leaving the Drake family whenever he wanted? How would that be possible? If the Drake family master had learned about it, he would immediately be driven insane by Fane's madness. "Fane, are you mad from all that thinking about money? Didn't you want a much lesser wage? So it seems, your much lesser wage is twenty million bucks per month! This is the first time I have ever seen a bodyguard's wage this high!" Cecelia was saying that with a sinister tone. This time, was this br*t not intentionally offending Miss Tanya now? It would be absurd for Miss Tanya to not be furious this time. It was obvious now that Miss Tanya's bodyguards were all furious. It seemed this time, the br*t would have no choice but to escape. Miss Tanya on the other hand was frowning on the side as in her heart she felt quite surprised. If this br*t was a veteran King of War or an officer, it would be very reasonable to ask for such a

price. However, was he really that impressive? Besides, there were also clear distinctions to powerful people on the battlefield. “Pardon, Miss Tanya, this Fane fellow had too much to drink earlier, he might possibly be drunk now!” Old Master Taylor was also startled by Fane. He was afraid of Fane indirectly bringing trouble to their Taylor family. So, he explained, “I hope Miss Tanya won’t blame him. Also, although he might be married to Selena, he’s not close to us.” “Yes, yes, yes! He’s only a son-in-law, an outsider!” The other members of the Taylor family also frantically explained. It would mean a world of trouble to them if Miss Tanya decided to pin the blame on them. “This price I am offering is actually quite low already. Usually, when people approached me, I would name my price in the billions. I’ve lowered my price from the billions to millions so you should be happy, Miss Tanya!” Fane actually once again boldly made such a statement. Once again, the Taylor family were all speechless. He even mentioned he had lowered the price to twenty million bucks. Could there possibly even be someone who would offer twenty billion bucks and be successful in hiring him? Unless he was the God of War but obviously he certainly was not! “Alright then, you and Miss Selena can come over to work tomorrow morning!” Miss Tanya had only hesitated for a moment before immediately agreeing to it. She felt that based on Fane’s tone, he did not sound like he was lying. Even if he was slightly boasting, he would without a doubt still be a very powerful man. Besides, her own father had witnessed him being in the same private jet with the God of War, Lana when they returned. “Deal!” Fane calmly smiled and nodded. “We didn’t mishear it right, Miss Tanya? He didn’t mention twenty thousand, it was twenty million though!” A bodyguard initially was waiting for Miss Tanya’s orders to immediately beat Fane to a pulp but he never expected Miss Tanya to actually agree to it. “Miss Tanya, it’s twenty million though. Not even the commander or the assistant commander would be paid this much now, right?” Another bodyguard immediately protested. He was wondering if he

was dreaming. “Now, there is one with this high of a price!” Fane chuckled calmly and said that with a carefree attitude.

Chapter 62

That single statement Fane made, almost caused a few bodyguards to pass out. This br*t was too unreasonable. Was this not blatantly insulting them? “Don’t worry. I’m a fool and I have faith in his abilities! If he can survive on the battlefield for five years, he will without a doubt have his uses!” Miss Tanya was clear in her heart and she could not possibly tell them it was all to butter up to the God of War, hence his high price offer. Hence, she forced an explanation. “Yes, yes, yes! Miss Tanya, your judgment is impeccable!” Fiona was incredibly ecstatic in her heart. If Fane’s monthly wage was twenty million bucks, does that mean he would make two hundred and forty million a year? If that was the case and if Fane worked for a lifetime then, well, anyone would be excited with just that thought. “Miss Tanya, don’t you worry, I’m sure my brother-in-law won’t disappoint you!” Ben was so excited, he did not know what to say as he immediately spoke out. “Brother-in-law?” Fane turned his head to look at him as he thought this change in attitude was too drastic now. Before they came, he wanted to beat him up, how come now he would call him his brother-in-law? Ben nervously laughed and said, “Hehe, you’re my sister’s husband so, if you’re not my brother-in-law then who could you be?” “Yeah, of course, you’re his brother-in-law now!” Fiona delightfully said, “My dear son-in-law, I have faith in your abilities and you will work well in the Drake family and forge a career for yourself!” Fane had cold sweats as that son-in-law came too suddenly. “Cough! Cough! Mom, didn’t you mention that if I didn’t cough up that ten million to you, you won’t acknowledge my status?” Fane let out two dry coughs then intentionally said that. Fiona’s face immediately blushed as she frantically said, “Sigh, your monthly wage is already twenty million, it’s impossible you can’t give me that ten million now, right?” “Miss Tanya, are you serious?” Even Old Master Taylor was startled and

was wondering if this was a hallucination. Although Fane had spent five years on the battlefield, it was uncertain how he survived. A monthly wage of twenty million was too terrifying let alone, it was only for a bodyguard. “I, Tanya Drake will never go back on my word! You guys can cease your worries for that!” Miss Tanya spoke confidently. “Well, shouldn’t you ask your father, Miss Tanya?” Fane asked. “Nope, just come to work tomorrow! I’ll take my leave first and I won’t disturb you guys from drinking now!” Tanya waved her hand and left soon after along with her lackeys. After Tanya had left for quite some time, everyone here seemingly was still caught in their dreamy daze. “Fane, tomorrow, you and Selena have to head to work earlier. Don’t be late now, do you understand?” Fiona reminded them while chuckling. “Mom, am I dreaming? I’m only a project manager and my monthly wage is a million on top of year-end bonuses!” “He is a bodyguard and his monthly wage is twenty million while he can leave whenever he wants to and he doesn't have to abide by the working hours?”

Chapter 63

Selena truly did not know how to react as she was unsure exactly what was going on. “Yeah, it’s real. Miss Tanya actually said it herself earlier!” Fiona felt quite surreal toward such overwhelming emotion of surprise. “What right does he have to get such a high wage?” Cecelia had a bitter look on her face. However, after a much deeper thought, she suddenly thought about something and started laughing. She said, “Haha, I know now. Fane, Miss Tanya must be taking you for a fool and was joking with you!” “Impossible. Miss Tanya said it earlier that they can come to work tomorrow so how could that be a joke?” Fiona immediately argued. “Just think about it, those other bodyguards they have, even if they are commanders, they won’t be paid that much so, what right does he have to get such a high pay?” “Besides, Selena is working as a manager and her monthly wage of million bucks could somewhat make sense. Fane on the other hand, he’s merely just a bodyguard, so how can that twenty million monthly wage even be logical?”

Cecelia bluntly said, “That was because Fane was intentionally toying with Miss Tanya and she happened to pretend to agree just to toy back with him. If you don’t believe me, when Fane arrives at the Drake family home, perhaps he wouldn’t even be able to enter its main gate!” “Yeah, I also think it’s impossible!” Another woman from the Taylor family nodded and said, “After Cecelia broke it down like that, I feel like that is a huge possibility that she was merely toying with him because he toyed with her first!” Fane could not be bothered by them as he merely calmly said, “I’m afraid, she isn’t bold enough to toy with me!” Selena on the other hand was frowning on the side. She could not understand just how exactly did Fane get such a high salary. Were they not usually recruiting a whole bunch of veterans like him? There were plenty of people who would be quite satisfied upon getting a good security guard or bodyguard job. Fane’s job on the other end though… “Daddy, how much is twenty million a month? Is that a lot?” At this moment, Kylie who had been playing by the side during dinner ran over. She grabbed onto Fane’s pants with her chubby little hands as she raised her head to look up at him. Upon staring at that little child’s adorable expression, Fane’s heart melted. He thought that the pain and suffering he endured for the last five years was worth it at this moment. He defended a country for five years and now, all he wanted was to peacefully keep her wife and daughter safe! “Not that much, but it’s enough to enroll Kylie into the best kindergarten and buy all kinds of toys for Kylie!” After he carried Kylie up, he could not help himself but give Kylie’s chubby cheeks a kiss. That felt extremely warm. “Really? That’s awesome! I’ll have plenty of toys soon!” After Kylie heard that, her pair of beautiful eyes were glimmering with excitement. Selena, who was watching this scene from the side, lamented. Was the five years of suffering finally over? Was their family finally able to amount to something good? This would not be a dream, right! Old Master Taylor was frowning instead as he got lost in deep contemplation. Was Miss Tanya joking, since it happened to be twenty million a month for that Fane fellow. Was that br*t truly worth that much?

Not to mention, would the master of the Drake family even agree to it? Besides, as wealthy as the Drake family was, they would not waste money to such an extent! After some thought, he looked at Ivan who had been helped and appeared collapsed on the table. He was starting to suspect if he made a mistake for having Selena's family exiled from the Taylor family. "Come on now, let us all continue drinking. Let's all have one regardless if Fane's job was real or not but I believe Selena's job is real. It's a good thing for Selena being able to enter the Drake family and work for them!" Old Master Taylor poured half a glass of red wine for himself, raised it and smiled at Selena before saying, "Selena, next time you will be the project manager and if there's any good projects out there that require a collaboration, remember to look out for our Taylor family!" "What are you talking about, Grandpa? I am still a member of the Taylor family and I bleed the same blood as the Taylor family. So if there are any good projects that can be collaborated, naturally, I will think about our Taylor family!" Serene let out an awkward laugh as she did not blame the old master. Since, the old master used to spoil her a lot back then. Unfortunately, she was too rebellious five years ago and disappointed the old master.

Chapter 64

"Right, no matter what, Selena's strengths are acknowledged by the Drake family. Besides, Miss Tanya had mentioned it earlier, Selena would be handling a huge project but it's unsure what project that would be. If she could look out for our Taylor family, that'll be excellent!" Andrew spoke while chuckling since this was such a huge opportunity! The Taylor family had always wanted to build connections with the Drake family but they never got the chance to. Now however, they actually had someone that could directly be involved with the Drake family's business by being a project manager, this was literally an extremely amazing opportunity for their Taylor family! "No, no, no. Selena, you can immediately look out for the Taylor family the moment you start, it would be bad if the Drake family

knew about it." "Besides, you'd just come over so you'll have to prove your worth when you start working and gain the Drake family's trust then build upon that relationship. Wait till there's an opportunity to look out for our Taylor family in future. You have to think of a way to have them notice and value your strengths. Only then, when you look out for our Taylor family, they will have nothing to say!" After Old Master Taylor carefully pondered about it, he advised her. The business for the Taylor family within these two years have gone downhill and it was getting worse by the year. This made Old Master Taylor frantic. Fane who was listening at the side had no idea how to react. It was obvious that the Taylor family had no idea that the main purpose for Miss Taylor was only to get him to work for them. Would they be unable to hire a capable manager with the wealth they had? After Miss Tanya left, she swiftly drove back to the Drake family home. When those bodyguards returned to the Drake family home, they were all obviously incredibly furious. Since they understood Miss Tanya's temperament and were very honorable. If she had made a promise to anyone, she would honor her promise. Even if Master Drake objected to it after the fact, it would be futile. Miss Tanya was that stubborn. If she had decided on something, it would be very difficult to change her mind. "Father, let me tell you a good news!" Tanya entered the mansion's lobby while placing both arms behind her back as she gleefully said that. "Seeing just how happy you are, what good news could this be?" James asked with a smile. "Fane, I got him in. He's willing to be our family's bodyguard!" After Miss Tanya was done speaking, she looked at Timothy who was sipping tea on the side then continued with a smug attitude, "What do you think, brother? Isn't what I, your sister did extremely earth shattering?" The moment James heard that statement, he was shocked as he said, "No way, right? You actually got him in? If he actually returned with the God of War, had a good relationship with her then he should at least be King of War. Even by a little difference, he should at least be a marshal though. A man like this, is willing to be your bodyguard?" With that being said, Timothy was stunned before saying,

“I’ve heard that a returning marshal would have a billion whereas ten billion for those who are more impressive as their prize money. The King of War however would at the very least get a few hundred billion bucks. There were plenty of people who wanted to employ their powers but those people would not so easily agree to the employment!” Tanya frowned when she heard that as she said, “Really? I didn’t expect you to know even that detail, Brother. However, Grandfather had mentioned that the Fane fellow wouldn’t be that simple, so I got lucky today and I ran into his entire family. Hence, I got him in.” “He’d agree to a monthly wage of a few hundred thousand bucks as a bodyguard? Tanya, have you made a mistake and found the wrong person? Are you sure that person is Fane? The Fane that father was talking about?” Timothy was seemingly unconvinced. Since, the Drake family bodyguards would have a monthly wage of those numbers. Anyone that was slightly more impressive would only make more than a hundred thousand bucks. “What do you mean a few hundred thousand bucks? He mentioned, he’d do it for at least twenty million bucks. Anything lower than that, he wouldn’t agree to it.” “Moreover, that was all because his wife wanted a job, so I promised to employ his wife as our project manager. It was only then was he willing to work for us!” “The main point is, this br*t is a little too unreasonable. He mentioned something about not having fixed working hours and he’d be able to leave work whenever he pleases!”

Chapter 65

Tanya said after cracking a bitter smile. “What? You agreed to such terms? Not only was the wages high,he wouldn’t even listen to us? In addition to that, he can leave whenever he wants to? How is that okay?” Timothy was so shocked, his eyeballs were seemingly about to fall onto the ground as he immediately placed his tea cup down then told James, “Father, this br*t is too unreasonable now. Who on earth does he think he is? If he’s the King of War or God of War, that would be acceptable or else, what right does he have to request for such a demand?” “No matter who he is, if he doesn’t

make such a request, it would be extremely abnormal and it'll only prove that he had no actual strengths!" James on the other hand was laughing while nodding his head. He said, "If he's truly capable, he wouldn't even bat an eye on the twenty million bucks. He merely agreed because he had nothing to do and wanted to keep his wife company or perhaps, he was just killing time. Besides, if he doesn't look for a job, he would be looked down by the Taylor family!" "Father, what you're saying is that he's worth this money?" Timothy was frowning as he seemed slightly frustrated. "Haha, not only was he worthy, I believe he's more than worthy! Not to mention, without taking his powers into account, it's worth it because of his unique relationship with the God of War!" James chuckled then said, "That's right, when he arrives, you two have to treat him well. If he wishes to leave work, let him leave. Treat him the same as the guardians in our family even if by name, he's a bodyguard!" "No way right, father? The few guardians in our family are all extremely powerful! This…" Timothy was sweating on his face as he was skeptical of his father. He had seen through Fane's information and he felt that this man was not that special. Perhaps it was due to the God of War noticing Fane who was coincidentally also heading back to the Middle Province and shared the same ride back. If that was the case, they would have lost majorly. However on a much deeper thought, he thought about how important his family business was and that twenty million bucks was a mere meager sum so he could forget about it just in case that br*t could truly surprise them. At this moment, Fane and the others were done with their meals and were ready to head back together. After the rest of the Taylor family had left as they exited the hotel, Fiona said after pondering for a moment, "That's right Selena, you're about to go to work tomorrow, should we buy a car? I still have eight hundred thousand with me. After much thoughts, I realized we could not embarrass our Taylor family's name, right? Besides, your monthly wages are that high so you can return the money to me after you get paid next time!" "Ma, I want to buy a car as well!" Ben immediately said that excitedly the moment he heard that. "Why'd you need

a car for? You're doing nothing all day and you're not going to work anyway. I won't buy you a car! After your sister has made some money, have her buy you one. Is that okay?" Fiona said as she smiled. "Ma, Fane is going to work tomorrow as well, can we also buy him one?" After Selena pondered about it, she said that. "Him?" Fiona took a look at Fane. She said after she pondered for a moment, "Who knows if Miss Tanya was joking or not. Even I'm skeptical about making twenty million a month. Besides, it's for transport and it'll cost about tens of thousands of bucks. Forget it then, but I can buy him an electric scooter. Just ride it for now. Since if it's real, after he gets paid he can buy himself a luxury car, right?" "Then, I won't be buying a car as well. Just buy an electric scooter then he can take me to work on that!" Selena looked at Fane then said with a smile. "Honey, that just made riding a bike even more romantic!"

Chapter 66

"Sure. It's quite a long way. As long as you're tired, that won't be a problem!" Selena smiled blissfully. At first, she thought that Fane seemed cold ever since he came back from the war. He always had on a serious face. Unexpectedly, there were times where he could be romantic. "Of course, I won't be tired. As long as you're the one behind me, anything is bearable. I can even be strong enough to carry you to work every day!" Fane replied happily. "Daddy, I want you to carry me too!" Kylie, who was in his arms chuckled. "Sure, come on. Daddy will carry you!" Fane placed the little girl on his back in one swooping motion. "Brother-in-law, if you really became a bodyguard with a salary of twenty million bucks a month, can you help me get a car? Hehe, all the matters earlier were just misunderstandings." Ben ran up to them after getting a glance from Xena and asked with a chuckle, trying to butter up to Fane. Although he too felt that the Second Miss was being conned by Fane. However, what if it turned out to be true? Buttering Fane up cost nothing anyway. Fane gave it a thought, then nodded. "Sure, but it can't be too expensive. Any car under one million bucks is fine.

When the time comes, you go pick it out yourself!" "Really? Any car under one million bucks?" Hearing that, Ben was elated. At first, he thought getting something between a hundred to two hundred thousand bucks would be a dream come true. Who would have thought that Fane would be that generous, letting him pick anything under one million bucks just like that? "Of course. It's not that expensive!" Fane chuckled. His words once again made Fiona and the others speechless. 'One million bucks, yet this brat doesn't think it's expensive?' "Honey, I think we should get a motorcycle instead. You can just drop me off to work! After we get our pay and have the money on hand, then we'll get a car. How about that?" Selena smiled, then continued, "I've not been working for such a long time, it feels a little exciting!" "Hehe, it's your decision Honey. As long as you're willing, you can buy whatever you want, even a plane!" Fane replied casually with a laugh. "Plane? Hehe, we don't even know if you can make it to work tomorrow yet and you're already delusional? Listen to me, we'll stick to our previous promise, understand? You must send me ten million bucks worth of betrothal gifts on the old master's seventieth birthday. Only then I'll recognize you as my live-in son-in-law, got it?" Fiona interjected with a smile. "Relax, you'll have your ten million bucks!" Fane nodded as he replied. Fiona and the rest quickly took a taxi home. Fane, on the other hand, took Selena along to shop for an electric scooter. They quickly arrived at an electric scooter shop and purchased one, then rode it back home. "Honey, I still don't dare to believe the words of Miss Drake. Paying you twenty million bucks a month as a bodyguard, do you think it makes sense?" Selena could not resist asking as she sat behind Fane. "Of course, it's real. Her status and identity is for all to see. Moreover, twenty million bucks is nothing to their family!" Fane laughed bitterly, then added, "If not for ensuring your sense of security, I wouldn't even agree to it! This price is already really low. It can't go any lower!" "Boasting again. I really don't understand why she would offer such a price. It can't be that she thinks you're handsome and has a crush on you?"

Chapter 67

Selena smiled and made a joke. “You don’t say. I really think that might be possible. After all, your husband is so handsome, what happens if someone decides to be my sugar mommy?” Fane was speaking as he looked backward at that snow-white sexy thigh that was just by his side. He moved his hand over and lightly caressed the side of her leg. “Ah!” Selena did not expect Fane to be so brazen. Her face turned red immediately, “What’re you doing?! How can you be so mischievous while driving in broad daylight?! Do you know how embarrassing it is for others to see this on the street? I didn’t expect you to be such a delinquent.” “Cough! Cough! I just saw a mosquito and decided to kill it for you!” Fane answered with a straight face. “Mosquito my butt. Do you think I’m a three-year-old?! If you do that again, I’ll get off and walk home!” Selena was frustrated, feeling extremely embarrassed. Right then, a Ferrari passed by. Seeing such a scene, the driver could not resist swallowing a mouthful of saliva. “Hot damn, who’s that woman? Her figure is superb. That leg of hers is just so alluring. That skirt...it’d be nice if it was just a little shorter!” Upon seeing such a beauty, the young man quickly slowed down just to get a better glimpse. Seeing that, the blonde woman beside him immediately got jealous. “Young Master Hugo, my skirt is already short enough. You can have a look too!” When she spoke, the woman intentionally used a coquettish voice. It was undeniable that the woman sitting beside Young Master Hugo was also quite the sight. Furthermore, that woman was wearing a very revealing outfit. However, Young Master Hugo glanced at her and back at the beauty on the electric scooter, then shook his head. “I still feel that you’re lacking something. Your face and aura is not her match. Although both of you have beautiful legs, there’s quite a difference between the both of you!” That woman was extremely frustrated, yet she dared not offend Young Master Hugo and could only hold it all in. Just as the car and electric scooter drove side by side, the woman studied Selena carefully and told Young Master

Hugo, “Young Master Hugo, I know who this woman is. Isn’t she Selena Taylor? Oh my goodness, her husband was just a delivery boy and has not been home for five years. I think he’s long dead on the battlefield!” Then the woman paused for a moment before continuing, “She’s just a single mother. There are quite a few guys courting her, but she never agreed. At first, I thought that she was being noble, waiting for her man to come home. I never expected her to be fooling around with this guy!” “She’s that Selena Taylor that holds the title of the Middle Province’s prettiest woman? She’s quite the character back then, but was later kicked out of the Taylor family!” Young Master Hugo seemed to have recalled something, then smiled. “Hehe, women can’t stand loneliness after all. So, she rejected all those guys just to keep her image. After holding it out for five years, how could she stand the loneliness any longer?” While he spoke, Young Master Hugo swallowed hard, then added, “This type of woman is all the more interesting.” After some contemplations, Young Master Hugo saw a puddle further up. The corner of his lips curled into a smile, the car was stopped immediately. By the time Fane’s electric scooter was almost reaching the puddle, he suddenly stepped on the gas and caught up to them. Following that, he caused the muddy water in the puddle to splash all over Fane and Selena. “Ah!” When Selena and Fane noticed the sports car pulling over, they did not think much about it. They never expected the other party would do something like that. After all, the road was spacious and they did not need to go through the puddle as they drove by. “D*mn it, is that person asking for death?” Fane’s expression darkened and immediately gave chase as he realized the other party’s malicious intent. Unexpectedly, the other party had also pulled over ahead and got out of the car.

Chapter 68

“What’s the meaning of this?” Fane stopped the electric scooter next to the car and stared coldly at the other person after he got off it. “Are you blind?” Young Master Hugo acted as though he could not hear a word from Fane.

Instead, he looked at Selena and asked, “Oh my, this...isn’t this Selena Taylor, the prettiest girl according to the legends? Miss Taylor, I heard that a lot of gentlemen are courting you, yet you’ve turned them all down. And here I thought you’re being loyal and waiting for your trashy husband!” Having said that, he then looked toward Fane disdainfully, continuing, “It turns out that you would find loneliness too hard to bear at times too. Seems like I’ve caught you in the act, didn’t I?” “Does any of my matter have anything to do with you?” Selena could not be bothered to debate with him, stating coldly, “That was intentional, right? You purposely parked your car by the side, then waited for us to pass this puddle to rush over, isn’t it?” “Oh my, Miss Taylor, your words are too much. It was really an accident!” Young Master Hugo shrugged, then took a bag out of his car. He fished out twenty thousand bucks and handed it over. “Here’s twenty thousand bucks as compensation. Although it’s not a lot of money, it’s the thought that counts, right? Oh, I’m Young Master Hugo from a second-class aristocratic family by the way. If you don’t mind, we can be friends!” He knew that Selena was not living a comfortable life at the moment and was suppressed by the Taylor family. Twenty thousand bucks might be sufficient to move her. As long as he obtained her contact, that would mean that it would be possible for him to ask her out in the future. “We don’t want your money. Apologize!” Fane stated with a stern look on his face. “Apologize?” Young Master Hugo was taken aback. He then sneered, “Brat, you must be kidding me. Didn’t I just wet your clothes? Wasn’t it sufficient for me to pay you off? Do you think it’s possible for me to apologize to a poor bloke like you? Do you think I, Young Master Hugo, would not care for my reputation? Do you know how much my reputation is worth?” “The problem is, we don’t want the money!” Fane shrugged, remaining firm. “I’m not in a good mood now. You must apologize while kneeling down, understand?” “Tsk tsk, kneeling down? Who do you think you are? Do you know of the Hugo family? Have you ever heard of the Hugo family? The Hugo family is a second-class aristocratic family, a powerful family beyond that of the Taylor

family!” “Brat, if you know what’s good for you, this twenty thousand bucks is yours. Get out of my sight! How can a beauty like Miss Taylor here be sitting in that junk of yours? Only my sports car is worthy of being her ride!” Young Master Hugo threw the twenty thousand bucks at Fane, then said to Selena, “Miss Taylor, we’re all adults. I won’t beat around the bush. It’s really not suitable for you to be riding this electric scooter. Just like earlier, how inconvenient was that? Let’s go, get in my sports car and I’ll go get you a set of better clothes. We’ll head to the hotel for a shower—” “So what if you have a sports car? I’m sorry, but I prefer to ride on an electric scooter. I’m not any casual woman, so please watch your words and be more respectful!” Selena was also extremely frustrated. However, as she recalled the power behind his family, she tried to pull Fane back. “Nevermind, let’s leave!” “Hehe, drop the act. You’re not a casual woman? Didn’t you claim that you’re waiting for your husband to come back? Your husband has yet to come back, and here you are, out with some other guy? Don’t think that I have no idea what women like you are like. You’re only pure on the outside, but internally, you’re wild!” Young Master Hugo sneered again. “Excuse me, he’s my husband, Fane Woods. I’ve waited for him for five years and now he’s back!” Selena tugged at Fane once again. “Let’s go, Honey. I can’t be bothered to deal with trash like this!” However, Fane remained standing on the spot. “Since you’re unwilling to apologize, I’ll have to take action!” Just as he finished, Fane went forward with a punch, immediately sending Young Master Hugo to the ground. Before he could get up, Fane followed up with another kick.

Chapter 69

The puddle was already over a dozen meters behind them. However, Fane’s kick was extraordinarily powerful. He managed to send him flying, finally landing in that puddle. Young Master Hugo’s floral shirt was then drenched by the muddy water. “Y-y-you dare to hit Young Master Hugo? Are you looking for death?” The woman was terrified, immediately backing away as

she pointed at Fane. Fane maintained emotionless, staring straight at her. “Do you want me to take action, or will you voluntarily roll in that puddle over there?” “D-d-don’t hit me…” The woman was scared witless by Fane’s gaze. It was the gaze of someone that survived countless bloodbaths. After saying that, she quickly ran over and started rolling in the puddle. Her skirt was already very short. After it got wet, her body shape was all the more revealing. “Brat, y-y-you just wait!” Young Master Hugo was boiling with rage. He stood up, then spat out a mouthful of blood. The skin on his arm tore and was bleeding. Even his shirt got torn up from the friction. He looked pathetic. “Honey, their family is very powerful. Y-y-you’ve caused trouble again!” Selena frowned. She was worried and at a loss of what to do. However, Fane just walked up to Young Master Hugo’s car and smashed his fist into it. Bang! With a loud sound, a gaping hole appeared on his car as though it was made of paper. “This…” Upon witnessing that terrifying strength, Selena was dumbfounded. Fane’s strength was too monstrous. Was that something a human was capable of? When Fane walked back, his face had a warm smile on it. “Honey, let’s go. We’ll head back for a bath and change our clothes!” “But...the Hugo family is full of experts. If they come looking for us, what should we do?” Selena was still extremely worried. “Relax, they’re no match for me!” Fane nonchalantly got on the scooter. “Come on, let’s head back for a bath. It’d be bad if you catch a cold, Honey!” Although Selena was worried, it would do them no good to stay there either. After hesitating for a moment, she got on the scooter and they both quickly drove away. However, to their surprise, when they arrived at gates of the courtyard, they found a huge demolition notice stuck on his gates. “What’s the matter? Are they trying to demolish this place?” Fane and Selena exchanged glances in shock. When they left in the morning, nothing was on the gates yet this huge notice was now there.

Chapter 70

“Demolish? If that’s the case, shouldn’t we get a bit of compensation?” Fane was distracted for a moment, then followed Selena into the house. At that moment, the living room was very lively. There were a number of workers that were talking to Fiona and Andrew. “Oh my, Selena, what happened to both of you? Why are you covered in dirt?” Seeing Selena and Fane, Joan was shocked, asking quickly. “Ugh, we passed by a puddle earlier and a car did not slow down...so we got splashed!” Selena stuttered with a frown. She was too ashamed to say it. If her mother knew that they offended the terrible Hugo family, how would she react? “Oh my, so this is Miss Taylor!” A middle-aged man stood up cheerfully, then explained, “I’m the worker in charge. It’s like this. This location is being expropriated as it is rather peaceful here. We’re planning to build a retirement home, therefore this house must be demolished!” “Retirement home?” Selena frowned. “That’s right. You can treat it as a contribution to the country! Moreover, this place is decrepit. Our experts appraised it and it’s considered unsafe for habitation. You have three days to move out. Please cooperate with our work!” The man explained with a cheerful smile. His smile looked warm and gentle. “Unsafe for habitation? How can that be?” Selena breathed in deeply. They had no money to buy a house at this time. If they moved out, where would they stay? Moreover, although the house was quite old and run down, it was not unsafe for habitation. It would still be safe for a couple more years. Furthermore, they were already accustomed to the large courtyard and had thought of this place as home. Having to move out all of a sudden was quite difficult to take in. “That’s right. Our experts have already done the appraisal!” The man smiled. “Furthemore, this would also beautify our city, wouldn’t it? With such an old courtyard here, it wouldn’t look nice either. Now that our country has won the war, quite a few powerful figures are coming back from the battlefield. If they saw this, it might make them look bad, right?” “No problem, no problem. We’ll definitely move out in three days, We’re citizens after all. It’s only fair to contribute.” Fiona immediately agreed with a smile. “Mm, wonderful. You have a good

mindset!” The other old man nodded approvingly. “Hehe, as it should be!” Fiona chuckled, then stated, “As for the matter of compensation, you see, this place is quite good. With such a large area, if not a hundred million bucks, it should be at least a few tens of million bucks, right? If that won’t do, ten million bucks would suffice! That way we can buy a house!” “That’s right. As long as the price is suitable, we can even move out immediately!” Andrew nodded along as well. To their surprise, upon hearing those words, the worker’s face turned cold immediately. “Madam, I’m afraid you didn’t understand what I said. Your place is affecting our city’s image. You should be contributing to the country!”

Chapter 71

“Furthermore, we have received complaints that this courtyard was built illegally, do you understand? You’re already lucky that you’re not getting fined. We’re just negotiating to have you move away voluntarily. What makes you think there will be any compensation?” The middle-aged man had a smile on his face, but his words immediately turned the rest and Fiona’s mood foul. This demolition had no compensation? “Impossible. This is our Taylor family’s old mansion. It’s been left uninhabited for many years. My grandfather was the one that told us to stay here. At any rate, there should be a demolition compensation. How is this an illegal building? We’ve been staying here for so many years!” Selena was furious. Her original plan was to come home for a bath, but she was in no mood for that for the time being. The other party was just being unreasonable. “I think the money is there, but you’re just planning to keep it for yourself, right? Hehe, do you know that we’re from the Taylor family? You should really investigate carefully before coming. You want to demolish this place without paying the compensation? Dream on!” Fiona’s expression changed immediately. The smile was long gone from her face. “Hehe, we’re just here to notify you. If you don’t appreciate the gesture, we can have the demolition crew come over with just a phone call at any moment!” “Since

you claim that it's not illegal, do you have the premise permit?" The old man asked with a laugh. Fiona's expression darkened. "This is not commercial housing. It's our Taylor family's homestead. How do you expect us to get a permit? Regardless, you should be paying some form of compensation. Otherwise, you're not allowed to demolish it!" "Hehe, illegal or not, it's for us to decide, not you. You can't even show us the premise permit, then it'll be demolished today itself!" That middle-aged man chuckled, then made a phone call. After he finished with the call, he laughed, "Of course, I know that you're from the Taylor family. However, the one in charge of this project is Young Master Clark, Ken Clark! Their group is the one in charge of building this retirement home. Can you afford to offend them?" "I was wondering who it is. So it's that trash!" Fane finally understood. Last time, he had given that brat a beating. He probably was still feeling bitter over that incident. However, Fane did not expect him to use such tactics to seek revenge on them. "Him?" Fiona's face turned pale. The current Taylor family could not afford to offend the Clark family. Moreover, they were kicked out of the Taylor family. The old master might not even bother helping them and could even blame them for offending the untouchables. She turned around, then rushed at Fane, shoving him. "It's all your fault. If not for you, this wouldn't happen. It's because you hit him last time. Now they're here for revenge and we're getting kicked out soon. Where are we going to stay?" "Mother, don't worry. Nobody will dare kick us out!" Fane smiled coldly, then looked at Selena who was covered in mud. He said lovingly, "Honey, you go wash up and change your clothes. I'll wait here for them!" "O-o-okay!" For some reason, Fane's confident gaze helped calm her heart down. She grabbed a set of clothes and then went to wash up. Upon hearing that Selena was going to shower, the few workers swallowed hard. They wondered how alluring the scene would be when a beauty like that showered. Unfortunately, they had no chance to witness that and could only imagine it in their heads. The men grew all the more jealous of Fane. 'This brat sure is lucky to have found such a beautiful woman that bore him

a child. That’s a dream come true for countless men out there.’ After Selena was done with her shower and changed, she came back to the courtyard. Right outside were three excavators, a group of people, and Young Master Clark. “I heard there are some unruly people here that refused to listen to the management!” Ken sneered as he walked slowly into the courtyard with a few people behind him.

Chapter 72

“Oh my, Young Master Clark, why are you here? It’s been a long time!” Upon seeing Ken with his lackeys, Fiona immediately welcomed them cheerfully. “Hehe, Auntie, it’s not that long. We’ve just met two days ago!” Ken chuckled, then pointed at his teeth. “Look, I’m whistling as I speak. It’s all because of your precious son-in-law!” Fiona’s expression immediately turned awkward. She forced a smile and replied, “Watch what you’re saying. This man is not my son-in-law. We will only find out after the old man’s seventieth birthday in about twenty more days!” Ken was taken aback, his face was filled with surprise. “Auntie, what do you mean by that? They’re already legally married and the kid is a few years old. Why do we need to wait for about 20 more days to find out?” “Yes yes yes!” Fiona immediately nodded. “It’s like this. Let’s not mention the matters back then. It’s like this. After Fane came back, he got into a fight with Young Master Ivan and beat him up.” “After that...that’s why, by then, he would needs to cough up thirty million bucks or he will be kicked out of our Taylor family. Of course, if he doesn’t send me the ten million bucks worth of betrothal gifts, Selena’s father and I will never recognize this brat’s identity!” Fiona explained away. After she was done, she immediately dragged Ken aside and whispered, “Young Master Clark, please rest assured. This brat won’t be able to take out that much money when the time comes. As long as he can’t produce the money, then our Selena will regain her freedom. Once she regains her freedom, wouldn’t that mean you’ll have a chance?” Hearing that, Ken’s heart rejoiced. He turned to look at Selena who was standing

there and was surprised once more. At that moment, Selena had just finished her shower and have yet to dry her hair. Standing there, she looked all the more alluring. That pair of snow white long legs were especially eye catching under the sunlight. Considering that he had over twenty more days to go, his expression darkened and said, “Auntie, that’s a long time to wait. I don’t feel like waiting any longer. Isn’t it just ten million bucks of betrothal gifts? As long as you can think of a way to have Selena marry me, even a hundred million bucks in betrothal gifts is not an issue!” “A hundred million bucks!?” Hearing that, Fiona’s heart was swayed in an instant. Although Fane had found a good job, who knew if that job offer was just Miss Tanya playing with him. Moreover, if Fane worked on like that, who knew how long his job would last? What if he got fired one day? That brat was quite hot-headed after all. Young Master Clark on the other hand, looked dashing and was courteous. If her daughter marries him, then she would definitely be living comfortably in the future. “The betrothal gifts can be negotiated. It’s just that I’ve promised Fane and I can’t just change as I like to!” Fiona looked at Kylie who was playing nearby, feeling a little uncomfortable. After all, if Fane’s work was a real deal, then he would get quite a lot in one year. Most importantly, Kylie was still her granddaughter. It was naturally better for her to live with her biological father. At least she would not have to suffer in the future. That was why she decided to give Fane another chance. What if that brat really pulled through?” “Hehe, Auntie, don’t you worry. I have my ways. You just ask Selena to come over and I’ll have a private chat with her. If she agrees to divorce Fane, then I can choose to not demolish your house and will definitely treat her well.” “If she disagrees, I’ll threaten her with the demolition of your house. I believe that a kind-hearted girl like her would surely agree!” Ken told Fiona after some thoughts. “Sure. However, if my daughter agrees, that would be great too!”

Chapter 73

Fiona gave it some thought, then finally approached Selena. “Dear, Young Master Clark said that he would like to discuss the matter of this house with you. Go ahead and negotiate with him. This house must not be demolished. If it’s demolished, where would our entire family find a place to stay all of a sudden?” Selena kept silent for a moment, then nodded and walked over. “This house is our family’s old mansion. Although it’s not a registered property, it’s considered a property of our Taylor family. You can’t just demolish it like that!” Selena looked at Young Master Clark in front of her as she stated coldly. Before Fane came back, Young Master Clark would come over to court her all the time. There were a few times that he suggested for her to apply for a death certificate to divorce Fane, then marry him. Although she felt annoyed by this person, he was not that bad in general. At least, the impression Selena had of him was much better than that Michael. She never thought that this person would resort to such tactics. This caused her frustrations toward Young Master Clark to reach a new height. “Hey, isn’t this for the city’s appearance, for the good of the Middle Province?” Clark took out a cigarette and lit it. After inhaling deeply, he finally stated, “Selena, you know that I’m sincerely in love with you. More so than those other gentlemen out there! As long as you’re willing to divorce that trash and marry me, when the time comes, I’ll guarantee you a luxurious life!” “Of course, it doesn’t matter if they demolish this house or not. Whether to build the retirement house here or not will depend on your attitude. If you agree to marry me, I’ll call them off immediately!” Ken smiled coldly as he stated. “Hehe, Young Master Clark, you’re really cunning. They’ve always said that money makes the world go round. Today I finally learned that it’s true!” Selena laughed coldly. “Your behavior is only going to make me think the worst of you!” “It can’t be helped. Your opinion of me is no longer of any importance. I only want you to be my woman! I want you to know that I’m much better than that delivery boy!” Ken shrugged, his expression thoughtful. “Consider carefully. If you don’t agree, I will start demolishing the house right now!” “Y-y-you dare?!” Selena was furious, but she looked

at the people that he brought along and felt helpless. “You can’t demolish the house, and I will never marry you!” “Haha, you’ll see if I dare! In the Middle Province, there are not a lot of things that I’m scared of!” Ken laughed out loudly, his eyes had a vicious look in them. “Hehe, why don’t you let them try demolishing then?” At that moment, Fane sneered and walked up to them unexpectedly. This Ken was really naive to think that Fane would not hear him if he pulled Fiona and Selena to the side to talk privately. Fane’s hearing had long exceeded that of an ordinary person. He had clearly heard all their previous conversations. He just wanted to find out what was Selena and Fiona’s attitude toward this matter. “Go ahead with the demolition. Someone doesn’t know his place!” Ken gave the order with a wave of his hand!

Chapter 74

Meanwhile, at the Clark Family Villa. Clark family’s expert Dan Jameson did not see Young Master Clark when he returned. He could not help but frowned. “Where’s Young Master Clark? Where did he go?” Dan thought about it, then asked one of the bodyguards. “He took a group of people with him and left. I saw that he was rather happy, saying something about definitely getting his hands on that Selena woman!” the guard answered after some thought. “It can’t be!” Hearing that, Dan breathed in deeply. “This Young Master Clark! Didn’t I just warn him last time not to go look for trouble with that Fane Woods? Why won’t he listen!?” Ever since he lost the arm wrestling with Fane, Dan knew deep down in his heart how terrifying Fane was. With the ability that Fane had, even within the military, he would not be a regular soldier. He would at least be of a decent rank. A person like that, their Clark family would be better off steering clear from them. At first, he thought Ken would listen to him. Who would have thought that Ken would go looking for Selena again. “Hehe, Commander Jameson, you’re being too careful. This time, Young Master Clark has everything under control! Otherwise, he wouldn’t have gone! He said that he would

only take strong measures after the courteous one fails!" That guard chuckled, then added, "If not for Young Master Clark not bringing me along, I would've loved to go have a look. I've heard that Selena Taylor was very pretty. Tsk...tsk... I wonder what her expression would be when she's forced to accept our young master's offer." "Forced to accept?" Dan's brows twitched. "What does he mean by taking strong measures after the courteous one fails? Could it be the same old tactic of paying a certain amount to Fiona to help persuade them? With Selena's personality, it's impossible for her to agree to that. Furthermore, now that her husband's back, the chances of that happening is even lower." "No. This time, our young master used his connections and planned to demolish Selena's house and use that to threaten them." "Of course, if that Fane dares to take action, hehe, our young master has no fear because there's an expert that came back from the military that went along with young master! He's an officer! Moreover, he's not just a major, but a marshal!" The bodyguard smiled. "You should know how powerful those who made it as officers out of so many people! Especially when it's a marshal!" When Dan heard those words, he took in a deep breath as he was shocked to the core. He knew that those that could become an officer were experts on the battlefield. They were all powerful figures. Moreover, this time round, it was said that those who had the status of a major would have at least a thousand men under them and could even go up to a few thousand men. As for the marshal, he would have a few majors under them. From that, one could tell how much higher their status was. He had even got wind that within those that retired from the battlefield, the majors were all awarded one billion bucks! It was considered an acknowledgement for what they have done over the years. As for the marshals, they were returning with a few billion bucks. When placed in any town, they would be placed among the extremely rich figures. Never did he expect Young Master Clark to be connected with a person like that and have the other party be willing to help him out. "If there's an expert like that with him, then we won't have much to fear!" After considering it carefully, the

burden in Dan's heart lifted. Those that managed to become a marshal would have achieved great service in the military. Their capability was guaranteed. At the very least, he was not confident to face them in a fight. "That's right. Just relax. This time, our young master will surely succeed!"

Chapter 75

That bodyguard said cheerfully, "For all we know, he might have already succeeded! Our young master is just waiting to carry the beauty home!" … "Demolish it!" Ken gave the order, planning to let those men take action. "What's going on? Did that brat Fane overhear their conversation? Why did he go over to meddle?" Seeing the outcome, Fiona was truly shocked. At first, she thought her own daughter was very filial and would most likely agree to their request, but… "I'll see who dares!" Fane took a few steps forward and stood in front of the gate. At that moment, although he looked dirty in clothes that were stained with muddy water, the aura he gave off while standing there gave people quite the scare. "Haha, Fane Woods, you're quite brazen!" Ken laughed, then said to a middle-aged nearby, "Brother Howard, I'll have to depend on you to help me teach this brat a lesson!" Fane had noticed long ago. Although that guy only stood there all the while without saying anything, he was no ordinary person. He had a certain quality about him that only a soldier would have. His posture was perfectly straight, a trait that regular people did not have. The opponent looked at Fane, then frowned. He could feel that Fane had a similar quality about him that was only present in those that returned from the battlefield. Although that was something others could not detect, those that stepped over countless bodies and survived would definitely pick up on it. "You came back from the battlefield as well?" The man of the Howard family approached Fane and stopped in front of him. He did not take action immediately, but instead asked a question. "Yes!" Fane nodded. "I'm curious. A person like you is aiding the evil. Hehe, why would you help this kind of person? If this is the battlefield, I can kill you right away!" "Hehe,

you kill me? I'm afraid you don't have the authority to!" Dennis Howard chuckled, then said, "Come, let's have a private conversation inside. There's no need to complicate this matter. After all, you're a veteran as well. I don't wish to make it difficult for you!" Hearing that, Fane laughed. "Interesting. Then let's talk inside!" Dennis looked at Ken, then said, "I'll talk with him inside. Without my orders, no one else is allowed to take any actions!" "It can't be. Brother Howard, you can just cripple him, give him a good round of beating and have him get out of our sights. Worse comes to worst, you can just kill him. Why do you need to negotiate with him? He's not qualified!" Ken's mouth was wide open as he doubted his own hearing. Although Fane was a veteran as well, what made him qualified to negotiate with a marshal? Most likely, if Fane found out about his identity, he might just kneel down in terror. Both of them entered the house, then closed the door behind. After Dennis closed the door, he finally lifted his head slightly and placed his hands behind him, showing the demeanor of an authoritative figure. "To be frank, based on my own personality, I wouldn't have helped that Ken, but I have my own reasons!" Having said that, he stated bluntly, "I'm a marshal. Having to do this, I feel helpless as well. Please just move. I'll pass you the money in secret as compensation! This way, it'll be good for all parties! Please do this favor for me!"

Chapter 76

"In that case, you also know that tearing down our house without providing compensation is wrong, right?" "You're also feeling uncomfortable about this and want to make up for us, right?" Facing the marshal, Fane did not have the slightest fear or nervousness. Instead, he smiled indifferently. "If this is on the battlefield, and we are still in the army, you would not have such an attitude when you see a fellow soldier!" Dennis's face sank. "I don't want to be calculative. Fifty million and your entire family needs to move away. However, you cannot tell Ken Clark!" "That's weird. You are a good and a reputable soldier. Yet, you are afraid of Ken? I really don't understand

what you are afraid of?" Fane frowned in confusion. "I'm not afraid. Years ago, before I became a soldier, our family was very poor. Once, my sister and I were about to starve to our deaths, he passed by and gave us a few thousand bucks. Although the money was nothing to him, but, to me, it meant a lot as it saved our lives! "Apart from this, there's another reason and it's because I like Ken's sister..." Dennis smiled bitterly and after he finished speaking, he said to Fane, "Since I promised him that I would help him with this favor, I can only give you money privately and you can leave with the others. This way, I won't offend him and I also technically not forcing you to demolish your house. Consider this as me buying peace of my mind!" "Haha, you're paying for your peace of mind!" Fane chuckled and then said, "However, I don't want to trouble my wife while I'm searching for a place to stay!" Seeing that Fane still refused to listen to him after he had made such a big offer and stated his intention so clearly. Dennis's face immediately darkened. "Young man, don't be so overboard. I'm only speaking to you because we have once killed enemies together on the battlefield and you're a man. You have to know that you don't even have the qualifications to talk to me!" "Haha, are you sure?" Fane laughed after he heard this. "I'm telling you this, I really don't care about marshals like you!" "Seems like we will have to settle this by force, don't blame me for being merciless. Let me ask you again, do you agree or not? If you don't agree, we'll demolish by force. I can even kill or destroy you!" Dennis clenched his fist and his aura was terrifying. He wanted to resolve this matter in a civilised manner, but he did not expect that this young man would not appreciate it. "You?" Fane smiled coldly. "Consider yourself lucky that I didn't make you kneel before me when you meet me!" "I kneel before you? Humph, do you think that you're the God of War? I would not even kneel down to the King of War in my entire life. Unless I meet the God of War. Only he is worthy of my respect to kneel before him. Young man, do you qualify?" Dennis was so angry that he almost exploded. He took a step forward, lunged, and his fists flew straight to Fane's face. Fane gently

moved to the side to avoid the opponent's attack. "What!" The opponent did not expect Fane to react so quickly and surprise flashed through his eyes. The next second, he attacked continuously with both his fists. The speed of the fists was so terrifying it sounded as if the wind was howling. Boom! Fance evaded one after another. At a certain moment, Fane finally fought back. He kicked and it happened to hit the opponent's ankle. The powerful force had caused Dennis to kneel down on the floor with one knee. Crack! A thin crack appeared on the thick limestone on the ground. "You..."

Chapter 77

Shock could be seen in Dennis' eyes. He could not imagine that the opponent was so fast to be able to dodge his attack every time. The opponent was also very strong. His body shook and was about to stand up. However, Fane placed a hand on his shoulder to press him down. With some force, his other leg was also forced to kneel as he grumbled. "Ah!" He gritted his teeth, tried to stand up, just to find out that Fane's power was as terrifying as a big mountain. He couldn't stand up with Fane pressing down on him. Dennis glanced at Fane, but all he saw was a slight smile on Fane's face. Fane seemed extremely relaxed, as if he was not using much power. "If you were an enemy on the battlefield, you would already have died thousands of times!" Fane spoke lightly before releasing Dennis. Dennis knelt on the floor in a daze with his eyes filled with trance in a daze. Strong! He was extremely strong! Who was this man in front of him and how could he be so powerful? He did not doubt what Fane said previously. If Fane wanted to kill him, he would have died much earlier. "Who are you?" Dennis frowned and raised his head slowly with suspicion. "Even the King of War cannot be so powerful. It won't be so easy to deal with me!" At this point, Dennis paused and said, "However, I know all the Nine Great Gods of War in this world and I know that you are not one of them. How can your strength be comparable to the God of War?" It was shocking. Dennis could not imagine that this man, who did not look very special, dressed ordinarily, and even

had dirt on his clothes, actually had such scary fighting power!" "God of War?" A hint of playfulness danced at the corner of his mouth. "Would you believe if I tell you that the Nine Great Gods of War are my apprentices?" "Im...impossible? How is that possible? Why don't I know that the Nine Great Gods of War have a master?" Dennis was shocked once again. Did the Nine Great Gods of War have a master? "Haha, because I asked them to keep it secret. Not many people know that they are my apprentice. Maybe only a few Kings of War know!" Fane laughed. "I trained them, turned them into nine sharp swords, and let them gallop on the battlefield. Otherwise, the battle between us and the enemy would probably take another one and a half years to end!" "Oh yes, there's only one person who is more powerful than the Nine Great Gods of War. His identity is extremely mysterious. It was said that after he had always worn a dragon-shaped mask after he became a general. The mask covers seventy percent of his face! There are only a handful of people who have seen his face! And he's the most mysterious, and also the strongest person in Cathysia, the Supreme Warrior!" As Dennis spoke, he felt that his heartbeat accelerated and he slowly stood up. He looked at the man in front of him carefully and then said, "Could it be that you...you are Lord Supreme Warrior?" "Haha!" Fane laughed, his palm flipped and a dragon-shaped mask appeared in his hand. After putting the mask on his face, only his left eye could be seen. The entire mask looked like an ancient dragon and it covered most of his face. "Lord... Lord Supreme Warrior!" Looking at the mask, Dennis's voice trembled with fright. He thumped and knelt on the ground. "I should die. Please forgive me, Lord Supreme Warrior!"

Chapter 78

The Supreme Warrior had always been the most mysterious existence in the army! Although a lot of people knew about his special mask, there were only very few who knew his face. Everytime this dragon-shaped mask appeared in the battlefield, soldiers that were losing in the battle would

instantly have the motivation to fight with confidence. It was said that, as long as this mask appeared, signifying that the Supreme Warrior had joined the war, they were never defeated. The mask and the wearer had become the faith of all warriors and their fighting soul. They planned to officially declare the identity of the Supreme Warrior as everyone wanted to know what the Supreme Warrior looked like. However, it was unknown why only the Nine Great Gods of War was officially introduced but not this legendary figure. At that point of time, Dennis was so frightened that his legs turned weak, with sweat dripping off his forehead . Supreme Warrior was someone that no one could blaspheme. According to legend, the Supreme Warrior once made a joke and it caused two pieces of the ruler's beard to be pulled down. If this was done by someone else, it would have been a capital crime. "Haha, if I want to kill you, you would not be kneeling here now!" Fane smiled indifferently and then said, "Remember, although you have left the battlefield, you must retain the dignity and the battle spirit of us as soldiers! Don't help a villain to do evil. Otherwise, I would clean up the garbage for Cathysia!" Dennis wiped his sweat. "Thank you, Supreme Warrior, for not killing me. I understand!" "By the way, say nothing about my identity. I don't want to be disturbed and only want to stay by my wife's side. Do you understand?" Fane took off the mask and flipped his palm. It was as if it had disappeared into thin air. "Master Supreme Warrior, don't worry, I will keep it a secret even if it costs me my life. I will not say a word!" Dennis promised. "Get up. After we open the door, I am Fane, do you understand?" Fane reminded him again. … Inside the yard. Everyone had been waiting and all of them had doubts written on their faces. "Young Master Clark, what's going on? Why does Dennis have to talk to him alone? Is he still trying to persuade that rubbish, Fane, to divorce Miss Taylor?" One of the Clark family's bodyguards thought about it and could not help but speak out. "Maybe, but if Fane dares to resist, he should be crippled if not die!" "I want to see if Selena would rather stay with a cripple or change her mind!" Ken sneered and looked at Selena, who was by his side. He had no idea why.

The more he could not get Selena, the more he wanted to get her. He believed that he could make this proud woman bow and be submissive to him. “Fane is just a stupid guy, will they fight inside? Mister Howard does not seem like a simple person. What should we do if he’s killed?” Fiona frowned and began to worry. “This young man cannot judge very well sometimes. Even if they demolish the house, we can rent a house. After all, I still have a few hundred thousands with me…” “Mum, stop! This is the Taylor family's old mansion. They can’t just demolish it. Apart from that, they don’t even want to pay any compensation. How can that be accepted?” Selena frowned and felt a little worried. At this moment, the door slowly opened. Fane and Dennis walked out one after another.

I like the store so far and I don't like Selena's mom

Chapter 79

”How is everything? Should all of you move out? I don’t want to hear any answers other than ‘yes’!” Ken smiled coldly and said. “Young Master Clark, let’s go!” Dennis’ face darkened. He walked in front of Ken and said in a low voice, “Hurry up and leave. If you don’t want the Clark family to disappear from Middle Province!” “What… What’s happening?” Ken looked dazed. Was Dennis not a marshal? Why did he seem so afraid of Fane? Dan Jameson, the top fighter of the Clark family, persuaded him to not provoke Fane. Unexpectedly, this marshal was also afraid and asked him to not offend Fane. “Listen to me, otherwise, it will be the catastrophe of your family!” Dennis lowered his voice and reached at the side of Ken’s ears. He whispered something extremely serious before walking outside. Ken was shocked. Dennis was a cream of the crop and the power of his status sent chills down the spine of many, yet he was afraid of Fane. “Could it be...” Ken thought of a possible explanation. Fane had returned from the military, was it possible that this man hid his identity and his true status was actually more respectable than Dennis? If that was the case, Fane would at least have the status of God of War. These people had such great

achievements on the battlefield no one dared to offend them. “Ahem, I see that the house here is not a dilapidated house. Let’s go!” Ken coughed, turned around, and was about to leave with his people. “Young Master, we... Are we leaving just like this?” The Clark family’s bodyguards were puzzled. They had no idea what Dennis said to Ken. “Why are we not leaving? The quality of their house is not bad, it’s sure that we have to leave. It was a misunderstanding previously!” Ken smiled bitterly and explained embarrassingly. The people from the relevant departments were previously aggressive. Now that they heard these words, they were stunned. What did...did Fane and Dennis talked about inside. “Wait, Young Master Clark, it’s not so good that you come and go as you please!” However, Fane unexpectedly smiled indifferently at this moment and stopped the other party. “Fane, what do you mean? I cannot change my mind and don’t have the intentions to build a nursing home now? Or you want to invite me for a meal and tea? Ken, who was already feeling shameful, turned his head around and looked at Fane angrily. “Haha, I’m afraid that you must be dreaming if you think that I would invite you for a meal!” Fane chuckled and then said, “Come here, kneel and apologize to me. Otherwise, how can you leave so easily. If I let you go so easily, what should we do if you are in a bad mood again and you would come over to demolish our house some other day?” “Kneel and apologize? Haha, Fane, you must be crazy. I am the Eldest Young Master of the Clark family, the future Master of the Clark family. Do you think it would be possible for me to apologize to you?” Clark laughed. So many people were looking at him, it was impossible for him to kneel and apologize. Otherwise, he would not have the dignity to leave his house in this Middle Province later. “Are you sure?” Fane stepped forward, stared at him and his facial expression was cold. At this moment, Ken also thought about what Dennis had told him before and his facial expression instantly turned hard to look at. Did this Fane really have the ability to make the Clark family disappear?

Chapter 80

Ken became a little uncertain and hesitated. He believed that Dennis did not lie and he dared not gamble anymore. If he lost the bet, he was not the only one who had to die, his family would also be affected. The Clark family finally got to where they were today through a very difficult path and it cannot be ruined in his hands. Although Selena was beautiful—any man who had seen her would have intentions to court her, was it worth it to give up the entire Clark family because of a woman? Fortunately, at this moment, Fiona pulled Fane backward and gave Fane a stern stare. “Are you crazy? What nonsense are you talking about? He’s the Clark family’s Young Master, we cannot afford to offend him!” After she finished speaking, she waved her hand at Ken. “Young Master Clark, it must have been a misunderstanding due to a mistake. It’s okay, you can all leave!” After hearing this, Ken breathed a sigh of relief. It was better to walk away dingy than kneel and apologize. If this incident was spread out, would he not become a joke in the Middle Province? “Yes, yes, yes, Auntie is right!” Clark nodded. He looked at Fane and added, “Fane, I don't want to leave but Auntie is asking me to, so don't blame me!” After he finished speaking, Ken ran to his car and quickly drove away, as if he was afraid that Fane would chase after him. All the subordinates were stunned. They had a feeling that their Young Master was afraid of Fane. However, it was only natural that they leave the place after their Young Master left. Hence they left one after another. “This guy fleets faster than a rabbit!” Fane smiled bitterly, looked at himself and said, “Okay, I’ll go take a bath and change my clothes before we continue chatting!” “That’s strange. Weren’t those people acting really rude? Why did they just leave like this? Also, what did your brother-in-law say to Mister Howard in the house just now?” Xena looked at Ben Taylor with a doubtful expression. Ben smiled bitterly. “How would I know? It’s so weird. Since Mister Howard was specially invited by Young Master Clark, he should be a powerful person. But, why is such a powerful person

afraid of my brother-in-law? I can feel the fear he felt!" "How is that possible?" Fiona did not believe this and said, "I'm guessing, your brother-in-law knelt down in front of people behind closed doors and begged the person to let us go!" "How is that possible? Brother-in-law is a man, why would he kneel down to beg for mercy?" Ben shook his head in disbelief. "Why do I feel that brother-in-law is a little mysterious and is not as simple as he seems to be?" "He's simple! Who is he? He was a food delivery guy who served the military for five years and had just returned from the army!" Fiona said, "If he was any good, would we have such a miserable life in the past few years? I think Mister Howard must have considered the fact that Fane knelt and pleaded as a veteran, so he asked Young Master Clark to let go!" "I think mum made a good guess!" Xena could not help but nodded while she stood on the other side. "Think about it again. If this isn't the case, would someone honor Fane? Besides, why did Fane close the door? I remember that it was him who closed the door. To put it bluntly, he's afraid that we will see his shameful scene!"

Chapter 81

"That seems to be it!" After Xena analyzed everything, Ben nodded. "It doesn't matter. Although brother-in-law seems to be a little useless, he still knows how to save his dignity. He closed the door, nobody saw anything so there's nothing to be shameful about. Anyways, it's a good thing that our house doesn't need to be demolished!" "Yes. It's a good thing that it does not need to be demolished. Two months from now, when your sister gets her salary, let's buy a house!" Fiona smiled and nodded. After she thought about it, she said, "By the way, your sister is going to work tomorrow. Let's go buy some food and do some shopping. I want to buy some better clothes!" "Yes, mum, you have money now. Don't you still have eight hundred thousand from the money Fane gave you? You have to buy some nice clothes. You have been so tired these few years! You should buy something good and treat yourself well!" Ben happily suggested. Soon,

Fiona, Ben, Andrew, and Xena went out on a shopping trip. … In the courtyard, Selena was accompanying Kylie, who was playing not far from her. After a while, Fane came out from the shower and had already changed into a set of fresh clothes. Although the clothes seemed to be a little old, it still felt refreshing. “Hubby, what did you talk about with Mister Howard inside? Did you really kneel and plead?” Selena was silent for a while before asking Fane. Face was embarrassed, smiled bitterly and then said, “Honey, do you think I'm such a person? We only talked about some things on the battlefield, he regrets that we did not meet earlier. It so happens that we have a mutual friend in the camp, so he gave me face and helped us!” “You know such a powerful character like the marshal? You're really amazing!” She obviously believed Fane’s words and said excitedly. “Of course, Mister Howard is great. He is a marshal and I admire him!” Fane smiled lightly and then said. “I had no idea that he is a marshal and is so powerful. No wonder Ken acted so ruthlessly when he came just now!” “However, he had no choice but to leave when the marshal asked him to!” Selena laughed gently. Her laugh was full of life like the spring breeze. Fane was almost dumbfounded by her gentleness and beauty. “Honey, your smile looks great. It would be perfect if you allow me to kiss you!” Fane looked at the beauty in front of him. He could not help but said, “No wonder so many rich men like my wife. You being the number-one beauty in Middle Province is really not an overstatement. I must have done something good in my previous life to have you as my wife!” Selena felt shy and at the same time thought Fane was really sweet after hearing his affectionate words. “Sometimes I think you're a little dumb, so I didn’t expect you to say such sweet words!” Selena glanced at Fane and pursed her sexy red lips. “Bad news. Young Master Hugo is coming with a bunch of people!” She gasped as soon as she finished speaking. A group of people was at the door and many of them were carrying watermelon knives in their hands.

Chapter 82

That person brought more than a dozen people with him. The watermelon knives in their hands looked dazzling. Selena was terrified when she saw so many people approaching with weapons. She looked to her side, Kylie was there. She lunged forward, pulled Kylie to her, and hugged her tightly. “Hubby, what should we do? There are so many people. It seems that they are here for no good!” Selena was so frightened as she hugged Kylie tighter. “Mummy, don’t be afraid, daddy will beat the bad guys. Daddy is amazing!” Kylie spoke in a childish voice. At the age of four, she was sensible enough to take the initiative to comfort Selena. “Yes, your father can definitely solve it!” Selena comforted Kylie but her frown deepened. “Don’t worry. I'm here, no one can touch you!” Fane smiled indifferently and said, “How did I survive on the battlefields throughout the past five years otherwise?” “Haha, Miss Taylor, we meet again.” Young Master Hugo led his people toward Fane and stopped five meters away from him. He laughed and then said as he looked at Selena playfully, “You really are a beautiful woman. You look even more attractive after a shower!” He paused for a while before continuing, “It’s great. You have already freshened up and are waiting for me. It would save me some trouble for later.” “A trivial character from a second-class aristocratic family actually has the guts to cause trouble here under bright day light, and even carried weapons? Haha, you really have no respect for the law.” Fane smiled coldly and looked at the other party. “Haha, law?” Young Master Hugo laughed and then said, “I'm rich and powerful. That's the law! Young man, you look down on second-class aristocratic families, do you know how powerful we are?” Fane looked at the person contemptuously. “Are you really that powerful? If you are really powerful, why didn’t you bring some decent bodyguards? Do you need to spend money to hire these gangsters? Don’t tell me these sloppy *ss are bodyguards specially trained by your family!” The corners of Neil Hugo’s mouth twitched and his face darkened. These people were indeed not from the Hugo family. The Hugo family’s practice strict upbringing. They worried that Neil would cause trouble outside posing harm to the Hugo

family's reputation. Therefore, he could not simply take the family's bodyguards with him. Without his father's orders, the bodyguards would not obey him. Normally, the family did not care about how he drove sports cars and toyed women. They thought he would definitely mature in the future. As long as they did not arrange bodyguards for him, and he did not cause trouble outside of home. However, this was nothing to Neil, because Neil had money. As long as he gave some money to these gangsters, they would naturally help him. With less than 100 thousand bucks, he had successfully gathered a dozen people who were prepared to take revenge on Fane. "Haha, young man, you're really mad. We don't need the Hugo family's bodyguards just to deal with you." Neil's mouth twitched a few times then stared at Fane with hatred. "Is a dozen of them not enough to deal with you?" "Yes, young man, you're outta your mind! If that is the case, we would not hold back!"

Chapter 83

After seeing Fane's contemptuous expression, one of the gangsters' leaders got pretty annoyed. As he finished speaking, more than a dozen people stepped forward and surrounded Fane. "Hubby, can...can you handle this? They have knives in their hands!" Selena was so frightened that she took a few steps backward, and she could not help but cover Kylie's eyes with her hand. However, Kylie stretched her hand out to push Selena's hand away. "Come on, Daddy. I want to watch how you beat the bad guys..." "Haha. Honey, don't worry. As a man, I can't say I can't!" Fane turned around, looked at Selena and told her with a smile. Selena blushed thinking he could still make jokes at this moment. "Young Master Hugo, what should we do? Should we kill him or what?" the guy who led the gang asked with a smile. "Kill him?" Young Master Hugo was stunned. "No, no, no. Wouldn't it be too easy for him if you just kill him? It's no wonder that this young man is powerful, he is the guy who joined the army and also Selena's husband!" He had a smirk on his face as he was speaking. "So, you're Selena's

husband. If that's the case, it'll be fun! Just bash him enough for him to fall but don’t kill him. Later, I want him to look at how I play with his wife!” “Tsk tsk, Young Master Hugo, you dare to say such words. Today, I'll teach you a lesson on behalf of your father!” “If my daughter isn't here, I would kill you scumbags now! Since my daughter is here, I don’t want things to get too bloody. Let me teach you all some lessons!” After Fane said this, a fierce murderous intent could be seen in his eyes. However, when he thought about how bad it would be for Kylie to see him kill so many people and there would be blood everywhere, he could only dispel the idea of starting a killing spree. This was his own home and he did not want to fill the whole yard with blood. Furthermore, it would be difficult for him to hide his identity if he really killed Young Master Hugo and made things worse. He did not want to live as the superior, Supreme Warrior, anymore. He only wanted to guard by the side of his beloved woman. “Tsk tsk, have you guys heard this? This young man came back as a veteran and thinks he is the hero of the world.” “Do you really think you’re so strong you can fight against a hundred men, and that you’re a legendary and incomparably powerful general?” Young Master Hugo heard this and thought the whole situation seemed like a huge joke. He waved his hand and ordered, “What’re you all still waiting for? F*ck him. He is bare-handed. I don’t believe that so many of you cannot give him a few cuts.” “Listen to me carefully, don’t attack the fatal parts. Just beat him until he falls, don’t kill him! We’re professionals!” shouted the guy who led the team. “Charge!” Suddenly, the followers yelled and waved the bright watermelon knife in their hands and rushed toward Fane. “A bunch of scum!”

Chapter 84

Fane sneered as he looked at the people rushing toward him. Although they looked scary with dyed hair and tattoos, they had skinny torsos. Fane could tell at one glance that these people were weak and did not train regularly. They just pretended by holding knives in their hands. These people would

die faster than anyone else if they were put onto the battlefield. “Be careful, Hubby!” Selena yelled from behind. She was very anxious when she saw so many people rushing toward Fane. “Haha. Selena, if you agree to play with me now, I would ask them to go easier on your man. These people have no control of themselves and weapons show no mercy. If your husband dies, you can only live as a widow! By then, you might as well marry me, or you can be my secret affair!” Neil looked at Selena. He could not help but swallow his saliva, his eyes filled with madness and anticipation. When he went to gather these gangsters, he also inquired about Selena’s situation. Upon inquiry, he knew that Selena’s husband was not welcomed in the Taylor family. If that was the case, killing Fane was no difference from killing an outsider. The Taylor family would not bat an eye. On the other hand, Selena had been driven out by the Taylor family for five years. They would not investigate as long as Selena was not dead. If they really want to hold him accountable, it could be easily settled by offering cash compensation. He had done such things enough to know. This method worked especially with the daughters of poor families who had no money and power. The families would be more than happy to accept the money he paid, let alone investigate the matter. Furthermore, based on the status of the Hugo family, the Taylor family would not dare to hold him accountable. “In your dreams!” Selena stared at him fiercely. She would rather die than let such a bastard defile her body. The look of this guy made Selena feel disgusted. This rich bastard was dishonorable to have toyed with so many women. “Haha, we will know in a while, if I am dreaming or not…” Neil laughed out loud. Before he could finish speaking, the smile on his face froze. The people that he led here rushed forward but did not manage to even touch Fane’s hair. They got thrown backward and fell heavily on the ground as they wailed in pain. “Ouch!” “Oh my god!” Those guys were kicked by Fane like footballs. They rolled several meters away and within seconds, nobody was left in front of Fane. “Goodness gracious, who’s this guy? Why is he so good?” A guy with yellow hair managed to get back up

on his feet. His voice was trembling and he dared not step forward. “Young Master Hugo, he’s definitely not an ordinary person. We can’t handle this, you…you need to think of another way!” The leader was also kicked and his chest was in pain. It made him wonder if he had a broken bone. He gritted his teeth and waved before fleeing away with his people. “You…you guys are useless!” Neil looked at the guys who ran away and started cursing. “Hehe I’ll take my leave now too!” He looked at Fane and noticed Fane was looking at him with a smile. He gasped, turned around, and was prepared to escape. Bang! However, Fane lunged forward and blocked Neil’s way. “Haha, Young Master Hugo? Wouldn’t I lose all dignity if I let you leave like this? This isn’t a place where you can come and go as you want!”

Chapter 85

”What do you still want, brat? I’m one of the Hugo’s…” Neil gritted his teeth, prepared to reveal his identity again. Slap! Fane turned his hand and slapped Neil real hard. A big palm print flashed red on Neil’s face. “I knew your identity from the start. There’s no need for you to introduce yourself!” Fane smiled coldly and said. “I’m telling you, if you dare to slap me…” Slap! “You…” Slap! After three consecutive slaps, Neil was so dazed he could see stars and almost fainted. “Brother, it’s all my fault. I don’t dare to do it anymore!” Neil was afraid of getting beaten. He knelt and knocked his knees hard on the ground. Then he started begging for mercy. “Your head would not be at the place it is right now if it wasn’t for my daughter, she doesn’t have to witness that bloody scene!” Fane smiled indifferently. He did not use much strength. If he was serious with his slaps, Neil’s head would have flown away with just one slap. “Brother, my bad. You’re my brother. I’ve repented. Please let me go!” Neil was extremely frightened and almost wet his pants. Fane was a powerful opponent. “Oh, I have money, I can compensate you…” In order to survive, Neil retrieved his cell-phone. “I will transfer one million to you, please let me go!” “I’ll give you ten seconds to disappear as quickly as possible! And, don’t call me brother. I don’t have

such a rubbish brother!” Fane demanded coldly. Soon enough, Neil ran back to his sports car and drove away very quickly. “He has so many sports cars. He crashed a Ferrari this morning and now he’s driving a Porsche!” Fane smiled bitterly before turning around to face Selena and said. Selena was stunned by then. That was the Hugo family’s Second Young Master. Fane slapped him three times… That was too domineering! Fane seemed to no longer be the food delivery man in her eyes, he was like a god that others dare not violate. “Great. Daddy is so strong, he chased the bad guys away!” The innocent and naive Kylie clapped her hand in excitement with eyes filled with admiration. Selena was stunned for a while before she shook her head. She walked toward Fane feeling somewhat confused. “Hubby, you’re really too powerful. Those gangsters were carrying knives. I had no idea that you could settle it so quickly! You’re unusually strong and fast!” “Haha, silly. I’ve survived so many battles and the bloody sea of corpses. How could those untrained and useless gangsters bully me?” Fane laughed. Gently and playfully, he tapped Selena’s delicate nose. “I’ll protect you and Kylie from today onward!” Fane’s words touched her heart, so much so that she blushed.

Chapter 86

"Oh, don’t tell mum and the others about what happened just now. They shouldn’t have to worry about it!” Fane said to Selena after giving it a thought. Selena nodded. “Yes, this time we offended the Hugo family’s young master. My mother might scold you again if she knew about it!” She then looked at Kylie, who was in her arms and said, “Kylie, don’t tell both your grandmother about how your father beat the bad guys just now!” “Okay!” Kylie nodded obediently. It was then when Joan and her maid, Shauna, came back from a walk in the park. “Kylie, come have a look. See what I got you!” Joan happily presented Kylie a sugar-coated hawthorn fruit stick. “Wow, it’s candied hawthorns!” Kylie was excited seeing the candied hawthorns. She ran toward Joan as Selena put her on the ground. “By the

way, you are going to work tomorrow. Don't you want to buy better clothes?" Selena looked at Fane. "There's no need for that. My current clothes are pretty good. There's no tear on it, it just looks a little old!" Fane smiled. He did not pay much attention to clothes and food. What he wanted to do most was to make up for what he owed his mother and Selena. Although, at times, he would feel lazy to deal with Fiona because she treated him snobbishly, he would still repay her for the trouble he had caused them for the past five years. In the evening, the family happily had dinner together before going to rest. The next morning, Fane got up early and gave Andrew a second treatment. He then sent Selena to work with his electric scooter. What Fane did not expect was, Fiona, Ben, and Xena stalked him in a taxi not long after he had left on the electric scooter. Fane first rode to the Drake Group's headquarters that belonged to the Drake family, watched as Selena entered the company before riding his scooter to the Drake family mansion. Fiona, Ben and Xena, on the other hand, sat in a cafe opposite the mansion to observe. "Mum, is this necessary? It's really a waste of time to come here just to see if brother-in-law can really be a bodyguard here. Why can't we just ask him when he gets home?" Ben asked impatiently. "Brother-in-law? It sounded so natural from your mouth, did he pay you to say that?" Fiona could not help but roll her eyes at Ben. "Don't you forget. It was this person who caused our family to become what it is today. Otherwise, we wouldn't have a problem getting food on the table for the past five years. If it wasn't for him, your sister would be doing great in the Taylor family. You would definitely not be looked down upon when you go out..." Ben smiled bitterly. "I hate him, but I can see that he genuinely cares for Selena.. Besides, he also said that he would buy a car for me after he gets his salary. I can choose whatever car I want as long as the price is within one million..." "You actually believed him? And you'll continue calling him your brother-in-law for that?"

Chapter 87

Fiona glared at Ben and continued, “Aren’t you afraid that Miss Tanya fooled him? I’m afraid of that so I came here to see for myself. What if he comes back and lies to us?” “Ben, I think that what mum said is sensible. What should we do if he was refused by the employer and did not go to work, but comes home and lies to us? So the most insured way is to come over and see if he could start work!” By their side, Xena also nodded and the three of them looked at the gate. Fane rode his electric scooter and was about to enter the mansion. However, a few bodyguards who were guarding the door stopped him. “Young man, what are you doing? Does this look like a place that an electric scooter can go in? Do you know what this place is? The Drake family mansion! Is this a place that someone with an electric scooter can go in?” One of them looked at Fane and said in contempt. Fane stopped his car by the side and got down from the car, “If my scooter cannot be driven inside, where can I park it?” “Haha, young man, you’re so funny!” The other person laughed out loud. “The Drake family mansion is very, very big and there is also a specific parking space. Even us, as bodyguards, have parking spaces to park our cars. However, there are no small cars parked there, not to mention electric scooters!” “That’s right. After all, we as bodyguards have an annual salary of 200 or 300 thousand. We can easily buy a car that’s worth a few hundred thousand, who would ride an electric scooter?!” The previous man smiled and said, “Oh yes, what do you plan to do here? Are you lost?” “Oh, I am a new bodyguard here! Miss Tanya hired me!” Fane smiled, took out his cigarettes before handing it to the others politely. One of them did not hold back his words, “Young man, are you lying to us? Why would you smoke this cheap cigarette if you are the bodyguard just hired by Miss Tanya? Haha, don’t you feel ashamed when you take out white-sand cigarettes that only cost ten bucks?” Fane smiled bitterly. He directly placed it into his mouth as they did not want it. He lit it up and took a breath, “In my opinion, it is a good cigarette as long as I like it. I am used to this cigarette and I look down on other expensive ones!” “Haha, interesting!” The man suddenly laughed, “Then should you say that

you are used to riding an electric scooter, so you look down on BMWs and Audis?" "I do not care much about you guys. I would not come and be the Drake family's bodyguard if it weren't for Miss Tanya's face, together with the fact that she helped my wife and I had free time!" After Fane finished speaking, he wanted to walk inside. "You came here to be a bodyguard based on Miss Tanya's face? Are you joking?" One of the men stood in front of Fane and pushed him, "Not anyone can be the Drake family's bodyguard. The minimum salary is 20 thousand and the highest can go up to several hundred thousand. There are also commanders with salaries of millions and you dare say you disdain this job? Who are you fooling? Tell us honestly about your identity. Otherwise, don't even think about entering!" "Yes, yes, yes. You are not allowed to enter because you are not dressed formally!" The other bodyguard said coldly, "You do not look like someone Miss Tanya would employ. Besides, we recruit bodyguards by getting a group of people and select them through martial act competitions. We normally recruit eight or ten people in an instance. When was there ever someone who came on their own?" "That's right. I think he is a con-man. Humph, maybe he wants to go in and steal something!" Another tall guy snorted coldly. "I am really a bodyguard, but my price is higher than all of you at 20 million per month!"

Chapter 88

The bodyguards almost fainted when they heard what Fane had said. This man was actually bragging that his monthly salary was 20 million? "Haha, you can really brag! Even our commander here does not have such a high salary!" The tall guy waved his hand and said aggressively after he laughed, "Young man, get out of here. I don't have so much patience to listen to your bragging!" "Haha, yes. This young man is so funny. Is 20 million a month possible? The commander's salary is only around two million and he actually said that his salary is 20 million!" The other bodyguards also started laughing out loudly. "I am here for Miss Tanya. This is my first day here

and I do not want to cause trouble!" Fane was too lazy to pay attention to them. He bypassed them and was about to continue his way inside. "Are you looking for death?" One of the bodyguards had already lost his patience. He squeezed his big fist that was big like a sandbag and directly punched it towards Fane's face. The speed was very fast and was accompanied by the sound of whooshing gust. Boom! Since the opponent had already made a move, Fane did not hold back and blasted the opponent backward several steps with a punch. "Why did they start fighting?" Inside the tea-house, Fiona took a deep breath as she was looking at the entrance. "Oh my god, they had really started fighting. It seems that they didn't want to let Fane enter but he bit the bullet and wanted to break in!" Ben inhaled a cool breath and was really taken aback. "It's over, it's over. It seems that Miss Tanya had played Fane and what she said the other day was just making fun of him!" "Fane is indeed terrible. Just let it go if they don't let him in, but he still wants to force his way in. Wouldn't we offend the Drake family if he hurt the Drake family's bodyguard?" Xena was also frightened that her face turned pale. Fiona grew increasingly afraid as she heard this. It was still slightly better when Fane offended Young Master Clark. After all, she was not afraid although the Clark family was a second-class aristocratic family, because they had to consider the honor of the Taylor family. Apart from that, Young Master Clark was not a crude person who was completely unreasonable and he loved her daughter. However, it would really be over if Fane offended the Drake family. After all, James Drake was the wealthiest person in the Middle Province. The entire Drake family was stronger than any so-called first-class aristocratic family and seemed to still be independently expanding. Nobody can save Fane if he offended the Drake family and it might even hurt them and the Taylor family. "This rubbish is really making me mad. He only knows how to do things recklessly!" Fiona gritted her teeth with anger, "He previously slapped Ivan, then he slapped Young Master Clark several times. Now, he even dares to provoke the Drake family's bodyguards. He had only been back for two or three days, but he

had already fought for a few times. What a reckless man!" "Yes, yes, yes. Does this guy still think that he is on the battlefield and he can be unscrupulous? These people are not from the enemy country!" Xena also nodded her head continuously. She thought about it and looked at Fiona with panic written all over her face, "Mum, would it hurt us if Fane causes trouble again? After all, he is Ben's brother-in-law..." "Who said that he is Ben's brother-in-law? I did not accept him. Humph, it's better if such a person quickly leaves the Taylor family." Fiona's face turned blue with anger. When they were speaking, Fane had already caused two bodyguards to drop on the ground and the situation was already out of control.

Chapter 89

"It makes sense as this guy is very powerful. If he only wanted a salary of 20 to 30 thousand, Miss Tanya would have definitely agreed with him. Who knew that he would be so greedy? This is just great, Miss Tanya fooled him, did not let him in and he actually wants to break in!" Xena said again, "Now, he not only fails to be a bodyguard, it would be pretty good if this does not hurt your family!" "It's over. If this happens, does it mean that the car within a million promised to me is gone?" Ben had a bitter expression on his face and was sad. He thought that he could get a nice car but it seems that his dream had been completely destroyed. "You are still thinking of the car? I did not take it seriously when he said it!" Xena hugged her hands in front of her chest and said. "Let's go back, I'm really mad! The more I look at it, the angrier I get!" Fiona was so angry that she almost vomited blood when she looked at the bodyguards by the gate that were beaten by Fane till they were lying on the ground. How was it possible to not offend the Drake family under these circumstances? The three of them immediately left in a taxi. "Young man, you...you are the worst. I am telling you, you...you are done!" After the tall bodyguard spoke, he took out the walkie-talkie and shouted, "Big brothers on the inside, we need support. Someone wants to break into the Drake family mansion and we are not his opponents!" "Young man,

you’re dead. We are the lowest level bodyguards that take care of the front gate so our salaries are not high!” “Humph, Drake family’s bodyguards that are patrolling inside are all talented and they are amazing!” One of the guys lying on the ground did a cold snort and his eyes were full of resentment. Fane did not pay attention to that person and walked in step by step. He had to admit that this Drake family mansion was really extravagant. They were able to own such a wide land in this busy downtown area and villas were built on it. The greenery area was so big that it was scary and the villas were surrounded by high walls. Apart from the Drake family, only the few first-class aristocratic families can manage to do this. “Who is that? How dare he break into our Drake family mansion?” “Yes, f*ck his grandmother. Is this person looking for death? He does not know what kind of place the Drake family mansion is?” “I f*ck his uncle! This is the first time I have encountered such a thing since the five or six years I became a bodyguard in the Drake family!” Few bodyguards who listened to the walkie-talkie were extremely surprised. Such things had never happened. They had been living freely in the Drake family mansion. When nothing happened, they would just walk the grounds or gather in the bodyguards’ dormitory to play cards. It was extremely enjoyable. No one dared to offend them due to the Drake family’s name so they basically had nothing to do. Unexpectedly, someone dared to breakthrough today. “Harvey, quickly go over and take a look. Teach that person a good lesson!” One of the head commanders said coldly. “Yes!” The assistant commander immediately waved his hand and ran over to the gate with several bodyguards. After a while, some people came from another direction. There were more than 20 bodyguards who wore white shirts and black pants and they stopped Fane. “Young man, you are really extremely courageous. You even dare to hit the Drake family’s bodyguards!”

Chapter 90

”Your people were the ones who refused to let me enter and they made the first move!” Fane smiled indifferently. He had almost finished smoking the cigarette. After extinguishing it, he flicked his finger and it flew right into the trash can not far away. “Haha, young man, tell us why should our people let you in? Who do you think you are? You don’t look like a rich person. Tell us, what is your purpose of coming here?” The assistant commander whose name was Harvey laughed and asked. “Harvey, this young man said that he is a bodyguard hired by Miss Tanya and he said that he has a monthly salary of 20 million. We did not believe in him and stopped him from entering. Then, he barged in by force!” The few that climbed up from the floor had a hard to look at expression on their face and immediately shouted to this side. “20 million a month?” The man named Harvey sneered after he heard this, “Young man, you don’t even know how to lie. That’s just sad!” “Commander Harvey, let me meet him. It’s been a long time since I moved my muscles!” It was a tall man with a fat face and a very vicious look. His stature was estimated to be 1.9 meters and he looked very burly. He took a few steps forward with clenched fists. “That’s fine too. Teach this young man a lesson, it would be best if you can beat him till he’s disabled!” Harvey nodded in satisfaction and said with a playful expression. “No problem!” The burly man had a very thick and deep voice. After he finished speaking, he rushed a few steps forward and his huge fist came straight for Fane. Boom! Fane took a step, jumped up and directly kicked the opponent’s chest. The opponent’s huge body was actually kicked upside down and flew back several meters before hitting the ground. Pfft! The most surprising thing was that this bodyguard, who had amazing combat ability and a very strong body, spurted out a mouthful of blood and his face turned pale. “No way! Henry Liam had very powerful combat power and he’s much better than the other bodyguards of other families!” “Yes, he was a retired mercenary. It was said that he killed quite a number of people and he is still not this person’s opponent?” Many bodyguards that were waiting for a good show almost had their jaws dropped to the ground out of surprise. Fane’s

strength had exceeded their expectations. “Oh my, the Drake family’s bodyguards only have such little ability!” Fane glanced at Henry and shook his head. The fighting power of the Drake family’s bodyguard was really much weaker than what he had in mind. “Ah!” The guy named Henry became very angry when he heard what Fane said. He directly slapped his hand on the ground and stood up with a carp-like flip. He roared again and rushed towards Fane again like a scary tiger. Boom! Pitifully, his attack did not even touch a single piece of Fane’s hair and he was directly kicked away by Fane again. Once again, he hit the ground and a mouthful of blood poured out. “This young man is really good. Get a few of you to go forward and attack!” The young man saw this and immediately said to several bodyguards next to him. “It’s not so good to let so many people bully a loner!”

Chapter 91

Fane gave an insouciant smile and reacted instantly. In the eyes of those bodyguards, he was like a phantom. They were knocked out one by one as Fane swung by in a blur. "Come on. Come on up together!" After Fane finished with those guys, he beckoned to Harvey and the remaining bodyguards. "Commander Harvey, you, go on!" One of the bodyguards was obviously scared witless. He saw how fast Fane was and he knew he would not be able to keep up with the speed. There was no way he could beat Fane at that speed. Commander Harvey could imagine himself wiping the cold sweat away on his forehead. He was an amazing fighter himself. He had no problem fighting off four hundred to five hundred people single-handedly usually. However, he was overwhelmed at Fane's speed just now and he was nowhere up to that standard. "What's wrong? Shouldn't you be setting an example, Commander?" Fane sneered as his eyes locked on Harvey. "You were pretty fierce just now, weren't you?" "Motherf*cker, do you think you can step all over me just because I don’t flex my muscles?" Although Harvey had no confidence in winning the duel, he balled his fists up

nonetheless and was prepared to fight Fane. "Stop it!" At the nick of time, an extremely pleasant voice sounded. Harvey breathed a sigh of relief and stopped dead in his tracks. "What are you doing?" Not far away from them, Tanya came into sight with two or three bodyguards. "Miss Tanya, we stopped this b*stard from breaking into Drake Residence. As a result, he injured so many of our brothers!" Harvey reported to Miss Tanya immediately. "Miss Tanya, this kid was bragging that he is your bodyguard with a monthly salary of twenty million bucks. Pfft, he must be talking through his hat!" Another guy got up from the ground and stared at Fane bitterly. "Hey br*t, Miss Tanya is here. Let's see what nonsense you can pull to save your *ss!" Fane looked at the guy with a grin on his face, completely unconcerned. Miss Tanya appeared somewhat uneasy. After a while, she forced a wry smile. "Fane, I'm really sorry. I had so much to do after coming back yesterday that I forgot to inform the gatekeeper. They don't know that you are coming this morning! So…don't take it to heart!" The bodyguards went wide-eyed after hearing that. They could not believe their ears. It seemed like Fane was indeed one of them. Moreover, Miss Tanya obviously knew him well and even told him not to be bothered by the de trop. Why did Miss Tanya talk to him so politely? "That's fine. Friendship grows from the exchange of blows. It's good that I get to see the strength of your bodyguards and know how they are!" Fane waved his hand indifferently. "So, what do you think of them? Not bad, huh?" Tanya was quite confident of her bodyguards. However, Fane's face suggested that he did not share the same thought. "They are just a little better than ordinary people. Just a bunch of rice buckets to me!" "Rice bucket?" Harvey almost passed out of anger when he heard it. In Middle Province, they were the best among the best, specially hand-picked from a reputable bodyguard company. Yet, the br*t called them rice buckets! Tanya's face sank. That br*t was brutally honest. "Miss Tanya, are you upset? I like to be frank!"

Chapter 92

"Miss Tanya, do you really want him to be your bodyguard? He is such an arrogant fella!" There was a guy with a long and gloomy face, he felt like bashing Fane up. That was what he did a moment ago. Unfortunately, before he could even get near to Fane, he was sent off with a kick. "He is the bodyguard I hired yesterday! Fane Woods!" Tanya introduced with a sweet smile. "His salary is indeed twenty million bucks a month. If you guys are not happy about it, feel free to take on him!" At this point, Tanya smiled at Fane. "Mr. Fane, I believe that you wouldn't mind being challenged if you think they are merely rice buckets!" "Of course!" Fane replied calmly. "Motherf*cker, show me what you've got. I will challenge you today!" Harvey was pissed the more he thought about it. He had never been called a rice bucket all his life; never been looked down in such a way before. "So, it's true that he is getting twenty million bucks. Commander Harvey, come on! Let us see if this br*t is worth the price!" Those bodyguards recovered from the shock after hearing Fane's income. They were hissing remarks through clenched teeth as hatred engulfed them. "Boy, don't accuse me of bullying you. I am best at throwing knives!" After careful considerations, Harvey took out several knives and mocked at Fane. "Yes. Commander Harvey, this br*t is fast and powerful. I'm sure it would work if you throw your knives!" A bodyguard and said immediately. He knew how fast and accurate Commander Harvey was at throwing knives. He was certain that Fane would not have a chance to even get close to Harvey. "Well. If you are good at throwing knives, then, I'm good at picking up knives with empty hands!" Fane replied casually. The corner of Harvey's mouth twitched upon hearing the comment. That guy had the cheek to joke about it. Harvey narrowed his eyes slightly as he aimed the knife. With a wave of his hand, a glint of light flew out of his hand surprisingly fast. "Swish!" That knife was sent flying across at a terrifying speed. It made a sound of wind breaking which was almost unnoticeable by ordinary people. However, in the next second, Fane stretched out his palm and stopped mid-air. The flying knife was sandwiched between his index and middle fingers. "No way, how

could he stop that? It was so fast!" That was coming from a slightly chubby bodyguard. After witnessing the scene, his eyes were wide opened. "At such speed, the momentum and impact would be very strong. The blade of Harvey's flying knife would usually be buried in the trunk if it hits a tree. Yet, this br*t can hold it between his fingers!" Another bodyguard was also awe-stricken. A bodyguard that was paid with a salary of twenty million bucks a month seemed to be really unusual. "Huh! The show has just begun!" Harvey's face sank. The five knives left in his hand were flicked out at the same time, all aiming directly at Fane. They were fired at the same speed but attacked from different positions. "Br*t, I want to see how you can take down so many flying knives at once!" Harvey ridiculed Fane in his heart. He had perfected the art of throwing knives. He was certain that Fane would not be able to catch any of his knives. Then again, the disadvantage of throwing so many knives at the same time was that the power of attack would be weakened. Besides, it would be difficult to aim at the target. If the target was too far away, it was difficult for all five knives to hit the target.

Chapter 93

Fortunately, Fane was not far from Harvey; just a few meters away. Harvey had a higher probability to hit his target. Fane reacted instantly. He was moving at an appalling speed that no one could see how he did it. All they could see was him waving his hands. When he stopped, there were five more knives in his hands. Adding in the previous one, there were six knives in total. "Damn..." Harvey swallowed his saliva in an attempt to calm himself down. He was shocked that Fane could catch all the knives. It happened so fast that he did not see what was going on, yet those knives ended up in Fane's hands. He knew very well that even the Head Commander would rather dodge his five knives and plan for a counter-attack than catching them with his bare hands under the same situation. By Fane taking all the knives down, he proved that he was better than the Head commander in terms of speed, agility, and other aspects. Tanya's eyes lit up in excitement

when she saw what happened. Fane’s ability was proven and she was reassured that he was worth the hefty twenty million bucks of monthly salary. "It's my turn! I'm not good at throwing knives, but perhaps I should give it a go!" Feeling intrigued, Fane just smiled and tossed the six knives at Harvey. "No!" Harvey was terribly scared. The br*t claimed that he was not an expert but he threw the knives anyway. Miss Tanya was just right beside him and he was worried about the speed of the knives that Fane sent across. The worst nightmare was that if Fane was not good at it, the knives might miss him and hit Miss Tanya instead. Some of the other bodyguards were also taken aback when they heard Fane. The br*t wanted to give it a try. "Swish! Swish! Swish!” The six knives flew out at top speed and ended up where Harvey was in a short period of time. "Argh!" Before Harvey could react, he felt a gush of pain in six places at the same time. The powerful force blasted him into the air. He was seen coughing out a mouthful of blood. It's over. I’m dead, a knife is stuck in my heart!" Harvey laid on the ground in distress. He could feel the knife pierced through his chest. "Clang! Clang! Clang!" He heard the sound of the knives fell to the ground. "What just happened? I…I'm not dead?" Harvey touched his body and checked his hands. He found no traces of blood. He sat up in a daze. He looked at the ground with his pale face just to find all six knives on the ground without blood on any of them. "How come there is no blood?" Harvey stood up, his face was full of disbelief. "What just happened?" Fane frowned bitterly. "Sigh, what bad luck. How come you were only hit by the hilt!" The people around felt like their hearts almost leaped out of their throats. All of the knives’ handles hit the target. No way that was pure luck. In other words, Fane did it on purpose. "Thank you for not killing me!" Unknowingly, cold sweat broke out on Harvey. He was scared. Without thinking, he joined his hands in salutation and bowed to thank Fane. "Why thank me? It's your luck!" Fane smiled lightly before continuing. "By the way, is there anyone else here who wants to challenge me?"

Chapter 94

Lucky? The people around were not fools. All those six knives hit Harvey with their hilts. Obviously, that was no coincidence. Besides, Harvey was the commander of the team. If he was not an opponent of Fane, who would dare to challenge Fane? "Br*t, you are really amazing! Let's go, I don't think they are your match. I will take you to meet my father, my grandfather, and my elder brother!" "After seeing them, I will arrange your accommodation. Of course, if you have no plans in the afternoon, you can pick your wife up from work. If you have something, you are free to go out anytime. You can rest at the Drake Residence as well. You can live in any place as you wish!" Tanya smiled faintly and then walked toward inside with Fane. Those bodyguards were exchanging looks. They were again, dumbfounded. "Did I hear it right? Did she just say that he could just get off work anytime he wants?" "Yes, and he doesn't need to live in Drake Residence. He could just come over and have a look at any time." The bodyguards were completely stunned. The br*t was paid with a salary of twenty million bucks and yet he gets to enjoy the most freedom among them. Who the hell was that br*t? The leader of the Drakes was too kind to him. "Grandpa, Father, Brother, this is Fane!" Tanya brought Fane to meet Old Master Drake and the others and introduced him to her family with a smile on her face. "So, you are Fane?" Timothy Drake looked at Fane, then frowned and asked, "Why didn’t you put on something more decent on your first day working at the Drake Residence?" Fane replied casually to the question. "In my opinion, these clothes are fine. Clothes are like human hearts. It is of utmost importance to maintain its cleanliness. As long as one has a clean heart, everything would appear clean in one’s eyes!" "You..." Timothy was infuriated. The b*stard was obviously mocking him, was he not? He was paid to be their bodyguard so they were his boss. How could the br*t talk to him with such an attitude? "You’re right!" Before Timothy could finish his sentence, Old Master Drake was seen nodding in agreement at the side. "I

have made it to this day with a poor and hard past. When I was young, all I wore was stitched and patched up clothes, but one thing for sure, I kept my clothes clean. It reflects the attainment of a person!" Timothy was forced to hold his tongue, so he felt a little unhappy. "Haha, little brother Fane, we haven't seen each other for a long time. You are welcome to join our Drake Family! Don’t hesitate to tell us whatever you need in the future!" What made him even more speechless was that his father by his side was also talking very politely to Fane. However, after Timothy thought about it, he found a way to tease Fane. He smiled faintly and said, "Brother Fane, this is how we run here. The Drake Family has a rule that whenever we have a new recruit, he should battle with one of our bodyguards to show us his strength. This would help us to understand how skillful he is!" Having said that, he crafted his words to sound subtle. "Don't be offended. This is not against you. We have always been choosing our bodyguards like this. Although my sister has promised to let you work for us, I feel like we should still walk through the procedure. Otherwise, I am afraid that some bodyguards will not be convinced after knowing your pay scale!" Fane became dazed for a moment before replying indifferently. "Just bring anyone that is still not convinced. Since this is the rule of the Drake Family, then I should indeed go by the rules!" Timothy was delighted that Fane agreed to his suggestion so easily. “That’s good, so I’ll go and get someone to battle with you. How about that?” Fane nodded, turned around, and walked toward the door. James was going to say something about his son’s rude behavior. He had reminded his son repeatedly that Fane had quite a high status; he was a good friend of the God of War. To please Fane was to please the God of War.

Chapter 95

Then again, he was also curious about Fane's ability. Fane was paid a hefty salary of twenty million bucks a month. It would be frustrating if he was not worth the price. Besides, he did not bother to stop since Fane agreed to it.

As soon as Timothy left the house, he saw Harvey walking further ahead with a few bodyguards. His heart thumped with joy. Harvey was very powerful and the strongest among the Commanders. He immediately waved his hand and shouted, "Harvey, come over and try it out with this new bodyguard. We'll just take it easy. After all, we are family!" Timothy's mouth twitched into a smile. He could not wait to see Fane make a fool of himself. If Fane could not even beat Harvey, he would be embarrassed about getting paid with such a high salary, would he not? Tanya, who was at the side, chucked uncontrollably. "Why are you laughing?" Timothy frowned, he was puzzled. "No, nothing?" Tanya was holding her belly. At the same time, Harvey and the other bodyguards turned around. There were several bodyguards who had blood dripping from the corners of their mouths, and some even had visible footprints on their chests. Harvey was not spared. The blood around the corners of his mouth had not dried up. He asked bitterly, "Eldest Young Master, is Fane the new bodyguard you are talking about?" "Harvey, what's the matter with you guys?" Timothy gasped. "Were you guys beaten up by someone? No way! Even you were injured? Who's the motherf*cker?" "Harvey, who the hell did this to you?" James was also surprised. Who could have bashed them up under broad daylight? "Young Master Timothy, it was the new bodyguard. We had a misunderstanding just now as we didn't know that he was hired as a bodyguard, so our people started a fight with him. This is the result… Some have gone off to rest. Their injuries are far worse than ours!" Harvey peeped at Fane who was next to him with a grimacing smile. There was fear in his gaze. "Yeah, Young Master Timothy, Harvey had a go with him just now and he lost miserably!" The other bodyguard lowered his head and said embarrassedly. "So, you guys have tested him. Then, he passed!" Timothy's mouth twitched and his heart quivered in shock. Even Harvey was injured. It seemed like Fane had a thing or two. His ability was probably comparable to the Head Commander. "Okay, go!" Tanya waved her hand with a smile, and then said to Fane. "Let's go, Fane. I will arrange a place for you!" "Tanya, you don't

need to arrange a dormitory for Fane. Your cousin rarely comes back to live in her villa. Just get him a room there since there are so many empty rooms!" After thinking about it, James spoke. Harvey and the others were envious of the special treatment that Fane got.

Chapter 96

"Okay. Fane, let's go!" Tanya placed her hands behind her back as she led Fane away to a villa not far away with a smile on her face. After Fane left, James' expression sank. He said to Timothy, "Timothy, what did I tell you? No matter how Fane's strength is, we should be polite to him. After all, we can't trace any record of this kid in the army, where he spent five years. As Spectre Face speculated, his information might be in the top-secret files!" Timothy lowered his head and said softly. "Father, I am not being disrespectful to him. I just feel like he is overpaid with twenty million bucks as monthly salary. I think it is a little too high for a bodyguard, so I want to try him out to see how skillful he is." At this point, he raised his head and smiled calmly. "Now, it seems that he is very capable. Such ability must be a top gun in the army. No wonder he knew the God of War!" “Well, I guess, this kid must be an officer, perhaps he is a marshal!" "There is a possibility that he doesn't want to reveal his identity!" James nodded and said. At the same time, Fiona and the others had returned home. They all wore embarrassing looks on their faces. “Where have you all been? Why are you all wearing this expression?" Andrew saw the three of them, and he could not hide his contented smile. "Hey, let me tell you some good news. Fane is really amazing. My legs are obviously better now than before. I can feel it this time, it's definitely not an illusion. It's only two days and I’ve already felt so much better. If I carry on the treatment for seven days according to what he said, my leg can be healed!" "Really? Congratulations in-law!" Joan, who was listening by the side, gave a satisfied smile and said, "I really didn't expect that my son has learned some medical knowledge in the past five years which I didn’t see him. It seems that he went through a lot in the

past five years. He has grown and made progress!" "Yes, yes. Your son is indeed amazing. He's so amazing that he even dared to bash up the people from Drake Family. Huh, I think he is getting us all in trouble!" Fiona got angrier and angrier as she thought about it. She rebuked with a cold face. "What are you talking about, in-law? Did you say that Fane beat someone from the Drake Family? How did it happen? Didn't he go to the Drake Family as a bodyguard? How could he beat someone up from the Drake Family?" Joan's face turned pale when she heard about the news. The Drake Family was the most formidable family in Middle Province. "Why would I lie to you? We saw it with our own eyes!" Xena added immediately. "We saw it with our own eyes that the bodyguards of the Drake Family refused to let Fane enter the Drake Residence. Fane insisted on barging in so they started the fight!" "Yeah, the point is that he is so good. He beat all the bodyguards who stood guarded to the ground. Haha, what would the Drake Family think about this? The bodyguards who guarded the gate were just ordinary bodyguards. Those bodyguards inside were the real masters!" Andrew sneered. "Why would the Drake Family give twenty million bucks of monthly salary to Fane, a veteran who is not well-known, to be their bodyguard? That second young miss must be poking fun with him!" Joan could not help but take two steps back in fright, she almost fainted. She was worried sick. She had no idea if Fane's job was legit. She had been at home and was waiting for Fane's news. Unexpectedly, she was greeted with such horrible news. "No way! Was he so reckless?" Andrew frowned. If that was true, his family might be affected. "We saw it with our own eyes. Do you think it's true? Initially, we just wanted to secretly send him off and watch him go to work on the first day. Unexpectedly, we saw such a terrible scene..." Fiona looked sincere with the sad look on her face. "What do we do now?"

Chapter 97

Fiona was very anxious. She panicked. "What do we do? Anyway, he was the one who did it. It has nothing to do with our family!" "Besides, I have never admitted that he is our son-in-law!" Fiona made her stand clear immediately. "Yes, I don't have a brother-in-law like him!" Ben turned against Fane without hesitant. The word ‘brother-in-law’ which he called out kindly yesterday was forgotten. On the other side, Selena’s first day at work went smoothly. She did not expect that the Drake Family was planning to invest in a large project in the south of the city. They bought a large piece of land and were developing it into a high-end residential area. As a newly appointed Procurement Manager, she was solely responsible for the procurement of the building materials. Selena was flattered. The Drake family even arranged a Procurement Supervisor to share some of her workloads. This supervisor, called Sonia Neal, was a distant relative of the Drake family. "Sonia, let’s work hard together in the future!" Selena smiled. She was sitting in the office as she said that to Sonya who was in front of her. "Miss Selena is so polite. You are the manager and I am the supervisor. I should listen to you and do things according to your instruction!" Sonya smiled, but she had implied meanings in her statement. After that, she thought for a while and then added. "By the way, Miss Selena, I remember that your family is in the building materials business too. Would you be benefiting your own family with such a big project? You’re from the Taylor Family, right? We need to be professional and not cooperate with the Taylor family just because you are part of the family!" The corners of Selena's mouth twitched slightly before she forced a smile and said, "If this is the case, you don't need to worry about it, Sonia. You just need to do your job well. I know what to do with this procurement and I will not take care of the Taylor family because of my relationship with the family!" "Oh, that would be the way!" Sonia sneered coldly and then said, "After all, this project is too big. In terms of building materials, it is not difficult to earn hundreds of millions. If the profits are larger, the developer may rake in billions! " "I know this. In the next few days, please allow us to check the situation!"

Selena waved her hand at last. "Well, if there is nothing wrong, Supervisor Sonia will go ahead and work on it!" "Ok!" Sonia was about to quit, but after she thought about it, she stopped and said to Selena. "By the way, Miss Selena, it’s your first day at work today, and you became our department's manager. You see, the colleagues in this department are all very tired. Perhaps Miss Selena should take us out for a celebration? Celebrating your role as a manager and also to allow everyone to unwind. What do you think?" "That’s true, everyone should just go out, relax and talk more!" Selena nodded. "You go arrange for it. After all, you must be familiar with them." "Okay, I will make the arrangements!" After Sonia turned around, a triumphant smile crept into the corner of her mouth.

Chapter 98

After Sonya left, Selena leaned back on her chair and frowned. "It seems that this supervisor is very unhappy with me. Moreover, she is also forcing me to treat them. If I don’t agree, she will probably b*tch about me being stingy and refusing to take them out after becoming a manager!" "Forget it, fortunately, Fane gave me nine hundred thousand bucks yesterday and my mom gave me a hundred thousand bucks. That should be enough for a meal, right?" Selena smiled bitterly and was no longer brooding over it. At that same time, a man in his fifties from the Taylor family returned with excitement. He immediately summoned the Old Master Taylor and the other members of the Taylor family together. "Uncle Timmy, what's the matter?" Ivan quipped lazily while studying the man in front of him. He was in a terrible mood that day. He was planning for a celebration at the hotel yesterday and to show off his achievement to Selena and the others, but it turned out to be a disaster. Unexpectedly, he ended up abashed. After recovering from his hangover, he realized that Miss Tanya was blind to have hired trash like Fane to be the Drake family’s bodyguard. He was paid a twenty million monthly salary. Besides, he was shocked that even Selena landed a job with Drake family. Miss Tanya introduced her to be

Procurement Manager. "There are two things, one is about Fane and the other is about Selena! I have bad news Fane, and good news about Selena!" "Which one do you want to hear first?" Timmy grinned and asked. "Let's listen to the bad news first!" Theodore answered after a moment of silence. Then, Timmy continued. "Someone from our company happened to pass by the Drake Residence today. Guess what he saw?" Old Master Taylor was upset, he complained coldly. "Why do you keep asking us to guess? Just say it, don't be mysterious about it!" Timmy pouted his lips before saying, "He saw Fane arriving at the Drake Residence on his electric scooter. Haha, but the point is that Fane ended up in a fight!" While talking, Timmy took out his phone, launched the WeChat app, and then clicked on a video that was sent to him. "Look, this was taken by the employee. Tsk…tsk…No one allowed him into the house but he insisted on e. In the end, several bodyguards who guarded the gate were knocked down to the ground!" "Really!" Ivan looked at him and was ecstatic. He pretended to say, "It's strange, isn't he going to work? Why won't they let him in?" Cecelia did not even think about it. She took a step forward and said, "Do you still need to talk about it? You didn't see his lofty attitude yesterday. He was so arrogant, acting as if Miss Tanya begged him to be a bodyguard. Don't mention how arrogant, it seems that Miss Long Er asked him to be a bodyguard. He demanded a minimum salary of twenty million bucks a month. He agreed because the Drake Family gave a job to his sister. In this case, do you think Miss Tanya would agree? Did she agree to it?" Speaking of that, Cecelia paused before continuing. "Miss Taylor was just teasing him. She was just having fun with him so that he would go in today and end up in a mess." Ivan nodded immediately. "It's just that the other party did not expect that Fane would hit their bodyguards. He is in for the trouble big time." "Oh, dear!" Timmy slapped his thigh. "So that was bad news. We also said yesterday that he was the son-in-law of the Taylor family. I was thinking about getting closer to the Drake family... Will this hurt Taylor's feeling?"

Chapter 99

"Don't worry. If that happens, we just won't recognize him as our son-in-law!" "After all, everyone knows the agreement we had with him. Even Young Master Michael knows about it. We had a one-month agreement with Fane." "Furthermore, if we recognize him, we would not have driven both him and Selena out of the Taylor family!" said Ivan. The Old Master nodded. "It is true, we have not recognized him, so he is not one of the Taylor family!" Speaking of that, the old master paused and asked, "By the way, what's the good news you mention about Selena? Did she really work with the Drake family?" Timmy had a straight face. "Old Master, didn't everyone know about this yesterday? Besides, Selena is capable. A monthly salary of ten million bucks is not too high. After all, it is the Drake Family that she is working for and she is a manager!" "In that case, what is the good news?" Ivan frowned, so everyone was puzzled. "I heard that the Drake Family bought a piece of land in the south of the city. You all knew how big the land is!" "The most important thing is that the Drake Family is going to develop a real estate project on it, the South City Real Estate! In the future, it will be built into a high-end residential area! They would need a lot of building materials!" "The Procurement Manager who is responsible for purchasing the building materials is Miss Selena who just started to work with them. Now, isn't this fantastic news?" Timmy said, his eyes were gleaming with excitement. "For such a large project, a lot of building materials are needed. I estimate that we could make at least 700 or 800 million bucks out of it. There may be a possibility to make a billion bucks!" "Oh my goodness, such a huge profit! The land over there is indeed big and it could make so much money!" "Great, Miss Selena is the person in charge so they can approach the Taylor family for purchasing those materials!" A few relatives of the Taylor family were hyped after hearing the news. "If this is the case, wouldn't we, the Taylor family become a second-class aristocratic family sooner?" Theodore's eyes lit up. He did not expect to be

showered with such a blessing. Old Master Taylor frowned. "Indeed it is good news. I feel a little unrealistic that Selena is given such a big project to handle as a new recruit!" "Sigh. Father, you have thought too much. Who cares as long as we can make money out of it!" Theodore said with a smile. "We never had such a good opportunity before. Besides, our building materials are of high-quality and they fulfil the standard. If we work well with the Drake Family this time, won't we have a better chance in the future? We will definitely be able to progress into a second-class aristocratic family step by step and become stronger!" "It's just that we have driven them out of the Taylor Family for five years. In the past five years, we have pretty much ignored them. Besides, Ivan had also secretly hampered Selena from looking for a job. If we go to Selena, would she refuse to help us?" The old master thought about that and forced a smile. Everyone's face sank upon hearing that. "Not to worry. My cousin is kind-hearted. She is not that kind of person. After all, she is part of the Taylor family, so she should think about us!" Ivan said after pondering momentarily. "I'll apologize to her if that is such a big deal. Earlier, I was angry at her that she chose to be a loser..."

Chapter 100

"Yes, that should work. Selena is part of our Taylor family. Who else would she benefit such a big project to, if not us?" Cecelia commented immediately with a smile. If the Taylor family could make it to a second-class aristocratic family, she would be confident, going out in the future with that sort of family background. When the time comes, those young ladies from the third-class aristocratic family who were close to her would be envious of her. They would be trying to please her, would they not? "Yes, Selena is part of us, so she would naturally take care of us!" Theodore nodded after processing the idea through his mind. He looked at Ivan and said, "Ivan, you must be sincere if you were to apologize to her. Got it?" "Don't worry. I will be sincere for sure!" Ivan said with a reassuring smile, "I have thought about

it. As long as she takes care of our family and lets us make some money, I can give her some rebates..." "You have to be careful about this kind of thing. No one else should know about this. If someone else finds out, Selena would get a bad name for accepting rebates. Selena has just started working with the Drake family and she has yet to gain their trust!" Old Master Taylor was not keen on relying on the relationship to get the project, but he was tempted by the opportunity to make it to a second-class aristocratic family, so he compromised in the end. As long as the quality of the building materials supplied by the Taylor family is good, the Drake Family would not have much to say… That was indeed a great opportunity for the Taylor family. This project would be ongoing for at least two to three years. Once they have struck the deal, the Taylor family would be comfortable for at least two or three years. … After Sonia left Selena's office, she appeared quickly in front of the other staff of the procurement department and clapped her hands together. "I'll tell everyone a piece of good news. This afternoon, we will not work overtime. We'll all leave work the usual time..." As soon as she made the announcement, the employees were very happy. Many jumped with excitement. "Wait. Hold on, I haven't finished yet!" Sonya waved her hand to signal everyone to remain quiet. Then, she continued. "Our new manager just asked me to inform everyone that tonight, she will be taking us to eat and sing karaoke at the best hotel. How about a good night out at the best KTV?" "Wow, that's great!" "Yes, this new manager is really fantastic!" "Are you saying that we are going to a six-star hotel? The best hotel in the Middle Province is the six-star hotel that has just opened! Are we really going there?" The employees were all over the moon. Sonia stood there, sneering in her heart. It was a grave mistake for Selena to get her to make the arrangements. That gave her the chance to make some really 'good arrangements'. She spread the news to everyone. If they ended up not going to the best hotel or the best KTV, Selena would be losing face. "Okay, everyone, let's continue to work, I'll call up and make the bookings!"

Chapter 101

After Sonia made the announcement, she went straight to the corridor outside and made the call. Another female employee who had a good relationship with her came up to her after she hung up the call. "Supervisor, you have been working hard for the Drake family for several years. How could they not give you credit for your hard work? Shouldn't you be promoted to a manager already? The company had a vacancy for the Procurement Manager, but that was not a good enough reason to make Selena one, right?" The female employee remarked after she joined Sonia. Sonia was very angry as the employee had just spoken what was on her mind. Her face turned ugly because of the rage that was boiling within her. She tried her very best to force a smile. "Sigh, well, she is very capable and she was recruited by Miss Tanya. The General Manager said that she was appointed by Miss Tanya personally. Besides, Selena was already showing her ability as a strong career lady back then when she was part of the Taylor family!" "F*ck it. I heard that she was kicked out of the Taylor family five years ago. Someone saw her picking up trash to sell. I don't know what made Miss Tanya see in her." The employee was also angry. "Think about it, you have spent your youth for this company. If the woman hadn't appeared out of nowhere suddenly, you would have been made the manager! Even if she were to join the company, she should start as a supervisor and you as the manager!" Sonia bit her teeth and mocked. “Huh, let’s see how long can she remain in this position. If she doesn't do well, she will have to be dismissed sooner or later!" Having said that, she looked around and then whispered to the female employee. "Felicia, let me tell you this. The manager told me to help her arrange for dinner tonight. She probably just wanted me to inform everyone about the dinner this evening!" Felicia was not stupid. She exclaimed immediately. "So, she did not say that we are going to that hotel?" "Well, she didn't say that she would treat us to the karaoke either but she was to be blamed for giving a vague instruction. I assume she told me to

arrange for everything, including making the appointment at the hotel!" Sonia gave an insouciant shrug and then smirked. "Huh, since you knew that she was kicked out of the Taylor family before, and some people even saw her picking up trash to sell, she must not have a lot of money. Perhaps she might have difficulties forking out one thousand bucks. The private room that I have made a booking for has a minimum spending of two hundred thousand bucks. I want her to make her a fool of herself in front of everyone." “Gasp!" Felicia gasped and yelped in surprise. "You, aren’t you taking it too far? That’s a lot of money. What will happen if she gets angry before we even started singing? Will you be in trouble? Besides, she might not turn up at all if she knew how expensive it is!" "Hehe, if she doesn't turn up, she would be abashed. Dozens of colleagues are watching her. Moreover, I told everyone just now that she wanted to go to the best hotel. If we end up eating at some cheap roadside stalls, our colleagues will be disappointed. Do you think they will work hard for her in the future?" "Furthermore, she can't put the blame on me. If she does, I will blame her instead for not giving clear instructions. All she said to me was to make the arrangements for me!" Sonia smiled derisively. "If she embarrasses herself on the first day at work and makes the employees in the company unhappy and dissatisfied with her, there will be conflicts in the future. Also, I, the supervisor, do not cooperate well with her. In that case, she might have to vacate her position within a month!" "Supervisor, don't worry. I will be on your side! I will speak up for you!" After that, Felicia asked, "By the way, supervisor, I heard that this new manager is being paid a high salary!"

Chapter 102

"Very high? Isn't it the same as the previous manager? Did she not get a monthly salary of one hundred thousand bucks? Added with various subsidies, she probably gets a total of one hundred and seventy thousand bucks, no?" Sonia frowned. She was slightly surprised. "I heard that it's not the same. If I am not mistaken, her salary is one million bucks a month with

a year-end bonus!" The female employee called Felicia said, "I don't know why she gets such a high salary. This is outrageous, don’t you think so? I can understand if she is a relative of the Drake family, but she is not! I think it is good enough for her to be appointed as the manager. There is no need to pay her such a high salary!" Sonia was nervous just thinking about it. If she became the manager, would she be paid with such a high salary? She was a distant relative of the Drake family, after all. The thought of her being made the manager had Selena not joined the company circulated her mind. She was not able to stay calm the entire afternoon. Soon, it was time to get off work. Selena, too, walked out of the office. "Everyone, today is my first day at work in the company. In order to forge our friendship, I have planned to take everyone out for dinner tonight. Has supervisor Sonia notified everyone?" Selena asked cheerfully after walking out of the door. There were not many employees, around twenty to thirty people. She estimated that it would cost her several thousand bucks at least. Although that was distressing for Selena, who had been in poverty for five years, she thought it was no big deal when she was reminded of her monthly income of a million bucks. "Thank you, manager. You are so kind to us. I have never been to a six-star hotel in my life!" A female employee who was extremely excited, said, "Unexpectedly, I have given my first time to the manager!" "Alas! You have a kid already. How could this be your first time?" A male employee next to her joked. "I meant the first time to a six-star hotel. What a dirty mind you have. Besides, the manager is not a man!" The female employee grinned and said, "I am excited just thinking about going for a karaoke session at the high-end KTV after dinner!" "Six-star hotel? High-end KTV?" Selena furrowed her brows upon hearing that. She told Sonya to inform everyone to leave work early instead of working overtime. However, it seemed that Sonya had taken it upon herself to tell everyone about the extravagant night out. "Yes, didn't you let the supervisor inform everyone about it?" An older employee with slightly grey hair frowned. “No?" Sonia, who was by the side, smirked. She was eager to see how

Selena wanted to do about it. If she claimed that it was a mistake, everyone would be left disappointed and even feel that Selena pulled a trick on them. They would not cooperate well with her in the future at work. Besides, that would be her first impression for everyone. The first impression had always been important. Selena was not naive. She shot a side glance at Sonia and she knew what was going on. It seemed that someone was not very happy about her being the manager. "Is the private room booked?" Selena asked the other party quizzically.

Chapter 103

"Yeah, didn't you tell me to arrange for it? I have arranged for a relatively popular private room, the minimum spending is only two hundred thousand bucks!" "I have heard that as the manager, your monthly salary is one million bucks. You should be fine with it, right?" Sonia said with a bright grin. "No way! The manager's salary is that high?" "Oh dear, did you book a private room? The manager is really kind to us. The minimum spending is two hundred thousand bucks!" The other employees were all enlivened, some female employees were jumping with excitement. Judging from the situation, Selena was overcome with a ghastly feeling which reflected on her face. Two hundred thousand bucks as minimum spending. They would probably spend more than that for dinner. Besides, it was still uncertain how much they would be spending for the karaoke session. She was furious and felt like giving an earful to Sonia. It was disgusting of that woman to have decided on Selena’s behalf without consulting her. Unfortunately, she could not do so. She knew well that Sonia was an old-timer and also a supervisor. She might have a few confidantes around. Had Selena scolded Sonia, it would not bring any benefit to Selena at all. If they were to go to an ordinary restaurant, everyone would be deeply disappointed and even start calling her stingy. Therefore, she could not say that Sonia made a mistake either. It would not set things right for her. "What's wrong? Manager, didn't you ask me to arrange for it? Is there something wrong?" Seeing that Selena had not

said a word for a long time, Sonia was happy with herself. Selena got herself together quickly and then smiled as if she was unperturbed. "The Dynasty Hotel, right? Let’s go, it’s still early. I’ll give everyone two hours to go home and get changed or dress up. You can go back and get ready now!" "Yeah! Great! Long live the manager!" The female employee that had the most exciting reaction before, shouted immediately. "The manager is so generous. She is taking us to a six-star hotel for dinner. I have not met a leader like this in my life!" "Yes, it's the first time I have encountered such a good leader!" The employees left for their homes one by one in excitement. They all agreed to gather at the hotel entrance. Sonia, who stood by the side was completely stunned. She had never expected Selena to agree to it. The woman had not been working for five years, someone even saw her picking up trash before. They would probably need three to four hundred thousand bucks for the entertainment tonight. Can she afford that much money? "What's wrong? Supervisor, don't you want to go back and put on makeup or something?" Selena saw that Sonia was still standing there. She could not help but jeered in her heart and asked. "Oh, I...I will go now!" Sonya replied and then left with the others. "Supervisor, what's up? This woman actually agreed! Does she have that much money?" As soon as Sonia walked out of the company, Felicia stepped forward eagerly to gossip. "I'm also surprised. Does she have so much money? Even if her monthly salary is one million bucks, she hasn’t been paid, has she? Where the hell does she get so much money from?" Sonya knitted her brows together. "This woman is cunning. She must have known that I deliberately did that to embarrass her, so she didn't want to give in. She played along to win the hearts of the people." "Yeah, if she had said that she did not ask you to book a six-star hotel, or told you to find a new place for dinner, the other employees would definitely be unhappy. She is very smart to have agreed to it as if nothing happened. She is not easy to deal with!"

Chapter 104

Selena plodded out of the company after the others had left, a sour expression on her face all the while. She only had 100,000 bucks with her, but the dinner and karaoke could easily cost her over 300,000. She felt the pinch on her. However, Selena had no other choice. Had she allowed Sonia to succeed, she would have a miserable time at the company in the future. Besides, even if it cost a lot of money, she was paid quite a hefty salary. As long as she drew her first salary, she would be lifted from the tight financial situation. She could not think of a better solution after mulling over the thought for a while, so she decided to call Fiona. Fane had taken out a million bucks before, after all, and there were roughly 800,000 with Fiona. She could only take some of it from Fiona first to settle the matter. "Ma..." Selena called out softly once Fiona answered the call. "Selena, how are you at work?" Fiona asked anxiously without waiting for Selena to talk more. "Selena, let me tell you that we have decided that it is best if you divorce Fane. The sooner the better. Perhaps you should take some time off tomorrow or the day after tomorrow to finalize the divorce papers. Otherwise, this hothead guy would cause us a lot of trouble..." Selena was speechless for a while. "Ma, don't tell me this. I won't divorce him. Even if he can’t fork out 30 million on Grandpa’s 70th birthday or offer us any gift, I’ll still stay with him!" "You... Why are you so disobedient? We had become like this today because you didn’t listen to your grandpa and us. If you had aborted the child, we wouldn’t have ended up like this. Why did I give birth to such an unfilial daughter? What a miserable life..." Fiona grumbled continuously on the other end of the phone. ... Selena was at a loss of words. As she did not want to dwell on the matter any longer, she decided to be straightforward. "I called you because there’s an emergency, Ma, and I need money. Can you transfer 300,000 to me now?" "300,000?" As soon as money was mentioned, Fiona's voice instantly rose by several octaves. "Why do you need so much money?” she sputtered. “Aren’t you working there to make money? What’s the money for? Don’t tell me that silly Fane hit someone’s luxury car with his electric scooter!" Selena was speechless

again; she was dumbfounded at her mother’s ridiculous imagination. "Ma, what nonsense are you talking about here?” she spoke, a bitter smile on her face. “Just transfer me the money. I need it really fast. It’s my first day at work and I’m appointed as the manager, so I’m taking the staff in my department out for a meal!" "Why do you need that much just for a meal? How many people are there in your department? Why do you need that much money? Don't you have 100,000 at hand? Isn't that enough?" "You must be hiding something from me, right? Fane must be in trouble again. Did someone ask him to pay up? Tell your mother honestly. What’s going on..." Fiona kept rambling on the other end of the line. Selena was so angry that she curtly replied, "Ma, can you just transfer it to me now? I’ll pay you back once I get paid. I’ll give you 100,000 more, alright? Just think of it like I’m borrowing it from you, okay?" "But how do I transfer it? Fane gave me cash, and I haven't deposited it in the bank yet. Besides, if you don't tell me exactly what you’re going to do with it, I won't give it to you!"

Chapter 105

Fiona was stubborn. The corners of Selena's mouth curled into a bitter smile. She bitterly hung up in disappointment. "Hey, Honey. What's the matter? You look like you’re in a very bad mood on your first day at work!" Coincidentally, Fane parked his electric scooter in front of her. He took out the ice cream he bought and gave it to Selena. "The weather is quite hot. It’s still early, so I just drove there and bought two ice creams!" Selena responded to Fane’s gentle smile with a sad one. She took the ice cream and lamented, “Hubby, I don’t know what to do. I’d just gotten into the company, and I fell for someone’s scheme. What disappointed me was that when I asked my mother for 300,000 and told her that I’d pay her back when I get her salary, she refused to lend it to me. She thought that you were in trouble and I wanted the money to pay up to someone for the trouble you caused." Fane felt distressed just by seeing Selena’s dull expression. He stepped forward and smiled faintly. "Honey, it's okay. If you need money,

just tell your husband. You need 300,000, right? I'll take you to the bank and cash out one million. I'll let you have it so you can feel at ease!" The moment he finished, however, his face went somber. His fists balled tightly. "Who dares to plot against you on your first day at work? I'll kill him! Motherf*cker... How dare he schemed against my woman? He's digging his own grave!" "Can you not do this? Do you want to solve every problem with your fists?" "And, actually, it's not a big deal. She's been a supervisor for many years, and perhaps she was eager to be promoted as a manager. Unfortunately, the vacancy was given to me." Again, Selena smiled bitterly. She had mixed feelings for Fane. She was mad at him for behaving like a brash man who wanted to solve everything with his fists. He even threatened to kill the person. What she loved about the guy, on the other hand, was his sincere care and love for her. She never lacked a sense of security. "In that case, I won't do anything with my fists. You said that you're short of 300,000. What's going on?" Fane asked. "I was careless. Sonia, the supervisor of our company, has been in the company's purchasing department for many years… Unexpectedly, she made a booking for a six-star hotel and karaoke after dinner. I thought that I should prepare at least 400,000 bucks. I have 100,000 on hand, so I asked my mother to give me 300,000 bucks. Who would've thought..." Selena confessed the details that happened between her and her mother to Fane. "Hey, if I had only known, I wouldn't have agreed to treat them just now," she continued. "It's a big deal if I'm embarrassed or they made it hard for me in the office in the future. Now, we can't fork out that much money, and I told them to meet me at the hotel's entrance, too. This is even more embarrassing." "Well, there's still karaoke after dinner," Fane replied. "I'm afraid one million bucks might not be enough. Since you've agreed to treat them and told those employees to go home and dress up, let's prepare two million for tonight. That Sonya is a motherf*cker. I think she wants to see you embarrassed about not having enough money." After much consideration, Fane was determined. "Let's go and cash out two million. We'll show them what's

money." "Two... Two million? Do you still have that much money on your card?" Selena gasped after hearing Fane. She thought he had emptied out his bonus last time. She did not expect him to have so much money on his card. "Honey, get on the scooter. Let's go get some money. Hold on tight to me!" Fane patted the seat of his electric scooter and smiled warmly. "Alright!" Selena's face flushed. She licked the ice cream she was holding by hand, and her heart was filled with sweetness and joy.

Chapter 106

Selena’s mouth curled up into a smile as she sat on Fane’s electric scooter. She had waited for five years for him to come back. He was the first to appear before her when she was going through the most difficult, helpless time of her life. With the sweet thoughts dancing in her mind, she held the ice cream with one hand and her free arm wrapped around Fane’s waist deliberately. Her blush seared through her cheeks. To hide that she was doing that deliberately, she coquettishly spoke, "Drive slowly. You’re scaring me!" Fane peeped down at her jade-like white hand; he felt a sense of happiness. He thought they were moving very slow already. Soon, the two arrived at a bank’s entrance. Fane then parked his scooter on the road shoulder. "Wifey, let's go there and buy a big duffel bag. Two million in cash is a lot. If you don't buy a big bag, I’m afraid you can't hold them!" Fane smiled and crossed the road together with Selena. "You… Are you really able to withdraw two million in cash?" Selena looked uneasy; she was not convinced. It seemed as though Fane might have contributed more than once in the army. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to be given three or four million as his bonus. "If I weren't so afraid of attracting too much to mention, I can take out a million for you!" He grinned cheekily at Selena. "A million? You must be joking!" Selena was not sure whether she should cry or laugh at his joke. This guy had gotten better and better in bragging. "Boss, I want to buy a bag!" Fane called out as they entered a small grocery store next to the bank. “Oh yeah, I want a big one!" The owner

of the grocery store was a middle-aged woman. After she studied both Fane and Selena, she stated, "You're buying it to keep clothes, aren't you? Are you planning to go to work? If you don't have many clothes, this should be enough." Fane frowned at the bag. "I have no idea how much is two million in cash," he spoke. "I don't think this is enough, so let's just get a larger one!" "Haha! Young man, do you need to brag when you buy this kind of bag? Young people nowadays are really humorous!" The middle-aged woman chuckled and turned to Selena. "Young lady, I want to tell you that a young man like him who likes to brag isn't very reliable. You have to think carefully. Getting married is a big decision to make!" Fane's face turned dark. Why did he think the woman was a little too nosy for her own good? Selena could not hold her laughter after she heard that. "Sister, it's too late. Our kid is already running around. Otherwise, I'd consider choosing a better husband!" Fane smirked when he heard the conversation. "Oh, I see. You sure you want to choose? Believe it or not, I'll spank you when we get home!" "Move along. Take this and go put some money in it. I'm older than you, but I've yet to get married. You said your kid is already running around, too. What have I done to deserve this humiliation in broad daylight?" The middle-aged woman seemed to be slightly over her thirties. She gave a large bag with floral patterns that workers often use to Fane. "Take this for your cash. I think this must be big enough!" "How much is it? Forget it, I'll give you a hundred. Keep the change to comfort your wounded heart!" Fane thought that the woman was funny, so he threw a hundred in cash to her before turning around with Selena and left the store. "You're really generous!" Selena did not know how to react. "I used to take Kylie out to pick up some trash. We couldn't even make a hundred a day!"

Chapter 107

Hearing that, Fane's heart quivered. He stopped at the bank's entrance and reached out to caress Selena's pretty face. "Don't worry. I'm back now, and you'll never suffer anymore. Anyway, your husband is now someone with

social status. I’m also earning 20 million bucks a month now, right?" Selena’s heart was filled with warmth, and a warm smile graced her lips. "It seems that Miss Tanya didn't lie to you. You really got the job!" "Yes. They had also arranged a room in the villa for me. I can live there if I want to, but I think it’s more comfortable to sleep in a room with my wife!" Fane smiled as he studied the woman before him. Through her, he realized that the world was so beautiful. He would be responsible for her life from then on! “What are you doing here with a big flowery bag? Are you going in there to pick up the mineral water bottle? Get out of the way!" A man who was wearing a gold necklace came over. After that, his eyes traveled down the fair legs under Selena's professional work skirt. He exclaimed lecherously. "Tsk, tsk! This woman is pretty good-looking. How come a trash-picker can find such a beautiful wife?" Fane gave the guy a cold stare and took Selena straight to the bank. "F*ck!" The man also walked into the bank with a wide smile. Inside, there were already people standing in lines. Many were sitting on chairs, waiting for their turn. "There are too many people here. I don't know how long it’ll take to withdraw the money!" Selena sighed helplessly at the sight of the big crowd. "It’ll be fast!" Fane reassured her. A female employee at the counter saw Fane coming. She went up to him with a huge grin and enthusiastically ushered, "Oh, handsome guy, you’re here again? Come, come, let's go into the VIP room. You and your girlfriend can take a rest there. I’ll be serving you immediately!" "Wait, he’s just a trash picker. Why are you serving someone like him? What's going on in your bank? You should be serving me instead. I’m here to take out a hundred thousand!" The fat guy wearing the gold necklace patted his beer belly and rose his chin slightly, looking all arrogant. "I’m the manager here. Even if you’re a VIP, it isn’t my responsibility as a manager to serve you!" The woman's face turned cold. "This brother is our VIP customer; a super VIP who withdrew a million the last time he was here!" "You weren’t that friendly when I came here the other day," Fane calmly interjected. "Hey, it was a misunderstanding. I didn't expect you to be so rich. Do you really want to

withdraw 1 million?" The female manager was flattered. "Dear customer, how much are you taking out this time?" she asked Fane respectfully. Fane looked at the bag he was holding. "This bag should be able to hold 2 million in cash, right? I'll withdraw 2 million bucks!" The man next to him was dumbfounded. Someone that could take out 2 million in cash must be a rich second generation. "Oh, but of course. Please come this way!" The female manager led the way. "By the way, I have to correct you. This isn't my girlfriend; she's my wife!" Fane was surprised at the treatment he received. Then, he introduced Selena to the manager.

Chapter 108

"Wife?" The manager was considered a beautiful woman with an attractive figure. To have heard Fane's clarification, she was stunned momentarily. She eyed Selena, green with envy. "This young lady is really lucky to have married such a handsome and rich man. You have nothing to worry about for the rest of your life!" She had hoped for a chance to have a relationship with Fane. After all, it was the first time she met such a wealthy man. The instant she met Selena, however, she felt inferior on the spot. The woman who stood before her was much better than her, appearance and temperance-wise. Once she led Fane and Selena into a private room, the manager went to make a cup of coffee for them both before helping them with their business. After a while, a large amount of cash was sent to Fane under the escort of two security guards. "Help me put them in this bag!" Fane said with a faint smile. The two security guards were flabbergasted at the sight of the flowery bag. Such an ordinary flowery bag many wage earners used was given to them to stash away the two million cash. Indeed, rich people were one-of-a-kind and hard to understand. "You really took two million out!" Selena tried lifting the flowery bag in front of her. It felt quite heavy. After the couple went out, they quickly hopped on the scooter and rode away to the hotel. "Are there really two million bucks in there?" Looking at the seemingly heavy bag on the electric scooter, the woman who sold the bag

to them opened her mouth wide in surprise. She wondered if what she saw was correct. She had seen the couple going into the bank next door with the empty bag, but when they appeared again, the bag was full and heavy. She ran to one of the security guards and asked, "Brother, were the two people who walked out just now carrying money in the bag?" The security guard rolled his eyes. "Are you talking nonsense? If they're not here to withdraw money, do you think they're here to collect trash?" "My goodness. It's unbelievable! I can't imagine a man who dressed so casually on his electric scooter is so rich!" The woman swallowed a big gulp of saliva. She began to doubt her judgment. Since it was still early, Fane took Selena somewhere for a drink. They spent some time together, chatting, before heading toward the hotel. At the plaza outside the hotel, more than 20 employees of the procurement department stood waiting. All the female employees put effort into dressing up as it was their first time patronizing such a high-end place. They were very excited; some were sexy, and some were dressed as though they were going to a ballroom party. "Why hasn't the manager arrived? I'm famished!" A female employee mumbled after waiting for a while. Felicia checked the time. She frowned and went up to Sonia. "Supervisor, how come Selena isn't here yet? Maybe she's not coming because she has no money?" Sonia was taken aback after hearing Felicia, but she was pleased. "Oh, well. I've booked this hotel to embarrass her. She must be terribly upset and has decided to stand us up!" "Hey, if this is the case, it'd be good for us!" Felicia laughed. "Everyone put effort into dressing up for dinner. They'd be pissed if they find out Selena stood us up." "Pfft! I thought she was so smart and rich. It turned out that she was just pulling our legs. Stupid woman!" "I'd love to see how she handles work in the future!" Sonya snorted coldly as her eyes gleamed with triumph. All of a sudden, a male employee spoke aloud: "Oh, she's here. The manager's here!"

Chapter 109

“Where?" "Which car is hers?” someone asked. “Why can’t I see it?" "The person behind the electric scooter looks like the manager!" The male employee pointed to the electric scooter slowly approaching the road shoulder. "My goodness, it's her! Who’s that man? Surely not her husband, right? There’s a flowery bag in front of her. Is her husband on his way to work and he dropped her off on his way?" Felicia was surprised at what she saw. "Could it be? Didn't you say that the manager's salary is one million a month? With such a high salary, why does her husband need to work?" A male employee frowned at her remark. "Hehe. You may not know but she’s the famous beauty, Selena Taylor. She was the one kicked out by the Taylor Family,” she added. “Her husband must’ve returned from the army!" "Let me tell you something. Do you know why she rides an electric scooter? It’s because she has no money. Some time ago, someone saw her with her daughter picking up trash to sell. Who knows how she landed this million-bucks-a-month job. Besides, isn't it at least one month away before she is paid the salary?" Felicia jeered and spilled out what she knew to the other employees. "It's impossible that she has no money. If she has no money, why would the manager invite us to a six-star hotel?" The male employee concluded after thinking for a while. "I believe the manager must be rich." "If she’s rich, why doesn't she buy a small car? Why is she riding an electric scooter?" Felicia was still not convinced. "Hey, what are you talking about? Anyway, it's the manager's treat today. It’s her business if she has money to pay or not. We just need to enjoy the night!" Sonia, who was standing aside, quipped. After Fane and Selena found a place to park their scooter, they walked over together. "Let me introduce everyone. He’s my husband, Fane! He just got off work, so he came to pick me up!" Selena joined the crowd, smiling happily. "I'm really sorry to have kept everyone waiting!" "Don’t worry, Manager. We just arrived not long ago!" a female employee replied cheerfully. Sonia smiled at Fane. "This is the manager’s husband. I heard that he used to be a food delivery guy, right? It was only then he was enlisted on behalf of Young Master Taylor, right?" Selena's face darkened, but she

managed to force a polite smile. "Wow, Supervisor, you do know a lot of things!" "Hehe. I do know a lot of things. I've also heard that our manager used to pick up trash a few days ago. How come you have suddenly become our manager? What an incredible change!" Sonia mocked. "You two are such a good match!" "Manager, she meant it the derogatory way, not the other way around!" Felicia stepped forward and reminded Selena. "Is it really? Oh, I'm such a fool. I thought it was a nice way to praise people. I've made a fool out of myself for not learning enough!" Sonia said with a smile. "Pretty girl, did you brush your teeth today?" Fane rebutted coldly. "Sure I did. Why?" "Then why is your mouth so smelly?"

Chapter 110

"You… Why did you say that to me? What's the matter with you? How low of you to do that!" Sonia was so angry that her chest was heaving. She did not expect a comeback from Fane. She was a distant relative of the Drake Family. Everyone in the company knew that. That was the reason why no one in the company dared to offend her. Even the previous manager had to give her face and asked her opinions for many decisions. In her opinion, Fane was just a lousy soldier, so he was not qualified to talk to her like that. "Oh, sorry, I'm just like you. I didn't study much, and I'm just a boorish man. I thought I was praising you!" Fane gave an insouciant shrug as he defended himself. Many employees chuckled when they heard their exchange. That guy was smart and witty with his words. "You..." Sonia was so angry that her face turned blue, yet she was at a loss of words to retaliate. She could only cross her arms across her chest and glanced at the bag in Fane's hand. "Why do you bring such an ugly bag if you're here to eat? This is a six-star hotel, the best hotel in Middle Province. Don't you feel ashamed to go in like this?" Fane looked down at the bag in his hand. "If it's embarrassing to carry such a large sack of cash, wouldn't it be even more embarrassing if you walk in empty-handed?" "My goodness. Is this for real? Is it all cash in there?" A male employee was wide-eyed upon hearing Fane.

Everyone gasped. If it was cash in the bag, would it be two million worth of cash in the bag? What a haughty look! That was an act of a tycoon. "Hehe… He was right. It's all money in here!" Sonia mocked. "If I'm not wrong, it's the money from gathering trash you two had done before. Do you plan to go sell it after dinner? If that's the case, I'm convinced that it's money. Maybe ten or twenty bucks worth?" Sonia paused before turning to Selena. "Manager, your husband is really good at cracking jokes!" she contemptuously added. Selena wore a smug look. "Supervisor, I'm sorry to disappoint you, but there's real money in my husband's bag," she retorted. "We had nothing to carry the cash with, so we bought a bag. We'll use the leftover money to play a game with everyone later!" "No way. Your husband is a soldier! How can he be rich?" Sonia said dubiously. She studied the bag carefully and tried to trace the outline of the contents. The outline looked neat and did not resemble bottles or cans. "A soldier can't have money? You've got long hair, but you're surely short of knowledge!" Fane smiled as he glanced around at the crowd. "Let's go in first. Which private room did you book? Have you ordered the dishes?" "The private room isn't expensive; the minimum spending is only 200,000. Mr. Fane, do you think it's appropriate?" Sonia deliberately increased her tone when she mentioned the price range. She had her apricot eyes locked on Fane's face, not wanting to miss his expression. To her disappointment, Fane was unruffled. "It's okay! Let's go!" Fane slung the bag over his shoulder and led the way into the hotel. "Let's go!" Selena thought it was funny how Fane walked. He looked like a farmworker who was on his way to work. Unexpectedly, just as Fane was about to step into the hotel, two security officers came right up to him.

Chapter 111

"Mister, are you looking for someone?" One of the guards asked with a strange expression. "Mister, this is the Dynasty Hotel, the best hotel in Middle Province. Only the noble and rich patronize this place!" The other

security guard was not as polite. "If you're here to pick up trash, then I'm afraid it won't work. This isn't the place to do that!" Fane burst out laughing. "How ridiculous! I'm here for dinner, of course!" Then, his face instantly went dark. "Get out of my way!" His being emitted a terrifying aura, and the two security guards were scared witless. They stumbled several steps backward. "Haha! Can you even afford to dine here?" A man, who happened to be passing by, asked scornfully. "Poor and rude are the words for people like you!" After throwing the remark, the rich second generation turned to the two security guards and said, "You two, it's better to send him away. People with status like us don't want to dine with such a lowly person. He even came in with a woven bag! Wouldn't it be degrading for the hotel to let him in?" The two security guards were petrified by Fane. However, after hearing from the man, they felt that he made sense. Therefore, one of them stepped forward and said, "Mister, how about you go somewhere else? Your clothes are indeed—" "What is it about my clothes? Believe it or not, I'll whack you if you keep talking nonsense!" Fane's face sank. "Tsk. He truly is a dangerous and uncultured person!" scoffed the man. "Do you think people who can afford to run this hotel are afraid of you? Brat, if you dare to make a scene here today, you'll be in trouble!" Selena knew Fane had a bad temper. She was afraid that he would start a fight, so she immediately pulled Fane aside. "Forget it, don't fight with them!" Selena then turned to the two security guards. "You two, we've booked a private room," she stated. "We made a booking for the private room 508! I'm a manager of the Drake Dynasty Real Estate under the Drake Group! Don't worry. We have money to dine here!" As soon as the rich second generation heard her, he gasped in awe. "You...are you from the Drake Dynasty Real Estate? A manager? Which department are you from?" The rich second generation was a young master from a third-class aristocratic family similar to the Taylor Family. He happened to be in the building materials business. He was excited after hearing Selena's introduction. "What's wrong? I'm from the procurement department," Selena answered. The other party's eyes lit up

even brighter. "I heard that Drake Dynasty Real Estate took up a piece of land in South City and is planning to build a South City residential community. That happens to be a high-end residential area, right?" "You're well informed!" Selena answered with a light chuckle. "Does this have anything to do with us going in for dinner, though?" she added. "Excuse me, gentleman, but we're going in for dinner!" "Of course it matters!" The man was in ecstasy. He took out his business card in a hurry. "I'm from Union Building Materials. I'm the young master of the Logan Family. Our family is in the building materials business. Beautiful manager, please take my business card. I'll pay for your meal tonight!"

Chapter 112

"Really? That's great. We've booked a private room with minimum spending of 200,000 bucks. Are you sure you want to pay for our dinner? In case we order more dishes, the dinner might cost around 300,000 to 400,000!" A female employee's eyes lit up when she overheard the conversation. She stepped forward and took the man's business card eagerly. "Are you Sean Logan, the Assistant General Manager?" "Yes!" he chuckled shortly. "My father is worried that I might not be able to handle the company on my own. I'm appointed as the assistant general manager while he's the general manager!" Sean cracked a self-deprecating joke and asked, "By the way, who's this beautiful manager?" "Oh, this is our new manager, Selena Taylor!" the female employee replied casually. "Manager, someone wants to treat us to dinner. Why don't you two exchange name cards?" Another male employee was equally over the moon. Why would they let go of such a big offer? "That's right. We should exchange business cards. That's good etiquette to practice!" Sean was stoked as he nodded profusely. Sonia was pleased to see the unfolding event before her. Sean was obviously trying to please Selena. After all, Selena was the sole decision-maker of procuring building materials. As a supervisor, Sonia could not make such a decision. Had Selena accepted his kindness, it would tantamount to owing him a

favor. Sean would probably visit them in the office within two days to discuss how they could strike a deal. As the saying went, ‘Who receives the gifts, sells his liberty’, Selena would probably agree to procure building materials from him. Would that constitute bribery? Sonia, then, took out her mobile phone secretly and then clicked on her camera app to record the situation. She could not wait to show the video to their general manager. It would be compelling evidence. Selena would lose her influence in the company if the scandal was exposed. However, to her surprise, Selena smiled indifferently at Sean. "Excuse me, Young Master Logan, but this is our company's dinner. I said I was going to treat them, so there’s no need to offer for us! Besides, you don't have to give me a business card. You can talk to our company or our employees for work matters, and they’ll inform me!" Sean's hand stopped in mid-air, his business card still between his fingers. He wore an awkward smile on his face. "Manager Taylor, I was just being friendly. It's got to be fate that we meet here today. It’s no big deal to pay for your meal, right?" Sean explained himself desperately. "I'm sorry, but I don't like to owe another person favors!" Selena decided she would say no more after that and walked right through the door into the hotel. The two security guards were completely dumbfounded. If they were someone that the rich second generation wanted to please, they would probably be able to afford to have dinner there, so they dared not stop Fane and the others. Instead, they made way for the rest to enter the hotel. On the other hand, Sonia was speechless once more. She had planned to collect evidence of Selena accepting bribery, but she did not expect to see her being so righteous. The superiors might praise her if they found out about her righteous attitude. She put her phone away sullenly and walked into the hotel. Sean sighed as he observed the people who had already walked in. "Why didn’t this new manager take my bait?"

Chapter 113

It did not take long for his eyes to brighten up again. He cried out excitedly as a light bulb went off in his head. "Oh yeah... Why was I so stupid? There are so many people around, and her employees are here as well. How could she accept such a grandiose benefit? Had someone reported her to the management, she'd be doomed even if the benefit isn't given to her directly!" He smiled to himself after figuring out the situation. "It seems that I'll have to ask her out alone for business discussion someday. I'll then give her a bank card secretly, so everyone wouldn't know. I'm sure she'll accept it. Who in their right mind would turn money down!" Selena and others soon arrived at a large private room. Fane casually dropped the bag at a corner before he sat down next to Selena. Selena, who knew that Fane had two million with him, was obviously confident about paying for the meal. She stood up and smiled at everyone. "You can order whatever you want to eat," she spoke aloud. "The minimum spending in this private room is 200,000 bucks. Don't order less than that for the dishes and wine, or you'll lose out!" "Manager, rest assured. We won't let it go to waste!" A female employee, the most vigorous among them all, laughed out loud. "Well, let's stick to the price planned. Although the manager's salary is quite high at a million per month, she had to work hard for it. Surely it's not easy, right?" "Yes, the manager has only started working and she hasn't got her salary yet, yet she invited us to dinner above all things. Where else can we find such a good manager!" Another male employee chimed in with a smile. Sonia and Felicia glanced at each other, both with an embarrassed expression. They wanted to taint the relationship between Selena and the employees, but they had made all the employees like the new manager even more. 'I don't believe she has money to treat us to dinner!' Unconvinced, Sonia gritted her teeth. She believed Selena was just trying to save her face. After everyone had placed their orders, she ordered some of the most expensive dishes, which made her feel more comfortable. 'Pfft! I think these dishes and wines will add up to almost 400,000 bucks. I still don't believe that she has that amount of money!' she rambled internally. Sonia thought to herself. With a grin on

her face, she said, "Everyone, let’s drink up. Today is our manager’s first day at work. Let’s celebrate. This wine isn’t cheap, and it’s more than ten thousand bucks per bottle. I’ve ordered only ten bottles." "Supervisor, don’t you think this is too expensive? Let's just follow the minimum spending mark. Otherwise, this meal may be too expensive!" A female employee frowned and thought that the supervisor was selfish and did not seem to be bothered about Selena at all. Was she not afraid that Selena will make it hard on her in the future at work? "Yes, Supervisor, you’re really wrong here. It's not your own money, so you don't feel the pinch, do you? Why don’t you order cheaper wines but more bottles to share?" Another male employee, too, was unimpressed. Sonia was obviously not happy that Selena got to become a manager as soon as she joined the company, so she was obviously plotting for revenge. Selena had just started working and she had not been paid her salary, yet she invited them to have a luxurious meal in such a classy hotel. Everyone was very grateful except Sonia, who was showing her dissatisfaction. It was selfish of her to have ordered so many dishes and wine. Sonia almost passed out. She had never expected the person named Ben Blake—the unimpressed employee—to talk to a supervisor like that. He never had the courage to voice out his opinion before. She pulled a long face and defended herself, "It was the manager who asked us to order as we like. The manager said nothing. Why do you sound like you’ve lost a lot of money? You haven’t even started drinking, yet you’re behaving like you’re in a daze and don’t know any better on what to say?" "It's alright. She has ordered the dishes anyway, so eat up and drink up, everybody. Everyone should have fun!" Selena had cleverly resolved the awkwardness. "That is, we should believe that there is money in the manager's husband's bag! Don’t you think that all these are so expensive?" Sonia looked at the woven bag in the corner strangely.

Chapter 114

"Yes, everyone should just enjoy the night. What can we poor people worry about for our manager!" Felicia nodded and then asked Fane, "By the way, what do you do, Fane? Why are you so rich? Tell us about it!" "I'm a bodyguard!" Fane smiled faintly and replied nonchalantly. "Bodyguard?" Sonia burst out laughing when she heard that. "Haha! You can always claim to be a bodyguard to make it sound better while in truth, you're just a petty security guard. Well, to put it in another way, you're just watching the door! I guess you're only being paid a few thousand bucks a month, yes? Now that your wife is earning one million a month, do you feel inferior?" To this, Fane burst out laughing. "Miss Neal, are you confused between a security guard and bodyguard?" he spoke. "Security guards guard the door whereas I'm a real bodyguard!" "Moreover, I took up this job because I don't want my wife to feel like I'm not working," he added. "Otherwise, I wouldn't be bothered to go for this job!" "You're talking too much for a supposed bodyguard. Your mentality is good. Oh, well… If you must make it sound better, bodyguard it is!" "I know that many of you who retired from the army ended up working as bodyguards. Can you make ten thousand bucks a month? Do you have a five-figure salary?" Sonia smiled as though they were chatting normally, but her words were thorn-filled. "True, your wife is earning a seven-figure salary. If you have a five-figure figure salary, even if it's 80 or 90 thousand a month, it feels no different from living off your wife, right? Besides, bodyguards don't earn that much!" Felicia added. "20 million bucks a month. I don't know how many digits there are, but it should be eight digits, right? I'm not good at math, so I don't know much!" Fane picked up the wine glass slowly and took a sip. "My God! 20 million bucks a month?" An employee suddenly shouted in surprise. "Your salary is too high!" "This is the first time I've heard of such a high salary!" commented another employee. "Impossible!" "Don't brag about it," she spoke as she dismissed the hype. "As far as I know, bodyguards in the Middle Province aren't paid as high as the others. The bodyguards who enjoyed the highest salary worked for the Drake Family. I'm their distant relative, so I know it

well. The best Drake Family’s head of commander was only paid one or two million a month!" Sonia then turned to Selena and sneered, "Manager, before your husband brags next time, I suggest that he better find out about the salary of a bodyguard first. It's too outrageous and shameful to talk like that!" "Supervisor, my husband's salary is indeed 20 million bucks a month. This is what Second Young Miss agreed personally. Although I feel that the salary is too high, I can't refuse it if she offered such a high salary, right?” Selena smiled bitterly. It felt so surreal when she talked about Fane’s salary. Perhaps she should have waited for a month at the salary she received to make sure the payment would be finalized. Sonia clicked her tongue. “I can’t believe that your husband is lacking a cultural background, Manager. He just doesn’t stop bragging. You’re a high-achieving student and a manager of the Drake Dynasty Real Estate Company. It's bad that you even resorted to lying to cover up for your husband!" Sonia smiled and desperately added, "I've been to the Drake residence several times. I’ve seen all the bodyguards there, except for those few powerful guardians who I’ve never seen all my life. I've seen them all but I’ve never noticed your husband!" "Oh, I have only just started the first day at work today. It’s normal if you haven't seen me!" Fane chirped. “Besides, you and I aren’t people of the same level. It doesn't matter if you have seen me or not!"

Chapter 115

Fane maintained his indifferent expression. He was tirelessly serving Selena her favorite dish. The other employees were all wide-eyed because it did not look like Fane was lying. At th4e same time, everyone knew Sonia was related to the Drake family. Otherwise, based on Sonia's ability, it would be difficult for her to stay in this position for years. "Hehe… It doesn't matter, because I still think you’re lying! It's okay if the salary is low, we won't laugh at you. After all, you are our manager's husband, aren’t you? If the manager doesn't mind, we won't mind!" Sonia mocked, again. "You’re right, my wife doesn't mind my salary. Why are you talking so much?" Fane was

a little upset. He was fine if others ridiculed him but they had always turned their battle towards Selena. Selena had been through a lot for five years for him; he wanted his wife to feel wronged no more. He pointed at the dishes on the table in front of him. "You've ordered a lot of dishes, yet they can't even stop you from babbling?" "You—" Sonia stood up with anger. How she wished she could walk over and slap Fane immediately. However, Fane was not working under her. He was Selena's husband, and Selena was her direct boss. "Haha! Why don't you prove it to me that you have the ability? Otherwise, you're just lying!" Finally, Sonia suppressed the anger in her heart and sat back on the chair. "What will you do if I could prove it? Kneel down and apologize to me?" Fane commented when he saw the opponent's unconvinced look. "Yes. You can prove it to me and let me see what kind of bodyguard can earn 20 million bucks a month!" Sonia was unhappy in the beginning, but she was already starting to feel so irritated by Fane. She stood up again and crossed her arms over her chest. "I'll give you ten minutes. If you can't prove that your monthly salary is 20 million, what should I do about it?" Fane, carefully thinking, then replied, "How about I let you slap my face?" "Yes, I'm looking forward to it!" Sonia agreed right away and watched the time. "Then it's time I'll show you now!" As she remembered something, she then turned to Selena. "By the way, you're the manager. This is a personal bet between your husband and I, so you shouldn't embarrass me in the future because of this. After all, it has nothing to do with work!" "Hehe. Don't worry, I won't get you in trouble because of this kind of thing!" Selena smiled. Pompous Sonia did not give face to the manager at all. Besides, Selena would be footing her bill that night. It was exhilarating to wait and watch. "That's good. We're waiting for a good show!" Sonia smiled confidently.

Chapter 116

Fane took another sip of the wine, slowly. "I've only given you ten minutes. It's already a minute!" Sonia looked at the time again. A smile on his face,

Fane pulled out his phone and dialed the number Tanya gave to him this afternoon. He put the phone on loudspeaker mode. An employee glanced at the number and exclaimed loudly. “He’s calling Miss Tanya!” The call was soon answered. On the other end of the phone was heard the voice of Tanya. “Fane? Has something happened? Why did you think of calling me tonight?” “Nothing happened, Miss Tanya, I just want to confirm something. Is my pay 20 million per month?” A small smile appeared on Fane’s face and he sipped the wine once more. “Yes. What’s the matter? You don’t think it’s too little, do you?” Tanya was obviously a little puzzled on the other end of the line. “Don’t worry. During New Year, my grandpa said that we won’t miss out on your 20 million bonus. It should be enough if you don’t squander them, right?” she added. Everybody else was completely shocked by Tanya’s negotiating tone. She not only sounded unassertive, but she has also asked Fane if the amount given was too little. My lord, how was this the way and the tone of speaking to a bodyguard? “Oh, it’s not too little. I just wanted to make sure. Sorry for disturbing you!” Fane gently tapped on his phone screen, hung up the call, and raised his head to look at Sonia. “My precious Miss Neal, this is Miss Tanya’s voice, am I right? It’s 20 million, am I correct?” Embarrassment was written across her face. Her head was buzzing loudly. A bodyguard had a salary of 20 million a month? What was wrong with this Drake family? “Yes. It’s 20 million. I didn’t expect your salary to be so high!” Sonia squeezed a smile, awkwardly so. Her voice trembled. As she looked at the glass before her, she immediately poured a full glass of red wine and lifted it. “My apologies, Fane. I underestimated you. For that, I’ll drink this glass as punishment!” she said to Fane. Sonia downed the wine in an instant, not waiting for Fane’s response. Felicia applauded from the side and echoed, “Miss Neal sure can hold her liquor well!” “Haha! I’m not sure if you could hold your liquor well, but I surely remember that you’d kneel before me and apologize. You didn’t forget about that, did you?” Fane spoke, and his lips curved into a smirk. “Oh, our pretty boy. Miss Neal was just joking with you, so don’t

take it seriously. Besides, she's punished herself with all that wine. Why bother with a woman?" As she sensed the atmosphere had turned sour, Felicia instantly tried damage control by laughing it off. However, Fane did not buy her effort. "Don't use gender as a shield. When she was despising me a moment ago, she did not say that she's a woman. C'mon, cough it up. If you can't afford to lose, don't bet with anyone next time!" "You…" Sonia gritted her teeth; she was so angry that she almost passed out. With so many employees in the scene, she would not be able to raise her head high up before others for the rest of her life if she knelt before Fane. Moreover, how many people would talk about her behind her back? Awkwardness blanketed the employees. Wordlessly, they looked at one another. No one stood up to defend Sonia, all because Sonia often abused her authority to bully them in the workplace. The thought that she was above everyone else was ingrained in her mind. Of course, Felicia—who always fought hard to please her—was excluded from the list. Selena finally breathed a sigh of relief after she was avenged. "Fane, let's not go deep into it. I invited everyone to dinner tonight, and then to karaoke. Let's stop before everything gets worse. If you really make a girl kneel before you, it won't make a good image of you as well." Fane finally gave in after his wife's plea. He waved his hand. "Fine. I, Fane Woods, wouldn't usually let things go, even if the God of War appears before me. However, I'm going to let it pass just because my wife asked for it." Selena's face immediately turned red. Fane was Kylie's father, and she really did not want her daughter to grow up without a father, so she had hoped for his return from the war. In fact, Fane and Selena were not close at all. If it were not for the kid, they would not be together. However, Fane treated her and her daughter well for the past few days. The sense of security that Fane gave them made her feel more and more that her five years of waiting for him to return was worthwhile.

Chapter 117

A spur of the moment had gotten her a fine man. “Thank you. I’ll drink two more glasses as an apology.” Embarrassment did not leave her face. She forced a smile, poured herself two glasses of wine, and gulped them down. “C’mon guys, let’s continue our feast! After this, we’ll go to karaoke in a bit. I don’t really like singing, though, so I’ll just listen to everyone sing!” Fane smiled and spoke courteously. Only then did the others continue to feast on food and wine. Time went by very quickly, and it was already half-past eight in the evening. It was finally time to pay the dinner bill. “Sir, this is your bill: 363,207 bucks in total!” One of the two good-looking waitresses, who had been serving everyone that evening, walked over to Fane with a professional smile on her face. “Sir, do you prefer to pay with cash or credit card?” she gently inquired. Although the waitress knew generally customers would prefer to pay with a card, she followed the old routine and asked the question anyway. “Cash, please.” Everyone stopped dead in their tracks when Fane pointed at the woven bag in the corner. “Cash? In that woven bag?” The good-looking waitress was taken aback. This was the first time she met a customer like Fane. Paid in cash? For a bill of more than 300,000 bucks? The cash was in that bag, too? “It’s over 360,000, right? Take 370,000 as payment for the bill, and the change will be a tip for you both!” Fane stood up and stretched his body. “Th—thank you, Sir!” The waitress immediately beckoned to the other waitress. The other waitress brought a tray over, and the two brought the bag before Fane. They unzipped the bag before him. Zip! The woven bag was opened. What they found within were stacks of banknotes. “Oh, my lord! It’s real money!” “It’s around two million here. This is the first time I’ve seen so much cash!” “This is beyond rich! I thought Miss Taylor has good pay, but her husband’s is unexpectedly higher!” “Ah! How I wish I have such a good husband. I won’t have to worry about anything all my life!” “Bah! Are you as charming as Miss Taylor? Stop dreaming!” This bag of banknotes gave rise to so much discussion among the employees in the scene. On the side, Sonia’s and Felicia’s face went dark and gloomy. Sonia, especially, who had thought a

lot about whether Fane had the money to pay the bill. Had he not have had that amount, he would have been a laughingstock. Little did she know, the woven bag that he carried was filled with stacks of cash. “Thank you for the tip, Sir!” The two good-looking waitresses were on cloud nine, too. Each of them could get more than three thousand tips after they counted 370,000 for the bill. “Let’s sing! Where’s the karaoke? Have you made the reservation?” Fane waved his hand and asked.

Chapter 118

Not long after, everyone arrived at a luxurious business club. They were then led into an opulent VIP room. The consumption here was not expensive, but with so many people here together, it would cost about ten hundred thousand to two hundred thousand bucks. It might be even more. Of course, Sonia would not doubt Fane’s ability to pay the bill anymore. That huge woven bag of cash nearly blinded her tonight. They ordered many signature dishes, and they started to eat and drink. After much persuasion and coaxing, Selena went up the stage and sang two songs. Her voice was lovely. “Waiter! Check, please!” When it was about time, Fane paid for the bill without waiting; it was two hundred and twenty thousand bucks in total. He made the waiter take two hundred and thirty thousand for the bill, and the change would be the waiter’s tip. Fane walked out of the VIP room with the remaining one million four hundred thousand in his bag, ready to go home. Sonia and Felicia were sour the whole time. They could only accompany everyone to drink and sing as they were embarrassed to leave the place. Their hearts were truly unsatisfied. As they walked into the hallway, however, a racily dressed up woman bolted out from one of the VIP rooms. Her hair was a total mess, and horror was practically seeping through her face! “Help! Help me!” The woman yelled, but she was then pulled by a few men who rushed out of the same room to chase after her. “Damn, aren’t you shameless?” One of the men, with a blue dragon tattooed on his arm, slapped the woman harshly. “What are you yelling for? Didn’t

I pay you?" "Damn right. Why the hell do you pretend to be innocent when you chose to work here?" The other man with yellow hair sneered. "Look at what you're wearing! You're definitely a hooker! What are you pretending for, then? Is the money not enough?" He touched the woman on the floor, his eyes fiery. "Come here. I'll give you a few thousands more. Haha!" "Sir, don't! Please don't! I beg you. Please let me go! I'm only here to accompany the customer to drink, and I don't provide any other services!" the woman begged with terror in her trembling voice. "If you need the service, we have it here as well! Let me introduce a few to you. They're all professional, and you'll be satisfied!" "Bah! Sorry. Not. Sorry. I only want you today!" The tattooed man spat on the ground. "Take the woman in!" he ordered his men. "Stop pretending to be innocent when you work in such a place! Still, I like your resistance. Pull her into the room and let me enjoy her!" The situation before Fane made him stop dead in his tracks. His face sank. "Let's go. These are all clans and gangsters. We can't afford to offend them." Selena knew Fane was triggered just by looking at his face, but the other party won by numbers. There were four or five men out here; there must be more men in the room. It would be fighting a losing battle. "Hehe! You want to play superhero?" Sonia smiled coldly. "Oh right, I almost forgot! You're a bodyguard! A bodyguard of twenty million bucks a month, too. You should be able to deal with these rubbish bags, right? Otherwise, it'd be such a shame to the Drake Family. A bodyguard with twenty million a month but couldn't deal with these b*stards. Money well spent, huh?" "Fane, don't listen to her. A local gangster is always above the law. Such a situation happens every day! We better not intervene in this matter to offend them." A male employee—afraid of Fane interposing himself in this affair—stepped forward to remind Fane. "Help me, please help me!" Just when the woman was about to be forcibly pulled away, she cried pleadingly to Fane. She had noticed Fane's gaze. Without any hesitation, Fane put down the bag in his hand on the ground and looked at his wife with a firm expression. "Selena, I'm a veteran, and I want to live a peaceful life. But

since I, Fane Woods, have seen this, I can't just ignore it." Selena glanced at the helpless eyes of the woman. "Alright then..." Selena gave in. "Be careful!" "Don't worry!" Fane assured her.

Chapter 119

Fane only walked over after he had gotten Selena's permission. "This is…" Several male employees in the scene stared at each other hesitantly. "Wow, you really want to get ahead, huh?" Sonia was practically rejoicing internally at the sight before her. "Miss Taylor, are you sure your dear hubby is going to be alright? It's not just one or two men there." Sonia prayed so hard that Fane would be beaten to death by the gang. This brat did not show any respect to her at all; he even made her look terrible in front of everyone. "I believe in him!" Selena smiled indifferently. When Fane pummeled Neil's underlings black and blue earlier this noon, her confidence in him was amplified. "What's your problem, little punk? Trying to be a hero now, huh?" Two of the men walked up to Fane when they saw him approaching them. "The lady has said she's only here to drink with the customer, not to sleep with them. Didn't you hear her clearly?" chastised Fane. "Let her go. Otherwise, I'll make you understand the true meaning of regret." "Wow, aren't you talking big? Do you know who we are?" snapped one of the men, arrogance written all over his face. "We are Master Howard's men. Picking a fight against us is like choosing to fight against Master Howard!" "Little brat, our boss fancy this woman here. Besides, it's not that we didn't pay her. What's wrong with you?" the other man chimed in. "Also, she is dressed inappropriately to drink with us and pretends to be a pure and innocent girl. It's her fault!" Bam! Fane instantly swung his leg and gave each of them a roundhouse kick; it sent the man flying. Puff! The two were slammed heavily on the ground and immediately tasted blood rushing from their nose. "Since you're not letting the lady go, you've forced my hand into this!" "I don't care which master you're serving. In Middle Province, if you offend me, you will kneel!" Fane's face was icy cold as though he was from

the underworld. His all too powerful aura instantly made the temperature in the hallway drop several degrees. Those darkened eyes of his were like the king of the jungle; it carried a noble aura that no one could go against. “What the f*ck! Are you digging your own grave?” The tattooed guy loosened his grip on the woman and took out a knife from his back pocket. He stretched his body and walked toward Fane with a savage expression as though he was ready to slaughter Fane. He stepped forward, aiming for Fane’s abdomen. “Ughh!” In the next second, Fane firmly grasped the tattooed guy’s arm, and the knife in his hand dropped to the ground. The fiery pain shot up his arm and all the way to his head. His face was distorted in great pain. “Boss!” The other man who was holding onto the woman immediately loosened his grip as well. He immediately opened the VIP room and yelled, “Guys, it’s bad! Our boss has been beaten up! Everyone, come out now! This brat is really asking for a dance with death.” “What the hell? How dare he beat our boss! He doesn’t want to live anymore, that’s for sure!” “The f*ck! Who did it? Rather bold on his part! Our boss is one of Master Howard’s men!” Suddenly, the rest of the gang rushed out of the VIP room, all equally enraged.

Chapter 120

The employees from the procurement department sighed out of relief when they watched Fane finishing three men with just a few punches. It was truly undeniable that Fane possessed the ability to be the Drakes’ bodyguard. Dozens of men sprinted out of the VIP room right after one of them shouted toward the room. “Oh my goodness! There are dozens of them!” Sonia and the others were stupefied by the situation. They stumbled back a few steps, afraid of getting hurt once the war began. “Thank you, Sir! I just can’t thank you enough!” The woman immediately hid behind Fane after the men no longer had a hold on her. “But they have the numbers,” she continued worriedly. “Sir, w—what are you going to do?” Fane gave her a dry smile. “Just stand behind me. Don’t worry about me; I am Fane Woods. Even if

the King of all Gods is here, he wouldn't dare to play me for a fool!" A foot came up from the ground and kicked the tattooed man at his abdomen. Fane threw the tattooed man a kick that sent him backward, and it knocked down several men behind the man who rushed toward Fane. "Dang it! Take him down!" Somebody shouted, and all of the sudden, Fane was surrounded by a group of men. Bam! Pow! Whomp! In a blink of an eye, those people were sprawled on the ground as they wailed in agony. They were thrown before they could touch a single strand of Fane's hair. People from other VIP rooms came out quietly after they heard the sound of fighting, and they peeped at the battle. "Jesus Christ! Isn't he too strong? It was only one against dozens!" "Yeah! Who is he? That was absolutely thrilling!" One member of the crowd could not help but exclaim excitedly. One could only witness such scenes on television. "He's so screwed. The door's broken. This KTV is not for those ordinary people. I heard that the chairperson in that room is very powerful!" "Miss Taylor, are we going to compensate for this broken door?" an employee of the procurement team said to Selena when these thoughts crossed his mind. "What are you so afraid of? Miss Taylor's husband is freaking rich. Look at the woven bag of his; there's more than one million in there!" another female employee interrupted with an arrogant expression. There was nothing but admiration for Fane shown in her eyes. A man like Fane was a real man. It was no surprise that the most exquisite woman in the Middle Province chose to marry him. "Which b*stard was it? How dare you make trouble with us! Are you deliberately finding your way to hell?" Several men with suits—who watched over this club—walked over to the disturbance. The man who led the marching army was the manager of this KTV club. The tattooed man hideously colored black and purple covered his face. He immediately got up and went toward the manager. "Finally you're here, Mr. Meyer! I came here to spend and have fun, but what happened in the end? We spent so much and all we got are wounds and bruises! Moreover, these bruises were given by a rat from I-don't-know where!" he said aggrievedly. "You have to do something about it!" Fane

frowned as he looked at the situation. It seemed like this little tattooed brat was acquainted with Mr. Meyer. That was why they dared to be such a bully here. “It’s only him? He knocked all of you down single-handedly? Impossible.” Mr. Meyer’s brows furrowed, and he was somewhat surprised when he heard the words. “You’re Mr. Meyer, the manager of this club, right?” Selena interrupted. “This group of people was looking for trouble in your place. The girl over there was only here to drink with them, but that guy has to force the girl to sleep with him. The situation was really disturbing, so my husband helped you to teach them a lesson!” Selena spoke as she pointed at the woman and then the tattooed man.

Chapter 121

Selena took two steps forward and explained the situation to Mr. Meyer. “She’s right, Mr. Meyer! These people are making a deliberate ruckus. You have to do something about it!” Some procurement staff came forward to justify and echoed. “Mr. Meyer, I’m only here to drink with customers. When you were recruiting, you said that it’d be a part-time job of three hundred bucks per day! I don’t want to sell my body!” The woman sobbed like a dying banshee. She cried in genuine pain. “B—but they—” Mr. Meyer did the unthinkable; a soundly slap was delivered before she could finish her words. “Just like a block of wood!” “What do you mean, Mr. Meyer?” Selena scowled, anger stirred within her. Mr. Meye laughed. “What’s the matter with you people? This is our company's internal affair!” Mr. Meyer retorted. “Besides, shouldn’t you already know what’s going to happen when you come here to work? Moreover, they’re our regular VIP customers! It’s not like they didn’t pay you up. Thousands and thousands will be given to you. So what if you sleep with them just for a day or two?” Mr. Meyer sneered in an arrogant tone and cast a piercing glare at Selena. “You broke our door into pieces and beat our VIP guests into bloody pulps. Now say it: what should I do?” he rebuked. “Such a shameless snot.” Selena gritted her teeth with anger, and her expression indicated her utter exasperation. This

was her first time meeting such a repugnant b*stard. “She’s your staff. That’s what you told her when you were recruiting, and no sleeping with guests was required! You’re now committing a crime…” “Blah-blah. What a chatty b*tch.” Mr. Meyer shot her a hateful stare. “This is your fault. We’re at our place, while you came here and hurt our valued guests! Just pay us 10 million for the loss!” “What? 10 million?!” The employees of the Drake Dynasty Real Estate took a long deep breath at the amount. There were not many broken artifacts; only a door and a few vases by the door. They did not expect the other party to ask for 10 million! “You... This is a complete extortion. Moreover, these men started the war first! If the loss has been paid, they should be the ones to pay! Why ask us?” Selena tried to reason with them. She could almost feel her blood boiling in her veins. “I’m sorry. I’m so sorry, everyone! I got you involved! This is my fault! I’m so sorry!” The woman could hold the tears no longer. Tears like waterfall gushed down her cheeks. She cried out as though the whole world had collapsed. “It’s all my fault! It’s all on me! I dragged you down to hell with me!” Sonia and Felicia exchanged their glances, and it was as though sunshine flooded their souls. They were internally smiling. This Mr. Meyer was no ordinary person. The couple would have to bid tomorrow’s sunrise adieu if they could not take out 10 million this time. ‘God has answered my prayer! Humph! Who asked you to play a superhero?’ Sonia inwardly sneered triumphantly. “Haha! You can’t afford it this time, can you?” the tattooed man scoffed in a brazen and arrogant tone when he grasped that Mr. Meyer and his men were taking his side. “This little chatty b*tch is really stunning; even more captivating than the hooker! Mr. Meyer, do me a favor. If this woman is willing to sleep with me, you could ask for less compensation!” He took a closer look at Selena, drool escaping his lips. Mr. Meyer subsequently laughed. “Haha, of course! Three million will do it!” This tattooed man not only gave him a lot of benefits under the table, but because of them, the KTV had increased a lot in sales each month! They were his top-listed VIP guests. Compared to them, Fane and the others were

a group of white-collar staff from a company who came here only for dinner. Mr. Meyer did not want to offend the gang for these poor country bumpkins. “Dream on!” Selena rebuked and pointed a hateful glance at them. A boiling fury swelled inside of her. “Honey, can I teach them a lesson? If I beat them up, I’m so afraid that you’ll think that I’m a violent and ferocious man!”

Chapter 122

“I—I wish you could...but isn’t the person behind them very powerful? What should we do when…” Selena bit her seductive plump red lips, her eyebrows frowned slightly. “Hehe. Honey, you need only allow me to do it. If they dare to wrong me, that’d be like picking a fight with the Drakes, right?” Fane chuckled, whispering into Selena’s ear. Selena’s eyes immediately lit up at his words. He was right! He was now a highly paid elite bodyguard employed by the Drake family. Moreover, Miss Tanya held Fane in high regard. If something terrible happened to them, it would be all right so long as the Drake family would help them. There was nothing to be afraid of! “Aren’t you just a lovely couple?” Mr. Meyer mocked them coldly when he saw them whispering affectionately to each other. “Little brat is trying to pick a fight, huh? We’re associated with the Clark family. You know; the Clark family, second most influential family in this city. Do you recognize your idiocy right now? If you push our buttons—” A powerful slap landed brutally on Mr. Meyer’s face before he could complete his sentence. Slap! Mr. Meyer spewed a mouthful of blood; two teeth flew out from his blood-soaking mouth. “Son of a b*tch! How dare you!” Mr. Meyer had never been hit before. He raked in money, and he was even the brother-in-law of the Clark family’s number-one hitman! It was because of this relationship that he became a manager and lived as though he was the country’s president. Additionally, people like the tattooed man gave him many benefits on a daily basis, and it magnified his pride even more. How could he have known he would be beaten by someone today? Irritation and anger immediately surged inside him. He cursed and charged toward Fane,

lifting his leg to throw him a powerful kick. Wham! As soon as he raised his leg, Fane found the opportunity to launch a hard blow on his crotch. “Ah!” That was the sound of broken eggs. The man clasped his private area and squatted down. Every tiny movement sent ripples of pain to his crotch; the pain shot through him with a terrible intensity that he almost passed out. “Take him down! What are you people waiting for? Beat him up!” Mr. Meyer, on the ground as he gritted his teeth, shrieked agonizingly. “Guys! Charge!” 30 people charged toward Fane, and some of them had machetes in their hands. However, though the other part won by numbers, they were downed in less than a minute. These people received harder blows than the previous men. Their injuries were much worse. “Jesus Christ! This is unbelievable!” A male procurement staff swallowed hard, shocked by Fane’s fighting skill. Fane was a top-notch combatant, no doubt! “It’s beyond awesome! He definitely lived up to the 20 million pay!” A few female employees looked at Sonia enviously and wished they could have a husband like Fane. He was not only charming, but he also possessed a manly aura that gave off a sense of security. “Quick! Go and find Brother Ken!” Mr. Meyer ordered some waiters gathered here by the ruckus for some popcorn-worthy entertainment. The waiters dismissed, and a man together with seven to eight people strode in. “Brother-in-law, help me send this b*stard to hell! This piece of sh*t came to create ruckus in our place!” The arrival of Dan Jameson eased Mr. Meyer's pent up anger. Hope bloomed inside him. Dan Jameson was no ordinary man; he was the number one hitman of the Clark family. It would be no problem at all for him to fight against hundreds of people, alone. Moreover, Dan earned his current rank and proved his worth in the Clark family with his fists! Dan’s fury sprang to life when he heard that his brother-in-law had been beaten blue and black. His anger spiked even higher when he heard that the other party defeated most of their men. His brother-in-law was indeed brazen and arrogant all this while, but because of his sister, he could only turn a blind eye to his deeds.

Chapter 123

As Dan glanced at the direction pointed by Mr. Meyer, his face twitched vigorously as though he was having a severe stroke. Realization dawned on Dan that this time, this lovely brother-in-law of his had provoked someone whose feathers should not be ruffled at all! A few days ago, he heaved a sigh of relief when he was informed that Young Master Clark brought his competent marshal to annihilate Fane, but Young Master Clark then came back with an unsightly pallor of his face. He roared that Marshal Dennis Howard was completely useless, while Marshal Dennis initially claimed all too confidently that he would send Fane to the grave. They both hid in a room and had a heated discussion. In the end, the marshal convinced Young Master Clark not to offend Fane at all; the Clark family would be digging their own graves if they provoked him. Dan was once again stupefied at this news. He knew Fane was strong, but he did not expect even the marshal would not dare to touch a single strand of his hair. It was very likely that Fane Woods was the King of War. “Hi, Dan. What a small world!” Fane chuckled and continued, “So, what are you going to do?” “What should we do? We’re sending you to see the Grim Reaper, you b*stard! You haven’t met my brother. He was famous for wiping out hundreds of punks like you!” Mr. Meyer sneered in an arrogant tone. “Hmph! You’re good, I’ll admit! However, you’re nothing but a worthless gnat in front of my brother!” He continued with a brazen tone, and he got on his feet a few meters away from Fane when the pain finally subsided for a little. “You’re his brother?” Fane was taken aback, looking at Dan. “No, he’s merely my brother-in-law. He followed my sister to call me brother,” Dan replied in a cold and icy voice. All of a sudden, he swung his palm onto Mr. Meyer’s cheek. “Brother, why did you hit me? A—Aren’t you hitting the wrong person? I’m your sister’s husband, your brother-in-law! Shouldn’t you beat him up instead? Confusion clouded his head, and at the same time, he could feel the smack stinging his face. He let out a startled gasp of pain. “That’s right. I’m hitting

you!" "You only know how to exploit the Clark family's name to get advantage on a daily basis and create problems everywhere. Do you f*cking know who he is? He's someone that even Young Master Clark and I dare not touch! You… You clearly left your brain in your mother's womb!" Dan turned away from Mr. Meyer. He was about to explode with rage at his idiocy. "What? No way! He's someone even the Young Master Clark dare not offend?" "Oh, my Lord. Someone so powerful and influential like Young Master Clark is afraid of angering Fane. What more Mr. Meyer? This husband of Miss Selena, who the heck is he?" Several employees who stood behind Selena whispered among themselves. They were completely stunned at the situation tonight. Selena's husband, Fane Woods, did not seem to be an ordinary person. "W—What? No, this can't be!" At this moment, Mr. Meyer truly knew that he was playing with fire, and all of sudden, color drained from his face. He looked ashen. After mulling over his thoughts, Dan walked over to Fan and bowed slightly. "Mr. Woods, I apologize. What happened today is all because I didn't manage my men well, and it caused trouble to you and Mrs. Woods. I sincerely apologize and hope that you'll spare my brother-in-law's life!" Mr. Meyer was so scared that he threw himself to the ground after hearing Dan's words. Would this man really kill him just because of a small matter? Fane thought for a while and replied, "Alright. I can spare his life, but I want his hand. He might not learn his lesson if otherwise." "Bring me the machetes!" Dan bit his lips. He could not do anything but to follow Fane's order. "Hold him down!" He walked over to Mr. Meyer with a sharp shiny machete at hand, and he brought it up to mid-air. "N—no! Brother, please don't! I'm the husband of your beloved sister!" "Mr. Woods, please, I beg you! Please spare me! I won't do it anymore, I swear!" Mr. Meyer was so frightened that he almost wetted his pants. He was pressed to the ground by Dan's men as he wailed for mercy. Dan turned his head to observe Fane's expressions. Nothing. Then, he gritted his teeth and swung the machetes.

Chapter 124

“A—Ah!” A hysterical cry pierced the atmosphere; it was the kind of scream that made everyone’s blood run cold. Most of the people were so frightened that they clamped their eyes shut. “Honey, let’s go!” Fane grabbed the woven bag and swung it over his shoulder. He looked at the part-timer and said, “Do you still want to stay here? Go, now!” The woman was stunned at the scene before her, and it was only after Fane called to her that she came back to reality. She quickly followed Fane and the others as they left the KTV. “Don’t ever come to work in such a place anymore!” Selena reprimanded her. “Why did you even think of working here in the first place? What do you do?” she asked, her forehead creasing as she did so. The woman looked at Fane and Selena, and she knelt before them. “Thank you so much for saving me! My n—name is Jessica Fair, and I work in the Labor and Social Security Bureau. However, because my father is so sick, I had to work some side jobs to earn and pay for his operation fee. We’ve sold out our house, and yet we’re still short of some money. I had no other choice but to work here for the money.” Tears pooled in her eyes when she thought of her father’s situation. “Their recruitment announcement has clearly stated that this job is only required to drink with the guests, but not to sleep with them. I—I truly didn’t expect to have encountered this group of b*stards on my third day. I…” Tears welled up at the corners of her eyes as she described her experience. She looked even more pitiful and distressing. The employees looked at each other, wordlessly, breathing out a series of sighs. They believed Jessica would not have taken this path if it were not for her father. Selena had always been kind-hearted. She turned her head toward Fane and without hesitation, spoke, “Fane, why don’t we help her? This is too distressing. I don’t think I could sleep tonight if we simply walk away.” A small and gentle smile hung at Fane’s lips. “Honey, this beautiful heart of yours is a drug to my vein. I thought of that as well, but I never expected you to bring it up first!” Fane dropped the woven bag

in front of Jessica and said, “Take this. Don’t work at this kind of place anymore. The money in this bag is definitely enough for your father’s operation.” The bystanders’ eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers; they were stunned by Fane’s behavior. They thought that Fane would give 10 to 20 thousand to the woman, but he handed the whole bag to her. There was freaking 1.4 million in it! With such an amount of money, Jessica was not only able to afford her father’s operation cost, but it was also enough for her to redeem their house from the bank. “T—Thank you, Sir! I can’t thank you enough. Thank you!” Jessica got up on her feet and bowed at Fane, expressing her gratitude over and over. “Honey, let’s go…” Fane smiled gently. He then held Selena’s hand and walked over to their electric scooter. Selena was a little puzzled. She wanted to help the woman, perhaps with 10 to 20 thousand from Fane’s woven bag. Never did she anticipate that Fane would pass the whole bag to the woman! It was only until they neared the electric scooter did Selena snapped back to reality. “Fane, aren’t you being too generous?” Selena asked dumbfoundedly. “There was so much money in that bag, and you passed it all to her?” Pausing for a moment, she then continued, “Don’t tell me Jessica’s stunning appearance has captured your heart, and that’s why you did that.” “Haha! And how is it possible for her to win against my lovely wife in terms of beauty? Besides, didn’t you ask me to help her?” Fane chuckled playfully, his mood brightened up. “W—Well, I did ask you to help her, but I didn’t ask you to give her all the money!”

Chapter 125

Selena was at a loss of words. Fane treated money like nothing; it was as though those stacks of banknotes were rolls of toilet paper to him. He was too generous to the woman. “Well, how much should I have given her? Should I go get it back?” After thinking about it, however, Fane changed his mind. “Forget it. There’s no reason for me to collect the water poured out from the bottle!” Selena continued to stay speechless and merely gave him a dry smile. “Never mind. My husband is earning 20 million a month,

anyway! We'll be rich after two months of you working for the Drake family, and zillionaires after a year or two." "Honey, we're not short of money now, though…" "Keep boasting, especially now that your pocket is almost empty." Selena clicked her tongue. "You have to learn how to manage your finances better, got that? I wouldn't be spending so much money on dinner if it was not to trim Sonia's ego down." "No, no, no! You have to start preparing to be a freaking rich woman, Honey," Fane rebutted. "Besides, I dream of having another wedding and take you out on a private jet in the future!" "Are you sure? I don't think it's a good idea, since we have a four-year-old now. Wouldn't it be ridiculous for us to have another wedding?" They continued to banter as they rode on the electric scooter. Joy and happiness bloomed inside Selena like a warm ray of sunshine that melted her ice-cold heart. Selena slowly realized that love had blossomed between them as though they had just started dating. Perhaps this was what people always said, 'fall for your spouse after marriage'. On the other hand, after a series of terrifying events, Jessica did not stay long and left the KTV soon after. She hailed a cab and went in it, and she soon arrived at an old community housing area. She returned to her home with the woven bag in her arms. "Lil brother, why did you discharge Father from the hospital?" Jessica was startled at the presence of her father. Her father, who was supposed to be receiving treatment in the ward, was lying in the dilapidated old rental house. "We've spent every penny, yet there's still a 30 thousand bill from the hospital waiting for us. The doctor said that we don't have to pay the bill, but our father can no longer be treated in the hospital. We have no choice but to bring him back," Jessica's mother replied. "Your father is about to get the surgery the day after tomorrow. What now? How can we afford the 100 thousand operation when we can't even pay up the 30 thousand outstanding balance?" Jessica's younger brother, Jack Fair, sighed as well. "It's all my fault! I'm so useless that I can't get a high-paying job! Not only our father's operation cost, but I can't even support our family expenses! Even if we managed to pay the operation fee, what about the post-

surgery recuperation cost? That's a different bill on its own!" It was only then when Jack noticed that his sister was in a disheveled state. Her hair was disheveled like beached kelp after a storm, and her clothes were torn at the sides. "This is strange, Sister. Shouldn't you be finished with your work at two in the morning? It's only a little bit after 10 in the evening, so why are you back early?" he asked. "Lady Luck has obviously left me behind today." Jessica breathed a deep sigh and continued, "I met a group of b*stards today at work, and they want me to sle…" She trailed off before she continued, "Fortunately, the kind Mr. Woods rescued me from their dirty hands! If you were there with me, you'd know how amazing Mr. Woods truly is! Dozens of b*stards fell to the ground without even touching the corner of his shirt. I feel like this Mr. Woods is no ordinary man. Those underlings of Young Master Clock or Clarke—whatever—were terrified of him!" "Wow! That's so cool! How I wish I could be like him!" Jake daydreamed with admiration plastered on his face. Only then did he notice the woven bag in his sister's arm. "Sis, why did you bring this large woven bag from work? Are you collecting recyclable items to earn some?" "I don't know what's inside the bag, either. Mrs. Woods had Mr. Woods help me out, and he handed me this bag," Jessica responded with a sense of confusion in her tone. "This woven bag…is filled up with garbage, isn't it? Still…that's not right. Would you go to an opulent place to have fun with a bag like this?" Jack unzipped the woven bag as he spoke mindlessly to himself. His jaw nearly went unhinged before he clamped his mouth shut. "My Lord, it's money! T—This is too much money!" "What? Money?" Jessica's and her mother's jaws dropped at his words and immediately went over to see the content inside the woven bag. Hot tears filled up their eyes in an instant. With this amount of money, their father could be saved!

Chapter 126

At the KTV's entrance, the man with the dragon tattoo—Ned—lugged forward with a cohort of men behind him. "F*ck. I've never been so angry

before. I can't walk out of here until I'm satisfied!" Ned clenched his teeth, his expression reeked with menace. The rage within him continued to burn hot and bright. "B—Boss, maybe we should just forget it," one of his underlings stuttered after he gave the matter some thought. "Didn't you hear what Dan said? Even Young Master Clark wouldn't dare to provoke that man!" "Dan is the best fighter in the Clark family, you know?" the underling continued. "But look what happened. He bowed and scraped before the name of Fane Woods. He even cut off a hand from his brother-in-law without hesitation!" A flicker of hesitation crossed Ned's face when he heard this. However, a smile quickly lit up his face as he said, "Hmph. Why should we be scared? We don't have to cower in fear just because they did. What aristocrats? They're self-giving titles. How can they compare to us, the Dragon Gods?" "The boss is right," another underling chimed in with a vicious undertone. "No way are we going to let this slide. Not something this sh*tty, especially. Why? Do those aristocrats think they're the best? Do they have more men than we do?" At this point, he paused for a bit before he added, "Besides, rumor has it that Dan can take down a few hundred men by himself. Bah! We heard the rumor from someone else, but I've never seen him in action myself, so who knows if he truly took down a few dozen by himself. His legend grew more and more ridiculous as word went around." "That's right! All the aristocrats have is money. They can't beat us men in terms of raw manpower. They only use their fists when they fight; we have people. If all of us gang up on that guy, there's no way he'll be able to escape!" Another goon stepped forward, his face purple with bruises and nose swollen. "You're right! That useless piece of crap! I'm gonna get help from Master Howard! We can't let this slide." Ned nodded his head. With a smirk on his face, he commented, "Heh. That little punk's wife has a splendid figure. More importantly, she's such a delightful creature!" "Boss, I think that woman is Selena Taylor, secretly dubbed the Beauty Queen of Middle Province among the rich young masters here! Won't you offend the Taylors if you do anything to her?" A goon raised the concern after

pondering upon the matter for a while, his forehead creasing in worry. “So that’s who she is? No problem at all. I heard that this woman had been kicked out of the Taylor family five years ago. So long as I just fool around and not kill her; even the Taylors won’t dare to provoke Master Howard!” “Furthermore, I’ve heard that her cousin is against her, and she hasn’t been able to land a single job! Heh. It’ll be fine as long as she’s not dead!” The more he talked about her, the more Ned felt that there was an irresistible allure to Selena that could not be found in other women. It was the allure of a mature woman. “Really? If that’s the case, there’ll be no problem at all! Hah! Let’s go see Master Howard now!” The goon flashed a wicked smile when he heard that. “Boss, can we watch while you have fun with the woman? I want to see the look of this Beauty Queen of Middle Province as she’s being completely dominated by you!” “Hah! No problem. I’ll let you all see just how awesome I am!” Ned burst into guffaws and brought his men along to see Master Howard. Master Howard had tremendous influence in the city. He was the owner of numerous entertainment outlets and illegal banks. It was not difficult at all to find out where Selena lived. … “Fane, something’s off.”

Chapter 127

At this moment, Selena looked as though she finally thought of something. She patted Fane on the shoulder from the back. “Wait. Stop!” Fane immediately pulled the electric scooter to the side. “What’s wrong?” “Dan Jameson is an excellent fighter, yet he didn’t even raise a fist against you. He apologized to you right away.” “And he actually told Mr. Meyer that you were someone that even Young Master Clark couldn’t provoke. Why? Who are you, exactly?” Selena asked, her features twisted into a suspicious frown. Fane gave a wry smile after he heard that. “I’m a vet; that’s why. Dan fought me once before, though it wasn’t so much of a fight. We got into an arm-wrestling competition. He lost and cut off his own finger because he knew his strength was nothing compared to mine. I have to admit that the

fellow is a real man, though. Anyway, that's why Young Master Clark is afraid of me…" Here, Fane paused for a bit before he continued, "Think about it. Even the best fighter of the Clarks is no match for me. Isn't it natural for Young Master Clark to fear me? Won't he be afraid that I'll just eliminate him? I do have the power to do so!" "Arm-wrestling?" Selena wore a peculiar expression. She never thought that her husband would use such a method to prove his strength to another. "Mm-hm! I simply left after he lost, too. I never expected that fellow to really cut his finger off. So the fact that I didn't kill that Meyer tonight is considered a merciful act to preserve his dignity!" Fane bobbed his head as he spoke. "You're amazing, Hubby!" Selena took in her husband's dashing face. She then commented, "That man is a genuine man though, and it's too bad he followed the wrong master. Ken is definitely one of the worst people I know. He wasn't so terrible before, but I learned how that man is truly a monster after the time he tried to demolish our house with his goons!" Fane chuckled. "Now do you feel that you've found yourself an excellent husband?" The grin on his face never left. Slowly, Selena's lusciously red lips caught his gaze. "Dear, why don't we have another kid?" he said. "I was so drunk that night from five years ago. I hardly remember what happened. All I remember was that you initiated it!" Selena's cheeks immediately flamed. "Don't talk about it anymore. It's so embarrassing. I was mad at my grandpa at the time because he married me off to some nobody. Sure, it's a fake marriage, but that act was proof of the marriage. How could I, Selena Taylor, just pretend to be married?" "I'm sorry... I wanted to save my mother then, too. I had no choice but to do that." Fane slowly exhaled. "Don't worry, Selena. The wedding from five years ago was regrettable. You don't have to say anything; I understand. And don't worry—I'll hold another grand wedding for you!" She pressed her lips. "All right. I'll hold you to that." Here, she thought of something else. "But Grandpa's 70th birthday is approaching," she said, frowning. "My mom's insistent on the present, too. We'll be in trouble if we can't fork out that amount of money. Besides, you've just started your

job, and the soonest you'll get your salary is probably in a few days. Looks like we won't make it in time for Grandpa's birthday." "Don't worry, dear. It's not a problem if money can solve the issue!" … "What? All of you were beaten up?" An old man stood up in a villa, a tuft of white hair crowning his head. He stared at the tattooed man before him. "Who is it? Who is it who dares to beat my men? Does he have a death wish?"

Chapter 128

"Yeah. That punk was pretty good. We weren't a match for him because we had too little people with us!" Ned immediately grumbled, "Master Howard, that punk practically spat on your name. We told him that we were your men, yet he told us that you're nothing but trash!" "That f*cker! He dares to look down on me, the great Master Howard?" It was probably the first time Master Howard had been completely disregarded. He was so furious that he nearly spat out blood. He had used his fists to conquer the throne he sat upon today; the Dragon God Clan was regarded as one of the most prominent clans in the city. They were not at the top of the food chain, but nobody dared to provoke them so carelessly. These underground organizations usually did not meddle in any affairs that had to do with aristocrats, too. They did not want to stir any unnecessary fights. That was why he could not help but tack on a sentence after he finished speaking. "By the way, is that punk some aristocrat?" "No. Don't worry. This punk is just a foot soldier; a vet. In other words, he's an impulsive self-righteous f*cker; the kind who likes to stick his nose in places he's not invited to." "A lot of vets have been around lately," Ned added. "There's plenty of his type around now!" Master Howard did not bother asking about the whole situation. He already decided that the punk would die after calling him 'trash'. He thought about it for a while. "How many people do you need? I'll get Scar to bring his men with you!" "50—" Ned's brows furrowed. He then shook his head. "No, no. 50 is too small of a number, and that punk is too skilled. We need at least 200, and we need them armed." "200?" Master

Howard startled at the suggested number. He never thought that the punk would be this skilled. “That’s right. I heard that the punk served in the field for five years. He’s brushed against death plenty of times before. He’s crazy skilled!” “Of course, I understand if we can’t bring that many men,” Ned commented. “100 should be enough. But I’m just trying to prevent the worst-case scenario here.” “All right then!” Master Howard nodded, his gaze shifted toward a man by his side. There was a menacing scar than ran down the man’s face. “Scar, bring your men and arm them,” he said icily. “You’ll be under Ned’s command for this operation!” “Yes, Sir!” The scar-faced man wasted no time on small-talk. He got his men prepared and left with Ned. At that moment, Kylie had long been fast asleep. Meanwhile, Fiona and the others were in the garden, huffing impatiently as they waited for Fane and Selena to return. Joan, who was beside Fiona, observed the other woman’s expression. “Fiona, don’t be so angry, please,” she said gently. “My son isn’t in any form of trouble, I’m sure. He isn’t that rash!” Ptooey! Fiona spat on the earth. “Don’t just call me Fiona as though we’re buddies. Your son got into a fight with Drakes’ bodyguards. Is that not causing trouble? We saw everything ourselves. He got himself into deep sh*t, but don’t drag us Taylors into it!” Xena immediately puffed up her chest as well. “That’s right. Selena even called us in the afternoon, asking Aunt Fiona to give her 300 thousand to have dinner. Is that possible?” she remarked in a patronizing tone. “Does she really need 300 thousand to treat her colleagues to dinner? It’s obvious that Fane has gotten himself neck-deep in horse muck!”

Chapter 129

Ben’s eyebrows furrowed. “It’s so late already, but Fane isn’t back yet. Could it be that he’s been kidnapped and can’t come home? 300,000 isn’t enough to compensate the Drake family. It doesn’t matter if he only beat up the bodyguards since they’re still from the Drake family!” “No...no way.” Joan became even more worried when she heard this. She paced about

anxiously but she could not do anything. Both Fane and Selena were not back in spite of the late hour. Did something really happen to them? “Those are the Drake family’s bodyguards, not your regular cut of bodyguards. 300,000 should be ample compensation if they were regular guards, but nothing is certain if they belong to the Drakes… “I’m just worried because Selena isn’t back either. Has Selena been taken too? What do we do if they ask us for ransom?” Andrew smoked a cigarette by the side. His heart began to palpitate in worry for his daughter’s safety. “Ransom? If they ask for ransom, we’re only rescuing our daughter. That knucklehead can’t do anything other than cause trouble. I’m certainly not using my money to pay for his mistakes!” Fiona said, huffing angrily. “Fiona, please don’t say that. Fane is a father. Besides, he put his life at risk for your 800,000 without hesitation. You can’t just stand by and let him die!” Joan feared that the Clark family would kill their hostages in a surge of anger, so she pleaded and begged as much as she could. “Hmph. He was asking for it, don’t you think so? It was so obvious that Miss Tanya was just teasing him when she didn’t let him in. He could’ve turned around and left for home, no? “I think he’s gone nuts because of greed. The gall to charge straight into the Drakes’ estate! And when their bodyguards tried to stop him, he beat them up. Wasn’t he asking for it?” Xena said before Fiona could respond. Her arms were folded across her chest. “Yes, exactly! He asked for it himself!” Fiona nodded her head. “He...he was driven to this by you!” Joan was on the brink of tears. “He wouldn’t be so desperate for money if it weren’t for you. He had to give you 10 million dollars for Grandfather Taylor’s 70th birthday, and you’ll only acknowledge him as your son-in-law, no? Ridiculous! Of course he’d act brashly!” she snapped, her tone dripping with resentment. “He’s desperate for money because he wants your recognition. He wants your blessings!” “Like hell I care!” Fiona’s temper spiked. “Your son is a knucklehead who went about beating up the Drakes’ men, and you dare push the blame on me? Did I tell him to go beat other people up?” “Why are you making such indiscriminate accusations? Can’t you see who’s in the wrong

here?" "Whatever it is, it's not my mother's fault," Ben chimed in. "Even if Miss Tanya wasn't lying to him, he would've needed to wait for at least a month before getting his first month's salary, no? And Grandpa's birthday is in three weeks. Hmph. Would he be able to make it anyway? Besides, his salary is 20 million per month, not 30 million. He needs 30 million!" "I don't care. If anything happens to my son, and if you don't save him even if you have the money to do so, I...I'll kill you!" Joan glared straight at Fiona, the ferocity in her eyes terrifying. Fiona staggered backward in shock. "What a crazy b*tch," she gasped. "Making such baseless accusations… And she dares to say something so unreasonable! Your son caused our family nothing but pain for the past five years. Every single damn day for the past five years. And you say something like that to me? Get a life!"

Chapter 130

Panic gripped Joan's chest and words were lodged in her throat. Fane had done everything for her. He had only agreed to this false marriage and to take Ivan's place in the military because he wanted her to receive proper medical treatment. She did not know any of this when she was confined to the sickbed. It was only after she was discharged from the hospital that the doctor handed her Fane's letter, and she found out about the entire situation. Throughout these five years, she had been fearful, too. She feared that Fane would die on the battlefield. Plenty of people also told her that her son was dead. He would not have remained silent all these years otherwise. She could only pray for her son as she waited for him to come back. At this moment, they heard the quiet whirr of an approaching electric scooter. Fane and Selena were on the scooter, finally home. They parked the vehicle inside the garden. "Fane, are you okay? I heard that you beat up the Drakes' bodyguards. Is it true?" Joan immediately leaped forward and asked Fane, overwhelmed with worry. "Oh, I did beat them up, but don't you worry. Everything's fine!" Fane smiled as he spoke nonchalantly. "See? See? He

admitted it himself! How can he be fine after beating up the Drakes' bodyguards?" "Yeah. You've done nothing but drag the Taylors down with you for the past five years, Fane. I suggest you leave. How can everything be fine after you provoked the Drake family?" Xena shot Fane a disdainful look. "You're a grown man, and yet you don't know what you can and can't do. You even made Selena help you extort 300,000 from her mother. It's ransom money, isn't it? Thank goodness, Aunt Fiona is smart enough to not have complied. Otherwise, it would've been gone for nothing!" Fane could not help but flash a mirthless smile at Xena's condescending demeanor. "Now I get why Selena doesn't like you that much. You sure talk a lot for someone who's an outsider in this family. Why do you care so much although you're just Ben's girlfriend?" "You—" Xena was so furious that she suddenly did not know how to retort. "Hmph! Fane Woods, are you trying to revolt?" Fiona placed her hands at her hips. "I still haven't acknowledged you as my son-in-law. You're the outsider here, don't you know that? Xena has been with my son for two years now. She's practically his fiancée, and she's already a daughter-in-law to us. She's not an outsider!" "That's right!" Xena immediately lifted her chin when Fiona spoke up for her, her confidence returned. "Even if Uncle Andrew and Aunt Fiona haven't acknowledged me yet, I'm practically Ben's heart and soul. Besides, Ben and I aren't far from marriage either! Besides, Ben would have been well-off if not for you, and I wouldn't have to suffer like this!" "Tell me, how did you two manage to get the Drake family to release you? I think you gave that few hundred thousand to them first, and so they let you come back to take more money. Is that right?" "Even if they want money, I'd never fork out a single cent to compensate for those bodyguards. Not for some trash like you!" Fiona noticed that Fane stood rooted to his spot, completely still. She carried the luggage bag over and held it out toward him. "We just bought this. Think of it as our last gift for you. Take it and go; the further the better. You might still live this way, that is if the Drake family can't find you!" Thinking for a moment, she then added, "Oh, and

take your mother with you. She's an outsider in our family too!" "Ma, what the hell are you talking about?" Selena could not take it anymore after watching the entire exchange. She stepped forward and snatched the suitcase away. "Fane did beat up the Drakes' bodyguards, but seriously, everything's fine. Not only did Miss Tanya allow him to continue going to work tomorrow, but she even arranged a private chalet for him at the Drake family's estate. He'll be able to rest there during his breaks, and he can even stay there if he doesn't want to come back!" "I—Impossible. You're lying! He beat up the Drake family's bodyguards. How can everything be fine?" Fiona was completely taken aback, a stupefied expression on her face.

Chapter 131

"They arranged for him to live in a villa all by himself? Is he not living together with bodyguards? Isn't there a dormitory for bodyguards?" Ben was stunned. This outcome far exceeded their expectations. Fane chuckled. "I did run into the Drakes' bodyguards, but they were complete trash!" "And because of that, not a single one was worthy to be my opponent. The leader of the Drake family seems to like me. He said that my skill was worth twenty million bucks a month!" "Furthermore, the family's patriarch said that those bodyguards were arranged to test me. They wanted to see if I was someone who knew how to pick their fights, someone who was courageous." "It's obvious that I passed the test." Fane coughed quietly, speaking in a matter-of-fact tone. Selena's lips parted slightly, anxiety clenching her guts. Her husband had never said anything like that before, and he had not batted an eye as he lied. "Really? It was just a test? And it was pre-arranged? So you'll go to work tomorrow?" Fiona practically bounced with excitement as soon as she heard him, thinking about the twenty million bucks a month. "Of course he's serious, Ma. How could he lie to you about something like this? You can follow him to work tomorrow if you don't believe him. See if anyone still dares to get in his way!" Selena explained, and she eye-rolled at her mother. "Then you'll let me take three hundred thousand from you,

right? It's all your fault I took out so much money abruptly, after all. I thought it was for a ransom. We did see Fane beating those bodyguards up with our own eyes!" Fiona's resentful expression had long been replaced by one of complete delight. "So, Fane, even the head of the Drakes has acknowledged your potential and highly regards you?" Andrew asked Fane as he stepped forward. Everyone looked at him in anticipation. The Drakes were the wealthiest family in Middle Province, after all. "That's right. I'm very capable, basically!" Fane answered, a smile plastered on his face. "Oh, that's such wonderful news! I thought that you were all kidnapped since you haven't returned, although it's so late." The tension at Joan's chest finally eased off. "Oh, right. Why were you guys following me? You could've just said something to me if you wanted to see me off to work." Amusement sparked in Fane as he looked at Fiona. He had long known about how they hid in the coffee shop; he was merely lazy to call them out. "Oh, dear. No need to put it that way! We weren't following you. We just wanted to check out the situation because we care for you." Fiona laughed awkwardly. "It's all good so long as you're good!" A thought brewed in her mind after she said that, and she tacked on, "By the way, Fane, I think that you won't receive your salary by the time our patriarch is celebrating his birthday. Can you ask Tanya and see if they can give you this month's salary early? We'll use half of it to compensate Ivan, and another half to buy something for Old Man Taylor!" "You don't want me to pay the bride price anymore?" Fane's brows creased together. Fiona had been so insistent on the bride price and would pester him about it almost every single day. Why would she be so kind all of the sudden?

Chapter 132

"No bride price? Dream on!" Fiona rolled her eyes at Fane when she heard his words. With a grin on her face, she asserted, "It's like this: You won't be able to take out thirty million straight out anyway, but you've beaten Ivan into a bloody pulp, so you have to give him ten million dollars. Besides, you

already said that you'd buy a gift worth ten million for the old man's birthday, so you must keep your word!" Fiona paused briefly here before continuing, "That's why you have to give out that twenty million no matter what; the Taylor family will only regard you highly that way. Furthermore, if they know that you're going to be a bodyguard for the Drake family, they'll definitely think you're strong and capable, and they'll never be able to kick you out of the Taylor family!" "Then what about the ten million bride price?" Fane asked with a dry smile. "I've already thought about that, too. Since you're going to spend your first month's salary on all of that, just give it to me once you receive your second month's salary!" "I can't give my beautiful daughter away for just ten million though. I'm increasing the price…to twenty million!" With the grin never dropping once, she reiterated, "I've already thought everything through. You and Selena have Kylie, after all, so I'll acknowledge you as my son-in-law once you give that twenty million to me! You won't beat the young masters from aristocratic families, but I'll approve of the two of you, so long as Selena is happy." Cold understanding washed over Fane. For a second, he thought that Fiona was actually being reasonable and thinking for his sake. Of course she wanted more money. "Mom, why are you doing this? How can you just increase the bride price as you please? And that's a pretty big jump, too." Selena was speechless for a moment. Her mother was becoming more and more of a snob with each passing day. "What do you know? I learned a single principle throughout these five years: cash is king! Cash gives you safety, assurance. You won't be the laughingstock only if you step out of the house with cash!" "The friends I had a long time ago, the ones who had gone shopping with me and visited me? They all ignored me when we were kicked out five years ago. When I try to see them, they'd avoid me like the plague!" "So am I being too demanding, asking for twenty million? You're the most beautiful woman in the entire Middle Province; so what if I ask for twenty million? Young Master Wilson even said that he'd marry you for fifty million. It's my loss to let this rascal marry you for twenty million!" A

stream of complaints suddenly poured forth from Fiona. The finishing touch to the drama would be for her to sit on the floor and wail. “Mom, how can you be so calculative? That Wilson is fat and perverted! I’m well-aware of the kind of man he is.” Selena frowned, then looked at Fane. “Wilson isn’t even a fraction of the man Fane is.” “No problem!” At this moment, Fane came before Fiona, a small smile on his face. “Mother is right,” he spoke. “You’re the most beautiful woman in the entire Middle Province. Twenty million it is, then. As long as Mother acknowledges me as her son-in-law, twenty million is nothing. Even two billion isn’t a problem!” “From the smell of alcohol on your body, you’ve definitely been drinking tonight. Stop boasting about things you can’t do,” Fiona sneered as her eyes swept over him disdainfully. She would never believe that he could fork out two billion dollars. “I don’t want two billion. Just give me twenty million and I’ll acknowledge you.” Meanwhile, Xena and Ben hung by the side, chins low and not daring to utter another word. They had thought Fane had gotten himself into trouble and had reprimanded him relentlessly. They never thought he was actually working for the Drake family. It turned out that it was all right for Fane to get into a fight with the Drakes’ bodyguards this morning. If he had left, gloomy and dejected, he would have lost a golden opportunity for such a lucrative job. “Ahem! It’s great now that Fane and Big Sis are back home safe and sound. Get some rest, everyone. I’m tired!” Ben coughed awkwardly. The aura of a raging bull from before had now dampened into a cloud of meekness. He uttered Fane’s name with utmost reverence, as though it was the name of a legendary king. “I agree. We should go get some sleep. You two have to go to work tomorrow morning, too!” Xena wanted to dig a hole and bury her face in it. She and Ben returned to their room. “Eh, did you two have dinner outside? Did you really spend three hundred thousand in total?”

Chapter 133

Fiona just recalled what she heard earlier after Ben and Xena left. Selena had been saying something about going out to eat over the phone and spending around 300 thousand bucks. It seemed that they had really been out for dinner. “Don’t mention it anymore, mom. It was such a disaster. And it was my first time eating at a six-star hotel too! It’s all because of that Procurement Department Head—Sonia Neal!” Selena sighed before telling Fiona why she had to treat them to a meal at such a fancy place. “That department head is an opportunistic b*tch. She’s just looking for an excuse to get you out of the way because she doesn’t want to see you become manager!” Fiona said. “I’ll help you with this meal. You have to show everyone what you can do! If you really treat everyone to a meal, the other workers will definitely listen to you from now on!” Fiona felt resentment in her daughter’s place when she heard that. A frown quickly creased her forehead. “Then where are you getting the 300 thousand from? Don’t you only have 100 thousand on you?” “Fa–Fane was the one who took out 200 thousand bucks when we went to eat!” Selena looked at Fane, a wry smile twisting her lips. “No way. This guy actually still has two hundred thousand left? It looks like he has a bonus of three million after retiring from the military! “It’s not possible that he spent it all, right? What about the rest of his money?” Fiona’s eyes brightened after she heard this. “He only spent six–six hundred thousand. There’s still 1.4 million left!” Selena’s gaze flickered toward her mother. She ducked her head. “We met a very pitiful young woman,” she said, her tone apologetic. “Her father was extremely sick and needed to perform surgery, so we–we gave the rest of the money to help her!” “You–you gave it to her?” Fiona almost fainted on the spot. “You gave that much money away? Do you two want to give me a heart attack?” “It doesn’t matter, Mom. Do we lack money now? Don’t you yourself have 800 thousand in your account? Anyway, Fane and I are working, and our salaries aren’t too shabby. It’ll all be better in another two months!” Selena’s heart pounded from embarrassment. She had wanted to lie to her mother but gave up in the end. She really did not want to tell lies

and was not good at it anyway. “I…” Fiona’s pallor had turned a sickly green. “You gave 1.4 million bucks away! You could have just given her a hundred thousand, eighty thousand—whatever. I’m your own mother and you only gave me 800 thousand, which I received only recently. And you gave someone you met for the first time 1.4 million? What the h*ll? Are you two zillionaires? How could you throw your money away so easily!” “Never mind. Don’t argue anymore; it’s late. You also know that our daughter is a kind soul. She would never be able to not stop and help a dying man!” Andrew hauled himself onto his feet. He looked at Fane after he spewed out that last piece of advice. “Fane, my leg really feels better now,” he said. “Help me continue the therapy tomorrow morning.” “Sure thing, father!” Fane replied, smiling. ... “Brother Scar, we finally found where Selena and her family are living at. It’s just up front, not too far from here!” After a while, past eleven o’clock at night, an underling came before Scar and his men to report the status. “All right. Let’s go. Ned, you better treat me to a drink after I help you get your revenge!” The scar-faced man said toward Ned, chuckling coldly. “No worries. We’ll drink the house down!” Elation leaped in Ned’s heart. He speared straight for Fane’s house of residence, a group of men in tow.

Chapter 134

Fiona fumed at the thought of losing another 1.4 million bucks but the money was already gone. In the end, she had no choice but to relent and return home. Joan was also relieved at the sight of her son returning home and returned to her own home. “Let’s go, my dear. We’re drenched in the smell of alcohol. Why don’t we take a bath together?” Desire sparked within Fane as he raked his eyes over Selena’s body, silhouetted by the dim street lights. Although he was a man true to his principles, he was still young and only over twenty years old. Besides that, Selena was also his woman. Naturally he would have quite a few fantasies after not touching a woman for five years. “You—I do a bit of good for you and you take it and fly off

to the moon!" Selena rolled her eyes at Fane. "Besides, we weren't that close before and yet you want to touch me now. Dream on!" she said. "You're only able to call me your wife now because of Kylie." Cold sweat slicked over Fane's palms. He flashed a rueful smile. "I just suggested to take a bath together. I didn't say that I was going to touch you, my dear," he said. "Don't let your mind wander too far. I'm a respectable man!" If Abner, Lana, and the other Gods of War were to hear him say something like that, they would probably be so shocked that their jaws would drop straight to the floor. Especially since it came from their respected master, who was a stone-cold killing machine on the battlefield, tearing through people as though they were paper. Yet he was reduced into a grinning idiot who said ridiculous things before a beautiful woman. "What the h*ll are you talking about? I didn't think about anything at all!" Selena strode toward the inside of the house, face burning hot. "I'm going to shower first. You shower after I'm done. Don't even think about getting on my bed if I don't give you permission. Got it?" "Roger that, my dear. Don't worry. I'll obey your every command!" Fane saluted her sharply, making her chuckle. Her smile was absolutely dazzling, even beneath the hazy street lighting. "What a beautiful smile!" Fane stood rooted to the spot after Selena went in, stupefied. After a while, Fane went in to shower. When he returned to the room, he found Selena and adorable little Kylie curled up in bed, fast asleep. He studied his wife as she sprawled across the mattress, her chest heaving in regular intervals. Most of her leg was exposed, the smooth, porcelain skin looking as though it might shatter to touch. The sight stirred something within him. He bent down and gently stole a kiss on her cheek, then he quietly returned to his mattress on the floor. However, Fane did not realize that she was not asleep. Rather, she was closing her eyes and pretending to sleep. Selena's heart pounded erratically after Fane kissed her, afraid that he would attempt to do something else. Thankfully, the man quickly withdrew. Selena had been drinking and soon enough, she slipped into actual sleep, feeling tired to the bones. Fane lay on the floor, reflecting on everything that had

happened over the past few years. A swirl of emotions filled his chest. Just as he closed his eyes, he heard footsteps thundering toward his direction—and they were footsteps belonging to a sizeable group. It sounded like there were over 200 people! He took a sharp intake of cold air and sat upright. Fury flashed in his eyes. “You dare to make trouble even though it’s so late at night and my wife and my daughter are already asleep?” He immediately sprang to his feet, the thought clenching his heart. He carefully creeped out of the room and went to the garden. He sat beneath the enormous banyan tree in the garden and lit a smoke for himself. Less than two minutes had passed when a group of people came toward his house, some of them with weapons in their hands.

Chapter 135

“That little punk was a soldier for five years, Scar. He’s considered a vet. Super skilled. Don’t underestimate him!” Ned reminded them when he thought of how even Dan had been fearful when facing off against Fane. Dan had claimed that he could defeat a hundred men alone, even though Ned thought that it was an exaggerated boast. Still, to be spoken so highly of by Dan, he imagined that Fane would have some level of skill. “Don’t worry. We have this many men with us. I even met a busy-bodying little punk two days ago and now he’s dead because of me! Plus, we have so many people here!” Scar chuckled, then gave Ned a cold stare. “Did you really think I’d be on the same level as you after managing to become one of Master Howard’s high rank assistants? Hah! I’ve proven my worth with my fists!” The two of them continued talking. It took a while for them to notice a red light sparking underneath the banyan tree, flickering sporadically. It looked like there was a man standing there. “What’s someone doing there?” Scar waved his hand. His men stopped in their tracks. “It’s already 12.30 at night, and there’s someone smoking beneath that tree?” Suspicion crossed Ned’s features. It was so late. How could there be someone in a place as quiet as this? “Go and take a look!” Scar suddenly tingled with a sense of

danger. The feeling was a powerful presence. It was clear that it was unusual to have someone here this late at night. The group of men quickly went toward the tree. “It’s you!” Ned recognized Fane after careful observation. His expression instantly darkened. “Brother Scar, this is the punk we’re looking for. He beat us up. I want this bastard dead!” Fane casually exhaled, his breath mingling with a cloud of smoke. He flicked the cigarette butt onto the ground. “I never imagined that you’d have a death wish. I thought that beating a few of you up and sparing your lives in the KTV was enough. It seems like that was the wrong decision!” “Hmph. Don’t you have eyes, you punk? Do you see how many men we’ve got surrounding you? And it was the wrong decision, you say?” Ned chuckled and continued. “I know why you’re awake so late at night. You must be so scared of us looking for you to take revenge, so that’s why you couldn’t sleep—because you were so anxious. And so, you came out for a smoke to settle the fear in your heart!” Ned paused there, then resumed, his tone even more brazen and arrogant than before. “Only, you never expected us to find you so fast, eh? Now you know how powerful our Master Howard is, huh?” “Brother, he doesn’t look like he’s scared of us!” The man with yellow hair who had been beaten black and blue earlier back in KTV voiced the concern aloud. He was still a bit fearful of Fane. After all, Fane’s frightening fighting prowess had already terrified him back in the KTV lounge. “What do you know!” Ned slapped the man’s head. “It’s not that he’s not scared. I think we’ve scared him so much that he’s wetted his pants but has no choice but to act all cool now that we’re already here!” “There’s an abandoned building not far from here. We’ll settle it there!” Fane answered lightly, staring straight at the other man. “I don’t want your screams of pain to disturb my wife and daughter’s sleep!” “An abandoned building?” Ned was stunned for a moment, then a wicked smile curved up his face. “So you’ve chosen the location for your grave? You’re scared to let your wife see your dead body at her doorstep? All right then. I’ll make sure that I’ll destroy you completely. Then I’ll go fool around with your woman after I kill you!”

Chapter 136

”His wife, Selena Taylor, is a beauty!” Beside them, Scar laughed coldly after hearing what Ned said. “Hey, hey. Does Brother Scar want to play too?” Ned smirked and flattered. “Never mind, I’m not interested in women!” Scar smiled coldly and looked at Fane. “Young man, I’ll grant your wish and follow you to the abandoned building. Where’s the fun if we don’t finish you in the grave you’ve chosen for yourself?” “Haha, let’s go!” Fane laughed and walked toward the abandoned building. Scar and the rest followed behind him at a regular pace. They even walked in positions that formed a half-circular shape to prevent Fane from escaping. Soon, the group of people entered the abandoned building. “Young man, how about this. I’ll give you a chance today based on the fact that you have served Cathysia for five years!” The group of people surrounded Fane in the middle and Ned smirked and said, “You can call your wife and ask her to come here. Then, kowtow 100 times, beg me to let you go and sleep with her! I’ll let you go if you do it, how about that?!” “Yes, yes, yes. So that your daughter won’t have to see our boss and your wife...” Another man with yellow hair smirked and said. However, before he could finish speaking, Fane’s expression had already darkened. He did not care what people say about him but he could not tolerate people insulting his wife and daughter. Fane’s movement was very fast. He lunged toward the guy with yellow hair and punched his neck. Crack! A crisp sound of bone breaking at the neck could be heard. The man with yellow hair fell on the ground and stopped breathing. “I’ll kill you first for the words that you speak!” Fane looked at the body on the floor coldly. His words frightened the people, they could not help but take one step backward. Ned and the others who were originally hurt did not dare walk forward. Ned reminded them, “Everybody be careful. He is not a simple man, otherwise I wouldn’t request so many people from Boss Harvey!” “F*ck his grandmother. Pick up your weapon, go on and kill him!” Scar saw what happened, waved his hand, and ordered. “Ah!” In seconds, more than

a dozen people picked up either watermelon knives or steel pipes and rushed toward Fane. “Hey, I gave you an option and you refused it, now you’re looking for death!” Ned’s eyes were vicious as he looked on to the group of people rushing toward Fane. “You group of useless bastards. You can’t fight as front liners but sure are the champions of backstabbing!” Fane had a scary look in his eyes. He snatched the watermelon knife from one of them and with a few swoops, several people around him had cuts on their necks. Bang, bang, bang! Seven or eight people near Fane covered their necks and pain was written on their face. One by one, they fell to the ground and died. The remaining few saw this scene and were so afraid that they swallowed big mouthfuls of their own saliva. “F*ck his grandmother, charge!”

Chapter 137

Scar dared not act careless and was prepared to use the mass attack after he saw how scary Fane was. “Attack!” The others rushed forward and surrounded Fane in the middle of an impenetrable crowd. Fane was extremely fast. Although so many people rushed toward him, none of them could get near to him. They rushed forward one after another but every of them was finished by Fane’s knife. Some of them only saw the knife’s reflection before they died and their head was no longer on their neck. “No...no way!” Less than two minutes later, the entire place was full of corpses and the blood odor filled the space. Standing on the side, Ned and his followers looked at the show and had smiles on their face in the beginning. In their eyes, Fane was just struggling at the brink of death and he would die from being in a group fight. The smile on their faces gradually disappeared. It was full of surprise and fear instead. Fane stood there. After a killing spree, his white shirt still did not even have a drop of blood on it. Most importantly, Ned realised that Fane was wearing a pair of slippers, yet he could still move that fast. How did he manage that? “Young man, you must have used up all your energy! Aren't your hands tired by killing so many people?” “It’s time!” Scar finally made his move. He raised his knife,

stepped forward and jumped high up into the air. He held the knife with both his hands and cut Fane, who was beneath him. “The hungry tiger pounces on the food?” Fane smiled coldly when he saw the opponent’s scary pose. He suddenly moved as the person’s knife was about to touch him. This time, Fane was faster than before. Scar eyes blurred and the person was gone, his knife missed its aim! “How…how is this possible?” After Scar missed, he secretly gasped. He was very clear how ferocious this move was and it was almost impossible that someone could dodge it. Once hit, the other party would be dead or badly injured. Days ago, he used this move to kill a guy. As he was in a daze, he had a feeling that something was wrong. He felt a cold wind blowing from his back and a long knife pierced through his body from behind. “I…” Scar’s eyes opened widely. He then knelt on the floor and fell down after he looked down at the knife. “Brother Scar!” “Oh my god! Brother Scar is so strong and…” “Impossible! Brother Scar actually died like this?!” The remaining of the people felt a sense of relief when they saw Scar in action. They believed that it was the young man’s death when Scar took action. What they did not expect was for Boss Harvey’s right hand man, Brother Scar, to be killed like this. “Quick! Run!” Ned realized that there were still about a dozen people left and they were not Fane’s opponent so he was ready to run. “A trash like you want to leave?” Fane smiled coldly and looked at a knife under his feet. He kicked it, it flew and went through one of Ned’s legs from behind. “Ah!” Ned cried out a horrible scream and was in so much pain that he knelt down on one knee.

Chapter 138

”Ah!” Ned knelt on the floor and yelled loudly in pain, his forehead was covered in sweat. One of his legs was kneeling on the floor and the other crouched. He tried to stand up but the pain on his leg caused his legs to tremble and he failed every time he tried. He gritted his teeth, turned back and looked. Fane moved so fast as if he turned into multiple shadows, the followers behind him were continuously killed. This abandoned building

had turned into the hell on earth. “Ah!” In order to survive, Ned gritted his teeth and pulled out the knife from his leg with all his might. It was so painful that his brain came close to freezing and he almost fainted. The blood had already soaked through his pants after he pulled the knife out. After resting for a while, Ned managed to stand up and wobble feely as he tried to escape outside. However, the people behind him fell very quickly on the floor. Fane smiled coldly and had already stood in front of him after a few fast jogs. “Big...big brother. I beg you...please let me go. I’m willing to be your servant! I...I can give you money. I can give lots of money!” Ned turned around to look at the corpses on the floor. He was so frightened that he trembled as he spoke and his sweat continued to drip. He just realized what kind of people he had offended. “I've given you a chance, but you did not cherish it!” Fane had a calm expression on his face. He walked forward and cut the person’s neck with one swift move. Blood splattered everywhere. Fane turned around, retrieved a cigarette and lit it. He smoked slowly and walked toward his house. When he returned to his room again, Fane wore a slight smile as he looked at his wife and daughter, who were still deep asleep on the bed. “Honey, don’t worry. In the future, nobody would dare to have improper thoughts toward you. I'll protect you and Kylie in the future!” The next morning, Fane once again rode his electric scooter and sent Selena to her office. After he sent Selena to the office, he slowly went to the Drake family mansion alone. Not far away, Fiona, her son and Xena were in a hotel room. They stood by the window and looked at the situation in front of the villa’s entrance. “We would know soon if Fane and Selena are lying to us!” Fiona looked over and did not blink her eyes, afraid that her eyes would be blurred. When she saw that the bodyguards guarding the front door passed a cigarette to Fane and sent Fane through the entrance, she breathed out in relief. “It seems that your brother-in-law did not lie to us!” Ben was also relieved. “If this is the case, Fane only has to work for two to three years and our family would have the money! His salary is much higher than Ivan!” “Ivan’s salary isn't low. The key point here is that after

this person becomes the general manager, he consumed so much of the Taylor family's money and at the same time, he also gave himself a huge amount of bonus during new years!" Fiona gritted her teeth and continued, "The thing that makes me mad is your sister has contributed a lot for the Taylor family and she only gave ten to twenty thousand for family expenditure. She had no idea how to save money into her own bank account!" "Sigh!" Ben sighed. "Sister might not have any idea that we would be evicted. If she knew that we would be shooed out, she would have thought for herself!" Xena, who was by the side, had a troubled expression on her face. "Honey, what happened? Why do you seem unhappy?"

Chapter 139

Ben asked after he realized something was wrong. Xena smiled bitterly before speaking with a frown, "I gave your brother-in-law a lecture yesterday. I was concerned for your family at that moment. I spoke those words because I was afraid that he had provoked the Drake family. I'm afraid that he would hold this grudge in his heart and direct it at me in the future!" "Would he? He doesn't seem to be that kind of person. Besides, how would he dare to direct it at you when he owes our family so much?" "On top of that, what happened yesterday was a misunderstanding and it was understandable that we were afraid of him causing trouble to the Taylor family. This isn't your fault!" Ben said confidently. "I'm afraid that he would be upset and his promise to give you a car would be gone with the wind!" Xena gave him a piece of her mind. "Hey, it's nothing!" Fiona immediately said, "Don't worry about it. If he doesn't buy a car for you, mum will buy it with the money he gives me. He promised to pay a betrothal gift of 20 million. A million for a car for each of you would be a piece of cake!" "Wow, that's great! Thanks mum!" Xena immediately put a smile on her face and jumped in excitement. "As long as my son is happy." Fiona looked at Xena's pretty face and said with satisfaction, "Xena, it's been quite long since the both of you are in a relationship. When I get my hands

on the 20 million in two months' time, I'll bring Ben to your family and ask for your hand in marriage. How does that sound? We should try to choose a day and get the wedding done within this year!" "Yes, I… I'll obey to your words!" Xena lowered her head shyly and was secretly happy. It seemed that she was not far from the rich man's life. … "The call still can't go through?" Boss Harvey was in a villa. He was frowning and had a dark expression on his face. He ordered Scar to bring some people with Ned to take care of a veteran last night. They went out without a single news return. He had already made several calls but nobody answered and this made him uncomfortable. "Boss Harvey, we got news. Something happened, something really happened!" a man ran in and yelled out of nowhere. Some people stood around Boss Harvey. They were the capable ones that he remembered by names. "What happened? Don't rush and speak slowly!" Boss Harvey immediately stood up and asked. That person was huffing and puffing. He ran over to the table, picked up a cup of tea and drank big mouthfuls of it before speaking. "Dead...they are all dead! Last night, more than two hundred people were killed in an abandoned building. Now, that place has been locked down and the body is being transported for cremation!" "All...all of them are dead?" The corners of Boss Harvey's mouth twitched. His ears were ringing and he wondered if he had heard it wrongly. This really was a huge loss for the Dragon God clan. "They were sent to attack one person, and ALL of them are dead?" Boss Harvey sat on the chair and he held his fists so tightly that the sound of his knuckles cracking could be heard. "Years ago, Scar took two knife attacks for me... I had no idea… I, Harvey, swear that I would avenge for you, Scar!"

Chapter 140

"Who's that man? He's so powerful that he actually killed Scar!" A fatty frowned and looked serious. "So many people were there so it must have exhausted him. I know Scar's capability very well! He has a special trick that's so formidable that nobody can escape!" One other guy also looked

serious. “The focus now is that the place is currently locked down and the bodies are being cleared. Hence, we’re unable to inspect the scene. And when we’re unable to inspect the scene, we don’t know what actually happened!” He paused before he continued, “Is it possible that this man wasn’t alone?” “We don’t know about that!” Boss Harvey thought about it and he had a glum expression on his face. “I still don’t know who that person is. I only know that Ned and the others went out to play yesterday and a veteran hit him. Ned said that the person was very strong and asked to bring more people. He wanted more than two hundred manpower so I asked Scar to get his back. I had no idea that…” “If that is the case, that man wouldn’t have prepared, there’s a great chance that he was alone. If it was a one-man-show, then this person must be very strong!” “We must find out who this person is immediately. I guess we can only start from investigating who Ned offended yesterday!” another middle-aged man said after remaining silent for some time. “Yes, go ahead and investigate. I have to know who this is. I won’t rest in peace without having this man killed!” Boss Harvey nodded and said to the middle-aged man. … By this time, Ivan Taylor’s injury had recovered a little. He brought a few of his bodyguards and went to the Drake Dynasty Real Estate’s headquarters which belonged to the Drake Group. “Sir, may I know who are you looking for? Do you have an appointment?” the front desk of the company smiled slightly and asked. “Where’s the Procurement Manager’s office? I want to meet your manager, Miss Taylor!” Ivan smiled lightly and answered. To which the front desk replied, “Sir, kindly register yourself here. How may I address you? I’ll inform the manager.” “There’s no need for that, it’s too troublesome. I’ll go in and search for her myself!” The front desk could not stop Ivan. He brought his men and walked toward the office. Ivan did not see Selena in the Procurement Departmental Office. He then yelled loudly, “Selena, where are you?” “Hey, who’re you? You can’t just barge in here!” Sonia Neal immediately responded when she saw this aggressive man barging in. Ivan thought Sonia was quite pretty and had a nice figure, so he smiled and

replied, “Pretty lady, I’m looking for Manager Taylor, Selena Taylor!” “What business do you have here with her? I’m the supervisor here and our manager is really busy. You can deal with me instead! Who’re you anyway?” Sonia gauged the man in front of her. Although this person was arrogant and seemed untamed, he was well dressed and should come from a rich family. “My name is Ivan Taylor, her cousin. I have something important that I need to talk to her. I don’t want to talk to you!”

Chapter 141

Ivan looked around and walked inside while speaking. Soon, he saw the manager’s office. “So you’re Young Master Taylor. Let me inform our manager!” Sonia understood and said. “No need for that, I’ve found it. Isn’t this the manager’s office? Pretty lady, you mind your own business, I can go in by myself!” Ivan smiled, turned around, and ordered his bodyguards, “Wait for me at the entrance!” After he finished speaking, he pushed the door open, entered, and immediately locked it. “Why didn’t you knock?” Selena asked with her head down as she was busy with work. When she looked up, she was surprised. “Ivan Taylor, why’re you here?” Selena had no special feelings for Ivan. Years ago, Grandfather was mad and concerned of the Taylor family’s reputation when he chased her entire family out of the Taylor family. Selena did not blame her grandfather for this. The old master told her in secret that as soon as she made up her mind and aborted the child, she could immediately return to the Taylors. However, she was very stubborn and had her heart set on giving birth to the child. After all, that was a life and was her own child. The child was innocent! Old Master only drove her family out of Taylor family, but it did not end there. A few companies did not dare to employ Selena and it was all because of Ivan, who was currently standing in front of her. “Haha, can’t I come and visit you without a reason, cousin?” Ivan laughed and looked at the design of the office. “Hmm… Looks good. This office is quite big and the design looks good!” “I’m working. Please leave if you don’t have any business here. Do

I need to call the security to chase you out and make it difficult for you?" Selena had a cold expression on her face and sat right back on her chair. "Hey, cousin, what're you saying? We're a family and I'm your cousin. We often play together when we were kids, remember?" Ivan played the family relationship card before saying, "Alright, I'll quit beating around the bushes. Your company is in charge of the high end neighbourhood project at South Hill Real Estate, right? And you know that the Taylor family does construction material business. So, I hope we can work together for the sake of the Taylor family!" Ivan smiled in confidence and continued, "I believe that you as my cousin won't refuse? After all, as long as we can work together well, we can help the Taylor family establish itself as a second-class aristocratic family in the Middle Province!" Selena was speechless and her face darkened. "It had been just a few days since our real estate company has gotten the piece of land. You must have a very reliable network to have known it so quickly!" "Hey, cousin, listen to yourself. I'm sure that I'm not the only one who came to you these few days? Other families that do construction materials will come too!" Ivan smiled and continued in confidence, "However, I believe that most of them will come and leave in vain!" "Haha, you're so confident that you'd not leave here in vain?" Selena laughed and said, "Cousin brother, I'm afraid you still haven't realized this but after you got drunk the other day, Grandfather and your father knew that I was working at the Drakes. They even reminded me to be patient and to be fair about the cooperation between the Taylor's and the Drake's. They were afraid that it'd be detested by others. They asked me to only look into this after I've stabilized my job here!" Selena smiled coldly and continued, "You must have known that I 've become the Procurement Manager here and you want to cease the chance to perform. You want to get a big project to secure your position in Old Master and the Taylor's hearts, right? It's a shame that we can't work together this time!" "Haha!" Ivan laughed. "Selena, you're right, I do want to stabilize my position in the Taylor family. After all, I'd inherit Taylor family's estates, and that has nothing to do with

you, woman. So, listen up, I want to discuss about this big project!" Ivan paused and continued, "However, you've guessed it wrong this time. Grandfather was the one who asked me to come here! You wouldn't disobey his words, right? You wouldn't disrespect the Taylor family, right?"

Chapter 142

"Grandfather asked you to come here? That's impossible." Selena frowned and was wondering if she had heard wrongly. "Of course. I'm not here for myself, I'm here for the Taylor family. I'm also here as Grandfather's proxy to sign the contract with you! Ivan's face was filled with a big smile and said to Selena, "Of course, I'm being considerate. In order for you to advance further in the Drake family, I'd not make it too difficult for you on the profit share!" "Impossible!" Selena's face darkened. "You must be lying to me. Grandfather said that he would not force me to work together with the Taylor family when I've only just started working here. If the Drake's know about it, the Drake's would lose trust in me." After all, Selena knew Ivan's vile character very well. It was entirely possible that he was lying for profit. "Haha, if you don't believe me, you can call him right now. I don't have to lie to you about things like these." Ivan laughed and continued, "You should be sure in your heart that the old master had long hoped that the Taylor family would rise up to be one of the second-class aristocratic families. This is a great opportunity to get us to become a first-class aristocratic family. Do you think that he will miss this chance?" Selena's facial expression continued to darken as she heard this. She was very clear that the temptation of becoming a second-class aristocratic family was hard to resist. If this project was not too big, the old master would not have bat an eye and would make other long-term plans instead. However, it was no surprise that the old master was moved by such a big project that could bring the Taylor family to become a second-class aristocratic family. "Cousin, what're you waiting for? This is a very good opportunity for our family. You, as a part of Taylor's, should side our family!" After he finished talking,

Ivan retrieved around 200 thousand cash from his bag and placed it on Selena's table. "Consider this as part of your commission. After all, your daughter needs money to study. Although your salary is high, there is still some time before they pay your salary, right? Besides, the new semester is starting soon, you don't want your daughter to wait for another year, right?" When Ivan saw that Selena remained quiet with a dark expression on her face, he smiled and continued, "This small amount of money is surely not enough. I'm sure that you'd expect more than this for such a big project! I was thinking... That I should chase Fane out of our house when he can't pay the 10 million compensation on Old Master's birthday, and settle my issues with him later elsewhere! Now, however, it seems like there's a better solution!" Ivan suggested that he would now chase Fane out of the family if Selena agreed to sign the contract with the Taylor's. Selena was immediately enraged. "Ivan Taylor, what are you trying to say?! Didn't we agree that we would resolve that issue with a compensation of 10 million? You're going to chase him out and not acknowledge him as my husband if he can't come up with the money, and that is it!"

Chapter 143

Ivan smiled coldly. "Selena, you're too naive. He's supposed to kowtow to me and be chased out of Taylor family if he can't come up with the sum of money. By then, he wouldn't be your husband and wouldn't have anything to do with us. I'll get someone to beat him up and I'll do as I please." Ivan paused before he continued, "I know that you're softhearted and you'd definitely feel bad for him. I do have a suggestion for this. If you sign the contract with me, I'd void the ten million compensation, I can even give you twenty million to help Fane pay the ten million betrothal gift. The remaining ten million is for him to buy the old master a present for the Taylor's to accept him." The offer that Ivan made was really attractive and Selena was tempted. However, she shook her head. "No way, I can't promise you this. I can't do this as a member of the Drake Group's Procurement Department.

If Miss Tanya knows about this bribe, she would be disappointed. I can't betray her trust in me and Fane!" "Haha, cousin, are you stupid? Why're you still acting noble at this moment? You have to understand, the money I give you can provide you and your husband a good life. It'd also help Fane obtain the Taylor family's recognition! "If you guys can't come up with thirty million within the next twenty days, Fane will have to get out of the Taylor family and your parents will refuse to admit this son-in-law who married into your family." Ivan smiled. "I'm afraid that only idiots will make a decision like this!" "Don't you worry. Fane already said that he'll settle this before the old master's birthday and I trust him! Besides, he's Drake family's bodyguard and takes a monthly salary of 20 million. My mum had also become nicer to him, so you don't have to worry!" Selena was still very firm with her stance. "As a person, we must have a bottom line. I've languished through these five years of hardship and now that Fane has returned, my child has a father. Both Fane and I have jobs and I believe that our life will get better!" "Don't… Don't you want to get the recognition of the old master, father, and the rest of the Taylor family?" Disbelief was written all over Ivan's face. In his opinion, Selena had really made a very stupid decision. "You have to know that you can make use of your current occupation to get Taylor's recognition. You can be rich and live a good life. Why would you reject this life-changing offer? The old master will be unhappy if you do this!" Selena was silent momentarily and said, "I believe that the old master will support my choice. He's currently blinded by his desire to become a second-class aristocratic family. I believe that he'll understand that my choice is the correct one in the long run. I need to have achievements in the Drake Group and build Drake's trust in me. I believe that there'll be other opportunities for us and the Taylor family to work together!" Selena paused here and continued seriously, "Cousin, there's a saying, haste will ruin everything. Even if the Taylor family has high quality construction materials, are you sure that we can handle such a big project? Besides, this is only my second day working here. What would outsiders

think if I sign the contract with the Taylor's so quickly? All eyes are on me now!" Ivan agreed with Selena. However, in order for him to sign this big project and stabilize his position in the old master's heart, he smiled. "Alright, I know that I'm making things difficult for you. After all, this is your second day at work. How about this, I'd come over a few days from now. However, don't you sign the contract with other construction materials' suppliers, alright?"

Chapter 144

The corner of Selena's mouth twitched as her face darkened. "Ivan, I should've made it very clear to you. Don't you understand that it's not about the timing? It's about principles. Shouldn't we consider the Taylor family's long-term benefit and not rush into things?" "Hey, the old master dared to offer because he's confident in the quality of the Taylor family's construction materials! You're one of the Taylor's so you know very well the quality of our construction materials! We've always kept our reputation clean, right? You'd have to work with a company, anyhow. Working with us is no difference. Besides, you should have more confidence in your own family!" Ivan smiled and his sincerity felt more apparent. Selena hesitated because what Ivan said was true. If she could just oversee Drake Group's gossip behind her back… She trusted Taylor Group's material quality. "Selena, just agree already. This 200 thousand is just a token of appreciation and another 20 million is on its way. I'll forgive Fane and you don't need to pay me back. Save the 10 million for yourself. I'll also give you another 10 million for Fane to prepare the old master's present. Then it wouldn't look so bad on you both! Most importantly, the Taylor's will treat you and Fane better. So, why shouldn't we do it? This is such a wonderful deal! To those who gossip behind our back, we could prove ourselves with the standard of our quality. Reliability will be the best way to prove that we're the best partner to work with." Ivan's silver tongue was unleashed to its full potential at that moment. "I would like to have more time to consider. Please take the

money back because I won't take your money even if we are working together!" Selena looked at the money on the table before saying, "You should be clear of the kind of person I am. I won't agree to buy partnership with money. Besides, we will prepare the 10 million compensation and the 10 million for Grandfather's present. At worst, Fane can request for one month's advance pay from Miss Tanya. As for the money for my mum, we can settle that later!" "You…" Ivan was so angry as he came in complete confidence. He even assured the old master to wait for his good news because he was sure to get the project and sign the contract. He had no idea that Selena would need time to think about it and would refuse such a huge amount of money. "Okay, Selena. I'll give you time to think about it!" Ivan sighed, placed the money in his bag and was about to leave. However, he paused when he reached the door and smiled at Selena. "You can always give me a call if you change your mind!" Selena glanced at him. "Don't call me Selena. I know what you did to my family in the past five years behind my back. Insidious people like you don't deserve to address me by my first name." "Haha… It seems that you'll still like me to call you Selena Taylor, or...knucklehead!" Ivan laughed and strode out of the office. Years ago, Selena insisted on giving birth to the child and she ignored the Taylor's dissuades. Due to her stubbornness, Ivan would call Selena 'knucklehead' every time they met. This time, he would not have addressed her as Selena if he did not have to get into her good graces.

Chapter 145

Sonia and Felicia started gossiping in a corner after Ivan entered Selena's office. "Sonia, do you know who's that? He's so arrogant that he went straight into the office. He even brought bodyguards with him!" Felicia looked at the office before asking Sonia. Sonia smiled coldly. "Who can it be? He's the young master from the Taylor family, Ivan Taylor! He's one of the playboys. He manages the Taylor Group now and has been swindling the company's money!" "Really?" Felicia frowned. "Then why is he here?

I heard that Ivan is on the bad side of Selena because he has been against her since she was forced out of the Taylor family! “I think I know! Ivan is here just two days after Selena becomes the Procurement Manager. It’s clear that he wants Selena to sign the contract and give this big project to the Taylor family!” Felicia’s eyes brightened and continued, “If that’s the case then it’s fabulous! Doesn’t that mean that she’s abusing her power as manager? If I report this to the general manager and Miss Tanya, this woman will be done for good. She will have to quit the job and leave!” “Yes. If she were to allocate some minor projects to the Taylor’s family a few months down the road, we may now know it and the Drake family might just close an eye to that. After all, they’re indeed in the construction material business. However, she had just started working. It’s too obvious that she’s abusing her power if she gives such a big project to the Taylor family right now.” Sonia was very happy as everybody was waiting for Selena to mess up. They had no idea that the opportunity came so quickly. Both of them were waiting for Selena to mess up last night, but it did not happen. Instead, she left an extremely good impression in front of the employees. Sonia heard the discussion between employees about Selena this morning when she came in for work. Some said that her husband was handsome, rich, and good in fighting! Some of them applauded Selena for showing solicitude toward her subordinates and even praised her for standing her ground when Sean Logan wanted to treat her to a meal. They learned that she was uncorrupted as she did not accept any bribe from other people. This made both Sonia and Felicia extremely angry. They intended to frame Selena, instead, they failed and felt as if they have helped her build a good image instead. “Yes, our opportunity is here and we don’t need to do anything. We‘ll wait and expose her after they have signed the contract!” Sonia was extremely happy. She felt that her pursuit for the manager’s position will end soon. At this moment, they saw Ivan coming out from the office angrily. The expression on his face reflected his unhappiness. “Consider my *ss! She just doesn't want to sign the contract with us!” Ivan turned around and looked at the

office in disgust. He thought silently, ‘Selena Taylor, if you don’t sign the contract with me, I’ll not make it easy for Fane on Grandfather’s birthday. I’ll have him killed if he can’t come up with the money and chased out of the house!’ “Young Master Taylor, do you plan to leave?” Unexpectedly, Sonia walked forward with a smile. “As a supervisor, I think I can speak to you in private!”

Chapter 146

”Speak with you?” Ivan frowned and sized up the woman in front of him. The woman was around 20 years of age, dressed in professional office suit and skirt, and wore spectacles. She looked smart and capable. Ivan looked carefully and found out that she seemed quite pretty. “Yes, I’m the supervisor here and I’m quite influential!” Sonia smiled and continued, “There’re so many people here. Why don’t you come into my office and let’s talk among ourselves!” “Sure!” Ivan was secretly happy when he heard this. It was clear that she had something important to discuss with him if she insisted that they discuss in private. Did this pretty lady have her eyes on him? It would be nice if that was the case! They quickly entered Sonia’s office and she locked the door. “Tell me, what do you want from me?” Ivan smiled and sat on the sofa by the side. “Young Master Taylor, if I made the right assumption, you must be here for the project located in South City, right? It seems like a lot of people know that our company acquired that piece of land!” Sonia smiled, and served Ivan a cup of water. “Haha, we’re all clever people so I wouldn’t beat around the bushes. The Taylor family has always been in the business of construction material and we have a good reputation in this line of business! “My cousin is your manager. I‘ve been thinking about the cooperation between both companies since she’s the Procurement Department Manager here. It would be good if we’re appointed for half the project! “Who would’ve known that she’ll need time to ‘think about’ it. I feel that she was being perfunctory and didn’t want to secure me the project! She mentioned that she’s afraid of the gossip from

the employees of this company.” Ivan spoke his mind openly and he was obviously angry. After all, he promised the old master that he would successfully get the contract. How was he going to explain to the old master that he did not get it? Even if Selena changed her mind in the future, it would still be shameful for him to return that day empty-handed. “She didn’t agree? How’s that possible?” Sonia was surprised. If this contract was not signed, how would she have the chance to pull Selena down from her position? She thought about it and said, “She shouldn’t have done that. It’s possible for us to do business with just any company. Besides, you also emphasized that the Taylor Group’s construction material is of high quality! How can she do that? Does she still take you as her family? I would have agreed in a heartbeat!” “She might still bear grudges against us when we chased her out of the Taylor family! Sigh, women are petty!” Ivan sighed. “I think she’s avenging me!” “How’s this possible? I heard this incident happened years ago and it was her fault. Isn’t it right that she was chased out of the Taylor family? How can she blame you and your family?” Sonia seemed understanding. She thought about it and said, “However, since she said she’ll consider it, there’s still hope for your group. At least she didn’t outright reject it!”

Chapter 147

Sonia paused slightly before she continued speaking, “Young Master Taylor, let me tell you something. In the past, the people-in-charge from the construction material companies won’t discuss this matter directly with the manager. They’ll find me instead, the supervisor, and discuss with me first!” “With you? You can make the decision as a supervisor and we can sign the contract?” Ivan’s eyes lit up in an instant and spoke excitedly. “Miss Neal, I’ll definitely thank you in the future if you can sign the contract with me! I can give you at least twenty to thirty million!” Hiss! Sonia gasped as she heard this. She sure wanted to accept the money, but supervisors never had the power to make such a decision. The final say was always the manager.

Hence, she had only received small gifts like tea leaves throughout the years as a supervisor. Her position had hindered her to be entitled for expensive gifts. This was the reason Sonia wanted to become the manager. She thought that she could become the manager until Selena appeared. She was so angry she almost puked blood. “That much?!” She tried hard to keep calm. It would be nice if she was the manager as this project would earn her a huge amount of money. Although the contract still needed to be signed by the general manager after the supervisor’s decision, the manager was always so busy that he would not properly read it through. Normally, the contract only needed his signature after the contract was ready. Hence, the Procurement Department Manager in this company was a position that could reap a lot of benefit. “Haha, it’s not a lot! If the entire project is given to the Taylor family, we can make at least seven to eight hundred million. We might even make one billion if we do it right! By that time, this amount of money will be a piece of cake to the Taylor family.” Ivan laughed, “I intended to pay Selena 20 million as commission. It’s such a pity that this woman is hard headed and crazy!” “Young Master Taylor, I can’t make the final decision but I can help you find a way!” Sonia rolled her eyes and said again. “What can you offer me?” Ivan could not believe it. “Let’s put it this way. Any other construction material suppliers need to come to me first. My main job is to discuss with them and choose the materials. I’ll pass it to the filtered list to the manager so that she can further look into it!” “I can recommend the Taylor family to her in this process. I can amend the data from the other construction material suppliers, and even throw them in the bin!” Sonia smirked. “If this is the case, do you think I’ll be of help? She would have no other choices other than signing your contract after I’ve gotten rid of your competitor’s data. If you went to her directly it’ll no doubt create gossip. It’ll be different if I recommended it, the responsibility will be on me.” “That’s great! Your idea is really good. She wouldn’t be afraid of others gossiping about her if we go with this. She hesitated because she’s a very filial person and she knows that this is the old master’s idea!” “She won’t

hesitate if you become the scapegoat. I understand her very well, there'll be a high chance of success like this!" Ivan was ecstatic. "But, won't she realize that something's wrong if you get rid of the other competitors?"

Chapter 148

Sonia frowned then replied, "How about this, I'll stop the suppliers that're more competitive than your company. I'll lie to them about handing in their proposals. In the end, I'll only hand in the proposal from the Taylor's family and other minor competitors. That way, she won't have any choice but to choose you, right?' Ivan's eyes lit up. He stood up and spoke excitedly, "Sure, your idea is really good! This way, Selena won't be afraid of others gossipping behind her back. With your help, she won't be pressured by the burden!" "Yes. How about that? Told you I'll be of help," Sonia smiled slightly and said. "Come, here's 200 thousand!" Ivan smiled and offered the 200 thousand he prepared for Selena. He placed it on the table. "This money is a token of appreciation. Although you don't have the final say and can't sign the contract, I'll still pay you ten million as a token of gratitude once we succeed in this matter!" "Ten million!" Sonia was in ecstasy. She stood up. "You're most welcome, Young Master Taylor. Don't you worry. I'll do my best and persuade my manager, and help your family become a second-class aristocratic family! By the way, you should prepare three different copies of the contract. I'm afraid that she'll decline if the profit margin isn't of satisfactory…" "No problem, I'll get it done!" Ivan got up and quickly left. Sonia closed her office door right after Ivan left. She placed the 200 thousand on the table into her sling bag and finally relaxed. "I've never done something like this and I have no idea that I'll get such a huge offer. When this is over, I'll have ten million!" She then sighed and continued, "It's such a pity that I'm not the manager. It'll be much easier if I'm the manager." Ivan soon reached home happily in his car. "How is it, Ivan? Did you make it?" As soon as he entered the house, Theodore Taylor asked. "Don't worry. Although we haven't signed the contract yet, it's going to happen soon.

Selena said that she'll need time to consider. I'll rewrite the contract and organize the data for future submission. There'll be three contracts, one with a pricing that's lower than market rate, the second one based on market rate, and the third one with a higher profit margin. I plan to offer all three of it for her to choose!" Ivan smiled and said. Once they heard that success was just around the corner, happiness was written over Theodore and Old Master Taylor's face. "That's really good. Even if we offer a discount based on our normal pricing, we'll still earn five to six billion in profit. If Selena treats us well and allows us to use the market rate, earning eight billion won't be an issue!" Theodore was extremely excited. He had no idea that the Taylor family would get such a big opportunity. "However, Selena should understand our family very well. Why does she still require three different proposals? Is there competition from other suppliers?" Old Master Taylor understood the underlying meaning in Ivan's words. He frowned, "We can't be careless before the contract is finalized. Remember how we lost the previous project with the Wilson family?" The corner of Ivan's mouth twitched when that was mentioned. That was really shameful for him. "Don't you worry, Grandpa. I'm confident this time around!" "Selena hesitated in the beginning. After all, she doesn't have a stable position yet. However, I believe we'll succeed after she hears that this is Grandpa's idea!" Ivan smiled. He believed that this matter would be seamless according to his plan.

Chapter 149

"Aren't there other competitors that want the project?" The old master was obviously worried. Ivan replied, "Grandpa, don't worry. The other suppliers will join as a formality. We'll definitely land the contract!" … At the same time, James and his family were having a chat in the Drake family mansion's living room. As they were talking, the Drake family's butler walked in. "Master, something big happened last night!" "Something big? What happened? There're many powerful people in the Middle Province so it's

not unusual that things happen!" James smiled indifferently and thought it was quite normal. "Two hundred people from the Dragon God clan died last night in an abandoned building!" the butler spoke as he walked forward. "What? So many died?" Tanya Drake, the second daughter of the Drake family gasped as she was startled. It was normal for people to die from offending forces that they should not have offended. However, there were usually only a dozen deaths and it would be considered big news if 100 people died. This time, there were more than that and they were people from the Dragon God clan. After all, the clan was powerful and people dared not offend them. "What was the official statement?" James was quiet for some time before asking about the details. "There were no details about it. The official statement stated that it was a fight between two parties and that was it!" The butler smiled bitterly and continued, "But, I asked around and got to know that the situation was very scary! On top of that, a lot of people spread the news about this matter and everybody knows that it's not a fight between two parties." Fane, who was standing behind Tanya, was speechless when he heard this. "How scary was it?" "Super scary!" The butler glanced at Fane before continuing, "The other party was too good. I think nobody from the Drake family was good enough for him, because the bodies are all people from the Dragon God clan. From the looks of it, it was done by one individual. For one person to kill so many, this person must be good. Most importantly, the right-hand man of Boss Harvey from the Dragon God clan, Brother Scar, also fell victim to this!" "Brother Scar is dead?" James was emotional when he heard that Brother Scar was dead. "This person must be really good. Is it confirmed that he went alone and not with a whole group of people?" "Yes, I'm sure of it!" The butler immediately nodded and said, "The people from the Dragon God clan had always been carrying out bad deeds. Now, a lot of the people in the Middle Province are praising the hero who got rid of the bad people for the commoners!" "I really want to see who this hero is with my own eyes!" Tanya's eyes lit up and said in adoration.

Chapter 150

”He must be good!” Timothy smiled as he looked at Fane and said, “I wonder who’ll win if our 20 million-worth bodyguard fights with this so-called hero?” It was obvious that Timothy did not fully accept Fane and thought his dad had overestimated Fane’s ability. He tried having some hope for Fane to turn out fine but he thought Fane was just a normal person after meeting him. He always felt that instead of Fane, why not please the Gods of War with his family’s wealth. His father was obviously going toward the wrong direction. “Yes, do you think you can win? I’m curious as you have defeated Harvey!” Tanya was suddenly interested. She looked at Fane yearningly and asked. Fane was embarrassed. They were making it difficult for him when they asked him to fight with himself. “I need to meet him in order to give you an answer. I’ll definitely compare notes with him when we meet!” Fane thought about it and answered seriously. “Haha, you said this. Don’t refuse if I find this person. After all, I want to know your true capabilities from your fight with him!” Timothy smiled and said. Fane’s cell-phone rang at this moment. He frowned right after looking at it. ‘Female apprentice’ appeared as the caller’s ID. Fane was speechless as he had no idea why Lana, his only female apprentice, would look for him at this moment. “Sorry, I need to take this call!” After a shy smile, Fane excused himself. “Haha, this young man is really busy!” James smiled as he looked as Fane leave. “He… He has just arrived and wants to leave for a phone call?” Timothy’s face darkened. He looked on as Fane walked toward the entrance. “How’s that possible? Isn’t this his second day at work?” The butler was confused and chased after Fane. After a short while, he ran back and said while huffing, “Isn’t this bodyguard too much? He has only been here for less than ten minutes and left. He’s really making me angry. The twenty million is such easy money for him.” “Tanya, why did you agree to his request of twenty million? Why didn’t you negotiate? Look at him, is he worth so much?” Timothy looked at his sister impatiently. “I think he’s too

arrogant and he doesn't even act like a bodyguard. Does he even know that he owed us a favor? He's just an employee after all!" Tanya lowered her head in shame. "Father said that we have to please Fane. I thought about it and think it was a good chance to do so. After all, twenty million is a piece of cake for the Drake family. He said that twenty million was the minimum and it was obvious that there was no room for negotiation. How could I negotiate under those circumstances?" "He might only be overpricing himself. Who would've known you're so stupid to offer twenty million. He might have accepted the offer at ten million!" Timothy continued. "Don't fret it!" James waved his hand at this moment and said, "Don't be so stingy. It's just a monthly salary of twenty million. The Drake family can pay even if there're more of them! I believe in my intuition. This young man might be a God of War. Even if he isn't, he would definitely be a marshal. If that's the case, a twenty million salary is really low!"

Chapter 151

"That's right!" Upon noticing James was siding with her, Tanya rolled her eyes at her brother and said, "He was just answering a call. Perhaps he had some emergency or else he wouldn't have just bolted so suddenly, right?" When Fane arrived at the front door, he stood there for a brief moment before a black sports car sped toward him and stopped right where he was. A beautiful woman wearing a hat and a pair of shades sat in the car. She was dressed quite fashionably. "Master…" Lana called out excitedly when she saw Fane. "What did you call me?" Fane's expression dimmed as it seemed this brat's memory was bad. Fortunately, no one else was there or his identity would have been exposed. "Sorry, well, I was too happy. So…" Lana let out an awkward laugh. After that, she said, "Cough, cough. Mr. Fane, hurry up and get in, we'll talk as we walk!" "Alright!" Fane immediately got into the car as it swiftly sped off. "Good lord, isn't that the bodyguard, Fane? He had a hot woman pick him up?" "Yeah, and even in a sports car too!" "Oh, this Fane fellow is far too mysterious even if he's more

powerful than Assistant Commander Harvey. Or else, Miss Tanya wouldn't have hired him for 20 million bucks per month now, right? That's way too high!" "It seemed normal for this man to have a beautiful woman pick him up and be hired with a 20 million bucks salary though!" A few bodyguards that were posted at the door started discussing amongst themselves upon witnessing what had occured. "Why are you dressed like that? It's the first time I've seen you wearing a skirt!" Fane felt helpless as he stared at the long legs next to him. Lana had always dressed in military fatigues in front of him. Although she was an average-looking woman, Fane had never once viewed her as a woman. Today however, Lana's appearance surprised him. Lana was wearing a plain-looking skirt that only covered half her thighs. She also wore a pair of earrings and had lipstick on. She looked very feminine. Not to mention, her legs were very white, so much that they seemed to glare at people's eyes. However, perhaps it was due to her constant workout, that her leg muscles looked quite firm and seemed strong when viewed by others. A woman like her seemed quite exotic indeed. "I'm still a woman, what's so strange about me wearing a skirt?" "Besides, I'm already discharged and the military fatigues have all been returned. Do you understand? So, should I always act like a man, clad in full military fatigues, with a permanent bitter look on my face?" While Lana was driving, she said, "Sigh, I'm bored to death these days. All kinds of major powers want so badly to meet me. They come to my God of War Manor every night to the point where I'm almost passing out from it! You know that I hate business interactions too so I didn't even bother meeting them!" "Wait, you didn't meet them? How did you tell them that you wouldn't be seeing them?" Fane teased her about it after giving it some thought. "Heheh, I hired a housekeeper and some servants!" "Besides, I'm not even short in cash now right, Brother Fane?" Lana chuckled as she could not help herself from secretly glancing at Fane. She uttered silently in her heart that her master actually looked even more handsome without his military fatigues!

Chapter 152

“Yes, yes, yes. Now that we’re at peace, you guys should rest and loosen up a little!” Fane cracked a gentle laugh and said, “Your Brother Abner sent me a text saying that he was too bored and gonna go on a vacation.” “Really? When Brother Johnson returned, he was swarmed in his village by the people. I heard there are lots of people waiting to be autographed by him. Good lord, that scene though…” Lana laughed and said, “That’s right, Brother Fane, what about you? Does your wife and the others know your identity yet?” “Nope!” The hint of sweet smile could be seen on Fane’s face. No one had ever seen a smile like that back then. He said, “I don’t want to let them know about it for now. I’m afraid they might not be able to accept my identity if I dropped this bombshell on them. Not to mention, I wish to live a peaceful and undisturbed life.” “Sigh!” Lana lamented again after hearing Fane’s statement. She said, “Oh how I envy you. If I had known earlier, I wouldn’t have wanted this empty title or wished for it to be officially announced. Oh, how good would it be if I can live peacefully. Now, all of Cathysia knows how all nine of us, the Gods of War, look like. If they didn’t, I wouldn’t even have to wear shades to go out!” “I feel like you should be wearing a face mask. It’s not really safe just wearing a pair of shades.” Fane teased her as he looked at her appearance. The truth was, when Lana’s car was parked in front of him, he actually did not recognize that it was his female disciple right away. It was only after he heard her voice that he realised it was her. “Yeah, why didn’t I think of that? No, I have to put on a face mask later, especially in a crowded area. It’ll be bad if some random wealthy kid recognizes me!” Lana said immediately. “Oh right, the place that you’ll be taking me to, what kind of place is it?” Fane asked after some thought. “An auction house!” While Lana drove, she said, “I heard that someone has gotten their hands on a treasure. It’s a luminous pearl the size of a ping pong ball and is very special. If it’s placed on a bed frame, it can help in one sleep and there are even rumors that it can extend

one's life." "There's an auction house in this city?" Fane frowned and said, "That luminous pearl is pretty big, right? We should take a look!" "Yeah! Do you know what its base price is?" After thinking about it for a bit, Fane said, "We can bid for that thing since it's the old master's seventieth birthday soon and I'm still racking my head over what to get him!" "Really? If you want to bid for it then do it!" Lana laughed. "The main purpose today is to bid for that thing. This auction house usually auctions famous paintings or antiques. Today's luminous pearl is being auctioned privately and not many people know about it. They only informed some first and second-class aristocratic families and didn't even bother with the third-class aristocratic families!" "How did you know about it then?" Fane was surprised as he curiously asked. "Best you don't bring that up. Those random wealthy sons and all wanted to butter up to me. Did you know that as I was going out, I had just walked out the door when a few wealthy sons all came up to me with roses? These people don't actually love me though, all they see is my connections and power!" Fane said helplessly, "Best that you wear a face mask out later. Wear it like how the celebrities do or else you'll be recognized." "Oh, how nice your life is. If no one knows who you are, you don't have to worry about people bothering you when you're walking on the streets!" Lana was envious as she looked at Fane beside her. She said, "You even had your long term plans all thought out!"

Chapter 153

"Heheh, so in order for me to not expose my identity, you should bid for that luminous pearl in a moment!" Fane said while chuckling. "Yes!" As she said that, Lana let out a bitter laugh. At this moment, there were around seven to eighty bodyguards dressed in a black suits and standing by the auction house's door. They looked full of spirit and stood tall. They seemed quite powerful. "Are you both here for the auction?" One of the bodyguards asked when he spotted Fane and Lana. "Of course!" Lana smiled as she casually took out a black card and waved it in front of him. "Please, come

in!" The moment the bodyguard noticed it, he immediately took a step back and allowed them to enter. When they arrived at the auction, it was already crowded inside. Both Fane and Lana found a spot at the back by the corner and got seated. 'What is that Fane fellow doing here?" It was at this moment that Young Master Clark, who was already seated and was waiting for the auction, noticed Fane. He frowned and looked at Lana who was beside Fane before mumbling, "That's not right, the woman next to him isn't Selena. Moreover, who is that woman anyway? Her body isn't too bad, and she looks quite sexy and elegant too!" As he mumbled that, Ken's eyes lit up and said, "This woman isn't dressed normally. Those clothes are quite expensive too. Even the watch around her wrist is a luxury watch that costs a few million bucks. Could Fane be looking for a wealthy lady behind Selena's back?" Ken felt delighted at that thought. He originally felt quite hopeless but now, a ball of flame how burned in his heart once again. Prime Fighter Dan had advised him not to cross Fane. Moreover, even Marshal Dennis advised him the same thing that day. Although he was slightly confused, he still did not dare to act rashly or confront him directly. That was because of the fact that if both of them were afraid of Fane, it meant that Fane must have been quite a capable fellow. However, it would be much easier if there were problems in Selena's and Fane's relationship that would make Selena willingly leave Fane. With that thought, he instinctively took out his cell phone and secretly took a picture of them both. "Such a shame that they're not acting intimate. It doesn't prove anything if they don't hold hands!" "However, that woman is wearing a facemask along with a pair of shades. It's obvious that they have some secrets between them that they're unwilling to share. This wealthy lady might be afraid of her husband recognizing her, which prompted her to wear a facemask! I didn't expect that Fane would be a sugar baby for money!" Ken chuckled by himself while staring at the picture. "Oh, if it isn't Young Master Clark? You came too! What are you doing here mumbling to yourself?" After Micheal, who was a row behind, noticed Ken, he immediately sat next to him as he asked that

question. “You’re here too?” Ken was stunned and looked at Fane’s direction as he said, “I saw a familiar face!” “How did that brat come in?” When Micheal looked toward the direction Ken was glancing toward, his expression instantly dimmed as he noticed Fane.

Chapter 154

”Yeah. I also feel weird about it. What is he doing here!” Ken cracked a calm smile then said, “Young Master Wilson, look at the woman next to that brat. She’s obviously a rich woman! Do you know why she’s dressed the way she is, with a pair of shades and facemask?” “She’s afraid of people recognizing her, of course!” Micheal chuckled coldly. He was no fool, so why did he even bother asking such a foolish question? “Think about it, why is she afraid of being recognized by people?” “Since she’s a wealthy lady, of course she’s afraid of her husband recognizing her!” “Since she’s afraid of her husband recognizing her, what does that mean? Well, it means that her relationship with Fane isn’t that straightforward then!” Ken analyzed everything in great detail. “Yeah, I didn’t expect this Fane fellow to be such a f*ckboy. He kept going on and on about doing everything for Selena and yet, we didn’t expect him to cheat on Selena behind her back with a wealthy lady!” Micheal clenched his fist, his gaze filled with anger. If not because of Fane, how could Selena possibly be a mother now? She might have still been a young, beautiful, and innocent flower waiting to be picked by him! After Micheal was done speaking, he also secretly took out his cellphone and took a picture of them. He said, “If Selena saw this picture, I’m not sure what she’ll think!” However, there was something he did not expect. Both Fane and Lana noticed when he took the picture. “Brother Fane, I think someone was taking our picture. I wouldn’t be recognized even after the mask and shades I decided to wear, right?” Lana whispered to Fane where she sat. “No way!” Fane was stunned as he looked toward their direction. His expression immediately dimmed as he said, “It’s Ken from the Clark family and Micheal from the Wilson family. Both of them are my wife’s

pursuers.” “Really?” Lana looked at them and said, “I heard she’s a beauty and there are lots of wealthy pursuers after her. Even if she’s not pretty, her heart’s pretty. She must have suffered a lot for the five years that you’ve left, right?” “Yeah. I’m truly sorry for their five years of suffering. Hence, I’ll make it up to them!” Fane let out a bitter laugh and said, “After so long, I’m planning to arrange for her an unforgettable wedding of a lifetime!” “Oh, how envious I am of you two. You two are a perfect match and literally made for each other!” After Lana said that, she felt slightly envious in her heart since she felt that she had never seen a man more capable and outstanding than Fane. “That’s weird, when have you learned how to butter me up?” Fane said with a gentle chuckle as he looked at Lana. “I’m speaking the truth! What do you mean butter you up?” Lana cracked a bitter smile. “Oh good lord, it’s that b*stard again!” It was at this moment that the Hugo family’s Young Master Neil walked through the front door with a bunch of his lackeys. When he noticed Fane, he instantly and furiously clenched his fist. He could never forget the incident where he was beaten to a pulp by Fane for trying to flirt with Selena upon noticing her beauty as she rode the electric scooter. Ever since then, he had employed some ruffians to take care of Fane along with him. However, he never expected them to be so useless as they stumbled away from Fane after getting beaten by him. On the other hand, he was violently slapped by Fane a few times. So much so, his entire face was swollen and he dared not return home that day. He was afraid of being teased by his family if they saw him in such a state. He did not expect to run into Fane, who was fully prepared to bid for the luminous pearl today.

Chapter 155

“Who is that, young master?” One of his lackeys looked at Fane. He had no clue who Fane was. “That was the brat who beat me up last time. Goddammit, I can’t let him get away this time!” Neil was incredibly furious as he told that to the man next to him. “This is an auction house, young master. It’s not appropriate to fight here!” The man immediately advised

him. He then said, “Although I’m powerful, it would mean I’m disrespecting the boss of this auction house if I were to cause a scene here!” “You?” Neil looked at the man in a suit. Since his father had hired a few bodyguards for him recently, he could not help but chuckle coldly and say, “You should forget about it. You’re no match for him. I employed about 20 ruffians back then and they were all still no match for him!” After he was done saying that, he immediately continued, “Let’s do it this way, you can go out there and get me 50 to 60 people. Look for people under Old Roger. Although they are more expensive to hire, they are quite powerful. Some of them are also quite ruthless. Money isn’t a problem as long as I can take care of that brat!” “But young master, we can’t actually fight here!” The middle-aged man had a helpless look on his face. Neil was speechless for a moment before he furiously glared at the man. He said, “What’s wrong with my father to hire an idiot as my bodyguard? I wasn’t asking you to beat him up here, right? All I’m telling you to do is to look for some people who will wait for that brat to get out of the auction house so that we can take care of him somewhere else!” The middle-aged man had a very bitter look on his face. However, all he could do was nod as he said, “Fine, fine. I’ll get to it now. As for the money though…” “I’ll transfer it over to you right now but those ruffians shouldn’t cost that much. Give them a few ten thousand bucks to a million and that should be enough. I’ll transfer four million to you first.” Neil swiftly took out his phone and transferred the cash over to him. The man took a glance at Fane and silently thought just how unfortunate it was for him to have crossed the vengeful Neil Hugo. He would have rather Fane crossed anyone else but him. It was only after the necessary arrangements were made that Neil looked for a seat on the side. Aside from the Hugo family, there were also several more second-class aristocratic families who came to the auction. However, the boss of the auction house did not even bother to inform the third-class aristocratic families like the Taylor family about it as a third-class aristocratic family would be unwilling to spend on a treasure like this even if they came. Besides, this luminous pearl was a

special pearl. It had the effects of extending one's life and aiding one’s sleep. Therefore, it could be considered a very rare treasure. Of course, aside from the second-class aristocratic families, even some wealthy merchants rushed over when they received news about it. They were interested in witnessing such a treasure. Since a natural pearl the size of a ping-pong ball was something they had never heard of before, they were here to see it for themselves. “The members of the White family are here!” Soon, a wave of cheers roared out since even the White family, a first-class aristocratic family, came. To make a surface-level power comparison, the most powerful family in the entire Middle Province was naturally the Drake family. However, aside from the Drake family, there were four other families who had similar power as the Drake family. They were called the Four Major Families by commonfolk. These families were all considered first-class aristocratic families. The White family was one of the Four Major Families. After both Fane and Lana heard the announcement, they turned around to look over. In that instant, both their eyes lit up. A young lady with slightly curly long hair that was dressed in a long white dress and holding onto an adorable bag appeared. She walked inside with a faint smile on the edge of her lips. Beside that, the young lady was followed by a few bodyguards. With a single glance, anyone would feel incredibly refreshed just by seeing her. “It’s the lady of the White family, Rue White!” After a wealthy merchant noticed her, his eyes lit up as he said, “In this younger generation of beautiful women, this young lady here could easily compete with Selena!”

Chapter 156

“That depends! Some people would think that Selena looks the best and seems more feminine because when a woman reaches the age of 25 to 26, they look their most attractive!” “However, Rue is an incredibly innocent young woman and besides, she’s only 22 and single. Ever since people heard about Selena’s marriage and how she already has a child, those young

masters who pursued her back have now moved onto Rue!" "Besides, I think they both were one of a kind beauties. Oh, that's right, isn't that Goddess of War currently in the Middle Province? That woman is also a beauty as her body is incredible and seems very exotic. It's such a shame that her status is too high and it would be virtually impossible to get her!" Another wealthy merchant said that with a bitter smile after giving it some thought. "Hey listen, someone's calling you a beauty?" After Fane heard their discussions, he could not help himself from teasing Lana. Lana raised her head pridefully and said, "Well of course, but what do they mean by exotic? I'm offended. Don't I look like an innocent, young woman at first glance?" At that moment however, Ken and Micheal had actually approached them. "Oh my, isn't this Selena's husband, Fane?" Standing in front of Fane, Micheal intentionally exclaimed it loudly as if he was worried that people around would be unable to hear him. Just as expected, many people, including Rue who had just arrived, turned to look at their direction after hearing him say that. "That's Selena's man?" "He's not dead after serving in the military for five years? He's already back?" "There are lots of veterans returning recently. It seems like that takeout delivery boy isn't dead yet and has followed them back!" Instantly, sounds of discussions started filling the room. "Heheh, Michael, right? Young Master Ken is here as well, so this is such a coincidence indeed. What exactly is today, to have run into quite a few of my romantic rivals?" Fane chuckled but his expression soon dimmed. He said, "It's not a good habit to have a crush on someone else's wife. Not to mention, you guys are quite the clingy type even though she clearly has no feelings for either of you!" "You…" Both Micheal and Ken clenched their fists at the same time. They were incredibly infuriated since this brat had the audacity to call them clingy. However, a woman like Selena was someone they were willing to be clingy for. "Heheh, Fane, you're trying to intentionally infuriate me, aren't you? I won't fall for your tricks!" It did not take long for Ken to smile again as he looked at Lana beside Fane. He then spoke with a smile, "Who's this woman, Fane? You both intentionally chose

to sit in such a secluded spot in a wide open hall. Don't you dare tell me you don't know her!" "Heheh, is it really that important to know about my relationship with her? What does it have anything to do with you?" In Fane's eyes, both of them were nothing more than annoying flies. "Oh please, you don't dare to say, right?" Fane's reply made them even more erratic. Even if Fane told them about their relationship, they would not dare validate it anyway. However, Fane was not being bold enough to explain anything about their relationship. Hence in their eyes, Fane was guilty and afraid of people finding out about how he was being a sugar baby to someone else. "I have no reason to answer to you!" Fane chuckled coldly while feeling extremely dissatisfied.

Chapter 157

"Sigh, that woman might be the wife to some wealthy merchant, right? The watch around her wrist costs more than a million though. However, the only thing I'm curious about is why she's wearing a mask and a pair of shades?" Ken sighed before saying, "So I believe even without me saying anything, anyone smart enough would be able to guess the relationship you two share, right?" "There's no way, right? Fane is actually Selena's husband? That's impossible, right? He has the audacity to look for other women when Selena is so stunning?" When a middle-aged wealthy merchant heard that, he was shocked. "Who knows what the reason is. Look at that wealthy lady, she's not that old, plus her body is amazingly exotic. Man, for a wealthy lady like her, even if she doesn't give me any money, I would also be willing to do other things with her! Let alone if she's giving him money!" Another elderly man could not hold himself back as he secretly gulped while looking at Lana's sexy legs. "Yeah, I would also be willing if I were him!" A young master from a second-class aristocratic family beside them was also extremely excited. He said, "Even if I'm the one forking out money, I would also volunteer myself!" "I'm not the wife of a wealthy merchant. Besides, why does it concern you as to what kind of relationship Fane and I share?"

Lana's expression turned bitter and her voice sounded extremely cold. This made everyone feel as if the entire room's temperature had dropped by several degrees. That strong statement had actually silenced many people there who were discussing about them. "Of course it concerns me!" Micheal finally spoke up at that moment and said, "That statement proves that Fane is cheating on his wife to be a sugar baby. Heheh, if he's really that capable, we wouldn't make fun of him if he's able to find a few more women to accompany him. The unfortunate thing is, however, wouldn't a man feel ashamed to be a sugar baby?" "That's right, he's even a veteran! How could he sink so low upon returning home to look for a wealthy lady? Is it because he could no longer bear the military life? It's such an embarrassment to veterans!" Ken and Michael were insulting him as if singing a duet. "If you guys don't shut up, believe me that I'll end you both!" Lana could no longer hold her anger back since she felt extremely insulted for a God of War to be labeled a sugar mommy. Not to mention, what offended her most was that these imbeciles were actually insulting the Supreme Warrior, the most respected individual in all of Cathysia, by calling him a sugar baby. They should have known that he was Lana's master. Although she could bear being insulted, she could never allow her master to suffer the same fate! "Look, she's getting mad now, isn't she? Were we right then? Look around you, this is an auction house and you wouldn't dare beat someone up in a public place, right?" Ken had a smug look on his face as he said, "Come on then, you're a woman and yet you wish to assault us? Do you actually think that I, Young Master Ken, am an incompetent match against a woman?" Lana immediately stood up and the instant she clenched her fist, an immensely menacing aura emanated from her body. Although such a menacing aura was invisible. However, it was still very intimidating as it unknowingly startled both Ken and Micheal to take a step back. Upon noticing a fight was about to break out, Fane grabbed Lana's wrist and said, "This is an auction house. We are here for the auction and besides, if we butt heads with trash like them, it'd be embarrassing to our status!" Fane's

expression was extremely calm. “Good point!” It was only then that Lana calmed down and got seated again. They were lucky that this was not a battlefield because if it was, those trash in front of them would have already been dead a hundred times over. “Heheh, keep pretending then. I believe you both know the consequences of assaulting us and cannot bear it!” Michael chuckled before telling Fane, “Say Fane, what do you think will happen if we tell your wife about you meeting a wealthy lady here? What would she think?”

Chapter 158

“Heheh, you both sure know how to worry now, don’t you!” Fane chuckled then told Ken, “Ken, do you know there’s a saying ‘know your place’? You should really learn from it. I believe Dennis had reminded you about it previously when you tried to forcefully demolish our home, right? Are you sure…you still want to go against me?” After Ken heard that threat, his expression instantly dimmed as he started to worry. Due to how powerful Fane was, not even their Prime Fighter Dan would be a match for him if he actually was offended and was out for his Clark family’s blood. That would be very bad for them! It was only with that thought that he said, “I-I won’t go against you or out my way to make things difficult for you. However, I’m only here to offer you a word of advice. Selena’s so nice to you and yet you have the audacity to do this for money…” “Young Master Ken, I somehow feel like you’re slightly afraid of him?” Micheal was no fool and was instantly able to notice Ken’s anxious behavior. He frowned. “Are you kidding? Me, Young Master Ken, is afraid of him? Oh please, he’s nothing but a takeout delivery boy. How could I possibly be afraid of him when he’s only been in the military for a few years?” Ken immediately slapped his chest in a forceful show of courage. “Fair point! Let’s go, I’m actually quite interested to see how you would explain this to Selena once the truth gets out.” After Micheal said that, he left with Ken. Besides, their main purpose here was to see if Fane had actually become a sugar baby for money. From

the earlier situation when that wealthy lady got agitated, it was evident enough that their relationship was not that straightforward. This alone was enough for them. “That’s Selena’s husband?” Rue took a look at Fane and frowned as well. She said in a soft tone, “I didn’t expect him to do such a thing for money!” After a moment, three more first-class aristocratic families had arrived as well. They were the Mont family’s young master, Grayson Mont, a fat lady from the George family, Sharon George, and the master of the Roy family, Robert Roy. After all three major families arrived, another round of cheers and applause roared from the crowd. The members of the Drake family arrived soon after. This time it was Timothy who came with a few bodyguards from the Drake family. After Timothy arrived, it did not take long for him to notice Fane. His expression instantly turned bitter. He said, “Why did that brat come here? Who’s that woman next to him? He had the audacity to not take his bodyguard job seriously and instead come over for a date?” Timothy looked at Fane from a distance. He felt very displeased in his heart. However, he soon decided to pretend not to see him and walked alongside the members of the Four Major Families as they got seated in the front most seats which were intentionally reserved for them. After a few minutes went by, an elderly man with a short and quirky hairstyle walked up the auction stage with a smile. “What a crowd we have here today. Even some wealthy merchants who were uninformed by us of this event are also present here today!” The elderly man glanced down the stage and spoke with a smile, “Let me start with an introduction, I’m today’s supervisor…” After the introduction was over, the elderly man said, “There is only one item we’ll be auctioning off today and it is none other than a luminous pearl we had previously obtained. This item here is a precious treasure indeed. Not only is it the size of a ping-pong ball, it has the effect of extending one’s lifespan and if it’s placed near one’s bed, it will aid their sleep.” “Alright already! Just tell us how much the base value is! Everyone here is very busy!” The Mont family’s young master seemed quite impatient as he bluntly said that. “Yeah! I still have to go for lunch soon!” Sharon,

who had an extremely fat face, mumbled her words unclearly while munching on some popcorn. She was obviously a heavy eater. Judging from the size of her body, she might have weighed around 200 pounds.

Chapter 159

Grayson looked at the fat lady next to him and was instantly speechless. This woman was really getting fatter. If this kept going, she would have a hard time getting married. However, when he turned around to look at Rue on the other side, he felt like his mood had instantly recovered. It seemed Rue was quite the eye candy since she looked prettier the longer he stared at her. “Heheh, alright then. The base value of this object starts at 10 million! Of course its value far exceeds 10 million bucks and I believe everyone here knows it. Therefore, our rule for incremental bidding is that it cannot be lower than a million!” The old man chuckled on the stage and hammered his gavel down immediately as he continued, “This auction will officially begin now. This treasure belongs to the highest bidder!” “A million? Even I’m embarrassed to call out a million bucks!” A wealthy merchant immediately stood up and said, “This item can slow down a person’s metabolism slightly, so it has an effect of extending a person’s lifespan. If this item is placed beside a pillow for an extended period of time, extending a person’s life by two to three extra years shouldn’t be a problem, right?” After he was done speaking, he raised his hand immediately and said, “I'll offer 20 million bucks!” As Fane stared at the object from a distance, he knew for sure that this item could aid one’s sleep. However, he was not too sure about its effect of extending one’s lifespan. “Can it really extend a person’s lifespan?” Lana, who was watching from the side, looked at Fane before asking that question. “I’m not sure but who cares? It’s still a treasure! I have to get it!” Fane said after giving it some thought. “Alright then. Since I haven’t given you a gift yet, I’ll give this to you then!” Lana nodded since she knew Fane did not wish to expose his identity. As such, it seemed that she had to be the one to buy it for Fane. “20 million? I’ll raise it to 30

million!” After Sharon was done eating her popcorn, she wiped her hand with a tissue before raising her hand and giggling as she spoke. “Oh no, it seems that the George family also has their eyes on it. At this rate, it’ll be impossible for anyone who wanted to make this a simple purchase!” “Yeah. Since everyone is raising it by 10 million, this really isn’t an auction meant for us to participate!” A few wealthy merchants who were here to spectate could only crack a bitter smile as their initial intentions were completely shattered as they saw how the situation was being played out. “Alright! Miss Sharon truly knows her stuff. The offer price is now at 30 million, is there anyone who wants to bid?” The elderly man chuckled and nodded his head on stage. They estimated that this pearl would be valued at a billion bucks! That was because this pearl was actually worth that much. “I will. I’ll raise it to 40 million!” Ken exclaimed. “Hehe. Young Master Ken, I’d stand by you if this was anything else.” “However, I too, have my eye on this toy!” Micheal chuckled and immediately raised his hand and said, “I’ll raise it to 50 million!” After he was done, he turned to look at Fane and secretly muttered in his heart, “If I win the bid for this toy and give it to his wife, I refuse to believe that she’ll still stay loyal to him for a gift this expensive! Not to mention, I’ll show her the picture of him and that wealthy lady. Perhaps, in a fit of rage, she’ll impulsively cheat on you!” With that thought, Micheal silently gulped. Selena had also impulsively gave birth to Kylie with that brat Fane in a fit of rage then, right?

Chapter 160

“Why don’t you make a bid for me later? Just raise a random number. People will assume you’re my lackey. That way, your identity won’t be exposed!” Lana said that to Fane after some thought. Fane nodded and said, “Sure, I want to mess with those two anyway!” After he said that, Fane immediately raised his hand and said, “51 million!” In that instant, everyone turned to look at him since the brat had only raised it by a million. Even Lana was embarrassed by him because everyone else was raising the bid by

multiples of 10 million and this man had disrupted the rhythm by only raising it by a million. “Wow, Fane, I didn’t expect that wealthy lady of yours to be quite rich herself. She’s actually taking part in the auction!” Michael was stunned. He then spoke with a smile, “Us members of wealthy families have already begun competing amongst ourselves. Therefore, you merchants should just forget about it. Just keep your money and stick to investments, alright!” “Raising the bid in multiples of a million? It seems they couldn’t bear to part with their money?” Immediately, Neil started chuckling. He then raised his hand and said, “I’ll raise to sixty million! You can ignore Fane’s bid now!” After hearing that statement, the expressions of many wealthy merchants grew bitter. It was already obvious for them that they would be unable to snatch the item. Although they could still compete now, they would soon be unable to withstand the pressure from the major families. Besides, even if they fought desperately to snatch the item, would this not offend them? That was something they needed to consider seriously. “Heheh, Young Master Neil, are you certain you’ll be able to ignore my bid price? You truly underestimate my friend here!” Fane chuckled and bluntly exclaimed, “A hundred million!” “One-one hundred million?” The edge of Neil’s mouth twitched violently. Was this brat just not willing to part with his money earlier? How could he casually raise the value by so much? “This brat showed his hand without beating around the bush!” The Mont family’s Grayson looked at Fane in surprise. He exclaimed, “This brat sure is interesting!” Ken leaned closer to Micheal’s side and said, “Young Master Michael, somehow something feels very off to me. How could that wealthy lady be so rich? There’re very few wealthy merchants who could so casually offer up a hundred million, let alone a girl. If this woman was using her husband’s money, it would be impossible for her to offer a hundred million bucks with so little regard. At the very least, she’ll need her man’s permission to do so, right? Could this be her own money? Is she a female entrepreneur? This seems to be the only reason that makes sense if she can spend that kind of money in such a confident manner.” Micheal also had a

puzzled look as he said, “However, don’t we know pretty much every wealthy woman in the Middle Province? How could I have absolutely no recollection of anyone who could so casually fork out a hundred million bucks and let alone, at such a young age? I believe she's a secret mistress to some major wealthy man or else, it would be impossible for me to not know her.” “Heheh, this will definitely put a stop to regular merchants bidding now!” A wealthy merchant who had originally intended to offer a 70 million bid let out a bitter laugh. He had now completely given up. However, the stunt had made many people skeptical of Lana’s identity. Who exactly was she to make such a ruthless offer! “Oh my, you’re rich, you handsome man!” Sharon had not paid much attention to Fane earlier. However, when she turned to look at him, she gulped as she thought about just how handsome he was. He radiated masculinity and had the effect of making people fall in love with him at first sight. As he noticed a fat woman gulping while staring at him, Fane’s heart shuddered as he said, “It’s not me who’s rich, I’m merely helping my friend next to me to bid!” “How handsome!” Sharon winked at him and said in her charmed state, “Hey handsome, do you want me to bid for that item for you and give it to you to show you my feelings?” Fane nearly passed out from that remark as he said, “Sorry, I’m not interested!” “Pfft! You’re no fun!”

Chapter 161

Sharon rolled her eyes at Fane, turned around, and said, “I’ll raise it to 120 million! I’m buying it for my grandfather. He seems to have trouble sleeping recently!” “150 million!” At this moment, the Roy family’s who had previously been silent all this time immediately stood up and raised his hand. He said, “I will raise the bid to 150 million bucks!” “The Roy family’s master also has his eye on it to make that kind of bid!” “That’s too much! He’s truly from a first-class aristocratic family. Spending 150 million bucks just to buy that luminous pearl? This price should be close to its original amount now!” “I’m not sure if anyone else would still fight for it?” Many

of the wealthy merchants were in complete shock. It had only taken a few couple minutes for the price to skyrocket from 10 million to a baffling 150 million bucks. When Micheal thought about gaining Selena's favor and how she might jump into his arms after giving her such an expensive gift, he stood up while gritting his teeth and said, "180 million!" "Good lord!" At the side, Ken was shocked by his actions as he said, "Don't act so rashly, Young Master Michael. Although this pearl is precious, 180 million bucks is way too much. Even I don't desire fighting for it any longer…" "What do you know? I have my uses for it. This pearl might actually extend one's lifespan. The staff from the auction have validated the fact that if this pearl is placed next to one's pillow for an extended period of time, it can slow down one's metabolism. Although its merely a subtle change, it's actually quite effective!" Although Micheal was explaining this to him, he was actually scoffing in his heart. He secretly muttered, "Just wait till I give this pearl to Selena. After I sleep with her and gift her this in front of you while she's in my embrace, will you truly understand what winning in life means. You'll be so envious of me then." Women often had little to no resistance toward certain precious items, not to mention that this would cost him 180 million bucks. Selena might actually be incredibly touched once she knew this. Moreover, after he told Selena about Fane going to look for a wealthy woman, he could use the opportunity of her despair to comfort her. Would this not work out for him then? Micheal cracked a grin on the edge of his lips while thinking of this. "Nephew Michael, are you going to fight for the thing I have my eye on as well?" Robert frowned before he smiled at Michael and said, "Are youngsters like you not uninterested in enjoying life without any regard anymore? When did you start getting interested in treasures like these?" Robert was completely speechless as he assumed his high bid for the pearl would allow him to obtain it without a doubt. However, he had never expected… "Uncle Robert, this is an auction so it's a free for all, right? There is no trivial rule that youngsters have to submit to their elders now, is there?" Michael shrugged his shoulders. The edges of

Robert’s mouth violently twitched but in the end, he still spoke with a smile. “Fine. Since you want to fight against me, then don’t mind if I do! 200 million!” “Are you mad? The Roy family is a first-class aristocratic family!” Ken instinctively tugged Michael as he advised him with a soft tone. “So what if it’s a first-class aristocratic family? The Wilson family is very close to being one soon. Besides, if a first-class aristocratic family harbored hatred just because they lost a bid, wouldn’t that be too petty? Are they not afraid of being mocked by people?” When Michael started thinking about Selena’s body and how amazing it would feel to hug her, he felt excited. Barely getting seated again, he immediately stood up and was just about to raise his hand to make a bid. At the moment, no one else dared to name their bids anymore. It seemed it was now down to him and the Roy family. This item would soon be in his hands. “Sigh, 300 million!” Right then, a lazy sounding voice could be heard, instantly silencing the entire room.

Chapter 162

“Good lord, I didn’t mishear, right? From 200 million jumping to 300 million, that’s a little too insane now, isn’t it?” “That wouldn’t be a mistake, right? Even if she’s just adding a hundred million without hesitation, it’s still a hundred million bucks. Even if it’s a first-class aristocratic family doing so, they would still have to seriously consider spending that much money!” “Yeah, maybe 210 million bucks is enough to win the bid? Wouldn’t saving 90 million bucks be a good thing?” Plenty of wealthy merchants and second-class aristocratic families were completely shocked by what had happened. Of course, the Roy family, the Four Major Families, and Timothy who had not even made an offer yet, were also startled by the current outcome. What was even more unexpected to them was that the person who made the bid was none other than Fane. “Fane, are you sure it’s 300 million bucks? Have you asked the person beside you? You wouldn’t just be randomly calling out numbers now, would you? If you call out a bid and actually win it later, you won’t be able to escape if you can’t pay up!”

Michael told Fane while pointing at him. He was incredibly furious in his heart as he had already stood up with his hand raised, about to call out another bid. After the stunt Fane had pulled however, he felt very humiliated. “That’s right, brat. Don’t just randomly call out numbers! Or else, don’t even think about leaving this place!” Timothy was also incredibly furious. The 200 million offer he made was already an astronomical amount but with Fane’s 300 million bucks offer, this felt like a blatant insult to him. Fane shrugged his shoulders as he responded. “Yeah, I did. I wasn’t just yelling random numbers!” Upon noticing all the shocked and surprised expressions from everyone, Lana found the situation quite hilarious as she calmly nodded her head and said, “Yeah, I agreed to it. Don’t worry, money isn’t a problem!” Everyone was speechless. They found the woman’s identity even more mysterious since there were actually very few wealthy ladies who could so casually fork out 300 million bucks. “320 milion!” After giving it some thought, Timothy actually stood up and raised the price. Plenty of people gasped as they did not expect anyone else to attempt to fight for it still when it had already reached 300 million bucks. This single luminous pearl was quite the hot sale now. However, everyone calmed down when they thought about how massive the Drake family business was. 300 million bucks would make plenty of second-class aristocratic families feel immensely pressured as the pearl’s effectiveness to extend a person’s lifespan was still unclear. There would be an enormous difference between the current bid price and the pearl’s actual base price if this was merely being used as a sleeping aid. However, a price tag like this was absolutely no problem for the Drake family. “320 million!” After gritting his teeth, the master of the Roy family, Robert, made another offer. “350 million!” Unexpectedly, Rue actually stood up at this moment, raising the bid once again. “I…” Michael was a little displeased. If he spent 300 million, his father would lecture him without a doubt as the company funds were a little tight at the moment. However, he thought about how he would be using this pearl to win Selena’s heart and besides that, if he could win the bid, it would

prove the Wilson family's strength and make them proud. He hardened his heart and said, "360 million!" "400 million!" Fane actually raised his hand and yelled out. "You…" Michael was beyond furious as he somehow felt Fane seemed to be intentionally targeting him by adding so much money on a whim. "420 million!!"

Chapter 163

The corners of Timothy's lips twitched repeatedly. Initially, he had assumed he would be able to win the bid at 320 million bucks. However, he did not expect… As the price climbed up to around 400 million, it did not matter if they were Robert, Grayson, Sharon, or anyone else for that matter, they all sat down immediately and dared not make another bid because the price tag was now just too extravagant. Although they all wanted it, they were stopped in their tracks. "500 milion!" Once again however, Fane cracked a calm smile as he stood up and said, "My friend next to me said 500 million!" Even the old man on the stage was incredibly excited. They were paid by commissions and a price like this was something even he had not expected. This time, even Timothy dared not raised the price further as he sat there alone, frowning depressingly. "500 million, going once! If no one else is adding then this pearl will go to that beautiful woman's hands!" "500 million, going twice!" The old man was beaming on stage, just waiting for the moment to hammer down his gavel. "Wait!" At that moment, Timothy stood up immediately. He looked directly at Lana then said, "I'm very curious to know who this beautiful woman might be? 500 million bucks for a single pearl isn't too huge an amount but anyone without more than 1 billion bucks in hand wouldn't make such an offer now, right?" "Yeah, I'm very curious too. I don't remember any wealthy women with a net worth of over 1 billion bucks in the Middle Province to be so young. You couldn't possibly offer up 500 million when you only have ten in total just to buy that pearl, right?" Michael had also stood up immediately and said that. "Yeah, who is that woman exactly? That's far too much money, right?" "I

also feel off about it. Furthermore, why did she wear a facemask and a pair of shades? Is she trying to not be recognized by people?" Most of the wealthy merchants started to discuss among themselves. Lana scoffed in her heart and said, "I am not required to tell you guys who I am, right? Since this is an auction, the item will naturally go to the highest bidder. If you guys are not raising the price, then that luminous pearl is now mine!" Many were silenced as her statement made sense. "Alright then. 500 milion going thrice! Sold!" The old man who stood on stage overseeing the auction had finally hammered down his gavel hard before telling Lana, "Please come on stage to have your card swiped, miss!" "No problem!!" Lana walked up the stage immediately while Fane followed beside her. "I'm interested to see if you truly have that much money!" Timothy was incredibly furious but could not do anything. What was more baffling to him was the fact that Fane, a Drake family bodyguard, had come here during working hours to go on a date with her! He was suspicious of Fane and was very sure that Fane was a sugar baby under that wealthy woman's care. This wealthy woman might not be from the Middle Province however, and most likely came from somewhere else. However, how did she learn about the pearl that would be auctioned off today? "She actually did it!" It did not take long for everyone present to watch Lana successfully pay the bill by swiping her card through the machine. On the side, the old man placed the luminous pearl into an intricate, small box before handing it over to Lana. "I've got the men ready, boss. Since we'll be beating Fane up in a few moments, why don't we snatch the luminous pearl from him as well!" Neil's personal bodyguard behind him took a step forward and whispered into his ear.

Chapter 164

Neil's eyes lit up as he heard that. He cracked a sinister grin on the edge of his lips as he said, "You sly fox. You've finally gained some intelligence! That pearl is worth 500 million so if we can snatch it, we'll make a huge profit!" "Heheh, that's right!" The bodyguard chuckled as they both strode

out. When outside, they saw more than a handful of men standing at the plaza's corner. One of the men was dressed poorly and seemed very disheveled. Some of them wore sleeveless shirts, the exposed muscles on their arms looking very intimidating. "Young Master Neil's lackey said our main target this time is a young man. He said that although he might seem very young on the surface, he's actually really powerful. If not, we wouldn't have gathered so many men here!" "Don't be careless later. They might be getting out soon." "Don't worry, we have numbers on our side and our target is only one man. He might actually piss himself out of fear from how many people are out to get him. Not to mention, we have a few black belts with us!" a chubby-looking man spoke while giggling. "Fair point. Although we only have 60 people with us here, our overall combat power is really strong!" The chubby-looking man clenched his fist and immediately demonstrated a flying kick. The pose looked really cool. After he was done speaking, he immediately noticed Neil and his bodyguard were already walking out. While they were both outside, Neil's bodyguard whistled. "Come on, let's go!" One of the men waved his hand and brought the group over to meet them. "Keep an eye out for someone for me. There's a woman beside the little brat. She's wearing a pair of shades and a mask. Besides just beating that brat up, I want you guys to also snatch a tiny wooden box from that woman!" Upon noticing Fane and the others were not out yet, Neil thought of something and said, "We will be watching you guys from a nearby spot. Just pretend you don't know us, alright? We can't allow them to know it was us who hired you guys, do you understand?" "Alright, Young Master Neil! Don't you worry, our mouths are sealed!" The chubby-looking man assured confidently while slapping his chest. "Alright, don't approach them directly later. Just pretend you guys have noticed a beautiful woman and intend to get your hands on her. With that, they wouldn't think that you're going to rob them!" After some thought, Neil swiftly added that statement before leaving with his bodyguard. As they had just arrived at the other end, more people were exiting the plaza. It did not take long for the

ruffians to spot both Fane and Lana. “Damn, look at that woman’s body! It’s so exotic!” Upon noticing the situation, a bald man silently gulped and said, “Especially those long legs. They aren’t chopstick-esque legs. They’re firm and meaty. Not to mention, her breasts are huge!” The chubby-looking man chuckled as he noticed how the bald man was behaving. He said, “I didn’t expect you to be so lustful. Let’s go, you take the lead…” “Heheh, okay. Later when we’re snatching that box away from the woman, we can touch and feel her up to our hearts content. This isn’t so bad after all!” The bald man touched his bald head while flames of lust shone in his gaze as a group of people soon strode over toward Fane and Lana. “Hey, Young Master Michael, why do I get the feeling that those people are targeting Fane and that woman?”

Chapter 165

Michael was having a private conversation with Ken nearby and it did not take them long to notice the group of people. “Yeah, they were swarmed immediately after exiting. Judging from the look of things, someone hired them privately. Oh boy, Fane and that woman better be ready for a world of trouble real soon!” Michael nodded as he made his speculations. “Heheh, they might be after that luminous pearl!” Ken chuckled and looked at Robert nearby as he said, “Could it be Robert’s doing? He was quite aggressive during the auction earlier.” “Aside from him, it’s also possible that it might be Timothy’s doing. I have a feeling that Timothy isn’t someone who likes to be crossed!” Michael looked at Timothy from the side. At that moment, it did not matter who they were as everyone was interested to see what would happen after noticing the situation happening nearby. They would all not be leaving for now. “Hey girl, you ain't too bad and that body sure is something!” The bald man’s face was beaming as he approached Lana from the front and made that remark. He then said, “What are you wearing a facemask for? Come on now, let big brother take a look. How do you look? Heheh…” The bald man had a teasing look on his face. They thought that if

they roughed a woman up, the man beside her would probably intervene since he was known to be quite capable. When that happened, they could beat the man to a pulp and rob them blind at the same time. Of course, he would not mind feeling the woman up as they snatched that prized item off her. He wanted to feel her to his heart's content and fully enjoy her body. However, they did not expect Fane to stand there beside her, completely unmoving. “Weird, this man isn’t going to step in? Is he not afraid of what we’re going to do to this woman?” The bald man was stunned but his arm was already reaching out toward Lana’s facemask. He wanted to rip it off. “Awesome! We can now see who that woman truly is!” Micheal had been long interested to see who exactly the woman was. However, she had not taken the bait when they were intentionally provoking her at the auction earlier. They could not do a thing if she did not want to take her facemask off. He did not expect the opportunity to come so soon. Grayson looked at his lackeys beside him. They were also nodding in agreement as it seemed they wanted to know the woman’s identity and how she looked like, as well as how she was able to offer 500 milliion bucks to win the bid for that luminous pearl. Neil eyeballed his bodyguard as they were waiting to watch how the scene unfolded. Especially Fane, as he had the audacity to slap him three times previously. Today, he wanted him to know just what ruthless actually meant. Just when the bald man’s hand was about to touch Lana’s facemask, Lana grabbed his wrist in an instant. “Ah!” That bald man immediately yelled out in pain as the strength that came from Lana was terrifyingly strong. A slight twitch was enough to make him nearly kneel and scream out in agony. Was this an actual woman? How could this woman who was dressed in such feminine clothing possess such inhuman strength? “So, you think trash like you have the right to touch me?” When Lana was at the auction earlier, she was forced to roll with the punches in order to prevent her identity from being exposed. She did not expect that the instant she got out, she would be met with a situation like this. This instantly ignited

the fury in her chest. “Dammit, I’m still a 6th dan black belt taekwondo master!” The bald man gritted his teeth before giving Lana a kick.

Chapter 166

“Good lord! That bald man happens to be black belt taekwondo master and a 6th dan even!” “Yeah! That’s pretty impressive!” Two wealthy merchants exclaimed immediately as they witnessed the scene. “Thud!” Unfortunately at the very next second, everyone was completely baffled as they all saw Lana release his wrist and immediately clench her fist, instantly connecting it with the man’s thigh. A strong wave of force instantly sent the bald man flying as he landed on the ground two meters away. The bald man cried out in agony again when he crashed on the ground. “So, it seems like a 6th dan black belt is nothing more than this!” Lana chuckled, extremely dissatisfied. “That woman is actually this powerful?” They were all shocked once again when as they watched what happened. “F*ck it, let’s all go after them!” The bald man gritted his teeth and when he picked himself off the ground, he realized that the skin on his palms was all scraped off. He felt extremely humiliated as he was being watched by many powerful people at the moment. “Ah!” In that instant, those holding steel pipes immediately rushed forward all at once. Of course, there were also some black belt masters in the mix. “Need help? Although you seem like you can handle yourself but as a gentleman, I should still ask!” Fane had a calm look on his face as he stood on the side. “I can take care of these scum!” There was no hint of fear from Lana as she stood to face these men who were rushing at her. Rather, she approached them on her own accord. “Thud, thud, thud!” It did not take long for such a baffling scene to occur happen. It did not matter if they were black belt masters or regular thugs, they all laid agonizingly on the ground in less than two minutes while crying out in pain. “Tell me baldy, what are you guys after? Are you guys planning to snatch the luminous pearl off me? Who hired you guys?” Lana had finally walked in front of the bald man and questioned him with a cold tone. She emanated a terrifying aura. “We’re

dead now, young master. There were so many people, even several black belt masters, and they were still no match for them!" "In the case that he rats us out, would they come after us?" Neil's personal bodyguard was so terrified at that moment, his legs trembling as he felt slightly weak. He heard Neil say that Fane was incredibly powerful. Why did he get the feeling that this wealthy lady was even more terrifying than Fane? Although he had not seen Fane unleash his powers yet but based on the combat ability the woman had showcased earlier, she could only be described as terrifying. He knew in his heart that he was absolutely no match against her. "Don't panic, didn't they mention earlier that their lips are sealed? They will never rat us out!" Neil was also slightly worried in his heart. He tried to stay calm as he said that, gulping. "We-we're just passing through. We only came over after we noticed how attractive you are!" The bald man cunningly replied, thinking quickly on his feet. After he was done speaking, he noticed Lana's long and sexy legs as he laid on the floor. His nose had nearly bled and with the angle he was in, it would have been embarrassing if she had not worn safety pants! "Heheh, passing through?"

Chapter 167

Lana chuckled coldly and said, "I refuse to believe such a coincidence. We had just come out and somehow, you guys just so happen to appear here? Not to mention, if you were just passing through, why'd you bring along a crowd with you?" "We were originally planning to pick a fight with someone else, hence the crowd. However when we were passing through here, we noticed your huge breasts and perky butt. I could not hold myself back from toying with you both. Is that alright?" The bald man continued. Nearby, when Neil and his bodyguard heard that excuse, they let out a sigh of relief. Fortunately that bald man was smart enough to spin an excuse and not rat them out. "Ah!" At the very next second however, Lana immediately stomped on the back of the man's hand. She spoke in a terrifyingly deep voice. "Have I not been letting you come clean? I refuse to believe in

coincidences! Heheh, it's a good thing that you guys appeared after the auction was over!" "I-I'm telling you the truth!" The bald man gritted his teeth and persisted with his lie. The expressions of many men dimmed upon witnessing Lana's ruthlessness. Although this woman was attractive, any man of hers would have difficulties in controlling her. Both Ken and his bodyguard grew anxious again. "Let's bail now in case they break, young master. I think this woman isn't the type to talk things out!" "Not to mention, Fane is also a dangerous man to mess with!" The bodyguard was already starting to become afraid as he whispered that to Ken. "It's not wise to leave now, right? The others are spectating here so if we're the only people to leave, wouldn't this show that we're guilty?" "At that point, we might rat ourselves out before they do!" Neil's expression was dim since not a single person from either the Mont family, the George family, the Roys', or the White's had left the scene. Even the wealthy merchants were patiently waiting for a good show so how could they leave then? "Heheh, you have a pretty tight mouth there!" Since Lana noticed the man was unwilling to spill the beans, she aimed at a very specific spot on his body as she laughed and said, "Say, if I stomp my foot there, would you actually become a eunuch?" As soon as he heard that, the bald man nearly wet himself. That was far too brutal. Lana was already lifting her leg when the bald man hesitated. Her high heels seemed too blinding to look at. "I…" The bald man looked at Neil's direction and was not bold enough to speak since he had made a promise to Young Master Neil. However, he also did not want to end up as a eunuch. As Neil gritted his teeth, that imbecile actually pointed at him before yelling out, "Even if you kill me, I won't speak a damn word!" Lana looked at Neil before releasing the man. She calmly said, "Your lips are definitely sealed alright!" "Come over, Young Master Neil!" After she said that, Lana gestured at Neil to come over. "Lady, pretty lady. What are you calling me for?" Neil had a bitter look on his face and his voice sounded shaky. "So you expect me to come over and personally bring you here? You won't live to see tomorrow if I have to do so." Lana exclaimed coldly.

“You’re not afraid now, are you, Young Master Neil? Hahah, so you’re a coward then, Young Master Neil?” Fane cackled out loud with a disdainful look on his face. Young Master Neil gritted his teeth and walked over. He said, “What’s there to be afraid of, it’s not my doing anyway. Therefore, why should I be afraid? This is truly comical!” “Exactly, we’re not afraid!” His personal bodyguard also followed behind immediately. He then furiously told the bald man who was lying on the ground, “Who the hell are you? Why are you blindly pointing at Young Master Neil? Are you trying to frame our Young Master Neil?”

Chapter 168

“Truly unexpected. It was actually Young Master Neil’s doing!” On another side, Ken frowned and said, “Why did Neil do that?” “I’ve never heard of Neil having a grudge against Fane before and he didn’t pursue Selena as well, right?” “From the look of things, that brat is most likely after the luminous pearl! He doesn’t wish to spend money on it so he had someone else rob it for him! I didn’t expect that woman to be so powerful!” Michael began to speculate. None of them were fools and it was obviously Neil’s doing when the bald man pointed directly at them instead of anyone else. “It’s unclear what exactly Neil was thinking of to take such a risk when her identity is still a mystery!” On the other hand, Grayson chuckled coldly. Sharon was completely star-struck as she only stared at Fane. She could no longer hold herself back as she walked up with a few people beside her and asked Fane, “Hey handsome, you’re Fane, right? Can I add you on WeChat?” Fane felt awkward as he replied, “Sorry, I’m not into these sorts of things!” “Oh please, you’re only with that wealthy lady for money, right? “Just tell me, how much does she give you per month? I’ll double it!” She then continued, “But I’m still a virgin and I’ve never given ‘that’ a thought… So, we’ll take it slow, alright?” Fane almost passed out from that remark. He, a proud guardian of Cathysia, an honorable Supreme Warrior, was actually being… He decided to ignore Sharon completely as he then

spoke to Neil, “Neil, do you think we can believe a word you say?” “He’s framing me. What right do you both have to accuse me of hiring these people?” Neil puffed out his chest and spoke confidently. “Slap!” However, Fane immediately gave Neil a hard slap as he said, “Who gave you permission to lie?” “You-you dare hit me?” Neil was beyond furious as his face warmed instantly. There were second and first-class aristocratic families present, along with many wealthy merchants. Moreover, even the Drake family’s young master was here. Yet, Fane still dared to hit him. With so many people watching, how would he be able to show his face anywhere else in the future? Although he was previously slapped thrice, there had not been many powerful people present then. “Slap!” Fane gave him a back-handed slap again as he said, “It’s not the first time anyway. Since you’re this forgetful, naturally, I should educate you well!” His personal bodyguard was completely shocked as he wondered who was Fane exactly? How could a veteran act so rashly? How could he actually be bold enough to hit Neil? Their Young Master Neil happened to be a young master to a second-class aristocratic family! “No way! Fane’s actually this bold?” Even Timothy was shocked as he wondered if he was mistaking the scene at hand. Robert, the Roy family’s master, was also stunned as he thought about just how bold this brat had to be. “That’s awesome, you finally unleashed your fury! I actually thought you lacked masculinity when you didn’t do anything earlier. I didn’t expect my Prince Charming to be so masculine. I-I worship you deeply. Oh, I absolutely adore you now!” Standing at the side, Sharon was completely charmed. She clasped both hands together while placing them on her chest, her eyes filled completely with stars. “This brat…” “Is he not afraid of angering the Hugo family?” Michael was gobsmacked as this scene was something he had not expected. His personal bodyguard could no longer hold himself back. He immediately clenched his fist before lunging forward to unleash a powerful martial arts move at Fane.

Chapter 169

However, Fane moved his body slightly to the side, easily avoiding the assault before giving him a swift kick that instantly connected with the man's chest. "Thud!" The man coughed out blood as his body shot up several meters from the ground before smacking back down against the ground. He felt a sharp pain radiate from every inch of his body, it was as if every bone in his body was about to break. "Really, it really wasn't me!" How could Neil even dare admit it was himself. If he did, would that not mean he was admitting to being a vile and petty person? If word got out about him hiring some thugs to snatch the item away after losing the auction, it would put the Hugo family's reputation into the dirt without a doubt. "So, you lack the courage to admit something you're bold enough to do? What kind of man are you?" Fane gave another back-handed slap across the man's face. This time, Fane put more force into it, so it did not take long for the man's face to swell up. "You, if you dare hit me again, I'll let my father know and he'll never let you go…" "Slap!" "I-I'm the Hugo family's young master…" "Slap!" Every time Neil tried to argue, Fane would slap him across the face, sounding louder and sharper than normal. "Yes, it was me!" Neil was at the brink of tears and if he persisted under these circumstances, he would be slapped to death by Fane. However, he immediately added, "But I only hired them to beat you up. That was because when we met previously, we had some conflicts and I held onto that grudge ever since. I only wanted to teach you a lesson and had absolutely no intention to snatch that luminous pearl from you!" "I can barely believe half the things you say!" Fane stared coldly at his swollen face, waved his hand, and said, "Beat it. Best you show up less often in front of me in the future. Since you're clueless on how you should act as a human and love lying, I'll give you a good lesson on how to act like a human!" "You…" Neil still wanted to impulsively leave behind some threats since it was an ingrained habit. However, after being glared at by Fane, it terrified him so much that he turned around and bolted away. After the bodyguard noticed the current situation, he clambered up from the ground immediately and ran away with

Neil. “That brat. How dare he hit Neil?’ Michael frowned as he was also a young master to a second-class aristocratic family. However, the brat was so bold that he had actually hit Neil in public without being afraid of the Hugo family’s retaliation. However, he soon thought about something else. Could it be because of how powerful the woman’s status was? Without a doubt, Fane had to be standing under the shadow of the woman’s protection to do what he did earlier. “This time, you’re not being quite as low profile. A mix of major and minor powers from the Middle Province have witnessed what you’ve done!” Lana said to Fane in a soft tone while looking at him. “Sigh, if I don’t demonstrate some ferocity, I’m worried they might annoy me like flies!” “Besides, didn’t you provide me with some form of cover earlier? Your performance earlier terrified them!” Fane lowered his voice as he said that. It sounded very soft so most people would find it very difficult to hear him. “Let’s go!” Lana led Fane back to her sports car. “Hey handsome, you can also leave me your number. I know you’re called Fane, am I right? I overheard it earlier. Hey, don’t leave. I’ll find you and don’t you worry, I can double the price. If you think I’m fat, I can lose weight too!” “I was also a beauty back then!” Sharon’s voice could be heard from behind them. Although she was fat, her voice was still quite sweet. After the car left, Sharon lowered her head depressingly and looked at the excess fat on her belly. She said, “I really was a beauty back then. However, I-I just can’t control my mouth!” Swiftly at noon that day, news of Neil being slapped and the mysterious woman spending 500 million to buy the luminous pearl spread all across town.

Chapter 170

“Good lord! That’s too outrageous!” When Ivan returned home that night, he excitedly said, “Grandpa, father, I heard very shocking news this noon!” “What news?” Old Master Taylor, who rarely ventured outside his home, asked curiously. “I heard a veteran slapped Young Master Neil a few times repeatedly until his face was swollen. It’s far too insane!” “Bloody hell,

they’re not sure who that veteran was though? Man, the huge amount of guts he has! The Hugo family happens to be a second-class aristocratic family so wouldn’t he be disrespecting the Hugo family for slapping Neil’s face?” While Ivan poured himself a glass of red wine, he spoke in a very ecstatic tone, “It’s my first time hearing of such a masculine man. He’s truly my idol!” “A mere veteran was bold enough to slap Neil’s face and disrespect the Hugo family?” Theodore was a little unconvinced. He said, “Is your information reliable?” “Should be, I heard it from a construction merchant. He said that man was extremely powerful since he’d almost made Neil cry just from being slapped.” After Ivan took a huge gulp of red wine from his glass, he put it down and spoke emotionally, “The most important thing is that there was a luminous pearl auctioned off today. The pearl was no regular pearl and was as big as a ping-pong ball. Based on what the specialists have found out, not only can it aid one’s sleep just by placing it next to their bed, but it can even slow down a person’s metabolism to the point of essentially extending one’s lifespan a little!” “Something that mythical exists in this world?” After Old Master Taylor heard that, he felt quite excited since a treasure like that would be most tempting to elderly people like him. He was about to turn 70 and his body was getting weaker by the day. If he actually had a treasure that could extend his lifespan, he might actually live a year or two longer. “Sigh, if we only learnt about this sooner. If we knew, we could go to the auction to bid for it. Then we could have placed it next to your grandpa’s pillow. Wouldn’t that be nice!” Theodore looked at Ivan as he lamented. Ivan immediately cracked a bitter smile and said, “Father, it’s not only us who wanted a treasure like this. The other wealthy merchants, first and second-class aristocratic families, and heck, even the Drake family wanted it too! Man, the people from the auction house didn’t even bother to inform third-class aristocratic families like ours. They only privately contacted the first and second-class aristocratic families, including the Drake family!” “It’s uncertain how some wealthy merchants got wind of the auction since they showed up too. However, they

were only there to spectate because they can't compete against those families!" Ivan continued. "Really? Since the Drake family went and had their eyes on a treasure like that, it should have most likely fallen into their hands, right?" Theodore said after pondering for a moment. "Nope!"

Chapter 171

Ivan shook his head and said, "After a round of fierce bidding, the luminous pearl landed in the hands of a mysterious woman. She didn't seem old, but she bidded for it with 500 million bucks and won." "500 million bucks?" Old Master Taylor inhaled sharply after hearing that. This was an impossible price; even if the Taylor family knew about the bidding beforehand, they would have just attended it for fun. They were incapable of gathering that much cash for a luminous pearl. But of course, the Taylor family did have the money. They just needed to keep their assets for development. Therefore, their capital was not as huge as some second or third-class aristocratic families. "The woman who paid 500 million bucks, is she the wife of some first-class aristocratic family head?" Theodore was shocked. "Probably not, she was wearing a face mask and shades, and she seemed very mysterious. Word around town is she has an amazing body and is probably in her twenties. No one knows if she's got a millionaire sugar daddy or how she looks. She's rich and powerful!" "I heard that just as she left the auction, she was circled by Neil Hugo's men. They were probably trying to steal the luminous pearl but guess what? There were about 50 or 60 men at the scene, including a few black belt holders, but they were all defeated by the woman. This woman is no joke!" After saying so, Ivan continued, "I heard the man who slapped Neil was accompanying the woman. I suspect that he's her bodyguard but some said that it was her sugar baby since he was quite good-looking! Anyway, I don't know everything about the situation since the millionaire who was talking to me was unclear about some things." "This shows that the woman definitely has a complicated background!" Old Master Taylor nodded and said, "I don't care

whether that guy is the woman's sugar baby or her bodyguard. Given that he had the courage to slap Neil Hugo, it shows that he does not fear the Hugo family at all!" "But aren't the only people who don't fear the Hugo family include the Four Major Families and the Roy family? This woman is not from those families. Could it be that she came from another town?" Theodore was confused. If it was someone from those families, everyone would've recognized her even with the face mask and shades. "Probably not. Let's not forget that these powers are prominent and well-known!" Old Master Taylor forced a smile and added, "What about the powers underground? They're not weak at all. Just look at the Dragon God Clan who lost 200 men to an attack a few days ago. These powers are scarier since we don't know how much money they have! On top of that, veterans have been coming home recently, and there are some generals or warlords among them. They're rich as well!" "That makes sense… Anyway, since he dared to hit Neil Hugo, this shows that he has a complicated background as well!" Ivan nodded and said, "I heard that the woman has an amazing body, but no one knows how she looks. Meanwhile, the man seems threatening enough if he hit Neil to the brink of tears." "I'm curious, who is the hero who killed 200 men from the Dragon God Clan? The Dragon God Clan is no good news, so everyone's hailing the killer as a hero now!" Old Master Taylor forced a smile and said, "This time, after the attack on Neil, who knows how the Hugo family will feel. The Hugo family is strict on discipline and extremely careful about things. They've been worried that Neil would get into trouble and that was why they did not allow him to command any bodyguards. Alas, there's still an issue." "Dad, our men checked it out the next day. They said that there was a sandal's print in the unfinished building. Judging from that, the mysterious hero must have been wearing sandals at the time!" Theodore was deep in thought for a while before saying, "F*ck, being able to kill so many men of the Dragon God Clan while wearing sandals? My idol, this is definitely my idol!"

Chapter 172

“Stop talking about idols!” Theodore glared at his own son and said, “For those first and second-class aristocratic families, of course they would know someone this strong, right? Take Dan Jameson from the Clark family. I heard that he could defeat a few hundred men alone!” “Dad, Dan is definitely no match for my idol!” “Think about it, my idol is very mysterious and righteous. He had the courage to fight the evil forces!” “Secondly, he was fighting in sandals and managed to come out of it safely. As for Dan, I heard that he suffered severe injuries back then. Therefore, I believe that the man who dared fight the Dragon God Clan is definitely a lot more powerful than Dan!” The more Ivan thought about it, the more he idolized the mystery man. He wished that he could meet his idol. “Sigh, unfortunately for us, although we have quite a few bodyguards ourselves, they’re not great. None of them are strong enough.” “Nowadays to get a better bodyguard, it would cost a few hundred thousand bucks. In fact, some of them will demand for over a million bucks for their monthly salaries. If we were to hire a few of them, it would cost a lot!” Theodore sighed and said, “What we need to do now is to get the South City property project. When we get it, we’ll have more money to hire some professionals!” Old Master Taylor looked at Ivan and said, “You have to talk about this with Selena, okay? I know there were misunderstandings between you two back then, but I hope that for the sake of the Taylor family, both of you will be able to let bygones be bygones!” “Don’t worry grandpa, I’m okay. I’m just worried that Selena might still be mad about it!” Ivan continued with a smile, “When we become a second-class aristocratic family, we must get a few professionals. If we could hire the man who killed the 200 men of the Dragon God Clan overnight, that would be great!” Soon after leaving the auction, Lana passed Fane the box with the luminous pearl inside. Seeing that it was getting late, Fane got on his electric scooter to fetch Selena from work. At the same time, Timothy was sitting with Old Master Drake and the others at the dinner table.

“Where’s the luminous pearl? Did you win the bid?” Old Master Drake looked over at Timothy and asked. The family had stayed home for the day so they did not hear about what happened in the afternoon. “You’ve probably gotten it, haven’t you? I heard that the starting bid wasn’t high, so I estimated that you could bid for it with a maximum of a hundred million bucks!” “Getting such a huge luminous pearl with a hundred million bucks, on top of helping improve sleep and extending one’s life; a hundred million bucks would be worth it!” Tanya said happily. “If only it was that easy!” Timothy forced a smile and said, “It was bidded by a mysterious woman. But I’m curious about one thing. Fane was there as well. Who is that woman? She was strong so who knows if Fane was really her sugar baby or her bodyguard!” The more Timothy thought about it, the more he frowned. “If Fane really was her bodyguard, that isn’t that betraying us, the Drake family? He’s the Drake family’s bodyguard. Is he doing this part-time behind our backs? How could someone be this unprofessional?”

Chapter 173

“Brother, what are you saying? What mysterious woman? What professional bodyguard? And why was Fane there?” After hearing her brother mumbling to himself, Tanya was confused. “Oh, so this happened. When I arrived today, I realized…” Timothy looked at the crowd and started speaking about this afternoon’s events. “Fane actually hit Master Hugo? That woman used 500 million bucks to bid for the luminous pearl? My God, I should’ve followed you there this afternoon. I shouldn’t have slept in. I missed such a great show!” Tanya was worked up over it. The more she thought about it, the more she regretted not following her brother to the auction today. “Fane is a sugar baby? Haha, it’s funny people actually think so. Fane has enough money. Moreover, we pay him 20 million bucks a month, which is more than enough for him. Does he really need to be a sugar baby?” James Drake laughed and said, “Since this woman was wearing a face mask and shades, I think she definitely has a complicated background.

As for Fane, it's impossible that he was her bodyguard. They were probably together as friends. It's already a downgrade for Fane to be a bodyguard for us, so it'd be impossible for him to find a part-time job!" "Dad, aren't you putting him on too high of a pedestal? Is he really that strong?" Timothy had always thought that his father thought too highly of Fane. "You're too young. Remember what I said, you can't offend this man. Of course you can't let him feel that we're trying to get on his good side as well or allow him to feel annoyed of us! But when we get the chance, we should help him and make him feel that owing a favor to us is the best idea!" "I believe he has connections with the God of War!" James said with a laugh. As he spoke, he came to a realization and exclaimed, "My God, the woman with the face mask and shades today, how old did she look?" Timothy thought about it and replied, "Even with the face mask and shades, although I couldn't see her clearly with a cap but we how she physically looked like overall, I would say that she's just over 20." "Is she really just over 20?" James asked excitedly. "She's definitely under 30. If I'm not wrong, she's about 27 or 28!" Timothy added, "What's going on? Dad, do you have a guess who she is?" "27 or 28?" James' pupils dilated. He said, "It's probably not the God of War, is it? It could be that she's a Goddess of War. I heard that she doesn't like getting bothered recently. She rejected all the rich businessmen and families who wanted to have a meal with her! If she really wanted to go out, it's logical that she would wear a face mask and shades!" "My dear, now that you've said it, I think it's possible. After all, for a woman to be able to whip out 500 million bucks and defeat nearly 60 men easily, more so with a few black belt holders amongst them—could she really be the Goddess of War?" Timothy inhaled sharply and was stunned. "It's not really possible that rich women from other cities came to the auction. After all, news about it only came out yesterday so people from other cities would probably not have been able to hear about it so soon. Seeing how strong and young that woman was, she's probably the Goddess

of War!” “That’s right. Since Fane was with her, this further proves that their relationship is unusual!”

Chapter 174

The more James thought about it, the more excited he was. He felt that the woman was probably the strongest and scariest in the Middle Province at the moment—Lana Zechs. Since Fane went to the auction with her, that showed that the duo were rather close with each other. If that really was the case, he would be right about it all. “I’ve never met Lana Zechs so I wouldn’t dare to confirm that. Dad, this is just my guess!” Timothy said while forcing a smile. “I’ll look it up now and show you photos of the Gods of War! There are tons of photos of the Nine Great Gods of War!” James did not bother with his meal anymore. He pulled out his phone and began searching them up. After some time, he found a full body shot of Lana and passed it to Timothy. “Look at this photo. These Gods of War have no casual photos and are always dressed in army uniform. Just take a look, this body, could it be her?” Timothy examined the photo and said, “This body, this height, this body size, does look just like her!” After hearing that, Old Master Drake and James looked at each other before laughing. It seemed like they were right. However, Timothy frowned soon after that and said, “But the woman earlier today was wearing a dress, and she seemed feminine and sexy. The woman in this photo seems cold, and her gaze is terrifying. She does not look human at all!” “Since she’s left the army, wearing a feminine dress would definitely make her seem different to everyone!” “But if her height and body check out, on top of what had happened today, I’m sure that she’s Lana Zechs, the Goddess of War!” James smiled and said, “Who would’ve known that a Goddess of War was so into a luminous pearl that she would attend an auction to bid for it!” Old Master Drake was deep in thought before asking, “Wait, during the auction, did you offend her?” Timothy was stunned after hearing that, his expression darkening. “You little brat, did you really offend a Goddess of War?” James was terrified. He said to

Timothy, “How many times have I warned you? You have to be on Fane’s good side and not offend him. Since Fane was next to this woman, you shouldn’t have offended her as well, right? I don’t care whether you knew who she was before this!” Timothy said with a dark expression, “I don’t know whether it counts as offending her but when she was in a bidding war with me, she raised her bid till the end. As I did not expect her to be this powerful in the Middle Province at that age, I yelled for her to take off her face mask to reveal her face! I said it because I was just curious about who she was!” After hearing that, James pointed at Timothy angrily and said, “Isn’t this offending her? This is obviously offending her!” After saying that, James stopped and panted before continuing, “Why would a Goddess of War wear a face mask and shades? She doesn’t want to be recognized, so that’s why she was dressed like that. She recently returned to the Middle Province and there are way too many people looking for benefits from being associated with her. She must be annoyed by it so that’s why she did what she did!” “And what did you do? You went ahead and asked her to take off her mask. Tell me, if you were her, would you be pissed?” James became angrier the more he thought about it. He wished he could slap his son a few times. Despite reminding him about it multiple times, a problem still occurred. “Dad, it’s not that serious, is it? The Goddess of War might not be someone that petty. Moreover, she was wearing a face mask and shades. She must have known that Brother wasn’t really trying to offend her, he was just curious. Brother must not be the only person in the room who was curious about her at that moment, so she shouldn’t be too worked up about it!” Seeing that Timothy lowered his head from being scolded, Tanya felt a little sorry for him.

Chapter 175

Timothy thought of something and said, “Yes, yes, at the time, Michael and the Roy family, were all asking about who she was. Apart from that, we did not really argue. At least, I did not!” James let out a sigh of relief upon

hearing that. “If that’s the case, that’s a little better. Remember, Fane and that woman, including anyone who’s with Fane, cannot be offended. Otherwise, if he’s pissed, the Drake family might have to leave Middle Province’s circle for real.” “Okay, I got it!” Timothy was relieved. He was thankful for himself that he did not stir trouble with them today. Otherwise, he might have ended up like Neil Hugo. At this very moment, Master Hugo had already known about what happened that day. Master Hugo, together with some important members of the family, convened at the house. As for Neil, he was standing with his head low and face swollen in front of Master Hugo. “You little brat, aren’t you a brave one? I’ve told you time after time that you should not be causing trouble but you ignored me! On top of that, you also hired men to snatch the luminous pearl, didn’t you? You’re embarrassing, you’ve embarrassed our family!” Master Hugo was so angry that his fists were clenched and his eyes were red. “Dad, this was my fault!” “But that fellow Fane went overboard as well. He hit me in front of everyone, isn’t that signaling that he’s hitting the Hugo family in the face? We can’t let this slide, you have to do something!” Neil looked up and said angrily, “The men I hired were going to teach Fane a lesson since he was looking down on me while riding an electric scooter the last time. I just wanted to teach him a lesson about it, I didn’t mean to snatch the luminous pearl!” “I don’t care if you meant it, what’s the use of explaining this to me now?” “Your men charged toward them just as they left the auction, and the men were aiming for the woman. Other people would think that you’re trying to snatch the luminous pearl because you lost the bid! With a petty man like you, who else would want to work with us in the future?” Master Hugo was pissed. “The only thing that I’m hearing is that you brought men over in an attempt to snatch the luminous pearl but ended up getting beaten up instead.” “I…” Neil was left speechless. Truth be told, he did plan to just snatch the luminous pearl from them as well, even though the idea had come from his bodyguard. “Master, no matter what, this is how it is now!” “Who knows who that woman is, but as for Fane, he’s just a veteran. Since he

dared to hit Young Master, what does this say? This says that the woman must be of a certain status as well, so that must have been why he wasn't afraid of offending us!" An old man thought about it further and asked Master Hugo, "What should we do now?" "Bring the men, we'll find Fane now!" Master Hugo thought it through and replied. "Okay, let's go. Damn it, he was disregarding the Hugo family and shaming us. Let's go teach him a lesson!" Neil was excited. After all, his father did love him. His father was finally doing something for him.

Chapter 176

"Pa!" Just as Neil spoke, he was slapped hard by the master of the Hugo family, Roy Hugo. … Fane rode his electric scooter with Selena in tow. They returned home early. "Since I have a day off tomorrow, let's register Kylie to a kindergarten!" Selena got off the scooter and said to Fane. "Okay, I'll take a day off as well!" Fane replied with a smile. "Really? You've only been working for two days. With that high salary of yours, did you apply for leave in advance? If you don't, what if the Drake family gets angry about it?" Selena heard what he said and frowned as she continued. "On top of that, your daily salary is pretty high as well so it must be costly to take a day off." Fane paused for a while and replied, "That's probably not the case. I've told them that I'll only go over when I'm free. If they're going to take a day's salary off my wages for resting, I'll just quit the job!" Selena was left speechless. She glared at Fane and said, "With that kind of salary, how could you quit just like that? I don't want to hear others saying that my husband is a useless man I'm taking care of!" "Haha, I was joking. However, looking for a kindergarten for Kylie is a big issue. Since you have a day off tomorrow, of course I must come with you!" Fane laughed, walked over, and hugged Selena by her slim waist. "After we register her at the kindergarten in the morning, we'll bring Kylie to the playground. Kylie's already so grown but she has yet to go out with us both!" After hearing that, Selena nodded shyly. She was blushing. "Wifey, you look beautiful when

you’re shy!” Fane hugged the beauty in his arms tighter. “Mom, they’re home!” At this very moment, Xena came out of the house and saw Fane with Selena. She yelled in the direction of the house moments later. Selena was terrified. She broke out of Fane’s embrace and her face was so red that blood could drip off her face. Fiona, Andrew, and Ben came out of the house soon after that. Fiona, who was ahead of everyone else, had a dark expression on her face. She said angrily, “Fane, what’s wrong with you? You keep stirring trouble everyday!” “Mom, what happened? Fane was working today, what did he do?” Selena was left speechless for a moment as she impatiently replied her mother. “Working?” Fiona was stunned for a while before sneering, “You should ask him then, was he working today? This fellow is a bastard. If you had the means, I, Fiona Lewis, wouldn’t even bat an eye if you had a few wives, just as long as Selena was okay with it. However, you don’t have the means and you still went out to see another woman on top of stirring trouble? Are you even a human being? How could we still accept you into the family?”

Chapter 177

“I…was seeing another woman?” Fane was stunned. He forced a smile and said, “Mom, there might be a misunderstanding here. I’ve only been back for a few days, how could I find time to see other women? Moreover, Selena’s great to me so how is it possible for me to see anyone else?” “Misunderstanding? Haha, how could it be a misunderstanding? I’ve got the photos!” Xena crossed her arms in front of her chest, her gaze at Fane was filled with disgust. “If you were a billionaire, it would make you seem capable when you see other women. However, you’re so broke and yet you still did this? How could you face Sister after this?” “Photos? What photos?” Selena scrunched her brows together and asked. “Mom, show it to Sister. Otherwise, she might still be kept in the dark about it. She would not know what kind of disgusting things Fane has done behind her back!” As Ben glared angrily at Fane, he continued, “Fane, you’re such an *sshole. Our

family suffered for five years because of you. Because of you, my sister was kicked out of the Taylor Family. As the Taylor Family's young mistress, my sister had to scavenge with Kylie in tow. Don't you know how hard life has been for her?" Ben began clenching his fists. He walked over to Fane while gritting his teeth and said, "Now that you're back and have a new, well-paying job, you think it's okay to see other women now? How are you this shameless as a man?" After saying that, Ben threw his fist at Fane's face. This time, Fane stood where he was and did not even flinch. He was punched right in the face. "You, are you okay? Why didn't you avoid it?" Selena was shocked. She rushed over and pushed Ben away. "Ben, are you crazy? He's your brother-in-law, how could you hit him?" Moments later, she turned around and looked at Fane in confusion. "You're so strong, why didn't you avoid it?" Ben was dumbfounded as well. He did not expect Fane to stand where he was to get punched. "I'm remorseful. It was my fault for the past five years. I can't imagine the pain you've been through and being laughed at because of me. Wifey, I'm sorry for the past five years. I'll take care of you and Kylie from now on. I'll never let you both suffer again." Fane was looking at Selena with a loving gaze. "Fine, fine, I believe you!" Selena felt warmth in her heart. Although she did suffer for the past five years, now that Fane was back and her child had a father again, she believed that their lives would improve as long as they both worked hard. After all, they both had decent jobs now. "Sister, don't listen to him, he's a liar!" Ben was so angry that his eyes were red. Fiona walked over and pulled Selena toward her before pulling out her phone to show something to Selena. "My dear, don't listen to this guy's sweet words. Look, this morning he wasn't working at the Drake family's place. He went to the auction with this woman!" Fane frowned upon hearing that. He said to Fiona, "What woman? Show me!" Fiona backed up and sneered, "Haha, feeling guilty? Feeling scared? Young Master Wilson sent me this photo this afternoon. He told me that there must be something going on between you and this woman. On top of that, this woman is extremely rich. Her watch is worth millions. The woman also

spent 500 million bucks today to bid for a luminous pearl." At this moment, Fiona paused before continuing, "I think you must be this woman's sugar baby, right? How much is this woman giving you per month?"

Chapter 178

After hearing what Fiona had to say, Fane came to a realization. It was bastard Michael Wilson; he left the auction, came to see Fiona, and made things up about Fane. Selena took a good look at the photo with a frown. She seemed a little displeased. After all, although she had never worn any watch that was too expensive, she still recognized a few prominent brands. The woman's watch was worth over a million bucks; on top of that, her earrings seemed expensive as well. "Were you really not working at the Drake family's house today?" Selena was staring right at Fane. She was in disbelief; if Fane did lie to her, she would lose everything. After that fateful night back then, she decided to keep the baby through gritted teeth as she did not want to give it up. As for Fane, she had not been close to him; she did not know much about this man at all. She did regret what happened on her wedding night. She did contemplate aborting her baby. However, she could not bring herself to do so to her own child. She did not want others to make fun of Kylie as the bastard child; she had been looking forward to Fane coming home alive. As long as he turned out to be a good husband and father, she would be fine with it. Fane eventually made it back alive. Judging from their interactions in the past few days, she realized that this man was pretty responsible and seemed handsome too. He was good to her and her daughter. That was why she was satisfied with Fane. She wanted to just live the rest of her days peacefully; their relationship could be built over time. However, if Fane really did lie to her, his dishonesty would be a hit on her head; that would mean that her sacrifice for the past few years meant nothing. If Fane really was seeing a rich woman behind her back, even if it was for money or for the family, she would not be able to take it. Men like this lacked strength in their character; they were too useless. Selena Taylor's

man should not be someone like this; even if he was a construction worker, he should never become a sugar baby. “Work?” Just as Fane was about to explain himself, Xena unexpectedly sneered again, “I think he’s probably gotten into trouble again and ended up getting kicked out by the Drake family. He’s probably lying to us as well, he might not even be a bodyguard for the Drake family, he might actually be a sugar baby secretly. He’s just lying to earn money!” “Fane, tell me the truth, otherwise, you won’t be allowed into this house tonight.” Fiona had her hands crossed in front of her chest; she had a proud expression on her face. “Selena, it doesn’t matter whether they believe me!” Fane exhaled deeply and continued, “Don’t you know what kind of person Michael Wilson is? Based on the fact that he came over to see your mom, do you really think that his words can be trusted?” Selena was stunned. She thought about the last encounter she had with Michael at the restaurant. It was when Michael first exposed how horrible of a person he was; he did use dirty tricks to threaten her to go on a date with him past midnight. It was true; a man like this should not be trusted. “So, you should give me and my mother an explanation!” “Who is that woman in the photo?” Selena was believing Fane for the most part, but she continued asking questions. “That’s right, you have to give us an explanation. Why is this woman so rich, and why did she wear a face mask and shades when no one else did?”

Chapter 179

Fiona said angrily, “Young Master Wilson mentioned that this woman is probably dating a mega-billionaire but was afraid of being recognized by her own man. She might be afraid of people finding out she has a sugar baby, so she wore the mask and covered herself like that.” “Yes yes yes, if she wasn’t feeling guilty, why would she wear a mask? It’s obvious that you’re both hiding something!” Xena added. “Who is she?” Selena stared right at Fane. After all, the woman was rich and sexy; Selena was a little worried about that. “A friend of mine!” Fane smiled and said, “She wanted

to go to the auction, and she asked me to accompany her, so I did." "A friend, what friend?" Fiona asked, "Since when do you have such a rich friend? If you have so many rich friends, you wouldn't have become a live-in son-in-law for the Taylor family five years ago just to get a million bucks for your mother's medical bill! Why didn't you ask for the money from her back then?" Fane laughed upon hearing that. "She was poor back then too, she was just a kid!" "Haha, do you think we'll believe you?" "If she was so poor five years ago that she couldn't even whip out a million bucks, how could she spend five hundred million bucks on a luminous pearl five years later?" Ben walked over and sneered. Even Andrew, who was usually quiet, glared at Fane angrily. "Fane, I'm telling you, if you're cheating on my daughter with some rich woman, I, Andrew Taylor, will despise you. You'll have to divorce my daughter!" "What friend is this, earning so much within five years? What does she do?" Selena asked Fane while looking at him. The woman was still poor five years ago, but she managed to easily pull out five hundred million bucks for a luminous pearl five years later. This was too hard to believe. What kind of business was she in to be able to earn so much in five years? More importantly, Fane had been in the army for the past five years; where did he find time to keep in contact with this rich woman? How was he be able to get in touch with her right away after leaving the army? Although Selena did not want to overthink it, it was Fane in the photo, and the photo was indeed taken at the auction. This was an indisputable fact. "Fine, since you want to know it so badly, I'll tell you!" Fane looked at Selena with a serious face and said, "This friend of mine is Lana Zechs, Middle Province's Goddess of War who had just returned from the army!" "Goddess of War!" Fiona, Andrew, and the rest had their eyes wide open upon hearing the name. They were shocked. "No way, you know the Goddess of War? You're friends with the Goddess of War?" Xena was shocked, and her mouth was opened so wide that her chin could have touched the ground. "Really? Isn't that impossible? How did you get to meet someone like that?" Andrew snapped out of it and shook his head. It was

too hard to believe. “I think it’s impossible too, this brat must be lying!” Xena said quickly, “You know the Goddess of War, and you’re friends with her? If that was the case, why didn’t you say so earlier? This is something to be proud of! Moreover, who is he to know someone of that level? The Gods of War are the guardians of Cathysia, they’re incredibly powerful. There are only nine of them!”

Chapter 180

“Haha, you’re getting better and better at lying. You actually made it sound so real that I nearly believed you!” Fiona quickly sneered again. “Fane, you’re too disappointing!” Andrew shook his head defeatedly and gave Fane a disappointing look. “I realized that ever since you came back from the army, you like exaggerating things. You’re acting as if you’re somebody after being a soldier for a mere few years, and easily agreed to whip out thirty million bucks at the old master’s seventieth birthday celebration. You’ve also been fighting with everyone, now that you finally have a job, it turns out to be fake. You didn’t go to work at all, you went to become a rich woman’s sugar baby!” Andrew paused at this moment before continuing, “I just didn’t expect you to claim that the Goddess of War is your friend just to cover your tracks. Haha, why don’t you say that all nine of them are your friends?” Fane felt awkward. Thankfully, he did not mention that all nine of the Gods of War were his students; otherwise, they would be in bigger disbelief. “Wifey, do you believe me?” Fane finally looked at Selena and said with a serious face, “I don’t care if they believe me, as long as you do!” “Haha!” However, Selena began laughing at this moment; she seemed a little disappointed as well. “Believe you? How do you think I could still believe you? If you said she’s your friend, I can buy that, but you’re now saying that she’s a Goddess of War. Haha, have you been watching too much TV? Are people like Gods of War that approachable?” “Yes, yes!” Xena crossed her arms in front of her chest and said, “I heard that even the Masters of the first or second-rated families who paid visits to the Gods of

War were not even let into their houses. You were just a soldier, but you're saying that the Goddess of War is your friend? Impossible!" Fane's expression darkened; he stomped his foot and reached Xena within the blink of an eye before smacking her with the back of his hand. Xena was slapped before she knew what was going on. She was stunned. Soon after that, she held her cheek, and she was so angry that her chest was moving rapidly. "Bastard, you hit me? What, you're angry because I exposed you?" Fane stared at her coldly and said, "You can say that I was just a soldier, but you can't say that about anyone else. We killed enemies on the frontline for the country and your peaceful lives, so many people have died as a result of that, but you were here shaming the warriors who fought for Cathysia's stability." "I…" Xena did not expect that her words could get Fane this worked up. Moreover, Fane's gaze was too terrifying. She had never seen such a terrifying gaze; she was so scared that she backed up unconsciously before replying, "I don't care, you betrayed Ben's sister, so you betrayed my sister, I'm defending her!" "Enough!" Selena yelled with a cold expression before saying to Xena, "Xena, you've yet to marry into our family, you're still an outsider, you have no business talking about us!" "Selena, why are you still defending this bastard Fane?" Fiona was pissed. She ran over through gritted teeth, pulled Selena aside, and said, "Xena has already been dating your brother for two to three years, she's not an outsider, she's already our daughter-in-law in my heart. Of course, she has the right to speak about this!" Selena opened her mouth but held herself back. She said, "Mom, I just don't like Xena, you just don't know some things!" "Bullsh*t, do you think I don't know what kind of girl Xena is? It's not my first time meeting her!" Fiona continued, "But you, Fane has been lying to you time after time, but you're still defending him. Do you know how worried we are for you? This brat will harm you one day! You should divorce him as soon as possible!" "Son of a b*tch, how dare you hit my girlfriend, are you looking for death? I'll fight you today!" Ben clenched his fists and charged toward Fane. His fist was aiming for Fane. This time, Fane

acted quickly and grabbed him by the arm before pulling it hard. Ben fell onto the ground with his face down. “I don’t care if she’s your girlfriend. If she shames us warriors, especially those who have lost their lives, she deserves to be hit!”

Chapter 181

Fane looked at Ben and said coldly, “It was a matter of principles.” "How dare you Fane Woods, you surely are a bold one. How dare you beat up my son, I'll kill you!" Fueled with anger, Fiona rushed forward. After all, she was his mother-in-law. Fane dared not fight back. He could only dodge. "What, what's the matter? Fiona, what's wrong?" At that moment, Joan, who was out to buy groceries with her maids, Kylie and Jenny, came back. Seeing Fiona chasing after Fane, she immediately stepped forward to advise them. Fiona did not manage to hit him but was worn out instead. She panted hard as she held onto her waist. Then, she said, "Blame your dear son. He hit my son!" "Mum, be careful with what you say! Ben was the one who started it. Fane didn't even hit him; he just pulled him slightly because he lost his balance." Selena argued back. Then, she spoke to Fane again, "Fane, I'll ask you one last time. You have to tell me the truth. Is that woman really Lana, the Goddess of War? Is she really your friend?" "She really is Lana, the Goddess of War!" Fane smiled bitterly. He felt a bit helpless. He was telling the truth but nobody believed him. "Haha, you're still trying to lie? You still want to lie to me? From now onward, I won't believe in anything you say!" Selena was in the depth of despair. She said to Fane, "You should leave now. I don't want to see you. I want to be alone for the time being!" "Selena, what's going on? What's with all this Goddess of War?" Joan was confused. She did not understand what was going on. "Mum, I'll explain to you later!" Fane looked at Joan. Then, he looked at Selena with a solemn gaze, "I'm telling you the truth. She is the Goddess of War! I can't do anything if you choose not to believe me, but I'm sure you will believe me one day!" Fane walked toward Fiona after he was done talking, "Mum, I

don't know if you're going to accept me, but what we talked about a few days ago still counts, right? I will be there, and I will prepare the gift for the old master. I will not go back on my promise with Ivan and I will pay him back his ten million bucks, not even leaving a single penny out. Also, I will make sure to bring you the twenty million betrothal gift." "Haha, you're still bragging. Alright, I'll wait for you, but you have to bring your mother out of here today because you got yourself into trouble!" Fiona laughed and said, "Young Master Wilson said that besides fawning on those rich women, you slapped Neil, Young Master Hugo. You hit him with so many people watching, it meant you're mocking the Hugo family. The people from the Hugo family will not let you off!" "That's right. Get out of here. We will not care whether you're dead or alive!" "Don't get our family into trouble; we cannot afford to offend the Hugo family! Damn it, how dare you hit me. You're terrible!" Ben stared at Fane balefully but he dared not move an inch. He knew that he was no match for Fane. "Mummy..." Kylie held onto Selena's hand. She looked at Fane with reluctant eyes. Although she was only four years old, she was a very sensible girl. "You hit Neil? You...you got into a fight again?" Selena looked at Fane and shook her head. Fane was only back for a few days yet he caused so much trouble. She was starting to get tired. "Leave, I don't want to see you for now. We'll talk again when you decide not to lie anymore!" "If you cannot fulfill what you have said just now on grandpa's seventieth birthday, I will never believe you again!" Selena waved her hand, "I will get a divorce by then!"

Chapter 182

Selena did not believe Fane. He had no choice but to only sigh. However, he believed that Selena would find out sooner or later that he was not lying. "Hurry up and leave. You'll get us into trouble if the people from the Hugo family come looking for you!" Andrew sighed. He felt pity as Fane did not look like someone who would boast. However, his words were not convincing enough. “Alright!" Fane heaved another sigh and looked at

Andrew again, "Father, your legs should be feeling better now? Don't worry, whether they accept me or not, I will come here every morning to treat you. Your legs should be fully recovered in two to three days!" "Fane, don't expect us to appreciate you just because you treated father's leg." "You're also part of the reason why my father's leg is hurt. Treating him is your obligation. You should make up for what you did, is that clear?" Andrew was excited when he heard what Fane said, "Really? I hope it will recover. My legs are really getting better! I can feel it!" "Fane, don't think we will thank you for treating Father's legs." "You're also responsible for what happened to Father's legs. You should treat him to make up for it, alright?" Ben said angrily. "Don't worry, I'm aware of that!" Fane smiled and looked at Kylie. Then, he said, "Don't worry, Kylie. Mummy needs some time to calm down. She's still angry right now so daddy will move out for the time being. I'll come back once mummy is no longer angry!" "Alright, Daddy..." Kylie looked at Fane with her big dewy eyes as she spoke in her tender voice. "Kylie is such a good girl." Joan smiled and said, "Selena, don't act out of impulse. Fane wouldn't boast, neither would he lie to you. There must be some misunderstanding between both of you!" Joan was very worried that Selena would get a divorce with Fane. Although Fiona and the rest are very mean, Selena was a good woman. She knew that clearly after living with Selena for the past five years. "He must be able to do what he said. Otherwise, how can we believe him if he's just bragging?" Selena looked at Joan. She was still in a fit of pique. "Yes, Selena, you cannot be soft-hearted this time. You're one in your twenties and you're very young. Moreover, you are very pretty. You can marry a better man even if you get a divorce!" "If you relent this time, it will be too late to get a divorce when you get older!" Fiona, who was standing aside, spoke. At that moment, a few luxurious cars came toward their direction and stopped in front of the yard. There were dozens of them. "Why are there so many luxurious cars? Did the Hugo family arrive already?" Ben looked at the cars and immediately, his face darkened, "Shit, Fane is still here and the sky is still bright but the Hugo

family has already arrived. Fane is in deep trouble right now!" "These people must be very good. Look at those bodyguards, all fierce and vigorous, they are not ordinary people! I bet all the masters of the Hugo family came! Don't put us into trouble!" Xena immediately said. "Let's go, Selena, hurry up. Let's get inside. Whatever happens here has nothing to do with us. Quick. Whether Fane dies or not is none of our business!" Fiona was terrified. She immediately stepped forward and pulled Selena away. "But..."

Chapter 183

Seeing Neil walking toward them with all his men, Selena could not help but to worry for Fane. She was very angry at Fane for going to the auction with another woman and lying to her, saying that the woman was the Goddess of War. Despite that, the two of them still had feelings for each other after all the time they spent together. Now that Fane was in danger, she realized she was very worried about Fane. What if Fane dies? Does that mean Kylie would lose her father? "Come on, sister. Let's get into the house!" Ben stepped forward as well. A few of them dragged Selena into the house. Jenny carried Kylie as she followed them into the house. "Master Hugo, Fane was the one responsible for what happened this morning. It has nothing to do with our family!" Fiona immediately shouted at Roy and his men who were in the yard after retreating into the house. She was afraid the people would beat her up or kill her. "Mum, Fane's mother. Is she still outside? Ask her to come in!" Selena was worried sick. The door was closed and they could only stand behind the window and see what was happening outside. "You're too kind. Why ask her to come in when she didn't want to come in herself? She's his mother, not your mother. Let her accompany him if she wants to do so." "Moreover, what if the Hugo family is not happy after she comes in? What will you do if she puts us in trouble?" Fiona did not agree. "Son, did you really hit the young master of the Hugo family?" Joan would not leave her son's side. He was her only support. How could she

leave him alone and hide in the house? However, coming to the thought that the Hugo family was a second-class aristocratic family, Joan was terrified as well. She looked at Fane anxiously and hoped that everything was not real. Fane nodded his head, "I gave him a few slaps. That guy is useless; I'm teaching him a lesson on behalf of his parents!" Joan nearly passed out after listening to what he said. Her son surely changed a lot after coming back from the army. He liked to fight against injustice. However, this was a battlefield itself. If he kept offending powerful forces like them, how would he survive? Something bad would happen sooner or later if this went on like that. “Gentlemen, my son, he might be a bit impulsive at times as he just came back from the battlefield. I hope you don’t blame him!” “Come at me if you want to kill!” Joan was afraid, but when the people from the Hugo family came near Fane, she as a mother plucked up her courage. She blocked Fane from the people with her thin body. “Mum, why are you afraid of them? You don’t have to be afraid; they are no match for me! Don’t worry!” Looking at his terrified mother, Fane felt touched. He immediately tried to comfort his mother. “What are you waiting for?” Roy’s face darkened. He glared at his son, Neil. Although Neil was reluctant, he had no choice but to lower his head and step forward. He knelt down in front of Fane, “Brother Fane, I was wrong. I was a fool and I made a mistake. Please forgive me!” Fane was ashamed. He thought that they were here to start a fight. Unexpectedly, he brought his son over to apologize. He looked at Roy and could not help but to admire that man.

Chapter 184

”What? Am I seeing things? Young Master Hugo is kneeling down to Fane?” Fiona rubbed her eyes and wondered if she was hallucinating. “He brought so many people over but it wasn’t because he wanted to fight Fane? Fane slapped his son, which meant he was mocking the Hugo family! Surprisingly, Roy wanted his son to kneel down before Fane and apologize to him?” Xena was surprised as well. What was happening? Did the people

from the Hugo family turned crazy?" "This…" Andrew was confused too. Fane was slightly stunned after listening to his words. Then, he said to Neil, "Get up. You haven't touched my bottom line today. Otherwise, I would've killed you!" Fiona and the rest felt ashamed after seeing him so domineering. Was he really merely an ordinary veteran? Why wasn't he afraid of the Hugo family? It was as though he could declare a person's life and death. It was as though he was the dictator! Staring at his figure, Selena was in a state of trance. Did Fane really know the Goddess of War and was he really a friend of the Goddess of War? Otherwise, how could he be so indifferent facing the people from the Hugo family? He seemed so casual and relaxed. "Thank you, thank you very much, Brother Fane!" Neil was filled with resentment, but he was forced to keep his head down. After expressing his gratitude to Fane, he retreated back to his father's side. He felt defiant and thought that his father was being too cautious. His father only wanted to live in peace all his life. There were a lot of times where he stayed quiet although he was bullied. His father said it was because he did not want to offend others to prevent ruining the Hugo family. Neil could not talk back as it was for the sake of the Hugo family. At that moment, he felt that his father was as though a turtle hiding in its shell. He lived cautiously all his life. The man in front of them was merely a veteran. What was there to be afraid of? Moreover, although that guy might have a wealthy woman as his support, he did not have to go all the way to bring him there and force him to apologize. He even had to kneel down before Fane. It was so embarrassing. "You have to apologize. Kneel down and apologize!" "If a soldier dares to beat you up, it means he was fearless. There must be a wealthy woman behind his back that we can't afford to offend! So, you have to apologize for the Hugo family's safety!" "I've warned you before. You can party all you want. You can even do nothing and live off our family. We have plenty of money, it will last you forever. I told you not to mess around but you didn't want to listen!" "Moreover, you sent someone to rob other's goods they just bought from the auction. You humiliated the Hugo family

in front of all the first-class aristocratic family!" … His father's aggressive words still rang in Neil's ear. "Mr. Fane, I am truly sorry for what happened today. It's my son's fault. Here is a little something from me. I hope you will accept it!" Seeing Fane had already forgiven his son, Roy clapped his hands. Two bodyguards stepped forward and opened up two suitcases. The suitcases were filled with red bills.

Chapter 185

"Here is three million bucks for you. Although it's not a lot, take it as a token of our regard! I'm sorry to startle you!" Roy was very sincere; there was no affectation at all. Fane smiled indifferently after listening to his words. He took a slight glance at the suitcases on the ground, "Three million is definitely not a lot!" Roy's face darkened. He did not expect Fane would think it was too little. Was Fane still unhappy about what happened? They would be in deep trouble if that was the case. However, Fane changed the topic, "But considering you came here with a sincere attitude, you even brought along the top executives of your family and your son here to apologize, I'll accept your regards. Forget about the money, I don't like these. Your sincere attitude is more than enough!" "No!" Fiona was standing by the door. Her eyes were burning as she stared at the money. She was so shocked when she heard Fane rejecting the money. Instantly, she pushed the door open and ran outside. "You punk, how can you reject the money? They brought so many people here and disturbed us. You have to accept the money!" Fiona immediately stepped forward, closed the two suitcases, and carried them in her arms. "That's right, Fane. So many of them came here; we thought you guys were going to fight. We were scared to death and we almost became insane. You have to compensate us for psychological injuries! If you don't want the three million bucks, we'll take it!" Ben spoke up as well. He thought Fane was such a fool. That was three million bucks. They could buy a house in a better location with three million bucks. It was a waste refusing to accept the money. "The money is for me, not you guys,

right?” Fane was stunned for a moment, “Moreover, I thought you guys said I’m an outsider?” “What outsider are you talking about? You and Selena have your marriage certificate. As long as both of you are not divorced, we are still a family, and I am your mother-in-law! I was so shocked that I almost died. You have to accept this money to comfort my injured heart!” Fiona said stubbornly, “Moreover, the money is for you and that means it is a joint property. It’s not up to you to make the decision!” “Yes, we are all one family. Fane, shouldn’t you accept the money even if it’s for the sake of your mother-in-law?” Roy was stunned. He laughed and said, “Hah, I didn’t think that your family would be frightened seeing so many people. I came too abruptly. I thought I would appear more sincere and solemn by bringing more people here. I didn’t expect that would disturb your family. It’s my fault!” “Master Hugo, you’re being too polite. Although your son did a mistake, Fane may be too impulsive sometimes. I hope we can get along peacefully in the future!” Joan heaved a sigh of relief as she said. “Yes, yes. We must get along peacefully!” Roy smiled. He stepped forward hurriedly and handed his name card to Fane, “Brother Fane, if my son ever misbehaves in the future, you can call me. I’ll take care of him. I will never let him bother you!” Fane smiled bitterly. He looked at the name card and it was only then that he said, “You’re afraid that I’ll kill your son out of impulse, right? You are a very cunning man!” Roy’s lips twitched. That adjective… “You punk, what nonsense are you talking about? Let me tell you, my dad is afraid of you because he is timid, but I’m not afraid of you!” Neil stepped forward angrily when he heard Fane calling his father a cunning man.

Chapter 186

Slap! Unfortunately, Roy slapped Neil hard across the face, "Who are you yelling at? Can't you see Fane was joking?" "Dad, he..." Neil was fueled with anger. He wanted to tear Fane into pieces badly. Roy glared at him fiercely. Then, he turned around and cupped his hands as he said, "Brother

Fane, you're such a humorous guy. I'll make a move first, and sorry for disturbing you!" "See you again!" Fane said calmly. Soon after, the people from the Hugo family drove away. Neil felt aggrieved and insulted on his way back. When they finally arrived at the villa's yard, Neil could no longer hold back himself, "Dad, why did you stay silent when he treated you that way? We are a second-class aristocratic family, how can you let a soldier bully us like that? I can't accept it!" It was only then that Roy turned around and looked at his son. He sighed with emotions, " Hah, it's not because I'm timid, I'm doing it for the sake of our whole family. We have come a long way from being an ordinary family of small businessmen to becoming who we are today in the Middle Province. It wasn't easy at all! I've seen many influential families get destroyed just because they offended someone who they shouldn't offend." He paused for a moment before he continued saying, “Moreover, not long ago, I heard someone from a first-class aristocratic family in the next town got removed from the list after offending a retired King of War. The master and several powerful members of the family were all killed. Only the servants got away!" Neil gasped, "No way! That person is incredible. How could he destroy a first-class aristocratic family just like that?!" Not long after, he started speaking again, "But dad, Fane is just an ordinary veteran. He's just a soldier. You think too highly of him!" "Keep this in mind. Don't ever look down on anyone. Although Fane is neither famous nor powerful, why did he have the nerve to hit you? Why is he so carefree and fearless? That at least shows that the woman in the mask is someone we can't afford to provoke!" Roy nodded after he was done talking, "Don't worry, after all these years, I have grown to have an eye for people. Don't you ever dare to mess with Fane next time!" "Alright..." Neil was not happy but he could only nod his head. He was unlucky this time. ... "Mum, let me take a look. Is it really three hundred million bucks in cash?" "It's been quite some time since I last saw so much money!" Ben immediately rushed over to Fiona's side and said excitedly once the people from the Hugo family left. "What nonsense are you talking about? This is the money from

the Hugo family, how can it be fake?" Fiona rolled her eyes at Ben. Then, she looked at Fane, "Fane, although the Hugo family let you off, you keep troubling us, causing us to live in fear every day. So..." Fane knew what Fiona wanted to say. He immediately cut her off, "It's only three hundred million bucks, you can take it if you want, Mum. But it's getting late now; it would be difficult for us to find a place to stay the night..." Fiona laughed and said, "Hah, why look for a place to stay? It's not like you don't have a place to stay. Just stay here. But as you have mentioned, you have to give us the money you promised us on the old master's birthday. This matter remains unchanged. If you can't give us the money, you will be a liar. We will ask Selena to get a divorce! " "Yes. Either you give us the money and show us you're not lying or prove to us that the Goddess of War is your friend, otherwise, we will not accept you!" Ben said.

Chapter 187

Selena remained a cold face as she glared at her mother, "Mom, don't you think you changed your mind too fast? Even if you’re letting him stay, he cannot sleep in the same room as me. I'm still angry! It's only three million bucks. I won't trust this liar just for the money." Selena spoke to Fane in such a harsh manner earlier. It was impossible she would change her attitude suddenly. It was too embarrassing for her. "Where do you want him to sleep if both of you don't sleep together? Don't let him sleep on your bed then, lay a mattress on the ground!" Fiona felt assured carrying the three million bucks, "Don't you worry, there are about twenty days left until your grandfather's birthday. If he can't give us forty million bucks by then, he will get kicked out. We will soon know whether he is a liar or not!" "Forty million bucks? Didn't we agree on thirty million bucks?" Jenny, the maid, was shocked, "Why did the amount increase by ten million bucks?" "The price has increased. The betrothal gifts are not ten million but twenty million bucks now. Moreover, Fane agreed to this!" "Right, Fane?" Fiona crossed her arms in front of her chest as she stood there proud as always. "Don't

worry, I will give you twenty million bucks. You won't lose a single penny!" Fane smiled. "Yes, yes, Selena's mother. You have to believe my son. He is capable of earning the money!" Joan stepped forward and said with a smile. After ending her sentence, she walked toward Selena and advised her, "Selena, even if it's for the sake of your child, you should believe Fane. I believe in my son and he will not lie to you. Moreover, Kylie likes her father, am I right?" Selena pursed her lips and rolled her eyes at Fane, "Alright, I'll give you about another twenty days. We will know whether you're a liar on Grandfather's birthday. By then, don't blame me for being heartless!" "Kylie, come here. Let's go, daddy will give you a bath. Grandma will make dinner then we'll have a delicious meal later!" Fane squatted down and smiled at Kylie. "Alright!" Kylie ran straight into Fane's embrace excitedly. Selena felt a mix of emotions as she saw Fane walking away while carrying Kylie. "My old man, three million bucks. We're rich now. We're really rich now!" Fiona was thrilled as she carried the suitcases and said, "Tomorrow, let's go deposit the money tomorrow morning!" Soon after, the family finished their dinner. Fane came into the room and lied down on the floor. Selena got out of the shower. She was dressed in a light blue nightgown. The nightgown looked silky and soft. Fane could see Selena's fair legs behind the nightgown. It was so attractive. "What are you looking at?" Selena shot Fane a glare as she saw the guy staring at her legs. Soon after, a thought came to her mind. She winked at Fane and spoke in a seducing tone, "Baby, do you want to kiss me? You looked so absorbed staring at me. Should I give you a chance?"

Chapter 188

Fane did not expect Selena would say such a thing at that timing. Looking at their daughter who was already fast asleep on the bed, Fane nodded, "Of course, I would love to kiss you!" Selena blushed as she walked toward Fane. Then, she said, "I'll let you kiss me if you tell me the truth!" "Are you sure? You'll let me kiss you if I tell you the truth?" Fane frowned. He felt

that things were much more complicated than it looked. "Of course! I never go back on my words!" Selena swore. "Alright, I'll tell you the truth!" Fane raised his hand and swore. "Then tell me honestly, is that girl in the mask really the Goddess of War?" Selena asked. Fane nodded his head, "Of course. She is Lana, the only Goddess of War. It's real!" "Is she really your friend? Don't lie to me!" Selena stared at Fane as though she wanted to see through everything. Fane smiled bitterly and said, "Alright, I was actually lying previously. She's actually not my friend!" Selena's face darkened as she heard his words. She was not his friend and she was rich; did Fane really become a toyboy to earn forty million bucks? "I knew it. You're a liar!" Selena's eyes turned red as she felt hurt. "I'm sorry, I just wanted to live in peace. She's not my friend, she's actually my apprentice!" Fane said helplessly, "You're the only person who knows this. I don't want to lie to you because you're my woman. Don't tell mother and the rest!" "Apprentice?" Selena was shocked. She doubted what she heard, "You're getting more ridiculous! I didn't believe you when you said she's your friend, but now you say she's your apprentice..." "What's so ridiculous about this? She really is my apprentice!" Fane shrugged, "You're the one who kept pestering me to tell you. Now that I have told you, you don't believe me!" "Why don't you say all nine Gods of War are your apprentice? This is ridiculous!" Selena rolled her eyes at Fane. "Actually, what you said is true. All of them are my apprentices." Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry, "I didn't think you would notice. My wife, you're incredible!" Selena almost fainted. That guy was really shameless. When did he get the nerve to say all nine of them were his apprentice? Who did he think he was? "I'm sick of your lies, you liar. You're such a big fool!" "Oh my, why did I believe that you can bring happiness to our family? You only know how to brag!" Selena looked at Fane, turned around, and was prepared to go to bed. "Wait!" Fane pulled her back and cornered her against the wall with one hand above her head. He stepped forward and stood closer to her body. "You, what are you trying to do?" Flustered, Selena's heart raced uncontrollably. Her beautiful

eyes were wide open. "You said that I can kiss you if I tell you the truth earlier. You can't just go back on your words, can you?" Fane smirked and stared at the person in front of him. "But...you didn't tell me the truth. You're still lying to me..." Selena lifted her head angrily.

Chapter 189

"Mm!" Before she could finish talking, someone lowered his head and planted a kiss on her red lips. Selena's eyes instantly went wide open. She was dumbstruck. She never thought that Fane was so bold and dared to kiss her like that. Her heart raced uncontrollably and she felt weak in her knees! "Go away!" She pushed Fane away when she came to her senses. Then, she said angrily, "You jerk, how, how can you kiss me like that... I shouldn't have let you sleep in the same room with me!" "You promised me just now. Now that I told u the truth, you have to keep your promise!" Fane licked his lips and walked back to his mattress. He lied down and savored the moment, "I decided not to brush my teeth tomorrow. I will certainly have a sweet dream tonight!" Selena was pissed. She never knew Fane could be such a rascal at times. It was both Selena and Fane's day off the next morning. The two of them were getting ready to send Kylie to her kindergarten. Selena's anger dissipated overnight. Walking on the streets while they were all dressed up, they looked like a beautiful scene from a movie. "Let me tell you, there is only twenty-four days left until Grandfather's birthday. Did you prepare the gift already? It's not easy to find a gift worth tens of millions bucks!" The taxi arrived in front of a private kindergarten. Wearing a cold face, Selena said, “I’m not kidding. If you can't fulfill your promise, it means that you're lying to me all this while!" "Gifts worth tens of millions bucks? Wouldn't I appear too insincere then?" Fane smiled indifferently, "I should at least prepare over a hundred million bucks worth of gifts to make my wife proud!" "A hundred million bucks? Look at you; you don't even blush when you're bragging!" Selena was speechless. That guy really knew how to brag. If it was not for the sake of her daughter, she would have chased him away.

She felt like she was such a fool for believing that guy's sweet talk. It seemed like his words cannot be trusted easily. "Honey, give me a minute, I need to use the restroom there. Both of you wait for me here!" Fane looked at the public toilet at the side and said. "Go, go. Darn you, you're such a nuisance!" Selena said grumpily. "Hey, is this Selena? What are you doing here?" As soon as Fane left, a middle-aged woman holding a little boy walked toward Selena with a smile on her face. "Rachel, oh my god! It's you! I haven't seen you for years!" Selena was delighted, "I can't believe I am meeting my college classmate here! Is this kid here your son?" "Yes. He's already in the senior class of kindergarten!" Rachel smiled and looked at Kylie, "Is this your daughter? She looks so adorable. She will grow up into a very beautiful woman like her mother!" "You're flattering me. Your son is very handsome too, he must be a very successful person in the future!" Selena was very happy to meet her college classmate whom she had not met for years. "Of course. Just look at who is his father; he's a manager in a factory!" Rachel's face was glowing with pride. She looked at the kindergarten next to her, "This is the most expensive kindergarten in the Middle Province. The annual tuition fee cost as much as the annual salary of some office workers. Those who earn lesser might only be able to afford to send their kids here if they don't eat or drink for two years." Speaking of which, she showed off again, "Haha, my son is studying here. He's in the senior class of kindergarten now." "Really? That's great. I'm signing up for my daughter today. How much is the fee?" Selena smiled. "Did I hear you wrongly? You're sending your daughter to this kindergarten? Do you have the money?" Rachel stunned for a second. Then, she looked Selena up and down, "Selena, this is the best and the most expensive kindergarten in the Middle Province. I think you'd better forget it. I understand your situation now. You can't afford to send your daughter to this kindergarten!" "Yes, yes. Kids from a poor family can never afford to study at this kindergarten!" Rachel's son was very cocky as well.

Chapter 190

Selena's face darkened as she heard what Rachel said. It was a happy coincidence to bump into an old classmate there, but she did not expect that she would look down on her. Rachel met and married a wealthy man during her second year of university. Not long after she graduated, she got pregnant and had a baby. Therefore, her son was already six years old and was studying in the senior class of the kindergarten. "How much is the tuition fee here?" Selena was not sure about the tuition fees; she only heard that the kindergarten was the best. "Haha, it would cost at least a hundred and twenty thousand bucks a year including the living expenses. So? Do you have enough money?" Rachel laughed and said, "Selena, you were the prettiest girl in our class back then. There were rumors saying that you were born in a rich family too. Everybody in our class envied you!" Rachel paused for a moment after finishing her sentence. Then, she continued saying, "Too bad, I heard my husband said you married a delivery guy and he was sent to the army on the second day of your marriage? He didn't come back for five years. I bet he's already dead on the battlefield right now? Moreover, your family chased you out because you were pregnant. Tsk, what a miserable life!" Selena was embarrassed, "Seems like your husband is very well-informed!" "Well, that's for sure. After all, he is considered as one of the upper-class people. Moreover, he has thousands of staff in his factory. That is why he always keeps tabs on influential families' affairs!' "Also, you were given the title of ‘Most Beautiful Woman in Middle Province' by the boys. So, you've become the focus in this city. How can we not pay attention to you?" "My husband told me you were having a hard time looking for jobs. Hah, I never expected a white swan-like you would turn into an ugly duckling." A wave of emotions washed over Rachel. Back then, she almost became the prettiest girl in their class but Selena always had an edge over her. She always took away her spotlight. That was why she felt resentment against Selena. "A hundred twenty thousand bucks a year. This is..." Selena

frowned. It was pretty challenging for her. She only had a hundred thousand bucks with her. She thought that would be way more than enough. She did not expect the annual tuition fee for a kindergarten to cost that much. She did not have enough money. Rachel was satisfied looking at Selena's face, "What's wrong? Are you surprised? This is the best kindergarten. Mothers call this kindergarten a noble kindergarten. Only the upper-class families can afford to send their children to this kindergarten. If you're not a millionaire, I'm afraid you won't be able to send your children here!" Selena smiled awkwardly. She was thinking of asking her mother to transfer her some money later so she could pay for the tuition fees. After all, her mother had just gotten three million bucks yesterday. She would have three million and eight hundred thousand bucks with her. That amount of money was huge enough. Moreover, they were in cash. Fiona and Andrew were riding their electric scooter, on their way to the bank to keep the money. On the other hand, they came here by taxi with their kid. Rachel spoke as Selena remained silent, "That is why I said kids from a poor family cannot afford to study in this kindergarten. You better bring your daughter and look for another place. Some public kindergartens would be much cheaper. The annual tuition fee might cost only a few thousand bucks. I'm sure you can afford a few thousand bucks, right? If things still don't work out, I'll lend you some money. I take pity on you. After all, we used to be classmates." "You don’t have to do that! I don't like owing people favors!" Selena smiled bitterly and said. "Haha, you are still so stubborn as always. Come on, admit it if you don't have money. There's nothing to be ashamed of. You should borrow some money and let your child study first!" Wearing a smug grin on her face, Rachel walked over and held her son's hand. Then, she waved at Selena," Selena, I'll head in to register my son first." "Mm!"

Chapter 191

Selena could not be bothered with her. She never thought that Rachel would be so materialistic after all these years. “Let’s go!” Fane said as he quickly

came over with a smile. “There’s not enough money. I’ve just met my university mate. Her son is also studying in this kindergarten. She told me that the yearly fees will be a hundred and twenty thousand bucks! I’m short by twenty thousand bucks!” Selena frowned, “I wonder if my parents banked in the money yet. Once they’re done, I’ll have her transfer twenty thousand bucks to me!” “Let’s go! We’ll just swipe my card!” Upon seeing Selena’s frown, Fane could not help but hold her hand and pulled her in. “Ah!” By the time Selena realized what was going on, Fane had already pulled her along for quite a distance. It was the first time they held hands like that, causing her cheeks to blush. Fane’s other hand was holding onto Kylie’s chubby little hand. After entering kindergarten, Selena felt really embarrassed and struggled to break free. Fane came to a stop as well. He crouched down and looked at Kylie, asking, “Kylie, do you want to study? If you study here, you’ll have a lot of toys and many friends to play with you. In the future, daddy and mommy will come to pick you up when we’re free. If we’re busy, then Aunt Shauna will come to pick you up!” “Really? There’ll be many friends and toys? That’s wonderful!” Kylie’s eyes brightened upon hearing that and started jumping up and down from excitement. Looking at the father and daughter duo interacting harmoniously, a faint smile appeared on Selena’s face. Very soon, they led Kylie into the kindergarten. After registration, they were about to pay the fees. Right then, Rachel, who just finished paying her fees, saw them. “Oh my, Selena, you’re still here? Why did you come in?” Rachel exclaimed in surprise, then looked over at Fane, “Oh, your husband hasn't come back in five years. He should be long dead on the battlefield, right? Is this the stepdad you found for your child? He seems quite handsome. However, his clothing seems rather lackluster. Sigh, why didn’t you learn from your mistake? What’s the use of liking a handsome guy? You should look for a rich one!” After that, she continued her monologue, “You see, without money, you can only come in and have a look. You can’t even register here. My condolences!” “Dear parent, they’ve already registered. They’re here to

pay the fees!” One of the female teachers interjected with a smile. “Impossible! She can’t possibly fork out a hundred and twenty thousand bucks! Did they con you?” Rachel had a surprised look on her face, which quickly turned into a smile. “I’m her university mate. Of course, I know what’s their financial situation like!” “University mate, eh?” Fane was long annoyed by her speech. It was fine for her to humiliate him, but for her to say that to Selena… He smiled coldly, then stated, “It would seem that education does not guarantee character. I see that you’re quite well to do. Why is your personality not matching up?”

Chapter 192

“Brat, just who are you? I’m speaking to my classmate, it’s not your place to butt in!” That middle-aged lady was annoyed. However, she quickly sneered and exclaimed condescendingly, “Oh my, Selena, you found this guy to be your man? Not only is he poor, but he also seems rather uncultured. The way he speaks is just so vulgar and lowly, as though he’s entitled because of his poverty. I’m amazed!” “Hehe, who told you I’m poor?” Fane chuckled, then took out an ATM card and passed it to the kindergarten principal’s assistant who was in charge of fees. “Pretty lady, we’ll pay by card. No password is needed!” “Tsk...tsk... you’ve managed to borrow a hundred and twenty thousand bucks that quickly? It must’ve been hard! I’m sure you’ve burnt through all your options to get it!” Rachel sneered once again. “It’s just a measly hundred and twenty thousand bucks. Why would I need to borrow?” Fane was at a loss. She was just too condescending. “Sob! Sob!” Right then, that middle-aged woman’s son started crying. “What’s the matter, my precious? Why did you fall on the floor?!” Taking a look, that woman’s heart ached. She could not be bothered to deal with Fane any longer and ran over to help her son up. “Mommy, she pushed me!” The little boy accused and pointed at Kylie. “What?!” This time around, Rachel exploded in a furious rage. She stood up and shoved Kylie to the floor. “Sob! Sob!” With that, Kylie fell to the floor and started

crying as well. Fane and Selena never expected that an adult would treat a little girl with such violence. Moreover, Kylie was not even four years old yet. Selena immediately ran over and helped Kylie up, then confronted Rachel with a cold look. “Rachel Linsay, why did you push my daughter? Isn’t it normal for there to be some small fights between kids? You’re an adult and you shoved her with that much force. If my daughter is injured, you’ll have to be responsible!” “Hehe, fret not. I’m loaded. Of course, I can take the responsibility! I can totally afford to pay medical compensation!” “Furthermore, it’s you that didn’t teach your daughter proper manners. She pushed my son first so I pushed her back. That’s considered fair!” Rachel had a domineering look on her. “Kylie, you’re only four years old. Why are you so naughty? Why did you push that brother? Didn’t you want a friend to play together?” Selena felt rather helpless as well. After all, it could have really been Kylie that pushed the other kid first. “Mommy, I...I didn’t push him! He said that I’m a b*stard child without a daddy and threatened to hit me. He said he wanted to hit a b*stard child that no daddy will protect!” “I just moved out of the way and he accidentally fell over. Sob…” Kylie’s eyes were filled with tears, feeling aggrieved. Hearing that, Selena’s expression darkened. Nobody noticed what had happened earlier. “Kylie, are you telling the truth?” Selena felt aggrieved as well. For the past five years, she would occasionally overhear others talking about Kylie being a b*stard child. That was very hurtful to the feelings of a child that was only four years old. “Mommy, it’s the truth. She (Raw says ‘she’ instead of ‘he’. When joined with the next chapter it makes sense as Rachel was the one that told her son of Kylie being a b*stard child.) was the one that said that I’m a b*stard child and wants to hit me!”

Chapter 193

Kylie cried as she explained. Selena patted Kylie on the head. “Good girl, don’t cry, don’t cry!” After comforting Kylie, Selena stood up and her face turned icy cold in an instant. “Rachel Linsay, you’re going too far! Your son

fell on his own and you blame my daughter? Moreover, Kylie is not a b*stard child. She has a father!" "She's a b*stard child. Definitely a b*stard child. Mommy said so. A child without a father is a b*stard child!" "Her father died in the war. If she's not a b*stard child, then what is she?" Rachel's son felt unconvinced and started shouting. "Who said she has no father? He's her father. He's back from the war." It was the first time Fane witnessed Selena losing her temper like that. Her daughter was her entire world. She could tolerate small fights between kids, but when the other party was an adult that shoved Kylie unreasonably, that was something she could not tolerate. "Who knows if your daughter might be lying? Moreover, how would I know that he's your daughter's biological father?" Although Rachel was feeling slightly guilty, she still maintained a firm stance despite being in the wrong. "You must apologize to my daughter immediately or I'll never forgive you!" Selena glared at Rachel. "Dear parent, your son did try to push this little girl and ended up falling to the ground himself!" said a female teacher that witnessed the scene. "Everyone is just doing it for the good of the children, right? We all care for our children. Your child is precious and so are the children of others. You just need to apologize!" Rachel felt sorely ashamed, shaking her head then barked at the female teacher, "Mind your own business! Only rich children are precious. How can poor children be considered precious? Much less a b*stard!" "Didn't you hear? Apologize to my daughter!" Selena held onto Rachel as she reprimanded her. "Get lost, Selena Taylor. Do you think I'm afraid of you? If not because we were university mates, I won't even talk to someone like you. I'm someone of the upper class of society. Don't you dare pull my shirt? Once it's torn, you can't afford to pay for it!" Rachel held her head up, not remorseful at all. "If you don't apologize, I'll never let you go!" Selena's mind was set. "Scram!" Rachel shoved and managed to push Selena a few steps backward. Riiiiip! Rachel's sleeve was torn off completely from her shoulders. "Damn it. Which crazy woman dares bully a woman belonging to me, Dylan Tucker!?" Right then, Dylan, who was coming over to pick up his wife and

son saw Rachel's sleeve being torn. Without asking for clarification, he immediately reacted by raising his hand to slap at Selena. "Hubby, get her. Hit that b*tch!" Seeing her own husband's arrival, Rachel felt all the more confident. "This woman and her daughter are both trash. I think they're just jealous of our riches!" Dylan had a terrible expression on his face. His hand was raised, just about to hit Selena's face. "Ah!" Selena was shocked. She wanted to dodge, but it was too late. However, before Dylan's hand could swing downward, it was held tightly. "Do you think I'm invisible?" Fane's expression was ice cold. He glared at Dylan and growled through gritted teeth, "You dare bully my wife and daughter. I think you're tired of living!"

Chapter 194

"Ah!" Dylan made a disgusting shriek as he felt his bones almost shattered. That excruciating pain caused the veins on his forehead to bulge and his eyes widen. "Son of a b*tch! Do you know who I am? I'm a factory manager with over a thousand people under me. You dare attack me?" He bellowed at Fane through gritted teeth. "Dear parents, please don't fight. We can talk this over peacefully!" The kindergarten teachers and principal were all in shock. They did not expect a fight on registration day. "Factory manager? Hehe, I don't care what manager you are, that doesn't let you bully my daughter and wife. Otherwise, I'll make sure your factory closes down with a phone call!" Fane chuckled, then shoved him aside with a push. Dylan, who seemed bulky, was actually rather weak. Fane did not use much strength, but he ended up falling over on the ground, landing on his back. "Ouch!" Dylan exclaimed. He then climbed back on his feet with great difficulty and massaged his buttocks. "Y-y-you useless trash. How can you lose to such a skinny bugger!" Upon seeing her own husband being unreliable, Rachel was even more frustrated. "Ouch. Kid, I dare you to wait here. Just you wait!" Dylan pointed angrily at Fane. He knew that Fane's strength was great and he was of no match. With that, he quickly made a phone call. As he reached the door, he turned around and looked at Rachel.

“Honey, don’t worry. I’m just making a call. Bloody h*ll, how dare he bully my wife!” “Brat, you’re doomed! I’ll have you know that you won’t be leaving this kindergarten today!” Rachel huffed at him angrily. “Apologize to my daughter and wife!” Fane could not be bothered with Dylan. Instead, he turned his attention to Rachel and demanded coldly. “Hmph, you want me to apologize? Dream on!” Rachel replied as she put on an arrogant expression. Whoosh! Unexpectedly, the very next instant, Fane stretched out his hand and tore off the other sleeve from her. Her white t-shirt suddenly turned into a sleeveless one, giving her a pathetic look. “Y-y-you son of a b*tch. How dare you rip my clothes? Pervert! Honey, he’s a pervert—” Rachel began yelling. “I’ll count to three. If you don’t apologize to my wife and daughter, I’ll tear your shirt and pants to shreds!” Fane’s expression remained extremely dark, giving them no room for negotiations. “You dare?” Rachel took a step forward, then puffed her chest up. “One.” “Two.” Fane ignored her and approached her as he counted, stretching his hands. “I-I-I’m wrong. It’s my mistake, okay?” Seeing that Fane was crazy enough to carry through his threat, Rachel was almost scared to tears. She took a few steps back and then covered her chest with her hands, afraid that Fane would grope at them. Selena was stupefied by the sight. ‘This person is so thick-skinned?’ However, that solution seemed quite effective. Otherwise, how would Rachel admit her mistake? Nevertheless, she was definitely insincere! “Forget it. Let’s go!” Seeing Rachel behaving that way, Selena’s anger subsided as well. She had no intention of staying any longer. “Sure, whatever you say, honey!” Fane nodded, then carried Kylie from the ground and led Selena toward the exit. Rachel looked at Fane’s back, her gaze filled with viciousness and grievance. ‘That Selena Taylor...it’s been so many years after graduation, yet she still lords over me and utterly embarrassed me today.’ Rachel secretly followed them, trying to see if the people her husband called for had arrived. “What’s the matter? Do you want to leave? Stay here, brat. I dare you to stay!” Dylan came forward to stop Fane as he saw them trying to leave. —

Chapter 195

“Hehe, I dare, but why should I wait for you to bring people over to be beaten up by me?” Fane chuckled and replied bluntly. “Bullsh*t. You’re just scared and trying to escape. If you really dare, why are you trying to leave?” Dylan was unconvinced, blocking the door with his hands. “You think I want to leave? It’s because my wife is asking me to go. It’s difficult for me to find time to accompany my wife and daughter for shopping. How can I waste my time on some inconsequential matters like you?” Fane shrugged, dismissive of the chubby person in front of him. However, right at that moment, several vans drove by and pulled over in front of the kindergarten gates. Upon seeing the arrival of his men, Dylan’s expression turned into one of joy. “Haha, brat, it’s too late for you to go now. My men are already here!” “Fantastic!” Rachel saw that and immediately ran over, standing beside her man and said, “Brat, you wanted me to apologize? Ptooi! If not because I’m afraid of you earlier, I’ll never apologize. I’ll have you know that today will be your doom!” Fane quickly handed Kylie over to Selena, then smiled. “Sigh, it seems that I’ll have to beat fear into you guys or you’ll never be satisfied!” “Beat him up! Bloody hell, turn him into a cripple. I’ll give you twenty thousand bucks each!” Dylan ordered his men. “Hehe, what if they get hurt? You’ll pay for the medical bills, right?” Fane asked with a mischievous grin. “Nonsense. I’m loaded. If they’re hurt, I’ll naturally pay for their medical expenses!” “However, you’re all alone. Do you think you can defeat a dozen of them? Hehe, brat, do you know my greatness now?” Dylan led his wife and son to the back, then ordered, “Go, beat him up. Beat him with all you have!” Bang, bang, bang! In under twenty seconds, the people he brought over were all lying on the ground, moaning in pain. “They are suffering from fractured bones in various places, some in their hands, some on the legs, and some on their chests. Tsk...tsk... the medical expenses for this would be quite a hefty amount!” Fane smiled calmly as he clapped. “This…” Dyland and Rachel exchanged glances, then both swallowed hard.

They were not sure if their ears were playing tricks on them. If what Fane said was real, then they would be losing a lot of money. Moreover, the family members of these workers would also cause trouble for them. “Oh yeah, my daughter will be studying here in the future. Your son better take a detour around my daughter, understand? Otherwise, your little factory might just be gone. Moreover, if I want to kill trash like you, it’s easily done!” With that said, Fane picked up a cobblestone from the ground and gripped it hard. That cobblestone with the size of a chicken egg quickly turned into dust, blown away by the wind. “Oh my heavens, Honey, is he still a human?” Rachel had never seen such a strong person. She was in so much shock that her eyes almost popped out of their sockets. “Yes, of course. Don’t worry, we’ll never bully your wife and daughter ever again. I swear by the heavens!” Dylan, who obeyed the strong and bullied the weak, was terrified. His face turned pale and his voice trembled. “You wouldn’t dare even if you’re given ten lives!” Seeing his reaction, Fane was able to roughly guess what kind of personality he had. He then took his leave along with Selena and Kylie. “How come you’re that strong? That’s too amazing.” Selena finally could not resist rolling her eyes at Fane after walking some distance. She must admit that despite this person’s love to get into fights and stir up trouble, his combat power was truly amazing. That gave her a strong sense of security. “Your husband is a dragon!” Fane answered matter-of-factly. Selena was speechless. That person had an easily inflatable ego. Right at that moment, Selena’s phone started ringing. After answering the call, Selena’s expression turned extremely ugly. “What’s wrong, honey?” Fane could feel something was amiss with one look and asked quickly. “It’s not good. My mother is trying to kill herself in anger!”

Chapter 196

“It can’t be. Your mother doesn’t seem like one who would kill herself out of anger!” Fane smiled bitterly. Although he did not understand Fiona in the past, he had roughly figured her out over the past few days. Fiona loved

money. She loved it very, very much. How could a person like that try to kill herself out of anger? Selena was panicking as well. “Honey, what should we do? 3.8 million bucks! My parents placed them in a big bag and were ready to deposit them in the bank. Unexpectedly, right at the door of the bank, they were robbed by two robbers on a bike! Upon hearing that, Fane gasped deeply. 3.8 million bucks was a huge sum, yet it was taken away just like that. If it were anything else, Fiona might not have been suicidal. However, with that amount, it was very possible for someone that loved money as her own life like Fiona. “It was quite tough for us to acquire that money. My mother was even thinking of finding time to look for a house. Who knew that in front of the bank, they would…” Selena’s mood immediately soured. With that much money gone in an instant, even her heart was aching, especially now that she greatly needed the money. “Selena, don’t worry. Although it’s not much money, my money shall not be easily taken away by anyone just like that!” Fane assured Selena with a calm expression. Having said that, he frowned again, asking, “However, I wonder… You said your parents had over 3 million bucks in hand, but they put it in such an insignificant gunny sack. They also dress very casually. How could the robbers knew that it was filled with money? Moreover, they were robbed right as they got out of the car?” Hearing his deductions, Selena was dumbfounded for a moment. “Eh, now that you said it, this does seem a little too coincidental. Could it really be a deliberate attempt?” Selena bit on her sexy red lips and frowned slightly, falling into deep thought. “It couldn’t be or could it?” After some thinking, Selena muttered softly. “Who do you suspect?” Fane asked immediately. “I think it might be Xena!” Selena then followed up, “I’ve never liked that woman! Furthermore, she’s two-faced. My family has no idea what kind of person she is, especially my brother. He loves Xena. Even if I told him some things about her, he would never believe it! “What do you mean by telling him some things about her?!” Fane was confused. Selena looked at Fane, then added, “I’ve always been against my brother being together with Xena. I’ve seen it a few times.

It was late at night, and she would stumble out of a bar with a few uncouth young men with dyed hair. She was smoking with them. Looking like that, she's just a female gangster. Moreover, she had a tattoo on her chest. I just don't like her!" At that point, Selena took a moment's pause before continuing. "Furthermore, one time, I saw a man hugging her around the waist. Although it was only for a few seconds before the other party let go of her, I could feel that their relationship was not that simple." "You didn't tell your brother about that matter?" Fane asked after giving it some thought. Selena chuckled bitterly, "No. My brother doesn't do anything with his life anyway. He just likes playing games at internet cafes. That's how he met Xena. they played the same game!" "I see."

Chapter 197

Fishing a cigarette from his pocket, Fane started smoking. It was still the cheapest White-Sand cigarette, the same familiar flavor. After taking a deep breath, Fane finally responded, "So it means that Xena is good at deception. She dresses simply in front of your brother and seems very innocent, yet she hangs out with some good-for-nothings in secret? Moreover, your brother is deeply in love with her. You're not telling your brother because you know he won't believe you even if you told him?" Selena nodded. "That's how things are. With my brother's personality, if you were to tell him, he might even lose his temper. I've tried hinting to him a few times, telling him that Xena is not marriage material and urged him to reconsider! In the end, he didn't come home for a few days straight, spending all that time at the internet cafe with Xena!" At that point, Selena looked to Fane once more. "Moreover, my brother needs money to pay the internet cafe and would always ask me or your mother. If we have no money to give him, he would yell at us, saying that you're to blame as he might still be a young master of the Tayl0r family with tens of thousand bucks of pocket money each month if not for you." Hearing that, Fane felt slightly angry. It would seem that over the past few years, Selena and his mother had endured many

indignations from Ben. Furthermore, there was also the mother-in-law that was difficult to deal with. “Could it be that Xena and your brother plotted together and arranged for this robbery? Is that a possibility?” Fane asked once more after giving it some thoughts. This time, Selena shook her head without hesitation. “That’s impossible. Some time ago, my mother just gave him 50 thousand bucks to get some gifts for Xena. He didn’t even use up the 50 thousand bucks.” Having said that, Selena paused for a moment and added, “My brother is not that brazen. Although he wastes his life away, he won’t stoop to that level. Moreover, if he’s out of money, he will surely find a way to ask my mother. He won’t resort to robbing!” “Mm!” Fane nodded. “Although Xena may not be a decent woman and might be having relations with other men in secret, we have no proof that she was responsible for today’s matter. That’s why we better not make wild claims!” Selena naturally knew that. She was afraid of accusing the innocent. “That’s right. This is just my speculation. If I accused her wrongfully, that would be bad. Don’t tell my family about those matters I told you earlier as we have no evidence. Moreover, I was stupid back then for not taking a few pictures with my phone…” “Alright, where’s your mother? Let’s head over quickly. We must get back that 3.8 million bucks!” Fane smiled calmly, then waved for a taxi. “They’re at the bank. It’s on Heavenly Dragon street. I don’t think we can get the money back. With that much money, if the robbers left Middle Province straight away, then it’ll be very difficult to get that money back!” Selena was feeling helpless. Furthermore, the power plays in Middle Province were complicated, making it difficult to deal with many matters. “Don’t worry. Those that offend me won’t end well!” Fane stated. His gaze clear and calm. The taxi quickly stopped by the bank’s entrance. Meanwhile, Fiona was seated at the curb outside the bank in tears while Andrew was consoling her. “Ma, stop crying. There are so many people watching. It’s embarrassing!” Selena approached them and said in a helpless tone. “It’s over 3 million bucks! That’s over 3 million bucks! I’ve never seen that much money for five years. Now that I finally have it, it was taken away from me

just like that. How can I not cry?" Fiona was wiping her tears while looking at Selena and Fane. "It's because of you. If both of you followed us to the bank, will we get robbed?" Fane was speechless. How was he to blame? "Mother, don't worry. This money won't be lost!" Fane smiled bitterly, trying to console her.

Chapter 198

"You said it. You said it yourself. I don't care. If you can't recover the money, you'll have to give me 3.8 million!" Upon hearing Fane's response, Fiona immediately stood up and grabbed onto Fane's collars and made unreasonable demands. "Ma, it's not Fane that took your money. How can you be like this? He can at most help you look for it and see if he can recover it. Even if he fails to recover the money, you can't demand the money from him, right?" Selena was speechless. Her own mother was being too unreasonable to expect Fane to take responsibility for this matter. "I don't care. He's the one that claims to recover the money for sure!" Fiona did not let Fane go. "Sure, sure. If I can't find it, you can take it from me!" Fane was speechless as he moved her hands out of the way. "Mother, don't you worry. You're Selena's mother, that makes you my mother. I won't let your money be taken away from you just like that!" "That's better!" Fiona finally stopped crying and went back to smiling. She then asked Fane, "You better give it your best. Give me a deadline. I can't be waiting forever, right? Can you get it back in a week?" "Ma, how can it be that easy? Do you think we're picking up money from the floor? Who knows where they will be hiding after taking the money?!" Selena felt the need to stand up for Fane as her mother made it sound like Fane owed her the three million bucks. "He agreed to it himself. You can't blame me, right?" Fiona had seemingly realized her own unreasonable behavior, but she still crossed her arms and replied, albeit without much confidence. Having said that, she then looked at the nosy crowd around her. "What're you looking at? There's nothing to see here. Get lost!" "Alright, Mother. I'll promise you to get them back in

one week, okay? If I can't recover the money, I'll add it to the betrothal gifts during Grandfather's birthday. How's that sound?" Fane comforted. "Good. You're quite understanding, unlike my daughter who always tries to side with outsiders and not consider her own mother's feelings!" Hearing that, Fiona felt happy and her mood improved significantly. "Alright now, let's take a taxi back." Andrew felt rather embarrassed by Fiona's emotional outburst in public as well. "Mm, you guys head back first. I'll think of a solution!" Fane smiled, then waved a taxi for the two elders to send them home. "Look at you. Why did you listen to my mother? She's too unreasonable! I didn't even blame her for losing the money, yet she pushes the blame onto you and places a one week limit to find the money. You think you're god?" Selena finally ranted in anger after her parents went back and the crowd dispersed. "I'm not god, but I can definitely help find the money!" Fane smiled calmly, comforting her, "She's your mother after all. She's already old. Losing over 3 million bucks just like that, she'll naturally feel horrible. How can we not comfort her? Furthermore, if we blamed her as you said, she might lose it and kill herself. What will we do then?" Hearing such thoughtful words from Fane, Selena's heart warmed up immediately. She rolled her eyes at him. "You and your sweet talks. What's this about my mother being old? Is she that old?" Fane grinned. "Isn't she fifty years old already? Is that still not considered old?" "That's not true! She's only forty-nine. Moreover, with proper and consistent skincare, she looked like someone in her late thirties!" Selena made a bitter smile, then looked at Fane. "What should we do now? Can we try to ask the bank for their surveillance records?" "Daddy, are we not going to the amusement park?" Beside him, Kylie's mouth pouted, seemingly unhappy. "Go, of course, we're going!" Fane immediately crouched down, comforting her, "Daddy promised to bring Kylie to play. Of course, we'll have to go!"

Chapter 199

“Yay, wonderful! I’ve never been to the amusement park!” Kylie was extremely excited. “Kylie, if you give daddy a kiss, I’ll even bring you to the zoo after going to the amusement park. How about that?” Fane rubbed Kylie’s round little head. “Yes! Yes! We can go to the zoo as well. I’ve never been to the zoo!” Kylie got even more excited as she gave Fane a light kiss on his cheek. Fane felt his heart tremble for a moment. That was his own daughter kissing him like that for the first time. It was the feeling that only fathers could experience. It has been five years. From the moment Kylie was born, she had always lacked fatherly love. He could only try his best to make up for it to the mother-daughter duo. “Are we really going?” The scene before Selena had similarly made her heart tremble. She suddenly felt as though in a trance. Fane might like to boast, but he was indeed a good father, and also an excellent husband. In fact, being by his side gave her a feeling of security. That feeling was strong despite him constantly stirring up trouble. “Of course! I’ve promised our daughter and she even gave me a kiss. As her father, how can I break my promise?!” Fane was in a great mood. “But you promised my mother to look for the 3.8 million bucks and even said you’ll get it done in a week. We can’t be wasting time!” Selena naturally wanted to spend time with her daughter as well, but Fane had promised to recover the money in a week. Should they not be looking for the bank and ask them for the surveillance record for this area? “How can an outing with my wife and daughter be considered wasting time? Let’s go!” Fane carried Kylie with a grin on his face and waved at a taxi by the road. “Yay, this is great. I can go to the amusement park!” Kylie exclaimed loudly. Perhaps the little girl was overly excited, she planted another kiss on Fane’s cheek. “Daddy is wonderful. Kylie has a father. I’m not a b*stard child. Kylie loves daddy!” “Let’s go and unwind for a day!” Selena followed them into the taxi. She had a joyful expression. For five years, she had lived every day under stress, causing her to look rather haggard. That day, their family of three could finally take a day off. Three of them quickly arrived at the amusement park. They went through all the rides except those that

were too dangerous for Kylie to play. When they're done, it was already two in the afternoon. The three of them found a small restaurant for a simple lunch before heading to the zoo. "Wah, Daddy, look, panda!" "Wah, Daddy, look, giraffe! It's just like the drawing!" "Eh, Daddy, what's this?" "Oh, it's a snake? What snake is this? Will it bite?" Along the way, the excitable Kylie turned into a curious child. Selena was at a loss on how to react. Along the way, Kylie would constantly 'Daddy' this and 'Daddy' that. Somehow, it felt like her daughter was much closer to Fane than her. "Wah, Daddy, look, tiger!" Wah, Daddy, look! There's a boy not far from the tiger!" … Hearing that, Fane was shocked. He took a quick look and gasped deeply. There was a boy that fell into the tiger viewing area.

Chapter 200

In the tiger viewing area, there were two ferocious Siberian tigers. In the central area, there was a stone bridge. Quite a number of tourists would stand on the stone bridge to see the tigers up close and take pictures with their phones. On the side was a sign warning them not to play or climb over. Unexpectedly, a boy around seven to eight years old accidentally fell inside while jumping on the guard rail. "Ah! Somebody save my son!" A middle-aged woman immediately shouted for help in panic. "Sob! sob! Mommy…" The skin on the boy's calf was torn and bleeding. However, the wound was not serious. Unfortunately, the two Siberian tigers were ferocious carnivores. Upon smelling blood, the tigers that were lying on the floor stood up and slowly approached the little boy. "Quick, quickly go get the zoo employees here!" "Oh god, what can we do? The two tigers are coming. Oh my god, that little boy is in danger!" "What's the mother doing? Her son was so naughty and playing on the rails, yet she didn't pay attention to that. So careless…" The people on the stone bridge broke into discussions, yet none knew what to do. "What to do? What to do? Who can save my son!?" That woman was crying. She was panicked and did not know what to do. "Somebody save my son. I'll pay one million bucks for whoever that saves

my son!” “No, 10 million…” The woman quickly changed her mind, thinking that the more she paid, somebody would go down to rescue the boy. “Go, faster go save him!” Fane looked and immediately placed Kylie on the ground. After passing her to Selena, he quickly rushed toward the stone bridge. “Is that woman stupid? Who dares to jump down there? Those are ferocious Siberian tigers, and adults too. Isn’t it just looking for death to jump in there?” “That’s right. You can’t throw your life away for money. Although 10 million bucks is no small sum, one needs to survive to use the money, right?” “That’s right. Only an idiot who has gone nuts for money would jump in to save the boy!” “Oh, this place is quite high. If one is unlucky, one might end up getting hurt from the fall jumping down from here. If the legs are hurt, that’s even harder to save the boy!” The tourists on the stone bridge started going into a heated debate. The two Siberian tigers were only two meters away from the boy and were letting out a deep growl. Seeing that, the woman did not care that she was wearing a skirt and tried to climb over the guard rails. “Little Jake, Mommy’s coming to help you. Don’t be scared!” “Mommy, help me, help me, sob sob sob…” The little boy seemed to have twisted his ankle. His ankle was red and swollen. The boy kept crying as he stretched out his hands, trying to hold onto his mother on the bridge. “Are you trying to die?” Just as the woman was about to jump down, Fane finally arrived. He gave her a pull and pulled her back. “Let me go. I want to save my son, I want to save my son!” The woman struggled continuously in front of Fane. The greatness of a mother’s love caused her to disregard her own safety. “Shut up!” Fane shouted sternly at her. He then lightly tapped on the guard rails and leaped, jumping down just like that. That woman was stunned. She never would have expected the young man that just pulled her back would jump down to save her son.

Chapter 201

“Oh my god, someone really jumped down?!” “Is he not afraid of death? That’s two Siberian tigers in front of him!” “How is he unhurt after jumping

down from this height? Could that kid be a martial artist!?" "10 million bucks. Someone's willing to risk his life for 10 million bucks! However, that's two adult Siberian tigers. That kid is just asking for death!" Quite a number of tourists broke out in discussions. Selena, too, ran to the bridge while carrying Kylie. Seeing Fane jumping down, Kylie seemed to have sensed that it was dangerous. She shouted anxiously, "Mommy, it's Daddy. Daddy jumped down!" Selena was just as anxious. Those were tigers, not human, and there were two of them. Judging from the looks of it, the tigers were hungry. Their eyes were filled with killing intent. "Don't worry, Kylie. Daddy will be fine. Daddy is a hero. He's there to save people!" Although Selena was deeply worried, she still tried to comfort Kylie who was in her arms. "Thank you, thank you. If you save my son, I'll pay you 10 million bucks. I really have the money. No, I'll pay you 50 million bucks!" That middle-aged woman kept crying on the bridge. Now that somebody went down, her emotions were slightly more stable. After Fane jumped down, both the tigers stopped in their tracks and glowered a Fane. Fane did not try to immediately reach for the child. Instead, he looked at the little boy and yelled at him. "Shut up. Why are you crying? You're not a man if you cry!" The little boy was crying out of fear. Now that Fane shouted at him, he no longer dared to cry, but instead shut his mouth and sobbed quietly. "Do you understand your mistake? It's written there to not climb or play. Didn't you see it?" Fane pointed at the signboard on the stone bridge, then stated, "If you don't admit your mistake, I won't save you!" "Uncle, I know my mistake! Sob sob!" The little boy looked pitiful. After saying that, he once again lost control and cried aloud. "F*ck me, this man is trying to teach the kid a lesson at a time like this?!" "Although that teaching method is the right approach, they're both about to die. What's the point of teaching now?" A number of tourists were at a loss on how to react. "Roar!" The two tigers raised their heads slowly and roared at Fane. That sound carried along the domineering presence of a ruler. "You beast, if you know what's good for you, then get out of my way. In my eyes, you're nothing but little kittens.

You won’t be able to kill the person I want to save!” Fane’s eyes turned serious. A terrible killing intent flashed across his eyes. “Little brother, look over there. There are some vines there. Quickly carry my son and run over there. You can climb up that vine onto the stone wall. That will get you up here!” The woman on the stone bridge directed after looking left and right. However, Fane ignored her solution and coldly looked over the two tigers. “Roar!” The tigers exchanged glances, then leaped at Fane simultaneously. “Ah!” The people on the stone bridge closed their eyes out of fright. It was too scary. “He’s doomed. Two Siberian tigers attack together as if a planned attack. That kid is dead for sure!” “Humans die for money, birds die for food. Sigh, it’s because of his greed for that 10 million bucks! Oh no, it’s 50 million bucks. However, what’s the use of 50 million bucks if he’s dead!?”

Chapter 202

“Ah!” The crowd was extremely anxious. Quite a number of them exclaimed in terror. They all thought Fane would surely die. If it was one tiger lunging at him, Fane might be able to struggle for a moment. Although it was useless to struggle, it was still better to face them one on one. However, with two tigers coming from both sides, anyone else would only be met with death. Bang! Unexpectedly, the next instant stunned everyone. All of them almost have their eyes popped out of their sockets from the surprise. Both the Siberian tigers that lunged at him were held down to the ground with his hands on their head. “Roar!” The tigers bellowed deeply and struggled with all their might. However, it was to no avail. Fane’s strength pressing down on their head had them fully pinned down, unable to escape. “Roar!” The Tigers continued to struggle. Their hind legs were kicking so much to the point of digging two pits behind them, yet it was of no help. At that time, two zoo employees finally arrived at the scene. When they opened the metal gates, the sight they saw had them shocked to the core. “Oh my god, am I seeing things?” “Yeah. Is this man that strong??”

The two employees immediately rushed over and carried the child. “Roar!” Although the two tigers were running low on strength, they still continued to roar in anger. “What now? The tigers are angry. At this rate, even if he releases the tiger, we can’t calm them down and stop them from hurting people!” One of the guys asked nervously. “You guys carry the child and go out first. Lock the door properly!” Fane turned around and instructed the two employees. “Wait here brother. Just hold out a little longer. I’ll go get the tranquilizer gun!” The other employee immediately suggested. “That’s right. If the tigers were not angered, they would still obey. Normally we’re the ones to feed them, so…” “However, in this situation, if you let go, they will surely attack…” The other employee interjected. “You both really talk a lot. If not because these Siberian tigers are protected animals, I would’ve killed them with a punch each!” “Get the child out of here and lock the door!” Fane stated sternly. “Brother, w-w-what about you?” One of them was deeply touched. What a great man that was willing to sacrifice himself to save a child. Moreover, in order to ease their worries, he was lying about his ability to kill the tigers in one punch. Such a nice person was really rare to come by. “Go!” Fane yelled. The two employees finally carried the child out and brought him to his mother on the stone bridge. “Sob sob, Little Jake!” The woman hugged her son and burst into tears once more. This time, it was because of joy. She quickly remembered something, then looked at the man holding the tigers by the head down there, feeling extremely touched. “Little brother, what about you? You must stay alive! I still need to repay your kindness!” “Sigh, it’s already lucky enough that he managed to hold the tigers down by their head. Unfortunately, good people don’t live long!” said a guy from the crowd. “The two employees are off to get the tranquilizer gun. Little brother, hold out a little more!” On the bridge, others were cheering Fane on. “Roar!”

Chapter 203

Both the tigers kept up with their struggles. Time and time again they tried to raise their heads. Unfortunately, they were still held firmly on the ground by Fane. Suddenly, Fane released both the Siberian tigers and backed off swiftly. “Roar!” The tigers finally got up and glared at Fane intently. After a moment, both of them once again rushed at Fane. Bang! Bang! This time, Fane gave each a kick and sent both tigers flying a few meters back. “Oh my god!” The tourists on the bridge were worried about Fane and thought he was in trouble. Never did they expect Fane to resolve the danger once again. After sending the two tigers flying, Fane turned around and dashed, arriving at the edge of the cliff. He then dashed upward. His legs took a few steps, flashing about, and got up in just a few simple moves. With another leap, he was already up on the stone bridge, standing in front of everyone. The two tigers pounced forward and only caught air, only realizing Fane standing on the stone bridge after raising their heads. “Roar!” Both the adult Siberian tigers roared at Fane, who was on the stone bridge, for some time before they finally lowered their heads and turned away. Fane’s entire stunt added up to a total of at most two seconds. The speed was just too fast. To many of them, Fane was back with just a blur. After a momentary silence, it was followed by thunderous applause. “Thank you, thank you, you’re my hero!” That middle-aged woman immediately grabbed Fane’s hand and said excitedly. “Pass me your bank car. It’s a promise. You saved my son so I’ll pay you 50 million bucks as a sign of gratitude!” “Oh my god, 50 million bucks! Just who is this woman? She’s rich enough to actually pay him a reward of 50 million bucks?” “Big risk, big rewards. This man struck the jackpot this time!” Quite a number of tourists were looking at Fane with admiration. Fane’s show of strength earlier had similarly shocked them. “Pretty lady, your husband is too amazing. How is he that strong? Moreover, it’s about three meters tall and he was able to get up here in one breath!” Another auntie could not help but approach Selena. “Your husband is too amazing. Having married such a strong husband, you must be very happy!” Selena squeezed out a smile, then said, “He’s been in the army for five years

and just only came back from the battlefield!” “No wonder he’s amazing. Those that battled the enemies on the battlefield and survived five years are definitely not ordinary folks!” Upon hearing that, some of the men looked at Fane more respectfully. Such a person was worthy of their respect. However, none of them expected what came next. Fane told the woman bluntly, “Don’t bother with the 50 million bucks. If it’s for the money, I wouldn't have saved your son!” Having said that, he went forward and crouched down. He then gently touched the child’s ankle. Upon hearing those words, the crowd was dumbfounded. 50 million bucks worth of reward. That amount, to any of them, was a huge incentive, yet Fane rejected it squarely. Perhaps that was what it meant to be a hero that served the country. Hearing those words, Selena too had a smile on her face. She had not planned to take the money. After all, the reason Fane saved people was not for the money. “Ah!” The child could not hold back from crying out. His face turned pale. “I’ve already called the ambulance. It’ll be here very soon. I wonder what’s wrong with the leg. It’s all swollen. Who knows if it might be very serious!” The woman looked and explained with a worried expression. “Let me handle it. This ankle is badly dislocated. If we don’t fix it, the blood vessels would be blocked and make things worse!” “By then, if left for a long time, the bad circulation might lead to the possibility of amputation!” Fane looked at the boy’s ankle, then asked him, “Little Jake, right? This time, it might hurt a little but it’s unavoidable. You can only endure it!” “Wait, are you a doctor? Can you do it? Aren’t you a soldier?” That middle-aged woman was extremely worried. “Kiddo, you saved my son’s life so I’ll definitely pay you that 50 million bucks. However, please don’t act rashly on my son’s injuries!” Crack! However, just as she finished her sentence, Fane quickly grabbed Little Jake’s leg and gave it a good tug, creating that sickening sound. “Ah!” Little Jake turned around and screamed, then passed out.

Chapter 204

“Fuh!” Fane stood up and let out a deep breath. He then reached for a cigarette and slowly lit it, taking a puff. However, his brows soon curved into a frown, feeling the gaze from the crowd turning abnormal. “I-i-isn’t he a soldier that kills enemies? Isn’t he a fighter? Does he know anything about medicine?” Finally, one of the aunties asked slowly. “How can he know anything about medicine? Killing and saving lives are two completely different things, okay? Furthermore, that child passed out. He’s not dead, is he?” An old man asked in a worried tone. Hearing those words, Little Jake’s mother almost passed out from shock. She immediately glared at Fane. “What’s wrong with you? My son was just fine earlier. Why is he not moving now? Did you just kill him? Could it be that you knew my family is rich and think that 50 million bucks is too little?” “No way?!” A number of people from the crowd took a deep breath. If Fane really had such a thought, that would be too evil. 50 million bucks and he still finds it insufficient? “Impossible. My husband is not such a person!” Selena immediately stepped forward, then confronted that woman. “If he wanted to kill your child, he wouldn’t have jumped down there in the first place. Saving him, then just to kill him? Isn’t that just redundant?” Unexpectedly, that woman immediately grabbed Fane by the collar and shouted, “I don’t care. My son was doing just fine earlier. He was crying and could talk to others. Now he’s just lying on the ground, not even moving. I don’t care, I want my son to wake up right now!” Selena was speechless. She then stood up for Fane. “Hey woman, why are you so unreasonable? My husband just risked his life to save your son. How can you think of him this way?” “Hehe, who knows if he jumped down for that 10 million bucks?!” The woman chuckled, then blabbered incoherently, “He must’ve seen me suddenly raising the amount to 50 million bucks and realized that I’m from a rich family, the super affluent. Now that he’s found me out, he feels that 50 million bucks was too little and wants more!” “You crazy woman!” Fane’s expression darkened. “If I want more money, can’t I just ask you earlier? Why would I do something so redundant?” That woman instantly lost all

her bluster, feeling that Fane's words made sense too. However, she did not plan to let go of Fane's collar. She asked, "Then you tell me, do you have a medical license? Are you a doctor from a hospital?" Fane was speechless. He smiled bitterly, "Although I have no medical license, nor am I a doctor, I have great medical knowledge. I know how to save people! Isn't it sufficient to save someone?" "Hehe, look here everyone. He doesn't even have a medical license. How can he prove that he can save people? He's not even a doctor yet he dares to simply touch my son. If my son is dead, I'll never let him go!" The woman laughed out loud, then stated in a loud voice, "Everyone here should be my witness. This kid is greedy beyond measure. I'm sure it's because he thinks I'm underpaying him!" Fane looked at her impatiently, then moved his cigarette to her arm. Upon seeing that, she was alarmed and immediately let go of Fane's collar then took a few steps back. "Kid, what do you want? You son of a b*tch, are you trying to burn me?" Fane adjusted his own collar, then sneered, "Burn you? Hehe, if you knew whose collar you were holding on earlier, you'll be deeply regretful! I saved a life out of kindness, yet you look down on me like this?" Finishing his statement, Fane took another puff of the cigarette, then continued, "Your son was merely unconscious because it was too painful to bear. His leg is all better now. It's still a little swollen at the moment. When the time comes, just apply some anti-inflammatory medicine and painkillers will do. You can even skip the trip to the hospital and get them from the pharmacy!" "W-w-why should I believe your words?" The woman maintained her fierce stance, "I'll wait for the people from the hospital to come and make an examination! Moreover, my son is still unconscious. How do I know what's happened?" "If you want to wait, then wait here yourself. Don't waste my precious time. I'm enjoying the day with my daughter and wife. My time is very precious!"

Chapter 205

Having said his peace, Fane was about to leave with Selena. “You’re not allowed to leave!” However, that woman blocked their path. “I think you’re just feeling guilty. Otherwise, why are you trying to leave?” “That’s right. That boy was fine just earlier and would only need to wait for the ambulance, yet this guy tried to provide treatment? In my opinion, he’s just a quack that’s trying to show off but end up causing an accident!” Some of them started to criticize Fane, stating, “The path to evil is paved with good intentions!” Obviously, nobody would believe a soldier to do a doctor’s work. The two zoo employees came running. When they saw the situation, they immediately exclaimed, “Wonderful, brother, you climbed up all on your own? That’s amazing!” Having said that, he looked over to the little boy on the floor. “Wasn’t he just fine earlier?” Hearing that, the woman immediately started complaining in tears, “That’s right. Everything was fine earlier. He was awake, but this guy came and offered to help. In the end, I don’t even know if my son is dead or alive now. I don’t care, if my son is dead, or his condition worsens, he’ll have to compensate accordingly!” The employee’s expression darkened as he looked at Fane. “Little brother, we’ve already called the ambulance and it’s on the way. Why must you try to provide treatment? We have no idea about this child’s injuries. If you’re not trained in that field, it’s better not to do anything and let the doctors decide. Why didn’t you wait?” “If I waited, he might require amputation!” Fane explained. Right then, an ambulance drove to the edge of the bridge and the medical personnel ran over. “Thank goodness the doctor is here. Doctor, how’s my son?” “This area was swollen earlier, but then this soldier here gave it a tug like this and my son went unconscious…” Noticing the doctor’s arrival, the woman went into tears and explained as though grasping at straws. “Don’t rush. Let me have a look!” The doctor examined and said, “There’s nothing wrong. He’s just passed out and will wake up in a bit. Moreover, from what I can see, it must have been badly dislocated previously. It’s already being set back in place. This kid’s technique is spot on.” “Y-y-you’re sure?” The woman swallowed hard as she stared at the

doctor with wide-opened eyes. The doctor said grunted impatiently, “Nonsense. I’m an orthopedic specialist. How can I not diagnose the situation? Go buy some anti-inflammatory medicine and apply it for a few days. It’ll be fine. The situation earlier should be much worse. If it wasn’t treated in time, that would be dangerous.” “Hehe, so the experts understand while the layman laughs!” Fane chuckled, then put out his cigarette and threw it in the trash bin. “S-s-sorry. I’ve wrongfully accused you!” The woman lowered her head and said in an embarrassed tone, “How much money you want? I can pay you!” “This apology is sufficient. No need for payment!” “Next time, don’t jump to the wrong conclusion and blame the good guy!”

Chapter 206

“I…” The middle-aged woman was furious beyond comprehension, yet she did not know what to say. The people who had been criticizing Fane earlier now all turned on her, saying that she had gone too far, suspecting her own benefactor like that. “Mom…” At this moment, the boy who had fainted regained consciousness. The crowd began to clap their hands again. “50 million? You’re amazing, dear!” They walked off for a while before Selena finally smiled. “You’re really not tempted by that much money? If you took the 50 million, you could have easily solved the issue of Grandfather’s coming birthday!” Fane gave a wry smile as he looked at his wife. “My dear, would you take the 50 million if it was from the person you had saved before?” he asked. “Of course not. I don’t save others to get money!” He quirked a brow when he heard that. “Heh. My dear, it seems like you desperately want me to fork out 40 million bucks to get your parents’ approval. I think this proves that you truly love me, and you want to be with me.” Selena’s face immediately reddened. “No way!” she protested hastily. “I just think that it’s a shame that you let 50 million bucks slip past your fingers just like that.” The three roamed around the zoo for a while before exiting the place and was about to call a cab to go home. However, they

never expected a BMW to quickly pull up near them. The driver rolled down the window. The man grinned towards Selena. “Oh, and I thought that I saw wrong. Never imagined to really run into the belle of our class!” “Hugh Launer!” Surprise filled Selena when she recognized the man. Then she smiled toward her husband. “Fane, this is an old coursemate from my university,” she explained. “He was like one of my bros, and we were pretty close before. Never thought I’d run into him here.” “Fane?” The man studied Fane, then looked at Kylie, who was being carried in his arms. His face suddenly broke into a smile. “I was wondering why this name sounded so familiar. Don’t tell me that you’re that delivery boy from last time,” he said. “Didn’t you enlist in the military? It seems like you’ve retired already.” “That’s right. I’ve been back for quite some time now.” Fane offered the other man a smile. “I happened to have some time off today, so I came out to accompany my wife and my little girl.” “Are you guys about to call a cab home?” A woman sitting beside Hugh peered toward the young family. “Oh, so this is the class belle that Hugh mentions about frequently!” she said, smiling. “You married pretty early, didn’t you? Your daughter is so big already!” “What class belle? Those boys had nothing better to do than to go around labeling everyone, that’s all!” Selena chuckled, slightly awkward. She was not stupid. She detected the venom laced beneath the woman’s words. “No way. Hugh told me that most of your campus’s beauties were in your class! “So basically, it is not even an understatement if a class belle from your class is recognized as a campus belle!”

Chapter 207

The woman wore a black satin dress, which contrasted against her snow-white skin, giving her an ethereal appearance. Additionally, soft waves rippled down her hair, exuding a youthful countenance. Of course, the woman had a nice figure as well. She lacked some of Selena’s natural elegance, but she was equal in almost all other physical aspects. “You’re too humble now. You’re such a great beauty yourself!” Selena chuckled and

spoke politely. “Are you guys calling a cab from here? It’ll be difficult, considering that it’s peak period now. There’ll be plenty of people calling for cabs too!” The woman scanned Fane and Selena. “Oh, what a drag it is to not have a car,” she commented. “It seems like your husband can’t support you very well!” Hugh flashed an awkward smile at the woman’s words. “Right. Selena, it so happens that there’s a class reunion tonight. We’ve already invited quite a few of our old cronies over. Why don’t you come too? You can bring your family along!” “Oh, yes! Come on over. It must have been years since you guys last met!” The woman nodded her head too. “You have to show up for our dear Hugh.” “Well…” Selena drew her brows together, hesitant. She had been good friends with Hugh before, but she had not seen him in a few years. She was afraid that the old cronies he had been referring to would all regard her with judgmental eyes, like Rachel Linsay. “What are you waiting for? Trevor Turner’s back in the country too. He says that he’s going for a job interview tomorrow in a huge corporation. Apparently, he knows a manager who works there. The interview is practically in the bag for him! “Besides, we haven’t had a gathering in years. You, as our resident class belle, will definitely have to come!” Hugh quickly added on, “If you don’t come, I’m not your bros anymore!” “All right, all right. I’ll come. Where is it? I’ll send my daughter back home first, and I’ll come tonight with my husband.” Selena’s smile was empty. She had no choice but to accept the invite at his persistence. Besides, she had not seen Trevor in a long time either. She had been pretty close with him too. “The Lotus Bar and Lounge at eight. We’ll be waiting at the entrance for you. Be sure to turn up!” Hugh smiled and waved his hand. “Then it’s settled. I’ll be going off first. I have to change my clothes!” After he finished speaking, he immediately drove off. “Seriously? Why you have to invite her to the gathering? They can’t even afford a car, and you invited them to such a classy place. We’ll be embarrassing ourselves too then.” Hugh’s girlfriend could not help but roll her eyes at him. “The people at this gathering are either driving a Benz or a BMW,” she said unhappily. “Your friend and her

husband are in a completely different class from us. They are like the country bumpkins as if it was their first time stepping out into the world. They will become a laughingstock" "What are you talking about? We graduated from the same university! Besides, we were close before, and it's not easy to get everyone together. It won't be a problem if she's there! "Other than that, I heard that she's been running into walls over the past few years. It's because she married a good-for-nothing and insisted on having the kid, so the Taylors practically forsook her. She can't even find a job now!" Hugh flashed a wry smile. "The Taylors are aristocrats too. Who knew that Selena would have fallen to where she is today!" "Hmph. She's such a pitiable creature, isn't she? Perhaps you like her? She has a husband though, so don't think about it!" The woman beside him spoke, envy tingling her tone.

Chapter 208

Fane and Selena quickly called a cab and left, with little Kylie in tow. However, Fane looked as though a thought occurred to him just as they drove through a street lined with 4S Audi retail outlets. "Sir, let us down here," he told the driver. "Here?" Selena was stunned, her gaze flickered with suspicion. It was only after they got down from the cab did Fane explain everything. "Honey, I think we should get a car. It seems as though the former classmates who'll be showing up at the gathering are the classy sort. That woman just now was practically showing off, too. They might gossip terribly about you if you don't drive a car there!" he insisted. "I'm fine with that, but I can't let you suffer!" "But do you still have money? Why don't we wait until my pay comes?" Selena frowned. "I'm not afraid of suffering. If they look down on me, so be it. Everything's fine as long as I'm happy. Let me live my own life; it's not like I'd bother about theirs." "I still have money! We haven't finished the bonus I was awarded for being in the military for five years." Fane scratched his head and looked at Kylie before he turned to look at Selena. "Besides, it's going to be hard taking

Kylie to school during rainy days if we don't have a car," he added. "So this won't do. And I don't think one car is enough. We need at least one for ourselves, and another for Jenny to take Kylie to school!" "You still have money? You spent 3.2 million already though, yet you still have money?" Selena was slightly taken aback. "How much did they give you, exactly? 5 million? 10 million? If you did get 10 million, you weren't some regular grunt in the forces, were you? You must've at least been in special ops!" Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry when he heard this. "Something like that," he concluded. "Just don't look down on your husband. Let's go. We still have enough to buy a car!" "All right then. Let's get two!" Selena was in a good mood, and the smile on her face was evidence of that. "My family will be in for a shock when we drive the cars back home!" "Heh. Let's go!" The family of three quickly walked towards a BMW retail outlet. "Sir, Madam, are you here to see the cars? I'm sorry, but we're about to close up shop!" A saleswoman was mopping the floor inside, and she immediately stopped when she asw the three of them. "Come again tomorrow if you really want to take a look!" "What are they looking for, anyway? It's so late already, and I need to go for a date. Besides, the cars here aren't cheap. They don't seem like the sort who can afford them!" Another saleswoman walked over and said disdainfully, a frosty smile on her face. "Joyce, be more polite. You can't speak like that even if they can't afford the cars." The saleswoman who was mopping the floor rolled her eyes at Joyce. "I'm polite enough as it is. See, this model is one of the cheaper ones, and it's already 300 thousand bucks!" "This one here is seven hundred. Do you think they can buy them?" The saleswoman named Joyce folded her arms across her chest as she sneered. She added arrogantly, "It's so late, and everybody can't wait to go back home. Why should we waste our time on them? Besides, it's too troublesome to do all the loan applications and all that!" The saleswoman who was mopping the floor nodded her head. "That's true. It's always like that. No one buys the car even after we spend nearly half the day introducing the models to them. What a waste of time!"

“Fane, dear, forget about it. They’ve started mopping the floor already. It won’t be too nice if we leave our footprints all over the place either,” Selena spoke as she frowned.

Chapter 209

“True. Let’s go over to the Porsche store on the opposite side.” Fane nodded and brought Selena outside. “Porsche?” The two saleswomen finally responded after the family of three walked out. They stared at each other, wondering if they misheard what Fane said. The two thought the family would go to a store that sold cheaper cars when they heard the price of the BMWs. They never thought that they would actually go over to the Porsche store instead. “Joyce, do you think we’ve lost a potential customer? What if he does have money?” The saleswoman mopping the floor frowned. Regret tinged her expression. “No way!” Joyce replied instantly. “The clothes the woman was wearing don’t seem too bad, but the man’s clothes are basically market goods,” she argued. “How rich do you think a man like that can be? He probably just said something to provoke us to save his own face!” After she finished speaking, she headed straight toward the entrance. “If you don’t believe me, let’s watch them from here. They definitely won’t go in!” The saleswoman who was mopping the floor joined Joyce at the entrance. Her brows furrowed. “No way… Joyce, they went in. Don’t tell me they genuinely want to buy a Porsche.” “No, no. It must be an act,” Joyce answered immediately. “They’re afraid that we’re watching, so they’re pretending to go in. They’ll come out in a while. I’ve seen plenty of that sort before!” … “Are we seriously going in?” Selena frowned at the Porsche store’s entrance. “Do you know how to pick a car? Porsches are very expensive, and you say you want to buy two. I’m scared that we can’t even afford one! How much money do you have left, exactly?” After he heard this, Fane replied carelessly, “Honey, don’t worry about it. Don’t mention two cars; buying this entire store won’t be a problem!” Anxiety washed over Selena. This man still wanted to joke around at this time. ‘Don’t tell me

Fane actually received 10 million bucks from the military. In that case, he must've been a commander in his troop, or maybe a high-ranking officer!' Selena drew her brows together as she considered the possibilities. Judging from Fane's confident demeanor, he probably would be able to take out at least a few hundred thousand bucks even if he were exaggerating his wealth. Otherwise, they would just be embarrassing themselves walking in like this. Yesterday, she happened to learn the positions of a commander and a captain; the former was in charge of leading a good hundred men whereas the latter would lead roughly a thousand or at least a few hundred men. Retired colonels could obtain 10 million, though it could even exceed that amount. Of course, some merely received 4 or 5 million. 'He probably had 10 million. He had just spent three million and two hundred thousand earlier. If he buys two cars by the end of this, his spending could be about 5 million. He even promised to compensate my mother with the three million and eight hundred thousand that can't be found anymore. He wouldn't be that confident if he didn't have at least 10 million!' Selena slowly made the deductions in her head. Noticing his wife's absent-minded gaze, he spoke, "What are you thinking about, dear? Look around and see if you like anything. We'll get whichever you like!" Selena snapped back into reality. "I don't know the price of the cars here, and you tell me to get whatever I like? Let's just get whatever that's cheaper! It's a waste of money if we buy the expensive ones." After she said that, she stepped into the reception area and saw a saleswoman mopping the floor. Her expression immediately darkened. "Oh, come on. They're about to close up, too! I don't think we can get a car today…" she grumbled. "Let's come back tomorrow."

Chapter 210

The saleswoman was scrubbing the floor with vigor. Sweat trickled down her forehead due to the sweltering weather. She lifted her head and spotted a couple at the entrance. The man even had an adorable little girl in his arms. She immediately placed the mop aside and walked over, a smile plastered

on her face as she did so. “Are you two here to have a look at our cars? Please, please, come in. Do you want a drink? We have lemonade, coffee, plain water… Anything you like.” The saleswoman peppered them with questions, and the smile she wore never fell for a moment. Selena was stunned for a moment before she looked at the recently mopped floor. “Aren’t you worried we might dirty the floor you just finished cleaning?” “Don’t worry about it! You’re our customers, and you’re the king here. Step over the floor as much as you like!” After the saleswoman said that, she looked at Kylie. “What an adorable young lady,” she said, smiling. “She’s so pretty. It’d be great if I had a daughter as pretty as her in the future!” “That Dana... Why is she so welcoming toward anyone she sees? Does it do her any good?” “Yeah. We sell Porsches here. Can that couple afford them? We’re about to close shop and here they are, wasting our time. Everybody worked so hard to mop the floor, and they just came in here dirtying the place. We’ll have to mop all over again!” “I don’t care...she’s in charge of mopping, anyway. I’m just going to go home when it’s time to go.” The salespeople who stood by the side observed Dana, quietly muttering among themselves. It seemed like they were displeased with their colleague’s actions. One of the salespersons flashed a mirthless smile. “Dana is still at the bottom of this month’s sales performance,” he commented. “Hmph. She’ll probably receive a good scolding from the manager if she still can’t make sales, so she has no choice but to be friendly. Still, she’s such an idiot. She really doesn’t know how to pick her customers. Doesn’t look like she’ll make a sale this time either!” Meanwhile, Fane was encouraging Selena to look at the cars. “Go and look around, dear. Just choose anything you like. If you want it, we’ll buy it!” Fane told Selena, smiling. She frowned. “Don’t worry about the drinks,” she said to Dana. “What are the cheaper models around here?” “This way, Miss. Take a look at this one. It’s a lower-end model that only costs 5 to 6 hundred thousand!” Dana smiled as she walked toward a model, introducing it to Selena. “Honey, you have to buy a car you like. How can you use the price as a criterion?” Fane observed the situation

and simply asked his daughter, “Kylie, why don’t you choose? Let’s just get whatever car that you like.” Kylie scanned her surroundings. Then, she pointed at the 911 model, its design sleek and luxurious. “This red one looks good to me, Dad!” “The red one?” Fane grinned when he heard that. “Then let’s get it!” “Sure, it looks good. But how much does it cost?” Selena’s brows furrowed. She was worried that Fane would not have enough cash in his credit card, and that would be an extremely awkward moment for them all. “You have a good eye. This is the 911, but this model is more expensive with better specs. Of course, this model isn’t all too pricey. It’s only about 2.7 million!” A saleswoman of the shop felt her patience leaving her, and she strode over on purpose. “I knew you can’t afford it!” she mocked. “2.7 million?” Selena took in a sharp intake of breath when she heard the price. She tugged on Fane’s sleeve. “Never mind, dear. It’s too expensive. Let’s just get the car she introduced to me earlier!” The saleswoman’s lips twitched by the edges. Judging from Selena’s tone, it was as though they could still afford the previous car Dana introduced to them worth 5 to 6 hundred thousand. Furthermore, it seemed that the couple was truly intent on buying a car. Could it be that Dana had stumbled upon an opportunity? “No can do. Since you think it’s nice, and our daughter likes it, let’s get that one!” Fane smiled and fished out his credit card. “Do you have stocks of that red model?” he asked Dana. “I want two of them, and the exact same model!”

Chapter 211

“Y—Yes! Yes we do!” Dana was so elated that her voice quavered as she spoke. This particular model was extremely expensive; it was good enough if they could see one of them per month. Although quite a number of people bought Porsche cars, they still could not regularly sell a model that cost over 2 million. More importantly, Fane requested for two of the same model. “Did...did I hear wrongly?” The other saleswoman’s jaws slacked. She stared at the credit card in shock. “No, wait,” she said. “What card is this?

Why haven’t I seen it before?” Fane’s lips twisted into a wry smile. “It’s a specially made card. There’s probably less than five of its kind in the entire world. It’d be stranger if you’ve seen it before! I think I'm the only one in Cathysia who has it.” The saleswoman suddenly flashed a humorless grin when she heard that. “You’re lying. Less than five of its kind in the world? We don’t know if you can swipe that card with that much money charged to it. If you’re really the only one in Cathysia who has this card, then no one will recognize it, but that also means no one can prove that it’s real either. Isn’t that right? You’re pretty clever, aren’t you? What a seamless lie!” Selena stifled her chuckle with a hand over her mouth; her husband was exaggerating his wealth to another level. Less than five of that card in the whole world, and he was the only one in Cathysia who had one? He really had an inflated opinion of himself. The lie was so bad that even the gods would frown upon him. “You’re awesome, Daddy!” Selena felt embarrassed when Kylie stared at Fane in pure admiration, her eyes practically sparkling. “All right, let’s get the bill. The two cars will cost 5.4 million bucks in total.” Selena said to Fane, a stiff smile on her face. “Sir, aren’t… Aren’t you going to bargain with us? We can provide special offers!” The saleswoman’s expression was stricken with panic. It was the first time she had seen someone spending over 5 million bucks in one shot, and he did not even try to bargain! “Hmm? No thank you. It’s too troublesome. It’s so late already, and we have an appointment tonight. How about this: just give us a toll card!” Fane inattentively bargained after he thought about it. “All right. I’ll give you a toll card worth 20 thousand bucks!” Dana was practically jumping with joy. She quickly handled the necessary documents before bringing Fane to the payment counter. The face of the salespeople who had been looking down on Fane earlier suddenly darkened. A sale of over 5 million, and Dana snatched up this bigshot customer. “Sir, Miss, the insurance will be effective immediately, but you won’t have a license plate if you drive the cars now. It’ll take a few days before the plates will be issued, but we’ll provide temporary plates.” Dana spoke with a small smile

as her heart leaped with delight. Never could she have imagined that this man would be such a wealthy tycoon. “All right, then we’ll just drive it off first!” Fane nodded his head, and the husband-and-wife pair drove the cars from the shop. They stopped at a nearby gas station to refuel their cars before returning to the dilapidated garden. “Wow, a Porsche 911!” Ben was resting in the garden. He opened the door to the sight of the two new cars, and he immediately cried out, “These are definitely not the lower-spec models either. Heh. It’s got to be at least 2 to 3 million per car! “Who’s driving them? Why do I feel like they’re driving inside here? Don’t tell me that Fane offended some tycoon again and they’re here to create trouble for us.” Xena stood up too, gulping. Soon enough, the cars came straight in, parking within the perimeter of the garden’s fence. “Mom, we’re back!” Selena was grinning, pure happiness on her expression.

Chapter 212

For the past five years, their family had suffered together. At that period, Selena constantly thought of how wonderful it would be to live a good life or drive a nice car. Unfortunately, she had not much of a choice back then. She could only grit her teeth and move on to survive. It was only natural that she was overcome with giddiness as she could finally drive a luxury car worth more than 2 million. “Huh? I—It’s Selena!” Fiona rushed out of the house. She noticed that it was Fane and Selena who got out of the cars, and she abruptly yelled to the house, “Andrew, come here! Look! It’s our daughter. Oh my goodness, what a beautiful car. It must have cost quite a pretty penny.” “Selena, what...what’s going on?” Ben walked up to her. “It must’ve been expensive, and it looks new. Dear God, don’t tell me that this is yours?” he asked. “Well…” Selena cast a glance towards her husband, frowning. She did not know how to explain this. If she told her mother that Fane had plenty of cash on hand to buy these two cars, she would surely think that Fane had refused to take his money to compensate for her stolen 3.8 million bucks. She would not be so happy then! Fane shared this thought

and was just as stunned as his wife. Fiona quickly stepped forward when Selena did not answer immediately. “I see… Fane, you little punk. Did you get my 3.8 million back?” she huffed. “And you just took the money to buy these two sportscars? That’s too much! That’s my money! How can you just use it to buy your car without my approval?” “These cars are too expensive; all they do is burn a hole in your pocket. It’s fine if we’re rich, but we wouldn’t even be able to feed ourselves if we weren’t!” “Luckily Fane and Selena make good money now. It won’t be a problem!” Andrew chimed in from the side. He stared at the handsome new cars, the red coat of paint that gleamed over their bodies. The sight sent a chill down his spine. “Where did you find the money then? Tell me, Fane, did you find my 3.8 million? I told you to find it for me, not use it to buy new cars.” Fiona glared at Fane, panting with anger as she asked the questions. That was her money—her life. Fane thought about it for a while, and soon after, he chuckled. “Mom, how could I?” he said, smiling. “This isn’t your money at all!” “Then is it yours? You punk. You still have that much money? How much do you still have? Take it out and give me my 3.8 million…” Fiona stuck her hand out towards Fane as she asked for the money. Fane flashed a mirthless smile. “It’s not my money either. Tanya bought the cars for me. Heh!” Selena also released a sigh of relief. “That’s right. Tanya does everything without a thought given to it,” she added quickly. “She just gave each of us a car after she found out that we have none. It’s so that we’ll have our own transport to work!” “So Tanya gave them to you? That’s awesome! She gave such expensive cars to us just like that. My goodness, our luck might just run out!” Andrew was extremely excited. He stepped forward and carefully trailed his hand over the car as though he was touching a child’s unmarred skin. “How much is one of this? At least a million? It’s a Porsche, right?” It was obvious that Andrew did not know cars. “Dad, it’s the Porsche 911. The cheapest model costs at least 1 million, but this doesn’t look like the 1 million-bucks model!” Ben spoke as he raked his eyes over the car. “Tanya is such a nice person!” Joan had just emerged from the kitchen. She had

overheard the entire conversation and gracefully spoke, “I don’t know how we can ever thank Miss Tanya! She’s our savior; she’s helped us so much before, and now she’s given us such luxurious cars.” To make everyone believe that Tanya had given the cars, Fane tacked on after he thought about it for a while. “These cars aren’t actually ours, either; they’re Miss Tanya’s. She just bought them to let us drive them, so basically they’re hers. We’re only given the chance to drive them around, but we’ll have to resign if I resign.”

Chapter 213

“Exactly! That’s how it is!” Selena managed an awkward smile. If her mother ever found out that Fane had used his money to buy two cars worth over 5 million, she would probably tell Fane to dig through his wallet in front of her. Fortunately, Fane was quick on his feet. He just shoved the responsibility toward Tanya. “The Drake family sure is rich. They let you two drive company cars, and they’re such luxurious models too!” “How much did she spend to buy this?” Ben asked Fane with excitement. “Not a lot, about 2.7 million per car!” Fane grinned. “2.7 million per car... Just as I thought: A car like this would at least cost 2 million, and it’s actually 2.7 million per car. My God, it’s amazing. This is a car that a man should drive!” Ben was so excited that he gave a small jump. His body was practically quivering with delight. “Then don’t tell me that two cars come to over 5 million in total? My God, a rich man’s world is unimaginable!” Xena was stunned too. She swallowed a bitter gulp. She had intended to see if she could mingle with the upper class through Ben. After all, he was an aristocrat. Of course he had been chased out of the family, but who knew if Old Master Taylor saw the light one day. She never thought that to those who were truly wealthy, 5 million was a drop in the bucket. “These are ours! They’ll be ours!” Fiona exclaimed. “Fane, Selena, that Miss Tanya is the daughter of James Taylor, so she is the wealthiest woman in the entire Middle Province,” Fiona rambled in exhilaration. “The Drake family is

probably even wealthier than the Four Major Families! It seems like Miss Tanya truly values the two of you, so I'm telling you to not do anything stupid. Just do a good job and maintain your position, understand?" "I know that, Ma. We'll definitely work hard, since Miss Tanya is so good to us!" Selena smiled. "So if you don't quit your job, the cars are basically ours!" Fiona crowed. "If others ask you whose car is this on the streets, just say that it's yours. Understand? Just tell them that you bought it. Others won't know the entire situation, so they'll definitely believe you. We'll have such an indisputable reputation!" Fiona's vanity suddenly surged within her. "Heh... I want to ride in this car too one day. I have to go out into the streets in it!" "All right, all right. Don't worry. We'll tell everyone that we bought it ourselves!" Selena looked at her husband and flashed him a humorless smile; she did not know whether to laugh or cry. The cars were theirs in the first place anyway. "All right, all right. Why don't you come in and rest first? Dinner will be ready once the rice is done!" A satisfied smile lit up Joan's face. Everything would be all right so long as her son lived a good life. She had always believed that her son would not let the Taylors down. Fiona and Andrew—as well as other members of the Taylor family—would certainly acknowledge her son eventually. "Oh, right. Did you help to look for my money this afternoon, Fane?" Fiona raised the question when the hype had died down. Fane's lips curved into a stiff smile. "We did poke around for a bit, but there are no clues as of now. Miss Tanya called us by then and asked us to pick out a car. At first, I thought she was taking us to choose a regular car, but who knew that she would actually take us into a Porsche store." "You should start looking harder, then. I did give you seven days after all. You either find the money, or you pay me that amount of money. Got it?"

Chapter 214

"Don't worry, Ma. Fane will definitely get your money back." Selena gave her a tight smile and replied, "All right. Fane and I are going to a class

reunion later. A few of my old classmates invited us to go and drink and sing our hearts out in a bar! I haven't seen them in forever, so I have to go." Fane and Selena rested for a while before they went off to shower, and they then prepared to go out when it was about time. "Huh? Mom, where are the cars?" Selena's expression darkened when she saw the empty porch. She had heard the sound of a starting car when she was showering but assumed that it came from the road. She never expected that the Porsches would have been driven off. "Oh. Xena and your brother took the cars out for a spin," Fiona said simply. The corners of Selena's mouth twitched. "Ma, can't they just drive one car if they wanted to drive that badly?" she said to Fiona. "Why did they drive both off? They knew that I had to go for an appointment. Why couldn't they have left one car for me? What should Fane and I do now?" "Ah, your brother just wants to go out and show off in front of his friends!" Fiona replied immediately, dismissing her daughter's concern. "He asked you and Fane to call a cab to wherever you're supposed to go first and let them drive the cars, and you can call them when you're about to leave. He and Xena will take you." Selena was rendered speechless. Fane had put his life at risk on the battlefield to earn money for them, and he even bought her a luxury car so that she would be able to stand proudly before her classmates. She never imagined that her own little brother and Xena would take the cars out while they were bathing. In the end, all she could do was flash a pained smile. "Looks like we can only call a cab now," she spoke dejectedly. Fane shrugged his shoulders, an equally tight smile on his face as well. "No way around it. Who knew that you had such an inconsiderate little brother?" He mused. "By the way, your old university mates are cultured, right? I hope they're not as snobbish as Rachel." When he said that, Fane looked as though he just thought of something as he added, "Oh, yeah. Did something happen between you and Rachel during your university days? Why would she treat you so disdainfully otherwise? She could at least give you some respect after so many years, right?" Selena felt overwhelmed at that moment. "She always thought that she was prettier than

me back in university, so she thought that she should be the belle of the class. But…" "Oh," Fane concluded, "so it's because she's not as pretty as you, but she still thinks she's prettier than you. And she envied you because of that. So now that she's married to a rich man, she's trying to stamp out your presence!" Fane quickly picked up on the underlying message. "Don't bother about these people," he added, "she actually has really low self-esteem!" "That's right!" Selena offered her husband a kind smile before her gaze fell on Fane's clothing. "Why don't you buy some nicer clothes later on? You did buy mine earlier, but yours…" Fane checked his watch. "Never mind, we don't have that much time. My clothes are pretty clean too, and I just changed into them. We don't need to go and buy a special fancy outfit. It doesn't matter what I wear anyway, so long as you're dressed up nicely!" "You sure know your way around words!" The two of them exchanged words as they walked out. They quickly hailed a cab and went straight to The Lotus Bar. At that moment, quite a few people had already gathered before the bar's entrance. Hugh gave a winsome smile. "Oh, right. There's a surprise for all of you today. Our class belle Selena Taylor—who had disappeared off the radar for a long time—will join us! I so happened to run into her at the entrance of the zoo, and I managed to get her on board." "Really? We haven't seen her in years. I wonder how she is now!"

Chapter 215

"She's a woman of the Taylor family and had a knack for business. I remember how her results were always the best when we still studied together. She must be doing much better than us regular white-collar workers!" a woman spoke aloud. She was dressed in a crisp white shirt and a black pencil skirt. "Heh... I don't think you'll ever be able to imagine what actually happened to Selena and what she's doing now, Rosa!" A bespectacled man adjusted his glasses on the bridge of his nose. He exuded a smart, stylish countenance. "Five years ago, not long after we graduated," he said to Rosa, "Selena got married!" "What? She got married?" Rosa was

shocked when she heard that. It was not considered too late for the modern woman to get married, especially for a strong, career-oriented woman like Selena. Furthermore, she was only 27 years old. Selena was about her age. If she had married five years ago, then her child—if she had one—would be able to walk and run by now. “Isn’t that true though? I heard the rumor too!” Another woman said, smiling. “She still needs to come!” Rachel’s expression turned gloomy. She never expected Hugh to have invited Selena to their gathering. Just that afternoon, although she and her husband had walked away unscathed from Fane at the kindergarten, the people they had hired to fight for them had been beaten black and blue. They were all sent to the hospital and the total bill would probably come to about two to three million bucks. Furthermore, these people needed to go for physical rehab, asides from the treatment fees. She and her husband would have to pay yet another pretty sum of money no matter what to appease them. The total amount she and her husband would have to spend was enough to make them cry. “What’s wrong, Rachel? Why do you look so glum? Don’t tell me you’re not looking forward to seeing her?” Hugh frowned. He always thought that Rachel seemed to have a grudge against everybody. “Oh, right. Now I remember! You and Selena didn’t get along well, did you?” The woman named Rosa Reyes then asked, “What’s wrong? Did you see her already? How is she now? Do you know?” The more Rachel thought about it, the angrier she got. She had been bullied by that good-for-nothing husband of hers today. More importantly, they would not dare to offend the other party anymore in the future. Since Fane and Selena were not around, Rachel thought of saying something to destroy their reputation. Mulling over it for a while, she then commented, “Don’t talk about it anymore. I just met her family this morning while we were registering our kid at a kindergarten. Selena is such a hypocrite now. She doesn’t have any money, yet she struts about as though she were a tycoon. Heh. I bet you guys don’t know that she married a delivery boy. This is what happened: the Taylor family had to send one of their sons to the military…” Rachel narrated the

troubles Selena had been facing throughout these five years in detail first before she wrapped up her story. “So think about it: How much money would a jobless, trash-picker have? Her husband has probably not been back for long either, and he’s definitely another impoverished soul. Even with all that, they still brought their daughter to register at Middle Province’s best privately-owned kindergarten today!” “That’s right. They still want the best kindergarten even though they have no money? It’s all talk! I wonder who they borrowed money from to pay the tuition fees!” Dylan also came to the gathering, his rotund figure heaving heavily. He had not been in a good mood the whole day. However, Rachel’s university mates—the female ones in particular—all had splendid figures and had pretty attractive features too. His sour mood was lifted slightly at the sight. He thanked his lucky stars he came along tonight; his eyes were blessed with the sight of such pretty ladies! “No way. That’s terrible. Never mind if they’re poor, but faking appearances too…” Rosa never thought that Selena would turn out like this. Not only did she not marry a good man, she even scraped her pockets just for the sake of her vanity. Her untainted impression of Selena immediately shattered.

Chapter 216

“Right? Selena is like a totally different person now. Such a hypocrite... She doesn’t have money, yet she likes to pretend that she does! And you guys haven’t met her husband yet,” Rachel rambled venomously. “He’s such a boorish man. All he knows is fighting, and he isn’t that educated. He does nothing but get into brawls all day. I can’t imagine how Selena’s future will be like, married to a man like that!” The initially silent Dylan then fanned the flames by saying, “Right? People of his sort always have violent tendencies. Heh... If Selena provokes him one day, we might have a case of domestic abuse!” Rosa grew frightened as she heard this. “No way... I hate violent men. What kind of man beats up women?” “Isn’t it so? I think Selena doesn’t have a good life now!” “But Selena shot herself in the foot too. She’s

so pretty, so much so that she's even known as the Beauty Queen of Middle Province. It'd be fine if she just simply married some rich fellow. Anyone would've been ten times better than her current husband!" Rachel huffed, looking as though she felt exasperated for Selena's sake. "The Selena from before wasn't such a vainpot!" Rosa sighed. It was a real pity that Selena turned out like that. "Heh... That's because she had money before. She didn't care too much about appearances because she was rich! Now she's no longer the wealthy young missus without her family to back her up. She's probably still not used to the poor man's life even after five years, and she's still thinking that she's a high-class lady!" Rachel continued, chuckling. After she finished speaking, she noticed Matt by the side, smoking silently. "Eh, Matt, why aren't you saying anything?" she said. "Oh, I almost forgot… Selena was your ex, wasn't she? You guys were dating for one year back in university, right?" Matt's expression darkened. "Rachel, why do you still like to speak such nonsense?" he responded. "How old is your kid now? Probably older than Selena's, right? You're already a mother, but why do I feel like you're still keeping petty scores against her?" "What a chivalrous man, speaking up for her. Don't tell me that you like her? Perhaps you still secretly harbor feelings for her?" Rachel flashed a mirthless smile, not caring about Matt's girlfriend who stood right beside him. Her expression morphed into a grimace. "Matt, is that true? That Selena Taylor is your ex? Do you still like her?" The pretty young woman standing by his side huffed at him. She was clad in a provocative mini black dress. "Don't listen to her, Brit. That happened ages ago. We're about to get married anyway. Do you really care about all this?" Matt immediately explained to Britney before him. She was from a well-to-do family and was considered a wealthy young lady; Matt on the other hand was an attractive young man. He was with Britney to live a comfortable life. He understood that a man without money was not a man at all. Someone like that would be regarded as trash no matter where he went. That was why he chose to live off his girlfriend—to come into money, to enjoy a rich man's life. "Hmph. I want to see if this class

belle of yours is prettier than I am. She's already given birth to a kid. She must look like an old goat now!" Britney harrumphed frostily, evidently displeased. She was only 24 years old. Not only was she young, but she also had an excellent figure. She did not believe that she was less attractive than this so-called Selena. "That's right. She's definitely not as pretty as you are. She had a kid and is picking up trash for a living now. How can she ever compare to you, the young mistress of Lee?" Matt immediately tried to appeal to her. "Of course!" Britney lifted her chin, looking like a proud giraffe. "He's here! Trevor's here!" At this moment, Trevor—who had just returned from overseas—parked his car near the entrance. "Not bad, bro. Nice BMW!" Dylan instantly grinned when he saw it. "Aren't you driving a BMW too? And his model isn't as expensive as yours!" Hugh commented, not knowing whether to laugh or cry about his own fate.

Chapter 217

"Oh right, Rachel's husband is going to treat us, right? He's a factory manager, a big boss. This small amount of money is nothing to him," Rosa said, smiling. Dylan's expression darkened. It was true: he had said that he was going to treat everyone to bolster his reputation. However, the incident from that morning cost him a lot of money. Moreover, their factory had not received a lot of orders these past two months. He might not be able to foot the bill if they ate and drank until it raked up to a few hundred thousand. More importantly, he would need to pay plenty of medical bills to the hospital. "N—No problem!" Rachel managed an awkward smile. She had said that while she was boasting. She could not turn back now, not when her reputation was at stake. "Hello, everyone. Long time no see!" Trevor chuckled heartily as he walked over. "That's right, Trevor. We haven't seen each other in a long time. We're gathered here today to welcome you back!" Hugh smiled. "What happened? Your girlfriend isn't with you?" "Oh, she had some business to attend to tonight. That's why she isn't here." Trevor scanned the crowd. "What's wrong? Aren't we all here? Why aren't we

going in yet?" "Heh. A very beautiful woman hasn't arrived yet. Want to take a lucky guess, Trevor?" Rachel spoke in a mysterious tone. "A very beautiful woman?" Trevor was stunned for a while, and after racking his mind, he answered, "You're already here...so the only other person who you call 'beautiful' is Selena Taylor, right? What happened? You guys managed to get in contact with her?" Rachel never expected Trevor to guess the answer so fast. Her expression soured slightly. "That's right. We got into contact with her. Only, she's changed so much over the past few years!" After she said that, she quickly launched into yet another narration of Selena's life to Trevor, who had just returned to the country. At this moment, a taxi pulled over on the roadside. Selena and Fane got down from it. Selena wore the branded outfit Fane had bought for her. She was already exuding elegance on her own; she seemed even more of a lady when she wore the new clothing. She smiled sweetly at everyone when she got down from the car. The men were taken aback by her appearance. "Matt, you're here!" Selena was slightly shocked at the sight of her ex. Back during their university days, she had dated Matt because she thought he was attractive. Unfortunately, Selena only allowed Matt to hold her hand even after nearly a year of dating. She told him that she wanted to save everything else for marriage. She never expected Matt to actually argue with her over this. He subsequently cheated on her and slept with Rachel behind her back. Selena could not accept something like this. She could not accept how Matt told her that he loved her yet had slept with her friend. Needless to say, she broke up with him. Of course, Matt and Rachel were not together either. Matt wanted money and so did Rachel, yet the two did not want to look for the money themselves, so they chose to find rich partners. If Selena had known Matt was here, she never would have come no matter how much she was pressed. She was already here though, so all she could do was manage a small smile. "Oh, so this is your ex. She's really pretty!" Matt's girlfriend, Britney, stepped forward. She had a frosty smile on her face as she spoke, "It's a pity that a gorgeous woman like you married a foot soldier. He can't

even afford a scooter, and you guys used a cab to come over. What a waste of an excellent face and figure!" "Ex?" Fane was taken aback for a moment before he gave a wry smile. It seemed that this was not going to be a peaceful night.

Chapter 218

Selena turned to look at her husband. She gave him a bitter smile. "Do you want to hear the whole story? We only dated for one year during university." Fane nodded his head. "No need to explain." It was true that she did not need to explain anything. After all, everything that happened before he met Selena was her business. Additionally, he clearly remembered what he saw—blood on the sheet—during their wedding night. It indicated that Selena was not someone who slept around. Fane was not angry in the least, and this took Selena aback. Furthermore, he took a step forward and faced the woman who had been the first to spark a drama—Britney. "Does it matter how we come here, Miss?" he challenged. "Is it so wrong to use a cab?" Here, Fane paused for a bit before continuing, emphasizing every word, "Besides, don't look down on soldiers. Would you live such peaceful lives without us?" "Haha! I always heard that poor people are ill-mannered. It's the first time I've met someone so poor yet so rude!" Britney chuckled and gestured to an Audi A6 parked by the side. "Do you see that? That's my car. It's not very expensive, but you guys probably won't be able to afford it even if you worked your entire life. This is the difference between us!" she said. "The others also drove here; Audis, BMWs. Don't you feel like a failure as a man?" "Hmph. What's there to be sorry about?" Fane gave an unamused smile. "If you want to use cars as a measurement for wealth, then we'll go get the two Porsche 911s that we have in our house. Doesn't that mean we're richer than you? Will you get on your knees and call me Daddy then?" "Porsche 911?" Britney was stunned for a moment, then she sniggered. "Hilarious! Would anyone who has two Porsche 911s call a cab?" Here, her gaze sidled toward Rachel. "This pretty lady said that you called

a cab when you took your kid for registration too," she added. "You two can't even afford an Alto, and you say that you have 911s? Tell me: how much did the Porsche 911s cost you? Is it the type that requires you to frequently change its battery?" A few of them could not help but laugh when they heard this. "Oh, Selena, I never expected you to turn into such a prideful person! You're just like your husband. There's nothing wrong with calling a cab, but you guys claim that you have a Porsche 911—two of them!" The woman named Rosa released a sigh. She felt that Selena had truly changed. She pretended to have money even though she had none—all for the sake of vanity! Was this the same classmate who did not place that much importance on money? "Rosa, my husband isn't lying. We do have two 911s. We bought them in the afternoon, thinking that it would be easier for us to just drive to work!" Selena explained, wearing a stiff smile. "Fine. Whatever you say. Not like I'm going to sit in your car anytime soon!" It was obvious that Rosa still did not believe her. "Oh, you two are here. What a coincidence!" Fane walked over to Dylan and Rachel. His eyes narrowed. "It seems like you've been wagging your tongues about us before we arrived, eh?" Fear gripped Dylan when he recalled how skilled of a fighter Fane was—how his men were still lying on hospital beds. He quickly waved his hand dismissively. "No, no. We were just chit-chatting. We just told them that we ran into you in the morning. That's all!" The rest of the group exchanged glances. Dylan was usually booming and boisterous, but now the factory manager seemed a little afraid of Fane.

Chapter 219

"Nevermind. Some people are too thick-faced, and we can't do anything about it! If she says that she has a 911 and yet she doesn't drive it here, what can we do? We can't just go to her house to take a look at it, right?" As a plan brewed on its own in her head, Britney then spoke with a disdainful grin, "All right then. How about this? Since it's a class reunion, why don't we just go Dutch for today's bill? We'll split expenses by counting heads. I

believe that someone who drives a Porsche 911 would have no qualms about this?" No one was dumb enough not to realize the implication of this; they knew Britney was stirring trouble with Selena on purpose. She was evidently not pleased, looking at her boyfriend's ex. Matt had even spoken up on her behalf earlier, and this only made a petty person like her even more vexed. The bill here would definitely not be cheap and everyone would still need to fork out quite a bit of money even after they split it. It would be awkward for Selena and Fane if they did not have any money. "Sure thing! I think this works out. Dylan is a factory manager, but it's not easy for him to earn money too. We can't just take advantage of his generosity. Let's go Dutch!" Hugh's girlfriend stepped forward and spoke, a small smile on her face. Dylan and Rachel did not want to treat everyone in the first place, so they were happy when they heard this. The couple immediately agreed to the idea. Since the majority agreed, including the fairly earning Rosa and the stylish bespectacled man who did not lack money, the others also agreed. "So what now? Everyone has already agreed to it. What about you two? It isn't cheap here. You better think twice! Still, even if we call for a vote, you'd have to go along with the majority, so your vote doesn't matter!" Here, Britney seemed even more arrogant. "I'll go along with whatever you decide, Honey!" Selena was unsure of their financial circumstances. They had just spent 5 million to buy two cars today. She did not know how much was left in Fane's card. If they did not have at least one or two hundred thousand bucks, they really could not go in to have dinner. After all, Fane must have spent almost all of his money by now. Ever since he came back, he spent over 8 million in total. "Whatever you want, really. I intended to treat them to dinner tonight. After all, I haven't treated your classmates to a meal after we married. This is the first time I'm meeting all of you, so I thought that I'd treat everyone this once. I never thought that you guys wanted to go Dutch but, since it's like that, let's do it then!" came Fane's sincere assurance, though with a wry smile on his face. He had spoken with Selena on the way here. These were her old schoolmates and, as her

husband, he should be the one up keeping her reputation. He did intend to foot the bill. Of course, then they could call for another gathering had they turned out to be kind people. Since they were snobs and unsightly people, this was going to be the last dinner they had together. He never expected that woman to think he could not even foot the bill if they split it. What a joke! Never mind going Dutch: He could probably buy the entire Lotus Bar and Lounge. “Hah! Since you wanted to do that, who are we to rob you of that opportunity?” Britney was stunned for a while. ‘This fellow was making empty brags for the sake of his pride again,’ she thought. If this was the case, it would fit just fine with her agenda. “You’re going to treat us to dinner? True. You’re the husband of our class belle. It’s only natural that you treat us, having married such a beautiful woman!” The bespectacled man adjusted his gold-rimmed glasses. A coy smile played on his lips. “What’s going on now? Just now you said that it was not easy for Dylan to make money, and now you think that it’s not easy for me to make money because I’m the one treating you to dinner?” Fane thought that the situation was hilarious. These people wanted to turn him into a joke.

Chapter 220

Everyone visibly stiffened when they heard this, especially Britney. Her features immediately contorted. “That’s different,” Britney retorted, “and Dylan isn’t obligated to treat us to dinner. He’s just generous. Anyway, you said it yourself; it’s your first time meeting us. This and that are different! What now? Don’t tell me that you’re scared because we want you to treat us now?” Quite a few people barely stifled their laughter. After Fane heard that they were going Dutch, he did say he wanted to treat them to dinner. Why did he not say anything earlier if he wanted to boast so badly? It was obvious that he wanted to pretend that he was rich, even though he had no intention of forking out money. Unfortunately, everyone had a terrible impression of both Selena and her husband now, thus they mocked them without thinking twice anymore. “All right then. This meal is on me. Let’s

go! Let's drink to our heart's content!" Fane said after he gave it some thought. "Let me warn you that this bar is pretty expensive. The least you'll have to pay is 10 to 20 thousand bucks. I can't say how high the bill will go. A few hundred thousand or even more, perhaps! Also, the people who frequent this bar are mostly rich young men from affluent families. Are you sure you want to treat us?" Britney said, grinning. She assumed that Fane would be scared sh*tless after he heard this, and he would not have the confidence to go in. Yet Fane replied blithely, "Rich young men? I've seen plenty of them. Ken Clark, Michael Wilson, Neil Hugo, and the likes!" Everyone took in a sharp intake of breath when they heard this. These three men were all young masters of aristocratic families. Before Dylan and the others, Britney was regarded as a wealthy young lady, but the Lee family was regarded as a second-rate blueblood family. As for someone who opened a small factory like Dylan, he was nothing to these aristocrats. They did not just dabble in the manufacturing of one product, and they certainly did not open just one factory. "My God, you know that many aristocrats?" Dylan gulped. The light in his eyes as he regarded Fane shifted. "Of course, especially Ken Clark and Neil Hugo. I've beaten them up real good, though I haven't touched Michael Wilson yet!" Fane flashed a wicked smile as he spoke bluntly. Everyone's faces twitched. Was this guy serious? This guy had beaten up those two young masters? Would their underlings stand for it? "Hmph. You really know how to brag!" Britney's lips quickly curved into a frosty smile after her initial shock subsided. "You've seen them before, do you? Plenty of people have seen them too. If you walk on the streets and spot them from afar, that counts as 'seeing' them too. And did you really think that we'd believe that you've beaten them up? You'd be long dead if you had done that!" Anxiety twisted Selena's guts. Fane was speaking the truth, but it was too preposterous for them to believe. If she had not seen it with her own eyes, she probably would not have believed it herself. "Seriously though, you speak lies so easily as though you're being honest. You almost had me fooled, but we're not idiots. It's so easy to see

that it’s impossible once you put some thought into it. You’re just a retired military man. Could you still be here talking to us, alive and well, if you really beat up the young masters of the Clarks and the Wilsons? Oh, wait, don’t tell me… You’re a spirit talking to us!” The man with the gold-rimmed glasses smiled, his eyes narrowing. “Oh dear. Never mind that Selena is now a prideful person who brags about things she doesn’t have—I never expected her husband to be an even greater braggart than her! You two are truly a match made in heaven!” “Quiet, Carl!” Only Hugh spoke up for Selena and Fane; he did push them to come over, after all. Now that everyone was belittling Selena, he felt guilty. It was only when he saw that Hugh was not happy did Carl say, “All right, all right. Let’s go in. I’m drinking more if someone’s buying!” “Sure, sure. Drink more!”

Chapter 221

Britney encouraged them to drink up some more and looked at her boyfriend, Matt. “You too!” she spoke. “You have to drink more, you hear that?” Annoyance spiked in Matt’s heart but a smile was still plastered on his face. “Definitely, my dear! I’ll listen to whatever you ask me to,” he responded. After a while, everybody finally entered the lobby hall of the Lotus Bar and Lounge. The lobby was on the first floor, and the atmosphere was lively. Fane and the others found a private room and sat inside. This private room was separated from the outside with tempered glass in between. Whatever happened outside the private room could be seen, but this could be resolved by pulling the curtain on the tempered glass. “Dear Sirs and Madams, if you’d like to use this private room, the minimum consumption will be 50 thousand bucks. The price in this menu is for your reference when you’re ordering snacks and alcohol!” A lovely server approached the group, showing the group her most beautiful smile. “There’s no time limit, so you may have fun here until the sunrise!” the server continued. “Fane, you don’t think this is expensive, do you? Since there are a lot of us, a small private room can’t fit us all. Moreover, we really want to

help to save some hard-earned money of yours, so we've no choice but to pick a medium-sized private room." Carl said as he sat down and lying her leg over and across the other leg, an indifferent smile surfaced on his face. "I think it'd be so much better if we go to the opulent big private room. They got a top-notch soundproof system there, and it's on the second floor too. You could watch everything from above like a king overseeing his kingdom!" "The best part there is a grand piano inside that big private room. Selena was an excellent pianist back then, and she graduated from The Bachelor Fine Arts in Dance! It's been a long time since we've seen her dancing and playing the piano!" Rachel, on the other hand, whined unhappily about their room size. "You're right. We've all graduated from the Fine Arts faculty. Unfortunately, I do think that the luxury big private room is a little too much for us. Besides, I heard that the minimum consumption in that huge room is a million!" Rosa chimed in with her own opinion, smiling bitterly. "My current pay is around 10 thousand at most. I can only go there once if I stopped drinking and eating and instead, work my butt off for 10 years." Rosa then turned around, facing Carl and asked, "Oh right! How're you doing now, Carl?" Carl offered a small smile and replied to Rosa in a pretentious humble manner, "How am I doing? Nah. I'm doing so-so, just a shareholder of a tiny company. Annual income plus the bonus will be around 10 million bucks or so. I could only visit the big-sized private room in Lotus at most 10 times in a year." "My goodness! I never thought that you were this successful! You're amazing!" Rachel responded in a surprising tone, "There are so many employees in my hubby's factory, but the net earning is also around 10 million." Rosa, with an envious expression over her feature, looked at Hugh and asked, "How about you, Hugh? You were helping in your folks' hypermarket store, right?" Hugh smiled abashedly. "Yup, the same old job," he meekly replied. "We used to have only three stores, but now we've managed to expand to another seven stores. It's enough for house expenses, I'd say." Hugh was genuinely humble, not at all like Carl. Carl's humility was pretentious and

intentional. “Hehe... It seems like I’m doing the worst here!” Trevor gave a bitter smile and continued, “I haven’t attended my interview, so I’m kinda an unemployed person now.” “Hey, you just came back from oversea, right Trevor? It won’t be hard for you to apply for an assistant manager in the Drake family’s company. I heard that for this position, the monthly salary can be up to 20 to 30 thousand bucks!” Britney responded, smiling. “Not to mention, your lovely girlfriend is the supervisor of that company and can surely help. This job belongs to you!” At the end of her speech, Britney cast her glance towards Selena and continued in a mocking tone, “Well. You’ll never be as bad as someone who picks up trash for a living, will you Trevor?” “Honey, I never thought that you know how to dance and play the piano. Let’s go to the big private room! I want to see you dancing and playing the piano!” Fane said to Selena excitedly, ignoring Britney completely. Everyone who was boasting confidently a moment ago went silent in a blink of an eye. Their jaws dropped and their eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers.

Chapter 222

“Wow! We didn’t hear it wrong, did we? Are you talking about the big, opulent, private room of Lotus Bar and Lounge?” Rachel was taken aback. She started to doubt that she heard it wrongly. Fane wanted to go to the room that had a million-dollar price tag as its minimum consumption? Everyone in the scene was suspicious of Fane’s words. ‘How could Fane request for the big room when he did not even have the spending power for the middle room?’ they questioned. “Didn’t you say there’s a piano there? I want to listen to my wife playing the piano. We have to go there.” Fane shrugged. “That room is so expensive... No way, we’re not going there! I’ll play piano for you when I’m free. Be a good boy for me, okay?” Selena rolled her eyes at Fane, and continued, “We’ve already spent more than 5 million for two cars today! You think your wallet is bottomless? Don’t squander anymore!” “Huh? Porsche 911 for 5 million bucks? Are you kidding me? Have you

ever seen a Porsche, Selena? You've already exposed yourself!" Dylan interrupted the couple in a mocking tone. "You should at least see how fishes swim even if you haven't enjoyed them!" "They were saying two Porsche 911s and that the price will be around 5 million for two. Don't twist their words!" Rachel echoed in a sardonic tone, laughing uncontrollably. "They wouldn't make such a shallow joke, okay?" "Stop faking your spending power! If you really have 5 million, take it out and treat us tonight in this medium room! That big room of Lotus is for world class businessmen to have their business discussion. I don't even dare spend money alone there." Carl grinned sardonically. "Stop pretending! I can't bear it anymore!" Matt, who stayed quiet all the time, finally voiced out, "You have my respect for being the most pretentious couple, echoing one another! How shameless!" He then looked at his ex, Selena and said, "Selena Taylor, are you trying to prove that you're doing better than I am? Do you really have to do so? Don't you dare to think that we didn't know what happened to you in the past few years! You think you could cover it up by not contacting us all this while?" "I agree! Who doesn't know that you had been cast out by the Taylor family, couldn't find a job anywhere, and was forced to pick up trash for a living? Someone even saw you picking up trash with a kid! What now? Trying to fake your wealth in front of us? Haha! Is it so hard for you to admit that you're actually poor?" Britney stepped forward and chimed in perfectly. She then continued, "If you really want the big private room, ask me. I'm the richest and wealthiest here! Our family, the Lee family, is a third-class aristocrat family! A million is a mere peanut to us!" "You're right. I was forced to pick trash for a living, it's nothing to be ashamed of," Selena's face dropped and replied, icy-cold as she did so. "But that was before. Now I'm with Fane, and we both have proper jobs with medium range salaries. It's not as bad as you think. It's enough for us to live comfortably." "Wow! You sure? You have a job?" Matt smirked. "What kind of job can you do? A bodyguard? I'm so curious!" A wry smile hung on Selena's face. "You're right. Fane is indeed a bodyguard right now, but

he’s so much better than you anyway. Do you have a job now? Or your own business?” she retorted expressionlessly. “Oh, I forgot! You, too, have a job! Your job is to please Miss Britney, right? She’s the only daughter in the Lee family, and you’ll get all her money when you marry her, am I right?” She continued bluntly. “Tsk, tsk, tsk. I knew you pretty well back then. Your two criteria for a life partner is good money and her being the only child of the family.”

Chapter 223

“Bullsh*t!” Matt snapped. Selena’s words pierced right through his weak point, sharply. Matt’s expression indicated that he was truly exasperated. “We love each other earnestly. It’s not your place to critique and destroy our relationship! What about yourself, huh? Married to a soldier must be the most agonizing incident in your life! It’s such a waste that an attractive woman like you married a poor man.” Selena burst out laughing. “That’s because I’m not you, and I never wanted to leech off of somebody. Besides, I don’t think that my man isn’t excellent enough. Just a moment ago, he was willing to spend a million just to see me dancing! What do you think of that? It says that my man loves me more than anything and is willing to spend for me even if there’s only a hundred thousand in his bank account!” Selena chuckled as she spoke. She leaned toward Fane and held his hand with pride. Fane was a little shocked by Selena’s action, and he felt happiness blooming within him. This was the first time Selena initiated the first move in public! “Well said, Honey! Our love is true love and theirs is just living under a roof together!” Fane was overly excited that he turned his face toward Selena and stamped his lips on her cheek. Selena’s face immediately turned as red as a tomato. She never thought that Fane, this sneaky yet adorable b*stard, would exploit this opportunity to plant a kiss on her cheek! The sight of Selena’s gorgeous face searing with blush harbored the jealousy in the others and further induced their poor self-esteem. Although Fane was a bodyguard and seemed like someone who was incapable of anything, he was

able to make Selena his wife! This point itself had already made others drown in envy. Besides, their relationship seemed wonderful and stable! Matt, on the other hand, was seething inwardly. He recalled that during the one-year relationship with Selena back in university, Selena was so conservative that she had only let Matt hold her hand, let alone a small peck on her cheek. That was what made his fury spring to life and decided to sleep with Rachel; his childish act to madden her. Of course, right now, the scene before him defeated him terribly. “Haha! Keep on boasting! If you’re as capable as you say you are, let’s go to the big private room then!” Matt gritted his teeth with anger, and before long, he sneered, “The minimum consumption in that room is one million. Listen carefully: one million, minimum consumption. It also means that it might exceed that amount. Since you have the gall to treat us, please don’t be a crybaby when you realize you have no money for it!” “Humph, forget it! He’s just a poor, stinky, and useless bodyguard. How much money will he have to treat us there? Moreover, it’s been only a few days since he returned from the military, right? This bodyguard job is probably a new job, and he might not have gotten his first pay yet!” Britney sang a duet with Matt delightfully, seeing that her boyfriend was hostile with the couple. “A useless bodyguard?” Selena was speechless for a moment. “Have you seen a useless bodyguard with 20 million pay a month? I really don’t understand what you’re bragging about when your salary is like a peanut next to my husband’s.” “Wow! Your joke is getting better now! Which family on the earth can afford a 20 million bodyguard? Even the Drake family’s bodyguards aren’t paid such a high salary!” Britney was so angry that she could feel her resentment growing inside her like a tumor. She stepped forward and yelled, “Don’t think that I don’t understand the market. I belong to a third-class aristocrat family! I know exactly how much a bodyguard earns!” “Oops, sorry! Then you really don’t understand the market. I do so happen to be the Drake family’s bodyguard, and for them to hire me for only 20 million, it’s a boon!”

Chapter 224

After hearing that statement, everyone present almost burst out laughing. How outrageous would it be to say that the Drake family benefited from hiring a bodyguard for 20 million? If that was the case, it would mean the family members were complete idiots. “Hehe, how comical this is! A bodyguard for 20 million and they benefited from it? Please, they can hire a few hundred bodyguards with that kind of money. Excellent ones, even!” Rachel cackled out loud. “Right, are you taking the Drake family for a bunch of fools? Not even their commander gets paid that much, right?” Carl added. The statement Selena made earlier was basically saying Fane was more impressive than them, and they were more offended than what they let on. They could not understand how a mere bodyguard could be better than them who made more than 10 million annually. “It doesn't matter if you guys believe me or not, but that’s how much my husband is getting paid. That was personally assured by Miss Tanya herself, so it can’t be a mistake!” Selena was incredibly furious as she originally thought of this as a simple casual gathering. She never expected that there would be a few snobs among them. Moreover, if she had known both sugarbabies Matt and Rachel would be here, she would never have come. Since the situation had already progressed to the way it was, she had to fight for her pride. She had been very patient toward them from the start, yet she did not expect them to keep testing her patience by calling Fane a useless soldier. If it was not for Fane fending off the enemies in the frontlines, would they still be able to enjoy their comfortable and peaceful life? “Alright, alright. Everything you say is true, okay?” Trevor chuckled. He then turned toward Selena and asked, “Didn’t you get a job as well? What job is that? Share it with us and let’s see if it's better than the job I found.” Selena frowned. She was rather close with Traver and Hugh when she was still studying back then, and she was only willing to come this time mainly because of them both. She did not expect Trevor would come forward at this moment to target her as well.

Selena did not answer his question. Instead, she questioned him back. “You’re going for an interview tomorrow, right? For the position of a manager’s assistant? 20, 30 thousand per month? What company is that to have offered such high wages to an assistant?” Trevor chuckled. “It happens to be a prominent company. It’s Drake Dynasty Real Estate under the Drake Group. Not to mention, they’re currently in charge of a major project, the same project over at South Hill Real Estate!” Trevor had a prideful look on his face as he pompously added, “Don’t worry. I’ll nail the interview tomorrow, no doubt!” “Really now? That confident?” Selena frowned. Was that not the same company she was currently working in? “Which department manager’s assistant are you interviewing for?” she prodded further. “The procurement manager’s assistant,” Trevor answered, another short chuckle escaping his lips. “My girlfriend happens to be a supervisor there as well, so my interview will go on smoothly. Besides, my resume is pretty impressive too. When they heard that I returned from overseas, who wouldn’t worship me? It doesn’t matter if I had wasted my life overseas or didn’t learn much… Who knows what exactly I was up to overseas, right?” “Moreover, with the sheer mention of being abroad—on top of me boasting a little on my resume—would naturally win over people these days. Of course, my girlfriend is the supervisor there, so she can help put a good word in for me. How is that not a guaranteed success?” Trevor then added, “I heard that the procurement manager is a beautiful lady. However, she might’ve had an affair with the Drake family’s young master to be in that position. Otherwise, how could she be a manager the moment she entered the company?” Trevor had a smug look on his face. Fane felt awkward while he listened on the side. Was this manager he mentioned not Selena? “That female manager had an affair with the Drake family’s young master? Your girlfriend told you that? Does she have any proof?” Selena’s expression dimmed. She did not expect Sonia would say that about her behind her back. It was a good thing she came to this reunion, and it was fortunate that Sonia was absent today. Selena might never know about this if this did not happen.

Chapter 225

“Is it necessary for proof now?” Trevor cackled out loud and spoke in a very prideful manner, “Do you know who my girlfriend is? She’s a distant relative to the Drake family and had worked there for a good number of years now. She should be the one getting promoted to the position of a manager, but that manager of theirs appeared out of nowhere. She’s attractive and dresses suggestively, so if she isn’t having an affair with the Drake family’s young master, would she even get special treatment like this?” As he was making that statement, he continued with a much more exciting statement, “The previous manager only had about a few hundred thousand bucks per month but when this manager enters, guess how much she makes a month? A monthly wage of over a million! Now you tell me: isn’t that fishy?” “This woman has to be hooking up with the young master and had sexual relationships with him privately. How else would she get such treatment?” “Too many women are making a living based on their appearance these days!” Matt joined in. “Do you think anyone is exactly like you?” Selena was beyond furious as she gave him a murderous glare. “I wasn’t even talking about you! What are you getting so worked up for?” Matt had a very dissatisfied look on his face. “You guys are making baseless accusations. You’re asking for a beating!” Fane’s expressions dimmed as he subtly clenched his fist. However, Selena who was sitting beside him shook her head and signaled at him not to act so rashly. Fane held himself back after seeing Selena’s reaction. “I heard Rachel mentioned that you’re a rash brute for being a soldier previously. I see that it’s true. You keep saying that people are asking for a beating for minor things. Do you think that everything can be solved with violence? You have to use your head next time!” Hugh’s girlfriend rolled her eyes at Fane. Fane laughed. “As long as you’re powerful enough, everything can be solved through violence,” he spoke. “If a single punch can’t, then two punches can do the trick!” After he was done speaking, he immediately spoke to the waitress, “Hey, pretty lady,

mind switching the room for me? I won't be stingy on your tips later if you're still going to be our waitress!" After the waitress heard that, she was immediately delighted. "Thank you, Sir!" she beamed. After she was done, the waitress immediately led them to a different room. "This way, please!" "Hehe... Don't be too happy so soon, Miss. This man just so happens to be a veteran and now he's working as a bodyguard. Do you genuinely think his monthly wage is 20 million?" "Even if it's true, he was only back a few days ago. He hasn't even gotten his paycheck yet, so I think he might not be able to foot the bill later. Everyone will be detained here!" Everyone got into the elevator and arrived at the second floor together. From the second floor, everything on the first floor could be observed. The second floor encircled the entire perimeter and its middle portion was empty. The huge building looked like an overturned bowl. "No, I believe him. He was willing to fork out a couple million just to listen to his wife play the piano. Someone who loved their wives this much would never lie!" the pretty waitress replied with a smile. Since she had worked as a waitress here for a long time, she had seen and met all kinds of people. She believed in her judgment. "Haha! Since you have a sweet tongue, your tips tonight won't be lower than 10 thousand!" Fane proudly replied, a smile on his face as he did so.

Chapter 226

"10 thousand bucks?" Rosa gasped after hearing that; Fane must have been lying. She had worked so hard for a month only to receive meager pay. To put it in a much better way, she was only a supervisor yet she felt extremely exhausted. Yet, here Fane was: casually telling the waitress that he would give her 10 thousand as her tip. That was too much, was it not? "Thank you so much, Sir!" The pretty waitress was also very delighted. The usual source of income would be the commissions they make from the alcohol they serve. Nonetheless, these commissions were very low. Adding that to their base salary, the total was not even close to 10 thousand. Indeed, there would be customers who gave them tips, yet getting 3 to 5 thousand as their tip would

make their day. Even if their guests were some young masters from second or third-class aristocratic families, a generous tip from them would be about 2 to 3 thousand bucks; waitresses like them were very insignificant to their eyes. If they enjoyed their company, they would reward them. If they did not, they might even yell at them. “Hehe.... Don’t worry about it!” Fane smiled; the impression the woman left on him was positive. She basically would not say anything she should not on top of keeping a professional smile on her face. She looked very respectful. Suddenly, Trevor chuckled. “A boastful man you are,” he commented. “The thing is that someone actually bought it!” Upon noticing Trevor was going out of his way to pick on Fane, Selena smiled and said, “Trevor, you said it yourself earlier: You didn’t study much while you were abroad. You spend every day enjoying life there then boast about it when you return. You’re telling me that you want to work as that manager’s assistant with that behavior? I think you’re a little too full of yourself!” “Hehe! Full of myself?” Trevor cackled out loud and said, “There isn’t much of a choice for that female manager. My girlfriend faked a preliminary interview and rejected everyone that came for that position, leaving only my resume and another girl’s resume. However, that girl doesn’t even exist. Till then, all Sonia needs to do is tell their manager that the girl caught a cold and couldn’t make it!” “That means I’m the only one left to be chosen. Besides, I had been abroad for some time, and that fake resume won’t be more outstanding than mine. So you can tell me now: If it isn’t me who will attend the interview, who else can it be?” The longer Trevor spoke, the more prideful he became. “Haha... This is called benefiting from having a mole on the inside. Do you understand?” “Heheh, that’s pretty impressive!” Selena chuckled before looking at Rosa beside her. She said, “That’s right, Rosa, your monthly wage is about 10 thousand, right? That’s not bad, what job is that?” A sigh escaped Rosa’s lips. “It’s not worth mentioning. That tiny company is depressing. Sometimes, they wouldn’t pay me for the overtime I did. I’m just a supervisor and yet I had to do a lot of things outside my job scope.

Moreover, it's construction work!" "Such meager pay. Now that I've paid my rent, I don't have much left to save up after my meager budget for food and other necessities." Upon bringing up her job, Rosa cracked a bitter smile as she said, "Supervisor on paper but in reality, I'm busier than anyone else…" After she was done speaking, she looked at Selena and said, "Selena, I remembered you being quite capable at work. Why don't you come work for my company? I'll talk to my manager to see if they're able to offer you some work. Now that you're exiled from the Taylor family, you're no longer the lady you once was and you should accept reality now, okay?" After Selena heard that statement, her heart was moved. It seemed Rosa cared about her a lot since she hoped that Selena could have a better life for herself. It was then when Hugh spoke out, "Yeah, my purpose of inviting Selena out today was to ask everyone if any of you have any suitable job for her. However, since Selena mentioned she got a job earlier and it's uncertain if it's real or not, I was a little shy to bring it up!" "Haha! My factory lacks manpower to move things. If a pretty lady like you thinks it's okay, then you can come to work!" Dylan mused. Rachel chuckled coldly before mocking her intentionally, "What are you talking about? Her husband makes 20 million a month. It doesn't matter if she works or not, right? Does she even need to do hard labor?" "Fair point. I almost forgot about it!"

Chapter 227

Dylan laughed hysterically. Selena merely shrugged him off as she took out a name card and handed it to Rosa. "This is my business card, so just hold on to it first. The offer will be much better than your current job. I have faith in your abilities. You're a smart and hardworking person!" "Alright, alright. I'll keep it." Rosa assumed Selena was on her high horse again. Still, she could not be bothered to expose her so she awkwardly laughed instead before shoving her business card into her purse. A cynical grin appeared on Matt's face. "Not bad; you can still recommend jobs to people. I didn't

expect you to be recruiting, judging from the look of things. Your job isn't too bad!" Selena simply ignored him in silence as they made their way to their luxurious private room. "Holy sh*t. This is the luxury room? This is my first time here… It's so big!" "The piano here is a Yamaha! The screen here is huge too!" Rosa was extremely excited after inspecting every nook and cranny. "Not bad! Not bad!" Everyone else was also nodding in agreement. "Fane, you said it yourself that you'd be footing the bill tonight. We won't fork out a single penny!" Britney once again reminded Fane. She was interested to see how long Fane could keep up his facade. Fane nodded carefreely. "Of course. Order to your heart's content, guys!" he spoke. "Order anything, and we'll have as much fun as we can! Besides, it's not every day we get an opportunity to loosen up." "Alright, alright. Bring the menu here and we'll order now. Everyone is drinking red wine right, and we'd be ordering the more expensive ones. Besides, the lowest one can spend here is a million. We're not going to order anything too cheap!" Trevor got seated and started ordering. The veteran then turned to his wife. "Honey, I want to watch you dance!" Fane beamed. Selena was flustered in an instant. "I haven't danced in years!" she squeaked. "Forget it, I'm too embarrassed!" "Someone should be playing the piano while she dances, right? Who's playing? I haven't played in years and I think I've even forgotten how to play!" Hugh let out a bitter chuckle and said, "If one wishes to dance while someone plays, both must be in sync. If they are, it'll unite and become a beautiful symphony both visually and auditorily." To this, Matt started chuckling coldly as he stared at Fane. "If Selena dances, it wouldn't be appropriate if we played the piano, right? Someone would be jealous if the duet turned out nicely, no?" "That's difficult. If he's the one playing, he wouldn't be jealous." Trevor chuckled coldly. "Of course, someone here didn't even have proper education. He could be playing a chaotic tune too," Trevor mocked, to which everyone started laughing. "How else can Selena dance to the music?" In their eyes, Fane was nothing more than a mindless brute. How would he know a thing or two about the

piano? Never did they anticipate that Fane actually approached the piano, sat down, and said, “Honey, I’ll play and you dance. Let’s both perform a duet!”

Chapter 228

Selena became skittish right away. This fellow here was a soldier; how could he possibly know how to play the piano even though he was not always a mindless brute? Music and dance would be extremely sacred to people who understood them as it was something that could connect souls. How could one not take it seriously? She would not mind if her husband was to play poorly, but even if she was to dance majestically, she could never be in sync with a ‘chaotic tune’. Fane’s level should not be too poor at the very least. Only then could she forcefully dance with his tune. “F—Forget it. Everyone will be singing and drinking later anyway...” Selena laughed mirthlessly, her statement sounding more depressed than what she let on. Even in her eyes, there were shreds of disappointment and sadness inside. She had not danced in a very long time, and she had almost forgotten that ‘Selena’ who used to dance so elegantly on the stage like a swan. She would feel different every time she got on stage to dance back then; it was as though the entire stage was hers and only hers. The cheers from the audience would make her feel incredibly fulfilled. Of course, these were things of the past and she could no longer have the same feeling she felt from back then; the feeling of understanding the deeper meaning of a dance through her heart and soul. “I think you should just forget about it. Your hands are made for swords and spears, so please don’t embarrass yourself with elegant things like holding a pen or performing a dance!” Britney laughed, a cynical undertone detected in her chuckle. “Matt, your piano skills are pretty impressive back then. It’d be a perfect performance if you play the piano and Selena dances. That’d be a perfect balance of music and dance!” Rachel then added fuel to the flame, saying, “You’re no longer together, but you’ve dated back then, no? Why don’t you just give it a shot,

Matt? I believe both of you will be a perfect match!" Needless to say, she said all that to provoke Fane. "Let's begin, Honey!" Fane simply ignored her as he gently touched the black and white keys; it was as though he was caressing a baby's skin. A press on a key made Fane titter. Five years of battle had almost made him forget about his childhood dream. His childhood dream was to become a pianist. He had never expected he would become a soldier. Even more so, he never expected he would be fighting on the battlefield to defend the borders. Of course, times have changed and he no longer held regrets. It was being on the battlefield that he felt true friendship between his comrades. He felt the fighting spirit between his comrades. If it were not for the countless near-death encounters in the last five years, he would not have been honed into such a sharp blade. A simple touch made his thoughts race endlessly. Soon, he found himself swimming in childhood memories as he immersed himself within that sacred ground. All of that turned into an orchestra of music and notes surrounding him as they danced. "No way… He knows how to play the piano!" Britney was so shocked that her lower jaw almost fell to the ground. Was this brat not a takeout delivery boy that had gotten enlisted as a soldier for five years? Surely there was no piano on the battlefield. Moreover, Fane was just an ordinary man back then, and if he could keep himself warm and fed, it would have made his day. How could he still have the time and money to learn how to play music? Yet, here Fane was. His fingers seemed to be moving on its own and the harmonic tone made everyone feel as if they were floating mid-air. It soon picked up the pace and turned softer like water flowing under the bridge. "Good lord. This… This is way better than our piano teacher back then. He's amazing!" Hugh gulped, completely flabbergasted. "He… He's playing the Croatian Rhapsody!" Rachel was electrified. That was how Maxim described music as it mainly focused on the aftermath of war.

Chapter 229

The aftermath of a war, a dusty battlefield, mountains of corpses laid dead while a crow wept under the setting sun. This single song surprised everyone as their hearts were instantly touched, so much so that those images came alive in their minds. At that instant, they no longer perceived Fane as a mindless brute. No one else dared to think he knew nothing about music. Instead, they were the complete idiots. Selena was completely stunned. She never knew Fane's piano playing had already reached such godly heights. "What are you still standing here for? Hurry up and go!" Rosa nudged Selena soon after she snapped out of her trance. It was only then did Selena eventually settle back into reality. Selena then gracefully lowered and did a split while raising her body slightly, resembling the image of an injured swan. Her body was lithe and flexible as both arms swayed along to the music. At that moment, both music and dance started to merge into a single entity. With a counter spin of her legs, her body started to slowly get up as she was completely lost in the harmonic balance of music and dance, unable to escape. She had returned. Everything had returned. Selena felt like she had once again returned on stage and found the familiar feelings she felt back then; that excitement and determination she felt in her heart way before. The melody stopped and the dance concluded! Everyone was entranced, and they stayed that way for a good amount of time. "That was magnificent!" Dylan suddenly started clapping, and everyone else could not help but applauded them thunderously. It no longer mattered how much they looked down on Fane before; all of them were clapping. They were praising their duet, their emotions sincere from their hearts and free from their feuds and petty grudges. Their souls seemed to be completely cleansed at this instant. "That was amazing. A perfect performance, perfectly done!" Hugh was extremely emotional, at the brink of tears. "I've never expected even after graduating so many years ago, I'd still be able to hear such a powerful piece of music and witness such a perfect dance," he gushed. "Both aspects were perfectly combined." Hugh was so emotional, he repeated the word 'perfect' four times. "Honey, you compliment me well!" Fane smiled as he

got up. “You played it exceptionally well!” Selena was slightly flustered as she rolled her eyes at Fane. However, her heart felt like it was slathered with a sweet essence as though she had eaten honeydew. “Right. If anyone wants to play, go ahead. I want to grab a drink!” Fane smiled as plenty of snacks and red wine were already brought in. “Forget it. After your impromptu recital just now, we don’t want to embarrass ourselves!” Hugh waved his hand and he no longer dared to mention he was a music graduate in front of Fane ever again. “Let’s drink, let’s drink!” Dylan was still lost in the music earlier. “Good lord. After listening to that, I feel like money is merely worldly possession, so let’s all drink to our hearts’ content. Come on guys, cheers!” Fane smiled at Selena as Dylan with his rounded waist chugged down a glass full of wine. It made him seem more like a mindless brute than Fane would ever be.

Chapter 230

Rosa pulled Selena to a corner. “Selena… They said that your husband was a mindless brute and I genuinely believed them,” Rosa whispered. “I didn’t expect him to know how to play the piano, and he played it so well too.” “I don’t believe he’s just some grunt anymore… Anyone who knows how to play the piano can never be a mindless brute!” she added. “I think he’s a well-versed person as he knows how to fight and play the piano!” “Hmm… Has he become god-like to you now?” Selena chuckled humorously as it seemed this change in attitude was a little too quick. Rosa sighed. “After thinking about it earlier, that has to be some nonsense Rachel concocted. Man, that woman has gone too far since she never seemed to like you even in our university days. She always assumed you were stealing the spotlight away from her.” “We’ve all graduated, and it’s been so long. I thought it’s all behind us now and we don’t care much about the past. I didn’t expect she could be this petty!” Rosa seemed to have understood something as she then grabbed onto Selena’s hand and murmured, “I’m sorry. I misunderstood you a while ago.” “Don’t worry about it, I didn’t really take

it to heart anyway," Selena assured her. "Besides, I offended Rachel this morning, so her trying to ruin me in my absence is well within my expectations!" Selena offered a bright smile before adding, "Consider my offer well when you get back. You can help me out in my company since we lack the manpower." "Alright, I'll think about it," Rosa replied, a smile gracing her face before she tugged on Selena's arm. "Let's go pick some songs to sing!" On the other side, Britney was sitting next to Matt as she whispered to him, "Do you know how much in total we've ordered?" "How should I know? My job is to drink and drink some more. If it's not enough, we can order more. F*ck it, I refuse to believe a veteran would be able to fork out that much money. We'll spend a little more and when he can't pay up, the owner here will never let him leave!" Matt was ruthless in the way he spoke, and he glanced at Fane from across the room. Fane was nothing more than a veteran, and no one expected Fane would be able to marry Selena. Selena's current figure seemed as though she had never given birth before. She was still as stunning as she was back then. Not to mention the way Selena looked when she danced. She looked like a pure and innocent swan. Her beauty was mesmerizing, and the feeling of regret bubbled in him. If only he persisted a little harder back then, he might have been the one married to Selena. Even if he was not married to her, he might still end up dating Selena. A shame he could only be with Britney, whom he had no feelings for whatsoever. Dissatisfied was he in silence. "Hehe… Our bill is over 1.3 million bucks. That brat is doomed!" Britney chuckled and took a sip of red wine from her wine glass before saying, "Alright, I need to use the washroom real quick!" When Britney was on her way to the washroom, she noticed an extremely intricate display case in the hallway housing two bottles of red wine. Moreover, there were two servers guarding that case while every corner around the red wine had spotlights shining at it. It was very attractive to look at. "What are you looking at?" Rachel who had just exited the washroom noticed Britney was staring at blank space in front of her. Rachel approached her while she giggled. "Rachel, do you think Fane

has the money to actually foot the bill?" Britney frowned after she pondered about it.

Chapter 231

"Impossible. Where does his money come from anyway?" Rachel spoke without hesitation, "That brat did it for his pride, he's boasting!" "But he can't be that dumb, right? This is the Lotus Bar and Lounge, and the owner is a member of a first-class aristocratic family. He isn't going to dine and dash now, is he? Does he have a death wish?" After Britney broke it down in detail, she started to doubt if Fane had enough money to pay the bill. "Fair point!" In that instant, Rachel was no longer as certain as she was. "I doubt that Fane knows who the owner is, considering he's just returned from the army," she commented, "so how would he know so much?" "I think you make a much better point!" Britney nodded then swiftly said, "Hey, I heard when those veterans came back, those who stayed for quite some time in their department would be able to get a good sum of money since they contributed to the country, and they'd be able to retire in glory. It seems Fane might've gotten some money." "So you're saying it might be around 1 or 2 million? This idiot decided to spend every penny tonight just to save his wife's pride?" Rachel was a little shocked as she continued, "So that's why the brat was so confident when he spoke. Moreover, he enrolled his child to school this morning and paid up. I thought he borrowed that money, but it seems he does have some money!" "Yeah, but I'm guessing it's not much and should only be a million or two. Otherwise, those two wouldn't come here in a cab!" Britney continued her breakdown, "Because that money didn't come easy, and since Fane risked his life for that money, they spent meagerly. It's just that they didn't expect us to look down on them and Fane is known to act pretentiously. To stop his wife from getting bullied, he agreed to switch up the room. Don't you think this is the case?" "Good lord, you're on to something now. You're not the lady of a third-class aristocratic family for nothing!" Rachel chuckled immediately and

sneered, “Since people like him loved to pretend, we’ll allow him to. Besides, we’ve spent so much of his money, it might hurt him after this!” “Exactly!” Britney’s expression suddenly dimmed. “We can let them off the hook so easily... What if they do have the money to pay our bills tonight?” she fretted. “Also, Selena is Matt’s ex-girlfriend and I just can’t stand that woman. I don’t want them to walk out of Lotus Bar and Lounge today, so we can’t let them off the hook so easily!” “But, what can we do when they have money?” Rachel sighed. “I too wish to see them struggling to pay the bill then be caught by the boss and, heck, might even get beaten to a pulp,” she spoke bluntly. “I’d be a happy gal!” Both women bonded through their similar vile behavior! Britney pointed at both bottles of red wine. “Say, would those two bottles of red wine be expensive since they're guarded by two waiters?” she snickered. “You mean to say?” Rachel seemed to have thought of something as her eyes lit up. Both women then swiftly approached the display case and asked the waiters, “Is this wine expensive? What are you guys standing guard here for? Is it only for people to admire?” “Ladies, both of these bottles of red wine happen to be our establishment’s most prized possessions. They are produced in…” After they were done explaining, a waitress then concluded, “This bottle costs 666 million bucks and only less than 10 bottles exist in this world. Drinking a bottle would mean one less bottle in the world.” “Perfect!” A glint of sinister intent could be seen in Britney’s gaze as she immediately said, “Send a bottle to our room. We want one!”

Chapter 232

“You want a bottle? This costs 6.66 million; it’s too expensive!” Rachel gasped. “How can you order something this expensive? Are you trying to kill him?” she stammered. Britney chuckled menacingly and replied, “What are you afraid of? He said it himself: We can order anything we want. Besides, if we didn’t order a little more, how can we get him to stay behind?” After some thoughts, she immediately exclaimed, “No, no, no. A bottle isn’t

enough...we'll take both. I'm quite interested to taste what this establishment's prized possession tastes like!" "Two bottles? That'll be over 13 million including the 1.3 million earlier. Oh, good lord, it's too expensive… It's over 14 million!" Rachel was flabbergasted. She wanted Fane to be in a tough spot and also wanted him to be embarrassed silly, but… Would spending over 14 million not pressure him to death? "Hehe... Didn't you notice how he was acting earlier? He claims to be rich and told us to order anything we want so blatantly." " This time, we have to teach this brat a very good lesson!" Britney pulled Rachel away from where they initially stood and whispered, "This is an extremely rare opportunity, though." Britney suddenly scoffed at the thought of something. "That reminds me... Didn't that brat mention he makes 20 million a month? Didn't he also say he bought two Porsches? Even we don't have the heart to buy one and he bought the 911 model. This time, he's in for a world of bad luck!" "Right, right, right!" Cue a peal of mocking laughter. "Failing to foot the bill will put them to great shame, and worst of all, they'd be offending a first-class aristocratic family since this business belongs to them!" Britney chuckled before leading Rachel back to where those wine bottles were and said, "We've decided to have both bottles, so send it to Room 207! When you arrive, you don't need to ask a thing; just open it for us!" "Well, both bottles will add up to about 13 million. Are you sure you want to open both bottles at the same time, ladies?" One of the waiters was already startled and wondered if he had misheard them. No guests had ever ordered that wine for the two to three years the bottles were placed there. Even if they were young masters, they would give up after asking for the price. Besides, most people would feel spending more than 6 million for a bottle of wine would not be worth it. "Yeah, just open them when you bring them in. We were also like that when we ordered plenty of wine bottles previously!" Britney nodded with a smile. Soon, both Britney and Rachel returned to the room. It was Fane's first time to come to a place like this. It was a one-of-a-kind way to enjoy life and listen to Selena's sweet voice singing. "Come now,

Brother, let's drink. This will be a toast for you defending us and our country in the frontlines. This is my respect to you!" Hugh had a grin on his face as he approached Fane, a glass of wine at hand. "Thank you!" Fane smiled. After clinking glasses with him, he chugged down the wine immediately. "Haha. That felt good!" Hugh laughed as he also chugged the wine down with a single gulp. No one expected that even Dylan the alcoholic would also sit with them at this moment. "I didn't expect your piano skills to be this good, Fane," he started, "and you're pretty handsome, too. I see now why a beauty like Selena would be your wife! Although I hated you this morning, you have my respect tonight!" Fane was flustered. He did not expect Dylan would say something like that after drinking so much. "Come on now, I need to drink with you. At least as gratitude to your treat. You're treating me to drink in such a lavish spot. I personally can't bear spending this much money!"

Chapter 233

Dylan's face was flushed red from drinking too much. It seemed he was more talkative after some drinks. Matt was drinking alone on the other side of the room. He was chugging down wine after wine; he wanted nothing more than to bankrupt Fane. "What are you doing? Why are you drinking so much?" Britney spotted him the moment she returned and immediately went to his side. "Doesn't that brat just love being pretentious? This wine I'm drinking costs 50 thousand a bottle. F*ck it, I'll keep asking for more wine after I'm done with this. Let's see what he'll do when he doesn't have enough to pay." Matt turned to look at Fane on the side with a sinister chuckle. "Ah, then let me tell you…" Britney immediately leaned to Matt's ear and whispered everything to him. "That expensive!" was Matt's first response, a gasp escaping his lips. However, a shred of sinister intent flashed across his gaze and said, "Good. Let's do that since he said it was on him anyway. I won't help him even a penny." "Haha! I wonder if he'd kneel and beg us to split the bill with him later." Britney cackled out loud and bragged,

“No one will agree to it, especially when Rosa’s pay is only 10 thousand a month and has basically no savings. She can’t afford to fork out any money when he splits the bill!” Matt laughed then poured Britney a glass of wine before handing it to her. He said, “You truly are smart. Those two bottles would cost him his life.” “Well, that’s not too certain. What if his monthly pay turns out to actually be 20 million bucks?” Britney took a sip of red wine before saying that while chuckling coldly. “Hehe... Only a fool would believe him. A mere bodyguard could have a monthly wage of 20 million? Do you take the Drake family for a fool?” Matt chuckled. It was at this moment that a waiter brought in a bucket of ice and two bottles of red wine. After greeting them with a polite smile, the waiter opened both bottles of wine and placed it on the glass table. The waiter soon got out. Fane and the others did not notice what had happened as they were busy singing and drinking, but both Britney and Matt cracked a grin. That pretty waitress who was standing on the side and had been serving them all this time noticed the bottles and frowned. After some thought, she walked out. However, it did not take her long to return. Her expression turned bitter after she noticed Britney pouring a drink for everyone at the moment. She had gone out to gather some information. Supposedly, two women from this room had made the waiter serve up those bottles of wine. She felt something was amiss when she connected the dots to Fane and Selena being a married couple. However, she dared not approach them to say much. All she could do was stand on the side and smile while waiting for everyone’s orders. Eventually, Fane went out to use the washroom. After some thought, the waitress was too antsy that she chased after him. “Sir, Sir! I don’t know if I should, but I want to inform you of something.” It was only when Fane made the return trip did the pretty waitress decide to approach him. “I… I feel like you’re a kind person and I’m worried you might be toyed by people, so I wish to ask you something. Don’t tell anyone it was me who told you, okay?” “Toyed?” Of course, Fane was stunned for a moment, but he quickly recovered with a

smile on his face. “Every scheme or plot will be useless in the face of true power! Tell me: who tried to trick me?”

Chapter 234

The waitress never expected Fane would still have the mood to crack a joke. His behavior made her giggle anxiously before she added, “Sir, I’m afraid you’ll need someone extremely powerful to back you up in addition to an extremely strong financial ability because you’ll need 14 million.” “What do you mean 14 million?” Fane’s eyebrows furrowed. “Oh no... You really have no idea, don’t you?” she murmured. “Weren’t two bottles of red wine brought in earlier? Those that were claimed as extra orders? I didn’t notice it then but when I looked at the bottles, I knew something was off. Those happen to be the most prized possessions of our establishment. It’s 666 million per bottle! There’s only two in total, and they actually opened it!” “I was so shocked that I had to sneak out to ask my colleague, and they claimed they were ordered by those two women. Oh, that’s right... They were that Matt’s girlfriend and that Rachel lady who made the order!” The pretty waitress frowned and nervously asked, “What are you going to do? You didn’t know about it, and it seemed those two were messing with you intentionally.” “Heh... I didn’t expect both women could scheme so much!” Fane scoffed and looked at the pretty waitress in front of him. “Thank you for telling me this. Don’t you worry. It’s only over 10 million, and it’s no problem for me!” “Good if it’s n—no problem at all!” The waitress let out a sigh of relief. “I think you and your wife are pretty close together so I decided to tell you,” she explained. “Also, your piano performance earlier was very good. It was my first time listening to something this amazing!” Fane chuckled at her praise. “Thank you for your kind praises!” Fane smiled and was getting ready to return. “By the way, there’s a boxing match on the third floor later. Only guests in the luxury rooms are allowed to watch. You guys can spectate later! Moreover, if any guests here can attempt that challenge and they win, the bill will be free! Moreover, they’ll also win 3

million bucks!” After some thought, the pretty waitress slowly explained, “Although you’re a veteran, you can never—by any means—register for the challenge. The champion of the ring is just too powerful! He’s from America, and the man is extremely huge and tall. I’m pretty sure he’s over two meters. Those few people who came forward to challenge a few days ago, well...they’re all beaten to death.” A long sigh escaped her lips. “Some people didn’t take the challenge for the free bill. Some did it because he—an outsider—had murdered a few of our best fighters from our Cathysia. They were very dissatisfied so they took that challenge.” The waitress sighed for the nth time and said, “That American is too scummy. Although everyone signed a waiver before each challenge, no one had been killed before. The fight stops when one of them yields. The worst-case scenario is just crippling someone. But this man… Ever since he came, he killed a lot of our people. He murdered them!” The waitress clenched her fists and gritted her teeth just by relaying the information she knew. When both countries were at war back then, each war would last a couple of years. Since Cathysia won, Fane and the others could retire in glory. However, it seemed the Americans stepped foot on Cathysia’s soil to stir up the occasional trouble. Since both countries signed a truce, minor frictions like these would naturally be ignored. Minor hiccups like these boxing matches, of course. After both parties signed a waiver, they could murder Cathysians with no recourse. “F*ck!” After Fane listened to her, he could not hold himself back from swearing. “I have to join. I’m pretty sure he did all of that intentionally.” “No, don’t. Good sir, I’m informing you because I wanted you guys to spectate since you had already spent this much, so you have the right to watch the match on the third floor.”

Chapter 235

“Sir, he’s too powerful and had ten consecutive wins…” The startled waitress frantically tried to talk him out of it. She was afraid that it would cost Fane his life after what she had told him. “Thank you so much for

telling me. It'll be fine if I'm oblivious to it but since I already know now, that American will die!" Fane left her with that cold statement before striding back to the room. "It seems our expenses will be saved," he spoke as his figure retreated back into the room. "But…he's really…powerful!' The pretty waitress frowned as she stared at Fane. Regretting her decision, she mumbled, "I shouldn't have told him. He's so loving to his wife... What if he dies in the name of defending Cathysia? That'd be bad!" Time slowly went by and when it was almost 11 o'clock, everyone felt like they had enough to drink. The taste of both bottles of red wine was amazing as both Fane and Selena drank a glass. "Hubby, it seems like these two bottles of red wine have an incredibly distinct taste over the rest, and that's strange. What's stranger is that Rachel seemed to have come to her senses and helped pour us a drink!" After she was done speaking, she gasped and spoke in a slightly frightened tone, "Oh dear… Nothing's wrong with these two bottles, right? They wouldn't have been poisoned now, would they? Or…" Fane felt awkward as he cracked a suppressed laugh. "Honey, I didn't expect your imagination would be this big, but don't you worry; they're not. Though, you'd know soon enough if there's anything fishy about those two bottles of wine!" Fane stood up and was about to pay the bill. "Oh boy, it's about time. Did everyone have a good time?" Britney smiled immediately and said, "Of course. We're incredibly happy. I don't come here often to places like these. I didn't expect you, Fane, a bodyguard can afford to treat us here, in this place. I truly didn't expect it." It was at this moment, a supervisor came in and smiled at everyone in the room. He said, "Ladies and gentlemen, since your room happens to be the highest spender tonight and also broke the record of our Lotus Bar and Lounge in the ten years since we've opened, our manager agreed to offer you guys an 8.8 percent discount!" "Oh my! Really?" Selena was delighted as she said, "I didn't mishear it, right? An 8.8 percent discount can save us a lot of money!" Of course, it did not take long as realization dawned on her. "That's impossible though, right? We've only spent 1.3 million. Isn't the lowest spending rate

here a million? How could we possibly break a ten-year record?" "No way, right? Breaking the record just like that?" Dylan was dumbfounded as well. "Judging from the looks of things, people who came here were all spending on a million bucks budget, right? We merely spent a little more than that, and we broke a record?" "I'm afraid that he still won't be able to pay the bill even after the 8.8 percent discount!" Britney scoffed as she waited for everything to unfold. Rosa and Hugh both looked at each other and were considerably worried if Fane had the money to pay the bill. If he did not, things would be bad. "What do you mean 1.3 million? The total amount you guys have spent is 14.67 million. After the discount, it'd be 12.9 million. Our manager said he can round down the value, so all you guys have to pay is 12.9 million!" The supervisor smiled and took out a few bottles of red wine. "That's right, these are your gifts," he spoke. "You guys can enjoy it back home."

Chapter 236

"Impossible… How could it cost 12.9 million? We've checked every order and it only totaled to 1.3 million. Even after adding a few bottles, it shouldn't go past 1.5 million. How could it be this expensive?" Selena was flabbergasted, but the shock slowly sizzled into anger. "I think you're scamming us; maybe you mixed it up yourselves," she fumed. "Check it again and see if something went wrong!" "Yes, something must've gone wrong. It shouldn't be over 10 million, since we didn't order that much!" Rosa was shaken as well. Based on her current salary, she would not be able to pay this off even if she worked here for the rest of her life. "You did. Did you forget?" The supervisor frowned and added, "You're not trying to get out of this, are you?" She then looked around and pointed at the two empty wine bottles on the glass table before adding, "You ordered these signature bottles and you've finished those. Are you trying to get out of paying for it?" Three more waitresses followed behind the supervisor. They were the ones who guarded the wine bottles. They were holding a few complimentary

bottles they had prepared to give to the person paying the bill. Laughing, one of them walked up and said, “You need to realize where you are right now. Listen to what people have to say about what happens if you don’t pay for your meal!” “A signature bottle? What...what alcohol is this?” Selena frowned; something was off. Indeed, she did sense that the wine from the two bottles tasted much different compared to the regular red wine when she drank them. She was just talking to Fane about this. Could that be the signature bottle? “Our signature bottles have been here for years, and they’ve never been sold. There are two bottles, and one bottle costs 6.66 million…” The supervisor smiled and began introducing the bottles. After that, she said, “You’ve ordered it, you’ve finished it, so you have to pay for it now.” “W—We didn’t order it!” Selena was left speechless. “When did we order it? How could I have ordered such an expensive bottle of wine?” Seeing Selena’s worried look, Rachel, Britney, and Matt could not help but smile coyly aside. “What’s wrong? What signature bottles? I didn’t order them!” A tipsy Dylan was shocked as well. He grabbed the bottle and took a good look at it. “F*ck, this bottle is that expensive? I wasn’t really drinking wine; I was basically drinking money!” “Get the manager here and get a few more people; these people drank the signature bottles. I thought I bumped into real billionaires who were willing to splurge with their money, but it looks like they’re playing dumb here, trying to get out of paying for it!” the supervisor said to one of the waitresses. The beautiful waitress who was serving Fane and the others stood aside with a dark expression. Did Fane not say it would be fine? Why was he not saying a thing? Seeing Fane was standing silently and pulled out a cigarette to light it, Britney sneered, “Fane, why aren’t you saying anything? You told us to order anything we wanted. Rachel and I ordered these bottles. What’s wrong? Can’t afford them?” “What? Aren’t you two going a little overboard? How could you order such expensive bottles? Aren’t you obviously trying to set us up?!” Selena was angry beyond relief. She oh-so badly wanted to beat those two women.

Chapter 237

“Dear, you’re too…” Dylan never anticipated that his spouse would do something like this. Despite their altercation with the couple this morning, he had always looked down on people who used dirty tricks. Rachel gritted her teeth and barked, “You can’t blame us, can you? Fane mentioned that we could order anything we wanted, and we saw these two bottles. Is it wrong that we wanted to taste it?” Rachel scoffed. “If he couldn’t afford it in the first place, don’t pretend to be someone he’s not and ask us to order anything we want!” “Rachel, Britney is childish, and you know how her temper is. If she’s messing around, do you have to do what she does as well?” Hugh’s face was dark. Their spending had gone over 10 million bucks, and if Selena and Fane were forced to stay behind, what would happen then? If they could not pay, they might pay with their lives. After all, this establishment was owned by a first-class family. The owner behind the scenes should not be offended at all. Even Hugh’s girlfriend was no longer speaking. She did not expect that the others would order such expensive bottles. “Who’s making a scene at our Lotus Bar and Lounge?!” At this moment, a plump woman walked in with several angry-looking men clad in black shirts. “Our signature bottles have been there for long, and no one has ever ordered them. After you ordered them and finished them, you’re trying to not pay for it? We were planning to give you a discount and a few complimentary bottles. Are you trying to not pay for your meal?” “Pay for it, Fane. You’ve said it yourself: we could order anything!” Britney sneered. “That’s right. Act like the size of your bank account; don’t pretend to be someone you’re not in front of us!” Matt chimed in, his gaze filled with disdain. “This man and his wife are the hosts, we’re just his guests, and this has nothing to do with us. If you want to capture or kill anyone, get them!” Seeing the number of men in the room, Rachel was terrified. She distanced herself from the crowd right away. “Hubby, what should we do? Where can we find that much money? If only we knew, we wouldn’t have

come here tonight. Some of these people are no longer the classmates from way back then. I think they've changed… They've become devils!" Selena was overwhelmed with regret. The restaurant was demanding over 10 million bucks at that moment; where would they find that kind of money? If they did run out of ideas, they might have to call the second daughter of the Drake family to see if she could help them out. Fane merely chuckled in reply. "Don't worry, it'll be fine. This is nothing to your husband!" Fane smiled nonchalantly. With a flick of his finger, his cigarette butt flew right into a wine bottle next to him. It might or might not be a coincidence, but it was staggeringly accurate. "Tsk, tsk! How powerful, still playing dumb at this moment. If you're so rich, then please pay the bill!" Matt's gaze was filled with sarcasm. He had waited for this moment for too long. "If you don't pay the bill, you and your wife might not live through tonight!" The men in black rubbed their fists together, and their faces seemed muscular. They seemed threatening. Selena thought of something, and her eyes lit up. "Right, hubby, I nearly forgot. Aren't you friends with the Goddess of War? Why don't you call her and ask her for a loan to pay for this bill? Once you get your salary, we can pay her back with it." Selena prayed that Fane was not making up stories and that he was genuinely acquainted with the Goddess of War.

Chapter 238

"War-the Goddess of War is his friend?" The manager inhaled sharply after hearing that. Tons of people wanted to meet the Goddess of War; even if they got the chance to say a sentence to her, it would be of the greatest honor. Many media houses wished to interview the Middle Province's Goddess of War Lana Zechs but were all rejected by the cold Goddess. No one expected that the average joe in front of them was the Goddess of War's friend. "No way, he knows the Goddess of War?" Britney inhaled sharply as well. If Fane was a friend of the Goddess of War, and a good one at that, she might be in trouble. After all, Rachel and her had started this today, and she was

considered the mastermind behind it. If Fane was going to use his connection with the Goddess of War to blame it on them, they and the entire Lee family would be finished. “Impossible, do you really think the Goddess of War is that easy to be reached?” Matt sneered and said, “The honorable Goddess of War would require marshalls of a certain level to be able to reach her, right? He was only a soldier for five years so if he only saw the Goddess of War from afar while being on the frontlines, his claims of knowing her mean that many other people could say the same thing!” “F*ck, this guy was just faking it!” “I think he was just putting on a show with his wife and pretending to be friends with the Goddess of War so we could void his bill. Respecting him means respecting the Goddess of War, right?” “Yes, that might be the case!” The men in black began laughing. “Since it’s late, the Goddess of War is probably asleep by now. I won’t call and trouble her to come over since it’s just over 10 million bucks!” Fane was nonchalant about it. He turned around and said to Selena, “Don’t worry, everything will be fine!” “Hey, look at how good you are at lying. Before you, no one would claim to be number one at it!” “It’s only 12 million bucks? You don’t want to trouble her to come over? My God, who do you think you are? Even if it was Middle Province’s richest man James Drake standing here, the Goddess of War wouldn’t care to come over, would she? On the contrary, there’s a higher possibility for Mr. Drake to go over to see her!” Britney crossed her arms in front of her chest, her face filled with disdain. Fane was lying about everything unrealistically. After saying that, she sneered. “Look, seeing that Selena and Matt were university mates, both of you can just kneel before me and slap yourselves a few times while saying you’ll never pretend to be someone you’re not again. I’ll even pay for the bill tonight!” “You want my wife and I to kneel before you and slap ourselves?” Fane was stunned, his expression turning dark. Fane did not want to cause trouble but it did not mean he was a coward. He was willing to tolerate people looking down on him. He had been thinking that they were all his wife’s ex-classmates and Selena would not want to ruin any relationships. That was why Fane did not

bother to stoop to their level. However, he did not expect these people to ask for more. Not only did they secretly order the most expensive bottles of wine, they were now asking him and his wife to kneel down and slap themselves? As a man, he could not take this anymore no matter what. Moreover, he was Cathysia's only Supreme Warrior! "You heard me right, that's exactly what I meant. Kneel before me and my man, slap yourselves, and say you will stop pretending to be someone you're not from now on!" Britney continued looking arrogant, being merciless toward Fane and Selena. Fane looked over at Selena next to him. Selena was a little angry as well but seemed afraid of them. After all, they were people from a third-class family.

Chapter 239

Fane could not stand it anymore after seeing Selena's face. He walked over and slapped Britney twice. "Pap, pap!" The sound was incredibly loud as the room instantly turned silent. "Are you dreaming? My wife and I were willing to buy you drinks so you should be feeling thankful. On the contrary, you're asking us to kneel before you? Haha, you're still stuck in your princess dream, aren't you?" Fane's expression was ice cold. His gaze was filled with a terrifying aura. Britney froze. She had never been hit in her life. She was the only daughter of the Lee Family so her parents treated her as the apple of their eyes and she had always been treated as the family's gem. She did not expect to be beaten by a bodyguard today. "Matt, what are you standing there for?" Britney was pissed seeing how Matt was also terrified. "F*ck you, what kind of man are you to hit a woman?" Matt clenched his fist and charged toward Fane. "Bang!" Unfortunately, spoiled, pretty, and useless brats had no combat capabilities whatsoever. Matt was instantly kicked by Fane before landing on the sofa. "Ah!" Matt screamed in pain while clenching at his chest. "Little brat, I'm telling you that you'll regret this!" Britney was pissed. She pointed at Fane and Selena, saying, "Fine, I was just thinking that if you couldn't afford it, I could help you pay the bill.

Haha, now I won't pay a single cent even if you kneel before me. I won't pay for it, so just wait till you get beaten up by the men of the Lotus Bar and Lounge!" After saying that, she walked over to help Matt up. "The owner of the Lotus Bar and Lounge is the brother of a first-class aristocratic family's master. Haha, I'll wait and see how you two get out of here tonight!" Fane sneered. "To me, the only things that matter are those who deserve to be hit and those who don't, as well as those who deserve to be killed and those who don't! If we were on the battlefield, you both would be dead by now!" Fane paused after saying that and looked over at Britney. "Remember this, your family might spoil you in your house but I won't do the same!" "Sigh!" Selena sighed and asked Fane, "Hubby, what should we do now? Can you afford to pay the bill?" Fane smiled unexpectedly and said to the manager, "I heard that at 11 o'clock, there's a boxing competition on the third floor of your building, right? Customers of the luxurious private room will get to watch the competition as they're eligible to do so!" "Right, so what? Do you want to watch it?" The manager was stunned before adding, "If you want to watch it, there won't be a problem. You're eligible to do so but what does that have anything to do with you paying the bill?" Fane smiled and replied, "Of course it has lots to do with paying the bill. Didn't you say that if someone joins the competition and wins, his bill would be voided?" "That is the case, but are you saying that you want to sign up?" The manager looked at Fane and shook her head. "Young man, if I were you, I'd rather kneel and apologize to this woman, kowtowing for 100 times than joining the competition. With that body of yours, your opponent would only need one punch to knock your brains out. There are already ten professionals in the Middle Province who died in the challenge. The opponent has already won ten matches consecutively!" At this moment, the female manager stressed it again, "It's ten consecutive wins!"

Chapter 240

“Young man, if you’re signing up, haha, you’re just asking for death. It’s just as easy as killing an ant!” “That’s right, the American is huge and strong. He’s almost two meters tall and his arms are thicker than your thighs. With that body of yours, haha…” The fighters began sneering after seeing Fane’s body. “Tsk tsk, ten professionals were killed consecutively? This American is pretty rough!” Hugh lamented, “But previous competitors only used to injure the opponents, right? This man actually killed people?” “America and Cathysia have been at war for years. Although it has finally ended, there is still hatred from both sides!” “Although the countries have been conducting diplomatic relations, there is still tension!” Rosa forced a smile and said, “Since it’s a competition and there are consent forms involved, the opponent will definitely be merciless!” After saying so, she looked at Selena and added, “Selena, talk your husband out of it. Otherwise, if he dies, it’ll be a problem. Let’s come up with other solutions for the money. As long as he stays alive, anything can be solved!” “He killed that many Cathysians? I have to kill him!” “Moreover, if I win the competition, I could void the bill and earn three million bucks reward from it, isn’t that right?” Fane clenched his fist as rage flashed through his eyes. His fighting spirit sent shivers down people’s backs. “Of course, haha. If you want to die, we won’t stop you!” “Since you dare to not pay for your meal here, you can pay for it with your life then!” The female manager sneered. Fane was definitely going to die in her opinion. “Are you really going? The opponent is strong! Although you’re pretty good, if you’re no match for him then…” Selena was clear on the fact that Fane had seen too many bodies of his comrades on the battlefield. It was near impossible to stop him at the moment. Moreover, the opponent was someone from the enemy’s side who killed many competition participants. “Wifey, don’t worry. I have to go do this and I will win!” Fane smiled. He seemed relaxed as if he was making a casual remark. “Okay, be careful. Think of me and our daughter!” Selena bit her sexy lips before nodding. Fane felt warmth in his heart. He held Selena’s hand and said, “Don’t worry, I’ll just be cleaning out the trash. I

have to kill that guy, regardless of it being for us or for Cathysia!" "Stop stalling, people have already gone up. If you're trying to die, hurry up, alright?" "I'm telling you this, if you die then the money you owe will have to be paid by your wife, understood?" The female supervisor became arrogant. She was no longer the gentle and polite person who had passed Fane his bill before this. "Haha, great, this is great!" Britney began laughing, and her gaze seemed crazy. "Who knew that your lie about being friends with the Goddess of War would now be exposed and you'd be fighting in the ring. Tsk tsk, you're going in the ring just to pay the bill. Do you really think that after being a soldier for a few years, you can beat your opponent? I'll tell you this now, I heard that someone was beaten to death two days ago!" "*sshole!" Fane's eyes were filled with terrifying-looking blood vessels upon hearing that. After saying that, he walked toward the door and said, "I'll kill this American bastard!" "Go go, why aren't you following him? What if he runs off? It's a 12 million bucks bill. If he runs off, can you afford it?" Britney followed the crowd and sneered. "Haha, you dared to hit me just now. You're a rash man and I won't stoop to your level. I'll see how you get your brains blown up with kicks, or how you'll look when your neck gets snapped in half!"

Chapter 241

"Right, I'll snap a photo of you as a memory when that happens!" Matt was so angry that he said that with burning hatred. "No one is allowed to use phones there…" The manager began reminding the crowd. "Fine, this brat is lucky!" Matt was slightly disappointed. Soon after that, the crowd arrived on the third floor. The third floor was a giant, sphere-shaped court; there were galleries everywhere and in the middle of it all was a boxing ring, lights trained on it. "Fane, why is he here?" On the other side of the room, Young Master Clark and Neil were about to watch the competition together with some other rich boys. Since the day Ken had found out that Neil seemed pretty against Fane, the duo began contacting each other. Ken was

especially unsettled about Fane. It was the reason why he had asked Neil out tonight to talk about how they could end Fane or make Fane divorce Selena. They did not expect Fane to be here as well. “Selena is here too!” Neil’s expression darkened. The couple seemed like they were on good terms. “Aren’t the only people who get to come here those who booked the luxurious private room?” Ken thought about it and took a look at the people next to Fane. “Looks like Britney bought them dinner. That’s weird, how did Britney meet Selena and Fane? How could she be willing to spend over a million bucks to buy them dinner?” “Who knows, seeing them together annoys me!” Neil said angrily. Neil thought that his father was too cowardly. He made him kneel before Fane the other day to apologize to him. The more he thought about it, the more embarrassed he was; it felt like a mental health problem was developing inside him. This brat was just a veteran, was he really that terrifying? “Neil and Ken are here too!” Fane looked over and smiled. “These rich boys know each other so it’s normal. Moreover, they’re on the same wavelength and are usually up to no good!” Selena said with disdain. After saying that, she looked at the boxing ring and said worriedly, “Be careful, don’t do anything beyond your capabilities. If you can’t defeat him, think of ways to protect yourself!” “Wifey, so I’m actually that important to you!” Fane looked at Selena with a smile. “No you’re aren’t!” Selena turned shy and rolled her eyes. “I just don’t want Kylie to lose her dad!” “Fine, it’s 11 o’clock. I believe everyone’s been waiting for long!” “Tonight’s match will be incredibly entertaining as the man who came for the challenge is an officer who has just returned from the army. In fact, he’s a marshal!” “His name is Dennis Howard!”

Chapter 242

“Dennis, why is he here?” Ken inhaled sharply upon hearing the name. He did not expect that this good friend of his had signed up for the match tonight. “F*ck, you know Dennis?” Neil was stunned before adding, “He’s a marshal, the type with explosive combat capabilities!” “Of course I know

him, we're friends!" "If that's the case, this American is dying tonight!" Ken became a little excited. "Haha, the match tonight looks entertaining already!" "I don't care if it's entertaining, we're here for the show!" Neil laughed before whispering to Ken, "Since you said that this marshal Dennis is your friend, why don't you get him to kill Fane silently one day? As long as he dies, we'll have our chances, won't we?" Ken's expression darkened upon hearing that. "Did you think I've never thought about it before this? I did ask him for help to mess that brat up but somehow, Dennis ended up telling me to not cause trouble for Fane. In fact, he said the entire Clark family might be in trouble!" "Really?" Neil's expression darkened as well. He was afraid. "Motherf*cker, could it be that this guy is stronger than a marshal? If that's the case, does that mean that he's the legendary King of War?" "If he really is the King of War, we're in trouble. However, we haven't heard anything about a King of War named Fane in the Middle Province, have we? I've searched for this online too!" "If he really is the King of War, he's only one or two levels under the God of War. Therefore, we can't offend someone like that!" Ken forced a smile and looked over at Fane again. "Anyway, I think Fane isn't a King of War. If he was, would he still be staying in that old house with his wife? He could've bought a mansion by now! A King of War would definitely get awarded a handsome sum of money after leaving the army!" "That makes sense!" Neil nodded. "But why does Dennis fear him a little? Could there be any other reason for that?" "Another reason?" Ken scrunched his brows together as he began thinking about it. After some time, his eyes lit up as he said, "I got it. There are only two possibilities to why Dennis would speak in Fane's favor; one, he's no match for Fane, which is pretty impossible. Fane was probably just a normal soldier so how could he beat a marshal? As for the second possibility, Fane might have given Dennis some benefits or promised him something!" "Benefits? What benefits could Fane promise Dennis? He's clean!" Neil forced a smile; he did not think it was possible. "Young Master Hugo, don't forget that Fane's wife is beautiful. What if Fane promised

Dennis that Selena would spend a night with him? If Dennis heard such a proposal, do you think he'd say no?" "Although Dennis is into my sister, I don't think any man could control himself before a woman like Selena if she was being seductive and dominant!" Ken said coldly. "You're right, no man would be able to reject a beauty like that!" Neil nodded and added, "Looks like Selena is just putting up a show as well. She might actually do something like that to impress a marshal!" "Haha, young man, I've signed you up but it looks like you might not get the chance to participate tonight. After all, I didn't expect that the challenger tonight would be the marshal Dennis Howard!" "This man is my idol. This time, quite a few professionals have returned to the Middle Province and there are a few marshals among them. Although they've been quiet before this, one of them has finally shown up for this!" The female manager ran over and said, "I don't care, the match tonight will be entertaining. I want to stay here and watch for some time!" "Thankfully, the private room I'm assigned to is now empty. Since the customers have left, I can watch too!"

Chapter 243

Two waitresses were talking to each other. The female manager thought of something. She turned around and said to the men in black, "Watch that brat for me. Don't let him escape, you hear me? It looks like he's not going in the ring at all tonight. Hmph, if he still can't pay up by one o'clock, death awaits him!" "Alright, let's welcome our challenger, Dennis Howard!" The host said loudly in the ring. At this moment, a man with prominent features walked out of a door. His expression was incredibly calm. He looked at the crowd nonchalantly before standing aside to wait for his opponent. "This is great, Cathysia's most powerful is finally in the ring. F*ck, this time, he'll definitely beat that damn American to death!" "That's right, it's the marshal this time. That guy will definitely die!" "That might not be the case, the American is tall and huge and he has terrifying strength as well. He looks like a monster just by standing there. The ten people before this, including

a few hidden professionals, all died in the American's hands anyway!" A few of the rich boys began discussing the match. Fane scrunched his brows together. He could not believe that the owner of this place had actually set up a boxing ring like this. It seemed like the main goal was to attract rich boys to watch the game. Judging from the way they were talking, some of them had probably never missed a single match within the last ten matches. However, although it was said that watching the matches was free, one would be required to book the luxurious private room to get that benefit. In other words, one would need to spend a million bucks to watch a match. Since there had been ten matches, that would mean a total expenditure of ten million bucks. The more rich people knew about the matches, the more money the owner would earn here. This owner was pretty good at doing business to make profits. "Please welcome our arena champion, O'Neal!" The host loudly continued the introduction, "Our O'Neal has had ten consecutive wins since becoming the defending champion. Will he do the same today, or will his streak be ended by our challenger Dennis Howard? Let's see!" True enough, after the host's introduction, people began cheering and applauding. Fane's lips quivered for a moment. He felt a little disappointed. "Haha, is this another man seeking death?" O'Neal laughed out loud. His voice was incredibly coarse and his body was indeed tall and large. Dennis seemed small before him. O'Neal was topless and his thick arms were filled with huge muscles, making it seem as if there was a terrifying Kraken clinging onto his body. His entire body emitted a horrifying and powerful aura; it was obvious that he was not one to mess with. Seeing how his opponent looked like, Dennis' gaze turned a little serious. "I heard that you've killed ten men in a row. You're doing that on purpose, aren't you?" Dennis said coldly to his opponent. "Young man, so what if I did it on purpose? You've all signed the consent form and there are so many witnesses. Since you're here, you should be ready to die!" "Haha, not bad, not bad at all. If I could kill you, a marshal today, that'd be great. You've killed quite a few Americans on the battlefield, haven't you? I'll

take revenge for them today!” O’Neal laughed out loud. He did not take Dennis seriously at all. “I don’t remember how many people I’ve killed. I’ve never bothered counting!” Dennis clenched his fist, his joints making noises from the friction. He bowed a little, stepped on the ground, and charged toward his opponent. “But I do know that I’m killing one more today!”

Chapter 244

“Great speed!” Britney and the crowd exclaimed. Everyone was attracted to what had just happened in the ring. Dennis was quick; he dashed out in the blink of an eye like a leopard. Before anyone realized it, he was already in front of O’Neal. “Bang!” Dennis’ fist landed on his opponent’s chest. The punch was firm and strong. “What, he’s hit!” “Oh My God, that has never happened!” “Great hit, haha. This guy O’Neal was looking down on Cathysia. Hit him hard!” The crowd erupted! After his punch, Dennis was pushed back by the reaction force. He took a few steps back and stared at his opponent with a serious expression. He did not dare to ease up. O’Neal only took a step back and an evil grin appeared on his face. “Haha, not bad. You are a marshal of Cathysia after all so you have better strength than the other useless brats!” “Everyone who challenged you was a hero!” Dennis glared at his opponent in anger. Although they had all lost, they were worth every bit of respect in his heart. “Haha, heroes? Only winners are considered heroes, losers are all trash and cowards!” “To me, none of you are capable of fighting. You’re all weak to me!” O’Neal laughed out loud. It was impossible to describe how arrogant he looked. “Really? Unfortunately, Cathysia won the battle this time so we’re the heroes!” Dennis sneered on purpose. He wanted to piss his opponent off. True enough, O’Neal heard that and clenched his fists so hard that there were noises from it. “You won? Hmph, if you didn’t kill our War Emperor, we might’ve had a chance!” “You did lose the war eventually, didn’t you? Are you too cowardly to accept the truth?” Dennis began moving after saying that. This time, his speed was faster than before. He was in front of O’Neal before anyone

realized, and he threw a few punches consecutively onto his opponent's body. "Bang, bang, bang!" Dennis' punches were strong as every punch came with a loud bang and his opponent moved backward from the hits. "Ah!" O'Neal growled in anger like a monster. He clenched his fist and hit Dennis. "Bang!" This time, their fists met each other. Dennis was pushed back. It took some effort for him to gain his balance as he shook his hands vigorously and felt that his palms were a little numb. "How could this guy's strength be so great? On top of that, he was hit multiple times by my punches but does not look affected at all. If it was an ordinary person, he would be dead by now!" "Looks like this guy was a soldier who focused on body refining. He's definitely not normal. What a tough guy to handle!" Dennis was a little afraid. It was rare for him to meet such a professional fighter. This guy's fighting capability might be as good as a marshal or even better than some. "This is great, Dennis hasn't even been hit. There was only a fist bump. O'Neal has already suffered a few punches. Dennis will definitely win!" The plump female manager next to Fane jumped excitedly, extra passionate about it. "Looks like you really want Dennis to win?"

Chapter 245

Fane forced a smile while looking at the manager. "No sh*t, he's from Cathysia. That damn O'Neal has killed so many of us, of course I want him to die sooner." "Our boss went overboard with hiring this defending champion and awarding him two million bucks for every match he wins." The female manager said angrily. Fane sighed. "Hey, I hope Dennis wins too. If that's the case, I won't have to do it myself!" At this moment, Fane paused before continuing, "But I can tell that Dennis is probably no match for O'Neal!" "What are you talking about? Dennis is everyone's idol!" "That's right, he's a marshal. How could you say that he's no match for O'Neal!" "Young man, I'll beat you up!" A few spectators around Fane began scolding him. The female manager glared at Fane angrily as well. If looks could kill, Fane would be in pieces by now. "Hubby, why don't you

give up? If Dennis is no match for him, wouldn't that make you defenseless?" Selena was worried after hearing that. As the saying went, laymen watched the show while experts noticed the details. Although Dennis seemed like he had the upper hand, Selena believed that since Fane was a soldier on the battlefield for five years, he must have known something the ordinary people did not. That was why Fane's words made her feel uneasy. "What are you talking about? How could Dennis lose?" Before Fane could respond, Matt added, "Even idiots could tell that Dennis is definitely winning. He's a marshal and has hit his opponent multiple times. His opponent did not even get to strike once. I think you're just saying bullsh*t so shut up!" Matt paused before saying to Selena, "I think your husband won't even get a chance to die in the ring, haha. Just wait till you get beaten to death for not being able to pay!" "That's right, that's right…" Britney added, "If your man gets in the ring and dies there, he might have a little dignity left for dying from one punch. It might be considered dying for your country. If he dies from being beaten up by the bar's men for not being able to pay the bill, tsk tsk, he will have no dignity left." Rachel could not help but laugh. "That's right, When someone asks you, Selena, how did your husband die? How were you widowed? How are you going to answer that? Are you going to tell them, sighs, my husband was pretending to be rich at a bar and could not afford the bill so he was beaten to death for it?" Rachel's voice was so illuminating that people around them started laughing as well. "Why don't you act in a musical?" Fane replied coldly. His voice terrified Rachel so much that she immediately shut up. She forgot that this young man was so cruel that he dared to hit Britney and could do the same to her as well. Moreover, this brat Fane was going to die soon and might do something extreme before his death. If he wanted to scapegoat someone, would she not die a wrongful death? "It's my turn!" At this moment, O'Neal began charging toward Dennis in the ring at the speed of lightning. "No way, this guy's that fast too with his physical stature?" "I haven't seen him taking the initiative to attack before this. In the past matches, he did not even

move much before beating his opponents to death!" A few 'veteran' spectators exclaimed. "Bang, bang, bang!" Every punch shook Dennis and he moved back! "No way, is he really losing?" The female manager looked at Fane before looking back at the ring. Her expression was darker than ever.

Chapter 246

The fight in the arena was too intense. Both parties were going at it at full force. At that moment, they were sweating profusely. Dennis' shirt was drenched in sweat. "Ah!" Dennis suddenly bellowed and flexed, causing his shirt to shoot away in pieces. There were several horrifying scars on his back and chest. "That's from a bullet!" "It seems that Dennis was shot on the battlefield in the past!" "It's not just one shot. These are the soldiers that risked their lives for us on the frontlines!" The crowd felt touched upon witnessing the scars left on Dennis' chest and abdominal region. Some women even teared up and almost cried! Whimper! Fane frowned and looked around. That female manager was already in tears, sniveling. "To think my idol has this many scars on him. He's a hero. This is a real hero!" "Manager, didn't you say the man who saved Little Jake by jumping into the tiger-viewing zone and holding the two Siberian tigers down by their heads was your idol?" asked the female supervisor beside her as a reminder. "He's also my idol. I have two idols now!" "No, it should be three. There was another idol before. He did a public service by killing over 200 people from the Dragon God clan in one night. That kind of person is also my idol!" The female manager explained through her tears. Fane felt awkward. He did not expect the incident at the zoo that morning to spread so quickly. 'Could it be that someone took a picture? At that moment, everyone was panicking. I don't recall anyone taking pictures.' Fane thought to himself. He then looked to the female manager and asked, "How did you know about the incident at the zoo?" "Of course I'd know. My friend went to the zoo this morning. He witnessed it with his own eyes!" The female manager quickly added, "I heard that the man was very handsome and strong!" Fane felt shy. To be praised for his looks right in the face felt...quite good! "Hehe, really? Please stop those praises. If you keep this up, I'll feel embarrassed!" Fane laughed. It seemed that two out of three of her idols were him. The female manager immediately rolled her eyes at Fane. "Why are you feeling

embarrassed? I'm not talking about you. Just look at yourself. You can't even afford a drink. You don't even have a tenth of his stunning looks!" Fane was dumbfounded. He then continued to look at the arena. Bang, bang, bang! At that moment, the fight in the arena was as intense as ever. Dennis had obviously landed quite a few hits on the opponent's body. However, the opponent's body was tough. Although he spat out a mouthful of blood, his injuries seemed superficial. "Pfft" Meanwhile, due to his smaller stature, Dennis was more agile, allowing him to avoid more hits. However, due to the opponent's larger fist, it was difficult for Dennis to endure each hit. "Pfft!" O'Neal was not looking too good either. He stood there, bent over, and taking deep breaths. "Oh no, is Dennis not a match for him? He's been spitting up quite a bit of blood though!" Looking at the stage, Ken was worried. After some thought, he shouted, "Dennis, you need to give it all you've got. You've spent three years on the battlefield. You managed to survive that intense battle and can't just die here." "I-I-I can't hold out any longer." Dennis feebly made the statement as his legs trembled. It was then that he went down on his knees, unable to hold it together any longer. "Haih!" Fane let out a sigh. Dennis' injuries were too serious. One of his legs was fractured and he even had three cracked ribs.

Chapter 247

However, even in such a situation, Dennis maintained his glare on O'Neal, the American enemy. "Ah!" Dennis stood up once more, gritting his teeth. One of his legs was broken, trembling greatly. "Haha, you're done for. Your bones should be broken in several places. What now? Still refusing to admit defeat?" O'Neal laughed while looking at Dennis. "You're quite amazing to be able to stand with such severe injuries. The 10 people before you weren't at such a level. They had long admitted defeat while lying on the ground!" Having said that, O'Neal paused for a moment before continuing, "Unfortunately, their admission of defeat and begging for mercy fell on deaf ears for I have sworn that as long as I stand, I will kill all who come with

dissent!" "Son of a b*tch!" "Animal!" Quite a number of people were outraged. "What's wrong? You bystanders find this unacceptable? Come sign the consent form and fight me in the arena! I'll grant your wish!" O'Neal arrogantly opened his arms with his head held high, filled with confidence. "I-I-I'll kill you…" Dennis gritted his teeth as he endured the gut-wrenching pain from his leg and rushed at O'Neal in strides. His leg was already swollen like crazy. "Dennis!" The female manager's tears flowed like a stream. He was truly someone with a soldier's spirit! "Since you're looking for death, I'll grant your wish!" Seeing his opponent approaching, O'Neal leaped into the air and sent a kick right at Dennis' chest. "Pfft!" Even if Dennis' body was tough, he could not hold it any longer. He was sent flying backward as he spat out a mouthful of blood. He then lay on the floor, unable to move. The corners of his mouth were covered with blood. His fists were clenched tightly, unwilling to accept the outcome, but there was nothing else that he could do. "Winnie, I'm sorry that I can't accompany you any longer. For the country, I must fight!" Dennis muttered softly. It seemed that he was unable to let go of his love, Winnie Clark. "Let me send you on your final journey!" O'Neal cracked his neck and started walking toward Dennis. "Stop it. He's already in that condition. Can't you just spare his life?" "O'Neal, you should consider your actions. He's our marshal. Aren't you afraid of the higher ups coming after you if you kill him?" "That's right, he's not an average Joe. He's our marshal!" Quite a few rich kids felt moved. Dennis' spirit, his determination to kill the enemy, and his resolve to put everything on the line shook them to the core. "Hahaha, what about it? He's the one who signed the consent form. Since he's here, he should be prepared to die!" O'Neal laughed out loud. "Is that so? Then you should be prepared to die too!" Right then, a clear voice caused the entire scene to quiet down. "Who's that?" "It's that kid!" Very soon, someone realized who was talking. "It's that guy, Fane!" Ken and Neil exchanged glances with a confused look in their eyes. 'Is that guy for real?' "Honey, I'm going in!" Fane looked at Selena beside him before walking straight to

the arena. “W-w-wonderful!” Dennis struggled to turn around and look at Fane. His eyes were filled with tears of joy. He had never expected the strongest person in Cathysia, the one and only Supreme Warrior, to appear!

Chapter 248

“Haha, I didn’t expect someone to volunteer himself for death just like that!” O’Neal laughed loudly, then stated, “Kid, let me end this sh*t of a marshal before I get to you. Don’t rush. If you want to die, you need to queue up!” “He can’t die in the hands of trash like you!” Fane kicked off with the tip of his toes and managed to easily jump onto the arena which was taller than a person. After that, he stood there with hands behind his back. Dennis, who was lying on the floor earlier, was blocked off by Fane. “This guy is quite capable. He was able to jump all the way up there!” A look of astonishment appeared in the female manager’s gaze. “Too bad he’s still going to die. That O’Neal is just too powerful. Even Dennis, a marshal, was no match for him!” stated the supervisor. “Hehe, Selena Taylor, you’re really letting your husband take part in the match? Even the marshal is at death’s door. Isn’t he just going to die horribly?” “Sigh, I didn’t think your husband would risk his life for a free meal and three million bucks reward! It’s unfortunate that if he dies, you’ll still have to foot the bill!” said Matt, gleeful over their predicament. “Even if he died, he’s still better than a boy toy like you! “You don’t even have the courage to get into the arena, do you?” Selena’s gaze was cold. She was annoyed at how she used to have a crush on this moron. Compared to Fane, he was less than a speck of dust. Not only was Matt a useless boy toy, he would even gloat over someone’s tragedy. “How did he get up there?” Ken rubbed his eyes, watching with his mouth agape. “F*ck me, I thought he was only acting tough earlier. I didn’t expect him to really go up there!” Neil was similarly dumbfounded. He even thought he was dreaming. Both of them had been looking forward to Fane’s passing and the reason they gathered here was to discuss how to have Fane killed, or to have Selena leave him on her own accord. Never did they think that after an entire

day’s discussion, they would be without a solution. In the end, it was Fane himself that had decided to send himself to his own death in the arena! “That’s wonderful. He’s in the arena, he’s really there. Bloody h*ll, if O’Neal gives him a punch, hahaha, his head will split apart!” Neil almost jumped in his excited state. “Seeking for him high and low, delivered free to our hold. Hahaha!” [1] “Hahaha, a wonderful poem! It rhymes well!” Ken burst into laughter. He almost wanted to run around shirtless due to his excitement. “Who is this guy?” “Who knows?!” A number of people started their own discussions. Fane was a fresh face they had not seen before. “Even the general has fallen, yet he dares to challenge him?” “Wasn’t it only going to be one match tonight? I thought it was one match every night. Is it possible that there are two matches tonight?” More and more people felt confused. —

Chapter 249

"It seems that you’re quite capable!” O’Neal was surprised. He then grinned, showing his pearly white teeth. “Interesting. Your marshal is almost dead, yet you dare come? It seems that you’re one of those righteous patriots that the legends speak of, eh? You must’ve had your head filled with patriotism to the point of stupidity and plan to die for the country?” “Hehe, you can come to your own conclusions!” Fane chuckled before calmly saying, “You’ve only managed 10, no, 11 consecutive wins because you never met me. Today, I’ll end your streak and your life!” “Tch tch tch, who doesn’t know how to boast?!” “Don’t pee your pants later when you see my fist! Hahaha!” O’Neal continued laughing. Having said that, he looked to the emcee. “Emcee, what’s going on? Didn’t you only arrange for one match tonight? Why are there two now?” The emcee smiled with a wince before running over. “I’ve just clarified with them. This gentleman did register and sign the consent form. The identity written was ‘nameless soldier with five years of service killing… Killing American dogs!’” “Son of a b*tch!” Hearing that, O’Neal clenched his fist, making popping sounds from his

joints. “You’re just a nameless soldier and you want to kill me? You’re mocking me. I’ll kill you today itself. Just give me three seconds to end this fight!” “Wait, I haven’t finished reading his reason to fight!” Unexpectedly, the emcee waved for them to stop at that moment. He then continued the announcement. “The second reason is to win the match for the free meal and also obtain the three million bucks reward!” “Damn, so he’s doing it for the money!” Some from the crowd were speechless. They speculated that the main reason this nameless soldier dared to fight was just to get the free meal. “Your bill was only around one to two million bucks. Together with the three million bucks reward, how much would that be? Around four to five million bucks at most. Are you throwing your life away for that? Have you gone mad thinking about money?” sneered a fat guy. “For money?” Ken and Neil exchanged looks, feeling speechless. Why did they not consider that Fane would fight in the arena for that little bit of money? “Kid, you should get out of here now. Don’t be suicidal! What’s the point for a nameless soldier like you to be throwing your life away?” said a rich lady as she started laughing. The atmosphere around them lightened up as some of the audience thought they were doing a skit. Dennis, who was lying on the floor, felt awkward. Fane, the Supreme Warrior, was going to this extent to stay hidden. That was just too much. To think that he would even call himself a nameless soldier. If he was a nameless soldier, then generals like them would not even be qualified to lift this nameless soldier’s boots. However, since Fane was in the arena, he was being given another chance at life. “Manager Wayne, why are you guys here too? How much did this kid spend that made him take part in the match for a free meal?” the emcee asked curiously as he quickly noticed the chubby female manager. Manager Wayne smiled bitterly. “This guy ordered the two treasured collections from our store. It was originally over 14 million bucks in expenses, but the general manager said that we can give him a 20 percent discount. They broke our store’s record for the highest expenses in a single receipt!” Having said that, Manager Wayne felt helpless. “In total, it was around 12 million

bucks. Unfortunately, this kid could not afford to pay up and tried to leave without paying. He was held back by our people. After he learned that he could have the meal waived and a 3 million bucks reward by winning the arena match, he came here to register!" "F*ck me, he drank those two treasured collections? This guy really knows how to enjoy life!" someone chuckled bitterly. "Enjoying life is one thing, but now, he's about to lose his life. Trying to act tough and treating someone to a meal despite being poor. Didn't he realize what kind of place this is? Is this somewhere he can afford to dine and dash?" Some young master of a third-class aristocratic family added in a helpless tone, "This kid must've underestimated the arena match. Does he think he can win just because he knows some moves after being in the army for a few years?" "Haha, it turns out he's just too poor to pay!" Neil burst out laughing. "Fane, you're quite amazing. You have no money and you still dare to treat others to a meal. Moreover, you dared to spend that much! Before your death, I need to give you a big thumbs up. This is the first time in my life that I've seen someone so brave. It's also the first time I've seen someone lose his life from acting tough."

Chapter 250

"Hahaha, what a joke. So that's the reason you're trying to challenge me!" O'Neal laughed once more. "Kid, is this your last-ditch effort? Trapped between a rock and a hard place, you chose to challenge me because you would at least die a glorious death and save some face?" "That's right! He must be thinking that he'll die for sure, why not die fighting for Cathysia? Who knows if he might even be idolized by some!" Ken burst out laughing once more. "We've finally figured him out! So that's his real intention!" This time, some of the audience started to look at him with scorn and joined in. "Kid, since you're on the stage and signed the consent form, I'll send you on your journey!" O'Neal's had a playful expression on his face. After making his statement with his throaty voice, he moved his lumbering figure toward Fane. "Wait a moment!" Right at that moment, the general manager

of Lotus Bar and Lounge came running over, gasping for air breathlessly. “I-I-I’ve made it in time!” “General manager, why are you here?” “You’re here just on time. This kid is trying to dine and dash. We caught him and he has no means to pay so he’s here to challenge the arena hoping for a free meal!” Manager Wayne quickly explained. The general manager nodded. “I know. You can’t let the fight happen!” “Can’t let the fight happen? Why?” O’Neal looked at the general manager, confused. “This kid already signed the consent form and provoked me. Why can’t we fight?” “What’s the matter? Could it be that this kid’s background is special? Is he the young master of some aristocratic family?” “Could it be that he’s untouchable because of his background?” Some of the audience started their wild speculations. The general manager smiled bitterly, finally declaring, “If this kid had only spent around a million bucks, then it wouldn’t matter if he died from the challenge. However, he spent around 14 million bucks. Even with the discount, it’s still around 12 million bucks. If he died, this bill can’t be settled easily.” The crowd was speechless. It turns out that this kid had spent such a large amount that the general manager was worried he would die and there would be no one to settle the bill. By then, he would suffer a huge loss if he could not collect the 10 million bucks. Having said that, the general manager then looked at the rich kids and explained, “Moreover, he’s just an ant. If he really fought, he wouldn’t even last three seconds. Such a match would not be worth watching now, would it?” “General manager, it’s fine if he dies. His wife is still here. When the time comes, you can just have his wife foot the bill!” Britney immediately exclaimed after hearing that. The general manager was surprised, then turned around to look at Selena and said, “What can a woman be capable of? You want her to foot the bill? I don’t think she can be trusted!” “General manager, the rule you set was that the meal will be free if we win the match. What’s this? You can’t afford to lose? Reluctant to part with that 10 million bucks? Hehe, if that’s the case, your Lotus Bar and Lounge is a bit too stingy!?” Fane gave the general manager a firm stare, refusing to treat him respectfully. The general

manager's mouth twitched violently before he said, "What nonsense are you spouting? We're a subsidiary business of a first-class aristocratic family. Why would we be concerned over a mere 10 million bucks? The problem is, can a small fry like you win?" "Why should you care if I can win? I think you just can't afford to lose!" Fane shrugged. The general manager was at a loss for words. Although they did have the backing of a first-class aristocratic family, it was over 10 million, not just one or two million. What if the boss got angry when they failed to collect the money? Although he was the general manager, he was just an employee and had no authority to make such decisions. If not for the fear of his boss coming after them, he would not have rushed there urgently. "F*ck, could it be?" —

Chapter 251

Ken was speechless. If that was the case, would that mean that Fane would not die? "Such a good chance, how can I…" Neil was also troubled. However, his eyes quickly lit up and looked at Ken as he suggested, "Why don't we each come up with six million bucks? If he dies, we'll foot the bill for him. That way, the general manager will surely let the match go on!" Ken was surprised and cheered up instantly. "Of course! Six million bucks each is not too much. If we can have Fane killed, then we'll profit greatly from this. Bloody h*ll, it turns out that this kid's life is worth quite a lot of money after all!" Having said that, Ken quickly raised his hand and announced loudly to the general manager, "General manager, I've thought about it. I know both Fane and his wife. We're considered acquaintances. If they win the challenge, you should waive his bill!" Fane was caught off-guard. He did not expect Ken to speak on his behalf. The next second, Ken voiced out again. "If he dies, I'll foot the bill for him. He's already signed the consent form so you should let him try!" Fane was speechless. So Ken was just afraid of him not being able to take part in the arena match. "Are you serious?" Hearing that, the general manager was delighted as Fane would be dead for sure and only needed someone to foot the bill for him.

He did not want Fane taking part in the match because he was afraid that nobody would foot the bill after he died. Even if this guy could not pay up, he could at least capture him and present him to his boss. That would still be better than a dead guy. He had not expected Young Master Clark from a second-class aristocratic family to make such a request. It provided him with a way out. “Could it be that Young Master Clark is willing to foot the bill after he dies? What a nice guy!” Meanwhile, Britney and Matt’s expression turned ugly. They were wishing for Fane to be killed and leaving Selena unable to pay the bill, having her stay back. Now their plans were foiled. If Fane died, someone was going to help Selena get out of this. Very soon, Matt seemed to come to a realization and smiled. “Hey, Selena looks quite good. These young masters are probably trying to win her over.” “It’s fine. With her man dead, that should be sufficient to teach her a lesson!” Britney sneered. “Relax, I will definitely honor my promise. Moreover, there are so many people here to bear witness!” Ken gave the general manager a smile then quietly muttered to Neil next to him, “Young Master Hugo, I’ll pay the money first. Later, you’ll have to settle the other half with me.” “Worry not. If Fane’s dead, we’ll both gain the opportunity. It’s just 6 million bucks, I won’t cheat your money!” Neil answered happily. “Alright then. Emcee, continue the match!” The general manager waved at the emcee and stated, “Since he’s willing to risk his life just to get a free meal, we’ll not get in his way!” “Alright, continue the match. The arena champion is still O’Neal with 11 consecutive wins!” “Meanwhile, our challenger is Fane, a nameless soldier!” “Everyone please take a bet and see if our Fane can last a full 10 seconds or just three?” the emcee announced cheerfully, confident that Fane would surely die. After that, he moved to the side. “Haha, kid. I’m coming!” O’Neal burst out in laughter as he strode toward Fane. “Let me blow you away with one punch!”

Chapter 252

O’Neal had a playful look on his face. Looking at Fane’s physique, he seemed even smaller than Dennis. With that, he could not even take Fane seriously. However, while O’Neal was around one meter away from Fane, he suddenly burst into action. He jumped up in a flash and raised his right leg, sending a forceful kick at O’Neal’s neck. What went unseen was the short flash of light that came and went in an instant. It seemed that Fane’s attack caught him completely off guard. O’Neal was not quick enough to respond. He was already hit by the kick just as his hands stretched forward. At the same time, Fane gently landed back where he stood, hands behind his back. He seemed so carefree and relaxed. “You…” O’Neal felt it. His cervical vertebrae were broken in an instant by the kick. However, that was not the scariest thing. It was that unseen current that bore deep into his body from his neck. That flow of energy was extremely volatile. By all logic, it should have exploded long ago. However, it was seemingly restricted by something, only exploding when it reached specific locations. Bang, bang, bang! O’Neal’s abdomen, chest, and a dozen other areas burst open, splattering blood everywhere. He spat out a mouthful of blood before falling straight onto the arena’s floor. “What!?” Those that were waiting to see Fane get slaughtered were all stunned. In less than a second after Fane’s attack, O’Neal was killed? “Oh my god!” At first, Selena was worried about Fane but seeing the scene before her, she was shocked, her mouth opened slightly. She placed a hand over her mouth as she looked at him in disbelief. The area turned silent in an instant before quickly going into an uproar again! “Oh my god. Did my eyes play tricks on me? O’Neal was killed in an instant?” “That’s right. How did O’Neal die before he could even make a move?” “Impossible. Even Marshal Dennis was no match for O’Neal, yet this kid killed him with a single kick?” A number of people started exclaiming loudly. “Wonderful! O’Neal’s a son of a b*tch that’s killed so many of our people. He deserves to die. This Fane guy is quite amazing!” “Yeah, I didn’t expect him to have such terrifying strength. He actually managed to kill O’Neal in such a short time!” Some of the audience cheered passionately

instead. “Yay, he won!” Hugh and Rosa felt relieved. They did not wish for Selena to be widowed once more after her husband had finally returned from the battlefield. “Selena’s husband is so amazing! My god, his strength is even greater than a marshal?” Dylan was just as excited. “Motherf*cker, that god damned American is finally dead.” “I-I-Impossible!” Neil and Ken were dumbfounded. They were looking forward to seeing Fane’s death and Selena crying in tears. That would then allow them to take the chance to console her. Selena might have even been touched by their actions, giving them hope. They did not expect this turn of events! “H-h-he won?” The general manager took a few steps back, unable to accept the outcome. Young Master Clark promised to foot the bill if Fane lost...

Chapter 253

Nevertheless, now that Fane won the match, Young Master Clark did not need to help settle the bill anymore. In fact, according to the rules set before, they needed to waive Fane’s bill and even pay him a three million bucks reward. “General manager, for this matter… We didn’t expect him to win. It seems we’ve just saved some money!” Ken said with a smile despite feeling frustrated deep down. Fane smiled nonchalantly and waved at Ken. “Thank you Young Master Clark for watching my back so I could fight without worry!” “Hahaha, you’re welcome. We’re all acquainted and I’m even friends with Selena!” Ken laughed along, appearing as though he was on good terms with Fane. Selena had a cold expression on her face as she remained silent. In the past, Ken carried himself like a gentleman. She had even treated him as a real friend. However, ever since this person came to her house and tried to forcefully have it demolished, she had finally seen through this two-faced persona. Moreover, his willingness to foot the bill for Fane was with ulterior motives. Firstly, it was to have the general manager continue the match so that Fane would die. Secondly, it was to score brownie points with her. The bill totaled over 10 million bucks after all. If he paid the bill, other women might have really been touched and

thrown themselves at him. Unfortunately, Selena was not only beautiful, but she was also blessed with intelligence as well. She had long seen through the other party's deceit. "So strong! You're so strong! Fane, you're my hero!" The chubby Manager Wayne was teary-eyed. "You're so awesome for saving my idol Dennis. Now you're one of my idols too!" Hearing that, Fane was at a loss on how to respond. Just how did he become her idol again? "Brother Dennis!" A few men that looked like Dennis' friends came looking for him and quickly ran up the arena's stage. "Brother Dennis, are you okay? Your injuries are too severe. What should we do?" "Call the ambulance! He should be able to survive this!" A woman interjected. "No need for that. I have some medicine here. Just let him take that and bring him home to recuperate!" Fane walked over and crouched over Dennis, placing a black medicinal pill in his palm. Dennis held the pill tightly and looked at Fane with his bloodshot eyes. "I-I-I...I've embarrassed our Cathysia military!" "Save your words. Just go back and treat your wounds!" "You didn't embarrass our Cathysia military, but instead honored us. Your soldier spirit is unbroken. Us soldiers should always fight to the last moment! We have to charge forward, even to our deaths!" Fane gave Dennis a smile before finally standing up. He took out a White-Sand cigarette and lit it. "Brother Dennis, should we call the ambulance? Is this medicine reliable?" asked a man, frowning. "It will work. Just bring me home!" Dennis placed the pill in his mouth and swallowed it. He knew in his heart that Fane, the Supreme Warrior, was not only good at taking lives, but was also equally good at them! On the battlefield, quite a number of soldiers were diagnosed to be beyond saving, yet they were all brought back to life by Fane. That was why the Supreme Warrior had another lesser-known title—Supreme Healer! A man like that was worthy of being worshipped by all of Cathysia's military. Dennis was then carried away. At that moment, Selena's eyes were red and she could no longer hold herself back. She rushed up the stage and ran into Fane's arms, pursing her sexy lips. "You oaf. How dare you give me a scare like that? Here I was thinking you might

not be his match, yet you turned out to be so strong!" "Hehe, honey, I've already told you. It's easy to kill this trash!" Fane chuckled, then looked toward the general manager and said, "General manager, you'll honor your words, right? You have to waive our bill. Moreover, that three million bucks reward, I want it in cash!"

Chapter 254

The general manager's face turned pitch black in a moment. It was not a simple 10 or 20 thousand bucks, but 12 million bucks! Furthermore, if not for the earlier discount, it would be over 14 million bucks. If he waived that bill and still paid out three million bucks, it would not just be some loss, but rather a huge hit for his business. When the time came, even his boss would reprimand and advise him against letting Fane take part in the match. However, after some thought, he quickly broke into a smile. "Hehe, what about this, little brother? We can come to a compromise. Your expenses are just too much. Those that spent their money here, including customers that booked a private luxury hall for themselves, would only have to pay around one to two million bucks. Don't you think it's a little over the top to have us waive such a huge bill for you as a new customer?" Having said that, he paused for a moment before continuing, "What about this, I'll give you a 50 percent discount. Your previous bill is over 14 million bucks. I'll round it down for you to 14 million bucks. Adding on the 50 percent discount, you'll only need to pay seven million bucks!" After that, he reconsidered and added, "Of course, we'll be giving you the reward. Deducting three million bucks from your prize money, you only need to pay us four million bucks!" "What? After spending about 14 million bucks, he only needs to pay four million bucks? Isn't that just too much of a benefit for that couple?" Across the room, Matt frowned. "I don't care. As long as his bill is not fully waived, that would be good enough!" "I don't care if it's 14 million bucks or four million bucks. Fane won't be able to pay up. As long as he can't pay up, hehehe, then the outcome is the same!" Britney cackled, patiently waiting

for Fane and Selena to be beaten to death by the boss. “Hahaha, what a joke!” Fane burst out laughing upon hearing the suggestion. “It’s only over 10 million bucks. It’s not like I can’t afford to pay it. However, since you’ve placed such a rule, you should honor it. What you promised was to waive the bill if I won the match, but you didn’t state how much you’d waive! Moreover, that three million is a prize reward that you must pay me! It’s a matter of principles!” The general manager’s expression darkened immediately. “Kid, don’t make things difficult after I provided you a way out. This is our territory and our arena champion was someone we spent a lot of money to hire, yet here you go and have him killed. It’s already very generous of us not to pursue this matter with you!” “What’s this? The great Lotus Bar and Lounge is trying to go back on a promise?” Fane was unfazed, staring straight at the other party. However, Selena was a little scared. After all, the bar had a huge backer, a first-class aristocratic family, behind them. Otherwise, the rich kids around them would not have shut up and watched quietly instead of standing up for them. “General manager, what about this? You waive the bill and I’ll leave the reward. We can come to another compromise! “Take it as us using this three million bucks to pay for tonight’s expenses. How about it? Selena asked carefully as she took a step forward, tugging Fane’s sleeve at the same time. “Hehe, are you dreaming?” The general manager chuckled, then said, “With the arena champion dead, do you know how much loss that would incur on us? Moreover, the match earlier was not fair. It doesn’t count!”

Chapter 255

“Unfair?” Fane’s eyebrows twitched. “In front of everyone, with so many witnesses, you’re telling me it’s unfair?” Unexpectedly the general manager retorted, “Of course it’s unfair. Dennis Howard is a marshal. He’d been fighting with O’Neal for so long. Although O’Neal won, he might’ve suffered serious injuries. It could have been that his internal injuries did not act up earlier…” By that point, the general manager paused for a moment

before continuing, “You, on the other hand, were at your peak and challenging an injured man. Do you think that’s fair? I don’t think you could’ve killed him if he wasn’t hurt!” Fane was speechless. The person in front of him was rather resourceful, or he would not have been the general manager. His cunning was far beyond the others, seemingly allowing him to spin lies into truth. Neil slapped his own forehead, enlightened. “That’s right, that must be it. This kid must’ve got a stroke of good luck! Like I said, he’s just an ordinary soldier. How could he possibly defeat O’Neal? Even Dennis was no match for O’Neal, much less this guy!” With that, Neil suddenly became the center of attention. He then placed one hand behind him and raised his head slightly, saying with a smile, “Think about what happened earlier. Fane merely landed a single kick on O’Neal’s neck. I don’t think O’Neal, with his physique, would die from just a kick, right?” “Oh yeah, that sounds about right!” Seeing an opportunity to pick on Fane, Ken immediately chimed in. Neil then added, “Furthermore, O’Neal’s body, chest, and stomach were all hit by the great Marshal Dennis prior to the match. Coincidentally, those were the spots that burst open. What does that tell us? It proves that Marshal Dennis’ attack was the one that killed O’Neal!” Hearing that, the general manager gave Neil a big thumbs up. “Young Master Hugo is truly smart. That’s right, I already felt that something was off but couldn’t put my finger on it. I finally understand now!” “Yes, of course. That must be it. It felt weird to me too. How could he die from just a mere kick to the neck? Earlier, Marshal Dennis dished out so many ferocious attacks that landed on O’Neal, yet he managed to withstand it all. It proves that O’Neal’s endurance is really great!” “Fane, on the other hand, is scrawny, nowhere near Marshal Dennis. How can his one kick kill O’Neal?” “That’s why, the one that killed O’Neal should be Marshal Dennis! This Fane dude is just incredibly lucky!” Britney jumped in, feeling ecstatic. With that, even those that thought Fane was stronger than Dennis started their own discussions. They felt that Fane was just extremely lucky. Even if he had not gone into the arena, O’Neal might have

just burst open soon enough. Therefore, to them, it was Dennis that killed O'Neal while Fane was the lucky one. Selena's expression soured as well. She also felt that something was off. Although Fane was strong, it should not have been beyond that of a marshal. He was not a King of War or God of War. How was it possible for him to kill the opponent in just one kick? Whatever it was, she had to stick to the claim that Fane was the one that killed O'Neal. Otherwise, they could not afford to pay that bill of over 10 million bucks! At that, Selena immediately piped up, "It doesn't matter if Fane was lucky or not, he was the one that made the kill. It happened during the second match so we won! The attack was made after the emcee officiated the match! Therefore, this reward is ours and the bill must be waived!" "Honey, you're absolutely right!" Fane smiled in a carefree manner and gave Selena a big thumbs up.

Chapter 256

Selena rolled her eyes at Fane before speaking to the general manager. "We can forgo the three million bucks, but this bill must be waived!" "That's right. Boss, how can you go back on your words?" One of the rich kids spoke up after seeing the charming smile on Selena's face, unable to resist white-knighting her. "That's right. Even if her husband was lucky, he was still the one that killed O'Neal. This is just like kill-stealing in a game. If he's the one that did the last hit, that kill goes to him. Therefore, the glory should go to him as well." Another man joined in as well, "You make quite the profit here everyday. How can you be so stingy?!" "That's right. If your bar lacks integrity, how would we dare spend our money here in the future?" "Moreover, regardless of the fairness of the second match, it was something that you agreed to. Since you've agreed to it, that means that the rules apply!" stated a beautiful woman with her arms folded in front of her chest. The general manager's expression turned gloomy. With a sum over 10 million bucks, it was not really up to him to make the decision. "I don't care. If it wasn't for this kid getting on stage, my idol Dennis would've been

killed by O'Neal. Although Fane had only gone up and got the last hit, that hit was crucial!" After Manager Wayne gave it some thoughts, she walked up to the general manager and whispered, "General manager, I think we should just waive the bill. We need to think about the long game!" The general manager almost had an aneurysm. This manager was just too dumb. Why would she be helping the outsiders? He gave it some thoughts, then finally stated, "This bill is over 10 million bucks. It's not my decision to make. How about this, I'll give my boss a call and tell him about the situation. We'll make a decision then!" With that said, the general manager went off to make the phone call. After a moment, he came back once again. "The boss said that you can have the reward since you won the match. Going by the rules, the bill will also be waived!" Hearing that, Selena was delighted. She held onto Fane's hand, exclaiming, "Honey, this is great! We don't have to pay and even gained three million bucks!" Right at that moment, the general manager continued unexpectedly, "However, our boss has a condition!" Fane's expression darkened. "What other condition? Your boss should think carefully if he's even qualified to negotiate with me!" At that moment, Fane was pissed at how the other party was going back on their words. Moreover, they even hired an American to be the arena champion that led to the death of so many Cathysian men. It was already very generous of Fane to not destroy their entire establishment. "Kid, you're quite the feisty one. Our boss is the younger brother of the Roy family's master! Hehe, for him to speak to you is already favorable treatment from him. How dare you make such insolent statements?!" The general manager then sneered, "Kid, you're lucky that our boss is still on his way over. If he was here and heard those words from you, you'd be dead!" "This guy is too arrogant! He'll eventually learn what regret is!" Britney growled through gritted teeth. Originally, they should have all been leaving after the arena match. However, out of curiosity, those that watched the arena match did not leave the venue. They were all curious to find out what condition the boss of the Lotus Bar and Lounge would request for. It appeared that their

boss did not wish to let Fane waive his meal and give him the three million bucks reward that easily as well. “Sigh, I can’t believe that Master Roy’s brother would be so stingy. It’s only 10 million bucks and yet he’s unwilling to part with it! He won’t go far in life!”

Chapter 257

Fane let out a long breath, appearing relaxed. Hearing his statement, more people felt speechless. ‘This person is just too relaxed. That’s over 10 million bucks, it’s not a small figure. A lot of people can’t even make that much money in their entire life.’ Even if the Roy family were rich, it would not hurt them to save as much as they could. Moreover, that kid could not pay his own bill and yet, he was looking down on the 10 million bucks. They had no idea what was the source of his confidence. Fane took a look at the time and frowned. “Time flies. It’s already almost 11.30pm. I’ll give your boss another 10 minutes. If he doesn’t arrive in 10 minutes, I’m going to leave. I still need to go to bed!” Having said that, Fane stretched his back before continuing, “Otherwise I might be late for work tomorrow. Can you bear that responsibility?” Everyone was dumbfounded. ‘This kid is too good at acting tough, he’s truly talented. How can he spin his dine and dash into something so inconsequential?’ Most importantly, he even claimed that someone from a first-class aristocratic family might not be able to bear the responsibility of him being late to work. “Haha, how much is your salary? What kind of job is it? Do share with us. I’d like to find out if we can bear this responsibility!” “I’m a general manager with lowly wages. My monthly income is only 550 thousand bucks! How much do you make a day? I’ll pay you, alright? Haha!” The general manager burst into a fit of laughter as though he was watching a comedy. “550 thousand bucks a month is quite good!” “Yeah, this general manager’s life is quite lavish!” Some people started talking among themselves. Meanwhile, the general manager’s face was filled with bliss, enjoying the moment. “I’m just a bodyguard!” Fane made a faint smile, then continued, “However, my monthly wage is 20

million bucks. If we break it down, then it should be 666 thousand bucks a day. Since you plan to pay my salary for a day, I'll round it down for you. You can just pay me 600 thousand bucks!" Standing beside him, Selena was dumbfounded. Fane was just too daring. That was just intentionally antagonizing the other party. If they were really pissed off, then things would get troublesome. As expected, the general manager's expression turned uglier by the second. He gritted his teeth. "Kid, you're a bodyguard with a monthly pay of 20 million bucks? I think you're insulting our intelligence! Just who do you think you are? If you say that you're a marshal or a King of War, I might believe you. However, you're nothing. You're just a normal bodyguard. Do you think I'll believe you?" Having said that, he then pointed at the few big guys in black suits and said, "This kid is too arrogant. Go teach him a lesson while the boss is on his way. Take it as an assessment of his strength!" "I've killed O'Neal, yet you're asking these trash to kill me? What are you, stupid?" Fane looked at the few big guys, feeling helpless. These ordinary bouncers were even less of a match for him. "Kid, don't look down on us. We're all retired mercenaries. Do you think we're just average Joes?" "That's right. This kid is too insolent. We'll have to teach him a lesson or he'll remain deluded about his strength!" The big guys in black suits were long annoyed by Fane. They quickly surrounded him. "Everyone, please don't fight. We can talk it out!" The sight of so many big guys scared Selena. "Honey, please move back. Since they're itching for it, I'll have a little stretch!" Fane stated with a relaxed smile.

Chapter 258

However, Selena did not back off. Instead, she pulled Fane back and said in a worried tone, "Please stop fighting. Their boss is from a first-class aristocratic family. If we offend them, it's equivalent to offending a first-class aristocratic family!" Fane forced a smile, then looked at the people behind him before speaking, "Honey, do you think it's possible to not fight now? They're coming at us on their own. Am I supposed to stand here and

let them kill me?" Selena finally realized that it was too late. The general manager gave the order for his lackeys to take Fane out. They could not possibly just become sitting ducks. She thought about it, then backed off a few steps. "You be careful then. Even if you can defeat them, please don't kill them. By then, the situation will be unsalvageable!" Fane nodded. "Relax, they're just working under orders. Of course I won't kill them!" "You two are really funny. Are you trying to perform a skit for us at a time like this?" one of the big guys chuckled. "It seems that they think this conversation will intimidate us? Hehe, do you really think you killed O'Neal with your ability? You're just lucky to have made the last hit when O'Neal is seriously injured!" said another guy. Yet another guy broke into a grin. "I'm guessing that Marshal Dennis must've known some terrifying fist technique. His fist technique's strength lies in its ability to leave behind lingering energy in the opponent's body after an attack. It may not seem like much and the opponent would hardly feel the injury. However, once the energy collects and reaches a certain time, it will explode. That's why O'Neal's body finally burst open!" At that point, he stopped momentarily and then continued, "You, on the other hand, had merely got lucky and kicked O'Neal right as the energy exploded!" "So that's what it was. As expected of a marshal, what a miraculous fist technique!" "That's why. Here I was wondering how a nameless soldier like him could instantly take out O'Neal. So that was the reason. He's gotten really lucky!" "Ah, I get it now!" The other bystanders were coming to their own realization. The scene where Fane killed O'Neal with a mere kick had shocked them greatly, to the point that they thought Fane was a King of War or even God of War. With further consideration, they finally figured out the reason. Seeing that everyone had come to the same conclusion, Fane felt relieved. All the while, he wanted to keep a low profile. He only wanted to stay beside his wife and daughter and pass their days in peace without being disturbed. Otherwise, he would have people looking to gain his favor wherever he went with insincere words. Just the thought of a life like that gave him a headache. If

not for that, his own disciple Lana Zechs would not need to wear a mask or shades before going out. Earlier, in order to save Dennis, he was forced to take action. However, Dennis was a marshal. If he defeated O'Neal, that would expose his own strength and bring about suspicions. In order to hide his identity and keep his terrifying strength a secret, Fane resorted to that move, one that made everyone feel that O'Neal's death was most likely due to Dennis. Of course, he was also lucky that Dennis had fought O'Neal in a dragged out match and landed so many punches on his opponent. His opponent had indeed taken quite some damage, therefore making it a believable story. As for his kick on O'Neal's neck that led to his chest and abdomen bursting apart, it was done intentionally to make others feel that something was off. It would also divert their attention to Dennis. "You're right. That must have been what happened!" Unexpectedly, Fane admitted it with a smile. However, he turned to the big guys and said, "Although I'm no match for Dennis and O'Neal, I'm still capable of dealing with the few of you!" "Haha, we're not as weak as you think!" One guy dashed at them after laughing out loud, sending a punch at Fane. Fane shifted slightly to the side and avoided the opponent's attack. With a backhanded pull, a great surge of force caused the opponent to lose his balance as he immediately fell face-first to the ground. "Motherf*cker, you're quite fast!" Two other guys attacked Fane from two different directions. Bang, bang!

Chapter 259

Fane sent out two consecutive kicks, sending his opponents flying before they crashed hard onto the floor. Bang, bang! He reversed his hands for two more punches, blowing yet another two guys away. However, they quickly climbed back onto their feet. "This guy is weaker than Dennis!" someone exclaimed. "That's right. If he had Dennis' strength, those five wouldn't be able to stand back up. They might have even been coughing up blood by now!" Britney chimed in, "Fane was just lucky earlier. He sure gave me a scare when I thought he had a King of War's strength. Turns out he was just

acting tough!" "Yeah. With this test, his true strength will be exposed anytime soon!" Matt nodded along. "If not for Marshal Dennis spending so much time fighting O'Neal, Fane would've been killed immediately!" "You guys, join in!" The general manager looked at the other bulky guy and said, "Go at him together. I refuse to believe that we'd lose to this guy!" "Ah!" Right then, the other few guys that did not join the fray suddenly rushed at Fane simultaneously. Bang, bang, bang! Unfortunately, they were still no match for Fane and were sent flying one after another. After some time, they were all lying on the ground and some even coughed up blood. "Useless! You can't even defeat him with so many of you!" The general manager was clenching his fists angrily as he bellowed. Fane looked at his behavior, then waved at him. "Since you said they're useless, you should come at me!" Having said that, Fane gave him the middle finger, further taunting him. "Come!" The general manager almost had an aneurysm. He was just a backseat driver as he knew nothing about fighting. Right at that moment, a man with a huge bouncing belly walked in with a few men in black suits, holding a cigar in his hand. "Why are you guys fighting?" The man gave off the aura of a ruler. Although his looks were mediocre, he carried a strong presence. "Boss, this kid was being disrespectful. He was claiming that you weren't qualified to negotiate with him! This is just a blatant slander against our Roy family!" "That's why I told them to rough him up a bit. However, this kid is unexpectedly strong, hence…" the manager reported respectfully after he took a few steps forward and bowed. The man with the cigar took a slow, long puff before stating, "As long as he's strong. I was worried that he wouldn't be strong enough!" Having said that, he turned to Fane. "Kid, I can let all our past conflicts slide. This bill of 10 million bucks can be waived too. As for that three million bucks reward, that's yours as well." At that point, he paused for a moment before breaking into a grin. "However, you killed the expert that I spent a fortune on to hire as the arena champion. That makes it difficult for me to run my business in the future." "So what? Didn't your arena match have us sign a consent form? Could it be that only

the arena champion is allowed to win while the other challengers are supposed to just lose?" Fane mocked with a cold smile. "Hehe, that's not what I meant. I, Keaton Roy, am not someone that cannot afford to lose. Since you're quite strong, I hope that we can work together and have you be the next arena champion!"

Chapter 260

"OMG, he's hiring him as the arena champion!" some people exclaimed as they finally understood what was happening. "It's dangerous to be the arena champion. Encountering an expert would be as good as death. Even if the opponent were gracious enough not to kill, he would most likely be disabled!" said another bystander. "However, the arena champion is a profitable position. The pay is not tallied per month but per match instead. Only when someone registers for the challenge will there be a match!" others chimed in. "What a lucky guy. He got his bill waived, gained three million bucks, and most importantly, he found a job!" Matt was speechless. At first he hoped for Fane to take the challenge and get killed by O'Neal just so that he could add to Selena's suffering. He had not expected this to be the outcome! "I'm sorry but I'm not interested!" "Moreover, I advise you to stop these activities, otherwise...your bar might be closed down!" Fane reminded him with a shrug. "Haha, brother, you really know how to joke. This is the territory of a first-class aristocratic family. An ordinary person wouldn't have the authority to close this place down!" Keaton burst out laughing, then narrowed his eyes. "I don't like to beat around the bush. I'll ask you one last time. Will you be the arena champion!?" "The answer is the same. Not interested!" Fane shrugged once more, firm with his decision. "You're choosing the less favorable option, eh?" With a scornful smile, Keaton waved his hand. "Rocky, give him a good beating. Moreover, he must pay every single cent for tonight's bill. Otherwise, don't let him leave!" "Yes boss!" Rocky was a one-eyed man. He kneaded his fists before stepping forward. "Looks like you're a lot stronger than these guys!" Fane

glanced at those big guys in suits lying on the floor. He could tell that Rocky was not a simple person. From the way he walked, he noticed something was different. Of course, a person like this was inconsequential to Fane. “Good observation!” Rocky smirked. “In that case, are you scared?” “Not at all. I’ve never been scared during my five years on the battlefield, much less cause of you!” Fane forced a smile. “You’re rather confident!” Rocky replied as he prepared to act. Right then, a middle-aged woman with a little boy made her way in through the crowd. She looked at the situation and immediately shouted, “Stop!” Rocky was surprised and immediately turned around, greeting her loudly, “Mrs. Roy!” “Honey, what’s wrong?” Keaton frowned immediately with a confused look on his face. Taking a look, Selena’s heart was overjoyed. She did not expect this woman to be Mrs. Roy. Fane had just saved her son at the zoo in the morning. No wonder she was able to offer 50 million bucks as a reward just like that. It turned out that she was from a first-class aristocratic family.

Chapter 261

“Benefactor, why are you here? I’ve really misunderstood your intentions at the zoo this morning. I thought you weren’t a doctor and therefore, didn’t know how to treat my son. Surprisingly, my son’s leg is all better now as he’s able to run and jump!” Mrs. Roy brought her son to Fane, then urged her son, “Go say thank you to this uncle. If not for him, you’d be dead!” “Thank you uncle, you’re so amazing! I want to be as strong as you are in the future!” “Thank you for chasing the tigers away or I’d be dead!” Little Jake looked at Fane, his eyes filled with admiration and respect. “What?!” Keaton took a deep breath, then asked anxiously, “Honey, i-i-is he the benefactor who held down two Siberian tigers with each of his hands that you told me about?” Keaton was very anxious, to the point where his voice was trembling. “That’s right. I didn’t think he’d be here. What’s happening?” Mrs. Roy asked suspiciously after looking at the people lying about on the floor. “A misunderstanding, it’s all a misunderstanding!”

Keaton then carefully introduced them to his wife before saying apologetically, “I didn’t expect that he would be the benefactor I’d been looking for all this while!” “It can’t be. He’s actually the man that defeated the Siberian tigers, my idol?!” Manager Wayne’s eyes were twinkling as she almost jumped out of her seat. She had finally met her idol. Now there was only that one idol remaining, the one that killed over 200 men from the Dragon God clan. “Is this for real? I’ve heard this afternoon that someone saved a kid that fell into the tiger viewing zone at the zoo. The situation was terrifying. I didn’t expect that kid to be the son of this establishment's boss!” “Moreover, the person that saved his son was actually Fane!” Britney was quite badly shaken. To hold a tiger down with one hand, even if his strength was lesser than Dennis, was not something an ordinary person was capable of. It would seem that Fane, who was a soldier on the battlefield for five years, had some ability that was sufficient enough to be considered an expert. “Y-y-you almost had Rocky kill our benefactor! If not for him, our son would’ve been devoured by the tigers!” Mrs. Roy was furious, pulling at Keaton’s ears. “Ouch, it hurts. Honey, please, lighten your grip. We’re outside now. Didn’t you promise to not embarrass me in public? There are so many people watching now!” Keaton’s face turned red from the pain, dropping his cigar on the floor as he begged for mercy. Upon witnessing the scene, everyone was dumbfounded. They did not expect him to be henpecked. Fane and Selena exchanged looks, then showed an odd expression on their faces. Selena felt the burden in her heart lighten. It seemed that she would not have to worry about being held here tonight. “What are you waiting for? Go apologize to our benefactor. Here you are trying to have him be your arena champion. How can you be this dumb?” Mrs. Roy let go of Keaton’s ears then placed her hands on her hips, assuming an intimidating pose. It was apparent that this woman was not someone a normal person could match when she threw a tantrum. Keaton finally walked awkwardly toward Fane and bowed respectfully. “I’m sorry. All that was a misunderstanding. I really didn’t know that you were the

benefactor I'd been looking for to express my gratitude! If not for you taking action, my son would've been a goner. He's my only child!" Having said that, he raised his head and looked directly at Fane. "Your bill for today will be waived. That three million bucks reward is too little. To show my gratitude, I'll pay you 100 million bucks!" "What! 100 million bucks!?" Rosa, Hugh, and the others all gasped. 100 million bucks. That was 100 million bucks! Fane had just hit the jackpot. Moreover, Fane and Selena could finally live a comfortable life. "So much money!" Matt's expression darkened as he was dumbstruck. That was a gift from the heavens. If he had 100 million bucks, he would not have to lower himself to be a boy toy and marry a woman like Britney. "Hehe, your wife offered me 50 million bucks this morning and I rejected it. I didn't expect that by nightfall, the price would actually go up!" Fane made a pained smile, then stated, "I'm sorry, I don't want the money! I only want the three million bucks cash reward!"

Chapter 262

"Oh my god, it's 100 million bucks! That's 100 million bucks! He's actually rejecting it for the three million bucks? Is he stupid?" Britney shouted. She was shocked to her core. "Yeah. Damn it, with 100 million bucks, you're set for life. Why did he reject it? If it were me, I'd definitely agree to it without hesitation!" Matt also exclaimed in astonishment, wondering if he was in a dream. "Who said that being a soldier is useless? This guy is strong and good at fighting. He can hold two Siberian tigers with his bare hands. Now that his lucky moment came and he managed to save the son of Master Roy's brother, he's being granted a great fortune in one go!" "However, why is he refusing to take it?" Dylan also looked confused. "Aren't they poor? They're so poor that they can't even afford to pay the 10 million bucks bill, yet now he's refusing 100 million bucks? Nevertheless, if you say they don't like money, then why take the three million bucks?" Hearing Dylan's statement, Rachel and the others were similarly confused. Almost everyone was dumbstruck, Ken and Neil included. "Selena, is your husband stupid?

He’s choosing three million bucks over 100 million bucks?” Ken made a scornful smile before quickly adding, “That house of yours is so dilapidated. The last time we almost marked it as unfit for habitation. Although the experts later marked it as safe, I don’t think it’ll last much longer. With 100 million bucks, you can purchase a luxurious house. Why are you making this choice?” “Selena, is your husband a moron? Is his brain functioning properly? Why would he make such a decision?!” Neil chimed in as well. “You’re the moron!” Selena shot him a foul look. “Although I want 100 million bucks as well, I’ll respect my husband’s choice! He’s right. When he saved the boy, he had not thought of a reward! His mind was on saving the boy! That was his original intention!” Hearing that, Fane immediately burst out laughing. He took a few steps forward and held onto Selena’s hand, saying, “It’s still my honey that knows me best. That’s exactly my intention. When I saved the kid, it was not for the money. That’s why I don’t want this money. This is not a transaction!” At that, Fane paused for a moment before continuing, “However, I won this three million bucks from the arena match. By the rules set, it’s mine. Although it’s not much, I'm not going to say no to it!” Selena’s face turned scarlet. This person had actually held her hands on his own accord in front of so many people. Despite being husband and wife, she still felt as though she had butterflies in her stomach, unable to remain calm. “Yes, of course. Cash, right? Go get it ready!” Keaton immediately walked up and gave the general manager a kick on his rump. “You stupid pig. What’s wrong with your eyes? You couldn’t even recognize my benefactor?” The general manager turned around to look at Keaton, feeling wronged. How would he have known such a thing? He had only heard about it that night itself that someone saved a child at the zoo by holding down the Siberian tigers with his hand. At that time, he was even joking about which hero had subdued the tigers. After all, Wu Song in Water Margin could only handle one tiger, yet he managed two. Who knew that the child would be his boss’ son? Moreover the hero was actually the guy that took part in the arena match. The general manager quickly carried two

suitcases of cash over, totaling to three million bucks, and placed them in front of Fane. “Brother, three hundred million bucks is really too little. You saved my one and only son. Why don’t you take a little more?” “If you only take three million bucks, my son’s life would seem too cheap. I’ll feel really bad about it!” Keaton made a pained smile, trying once more to persuade Fane. “It’s not just three million bucks. There’s also the waived bill, isn’t there?” Fane smiled as he lifted the two suitcases of money and got ready to leave. However, he stopped after giving it some thought. “If you’re really going to feel bad about it, then stop this kind of underground boxing match. I’m telling you the truth. If you keep this up, I can have your bar closed!” Keaton’s expression darkened and lowered his head in silence for a moment before speaking, “Forget it, I’ll stop running this place. Bloody h*ll, I’ll take it as building good karma for my son. Money still needs to be made but it shouldn’t be with violence!” “It’s good that you know!” Fane stated coldly, then led Selena down from the stage. Quite a number of people could not resist applauding him. Although Fane’s killing of O’Neal was due to luck, if not for his last hit, O’Neal might not have died.

Chapter 263

Furthermore, Fane was okay with refusing 100 million bucks. His spirit was absolutely admirable. “This guy is just doing it for the cheers!” “Hmph, what’s all this virtue signaling!” “Look at how poor he is!” Britney gritted her teeth, feeling pissed. At first she thought that Fane would be killed by O’Neal, then later she also hoped for people from the Roy family to kill him. She did not expect such a turn of events. “This guy is really lucky!” Ken and Neil exchanged looks, both feeling helpless. Very soon, they joined the crowd and left the area. Fane looked at the beautiful waitress and gave her a wave. He then took out 50 thousand bucks and passed it to her. “This is your tip, just as promised!” “T-t-that much?! Wasn’t it 10 thousand bucks?” The beautiful waitress held the money in her hand, suspecting that this might be an illusion. It was too much. That was the first time she had such a big

tip. “Hehe, what I said earlier was no less than 10 thousand bucks! I never said that it was only going to be 10 thousand bucks!” Fane chuckled, then said, “You’re a nice person. You deserve this!” “T-t-thank you sir!” The waitress nodded, extremely grateful. She had a feeling that the man before her was different from others. It was as though money was just a series of figures in his eyes, something insignificant. When Britney, Dylan, and others saw that scene, they were all flabbergasted. Fane was really generous. Everyone quickly went downstairs to the first floor. Just as they were about to leave the building, they saw that two guards were just about to push two women out. “Go away. What kind of place do you think this is? This is a bar, somewhere to eat, drink, and look for girls. What business do you have here?” grunted one of the guards as he shoved the other party forcefully. “Please, I beg of you. Let us in to try our luck. There are so many rich folks inside. We’re just trying to ask for some small donations to build a school for the kids in the mountains!” asked the woman with a pleading look. The two women wore very simple clothes. Their lips were chapped and their clothes were patched up. In their hands was a promotional flyer. Of course, they also had some other documents with them. “Big brother, please be charitable. Let us go in and try. The elementary school in our area is too run down and collapsed during a thunderstorm some time ago. We’re running out of options. That’s why we’re going around collecting donations. Otherwise, the kids won’t have a place to study!” “That’s right. Dear brother, we’re really not conmen. Here’s my teaching permit and this is our principal!” clarified a younger woman. “You’re so poorly dressed. If you go in, our business will be affected!” mocked the two guards by the door. “Honey!” Upon witnessing the scene, Selena looked to the suitcase in her hand. “I don’t think they’re conmen. It should be real!” “Why don’t we make a donation?” Selena made a kind smile, unable to let this pass. “No way. You’re already so poor and yet, you’re still donating? Hehe, what a joke!” Britney laughed mockingly.

Chapter 264

“Poor? Hehe, could I afford two Porsches if I’m poor?” Fane snickered. He ignored Britney, then waved at the two women. “Come here for a moment!” “He’s even claiming to have two Porsches. I must be dreaming!” Britney was even more speechless. Was that guy some boasting champion? How could he be so shameless to insist he had two Porsches? The two women looked confused, but they approached him regardless. “Sir, is there something wrong?” asked the principal fearfully. “Show me your documents!” Fane asked after showing them a smile. “Oh!” Both of them finally realized what was going on and took out their documents, passing them to Fane. It came along with some pictures of the school. “Sir, would you like to make a donation? If it wouldn’t be a burden, I hope that you can extend a helping hand, even one or 10 bucks would do!” The female principal appeared to be a little shy. However, for the school’s sake and their children, she bit her lip and spoke up. “Sir, we’re really not conmen. If you don’t believe us, you can drive over and have a look. Our school is at…” The other female teacher quickly provided Fane with the school’s address. “That area is quite poor indeed!” Selena sighed. “Take it. All of it!” Without much hesitation, Fane passed both the suitcases to the pair. “Build a better school for the children. As for the remainders, you can use it to improve their meals or whatnot!” “This…” The principal and female teacher were both stunned. Selena was similarly shocked. At first, she only wanted to help them out a little. She did not expect him to be that generous and give them all their money. There was 2.95 million bucks left inside! However, remembering that it was to build a school for children, her heart relented. “Take it. It’s quite some money inside. You don’t need to go around collecting donations anymore. Tomorrow, return earlier and rebuild the school!” “T-t-this is filled with money?” The female teacher was skeptical. She then quickly opened up one of the suitcases to have a look and immediately gasped. Inside, the suitcases were packed with hundred bucks

notes. “Thank you. Thank you both!” “I-I-I will offer our sincerest gratitude in the name of the children of our area. For the children from our school, let me prostrate myself to you!” The female principal was at a loss for words, overwhelmed by gratitude. With tears in her eyes, she fell to her knees. The other female teacher followed suit after seeing that, prostrating herself toward Fane and Selena. “Thank you. Thank you so much!” “Please get up. You should go back soon. It’s already so late in the night and you’re still running around for the children. It’s not safe. You should be more careful!” Selena smiled, feeling rather good after doing a good deed. “We have no other choice. Without the school building, the children can only learn in the field. It’s fine if the weather is sunny but we can’t do it in the rain!” “That’s why we’ve tried our best to collect money, lowering ourselves to begging from others. It’s so we can quickly collect enough to rebuild the school building!” The female principal let out a sigh, then looked at Fane and Selena. “I really don’t know how to thank you!” “Hehe, it’s nothing. Money is something I have plenty of. I’m not bothered with this small amount!” Fane chuckled and waved it off like it was nothing.

Chapter 265

Selena was speechless. Fane was very kindhearted, but that boastful habit of his just could not be fixed. However, right at that moment, two red colored Porsches zoomed over at high speed with its blinding lights and pulled over in front of everyone. “Sister, brother-in-law, hehe, your cars are really nice to drive! I feel that I’ve been getting so much attention when I drive on the street!” Ben came down from the car and tossed the key to Fane. Xena had also gotten out of her car and threw the other key to Selena. “It’s so awesome. This is my first time driving a sports car. The feeling is really awesome!” At that point, she added regretfully, “Too bad it’s not ours. Sigh, if only I can get one for myself!” “You’re not going back?” Seeing that they handed both the keys over, Selena frowned. “Hehe, I’ve made plans with my friends to play games at the internet cafe later. They’re there waiting for

us. We've gotten our fill of fun today driving your cars all night, so we're sending them back to you now." Ben snickered, then placed an arm over Xena's shoulder and quickly took his leave. "Honey, it seems we'll have to drive one each!" Fane forced a smile, then got into one of the cars. Selena shrugged, then got into the other as they quickly drove away. "It seems they really don't lack money!" "Yeah. How can the gap between the rich and poor be this big!" The female principal and female teacher exchanged looks, then swallowed hard. The money in the suitcases should be around three million bucks, yet the other party donated it to them for building the elementary school just like that. Such people deserved to be wealthy! "T-t-they actually own two Porsches! They look brand new!" Dylan was dumbstruck for quite a while before finally exclaiming, "It seems that they're really rich!" "Impossible. A bodyguard with 20 million bucks monthly pay? Are the people from the Drake family stupid?" "Moreover, that kid just got discharged from the military recently. It's not even been a month. Did they pay his salary in advance?" Britney was all the more confused, feeling dissatisfied. "Hehe, how funny!" Hugh finally looked at Britney, Matt, Rachel, and others before saying, "Look at all of you, thinking you're rich because you're driving a BMW or Audi. You look down on them when you're driving a car that's worth 300 to 400 thousand bucks. How do you feel now? Don't you feel embarrassed?" "Sigh!" Rosa breathed out another sigh. No matter what they said, she was the poorest one. At first, she was already saddened by her monthly pay barely going over 10 thousand bucks. After hearing Selena's situation, she even felt sympathy for her. Who would have thought… Back at her house, Rosa laughed humorlessly. All of a sudden, she recalled something and immediately took out the name card Selena passed to her. After a careful read, she gasped. "Oh my god, Selena is actually the purchasing manager of the Drake Dynasty Real Estate's purchasing department. The assistant manager position that Trevor said he's interviewing for tomorrow is actually to be Selena's assistant!" "And Trevor mentioned that the female manager's

monthly salary was a hundred thousand. Isn't that Selena? Selena asked me to be her assistant. Does that mean…" After analyzing it carefully, Rosa was shocked to her core. That night, there were plenty of times where Trevor mocked Selena. He even boasted about the fact that he had his girlfriend pull strings behind the scene. It would seem that Trevor would not be getting the assistant position on the following day! "According to what Trevor said, this assistant's pay should be around 20 to 30 thousand bucks a month!" At the thought of the high salary, Rosa jumped up excitedly and kissed the name card with all her might. It seemed like her chance for a good job had arrived. "Selena, you're just too awesome. A person like Trevor deserves his fate!"

Chapter 266

"Honey, to be honest, the 100 million bucks is very tempting. After all, you would have had enough money for grandfather's birthday if we took it. But come to think of it, we can't take the money." They went back home and had their bath. Selena was lying sideways on the bed while looking at Fane lying on the ground as she smiled and said, "Honey, I realize both of us might be meant for each other. Sometimes, we just seem to have the same thoughts!" "If I saved the boy for the money, I would've taken it. However, the money wasn't on my mind when I was saving him, so I wasn't going to take it!" Fane smiled and looked at Selena who was dressed in sexy sleepwear. Then, he said, "Honey, Kylie seems to be fast asleep. Can I kiss you?" Selena instantly rolled her eyes at Fane, "In your dreams. But I have a question for you. What are you going to do with the stolen 3.8 million? Don't forget that mom set a time limit for you!" Worried, she spoke again after she was done talking. "Also, we agreed to give mom only 10 million worth of betrothal gifts. You're the one who allowed her to take advantage of you and now she's asking for 20 million. On top of that, you have to compensate Ivan 10 million bucks and gifts worth a few ten million bucks. You have to prepare 40 million bucks in total on grandfather's birthday. How are you going to

find that much money?" "Don't worry, honey! I have my own ways!" Fane said, unconcerned. He finished talking and after thinking for a few moments, he continued, "By the way, didn't you think Xena was suspicious? What if we put on a show with your mum? What do you think?" "My mum? Will she work together with us? What if she doesn't want to work with us?" Selena was shocked. She wondered what Fane was plotting now. "Haha, don't worry. If she doesn't want to put on a show with us, I'll tell her we're never going to get the money back! If she works with us, we'll get the money back very soon. What do you think? Anyways, knowing her personality, I think she'll agree to work with us!" Fane laughed as he briefed Selena on the details. The next morning, Fane and Selena drove to work respectively. Selena arrived at the office. Work had just started and soon after, Sonia knocked on the door and came in. She was holding two resumes in her hand. She walked up to Selena and handed them over to her. "Manager Taylor, these two are the selected applicants whom I picked out from a group of outstanding people through interviews. You can make your final decision between these two! One of them is a male, while the other is a female!" She was done talking but seeing how Selena kept silent, she took another look at the resume and said," Both of them are outstanding, but I would suggest you choose the male candidate. After all, males would be much more helpful if we need someone to help us drink during business meetings where alcohol is present. Moreover, he just came back from overseas. His name is Trevor Turner and he's very good in all aspects!" Selena nodded her head, "He just came back from overseas? Not bad indeed. Is he here now?" Sonia nodded her head excitedly when she heard what Selena said, "He's here, he's here. He's right outside the door. Should I ask him to come in?" "What about the other one? Although she's lacking in many aspects compared to the guy based on her resume, I would like to meet her in person before I make my decision!" Selena smiled at Sonia and said. Sonia's expression changed drastically after hearing Selena say that. Fortunately, she had already prepared a backup plan. She frowned and said, "Manager, I'm not quite sure

what happened to that lady. I told her to come for the interview at 9am but she did not show up until now. I called her and she said that she fell sick, so she couldn't come in." Selena sneered secretly. She might have believed it if she had not been made unhappy after going to that party last night. "Really? I'll give her a call then!" Selena grabbed her phone. "Ah..." Sonia was shocked. The phone number was a fake number she had made up. She was not sure if Selena’s call would go through. Moreover, the resume was fake as well. The person did not exist. She did not expect Selena to be interested in that person's resume.

Chapter 267

"What's wrong? You can't get through the phone?" Selena's face darkened as she questioned Sonia. Sonia's heart jolted as she smiled awkwardly, "No, no, you can reach her by phone!" Sonia pretended to take out her phone and dialed the number. In fact, she was actually calling Rosa, "Hello, are you here yet? You have an interview today, remember?" Sonia felt ashamed. She did not expect Selena’s call to actually get through to the fake number she had made up. However, it was fine even if she could. The person on the other end of the call might assume that it was a fraud call. He or she might just hang up or tell Selena off. "You're right at the company’s door? Alright, you can just come straight in later!" Selena hung up after saying just that one sentence. "She's right at the door and is coming in now. Why did you say she was sick and couldn’t attend the interview?" "That's impossible!" Sonia was startled but quickly snapped back to her senses. It might have been a coincidence. The owner of the number might have also been looking for a job and was supposed to attend an interview today. Therefore, it must have been a coincidence. "Why is it impossible?" Selena thought it was funny seeing Sonia's surprised face. "No… Nothing. It’s possible because there’s this girl named Avril that’s been fooling around with me!" Sonia laughed awkwardly before speaking to Selena again, "Manager, people like her are not reliable. You cannot hire her!" "I know what to do!" Selena

smiled. "That's great!" Sonia nodded her head but was sneering in her heart. She secretly thought that no matter how long Selena waited, Avril would never appear because she did not exist! "I'll take a look at the guy who just came back from overseas first!" Selena sat on her office chair. She leaned back, looking extremely relaxed. "Alright!" Sonia was excited when she listened to what Selena had to say. She immediately exited the room. Not long after, the office door opened and Trevor entered the room. He closed the door and smiled as he said, "Hello manager..." Trevor reached out his hand to greet the manager in front of him as he talked. However, he froze on the spot before he could finish his words. After a few moments, he voiced his surprise, "Selena, why… Why are you here? What are you doing here? Are you a staff member? Where is the manager?" Selena shrugged. "This is the manager's office and I'm sitting here. What do you think I'm doing here?" "You're the manager? No way!" Trevor was in disbelief. "You make one million a month and are the one they called the beautiful manager?" "Haha, are you surprised?" Selena laughed. "Someone was boasting about himself yesterday, determined that he would definitely get this job. Do you still think you can get the job now?"

Chapter 268

Trevor's expression darkened instantly. He desperately wanted to dig a hole and jump into it. He boasted in front of everyone last night. He even told everybody, including the details of his tactic to get the role. That was not the main point. What mattered most was he told everybody that the manager got the job through dishonest means in front of Selena. He said that the manager must be involved in some secret affair with the young master of Drake's family. That was how she got the job and was paid well. He never expected Selena to be the one whom he had been talking about. However, Trevor was thick-skinned. He laughed and said, "Selena, I was drunk talking yesterday. I hope you don't mind what happened. We were old classmates. I believe I will be the best candidate to help you out." Right at that moment,

a knock on the door sounded across the room. "Come in!" Selena shouted at the door. Soon after, Sonia came in through the door, "Manager, there's a person named Rosa outside and she insisted that you called her here for an interview. It's impossible, right? Our interviewee's name is supposed to be Avril, right? Is she in the wrong department?" "Let her in!" Selena smiled after she said. Soon after, Sonia walked out with a confused face and brought Rosa into the room. "Manager, what's happening right now?" Looking at Trevor who was silent while wearing a gloomy face, she could sense that something was wrong. She could not help but ask softly. "You'd better close the door first. It's better if the other colleagues don't hear us! Let's save your face!" Selena said coldly. Sonia knew that something was wrong, but still, she walked over and closed the door. "Rosa, what are you doing here? Are you here for the interview?" Trevor's expression could not have been grimmer. The position for the manager assistant was only open for one person. If Rosa was here for the interview, does that mean that his job would be scuppered? Rosa smiled awkwardly, "Trevor, don't you remember Selena giving me her name card yesterday? She said that I'm a capable person and asked me to call her if I want to change my job. I didn't pay attention at that time. It was only when I got back home that I realized Selena is the procurement manager in this company. So I'm here for the interview now!" "You know each other?" Sonia's lips twitched violently. The current situation was worse than she imagined. She could not believe Selena was the one who called the lady over for the interview. Does that mean that the chances of her boyfriend, Trevor, to get the job were slim? "Not only we know each other; three of us were classmates in university!" Selena smiled coldly and said, "I only found out that you are Trevor's girlfriend yesterday. Trevor praised you a lot. He told me how capable you are, and told me how you backstabbed me by telling others I had an affair with the young master of the Drake family. Haha, I, Selena, handle things open and aboveboard. I don't play tricks, but who would've thought..." Sonia was infuriated when she heard Selena's words. She regretted very much

having said such things about Selena. Things would not turn out this way if she attended the dinner yesterday. She did not follow Trevor to the dinner because her best friend asked her out to go shopping. She did not expect Trevor and Selena were university mates. Moreover, Trevor that bastard spilled everything to Selena. Selena must despise her a lot now. "By the way, Trevor, I remember you saying that Avril's resume is made up, right? Also, you mentioned that the one who made up the resume is your girlfriend, our supervisor here! Am I right?" Seeing Trevor kept silent, Selena questioned him.

Chapter 269

Trevor gritted his teeth and lifted his head, "Selena, don't be too excited. I'm just unlucky this time to fall in your hands. It's just a position for an assistant. I refuse to do it now! I don't believe I can't find a better job with my abilities!" "Hah, your abilities? How disappointing. You only knew how to spend your time on games when you lived overseas. Then, you come back and boasted to everyone, telling everybody you're from overseas. Is that what you call your ability?" Once again, Selena laughed. "Trevor, I don't mean to blame you, but you really went overboard last night. If I was Selena, I wouldn't dare to hire you!" Rosa sighed. People like him who loved to play dirty tricks would backstab you at any time. "Haha, who are you to make fun of me?" Trevor smiled coldly instead. His eyes looked evil as he said coldly, "I'm a man who will take responsibility for what I did. You don't allow me to work here? I'll leave then. I might even find a better job!" He turned his head to look at Selena after he finished his words. Then, he scoffed, "Selena, stop acting like you're all pure. Do you think I believe a manager like you can get a million bucks per month? The previous manager only got over a few hundred thousand bucks. How come you can get a million bucks? What is done by night appears by day." "How can you make so much without hooking up with the young master? I don't believe it!" Trevor knew that everything was over and he would not get the job. So, he

simply flipped out. "Selena Taylor, you're too much. How dare you humiliate my boyfriend? You're so petty!" Sonia said angrily. "Tsk tsk, how is it my fault now? You eliminated everybody and allowed your boyfriend to come for a second interview without having to go through the first one. Moreover, you made up a fake resume. You created a fake competitor so he had no rivals. I didn't even blame you but now you're trying to accuse me?" Selena did not back down. She already let her off for what happened previously. She did not expect Sonia would use such means again. What mattered most was that she was the supervisor. One would never know what else she would do if Selena let her off the hook again. "You're blaming me? Haha, yes, I was the one who did everything. So, what are you going to do?" Fueled by anger, Sonia crossed her arms in front of her chest, "My man is a capable guy. I'm being nice to you by introducing him to help you out with work but look at what you're doing, you're mistaking a good man for a bad one!" "Forget it, Sonia. I'll leave. It's not like I can't find another job!" Trevor clenched his fist tightly and glared at Selena. Then, he opened the door, stomped out of the room, and slammed the door. "Selena, you're way too much! Don't you know how to do something out of consideration for someone else? I've been working here for so many years. You're already lucky enough to become the manager. I recommended my boyfriend but surprisingly, you didn't even think of helping me!" Sonia gritted her teeth. Her eyes were burning with fire. "You call that recommending? Recommending through such means?" Selena stunned. Then, she said, "Go out and do your work properly. You're lucky I didn't fire you!" "Fire me? Do you even have the right to do that?" Sonia was infuriated, "I am the supervisor. You have to get approval from the human resources department to fire me. You don't have the right to do so. Hmph! I'll complain to my uncle about how you humiliate me today! He should at least transfer you to another department!" Sonia stomped out of the room angrily without another word. "Close the door gently. Don't ruin the door, otherwise, you have to pay for it!" Selena reminded her.

Chapter 270

"We're screwed, Selena. I heard Trevor said that his girlfriend is a distant relative of the Drake family. Could...it be the uncle that she mentioned earlier? If it is really him, doesn't that mean we're in deep trouble? We don't even know what nonsense she will tell him!" Rosa started to grow concerned after Sonia left. “She’s really infuriated this time. It seems like she's going to the Drake family. What if she talks bad about you in front of them? Will that put you in an unfavorable situation?" Selena's face darkened as she heard what Rosa said. She was worried as well. After all, they were relatives, and she could not guarantee what nonsense Sonia would tell the Drake family. Moreover, she only started working a few days ago; would they believe Sonia or her, who was merely an outsider? Rosa's concern heightened after seeing Selena's frown, "We're really doomed. Will they fire you if she really blabbers nonsense in front of them? If you're fired, that woman will surely come after me next!" However, soon after, Selena let out a bitter laugh, "I believe if James is capable of becoming the richest man in the Middle Province, he must be a man who can differentiate between what's right and wrong. Moreover, Miss Drake was the one who employed me. I'm sure we'll be fine!" She looked at Rosa at the side after she was done talking. Then, she said, "It's up to you. If you're afraid that you will be fired because of me once you start working, you can choose to not work with me. You can go back to your current company. After all, you’re getting paid quite well in your current company!" Rosa bit her red lip and kept silent for a few moments then, she made up her mind. "I don't care anymore. I will follow you. I can look for another job if I lose this job. I don't want to stay in that company anymore!" Selena was gratified. She nodded her head in satisfaction, "Alright, here is some information about our company; you can take a look first! I'll bring you to your table later and we'll proceed with the employment procedures!" "Hey, Selena, how much is my salary then? I'd better make this clear now!" Rosa smiled as she asked. “23 thousand. You

will become our formal staff after one month and your salary will be increased to 30 thousand. Our company will provide you with social insurance and housing fund!" "You will be working five days a week with two rest days. Working hours will be eight hours per day except for Friday. You are only required to work half day, which is four hours on Fridays. You only have to work until the afternoon!" Selena smiled as she explained the benefits to Rosa. "Oh my god, the benefit provided by the company is amazing. This is totally my dream job. This is what I always thought a job should be like!" "I had to always work overtime in my previous company. I even had to bear others' workload. I was so exhausted!" Rosa was so excited that she rushed forward and hugged Selena, "Selena, thank you so much. Thank you!" Rosa seemed to be very happy but Selena smiled bitterly, "Aren't you worried that both of us would get kicked out if Sonia succeeded in complaining about us?" "I'm not afraid. I'm going all out now! This is a chance to change my fate!" Rosa laughed as she said. Selena did not know whether to laugh or cry, "Look at you, you say this is a chance to change your fate? You'd better look for a boyfriend soon; who knows maybe that might be a chance to change your fate? Find a guy who is handsome, rich, and tall!" "This is not an urgent matter. I want to find a guy whom I really like! Women must first learn to be independent!" Rosa said excitedly. At that moment, Fane was accompanying Miss Drake, who was relaxing as she bathed under the sun in the yard. "He's surely living a comfortable life!" Feeling envious, a few bodyguards from the Drake family spoke. "I know right. This guy is not under the control of the commander and the assistant commander. He can get off work anytime he wants and all he needs to do is to inform us. Moreover, the master said that he can follow Miss Drake around if he's free. He said he can become Miss Drake's personal bodyguard!" Harvey, the assistant commander, could not help but smile bitterly. He would not even dare to dream of having such a nice job. Following Miss Drake around, going shopping with her, and helping her carry her stuff; what a laid back life. What mattered most was that Miss

Drake was a known beauty. Even if there was nothing between them, he gets to follow her around and it would be visually pleasing to see such a beautiful lady every day. "Hey, why do you always look so solemn and cold?"

Chapter 271

Tanya looked at the handsome yet persistent man. She could not help but laugh and asked, “Your wife was the beauty queen of the Middle Province who was approved by all men back then. Come on, can you share with me how you trick this pretty lady into liking you? I only heard bits and pieces of your story. I don’t know much about you!” “There’s nothing much to talk about!” Fane did not bother to entertain her. He set aside, smoking silently. Tanya could not help but to roll her eyes toward Fane, “Such a lame person. In that case, can you tell me stories about the battlefield? Weren’t you on the battlefield for five years? Do you have any scars on your body?” “Yes!” Fane smiled bitterly, “However, they’re all healed now. I don’t have any scars left, so, you can’t see them! But it doesn’t matter; I only wanted to survive and grow stronger back then. In the end, I did it!” “You’re really good. Even Harley is no match for you.” Tanya laughed and said, “Too bad our head commander just went back to her hometown, otherwise, she would’ve challenged you if she knew about you!” “Are you sure?” Fane frowned. “Hehe, it’s just a friendly competition! This lady loves exchanging skills with others. If she found out that an expert is here, she would for sure challenge you to a fight. Moreover, your pay is way much higher than hers; it is only normal for her to be interested in you!” Tanya chortled. Right at that moment, Sonia walked in through the gate fumingly. “Hey, what is she doing here? Isn’t she supposed to be at work?” Tanya frowned as she saw her. Seeing Sonia heading straight to the door of James’ villa, Tanya’s curiosity grew, “Let’s go and see what’s happening. It seems like Miss Sonia is a bit angry. I wonder who made her so angry!” Fane frowned when he heard that. Sonia picked on Selena last time. Could it be related to his wife again? Soon after, they followed her. As soon as they reached the door, Fane

could hear Sonia grumbling inside. He grabbed Tanya’s arm who was about to push open the door and pulled her back. Tanya blushed when Fane grabbed her. All her life, no man would dare to pull her hand like what he just did. Moreover, he was merely a bodyguard. What a bold guy. She looked at Fane who had already loosened his grip. Fane was listening to what was happening inside. It seemed like he did not care about pulling her hand at all. “Uncle, this new procurement manager is terrible! She ticks me off and she’s very arrogant!” “I worked my butt off to find her a suitable assistant, but she was being ungrateful and chased that person away. She even scolded me, saying that I’m flattering myself!” “Guess what that lady did? She called her university mate over to interview. She’s abusing her power!” Sonia started to complain as soon as she saw James. “Haha, she’s playing the victim now!” Fane sneered. He heard clearly every word that came out of Trevor’s mouth yesterday. However, he did not expect Sonia to be so unreasonable. She even came here just to complain. Fortunately, he was there listening to their conversation. Otherwise, she might slander his wife even more.

Chapter 272

Looking at Fane's slightly angered face, Tanya who was standing at the side could not help but laughed. Who would've known that this guy loved his wife so much? Moreover, looking at him from the side, his cold face appeared very handsome and domineering. Tanya was entranced for a moment. "No way. Selena Taylor is the eldest miss of the Taylor family. She did quite well back then when she was managing the Taylor family's business!" "I believe in her; she's not a nepotist! Maybe her friend is really a capable person! There must be some misunderstanding between you two!" James smiled calmly and said, "Sonia, you've been working for the Drake family for years; I know you might feel unhappy with the sudden presence of a manager. However, we decided to do this after much deliberation. You just have to cooperate with manager Taylor, alright?" "Uncle, that's not true!

I'm not such a petty person!" "It's manager Taylor; she only wants to hire her friend... Moreover, she even said she wanted to fire me. She really ticks me off!" Sonia spoke again. "Haha, a person like you should be fired!" Right at that moment, the door opened. Fane was the first to enter the house. Tanya felt ashamed. Which part of that guy's imposing manner made him look like a bodyguard? She, the eldest miss, who was trailing behind Fane's back, looked more like a bodyguard instead. However, whenever she remembered how her father asked her to befriend Fane because he might be a King of War, she told herself to endure it! "You, why are you here?" Sonia was shocked when she laid eyes on Fane. It was only then that she remembered Fane was working there as a bodyguard. She also heard that he earned 20 million bucks per month. She did not expect someone would hear her complaining. She felt guilty and immediately lowered her head. She did not dare to look into Fane's eyes. "If I'm not here, will I find out that you're accusing somebody else when in fact you are the one who is guilty? I am Miss Drake's personal guard. Isn't it normal for me to be here?" Fane's hands were behind his back as he lifted his head slightly. He oozed an aura that no one else had. Tanya who was behind him wanted to choke him badly. She asked him to protect her. How did he become her personal bodyguard? Wasn't it too much to say the word 'personal'? Moreover, what kind of personal bodyguard would walk ahead and act like he was the boss? He was stealing her spotlight. Seeing Sonia remained silent as she felt guilty, Fane spoke to James, "Master Drake, this woman is absolutely shameless. The person who she recommended as my wife's assistant was actually her boyfriend. Here's the thing..." Fane briefly told James the whole story. "Sonia, is James telling me the truth?" "Why do I feel like you are the nepotist here? Moreover, according to what Fane said, Rosa is a capable person as she could take up more than her own responsibilities. Do you think your boyfriend is suitable to become the assistant manager in our company?" James's face darkened as he said in a slightly angry tone. "He's talking nonsense!" Sonia refused to admit. She stepped forward, lifted her

head furiously, and started arguing, "You're Selena's husband. Of course, you would defend her! Hmph, both of you are working hand in glove to accuse me." Slap! Fane gave her a slap across her cheek, "I can say in all honesty that my wife and I are truthful people. How dare you blame us for accusing you!"

Chapter 273

"You, how dare you hit me?" Her chest heaved with anger as she cupped her face with her hand, "You bastard. You're just a bodyguard, do you get it? That means you're a servant. How dare you hit me! Even the assistant commander calls me sister politely when he sees me. Who do you think you are?" "Yes, I said both of you are working hand in glove to accuse me. So what?“ Slap! He gave her another slap. "You..." Sonia was terrified. She never imagined that the bodyguard in front of her was so daring. "Uncle, can you please say something? What kind of bodyguard is he? Is he your servant? Since when servants were allowed to hit their boss?" Feeling aggrieved, she took a few steps backward. Tears poured down her cheeks as she looked at James with an aggrieved look. Her thick makeup was all smudged. She looked like a ghost! Sonia thought Fane was humiliating the Drake family for hitting her and James would beat him up. After all, they were the Drake family and she was part of their family. Fane went overboard this time; she thought James should at least fire him and chase him out of the house or beat him up. However, she never expected James to scold her indifferently instead, "Who told you to deny your own mistake and slander others? You deserve it! Fane is a veteran. He is someone who is willing to shed his blood and sacrifice his life for the country. He's an upright and respectable man. How could you say that he's accusing you? I would've hit you too if I was him!" James was embarrassed. Fane slapped her right in front of him, not giving him an out. That guy was too reckless. However, James was a wily old fox. He immediately knew why Fane dared to be so bold. It meant that Fane had no scruple. He did not give a damn for the

Drake family. In that case, his speculation was confirmed. There was something more behind his identity! Fane was stunned as well. He was speechless. He felt shy hearing James praising him with so many commendatory terms. He could only laugh awkwardly, "Master Drake is indeed the richest man in the Middle Province. You surely have a wide range of vocabulary!" Sonia was utterly confused. She did not understand what was going on. Rooted to the spot, she was at a loss. She wanted to rage quit so badly. However, she gritted her teeth and told herself to hang in there as the salary was decent and she could also earn from Ivan's side. Moreover, she could not make impulsive decisions as her boyfriend was now, jobless. "Even if I said the wrong thing, it's not right for him to hit me like this, isn't it?" Sonia was still unhappy. She felt extremely aggrieved. "Next time, think twice before you speak!" James replied to her, "Alright, I assume you're not in a good mood today since your boyfriend couldn't get the job. Take a day off and go back to work tomorrow. Of course, I won't stop you if you want to quit!" "Uncle!" Sonia was speechless. Then, she started to speak in a pettishly charming manner, "I'm so devoted to the Drake family, it's impossible I would want to quit. I even wanted to help the company to improve and become stronger. Why not transfer Manager Taylor to another department since I don't get along well with her?" James went black for a moment. Then, he said, "What about I transfer you to another department?"

Chapter 274

" No, no. That's not necessary!" Flustered, Sonia immediately waved her hand after she heard what James said. Then, she turned around and walked away, "I'll take two days off, then I'll go back to work." Sonia knew that she only had the opportunity to earn money and takedown Selena by staying at the procurement department. She would lose her opportunity if she was transferred to another department. Feeling bored, Sonia was wandering around the streets after she left the Drake family. Suddenly, she received a call from Ivan. Soon after, they agreed to meet at a cafe. "What happened?

Don't you have to work today? Judging from the look on your face, it seems like you’re not in a good mood!" Ivan laughed and said to Sonia. "Don't even mention it. This Selena, she really pisses me off!" "I wanted my boyfriend to work in our company and become Selena's assistant. In that case, we can see each other every day and my boyfriend can tip me off if there's anything important. Who knew..." Sonia sighed and told Ivan everything. "Your boyfriend is looking for a job? Well, our company is hiring right now. We have some vacant positions but the salary is a bit low. It's around 15 thousand. Do you think your boyfriend will be interested in taking up the job?” Ivan wanted to please Sonia as he needed her help. After all, if he could get his hands on the South Hill Real Estate project, the Taylor family did not have to worry about money for the coming two years. Moreover, his position in the Taylor family would be stable by then. He would for sure become the inheritor of the Taylor family and Selena would have nothing to do with that. Five years ago, the old master favored Selena a lot. All the relatives in the Taylor family thought that Selena would become the inheritor of the Taylor family and take over the family business. Unexpectedly, that woman got pregnant with Fane's child. Moreover, she insisted on keeping the child. That gave him a chance to rise again. "Really? That would be great. The salary is considered decent enough!" Finally, Sonia encountered something that was worth being happy about. She smiled and said, "Thank you very much Young Master Taylor. I'll ask my boyfriend to contact you tomorrow morning!" "Alright. Ask him to come straight to my office tomorrow. He'll become my assistant." Ivan laughed, although the Taylor family's business was considered medium-scale and the salary they offered was not high, it was still decent enough. "Mm, that's awesome. I hope you can give him more valuable advice and guide him well in the future!" Sonia smiled politely. "Haha, you're welcome!" Ivan laughed and it was only then that he started talking about the main topic, "By the way, Supervisor Neal, I've already prepared all the information for you. Have you collected the information about our competitors?" "Don't worry, I've already

collected information on a few competitors and they are no match for you! However, Selena and I are not on good terms these few days so I don't feel like approaching her. Give me two days' time; I'll ease things up and help you get the project!" "Anyways, I tried my best and this is all I can do. I've already compared you with a few competitors and have already turned down a few of the strong competitors!" Sonia smiled and took a sip of her coffee. "Thanks a lot. Don't worry, I promise to give you every benefit that we've agreed on once our plan succeeds." Ivan was excited. Finally, he saw a ray of hope. In the afternoon, Fane and Selena went back home as soon as they got off work. However, Selena was carrying a bag when she got out of the car. A lot of things were packed inside the bag. It was tied up with a rope.

Chapter 275

Seeing Xena and Ben present, Fane and Selena looked at each other and smiled. "Mom here is three million in cash. The Drake family rewarded Fane for his good performance." Selena smiled and shouted out to Fiona who was not far away. Fiona's eyes lit up as she heard what Selena said, "Really? That's great. The Drake family is really rich. How could they reward him with so much money?" "Oh, I went out with the second miss today. Two punks who did not recognize the second miss tried to bully her. So, they ended up getting beaten up by me!" "They were happy with what I did so they gave me three million cash and I brought the money back!" Fane smiled and said again, "Mother-in-law, your 3.8 million bucks was robbed the other day, right? To make up for your loss, this three million here is for you. Go to the bank and deposit the money tomorrow morning!" "Alright. That's great!" Fiona was very excited, "Boy, seems like you've been doing quite well recently. However, don't forget that you still owe us 20 million worth of betrothal gifts on Grandpa's birthday. Otherwise, we won't admit that you are our son-in-law!" "Don't worry... I will give you the exact amount!" Fane laughed as he spoke. Xena went back home after dinner. The next morning, Fiona and Andrew brought the bag and went out riding on

their electric scooter. Fane and Selena had been hiding near the bank they visited the other time. "If the motorbike robbers appear again this time, it meant that Xena was the one who informed them!" Fane smiled coldly and said, "I think there's a high possibility that they will appear again!" "Hah, Ben adored Xena so much. If he finds out that Xena was the one behind all this...he must be very heartbroken. Sometimes, I wish Xena was not the culprit!" Selena sighed. Soon after, they could see Fiona and Andrew on the electric scooter. They parked the electric scooter next to the road. "Honey, Fane said that the motorbike robbers will appear to rob our money if we come to the bank again. Do you think it's possible?" Carrying the bag, Fiona said, "How dare that kid threaten me. He said we won't find the three million bucks in seven days' time if we don't put up an act with him." "Hehe, let's try. I thought it was weird too. The motorbike robbers aren't God; how can they sense that we're here and come rob us just like that?" Andrew laughed and said, "Grab the bag tightly. Don't let others snatch the bag away like the other time." "Don't worry, I'm alert this time. There's no way they can rob my money so easily." Fiona laughed. Right at that moment, two motorbikes appeared from an alley on the other side. Each motorbike was carrying a person behind. Fiona immediately became alert when she saw them revving up the engine and rushing over. It seemed like the motorbike robbers were really here. Seeing the motorbike getting closer to them, Fiona turned around and held the bag tightly in front of her chest. The robber tried to reach for the bag but he grabbed nothing. The motorbike stopped immediately. The men got down from the motorbikes and started snatching the bag in Fiona's embrace.

Chapter 276

"Oh, what do we do now? Where's Fane? Tell him to come quick! The robbers on motorbikes are coming!" Fiona was scared out of her wits. Her arms were tightly wrapped around the money; she fought with every bit of her strength. Andrew wanted to grab the other man, but he was shoved until

he fell onto the ground instead. The two men immediately approached Fiona for the pouch. At this moment, Fane sprinted into view. “Hurry, Fane. Hurry! I can’t hold on much longer. The money is being taken away!” Fiona shrieked when she saw Fane. Unfortunately, her strength could not match that of the two young men. The pouch in her hands was snatched away. “Stop!” Fiona leaped forward at the thought of the 3 million bucks in that pouch, latching onto the man who just got onto the motorbike. “Let me go, you old b*tch!” Shock jolted through the man when Fiona latched onto him. He kicked Fiona until she tumbled onto the ground. The bike took off in a cloud of dust. Two other bikes sped forward, following the first bike. However, Fane was only standing a few meters apart from them. “Stop!” He hollered, his expression darkening. “Run over that mother*cker!” One of the men driving the bikes accelerated straight into Fane’s direction. “Fane, get out of the way!” Selena cried when she saw this, shock rippling throughout her. It would be nothing but trouble if the bike hit Fane at the speed it was going. However, just as the bike was about to hit him, she never expected Fane to dodge so artfully. With another maneuver, the bike suddenly flipped. The two people on the bike were sprawled on the ground in a flash and tumbled a good few meters. Lacerations ripped quite a few areas of their skin. The other bike so happened to be rushing forward as well, but it rammed into the turtled bike. The rider slammed on the brakes, but the bike flipped anyway. The two people on it also tumbled onto the ground, squealing in pain. At this moment, Fiona, Andrew, and Selena finally ran over. “B*stards. Do you have a death wish, taking my money away?” Fiona was so furious she could explode. She immediately picked up the pouch containing the money before landing a few vicious kicks on one of the men sprawled on the ground. Fane also walked over. With each kick, he sent the four men flying to a tree by the roadside, as though they were soccer balls. “Sir, please–please spare us!” One of the men begged in wretched gasps after he realized just how strong Fane was. He ripped his helmet off. His three comrades simply lay there, helpless. They knew that

they had picked on the wrong person this time. They were doomed. “What about the 3.8 million bucks you guys snatched two days ago? Where is it now? Tell me. Also, how do you know that my mother-in-law comes here to keep her money?” Fane squatted and asked, his expression placid. “We–we don’t know anything about that 3.8 million. It was a coincidence—we saw that this old lady had a pouch in her hands and thought that there was money inside. That’s why we acted on a whim. You’ll let us go right, sir? We won’t dare to do this no more!” One of the men’s gaze flickered before he explained the situation to Fane. Fane chuckled coldly. He stood back up and pressed a foot onto the man’s arm. “I can easily break this arm of yours if you don’t tell me the truth!” “Ouch!” The other man was crying out in pain although Fane had not exerted much strength. “I was wrong, sir. I was wrong. Please, not so far. I’ll tell you–I’ll tell you everything. All right?” “Well, tell us quickly. I’ll have you know that he’s super strong. There’s a possibility that he’ll kill all of you if you don’t talk!”

Chapter 277

Fiona did not have a shred of pity for the snatch thieves. She spoke with venom in her voice, and she constantly launched her foot toward them. For the past two days, she had not eaten or slept well, thinking about her 3.8 million dollars. “I’ll tell you! We handed the 3.8 million to our boss after we took it. And he gave each of us a share of it!” The man immediately spilled everything, evidently terrified. “Then how do you guys know that we keep our money here? It can’t be a coincidence!” Fane asked them again. He already had the answer, but he needed proper confirmation. Furthermore, there was no way that Andrew and Fiona would think that the culprit was Xena. The two of them—especially Fiona—had already treated Xena as a daughter-in-law. “It–it was Xena Jackson who told our boss. She’s also a member of the Motorbike Robbers. She gives us information, and if we get the money, she gets twenty percent of the share all to herself. She gets even more than we do!” The man immediately revealed. “Xena!” Fiona’s features

contorted; she almost wanted to faint. Her head buzzed. “No way. How could she…” Andrew was speechless. He never imagined that Xena was the mastermind. “Now I remembered. The two times when we spoke about keeping our money, Xena and Ben were there. There’s no way Ben would have done this. But I never thought… We treated her so nicely, and she…” Realization washed over Andrew. He looked at his son-in-law. “Fane, both of us were just a witness to your show, right?” he said. “I guess that you suspected Xena a long time ago.” Selena cut in before Fane could speak, “Dad, it has nothing to do with him. The main point is that I thought that there was something off about Xena. That woman can’t be up to anything good, so I suspected her. I just told Fane to find a way to make something happen to reveal the truth!” “I don’t care who it is! I just want my money back!” After the shock had subsided, Fiona shrieked even more furiously, “It must have been the four of you the last time! Give my money back. Give my 3.8 million dollars back!” “We didn’t make much money, Ma’am. We only got about 10 thousand each here. More importantly, the boss of the Motorbike Robbers took the money. Of course, other than him, it’s Xena who took the most. The other members of our gang got only a few thousand each. They’re probably just gonna use it for dinner or something!” The man had a bitter expression. His injuries were pretty serious now. He wondered if he would be beaten to death if Fiona continued to kick him like that. “You’ll still have to go to work later, Selena. How about this? You take Mother and Father back first, and I’ll get them to take me to their boss. I’ll help Mother find her money back1” Fane said to Selena after he thought for a while. “All right. But you have to be careful, understand?” Selena bobbed her head. She was well aware that not only would she and Fiona not be of much help if they went, but they might be of hindrance to Fane instead. It would be better for him to go alone. “Fane, I’m entrusting my money into your hands. You have to get it back!” “Besides, you told me that you would compensate for my losses if you couldn’t find it within a week!” Fiona reminded Fane. She did not care whether he would be in danger. “Let’s go,

Ma!" Selena flashed a mirthless smile. "We're not leaving just yet. We're already right outside the bank. We'll go back once I've deposited this 3 million. Fane told me that it's for me!" Fiona said, grinning. She took the pouch and headed toward the direction of the bank. "Ma, take a look inside that pouch. There's only scrap paper in there. What money are you talking about?" Selena's lips curled into a bitter smile. "What?" Fiona released a gasp of disbelief. Now she understood why Selena had stopped her from opening the pouch while they were playing along; it was because there was no money inside there all along. She opened the pouch. Anger suddenly gripped her, and she just plopped onto the ground. "My money—3 million! Gone!" Selena cast Fane a look; she did not know whether to laugh or cry at this.

Chapter 278

Andrew, too, did not know whether to laugh or cry when he saw his wife on the ground like that. "Don't you get it? There was never any money inside. Miss Tanya never gave Fane a bonus. It was a trick to lure Xena." "Let's go, Ma. We'll go back home first. I believe that Fane will get your 3.8 million bucks back very soon!" Selena helped her mother to get onto her feet, and the three of them disappeared quickly. Fane watched as the four men slowly stood up, their faces ashen. He pondered for a moment. "Let's go," he said. "Bring me to your boss." "Sir, can't you spare us? Our boss will beat us to death if he ever found out that we betrayed him!" One of the men immediately pleaded, terror seizing his veins. "Heh. Then I'll beat all of you to death now if you don't take me to him!" Fane threatened them, chuckling. "I advise you to not go at all," another man said. "You seem really strong, but if you do, not only you might not be able to get the money, you might even die a nasty death!" "You guys don't have to worry about this. Just take me there. I won't stop you from leaving if you want to then!" Fane emitted a humorless chuckle. He did not believe that he could not take on the Motorbike Robbers. "All right then, punk. Just don't regret

everything once you get there. Our boss is a real mean character. Anything he takes, it'll never see daylight again!" "And killing someone in Middle Province is as easy as breathing for him!" The man from before spoke to Fane again. "Really? Then I want to see how mean he can be for myself!" Fane shrugged his shoulders. As the four men were not critically injured, Fane let them rest for a few minutes before forcing them to get back on the bikes, with him riding pillion to see their boss. At that moment, in a small forest on the outskirts of the city, plenty of motorbikes were gathered and parked in one spot. Over twenty youngsters sat on the ground, smoking on cigarettes. "You were amazing, Xena. You helped us get so much money two days ago, and now we have even more!" A man who wore a singlet and had a lollipop stuck into his mouth grinned. Xena took a drag out of her cigarette. "Heh. Young Master Harvey, don't be so modest. It's not like you're lacking money. You're the son of Boss Harvey of the Dragon Gods. Do you really place that much importance on a few million?" "That's right, Boss. You're too modest. Your family has plenty of business around here. You just open your mouth and your old man will give you—what, a billion, ten billion? All for your expenses. That's such an easy thing to do too!" A grunt spoke up, smiling. "Heh. Is that really the same though?" The young master of the Harveys chuckled, then he walked over to a beautiful young woman's side. He cupped her chin, his lips curling. "My father earned his own money. I spend the money I earn myself. It gives me more comfort, and keeps me grounded! Besides, he's such a miserable b*stard. He only gives me five million a month. How's that enough!" "No way. It's way too little, especially for the son of the Dragon Gods. Your gang is considered one of the best around here. Of course, five million isn't enough!" The grunt from before quickly said in a flattering tone. They waited for another two minutes before Young Master Harvey began to grow impatient. He glanced toward the direction of the city entrance. "Jeez, Nick and the others been gone for too long. Xena, can your sources be trusted?" Xena leaned against

a tree. “Of course,” she said, a wicked smile on her face. “Don’t you worry. That old couple will definitely deposit 3 million bucks!”

Chapter 279

“Heh. Alright. you’ll get 600 thousand this time. Quite a pretty sum!” Young Master Harvey said, chuckling. Xena sat on the ground. “At first, I dated Ben because I thought he was a Taylor. Even if he was kicked out from the Taylors, it doesn’t mean that his family wouldn’t have any money,” she said. “Then I dated him for so long, and only then I discovered that that b*stard’s family really doesn’t have much money. It pisses me off. It’s such a loss for me!” She paused for a while here before continuing, “If I hadn’t gotten used to playing online games with him, and if he hadn’t been such a fantastic gamer, I would have left him long ago. I never thought that the return of that b*stard’s brother-in-law would give me an opportunity to get some money!” Young Master Harvey walked till he was before her. He pressed her against the ground and planted a wild kiss on her lips. Then he sat on the ground too, unsatisfied. “Then did he take advantage of you, babe?” “No way. With his looks, letting him hold my hands was already a miracle!” After Xena said that, she took the hand of Young Master Harvey and leaned her head against his shoulder. “I like you, Young Master Harvey. That brat is nothing. He’s just giving me an opportunity to get some money. He even took me to a dinner among the Taylors. If I can sniff out any other Taylors with good potential, I’ll get some money off them as well.” “Hah! You’re really money-faced!” Young Master Harvey burst into laughter. Xena was someone who truly worshipped gold. He was all too aware of this. Yet this woman still wanted to marry him. That was nothing but a fever dream. If this woman was not that good looking, or if her figure was not that great, or if he did not enjoy the nights they spent together, he would have not bothered with her. He was the young master of the Harveys. Although he was a young master of an underground society, it was still a powerful society. They were definitely a force to be reckoned with, and they did not

lack money. That was why he would never marry someone like Xena if he had to get married. “Jeez. I love money, but I love you even more!” Xena pouted, trying to appeal to him. “What about this then? I’ll give you another ten percent from today’s money, so you’ll get thirty percent in total. How does that sound?” Young Master Harvey said, smiling after he thought about it for a while. “Really?” Xena’s eyes brightened once she heard that. Thirty percent was a full 900 thousand—another 300 thousand more from the amount they had agreed upon earlier. This was probably a small sum to Young Master Harvey, but it was a huge amount to her. “But—you already know this. Don’t go and see that idiotic ‘boyfriend’ of yours tonight. I want to get the royal treatment from you!” Young Master Harvey gave a wicked chuckle, lightly smacking her thigh as a hint. “Don’t worry. I’ll definitely arrange everything nicely tonight!” Xena said, grinning. The men surrounding them could not help a mirthless smile as they watched this exchange. This woman loved money more than life itself. So long as you had money and gave her some few hundred thousand dollars, she would probably sleep with just about anyone. “They’re back. They’re back! Jesus, they’re finally back after being gone for so long!” At last, the man who was watching the city entrance spotted two motorbikes speeding toward them. “Hah. As long as they’re back, all is forgiven. My men, now we wait to split the money!” Young Master Harvey stood up and said, his eyes crinkling into a narrow line. “Why don’t I see a pouch though? They’ll probably need a big one to contain three million dollars.” A woman frowned as she thought about it.

Chapter 280

“No way. Fiona and Andrew are pretty old. No way that the four of them failed to snatch the goods.” Xena frowned when she heard that. She walked over to take a look. At the sight, her face contorted in disgust—because there was no pouch in sight. “Useless! Four men and they couldn’t rob an old couple?” Young Master Harvey’s expression hardened. He did not look very

pleased. Although three million bucks was not much to him, he never liked failing in anything he did. “It looks like there are three bikes, but an extra passenger is riding on one of them!” One of the men exclaimed when they came closer into view. The bikes zoomed forward. The people were full of distrust. Five men came down from the bikes. “Bo–boss…” One of the men had lacerations on his forehead; blood streaked his face. He ran over to Young Master Harvey. “We–we didn’t manage to get the goods,” he said, terror laced in his voice. “We fell into a trap!” “Useless!” Young Master Harvey threw a vicious kick at the man. Then he noticed Fane. “Who’s this punk?” he asked his four men. “Fa–Fane? Why are you here?” Xena’s eyes flickered; her expression morphed into one of a horrified surprise. She had already thought everything through. She needed to find a way to get money for herself. Even if she did not marry Young Master Harvey in the future, it did not matter so long as she had money of her own and could live a comfortable life. If that did not work out, she still could marry Ben, in spite of the trash he was. Or she could leave the city by herself, start anew in another place. She never thought that Fane would actually come. This was a clear indicator that he had seen through her ruse. “You know him?” Young Master Harvey was stunned, “Why does the name Fane sound familiar?” “Young Master Harvey, this punk is a skilled fighter, and he is a bodyguard for the Drakes. He’s also Selena’s husband, and Ben’s brother-in-law!” Xena immediately said to Young Master Harvey. “Heh. A skilled fighter? How skilled, exactly?” Young Master Harvey flashed a sardonic smile. “Oh, so this is the good-for-nothing who leeched off his wife,” he said. “I remember you telling me that this punk practically destroyed the Taylors. If not for him, Selena would never have been kicked out of the Taylors. What a shame. That beauty was snagged by such a swine!” Here, he stretched his limbs lazily. “I heard that Selena is very attractive,” he said, expression teasing. “It’s a pity that I don’t take interest in women who are married and have had a kid. I probably would like to fool around with her if she wasn’t married! “You beat up the four of them, eh, punk? Not bad!” A grunt

quirked his lips into a mirthless smile. “The punk didn’t really beat us. But he must be pretty skilled anyway. He managed to take hold of our bikes and flip them over. Who knows what would have happened if the bikes didn’t fall!” One of the men who was injured spoke up, trying to defend his dignity. “I’ve never expected that you would mix around with such vermin, Xena. Plotting to steal money from Father and Mother? Heh. How dumb can you get!”

Chapter 281

Fane lit up a cigarette and took a slow drag out of it before he spoke leisurely. “Dumb?” Xena grew angry when she heard that. “You’re just a military man. I know you’re a skilled fighter. Ben had told me before. And so what? You’re just a bodyguard. You’re not that great.” She splayed her arms here. “At any rate, I don’t have money and I need money, and I want to get money. Was I wrong?” she continued. “I don’t think I’m dumb. I got 760 thousand bucks from the last lot alone, no?” Since Fane had already found out, Xena decided to throw away all pretenses. “Do you understand? So what can you do to me? Heh. It would have been better for you to stay put. You’re just digging your own grave by coming here!” “You’ve been with Ben for such a long time now. Do you really not have any feelings for him?” Anger sparked in Fane. Although he did not talk a lot to Ben, he could see that Ben truly liked Xena, and intended to marry her. “Hmph. Feelings? What good are feelings? Do they feed me?” Xena folded her arms across her chest, a cruel smile lighting her lips. “He’s just a tool. If he wasn’t such a fantastic gamer, and if I, myself wasn’t interested in games, I would have dumped him a long time ago.” However, she quickly thought of something: Fane came here alone. Did that mean that he did not have much evidence on her? It would be even better if Fane just died here, and her identity would not be revealed. Furthermore, there was a possibility that she could swindle that 3 million bucks into her hands. Of course, the two Porsches were worth a pretty penny too. It would be nice if she could sell them off. “Young

Master Harvey, you can't let this punk leave this place alive now that he's here," she said simply as she thought of all this. "My cover will be blown otherwise!" "Hmph. Looks like you still intend to put that Ben to some use!" Young Master Harvey said, grinning. "Gee. Of course, it would be for the best if my cover wasn't blown. What if it comes in handy later?" Xena said, smiling. "Hmph. Don't worry about it, and you don't even have to mention it. That punk beat up four of our men. He's not getting away today! "Besides, he ruined my grand scheme of the day. Three million was just within our reach, and this little punk had to ruin it all! "It's been two years since I, Ruben Harvey, came out to do business, and this is the first time I've tasted failure!" Ruben cracked his neck and scanned his surroundings. "This patch of forest isn't too bad, and it's pretty secluded. It'd be a great place for his grave!" "Hmph. I'm just here for the 3.8 million bucks. But it looks like I'll have to beat the arrogance out of you by trashing quite a few people around here!" Fane chuckled. He threw the cigarette onto the ground and stamped it out. "Kill him!" Ruben waved his arm, declaring his order. "You're just a military guy. What do you think you are? God?" "Today, you punk, you had the choice to take the easy way out. And yet you forced yourself into hell instead!" In a flash, seven or eight grunts surrounded Fane. "Boss, the old couple never had three million. It was just scrap paper and stuff like that in the pouch. No money. This punk lured us into a trap!" One of the men who had been beaten up earlier came before Ruben, reporting everything with the utmost vehemence. "You're pretty clever, punk!" Ruben flashed a chilling grin. His eyes contained nothing but pure venom. "You'd better make sure he gets beaten till he's dead ten times over then." "No way. It was fake?" Xena was speechless. She had thought that she could swindle the three million bucks when she went back. She never expected it to be fake.

Chapter 282

“Listen to me, punk. It’s no use even if you get on your knees and beg for your life now!” The grunt was extremely arrogant. They had plenty of men. He did not believe that they could not take care of one man. Slap! In a split second, he seemed to have apparated before the grunt. Then with a flick of his hand, he sent a slap flying toward the side of the grunt’s face. “I—” The grunt took a sharp intake of breath. That was way too fast. He did not even have time to react and, he had gotten a slap. He closed his fingers into fists, getting ready to punch Fane. The other men surged forward. Yet Fane just grabbed his arm in a flash, and with a mighty swing, the grunt was sent spiraling into the men that surged forward. Then Fane released his grip, and the grunt flew, crashing heavily into a nearby tree. Blood spurted from his mouth as he landed on the ground with a resounding crash. “Bunch of weaklings. I take good care of you every day, and you’re still this useless!” Ruben understood that Fane was not an easy one to beat when he saw that. “All of you, get him,” he said carelessly. “Get him together. It’s obvious that they weren’t enough!” Here, everyone besides Xena and Ruben rushed toward Fane. The men from before picked themselves up from the ground and charged toward Fane as well. “It looks like I’ll really have to kill some of you!” Fane loosened a breath. The grunt who had been flung onto the tree was now lying on the ground, vomiting blood, unable to get up. He had thought that this would be enough to scare this bunch and force the boss to give him the money. It was evident that he was too naïve. This bunch would not give up so easily. Snap! Snap! Snap! Fane broke the necks of seven or eight men in rapid succession. The remaining men stopped in their tracks when they saw the bodies on the ground. “Bo–boss, looks like they’re dead!” One of the men ran over and placed his fingers under his comrade’s nose before sputtering those words. They were not the same. They were not actually part of the Dragon Gods; they just liked drag racing. Besides, they did not really fear anything under Ruben’s leadership. After the many times that they had successfully snatched things, they grew bolder. This bunch of people were dubbed the Motorbike Robbers. Anyone who knew what they

were, did not dare to provoke and offend them. They never expected that this military veteran would suddenly turn up—and he would be such a skilled fighter. He was bold too, killing several of their men in a flash. Normally, they would take knives to hack some limbs off, but they never killed anyone before. Naturally, they were frightened when they saw this. Several men were so terrified that their legs trembled. “F*cker! Do you really take me as a pushover?” Ruben ran toward the back of his bike and whipped a gun out, aiming it at Fane. “I never expected you to be this good, punk,” he said. “Looks like those useless underlings of mine are of no match for you.” He paused for a while before resuming nonchalantly, “But I have a game in mind. Do you think that you’re faster, or will my bullet be faster?” “You’re amazing, Boss!” One of the grunts’ eyes danced with maniacal delight when he saw that. “That mother*cker dared to beat me, and he killed so many of our men. We’ll teach him the meaning of ‘no mercy’ today!” “Hah. Don’t worry. I won’t finish him in one shot. I’ll shoot his leg first, then both. I’ll let him feel the pain for a bit, then we’ll decide what to do after.” Ruben grinned. However, he was quickly stunned in his spot. It was because Fane actually bent down and picked up two stones. The other man stared at him, smiling. “Do you really think that picking up two tiny rocks will do you any good, punk?” Ruben flashed a cold smile. “This is the first time I’ve seen something like this. I’ve already got my gun aimed at you, and you pick two pebbles up. What use is that?” “Of course they’re useful!”

Chapter 283

“Although I’m not afraid even if I don’t use rocks, I still want to play around with you too!” Fane said lightly as if he did not give a sh*t about the other man. “Not bad. Hah!” Ruben laughed and opened fire at Fane’s thigh. Swoosh! In a blink of an eye, Fane flung his arm forward. The two pebbles shot forward. One of the rocks happened to hit the bullet, deflecting it. The other rock whacked straight into one of Ruben’s fingers. “Ah!” Ruben shrieked. The finger that had been hit immediately snapped, as though he

had been hit by a bullet. Half of the finger fell onto the ground. The sudden flare of pain made Ruben cry out in agony. The gun slipped from his grip and fell onto the ground as well. “Boss!” “Young Master!” The remaining men stared at the situation, goggle-eyed, wondering if this was real. “F*ck! Kill him!” Ruben looked at the gun on the ground, then turned toward one of his men by his side. “Pick up that gun and kill that punk!” he snarled. The man immediately bent over to pick the gun up. His body was still filled with shock. He did not know if it was a coincidence that the punk’s rock hit the bullet. As for Ruben’s finger, they did not see what had happened clearly. They suspected that the bullet had ricocheted and so happened to find its mark in Ruben’s finger. Swoosh! While Ruben was yelling, Fane was already rushing toward his direction. He quickly reached the man at the speed of a cheetah. The man’s hand did not even reach the gun when Fane kicked him away. Fane then bent down and quickly snatched the gun, standing up and leveling the barrel at Ruben’s head. “Gah!” At the moment, Ruben was in so much pain that cold sweat perspired down his forehead. Blood streamed down his hand. However, he had no thoughts for the wound on his hand. He had been the one aiming the gun but in a few seconds, that same gun was being aimed at his head instead. This abrupt turn of tables made his brain numb. “Bo–boss, how–how could this happen?” The remaining men were terrified, at a loss of what to do. Two of the men were so scared that they wanted to take off, but they were afraid that even if Fane did not kill them when they ran away, the Dragon Gods would not let them go either. The Dragon Gods were a powerful force. They were an underground society, but their strength deterred even the aristocrats from provoking them. “You’ll regret your decision if you kill me, punk! I’m telling you, I’m the son of Master Harvey, the grandmaster of the Dragon Gods!” At this moment, although Ruben was terrified, he still showed some backbone, unwilling to give up. “The Dragons Gods?” Fane’s forehead creased, thinking of a past incident. That Brother Scar and Ned and their men, who numbered about two hundred in total—did he not kill them all

already? He never thought that the boss of the Motorbike Robbers would be the son of the grandmaster, Master Harvey. What a coincidence. Ruben's chest loosened in relief when he saw that Fane did not speak. It looked like Fane was afraid now. After all, no one heard of the name of the Dragon Gods and claimed to be unafraid. "What's wrong? Afraid? Heh. Since you're afraid, just give the gun to me, you punk!" Ruben smiled, then spoke. "You think I'm dumb?" Fane said coldly.

Chapter 284

It was hilarious. This punk really took him for a fool, thinking of using the Dragon Gods' name to scare him into giving the gun away. That would be like digging his own grave. "Heh. My father will never forgive you if you kill me. You'd better think this through!" Ruben flashed a mirthless smile and spoke. "I just wanted to get the 3.8 million back. I never thought that you would want to kill me. From the looks of it, I have no choice but to kill you!" Fane gave a cold smile before continuing, "Let's say I kill you and everyone here. Do you think your father would really find out that I did it?" "Heh. You can try if you don't believe it!" Ruben chuckled and said, "Do you really think that after coming out of the city on my subordinate's bike, there would be zero witnesses along the way?" "Not bad!" Fane grinned. "That's why the best course of action is to just wipe the entire Dragon God gang, right? I can't get a good night's sleep otherwise!" After he said that, Fane aimed the gun at Ruben's thigh and opened fire. Ruben screamed in pain and keeled over, all color leeching from his face. He never expected this punk to be so vicious, shooting straight at him. "Ah!" The remaining men were so terrified that they shrieked. They wheeled around and took off. They felt that the Fane who stood before them was practically a madman. He did not fear death anymore; he was a frenzied, living killing machine. They were people who had never crossed the line of killing others. Who would have thought that Fane had brushed against death many times? Compared to Fane, they were just a small fry. Bang! Bang! Bang! Fane

opened fire, the shots ringing throughout the forest. The men all dropped onto the ground in silence. Fane's skill with the gun was practically godlike. "Ah! Ah!" Xena shrieked in terror. It was because only she and Young Master Harvey were left. At that moment, the barrel of Fane's gun was pointed toward her. Young Master Harvey was so terrified that he sat on the ground. A jolt of pain spiked up his leg. He clenched his teeth. However, he did not care about all of that now. He was more worried that Fane would really kill them all. Today, he met a man who truly did not fear anything. "Don't–don't kill me! Please don't kill me. I just wanted money! "I joined their gang to get some money! You can't kill me—I'm Ben's girlfriend! I'm begging you. You'll be my brother-in-law if I marry Ben. We're family!" Xena was so frightened that she fell onto her knees and pleaded. Pure panic filled her expression. "Get out of here! Get out of my sight!" After Fane thought for a while, he added, "Do not breathe a word about what happened today. I'll make sure you die a painful death if you don't do that!" "I–I'll get out of your sight!" Xena was scared out of her wits. She quickly ran, got onto a bike, and rode off.

Chapter 285

"Young Master Harvey, right? 'Does Fane dare to kill you?' What do you think of this sentence right now?" A mirthless smile hung on Fane's face. He said, "You could've just returned me the 3.8 million when I first asked, but now…" "I-I'll give you! Please spare me! I beg you!" Ruben knelt before Fane, petitioning for his pitiful life. He only realized how stupid of him to provoke a veteran now that he had experienced his viciousness first-hand. "Fine. I'll spare you. But make a call to your dear Father and ask him to send over 3.8 million bucks right now. It has to be 3.8 million, nothing less!" "I'll be over for a joint. Let me warn you first, you better not play any dirty tricks! It would be useless after all. And you don't want the Dragon Gods to be in trouble!" Fane continued in a lazy tone. Ruben's thigh was severely wounded; the blood was practically spewing out from the gunshot

wound. He walked toward a big tree and stood under it, lighting up his joint casually and relaxingly. He would not be merciful toward those who deserved to die. Hope and subtle joy sparked within Ruben as he watched Fane walking away. He was given an opportunity to make a phone call too! Ruben immediately pulled his mobile phone out of his pocket with his hand covered in blood, dialing his father's phone number. "Father! I'm dying! Quickly come and save me!" Ruben cried into his mobile phone as soon as Harvey picked up the call. "There's a b*stard called Fane! He wanted to kill me, Father! He will only spare my life if you bring him 3.8 million bucks in cash! Otherwise, I will be dead!" "W-What!" On the other end of the line, Boss Harvey slammed the table at his son's words and stood up abruptly from his chair. "What the f*ck! Who the h*ll is this Fane? How dare him! Is he digging his own grave?" Not long after, thoughts flashed through his mind and he said, "It's strange, my son. You're abducted right? If it's an abduction, it's impossible that the kidnapper only asks for 3.8 million bucks. You should be worth more than a billion!" Ruben was speechless. Why on earth was his father still annoyed by the amount when his son's life was at stake. Ruben whispered into the phone, fearing that Fane would overhear it. "Father, the real situation was…" He explained. After explaining to Master Harvey, Ruben continued, "Father, my leg got shot, bled a lot and it's still bleeding! I wouldn't bear it much longer if you don't send help over right now!" "All right, my son! I will send someone to get you." Master Harvey responded, and then immediately ordered his men, "Son of b*tch! Send 300 men to get Young Master Harvey and we will have to let that b*stard know the consequences of going against the Dragon Gods!" Master Harvey gritted his teeth. He felt about to burst from rage. How dare this veteran provoked his men, and even shot his son! This was not the worst. The most devastating news was that this veteran did not flinch even after knowing that the men belonged to Dragon Gods and Ruben was the Young Master of the Dragon Gods! This punk took the Dragon Gods clan lightly! "N—no. Don't!" Although Ruben was keen to kill Fane right now, he was not an idiot; he

replied instantly, “No. You can’t send this many people, you will be waking up a sleeping wolf! We’re at a jungle outside of the city, and what if he saw these men from afar, and immediately shot me at my head and then run into the woods? Our men will find no one by the time they arrive! I will die in vain!” Master Harvey held his breath, listening to Ruben’s words. He was in a frantic state earlier on, only wanting to rescue his son, and let the b*stard know the consequences of provoking his clan, but did not think of this. Fortunately, the smart son of his reminded him of it. Ruben was right, if that b*stard saw so many people marching toward them, he would probably kill Ruben out of fear. After some moment of thinking, he then said, “Hmmm. How about I send the five Tigers of the Dragon Gods over? They are all skilled combatants! It should not be a problem for them to rescue you out!” There were a total of six skilled yet vicious men in the Dragon Gods. Any of them was skillful enough to defeat one hundred alone and even hundreds for some of them! They were widely known as the Six Tigers of the Dragon Gods, however Scar was killed recently and now there are only the Five Tigers left. Ruben truly believed that if the Five Tigers came here, Fane would be so dead! “Hmmm. It’s better to bring the cash along too, to prevent anything bad from happening!” Ruben advised his father after giving some thought to the matter. “At least the cash would make Fane let his guard down, it will make him think that we’re really using the cash to exchange my life! Otherwise, I fear that I will immediately end up a corpse when Fane does not see the money!” Ruben finally hung up after a few more words.

Chapter 286

“Young Master Ruben, what’s taking your phone call so long? You wouldn’t be trying anything now, would you? I told you to bring me that 3.8 million bucks in cash, you wouldn’t be calling for help now, would you?” Fane noticed the phone call took a while before he hung up therefore his question. “How could I? I only ordered them to help arrange that 3.8 million bucks for you. Don’t worry, they will arrive real soon!” Ruben immediately

replied as he panicked. “Really? I’ll show you what happens if you lie to me!” After Fane made that cold statement, he actually tossed the pistol toward Young Master Ruben. “Ouch!” The pistol struck Ruben’s thighs which infuriated him. He immediately picked it up and was about to toss it back at him, “Goddammit, don’t you dare cross the line…” Ruben paused as he said that, it was only then did he realized that Fane had tossed him a pistol. “Haha, you truly have a deathwish. You actually tossed me a pistol?” Ruben felt ecstatic. It seemed Fane did not pay much attention when he tossed the pistol over. He immediately aimed the pistol at Fane then said, “Don’t move, don’t you dare pick up a pebble. If you even dare move a muscle, I will end you. Haha!” Fane laughed as he noticed Ruben’s expression. He then stood up. “Die!” When he noticed Fane moved, Ruben was worried he would pick up a pebble again, so he immediately aimed the pistol at Fane and pulled the trigger twice. However, he was speechless at the very next second. There were no bullets in it. “What? Impossible!” Ruben’s expression turned extremely bitter since this was such a great opportunity to murder Fane. He never expected there would be no bullets in the pistol. “Hehe, Young Master Ruben, do you think I’d toss the pistol to you if there were bullets in it?” Fane chuckled while he stretched. He then said, “I was still testing you. I didn’t expect you to fail so spectacularly!” Ruben had almost passed out from being infuriated. This brat was too witty. Fortunately, that brat did not beat him up. After finishing a cigarette, he patiently waited on the side. Not long after, two SUVs sped over. “There are only a few people here. It seems, Young Master Ruben, you are quite the honorable man!” Fane chuckled. However, he was quite aware that for the people in the Dragon God Clan, after shooting the boss’ son’s leg and breaking his finger, they would never have dropped the whole thing. Besides, it was not easy to cross the mafia anyway. “Well, of course, we are all honorable men so obviously, we’d honor any word given!” Ruben scoffed in his heart. It seemed only death would await for this brat. Both SUVs were parked nearby. Five people got out and two of them were each

holding a leather box. All five of them eyeballed each other then took a glance at Ruben before slowly making their way over. Fane was standing in front of Young Master Ruben while calmly staring at those five men. He could tell these five men were no ordinary ruffians within the Dragon God Clan. Based on their footsteps and the faint aura emanating from their body, Fane could tell these five men should be quite powerful. They might be quite similar to Scar's power level from previously.

Chapter 287

The main reason why the Dragon God Clan could have such a huge influence in the Middle Province was because of these few powerful men. "You sure are bold, brat. You actually kidnapped our young master. Hehe, this is my first time ever seeing someone this bold in the years I've lived in the Middle Province!" One of the bald men chuckled coldly. He then looked at the pile of corpses on the ground and said, "It seems your combat skills isn't too bad. However, all that you've taken care of are merely trash to the Dragon God Clan. You will die when you encounter someone truly powerful." Fane chuckled and took a step forward. "Hehe, you guys wouldn't want to kill me now, would you?" He noticed Fane was inching closer to Ruben and his expression immediately dimmed. Although they were powerful and their speed were also without a doubt, fast but their distance were still quite far from Fane. Moreover, Fane was a retired veteran and if he was able to survive five years on the battlefield, he naturally would have some form of impressive skills. Therefore, they believed that with Fane's abilities, by the time they reached him, he could swiftly murder Young Master Ruben in an instant. Not to mention, Young Master Ruben looked inhumanly pale and the whole situation did not seem very optimistic. "Hehe, that's a misunderstanding. All but a misunderstanding!" That bald man chuckled before saying, "Come on now, brother, release our young master and we'll hand you the money. It's only 3.8 million bucks anyway and everything will be fine! Our young master's life isn't only worth this

much money!" "Haha, it's good that you guys see it this way!" Fane laughed before walking toward those men. When he noticed Fane approaching them, he was instantly stunned. Since usually, should Fane not hold a knife or a gun to threaten Young Master Ruben while both parties closed in on each other before making the trade? However, this brat ignored Young Master Ruben and instead was approaching them on his own accord? If that was the case, would they not have the opportunity to immediately murder this brat? However, that brat was quite powerful hence, the best outcome would be avoiding any direct conflicts against him. "Come on now buddy, take it!" The bald man and the people around him were all extending an arm toward him before handing the leather box to him. They understood very clearly that Fane would use both hands to pick up both boxes. When both of his hands were full, that would be the opportunity for them to strike. Then, Fane would be caught off guard. Since both of his hands would be full, a single direct attack from them would be no doubt be lethal to him. It turned out, everything was as they had predicted. Fane smiled and reached out with both arms then accepted both boxes. As Fane was accepting both boxes, both men reached out and drew a dagger from within their sleeves then attacked at the same time. Both daggers were charging toward Fane's chest. Both of their attacks were extremely fast and the most important part was how in sync both men were. One was attacking Fane on the left and the other on the right, sealing off any chance of Fane's escape. However, Fane was in complete control of the whole situation. Although their speed was incredibly fast, in Fane's eyes, they were nothing. With an immediate wave of his hands, he flung both boxes outward from his hand one at a time. "Thud, thud!" With two movements, both men were hit directly by those boxes as they were shot out immediately. That strength was oddly powerful. If any normal human was to fling both boxes out, nothing much would happen. However, when Fane flung those leather boxes, the impact shot both of them outward as they crashed landed on the ground immediately after. The bald

man who was struck first felt as if his arm had almost broken. The pain was so intense, his entire arm was shaking.

Chapter 288

“Such powerful strength!” One of the men who was in a slightly better condition got back up from the ground immediately while staring at Fane with a serious look. The remaining three men immediately surrounded Fane. Therefore, all five people had Fane completely surrounded. Young Master Ruben let out a sigh of relief when he noticed Fane was completely surrounded. He exclaimed, “You lot don’t kill him immediately. Beat him up nicely and don’t give him a quick and painless death.” That bald man let out a bitter laugh before saying, “Young Master Ruben, this brat isn’t a pushover. Even if we can kill him, it’ll be a very difficult thing to do!” After Young Master Ruben heard that he gasped and said, “No way, right? You guys happen to be the Five Tigers of the Dragon God. Although there’s six of you initially unfortunately Scar was killed. Or else, our Dragon God Clan obviously do not need to bend to the wills of the other clans.” “This brat was a soldier for five years and anyone who can survive on the battlefield for five years obviously wouldn’t be a pushover. It seems it’ll be a one in a million chance to ever encounter a man like this!” A man with a tiny beard spoke. After he was done speaking, he flipped over his palms and grabbed onto the same dagger from earlier before saying, “However, it’s very unfortunate for him to run into all five of us at the same time. Don’t worry, Young Master Ruben, this brat will die today!” Young Master Ruben instantly felt delighted after hearing that bearded man make such a confident claim. “Haha, didn’t you guys say that you guys valued honor the most? Didn’t you guys say that you guys were not planning to kill me and it’s merely a matter of 3.8 million bucks?” Fane chuckled as he spoke. “You have to be really naive if you believe that, brat! Our Dragon God Clan has seen all kinds of awful things. Hehe, you’ve beaten our young master to such an extent, do you think we’ll be able to let you go?” The bald man

coldly exclaimed. “That’s right, brat. You know, our young master’s status is quite a precious one and the truth is, 3.8 million isn’t really a concern but since you dare make a move on the members of our Dragon God Clan, you’ve sealed your current fate!” After the bearded man was done speaking, he squatted slightly next to Fane, and with a slight twitch of his foot, the dagger shot out of his hand. The blade morphed into a greyish glint as it flew directly toward Fane’s thighs. Fane could clearly tell the man had no intentions to murder him yet or else, that blade would charge at him in a much more lethal way. This meant, he only wanted to torture Fane before murdering him. “Is that all you got?” As fast as his speed was, it was incredibly slow to Fane’s eyes. He immediately reached out to grab his opponent’s wrist before giving it a gentle squeeze. “Crack!” A crisp sound could be heard and the bearded man’s arm fractured from the wrist down. If it was not for his skin and tendons keeping it in place, it would have fallen on the ground already. “Ah!” The bearded man’s dagger instantly fell on the ground. That intense agonizing pain caused his face to cramp. After a loud shriek, his entire body recoiled back. Fane kicked the dagger with the tips of his foot which caused it to instantly shoot out and stab the bald man’s thighs as he was getting ready to attack. “Ah!” The bald man cried out in pain and his expression looked extremely bitter in that instant. Shocking flashes could be seen at the corner of his eyes. Not only was Fane’s speed incredibly fast, his movements were as fluid as flowing water. Anyone who could pull this off would be of masterly skilled. It seemed he was able to clearly see through their every move.

Chapter 289

However, the bald man was also violent. He immediately pulled the dagger out of his thigh while fresh blood spewed out like a geyser. He then took the dagger and started charging at Fane. When he charged with the dagger, he cracked a grin at the edge of his lips. That was because the attacks of three other men from the different directions had landed. Four men except the

bearded man with the broken arm were attacking Fane from four different directions. Four powerful foes had Fane surrounded and based on the angle of attacks, it would be impossible for anyone to dodge out of the way. Those other three men all felt like Fane could never escape this time. However, all they could see in that instant was a blur. With a single jump, Fane's movements were so fast, he contorted into a very odd position, completely avoiding their attacks. He then came behind one of them and with a sweeping kick, that man fell on the ground. "Thud, thud, thud!" When the other three men realized something was amiss, Fane's attacks were already in action. It did not take too long for those three men to fall on the ground. Threre was another dagger in Fane's hand. An ancient dragon picture was carved on the dagger's body. His dagger was unimaginably sharp and just when all four men had just stood up, Fane made a full circle slash while those four men stood frozen on the same spot. "Thud, thud, thud!" All four men slumped over immediately. Fear was still fresh in their eyes and a huge slash wound could be seen on their necks. Due to how fast Fane's speed was, that dagger was not stained by blood and it took two to three seconds for the blood to start pouring from the slash wounds on their necks. "No, impossible!" The bearded man who had a broken arm was so terrified, he was losing his composure. He never expected that even with a fully surrounded attack on Fane by five extremely powerful men, would end up like this. He was skeptical that this brat was no ordinary veteran. This brat had to be insanely powerful, he might actually be a major. As he looked at the four corpse lying on the ground, the bearded man no longer cared if Young Master Ruben lived as he turned around to escape. "Swoosh!" Unfortunately, even with the chances that Fane gave him, within two seconds, a slash wound could also be seen on the bearded man's neck. He had the same frightened look as he slumped over on the ground. It was only then did Ruben realized just how terrifying Fane was. The five tigers were all actually single-handedly murdered by him since that speed was unimaginably fast. "No, impossible. Who exactly are you? If you're not a

marshal then you should be a King of War!" Ruben knew there was no escape for him since his leg was already injured. Although he was afraid, he had no intention to escape because his escape would be impossible. "Originally, I was planning to let you live after getting my 3.8 million!" After Fane smiled, he added, "However, the condition we agreed on was for you to not play any tricks when I allowed you to make a phone call. I didn't expect you to not appreciate your final chance. You only have yourself to blame!" "Who exactly are you? Marshal or the King of War?" Ruben seemed displeased with his own death since he refused to believe Fane was a simply retired veteran. However, the intel Xena told him this brat had merely served in the military for five years and he made some minor contributions, nothing significant enough. "Guess higher!"

Chapter 290

Ruben had always thought he was quite intelligent. Therefore, if Fane was not a marshal, he would be a King of War. Since it was only in those situations could someone murder five of their Dragon God Clan powerhouse. The position above the King of War would be the nine Gods of War. However, the identities of all of them were all announced on T.V. Hence, everyone knew who they were. Amongst the nine of them, none were named Fane and he wanted him to guess higher? "No way? Could there be a tenth God of War? You weren't made public?" Ruben frowned and he knew that he would be dead soon since Fane would never let him go. However, he wanted to know who exactly was this brat. Suddenly he had a eureka moment as he gasped and said, "You, you're the Supreme Warrior! Yes, that has to be it, the Supreme Warrior was originally planned to be made public but was canceled at the very last minute. Therefore, the identity of the Supreme Warrior had become a mystery!" With that thought, Ruben's heart was shocked. He never expected to cross the Supreme Warrior for a measly 3.8 million bucks. The existence of the Supreme Warrior was the peak of all of Cathysia, one who was capable of calling the winds and rains

on a whim. “Haha! Haha!” Finally, he burst out laughing as he said, “I truly never expected that I will be able to meet the majestic Supreme Warrior. Alright, after gazing upon his true face, I have no regrets dying!” After he was done speaking, he stood up while gritting his teeth and said, “Come on now, make it quick and painless, you’ll have my thanks!” Fane never expected this brat would behave more like a man upon his death! “Swoosh!” Fane made a backslash, turned around, and walked toward both leather boxes. He said, “I originally intended to completely level the Dragon God Clan but since you greeted death in such a manly way, I will allow your father and your relatives to live!” Any man who showed no fear upon death was something Fane could respect regardless of any evil deeds that man had done. When he approached the leather boxes, Fane took out his cell phone and gave Lana a call. After leaving behind a message, he returned to the city with those boxes. “You came back with the money?” When he just entered the courtyard, Fiona ran up to him excitedly. When she noticed both leather boxes in Fane’s hands, Fiona was ecstatic as she said, “Awesome! It seems like my money has returned!” After she was done speaking, she snatched the boxes over, placed them on the floor, and opened them to take a look. “Holy sh*t, it’s really back. My money, oh my money!” Fiona was extremely emotional as she gave both stacks of money a kiss each. “Oh mother-in-law, money is really dirty and it’s riddled with germs!” Fane let out a bitter chuckle as he reminded. Fiona looked up and rolled her eyes at Fane before saying, “I don’t care if it’s riddled with germs or not even if it’s poisoned and as long as I’m poisoned to death by money, I’d be completely willing!” Fane felt awkward after hearing that as he said, “You should hurry up and keep them away just to make sure no one else who walks by notices it. Money shouldn’t be exposed out in the public, do you understand?”

Chapter 291

“Right, right, right. You have a point!” Fiona frantically kept her money away and closed the box before saying, “You finally did something useful.

You only used a day or two to retrieve the money I lost, it seems that you're not so useless after all!" "Not only is he useful, I think I'm starting to like this brat!" Andrew chuckled and hopped around twice before doing a few squats. He then said with a smile, "Look, Fiona, it's all fine now and I'm like a normal person now. I can now jog with this leg!" "It's actually better now!" Fiona was also surprised since Fane claimed he could heal it in a week's time and she did not expect it would actually heal. It was a miracle. However, she soon thought about something as her expression dimmed. She said, "What's there to be happy about? Your legs were normal in the first place anyway. It was all thanks to this brat that your leg ended up like that and now you're actually happy? Hmph, it's merciful enough to not have him repay the losses!" "You're right, Ma, this was my fault and I should reimburse the losses. Tell me, how much do you need?" Fane cracked a bitter laugh and did not take any of those remarks personally. That was because it was true that Andrew's leg ended up like that due to him. If he did not do the deed with Selena on their wedding night, their entire family would not have suffered for five whole years. Hence, it was well within reason for Fiona to blame him. "Forget it then. Just focus on getting the 20 million prize money ready for the old master's birthday. Don't even think about us acknowledging you and even touching our Selena without the 20 million bucks!" Fiona exclaimed immediately. The more she thought about the horrible ordeal from back then, the more infuriated she became. She was starting to suspect if she had owed that brat in her past life to have caused a chain reaction for their family's suffering. "Don't worry, don't you worry. Not a penny less!" Fane nodded. "Fane, a week has passed but you've only worked for over twenty days. Unless the Drake family agreed to give you an advance payment for your 20 million bucks wage, how else would you be able to fork out that much money?" Andrew's attitude toward Fane had obviously changed drastically. At the very least from his observation in recent days, Fane was a great husband and an amazing father! Moreover, not only was Fane skilled in combat, his medical skills were unparalleled.

He never expected that Fane would be able to heal his leg when the specialists were unable to. So much so, he was not even required to take any medication. All he needed to was to be massaged by Fane every morning while getting acupuncture with a few silver needles and his leg got progressively better. This was a miracle to him. “Don’t worry, I will get the money for my father-in-law!” Fane laughed and said, “Miss Tanya is quite close to me and I believe if I tell her about it, she would have no problem giving me a two to three months advanced payment of my monthly wage!” Andrew let out a sigh of relief after hearing it. “You can relax now. If this brat could fork out that much money, our daughter will never leave him then!” “Young Master Michael mentioned that he’s willing to fork out 50 million bucks and can hold a spectacular wedding even! Hmph, I’m not actually hoping for that brat to be able to fork out this much cash!” Fiona seemed slightly unhappy.

Chapter 292

“Wedding?” Fane was stunned before saying with a smile, “I also owe Selena a wedding but don’t worry, after the old master’s birthday, I will give her a wedding of a lifetime!” “You?” Fiona scanned Fane before speaking in a very disdainful tone, “You? You alone want to throw a wedding of a lifetime? Who would believe that? I think it’s more like holding a very embarrassing wedding rather than that!” “Hehe, don’t boast so blindly. How can such little money be enough for a wedding of a lifetime? You’d be impressive enough if you can actually give the old master a gift that costs more than 10 million and make our family proud!” Andrew chuckled. Even though the wedding back then was held in a very lackluster manner; it was done similarly to a gathering meal for the Taylor family which embarrassed Selena into oblivion. However, that was five years ago and since Fane’s and Selena’s child had already grown up, Andrew never took it personally. Now that both Fane’s and Selena’s monthly wages were not low and as long as they worked well, their life would naturally be much better than how they

were back then. “Don’t you worry, Father-in-law, I owe this to Selena so naturally, I will give her a wonderful wedding!” Fane smiled calmly then said, “That’s right, let’s talk about this when the time comes. I’m not in a hurry to let her know yet, so I’ll surprise her in the future then!” “Hehe, if you can keep to your words and hold a wedding of a lifetime to make it up to our Selena, I will not blame you for the five years of our suffering!” Fiona chuckled while crossing her arms in front of her chest. She was obviously not buying what Fane said. Not to mention, Fane even proclaimed he would prepare a gift that would cost over 10 million bucks for the old master. A gift like that was extremely rare. It was uncertain just what kind of a gift Fane would prepare then. “Oh right, what should we do about Xena? It was her conspiring with the motor robbers to snatch away that 3.8 million of yours!” “When I went over, I saw her with the gang of motor robbers too!” Fane said after some thought. After Fiona heard it, she furiously clenched her fists and said, “I’d rather you not bring up Xena. Bringing her up infuriates me. Our Ben loves her so much and yet she conspired with the motor robbers to snatch money that belongs to our family? Truly infuriating. I’ll have Ben break up with her when they come back. I refuse to believe that my handsome son couldn’t get a girlfriend!” After Fane heard her, he cracked a bitter smile and said, “Xena noticed me spotting her, and I’m afraid she might not have the courage to come back home now.” “Sigh, it’s getting late now, I haven’t gone to the Drake family home yet, I should get going now!” After Fane was done speaking, he turned around and left swiftly. After Fane left, Andrew told Fiona, “Honey, look, my leg has fully recovered. It’s quite flexible too!” As Andrew spoke, he hopped around a couple of times and said, “I feel like Fane isn’t too bad. His monthly wage is 20 million and that means, he will have 200 million a year. Moreover, he’s nice to Selena and Kylie. In a year or two of them working there, we will have enough money and not to mention, he’s quite medically skilled too!”

Chapter 293

Fiona’s expression turned bitter as she said, “Young Master Michael had mentioned that 50 million is no problem to him and will hold a grand wedding for Selena. He has real money. Fane, on the other hand, he’s poor and yet he likes to boast. You can’t believe anything he says though!” “However, his wages happen to be real. It was personally promised by Miss Tanya herself. That can’t be fake, right?” “Look at my leg, it's actually recovered now, right? I feel like this is a miracle! Even the specialists couldn’t do a thing about it and yet he’s able to heal it!” Andrew was still speaking up for Fane. “Hehe, before he received his wages, that money is still not his. Besides, Fane is too used to being on the battlefield and he’s a magnet for trouble so he's nothing more than a mindless brute. It’s unsure when he’ll cross someone he shouldn’t again and we’ll have to suffer on his behalf.” “As for your leg, since Fane had spent so much time on the battlefield, obviously he would know how to heal blunt force-related injuries, isn’t that normal? Perhaps he might not even know how to treat a simple common cold!” Fiona rolled her eyes at Andrew, grabbed those two leather boxes, and walked inside. She said, “We can’t lose these boxes of money. It’s not easy to get them back. Let’s save this money in a different bank tomorrow morning, don’t get spotted by anyone else again!” The corner of Andrew’s mouth twitched as he watched Fiona leaving. Was his leg’s injury only a minor sprain? At this moment within the hideout of the Dragon God Clan. It was housed within a luxurious mansion. A middle-aged man was sitting there with a few members of the Harvey family around him. “What’s the matter, Father? I heard you’ve dispatched all five of the Five Tigers of our clan. Did something major happen?” A young lady was staring at her father, the legendary Boss Harvey as she asked that question. “Your brother had an incident. He’s fine, it’s just that he enjoys snatching stuff from people with his motor robbers. He didn’t expect to run into someone exceptionally powerful this time which murdered everyone that

was with him. He even called us to have us return the 3.8 million bucks he previously snatched!" "So, I dispatched all Five Tigers!" The middle-aged man's expression seemed cold. He looked at the time and said, "The only thing is, based on their skills and how they usually operate, they should be back by now, right?" "Boss, are all Five Tigers really necessary just to take care of one man? Just randomly pick someone who is quite skilled from our Dragon God Clan. Wouldn't that do it?" An old man casually said, "It seems someone actually has a deathwish to be bold enough to cross our Dragon God Clan!" "Finn, a few days ago, we've lost more than two hundred men and you were investigating it, so have you found out anything? Now, we can't be too careless regardless of anything. If someone can kill Scar, they might actually be able to murder the remaining Five Tigers, do you understand?" Boss Harvey had a serious look on his face. After some thought, he spoke, "Back then, the Middle Province was still quite peaceful. However, the current Middle Province is different. Plenty of veterans have returned and amongst these veterans, there were King of Wars and marshals. Although they act alone, each of them are extremely powerful people. Just previously, there's a King of War named Xerxes Zechs, didn't he level the entire Xavier family, a second-class aristocratic family even, on a whim?" As he spoke, Boss Harvey continued, "So, everyone should be a little more careful in doing things next time. Those King of Wars were quite low profile so even if we run into them, we wouldn't know. Especially when they are all retired from battle, their attacks would be extremely ruthless, not to mention, they're quite keen on being the hero. Hence, we should act more carefully!" After Finn heard that, he nodded and said, "Well said, just like the last time when we lost more than two hundred men, plenty of people in the Middle Province were all calling the murderers of our men a hero!" "Don't you worry, Father, that brat that dares to assault brother will never have the chance to live to see tomorrow. All Five Tigers had been dispatched over and it's not like he can fly away, right?" The young lady laughed and spoke confidently.

Chapter 294

However at this very moment, a beautiful woman dressed in a sexy split-end Cheongsam while wearing a facemask arrived at the main entrance of the mansion. Not long after, the man stationed at the entrance rushed in with a swollen and beaten face. “Boss, boss, not good. A woman in a facemask said she wanted to see you!” The man said after rushing in while lowering his head. “What happened to your face?” An elderly man asked immediately. This happened to be the residence of the boss of the Dragon God Clan and some elders, could anyone be here to seek trouble? The man raised his head and said, “The body of this lady is incredible and even more so, she’s sexy too. So, a few of our guards wanted to rip her facemask off to take a look. Unexpectedly, however, this woman is insanely powerful. She defeated us without any effort. She even mentioned if she hadn’t seen you in three minutes, she would destroy our Dragon God Clan!” “How bold of her!” That elderly man slammed the table after being infuriated. He then stood up immediately with an incredibly bitter look on his face and said, “This happens to be the Dragon God Clan and yet she boasts about destroying it? Who does she think she is?” “A woman acting so arrogantly?” Boss Harvey’s expression dimmed as he said, “Let her come in then we’ll talk!” Soon, Lana, who was wearing a facemask due to her fear of being recognized by people, arrived at the mansion’s lobby. A hundred to two hundred people surrounded her with a serious look on as they stared at her. Since this woman could so easily defeat more than ten people outside, earlier. Would a woman like this be normal? The most important thing was, none of the Five Tigers were currently present in their headquarters. This could mean trouble for them. “Who are you? What do you want?” Boss Harvey asked with a frown. “This lady and her body, why does she look so familiar?” After one of the men gave it some thought, he suddenly seemed to have recalled something as he exclaimed, “I remember, she’s the lady that spent 500 million to buy that luminous pearl at the auction!” The

Dragon God Clan was present at the auction back then. However, they never took part in it and were merely there to spectate. Although there were some wealthy merchants in the Dragon God Clan but they were involved in some underground business. “You’re that mysterious lady?” Boss Harvey frowned and said, “What are you doing here? We have no business with each other!” Lana looked at him and said, “Bring your men and leave the Middle Province. You are given a chance to live!” “Gasp!” Everyone gasped after hearing that. They did not expect that the first thing this woman would say could be something so arrogant by telling them to leave the Middle Province! “Who the hell are you? Do you have a deathwish for telling us to leave the Middle Province?” “You’re not too bad looking, haha. Lady, are you looking for a boy toy, what do you think of me?” A bearded man had long since been attracted to Lana’s body as he could not hold back his teases. Lana squinted her eyes then suddenly took a step forward and punched directly at the man’s chest. “Thud!” The man immediately flew off from the impact while coughing up blood. He died instantly. Lana stared at the man coldly before taking her face mask off as she said, “I am only a messenger. Those Five Tigers of yours are already dead now. Oh, that’s right Boss Harvey, your son is also dead. You guys can stop waiting now. Telling you to leave is giving you guys a chance to live or else, everyone in the Dragon God Clan needs to die!” Boss Harvey’s face turned inhumanly pale after hearing what she said as he took a few steps back from feeling completely terrified. He said, “No! Impossible! How is it possible for the Five Tigers to die? My son, were they unable to save him?”

Chapter 295

“Boss, Boss Harvey, look carefully. Who, who is that?” An elderly man finally recognized Lana. He was so startled by it, even his voice sounded shaky. The most terrifying part of all was that Lana was merely a messenger. Who exactly could possibly make a God of War send a message on their behalf? “God-Goddess of War, Lana!” After Boss Harvey took a careful

look at the lady, he gasped. When this majestic Goddess of War arrived at the Middle Province, she would have the power to rule over life and death. It was unsure just how many powerhouses wanted to butter up to her. However, he never expected the Goddess of War would arrive at their Dragon God Clan. Based on reasoning, the arrival of the Goddess of War at their Dragon God Clan should be a good thing. Ironically, however, she turned out to be the bringer of their nightmares. He did not hesitate the slightest bit since these were the Goddess of War's own words. Besides, the Goddess of War did not have that much time to make her way over just to provoke him. Moreover, if their Five Tigers were actually dead, they would really have to leave the Middle Province as soon as possible without the need of the Goddess of War to inform them. Or else, their enemies would no doubt show up soon. Without the protection of the Five Tigers, it would be open season for their Dragon God Clan. "It's, it's really the Goddess of War!" "Yeah, the Goddess of War made her way here personally and had us leave as soon as possible!" "Good lord, who exactly did the young master cross? Since the Five Tigers were all murdered. Fortunately, that person is merciful enough to let us live!" Everyone was completely terrified as they were all discussing it. "Strange, since that person was so insanely terrifying, why would that person be willing to let us live? The motor robbers, my son, and even the Five Tigers were all killed, logically that person had no reason to let us go!" Although this was a hard truth to accept, for the sake of the Harvey family, Boss Harvey had no choice but to admit defeat. He knew that his son had crossed someone that was insanely powerful this time. "He wanted me to tell you that because prior to your son's death, he stood tall like a man and did not beg for mercy!" "Hence, he decided to let go of the remaining members of the Dragon God Clan! Leave now, the sooner the better or else, after people from other clans know that the Five Tigers are dead, you guys will have no way of escaping with anything!" Lana swiftly put on her face mask then strode out of there. Those people who surrounded her earlier opened up a path for her to leave. "Hurry up! Pack your things

and leave the Middle Province as soon as possible. From this day on, our Dragon God Clan will be non-existent in the Middle Province!" "Anyone unwilling to leave, well the Dragon God Clan has been disbanded! You guys can go anywhere you please. Anyone that wishes to come with me, you guys can leave with me!" Boss Harvey left a decisive order. The corners of his eyes turned red at this moment. However, as a man, even if it was excruciatingly painful, he held back his tears. "Dad, brother, he!" His only daughter had already dissolved into a puddle of tears as she sobbed. "Sigh, we have no choice. Truly, we can't afford to cross him. No! we can't afford to at all!" "Letting us live and escape while intentionally bringing us a message is merciful enough!" Boss Harvey sighed and he felt in that instant, he had aged quite a lot. "Young master is strong, he died like a man. Our lives are saved by him!" An elder on the other hand lamented, "The only thing is, who exactly could make a Goddess of War be his messenger. This is truly terrifying!" "I didn't expect our Middle Province would have such truly terrifying hidden forces!"

Chapter 296

"Good lord, major things had happened! The Dragon God Clan has left the Middle Province!" The incident at the Dragon God Clan was gradually being exposed at four in the afternoon. The corpses of the Five Tigers of the Dragon God Clan and Boss Harvey's son had soon been found. This terrified some of the powerhouses in the Middle Province. That was because everyone was aware that the total number of members in the Dragon God Clan was over a few thousand people. However, it seemed even a powerhouse like that could collapse. Of course, there were plenty of people who were happy since the Dragon God Clan was so used to committing heinous acts of crime so arrogantly and their acts had long since angered, everyone. As an example, when they started a company, it would be related to the loan shark. This had broken countless families and destroyed countless homes for people. It was truly depressing. Now that the Dragon

God Clan was gone, everyone would naturally feel happy. The remaining clans, on the other hand, they were all on edge. Aside from being completely shocked by it, they were also very terrified by such news. Of course, aside from the dark forces, there were also major families who were operating legally. They were all feeling the tension. They were all thinking who exactly was powerful enough to murder the Five Tigers of the Dragon God Clan. “Hey, who do you think is powerful enough to completely obliterate the Dragon God Clan?!” “Moreover, based on an eyewitness, the attacker’s speed was insanely fast that might only be done by one or two people. That was no group fight.” Miss Tanya was just about to go shopping and since Fane had just arrived, she brought him along. Whenever she headed out previously, for her safety’s sake, she preferred to bring along a few bodyguards. However, since Fane’s abilities were so powerful, she felt that bringing only him along would be enough. “How should I know? Those folks in the Dragon God Clan are not the kindest of folks and they’d made a lot of enemies so being retaliated by someone is well within the realms of expectations!” Fane cracked a calm smile, took out a cigarette, and started smoking slowly. Miss Tanya stared at Fane before curiously asking, “That’s odd. Your wages are not low anymore and there’s no reason for you to save up so meagerly, right? Why are you still smoking these White-Sand cigarettes? You should be smoking Oriental cigarettes though!” After Fane heard that, he cracked a bitter chuckle as he got lost in a memory. He said, “You have no idea! This cigarette brand has become a part of my life’s memories!” “Can, can you share?” Miss Tanya took a glance at Fane. This was her first time to see Fane in such a melancholy mood. It seemed that these White-Sand Cigarettes had quite the backstory. Fane took a deep puff before saying, “When I first set foot on the battlefield back then, I was really terrified. Back then, I was a non-smoker. Getting a cigarette on the battlefield was a challenge on its own! I have a comrade who absolutely loved smoking and he had also killed a lot of our enemies. He became a hero and had also once saved my life!” As he spoke, Fane lamented,

“Unfortunately, on one occasion, he...stayed behind on the battlefield because he wanted to look for his favorite White-Sand cigarettes! As a result, I cradled him in a puddle of blood and he shoved the cigarettes into my hands and told me with a smile. He hoped that I would finish smoking that entire pack of cigarettes or else, his search would be for nothing!” Fane’s eyes gradually turned red as he spoke. He said, “He is a lot older than us and has saved countless soldier’s lives. Due to his age and since his last name being Brothers, we all called him Bro. Bro was powerful and we called him the God of Blades since his specialty was the saber. He could kill anyone with a single slash and countless have perished under his blade. I didn’t expect it, all for a pack of cigarettes…” As Miss Tanya looked at Fane’s eyes that were gradually turning red, plenty of thoughts raced in her mind. She could feel the pain Fane felt at that moment. That was why Fane refused to change his cigarette brand because he had grown so used to it. Perhaps when he smoked these cigarettes, he could feel Bro by his side.

Chapter 297

The image of his savior lying in his arms manifested in Miss Tanya’s mind. “Ah!” While she was in a trance, she did not realize a few Audis in front of her had suddenly stopped. Miss Tanya was so startled, she frantically stepped on the brakes. However, she still rear-ended one of the Audis. “Miss Tanya, are you actually distracted from listening to my story?” Fane chuckled bitterly as he looked at the startled Miss Tanya beside him. “It’s your fault for being so emotional in your story. I got distracted when I thought about your Comrade Bro!” Miss Tanya rolled her eyes at Fane before getting out of the car fuming. Fane looked at the car plate of the car in front of them. It read B77777. It seemed the owner of this car was not as simple as they thought! Since Miss Tanya had only brought him along as her bodyguard, for Miss Tanya’s safety, Fane followed behind. The owner of the car in front of them immediately got out of his car. “How’d you drive, woman? Godd*mmit, it’s a woman, can’t you watch the road?” After that

man got out of the car, he started yelling at them. A lot of people got out of the Audis in front of him. There were approximately more than ten people in total. All of them were wearing a white shirt, black jeans, and brightly shone leather shoes. All of them looked fresh and they were all bodyguards. A different man who was wearing a pair of shades and a shirt with flower designs on it approached them. He said, “Pfft, what a beauty! She’s driving a Ferrari. Not bad, daughter of a wealthy man, right?” “Sorry, I wasn’t paying attention earlier, also the car in front of me braked too early so…” Since it was her fault for causing the fender-bender and although it was not serious, Miss Tanya was quite sincere as she immediately apologized to him. Of course, that person was not entirely free from blame because Fane noticed earlier that he braked immediately after switching lanes. This made him skeptical if that person was intentionally messing with Miss Tanya after noticing how beautiful Miss Tanya was. Moreover, that man with the flower shirt was the last person to get out of the car. “Hehe, this is a fender-bender you know? So, you think the law doesn’t apply to you just because you drive a Ferrari? I’m sorry but our family is extremely rich and a car like this, we have a few of them at home!” That man in a flower shirt scanned Miss Tanya before teasingly said, “You’re not that old, and your body’s not bad. So, how do you plan on paying for the damages?” “Your car will be quite expensive to fix but in order to show my sincere apologies, I will transfer a hundred thousand bucks to you. So, what do you think?” After some thought, Miss Tanya spoke. “A hundred thousand bucks? Are you donating to a beggar?” That man actually started laughing unexpectedly as he said that.

Chapter 298

Miss Tanya was speechless. This situation was not serious at all, and 100 thousand bucks should be enough. She never expected the man to reply the way he did. Still, she gritted her teeth and suppressed her anger before saying, “500 thousand should be enough, yes? This is nothing more than an

R8. Don’t take me for a fool who knows nothing about cars.” The man merely chuckled. “You’re quite interesting, woman. You actually know cars! It seems you’re much better than a lot of the other female drivers.” The man started cackling out loud before continuing, “So you think paying for the damages of my car will be alright for you? You rear-ended my car and startled me. You have to pay for the mental damage I sustained, don’t you know? Oh, that’s right, the work incapacitation fees as well. My time is incredibly precious, it’s worth millions!” Those bodyguards started laughing after hearing that. “So, girl, do you think 500 thousand is enough?” The man took a step closer while laughing sinisterly. “A million, nothing more than that. Give me your account number and I’ll transfer it to you.” Though seething with anger, Miss Tanya had no intention of arguing with these people. She was seriously suspecting if these people were professional con-artists. “A million?” She did not expect that the man would laugh again. “How is that enough?” he mocked. “You guys won’t be leaving until you give me 10 billion!” Miss Tanya was nervous as she heard that. This was not a con; it was a blatant scam. “10 billion? You’re scamming people, aren’t you?” Fane could no longer watch. It seemed that man was bullying Miss Tanya with the greater number of men he had with him. This had gotten rather unreasonable. “What are you talking about? Judging from your looks, you’re quite handsome. You don’t happen to be this lady’s boyfriend now, are you? Why don’t you pay 10 billion for her?” The man laughed. He had a smug look on his face and did not seem to be taking Fane seriously. Miss Tanya felt bashful as she heard that. “No, he’s not my boyfriend,” she frantically explained, “he’s only my bodyguard!” “Oh, that means you don’t have a boyfriend yet, right? Well, isn’t that something,” he snickered. “Since you don’t have a boyfriend, why don’t you date me then?” The man grinned as he continued to speak to Miss Tanya. “Do you know who she is? You’re even spouting nonsense about wanting to be her boyfriend.” Fane chuckled as he reminded him. The man was too oblivious to know who Miss Tanya really was. Of course, it would be quite normal for the man to not

know about Miss Tanya as the number plates from these cars showed they were from out of state and not locally from the Middle Province. It was unsure if they came over to visit their relatives or for a vacation. “I don’t care who she is. It has nothing to do with a trashy bodyguard like you, right? Besides, she only came out with a single bodyguard. It seems to me that her family background is quite average, so to speak!” “Don’t just judge by the expensive cars she’s driving. Average families would only drive these sports cars out to show. Judge for yourself to see who would casually travel with ten to twenty bodyguards, okay? Going out like this exemplifies a true wealthy person’s image!” The man dressed in a flower shirt grew more excited as he spoke to Miss Tanya, “Lady, you won’t be able to afford the 10 million pay, right? If you can’t, we can talk about payment with a different method!” Miss Tanya gritted her teeth as she was boiling with anger. “Pardon, but I can afford ten billion. However, I won’t spare a single penny on the likes of you!”

Chapter 299

After her burst of anger, Miss Tanya immediately turned around to get into her car. “Let’s go, Fane,” she called out, “let’s not bother with these trash bags. A bunch of scumbags they are! They wanted so much more after we showed them respect!” Miss Tanya had always done things in a very arrogant way. Since she was the one at fault, she apologized to that person and intended to pay up the losses. She never expected that person to be so unreasonable. She was so infuriated she had almost coughed up blood. “Hehe. Want to leave? Can’t let you go that easily now, right?” The man chuckled and immediately waved his hand. This signaled all of his underlings to rush over and immediately surrounded both Fane and Miss Tanya. “What exactly do you want? You’d be dreaming if I’d ever become your girlfriend, do you understand? Day-dream. It’ll never happen in this lifetime!” Miss Tanya was fuming. She had never once been bullied even when she was a child. The man sleazily chuckled. “Let’s make it simple

then: let me kiss you once. That should be fine, right? Since you don't have a boyfriend and that might be your first kiss, your kiss can be a way of repaying for the damages! Think about it; your single kiss is worth 10 billion bucks. Aren't you a little excited about that?" That man was chuckling sinisterly and did not seem to take Miss Tanya seriously. "Miss Tanya, seems to me that these people want to do this the hard way!" Fane noticed the man's arrogance. The jerk had the gall to force a kiss on Miss Tanya. He massaged his fists as he spoke with a smile. "Alright, beat them up good for me! Have them all lie flat on the ground!" Tanya was breathing heavily from being so agitated. Although they had the numbers, she was confident in Fane's skills. He should be able to pull it off. Besides, if Harvey was here, he would have no problem taking care of ten to twenty people, not to mention that Fane was a lot stronger than Harvey. "Haha! You think my bodyguards are all pushovers? You're telling me more than 10 men can't defeat one person?" the man spoke mockingly. "Oh, I understand now. Are you trying to tell me that your family is also very wealthy and has hired a lot of bodyguards and you think by bringing along one or two powerful ones would be enough? Hehe. Lady, I know there are plenty of wealthy people, or should I say, wealthy merchants who'd also hire bodyguards if their families are wealthy too!" "However, the wages to hire bodyguards aren't cheap. Therefore, in order to save money, they wouldn't hire too many bodyguards! I think that's your situation, right?" The man cackled out loud as though he had figured out everything. He then waved his hand and said, "Capture that woman for me. I want to kiss her to my heart's content as reimbursement for the damages on my car!" Thud! In just a few flashy moments, Fane got some of his bodyguards lying on the ground as they cried out in agony. "You bunch of useless trash bags. How can you guys not even withstand a single punch?" That man in a flower shirt was incredibly furious as he noticed his men on the ground. Thud, thud, thud! As he spoke, another group of people began to drop like flies, hurt to the point they could not even fight. They were all knocked out by Fane and could not even help

themselves up. “Good...good lord!” That man in the flower shirt was incredibly terrified as he immediately dashed back to his car and swiftly drove off. He was not even concerned with the conditions of his underlings.

Chapter 300

“That brat sure can run!” Fane let out a bitter chuckle as he stared at the leaving car. “You, sir, are insane! If Harvey was in your position, he wouldn’t be able to solve the whole ordeal as quickly as you even if he’s skilled in combat!” After Tanya vented her pent-up frustrations, she instantly felt a lot better. Fane chuckled heartily. “Can I not be insane for getting paid so much?” He then opened the car door and said, “Come, Miss Tanya, let’s continue shopping. Don’t be affected by a bunch of trash bags!” Both of them left soon after and went shopping. That young master dressed in a flower shirt soon made his way over to Ken’s house. “You have to help me, cousin!” The man with the flower shirt cried and complained the moment he noticed Ken. “Look, I’m here for a fun vacation in your Middle Province, but I didn’t expect to be bullied before I even step foot in your house!” he grumbled. Ken was already frustrated as he thought of ways he could get Selena. Now that he noticed Flynn’s presence here, he was quite impatient as he spoke, “What’s the matter? Who dares to bully you anyway? Weren’t you nicknamed Tiny Tyrant in your city? Your Bane family is still a second-class aristocratic family in Lone City, so how can someone be bold enough to bully you?” Lone City was a huge city much larger than Middle Province. There were also more powerhouses in Lone City as compared to Middle Province. The first-class aristocratic families in Lone City had more power and were significantly stronger than the ones here. Of course, the second-class aristocratic families in Lone City were only a tiny bit more powerful than the ones here. However, they were still incomparable to a first-class aristocratic family local to Middle Province. “Some blind lady rear-ended my car. Not only did she refuse to repay the damages, but she even had her bodyguard hit me! Say, isn’t this infuriating or what?

Thankfully this isn't Lone City, or I'd have her pay up nonetheless!" Relaying his side of the story, he then whined, "Cousin, I'm here to have fun with you but I had an incident in your city, so you have to stand up for me!" "Hehe… So she knows to bring her bodyguard along and you don't? No way, right? I remembered you enjoy going out with your bodyguard, right? Why didn't you go out with yours today?" Ken felt puzzled as he frowned. "I did; brought more than ten even. Who knew those useless trash bags I brought can't even defeat one guy!" "It seems that her bodyguard should be the more powerful one among the bodyguards!" After Young Master Flynn finished speaking, he looked at the front door and said, "Look, those bodyguards of mine haven't even arrived here yet. They can't even stand back up after a punch. Truly humiliating." Young Master Flynn was clueless to how bad the injuries were for his bodyguards. They were all currently hospitalized and it would take them a month or two to recover. "She wouldn't be that unreasonable, right? She rear-ended you and was able to afford a bodyguard, so it would be unlikely that she can't afford to pay you back, right? Also, your car isn't too expensive today, right?" Ken was no fool and he was aware of what kind of a person his cousin was. He said, "Speak now: what exactly happened? You wouldn't be drooling over that person's looks to have caused the current situation you're in now... Right?" Young Master Flynn chuckled bashfully and said, "Cousin, let me tell you just how amazing this woman looked. Moreover, there's this elegance from her body and she doesn't seem too old. As for her body, though… Oh boy, what a body. A simple twitch from her was exceedingly charming and adorable." As he spoke, Young Master Flynn had almost ran out of drool to spill as he continued, "The truth is that I was just toying with her and told her to be my girlfriend, but not only did she blatantly rejected me, but she even told me that I'm daydreaming!" "So?"

Chapter 301

Ken let out a bitter laugh before probing further. Flynn cracked an awkward laugh before continuing, “So, I told my bodyguards to capture the lady so I could kiss her as a form of payment. I feel like this isn’t much of a big deal. However, I didn’t expect her bodyguard would be that powerful, and it took him no effort to take care of mine.” “Who’s that lady anyway? Do you know her name?” After some thought, Ken asked. Since his cousin was having a vacation and something happened to him in this city, he feared that his cousin’s parents would be upset if he did nothing for him. “Well, I don’t know. I didn’t ask!” Young Master Flynn cracked a bitter laugh. “Then how can I stand up for you?” Ken glared at him. “I’ve no idea who that person is, and even if I bring my men over now, I’m pretty sure they’re gone. Do you think they’ll still be waiting for you there? Just think of it as having bad luck. It’ll be much better to think about how to deal with them if you meet again next time!” “Alright then. I’ll save it for the next time we meet, since the faces of both the bodyguard and the lady were seared in my memories anyway. Best they hope to never run into them next time, or I’ll have them know that I—Flynn Bane—isn’t one they can simply mess with!” Young Master Flynn clenched his fist and swore furiously. After accompanying Miss Tanya to shop for three to four hours, Fane noticed it was still early, so he was ready to take a good break in the room the Drake family arranged for him. The room Miss Tanya arranged for him was a room on the second floor in a mansion. Miss Tanya’s cousin, Yvonne used to live in this mansion. Yvonne lost her parents at a very young age, hence she was raised by Old Master Drake. This woman enjoyed having vacations and loved to travel to all sorts of places and gamble, thus she rarely returned to live here. The room Miss Tanya arranged for him was right next to hers. Although the Drake family had accommodation arranged for Fane, Fane did not live here in recent days. He would return home every day to keep his wife and daughter company. This was the most blessed thing he could do in the entire world. After lunch, he would come upstairs to take a nap whenever Fane had nothing to do. When Fane was about to enter his room, he could hear

sounds of flowing water coming from the washroom at the end of the hallway. He frowned. “That’s odd. I turned the tap off when I washed my hands earlier. Could I have forgotten to turn it off? A faulty tap, maybe?” As Fane thought about it, he went to the washroom at the end of the hallway to investigate. He noticed the door was not shut properly and that there was a huge opening. Fane was certain that no one was living here, so it should either be a faulty tap or he had forgotten to turn it off. However, as he was about to open the door, the sound of flowing water stopped and the washroom door swung open while a woman walked out. Fane was stunned at what he saw as this woman had just finished showering and was actually…

Chapter 302

The last thing Fane expected was a naked woman without a towel wrapped around her. She was merely drying her wet hair with a towel before walking out. She was momentarily stunned when she saw him at first. “Ah! A creep!” she yelled from the top of her lungs. She saw Fane turned his back to her, and she seized the chance to bolt into her room and locked it shut. “It seems Miss Tanya’s cousin, Yvonne is back!” Fane chuckled helplessly; he did not expect to see her bare like that. He had to admit Yvonne had a stunning figure. Seemingly two to three years older than Tanya, she looked a lot more mature unlike the princess-like Tanya. Fane decided to return to his room, grimacing due to the sheer embarrassment. It was unsure if that woman would mind or not. This never happened to Fane before. Fearless was he when braved through innumerable enemies on the battlefield, but this? He had no idea how to even start damage control. After a moment, Yvonne stormed out furiously. She changed into a long white dress and went straight to Fane’s room while furiously staring at Fane. If a single gaze could murder, it seemed Fane would have died more than a thousand times over. She held a pair of scissors before pointing it at Fane and barked, “Who the hell are you, creep? How did you appear in the Drake family’s household?

If you don’t come clean, I—I’ll kill you!” “I’m a bodyguard here, and this room was arranged for me by Miss Tanya. She said I could rest in this room whenever I feel tired and that I can also live here!” Fane explained after letting out a helpless chuckle. “Bodyguard?” She looked at Fane suspiciously before looking at his bed. She soon realized the covers on Fane’s bed were stacked neatly; every corner was perfectly aligned. It was better aligned than stacks of dried tofu. This was not something a normal person could do. After a moment of deliberate thinking, Yvonne asked, “You were a soldier?” After all, only returning veterans could keep such a habit. “Yeah!” Fane nodded. “Being a bodyguard after being discharged is normal. It seems you’re not lying to me after all.” Yvonne stared at the man. She initially was furious at him, but as she thought of this man risking his life on the battlefield and fending off the enemy, she calmed down. A person like this might not be a creep. However, when she thought about how she was never once seen by any men the way he did, she felt displeased and humiliated to the greatest extent. “Yeah, I didn’t lie to you! I don’t like lying to people!” Fane let out an awkward laugh. The event that happened just a while ago made him bashful. “Then tell me honestly: Have you seen everything earlier?” Yvonne asked as she gritted her teeth. “Yeah, all of it!” Fane felt awkward. “You...you b*stard. You should be saying no; that you’ve seen nothing at this moment!” Yvonne stomped her feet furiously, angered at his all-too blunt confession. “I told you that I don’t like lying to people. Besides, you told me to be honest!”

Chapter 303

Fane laughed awkwardly before adding, “However, I realized a problem when I saw you earlier!” “What problem did you find, creep?!” Yvonne felt like she could pass out from sheer anger. Was this brat going to point out any flaws on her body? She was not that shabby; not too fat nor too skinny. “Yes, there is a problem…” After some thought, Fane nodded. “Ahh! I’ll kill you!” Yvonne could no longer hold herself back. Had this brat said he

did not see anything, she would have pretended nothing had happened since she assumed he knew to pretend and carry on. She did not expect this brat to be far too honest. He was blunter than a metal rod! All of a sudden, she lunged at him with scissors at hand. In her mind, killing him would be like getting rid of a no-name bodyguard, and her family—even her cousin—would not say anything about it. Alas, how could a weak and frail woman be a match for Fane? For his sake, Fane stood up immediately and instantly grabbed both of her arms. With a light squeeze, the scissors in Yvonne's hand fell to the ground. "Ah!" Yvonne whimpered in pain. In her pain, she lost her balance with her slippers on, and she fell onto Fane. The force made them stumble together and landed on the bed. "You… You creep!" Yvonne could not believe she was on a stranger's bed with this creep. Her cheeks were completely flustered, and she felt completely speechless. "Lady, you have to understand that it was you who charged at me. I was merely defending myself, okay? I didn't expect you to slip!" This unreasonable young lady was making him feel awkward. His wife was much better and would never behave like this woman who twisted facts. "Besides, who wouldn't bring a change of clothes and walk back to their rooms right after their bath? Also, I wasn't the one who opened the door in the first place. You walked out on your own. You can't blame me for this, right?" "Ah!" Yvonne was pushed to her limit. This brat dared to bring that up! "How should I know that anyone would be here?" she argued. "I was living alone here even back then, and even the maids won't ever come upstairs!" Yvonne was going up the wall. Was today a cumulation of eight lifetime's worth of bad luck? She immediately flipped over and straddled on Fane's body. She wanted to strangle this brat to death. However, both of her hands were caught by Fane. She could not break free from his grip. "Damn, Cousin… You're progressing a little too fast, don't you think?" The last thing Yvonne expected was her cousin at the door. Both Fane and Yvonne were petrified at that moment. Fane looked at Yvonne on top of him while Yvonne stared at Fane underneath her. Their faces turned red instantly. "Hurry up and

release me!” She roared before coming down from Fane’s body, her face searing red. All she wanted to do earlier was strangle Fane to death, nothing else. However, that position she was in would make anyone cough up blood. “You’ve misunderstood, Miss Tanya, nothing was going between us. We’re just, well, wrestling!” Fane frantically sat up and fixed his clothes. “Don’t misunderstand us, Cousin. It’s not what you think!” Yvonne felt embarrassed. “Hehe. I know... You guys fell in love at first sight, right?” Tanya chuckled playfully and added, “I didn’t expect you to be so dominant, Cousin. Still, you’re both careless while doing things like that. You guys should close the door. It’ll be embarrassing if anyone had seen you guys!” Yvonne was speechless. She was doomed since ‘I knew what you did’ were written all over Tanya’s face. Judging from her looks, pleading and proving her innocence would no longer work.

Chapter 304

“Shut your own damn door! What nonsense are you spouting about, Tanya? Am I that kind of person?” Yvonne was going crazy from being so infuriated. “It doesn’t matter how handsome he is,” she countered vehemently, “I won’t just sleep with him when we had just met. I’m not an obsessive lover!” “I don’t buy it. I trust what I see, and I saw you were literally on top of him. That can’t be fake now, right?” Tanya giggled and added, “Oh, Cousin, you must be cursing about how I entered in such a wrong moment, and if only I came a little later.” “Miss Tanya, you misunderstood us, really. Nothing happened between us, and you already know that I have a wife!” Fane helplessly explained. He thought that Yvonne might have a mental breakdown if he did not resolve the misunderstanding. “Yes, yes, yes! How can I possibly like him? I don’t even know his name!” Yvonne let out a sigh of relief and it seemed Fane was nice enough to help her explain. “Do you even require to know that person’s name when you love someone? What if you choose to elope with him, Cousin? I can’t do what you did earlier! That was too bold!” Tanya

continued to tease her as she commented, “Had I came in a little later than this, I’m guessing you might even be pregnant, no?” “Tanya Drake, I’ll strangle you!” Yvonne was completely flustered and was beyond speechless. “Alright, alright, Yvonne. Tell me then: Why are you in that position if you’re not making babies with him?” Tanya joked in between laughter. “I was just trying to strangle him. Strangle him to death!” Yvonne immediately glared at Fane furiously. “Why? You guys had just met, and you’re treating him like this? It shouldn’t warrant such a response, right?” Tanya had a puzzled look on her face. “You see, this creep…” Yvonne wanted to explain everything but found herself tongue-tied. Would she want to tell Tanya about how that man saw everything the moment she finished showering? How embarrassing it would be for her if Tanya knew about it? “Because what exactly?” Tanya was even more confused when Yvonne stopped in her sentence. It was uncertain what exactly had happened between these two. After some thought, Yvonne explained, “Nothing. I’m just saying, how can this man live here when I’m also living on the upper floor? He can’t live here. What if this man turned out to be a creep, and what should I do if he barged in my room in the middle of the night?” A thought then occurred to her and she barked at her cousin, “Tanya, how can you assign a bodyguard to live in this mansion? Not to mention, a room opposite mine, damn it!” Tanya sighed. “Dear Cousin, this was arranged by my father. I had no say in the matter!” “Besides, you have no idea how powerful Fane is. Living right next to you gives you a sense of security, you know? Also, he’s extremely capable of fighting! I was out shopping today and was bullied by people since I only brought Fane out with me. He single-handedly took care of that man’s bodyguards!” Tanya explained. “Okay, fine, he’s powerful. Still, he’s a man and he’s living right across my room. Is this appropriate? What if lust begets him someday? Wouldn’t I be…”

Chapter 305

Yvonne did not Fane live here since she hated seeing that man. What Fane spoke next took her aback: “Don’t you worry; I’m not interested in you. Besides, my wife looks ten times more beautiful than you, so do you think I’ll try anything? Would I, a veteran, do something as scummy as assaulting a woman?” “You!” That remark infuriated Yvonne. Not only had this jerk seen everything, but he also implied she looked shabby and was not as beautiful as his wife. Who would not take a few more looks at her whenever she was out shopping? He should know that. Yvonne was extremely confident in her own appearance since those long legs of hers were rather beautiful. “Is she now? I’m quite curious to know who your wife is. If there’s a chance in the future, I want to see for myself just how beautiful she truly is to be ten times more beautiful than me!” Yvonne spoke, her arms crossed at her chest. This brat was obviously boasting. How could a bodyguard marry someone more beautiful than her? Fane chuckled at her statement. “We’ll see if there’s a chance!” Checking the time, he then said, “It’s getting late now, it’s already 5 P.M. I’ll be heading home now. I originally intended to take a break for a moment but was startled by this pretty lady, so I didn’t get to nap.” After he was done speaking, he headed right out the door and swiftly went downstairs. Befuddled, Yvonne looked at her watch on her wrist. “Isn’t...isn’t it only 4.30 P.M.?” she pointed out. “How can he get off work just like that? Moreover, shouldn’t he let his captain know and ask if he agrees to it or not? How is this a bodyguard? He’s living like a young master now!” Yvonne scoffed. “Fire him. A bodyguard like this has to be fired. Tanya, you have to fire him!” Without much to console her cousin, Tanya spoke with a smile, “Yvonne, your hair isn’t even dried yet. You just finished your bath, right? Don’t get so worked up. Your refusal to meet him wouldn’t happen to be due to him walking in while you were showering, now would it?” Yvonne blushed heavily after hearing that statement. “Impossible,” she denied vehemently. “Tanya, don’t you spout nonsense like these, you got that? I’ll get mad if you keep making baseless statements!” “What are you so nervous about? I was just joking

with you. Also, I trust that you've locked the door as you bathed. He couldn't have walked in on you, no?" Tanya laughed and added, "He's no ordinary bodyguard, you know. His combat skills are incredibly powerful, and not even Harvey is a match for him. More importantly, we suspect that he shares a very close bond with the God of War!" "God of War!" Yvonne gasped the instant she heard her cousin mentioned the God of War. "Are you talking about the Goddess of War, Lana?" she sputtered. "Yes, her!" Tanya nodded as she spoke. "Is it now? How can a veteran share any form of relationship with the God of War? Besides, if that was the case, why would he even work as a bodyguard anyway? Someone of such high status wouldn't be a bodyguard, right?" Yvonne was still slightly skeptical about that creep having any form of relationship with the God of War. "Let me explain," Tanya started. "Back then when the God of War was returning, my father took a lot of effort to learn which private jet she was on to pick her up. He did not expect that Fane would disembark the jet with the God of War…" Tanya then continued, "So, we thought that even if that person isn't a God of War, at the very least he shares quite the unique bond with the god. My father stated that pleasing him would be the same as pleasing the God of War. Hence, him working here with us is a good thing." "A monthly wage of 20 million is a little too much now, is it?" Yvonne pouted her lips as she said that. "It's not much. My father even said that he's only working here because he was in a good mood. This price was actually quite low!" Tanya chuckled and beamed, "I trust my father's judgment as well!" Out of the blue, a servant from downstairs called out to Tanya. "Not good, Miss Tanya. A fight is about to break out!"

Chapter 306

"A fight?" The moment they heard that, both Tanya and Yvonne stared at each other before they rushed downstairs. The moment they just got out of the main entrance, they could see a muscular man glaring at Fane. "It's the head commander, Kyle Jones!" "This man revels in fighting people, and the

moment he learns about a slightly more powerful man entering the Drake family, he'd want to spar with him. Otherwise, he'd constantly bug him!" Tanya felt all too helpless when she noticed the head commander, Kyle. Fane was a person the Drake family considered and treated special, but they could not be too obvious about it. Would Kyle hurt Fane? If he did, it would be bad. Of course, the thing about 'pleasing Fane' must be kept private at all times, only known among family members. "Alright, Kyle. I heard that brat happens to be really powerful. You can go crazy on him!" Yvonne's eyes lit up as excitement overwhelmed her. In a sparring match between two powerful people, a tap would signal the end of the match. However, there was a saying about fists being blind and some people would get hurt if both of them fought. It would naturally make Yvonne very happy to watch Fane getting beaten up. "What on Earth are you talking about, Cousin?" Tanya rolled her eyes at Yvonne. Turning to Kyle, she spoke, "Kyle, he's already off work, so don't cause any trouble to him. Just let him get off work. He's also a bodyguard to the Drake family, so there's no need to spar as you please!" "Miss Tanya, you know me. Whenever I meet a powerful person, I'd feel the need to compete. Otherwise, I wouldn't be able to sleep. I heard this brat defeated Harvey, so I want to give it a shot to see who's stronger between us!" As Kyle stared at Fane, flames of battle could be seen burning bright in his eyes. He seemed slightly excited. "So, you're Kyle." Fane had a calm look on his face as he continued, "I heard about you two days ago, and you truly are quite the maniac. You'd fight anyone you see. If my guess is right, you might be no match to the Drake family's Three Major Guardians!" The moment Kyle heard that, the corners of his mouth twitched. "Yes, I'm no match for them, brat," he admitted. "I know they're powerful, but I've challenged them before and I've lost satisfyingly!" Pausing for a moment, Kyle continued, "However, I haven't challenged you yet, so I want to get this over with to see who's more powerful!" "I'm already a retired veteran, and I don't like killing!" Fane stretched and gestured to him with his finger before saying, "However, you're in my way

of me going home. You're wasting my time, and this annoys me. Moreover, if I don't fight a person like you, you'd cling to me like brown sugar. Therefore, I can only agree to your challenge!" "Haha! Alright. Since you've agreed, don't mind if I do!" Kyle cackled. With a stomp of his feet, he lunged directly at Fane. He clenched his sandbag-sized fist and charged straight for Fane. It was releasing a very terrifying shockwave around his fist. The attack was terrifying. He learned about Fane in the last two days. This brat did not even need to clock in or out from work and could come and go from the Drake family mansion whenever he pleased. This was extremely disrespectful to him as the head commander, thus he needed to teach this brat a lesson. Of course, it did not matter if that was the case or not. He would still seek Fane out to spar in order to compare their power levels. Nonetheless, he was ready to beat Fane to a pulp due to the sheer disrespect. Crash! When Fane noticed his attack was coming straight at him, not only did he not get out of the way or anchor down his feet, but his fist met square with Kyle's punch, and it caused Kyle to recoil out of the way. A deafening sound of impact could be heard when both fists clashed. Next thing anyone knew, Kyle was immediately shot back before stumbling seven to eight steps backward. He planted his feet firmly on the ground to keep his balance. "No way!"

Chapter 307

Yvonne was shocked and disappointed when she realized he was no match for Fane. She thought Kyle could beat some respect into that jerk, but who knew... "You lost." Letting out a satisfied chuckle, Fane said, "If you know what's best for you, get out of my way. I need to hurry home!" Kyle was beyond surprised; this brat's strength was inhuman. Not only was he stronger than him, but he was also incredibly fast! He could feel how terrifyingly fast Fane was when he unleashed his attack. Nonetheless, Fane disrespected him by claiming he had lost when he had the lower hand earlier. "You're too cocky, brat!" With his roar or dissatisfaction, he then stomped

on the ground again before he leaped. He clasped his hands together, forming a tight huge fist before lunging down on Fane. When Fane looked up, both of Kyle's fists were balled together like a hammer that was about to smash his head in. "You look like a leaping toad!" Fane could not hold back his laughter when he noticed what Kyle looked like. Then, with a single stomp of his foot, he jumped up and somehow disappeared in thin air. Swiftly, both of Fane's feet landed on Kyle's back as he stepped on him. Smash! Kyle was completely caught off guard from being stepped on by Fane before violently crashing onto the ground. It hurt him so much, he felt like all four limbs were about to be shattered. "Do you yield?" Fane chuckled calmly before asking, "If I really wanted to fight you, you would've been dead a hundred times over! But I got to give it to you: Your combat skills are a tiny bit better than Harvey's!" "Yield! I yield!" How could he not yield when someone was on his back? He could not even compete with Fane's speed, so how could he even fight? Now, Kyle was not even questioning Fane's statement. If Fane wanted to hit him, he would not be able to fight back. Tanya was once again startled by how easily Fane took down Kyle. It seemed not even the Three Major Guardians hidden in their Drake family would be able to pull that off. His combat abilities would absolutely not be a mere soldier on the battlefield. He would at least be a marshal or a King of War! It seemed that her father's prediction was true. Fane chuckled and went straight to the main exit without looking back. He then approached his Porsche and after some thought called out to Tanya, "Miss Tanya, if anyone asks about my Porsche, you can tell them it's a gift from your Drake family, then I'll say I bought it myself!" After Fane was done speaking, he drove off immediately. "What...what's the meaning of this? He wanted you to say that the car he bought for himself was a gift from you guys, then mention about him buying it himself?" Hearing what Fane had to say nearly made Yvonne pass out in confusion. This man was truly a weirdo. "That brat!" Miss Tanya let out a bitter chuckle before explaining, "This man didn't want anyone to know that he's rich. That's why he wanted

me to say that I gifted it to him." "Then why would he still want to claim that he bought it himself?" Yvonne was still confused. "His mother-in-law is quite prideful in nature. I'm guessing it was his mother-in-law who wanted him to tell everyone that!" Tanya merely scoffed and added, "If you spend more time with him, you'd find him quite interesting!" "I don't want to spend more time with him!" Yvonne was bashful as she had been utterly embarrassed in their first meeting. If they had met a few more times, it was unsure just what kind of scary things would have happened.

Chapter 308

Fane had long since arrived home. After parking his car at a nearby empty spot, he walked in. What he never expected was hearing the voices of both Ken and Neil coming from the inside as he approached the door. "Auntie," Ken started, a smile on his face as he spoke, "you know that my relationship with Selena had always been good, so everything I do is for Selena's sake!" As he spoke, he immediately said, "Look, these pictures can't be a mistake. This woman has to be wealthy and is insanely rich. That luminous pearl, well, she won the auction with 500 million bucks! Fane has to be a sugarbaby for being with this wealthy woman!" The corners of Fane's mouth twitched as he listened by the door. This was something Micheal told Fiona back then, and both Fiona and Selena were enraged with this. He faithfully explained to them that the person was actually the Goddess of War and was his friend. To his dismay, Fiona and Selena did not believe him. Even after he told Selena that the God of War was his disciple, she was still unconvinced. Fortunately on that night, although he had crossed Neil, the master of the Hugo family brought Neil over to apologize. The incident went by just like that. Selena even agreed to give him one last chance; he had to fulfill everything he had promised on her grandfather's 70th birthday. Otherwise, she would not believe his nonsense and would also divorce him. That storm seemed to have already passed. He never expected that both b*stards, Ken and Neil would actually show up and bring that matter up to

Fiona while he was at work. Fortunately, he got off work early and was not restricted by normal work hours. He was able to eavesdrop in their conversation. At this moment, Fiona spoke, “The truth is, Young Master Michael had also come over to inform me about it back then and had also shown me the pictures, but Fane just wouldn’t admit. What choice do I have? Besides, this picture can’t prove much. Unless… You guys can show me an even more intimate picture.” “This picture doesn’t prove much?” Neil’s expressions dimmed as he asserted, “Auntie, just look at this lady. Look at how sultry this lady looks, and although her face isn’t exposed, she’s no doubt a beauty. She is rich and beautiful, and this happened during work hours. Do you think it’s normal for Fane to be with her?” Fiona let out a helpless laugh and said, “It’s not normal, but what choice do we have when Fane just wouldn’t admit that he’s a sugarbaby. Besides, he said that this person is the Goddess of War and that they’re friends. We don’t believe him, but he was so adamant about it!” “Goddess of War!” Both Ken and Hugo stared at each other, wondering if they had misheard that. When they looked up pictures related to the Goddess of War online, she was quite manly and intimidating to people. That woman during that day was dressed in a sexy skirt while exposing her thighs. Those were two very different styles. That Goddess of War actually had a feminine side? When they thought about the Goddess of War’s body, they gulped. If that was actually the Goddess of War, she would be quite alluring with the way she dressed. “He’s only been a soldier for five years. How could he possibly know a person like the God of War? He’s blatantly boasting!” “Selena actually believed a lie like this?” Ken immediately asked. “Of course my daughter wouldn’t. She even wanted to kick Fane out that night!” “Nonetheless, didn’t your father bring you here to apologize, Young Master Neil? He even gave us 300 thousand bucks. I took the money while Fane was allowed to stay that night.” “Perhaps it was for the child and due to the picture being insufficient to prove much, so Selena gave him one final chance!” “If Fane can’t fulfill his promises, Selena will kick him out!”

Chapter 309

Fiona explained the situation. Both Ken and Neil looked as though a lightbulb lit up in their eyes. “What chance?” they asked simultaneously. “Fane had promised me to give me 20 million bucks during the old master’s birthday. Also, since he had beaten Ivan up, he needs to pay him 10 million bucks in addition to giving our old master a gift worth more than 10 million!” Fiona tittered. “So, that’s the whole situation.” “Really? Splendid. That brat will no doubt fail to pull that off. Then, Selena will kick him out. That’s truly amazing!” “Yeah. There are about 20 days left until the old master’s birthday, and our Hugo family will be present. I’m interested to see how Fane is going to embarrass himself!” Both young masters looked very delighted. They finally caught a glimpse of hope. Fane was lucky back then. He was not beaten to death by O’Neal and instead, luck was on his side! This caused both of them to nearly cough up blood. They did not expect to find a silver lining in their cloud. “I genuinely think Fane might actually pull this off, though.” Fiona said with a bitter laugh while she looked at them both. “Isn’t the brat making 20 million bucks a month now? He said that he’s close with Miss Tanya, and he’ll request for an advance payment of two months. That would be enough! Judging from his looks, he didn’t seem to be lying!” Upon hearing that, both young masters were so infuriated, they nearly coughed up blood. They had gotten a taste of what it felt like as one fell into hell from heaven in an instant. “A gift that is worth over ten million is quite rare. Is he ready with that gift?” Neil said after some thought. “Him? How does he have any money now, anyway? Hmm, we’ll see then!” Fiona spoke with a laugh. At this moment, Ken gritted his teeth and took out a packet with an unfamiliar substance. Handing it over to Fiona, he said, “Auntie, you’re also hoping for your daughter to marry someone capable, right? You don’t wish to suffer like this for the rest of your life, yes? Dissolve this in water or any drink and have Fane drink it. Everything will be better when he’s dead.” “Poison?” Fiona gasped when she heard that, and

even her expression changed. “No way, no,” she rejected it vehemently. “Although I don’t like Fane and he caused us so much suffering, I can’t do anything like this. This is way too sinful.” It seemed both Ken and Neil came prepared. They stared at each other before taking out a card and placed it in front of Fiona. “Money?” Fiona frowned when she saw the card. Ken chuckled triumphantly. “There’s 100 million in it. A whole 100 million in it! If you’d help us out, you’ll guarantee Selena’s happiness and secure a happy life with all this money! Isn’t that a good thing?” “100 million!” Fiona gasped, an audible gulp followed suit.

Chapter 310

Fiona’s eyes widened into saucers when she heard the card had 100 million in them; it seemed as though her eyes would fall on the ground. Even her breathing labored. This was 100 million. To the Taylor family, this was still a lot of money. If this money was only hers to spend, she would not have to worry about for her entire lifetime. Her family would live a wonderful life, and it would not matter if they return to the Taylor family or not. Both Ken and Neil were delighted at Fiona’s reaction. This meant they would not have to do anything to kick Fane out of the picture. Besides, if Selena herself was to request a divorce, Fane would have no choice but to obey despite his brazen nature. They did not expect that method would be ineffective since they would still have to wait for 20 more days. Moreover, after listening to what Fiona said, Fane might actually be able to fork out 40 million on that day. Their initial plan: ruined. Therefore, they had to move on to their second plan. Since Fiona absolutely adored money and not a single person would say no to money, as long as she agreed to work with them—to poison Fane—they would succeed half-way through. They were worried Fiona might think the money was too little, so they both gritted their teeth and each forked out 50million to make that 100 million bucks bribe. “So what do you think? It’s 100 million, Auntie. For your happiness and for Selena’s sake to marry someone decent, you’ll have 100 million after you make Fane drink

this!” Ken immediately started sweet-talking to her. “Yeah. You can get a new house, or you can demolish yours and rebuild a much bigger mansion on top of it. With money, your son would live a much better life! As for your daughter’s hand in marriage, it doesn’t matter if she marries me or Young Master Ken. It’ll be a lot better than marrying a retired veteran, right?” Neil began persuading her as well. He coaxed her as he repeated, “There’s 100 million in this!” “Right, right, right! A hundred million. One, hundred, million!” “The pin is six zeros. Auntie, I believe in you!” Both of them spoke in unison. Fiona’s heart was moved. She desperately wanted this much money. However, after some thought, she forcibly handed the card back to them with a sigh. “Just forget about it.” “Why? Auntie, this happens to be 100 million. Do you not like money?” “Yeah, Auntie. Think about your family and the good days they could be living in the future. Not to mention, isn’t the five years of suffering you guys endured caused by Fane?” Fiona actually turned them down when they were so close to succeeding. This made both Young Master Ken and Neil speechless. They almost coughed up blood. Fiona inhaled sharply. “If this is something else, I would, but this....well... I can’t do it!” “Besides, he’s a living, breathing human. How can I murder a human? Moreover, Kylie is such an obedient child, so how can I treat her father like this? I can’t allow Kylie to live without a father!” Fiona sighed and said, “Although Fane has no money and is a little poor, he’s not a bad person. It’s only 100 million anyway, and as long as he does his job properly, we’ll have this money as well!” Fiona chuckled bitterly as she added, “I acknowledge your good wills, both of you young masters, but letting me murder someone for money is something I can’t do. Not to mention, Fane fended off enemies on the frontlines. Without him, we would’ve lost. Do you think we’d have a peaceful life right now if he hadn’t?” Both of them were speechless after Fiona’s statement. This method was indeed a little underhanded, but Fane could really fight. To eliminate him once and for all, both of them had to scramble for ideas.

Chapter 311

Fane, who was by the door, felt slightly comfortable. One billion was a really huge amount and he thought Fiona would accept it as she loved money. He had no idea Fiona would resist the temptation and rejected them. Fane thought about it and knocked on the door acting as if he knew nothing. “Who is it?” The trio in the room was startled. Neil and Ken quickly hid the packet of drugs and bank card away. “Mother-in-law, I'm back. Is Selena back from work?” Fane yelled at the room in a pretentious way. “Oh, no! She should get off work soon, why don’t you pick her up?” Fiona felt guilty and wanted Fane to leave. “Alright, I’ll fetch her.” Fane soon left in his car. Fiona finally relaxed after Fane left. She patted her chest and said gratefully, “Oh my god, I was so afraid. If he saw the both of you, he might beat you up. Listen to me, this guy has a bad temper and sometimes he's hard-headed who doesn't listen to advice!” “Auntie, you should give this a second thought. It’s one billion!” Ken did not reconcile to Fiona’s decision. “We’ll leave first and you can give us a call after you have made your decision. It’s just a simple task. This drug is hard to detect because it’s colorless and tasteless. Apart from that, it takes time to take effect. He’s symptoms would only be flu, fever, and fatigue. It'll take one whole month before he dies.” “Leave, we’ll speak some other day!” Fiona was so startled by Fane’s sudden return and she felt relief after sending them away. “The both of them are too much! They want to use such a despicable way to get Selena. I dare not provoke people like them,” Fiona spoke in fright after she sent them away. “People like them are so despicable. Will they drug Selena if they have any conflict in their marriage? Or will they feed the drugs to me? Poor people like Fane are much more reliable.” It was obvious that Fiona’s impression of Fane had changed after Fane gave her money twice and helped her get the 3.8 million back. The most important point was Fane’s salary. He had a yearly income of more than 200 million. Hence, why did she need to kill someone for a mere billion? Although she disliked Fane and

wanted to chase him away, she dared not think about killing him. If Selena and Kylie find out in the future, they would despise her. Hence, Fiona refused the temptation in this crucial moment. “Sigh. Fane, you bastard, do you have any idea what I have given up for you?” Fiona sighed and was sad. How could she be happy for giving up one billion? “Xena, what happened to you? Why didn’t you answer my calls?!” Ben finally found Xena in an internet cafe. He pulled her to the roadside and asked. “Stop looking for me. It’s best if we break up!” Xena looked at Ben and said.

Chapter 312

”Break up? Why do you want to break up? Weren’t we doing fine and you were going to marry me?” Ben couldn’t accept the reality. He backed up for two steps and felt as if he was struck by lightning. “Haha, why? Money. Who knew that you're so poor!” Xena was so angry when she thought of how Fane almost killed her that afternoon. It seemed that Ben had no idea what happened that morning. “Money?” Ben was stunned when he heard this. He begged, “Xena, don’t you worry, we'll get rich. Do you need money? My mother has money. I can get it from my mother if you need it!” Xena felt her heartbeat skip a beat when she realized that Ben trusted her. His sister had a high salary, and Fane’s salary was even higher. She had no savings and no place to go because she had spent all her money. If she broke up with Ben, it would be difficult to hook up with another rich man. Why don’t think of a way to continue her relationship with Ben and see if there would be other opportunities to find a sugar daddy. ‘That’s right. Fane is Ben’s brother-in-law. It's impossible for him to kill me in front of Ben, right? Apart from that, Fane works with the Drake family and the people he comes into contact with are also from that family. There’s a chance for me to get closer to Eldest Young Master Drake if I get the opportunity to meet him. If that's the case, my social status will improve in leaps and bounces!’ Xena changed her idea after giving it a thought. She bit her sexy red lips and said with an aggrieved expression, “Ben, I don’t want to break up with

you… But I have wronged your family. Will you forgive me?" Ben immediately responded hearing this. "Xena, don't you worry. I will forgive you no matter what you did as long as you stay with me. I believe there must be a reason behind what you did!" "Ben, you're the best!" Xena was touched. She threw herself into Ben's embrace and felt relieved. "It's okay, stop crying and let me bring you out for good food!" Ben said with a smile. Xena nodded. "Sounds good. However, let's not go home and spend the night in the internet cafe. I did something wrong and your parents are angry about it. Let's give them some time to calm down before going back!" "Sure, let's go. I'll carry you in Honor of Kings!" Ben was extremely happy. He was frightened when Xena requested a break up. He suddenly felt as if he had found something he lost, and all he wanted was to cherish this woman in his arms. Both of them left quickly. When Fane passed by the kindergarten in his car, he looked over and his face darkened when he saw what he saw. He saw two men surrounded the maid, Jenny, and Kylie in a corner. At the same time, one of the men pushed Jenny with force. Jenny's electric scooter fell on its side and broken. "Bad guys!" Kylie looked at both men and yelled out loud. "Little bastard, what do you know? Why are you poking your head into an adult's matter?" The man smiled coldly and pushed Kylie. "Kylie!"

Chapter 313

Jenny was about to get up from the ground when the man pushed Kylie. As Kylie fell on the ground, Jenny quickly leaped, laid down, and caught Kylie with her body. "Don't you understand? Children can't interfere with what the adults do!" a boy standing beside the men said arrogantly. "See, this child understands!" The man laughed and discovered a button had dropped from Jenny's white shirt during their fight. He looked inside from above and his eyes lit up. He gulped, "Tell me, how are you going to compensate me? Don't even think about leaving if you don't have two thousand bucks!" "Two thousand!" Jenny was extremely frightened. She stood up with Kylie

and said angrily, “This is unreasonable. We were just getting in the car and did nothing wrong. You were the one who knocked us down when you were reversing your car. Now, you dare ask us for compensation?” “That’s right. You aren’t sorry for knocking into us and actually want us to pay you! All of you are bad guys! If my daddy knows about this, all of you are finished! My daddy is a hero that fights bad people!” Although Kylie was young and her eyes were filled with aggrievance, she did not cry and kept her composure well. Other children would have started crying loudly under these circumstances. However, Kylie endured what happened and did not cry. Anybody who saw her aggrieved expression would be distressed. “Haha, he fights bad people? He’s a hero?” The man started mocking them after he heard what Kylie said. “What’s the point of that? Is he rich? Look at my son, he travels in a BMW. How about you? You can only sit in an electric scooter under the hot son. Your relatives must have loaned you your school fees to study here.” “Brother, don’t waste your time talking to them, sister-in-law is still waiting at home to have dinner with us! Get them to quickly pay us!” The other man had tattoos on his arms. There was a scary looking green dragon on his left arm and a ferocious white tiger on the right one. “I… I don’t have money! I'm just a maid and I'm picking up my boss' daughter!” Jenny was frightened. They were being unreasonable and she had no idea what to do. “It’s just a car! My dad has a sports car that looks much better than yours!” Kylie scolded angrily. “Haha, you’re a maid? Your dad has a sports car? You must be lying. Admit it and stop acting in front of us! How would you be riding an electric scooter if you're rich?” The young boy’s father started laughing. “I don’t care about your situation and you must compensate me today. Didn't you see that I was reversing? Why didn’t you move? Are you blind?” The people around them looked at Jenny and Kylie in empathy. However, they could not do anything as this world was unjust and unfair. Powerful people had always been bullying the weak ones. “Daddy!” At this moment, Kylie saw Fane’s car parked by the side of the road and he was walking toward them. Fane felt warm when he heard his

daughter addressing him as daddy. He walked over and knelt down. “Kylie, daddy saw what happened. Don’t you worry. Daddy will beat the bad guys!” “Okay! Daddy is a hero that fights bad people!” Kylie nodded and said. When Fane saw an abrasion wound on Kylie's calf, his face immediately darkened. “You bastards are really good at throwing your weight, aye!” Both men started panicking when they looked at the Porsche parked by the side and looked at their BMW that was worth only around 200 thousand.

Chapter 314

The skinny man immediately panicked and spoke to his brother softly, “Brother, what should we do? This person drives a Porsche 911. F*cking hell, it seems that we have caused trouble. That car costs one to two million!” His brother heard him and smiled coldly. “Big brother, you're too cowardly. Why should we be afraid? You don’t have much social experience that's why you're frightened by him. This person is lying!” “What’s going on?” The skinny man was doubtful. “Hey, look at him. He dresses so normally. Does he look like someone that can afford a car?” The man with the tattoos smiled and continued, “I'm confident that he’s just a driver for someone else! This woman doesn’t seem to be a maid. She must be his wife!” “Oh, I see!” The skinny man suddenly understood everything and spoke, “Young man, how dare you describe me like that. Haha, don’t even think about leaving if you don’t have three thousand bucks!” He paused and pointed to the Porsche before continuing, “Don’t think of me as a fool. You're just a driver! Do you think that I would be afraid of you because you drive a sports car? Haha, why should I be afraid of a driver?!” “How dare you ask me for money when you knocked down my maid and daughter while reversing? I should be the one asking you for money!” Fane walked to the electric scooter after he spoke. He picked up the scooter with one hand and threw it toward the BMW. Bang! The BMW dented. The windscreen of the car shattered and the hood of the bonnet collapsed. “Young man, how dare you smash my car! Are you trying to get yourself

killed?” The person was extremely angry. He walked forward with the intention to hit Fane. Fane caught his hand and squeezed it lightly. The man immediately knelt on the ground in pain. "I can kill you now if there were no children around!” “F*ck!” The other man with tattoos rushed forward when he saw his big brother being hit by others. Bang! Fane kicked and the man flew backward, smashing onto the top of the car. He coughed out blood and his face turned pale. “Ouch, ouch, I dare not do this again! Please let go of me, brother!” The skinny man knew Fane’s ability and begged for forgiveness. “Don’t show off in front of me with just a mere BMW! If you want to cause any trouble, you can find me at the Drake family. I’ll be waiting there!” Fane kicked the person’s butt that resulted the person to fall flat on his face. He then turned around and said to Jenny, “Jenny, are you alright? Who knew that there'd be such vile people!” “I’m fine!” Jenny smiled and said to Fane, “Mister Woods, I should be the one feeling bad. I failed to protect Kylie and she fell down!” Fane smiled and felt warm, “You’ve tried your best and this is my fault. I wanted to give this car to you so you can fetch Kylie in it. I’d forgotten about it because I was busy with work these days. I’m so sorry that you have to fetch Kylie with an electric scooter!” Fane continued, “Since your electric scooter is damaged, why don’t you drive my car? I’ll get a taxi to fetch Selena later!” “No, no! I'm not daring enough to drive such an expensive car! Besides, I can't afford the petrol for this car, it doesn’t suit me! I'll be panicky if I drive it!” Jenny quickly waved her hand and said. Fane looked around and discovered an Audi 4S-Authorized car dealership opposite where they were. “What if I buy you an Audi? It doesn’t have to be too expensive so how about an A6 ? I’ll give it to you as a gift and you can use it to fetch Kylie in the future!”

Chapter 315

Fane spoke after giving it some thought. “By the way, if anyone asks you about it, don't tell them that I bought it. Just say your boyfriend gave it to you, okay?” “But… It’s so expensive! Don’t you have to discuss with Miss

Selena before you give it to me?” Jenny said in embarrassment. She was extremely surprised because an Audi A6 was not cheap. Fane actually said that he would give it to her and it would be hers in the future. She was just a maid and had never imagined that she would be able to drive such a car. What made her speechless was when Fane said he wanted to give her the Porsche. She almost passed out from that. “Why do we need to have a discussion? It’s not very expensive. Just don’t tell her about this, alright?” Fane smiled and reminded her. “Oh, okay!” Jenny nodded. She felt that her boss was becoming increasingly mysterious. It seemed that he was not a commoner. At least, he brought money back from the army. He seemed to have received millions in rewards when he retired as a veteran. Fane picked Kylie up, looked at the wound on her leg and asked, “Kylie, does it hurt?” “No! Kylie is so happy to see daddy fight the bad guys. I want to fight the bad guys too when I grow up!” Kylie had an innocent smile on her face. To her, Fane was like a mountain—tall and powerful. As long as her father appeared, the bad guys could only knelt and begged for forgiveness. “Eat this candy. The wound on your leg will heal quickly after you eat it!” Fane smiled and fetched a small black pill. "Remember, swallow it in one go!” “Okay!” Kylie nodded her head seriously and swallowed it in one go. Kylie frowned after she swallowed it and felt as if she had been tricked. “Daddy, why does it taste bitter?” “Silly girl, medicine is usually bitter." Fane petted Kylie’s head and kissed her chubby cheeks. This sense of belonging in a family was really enjoyable! Fane spoke to Jenny embarrassingly after they walked for some time and discovered something was wrong. “Jenny, you seemed to have lost a button!” Jenny lowered her head to look and her face blushed into a bright red color. Although Fane reminded her with good intentions, it still caused her to be extremely shy. “Big brother, it seems that we have misjudged. That woman is really a maid!” “Look, he’s going to buy an A6 for his maid to fetch his child to school!” “He intended to give the Porsche to the maid. He would have done that if the maid didn't reject it. F*ck, we have really met someone that we can’t afford to provoke!” The

man with tattoos finally came down from the top of the car and spoke with blood at the corners of his mouth. The skinny man twitched a few times, looked at his car and said, “It’s all your fault. My loss is bigger now because of your misjudgement. We’ve been hit, the car has been smashed, and we don’t even dare to fart out loud!” Pffft! His son, who was by his side, actually farted as he finished speaking.

Chapter 316

Soon, Jenny drove Kylie home in a newly purchased Audi. Fane, on the other hand, drove to the company and waited for Selena. They drove back home in their respective cars after Selena got off work. “Wow, is this a new car? It looks good!” When Selena returned to the house, she saw the car that was parked outside. “Who does this belong to? Did you buy it for Ben with your own money?” “No. Where would I have the time to buy a car for your brother? Besides, your brother isn't home yet!” “Didn’t Fane promise your brother that he would buy a car that’s worth below one million after he gets his salary? Why would I use my own money when someone else is willing to pay for it!” Fiona immediately said and looked at Fane after she finished speaking. She was obviously waiting for Fane to buy a car for her son. “Miss Selena, this is mine!” Jenny ran over and said embarrassingly. “It’s yours? Not bad! How did you come up with so much money?” Selena was happy and surprised at the same time. Although her salary was considered high, Jenny was from a poor family. “This… My boyfriend bought it for me!” Jenny smiled and replied. “Isn’t your boyfriend from a common family too? This car should be around 500 to 600 thousand? Our original plan was to get a car for you to fetch Kylie after we get our salary! Your boyfriend really treats you well that he buys such a nice car for you!” Selena was really surprised. After all, this was not a cheap car. “It’s fine, Miss Selena. I’ll fetch Kylie with this car!” Jenny said with a smile. “How can we do this? I’ll ask Fane to give you an increment so that you can at least claim the petrol from us every month!” Selena said with a smile, “How can we ask

our maid to pay for our expenses!" "Miss Selena, it's really nothing!" Jenny was in an awkward position. She finally understood why Fane forbade her to tell the truth. Fiona would be unhappy about it. It was fine to buy a car and let Jenny drive it, but would Fiona agree to Fane's action of giving it to Jenny? Of course not! After all, Fane had not buy a car for her son yet, how would she agree to this. "We must give her an increment!" Fane chimed in, "Jenny, what's your current salary?" "It was originally six thousand but Miss Selena said to increase it by one thousand so it's seven thousand!" Jenny smiled and said. She was very satisfied with this salary. "How about this? Let's pay you ten thousand a month including the petrol allowance! It would be easy to calculate a whole number!" Fane thought about it and said. "This… This is too much!" Jenny was embarrassed. This car was given to her by Fane and he wanted to pay her so much for petrol. She was not highly educated and she was satisfied to work as a maid in the Taylor family because Selena had been treating her well all this while. She had no idea that they would pay her a monthly salary of ten thousand. That amount was almost the same as the white-collar workers in big companies. "It's not much. The Taylor family has so many maids but you are the closest one to me. Besides, you've been helping us in secret for the past five years. Don't be modest!" Selena was a kind and grateful person. Now that their lives had improved, she naturally wanted to take care of this maid who followed her unswervingly. By this moment, Kylie finished showering and came running out from the bathroom.

Chapter 317

"Kylie's leg!" Jenny was stunned when she saw Kylie's leg. There were wound and blood just now! Then, there was nothing on her leg to show that she had fallen. "What's wrong with her leg?" Selena turned around and looked in doubt. "Oh, it's nothing. Kylie fell down just now!" Fane said with a smile, "Let's go in and have dinner." "Jenny, come with us. Go home after you've had dinner with us!" Selena pulled Jenny with her into the

house for dinner. “Fane, what happened after you followed them? Did you get mother’s money back? Was Xena the one who did it? Did you see her?” In the morning, Selena went to work after she sent Fiona and the others back home. She had been busy in the office for the entire day and was unsure about what happened after. “Yes, I saw her together with the robbers and I’ve retrieved the money!” Fane nodded and did not mention that the motor robbers’ leader was the son of the Dragon God Clan’s head. “It’s good that we got it back!” Joan, who was on the side, felt relieved. She was afraid the money was not retrieved, Fiona might ask Fane to compensate it to her. After all, Joan had understood Fiona’s character in the past five years. “Mother, I've been telling you that Xena isn't a good person and you didn’t believe me. Look, do you know what kind of a person she is now?” Selena finally said in confidence, “We can't have her around Ben again.” “Sigh, it’s really hard to understand someone’s true nature!” Fiona sighed. “I thought this girl would be a good woman because she was from a poor family and had a difficult life. Although there are times when she dresses up flamboyantly but she should be a kind person. I have no idea...that she would do this for money!” “That’s right. There’s no way we'll allow her to continue hanging around Ben! She might lead Ben down the road of destruction!” Andrew drank some liquor and spoke decisively. “I don’t think that she'll still be dating Ben after this. After all, dignity is as important to man as the bark is to the tree!” Fane estimated that Xena escaped from death and she would be so frightened to appear in front of them for the time being. It was obvious that he did not want to talk much about how he killed those motor robbers and the Five Tigers of the Dragon Gods as he did not want to expose his identity. He wanted to have a stable life and stay by his wife and daughter’s side. Fiona had a different idea as she felt unhappy when she thought about the one billion she lost that afternoon. She could not control herself and stared at Fane. “Yes, dignity is as important to man as the bark is to the tree. However, there are people with skin as thick as the wall. He knows that he’s not worthy to be with my daughter but still won’t

leave.” “Mother, why are you talking about this again? Didn’t we agree to observe Fane’s performance during grandfather’s 70th birthday? It’s not too late for you to chase him away if he can't come up with the money!” Selena helped persuade Fiona. “Humph, it’s happening soon!” Fiona coughed and said. At this moment, the piercing sound of car horn could be heard. Cars were parked outside their house and their lights were on, facing inside of the house. “Who is it!” Fiona walked toward the door angrily. “It’s already evening. Who’s causing trouble here?!” After she opened the door, she was so frightened that she immediately closed the door and petted her chest. “Oh my god, there're so many sports car and people. What do they want?!”

Chapter 318

”A lot of sports cars?” Fane and the others frowned and were stunned. However, a voice could be heard coming from an amplifier outside. “Everybody inside, listen to us. You have been surrounded!” … “No, that’s wrong. Fane, listen to me. I’m here to marry you! Surrender and come out quickly. Follow me home and marry me!” Fane and the others were even more stunned when they heard this. Who was this woman? They had no idea who it was when they heard the voice through the speakers. “Marry you?” Selena was so confused and completely stunned. A woman drove a sports car over to marry her husband? Was that a drama series?! “I... I have no idea who it is!” Fane was embarrassed. “I don’t know a lot of people in the Middle Province. I’ve only come back from the army for a few days!” “I know!” Fiona’s expression darkened at this moment and looked at Fane angrily. “Fane, shouldn’t you admit that you're a toy boy? Other than the rich woman who spent five hundred million on a luminous pearl at the auction, who else can drive so many sports cars here?” “Impossible!” Fane’s expression darkened. He knew Lana very well and she would not do such an impulsive thing. Besides, Lana was his apprentice and they were in a master-apprentice relationship. “Mother, you opened the door but did not see who was outside?” Selena frowned and was quite unhappy. After all,

Fane was her husband and they had a child. She had no idea who wanted to meddle in their relationship. On top of that, this person was different. The others were afraid that their identity would be exposed. This woman, on the other hand, drove so many sports cars here and admitted out loud that she wanted to marry Fane. How could Selena accept this? “It was impossible for me to see clearly. I only saw a row of bright red Ferraris and Porches. They lined up in a row, turned on their headlights and it was too dazzling. There were a dozen people!” Fiona looked at Fane before continuing, “Fane, this is too much. Other than that rich woman, who else could this be? You really have no shame!” Andrew was so angry that his face turned pale and his voice trembled, “Fane, what's the meaning of this? That person even came right to your doorstep searching for you. If it’s you wanna be a sugar baby and have found your sugar mama, you can leave now. Go, go enjoy your life!” “Mister and Missus Taylor, this must be a misunderstanding. It's impossible! My son is not that kind of person. Besides, he had just come back a few days ago, how can this be possible?” Joan, who stood by the side, tried to persuade the others. “Haha, a few days ago? Somebody is ready to marry him only after he’s back for a few days. If he’s back here a few more days earlier, he would have more than three thousand women in the harem!” “If he's a capable and wealthy person, I wouldn’t object even if he marries eight or ten wives. The problem now is that you don’t have money yet and you have already started… That person even...even came here looking for you!” “I… I want out!”

Chapter 319

Fiona was so angry that she started being unreasonable and made a scene. She sat down right on the ground. Fane was embarrassed. He spoke to Selena, “Selena, please believe in me. I really don’t know who the woman outside is. Let’s go out and take a look. Maybe she’s at the wrong place and is looking for the wrong person?” “How is that possible? She’s calling out your name. Are you trying to tell me your name isn't Fane?” Selena glared

at Fane before walking outside, “I want to take a look. I want to see who dares get on our turf!” Fane was slightly surprised before feeling happy when he saw this situation. His wife was jealous! The headlamps were really glaring as she looked out the door. Her eyes adapted to the light for a few seconds before she could see the situation outside clearly. “Hey, they’ve finally come out!” At that moment, a fat woman jumped down from the bonnet. She looked at Fane happily. “My Handsome Fane, I’ve been mesmerized by you since the first time we met. Your handsome look, terrific fighting ability and your indifference when you reject others fascinated me. “After I returned home, I couldn’t eat or sleep and I only wanted to see you again! “Now, I’ve finally summoned the courage to come ask your hand for marriage. Marry me! I'm richer than the Taylor family. Being the son-in-law that marries into the George family would definitely be better than being a son-in-law here. Our family will not look down on you and I'll protect you!” The woman in front of Fane wore a white wedding dress and had a bouquet of roses in her hands. She looked at Fane and then looked away embarrassedly. “Marry her! Marry her! Marry her!” A group of young men and women, who seemed to be the fat woman’s friends, walked forward to sprinkle rose petals on them and yelled out loudly. The sports cars behind them were decorated like wedding cars. “Sharon George, the daughter of the George family!” Finally, Fiona could not stand it anymore and got up from the ground. She ran outside and tried to see if it was the rich woman who wore a mask. She could not help but exclaimed after she recognized the fat woman in front of her. Sharon was the daughter of a first-class aristocratic family. Keep in mind that the George family only had one daughter and the entire family spoilt her. She was the only heir to the George family. That was why many men still wanted to marry into her family even though Sharon weighed around 100kg. Of course, these men were those who wanted their money because they had no money and power on their own. If they married into the George family, they would not have to worry about money for their entire life. Contrary to popular belief, Sharon was picky in

terms of choosing a partner even if she was not young and was fat. She did not like those who have bad temperament and those who wanted to marry her for money. It turns out that she was the person who confessed and proposed so boldly to Fane! “This…” Selena covered her mouth in surprise and was confused. She could not believe that Sharon, who had a high social status with her head up in the sky—and fat—would ask Fane to marry into her family. Fane was also confused when he saw this woman and his face was twisted. “Marry her, marry her!” The young men and women beside them chanted and sprinkled red roses. Sharon took stolen glances at Fane and she lowered her head shyly after every glance. It seemed that she had really fallen in love with Fane.

Chapter 320

”Wait!” As Fane was about to reject Sharon, when Fiona suddenly spoke. Everybody silenced and looked at her. Fiona looked at Sharon and said, “Miss George, this isn't a joke. Have you considered it properly? Do you really want Fane to marry into your family? “I… I’ve thought of it thoroughly!” Sharon replied. “Give us some time!” Fiona replied she cunningly smiled. “Sure. After all, this is an important matter in life and I showed up out of the blue, it's only fair that you have some time to discuss it first! However, I really like Fane a lot and I'm serious about it! I don’t mind being the second wife!” Sharon said. “Yes, I understand. Let us go in and discuss. We'll give you an answer in a while!” Fiona nodded as she spoke. “What's there to discuss? There’s no need for that!” Fane’s face darkened and said, “Selena is my wife and I love her. On top of that, I have a cute daughter and I'd change nothing about my life. I only want to live a normal life!” Fane paused and spoke to Sharon, “Miss George, thank you for your good intention, but, I'm really not interested in you. Although my words might be hurtful, they're the truth.” Sharon’s facial expression immediately darkened and spoke aggrievedly, “I know you must dislike me for being fat and ugly, right? Will you like me if I lose weight?” Fane was

embarrassed. “This has nothing to do with your figure. I can see that you have very standard features. If you manage to slim down, you'll definitely be a pretty woman. By that time, you'll have many pursuers and maybe you'll know what type of man you like by then!” “Miss George, don’t listen to him!” Fiona glared at Fane and continued speaking to Sharon, “Wait for us here. We'll discuss inside!” After she finished speaking, she pulled Fane and walked inside. Selena frowned, smiled to Sharon, and followed them into the house. “Mother, what do we need to discuss? Fane said that he doesn’t like that woman. Can’t we just ask her to leave? Besides, she’s so fat. Nobody will agree to be with her apart from the men who want her money, let alone Fane!” Selena rebutted peevishly. “What do you understand!” Fiona replied. “First of all, this woman is ugly and fat, but she has a standard face and is fat in a cute way. We can consider her a chubby beauty! Second of all, all of you have never met her. I met her once when she was young. She was not fat and had a nice figure. Everybody said that she'll be a beauty when she grows up!”

Chapter 321

”You want Fane to be with her because of this?” Selena was extremely angry and she could not believe her mother's words. “Hey, can you wait for me to finish!” Fiona smiled bitterly and continued, “Who is she? She’s the daughter of George family. She made such a big scene today and brought all her friends along. Do you think it will work if Fane rejects her in front of everybody?” Fiona paused, picked up a cup by the side, and drank some tea before continuing, “The 'face' is as important to man as the bark is to the tree. It'd be embarrassing for her if Fane rejects her outright. By then, we’ll offend. Besides, it takes a lot of courage for a girl to do this!” Selena could not help but nodded after she heard what her mother said. “That’s true. I’ve heard that Sharon is a kind person and she did a lot of charity work. She craves for food now and cannot control her appetite, so it'll be impossible for her to lose weight! And, this is the first time she initiated a confess and

even I was taken back by what she did." As they speak, Selena looked at Fane, who was by her side. “It seems that she likes you very much. She didn’t have the appetite to eat because of you!” “It doesn’t matter if she likes me or not. I only like my wife!” Fane shrugged his shoulders and his words cheered Selena up. “It’s quite normal that you dislike her, she doesn’t even have one tenth of my daughter’s looks. The main issue here is, she’s from a first-class aristocratic family and we cannot offend her! "Apart from that, she’s so rich, if she’s willing to be the second wife as what she said, I think that we can try it out. We'll be a family with her and we'll be rich!” Fiona could not help but was tempted by Sharon’s property. “Afraid of offending her?” Fane was in an awkward state. He thought about it and said, “Don’t worry. Since she’s here for me, I'll settle this matter! I’ll go out and ask her to leave. I won’t trouble the rest of you!” “You can ask her to leave? I don’t think that she'll listen to you. Didn’t you see that there are a lot of bodyguards with her today? It’s obvious that she'll take you by force if you reject her," Fiona continued, “In my opinion, it’s better if you accept her. That way, we'll benefit from her wealth. However, you wouldn’t be marrying into her family, she'll be marrying into our family as the second wife instead! After she inherits the George family's properties the future, the estates will be yours and also ours too. That’s so much money. We'll be well-off in the future!” “I think you're blinded by money!” Fane shook his head powerlessly and walked outside alone. “You don’t need to follow me out, I can settle the matter by myself. Don’t worry, I can make them leave in three minutes, okay?” “Don’t get into a fight!” Fiona was frightened when she heard this. “Fane, don’t fight them. They're a very powerful first-class aristocratic family. Their power is different from the Clark family and Hugo family. On top of that, there're several powerful guards, known as guardians, in such families! “If we're left with no choices, you can coax her to leave first. I think that she’s only acting impulsively. She might discover that she doesn’t like you that much after some time to calm down. Or she might have a new target and will give up!” Selena was also frightened. She knew that

Fane was a guy who liked to solve matters with violence. However, Sharon was from a first-class aristocratic family. On top of that, a girl needed to gather a lot of courage to confess proactively. She would be so sad if she was rejected by Fane! “Don’t worry, I won’t fight with them!” Fane turned around and smiled at Selena before walking outside.

Chapter 322

Sharon, who was standing outside, was extremely nervous. She could not help but tighten her fists and lowered her head in fright. She knew absolutely well that she was too fat. However, she could not control herself with food—especially sweet stuff. This caused her to gain more and more weight. There was a huge possibility that Fane would reject her due to her body size. “Sasa, don’t worry about it. We believe in you! A woman with confidence is the prettiest in the world and you'll surely succeed! Besides, you'll have to confess to him to know if he feels the same way. How else will he know? You'll never succeed if you don't confess, but you stand a chance if you do. It’s good to try no matter the outcome!” A sexy woman with a leather skirt and long legs smiled at Sharon and they seemed to have a good relationship. “Thank you, Serene!” Sharon smiled slightly and nodded. She remembered how others laughed at her behind her back after she grew fat. There were even people who mocked her. However, she was not calculative just because she was of higher status than everyone else. After all, she was fat and that was the truth. Her only best friend, Serene Smith, treated her well and constantly encouraged her. Fane walked outside. Sharon was suddenly excited. “What’s your decision, young man?” Serene immediately walked forward. She had a pair of big beautiful eyes. Nobody knew that she was waiting to make fun of Sharon because she believed that Fane would reject Sharon. After all, Fane was a veteran and he had a unyielding temperament. He had already expressed his thoughts and his wife was so much prettier than Sharon. It would not be a surprise if he rejected Sharon. Sharon would really be humiliated this way. After all, her identity as the George family’s

future heir had always attracted the attention of the massed. People would make fun of her if the news of her being rejected after confessing to a married man spread on the papers or by words. Unexpectedly, Fane looked at Serene deeply before walking to Sharon. He smiled indifferently and looked sympathetically at Sharon, who was in front of him. Sharon raised her head, bit her red lip and said, “Don’t tell me the answer. I know that you don’t like me, but I feel that I'm already in my late twenties and this is the first time I met someone that I really like. I wouldn’t give up without confessing my feelings. Instead of keeping it to myself, it’s better for me to speak my mind!” However, Fane said, “Ask your friends and bodyguards to leave, except for one driver. I want to talk to you in private!” “Talk in private?” Sharon felt as if she was dreaming when she heard this and she could not believe it. Fane did not reject her or hate her, instead, he wanted to talk to her in private. However, she quickly understood that Fane probably wanted to reject her and did not want others to witness it. He wanted to save her from an awkward situation and prevent her from being made fun of. This man was really considerate.

Chapter 323

”Everybody can go back first. Howard, stay back and send me home later. I want to have a chat with Fane!” Sharon turned around and smiled. Although she was fat, her smile was very sweet and mesmerizing. “We… We'll leave immediately!” Serene was disappointed that she could not witness Sharon being rejected. She knew this man would not be interested in Sharon. Otherwise, he must have a very weird taste. When Serene thought about how Fane was interjected by Fiona for a discussion when he intended to reject Sharon, she felt that Fane might be convinced by Fiona. After all, the George family was so rich and he might agree to it because of money. Serene instantly felt cheated as she looked at the house. She would lose the chance to make fun of Sharon if Fane really agreed to the proposal. “Yes, all of you can go back!” Sharon waved her hand and said, “I thank all my friends that

came here for me today. I'll treat everybody to a meal some other day!" Serene could only drive away with the others after everybody left. Fiona looked at the situation outside from inside of the house and said, "This young man is really good. He didn't need to do anything to make everybody leave!" However, she soon saw something and said surprisingly, "This is weird. Why did he ask Sharon to stay? There's even a driver and a car waiting for them. Hey, they've gone under the big banyan tree at the entrance!" She paused and continued happily, "Did he make up his mind and wants Sharon to be his second wife? We'll be rich if he makes the right choice!" "Mother, what're you talking about? Fane told us that he doesn't like Sharon and I'm sure that he wouldn't agree to her proposal!" Selena rolled her eyes at Fiona and said, "I think he's trying to save Sharon some trouble by asking the others to leave first. After all, she's the daughter of the George family. She'll be ashamed if she was rejected in front of so many people!" At this moment, under the big banyan tree… Sharon palpitated. "I can see that you've never been in a relationship and crave for love! However, love is not an impulse decision to make and you shouldn't be blinded by your feelings at first sight!" Fane looked at Sharon and broke the silence. Sharon lowered her head and did not speak. Fane fetched a cigarette, lit it, and took a whiff. He continued, "I can see that you're a very nice and kind person! Otherwise, some of your friends wouldn't treat you as their true friend!" "Really? Thank you. I'm satisfied that I got your compliment!" Sharon's eyes lit up after she heard Fane and continued, "Actually, I know that you'll reject me, but I can't reconcile my emotions. It's better to fail than to hold it back. Holding back is uncomfortable!" She stretched her body in relief after she spoke and continued, "Fortunately, you didn't reject me in front of everybody even though you didn't like me. This shows me that I was right, you're really a good person. I really envy your wife, Selena, for meeting such a good husband! By the way, will you make fun of me? That I did such a crazy thing after being instigated by others!" "I can see that some of your friends are genuine to you and wish for you to find true love!"

Fane smiled and continued, “However, some of them aren't your friends but poisonous snakes. They stay by your side waiting to make fun of you!”

Chapter 324

Sharon was in disbelief after she heard what Fane said. She smiled and said, “How… How is that possible? Are you talking about the friends who were with me just now?” “Yes, I’m talking about the one who talked to me last!” Fane nodded. He believed that he was a good judge of character because of his experience in the army and the amount of people he met. “Serene Smith? How is that possible? She’s the one who treats me best among all my friends! She had never disliked me and had always been considerate. She was the one who'd taken the initiative to plan this confession!” Sharon obviously in disbelief. However, Fane replied, “Then it must be her. Do you think that she’s doing this for you? She’s the one who wants to make a joke out of you!” “Impossible… You’ve only met her once and you don’t know her. She’s a really nice person!” Sharon shaked her head profusely. She would like to believe that it was somebody else and not Serene. “You're the one who doesn’t understand her!” Fane smiled bitterly and smoked the cigarette in his hand again. “Let me ask you. Did you have a nice figure and a pretty face in the past?” “Yes. I can't control my diet. I'll drool and crave for food every time I see it and gain weight after. Most importantly, I enjoy meat and sweet stuff very much!” Sharon spoke in embarrassment, “I find that running and other exercises have no effect on me. Instead, I grow fatter every time I try to lose weight!” “When did this start?” Fane asked. “Around three years ago. I’m only twenty-one years old. Sigh, I’m afraid that I can’t find my true love in the future!” Sharon looked at Fane after she spoke. “I think I don’t stand a chance with you. It doesn’t matter if I like you because you have a wife and you don’t like me. Sigh, what should I do! This is bothering me!” “Haha!” Fane could not help but laughed when he saw Sharon’s cute expression. “Don’t you worry. All you have to do is lose weight! You'll definitely find someone who you like and likes you in return.

You'll have self-confidence after you slim down!” “It's easier said than done." Sharon smiled bitterly. “I have no idea what to do. I should be thankful as long as I don't gain more weight!” “Think about it, does your best friend offer you food consistently, or occasionally? Was it something peculiar? Think about it carefully. She would have started giving you this three years ago and has never stopped!” Fane knew the answer very well. He intended to pay the George family a visit in order to help Sharon after the incident at the auction house. He had no idea that they would meet under these circumstances before he had the chance to visit! “Food? I don’t think so.” Sharon frowned and thought about it. She failed to recall if Serene had given her something to eat regularly after thinking about it for a long time. “Think carefully. It mustn't be nothing. Trust me, there must be something, she's hurting you. I trust my instinct!” Fane said confidently.

Chapter 325

Sharon thought about it for a long time before gasping. "I know. It’s not food, she'd been giving me tea leaves. She told me that it was of good quality and originated from her hometown. I think the tea has a nice aroma so I drink it often!” Sharon paused and took in another breath. “She emphasised that this tea was expensive and exotic so I should only keep it to myself! I didn’t pay much attention to it but she sends it to me every other month and constantly asks if I have finished the tea!” Sharon gulped and looked at Fane in horror after she figured it out. “You're saying that there's something wrong with the tea leaves!” Fane nodded. “That must be it. She must've tampered the tea leaves!” “How could she do that? I treat Serene so well, why does she do this to me?” Sharon was disappointed. She walked a few steps backward and was unwilling to accept the fact. However, what Fane said made sense and she knew things were not incidental. Was it possible that Serene wanted to make fun of her for planning a confession that was bound to fail? “Commoners will only know about medications for losing weight and not so much about drugs for putting on weight! Furthermore,

this medication is weird as it will cause people to lose control over their appetite and develop strong craving for food! “Consuming this drug for a prolonged period of time will lead to addiction and will cause huge problems for the body. Apart from that, there aren’t any obvious symptoms in the beginning and the symptoms gradually appeared after a month of intake. Your condition is the same as the symptoms. Others wouldn’t have heard of this medication as it’s very rare, it's known as Tanio," Fane explained slowly and every sentence terrified Sharon. She had absolutely no idea that her best friend was the person behind all these. She had no idea why she gained weight and had always blamed it on herself for being gluttonous. She had no idea that it was under the influence of medication. “What should I do now? Does it mean that I'll recover once I stop drinking the tea? Will I slim down with consistent exercise?” Sharon looked forward to it. Previously, slimming down was akin to miracle to her. It was an unachievable and extravagant hope. She saw hope. Since Fane could decipher the situation, he might have a way to solve it. “Haha, the tea leaves must have been soaked in Tanio liquid before drying and giving it to you! It'd be easy to get rid of the addiction if you've just started using these leaves for one or two months. But you’ve been using them for a long time and you can't live without them. You’re addicted to it and long for the smell of it!” Fane laughed and continued, “I can help you, but you have to promise me to not ask me to marry you after I’ve helped you. Let me go and you can marry a young man who’s better than me!” “It'll be hard to find a better man than you!” Sharon pouted before continuing, “Okay, you have my words. I'll stop pestering you as long as you treat me and I manage to lose twenty-five kilograms of weight. And I'll treat you as my best, best, best friend ever!” “Alright! Sit down and I’ll treat you now! After you return home, don’t drink the tea anymore. You'll no longer be addicted to the smell and I can even make you disgust it! As for the twenty-five kilograms that you mentioned, it’s too little. It won't be a problem even if you want to lose fifty kilograms in a few

days!” Fane nodded and as he opened her palm, a small box appeared out of this air. There was a collection of silver needles inside.

Chapter 326

”How is it possible to lose fifty kilograms in three days? Will that be too fast? Are there any side effects? Can your silver needles work? This is the first time I’ve ever seen such a method!” Sharon was extremely excited. If Fane was not lying to her, her weight would decrease down to 50 kilograms. If that was the case, she would be quite slim. After all, she was around 170 centimeter tall and her figure would be absolutely perfect if her weight was around 50 kilograms. “Haha, the silver needles are to get rid of the toxins in your body. Although your body didn't react to it, the medications carry toxins! The toxins stay in your body and it'll be fine after you vomit. You won't crave for the tea leaves after and you can get rid of your addiction! “Throw the tea leaves away when you get home. As for slimming down, I'll give you three pills for that later. This is something that I made myself and it’s worth a sky-high price. Eat one every day and I’m sure that you'll lose fifteen kilograms daily.” Fane smiled and took out a silver needle. He slowly pricked it into one of the acupuncture points on the top of Sharon’s head. “Can you see clearly in the dark here?” Sharon was worried. After all, Fane was a veteran, an ex-soldier. A soldier told her that he could cure her disease and get rid of the toxin in her body. Something felt fishy there… However, she had always been looking forward to slimming down. Her life had been very tiring as she would be huffing and puffing walking up and down the stairs. This made her feel worthless and she wanted to give up life. Fane had given her hope and it might be her only hope. Even though it was quite unbelievable that Fane was treating her as a veteran, Sharon still chose to believe in Fane. Fane was able to sense Sharon’s worries and said, “Don’t you worry. I'm a highly skilled doctor in the warfield. Both killing and saving people are my strong suits!” “Really, I know a miracle-working doctor in the warfield and he's really good! He saved lots of soldiers! This

person is my idol. He’s not only a God of War, he’s also a doctor that saves lives!” Sharon smiled indifferently and said. Fane, who was behind her, heard this and felt awkward. Would he frighten her if he told her that the person she was talking about was his disciple, Ethan Haays? Only a small number of people knew that Fane was a miracle-working doctor. Fane was the doctor in the beginning but he got tied up later on as assignments started to pile up. Subsequently, he discovered that Ethan had medical knowledge and was very gifted so he passed on his knowledge to him. Although Ethan’s skills were not as good as his and would constantly call him to ask for help, Ethan was publicly known as the miracle-working doctor. On the other hand, nobody knew that Fane’s skills were far more advanced than Ethan. “What… What're you doing?” Selena was having dinner until she noticed that Fane did not come into the house for a long time. She looked out of the house and saw both of them sitting under the big banyan tree. She was too curious so she walked toward them to have a look. She was surprised by what she saw. Fane had actually pricked a silver needle on top of Sharon's head. The bodyguard who stayed back and was responsible to send Sharon home also followed Selena from the behind. He almost jumped in fright when he saw what was going on. His face darkened and he spoke angrily, “Young man, what're you doing? You're only a veteran. If something happens to Miss Sharon, your entire family'll have to die with her! “Don’t interrupt, he’s treating me!” Sharon hushed.

Chapter 327

”Treatment?” Selena and the bodyguard were stupefied by the answer. This young man could give treat? However, since Sharon warned them not to disturb, they kept quiet and could only wait silently by the side. After some time, there were around a dozen silver needles on Sharon’s head. Fane turned the needles slightly with complete focus and attention. He removed needles one by one after a while. The bodyguard relaxed when he saw that Sharon was fine after the needles were taken down. Suddenly, Sharon

spitted out a mouthful of blood and her face turned pale. “What’s going on? Young man, what’s wrong with Miss Sharon? You’re dead if something’s wrong!” The bodyguard was frightened when he saw what happened. He tightened his fist as he looked at Fane angrily and was about to hit him. “This is poisonous blood. I’ve circulated all the toxins out of her body!” Fane smiled indifferently. He took out three smelly pills and passed them to Sharon. “Take one daily. Remember to take them half an hour after breakfast!” “Okay, Thank you. I'll repay you if I really made it!” Sharon smiled and continued, “You'll be my best friend then!” Fane smiled and said, “You don’t have to repay me. I can sell my medication for ten or one hundred million per pill. I’ll give this to you and I only have one request. Stop pestering me and stop thinking about marrying me, okay?” Sharon was extremely embarrassed and she smiled. “Alright, I promise!” Selena, who was by the side, felt moved by what Fane did. This guy was bragging. How could three black as charcoal pills cost so much? Only Sharon, who was a simpleton would believe in him. “Oh yes, I think it’s best for you if you don't leave your house for these three days! You'll have frequent toilet trips. I’m also afraid that your parents might not recognize you if you hide and suddenly appear in front of them. Don’t meet anyone and just be with your parents! Observe the results after three days!” Fane thought and reminded Sharon. “Okay. As for that bastard, Serene, I won't meet her for these three days. I'll get back to her after I feel better. She’s too much! I’ve been treating her so well but she wants to hurt me!” Sharon was extremely angry when she thought about how Serene was the reason behind her misery. She would definitely get revenge for this. Sharon soon left in a car with her bodyguard. “What medication did you give her? You even bragged that it can be sold for ten to one hundred million!” After Sharon left, Selena glared at Fane and asked. “A wonder and efficacious medicine!” Fane smiled and said, “Honey, why did you follow me out? Were you worried that I'll be kidnapped?

Chapter 328

"Impossible. She could take you off my hands, no one cares. After all, you don’t need to worry about money if you leave with her! It's good for you to get a fat wife too!” Selena was touched but did not want to admit it. She turned and walked toward the house. She had no idea how any woman would confess and propose to Fane just after his few days of returning home. At first Selena thought she was the young rich woman who wore a mask and had a nice figure. If Fane had a relationship with the woman, would he abandon her and their daughter? She would be the biggest joke in the world. She had no idea that it would be the fat lady, Sharon George. “Although she’s fat, she has a good foundation. It'll be vital news when Sharon becomes a pretty lady three days later!” Fane smiled indifferently and quickly remembered something. He slapped his head and exclaimed, “Sh*t, I forgot to remind her to not tell anyone about how I helped her slim down. Will I be in trouble if she told people about it?” “Those three pills are for her to slim down?!” Selena felt awkward. Sharon’s condition had been ongoing for many years. She had visited many doctors but they could not come up with a diagnosis and cure. Many people called that a 'strange disease'. Everybody felt that there was no way to cure her. Fane had only given her three pills and would that be the cure? She wondered if Fane was lying to Sharon. Selena then thought, the pills that Fane gave Sharon would not have any side effects even if it did not help her lose weight. After all, Fane was not stupid so he would not give her poison or harmful drugs. “She had really left! It’s good that she left! Everything is fine as long as she’s not angry!” Fiona felt relieved when she saw Fane and Selena returned. “Although Sharon is chubby, she's quite a beauty. Fane, you can really consider her. However, it'll only work if she's the second wife and addresses Selena as her elder sister!” “Mother, you love money too much!” Selena was speechless and she glared at her mother. “Haha, who doesn’t love money? We'll be looked down on if we don’t have money, we can’t afford

meat if we don’t have money, you'll still need to pick up trash like you used to if we don’t have money. Kylie won't have the money to study in a normal kindergarten, let alone the kindergarten she’s studying at now! “Do you think money is not important? I’ve suffered so much from the lack of money these past five years. We enjoyed good food when we were in the Taylor family. Because of Fane, we had to…” Fiona started complaining and did not stop even after her daughter warned her. Selena could only keep her mouth shut. She had no idea how long Fiona would complain if she did not stop her. “Hubby, go have dinner. We've finished our meal!” Finally, Selena looked at Fane and said. Soon, Sharon arrived home alone happily. However, every member of the George family was waiting for her at the door. “Dad, mum…” Sharon felt something fishy about the atmosphere so she greeted timidly.

Chapter 329

”Follow us into the house!” Mister George said with a dark face. Soon, Sharon and the others arrive at a very big living room. “I heard that you confessed to somebody today? That person is a man who married into the wife’s family and is a veteran, right? Not only that he's from a poor family, he has a wife and a child, right?” Mister George was extremely angry. His daughter had let him down and it was a stain on the George family’s prestige. Although it was humiliating, all could be forgiven if she succeeded. At least his daughter got a husband. However, Fane did not know Sharon so the possibility of Sharon failing her confession was huge. Their family would lose their face if she failed. “Dad, I had no idea that you still care so much for me. You know about all the details!” Sharon lowered her head, secretly smiled and said. “You…” Mister George was very angry when he saw his daughter smile. He glared at her. “Do you know that you have put us in shame because you confessed and asked someone from that family background to marry you. You're not the only shameful one, us as a family is affected too!” “Yes, Sharon. Your admirers come from nice families and

you...prefer a soldier. Sigh, I have no idea what's in your mind!" Sharon's mother was so angry that she was speechless. She almost fainted when she knew about this. Her daughter had no shame. The main concern was, her daughter had been gaining weight as days went by. If this did not stop, she was afraid that her daughter's weight would hit 150 kilograms. "Dad, mum, he's a really nice man! Furthermore, it really doesn't matter to be rejected. To keep the feelings to myself would have hurt more!" Sharon explained, "However, he's a really nice man. Although he didn't like me, he didn't reject me in public. He asked my bodyguards and friends to leave before he suggested that we speak privately. That way, not only that I wasn't publicly shamed, he honored me by speaking to me in private!" Sharon smiled and continued, "All of you don't have to worry about me. Although I can't be with such a nice man, I'm very grateful that I met a nice person like him! And I might meet someone suitable for me in the future!" "Didn't reject you in public? Asked others to leave first?" Mister George was relieved and confused at the same time. "It seems like Fane is a very nice person. He puts himself in other people's shoes and cares about their feelings!" "Oh yes, dad, mum. I won't be leaving the house for three days. You guys shouldn't go out too. Stay and look at how I slim down in three days! I'll lose fifty kilograms in three days. This is what Fane told me. Who would've known that he was also a doctor!" Sharon smiled and sighed again. "Sigh, I really want to marry him. It would've been so good if he liked me too!" "Fifty in three days? He must be a liar!" Mister George and his wife looked at each other and were speechless.

Chapter 330

"Liar? Impossible, I trust him!" Sharon smiled and continued, "I'll go up, take a bath, and sleep. Tomorrow morning, after I have breakfast, you can observe how I can lose my weight!" She walked toward the villa she stayed in after she spoke. "We prepared your favourite, chicken thigh, cakes and other nice food. You don't want to have dinner?" Mister George looked at

his daughter from the back and asked in disbelief. A few days back, Sharon would have said that she was hungry and started eating and drinking to her heart's content. She actually said that she wanted to take a bath and sleep. Sharon turned around and frowned. "That's weird. I don't feel hungry now. It's like I don't have any appetite!" She walked outside on her own after she finished speaking. She understood very well that this was the effect of Fane forcing the toxins out of her body. "She's not hungry!" Every member of the George family opened their eyes widely as if they saw ghosts. The members of the George family did not pay much attention to it. They went to bed after food. The next morning, Sharon woke up and had food. She did not eat much with only a glass of soya milk and two Chinese crullers. Sharon rested for a while after food before taking out the pill and was ready to swallow it. "Wait, what's this medication? Who gave it to you? Is it from the soldier?" Mister George was surprised when he saw this and quickly asked about the details. "Yes, he gave it to me. He said that this medication works well!" Sharon said with a smile. "No! You can't take that!" Sharon did not expect Mister George to walk forward, slap her hand, and caused the pill to fall on the ground. He even stepped on it. "Why eat this? How can you eat medication given by a soldier? You're the only heir of the George family. If you die, we'll be left with nothing!" "Dad, why did you step on it?" Sharon almost cried out from anger when she saw the pill that had been crushed into powder. "I went through a lot of hardship to get this pill. Why… Why did you step on it!" "Daughter, you can't take this medication!" Madam George stepped forward and said, "He's a mere soldier, not a doctor. How can you eat something from him? Who does he think he is? What should we do if anything happens to you?" "Mother, he said that he's a doctor and he can recognize the reason for my illness! I only have this one chance. All other doctors failed to cure me!" Sharon stomped her foot in anger. "If I need to continue my life like this, I'd rather die. So, I have to try it. Besides, you know that he's a soldier that fights for Cathysia. How will a person like him feed me poison?" "But, this doesn't look like medication.

The medication from the regular hospital comes in tablets and what he gave you not only looks like black like rats' defecate, it has a slight stink to it. I suspect it to be rats' defecate that he shaped into a ball!" Mister George said helplessly. Sharon ignored them. She walked over and drank some water. She then took out another pill, placed it into her mouth and swallowed it before the others realized what she did. "There's more!" "Don't swallow!" "Miss Sharon, it's dangerous. Let somebody else try it first!" However, it was too late. Sharon had already swallowed the pill.

Chapter 331

"I trust Fane!" Sharon looked at the others and said, "I believe in him and I can lose weight! Ouch, my stomach hurts! I need the toilet!" Sharon immediately covered her stomach and went looking to the toilet after speaking. "How's that possible? Stomachache? Oh no, does it have something to do with the medication? How can the medication act so fast!" Mister George was in fright. "Oh god, there must be something wrong with the pills. If not, why will my daughter's stomach hurt? What should we do, what should we do?!" "Let's observe, it might be nothing!" Madam George thought about it and everybody soon waited outside the toiler. "Oh, that's much better!" Sharon came out from the toilet after some time. However, she started covering her stomach again after some time. "Why is this happening again? Why do I feel that I'm passing out water? Am I having diarrhea?" Sharon walked toward the toilet again while leaning on the wall. "Bastard, how is this medication? This must be croton!" Mister George was so angry that he held his hands in fists and his face turned red. He only had a daughter and what should he do if something happened to her? Although she was slightly chubby, she was cute. Apart from that, how could he not love his only daughter! "Luca, bring people to Fane's house and bring everyone back here!" Mister George quickly ordered, "If anything happens to my daughter, I want them to die ugly!" "Yes, master!" Luca Zucker immediately cupped his hands as a gesture of respect and left with a group

of bodyguards. Sharon came out twice but she went back into the toilet as soon she walked out the door. In the end, she remained seated on the toilet bowl and did not come out. This caused the others to worry and they had no idea what to do. … “Xena Jackson, how dare you come back here with my son?” At the house where Fane and the others stayed, Fiona looked at Xena, who came back with Ben, angrily. “Mother, please don’t act this way. I think there must be some misunderstanding between us!” Xena lowered her head and mumbled out after a while. “Yes mother, there must be some misunderstanding!” Ben immediately supported Xena and said. “Misunderstanding? How can that be a misunderstanding? She was the one who worked together with the motor robbers and robbed me money! The motor robbers had already admitted to it!” Fiona looked at Xena angrily. She refused the 100 million from Neil but this three million was her only worth now. How could Fiona calmed down when she thought about how the money was almost robbed away and they almost failed to take it back? “I know those people but I didn’t tell them anyone. They are misleading you!” Xena had an aggrieved expression.

Chapter 332

”Misled me? How have they wronged you?” Fiona frowned and asked suspiciously. Xena waved her hand and said, “No, not wronged. They're framing me on purpose. I didn't work together with them. It happened like this, because we knew each other, they asked me about my boyfriend’s situation after we had drinks and said that I’ve found a poor guy!” Xena quickly thought about it. “I was unhappy that they said that and replied that we are not poor. I said that you're rich and that you'll bank in an amount of more than three million tomorrow! I had several drinks and I told them everything as I was semi-conscious, so…” Ben immediately said with a smile, “Father and mother, listen. I was right when I said that you have misunderstood Xena but you don't believe me!” “Impossible, Fane said that he saw you when he followed them. On top of that, the motor robbers told

us that you have a twenty percent of the cut!" Fiona still insisted. She walked forward and pushed Xena. "Shoo, get out! Taylor family doesn't want a daughter-in-law like you. We treated you so well but you're actually a bad person!" "Mother, you have really misunderstood me. You cannot believe what one-sided story Fane told you!" Xena said while crying, "You know that Ben's sister doesn't like me so Fane, his brother-in-law dislike me too. How can you believe everything he said?" Fiona started wondering what happened when she heard what Xena said. She looked at Xena's aggrieved expression and felt that she was not lying. Previously, Xena looked down on Fane and she had spoken out for their family many times. Hence, Fane might have a grudge toward Xena and was doing this to chase her away. Xena was happy when she saw Fiona hesitating. She immediately went forward and said, "Mother, blame me for everything. I blame myself for telling what I told to those people after I got drunk. I was also drinking with them the second time you guys went to carry out the deposit. I told them everything because I was drunk and I wanted to show off that the Taylor family was rich and not poor people!" "Mother, you've known Xena for a couple of years. She had been living with us when we were poor. You don't believe in what she says but you believe in Fane. He doesn't like Xena and he would have said anything to chase her away! Besides, I understand Xena, she's not that kind of woman." Ben spoke on behalf of Xena. "My son wouldn't have done that. Why would he wrong Xena?" Joan, who was by the side, could not continue to hear what they were saying and rebutted with a darkened expression, "I feel that Xena isn't what she claim she is!" "Haha, you're Fane's mother so it's natural that you take his side." Xena hugged her chest with both hands and said enigmatically, "However, I can understand. After all, no mother will help outsiders instead of their own son, but the truth is in front of you!" Joan opened her mouth but had nothing to say. She was a peaceful person, how could she win a fight with somebody like Xena? "Fine, fine. Let's just let this issue go. It might really be a misunderstanding! By the way, Xena, you need to drink less and control your words. After all,

misfortune comes from the mouth. Do you understand me?" Fiona looked at Xena, thought about it and said, "Oh yes, I heard that a lot of people died in the woods outside of the house yesterday. Is it possible that they were killed by Fane?" Xena immediately said in surprise, "Really? No way! I had no idea. No wonder I couldn't reach my friend's via phone. Fane must have killed them to get the money back!"

Chapter 333

Xena paused and sighed before she continued speaking, "Sigh, Fane is too bloody and violent. He killed those people because of money. What will happen to us if we wronged him in the future? Will he also…" Xena did not continue but the meaning behind those words were clear to the others. Fiona and Ben looked at each other and felt chill travel through their spines. It was true that Fane killed people for money and it was too much. If those people hit him, he could have just teach them a lesson. However, if they knew about the actual situation, that somebody pointed a gun at Fane, they would not have these thoughts. "It's true that Fane has a bad temper, he even hit Young Master Clark without any explanation! Luckily Young Master Clark did not say anything because he was afraid about losing his honor if he told his family about it!" Ben frowned and smoked his cigarette. "Fane needs to control his temper. After all, this isn't the warfield. At this moment, around a dozen cars stopped outside their house and a group of bodyguards came walking angrily toward them. "Who're you? Are you looking for someone?" Fiona immediately stepped forward and asked. She wondered what was going on. "Bring everyone here with us!" Luca ordered. The bodyguards caught Fiona and the others, stuffing them into the car. They left after they searched the house and made sure that there was nobody there. Soon, everybody was brought into the living room of a villa and were brought in front of Mister George. "This… Where are we?" "Did you make a mistake?" "We didn't do anything! Have you made a mistake?" Fiona and the others were extremely afraid when they saw that extremely extravagant house.

“Our people won't make such low-level mistakes!” Mister George had a darkened expression on his face. He looked at Ben and Xena before saying, “You two must be Fane and Selena, right? If anything happens to my daughter today, all of you here have to die with her!” After hearing what he said, Fiona and the others were so frightened that their faces turned pale. Surely, the troublemaker Fane had caused trouble again. “No, no, no… Boss! No, mister, you’d really made a mistake! I'm not Fane and she isn't Selena. My name is Ben and I'm Selena’s brother. This is Xena, my girlfriend!” “These two are my parents and this is Fane’s mother!” Ben was so frightened that his voice was trembling. He continued his explanation, “Fane must be the one that offended you and your daughter. You only need to get him and I know where he is. Go catch him and it’s fine for you to kill him too, but we're innocent!” “You’re his family!” Mister George smiled coldly and said, “Since you're his family, this isn't a mistake. If anything happens to my daughter, all of you have to die. Fane will suffer and regret if all you're dead! Haha!”

Chapter 334

When Andrew and Fiona heard that, they shook in fear. They did not expect the other party to think that way. “Brother, please don’t do that. You’re after Fane. He’s got nothing to do with us, just a stay-in son-in-law. Right, I haven’t even acknowledged him as my son-in-law yet. I hate him very much. Hehe, please let us go. We’re innocent!” Fiona asked while chuckling. “What's this place?” Xena looked around and felt that the place was too big. She had no idea which family it was, but it was definitely a lot richer than the Taylor family. “He’s the master of the George family!” One of the servants huffed. “Since you’re caught, don't even think about getting out of here.” “George family! The first-class aristocratic family!” Xena gasped, totally at a loss for words. Why did Fane offend the George family? She was really unlucky. If she knew this would happen, she should have just broken up with Ben. Her original plan was to get to know more rich folks

through Ben. Not only did she not get her hands on the money, she had even gotten herself in trouble. “Wait… Wait a minute. I remember now! Yesterday night, Miss George proposed to Fane. He didn’t offend her then, right? “Mister George, what’s going on? Is Miss George angry? If that’s the case, it can be easily solved. I can help you persuade him to marry Miss George. That way we’ll be one big family! “Let’s talk this out peacefully. There’s no need for violence!” Fiona was laughing apologetically while she was thinking of ways to kill Fane. The trouble he created was bringing trouble to all of them. What an annoyance. “Humph, Fane is despicable. He gave my daughter three pills, claiming that it can help her lose weight and purge the toxins from her! “However, my daughter is stuck in the toilet suffering from diarrhea ever since she ate the pill. If this goes on, she won’t be able to handle it! “I suspect that Fane fed my daughter croton just to make my daughter purge.” Mister George was furious and spoke through gritted teeth, “He's too vile. He can just reject my daughter if he doesn’t like her. Instead, he had others leave and 'treated' my daughter. I have a feeling that he’s intentionally toying with my daughter to mock her!” After that, he thought again and said, “Tell me, where’s that son of a b*tch working now? I’ll send someone to bring him here! You're his family, don’t even think of escaping!” “Mister George, we’ll tell you where he’s working. Can you just let us go, please?” “They're Fane’s family since Selena and Fane were legally married after all. This matter is made known to the entire Middle Province. However, I’m different. I’m only Ben Taylor’s girlfriend. I’m innocent. I’m not even remotely related to Fane!” Xena denied all ties with them with a pleading look. The thought that Xena was still calling her mother and denouncing her when trouble comes had enraged Fiona and Andrew. “Mister George, please let her go. She’s just my girlfriend and can’t be considered part of our family yet!” Ben helped to beg for mercy after taking a good long look at Xena. After all, if the other party was angry and wanted to kill them, it would be best to save as many lives as possible. “Ben, I miss you too, but I’m not considered as part of your family yet as

I’m not married to you. I’m so sorry!” Xena looked at Ben with a grateful look on her face. “That’s fine. You’re right, you’ve yet to marry into the family!” Ben put on a painful smile. Although he said those words, he felt slightly dejected.

Chapter 335

“Stop your drama. I said none of you will be spared!” Mister George smiled sinisterly and said, “Where're Fane and Selena working at? Out with it, or I’ll kill you right now!” Fiona was scared, but at the thought of her own daughter, she managed to grit her teeth and replied, “Mister George, please let us go. We never thought Fane would feed your daughter weird medicine. He’s done it without any of us knowing. We’re innocent.” “Tell me now. Where're they working?” Mister George appeared to have lost his patience. He grabbed Fiona by her collar and asked her angrily. “Let go of my wife!” Andrew immediately rushed forward. Bang! Unfortunately, Mister George sent him to the ground with a single kick. The bodyguards had also come forward and surrounded him. “Tell me!” Mister George glared at Fiona. “If you don’t tell me, I’ll kill you right now!” At that moment, Fiona was really terrified, answering nervously, “F...Fane is working as a bodyguard at the Drake family. Can I not say where my daughter is working? You should be looking for Fane!” “The Drake family!” Upon hearing that, Mister George was stunned momentarily. If that was the case, then things would be quite troublesome. Although Fane was just a bodyguard of the Drake family, they still had to respect the status of his employer. To go and capture him would piss off the Drake family, what could he do? However, after some consideration, he decided that it would be fine. He could just pay some money to the Drake family to compensate for their loss and have them hand him over. After all, his daughter should worth more than a bodyguard of the Drake family. For that matter, he believed that the Drake family would understand. At the same time, another old man from the George family took out a gun and pointed it at Xena’s head. “Tell me where Selena’s working

at. Otherwise I'll shoot you right now!" "I'll tell you, I'll tell you! She's working under one of the Drake family's businesses, what's that again, Dragon Dynasty Real Estate! She's working there as a manager of the purchasing department!" Xena's legs were shaking in fear as she blurted it all out. The other party finally kept his gun while Xena slumped to the ground with her forehead drenched in cold sweat. "Master, this is a little difficult. Fane is just a mere bodyguard. It should be easy to capture him! "However, Selena is working at their real estate company as a manager. If we get her, that would disrespect the Drake family. If that happens, the Drake family will be angered!" Luca advised Mister George after some thoughts. "Yes, that's right. The Drake family favors my daughter greatly. Although she's only a manager, her monthly salary is at one million bucks. They really like my daughter. If you go for my daughter, you'll offend the Drake family!" Fiona's eyes brightened. She took a few steps forward and exclaimed fearfully. "Let's do it this way. We'll respect the Drake family and forget about Selena. As for Fane, we'll get him. However, we can't go for him in the Drake Residence. "Find some people and have them hide outside. Have them capture him the moment he leaves the Drake Residence!" Mister George finally instructed after some considerations.

Chapter 336

Both Fiona and Andrew heaved an internal sigh of relief when they heard their daughter was not kidnapped. Still, they were furious, knowing that they could not escape the inevitable. It was all Fane's fault. Never mind that he did not like Sharon; he actually used crotons to swindle her and told her it was some slimming medicine. The poor girl was suffering from diarrhea, still. "I'll take my leave now, Sir." Luca gave a fist-and-palm salute before he swiftly left the scene. He knew Fane was a bodyguard and surmised he was a skilled fighter, so he went around finding other good fighters to recruit. Only then did he leave for the Drake family's place of residence. Joan internally sighed. She had pretty much anticipated everything Fiona

and the others had done. However, she did not stand up for the sake of her son. She knew it was useless, even if she explained everything on his behalf. Besides, she had the utmost faith that her son would not be so stupid as to feed Sharon crotons. Her son was not someone like that; he would not prank someone even if he did not like them. “Oh, much better!” Finally, after what seemed like an eternity, Sharon finally emerged from the toilet, cold sweat rolling down her forehead. “Dear, how are you? Are you okay?” Her parents immediately asked when they saw her come out, worry etched onto their expressions. “I’m fine. I’m in good spirits, actually. I just sh*t a lot!” Sharon flashed an awkward smile. She then noticed the bodyguards before her, as well as Fiona and the others. “Mom, Dad, who are they?” “Oh, they’re the parents-in-law of that punk, Fane Woods. I just took them here since they’re his family. Luca is now looking for him. Unfortunately, that punk is working as a bodyguard for the Drake family, so it’s wise for us to not apprehend him right away. I told Luca and his other comrades to wait at the entrance. They’ll catch him once he gets off from work!” “That Fane actually dared to feed you crotons, giving you a stomachache,” the head of the George family spoke. “Hmph. I’ll definitely teach him a lesson once we get him!” Sharon immediately saw red. “Mom, Dad, what are you two going on about?” she barked immediately. “Fane only gave me slimming pills. I believe him. He told me that I’ll be able to lose 15 kilos within a day!” After she said that, she turned toward the bodyguards. “Just release them already and see them off,” she ordered. “Also, tell Luca to come back. Fane is a doctor. He’s probably a lot better than those western doctors in hospitals.” The bodyguards looked at their masters, not moving a single inch. When Fiona and the others heard this, confusion crossed their expressions. Fane? A doctor? They would never believe that in a million years. Sure, Fane had some knowledge on how to treat bones after being on the battlefield for so many years as a military man, and he managed to heal Andrew’s leg. Nonetheless, that did not mean he was qualified to help Sharon lose weight. Furthermore, healing a leg and losing weight were two completely different

issues. “That’s right! Fane definitely gave slimming pills. Mr. George, there’s a misunderstanding. Please let us go!” Xena reacted first as she cried out immediately. All she wanted was to leave this place, and she would leave Middle Province at once. She would flourish wherever she went. Even if the head of the George family realized something was amiss afterward, it would be too late by then. “I can’t let them go. I can’t verify if your body will have complications later! You were in the toilet for a long time just now. You must have eaten crotons. Look at you! You look so gaunt. I think you’ve gotten a little thinner!” The head of the George family observed his daughter and noticed she had looked a bit thinner. His heart clenched at the sight.

Chapter 337

“I look thinner?” Sharon’s eyes immediately brightened. “Quick! Get me a weighing scale. Fane did say that I’d lose 15 kilos within a day. Let me measure my way and see if the medicine really is effective!” she sobbed. “Oh my goodness, don’t tell me that I’ll see results already!” Sharon felt happiness surging through her body. If she had indeed lost weight, it would make her day. Not long after, two bodyguards carried an extremely large weighing scale to her. Sharon immediately stood on it. “I just weighed myself the day before,” she said. “I was 106 kilos then. Who knows if I’ve really lost weight!” After she said this, she noticed the numbers. “Oh my goodness! I’m only 101.5 kilos now!” she abruptly burst in joy. “I just lost 4.5 kilos within moments. This is amazing!” “No way. You really lost weight?” Mr. and Mrs. George exchanged glances, utterly astonished. The most she had been inside the toilet was probably an hour, and their daughter’s weight had really gone down. “Seriously?” Joan was the first to rush over. She looked at the numbers as well. She was so moved that her eyes began to brim with tears. “I knew that my son wouldn’t cheat anyone. He’s no swindler, you can count on that. Since he said that it’d help Miss George to lose weight, he’d keep his words for sure!” “Really? That’s

fantastic!” Fiona was so ecstatic that she was practically dancing. From the looks of it, she almost burst into a square dance in front of everyone. “Mr. George, since this isn’t a scam and that your daughter is fine, can we leave?” Andrew heaved another internal sigh of relief. The events just now had given them a shock of their lives. “No way!” Mr. George’s instant reply caught them off-guard. “We don’t know the entire situation now. Who knows what medicine you’ve eaten? What if it has side effects? What if this weighing scale isn’t accurate? Who can say! Besides, what if something happens to my daughter again after we let you go? At any rate, we’ll wait until everything has settled down and verified before releasing all of you!” “That’s right! No one can leave right now. A medicine that miraculous must have some side effects!” Mrs. George chipped in as well. Fiona and the others were rendered speechless for a moment. All they could do was pray that this medicine from Fane was truly effective and had no side effects. “Right. What if this scale isn’t accurate?” Sharon thought about it for a while before prompting them, “Get me another scale. I’m scared that this one isn’t accurate!” “Yes, Young Miss!” The two bodyguards immediately ran off. The minute they left, Sharon’s expression contorted once more. Clutching her stomach, she scurried to the toilet. “She—she still needs to go!” Mr. George fell into a state of panic. If this went on, she could collapse from exhaustion. After a while, the two bodyguards found another weighing scale. They waited outside. This time, Sharon only emerged from the toilet when it was nearing noon. She looked as though she had lost a lot of weight. “My goodness. Her skirt is so much looser. She lost weight again. We can see that she really lost weight this time!” Fiona was extremely excited. Thank the gods; they were truly saved this time.

Chapter 338

“She’s grown thinner! She’s definitely grown thinner!” Mrs. George was extremely excited as well. This was practically a miracle. “I’ll weigh myself and see!” Sharon could no longer contain her excitement. She immediately

hopped onto the first weighing scale. She took a sharp intake of breath when she weighed herself. “My goodness, I’m only 97.5 kilos now. It’s unbelievable! I lost another 4 kilos. I still lost 4 kilos even if this scale isn’t working!” “So you must’ve grown thinner!” Mr. George looked very pleased. He observed his daughter, noting that aside from the sweat filming over her body, she seemed to be in high spirits. Thus, it looked like there would be no complications for now. Sharon excitedly ran over to the other weighing scale and observed the numbers, and soon after, she leaped in joy. “Mom, Dad, come over here and take a look. The numbers are the same! I’m 97.5 kilos. It’s amazing!” 97.5 kilos was probably far too heavy for other girls. They would probably feel that this was far from an occasion to celebrate. It was not a number that would make them happy. Still, these figures made Sharon extremely elated. She always wanted to lose weight; she would be happy for the entire day even if it was only one kilo. That dream had felt like wishful thinking to her before today. “A total of 8.5 kilos already. 8.5! And it’s only noontime. Who knows if you’ll really be able to lose 15 by tonight!” A maid was extremely elated as well. She had always watched over and tagged after Sharon. She knew the amount of abuse and shame she had received from others throughout these two, three years. “Mom, Dad, see? What did I tell you? Fane would never lie to me! He was a soldier, sure, but he’s also a doctor. And he’s a miracle doctor to me!” Sharon’s expression was radiating with nothing but joy. A thought then occurred to her as she added, “Aren’t you going to release them already?” “Sharon, aren’t you worried that there’ll be side effects? Why don’t we wait till nighttime and see if your body is truly free from complications? I won’t just release them then; I’ll treat them to a nice meal! I’m just preventing the worst-case scenario from happening, all right?” Mr. George continued, smiling, “Come, give them seats and prepare refreshments for them. They’re my guests now. If my daughter truly turns out to be fine, I’ll definitely express my thanks!” Delight sparked in Fiona when she heard that Mr. George would ‘express his thanks’. From the looks of it, it was ridiculously

obvious that Sharon was losing weight. If Fane truly was skilled in medicine and could truly treat Sharon's strange illness, then everything would be perfect. Never mind if Mr. George did not give them money; it was an honor of its own if he treated them to dinner. If they could create good relations with the George family, they would not have to worry so much in the future. They would have another family to rely on. Following this train of thought, Fiona immediately spoke up, chuckling, "Pardon us then. Oh dear, we never thought that this son-in-law of ours would be well-versed in medicine as well. He's probably met some skilled doctor and learned quite a bit from him while he was in the army!" Resentment filled Joan's chest. When they initially heard that they were going to be killed, Fiona and the others felt so hateful that they were ready to immediately cut off all ties with Fane. They even went on to say he was an outsider in their family. Now that the situation was in their favor, not only did she call him her son-in-law, but she said it so easily! "Oh no. My—my stomach. It hurts again!" After Sharon rested for a while, she suddenly clutched her stomach. Yet happiness danced in her eyes. "I think I'm going to lose weight again!" "Hah! Go on, go on!" Mrs. George could not help but smile. She was not so worried this time around. … At the Drake family's residence, Fane had just arrived and was prepared to do his work. He never expected that Kyle and a few other bodyguards would meet him once he stepped through the doors.

Chapter 339

Fane frowned when he saw that it was Kyle. "Sir. Don't tell me you want to challenge me again." "Heh. No way. You're way stronger than I am. I've got better things to do than to challenge you to a fight I'll lose." Kyle chuckled and stepped forward, offering a cigarette to Fane. "Come on now, Brother Fane. We've already thought it through—you'll be the big brother of the Drake family's bodyguards from now on. And as our big brother, the rest of us bodyguards will listen to you!" Fane did not take the cigarette; he took out his own White-Sand cigarette instead. "I only smoke cigarettes

from this brand," he said, smiling. "I'm not used to your premium cigarettes!" Kyle had felt extremely awkward when Fane had actually declined the cigarette. It embarrassed him as the squad leader. However, he never expected Fane's explanation. It made the awkwardness dissipate in an instant. He smiled and slipped the cigarette between his teeth instead. "Heh. You're quite unique, Brother Fane. Even your hobbies are a lot more special than ours." "Whatever you like. Just call me whatever you want to call me!" Fane stretched his limbs, thinking for a moment. "But, since you're already calling me Big Brother, then you better perform well in the future!" "Of course!" Kyle professed as he pounded his chest. "All right then!" Fane nodded and went inside. He went to the living room, located on the first floor of Tanya's villa. At the moment, she was drinking tea with her cousin, Yvonne. Yvonne was dressed in a black midi dress that just happened to cover her knees today. With her fair skin tone, this contrast made her look even more attractive; an air of elegance and allurement clouding her. The smile on her face instantly vanished when she saw Fane entering. Anger boiled in her once she recalled what had happened yesterday, when that punk had seen something he should not have seen. Alas, Tanya had specifically told her that Fane might have a special connection to the Goddess of War and that the Drake family still needed to be on his good side. This sparked even more hateful thoughts in Yvonne. She wanted nothing more than to break him and destroy him for good. 'No way. I can't just let this slide. I need to think of a way to put him in his place. I'll never be satisfied otherwise!' Yvonne thought about it for a while, then she thought of something. She grinned at her cousin. "Tanya, I haven't been to Gemstone Street in such a long time. Why don't we walk around there today?" "Sure. I haven't gone shopping in a while. Let's go!" Tanya immediately agreed. "Then should we bring your personal bodyguard along? After all, no way we can go there without a bodyguard. A lot of rich people go there, but there are plenty of pickpockets in places like that. Moreover, it gets quite chaotic there!" Yvonne then cast a glance toward

Fane. The implicit message in her words was clear. “All right. We won’t bring anyone else but him then. He’s worth a few dozen men alone!” Tanya replied, smiling. “A few dozen? You underestimate me!” Fane flashed a mirthless smile and added, “I’m worth a thousand if all I’m facing are grunts!”

Chapter 340

“What a boast! As if you’re a god of war yourself.” Fane’s words made Yvonne roll her eyes. She would probably believe it if a bodyguard of the Drake family was worth a hundred men, but ‘worth a thousand men’ was pushing it. “Let’s go. It’s getting a little late now. The earlier the better when it comes to choosing gambling rocks. Otherwise, someone with a good eye for them might take the good ones!” Tanya said, smiling. Yvonne was taken aback for a moment. “Oh? Looks like you know quite a bit about this, Tanya,” Yvonne praised her. Tanya merely rolled her eyes heatedly. “I learned everything from you, okay? You’re such a nut for these gambling rocks, always bringing me out to Gemstone Street. I’ve been there so many times already, so of course I know all these basic things!” The duo chatted away as they walked to the center of the courtyard outside the mansion. “Oh, right. Do you know anything about this, Fane?” Tanya turned to ask her bodyguard when she noticed he had not said a word. Yvonne interrupted them before he could even open his mouth. “Him? Hmph. He’s a military man. I even heard that he was a delivery boy before. Do you truly think that he knows anything about gambling rocks, a pastime of the rich and the affluent? Something like this is way out of his league. How could he have ever come across it?” “I’m just asking. What if he knows something?” Tanya rebutted, an awkward smile on her face as she did so. “Something like that is truly a rich person’s pastime. A regular family would never have the means to dabble in it.” Fane’s lips curled into a wry smile. He opened the door of Tanya’s sportscar when they reached it. “Basically, gambling rocks are a gamble on the inside of a rock,” he said. “A single cut will make

or break you. Once you've set your sights on the correct item, there might be a gemstone that will turn you into an instant billionaire. Of course, you'll lose out if you chose the wrong rock!" "Not bad. I never thought that you'd hear of our saying 'a single cut will make or break you'." Yvonne gave a humorless smile. She opened the car door and slid into the backseat. "Let's go," she said. "I'll help you broaden your horizons today. I'm the number one rock dealer in the gambling rock world. I can make a few million within a month with some luck; even 10 million and more isn't a problem!" "You only make 10 million, and you call yourself the number one rock dealer?" Fane gave a humorless smile as he drove, his head shook in dissatisfaction. "Hmph. As if you've such a fantastic eye. I don't know about other places, but I'm telling you that I really am the number one rock dealer in Middle Province." Yvonne chuckled and lifted her chin slightly, pride in her posture. "He's out. Fane is out, but he's with Miss Tanya. It's not a good time to capture him!" Among the cars parked at the opposite of the Drake family's villa, Luca happened to be sitting in one of them. He initially planned that he would wait until Fane got off from work, and he would then exit the main entrance before capturing him. Even if the Drake family was to launch an investigation of their own in the future, Fane would no longer be alive. He was just a bodyguard. Furthermore, they did not directly kidnap him from the Drake family's residence. As long as they gave some money, there was no way the Drake family would not agree to them. They never thought that they would see Fane driving out after not waiting too long, with two beautiful women in tow. "Of course we can't get him while he's with Miss Tanya. What if something happens to her on her way back after we take Fane? We'll be in serious trouble then!" Luca considered their predicament for a while. Then, he told his subordinates, "Never mind. Let's just wait here. We'll get him when he gets off from work in the afternoon—when he's alone!" Yet on another side, a black Audi was secretly following the sports car Fane was driving from a distance. There was a bodyguard in

the Audi. “Don’t get too close. It’ll be troublesome if that punk finds out we’re here. He’s a very skilled fighter!” he warned the driver.

Chapter 341

“Don’t worry, I’m an experienced driver. It won’t be easy to notice me!” The bodyguard driving the car flashed a wane smile and added, “Aren’t you curious why Young Master Hugo and Young Master Clark asked us to follow Fane and check the places he’s going to? And if he’s going to purchase anything expensive?” The bodyguard beside him tacked on, “I think it’s like this. I heard Fane had promised he’d prepared a gift worth over 10 million bucks for the old head of the Taylors’ 70th birthday, right in front of the entire Taylor family! This 10-million gift is something extremely luxurious, and not even aristocrats can just frown upon it.” “Oh. So the two Young Masters want us to see what that brat buys. Is that it?” guessed the bodyguard driving the car. “They want to see if this brat actually buys a gift, and we’ll steal it from him if he does have enough money to buy such a gift. Then, when he can’t afford such an expensive gift or he actually buys the gift but can’t bring it out, he’ll be kicked out of the Taylors! The daughter of the Taylor family will then divorce him, and the two Young Masters will have a chance with her!” the other bodyguard explained. Very soon, Fane parked the car and walked Gemstone Street along with the beautiful Tanya and gorgeous Yvonne. This particular street—with its stalls for gambling rocks—was not just long, but it was quite famous in the country. Proprietors of gambling rocks from a few nearby cities would come here to look at the goods here, too. “Oh my. Isn’t that the beautiful Miss Yvonne? Long time no see! Where have you been all this time? Come over and have a look! There are quite a few potential gems in this lot—I feel it in my bones. Come over and buy to try your luck, Miss Yvonne!” An old man manning a stall by the roadside called out to Yvonne right after they took just a few steps in the streets. Elation sparked in Yvonne. She was immediately recognized as soon as she stepped into the street. Was this not

an evident indicator she was truly the number one rock dealer? “All right. I’ll have a look!” Yvonne bent over and carefully scoured through the pile of rocks. “Oh my. Yvonne Drake! I never thought that I’d see you here!” No one expected to hear a familiar voice ring out at that moment. It was Michael Wilson, the Young Master of the Wilson family, with a few bodyguards accompanying him. They appeared before Fane. “Michael Wilson!” Yvonne stood upright once she saw that it was Michael. She dusted her hands before speaking, “Long time no see. How much money have you…invested in these rocks this month?” The corners of Michael’s mouth twitched when he heard this. He did enjoy gambling rocks, but he had lost plenty of money on this pastime. Yvonne reveled in making fun of him with this information. However, Michael quickly managed a smile. “That was before, Yvonne. Now I’m much more knowledgeable in the art of choosing rocks. This month, not only have I not lost money, but I’ve earned 2.3 million up to this date!” “So little! What’s there to be proud of?” Yvonne retorted, a grin on her face as she did so. Michael’s gaze sidled toward Fane, and a spark of envy twinged in his chest. Both Tanya and Yvonne were beauties of the Drake family. One was as lively and adorable as a fairytale princess, the other a vixen who was unabashedly seductive. Who knew Fane would be so lucky to be a bodyguard for the Drake family and had gotten the chance to accompany two breathtaking ladies. “Miss Tanya, it’s such a busy place with so many people—and the chaos! And you only brought one bodyguard with you? Never mind that; a bodyguard who has only worked for a few days to boot? Aren’t you afraid that someone will try to steal something from you?” Michael spoke with a cold smile on his face. “Don’t worry, Young Master Wilson. Nothing will happen to Miss Tanya while I’m around, so don’t worry about her!”

Chapter 342

“I wouldn’t worry if I were you. I trust in Fane’s fighting prowess!” Tanya replied, a smile gracing her face as she did. She paid no more attention to

that fat b*stard, Michael Wilson, and studied the rocks laid upon the mat before her instead. Her eyes brightened in an instant as she picked one. “Hmm. This rock doesn’t look too bad,” she commented. “It’s big and square, and there are hints of jadeite on its surface. Not bad at all!” “You have a good eye, young lady. This piece is certainly promising. And look at its color—that’s the key. It’s such a clear and crystalline green. As a matter of fact, I’m reluctant to sell it off myself. I really want to give it a try as well. Alas, I’ve been short of money recently, so I don’t dare to gamble my luck!” The old man chuckled and thrust his palm forward, splaying his five fingers. “No need to weigh this. I’ll just give you an estimate of its value. I might lose out too much if I weigh it, after all. The price will be 500 thousand bucks; only then will I sell it off. I’ll just be running a loss if it turns out to be a fantastic gem once you break it apart! I’ll lose out on a lot if there’s a nice, pretty jade inside!” Michael also peeked at the rock; it did seem rather promising. ‘What if he struck the jackpot this time and obtained a good gem once it was cut open?’ he thought. His reputation would grow exponentially! Besides, Yvonne always poked fun at him. This was a golden opportunity to prove himself! He grabbed the rock instantly and studied it carefully. “It looks pretty good!” Yvonne studied the rock as well. “It does seem promising from the surface, but it’s still a little too expensive,” she spoke after careful deliberation. “I’ll be running a loss if there’s nothing inside. 500 thousand is too much, my good sir. The most it’ll be worth is one hundred thousand if you actually weighed it according to standard operating procedure.” “Hah. You lack boldness!” Young Master Wilson simply chuckled. Yvonne did not have that much money, so she was more careful on using them. This was evidently a chance for him to show off. However, he was not one to simply throw his money away either. He smiled and spoke to the old man, “500 thousand is a little too expensive. Lower it to 400 thousand and I’ll buy it. I’ll gamble on this rock. My luck has been pretty good lately. I’ll probably make quite a bit of money with this!” A few passers-by crowded over when they overheard the exchange. The old man

pondered upon the offer for a while. “All right then. 400 thousand it is. I’ve not opened up shop for today. Let’s take this as the opening ceremony then!” “All right. I’ll transfer the money to you immediately. Can you help me open it up?” Young Master Wilson grinned, his heart skipping in delight. The rock looked promising from its surface. Even if only a quarter of it was jade, then not only would he avoid a loss, but he would earn some money as well. If more than half of it turned out to be jade, then he would make a pretty sum. “You want it opened now?” The old man was slightly surprised. This request required a huge amount of courage. After the purchase, some people would take it home and mull it over before actually opening it. Moreover, they might feel that there was no guarantee of a gem inside and think of a way to sell it off. Of course, there were others who cut it open to gauge the situation after taking the rock back. If it was in a good condition, the rock’s worth would increase exponentially. Here, they could choose to cut it open entirely or sell it out at an even higher price to secure profit. “Just cut it! I won’t be running a loss if even a little jade is revealed!” Michael said confidently. Fane could not suppress a grin when he saw the other man paying the agreed price. Who knew that his smile would be caught by Michael? The young master’s expression darkened. “What are you smiling at, you punk? Take a good look. I can buy something worth 400 thousand just like that. This is a gambling rock—something that’s not for the likes for poor b*stards like you!” “You just threw away your money for a plain rock, and you didn’t even break a sweat. You truly are rich!” Fane bit back, a humorless smile on his face. “As if you know anything. Shut up! Just look at it. It looks nothing like a plain rock. Can’t you see the beautiful coloring on its surface?” Michael’s mood soured in an instant. If it was a plain rock, that meant that there was nothing inside but rock. It would be just like a gold-plated necklace, with the precious mineral only lining the surface.

Chapter 343

Needless to say, Fane's words displeased Michael. "Hmph. If you don't believe it, just take a look at it for yourself once it's cut open! But I'd advise you to take it back before cracking it open. You'll at least be less embarrassed that way!" Fane chuckled. "What a joke. You're just a soldier. What do you know about this? I'd only dare gamble on this rock after studying it carefully. You're standing two meters away, looking at it from a distance. How would you know it's just a rock?" Michael gave a mirthless chuckle. "I think you just despise rich people. You're spouting nonsense because you want to see me play the fool!" "That's right. People these days are so weird. Cursing others just because they can't stand them having more money!" "That's right. How would he know anything about this anyway? They're worlds apart. How would he know more than a young master of a wealthy family?" Quite a few of the bystanders began whispering among themselves as they made fun of Fane. "Young Master Wilson, which section should we cut open first? Should we just cut a small part first, or…?" The owner of the stall called for his two apprentices, and they set the rock upon the cutting machine. "We'll cut it open from this side!" Young Master Wilson shot Fane a vicious glare. "I don't believe that I won't see a hint of green when it's cut from this side!" he said to the old man. "That's right. This rock is anything but a plain old rock!" The old man glared at Fane as well. "Don't speak nonsense if you don't know anything," he said. "Talking as if you're very knowledgeable. If you're that smart, buy one for yourself and prove that you have a good eye!" Fane glanced over the rocks on the floor. "Not a single one of these rocks from your stall are worth anything," he said unexpectedly. "I'm not an idiot. Why should I buy them?" The boss was so frustrated that he almost spat blood. That stupid punk deserved to die! How dare he claim that not a single rock from his stall was worth anything. He was ruining his business and reputation. "You—" The old man was so furious that he merely shrugged Fane off. "What does a person like you know? Just cut it open. We'll teach him a lesson or two. I don't believe that there'll be nothing once this side is cut!" "All right, Master!" The two

apprentices cut into the rock from one side, splitting it straightaway. The crowd immediately surged forward. Young Master Wilson, especially, rushed forward impatiently. He took the rock; his expression instantly turned stormy. “No way. There’s not a single hint of jade! I don’t believe it... Cut it open from this side!” the unsatisfied Michael barked. The two apprentices quickly cut the rock from another side. After it was cut, Michael was rendered speechless; there was nothing on this side either. “It—It really is plain rock!” a member of the crowd spoke up in surprise, features twisted in shock. This meant that that man’s guess was correct.

Chapter 344

“Young Master Wilson, looks like your 400 thousand bucks have gone into the drain this time.” When Yvonne noticed all color leeched instantly from Michael’s face, she burst into cackles. She was not a fan of Michael Wilson. The level of Michael being fond of women was horrendously unacceptable. There was a time when Yvonne walked on the pavement, and Michael stared at her thighs multiple times. There was even one time when this guy walked behind her on purpose; he pretended to fall forward and grabbed her b*tt cheek. These incidents left its mark in Yvonne’s heart that she could feel the annoyance wrenching within her at that moment. If Yvonne was not part of the Drake family or Tanya’s beloved cousin, Michael might even do something more immoral and unscrupulous to her! Seeing Michael scammed made her see fireworks. The most important thing was that Fane, a gambling rock layman, could even guess it right. This situation for Young Master Wilson was definitely like a huge slap landed on his face, severely and harshly. What a shame! The young master merely laughed it off “It’s only 400 thousand. It’s not like I can’t afford to lose it!” Young Master Wilson responded with a wry smile on his face. Although exasperation thrummed through his vein, he winded down instantly to uphold his reputation. “You’re pretty good, Fane. You knew this was plain rock just by taking a look!” Tanya praised Fane for his ability to differentiate the

gambling rocks, a gentle smile on her feature. “Thank you. I just happen to know a little about these,” Fane replied with a humble smile. “You know about stones? Haha! I think you were just lucky to guess it correctly!” Michael smiled icily with a mocking expression on his face. “If you really know these stones, buy one. Cut it open and we’ll have a look!” he snarkily commented. “If you could get a good one, I’ll admit that you’re capable!” Once the last syllabus of Michael’s word dropped, Yvonne immediately stepped forward and proposed, “Michael Wilson, how about you compete against me? We’ll each choose one rock, and we’ll see whose is more valuable!” “Sure. I can compete with you. But what is a competition when there’s no bet? If no bet is involved, why should I compete with you?” Michael egged her on. Yvonne truly wanted to shame Michael in front of others. After giving some thoughts to the matter, she smiled and said, “Bet? Sure, why not! How about this: If you lose the bet, you kneel before me and bark like a dog!” The corners of Michael’s mouth twitched aggressively at Yvonne’s words. This woman was too much. How could she ask him, a young master from a second-class aristocratic family, to kneel down and bark like a dog if he lost? If he really lost the competition, would it not be a shame to the Wilson family? He stole glances at the enchanting and seductive figure of Yvonne; he could not help but move. “Haha! You’re definitely mean and cruel. Alright, as you wish! But if you lose the bet, you’ll make out with me for three minutes and I can touch and rub anywhere I want for a minute. How about that?” “Dream on!” Yvonne felt a flash of irritation after hearing his suggestion. “Well, then forget it!” Michael shrugged his shoulders, acting nonchalantly. “It’s not that I don’t want to bet with you, but you yourself forfeited!” “If you don’t mind, I do have a suggestion. We don’t have to play this big. How about each of you pick one rock of a similar size, and if anyone loses, he or she will pay the bill for the other party,” Fane proposed after some thoughts. He then continued, “Of course, the rock will belong to whoever picks it!” “Hmmm. It’s not a bad idea! Now what? Michael Wilson, would you dare to bet with me?” Yvonne

asked with brightly shining eyes. “Why not? I’m not afraid of you! Let’s pick a rock from this old man!” Michael pointed at the old man’s gambling rock stall. “What? There’s no good rock here. Only one or two of them are, but they barely pass the satisfactory level!” Fane smiled bitterly. He, the supreme warrior, knew a lot more than others. Rock-betting was as easy as breathing for him.

Chapter 345

“How would you know any of these rocks aren’t of good quality? You didn’t even take a close look on them! Besides, you’re just a layman, so what do you know?” The old man who owned the gambling rocks stall reprimanded Fane. He was so livid that he wanted to choke Fane to death. Was this punk here to ruin his business and reputation? “Shut up if you don’t know anything about gambling on rocks!” Yvonne rolled her eyes at Fane and squatted down to pick her rock. After a while, she picked up one rock. “This is it,” she exclaimed. “This rock isn’t bad at all!” Michael’s brows furrowed. He was not confident in this game as he knew Yvonne was more experienced than he was in this area, though he believed his ability to tell a good rock improved so much lately. Michael wandered between a few rocks for several times and eventually picked a rock of similar size. “This rock is it!” Fane silently looked at both rocks chosen and approached Yvonne. “Miss Yvonne, I suggest you change yours. Although your piece looks good from this angle, you’ll find that it’s not as Young Master Wilson’s once you cut it open,” Fane reasoned. “Impossible!” Nevertheless, how could Yvonne believe his words? With a stern glance, she replied, “What do you know? From my years of experience, my rock is definitely of better quality than Young Master Wilson’s!” “Haha! Miss Yvonne, although Fane is a nonprofessional in this area, sometimes the words from his filthy mouth are quite accurate! What if he’s right this time? Then I’ll win!” Michael commented without hiding any hint of happiness over his face. “Hmph! I don’t believe I’ll lose to you!” Yvonne countered angrily. “I’ll weigh these

two rocks and quote you according to the current market price. It'll be 10 thousand bucks per 500 gram!" spoke the stall owner. "Not a problem!" Michael and Yvonne agreed instantaneously. This was indeed the market price. After weighing the rocks, the rock belonging to Yvonne was around 7.55 kilograms whereas Michael's weighed around 7.75 kilograms. They weighed almost the same. "Let's calculate it on the basis of 20 thousand per kilogram, it'll be a total of 300 thousand bucks! Whoever loses the game will pay for it!" The old man said with a smile on his face. No matter who won the bet today, he would still have a huge profit out of it! This was especially for the one that Young Master Wilson opened it earlier on. The old man planned to open it before that. He thanked his lucky stars that he did not open it but instead sold it to this Young Master Wilson. Otherwise, he would have lost 400 thousand bucks. The old man thanked God multiple times for that. "All right!" Yvonne felt so sure of herself that she handed the rock confidently to one of the apprentices of the lapidary. "Cut mine first!" she spoke. Not long after, the rough piece of Yvonne's was cut open. Yvonne's pallor was deathlike, looking at the content of the rock. There was a little jade inside the rock, but it was way too little, just a thin layer in it. Even if this rock was processed and polished into jade, it would only worth 10 thousand bucks or so. The fact that a rock worth 150 thousand became a pitiable 10 thousand pierced right through Yvonne's heart, and she felt it bleed. The most atrocious thing was that she was on an unfavorable side. If she lost, she would have to pay 30 thousand bucks! "Fane, if I lose, it's all because you jinxed me!" Yvonne turned her head facing Fane and threw him a deadly glare. Fane did not know whether to cry or to laugh at this moment. "I already told you and asked you to change to another. I can't help you if you don't believe me, right?" "Phew!" Michael heaved a huge sigh of relief when he saw Yvonne's rock was not of a good quality. He then handed his piece of rock over to the apprentice. "Open mine now!"

Chapter 346

Yvonne felt her heart thrumming at her throat as she watched the apprentice cut Micheal's rock open. She desperately prayed that the gambling rock Michael picked was worse than hers. If his rock was a plain rock or contained just a little bit of jade, then she still had the chance to win the bet. Alas, the stone was later revealed as a rock of better quality than hers though, despite being extremely unsatisfactory and trash worth only about 20 to 30 thousand bucks. Michael guffawed in an instant. "Please forgive me, Miss Yvonne. Looks like I won this time!" Michael chuckled sardonically and continued, "Pay up! 300 thousand bucks!" "Hmph! It's only because Lady Luck was with you this time!" Yvonne snorted coldly before transferring money to the boss. However, because Yvonne was bent out of shape, she glared at the stall owner and complained irritably, "Fane was absolutely right. Your stall has no good stones at all!" Obviously, Yvonne spoke it out of anger. The stall owner would not dare to go against the Drake family even though he was displeased with her words. He could only laugh bitterly. "Tch! Him? He's merely a lucky b*stard who guessed it by chance!" Michael sneered, his eyes burning in mockery. "Hmm. Why don't you bet with me?" Fane responded with a cold smile. "But, we'll have to go to other stalls." "As you wish." Michael's mood lifted instantly and grinned. "I've never competed with a rookie like you. Hehe! This is refreshing and rather interesting. Come now, what are you betting on?" "Same as before. If you lose, you'll pay for the other party!" Fane replied, smiling. Michael, on the other hand, shook his head unexpectedly. "No, no, no! I can do it with Yvonne, but with you? Forget it! You're just a poor and penniless punk. I know it hasn't been long since you started working and haven't gotten the pay yet, so you must have no money right now!" Michael turned him down. "So if you win this bet, I'll have to pay for you, and you basically gain something from nothing, right? You can't fool me with that cheap trick of yours!" Fane was rendered speechless for a moment. He, Fane, had no money? Hilarious! With his current wealth, he could easily buy the entire Wilson family, but this fat Wilson had the audacity to say he

had no money? He was too reluctant to argue with him anyway. “Then what do you want to bet?” he spoke. After thinking about it, Michael replied devilishly, “How about this: If anyone loses the bet, he’ll get on his knees and bark like a dog!” “Michael, this is a little too much.” “Are you sure you want to torture yourself like this? It’s a bad idea.” Fane laughed at Michael’s suggestion. The corners of Michael’s mouth twitched involuntarily. “Haha. Funny. You don’t dare to bet, do you?” He leered at the veteran. “Don’t pretend to understand me if you don’t dare to bet!” “Go ahead, Fane. I’ll pay for you.” Yvonne suddenly came forward, and with an interesting proposition to boot. Fane was slightly taken aback at her words. “Wow! I really didn’t expect that the charming Yvonne would help me right now. It must be my lucky day! Okay. Let’s do it then. I’ll give you the rock after it’s opened. It’s the rock that you pay after all, right?” “Don’t have to thank me. I always stand against injustice, just like Tanya!” Yvonne had a small, suppressed smile. The surge of giddiness overwhelmed her so. This man—Fane Wood—accidentally saw her without clothes yesterday, and she searched for every possible way to exact her vengeance. Was this not a great opportunity? It did not matter who would lose at the end of this bet; she would still be satisfied. Fane kneeling down and barking like a dog would satiate the anger from yesterday’s incident, while Michael ultimately losing the bet would serve her justice from the loss she suffered minutes ago! “Don’t pick a big rock, alright? I’ll lose a huge profit if it’s too big!” she hastily added after mulling over their bet.

Chapter 347

Regardless, Fane walked toward another stall and took a close look. “Don’t worry, Miss Yvonne. You’ll only be making more money, not lose it. If you lose it, I’ll reimburse you!” “If that’s what you wish, then so be it! I’ll take it as you’re borrowing money from me this time. I’ll help you to pay first.” With a grin on her face, Yvonne held Tanya’s hand in hers as she approached Fane. “I’ll take this piece, then,” Fane spoke as he pointed at

one big rock. The rock was square, and it was estimated to be around 15 kilograms just by looking at its size. However, this big square rock was under the stall owner's buttocks. The owner used it as a stool as she sat on it. "What? Y—You want this piece?" The boss was a middle-aged woman. She froze at her seat for a good moment before she shot up from her seat. Hearing Fane's words sent a rush of happiness through her being. This big square rock had been in this stall since a year ago. The middle-aged woman initially hoped that some rookie would buy it because of its look; it looked smooth and shiny on the surface after all. However, a year had passed, and no one bought it. They all left after taking a closer look at it. Even the boss herself thought that it would be an unworthy plain rock since no one ever offered to buy it from her hands, hence she used it as an ordinary stone tool to keep her buttocks off the ground. The boss would not bother to bring the rock home every day after closing the stall had it not been for the tiny hint of red on its surface. It was heavy, after all. She had never expected that, on this fine day, a young man expressed his interest in this rock! "Haha! Fane, are you a fool? Everyone in Gemstone street knows that this rock has been sitting here for almost a year! Firstly, this rock is too big, and no one dared to bet on it. Secondly, its content isn't exposed at all! There's no sign of emerald nor jade on the surface, only a pitiful strand of red color! The red might be rubbed off after a few more times sitting on it." "Are you sure you're choosing this one? Haha! You might as well just pay for both of us now!" Michael burst into laughter, seeing Fane's choice of rock. Fane; what a foolish man! "Fane, are you trying to burn yourself? This rock is at least 15 kilograms! It's more than 300 thousand!" Yvonne shook her head, disagreeing with Fane's choice. Even though she was not fond of Fane, she still hoped that he could beat Michael after seeing how snobbish and arrogant Michael was when he won their bet. "My dear sir, they're the ones who don't know anything. You, on the other hand, have a good eye. Come closer. Take a closer look at this hint of red! There might be some rare and scarce gem in it!" The middle-aged woman stall owner finally encountered

some fool who wanted to buy it! How could she miss this excellent opportunity? “Let me tell you, just buy it! It’s definitely a rock of top-notch quality! Trust me, I’ve been purchasing those gambling rocks for years!” “Hmph. You’re trying to trick a fool, aren’t you?” Tanya could barely hold it as she tried to expose her intentions. “If you really think that it’s a good rock, why don’t you open it yourself?” This stall owner obviously wanted to sell this rock off quickly when she knew Fane was a gambling rock dummy. Was this not a scam? “Yeah, boy, this Miss is right! Don’t buy it if you’re not a gambling rock professional! Everyone has seen this rock before!” Many surrounding onlookers, one by one, tried to persuade Fane to not make foolish decisions. “This is definitely a treasure! You don’t understand.” Fane, on the other hand, chuckled happily. “This is it! I’ll pick this!” “Okay, alright, young man. I’ll let someone weigh this rock right away. Don’t worry, I’ll give you a discount!” The woman immediately asked her two apprentices to move the rock over. “19 kilograms sharp!” she announced to Fane. “I’ll count it as 15 kilograms; the remaining kilograms are considered a gift to you. 300 hundred thousand is enough. I’m such a nice person!”

Chapter 348

“Hehe. It’s 19 kilograms but you only collect the money for 15 kilograms. You truly are a kind person!” After listening to the exchange, Tanya leered, smiling coldly. “This is just an ordinary rock, so of course you’re kind enough to give a discount! If you really think this is a top-grade rock, will you still be this kind?” “That’s right! You’re scamming a rock newbie! You’re nasty!” Yvonne echoed before turning her head to look at Fane. “Let me help you, Fane. The piece that you picked is nothing but a plain large stone! It’s just an ordinary stone, from the roadside.” “Stop interfering!” the Young Master Wilson quickly interjected them. “Yvonne, don’t break the rules. This time, it’s me playing against Fane, not me against you! Since you’re not involved in this, you shouldn’t interfere further! If you insist on

doing so, let's call this bet off!" "He's right. Outsiders shouldn't interfere!" "I agree! The one who bet with Young Master Wilson should do the picking!" The bystanders spoke up one by one as they commented on the bet. Yvonne's pallor was unsightly, but she could not fight back anymore. After all, if she helped, she would be breaking the rules. "What do you mean by 'bullying a newbie'? Miss Yvonne, I know you're a member of the Drake family, but please be reasonable! This is a gambling rock, and its content can't be predicted before it's cut open. You can't see through this rock, but what if this young man picks the right one?" The woman was sullen at her choice of words, but she then turned to Fane with a grin on her face. "Young man, do you still want it? I've given you a fair discount!" "Of course! It's 9,000 bucks cheaper! Why would I not want it?" Fane accepted the offer in an instant, a smile plastered on his face. He then continued, "Miss Yvonne, a moment ago you said that you'll pay for me first. Could you please pay it now? Regardless of the rock's contents, I'll give it to you. After all, you're the one who paid for it, so it's a reward for you!" Yvonne was so pissed that she almost fainted. This was a trashy plain rock no doubt, and nothing good would be in there after it was cut open. And this punk even said to her that he would give it to her? Nevermind, she would not want it. Although she could feel her blood boiling within her, she unwillingly still paid the money. The stall owner felt much better once Yvonne paid for the rock. The big trashy rock was finally sold out to a fool! She thanked herself for never throwing the rock away, and she finally reaped the fruit by earning 300 thousand. "Hehe. Young Master Wilson, it's your turn now. Since you're playing a game, I suggest you choose a big one. Otherwise, you can't live up to your reputation." The middle-aged woman grinned as she tried to convince Michael. Michael was satisfied when he saw that Fane had paid all that for a piece of junk. This idiot spent hundreds of thousands to buy a large rock, an ordinary rock that no one would ever pick, and yet he stayed confident with his choice! Michael could not wait to see Fane bark like a dog later after the game. Michael's eyes wandered around the stall, and not

long after, he spoke, “There are no more big rocks like this from your stall. Besides, even if I’ve picked a smaller one with just a tiny bit of gem, it’ll be enough for me to win the bet!” Once the last word of Michael’s dropped, he pointed at a piece of gambling rock and said, “This one is not bad. The part exposed from the surface has good color as well. Hmmm. I think it may be a good one! Alright, I will pick this!” Yvonne’s heart sank deeper when Michael had chosen a piece that she would choose. Sigh. This time, Fane would lose for sure. Before that, Yvonne had been observing both men all the while, and she had a feeling the gambling rock that Michael had chosen was pretty good. She initially planned to make Fane pick it, but it eventually fell into Michael’s hand. What made her feel even more miserable to the point she almost vomited blood was what Fane commented later on. “This rock is pretty good! Most of it is jade, and icy jadeite at that! You’ll rake in a pretty sum after this. Such a lucky guy!” Fane praised Michael after taking a look at the piece in his hand. Although Michael thought that Fane was a gambling rock rookie, he could not help but feel proud and content at Fane’s praises. “Oh, really? Haha! Then you can just admit defeat. If half of my rock contains icy jadeite, I guess it’s worth at least a few million! Now you can go ahead and learn how to bark like a dog!”

Chapter 349

“Hmph! We haven’t even opened this one yet. How can you tell that I’ll lose? I just said that yours wasn’t a bad choice!” Fane chuckled, countenance nonchalant. “Why you… Why would you put yourself down like that?” Yvonne muttered to herself. “Cut mine open first!” Michael immediately paid for the rock in his excitement, and more than a hundred thousand disappeared just like that. The two apprentices cut into one side of the rock. He stepped forward to take a look the second it was cut open. His lips quickly curled into a smile. “Hah! Fane, you little b*stard. You were right on the nail this time. Do you see that? More than half of it is icy jadeite, and its coloring is pretty good too. This can probably go for a few million

bucks, no problem there." "No way!" Yvonne and Tanya's expressions darkened when they saw this. Michael had indeed chosen a good rock. It was hard to chance upon such a quality of a gemstone on a normal basis. "Congratulations, Young Master Wilson! You chose a good one!" The stall owner was stunned silent. After all, she did not dare to open it herself and had just brought it out for sale. This was a huge loss for her. However, gambling rocks worked this way. Pulses would quicken while gambling. No one could be blamed for her lack of foresight and luck this time around. "How about it? Are you going to get on your knees and bark like the dog you are, Fane Woods? Just give up already. A gem like mine isn't cut open even after two weeks in this street. Never thought I'd get it!" Young Master Wilson was immensely elated. His spirits had been uplifted. He oh-so badly wanted to record Fane getting down on his knees and bark like a dog. He would record the entire thing and show it to the Taylors during Old Man Taylor's 70th birthday bash. That would be extremely gratifying to do. "I haven't even opened this yet. How do you know if I've lost?" Fane gave a dry smile. "Please help me cut this open, Ma'am," he said to the boss. "Cut it open on its biggest side." "All right!" The boss agreed to this, grinning, but she had a hunch that Fane was guaranteed to lose. She had seen a tinge of red on that rock a long time ago; not a single hint of jadeite was there. From the outside, it certainly looked like it was not worth much. Probably more than half of it was just plain rock. She would not have used it as a stool otherwise. Yet when the rock was cut open, a haze of white was revealed. Then, they saw a tinge of green in the white. "It's lavender jadeite. An icy species—and a high-quality one, too!" "Oh my goodness... It's almost the entire rock too. The rock only covers its surface. It's all jade inside!" The two apprentices cried out when they saw the hidden stone beneath the layering, their voices trembling in excitement as they spoke. They had worked under their master for several years now, and this was the first time they saw icy jadeite of this quality. How could they not be excited? "No—

No way!” Michael was flabbergasted. Its value was ridiculously high. It could easily be sold off at a starting price of 20 or 30 million bucks!

Chapter 350

“Let me see. Let me see!” Yvonne immediately rushed over and bent down to take a good look. She traced her fingers over the jade. “Oh my God. Its coloring is absolutely gorgeous. It’ll be so easy selling this over 20 million!” “Is this icy lavender jadeite? It’s the first time I’ve seen something of this caliber!” Tanya was excited as well. Fane had all the stars in the world to thank for this sort of luck; he had chosen such a fantastic piece. “It—It really is high-quality icy jadeite!” Michael frowned. He seriously lost this time around—and badly too. Although he managed to get a pretty good gem, his gem was far inferior compared to Fane’s. Fane then turned to Michael, a humorless smile on his face. “Young Master Wilson, get on your knees. You can’t turn back on your word as a man now, can you?” he teased. “You…” Young Master Wilson’s features were contorted in an unreadable expression. He was the young master of an aristocratic family. Was he really going to kneel in front of this stupid bodyguard and bark like a dog? He would shame his entire family if word of this got out. Everyone would gossip about this behind his back when he would return here in the future. He truly regretted his actions. He should have never made this bet with Fane. However, who could have imagined that this hothead—who had no idea about gemstones—would actually choose such a precious item just like that? “It—It really is icy lavender jadeite of top quality!” The stall owner looked extremely crestfallen. Her expression was not much better to look at than Young Master Wilson’s. She had thought that she would never sell it out, assuming it was a piece of rock. Who knew that it turned out to be such a huge chunk of pure jadeite? She never had a clue; it was merely her stool all this time. “My God, that young man is rich now!” “That’s right. He managed to spot such a gem, literally. He’s amazing!” “Wasn’t he in the military? Don’t tell me that he just took a wild guess?” “Maybe. Maybe he

saw that this rock was big and chose it just like that. Why shouldn't he choose such a big one?" The crowd began to murmur among themselves. "Can't tell if Young Master Wilson will actually get on his knees and bark like a dog after this loss!" One of them pinned their gaze onto Michael, a hint of a smile at his lips. Young Master Wilson always walked down this street with a cocky swagger, and he was quick to take back his words when he spoke. However, it was a little different this time. This bodyguard of the Drake family was nothing special, but he had the support of Tanya and Yvonne Drake. It would not do if he did not fulfill his promise. "Don't push it, you punk!" Two of Young Master Wilson's bodyguards immediately glared at Fane when they saw this. "You're just a bodyguard," they sneered. "Our young master is the heir of a powerful aristocratic family. Young Master Wilson was just joking around with you, and you took it seriously?" "That's right. Don't take it seriously, you punk. It was just a joke!" They believed that as long as they stepped up at a moment like this and spoke up for their young master, the Drake family's bodyguard would not dare to do anything stupid. After all, a bodyguard was in a lower social position. How could he ever dare to provoke Young Master Wilson? If that man acknowledged that it was a joke, at least their young master's face was saved. More importantly, this meant that they had helped Young Master Wilson and allowed him to exit the stage gracefully. He would surely reward them nicely when they returned. Michael grinned when he heard this; his bodyguards were quick-witted indeed. If they put it that way, Fane had no choice but to back down if he valued his life.

Chapter 351

"No way. Young Master Wilson is a grown man, and a man must always keep his word, no?" Fane spoke without sparing the other man's shame, grinning. "That's right. Unless you admit that you're not a man but a eunuch or a woman, we won't let this slide!" The satisfied Tanya also chimed in, her arms folded across her chest when she heard their defiance. "Young

Master Wilson, you only made the bet with Fane because you thought that he was new at this, and therefore not well-versed with gambling rocks. Aren't you ashamed now that you've lost to a rookie? Furthermore, you refuse to acknowledge your debt now that you've lost. It wouldn't be very nice if word got out, right?" "Why are you such a sore loser?" This time, it was Yvonne who stepped forward and sneered at Wilson. The bodyguards dared not make a single noise anymore. The Drake family was one of the most eminent aristocratic families; they were in no position to threaten or bully Tanya Drake. It was almost like signing their death certificates. "Who said that I was a sore loser?" Young Master Wilson clenched his teeth. "I admit defeat!" he declared. Shock rippled through the crowd. They never expected Young Master Wilson to give in so easily. However, it was still the natural course of action. The people who stood before him were not any ordinary folk, but were of the Drake family. He could not afford to stand against them. Their bodyguard, on the other hand, was extremely bold to stand up and confront Young Master Wilson. Did the young man not fear that the young master would hold a grudge against him? No one expected Young Master Wilson to smile. "Still, I've had some knee pain due to rheumatism these two days," he said. "How about I get my bodyguard to do it for me?" "No." Fane did not even bother to give it a second thought. "Don't tell me that you're going to send your bodyguard as your substitute when you get married?" he teased, a grin on his face as he did. "You…" Young Master Wilson was so furious that all the color was drained from his face. He hated Fane so much that he wanted to tell his own bodyguards to beat him until he turned black and blue. It was only Fane's luck that Tanya and Yvonne were next to him; he had no choice but to stay his hand. "You really got some nerve, punk," he said. "You dare not spare my reputation?" "You lose, you pay up—that's the only logic I follow. Am I wrong? Let's say that I'm the one who lost today and I told you that I was joking, I don't think that you'd let me off the hook!" Fane was not intimidated in the slightest as he held the young master's glare. He had a fiery aura not many

possessed in them. Yvonne was also stunned by the sight. This man had so much masculinity in him. Any other bodyguard from the Drake family would have submitted a long time ago. After all, as a mere bodyguard, one would always worry that others would slowly begin to take revenge on them. Fane refused to budge, and Yvonne and Tanya stood beside him. Young Master Wilson was backed into a corner. He quickly formulated an escape plan. “What about this? I’ll give you 2 million bucks, and we’ll forget that this ever happened,” he offered. “2 million?” Fane was stunned. “Young Master Wilson, aren’t you undervaluing yourself? I never knew that your reputation was worth so little!” The corners of Young Master Wilson’s mouth twitched. This little punk was seriously overstepping his boundaries. He thought about it again before he spoke again, “How about this then? The gem that I found is worth at least 7 or 8 million bucks. How about I give it to you?” At this, Tanya and Yvonne could not help but look at Fane. If he let Young Master Wilson get away this time, then not only would he not earn a target on his back, but he would get 7 or 8 million bucks. It was a hefty sum of money. They assumed that Fane would agree to this deal. Any other person would have snapped it up a long time ago. “7 or 8 million is nothing to me. Give me a billion, and then we’ll talk!”

Chapter 352

“1 billion!” Many from the crowd inhaled sharply when they heard this. This bodyguard was just pushing it at this point. Was he aware of how much money 1 billion was? He had guts to be asking for 1 billion! Furthermore, Young Master Wilson had kindly offered the gemstone he had just bought, valued at around 7 or 8 million bucks; that was a pretty good deal on its own. How much could a mere bodyguard earn anyway? He spoke as though he had plenty of money. “1 billion? Heh. Aren’t you just being obnoxious? Why don’t you go and steal it yourself?” Young Master Wilson stared at him as though he was a madman, a contemptuous smile slowly forming on his lips. “Oh, I know why you need so much money now,” he said. “You’ve

been thinking about it till it drove you nuts, didn't you? Your dearest Grandfather Taylor's 70th birthday is fast approaching, and you'll be chased out of the Taylors if you can't fork out the 40 million you promised. Also, you'd have to break up with Selena Taylor, right?" "No way. This guy is Selena Taylor's husband?" "Mmhmm. I heard that he's a military vet—a war hero. I think he was the one who saved the day during the incident at the zoo!" Murmurs began to circulate among the crowd. "This guy is the definition of a true man, and he's not too bad of a person either. He risked his life at the frontlines so that we can live peaceful lives. My son, on the other hand, never made it back..." Lamenting, an old man from the crowd sighed as he recalled his son who had perished at the frontlines. Fane glanced toward the old man before looking at the gemstone right before Young Master Wilson. "Fine. I'll let you have a bit of dignity today." Fane took the gemstone from him. "I'll take the gemstone so that you don't have to kneel down and bark like a dog." "As if you'd dare do something like that!" Young Master Wilson''s bodyguard immediately snarled, full of bravado. Yvonne wanted so badly to see Young Master Wilson bark like a dog and thought that Fane would be firm in the idea, but she never expected that he would be convinced so easily. Needless to say, she was unsatisfied with the outcome. She then looked at the icy lavender jadeite. "Fane, you said that you'd give this to me after you've cut it open," she told him. "You sure you won't regret it?" The crowd became hyperattentive when they heard this. This gem was worth around 20 to 30 million. Was Fane really going to give it to her? Of course, it would make Fane less trustworthy should he choose to eat his words, but most would understand him. Many of them would choose to do so, too. It was a matter of 20 to 30 million bucks, after all! Yvonne merely wanted to see his response; she had no intention of claiming it as her own property. After all, she had only forked out 300 thousand, yet this gem was worth over a hundred times more than that. More importantly, she had advised Fane to not choose this rock. How could she have a say in anything now? "I, Fane Woods, will never go back on my

word,” he replied unhesitatingly, and it was an unexpected reply. “Anyone who knows me knows that I’m a man of my word.” After he said that, he walked toward the old man. “Your son died on the battlefield?” The old man nodded his head, a bitter smile on his face. “That’s right. I have a son and a daughter. My son had enlisted himself in the army, but who would’ve known that I’d never see him again. Now, it’s just me and my daughter, living our lives.” He released a tired sigh; red began to rim his eyes. “Still, my son was a hero because he died on the battlefield. How can we live in such peace without their sacrifices? I believe that those of you who were in the military would understand this!” Unexpectedly, Fane thrust the gemstone toward the old man. “I can’t do much for you, but this gem is worth a few million. Take this as my offering of thanks.” “What?” The crowd was stunned when they saw this, and hearts were touched at that moment. What a gift to give, from a former soldier to a martyr’s family. “Young man, this...this is too precious. I can’t accept this!”

Chapter 353

The old man’s eyes reddened even further; warmth began to tingle in his chest. “You have to accept this. This is a token of my appreciation—and it contains the hearts of all the soldiers of our country,” Fane insisted, earnest and solemn in his persuasion. “A—Alright. Thank you very, very much!” The old man’s eyes turned glassy. He slowly took the gemstone from Fane’s hands. “It contains the hearts of all the soldiers in our country? Hmph. You think too highly of yourself now. Even a general wouldn’t spew such flowery nonsense!” Michael, who stood by the side, smiled a cruel smile when he heard this. “Talking as though you were a god of war!” he scoffed to himself. “Thank...thank you!” The old man wanted to get onto his knees, but Fane stopped him. The old man quickly went to a nearby store to exchange the jadeite for money. So long as it was sold for a slightly cheaper price, plenty of brokers were willing to buy such gemstones. “How generous of you, giving something worth 7 to 8 million away just like that. Why didn’t

you keep it for yourself? If you gave it to Grandfather Taylor, the Taylors wouldn't trouble you so much since its value is almost 10 million. Well, almost… But it's better than not being able to fork out anything when his birthday comes along!" Michael smirked as he came face-to-face with Fane. "You don't have to sweat yourself over this matter. Nonetheless, I'm letting you off with a warning: Don't even think about having my woman. You might regret everything otherwise—and it'd be too late then." Fane stared at the other man. He did not even see Michael as a menace. "Hah! Interesting. Are you threatening me?" Young Master Wilson burst into laughter. "That's right—she's your woman now. But if you can't bring out the promised 40 million during the old man's 70th birthday, you'll be kicked out of the Taylor family." Michael clicked his tongue. "You'll be forced to divorce her, and if she's divorced, then isn't she free to do as she pleases? She won't be your woman then." "Just wait and see!" Fane could not be bothered with the other man. He turned toward Tanya. "Miss Tanya, should we continue shopping or go back now?" he spoke, falling back into his bodyguard posture. "Let's go back. We can't lug such a big gemstone around with us. Besides, someone is really eager to go back and properly inspect the stone at home!" Tanya smiled and glanced at Yvonne. Yvonne adored gambling rocks, and she loved jadeite even more. "Let's go back. Fane, carry this back to the car. It's way too heavy for me!" Yvonne cast Fane a brilliant smile. This man had given her such a valuable item. She no longer cared about yesterday's incident. Fane easily hefted the gemstone, and the three walked towards the car. It was only then when Yvonne looked as though something just came to mind when they were halfway to the car. "Fane, are you really going to give such a precious object to me?" she said, expression unreadable. "Don't tell me that you like me and want to be on my good side? I told you that I'm not the least bit interested in a married man such as yourself. Don't get any ideas!"

Chapter 354

Fane felt slightly bashful. Yvonne was under the impression that she was every man's object of desire. Now that he thought about it, his actions were rather questionable. Would anybody else just give away something worth 20 to 30 million? Furthermore, Yvonne was good-looking, and she had a nice figure. He had accidentally caught sight of that figure yesterday too, so she probably suspected he had some unsavory intentions towards her and wanted to get on her good side by giving her such a present. It was certainly a plausible theory. Fane gave a wry smile. "Don't worry, I'm not having any wild ideas about you," he assured. "You paid for this, and I already said that I'd give this to you no matter what came out while you were paying. I don't go back on my word as a man." He paused for a while here before continuing, "Just take it as an apology for yesterday's accident, if you're genuinely that uncomfortable with taking it." In truth, he had not really done anything wrong yesterday. In fact, she did not close the door and walked straight out of the bathroom as she was. Nonetheless, she was a woman. Fane still felt slightly apologetic for that. Yvonne's cheeks immediately flamed when she heard his words. She did not know why the incident from yesterday suddenly crossed her mind. In addition, she felt like she was naked when Fane looked at her at this moment. It embarrassed her to no end. She rolled her eyes at him. "What do you mean you don't have any ideas about me? Am I that ugly?" Fane quickly cleared his throat and decided to be blunt. "You are good-looking, but I have a wife, and I think she's more beautiful than you are. I certainly won't have any wild ideas!" "You…" Yvonne was so angry that she stamped her foot. What did he mean, saying that she was good-looking yet was less beautiful than his wife? He really had a foot in his mouth. Could he not even attempt to sweet-talk a girl? Besides, she was far younger than Selena, and she had a voluptuous body. How could that woman ever compare to her? "Hold on. Why is your face turning red, Yvonne? What did Fane do to you yesterday?" Tanya was quick to notice something, and she asked as soon as she detected something off. "Oh, it's nothing!" Yvonne suddenly panicked. She did not know to speak

of something like this. She often wore sexy clothing, and even her skirts were too revealing sometimes, yet she was a conservative girl in personality. She had never been in a relationship and had never even held a boy's hand before. "But I think there's something going on between you too!" Tanya stared at them, suspicious. Of course, Fane and Yvonne's lips were sealed. She could not do anything but give up. Soon enough, they arrived back at the Drake family's residence. In a car parked on the opposite side of the street, Luca and the other bodyguards noticed Fane had returned. "He's back. Brother Luca, it's pretty late now. That punk will probably get off from work soon. Our opportunity comes the moment he leaves work!" a bodyguard spoke. "That's right. We must catch this b*stard!" Luca nodded his head. "Our young miss wouldn't be in such a dire state now if he hadn't fed her crotons!" They never thought that after a short while, they would see Fane driving a car out all by himself. "That b*stard actually drives a Porsche. It's pretty early for him to leave work. It's only 4:30 now, and he's already out!" Seeing this, Luca immediately set the plan into motion. "Come on, let's follow him," he spoke. "We'll think about catching him later once we stop his car." In an instance, the George family's bodyguards—numbering over 10—went down at the same time, walking toward Fane. "I'm barred at the gates the moment I come out. Seems like you've waited for me for a long time!"

Chapter 355

Fane's lips twisted into a mirthless smile as he got down from the car. "Ahem. I hope you don't mind, but you're coming along with us today." Luca chuckled, cutting straight to the chase. "Really? Where to?" Fane asked. "The George family's residence. You fed our young miss crotons, so you have no choice but to come along with us. Not a single one of your family members will be spared if anything happens to the young miss!" Luca looked at Fane. He knew the punk was probably a skilled fighter; Fane would not have been recruited as a bodyguard for the Drake family

otherwise. However, they had numbers on their side, and they were the guards of the George family, thus they did not tremble before Fane. “That’s a normal response,” came Fane’s reply, but his forehead creased soon after. “What do you mean? You’ve already taken my family?” “Hmph. What do you think, punk?” One of the bodyguards chuckled. “We’re just missing you and your wife, but never mind your wife. She’s a manager in the Drake family’s company, after all. You’re more important!” “You dare to take my family? How bold of you.” Fane’s expression darkened. A sudden chill swept over the area. “Look, we don’t want to raise a hand against them either, punk. Just come along with us quietly.” The bodyguard thought that they were in complete control of the situation and grinned at Fane. It was clear he did not think anything of the other man. “It’s in your best interest that my family be left unharmed. It won’t just be you who’ll accompany them to the grave otherwise—and even after I’m done with all the Georges, the bodies still won’t be enough!” Fane’s features hardened; his fingers curled into fists. “Hmph. We talked nicely to you. You think you’re some sort of big shot now?” “Seems like you’ll seriously look down on us bodyguards of the Georges if we don’t teach you a lesson.” “Of course, the Drakes are more powerful than the Georges in terms of financial and material wealth, but no one said that the Georges’ bodyguards can’t rival the Drakes’ bodyguards!” Two or three men circled Fane, prepared to pummel him. Alas, they had no chance to strike first when Fane lashed out. His fists flew, and in a flash, the three bodyguards were on the floor, spitting blood. “Vermin like you don’t even deserve to put yourself on the same pedestal as me.” Fane icily glared at the men writhing on the floor and moaning in pain. He bore the indisputable aura of someone high above them. Luca was completely stunned in his spot. Fane moved too fast; he did not manage to get a good look and his subordinates were already on the floor. Someone like this was way too terrifying. In a moment, all his confidence from earlier deserted him. “I’ll go to George family’s residence, but you’re not going to hold me down!” Fane waved at Luca and the other bodyguards.

At this moment, Luca's phone rang. He quickly picked up the call. "Luca, have you and your guards done anything yet?" came Mr. George's voice from the other end of the line. "Fane is a miracle doctor. Our daughter is completely fine now, and she's in good spirits. Plus, she genuinely lost 30 kilos. You have to invite Fane and his wife over nicely. They're our esteemed guests!" he spoke. "Oh, that's right," the patriarch added. "Our butler has already booked a hotel—the six-star Dynasty Hotel!" The corners of Luca's mouth began to twitch furiously when he heard all of this. Why could he not have called one or two minutes earlier? Now, Fane did not seem too happy.

Chapter 356

"Brother Luca, what do we do? Seems like the b*stard is super strong!" One of the George family's bodyguards asked Luca right after he hung up. It was obvious that what Fane did just then had sparked fear in them. Luca exhaled a heavy sigh and approached Fane. He bowed ever so slightly. "My apologies, Miracle Doctor Woods. It's all a misunderstanding," he apologized. "Our master just called us and said that the young miss is doing very well. In fact, she lost a total of 15 kilos today. He specially said that he'd be treating you and your family to dinner. We've already booked the hotel." The remaining bodyguards also started to bow when they heard this. "We apologize, Miracle Doctor Woods!" they cried toward Fane. Fane was stunned; their attitudes changed entirely in the blink of an eye. More importantly, so many people were watching them. Being called 'Miracle Doctor Woods' attracted a little too much attention than what he would like. He could do nothing but smile. "It's fine so long as my family isn't hurt. Don't call me a miracle doctor—I'm not one in the first place. I just saw that your young miss was a little overweight and helped her to lose it." The crowd was taken aback. This man spoke of it so easily. Help her lose weight? If Sharon George could lose weight that easily, the issue would not have dragged on to this day. She had seen so many doctors, so many

dieticians. Every single one decided that her obesity was an incurable disease. After he mulled over his thoughts, Luca asked, “Miracle Doctor Woods…no. Mr. Woods, will there be any complications if she loses that much weight in such a short time? Will it affect the young miss’s health?” “Don’t worry; there won’t be any complications. Furthermore, she won’t go back to her initial weight, and her skin will be supple and bouncy!” Fane spoke confidently. “Oh. That’s great then!” Luca heaved an internal sigh of relief. “Before, we had invited so-called professionals to help our young miss lose weight. Unfortunately, not only was it difficult for her to lose two or three kilos, but she’d even gain over 10 kilos a few days after that.” “Despite all that, you kidnapped my family. I can’t forgive you just because you’re treating us to dinner. Your master will have to apologize to my family and ask them for forgiveness!” Fane said earnestly after he thought about it. “Don’t worry, don’t worry. Our master will surely apologize. We’re reasonable people,” Luca assured him. “ Besides, he did this because he was worried about the young miss’s health—if any complications will occur. Only then did he temporarily kidnap your relatives. I assure you we didn’t lay a finger on them. We just let them rest in the Georges’ residence!” He noticed that Fane was definitely not a run-of-the-mill bodyguard. He was too quick on his feet. He probably would not last more than three seconds if he had fought the man instead. Besides, so many dieticians and doctors could not cure the young miss, yet Fane had helped Sharon lose 15 kilos just like that. If he was not a miracle doctor, what was he? This man was so skilled at both fighting and medicine. He was anything but normal. It was then when Luca made a mental note: He would tell the master privately that Fane Woods could never be crossed once they returned. In fact, it would be best if they could establish a good relationship with him. “All right, I’ll let you guys off the hook this once and go over to have dinner. I want to have a good look and see if you’ve bullied my family.” Fane agreed after he gave it some thought. “No way! Of course not!” Luca nearly collapsed in relief. Not one scratch was inflicted on Fiona or the rest of them before he came to

the Drake family's residence. He hoped that the master and the rest of the guards did not raise a finger against them during his absence. Fane was just a bodyguard, but with his level of skill in his fists, the Georges would incur a bitter victory if they fought… That was assuming they could win.

Chapter 357

Carefully planning, Luca then commanded the other two bodyguards, "You two! Go pick up Miss Selena from her company. You must be respectful and treat her well, do you understand?" At this moment, Fane thought of his precious daughter. "Oh, right. You didn't take away my daughter, Kylie, right?" he spoke. "If she's terrified because of you, you'd land yourself in serious trouble." After all, Kylie was only a little over four years old; he did not want her to be frightened and traumatized at such an innocent age. "Well, when we went to your house, we didn't see any little girl, so we didn't…" Luca wiped the cold sweat on his forehead once more. Thankfully, they did not take the daughter away as she went to school. Otherwise, this unassailable yet mysterious man before him would be infuriated. Although the George family was puissant, it was certainly not a good idea to give Fane the hump. "Alright, I'll pick up my daughter first before going to the George family's residence," Fane decided before going back into his car. Without further ado, Luca quickly commanded his subordinates to make way for Fane. "Hurry up and move the car. Make way for Mr. Woods!" Meanwhile, in the George family's residence, Sasa no longer had an upset stomach, and she did not want to visit the toilet again. It seemed that the efficacy of the pill had completely worn off, and Sasa was lively once more. The greatest outcome from everything that had happened was that Sasa had lost more than 15 kilograms, and she weighed only around 90 kilograms at this moment. If they had not seen it for themselves, Mr. and Mrs. George would hardly believe it. The girl before them turned into an alluring and comely young lady. This was their daughter! The clothes on Sasa were obviously bigger and looser now as she drastically lost so much

weight. She took a shower and found herself some old skirt that she used to wear when she was slimmer back then to change into. “Wow. Now that Miss Sasa has lost so much weight, her features are delicate and sharp. She looks very charming. If this continues tomorrow and the day after tomorrow, Miss Sasa would be stunningly beautiful!” Fiona’s praises for Sharon gushed right out of her mouth as she looked at her. Internally, however, she sighed in relief. The head of George, on the other hand, felt apologetic toward Fiona and the others. “I’m truly sorry, everyone. I especially didn’t expect that Fane, a veteran, could be so skilled in the medical area.” He paused and then continued, “I hope you can forgive me for what I did today.” “Oh, it’s all forgiven. You’ve already invited us to a six-star hotel for a luxurious dinner. How can we be so unforgiving?” Xena responded with a smile. This was the George family, a first-class aristocrat family! She would be set for life if she could get connected with a member or two of the family. “Dinner is a must.” Master George relented with a bitter smile. He then spoke again in a worried tone, “I’m concerned about Fane; that he’ll be unhappy about it. After all, he didn’t ask for a penny from my daughter, and yet he gave her such a magical pill to help my daughter lose weight.” “It’s nothing at all. Don’t be preoccupied. He listens to me, and he wouldn’t be angry if I asked him not to. Besides, is there any parent on this earth who doesn’t care about their children? Mr. and Mrs. George are only afraid of bad things happening to Miss Sasa.” The smile on Fiona’s face was only a facade; she was deathly afraid initially. “Hmmm. We’ll be going out to dinner in a while, and it might not be convenient for you to travel here and there, given that you don’t have a car. We have lots of cars in our garage, and some of them are just staying in the garage for nothing. How about you pick two of them?” Master George placated after mulling over his thoughts. “These two cars represent my sincere apologies. What do you think?” “Um… Uh. Mr. George, you’re too polite and benevolent to us! It happened that my son and his girlfriend, Xena, both have driving licenses but don’t have a car! Thank you so much! “ Fiona gushed with excitement, her eyes brightened in an instant.

Chapter 358

In a blink of an eye, Fiona and the others standing before one of the George family's garages. When the heavy metal door was lifted, they found themselves face-to-face with opulent and sumptuous branded cars: Bentley, Porsche, Ferrari, and even Rolls-Royce. Besides, some of them were rare and of limited edition. Each of them bore an imperial and illustrious aura like a prideful ruler. "Ma, can… Can I pick one as well? Is it mine after I pick it?" Xena was a little agitated; she never anticipated that her blessings would come so soon. She suddenly found herself touched with her decision of dating Ben. Him as a back-up was indeed her best decision ever. Nevertheless, Fiona countered, "How could you think like that? A moment ago, you were saying you're just Ben's girlfriend, and not a Taylor yet. For the time being, this car doesn't belong to you, but you can drive it since you're Ben's girlfriend." "Fane and sister Selena both have their own cars. Only Ben and I have driving licenses without cars. Ma, can't you just give it to me?" The bitter feeling of remorse hung over her head at that moment. After all, she was desperately cutting ties with the Taylors to save herself a while ago. How would she even know Fane could truly help Sasa lose weight? She bet Fiona would not want to give her the car anymore because of what happened. As expected, Fiona flashed a small smile and said, "You can use the car, but the car is mine, and the other one belongs to Ben. You can drive my car now for the time being as I wait for the moment I'd get my driving license, and I'll use it then. By that time, you could use Ben's. It's more than enough for you to share one with him." Xena swallowed down her tears of bitter disappointment. She could only smile bitterly at this moment. "Alright then. We're a family anyway, so it doesn't matter who owns the cars." "It's good that you understand it." Fiona chuckled. "Pick a car." "Master George, can we pick this...this Rolls-Royce?" Ben had been staring at a raven black Rolls-Royce for the longest time, and he felt giddy. "Absolutely!" Master George smiled. "This is my apologies for inviting you

to my place forcibly. As long as you're willing to forgive me for my rudeness and don't speak ill of me in front of Fane. You can pick whichever you desire!" "Wonderful! Master George, you truly deserve to be patriarch of the George family. How generous, how benevolent!" Ben could barely conceal his soaring excitement. He immediately pointed at one car. "This is it! I pick this!" "For the other one, we'll pick Rolls-Royce as well!" Xena exclaimed, an obvious tremble in her voice. If she got to drive a Rolls-Royce, it would immediately increase her social status. Just the thought of it sent shivers of excitement throughout her being. Master George guffawed. "Not a problem! Let me get you the keys right now." He soon got the keys to both cars and handed them over. "This is amazing. We can now drive such good cars, too!" "This is fancier and much more expensive than your sister and brother-in-law's car!" Xena gushed uncontrollably. "Master George, don't you worry. My son-in-law is nothing but skillful in treating people. He treated my husband's leg, and he's now fully recovered!" Fiona chuckled while praising Fane in front of Master George. Fiona's words shocked the George family. A short while ago, when they threatened to kill Fiona and the others, Fiona tried her very best to shove all the blames and responsibilities onto Fane. Not only did she not acknowledge Fane as her son-in-law, but she insisted Fane was an outsider. Now that Fiona saw opportunities and benefits, she changed her attitude, calling Fane her dear son-in-law unabashedly.

Chapter 359

"Really? I'd like to meet this son-in-law of yours then!" Master George flashed a small smile before he continued, "Both of you, drive the cars out of the garage and park them at the main gate. You can drive to the Dynasty Hotel for dinner in a while." "Alright, we'll do that!" Ben and Xena—whose every cell in their body was screaming excitedly not long ago—could not wait any longer to test out the cars. They drove the cars and parked them at the main gate. After a short while, Luca returned to the George family's

residence with a few wounded men. Upon their return, Luca made his injured men get medical treatment before presenting himself before Master George. Luca called Master George to come aside and whispered to him, “Sir, you didn’t harm Fiona and the others after we left the residence, did you? Fane has threatened us, saying that if we touched a single strand of hair of his family, he won’t go easy on us!” “Hmph. This young man is rather adamant and braze. How dare he not put the George family in his eyes!” After hearing what Luca had reported, Master George began to sneer. “If it’s not because he managed to treat my daughter’s strange obesity, I’ll make him know that no one can cross the George family!” Master George subsequently scoffed. “Us being a first-class aristocratic family isn’t a joke!” How dare this punk threaten the George family. Was he not a little too bold? Was the George family that easy to be threatened? However, the last thing he expected was Luca, the head bodyguard, tried to persuade him, “Sir, Fane Woods is no ordinary man. He can heal young miss’s condition, which shows that he possessed good medical skills. Moreover, his combat ability is superior that no bodyguards hired by the Drake family can compare to him!” “What do you mean? Is he that strong?” Master George’s feature turned solemn in an instant after hearing Luca's exaggerated claims on Fane. “Yes, Sir! He’s so strong that even three or four of our men wouldn’t be able to defeat him. It’ll only take him a second to knock them down and not a single chance for them to counterattack.” “Frankly speaking, even I can’t do it at such a speed, Sir. I believe he’s stronger than I am!” Luca’s face hardened as he spoke. There were not many people who acquired better combat skill than he did in this Middle Province. “What a strong man! It looks like the Drakes have recruited another skilled bodyguard!” After hearing it, Master George quickly thought of something that made his heart skip a beat. “Wait, what? Did you say that you and your men have already fought Fane?” Master George questioned. “I’m afraid that he’ll be very upset since you’ve done it. After all, to Sasa, Fane is her savior that helped her lose weight and to start anew. It was a really bad move for us to go

against Fane!” “Sir, the main reason is that your phone call came a little too late. If you’ve called one minute later, I’d be lying on the ground as well!” Luca showed a bitter smile and continued, “Nonetheless, Fane Woods isn’t an unforgiving person. He has the domineering and generous aura that a soldier should have. I can completely concur with this. He said as long as we didn’t do anything to harm his family, apologize to his family, and they’re willing to forgive us, then it’s fine for him. Otherwise…” Luca paused for a second and then carried on, with a worried tone. “Otherwise, he’ll dig our graves.” “What?” The uneasiness washed over Master George; he stood frozen upon hearing it. “Isn’t this punk being too arrogant? How strong is he that he could say such words!” Master George was rendered speechless for a good while before his lips could eventually part again. He thanked his lucky stars that he did not harm Fiona and the others; he even made an effort to apologize for it! At the same time, he doubted Fane’s ability to defeat the George family on his own.

Chapter 360

At the same time the conversation between Master George and Luca ended, Selena arrived at George’s mansion in her car. She parked the car in the yard and got out of the car right after. Selena still had her professional attire since she had just gotten off of work. Her aura made her look capable and responsible. “Is this Fane’s wife? Fane is lucky to have her as his wife! Can you see how outstanding she is?” Some from the George family exclaimed when Selena came into view. “Pa, Ma, are you alright?” Selena came to Fiona and Andrew and took a good look at them. She then asked, “What happened? Why did the George family invite us to dinner out of a sudden?” “Hey, it’s okay. Nothing happened!” Fiona answered with a smile. “Didn’t Fane help Miss Sasa to lose weight? Now that Miss Sasa has successfully lost around 15 kilograms, Master George is so delighted that he invited us to dinner! It’s his way of expressing his gratitude to us. Not only that, but he also showed us his garage and had us pick two of them as gifts!” Fiona

pulled Selena to the two Rolls-Royce as she spoke, “What do you think about these two cars, Selena? Look, these are so new. All their cars look very new; I guess they barely use them. It’s a waste to see those cars parked in the garage and not using them. Hehe. He asked us to pick, so of course we’d have to pick the most lavish ones!” Selena was dumbfounded at her words. These were Rolls-Royce, for God’s sake! She smiled wryly and sighed. “Ma, you really know how to help yourself and choose whatever you like.” “Of course! They’re all luxury cars, and they asked me to choose two of them. Why shouldn’t I?” “Besides, we didn’t get them by stealing or snatching. This a gift from the George family. Why shouldn’t we take it? We’re not fools.” Fiona’s face looked as though it was beaming. “Your brother and Xena will use these cars, and after I get my driving license, I’ll be driving it!” Fiona said to Selena. “Xena?” She immediately turned her head and looked to the other side upon hearing her mother’s words. Only then did she realize that Xena Jackson—this liar—was strolling with her brother in the garden on the other side. Selena’s face darkened in an instant. “Why is she here? Ma, didn’t you tell Ben what had happened that day? Why didn’t he break up with her?” “Selena, you know how much Ben loves Xena. Do you think it’s possible for him to ask for a breakup? Moreover, Xena already explained that it was only a misunderstanding. Both times that she planned the robberies were for her vanity. She showed off in front of her drinking-buddies and was eavesdropped by the other party over a drinking session. In fact, she didn’t initiate the collaboration with the other party!” Fiona replied in an awkward tone. Selena was rendered speechless for a moment. “Ma, how could you believe in what she said?” she spoke once she found her voice. “Didn’t Fane already explain that Xena was given a portion after the robberies? Her ultimate intention is the money; the Taylors’ money!” Alas, these words made Fiona upset. She shot Selena a fiery glare and rebuked, “If she was really after our money, why was she still with us when we’re not wealthy and have nothing at all? Hasn’t she been loyal to your brother all the while? Besides, Fane didn’t like Xena in

the first place! We can't completely believe in what he had told us, can we?" "Still, the Motorbike Robbers told us the same!" Selena was unconvinced of her mother's opinion. She always felt that there was more to Xena than what she let on; that she was not a good woman. Eventually, something bad would happen if Ben continued being with her. "That was to frame her!" Stubbornly, Fiona was still taking Xena's side. "Just let it pass! Perhaps Xena has some difficulties that we don't know. We can't completely trust Fane's one-sided words, after all. We weren't there when it all went down, right? Since your brother likes her so much, let everything that happened in the past be buried. Let's just pretend that nothing happened. If you're still unhappy about it, we'll all take extra precautions in the future and observe her closely to see what kind of person she is." Selena could not find herself to say anything after that. Twice. They were robbed twice, yet they still let the matter go. However, given that her mother took Xena's side and her unbelievable younger brother's love for Xena, Selena could only concede.

Chapter 361

Fane and Kylie soon arrived at the George family's residence main gate. He got out of the car and glanced over his surroundings. His face sunk. "My Miracle Doctor Woods! It's so great to finally see you here!" Master George's smile emerged in an instant and came over to welcome Fane. He stretched out his hand to show his sincerity. Fane placed Kylie at her feet before taking Master George's hand. "Don't have to call me a genius doctor or what-so-ever. I'm not a miracle doctor. In this world, there's only one person that is worth being called a miracle doctor. This person is Marshal Haays. Ethan Haays!" Fane bore a small smile as he spoke. "Fane will do," he added. "Alright then. Fane, your medical skills are really excellent!" Master George commented after a brief moment of thinking. "I've never met a doctor like you!" Fane noticed that there was no sign of anger on his family's faces. "It looks like my mother-in-law isn't upset at all," Fane concluded. Master George's face flushed. He was embarrassed. "I was

indeed reckless previously, and I have apologized to them." "Yes, he's right! It's only a misunderstanding. After all, your medical skills are so good that we as your family aren't aware of it, let alone Master George!" Fiona approached Fane and interrupted their conversation with a smile on her face. "Master George is very kind and generous! He even gifted us two of his luxury cars! I've never met someone as benevolent as he is!" Fane was speechless once more. It seemed like the two Rolls-Royce next to Fiona were compensation from the George family. Therefore, it was no surprise that his mother-in-law's mood was too good to be true. At this point in time, Ben and Xena came over to the crowd. When Xena noticed Fane's piercing stares toward her, she instantly remembered Fane slaughtering the Motorbike Robbers. She was so frightened that she lowered her head, afraid of meeting his gaze. "Xena, what's the matter? Feeling uneasy due to my presence here?" Fane smiled coldly. He spared her life, but he never expected this liar would be this bold to stay by Ben's side. This woman was a daredevil! "Brother-in-law, what are you talking about? We're a family. If you have anything else to say, let's talk about it later at home! Besides, Xena had come clean to Pa and Ma. It was just a misunderstanding!" Ben stepped forward and defended Xena once he noticed the tense atmosphere between Fane and Xena. "A misunderstanding?" Fane sneered. Were they saying that what he saw with his pair of eyes was only a misunderstanding? "Yeah! She was drunk and trying to show off in front of her drink-buddies that she found a rich boyfriend, and…" Ben shrugged and glanced at Master George. "My dear brother-in-law, we're at Master George's place. There's a crowd here; it wouldn't be nice to talk over this thing here." "Fine. I'll give you face since you're calling me brother-in-law today." Fane nodded, showing a light small. "But, I hope that you won't regret your decision in the future." Fane knew it very well that when Ben called him brother-in-law, Ben was hoping Fane would not probe further on the topic. Moreover, Fiona and Andrew had forgiven Xena. It would be oversensitive of him, aiming at Xena on purpose.

Chapter 362

Xena heaved in relief when she knew Fane could not do anything to her, even if he was upset. Ben and Fiona took her side and defended her. This left Fane no choice but to give up even if he wanted to murder her. Fane was calculative, though; he did not poke her bubble of lies right then and there. It seemed that this guy would be extremely difficult to deal with. Xena thought to herself that she had to be careful in front of him in the future. Otherwise, she would be giving the game away. “Let’s move. It’s getting late, and we’ve already made reservations at the hotel diner,” Master George chortled and announced. Right as Master George spoke, Sasa walked out of the house. “Fane, I just can’t thank you enough! The pill was so effective!” Sasa rushed to Fane when she spotted him. “Oh my goodness! She…” Selena clasped a hand over her mouth as she found it hard to believe her eyes. “Miss Sasa has lost a lot of weight! You’re only around 80 to 85 kilograms now, right? You look fitter now! If you lose another 15 kilograms tomorrow, you’ll look even better. Not only that, but judging by your features, you’d be a very stunning lady after you lose weight!” “Thank you for the compliment, Sis!” Sasa blushed. “If only I was half as good-looking as you after I lost some weight.” “You’ll look good, no doubt about it!” Selena managed to squeeze an awkward smile, even though she had an internal battle when Sasa called her ‘Sis’. Last night when Sasa proposed to Fane, she announced that if she ever got married to Fane, she would treat Selena like her dear sister. Of course, Selena was older than Sasa by a few years. She was not sure if she was oversensitive about this situation. “The result is pretty good. Today’s just the first day, and the result is most obvious and effective on its first day!” “The outcome will be a little less effective tomorrow, weaker on the day after that, and so on.” Fane examined Sasa for a good while before adding, “However, after three days of treatment, you should have an ordinary body type that a normal girl should be having. The extra flesh and fats on your body are mostly accumulated toxins. Those fats

shouldn’t be in your body.” “B—but I only left one pill now. My dad stomped the other pill.” Sasa’s brows furrowed in an instant as she grumpily stared at her father. Master George’s pallor was unsightly; he was embarrassed. How would he even know that the insignificant tiny black sh*t would be a magical pill? “Ahem! This is, in fact, my mistake. That tiny thing looks black and has a bad odor. It really looked like a black sh*t!” “Furthermore, how could I possibly know that you, a veteran who just returned from the military, know about diet and losing weight…” Master George let out another dry cough to cover up his awkwardness. “Fane, you still have this pill, right? Since the whole treatment required three pills, can you give my daughter one more?” Fane was still slightly annoyed that the George family kidnapped Fiona and the others away. If it was not because they did not take Selena and Kylie away, Fane would have burst and been hostile from the start. Now when he saw the other man asking for the pill with a bright smile on his face, Fane sneered, “Of course I have the pill. However, as I’ve told Miss Sasa before, this medicine of mine is very costly, and I gave her the first three pills as a gift! If you want another one, I won’t give it for free. You’ll have to buy it.” “What? This man is too much! How could he ask money for one tiny pill when our Master George has invited them to a six-star hotel and even gave them two almost brand-new Rolls Royces!” “I agree! He’s too much! How could he not give face to our Master George?” Some of the Georges whispered among them, discussing and commenting over Fane’s behavior. Based on their experience with others, Fane should be smiling and offering the pill to Master George to please him, like the others! Never did they expect that this punk would ask Master George to pay for the medicine. “Fane, what nonsense are you talking about?” Fiona quickly interjected when she overheard the heated discussion among the George family. She was afraid of offending them. Why was Fane unafraid of displeasing them?

Chapter 363

The George family was a first-class aristocratic family, after all. Fiona stepped forward and glared at Fane. “It’s just a pill, Fane. Why did you ask for money? Master George treated us well! He gave us two Rolls-Royces, too. What else do you want?” “She’s right! Fane, aren’t you being too greedy and ignorant? Can’t you just give it to Master George since he only needs one?” Xena snarled as she followed after Fiona. This was the perfect opportunity and time to please the George family! Was he an idiot? How could he ask for money and not consider the other party? Fane did not budge in the slightest at their friendly reminder as though he was as deaf as a post. He flashed an indifferent smile after a while and replied, “Those two Rolls-Royces are the compensation from Master George for kidnapping you guys, while the money I asked for is for the pill. Two different things. Besides, my medicine is expensive! If it’s not for the kind-hearted Miss Sasa, I wouldn’t sell it even if you kneel and beg!” This was the first time Master George met a person like Fane. Embarrassment washed over him in an instant. Nonetheless, the George family was loaded. It would not be an issue as long as it could be solved with money. “It should be this way,” he replied with a small smile. “Fane is right. I should pay for the medicine!” Pausing for a moment, he then asked, “Tell me, how much is it?” “It’s not a lot. 20 million will do. Great value for a great product.” “20 million? Why don’t you steal or rob? It’s just a pill, and you asked for 20 million?” A woman from the George family exclaimed angrily. She could not bear it anymore. This was blackmail in plain sight, not a regular business! “Fane…” Even Selena showed slight annoyance at Fane’s answer. 20 million was too expensive for a pill. Was Fane not afraid of upsetting them? “Honey, you have to believe me! I’m not speaking nonsense!” Fane explained, showing a bitter smile. “It doesn’t matter. 20 million it is, then!” Master George did not show any hint of hesitation. He then called for his butler. “Butler, apply for a card and deposit 20 million in it. Sent it to the hotel once done. We’ll make a move to the hotel for dinner first.” “Yes, Sir!” The butler nodded and left the compartment along with a few bodyguards. “W—what? Master

George really paid for it?" Fiona swallowed hard. She initially thought that Master George would be infuriated, but he did not. He even paid for the 20-million medicine. It was 20 million! Fane took out a black pill and handed it to Sasa. "Miss Sasa, keep it well. Don't let it stomped into powder again this time!" "Alright, don't worry. I'll keep it safe!" Sasa chuckled. Not long after, they all arrived at the main door of the six-star Dynasty Hotel. "F*ck! Isn't that the George family? Should we go and say something nice to please them?" On the other side, Ken Clark, who had just got off the car, whispered to Ivan Taylor who was next to him. Ivan took a closer look, and his eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers that they almost fell out. "Am I seeing things? T—That person looks like Fane Woods, the veteran, and that one looks like Selena Taylor. Huh? What? The whole family is here! And why are they with the George family?"

Chapter 364

The George family, a first-class aristocratic family in Middle Province. Even a second-class aristocratic family like the Clarks could not wait to please them! Of course, those like the Taylor family were even more eager to make friends with them! Such an opportunity would not come easily. Yet, there they were. Ken and Ivan saw Fane and his family walking together with the George family toward the six-star hotel! "This is weird. Under normal circumstances, many people would want to invite the George family over to dinner so badly just to please them. These people might not even show up even if you sincerely invited them!" "Hmmm. Could it be that today Fane invited them to dinner?" Ken murmured as he stared at them from behind. "Impossible! This is a six-star hotel, and it's very costly to consume here. Does that punk have the money to spend in such a place?" "Moreover, it'd be a shame for the George family to dine at the regular table, so he should at least get a private room and order fine liquor to please them, no? The cost will be at least one or two million, don't you think so?" Ken's forehead creased. Suddenly, his eyes lit up as if he had thought of

something. “By the way, I heard that Selena Taylor is the procurement manager in Drake Dynasty Real Estate which belongs to the Drake family.” “Yes...but how is it related to the dinner?” Ivan asked. “I heard that the George family wants to be involved in the construction material business recently. They’ve already acquired a construction material factory that was about to shut down and are preparing to spearhead a big project,” Ken explained. “Hmm… Do you think it’s possible that the George family wanted to collaborate with the Drake family in the South Hill Real Estate project?” Ken thought for a while and carried on, “After all, this South Hill Real Estate project is a piece of juicy meat. This project could rake up a profit of 7 or 8 billion, no sweat.” Ivan’s face distorted when he heard Ken’s words. “No, don’t say it. You’re wrong… F*ck, you’re right. It’s possible!” Ivan swore. “Selena is cunning. She said she’d consider collaborating with me the last time I met her, making me feel like there’s still hope to sign a contract, but I never expected her to be such a fake b*tch and invite the George family to dinner so she could get a favor or two.” Ken slapped his own forehead. “Now I remember!” he exclaimed. “Young Master Taylor, your family is directly involved in the construction material business, right? How did Selena not think of the Taylor family first? She’s one of the Taylors. Shouldn’t she take care of her own family first?” Ivan’s feature was even more distorted than before. “Hmph! Who knows how this woman’s brain works. She behaves well and filially in front of Grandpa Taylor and would always say she’ll make the Taylors greater than before. Now, however, I see that’s all changed.” Ivan paused for a while before he added, “I think it’s all because I’m now the family’s general manager, thus helping our family would ultimately be helping me. She wants to be the heir, so if she gives this project to the Taylor family, my position as the heir would be rubber-stamped!” “I see,” Ken nodded. “It seems like Selena isn’t as innocent and kind as we see her. Something seems odd about her being the procurement manager with such a high salary in the Drake family’s company, and Fane being their bodyguard with an even ridiculously higher

salary.” “Son of a b*tch.” Flabbergasted, Ivan could only sigh. “Young Master Clark, you knocked some sense into me. You made me open my eyes.” “Huh? What do you mean?” Ken was puzzled.

Chapter 365

“That’s why Miss Tanya treats Selena and Fane all too kindly. This is the truth. I knew it!” Ivan looked as though he could see the light at the end of the tunnel. “Think about it this way. Fane’s a punk who has only served as a soldier. Though he’s skilled, the Drake family is so wealthy. It’s so easy for them to recruit a good bodyguard! Why do they pay him 20 million a month?” Ivan allowed his words to sink in before he added, “Selena’s salary is quite high as well, but she’s a procurement manager, so it’s reasonable to be this high. Only Fane’s salary makes no sense; it’s too much! The pay he’s getting only makes sense if it’s Selena’s. It’ll be obvious that they’re doing something under the table if they pay Selena 20 million a month!” Ken seemed to have thought of something. “Are you saying that the Drake family wanted to pay Selena 20 million a month but are afraid of raising suspicion? And that’s why they pay Fane 20 million instead?” Ken hypothesized. “Bingo!” Ivan patted Ken on his shoulder and began, “Now, I’m pretty sure that there’s something fishy going on between either Selena and Young Master Drake or Selena and Master Drake! The 20-million salary only makes sense if we put it that way. What Miss Tanya said about Selena and Fane—that she’s a capable manager and he’s a skilled veteran—are all bullsh*t to me. I have a hunch that Miss Tanya only uses this as an excuse!” he continued. Ken stayed astonished. “So that’s the truth! Damn! Selena is such a shameless wh*re, selling her soul and body in order to get the life she desired! I thought the Drake family really appreciated their capability for a moment! Now that after Young Master Taylor has analyzed the situation thoroughly, I finally realized Selena is a lying b*tch!” Resentment grew inside Ken like a tumor as he spoke. He was good-looking—at least better than Michael Wilson—and filthy rich! If Selena wanted money, she

could marry him. Instead, she went to find someone from the Drake family—perhaps the old master Drake—in secret and rejected him. When he thought of this, his edge of irritation had returned. What was bad about him? Was he worse than an old man? “How cunning. If the Drake family pays Selena 20 million bucks a month, everyone will suspect that she’s being taken care of by a sugar-daddy. But, if this 20 million is given to Fane, they’ll never focus on Selena, let alone doubt her. Of course, it might puzzle them as to why Fane’s salary is ridiculously high!” Ken clenched his fists as he trembled with rage. “I, too, didn’t expect this dear cousin of mine will be this manipulative and crafty!” “Looks like I have to take precautions against her in the future. Otherwise, the Taylor family’s property will one day fall into her hands!” Ivan flashed a wry smile. At this moment, another car came into the scene. Neil Hugo, Young Master of the Hugo family, got out of the car. “Both of you arrived so early; much earlier than me!” he spoke. “What are you two talking about?” “Talking about a b*tch!” Ken’s fists were still tightly clenched, hot with anger. “Who is it? Come, let’s discuss it together,” Neil spoke with great interest in his voice. “Selena Taylor!” Ivan sneered. “Who else do you think it could be?” “No way. I think she’s a pretty good woman!” Neil furrowed, unable to digest their thoughts. Selena looked kind and gentle; why did they compare her to a b*tch? After a short while, Ivan and Ken shared all their assumptions and analysis with Neil. Neil, too, clenched his fist after hearing it. “Hmph! It’s true that there are no good women in this world! Most of them are gold-diggers and love money to death... Selena Taylor is no different!”

Chapter 366

“Young Master Hugo, Selena Taylor is a lot more powerful than we thought. We just saw her family dining at the hotel with the George family…” Ken forced a smile as he told Neil about Selena potentially collaborating with the George family on a construction project. Having said that, he then added, “Just think about it. If she didn’t give the George family any benefits, why

would they treat them to a meal?" Ivan glanced at the sports cars by the side, then blurted, "These people from the George family are truly generous. To think that they would chauffeur people around with Rolls-Royces. D*mn it. I've never sat in a Rolls-Royce before!" "Nevermind. It's not like we can prevent this now, can we?" Neil made a strained laugh before speaking to Ivan. "Young Master Taylor, you mentioned about asking us out for a drink. What is the matter?" "Haha, let's go. There's a decent bar there. Let's go drink as we discuss!" Ivan laughed out loudly, then led the two of them to a small bar. After arriving at the bar, they ordered some drinks and took a seat. Only then did Ivan speak up. "To be frank, I've heard that you both fancy my cousin sister! Is that so?" Neil took a sip of the drink in his hand, then laughed coldly. "That's indeed the case, but what can we do? Selena just won't give me any chance. Especially now that her husband is back and she loves that daughter of hers. Hehe, it's just too difficult to get my hands on her! Previously, I've even come up with a plan with Young Master Clark, but it failed!" Young Master Clark felt dejected as he recalled how Fiona almost accepted the 100 million bucks from him. He then downed the drink in his hand in one gulp. He smiled dryly, then said, "I'm the most unfortunate one. I've already been friends with Selena for a few years. If not for Fane coming back all of a sudden, I believe I'd be dating her now!" Having said that, he then shot another look at Neil. "Back then, Young Master Hugo hadn't even seen her. You've only seen her much later!" "Hehe, the reason I ask for both of you to come is to think of a solution!" "Fane had assaulted me previously, and Selena is a competitor in inheriting the Taylor family assets. Although she's currently kicked out of the family, I can't let my guard down!" "After all, my grandfather said that as long as Fane could fulfill his promise when the time comes, then all the things in the past would be water under the bridge. Their entire family will once again be taken back to the Taylor family!" At this point, Ivan laughed as he told them his reason for asking them out. "Young Master Taylor, you've taken the right move to look for us. After all, you're enemies with them, and we

want to have Fane killed. Our end goal is more or less the same!" Ken laughed, then added, "Oh yeah, what did Fane promise?!" "Oh, there were three conditions…" Ivan immediately told both of them what happened previously. "If Fane fails to fulfill his promise when the time comes, he has to get out of the Taylor family and divorce Selena. Hahaha! He would have to get lost, not walk!" Unexpectedly, Ken and Neil were making a pained smile when they heard it. Neil stated bluntly, "Fane is currently working for the Drake family with a monthly salary of 20 million bucks. Although it's only a short time before Old Master Taylor's birthday, Fane could ask for an advance payment of two months without an issue. Moreover, if we're not mistaken, Selena might be having an affair with Young Master Drake, or even James Drake. If that's the case, wouldn't money be a simple matter to them?" Hearing that, Ivan's expression immediately darkened. "If that's the case, all the more reason for us to not wait around!"

Chapter 367

"Young Master Taylor, do you have any ideas? We've tried our best but have yet to formulate a good plan. The last time we planned to have Fiona poison Fane, but we never expected her to be so cowardly despite her love for money!" Ken said after looking at Ivan. Ivan then replied, "I think it's unlikely to have Fane divorce Selena. They're quite close. Meanwhile, it's very difficult to have him killed as he's good at fighting. I'm afraid none of your bodyguards are his match!" Having said that, Ivan made a faint smile before continuing, "However, I have another idea! We'll hire a hitman!" "Hehehe, hitman? Some hitmen might be worse off than our family's regular bodyguard!" Neil burst into laughter instantly, "Young Master Taylor, here I thought you might have some ingenious plan for calling us over. In the end, that's all you can come up with?" However, Ivan smirked before replying, "Young Master Hugo, do you think that I'll be hiring a regular hitman? I'm talking about the elites, those at the top of the list among hitmen!" Seeing Young Master Hugo and Ken being intrigued, Ivan finally

added, “Most importantly, I’ve found someone to contact this hitman. It’s a woman, a seductress. It’s easiest for a man to let his guard down around women. Moreover, if she used her charms, the chances of success would naturally be much higher!” “If you put it that way, we can give it a try!” “If this can get Fane killed, then Selena wouldn’t choose to be a widow for life, right? Once Fane’s dead, our chance will come!” Ken’s eyes brightened as he saw a glimmer of hope. Indeed, they could not afford to drag this on. If they did, it would be too passive. Moreover, if Selena and Fane’s feelings for each other developed over time, that would be even more troublesome. They need to take this chance where Fane had just come back. Five years of separation meant that their feelings for each other were not as strong. Fane’s death would be the key. “However, it’s going to be very costly to hire a hitman just like that. This woman is ranked fifth on the hitman leaderboard. She would only accept big contracts!” “I’ve inquired. Her price is 150 million bucks for her to take the hit!” Ivan forced a smile, then looked at the two. “Hehe, I understand your intention. You’re thinking of having us pay part of it, right?” Neil chuckled, then took out the atm card he prepared for Fiona earlier. “Here’s 100 million bucks. You can’t have us pay for everything, right? You’ll pay for the 50 million bucks yourself.” “No problem. Rest assured, this hitman is really good. Not only is she good at disguising herself, but she can even completely change her appearance! I’ve heard that quite a few experts died in her hands!” “She will stick to her mission. Once accepted, she will go through all means to get rid of the target!” “Moreover, it’s a guaranteed success within five days!” Ivan stated confidently. “Haha, nice working with you!” The three of them toasted in laughter.

Chapter 368

Meanwhile, while Fane and the others were halfway through their meal, the George family’s butler came and passed an atm card to Fane, along with the password written on a note. Seeing Fane getting that much money, Selena,

Fiona, and the others were all in a rather good mood. With that, everyone had a happy meal. After enjoying their meal, they finally left the hotel. Meanwhile, Master George was also very courteous, asking for Fane's family to visit them at their place to hang out if they were free. After Master George and the others have departed, Fane finally approached Fiona and passed her the atm card along with the note. "Mother, here's the 20 million bucks I've promised you previously as Selena's betrothal gift. Since I have the money now, I'll pass it to you in advance!" Fane stated sincerely with a smile. "W-w-what a surprise!" Fiona's heart was delighted beyond measure. For the past two days, she was regretting her rejection of that 100 million bucks. Who would have known that Fane would pass her 20 million bucks right now? With the 20 million bucks, Fiona's mood immediately improved greatly. After all, she had gotten that money in her hands without doing anything that would burden her conscience. "Take it. This is what I've promised you previously. I always keep my promises!" Fane placed the atm card in her hand. "Wonderful. My daughter made the right choice!" "I really didn't expect you to know medicine! It seems like the past few years of suffering that we went through was worth it!" Holding onto the card with 20 million bucks, Fiona was stuck with a smile on her face. Meanwhile, Selena felt speechless. With the 20 million bucks in hand, her mother's attitude made a complete change. "So, would you acknowledge me as your son-in-law now?" "Are we a family?" Fane asked with a pained smile. "Of course. Why won't I acknowledge you? You've kept your promise, which shows that you're responsible. Moreover, your current salary is considered quite good. If we worked a little harder, then we'll be getting richer in the future, right?" Fiona laughed while speaking. Needless to say, she was on cloud nine. However, Andrew instead was frowning. "You've settled 20 million bucks, but you're still short of another 20 million bucks. Although you can have the Drake family advance your salary for a month, there's still the gift that's worth 10 million bucks. A gift like that is not easy to find. Have you planned that out yet? Furthermore, this is the old master's 70th

birthday. The gift should be meaningful!" Fane grinned mysteriously. "Father-in-law, don't you worry about that. I'll settle it! I know that some people in the Taylor family are waiting to watch me embarrass myself, right? Hehe, I'm afraid they'll have to be disappointed when the time comes." "Alright, since you're confident, I'll leave it to you!" Andrew nodded. He was confident that Fane would not lie to him. The whole group then happily returned home. The next morning, Fane went to work early. Meanwhile, with the cash in hand, Fiona went out with her rich auntie friends for a shopping trip. Of course, the reason she went shopping was to show off, to let others know that she was no longer broke. She was once again like them, a rich person who could afford to buy an expensive handbag if she so wanted to.

Chapter 369

Inside a private room of a hotel, a woman with excellent physique quickly opened the door, allowing Ivan, Ken, and Neil to enter. The three looked at the woman before them and was slightly taken aback. The woman's body was gorgeous. At the same time, she also gave off a prideful charm that was irresistible for men. "You're Shadow?" After taking his seat, Ivan took out an atm card. "Here's 150 million. The password is 000000." The woman took a look at the card, her face expressionless. It was as though part of a routine. She took a whiff of the cigarette in her hand, speaking slowly, "Give me the details of that kid, including his picture and his family situation. I want to know everything!" Ivan placed the atm card aside, then took out a document folder and passed it to her. She started studying it carefully. After a while, she finally asked skeptically, "Is this guy just a bodyguard? He's been a soldier for five years? He was recently discharged from service? How can you fail to take care of someone like this? It can't be. You guys are somewhat influential people in Middle Province, are you not?" "Ma'am, that's not all. This kid is quite strong. Our Clark family's top fighter was advising me not to offend this kid as he was no match for him! From that,

you can tell that this kid's combat power is very strong!" Ken immediately explained. "Hehe, I think it's not that he's strong, but your men are too weak!" The woman chuckled, her gaze carrying a hint of disgust. "I heard that you've taken several dozen missions and completed all of them. Is that true?" Neil asked after some thoughts, taking a step forward. However, Shadow gave him a terrifying glare immediately, causing him to take a step back from fear with her terrifying killing intent. "You dare question my ability? I'm ranked fifth in the southwestern hitman leaderboard! Watch your words. I might not be confident when it comes to those King of War or God of War, but all those other generals, assistant commanders, or head commanders are just easy pickings!" "In fact, when I take on a different appearance, the targets won't even know what hit them. Perhaps a King of War might fall to my assassination too!" "Of course, I've never met a King of War in person. However, I'm sure it's merely a title, nothing much!" The woman before them grinned, then said, "You think this person you see is the real me? Hehe, within Cathysia, I'm afraid there are less than 10 people that have seen my actual appearance!" The trio gasped. At first, they thought the beautiful woman was her real identity, but they never expected her appearance to be a disguise. "Alright, you three, wait here for a moment!" The woman's mouth quickly curled upward, then she headed to the restroom. In less than two minutes, the restroom door opened and Selena walked out from it, looking gentle and caring as she looked at them. However, she was still wearing the sexy black mini skirt that the woman wore earlier. She appeared shocked, then asked in surprise, "Ivan, what are you guys doing here?" "Selena!" Ken was surprised. How did Selena get here? Did she overhear what they said earlier? "She's not Selena! That voice is not right!" Ivan frowned, then said, "Shadow, you may look exactly the same as the picture, but what are you going to do about the voice? Wouldn't you be exposed unless you refrain from speaking?"

Chapter 370

“Haha, the voice is different!” Right then, the Selena before them burst out laughing. Meanwhile, her sound had changed to be like Ivan, exactly the same. “Hh-how did you use my voice?” Ivan took a deep breath. ‘Is this the capabilities of an expert hitman that ranked fifth in the southwestern hitman leaderboard?’ That was too terrifying. His voice was mimicked just like that. Moreover, it was exactly the same. “Haha, tell me. If I transfigured into your appearance and used your voice, would the others still be able to identify me?” the Selena before them spoke once more in Ivan’s voice. “Amazing, simply amazing!” Ken exclaimed in astonishment. Everything felt too surreal. If the woman before her was not a hitman, he would have asked her how much it would cost to spend a night with him. After all, after she transfigured into Selena, that appearance was just too similar. “Is that so?” Unexpectedly, the Selena before them smiled at Ken, her voice changing once again to mimic his. “Oh my god, this is unbelievable. I’m sure you can trick him. No matter how good Fane is, as long as he can’t tell you apart, you can ambush him with a fatal blow. He’ll be dead for sure!” Neil said confidently, overjoyed. “Is that so? Hehe, it seems this man is quite the lecher. It should be an easy job!” The Selena before them smiled seductively, her voice quickly turned into Neil’s voice. “As of now, I’ve not met this woman nor heard her voice. That’s why I can’t mimic it. However, I’ll appear near her as a stranger to learn her voice and secretly observe to learn her movements and expressions. Very soon, I’ll be able to fool everyone!” “We’ll put the voice aside for now. If not for us witnessing it with our own eyes, we would have mistaken you as Selena!” Ivan laughed, then added, “To be honest, while on our way here, we’re quite worried if this 150 million bucks was worth it. It seems it’s worth every penny!” “Hehe, rest assured. Give me five days. In five days, this kid will be dead for sure! If he still lives after five days, I’ll refund 50 million bucks to you. I guarantee that he will die within 10 days!” the woman before them stated, chuckling. “We believe you. Seeing you today is an eye-opener!” Although they each paid 50 million bucks, Ivan felt the greater pressure. However, if

that would get Fane killed, he was more than happy to pay it. Apart from still feeling bitter over Fane hitting him, Fane's death would mean that Selena would probably be married to a rich family like Neil's. If she was married, then she would no longer be part of the family and have no stake in the Taylor family's assets. "Alright, you should leave. I've just flown over and am still exhausted from my trip. I'll rest up and start tomorrow. Tomorrow will be the first day!" Shadow looked at the trio and told them to leave. Very quickly the trio left the hotel.

Chapter 371

"That woman's body is stunning. I think her butt is even perkier than Selena's" After arriving at the plaza outside the hotel, Neil could not resist swallowing his saliva. "Too bad she's a hitman. If only she was an escort. I'd be willing to pay high prices for this woman!" "That's right. Such a beautiful flower, yet it had to be a rose with thorns!" Ken joined in amusement. "Next we can just sit back, relax, and wait for the good news from her!" Neil nodded, then said to Ivan, "Young Master Taylor, if the hitman contacts you about Fane's death, you must notify us right away. Us, brothers shall have a good celebration!" Hearing that, Ivan's heart was overjoyed. Although the Taylor family was just a third-class aristocratic family, Young Master Hugo and Young Master Clark belonged to second-class aristocratic families. For them to address him as a brother, it was apparent that he was not seen as an outsider. If he could establish a good connection with them, then it would definitely be beneficial for the future growth of the Taylor family's business. "Sure. When the time comes, we must make a grand celebration!" Ivan nodded with a smile as they continued forward. However, after a moment of their departure, Ivan seemed to recall something. He asked, "Oh, you told me that you failed to have Fiona poison Fane, right?" "Yeah. That Fiona loves money so much, yet she ended up saying she didn't want to kill someone. Isn't that just annoying?!" Ken felt his frustration grow the more he thought about it. "Where's the poison? Pass

it to me. I've just thought of someone that might be able to help us. We should keep the poison for now. If the hitman fails to kill him, I'll think of something with the poison. I'll make sure Fane drinks this!" Ivan's gaze gave off an evil feeling. "That works too. There's not much use for us to keep it anyway. It might be more useful for you as you're from the Taylor family. You'll have more opportunity to use it than us!" Ken nodded, then took out the poison and passed it to Ivan. "Do note that this poison is slow acting. It's colorless and odorless when mixed in water. After drinking it, one would appear normal. However, in a month, the body will slowly deteriorate and eventually, the person will die." "Is that so? That's even better. Haha, when the time comes, who would think of what happened a month ago, or even what they have eaten or drank? This poison is perfect for killing!" Ivan received the poison happily. Meanwhile, within Selena's office… Sonia came before Selena and passed some documents and files to her. "Manager Taylor, here are some materials from the construction material supplier and the company intro. I've taken a look and they seem to be decent especially this Marvel Construction Material Company. I think the materials from this company are quite good, and the pricing is reasonable!" Having said that, Sonia paused for a moment before continuing, "Of course, the final decision is yours to make. This is just my suggestion." Hearing those words, Selena frowned. Marvel Construction Material Company was the biggest subsidiary company of the Taylor family, In the past two days, she was still hesitating on this matter. She wanted to help Ivan, yet she was worried that it would generate gossip behind her back, claiming that she was misusing her power. However, if she rejected Ivan and refused to work with the Taylor family, her grandfather might not be happy. After all, their ability to rise to a second-class aristocratic family was very important to the Taylor family. Her grandfather waited forever for such a day. "You can just leave it here. I'll check through it carefully and let you know the results later!"

Chapter 372

After Sonia went out, Selena sat behind her desk frowning, still feeling hesitant. She had carefully read through those materials. It was obvious that among the suppliers, the Taylor family was the most prominent construction material supplier. Meanwhile, the other suppliers were no match for the Taylor family. Most importantly, they would not be able to handle such a big project. However, Selene knew full well that Sonia was hiding something. With them running such a big project, it was a tempting opportunity. It was impossible for the other companies that could rival the Taylor family to not compete. Hence, there must be some documents that Sonia has kept hidden from her. Nevertheless, that was actually a good thing for her. She had originally planned to help the Taylor family, and the quality of their construction materials were honestly good. Of course, she naturally wished for the Taylor family to grow stronger as well. That way, Old Master Taylor would be able to fulfill his lifelong dream, promoting the Taylor family from a third-class aristocratic family to a second-class aristocratic family. That was an opportunity of a lifetime. If she missed this chance, it would be very difficult for her to find such an opportunity again. This time, she could just leave things like it is and play dumb. She only needed to feign ignorance. After all, Sonia was the one doing the manipulation instead of her, pre-signing her name on it. That meant that if anything were to happen, it would be Sonia's fault. "Things should be fine. Although Ivan can be terrible at times, this is a good opportunity for him. There was no way he would ruin such a good opportunity. Moreover, the Taylor family's quality is comparable to other high-end construction material suppliers!" Selena could not resist muttering after some considerations. However, she quickly added, "But this is such a big project. I can't give them everything. If everything is allocated to the Taylor family, that would attract gossip. Why not I allocate eighty percent to the Taylor family and I'll find another suitable supplier for the remaining twenty percent!" After finally coming to

a decision, Selena finally gave her grandfather a call. “Selena? Why are you calling this old man all of a sudden?” Old Master Taylor was slightly surprised when receiving Selena’s call. Selena chuckled, then asked, “Grandfather, how’s your health? It’s your seventieth birthday in sixteen days. Is there anything you like? I’ll see if I can get it for you by then!” “Hehe, I’m old. My body is getting weaker each day. I’m almost seventy years old, how healthy can I be?!” The old master chuckled before answering, “As for the gift, there’s really nothing much that can pique my interest now. To me, all those gold necklaces and jade pendants can be described in one word, pretentious!” Having said that, before Selena could say anything, the old man could not resist questioning, “That’s right, Selena, you know that this old man loves his reputation. Moreover, I’ve cared for you greatly when you were young. I just can’t bear to have you married to a delivery boy. That’s why to avoid being the laughing stock of others, I had no choice but to chase you out of the family!”

Chapter 373

Having said that, OId Master Taylor paused for a moment before asking, “Are you still angry at Grandpa for that?” Selena forced a smile. “I know Grandpa’s attitude quite well. Back then I was stubborn too. It was out of spite that I was pregnant with my daughter. However, I find that Fane is a decent guy and my daughter is very cute as well. There’s nothing much for me to regret. As for other people gossiping, that’s their business. I have to live for myself!” The old master sighed, then said, “It seems that despite my old age, I’ve not lived my life as fully as you had! Oh right, I heard that you’re in charge of the South Hill Real Estate’s construction materials procurement? Have you found a suitable collaborator for the project? I know that it’s a little difficult for you at this position, as others would gossip.” Selena kept quiet. At first, she thought that her grandfather would persuade her to sign a deal with the Taylor family. She did not expect him to be considerate of her position and say such things. The old master then said,

“If it’s too difficult for you, you can give this a try. After all, our Taylor family didn’t do too well these past few years. You just need to give us a share, even if just thirty percent of the project. That way, even if we can’t rise to a second-rate aristocratic family, we would still be able to get a breather and help boost our company performance for the past years!” From his tone of voice, Selena could tell that he felt helpless. There was even a hint of begging. The old master had always placed great importance on his reputation. It was almost impossible for him to be humble, and even then it would be forced. It was also on the grounds of the Taylor family’s future that he would say such words. Selena felt touched by his actions. At that moment, the kind-hearted Selena could not help but smile warmly. “Grandpa, the main reason I called you was to talk about this matter. The supervisor had just passed me all the information of several potential construction material suppliers. After taking a look, within the few companies, our Taylor family is very competitive and our quality is decent!” Hearing that, the old master was delighted, asking immediately, “Y-y-you mean that we have hope? How much of share would we get on the project?” Hearing her grandfather’s excited voice on the phone reminded her of his affection back when she was young. Selena laughed, then changed her plans. “I’ve decided to give the Taylor family eighty-five percent of the project, while the others will be shared among other competitors.” “Eighty-five percent!?” The old master breathed in deeply. That was beyond his expectations. It showed that Selena was intentionally favoring the Taylor family. The old master’s eyes turned slightly red. “Selena, I’m very touched that you can let bygones be bygones. I’ve also thought it through. There’s no point in those gifts. All that’s important is that Fane is sincere. Even if he can’t produce a gift worth 10 million bucks, I’ll still acknowledge him as my grandson-in-law and take all of you back!” Having said that, the old master warned her, “However, don’t you tell him about this. We need to give him some pressure. If you tell him in advance, this kid might not work hard!” Hearing that, Selena could not help resist a chuckle. “Alright, I’ll

keep it a secret from him. Grandpa, looking at how confident he is, I believe he should be able to come up with the money. Also, please keep today's matter a secret. I'll ask Ivan to come over and sign the contract. As for the price, just follow the market price!" "Yes, of course!" The old master nodded, feeling satisfied. Eighty-five percent! They might be able to make a profit of 5 to 6 hundred million bucks! That was more than enough to bring them into the ranks of a second-class aristocratic family.

Chapter 374

After the call, Old Master Taylor remained seated on the sofa and sighed. "Sigh, Selena is still the best. Even after being chased out of the family and picked on by Ivan, she would still think of the bigger picture at a critical time like this. Instead, Ivan is just useless!" After Selena put down her phone, she had Rosa summon Sonia over. "Manager Taylor, are you looking for me?" Sonia had a plastic smile on her face. It could not be helped. For money and her future, she could only keep it all in when working in front of Selena while keeping a smile on. It seemed that she was not keeping a grudge from their past. Of course, until now, she still could not understand how Selena's husband, a mere bodyguard, dared to slap her in front of her uncle. In the end, not only did Fane not get reprimanded by the Drake family, but they instead sided with him. It made her suspect if the rumor she spread about Selena to ruin her reputation, where she had an affair with Young Master Drake, was true. Only then would it make sense for the Drake family to help Selena and her husband so much. "I've had a look and this company does look good. However, our project is too big so we can't leave it all to them. I'm afraid it might affect their quality when they rush their deadlines." Selena stated calmly with a faint smile. Hearing that, Sonia was overjoyed. It seems the Taylor family would be getting it, but as to how big a portion of the project, that was unclear. Ivan had promised her that if the contract was signed, even if they were only allocated with forty-five percent of the project, she would still be getting 20 million bucks of commission.

With 20 million bucks, she would be able to afford luxury handbags and not have to worry. With that thought, she quickly suppressed her excitement and asked carefully, “Manager Taylor, I think this Marvel Construction Material Company is quite promising, or I wouldn’t be recommending them to you. Their reputation is really good! I believe you know that already! So, how much of the project are you allocating to them?” Selena smiled, then stated, “Eighty-five percent. I’ll pick others for the remainder!” “Wow, that’s quite a lot!” Sonia grinned, feeling elated. She never thought that she would really get her hands on the 20 million bucks. Selena looked at her, then frowned, “Why do you seem so happy? You seem to care a lot about this company, don’t you?” “N-n-no! I’m just hoping that it could be settled earlier after working on this for so long. If we can’t decide on one, I’ll have to start looking for other construction material suppliers again!” Feeling spooked, Sonia quickly explained. “Mm, what about this. You bring Ivan over tomorrow to sign the deal. I know that the company belongs to the Taylor family, but they really earned this project by showing their capability!” Selena’s expression remained calm all the while. “Alright, I’ll call him right now to contact them!” Sonia nodded, then quickly thought of something, asking, “Manager, what about the price? Do we follow the stated price?” Selena forced a smile, then said, “Tell them that they have to lower the price by five percent. Their price is just a little too much!” “Yes, manager!” Sonia then happily left the room. Ivan, who was drinking at a bar, quickly received a call from Sonia. “Hello, Supervisor Neal, how are things going? Any progress?” Ivan asked casually after accepting the call. He knew that Selena was stubborn. Even if they were to be given the project, it would not be that quick as she would make him wait for a while.

Chapter 375

As for not giving them any part of the project, he did not think that was possible. After all, he had already told her previously that it was their grandfather’s idea. Selena was kind and filial. For their grandfather, she

would at least give them some part of the project. “Come sign the contract tomorrow. Selena finally agreed, quite fast too!” “However, she wants to lower the price by five percent!” On the other end of the phone, Sonia laughed. “Congratulations Young Master Ivan for acquiring such a big project!” “What?!” Ivan immediately stood up, feeling excited. “Go sign the contract tomorrow? Lowering it by five percent is no issue. The haggling is common practice. Moreover, the demand is not much, just a symbolic price reduction!” Having said that, he immediately questioned further, “Oh, did you ask how much of this project is she allocating to us? It shouldn’t be the entire project, right?” “Although it’s not the whole project, it’s still quite a surprise. Eighty-five percent! What do you think? Enough? I’ve put in quite a lot of good words for you!” Sonia quickly credited herself. “Eighty-five? That’s wonderful. Relax, after signing the contract tomorrow, I’ll treat you and your boyfriend to a meal and settle your promised benefits!” Ivan almost jumped at the news. With such a big project and the Taylor family getting eighty-five percent of it, that would be a sizable profit. Most importantly, with that, he believed that his grandfather would look at him in a new light. When the time comes, who else would he name as the heir of the Taylor family’s assets? The old master was already seventy years old. By the looks of it, he would not last much longer and would have to soon pass on his authority. “Thank you, Young Master Taylor. I wish you good luck with your contract signing tomorrow. I’ll leave you to your business for now!” Sonia quickly ended the call. “Wonderful, wonderful, hahaha!” Ivan burst out into laughter, then called out at the waiter by the door, “Get me a few more girls in here. I need a good round of celebration!” At five-thirty in the afternoon, with nothing much going on, Selena clocked out of work. She never expected to see a woman right at the door, waiting with some documents in hand. “Please leave. Our company’s door is not meant for just anyone. There are plenty of people looking for our company for projects. You can submit your documents and let the supervisor decide. She will then hand pass it on. That’s the procedure!” A guard was blocking the woman

outside, persuading her, “You’ve been waiting for a few hours. Why don’t you go back? The sun is so strong. Aren’t you afraid of passing out from the heat?” “It’s fine. I’ll just wait a little longer. Although our company is small, our quality and other aspects are all exceptional. We really hope to be able to work with South Hill Real Estate.” The woman seemed to be in her twenties. She was drenched in sweat from the scorching heat, but she still kept looking inside. She quickly saw Selena and her eyes brightened. “Manager Taylor, can we have a talk?” “Don’t run inside!” Seeing the woman running inward, the guard immediately held her back. “You’re sweating all over, how can you just run into the company like that?” Selena looked at her, then approached and said, “There’s a cafe next door. We can have a seat there and talk about this!” “S-s-sure. Thank you Manager Taylor for giving me this opportunity!” The woman nodded frantically, feeling overjoyed. Selena smiled calmly. From here, she could see her old self when she started working for the Taylor family. Back then, she was just as headstrong.

Chapter 376

“Manager Taylor, l-l-let me introduce myself. I’m Janet. Our family...how do I put it? Please don’t laugh at me, but we’re just a regular company. We’re not even considered a third-class aristocratic family!” “However, Jacob’s Construction Materials is really quite good. Our quality is decent. Oh yeah, I have some of our documents here. There are also some reviews from our clients after working with us!” Janet seemed to be nervous, but still courageously introduced herself to Selena. Standing before her, Selena was already a successful female professional with a high position. She heard that the Drake family was paying her a monthly salary of 1 million bucks. With that kind of pay, she was comparable to some directors. “You even have reviews?” Selena was surprised and intrigued. After taking a careful look, she finally told Janet, “Your company does look good. I’ve heard of it before. Your reputation is decent!” Having said that, she paused for a

moment before continuing, “I would like to hear you out.” “Jacob’s Construction Materials prides ourselves in our quality. However, our company is not big, nor as well known as others. Therefore I don’t expect to be allocated that much work in this big project!” “Our main hope is that Manager Taylor would be able to allocate a small portion to us!” Having said her piece, Janet took a sip of her coffee, then asked carefully, “I wonder if we’ll have a chance of working with you?” Seeing her sincerity, Selena finally smiled. “I’m about to sign the contract tomorrow. Eighty-five percent of this project has already been allocated! Although the remaining fifteen percent is not much, if you do it well, it should be no problem for you to earn 1 to 2 hundred million bucks. Therefore, our requirements for business partners are also quite stringent!” Hearing that, Janet sighed in her heart. From Selena’s tone, she most likely had no chance. However, she quickly cheered up and smiled at Selena. “It’s okay, I understand that the chances of working with you are very slim. Many from my family were even laughing at me, claiming that it’s impossible to reach a deal. In fact, that’s also within my expectations!” Although Selena had already made up her mind, she still asked intentionally, “Since that’s within your expectation, why did you come? Moreover, it’s scorching hot outside. Why did you wait for so long?” “Thing is, sometimes we have to try. If we never try, we’ll never know. What if I got lucky?” Having said that, Janet sat for a moment, then felt awkward and stood up to pay the bill. She then laughed and said, “Manager Taylor, it’s a pity that we can’t work together this time. However, I hope that we will have opportunities to work together in the future. This is my business card. I’ll prove to you in the future that we’re a good business partner!” Finishing her statement, she turned around and got ready to leave. However, Selena laughed unexpectedly. She saw her old self on this young woman. Back when she was the general manager of the Taylor family’s company, it was not given to her like Ivan. She had earned her place through her own hard work. Moreover, when she left the company, many employees cried because they loved her as a general manager. “Wait a moment. I don’t

think I've said that we can't work together, right?" Selena laughed, then called out to Janet. "Manager Taylor, y-y-you mean that…" When Janet heard that, she turned around with a look of astonishment on her face. "What I meant to say was the remaining fifteen percent will all be given to you. I hope you don't let me down. You must make sure of the quality. As for the price, we'll follow the one you proposed. Come find me at my office tomorrow at nine-thirty in the morning to sign the contract!" Selena took a sip of her coffee and crossed her leg, yet somehow appearing graceful. "That's wonderful! Yes, yes! I'll definitely reach on time tomorrow!" "I'll go back immediately and draft out a proper contract!"

Chapter 377

Janet was elated, quickly taking her leave. "This girl!" Selena laughed before standing up and taking her leave as well. However, she did not expect a sexy and seductive lady in shades seated nearby had been observing them for a long time. Only after Selena had left did the woman stood up and settle her bill before going out. "What I meant to say was the remaining fifteen percent will all be given to you…" The corner of her lips curled up creepily. The voice she made was the exact copy of Selena's voice. That lady was none other than the hitman that ranked fifth in the southwestern hitman leaderboard, Shadow! At the same time, Ivan had also happily returned home. Reaching home, he immediately called Cecilia and the other relatives over. "Master Ivan, what's the matter? You seem happy. Did something good happen?" A young man of the Taylor family asked, giggling. "Excellent! Truly wonderful news!" Ivan's body still reeked of alcohol. He looked at Theodore and Zeus, proclaiming, "Dad, Grandpa, we've finally gotten our hands on the project by South Hill Real Estate!" "That's wonderful. Master Ivan is truly amazing!" "That's right. You managed to obtain such a big project." Quite a number of the Taylor family members immediately started praising Ivan. Most of them were working at the Taylor family's company, carrying out all sorts of positions. Ivan was the general

manager, and now that he managed to secure such a big project, the authority within the Taylor family would eventually be in his grasp. That was why they had to get on his good side or risk having a rough future. However, a number of them knew in their hearts that Selena had compromised for them to secure the project. If Selena was petty and held her grudge, it would be helpless even if Ivan begged on his knees. “Haha, guess how much of this big project were we allocated with?” Ivan laughed out loud excitedly, then said, “At first, Selena was unagreeable and only planned to give us thirty percent. However, thanks to my quick thinking and persuasiveness, she finally made multiple compromises. In the end, we nailed it at eighty-five percent of the project!” Ivan intentionally placed a strong emphasis on the number eighty-five when he spoke, hoping to make the number stand out. His face filled with smugness. “Master Ivan is truly awesome. You managed to negotiate for eighty-five percent!” “That’s right. Selena is so petty to just provide us with thirty percent. That’s just too little. We’re all from the Taylor family after all. She has the blood of our Taylor family running within her!” “That’s right. I think she’s being petty too. If it were me, even if I had to save my reputation, I would have at least set aside sixty percent of the project!” The Taylor family members were all busy debating. However, Zeus Taylor, the old master had a gloomy expression on his face. Selena had given him a call long ago and told him about the eighty-five percent allotment. She had even discussed it with him. Ivan probably did nothing, yet he dared to come back showing off and claiming credit. If not for trying to save Ivan’s reputation, Zeus would have exposed him right then and there.

Chapter 378

“Son, you’ve done well this time!” Theodore grinned as he gave Ivan, a big thumbs up. He was not a business-minded person and would spend his free time enjoying tea or fishing. However, he had hope for his son to be successful. This time, Ivan had finally made him proud. “Hehe, dad, it can’t

be helped. It's all for our Taylor family. It's so that we can rise into the ranks of a second-class aristocratic family. This is something I'm willing to do even if I have to endure torturous hardships!" Ivan, being drunk, thumped his chest smugly. The arrogance he showed went without saying. Zeus, on the other hand, could bear with it no longer. He steeled his face and asked, "Why not give your life as well?" Having said that, he gave a wave. "It's getting late. Go get rested. Ivan, you should rest up too. Go sign the contract early in the morning. It's only official after you sign the contract. Don't be an embarrassment like the last time!" "Don't you worry, everything will be fine. I'll guarantee to sign this contract tomorrow morning, or I'll live stream myself eating sh*t for all of you to watch!" Ivan thumped his chest as he promised. This time, he had full confidence. After all, Selena had always kept her word. Since she had agreed to it, she would not go back on her words. Moreover, the failed contract with the Wilson family previously was an accident. Since the old master sent them off, they quickly went away. Meanwhile, the old master should have gone back to sleep. Very soon, only Ivan and Theodore were left in the huge living room. "Dad, it's weird. Shouldn't Grandpa be elated about this matter?" "Why do I feel that he seemed unhappy?" Ivan frowned, finally noticing something was off. He felt confused. Theodore considered for a moment before saying, "I think it might be too late and he's sleepy. Moreover, you reek of alcohol and behaved so insolently. Can your grandpa be happy? The last time you thoroughly embarrassed yourself and vomited all over the floor in the hotel really upset your grandpa!" Having said that, Theodore paused for a moment before advising, "You should cut back on the alcohol. Being drunk can get you in trouble. Don't you know that?" "Alright dad, I understand. You should go rest up! I'm going to bed!" Ivan replied impatiently before going off. The next day, Selena went to work early in the morning. However, just as she parked and got out of her car outside her office, she felt a knock on her head. Her vision blurred and then passed out. The woman before her smiled dryly, then placed Selena in the co-driver seat before driving away.

They quickly left the town and arrived at a dilapidated house atop a mountain not far from the city. After a while, Selena finally regained consciousness. She opened her eyes and felt her head spin. She took a careful look at the woman in front of her and could not help shaking her head. That was because she saw herself. “What’s going on? I-I-I can’t be dead, right? Is this my soul?” Selena was flabbergasted. She saw herself looking at her, smiling with her hands crossed before her chest. The smile seemed rather evil. However, she soon realized that she was tied to a wooden pillar. “That’s not it. I’m not dead. Who are you?” Selena’s heart skipped a beat. The pain of being tightly bound by ropes on her arm was too real. She was not dreaming, nor did she die. That must be the case.

Chapter 379

The woman replied, “Well... You’re pretty and kind. But it doesn’t change the fact that I have been hired to kill and I must complete my mission.” “Hire? You’re a hitman! Where is this place?” Selena was shocked and scared at the same time. This run-down house they were in looked really old. That aside, she ran into a hitman. Who on earth hired a hitman and wanted her dead?” “Ivan?” She quickly thought of him as Ivan was a revengeful man, and Fane broke his bone. This alone would make him a highly possible candidate. Selena then dismissed the idea as quickly as she thought. ‘Impossible. Ivan has been longing to secure the contract. Even if he really wanted me dead, he would do it after the contract, not before.’ “Don’t worry, you’re not my instructed target,” the woman spoke. “I’m not your target, so why did you capture me?” Selena suddenly understood. “Now I know, you’re disguised as me… Your target is my husband, Fane!” Selena gasped as it might very well be true. If she wanted Selena dead, she would have done so much earlier. The fact that she captured Selena was to attract her actual target who was none other than Fane. Selena thought of the possibility of someone revenging on Fane would be much higher as he had caused trouble to a lot of people out there. Fane did not only get in the

way of Ivan but people like Ken, Neil and Michael as well. All these were no ordinary people. If they wanted Fane dead, it would just be a piece of cake. “Smart!” The woman nodded. “So, your husband will be dead today. You can’t blame me but you can blame my employer.” “Who’s your employer?” Selena tried to interrogate. “Hehe, this is funny. Do you think a professional hitman like myself, being the top five in the southwest region, will reveal this information to you? I, on the other hand, was wondering how easy it is to lure your husband here using your face.” “Shameless!” Selena scolded, “My husband is a veteran and has served the military for five years. He can fight a dozen alone! I’m warning you, you better let me go and abort this mission, you may lose your life to this mission!” “I see you’re trying to threaten me here, haha! Five years of the military? He’s a piece of cake to me, even if I don’t disguise myself as you. Let me tell you, even marshals won’t be my match.” “A marshal will not be your match…?” Selena’s mouth twitched at her abilities. She initially wanted to scare the hitman but did not think that the hitman was actually that skillful. She started to actually worry about Fane now.

Chapter 380

Although she was a hitman, Selena was reassured that Fane was pretty skilled himself too. So, she was somewhat confident in Fane. Fane might be the person who kills the hitman instead of the other way round. However, Shadow’s words had concerned her. She was very skillful if she could beat a marshal. If that was the case, Fane would be in big trouble. On top of that, the hitman had disguised herself as Selena. What if Fane fell for that? Big trouble... It was easy to kill Fane if he was not alert enough. As though a fight between one who had normal vision and a blind person, the blind would naturally be at disadvantage. “Are you scared now? Are you worried now?” Shadow toyed a dagger and tapped it on Selena’s face. “Do you know why I love disguising as my target’s partner? I like to see the look on their face when they die, that look of disbelief!” With that, Shadow turned around

and laughed. “Until the moment they die, they would still think that it was their partner who killed them. I'll never explain myself and I’ll never tell them why. They shall die confused.” “You’re mad! Karma will get to you!” Selena’s eyes reddened as she stared at Shadow with hatred. “Hehe, to reassure you, I’ll leave you here as you watch me finish your man outside. Yell with all your might but you won’t be able to. You’ll live in misery forever after he dies. I’d love to see that! Personally, I think killing is a ritual to practice. And all these are part of the ritual!” Malice filled Shadow’s eyes, life was as unimportant as an ant. “I dare you to not disguise as me to fight my husband! For you to disguise as me is just a dirty trick because you’re no match for him!” Selena growled. She was truly worried for Fane. What would happen to her and Kylie if he dies? They had only recently reunited and were living a better life. To watch Fane die in front of her was the last thing she would ever wish for. “You’re trying to provoke me, aren’t you? Will he stand a better chance like that? Just very slightly, I guess. Heh, you’re not just an empty vase, after all, you’ve got brains!” Shadow smirked then continued, “Speaking of which, I really like your face. It’s perfect. It looks kind and approachable. I love it! How about this, I’ll use your face for my missions next time. Let’s see how many people can take it when this ‘face’ kills. Any family members who witnessed the murder would recognize you as the murderer. Will they come after you? I wonder…” “You…” Selena almost fainted out of anger, but she still tried. “I dare you to not make up! You’re an ugly fag, aren’t you? You’re so ugly you wouldn’t go out without a mask!” Shadow was impatient at this point. “Quit it, I didn’t, do you understand? How can make up do such a job? This is Transfiguration. Do you know Transfiguration? Uncultured b*tch!”

Chapter 381

Selena was helpless. She tried to persuade further but Shadow had stuffed a towel in her mouth. “Look, see that slit? I’ll leave it open just very slightly, enough for you to see the table outside from here. I’ll bring your husband to

that table and kill him there. You just watch." "Ughh!" Selena could not be more nervous. She shook her head hard and tried to say something—she could not. "Hehe, stop it. You just wait here and watch the show." Shadow smirked as she retrieved Selena's phone to call Fane. Selena had a sudden realization—even if Shadow looked like her, Shadow could never sound like her. Fane was not stupid, he would have seen through the deception sooner than later! What proceeded had caught Selena in shock. The moment the call went through, Shadow's voice changed. She sounded just like Selena! Even Selena thought so. It was impossible for Fane to tell them apart, impossible... What made it worse was that Shadow was wearing her clothes. It seemed like Shadow had her eyes on Selena a long time prior to this. She even planned and bought the same clothes as Selena. The amount of planning poured into this was scary. "Hi, honey. I'm waiting for you outside the city, can you come over? I want to bring you to somewhere fun and we'll have a chat there. What do you say?" Her voice was so slutty it gave Selena goosebumps. "Sure! Is this a date? Wait for me, honey. I'm driving to you!" Shadow put the call on speaker to let Selena hear. "Alright, see you!" Shadow hung up the call and smirked at Selena. "Bye, my pretty lady. I'm going to get your husband. You just wait here and should be able to see me holding his hands in ten minutes. Worry not, I'll play with him for a little before making my move. That's because…men have their guard up the least when they kiss!" Finally, Shadow left Selena, leaving just enough gap for her to see the table outside the room. 'Ahhh!' Selena could only growl in her heart. She was hoping Fane could tell that something was wrong from the call and not come at all. Who would have known Fane just agreed to the meet up without a single hesitation, he even sounded a little excited. 'Dumb Fane… Too lovesick, are you? Don't you know I'm a workaholic, why on earth would I ask you out during work?' She could only vocalize this in her mind.

Chapter 382

The hilltop was not far away from the city. Soon, Shadow arrived at the suburb area in Selena's car. She pulled over, leaned on the car while waiting for Fane to arrive. As expected, Fane arrived in his car within the next five minutes. "What's up, honey? You have the time to sneak out of the office today?" Fane pulled over and smiled at the woman. "I just thought we could have some fun! Although it's a little run-down, that place is serene and has a good view." Shadow smiled and entered her car. "Stay in your car and follow me." "Alright!" Fane did as told. There was an uneasy feeling. Fane had been suspicious if this 'Selena' was the Selena he knew. It was something about her slutty eyes that gave it away. The real Selena did not have these eyes. These were sultry and seductive eyes. "That's funny, why would she bring me out today?" Fane questioned as he drove. The drive did not seem long before they arrived at the hilltop, and proceeded to park their car on an empty piece of land. "How's this place, not bad aye? Look, you can see the whole Middle Province from here. There's even a breeze, isn't it amazing?!" Her figure was clearly accented when she stretched her back. Fane, on the other hand, was dazed. She was beautiful! "Honey, look! There's a house, let's check it out," she suggested. "Sure!" Fane nodded. At this point, 'Selena' walked toward Fane and unexpectedly held his hand. Fane looked at her, feeling a little shy. "What's the matter, honey? You look weird. We're a couple, it's only normal for us to hold hands." 'Selena' was suddenly very romantic. She even cheekily rolled her eyes at Fane. "No, nothing!" Fane was quite certain something was wrong, yet he just smiled and followed. "Looks like it's been some time since anyone stayed here. There's a lot of spider web!" Shadow smiled and tucked Fane's hands. She directed Fane to the table and pretended to look out of the window. Fane then noticed a door. "Hey, there's a door there. Let's check it out." The real Selena who was tied up in the room was worried sick. She tried to shout, hoping to get Fane's attention, and even struggled to free herself. However, she was tied up too tightly with a cloth stuffed in her mouth. Her effort to warn Fane was to no avail. Hence, she was delighted the moment she heard

that Fane noticed the door. Well, Shadow would not have let the rescue happen, of course.

Chapter 383

Shadow quickly pulled Fane to her and bit her sexy red lips. “Honey, about that… It’s been so long since you started serving the military… And, there’s no one else here…” she said as she tapped her fingers on Fane’s chest, trying to seduce him. “Selena… Let’s not…under broad daylight?” Fane frowned and looked outside. “Ayy, I’ve closed the door after we enter. Besides, this is in the middle of nowhere, no one would come here! I think we can be a little more open here… It sets the mood well.” She tipped her toes and kissed Fane on his neck as she proceeded. Looking at the ‘Selena’ in front of him, there was more reason for him to suspect. He quick-wittedly hugged her. “Look at you… Who knew that you like to set the mood like this. What dominatrix you are!” “Quit mocking me, I just want to have some fun.” Shadow was secretly joyous at the fact that men were such simple-minded animals. Any trivial sexual advancement could send them to trap. “Alright!” On the other hand, the real Selena in the room was worried sick looking at how Fane had hugged the woman. Again, she tried to vocalize her warning, and again, she failed. It was only natural that she was this worried. That woman looked exactly like herself, Fane had no reason to have his guard up against her. Furthermore, her seduction skills… Fane, a young lad in his early twenties, would have already lost his mind by then. How could he possibly resist? What proceeded was that Shadow locked Fane’s lip with hers, and they started their business. Fane hugged her real tight. Selena saw Shadow reaching for something under her dress. Soon after, Shadow retrieved a dagger from her stockings at her thigh. Staring at the dagger, Selena’s heart dropped. Just as she was about to stab Fane, he swiftly turned around and got out of Selena’s sight. It was a blind spot for Selena and she could not see much from the door slit. Shadow frowned. She struggled to stab Fane with the dagger as her hand was clamped by another strong hand.

She gasped and prepared for another strike. Unfortunately, Fane was too fast, and had already grabbed hold of the dagger with his other hand and stabbed it in Shadow's chest. "Ahhhhh…" Shadow looked at her chest, eyes filled with disbelief. She underestimated the speed and strength of her opponent. Furthermore, the dagger stabbed right at her heart, she had no chance of retaliation. Shadow's scream sent chills down Selena's spine. Her heart was heavy. What had the woman done to Fane? Would Fane really fall into her trap? "Wh...why…?" Shadow was weak. At her last breath, she still did not understand what gave her identity away. 'Don't all men like their wife seductive?" Fane grabbed her face and pulled her mask down, revealing her true face. He proceeded by whispering in her ears, "Shadow, learned Transfiguration, twenty-five this year, is a hitman since twenty." "Who… Who are you?" That was Shadow's last breath. She died with eyes filled with shock. Her identity had always been well-kept, how could this man know so much about her?

Chapter 384

"Ughhh!" Selena struggled. She tried to warn Fane but her effort was in vain. Soon after, she realized that no more noise was coming from outside. It was pin-drop silence. 'Is Fane...dead?' she started to worry. Suddenly, she was frightened by the sight of a hand appearing at the door that swiftly pushed the door open. "Uhhm!" Selena's eye reddened and teared from joy seeing that it was Fane who entered. She just realized how much she cared for the bastard at that moment of life and death. Not just that she realized how much she loved him, she was also dreaded by the thought of his death that would leave her child without a father. Seeing that Fane entered the room safely, she breathed a sigh of relief. "I knew that woman was not you!" Panic-stricken, he made his way to Selena and removed the cloth stuffed in her mouth. He quickly held her in his embrace and asked, "Honey, how're you? Did she beat you? Did she torture you?" "No, I'm fine. You're the target, not me. Where is she? She is a hitman. Top five in the southwest

region, she said… She's dangerous! Even marshals are no match for her," Selena explained hurriedly. Before she could finish speaking, Fane looked at her, cupped her cheeks in his hands, and pecked hard on her lips. "Ughh!" Selena, who was still tied to the pillar, did not see that coming. Embarrassed, she found herself palpitating with her pupils widely dilated. After that peck, Fane continued, "I was worried for you when I found out that she was a hitman! I didn't want anything to happen to you!" Only after this, he started to untie Selena. "You… Cheeky! How dare you kiss me?" Selena blushed as she rolled her eyes at Fane. "Pervert! You kissed me before you even untie me!" "Can't help it, I was too indulged in the mood! I was worried for you, okay? So, honey. I got the sequence wrong… Does that mean that I should kiss you after I untie you?" Fane awkwardly smiled. "You… Don't kiss me without my permission next time!" Selena stuttered. She left her words at that and ran out to find the hitman lying on the floor in a pool of blood. Seeing how the hitman was as dead as a doornail, she finally sighed with relief, "She's a skilled hitman, not even a marshal is a match for her! How did you kill her...without defense?" Fane snickered and explained, "I've had my suspicions. First of all, it was your office hour. Before you left for work you told me you'll be going on field to sign a contract. Why would you ask me to hang out here? Second of all, I noticed the tire trails on this hill road. This is a road less traveled and there is little traffic around. So the tire trails meant that someone had driven up before me." Fane paused for a while before he continued, "Well, third of all… That woman had slutty eyes. My wife won't ask me out. She doesn't have slutty eyes, and most of all she won't seduce me!" "Ay! I was worried sick in there, worried that you'll fall into her trap and get killed. Who knew you were observant enough to see that through, you should go and be a detective!"

Chapter 385

Selena was dumbfounded. It seemed she was worried for nothing. Fane had caught on to the suspicious clues. Only then Fane confessed, "Even with

those considered, I was hesitant to make the move to kill. What if I was wrong? I could only make the move when she was exposed." "What exposed her?" Selena frowned and doubted as she thought the hitman's disguise was perfect. "And that is, the fact that my wife won't take the lead to kiss me. More importantly, I smelled cigarettes. That meant she smokes. My wife never smokes! That was when I confirmed my judgment, that the woman was a hitman and not you." "Pretty smart, aren't you?" Then she thought about how that woman had kissed Fane. Irritated, she mocked, "So, what now? Were you excited that she made the move to kiss you? She has a nice body, I must say. Happy now?" Fane was ashamed. So, Selena was jealous after all. Bitterly, he smiled. "Honey, that was a hitman I was dealing with. Do you think I had the time to even think of those? It was dragged out a little because I was worried that I misjudged her. So I delayed my move to kill her and only did so after I'm certain of it." "Wait a second, she was a skilled hitman! How did you settle her so fast? I saw that she had a dagger!" Selena found herself confused. If Fane was a lot more skilled than that woman, that would mean that he was a king of war! Fane awkwardly smiled and replied, "Maybe because her guard wasn't up. She wouldn't have thought that I'd see through her deception so she was more lax. With that, it was easy to kill her." "Right, right! That's what she said. It's a piece of cake to kill someone with no guard up. Bet she didn't think you outsmarted her!" "Selena, did you tear when you see me just now? You were worried about me?" Fane finally laughed. Selena's face reddened again after trying so hard to recollect herself. She rolled her eyes and said, "In your dreams! I wasn't worried about you. I was worried about myself. What if she kills me? I was worried about Kylie and I teared because of Kylie, okay?" She knew she was lying. Immediately, she shifted the attention to the dead body on the floor and diverted the topic. "So how do we settle this? We can't just leave her here." "Such a run-down house… Let's burn this whole place!" Fane replied after giving it some thought. What followed was that they both made a fire outside the house. Watching as the fire burns, Selena suddenly

thought of this. “Sh*t, we would’ve searched her body in case she has a phone. From there we could see her contacts, and find out who was behind this!” “Haha, don’t worry about that. There are more people who want me dead!” He shifted his gaze to Selena and gave her a very serious look. “Looks like I’ll need to get you a bodyguard. I’m not worried about myself. What if they target you to get to me? I can’t watch you all day, I have work at Drake's.” “It can’t be Ivan… I’m about to sign a contract with them…” Selena seemed to be still distracted by the fact that she did not retrieve the hitman’s phone. She looked at the time and exclaimed, “Sh*t! It’s past eleven!”

Chapter 386

“Haha, it’s fine as there’s no hurry. Let them come over tomorrow!” Fane smiled and looked beside him where Selena was, “Honey, since you’re also here, let’s go to the city and have lunch to steady our nerves. What do you think?” “Sounds good.” Selena nodded and they soon drove down from the hill. At this moment, Ivan Taylor and Janet were still waiting inside of Selena’s office. “What’s going on? This is…” Ivan started to get impatient. He had already made at least ten calls to Selena previously but none of them were picked up by her. He looked at Janet and said, “Do you think that we’ve been played? This woman must be making fun of us. If that’s the case, she’s too much!” Janet on the other hand, smiled. “Impossible, I trust Manager Taylor. Since she promised us, she would be here. She must have been delayed by an emergency matter!” “Haha, that’s so funny. What’s more important than signing a contract with us?” Ivan laughed and said out of anger. After that, he frowned and took in a breath. After all, the assassin told them to settle the issue within five days. Today was considered the second day. Was it possible that they have already made a move? The most important part was, this Shadow had her own special hobby when she carried out her mission. Such as, she not only liked to pretend as the target’s closest person, she also liked to let the closest person look on as she killed

that target. “Was it possible…” Ivan thought about it. It was already so late and Selena had not appeared yet. She might have been kidnapped by the Shadow and he was speechless inwardly. “I…” He stood up in a sudden and held his hands into fists. He felt angry and regretful inwardly. He was too careless. He did not care much about Selena’s life and it did not matter if she really died. However, he had not signed the contract yet. After all, this contract could bring around five to six billion for the Taylor family. This was only a conservative estimation, if their operations were better, it would be more than this. If the Shadow had already taken action and killed Selena, they would have suffered a big loss. If this position was taken over by another person, would the signing of the contract they have not signed continue? That may not be the case. After all, they successfully got this opportunity because of their relationship with Selena. “What’s going on? Young Master Taylor, why are you startled?” Janet frowned as she looked at Ivan, who stood up. “It’s nothing. I think that we’re out of hope today as it’s already so late. Let’s go back first and come again tomorrow morning!” Ivan walked out with a darkened face. “Okay, let’s come and have a look tomorrow morning!” Janet also felt that it was a waste of time. She sighed, took the prepared contract and left. Ivan walked out the entrance and to his car. He thought about it before calling the Shadow. Unfortunately, none of his two calls could get through.

Chapter 387

”Sh*t, sh*t. There’s a possibility that Selena had been kidnapped. I have no idea if the assassin would kill her!” Ivan was so angry that he held his hands into fists. “I’m really careless. I haven’t signed the contract yet, I should’ve asked her to wait for a few days before doing anything. This…” Ivan had no idea that asking this person to kill Fane would cause his contract signing matter to fail. As he sat in the car, his mind was filled with thoughts about visiting the place where Selena and the others stayed that night. However, he thought about it and dismissed this thinking. If Fane and Selena were fine

and the assassin had not started her action, his proactive action of visiting them cannot be justified. After all, he had shown his disgust previously and had never visited them. If the assassin failed, Fane might be doubtful that he was the one who employed the assassin? Although, the possibility of the assassin failing was very small. He thought about it, looked at the time and was prepared to drive back. Coincidentally, when he passed by a cafe, he looked inside and actually saw Xena Jackson. “Isn’t that Ben Taylor’s girlfriend?” Ivan was slightly stunned. He parked the car by the road, got down and entered the cafe. At this moment, Xena was having a chat with two of her best friends and seemed to be in a very good mood. “Miss Jackson, I had no idea that I would run into you here!” Ivan said with a smile and walked over. “Young Master Taylor!” Xena was stunned and said with a smile, “That’s a real coincidence. These are my best friends, we are having a cup of coffee because we’re tired from shopping!” “Really?” Ivan purposely took a look at the time before sitting down by the side and said with a smile, “It just so happens that I have something to speak with Miss Jackson. Do I, Taylor, have the opportunity to invite you to lunch?! If your best friends are in the mood, they can join us too!” Those girls glanced at each other with a mutual understanding and stood up, “Young Master Taylor, we’ll get out of your hair. Enjoy your talk and allow us to make a move first!” “Okay, let me treat you guys in the future when there’s an opportunity!” Ivan stood up and spoke politely, like a gentleman. “Does Young Master Taylor want a cup of coffee? Let me pay for that. Since you treat me to lunch, I’ll treat you to coffee!” Xena smiled indifferently and said. “There’s no need for that. Let’s sit here while you finish your cup of coffee. Later, let’s find a hotel, get a private room and I’ll treat you to dinner!” Ivan replied with an indifferent smile. According to his experience with many girls, Xena was definitely a gold digger. Apart from that, he previously saw Xena hug a young guy who looked like a second generation of a rich family by accident. He was just too lazy to tell Ben about this. However, when he passed by from outside, he suddenly had an idea.

“Really? Just the two of us? We’ll go to a hotel and get a private room for food? Wouldn’t that be a waste? Let’s just eat some simple food!” Xena was surprised. Seating in front of her was the young master of the Taylor family, Ivan Taylor. This man had the highest possibility of inheriting the Taylor family in the future so he could be considered as a real rich family’s next generation. At least, when compared to Ben, Ivan was at least 100 times better than him. During the previous hotel gathering, Ben took her with him. In the midst of it, she really wanted to have a drink with Ivan and get a name card after that. It was a pity when he ignored her and left her in an embarrassing situation. She had no idea that Ivan would proactively ask her out for a meal and she wondered what was his hidden agenda.

Chapter 388

Ivan looked at her and smiled indifferently. “How would it be a waste to have lunch with such a pretty lady? It should be my honor!” Xena smiled when she heard this. “Young Master Taylor, I’m sure you’ve seen a lot of pretty ladies. I shouldn’t be considered as a pretty lady in your opinion!” “Haha, you’re being very modest!” Ivan stood up and gestured after you to Xena, “Let’s go, pretty!” “I think you’ve left me with no choice but to accept deferentially!” Although Xena was still curious about why Ivan wanted to invite her for dinner alone, she felt that he must have something important to talk about. Hence, she did not think much and just followed him. The two of them drove and soon arrived at a high-end hotel. They got a private room and ordered quite some dishes. “Young Master Taylor, is there anything important that you need to seek me out privately?” Xena seemed a little nervous as this was her first time sitting face to face with a real rich person. Apart from that, it was so grand as they even got red wine and she was unprepared for it. After all, Ivan had on a suit that exudes the feeling of a successful person. “Come, let’s first drink!” Ivan poured a glass of wine for her and clanked the glasses together. “Sure!” Xena had no idea what Ivan had in mind but she still drank all the red wine in a gulp. “Haha, I like girls

that are pretty and straight-forward like you!" Ivan laughed. He then casually placed a hand on Xena's thigh as if it was an accident after he spoke. "Young Master Taylor, what are you…" Xena blushed and immediately removed his hand. "Oh, Haha!" Ivan realized what happened and said with a smile, "Miss Xena, you're too pretty and I can't help myself!" Ivan paused here before continuing, "It's just a waste that you're with an untalented man. You're really making it easy for Ben. What can that guy do? He doesn't have a job and only plays video games. How is he worthy of a beauty like you?" Xena was secretly happy when she heard this. She was so lucky, was it possible that Ivan had really set his eyes on her? If that was the case, it was very good if she got to be with Young Master Taylor and was able to marry him. The current Taylor family was close to being a second-class aristocratic family. She heard that Selena's company was about to sign a contract with the Taylor family. It was a huge project and once they succeed, the Taylor family would definitely make it into the range of second-class aristocratic families within one or two years. Wouldn't she be changing her status to a higher one if she was married to a second-class aristocratic family's future master? Apart from that, although Ivan constantly visited bars and there were bad rumors about him, but, which rich man was not a womanizer?

Chapter 389

"Oh, Young Master Taylor, what you've said is too much. I'm not that pretty!" Xena pretended to be modest and picked up some food before putting it on Ivan's plate. "Come, let's eat!" "Haha, sure!" Ivan laughed and they started eating. After a while, Ivan said again, "Miss Xena, I've fallen in love with you at first sight. I've been thinking about you for the past few days and I'm so lucky to have bumped into you today. I had to muster my courage to invite you for dinner!" "How's that possible?" Xena frowned and looked at Ivan before saying, "Young Master Taylor, are you being serious?" "Don't you worry, I am!" Taylor placed one of his hands on

Xena's thigh again before saying with a smile, "From today onwards, I'll give you whatever you want. You would also give me everything I want, right? I believe that you don't really like Ben, right?" "Young Master Taylor, you're right. I've fallen out of love for Ben since long ago. If he wasn't so nice to me, I really want to break up with him!" Xena was afraid that she would miss this opportunity. She stopped pushing Ivan's hand away, pretending as if nothing happened. Ivan had a cold smile inwardly when he heard this. However, he directly held her hand, "Xena, be my woman. I have no idea if it's because of the wine today. I haven't had much but I feel drunk. I want you. How about this, why don't you accompany me to rest in a room upstairs and later, I'll bring you out to buy some branded handbags and clothes. You can choose whatever you have your eyes on. What do you say?" Xena immediately pretended to be reserved and said, "This-this doesn't sound like a good idea, Young Master Taylor. Although I don't like Ben, we haven't broken up. Apart from that, who knows but you might be lying to me. I've just known you for a while and although I have some feelings for you, but, it doesn't sound so good to go into a hotel room, right?" "Hey, what's so bad about it? You must have misunderstood me?" Ivan immediately said with a smile, "It's best that you have feelings for me. I'm asking you to follow me because I would like for you to accompany me while I rest and have a chat with me. I'm not asking you to do anything, right? Don't you worry, I'm not that kind of person!" "I guess it would be fine if it's only sitting down and resting!" Xena blushed and was shy. She clearly knew that if she really followed him upstairs, it wouldn't be as simple as taking a rest. After they finished eating, they quickly got a room and walked into the room. "Xena, I really want to be with you, but, you cannot break up with Ben yet. You have to remain with him so that we can get information about Selena and Fane! Don't you worry. As long as you help me with this and tell me what I want to know, you will surely benefit from it!" Ivan said to Xena, who was in front of him, after he closed the door. "Haha, I thought that you really liked me. In the end, you are only

taking advantage of me. You want to stabilize your position in the Taylor family and get rid of your threat, Selena, right?" Xena laughed and she finally realized that Ivan wanted to use her for something. "How can you call this taking advantage of you? From today onwards, you will be my girlfriend, my woman. Isn't it normal for my woman to do something for me?" Ivan smiled and actually pulled Xena over to him before pouncing on her as they landed on the bed. "Let go of me!" Xena was startled and started struggling.

Chapter 390

"Young Master Taylor, no! We can't…." Xena was really startled and she fought back. "Xena, you'll be my woman. You'll be following me on a journey to enjoy life from today onwards. Apart from that, I can buy everything you like!" Ivan had some wine. That and the fact that Xena was pretty with a great body, he seemed unable to control himself, turning crazy under the drive of alcohol. "No-no...We can't! We've just met not long ago." "Relationships happen because of feelings for each other and have nothing to do with the amount of time we've met…" "Young master Taylor, no! I'm not prepared for this!" "..." Xena was secretly happy about this and she gave in to him after refusing half-heartedly. Around half an hour later, Ivan looked at the woman on the bed in satisfaction. He put on his clothes, "Honey, you're really good. Let's go on a shopping trip together and I'll buy you a car. How about that?" "Buy a car?" Xena was dazed before she asked, "Young master Taylor, you're really good at telling jokes. Didn't I come over driving a Rolls-Royce Phantom?" "That's not a rental?" Ivan was stunned. Xena was a vain woman and in his opinion, she must have rented that Rolls-Royce Phantom to support her vanity and to show-off in front of her best friends. Different from what he imagined, Xena said with a smile, "Young Master Taylor, you must be joking. Why would I rent such a nice car? I guess that this car can be considered as mine!" "Can be considered as yours? What does that mean?" Ivan wondered. "Oh, I'm sure that you don't

know this yet. Fane knows how to practice medicine and he was able to help Miss George lose weight with the medicinal knowledge he acquired from some unknown place!" "It all started when Sharon George fell for Fane and under the encouragement of her friends, she came over to confess to him…" Xena soon told everything that happened yesterday to Ivan. She continued with, "Fiona doesn't know how to drive yet, so I can drive this car whenever I want. Even if she gets her license later, I can still drive ben's car, right? After all, everything that's his, is mine, right? Aren't we considered as a family?" Ivan pulled Xena over, signed her waist and said with a cold expression, "What's this nonsense about you being in the same family as them? You're my woman now, not his family. If not, I'll get jealous!" Although Xena knew what Ivan said might be lies, she still felt warm inwardly. She could not help but rolled her eyes at Ivan, "Alright, Young Master Taylor, I get it, okay? Until today, I haven't let that stupid guy, Ben, touch me yet. He's just a spare tire to me! How can he compare with a strong and handsome man like Young Master Taylor?" "Hey girl, stop calling me Young Master Taylor. You can address me as Ivan when there's only us, but do remember to address me as Young Master Taylor when there are outsiders, alright?" Ivan thought about it and immediately continued, "Apart from that, you have to tell me on time about everything that happens in Ben's family. As an example, the matter of Fane treating Sharon George is not a small one." "Okay!" Xena thought about it and said after she remembered something, "Oh yes, Master George originally thought that the medication that Fane gave was fake so he stepped on it. In the end, they lacked one of the pills and Fane asked for twenty million. The George family had enough money that they directly paid him to buy that one pill!" "What?!"

Chapter 391

The corners of Ivan's mouth twitched when he heard this. If Fane really had money, it would be difficult for him to make a joke out of Fane on the old

man's birthday and throw him out of the house. "However, he gave the twenty million to Fiona as the betrothal gift for Selena, fulfilling his previous promise to Fiona!" Xena continued. "Alright. If Fane manages to get any money in the future, even if it's something normal like the Drake family paid his wages earlier than scheduled, you have to immediately inform me about it. It doesn't matter if you don't know anything, but if you do, you must inform me!" Ivan thought about it and reminded Xena. "Alright. Young Master Taylor, I get it!" Xena rolled her eyes at him impatiently. She was slightly unhappy as after their entire encounter, she had become a spy and was in charge of uncovering information? "I have already told you to not address me as Young Master Taylor, call me Ivan!" Ivan smiled and wrapped his hand around her shoulder, "Let's go shopping, I'll buy you expensive bags and watches. How about that?" "Okay, but we have to go to the north side of the city. If we stay here, we might bump into Ben and won't we be discovered?" Xena thought about it and said. "Yes, darling. You're the smart one! It seems that I cannot hug you in public too!" Ivan smiled. He believed that with the help of Xena, who was by Fane and the others' sides, he would get information about everything in their lives from that day onwards. After shopping for two to three hours, Ivan drove back to the Taylor Mansion alone. He was stunned when he entered the living hall because the old master and some of the Taylor family's members were waiting for him here. "How was it? Ivan, did you sign the contract?" Theodore Taylor immediately asked. Obviously, everybody was waiting for him here with this thought in their mind. They were waiting for him to come back and give him some good news, but he only returned at this moment. Only now did Ivan remember the matter that made him angry that morning. He could only smile embarrassingly, "Sigh, don't mention it! We didn't manage to sign the contract. I had no idea what happened but Selena didn't come to work this morning so I left. She didn't pick up my calls and I plan to go over again tomorrow!" "Haha, who was the one that promised us he would definitely get the contract signed today? If not, didn't he say that he'll

go live on social media to show himself eating shit?" A forty-year-old man couldn't help but laugh with a taunt on his face. The corners of Ivan's mouth immediately twitched. This was his elder and used to work hard under Selena's management. He was very hard working and was very supportive of Selena. However, after he became the general manager, these people were disobedient towards him. If they weren't his elders, he would have found a reason to fire them. "How's that possible? Young Master Ivan actually said that he'll go live and show himself eating shit?" "Do you want to try it? You might be able to go viral!" Cecilia Taylor stood beside them and was laughing. She was not here yesterday and only knew about Ivan's promise at that moment.

Chapter 392

Ivan was pissed. He would not have thought that Cecilia would tease him without any respect given. What a brat! "Can't you take a joke?" He glared at her. "Is it? You're the young Master of the Taylor family. Such a prestigious identity… How could you joke about such a thing? I humbly advise you to not make such a joke next time," Cecilia mocked. She was dating a young master from a second-class aristocratic family. Soon, she could marry him and be a rich madam. By then, Ivan would be a piece of cake, and she would not have to work under him anymore. She was euphoric at the thought of this. Ivan, on the other hand, wanted to punch Cecilia! Suddenly, Old Master spoke, "I say, you guys watch your mouth before we secure the contract." He paused for a bit before continuing, "Selena is someone who'll honor her words. She won't just chicken out. There must be a valid reason why she didn't make it." Speaking of the devil, Ivan's phone rang. It was Selena. "Selena Taylor, what is the meaning of this? I've waited for you the whole afternoon. Where were you? You didn't answer a single phone call!" Ivan knew exactly what happened, all this rage was just for show. He had turned on the speaker so everyone could hear Selena explain. He was betting if Selena was calling him to interrogate if he hired

the hitman to kill Fane. Even better, perhaps Fane was already dead. Could Shadow have only killed her target, Fane, and not Selena? ‘So, Selena, are you going to ask me if I’ve hired a hitman or what?’ Ivan thought. What proceeded was… “I ran into a hitman this morning. She kidnapped me so I wasn’t able to answer nor return your calls…” “Oh my god, kidnapped?!” “No way… Who is that?! We’re considerably respectable being a third-class aristocratic family, I bet no ordinary people would do such a thing to us.” “Hitman? How could she still be alive after being kidnapped? Are you sure they’re not asking for money?” Those in Taylor’s mansion gasped and were shocked by the news. Old Master Taylor waited no more before he snatched the phone. “How are you, Selena? Are you hurt?” On the other end of the call, Selena felt warm as she could feel the concern from the tone of Old Master’s voice. “I’m fine, Grandpa, don't worry. That hitman’s target is Fane. She knows Transfiguration and she had disguised herself as me! But Fane could see it through, he didn’t fall for her tricks and even killed her! I was surprised!” Selena summarized her experience and explained. “That’s good, that’s good!” The old master broke out in cold sweat. The fact that she was a hitman was bad enough, what was worse was that she knew Transfiguration!

Chapter 393

Well, who would have suspected the person they least suspected to be? “Alright now, Grandpa, I’m hanging up. Get Ivan to come sign the contract tomorrow morning.” “Fane is pretty smart, isn’t he? He saw through her deception, played along, and then retaliated!” Cecilia could not help but compliment. “Thank goodness they are both fine. If Fane was dead, Kylie would be without a father!” Eugene Taylor, who was in his forties, lamented. “So what if he dies, he’s just an outsider. He’s just a bodyguard, a rough man! My cousin Selena is such an excellent woman, she will get another man,” Ivan, on the other hand, dissed. He was still salty about the money spent—fifty million—on hiring such an elite hitman like Shadow,

but got killed by Fane instead! The mission was not completed, and on top of that, there would be no refund because the hitman was dead! That fifty million was burned overnight, just like that. They paid fifty million...just to see the enemy still alive. “Ivan, watch your mouth. A stepdad will never treat his stepdaughter as well as one’s own father would. Besides, Fane has got a stable job with Drake's now. Who’s to say he won’t succeed in the future? Fane, this young lad, I think he’s got potential. He’s smart, has a high income, and he can fight well! He’s the perfect match for Selena!” Eugene defended Fane. Eugene hoped that Selena could come back to Taylor’s and work for them. He also hoped Fane could be acknowledged by the family so that the whole family could live peacefully under one roof. “Heh, he’s just a soldier, a bodyguard. He’s no match to all the young masters out there!” Ivan was still obviously salty and continued to pick fights. “Alright there, your uncle, Eugene, has a point. Fane is a bodyguard but he isn’t just any ordinary bodyguard. He’s a bodyguard at Drake’s. He has the potential to grow there.” Zeus could not take it anymore and interjected Ivan, “Ivan, you can’t penalize him just because of that conflict that happened. Besides, he has promised to compensate you with ten million on my birthday. If he kept his words, you should let this go. Understood?” “Yes, Grandpa, I understand.” Ivan was still upset, and only said this to pacify his grandfather. He quickly followed up with, “But if he can’t fulfill his promise, and didn’t get you an expensive gift, he’ll have to divorce Selena and leave the Taylor family according to the contract. Right?” “Naturally. He suggested this condition, and he shall be a man to his words.” The old man nodded. Honesty was a virtue he upheld, Fane was no good for his grandaughter if he could not keep his words. … “What? What have I heard? You said you were kidnapped?” Selena, who was answering a call in her yard, was interjected by Fiona who was eavesdropping behind her. She got a bad feeling about this...

Chapter 394

Selena did not tell Fiona about what happened that day—the kidnap and the hitman—to save Fiona some worries. Hence, she secretly took her call out to her yard after dinner. Unexpectedly, Fiona had actually followed her out to the yard and heard everything she said on the call. “Mum, it’s nothing. Aren’t we home safe and sound now?” Selena awkwardly smiled. She did not look well, though. Filled with anger, Fiona reprimanded, “Back? Do you have any idea how dangerous that was? That damn Fane… If it wasn’t for him causing troubles, would anyone hire a hitman to kill him?” She then turned toward the house and yelled, “Fane, you bastard! Get out here this instance!” “Mum, what’s the matter?” Fane asked with a smile as he paced toward them. “What’s the matter? Heh… I heard you ran into a hitman today, she even kidnapped and disguised as my daughter? You have no idea what you got yourself into, aye? That’s a killer you were dealing with, what if she killed my daughter? This is all your fault. You’ve been going around causing troubles! My daughter wouldn’t have to deal with this if it wasn’t for you!” Fiona blasted at the sight of Fane. She continued, “Hmph, don’t think that twenty million you gave me can buy your way out of this. I’m warning you, don’t let this happen again. Even though I take you as my son-in-law now, I’ll make my daughter divorce you if it ever happens again!” Embarrassed, Fane smiled bitterly as he replied, “Mum, no one could have seen that coming. I wouldn’t know the hitman would disguise herself and get Selena involved, this is my bad. I have to say, I didn’t cause trouble. But if someone had come to pick a fight, I couldn’t let it slide either. “If... I’m just giving an example here. If a mad person had come to you with a knife and wanted to kill you… Now, you didn’t provoke this man, would you retaliate?” “You…” Fiona was speechless as Fane’s words made sense. However, she insisted, “I don’t care. Whatever it is, stop going around provoking people, even if it means you have to give in to them. Whoever hired the hitman could always hire another one after this failed attempt. I don’t care if you die… But what about my daughter?” Fane thought she had a good point. “How about this, I’ll hire a bodyguard for Selena’s safety’s

sake.” “Bodyguard? Sure, you pay!” Fiona was a little stunt. “Mm, don’t you worry about the money, I’ll pay!” Fane nodded. Just as they were headed back home, an Audi stopped in front of their house. A man then walked toward them. “Hey, is this not, Marshal Dennis?” Fiona recognized and gasped. Dennis had come with Ken to cause trouble here. However, Fane, as a veteran, had talked sense into them and made them leave. So, why was he there again? “Gee… Not another hitman now, aye?” Fiona was scared sh*tless as she gulped. She ran toward Selena to signal her to get out of there. Selena, on the other hand, was not worried. If it was not for Fane at that fighting ring, Dennis would be a long-dead man.

Chapter 395

So, Selena was certain that Dennis was not there for killing business. She was, however, perplexed by how he recovered so quickly so soon. He had serious injuries that day. She had estimated that Dennis would need to be bedridden for at least a fortnight. But look at him, he looked like a healthy young lad! “What are you doing here?” Feeling scared, Fiona asked, “If you’re here for Fane, go ahead, it has nothing to do with us. Be clear with your target, he’s responsible for what he did, let him face the consequences, not us. Alright?” Fane was dumbfounded by his mother-in-law’s actions?. “Brother Fane, I’m here to thank you for that day!” Dennis intended to kneel before Fane but thought it was better for him not to as it might expose Fane’s true identity. So, he could only bow with his hands clasped. Fane thought even that was unnecessary. Annoyed, he said, “Alright, what’s passed is past, there’s nothing to thank me for. Besides, it was such a dangerous situation. I’ll be ashamed of myself if I didn’t rescue you.” “You’re right…” Dennis smiled as he presented a box to Selena. “Sis, Fane is my brother now, it’s only natural that I call you ‘sis’. Here’s a little gift for you, I hope you like it.” “This…” Selena was shy. She looked at Fane, not knowing whether to accept the gift. At the same time, she was more shocked that Dennis, being a marshal himself, had addressed Fane as his ‘brother’. That

was a lot of respect paid. Then she thought, Fane had saved Dennis' life. So, it was no big deal for him to call Fane 'brother'... Speaking of that, Fane was a lucky man indeed. O'Neal was already injured when Fane stepped into the ring and stabbed him one more time. Otherwise, Fane would be no match to O'Neal. O'Neal could have killed him, even! "What are you waiting for? Thank the marshal now! It's disrespectful to refuse the gift, you know?" Fiona nudged, her face filled with joy. A marshal had just addressed Fane as 'brother', that was great news despite not knowing why Dennis did so. It seemed Dennis had owed Fane a favor. Most importantly, any gift from a marshal would be expensive. It was dumb if Fane declined it. "Go ahead, take it! He came all the way to thank me and present you a gift, why not?" Fane advised. "Thank you, Marshal Dennis!" Selena accepted the gift and smiled politely. "Hehe, you're welcome. Fane had prescribed me medicine, and that saved my life. He is my brother now, I owe him my life. I'll do as he says," Dennis declared seriously. "For real?" Fane was stunned. Which to Dennis replied, "For real. I'm a man of my words!" Fane did not only save his life, Fane is the Supreme Warrior. Anyone would give their life up to a Superior Warrior. "Very well. From today onward, you'll be my wife's bodyguard. You'll keep her safe," Fane requested.

Chapter 396

"What?" When Fiona heard that, she was caught by surprise and took a deep breath. She immediately stepped forward and glared at Fane angrily, "Fane, have you gone mad? I told you to find a bodyguard to protect my daughter, but you just found one casually? Do you even know who he is? He's an officer, and a marshal at that, and you're asking him to become a bodyguard?" Having said that, she pulled Fane to stand in front of Dennis, "Hurry up and apologize to Marshal Dennis. Even if you're fortunate enough to save his life by giving him some medicine, he's already expressed his gratitude for that. What right do you have to ask him to be your bodyguard?" Fiona was almost scared to death by Fane. This guy could

actually spout such nonsense. Was he not aware of how powerful a marshal was? An officer, a marshal at that, countless people wanted to get into their good books. However, Fiona did not expect Dennis to smile indifferently, “That’s not a problem, I’ll protect sister-in-law secretly. Of course, if you’re around, then I won’t be needed. I’ll most definitely try my best to protect her when she’s alone to and from work, or when she’s out alone.” “Agreed, he agreed?” Fiona’s jaw dropped, wondering if she heard wrongly. Fane asked a marshal to protect her daughter, and the other party actually agreed to it. It was a miracle. “Mother, I wasn’t looking for someone casually. You said to find a bodyguard for Selena. If I’m going to find one, I’ve to find a better one, right? Otherwise, what if the hitman hired by the other side happens to be very skillful? That’s why I thought Marshal Dennis is very suitable!” At this time, Fane grinned at Fiona, as if he was talking about something very trivial. “Auntie, don’t worry. From now on, I’m going to treat Fane as my brother. And as my brother, my life is his!” Dennis looked at Fane as he said this, his expression serious. Fiona was overjoyed, but she still asked tentatively, “That’s all fine, but you’re a marshal after all, I’m afraid Fane can’t afford your fees. How much monthly salary are you asking for?” “Haha, you’re too kind. Between us, there’s no need to talk about salary. We’re comrades after all!” Dennis laughed. He was very satisfied to be able to do something for Fane. Moreover, Fane had saved his life before, so he regarded this as repaying his gratitude. “Cough, cough.” Fane coughed awkwardly. Dennis was being too careless. If he refused to take any salary, would that not be too obvious? “Oh, I’m not asking for much. Ten or twenty thousand will do!” Dennis quickly caught on and said. “So little? Isn’t that a disadvantage for you? You’re a marshal!” Fiona was a little embarrassed. Ten to twenty thousand a month for a marshal to be a bodyguard to protect her daughter, and to protect herself and others by the way, it would be too cost-effective. “Hehe, I’m idle anyway. Since I don’t have anything else to do, I’ll just treat it as something to pass my time with!” Dennis chuckled. “Let’s agree on twenty thousand a month then. I’ll transfer the money to

you every month!" After brief consideration, Fane spoke to Dennis and Fiona again, "By the way, since it's secret protection, it's best not to discuss this matter openly. If this information leaks out, and if there's really a hitman, the other party will be prepared for it or have a backup plan. It would be troublesome if the opponent engages any attack or defense strategies against us!" In fact, Fane mainly said this to Fiona, in case she went out and bragged about the fact a marshal was employed as their bodyguard. "Sure, sure, I won't say anything!" Fiona nodded immediately. "Except for the few of us here, don't even tell Clifford or the other about this!" Selena looked around and said. "Don't worry. I understand. I won't say anything!"

Chapter 397

Fiona smiled and said, "Oh yes, Dennis, please have a seat inside. Do you want to have a few drinks too?" "Hehe, that won't be necessary. It's too late, I should go!" Dennis chuckled and soon drove away. "Selena, let me see what that is?" Fiona was looking at the box in Selena's hand. She was nearly dying from curiosity. Selena opened the box and looked inside, "A jade bracelet. I think the material looks pretty good. I'm afraid it's worth at least a few hundred thousand." "No way, so expensive!" Fiona drew in a cold breath, "Dennis is too generous!" Having said that, she turned her attention towards Fane, "Fane, you lucky boy, saving the life of Dennis. It seems to me that your medical skills are really good. Besides, he has even referred to you as his brother. It must be a blessing from your ancestors!" "I'm just lucky!" Fane chuckled before entering the house. Looking at Fane's retreating back, Fiona shrugged and helped Selena put on the bracelet, "This bracelet looks really good on you! It's a pity I can't tell anyone that a marshal is our bodyguard. It's really suffocating. I can't even brag about it to my friends." "Ah, just keep a low profile. What's there to brag about?" Selena sighed, at a loss on how to respond. At this time, Ivan called Ken and Neil out. "Young Master Taylor, how come you're so free to invite us for drinks?" Neil smiled before he continued, "The hitman said that Fane will

be killed within five days. Two days have passed, I wonder if she has taken any action?" "Yeah, I really look forward to the day for Fane to be killed, haha!" Ken started laughing. Ivan's expression was ominous, "The other party has already taken action!" "Really? How was it? It must be a success, right? She's very skillful and good at transfiguration. I didn't expect that she could do it so soon," Neil was overjoyed and looked at Ivan expectantly. "She's quick to take action and quick to die too!" Ivan picked up the glass of red wine in front of him and downed it in one gulp. "What? Fane died that quickly? That's too good for him. D*mmit, he should be tortured before being killed!" When Ivan heard that, he could not help but snide, "Yeah, we forgot to instruct the hitman to torture that guy first. It's best to take a video of him kneeling and begging for his life so that we could watch it!" Ken was also a little resentful, thinking that Fane had gotten off too easily. "Hehe, what the hell were you thinking about? D*mmit, I was talking about the hitman. She died too quickly!" Ivan smiled bitterly, but in his heart, he was at a loss on how to react, "It's still fine for her to die, but the point is, she kidnapped Selena this morning, and my contract ended up not being signed. When I returned home, the other family members actually made fun of me." "What!" Ken and Neil exclaimed in unison, wondering if their ears were playing tricks on them.

Chapter 398

"No, that can't be. Isn't she ranked the fifth on the hitman leaderboard in the southwest district? Didn't she claim she could face a marshal head-on?" After a long while, with his mouth twitching slightly, Neil turned to Ivan and said, "Young Master Taylor, you can't be kidding, right? If he can't be killed like this, you'll have your work cut out for you. It's more difficult to kill him than reaching the heavens!" "That's right, Young Master Taylor. You must be joking. She can even transfigure herself. Under such circumstances, isn't it a piece of cake to get rid of Fane?" Ken was still baffled. "Hehe, maybe if she didn't transfigure herself or engage in any

elaborate killing rituals, she might succeed in killing Fane! Who'd expect that woman to transfigure herself as Selena and kidnap her? Based on her past killing patterns, she must be planning to kill Fane in front of Selena. But something happened in the process. That woman gave the game away and Fane found out about it. As a result, not only did Fane not expose her, but he went along with it and killed her when she was caught unawares. So you tell me, if a hitman was unprepared, isn't that the same as losing her life?" Ivan sneered and gulped down another glass of red wine that was just filled up. "What rotten luck. F*ck!" "I…" Neil was at a loss for words. "What kind of hitman is this? She's too careless to get spotted by Fane. I guess Fane must have launched a sneak attack on her after he found out. Otherwise, he's not a match for her in a fair fight!" "That's right. Fane is simply too lucky. This hitman likes playing tricks and ended up killing herself. If they went head-on against each other, Fane is most definitely not an opponent!" Ken smiled bitterly too. "Take the last time when Fane fought at the arena as an example of his lucky streak. Dennis has beaten O'Neal within an inch of his life when Fane just finished him with one kick. Hehe, and here I was thinking that Fane was a tough opponent and strong in combat." "He only kicked that person's neck, but it ended up with the chest and other areas exploding from the impact, and those were the areas hit by Dennis in the first place! Obviously, the opponent's death was not caused by Fane!" Neil explained helplessly. Although he was unwilling to concede, he did not have a choice. Fane always had good luck. "Sigh, let's talk about our next steps!" Ivan sighed, but something occurred to him and he stood up quickly with a slap on his forehead, "Oh yes, I almost forgot, didn't you give me that drug? Hehe, let's figure out a way to let Fane drink it, and our problem will be solved!" "That's a bit difficult, right? When we used one hundred million to engage Fiona the last time, it ended up a failure too!" Ken frowned in dejection. "Hehe, of course the plan would fail if you got her to do it. Not only is she greedy, but she's also a coward. Do you understand? There's one person who can definitely do the job. Furthermore,

she’s now my girlfriend!” Ivan chuckled, took out his phone, called Xena, and told her to come over. After the call, he turned back to the other two, “Most importantly, the two of you must keep this matter a secret. Her identity must not be revealed!” “Who’s that?” Neil looked confused. “You’ll find out when she gets here. Hehe, she’s a beauty too. Tsk, tsk, and she tastes amazing!” Ivan smirked and could not help licking his lips. After a while, Xena, wearing a sexy dress, came into the private room. “Here, let me introduce you. This is Young Master Ken Clark, and this is Young Master Neil Hugo!” Ivan stood up and introduced them with all smiles. “And this is my girlfriend, Xena Jackson!”

Chapter 399

“It’s a pleasure to meet the two young masters. Here, let me give you a toast!” Xena smiled and poured herself a glass of red wine. Of course, she was ecstatic. These two were the young masters of a second-class aristocratic family. By following Ivan, she could get in touch with people of a higher status, certainly much better than with Ben. She, Xena Jackson, had finally entered the upper-class social circle. “Xena Jackson, why do I find this name familiar?” Ken frowned as he sipped his red wine. Very quickly, his eyes lit up. “Now I remember. Aren’t you Ben Taylor’s girlfriend?” “Haha, yeah, she used to be, but not anymore!” Ivan laughed. “She’s my woman now, but for the time being, she has to stay with that useless Ben to collect some information for us. Besides, for some of the things that Fiona can’t do for us, Xena can definitely do it!” Xena rolled her eyes seductively at Ivan. “You’re so mean. What else do I have to do? I thought you asked me out to have fun, but it turns out that you want me to do something for you!” “Haha, of course we’re here to enjoy ourselves!” Ivan laughed and pressed a kiss on Xena’s cheek, before taking out a small packet, “This is a type of drug, but don’t worry, the person won’t die immediately after taking it. It’s colorless and odorless. After consuming it, that person will take about a month to die. Before that, the person will become thinner and weaker,

feeling weak in the limbs as if they were ill. Even the doctors won't be able to trace it!" "My goodness, there's such a powerful drug?" Xena took a deep breath and frowned. "Let me guess, who are you going to give this drug to? Well, it should be Fane, right? After all, Young Master Clark and Young Master Hugo seem to like Selena, so it can't be her. It must be Fane that you want to get rid of, right?" "Babe, you're so smart. I've not even said anything yet, and you've guessed it all! I must reward you properly tonight!" Ivan was very pleased. He hugged Xena around her waist and kissed her cheek again. "It's a promise!" Xena blushed and said bashfully. "Of course. We'll find a hotel later and have a good rest. Tomorrow morning, I'll transfer one million for you to pamper yourself! After you've given this drug to Fane successfully, I'll buy you a villa of your choice. How about that?" Ivan smiled. "A villa? Really? I want a better one, not the ones out in the suburbs!" Xena's eyes lit up immediately. A better villa would not be worth one or two million, but rather, seven or eight million. At least, it would be considered pretty good in a place like Middle Province, and ordinary people would not be able to afford a place like that in their lifetime. "That goes without saying. For you, everything must be the best!" Ivan felt a bit excited as he saw Xena keeping the packet of drug. If Fane could be dealt with by using such a small amount of money, it would definitely be worth it. After all, one hundred and fifty million did not achieve that result. Ken and Neil exchanged a gleeful look. They had to admit that Ivan's idea was pretty good.

Chapter 400

"Oh yes, Young Master Taylor, I think it's best for Miss Jackson not to take any action recently!" After thinking for a while, Neil continued, "They just met the hitman after all, so we have already disturbed the hornet's nest. Fane must be on his guard already. If we act now, I'm afraid we'd get into trouble if anything goes wrong!" Xena also nodded repeatedly. "I agree, especially since I'm on bad terms with Fane, he might be wary of me. Another point

is that Fane is a smart guy and not easy to deal with. So, we should wait for a while until they relax their vigilance!" Ivan thought for a moment before he said, "Let's wait until Grandpa Taylor's seventieth birthday is over. By that time, if Fane can't pay me ten million in compensation or can't come up with a gift worth ten million, he will be forced to divorce Selena and get kicked out of the Taylor family anyway!" Speaking of this, Ivan smiled. "In that case, then there's no need to administer the drug to him. But if he can do it by then, after the birthday party, you'll think of a way to give him the drug. After one month, he'll slowly die." "Oh no, if he's going to divorce Selena and get kicked out of the Taylor family, I don't have to give him the drug. Then, Young Master Taylor won't buy me a villa?" That occurred to Xena very quickly and she was a little unhappy. "Haha, that won't do. Of course, I'll still buy it for you. You're my girlfriend, my woman! If Fane was kicked out after the birthday party, I'll buy you a villa as a celebration! If he's not kicked out, then we'll wait until you give him the drug before I buy one for you as a reward. How about that?" Ivan said with a smile. Xena was not stupid. If she was being used without giving her any benefit, what would he do if she exposed such things in the future? Therefore, Ivan would not pinch on the hush money that was meant for her. Besides, this woman looked great. Putting aside the possibility of getting married to her in the future, it was still good to have fun with her now. He was even looking forward to seeing Ben's reaction when he found out he was cuckolded. "Haha, let's have a drink at the bar. It won't be long before the Old Master's birthday party. At that time, I'll come and have a look too!" Neil laughed before he continued, "Recently, I've sent people to watch Fane in secret too, to see if he went into any luxury stores or bought any gifts worth tens of millions. However, except for going to and from work, it seems like that guy didn't go into any expensive jade shop or gold shops!" "Yeah, a gift worth ten million isn't that easy to purchase, right? Unless it's an antique!" Ken also laughed heartily. With that plan in mind, they were not so worried anymore. The next day, Selena went to work early in the morning. Dennis

drove secretly and escorted her to the company before leaving. Ivan and Janet soon appeared in Selena's office. This time, they finally met Selena and the signing of the contract went smoothly. At noon, Fane received a call from Dennis asking him out. "What's up? Are you looking for me?" After arriving at a coffee shop and sitting down, Fane asked Dennis. "How do I put it? It's not a big deal, but I think I should tell you about it and let you decide if you are interested to go!" Dennis smiled before he continued, "Tomorrow, one of the Kings of War, Magnus Sutherland, will be holding a congregation at the Carefree Manor as a meeting of the comrades to strengthen our network and friendship. He'll be responsible for all the expenses and just hope that some of the comrades can participate. I know that many assistant commanders, head commanders, and marshals will be going, and a few kings of war will be joining too!" "Sure, it's a good gathering for all the brothers who fought in arms. Having a few drinks together is a great thing!" Fane nodded with satisfaction at that information. "Well, I heard that he has invited the Goddess of War too, so I wonder if Goddess Lana will turn up!" "As for you, they didn't know that such a great person like you is in the Middle Province, so they didn't invite you!"

Chapter 401

Dennis spoke while smiling. "What time is the event tomorrow? I'll probably drop by. It should be nice if there's alcohol to go around!" Fane said after he thought about it. "The opening ceremony is at twelve noon. But everyone will probably arrive earlier. Come by at around eleven o'clock!" Dennis took a sip of the coffee before him. "Mmhmm. I have some recollection of that King of War, Magnus Sutherland. He was probably Ethan's subordinate!" Fane nodded. The two talked for a while before leaving. They just walked out of the coffee shop when Tanya made an unexpected call. "Is anything the matter, Miss Tanya?" Fane asked immediately after he picked up the call. "Are you free now? It's only one in the afternoon. Don't tell me that you're off from work already? Yvonne and

I are about to go out shopping, but we don't want to bring an entire band of bodyguards! So…" Tanya's tone indicated that she was open to discussion. "Heh. No problem!" Fane chuckled and did not know whether to laugh or cry. He was the Drakes' bodyguard, yet Tanya used such a demure tone to talk to him. It was highly likely that no one would believe this if he told anyone else. Soon enough, Fane arrived before the gates of the Drakes' residence. "Get in the car. I'll drive this time!" At the entrance, Tanya and Yvonne were already inside the car, waiting for Fane. Fane slid into the backseat. The car quickly shot toward the direction of the premium shopping mall in the city center. After they got down from the car, Fane and the other two quickly attracted the attention of the many shoppers in the mall. Some looked at Fane with pure admiration. He was walking with two absolute beauties, after all. Their long, sexy legs were enough to rival other beauties in a split second. More importantly, between the two beauties, one was adorable, and the other, elegant while carrying the bearings of a queen. They radiated an aura of being unapproachable by a normal person. "Who's that man? Don't tell me that both of those ladies are his? Tsk—tsk. How lucky of him!" "Maybe. Look—he's walking in the middle, with the two girls beside him. And the two ladies are wearing luxury items. He's probably their sugar daddy!!" "No way. The man is wearing such ordinary clothes!" "You never know. Nowadays, some wealthy people like to keep a low profile, but they are absolutely loaded. I know of this general who was awarded tens of billions of bucks by the government after he retired. Don't mention him keeping a low profile on a regular basis—he even eats pickled vegetables!" Quite a few men could not help but discuss among themselves when they saw this. The corners of Yvonne's mouth twitched when she heard this. She shot the men a vicious glare. "What the h*ll did you just say? Speak more nonsense and I'll gouge all of your eyes out! You bunch are as blind as bats anyway!"

Chapter 402

Tanya, who stood by the side, did not know whether to laugh or cry. Seriously, what was Fane thinking? He was just a bodyguard, yet he walked side by side with them. He even walked between them. No wonder everyone misunderstood. She now seriously suspected that Fane did not do it intentionally. After Yvonne finished her yelling, she whipped her head around and rolled her eyes at Fane. “Why are you walking between us, you brat? You walk behind us—don’t you know that?” Fane flashed an awkward smile. “I’m just scared of being accused of looking at your asses if I walk behind you. Besides, your skirt is a little short today. It wouldn’t do for me to walk behind!” Yvonne’s face suddenly flushed red. She was so angry that she grinded her teeth. She had the inexplicable urge to lunge forward and strangle that b*stard to death. “What’s wrong? Weren’t you the one who told me to call him and get him to accompany us as we shop, Yvonne? Are you regretting it now?” Tanya snickered from the side. “What are you afraid of? You don’t have to be afraid if you’re not doing anything wrong.” After she said that, she slipped one of her arms through Fane’s. “We’re not afraid of being misunderstood,” she said. “If someone’s wife catches sight of this, however, how on earth would he explain all of this to her?” Yvonne’s eyes brightened when she heard that. She felt embarrassed, but she took Fane’s other arm anyway. “That’s right. Let’s go and shop. Fane, what will you do if we run into someone you know, and that person tells your wife about this?” “D–don’t. I was wrong, okay? Please, young misses, forgive me. I’ll walk behind you, or by your side. How about that?” Fane quickly admitted defeat. He could never imagine the day that two beauties would be sidling toward him on both his left and right. Besides, Fiona enjoyed shopping. If he did run into her, he would never be able to cleanse himself of his sins even if he bathed in holy water. Yet Tanya and Yvonne grew even more excited when they saw that Fane was afraid. Not only did they refuse to let go of Fane, but they also tightened their grip on him and continued walking forward. “Heh. Now you’re scared? Too late!” Although Yvonne felt a little shy, she spoke with her usual terseness in order to put Fane in his place. Yet

she never expected that a male voice would soon ring out from behind. “Oh dear. I never expected you to be involved with a bodyguard!” The three stopped in their tracks when they heard this mysterious voice. Tanya and Yvonne immediately let go of Fane’s hand. Fane threw a look over his shoulder; a bitter smile crossed his lips. “I was wondering who it was. Turns out to be the fellow who took off at the speed of lightning after being frightened by me the other day!” The man before him was not a stranger. It was the man in a floral shirt from a few days back—Young Master Flynn from the Bane family. “Heh. What a coincidence. Never expected to run into you here!” Flynn flashed a cold smile. He looked at Tanya, and his smile turned wolfish. “My dear, it seems that you’ve only grown more beautiful even though only a few days have passed since I last saw you,” he said. “The dress suits you. It makes you seem younger—and more alluring!” After he said that, he turned his attention to Yvonne. “You’re such a lucky b*stard,” he said to Fane. “You’re only a bodyguard, but you’re able to find two such beautiful women to accompany you. Tsk tsk, I’m envious!” “Who’s this, Tanya? He has a lot of bodyguards, but I’ve never seen him before!” Yvonne noticed that there were over twenty bodyguards behind the man. Her pulse began to rise in fear. They only brought Fane out, after all. They did not know if Fane was able to overcome all those men if they fought. “I’ve never seen him before either. I think he’s an aristocrat from Lone City. Don’t mind him. He looks down on everyone just because he has some money. He’d probably be scared out of his wits once he knows who we are!” Tanya chuckled, evidently not giving two hoots about Flynn. “Okay!”

Chapter 403

Yvonne nodded her head. It was true that the Drakes were the most influential family in Middle Province. Even the four most powerful families here were not contenders against the Drakes and did not dare to offend them. What should she be afraid of? Unless he was from the most powerful family

in Lone City. After all, Lone City was a few times larger than Middle Province, and naturally, they held more power. The aristocrats there were stronger than the aristocrats of Middle Province. There, they also possessed a fearsome strength; only that strength that was capable of scaring the Drakes. “Tsk...tsk. Stop lying to my face. You can only afford one bodyguard. Heh. Think you can scare me?” Flynn chuckled. “My family is a second-class aristocratic family from Lone City,” he said. “What do you think? Afraid now, aren’t you?” “No way. A second-class aristocrat? I’m so scared!” Tanya put on a fearful mask when she heard that. “Oh my God, a second-class aristocrat. We’re doomed. We’re doomed!” Yvonne also played along with her. “Hah! Good that you’re afraid!” Flynn thought that they were truly afraid and burst into guffaws. “Since you’re so afraid, be my women. What good is there to be with a bodyguard? If you’re with me, I guarantee that from now on even if you walk sideways, nobody dares to say anything!” Fane was amused when he heard that. “Don’t tell me that you come from a family of crabs? You like walking sideways when you’re outside?” “That’s right. Young Master Crab. Hah! His father is definitely Father Crab, and there’s Grandfather Crab…” Tanya chuckled in delight when she heard that. “How bold of you to speak like that of the Banes!” The corners of Flynn’s mouth twitched. He was so angry that his entire face turned pale. Nobody dared to speak of the Banes like that in Lone city. Furthermore, Middle Province was not as powerful as Lone City. That was why he really did not have anything to be afraid of, aside from a few first-class aristocratic families and the Drakes. He simply decided to cut straight to the point and waved his hand. “Beat the guy up to death. Take the women away. I’m going to have a taste of two beauties today! How dare you look down on the Banes. I’ll let you know the true meaning of regret today!” “Look here, offending our young master is akin to digging your own grave. Get it?” “Heh. They knew that our young master is from a second-class aristocratic family, yet they still dared to provoke him. You’ve got some guts!” The bodyguards started to walk over, wicked smiles on their faces.

“These are new. Seems like you fired the trash that you used last time. Did you hire more professional fighters from Lone City? Fane did not recognize any of the bodyguards before him. He gave a warm smile as he spoke. “Hah. Your memory isn’t too bad, you b*stard. You actually remember that these aren’t the bodyguards from before!” Flynn laughed and said, “You’re pretty skilled. If you get down on your knees and beg and volunteer to help out the Banes from now on, I’ll consider if I should spare your life!”

Chapter 404

Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry when he heard that. “From what I see, you’re a pretty good-looking guy, and you stand out from the crowd,” he said. “Why don’t you consider helping me polish my shoes?” “You ungrateful f*cker! “Get him!” Flynn snarled viciously as he waved his hand. He was someone who recognized and treasured talents in people, yet the other man refused to take up his offer. It was something he would never foresee. “These bodyguards seem to be better than the ones I faced last time. But they’re still trash in my eyes!” Fane’s lips curled into a wry smile. He took two steps forward and clenched his fists, moving first. Bam! Bam! Bam! The men who rushed over first all received a punch to their faces before they could respond. They flew backward, spitting blood with their front teeth, broken. “Ah!” One of the men—who looked thirty-odd—had extremely fast fists, and his technique was extremely sound. Fane observed him. This man’s fighting skill was probably a little better than several assistant commanders in the army. However, he was not a threat in Fane’s eyes. He clenched his fists and punched forward, his fist meeting the other man’s. Bam! In a flash, the two men’s fists collided. The other man flew backward with no way of retaliating. “What?” The man took a sharp intake of breath, extreme shock flooding his veins. He was probably one of the strongest among this group of bodyguards. He never expected Fane to be so strong, to be so much faster than him—that he would be sent flying with a single fist. It was as though he was facing off against a huge rock. Bam!

Bam! Bam! It did not take a full minute for all the twenty bodyguards to be lying down on the floor. Some of them felt like their arms had been broken. One of them cradled his hand with the other, crying out in pain. Some others had lost quite a few of their teeth, and blood streamed down from their nostrils. “Young Master Bane, right? Time for you to shine. Come over. It’s your turn. Now that they’ve all been defeated, shouldn’t you step up as their young master?” Fane smiled and motioned toward the other man. Young Master Bane gulped and stared at the bodyguards on the floor. Cold sweat beaded down the nape of his neck. After a while, he finally spoke in a flippant manner, “I was just joking around. That day, I saw that you had such great fighting skills, so I purposely rounded up quite a few fighters today and took them out onto the streets, hoping to run into you and get them to fight you. You’ve opened my horizons!” “Heh. Didn’t you call me an ungrateful f*cker just now?” Fane chuckled and asked. “No way. I already said that I was joking. I’m not much of a fighter myself. So no thank you!” Flynn wiped his forehead; a film of cold sweat came off. He wheeled around, preparing to leave. “You’re leaving? Do you believe that I can kill you in three seconds? “Even though you’re five meters away from me!” Fane said coolly. Flynn only took one step before he stopped in his tracks, frozen. He did not harbor an inch of suspicion toward Fane’s claim. It would probably take the man two seconds to catch up to him, and another to kill him. Three was enough. He craned his head backward. “I – I’m a Bane, from a second-class aristocratic family,” he said. “We have plenty of fighters in our family who haven’t shown their faces yet. You’d better think about it. You probably won’t be able to escape if you kill me!” “Hah! I don’t fear death. Besides, I believe that every problem can be solved once we get there!” Fane laughed. That one sentence sent a chill crawling up the other man’s spine. A rich man like him only feared meeting someone who did not fear death. He was powerful, but as the saying goes, a beggar can never be bankrupt. If someone like that killed you, you would be the only loser around even if he eventually killed himself. After all, he was the young

master of a second-class aristocratic family. He had a bright and beautiful future before him.

Chapter 405

“Come over and fight me! How about that?” Fane waved his hand again. “I’ll spare you if you can take one hit from me!” Flynn’s blood pressure spiked. He was a pampered young man born with a silver spoon in his mouth. How on earth would he know how to fight? If he took one hit, he would be left crippled even if he did not die immediately. “Can we–we do it some other way? I was wrong!” Flynn’s features contorted in despair. He quickly noticed the shopping mall before him. “Oh, right. You’re out shopping, aren’t you, ladies?” he said. “How about this? I’ll pay for everything you buy today. Just choose whatever you like from this mall. How about that?” “Oh my, you’re paying? Why not? What do you think about this, ladies?” Fane smiled and looked at Tanya and Yvonne. After all, the other man was the young master of a second-class aristocratic family. Fane did not want to blow the issue out of proportion simply because he did not want to trouble himself too much. There was a possibility that the master of the Bane family would come over looking for a fight if he beat up young Bane today. It was not that Fane was not capable of dealing with the Banes, of course, but he did not like to stir unnecessary trouble. He just wanted to live a peaceful and comfortable life in Middle Province. “Of course, it’s alright! It’s so nice to have someone pay for us. I want to buy a few branded bags!” Tanya immediately replied, grinning. “I also thought about getting myself new clothes!” Yvonne was not the least bit embarrassed as well. “Get your useless bodyguards to wait outside the mall!” Fane smiled and led Yvonne and Tanya inside. “Seriously, all of you—you can’t even beat up one guy! Pieces of trash!” Flynn was extremely furious. After he thought about it, he sneakily spoke to one of the bodyguards, who just had his front teeth broken off. “I’m going into the mall with them. Quickly go and tell my cousin to get his men over—good ones. That f*cker. We’ll mop him up real

good once they come out!" "Yes, sir!" The man nodded his head, but he did not leave just yet. Only after Flynn followed Fane and the girls into the mall that he quietly drove back to the Clarks' residence all by himself. After a while, he came before Ken Clark. "Young Master Clark, our young master's men have been beaten up again! "It seems that the young master ran into the same man who had beaten up his bodyguards the other day. Our group couldn't beat him either!' "Now the young master is…" The bodyguard quickly explained the situation to Ken. "The bodyguard of the women from the other day? How skilled is he, to have beaten over twenty of you and not break a sweat afterward?" Ken's expression darkened. After he thought about it, he quickly summoned Dan to his side. He also summoned more than a dozen skilled fighters asides from Dan. They all drove toward the shopping mall. "This looks pretty good. I'll get it!" "Oh, this bag is a little pricey, isn't it? 50 thousand bucks? No problem. Crab Man there says he'll buy, and he's absolutely loaded!" "This bracelet is pretty too. Heh, let's get this one!" In the shopping mall, Tanya and Yvonne spared no expense. They barely shopped for half an hour, yet they had already purchased items totaling over a few million bucks. Flynn, who accompanied them, could do nothing but smile, not daring to utter a single word of protest. 'Go ahead, go ahead. I'll make you pay ten times more once we get out of here! 'Especially you two ladies—I'll properly torture you two for at least a month!' Flynn thought viciously to himself, gritting his teeth.

Chapter 406

The Bane family had quite a few skilled fighters. Two of them, especially, were a bit stronger than the Clarks' strongest fighter, Dan. However, Flynn had not brought them along because he had not expected to be bullied like this in Middle Province. Still, he believed that the men his cousin would bring were enough to completely wipe out that bloody bodyguard. They shopped for about another half an hour. Tanya and Yvonne had amassed items that were worth around 20 million bucks. It made Flynn's heart, ache

uncontrollably. He had thought that the two women could not spend that much money while shopping. After all, they could not carry that many items. Who knew that they would buy luxury watches, earrings, perfumes, and various other knick-knacks. Nevermind that they were expensive, they were small and easy to carry as well. His pallor had taken on a deathly shade by the time they were finished. “Wow, it feels good to spend money!” Tanya stretched her arms above her head. Her figure nearly made Flynn’s nose, bleed. “Right? It’s been so long since I bought this many things. What a great feeling!” Yvonne then stretched her arms too. Her figure was even more womanly, and it nearly made Flynn faint in excitement. No matter how good-looking they were though, they had already spent 20 million bucks. Although Flynn was not short on money, his cash did not grow on trees. That amount made his heart and wallet ache. The 20 million bucks would be nothing if these two beauties were his girlfriends. Not only were they not his women though, but there was also a possibility that the bodyguard had slept with them before. He felt discontent at this, after spending 20 million bucks. “My cousin is probably coming soon. It’s almost been an hour already!” Flynn frowned as he thought about this. He could not help but glance toward the entrance of the shopping mall. “What’s wrong, Young Master Bane? What are you looking at?” Fane gave a mysterious smile. “Are you looking for someone?” Flynn jumped in his seat and quickly waved a dismissal hand. “No way. I noticed a coffee shop on the first floor. Why don’t we go for a few cups of coffee there?” “Heh. Young Master Bane, don’t tell me that you’re pained about losing your money, and so you’re dragging us to drink coffee?” Yvonne chuckled. “After all, you can’t spend that much money while drinking coffee,” she added. “And who knows? One, two hours might just pass by if we stir up a conversation. No? Your train of thought is quite slick!” The corners of Flynn’s mouth immediately twitched. This Yvonne was too cunning, being able to guess his motives in a flash. Furthermore, he truly had a thought like that. If he did not drag out the time and allowed these two beauties to continue walking

around the mall, there was a good chance that he would have to spend even more money. “No way. I'm just worried that the two of you are tired, so I was looking out for a spot to take a break!” Flynn explained hurriedly, “This amount of money is nothing to me. Everything’s good as long as you two ladies are happy!” “Forget it! It’s getting late. Let’s go back first. I don’t want to shop anymore!” Tanya spoke after she thought about it. “Yeah. I'm tired after walking around so much. And we bought so many things already. Let’s go back!” Yvonne echoed. “You-you’re leaving so soon?” Flynn felt a little worried. He had not seen his cousin and his men until now. What if his cousin reaches moments after they left? He would miss out on a golden opportunity then. Besides, he would have spent all that money for nothing. “What’s wrong? You want us to continue shopping? Do you really have that much money?” Tanya stared at Flynn with surprise.

Chapter 407

“Ahem. It’s not that my pockets are bursting, but it’s so hard to be able to accompany such beauties while they’re shopping. And they’re such bombshells too. We can shop for another half an hour!” Although his heart ached for his money, Flynn’s expression was nonchalant. He just wanted to stall them for a while longer. Who knew if he would be able to run into them in the future if they left just like that? He was going to wait until his cousin came and kill that man. He would play around with the girls and finally release the grudge he had been holding. “Never mind. I don’t want to shop. Let’s go!” Yet Tanya and Yvonne did not like taking advantage of others. They did this just to teach the man a lesson. After all, they did not lack money themselves either. After they said that, the trio went toward the first floor and exited the mall. After Flynn went to the entrance, Ken and the others still had not arrived. Anxiety clenched his chest. All his bodyguards were all sitting on the floor. It was evident that they were involved in a brawl from before, and now they looked absolutely dejected. He did not yell for them to leave. It was obvious that the bodyguards did not dare to leave

either. “Why aren’t they here yet?” He watched as Fane and the others walked toward their car. Flynn was in an extreme state of panic now, and he did not know what to do. However, just at this moment, a few cars zoomed over and parked nearby. Ken and Dan and a whole cohort of men exited the cars. Flynn’s heart leaped in delight when he saw that his cousin had brought plenty of men over—good fighters too. He immediately spoke to Tanya and the others, “Stop right there. You little sl*ts. You spent so much money and you’re leaving just like that? Hmph! In your dreams!” Fane instantly turned around. A cold smile graced his lips. It turned out that the b*stard had called in reinforcements. Furthermore, the reinforcements were familiar faces to him. “Oh, you’re quite bold, aren’t you, Young Master Bane? Seems like the men that are walking over are your reinforcements.” Tanya took a look, and could not help but smile as well. “Hah! So long as you know! “My cousin is a second-class aristocrat here—the young master of the Clark family. Hmph, you think you can bully me because I’m a foreigner here? I’m willing to bet that you’ve heard of my cousin. Are you scared now?” Flynn was very confident. He believed that Fane could not take on this group of bodyguards. “Flynn, don’t tell me that the people who bullied you are them?” Ken came over and studied Fane and the others. His expression darkened. Fane was an extremely skilled fighter; even Dan had told everyone to not provoke him. Besides, Fane was the bodyguard of the Drake family now. Miss Tanya and Yvonne were both here. How could he even dare to provoke them? Provoking the Drake family was akin to digging his own grave. Flynn had never seen Ken looking so forlorn before. “That’s right. It’s them,” he said with his usual cockiness. “My bodyguards were beaten up by this punk. He’s pretty skilled, but you brought Dan over. Surely it won’t be a problem. “I want to teach them a good lesson this time. Kill the man. As for the two ladies, I’ll bring them home with me and tame them nicely. I’ll let them know how amazing of a man I am!” Flynn spoke viciously, clearing giving no regards toward Fane and the others. “I think

you'll have to drop it, Flynn!" The corners of Ken's mouth worked violently. His features were contorted into an unreadable expression.

Chapter 408

"Drop it? I can't just drop the matter like that, Ken! "You promised to help me. You know what? I'll let you have one of the ladies!" Flynn's expression turned savage as he spoke while grinning. "Young Master Bane, do not say another word. Do you have a death wish?" Dan's expression was so dark that it looked like storm clouds were obscuring it. He shot a vehement glare toward Flynn. "What? I have a death wish? Heh. What do you mean? No way that you can't beat this punk!" Flynn still was not aware of the situation; he spoke while chuckling. "They're telling you to shut up. Can't you hear that?" Fane did want to exchange nonsense with the other man. He stamped his foot onto the ground and pounced forward. The next second, he was already standing before Flynn. He backhanded the other man. Bam! Flynn flew backward and landed on the ground with a solid crunch! Blood frothed at this mouth, and he lost quite a few teeth. "You–you dare to hit me?" Flynn was so angry that all color drained from his face. "Miss Tanya, my sincere apologies. This is the first time my cousin has been to Middle Province, so he's a little lost around here. I hope that you'll be merciful toward him." Ken's expression darkened. He wiped a sheen of cold sweat away from his forehead and pleaded with Tanya. He was well-aware that Tanya was not easy to negotiate with. She was boldfaced and brazen in her decisions. In the end, Tanya entirely disregarded his begging. "Whatever he said just now was an insult to me and Yvonne," she said, expression stony. "Sharing the ladies between you two? Does he think that I don't understand what that means?" After he said that, she gave a scornful look at Flynn, who lay on the floor, stunned. "Take a good look at the mirror. How can a moth ever match up to a butterfly?" she said. "I've already let it slide with you the other day on the streets. Today, I gave you a second chance by letting you buy me things. I never thought that you would call Ken for reinforcement.

You deserved what you got this time!" "What's going on? Who–who is this? Ken, why are you afraid of her too?" Flynn was confused. He had always assumed that Tanya was just the daughter of a normal businessman. It seemed like she was much more than that now though. "This–this is Miss Tanya Drake, a member of the Drakes! Do you know James Drake? Have you heard the daughter of the richest man in all of Middle Province?" Ken clenched his teeth, nearly spitting blood. His cousin-brother had been extremely unfortunate. Not only did he provoke someone important, but he also provoked the daughter of the Drakes. He was practically signing his own death certificate. He would not be bothered to lift a single finger even if Tanya decided to have him killed. "The Drake family!" Flynn took a sharp breath when he heard that. Why was he so unlucky? There were few in the world whom he could not provoke. He never imagined that he would run into one of them. More importantly, this woman was way too low-profile. She only brought out one bodyguard and did not make a show of her wealth. No one would have been able to guess that she was the daughter of the Drakes. "I was wrong, Miss Tanya. I only did this because I did not know it was you!" Flynn quickly pleaded, "Please spare me! I've bought you so many things just now!" "No excuses. That is a matter of the past. You calling Ken and the others here is an entirely different matter!" Tanya folded her arms across her chest. After she thought about it, she told Fane, "Fane, cripple one of his arms. Make him remember this for life."

Chapter 409

"Yes, ma'am!" Fane nodded his head. After all, that b*stard had not provoked them just once before. Besides, he dared to humiliate Miss Tanya. It would be unreasonable for them to allow him to get away with this. "Don't you dare! I'm telling you now—I'm a Bane, and my family is a second-class aristocrat in Lone City. Our second-class aristocratic family there is way stronger than all of you here. The Big Five of our family are also very powerful! "Your 'strength' merely lies in your wealth and your properties.

Your fighters might not necessarily be stronger than ours though!" Flynn was frightened to the bone when he saw Fane walking over. He had no choice but to grit his teeth and threaten the other man. "Heh. You've got some nerve, actually threatening us instead of begging for your life at this moment!" Fane chuckled and took a step forward. He snatched the other man's arm and tightened his grip around it. "Snap!" Fane's movement looked casual, but the crack of a bone broke out loud and clear. "You…" Never in Flynn's wildest dreams that Fane, a mere bodyguard, would dare to do something like this to him. The agony drained all color from his face, and he fainted right on the spot. Shock also jolted up Ken and Dan's spines. They were stunned beyond comprehension. Fane was so vicious. He had lashed out without any hesitation. More importantly, it did not seem that he had used much strength, yet it was obvious that Flynn's arm was broken—and it was not a clean fracture, but it had been completely shattered. "Miss Tanya, you can see it for yourself, right? There's no way to save this guy's arm. All he can do is amputate it!" Fane turned around and spoke to Tanya. "Good work!" Tanya smiled and told Ken, "Young Master Clark, take your cousin and leave. And tell him to stop preying on ladies on the streets from day till night. I hate perverts like him the most. Consider it a mercy that I didn't have him killed even after he provoked me three times. I'll kill him for certain if he comes around again!" "Yes, Miss Tanya. You're right. I'll take him and leave right now. Don't worry about anything. I'll make sure that your message gets to him!" Although Ken was dissatisfied that Tanya did not spare him some dignity yet he had no choice but to acknowledge his bad luck. Of all the people he could offend, this b*stard just had to offend Tanya Drake. "Let's go! We'll send Young Master Bane to the hospital!" Ken felt very helpless. He threw a piercing look at Fane before leaving. "Seems like Fane is a very skilled fighter!" Ken said to Dan while they were seated in the car after they left. "He's ridiculously strong. It seemed like he didn't use his strength much just now, but that was scary enough. If he used his true strength, it would be so terrifying that I dare not imagine it!" Dan

wiped a sheen of cold sweat away. He thought about it for a while before he added, “Logically speaking, such a skilled fighter can’t just be a normal grunt after five years of being in the military. He must have held some sort of position!” “Yeah. That punk probably wasn’t your run-of-the-mill soldier. He’s probably at least a commander!” Ken frowned as well, thinking for a while before he spoke, “Of course, there’s no way that he’s a general. He would have showed off a long time ago if he held such a position, or if he was a god of war.” “If he was a commander, I’d guess that he was the head commander!” Dan thought about it for a while and said, “Oh, right. I heard that the government pays you about a billion as a retirement bonus if you’re a head commander. Regular commanders only get about 10 million!” “One whole billion!” The corners of Ken’s mouth twitched when he heard this. If Fane really had one billion in his account, did that not mean that he could fork out the money needed for grandfather Taylor’s birthday?

Chapter 410

Soon enough though, Ken shook his head in disbelief. “No way. Why is that punk so low-profile if he indeed has a billion bucks?” “I don’t know. Some people have always been more low-profile—or maybe he just doesn’t want to live too extravagantly!” After Dan thought about it, he explained helplessly, “Young Master Clark, listen to me. Selena Taylor is beautiful, but can’t you find some other woman with the money you have? You can’t provoke Fane no matter what! Understand?” “Shut up! Stop nagging at me like you’re my mother!” Ken exclaimed angrily, extremely dissatisfied. He just could not believe that Fane would be so low-profile if he had so much money. The punk was a good fighter, yes, but it did not mean that he was a commander or something in the army. Besides, so what if he was a commander? He would die anyway if he provoked a man like Ken Clark. Now, he had no reason to be anxious. He believed that the matter of Fane would solve itself once grandfather Taylor’s birthday came around. He

would be kicked out of the Taylors. If there was really no way to kick him out, the bag of medicine with Xena would definitely kill Fane sooner or later. Dan heaved an internal sigh when he saw Ken's anger spiking. He had already said what he needed to say as a subordinate. He had no way around it if Young Master Clark still refused to listen. In the end, Dan flashed a bitter smile and said to Ken. "How are you going to explain this to your aunt? Your cousin came over for a vacation and to have fun with you!" Ken was suddenly struck with a dilemma. "What can we do? We can only tell the truth. He asked for it. My aunt and uncle can probably do nothing but accept it once they find out what happened. After all, he offended the Drakes. Anyway, the Drakes did this, not me. They can't pin the blame on me." Dan nodded his head. "You're right, Young Master. But I suggest that you wait for a few days before telling them about this. I'm worried that they might not be able to take it immediately, seeing their son in a condition like this. Let's see how Young Master Bane's arm turns out first—if there's any treatment that will make it better." Ken nodded his head. "True. We can't believe everything Fane says. What does he know anyway? Of course, some skillful doctors would be able to treat this." "You're really decisive when it comes to a target, aren't you? I didn't see you furrow your brow and Young Master Bane was already…" On the way back to the Drakes' residence, Yvonne could not help but glance backward at Fane. What happened just now had been a little shocking. Fane gave a magnanimous grin instead when he heard that. "You've never experienced what it's like on the battlefield. You've never seen the entire field and mountain strewn with corpses and missing limbs. You've never smelled the stench of blood cloying the air. All of you live behind our shields, leading peaceful lives. On the battlefield, you're dead if you don't kill the enemy first!" "That's true! Who knows how long this war would have lasted if not for people like you!" Yvonne bobbed her head. Her eyes were filled with admiration as she looked at Fane. "Thank you for today, Fane. Why don't you stay back and come with us for dinner?" After Tanya thought about it, she could not help but say to Fane

when they arrived at the Drakes' residence. It was true that if not for Fane, there was no way to predict what would have happened with Young Master Bane not being aware of their identities just now. If she had said that she was a Drake, it was possible that he would not have believed it. "All right. But let me call my wife and tell her about this first!" Fane nodded his head after he thought about it. "Okay. Then we're going in to sort out our things first. We'll rest for a while, take a shower, then we'll go out in the evening!" Tanya nodded her head happily. She went into her villa along with Yvonne. Fane called Selena and told her about this. Only then did he return to his own villa to rest. When the sky dimmed, Tanya and Yvonne came down, dressed in casual denim hot pants and loose-fitting T-shirts. They also wore sunglasses. They came before Fane. "Seriously? You're wearing sunglasses at night?"

Chapter 411

Fane's mouth twisted into a bitter smile when he noticed the sunglasses on their face. "What do you know? Keeping a low profile is what we want, especially our beloved noble-born second daughter of Master Drake, Miss Tanya, is easily spotted by the public when stepping into the outside world!" Yvonne blurted. "Don't worry! Even if you're recognized, you are safe with me!" Fane took off the sunglasses that were hanging on their nose bridge. "You look so much better right now!" He complimented. Their cheeks were suddenly kissed pink upon hearing the compliment that was bestowed upon them. "Hmph! And I thought you didn't know how to appreciate our beauty!" Yvonne felt a little unconvinced as her memory went back to the day when Fane told her that she was not as pretty as his wife. "I am, too, a human being. I naturally know how to appreciate good-looking things!" Fane forced a smile, and continued, "Let's move! Where should we go for dinner? Which grand six-star hotel?" Yvonne and Tanya briefly exchanged glares and chuckled mysteriously. "This time we will bring you to some roadside food stalls, gulping down crayfish and river snails, and bottoming

up to some cold beers, sounds good?" Tanya responded with her lips curled upward. "To lay low, we will only be driving an Audi A6." She added. "Audi A6, to lay low…" Fane was tongue-tied. "I think only 'going on foot' could bring out the definition of keeping a low profile." He voiced out. "Walking? Not a bad idea! It's not far anyway. Let's go for a stroll!" Tanya exclaimed excitedly at Fane's suggestion. "But you will need to send us back later on. We'll be drinking and it won't be safe for the two of us to come back on foot!" "Don't you worry, as your bodyguard, I will ensure your safety and send you back home safe and sound!" Fane lit up a joint, took a long sip as he spoke. "Let's go! I really miss all those roadside food stalls!" Although the surroundings of these food stalls were sometimes unsafe and complicated, the food tasted good and they were cheap! It was suitable for a large crowd gathering. Of course, Fane and his comrades did not overeat and drink. They ordered a little bit of everything and started drinking. The ice-cold draft beer was relatively inexpensive during the summer season! It was best to have a cold beer in summer. At that time, they were not preoccupied with anything—their parents were healthy, they had good food, and so on. They would even peek at some beautiful women who were dressed in refreshing and alluring summer clothes! However, little did they know… "Come on! There is one place that Yvonne and I always pay a visit to. I haven't been there for quite a while!" A big smile appeared on Tanya's face. She strode before them and led the way. "I didn't expect that Miss Tanya would go to such a place to eat! I thought the grand hotel is only on your list!" Fane looked at Tanya and some thoughts popped up in his mind—Tanya was not as squeamish as other rich girls. "Our family wasn't born rich before, okay? I experienced some hard times when I was young!" She rolled her eyes at Fane's remark. It only took a short while for the three of them to arrive at a roadside food stall outside an old community.

Chapter 412

“Oh my! The two belles, it’s been a long time since both of you pay a visit to my stall! It's an honor to have you here!” The bald-looking stall owner approached Tanya and Yvonne with a big smile once he spotted them from afar. The boss looked particularly hearty! “Come, over there, the corner of the compartment is vacant; it’s your favorite spot!” The boss chuckled as he rubbed his baldhead. However, his facial feature changed a little when he noticed the presence of Fane. “Hey, little belle, is this man your boyfriend? He is good-looking, and holds a manly essence.” He asked. “Oh man, look at his stature, firm and solid! Looks like this young man served as a soldier before, right?” He continued. This little belle was quite rich according to the memory that he stored in his brain. Although he was not close with these two beauties, they used to come for dinner along with seven to eight bodyguards by their side. Those bodyguards would wait for them on the side of the road outside the compartment. Moreover, these two belles visited his stall so many times, but they have never brought any man here. This was the first time that the owner saw the two bringing a man over. And it happened that Fane was standing next to Tanya, the gap between them was small, hence the owner naturally thought that Fane was probably Tanya’s boyfriend! Other than that, whenever Tanya and Yvonne came over for a meal, they were very generous to the owner! When the meal only cost two to three hundred bucks, the two would place a few hundred extra bucks on the table before they left! Of course, the owner would want such generous customers to come over and over again! “What nonsense are you talking about? He’s not!” Tanya’s cheeks turned pink immediately, and she shot a deadly glare at the boss. “Give us a few kilos of crayfish and a big portion of river snails!” She placed the order. “Got it! I’ll send some icy-cold beer for y’all as well!” The boss left the table with a big bright smile hanging on his face. “Hmmm. It looks like you two can really drink. The boss even knows how many beers he’d have to send to you!” Fane commented, smiling. The three of them quickly sat down and rested. “Although I can hold my liquor well, I can’t even compare myself with sis Yvonne! She

never gets drunk!” Tanya burst out laughter. “It’s not as exaggerated as you described!” “But, under normal circumstances, I can hold my alcohol longer than several men added up!” Yvonne gave a small smile, facing Fane. “Hehe, try to drink as little as possible, especially if you’re a girl. It’s bad if you’re drunk!” Fane chortled and gave a friendly reminder out of kindness. However, he did not expect Yvonne to be upset about it. “Hmph! It depends on the individual not on gender, okay? A good drinker like me can defeat several men easily! And I still can go for a lot more rounds after they’re all lying on the ground, throwing up like a baby.” Yvonne retorted. “Girls like Tanya, who can only have two or three beers, should be extra careful!” Yvonne held up her words for a moment, and continued, “But there’s nothing Tanya should be afraid of, after all, she always has bodyguards by her side!” “Actually, I don’t prefer to be accompanied by a group of bodyguards whenever I go out, but my dad said for the sake of my safety, bringing bodyguards is a must, even if its only a few of them.” Tanya flashed a wry smile, commented. She turned toward Fane, smiling. “Thanks to Fane’s strength though. Hehe, I can bring only one bodyguard with me when I go out now. Besides, he doesn’t dress like a bodyguard. Thanks to him, we can finally lay low and live an ordinary life in this society!” “Wow, I never expected Miss Tanya longs to live an ordinary life!” Fane was slightly taken aback. “It’s fun and nice to experience ordinary life sometimes. Trust me, sometimes you will be annoyed when you have a group of men following behind you!”

Chapter 413

The corners of Tanya’s mouth slid upward. Her smile was beautiful and adorable! Since the arrival of the two belles, the customers from the other tables could not help but peep over their side. Some of them felt nothing but envious of Fane, for having the opportunity to drink with two charming women. It would be a great pleasure in life to have two beauties drinking with them! Besides, if the two belles were drunk, Fane might even have the

chance to… Just the thought of it made their body cells, scream and soar excitedly! After a while, the boss brought a huge bowl of crayfish and river snails and ordered two waiters to serve them throughout the night. They brought them nine pints of cold draft beer, too! These beer glasses are no ordinary glasses. They were typically larger and can hold almost two and a half bottles of beer. One would be considered strong if he could finish a pint! “C’mon, Handsome Fane, you dare to drink with me?” “I always heard that veterans like you are good and bold drinkers! Is it because of your fit and healthy physique?” Yvonne slowly lifted up her glass of beer and took a gentle sip. “I may not be as skilled as you in fighting, but drinking? I’m afraid that you’re far worse than me!” She teased as she took another sip. Fane flashed her a dry smile. “No, I don’t want to drink with you. Firstly, I’m not a fan of drinking games. Secondly, I am afraid of getting you drunk! It’s too troublesome. I’m not fond of getting myself into trouble too!” Yvonne was agitated upon hearing his words. “Are you kidding me? You get me drunk? Me? A legend who won’t budge in the slightest at thousand glasses of beer? I really don’t know where you get the courage to spew such a comment!” She grunted. “Yes, yes, yes. You are right. I’m a coward to not want to play the drinking game with you” Fane shook his head helplessly. “I would rather you say that I’m a coward than to compete with you in drinking. What if you get drunk and become a drunken stupor?” “Impossible! I’m no drunken moron!” Yvonne felt a flicker of irritation, her heart rate increased. Fane was obviously looking down on her, thinking that she could not hold her liquor well. This triggered her eagerness to win the best drinker title. “No. You have to compete with me today, otherwise, you—you’re a trash! A useless gnat who dares not drink with a woman!” “What the—“ Fane’s facial expression immediately turned icy-cold at her remark. “Yvonne Drake, this is what you’ve asked for. Don’t regret it when you throw up like a madwoman and become a drunken moron later on!” “Don’t you worry! I won’t regret my decision!” Yvonne was slightly pleased when she knew that her little trick to spur him had worked.

“However, I believe that it will be you who would fall down and cry like a baby in a while!” “Yvonne, stop it! We brought him with us without other bodyguards. If you make him drunk, who will protect us when we go back? What if we encounter a pervert on our way back? No one will protect us!” Looking at the situation, uneasiness washed over Tanya. She tried to persuade Yvonne with some logical facts. On the other hand, Fane did not know to laugh or to cry in this situation. It seemed like Tanya did not believe in his alcohol tolerance as well! “Miss Tanya, if I remember correctly, last time you were there to see me gulping down some liquor, and I seemed to be able to hold my liquor well, am I wrong? But now you think that my alcohol tolerance is worse than Yvonne, a woman?” Fane was baffled as though he could not fathom the logic behind. “Fane, you haven’t seen her drinking. She really can drink a lot! Anyway, I haven’t seen her drunk before!” “Think twice! If you get drunk, who’s going to protect us?” Tanya reminded.

Chapter 414

“Don’t worry. I believe in myself! The person who can get me drunk hasn’t been born yet!” Fane responded, with a gentle and soft smile on his face. “Alright then. You guys go ahead and drink first. I will call Harvey and the others to come and pick us up if you get drunk. Although it’s not far from here, it’s better to be careful!” Tanya sighed bitterly after giving some thoughts to the situation. “C’mon, let’s have a toast! And Tanya you just have whatever you like!” Clink! Yvonne raised her beer glass and touched Fane’s, smiling softly. After that, she took out another four hundred bucks and said to the two waiters next to their table, “Come here, these are the tips for two of you, two hundred each! But make sure our glasses are full of beer, you have to fill them up immediately right after we have emptied them, got it? It shouldn’t be a problem, right?” The two waiters before Yvonne did not expect her to be so generous. They could barely conceal their delight that they kept nodding their head right after Yvonne finished her speech. “Not a

problem, miss! We will definitely not let you wait!" One of the waiters then pushed the big beer barrel over and put it next to Yvonne's table, "Now you should rest assured that we will fill up your glasses once you emptied them!" "How smart!" Yvonne gave a thumbs up to the waiters, and then lifting her glass, gulping down the beer. It took only around ten seconds for Yvonne to empty her big pint of beer! "Are you afraid now? Huh?" Yvonne prevailed over Fane before the competition started. She took a crayfish and ate it. "It's better to eat something. Eat some crayfish and river snails! Don't leave your stomach empty before you get drunk!" "Haha!" Fane chuckled, lifted his beer glass and swallowed it. It took around the same time as Yvonne to empty the glass. He could actually finish a glass of beer that contains two and a half bottles of beer in 10 seconds! "Wow, not bad!" Yvonne was amazed by his speed, he took actually about the same time as she did! Yvonne's eyes suddenly brighten up, "This is interesting! It looks like you should be able to hold on for a white, right? However, I really want to see how long you can hold your liquor!" Fane, too, took a crayfish and ate it. "It tastes good, let's continue!" He commented, smiling. Fane hauled up his pint again, gobbling the beer down without hesitation after clicking his glass with Yvonne's. "Jesus Christ! They bottom up so fast!" "Yeah, they're incredibly fast! If I take two of those, I'll be tipsy soon in a while!" There was a table with a few men sitting next to Yvonne's table. They stayed stunned and puzzled at the scene. On the other hand, Yvonne, of course, did not show any weakness. When Fane started to drink, she at the same time lifted up her glass and started to drink. The two put down their glass at the same time! "Carry on!" After Yvonne put down the first glass, she immediately took another and started guzzling it! Fane totally did not expect that Yvonne could hold her liquor well. Not bad! It seemed that he had met a worthy opponent this time round. The two lifted another, drank them, and put them down. "Lovely Yvonne, have something, otherwise, if you get drunk without eating anything, the food would go to waste!" Fane her a smile, gave her a kindly reminder before he took another piece of crayfish

and devoured it. “Heh! I think you’re a little tipsy right now, and that’s why you want to slow it down, am I right?” Yvonne laughed heartily at Fane’s words. Looking at the situation, she predicted that Fane would not be able to hold on any longer. Fane heaved a deep sigh. “Well, I can’t help it if you want to think so!” After the two had eaten for a while, Yvonne could not wait any longer and held up another glass of beer, again. “We have rested for so long, can we just continue?”

Chapter 415

“Haha! If you really can’t wait to get drunk, I can’t help it!” “I didn’t want to get you drunk at first, but since you think I’m a useless booby who can’t drink, I will show you how good am I today!” Fane could hardly contain his laughter. He took another and started drinking, again. This time, he swallowed it down faster than before, within ten seconds, the glass was left empty. “Humph!” Yvonne snorted coldly. She had not forgotten the day when Fane ran into her when she was… The incident from that day was deeply rooted in her heart. Since that punk was so confident today, she had the responsibility to get him completely drunk! She sneered again, inwardly. Humph! Yvonne quickly picked up another glass and bottomed up! Two of them took turns, guzzling the beers. In a blink of an eye, each of them had consumed five or six glasses “Oh my…that’s amazing!” “Yeah! Unbelievable!” At this moment, several people from the crowd started cheering and applauding for them. It was their first time seeing someone with such incredible alcohol tolerance. The crowd looked at both of them, eyes filled with admiration. “Why isn’t this punk drunk yet? If it’s for anyone else, they would have long become drunken morons!” Yvonne furrowed, and then finally realized that the guy before him was indeed not an ordinary man. She was slightly surprised at his ability to drink. Furthermore, after swallowing so much beer, she could actually feel dizziness in her head. Perhaps, she had drunk the beer too fast. “Oh my. Both of you, unbelievable!” Tanya, looking at them from aside, was in

complete perplexity. She had not even finished a glass before her, and the two had already had six glasses each! The most important thing was there was no winner yet! “Boss, another 2.5 kilograms of lobsters, please!” At this point, five or six local thugs came to the stall, found an empty table, and sat down. Of course, their attention was soon directed to Yvonne and Fane’s Table. Amazement and shock thundered down on the crowd. They had taken another five more glasses! “Oh my, they just bottomed up the eleventh glass now! It’s really unimaginable!” “Yeah, this is far beyond my belief! It’s my first time seeing someone who can drink so much!” The people around them murmured, praising both Fane and Yvonne. “Wow, that pair is really amazing. They have drunk so much!” One of the thugs blurted with so much emotion in him. The other guy with earrings, on the other hand, sneered in an icy cold tone, “Do we have to guess about it? That man definitely wants to get that woman drunk and take her to the hotel. I’ve seen way too many times this kind of incident.” “What a lucky man! Both women are equally hot and good-looking!” Another thug with extra flesh and fat on his body chimed in. “I would feel better if this man is actually rich and accompanied by two belles. It will make sense to me! But the thing is, this f*cker bring these two top-notch looking girls to such a place to have dinner! How is it possible to obtain the fondness of these two women by bringing them to such a place? It’s unfair!” Just when everyone’s eyes were fixating at Fane’s table, a man who was drinking at another table stood up and went to the toilet. When the man came back from the toilet, he accidentally slipped and fell to the ground, and his left hand touched the thug with earrings. “B*stard, are you digging your own grave? How dare you to touch our boss!” “That’s right! The cloth that you’ve just landed your hand on was bought a few days ago! It costs more than a thousand! You b*stard!” The other two thugs barked, simmering with anger.

Chapter 416

“I… I can still drink!” Yvonne burped. Her cheeks were kissed pink, her speech a little slurred. Each of them had taken in 12 glasses of beer at this point, and that was equivalent to around 30 bottles of beer per person! Fear and anxiety had silenced the crowd. They were tongue-tied at this state. “Y—Yvonne, you...you look drunk! Stop drinking. Look at Fane; he’s still sober. Just give up, you’re not his opponent!” It was obvious to Tanya that Yvonne could not hold it any longer, yet her stubbornness and pride pushed her on. She wanted nothing more than to see Fane falling onto the ground before her. “I’m not drunk. I can still drink! I think Fane’s the one who can’t hold it in anymore, right?” Cue the drunken giggle from Yvonne. “He’s faking his condition right now!” Yvonne babbled as she propped her head with one palm. She looked like she would fall at any moment. “Pardon me, gentleman. My apologies, I didn’t mean to touch you!” Not far away from Fane’s table, an apologetic voice interrupted the atmosphere. Slap! The sound of a powerful slap echoed in the air. “F*cker! Do you know how much my clothes cost? Do you think ‘sorry’ will do the magic?” A thug with earrings stood up, swung his arm, and slapped a man square in the face. The unfortunate guy was wearing his working clothes with a delivery company logo stamped on it. “You’re just a delivery f*cker. How dare you touch me!” roared the hoodlum. “How could you slap someone? He didn’t mean to touch you. Plus, the ground is too slippery! He wasn’t even hurting you; it was merely a light push!” A plainly dressed woman ran over and pulled the beaten man aside. She met the thug in a staredown. “You can’t just beat someone up, even if he made your clothes dirty. We’ll pay for your clothes!” The thug merely scoffed. “Pay for it? How are you going to pay? With your body?” The man with earrings smiled wickedly as he leered at the woman before him. This woman also donned the Bellezza Consegna uniform with the company logo on it. It seemed like the two of them were colleagues. The woman was short, but her figure was very well proportioned. Not only did she have lascivious measurements, but the tightening of her shirt by the chest area was nothing but suggestive. The thug’s eyes never left her chest

as he swallowed hard. He happened to be fond of this type of figure. On the other hand, the woman's delicate and feminine disposition gave off a pure and innocent aura. Her presence unknowingly made others sympathize with her. "Shameless b*stard!" The woman burned with so much anger that she gritted her teeth, tightly. Smack! Faster than anyone could think, the thug with earrings gave her a loud and soundly slap. "Who are you to criticize me? You have some guts, don't you? Haven't you heard of my name and the Eagle Clan?" "That's right! Brother Tempest is with the Eagle Clan. Do you think we're your normal local thug? We have power and authority behind us!" "Hmph! How dare you be rampant when you've offended Brother Tempest!" The other thugs stood up and crossed their arms across their chests. Their eyes swept the scene, waiting for a daring soul to come up. "You…" The delivery man's entire being trembled with rage, but he knew he could not afford to offend the other party. He could only swallow his frustration as he spoke, "One thousand bucks, right? I'll pay for it." Fane, who was drinking on the other side of the stall, instantly recognized the voice. Was not this voice belonging to a good friend of his? His face immediately turned dark and his fists clenched. He was the closest to this man back when he worked as a delivery man. The two often hang out and drink together. It struck Fane that after five years, this good friend was still working as a delivery man. It seemed as though these two must have just gotten off work and were about to have their dinner.

Chapter 417

"You… What's wrong with you?" Tanya wanted to stand up and take care of the matter. She loathed bullying the weak, and this thug even went as far as hitting someone without negotiating or even talking it out. However, before she could step up, she noticed Fane's tightly clenched fists. Not knowing why, she felt a surge of happiness within her. Perhaps it was because she did not expect Fane to share a trait similar to hers—a distaste for injustice. "Heh! Do you think one thousand is enough?" "My clothes do

cost a thousand bucks, that's right! But, how about the medical cost of hitting me just now? And also the cost of shaving ten years off of my life? I'm mentally traumatized!" Brother Tempest wore an evil smirk on his face as he continued, "I don't want you to pay for my clothes. I want the exact same clothes! The one I am wearing, before you ruined it! Can you do it?" "You—you all, don't go too far! We've apologized to you. Besides, you've hurt him!" The woman clasped her hands over her mouth as tears shimmered in her eyes. Her eyes told everything; hurt and grief. "I hit him because he provoked me first, and because his face deserved my palm. That's a different thing." Brother Tempest merely smirked as he spoke. "Wifey, it's my fault. I didn't expect the floor to be so slippery, so I fell down!" The delivery man's face contorted. He had nothing in his mind to clear up the mess he was in. This was his first time to meet such an unreasonable rogue. He was utterly floored. "Oh, husband and wife. Interesting…" Brother Tempest flashed a lopsided grin and continued, "Okay, let's not make the situation more difficult. How about you give a hundred thousand, and I'll let the two of you leave. Otherwise…" "Isn't this too much?" "Right! He didn't do it on purpose. Besides, he only patted you lightly. You didn't even shed a single strand of hair! Do you really want it that way?" "Yeah! He apologized, and the clothes aren't dirty at all! This man is utterly unreasonable, and he's even beating up the husband!" "Sigh! The couple both work as delivery people. It's already hard for a normal family to maintain their daily life, and now this thug asks for one hundred thousand? How can they fork it out?" "This guy is obviously threatening the couple!" The crowd at the scene felt injustice for the couple and began to criticize the thugs. "What does it matter to all these f*ckers! Are you all wishing for death? Don't you recognize the Eagle Clan?" Brother Tempest shot the crowd a deadly stare. His eyes were so terrifying that the crowd was hushed in an instant, and silence overtook the atmosphere. The boss of this food stall was annoyed by the incident as well, but he knew how terrifying the Eagle Clan was. If he stepped up for the couple and went against the Eagle

Clan, he was afraid that his food stalls would be closed forever. Therefore, he could only sympathize with the couple in silence and stand down. “Sir, I was wrong! It’s all my fault! Could you please forgive us? I’ll give you two thousand, okay? I really don’t have a hundred thousand. There are old people and children in my family that I need to provide for and take care of. Please!” “Please, Sir, please! I beg you!” The delivery man looked at Brother Tempest and pleaded with tears brimming in his eyes. “Two thousand? I said one hundred thousand, and you actually offered two thousand? Are you a f*cking comedian? You won’t even bargain that much when buying clothes in the store, right?” Brother Tempest sneered before continuing, “Well, there’s another way to settle this, and it doesn’t involve money.” His eyes were fixated at the wife. “Really? Thank you, Sir! Thank you so much!” The heavy rock in the unfortunate man’s heart was lifted away. His mood lightened. “Hehe! Don’t thank me yet. I haven’t told you what my conditions are!” Brother Tempest chortled. “You’ll be going home on your own tonight and you’ll lend your wife for a night. She’ll drink with all the brothers tonight, and we’ll return her to you tomorrow morning.”

Chapter 418

The color was drained out of the delivery man’s face when he heard Brother Tempest’s suggestion. He stumbled a few steps backward and stood frozen. He was no idiot; he could tell what these thugs were after. Letting them keep his wife for a night was the same as pushing his wife to a brothel! Nonetheless, a hundred thousand for him was also a huge sum of money. He would not be able to fork it out, even if he was to sell everything he had. “You…” The woman was so angry that her eyes glowed red, but at the same time, she found herself without any other option. She had also heard that there were several clans; all of them intimidating. This Eagle Clan was way more overbearing and domineering than the Dragon God Clan. Ordinary citizens like them were afraid of offending these clans. “My good Sir, please, I beg you. There’s nothing good about my wife. She’s plain-looking!

Besides, we have a five-month-old child, waiting for my wife to go back and breastfeed him. Please, let us go, I beg you! I'll give you two thousand. That's all I have on me now…" The husband grabbed the thug's sleeve as he profusely pleaded. "Let go of my clothes! You're a food delivery man, and God knows how much germs and bacteria are on your hands. Touch my clothes again, and I'll kill you!" Brother Tempest growled as he looked at the delivery man's hand on his clothes. The delivery man loosened his grip immediately, but no one would expect his next action—he knelt on the ground and started pleading again. "Please, Sir... Please, I beg you! You're a good man!" "So much nonsense! Don't play your pity card! I don't buy it!" Brother Tempest kicked the delivery man at his stomach that sent him a few steps back. "Does it matter how old your kid is to me?" he sneered. "You have two choices: Give me one hundred thousand and you two can leave, or leave your wife with us. Pick!" "He won't choose!" A cold and disdainful deep voice shot through the space at this moment. Fane and Tanya slowly came to view soon after, and the pair approached the thug in tandem. "Who the heck are you?" Brother Tempest's expression hardened as he turned around, annoyance written across his face. He was momentarily stunned at what he saw before his expression changed. "Oh, it's you," he spoke. "What's the matter? Had too many drinks that you're feeling tipsy right now, huh? What now? Alcohol gave you the courage to step up for this couple?" "Hehe! Brother Tempest, the two women beside this punk are so good-looking. We'd strike the jackpot if he's genuinely here to help this couple out. We could take these two women together with this man's wife later!" A plump thick thug had a lopsided smirk on his face. "Hehe... It's not a bad idea. I didn't think about it at first, but since this punk wants to defend the couple, he can't blame me for taking his women away, right?" Brother Tempest laughed out loud as well. Fane, on the other hand, did not bother to pay attention to the other party. He turned to the man who was on his knees and said, "Tiger, get up! You do have other choices tonight!" Tiger had seen Fane before this whole fiasco even started. He felt as though this

man looked a little familiar, but he just could not put a finger on it. Now that he heard his voice, his eyes went round and his jaw dropped. “F—Fane? Is that you?” “Yes, my friend. I’ve returned from the military.” Fane nodded and chucked. “I never thought you’d be married and have a kid in these five years! Five years… How time flies!” “Tiger, is… Is this the man that you’ve told me before? Your former colleague, your good brother, Fane?” The woman's eyes widened as she looked at Fane in surprise. She had heard from Tiger that Fane had gone for the military five years ago and had not come back since then. They were afraid that Fane might have died on the battlefield as he sacrificed his life for the country. Yet, here he was. Never did it cross their minds that Fane was alive and well.

Chapter 419

Regardless, Fane’s return did not matter. He was just a soldier, returned from the army. He had no means of defeating these people on his own, let alone offending the Eagle Clan. “Brother Fane, I… I’m sorry that you have to see I’m a mess right now. Our first meeting is you seeing me kneeling before others!” Tiger bent and lowered his head as though life had not been merciful on him. He was no longer the one who drank with Fane a few years ago; the man with the dream of opening and owning a restaurant. The reality of life had smoothed his edges. Life had forced him to bend his body, and he became inferior to reality. “Get up!” Grief pierced through Fane’s heart like thousands of needles. “Tiger, if you’re still a man, you shouldn’t kneel to this group of rubbish! Get up, now! I, Fane Woods, as your big brother, command you to get up! Now!” “But…” Tiger lifted his head and looked at Fane with pleading eyes. “Brother Fane, please leave. I don’t want to drag you into this! I’ll handle it! Please leave!” “You? What can you do? Don’t pretend to be tough! Get up! Get on your feet now!” Fane gritted his teeth as he balled his fists tightly. He knew stubbornness was the only thing holding Tiger up when he said he could handle it. If Tiger genuinely had a solution, he would not have to get on his knee in front of these b*stards.

“Tiger, one last time, get up! Trust your dearest big brother!” This time, it was Tiger’s wife who went forward and pulled him up forcibly. She truly believed that since Fane had pushed Tiger to get back up, surely he must have had some way to handle this situation. Besides, Fane was a veteran. It was not easy at all to be able to stay on the battlefield for five years and survive! Although she did not know where Fane's courage was coming from, she at least knew that made him brave enough to go against the Eagle Clan. “Oh, so you know each other!” Brother Tempest laughed wickedly. He then waved his hand to his underlings who were standing outside the food stall. The underlings approached Fane slowly, malicious grins on their faces as they did. “Hmph! Looks like you’re his big brother.” The thug bellowed before he continued, “Not bad! In that case, are you planning to help him out? Are you going to pay up 100 thousand for him?” “But, I’ll have to apologize in advance. The issue can no longer be solved with that amount anymore!” “You’ve offended me once again, so the cost will be at least 200 thousand bucks! If you can’t take it out, your little brother’s woman and the two women of yours will all be coming with us tonight!” Brother Tempest looked at Fane with half-lidded eyes, and a huge evil grin was plastered on his face. His eyes were flooded with corrupted and perverted intentions. “So, you were a soldier, huh? Did you truly think that after five years as a soldier, you could play a superhero here? You’re too naive. Wake up! This is Middle Province!” Tanya’s face reddened when she heard their exchange, dumbfounded in silence. Once again, she and Yvonne were mistaken as Fane’s women. Nonetheless, Fane did not bother to explain their relationships with such a bunch of garbage. The corners of his mouth quirked up, and it formed a tight smile. “People? I’ll be taking them. Money? Nothing for you.” “Motherf*cker!” Brother Tempest snapped his fingers. “My fellow brothers, what are you waiting for? Since the man has asked for a good beating, let’s give him that!” he barked, blatant annoyance detected in his tone. “I never thought that there’d be so much rubbish in the world. Since you’re so fond of doing evil deeds, then there’s no need for

you to continue living in this world!" Fane's eyes were fixated on the thugs that stood before him. His eyes were cold and terrifying, as though he was looking at his prey. His body emitted a combative and truculent aura that sent chills to the crowd.

Chapter 420

"How arrogant!" Three of the thugs went forward and surrounded Fane in an instant. They balled their fists and charged towards Fane. Boom! Bang! Pow! Fane threw his punches at lightning speed that one's eyes could not even keep up. The three thugs—who rushed toward Fane—were punched square in the face, and they fell to the ground without even touching a single strand of Fane's hair. The blood oozed from their gums and over their swollen lips. With sheer terror showing in their eyes, they died. "This…" Brother Tempest was initially standing aside haughtily with his arms crossed at his chest, ready to witness a bloodbath. Never did he expect that all his three underlings would die in the next second! Too caught up in the moment, he gulped audibly. "W—What?!" Many onlookers were shocked at the outcome as well. "He murdered them... Oh my f*cking god! How dare he kill the people from the Eagle clan?" "Yes, this young man is something else. Quite a bold man, he is!" "But this is definitely working. The thugs from the Eagle clan were such bullies, and this young man is truly a skilled veteran! This combat skill of his is terrifying, and he managed to kill three people in just a few seconds!" Not long after, the crowd started commenting about the situation energetically. Several people even stumbled back a few steps as the scene had frightened them. "You punk. I—no—we're from the Eagle Clan. How dare you kill our people? Let me tell you: Do you know how many people are there in the Eagle Clan? Thousands! How are you going to fight us?" Brother Tempest was also startled by Fane at first, but his confidence immediately rushed back when he was reminded of the numbers behind him. "Brother Fane, why did you kill them when you can just teach them a lesson? You killed them; that means you'll be going

against the Eagle Clan!" Tiger's wife was preoccupied. This time, Fane had successfully caused trouble. The Eagle Clan was exceptionally powerful. There were so many witnesses here, and it would be easy for the other party to know Fane was the killer. "Whoever lays his hand on my brother deserves to die!" Fane smiled coldly and turned his head to face the so-called Brother Tempest. "Kneel before my brother and apologize to him! Do you hear me?" "This…" Brother Tempest's expression began to dim, but when he glanced at the corpses on the ground, he could only grit his teeth and knelt before Tiger. "S—Sorry, I—I was wrong!" Rage churned inside of Brother Tempest and his face bitter, but to walk out of this place alive, he had to apologize to Tiger. "Forget it. Let's just forget about what happened today!" Tiger was terror-stricken. He did not know what to do, and his voice was even trembling when he spoke. "I am the killer. Me, Fane Woods. I know you're upset about it, so I'm going to give you the opportunity to avenge them. Tomorrow, eight at night, come meet me at the small forest outside the city. I'll show up on time. You can bring as many people as you please, and we'll conclude today's issue at that time. How about that?" "It's a deal, kid! The words are from your mouth!" As soon as Brother Tempest heard Fane's suggestion, he immediately shot up from the ground. With an imposing manner, he barked, "You suggested it yourself! Don't ever regret it when the time comes!" "Get out of here!" Fane cast the other party one last deadly stare, his eyes full of disdain.

Chapter 421

Brother Tempest merely scoffed. "I'll be seeing you tomorrow," he spoke before leaving the scene. "How much is the total, Boss?" Yvonne merely gave a small smile before taking out about 8 thousand bucks and placed it on the table. "This includes our meal and taking care of the three corpses," she spoke. "Shouldn't be a problem, right?" "No, no problem at all. Of course there'd be no problem!" The boss immediately ran out while cackling out loud before saying, "F*ck. Brother Tempest and his men are no good

people; I've been patient with them for quite some time. These people are used to bullying the weak, and the people weren't bold enough to stand up to them. Not to mention, they never once paid for anything when they ate here. They kept telling me that they owe me for the time being and their debt has snowballed to several thousand bucks now. They've never paid once." "Yeah, we always wanted these people dead. Thank you, kind sir!" "Yeah! That veteran sure is something. He took care of them without breaking a sweat!" Praises began to gush from the spectators as they hailed Fane. It was then when an old man took two steps forward toward Fane. "Buddy, take my advice and leave Middle Province as soon as possible," advised the old man. "Don't attend the fight. They have strength in numbers, and there are plenty of powerhouses in the Eagle Clan. Only by escaping here and leaving as far as possible will you be able to live." Fane merely chuckled. He did not seem alarmed in the slightest. "Don't you worry, Grandpa. As long as I'm here, those people will never see the light of day!" "Sigh, Brother Fane, if it wasn't for me, you wouldn't have crossed those people from the Eagle Clan. What are you going to do? Are you actually going to meet them for the fight tomorrow?" Tiger sighed, the guilt overwhelming him at that instant. "Don't worry. It's nothing I haven't faced before." After some thought, Fane said, "It's getting late now, so you should hurry home now. I have to head home, too. Tell me where you live and I'll visit you whenever I'm free. We can catch up over some drinks someday." "Alright…" Tiger nodded before he told Fane his address, turning to look back every once a while at him. He left with his wife in complete guilt. "Great!" Yvonne chirped and clapped the moment Tiger and his wife were out of sight. "Seems like everything turned out well, though it appears that you've crossed paths with some powerhouses." Fane cracked a bitter smile. It was never his intention to get involved in a mess he did not want, but for his friend's sake, he had to step in. He regretted nothing. Even if he had another chance to do things differently, he would choose to do the same. "The Eagle Clan is quite a prominent clan, though. However, that Brother Tempest guy

doesn’t seem like any major members within the clan, so don’t you guys worry. He won’t be able to get more than a dozen men here!” Tanya smiled and said, “Kill those men when the time comes. As long as it’s not anyone important, the Eagle Clan would never investigate this matter.” Fane was stunned for a moment. “Really?” Fane spoke before he added, “My, it seems you understand the Eagle Clan quite well.” “More or less, I suppose. The Eagle Clan has about roughly a thousand members. Their strength lies in their numbers, though.” “Another thing to note would be their pocket clans underneath them. They have a few hundred of those, and those minor clans are all under the control of the main clan.” “Those minor clans would boast with the name of the Eagle Clan when they roam or stir up trouble. In reality, however, they’re not exactly considered important members of the Eagle Clan. These minor clans are all beneath them,” Tanya explained. “More than 10 members from these minor clans die each day, but the Eagle Clan don’t seem bothered.” The moment Tanya finished, she turned to look at Yvonne. “Oh no,” she spoke anxiously, “Yvonne is genuinely drunk!”

Chapter 422

Fane and Tanya quickly went to Yvonne’s side. Yvonne was slumped over on the table at this moment, soundly asleep. “So that’s why she was silent for the longest time; she’s asleep. Now what are we going to do? We didn’t drive out here.” Tanya glanced at Fane before she added, “You’ll have to carry her back.” “Well, that’s not appropriate, right?” Fane gave Yvonne a once-over. The awkwardness he felt was so strong that it showed on his face. Yvonne’s breasts were rather large, and it was just his bad luck that she wore a rather skimpy skirt. Most of her thighs were exposed. If he was to carry her back, it would be impossible for him to not touch her body… The most important thing was, although Yvonne was sexy and dressed boldly, he could tell Yvonne was not that innocent of a woman. Fane assumed she had not exactly let go of the incident from back then. Otherwise, she would never have tried so desperately to outdrink him and

get him drunk. “What isn’t appropriate? You’re not expecting me to carry her back, are you?” Tanya rolled her eyes at Fane. “It’s getting late. Don’t you want to get home early?” she spoke. Left without a choice, Fane could only laugh in defeat before pulling Yvonne to her feet effortlessly. He then squatted down and carried Yvonne on his back. She slumped over onto Fane’s back while Fane hugged both her legs. This made him feel very conflicted. He had never carried Selena to this day. He never expected that the first woman he would carry on his back would be Yvonne. If he had known this would be the outcome for today, he would have driven here earlier. He blamed himself for suggesting that they walked here as he thought the distance was not too far. Tanya, who was walking next to them, chuckled mischievously when she noticed Fane’s look of mild distress. “You seem flustered and embarrassed. Are you?” Upon noticing Fane’s silence while maintaining a cold expression, she added, “Come on now, you have such a helpless look on your face. Had it been any other man, they would’ve been ecstatic to be able to carry such a beautiful woman on their back. Oh man, those legs… those breasts…” Cue the fake coughs from Tanya. “You know. Aren’t you supposed to feel extremely happy?” “I haven’t even carried my wife yet. I didn’t expect…” Fane felt guilty. He felt like he had wronged Selena. Tanya had nearly passed out from his comment as she said, “No way, right. Your child is already so old now, and you…” As she spoke, she suddenly realized something before continuing, “I almost forgot that you enlisted to fight on Ivan’s behalf back then. You became a soldier on the very next day of your marriage. That journey took five years, and you had just returned. Your relationship with your wife isn’t all that deep then…” Something then dawned on her. “If that’s the case, would your wife stop you from sleeping with her, from touching her?” To cover his embarrassment, he rolled his eyes at her. “You little brat, how could you be this curious?” he dismissed her. “I think you should get yourself a boyfriend to keep you under control! You live like a little child. Even when you walk, you’d hop around like a child!” Tanya made an ugly face at Fane before

walking in front of Fane with both arms behind her back while she began to hop around. She looked like a spoiled little princess. “Hmph! There’s nothing wrong with it,” she sassily countered. “This way, I’d live free and happy. How nice is that? I can’t always live like you, keeping such a bitter look on your face all day!” As they were about to cross a zebra crossing at this moment, a car unexpectedly ran a red light and was speeding toward them. “Look out!” Fane was like a deer caught in headlights. By instinct, he swiftly pulled Tanya to him.

Chapter 423

“Not good!” Instantly realizing Yvonne was still on his back, he quickly stretched out to hold onto Yvonne. As Yvonne was already light on her feet in her drunken state, the force of Fane’s tug made her stumble and fell onto him. Fane was wedged between two women. As he lost his balance, he stumbled and fell onto Tanya since her weight had dragged him down with her. She had pulled Fane’s arm in fright and fear, thus the force of her tug pulled him down with her. All of that happened in an instant. His only intention was to keep both women from harm, yet Fane was sandwiched between both Tanya and Yvonne in the end. “Ugh!” Tanya never expected the instant she fell, and by pulling Fane toward her, their lips would meet. Time had seemingly stopped moving at that instant as Fane’s weight pinned her down. Her blush seared through her face as her breathing became labored. “Nghh…” Utterly speechless, he immediately raised his head and was about to get up. He had forgotten that an extra weight—Yvonne—was pushing him down, and he fell back once more. Fane felt extremely flustered. As he had just parted his lips from Tanya, Yvonne who had fallen on top of him, pushed their lips together again. Of course, Tanya knew it was all an accident, but that happened to be her first kiss. It was, indeed... Hundreds of thoughts went rampant in her mind. This was way too much of a coincidence, and the entire situation was way too embarrassing. “Oh my god, I actually kissed a married man. His child is already four… I…” Tanya

felt like coughing up blood. Although Tanya had so much respect for her bodyguard, she never had any ulterior intentions toward him. This entire situation was far too cruel for her. Fane was stunned for a second before stumbling his way from them. He then helped Tanya up and carried Yvonne on his back again. “I assume you know that was an accident earlier. I didn’t mean to do that. You wouldn’t call me a creep, right?” Embarrassment swept over Fane as he hoisted Yvonne to his back once more, unable to meet Tanya’s eyes. Tanya was still a young lady, and he actually… “Yeah, I know that you won’t intentionally do that. Don’t you worry, I won’t call you a creep.” Tanya’s blush never left her face, and her flustered expression remained unchanged. Her cheeks still felt warm. “Yeah, that car actually ran a red light earlier. What a horrible driver!” Flustered, Fane quipped up a conversation as he changed the topic skillfully. In truth, he was breaking out with cold sweat. He would be lying if he said both Tanya and Yvonne did not smell sweet at the slightest, but his conscience reminded him that he already had a wife, so he should not have any inappropriate thoughts. “Yeah, what a horrible driver!” Tanya stomped her feet. She then looked at Fane as she mustered a reply, “Thank God you pulled me out of the way earlier. Otherwise, I would’ve been run over earlier. Still...could you not tell anyone about what happened earlier? It’s too embarrassing.” “Don’t worry, I’d take it to my grave.” Fane let out a sigh of relief. Fortunately for him, Tanya was still a reasonable woman. She would not throw a fit at him or resent him over something they both had no control over.

Chapter 424

“You wouldn’t want me to carry her back to the room as well, right?” Fane frowned when he realized they were approaching the Drake family’s residence entrance. He felt somewhat abashed. After all, it would embarrass him to no end if any of the bodyguards on patrol, or even the ones standing guard at the door, spotted him. “Nonsense. Are you expecting me to carry her, then? Besides, she’s already on your back. so hurry up and carry her to

the bed." Tanya rolled her eyes at Fane. She could not shake off the awkward feeling she was experiencing after Fane had kissed it. Twice, even. "Hold on a second." Noticing something, she immediately took out a piece of wet napkin. "Come, let me help wipe your mouth." She gently wiped Fane's mouth as she spoke. "Oh my god... There's lipstick stain on it," she fretted. "If anyone were to notice this, nothing we say can paint us as innocent." Fane cringed as he heard that statement, and he thanked his lucky stars that Tanya noticed such a small detail. Otherwise, if he had headed home and Selena noticed it instead, how on Earth was he going to explain to her? Not to mention, he had an unreasonable mother-in-law at home. Nevermind her daughter; would his mother-in-law not have forced Fane to divorce her daughter immediately? "Oh, thank goodness you noticed that." As he stared at Tanya who was carefully wiping his lips for him, embarrassment crept in him once more. He wanted nothing more than to hide away in a crack somewhere. His entire face had a pink tint to it. "All done!" Tanya turned around and forced herself to stay calm, even though her heart was pounding. This was her first time doing something so intimate. She was slowly becoming a nervous wreck. Moreover, Fane was undeniably handsome. His face looked perfectly detailed as it screamed masculinity. This dashing face made her nervous in an instant. However, she did not help Yvonne to wipe away her lipstick while she was being carried on Fane's back because it would be very inconvenient to do so. The trio finally arrived at the main entrance at last. When the few bodyguards noticed Fane and Tanya, they frantically greeted her. When they raised their heads once more, however, all of them wore the look of surprise on their faces when they looked at Fane. One of them was so shocked that he was literally wide-eyed. His eyeballs nearly popped off of his sockets. Yvonne was a well-known beauty, and the main attraction was how sexy and feminine she looked. Her body was, for a lack of a better term, otherworldly! The most important point was that this woman was incredibly protective of herself. Plenty of young masters who failed to pursue Tanya due to her incredibly high status

would then move on to pursue Yvonne instead. However, no matter what gifts were given or how much they expressed their love, Yvonne would never agree to their advances. She would also never enter a bar or any places similar to one. Only Tanya could drag her out for a karaoke session in any normal circumstances. Yet, here they were: Fane was carrying Yvonne at his back. This scene alone made everyone jealous. Fane lowered his head and strode in. He wanted nothing more than to avoid the staring gazes of these people as soon as possible. He felt skittish, but he willed himself to calm down. They should know he was the fearless Supreme Warrior, even when facing enemies by tens of thousands. Those enemy forces would tremble at the sheer mention of the Supreme Warrior. The allies, however, would be more motivated to fight in battle at the sheer mention of the Supreme Warrior! Such a powerful figure actually felt considerably nervous and bashful at this moment. The other veterans might be extremely shocked and surprised if they heard about it. “Miss Tanya! Brother Fane!” Just when Fane thought he could have a breather, he heard Kyle’s rough and rowdy voice from behind. “Kyle, Harvey, what are you guys doing here?” Tanya turned around and asked, a bashful smile on her face. “Oh, we just got back from having a few drinks outside!”

Chapter 425

Kyle laughed as he stared at the woman on his back. He cheekily gave Fane a thumbs-up. “You sure are something, Boss,” he spoke nonchalantly. “Other common folk would carry their beauties back in their arms and you, on the other hand, gave a beautiful woman a piggyback ride!” Fane felt overwhelmed internally as he shot Kyle a menacing glare. “What nonsense are you spouting? You’re really asking for a beatdown, aren’t you?” he spluttered. “Miss Yvonne is drunk, and I’m only carrying her back!” Harvey chuckled since Fane was worshipped as every Drake bodyguard’s idol. All of them highly respected him. Fane should know that not even the Three Major Guardians of the Drake family had such treatment. “Hurry up and

scram! I, Fane, is an honorable man, so why should I feel guilty about anything anyway?" Fane glared at everyone before turning around and entering the mansion with Yvonne on his back. Tanya burst into laughter as she followed Fane closely behind. "Boss sure is something, alright. He got Miss Yvonne drunk!" "Yeah. When about seven to eight of us went out for a meal previously, we ran into Miss Yvonne, and she outdrank us all." "Wow. Our boss sure is worthy of being our boss. This time, he avenged us!" A few bodyguards started chattering among themselves the second Fane was out of earshot. "Wow… Sharing a meal with two beautiful women. When will I get such treatment?" Harvey sighed as he walked forward. "You? Your next life, perhaps!" Kyle replied before bursting into a fit of giggles. "Wow, you're incredible. Not a single sweat from your body after carrying her for such a long distance. You don't even seem tired!" Tanya exclaimed as she watched Fane place Yvonne on the bed before taking off her shoes. "This weight is nothing to actual powerhouses. Would you believe me if I tell you that even with two Yvonnes on my back, I wouldn't even break a sweat?" Fane spoke with a calm smile. He did not expect Tanya would roll her eyes at him. "You sure are greedy," she muttered. "Having one beautiful woman on your back isn't enough for you, and you want two instead?" Fane was speechless. "Alright, now. It's getting late, and I need to head home." Fane was about to turn around and leave after taking a look at his watch. "Hey, no way. You'd leave just like that? Won't you carry her into the washroom to bathe her since the weather was so hot? I can't possibly move her, you know!" Tanya called out to him just as he took a few steps forward. Fane was exasperated once more. "I'm a man, alright?" he spoke in agitation. "If you can't move her, you can have a few of your maids to move her for you, you know?" "I was just messing with you. You should see how terrified you looked." Tanya then rolled her eyes at Fane before adding, "You're no fun! If you were any other men, they'd drool over themselves after hearing that." Fane was stunned for a second before shaking his head. He turned around and walked downstairs.

Chapter 426

Fane drove his car and soon reached home. "You're back so late, and you stink of alcohol. How much did you drink with Tanya?" Selena had already taken her bath. She was lying on the bed while fiddling with her phone. She placed her phone away and got up from the bed when she saw Fane return. "I don't even want to talk about it. That Yvonne, Tanya's cousin, is an alcohol fiend. She forced me to drink with her." Fane laughed drily. He dug through his closet for his pajamas and prepared to go to bed. Selena went behind him and sniffed. "That can't be. Why do I smell perfume on your body? Didn't you say that you weren't together with that rich lady? Didn't you say that the rich lady is a Goddess of War and your friend?" Selena rambled. "Hmph! I think that you didn't go drink with Miss Drake, but instead went to look for that rich lady!" Fane was rather surprised at how Selena's nose was sensitive enough to discern the scent of perfume on him. He bitterly laughed before replying, "Don't worry, Selena. Your husband is a righteous and moral man. Do I look like someone who'd rely on a rich lady for money?" Selena tilted her head and pouted. "I can't say for sure... You're quite handsome, and you do have the potential," she replied coldly. Fane was not angry when he heard that. Instead, a warm feeling spread throughout his being. He took a step forward and wound his arms around Selena's waist. "Are you jealous, Honey? I didn't expect that you'd care for me so much!" "In your dreams. I don't care for you at all!" Selena struggled out of Fane's arms and took two steps backward. "Let me make this clear, Fane Wood., I won't blame you if you could get other women to fall in love with you, but if you become some woman's boy toy just for money, I'll be the first one to spit in your face." "Is there a difference?" Fane was confused. Selena lifted a chin and crossed her arms. "Of course there's a difference. In the former situation, my husband is a capable and charming man deserving love from other women. In the latter situation, my husband is a useless bum who can't support his family without being some rich woman's boy toy!"

"Don't worry, I'm definitely not some rich woman's boy toy," Fane said with a dry smile. "Didn't I say earlier that Yvonne Drake wanted to find someone to drink with her? She was drunk and couldn't move, and I had no choice but to carry her on my back. That's why I have perfume on my back!" He shrugged and threw up his hands. "I'm telling you the truth anyway. If you don't believe me, you can ask Miss Drake!" "Alright, I know. Go and take your shower. You still have work tomorrow morning." Selena smiled and pushed Fane toward the bathroom. "How about you come with me, Honey? I'd like some company!" Fane could not help but tease the beautiful woman in front of him. "I've already taken my shower!" Selena rolled her eyes. "You're not handsome, but your thoughts are wild!" "Well, didn't you say that I have the potential to be some rich woman's boy toy? Why am I not handsome now?" "Maybe you've found yourself a blind rich woman!" Selena rolled her eyes again, though she felt warmth in her heart in this. She suddenly realized that she was falling deeper in love with that man. He merely returned a few hours later than before, and she was already worrying about him. If that had happened in the past, she would have gone to bed first. The next morning, Yvonne sat up and stretched after she woke up. Her arms then froze in the air as she bore the look of utter confusion.

Chapter 427

Yvonne lowered her head to look at her body and noticed she was wearing spaghetti strap pajamas. Yvonne sucked in a mouthful of cold air. "Oh my god… That can't be. How did I get home last night? Who bathed me and put on clothes for me?" She deduced that Tanya was not the one to have carried her home, and she gradually became frightened. "Don't tell me it's Fane." Coincidentally, Tanya opened the door to her room and walked in at that moment. "Oh, you're awake? I thought that you'd still be sleeping. I didn't expect that you could lose to Fane Woods in drinking." Tanya was rather surprised when she saw Yvonne sitting upright. "Tanya, how…did I get back here last night? Did Fane Woods carry me here? Did we take a cab?"

Yvonne came to her senses when she saw Tanya entering the room. Her questions gushed out before she could even clear her thoughts. "It's very near, so we didn't take a cab," Tanya spoke before chuckling lightly. "You were too drunk, so I asked Fane to carry you on his back," Tanya added. "What? Are you saying I was sprawled on his back?" Yvonne was at a loss of words; guilt and shame overrode her senses. Most importantly, she was scantily dressed the night before, and she did not know if that guy did anything unpleasant to her while carrying her drunk self. She could not remember anything at all. "You don't say? Don't tell me that you're still muddled by the alcohol? How else would he be able to carry you if not that you're sprawled on his back?" Tanya laughed when she saw Yvonne's confused face. "Then… Who changed my clothes? Don't tell me that it's him, too?" Yvonne looked miserable. "That guy… Don't tell me he did something to me while I was dead drunk!" Tanya was flabbergasted. "Don't worry, he's not that type of person. You were totally wiped out, and that's why we didn't put you in the bath. I got the servants to change you into pajamas." She sat down next to Yvonne on the bed, giggling. "Let me tell you, Yvonne. Fane was so embarrassed when I asked him to carry you back last night. He didn't agree to it at first, too! We bumped into Harvey along the way," Tanya spoke before giggles escaped her lips. "You should've seen how red his face was!" "What's he embarrassed about? That guy took advantage of me!" "I should be the one embarrassed, now that Harvey saw me in that state!" Yvonne was blushing intensely. "That guy knows that I'm a girl, yet he doesn't show me any mercy when drinking." "Ahem! Sister Yvonne, you're the one who forced him into a drinking contest last night. Don't you remember how cocky you were last night?" Tanya laughed drily. "Whatever. I'm going to take a bath. Really, that freak! How does he have such a large capacity for alcohol?" Yvonne stepped angrily into the bathroom. Later on, Fane gave Tanya a call and told her he had some business to attend to. He would not be going to the Drake family home that

day. He lazed in his house until about noon when he decided that he ought to keep a low profile. Then, he took a cab to Carefree Villa.

Chapter 428

Carefree Villa was a place only the wealthy could afford. The villa boasted an excellent view and tranquil surroundings. The buildings were built inspired by buildings of old. One would feel as though they were transported back in time the moment they stepped inside. Under normal circumstances, the minimum spending there would be 10 thousand bucks per person. To reserve the entire villa would cost at least 5 million a day. However, things were different today. The owner waived all minimum spending requirements and prepared many fine dishes and liquor for everyone. He also set up a temporary stage and hired several singers for entertainment. The person who had reserved the entire villa was someone of great importance. He was Magnus Sutherland, a King of War with an illustrious battle record. One had to know that the King of War was only lesser to the Supreme Warrior. Moreover, Magnus was a Seven-Star King of War. There were many Kings of War, but each King of War was different. They were ranked according to their individual abilities, their performance on the battlefield, and their contributions to the country. There were only two officer ranks: Marshal and Major. The divisions of the Kings of War were more ambiguous, though they could be approximately graded from one star to nine stars. The more stars to a King of War's rank, the more powerful they were and the bigger their contribution to the country. It could also describe their career in the military. Magnus Sutherland was a seven-star King of War and was evidently an influential figure. That was why the owner of Carefree Villa wanted to get on his good side. However, the owner felt rather anxious that he had no clue as to how many guests would be joining him. He would rather have the chefs over-prepare the food; he could have the chefs cook on the spot should there be not enough food. Even if there were less attendees, he would not mind splurging for this event either. "Sixty

tables' worth of food is too much, Master! They're all main courses, too. This is too wasteful!" One of the chefs was worried that most of the food would go to waste. After all, a chef would not want to see his effort go to waste. "Don't worry; that should be about right. There won't be too much wastage, either. This is seven-star King of War Magnus Sutherland we're talking about. We shouldn't skimp on his event. Do you think that a seven-star King of War won't have many guests? You'll have all those Head Commanders and assistant commanders here, eager to please him." "Based on his party theme 'Reminiscing the Memories of Battle', many wealthy merchants and politicians would be fighting for a spot in the event." "I'm sure all those second-class and third-class aristocratic families want in on this!" The owner of Carefree Villa grinned. "I didn't expect a Seven-Star King of War would host a party at Carefree Villa. This is the best opportunity for me to butter up to him. If I don't charge him a single cent, it means that he'll owe us a debt of gratitude. Understand?" "Hmm, I wonder how's this King of War Magnus Sutherland is like? I wonder if he's as street-wise as you think," the chef asked out of curiosity. "Of course he is!" The owner smiled calmly. "Remember, though, that this is just between you and me. You better not mention any of this once you exit this room. He likes to collect antiques and other valuable items, though he doesn't care about money that much. After all, he's a seven-star King of War. The country must be giving him tens of billions as a reward whenever he returns from battle." Master Miller paused for a while before he continued, "What's more, he's fond of beautiful women. Not many people know about this, and I only heard it through a marshal." "So that's how he is!" The chef nodded. "If you know what he likes, then you should be able to customize the event to suit his tastes, Master Miller." "That's true, though this Magnus Sutherland hides that side of his quite well…"

Chapter 429

Master Miller nodded and looked at his watch. "Alright, it's almost time. Go inform the other chefs that we'll have to serve up all the dishes by 12 sharp. There can’t be any mistakes, understand?" Master Miller then straightened his shirt collar and went outside. "I'll go outside and take a look. There should be many guests outside. I ought to go and introduce myself to them." At this moment, Fane arrived alone at the entrance of Carefree Villa. "Greetings, Sir. How may I help you?" A hostess stepped up to Fane and displayed a courteous smile on her face. "I…" Fane was momentarily silent as he racked his brain for a reply. After a while, he continued, "I'm here to participate in the veterans’ gathering. ‘Reminiscing the Memories of Battle’!" The hostess grinned. "I know that you're here for the gathering, Sir. I’d like to know your status and rank. Let me process the registration for you, and our master has prepared a commemorative badge for everyone in the event. You can pin the badge on your clothes!" Fane thought for a while before he replied, "I'm just a normal soldier. Since the King of War is hosting a gathering, I'm just here to meet up with some friends and chat over a drink!" The smile on the hostess's face faded a little when she heard that he was a mere soldier. "Oh." She mumbled a reply before walking away, only to return with a badge made of bronze. "This is the commemorative badge for you, Sir, and you may put it on yourself. Thank you for visiting Carefree Villa. We hope that you have a great time here." "Alright!" Fane smiled at the hostess before walking away, prepared to don the badge. At the same time, a short-haired woman with straight bangs walked toward the entrance. She bore an unyielding demeanor, and one could tell at first glance that she was a veteran. "Greetings, Madam…" The hostess went to greet her and gave her the same introductory speech. The woman smiled after the hostess was done speaking. "I'm just a Head Commander. Do I have to register my name?" "Oh, there's no need. Here’s your commemorative badge. Welcome to the gathering. Here, let me put it on for you. You have such a great physique! I'm envious!" The hostess smiled as she helped the woman put on the badge. Fane looked at the woman's badge, then at his

own. He furrowed his brows. The badge was only as big as his thumb. On it was written 'Reminiscing the Memories of Battle', and below it was 'Carefree Villa' in a smaller font. Fane thought that it was rather considerate for the venue to sponsor those commemorative badges. It was a nice memento of the event, and they could advertise themselves at the same time. However, he soon noticed that the woman's badge was made of a different material than his. His badge was made of bronze, while the female Head Commander's badge was made of silver. Fane was not too happy he was treated differently.

Chapter 430

The female Head Commander noticed Fane. She smiled at him and went inside. Fane stood at the side, pretending to admire the bonsai plants. More and more people arrived at the venue. As expected, normal soldiers received bronze commemorative badges while Head Commanders and their assistants received silver ones. A few minutes later, a man arrived. The man was a Major, and the hostess's attitude toward him was a lot friendlier. Fane glanced at that man's commemorative badge as he walked past; it was made of gold. The design of all the badges was about the same, though the material was far different. A short while later, a one-star King of War arrived. He looked rather young and spirited. That person's badge was made of platinum. Fane shook his head bitterly. He concluded that the badges were indeed given according to their rank. "Hey, why haven't you gone inside yet? Why are you standing here? It's almost noon!" The King of War noticed Fane and smiled at him. "Oh, I'm just looking around!" Fane replied to him with a smile. The King of War gave an exuberant chuckle. “Those beautiful hostesses have caught your eye, right? Why, is there anyone that you like? If there is, just go ahead and get her number! We're all hardened fighters on the battlefield. If we're not even scared of the enemy, why should we be afraid of women?" The King of War laughed heartily and went inside. Fane did not know how to react. He eventually prepared himself to go inside. At

that time, several Rolls Royces arrived at the entrance and were parked at a vacant space. A man with a crew-cut hairstyle who looked to be in his forties stepped out of one of the cars. A plump man wearing a large gold necklace came out of the car behind him. Many more bodyguards appeared behind that man. The man in his forties at the front was evidently someone from the battlefield. Fane could sense his intimidating presence from afar. Meanwhile, the fat man with a gold necklace behind was obviously from a wealthy family who looked rather jaded. "This way please, King Sutherland!" The wealthy man was incredibly courteous toward the man in his forties. He stepped forward quickly and bowed at the man. "Excuse me, but who might you be?" A hostess noticed the group of people coming, eyebrows furrowed as she looked on. The wealthy man stepped up to her and scoffed. "Don't you know who he is? He's Magnus Sutherland, the seven-star King of War! He's the organizer of the event today!" The hostesses nearby were staggered when they heard that. "Welcome, King of War!" They bowed deeply. "Alright, alright, enough with the formalities. How many people have arrived?" Magnus Sutherland gestured for them to be at ease. "Reporting to the King of War. Not many people are here, but there should be about 100 guests inside!" one of the hostesses curtly replied. Meanwhile, another hostess who went to pick a badge came back and handed one to him. "King Sutherland, our boss has specially prepared this commemorative badge for all the guests of this event. Please accept it!"

Chapter 431

"Hmmm! Thank you for your care!" Magnus nodded and pinned the badge on his chest. Fane looked over from afar and his eyes were blinded by the sun's rays that reflected off the badge. He soon realized that the badge was of high quality, as the bottom part of the badge was made of white gold and some diamonds embedded on the top part of the badge. Fane was speechless as he lowered his head and looked at the bronze badge he wore on his chest. It was such a big difference. The crowd walked in after they finished

speaking. “King of War Sutherland, hold on. They are?” One of the ushers immediately frowned. After all, their boss had instructed them to prepare the different badges with hopes that it would be easier for them to identify the ranks of the people in the army. With the badges, they would not mistakenly offend those they should not offend. However, these people had yet to introduce themselves. “Why? This is my guest, my god-brother's son. Can’t I bring him in with me?” Magnus turned around and said coldly. “No-no… I was just asking as it was unclear to me if he was a marshal or a King of War. After all, our boss had instructed that everybody who enters would need to put on a commemorative badge.” “And these bodyguards…” the usher was surprised as she explained herself. “Just give them some badges. Treat them as normal comrades and give them some commemorative badges, alright?” Obviously, Magnus did not notice the differences between the badges. He merely thought there were several designs. “Okay!” The usher immediately brought some bronze badges over. She then walked forward with other ushers, putting them on for a rich second generation along with his bodyguards. However, when the pretty usher was putting on the badge for the chubby rich second generation, he smiled crookedly and touched her hand. The usher was surprised and immediately moved away after putting on the badge for him. Out of everybody’s expectations, that guy frowned and said, “This isn’t right. Why does Uncle Sutherland’s badge have diamonds on it and ours don’t?” “Yes, ours are also ugly!” Quite a number of the bodyguards also noticed this. “Sir, we have several types of badges. King of War Sutherland is a man of noble status and the most important person here today. Hence, we have prepared a special commemorative badge just for him!” At first, the usher was taken aback by the question. Luckily, though her boobs were big, she had a good brain and was able to come up with an explanation quickly. “Haha, your boss is too much. What important person am I? Today is just a normal gathering for us soldiers. Everybody is an important person today! It doesn’t matter if you’re a normal soldier who has sacrificed for the people and the country, or if

you’re a marshal or King of War with admirable military service; we are all commoners today. We are brothers of war!” Magnus smiled, spewing pretentious words. It was obvious that he liked what the usher said. After all, who didn’t like being buttered up? “That’s right. I had no idea that our King of War was so approachable!” The rich kid was slightly stunned. Immediately, he said loudly, “Cheer for him!” His bodyguards and the waiters nearby started clapping enthusiastically!

Chapter 432

The corner of Fane’s mouth slightly twitched when he heard this. This guy was good at buttering people up. Evidently, Magnus was very happy after hearing this and had a huge smile on his face. He quickly controlled his emotions, stretched out his pointer and put it by the side of his mouth, “Shhh... Keep a low profile!” “Let’s go in and take a look! I want to know who came!” “Not bad! There are more than a hundred people here. It seems that I, Magnus Sutherland, still have some dignity!” Magnus finally waved his hand and walked inside with the others. “That’s for sure. Who wouldn’t want to come when they know it’s you, uncle!” his god-son immediately said. “We cannot simply say this. After all, we didn’t do any advertising and everybody came on their own accord after hearing about it. I can’t beg for people to come over, right?” Magnus said as they walked inside. “Young man, why are you standing here? Good dogs do not block the road, don’t you know that?” The rich second generation scolded Fane, pointing at him when he saw Fane standing at the entrance to show his loyalty. “Do you know who this is? This is Magnus Sutherland, King of War Sutherland, a seven-star King of War. He’s a well-known figure among the King of Wars!” Fane was prepared to leave when he saw them coming. He had no idea that this fatty was so wildly arrogant and would yell at him on the spot. His face darkened. Without thinking about how bad it would make the fatty look, he said, “A seven-star King of War? So what? Look at the distance between us, I’m five meters away from him and I was just on my way inside.

How am I blocking your way? And apart from that, how can you address me as a dog even if I'm just a normal soldier?" After he came back, Fane had been constantly reminding himself that this was not the warfield. Paired with the fact that he wanted his identity to remain concealed, he tried his best to stay under the radar. If this incident had happened while he was still the old him, this rich second generation would have lost his head by now. Magnus wanted to scold his god-son. After all, it did not matter if Fane was a normal soldier or not; he should not have directly scolded him like that. It would not be favorable if this matter was leaked to the public as he still had an image to uphold. However, he had no idea that Fane would speak without any shame, so what if he was a seven-star King of War? He smiled coldly before saying, "Young man, what's your name? I can see that you're not old, yet your tone is loud. Haha, when did people start looking down on a seven-star King of War?" He paused, did some thinking and continued, "This is the son of my god-brother and that means he's like my own. You can pick on him as he speaks incoherently sometimes, but, it's not good for you to directly pick on me." "That's right, young man. How dare you offend the King of War? He's our King of War, Magnus Sutherland. Do you seek death?" The bodyguards looked at Fane in anger and seemed prepared to fight if this did not go their way. "What are you doing?" The usher was also shocked. The pretty usher stood up and immediately walked over, "What are you doing? You've gotten your badge long ago. Why haven't you gone in? What were you looking at here? You're a soldier, don't you know the status of a seven-star King of War? How dare you offend him?"

Chapter 433

"Haha, King of War Sutherland, I didn't pick on you, though. He was the one who used your name and pretended to be powerful in front of us. You didn't scold him even though everything he said was rude and obnoxious, yet you criticize me?" "Tut tut, I remember that you had a good reputation when you were in the army. Everybody said that you were a nice and easy-

going King of War who knew right from wrong. I wouldn't have expected this change in you since you've just returned not long ago." "Or is it possible that the soldiers' rumors were untrue?" Fane laughed. He originally had a good impression of this King of War. Now, it just looked like he either did a good job of concealing his true nature, or he had been corrupted after returning from the battlefield. Magnus was speechless when he heard what Fane said. He was not a good speaker and what Fane said made sense. He was currently in a dangerous position. "Young man, how dare you criticize our King of War? You must be looking to die!" The rich kid gritted his teeth and walked two steps forward, staring at Fane angrily. "Someone like you would've been the earliest to die on the battlefield!" Fane was not afraid as he looked right into the other party's eyes. "I'm sorry but this is not the battlefield. Young man, don't you know that the world is in a peaceful state right now? Don't think for once that I'm using my uncle to bully you. Let me tell you this, even if I were alone, I can easily kill you, as I'm a member of the Xenos family! It'll be no different from pinching an ant to its death!" The rich kid smiled coldly, still as arrogant. "And apart from that, the pretty lady said you've already taken your badge, so why haven't you gone in after such a long period of time?" "Haha, weren't we told that lunch would start at noon? Why should I rush in? Apart from that, are there rules that forbid me from standing at the entrance for a while longer?" Fane smiled, unafraid of the arrogant guy in front of him. Although he was angry on the inside, it was a soldiers' gathering so he did not want to kill people here and ruin everybody's mood. "Alright, alright!" Magnus finally spoke again. "Quil, you've really made a mistake. It doesn't matter if he's just a normal soldier, a captain or something else, he's here for the gathering. How could you say that to him when his attendance is for my sake? And on top of that, he fought on the battlefield and brought honor to the country. You shouldn't have said that to him because of this, do you understand?" Fane was smiling to himself on the inside. Magnus had been waiting for Fane to compromise. Hence, he did not say anything when Fane looked straight into Quil's eyes and argued

with him. Who could have anticipated that Fane was an upright man who was unafraid and uncompromising? Hence, Magnus had to step up and put on a show of him being upholding justice yet being understanding. It seemed that he was a cunning old fox! “Yes, uncle, I understand and I promise it won't happen again!” Quil’s face darkened as he smiled in embarrassment. “Everybody, let’s go! Let’s all go in!” He immediately walked inside after he spoke. “Wait!” Fane was stunned. “Since you now know that you’re wrong, shouldn’t you apologize to me? Isn’t it rude for you to walk away without an apology?”

Chapter 434

“Apologize?” Quil turned around, stunned. He had a “are you serious” look on his face. “Young man, did I hear you wrongly? Are you asking me to apologize to you?” “Haha, is he dumb?” “That’s right. Does he know where Young Master Xenos comes from?” “Tut, tut, is he really fearless?” One by one, Quil’s bodyguards started laughing as if they had just heard a joke. “Yes, you know that you’re wrong. Your uncle also said that you’re wrong. If that’s the case, shouldn’t you apologize?” Fane persisted, an indifferent expression plastered on his face. “F*ck you, you’re a real punk. I forgave you as a sign of goodwill, and yet you don’t want it? Have you thought about the consequences? I don’t want to be calculative with you because I’m a generous person but you’re not going to let this go?!” Quil was so angry that his face turned green. It was his first time meeting such a punk and he was itching to have his bodyguards pummel him. However, today was a gathering organized by Magnus, and it would be inappropriate for him to make a move now. Apart from that, it would be bad if the other marshals and King of Wars were to witness such a thing happening. After all, Fane had served Cathysia, even though he was a normal soldier and his contribution was small. “What’s happening here?” At this moment, Dennis Howard walked over along with two majors. He assessed the situation and took a deep breath. A guy wearing a gold necklace stared at Fane angrily.

Fane was the Supreme Warrior; nobody here today had the right to stare at him. He was somebody who even Gods of War had to treat with respect when they met him. “Hey, isn’t that Dennis Howard, Martial Howard?” “Major Leonard and Major Pendragon Mass, you’re here!” Magnus turned around and said with a smile when he caught sight of them. “King of War Sutherland, you’re already here!” “Hello King of War Sutherland! It’s been a long time since we met!” The three of them immediately brought their hands together in the palm hold fist salute and greeted Magnus. The ushers immediately took three golden badges and pinned them on their chests upon hearing that these three men were marshals “All of you are marshals? Nice to meet you, I’m Quil Xenos. My father and uncle Sutherland are god-brothers. I followed my uncle here as I’ve been spending time with his son recently!” Quil immediately saluted them with respect when he heard that they were marshals. Magnus had mentioned Dennis previously. He fought well and would have become a King of War if only there were no limitations on the number of people who could possess that position. Surely, he would have been a one-star King of War. “Young Master Xenos, what happened just now?” Dennis folded his hands symbolically and said, “This is Fane Woods. We’re friends and I invited him.” Quil heard this and immediately smiled in embarrassment. “Oh, it’s not a big issue. This guy was standing by the door for a long time. My uncle was here and we were ready to enter when he blocked our way. I asked him to let us through but he refused to budge, so we got into an argument!” “How can you say that! “You were the one who said to me that ‘good dogs do not block the way’! “How could I have been in your way when I was five meters away from you? How can you blame me when you know you’ve made a mistake and still refuse to apologize?”

Chapter 435

Fane smiled coldly, a murderous feeling growing inside him. “Are you trying to die? How dare you talk to him like this?” Dennis was so angry that

he almost burst. He slapped Quil, “You bastard! If we were on the battlefield, I would’ve sliced your head off by now!” Slap—! The slap was powerful and loud. Dennis understood clearly that Fane did not make a move himself because of two reasons. Number one, he felt that this person was not worth him doing anything; number two, he did not want to expose his true identity. After all, this person was the seven-star King of War’s god-brother’s son and it would be an issue if Fane did not respect the King of War. It would be difficult for Fane to continue hiding his identity if this matter blew up. Fane had returned a few days ago, but even his wife had no clue about his true identity. It proved that Fane really wanted a normal life. On the other hand, he, Dennis, could care less about it and had nothing to be afraid of. After all, Fane saved his life. How could he stand idly by after seeing another party speaking to Fane like that? “How dare you slap our young master?” When the bodyguards saw their young master being hit, they rushed forward immediately. Two of them held up their fists and were prepared to attack him. Bang bang! Dennis turned around with speed and punched them continuously, sending the two bodyguards flying. They hit the ground, spitting out blood. “What’s going on? You-you hit me? He’s just a normal soldier, why can’t I speak like that?” Quil was unable to recover from the slap. He had already said clearly that his father was Magnus’s god-brother. As long as the other party was not stupid, he should have been polite to him! After all, it would be wise to please him so he could speak well of them in front of Magnus in the future. It could be said that pleasing him was akin to pleasing the King of War. “Why am I hitting you? Young man? Normal soldier? Haha, do you know who he is? How dare you?!” Dennis was so angry. If only this was not a soldiers’ gathering. He really wanted to kill this Xenos guy. “Marshal Howard, isn’t your behavior a bit too much?” Magnus’s face darkened and said, “Even if it’s my nephew’s fault, you shouldn’t have done that. If he’s that important, tell me who he is, then.” Dennis was stunned and held his breath. He almost exposed Fane’s identity. He thought about it and said, “He... he’s a doctor

that saved my life. He’s my savior so naturally, I’d get angry after hearing Mr. Xenos speak to him like that!” “Ah, no wonder you’re so agitated!” Magnus smiled bitterly and looked behind him. More than a dozen people had come over to watch the scene. Among them were majors, marshals, commanders and some normal soldiers. Those people surrounded them and were watching them. “Uncle, he... he doesn’t respect you. How dare he hit me when he knows that I call you uncle?” Quil was really angry because of that, but he knew that his useless bodyguards were definitely no match for Dennis who was a marshal. He could only place his hopes on Magnus, hoping that Magnus would help him out. “Nevermind, it was my nephew’s fault for speaking nonsense. However, there’s no need for apologies anymore since you’ve hit him. Let’s treat that as an apology. “Shall we let this go, for my sake? We’re being laughed at by the others, standing here at the door. Let’s all go in!” Magnus thought and finally said. Quil was very angry but he also knew that Magnus was someone who loved his reputation. He was the one who organized the gathering and the consequences may be bad if he caused trouble. It would also give a bad impression to the others. ‘Nevermind, I’ll deal with them next time!’ Quil swore to himself, gritting his teeth.

Chapter 436

Fane was silent for a moment before calming down. Smiling indifferently, he said, “Fine. After all, today is a gathering for us to celebrate our friendship as war buddies. I’ll let this go!” When Quil heard this, the corners of his mouth twitched. This guy was speaking as if he had been badly wronged. The person who had been wronged was him; the eldest young master of the Xenos family. Dennis also nodded. He walked in with the two majors and Fane. After Fane and the others left, Quil, who could not hold it in anymore, said to Magnus who was by his side, “Uncle, how can we just let this go? That guy was too arrogant. He doesn’t respect you and even said ‘so what’ if you’re a seven-star King of War? He spoke as if he’s a God of

War!” “Haha, it’s fine. This guy is just a normal soldier. I’m a King of War, it would’ve been petty of me if I insisted on being calculative! And apart from that, you said yourself that you’re the young master of the Xenos family. Can’t you handle him?” Magnus laughed, his words filled with hints. It would be inconvenient to do so now, but they could always teach that guy a lesson later on. Quil nodded, “That’s nothing. However, Dennis Howard hit me just now and I can’t let that go. He was also disrespectful to you!” Unexpectedly, Magnus was silent for some time before saying, “It’s best if you don’t provoke Dennis Howard. Although he’s only a marshal, he’s really strong and has sacrificed a lot for the country. He almost became a King of War! It was only because of the limited space that he didn’t!” Quil nodded after he heard this. “You’ve spoken about Dennis Howard before and I know about it. However, I hope that you will still avenge me. After all, he hit me in front of you, I refuse to accept this.” “That will have to wait!” Magnus’s face darkened. “Another King of War is coming today and he’s a well known six-star King of War. Dennis was his subordinate when they were in the army. Do you think he’d let it go if I did anything to Dennis today?” “Six-star King of War? Who?” Quil took a deep breath after hearing this. Middle Province was full of talents and there were quite a few King of Wars that had returned this time. “Quin Hayes, he’s a very powerful guy and is extremely skilled in combat. Hence, I’m doing this because of Quin, not Dennis.” Magnus smiled bitterly before walking inside with Quil and the others. The villa was already filled with people. Gathered in groups of twos and threes, everyone was chit-chatting with one another. Many of them were excited. “How did Magnus Sutherland meet such a rich second generation? Today is a gathering between us soldiers. Isn’t it inappropriate for him to bring such a person here?” Dennis was still slightly unhappy when they went to sit in a pavilion under a willow tree. “Marshal Howard, although Quil Xenos’s behavior was out of line, weren’t you disrespecting Magnus Sutherland’s honor, too? That was the son of his god-brother. If you slapped that guy, that’s the same as slapping Magnus’s face. Aren’t you

afraid of him taking revenge on you?" Major Leonard was best friends with Dennis. He couldn't help but remind him out of good intentions. "I don't think so? Magnus Sutherland is a King of War, a seven-star one! How could he be so intolerant! That Xenos guy was obviously the one who made a mistake!" Major Pendragon replied. "And on top of that, King of War Magnus Sutherland was highly respected when he was in the army. How could he do that to Marshal Dennis over such a small matter? Don't all men resolve hatred with smiles?" "Haha, that might not be the case. After all, some people like pretending to be someone they aren't!" Fane laughed and said. "However, that's nothing. After all, it'd be inconvenient for him to mess up the banquet he organized himself today, right?" "That's right!"

Chapter 437

Dennis thought about it and said, "Hi, King of War Sutherland, it's been a long time!" "Yes, King of War Sutherland, you're still looking so heroic!" A number of commanders and marshals immediately came forward to greet Magnus with a smile when they saw him walk in. "Haha, no need to be so polite. We're not on the battlefield anymore and there aren't that many differences in our ranks now. We are all friends and people who have won glory for this country. Let's all enjoy the gathering! Just drink and eat to your hearts' content!" Magnus said with a smile, seemingly easy-going. "King of War Sutherland is so easy-going!" "Yes, I heard that he cared for the soldiers when they were on the battlefield. Once, he carried a wounded soldier and ran over a hundred kilometers within a night just to send him to the hospital. He saved that soldier's life!" Many soldiers looked at Magnus in awe when they heard about what King of War Sutherland did years ago. Such a King of War was definitely worth everybody's respect. The smile on Magnus's face would not disappear after hearing all these words about him. "King of War Sutherland, come, let me light this for you!" Master Miller of the Carefree Villa respectfully handed him a cigar. He then brought the lighter over and proceeded to light the cigar for Magnus. "Hey, Master

Miller, don’t be so polite. I can do that myself!” Magnus still seemed easy-going. He took the lighter from the other party and lit up his cigar. He took a puff and his eyes lit up. “Hmmm, this is not bad. How much for a cigar?” “Oh, it’s not expensive! This is a Cuban cigar, and it is only around one thousand bucks!” Master Miller immediately said with a smile. “If King of War Sutherland likes it, I can send a few boxes to your house later!” “What?!” Magnus exclaimed. “You consider this not expensive? It’s really expensive, okay? A few of these could equal someone's monthly salary! This is too extravagant and wasteful!” “Yes, of course, you’re right!” Master Miller immediately nodded. At this moment, a lot of people had entered and the number of people was increasing by the minute. They knew it was a soldier gathering and that it was organized by a seven-star King of War. Hence, many veterans from the Middle Province were there, too. As noon approached, there were already about 400 people present at the gathering. “Look, King of War Hayes is here, too!” somebody yelled in surprise. A huge man followed by a few people entered from the front entrance. “King of War Quil Hayes is here. He’s a six-star King of War. Although his position is lower, his combat ability among the Kings of War is very scary!” somebody said.

Chapter 438

“This is great! Boss is here!” Pendragon stood up with excitement when he heard this. “We haven’t seen our boss in a long time and I miss him!” He and Dennis were once Quin’s subordinates. “Yes!” Dennis nodded. He stood up, eyes meeting with Pendragon’s’, and walked over together. “Boss!” They both greeted once they were in front of Quin. “Haha, both of you young lads are here as well! “It looks like I’ve made the right decision to be here today!” Quin looked at his subordinates and immediately laughed loudly. He patted their shoulders. “That’s good. You guys still look strong and healthy! It seems like you both still exercise at home even after leaving the battlefield?” “That’s a must!” Pendragon laughed. “Oh yes, boss. I’d

like to introduce someone to you. He's my savior! I've told you about him before, when I entered the ring and was almost killed by O'Neal. I was badly hurt but thanks to the pill Fane gave me, my body recovered quickly!" Dennis smiled and immediately waved at Fane, asking him to come over. "Oh, you're Fane? Haha, I had no idea you're skilled in medicine! That's good!" Quin looked at Fane and laughed. "Thank you so much. If it wasn't for your help, this subordinate of mine would've been dead!" "You're welcome. We're soldiers of Cathysia after all. I can't just leave him there to die!" Fane smiled. "Quin, you're such a rare guest!" Magnus and the master of the Carefree Villa walked over together. "Haha, brother Magnus! You're being polite. I heard that you were organizing a gathering to celebrate our relationship as soldiers so I'm here. This is a very nice event. Especially since we didn't have the time to meet after returning from the battlefield, let alone have a drink together!" Quin laughed out loudly. "We have to drink a few extra bottles today!" "Nice to meet you, King of War Hayes. I'm Xan Miller, the master of the Carefree Villa. This is my name card. If you wish to treat someone else with a meal in the future, you may visit our villa. Our villa has a beautiful environment and many good services. All the veterans that come here for a meal get a seventy percent discount!" Xan Miller took this opportunity to pass him his business card. "Seventy percent discount? Haha, this is good!" Quin laughed and said to those around him, "Did you hear that, a seventy percent discount! The next time you come here for a meal or treat someone with a meal, there's a seventy percent discount for you. This is a gesture of affirmation and care for us soldiers!' Xan had no idea that Quin was such a straightforward person. Not only did he take the name card, he even helped Xan publicize his business. "Thank you all! Don't you worry. As long as you bring the commemorative badge with you, we'll give you a seventy percent discount!" Xan thought about it and announced loudly to everybody. "Master Miller is so nice!" "Yes, Master Miller is really nice. I heard that there are sixty tables here today but Master Miller didn't take a penny. He said that because this was everybody's first

time here and that they were all people who had sacrificed for the country, it was all for free!" A few soldiers started discussing quietly among themselves after hearing this. Xan was very happy when he heard that. It appeared that his decision of trying to get on everybody's good books and not taking money this time was really smart. "Oh yes, why don't we take a photo?"

Chapter 439

He thought and suggested. He felt happy about his suggestion. "Haha, great!" Quin started laughing at the great idea. Soon, everybody stood up to take a few photos together! "Don't worry. I'll send the photos to your houses after they've been developed!" Xan smiled, extremely happy on the inside. Wouldn't it be an even better marketing tactic to keep some photos for himself and have them displayed at the shop's front door to show that even Kings of War came to his villa? After all, not just one King of War came but two! "Everybody, it's almost time for the gathering to start. Let's head into the courtyard and take a seat as food will be served soon. On top of that, I've specially invited a few female stars for today's gathering. They are all famous first-class stars and they will be performing throughout the meal!" Xan said to the crowd after looking at the time. "Let's go, let's go!" "This owner is too polite. It must've cost a fortune to invite a few A-listers." "Hey, he's rich so it's natural if he doesn't care about his money!" some soldiers discussed among themselves while they walked inside. "Look at this, you've made it too grand," Magnus spoke humbly but he was secretly very happy about this. After all, he was the one who organized this activity. This only served to make him look good. "It's late, I don't think anybody else is coming!" Quin said while he walked inside. Dennis looked at the entrance and said, "I've informed the Goddess of War and she knows about the gathering today. But it seems like she wouldn't be here, she probably doesn't fancy activities like these!" "This activity has a different meaning. It's a gathering to enjoy our relationship as soldiers. I hope she'll come!"

Quin smiled bitterly. Everybody soon entered a big courtyard. In the courtyard, almost a hundred tables were set up. Some people had already taken their seats. There was a stage set up in the middle, obviously for the artists' performance that was to take place during the meal. "Go tell the artists that they can start singing once they're ready!" Master Miller quickly spoke to the subordinate beside him who immediately ran inside. Moments later, a female artist walked out with a smile. She started singing after a short self-introduction. "Isn't this the famous female artist, Blake Knight?" "Yes, her figure and temperament are really good!" Some of the soldiers were surprised when they saw the female artist. "Blake Knight?" Magnus's eyes lit up when he saw her. "I had no idea that Master Miller was able to invite such a well-known artist over! Blake Knight is my idol. She has a nice temperament and great body, which is really rare!" "Haha, though these stars are famous, it's actually relatively easy to invite them over to sing. After all, money rules the world. As long as you pay them enough, anything can be done," Xan said with a smile on his face. It seemed that Magnus was very satisfied with the star he invited this time. "Really? They can do anything as long as there's payment?" Magnus's eyes lit up as he checked his surroundings before asking in a lowered voice.

Chapter 440

Xan was stunned when he heard this. He knew that the King of War Sutherland not only liked antique items and expensive things, he also particularly liked pretty women. However, he did not like just any ordinary pretty lady. He liked those with good temperaments and with a hint of arrogance. Obviously, Magnus did all of this secretly. He was still the respected King of War in public! Xan clearly saw Magnus's interest in Blake. This seemed like a good opportunity for him to get into his good books. Master Miller gritted his teeth and made up his mind. Checking to make sure there were not many people around, he implicated, "I believe that can be arranged. After all, who can resist the temptation of money? Not to

mention, many female artists admire King of War Sutherland's heroic appearance!" "What do you mean by that?" Magnus smiled slightly and asked. "Haha, nothing special. I have a few rooms in that area of my villa. One of the rooms is where I stay when I'm free! "Let me see if with some money, I'm able to invite Blake to have a chat with you. On the other hand, I believe that she idolizes you as well. Perhaps she might be willing to meet you without taking a penny!" Xan laughed and said. "Oh, but how would I know when it's time for a chat?" Magnus thought and asked. "Haha, once the performance is over and by the time everybody is drunk on alcohol, you would've had quite a few drinks, too. I'll ask her to come over and help you to your room!" Xan said with a smile. "Hmmm… It's almost time. I don't think anyone else will be coming over and I'm getting hungry. Let's start the feast!" Magnus sat at the main table with Quin sitting beside him. Fane did not want to see people like Magnus and Quil so he sat at another table. If Quin was not here, he would have left because Magnus made him feel unhappy. Dennis had wanted to drink with Fane from the start so he sat beside Fane. "Hey, this brother. I saw you getting into a fight with King of War Sutherland at the door earlier just now. Is that right?" a commander who was beside Fane looked at him and asked softly. "Yes!" Fane nodded and admitted. The assistant commander immediately shook his head. "How inexperienced. Even though this is a gathering to celebrate and talk about the relationship between soldiers, there are people here we cannot offend. Don't you know who those people are? You're in trouble!" Another soldier who wore a bronze badge like Fane's chimed in, "Yes, brother. Normal soldiers like us are very different from Kings of War. We're the mud on the ground and they're the clouds in the sky. It's a humongous difference! We don't like flattery, but we shouldn't offend people, right? Temporary forbearance and things calm down, take a step back from things for a brighter future!" "Haha, I think temporary forbearance makes you angrier and angrier, and thinking about it after taking a step back just makes you feel like you've lost!" Fane laughed as he opened a bottle of wine and filled

everybody's glasses. Dennis was startled when he saw Fane's actions. Fane was a Supreme Warrior, the highest in existence in all of Cathysia. How could they just let him serve them wine? "No-no way! How can you serve wine?" Dennis immediately stood up and took the wine bottle from Fane's hand.

Chapter 441

Fane's face darkened. "I'm just a normal soldier and this is a gathering between soldiers. There's no difference between us. So what if I pour the wine?" Dennis was speechless when Fane said this. He could only loosen his grip on the wine bottle and watch as Fane proceeded to pour wine into the glasses of those around him. Everybody was very polite, standing up and slightly bowing as Fane poured them wine. "Come, I'd like to propose a toast to everybody. We're all brothers that have sacrificed our lives for Cathysia, so now we should enjoy ourselves and drink to our hearts' content!" Fane smiled indifferently and raised the glass of wine in his hands. "That's right. We're no different so let's drink to our hearts' content!" one of the head commanders said. Everybody at the table proceeded to gulp down their glasses of wine. At the gathering, everybody was enjoying the lively atmosphere. Together with the fact that there were pretty female artists singing on stage, everybody was very happy. Of course, many people ran over to Quin and Magnus's table for countless toasts. People like them were naturally good at drinking, so they accepted every toast. After a while, another pretty female artist went on the stage again. She had a sexy figure and she donned a black dress that showed most of her thighs. "Oh my god, it's Tianna Scott. He's amazing! He actually got Tianna to come!" "Yes, that's my goddess!" Many soldiers were excited when they saw Tianna on stage. Some were already singing along with Tianna. "Tianna Scott?" Magnus gulped when he saw who it was. He then placed a hand on Master Miller's shoulder and said softly, "Tianna Scott is a sexy goddess. It would be amazing if I could have a chat with her!" "Don't worry, I'll arrange it!"

Xan immediately nodded. While others may not have understood what Magnus's words meant, he understood it clearly. Magnus Sutherland wanted to get both! He never would have thought that Magnus would still be so greedy when he was already more than 40 years old. After a while, most of the soldiers had finished their food and the performances on the stage had finally ended. Some of them were tipsy from all the drinking and were about to leave. Xan sensed that the timing was almost right. He briefly spoke to Magnus and left, walking towards the room at the back. After a while, both Blake and Tianna were escorted to the master of the Carefree Villa by the servants. "Master Miller, anything we can help you with?" Tianna smiled and asked. Master Miller looked at the two pretty ladies before saying, "I will not beat around the bush. Today's event was quite special as there were quite a few VIPs. Both of you would've seen that there were many marshals and even two Kings of War. On top of that, these two Kings of War were the most powerful ones of them all!" "Yes, we worship them. If they hadn't defeated our enemies on the battlefield, how would it be possible for us to have peaceful days now?" Blake immediately replied. It was clear she worshipped them from her heart. "Really? That's great!" Master Miller was happy when he heard this. He continued, "It so happens that the person in charge, the seven-star King of War Magnus Sutherland, wants to meet with both of you."

Chapter 442

"The seven-star King of War Magnus Sutherland wants to meet us?" Both the pretty women were flattered when they heard it. Though they were famous celebrities, they were nothing to the wealthy. To the powerful Kings of War, they were less than that. "Yes, especially Miss Blake. King of War Sutherland is a fan of yours! He mentioned earlier that he likes your singing!" Master Miller thought about it and finally hinted, "I hope the both of you won't refuse this meeting!" When Blake sensed the slight seriousness in Master Miller's voice, she knew this meeting was not going to be that

simple. She thought about it and said, “Master Miller, how dare we refuse when the King of War himself has requested to meet us? However, I’m curious as to why he wants to meet us. Is there anything else?” Master Miller smiled before saying, “Miss Knight, you're really smart. Of course, it won’t be a simple meet-up. I hope the both of you can keep King of War Sutherland good company tonight. Don’t you worry, I won’t treat you both badly. Making the King of War happy will be beneficial for the both of us!” Master Miller paused for a moment before continuing. “Each of you will receive five million for singing today. If you serve King of War Sutherland well for an hour, I’ll give you fifty million each. How does that sound? It’s easy money, right?” Initially, Tianna was quite happy. After all, it would be good for their careers if a powerful person wanted to meet them. She had no idea that Master Miller had other intentions until after the discussion. Her face darkened and she said, “Master Miller, what are you trying to say? Are you treating us like prostitutes? We’re celebrities—we sing and we sacrifice ourselves for art. Why don’t you find someone else instead of asking us to do this?” Blake stood up and said with a cold expression, “Master Miller, I originally looked up to you as you were connected with so many powerful people. I never would’ve thought that you’d ask us to accompany a man just to please a King of War!” “That’s right. If you want us to accompany him for some drinks and some chit-chat, we’d be happy to!” “But if you want us to have s*x with him, you’ve got the wrong people! I’m not that kind of woman!” Tianna’s chest heaved in anger as she refused Xan’s offer. Xan expected these girls to accept his offer. He did not think that they would refuse without giving it much thought. “Can you both stop getting worked up and discuss this? “I know, both of you feel that fifty million isn’t enough. How about seventy million, then? This is an extremely generous offer. I know other famous celebrities who would agree to just ten or twenty million!” Xan smiled indifferently. He believed that these two were just trying to raise their prices. “Master Miller, do you think this is about money? This is about our principles. We sell our art, not our bodies!” Blake turned

around and walked out with a cold face. “Goodbye, Master Miller!” “Goodbye!” Tianna saluted him before following after Blake. Clap clap—! Xan’s face darkened. He immediately clapped his hands.

Chapter 443

Some men rushed in, immediately closing the door behind them. “Under normal circumstances, I wouldn’t have resorted to this. However, you don’t have a choice today!” “I’ll definitely be paying you, and seventy million is considered a sky-high price! You both can stop acting so innocent. Each celebrity has a price. What nonsense is this, selling art but not your body?!” Xan smiled coldly. “I don’t believe either of you could’ve achieved your current status without having slept with anyone. Haha, I’m already honoring you by paying you such a huge amount of money!” “Master Miller, you want us to do something like this under broad daylight? If word gets out, don’t you think it would ruin your reputation?” Blake was so frightened that her face turned pale. Nevertheless, she still gritted her teeth and threatened Xan. “Haha, that’s ridiculous. I’m a man, why should I be afraid? How about the reputation of you two celebrities? Aren’t your reputations much more important than mine?” Master Miller laughed, looking at them viciously. “I don’t want to waste time discussing nonsense with the both of you. You have two choices now, one is to listen to me obediently, which I’ll then pay you seventy million each. This way, both of you and myself will enjoy the benefits. It will be very beneficial for your careers, especially if the King of War is happy!” Master Miller paused for a moment before continuing. “As for the second choice, it’s very simple and it only contains one word; death! I can allow you to leave alive today, but there’s no guarantee if any accidents should befall you both tomorrow or the day after! I believe that both of you are aware of my abilities.” Xan was already on a path that was difficult to back away from. He had no choice but to take the risks. After all, he had already promised Magnus that these two women would agree to meet him and that he would make the arrangements. Initially,

he was confident because he believed in the power of money. He knew that not many women in the entertainment industry were good and pure, and he believed that money could buy their hearts. How was he to know that these two women would ignore his money? Hence, for the sake of his honor and his future, he risked everything he had. “You…” Both women were furious. What was the difference between this and kidnapping them? “I’ll give you three minutes to think about this. Stop pretending to be innocent! “Think about it. After all, it’s seventy million and all you need to do is lay down in bed. After that, the money’s yours and you won’t have to worry about your careers!” Master Miller sat down and said. “I’ve given you both a choice, so you can’t say I’m forcing you into anything, right?” “This isn’t forcing us?” Tianna and Blake did not think that performing today would mean walking into a trap. Three minutes passed and they had no other choice. Being faced with the choice of 70 million or death, they could only agree to it through gritted teeth. “Haha, congratulations girls! You’ve made a wise choice. Don’t be f*cking coy and be more energetic later, alright? And you also need to make the King of War feel like you’re doing this willingly, do you understand?” Master Miller urged as he laughed.

Chapter 444

After a few minutes of brain-washing, Master Miller stood up. “Let’s go. I’ll ask my workers to bring you both to a room near the back. You’ll wait for King of War Sutherland there. Both of you have to be nice to him, understand? This is a powerful and respected King of War! “Don’t think about running because it’s impossible for you to escape. Even if you do, I have ways to find you and kill you, understand?” Xan thought and threatened the girls. He then opened the door and exited the room. Xan and both the pretty artists walked out and headed towards the other side of the villa. It just so happened that Fane, who was still drinking, witnessed this scene. He casually glanced over and frowned. “That’s weird, what were they discussing in that room? And why do those artists have such a bad

expression on their faces?" As Fane continued to think about it, the two pretty artists were escorted away by some servants, passing through an arched door that led into the courtyard inside. Fane thought about it and concluded that he was overthinking it before he resumed drinking. He had just taken two swigs of his alcohol when he saw Master Miller coming out from the courtyard, returning to his seat with a big smile on his face. Master Miller pretended to drink with the others before whispering into Magnus's ear, speaking to him in secret. Magnus smiled in satisfaction and continued to drink a few glasses of wine with everybody else. After a few glasses of wine, Magnus was obviously drunk. He stood up and said, "I'm so sorry guys, but I'm really dizzy. I've drank too much today and I need to rest. All of you continue drinking, I really can't continue accompanying you guys much longer!" "Haha, King of War Sutherland, your drinking ability has regressed!" Quin started laughing loudly. "I remember you used to have impressive drinking skills!" "Haha, what to do. I'm old now, I can't deny that!" Magnus laughed and rubbed his head. "Sigh, but I really can't go on. I'm really dizzy and my head hurts!" "The two of you, assist King of War Sutherland and bring him to the room to rest!" Master Miller immediately ordered two of his servants who proceeded to escort Magnus inside. Fane was paying close attention to the situation. He immediately understood what was going on when he saw the servants guiding Magnus towards the arched door. 'Haha, exchanging sentiments about the relationship among soldiers'? He's actually meeting women here?' Fane was not stupid and he soon understood what was happening. He had no clue Magnus was such a person. He was already in a hurry to get a girl while there were still so many people drinking outside. Although Fane was unhappy about it, he also felt that this could only have happened through mutual consent. It was out of his control, so he ignored it. He smiled as he drank two more glasses of wine with Dennis. However, the unwilling expressions of Blake and Tianna appeared in his mind as he drank. "Something's not right…." Fane slapped the table and stood up. He suspected that those two girls had been threatened. If they

were doing it willingly, they would not have looked so unhappy. “What’s wrong?” Dennis and the others looked at Fane, wondering what caused his sudden outburst. “It’s fine, everybody continue drinking. I’ve got a stomach ache and I need to go to the toilet!” Fane smiled embarrassingly and hugged his stomach.

Chapter 445

“Oh, let’s continue drinking, then. Come on!” The rest of them resumed drinking. Dennis drank a few mouthfuls, watching Fane as he left quickly in search for the toilet. He thought for a moment and sensed that Fane’s earlier outburst was not normal. He stood up and chased after Fane, telling the rest that he needed the toilet as well. “Hello, King of War Suther-Sutherland!” Both the artists were fearful and had no idea what to do. Magnus opened the door and entered. “Hi pretty ladies, I’m sorry for making you wait!” Magnus smiled mischievously. The seriousness on his face was gone, and instead, a snobbish look grew on his face. He smiled and closed the door. “King of War Suther-Sutherland, we heard you wanted to have a chat with us?” Blake gulped before saying cautiously. She took a few steps back, afraid. “Chat? Haha, are you kidding me? Didn’t Master Miller tell you clearly? Since both of you are here, accompany me well tonight!” Magnus smiled coldly and continued speaking. “I’m a seven-star King of War. It’s a privilege to be spotted by me, do you understand?” “Blake, never... nevermind!” Tianna comforted Blake who was extremely afraid. If they wanted to leave now, this King of War might get angry and Master Miller would never let them go. Although she felt disgusted seeing this King of War Sutherland, it was better than being dead. “Haha, it seems like the both of you are still unwilling,” Magnus laughed and walked over. Holding each of their waists in each arm, he said, “But since you’re already here, you should already be mentally prepared. Or are you guys willing to offend me, a King of War?” After he finished speaking, he carried both the women and using all his strength, threw Blake and Tianna onto the bed that was beside

him. “Ah!” Both the pretty ladies yelled, turning pale with fright. Fear grew within them, and they desperately wanted to escape. “No! King of War Sutherland, you can’t do this!” Blake was so frightened that she wanted to run away. Her strength was minuscule, like an ant, compared to Magnus Sutherland, a seven-star King of War. Magnus restrained them with each hand, resting his weight on them until they were unable to move. “Do you think you’re naive celebrities? Don’t you sing and dance to entertain everybody? I have money, so don’t fail to appreciate my kindness.” Tianna’s eyes turned red as she started to beg for forgiveness. “King of War, I’m sorry. Please let us go, we... we know what we need to do!” “I... I know, too!” Blake bit her sexy red lip, finally giving in.

Chapter 446

Magnus was very happy when Blake started to compromise. Being two famous women, goddesses who had nice figures, many people often tried to hit on them. He did not think he would have the opportunity to bed both these women today. He let them go once they had compromised and said, “It’s good that you understand. Now take off your clothes!” Tianna was uncomfortable but she had no other choice. She could only start unbuttoning her clothes. Magnus, who drank quite a bit of wine, grew even more excited looking at their delicate faces. He said impatiently, “You’re too slow! Let me help you!” He then looked at Blake, who was by his side, and said, “You too, take your clothes off by yourself!” “Help!” Blake gritted her teeth and screamed. She could not stop the thoughts from her heart and ran outside. “Are you trying to die? How dare you disobey me?” Magnus did not expect this woman to be so stubborn. He immediately rushed to her and grabbed her long hair, pulling her back to him before slapping her. Slap! Magnus was so furious that he used most of his strength to slap her. The slap was so loud that Blake almost fainted. The slap immediately left a huge palm print on Blake’s face and blood flowed out from the corners of her mouth. Magnus stretched out his hand and grabbed Blake’s neck, lifting her with

ease. “Miss Knight, did you think I wouldn't dare to kill you? Haha, how dare you offend a King of War? Do you understand that that was a suicidal move?” “Let-let go of me!” Blake’s face grew red as she felt a sense of imminent death. She kept struggling, trying to get a hold onto Magnus’s fingers to pry them open. However, he was too strong and it was impossible to break free from his grip. “King of War, King of War, she knows she was wrong. Please let her go! She knows she was wrong! We’ll definitely serve you well!” Tianna was so frightened she immediately knelt on the floor and begged Magnus for forgiveness. After all, Blake was in the same position as her. It was only normal to sympathize with one another. “Please, let go of me! I know I was wrong!” Blake’s face turned pale from the lack of air. Only then did Magnus loosen his grip on her, placing her back on the ground. “Cough cough!” Blake coughed profusely, huffing and puffing as her heart filled with despair. “Don’t play tricks with me, take off your clothes!” Magnus yelled impatiently. Both the pretty women looked at each other. They started unbuttoning their clothes, too afraid to disobey Magnus. Magnus’s pupils dilated in excitement. Suddenly, the door was kicked open. Fane entered the room, a cold look on his face. “Ah!” The two women immediately covered their chests, their faces turning pale.

Chapter 447

“Bastard, what are you doing here?!” Magnus got angry when he saw Fane. He looked at Fane and said, “This is the backyard. I’m drunk and I’m here to rest. What are you doing barging in here? “Get out and close the door! Then I won’t hold you accountable for doing this!” Magnus threatened Fane with a cold expression on her face. Fane closed the door but he was still standing in the room. “You... I’m telling you to get out!” Magnus was fuming. Was there something wrong with this young man’s brain? Could he not comprehend simple words? “Haha, King of War Sutherland seems to be in a good mood. You need two pretty ladies, who seem to be famous celebrities, to accompany you while you rest. I’ve got to say, I really admire

you! However, you don't seem drunk at all!" Fane laughed and said. "Young man, you really are suicidal! Since you're brave enough to disturb me, I'll kill you right here, right now! After all, there are only a few hundred people here today and some of them have already started to leave. Once I kill you, all I need to do is ask the owner of this place to get rid of your body! The others would just assume you left after getting drunk. And besides, the death of a normal soldier like you wouldn't raise any suspicion from anyone!" Magnus thought about it and smiled as he touched his fists. "Haha, King of War Sutherland, you're so good at scheming!" Fane laughed and said, "I had no clue that the previous King of War Sutherland, who loved his soldiers like his own sons, would be playing with girls this early in the morning. You even found two famous celebrities for this! And you're willing to go as far as to kill me for discovering what you did!" "Humph! I'm a person who loves soldiers like my sons, but those are obedient soldiers under my lead. Soldiers that go against me and are disobedient like you should die!" King of War Sutherland wanted to kill Fane at this moment. He swiftly blocked the door, blocking Fane's escape. As Fane assumed he would die soon, he dropped his false identity and revealed his original temperament. "How disappointing! A person who has sacrificed so much for Cathysia is actually...going to die here today…I don't think so!" Fane heaved a heavy sigh of disappointment. This King of War who had just been discharged from military service had turned into this. It could be because of the lack of seductions on the battlefield, or maybe he was just good at hiding his true temperament. However, these details were not important. The more important thing was that this person agitated Fane. He was more than ready to kill Magnus. "Young man, why are you still so nosy when you know you're not my opponent and that you'll definitely die today?" Magnus thought Fane was talking about him. He said with a smile, "These two pretty celebrities threw themselves into my arms after learning about my great achievements. Since when did you start caring about these kinds of things, especially when there is mutual consent?" "Haha, really? What about this

palm print on Miss Blake's face?" Fane laughed. He did not expect that Magnus would still lie under these circumstances. "Haha, what can I do if she likes it rough?" Magnus laughed and asked Blake, "Am I right? Miss Knight, don't you like playing like this?" Blake's face darkened. She was hoping to be rescued when the door was kicked open. However, she realized that the young man in front of her was only a normal soldier. How could a normal soldier fight against a powerful King of War? On top of that, Magnus was obviously going to kill this soldier who heard her call for help. How could she deny him? She gritted her teeth and smiled embarrassingly. "That's right, young brother. You shouldn't be a busy-body. We're doing this willingly. I... I love this kind of play!" "Your expression is too fake. How can you say you like it when you're about to cry?!" Fane was speechless. Did they really think he was an idiot?

Chapter 448

"I'm not lying to you, little brother. Thank you for your good intentions but you shouldn't have come!" Blake could not hold it back any longer. Tears trickled down her face from the corners of her eyes. She had never felt this helpless before. She had never once felt that dying would be better than being alive, like how she was feeling now. "Sigh, yet you're here. I've never seen anyone who would yell for help if they came willingly! I was hesitant before I came in and I had no idea what was happening, but the word 'help' told me that both of you were being forced into this!" Fane said with open hands, "Tell me honestly, did this guy force you into this? If that's the case, I'll kill him for you!" "Young man, are you joking? You're just a normal soldier, how dare you think about killing a King of War? I've seen many dumb people but I've never seen someone as dumb as you!" King of War Sutherland laughed. He thought to himself that this young man in front of him was a fearless dumbass. The difference between a soldier and a King of War was huge, they were not at the same level. "I…" Blake looked at Fane but still chose to stay silent. "Haha, you were daring enough to ask for help

but not enough to expose his crimes? Miss Knight, please believe in me. Though this stupid King of War sacrificed a lot for Cathysia, I won't forgive him for what he did today!" Fane laughed and said. "Young man, it's true that we were forced into this, but what can you do? He's a King of War!" Tianna shook her head with a bitter smile on her face. "Thank you for your kindness. He's a King of War, a seven-star King of War. Apart from the Goddess of War, nobody in this city can be a worthy opponent!" "Haha, look at this, young man. Even they know who the strongest person is!" Magnus was impatient and balled his hands into fists. "I'll kill you now and show you that the prestige of a King of War will not be humiliated!" As swift as lighting, he appeared in front of Fane, aiming a punch at his face. The power of his punch was so strong that the wind howled in its trail. This punch could easily kill an elephant. Whoosh! Fane ducked away from Magnus's attacks. Magnus was shocked when his punch missed the target. He turned around and discovered that Fane was by the door, a few meters away from him. "Young man, who are you? You're definitely not a normal soldier. Though I may be careless, your speed is the speed of a King of War!" Magnus's face darkened. He saw that the young man in front of him had true abilities and that he did not let his emotions affect him. "King of War?" Blake and Tianna looked at each other. They saw hope. If the young man in front of them really was a King of War, they had higher chances of being rescued. Although, the speed of their fight was too fast, and they could not clearly see what had happened. "Why? You're afraid?" Fane laughed and said. "I know everything about you. You're Ethan Haays's subordinate and you're good at close attacks. Apart from that, you are also skilled in an extremely powerful set of Chinese boxing. When you use this set of martial arts, it doubles the strength of your original power. This has helped you with countless achievements…" When he heard this, Magnus's face grew darker. He gritted his teeth. "Young man, who are you? Why do you know everything so well?! And on top of that, how dare you call our God of War

by his name. Don’t you know that being disrespectful to the God of War means looking for death!” “Looking for death?”

Chapter 449

Fane stepped forward, seizing the opportunity to attack. He moved swiftly, appearing in front of Magnus and attacking him with a fast punch. “What?!” Magnus was startled. Fane was too quick. He was not ready to use his boxing set and could only hold his fists up to meet Fane’s attack. Bomb! The sound of the impact was very loud, and the force of the punch sent Magnus flying out. “Ah!” Magnus held his left hand in his right. He could feel that his right hand was fractured by the punch. “Who... who are you? I’m the King of War. If you kill me, God of War Haays won’t let this go!” Magnus was so afraid that he could only grit his teeth and threaten Fane with Ethan Haays. “Haha, him?” Fane smiled coldly after hearing this. “I wonder how disappointed he’d be if he knew the most powerful soldier under his leadership had become such a useless bastard! “Today, I’m here to tidy up his team!” Fane stopped explaining and rushed toward him. He raised his leg up high before bringing it down forcefully. Bang! Magnus used his hands to block the attack but Fane’s strength was not something he could easily block. He was forced into the ground as Fane’s leg landed on his head. The corners of his mouth trickled with blood, and as he looked straight at Fane, he finally remembered something. He had seen someone use this exact move on the battlefield once. This person was none other than the mysterious and extremely powerful Supreme Warrior! Not many people on the battlefield knew of Fane’s true appearance. On top of that, everyone addressed him as Master Supreme Warrior. Hence, his original name was forgotten since being addressed as the Supreme Warrior was the highest glory a person could have. He never thought that this guy with the name of Fane, a normal soldier that he looked down upon, was the mysterious Master Supreme Warrior! Bang! This was the epiphany Magnus had right before his death. By then, it was too late. He fell backward, lying dead on the floor.

“He’s dead!” Blake and Tianna took deep breaths. A seven-star King of War was so easily killed by the young man in front of them? If the man in front of them was a King of War, he couldn’t have killed another King of War so easily. And even if he was a God of War, the fight would not have been settled so easily, right? “Since I saved you both, you have to keep everything that happened today a secret, okay? If you thought you couldn’t afford to offend this King of War, then I’m a person that you cannot afford to offend, too!” Fane looked at the body on the floor indifferently. He casually took out a cigarette and lit it. “Don’t worry, don’t worry. Thank you, our savior, we won’t say anything to others!” Both of them were very frightened. The man in front of them was definitely not a normal soldier. How could a normal soldier defeat a King of War so easily? They wondered if this man was another God of War. They thought about it but knew there was no God of War named Fane. Regardless of that, they were finally rescued. At this moment, the door opened again.

Chapter 450

The door burst open at this moment, frightening Blake and Tianna. Fane looked over at the other party but continued smoking as if he saw nothing. Closing the door behind him, Dennis looked at the floor, surprised. He looked at both the women and said, “I had no idea Magnus Sutherland would do such a thing!” “Yes, a person like this doesn’t deserve to be alive!” Fane nodded and continued. “I’ll make a call to Ethan and explain everything.” “That’s not the issue!” Dennis smiled bitterly and continued. “Wouldn’t it be hard to hide your identity, then? What should we do with them?” “We won’t say anything!” “That’s right, that’s right… You’re the benefactor who saved us, why would we spread this news?” Blake and Tianna were frightened, thinking Dennis would kill them just to keep the secret. “Don’t worry, I won’t kill you. After all, I rescued you! If not, wouldn’t this have been for nothing?” Fane smiled bitterly. “It’s a good thing the fight ended quickly and without much movement. Those drinking in the front courtyard

couldn’t have heard anything from over there.” Dennis was ashamed. He was lucky he followed his instincts and decided to tail Fane. He did not expect to hear people fighting when he reached the door, and when he came in, the King of War Sutherland was already dead. Only the Supreme Warrior had such powerful strength. He instantly killed the other party before he even managed to do anything. “But the body’s here, how do we explain this?” Dennis was speechless. “This can’t be my kill again, right? The last time I did that, some Kings of War started asking me which move I used to kill O’Neal. It was so good, it caused someone’s body to explode!” “Haha, others need to believe it if I want you to take the kill!” Fane smiled bitterly. He then took out his phone and called Lana. “Lana, come to the Carefree Villa. Make sure nobody’s following you and head to the inside courtyard. Come alone!” Fane ended the call. “Now, we wait here.” “Hey, you’re a smart one. The only person in the entire Middle Province who can take this kill is the Goddess of War herself!” Dennis laughed, secretly admiring Fane’s cleverness. He had assumed that Fane’s identity was about to be revealed because of this. He did not think Fane would come up with a solution in such a short period of time. Blake and Tianna looked at each other, extremely stunned. This man was too good, seeing how he could get the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs, to come and substitute for him. Fane looked at them again. Their shirts were still unbuttoned, revealing their sexy collarbone and seductive skin. He smiled bitterly and said to them, “Hey, why don’t you ladies button up your clothes first. Before the Goddess of War arrives, can you tell me what happened today? Did the master of the Carefree Villa threaten you? You’ll need to tell the Goddess of War all the details of this incident when she arrives, okay?” Both artists lowered their heads to look at their clothes. They blushed, having forgotten about the state of their appearances due to the shock from the incident. After straightening up their clothes, they told Fane and Dennis what Master Miller had done to them. “Xan actually did something like this for the sake of his business! It’s disgusting!” Dennis was extremely angry. “I’d really like to

bring him over and kill him right now!" "Don't!" Fane immediately stopped him. "We do need to kill him, but it has to be done by Lana." Dennis was enlightened after hearing this. "You're so smart, why am I so stupid? Haha…"

Chapter 451

Xan and the others were still drinking outside. Nobody noticed that Fane and Dennis had secretly left. "Those two have gone to the toilet for quite some time!" The people who were at the same table with Fane and Dennis suspected nothing. They drank quite a bit of wine and it was considered a happy drinking session until they were dizzy from the drink. At this moment, a sports car drove over and parked at the entrance. Lana got down and strode inside. "Goddess of War!" The few pretty ushers were originally standing by the door, bored. They took in a sudden breath when they saw a pretty lady come down from the car. "Oh my god, it's really the Goddess of War!" "That's great, even the Goddess of War is here. Our Carefree Villa is destined to get famous. Not only two Kings of War are here, but even the Goddess of War is also here!" A few of the female ushers were so excited that they had no idea what to do. One of them reacted by saying, "You guys should quickly run in and notify the master. I'll prepare a diamond memorabilia badge for the Goddess of War!" There was no other way as the best badges they prepared were the same diamond badges they gave the Kings of War. Luckily they prepared two extras. If not, it would definitely be insufficient. Those female ushers quickly ran inside and the ones left behind walked toward Lana with the badge in her hands. "What is my master doing? Why didn't he tell me earlier on that he was coming to join the veterans gathering? If I knew that he was coming, I would have followed him!" Lana could not help but purse her lips as she was unhappy. Although Dennis notified her previously, she had always disliked activities of such nature. Apart from that, she did not like Magnus Sutherland very much. She had always felt that this person seemed fake. However, if she knew that Fane

was also here, she would come over without any excuses. “Welcome, Goddess of War!” “Goddess of War, you’re slightly late. We’ve started lunch at noon! However, you do not need to worry. We’ve reserved some tables and they haven’t been touched! This is a memorabilia badge we prepared as a memory of the veterans’ relationship. I hope that the Goddess of War can put it on as a token of remembrance!” The pretty usher immediately said after she walked toward Lana. “Okay!” Lana had no idea what Fane wanted when he asked her to come over as soon as possible. She nodded, took the badge, and put it on before striding inside. “What! The Goddess of War is here!” “Oh my god, the Goddess of War is here. Quickly, everybody! Get up and welcome her!” “The Goddess of War is here. It’s really worth it that we’re here today, we get to see the Goddess of War’s elegant demeanor today!” The people who were still eating and drinking in the courtyard got extremely excited when they heard that Lana was here. “You don’t need to welcome me, continue drinking!” Lana had already walked over in large strides and said with a cold expression on her face. After she finished speaking, she looked around her and chose to walk through a small lane, directly toward the inside of the arch door. “Not good!” Master Miller was extremely frightened when he saw which direction she was walking toward. He immediately stood up and wanted to follow her.

Chapter 452

Master Miller had already felt that something was wrong. It was weird that the Goddess of War walked inside after she asked everyone to continue drinking without another word after she arrived. “Was it possible that the matter was exposed?” She quickly thought of this possibility inwardly. If the matter was not exposed, why would the Goddess of War walk toward that place? The others did not dare to offend Magnus but the Goddess of War was different. Magnus was nothing in front of the Goddess of War, there might even be a possibility where she kills him if she was unhappy.

After all, God of War Ethan Haays would not blame the Goddess of War Lana Zechs if he knew of the exact situation. He thought of these and had a complicated feeling inwardly. He was about to follow and stop her. “Hey, Master Miller, what’re you doing? Didn’t you hear the Goddess of War? She asked us to continue drinking!” Xan had no idea that God of War Hayes would pull him back and said, “The words of a God of War, no matter how simple, is an order. Do you want to disobey a God of War’s order?” “That’s right. It seemed that the Goddess of War was in a hurry. She must have something to do and we only need to listen to her orders!” Another officer said. “I-I wanted to ask what the Goddess of War wants. This is her first time here and she isn’t familiar with her way. I’m afraid that she wouldn’t find her way around here!” Master Miller quickly explained. In such a short amount of time, his forehead was already covered in sweat. Master Miller wanted to get into King of War Sutherland’s good books so he proactively gave two female celebrities to him that he was interested in. However, little did he know that the Goddess of War would be here. “Haha, it’s not the matter whether or not she finds it. We only have to follow what the Goddess of War said!” Quin laughed. “Although I’m also curious as to what she’s doing, I don’t dare to follow her. Who are you to even follow her?” “Yes, you’re right. I was just anxious, alright? Thank you, God of War Haays, for your reminder. Come on everybody, let’s continue drinking!” Master Miller smiled in embarrassment. He wiped the cold sweat before continuing to drink with the others. However, the current wine was tasteless when he drank it as he was fearful. “Big brother Woods!” Lana could not help but yelled when she reached the back of the courtyard. She wanted to address him as master but she remembered Fane’s reminder to not expose his true personality hence she only addressed him as brother. One of the room doors opened, Dennis waved at Lana and she walked in. Soon, Lana knew everything and she also knew about Fane’s plans. “I’ve felt since long ago that this Magnus Sutherland was weird. He gave out the feeling that he was not who he portrayed to be on the outside. I had no idea that he was someone

like this.” “This Master Miller is also a bad person. How could he bully and seduce others with money just to please Magnus? Luckily big brother Fane discovered that something was wrong and followed them here!” After Lana spoke angrily, she looked at Fane. “I thought you asked me here for drinks. I had no idea that you wanted me to cover for you!” Fane smiled in embarrassment. “Cover this for me first. There's plenty of time for us to drink in the future. By the way, you can come over for drinks at the Old Master Taylor’s birthday. It’s only ten days away from his seventieth birthday celebration! I’ll have a few drinks with you then.” Lana immediately rolled her eyes at Fane. “How could a few drinks be enough? We need at least a few bottles, right? Or you’re just looking down on my drinking abilities?” Bang! Bang! Bang! Soon, intense fighting sounds came from inside, accompanied by the noise of various furniture being destroyed. “What’s happening in the courtyard? Why did they start fighting?”

Chapter 453

Quin and the others immediately stood up after hearing the sound coming from the courtyard. “It’s over!” Xan took in a breath inwardly. They started fighting. The King of War and the Goddess of War had started fighting. The King of War is definitely not her opponent. He could be done for if this matter was exposed. It was originally a good deck of cards. He had no idea how he played it wrongly. At this moment, Fane and Dennis ran out of the room and the fight soon stopped. Soon, everybody saw Lana walking out of the room, pulling Magnus’s body out with one hand. Two extremely helpless celebrities followed behind her and it was Blake and Tianna, who performed for them just now. “How is that possible? The King of War was killed?” “Why? Wasn’t the 7-stars King of War drunk so he went to sleep? Why was he killed by the Goddess of War?” “Look at the helplessness on both the celebrities’ faces. Blake has a palm print on her face and there’s blood at the corners of her mouth. Could it be?” The soldiers started discussing amongst themselves and had their own guesses. Lana walked

over and threw Magnus's body on the ground. She looked at Blake and the others before saying, "Both of you, spill everything in detail! There's another person here who should die!" Xan's legs turned wobbly when he heard this then directly collapsed to the ground. "Master, what's wrong with you?" One after another, the servants who had no idea what happened walked forward and wanted to pull him up. The waste was the current Xan had become a pile of mud and could not be pulled up. "Haha, there are some people who are aware of what they've done!" Lana looked at Master Miller coldly and said. "It-It's Master Miller. In order to get into Magnus's good books, he actually threatened us and asked us to sleep with him!" "In the beginning, he promised us fifty million and we refused. We still refused when he promised us seventy million. He threatened us and said that he would kill us if we don't agree to it." "We had no other way but to follow him. Of course, Magnus Sutherland acted drunk and came over soon. Then, he wanted to take advantage of us and hit us when we refused…" Tianna started crying again when she thought about it. Blake continued, "Luckily brother Fane and Marshal Dennis heard movements over here when they went to the toilet and called the Goddess of War. The Goddess of War rushed over in time, rescued us, and killed this guy!" "Luckily I was eating nearby and I could come over in a short amount of time. If not, both of them would have been taken advantage of by Magnus Sutherland!" Lana also added angrily. "How...how is that possible? My uncle is not someone like that. He...he was the King of War! He loved his soldiers like his sons and he had a good reputation!" Quil was startled when he saw that Magnus was dead and he still wanted to speak on behalf of Magnus. However, his voice got softer as he spoke because he was not confident about what he was saying. He knew clearly what a hypocrite his uncle was. "He was a King of War? Haha, you want to use him to suppress me? I'm the Goddess of War!" Lana stared at Quil, causing him to move back several steps before saying, "Could what I, the Goddess of War, saw with my own eyes, be fake?"

Chapter 454

Quil's face turned pale when he heard this. Yes, he used to cause fright in others when he said that the King of War was his uncle, his father's god-brother. However, this pretty lady with a nice figure in front of him was the God of War, a stronger existence compared to his uncle. "That's...that's not right…" Master Miller, who was paralyzed on the ground, quickly remembered something. Previously, the King of War Sutherland had entered the room for a while and how was it possible that he did not get what he wanted after such a long period of time? Unless the King of War Sutherland was having a chat with the two pretty ladies in there. If not, under normal circumstances, what happened between them should have ended before the Goddess of War arrived. If King of War Sutherland had not been caught red-handed, the Goddess of War would not have killed him if he refused to admit and there was no evidence, right? "What's wrong?" Lana's face turned cold and walked directly in front of the other party. "A person like you who bullied and seduced the others should die. Die!" Lana was not stupid and she knew that dragging this on would lead to her exposure so she directly slapped between his eyebrows. Bang! A deep sound could be heard and the Master of the Carefree Villa was killed, just like that. "Psst!" Many people took a breath when they saw this scene. This Goddess of War was indeed overbearing as she killed without hesitation. She killed a King of War just like that and this master was too, so easily killed. "Remembering our relationship as war buddies was originally a good theme, a gathering to improve us, veterans!" "I had no idea that some Kings of War would still be corrupted not long after they leave the battlefield and have some money. I hope that everyone would take this as a lesson. If I discover something like this again, there's only one ending for that person and it's death!" "Today, thanks to Fane and Marshal Dennis for immediately notifying me after they heard that something was wrong. This prevented two famous celebrities from being defiled. This is something worth praising. We are still Cathysia's

armies after we're discharged. We still need to contribute to Cathysia and be a good example!" "We need to bravely step up when we discover inequality!" Lana said righteously, praising Fane and Dennis again. She then said to the trembling Carefree Villa's workers, "Pull these two bodies out and feed them to the dogs. Everybody who hasn't finished eating and drinking can continue!" "That's really vile. I have no idea that this Magnus Sutherland was someone like this!" Quin was also very angry as he slapped his thigh. "I'm not continuing drinking as we're almost done with it. I feel disgusted that it was this kind of rubbish who invited me for a drink!" The others naturally had no plans to continue drinking. Many of them stood up and were prepared to leave. They had no idea that Lana thought about it and said at this moment, "Oh yes, it seems to be the seventieth birthday of Old Master Taylor. Fane did something meaningful today and got rid of harm for us. We should also support him, everybody that wants to drink can attend the party!" By her side, Fane's face darkened when he heard this. The Old Master Taylor might have a heart attack if the Goddess of War went there to support him. However, since Lana had already said it, he could not refuse her. He could only smile. "I'll welcome everybody that comes. We'll meet at the Taylor family after ten days!" "It's good that only we know of this matter. Don't go around and tell it to others!" Lana knew that Fane disliked showing-off and she was afraid that it would become a big party, especially when there were only ten days to the birthday dinner. "Alright, then I'll leave first!" Lana looked at Fane after she spoke and left.

Chapter 455

Fane and Dennis left today. Luckily he was smart and he remembered Lana. If not, his identity as a Supreme Warrior could not be concealed if he killed a 7-stars King of War. Quil took his bodyguards, left quickly, and went out to the streets. His face was still very dark when he was in the car. "Motherf*cker, it's all because of that guy named Fane. If it wasn't him, my uncle wouldn't have died!" Quil held both his hands in fist and was

extremely angry. “That guy has some power and he’s not someone a normal bodyguard can handle!” “I had no idea that he was such a busybody. He knew that he and Dennis were not the King of War’s opponent after he discovered it so he called the Goddess of War over. The Goddess of War was someone who couldn’t stand something like this so she killed King of War Sutherland in anger!” One of the bodyguards thought about it and said. “I don’t care. We’ll let this Marshal Dennis go because he’s not an easy target and he’s Quin Hayes’s subordinate! However, Fane is just a normal soldier and me, Quin Hayes, would not let him go easily! After all, the Hayes family is a big family in Sky Dragon City. I’m not even afraid of the Drake family here, how would I be afraid of such a guy?” Quin got increasingly angry when he thought about it. His family had grown stronger over these two years because of their relationship with Magnus. Especially now that Magnus had come back from the battlefield, it made them stronger and fearless. He had no idea that attending a gathering his uncle organized would cause him to be killed. Even the owner of the villa was killed by the Goddess of War. He thought about it for a while before making a call to his father. “Father, Uncle Sutherland… He’s dead!” When he said this, Quil also could not believe that this was real. “Haha, Quin. You cannot make such a joke. Your uncle Sutherland is a 7-stars King of War, how could he die?” Master Xenos laughed and it was apparent that he did not believe in Quil. “Father, it’s true… It’s really the truth. He was killed by the Goddess of War together with the owner of the Carefree Villa!” Quil almost cried as he spoke. He felt extremely bad as Magnus treated his family well and even treated him as his own son. “What!” Master Xenos suddenly stood up and his face darkened. “Did he...offend the Goddess of War? Was it the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs, from the Middle Province? How could he die from a simple lunch and gathering to celebrate the relationship of veterans? How is that possible?” Master Xenos still refused to believe in this reality until now. After all, Magnus was not stupid, how could he offend the Goddess of War so easily? “Father, it happened like this. You too know that Uncle likes

pretty ladies, right? It so happened that Master Miller invited a few pretty celebrities to sing as a performance today. Uncle had his eyes on both Blake and Tianna!" "In the beginning, the Goddess of War was not here so nothing happened…" Quin quickly told his father about everything that happened today in detail. "It's all because of Fane and Dennis. They called the Goddess of War over and after she knew about what happened, she killed Uncle and the master of the villa." "It's not easy to offend that Marshal Dennis. I know that he has a background as he used to be Quin Hayes's subordinate!" Master Xenos's face darkened on the other end of the phone. That was his god-brother. "I know but we have to try our best to kill this Fane!" Quil gritted his teeth and spoke in anger.

Chapter 456

"Didn't you have a few bodyguards with you? It should have been easy to settle that guy if he wasn't even a commander." Master Xenos thought about it and said. "Previously, two of my bodyguards fought with that guy because of some small issues and they couldn't even rival him. They flew out just from a single punch from that guy! I think this guy has the same combat skills as some assistant commanders or head commanders. Hence, I don't think that I can win even if all the bodyguards I brought over attacked him at the same time!" Quil paused and continued "Apart from that, this guy seems to have some medical skills and had rescued Dennis before this. It's best if we can kill him in one blow as we can't afford to let him run away. If not, he would get vigilant and it would be even harder to kill him!" After he spoke, he remembered something and said, "Oh yes, it's Old Master Taylor's birthday ten days later. The Goddess of War praised Fane because of this and said that she would attend the dinner. So, I cannot do anything to Fane before this! If not, it would be dishonoring the Goddess of War and she would definitely be angry!" "Then let's wait till after the Old Master Taylor's birthday party before we do anything! We don't have to send out bodyguards or do anything. Somebody would be able to get rid of Fane!"

Master Xenos smiled coldly on the other end of the phone. “I know that King of War Sutherland has an apprentice and this apprentice is a marshal who’s really close with Magnus. If he knows about how Fane caused the death of his master, he would definitely go after Fane and avenge his master!” “That’s great! Where’s he at? I’ll immediately contact him!” Quil was ecstatic. It was really simple for a powerful marshal to kill a normal soldier. “He’s in Lone City so you’ll need to go there personally. I’ll send his phone number and address to you later! Remember, you have to act after the Old Master Taylor’s birthday party. It would raise suspicion if you do anything before that as your Uncle Sutherland had just died and your bodyguard had a fight with Fane!” Master Xenos reminded Quil before ending the call. At this moment, Fane had already reached home and was resting on his bed, preparing his energy for the fight that night. Not long after that, the incident where King of War Magnus Sutherland was killed by the Goddess of War because he coveted the beauty of famous celebrities was known throughout the entire Middle Province. “Oh my god, Magnus Sutherland is a 7-stars King of War and has meritorious military service. How could he be killed just like that?” James Drake was also surprised when he heard the news. This was someone they wanted to get acquainted with but did not dare to offend. Apart from that, the Goddess of War actually killed this person, who made countless sacrifices for the country, without much reasoning. “He offended the Goddess of War, how could he have survived it?” Spectre Face, one of the three major guardians in the Drake family, smiled bitterly. “It’s nothing when this Goddess of War does nothing, but once she takes action, she surprises everybody in the entire Middle Province!” “I think that she’s done a good job! A good kill!” Tanya Drake raised her head. “Hmph, Blake is my favorite female singer. She’s never had any affairs and is always doing charity work. Shouldn’t that animal, Magnus Sutherland, be killed for wanting to get such a nice singer like her?” “I also feel that he got what he deserved. Tianna is also a nice person and I quite like her songs. Apart from that, she once acted in a drama

and her acting skills were really good! I had no idea that the master of the Carefree Villa would do something so inhumane to get into Magnus Sutherland's good books! It's true that these two got what they deserved!" James nodded in agreement. "Thankfully, it was in the daytime. Apart from that, it so happened that Fane and Dennis were about to go to the toilet when they discovered what was happening. Then, they informed the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs. If it wasn't in the daytime, those two famous celebrities would have been viciously defiled after the veterans' gathering ended!"

Chapter 457

Spectre Face kept quiet before saying. "That's right. We do not know about Fane's true identity but he can't just be a simple person. Would it be possible that the King of War Sutherland was killed by him?" Tanya did a bold guess after she thought about it. "How is that possible!" Spectre Face directly shook her head. "That is impossible. Magnus was not a normal King of War, he was a 7-stars King of War. Even if Fane is a King of War, it would be impossible for him to kill Magnus. Apart from the God of War, other people wouldn't be able to do it!" James also agreed to that. "It's impossible that he was killed by Fane as Fane's not so powerful yet. If not, why did the Goddess of War go there? We also got the news that Fane and Dennis were outside, fighting sound could be heard from the inside. Even the door and the table were broken!" "Sigh, I thought that he was that good!" Tanya felt what her father said made sense and was slightly disappointed. However, she soon remembered something and said in surprise, "Oh yes, I almost forgot something. When we went for supper yesterday, we offended someone known as Brother Tempest from the Eagle Clan. Fane arranged a fight with him tonight at eight at night in the woods outside of the city and he even said that it was fine no matter how many people the other party brought over!" "Really? That's good, I want to go over and take a look!" Spectre Face's eyes lit up after hearing this. "I heard that Fane is really good at fighting and his identity is very mysterious. I'm very interested in him

and I might be able to see something if I go over and take a look!" "Haha, really? I want to go too. However, it's better if we observe from a distance. He cannot discover us!" Tanya thought about it, laughed, and said, "I'm afraid that he would be unhappy if he finds out about us." "That's for sure. Let's bring a telescope with us. We can go over earlier and hide!" Spectre Face thought about it and said. "Prepare a few, I want to take a look too!" They had no idea that James would also be interested and he directly said this. Time flew and the incident where the Goddess of War Lana killed the King of War Sutherland caused many powerful people to be frightened. After Fane woke up, he washed his face and took a look at the time. It was already eight in the evening so he went to the yard and was prepared to drive out. "Daddy, are you going out to play? Kylie wants to go with you too!" He had no idea that before he could board the car, Kylie ran over and held on to the bottom part of Fane's pants with her chubby hands, her eyes were filled with expectations. Fane's heart turned warm when he saw the cute girl in front of him. He held her up and kissed her delicate cheeks. "Daddy has work to do. Can you play in the yard for a short while? When daddy comes back, I'll bring you and mummy for a walk in the park, alright?" "Okay, okay! Kylie will wait for daddy to come back! You need to come back faster!" Kylie immediately got excited. Fane placed her on the ground and drove toward the city gates.

Chapter 458

"Tempest? Do you think that the guy would be so afraid that he won't come?" More than a dozen people stood in the woods outside the city and a bald man said to Brother Tempest, who was beside him. Brother Tempest took a look at the time and it was already five minutes past eight. He frowned. "That guy probably isn't daring enough to come over and might just be duping us." Another guy with yellow hair said, "I'm sure that he's not daring enough to come over. I think this person might be so afraid that he peed in his pants after he knew that Brother Tempest is from the Eagle

Clan. It was obvious that he was stalling time when he dared ask Brother Tempest to bring as many people as he liked. He must have left the Middle Province by bus this morning!" "F*cker, I had no idea that this guy is a coward! He asked me to bring as many people as I want! Humph, if that's the case, I'll make some inquiries about his brother's address. I would definitely kill his brother and play his daughter to make him regret!" Brother Tempest humphed and held his hands into fists after he heard this. At this moment, in an old rented house, Tiger sat there with a frown and a cold look on his face. The woman beside Tiger looked at him and said, "Tiger, you're worried about your brother, Fane, right? Sigh, I'm also quite worried. If it wasn't for him, we wouldn't be able to leave last night." "No way! I cannot let him bear everything by himself. If he dies tonight, I will blame myself for the rest of my life. I will never be able to be in peace!" Tiger thought about it before finally standing up and went into the kitchen looking for a kitchen knife. "Tiger, if you don't consider me, shouldn't you consider on behalf of our child? How old is he? What should he do if you die? He would be known as a bastard child, a child that doesn't have a father!" Tiger's wife looked at the child who was fast asleep in the baby cot while pulling Tiger's sleeve. "Honey, I'm sorry. I'm so sorry!" "If I die and cannot come back tonight, you can just marry a rich man. Find a richer person so that our child would not suffer like me, his useless father! You're pretty. I'm sure you can enjoy life after you find a rich man who treats you well!" Tiger turned around with tears in his eyes as he dared not looked into his wife's eyes. "Tiger, you're really willing to leave me and our son? Look at your son, look at how much he looks like you? Tiger, I beg you, don't go!" Tears fell from the woman's eyes as he begged Tiger. "That's the Eagle Clan. Even if it's the other party's vassal force, it's not something the two of you can settle. You going there is just a suicidal action!" Tiger closed his eyes and kept silent for some time as his heart hurt. However, he still pulled his wife's hand away with all his might and said firmly, "He asked the other party for a fight last night in order to save us. He went on the battlefield and sacrificed

a lot for Cathysia as he experienced so many life and death situations. I am also a man. I can't fight for my country but I cannot hide when I know that my big brother might die!" After he said this, he looked at the child who was sleeping soundly on the bed and continued, "I don't want to live in regret for the rest of my life. I also don't want my son to feel that I'm weak. I am a man, I cannot continue being so cowardly!" After he spoke, he directly pushed his wife away and strode out. "Tiger!" The woman fell on the ground and could not stop sobbing. "Taxi, I'm going out of the city!" Tiger stopped a taxi with a kitchen knife in his hand. He then gave the other party the 200 bucks he had with him. "I'll give all of this to you!" The driver only looked at Tiger in surprise before driving out of the city. … "A car is coming toward us!" "It seems to be a sports car, Porsche!" "Yes, it's red in color!" At this moment, Brother Tempest and the others in the woods were so angry that they were about to leave.

Chapter 459

They suddenly saw a sports car coming over. "Could it be the guy who made an appointment to fight us?" The bald man touched his head. "This guy is quite rich!" "How could it be him? If he's rich, why would he bring those two pretty ladies out to eat at the roadside stalls?" Brother Tempest said with a frown. The car soon stopped not far away from them. A man came down from the car and walked over. As he walked nearer, Brother Tempest said in surprise, "It's really that bastard!" He waved his hand after he spoke and a dozen people immediately walked over and surround Fane. "Young man, you said eight o'clock, it's already eight-thirty. How dare you!" "That's right. We thought that you would admit that you're a coward and dared not come here!" Several members of the Eagle Clan immediately said to Fane. "Is this important?" Fane was stunned. He took a piece of White-Sand cigarette out, lit it, and took a smoke. "F*ck you. How can a person who drives a Porsche 911, smokes White Sand cigarette?" One of them took a look, was speechless, and almost vomited blood. This guy was really funny.

He was so rich but he smokes such a low-grade cigarette and f*cking brought his chick to eat at the roadside stalls. “Bullshit, you’re late for half an hour. If this is not important, what is?” Brother Tempest was very hungry. After all, he was the one who gathered these people. If he was being stood up, he would lose his honor. Luckily this guy still came over. “The most important thing is all of you are going to die. The matter of me being late is naturally not important! It’s actually quite good. Isn’t it good that you guys get to live an extra thirty minutes?” Fane shrugged his shoulders and smiled coldly. “Young man, you’re not modest. Aren’t you clear about who’s the one who lived an extra thirty minutes?” The bald man also laughed coldly without any fear. “Haha, didn’t I ask you to get as many people as you can? So, this is your power? How dare you bully my brother with such little power. Haha, you’re really suicidal!” Fane laughed. The other party only brought a dozen people and it was obviously beyond his expectation. “A dozen people is not enough?” Brother Tempest was stunned. “You’re really not modest!” “It’s so troublesome that I need to run over here for a dozen people! However, this is also good. I can settle you guys earlier, go back home, and accompany my daughter to go shopping!” When Fane remembered what he promised his daughter, a sweet smile appeared on his face. “I’m afraid that you won’t have this chance!” An old man walked over. “I am one of the Eagle Clan’s masters and it’s nothing for me to fight one hundred people by myself. Do we need a lot of people to kill you?” After the old man spoke, he directly stretched one of his hands into an eagle claw. He moved two steps forward and scratched toward Fane’s neck.

Chapter 460

This old man looked old and his hair was slightly white. However, he seemed very energetic. The speed of his attack was fast and his actions were quite crafty. Fane stretched out his hand and caught the other party’s wrist like a metal clamp. He pulled with all his energy, causing the other party to lose balance. Fane then let go of that person and kicked him. Bang! The

other party flew 7 to 8 meters away before landing on the ground because of the kick. His head tilted to one side and died after he vomited blood. Everything happened so quickly and the old man died within a few breaths. The bald man and the others were stunned. This old man was slightly boasting when he said that he was a master. However, he could fight against ten people by himself if he was facing a normal person. At least, he was considered a good fighter. However, such a person died from just a kick in such a short amount of time. “I’ve already said that this person is a very good fighter. He’s very powerful and speedy. Old Levi must have underestimated the enemy and did not pay attention!” Brother Tempest was frightened and he directly clapped his hands. “It seems that only these people are really insufficient!” He then clapped his hand. One by one, figures slowly stood up and walked toward them from the bushes behind them. Some of these people held knives and some held metal tubes. They looked at Fane with cold expressions on their faces. Fane was stunned when he saw that there were so many people. “That’s quite a lot of people! Not bad! There should be around two to three hundred people here!” “Haha, what do you think? I thought that I didn't need to use these brothers if you came alone! I had no idea that even though you came alone, you seemed quite good at fighting! However, don’t worry. We are not powers that rely on the Eagle Clan, everybody here are members of the Eagle Clan’s headquarters. They are all good fighters, not normal street punks!” The bald man laughed. “Do you think that you will still have a chance to go shopping with your daughter today?” “Sure, it just means that I would need to use some time!” Fane shrugged. “That’s quite a lot of people!” At this moment, Tanya, who was hiding at the higher ground on the other side and was using a telescope to look over there, couldn’t help but speak softly. “Yes, I thought that they only brought a dozen people over here in the beginning. I had no idea that they brought so many people here!” James was surprised. “Not even a Head Commander could deal with so many people. He needs to have at least the same fighting skills of a major, right?” “It needs to be at least the

same as a marshal!" Spectre Face, who was by the side, had a dark expression on his face. "These people have tokens by the side of their waists. It means that they are not scattered small forces that rely on the Eagle Clan but they are people from the Eagle Clan's headquarters. Eagle Clan doesn't have the same amount of people when compared to the other clans, but they are all elites. I heard that many of them can fight so even if there are only around 300 people here, they have the fighting ability of 900 people!" He paused before continuing, "Especially that bald man. He's one of the Eagle Clan's four masters. His fighting power is almost the same as a marshal. If it's not compatible with a marshal, it's not comparable to a major!" "If that's the case, Fane would have a hard fight!" Tanya frowned. He thought about it and said to James, "Father, if Fane cannot handle it by himself, can we ask Spectre Face to help him? It would be different if the two of them work together. He would at least share half the pressure!" James nodded. "Sure, people like the Eagle Clan do not do legal businesses and they are not good people. It would be good if we can make them pay a little! However, Spectre Face has to cover his face as well as he cannot be recognized by the people of the Eagle Clan. They have so many people. If a few escaped and knew that it was us, the Drake family, who secretly made a move, I'm afraid that the Eagle Clan's headquarters would seek revenge from us!" "Yes, master. I understand!"

Chapter 461

Spectre Face nodded. However, he had just finished speaking when he saw a car driving over from the city door. "Why is there a taxi driving over here?!" "It stopped and a person came down, rushing toward Fane!" Tanya looked carefully. "He seems to be here to help Fane! He has a kitchen knife with him!" "Ah!" Tiger saw from far away that there were almost 300 people standing in front of Fane. His heart was chilled when he saw this scene. Surely, Fane was fighting alone there. It seemed that Fane was doomed. This was his big brother. When they had a good relationship, he

addressed Fane as his big brother. He had no idea that Fane would directly face death so peacefully for him and his wife. Tiger was very moved. He gritted his teeth and rushed forward while raising his kitchen knife. Although Fane was moved when he saw Tiger, the expression on his face darkened. This guy was not here to help when he came over here at this moment. He was here to increase his trouble. When Tiger was around 20 meters away from him, Fane directly waved his hand and yelled. “Stand there!” Tiger immediately stopped. His hands still held onto the kitchen knife up and was stunned. “What are you doing here? Go back and accompany your child!” Fane had a chilled expression on his face. “You’re a burden to me if you come here. It means that you look down on your big brother’s strength!” “Big brother, I...I cannot look on as you go on a suicide mission! They have so many people!” Tiger had no idea if he should continue rushing forward or what. He could only stand there with a helpless expression on his face. It seemed that Fane was really unhappy that he was here to help. He felt that although he could not help much, killing one meant one less enemy. He seemed to have made up his mind that he would sacrifice! “Die your f*cking head! What does this small number of people mean!” Fane flipped his hand and a dozen silver needles appeared from nowhere. He then waved his hand with all his might. Psst, psst, psst! Although it was summer and the lights on Fane’s car were still on, but, it was still very dark. Fane waved his hand and the silver needles flew out one after another extremely speedily. The people on the opposite side could not notice the silver needles as the needles were too fast. They only saw Fane waving his hand, felt pain on their heads, and their eyes blacked out before they fell down. A dozen silver needles actually killed more than thirty people in a short moment. These people stood behind each other. Hence, each of Fane’s silver needles directly pierced through their heads. Some of the needles directly killed three in a row. After that, it flew into a tree not far away, piercing more than halfway through. It could be seen that Fane’s flying silver needles move had already been trained to a terrifying level.

“What’s going on?” Sceptre Face was stunned. He had no idea how Fane took action as they were even further away. He could only see Fane waving his hand and those people had already fallen down!”

Chapter 462

Flying silver needles were one of Fane’s secret moves. He practiced this move for almost one year. He could easily kill the enemies with this secret move on the battlefield. However, there were some who felt that something was wrong and dodged the attack as they moved slightly. It seemed that there were several good fighters among the Eagle Clan’s people. Even if that was the case, the group of people in front of him was stunned from being frightened. “What’s happening?” “How-how did they fall? Why did they fall from just a wave of his hand? This is too weird?!” “Get up! They seemed to be dead… They’re all dead!” These people who did not put much attention to Fane just now were already stunned from this weird scene. “Tiger, I didn’t have to use this move originally! The reason being I don’t need to use it to fight with these useless people. I used it to show you and make you understand clearly that if you come over, you wouldn’t be of any help apart from adding more trouble to the mix! Me alone is sufficient!” Fane turned around in displease and said to Tiger indifferently. “Big brother, you...you are too good!” Tiger was so frightened that he trembled as he spoke because he did not see Fane do anything. “Spectre Face, did you see clearly what happened?” Not far away, Tanya, who was spying on the situation immediately asked. “No...I did not see clearly. He just waved his hand like that. He should have thrown some very sharp hidden weapons!” Spectre Face swallowed his saliva. “I might be able to see it if it’s during the daytime. However, under these circumstances, how can I see clearly?!” At this moment, Fane suddenly grasped in front of him and the blue veins on his arm swelled. The silver needles on the tree shivered unstoppably and escaped little by little. Psst, psst, psst! The silver needles flew back again and were caught in Fane’s hand. The silver needles actually disappeared

very quickly as he flipped his palm. The people in front of him were so afraid that their faces turned pale when they saw Fane stretched out his hand and grasped it into a fist. Quite a lot of people immediately hid a few steps away. However, they discovered that they were fine after some time. “F*ck, gave me a fright!” The bald man gritted his teeth and said to everybody else. “Go fight him. We have so many people, go chop him up close!” Although the thirty people died a weird death and it caused them to be frightened, they were people who lived under attacks. They might have had the realization of dying since early on. The balm man yelled loudly. He believed they had the numbers and as long they rushed forward, they had the hopes of killing Fane. “Attack!” The remaining 200 people rushed toward Fane while shouting loudly. Fane directly stepped forward and moved. He did not walk backward as he faced so many people. He quickly snatched a knife and rushed toward the group of people. Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh! The following scene caused Spectre Face, James, and the others, who were observing in the dark, to be totally shocked. They could not see how Fane moved. Fane rushed into the crowd and was like a meat grinder, shining non-stop in there. The knife reflected and the people who rushed forward fell one after another. Fane was too fast and the people from the Eagle Clan fell one after another. Blood flowed, seeping into the earth under them and soon the thick bloody smell spread out. “This…”

Chapter 463

The kitchen knife in Tiger’s hand had already fallen to the ground and he was already stunned from being frightened. The scene in front of him was unimaginable, not even in his dreams. Fane was being surrounded by so many people and he thought that Fane would definitely die. However, he saw so many figures falling down one after another. Blood flew all across the sky. The people from the Eagle Clan gradually decreased and soon there were only 70 to 80 people left. Brother Tempest and the bald man had a cut on their arms respectively and blood kept flowing. They had already

retreated to another side. They were alive but were scared to their wits. Was the person inside even a human? His combat power was really scary. “F*ck, is this guy one of the King of War?” The bald man swallowed his saliva and looked at the people at his side as a dozen more died again. “Run quickly!” The bald man was thoroughly frightened. He dared not stay and wanted to escape. Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh! A few more moves and many people fell again. “You want to leave?” Once Fane saw that the other party wanted to run, he stepped forward and his body slightly rushed forward. He was like a leopard and he rushed more than ten meters forward. He caught up to the other party and stroked across the opponent’s neck with a backhand move. The bald man fell and Brother Tempest was also settled by Fane with a cut. At this moment, only around 20 people were left. Fane did not hesitate. He rushed forward and killed them one after another. Fane looked at his watch after he threw the knife in his hand on the floor and was stunned. “It seems that talking to them wasted quite some time. This actually took me ten minutes!” Fane settled around 300 people within ten minutes. These ten minutes even included chatting with the other party and smoking a cigarette. However, Fane still felt that he used too much time. If this was known by other people, they would be surprised to an extreme extent. “Tiger, let’s go. What are you still standing here for? Let me send you to the ground floor of your house. I still need to go back and accompany my daughter shopping!” Fane looked at his clothes and discovered that there was some blood on it. He directly took off his clothes and changed into new ones he got from his car. He looked at his shoes and there was some blood under it. He rubbed it against the grass before entering the car. “Big-big brother. You-you are too good! Am I dreaming?!” Tiger sat in the car but was still unable to process what happened. If he had not made up his mind to come over and bear everything with Fane, he would not have known that Fane was this good. No wonder Fane was daring enough to let the other party bring as many people as they liked. Fane directly pinched Tiger’s thigh. “Is this painful?” “Ah, pain...pain, pain!” Tiger yelled out loudly but joy was written all over

his face. “Big brother, you’re too good to be a normal soldier. It seems that they gave you quite a huge amount of retiring reward, you bought such a nice car.” Fane smiled indifferently. “What if this is a rental?” Soon, Fane drove his car to Tiger’s house before saying, “Don’t do deliveries tomorrow. Wait for me at home with your wife. I’ll come over to visit you as I have nothing to do tomorrow morning!” “Okay, okay, okay!” Tiger was very excited. He quickly got down from the car and saw Fane off. “Child, your father, he…” The eyes of Tiger’s wife were swollen from all the crying. She looked at the baby in the baby cot and as she spoke, her eyes turned fuzzy again. At this moment, Tiger strode in. “Honey, I-I’m back! I didn’t die, haha!”

Chapter 464

”Hubby!” The woman ran over in excitement when she saw Tiger. She rushed into his arms and hugged him tightly, afraid that everything was a dream. “Have you...you thought about it carefully? You’re not going?” Obviously, the woman thought that Tiger was reluctant to leave her and their child so he returned. “No. F*ck me, it’s too shocking! I rushed over with a kitchen knife and a death wish. As a result, my big brother refused my help and asked me to look while standing far away! Oh my god, there were almost 300 people. My big brother waved his hand and killed 30 people. It was like seeing a ghost! Apart from that, he killed so many people in less than ten minutes. All of them! None of them survived… My big brother...he...he was like a god!” Tiger said vividly with an exaggerated expression and did not stop his hand gestures. He wanted to show Fane’s actions all over again. His wife was already stunned. She originally thought that her husband did not go when he did. However, she had no idea that this big brother was so strong and killed so many people alone. “Then did he get hurt? Which hospital is he in? Let’s quickly go over and visit him?” The woman wiped her tears dry. She soon thought that although he killed so many people and was very strong, he would have at least eight or ten cuts

on his body. “Hurt? Are you kidding me? Didn’t I say it? My big brother is like a god! How would he get hurt? Those people did not even touch his hair! Let me tell you, the so-called Eagle Clan might be closed down if they don’t offend my big brother and continue causing trouble for my big brother!” Tiger got more and more agitated as he spoke as if he was already that good. “That’s good. That’s really good!” The woman jumped up in excitement. “I’m actually very worried about that big brother of yours. I’m afraid that he would die for my family. By that time, I will blame myself too. It’s so good that he’s so strong!” Tiger held his wife’s face. “I’m sorry, wife for letting you worry together with me. Everything’s my fault. I’m useless, poor and I caused you to suffer together with me!” “Silly, I’m not with you for your money. As long as you treat me well, we can earn money together! We can save up money and try to buy a house in this city area. My requirement is not high, I only need a two-bedroom house. That way, we can have our own place and we don’t need to move around or deal with the landlords!” The woman rolled her eyes at Tiger. She had no idea that there would be a time where the guy would speak romantically to her. “Oh yes, Honey. My big brother asked me to not work tomorrow and he’ll come over to visit us and our son tomorrow morning!” Tiger quickly remembered it and said to the woman. However, the woman frowned. “We’ve just paid the rent a few days ago and our wages will only be paid to us after a few days. We only have five hundred bucks with us and we need to be frugal with it. I’m afraid that we don’t have so much money to treat him well!” Tiger also frowned and his face darkened. “We...we still need to prepare a table full of nice dishes too. How about this, our child still has sufficient milk powder and we can eat instant noodles for the next few days. We need to come up with 400 bucks to buy dishes and wine to serve my big brother well. If it wasn’t for him, we might not be able to keep our lives!” The woman did not hesitate and directly nodded. At this moment, Fane had already driven back home. “Where did you go? Fane asked you to bring her to go shopping, right?” When Selena saw Fane came back, she hugged Kylie and said to

Fane while rolling her eyes. “Of course it’s true!” Fane smiled, walked forward, and took over Kylie. “Let’s go, honey. I haven’t accompanied you shopping. The moon tonight looks good. Let us take a good walk and have a chat as a family!”

Chapter 465

”You even commented on how the moonlight is. Since when did you turn into a nerd?!” Selena felt warm in her heart and she promised with a sweet smile at the corners of her mouth. The family of three walked along the street happily. “Honey, do you see anything you like? Let me buy it for you!” Fane asked as they walked. “There’s nothing I have my eyes on. You bought some clothes for me when you came back and it’s good that I have enough to wear!” Selena said after she thought about it. “Daddy, daddy, I want some toys! Can I?” Beside them, Kylie said in embarrassment. Fane felt lamenting inwardly. Yes, he was already back for so many days but he had not bought any toys for his daughter. When the family was poor previously, she must have only looked on as the other kids played with their toys. “Sure, what does Kylie want? Daddy will buy everything for you! As long as Kylie likes it, daddy can buy every toy available in a shop for you!” Fane laughed and joked. “Thank you, daddy! Daddy, I only want to buy a Barbie doll and a small yellow duck!” Kylie was extremely excited and her face was filled with joy. “Oh my, my daughter is so understanding. She actually knows how to save money for her daddy!” Fane was quite happy with Kylie’s answer. “I’m already satisfied. Before this, I could only look at them. Now, I can own two toys that I like in one go and that’s really good!” Kylie said with a smile. The three of them walked and reached a shop filled with plenty of toys. “That’s great, a Barbie doll! I want this Barbie doll!” Kylie directly ran over, took one, and hugged it in her arms. Fane had complicated feelings when he saw his daughter’s happy look. This was his first time buying a toy for her. “Yellow duck! Daddy, there’s one there!” Kylie soon saw a little yellow duck and she ran over. However, there

was only one of it and it was placed quite high, Kylie could not reach it even when she was on the tip of her toes. Fane smiled as he stretched his hand to take it. “Mummy, I want it. I also want the little yellow duck!” At this moment, a young boy was acting coquettishly to a woman. Fane had already taken the little yellow duck in his hands and passed it to Kylie. “Kylie, come!” Kylie had just received the yellow duck when the woman walked two steps forward and snatched it over. “We’re buying this toy!” “You’re buying it?” Fane’s face darkened when he heard it. “I’ve already taken it and passed it to my daughter. How can you buy it?” “You haven’t paid, right?” The woman smiled coldly. She hugged her hands in front of her chest and said with an arrogant expression, “My son has his eyes on it. You can go search for it at other shops. There’s none here!”

Chapter 466

Helpless, Kylie fought back her tears. She could only look at the little yellow toy duck with eager eyes. The woman handed her son the little yellow duck. The son felt triumphant and humored at the fact he had mugged Kylie. “The toy was in our hands first, and you snatched it from us,” Fane sneered. “Why should we be the ones who should ‘get it somewhere else’?” “That’s right. You’re so ill-mannered! Don’t you understand the meaning of ‘first come, first served’?” Selena was just as angry as she reprimanded the woman. “Hehe, I don’t care. It’s in MY hands now, so it’s mine. Besides, you haven’t paid for it!” that woman exclaimed arrogantly. What happened next made the woman stunned silent. Fane extended his hands and seized the little yellow toy duck. “Oh, in that case, it’s mine now!” “You…” She pointed at Fane’s nose. “Well, this isn’t yours because you haven’t paid for this.” A tooth for a tooth, Fane gave the woman a taste of her own medicine. “Why would you snatch a toy from a kid as an adult?!” The woman was so mad she had no other comebacks. “That’s not gentlemanly at all!” “Wha...wha...” The little boy then bawled as Fane snatched the toy in his hands. “Look… Look at you! An adult who snatched a toy from a kid! What

a shame! And look what you did to my son?! How are you going to compensate for this?" The woman panicked as her son cried and barked at Fane incessantly. The saleswoman on the side could not stand this barbaric sight anymore and finally stood up for Fane's family. "Madam, they had their eyes on the toy first," she spoke firmly. "I suggest you check out the toy shops nearby; they must have the same model." "Are you hearing yourself?" The woman's nerves frazzled even more as more patrons surrounded them. She pointed at the saleswoman angrily and yelled, "It was in OUR hands first before this young man snatched it from my son! Besides, the 'gentleman' should always let the lady choose first. Should he not be ashamed of himself?" Fane chuckled at the woman's pitiable comeback. "I might've let you have the toy if you had acted nicely, but you didn't! I don't have to be nice to such an unreasonable and uncivilized woman." Fane smiled then continued without restraint, "It's only because you're a woman that I hadn't laid a single finger on you. Otherwise, you'd be lying on the floor right now!" "Okay, so we both had our eyes on this toy. If that's the case, let's see who can pay more. The one who pays more will get the toy!" The woman realized that she had no grounds to retaliate. Even though she felt slightly guilty, she still wanted the last word. Any other day, she would have gotten things to work her way by doing this. Others would not dare to mess with her as she was always lavishly dressed in branded goods. Who would have known that she would encounter a man like Fane, who would actually dare to go against her and fight with her publicly. "Madam, we only sell fixed priced items here. We won't accept any more than the fixed price, even if you're willing to pay," the saleswoman reminded as she bit her lips. "Shut up!" that barbaric woman shouted at her. "I have money, and I'm willing to pay more for this! Stop yapping and just take it! Who are you to be defending the ungentlemanly man here?!"

Chapter 467

“I’m sorry. I’m only gentlemanly to women who are worthy of it.” Fane smiled before he continued, “Being a gentleman to a shrew is a disgrace to the culture.” “You…” Face reddened in anger, she swung her palm and aimed for Fane’s cheek. That caught Fane off-guard; he did not expect this woman to act as violent as she was being ridiculous. He caught the woman’s hand in an iron grip so powerful that the woman could not pull herself away. “Are you trying to beat a woman, being a man like yourself?” she mocked again. Other patrons who witnessed the scene shared the same thought that the woman was ill-mannered. It seemed this woman had encountered a worthy match—Fane did not seem to be giving in to her madness. “Haha! I could do it since you instigated it, but that will dirty my hands.” Fane laughed. He grabbed the toys and passed them to the saleswoman. “I’d like to pay now,” Fane simply spoke. “Let’s not bother this woman.” “Very well, bastard. You’re bullying me, a single mother, and my child. I’ll make you regret your actions!” The woman pointed at Fane, right at his nose, before leaving with her son. “Aih…” sighed the saleswoman. There were many customers just like that unreasonable woman, but many others chose to give in. Fane putting that woman to shame satisfied the onlookers. “Well done! She needed a lesson.” “That’s right. Little darling here picked it first, and she came right in and grabbed it! We saw what happened!” “Mhmm! What an arrogant b*tch, paying double doesn’t change the fact that she’s a b*tch!” The patrons started discussing after the woman’s departure. “You’re a hero, Daddy! That auntie is a bad woman!” Kylie exclaimed the moment they stepped out of the store. She looked at her father with eyes filled with admiration. “You must remember, Kylie. We must be kind, but we can’t be kind to just everybody. Bad people like that auntie need a lesson.” Fane smiled and held her little chubby hands. “Dear, let’s sit down at the park up ahead,” Selena suggested. “Sure! I remember there’s a lotus pond in that park. It’s summer now, so the lotuses should be blooming.” Fane nodded. Just as they were making their way to the park, a few men in black suits chased after them and blocked their way. The woman from the store soon

caught up to them with her son in her hands. Panting, she yelled, “Here they are. Hmph! Not only did they take away toys from Hammy, but they made him cry too!” Beside this woman was a man with a big beer belly. He had obviously struggled chasing after Fane and his family just by the sight of him panting his lungs out. “Aren’t you gutsy, young man! How dare you take away my son’s toy? Why are you fighting over a toy with a child? Looks like I have to teach you some manners!” The fat man could only reach Fane after pausing and resting for a moment.

Chapter 468

Fane burst out in laughter. “This is going to be fun!” It seemed that this woman was married to a rich businessman, and they came with bodyguards. It was no surprise she was so ill-mannered. Nonetheless, they should consider themselves unlucky for encountering Fane. “What are you laughing at? My bodyguards have you surrounded. You should know what’ll happen next.” the plump man sneered. “You’re right. He’s just a kid, and so are you! An unreasonable mom, and a judgemental dad... With parents like you two, it’s no wonder why your kid acts like this,” Fane spoke nonchalantly, shrugging as he did. “We’ve had our eyes on the toy first. Your wife was the one who took the toy out of MY daughter’s hands. You’re blinded by lies!” Selena added. Such a shameless *ss to be chasing after them for that incident. “Hmph! I don’t care if it was my wife who took it from you, you still made Hammy cry! I won’t let you go for that! I won’t accept it even if you want to return us the toy now. Go get him, boys!” the man ordered his bodyguard to charge at Fane. “Ha! Consider yourself unlucky for stepping on Brother Hugh’s toe!” Some of the men closed in on Fane. Alas, the bodyguards soon found themselves dropping like flies as they wailed like a baby. In comparison to the bodyguard from the Clark’s and the Hugo’s, they were mere chicken feed. “Darling, what...” The woman was scared sh*tless. “Your turn, Fatty!” Fane beckoned to the portly man. This supposedly respectable ‘Brother Hugh’ was just as scared with sweat

dripping down his face. Looking at how Fane had taken down a dozen of his bodyguards in mere seconds, it was only natural he was afraid of Fane. “That’s...too fast!” Even Selena was taken aback. She had seen Fane fight but not at such a speed. Had Fane levelled up, or did he not show her his true powers before? “Sir… Good sir… Forgive me, I’ll back off. We don’t have to go through this for such a small matter…” The man’s voice was evidently quivering as he laughed awkwardly. “Small? Then what was all this bodyguard about? If I wasn’t strong enough, I’m afraid that my wife and daughter would be beaten up, not just me.” Fane looked at the man like he was a joke. “I’ll… How bout I’ll pay you money and we call this a deal? How bout that...?” The fatty suggested after giving it some thought. He thought money could be the solution to all problems. “No, thank you!” Fane declined. “There’s one thing you can do, though. Your wife is at fault here, so go slap her three times and I’ll let you go. Otherwise, I can make sure you’ll be hospitalized for the next whole month. She, who made the mistake, should be punished!” “Sir, I haven’t even revealed the amount, and you should consider… I’ll give you twenty thousand! Twenty thousand should be enough as compensation!” The fatty thought Fane declined the offer at first because he had not disclosed the amount of compensation. Fane could have thought it was only a couple hundred bucks. Twenty thousand should be enough for Fane to let them go for such a small altercation. “It’s not about the money!” Fane icily responded. He paced toward the fatty. “Option one: I beat you up. Option two: You slap your wife. Hard enough so I can hear the sound! If I can’t hear it, slap again until I hear it.” The fatty turned around and looked at the woman behind him. He hesitated for a while… “I dare you!”

Chapter 469

The woman glared at the plump man. “Fatty Walter, you won’t get away with it if you dare touch me!” She merely finished her sentence when Fatty looked at her, with fire in his eyes, and paced toward her. Piak! He slapped

her three times. “I indulged you too much, you b*tch! Why do you keep causing me trouble? Who’s the f*cking boss here?! Without me, you’re nothing!” It seemed Fatty had been immensely frustrated with this woman and finally showed her what a man like him was made of. It felt good to vent his anger on her. “You...” It dawned on the woman that she had to rely on this man for power; she only dared to act recklessly because of this man. She had no guts to fight back when it was the same man who slapped her. “Scram!” Fane yelled as he looked at the quarreling couple and the bodyguards aroused from unconsciousness. Those guards fled like there was no tomorrow. “Kylie, are you okay?” Fane turned around to make sure he did not scare Kylie, his tone much gentler this time. “No, Daddy. They’re bad guys and they deserved that. When I grow up next time, I wanna be like Daddy! No one will bully me then!” Little Kylie then struck a Superman-like pose, though adorably so. “Let’s go, you two.” Selena looked at the father-daughter duo and they walked toward the park. Fane was at peace as he could have a moment with his family—walking by the lotus pond, listening to the croaking frogs, and enjoying the summer breeze. As they were crossing a wooden bridge, Kylie pointed forward and asked, “Daddy, Mommy, look! Why are the uncle and auntie over there kissing?” Selena and Fane looked in the direction where Kylie pointed and, under the light of dusk, they saw a couple kissing each other in a passionate embrace. “Hush, Kylie. We should go home.” Abashed, Selena’s face reddened as she covered Kylie’s eyes. Selena turned around, ready to leave. “Yes, let’s go. We’ve had fun today, and we’ve got work tomorrow,” Fane agreed. “Hey, Daddy, Mommy… Are they going to make babies?” Kylie asked just as they exited the park. Her daughter’s question made Selena flabbergasted. She had no idea how to answer Kylie. She was only four years old! “You’ll know when you grow up, Kylie!” Fane answered. “Hmph! I’m not a three-year-old anymore, I’m not too young to know!” She then quickly added, “Daddy, Mommy, why don’t you two kiss?” Selena’s face blushed even more. She stared at Little Kylie and quipped, “What are you talking about? Never talk

about that, Kylie!" "Why do you want Daddy to kiss Mommy, Kylie?" Fane was curious. "I want a brother, Daddy. You two should kiss. I'll have a brother after that, right?" Kylie answered cheekily.

Chapter 470

With that, Selena's petite face and ears were entirely flushed. She knew very well Kylie asked purely out of innocence, which made it much harder to answer her. She was even more startled when Fane smiled and replied, "Alright, alright, don't you worry. I promise you'll have a younger sister or brother. Mom and Dad will have a few babies so you'll have a few siblings to play with." Selena was so embarrassed that she pinched Fane's back. "Ah!" Fane's yelp escaped him by reflex, but he quickly added, "The night is so beautiful." The family of three quickly arrived home. Kylie was fast asleep in bed when Fane came out of the shower. Fane returned to his mattress and got ready to hit the sack. Just as he was getting ready, Selena turned around from the bed and looked at him. "Honey… Why don't you sleep on the bed tonight? Consider it your reward for performing well as a father and a husband." Selena blushed as she finished speaking. Fane squatted happily on the floor as he heard that. Softly, he whispered, "Honey, have you...been considering to give Kylie a sibling she asked for? Great! Me too!" Selena rolled her eyes at Fane. "Pfft! What are you talking about? I pity you for sleeping on the floor, so I'll let you sleep on the bed tonight. Kylie won't know about this as she's fast asleep." "Just...one night? Sleeping and nothing else?" Fane was slightly disappointed as he thought he would have a chance with Selena. "Cut it, you! Kylie is sleeping just right there, and I'm not going to risk her seeing anything. We can think about it after we've moved and when she has her own room. Also, I've told you that you have to prove yourself to Grandpa before I accept you as my husband." Selena tucked Kylie toward the center to make some space for Fane. "So, are you coming up or what? Otherwise, I'm going to hit the sack. Remember: I'm only letting you come up because I'm in a good mood

today.” “Of course I’m coming! I’m not a fool.” Fane climbed straight into bed beside Selena. Selena could deny it all she wanted, but her heartbeat rate increased as soon as Fane cuddled beside her. One should consider this their first intimacy as what happened last time—when she conceived Kylie—was an accident. They had no physical contact for five years after that. One could say she was as pure as a dove. “Honey, so you were saying… We can’t do that because Kylie doesn’t have her own room? We should go buy a house then—a big villa,” Fane suggested after giving it a thought. “That way, we can fit the whole family and Kylie can have her own room, and we can—” “Pervert!” Selena stared at him, then said, “Actually… I don’t feel comfortable staying with Taylor's because I’ll have to see that bastard, Ivan, every day there. It’s a bummer. At the same time, I do wish to see Grandpa inviting us to stay with them, because that’ll mean that they’ve recognized you as a family.” “So you don’t feel comfortable staying with the Taylor family? That’s an easy problem to solve! We can buy a villa, it’s not that expensive!” Fane proposed. “And we don’t have to wait until Grandpa invites us to stay with them; I can just fulfill those two promises they asked for. By then, it doesn’t matter if they want us to stay with them. The decision will be in our hands.” “That’s true!”

Chapter 471

“But we don’t have money now, so we’ll have to wait for two months before buying a house,” Selena spoke, seemingly approving Fane’s idea. “You already gave two thousand as a bride-price to Ma, so you don’t have to give anything anymore. What’s left is Grandfather’s birthday gift and the ten-million compensation to Ivan. I’ve got an idea: Since you’re on excellent terms with Miss Tanya, perhaps you could ask her to give you your first month’s salary a few days earlier than the actual payday. Problem solved!” She paused for a moment, caught up in her thoughts, before adding, “Wait till you get another month’s salary, then we’ll go and scout for villas. It’s not like we can’t stay here for now.” “I don’t think we can stay here, though!

“Kylie doesn’t have a room to herself, and you definitely won’t allow me to touch you!” Fane was firm in his decision as he spoke, “I’ll go and see if there are any suitable houses for us when I have the time. We’ll see after we’ve set our eyes on something.” “Your job is pretty free and easy, huh?” Selena did not know whether to laugh or cry. She felt like Fane was being a rather irresponsible bodyguard, getting off work early when he had personal errands to run. There were probably no other jobs that were as easy-going as this in the world. The couple quietly chattered among themselves. Eventually, they drifted off to sleep as the night thickened. The next morning, Selena jolted awake and told her husband to get up, afraid that their daughter would see him on the bed. Only then did she wake Kylie up. The two quickly set off to go about their separate routines for the day. In the Drake family’s estate, James, Spectre Face, and Tanya were all utterly stupefied by last night’s events. There were 300 Eagle clanmates who came, and each of them was powerful fighters in their own right. One of them had been the Eagle Clan’s top fighter, too. His fighting prowess was comparable to that of a general, yet he had perished under Fane’s indescribable power. They came to check on the corpses the moment Fane left. More specifically, the 300 odd ones who Fane had killed with a wave of his hand. They searched for nearly half a day, yet they found that the bodies were strewn everywhere. They had no way of telling the 300 odd men who had died first. In the end, Spectre Face could only sputter a single sentence: “He probably has some sort of hidden weapon!” Moreover, according to their deductive reasoning, it was confirmed that Fane was a God of War with his tremendous fighting prowess. If he was not one of the Nine Gods of War, then who was he? It was possible that Fane—this God of War—was ranked highly. Tanya then came before her father. “That jerk Fane called earlier and said he had errands to run in the morning, so he isn’t coming around. He’ll come by in the afternoon,” she muttered, dissatisfied. “Whatever he likes. We can only please a person like this; we cannot afford to offend him!” James smiled. “Talk to him more often if you have nothing to do,

understand?" "Tanya, where's Fane? Isn't he coming over?" The last thing they expected was for Yvonne to come searching for Fane, clad in a sexy dress to boot. Momentarily stunned, Tanya could not help the grin from forming on her face. "Why are you looking for him, Yvonne? Don't tell me that his absence makes your heart grow fonder for him." Yvonne's cheeks grew red. "No way! I just wanted to go out shopping with you, and I wanted to bring Fane along because I'm scared that it'll be dangerous outside," she protested vehemently. "Besides, wouldn't it be a waste if we don't get him to work even after paying him so much money?" At this moment, a bodyguard watching over the entrance ran over. "Miss Tanya, Master, there's a beautiful woman with over 20 bodyguards in her retinue," he reported. "She said that she's here for Fane Woods and asked if he was coming to work today!"

Chapter 472

"She's looking for Fane?" "A beautiful woman?" Tanya and Yvonne exchanged glances, unable to comprehend the irritation they were experiencing. "Just how beautiful is she?" Yvonne pressed on. "Why does that geezer still have beauties clamoring after him?" "Oh, she's very beautiful. How do I put this? She's almost as beautiful as you, Miss Yvonne, and she's on a whole other level of beauty, just like Miss Tanya!" The words gushed out of the bodyguard's lips, bluntly so. His mind was riddled, though. Why were these two ladies not focusing on the main issue? The woman asked if Fane was here, and yet they were focused on the woman's beauty? This was no beauty pageant! "Fane isn't here. He'll probably only come around in the afternoon. Tell them to go return for now," James spoke straightforwardly. "No, I want to go out and see who's the woman looking for Fane!" Tanya spoke after she thought about it. "I want to see her, too!" A spark of envy flickered in the two women's hearts. Was she Fane's ideal type just because she was a beauty? After all, it would be no strange matter if some women were attracted to the same man, especially when Fane was

a fine man. Furthermore, they had heard about the wealthy woman at the auction last time. They assumed that, one way or another, she had ties with Fane. She probably was not taking care of Fane. Rather, she liked him and was his confidant. After all, a man like Fane did not seem the sort who would want to get involved with innocent young women. The two ladies followed the bodyguard to the entrance, hastily making their way. A beautiful woman was standing at the entrance, and she had on a white dress with a floral print. A small smile adorned her face, and she gave off a gentle and sweet disposition. Her aura was as clear as a spring breeze, and she emanated the sweet taste of first love. “Miss Tanya, why have you come here? Where’s Fane? Isn’t he your bodyguard? He should be coming to work about now. Has he arrived yet?” The woman’s eyes brightened when she spotted Miss Tanya. The smile on her face turned even more radiant. “Do I know her? She looks familiar, but why can’t I put a finger on it?” Tanya frowned, her expression furrowed. “Since when has another beauty emerged in Middle Province?” Yvonne grew even more jealous. She felt that the beauty in front of her was more attractive than herself—this woman with a smile sweet like honey. “Heh. Tell me if Fane is around first. I’ll tell you who I am after that. How about that?” The woman chuckled and folded her arms across her chest. Her figure was well-balanced, and it carried a warm and refreshing temperament. “He’s not here yet. That idiot says he’s got errands to run and is only coming over in the afternoon.” Tanya’s expression gradually turned sour. Fane was not doing his job as he should have been.

Chapter 473

“Alright. You’ll tell us who you are now, right?” Yvonne spoke, drawling her sentence as she did. “Do you not recognize me? Heh. It’s Sasa, Tanya! Do you really not recognize me?” Sasa grinned. “I asked Fane to marry me before, but he didn’t give me an answer. I was overweight then and I looked ugly, so it’s not odd that he refused me. Because of that, I decided to wait for a while before trying my luck again. There might be hope for me if I ask

for his hand now!" "Sasa!" Tanya took a sharp intake of breath. She scrubbed her eyes, suspecting that she was hallucinating. She studied Sasa closely. The woman before her and the Sasa she knew seemed like two completely different people. However, after careful observation, she really did look like Sasa. It was no wonder Tanya felt like she looked so familiar when she saw her. "My God. You managed to cure your disease? How many kilos did you lose? I remember seeing you just a few days ago. Didn't you weigh around 200 then?" Shock also jolted up Yvonne's spine. She mentally debated with herself that the person before her was a swindler. Sasa was saying that she had asked Fane to marry her before, but he had not agreed to her. Now that she successfully lost weight and became a stunning beauty, she wanted to give it a second shot. "I did. It's all thanks to Fane's work. He's a genius of a doctor. He gave me three pills and I lost weight. It's amazing!" she gushed. "I love him to death. He gave me life—a second chance at life!" A slight flush colored Sasa's face as she spoke. Her expression turned bashful. "Maybe you two think that I'm too reckless now, but I truly think Fane is the perfect man!" "He's not too bad as a person, Sasa, but he's probably not as perfect as you portray him to be," Yvonne reminded her gently, expression unreadable. "That's right. You're so good-looking now, and there are so many bachelors out there for your picking. Why did you choose a bodyguard? He's also married! Would your parents even agree to this?" Tanya was also slightly unhappy, although she herself did not know why. "My parents? I never asked them!" Pursing her lips for a moment, she then added, "But Daddy and Mommy love me very much; they'll definitely respect my decision. Besides, my parents seem to like Fane very much, him being such an outstanding young man. They've had nothing but praises for him these past two days, and they told me to speak with him more often if I had nothing to do—and to go out with him!" Here, Sasa gave a devilish grin. "My mom even taught me that in order to win someone over, you'll have to win their family first," she said apologetically. "Since Fane isn't here, I'll come over in the afternoon to see him and go see his parents

in the morning. I'll give his wife a present. Oh, his daughter too!" "Seriously? Your mom taught you something like that?" Yvonne's expression grew rather dark, blatantly unhappy. She felt as though something of hers was being snatched away. Additionally, Sasa was a young mistress of a first-class aristocratic family, yet she displayed such crude behavior. Who knew her thought-process? Fane was a pervert, yet he was so outstanding in her eyes. "All right, I won't bother you any longer, Tanya, Yvonne. Heh. I'm going to see Fane's family now. I need to get them presents! "Oh, right. I heard that Grandfather Taylor's 70th birthday party is in nine days. Heh! I want to attend it as well. Then I get to see more of Fane!" It was evident that Sasa was now a fangirl of Fane Woods. She and her bodyguards quickly left in their cars. "She managed to lose so much weight in three days?" Tanya went silent for a moment before a sigh escaped her lips. "Sasa is so pretty after she lost weight, and she doesn't have any loose skin on her either. Fane is amazing, being able to treat a disease like that." Meanwhile, at a different place, a fiery red Porsche 911 parked at the bottom of a dilapidated housing complex. It contrasted starkly against its environment.

Chapter 474

Fane carried two enormous luggage bags he had bought earlier and stood before Tiger's residence. "Big Brother, you're finally here. My wife and I have been waiting for you for a long time!" Opening his door and noticing Fane at his residence, Tiger burst into guffaws. "Come in! Come in!" Tiger's wife immediately came forward to welcome him. However, she was puzzled at the sight of Fane carrying in two brand new luggage bags. "What's this, Big Brother?" Tiger's expression matched that of his wife's. Was Fane thinking of moving house? Unfortunately, their house was extremely small. There was no way he could move in with them. "Heh. I didn't have time to pick something good for you before I came, so I brought two huge luggage bags for you!" Fane chuckled and took the bags in, placing them at the

corner of the room. Judging from Fane's nonchalant expression, the luggage bags seemed to be light—probably empty. Tiger and his wife were dumbfounded. This was the first time they were seeing a visiting friend buying a present like this. Others would usually buy fruits, cigarettes, or alcohol—things like that. Still, the two noted that they were rather decent luggage bags. They wondered how much Fane had spent on them; they seemed branded. "Big Brother, you're too generous. Why should you bring a present when you're visiting us?" Tiger laughed and asked his wife to go grocery shopping after checking the time. Fane scanned the room, and his gaze eventually fell on the child at a bed. "How much is the rental here per month, Tiger?" he asked. An awkward smile made its way on Tiger's face. "It's not expensive. It's probably the cheapest housing area in Middle Province," he answered. "It's about five to six hundred per month, mainly because there's only one room and one living space here. That's why it's cheap!" His smile eventually grew dull, rather bitter-like. "You know that my wife and I don't earn much. Not only do we have our living expenses, but my parents aren't in good shape either. They're in the hospital now, but they'll be discharged tomorrow. My wife hasn't been working these past few days because my parents were sick. She could only stay at home, looking after our kid and sending my parents some food." Fane nodded at his answer, and he gently patted the other man's shoulder. "Don't worry, Tiger. You call me Big Brother, and as your Big Brother, it's only natural for me to help you out a bit. Take the two bags as a small token from me!" Tiger felt embarrassed, unable to comprehend why Fane would say something like that. "Thank you, Big Brother. Let's drink to our hearts' content. I don't have much money now, so I'm afraid I'll have to trouble you to eat something simple!" "Heh. You're treating me like an outsider, saying something like that. Didn't we sustain ourselves on bags of peanuts and two liters of Laobaigan liquor last time? That was the kind of life I led!" Fane chuckled. After a while, Tiger's wife came back with the groceries, whipping up a wide array of dishes. Noon came, and Fane drank some

alcohol with Tiger before he left their residence. “I cooked too much,” Tiger’s wife spoke first after Fane left their humble home. “There are so many leftovers... It’s kind of a waste.” “It’s not a waste. Nothing is a waste when it comes to treating my Big Brother to a meal!” Tiger smiled. “We can still eat it tomorrow if we can’t finish it today.” His wife rolled his eyes at him. “True, we can eat it tomorrow, but it’s been so hot lately. We don’t have a fridge. It’ll be a waste if we can’t finish this tomorrow.” Her gaze then drifted toward the two bags at the corner. Her lips subconsciously spread into a grin. “Seriously, your Big Brother has been a soldier for such a long time that he doesn’t know what presents to give anymore. Who on earth gives luggage bags? And two, at that!” “Never mind that. Anything that Big Brother gives is good stuff. Besides, you know that it’s branded. It’s a representation of his kindness!” Tiger had drunk to the point he was slightly tipsy, the grin on his face unusually wide. “I had been worried that he had died on the battlefield. It’s a relief he’s still alive.” His wife merely laughed in reply. She walked over and was about to carry the two empty bags into their room. “Ah!”

Chapter 475

In her effort of lifting the bags, Tiger’s wife found that the bags that were, in fact, heavy. She could not lift them because she only used a little strength. “Why is it so heavy? They’re brand new. Is there something inside?” The woman’s brows furrowed, expression puzzled. Realization shook Tiger to the core when he heard this. He leaped to his feet and slapped his own head. “Big Brother had said this: ‘You call me Big Brother, and as your Big Brother, it’s only natural for me to help you out a bit!’” He rushed over and laid the luggage bags flat on the ground. Tiger opened one. The minute he opened one bag, red-colored notes were practically bursting out from the bag. There were so many that the bag could barely hold everything in! “Oh my God... That’s a lot of money! I’ve never seen so much money in my entire life!” His wife stared wide-eyed at the luggage bags, overwhelmed

with shock. Tiger opened the other bag. Just like the other bag, wads of red notes filled this one, filling its entirety. “Big Brother, this... Since when did you become so rich? Why are you giving us so much money?” Tiger sat on the floor, staring at the two bags before him. He was completely stupefied. “This much money is enough to last us for a lifetime, isn’t it, Tiger? We can buy a house, a car—and we’ll still have so much left!” His wife gulped, only responding after a long pause. “Mmh. It’s definitely enough. And I was asking why that fellow was acting so strangely, giving us two luggage bags. Turns out everything is cash inside these two bags! “He must’ve debated against giving me a credit card; he knew I wouldn’t accept it. So that’s why he did this!” Tiger was so moved that he found it hard to form coherent sentences. Fane was being way too generous toward him and his family. “We won’t have to eat instant noodles for the next few days, right, Dear?” His wife smiled, happiness welling within her. “No, we don’t. Heck, let’s just quit our jobs tomorrow and go buy a house. We’ll have a proper place to stay when Mom and Dad get out of the hospital. And after we get a house, we’ll get a car. We can even open our own food business!” Tiger said, extremely excited. Upon leaving Tiger’s residence, Fane drove over to the Drake family’s residence, ready to go to work. Little did he know, however, that a beautiful young woman with bodyguards in tow came to his house. “Hello there, Uncle, Auntie. Heh. I’m here again!” Sasa greeted, grinning. “Miss, you’re…?” Fiona frowned. She did not recall associating with such a rich heiress. “It’s me. How can you not recognize me so fast? It’s Sasa,” Sasa replied. “Look at me! The pills were so effective. I managed to lose weight successfully! “And I taught the woman who tried to sabotage me yesterday a good lesson. I’m feeling a lot better now!” Sasa beamed. “Miss Sasa, is that truly you? My God. Y—You’re so beautiful!” Fiona was stunned. “I...I’m here to visit all of you.” Sasa’s cheeks flushed red. Then, she added, “And I’m here to ask for Fane’s hand!”

Chapter 476

Joan's expression became displeased after she heard this. She had an uneasy smile as she replied, "Didn't you promise to not ask for Fane's hand anymore the last time, Miss Sasa?" Sasa's expression became awkward. "I—I wasn't good-looking then, so it was only to be expected that Fane would reject me. Now, I'm a lot prettier, and Fane is such an outstanding man, so I want to give it another shot!" Joan began to feel exasperated. "I appreciate your affection toward Fane, Miss Sasa, but I understand my son's character better," she insisted, smiling. "He's stubborn and straight-laced. That's why when he told you that he didn't like you, chances are that you wouldn't be able to convince him even if you tried again. I suggest that you let it go, Miss Sasa." "I know this, Auntie, but I still want to try. I won't have any regrets only after I've tried!" Sasa gave a wan smile and clapped her hands. Some of her bodyguards then came forward and carried the gifts she bought. "I didn't know what to buy for everyone, so I'm giving a jade for each person here. I hope it's to your liking! "Since Kylie is still young, I just bought her a few dolls." Sasa commented, smiling. "My God. There's one for me, too!" Xena took the lacquered box in joy and examined the jade inside. "This jade's color is remarkable, Miss Sasa. This must've been expensive." "Not a single one of these jades our Young Miss has chosen for you is below a million bucks. These are very good jades!" one of the bodyguards immediately answered. "So expensive? My goodness. Miss… Miss Sasa, you're too generous!" Xena was extremely moved. So long as one was associated with the rich, they would always reap some benefits. She never expected that staying by Ben's side would bring her out of her miseries. "How—how can we accept this?" Fiona's face was all smiles; her heart bloomed in happiness. "Why can't you, Auntie? This is nothing if I marry Fane. And if I really do, we'll be family. I'll be willing to be the second wife. There's no need to be so calculative among family!" Sasa smiled and added apologetically, "But I do hope that you'll be able to convince Fane, Auntie. I'm in no rush about this, so take your time. I can start off just being friends. I hope you guys keep quiet about this and advise

him when you have the time. Who knows? He might just change his mind." How could they refuse after they had received such wonderful gifts? Moreover, if Miss Sasa truly became Fane's second wife, then Fiona herself would share the happiness and have money to spend. She quickly made her stance known. She never bothered to think twice about the matter as she enthusiastically answered, "Don't worry, Miss Sasa. I also realized that you're a nice girl, so I understand you. You'll make a fine wife. I'll definitely help you to convince Fane as best as I can!" On the side, Joan was rendered speechless. Fiona had only met Sasa a few times, exchanged a few words, and she somehow understood her? Needless to say, she understood Fiona's personality very well. She was a woman who would go to all ends for money. That was why she could not be bothered to argue with her. She pretended that she did not hear anything. Andrew, however, could not bear to listen to this any longer. He coughed and said, "Let's leave the kids to sort out matters between themselves. We have no rights to interfere in matters of the heart." He never expected his wife to roll her eyes at him. "The hell are you talking about? We're far more experienced than them. That's why we should take the initiative and guide them!"

Chapter 477

"That's right. You're so right, Auntie!" Sasa beamed. "I'll be taking my leave now. Thank you for your understanding." "Miss Sasa, why don't you have lunch with us before you leave?" Fiona said politely. "No need, Auntie. Maybe next time!" Sasa cast a smile over her shoulder and quickly left with her men. "Seriously, are you that desperate for money?" Andrew huffed angrily after Sasa left. "Fane is your son-in-law, and who on earth finds a second wife for their son-in-law? You're probably the first in history of all mankind to do so!" "What do you know?!" Fiona's expression suddenly turned frosty. "I'd tell any other girl who wants to be Fane's second wife to scram, but this woman is different. She's Miss Sharon, heiress to the George family!" She paused here before continuing, "Think about. The George

family is one of the Four Major Families here. There are only four first-class aristocratic families in Middle Province, and they're one of them. They must be rolling in cash! Also, Sasa is so beautiful now, and she's willing to be Fane's second wife even with her social standing. How can we refuse a girl like that? It'd be complete idiocy to do so!" "Heh, and you say that you don't love money? Seems like you're pretty greedy to me!" Andrew walked aside and sat on a stone bench. He whipped out a cigarette and lit it up, his expression twisted into a grimace. As Selena's father, he did not want his daughter to share a man with anyone else. It was only natural. Furthermore, Fane had made it clear he did not like Sasa. How could they try to pair them up like that? "That's right, Fiona. There's no need for us to interfere in our children's business. Let them settle it between themselves. After all, my son is earning quite a bit now. We'll have our own wealth in one or two years' time!" Joan finally commented, unable to contain herself any longer. "Heh! We have a chance for an actual future now. No one in their sane mind would refuse that much money. Do you know how much the George family earns? Besides, they don't have a son, so Sasa will inherit all the family businesses. She'll listen to whatever Fane says, too. Doesn't that mean that the money is practically Fane's once her parents pass away? "You think I'm money-minded? I'm just thinking of all this for your son's own good!" Fiona folded her arms across her chest, a cold smile on her face as she spoke to Joan. "That's right. Why didn't I think of that?" Ben's eyes brightened. Assuming that Fane truly married Sasa and that the George family had no other inheritors to their fortune, she would definitely listen to everything he said, considering she liked him so much. With that, Fane would control the George family's every business. They were a first-class aristocratic family. Just the thought of their money nearly moved him to tears. Although this was a long-term scheme, it would grant unimaginable rewards to them in the future. "Auntie, you have to listen to my mom on this. It's not just my mom that needs to do the convincing—you have to help convince your son,

too. He always listens to you. Your advice will have a great effect on him." Ben began to coax Joan after hearing what his mother had to say.

Chapter 478

The mother-and-son duo placed Joan in a difficult predicament. "I'll try my best," she said perfunctorily, "but his opinions are his own. We can't force him on anything." "That's right, Joan. That's the spirit! We can't control his heart, but we can certainly try our best to advise him to decide what's best for him." Fiona's face broke out into smiles again, seeing as Joan was on their side. She even called the other woman's name so lovingly. Joan merely smiled and proceeded to ignore Fiona. At that moment, at a hall in the Eagle Clan's headquarters, more than a dozen men sat together, all executives in the clan. One of the middle-aged men had a dark expression. He remained contemplatively quiet for a while before starting, "Our men have returned. Unfortunately, the three hundred odd men who died in the forests at the city outskirts last night were our men. None of those men survived... Baldy was one of them." "What? Baldy's also dead?" Another woman was so frightened that all the color drained from her face. She was also a skilled fighter, and she—along with Baldy and two other elders—built the Eagle Clan to its current heights. They were the Eagle Clan's infamous Four Fighters. The four were extremely strong. The Eagle Clan behaved more impudently compared to other clans due to these four. So long as the clan had the four, nothing could stand in their way. The two other elders exchanged glances, their gazes filled with the same heaviness. "Who is it? Who could be that strong? Don't tell me that our men offended one of the powerful Kings of War?" One of the elders surmised after he thought about it. "That's got to be it. Only a King of War would be powerful enough to defeat Baldy and three hundred of our men. After all, the opponent was a single person, not a group of people!" The other elder nodded. "It's probably impossible for us to avenge our men if a King of War is genuinely involved in this. We'd be lucky if he doesn't come knocking on our door!" The head

of the Eagle Clan could only agree, nodding as he did. “That may very well be the case. This King of War might have plenty of devoted underlings. They’ll easily sweep the Eagle Clan the moment he gave the order. Besides, we’ve already suffered enough.” “So we can only grit our teeth and do nothing with such huge losses? F*ck! This is the first time we’ve suffered like this!” One of the executives was evidently enraged beyond relief, his hand gripped tightly onto the armrest of his chair. Crack! The entire armrest snapped under his overwhelming strength. “It pains me to say this, but we have no choice. This person is too strong. We can only wait and see what happens. We have no way of retaliating now.” A sigh escaped the leader. He then added, “Nonetheless, we should send someone to check up on everything: find out who killed Baldy and the others, and why our men decided to provoke the person. We need to investigate everything thoroughly. We should at least know the identity of our enemy.” “But what’s the use of knowing? That person’s a King of War!” The executive from before smiled a humorless smile. It was the first time he felt so helpless. “It’s always better to know than to remain ignorant. If he offends someone in the future, and that someone could rival him, we can team up with them and obliterate him! “We won’t even get a chance to take revenge if we don’t know anything!” The clan head spoke firmly, absolution evident in his tone. His audience felt that this made sense to them after they heard this, and they sent their men to conduct investigations. It was certainly not difficult to find out the truth. After all, so many men had gone out that night. Of course, the ones who did not follow into the fight would want to know why the fight took place. That was why they only needed three days to find out everything. Meanwhile, Fane had reached the Drake family’s residence.

Chapter 479

“Oh, you’re finally coming to work. It’s a pity that you missed the morning drama.” Tanya and Yvonne—the latter sipping on coffee—so happened to be in the living room when Fane arrived. The former spoke in a sour tone.

“Morning drama? Tell me.” Curious, Fane walked over to the couch and sat down. “A beautiful young woman came to see you. She said that she liked you and wanted to marry you.” Yvonne sneered. “I know you’re super happy on the inside!” “A beautiful young woman? Who?” Fane was surprised for a moment before he replied, “I think the only beauties I know are the two of you and my wife. Oh, right—and the Goddess of War, Lana. Still, she’s definitely not either of you, and she’s definitely not Lana. My wife is already married to me… So who on earth could it be?” “Sharon George. Didn’t you help her to lose weight? Now that she’s successfully lost weight, she’s much prettier now!” Tanya gave a bitter smile. “Her?” Fane’s features contorted into an unreadable expression when he heard those two words; the girl’s name. “She should just give up. I’ve told her before that I don’t like her, and she promised me she wouldn’t pester me anymore if she successfully lost weight!” For reasons unknown, Tanya and Yvonne’s hearts leaped in delight when they heard his words. Still rather unconvinced, Yvonne continued, “You don’t like the version of her before she lost weight, no? Wait till you see her now. You might just get a nosebleed!” “Heh. A nosebleed? You’re just pushing it now.” Fane chuckled dismissively. “She looks so beautiful now, and she’s got a pretty figure. She gives the aura of a fresh spring breeze. It’s as though... As though she was your first love!” The words left Yvonne in her internal struggle of choosing words. “That’s her business; I won’t like her anyway. I don’t have any feelings for her!” Fane shrugged nonchalantly. He took out a cigarette and began to smoke it, his countenance unhurried. “Y—You don’t like her type?” Tanya asked, her heart dancing with joy. “I’m happy with my wife!” That single sentence plummeted the girls’ hearts in an instant. Was this fellow genuinely not interested in beautiful women? “Fane, Fane! Where are you?” A familiar voice was heard at this moment; at a rather unexpected moment at that. Sasa and her entourage of more than a dozen bodyguards came over, looking for Fane. The moment she saw him, her eyes brightened and her cheeks flushed red. “I asked the bodyguards, and they told me that you’ve just arrived.

You’re here, finally!” Fane was somewhat—though not so much—surprised when he saw how she looked. “Not bad. Just as I predicted; you have pretty features. You’re truly a beauty once you lose weight!” “Really? You think I’m beautiful?” Hearing those words, she mustered the courage to come before Fane and plunk herself onto his lap. She wrapped her arms around his neck. “Then do you think I’m attractive?”

Chapter 480

The fragrance of her perfume filled his nostrils. Sitting on Fane’s lap was a soft, curvaceous body. Fane’s heart skipped a beat at the sudden boldness. After all, he was a young man full of vitality. Even if he was a soldier, he could help his feelings when something like this happened. Still, he quickly pushed Sasa off of him. “What are you doing? How can you be so shameless as a woman?!” Sasa’s face was as red as a tomato, yet she smiled even when Fane was fuming. She smiled. “I’m not shameless; I’m just this straightforward because I like you,” she said bashfully. “No other man has caught my eye like this!” Fane was speechless. On the battlefield, he had a thousand different methods of killing the enemy—as easy as breathing. However, he did not know what to do when facing women, especially a woman as bold as her. He still maintained a stony expression. “Miss Sasa, don’t forget the promise we’ve made before. You can’t just go back on your word as the young mistress of the George family, understand?” Sasa was taken aback for a moment, doubting and apologetic. She ducked her head. “Of—of course I couldn’t match up to you then, with the way I looked,” she said sheepishly. “But with the way I look like now, I think I can match up to you, no?” Fane was tongue-tied. He could not believe anything this woman said; she swapped faces faster than one could turn a page. His expression darkened, not acknowledging Sasa’s words. “So, do you think I’m pretty now?” she asked in a small voice. Fane looked at her. “You are. But, I have a wife. I don’t want to do anything to betray her. Go look for someone else. It’ll be easy enough for you to find a boyfriend now.” He did

not expect Sasa's lips to curve into a sweet smile instead. "I'm satisfied that you think I'm pretty. To me, you're the most amazing man I've ever met. I can't even be bothered to look at other men!" Here, Sasa paused for a while before she continued, "Don't worry, I won't force you. I know that a victory forced is a bitter victory. We can be friends first! I'm in no rush. We can take it slow. I'm still young, after all!" Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry. "We can be friends, but don't dream about becoming anything else." Tanya and Yvonne's tongues were frozen in their places as they watched the two; they were so direct. One of them directly professed her love, the other blatantly rejected her. Since when were the matters of the heart so straightforward? However, they had to give it to Fane—the man's willpower was remarkable. Plenty of other men would be having nosebleeds looking at Sasa, but he easily rejected her. Furthermore, Sasa was straddled on Fane's lap just now. What sane man could restrain himself when put in a situation like this? Fane easily pushed her away in the end. "Take your time. There's no hurry. Who knows? Maybe you'll see my good side after mingling with me for a long time, and you might accept me just then!" Sasa gazed at Fane. She had a coy expression; it was obvious she was head over heels for him. "Is that fellow really any good?" Yvonne and Tanya could not bear to watch this any longer. They shared a common thought: Sasa was going too far. "Alright. I'm actually just dropping by to visit you. I'll get out of your hair for now," Sasa conceded. "But, don't forget that you said we can be friends, so don't push me away when I come around wanting to hang out with you during my free time!" Sasa looked at Fane again, stroking her cheek. She bashfully called for her bodyguards and left. "I…" Fane was completely speechless, his temple pounding with a headache. When would that child truly understand the situation? "What's wrong? Have you lost your mind, now that a beautiful young woman willingly serves herself on a platter to you, you pervert? Don't tell me that a pervert such as yourself is too shy to act on his impulses?"

Chapter 481

Yvonne mocked nonchalantly. The exchange reminded Yvonne of the time Fane walked into her room right when she had just taken a nice, warm shower. She still bore that grudge against him until this day. Fane did not expect the target would be on his back. “Heh, who told you that? Do you still remember who carried you on his back the night before when you were too drunk to even walk home?” Fane trumpeted deliberately. “And when you were on my back, my hands were not idling, too. Besides, I changed your clothes for you! Ring a bell?” Fane recounted the incident in a sarcastic tone. He did not let Yvonne step on his tail since she was the one who started the mockery. “You…” Yvonne’s cutesy cheeks were immediately kissed pink. She stomped her feet like a child, and with a slight annoyance in her tone, she complained, “Tanya, you told me my maid changed clothes for me. Why’s Fane saying that it was him? Did you lie to me?” The sudden accusation stunned Tanya for a moment, then she remained speechless. Fane was obviously faking the facts to tease her, yet she fell for it. Tanya pulled a bitter smile and explained, “My dear Sis Yvonne, how could you believe his words? Do you think I’d let him change your clothes? He’s lying!” “Tanya, don’t hide it from her anymore. It’s nothing. I didn’t touch her at all. I just changed a new set of clothes for her,” Fane chimed in. “In fact, Tanya herself requested me to change your clothes that night. She told me that you were too drunk to remember what happened. So, as long as she and I don’t say anything, you wouldn’t find out, and the same goes for the others! She made me promise to keep it secret.” Fane’s expression was firm and solemn. Nobody could tell he was laughing uncontrollably inside his heart. He then added more fuel to the fire, “Don’t worry. This secret is safe with me…” “I…” Anger flowed through Yvonne like lava. When she opened her eyes the next morning, she was already wearing her nightdress. If Fane had really changed her clothes, then Fane had probably… She immediately cut off her train of thought and stared at Tanya, her eyes

burning. “Tanya, tell me! Is this true?” She exploded. “Tanya, how could you let him do that? He’s a pervert!” “Oh, my Lord! It’s not true! He’s fooling you!” Tanya did not know whether to laugh or to cry at this point. “Don’t you see it? He’s saying it deliberately to frighten you. Who you are to me? Would I lie to you?” “Wha—You goon! I thought you were an honest person! How could you deceive me!” Yvonne breathed a sigh of relief, glaring at Fane. “Ahem, wait, or do you secretly hope it was true?” Fane let out two dry coughs. “Hmph! You wouldn’t dare to change for me!” She snorted coldly. … Fane was bored and he started playing with his mobile phone. He was skimming through some news when suddenly something on Twin City News Network caught his attention. “Ahem, Miss Tanya, I have an errand to run tomorrow morning, so I won’t be here in the morning, but I’ll be back by the afternoon,” he simpered and plastered an awkward smile on his face. “Fine, but you can go shopping with us now, right?” Tanya pouted, feeling a little emptiness in her heart. She did not know when she started feeling a void in her heart whenever Fane was not around, but ever since then, she was always looking forward to seeing him again. Yet, whenever she did meet with him, she would feel a flicker of irritation because of his solemn and cold attitude toward her. The next morning, Fane arrived early at the entrance of an auction house, corners of his mouth curled up. “Hehe! Babe, this villa looks fantastic. I’ll get it first and give you a surprise!” he murmured to himself.

Chapter 482

The Taylor family had been living in a community of townhouses. As the villas there were not large and sumptuous, the Taylor family bought multiple units, bordering them with tall thick fences and turning the area into the Taylor Residence. On a small hill not far from the Taylor Residence was a huge and opulent villa resting at its foot. Not only was the location of the villa strategic, but there was also an immaculate park nearby as well as a mega shopping small. That was why the price was exorbitant for such a

villa, with its value estimated to be around 20 to 30 million bucks. The villa was spacious and was divided into three floors, its interior design extravagant and rich. The owner of the villa was the head of a third-class aristocrat family who had spent a fortune on this villa. The owner of the villa recently decided to move abroad. Thus, putting it up for auction. The location was strategic and it was not far from the Taylor Residence. Hence, when Fane saw it on the Twin City News Network yesterday, he immediately made a decision—he would bid for it, no matter what. What he did not expect was to be stopped by two security guards when he arrived at the gate. “I’m here for the auction!” Fane said, flashing a shy smile. “Sir, if you want to participate in the auction, you need to go over there to have your assets and wealth status assessed and certified by our bank officers. “The funds in your bank account cannot be lower than 50 million. Otherwise, you won’t be allowed to enter!” one of the staff explained. “How troublesome!” Fane was speechless but he had no choice but to adhere to the process. He followed the staff member to get his assets assessed . The bank officer rubbed her eyes twice after seeing the result displayed on the machine. Was she mistaken? Dizziness washed over her when she realized that the information was correct. Who was this man? How could a man possess such a big amount of money? “Is everything alright?” Fane’s forehead creased, obviously displeased. “Y—yes sir!” The bank officer’s voice trembled as she responded. She then handed his card back to Fane with both hands respectfully. She believed that the man before her was not an ordinary man. After the verification process was completed, Fane quickly strode past the gate and entered. Already, there were a lot of filthy rich businessmen gathered in a private room. Obviously, they were all interested in this villa. Furthermore, the starting bid was not that high at all—only 10 million. Naturally, nobody wanted to miss this excellent opportunity. A moment later, Ivan Taylor came into sight. His expression dulled and sank when he spotted Fane. “What? Fane’s here? How could the rascal be here? Don’t tell me he wants to bid on the villa, too?” Ivan started to ponder. There

were only a few days left until old man Taylor's 70th birthday, and Fane had promised to give him a gift worth more than 10 million bucks. Could this villa be the gift that Fane was preparing for the old man?

Chapter 483

This thought further affirmed his presumption. This punk was planning to buy the villa for the old man's 70th birthday present. Every one of the Taylor family knew how marvelous the villa was. They woke up to the view of it and passed by the sight of it. The villa was located just opposite the Taylor residence; they could see it every day. Hence, Ivan came to see if he was able to obtain this villa with 20 to 30 million bucks. He wanted to present it to the old man for his birthday gift, or perhaps move into it himself and have the old man live with him. After all, old man Taylor had been fixated on the villa whenever he went out as of late, murmuring to himself emotionally, "This villa opposite our residence is extremely well-built. If only I could live in it, I'd die without regrets." As for the resources needed to buy this villa, Ivan did not feel a pinch of pain since the money would be coming from the Taylors' company. Besides, if he managed to get this villa and give it to the old man, it would earn him enough face and favor. He paused for a moment as though some thought had suddenly entered his mind, and he immediately walked out of the auction room. Outside, Ivan found a quiet and secluded place and took out his phone to ring Neil Hugo and Ken Clark. Not long after, the two of them—Neil and Ken—arrived at the auction house in a car. They quickly got out of the car and went to meet Ivan who was waiting at the entrance of the auction room. "Young Master Taylor, why did you ask us to come over? Anything important?" Ken blurted once he met Ivan. When they were on the phone a moment ago, Ivan did not provide any reason and simply requested them to come over. It was probably something serious and crucial. "Do both of you know what is on auction today?" Ivan did not respond to Ken's question, but rather reciprocated with another question. "Heh? How would I know? I haven't paid any attention to the

auctions for the last two days. It’s probably nothing special. If there really was a golden opportunity, the auction would’ve called to inform!” Neil replied after thinking about it for a while. “You’re right. There was no notice on today's auction, just an advertisement on the website that mentioned it!” Ivan flashed them an indifferent smile before he continued, “This time, the item that’s on auction is the sumptuous villa that is right opposite our Taylor residence. The owner of the villa is moving abroad, so he’s selling it off.” He paused. “I want to bid on this villa and give it to grandpa Taylor as his 70th birthday present. He’ll be over the moon.” “Damn! This is great! That’s a marvelous idea!” Neil laughed heartily but his forehead creased to a furrow in the next second. “It’s a good idea, but why did you call us both over for this? Is it because you don’t have enough to bid for it? Or is it because the company capital is running low and you don’t dare to embezzle it?” An awkward smile immediately appeared on Ivan’s face. “That’s far from the case. I just ran into Fane in the auction room. I think this trash must be here for the villa, too! I don’t know where his money comes from, but I think he wants to buy this house and give it to old man Taylor as well! Never thought this punk would be as smart as me!” “What? No way! He’s here, too?” Ken frowned, concerned. “Don’t tell me he got an advance on his salary from Miss Tanya!” Neil nodded in agreement. “If he dared to come here, he must’ve asked for an advance, and it’s probably not one month's salary but two!” “This second young miss of the Drakes, why’s she so good to Fane? This punk hasn’t even worked for a whole month yet and he’s already asked for an advance of two months. That’s 40 million!” Ivan felt a flash of irritation. “Hmph! Even if he has 40 million, he still has to spare 10 million bucks to compensate me! So this leaves the damn kid with only 30 million to bid for the villa. Hehe! There’s no way he can outbid me!” “Haha, since Fane’s here to bid for the villa, I want to stay and watch the comedy show! I want to see how his facial expression distorts into an ugly one when he loses to Young Master Taylor!” Ken burst out in laughter. How could he miss such a rare opportunity to witness an embarrassing moment for Fane

Woods? “That’s right! Let’s go in, then. The other bidders are wealthy businessmen who already own several houses. They won’t be competing for the villa, hence you won’t have many competitors! The final win is yours, Young Master Taylor!” Ken bobbed his head and agreed. The three of them quickly entered the auction room, their faces full of smiles. “Oh, isn’t that Fane Woods? The infamous, useless, trashy son-in-law of the Taylor family! What a coincidence! Why are you here?” Ivan faked his surprise as he sat beside Fane, followed by the other two young masters.

Chapter 484

“What? That’s the husband of Selena Taylor, the Beauty Queen of the Middle Province?” “Yeah, this shrimp is extremely fortunate to have Selena as his wife! Everyone envies him!” “What’s there to be jealous about? That shrimp is just the son-in-law of the Taylors by name, he could be treated like useless trash at home. Knowing that the Taylor family cast them out of the residence, I bet he’s not recognized as their real son-in-law!” “That’s right! His mother-in-law definitely hates his guts. After all, their family suffered so much because of him!” Many of the businessmen present started to tittle-tattle about them in hushed voices, some with contempt in their eyes. Fane did not bother wasting his energy on all the gossip. He turned his head to the side and said, “Yeah, Ivan. What a coincidence! I didn’t quite expect to meet you here!” “Heh, if my guess is correct, you’ve asked Miss Tanya for an advance of two months, and you’re here to bid for this luxurious villa as a gift for grandpa Taylor’s 70th birthday, am I right?” Ivan chortled and continued, “You’ve got a great idea, I’ll give you that! This gift is not an ordinary one. It’s exorbitant and is worth at least 10 million! When the day arrives and you give this to grandpa Taylor, you’d gain some face and the Taylor family will finally accept you, am I right? “But too bad for you! It just so happens that I’ve got my eye on this villa, too. So I’m sorry to break this to you but your efforts today shall be in vain.” Ivan laughed mockingly and added, “Gifting Grandpa Taylor this villa is an awesome idea of mine.

It’s the most worthy and suitable present that’s able to express my filial piety to him as his grandson! And the money that you brought with you today is probably less than what I have! So, you literally have no game in today's auction!” “I really admire your confidence!” Fane effused a cold smile and decided not to pay attention to these three shrimps. Time passed by rather slowly. Other than Fane, the three young masters, and several businessmen, there were only two to three other people from what seemed like third-class aristocrat families in the room. They were obviously interested in this villa as well, hoping they could get it at a cheaper price. After a few minutes, a middle-aged woman came in sight, approaching the auction counter. She was wearing an aqua green cheongsam, flashing a big smile to the crowd as she walked in. “Welcome everyone to the auction house! It’s time to kick off our auction for today! “Today’s auction is a little bit different as it was commissioned by Mr. Ryan…” The middle-aged woman gave an introduction before continuing, “Alright! Let’s not waste time and begin our event! The starting price for today's item is 10 million bucks and is considered lower than the market price! Your bid cannot be lower than 1 million! “Now, ladies and gentlemen, you may start the bidding!” The middle-aged woman gestured with her hand and the auction began. “11 million from me!” an old man shouted. He tentatively added a million after thinking about it for a while. “12 million here!” Soon, another man who looked like he was in his forties yelled, adding another million. One million did not seem much for the people in this room. Fane did not budge in the slightest. He knew very well that this villa was worth more than that. It was a spacious three-story villa with an exceptionally strategic location. Such a villa would cost more than 20 million. Hence, he knew it was impossible to get it at 11 or 12 million bucks. Besides, there were quite some people here today for this auction. Ivan, who was sitting beside Fane, did not start bidding immediately as well. Rather, he turned his head towards Fane and sneered. He wanted to wait for Fane to start bidding. Once Fane started to place his bid, he would raise his bid just to beat him. He wanted to let him

know that nobody could take whatever he had his eye on, especially not by a useless son-in-law.

Chapter 485

The seconds ticked by, and soon, the bidding price was raised to 21 million. The price had already reached a level where some people had begun pulling out from the bidding competition and stopped increasing the price. “Twenty-three million!” Finally, Fane raised his hand and shouted a price, flashing the woman at the auction stand a warm smile. “This gentleman has increased the price to twenty-three million bucks! Does anyone else wish to increase the bid?” The corners of the woman’s mouth quirked up after hearing Fane’s price. He did not increase the price by just a million, but two. “Twenty-five million!” Without hesitation, Ivan raised his arm and added three million to the price as though he was the wealthiest man in the Middle Province. After he put his arm down, he turned to Fane and said, “Fane, don’t compete with me. This villa is my gift to Grandpa. You’re just a son-in-law, why do you want to fight me? You don’t even have the resources to win against me!” “Ha-ha! Are you sure?” Fane jeered coldly. Money was but a number to him. He could buy the entire Taylor property without batting an eye, let alone a villa. “Heh! You’re snobbish, aren’t you?” Ken gave Fane a thumbs up and laughed aloud. “Fane, let us witness this great battle today. Between you and Young Master Taylor, whoever loses the battle will have to call the winner ‘daddy’, how does that sound?” They never thought that Fane would simply shake his head and remain uninterested. “Sorry, but I wouldn’t want such an unreliable son. I’d be embarrassed and ashamed if I did.” “You…” Rage pulsed through Ivan’s veins, making him stand up from his seat. He balled his fist tightly as if he was ready to fight. This shrimp had some balls. How dare he talk back to him like that? “What’s the matter? Are you thinking about fighting me? This is an auction house, it wouldn’t be nice to cause trouble here. If you’re so keen on fighting, we can fight later after the auction!” he scorned indifferently, his right eyebrow raised.

Ivan immediately chickened out upon hearing Fane's words. A hundred of him could not even win against one of Fane in a fight. The bodyguards of the Taylor family were not of bad quality; however, none of them could barely go near Fane, let alone a pampered young master like him. "You're lucky that today I'm not bothered about such a useless waste like you!" He added, sitting back down with his teeth clenched firmly, "If you're so capable, go ahead and increase the price, then! Twenty-five million is now my bidding price!" "Thirty million!" Fane shouted out the number nonchalantly. Many of the wealthy businessmen who were still present began to view Fane differently, some with admiration. This young man had placed a bid of 30 million; increasing a bid by so much at once! The crowd certainly did not expect that this worthless son-in-law could be this rich. The corners of Ivan's mouth twitched. 30 million, that was quite high, was it not? Nevertheless, the devil beside him, Ken Clark, said to him, "Young Master Taylor, don't be frightened by him! This should be the highest price he can offer. He probably increased the bid by so much in one go just to try to scare you away," Ken reminded him. "Fane only asked for an advance of two months. That's forty million. He'd have to leave ten million aside to compensate you, so that would leave him with thirty million. This is as high as he can go!" Ivan's spirit lifted after hearing Ken's analysis. "Thirty-one million!" he called out. "What a bunch of idiots! The entry requirement for this auction house is that you have to possess at least fifty million in your bank account. How would I be able to enter otherwise?" Fane gave a half-smile. "Thirty-five million!"

Chapter 486

Ken and Ivan exchanged glances, their faces contorted. They forgot about the auction house's entry requirements. They were all young masters of aristocratic families. The staff naturally never doubted their ability to spend. Hence, they entered the auction house without any verification at all. There was indeed a requirement notice at the entrance stating that only individuals

with at least 50 million in their bank account could enter the auction house. The three of them did not pay any attention to the notice. After Fane's reminder, they realized that this punk could very well fork out 35 million bucks. "It looks like Miss Tanya has given him an advance of three months. It must be, it has to be! He'd have sixty million in hand!" Neil's face turned cold and solemn. If this were the case, it would not be easy for Ivan to compete with Fane and take down this villa. Ivan's expression was even colder and uglier than Neil's. If that was true, did it not mean that Fane could only raise the price to 50 million at most? Given that Fane would set aside the ten million he was owed. No wonder this shrimp behaved in such a brazen and arrogant way, adding five million in one go. "What's the matter? Don't tell me you're already scared over such a small amount of money?" Fane smiled contemptuously, noticing Ivan's face grow dark. This man was indeed ignorant. "Me? Scared? Are you kidding me? Ha-ha! Why would I be afraid of you?" Ivan chortled awkwardly to hide his anxiety. "Let's bet! If I win this bid, you'll kneel before me, clean, and polish my shoes, and if I lose, I will do the same for you! How does that sound?" "Since you're so eager to clean my shoes, it'd only be polite for me to accept the challenge. How can I refuse such an excellent opportunity?" Fane agreed to the bet. "Alright! Forty million here!" Ivan called out. Ivan did not show any sign of hesitation. He wanted to see if Fane would continue raising the price. "Forty-five million!" Fane lifted his right arm without the slightest reluctance as if he was merely throwing a number to the crowd. "Fifty million!" Ivan gritted his teeth and countered without thinking twice. He was so going to win this villa today. The worth and value of the villa no longer mattered. He wanted to humiliate Fane in front of the throng so badly—waiting for the moment he would clean and polish his shoes in front of others. "That's right. Fifty million is the right number to call! Ha-ha! That's his limit! He can only spend so much money!" A big grin was plastered on Neil's face, thinking that Ivan Taylor had successfully avenged him this time! He reminded himself to take a photo of the scene for

memory’s sake once Fane lost the bet and was forced to clean Ivan’s shoes later on. When he got bored and had nothing to do, he would take it out and laugh at it. The feeling must be awesome! Ken also looked at Fane with a lopsided grin on his face. In his opinion, as long as Fane was not an idiot, he would not raise the price further. Anyways, Fane had requested a three month advance from Miss Tanya. He could not possibly spend all his money on this villa and ask Miss Tanya for a fourth advance. If that was the case, he would truly be a shameless b*stard. “Haha, sixty million, then!” Fane let out a laugh and called out a higher number. At this point, the smiles on the trio’s faces completely froze. They were puzzled and wondered if they had heard wrongly. This useless shrimp had used up his three-month salary and battled himself to death solely for the sake of winning this bet! “Oh boy. You really have some guts, huh? This villa is not even worth sixty million, didn’t you know?”

Chapter 487

The corners of Ivan’s mouth twitched fiercely out of control. The crowd present at the scene clearly knew that there was a battle going on between these two men as they had been following their exchange. Moreover, when Ivan challenged Fane to a bet, he had announced the terms of the punishment so loudly as if the crowd was deaf. His ultimate goal was to show everyone in the room that Fane was indeed useless trash who only deserved to kneel before him and lick his shoes clean. But now, the tables had turned. The number—60 million—that Fane had just called out, sent him back into his tiny brain as he started to scheme again. ‘Is this villa really worth sixty million? If I continue to raise the price and it ends up being a trap that the b*stard has set for me, wouldn’t I be a fool, then?’ He thought to himself and doubted. He pondered hard on Fane’s intention—was Fane deliberately increasing the price just to lure him into a deadly trap? However, if he stopped here, it would mean he lost the bet which in turn, would mean that he had to clean Fane’s shoes. How could a young master from a second-

class aristocrat family like him kneel before trash and clean his shoes? If word of the incident were to spread, his name—Ivan Taylor—would never be as glorious as before! Ken's eyes widened as though he had just come up with a brilliant idea with his mini-brain. He leaned forward to Ivan and whispered into his ear, "Young Master Taylor, don't be afraid of him! Go ahead and fight! You only need to fork out sixty million, I'll cover the rest! It's probably not going to be much more because I'm sure this punk has reached his limit. So just add another million to surpass him!" He paused before swearing, "Goddammit! We need to teach this punk a lesson no matter what!" Upon hearing Ken's words, Ivan felt at ease as though the weight on his shoulders was finally lifted. With a smile plastered on his face, he shouted, "Sixty-one million!" The scene happening at the back of the auction room had left the middle-aged woman on stage speechless. The two young men were practically shouting out prices from the back, making those around them—those wealthy businessmen, as well as a few other third-class families—dumbfounded. The crowd became watchful onlookers to this money battle. They had even taken over the responsibility of the middle-aged woman as an auctioneer—directing and conducting the auction. The two of them took turns to call out their bids, jacking up the price to an unreasonable amount. "Y—young Master Taylor, s—sixty-one million!" Her voice trembled in nervousness. She was just about to regain control of the auction when she realized the price had already reached an unbelievable amount. That would result in a mountain of bonuses, too! This was her first time encountering such an episode. Her soul could not help but feel flabbergasted with joy. Before she could speak, Fane interrupted. "What's the matter? When did the Young Master of the Taylor family become so stingy? Did you think a million would be the magic trick to kick me out of the battle? Heh! I call seventy million!" "Jesus Christ! Is he nuts? That's seventy million!" "Yeah! This isn't just a shouting competition, right? He didn't just shout out the number for fun, right? Isn't seventy million considered money to him?" "Yes, I can buy two villas with seventy

million!" A few of the businessmen started doubting their existence. Although they were rich, they held similar notions about obtaining items from an auction; the cheaper the better. Of course, people would want the price of an auctioned item to be as low as possible! Never did they expect that this adopted son-in-law of the Taylor family would stir up so much trouble with Young Master Taylor, as though money was just stacks of paper to him. "That…that much?" Beside Young Master Taylor, Ken's eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers. His jaw dropped to the ground. A moment ago, he had thought that he was on the winning side and that he only had to fork out one or two million to help Ivan win this bet. Now it seemed like the shrimp had brought more money with him than they expected. They truly underestimated that piece of junk. Or, perhaps the trash had asked for an advance of four months, or possibly even six! However, he struggled to understand it, though. Was the Drake family an idiot? How could they be so nice to a mere bodyguard? "Young Master Clark, this…." Ivan looked at Ken eagerly, seeking his advice. After all, he only had to cough up 60 million and Ken would cover the remaining. "Don't be afraid! Just keep increasing the bid! I don't believe that we can't teach him a lesson today! He'll wipe your shoes clean!" "Seventy million, right? Haha, Fane Woods, I'll fight you to the death today!" "Seventy-five million!" he called out the bid after thinking about it for a moment, his fists clenched firmly and determination glowing in his eyes.

Chapter 488

In order not to be looked down upon and be seen as inferior, Ivan did not care about the issue of money anymore. What was on his mind was his image and reputation. He could not afford to lose his face. After all, as the young master of the Taylor family, the perception of him as being far more superior and better than the trashy son-in-law was natural. His status, his wealth, and his reputation were definitely far more superb compared to Fane's. It was impossible for him to kneel before Fane and clean his shoes.

Furthermore, he now had the financial support from Young Master Clark—he only needed to cough up 60 million bucks and that was all! “Young Master Clark, you’re truly amazing. You raised the bid!” “Of course! How could a young master of the Clark family lose to a useless adopted son-in-law?” “I heard that Fane works for the Drakes as a bodyguard and that his monthly pay is quite high. I’m not sure if it was the Drakes who lent him that amount of money, or perhaps they paid him his salary in advance!” “His pay is high? Hmph! How high could it be? After all, he’s just a tiny little bodyguard.” “He earns twenty million a month, isn’t that high?” The crowd was talking about Fane energetically. Fane frowned. The thing he cared the least about was money. He was interested in what was going on in that ignorant brain of Ivan’s. If Ivan were not an idiot, then why would he still raise the bid at this point? “What’s wrong? Why did you stop? Ha-ha! Are you afraid now? Or have you finally realized just how powerless and insignificant you are? Just kneel and clean my shoes already!” Ivan thought he had finally won the bet when Fane stopped calling out his price as quickly as the previous rounds. He assumed that Fane had only requested an advance of four months and that 70 million was his limit. If Fane continued to raise the bid again, it would leave him no money to compensate Ivan. Hence, Fane only dared to go up to 70 million. The win belonged to Ivan now. “Haih, eighty million, then!” Fane sighed long and hard before he called out a price again. He then added, “Ivan Taylor, your turn!” “Eighty million?” Ivan’s face blanked. It seemed like Fane desperately wanted him to lose; he was so ready to risk everything. Even if Ivan wanted to continue the game, he was afraid that Young Master Clark would say otherwise. Ivan turned his head, looking into Ken’s eyes as though he was asking how much more Ken could bear. All the color drained from Ken’s face as well, his face looking dull. He only expected to fork out a few million, but the worthless shrimp had actually raised it to 80 million! That was an extra of 20 million, and even if Ivan won, the house would belong to Ivan and not him! When Ken saw the puppy dog eyes and pleading look all over Ivan’s face, he gave in

with gritted teeth. “Young Master Taylor, I can help out with another ten million at most. Thirty million is my ceiling. If you exceed this amount, you have to bear the remaining. After all, the villa is not worth eighty million and the house will not be mine either!” Ivan bobbed his head appreciatively. In other words, he could still call the bid up to 90 million. Ivan gave Fane a dry smile. “Fane, are you sure you have that much money? Did you raise the price on purpose just to make me pay more than its actual value? If that’s the case, you’re violating the auction rules. You need to pay the amount for your actual bid!” “Hehe, don’t you worry about me!” Fane chortled calmly. “Since I’m planning on beating you in this battle, I’d naturally have to spend that much money. Most importantly, I’m still waiting for you to clean my shoes!” “Eighty-one million!” Ivan increased another one million to test the waters. “Eighty-five million!” Fane smiled subtly and mocked, “Young Master Taylor, don’t be such a wimp! Are you running out of money? Is that why you’re raising it slowly, only one million at a time? Why don’t you use all of the Taylors’ money and go all in! Should you do that, I’ll admit defeat.” Anger rose in Ivan like a fierce tide. He was not a fool. Every penny, asset, and property that the Taylor family owned now would eventually become his! Unless he was a lunatic or an idiot, he would not use up all the money from his family for such a villa! “Ninety million!” Ivan finally called out the price. He had thought it out and this would be his final price. He only needed to pay 60 million, the other 30 would be borne by Young Master Clark. “Ninety-five million!” Fane shrugged and shouted nonchalantly as though he owned the national bank. “Go on!”

Chapter 489

Ivan’s tiny little brain could not fathom it. Where did Fane get so much money? 95 million? Was he even sane? Ivan clenched his jaw and gritted his teeth. He paused before saying, “Fine. I’m down on my luck today. I’ll let you have it this time. However, I really want to know if you increased the price deliberately just to trick me. Do you even have that much money?

Hmph! If you can't take out ninety-five million right now, everyone here including the upper management of the auction house will not let you slide!" "Ninety-five million! Such an unbelievable price!" "That's right! How could an adopted son-in-law cough up ninety-five million? It's just a villa! That's almost a hundred million!" "The owner of the villa who commissioned this auction would probably be shocked to death with the outcome!" The wealthy businessmen were completely stupefied as well. Their gazes toward Fane were no longer full of contempt and mockery but replaced with approbation and respect. They all knew that no one would squander their money like this unless the individual was not an ordinary person. "Haha, given up, have you? That's great!" Fane let out a hearty laugh and turned to the auctioneer on the stage. "Hammer it and seal the bid!" "Ninety-five million, going once! "Ninety-five million, going twice! "Ninety-five million, going for the third and final time! "Sold!" The auctioneer shouted without any emotion, striking her gavel against the block. Little did the crowd know, the auctioneer was still in shock. "Alrighty, Ivan Taylor, our beloved Young Master Taylor, it's time for you to shine like a shoe-shiner! Haha! "But there isn't a cloth nor a rag here, how're you going to wipe my shoes clean? Hmm. Don't tell me you're going to lick them clean?!" Fane laughed wholeheartedly. This ignorant punk had been bullying his wife and daughter for a long time. He would not let him off so easily no matter what. "You pay the ninety million first and then we'll talk. How would I know if you have that kind of money if you don't pay up?" Ivan smiled mockingly, but he was praying hard that Fane did not possess that amount of money. Fane strode to the front of the room swiftly and paid 90 million with his bank card. "You no longer have reason to be concerned, right? Our dear, Young Master Taylor?" Fane articulated with an evil grin on his face. "Young Master Taylor, we're sorry. We can't help you this time. We have no idea how this punk has so much money!" Neil forced a dry smile. "It looks like he asked for an advance of many months from the Drake family!" Unexpectedly, Ivan took off his shirt and said,

“Isn’t it just a shoe polishing? Who says I can’t do it!” He squatted down right after he ended his sentence. His face was burning hot and veins popped out on the side of his neck. He was feeling embarrassed. With so many people at the scene, he could not eat his words! Ivan could only clench his jaw, grit his teeth and wipe Fane’s shoes clean! “Wipe them clean. Otherwise, your job is not done!” Fane beamed. He raised his foot higher and ordered, “Don’t forget the soles! Every part of the shoes should be wiped clean and polished!” “Fane Woods, don’t go too far! I’m the Young Master of the Taylor family and not to mention, your cousin, too! You’ll regret doing this to me!” Ivan lifted his head and shot Fane a hateful glance. He was already so angry that his anger almost consumed him. How dare this shrimp ask him to clean even the soles of his shoes!

Chapter 490

“Are you threatening me? This is interesting!” Fane let out a faint smile and looked at Ivan who was crouching on the floor. “Back when you were bullying my wife and daughter, didn’t you think you’d regret it? “Go on, get to polishing, seeing that you’ve lost the bet, and deserve it. Polish it nice and clean!” Fane responded casually. “So be it, I’ll polish!” The shirtless Ivan’s face was filled with dissatisfaction, his teeth clenched tightly. His hatred toward Fane grew even more in his heart. From the looks of it, the Drake family had given Fane a bountiful amount of money, making it impossible to chase him out during Grandpa Taylor’s birthday. Therefore, the only way was to wait until the end of Grandpa Taylor’s Birthday. Once Fane lowered his guard, only then would he command Xena to feed him the poison. As long as Fane consumed the poison, he would surely lie down in a coffin after a month. When Ivan imagined Fane’s soon-to-be fate of death, he felt so much better. With his teeth clenched tightly, he finally cleaned up the soles of Fane’s shoes. “Done!” Ivan shot up from the ground, his eyes filled with fury. “Heh, not bad. This is my first time experiencing Young Master Taylor’s handiwork.” Fane laughed, “Not too bad, Young Master

Taylor. At least you're not a sore loser! Alright then! I'm off for the transfer procedures. Take care and have a safe journey!" "Move!" Ivan's mouth twitched as he walked out topless. He headed to a nearby clothing shop to purchase a new shirt immediately. "Over ninety million, ninety million! Useless son-in-law, how does he possibly have such a massive sum of money. F*ck, this is so frustrating!" Losing to a trashy shrimp he scorned, the fury continued to burn stronger as Ivan pondered. Although the incident was nothing but a huge embarrassment, there was a fear in him that the news would very soon spread to others. "It's got to be someone from the Drake family who allowed him to get his salary in advance. He can't fork out such a large amount of money on his own!" Neil was still in disbelief that the useless son-in-law had the audacity to forcefully buy over the villa. Although it was slightly overpriced, the sole act of having Ivan polish his shoes would put them to shame, bringing disgrace to them all. Especially for Ivan who was the one doing the polishing. Such an act of revenge would definitely be remembered. "Let this brat brag for a few days. From the looks of it, Old Master Taylor would be very satisfied with the gift he has prepared!" After considering for a moment, Ken spewed, "After Old Master Taylor's birthday celebration, we must find a way to make sure Xena is able to poison Fane. We shall not drag this further anymore!" "Yes, it's said that love grows with time, and if this drags on, it's possible that Selena's feelings for this punk would grow deeper and deeper. By then, it won't be easy to win over Selena's heart!!" Neil's forehead puckered. The thought of not being able to win Selena over was carved deeply in his heart. He could not give up, he did not want to give up. "By the way, which one of you is a little closer to Miss Tanya? Or, knows anyone from the Drake family?" Ivan popped the question after a moment of silence. "I have a friend who is a relative of the Drake family's butler. Why do you ask? Young Master Taylor, did you think of another way to deal with Fane?" After a moment of consideration, Neil opened his mouth. "See if your friend is able to find out how much of his salary this punk, Fane Woods, requested from the Drake

family in advance. It's not like the Drake family would give him an advance of year's salary, right?”

Chapter 491

Ivan laughed bitterly, “This Drake family is way too generous now.” “Alright, I’ll have him look into the whole situation!” Neil chuckled helplessly and said, “Sigh, Fane actually managed to have us spend a hundred fifty million bucks on him back then. Even a powerful assassin wasn’t able to murder him. Truly, he’s a resilient little brat!” Neil felt awful when he thought about the money they had previously spent. Spending that much money only for the task to fail was a major waste, regardless of how wealthy the Hugo family was. The trio left soon after. Fane, on the other hand, had arrived at the main entrance of the mansion after getting the paperwork done and receiving the keys. “Although a price tag of over ninety million is slightly more expensive than usual, I’m glad I’m still able to give my wife a house and a surprise at the same time!” Fane smiled as he stared at the mansion in front of him. He opened the door and entered. Fane was even more satisfied after taking a look at the garden and renovations done for the mansion. At the back of the mansion, there was a row of smaller houses. They looked impressive, suitable to be used as living quarters for the maids and servants of this house. “I don’t think there are any other spots in this mansion that might need further renovations.” Fane thought for a while after looking around. He then gave Lana a call and invited her over for a look. Lana was a woman, so perhaps a woman’s eyes would be better at spotting which areas needed further adjustments. Till then, he would be able to make the necessary changes. Lana arrived in less than 20 minutes. She parked her car at the entrance before walking in. “Whoa, what a house, master! Oh, how envious I am of a house this huge. It would feel much better living here than in my place!” Lana told Fane who was smoking when she entered the mansion. “How could you be this forgetful? Why are you still addressing me as your master?” Fane felt helpless as he stared at the sexy

lady in front of him. “Sigh, there’s no one here besides us. I haven’t called you my master for a very long time now and my mouth could not resist any longer, okay! “You know, I prefer the days we spent in the military where I got to call you my master every day. I’m bored to death living in the Middle Province!” Lana sat in front of Fane, crossing her sexy long slender legs. She was dressed in a purple Qipao dress which made her incredible body stand out even more. “If you’re bored, you can always go on a vacation or a shopping trip. It shouldn’t be that difficult for a person of your status to find yourself some company!” Fane said as he let out a bitter smile. “I find it all meaningless. It’s not as fun as spending time with you, master!” Lana continued as she chuckled, “Oh, that’s right, master. Why’d you invite me here? Are you going to show me around your mansion?” “Right, let’s go. Let’s take one look around the mansion just to see if there’s anything the place lacks or requires renovation. I feel like the place isn’t too bad, but something just feels off and I’m not sure what it is exactly!” “Besides, you’re a woman, so you should be able to take a closer look at this place and tell me if there’s any problems or not!” Fane said, showing Lana around the place. After she was done with the tour of the place, Lana spoke with a bitter chuckle. “Master, the renovations are impressive. I can tell that its previous owner was a person of culture and taste. You can move in without worries now!” As she spoke, she pointed at a couch in the main lobby and said, “The only gripe I have is this couch. It looks a little dated and it feels off. It’s unsuitable for young people. You should change it!” “Right, right, right! I felt that something was out of place. Now that you’ve pointed it out, you’re absolutely right!” Fane nodded immediately. He then looked at the time and said, “Let’s go, it’s getting late now. Let me treat you to a meal then we’ll go shop for a couch and a new dining table in the evening!”

Chapter 492

It did not take long for both Fane and Lana to head out for some furniture shopping, each in their own cars. However, he did not expect to run into

Ivan, who was on his way home, while they were driving away from the mansion. “It’s Fane and that wealthy lady!” Ivan gasped. This was not his first time running into the both of them. Although Lana wore a mask whenever she went out to prevent people from recognizing her, Ivan could still recognize her from the back; those long legs and incredibly attractive figure. The woman that left with Fane earlier had to be that same wealthy woman that went to the auction. “I think I understand now. Hahaha, that money must not have belonged to Fane. He never gets an advance from the monthly wages given to him by the Drake family. It has to be that wealthy lady’s money!” Ivan cackled out loud, feeling incredibly excited. It was fortunate for him that the mansion was close to the Taylor family home, or else, he would never have discovered such a secret. He immediately called Neil and Ken, both of whom had just left, and told them to return immediately. “What’s the matter, Young Master Ivan? Why’d you want us to come back when we had just left?” Both Ken and Neil frowned when they met Ivan. They looked confused. “I just saw Fane coming out from that mansion!” Ivan said while laughing maniacally. Ken’s expressions dulled as he said, “Young Master Ivan, are you kidding? You wanted us to come back because of this? My time is precious to me! Fane spent so much money to buy that mansion, obviously he’d be excited to take a look himself. Hehe, this is like when you’ve just married a beautiful woman, wouldn’t you be excited to sleep with her?” “Yeah, well said! Especially for poor people like him. He’s been poor his whole life. Now that he’s rich, it’d be odd if he wasn’t excited to look at the mansion he’d just bought!” “Though this mansion might be a gift for the old master, it was still bought with his own money so he might actually move in for a couple of days anyway!” Neil explained. He felt that Ivan was making a mountain out of a molehill. Ivan was speechless as he rolled his eyes at the both of them. He said, “If that was just the case, why would I have called you to come back in the first place? Yes, I saw him getting out of that mansion but a woman left with him!” “A woman? That isn’t Selena?” Neil was shocked. Before making a

wild assumption, he said, “Could that woman be Miss Tanya? Could Miss Tanya have called Fane over because she wanted to bid for the mansion? Yes, if Miss Tanya had decided to buy that mansion, it’ll explain everything that had just happened!” Ken clenched his fist and said, “Fane, that b*stard! He actually used Miss Tanya’s purchase of this mansion to go against you, Young Master Ivan! He made us butter up to him, and now it seems that money never belonged to him. He was just helping the Drake family buy the mansion. How could we ever compete against the Drake family? Do we even stand a chance against them?” Ivan wore an odd expression. He spoke with a bitter look, “Both of your imaginations are quite impressive. However, that woman wasn’t Miss Tanya nor was it Selena. It was that wealthy lady we met from the auction house that day!” “Her?” Both Neil and Ken gasped. It did not take long for Ken to slap his thighs and curse, “F*cking b*stard that Fane is. I told everyone that woman had to be a wealthy lady. Fane is no doubt her sugar baby. That brat just wouldn’t admit it. Even Selena refused to believe me. This hasn’t been our first encounter with this situation, and now it seems that all of that had to be real!”

Chapter 493

“Yeah, they had already driven off when I saw them so I didn’t manage to take a picture in time. It’d be awesome if I did, though!” Ivan nodded as he lamented. He continued after some thought, “The money must be hers. She must’ve bought it for him!” “Yeah. Young Master Ivan, since you live opposite that mansion, you should pay closer attention to it these few days. If you notice Fane returning to the mansion with her again, you have to find a way to take more pictures of them. The more the merrier, yeah? You know what to do!” “It’d be amazing if you can get a picture of them kissing! Haha, when that happens, we’ll make copies and hang them up on every corner of every street and alley. What do you guys think would happen?” Ken cackled since this was such a great opportunity. He did not expect that after trying to rack their brains to come up with methods to handle Fane, Fane himself

would present them with such an opportunity. “This time, we definitely need to dig up some dirt on Fane!” Ivan clenched his fist and said, “Look, the courtyard in our Taylor family home is closest to that mansion. It’d be difficult for Fane to notice me if I hid behind that tree to sneak a picture of him!” “That’s good to know. If you’re free, Young Master Ivan, keep a close eye on him. Try your best to get intimate pictures of them, okay! We’ll leave everything to you, Young Master Ivan!” “I’ll see when I can talk to Selena about this. I believe this whole ordeal of Fane buying that mansion with that woman could not be kept from her forever,” Ken explained after some thought. “Well said!” Ivan nodded. After thinking, he added, “If Fane bought this house for that woman, then I’m guessing this would be their private love nest. If the housing deed is under Fane’s name then it’s highly likely that this mansion was given to him by that woman. Let’s see if he can explain himself then!” Ken nodded as he replied, “What if this love nest of theirs is under that wealthy lady’s name?” “Haha, Fane wouldn’t be able to explain their relationship as well, right? Fane went to the auction for that mansion and then it was placed under that lady’s name. Do you think Selena would be happy if she learned about this? This just shows how complicated Fane’s relationship is with that lady. This mansion could be the place where they secretly meet for their affairs!” “I think that lady only wears a mask to prevent her husband from finding out about them. It seems her husband isn’t as simple as we thought. He might not even be a local from our Middle Province!” Ivan spoke while cackling out loud. “This could mean that Fane has yet to prepare the Old Master’s gift. He could still get exiled on the Old Master’s birthday!” Neil explained. At the end of their discussion, Ivan was tasked to keep a close eye on Fane over the coming days. He would try his best to catch Fane and that woman in any intimate acts. Ken was tasked with letting Selena know about today’s findings to put some strain on her relationship with Fane. He also planned to have his friend investigate if Fane had received any advanced wages from the Drake family. Neil, on the other

hand, would get his men to follow Fane around to find out if he had bought anything that cost above 10 million bucks.

Chapter 494

Within the office of the Drake Dynasty Real Estate, which belonged to Drake Group, Selena happened to be relaxing while drinking a cup of coffee. The recent operations for the company were going quite smoothly, leaving her with nothing much to do. Just as she was enjoying her leisure time, she noticed it was almost lunch hour when Ken came looking for her. After knocking on the door and receiving permission to enter, Ken came in with a freshly picked flower. “Young Master Ken?” Selena looked disgusted when she noticed Ken. However, she still smiled at him as she said, “What are you doing here, Young Master Ken? You wouldn’t be asking for a collaboration with our company now, would you? If I recall correctly, your company doesn’t have any relation to construction at all!” Ken laughed. He handed her the flower while saying, “Fane is nothing more than a mere soldier, a mindless brute who is absolutely unworthy of you. He must be illiterate. Why would he be a take-out delivery boy back then, if he wasn’t? It’s too embarrassing for you to stay with him!” Upon noticing Selena’s silence, he continued, “Just accept me. I assure you, I’ll treat both you and your daughter extremely well. I swear I’ll treat your daughter like my very own!” “Pardon me, Young Master Ken. Save this flower for another woman. I believe there are countless beautiful women out there who’d love to receive flowers from you. Besides, you’re rich and handsome. You’re undoubtedly the absolute dream man for some women out there!” Selena did not accept the flower. She used to think that Ken was not bad. However, after Fane returned, she realized that Ken was truly a horrible person. Ken brought some people with him to forcefully demolish their home. If he was truly an honorable man, he would never use such an underhanded method. Ken realized Selena would not accept his flower even after waiting for a good long while. He chuckled awkwardly before placing the flower on the

deck on another end. He then walked over to her and continued, “Yeah, yeah, yeah. I admit I’m rich and my social status is quite high. It is without a doubt a bunch of beautiful women would want me if I were to look for them.” He paused for a moment after saying that before continuing, “However, I’m loyal to you. You know that. Other women are not even a fraction of what you are in my eyes!” “Really? If you were to ask me, I think that the more difficult it is for you to obtain something, the more you want to have it, right? Aren’t all you men this way?” Selena chuckled coldly and said, “Young Master Ken, please don’t bother me ever again. It’s impossible for us to ever be together, and not to mention, my husband is quite good to me. I have a daughter, too, so I’m pretty content with my life. So, please, I hope you won’t ever disturb me again!” “Your husband is nice to you?” Ken chuckled coldly as he said, “If he’s so nice to you, why would he look for that wealthy lady? I think you’re too naive and that you have no clue that b*stard of a man lied to you!” “Wealthy lady?” Selena frowned when she heard those words. She asked, “Why are you spouting baseless nonsense out of nothing again, Ken?” “Baseless nonsense?” Ken laughed as he said, “Selena, you’ve no idea just what kind of person Fane truly is. You don’t understand him well enough. How well did you know him before marrying him? You were completely oblivious, right? He was enlisted on the second day of your marriage, and that single departure took five whole years.”

Chapter 495

“He’s only been back for less than a month, right? Do you think you truly understand that man? “He’s nothing more than a sugar baby right now. You wouldn’t have a single clue. A true sugar baby would cheat on you behind your back. “We saw him today. He was with that wealthy lady, the same lady that spent five hundred million bucks to win the bid for that luminous pearl from back then!” The more Ken spoke, the more emotional he became. Even his neck turned red. Selena frowned harder when she noticed just how incredibly angry Ken was. She was indeed quite skeptical of Fane back then

since Ken was not the only one who had told her that. Even Michael had said the same thing. In the end, however, she still chose to trust Fane, thinking that Fane was not someone who would do such a thing. However, Ken mentioned that he saw Fane with that wealthy lady again today. Having been accused of the same thing twice, could it be real? Not to mention, Fane's previous excuse was too outrageous. He told her that the Goddess of War, Lana, was his disciple. Was this not outrageous to hear? He even claimed that all of the nine Gods of War were also his disciples. "You, what evidence do you have? "If you don't have any evidence, you're just spouting nonsense about someone else!" Selena stuttered while saying after remaining silent for a moment. Ken knew Selena was starting to believe him when he noticed her reaction. He was delighted as he said, "Of course, I have evidence! Your cousin Ivan, Neil, and I were all together, and all three of us saw them both together!" He never expected Selena to reply in such a cold tone, "Heheh, You, Ivan, and Neil? I wouldn't believe a word from those two since you're all just a bunch of horrible people who hate Fane. Did you think I'd believe a word you said?" Ken was speechless, unable to argue with her. Chuckling bitterly, all he could say was, "Alright, it's fine if you refuse to believe a word I say but there's one thing that's real, right?" Ken paused before continuing, "The mansion opposite of the Taylor family home was auctioned today. Young Master Ivan knew that Old Master Taylor loved that mansion since it's right opposite the Taylor family home. He wanted to buy the mansion as a gift for the Old Master's seventieth birthday." "What does that have anything to do with Fane? Ivan is rich now after sealing the deal on that project with South Hill Real Estate. I couldn't care less if he went to the auction to buy the mansion for Old Master Taylor." Although Selena said that, beneath the surface, she was actually quite shocked. She did not expect that Ivan would stir up such a storm just to please Old Master Taylor so he could inherit the Taylor family's assets. It seemed like he would do just about anything for that! "Haha, naturally, that wouldn't have been a big deal. However, we ran into Fane there! "You

should know that mansion costs thirty million bucks, and Fane spent ninety-five million to buy that mansion! Tell me, where did he get all that money from?" Ken cackled out loud and said, "Coincidentally, we also noticed that wealthy lady leaving that mansion. So, tell me. Don't you think they're in a relationship with one another? Isn't he a scummy man?"

Chapter 496

"He actually spent ninety-five million bucks to buy that mansion? No way... "And you ran into him and that wealthy lady again? They left from that mansion?" Selena's face turned slightly bitter. If what they had claimed was true, Fane's relationship with that wealthy lady was indeed quite unique. If all of it were true, that would mean that the man she had spent five years desperately waiting for his return actually lied to her, and that she would have been the most foolish woman in the entire world. "Of course it's real. If you don't believe me, we can both head over to the auction house and ask if there was indeed a man named Fane who bought the mansion for ninety-five million bucks!" Ken immediately said, "I can't lie about that now, can I?" Selena frowned, remaining silent. Her heart felt slightly awful. She felt incredibly wronged. Over the last five years, she had suffered too much mockery and judgment for the sake of Fane and their daughter to be treated this way. Fane had repeatedly told her how much he loved her, and yet he went looking for a wealthy lady? Not to mention, they actually bought a love nest right opposite the Taylor family home? Would this not be the most insulting thing to do to her? Hehe, they made their love nest in front of their house! "Truly, Selena. If I'm lying to you this time, I'd be struck by lightning!" Ken raised his hand and immediately started swearing. Selena recalled something else at this moment, the incident where Fane returned home extremely late at night. He had some alcohol to drink and when he returned home, the scent of a woman's perfume was emanating from his body. When she questioned him about it, he told her that it was Miss Yvonne's perfume. Miss Yvonne was completely drunk and he had to carry

her home on his back. Hence, the perfume. Now, however, Selena could not help but feel skeptical about the truth he claimed. Was he actually with that wealthy lady that night? Moreover, was the money that Fane used to buy the Porsche 911 from the wealthy lady? Once a person started to overthink, they would often spiral out of control. The more one were to overthink, the more terrified one would become. It seemed like she started seeing issues with Fane now. “So? Want me to take you there right now?” Ken spoke in a casual tone. “There’s no need for that. You can return home now!” Selena glared at him coldly as she said, “I still have work to do. This is a workplace, so if you have any work-related business, then we can talk. If not, you can spare me from that!” “Selena, you can’t pretend to be oblivious about it, right? You were taken for a fool by Fane, that scumbag. You, yourself had no idea. Do you still think he’s a good person? Selena, I’m doing this for your sake. Only my feelings for you are true!” Ken seemed a little frantic. He could tell that Selena somewhat believed him. However, he was unsure as to why Selena refused to go with him to validate the information he told her. “Leave now. If you don’t, I’ll call security!” Selena stood up immediately as she furiously exclaimed that. “Alright, alright. I’ll leave. Just think about everything I told you. Think if there’s anything peculiar about Fane that stands out. Also, you can’t let him know that you’re suspicious of him yet. We will present you with all the evidence soon. I believe that there’s only one truth to this whole ordeal!” Ken walked out, leaving Selena with that statement. He left after he was done speaking. The moment Ken left, Selena sat back down on her chair, frowning deeper. “It can’t be real. That can never be real. Even if my husband liked another woman out there, he would tell me about it. He’d ask for my opinion, right?” Selena started talking to herself, “And besides, he’s not someone who would be a sugar baby!”

Chapter 497

Lunch hour soon arrived. She walked out of the exit and after some thought, she drove to the auction house. “Is there anything I can help you with, miss? Our auction will begin at 1pm. We auctioned off a mansion earlier today and we’ll be auctioning off an amazing antique later.” When a beautiful female staff noticed Verian, she immediately approached her with a professional smile. “Oh, I wanted to ask if it was true that an astronomical price was offered during the auction for the mansion this morning?” Selena probed after biting her lip. She felt nervous after asking the question, worried she might feel awful about the answer. “Of course, it’s true. That man was incredible. He’s the son-in-law of the Taylor family…and he spent ninety-five million bucks to win the bid for that mansion!” As the staff spoke, she exclaimed enviously, “Truly, the wealthiest amongst the wealthiest. He actually had that much money to buy it on a whim!” “You, how do you know he’s the son-in-law of the Taylor family?” Selena felt unhappy after hearing it. Apart from Fane, who else would be referred to as the son-in-law of the Taylor family, could there be another person? “Of course, I know. Everyone knew!” The staff immediately said, “He had a bet with Young Master Ivan. Both of them kept adding to their bids. It was insane, I tell you! They said that whoever lost the bid for the mansion, the loser had to shine the winner’s shoe, and it turned out that the son-in-law won! Oh right, Young Master Ivan was the one who mentioned that detail. He said that person was the son-in-law of the Taylor family. If he hadn’t, even we would’ve no idea!” Selena had an odd expression as she said, “Ivan actually polished the son-in-law’s shoe?” “Of course, and since neither of them had a cloth with them, Young Master Ivan was forced to take his shirt off to shine his shoe for him! “That son-in-law was truly ruthless. He wasn’t even afraid of crossing the other person, actually making Young Master Ivan clean the soles of his shoe!” the staff explained. Selena was picturing the scene in her head, her heart feeling slightly better since Ivan did bully both her and Kylie a lot. If it was not for him being the Young Master of the Taylor family and her cousin, she wanted nothing more than to see him

dead. “Thanks a lot!” she left after a bitter chuckle. However, what she could be certain of right now was that Fane did fork out ninety-five million bucks to buy that mansion. That money must have come from that wealthy lady since it would be impossible for Fane to fork out such a huge amount. This also meant Fane was in a secret relationship with that wealthy lady! “Who exactly is that wealthy lady? Why would she be willing to fork out so much money for Fane?” Selena frowned. To get some form of confirmation, she remembered Miss Tanya’s number was saved in her phone. With that thought in mind, she gave Miss Tanya a call, “Hello, Miss Tanya? It’s me, Selena. I was wondering if you gave an advanced pay to my husband?” “No. What’s up?” Tanya’s voice could be heard from the other end of the call as she said, “Are you guys short on money? Do you need an advance? If you do, just let me know!” “Oh, there’s no need. I was just randomly asking! Don’t tell Fane about it, okay!” After Selena hung up, her mind was buzzing. It seemed Fane had indeed lied to her. He actually had a wealthy lady out there.

Chapter 498

Miss Tanya did not give Fane an advanced pay, yet he spent ninety-five million bucks on that mansion. This meant that the money must have belonged to that wealthy lady. She guessed that the mansion was bought by the wealthy lady, and whenever the both of them were free in the future, that was where they would go for their dates. She grew incredibly furious when she thought about how she allowed Fane to cuddle up with her the entire night last night. However, it did not take long for her to calm down. She pretended as if nothing had happened when she returned to her office, all the way till she was done with work for the day. She drove home as usual. After Fane and Lana had lunch, they immediately went furniture shopping. Lana left after they were done picking the right furniture. Fane, on the other hand, followed the delivery staff back to the mansion and switched out the furniture from the previous owner that he did not want. After they were

done, he realized that the overall feel of the place felt even more perfect than before. He believed that Selena would absolutely love the place once they moved in. Since Ivan had nothing to do during the evening, he kept a close eye on everything that was happening at the mansion across the street. Unfortunately for him, all he saw was Fane returning to the mansion along with a couch. The wealthy lady was nowhere to be seen. He felt a slight disappointment in his heart. However, after much deeper thought, he thought it made sense leaving Fane with all the hard labor since all the wealthy lady had to do was pay, right? He reckoned that all he had to do was keep watch at night and pay extra attention tomorrow so he could actually capture something. Since the mansion was newly bought, the wealthy lady would definitely want to taste what it must feel like doing the deed with Fane in their brand new mansion, right? As for the old table and couch, they looked expensive and he could tell that they had not been used too often. Perhaps Fane simply disliked them. Fane immediately gave both the pieces away to the delivery staff and they happily left. Since Fane had nothing to do, he took a nap in the mansion. At 6pm, he drove home. “You’re home, honey!” Fane noticed Selena in the courtyard and he greeted her with a smile. “Yeah!” Selena’s reply was casual but her expression was cold. Upon noticing Selena’s poor mood, Fane approached her and asked, “What’s the matter? Honey, you seem to be in a bad mood. Was that Sonia lady giving you trouble at the office again? If she keeps targeting you, just fire her! I slapped her in the face back then, did she not repent?” “No!” Selena chuckled before asking Fane, “Oh, that’s right, honey. What did you do this morning?” “Nothing much. I was working in the Drake family home!” In order not to ruin his surprise for Selena, Fane hid it with an awkward chuckle, not speaking the truth. Selena felt the hurt in her heart after she heard him say that. She chuckled and said, “Oh, Miss Tanya treats our family really well. You should work hard to repay her kindness now, okay?” “Honey, why do you seem a little odd today? Are you sure that nothing’s up with you?”

Chapter 499

Fane could sense that Selena was in a bad mood. She seemed as if she was hiding something from him. Selena chuckled and said, “No. What are you talking about!” “Fane is back!” Fiona was taking care of something in the house. When she noticed Fane’s return, Fiona came over smiling cheerfully, “Oh look, it’s my amazing son-in-law. You’re back!” Both Selena and Fane looked at each other. instantly sensing that something was off. Fiona actually greeted her son-in-law, and on top of that, called him amazing. This made them feel as though something sketchy was happening. “Oh no, I’m not worthy of your praises!” Fane chuckled awkwardly and asked, “Is there a problem, mom?” “Hehe, you sure are sharp!” Fiona chuckled before saying, “Sharon’s been looking for you for a few days in a row now but you haven’t been home.” Fane gasped when he heard that. His expression dimmed slightly. It seemed like that woman would still show up here. It seemed like his mother-in-law might have gotten plenty of good deals out of this since she was smiling so cheerfully. Judging from how she looked, he was worried that his mother-in-law might try to matchmake Sharon with him since Fiona nearly forced them to be with each other for money! As expected, Fiona continued, “Miss Sharon is the lady of the George family. Now that she’s successfully lost weight, she looks just as beautiful as my daughter. She came over just for you and gave us each a piece of jade. They all look expensive, they might be worth millions! Say, she still likes you a lot. She wants us to talk to you.” After she was done speaking, she took out a box and handed it over to Selena. She said, “Here, Selena. This is a gift that Sharon prepared for you. Look at how thoughtful she is. I can tell she truly loves Fane!” “Mom, you’ll accept anything people give you. Why didn’t you ask if Fane agrees to it or not? Or how I would feel about the whole ordeal? Am I just a statue to you?” Selena was already in a bad mood. All her suppressed emotions exploded after watching how Fiona was trying to persuade Fane into marrying Sharon. She stood up furiously and tossed

the box onto the ground while saying, “Have I never seen a piece of jade before? It’s only a million bucks, right? Do you think I’m a complete nobody for you to encourage someone who is going out of their way just to snatch my husband?” Fiona immediately rushed to pick up the box and said, “Are you insane? This happens to be really expensive. Even if you don’t like it, you can’t just throw it away. You can always give it to me. What were you going to do if it broke?” Fiona carefully examined the piece of jade. After making sure it was not broken, she let out a sigh of relief and kept it away. She then told Selena, “Dear daughter, it’s normal for a man to have mistresses, right? Plenty of rich men out there have a few mistresses at home.” Selena immediately turned around with a cold expression, ignoring Fiona. “Mom, how could you accept such an expensive gift. She even gave you more than one. Did you think it was appropriate for you to accept it?” Fane was also speechless. His own mother-in-law was trying to help him find a mistress. This was the first time in his life hearing something like this. It seemed as though his family was the only one in the world that would do such a thing. “Why would it be inappropriate? To any normal folk out there, such a gift is indeed an expensive gift, but to Sharon, this is nothing more than pocket change to her. Why can’t I accept it?” Fiona spoke with a bitter look, “You guys should seriously think about this whole ordeal. Fane, you haven’t even seen Sharon yet. She isn’t the same Sharon she used to be anymore. You might actually agree to her after meeting her. She truly was too fat. Even I wouldn’t agree to her offer back then. Don’t all men love beautiful women?” “I’ve seen her before and yes, she is indeed beautiful. “However, Selena is the only woman I love. I have no feelings toward Sharon, especially when she already agreed to stop bothering me and yet, decided to come again anyway. That disgusts me even more!” Fane replied with a cold look on his face.

Chapter 500

Selena was completely charmed by what Fane had just said. She could feel that the statement came directly from the bottom of his heart. The tone of his voice did not sound like he was lying. She might have misunderstood him if that were the case. However, if it was not a misunderstanding, and since Fane loved money so much, why would he not pick Sharon. Since Sharon was not only pretty, she was young too. She had not even dated anyone before. Such a pure innocent lady would be much better than any wealthy woman, right? Selena seriously wondered if she had actually misunderstood Fane. It might be quite possible that Ivan, Neil, and the others had intentionally laid a trap for Fane to strain their relationship. Fane might not have even gone to the auction house today and went to work. Perhaps the staff at the auction house were all bribed by Ivan and the others to intentionally say that. That was because Ken and the others were no fools. They could have guessed that she might secretly go to the auction house to confirm it for herself. Hence, they laid a trap for her, too. 'Forget it, we'll cross that bridge when it comes to it. I'll just wait for him to explain it to me on his own!' Selena thought to herself. Selena calmed herself down for now. Since she did not allow Fane to touch her anyway, she would just continue living her life like this. She should be able to find out real soon if that was in fact, a trap set by Ivan and the others. Fiona grew incredibly furious as she said, "You, you're pathetic!" "Mom, what does me being pathetic have anything to do with the whole thing? Also, I'll never be with Sharon!" Fane replied after letting out a bitter chuckle. "Don't be hasty and refuse her just yet! Listen to me, Sharon happens to be the only daughter of the George family, and after the master of the George family dies, every single asset of the George family will belong to Sharon! "Sharon is more than willing to marry you and be your mistress. She'll be extremely obedient to you. That means, in the future, all of the George family's assets will be yours! Our family will be rich! Wouldn't that mean that my daughter, Selena's father, and I would be able to live a happy life, then?" Although she was incredibly furious, Fiona still tried to keep herself calm while she

advised Fane with a smile. “Have Ben marry her then, wouldn’t that be better?” Fane chuckled coldly before walking toward the house. He said, “I’ll be taking a shower now. Please stop trying to convince me about this in the future, mom. I’ll never agree to it.” “I wish she’d like Ben, too, but she doesn’t like my son. What can I do?” Fiona yelled at Fane with a cold expression, “Think about it. You’d come out of it a hundred million bucks richer!” “Mom, stop trying to persuade him. Relationships are not to be forced. If he likes Sharon, then it’s fine. However, he doesn’t even like her in the slightest. How do you expect him to marry her? He isn’t going to be happy like this!” Selena felt helpless as she stared at her mother. The George family happened to be a First-Class aristocrat family. For someone that rich who came from such a reputable family to like Fane would be something Fiona might not easily give up on. As expected, Fiona stared at Selena and spoke with a smile, “Selena, Fane listens to you and his mother the best. I told his mother already to talk to him. You should also do the same. I think he’s just worried that you might be unhappy so he doesn’t dare to agree to Sharon’s advances. Or else, why would any man refuse such an amazing offer, right?” “This is up to him. Though I’m not against this ordeal, I’m not supporting it either. Which wife would encourage their husband to get a mistress!”

Chapter 501

Selena rolled her eyes at her mother before returning to her house as well. “So much money and that happens to be the George family, you know. They are wealthier than our Taylor family. He actually…” Fiona frowned while she watched the couple’s attitude. It seemed it would be slightly difficult if she wanted to pull the whole ordeal off. However, her heart felt incredible when she thought about the George family's assets. She truly could not understand how Fane could be that foolish since he would be able to marry another beautiful wife on top of getting so much money. How could he not agree to such a wonderful offer? Although Joan already promised her that she would help talk to him, she understood her son very well so she never exactly did. Instead, it was Ben and Xena who both shamelessly came to talk to Fane the next morning. This made Fane feel even more confused about them. Selena instead behaved slightly more normal and calm the following couple of days. She returned home punctually every day. Similarly, Fane did nothing much too since he would only sit around in the courtyard leisurely the following days. Ivan was immensely disappointed when he spent days on end spying on the mansion to spot Fane and the wealthy lady, dating. Old Master Taylor’s birthday was soon approaching and Neil’s men did not notice Fane buying any luxurious gifts for the Old Master. Just the night before Old Master Taylor’s birthday, Ivan and Neil were both drinking together. “That’s odd, why didn’t Fane or the wealthy lady move in even after they bought that mansion? I kept a lookout as much as I could during the day and night as well. Godd*mmit, I am exhausted from the constant lookout but I never notice Fane ever returning to the mansion ever again!” Ivan frowned and said, “Wasn’t this mansion bought to be their love nest so they could date in private?” “That wealthy lady is incredibly rich and ninety million bucks isn’t a lot of money to her. Could Fane have asked her to buy that mansion for him so he could use it to gift to Old Master Taylor during his seventieth birthday?” After some thought,

Neil said, “My men had been following Fane around for a couple of days now and they too had not noticed Fane buying anything expensive. He was basically just going to and from work every day.” “It’s very likely though since Fane isn’t a fool. If the mansion happens to be his dating spot with that wealthy lady, he would know it’s easy for them to be caught by you guys since it’s literally just opposite Taylor’s family home. Besides, the possibility of them running into you guys would be extremely high when they enter or exit the mansion anyway!” “Hence, I presume that the mansion was a gift Fane begged the lady for so he could then use it as a gift for Old Master Taylor! It seems their dating spot would be at a different location!” Ken began to make assumptions as he said, “As for Young Master Ivan running into them previously though, the woman was just checking the place out since it’s only natural for her to want to check out a new place she had just bought, right!” “Yeah!” Ivan nodded and said, “If that’s the case, Fane will no doubt be able to butter up to Old Master Taylor tomorrow and he wouldn’t be exiled from the Taylor family then. It seems we will have to wait for at least two days before getting Xena to make a move on him again.” “Honey, have you prepared a gift for Grandpa’s seventieth birthday tomorrow? You’ve been going to work every day and I didn’t notice you bringing any gifts back. You know, tomorrow happens to be Grandpa’s seventieth birthday right!” Selena could not help herself from asking as she laid in bed at night. “I’ve prepared it way before this already. Grandpa will no doubt love it!” Fane chuckled calmly.

Chapter 502

Selena frowned after hearing Fane said that. Could the gift Fane mentioned be the mansion? Could that mean Fane actually won the auction for that mansion? However, the Drake family never gave Fane advanced pay though. Could that be a gift from the wealthy lady to Fane and that was Fane’s gift for her grandpa? Selena would not look down on Fane even if he became a sugar baby just for the sake of staying in the Taylor family because

she had already decided that even if Fane could not fulfill his promises and was not acknowledged by the Taylor family, she would still stay by his side. She believed if they do not have money, they could make money together instead of using such methods to make money just for the sake of being acknowledged by the Taylor family. Not to mention, if news of Fane being a sugar baby broke out, Old Master Taylor might actually be incredibly furious about it. He would rather not accept a mansion if that was the case since he would feel incredibly ashamed of it. “Oh, that’s right honey, I’m planning to give you a surprise tomorrow night!” She did not expect Fane to say that after pondering about something for a brief moment. “Really? It would be extremely surprising for me if you could bring the gift along with the ten million bucks for Ivan tomorrow!” Selena chuckled bitterly. She did not probe deeper about the gift he prepared for Old Master Taylor was since she would eventually find out tomorrow. Fiona and everyone else got up early the next morning. “Dress better and don’t embarrass us since it is Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday today. Old Master Taylor even personally gave us a call yesterday to have us arrive earlier!” Fiona started rushing everyone early in the morning. At this moment, Fane was dressed in a suit he had just bought yesterday. He looked even more stunning than before. “Yes, this suit is not bad. Truly, a more expensive suit would feel different when a person puts it on!” Fiona nodded satisfyingly before asking Fane, “Oh, that’s right Fane, where’s the gift you’re planning to give the old master? You wouldn’t have not prepared anything didn’t you?” Fiona dimmed when she noticed Fane’s empty hands as she said, “We didn’t prepare anything you know. Since you’re giving a ten million bucks worth of a gift and we’re a family so we are able to save on bringing one. You can’t embarrass us now, okay!” Fane chuckled calmly as he replied, “Oh, mother-in-law, don’t you worry. The gift is already prepared since it’s not that big, I’m able to carry it in my pocket!” “That small?” Fiona glanced at Fane as she wondered if he was bringing a disappointing gift and claiming it to be luxurious? Or else, how could such an item fit in his pocket?” “It is

indeed quite small!" Fane nodded. "Fane, are you sure the value of your gift is worth ten million? We didn't prepare anything and you're going to be the representative of our family, okay?" Andrew was also dressed in branded clothing. He even got his hair done yesterday intentionally. "I am very certain!" Fane nodded once again. "Let's go then. The old master happened to prepare twenty tables at the event!" Ben cheerfully exclaimed. Fane smiled as he took a glance at Xena before frowning instinctively. This woman was not a good person since she thought of Ben as only a rebound guy. However, Ben was still naively dating her. He actually forgave her even after the previous incident.

Chapter 503

However, what made Fane feel odd was, Xena seemed honest and was staying by Ben's side all the time. This made him wonder if she actually had turned over a new leaf after the boss of the Dragon God Clan died? However, with much deeper thought, that possibility seemed quite likely. Xena might feel hopeful again after seeing Fane giving Fiona, twenty million bucks on top of gaining George family's favor when their Taylor family were given two Rolls Royces. Moreover, both Fane and Selena each had a Porsche 911. These assets alone were more than enough for Xena to turn over a new lead and change her mind to be with Ben. It did not take them long to arrive at the Taylor family home with their cars. "I didn't expect them to be able to drive such a car when they're still living in that dump!" Cecilia mocked immediately after she noticed Fane and the others arrive. "Yeah, I heard Fane knew of some medical skills and had successfully treated Sharon's obesity. Those Rolls Royces were gifted by the George family. Hehe, it's not even bought by their own money, so it's nothing praiseworthy!" Another Taylor family member chuckled coldly. "I am quite interested to see just what kind of a gift Fane will give Old Master Taylor today!" Cecilia cackled coldly while she mocked. "What gift have you prepared?" The man next to her asked Cecelia. Cecilia chuckled calmly

and said, “Doesn’t the old master love drinking tea? I’ve gone out of my way to buy two bricks of Pu Erh tea. It’s over two hundred years ago and it’s worth over sixty thousand bucks! It’s not easy to get my hands on them, I had to call in a favor from my friend!” “Not bad, it seems you little brat know how to butter up to people’s interests. You’ve gone all out this time!” The man spoke in a surprised tone after hearing Cecilia’s reply. Cecilia chuckled immediately and said, “Come on, it’s the old master’s seventieth birthday, right? It’s not a regular birthday so obviously, I had to prepare a better gift so the old master would be happy.” “Hahaha, I am quite curious to see just what kind of a gift that son-in-law Fane would prepare. A gift that’s worth over ten million bucks is considered a literal treasure though. Regular items would not be that expensive!” The man took a glance at Fane before cackling out loud. “Yeah, it’s still early and the registration staff is not here yet. I heard registration starts at eleven and the meal will begin at noon!” Cecilia said with a laugh. “Fane, you b*stard!” He did not expect both Ivan and the Old Master of the Taylor family, Theodore would storm over here furiously. “No way, right? Didn’t we just get out of the car? We didn’t even do anything so why is Ivan mad?” Ben was stunned when he noticed the situation. How could they angered anyone when they did not even do anything yet. “Fane, who gave you the right to decide? You sure have some guts!” Theodore was also storming out furiously. His expression was pale from being so furious. “What’s the matter, Theodore? We’ve just arrived and shouldn’t our cars be parked here? Have we parked at the wrong spot?” Andrew looked confused as well as he had no idea what was happening. “The old master had said that only twenty tables would be set up. However, when we walked to the back, it was completely filled with extra tables. Heck, tables were even placed on the grass. I’ve asked the kitchen staff and they told me that Fane came over yesterday to have them set up two hundred and twenty tables!” Theodore seemed like he was about to cough up blood from being agitated. Every single table was already expensive for the old master’s seventieth birthday since all of the alcohol

and cigarettes were expensive. They even hired a chef from a luxurious hotel for this event. However, only the Taylor family members were invited. They did not expect that for the brief moment of Fane's arrival yesterday, he actually told the chef to prepare two hundred and twenty tables and the main point was, the hotel actually made arrangements for that many tables.

Chapter 504

"Fane, this, is this real? Did you know how much a table costs? Our preparations this time are very lavish and expensive. The food menu is pretty classy and it costs sixty thousand per table. Twenty tables would be 1.2 million bucks! Why did you prepare an additional two hundred tables? Did you know how much these extra tables would cost? That will set you back by ten million bucks!" Andrew's face dimmed. If that was true then Fane would have been too bold since it would be very unnecessary to do that. "No way right, Fane? You dropped by yesterday?" Ben was also frowning as Fane seemed to be a magnet for trouble. They finally had some peaceful days and he did not expect him to pull a stunt like that during the Old Master's seventieth birthday. "What on Earth was going on back there? I've asked the chefs as to why are there so many tables laid out and they said one of us had ordered them to lay out 220 tables!" Old Master Taylor stormed out furiously at this moment. He seemed incredibly furious. "Grandpa, it was Fane who had made them do such an arrangement. I've asked them and they said someone whose last name was Woods, a member of our Taylor family told them to do so. Tell me, which one of us in the Taylor family has the last name, Woods?" Ivan immediately came forward to speak out. He was delighted in his heart. It seemed that Fane was truly a fool since he had already infuriated the Old Master the moment they showed up. He had already intended to have him exiled from the Taylor family today. He did not expect that brat would present him with such an opportunity on his own. He only had himself to blame now. "Impossible!" The instant Selena heard that statement, she immediately said, "You guys

only know the person's last name. I think you guys must've wrongly accused Fane now! I think someone was pulling something behind our backs by pretending to be one of the members of our Taylor family and claiming that person's last name happened to be Woods. Just to pin the blame on Fane!" "Yeah, good point! It could be caused by one of us here!" Fiona glared at Ivan when she made that statement. Since Ivan absolutely loved pulling tricks and she believed that no matter how bold Fane was, he would not be bold enough to do anything like this. Ivan on the other hand would be very likely to do something like this. "What are you staring at me for, Fiona? Do you actually think it's me? What reason do I have to do something like this?" Ivan did not expect Fiona would stare at him. He was incredibly furious at that moment. Although he intended to trap Fane, he would never think of pulling a stunt like that. He would not mind giving such a stunt a try if he had thought of it initially though. Xena wanted to speak up for Ivan since she was currently Ivan's girlfriend. However, she was afraid of exposing herself. To keep her identity a secret and gain Fane's trust, she also came forward to speak for Fane, "Hehehe, we never accused you of anything so why did you come forward yourself? It seems you are guilty of something!" "You…" Ivan was incredibly furious as he did not expect Xena would actually side with Fane. However, he was no fool. It did not take him long to understand what Xena was thinking so he spoke with a cold look, "You have no evidence anyway so you can't blindly accuse anyone. I have asked them and they told me it was a guy with the last name of 'Woods'. That person had ordered the hotel to prepare an additional two hundred tables!" "My son will never do such a thing and I believe him! He wouldn't order so many extra tables for nothing!" Joan also frantically spoke up for Fane. "Yeah, my father would not do such a thing!" Kylie too sided with Fane as she stared at Ivan with resentment before adding, "You big meanie, only you would do it! You're framing my father!" "I…" Ivan was fuming since that little brat actually called him a big meanie. This infuriated him into oblivion.

Chapter 505

”It might actually be Ken, Neil, or Micheal since they’ve always hated Fane anyway. They did this to target Fane!” After remaining silent for a brief moment, Selena made that assumption. Fane had a peculiar look on his face as he stood by the side. He did not expect everyone to jump to his defense before he could even speak up for himself. He was incredibly touched by this. “Hehe, regarding if it was Fane’s doing or not, we’ll just have the hotel staff come over since they met the person anyway!” Ivan chuckled maniacally as he stared at Fane. He believed it must have been Fane since that person’s last name was ‘Woods’. It would be a miracle if that was not Fane. As for why Fane was this foolish to have done that was not that important anymore. Having so many extra tables would at least cost ten million bucks. He was interested to see what Fane would do. “You can stop asking now, it’s me!” Fane let out a bitter chuckle before waving both hands around as he replied. “Look, look at him now, you guys. He’s admitted it!” Theodore immediately pointed at Fane before yelling at him, “It seems he is also afraid of us calling the hotel staff over because he knew he will be exposed real soon so he was forced to admit!” “Fane, it’s really you? Oh, how you’ve disappointed our trust in you. I didn’t expect it to be your doing!” Fiona almost started to stomp her feet around from being so infuriated. She had never expected that her troublemaker of a son-in-law would start stirring up trouble again after they finally have some peaceful days. He was truly a jinx! “Fane, you really are… I have no words for you. Why would you order two hundred tables for no reason?” Selena nearly passed out from how furious she was. “No way right? It’s really Daddy?” Kylie bashfully lowered her head as she felt as if she had made a mistake. This little rascal had just spoken up for her own father but she did not expect, it was really her father’s doing. “Fane, why did you order so many extra tables for no reason?” Although Joan had faith in her own son, she was also startled by what Fane had said. Old Master Taylor’s expression dimmed

before exclaiming, “If you think it’s funny to do such a thing, you can leave today.” Ivan was incredibly delighted after hearing that statement. He immediately said, “Fane, you owe us an extremely clear explanation today. Could you have ordered an extra two hundred tables which were going to cost an extra 12 million as a gift for Grandpa? This isn’t a gift, Fane, this is a surprise, right?” The other Taylor family members had long since gathered around them. Everyone was speechless when they heard that. Indeed, an extra two hundred tables would cost ten million now, right? If this happened to be a gift, it seemed that this brat was a fool and his head had been kicked by a donkey. “Should I really explain this anyway?” Fane chuckled calmly as he said, “I ordered that many tables because I know twenty tables alone would never be enough. There will be a lot of guests coming today and I’m even worried if two hundred and twenty tables would even be enough!” “Hehe, what a joke. How many guests would be present anyway? Do you think we won’t have a rough estimate in our heads?” Theodore chuckled and said, “When we held the sixtieth birthday for the old master back then, the relatives and some friends we are close to only filled seventeen to eighteen tables. Our twenty tables would be more than enough now!”

Chapter 506

”More than two hundred tables? Hehe, that is basically impossible. How can we have that many guests?” One of the Taylor family members started cackling out loud. The way he was looking at Fane seemed like he was staring at a madman. Cecilia was also laughing as she said, “Aside from the members of our Taylor family, it would only be regular wealthy merchants who have good ties with us. In addition to a few third-class aristocratic families that are close to us. Those second or first-class families will never show up because they all look down on us, third-class aristocratic families. Therefore, there can never be that many people present!” “Fane, this isn’t the gift you prepared now, right? This isn’t considered a gift, right? You came empty-handed and it seems like this happened to be a gift you’ve

prepared for the old master?" Ivan chuckled coldly. "This isn't a gift. I just so happened to request those tables for you guys only! Don't you worry, if the Taylor family is unwilling to foot the bill for those tables, I will pay for it when the bill comes later!" Fane chuckled calmly as he seemed completely unbothered by any of it. "Nonsense. Of course, you'll have to foot the bill when it was you who ordered that many tables. Are you expecting us to pay the bills for you?" Ivan exclaimed furiously immediately, "The most we will do is pay for the original twenty tables we've ordered." "No way, how can Fane fork out that much money?" The moment Fiona heard they wanted Fane to cough up twelve million bucks, she panicked. From her perspective, Fane's money was also her money since Selena was married to Fane anyway. Now that Fane had already given her twenty million, he was now considered one of them. Not to mention, she still had to rely on Fane to marry Sharon. When that happens, it would be amazing for her if the George family became part of their family, right? "Hehe. It's his fault for randomly placing the order anyway so it's only natural for him to pay the bill. This has nothing to do with us!" Ivan chuckled maniacally. He then added, "I'll see just what you're going to do with the remaining two hundred tables and food. Are you going to eat all of the food yourself or are you going to be a charitable man by giving away the food to the poor on the streets?!" Everyone started laughing after hearing that statement. It seemed the thought process for this son-in-law was indeed an oddity to have ordered an extra two hundred tables for absolutely no reason. "Don't worry, there will be a lot of wealthy merchants that will show up this time. Those who have never made their presence before will show up this time. Not to mention, those first and second-class families that never came back then will be present this time. Therefore, I am quite worried that those two hundred plus tables won't be enough to accommodate all of them!" "Hahaha, keep boasting. How could that many people show up? This happens to be my grandpa's birthday, not the birthday of the God of War, you know!" Ivan was cackling out loud as he felt that Fane was making an

extremely huge joke. “Fane, are you intentionally insulting us by making that statement? I, your grandfather isn’t some reputable man so how could people like marshals or Kings of War even bother to show up to celebrate a birthday of a third-class aristocratic family like us? Not to mention, those first and second-class families will never show up!” Old Master Taylor’s expression dimmed as he found what Fane said, insulting. If it was not for Selena sealing a major business deal for the Taylor family a few days ago, sparking hope for the Taylor family becoming a second-class aristocratic family in the next two years, he wanted nothing more than to kick Fane out immediately. However, he had no choice since she was still his own granddaughter and had done such a huge favor for the Taylor family so, he had to hold back his anger. He let out a bitter chuckle before saying, “Forget it then. Let’s just forget about this ordeal for now since what’s done is already done and the hotel has sent so many staff over with so many waiters on top of so much food. We don’t have much of a choice now anyway.” “Dad, no matter what happens, Fane has to be the one to pay the bill later!” Theodore exclaimed after some thought. As Old Master Taylor was just about to nod, he did not expect a man that was responsible for the guest reception yelled out from the entrance, “Marshal Dennis is here to celebrate Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday!” The old man was stunned. He was shocked that a marshal would actually show up to celebrate his birthday when his family was only a third-class aristocratic family?

Chapter 507

Not to mention, he had never even heard of the name of this marshal before. “A marshal came?” “That happens to be quite a capable marshal. How awesome! It seems our old master will be very reputable now!” A few of the Taylor family members looked very delighted. Since even a marshal came, would that not make their family proud? It seemed if any other third-class aristocratic families found out about this, they would all be envious of their Taylor family. “That brat sure came early!” Fane cracked a calm smile

when he noticed Dennis. He did not expect Dennis would be the first one to show up when the others had not arrived yet. “Why did Dennis show up? Isn’t he a good friend of Ken’s? Could he have come because he knew that Ken is coming?” Ivan’s expressions dimmed before softly whispering to Old Master Taylor, “Grandpa, Dennis happens to be a good friend to Young Master Ken. Since Young Master Ken is a close friend of mine and he’s coming today, Dennis might be coming because of how close both me and Young Master Ken are. This isn’t too surprising.” “Young Master Ken is coming? The Clark family happens to be a second-class aristocratic family though!” Theodore was stunned with joy as he said, “Ivan, you sure are something. I didn’t expect you to get Young Master Ken from the Clark family to show up too!” “Not only that, don’t forget, I know Michael and Young Master Neil too. They are all coming. Hahaha, they’re only coming because of me!” Ivan started cackling maniacally in that instant. He was clear that they were all here just to watch Fane embarrass himself. Ivan was worried that if he did not explain himself when all three of them show up later, everyone else might assume that Fane was right. Hence, he added after some thought, “Therefore, aside from those few people, everyone else that Fane mentioned earlier will never show up!” Just as he was done speaking, Dennis had already approached them. “Greetings, Marshal Dennis. I truly didn’t expect you would grace our Taylor family with your presence!” Theodore immediately came forward to greet him while chuckling. “Greetings, Master Theodore, Old Master Taylor. I wish you a long and healthy life!” Dennis spoke while waving his hand. Hahaha, you’re too kind, too kind indeed!” Zeus cackled out loud as he was very happy from receiving that wish. However, he heard everything Ivan said earlier, and aside from those people he had mentioned, he might not be expecting any more guests to show up. “Major Trent has arrived to wish Old Master Taylor a very happy seventieth birthday!” “Major Pendragon Mace has arrived to wish Old Master Taylor a very happy seventieth birthday!” Just at this very moment, the receptionist called out once again. “Two more majors?” All of

the Taylor family members were all looking at each other and were wondering if they had all misheard anything.

Chapter 508

Old Master Taylor gulped as he was wondering if he was dreaming. Three majors came. Those happened to be majors and they commanded at least a few thousand to tens of thousands of men on the battlefield. He did not expect them to show up to celebrate his seventieth birthday with him! “What’s the matter? Young Master Ivan, didn’t you say that not many people would show up?” Fane said while chuckling calmly. “Hehe, no matter what, they still can’t fill all two hundred tables!” Ivan was also chuckling as he believed Fane was merely lucky. Moreover, those two majors might actually be very close to Marshal Dennis hence, their presence. “The master of the Clark family has arrived with the members of the Clark family to celebrate Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday!” “The master of the Hugo family has arrived with the members of the Hugo family to celebrate Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday!” “The master of the Wilson family has arrived with the members of the Wilson family to celebrate Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday!” It did not take long for three series of announcements to be made from the main entrance. All three second-class aristocratic families actually came as well. All three masters had brought along all three of their young masters in addition to some high ranking members of their respective families here. More than ten people actually showed up in an instant. Their bodyguards were all stationed outside. “They actually came!” Zeus felt slightly surprised when the masters of those three families showed up as well. He initially thought that only the young masters of those three families would come. However, unexpectedly, the masters tagged along as well. Both Theodore and Zeus immediately came forward to greet them. A constant stream of guests came after that. However, those were people that Old Master Taylor and the others had expected. Those people that Fane claimed that would show up seemed to be

absent. “Hehe, weren’t you extremely confident earlier, Fane? Look at how many people had shown up now? Those two hundred tables worth of guests are all just air now?” Ivan chuckled before mocking Fane. “Isn’t it still very early? It isn’t even time for the gift reception anyway. Where’s the fun in showing up early, right?” Fane chuckled calmly since the person tasked for the gift reception had not arrived yet. After another moment had passed, the person tasked with gift reception had finally arrived. “So many people had arrived already!” After that person got seated, a few staff were tasked with receiving gifts from the guests and some were tasked in noting the gifts down. “Grandpa, I won’t be noting my gift down. I’ll just hand it to you directly since we’re a family anyway!” Cecilia smiled and took out the gift she had prepared as she said, “The gift I prepared for you is two bricks of Pu Erh tea that had been dried for two centuries. It’s not that expensive since it only costs 600 thousand bucks. The main thing is, such a gift is hard to find!” Cecilia was quite detailed in her introduction. She was obviously trying to show off. The other guests went over to get themselves registered aside. They were mostly giving out money as their gifts. Of course, these people would not be frugal with the amount they were giving. They would fork out at least eight to ten thousand bucks. “Grandpa, this is something I’ve prepared for you... It’s a jade statue of Guanyin. This is very well carved but it’s not that expensive. It’s merely eight million bucks!” Ivan had also made his move. He took out a twenty centimeters tall jade statue of Guanyin from a box. It looked very impressive. “Is this made from Hetian jade? It’s not bad, the coloration is impressive and it’s very intricately carved. Thank you!”

Chapter 509

Old Master Taylor nodded satisfyingly. He could tell how sincere Ivan was to go out of his way to pick out a gift for him. The other Taylor family members all came forward to give Old Master Taylor their gifts. Of course, the gifts they presented could not compare with what Cecilia or Ivan had

offered but they were quite expensive too. Those gifts averaged around a hundred to two hundred thousand bucks. Hence, they were still considered luxurious gifts. “Alright, old master. The gifts have been recorded here. I will be recording down any other gifts that will be given later!” The staff responsible for the gift reception recorded everything about the guests that came earlier before making that statement. “What are you still standing around for? Aren’t you going to present your gift?” Fiona’s expression dimmed after noticing Fane had not done anything yet. It was unsure what Fane was thinking since he had not made a move yet. “Yeah, brother-in-law, you wouldn’t have not brought anything with you now, would you? Hurry up and present it!” Ben was also pretty impatient. “Fane, don’t you forget about our bet. If you aren’t able to fulfill your end of the bargain, you will have to be exiled from the Taylor family!” Ivan reminded him as if he was worried that Fane might have forgotten about their bet. “I know. I know that once I present the gift, you guys will acknowledge me as the son-in-law of the Taylor family, right?” Fane said with a smile. “Yes, yes, yes. Now hurry up and show us a gift that is worth over ten million bucks!” Cecilia giggled as she said, “Both of your hands are empty. What exactly is your gift that could be so tiny and expensive at the same time when you’re carrying it with you?” Upon noticing everyone forcing Fane to present his gift, Michael, Neil, and Ken came to spectate. They were all waiting for the moment where Fane was unable to present his gift and being exiled from the Taylor family. “Fane, I heard that you have won the bid for that mansion. I’m not sure if that’s true or not? Could that be the gift you’re planning to give the old master?” Ken said after some thought. “What! Fane won the bid for that mansion?” After Fiona heard him say that, she immediately turned to look toward that mansion across the street. That happened to be an entire villa and it should cost about twenty to thirty million bucks. When exactly did Fane bought a mansion? How could he have not told them about it? The corner of Fane’s mouth twitched slightly. He initially was planning to bring Selena over to surprise her after the event was done. He did not

expect that b*stard Ken would expose the entire thing here. How could he still give Selena a surprise now? “Brother-in-law, is that true? Is that the gift you’ve bought for the old master?” Ben gulped as he found Fane amazing. That mansion was not cheap and Fane was able to win the bid for it. Ivan immediately said when he noticed Fane’s expressions dimmed, “Fane, there’s a lot of guests here at the moment and we’re actually saving your pride for exposing it now. Or else, when more people show up later, you’d embarrass yourself even more!” Selena stood calmly on the side. Judging from the looks of things, Ken did not intentionally try to strain their relationship by spouting nonsense. Since that mansion was actually bought by Fane after all. She was curious to hear Fane’s explanation at that very moment. If Fane actually had a relationship with that wealthy lady behind her back, not only would the Taylor family members exile him, she too would want him to leave too. That was because Fane would have completely disappointed her if that was the case. “I actually bought that mansion. I spent 95 million bucks on it. Young Master Ivan, you should know that better than anyone else, since you helped me dust my shoe back then!” Fane let out a bitter chuckle as he took out a cigarette, lit it, and slowly took a puff.

Chapter 510

Ivan’s expression immediately dimmed after hearing that statement. Was Fane not trying to intentionally embarrass him? However, he was not exactly bothered by being embarrassed as long as he was able to get Fane exiled from the Taylor family today. Everything would be worth it for him. “95 million? Was it really that expensive?” Cecilia gasped after hearing that as she said, “So, in order to increase the value of your gift to the old master, you intentionally spoke a random amount, Fane?” “Regardless of whether it’s worth that much or not, is an afterthought. However, I actually spent that much on that house to win the bid. If you don’t believe me, you can ask both Young Master Neil and Young Master Ken. They were both there on that day as well!” Fane calmly replied. “Young Master Ken, Young Master

Neil, did he actually spend that much money? I refuse to believe him, the son-in-law who was enlisted as a soldier for five years can fork out that much money!" Cecilia was very dissatisfied. She was dissatisfied because she could never have forked out that much money and was she actually inferior to the son-in-law? "He actually did. The thing is, Young Master Ivan too had his eye on that mansion and wanted to bid for the mansion as a gift for Old Master Taylor so he went to the auction that day. However, he did not expect Fane to be present as well…" Ken laughed before continuing, "So, both of them wanted to bid for it. They even made a bet that the loser would dust the winner's shoe. Young Master Ivan conceded in the end and Fane won the bid for that house!" Fiona clenched her fist furiously as she listened from aside. She was fuming. Fane happened to be wasting too much money now. He actually wanted to snatch it from Ivan. Why could he not just give it to Ivan? That house was not even worth more than ninety million anyway. Besides, he initially agreed to only a ten million bucks gift for the old master anyway. Could he not have bought anything else that cost ten million bucks? He could have saved eighty million bucks then. Even if Fane did not want this much money, it would be better off just giving it to her. His mother-in-law happened to be short in cash anyway. Of course, she merely kept those thoughts to herself. As unhappy as she was, she could not speak her mind in front of everyone then. Besides, Fane spent that much money to win the bid for that house while have Ivan dust his shoe for him at the same time. This had earned some form of pride or glory to their family. At this moment, Ken chuckled coldly as he said, "However, I've had people look into Fane and he never requested for an advance paycheck from Miss Tanya. Coincidentally, we ran into the same wealthy lady from the previous auction together with Fane again. Cough! Cough! This meant that the money came from that wealthy woman. The hard-earned money of that wealthy woman it seems!" Ken emphasized his tone when he said 'hard-earned money' as if he was trying to hint at something. He even slowed down when he said that. "Hahaha, that's right. That gift came from the bed, it seems!"

After Michael heard that, he burst out laughing. How could Ivan not tell him when he knew so much information. However, that was not important now since Fane, their son-in-law had utterly disgraced the entirety of the Taylor family now. If what Ivan said was true, it would be a miracle for Fane to not be exiled from the Taylor family immediately. He believed that as long as Fane was no longer in the picture to stop him, he would have a chance to pursue Selena. “Fane, what they’re saying, is it true? Were you really together with that wealthy lady?” Fiona had nearly passed out from being agitated. Neil had told them about it previously and she thought they were intentionally spouting nonsense. However, Selena did not exactly probe deeper regarding that ordeal so the entire matter was dropped.

Chapter 511

Who would have known that they would mention that incident today. It would be extremely shameful if Fane had actually afforded the villa by being a sugar baby. It would be even more shameful if his sugar mommy was very old. Maybe in her seventies, even eighties? That was shame beyond words! “There isn’t any sugar mommy, they’re just kidding,” Fane smiled and tried to explain himself. “Haha! You can stop denying.” Ken laughed and then continued, “We have photos to prove our words!” Old Master Taylor was all the more confused. He turned to Ivan and asked, “Ivan, what’s going on here? What about the auction? What about the rich woman?” That was when Ivan detailed the situation to Old Master Taylor. Of course, he did not forget to mention that Fane had bought the villa in an auction. Old Master Taylor's face darkened with each word. His face was almost pale when he said, “I’ve wondered how you were able to fork out over ninety million to buy the villa without advance payment of your salary. There’s only one possibility and that is, getting money from your sugar mommy.” He then pointed to the villa and continued, “This is a great gift and I really like this villa. But if you’ve bought it with dirty money, I’ll never accept it and I’ll never live in it. I, Zues Taylor, will feel ashamed and

filthy living in that house. Last but not least, I'll never recognize you as the son-in-law of the Taylor's. You're a disgrace to our family!" "That's right, don't humiliate us any further, scram! "Yeah, go! Go to your sugar mommy!" "Who'd have known a loser like you would be a sugar baby just to afford this gift for the Old Master… Hehe… This is…" The Taylor family's relatives started chiming in one after another. "Fane, you've let us down!" Andrew was angered too. He thought Fane could finally gain recognition from everyone in this joyful event by presenting this villa as a gift. If that were the case, Andrew and his family would be able to all move into the villa together. He did not see this coming. "My dear son, how...how could you? I'd rather you marry Sharon than being a sugar baby to a rich woman!" Joan's eyes reddened and she could not believe that her son would do such a thing. Unexpectedly, Fane laughed out loud and asked, "Hahaha! Is there no way else that I could afford the villa other than asking for an advance salary payment and being a sugar baby? Who said I didn't have the money myself?" He paused before he continued, "It's true that I have bought the villa—with my own money. Didn't any of you know that Cathysia had generously rewarded veterans? I have served the military for five years and some of you may have seen me fight before. Did you think I could survive five years as an ordinary soldier?" Fane got more and more emotional as he spoke. "So… He wasn't just an ordinary soldier?" Some of them started to guess as they roughly knew Fane's fighting ability—how he fought against a dozen people so effortlessly.

Chapter 512

"Oh yeah… Very few can actually survive past one month on the battlefield, let alone five years…" "You're right, those who can survive for a year are considered above average good. Fane must be very capable to be able to hang in there for five years. He mustn't be just any ordinary soldier, maybe he held a higher position!" Many started to second guess... "Hehe, as far as I know, you've spent almost a hundred million since you came back. This

villa would cost you another ninety over million! In that case, the government must have rewarded you a pension worth that of a head commander's," Ivan remarked laughingly. "Mhmm. I know of an assistant commander who's received a hundred million as pension, some head commander… Maybe two hundred million. So you're a head commander?!" Ken joined the guessing game. "Do you have anything to prove your position as a head commander, Fane? As far as I know, any commander would hold a commander's token as a symbol of their position." Old Master Taylor wished really hard that Fane could show everyone his token to prove his position and that the money he used to buy what he bought, was the money he well deserved from protecting the country. In that case, it would be an honor to the Taylor family, not a disgrace. Dennis rubbed his nose bridge and was trying to suppress his laughter. Fane had his token but he did not plan to expose his true identity. All he wanted was to live a normal life. Everyone in the house would have to kneel and bow before him if he were to present his token. It was the one and only in Cathysia, only the Supreme Warrior could have it. Fane could command and rule anyone in the army. It was extremely inconsiderate of him to display the token in front of this many people. He would get into trouble regardless. If he did not display it, he would be labeled as 'the sugar baby'; if he did, his true identity would be exposed. He was on the fence and his expression darkened. "I…" What should he do? "What's the matter? Just show us the token if you're really the head commander, it's an honor—not something to be shameful of! Come on, shut their mouth. I believe that you're now a sugar baby," Joan tried to persuade Fane. Then, Ivan interjected as he was excited to see Fane not being able to show the token. "Don't tell me you don't have a token as the commander?" 'We'll see how long more you can put on this show, Fane. It's shameful enough that you're a sugar baby, and to cover that lie with 'head commander's pension'? That's funny!' "Come on, Fane. You were so confident just now. How do you prove that you're not just an ordinary

soldier? Where's your token? You can't prove anything without it!" Cecilia laughed and thought he had nothing to show after all.

Chapter 513

Fane bitterly smiled then said, "It's true that I'm not an ordinary soldier. In fact, I hold a relatively high position in the military force. But I've lost my token, it was probably picked pocketed somewhere. Hence why I haven't revealed my identity all this while, I was worried that no one would believe my words without the token." The crowd was speechless. How did he... "I believe in him!" Selena walked forward. "When he first came back, I thought he was an ordinary soldier and only had a few hundred thousand on him. Later, I knew that my estimation was incorrect, five years of service in the military would have earned him maybe ten to twenty million… And I was wrong again! Now I think he's a head commander, to be able to afford this villa!" "Hehe, you'd speak up for him because he's your husband, Selena! What a sweet talker." Micheal laughed. "You think he's a head commander just because he bought this villa, not because of his capabilities? Now what do you want us to do and how can we trust his words? He can't even prove his position!" "Mhmm!" Neil interjected, "Of all, we know the money could be from his sugar mommy!" Ivan chimed in, "So you said the money was yours… Then how do you explain your relationship with that rich woman? I've seen her many times. There was even once when you walked out of the villa with her!" Neil continued, "She always goes around wearing a mask as if she was avoiding paparazzi. This is a telltale sign that she was avoiding her husband or acquaintances, and that means you both are up to no good!" "A rich lady? Hehe, aren't you worried she'll kill you if you angered her?" Fane smiled coldly and continued, "Stop guessing, everyone. She'll be here later and you'll know who she is. Brace yourself." "What! She'll be coming here? How dare she!" Ivan laughed. "Wow, such a thick-faced woman to dare to show up today. Tsk tsk…" Ken laughed too. "Selena, look at your husband's sugar mommy. She's about to come and

claim her turf." "First of all, she's rich but not that rich. Her wealth is granted by Cathysia as a reward for her serving the country. Second of all, she'll come today out of respect for me. Otherwise, she won't attend functions like this." Fane's expression darkened. He was angry because he could not stand them making fun of his disciple, Lana. If it was not for Old Master's birthday and the many people that were present including his daughter and wife—he really wanted to beat them up to teach them a lesson! Fane was really pissed at them for pushing him to the edge of the cliff. "Tsk tsk tsk. So you mean, she's nothing ordinary!" "We shall see who this 'extraordinary woman' is. We can finally see her face when she removes her mask to eat." Ivan laughed. Suddenly, a voice announced at the door. The voice sounded as if it was trembling. "Quin Hayes, King of War with six stars, arrived and is here to wish Old Master Taylor a happy and blessed seventieth birthday!"

Chapter 514

Everyone was expecting to see Fane make a fool of himself when suddenly, the six-starred War King arrived to celebrate Old Master Taylor's seventieth birthday. "What! Quin Hayes is here!" "You shouldn't call him by his name, you should address him as War King Hayes. Otherwise, he can slap you to death if he finds you disrespectful!" "My god, he's the War King… A SIX-STARRED War King! What is he doing here at this function? This…is our honor!" The Taylor family's relatives started a discussion among themselves and they were obviously astonished. "War King Hayes presents a gift in cash worth sixty million!" the man who was in charge of reception and gifts announced. "Haha! I really didn't know what's a suitable gift to get and I'm not familiar with your hobbies. So I decided to give you cash, that way, you can spend it to your heart's content!" Quin walked forward as he laughed out loud. He seemed like a cheerful man. "War King Hayes, you're… You're too courteous. It's our honor to serve you as a guest, as we know you seldom attend functions even when you're being invited. Your

presence here is a great honor, you need not prepare me any gifts. You're too generous!" Zeus was so touched and surprised to have received such a guest. It was out of his expectation to have received three marshals in the event—what more, a six-starred war king? "Sixty million?! That's such a generous gift!" Some wealthy merchants lamented. Why would the war king waste his money like that? "Master Wilson and Young Master Wilson have arrived to celebrate Old Master Taylor's seventieth birthday. Here is a pair of jade scepter for the birthday star." Soon after, more guests arrived. The Taylor family's relatives frowned while some could not help but look at Fane. Was Fane right when he said that the unexpected guests and war kings will attend the birthday party? Well, so many of them had already turned up! The Wilson family had never turned up in the past events even though they were only a third-class aristocratic family—but they showed up! "Head Commander Liam Benett has arrived to wish Old Master Taylor a happy seventieth birthday. He presents a golden comb as a gift." Again, the man who was in charge of reception and gifts announced. Soon after, a head commander entered the hall together with his family. "You've gotta be kidding me! Fane was right!" Ivan's face darkened as he observed. He was worried that Fane would get the praises and compliments from Old Master Taylor for inviting two hundred tables of guests! He also wondered how Fane predicted that these people of high social status would show up? Or, did they show up because they knew the war king was going to come? "Assistant Commander Chris Tyson has arrived to celebrate the seventieth birthday of Old Master Taylor. He presents the old master two pieces of gold Phoenix hairpin!" Just as Ivan was cracking his head, more guests had arrived—a commander nonetheless. He held a relatively high position too! "Master Louise from a second-class aristocrat family has arrived together with his family to celebrate the seventieth birthday of Old Master Taylor. They presented a jade abacus!"

Chapter 515

Another unexpected guest arrived in a family of three. They presented their gift as they entered the hall. “Fane, how did you know so many people will show up?” Old Master Taylor could not keep his cool anymore and asked. “Will there really be guests enough to fill two hundred tables?” Fane was rather calm. He smiled and coughed, “Grandpa, you see the guests who showed up today… Who’ll be paying for their meals? If you’re paying, then I’ll tell you.” “That’s right! You can’t make my son pay for this. Look, the second-class aristocrats, war kings, commanders are all here! Given enough time, maybe even War God will show up soon!” Joan quickly suggested. “Hehe, very well, we’ll pay for all the guests today regardless of how many of them show up!” Old Master Taylor was ecstatic. Fane smiled calmly and said, “It must be because these people heard the news that War God will show up today. If she could show up, many others would too!” “God… God of War will show up?” Old Master Taylor gasped. What was going on? Why would God of War attend this celebration? Did the Taylor family have any connections with them? But if it was not for God of War, why would all these people—war king, commander, and the others—attend his birthday party? Dennis overheard their conversation and came to them and said, “Don’t you worry, God of War will be here today. She’d mentioned it in our last gathering and she invited us to come and celebrate your birthday with you.” “That’s great!” Old Master Taylor was so excited that War God would show up at his birthday celebration, which would be a great great honor to the Taylor family—regardless of the reason she decided to attend the party. That way, the second-class aristocrats would never see the Taylor’s the same way again. On top of that, it would be an excellent opportunity for them to regain their reputation in the society. That would enable them to easily secure business deals in the long-term. “You’ve got to be kidding me, the God of War will be coming?” Ivan and Ken were stunned after getting to know that. They expected Fane to boast about the guest list—not actually getting the ‘unexpected’ to attend. They were afraid that even two hundred tables were not enough to serve the guests if War God actually showed up.

That would be a serious issue. “Fane, how could you do this?! Why didn’t you pre-empt us about the attendance of War God?! We’re all caught off guard! War God may get mad at us for not preparing enough tables for everybody! Could you shoulder the consequences if you hadn't booked these extra two hundred tables?” Ivan was so agitated that he scolded Fane. “Hehe, I wanted this to be a surprise,” Fane said with a smile. “Whatever, Fane. We won’t pursue the matter about the extra two hundred tables further. But you’ve mentioned, that ‘sugar mommy’ of yours will be coming too? If you still can’t prove to us that you bought the villa without the money from her, you’re still a sugar baby! You can’t even show us a token to prove your position as the commander!” They had been waiting for this opportunity to tease Fane but was previously interrupted with the arrival of War Kings. They revisited the topic once the guests made their way to the backyard. “Fane, I won’t accept this gift if you had really bought the villa with a sugar mommy’s money. This isn’t something I want to get myself involved in,” Zeus spoke with full certainty. That was his last straw and he had to save his face from that.

Chapter 516

Ivan Taylor and Ken Clark, who were by their side, were happy when they heard this. Fane did not tell the Taylors to prepare more tables when he knew that the Goddess of War was coming. However, they had no idea that Fane was still very calm. “You’ll know if she’s a rich lady when she’s here. How should I put this? Nine hundred million is nothing to her, what more ninety million!” Pausing for a moment, Fane turned to look at Old Master Taylor and added, “I have your gift ready, Grandfather, but it’s not the villa next to this.” “What?!” Many from the crowd inhaled sharply when they heard this. If it was not that villa, then what was his gift? Selena, who stood behind Fane, frowned. This man was full of surprises, she could barely keep up with him. So the gift he prepared for her grandfather was not the villa after all? “Not the villa? Then, this villa is…” Zeus Taylor trailed off. Turning to

look behind him, Fane pulled Selena closer to him. He then took a key out from his pocket and placed it onto Selena's palm. "It's for Selena. The place we're currently staying in doesn't have enough space, so I want my family to move over. I originally wanted to surprise Selena with this, but I never thought Ivan would see it first and ruin the surprise…" Fane lovingly touched Selena's cheeks. "I'm sorry, Honey. I wanted to wait till dinner ended to tell you this tonight and bring you there to have a look. I had no idea that it'd turn into this, and I have no other way but to tell you the truth a little early." Selena was dazed, so much so that her red lips parted. She wondered if she had heard wrongly. All this time, the villa was not the place where Fane and the rich woman were secretly seeing each other; it was his gift to her. She silently thanked herself for not dwelling in the matter or exposed Fane for it. Otherwise, things might have turned badly. "Fane, did… Did I hear wrongly? You spent over ninety million and won the auction on the opposite villa, just to give it to my daughter? For our whole family to stay there?" Fiona gulped, evidently excited. Initially disappointed at Fane as Fiona believed he was kissing up to a rich woman, she was happy once more at this moment. It seemed that she had really misunderstood Fane. Fane smiled indifferently. "Don't worry, Mother. The deed for the villa isn't here yet, but it belongs to Selena alone. This house was bought for her. Moreover, it isn't proper for Kylie to be sleeping with us in the same room. After all, Kylie is already around four years old!" "Amazing! That… That house is ours for real?" Kylie clapped her hands excitedly. "That's so cool! Mommy, we have a new house!" she beamed. "A very, very big house!" Selena's nose turned sour. The bitterness she experienced throughout these five tears was finally turned into tears of relief that trickled down her face. "Mommy, why are you crying?" Little Kylie frowned when she saw Selena crying, her face evident with worry. Selena knelt down and patted Kylie's delicate little head. "Don't worry, Kylie, Mommy is just happy," she spoke through tears. "These are happy tears, okay? We'll be staying in a big, comfortable house soon!" Fane was overcome with

emotions as he gazed at his dear wife kneeling before their daughter. Selena had endured numerous hardships throughout these five years. From now onward, if she was wanted, he would willingly give her the entire world. “Alright!”

Chapter 517

Kylie nodded. The trio—Ken, Neil, and Michael—began to scowl as the scene before them, inwardly jealous. “Only ninety million or so? If you marry me, you’d have no problem having one or two billion,” Michael snapped, lips pursed into a tight frown. Fane was able to capture Selena’s heart by purchasing a villa; she did not even give them a chance to please her. “So you’re saying that this villa is for Selena, right Fane? How about the old master’s gift then?” Cecilia spoke, unable to hold in her curiosity anymore. Folding her arms across her chest, she arrogantly added, “Is it possible that you didn’t prepare any presents?” “That’s right, Fane. What about your promise to us previously? You can get out of the Taylor mansion if you didn’t prepare anything!” Ivan also stood up. As though a light bulb went off in his head, Ken chimed in, “Fane, you bought a villa for your wife. What does it say about you being so generous? This means that you’re very rich. If that’s the case, the present you prepared for the old master must be very valuable!” Michael decided to join in as he spoke, “Is it possible that the present you prepared is just ten million? Haha! If that’s the case, wouldn’t it be somewhat of a downgrade for Old Master Taylor? After all, you’ve just gifted a villa that you bought with almost one billion to your wife!” Unfazed, Fane merely replied, “Don’t you worry; it’s much more expensive than this villa!” “Really now? There are a lot of wealthy businessmen here,” he mused. “There are so many people here. When are you taking out this present of yours? Haha! It’s best if it’s something that can give us a run for our money!” Michael started guffawing. Then… “The master of the George family is here with his family to congratulate Old Master Taylor on his birthday!” No one saw this coming. The head of the

George family, he who was from the first-class aristocratic family, was here. “They’re really here. The people of the first-class aristocratic families are here!” People began to chatter among themselves at the arrival of the George family. “That’s enough. Presents can be given to me at any time. We’re really busy right now,” said Old Master Taylor, effectively interrupting Ivan and Michael. “I need to welcome the George Family Master first. This is the George family we’re talking about!” The old master then went ahead and greeted the George family with a smile. There were so many important guests here today. To him, what Fane gifted him was not that important. It only mattered to him as long as the money Fane used to buy the villa was not earned by coddling rich women. Moreover, what Fane said about the presents he prepared exceeded the value of the villa was too grandiose; he was definitely boasting. The words that came out of this man’s mouth tend to be unreliable sometimes. “I’m here to see you making a fool of yourself, Fane. However, we’re too busy right now, so I’ll give you some more time. I don’t believe that you can drag it out today and avoid showing the present altogether!” Ivan laughed. “I want to see what kind of present you’ve come up with that’s more expensive than this villa. I’m waiting for the moment the present blinds our eyes!” Ken also walked over and smiled coldly. “Young Master Hugo’s subordinates had been following you recently, and they reported that you hadn’t been buying any luxurious items. You only go to work and come back home every day. Apart from that, we also made some inquiries and know that the Drake family didn’t make any advance payment for your salary. I want to see how you’re going to explain these things and how’re you going to explain about that rich woman. We’re waiting for you. I want to see how long you can hold things off!”

Chapter 518

“Congratulations, Master Taylor!” George Family Master offered him a small smile, gave Master Taylor his present, and walked inside. “Fane! It’s so good to see you again!” A charming woman, who had on a white dress

with flower patterns adorning the clothing, appeared from behind the George family's patriarch. She immediately ran up to Fane once she saw him. "Oh, I missed you so much!" The corners of her father's mouth twitched ever so slightly when he saw his daughter getting so excited when she saw Fane. He was speechless. He never understood why his daughter would fall for this guy. Yes, Fane was medically skilled and was equally talented in many other aspects, but he was older than Sharon. As if that was not enough, he had a wife and a four-year-old child. His daughter, on the other hand, was high-born and incredibly beautiful. Finding a suitable candidate for her hand in marriage would be as easy as pie. "Who's this? She's so gorgeous." Ivan, Ken, and the others scrutinized this woman carefully. She had to be a member of the George family as she did tag along with them. "It's Sharon George...! Didn't Fane treat her disease? Dear me. She's an entirely different person once she's slimmed down. Her figure, her pretty face…" Michael swallowed his saliva. F*ck. If he knew Sharon would look so prepossessing after slimming down, he would have pursued her from the start. He had no idea that this woman was a gem in a rock. Who would have known this woman could turn out to be so beautiful? "Look at her eyes closely; it is Sharon George!" Ken was ashamed. Sharon was actually here. When they were at the auction house previously, this woman was obsessed with Fane. With her current attitude, was it possible…? "Oh, Miss Sharon is here!" Before Fane could muster a proper reply, Fiona instantly walked up to welcome Sharon with a smile on her face. "Long time no see!" "Indeed, Auntie. Long time no see!" Sharon smiled at the woman before walking up to Fane. Her inviting red lips were pursed into a sweet smile as she blushed. "I haven't seen you these past few days, and now I finally get to meet you. How have you been?" Standing next to them, Selena was speechless. Did Sharon George just ignore her, Fane's actual wife? "I'm fine!" Fane smiled awkwardly. Instead of entertaining her, however, Fane turned to look at his wife and said, "Let's have a walk at the garden over there, Honey!" Touched by her husband's attentiveness, Selena meekly

replied, “Okay.” She held her daughter’s hand with one hand and Fane’s hand with the other. The three of them walked toward the garden not far away. “I…” Frozen on her spot, Sharon was in disbelief at how he treated her. Fane truly was ruthless to her; he did not even bother to entertain her for a minute. She liked him so much, she had no idea… What was worse was that his actions were basically telling her to give up; that he was happily married. Fiona did not anticipate Fane to act out like that either. She was just as dumbfounded. She hastily stepped forward, closer to the young woman, and quickly spoke, “Don’t take his words to heart, Miss Sharon; he’s just too crude about matters such as these. You also know that he’s just come back from the battlefield.” Sharon smiled bitterly before she replied, “Don’t worry. I understand where he’s coming from, so no offense is taken. This is normal as the three of them are such a loving family. It’s not good for me to involve myself like this. Is this not enough to tell that Fane is a good man?”

Chapter 519

“It’s very good that you can think of it that way. Don’t give up, Miss Sharon; perseverance is victory. Do you understand?” Fiona had the impression that Sharon would be downright frustrated at what had happened, but she never expected that Sharon would have a unique way of thinking about it. This only made Fiona happy, ever hopeful that Fane could still consider having Miss Sharon as his second wife. They were not as poor as they used to be, but who said one could ever have too much money? At the same time, Michael slowly approached the young miss as he pretended to clear his throat. “Ahem! Miss Sharon, it’s been a long time since we last met,” he spoke. “We’ve known each other for some time now, but I still don’t have your phone number. Let’s exchange our numbers so we can contact each other, and we’ll get some drinks whenever we’re free!” Neil caught on quickly and ran over to them in an instant. “Yes, that’s right, Miss Sharon. Let’s exchange numbers, and we can come out for karaoke sessions when

we're free!" After all, the current Sharon was not the previous fatty. Her figure and her face were nearly a rival to Selena's. Above all, her family was richer than theirs, and she was only 20 years old. Snagging her would be equivalent to hitting a jackpot. Nonetheless, the corners of Michael's mouth twitched when he saw Neil coming over. This bastard Neil was utterly shameless. He had been trying to converse with Miss Sharon for a while before asking for her number. Why was this idiot here, too?! To their surprise, Sharon's first reply was a laugh. "Haha! Sorry, but I don't think there's any need for that!" She replied, not bothering to entertain them. She smiled coldly. "Did you really think I wouldn't know that you talked crap about me behind my back when I was fat? I also heard that you guys called me 'Fatty'! Am I wrong?" Neil and Michael were embarrassed, unable to muster a proper reply for a good few moments. "No, that never happened!" Neil hastily replied, an awkward smile on his face as he did. "I see that we're inconveniencing you right now, so we'll leave you be. However, if you need someone to accompany you for drinks or anything else, you can look for us!" "Yes, yes, yes… Miss Sharon, let's chat more when we have time!" Michael piped in, equally embarrassed. At that moment… "The master of the White family is here with members of the White family. They congratulate Old Master Taylor on his seventieth birthday and present…" The White family, one of the four most prominent families, had arrived. They had learned that the Goddess of War would be attending Old Master Taylor's 70th birthday, thus they chose to attend and brought gifts with them. Zeus had no idea that what Fane had so boldly claimed was genuine. Not only were there assistant commanders and head commanders, but there were quite a number of marshals here too. Rich businessmen who were not initially present from the start, second-class aristocratic families, and even first-class aristocratic families were all here. Once he saw the onslaught of people flooding the place, Old Master Taylor mentally wiped his sweat. Fortunately, Fane had prepared an additional 200 tables. Otherwise, there would not be enough seats for so many people. "The Mont family's Master

is here with…” “The Roy family’s Master is here with the members of the Roy family. They’re here…” The two other first-class aristocratic families made their appearance at last, fulfilling the attendance of all Four Major Families. While the current attendance was quite a feat on its own, what shocked the crowd to its core is when a resounding voice announced, “Eight-star King of War, Skyler Celestino is here to congratulate Old Master Taylor on his seventieth birthday and presents a gift of eighty million!”

Chapter 520

“Oh my god... E—Even King of War Skyler Celestino is here!” One of the assistant commanders took a sharp inhale, shocked when he heard the announcement. “That’s right. King of War Celestino didn’t even attend King of War Magnus Sutherland’s gathering for the veterans; never did I expect that he’d attend this party!” A regular soldier standing by their sides even rubbed his eyes before looking at the middle-aged man who walked in from the entrance. There was no mistaking it; it was indeed Skyler Celestino. This was an 8-star King of War, his position and status much higher than other Kings of War. Apart from that, he had achieved numerous great feats by this time. Even if Quin was in front of him, he would have to address Skyler as his ‘Big Brother’. This in itself summarized Skyler’s reputation in the public eye. “It’s to be expected. After all, the Goddess of War is coming too. Skyler Celestino doesn’t like gatherings and has an aloof personality, but he has to give the Goddess of War face! He does admire Goddess of War, Lana Zechs the most!” One of the majors smiled indifferently. “So I’ve anticipated the God of War’s attendance, and sure enough, he’s here!” Everybody else nodded. They had no idea that so many important people would be here at such a small Taylor family party. “Grandfather, the people here are all people of high-status!” Ivan was in so much shock that he had no idea who he should talk to first, all to establish an early connection with them. He was unfamiliar with all these Majors and Marshals, and he had no idea who to talk to. That went for the 8-star King

of War, too. Ivan wanted to get close to them, but he feared he could not strike a conversation with these people. He was already a nerve-wreck, so he dared not step forward. There were too many important people at the Taylor family today, and they had broken his cognition over and over again. “He’s also here?” Fane was, at that moment, walking with Selena and Kylie in the garden. As he was merely a son-in-law to the Taylor family, it was not his place to welcome important guests. Hence, he was able to use this time to accompany his wife and daughter. The sight of Skyler at the party, however, made him frown. Skyler was one of the few people who knew his true identity. He had once rescued this person during one of their skirmishes on the battlefield. At that moment, the enemy had snapped the string of his mask, and his face was revealed when the mask fell from his face. Hence, Skyler was one of the few people who knew about Fane’s identity as the Supreme Warrior. Selena noticed the mild distress on her husband’s face as he stared at the King of War. “What happened?” she asked. “Hubby?” Fane immediately turned his head away. “Nothing!” He immediately changed the subject of their conversation as he spoke, “Honey, do you hate me for buying this villa? The truth is that I’ve made a bet with Ivan Taylor, so to win over him and make him wipe my shoes, I…” Selena rolled her eyes at him playfully. “How could I not hate you? How dare you bought it when it’s so expensive? The price of this villa could buy three of the same villa, right? If it was me, I’d rather lose to Ivan and wipe his shoes!” “That’s a definite no,” Fane quickly defended himself. “I can’t let it go; Ivan has bullied you and Kylie so badly before. I wouldn’t just give it up. I say that the ninety-million price tag was worth it, just to humiliate him!”

Chapter 521

Unable to keep a straight face after hearing Fane, Selena burst into laughter. “I’m just joking!” she spoke, laughing as she did. “How can I be angry at you? I can only imagine Ivan’s face as he wiped your shoes; it must’ve been very interesting. It’s strange, though. Why didn’t you take a photo of such a

long-anticipated scene with your phone and share it with me? You should've shared the fun with me!" "Hey, I just forgot about it at the time. I promise I'll take a picture next time!" Fane laughed and pushed the swing in front of him, where Kylie sat giddily. Swung together with the swing, Kylie felt like she was flying; as though she was a bird joyfully soaring in the sky. This young girl was finally experiencing the love of her father. Nobody would call her a wild child anymore. At that moment, a thought occurred to Selena. "Oh, right. What's your relationship with that rich woman? Will she really be coming over?" she asked. "I had no idea that you're a Head Commander!" "Truthfully, I'm much higher than that, but I can't take my token out. You only need to know that your husband is really powerful, and even the Gods of War had to respect me." Fane had a tight smile on her face. He could only give his wife a small hint after noting that no one else was around. "Keep boasting. You're a head commander, Fane, and it's not bad for you to have two billion. It's actually astounding that you became Head Commander within five years!" Selena rolled her eyes at Fane. "I've never met the Gods of War. I heard that this Goddess of War is a beautiful woman." "Honey, the rich woman they're talking about is the Goddess of War. I've told you before that I know her, and we're friends!" Fane smiled bitterly. He had said all these before, and he even said that the Nine Great Gods of War were his apprentices. In the end, Selena merely shrugged him off, believing he was pulling things out of thin air. This was why Fane did not bother bringing it up anymore. "Really? If that's the case, are you kept as the Goddess of War's side piece? If you truly are, then I'd be happy. It's considered as 'making a sacrifice for the country', right?" Selena jokingly teased Fane. Still, it seemed so impossible to her. How was it possible that Fane knew the Goddess of War? After all, many head commanders did not know the Gods of War, let alone be their friends. It was an incredible feat if one managed to befriend the Gods of War; an achievement worth gloating over. Fane only told these things to Selena, not to Dennis and the others. It was obvious Fane was afraid that others would expose him, and it would

only embarrass him. “You actually want me to be the Goddess of War’s side piece?” Fane smiled, though dissatisfied. She had taken this joke too seriously. Fane never had other thoughts about this apprentice of his. Of course, he would admit she looked prettier and sexier after she changed from her army clothing to a more feminine outfit after she left the army. Outside the battlefield, she was much gentler. Nonetheless, Fane only saw her and treated her as his apprentice. “In your dreams. Even if you're willing to do it, she isn’t willing for that. She’s the Goddess of War! How would she fall for some married man like you? This is just a joke between us, so don’t get any ideas. If someone overhears us and tattles on us, the Goddess of War might slap you the moment she hears it! By then, your death would be a wronged death!” Selena grinned, her mood seemingly much better. “Honey, why don’t we move tomorrow in the morning? By that time, there would be lots of rooms there. Didn’t you say that we can’t do it if Kylie sleeps with us? It’ll be only the two of us in that room. Can we…” Fane spoke, trailing off. “You pervert! So the real reason why you bought this house in such a hurry was for… Hmph! I wouldn’t give chances to a person with impure motives like you!” Selena’s blush seared across her face. Despite turning her head to the other side in a form of disagreement, it felt as though there were butterflies in her belly.

Chapter 522

Fane instantly cleared his throat when he heard Selena’s comeback. “Honey, that’s not the case. The main reason was we were lacking a house, right?” he spoke in his defense. “Apart from that, this house is conveniently opposite the Taylors’ mansion, and you can easily go visit as you pleased! Furthermore, it’s in the center of Kylie’s kindergarten and where we work. This location is perfect, so I bade for it!” … “Five-star King of War, Xyle Walker is here to congratulate Old Master Taylor on his seventieth birthday! He presents…” More and more people trickled in. Nobody anticipated that another important person, a 5-star King of War at that, would come. Old

Master Taylor had a huge smile on his face. There were a few Kings of War here and quite a number of majors and marshals. Apart from that, a large number of Head Commanders and Assistant Commanders were also present. Not only that, but an impressive number of first-class and second-class aristocratic families were also here. This small party turned into a grand gathering. He began to worry if 200 tables were enough to go around. The attendees were generous, their gifts rather expensive. It was fair to say that the Taylors had earned a lot with just the presents. Of course, Old Master Taylor was not ignorant. Most of the people were here because a certain person was said to be coming: Middle Province's Goddess of War, a powerful unrivaled existence that had great achievements. He had no idea why the Goddess of War would come to the Taylor family just to congratulate him, but that was not an important thing to fret over. The most important thing was that the Taylor family was heavily celebrated on this day, and their future would no doubt develop smoothly. He even received name cards of many businessmen. Not only that, but some Marshals and Commanders also approached him and offered their name cards. Everyone was conversing with one another in the courtyard, either in groups of twos or threes. Of course, these conversations were started for the sake of possibly establishing beneficial relationships. Skyler, for example, was talking with Quin. "Why is the Goddess of War not here yet? Is it possible that she won't be coming?" The 8-star King of War looked at the door and frowned. Had it not been for the rumor that the Goddess of War was coming, he would not have come to this party. "Haha! Women; they need time to dress up! We're not on the battlefield right now, and our Goddess of War is a woman. I heard that she's much prettier once she dresses up nicely." Quin laughed. "I've seen her in feminine outfits before. I dare say she's gorgeous!" "Is it? To be honest, I've never seen our Goddess of War in such clothing. Still, she's quite tall and has legs for days. It's only logical she'd look very nice in women's clothing!" Skyler laughed as well, all the more excited about seeing her. Needless to say, they held respect for the Goddess

of War's appearance. Such a person was regarded highly. Skyler's eyes slowly wandered and, without realizing it, found himself looking at the garden. It was fine before he took a look. Upon proper inspection, he noticed a man grinning as he stood with a rather beautiful lady and a young girl, chatting happily. "That person's side-profile looks… So much like…" Skyler frowned. That person in the garden looked so much like a man he knew on the battlefield. "Who?"

Chapter 523

Quin, who was by his side, looked to where he looked at and laughed. "Haha! You're talking about that person? I know him: He's the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family. That woman, on the other hand, is Selena Taylor. She was the obsession of many rich young masters in Middle Province and was even dubbed the province's 'Number One Beauty'. However, for reasons I don't know, they got married!" "How could it be? Is he truly just a son-in-law married into the wife's family?" Skyler frowned. He could no longer see Fane's side-profile as he had turned around. Still, he was convinced that this man's figure was too much of a match with 'that' man's figure. "Yes, and he so happens to be a veteran as well. He's been in the army for five years and is only a normal soldier. I'm not entirely sure about the details, though. My ex-subordinate, Dennis, is more familiar with him!" Quin added nonchalantly. "Five years?" Skyler's frown grew deeper when he heard this. "The Supreme Warrior supposedly stayed in the army for five years, too!" "Yes. I remembered that I entered the army in later days and was there for three years. That time, I heard about a young man utterly skilled on the battlefield. Rapidly scaling up the ranks, he became Head Commander in just two years on the battlefield, and I heard that he only got better and better. He wore a mask shaped like a dragon's face and was to be honored as the Supreme Warrior! There was supposed to be an official announcement about this, but for some unknown reasons, they canceled it. This man's identity was left unknown, protected by his anonymity." Quin

began to lament as well. “The world should know the name of such a powerful person. Everybody called him ‘Dragon of Cathysia’ on the battlefield because he was the soul of Cathysia. That title was bestowed to him because of his dragon mask, but not many people know his actual name!” “Exactly. He’s too bright, and his existence is godlike!” Skyler exclaimed. A thought then occurred to him as he added, “I remembered that his surname is Woods, but I don’t know his full name. He became the only Supreme Warrior one year ago, and everybody addressed him as Supreme Warrior!” “You know that his surname is ‘Woods’?” Quin spoke as he laughed at his own ignorance. “I don’t even know his surname! I only know that he’s the Supreme Warrior and was called ‘Dragon of Cathysia’! “Now that everyone has retired from the army, our chances of seeing the Supreme Warrior slimmed down significantly. He seems to have retired into the forest and became a dragon slumbering in private. Since he doesn’t like to be disturbed, then let him be!” Quin spoke before a sigh escaped his lips. “My only wish is that I want to see what the Supreme Warrior looks like, just once. My life would be complete if I do. Alas, I’ve never seen him, let alone see his actual face. This is my only regret.” “By the way, Quin, do you know that man’s surname?” Skyler’s eyes kept focusing on Fane’s back. The more he looked at him, the more he looked like the Supreme Warrior. This caused him to wonder. “Him? Why are you interested in him? His surname is Woods, and his name is Fane Woods,” Quin answered nonchalantly. “His surname is Woods and his name is Fane Woods...?” Skyler trailed off. “And he’s only a normal soldier after being on the battlefield for five years? Could it be...?” Skyler eyed his surroundings before he slowly confessed, “Brother, I don’t want to hide this from you, but I’ve seen the Supreme Warrior’s face. There was a moment when his mask fell during a skirmish, and I caught a glimpse of his face for a good two seconds before he placed it back on.” Once he heard this, Quin inhaled sharply through gritted teeth. “King of War Celestino, I envy you so much,” he muttered. “You actually saw his face under the mask. I really envy you!” Lips formed into a tight smile, Skyler

then added, “And there’s one more thing… I can see that the Taylors’ son-in-law has a similar back figure and side-profile with the Supreme Warrior!”

Chapter 524

Skyler’s words stunned Quin for a good seven to eight seconds. Eventually, the corners of his mouth twitched. “Who did y—you say he looked like? The Supreme Warrior?” “Yes, he looks very much like him. His side-profile and back figure looked very similar. I remembered that this was how the Supreme Warrior looked!” Skyler looked at Fane standing at the garden not too far away. Skyler’s eyes never left Fane’s figure the moment he got that epiphany—the revelation that these two men seemed to look alike. “How’s that possible? There are so many people that look like one another. It feels surreal to even think he’s the Supreme Warrior. He’s just a normal soldier!” Quin laughed and patted Skyler’s shoulder. “I think that you’ve gone crazy from thinking about the Supreme Warrior, but I get you. I also want to see his elegant demeanor in person too!” “Quin Hayes, everybody says that you’re quite the airhead, and I now feel that way as well. Can’t you use your brain and think?” snapped Skyler. “We all know that the Supreme Warrior’s surname is Woods, and strangely enough, this son-in-law also has the same surname. Moreover, the Supreme Warrior stayed on the battlefield for five years, and this young man was also on the battlefield for the same duration. Do you think these things are purely out of coincidence?” “Isn’t t—this normal?” came Quin’s meek reply, hands splayed out as though defending himself. “You’re right, absolutely right. It’s normal if all of this is coincidental and it would be explainable.” Skyler nodded before adding, “Then why do you think the Goddess of War will personally come and congratulate Old Master Taylor for his birthday? Do you think that it’s for Old Master Taylor? Will you say she’s just giving him face? They didn’t know each other before this, so this is definitely not the case!” When he felt his excitement was getting the best of him, Skyler paused for a moment. “That’s why I feel that Goddess of War Lana is here because she’s indirectly

honoring the Taylor family's son-in-law. It's more than likely that he's the Supreme Warrior. Do you think that the Goddess of War would honor and proactively please anyone else?" As he heard all these, Quin then attempted to connect the dots, a frown on his face as he did. It was not long before a snicker escaped him. "Brother Celestino, you're worrying too much! It's a shame you didn't join the veteran's gathering that Magnus Sutherland held. That day, the Goddess of War was also there and, later on, killed Master Miller and Magnus. Do you know about this?" Skyler nodded. "I've heard about this. I regretted it so much. I would've gone had I known she would come." Skyler paused here before he continued, "I didn't go because I sensed Magnus had changed, and not for the best. He wasn't the man who loved his soldiers like his own son, and he was no longer the kind man he was once known for. He might've done many bad things in secret but nobody could prove it. It was only for the best that the Goddess of War got rid of such a danger to society." "I second that. I had no idea that Magnus Sutherland was someone like this. He wanted to do unspeakable things to those two female celebrities," Quin lamented. "When they refused, he forced them to…" Quin trailed off before he added, "This incident happened because Fane saw it. He knew he was no match for Magnus, so he searched for Dennis and the two of them thought of a way together. Eventually, they called for the Goddess of War, Lana. It so happened that she was nearby, so she rushed over and killed this bastard. Thankfully, the two female celebrities were saved before they were raped." Skyler frowned. "So you're implying that the reason Lana would do Fane a favor was that he exposed Magnus for what he was doing?" he surmised. "And that's why she would be coming to Old Man Taylor's seventieth birthday?" Quin nodded. "Yes, it surely feels like it. This is the reason the Goddess of War would be here. The others should think this way too!" Skyler merely laughed. "I feel like it's just too much of a stretch that she'd be coming only for that reason!" He then eyed Fane, who stood in the garden still. "Let's go and take a look. I

only need to take a look and I'd know if he's the Supreme Warrior. After all, I've seen the Supreme Warrior before."

Chapter 525

"That's right!" Quin spoke, chuckling as he did. "It's pointless for us to make guesses over here, but I can promise you he's not the Supreme Warrior. They look alike, that's all." As the men conversed with one another, a sports car rolled in from the entrance and into the compound. Parked at one side, a prepossessing lady with a nice figure wearing traditional Chinese cheongsam came down from the car. Oddly enough, the lady had a mask on, and no one knew whether it was because she was sick or afraid of being recognized. "Hey, who's that? She just drove right in at such a speed!" Ivan yelled. "Is she not afraid of hurting people?" Both Kings of War—the two who initially wanted to meet Fane in person—and the other attendees had their attentions diverted to this newcomer. Neil stood up the moment he saw the woman coming. "Fane, why aren't you coming over? Your rich hag is here. Shouldn't you be welcoming her?" he sneered. Fane did mention that this woman would be attending, but no one expected that she would genuinely be that shameless and show up in the end. Of course, Neil's father was also here. Once he noticed his son inserting himself into the impending fiasco, he pulled his son to the side. "Neil, what did I tell you? I asked you to not cause problems when you're in public. What are you rambling about now?!" Neil saw red at that moment. "Father, you're too afraid of things happening around you. I'm starting to think you're a coward. You not only stopped me from bringing bodyguards, but you even forced me to apologize to Fane back then. Now I'm out of line just by speaking the truth?" Neil asserted, a cold expression on his face as he did. "We saw everything with our own eyes, and we're only telling the truth. What's wrong with that?" Roy Hugo's facial expression darkened. "Do you know who this supposed rich hag is? When did our Middle Province have a rich hag that could buy that five-billion luminous pearl just like that? Why

are you so stupid? What if she's the wife of a powerful patriarch in another city? We can't mess with these people!" "I didn't offend her. I'm just exposing Fane," Neil retorted. " So what if she's rich? This woman's money must've come from her husband, right? She'd be kicked out of her family with nothing on her once her husband finds out about these two. We don't need to be afraid of her," Neil continued, his father's anger dismissed entirely. This was his chance to see Fane dropped from the Taylor family. How could he miss that? Nonetheless, Roy's cold glare remained. "Shut up!" he barked. Roy ordered him to not proactively stand out and make a scene. "That's right. Fane, come over here. Why are you there accompanying your wife? You'll never have to worry about nothing having enough on your plate when you have this rich hag!" Michael, who was waiting to see Fane's jokes, piped in right after. All of them wanted to see what Fane would do and say. On the other side of the area, Skyler was frowning. "This woman seems to have a nice figure. I think it's the Goddess of War." "Correct. This is how she looks in feminine outfits. What do you think? You can't recognize her when you see her in such clothing for the first time, right?" Quin smiled and curiously spoke, "It puzzles me, though. Why did these rich young masters keep calling her 'rich hag'? Yes, she's rich, but she wouldn't keep young men as her lovers. Are these people out of their minds? Do they have a death wish?"

Chapter 526

The Kings of War were not the only ones stunned; everyone who attended the previous veteran's gathering and had seen Lana dressed elegantly was just as dazed. These rich young masters were pushing it. Unperturbed by the not-so-pleasant words hurled at him, Fane smiled indifferently. He turned to his wife and spoke, "Let's go over and welcome the Goddess of War. I've told you before that she's the Goddess of War!" "Is this true? You really know the Goddess of War?" Selena also felt that this pretty lady was quite stunning when she looked over at the 'rich hag' Ivan kept talking about. To

Selena, this woman's figure was rather attractive, enough to stir not-so-appropriate urges in people's minds. Above all, this woman had a refined posture as she stood straight and tall. She had the pride of a soldier. From the way she stood, she must have just made her return from the army. If she truly was a mere 'rich hag', she would not have such temperament. Normal people would not have the temperament of a soldier. Old Master Taylor initially wanted to welcome the new attendee, but when he heard that it was that woman, his face darkened. He did not come forward after that as he merely stood aside. Since this person was here, he wanted to hear Fane's explanation. If Fane could not even explain in detail who this woman was and their relationship, it was highly likely that this woman had given him the money to buy the villa. Compared to the rest, Michael was more unruly, and it was probably because he came on his own without his family. The man swaggered to the woman as he sneered, "How do you still have the gall to come here? Haha! Why are you wearing a mask? Is it because you can't meet with just anyone, so you had to wear a mask?" Lana's frown was hidden by her mask. "I just didn't want people to recognize me on my way here. Now that I'm here, I'd have to take my mask off." She halted for a moment before she added, "I'm here out of respect for Fane. He did a good deed that day when he got rid of a bastard for us!" "Gotten rid of a bastard for you?" Michael frowned, not understanding what it meant. "You keep calling me rich hag. Do you know that you could die for that?" Lana's face darkened. "Haha! Who do you think you are? I might die? Me?" Michael scoffed. "You're the one who's going to die!" Michael started laughing loudly. "My dear Majors and King of Wars, this woman is a shameless rich hag. Whoever that has the strength, please take off her mask so everyone can see her face." He did not see it coming when Lana walked forward and slapped him across the face. Smack! "How dare rubbish like you talk to me like that!" she hissed. She then moved to take off her mask as she growled, "I know how to take it off myself. However, don't regret it!" "Greetings to the Goddess of War!" Skyler immediately bowed as a sign of respect to

Lana. “Greetings to the Goddess of War!” The other soldiers stood up and bowed respectfully, one after another. Their bow lasted three seconds before they lifted their heads once more. “Goddess… Goddess of War!” Old Master Taylor was so frightened that his voice trembled, his body rooted firmly where he stood. They said that the Goddess of War was coming, but they had no idea that the rich hag mentioned by Ivan was the Goddess of War. “I—It’s her! The Goddess of War!”

Chapter 527

Face pale in fright, Neil broke out into cold sweat as he attempted to wipe them off. Had his father not pulled him away moments ago, he might have continued speaking less savory words to Lana. “No more of that ‘rich hag’ nonsense. This is our Goddess of War, Lana Zechs!” Skyler took two steps forward and exclaimed to the people, “The Goddess of War is here to...” He saw Fane in the midst of announcing Lana’s arrival. He believed the Goddess of War was here because Fane did a meritorious service. He inhaled sharply mid-sentence, and his voice trembled from feeling intimidated. Skyler then walked forward, knelt on one knee, and placed a clenched to his chest. “Greetings to the Supreme Warrior. Supreme Warrior, I had no idea that it’s you!” “What?!” The people here were already stupefied by the Goddess of War’s presence. They never thought that they would be in for another surprise when the 8-star King of War, Skyler Celestino knelt before Fane, gave him a salute only given to the highest-ranking soldier in the army, and addressed him as the Supreme Warrior! “Is it truly him?” Quin was flabbergasted. He knew that Skyler had seen the Supreme Warrior before, seeing as he had told him the Supreme Warrior had saved his life before. It seemed as though Skyler still held onto his belief, not wanting to admit his mistake. ‘It’s over. At this rate, Master’s true identity will be exposed!’ Lana was petrified, too shocked at the sudden turnover of events. She had no idea what to do to dissolve this matter. “Oh dear…” Dennis was just as shocked. He had no idea Skyler knew Fane. Ivan

was so frightened that he was stunned for a short while. Walking forward, he anxiously asked, “How is that possible? King of War Celestino, did you make a mistake? He’s only a son-in-law who married into our family, a normal soldier who had just returned from the battlefield. How could he be the Supreme Warrior?” If Fane truly was the Supreme Warrior, then the few of them would be in trouble. They offended Fane, the Supreme Warrior, before. Was that not equivalent to signing their own death warrants? “Sh*t!” Michael’s legs weakened and he fell to the ground. He had just offended the Goddess of War, and now Fane was revealed to be the Supreme Warrior? This… This was too much! Was this not supposed to be where they successfully revealed the shoddy relationship between Fane and this rich hag, and Fane would be driven out of this house? How could this go wrong for them? Right now, the matter of whether Fane was the Supreme Warrior or not was unimportant. He had just offended the Goddess of War, and it was a likely guarantee he was doomed. “King of War, how’s that possible? T—This is my son-in-law. You must’ve made a mistake.” Fiona offered an awkward smile, finding it utterly impossible that her son-in-law was the Supreme Warrior. The Supreme Warrior was extremely mysterious, and nobody had ever seen him. Even if someone did, it should be someone like a King of War. The 8-star King of War had knelt on one knee and performed an honorable salute. He said that Fane was the Supreme Warrior. How was that possible? “King of war, y—you must’ve made a mistake. He can’t be the Supreme Warrior!” Even Selena walked forward in embarrassment. The Goddess of War did not kneel with him, so it must be that Fane was not the Supreme Warrior, and that this was just an honest mistake. Fane looked behind him and pointed at his own nose, “Oh my. King of War Celestino, are you addressing me? Did you make a mistake? I… I’m not the Supreme Warrior! It’d be cool if I truly was him, though!” “That’s impossible. I saw you two to three years ago!” Skyler frowned. Even though he had just met them once, Fane's face in his memory was already fading. Still, he was convinced that they looked too much alike.

Chapter 528

Unable to stand idly, Lana eventually spoke up, “King of War Celestino, he’s not the Supreme Warrior. Honest. Were you mistaken? He only looks like him.” Despite her words, Lana felt as though there was a chance he did not believe her when she saw Skyler frowning. It seemed that the other party was not entirely convinced with his own thoughts either. If not, he would not have argued with her. Skyler stood up soon after. “Goddess of War, are you sure?” Lana laughed, one that sounded as though confident with herself. “I’ve drunk with him, wine and tea, rather often. I’ve seen his face without the mask before, and surely more than once. Are you not trusting what I’m saying?” “But it’s rather strange; they look so much alike. Are there people who look like each other that much in this world?” Skyler looked at Fane again, and a blush slowly crept on his face. If Fane genuinely was not the Supreme Warrior, then he had knelt to a mere man married into the Taylor family… This misunderstanding turned out to be a downright embarrassing moment for him. “After you’ve known Fane for some time, you’ll find that he doesn’t look so much like the Supreme Warrior!” Lana assured him, followed with a nervous chuckle. “I know what you mean, though. I thought he was the Supreme Warrior when I saw him on the battlefield, but it turns out they just look somewhat alike. Later on, I found that he really isn’t the Supreme Warrior.” Quin burst out laughing. “Haha! Brother Skyler, you’ve made such a big misunderstanding. I saw you making such a grand gesture of honor just now, and I thought that it genuinely was the Supreme Warrior. Had I not seen the Goddess of War still standing, I would’ve knelt and greeted him like you!” The more he thought about it, the funnier it was. Skyler glanced at Fane as his face darkened; he wanted to unleash his frustration onto him. How dare he look so much like the Supreme Warrior and caused him to lose face! He was a King of War, with 8-stars nonetheless, and he knelt and greeted a normal man who married into the wife’s family. It was really… It was only because everyone was looking at them that

Skyler could not yell at him. After all, Fane did not do anything wrong and, all the more, did not admit he was the Supreme Warrior. As a matter of fact, Skyler was the one who recognized Fane wrongly and gave him such a grand greeting instead. “He shocked me. I mean, he can’t be the Supreme Warrior!” Fiona started laughing. If Fane was the Supreme Warrior, did it not mean that the Gods of War had to greet him? Apart from that, they had to respect him at all times. However, Fane was just a son-in-law who married into his wife’s family. Apart from being a soldier for five years, he was a mere delivery guy before that. He might have been honored a great rank in the army, but he was definitely not the Supreme Warrior. After all, the Supreme Warrior was the strongest and most powerful person in the entire Cathysia. One-of-a-kind by nature, he was the man who did the most on the battlefield as he defended their country. “It was an honest mistake, but that shocked me!” Some of the commanders were stunned and were speechless. “That’s right. King of War Celestino had only seen him once for a mere two to three seconds, and it even happened two to three years ago, so it’s only natural that his memory of the Supreme Warrior seemed vague at this point!” One of the head commanders smiled bitterly. He was previously the subordinate of Skyler. Whenever he was happy after a day out drinking, Skyler would tell people about this incident. Naturally, people envied him for this. To the soldiers, those that had met the Supreme Warrior had won in life as not many people could see his face without the mask. Fane, on the other hand, sighed in relief. After all, he was worried Skyler would recognize him when he was in the garden.

Chapter 529

Fane initially wanted to hide from him, but he knew Ivan and the others could not wait to ‘expose’ the things between him and the so-called rich hag. Thus, even if he hid, the other party would still look for him. It would also be hard to explain the situation to Selena and the others. The only way was to pretend that he did not know the other party. If he stayed silent and let

Lana take care of things, Skyler might eventually concede. He was only afraid that Lana might not respond in time and kneel with Skyler once everyone knew and believed Skyler. That would have been terrible. Luckily, Lana was no daft soldier and quickly rose to the occasion. “Haha! King of War Celestino, this guy can’t be the Supreme Warrior! He’s only our family’s son-in-law after all!” Ivan laughed it off as he slowly stepped forward. “Apart from that, our family didn’t recognize his identity previously because he used to be a delivery man. We even had a bet…” Since there were so many people here, it was the best time to get Fane to take the present out. Even the Goddess of War was here. He wanted to see if Fane was bold enough to continue his bluff as he hid his present. Skyler was utterly embarrassed from the seconds-ago incident, and it was only to his favor that someone changed the subject. Out of relief, a grin instantly appeared on his face. “Really? What is the bet on?” Skyler mused. “Tell me.” “He had hurt me before and said that he’d compensate me with ten million. Apart from that, he claimed he would be giving Grandfather a gift worth millions. He also promised to pay my cousin sister’s family twenty million as her betrothal gift. If he fails to do it, he has to leave the Taylor family and divorce my cousin!” Ivan explained aloud. “If he manages to do everything, the Taylor family will acknowledge their identity and allow their family to move back here.” Skyler was not very interested in this bet, his mind still occupied with the question why this man looked so much like the Supreme Warrior. The more he looked at Fane, the more he resembled the Supreme Warrior. Still, he entertained Ivan with a grin on his face. “Really? Did he manage to do everything?” “He hadn’t taken out the present yet, and I don’t even know if he had given the betrothal gift. Moreover, I haven’t received the ten million meant for me,” Ivan replied. “By the way, he had mentioned this just recently that the present he prepared for my grandfather isn’t just worth millions. Supposedly, it’s worth more than their new villa, and he paid ninety-five million for that villa. This means that his present is worth a billion or so!” Ivan thought about it and continued, “I’ve

been a curious man for the longest time. What kind of present would cost that much?" Fiona then walked up to them. "Take out your gift if it's here, Fane," she spoke. Shen then explained, "Fane had already given me the twenty million that's meant to be Selena's betrothal gift. All that's left are only the ten million compensation for young master Taylor and Old Man Taylor's gift." Fane nodded silently and took a bank card out, passing it to Ivan. "This is your ten million, and the password is six zeros." "Where's the present? Where's the present that costs billions?" Ivan smiled coldly. This was a pivotal point as this man had boldly claimed his gift was worth that much. Fane shoved his hand into his pocket and took out a small-sized box. "What's that? How could that be worth more than billions when it's so small?" Neil said coldly and mockingly. "No one here is an idiot. Don't simply take something out and lie to us about it. We know how things are priced."

Chapter 530

Ivan looked at the box in contempt. "What's this? This broken box looks so old. How is this worth over a billion? What are you trying to pull?" he scoffed. "It seems like all there's left is for you to leave now. Don't blame us; you failed your own promise!" Before anyone could react, the young master of the Mont family, Grayson Mont soon realized what it was. "I—Isn't this box used to hold the luminous pearl?!" he half-yelled in utter disbelief. "This seems to be that box! Is the luminous pearl inside?" The master of the Roy family, Robert Roy chorused in. Did that rich hag buy it? Still, was the rich hag not the Goddess of War? "How's that possible? Did the Goddess of War buy it? Why is it in his possession?" Some of the people looked at Fane and Lana weirdly as they had no idea what was going on. Fane opened the box. Sure enough, a big luminous pearl was revealed to the crowd. "This… Isn't this the luminous pearl that can prolong a person's life?" Old Master Taylor gaped at the pearl. This pearl had gone through a very fierce bidding process before it landed in the mysterious rich hag's

hand who he recently found out was the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs. Yet, this precious object was in Fane's hands right now. "Oh my goodness. This is the luminous pearl that's worth five billion!" Fiona gulped, evidently shocked as she held herself back from snatching it. Fane was too much; he did not think about giving such an invaluable item to her. Unfortunately, so many people were looking on, and this was Fane's present to the old master as well. She could only endure her heartache and remain calm. "This is that pearl!" Robert was envious. This object was an exceptionally rare and precious object. Experts claimed it could slow down a person's metabolism. They wanted it so badly during the auction for this item. Alas, the item had reached the five-billion mark in the end, and they had to give up. "Yes, Grandfather. Happy seventieth birthday! I hope that this pearl can help Grandfather to be more energetic and live a long life!" Fane smiled indifferently. He covered the box and handed it to him. "Haha! Good, so good!" Zeus laughed, overjoyed with that gift. This pearl cost five billion and, coincidentally, he was already at an old age. How could he not be happy when he got such a precious object? After all, he might be able to live a few more years if he placed this pearl beside his pillow. Ecstatic, Old Master Taylor beamed, "Satisfied. I'm very, very satisfied! Fane, you've completed your every promise. Today onward, I welcome everyone to come back and stay. I'll also acknowledge that you're the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family! You're good enough and are definitely worthy of Selena." "Haha! Then we can stay at both places!" Fane laughed. He then turned around and looked at the villa. "Grandfather, you can also follow us and stay at the other villa." "Why not? It seems very pleasant, and I guess I could stay for a night or two, so keep a room for me!" Old Man Taylor replied. "Still, I'm used to staying in this villa, so I'll be here most of the time. Both houses are so nearby, so I can visit you whenever I have the time!" "Good idea, Grandfather!" Fane praised him. "Then we'll still stay at the previous villa we used to stay in. We can stay at both places!"

Chapter 531

Selena smiled. Elation welled in her heart after having received her grandfather's recognition and the Taylor family's acceptance. Grandfather Taylor nodded his head. "I've made you all suffer these past few years," he said with a somber expression. "But you were too rebellious before. There's no way I could let you get away with it without teaching you a lesson!" "Well, it's all over now, and yes, I was quite a bit of a rebel when I was younger…" Selena pursed her red lips and walked over, holding onto Fane's arm shyly. "I don't regret it one bit," she said, smiling sweetly. "Because I found myself a good husband. Now I feel like perhaps this is fate!" "All right. So long as you don't blame me!" Grandfather Taylor's eyes were red. Selena's personality was similar to his—impossibly stubborn. In reality, his heart ached for his granddaughter but he had a reputation to maintain, and it was hard for him to take back whatever he said. "Ms. Goddess of War, isn't this pearl yours? Why did you give it to Fane?" Ivan's expression darkened, dissatisfaction stirring within him. He never expected Fane would actually manage to complete the three tasks. He had thought that Fane would never be able to take out something worth ten million bucks. Neil had even specially deployed several men to tail Fane to see if he had bought anything expensive. He never thought that Fane would prepare this pearl as a present. Lana flashed a wan smile. "Everyone knows that Fane's a skilled medical practitioner. He's used his medical skills to save my life on the battlefield. So, never mind this pearl—I could give him ten pearls and it still wouldn't even begin to express my gratitude towards him." "I see. So, this is why the Goddess of War came for Grandfather Taylor's birthday party!" someone exclaimed. "That's right. Who knew that the good-for-nothing son-in-law of the Taylor family would not only know a Goddess of War but even saved her life before? What luck, to be associated so closely with a God of War?" another wealthy businessman also exclaimed. Who would dare go against the Taylor family with these relations from now on? After all, Fane had

saved a Goddess of War. She would never refuse a cry for help if it came from him. “Fane and I are good buddies!” Lana grinned and looked at Fane. “Hah. Of course! The Goddess of War and I must share a few drinks before the night ends!” Fane laughed. It seemed to be a good thing that Lana was able to come to Middle Province City. At least she could help him retain his cover; his identity would have been blown otherwise. “Please, come in, Goddess of War!” Grandfather Taylor heaved an internal sigh of relief. Thank goodness that Ken, Michael, and the others had all stepped up and caused trouble for the Goddess of War. Only then could he have an opportunity to observe everything from the sidelines. Otherwise, he might have gone forward and yelled at her to explain herself before commanding her to get out of the Taylor family’s residence. It would have been an absolute disaster if he made her angry. “No worries!” Lana smiled and walked over to her car. She took out a long, rectangular box and tossed it to Zeus. “I haven’t given you your 70th birthday present yet, sir. This is a thousand-year-old Changsan Mountain ginseng. I hope you’ll accept it!” Hiss! The crowd gasped. This thousand-year-old ginseng was practically a national treasure. It was extremely rare and difficult to find. “This–this must’ve been so expensive! Ms. Goddess of War, you’re too generous!” Old Man Taylor was shocked to his core by the exorbitant gift. He took the box with trembling hands. “Don’t be shy!” A playful smile glazed over Lana’s lips. She turned her attention towards the fatty, Michael, who was paralyzed. “Young Master Wilson, right? I remember how rude you were to me just now, spewing such hateful comments,” she said, smiling. “Hmph. Tell me, what should we do about that?”

Chapter 532

Michael was on the floor, completely paralyzed with fear. When he heard this, he nearly peed his pants. Cold sweat began to trickle down his body. Although Ivan and Neil had also stepped forward to confront her, he had spoken with the most bite and even did his happy dance in an attempt to

mock her. It seemed that he had truly pissed this Goddess of War off. “Goddess of War, pl–please, have mercy on me. I didn’t know you were a Goddess of War. I…” Michael kneeled on the floor and began to kowtow to her, but it seemed that he quickly thought of something and pointed at Ivan instead. “I was just listening to Ivan and the rest. They said that Fane was leeching off a rich woman,” he said. “They’ve led me astray! I’m innocent!” Ivan never thought that Michael would think of dragging him down to hell. He was suddenly overcome with anger and a wave of panic. He clenched his teeth and took two steps forward, glaring viciously at Michael. “Young Master Wilson, we’re good friends, aren’t we? How can you accuse me of something like that? Who was the one who said he wanted to see the rich woman’s true colors? Who was the one who said that she had a secret affair? And who was the only who refused to listen, but remained arrogant and stubborn?” “Hmph. Not another word from you!” Michael harrumphed coldly. “Don’t tell me you didn’t call her a rich hag as well?” He was determined to drag Ivan down with him. He was well aware that his death was certain if he did not drag Ivan along with him—even if he did not die, he would probably be handicapped for life. It was useless to drag Neil or Ken along. Ivan, however, was different—he was the young master of the Taylor family, the only son. There was no way the Goddess of War would dare kill him. It was Old Man Taylor’s birthday—his 70th. No way a Goddess of War would dare kill his grandson during his birthday. “I–I did call her a rich hag but I just wanted to prove that she was wealthy. My intentions were completely different from yours!” Ivan resorted to sophistry but in reality, his heart was pounding in terror. After all, if Skyler and the others had not referred to her as ‘Goddess of War’ earlier, he probably would have gone ahead and scolded her for being so shameless. Lana wanted to laugh at the sight of these two idiots going at each other’s throats. However, after she thought about it, she turned towards Fane and said, “Fane, tell me. How should I settle this? It’s Old Man Taylor’s birthday today, after all. It wouldn’t be a wise idea to spill blood here. I should

probably just spare the pig's life!" She added, "However, he has sullied both our names by claiming that you were leeching off of me. It doesn't only affect my reputation—it affects yours as well, and it could've sowed discord between you and your wife. So, you make the call." Ivan relaxed his breath when he heard that Fane was to make the final decision. It seemed that this Goddess of War had no intention of pressing the issue any further. Besides, Fane was the Taylors' son-in-law, and the Taylors were somewhat related to the Wilsons. Theoretically, Fane should be calling him 'Cousin', so he could not afford to not spare his reputation and press him on this matter. Right? "Th–thank you, Goddess of War!" Michael breathed a sigh of relief when he heard that he was not going to die. Then, he looked at Fane. "Brother Fane, we've known each other for quite some time now. Please go easy on me!" he said. "Besides, it's Old Man Taylor's birthday today, and I'm his esteemed guest. I came over to celebrate. Don't tell me you want to trouble me instead?" Fane gave a dry smile. "That's right. You're an esteemed guest, and it's Grandfather's birthday today. So I really can't trouble you all that much!" Michael was even more elated. It seemed that Fane was not an idiot after all, being aware that he was a young master of a second-class aristocratic family and not daring to lift a finger against him. That was why he would definitely only receive a small punishment later.

Chapter 533

Yet he never expected Fane to speak after pausing for a moment. "Lambasting my name is fine. After all, I'm just a bodyguard working for the Drake family. However, you've slandered the name of a Goddess of War. You cannot be forgiven that easily for that. Our Goddess of War here isn't even married, yet you've said such things about her…" Fane spoke to Ivan, "Young Master Ivan, the fatty accused you of slandering the Goddess of War as well. Isn't that practically defamation for you as well?" "That's right. He utterly and thoroughly slandered my name as well. I have nothing but respect for the Goddess of War. There isn't a speck of disrespect within

me. In my eyes, Miss Lana is the strongest Goddess of War among the nine. Besides, it's a no-brainer that it's extremely difficult for a woman to become a Goddess of War!" Ivan bobbed his head as he agreed with Fane's words. He even threw in a statement that clearly meant to suck up to Lana. "What? Are you underestimating women?" He never expected Lana's expression to darken instead as she spoke unhappily. "No, no. I didn't mean that. I–I'm just saying it's not easy…" Ivan was suddenly shocked. Beads of cold sweat traveled down his neck. Fane then said, "Young Master Ivan, you said it yourself—this fellow defamed you. Then we'll make this easy and give you a chance to prove yourself. Our Goddess of War here will be watching if you do it well. Go on and give this fatty two hundred vicious slaps. Oh, and each slap must be absolutely resounding to prove your respect and regard for the Goddess of War! Otherwise, it would mean that you do not truly respect her!" "Mmhmm. Not bad. It's time to see if you truly respect me!" Lana smiled and folded her arms across her chest. "Begin!" "Two–two hundred? That's too much!" Michael almost fainted on the spot, fury kindling in him. Fane was seriously overstepping his boundaries. Couldn't the man just tell him to kowtow and apologize or something? Instead, he told Ivan to give him two hundred slaps—hard ones at that. This was preposterous! "Too much? Heh. The fact that you're allowed to live is good enough, Michael, and you still wish to bargain with me? Vermin like you have no right to question the reputation of a Goddess of War." Fane's lips curled into a frosty smile. He turned towards Ivan. "Young Master Ivan, this is now in your hands!" he said. "It's time to prove your loyalty—the respect and regard you claim to harbor towards the Goddess of War!" The corners of Ivan's mouth twitched. Now, he would have preferred the Goddess of War to kill Michael in a flash of anger instead. Were he to raise his hand and slap Michael, it would be a miracle if the other man did not hold a grudge against him. The person he was most frustrated with was Fane—how dare he ask him to slap Michael, putting his respect towards the Goddess of War on the line! It was hard for him to go easy with such a matter at stake.

Furthermore, he could not fake the slapping, what with so many people watching. “What are you standing there for? Move!” Skyler glared at Ivan as he reminded him. “That’s right. Letting him live is mercy in itself, considering what he said about a Goddess of War!” Quin also chimed in. “Hah. If you’re not up for it, I’ll take your place and defend her honor. I’ll slap him to death in three strikes!” Xyle, another God of War, burst into laughter.

Chapter 534

Xyle’s words scared Michael to death, the fat on his cheeks trembled like jelly. Xyle’s surname was quite similar to Michael’s—Xyler Walker and Michael Wilson—sharing the same initial ‘W’. Yet, not only did this God of War not help him, he even considered beating him up? Michael thought to himself. Right now, he was not thinking straight at all. He was thinking hard, trying to come up with ways to get himself out of being killed in three strikes. He was a God of War. If he used his full strength, he would not even need three strikes—just the one. “Hurry up, Ivan. Beat me. What are you waiting for!” Michael yelled, feeling as though he was being suffocated. He had no choice but to clench his teeth. It would be better for him to be beaten than to die. Besides, Ivan was a young master raised with a silver spoon in his mouth. How strong could he possibly be? Plus, he was a good friend. He probably would not hit him that hard. That was why it was better to let Ivan do the beating rather than a God of War. He was the most furious with Fane, the b*stard. How dare he come up with a method like this to punish him! There were many affluent businessmen here, as well as aristocrats, generals—and they were all watching him… “Young Master Wilson, I won’t hold back!” A small spark of delight leaped in Ivan’s heart. Michael had tried to drag him down into the mud during a crucial moment earlier. What if the Goddess of War had decided to punish him as well in a fit of rage? Or worse, kill him? Where would he cry and run off to then? Smack! Ivan raised his hand and struck Michael’s face. “Ah!” It was so painful,

Michael yelped. His cheek burned from the pain and a red imprint grew in its place. “You…” Michael raised his head wildly and looked at Ivan, breathing heavily. That b*stard. Was he not using too much strength? Did he not know how to hold back a little? Yet Ivan could not be bothered. He turned around and asked Lana, “Goddess of War, look here. Is this amount of strength appropriate?” “Not bad! Just make sure to keep up the good work!” Lana nodded her head. Michael’s guts turned into knots. That was why Ivan had purposely used more strength—it was to see if the Goddess of War was satisfied with it. It was just to get her approval. Then, he would raise his arm high again, and before striking him, he would slow down at the last minute. That way, it would seem that he was rearing up for a vicious hit when in reality, his blow would be slightly softened. Michael believed that Ivan was capable of doing it. Smack! During his contemplation, Ivan slapped him again, going for the other cheek this time. He felt as though this b*stard had put a little more strength into this slap compared to the last one. “Ah!” Michael gritted his teeth and shot Ivan a fierce glare. “There’s no other way, Young Master Wilson. Look—there are so many people watching. I have no choice but to slap you for your blatant disrespect to the Goddess of War! “After all, the Goddess of War is my idol. She’s the ultimate goddess in my heart!” A wan smile crossed Ivan’s lips as he saluted Michael with his fist and palm. Michael was stunned. That f*cker Ivan—was he thinking of sucking up to the Goddess of War? He used that much strength just to gain her favor? Was the years of friendship shared between them worth absolutely nothing? “Less talking, more doing!” Lana immediately snapped. He had only given him two slaps and yet they were already talking so much. She then glanced at Neil who was standing not too far away—utterly terrified—giving him the side-eye. “Get over here now!” she snarled at him. Rip!

Chapter 535

Neil was considering himself lucky, rejoicing in the fact that the Goddess of War seemed to have forgotten everything he had said earlier. In his head, he kept praying that she would not hold a grudge against him and let the issue slide. Much to his dismay, she suddenly yelled at him to go over. It was possible that he was her target now. Neil's father, Hugo, was just as terrified as his son. He wanted to come forward and beg for her forgiveness. He took one step forward before he stopped. It was not just anyone before him—it was a Goddess of War. If he pleaded for mercy, he might incur her wrath and have his entire family killed or worse, and all he would be able to do at that point was to blame his bad luck. Hence, he simply stood there—rooted to his spot—afraid to take a step further. "God–Goddess of War, is there a problem?" Neil gulped, his voice trembling. "Count the slaps. Don't miss a single one," Lana said to him. "Y–yes, ma'am!" Neil bobbed his head vigorously. It was so scary. His heart threatened to burst forth from his chest at any moment. Fortunately, she had only summoned him to keep count. "Three, four…" Ivan slapped Michael again and again. The latter's face quickly swelled into the size of a balloon, blood dribbling down the corners of his mouth. Meanwhile, Ivan felt an excruciating pain in his hand after quite a while of slapping, as though it was about to swell as well. He was the one hitting someone else, but his hand was in pain as well. He was only better off by a slight margin. Although he was not the one getting slapped, the one doing the slapping was not better off by much! "Ninety-nine…" Soon enough, ninety-nine slaps had been given. Michael had been slapped until his face was as red as a tomato, swelling past inhuman levels. He had a dull look in his eyes, having been slapped to the point of numbness. It was evident that he had completely recognized his mistake. "I, the head of the Drake family, James Drake, have arrived with the Drake family to wish Sir Taylor a happy 70th birthday. They are…" At this moment, James, Yvonne, Tanya, Timothy, and the other members of the Drake family arrived, presenting an exquisitely expensive gift. "My God. What–what's happening here?" James received the shock of his life the moment he walked in. He

saw Young Master Wilson kneeling on the ground being slapped by Ivan Taylor. The former's face had swelled to the size of a pig's. "Huh? Young Master Clark, what's…" Tanya was also stupefied. This was a birthday party, no? Why was something so miserable happening right now? "The Goddess of War! The Goddess of War's here. See? Isn't that Lana Zechs?" Timothy quickly noticed Lana and exclaimed, "I never thought the Goddess of War would be so stunning out of her uniform!" "Master Drake, this is what happened…" One of the ushers of the Taylor family explained to James and his family as they walked inside. "So that's what happened. That Michael's as blind as a bat. How dare he say something like that to the Goddess of War!" James was taken aback. Michael usually threw his weight about shamelessly in front of others, but he had offended the Goddess of War this time. Nothing could be done about it. He was asking for it. After he said that, he could not help but look at Fane. He never expected that Fane, the Taylor family's son-in-law, had saved the Goddess of War's life. Who would have known he would have such a connection with the Goddess of War? However, he quickly sensed that something was off. Was that really it? That Fane had used his medical skills to save the Goddess of War before she had grown strong to become a Goddess of War? Then why was Fane's file strictly confidential? Why was his file so strange? Why were there so many things that were not officially recorded? No one could guess what Fane had done while he was a soldier for five years. That was why it was likely that the connection between Fane and the Goddess of War was not that simple. Fane was at least a God of War. That was probably the case.

Chapter 536

After some contemplation, James turned towards the Taylor family's servant who was standing beside him. "We're kind of lost here because we arrived a little late. Did the Goddess of War mention Fane holding a certain position?" he asked, tone quiet. "Like a God of War?" "Oh, she didn't say anything like that, but Fane did say that he received a token but he lost it.

He also said that the money he used to bid for that villa was all his. “He’s probably a head commander. It’s a big accomplishment if he managed to hold that title within five years!” the servant replied. “Why didn’t he say anything if he was a head commander?” Specter Face, who stood at the back, asked out of curiosity. “Oh, Master Fane explained that he was afraid nobody would believe him because his token was lost on the road. So, he simply did not tell anyone. “But I really admire him. The Goddess of War might not even be standing before us today if it weren’t for him, and there wouldn’t have been so many prominent figures coming to our master’s birthday party!” The servant continued as he walked forward, “Actually, Miss Selena is a fine young woman and her husband is not too shabby either. They’ve finally earned the approval of the Taylor family. Let’s hope they’ll live the rest of their lives together in bliss.” “Don’t worry. That’ll definitely happen!” A small smile lit up James’s face. He did not believe what Fane said. His token got lost? It was too much of a coincidence. He sensed Fane’s identity was not that simple. He wondered how Fane managed to convince Lana, a Goddess of War, to help conceal his identity. He thought about it. Perhaps it was because the Goddess of War got injured not long after she had enlisted into the army before she was strong. Fane used his medical skills to save her, so she agreed to help him. “Master Drake, Miss Tanya, Mr. Timothy. You’re here!” Fane smiled and greeted them when he noticed James and the others. “Mmhmm. We probably would’ve arrived earlier if Tanya and Yvonne had not taken half the day just to pick their clothes and do their makeup.” James nodded and scanned the surroundings. “Seems like we’ve arrived pretty late.” “Ma–Master Drake! What an honor to have you here!” Old Man Taylor immediately stepped forward to shake hands with him. At that moment, Ivan had also stopped. His hand was practically swollen. It burned with fatigue. “Ptooey!” Michael spat blood and tumbled onto the ground, unable to withstand the beatings any longer. The bodyguards he brought with him stood at the main entrance of the Taylor family’s residence, waiting as per their orders. They saw every single event

that had unfolded. Unfortunately, they did not even dare to allow a sound to escape from them. There were too many powerful people there. They did not dare rush it. “He’s fainted!” Neil gulped and exclaimed as he looked at Michael whose face was swollen beyond recognition. “Get his bodyguards here to carry him back!” Lana spoke impatiently. Quickly, a few of the Wilson family’s bodyguards came in, lifting Michael and carting him off quickly. They were afraid that they would die here if they moved too slow. “This fellow lacks physical training on a daily basis. He only received two hundred slaps, and he’s already fainted just like that,” Xyle said, chuckling.

Chapter 537

“Lana, Miss Goddess of War! Long time no see!” James called out to Lana, immediately stepping forward after Michael had been carried away. She nodded her head, then noticed the two beauties beside him. “I assume that these two are the legendary beauties, Tanya and Yvonne?” she said, smiling. Tanya was shocked when she heard that. She never expected that the Goddess of War would praise her like that. “Hello, Goddess of War. I–I’m Tanya Drake. I’m not that beautiful—you’re a lot more good-looking than I am. Not only do you have a nice figure, you also have such a powerful aura!” Yvonne also quickly added, “That’s right. Not everyone possesses the aura of a Goddess of War. Michael has always been brazenly arrogant. He probably wouldn’t dare to be so arrogant after this incident.” The eyes of these two beauties were steady and clear. They were dressed in a simple fashion. Lana had a good impression of them. After she thought about it, she nonchalantly took out her name card and passed it to Tanya. “My phone number’s here. We can go out for a cup of coffee when we’re free. Besides, I don’t know that many people here in Middle Province!” Tanya was stunned by the royal treatment. She gulped before she took the tiny name card. “All right. I’ll contact you when I have the time. Oh, right. This is mine!” She quickly took out her name card and held it out towards the other woman, bowing slightly with both hands clasped around the card. Lana

could not help but smile at Tanya's antics. "Don't be so serious. I'm not a god. Just treat me like any normal person—like a sister!" "I–I shouldn't do that. Even if you're not a god, you're close. You're a Goddess of War!" Tanya could not get used to that. Lana was a powerful Goddess of War—how could she treat her as a regular girlfriend and hang out so casually? No way she could do that. She already felt stressed standing before the Goddess of War, feeling as though invisible hands were clenching around her heart. She had never experienced a feeling like this before. There was an unidentifiable prestige, an unidentifiable atmosphere of strength before her. "I was a Goddess of War. That was a long time ago. I've retired now!" Lana did not know whether to laugh or cry. She just wanted to shed her titles and make two new friends. Her title made it really difficult for others to interact with her normally. Timothy, who was standing beside his sister, had a gloomy expression. He felt that he had been sidelined by the Goddess of War. He even purposely dressed up today and wore a sharply tailored suit. Of course, he wanted to get the Goddess of War's attention. Yet… After a while, almost all the guests had arrived. Zeus frowned when he scanned the area. It seemed like there were a lot of people. He did not know if the 220 tables were enough to seat everyone. "Who did this? F*ck! How dare he beat my son like this!" Michael had been carted back to the Wilson family's mansion. The head of the Wilson family saw him just as he was being carried in. He immediately called for a few of the Wilson family members to witness the situation. "My God. What happened to the young master? His face has been beaten, and so badly swollen that it looks like a pig's. I probably wouldn't recognize him if it wasn't for his clothes, which was what he wore this morning!" One of the Wilson members grimaced when he saw Michael's state. "Who did this? Who did this! I'll tear him to pieces!" Master Wilson clenched his hands into fists. This was his son, his flesh and blood. He himself did not have the heart to hit him. He never thought that he would be beaten up to this state. "That's right. We must avenge him and kill the culprit's entire family!" The caretaker of the Wilson family also said,

huffing. “Ma–master, the young master offended a Goddess of War,” one of the bodyguards spoke carefully, raising his head.

Chapter 538

“Who did he offend? It doesn’t matter who—I won’t let him live to see the light of day!” Master Wilson yelled. He was extremely furious and was about to explode with rage. However, he was suddenly stunned after saying that. “Hold on. Who did he offend, you say? He offended a Goddess of War?” “That’s right, Master. He offended the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs!” the bodyguard explained. “We’re done for, Master. The person he’s offended this time is too powerful. It’s a miracle that she didn’t come for our entire family!” The Wilson family caretaker’s expression darkened, abruptly submitting to fate. “No–no way. He seriously offended a God of War?” Master Wilson gulped. The anger that was boiling in him just a moment ago dissipated in a flash. Fear took its place. That was a Goddess of War. Never mind the powerhouses of Middle Provinces—not even the powerhouses of other big cities, like Cathysia, would dare offend someone like that. There were plenty of people out to curry their favor, even. He never thought his own son would actually offend such a powerful figure. “F–find doctors for him first!” Master Wilson cried towards two bodyguards after a moment of silence. After the bodyguards left, he immediately ordered a few others to bring Michael in to rest first. Then, he turned to another bodyguard. “What on earth happened? My son isn’t an idiot. Surely he wasn’t stupid enough to offend a Goddess of War?” “This is what happened, Master. You know that this Goddess of War always liked to maintain a low profile…” The bodyguard flashed a bitter smile and told David everything. “Seriously? Why the mask when nothing was going on? My son has received an extremely unfair beating!” David gritted his teeth. He believed that Michael would not have said anything like that had he known she was a Goddess of War. He would never have shown such disrespect toward her. However, it was all in the past. He had no choice but to give in. Still, his heart was sent

into a panic when he thought of his son being beaten to a pulp. “That b*stard, Ivan. Slapping someone just because they told him to, and even using such a heavy hand! My son may have been beaten to death had he received a few more slaps!” David clenched his fists tightly. He wanted to shred that punk into pieces. “Master, we can’t pin the blame on Ivan. It was all Fane’s plan, that son-in-law of the Taylor family. You know that Young Master Wilson harbored some interest in his wife. Naturally, Fane would harbor some dissent within him as well. It wouldn’t have been easy to get a Goddess of War to allow him to deal the punishment. How could he miss an opportunity like that? That was why he dealt such a vicious punishment to the young master! “However, I myself think it was too much. No matter what you say, we’re still second-class aristocrats. It would’ve been enough to make the young master get on his knees and kowtow to apologize. Why did he have to receive two hundred slaps? Two hundred!” the bodyguard said, sighing.

Chapter 539

“Fane? He just retired from the military, yet he has the guts to go against our family and do something so vicious against my son? Hmph! I, David Wilson, will teach him the taste of regret!” The bodyguard’s words quickly directed David’s hatred towards Fane. “That’s right. Fane’s unbelievably wicked, Master. Ivan had no choice either. There were so many people there, and the Goddess of War was watching so he had to use his strength. Otherwise, they’d say that the slaps didn’t count and he would have needed to start over. So…” Naturally, the bodyguard knew that Michael and Ivan had a pretty good friendship. He knew they were against Fane, so he even put in a good word or two for Ivan. “Alright. I get it!” David nodded. “Sure, Fane may have saved the Goddess of War, but she had given him luminous pearls worth five million bucks, and she even put him on a pedestal during Old Man Taylor’s birthday party. Her debt to him is probably almost fulfilled. I’ll never forget this incident. Even if I can’t confront him now, I’ll think of a way to kill Fane soon.” At that moment, in a tower opposite the

Taylor family's residence, quite a few people were using binoculars to observe the situation in the villa. "It's buzzing! Lots of people went!! And there are quite a few Gods of War here. Lana Zechs came as well!" A man with a determined face spoke, his expression darkened as he slowly lowered his binoculars. "That's right. Fane sabotaged your master the last time. Who knew that a Goddess of War would say he was helping to get rid of a hazard, even giving him face to celebrate the old man's birthday?" Quil smiled coldly before continuing, "And the other Gods of War had all come. Of course, I want to see them. That Goddess of War has such a good figure, and she's not half-bad looking either. Heh. I think quite a few people are thinking of bedding her. Tsk tsk. It's a pity that a woman like that is too strong for the likes of normal fellows. She'll be quite a catch if anyone manages to reel her in!" He never expected the man to give him a vicious backhanded-slap him across the face right after saying that. "You…" Quil was extremely furious, but he quickly remembered that this was King of War Magnus Sutherland's apprentice he was talking to. He was a head commander. The bodyguards that came with Quil were no match for him. "Fane drove my master to death. I wanted to kill him and avenge my master!" The man's expression hardened, murder rooted within his gaze. "But a Goddess of War doesn't deserve to be slandered by someone like you," he told Quil. "Don't even think about doing anything to her. You wouldn't be living such a comfortable life in Sky Dragon City now if we soldiers didn't sacrifice ourselves in the war, would you?" It was obvious that although the man wanted to avenge his master, he still had ultimate respect for Gods of War. The Nine Great Gods of War and the Supreme Warrior were practically deities in his heart. "Understood!" Even though he was angry, Quil managed a smile. "When do you plan to make a move?" "After a few days. This happened not too long ago, so I don't want to attract the suspicion of the Gods and Kings of War. I'll find an opportunity to kill Fane after a few days." The man thought for a moment then said, "Don't worry. You said it yourself that he has the skills that could match a head

commander. He’s strong, but it wouldn’t be a problem when faced with an actual head commander like me.” “All right!” Quil said, nodding his head. He never expected the middle-aged man to sigh at this moment. “Ah, I never thought my master—the old man who had contributed so much to our country and killed so many enemies—would meet an ending like that. It just makes one so bitterly disappointed. No matter what, his sins didn’t warrant a death sentence. Hmph. It’s all because of Fane. My master wouldn’t have died if he hadn’t called for the Goddess of War!”

Chapter 540

“All right. We’ll let Fane live a few days longer!” Quil flashed a mirthless smile. He thought about it for a while before he added, “Heh. I noticed that his wife isn’t your regular beauty. Do you mind if I fool around with her after you kill him?” The man’s expression shuttered, completely devoid of emotion. He looked at Quil beside him and said, “That’s your business. It has nothing to do with me. My goal is just to off that punk’s head!” After he said that, the man wheeled around and left. Quil waited until the man left before he spoke in a frosty tone, “F*ck. You’re just a head commander. Putting on airs in front of me every day while waiting for good food and drinks to be served to you. And you dare hit me. Sh*t. You really are full of yourself.” The bodyguards surrounding him had bizarre expressions. They had no say in the matter. Although the man was just a head commander, they could not afford to offend him that easily. No fighter in the Xenos family could compare to him. “I never thought that Fane’s woman would be dubbed the Number One Beauty Queen of Middle Province. Heh. There’s an unexpected reward waiting for me at the end of this!” A wicked quickly curled across Neil’s lips. “Seems like his brother-in-law’s girlfriend is also pretty good looking,” he said. “When Fane dies, kidnap those two women for me. I’m going to use an unconventional method to avenge my uncle!” The bodyguards behind him stared curiously. It seemed that this Young Master Xenos was truly different. He said something evil so flippantly as if

there was nothing wrong about it. “Come on. Cheers! It’s been so long since I’ve loosened up!” Skyler was all smiles. He had been able to see the Goddess of War today—and even shared a table with her. He was extremely excited. “That’s right. I never thought I’d have the chance to drink with the Goddess of War!” The King of War, Xyle, also wore an excited expression, his face already flushed red with alcohol. After he thought about it, he flashed Lana an awkward smile. “Miss Goddess of War, I’m an uneducated b*stard. Hah. I’ve never been one for books, and I’m not a good speaker. I’ll say whatever I want to say after drinking. I’m a carefree spirit, after all. I hope that you’ll forgive me if I accidentally say something wrong. Don’t hold it against me!” Lana could not help but laugh. This was the sort of person she liked, not the calculative, manipulative types. After she laughed, she raised her glass and spoke to Xyle, “Come on, let’s drink! Hah. Don’t worry. I’m not a petty sort either.” “All right. I’ll empty my glass first to show respect to you!” Xyle never expected Lana to propose a drink with him. He was shocked by the sudden attention and he gulped his glass down in a hurry. The people who were watching could not help but grin. Aside from the small hiccup earlier, everyone was pretty happy at the party. Only one table out of the two hundred was empty. The others were all full. This made Zeus heave an internal sigh of relief. This time, the Taylor family had reaped plenty of rewards. Their reputation had significantly improved. More importantly, everyone had given expensive gifts. Some of the monetary gifts came up to a few hundred thousand—even a few million, ten million! It was evident they wished to establish good relations with the Taylor family. After all, the fact that the Gods of War were here to take part in the celebration meant that Fane was extremely close to them. Now that everyone knew Fane had saved the Goddess of War’s life, everybody wanted to be close to the Taylor family. At the very least, the Taylor family would not be provoked by any regular folk. They had spent about 10 or 20 million bucks on the party and received cash gifts worth millions. This was not even including the other gifts they had received.

Chapter 541

Zeus was well aware that this allowed the Taylor family to leap straight into a second-class aristocratic family. Additionally, the deal they had signed with South Hill Real Estate enabled them to hold on to the title of second-class aristocrats for at least two years. They could even become slightly stronger than several other families of the same class. Everyone drank a lot, and it was around three or four in the afternoon when the guests started to gradually disperse. After seeing Lana and the others off, Fane sauntered over to Selena. “Let’s go, Honey. Let’s go and see our new home sweet home!” He sang with a soft and gentle smile appearing on his face. “Okay, let’s go over and take a good look! We can then pack our things and move in this afternoon!” Selena responded after giving some thought to his suggestion. She felt a glimmer of happiness. Her heart was singing. “Good idea! There’s nothing much for us to pack anyway. Everything we need is already there. Some simple packing will do. We can move in this afternoon!” Fane said, bobbing his head. “Let’s go! Let’s move now! I can’t wait to see it!” Fiona beamed with great excitement in her tone. That villa was so much more opulent and sumptuous than any of the villas here. She had long desired to live in this villa. She did not expect that her dream would come true so quickly and that she was able to move into that villa today! The family quickly crossed the road and walked towards the villa. On the other side, Ivan was seeing Neil and Ken off at the gate. The three of them harbored bitterness and saltiness within them, watching the silhouettes of the family growing smaller and smaller as they approached the dream villa. “Damn! This good-for-nothing shrimp stole the spotlight today!” “Yeah, I didn’t see that coming. So damn lucky! This sh*thead actually saved the Goddess of War’s life. She’s bolstered his pride enough already, even giving him a luminous pearl that’s worth five million, providing him an easy chance to use it as Old Man Taylor’s birthday present!” Ivan scoffed with a frosty expression. “So, ask Xena to wait for a few more days. Grandpa

Taylor has not only accepted Selena and her family, but he has also completely acknowledged Fane as Taylors' son-in-law. He seemed like he was satisfied when he was chatting with Fane." "If you let the two of them go on like this, I'm truly worried that the Young Master Taylor title will become nothing and that your position as an heir will not be guaranteed!" Ken managed to spill some words after thinking about the situation. "Stop kidding! I was the one who signed the deal with South Hill Conglomerate, the one who made an unbelievably huge contribution to the company! Earning 7 to 8 billion in two or three years is not a problem for me! Fane and Selena will never be able to affect my rights and my position as the heir of the Taylor family!" Ivan cursed. The skin between his brows crinkled. "Heh! Young Master Taylor, you can't be too sure! Old Master Taylor used to like Selena very much. Her business acumen and capabilities are ten times better than yours. Now that he has allowed them back into the Taylor family, it also means that he recognizes and approves of them!" Ken sneered coldly, "Besides, if it weren't for Selena, would you even get such a big contract? The image of you in the old man's heart may not be as good as Selena's now. Plus, all the luxurious and lavish gifts that the old man received today are enough to help the Taylors leap straight into the second-class aristocrat title! And all the credit belongs to Fane!"

Chapter 542

The folds between Ivan's brows grew deeper upon hearing Ken's words. Those words from Ken's delicate mouth were like tiny needles that pierced Ivan's eardrums—harsh and brutal, yet, honest and reasonable. "Are you sure? Selena has been gentle and kind since young. She wouldn't compete with me to be the heir, right? If this happened in the past, it would be possible, but Fane's pay is quite high, and Selena's as well. The family can live comfortably without much worry," Ivan thought out loud. "Haha, Young Master Taylor, it's wrong to think in this way! Can't you see how many assets and properties the Taylor family possesses now? They can be

considered as a second-class aristocratic family! With an abundance of valuable properties and possessions, do you think Selena will remain the same? She's from your generation as well. Same generation, same thoughts, right? Besides, no one complains about becoming rich!" "Okay, let's not talk about whether or not she will compete with you for the throne. Even if she doesn't want to compete, your Grandpa will give her half of everything in the future, am I right? Do you really want to give half of it to her?" Neil echoed smilingly, fully intending to remind Ivan of his reality. Ivan's face sank. "Of course not! I'm the only man of this generation in the Taylor family! Grandpa kicked her out of the family before! How could she be so shameless to involve herself in the dismemberment of Taylors' properties? "You and Selena share the same roots and are from the same generation. Both of you are Grandpa Taylor's grandchildren, so she naturally has the right to inherit the property. Not to mention, Grandpa Taylor is wise and sharp. If he thinks that you're incapable and that you'll weaken the Taylors, he would not think twice before making Selena the heir!" Neil sneered in a cold and mocking tone. The more Ivan thought about it, the more he realized the truth in Neil and Hugo's analysis. Old man Taylor's attitude toward Fane and Selena had changed too much today. He even eulogized Selena for her business talent and filial piety after just a few glasses of wine. Throughout the conversation, he did not mention Ivan at all. Ivan balled his fists tightly when he thought of the episode. "I will ask Xena to give Fane the pill tomorrow!" "Don't rush it. You have to grasp the atmosphere and find the best timing. Don't raise Fane's suspicion!" Ken nodded his head and commented, "Fortunately, this pill is very strong. It's odorless and tasteless, and it dissolves within seconds! If not, I'm afraid Fane might be able to find out. After all, he's a doctor. He surely has the medical knowledge!" Ivan was immediately petrified at his words. "You're right! He knows medical stuff. What if he's able to treat himself and be cured of the poison? Does the poison really work?" "Haha! Don't you worry! This pill was not easy to find. We bought it at an extremely high price. This chronic poison pill was

specially developed and made by the most prominent poison-making family in the southwest—the Miao family. The person who consumes this will not feel anything at all at the beginning, but as the days pass, he will grow weak in his four limbs, slowly losing vitality before eventually dying!" Ken rejoiced and continued, "And only the maker has the antidote for this kind of poison. It is derived from dozens of medicinal materials, how can it be treated so easily, right?" Ken's confidence offered Ivan's heart some calmness. He felt relieved. "I'll invite Xena for lunch tomorrow then! A little benefit for her would do the magic. I'll ask her to find a good time to poison Fane. After all, it's been a long time since Xena's episode. It's about time Fane lowers his guard around Xena." "That's perfect! Once Fane dies, it gives us the chance to pursue Selena! She will become a member of another family and have her surname changed. That way, she loses the right to compete with you for the throne! Anyway, she wouldn't even need to fight with you once she marries a rich man, am I right?" Ken was hopeful as though saw a light at the end of the tunnel as he thought about their plan. He felt that he was the most promising candidate, that Selena would pick him over the others. After all, he was closest to Selena before Fane returned. Although Michael had a pretty good relationship with Selena, he was ugly and fat. Selena would definitely scratch the fat guy off her list. On the other hand, Neil Hugo only came to know Selena much later. He was a complete pervert who only drooled over Selena's beauty. There was no emotional foundation for them to build a marriage on. Besides, Neil was infamous for being a playboy! Therefore, after analyzing all the potential candidates, he was the most promising one. It was only natural for Selena to pick him! "It makes sense, it does make sense! And when Fane dies, she'll definitely lose her fighting spirit for some time. She may even isolate herself and degenerate forever! By that time, Grandpa will be even more disappointed and change his perspective of me again!" Ivan ended his final analysis on this matter. Soon, the three of them dispersed. After Ken separated from the others, he brought some bodyguards with him and headed to the hospital.

Chapter 543

A luxurious ward came into his sight. He looked at the man lying on the bed, then cast his gaze out the window. Ken sighed deeply. “Cousin, call my father. I must kill that b*stard!” Flynn grit his teeth as his thoughts flew back to that day in the mall. He wanted to approach Miss Tanya and perhaps, make her his. However, his arm ended up getting crushed into powder by Fane. The doctors said it was impossible to save his left arm and that the only way to keep his life was to amputate the arm. Anger drummed through his veins when he looked at his current state—a disabled man. Ken had never told Flynn’s father about this. After all, his cousin came to Middle Province to hang out with him. To some extent, he was responsible for his cousin’s accident. He did call, but he could not get himself to open his mouth and speak the truth. He did not know what to say, or how to say it. Therefore, he told Flynn to wait a few more days. Flynn was about to be discharged from the hospital, and it seemed that the call could not be delayed any further. “Cousin, don’t rush it. Perhaps you should tell them once you get back to Lone city” He paused for a while before continuing, “Today, I bring you some good news!” “Hmph! Good news? What kind of news can be good for me? Right now, I just want that bodyguard to die in front of me! Not a simple and quick death—a miserable one!” Flynn’s gaze was still focused on the world beyond the windows. His eyes were full of resentment. “Haha! You’re right about the bodyguard this time! I came today to tell you just that. The b*stard will be in his grave very soon. He’ll only be alive for another month at most!” Ken said as he laughed wholeheartedly. “What do you mean? We’ll have to wait another month? Is it that difficult to handle a bodyguard?” Flynn’s face was frosty, obviously dissatisfied with the good news. “It won’t be easy! Our first fighter in the Clark family, Dan Jameson, was not even a worthy opponent. It’s extremely tough and challenging to slit that b*stard’s throat! “Moreover, I went to Grandpa Taylor’s birthday banquet today and I got to know that this b*stard used to be a head

commander in the army. It's just that he lost his commander's token and can't prove it to others. The good thing is we understand and are more aware of his true strength now," Ken expressed. "Head commander? That won't be easy to deal with!" Flynn frowned and continued, "You have to find a stronger and more ferocious person to end him! Wait...why do you say we need to wait a month to kill him?" "That's because this b*stard is about to die from poisoning! From a chronic yet deadly poison. He won't even notice it! Haha!" With a sinister look in his eyes, Ken spewed, "Don't worry, cousin. I have my own plans and arrangements. I'll be sure to avenge you!"

Chapter 544

"Are you sure it's reliable? This jerk is wicked. He's not going to be easy to deal with!" Flynn saw that his cousin was finally going to avenge him and his spirits were immediately lifted. He felt that he might as well die if he was not avenged. He was the son of a second-class aristocratic family in the Lone City. He came from a noble family! How could a bodyguard destroy his arm during his visit to Middle Province—a place that was nothing compared to Lone City. It would be a shameful embarrassment to return to Lone City in such a state! Not to mention, what would the wealthy people from Lone City think of him now? That he was merely a disabled man! "Don't be too preoccupied with that. The pill is absolutely reliable. The thing is like this…" Ken told Flynn about their plan and arrangement from start to finish. "We didn't do it earlier because Ivan was worried about something. He was looking forward to Old Man Taylor's birthday banquet as he wanted to witness Old Man Taylor cast Fane out from the Taylor family. However, we didn't expect Fane to bring such glory to the Taylor family and for Old Man Taylor to approve of Fane just like that! This time, Ivan is determined to erase this guy from the earth!" "Alright then. I'm just unhappy with letting that b*stard to live another month. Besides, this poison doesn't seem like it would torture him and give him a miserable death!" Flynn clenched his jaw, the boulder in his heart was still there. "Who said

this poison won’t torture him? In the early stage, the consumer will not feel anything at all, so it wouldn’t be painful. However, in the two days before he dies, you can’t begin to imagine the pain that he’ll be experiencing. He’s going to feel as though his bones and heart are corroding, melting. That feeling will make him want to kill himself, and it’ll last for two days! Haha! By that time, no antidote in the world will be able to save him!” Ken chuckled loudly and added, “I wanted to get rid of this b*stard a long time ago. I asked him to leave Selena alone back then, but he refused. I shouldn’t have let him live until today and allowed him to become strong. Since he still stubbornly wants to be with Selena, don’t blame me for my cruelty!” “Alright. I won’t go back to Lone City, then. I’ll stay a little longer at yours and wait for the good news!” Flynn sealed his decision after thinking about it. Meanwhile, Fane and the others were touring the 95-million villa. “How is it? Are you satisfied with the decoration and setting of the house?” Fane asked Selena and the others with a warm smile on his face. For him, where he lived and the condition of the house did not matter to him as long as there was a roof over his head. However, he did not wish to treat his dear wife, her lovely family, and his family badly. “Of course, I’m content! Look at the yard! It’s huge! Even the place where the servants and maids will be staying is spacious and comfortable! And the bonsai over there is marvelous!” Selena beamed with a wide grin. “Honey, I’m extremely satisfied!” “This villa’s so good! When we lived in the Taylor's residence, I used to look at the villa and feel a little envious of the people living in it. I wouldn’t have thought that one day my dream to live in it would come true!” Andrew let out laughter, satisfaction showing on his face. However, there was one person whose face was dull and cold all the time, seemingly unhappy. “Ma, what’s the matter? Why do I sense that you’re not happy today? We’re going to live in this big villa, aren’t you happy?” Selena frowned and asked, noticing Fiona’s expression as well. “I’m happy, of course, I’m happy. To live in such a big villa, how could I not be happy? A three-story villa with many rooms in it.”

Chapter 545

Fiona rolled her eyes at Selena and turned to face Fane. Her expression indicated that she was truly exasperated. “Fane, there’s one thing I have to say now. I didn’t mention it earlier because I wanted to protect your image in front of the crowd. Now there’s only one thing I want to get off my chest!” She burst. Fane’s brows furrowed for a moment before his gentle smile reappeared on his face. He said calmly, “Mother, I think I know what you want to say!” “Oh, you do? Tell me why am I so angry, then!” Fiona crossed her arms in front of her chest. “Heh. Are you thinking about the episode earlier? When the Goddess of War told me to teach Michael a lesson, you think the punishment was too heavy, don’t you? You’re afraid that Michael will hold this grudge against me and that the Wilson family will cause trouble for us in the future?” Fane chortled and continued, “Don’t worry about that. Even if they aren’t afraid of my relationship with the Goddess of War, I, Fane Woods, am not afraid of them!” “Aww, Ma, I didn’t expect you to worry that the Clark family would do something to Fane!” A flash of warmth filled her. This was her first time seeing her own mother worry about Fane’s safety. The corners of Fiona’s mouth twitched slightly. She blurted, “Bullsh*t! I’m not talking about this. I’m angry you didn’t tell me earlier about the luminous pearl the Goddess of War gave you!” Fane was speechless. He initially thought Fiona was worried about his safety, afraid that the Clarks would take revenge on him. It seemed like it was just his imagination. It turned out that Fiona was concerned about the luminous pearl. Fane forced a smile and said, “Mother, I did this to surprise Grandpa Taylor. Did you notice how happy he was today? Besides, I already knew what gift I was going to give him, so what’s the point of discussing it with others?” “Actually, I was quite surprised too!” Selena chimed in with a warm smile. “I really didn’t expect that the Goddess of War would give that pearl to you. After all, she had spent a huge amount in the auction to bid for this pearl!” “I must admit that it’s quite unexpected. The luminous pearl is

such a valuable thing! It's a national treasure! How could you give it to Grandpa Taylor without discussing it with us? You should've at least informed us!" Fiona's expression remained exasperated. "Have you ever thought about us? I let my beloved daughter marry you. We gave you Selena! Do you know how hard it is for parents to raise a kid? Why didn't you think of giving it to us? I may no longer be young but I still have some years to live." Fane and Selena exchanged glances silently. They were tongue-tied in this situation. They did not expect Fiona to throw a tantrum because of a pearl. "Yeah, how old are you again? You're not even fifty! Why do you want to fight with Grandpa for this pearl? Don't you feel ashamed?" Selena looked at Fiona and asked. Andrew, who stood beside Fiona, was upset with the conversation. "In my opinion, Fane's gift was very appropriate. The pearl should be given to my father. He is old now and he needs this kind of thing!" he fumed. "Th—that's five hundred million! Shouldn't he at least discuss with us? We could've voted on a decision!" Fiona was still upset. She stared at Fane, fire burning in her eyes. "He kept quiet about the gift and made us worried the whole time! I was still worried about whether he had prepared a decent gift for Grandpa. Fane didn't even treat us as his own!" she huffed. "Ma, you've gone too far. Fane has never treated us as outsiders. I think you just want the pearl. If Fane had brought it out to the table, would you have let him give it away as the birthday gift?" Selena reprimanded her without hesitation. She then continued, "The pearl isn't going to follow Grandpa Taylor to his grave, and you're not even fifty years old! When Grandpa passes, we'll give the pearl to you. Isn't that good enough?"

Chapter 546

"Hmph! Stop fooling me! The pearl isn't here anymore, it's been given to others! Even if you wanted to take it back after Grandpa dies, do you think it'll be that easy? By that time, Theodore would've gotten a hold of it and he won't let it go until he dies! You gave away this pearl, not lending it out!

Fiona was no fool. She let out a chuckle and said to Fane, “Nevermind. I’ll forgive you this time because of the villa, but the next time you come across any valuable item, you must let me know first. Tell us about it, do you understand?” “Yes, understood!” Fane nodded, his mouth curving awkwardly at its corners. “Let’s go inside and I’ll give you guys the tour, then we can start picking our rooms. But if you allow me to suggest, Mother, you should live on the first floor as it would be more convenient for you to move around. Selena, Ben, and I, the younger people, can live on the second floor.” “I’ll take a look first then decide, but yes, the first floor will definitely be a lot more convenient!” With her head high, Fiona walked into the villa. “Wow, wow, wow! This is amazing! The design and decorations are extraordinary!” Xena could not help but exclaim aloud once they stepped into the villa. The interior of the villa emitted a palatial aura. It was not old-fashioned, but quite the opposite. It was contemporary and fashionable—suitable for the younger generation. “Yeah, it’s really great! Too great! Xena, let’s go upstairs and look around, then we can decide which room to live in!” Ben immediately chimed in. Fane’s face darkened upon hearing his words. “Wait, talking about picking rooms, let your sister pick first, then Kylie, and then only you!” Fane’s words made their faces turn sour. However, this villa was bought with Fane’s money, and the real estate certificate bore Selena’s name. Xena and Ben had no right to say anything. “Alright, alright, but as for the villa at the Taylor’s residence, I want to live in my old room. You can’t decide that for us, right?” Ben turned to Fane and asked after he thought about something. Fane smiled indifferently. “Don’t worry. The possibility of us living there will be very low. After all, I believe Selena wouldn’t want to see Ivan that often, right?” Selena’s eyes lit up at Fane’s words. She smiled, “You know me pretty well, huh! The house over there… I don’t really want to go back and stay there that much. I’m so content with this villa. Besides, my husband bought it for me at such a high price, so it feels extra warm just to live here.” “By the way, Fane, how much can a head commander get once he’s retired from the army?”

Fiona finally opened her mouth. She could not stop thinking about the reward. Fane's face dulled. He was speechless. It seemed that they believed that he was a head commander. After all, the reward for a major in the army could be as much as one billion bucks! Before Fane could answer Fiona's question, Selena stepped up and scolded, "Ma, are you thinking about Fane's remaining cash reward, again? He has already given you twenty million, isn't that enough? For a head commander, the reward is more or less around two hundred million, and Fane has already spent a lot on us. Right now, he probably only has around ten million left at most. Don't tell me you want him to take it all out?"

Chapter 547

Fiona felt that she was being unreasonable as well. Still, she could not help but mutter, "Well, if he's willing to take out his money and give it to his mother-in-law as living allowance, why not? Naturally, I wouldn't mind it. Who wouldn't want to have more money?" Fane stayed silent. Fiona's words pretty much indicated her desire for Fane's remaining money. She wanted him to take it all out. Fiona was too greedy, was she not? However, Fiona was indeed his mother-in-law, and he would not want to offend her in any way. Hence, Fane could only smile and answer, "Mother, don't worry. Just let me know when you're done spending the twenty million bucks I gave you. We're a family. Of course, I'll make sure you have enough to spend." Fiona's face immediately lit up upon hearing Fane's words. A wide grin plastered her face and she said, "My dear son-in-law, you're too good. Actually, I'm not that money-minded, and I'm not after your money. After all, you earned the money with your life on the battlefield. So, even if you have eight or ten billion, you should keep it." Fiona paused for a moment before adding, "But at the same time, I'm worried you won't know how to manage your savings well and end up squandering it all. That's why I want to help manage it for you. For example, this villa is too expensive. It's not worth ninety-five million at all." Fane was dumbfounded. If he allowed

Fiona to manage the money, it would be his last time seeing his money. It would be difficult to ask her to take out the money once it was in her custody. “Let’s go, Fane. We can’t wait to see the rooms. Hurry up and move to the second floor!” Ben beamed with a smile on his face. After his last words, he turned to Xena and asked, “Xena, we can now say that we have houses and cars. Soon, I’ll go to your house and bring up the marriage proposal to your parents. It should be fine, right? I think it’s best if we get registered and get the marriage certificate as soon as possible and have a baby!” Ben was overly excited. Although Xena would occasionally come over for a few nights, she would never let him touch her at all. At most, she would allow him a few pecks on her cheeks. Ben had been wanting to marry Xena for a long time, but every time he proposed the idea to her, she would use the fact that Ben did not have a car or a house yet as an excuse to reject him. Now, Ben had both a car and a house. It should not pose any problems anymore. “Yes, yes, yes! Get married quickly! You’re not young anymore! Get married and give me a grandson. Then I can hold my grandson and take care of him in this grand villa!” Fiona’s heart leaped with joy when she heard it. “Don’t worry. We’re not like before anymore, poor with no money. We were too embarrassed to urge you to get married because of that. Now we have money! Eighty or a hundred thousand is nothing! We promise that the wedding will be grand and memorable!” Fiona patted her chest and continued, “Please, find a time to talk to your parents. Of course, we’ll give you some time to get yourself mentally prepared. Perhaps ten days or even half a month. How about that?” Xena did not think of marrying Ben at all. Ben was not good-looking. He was average, boring, and only knew how to play games. It was true that Ben and his family were wealthier than before, but how could compare to Ivan Taylor? Ivan is the young master of the Taylor family. The entirety of the Taylor properties would belong to him in the future! The Taylor family had successfully leaped into the second-class aristocratic family title. If she had the chance to become Mrs. Taylor, how would she be satisfied with the current state of Ben’s family?

Chapter 548

“Alright, alright. I’ll make a call to them in a few days!” Xena smiled awkwardly. She thought to herself and decided to agree to whatever came to her first, and act accordingly later on. The family quickly hopped to the second floor. After a round of touring, they picked their rooms. After selecting their respective rooms, Selena suggested to Fane, “Let’s go. It’s almost time. Let’s go back and pack our things so we can move in earlier and have an early dinner, too. After dinner, we could take Kylie to the park and take a stroll around our neighborhood.” “Good idea! It’s a lot livelier here than the place I used to live in!” Fane smiled at her. Holding her hand, they went down to the first floor together. Soon, Fane and the others returned to their dilapidated small house that they used to live in, packed some clothes and essentials, and were about to move into their new villa. Selena stood in the courtyard, her eyes fixated on the dilapidated house and its small courtyard, reminiscing the past. “I can’t believe that we’ve been living in this house for five years. I wasn’t used to living in such conditions at the beginning! “But, after some time, I eventually got used to it. It’s been five years... Sigh, I feel sad to leave!” Selena chortled bitterly, her voice full of emotions. “We’ve got to go. It’s my fault for making you and Kylie suffer a lot in the last five years. From now on, I promise I’ll make you the happiest woman in the world!” Fane gave her a warm smile. He turned to Fiona and said, “Mother, it’ll be Selena’s birthday in another month, right? I’ll throw her a celebration that will shock the whole city! It’ll be an unforgettable birthday!” “Really? If that’s true, I might go and announce it to my friends and family! If you can’t fulfill your promise, you’ll lose face!” Fiona was truly happy for Selena. After all, her daughter had experienced the worst in the past five years. She could not even afford a decent meal during her past few birthdays! Fane’s words lightened up Fiona’s mood. This was the first time Fiona thought well of Fane. Although he was not as wealthy as Ken Clark, he was good to her daughter. Lads like Ken Clark and Neil Huga,

they were wealthy but vicious and black-hearted at the same time. How could they ask her to poison Fane? Only evil people like them could come up with such ideas! After Fiona gave some thought to the situation, she reminded Fane, “By the way, Fane, even though you have a good relationship with the Goddess of War, and the Gods of War came over to Grandpa’s birthday for you, you can’t expect them to help you every time. So, no matter what, keep a low profile. Don’t get yourself targeted and cause me trouble, do you hear me? The higher the tree, the stronger the wind!” Andrew bobbed his head in agreement. He stepped forward and said the same to Fane, “Yeah, Fane, Ma is right. And you don’t have to punish young master Wilson that hard today. You could’ve just asked him to kowtow and apologize, or maybe ask them to slap themselves. Those two hundred slaps almost crippled him! Do you think they’ll let it slide just like that?” “Pa, it’s not that serious. Marshall Dennis is our bodyguard right now, so there’s nothing to be afraid of. Those young masters and their bodyguards are just ordinary people. Besides, won’t they think twice before going against us? After all, Fane has a good relationship with the Goddess of War. If they piss off the Goddess of War, their entire family is basically done for!” Selena replied after pondering. “Anyway, just stay low. They won’t dare to fight Fane face-to-face, but what if they find someone to slit his throat in secret? After all, everything can be done secretly, and if they refuse to admit to it by then, there’d be no evidence for the Goddess of War to wipe them out, right?” Andrew smiled bitterly. “It’s easy to dodge an open spear thrust, but difficult to guard against an arrow in the dark, isn’t it?” Selena nodded to agree. Her father was right. She then turned to Fane and said, “Moving forward, please try to make as little trouble as possible, for me and our daughter, okay? Try to keep a low profile, go to work and get off work on time everyday without stirring up trouble. The most important thing is that we live comfortably and peacefully!” Fane did not know whether to laugh or to cry at his wife’s comments. “Honey, don’t you think I want that, too? It’s not that I didn’t want to stay low. I couldn’t! I already warned them to

stay away from us, but those brats were still thinking about you and wanting to fight me. Sigh, I'm helpless!"

Chapter 549

"Th—then we have no choice. Just don't provoke them. They'll lose interest after a while once they see that we're inseparable—then they'll give up! "Besides, once they find some other beauty, they'll have a new target and naturally give up!" Selena said after she thought about it. Fane was stunned. "Really? There are others who could be more beautiful than my wife?" A light blush suddenly colored Selena's cheeks. "What are you talking about? My daughter is a big girl now, and I'm way past my prime. What beauty? Aren't Sasa, Yvonne, and Tanya all beauties? They're the real deals here—young and beautiful!" "They're too young. They aren't as charming as you. Besides, they don't have that charisma that you have!" Fane answered, still grinning as he looked at Selena, whose expression had turned bashful. Delight leaped in his heart. She was usually so frosty, but her coquettish expression when she turned shy would melt anyone's heart. Xena, who was standing to the side, did not seem too happy. As the couple went back and forth, they spoke as though she was not a beauty—especially Selena. She must have excluded her on purpose when she was listing so many beauties. "Let's go, let's go. Your child is so old and you're still so sappy!" Fiona really could not bear to watch any longer. She never thought that the husband and wife would still act in such a disgusting manner. She felt as though goosebumps were about to form all over her skin. Joan, who stood to the side, could not keep a small smile from gracing her lips. She was happy seeing that the two of them loved each other so dearly. "Let's go!" Selena flashed Fane an awkward glance. She realized that she was growing to accept him more and more. She then carried their daughter and went into the car. Soon enough, the whole family had moved into the villa. They parked four luxury cars at the villa's porch. The view did not seem so stark now. "I think we should go out to eat. We've just moved in here, and we're

all tired and drenched in sweat. More importantly, the fridge doesn't have any ingredients in it and it's already 6.30pm!" Selena could not help but speak up after everything was arranged. "All right. Anything you say, dear. We'll go out to eat once everyone has taken a bath." Fane nodded. In a flash, everyone went off to bathe. After freshening up, they rested for a while before heading out for dinner. No one expected Xena's phone to ring just as they ordered their food. She took it out, looked at the screen, and rejected the call. "Why didn't you pick it up?" Fane's brows furrowed. He felt that she was acting strangely. A flash of panic had sparked in her eyes when she looked at her phone just now.

Chapter 550

Xena never thought that Fane would notice this small, careless action. Shock jolted up her spine. She managed a stiff smile. "It's just a spam call. It's nothing. Those housing agents are seriously so annoying. They keep calling me to ask if I'm going to buy a house!" "Really? Lend me your phone and I'll call them to give them a good scolding!" Fane flashed a frosty smile and extended his hand. Xena's expression turned even sourer when she heard this. It was Ivan who had called her. Everything would go to sh*t if Fane and Selena found out what was happening between her and Ivan. "What's there to call? It's just a spam call. Let's eat!" Xena immediately chuckled and picked up her chopsticks. "Why won't you let me check it out if it's just a spam call? Or are you scared of something? Don't tell me your lover called you?" Fane pressed on, sensing that something was off. The corners of Xena's mouth twitched. Fane was too sharp, too difficult to handle. She never thought that he would be right on the money. She immediately slapped her chopsticks on the table in a huff. "What are you talking about, Fane? What lover are you talking about? I'm not that kind of person. Besides, this is my phone. I can't just hand it over to you—what if you looked through my private photos? Even Ben doesn't get to touch my phone. What right do you have to 'borrow' it?" "What are you saying, Fane? Don't go

overboard!” Ben immediately spoke, his expression cold. “I’m only calling you my brother-in-law to maintain my sister’s dignity, and because you’ve been doing pretty good lately and not causing us any trouble. Did you think you could step on me like that? What right do you have to look at my girlfriend’s phone?” Fiona’s expression was also somewhat hostile. “Xena is right, Fane. Why would you, an outsider, want to look at her phone? You’re our son-in-law now, yes, but know your place. Are you harboring a grudge against her because she was against you in the beginning?” Fane immediately smiled. “Heh. Why so serious? I’m just joking. Why the tension?” After he said that, he lowered his voice and muttered on purpose, “Ah, I was just kidding. Why so tense about it? Don’t tell me you’re feeling guilty because your lover really called you?” “You…” Xena was extremely furious. She picked up her chopsticks again. “Who cares about you!” “That’s right. Let’s eat!” Ben quickly smiled and scooped some dishes, putting them into Xena’s bowl. At that moment, Xena’s phone rang again. The corners of Xena’s mouth twitched violently. She felt absolutely helpless. Why did Ivan pick this time to call her? It was definitely not the right timing. Besides, she had rejected his call immediately when he called earlier. Could he not tell this was not a good time for them to talk? “Eh, why’s your phone ringing again? Pick it up!” Fane said with a surprised smile on his face.

Chapter 551

Selena kept staring at Xena too. She also felt that something was off about her brother’s girlfriend lately. Her makeup and clothing have been growing more fashionable. Furthermore, she had quite a few branded bags to her name now. They were definitely not cheap. “Give the phone to me, Xena. These salespeople can be extremely annoying. They keep making calls like this and it gets irritating. I’ll take the call. I’ll give them a good scolding!” Fiona said straightaway when she noticed that Xena was stunned for quite a few seconds, not picking up the phone. Xena was even more frightened. She

flashed a bitter smile. “Nevermind, Ma. I'm too lazy to pick it up. These people don’t have an easy time working. Sometimes they even have to work overtime till late at night because they couldn’t finish their quota for the day.” After Fiona heard that, she smiled as she spoke, “Never thought that you would be this empathetic, Xena, thinking for the sake of others! Come on everyone, let’s just eat and drink. No need to pick up such harassing calls if you don’t want to!” “That’s right. Let me pour you a glass, Ma!” Xena heaved an internal sigh of relief. She stood up and poured a glass of wine for Fiona. At this moment, her phone finally stopped ringing. Fane could not be bothered about it. He started to casually indulge himself in the feast before him. However, the phone did not ring again for the rest of the meal. After they finished eating, everybody went back. Fane and Selena went back into their room and closed the door. Only then did the former said, “There’s something off about Xena!” Selena nodded her head. “She’s definitely up to no good. No matter what, I can’t let her marry my brother. God knows how many times she would cheat on him otherwise. “Mmhmm. She definitely has a man on the s ide. Why all the new clothes otherwise? Where did they come from? They must be pretty expensive, and she’s changed quite a few bags!” Fane carved a smile. “She said that she bought them all by herself. I do not believe a lick of it. Why wasn’t she this extravagant before if she had this much money? She was not that kind of woman who saved up money back then too! ” “Then what do we do? My brother didn’t believe you the last time we found out that she was planning to swindle my parent’s money with her gang. He believed her instead. I really think that he’s extremely gullible!” Selena frowned. “It’s a wonder if he doesn’t suffer any losses being with this woman, with him being so gullible!” “This woman really is money-faced. I'm telling you, I’d thought about killing her when I was going after the motor robbers. But I spared her, seeing that she’s a woman and your brother’s girlfriend, so I told her to scram! “Never thought that she would have the audacity to return to your brother’s side. However, it seemed like she didn’t change all that much later. I thought that

she would turn over a new leaf and truly wish to be with your brother! Who knew that she didn't change her spots at all, judging from these few days!" Fane clenched his fingers into fists. Iciness flashed across his eyes. "Since your brother is so gullible, I should just kill Xena off. Just find an opportunity and be done with her! This way, your brother will have to give up on her!" Selena was shocked when she heard that. "No way. She's still my brother's girlfriend, and we're going to kill her because we suspect that she's with another man? What if we're wrong? Besides, I already told you that this isn't the battlefield. Stop trying to use your fists to solve every single problem!" Fane felt embarrassed. His wife was still so kind and generous. "Then what should we do? I'll listen to you!" He spoke mildly, after remaining silent for a few seconds.

Chapter 552

"Mmhmm. She is the woman that my brother loves deeply, after all. He'll be extremely upset if you kill her. And he might do something stupid to himself!" Selena told Fane after a few moments of silence. Fane nodded his head. "That's right. I thought about this too. That's why I told her to scram the last time. Who knew that this woman would be so manipulative? She even said that I'm taking revenge on her by slandering her because she was against me before. And she says that she's the victim. Heh!" "Then we have to think of a way to get evidence of Xena's affair. It would be best if my brother catches her in action and has his heart, broken. We'll let him decide if we should let her live after that. What do you think?" Selena said after she thought about it. "Okay. You're right, dear!" Fane thought about it, then he studied his wife, who was wearing a sexy nightgown. He could not help but flash a wicked grin. "Dear, Kylie has her own room now," he said. "We don't have to worry about anything anymore, right?" Selena's face reddened in a flash; panic gripped her heart. She quickly rolled her eyes at him. "Why do you keep thinking about all these things?" she said, tone shy. "Seriously, all men are such perverts!" Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry.

“What do you mean all men are perverts?” he said, smiling bitterly. “I never touched you for all these five years!” Mischief sparked within Fane when he noticed Selena’s bashful countenance. He took two steps forward and swept the beauty before him into a bridal carry. Selena’s heart thudded against her chest. She was a mother, but the incident five years ago had been an honest accident. She could barely remember what had happened that night. Still, she was a grown woman. Of course, she wanted a man who could keep her safe and warm. However, she was not someone who played around. That was why she had remained chaste for all these five years, hoping that Fane would return—and hoping that he would be a good husband and father. She would surrender everything to fate so long as Fane turned out to be a working member of society, and not some scumbag picked out of the landfill. Yet she never imagined that not only would Fane be a good father, but he was also an even better husband—and he was a war hero. She had actually fallen deeply in love with him, just a month after he had returned. Now she really wanted to give her all to him again. Fane gently put her onto the bed, as though he was handling fragile china. Selena bit on her red-rouged lip. She glanced toward the light beside them. “Turn it off,” she said awkwardly. “I'm so embarrassed!” “Why don’t we turn the wall lamp on then, dear? It would be a shame if I can’t see your shy, awkward face. You’re so beautiful now!” Fane turned off the ceiling lights and turned the wall lamp on, its light dimly illuminating the room. “What do you want to see? There’s nothing to see!” Selena’s face was so red that the blush spread to the tips of her ears. Her pulse quickened; she felt as though her heart was about to burst out from her chest anytime soon. “Heh. Of course, there’s something to see!” Fane chuckled and ducked down, ready to plant a kiss onto her lips. “Hold up!” Yet he never expected Selena to yell for him to stop at this moment, extending her hand and clamping it over his mouth.

Chapter 553

“No way. You’re too cruel, dear, telling me to stop at this moment. Didn’t you promise me this after I’ve fulfilled the three things I had promised myself? Besides, the thing with the rich woman was a complete misunderstanding. We’ve proven that she’s a God of War—she’s my friend!” Fane was speechless for a moment. How could he hold his culminating desire in before such a beautiful woman—his wife, no less? He never thought that Selena would give a soft smile instead, her face right below his. “Idiot. I didn’t say that you couldn’t proceed. I just wanted to ask if you have a lot of scars on your body,” she said. “I heard that when a military man goes shirtless, scars line their entire body—their back, their chest. And it is shocking at first sight. It’s really not easy for you to survive after five years on the battlefield!” Fane was taken aback. “So you won’t like me if I have a lot of scars?” This was a serious question here. “Of course, I’ll still like you. I go along with whomever I marry, remember? And you’re my man. How could I not like you?” Selena sat up. She shyly pried the buttons on Fane’s shirt open. “I just want to take a look at the scars on your body. You must have gone through a lot on the battlefield. Whatever we suffer here is nothing compared to what you’ve gone through.” Fane never expected Selena to say such sweet, considerate words. His heart of iron melted immediately; an indescribable warmth spread throughout him. “Idiot. I told myself that I had to live—for you, and for my mother!” He stroked his wife’s head, his eyes filled with gentleness. At last, the final button on his shirt was undone. His abdomen was packed to the teeth with pure muscle; it lashed the eyes of anyone who saw it, and it emanated a frightening aura of violence. Selena was slightly surprised by the sight of his muscles; anxiety tightened its grip over her heart. However, surprise also flashed across her eyes. “No way. You don’t have a single scar on you?” After she said that, she pushed Fane’s shirt back and got him to turn around. “No way. There’s nothing on your back either! Are you that strong, dear? You’ve never suffered a single injury for all the five years you were on the battlefield?” She was extremely taken aback. She never thought that his

body would be completely devoid of scars. His skin was perfectly unmarred, and it shocked her to no end. Fane flashed a bitter smile. It was not that he had never gotten injured, but because he was very skillful in the medical area that his scars had gone a long time ago. However, he raised his right arm anyway. “See? There’s a scar here!” Indeed, there was a scar the size of a thumb on his underarm. “Why–why does this scar look so strange?” Selena was shocked after she saw that. That was because she noticed that the scar on his arm actually looked like an odd-shaped puzzle—as if it was an imprint of a fish scale that had dropped off. “Heh. That isn’t important!” Fane chuckled and pinned Selena onto the bed. “You’ve already taken my shirt off, dear. Should I help you with yours?” She was extremely embarrassed. She turned her head and stared to the side. “Pervert!” “Heh. Didn’t you make the first move?” Fane coughed for a bit, then lowered his lips to Selena’s.

Chapter 554

Selena was so anxious that she could die. Subconsciously, her heart was filled with anticipation. “Mmph!” At last, the two’s lips collided. She unconsciously wrapped her arms around Fane’s neck. Yet just as they were kissing each other passionately, a soft knock sounded from the door. Fane was stunned; his expression darkened. “Seriously? Who’s knocking? It’s past ten at night already.” Selena was also shocked. She sat upright in a flurry, readjusting her nightgown. “Go open the door and take a look. Don’t tell me that it’s Ma? Don’t tell me that she doesn’t want us to…” Fane was speechless for a moment. He pulled his shirt on and slowly walked over to the door to open it. He was about to burst into anger, but he did not see anyone when he opened the door. He ducked his head, and a pair of large, baleful eyes were staring at him in anticipation. His anger immediately dissipated. “Kylie, why aren’t you asleep?” Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry. He never expected that the culprit would be his own daughter. She peered inward, then she spoke in a pitiful tone, “I want to sleep with

Mom. Or else, I can't fall asleep!" Selena also never thought that their daughter would be the one knocking. She was just as speechless as Fane was. It had not been easy for them to have this moment, and it was just… She also walked over, crouching down. "Kylie, you're already four years old now," she said. "You'll be five in a few months. You're a big girl, right? You'll have to learn how to sleep alone." Here, Selena added with a gentle expression. "Besides, your friends will laugh at you if you keep sleeping together with adults. Understand?" Kylie pouted, as though she were being suppressed. After she thought about it, she spoke in a miserable tone, "Mom, just one more night please. I'll sleep alone tomorrow, all right?" "O–okay. You'll sleep alone tomorrow, and I'll go over to tell you bedtime stories. Okay?" Selena promised as she looked at her daughter. "Okay!" Kylie nodded her head happily. Then she looked at Fane, slightly frightened, "Dad, can I sleep with you two?" He did not know whether to laugh or cry. His daughter's countenance just straight-up melted his heart. How could he not agree? Anyway, the fire from just now had been put out by her just like that. He did not have any intention to pick it up again. Very soon, the three fell asleep just like that. The next morning, Xena told Ben that she was going out shopping with a few of her friends after they finished their breakfast. She left the house. Ben did not think too much about it. She did not usually bring him along when she went shopping, so he was used to it. Who knew that Xena drove to a hotel instead. She went up and entered a room.

Chapter 555

"I miss you so much, Babe!" Ivan pulled Xena in as soon as she stepped through the door; he quickly locked it behind them. "What are you doing? It's so early in the morning!" Xena pushed Ivan away. "What happened last night?" she said, expression hard. "I already rejected your first call. It's obvious that I wasn't in a good place to talk to you. And yet you called me again?" Ivan stepped forward and embraced her from behind. "I was thinking of you, and I just wanted to invite you over for some wine. I only

realized after you didn’t pick up the second call.” Here, Ivan asked curiously, “Tell me, what was going on last night? Why couldn’t you take my call?” “We were eating outside when you called. The entire family was there! “And Fane must have a sixth sense or something. He immediately felt that something was off just because I rejected your first call. He asked why I rejected the call, and I told him that it was just another harassing phone call from all those property agents. And then he wanted me to let him see the caller. I was so mad!” Xena huffed angrily, “If I was any slower and didn’t rile myself up, and if Ben didn’t believe me, I would have been caught!” “F*ck. That fellow is really a tough one to crack. How’s he so sharp!” Ivan curled his fingers into a fist. He thought about it and said, “Seems like we have to get rid of him as soon as possible!” “Are we ready to make a move? I also think that there’s a good chance that he’ll find out about us if it goes on like this. We should act fast. Besides, I’ve been faithfully accompanying Ben at home for the past few days, and I’ve been playing the role of a dutiful girlfriend. Their attitudes toward me seem to have changed too. Aside from that man suspecting me last night, of course!” After Xena said that, she spoke to Ivan again. “Don’t forget, Ivan. I’m going to leave Ben after I’ve given Fane the medicine, and I’ll be with you. You told me that you’ll declare that I’m your girlfriend in front of the entire Taylor family!” “Hah. Don’t worry. I’ve been waiting for this day for so long!” Ivan laughed and roved his hands around her waist. “Besides, I’m anticipating the miserable expression on Ben’s face when he knows that you’re my girlfriend. He’s such a loser. Haha!” “Really? Good. I’m still scared that you won’t want me anymore after you’re done using me!” Xena suddenly acted coquettishly around him, then she twisted her body backward and pressed it against his. “Oh, right. Xena, you have to tell me what they’ve been doing lately. If Sharon is visiting Fane, for instance, or Young Master Wilson is looking for him to take revenge. Or if other Kings of War or military bigshots are looking for him. Tell me everything, okay?” Ivan gave Xena a vehement kiss. “Don’t worry. So long as Fane dies, not

only will I announce you as my girlfriend, but I'll also organize a grand wedding," he reminded her. "How about that? And I'll take you to the Maldives for our honeymoon. Hah!" "Really? That sounds awesome. I love you so much, dear husband!" Xena leaped excitedly when she heard that. She wrapped her arms around Ivan's neck and gave him a vehement kiss. "Heh. You're already calling me husband? Good, good!" Ivan chuckled and carried Xena toward the bed. Xena was a money-faced person to the core, but she had a pretty good body. However, Ivan had thought about it long ago, that he would find himself seven or eight mistresses after he was married. The prospect seemed doable. A woman like Xena would be appeased so long as he gave her money. She would not care if he had affairs later on.

Chapter 556

Xena, who had just been flung onto the bed, seemed to suddenly think of something when she heard the word 'honeymoon'. "Right, hold on, Ivan," she said abruptly. "There's really something that I have to tell you first!" "Yes?" Ivan was stunned. "Don't tell me it's something to do with Fane?" "That's right. He said that he would give Selena a surprise on her birthday. He even said that he's going to organize a birthday party that will send waves throughout the entire city!" Xena added, "It's something that you should know, isn't it?" "That's right. It's only a month till Selena's birthday. I would have forgotten all about it if you hadn't reminded me!" Ivan sat on the edge of the bed, frowning. "Fane really loves boasting, doesn't he? Send waves throughout the entire city? Middle Province is huge and he wants to host a birthday party for Selena that will send waves throughout the city? He must be joking. He'll need to spend a couple of billion bucks if he really wants to send waves throughout the city." "Heh. He's definitely exaggerating!" Xena chuckled. "Alright. See if you can find an opportunity to get Fane to take the medicine either tomorrow or the day after, then we'll see. Who knows, maybe Selena's birthday will be Fane's funeral day? Hah.

I’m really looking forward to it!” Ivan laughed, and then he pinned Xena onto the bed, unable to hold it in any longer. … “Haven’t you felt that your girlfriend has been acting weird lately, Ben?” Selena walked over after she noticed Ben in the garden all alone, idly playing with his phone. She spoke after she thought for a while. “What do you mean? Isn’t she the same as always?” Ben answered carelessly as he swiped on his phone. “How can you be such an idiot? You’ve been together for so long, but she’s never let you touch her once?” Selena rolled her eyes at her brother as she asked the question. Ben finally put his phone down. “Why are you so concerned about this anyway, Sis?” he said impatiently. “Although Xena usually wears sexy and trendy outfits, she’s a conservative girl on the inside. Don’t just assume that she’s an ABG because she has tattoos on her. She’s not!” Selena was at a loss for words. “Then you’re saying that she never lets you touch her?” she pressed on anyway. “You’ve were not together for just a year. It’s been, two, three years already.” Ben shrugged his shoulders. “So what? She told me that she’ll only give herself to me on the wedding night. It’s so hard to find women like this nowadays. Right?” After he said that, he stared at her sister. “Sis, I think you have a serious bias against her!” he said. Selena was seriously speechless now. Her brother had been completely cuckolded. Never mind that he did not know about his girlfriend’s affair—he even defended her reputation. Ben picked his phone up and started a new round of the game he was playing. Selena snatched it from him. “What are you doing, Sis?” Ben was a little angry. He had just started getting into the game but Selena snatched his phone away just like that. He probably would have whacked her if she weren’t his older sister. “Don’t keep playing. Your brain will be even emptier than it already is if you continue like this.” Selena glared at her loser of a brother. “I really wanted to tell you this earlier, that Xena had some sort of relationship with a rich guy from that motor robbers’ gang,” she said. “I’ve seen them hugging once. But I heard that the entire gang has been wiped out now.”

Chapter 557

“No way!” Ben frowned and shook his head. “You must be joking, Sis. She’s not that kind of person. She’s probably just playing around even if she hugged someone. That isn’t hugging. That’s just messing around.” Selena almost wanted to faint from frustration. “Do you really think I’m that stupid, Ben? That I can’t tell the difference between a hug and just plain fooling around?” “What proof do you have? Why don’t you show me pictures?” She never thought that Ben would be even angrier instead. “Don’t speak about Xena like that if you don’t have any proof. Do you think that I don’t know her after being with her for so long? Do you know her better than I do? You’re just like Fane. You don’t like her, so you’re trying to find ways to harm her. Besides, you said it yourself—the motor robbers are dead. I don’t care about her past.” Selena clenched her teeth in rage. “You’ve disappointed me, Ben. You’re just like Wu Dalang—but you’re even denser than he is!” “What do you mean I’m dense? Aren’t you spewing nonsense, since you have no proof?” Ben furiously thrust his hand forward. “Give my phone back. I still want to play. I can’t abandon my teammates!” “Ah!” Selena was so angry that she picked a rock up from the ground, dropped the phone, and smashed the rock straight onto its screen. “You–you broke my phone. It’s an Apple…” Ben was extremely angry. He stepped forward and fisted Selena’s collar. With his other hand, he formed a fist, ready to punch her. “Hit me. Hit me if you have the guts.” Selena’s eyes reddened. She glared at her brother. She did not want him to be fooled by Xena any longer. “If you dare hit your sister, Ben, I’ll make you regret that decision for the rest of your life!” Fane spoke coldly as he observed from a distance. He took deliberate steps toward them. “You’re a man, but you still don’t know the numerous times you’ve been cuckolded already. And now your sister is trying to help you, but you want to hit her?” Ben only released his sister when he heard all this. Then he shot a vicious glare at Fane. “Heh. Do you have any evidence then, Fane? I won’t forgive you if you speak any

nonsense!” “You want proof? Fine. I’ll find proof. I’m telling you now, that I’ll make sure you see the proof for yourself one day!” Fane chuckled as he spoke. “Alright then. I’ll give you one month. Within one month, before my sister’s birthday, get me the proof. And if you don’t, what will happen?” Ben glared at Fane and gritted his teeth as he spoke. His eyes were red at the corners. “Of course! You can do whatever you like to me if I can’t get the evidence. And I’ll give you 50 million bucks!” Fane also had a serious expression. “But if I manage to get the evidence and catch her with another man, will you let me do whatever I like with her? Including killing her?” “Fine by me!” Ben took a deep inhale of breath. “I’ll kill her myself if you can prove that she’s cuckolded me!” he said. “No need for you to do it!” “All right. I’ll truly acknowledge you as a man then!” Fane nodded his head. He needed to hear that from Ben.

Chapter 558

“Think about it seriously, Ben. Has she been acting weird lately? She didn’t even dare to pick up that call from last night. Do you think it’s a harassing phone call from a property agency? I think there’s something suspicious going on! “Secondly, she’s been buying quite a few branded bags lately. They must be worth at least ten thousand each, and her clothes are pretty expensive too—and she’s bought quite a few of them. She didn’t do this before.” Selena took a step forward. “You really want to get married to her, and you’re serious about it,” she told Ben earnestly. “But remember how she mumbled and twisted her words last night when you said you wanted to get married sooner? She didn’t seem the least bit happy to me. I suspect that she has another man outside.” “I don’t care. I need proof. You two will just be slandering her without it!” Ben was extremely angry. He picked his phone up. “I just bought this phone. It was worth a few thousand bucks!” “Here’s seven or eight thousand. Go ahead and buy a new phone. But don’t breathe a word about how we suspect her, alright? And you have to cooperate with us when we tell you too! That’s how we’re going to get the

evidence!" Fane took out a wad of cash from his wallet and thrust it toward Ben after he thought about it. "Don't worry. I believe that you'll never find proof!" Ben flashed a frosty smile and walked off after taking the money. "Jeez. Seems like your brother really is head over heels for that woman!" Fane released a sigh, feeling helpless. He really did not expect that Ben would almost punch Selena for Xena's sake when the former was his own sister. "I've always felt that nothing good could come out of her, but I never had the guts to say it out loud. I kept hinting it toward my brother, but unfortunately, he never took it seriously." Selena also sighed. "I really hope that we can find out the man that Xena is seeing this time. My brother will have his heart completely broken then. He's pretty good-looking, and it won't be hard for him to find a nice girl, considering how our family is now!" "Mmhmm. We have to weed him out. That woman is really a b*tch. She's so daring and venomous! And she's cunning. Your parents are practically eating out of her hand." Fane nodded his head and checked the time. "Let's go, dear. It's getting late. We have to go to work!" "Okay!" Selena nodded her head. The two quickly got into the car and drove to work. At that moment, Young Master Wilson was at the Wilson family's residence. There was an IV drip beside him that was pumping fluids into him. The more he thought about it, the more tortured he felt. He had finally woken up. However, he had to take a lot of antibiotics. Yet his face was still as swollen as a pig's. It seemed that he would remain this way for a while. Master Wilson was so furious that he clenched his fists, watching his son's face streaked with tears. "My son has never suffered like this before. Fane really has got some guts. Did he really think that I won't dare to retaliate just because he's good friends with a God of War? I'll definitely hire a hitman to assassinate him in the future." The caretaker beside him nodded his head as well. "You're right, sir. It's more reliable to hire an assassin. They can be trusted to keep their mouths shut. The God of War won't be able to find anything even if they try to investigate Fane's death. Besides, I hear that he's only a head commander. We don't know if he's lying, but he

can’t even show his token, so we can’t believe him. A God of War might not even conduct an investigation for someone the likes of him!” David bobbed his head. “The Goddess of War doesn’t owe him anything anymore, after all, she’s paid her debt. But we should hire an assassin just to be safe!” “Then when is a good time to hire one?” The caretaker asked. “We’ll wait. We’ll see after a few days. Let’s just wait for my son to get better first.” David looked at his son and walked over to the bedside, pulling a chair and sitting down. He took his son’s hand. “Don’t worry, my son. You won’t have suffered all those slaps for nothing. I’ll make sure that b*stard pays with his life.” “Sob. Dad…” Michael cried again.

Chapter 559

At that moment, Fane had already arrived at the Drake family’s residence. Never in his wildest dreams would he imagine that he would see Sharon as soon as he walked into the living room, sitting together with Tanya and Yvonne. His head began to split at the sight of the young woman. “Why are you here?” Fane felt helpless when he saw her. “Heh. Why can’t I be here? I’m here to see Miss Tanya. The three of us are good friends now.” Sharon chuckled. “We’ve been waiting for you for a long time now. The three of us are just about to go shopping. Let’s go. We won’t need a lot of bodyguards if we bring you along. We only need you!” Miss Tanya spoke after she thought about it, “I think we should bring a few along anyway, though we don’t have to bring that many. After all, Fane alone might not be able to carry all our bags if the three of us are going to buy things.” “Heh. Don’t tell me that you’re scared of tiring him out, Tanya. So that’s why you want to get a few more bodyguards to come along?” She never thought that Sharon would chuckle as she joked, “He’s my man. Don’t you dare fight over him with me. If you do, I’ll still be the second wife, and you the third. You’ll have to get in line!” After she said that, her eyes snapped toward Yvonne to the side. “If you’re thinking of fighting over him as well, Yvonne, you’ll have to be number four!” “Who’s fighting over what with you? Don’t

spew such nonsense!” Tanya’s face reddened. “That’s right. Don’t speak nonsense. I’ll never like a pervert like him!” A light blush also stained Yvonne’s face. She felt extremely uncomfortable. “Don’t worry. I won’t like either one of you!” Fane interjected in a serious tone, “Let’s go since all of you want to go shopping!” “You…” The three beauties were extremely angry. They were coveted beauties by plenty of men. Who knew that this bodyguard would actually disregard them so easily? It was so frustrating. “Let’s go now!” Tanya did not know why she was unhappy. She did not know if it was because she was held in such low esteem, or because Fane stamped out all of their hopes. The four quickly left and called for a few bodyguards along the way. They all went shopping together. After shopping for a while, a group of people quickly arrived at the plaza. No one expected a middle-aged man to walk over deliberately, a mildly murderous intent sparking in his eyes. He went straight to Fane. Fane immediately stopped and looked at the other man. The man also quickly stopped. “Listen here, punk, do you dare to go to an abandoned construction site at Horizon Street tomorrow?” he told Fane. “I’ll be waiting for you there!” “Why should I go?” Fane knew from a glance that this was no ordinary man before him. However, he had never seen this person before. “Heh. Because I’m going to kill you. Be there by nine in the morning tomorrow. Don’t blame me for doing anything to your family if you don’t get there!” The man chuckled. He wheeled around and was about to leave. “I believe that you’ll go,” he said. “Otherwise, I can’t guarantee the safety of your wife, your parents-in-law, your mother, and your daughter!”

Chapter 560

“Who’s that? He seems really strong from the looks of him. He’s really got a powerful aura!” Yvonne could not help but say as she watched the man walk away. This was the feeling the man gave her, and it was very obvious. “Who cares? He’s basically challenging me, so he’s a true man, no matter what. Since he bothered to say all that, I’ve no choice but to go tomorrow!”

Fane gave a wan smile. “I believe that I’ll find out why he wants to kill me if I go tomorrow!” “You seem really calm about this. Aren’t you afraid that he’s super strong?” Tanya was a little worried. She added after she thought about it, “Why don’t I get Harvey and Kyle to go along with you, and they’ll bring a few men as well. It’ll be safer that way.” She never thought that Fane would still wear his nonchalant, careless expression. “Anyway, your bodyguards won’t be much use there if I can’t take him on. They’ll just be there as fodder!” Indeed, he was probably considered the strongest person within Cathysia’s troops. If he could not take the man on, then Harvey and the others might as well be serving their heads on a platter if they went. When she heard this, Tanya only just recalled the unforgettable scene she had witnessed that night—when Fane had obliterated the three hundred men from the Eagle Clan all alone. It was useless to send Harvey and the others along if even that monstrous strength was not enough to defeat that man. “Just be careful, all right? I’m scared you can’t beat him. If you can’t, just run away. It’s better than dying!” Sharon was worried as well. “Run away?” Fane was stunned. “You’re thinking too much about it,” he said, a cold smile on his lips. “Let’s go in and shop. I’ll be sure to completely destroy him if he has a death wish!” “You’re really confident, aren’t you?” Yvonne flashed a bitter smile. “You’d be confident too, if you had the strength!” Fane took out a cigarette and lit it, taking a long drag out of it. He went into the mall with the beauties around him. “Heh. I have no intention of stepping in, Boss, but I do want to spectate. Can I? He’s definitely no match for you, with you being so strong. I want to see your true strength!” Harvey chuckled as he spoke, trailing after Fane. “What do you want to spectate for? Just do your own work properly.” Fane spoke as he gave a rueful smile. Zain went back to the guest house again after he declared the challenge to Fane. “I’ve challenged him. I’ll be waiting for him at the abandoned construction site at Horizon Street at nine o’ clock tomorrow!” He spoke lazily as he plopped onto the bed, a light smile curling his lips. Quil’s expression morphed into surprise when he heard that. “Huh? You–you’re challenging him earlier than

planned? Idiot! What if he doesn't come? After all, anyone would be afraid of dying. What will you do if he doesn't come?"

Chapter 561

"Doesn't come?" Zain sneered frostily. "He will definitely come. I told him that if he doesn't, he has to bid his dear wife and daughter, Adieu. But, I said this just to frighten him. I'm a peculiar person; Fane is the one I want to kill, I don't even care to harm his family. I will kill him to avenge my master!" "You, you're so stupid! Your words will scare him away and he might take his family and flee! They'll leave this f*cking Middle province without us knowing! And it'll fiendishly toilsome for you to dig him out!" Quil felt a flash of irritation that he aggressively paced back and forth. "Didn't I tell you before, to find an opportunity to slit his throat? You are a marshal for god sake! If you assassinate him, he will be dead already, and wouldn't this be the best scenario? If you could just kill him without him knowing it, that would be great!" Zain, out of everyone's expectation, flashed a disdained smile, and jeered, "Young Master Xenos, that is your suggestion and I'm not obliged to take it, right? I'm a marshal, if I want a head commander's life, do I have to do it in secret? This is not what a gentleman is supposed to do! Any fight between men should be done upright and reputable! I prefer it this way." "I…" Quil was at loss for words and his face darkened. "But you shouldn't let him know one day before the fight! Don't you think you're giving him a chance to flee the city?" "Haha, don't you worry about that. I can sense that Fane is not that kind of person. He should be quite strong and powerful. That's why when I challenged him to a fight, he didn't show any hint of fear or nervousness at all!" Zain chuckled and continued, "Besides, he loves his family dearly, so naturally he doesn't want his family to live a hide-and-seek life and constantly in fear, right? Moreover, don't ever look down on a marshal's capability. Even if Fane takes his family and flees, they have nowhere to hide. And is it really good for them to live a fearful life forever?" Zain paused for a moment, then only

spilled his words confidently, “Therefore, I believe, he will come to the battle tomorrow!” Quin breathed a sigh of relief in his heart upon hearing Zain’s assertive statements. “Alright then, if this is what you said. I hope he attends the challenge tomorrow, otherwise, you have to chase after him around the world and dig him out no matter what!” Quil soon left the scene. After a moment of pondering, he sent several bodyguards to stand guard near Fane’s villa, fearing that Fane would bring his family and flee the city. As long as Fane’s family did not leave the city, he believed that Fane would definitely not escape too! Early the next morning, Selena left to work in a car. After her car left the villa, an Audi sneaked up, tailing her. Xena and Fiona, on the other hand, happily prepared themselves and went shopping right after Selena left for work. However, they did not expect that they would be surrounded by Quil’s bodyguards when they stepped out from the main gate of the villa. “What are you doing?” Xena was so frightened when she noticed the evil grins and devilish smirks on these bodyguards’ faces. “Hey, what are you trying to do? Don’t you dare touch us! Let me tell you, my son-in-law is very strong and powerful! And, he—he is a friend of the Goddess of War! Those kings of war and some military bigshots are his buddies too! Fiona was even more frightened that she hid behind Xena in fear. Xena was afraid as well, she then moved and hid behind Fiona, “What do we want? Well. Our young master is interested in this woman. So we just want to invite her to have fun together!” One of the bodyguards lampooned coldly. The heavy boulder inside Fiona’s heart was immediately lifted when she heard the target was Xena instead of her. However, Xena was her future daughter-in-law after all. She paused for some thoughts and then opened her mouth, “Gentlemen, let her go, could you? She is plain-looking and has no outstanding personalities as well! Don’t your young master like pretty women? I’ll pay you money, ten thousand, and you take this money and find some other women for your young master, how about that? Ten thousand can find him several women!”

Chapter 562

“Yes, she is right! Gentlemen, please let me go. I’m not attractive at all and superordinary! I will give you another ten thousand bucks. Use her ten thousand bucks to find some good-looking women for your young master, and use mine to buy yourselves some good wine, is that good enough?” Standing in front of these strong and robust men, Xena was of course, afraid. She immediately took out her purse, ready to pay them the ten thousand bucks. “Heh! Money? We didn’t come for money today!” Another bodyguard chimed in, with a cunning smirk on his face. “Take both of them away!” “Wow, brother, hold up.” The first bodyguard stopped his way immediately. “You two, take out all the cash you have on you!” “Brother Octo, this is… You dare to oppose the young master’s order?” The other bodyguard exchanged glances with the bodyguard who was called Brother Octo. His face sank. Nevertheless, Brother Octo shut his ears at his words, stretched out his hand, and said to Fiona and Xena, “Hurry up! So f*cking slow!” The two woman’s spirits were immediately lightened and hastily took out all the cash they had on them and then handed it to Brother Octo. “Wow! Not bad. There are around seventy to eighty thousand bucks. You two carry a lot of cash on you, don’t you?” When the cash was in his hands, he let out a burst of ungodly laughter. “Then—then, can we leave now? Thank you, Brother Octo! Thank you for letting us go!” Fiona flashed them a warm yet nervous smile and grabbed Xena’s hand, preparing to leave the scene. “Wait a minute!” Brother Octo breathed out a cold and disdain laughter. He stopped them from taking another step to leave. “Well, I never said I would let you go. You were so nice and generous to give me money, why should I reject your kindness, right? Haha!” “You’re right, Brother Octo. We’re taking them away anyway. And since they are rich and offered us the money, why shouldn’t we take it? Haha!” The realization only hit the other bodyguard’s face after hearing Brother Octo’s words. He admired Brother Octo more right now, how could he be so smart and bright? “You—

you guys, shameless b*stard! How could you go back on your words!" Xena was burning with anger. She gave them money but yet they did not intend to let them go! "Hehe! Going back on my words? What is there to go back when I never promised you anything?" The man chuckled and scanned through their body again. "Well, I almost missed out on this little thing. The jade bracelet on your wrist, the gold necklace around your neck, oh, and that watch too! Don't you think they're lovely? Take them off now!" "You—You, dream on! Let me warn you, you'd better let us go, otherwise, when my son-in-law comes, you won't be leaving here in one piece. You'll be crippled! He is very strong and powerful! You're as good as dead when he arrives!" Fiona was so terrified that she stumbled a few steps backward. Those pieces of jewelry and accessories on her were not only a few, every piece of them would cost somebody an arm and a leg. They were a lot more valuable than cash. "You're funny, aren't you? Don't worry. Your dear son-in-law is dead meat now that he offended our young master!" Brother Octo let out another chuckle and then he continued, "Hurry up and take them off! If I don't see them on the floor in the next minute, I can't promise what will happen to your pretty faces. Bruises and cuts seem like excellent accessories to put on your faces, right?"

Chapter 563

"Yeah! Take them off quickly! Otherwise, I will cut your faces!" Another bodyguard flashed out a dagger and sneered. "We-we'll take them off. Can you please let us go?" Fiona's legs were weakened when she saw the bodyguard took out a dagger. Although she was reluctant and unwilling to give them her inexpensive jewels, her life was way more important than these earthly materials. Besides, she considered herself lucky as the other party did not force her to go to a bank and withdraw all her money. "Do you think it's possible? Haha! Use your brain! Our young master's order can't be defied. He told us clearly that not only do we need to take this woman away, but also your daughter, Selena Taylor. Some of our men are tailing

her right now and she will be taken away before arriving at the office." Brother Octo chortled, "Our young master has his eyes fixated on these two pretty ladies. He is very fond of their alluring body and stunning face. He ordered us to take them to him and have fun with him!" "Ma, this is all because of Fane! That b*stard has surely offended some young master again! We're done for!" Xena was seething and her body trembled with anger. She was in this situation all because of that b*stard—Fane Woods! "They must be Young Master Clerk's men. Why must Fane offend all these young masters? I've been telling him to stay low and not to cause us any trouble! Look at his deed right now! We're so done!" Fiona handed the jewels to the other party, reluctantly. However, her eyes suddenly lit up as though she had thought of some good ideas. She proposed, "Dear Brother Octo, your Young Master has only given an order to take my daughter and Xena Jackson away, right? He didn't mention me, right? Look, I'm innocent, I did nothing wrong! I've given you all I have, so many jewels and so much money, can't you let me go?" "Do you mean we'll take this woman away and let you go?" Brother Octo did not see that coming. He was dumbstruck for a second before asking the question. "Yes! I'm so old. There's no need for you to take me away too, right?" Fiona showed a pitiful face. "Ma, how—how could you leave me?" Xena was tongue-tied. Was Fiona not being too much for leaving her alone in such a dangerous situation? "Xena, they came for you! I'm innocent and have nothing to do with it! Even if they take me with you, I have nothing to offer them; I have no value, right?" Fiona immediately countered. She cast Xena a few intentional blinks when the other party was not paying attention. Xena was not an idiot. She was able to catch Fiona's intention quickly—if they let go of Fiona, she would have the chance to go to Fane and ask for help. Otherwise, if they were all taken away, there was no way for Fane to find out about their situation. By the time Fane knew it, it might be too late. "Fine. You'd better let my mother go. She is not young anymore and her heart couldn't stand any more scares! You guys might have frightened her

to death before arriving at your young master's place, do you want that?" Xena gave some thoughts to the situation before saying that to those men. One of the bodyguards was hesitant; he pulled Brother Octo aside and whispered to him, "Brother Octo, what now? Should we let that woman go? After all, the young master has only ordered us to bring Selena and Xena back to his place. These two chicks are truly some fine gems. Our young master has good taste, doesn't he? Nonetheless, Brother Octo shook his head. "No, Fane will go to the battle and he will die, undoubtedly. By that time, our young master would have been done playing with Selena and Xena. And do you think he will leave them alive and let them go to the Goddess of War? He will kill them to shut their mouth! Otherwise, they will seek help from the Goddess of War and take revenge, by then we're doomed!" He paused for a moment, turned his head toward Fiona, and continued, "So, Fane's mother-in-law must be taken away too! As long as our young master is no fool, he will not let this old hag live as well. It would be real trouble for him if he let her live. A dead man will never spill any secrets, right? She has bad luck, to be walking together with Xena, not our fault." The bodyguard nodded to agree after listening to Brother Octo's analysis. "Brother Octo, you're such a thoughtful man! Take them away!" The two walked back to the crowd after finishing their discussion. Brother Octo waved his arm and commanded, "Take the both of them away! Fiona, blame it on yourself. Nobody asked you to walk with Xena!"

Chapter 564

"Don't, please don't, Brother Octo! I'm not in my 20s or 30s anymore and my heart is frail too! What if you frightened me to death?" Fiona's features crumpled at his words, and then she was so scared that she plopped onto the ground and started to throw tantrums. "Haha! It doesn't matter anyway! Do you think you still have a chance to survive after you're taken away?" One of the bodyguards approached Fiona and directly picked her up from the ground. The faint smell of perfume on Fiona's body entered his nose. He

became excited and his face full of enjoyment, “Hmmm. This old woman maintained her body well! She’s still in good shape! Most importantly, this chubby body type is exactly my cup of tea!” “Haha! Lori, are you fond of the old aunty type?” A young-looking bodyguard laughed aloud, battering with another mid-aged bodyguard as they pulled Xena into the car. “Hehe! Young men like you don’t understand this! A woman like her is more mature, and has more experience, right?” The bodyguard who had a peculiar taste in women was indeed quite old. He looked like he was in his 40s. He laughed and spoke, “A mature woman is definitely not our young master’s type. And later when the young master is having fun with these two young ladies, wouldn’t you be excited and drool over them as well?” After he ended his words, he slapped Fiona’s body hard and commented with a perverted smirk on his face, “When the fun time comes, I will taste this mature woman. It’s better than just standing aside and looking at the young master having fun!” “You b*stard! You jerk! My son-in-law knows the God of War! If you do this to me, you are planning your own funeral!” Fiona yelled and screamed, trying to fight her way out from their holds. However, she was merely a woman—she could not fight against the powerful strengths of those bodyguards with bulky builts. She was not able to free herself with her feeble arms. The bodyguards picked her up and strode to another car, where Xena was not in. “Wahaha! You should be grateful and feel fortunate that I have an eye on you! This way, you could still enjoy before you die! Haha!” The mid-aged bodyguard laughed sinisterly, and the hideous scar on his face made him appear even more devilish. “Don’t you worry? The God of War will definitely not know regarding today’s matter, and your dear son-in-law will die in front of you soon, too!” “Im—impossible! He is so powerful! Who are you guys?” Fiona was so afraid right now, and she was forcefully stuffed into the car with a bodyguard sitting on each side—she was sitting in the middle. There was no way for her to escape. “He is powerful? Huff! Don't be preoccupied with this. The person who wants his life is naturally even more powerful!” The mid-aged

man with a hideous scar on his face sneered mockingly after listening to Fiona's claim. His eyes then moved toward Fiona's fair and plump thighs, he could not help but swallow hard at what he saw. "Tsk tsk! Rich women like you are truly amazing. Your body is well maintained and looked about the same as those women in their 30s!" "Please don't do this, Mister. I'm very old and there are many wrinkles on my skin. I'm already in my 40s! Could you please let me go? Please, I beg you! I've given you all my money. Please let us go!" Fiona kept pleading in fear, her voice trembled uncontrollably. The most terrifying thing was that the other party's tone sounded like they will kill her to shut her mouth! The more Fiona dug into this, the more she believed that they were definitely afraid of the God of War. So naturally, they wanted to kill them to silence them. Otherwise, they would be digging the grave for themselves when Fiona or Xena went to the God of War. "Hehe, I don't think you're that old. Perhaps a few years older than me and I like it this way!" The man laughed loudly, "Just accept your fate and don't think about running away. Don't make any noise neither, otherwise, I will tear your clothes now and let everyone see! Haha!"

Chapter 565

Fiona's face blanched and unsightly upon hearing the mid-aged man's words. She shut her mouth tight and never spilled a word anymore. In the other car, Xena was frowning at the situation. At this moment, she was nothing but calm. After all, she was guarded by two big men on each side—she was sitting in the middle, and she knew that there was no way for her to escape and to fight back. She was now using every single brain cells of hers to think about what she should do in order to keep herself out of danger. She pondered for a minute and then finally opened her mouth, "Brother Octo, who's your young master? The b*stard Fane offended so many people and I seriously have no idea who he offended this time." She turned her head, facing Brother Octo. A cold scoff was released from Brother Octo's mouth. "You don't have to worry about this. You'll know when you arrive at his

place. I'm not obliged to tell you the truth, though you're going to die soon!" The corners of Xena's mouth twitched involuntarily. She cogitated for a second and then pried tentatively, "Brother Octo, isn't your young master from the Wilson family?" Xena felt that the mastermind was most likely Young Master Wilson. After all, he was slapped till he was unconscious by Ivan Taylor two days ago, and the act was commanded by Fane! Nobody could even recognize Young Master Wilson at that moment, as his face was as swollen as a pig's head. Therefore, it was natural for Young Master Wilson to hold this grudge against Fane, just that Xena did not expect the revenge to come so quick! "No, what Wilson family? Haha! Young Master Wilson is just a brat before our young master!" Of course, Brother Octo stepped into the trap that Xena set for him, and spilled out some information. Although this information did not reveal the identity of the mastermind, it did give Xena a heart attack. After all, the Wilson family was a second-class aristocratic family in Middle Province, and they were not far away from being a first-class aristocratic family! Such a powerful family was nothing compared to this mastermind? If this was really the case, Fane had really offended someone from a first-class aristocratic family this time! Xena's pallor turned unsightly and plain when she thought of it. When did the b*stard Fane offend a first-class aristocratic family? However, it seemed to be easier to guess now since it was a first-class family. There was a daughter of the White family, called Rue White, and she had a younger brother. But that younger brother of hers was too young, only thirteen years old or so. Hence, the possibility for Fane to offend the White family was near to zero. As for the George family, it was even more impossible! The George family had only one daughter, who was Sharon George. She loved Fane deeply and could not wait to marry him! How could she want to kill Fane? Therefore, the remaining possibility was the young masters from the Mont family and the Roy family—Grayson Mont and Robert Roy. Now, which of these two young masters did Fane offend? After thinking about the matter, she truly felt that Fane had probably offended Grayson from the Mont family. After

all, the head of Mont family and Grayson Mont both appeared at Old Master Taylor's birthday banquet, whereas the head of Roy family was the only representative from their family to attend the banquet. "Brother Octo, every injustice has its perpetrator and every debt has its debtor. It's Fane who offended your young master. You can't find a replacement, which is me, to take revenge, right?" "This, this is too unfair, isn't it?" Xena's anger grew deeper and deeper as she spoke. "If you really want to get revenge, find his wife! They're husband and wife, so it's reasonable to get Selena instead of me! I'm just a girlfriend of Fane's brother-in-law, not even a Taylor. How could you target an outsider?" "Heh! Stop whining! Our young master has seen you before and remembered your stunning body. Both you and Selena are beautiful and attractive. So it'd be better to get two instead of one, right?" Brother Octo let out a chortle; his hand was not idling—resting on Xena's lap. "If I were our young master, I would want both of you too! Haha!"

Chapter 566

Meanwhile, Selena was still on the road as she neared her workplace. Out of the blue, a black Audi intercepted her car and stopped her effectively. "Hey! Watch where you're going!" A flicker of irritation shot through her. She quickly unbuckled her seatbelt to get out of the car, her anger evident on her face. She then felt a sinking feeling the moment she stepped out of her car. She noted that there was another car parked right behind hers, and it effectively disabled her from reversing the car. Eight herculean men in black suits got off the cars and walked toward her, their faces passive and stoic. "What are you doing?" Selena was so terrified that her face began losing color. "Heh! What are we doing? Isn't it obvious? We're here to take you away!" One of the big men sneered. He eyed her sleazily, and an equally perverted grin appeared on his face. "Not bad! You're indeed the infamous 'Beauty Queen of Middle Province', and it does help that you're already married, which adds to your allure and charm. You make me want to taste

you too!" One of the men quickly interjected him as he commented, "She's the one Young Master had been eyeing, so hurry up and bring her to him! Don't mess up!" "Y—You get out of my sight! If you don't leave right now, I'll call the police!" Selena was so frightened that she could hear her heart thundering in her ears, abnormally and loudly so. She struggled to calm down and assess the situation. She then said, "My husband is strong and powerful! I'm telling you now that if you dare to touch a single strand of my hair, you won't get out of here in one piece when my husband comes!" "Hah! I wouldn't worry about that. Your husband's going to die today! Also, did you say you'd call the police? Heh! Do you think that'll help?" One of the big men teased with an evil grin on his face. "Besides, we won't give you any chance to call the police!" "Let her go!" A sharp and stern voice was heard in the air. A man stood not too far away from the commotion, and he walked toward them. "Marshal Dennis!" When the figure of Marshal Dennis came into Selena's sight, she heaved an internal sigh of relief. It only occurred to her then that he was their family bodyguard, and he promised Fane he would protect her and their family whenever he could from the shadows. "A war marshal?" The eight bodyguards exclaimed in unison. They nearly peed their pants when they recognized him. The eight of them combined would not even rival a major in the military. What more a marshal? As Marshal Dennis approached them, one of the men managed to hiss out in fear, "Sh*t! What now?" They were bodyguards of the Xenos family, each very skillful combatants. Had they been members serving the army, they would rank as assistant commanders. A few of them could be head commanders! Of course, they would never be able to compete against a major or marshal. "Don't be afraid!" One of them bravely stepped up with his head held high. "Hmph! This woman is pretty smart! She's trying to scare us away, huh? This man is no marshal! A marshal appeared out of nowhere just as we're about to take her? There's no such coincidence in the world! She's lying; that's what this is!" "Damn, sh*t! You're right! I almost got fooled!" Another facepalmed. "You reminded me of something. I heard

that the rascal was a head commander. Just a head commander, and you told me that a marshal is here to protect his wife? Be their bodyguard, nonetheless? Bullsh*t! If the so-called marshal came here by coincidence, this woman shouldn't be able to know his name!" "Yes, yes, yes! This woman emphasizes the word 'marshal' too! This is obviously to scare us! Why didn't she call that man Dennis instead of Marshal Dennis?" another chimed in as though the situation had been shifted to their favor. Dennis stopped right in front of them, snarled in an icy cold tone. "Who's your young master? How dare he order Miss Selena to be kidnapped!" He heaved an internal sigh of relief that he was free and came here today. Otherwise, he would never be able to face Fane if something happened to Selena.

Chapter 567

"Heh! Little brat, you don't deserve to know who our young master is!" One of the men stepped forward and snarled, "If you have a brain, you'd do well to scram this instant! Otherwise, don't blame my fists for taking your life!" "Your fists? I'm afraid that you won't be seeing them after this. She already said that I'm a marshal. How dare you act all cocky and almighty before me? Did Fish Leong[1] sing you her song 'Courage'?" came the scathing comment of Dennis. "If you tell me your young master's name right now, I might think of sparing your life. Otherwise, don't blame me for what's about to happen." "Oh, wow! You're some tough guy, aren't you? Let me try how hard your fists are then![footnoteRef:0]" [0:] The guy clenched his fist, prepared to swing his arm. "Brothers, let's beat this guy together and cripple him! Let him be nosy!" "Yeah! Don't waste time, let's do it together. Our young master is still waiting for this woman!" In a split second, all eight men charged toward Dennis with their arms lifted high. Boom! Bang! Pow! The eight of them dropped like flies to the ground. They were like carrots on the chopping board while Marshal Dennis was the chef, and chopped them mercilessly he did. Five of them were dead while two laid on the ground as they struggled to breathe, unable to move a muscle. Only one was

left alive; Dennis intentionally spared his life. Though injured, the man still managed to get up and stand not far away from Dennis. “I’ll only ask you one question: Who’s your young master? Who instigated you to kidnap Miss Selena? I’ll spare your life if you tell me everything!” Ruthless in the fight, Dennis spoke to the spared man with utter indifference as he walked toward him. As he closed in, he eliminated both men that laid on the ground still gasping for air. “Hmph! Not a chance! We’re faithful and loyal to our young master!” The last standing bodyguard paused for a few seconds before he took out a dagger and stabbed himself on his neck. Shink! The bodyguard fell to the ground, and his body twitched for a few seconds before he breathed his last. “He’s got guts!” Dennis commented dryly, his eyes glued onto the body on the ground. Selena immediately approached Dennis to express her utmost gratitude. “Thank you, Marshal Dennis! If it weren’t for you, I’d be in their hand right now!” “You’re welcome, Miss Selena. I’m your bodyguard, and I gave Fane my word to protect you. It’s only natural that I fulfil my duty! Fane saved me before, after all.” A warm smile was etched on Dennis’s face, and he then continued, “Your office isn’t far from here, so I’ll wait until you get it. Don’t worry about these bodies; I’ll find someone to handle it later, and I’ll have to visit your house after that. It does concern me that others could be in danger as well.” “Alright.” Selena nodded in agreement before she made her way back into her car and drove away. … In an abandoned building on Horizon Street, Quil Xenos was at ease as he rested. Behind him were almost a hundred bodyguards, standing still. All these bodyguards in black suits were skilled fighters, and they seemed zealous. “Marshal Zain, that day you told me that your only aim is to kill Fane, right? You wouldn’t care about other details, am I right?” Quil smirked devilishly. “You’re right. I only want Fane’s head, and I don’t give a sh*t about other things!” Zain’s eyes were ice-cold passive as though he just came out from an ice cave. He stood right there, waiting for Fane’s arrival.

Chapter 568

“Hehe! Great! As long as you don’t interfere with my business. Haha!” Quil cackled wickedly and added, “I’ll never forget that Fane killed my uncle. You kill him to avenge your master, and I’ll play with his woman to avenge my uncle!” “Hmph! It never occurred to me that the Xenos family’s young master would be such an immoral pimp. How could you bury your dirty deeds with such tactful and noble sayings?” came Zain’s jibe, his contempt blatant in his eyes. He was seeing Quil in a different light at that point; a bad one at that. “Someone who has studied at a university like you must think differently.” Quil guffawed once more. “A university? Ha! Do you mean the useless certificate that I’ve paid to get it? Well, I suppose that counts!” Quil’s grin widened as his mind began to wander, back to the ‘good old days’ in university. “Speaking of which, those university beauties or class beauties were good-looking and tasted good. I do miss the good ol’ days in school; life felt so free back then. The best thing was that I was always surrounded by a group of stunning women. Haha!” Zain could not be bothered with his university story. Such a guy was rubbish and scum in his eyes. His only objective and interest were to kill Fane. It was then when two cars drifted from the corner and halted outside the abandoned building. A few bodyguards in black suits came out of the car, with Fiona and Xena in tow, and they went into the building. Zain—who stood near the edge of the third floor—saw the group entering the building. When Brother Octo noticed Xena was about to open her mouth again, wanting to persuade these men to let her go, he shoved her aggressively and snapped, “Move your butts and stop talking!” Xena turned her head and faced Brother Octo pitifully; she did not want to take another step into the building. “Brothers, I—I’m not even a Taylor! You don’t have to kill me. I promise not to spill a word if you let me go! I promise I’ll leave Middle Province as soon as, and as far as possible! Please let me go, okay?” To Xena, it seemed as though they would not only be violated, but they could be silenced forever as well. She

knew these men would kill them so that they could not look for the Goddess of War and ask for her help. She knew this was to prevent the Goddess of War from helping Fane. The abandoned building before her was nothing but a huge tomb for them. She would not make it out alive once she stepped inside. Equally afraid to enter the building, Fiona began to plead as well as she turned to Brother Octo and whimpered, “Yes, Brothers, please let us go! I—I can leave Middle Province immediately too, and you won’t hear from me anymore!” “If your target is Fane, just kill him! It has nothing to do with my daughter and me! Please let us go!” Both of them were utterly terrified. Slap! Slap! Instead of mercy, they were smacked instead. “Jesus f*cking Christ! Women are so f*cking troublesome and always nag!” Brother Octo ranted. “I already told you that Fane has offended our young master, but killing Fane isn’t enough! Our young master has a clear order for us: He must have Selena Taylor and Xena to relieve his pent-up hatred!” Xena and Fiona no longer dared to open their mouths after they were slapped. They fearfully covered their face with their hands, not daring to make any noise. “Let’s move!” Some of the bodyguards pushed Xena and Fiona from behind, urging them to enter the building. They soon arrived at the third floor of the abandoned building. “It’s not Young Master Clark?” The skin between Fiona’s brows crinkled. She always thought that the person behind all these was Ken Clark. After all, Ken Clark had gone to their old house before and brought a bunch of men, yelling to demolish their house. He even brought along a marshal! Ken Clark was no simple man! Moreover, of all the young masters, only Ken had a close relationship with Selena and had known each other for the longest time. He should be the one who harbored the biggest hatred toward Fane. “Wait… What? It’s not Young Master Mont either?”

Chapter 569

Xena was taken aback, confused when she saw the man before them. She then recalled Brother Octo saying that even Young Master Wilson was a

mere underling to his young master. In other words, his young master must have had more power than the Wilson family; it meant that this person had to be from a first-class family! Still, the man standing before them was a total stranger! “Heh! You sure you brought your brain with you? I’m a young master from a prominent aristocratic family in Sky Dragon City!” Quil howled in laughter before he turned to Brother Octo. “Octito, why did you bring this wrinkly babushka here too?” Not waiting for Brother Octo to start speaking, Fiona quickly intervened, “Young Master, they got the wrong person. I’m not the one you’re looking for. Could you please let me go?” Brother Octo waited for a moment before he went before his master and explained, “Young Master, this woman is Fane’s mother-in-law. These two happened to be together when we went to kidnap Xena. It’s only logical we take them both, right? After all, what if she goes to the Goddess of War and looks for help?” Quil nodded, pleased with the explanation. “Good job, Octito! Hah! Since you’ve taken her here, we’ll kill them all together later!” Smiling, the bodyguard who had perverted thoughts about Fiona ran to Quil and asked, “Young Master, this woman isn’t that bad. She’s well-maintained and in good shape. Can we have this old grandma while you’re having your way with both Selena and Xena later? We’ll likely get excited, too!” “Haha! Of course! Tsk, tsk, tsk. I didn’t expect you to be fond of this type of woman!” Quil howled in laughter and turned to Fiona, who was shaking in terror. “Fane’s wife is the Beauty Queen of Middle Province, so it’s only natural his mother-in-law is good-looking as well,” he sleazily commented. “If this old woman is ten years younger, I might want to taste her too!” “Young Master, do you mean that you’re okay with it?” The bodyguard’s mood was boosted at the young master’s response. It looked like his wish would be granted. “Hah! Of course!” Quil chuckled wholeheartedly. “Hold your horses. We’ll wait until this old woman’s daughter is here, and then we can start. Haha!” “Hehe! Good idea!” The bodyguard grinned as though a perverted spirit possessed his body. He walked towards Fiona and caressed her cheek, clicking his tongue as he did

so. “Not bad! It feels so tender!” Spit! Fiona clenched her teeth angrily and spat on the man’s face. “*sshole!” “F*cking b*tch! Do you have a death wish?” Rage flowed through the bodyguard like hot lava. He grabbed her hair and pulled her toward him with an iron grip. “Aah!” Fiona cried out in pain, and the man finally loosened his grip. “You’d better stay put and keep your mouth shut! Hmph! Otherwise, I don’t mind ripping off your clothes and start doing you right now!” threatened the man. Brother Octo then frowned. “This is strange. Why isn’t Selena here yet?” he spoke. “Our men followed her right after she left the villa!” Quil looked at his watch as he spoke, “They should be here soon!” He thought that Fane should be arriving soon as well. “Heh! Later when Fane arrives, we’ll play his woman and his mother-in-law in front of him. He’d boil with so much anger, he’d vomit blood!”

Chapter 570

At this moment, Fane had arrived at an area not far from the ruined building. He took out a cigarette and smoked it before walking toward the building. “He’s here!” Zain, who stood near the edge of the third floor, watched as Fane approached. He chortled frostily, “Fane didn’t disappoint me at all. He’s a trustworthy person!” Once Fiona knew Fane was here, she—held between two bulky men—immediately shouted, “Fane, help! You good-for-nothing b*stard, how could you offend the people from Sky Dragon City? Why are you so slow? Hurry up and save us! We’re in this state because of you!” “Fane, it’s all your fault! If it weren’t for you, we wouldn’t be here!” Xena’s eyes reddened. It would be the worst thing on the earth for her to die here today. Truthfully, Xena might still be able to stomach reality if these men just wanted to violate her instead of killing her. She supposed she could blame it on her bad luck. However, the other party wanted to silence her for good! This amplified the fear in her heart 10 times more! Fane’s forehead creased when he heard Fiona’s voice, and his face darkened within a second. He lifted up his head and eyed the man on the third floor with the coldest

glare. He flickered the cigarette butt from his hand and began to run. Swoosh! Fane was akin to a lightning bolt—incredibly fast. Faster than anyone could blink, he arrived at the entrance. Stomping just once, he leaped to the height of three floors and landed just beside Zain. “What an incredible jump!” Zain’s eyebrows furrowed when he saw Fane landing on the third floor with just a stomp of his foot. He knew right away that Fane was no ordinary man. The heavy boulder inside Fane’s heart was lifted, and he sighed in relief when he saw both Fiona and Xena were unharmed. Nonetheless, his mind still ran rampant with rage. With hate and anger in his eyes, he glared at Zain. “You said it yourself yesterday that as long as I attended the challenge, you wouldn’t do anything to my family! I didn’t expect you to go back on your own word, being so untrustworthy!” Zain forced a wan smile and said, “I’m looking for you to avenge my master. I’m a man of his word.” He paused for a moment, turned his head toward Quil and his men, and then continued, “While I did make such a promise that I won’t harm your family, I also won’t intervene Young Master Xenos’s plans on your family. That’s on him, his decision.” “Wait, he jumped to get here?” Quil gulped when he thought of Fane’s ability to reach the third floor so fast. “How high is the third floor?” he asked his men. “How many of you can jump up here from the ground?” The men’s glum faces and silence answered Quil’s question for him. One of the bodyguards, with a solemn expression, stepped forward and spoke, “If it’s only two stories high, I can definitely do the same!” Quil’s face sank at his words. The one who spoke was one of the best combatants among the bodyguards. Quil did not expect Fane to be so powerful and strong. Nevertheless, he had a more powerful warrior here—Marshal Zain. With his skills and abilities, it would not be hard to send Fane six feet under! “Fane, hurry up and save us! These men not only kidnaped us both, but they’ve also sent someone after Selena!” Fiona wailed at Fane with tears brimming in her eyes. “Mother, don’t worry. I’m here now. You’ll be fine, and these bastards are as good as dead!” Fane’s expression remained frosty and dark as he glared at Quil. “Young

Master Xenos, I never expected that you were behind this!” “Bwahaha! Bastard, you’ve asked for it! If it wasn’t for you that day, my uncle wouldn’t have died!”

Chapter 571

Quil guffawed. “Marshall Zain Yorke is going to kill you to avenge his master. I, on the other hand, am going to enjoy toying with your woman to avenge my uncle. How does it sound? My revenge plan sounds good, right?” “Hmph. In your dreams!” Fane chuckled, though without humor in them. “You’ll surely be disappointed to know Selena won’t be kidnapped. I guarantee you that.” “Haha! You seem confident. Do you think my bodyguards are useless? Do you think that they can’t get one simple woman?” Quil started laughing out loud. Their exchange was then cut off when Fane’s phone rang. He looked at the caller ID and picked it up. Sure enough, it was Selena. He turned on the loudspeaker. “Honey, are you alright?” “Honey, I met a few men when I was on my way to work just now, and they wanted to kidnap me. They must’ve been bodyguards of some random young master. You have to be careful because they’re going to attack you!” replied Selena, anxious and fretting. “Luckily, Dennis rescued me just in time, and now I’m fine. I’m only worried about you, my mother, and the others. Are they alright?” “Daughter, Xena and I are kidnapped!” Fiona started yelling when she heard her daughter’s voice. The corners of Fane’s mouth twitched ever so slightly. Why did Fiona have to yell at this moment? Would that not just worry Selena? “How could this be? Fane, Mother, and Xena are kidnapped? Who did this?” Selena grew even more anxious. She only knew that this person was utterly horrible for kidnapping Fiona and Xena. Honestly, it was fine if they only kidnapped Xena; Selena would not even bat an eye if Xena died. Alas, her mother was also dragged into this mess, thus her worry worsened. “Honey, don’t worry about us,” Fane instantly spoke up in an attempt to comfort Selena, “just carry on! I’m here to protect them, and I’ve eliminated some of their men to save them

both. I'll call you after everything is settled here." "Alright... I'll be waiting for your call," Selena conceded. "You have to be careful!" "Did you hear her? My wife is fine." Fane grinned triumphantly the moment he hung up. "Sorry, but mission failed." Fane then turned to Fiona. "Don't worry, Mother, Selena's fine," he quickly assured her. "I'm coming over to save you right now!" "Alright, it's good that Selena is safe!" Fiona began to settle down when she heard that her daughter was fine. Her only concern at the moment was whether her son-in-law could save them. Although Fane had slain countless men before, Fiona had never seen him fight in person; she was usually absent when Fane had to fight. Of course, she had only seen Fane fighting some useless thugs. This was the cause of her worry. She feared that this would be Fane's suicide mission and was incapable of saving them. "Haha! So Selena wasn't captured? That's fine." Quil looked at Xena before walking over and pulled her to him. "This woman's not bad, so I'll toy with her instead!"

Chapter 572

Zain could barely stand Quil's behavior. "Take it to a place upstairs if you want to do anything; don't disturb me. I'll be here to settle this guy!" Quil laughed at what Marshal Yorke had to say. "Haha! Alright, I'll leave this guy to you, since he's just a commander. We're going upstairs to enjoy ourselves. Surely settling a mere commander is no hard job for you!" Quil and the others approached the stairs to the fourth floor while picking up Xena and Fiona. "Let go of me!" Xena screamed as she struggled vehemently. These f*cking bodyguards were no good people; they kept grabbing at her thighs as they brought her up the stairs. "Fane, save me! If it wasn't because of you, we wouldn't be kidnapped!" Fiona shrieked. "If anything happens to me, my daughter won't let you off the hook so easily!" "Go away, you b*stards! Go away!" Fiona was scared witless, her struggle never ceased as she was carried away. Her face turned pale from being terror-struck, and her hair was ruffled due to her struggling. "Don't worry,

I'll come soon!" Fane was slightly at ease when only two bodyguards remained at the entrance while the rest went up the stairs. Zain was a marshall, and if Xena and Fiona saw how effortlessly he could eliminate a marshall, they would be under the suspicion that he was a King of War. It would be tedious to explain that to them. On the contrary, it would be easier to explain things when they saw nothing. Zain looked at Fane indifferently as he commented, "Young man, you can't blame this on me. I only want to kill you to avenge my master!" "Haha! Your master is Magnus Sutherland, right? You want to avenge a piece of trash like him?" Fane chuckled, his fists raised as he adjusted his stance. "Since my mother-in-law and Xena are in danger, my only course of action is to finish you off and save them right after." "Really? How dare you act all cocky when you know I'm a marshal?" Zain smirked a malicious smirk, and there was a glimmer of pure malice in his eyes. "Young man, do you think that I'm a marshal because I bribed my way there? You're wrong. I'm already a marshal several years after I enlisted, and I earned that position with my punches. I'm not like those men who became marshals through good luck and relationship with others, or without any plausible skills!" Zain then ceased his rambling. He took one step forward and the distance of a few meters between him and Fane disappeared just like that. The next second, he was already in front of Fane. "That's speedy!" The two bodyguards left guarding the entrance inhaled sharply as they watched the fight unfold. Was this the true strength of a marshal? Such strength was downright terrifying. Zain balled his fist and dashed toward Fane in one swift movement. While it seemed as though it was an ordinary punch, the power behind it was a force not to be reckoned with. Moreover, it was very fast. Had any normal men be at the receiving end, they would have fallen in an instant. Zain believed Fane stood no chance against this sort of power. Yet, Fane made no move to—nor thought of—evade. He balled his own fists and threw one punch, his fist collided against Zain's. It was as though he had anticipated this attack. 'Oh, so he will stand and fight?' The thought crossed Zain's mind the moment Fane

threw his punch to fight back, and he was obviously taken aback. “That’s so fast!” Zain then began to feel fear. Fane should not have been able to intercept his fist with his own. He threw his punch later than Zain did, yet Fane’s punch zipped through the air and met his much faster. Bang! There was a dull, muffled noise and Zain flew backward. He knocked down a wall two or three meters away as he zipped through the air. These walls were solidified and very thick, despite looking rather normal. The strength of a normal person would never be able to knock the wall down.

Chapter 573

“Nngh!” Zain, luckily, was a strong and powerful marshal. With the immense strength he had developed in his heavily trained body, he managed to stand up once more. Nonetheless, the alarming impact he suffered had injured his body badly. When he stood up, his throat felt a gush of sweet liquid and he vomited blood. His face turned pale. “How is this possible?!” The two guards were expecting to see Fane beaten into a pulp. They were not, however, ready to see Zain flying through the air with just Fane’s punch, while he stood unharmed. It was as though nothing happened to Fane; he stood perfectly still. “I—Impossible! Aren’t y—you a commander?!” Zain shook his head, utterly shocked at the turnout of events. Fane had on a menacing smirk, and he rushed at Zain like a bolt of lightning. “This isn’t good!” Zain had raised one fist when Fane caught it. Fane’s other free hand grabbed onto his neck—effectively choking him—and he lifted him off of the ground in that hold. “Graahh!” Fane roared before smashing Zain against the floor with all his might. Bang! The sound echoed through the air and dust from the floor rose into clouds. Zain’s eyes went wide in fear as blood oozed from the back of his head. “Y—You’re not a commander... Who...who are you?” Zain spoke breathlessly. Kicking his legs weakly for the last time, he perished. Those two bodyguards looked at each other, turned around, and were about to run away. “Aah!” Fane then stood up, with two bricks at hand. He threw both bricks with such power,

and they bolted through the air before hitting the two guards at the back of their heads. Thump! Thump! Both bodyguards fell to the ground, dead. ... “What’s happening downstairs? You guys, go down and take a look!” Quil barked at his men when he heard the blood-curdling screams downstairs. He had just kissed Xena a few times and was about to take her clothes off. “Yes, Young Master.” Those bodyguards could only nod and walk toward the stairs, despite wanting to stay for the view. Thump! Thump! Just as they reached the stairs, two bricks slammed into their heads. They fell as they bled. “Young Master, t—this guy is coming up!” The bodyguards were extremely frightened when they saw Fane coming up. Was Marshal Zain Yorke not supposed to finish Fane off? Why was this man still alive and was able to pass them? “How’s that possible?!” Quil was just as taken aback. He never anticipated Fane would still be alive and would come up here. Bam! Bam! Bam! Fane bolted forward, punching one bodyguard after another, his might showcased in such a petrifying manner. His body reeked with murderous intent.

Chapter 574

At this moment, Fane was like a bulldozer. The bodyguards surrounded him one after another, but they dropped like flies. Everything happened too fast, and men were falling to the ground, dead. Some people almost had their hearts burst into pieces, while others had holes punched to their chest in an utterly gruesome manner. “That so-called Zain Yorke doesn’t have the fighting power as he so boldly claimed.” Fane strolled in an oddly relaxed manner, a grin on his face as he did. “He must’ve become a marshal because of his relationship with Magnus Sutherland!” “How’s this possible? This is very bad…!” Some of the bodyguards were so frightened that their legs started trembling. In a short period of time, only 20 to 30 of them were left. “F*ck… Could that be true?! That f*cking Zain was all conceited and pompous to me all the time, and here I thought he had what it takes. He even bragged that he could kill Fane quickly!” Fear crept onto Quil as he saw his

men dying before him. He immediately took out a gun and pointed it at Xena's head. "Don't move, young man. If you come any closer, I'll kill her!" Quil gritted his teeth and said. Fane immediately stopped walking. At this point, bodies of dead men were scattered all over the floor behind him. "Don't… Don't come any closer!" Xena waved her hands in fright as the gun was pointed to her head. She had hoped that she would be rescued, but she had no idea that this Young Master Xenos had a gun with him. It was then when a thought occurred to her; Fane was far capable and stronger. Back then, the son of the Dragon God clan's chief had a gun with him too, no? That man wanted to kill Fane, too, but that failed terribly. That in itself was proof of Fane's daunting prowess. However, the current situation was different. This time, the gun was not pointing to Fane… It was pointed at her! "F*ck. This guy managed to come up here!" Brother Octo was also frightened. He had already let go of Fiona, and Fiona was so frightened that she hid in a corner. She curled up and shivered, not wanting to see the event that was about to unfold. The last thing they expected was for Fane to advance again. "You… Stop right there! Aren't you afraid that I'll kill her?" When Quil saw Fane coming closer once more, his once settled-down heart began thumping in fear again. "Haha! She's told you before that she's an outsider to the family, right? She asserted before that she's not married into the Taylor family yet. She's not Ben's wife, so you can kill her if you want to. I'm fine with it!" Fane chuckled and stopped walking when he noticed a small pebble on the floor. He had no other way to do this as he wanted to kill these people, but he could not use ways that were overly against nature. This embarrassed Fane. He had to control his fighting abilities so Xena would not equate him to the strength of marshals or Kings of War. If he came off too strong, he would not be able to hide his identity anymore. Xena was so surprised that she immediately yelled at Fane, "Fane, what are you joking about? I'm about to marry Ben, and you don't want to save me?! Fine, you bastard! I see you have a grudge against me! You're still holding onto what happened last time, right?!" Fane merely laughed it off. "No

matter what, you're really an outsider!" He shrugged his shoulders, unfazed and uncaring. The corners of Quil's mouth slightly trembled. If that was the case, was the hostage in his arms useless? When she heard that Fane could not be bothered about Xena's fate, she immediately shrieked, "Fane, save her! She's the wife of your brother-in-law! How can you be so selfish?!"

Chapter 575

Momentarily stunned, Quil quickly recovered, and a smirk made its way on his face. "Yes, she's an outsider, but your mother-in-law isn't, right?" He shifted the aim from Xena and was about to point it at Fiona—who was by the corner—to get her walking to him. Fane had anticipated as much. Faster than anyone could blink, he kicked hard once he saw the other party move the gun away. The pebble he kicked zipped through the air shot Quil's hand that held onto the gun. "Ahh!" Quil felt a wave of extreme pain as though he was hit by a bullet, and his grip on the gun loosened by reflex. The aim shifted away from Fiona, but as the gun slipped from his hand, he accidentally pulled on the trigger. Bang! A gunshot was heard. The bullet shot Brother Octo at his chest, where his heart was. "Young Master…" Brother Octo's head lowered ever so slowly to see the wound; blood was oozing like water. The man then fell backward as he breathed his last, and eventually, his breath left him permanently. Everything happened so quickly, and in a split second the gun had fallen to the floor "Aah!" Quil knelt in pain as his grip on Xena loosened. Meanwhile, Fiona was met with the eyes of lifeless Brother Octo, who collapsed right next to her after the gunshot. Those void eyes, eyes that belonged to a dead man, made her faint. The gunshot would have hit her; there was not much distance between the two after all. "Aah!" Xena let out a hair-raising scream, scared witless at what was happening, and she ran to Fane. "Quickly, run!" Not many bodyguards were left. With their confidence lost due to what had happened, they abandoned Young Master Xenos as they turned to escape. Bang! Bang! Alas, Fane showed no mercy as he finished them off with just a few moves.

Only Quil, who was still kneeling on the floor, was left alive. Fane walked over, picked up the gun, and pointed it at Quil's head with a small smirk. "Ah!" Quil gritted his teeth as the pain slowly subsided. He looked up and discovered that none of his bodyguards were left alive while Fane had a gun to his head. "How… How dare you? Fane, I'm telling you now: You better let go of me or you're done!" Quil's voice trembled, and it was as though his tongue was frozen. "You know it yourself that the Sky Dragon City is very big, twice the size of Middle Province. Apart from that, it's one of the old cities where many masters and powerful people exist." Quil had no other plan to get away from this apart from threatening Fane. He might just survive with this. "The Xenos family is one of the biggest families among them—" Bang! Before he could finish speaking, Fane pulled the trigger callously. "Ah!" No matter how audacious Xena was, she was not able to stomach the view of Quil shot at the head. She was so frightened that her eyes rolled to the back of her head and fainted. Fane then looked at his surroundings, dumbfounded when he saw his mother-in-law and Xena fainted on the ground. 'Why did these two faint?'

Chapter 576

Fane was speechless when he saw the duo unconscious on the ground. He glanced at Xena, and the intent to kill was evident in his eyes. This woman would only bring problems for as long as she lived; now would be a good chance to end it all. He quickly dismissed the thoughts. His lips curled into a self-deprecating smile. If he killed an unarmed and unconscious woman, how different would he be from Quil and others like that? He was the Supreme Warrior, too. How could he take advantage of someone while they were defenseless? He would be the object of ridicule if others knew about that! Moreover, the agreement between him and Ben would never be resolved if he killed her, and Fane might never know who operated behind Xena. Furthermore, Ben could spiral into severe depression should she die. Ben loved and trusted Xena so much. What if Ben found it too much to cope

with? What if he took his own life after Xena died? The more he went over it, the more he came to terms that Xena had to live to see another day. Even if he wanted her dead, he had to wait for the day when Ben would see this woman's true colors. He could only sigh and say, "Nevermind." Once he walked to both unconscious women, Fane slung them over his shoulders and walked to the edge of the fourth floor. He then jumped down but landed lightly and safely on the ground floor. Fane walked outside without struggling nor breaking a sweat. Once he placed both women at the backseat, he started the engine of his car. He then entered the driver's seat and proceeded to drive straight to the family villa. Once he entered the compound, Fane recalled that he had something important to do. He instantly called Selena and informed her that everyone was safe and sound. Just as Fane hung up, Andrew came his way. "Hey, didn't they go shopping? What happened?" he worriedly asked as he was met with the sight of both passed-out women in the car. "It's okay. They just fainted because they were frightened. They'll wake up soon!" Fane smiled bitterly. He never thought that they were both cowards and would faint due to the fright. Fiona was the first to wake up; her eyes opened the moment Fane finished his sentence. Once she noted that she was in a car and that she was already home, she relaxed. "Oh my goodness. Am… Am I at home?" She looked at Xena, still unconscious by her side, and shook her. "Xena, are you alright? Why aren't you moving?" The tight smile was still on Fane's face. "She fainted because of fright like you." The events that had happened rushed into Fiona's mind at that instant, and she glared at Fane. "Everything happened because of you," she icily accused him. "I nearly got shot back there, and I would've died. Thankfully, that person missed his shot. Otherwise, I wouldn't have returned in one piece!" "What?! Fane, what actually happened?"

Chapter 577

When he heard what Fiona had to say, Andrew was staggered, thus he began to interrogate Fane. Xena slowly regained consciousness and was just as

unsettled as Fiona when she woke up. Still, she relaxed when she noted the familiar safe surroundings. “Oh my god, that was so scary! Did I faint? Are we back at home now? Where are those people?” “Don’t worry, those people are dead,” Fane assured them. “When I said that I can save you both, it meant that I was confident to go through that promise!” Fane paused for a moment before he added, “Luckily, that marshal wasn’t very powerful and strong. If not, it would have been difficult!” “It’s all your fault. When did you offend people from Sky Dragon City? The Young Master Xenos said that they were from a big family in Sky Dragon City, and that city is really huge!” Fiona got down from the car, face evidently worried still. “What should we do if his family comes here looking for us?” “Haha! Since they asked for a marshal to come fight me, it means that they’re unconfident and incapable. There’s no need to fret over this, everyone!” Fane laughed and continued saying, “How about this. Since we’re not short of money right now, let’s employ a few bodyguards. When Mother wants to go shopping in the future, have a few bodyguards by your side and it’ll be much safer. You won’t get kidnapped as easily again!” “This sounds good! We should have employed a few bodyguards early on. Employ a few extra ones!” Xena finally came down from the car, pleased with the idea that she could bring bodyguards whenever she would leave the house in the future. She wondered how many anxious eyes she would attract. “We’ll need a lot of money to employ bodyguards. One would take around ten to twenty thousand a month, and it’d be even more expensive if we employ a dozen bodyguards. Apart from that, we need to employ some workers to clean this place! Right now, we only have Jenny, and she has to send Kylie to school. Her alone wouldn’t be enough as this is such a big house!” After he went through his thoughts, Fiona then spoke to Fane, “I don’t care, you should pay for this. Didn’t you say that you’re a head commander? You should have two million in that case. You’ve only spent a million and two-hundred thousand up to this point, right? You should still have around eighty million, so you should pay the bodyguard’s salary!” “Oh, don’t worry about this,

Mother. I'll cover all the expenses. You can keep the money that I've given to you!" Fane smiled and continued saying, "By the way, I didn't foresee today's incident beforehand, so I'm sorry that this has frightened you." "Hmph! Was it only a fright that you gave me? Xena and I almost died from fright! I don't care; something like this shouldn't happen again. If not, I'll… I'll ask Selena to divorce you…!" Fiona was so angry as she crossed her arms at her chest. "If the marshal truly was a competent soldier, Xena and I would've died there!" "Mother, don't worry. The Xenos family definitely wouldn't come over to cause trouble again. They were asking for trouble when they pulled this stunt!" Fane nodded, and he silently agreed to a decision he made mentally. Fiona began to relax, slowly yet surely, before she remembered something. "Oh no, I… I need to go back." She slapped her thigh in contempt and was ready to leave. "Those people took my bracelets, cash, and watch. F*ck, I need to go get them back!" Fane felt uneasy about his mother-in-law's thought process. "Mother, that place must've been sealed off right now. Why do you want to go back? There are dead bodies all over that place. I'm afraid that you'll faint again if you go there!" Fiona was frightened when she heard this. Fane had a point. Would she not need to search for her money in the midst of those dead bodies? Would that be a bad omen? Would those people turn into ghosts and haunt her? She gulped when she thought about this. She turned around and had a bitter expression on her face. "I've really lost a lot today!"

Chapter 578

After careful deliberation, Fane then suggested, "How about this: You'll both receive a million that I'll transfer after this. Take this money to help you get over the shock. How does this sound?" The amount was nothing he would fret over. As long as Fiona stopped blaming him for today's incident, everything would be fine. As for Xena, Fane planned to act as though he had let go of their past incident and treat this woman as his family. This way, she might put down her guard and show her true colors. Today's

incident was his fault, after all. Fane never bothered about Quil after he had killed Magnus. He thought that side characters like Quil would not dare wreak havoc due to fear after Magnus, the person he looked up to, had died. Fane never anticipated this to backfire. Quil and the others did not know that it was him who killed Magnus, so they planned to wait for some time until everybody else forgot about Magnus' rape attempt before attacking him. He had to credit the other party; they were very smart. They had Magnus' apprentice seeking vengeance and wanting to kill Fane. Quil, unfortunately, took the wrong way to go about it. This man had planned to hurt Selena and Xena, and he even went as far as kidnapping Fiona as well. This only infuriated Fane. Had they only asked Marshal Zain for this task instead of Quil, Fane might have let it slide. He might not need to look into it or investigate who ordered Zain to attack him. "Sure! Thank you, Brother-in-law! That's very kind of you... Thank you for today!" Xena almost jumped in excitement when she heard this. This was one million, and it was no meager amount. Never did she think she would live to see the day when Fane would give her money. It seemed that Fane was at ease with her. After all, she had been discussing her marriage with Ben. Was Fane just joking the other night at dinner when he wanted to look at her cell-phone? Might she have been too nervous, overthought it, and misunderstood him? Fane smiled. "Give me your account, and I'll transfer it to you right away. After all, you were kidnapped today because of me. We'll be family someday, after all, once you marry Ben. If you ever need my help in the future, just tell me!" "Haha! Brother-in-law, you're so courteous. I'm sorry about what happened before as I—I've misunderstood you. Now that I think about it, you purposely said words that you 'didn't care about me' and that I was an 'outsider' when Young Master Xenos pointed the gun at me so that he'd shift the aim to Mother. You found the opportunity to intercept as the gun shifted aim, am I right?" Xena laughed. She pouted her delicate mouth to act affectionately sweet. "Brother-in-law, it seems like you've really gone through a lot of trouble!" "That's what happened? Still, we're lucky you're

much faster. Had you been slower, I would've been the one shot!" Fiona patted her chest and understood why Fane claimed that it was fine even if Xena was killed. This guy said this to purposely confuse the enemy. Fane quickly transferred a million to them both. With a smile on his face, he advised, "Mother, it's best if you guys don't go out today. Though I think it's safe, both of you were scared witless just now, so it's best if you rest well at home. I'll go to the personal security company and employ some bodyguards. You guys can wait till the bodyguards come this afternoon or tomorrow before going shopping!" "Of course! You're my good son-in-law, and Mother listens to whatever you say. Thank you for today. If it wasn't for you, Mother and Xena would've been hurt by those bastards!" "Sigh! It's so good to have a soldier as a son-in-law. Nothing's too dangerous when my son-in-law could rescue me no matter what!" Fiona smiled when she saw the notification text that a million was transferred into her account. The fear of death seemed to have evaporated into thin air. Instead, it was replaced with the joy of earning a fortune. "Thank you, Brother-in-law. What you said was right. We'll officially be family in the future, and we should get along!"

Chapter 579

The overjoyed Xena gave Fane a wide grin the moment she got the money. Andrew nodded in agreement. "It's great that nothing happened. What Fane said made sense, and we do need to employ some bodyguards and workers. Now that we're rather wealthy, our house might be the target of thieves and others if we don't have bodyguards!" Fane nodded. "Yes, Mother. You should go inside and take a rest. Your clothes are also dirty, so it's better that you take a bath and change into something else. I'll go out now to employ some bodyguards!" After talking to Fiona, Fane then left the residence and drove to a private security company. As there were many powerful forces, families, and rich men in Middle Province, so there were many private security companies. Fane drove around before he stopped at a

random area. There were two private security families here. One had eye-catching interior design with a big yard while the other one seemed rather quaint and ordinary-looking Fane decided and, of course, walked toward the yard with beautiful interior design without second thoughts. As he entered through the door, he was approached by a bald man that seemed to scrutinize him. “Are you here to interview as a bodyguard?” The bald man smiled coldly. “Queue there if you’re here for an interview!” Fane looked over to where this man pointed and saw the queue of men that lined up to register. “I’m not here to interview for a job. I’m here to employ some bodyguards,” Fane replied, an indifferent smile on his face as he met the man’s gaze. “You? How’s that possible?” That person sized Fane up once again and smugly replied, “I’m looking at you, and you don’t seem to be a person who can employ bodyguards. After all, you’re dressed so simply.” As he did not want to be bothered, he shifted the conversation. “Where’s your boss? I want to talk to your boss. A person who looks down at others like you isn’t qualified to waste my time here.” “Motherf*cker. How dare you talk to me like this?!” The bald man glared at Fane angrily. “Do you know who I am? I’m in charge of the safety here and the instructor here,” he chided. “A lot of bodyguards that I’ve trained found good jobs. Some of them went to the Clark family, and some went to the Wilson family. These are second-class aristocratic families.” Fane cackled at the man’s attempt to intimidate him. “Haha! This has nothing to do with me. I’m here to employ bodyguards!” Fane shrugged him off as he walked away and ignored the bald man. “Do you have a death wish? How dare you say that I look down on others and ignore me?!” The man was extremely angry. People that came here to employ bodyguards were normally rich people, and they would also give him some extra benefits when they knew he was the instructor here. This was so that he would choose better bodyguards for them. These rich people had money, but they lacked the knowledge and understanding in things like these. He never anticipated that Fane would fight back, despite wearing regular-looking clothes. With Fane’s back turned to him, the man stretched

out his arms and aimed for Fane's neck. With his palms shaped into a tiger claw-style of Kung Fu, he went for Fane's neck.

Chapter 580

The bald man was extraordinarily fast. Of course, it was only natural that a person who specialized in training bodyguards possessed such uncommon ability. He felt that he had to teach Fane a lesson, especially after disrespecting him in such a deplorable manner. It did not help that they had many onlookers who saw Fane disrespecting him. "Hmph!" came the sound of indignance as he aimed for Fane with his tiger claw-style palms. The bald man never saw it coming: Fane merely sidestepped to the left and, just like that, avoided the man's attack. The bald man was taken aback. "Impossible!" The bald man was surprised as his eyes widened like saucers. He quickly had the impression that he must have had a miscalculation. It was practically an ambush, and a rather fast attack at that. How did he avoid it without even turning back? Just as he was surprised about it, Fane walked two steps forward away from him with his hands behind his back. It was as if he did not see the bald man and his steps were leisure. Two bodyguards stood at the other side of the room, personally trained by the bald man himself. Their eyes nearly popped out of their sockets when they saw it happening. "How was that possible?" They had to be hallucinating. How could their instructor fail to catch a man who had his back turned to him? The bald man's face darkened when he heard the exclaim from his disciples. He took two steps forward to catch up to Fane. This time, he shaped both hands in a claw-like manner and aimed for Fane. However, Fane sidestepped to the right when he swung his left palm, and Fane would sidestep to the left when the bald man swung his right hand. Aghast, he decided to swing both hands onto Fane Just as he was ready to rush forward, Fane suddenly fell backward. Thump! Not only did the bald man miss, but Fane pulled an even better surprise attack by slamming his head against the bald man's stomach! One of Fane's legs was planted on the ground—though

bent to a certain degree—while the other was raised and stretched out straight. Fane spectacularly kept his balance, and it was as though he was just as balanced as the ground. This nifty move he pulled seemed utterly flawless, though not many people could do this. There was a dull sound that followed after Fane slammed his head against the man's stomach. The force of Fane's attack sent the man staggering a few steps backward before he could stabilize himself. "This can't be. There's no way you can stand against me!" The bald man saw red like never before. At that point, their scuffle attracted more onlookers, even from those who queued for the interview. Understandably, this made him feel diffident. As he let out an enraged roar, he clasped his hands together into a huge fist like a large hammer and leaped into the air. He jumped a few meters high and dropped toward Fane, anger overwhelming his being. "I suppose you haven't had your fill, huh?" Fane was miffed with this man's incessant attacks. If he was a no-nonsense kind of person while he was attacked, this bald man would have been a goner in just a few seconds. Had Fane been an assistant commander-equivalent, the man would have died still. Fane was well aware that those who ran a personal security company were backed by people of great power. He was well aware that if he was killed, it would not be a big deal. Fane balled his fist tightly, and the energy he used this time was almost two times more than the energy he used previously. Slam!

Chapter 581

This time, Fane's strength was too scary. His punch caused the other party to fly a dozen meters away, demolishing the walls of the yard's entrance. "Nngh!" The bald man vomited blood as he landed on the ground, his complexion pale. "Who are you? How dare you cause trouble in our Harrison Private Security Company!" One after another, the people inside the office ran out after hearing all the noise. "That's right. Young man, you're really daring. This is our private security company. Are you on a suicide mission? Coming here to cause trouble?" A few others also said this.

Some of the apprentice bodyguards surrounded Fane. “How is this possible? The bald instructor was hit…” One of the young men saw him standing up. His face darkened. It seemed that this young man was very strong. The faces of some of the instructors also darkened. They finally looked at the old man. “Head instructor, this guy wants to barge in and I can’t stop him!” the bald man said as he rubbed his chest and pointed at Fane. “Grandfather, If I wanted to kill you just now, you wouldn’t have had the chance to stand up right now!” Fane said to everyone as he laughed and turned around. “I’m not here to cause trouble. I’m here to employ some bodyguards. I had no idea that you people would be so arrogant. I’m punishing him because he was ready to kill me when I merely commented on his attitude.” At this moment, the old man finally spoke with a cold expression on his face, “Young man, do you think that the Harrison Private Security Company can allow you to come and go as you please? Do you think our company can operate for so many years if we were so casual?” “That’s right, young man. And now you’re trying to run away after hitting one of our people? Haha, are you dreaming?” another man also said coldly. “Young man, are you afraid when you see so many of us here? Is this why you want to leave? You even said that if you wanted to kill baldy, he would’ve died just now. Bah! Who are you trying to bluff? Did you think I grew up frightened by others?” a brawny guy said with a fierce expression. “This is only one branch of the Harrison Private Security Company. Young man, you don’t know how big our company is, right?” The bald instructor started laughing coldly. “Now, kneel in front of me. Kowtow and apologize to me. I’ll forgive you if you compensate me with five million bucks. Do you understand me?” “Tut, tut… I don’t think this is a private security company. Your company seems to be a con-company that bullies guests just because you have many people!” Fane looked at these people and continued speaking, “I’m here to help with your business, but you guys aren’t welcoming me, even flashing me with your arrogant faces. I wonder who gave you guys the courage to do so?” People from the private security company across the street seemed to

have heard the noises. Quite a number of them came over. They watched from the entrance, wondering what was happening inside. “It seems that somebody is here to cause trouble?” a short-haired woman said when she saw a hole on the wall at the entrance.

Chapter 582

The people from the opposite company thought that somebody was here to cause trouble. After all, everyone from this Harrison Private Security Company was extremely arrogant. Apart from that, this company had a strong background—they were quite rich. They were envious of the people in this company as they drove many cars. Even their yard was designed beautifully. They never thought that somebody would dare cause any trouble for them. However, these people understood once they heard what Fane said. It seemed that these people were too arrogant and had offended a customer. There was a saying that customers were the kings. They did not think that this bald man would look down on this person, and even attack him. However, it seemed that he was counter-attacked by Fane. “Old Baldy, is this person really a customer here?” the old man asked after he thought about it. The bald man immediately said, “Head instructor, don’t listen to the bullshit this man says. He’s dressed so commonly. Does he look like a person who’d be here to employ bodyguards? And he was the one who spoke to me rudely!” “Haha, the guilty party files the suit. How dare you act so arrogantly when you’re the one who had a bad attitude and attacked me from behind?! You must be suicidal!” Fane smiled coldly. They had no idea that he had just killed a few hundred people from the Xenos family, including a strong and powerful marshal. He did not expect to meet a similar situation when he came out searching for a few bodyguards. “Haha, arrogant bastard. How dare you come here and hurt our people, even breaking our items, without any regrets?! You dare to speak arrogantly!” The head instructor started laughing. “Do you think we’re weaklings?” He did not want to continue speaking much so he waved his hand and said, “Attack!”

Two instructors and a dozen bodyguards immediately surrounded Fane. “I see you still want to use your strength to mistreat people!” Fane said with an indifferent smile when he saw so many people surrounding him. “Haha, young man, are you afraid yet? Let me tell you this, it’s too late! We’ve already given you a chance. You could’ve left if you knelt, kowtowed, and apologized with a compensation of five million. Just admit you’re unlucky you didn’t agree to it!” The bald instructor stood outside, held his fists up in front of his chest, and was ready for a show. “You guys are just prepared to rob people of their money!” Fane held up his fists, stopped talking, and rushed forwards. He suddenly turned upside down and spun. Thump! Thump! Thump! Several bodyguards were kicked in their chests and flew outwards. “Nngh!” They fell to the ground and spat out blood. They could not even stand up. Fane used a huge amount of strength this time. Although it was not enough to kill them, it was enough to make them lose their ability to fight. “F*ck!” Both instructors immediately moved in to attack Fane. Bang! Bang! Pitifully, they received the same ending as those bodyguards. They fell to the ground, blood trailing from the corners of their mouths. Fane stopped, flipped his body, and stood in his spot. He smiled at the bald guy. “Since you’re the instigator of this matter, and you were still so arrogant even when I’ve held back, let me send you to hell!” “How dare you!” The old man was surprised when he heard this. Fane’s combat ability was already stronger than his. He immediately yelled. However, Fane appeared in front of him as if he heard nothing and punched him in his chest.

Chapter 583

“So fast!” Not only were the people of the Harrison Private Security Company surprised, but the people from the company opposite were also extremely surprised. They had been observing the scene from the entrance. They started to wonder if it was true that such a strong person came to employ bodyguards? Did someone like him even need a bodyguard? “No!” The bald man was not ready to fight back. He only felt a daze and Fane was

already in front of him. Fane's punch soon fell on his chest. The bald man yelled in fear and flew away. After hitting the wall once again, he laid there—dead. "Old man, do you want to come over and have a taste of this?" Fane did not even look at the bald man. He turned around, looked at the old man, and squinted. "I'm here to send you money but you don't want it. Now, you're daring enough to be on a suicide mission!" Gulp! The old man gulped. He realized his forehead was covered in a cold sweat. He knew that this person's true power was too scary. Even if people came from the headquarters, they would not be a worthy opponent. "Fane!" At this moment, Skyler squeezed through the crowd because he heard noises that sounded like a fight. He immediately called out in surprise when he saw the situation. Fane slowly turned around and was embarrassed. He had no idea that it was the 8-star King of War Skyler Celestino who almost exposed his identity previously. "It's you!" Skyler felt warm when he saw Fane. He immediately walked in with a smile on his face. "8-star...8-star King of War, Skyler Celestino!" As the head instructor of the Harrison Private Security Company, he knew many strong people in the Middle Province. At the very least, he knew who he could offend and who he could not. He screamed in surprise when he recognized who Skyler was, his voice almost a falsetto. "King of War, you—you know this young brother?" The head instructor gulped, bowed slightly, and walked towards Skyler, extremely respectful. The other bodyguards were also surprised. They had no idea that the 8-star King of War would come over. After all, he was an important person in the army. Fane smiled coldly. When did it change from 'young guy' to 'young brother'? "Yes. This is Fane, a head commander!" Skyler nodded. He looked at the bodyguards and instructors wailing on the ground. He then saw the dead bald man. "Fane, what happened here? Why was there a fight?" "Haha… These people don't know how to behave correctly. I originally…" Fane told Skyler what happened in detail. Skyler nodded. "People like that deserve to die. Nice kill! He doesn't even know he made a mistake. How dare he ask you to kneel? And apologize and pay them five

million? I think your company doesn't want to exist anymore, correct?" "King of War, we made a mistake. It all happened because of this bald man. He spoke nonsense and we misunderstood this young man." The head instructor was extremely frightened. He had no idea that this guy knew the King of War. They seemed to have a good relationship. No wonder he was so strong. This guy was a head commander. "How about this, King of War? What if we provide this young sir twenty bodyguards for five years?" The head instructor asked tentatively after thinking about it.

Chapter 584

"How is this possible? This guy just killed someone and the Harrison Private Security Company not only let him off the hook, they even apologized to him? And proposing to provide him with so many free bodyguards for so many years?" Onlookers could not help but exclaim in surprise. "The Harrison Private Security Company has always been very high and mighty. Today, they've become so…" "Haha, didn't you see what happened? Obviously, the 8-star King of War would protect this head commander. Apart from that, it was the Harrison Private Security company's mistake. If the 8-star King of War got angry, they wouldn't have been able to escape his wrath!" The short-haired bodyguard laughed and said, "Well, they've encountered some resistance this time, and this young man has just won a big prize. If he were to employ twenty bodyguards for a year, he would've had to spend five million bucks. The salary for a five-year employment would cost more than twenty million. The Harrison Private Security Company will suffer a big loss. They even just lost a strong instructor!" As their competitors, they were happy to see the Harrison Private Security Company in such a bad situation. "Fane, how do you feel about this?" Skyler glanced at Fane, thinking he would agree to such a good offer. The head instructor also looked at Fane, expectations written all over his face. However, he did not anticipate that Fane would speak without much care. "It's fine. Haha, I'd just feel insecure if I were to employ bodyguards from

this company. Would they even completely obey me? They might become dawdlers by then!" He then stretched his body. "I think it's better if I search for bodyguards elsewhere! Thank you for your help, King of War Celestino." Fane's attitude toward Skyler was very casual. He seemed to communicate with Skyler like they were close friends, different from other people. Even Skyler felt that this young man was really special. His every move was no different from those of the Supreme Warrior. Although all the head commanders were extremely respectful when they met him, he did not dislike this casual attitude from Fane. Not only did he like it, he felt comfortable about it. Fane seemed to be a person who was at the same level as he was. Fane walked out after he finished speaking. "Thank...thank you, young brother!" The head instructor was also stunned. They took the initiative to provide him with such a good deal just to give the King of War face. They did not think that Fane would look down on their proposal. This was a deal worth millions, and it was rejected just like this. This person had an extraordinarily imposing manner. Apart from that, this person had a King of War's attitude. He was not very respectful to King of War Celestino. Skyler stood there with a frown. He thought about it and followed after Fane. "Brother Fane, wait for me!" Skyler caught up to Fane and smiled at him. "I don't know why, but when I look at you, you look extremely similar to the Supreme Warrior I met previously!" Fane was speechless. He looked toward a small alley on the opposite side of the road and said, "Come with me!" Skyler followed behind Fane, wondering what was going on.

Chapter 585

After they reached the alley, Fane looked around to see if anyone followed them before speaking seriously. "In the future, stop mentioning how much I look like the Supreme Warrior. I just want a normal life and don't want to be disturbed!" After he finished speaking, he turned over his palm and presented a black-color token. The token looked domineering and there was a dragon totem on it. Fane immediately kept the token away after Skyler

took a peep. Psst! Skyler took a sharp breath after he peeped at the token. He immediately knelt. “King of War Skyler Celestino greets the Supreme Warrior and thanks you for saving me years ago. My apprentices, subordinates, and I intended to repay the Supreme Warrior, but we never got the chance all these years. I’ve been dreaming about meeting you, and now dreams have finally come true!” Skyler’s eyes were red when he raised his head again. Years ago, Fane not only saved his life, but he also saved the lives of his subordinates and a few of his apprentices. Fane was surprised, but he understood Skyler’s feelings. He helped Skyler up. “Why don’t you stand up first. If others see you doing this, I’ll get into trouble! In the future, don’t address me as the Supreme Warrior. You can just call me Fane!” “Alright, I understand!” Skyler finally understood something and smiled in embarrassment. “I’m sorry about the other day. I was too stupid and almost exposed your identity. Luckily, the Goddess of War helped explain everything on your behalf. I really thought you looked like the Supreme Warrior, and over the last few days, I was actually wondering how two people could look so alike.” “Okay!” Fane nodded. “Alright, I still need to employ some bodyguards so I’ll make a move. Let’s have a drink together when we’re free!” “Wait!” Skyler immediately rushed toward Fane when he had just taken two steps forward. “Supreme Warrior, why do you still need to search for bodyguards? I have many of them with me! Many of my apprentices and subordinates keep complaining that they have nothing to do. I can just ask them to be your bodyguards. Money wouldn’t be an issue as they’ve been wanting to repay you for so long. They’d be willing to do it without a cent if they knew they’d be working for you!” Fane was speechless. However, if these people truly worked as his bodyguards, their combat ability would be quite reliable. On top of that, he would not need to employ as many people. After seeing Skyler’s anticipation, Fane nodded after he thought about it. “Alright, ask them if they’d be willing to work for me. They can come over if they do. However, I can only pay each of them a moderate salary of two thousand per month if they work with me as people

might wonder if my expenses are too high. The most important point for them to obey is that they have to keep my identity a secret!" "Sure, sure, sure! I'll go back and inform them right now! You're too generous for even giving them a salary. After all, you saved our lives years ago!" Skyler was extremely happy when Fane agreed to his suggestion. He finally had a chance to repay Fane. He could not help himself from smiling in embarrassment. "They're not the only ones. I'd also like to be your bodyguard and repay you!" Fane quickly waved his hand. "Don't, are you trying to frighten me? You can come to my house and have drinks with me. Just say that you're visiting your subordinates as an excuse. Wouldn't it just reveal that I'm the Supreme Warrior if you become my bodyguard? You're an important person, so you should use this time to rest well!" "Haha, alright! I understand what you're trying to say. In the future, I'll address you as Head Commander Fane Woods in public!" Skyler laughed and sent Fane out. "I'll go back and let them know about this. Will fifty people be enough?"

Chapter 586

What Skyler said caused Fane's mouth to twitch at its corners. 50 bodyguards meant that the salary for one year would be around tens of millions. He smiled bitterly and said, "We won't need so many people as I'm not employing bodyguards for the entire Taylor family. I only need a few people to protect my small family—just a few who are good in martial arts—that'd be more than enough. My father and mother-in-law might not be used to it if there are too many of them!" Fane thought about it before saying, "Ten. Ten would be enough!" "Alright, ten it is!" Skyler nodded and promised Fane. "Sigh, it's been extremely boring recently. I loved going out on battles when we were on the battlefield. It was so thrilling to kill those f*cking Americans. Now that I'm back here, there's nothing I can do. All I have is money, and I can only drink or enjoy entertainment activities with my subordinates. I'm so afraid I'll meet some rich young masters whenever

I leave the house. Once they recognize me, they'd come forward to try and please me by inviting me to their karaoke sessions or other activities. F*cking hell, it's so annoying!" Fane could not help but laugh when he heard what Skyler said. "Haha, I'm very afraid of these things. If people knew I'm the Supreme Warrior, it wouldn't only be those rich young masters. All sorts of people—like most of the soldiers, some of the assistant commanders, even the head commanders—they would also come for me. That'd be extremely annoying! My current life is much more comfortable!" "You're really intelligent to have anticipated this from the start. I really admire you!" Skyler had an envious expression on his face. "A few days ago, several marriage agencies approached me, saying that they wanted to introduce some women to me. I'm f*cking married so I immediately rejected them, yet they still didn't give up and wanted to find a second wife for me. They're just normal people so it wouldn't feel right if I hit them!" Fane once again laughed when he heard this. "So, that apprentice of mine seldom leaves the house!" "Apprentice?" Skyler was stunned. Not many people knew that the Nine Great Gods of War were his apprentices, including Skyler. He only knew that Fane had nine subordinates as the Nine Great Gods of War had great military achievements." He was stunned for a short moment before he spoke in realization, "Do… Do you mean the Goddess of War? She… She was your apprentice?" Fane was embarrassed. He had no idea that he would leak this secret in the middle of a happy conversation. He spoke lightly when he saw that no outsiders were around. "Don't tell the others, but all the Nine Great Gods of War were my apprentices. Ethan Haays learned his medical skills, among other things, from me." "Psst!" Skyler took another sharp breath. F*cking hell, he had no idea that the Supreme Warrior had such a close relationship with the Nine Great Gods of War. Very few people knew about this. How big would this issue be if the people of Cathysia knew about this? The scary prestige of the Supreme Warrior would once again come alive. Many people that felt they had talent would ask Fane to be their master. There was a time when people

liked having apprentices. Many Kings of War, and even Gods of War, took on apprentices, but they've never heard news of the Supreme Warrior having apprentices of his own. Everybody could only wonder if he did. Now, Skyler discovered that his apprentices were the Nine Great Gods of War! Fane soon got into his car and was prepared to leave. However, he remembered something and said to Skyler, who was standing nearby, "Oh yes, King of War Celestino, are you bored right now? Do you want me to give you something to do?" "Yes, I'm so bored! I'd be so thankful! Just tell me what you need my help for!" Skyler immediately laughed happily after he heard this. He felt that if he continued down this road of nothingness, he would be so bored that mushrooms would start growing on his body. "The son of the Xenos family from the Sky Dragon City is called Quil Xenos. He recently provoked me by trying to kidnap my wife and my mother-in-law. I killed Quil and his subordinates, but I don't have time to deal with the Xenos family. I can only ask you to help me deal with the Xenos family!"

Chapter 587

Fane thought about it and said, "They're not a small family. I'm afraid that they're fearless enough to trouble me again and affect my life!" Skyler balled his hands into fists when he heard that. "F*ck, these ignorant people. How dare they think about kidnapping your wife! The Xenos family shouldn't exist anymore!" Fane nodded. "Don't be too extreme. Just kill their martial artists and family master. The maids and other workers are innocent, so let them go!" "Alright!" Skyler nodded. He thought about it and said, "But if this family is exterminated, what about their properties? They have so many!" "Just sell them off for a low price. Try to get more cash. We can donate half of it to charity and share the other half equally. Just transfer it into my account!" Fane said after contemplating his decision for a bit. "Alright, let's do this!" Skyler said happily. "It's been a long time since I've fought and I've been longing for it. Haha!" Skyler soon left after they finished speaking. Fane also drove away to employ maids, chefs, and

other cleaning workers. Skyler was very happy when he left. He knew now that the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family was actually his benefactor, the Supreme Warrior, who he had been searching for over the last few years. Not only did he meet the Supreme Warrior, he even had a long conversation with him. This was the biggest honor in his life. The most important point was the Supreme Warrior asked for his help. This meant that he could finally do something for his benefactor. The more he thought about it, the more excited he got. When he returned to his house, several of his disciples were chit-chatting in his yard. They were stunned when they saw Skyler's happy expression. "What's going on? Did he just win five million from the lottery tickets he bought? Why's he so happy?" A young woman among them could not help but mumble. "How's that possible? Five million is a small amount to our master, it's nothing. Apart from that, our master is not a person who loves money!" Another man shook his head. "Could he have just met someone he liked, and that person likes him, too? If that's not the case, I can't think of anything else that'd make him so happy." "What nonsense are you guys speaking about? Am I old? I'm only forty-something years old!" Skyler glanced at them after he heard what they said. He then continued speaking, "Ask my subordinates and the marshals I know to come over. Hmmm, and it's better if they're women. Female bodyguards are easier to be ignored by others. That'd be better!" "Female bodyguards?" The disciples looked puzzled. What was going on?

Chapter 588

"Go, go, go. It's a good thing, so go quickly. You guys would be honored if you get the opportunity to be this bodyguard!" Skyler immediately said to his disciples, waving his hand. "How's that possible? Which family are we guarding? So awesome?" The female disciple smiled slightly, thinking that her master would not mess with her. She said, "Master, can I book a spot? Didn't you say that it's better if the bodyguards are women?" Skyler agreed to it after he thought about it. "Hold on, it's better if you don't go first. Let's

find some female subordinates who have high combat skills. List ten people down, and it's better if they're female bodyguards. This way, it'd be very puzzling and it'd be much more convenient for them to accompany Fane's wife during shopping and other things!" "No way, they only want women? Don't we get a chance?" A male disciple's face darkened after he heard this. His master's manner of expression seemed to be saying that this was a good matter, but it would not be his. "Why haven't you answered me? I'm your outstanding disciple, you need to take care of me!" The female disciple pouted her red lips. "I'm so free with nothing to do. Working as a bodyguard might be fun!" "Junior, working as a bodyguard is not as simple as you think it is. When you're free, you'd still need to patrol the grounds or do other things. Do you think it's fun when the weather is so hot? I think it'd be better to hand over such a difficult job to me!" The male disciple immediately said with a laugh, seemingly frivolous. "Humph, haven't we encountered all sorts of environments when we were on the battlefield? Didn't we encounter all sorts of weather? Senior, just be straightforward and say you're trying to snatch this position. Frankly, I wouldn't give you the position anyway since our master said it's a good job. I'll definitely strive for it!" the female disciple humphed and said arrogantly. "Alright, I'll give you a spot! We still need to think of another dozen good fighters. It's fine as long as they're women. Ladies first, gentlemen next!" Skyler nodded and said. "Great! Master, don't forget what you've promised me!" The female disciple was immediately thrilled. Soon, they managed to get a dozen people to come over to the yard. They were all female veterans. These female veterans not only looked valiant, their figures and appearances were quite nice as well. Though they were wearing normal clothes and not their army uniforms, they exuded a special temperament when they stood there. "King of War Celestino, did you for me?" one of the girls asked, unaware of the situation. "Cough, cough… A friend of mine has asked me to help him find ten bodyguards. After thinking about it, I thought giving him female bodyguards would be better," Skyler coughed twice before saying. "Elaine

has taken up one of the positions, but I still need nine other people. I'll choose among you, so who's willing to work as a bodyguard? The salary is not high, only two thousand a month each, so some of you might look down on it. However, this is a great opportunity!" Skyler did not explain much, but he still gave them hints. "Bodyguards!" Some of them were unwilling when they heard that this was a job as a normal bodyguard. On top of that, the salary was quite low. Some of them here were commanders. There were also marshals. After returning from the battlefield, the country gave them quite a big amount of rewards, so they did not feel that a job—that would only pay them two thousand a month—was all that important. "I want to go!" one of the girls said as she raised her hand and stepped forward. "Okay, come over and stand with Elaine!" Skyler nodded in satisfaction. "There are eight more positions!" "How's that possible, Miss Orchid's going too? She's a major and she's willing to work for two thousand a month?" A lady frowned and wondered if she had made a mistake. She looked at Orchid Yames and gritted her teeth. "Me, count me in!" She believed that if Orchid was willing to do it, it might truly be a good thing.

Chapter 589

"Miss Orchid, why do you want to go?" she asked lightly as she walked over to Orchid's side. Orchid stretched her head over and said softly, "Elaine is the King of War's disciple. If she asked for a position, it must be a good thing. I suspect that we're going to work as the Goddess of War's bodyguards. If that's the case, it'd be more convenient if we were to stay by the Goddess of War's side. If not, why would they ask for female bodyguards?" The girl was happy after she heard this. That sounded about right. There was a big possibility that they'd be working for the Goddess of War if they asked for women. Apart from that, would King of War Celestino be so eager to help if it was not for the Goddess of War? Other people started raising their hands when they saw that there were three people. Soon, all ten positions were taken. "Alright, everybody else can go back. Thank you all

for coming over!” Skyler asked the others to leave first. After they had all left, he said to these ten girls, “Let’s go to my room and I’ll tell you all about the situation!” Once they had all entered the room, Skyler closed the door behind him. “Master, can you tell us who we’re working for now? You said it’s a good job!” Elaine immediately said with a smile. “King of War Celestino, let me guess. Are we working for the Goddess of War? Haha, I’ve made this guess for a while now!” The female major named Orchid Yames could not help but start laughing. “Haha, you’re quite good at making guesses!” Skyler laughed and said. “That’s for sure. Haha, did I guess correctly?” Orchid started laughing. “Yes, the direction is correct, but not quite. Why don’t you continue guessing?” Skyler told them. “How’s that possible? It’s not the Goddess of War?” Orchid was slightly disappointed. However, she had already agreed to this job. She had no other choice but to follow through. “If it’s not the Goddess of War, then who would it be? Not many people can get our King of War to help them!” Another woman frowned, unable to understand this. “I told you guys to go up the path. Go up the path guys. Why can’t you all understand?” Skyler was speechless as his hints were so obvious. He did not expect that Orchid and the others would still struggle to understand. “It’s not the Goddess of War, but we need to think higher? Could it be…” Orchid frowned and soon smiled bitterly. “Could it be the Supreme Warrior?” “That’s right!” Skyler smiled indifferently. “The person who’s looking to hire bodyguards is the Supreme Warrior. The one and only strongest person in our Cathysia army, the Supreme Warrior!” “Psst!” The ten girls in front of him took sharp breaths of fright when they heard this. They had no idea that it was the Supreme Warrior who was looking for bodyguards.

Chapter 590

“Oh my god, it’s actually true? It’s the Supreme Warrior? He saved my life previously!” Elaine jumped up in excitement. “I’ve never seen him in person. I didn’t think I’d get to see the Supreme Warrior’s elegant demeanor

with my very own eyes!" "Yes! It's the Supreme Warrior. Luckily, I decided to become one of the ten bodyguards. If not, I would've definitely regretted it. It's such an honor to be able to become his bodyguard and service him!" Orchid's eyes lit up with happiness. She was a female major and right now, she had turned into a fan. "I'd die willingly if I could stay by the Supreme Warrior's side and see his true appearance!" Another girl blushed. "It'd be even better if we could bathe and sleep with the Supreme Warrior!" "Cough, cough… What are you guys saying? You guys are there to work as bodyguards. I'm not asking you to be his maid and accompany him on his bed!" Skyler was speechless. He had no idea that these people would have such extreme reactions after learning that they were going to work as the Supreme Warrior's bodyguards. However, he thought about how excited he was when he discovered Fane was the Supreme Warrior, and that he was a King of War at a certain age. He also took some time before he managed to calm down himself which was not too long ago. It was normal for these twenty-something-year-old girls to be excited. The Supreme Warrior was idolized by all soldiers. It had already reached a point where they blindly idolized him. How could the girls not be excited once they knew that they would be working as the Supreme Warrior's bodyguards? "Great! I wonder what the Supreme Warrior looks like. Is he handsome? Is he married? Who is he? Is he in the Middle Province? Why didn't we hear about this previously?" "Oh my god, has he just reached this place? Why haven't we heard about this? What's his name? We only know that he's the Supreme Warrior!" Another girl was so excited, she almost went crazy. She paced back and forth, occasionally jumping in excitement. "Stop, stop! I'm not asking you people to go on dates. Why are you all so excited? You're there to work as bodyguards! Bodyguards!" Skyler was speechless. He wondered if it was a good idea to let these women work as Fane's bodyguards. Would it affect the Supreme Warrior's normal life? "Master, you're the best! How do you know him? Oh my god, I'm going to be the Supreme Warrior's bodyguard? Oh my god, I can boast about this for an entire lifetime!" the

young girl, known as Elaine, yelled in excitement. The ten pretty women in front of him seemed to have gone crazy. These ladies may not be as pretty as Selena and the rest, but they were still quite pretty. It seemed to be a team of pretty ladies. Apart from that, quite a few of them were commanders, with two of them being marshals. Such combat ability was incredibly scary. The combat ability of his disciple, Elaine, was also quite high. Although she did not get the position of a commander or a marshal, her combat ability was true. She never liked those positions, so she gave it to the others. The army never gave it to her, too. “Nevermind, you guys have too many questions. I’m giving you all ten minutes to be excited. I’ll answer the questions one by one once you’ve all accepted this matter and calmed down!” Skyler was speechless when he watched these excited young people. He sat in his chair and took a cigarette out. He started smoking. The women were very excited, only managing to calm down after some time. “Master, tell us quickly. Did he just arrive or has he always been in the Middle Province?” Elaine asked in anticipation. “He has always been in the Middle Province!”

Chapter 591

"Anyway, only you need to know what happened today. Please keep it a secret. The Lord Supreme Warrior did not announce his identity earlier because he just wanted to live a life of peace,” said Skyler Celestino A girl who wanted to sleep with the Lord Supreme Warrior raised her hand immediately and exclaimed, "Don't worry at all, we hope Lord Supreme Warrior can live a peaceful life, free from worries. We’ll definitely keep it a secret!" "Don’t get any ideas. Lord Supreme Warrior is married now. Even his children are not young anymore. This is the most important reason for wanting to live a peaceful life!” Skyler sighed lightly and turned to everyone. "He is now the son-in-law of the Taylor family!" “Fane Woods!” At that moment, Elaine understood it instantly. She had gone to Old Master Taylor’s birthday to join in on the fun. She went to the party alone and

pretended not to know Skyler Celestino. The truth was that she knew exactly what happened that day. “Oh my god. It turns out that he really is the Supreme Warrior, and the God of War only said what he had said that day deliberately to help the Supreme Warrior conceal his identity!” Elaine finally understood this, and she felt her heart well up with deep emotions. She said, “He’s the son-in-law of that family. Not to mention, he’s also really handsome. I never thought he’d actually be the Supreme Warrior!” "We’re leaving this place in a moment. Just remember, you must all forget everything that happened just now. He’s your master, and you’re the bodyguards of his family!" said Skyler. He urged further, “I promised him to keep this a secret, so all of you must swear to take this to your grave. Additionally, the people you have to protect are his daughter, father-in-law, mother-in-law, and his family members. The Supreme Warrior essentially does not need your protection. I cannot even begin to imagine his capabilities!” “Yes, master. Don’t worry. We’ll keep this a secret!” Elaine excitedly remarked, “Oh yes, when will we go over?” “Of course it would be better to be earlier. Heavens, being a bodyguard for the Supreme Warrior is too exciting. There’s truly no better job than this!” “Why do you even need to pay wages? I don’t lack money, I don’t even need my wages!” Orchid said passionately, brimming with enthusiasm. Skyler Celestino heard this and became speechless. "Since you’re all behaving like idiots, we definitely cannot go over right now. Wait until the afternoon. You’ll all need to prepare a change of clothes before departing, amongst other things. As for your salary, I insist that you have it. The market price as of this moment is between one to two thousand a month. Unless you’re extremely capable, a salary of two thousand a month should suffice. Just take it!” Elaine laughed instantly, “Yeah, Miss Orchid. If you don’t take your salary, it’d be even more suspicious, especially since you’re a Major who’s acting as a bodyguard to a man who, what more, seems to be dependent on his wife? We need to help him keep it a secret and not arouse suspicion!” “Okay, fine. Then we’ll get home and pack up. Let’s meet at the outer gates at two in the

afternoon and leave together. How about that?" said Orchid respectfully. "Two in the afternoon? Wouldn't that be a little too late? I can't wait!" the girl from earlier who wanted to sleep with the Supreme Warrior passionately exclaimed, her eyes still star-studded and hopeful.

Chapter 592

At two in the afternoon, Fane arrived home. Five to six maids, the cleaners, the cook, and four security guards from both shifts were already standing in the yard. There were at least a dozen of them. After a round of introductions, Fane looked at Fiona and asked, "What now? Almost time, right?" "Yes, that's correct!" Fiona nodded satisfactorily. It was the first time she felt like a boss—she would be able to instruct servants in the future! She had not felt this way in more than five years. "Oh, all you must listen to Jenny's instructions in the future, alright?" After some thought, Fane said to the servants, "In the future, Jenny will let you know how much you should be paid, and she'll also be instructing you to go to the market as well as other tasks." "Me?" Jenny was surprised at the flattery. Fiona nodded. "Yes, you'll be the head housekeeper. As for your salary, I'll double it!" she said seriously. "Yes, Master!" Jenny nodded, her heart filled with glee. She felt that she had made the right decision and followed the right master. "Thank you again, master!" "Ah, you're welcome!" Fane said happily. "Hang on, Fane, you just hired a few security guards to watch the home. What about a bodyguard? The bodyguard is very important. Without a bodyguard, what would I do if I ran into some gangsters? What if they rob me of my belongings? I'm still thinking about my jade bracelet and all the money that I was robbed of. I still feel really uncomfortable!" Fiona remembered the past and said unhappily, "Is it because you found that bodyguard salaries are not cheap, so you're reluctant to hire one?" Fane felt ashamed and quickly explained, "Mother, please don't worry, that's not true. I'll go find one today. I actually went to look for one today, but I found that the security companies are not that reliable. I've already asked someone to help find me

a reliable bodyguard. They should send someone in the afternoon today or tomorrow!" Fiona thought about Fane's reply. "It's good that you think that. Don't hire too many people. There are only so many of us, and we won't be going out often. Just about a dozen would do!" Joan was indeed a little reluctant to spend the money. She turned to Fane and asserted, "Fane, a penny saved is a penny earned. Based on my estimates, you don't have that much money. Salaries take some time to be paid. If you get a dozen bodyguards, wouldn't that cost you a fair bit of money?" As soon as Fiona heard this, she became unhappy and her facial expressions sank. "Dear in-law, it's already economical to hire just a dozen bodyguards. For this month, what would paying their salaries cost him? It'll just be a few hundred thousand. This isn't a big deal at all. Fane's salary is already twenty million a month. Isn't that sufficient? We're the type of people who live in large villas. In the future, what needs to be spent should be spent. Don't let your judgment be constrained by the street sweeper's salary you used to earn, alright?" She turned to Joan. "You, look at you. You keep wearing the same few clothes that Fane bought you. Can't you buy more? Change your outfit more often. In a single week, shouldn't you have at least a set of clothes each day? With your disheveled look, I'll feel too ashamed to introduce my rich friends to you! Joan smiled awkwardly. "Dear in-law, you may feel this way. However, I still think we need to plan carefully. Furthermore, my son will only receive his first month's salary in another two days. In the meantime, let's spend wisely!" Fane, observing the exchange, looked at his mother with a bad feeling in his heart. It was true that his mother never had any demands or requests. She was a woman who had grown accustomed to hard times and hence, made thriftiness her way of life. She had never asked him for money. He thought, 'What little money I'd given her before, she most likely hasn't spent it all.' However, as a son, he no longer lacked money. In fact, calling him wealthy would not even be an exaggeration. Had he missed something here?

Chapter 593

After all, they were not living in those times anymore. His mother was getting older and she deserved to enjoy a good life. At the very least, she did not need to behave as frugally as she did before. “Mother, your in-law is right. You’re too frugal. Don’t hesitate to buy anything you want. We’re not living in the old times. Tell you what, I’ll be free this afternoon. Let me take you out for a ride and buy you some clothes, jewelry, anything!” “My son, I don’t need those things. Now that I eat well, dress well, and live well, I’m already very satisfied!" Joan said hurriedly. To be able to see her son accomplish all that he has today had already made her feel satisfied. Just a few years ago, the only thing she ever dreamed and hoped for was for Fane to come home safely from the battlefield. Lucky for her, her dreams came true. Not only did he come home safely, he even managed to come home as a decorated and accomplished man. Fate had been kind to her and treated her well these past years. "Mother, what are you saying? We’re no longer short of money, so we should buy you some clothes or something!” Fane insisted with a smile. “That’s right, you should dress up more so that you can adapt to the life of the rich!” Fiona said happily. “Okay, Jenny. Do guide the staff and prepare the accommodations,” Fane instructed Jenny after some thought. “Yes, master!” Jenny nodded and left with the staff quickly. Just as they left, ten young women drove up to the villa and stopped at the clearing next to it. “Why are there so many women here?” Andrew looked at what was happening below and was stunned. “Why are they all women, and why are all the cars so expensive?” Fiona looked at the cars and felt ashamed, thinking to herself that these women had come to the wrong place by accident. “Do you guys see him? That’s the handsome young man we’re looking for!” Elaine laughingly said to her peers as she recognized Fane. “Oh, so that’s him. He is indeed handsome! To be his bodyguard is really my fortune. Even if he’s married, he’s such an eye candy!” another girl exclaimed. Fane waited for the party to walk up to him before asking them

suspiciously, “And...you are?” In reality, though, he could already guess who they were. “Hey! I’m Elaine!” “I’m Orchid!” “I’m…” The ten girls stood in a row and introduced themselves one after another. After the individual introductions, the ten of them chimed in unison, “We’re the Taylor family bodyguards!” Fane felt embarrassed. He thought to himself, what the hell was Skyler doing? He asked for ten bodyguards, not ten female bodyguards, let alone ten beautiful female bodyguards—was this a beauty pageant or a group of bodyguards?

Chapter 594

“Bodyguards?” When Fiona heard this, her expression sank. She glared at Fane angrily, huffing and puffing. “Fane, are you going for a beauty pageant? What kind of bodyguards are these? They all look like flowers and jewels, how can they be bodyguards?” Fane was speechless. He did not know how to explain himself and could only smile bitterly. "Mother, I asked my friend to help me find a bodyguard. I didn’t express a preference for males or females, and I didn’t expect that he’d choose an all-female bodyguard squad for me!” Upon hearing this, Elaine felt unjustified. Personally, she was afraid that Fane would get rid of them. She gave it some thought and went forward to express her sentiments. “What’s wrong with women? You shouldn’t look down on women. We’re all female heroes who’ve brought glory to the country. If the country trusts us to defend her, what makes you think we can’t defend you?” As soon as she finished speaking, she couldn’t resist stealing a glance at Fane. “If you weren’t so handsome, we wouldn’t have come!” Elaine was not just referring to Fane’s natural good looks, she was also referring to his presence and aura. Fiona got so angry when she heard Elaine’s little outburst. “Look here, their comments are all about how handsome you are. These women are just decorative vases!” She continued, “All of you, leave. We don’t need decorative vases in our home as bodyguards. What use is it to have all of you here? I don’t have a good impression of Fane’s friend. He must’ve

known we're rich so that's why he recommended all these women to Fane!" Fane was embarrassed to hear Fiona's unsophisticated comments. He thought to himself, 'How terrible it was of Fiona when Sharon George came. She didn't make these comments just because she knew how rich her family was. Just because these women's backgrounds are probably incomparable to Sharon George's, how can she judge these women before getting to know their capabilities and kick them to the curb?' When Elaine heard that she was about to be driven away, she was a little worried. It was already hard for them to get to this point, what more getting the opportunity to see the face of the Supreme Warrior. If she kicked to the curb, she would be so disappointed. To make matters worse, she would probably be ridiculed when she went back. Stepping in swiftly, she quipped, "Who says we're not good at what we do? If that was true, how can we even be bodyguards? How can we defend the national security of our beloved country?" Orchid heard this and immediately stepped forward to hold Elaine back. She smiled at Fane and said diplomatically. "Master, the truth is, Skylar felt that it would be better to assign your family with female bodyguards to protect your entire family who are primarily females. Your wife, your mother, and your mother-in-law are all women, so he only had their convenience in mind. For example, if we were to go shopping with them, it would attract much less attention than having male bodyguards!" "Oh, is that the case?" Fane came to his senses. "Actually, it does sound workable!" He turned to Fiona. "Mother, since they're all here, let's just carry on and let them be our bodyguards. The weather is really hot right now, it's not nice letting them come all this way for nothing!" Elaine immediately stepped forward. "Yes, yes, yes. Big sister, you look like a classy person. You don't seem to be the petty type at all. You definitely wouldn't be too calculative with us, am I right? "You're calling me 'big sister'?" Fiona heard this and suddenly felt really flattered and happy. She thought that her daily efforts of dolling herself up had paid off. Indeed, she felt that she did not look old. Additionally, if she was not considered beautiful, why would those lowlifes

who kidnapped her that afternoon dare to violate her beauty? The more she thought, she started to feel as if she had eaten a spoonful of the sweetest honey. She smiled and said, “Alright, since you little ladies do have some good insight, I won’t drive you away. I’ll give you all a chance!” Elaine heard this and felt gleeful. She thought, ‘Ah, so this old auntie likes compliments about her youthfulness.’ At the same time, she said, “Really? Big sister, you’ll give us a chance? Do treat us little sisters nicely! We’re not here just because your son-in-law is handsome. We just heard that your family has money and that you can afford to pay us wages of two thousand a month each. We’re all very enticed by this offer, so that’s why we’re here! Plus, we also heard that Miss Selena from your family is the most beautiful girl in the entire province and that when her mother was young, she was also a great beauty herself!” “Oho, really? Her mother is me!” At this point, Fiona was really happy. She laughed relaxedly, “Actually, you can call me auntie. Although I look young and tender, I’m really not that young!” Fane observed the entire exchange and was dumbfounded. He thought, ‘How could this be possible?’

Chapter 595

Fane thought that the fact that these girls were driving such nice cars meant that they neither needed nor lacked money. He thought that it was odd that they were here just for a wage of two thousand a month. As for his mother-in-law, he was rendered speechless by how she caved in just because a couple of twenty-something-year-olds called her ‘big sister’. In fact, it looked like Elaine was even younger than Selena. “Alright, this is my first time seeing such a youthful auntie!” Elaine said cheekily. “This girl is so sweet-mouthed. Since you’re our bodyguard now, I don’t want to unnecessarily complicate your life. Just show me what you’re capable of. For example, you can spar and show me if you can do a backflip. If I feel like your performance is okay, then stay!” Fiona was so happy that she did not want to make life any harder for the young women. Unexpectedly,

Elaine said, “That’s way too simple. We should perform something that has a little more difficulty!” As soon as she finished her remark, she walked to the corner of a nearby wall, picked up a red brick, and asked Orchid to hold it up high in her hands. “Don’t tell me you’re planning to split the bricks?” Fiona swallowed. She thought that if the ladies could do this, it would be really impressive. She knew that not many bodyguards would be able to do something like that. “Ah!” Elaine stepped forward lithely, using one hand as a knife, and slashed the brick with one arm. Sure enough, the brick split into two right down the middle. “Beautiful auntie, how’s that? By the way, I find all these acts way too easy for me! Now do you think I can protect you?” Sure enough, that piece of brick was split in half. "Auntie Beauty, how about it? These are all trivial, but is it enough to protect you?" “Yes, yes, you can. You silly girl, you look so delicate and tender. I didn’t expect you to be so amazing!” Fiona was already up in seventh heaven after being served so many compliments by Elaine. At this point, Elaine was already the apple of her eye. “Auntie, do you want the nine of us to all split a brick for you?” Orchid looked around her, she could not even find that many bricks. “No need! I believe you now. Looks like I really lucked out this time!” Fiona waved her hand, looking at Fane, and laughingly said, “Your friend truly picked some capable bodyguards. Furthermore, these ladies can go shopping with us and even help us pick out clothes!” Fane did not know if he should laugh or cry. He could not believe that just a while ago, she almost kicked these women to the curb, and now she had changed her mind so fast. ‘These women are just really strange creatures!’ he thought. “Mother, didn’t you say earlier that women bodyguards aren’t good enough? They aren’t my pick!” Fane bitterly smiled and said to her on the side, “If you don’t like them, I can just ask for men!” “No way, men will not be able to follow us on our shopping trips. That’s not convenient! I think these women are pretty good!” said Fiona sternly. She saw Jenny coming and immediately waved at her. “Jenny, the bodyguards are here. Take them with you and arrange their accommodation. They need to have a good rest

so I can take a few of them out shopping with me tomorrow, and they can protect my safety!”

Chapter 596

Fane looked at the outfits of some of the girls and felt a bit of a headache coming. He said, “Since you’re all our bodyguards, you’ll need to maintain your appearances and wear uniforms. I’m afraid clothes like short skirts are inappropriate.” "Hey, kid, why are you so restrictive. Shouldn’t girls have their own personalities? I like the way they dress! All of them have beautiful, fair, and long legs. What’s wrong? It looks good that way!” Fiona butted in unexpectedly. She continued, “This way, others won’t be able to tell that they’re bodyguards. They’ll be like plain-clothed policemen. Isn’t this much better? I don’t fancy having a large group of uniformed bodyguards following me. It draws too much attention!” Fortunately, Orchid stood up this moment and said, “Auntie, don’t worry. We’ve already discussed this while on the way here. We do think that we need to get uniforms so we look more proper. However, we also don’t need to wear formal clothes. We’ve already thought of what to wear! We can wear summer jeans, white sneakers, and a white shirt. We’re thinking of having the Taylor family emblem on our shirts. How does that sound?” Fiona thought about it and said, “Oh, that sounds good. It’ll look good, and it’s also a way of letting others know that you’re bodyguards. At least people will think twice before stirring up trouble!” She continued with a sparkle in her eye, “We’ll reimburse you for the costs of the uniforms. Do remember to get more sets of the uniform as a backup for each of you!” “Auntie, it isn’t too expensive. To be the Taylor family’s bodyguards is our honor. We can’t even begin to express our joy. So, just let us absorb this small cost!” said Elaine, her beautiful eyes brimming with intelligence. “Oh! You see, this silly girl is so considerate. Alright, if that’s the case, you can bear the cost yourself!” said Fiona. “When I’m free, I’ll buy you all a meal. Next time, you don’t have to be too formal. When we’re alone together, you can

be more casual." "Thank you, auntie. Auntie, you're not only beautiful in looks, but your spirit is also beautiful, too!" chimed in another young woman. "Oh, really? Ha, ha, I never noticed!" Fiona laughed, her spirits were high. Fane shook his head helplessly and said to Joan, "Mother, since we aren't occupied now, let me take you out to buy a few sets of clothes. Let us get rid of the old clothes you had before!" "Isn't it a waste to throw out the clothes?" Joan smiled bitterly. "Mother, don't worry. We'll never lack money again!" Fane also smiled bitterly and looked at her. "Master! Let us call you master in the future!" Elaine appeared in front of Fane and asked, "Master, are you going out? We should follow you and protect you well!" "Yes, yes, yes, master, we are now your bodyguards. If you want to leave home, we have the responsibility to protect you!" The other nine women heard this and ran over, faces full of hope. Each of them wanted to go out shopping with Fane. Protecting Fane was just an excuse. The experience of going shopping with the Supreme Warrior was truly unparalleled. "Wait, all of you have not even gotten your uniforms yet, so perhaps next time. Besides, whenever I leave the house, I don't like having bodyguards with me—it feels too restrictive!"

Chapter 597

"Moreover, I'm still pretty capable. I don't need bodyguards with me. Your main responsibilities are to protect my daughter, wife, and parents-in-law. Other than myself, everyone in my family needs to be accompanied by one or two bodyguards!" Fane gave some thought and continued, "I don't need all of you to follow us. Just one or two will do. You don't need to come together to shop for clothes." Elaine heard this and was suddenly depressed. She hung her head low and could not hold herself back from muttering. "You all should rest at home. Since I'm your master, you all should listen to me!" Fane said, looking at Elaine with a neutral expression. "Yes, master! We'll obey your every command in the future!" Elaine smiled. To have such a close conversation with the Supreme Warrior was enough for her for now.

“Let’s go, mother!” Fane quickly whisked Joan out for their shopping trip. The ten beauties, each carrying their own luggage, were quickly escorted by Jenny to their residence. Once the living arrangements were made, Jenny left. As soon as Jenny left, the beautiful bodyguards gathered. “Wow, Supreme Warrior looks even better the longer you look at him! I’ve never felt this way before. Previously, I thought he was just handsome. But now that I know that he’s the Supreme Warrior, he seems even more handsome to me!” Elaine looked excited and cradled herself in her arms. “Although he rejected me earlier, just being so close to him and having a conversation with him—his indifferent smile, his charming voice—it’s all moving me so deeply.” “Too bad, he’s already married. If he was single, we might still have hope.” Orchid sighed and said, “As long as Supreme Warrior wishes it, I’ll do anything for him. I really wish to bear his child and be his woman! Life will be worth living being the woman behind him!” “Yes, he’s married, but perhaps you can be his mistress? I know a warlord that just came home for a month and already got himself three wives. It can’t be helped. They’re way too charming!” Another young woman said, “How can you even compare him to our Supreme Warrior!” Orchid smiled forcefully, “Ah, let us just dream about this. It’s easier to climb to the heavens than to secure the love and affection of the Supreme Warrior. I heard that the George family daughter, Sharon George, is extremely beautiful. Furthermore, their family is so rich. Even she was rejected when she tried to pursue him. Do you ladies think we even have a chance?” After hearing this, the entire group sighed together. At this moment, in a different room, Xena had already taken a shower and changed into more comfortable clothes. She laid on her bed and could not resist muttering to herself, “Actually, Ben Taylor treats me quite well. He’s also not ugly, and Fane’s becoming richer. To have Fane as a brother-in-law would also be great as he can easily hand me a million yuan. I foresee that life like this can be really comfortable!” She paused. Thinking deeper, she muttered again, “If I don’t want to be the wife of the Taylor family, or if Ivan Taylor is the second heir and has billions of

properties, then marrying Ben Taylor is also a pretty good deal. It's not bad, at least I'd be able to live a better life than many other women. It's a pity their money is still too little. Humans will always strive higher, water will always flow lower. It's simply the order of nature. Brother-in-law, please don't blame me!" After she was done muttering, she picked up the phone and made a call to Ivan Taylor.

Chapter 598

"Ha, ha, my darling, why are you calling me? Do you miss me?" Ivan Taylor was on the other end of the line, teasing her. "Of course, I missed you. I haven't seen you in just a day but it feels like three autumns have passed. I'm afraid of being discovered by Ben. I have to make excuses every time just to secretly meet you!" Xena flirted with Ivan and said, "Hey, Ivan, did you know I was really scared to death today? You could've never seen me ever again. Fiona and I, both old women, were out for a stroll and we were suddenly kidnapped!" "What!" Ivan was shocked to hear this. He probed, "What happened? Who was the culprit? Are you okay?" Knowing that Ivan cared for her, Xena felt happy. She said, "Don't worry, we're both safe now. The important part of the story is that damn Fane. I don't know what's going on. He's offended the young master of the Xenos family from Sky Dragon City…" Xena quickly relayed the entire story to Ivan. Ivan heard it and exclaimed with joy, "F*ck, this is great!" Xena momentarily got angry. "What? How dare you say it's a great thing? If it weren't for Fane who rushed over in time and his mastery of martial arts, I'm afraid I would've been raped and killed if we only relied on the marshall that we were connected to! How dare you say it's a great thing? Ivan Taylor, do you not love me? Are you just using me?" Xena discovered at this moment that she did quite like Ivan Taylor. Even though Ivan was a sweet talker, he at least knew how to make people happy. Although she loved money, she was not a loose woman. She had already slept with Ivan Taylor so many times that she naturally wanted to marry him and become his woman—his enviable,

precious lady of the house. She did not expect Ivan to react this way to a scenario where she had been kidnapped and almost lost her life. She thought, ‘Damn this Ivan Taylor, how dare he say it’s a great thing.’ "No, that's not what I meant, baby. Don't be angry!" Ivan hurriedly comforted her and said, "I didn't mean you. I meant it’s great news that Fane offended the Xenos family. Don't you know that Dragon City was huge back in the day? It’s probably twice the size of Middle Province. There are many forces there, and there are many masters, and there are a lot of veterans going back this time. The Xenos family is a relatively large force in Sky Dragon City!" “You mean the Xenos family will take revenge on behalf of the Xenos young master?” Xena frowned after thinking for a while. On the other side of the phone, Ivan said, “Yes. Fane, this rascal, killed the young master of the Xenos family. It’d be surprising if he didn’t invite any trouble to himself. For such a large force, even if their clan or people aren’t good, they can use Fane’s own tactics to kill him off!” “That makes sense!” Xena finally understood and nodded. She said, “However, I’m afraid the Xenos family aren’t aware that their young master died. Even if they did, how would they know it was Fane? What if the Xenos young master failed to tell his family about his hatred for Fane?”

Chapter 599

“Ah, are you crazy? Don’t you want to live anymore? You don’t need to wait for their people to come over. We’ll find them ourselves and let them know about this. Let them come over and kill Fane. Isn’t it a simple matter?” The more Ivan thought about it, the more passionate he became. “F*ck, this Xenos family is scarier than the Clark family, Wilson family, and the Hugo family combined. They’re a lot more powerful. The most important thing is that they have money. As long as they have money, they can find masters who are able to execute the deal. Ha, ha, Fane’s surely dead this time!” “Hm, I wonder how Fane offended the Xenos family! Oh, I think I remember. In a battle, he said it was revenge for his master. His master’s King of War. Oh

yes, it must be Magnus Sutherland. If Fane did not tell about the God of War, Magnus Sutherland might not be dead...” Xena started thinking of all the possible conclusions and started drawing her hypotheses. “Xena, what are you thinking? How he offended them isn’t important. What’s important is that Fane’s really going to die this round!” Ivan squeezed his fists. He was in a really good mood. He said, “When he dies, we must have a good celebration, and at that moment, I’ll announce that you’re my girlfriend and let the whole Taylor family know. Ha, ha, it’s time to see if this useless Ben Taylor will be angered to death!” “I’ll take your word for it. Once Fane dies, you have to announce our relationship. I don’t want to go on sneaking around like this!” As Xena laid in bed, her figure appeared even more attractive. She said, “Oh yeah, this rascal Fane has already told us that we’ll be celebrating Selena’s birthday. Looks like he might not even make it until then!” “Doesn’t matter if he can’t make it. Ha, ha, we need to spread this news out as soon as possible. Tomorrow, I’ll make sure everyone knows it, from the Taylor family relatives to the best of the best—God of War. That will be the best!” Ivan laughed gleefully, “And when Fane’s dead, on Selena’s birthday, I’m afraid she’ll collapse. Once she does, how will she put up a fight with me for the Taylor family assets? At that point in time, Young Master Clark will be taking advantage of the situation and try to comfort her!” “That makes sense!” Xena nodded and said, “If that’s the case, should we still let him drink the medicine we used before? It looks like we won’t need to anymore, right? Ivan Taylor fell silent. After a pause, he said, “You still have to feed it to him. To be safe, the sooner the better. After all, this rascal isn’t weak in combat. In case the Xenos family underestimates how good he is on the battlefield, or if he escapes the ambush, it wouldn’t be so easy to find him again!” At this point, Ivan paused and said again, “If he takes the medicine, his body will get weaker by the day. His strength will be greatly reduced. When the Xenos family attacks him, it’d make it so much easier to kill him. This is a two-pronged approach to take his wretched life!” “Mm, if that’s the case, I’ll think of a way to get them out for a picnic

and an open-air barbeque!" Xena offered. "Mm, as to how you're going to get it done, you can think about it yourself. It'd be best if you can act on it from tomorrow onwards. The timing would be perfect because it takes exactly a month for the medicine to work, and by then, it'll coincide perfectly with Selena's birthday!" Xena nodded in agreement. The two of them chatted for a while longer before ending the call.

Chapter 600

At this very moment, Fane was at the shopping mall and had purchased many clothes for Joan. They also bought additional gold jewelry, gold earrings, and jade bangles. After a makeover, Joan's natural gentle elegance began to shine. "Not bad, not bad. Let's get this necklace, too. Just swipe the credit card!" Fane nodded satisfactorily and called for the receipts immediately. "Stop buying things, you've been spending too much money. Son, a penny earned is a penny saved. You don't have that much cash on hand with you. You and Selena are both still young, there will be many areas where you'll need to spend. Kylie's still young, and you may have more children. There'll be more and more expenses. Plus, you've just hired so many staff at home...so many bodyguards. All of this will cost a large sum of money…" Old habits die hard for Joan, and she still felt the pinch when Fane spent money. Today was a day where he had spent way too much on her. "Mother, don't worry. I don't lack money!" Fane took their purchases and followed Joan out. "Okay, I'll stop shopping. Let's go home. Mother, even if I wanted to buy the whole Drake family, it wouldn't be a problem. Do you still think I lack money?" Although Fane didn't want to go into too much detail about how much money he had, he needed to say something that would make his worried mother feel at ease. When Joan heard that, she took a deep breath and asked with a tremble in her voice, "That can't be. Son, are you really that rich? Is this for real? Don't lie to me." Fane laughed. Holding his mother's shoulders, he said, "Mother, please, stop worrying. I'm just giving you a sense or an estimation so you'll feel at ease. Please,

rest assured, your son is truly amazing. In the future, don't hold back. Just spend the money however you wish. You don't need to treat yourself like you did before. I'm your only close relative. I just want you to live a good life. That would make me feel at ease!" Fane paused and said, "I don't wish to tell anyone this. Firstly, I just want to live a peaceful life and I don't want to draw attention to myself. After all, the tree attracts the wind. Secondly, you've seen what my mother-in-law is like. If she knew how rich I was, the whole world would know about it in two days!" After listening to Fane's words, Joan nodded with satisfaction and said, "My son has really grown up and become an accomplished man. He's even become more calm and steady. A man who knows the value of restraint will be able to accomplish even greater things. My son, good job, you're my pride!" "Mother, please, stop complimenting me. When I was on the battlefield, there were so many times I almost died, especially last year. It truly was an extreme danger! However, I kept thinking of you and Selena waiting for me at home. That was the reason why no challenge could hold me back, and I overcame it all!" said Fane, laughing with gratitude. "Mm!" Joan nodded and said, "Fane, Selena is a great girl. You must treasure her. There have been so many rich young men trying to get close to her in recent years, trying to find a way to her heart. Faced with so many temptations, she was faithful and rejected them all. This type of girl is not easy to find!" "Mother, please, don't worry. I already told you that we'll be hosting a grand banquet for her birthday!" said Fane. The sky was getting darker. That night, the Xenos family of Sky Dragon City could no longer sit still. "Master, what should we do? Is the young master still uncontactable?" Next to the head of the Xenos family, an old man frowned slightly, worry lines appearing on his face. Drag Xenos nodded and said, "I haven't been able to reach him since yesterday afternoon. I've asked the staff, all the bodyguards that went out with him are also uncontactable!" At this point, his expression grew darker. He choked slightly and said, "I suspect that something has happened to them." "No way!" As the others heard this, they became frightened.

Chapter 601

“Who dares lay a hand upon our young master? Does he have a death wish?” It was another middle-aged man who spoke. His body was jacked with muscles, and he looked very sturdy from a glance. “I know. He’s got a death wish! F*ck. There’s no need to be afraid of some so-called powerhouse from Middle Province!” Another elder also spoke up, extremely furious, “We need to investigate the issue and find the culprit behind our young master’s death. We must kill him!” Yet Drag shook his head. “I think we should all just leave under the cover of the night. It’s not safe for us here any longer!” “Why? Master, we’ve got plenty of villas and factories here, and our company’s here, too. Are you saying that you don’t want them any longer?” One of the men wore a perplexed expression, unable to comprehend why his master would make such a decision. “Quil was likely to have been with Marshal Zain. If Quil’s dead, and so are his bodyguards, Marshal Zain would’ve called me!” Drag released a sigh. “But the Marshal hasn’t called, which means that he’s probably dead, too. We’ve provoked someone who shouldn’t have been provoked now. Middle Province is small, but don’t forget that plenty of war veterans have returned to the city, and there are plenty of Majors and Kings of War there. They even have a Goddess of War among them!” “So, what you’re trying to say is that we’ve probably provoked a powerful veteran, sir? And it’s highly likely that they’re a King or God of War?” One of the elders surmised after he thought about the matter in silence. Drag nodded his head. “Quil had said that Fane was the one who leaked the secret to the Gods of War, and they had only killed my brother, Magnus, in a fit of rage. I suspect that they caused some trouble for Fane which then, happened to attract the attention of the Gods of War. If that were the case, it’d been extremely unfortunate!” Boom! At this moment, a frightening explosion resounded from outside. Boom boom boom! The terrifying cacophony of a fight immediately followed. Whoosh! A bodyguard of the Xenos family immediately rushed in. “Bad news, sir.

Someone’s ambushing our place. He’s in the mood for slaughter—and he’s very strong. I think he’s the famous King of War, Skylar Celestino!” Drag instantly plopped onto his seat when he heard that, fearful. “We’re screwed. We’re completely, absolutely, screwed. Skylar is an eight-star King of War, an experienced fighter. No one in Sky Dragon City can hope to match his fighting prowess—what more someone from the Xenos family!” “Ah. We’re too late. We probably would’ve survived if we’d left just a little earlier!” An elder sighed. It was too late now. The King of War was already there, ready for blood. Bam bam bam! Three resounding crashes echoed consecutively, and three of the Xenos family’s fighters were thrown into the room. They lay on the ground, breathless. “My apologies for the intrusion, but your young master offended someone who even I dare not offend. All the Xenos family can do now is to blame their unlucky stars!” Skylar’s eyes were icy cold. He stood there, an immovable mountain of pure strength.

Chapter 602

It did not even take an hour for a single man to obliterate the powerful Xenos family of Sky Dragon City. The powerhouses in Sky Dragon City were all extremely shocked when they learned about what had happened. This was the strength of a King of War—the terror of an eight-star King of War. Such power was far beyond the likes of normal powerhouses. As to how the Xenos family provoked such a King of War, no one had the answer. They only knew that the young master of the Xenos family had stirred some trouble in Middle Province, thus, provoking this frightening enemy. … “Dad, Mom, we haven’t gone for a picnic in such a long time. Why don’t we take Fane, Selena, and Kylie to the countryside for a picnic tomorrow? How about that?” Over the dining table, Xena suggested after she thought about it. “Sure. I happen to be free tomorrow, and it’s been a long time since I’ve gone out with Kylie. Since tomorrow’s a Saturday, let’s go!” Selena said, smiling when she heard about the idea. “Alright. Heh. Now that we’re rich, we can just drive away whenever we want to relax, and buy some stuff

for a riverside barbecue!" Ben chuckled. He could not help himself from shooting a glance at Xena beside him. "Who knew you'd learn to enjoy life more and more!" "Why not? I was thinking we should all go out and have fun together!" Xena smiled. When Xena and Selena had returned earlier, they did not catch sight of the ten beautiful bodyguards. Who knew that at this moment, all ten bodyguards were wearing white sneakers and denim shorts, revealing their long, sexy legs. They wore loose-fitting T-shirts, giving off a seductive yet relaxed aura. "Master, take a look. How are the working clothes we chose?" The ten beauties filed into a single line after they came in. Elaine stepped forward and posed the question to Fane, grinning. The beauties were all garbed in such uniformed dressing—it had to be said that it looked very easy on the eyes. Besides, each of them was full of life and vibrancy from a glance. "You–you look great!" Ben frowned after he observing them. "These are the bodyguards of the Taylor family? These are our bodyguards? Why didn't I see them in the afternoon?" One of the bodyguards immediately stepped forward. "Are you Young Master Ben? We rested for a while in the afternoon before we went to get some clothes," she explained. "We've just arrived home, so we decided to try on our clothes for everyone to see. Are you satisfied with this?" "Young Master Ben?" Elation sparked in Ben's heart when he heard that. That was right. He was a Taylor as well, and he was a young master of the family. He should have been living the life of an affluent young master from the start. Unfortunately, five years ago, he had been kicked out of the Taylor family when he was still young because of the affair between his sister and Fane. It made him a laughingstock—trash of society who everyone sneered and looked down upon—a useless scum who only knew how to play video games. When he was younger, the children of other affluent families who had been his playmates had all abandoned him eventually. Being addressed so respectfully again caused a swirl of emotions to stir within his heart. That was right. He was Young Master Ben from the very start. Finally, he was

getting the respect he deserved! “What’s wrong, Young Master Ben? What happened?” The bodyguard asked, puzzled.

Chapter 603

“It’s nothing!” Ben smiled awkwardly and continued eating. “You look good!” Fane also smiled. “But those words on your chests, ‘the Bodyguards of the Taylor Family’, that’s too attention-grabbing. It’s like you’re trying to tell everyone that the Taylor family has bodyguards!” “Does it matter? We’re rich now. Isn’t it normal to hire bodyguards?” Fiona grinned. “We’ll be going to the countryside for a picnic tomorrow, but since Fane is coming with us, you all won’t have to come along. You’ll only have to follow us if Xena and I go out shopping in the afternoon! Just two of you will do. It’ll be too striking if too many of you were to come!” “Yes, ma’am. Then we’ll take our leave and patrol the area!” Elaine smiled and brought her bodyguards out. “Yay! We’re going out tomorrow!” Kylie was extremely elated, her gaze filled with anticipation. After dinner, Kylie returned to her room to rest. Meanwhile, Fane and Selena took a shower and laid on their bed. “We can’t let Kylie know what happened this morning. She’d be worried!” Selena spoke after thinking about it. Fane nodded. “Agreed. I never thought Quil would be so bold. Never mind that he lashed out against me, he even hired people to kidnap you and Xena—and even Mother!” A frown formed between Selena’s brows. “Now, Quil is dead. I did some digging of my own and found out that there are two Xenos families in Sky Dragon City, and they’re both pretty strong. We don’t know which family he belongs to, but it doesn’t matter. They’ll probably come to you for revenge once they find out that you killed Quil!” After she said that, Selena thought about it for a while before she added, “Dear, did you hire so many bodyguards because you were worried about this?” Fane looked at her picture-perfect face before him. “I hired them because I’m worried about you and your mother’s safety the next time you go out. Besides, we’re rich now. It’s normal to hire bodyguards!” Here, he paused for a bit before

continuing nonchalantly, “As for the Xenos family, don’t worry about that. It won’t be easy for them to find out the truth since I took no prisoners. Besides, there’s always a solution to a problem. If we really can’t avoid conflict, I’m pretty good friends with the Goddess of War—we can go to her for help!” Selena’s anxiety finally eased after she heard what her husband said. She bobbed her head. “By the way, Xena’s really weird. She’s never initiated a family outing before, and even if she did, it’d usually just be her and Ben. Why would she think of including us in her plans this time?” Fane’s brows furrowed. “You also thought it was strange, dear? Heh. I thought so, too. Seems like Xena did a one-eighty flip. Perhaps she’s in a good mood today because I gave her one million bucks?” Selena’s expression darkened when she heard that. “She’s definitely seeing a man on the side while using my brother as a cover,” she said, vexed. “Didn’t we say that we’d find that man and break my brother’s heart once we had evidence? Why did you go and give her money instead?” After she said that, she rolled her eyes at Fane. “Don’t tell me that you gave her money because she’s good-looking?” “Her?” Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry. “Not only is she unattractive compared to you, but she’s also unattractive even compared to Sharon. Why would I give her money because she’s good-looking? It’s like this…” Selena’s anger only abated after she listened to Fane’s explanation. “So you’re trying to get her to lower her guard and reveal her true colors later on!” Fane nodded. “But I still don’t get why she suddenly asked us all to go out!”

Chapter 604

“I know. I really don’t understand. Is it because you saved her and gave her a million bucks, or has she really had a change of heart?” Selena speculated for a moment. “A change of heart?” Fane flashed a frosty smile. “A leopardess like this can never change her spots. She’s extremely greedy—even greedier than your mother. There’s a possibility that she’s got some devious scheme in the works for tomorrow!” “No way. We’re going out and

she’s scheming?” Selena smiled and lay down after turning the lights off. “Let’s go to sleep!” Fane hugged her from behind. “Dear, we were interrupted by Kylie last night, but she’s asleep in her room now. Should we…” “Seriously? Why are you always thinking of such perverted things, you b*stard!” Panic suddenly gripped Selena’s chest. There was a hint of coyness in her tone. Fane was delighted when he sensed that coyness. He decided to continue with the game. He flipped Selena over and pressed his mouth against hers. “Mmph!” Selena was extremely nervous, but she wrapped her slim, tapered hands around Fane anyway. The two became one. The next morning, Selena stretched her body after she woke up. Her face was slightly flushed, and her skin looked bright and clear. “You’re beautiful, dear!” Fane stared at her, goggle-eyed. “Hmph. You didn’t even ask for my permission last night and you went ahead and bullied me!” Selena harrumphed, but warmth emanated from her belly. To be fair, she had been dead drunk on her wedding night and could not remember anything that had happened between them. “Heh, your entire face is red, dear. I think I’m falling deeper and deeper in love with you!” Fane chuckled and hugged Selena who had just gotten off the bed. “Since when did you learn how to speak such sweet nothings!” Selena picked her clothes up from the floor and rolled her eyes at him. “Turn around. I’m changing!” Selena’s cheeks were stained red as she forcibly turned Fane around. Fane spoke, grinning as his heart was just as full of warmth as before. It seemed that the two were just about to begin a passionate love story. “Agh, so annoying. Quiet, you!” Selena was so embarrassed that she wanted to dig a hole and bury herself in it. After she finished changing, she ran over and gave Fane a vicious pinch on the back. “I never thought you’d have such wild moments too, dear!” Yet Fane turned around and embraced her, not the least bit irritated. He planted a kiss on her forehead. “All right. Let’s wash up and head down for breakfast!” “All right!” Selena resembled a preening cat in Fane’s embrace, purring with delight. The smile on her face was small and sweet. Before, she had hoped to experience this feeling—that she was protected. However,

she had no choice but to be strong for her family when Fane was not around. She had no choice but to be a strong, independent woman who had to carry the weight of her family on her shoulders.

Chapter 605

Now that Fane was back, she had hope. “Right. No matter what happens, you have to promise me one thing, dear!” Selena lifted her chin and told Fane. “What is it? I’ll promise you anything!” Fane smiled. “We must find the man Xena’s seeing. She’s extremely clever, so we have to be cautious not to alert her!” Selena thought about it for a while. Then she said, huffing, “Xena has my brother and my parents eating out of her palm now. They won’t believe whatever you and I say. That’s why we have to catch them in the act and let my brother see who she really is. Only then will he completely give up on her!” “All right, I get it. Don’t worry. I’ll be discreet, and I’ll catch the man she’s seeing!” Fane nodded and promised. After they washed up, they went into Kylie’s room to wake her up before the three went down for breakfast. When breakfast was done, everyone got into their cars and drove to a small river in the countryside. They set up their barbecue pit, took out the ingredients, and began grilling the food. There were usually plenty of people barbecuing around the area since it was specially reserved for barbecues. There were even hired staff to clear the place. However, they would need to pay 20 bucks to use the facilities. On one side, there was a public toilet, as well as a few pavilions for everyone to rest and play. Not too far away was a fairly large supermarket. Business was pretty good in a place like this. “Mmph! It’s so good!” Kylie relished her chicken skewer. “It’s a little hot today. You and Ben are drenched in sweat, Fane!” Xena smiled. She had been calling out Fane’s name in an endearing tone since they left the house that morning. It was evident that she was a lot closer to him now. “Oh, right. Thanks for yesterday, Fane. I would’ve been dead if it weren’t for you. You’re my savior!” Xena smiled and added, “I’ll go to the supermarket and buy some water for all of you!” “Heh. Don’t sweat it.

We’re family. I couldn’t just leave you to die. Consider your debt paid as long as you continue your loving relationship with Ben!” Fane chuckled as he replied. “Don’t worry. It’ll happen!” Xena stood up and wheeled around, heading toward the supermarket. She arrived at the supermarket and bought quite a few bottles of mineral water. She looked at Fane from a distance. Once she was sure that no one was around, she opened one of the bottles and popped the medicine into it. Of course, the pill was amazing. It completely dissolved and no one could tell that it was poisoned. Once the poison was completely invisible to the naked eye, Xena heaved an internal sigh of relief. She capped the bottle and placed it on top of the bag, walking towards Fane and the others. She was well aware that Fane was intelligent. If she gave him the bottle that had an opened cap, he would definitely be suspicious. However, she was not an idiot either. She placed the bag on the ground when she arrived at Fane’s side and immediately took the bottle, wrenching its cap off. She thrust it to him. “Here, Fane. Drink some water. Look at you. You’re bathing in sweat!” “Oh!” Fane frowned. Xena was being a little too nice to him. Still, it was just a bottle of water. He was probably reading too much into it. He took the bottle from her. “Thanks!”

Chapter 606

From the side, Ben’s brows furrowed as he was grilling the meat. He could not comprehend the scene before him. He was Xena’s boyfriend, not Fane. Why was she never this considerate with him? Furthermore, Fane was his brother-in-law. Xena’s actions twisted his guts. Xena’s heart leaped in excitement when Fane took the bottle. She immediately whipped out another bottle and opened it for Ben. “Here you go, Ben. You’re drenched in sweat, too!” “Okay!” Ben was delighted. He instantly snatched the bottle and took a big gulp out of it. “We’ll grab it ourselves!” Selena forced a polite smile but was not very happy. Fane was her husband. Since when was Xena responsible for caring for him? Besides, she even opened the cap for him. This was being a little too friendly. Even if she did that, she should have

given the bottle to Ben first. Why did she let Fane take it first? Here, Selena could not help but suspect that she was beginning to like Fane just because he saved her yesterday, and because he had given her a million bucks. Even if she did not like him, it was possible that she was trying to seduce him now that she knew that he was rich, so that she could siphon some money from him. At this moment, Fane took the bottle and was about to take a sip, but he stopped. Xena frowned. Was Fane able to detect even a colorless, tasteless poison? Anxiety clutched at her heart when she considered the possibility. Fane was someone who could kill without blinking. He would probably give her a single punch and send her into oblivion if he found out she tried to poison him. Her expression darkened. She stared at Fane, trepidation pounding in her chest. She felt as though she could hear her own pulse. “What’s wrong, Fane? Aren’t you thirsty?” Xena gulped and posed the question tentatively. Fane craned his head to look at her and flashed a wan smile. “Of course, I’m thirsty!” After saying that, he tilted his head back and gulped the water down, drinking more than half of it in one go. In the end, only a little bit was left. He carelessly flung it into the trash can beside him. He was well aware that there was something in the water—and he was even more aware of what exactly was in it. For a brief moment, a murderous intent surged within Fane. He wanted to shred that d*mn b*tch apart. However, he quickly toned down on his anger. He remembered what Selena had told him that morning, and he remembered his promise to her—that he would not alert Xena to his actions. They needed to weed out the man she was seeing, and they needed to show Ben that Xena was seeing someone else behind his back. Besides, Ben was here now, and so were Fiona and the others. He would have no way to explain himself if he killed Xena. Would they even believe him if he told them the water was poisoned? The poison would probably take about a month to manifest, so he would be fine for now, almost as if he had never drunk any poison. Would they believe him? A poison like this was truly dangerous. More importantly, even if they did believe him, Xena would never admit to it. They would not be able to

do anything if she insisted that she did not know anything, and she would probably shift the blame to the bottled water company. Xena heaved an internal sigh of relief when she saw Fane drinking the water—and plenty of it to boot. He probably did not know anything. Otherwise, he would not have drank nearly the entire bottle in one go. There would be absolutely no evidence then. “Come on, let’s eat! The wings are ready!”

Chapter 607

Fane distributed the freshly barbecued wings to everyone. After a while, he stood up. “Take your time eating it. I’m going to the toilet.” After he ducked into a cubicle, he whipped out a silver needle and pricked his skin on several acupuncture points. “Blech!” At that moment, he vomited all the poison in his stomach. Fane flashed a cold smile after he kept the silver needle away. “This poison isn’t a bad idea at all, but it’s shallow of her to try to kill me with this!” He walked out nonchalantly. At around one in the afternoon, everyone packed up and drove home. Xena retreated to her room to rest once they arrived home. Meanwhile, Fane took Selena out for a stroll through the small patch of forest outside their villa. “What on earth happened to Xena? She hated your guts before, and now she’s treating you like a god. Never mind her buying water for you—she even opened the cap for you!” Selena was still unhappy when she thought about what had happened earlier. “Heh. Selena, she’s not being nice to me. She drugged that bottle of water!” Yet, Fane gave her a frosty smile. “If I hadn’t promised you that I’d remain discreet just so we can weed out the man she’s seeing, I would’ve killed her on the spot!” “What?!” Selena was shocked. “That–that bottle was poisoned? No way. Didn’t she just buy it?” Fane smiled again. “She did, but she dropped the poison in before giving it to me. She even pretended to open the cap for me because she was afraid I’d realize the cap had been opened before!” “My god. No way. I really thought she had turned over a new leaf just because you saved her and that she wanted to establish a good relationship with you. Who knew the witch would dare to poison you!”

Selena was extremely angry. “God. You’re such an idiot, dear,” she quickly added, frightened. “Why did you drink that water, then? And you drank almost all of it!” “Heh. Don’t worry. Your husband is a miracle doctor. I’ve solved this little problem a long time ago!” Fane chuckled and spoke, “The poison will probably take about a month to manifest if you don’t treat it, but since I’ve treated it, it won’t be a problem.” “I’m so mad! I’m going to kill that b*tch!” The more Selena thought about it, the angrier she became. Xena was really rotten to the core. Fortunately, Fane was a doctor and sensed that something was off soon enough to cure himself of the poison. What would happen if it happened to a regular joe? Was she really going to resign herself to the fate of a widow? However, she only took two steps before Fane dragged her back. “What are you doing? You’re going to alert her if you do this. Besides, what proof do you have now? If you go, she might just turn the tables on us and knock you down senseless instead, and she’ll frame us both. Your brother and your mother won’t believe you. They’ll definitely think you’re still against her!” “But I just get so frustrated when I think about it!” Selena was so angry that she stomped her foot against the ground. “Don’t worry. I’m going to use her own trick against her. She thinks that I drank that poison so naturally, she’d want to report the entire situation to her man. I believe someone’s manipulating her actions from behind the scenes because no ordinary person can procure that poison so easily!” Fane smiled. He was well aware that the poison Xena had fed him was probably the same poison Ken and Neil had intended to give Fiona, which would have been fed to him eventually. That was why he surmised that the man behind Xena’s back was probably Ken Clark or Neil Hugo. They knew that she was someone who would do anything for money, and that was probably why they had instructed her to administer the poison on him.

Chapter 608

“You’re right. It’s frustrating, but we have to hold our anger back for now. I believe our enemy doesn’t have any precautions set in place. He’ll

definitely reveal himself soon!" Selena finally calmed down after a while. How could she not control herself when Fane was able to control himself and drink the poison even after knowing that the water had been poisoned? The only thing she could do was to hold it all in—for the sake of her brother and her parents so that they would not be blinded any further by this woman. "Do we have any countermeasures? Or do we just wait like this?" Selena could not help but say after thinking about it, "I really think we should hurry up and catch that b*tch while she's with the man." Fane flashed a bitter smile. "I'm just worried that this man isn't in an intimate relationship with her. It'll be impossible for us to catch them on the same bed. What if the man just wanted to use Xena to give the poison to me? What if he had already given Xena some down payment earlier? She would have the money to buy all those clothes and our judgment would've been wrong!" Selena also nodded. "You're right. If that were the case, my brother will have zero trust in you!" Fane also frowned. Dealing with this entire scenario was harder than slaughtering enemies on the battlefield. He noticed that Xena had been buying new clothes and bags quite frequently. She dressed more seductively, as well. Both he and Selena had assumed that she was seeing a man on the side and that she had traded her body for money. They thought she was seeing two men at the same time. However, Xena poisoning him today caused Fane some uncertainty about his initial judgment. If the man had only given her money to administer poison, how was he going to explain it to Ben? "I really think we need to be super cautious about everything we do!" The crease between Selena's brows deepened. She did not want to waste a single moment because having a woman like Xena right beside her was like being with a viper in a pit. Today, she had given Fane the poison. In the future, she might give it to Ben, or her parents. For a woman as venomous as her, they needed to reveal her true colors as soon as possible. "Dear, do you have such little faith in your husband?" Fane flashed her a bitter smile. "I've told the bodyguards at the gate a long time ago to keep tabs on her. If they see Xena walking out alone, without a bodyguard or Ben,

they'll report it to me in secret," he said. "I've also secretly installed a bug and tracking device on her today." "Seriously? You're amazing, dear!" Selena was suddenly delighted when she heard that. She impulsively flung her arms around Fane's neck, giving him a peck on the cheek. "Now I know you've had a plan all along, dear." "Of course. Xena's very cunning. It'll be difficult to unravel her schemes if we don't do some scheming of our own." When Fane pressed a button on his side, he could hear everything she was doing. "All right, Ben. It's getting late. Rest nicely at home and wait for me. My friends have asked me out for karaoke." Xena's voice drifted. Fane and Selena shared a glance when they heard this. Their hearts leaped in delight. Was Xena really going to head out alone? This was too much of a coincidence. They actually heard what they wanted to hear the moment they decided to eavesdrop on her. Ben's voice rang out as well. "Bring me along, Xena. I'm a pretty good singer, too. I'm so bored at home. You never bring me out when you see your friends!" Xena replied, "Why would you come along? They won't be happy if you're with me. We've already said that we wouldn't bring others to our meetings, and we wouldn't bring men along. Us girls are only able to completely relax when we're singing on our own!"

Chapter 609

Xena paused for a while before resuming, "Right. Don't call me at night either, okay? We always play a game during our gatherings where we'd put all of our phones on the table, and the owner of the phone that's the first to ring will be the one to pick up the bill. We always end up spending over ten thousand bucks, so I definitely don't want to pay. We have to save up a bit. Understand?" "Then, when will you be back?" Ben's voice rang from the listening device again. "Seriously, Ben? Why do I feel like you've been nagging at me more and more lately? My friends and I always hang out, drinking until late in the night. What do you mean 'when am I coming back'? Of course, we're going to go to a hotel to sleep. I'll come back in the morning!" Xena was getting a little impatient. "All right, I'm off. See you

tomorrow!” Soon after, they heard the thud of a closing door. It seemed that Xena had gone out. Fane and Selena heard the clicking of heels from outside, growing softer as the sound faded into the distance and followed its master down the stairs. “Dear, it seems like Xena’s going to see that man. This is a golden opportunity for us!” Selena spoke. Fane nodded. “She definitely thinks that I’ve been poisoned. Now, she either can’t wait to ask for her reward or she’s going to report the incident to him. As to whether she’s in an intimate relationship with that man, I don’t dare to ascertain just yet.” “I do think they’re in a physical relationship!” Selena mulled over it for a while, then she spoke in a solemn tone, “I have a strong feeling that they are since she’s so secretive about it. She wouldn’t do this if they weren’t in a physical relationship. Secondly, never mind that she’s been dressing more provocatively lately, she’s also been spraying on some heavy perfume. The possibility of them being lovers is very large.” “All right. I trust your judgment. We can call your brother now and find our proof!” Fane gave her a small smile and together, they left their room. They also temporarily disabled the eavesdropping function on the device, only leaving the tracking function on. “Mr. Fane…” They did not expect the bodyguard at the entrance to approach them as soon as they exited. “Mr. Fane, Xena…” It was evident he had come over to report the situation. “Never mind,” Fane interrupted him. “I know what’s going on. Go down now!” The bodyguard nodded and went down. Fane and Selena stood in front of Ben’s room, their insides stirring with uneasiness. In the end, Selena sighed heavily before knocking on the door. “Sis? Fane? What’s going on?” Ben stared at the two of them suspiciously when he opened the door. “Let’s go. Don’t forget that promise you and Fane made. If you find her with another man, you’ll kill her yourself. Right?” Selena’s expression darkened as she looked at her brother, utterly solemn.

Chapter 610

“Sis, what are you talking about? Hasn’t she gone for a karaoke session with her girlfriends?” Ben frowned. His features twisted into a slight grimace. Now that his sister and Fane came over looking for him, they probably had some measure of certainty in themselves. He never wanted to believe what they said, but he himself felt that Xena had changed a lot lately. She would frequently go out with her so-called girlfriends, and she would never bring him along. Still, he harbored hopes that everything was a fluke and that he was reading too much into her actions. He hoped that Fane would never find his evidence, and he definitely hoped that Xena would wed him and that they would have the wedding soon. Yet this day had come, and it had arrived so soon, too. Fane and Selena were both standing at his door. “How can you be so idiotic, brother? Both of you are about to get married. She’s your fiancée. Why wouldn’t she bring you along if she’s going to see her girlfriends for karaoke? Besides, this isn’t just a one-time thing, right?” Selena was speechless for a while before she spoke with a tinge of disappointment. “But Sis, she herself said that her girlfriends don’t bring outsiders along and that they can only loosen up when they’re alone among themselves. That’s why she doesn’t bring me along…” Ben insisted on believing in Xena. “So…are you coming along? She’s definitely going to see a man. Don’t tell me you’re chickening out now? Heh. Why are you so scared if you trust her so much?” Selena spoke with irritation in her voice, her arms folded across her chest. “Let’s go, then. I refuse to believe she’ll do something like that to me after all I’ve done for her!” Ben clenched his palm into a fist and stomped out of the door, trudging down the stairs. Selena shot Fane a glance and the two immediately trailed after him. The three quickly got into a car and drove out. “But Sis, Xena has been out for a few good minutes now. Can we even find her? Don’t tell me you know where she is.” Ben’s heart palpitated as he sat at the back. He knew that Fane was clever and that he would always have a plan in wait. Since he and his sister had brought him out so confidently, they probably had pretty good proof already. Selena, who sat beside Fane, took his phone out. She turned it on

and showed it to Ben. “You two planted a tracking device on her?” Ben watched the flashing dot on the screen moving forward. His expression darkened. “We had no choice. Xena’s extremely sneaky. We’d be found out long ago if we didn’t do this. That’s why the best method is to let her go first before following her.” Selena’s lips curled into a bitter smile. Although she felt that this method was a little underhanded, she had no choice but to go along with it for the sake of her little brother, so that he would finally open his eyes to the truth. “She stops! It’s the Grand Star Hotel!” Selena yelled abruptly as she quickly realized that the red dot stopped moving as soon as it arrived at the Grand Star Hotel.

Chapter 611

After she spoke her last word, she wheeled around to look at Ben. His face went white, as though an artist had forgotten to put any color on his face. A few seconds of silence filled the car before Ben blurted awkwardly, “There are several restaurants on the first floor. Perhaps she made an appointment with her girlfriends to have dinner first, or perhaps they agreed to meet at the hotel before they head out for karaoke? Isn’t it normal?” Ben paused for a moment and then his face lit up as if some idea popped up in his mind. “Look! Aren’t there a few bars next to the Grand Star Hotel? They could’ve just parked their cars in the hotel’s parking lot and plan to walk over to these bars, right? That’s possible, too! So, Sis, don’t simply make assumptions. I believe in Xena—she’s not a slutty person!” Selena was stunned. She could not believe that up until this moment, her dear brother still had so much trust in Xena, siding her without hesitation. A cold smile crossed her face as she snorted, “Hah! My dear brother, how could you still believe in her? Can’t you tell how cunning and vicious she is? Didn’t you feel she was acting strange when we went for the barbeque this morning?” “Acting strangely? Which part of her behavior was strange? I didn’t see it!” Ben frowned. The folds between his brows grew deeper as he tried to recall any strange act from Xena. Suddenly, he shouted out of nowhere, “Oh! Sis, are you

referring to when Xena handed Fane a bottle of water? Are you jealous because of that? If that's the case, Sis, you're being oversensitive! It's just a bottle of water, what's the matter?" A frosty smile returned to Selena's face. "Just a bottle of water? Do you know what was in that bottle of water…" Selena briefly recounted the episode to Ben. "Impossible! Xena's no such person! How could she do such a thing? Somebody must have threatened her to do so! Yes! This must be the case, somebody had threatened her!" The truth could not reach Ben's ears. He refused to believe it. In his heart, Xena was almost a symbol of an angel—pure and innocent. She had never allowed Ben to touch her even after being together for so long. She told him to wait until the day of their wedding night. Only then, would she allow him to touch her. A pure-hearted angelic girl like Xena would be hard to find in this world. He truly believed that he was so fortunate to meet such a perfect girl. As for the fact that Xena always wore sexy and provocative clothing and loved dressing up, that was because Xena was a fan of fashion! There was nothing wrong with her pursuit of fashion. Not to mention, the love for beauty is a woman's nature. Fane drove the car and parked outside the Grand Star Hotel as they spoke. He grabbed his phone from Selena and said in a firm and solemn tone, "Ben, this button will turn on the eavesdropping function of the device that I've secretly planted under her bag. This small device not only helps to track but also to listen to the sound around it. The only flaw is that this device can't record their voices. However, I believe that the eavesdropping function is sufficient for us to know whether or not Xena's meeting her girlfriends as she said. Once I turn on this button, we'll know the truth!" Fane stopped for a moment before he resumed, "The red dot has stopped in this area. This indicates that Xena has arrived at her destination. Now, do you dare turn on the function to listen in on her?" Ben gritted his teeth, stretched out his finger, and finally tapped on the button on the screen. "Baby, finally you're here! You've made me wait for so long!" A man's voice came from the phone. "Jeez. I have to sneak out every time I want to see you. I even have to look at the rearview

mirror when I drive to make sure nobody follows me. You've made me into a thief now. Ivan, I don't want to live a fearful life like this anymore!" A coy woman's voice emerged in the next second. It belonged to Xena. "Ivan Taylor!" Fane and Selena exchanged glances in unison. Their eyes widened at the fact. They had their guesses and made a lot of speculations, but Ivan Taylor had never crossed their minds. How could they have guessed that the b*stard Xena was seeing was Ivan Taylor! Moreover, judging from the conversation itself, it was obvious that this was not the first time they were together—they must have been together for a very long time. Selena switched her gaze over to Ben. This time, Ben was no longer calm. He clenched his fists and gritted his teeth, staring straight at the phone. Rage was consuming him alive. The veins on his neck were popping out, and at the same time, his eyes reddened.

Chapter 612

"How could it be him?" Selena's forehead puckered. She was at a loss for words. If Xena was with the others, it would not cause this much emotional damage. How could it be Ivan Taylor? Even Fane's face turned gloomy at this fact. After all, Ivan was Selena's cousin. If it was Ken Clark or the others, Fane could have just ended their lives without thinking twice. Ken and the others were always targeting Fane and his family. They even wanted to slit Fane's throat. If the poison was given by Ken, Fane would have no worries about killing him. However, if the person behind it was Ivan Taylor, the situation became more complicated. Ivan is a Taylor and Selena's cousin, after all. If he sent him to the grave, it would be too much. Besides, Ivan had never inflicted grave harm on Fane before, other than hatred mockeries and contempts. Furthermore, if Old Master Taylor knew that Fane had killed his only grandson—Ivan Taylor—he would spew blood to death. Not to mention, Xena was the one who initiated the dirty deed and had offered herself to Ivan. Hence, Ivan could not be blamed completely. Besides, the Taylor family's anger would spike if Fane killed Ivan just

because of their secret affair. After all, one hand cannot clap alone. It was not as if Ivan had forced Xena into this. “Dear, what do you say? I’ll follow you!” Feeling uneasy to decide after considering all the possibilities, Fane threw the ball to Selena, letting her decide. “Xena, this woman, I’ll let my brother end her. As for Ivan Taylor, hmmm, it wouldn’t be a good idea to kill him. He’s responsible for the South Hill Real Estate projects and he’s my cousin, too. If we kill over this matter, Grandpa Taylor won’t be satisfied.” After giving some thought to the situation, Selena opened her mouth, “However, it doesn’t matter if Xena was the one who offered herself to him or he went to Xena first. We can’t let this slide. Beat him up, hard! Make him bedridden for at least half a month!” “By the way, I’ve some great news to tell you!” Xena’s voice rang from the phone again. “Oh, what’s making you so giggly?” Ivan returned, smilingly. “The good-for-nothing b*stard Fane drank the poisoned water yesterday! And he’s completely unaware of it! Haha!” Xena beamed and her mouth curved into a wicked smile. “As long as this b*stard dies, you can announce our relationship in front of everyone in the Taylor family. I’ll officially be your girlfriend then I won’t have to be with Ben the hopeless waste any longer!” “Did you really give Fane the poison? Are you sure?” Ivan’s surprised voice contained a hint of disbelief. He had been looking forward to this day for a very long time! “Of course, I’m sure! Yesterday, I purposely suggested going on a barbeque picnic. He was responsible for the grilling, which made him sweat like a pig. So, I volunteered to buy them some drinks and seized the opportunity to put the poison pill into his bottle of water. I pretended to help him open the bottle before handing it to him. I seriously didn’t expect that he’d drink the whole bottle of water in one go without questioning anything…” As she narrated the incident, brazenness and arrogance could be heard in Xena’s tone as though she had accomplished a glorious deed. “Muahahaha! Well done, Xena, well done! Also, it’s just one month away from Selena’s birthday, and that day will also be Fane’s memorial day. His body will become weaker and weaker as the days pass, and in his last two

days, his body will fester. Hmph! Everyone will celebrate when he dies!" Ivan laughed aloud, and then added, "Babe, come here. Let me undress you. You deserve a good reward from me!" "Aww. You're so cute when you're impatient to get me!" Xena's voice was full of coquetry. "Haha! You little imp. You don't say what you think, do you?" Ivan let out a laugh. In the car, Ben was burning with so much anger he was about to explode. It turned out that what Fane and his sister had been saying was true, that Xena, this slutty woman, had long been in private affairs with other men. Moreover, Fane's statement about Xena poisoning him was proved to be true, too. Never did he expect that Xena was such a woman—a rotten and dirty woman. What she said about him—a hopeless trash—was completely beyond his imagination as well. She was nasty! "Oh, right. Don't forget to buy me a villa, too!"

Chapter 613

Xena's voice appeared again. Ben gnashed his teeth as the anger thrummed through his veins. He stretched out his hand and tapped the button on the screen, turning off the listening device. In the next second, he got out of the car and strode towards the hotel. "Let's go!" Fane and Selena exchanged quick glances before getting out of the car to follow behind Ben. The three appeared at the front desk of the hotel in a flash. "Please check which room Ivan Taylor is staying in!" Fane commanded with a frosty expression. "Mr., our customer's information is confidential. I'm sorry but I can't tell you…" The female receptionist replied politely. Without further ado, Fane pulled out a stack of bills from his wallet and slapped them on the desk. "You have two choices here. First, find out the room and the money belongs to you. Second, I'll kill you right away!" Fane's words had successfully frightened the female receptionist. She knew that there were many people in this world that she could not afford to offend. Even their boss would not provoke such a person. Clearly, Fane fit into the definition of 'such a person'. The female receptionist frantically typed on the keyboard and searched through the

system. “Room five-oh-two!” she yelled. Fane let out an icy laugh. “I’m glad you brought your brain with you today!” The stack of bills was left on the receptionist’s desk. The three of them strode towards the elevator and took it to the fifth floor. Soon, they arrived outside of Room 502. “Oh no! It’s a keycard door! We can’t open it!” The skin between Selena’s brows crinkled when she noticed the hotel room door was inaccessible. Bang! However, the top-notch quality door was kicked wide open with just a single kick from Fane. After the three entered the room abruptly, Xena—who was lying in the bed—emitted a piercing scream. She was so frightened that she hid under the blanket, using it to cover her body and face in hopes that her face was not exposed to the intruders. When the door burst open, Xena reacted almost instantly. She knew that something was wrong so she hid under the blanket right away. Ivan’s expression morphed into one of horrified surprise as well. The only clothing left on his body was a pair of boxers. He quickly put on his shirt and a pair of pants. “Fane, Ben, Selena, why are you here? Are you guys insane? How dare you break into my room!” Ivan got out of bed, a frosty expression covering his face. He reprimanded them aggressively. “You son of a b*tch!” Ben could no longer hold back his anger. He leaped toward Ivan with a firmly balled fist, slamming a punch on the bridge of Ivan’s nose. Wham! The punch sent Ivan backward, causing him to fall onto the ground, hard. When he got up on his feet, a stream of scarlet blood flowed from his nostrils and down his face. “Motherf*cker! Ben, are you nuts? Why did you hit me? What right do you have to hit me!” Ivan stabilized himself on his feet and shot Ben a deadly stare. “The woman in bed right now is from a nightclub! I found her in a nightclub! Why the f*ck did you hit me?” “Stop pretending, f*cker! Stop lying! Do you think I don’t know who’s under the blanket? That’s my fiancée!” A fresh swell of rage rose in Ben again as he charged forward, swinging his fist at Ivan.

Chapter 614

Xena hid under the blanket. She did not dare make a sound because she believed that when Ben and the others barged into the room, they did not manage to see her. Therefore, they could have just been throwing some guesses to lure her out. As long as Ivan kept denying it, there would still be hope for her to stay hidden. Ivan saw the fist that was coming right at his face but this time, he was well prepared. He swayed slightly to the left, just enough to avoid the blow, and then he shot his right knee upwards, striking Ben's abdomen. Wham! Ben's abdomen was struck by Ivan's powerful kick. He plopped onto the ground. "Heh! Ridiculous! How would you know if it was Xena? Don't simply make assumptions!" Ivan swallowed down his nervousness and kept it in check, making sure the three did not pick up anything strange from him. "I got this woman from a nightclub! What fiancée? Stop spewing nonsense!" He retorted in a pretentious yet calm tone. "Ah! I'll fight you to death!" Ben shot up from the ground and charged toward Ivan, again. Nonetheless, Ben was sent flying backward with another kick. He plummeted to the ground, again. Ben was not on par with Ivan. "Muahaha! You're indeed useless trash! Do you think I'm as weak as you? I've had bodyguards since I was young. Of course, I've learned and practiced a few moves! And you? Your pathetic brain is only filled with games! Yet, you still dream about beating me?" Ivan emitted a wicked chuckle, brazenness and arrogance covered his face as if he was the ruler of the earth. "Hmmm. Ivan Taylor, did you just forget my existence?" Fane put on a cold smile. Ivan gave the poison to Xena, and if he could not kill Ivan, at least he would give him a good and unforgettable lesson! "Fane, you, stop right there! I didn't even sleep with your woman, why are you being nosy? Besides, the things between men and women are out of their own will. I didn't force her to sleep with me!" When Ivan saw that Fane was about to approach him, he unconsciously stumbled back to the corner of the room, gulping fearfully. Even though he knew a bit of fighting, he could only, at best, beat someone like Ben Taylor. Fighting with Fane? It would be like an ant trying to pick on an elephant—no chance. "Can't do. He's my

beloved wife's brother, after all. You beat my dear brother-in-law, it would only be fair if I beat you up to avenge him, right?" The corners of Fane's mouth curled upwards, showing a disdainful smile. He walked slowly towards Ivan, painfully slow. At this time, Ben had got up on his feet as well. He wiped off the blood near his nose and shot Ivan a hateful stare. Fane glanced over to Ben and said, "Ben, didn't you promise us before? If the woman under the blanket was Xena, you'd end her life yourself, right? You said that as long as I found evidence for you, you'd send her to hell. Don't you forget our deal!" Fane paused for a moment and continued, "So, I won't do anything to Xena. You should be the one to do it!" Ben's teeth were gritted firmly as he looked at the shivering figure hiding under the blanket. He strode belligerently to the bed and pulled the blanket sheet away forcefully. "Ah!" Xena, who was hiding under the blanket sheet, trembled at the thought of knowing Fane was here as well. Her hope to stay hidden and alive was ripped away completely when she knew that Fane was here and that Ben was going to kill her. Her heart hammered in her chest and her body shook with fear. She could not figure out how Fane and the others discovered where she was and that she was secretly seeing Ivan. She deliberately took extra precautions when she went out today! She even kept an eye on the surroundings when she got out of her car in the hotel's parking lot. No one and no car was following her, not to mention Fane and the others! "Ben Taylor, what are you doing! F*cking pervert! I haven't put on my clothes yet!" Xena stretched out her arms immediately to grab her clothes. As for Fane, he did not even bother to look at them. Instead, he walked up to Ivan and threw him a powerful kick, a kick that sent Ivan flying backward.

Chapter 615

Ivan was kicked back against the wall before falling heavily onto the ground. The pain crushed him inside out. Every jostle sent ripples of pain through his shoulder, back, and neck, causing him to curl like a cooked

prawn. Klok! Tuff! Bash! A few more merciless kicks were thrown at Ivan as Fane approached him. Ben did not move an inch. He stood as still as a statue, only staring menacingly at Xena. He was hoping with all his heart that he would not witness the scene that he hated the most. However, he could not avoid the truth anymore. Xena put her clothes on quickly and returned Ben's stare. "Ben Taylor, you can't completely blame me for this. You can only blame yourself and your uselessness. Do you think I'd be with Ivan if you weren't a useless piece of trash?" "F*ck!" Finally, Ben exploded. He could not hold back his rage any longer as he gave her a few heavy slaps across her face. He snarled, "Shameless f*cking b*tch! Pretending to be all elegant and pure in front of me every day! You're just a nasty, filthy witch who does dirty deeds behind people's back!" "You! How dare you hit me!" Xena clasped both hands over her cheeks, scarcely believing her eyes. With a look of despair, she said, "Ben Taylor, how could you! I'm fortunate that I decided not to give myself fully to you. You're a grown man, yet, you'd hit a woman? Heh! Luckily, I've yet to marry you. Otherwise, I'd suffer from domestic violence in the future!" The heartache tormented Ben and he raised his arm high again. However, his movement stopped midair. On the other hand, Xena was staring straight into Ben's eyes with a hateful sneer on her face. "Just hit me! Stop being a useless gnat and hit me! A grown man who'd beat a woman? How can I be with a person like that? Besides, I've been with you for two to three years now and I've never seen a hopeful future from being with you! Especially back then, have you even bought me a branded bag before? Or perhaps some decent clothes and lipstick?" she provoked. Ben's tongue was tied by a series of questions. He stood frozen. At this moment, he actually began to believe that he was at fault. Selena, who stood behind Ben, could not stand the situation anymore. She went forward and served a few slaps on Xena's cheeks. "F*cking b*tch! What right do you have to hit me!" Xena was soaked in anger. She knew inside out that Ben loved her very much, so naturally, he would be reluctant to beat her. For a long time, Ben was even afraid of her. Nevertheless, she never

thought Selena would come forward and slap her! “Aren’t you a shameless slut? Indeed, my brother was not wealthy before, but every time he had something good, he’d share it with you! The money he’s been saving up was always for you to go for your karaoke sessions or to the internet café to enjoy yourself! During the years that you two have been together, how much have you contributed? “You’re a gold digger and this is an iron fact! You approached Ivan and slept with him for his wealth! How dare you shamelessly shove all the blame onto my brother now!” After Selena finished barking at Xena, she wheeled around and spoke to Ben, “Ben, why are you still standing here with a puzzled look? End her right now! Trash like her should be eliminated immediately. Don’t tell me you want to keep this rubbish to celebrate the new year? Have you forgotten the agreement with Fane? Today, you must act like a man!” “Kill me if you dare!” Xena raised her head, staring straight into Ben’s deadly pupils. “I don’t love you and don’t want to marry you. That’s because I think you’re incapable! You’re a useless piece of trash that only knows how to play games all day. What’s the use? Moreover, I’m not even married to you, I’m just your girlfriend! I have the freedom to be with whoever I want to be!” “Shameless!” The more Ben thought, the angrier he grew. He slapped Xena hard before pushing her down on the bed. His hands were around her neck, choking her. “I—I’ll kill you! I’ll kill you today! You f*cking gold digger!” Anger rose in Ben like a tide. His bloodshot eyes were full of wrath and he looked as though he had emerged from hell. “I’ll end you! F*cking shameless b*tch!”

Chapter 616

“Ben Taylor, you son of a b*tch! It’s a consensual relationship! What right do you have to kill her? You can’t blame Xena just because you’re a piece of useless sh*t!” Ivan yelled. He spat out a mouthful of blood after receiving a few kicks from Fane, yet he could not hold himself back. After all, Xena had helped him a lot, and there was much affection between the two of them.

He truly did not wish humiliation and death for Xena. Besides, he was hoping to enjoy the scene of introducing Xena as his girlfriend in front of the Taylor family. He wanted to see how anger and rage consumed Ben and Selena alive. “Awk! Awk!” Xena was struggling underneath Ben. Her body was getting feebler and feebler, her face turned blue and it seemed like she was about to die. However, Ben could not bring himself to kill her in the end. Warm tears blurred his vision. He let go of Xena and fell to the side, mentally and spiritually destroyed. “Cough! Cough!” Xena clutched her throat and could not stop coughing and gasping for air. She was panting heavily. “Brother, what are you doing? How can you just…” Selena was at a loss for words. Xena was about to breathe her last breath, and Ben could have avenged himself! Yet, her softhearted brother decided to give up at this critical moment. “Sis!” Ben lifted his head with reddened eyes. He was fighting back his tears until he could no longer hold them anymore. Tears ran down his cheeks like a river. “Can someone really kill the one they love with their whole heart? She betrayed me, and my heart broke, but...but, I can’t bring myself to kill her. I love her beyond everything. I just can’t do it! And she’s right, I’m useless, I’m not capable at all. I don’t even dare to take someone's life!” he managed to breathe out some words with a tone of despair. Selena suppressed a tremble inside her. She understood Ben’s feelings very well. Yes, Ben was right. He loved Xena too much. Even though the other party had wronged him, for him to kill someone he loved the most was a little too cruel and inhumane. Xena, who had recovered from the previous episode, took the advantage of the timing and got up and rushed out the door. She was afraid that if she was a second slower, Ben would change his mind. “Sigh!” As Xena ran out of the room, Selena breathed out a sigh of defeat and sat down on the side of the bed, feeling helpless. She could fully understand Ben’s feelings. It was already arduous for Ben to let go of this deeply rooted affection, what more killing the one he loved? Perhaps, Ben would feel better in a few days. “Puff!” Ivan, who was lying on the ground, spat out another mouthful of crimson red blood. His face had

been beaten blue and black. “Enough. Let’s go. You’ll beat him to death if you continue!” Selena switched her attention over to Fane and Ivan and sighed tiringly. She walked over to Fane and pulled at his sleeves, asking him to stop the beating. “Ivan Taylor, listen to me clearly. What happened today is due to what you did in the past. You reap what you sow. You can find whoever to sleep with and have an affair with, but you went for Xena. What does that say? I think you did it deliberately!” Fane also understood that if he killed Ivan merely because of a consensual secret affair, he and Selena would not be able to justify themselves before Old Master Taylor. Besides, if he were to tell Old Man Taylor about the poison, no one would believe him. Now that he had forced the poison out of his body, his body was as healthy as before. Nobody would believe he was poisoned as there was no evidence to prove it at all!

Chapter 617

Therefore, Fane could only pretend he was not aware of the plan to poison him. But, he did feel a lot better now after beating up Ivan real bad just a moment ago. “Hmph! I dare you to kill me here right now! You’d kill me just because Xena is fond of me but not Ben? What a joke! If you murder me, then pray real hard for forgiveness from my Pa and Grandpa!” Ivan jeered dryly and shot Fane a hateful stare. “Fane, I’ll remember what happened today! And don’t you worry, you’ll regret your actions sooner or later!” Fane was not bothered in the slightest. He walked over to Xena’s bag and plucked off the tracking device. He then held Selena’s hand and left the scene together with Ben. Ivan could not see Fane taking off the tracking device from where he was. A few minutes after Fane and the others left, Ivan used all his strength and finally got himself on the bed. His whole body was in pain as if it was about to fall apart. In hopes of asking Xena to come back, Ivan picked up his phone and called her, only to find that Xena had been so frightened that when she escaped the room, she left her phone on the bedside table. “F*ck! Looks like I have to call 911!” Ivan cursed. He felt

that his limbs were about to detach from his body and it was about to fall apart. He did not know how badly he was injured. “Fane, that motherf*cker! I want to see how long that arrogance of yours can last. I bet you don’t know that you’ve been poisoned, do you? Humph! You’re strong and powerful, but you can live for at most another twenty-nine days? And when the time comes, your body will fester and you’ll die in pain. I’ll definitely take pictures of you when I witness this glorious moment of you dying in pain before me!” Ivan muttered to himself, his tone icy cold. Then he dialed 911. … “Young Master Clark, Young Master Clark, bad news! Somebody’s beaten Ivan up, and I don’t know what his condition is right now. What should I do?” After Xena escaped the horrific hotel room, terror thundered down on her. Even until now, she was shaking in fear. She quickly thought for a moment before speeding toward the direction of Ken Clark’s residence to look for Ken. “What? What just happened? Tell me everything from A to Z!” When Ken had fully understood the whole incident, his brows furrowed. “Wait, speak slowly. Tell me the details, who beat him? The Taylor family is now a second-class family, and with the fame and glory the Taylor family had received during Old Man Taylor’s birthday banquet, who on earth would dare to go against Young Master Ivan at this point in time? “Fane, the b*stard!” Anxiety vibrated through her being as she continued, “The incident happened like this. I had planned to go on a secret date with Ivan tonight. I don’t know what I did to make Fane and Ben so suspicious of me. Besides, I was extra careful when I went out. I truly don’t know why and how on earth they knew my whereabouts. They tracked me to the hotel, and then Ivan and I were caught on the spot by two of them and Selena Taylor…” Once Xena breathed out the last syllable, she cried aloud. “I was almost killed by Ben. Luckily, he couldn’t do it in the end and loosened his grip around my neck. Only then did I manage to escape. I didn’t bring my phone with me when I ran out, and I didn’t know what else to do, so I could only come here to find you!” “Don’t worry. I’ve thought about it. I don’t think Young Master Ivan would die.” Ken went silent for a moment and

then a disdainful smile hung over his face. “No way. How can you be so sure?” Her brows knitted together. “Fane is a hot-headed and simple-minded guy. He can do anything!” “Heh! If it was just Fane at the scene, this one-brain-cell brat might’ve ended Ivan on the spot without hesitation!” Ken chuckled aloud and then added, “But Selena was there, too. So, he wouldn’t kill Ivan. He’s Selena’s cousin after all, and if Fane killed him because of this, it would be difficult for them to justify themselves before Old Master Taylor. Furthermore, Ivan is the main person in charge of the South Hill Real Estate projects. Killing Ivan wouldn’t be a good thing for the Taylor family, at least not for now!” Xena finally breathed a sigh of relief upon hearing Ken’s words. “Fane and the others should’ve left by now, but I’m still afraid. Could you please get several bodyguards and come with me to the hotel?”

Chapter 618

“I—I’m coming along?” Panic throbbed inside Ken when Xena requested him to take some bodyguards and go with her to the hotel. His face sank in an instant. He knew very well in his heart that no one in the Clark family possessed combative skills that were on par with Fane’s, not even the number one bodyguard of the Clark family—Dan Jameson. Even if he brought a bunch of bodyguards with him, they would not be able to touch Fane at all, not even the corner of his shirt. Especially now, knowing that Fane was burning with anger. Plus, he was a simple-minded brat who had a close relationship with the Goddess of War. All in all, they did not dare to offend Fane at all. If Fane wanted to beat him, he could only swallow it and blame himself for having bad luck. “What’s the matter? Young Master Clark, are you afraid of him?” Xena was taken aback and felt something was off. “Afraid of him? Humph! What a joke! He’s merely a good-for-nothing adopted son-in-law, why should I be afraid of him?” Ken sneered dryly, but he was obviously suppressing the fear in him. After thinking for some time, he then added, “I’ll make a call to him first. If Fane left the scene, he’ll

answer the phone, provided he's not severely wounded." Xena nodded in agreement at Ken's plan. It was a feasible plan. Ken speedily moved his fingers on his phone, dialed Ivan's numbers, and waited patiently. "Hey, Young Master Clark! Goddammit! I was beaten by that motherf*cker Fane and I've called nine-one-one. I don't know where the heck Xena went!" Ivan's voice came out from the phone's speaker. Upon hearing Ivan's voice, Xena immediately snatched the phone from Ken, "Ivan, I'm here with Young Master Clark! I went to seek help from him to get you out of there! Are you okay?" "Still alive. It seems like Fane didn't dare to throw heavy blows. After all, I'm the Young Master of the Taylor family, so he wouldn't dare throw hard punches. He wouldn't dare kill me!" Ivan breathed a sigh of relief. He managed to stand up and could walk around the room now. Although his whole body was aching, the injuries were not severe. They were only bruises on the surface. Nevertheless, the blue and black face that he had now made him feel too embarrassed to return to the Taylor Residence or the company. If he went back in such a state, he would have to endure all the shame and gossip from others. Besides, should his father ask why Fane had attacked him, he could not possibly tell his father that it was because of his secret affair with Xena and they were caught on the spot in a hotel room. "Okay, alright! We'll come over immediately. My phone and bag are still in the room!" Xena hung up the phone, sighing in relief. "Son of a b*tch! The b*stard Fane's really sneaky and cunning. How did he manage to track you down and catch the both of you?" Ken cursed out loud. He turned his head towards Xena and his eyes went up and down, scanning Xena's alluring figure. He had to admit, Xena's body was well maintained and the clothes she put on tonight were short and provocative as well. Ken could not stop the perverted thoughts from popping up frantically in his mind right now. "Alright, let's go! I'll call some bodyguards over and we'll go to Ivan's place together to inspect the situation!" Ken discreetly glanced at Xena's boobs and his adam-apple jumped. "It'd be better to keep tonight's matter as a secret. To Young Master Taylor, it's an extremely embarrassing

episode!” “Don’t worry. I’ll keep my mouth shut!” Xena bobbed her head. At the same time, she thought she had noticed Ken’s burning stare on her chest. Her cheeks were suddenly kissed pink at the thought, yet she put on a smile, pretending to not have noticed it. Ken entered his residence and soon, came out with several bodyguards behind him. They got into cars and drove out. Xena quickly skipped towards them and got into the car as well. The cars were heading in the direction of the hotel. Meanwhile, Selena and Ben had already returned to the villa.

Chapter 619

Ben stayed silent the whole way home, as though sadness had stolen his words. It was obvious that dread and sorrow had been growing inside him since the earlier incident. “Brother, I understand if you can’t kill her. After all, you’ve been together for so long!” Selena wheeled her head around, looking at Ben who was in the backseat. She continued, “But, this is the last time you’ll be grieving. The next time we see her, you can’t stop us from wanting to kill her. After all, this woman is too cunning. Not only did she cheat on you, but she also attempted to poison your brother-in-law!” Ben remained silent for several seconds before he finally nodded. “Don’t worry, Sis. I understand now. I was useless before, and too naïve. I don’t behave like a grown and mature man. I don’t even have a decent job! To her, I’m still a hopeless, unrecyclable piece of trash!” His muttering halted at this moment. Then, a voice came out from his mouth again, “But, to kill her...I really can’t do it! In the future, it’ll be fine with me as long as you don’t kill her in front of me. I believe I’ll stand up again soon!” “I’m really glad that you can think in this way!” Selena replied, her eyes teary. Ben suddenly thought of something. “Oh, right. By the way, is Fane okay? How’s his body?” “Don’t get too preoccupied. If Fane didn’t have the solution, he wouldn't have drank the drugged water.” Before this, Selena assumed that Fane’s medical skills were just average, but right now it seemed that his skills were more than that. He was a miraculous doctor, but Selena was not

sure if Fane possessed the medical knowledge for other illnesses and if he could treat them. The car stopped outside the villa. Ben flashed a bitter smile and hobbled into the house alone. “Selena, what happened to Ben? He doesn’t seem right to me. Where did you all go?” Fiona came out from the villa and questioned Selena, feeling uneasy. “Sigh. Xena, this slutty woman. She cheated on Ben with Ivan. I truly didn’t expect that Ivan’s the man she’s been seeing!” A heavy sigh escaped from Selena’s mouth. If it were someone else, they would have killed him on the spot. She never expected it to be Ivan Taylor! “What? No way! How’s that possible?” Fiona’s expression morphed into one of horrified surprise. She could not believe her ears. However, when she thought of the melancholic and solemn look on Ben’s face, coupled with Selena’s bad mood, she could not help but gulp hard. “Are you sure?” She questioned, again. “A hundred percent! We caught them in the middle of the act in a hotel room!” Selena released a defeated sigh. “What have I been saying? This woman’s not so simple, yet none of you believed me. Do you finally get it now?” Selena walked into the villa after dropping her last word while Fane followed her back to their room. “You must kill Xena, that b*tch!” Back in the room, Selena could no longer suppress her irritation about the situation. “It’s not only because of my brother, she poisoned you too! That f*cking piece of sh*t!” Fane nodded and responded with a gentle smile. “To kill her, it’s as easy as A-B-C! Your brother couldn’t do it just now, but I can, right? Doesn’t she love money? And there she thought she’d become wealthy after marrying Ivan? Hah! I’ll let her taste her own fruit! I’ll make sure she knows that even if she married Ivan, she won’t be anywhere close to ‘wealthy’. She’ll realize that Ivan is her worst choice!” “You mean you’ll make her regret everything and kill her after that?” Selena was slightly taken aback. She tilted her head slightly to the side and asked. “Yes, my dear. Did you not hear what they said in the hotel room through the tracking device? Ivan has been wanting to get rid of us because he feels that you’ll compete with him for the Taylor's inheritance. I know you’re not interested in it at all, but now I think we should snatch

it!” Fane chortled sarcastically. “Because this will be the best revenge for Ivan and Xena!”

Chapter 620

“But, I’m not interested in Taylor’s inheritance at all! I’ve never thought of competing with him!” Selena’s forehead puckered, lines forming between her brows. “I just want to live a peaceful life. Plus, the money we earn monthly is more than enough for us to live comfortably. We have a villa, and also cars! I truly enjoy the life we’re having right now. As for the Taylor properties and assets, Grandpa Taylor already entrusted them to Ivan from the beginning, so he’ll definitely pass everything over to him. As for whether or not Grandpa Taylor wishes to give me some of it, I truly don’t care at all!” “Haha! My dear wife, you’re too simple and pure.” Fane giggled happily and wrapped his arms around Selena’s waist. “Dear, you’re kind-hearted and it’s not a big deal to you. How Grandpa Taylor distributes the properties, you have no interest at all, I’m sure. The thing is, Ivan doesn’t think so! For a long time, he always felt that Grandpa Taylor always treated you very well and that you’ll eventually take what belongs to him! He’s been holding a grudge against you, and even bullying you and Kylie!” Fane paused for a few seconds and then continued, “Now he has finally become the general manager of the company. Naturally, he wouldn’t want to share any of it with anyone. If you married a rich man, you wouldn’t be competing with him for the assets anymore. He’s worried that he might need to share a part of the Taylor properties with you, so that’s why he made Xena poison me!” After Selena listened to Fane’s detailed analysis, she was at a loss for words. “I get what you mean. I’ve been forgiving him and letting things slide due to our blood relationship, but he’s never done that for me. He’s never thought of letting us live. So now, it doesn’t matter whether it’s for Kylie or you—I’ll fight him!” Fane nodded in agreement. “Furthermore, Ivan’s not as good as you in managing businesses. If you let him take over the company, I’m afraid that not long after, the Taylor properties and assets

will all be gone. He'll make sure that everyone's efforts go into the drain. At that time, Grandpa Taylor will be so pissed, he might get a heart attack and die!" "Yes, you're right. He's never thought of letting us live. I'll make sure he feels the same! I, Selena Taylor, am not a paper tiger!" Selena nodded as memories from the past few years flashed in her mind. Ivan had not only bullied her and impeded her from finding a job in other companies, he also bullied Kylie! She only tolerated and swallowed it down because of her kind heart. At first, Selena thought that since Fane had returned from the war and both of them had found decent jobs with the Drake family, Ivan would tone down his behavior for a bit. Hence, she decided to let all his past deeds stay in the past and never brought them up again. Now, Selena realized that she was being too naïve and ignorant. Ivan had never treated her as one of the Taylor's at all. He did not only cause harm to Fane, but also her brother. Ivan was rich and possessed a certain amount of power in the Middle Province. It would have been easy for him to find a woman to play and sleep with, but instead, he went for Xena. It was so obvious that he did it deliberately to cuckold Ben! "Well, it's getting late. When you have time, please visit Grandpa Taylor more often. His attitude toward us has changed a lot after his seventieth birthday banquet!" Fane said, bobbing his head. The couple quickly took a warm shower and went to bed. At this point in time, Ivan was lying on a hospital bed, taking some medicine and hooked to an IV drip. "Sigh! Xena, you're too careless! How didn't you know you were being followed!" Ken, who was sitting beside the bed, sighed loudly and reprimanded Xena. "I don't know what's going on, too! I even took extra steps to make sure I wasn't followed! I really can't fathom how they knew of my whereabouts!" Xena released a heavy sigh. She was worried. "I'm done for! Although Ben spared my life this time, I don't think Fane will. I think his hatred toward me now is beyond any imaginable level. If he gets the chance, he'll definitely end my life!" Xena knew very well in her heart that Fane had spared her life twice. The first time was during the incident outside the city. Fane had shown her mercy as she was Ben's

girlfriend. However, she used her sneaky mind and successfully blended into the family again. Fane did not seem to mind. Today, it was Ben who had let her go. Fane was not able to kill her in front of Ben, too. That marked the second time. But now that she had left Ben completely, she could no longer return to that family. Every plan and every deed had been exposed. She truly believed that the next time she saw Fane, he would no longer show her any mercy.

Chapter 621

“Don’t worry; just stay close to me these few days. They willingly participated in yesterday’s event, so they can’t explain their actions if they kill you.” Ivan smiled bitterly. “Luckily Fane didn’t know that you fed him poison. If he knew about it, he wouldn’t have considered so many other things.” “What? Fane had drunk the...the poison?” A surge of unadulterated joy began spreading throughout every inch of Ken’s being when he heard this piece of information. After all, he believed he would be the one to have Selena once Fane was out of the picture. He had waited for this day for a very long time. He was initially worried Xena would fail since Fane was rather smart and could catch onto what Xena was planning. He never thought Xena would succeed at feeding Fane the poison without being caught. “Yes! How’s that, Young Master Clark? Am I reliable?” Xena saw how Ken’s expression lightened up right after he heard about her success. “You seem so excited! Don’t you think you should reward me well?” Ken had a tight smile on his face. “Some other time,” he quickly dismissed. “I’ll definitely treat you to a meal some other day.” “Don’t forget this promise of yours!” the gleeful Xena chirped at him. “Oh, yeah. How did you manage to do it? Tell us about the specifics. Neil still doesn’t know about the current situation, so I’ll tell him all about it later. He’d definitely be over the moon when he hears about this!” Ken was so happy that he nearly bust out a dance. “Alright, here’s how it went down…” Xena began, and she relayed the entire story to them. “Excellent!” Ken slapped his thigh after he heard what

had happened. “If that’s the case, then that means Fane doesn’t know he’s been poisoned, does he now? Haha! He doesn’t even know that his life is in danger! Let’s just wait and see how he dies after this month!” Ivan—lying on the bed—grinned at this as he spoke, “That’s right. Young Master Clark, Fane said that he wants to prepare an extravagant birthday party that’ll stir the entire town. That day happens to be the day of his death, too. Don’t you think that’ll be a day of celebration for us? Selena’s birthday is his death anniversary…! Oh, I get excited just thinking about it!” “It’s such a drag that this guy is still alive right now. I really wish he’d drop dead as soon as possible!” came Ken’s honest reply laced with disdain. He was genuinely hoping Fane would succumb to the poison much faster. “About that, Young Master Clark, there is a way for Fane to pass on early,” Ivan spoke up after a moment to himself. “Fane had dug a hole for himself when he killed the Xenos family’s young master of Sky Dragon City, Quil Xenos. This Xenos family is a big family and is much stronger than the Drake family. Now that Fane has been poisoned, his body will get weaker over time and his combat ability will weaken day by day.” “What do you mean?” Ken prodded, his heart leaping in joy when he was catching onto Ivan’s train of thought.

Chapter 622

“It’s very simple. Young Master Clark only needs to pay the Xenos family a visit and tell them how Fane killed their young master. That way, the Xenos family would know who the killer is,” conspired Ivan. “Fane has an indisputably strong combat power, but now that he’s poisoned, you can ask the Xenos family to take action after a few days. That way, their chances of succeeding in getting even would increase,” schemed Ivan with a nonchalant grin on his face. “Of course, this is if you’re in a rush to see Fane die as soon as possible. If you’re not, then you can wait and see how he suffers from the poison.” Ivan paused for a moment before he added, “I’m in no rush, really. The entire Taylor family’s business is under my management, and the company needs me more than ever!” “Alright, it’s

getting quite late. Let me call Neil and tell him about this over some drinks," Ken spoke. "This will surely make a good conversation!" The smile on Ken's face did not once waver since he knew Fane had been poisoned. Once he left the hospital and entered his car, Ken rang up Neil and invited him out to some drinks. … "Young Master Clark, why do you ask me out so late at night?" huffed Neil once he arrived at their meeting spot. He had been under the weather lately as Fane had become increasingly hard to deal with. Moreover, Neil began to believe he and the others would no longer have the chance to win over Selena's heart. After all, the Taylor family had become a second-class aristocratic family, and Old Master Taylor acknowledged Fane as the Taylor family's son-in-law. Fane's status was not below theirs as he was acquainted with the Goddess of War and had even saved her life. Apart from that, they knew that Sharon George harbored feelings for Fane, and Fane overshadowed them completely in the matter of showing off to others. To rub salt into the wound, many people in this town were still talking about Old Master Taylor's seventieth birthday. "A superb matter! An extremely happy matter!" Ken grinned oddly. "Really? Things that are good to you might not be that way to me." Neil smiled bitterly. It seemed that Ken had a change of luck and struck gold or something. Still, what did this have to do with him? He never expected Ken's positivity to continue as he insisted, "Don't worry. You'll be just as happy when you hear what I'm about to say!" Ken paused here before saying, "But you'll have to pay for the bill tonight!" "F*ck!" Neil was speechless. "Young Master Clark, when did you become so stingy? You were the one who called me out for drinks, and now you're asking me to pay the bill?" "You'll feel that paying the bill is worth it when you know what this is about! It's also big and good news for you!" Ken smiled and walked inside. "Of course, it's fine if you don't want to know about it. I'll pay the bill and not tell you about it!" "Alright, alright! I really don't know what to do with you. You've caught my attention and now you're telling me that you won't tell me about it?" Neil was speechless. "Come on, tell me about it. I really want to know what it is so

that I can be happy about it too!” “Haha! Fane drank that poison. He drank half a bottle of that mineral water bottle in one go. Do you think that the amount of poison he took was enough?” Ken started laughing loudly and patted Neil’s shoulder. “How’s this? Are you happy, Brother?”

Chapter 623

“Fane really drank that poison?” It was too good to be true for Neil as he broke a slow smile. “F*ck! That’s good news alright! He’s poisoned! This poison is a potent one and can cause his body to weaken continuously without him knowing it. He’ll die miserably after a month…! Haha!” “How about it? It’s not too much for you to pay for this news, right?” said Ken as the grin never left his face. “Of course it’s not too much. I’ll pay for it! F*ck... Fane’s dying soon. The gods must be on my side right now!” Neil laughed happily. A plan began to formulate inside Neil’s mind. Once Fane was out of the picture, he would ask Ken out and eliminate him. After all, Ken was acquainted with Selena for the longest time and used to have a good relationship with Selena. Neil was good-looking and prepossessing, but he did not have such a deep relationship with Selena like Ken. Michael was the least of his concern; a fat pig like him would never get Selena. Hence, once Fane died, Ken would have the highest possibility among the three pursuers. Neil had nothing to fear so long as Ken would be out of the picture after Fane was gone. He could use money and his own true heart to win over Selena. She would be very distraught after her husband’s passing, but his passion would surely change Selena’s thoughts about him. She would surely throw herself into his arms! “Then let’s drink more today,” came Ken’s cool-headed reply. “I’ll tell you the details of the situation in a bit. This Xena can be rather useful in things like these. She actually completed something that we kept failing to complete!” “Yeah,” replied Neil, “and everybody says bimbos are dumb. I never thought that Xena could be quite quick-witted and Ivan to have quite good insight. We’ve finally gotten rid of Fane!” The excitement was getting the best of Neil as

he took his cell-phone out and said, “Let me call Ivan. The more the merrier, and we can treat this as an early celebration! This is our celebration dinner!” “It’s best if you don’t call Ivan right now. Fane had beaten him up, and he’s now in the hospital with Xena taking care of him.” Ken laughed awkwardly. “How’s that possible?” Neil was surprised. “Why was he beaten up? Could Fane have known about this matter? That doesn’t seem right... if Fane knows that he’s been poisoned, wouldn’t he ask Ivan for the antidote? Wouldn’t he kill Ivan if he doesn’t have the antidote?” “Don’t worry. While he was beaten up, it wasn’t about this matter. Fane knew about him and Ben, and he’s found out some things between him and Xena. That’s why.” Once they entered a private room, Ken sat himself and patted Neil’s shoulder. “Do you want Fane to die much earlier?” “What kind of question is that?” Neil scoffed. “Of course I want that. I wish that he’s dead right now! I’ve been waiting so long for this day, but now, I’m hopeful! One month... He’ll be six feet under after a month!” Neil’s eyes glimmered with hope. “Haha! I’m glad to hear that. In that case, follow me tomorrow to a place called Sky Dragon City…” Ken chuckled and told Neil about how Fane killed Xenos family’s Young Master Quil Xenos of Sky Dragon City. Neil was thrilled when he heard this. “Great! Let’s go early tomorrow. If that’s the case, Fane’s strength would decline. Coupled with the fact that the Xenos family’s masters are rather strong, he’s definitely a goner!” The two of them enjoyed their drinks to their hearts’ content. The next day, they brought several bodyguards with them and left for Sky Dragon City early in the morning.

Chapter 624

Several cars drove toward Sky Dragon City the following day. Sky Dragon City was quite far away from the Middle Province; it took them two to three hours to even get there by car. Neil, Ken and the others eventually reached the outskirts of Sky Dragon City around twelve at noon. Sky Dragon City was indeed two to three times bigger than Middle Province. Many powerful yet rather extreme people were in this city, thus Neil and the others made

sure to be at their best behavior as they walked into this foreign city. They first found a restaurant and had a simple meal before they started asking around about where the Xenos family was at. “What? There are two Xenos families here? One is huge and the other is powerless?” Ken was startled at the information given by a passerby they were asking. The passerby smiled bitterly. “Yes, Sir. There used to be two Xenos families here, but there’s only one left now. Someone had wiped out the bigger Xenos family, and their properties were then sold at a very low price. This person had just left. I think he’s heading for Middle Province!” “Could Young Master Quil have come from this wiped-out Xenos family?” Ken gulped; he could not believe what he had just heard. This seemed too coincidental. They had just reached this place, yet they were faced with the fact that the Xenos family had been eliminated while their properties were sold at a low price. “Yes. You guys know Quil?” The passerby was surprised. “Their family was really powerful, but they’ve crossed someone they shouldn’t have. Sigh! What a terrible fate!” The passerby paused here before he continued, “Nonetheless, this person had morals. He only killed the important figures and martial artists in the Xenos family, but most of the workers, children, and old people were released.” “Young Master Clark, what’s going on? How can the Xenos family be wiped out when they’re so powerful? Apart from that, this person had already returned to Middle Province!” Neil was speechless, and he took a deep breath after mulling it over. “Goodness me… Could it be that Goddess of War, Lana Zechs wiped out the Xenos family?” Ken felt that this was highly possible. “Could Fane have speculated that the Xenos family would avenge their fallen young master and, because of that, sought for the Goddess of War’s help to end their family? He might’ve done this to avoid future trouble.” Neil nodded. “This seems possible. Despite having returned the favor to Fane before, Fane had in fact saved the Goddess of War. Had Fane begged for her help, the Goddess of War won’t have the heart to turn him down.” Ken was extremely angry. “F*ck! Fane truly is too cunning and prognostic. How could he have foreseen this? He doesn’t have any true

strength, relying only on others to do his dirty deed! Doesn't he feel that troubling the Goddess of War and wasting her precious time is a very shameless thing? He's too much!" "Why would he want his dignity if he wants to stay alive?" Neil sighed inwardly. It seemed as though their plan to end Fane's life much earlier than anticipated, had failed. "Sirs, what are the both of you talking about? What about the Goddess of War? What about Quil?" The passerby was stunned. "Do you think the Goddess of War is here? How's that possible? The person who took out the Xenos family was a very strong middle-aged man!" "Man?!" Neil and Ken instantly looked at each other. What was this? Was it not Lana? "Yes, a man. I heard that he's a very powerful King of War, but I've forgotten his name. I wonder how the Xenos family offended a King of War!" came the passerby's reply. "King of War?" Neil and Ken were baffled even more. This was getting out of hand.

Chapter 625

Ken was silent for a good few seconds before he took out several hundred bucks and gave it to the passerby. "Thank you for your time, Brother. This is for you to buy cigarettes." "Wow, thank you! Thank you, Young Master!" Elated, the man gratefully took the money and walked away. "Young Master Clark, why do I not understand what's going on?" Neil looked at Ken, who was in front of him, and prodded, "What should we do now?" Ken sighed. "What can we do? Everybody in the Xenos family is dead, so we can only return to Middle Province. Fane got lucky this time; he dodged a disaster. Still, it doesn't change the fact that he's poisoned. Haha! We don't even have the antidote, and it'll be too late by the time he notices something is wrong." "Yes. It seems that the Xenos family's young master has offended a King of War. He must've been very angry to have dealt such an attack on the Xenos family," surmised Neil. "He's ruthless, alright! What we didn't expect was that this King of War helped out that good-for-nothing Fane." Ken also nodded. "This Young Master Xenos should've died, though. I

heard from Xena that he even kidnapped Fiona and herself, wanting a three-way with them, but Fane managed to get there in time and killed the young master before it happened." "Yes. He might've offended the Kind of War's daughter, and people came looking for him after they investigated what happened!" Everyone then returned to Middle Province, dispirited at the turn of events. After a discussion between both men, they bought some fruits and decided to visit Ivan when they reached Middle Province. … It was evening when they got to the hospital. "Young Master Hugo and Young Master Clark, why are you here?" blurted Xena when both men suddenly appeared, walking toward her and Ivan. "Oh, we're here to pay Young Master Taylor a visit." Neil smiled bitterly before sitting down at Ivan's side. "We went to Sky Dragon City today. Regrettably, the Xenos family had offended a King of War from Middle Province, so before we could even look for the Xenos family, the King of War had already sought them out and killed the entire family. We went through all that trouble just to be disappointed." "F*ck me... Fane is really f*cking lucky!" Ivan was dumbstruck when he heard this. "Nevermind. We can only wait it out at this point. We have twenty-eight more days." Ken was unhappy, still. He planned to count down these 28 days. Ivan mulled over his thoughts for a while, and a smirk slowly appeared on his face. "Oh, right. Didn't Fane say that he'd give Selena an extravagant birthday party? Since this guy loves to gloat about that, why don't we make things difficult for him so he'd stop halfway?" Ken soon understood what Ivan meant. "Are you saying we should publicize on his behalf, and that it'll be much better if everyone in town knows about this?" "That's right! Young Master Clark's really smart. Even you think of this... Haha!" Ivan nodded. "I've thought about it, and publicizing this event is possible. However, your copies must be attractive. You can try to employ those aunties and ask them to help send flyers on your behalf. I believe that this would quickly catch everyone's attention. Still, this is certainly not enough. We still need to advertise the event on the same-city website…"

Chapter 626

On the following day... Fane and Selena had just finished breakfast when Ben walked toward them. Head lowered, Ben stood silent before them—and for a good, too—before he muttered, “Brother-in-law, Sister, I have something to tell you guys. Can we talk outside?” Fane and Selena looked at each other and wondered if Ben’s mood had improved. They nodded and walked outside with Ben. Once they stepped outside to the yard, Ben then spoke, “I intended to get myself a job but I’m not highly educated, so I don’t know what I can do. I do plan on opening a shop, but I don’t have any money.” Ben paused for a moment before he lifted his head and attested, “I’m a man, not a loser in the eyes of others. I want to grow. I now realized I had been a complete bastard who only knows to fool around and take things for granted. When our family was poor and my sister picked up trash just to earn a living, I took the money you earned just to play video games...!” Fane and Selena glanced at each other, noting that Ben had matured overnight. He was able to reflect on his actions and assessed them carefully. “I didn’t even have the power to punch the person who stole my lover,” Ben blurted. “I can’t even win a fight with Ivan…!” Ben laughed a bitter laugh, without mirth behind it at all. “It’s meaningless.” “Why don’t you start a business?” offered Fane after careful deliberation. “I can sponsor you no matter what type of business you want to do, and you never have to worry about paying me back. Just take the money and give it a go.” Fane did not expect Ben to turn down his offer with a shake of his head. “I don’t want your money. We have two Rolls-Royce Phantom given to us by Miss Sharon because Brother-in-law helped cure her condition. As Mother is getting her car license, leave one for her. I’ll sell mine and get money from it. I want to try operating an internet cafe near the university town. I think that this business suits me as I love playing games.” Selena nodded. “It’s quite a new car and was gifted to you. Go ahead if you want to sell it, but remember that you won’t have a car once you sell it.” Ben smiled. “Don’t

worry, Sis. The car is so new and it's worth over seven million, so it won't be an issue to sell it for six million. I'll still have some money left after I set up the internet cafe, and by that time, I can simply buy a car at a hundred thousand budget. I now realize that we need to be frugal even though we're rich. And to think I used to plan how to treat Xena with the finer things in life… Haha! Now it's just a joke to me!" Both Fane and Selena nodded after they heard what Ben had to say. It seemed that Ben had changed a lot after the turn of events, and it was a good thing for him. "The car is yours, so feel free to do anything you want with it. Be courageous and do whatever you want to do," assured Selena as she patted her brother's shoulder. "Even if you lose money, your sister and brother-in-law will still support you." A thought then occurred to Fane as he spoke, "By the way, Ben, don't tell Mother and Father that Xena poisoned me. I don't want to worry them. I'm honestly fine. These people had been day-dreaming when they thought that they could poison me." "Alright, Brother-in-law. Honestly… Everything is my fault. You and Sister have always been telling me about this, but I thought of her as a kind and nice person. I didn't even want to face the fact that sometimes, I do feel like something's wrong with her. Sigh! It would've been better if I broke up with her earlier. I was the one who almost cost Brother-in-law his life!" Ben sighed and made his way to his car. Fane saw two bodyguards strolling the grounds not far away from them and waved them over. "Quickly, the Supreme Warrior is calling out to us!" Elaine was happy when she saw Fane waving them over. Orchid shot Elaine a sharp glare. "Shh, quiet! Don't address him as Supreme Warrior and call him Master instead. Wouldn't the Supreme Warrior scold you If others overheard that?" Elaine carefully eyed her surroundings. If others knew that Fane was indeed the Supreme Warrior, Fane might not be able to get the peaceful life he wanted.

Chapter 627

“Ahem, ahem! Sister Orchid, you said it twice…” Elaine bit back a smile before she walked toward Fane. Orchid was embarrassed. Elaine said it first! “Master, what can we do for you? Are you going shopping with your lady? Do you need our protection?” gushed Elaine the moment she stood before him. “My brother-in-law is going out to do something. Both of you, follow him and protect him,” came Fane’s unexpected command. Ben was startled when he heard this. “No, no, I don’t think there’s a need for this. I’m a man. Why do I need to be protected? It’s normal for Mother and Sister to bring two bodyguards with them when they go out, but why do I need to bring bodyguards? It’s so weird!” “Hey, look at you! You have a bruise on your forehead and it’s obviously from a fight. How dare you say that you don’t need protection because you’re a man? I think that you’re the one who needs protection the most!” countered Elaine, feeling unappreciated and frowned upon. The Supreme Warrior finally appointed some work to her so she must complete it, no matter what happened. She had to show her best performance. Ben never thought that a bodyguard would fight back. He rolled his eyes at her. “If that’s the case, I don’t need two female bodyguards following me, right?” “Hey, are you looking down on women?” Elaine raised her head and said provocatively. “If you’re so capable, fight with me. If you win, I won’t follow you. Otherwise, we stick to Master’s plan; I’ll be watching you from afar and protecting you!” “Y—You’re a bodyguard! I… I’m a man, and I won’t fight with a woman!” came Ben’s reply, an indirect concession to the female guard. “See, don’t simply speak when you’re incapable!” Elaine smugly replied, her hands crossed at her chest. “I…” Unable to come up with a comeback, Ben immediately opened the car door and entered the car. Both Elaine and Orchid immediately boarded his car. “Let’s go, Young Master Taylor!” “Why are you sitting beside me?” quipped Ben when Elaine sat at the passenger’s seat. When he looked at her closely, this woman was pretty and had a good figure. With the seatbelt on, her figure looked sexier. Her long, fair legs were extremely attractive. Ben was slightly embarrassed when such a beauty sat beside him. “So what if I

sit by your side? It doesn't affect your driving!" Elaine rolled her beautiful doe as she grinned cheekily. "Hey, who hit you by the way? Do you want me to help get revenge? Don't worry, I'll do it for free!"

Chapter 628

Ben was taken aback at this woman's strong offer, and he had a tight smile on his face. "Nevermind," he declined. "Even if I do want vengeance, I should be the one to do it." "Alright then. I've no idea that you still have a backbone!" Elaine then mulled things over and suggested, "If that's the case, I can help you get stronger whenever you're free. I'll train you well and upgrade you, in a sense. What do you think?" Ben was silent for a short moment before he nodded, a sign of agreement it was. "Sure, I'll treat it as increasing my physical fitness!" Back at the residence, Andrew and Fiona walked toward Selena and Fane. "Selena, where did your brother go? Did Xena really get together with Ivan? We couldn't sleep at all last night because of this. We're afraid that your brother might lose his mind and do something foolish!" Fiona frowned, worry written all over her face. "From what I've noticed, he didn't even have breakfast." "Don't worry, Mother," Selena assured her, an equally convincing smile on her face as she did. "I feel that this is a good thing for him!" "A good thing? Your brother's fiancee got together with another man and almost killed him. Our entire family's worried about him, and you say this is a good thing?" Fiona was speechless; she had no idea why Selena would say something like this. "Haha! Such a woman had never been good enough for my brother. I've told him before that Xena's just a golddigger and that her social connections are rather shady. Apart from that, she had questionable relationships with several people in the motor robbers. It's just a shame that none of you believed in what I had to say." Selena laughed before she added, "Brother has finally grown up. He even went out to sell his car." "Sell his car? Why does he want to sell it? That's a very expensive Rolls-Royce Phantom!" Fiona was getting more stupefied. She did not know what happened to Ben. "Well, Brother

wants to earn a living himself. He wants to sell the car and open an internet cafe…" Selena then explained the situation to Fiona and Andrew. "Fane wanted to give him money to start a business, but he declined Fane's offer. Doesn't that sound like he's so much more mature now?" "Definitely! This guy has finally matured after such a blow. I hope he can move on from Xena soon." Andrew nodded in satisfaction, obviously satisfied with Ben's new mindset. "I better not meet Xena anymore after this! This girl's daring enough to bully my son. I'll slap her so many times if I ever see her again...! She's gone overboard this time!" fumed Fiona, her hands at her hips as she spoke. "Mother, I've already slapped her. If this isn't enough to satisfy you, you can slap her all you want the next time you see her!" Selena commented, a small smile on her face as she did. "Alright, let's go to work." Fane smiled, and they soon left in their car to go to work. … Fane eventually reached the Drake family's residence and walked toward Tanya's villa. The last thing he expected was to see Tanya, Yvonne, and Sharon walking out from the villa once he was at the entrance. Fane was dumbfounded when he saw Sharon. This woman had been visiting a little too frequently these days. She was obviously here for him.

Chapter 629

"Fane, you're finally here. I missed you so much!" Sharon instantly ran up to Fane and hugged his arm, shaking it as she did. Fane instantly felt something was wrong. He almost passed out when he turned to look at his side. Why did Sharon wear a deep V-neck dress for no reason?! It was quite obvious she was trying to seduce him. More importantly, this woman was doing this on purpose. She practically glued herself against his arm and rubbed against it incessantly. Any other man would fail to hold himself back. "Really? Why do you miss me?" Fane smiled awkwardly as he tried to push her away gently. He then walked backward and made sure there was a good distance between the two. "Do I need a reason to miss you?" Blush seared across Sharon's cheeks. This was, in fact, Yvonne's idea; she knew

no man did not like this. Since Sharon had explicitly expressed her feelings for Fane, Yvonne thought she could push her to be bolder. She could dress in an exposing way and act exaggeratingly. Apart from that, Yvonne also told Sharon that she should always be in close proximity with Fane to bring them 'closer' together. "Oh…" Yvonne was speechless when she saw this situation. While she did ask Sharon to be proactive, dress skimpily and get closer to Fane, she never thought Sharon would go overboard and latched onto Fane like that. "She's rather proactive. I hope this works!" said the embarrassed Tanya. Both of them smiled before walking toward Fane. With her smile still on her face, Tanya began, "Fane, we're going to the amusement park later. As always, we'll be bringing only you, and no other bodyguards! Don't worry, I'll pay for everything if you accompany me out to play!" "I've never really been to places like that before!" said Fane with a faint smile. "Since Miss Tanya wants to go, then I'll spend time and accompany the pretty lady!" "Oh, not bad! I didn't know that you, an old antique, know how to praise women!" Tanya was rather elated when she heard Fane's choice of words. Fane praised her as the pretty lady. Did he genuinely feel she was pretty? If that was the case, was there a chance he was harboring a slight infatuation with him? If Fane knew his nonchalant words caused Tanya—this young and pretty lady—to have unrealistic fantasies, he might be so speechless that he could vomit blood. "Haha! Old antique? Am I that old?" Fane laughed; this was his first time being called as such. "I mean the way you think. I'm not saying you're old!" Tanya glanced at Fane secretly. She recalled the time when their lips accidentally met when they were wrestling; his lips on her red ones. Their lips met not once, but twice. She got very shy whenever she thought of that moment, and her heart would beat so much faster. Tanya bit her alluring bottom lip and added, "Actually, slightly older men like you are mature and steady men. These men are the most charming!" It was then when Fane recalled the time when he drank with Yvonne, and at that same time, he saw Yvonne's abashed face. His expression immediately turned weird. What happened that

day was purely an accident. He had no idea something like that would happen. When he saw Yvonne's abashed expression, was it possible that she had fallen for him because of what happened that night? If that was the case, this would be troubling, and Sharon was already making him feel uncomfortable. How could Fane handle it if Yvonne was feeling the same way? Fane suddenly had a bad feeling at this moment!

Chapter 630

"Yes, Tanya. What you say is very true. I feel that he's charming and manly. I wouldn't fall for him at first sight if he wasn't!" It shocked them that Tanya would still go up to Fane—even after he basically tried to get away from her—and look at him like an obsessed fan. Fane felt like he was slowly losing his mind. "Miss Sharon, you're a woman. You need to have the reserved attitude of a woman!" This was Tanya's house, thus he could only give her sound advice instead of chasing her away. However, it seemed difficult for him to change her mind in such a short time when he saw her proactive ways. "Really?" Sharon frowned. "Do I need to be reserved? Will you like me if I'm reserved? But didn't Sister Yvonne say that men like proactive women? She even told me that it's difficult for men to pursue women, but it's easier if women pursue men!" Fane's face suddenly darkened. "How clever you are, Yvonne Drake. You even taught people how to get into a relationship, huh?" Flabbergasted, Yvonne sharply turned to Sharon and growled, "Sharon, why are you such a fool? Damn!" Once she realized what had happened, Sharon sheepishly replied, "Sorry, my bad. I was careless and blurted everything!" She then quickly added, "I'll pay for everything later when we go out to play! I'll pay for food and the amusement park tickets!" "That's much better!" Yvonne folded her arms across her chest, inwardly pleased at the offer. "Let's go!" … The four of them eventually arrived at the amusement park. Fane did not think they would see a few aunties handing out flyers once they parked the car and reached the park's entrance. "They're handing out flyers on such a hot day… That must

be difficult!” The four of them knew that these people had a difficult job, thus they accepted the flyer without much thought. Fane thought that this was a flyer about the amusement park’s activities so he merely gave it a once-over. He was stunned when he actually digested the content. “What’s going on?” The trio also looked at their flyer once they noticed Fane rooted on the spot. “Is this for real? Fane, you’re so romantic! Did you design this poster?” There were some romantic heart-shaped photos on the flyer, and there were words typed in as well. [Look forward to it! It’s 27 more days to the birthday of Taylor family’s No. 1 beauty, Miss Selena Taylor!] [The Goddess of War’s savior, Fane Woods, will hold an extravagant birthday party in 27 more days! We welcome everybody to the party!] Such were the words written on the flyers. “I’m so envious of Selena! This is so romantic of Fane! He’s promoting the birthday party like this!” Sharon looked at the flyers and looked at Fane with hearts in her eyes. “Not only are you manly, but you’re a gentle and romantic person too!”

Chapter 631

“I never thought you’d publicize your wife’s birthday party like this. Fane, your wife will surely be so happy with this!” Truthfully, Yvonne envied Selena to an extent. Fane was already advertising the party far before the event started. She would love it if a man were to treat her this way. “It’s just that, these…words are too high-profile, too much. There’s even a countdown to the date of the party. Moreover, it’s stated here that you’re the ‘Goddess of War’s savior’ and that your wife is ‘the Taylor family’s number one beauty’…” spoke Tanya, a tight smile on her face as she did. “Don’t you think your advertisement is a little too exaggerating? With this, the entire city knows that you’re the one who saved the Goddess of War’s life.” Fane merely offered a dry smile, though his expression was darkening. “I didn’t make these flyers. While I do want my wife’s birthday party to stir the entire city and this was the surprise I prepared for her, I didn’t make these flyers.” “Could your family have done this? How about your mother?

Fiona? Andrew?" Tanya had initially assumed Fane could pull such a romantic move, but the more she thought it over, the more she realized that this was not the case. Fane, after all, was a rather low-profile kind of guy. If the Goddess of War had not admitted that Fane saved her life before, nobody would have known about it until today. After all, this was something to be proud of. If somebody else was in Fane's shoes, they would have told everybody about this. Fane, however, had never taken something like this as his capital to show-off. "That can't be; they're old. Why would they stick their noses in my business?" Fane's wry smile dropped into a frown. "Not many people know about this as I've just mentioned it briefly the other day. Even Old Master Taylor doesn't know about it. Why would somebody publicize it?" "Fane, look!" At this moment, Yvonne pointed at a taxi that drove past the park. Fane's eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets when he realized what it was about. What was going on? Why were such publicizing words continuously broadcasted on the taxi? If that was the case, did the entire city know already? "Fane, are you lying to us? You must've spent a lot of money on this intense advertising. Why would anyone do this, apart from trying to be romantic to your wife and for the surprise factor? Who'd spend money to publicize this party on your behalf without any reason?" Tanya looked at Fane with a grin as though she saw through him. "Don't pretend and deny it. You're really good at acting and keeping secrets about this event." Fane was speechless. Why did that—'don't pretend and deny it'—sounded weird? He thought about it. "There's only one other person who knows about this: Xena...:" 'But if it was hers and Ivan's idea, why are they willing to spend money to help publicize this party?' Fane thought to himself. 'They don't have any motive to do this. I've given Ivan a beating, so they must hate me. Why are they still spending money and doing something like this?' A thought then occurred to Fane as his eyes lit up. He knew why. Only him, Selena, and Ben knew he was not poisoned, while both Xena and Ivan were sure he was already poisoned. If that was the case, the medication would take effect around thirty days from the day

he consumed it. Was it a coincidence that the day so happened to be Selena's birthday? So, both sly dogs—Ivan and Xena—would want to make a big fuss on this matter. They were waiting to see how Fane would fail on that day. What sort of a scene would it be if Selena's birthday became his death? Now they even went ahead to publicize the party. Even if it was canceled, Fane and the Taylor family would be the ones to lose face. They would be even happier if the party happened as usual. "What an amazing scheme this is." Fane smiled coldly once he was able to conclude everything. It seemed that the other party was destined to be disappointed.

Chapter 632

"What do you mean by 'scheme'? Do you know who it is?" asked Tanya right that instant. After all, Tanya's grandfather had told her to help Fane with everything she got. This person had an important identity. She felt like Fane was getting more and more elusive. It was this mysterious feeling that made her want to know him more. She believed that as long as she proactively involved herself with Fane, she would then know his true identity. Judging from Fane's response to this flyer, it seemed as though this publicity was done as a deliberate attack against him. Still, she had no idea how such publicity could be considered as an attack. "I don't know who it is, but I have my suspicion. Nevermind, let's go! it's time to go in and enjoy ourselves!" Fane smiled indifferently and walked toward the amusement park's entrance. Tanya frowned as she looked at Fane's figure. She could see that Fane had made his guesses but did not want to say anything. "Stir the entire city?" After mulling it over, Tanya soon realized that 'stir the entire city' here meant that the more the event was marketed, the more extravagant the event had to be. This meant that he had to spend more money. If Fane only wanted to spend around ten to twenty million, that would not stir the city. Not even a billion could achieve that. "Wouldn't Fane lose face if this advertisement was marketed too heavily? These people wanted Fane to lose his face and unable to bear the cost of such a grand

event so they could make fun of him! This person is a low-life, alright. They rather spend money to help Fane market the party so that Fane would lose face!" A cold smirk appeared on Tanya's face when she came to that revelation. The other party might not know this, but the Drake family had been thinking of ways to get into Fane's good books. It did not matter if it was ten billion or a hundred billion; they would take any amount and help Fane as though that amount was nothing to her family. Tanya knew Fane must have thought of this, too. She ran up to Fane, catching up to him, and assured, "Don't stress over it, Fane. It's a good thing that other people helped you with the advertisement part. They helped cut costs!" "That's right!" Fane smiled, not wanting to say anything else. At this moment, Sharon had already bought four tickets and gave one to each person. Meanwhile… "Who's that guy?" said one random park-goer. "F*ck, I envy him... He has three beautiful ladies around him," he muttered. The other people immediately looked over and were also very envious when they saw what he saw. "Hey, all three of them are beauties! One of them not only has a nice figure, but her eyes look so enchanting too. I wonder what these women taste like." "Haha! Don't even think about it. These women looked like they come from rich families, so it's only natural that this man is just as rich. Otherwise, why would these women go out with him? Normal people like us can only look!" One of them smiled bitterly. He looked at Tanya's long legs and under her short skirt, and he gulped wantonly.

Chapter 633

These park-goers could only look at them from afar. Meanwhile… A man, not far away from where they were, overheard their conversation. This man had several young men and women with him. "Isn't that Miss Drake?" the man spoke. He knew it was Tanya the moment he noticed her, and he was startled to see her here. "Tsk, tsk! And it seems Tanya's not the only one here. The beautiful Yvonne and Miss Sharon are also here. What a sight this is; makes me jealous just looking at it." "Really? And who's that man,

Young Master Lowe?” One of his companions, a man from a second-class aristocratic family, asked with a nonchalant smile. “He’s so lucky to be with three such beautiful women.” Young Master Lowe came from a family that was rather rich. Still, his family was a third-class aristocratic family, thus the only thing he could afford to do was look at Fane’s female companions, even though he liked pretty ladies like Tanya and Yvonne. He knew there was a chance he would fail should he even tried to pursue these ladies. After all, these ladies have turned down many young masters without being given a chance. “Haha! Well, this lad has been getting quite the attention lately. This is the person on the flyer!” Young Master Lowe had one of the flyers he received at the entrance in his hands, thus he and his companions discussed it. They never thought they would meet this person so soon. “Oh, so this is the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family!” The man suddenly understood what had happened. “F*ck... He’s really lucky with the opposite gender! He’s able to be with beautiful women no matter where he went, and even his wife is a beautiful woman. What a life that must be... If only I was him!” The man then studied the flyer closely and sourly commented, “Stir the entire town? He’s just a son-in-law who married into the family. Can he actually achieve that? “I heard that he’s a head commander in the army and had already spent over a billion on other things. He shouldn’t have much left with him; probably around tens of millions. Can he genuinely host a party that’ll ‘stir the entire city’? This advertisement should’ve cost him millions since it’s all over the place!” “My thoughts exactly. I saw several bus stations with this advertisement in the advertisement spaces. They must’ve been put up just recently!” “He needs to spend lots of money on the advertisements,” blurted a young woman among the company. “How much money has he left for the birthday party?” “That’s right, that’s absolutely correct. If the aim’s to stir up the entire city, doesn’t it have to be several levels higher than the Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday dinner? At the very least, it should be held at a very expensive bar. Old Master Taylor’s birthday dinner wasn’t hosted in an

extravagant way, but it did stir up the entire city!" Another man nodded. He felt that Fane was being too much despite not having that much money. "Let's not bother too much about this; there's just a few days left until the party. We'll go and take a look by then. I want to see how he can stir up the entire city!" Young Master Lowe would be lying if he said he was not being bitter at this point. "He might make a fool out of himself by then. It'd be shameful if this party is poorly held." Back to Fane and the young women… "Let's go and play the carousel first. There aren't many people queuing there!" Tanya smiled and looked at Fane as though asking for permission. What she did not know was that they had attracted many envious eyes and hatred for Fane. Fane, however, kept staring at a middle-aged man with dark glasses and a cap not far away from him. "That man over there seems like trouble." The man had a cane at hand that he kept pointing aimlessly on the ground. He seemed to be blind yet was tailing behind a group of good-looking women.

Chapter 634

"How's that possible? He's just a blind person," countered Tanya as she looked at the blind man. "What's wrong with him?" "Yes. It's rather sad that he turned blind at this age," muttered Sharon as she looked at the same man, too. Fane internally facepalmed when he heard the reasoning of these women. "Look carefully," Fane insisted, "there's something wrong with his cane. Try and think why is he constantly behind girls wearing skirts?" Yvonne was the first one to react after hearing Fane's login, and she instantly sped toward the supposed blind man with the cane. "F*ck! This guy is a pervert," she snapped, "and he's secretly taking photos!" Yvonne hated perverts like this. "How's that possible? He's actually…!" Sharon was just as angry when she finally realized what was going on. Sharon, along with Fane and Tanya, followed behind Yvonne. Yvonne was the first to walk up to the man and she pushed him down to the ground with such force. "You pervert!" "Ouch!" cried the man once he collided against the ground.

He then yelped, “Help! Somebody’s bullying the blind!” His cry for help attracted the attention of the group of young women walking in front of him, and these women turned around to look at them. The man’s yelp had also attracted the attention of other passersby. The young women, not knowing what was going on, felt utterly terrible for the blind man. “What’s wrong with you? Why are you bullying a blind man?!” scolded one of the women that the supposed blind man was tailing behind, and Yvonne felt bile coming up to her throat. “Yes, this is too much! Is this woman crazy? Why did she push the blind man onto the ground without any reason? She’s really ruthless! What’s in that head of hers?!” Several other people began hurling insults and angry remarks toward Yvonne. “Ouch, ouch! It’s so painful!” The man pretended to feel around on the ground before he got a hold of his cane. He then tapped it several times against the ground before stretching it under Yvonne’s dress. Yvonne became more irate once she noticed his indecency; this bastard was extremely daring. He had the gall to stretch the cane under her dress when he saw so many people were speaking on behalf of him. “Bastard!” Yvonne immediately walked away and hid away from him. At this moment, two men squeezed their way out from the crowd and scolded Yvonne, “What’s wrong with you, woman? How can you scold the blind person when you pushed him down?!” Unable to put her thoughts into words, Yvonne walked up to the man and took his cane away. “I won’t let him leave. He’s a pervert, and this cane is his instrument to take photos! I saw him secretly taking photos from under their skirts!” “Hey, why is this woman snatching my cane?” The blind man immediately yelled loudly. “It’s bad enough she pushed me down, but she even stole my cane and lied about me!” “How’s that possible? This blind man is a pervert who secretly takes photos?” Some of the people started suspecting what Yvonne said. After all, who would push another person down without any reason? “Yvonne’s telling the truth! He's a piece of trash that takes photos of girls under their skirts!”

Chapter 635

Tanya pushed her way through the crowd as she yelled in defense of her cousin, Yvonne. “That’s right. We saw everything with our own eyes. She gets nothing good for being kind to you guys.” Sharon also walked forward. “How can you all say she’s bullying the blind person when she’s actually helping you?!” It was then when a man among the crowd studied Sharon carefully before he exclaimed, “Hey, isn’t this the eldest young miss of the George family? I heard that she had turned into a pretty woman. I wouldn’t be able to recognize her if I hadn’t heard her voice. She’s really a pretty lady!” “This pretty lady must be Miss Tanya then, right?” another man exclaimed. “I was wondering why she seemed so familiar... It’s really Miss Tanya!” Some other people began to recognize Tanya as well, thus began the exchanged comments about her. They had no idea that they would meet such an important person. “I believe what Miss Tanya said. Miss Tanya is a member of the Drake family, the daughter of the richest man in Middle Province. Why would she lie to us?” a woman spoke up in Tanya’s defense. “Yes. I heard that Miss Tanya would always stand up against injustice, and she’s very active in doing charity work. Why would she lie to us?” Several other women also went along with what she said. The blind man started panicking when he heard his and instantly asserted, “Hey, it’s all a misunderstanding. It’s a misunderstanding! This is just a cane! I can’t even see the road, so how could I have purposely stretched this under a skirt? Even if I stretched the cane under their skirts, that’s just an accident. How could you say that I did it on purpose?!” He paused here before continuing, “Apart from that, I’m blind. If you say that I’m secretly taking photos, why would I take photos? I can’t even see them!” One of the three men who pushed their way through the crowd immediately said, “Yes, this woman misunderstood him for sure!” Another man stepped up to the plate. “Young lady, you’re really kind, but how can you wrongly accuse someone else? Being heroically is the right thing to do and proclaiming positive energy

isn’t wrong, but accusing someone baselessly is bad!” The last of the three went to the blind man and spoke, “Hey, Brother. It’s better if you don’t walk around in such hot weather. There’s a slightly cooler place over there. Come, let me take you there.” “Oh, thank you! So it’s true that there are more kind people than bad ones in this world!” chirped the blind man in a seemingly grateful manner, and this moved many of the onlookers. Indeed, there truly were more kind people in this world. “What...?” Yvonne was speechless. Was it possible that she and the rest were wrong about him? What this blind person said seemed to make sense. Why would he take photos of other people’s underwear when he was blind? This did not make sense even if he was a pervert. “Wait!” Just as they were wondering what to do next, Fane pushed his way out from the crowd and stopped the man. The man supporting the blind man was slightly stunned. He smiled earnestly at Fane. “What is it, Brother? Is there anything you need from us?” Fane smiled indifferently. “You can’t leave yet because I have unanswered questions. Why would he, a blind man as he claimed, keep stretching his cane under the skirts of girls wearing them? Why didn’t he stretch his cane to those wearing long pants?” Fane chuckled. “Don’t tell me that it’s coincidental!” The blind man immediately became defensive. “Young man, don’t talk nonsense. I can’t even see, and you’re smearing my name. How would I know what’s going on?” “Haha! So you’re blind, are you? Do you think that you can pretend to be blind by wearing a pair of dark glasses?” Fane laughed and immediately stretched out his hand to take the man’s dark glasses. Startled, the man’s body jolted at the abrupt move. He then began to move his hands around as though looking for something. “Young man, where are my glasses? Give it back to me! Why do you want to snatch a blind man’s things?!”

Chapter 636

Fane smiled coldly inside when he saw how the blind man behaved. He directly punched toward the person’s nose. However, Fane punched at a

very slow speed this time. “What are you doing?” The man supporting the blind man immediately caught Fane’s arm. “Not only did you rob a blind man, but you also want to beat him too? It’s unreasonable for you to act this way! You’re too inhumane!” “Haha, if my guesses are correct, it seems like the three of you are working together with him! Am I right?!” Fane laughed. He slightly waved his hand and got rid of the other party’s hand. He looked at them sharply. “Go on, continue acting!” The two men immediately walked forward. “Young man, you are going overboard. What nonsense are you talking about? To us, you’re just a crazy person. What are you talking about when you say that we’re a group? It didn’t matter that you bullied a blind man, how dare you smear our name as well?” “That’s right, hit him!” said the man who caught Fane’s arm earlier. The three of them immediately surrounded Fane. Bang! Bang! Bang! However, Fane kicked them and they immediately flew out. They dropped on the ground several meters away and each vomited a mouthful of blood. “How’s this possible? This man is too strong!” The people surrounding them exclaimed as they were extremely scared. “It seems like he’s one of the Drake family’s bodyguards. The people of the Drake family are really strong!” A man said. “So he’s the Drake family’s bodyguard. No wonder he would take action!” Another woman also said. The blind man turned around to take a look. He was so frightened that his face turned pale while he pointed his cane left and right. He acted calm and pretended as if he knew nothing. “Ah!” Fane held his hand in a fist and directly punched it at the man. “Oh god, I’m sorry. Please forgive me!” The blind man’s legs weakened and he knelt in front of Fane when he saw Fane punching at him. “Aren’t you blind? How do you know that I’m about to punch you?” Fane smiled coldly. His act of pretending to hit the person did cause this blind man to show his true colors. After all, he knew how scary Fane was after seeing how far those three flew after being punched. “Brother, forgive me! I’m not blind, I’m really not blind!” The man knelt and begged for forgiveness. He obviously dared not continue pretending to be blind. “Oh my god, they are really a group!” Somebody

said angrily after they discovered the truth. “It seems that we’ve misunderstood the girls. These people are really perverts!” The girls who the blind man secretly took photos of were extremely frightened. They misunderstood Yvonne earlier and this caused them to immediately feel extremely guilty. One of them immediately ran over and picked the thin cane up. She looked at the handle and said in surprise, “Oh my god, there’s a button here. There must be a small camera at the bottom.” Many people surrounded her and after a while, they finally saw a small camera at the bottom part of the cane. Fane smiled indifferently. He directly stepped on the thigh of the man who pretended to be blind. “Speak, where are the photos you took?” The man said with a bitter expression on his face. “The photos I took...took are automatically saved inside. There’s an internal memory card inside used to save this!”

Chapter 637

”What are those photos for?” Fane smiled coldly and continued asking. “I don’t think it’s for you to look at by yourself, right?” The man looked at the others who used all of their energy to climb up from the ground before nodding. “Yes, this is for the four of us to look at. We were curious!” “Curious?” Fane’s expression turned cold and he exerted even more force on the person’s thigh. “Ah!” The man immediately shouted loudly. He was in so much pain that the veins on his forehead popped up. Crack! The noise of bones breaking could be heard so clearly. “Oh my god, such great strength!” “Yes, this Drake family’s bodyguard is not a simpleton. It’s so scary that he can break this man’s leg with one step!” “Haha, offending the people from the Drake family is suicidal. If a member of the Drake family wants to kill someone, it’s no different from killing an ant!” The people surrounding them started discussing what happened. “Miss Tanya, Miss Sharon, and this pretty sister, thank you all very much!” The group of girls immediately walked forward to thank Fane and the others. “Haha, you’re welcome. I, Tanya Drake, was born like this. How could I do nothing when

such an incident was happening before me?" Tanya laughed and continued saying, "However, it's best if you guys are more careful in the future. Don't empathize with others when you think that they are blind. All of you have to observe carefully if this person is really blind or is just acting blind." "Yes, thank you Miss Tanya for teaching us a lesson. We understand!" The group of girls nodded. Fane took the cane over and held onto it with all his strength. The handle of the cane then broke into several pieces after which he took the internal memory card out. Fane knelt and said to the man in front of him after breaking the internal memory card. "Tell me the truth or you might not be able to protect your other leg!" "Ah!" The man almost fainted in pain. He kept yelling loudly as it was too painful. How was it possible for him to continue speaking to Fane while gritting his teeth? It was considered good that he had not fainted. The other three men wanted to surround and attack Fane. However, they were so frightened that they dared not speak a word when they witnessed this scene. They lowered their head and stood there, wishing that they would disappear on that spot. "It's best if the three of you come over and explain yourself. If you don't tell me the truth, I will kill all four of you!" Fane waved at the three men. One of them gritted their teeth and when he raised his head, he seemed more confident. "Young man, it's best if you don't cause this matter to escalate. You're just a bodyguard of the Drake family. Nothing good will come to you if this matter escalates! Apart from that, wasn't the internal memory card already destroyed by you? What do you still want to do?" "Haha, are you guys threatening him?" Tanya started smiling before Fane could say more. "He's the bodyguard of my Drake family. You guys even wanted to take photos of my sister, Yvonne. You're not offending her, it's the Drake family. Do you think that we'll be afraid?" "If this issue is escalated, the Drake family might not be able to bear the consequences!" They originally thought that these men would be afraid when Tanya mentioned the Drake family. However, they had no idea that this man still smiled coldly and said. "Have you heard of the Kingston

Hall?” “So you guys are from the Kingston Hall! No wonder you are so arrogant!” Tanya’s face darkened after she heard what they said.

Chapter 638

”Haha, are you afraid now? Other useless families might be afraid of your Drake family but the people from the Kingston Hall are not afraid of you!” The man started laughing loudly when he saw Tanya’s darkened face. “Is the Kingston Hall strong? Stronger than your family?” Fane frowned and had a serious expression. He knew clearly that Tanya was a fearless person and constantly loved to create a sensation for others. He had never seen her, afraid. However, Tanya was afraid of what was going on today. This made him feel weird. Was it possible that these hidden powers were stronger than the Drake family? Tanya looked at Fane and explained softly, “This Kingston Hall has a huge number of followers and is considered as one of the more notable powers in this Middle Province. Apart from that, they have quite a large amount of good martial artists. Their power can fight against that of our Drake family. If we really start a fight with them, we do not have the grasp as to who will win!” Yvonne also immediately nodded and said, “Actually this is not the most important part. The most crucial point is that we’ve got a mutual understanding with these powers in the dark. They develop theirs and we develop ours. It’s fine as long as nothing happens.” Yvonne paused here before continuing. “Of course, it’s nothing if it’s just small friction. However, if this matter escalates, there will only be negative results for us. Even if they don’t go all out and have a big fight with us, our power will also be weakened by then.” Tanya smiled bitterly and said, “Yes, if our Drake family is weakened, the title of the Middle Province’s number one family would need to go to somebody else. Fane understood something after he heard them. It seems that the Drake family was not afraid of them, they did not dare to fight them and their ability was almost the same. If this was the case, how could they fight? However, he might not be afraid even though the Drake family was afraid. Without considering how to get rid of

the Kingston Hall, whatever these people did could not be let go so easily. Right now, the other party was very arrogant and everybody was looking. The effect of this on the people was very huge. “So, let’s just drop this matter here and let us leave, alright?” The man did not dare continue instigating Tanya, he only wanted to leave quickly with the guy who pretended to be blind. “Haha, do you have other photos? How’s it possible that the ones I destroyed are the only ones that you took? What about those that you took previously?” Fane smiled and asked. “Young man, don’t go too overboard. You’re just a bodyguard. What good will provoking a power like Kingston Hall bring you?” The man stared at Fane angrily and threatened him. “I’m just a bodyguard but I’m also a man. I can just be involved in whatever I don’t like whenever I want!” Fane shrugged his shoulders as if he did not care. “I heard that there are many small groups under a big organization. You shouldn’t be from the Kingston Hall, right? You are only from some small groups under their control, right?” The gaze in the guy’s eyes looked unstable when he heard what Fane said. Fane had obviously said the right thing. He said after looking at the people beside him. “Young man, don’t say whatever you want. Although we’re from the Green Sky Hall under the Kingston Hall control, we are not people you can provoke!”

Chapter 639

”Green Sky Hall?” Fane thought about it and said, “Fine, you guys can go back first. Go back and tell the people in the Green Sky Hall that I’m going over tomorrow. Today, we have to settle this issue and come up with a good reason. If not, you can’t blame me for any action that I will take!” “Fine, young man, you were the one who said this. Tomorrow, come to our Green Sky Hall alone and we’ll be waiting for you there!” The man relaxed inwardly. At least, he and his friends could leave right now. In his eyes, Fane was trying to find a way out when he said that he was going to the Green Sky Hall alone to cause them trouble. He estimated that Fane was not daring enough to go to the Green Sky Hall alone tomorrow. After all, if he

really provoked the Green Sky Hall, that meant that he was provoking the Kingston Hall. Whatever Fane said was to find a way out for himself so that Tanya, who liked to come forward, would not be embarrassed. After he said those, the three men picked the other man up, whose leg was broken, and quickly left. “You...you won’t really go tomorrow, right? There’s nothing scary about the Green Sky Hall but if you go there and make things worse, it would be considered as provoking the Kingston Hall!” Yvonne could not help but remind Fane. “After all, I heard that the head of the Green Sky Hall and the head of the Kingston Hall are relatives. Because of this reason, the Green Sky Hall is developing quickly even though it had just been set up. The head of the Green Sky Hall is an extremely domineering and cunning person!” Fane nodded after he heard this. “Don’t worry. You guys can ignore this matter. Right now, this is my personal business!” “Personal business?” Yvonne was embarrassed after she heard this. She was the one who rushed forward to help those young ladies. As a result, she was misunderstood and despised by so many people. Fortunately, Fane stepped in and exposed the other party in time. If not, it would be very difficult for her to do the explanation. She was quite grateful that Fane took action just now. After all, Fane helped her, if not, it would have been difficult to explain herself. Now, at least everybody knows that she was innocent. She had no idea Fane would say that this was his personal matter. “Don’t worry, Fane is very good. I’m not clear about Kingston Hall but he’s definitely not afraid of this Green Sky hall!” Tanya smiled softly and looked at Fane, who was beside her. Previously, they hid in the woods outside the city and saw the scary scene with their own eyes. They were 300 masters from the Eagle Clan. Among them was one of the Four Fighters, the baldy. In the end, Fane only used ten minutes to take out all the opponents. “Alright, I’m just afraid that something will happen to Fane if he goes alone!” Yvonne was still worried so she said to Tanya. “Tanya, why don’t we tell your father about this and bring more people with us. Even if it’s just a negotiation, it will definitely be much better!” “Yes, don’t be afraid of them. I’ll go back and

tell my father about this too. I will also bring some bodyguards and go with you guys!” Sharon immediately nodded and said. “I can go alone. You guys don’t need to worry and just enjoy playing. Didn’t you say that you want to play the merry-go-round? Why don’t you go quickly?” Fane smiled bitterly and felt warm in his heart toward the care of these three women.

Chapter 640

”This guy is really one of a kind. I’m worried about him but he seems as if nothing happened!” Sharon pursed her mouth and went to line up in the queue. “Fane, come over too!” Tanya ran behind Fane and pushed him over when she saw that he did not join them in the queue. “Uh, it’s fine, you guys go ahead and play by yourself. I feel that this is a children’s game and it’s too childish!” Fane smiled bitterly and was a little helpless. “Hey, are you calling us childish?” Yvonne turned around and rolled her eyes at Fane. “I don’t care. Since we’re already here today, you need to at least accompany us and play all the games.” “That’s right! We will let you experience being a child like us for a day!” Tanya also immediately said. “Fane, listening to your tone. Is it possible that you’ve never been to an amusement park?” Sharon thought and could not help but asked. Fane smiled bitterly and was slightly lamenting. “Yes, I’ve wanted to come to this place since I was young. However, my family was poor so I could only look from the outside as others played inside. After I grew up, I got too busy with work. I started sending takeaways and later on, I became a soldier. So I’ve never been to such a place,” “Then this is just right. You can fulfill the regrets you had when you were younger. We have to play every game at least once!” Sharon said with a smile. “By the way, Fane, where’s your father? Why haven’t we seen him? Why haven’t you mentioned him?” Tanya asked curiously after she thought about it. Fane’s face darkened when he heard this. He said with a darkened expression, “Think of him as if he’s dead. I don’t have a father…” Tanya and Yvonne met each other's eyes and they stopped talking about this matter. They could see that Fane was not only angry when he

mentioned his father, he had hatred in his eyes. They did not understand what happened to Fane previously that caused him to have such hatred toward his father. “Go, it’s our turn!” They immediately changed the subject when they saw that the door had opened and they could go to play the merry-go-round. The three beauties took Fane and they played many games before reaching the ghost house. “Let’s go, we can go back now!” Tanya said with a slight smile. “We’ve played everything!” “Yes, we can leave now as it’s not early!” Sharon also said with a smile. “Wait, didn’t you guys say that we’re playing everything for at least once?” Fane could not help but smile when he saw this situation. He pointed at the ghost house in front of them. “You guys haven’t played this?” “Let’s just let go of this. There’s nothing fun about this!” Tanya said with a smile. “Yes, it’s really scary even when you listen to the voice outside. This is not fun, let’s go!” Sharon was also embarrassed. “Haha, I think that the both of you are too timid and you dare not go in!” Fane laughed. “I had no idea that you guys were daring enough to play roller coasters but not the ghost house!” “I really want to play but I come with Tanya every time I’m here. She’s not daring enough to play this and how meaningless it is for me to play alone!” Yvonne looked forward to it.

Chapter 641

“Have you ever tried this before?” Fane said, looking at Yvonne Drake. “Hmm, I always wanted to try it but I never got the chance to!” Yvonne said and smiled forcefully. “Then let's go together! I am quite curious as to what it’s like there. I am quite certain that there are no ghosts on this earth. Even if there were, I wouldn't be afraid because I think if one was truly good, he would be able to slay any devil that may come his way!” said Fane nonchalantly. “Yeah, let's give it a go, but promise that you'll take care of us if anything happens?” Sharon Geroge interjected. It was a rare opportunity to hang out with Fane, and she really would not have missed it for the world. “Yes, if you are here, I would really try it!” Tanya laughed

too and said, “I am indeed quite curious. I heard that the ghosts are all in fact humans playing dress-up. How scary can they really be!” “Haha, let’s go then!” Fane remarked and went into the haunted house with the three beautiful ladies. “Ah!” Barely a few steps into the haunted house. Sharon George had found herself scared silly and gripping Fane’s arm tightly. Her face looked as if she had shrunk, and her expression was one of pure terror. Fane glanced to his side and felt speechless. Sharon Geroge had glued her entire body tightly to his arm. After all, he was a man, and this scene found him a little embarrassed and uncomfortable. He thought, ‘However, I can’t just leave her especially in a time where she’s so scared. I can’t just push her away.’ Fane felt a little remorseful. He regretted suggesting the haunted house. It was his own actions that led him here, in this awkward situation where Sharon could take advantage of him. “Ah!” A terrifying long-tongued ghost had appeared at Tanya’s side. Tanya was frightened to the core and also griped on Fane's hand. She stuck her head on to his shoulder and continued walking forward in tiny steps. Fane felt ashamed. He thought, “Why is Tanya holding my hand? Doesn’t she feel embarrassed too?” Despite his initial thoughts, judging from Tanya’s tight grip, she was indeed really scared. “What do we do now” Yvonne was walking behind Fane but she was also feeling frightened as well. In fact, her palms had started to break out in sweat. However, she wanted to maintain a composed and independent image. She refused to stoop low and behave like Tanya and Sharon who were clinging onto Fane like glue. ‘How embarrassing,’ she thought. Just as those thoughts passed her mind, a bony arm suddenly appeared from the back and tapped her shoulder. Hiss! Yvonne almost passed out at the weight of a skeletal-like arm on her shoulder, clad in rags. “Ahh!” she shrieked. In a panicked frenzy, she flung herself toward Fane’s back and hugged him tightly, abandoning all previous thoughts of composure and independence. She yelled, “Hurry, Fane, hurry, there’s a ghost behind…” Fane felt really strange-these three beautiful ladies were clinging on to him like their last straw of hope! “Alright, if that's the case

we had better hurry up!” Fane felt the heat creeping up to him with embarrassment and hurriedly exited the haunted house. Finally, the group emerged from the haunted house safely. The three ladies were still clinging and gripping onto Fane, with their eyes tightly shut. “Have we exited yet? Have we left?” Tanya shakily added, “Gosh, that was so scary, I am never doing that again!”

Chapter 642

“So scary, I am never going back too, really regret doing it!” It was not clear if Sharon was really scared or if she was still pretending, but her body was even more tightly glued to Fane. Fane felt too embarrassed to even look at her. “Wow, am I to believe it? Three ladies hugging one guy?” “Heavens, I am so jealous! They are all clinging on him so tightly, and they all have really beautiful bodies. My god, that man is truly so lucky!” “How I wish that was me. How did I not think of bringing a few beautiful ladies to the haunted house? Oh wait, I think I don’t know any beautiful ladies!” The crowd surrounding them started to comment as they observed the group. “My God, isn’t that woman the second young lady of the Drake family? Wow, she is hugging that man so tightly…” “Hey, that woman looks like Yvonne Drake. Isn’t the other one Sharon George? Gosh, what a sight! I am so jealous!” A man recognized the three ladies and exclaimed in excitement. Click! A few female onlookers had taken out their mobile devices to stealthily take photographs of the group. If these photos were to be circulated, that would really go viral. After all, it was a rare sight to see three ladies of the most distinguished families of Middle Province clinging on to a man. “Ahem, we’re clear!” Fane looked really awkward now that there were so many onlookers surrounding them. He felt that crawling back into the haunted house would have been a better choice. The three women opened their eyes and saw how the onlookers were judging and perceiving them. They consciously shook themselves loose of Fane, their faces turning into a shade as red as a tomato. “Told you guys not to do it, that was so

scary!” Tanya looked at Fane with embarrassment. “Oh God,” she thought. She couldn't believe that she was holding Fane’s hand-to innocent bystanders, that really made their relationship seem suspicious. “Yeah, that was really so scary!” Sharon felt scared but really excited too. She didn't think she would have the luck to be in such close proximity with Fane. “How unlucky of me, I was taken advantage of!” thought Fane. The four of them prepared to leave. Fane was driving past a public bus station. Suddenly, he noticed something and remarked “No, that cannot be!” “My God! Isn’t that you in the advertisement? Wow, are you that meticulous that you want to put up advertisements at a bus station!” Yvonne smiled bitterly. “What can I do? I just wanted to make my wife happy!” Fane felt funny on the inside. The advertiser must have been the idiot Ivan Taylor who wanted to portray him as a joke and wanted to see him die on Selena’s birthday. Too bad for them, their plans were foiled.

Chapter 643

At that very moment, the three men who were present at Green Hall that day had returned to Green Hall after sending the man who pretended to be blind to the hospital and had found someone to take care of him. As they entered the courtyard, one of them turned to the skinnier one of the group and said, “Monkey, that rascal said he would come tomorrow-do you think he would really show up? He’s just a bodyguard, but he must have some skills to become the bodyguard for the Drake family. I don’t think we can underestimate him!” The other guy looked at Monkey and said, “Brother Monkey, that rascal’s name is Fane. He is the live-in son-in-law of the Taylor family. You definitely shouldn't underestimate him. Back in those days, he actually saved the God of War. To be connected to these old legends like the God of War, do you think…” Monkey interjected with fear in his voice, “Okay I can't do anything about it now. All I can do is be frank with him and see what he decides to do!” “Yeah, this time we really need to treat him truthfully and give him the photos if he needs them!” The other

two in the group nodded in agreement and the three of them continued walking inside. “Oh, Monkey you guys are back! How was the bounty today? Did you guys get many photos taken? Heh heh, I will be able to sell them for a lot of money!” said Mousak gleefully-he was the manager. Monkey’s expression sank, “Actually we did get a good bounty. There was an unusual amount of young women in the theme park with short skirts today. Unfortunately, as we were packing up and getting ready to leave, we bumped into the nosy Tanya and Yvonne Drake!” The mustached man’s expressions also sank at the sound of Tanya’s name. He could already guess what was to follow in the conversation, “You guys actually bumped into them? Oh, this Tanya really is a justice warrior.” He thought about what he said and added, “Oh, don’t tell me that she brought a number of bodyguards? However, I already told you guys to disguise yourselves as blind men. The cameras are well hidden too. Such advanced technology-is it possible for her to see through your antics?” “Sigh, we also didn’t think that they would but they really did see through us. Ben is laying in the hospital with his leg broken-the doctor says he needs to amputate his leg tomorrow!” Monkey took a deep breath and said, “Damn, they only had one bodyguard with them, but the bodyguard was just too good!” “It's fine, it’s over now, you can continue whatever you were doing another time!” Mousak knew not to mess with the Drakes. He said, “It’s fortunate that we didn’t make a big deal out of it. Other than Ben’s medical expenses, he also put effort into this, I’ll give him half a million! This way he can just retire peacefully at home!” To his surprise, Monkey smiled bitterly and said, “We also wanted to contain the situation. We even damaged everything inside the memory cards and we were also beaten up by him. What we did not foresee was that the other party did not want to let what happened today, slide!” “What?” Mousak looked angry. He said, “F**k, didn’t you tell them that you are the men of Green Hall? Did you not tell them that Green Hall is a force to be reckoned with that belongs to the Kingston Hall?” “How could I not have said that? I thought that they would let it go once they heard that. Unexpectedly, they

pressed on even further after hearing that!” groaned Monkey, who was feeling frustrated and helpless. After all, the head of Green Hall did say in the past that they should maintain a cordial relationship with the other aristocratic families and maintain the peace among them. Of course, in normal situations, the other aristocratic families would have been fearful of the powerful families that lived unusual paths and would usually not step out of line. “Tanya Drake really has some guts. Does she think she is incarnate of justice? Is she trying to start a fight between the Drakes and Green Hall? Is she not scared of Kingston Hall who is backing us?” Mousak was boiling with fury. “No, it wasn't because of her. Tanya was a little scared and she didn't want to offend us. Monkey chuckled and said, “It was her bodyguard. If not for him, we would not have ended up in that situation.”

Chapter 644

Mousak looked dumbfounded. He said, “What? You mean it wasn’t Tanya Drake that wanted to make a big deal about it, but in fact, it was the bodyguard who wanted to pursue the truth? How could Tanya have agreed to that? Who does he think he is to pursue the matter further?” “Yeah right, I don’t know what that rascal meant. He even said he wants to come and see us tomorrow and that it is a private matter for him, so he will show up alone!” Monkey felt that this was not really possible, “I don’t know if he is just bullshitting but this rascal is not to be messed with-he is the live-in son-in-law of the Taylor family!” “It’s him?” Mousak heard this and his face sank even further. “I wouldn’t be concerned at all if it’s just any random bodyguard. But now that I heard the culprit is that hotheaded guy, I think we might find ourselves in a bit of a pickle.” “Hotheaded guy? What do you mean?” “You mean, he usually gets up to no good?” Monkey asked with a frown. Mousak nodded. “I don’t have much proof, but we think that the retreat of the Dragon Gods from the Middle Province had something to do with this Fane guy.” “No way, the Dragon Gods were so good. How can they be afraid of him?” Monkey shook his head in disbelief. “That’s

impossible. He is just one man. How can he possess that strength or capability? I heard that the Dragon Gods left so quickly that they left behind all their assets and wealth. They were in such a hurry that they didn't bother selling them. More importantly, there was a mysterious man of great strength who killed many members of their clan in a single night-even the best of the Dragon Gods, the masters, were killed. Boss Harvey had no choice but to flee." Monkey suddenly remembered something and exclaimed, "My God, brother Mousak, do you think Fane killed all those masters?" "How is this possible?" Mousak smiled indifferently, "I heard this rascal was just a commander. His combat skills indeed can be good, but it is not that strong. As our master said, this rascal has a good relationship with the King of War and the God of War. He most likely had help." Mousak paused before continuing, "Two days ago, the master was just telling me about that rascal. The conclusion was that we don't have any evidence but we really don't want to offend nor provoke him!" Monkey looked worried at this point and said, "Now it looks like we're not finding fault with him but he is coming to look for trouble with us." "Mm, let's go. I will bring you to the master. You need to tell him everything that had happened in detail. Master is a smart man and will know how we can deal with this!" Mousak nodded and brought Monkey inside. At this moment, Fane, Tanya, and the ladies had driven back to the Drake family home. Just as Fane started his car and got ready to head home after a day's work, he was stopped by a boy who rushed out of nowhere. He saw that it was Tiger. "Tiger? Why are you looking for me?" Fane froze as he saw Tiger's pale and nervous expression. Tiger got into the car and said hurriedly, "Big brother, I don't know what I can do anymore, and I had to come and find you for help." "What is it? Slow down and tell me!" Fane stopped his car and asked Tiger. "Ah, didn't you give us a sum of money? My wife and I bought a home and we opened a restaurant with the remainder. I guess our food is really good because business became better and better after we launched the restaurant." said Tiger after a gulp.

Chapter 645

Fane froze and asked, “Isn’t that a good thing? Why do you look so anxious and worried? Did you offend anyone?” Tiger nodded and said, “The restaurant next to us experienced really bad business and they started to blame us. They claim that we robbed them of their business, and got some gangsters to mess with us. These gangsters come every day. They will each take up a desk and order a plate of peanuts. They sit there for the whole day and because of this, we can’t carry out our business!” “What low lives. These people are really bullies!” Fane clenched his fist and got really angry. He could not believe that the restaurateurs next door were so shameless. He thought about the situation and asked, “So, did the business next door get better?” “Better my foot. There is another big restaurant on the street. They don’t dare to offend them so they take their anger out on me. His restaurant’s food is really bad so he blames me for taking his business. But since I had no business, his shop has not improved from before!” Tiger got angrier and said helplessly, “Sigh, I really am at a loss. When they first started doing this, we thought of putting up with it. How would we know that they would actually come everyday and do this.” “What about now?” Fane asked after a moment of silence. Tiger said, “They are still sitting there. I used to be able to do well at night but all my customers are scared silly. The gangsters asked for a hundred thousand ‘protection fee’ then they would leave us alone. Otherwise, they will keep this up.” “Okay, where’s your restaurant? Let’s go.” Fane started the car and drove straight for the restaurant. It was not long before they arrived. Fane stopped his car by the curb. “We’re here!” Tiger got out of the car and pointed at the restaurant. He led Fane into the restaurant. As Fane approached the door, he could hear laughter from inside. “Ha, ha, what do you say, pretty girl? Today I found a hair in the peanuts. We have already eaten a lot of peanuts. What if we get a bad stomach from this?” One of the men with a buzz cut roared with laughter. He was sitting with one leg up on the stool. He was chewing on a toothpick and laughing

cooly. “I’m… I’m sorry. I’ll get a new plate for you? You don’t need to pay for this one!” Tiger’s wife was at a loss for words. She could only smile and reply politely. “F**k!” That man slammed a pair of chopsticks on the table. “Your logic is so special. I ate your unhygienic food and you offer to get me a new plate? How much is this even? Something that costs ten bucks? You would like to get me a new plate? Do you think I don't have ten bucks?” “Then what do you want from me? You guys are occupying more than ten tables, I can offer it to you for free.” Tiger’s wife was already at a loss. Tiger said he needed to step out to find a solution, but he had not even returned. She was left alone with two fearful waiters who were huddled in a corner. At this moment, she was already scared out of her wits. “What do we want? Ah, since your husband is not here, and since you are quite pretty, why don’t you go over to the toilet and play with me?” The man with the buzz cut stood up and approached Tiger’s wife, smacking her.

Chapter 646

“Ah!” Tiger’s wife was scared to death, her face turned pale and she cautiously stepped backward. “Don’t mess around with me! I’ve already told you, if my husband finds out about this, he will really murder you!” “Ha, ha, that is hilarious. Your boyfriend looks so soft, even if he had ten lives he still would not muster up the courage to do anything to us.” The man with the buzz cut started roaring in laughter. He continued, “Then tell me, how do you plan on compensating me? I’m starting to feel a stomachache. I want you to accompany me to the toilet and relieve my stomachache. Otherwise, give me two hundred thousand and I’ll consider my medical bills paid!” “Two hundred thousand!” Tiger’s wife heard the exorbitant sum and took in a deep breath. She knew that they did not have enough money. They could not afford to pay off these bastards. These bastards also had an insatiable appetite for bullying them-even if she did give him two hundred thousand this round, she feared that there would be an even bigger sum demanded from them in the future. “What now? Don’t

you have the money? Well, if you don't have the money, then you should compensate me with your body!" "Don't worry, your husband isn't here. I won't tell him, haha!" The man with the buzz cut laughed gleefully, and approached Tiger's wife, getting ready to drag her off and do his bidding. She retreated backward and yelled, "No! No! The hair you found in the peanuts belongs to you! Tiger and I have really long hair. The hair you found is really short and the length is consistent with the length of your hair. It's so obvious that you're just finding fault and making our lives hard!" "Haha, what proof do you have to say that the hair is mine? I don't care. The fact that I found hair in my food is enough to hold you accountable. Otherwise, I will spread the word around that your food is unsafe and unhygienic!" The man with the buzz cut roared with laughter and as she was caught completely off guard, he stepped forward and tightly embraced her. "Let me go, you bastard!" Tiger's wife struggled against his grip. He had her in a deadlock and was about to drag her to the bathroom. "Let her go!" At this moment, a loud roar came from the doorway. Tiger rushed in with fury with Fane following in his trail. The group of gangsters saw that Tiger had arrived and all stood up, looking at him like they were tigers themselves, getting ready to play with their prey. "Oh, you're back!" The man with the buzz cut let Tiger's wife go and laughed cooly. He said, "Since you've returned, compensate me with two hundred thousand now. If not, we've all lost our patience and we plan to trash this place!" Fane heard this and laughed cooly. "Oh, trash this place?" he said. "If you guys don't value your lives, try it!" "Hey, looks like this eager beaver is getting ready for revenge. He even found himself a little helper!" The man with the buzz cut laughed, "However…you only brought one man? Is he going to be enough?" "You all want money? Come outside and fight me. If you all can win me at this fight, forget about two hundred thousand. We can give you two million!" Fane continued, "But, if you all can't win this fight, then just admit your unlucky fate. Compensate my brother for a million in damages. You all have not only affected his business these past few days. You have even caused

him emotional distress. I believe this is a small sum that you guys can afford!" "Hey, what a big mouth!" The man with the buzz cut laughed cooly and said, "Alright, let's go outside. I don't believe that my entire gang cannot defeat you. If you lose, give us two million. If we lose, we'll give you one million!" The gangsters were getting riled up at this exchange. They felt that this guy before them was eagerly rushing to prove himself. There were so many of them. From a number perspective, it was impossible for one man to be able to defeat all of them. Even if they lose, the compensation would only be one million. There was much more to be gained in the two million that they could possibly get. They thought that the odds were definitely stacked in their favor! What a deal they could not refuse!

Chapter 647

The group of men gathered at the entrance of the restaurant and surrounded Fane very quickly. Tiger knew what Fane was capable of and did not feel worried at all. His wife, however, was a little worried. She asked, "Tiger, can he take on so many men? Should we just pay off these men? Otherwise, they will still come and bother us after your big brother leaves us." "Don't worry, my big brother knows what to do. He only needs to show up once, they will think twice before messing with us in the future!" Tiger had full faith in Fane. "Kid, do you even have that much money? Don't just be blowing your trumpet!" The man with the buzz cut cracked his knuckles and asked Fane while cracking his knuckles. His only worry was that Fane was blowing his own trumpet and would not be able to provide the money later. "Shouldn't you guys be worried about this?" Fane said nonchalantly. He continued, "I don't even need to lift a finger to defeat you guys!" "Haha, you really like to talk big huh. You think you can defeat us without lifting a finger? I'm afraid you're taking on more than you can chew!" The man with the buzz cut laughed and said, "If you are really capable of this, I will kneel before you and call you my grandfather!" "Don't regret your words later!" Fane retorted. The man with the buzz cut was getting excited. He felt that

this fool before him was too silly. If the kid was not going to even lift a finger, they would be able to take him on even faster. “Go! F**k, you three go and get him! I want to see how he can defeat us without lifting a finger!” The man with the buzz cut held back his group of men and wanted to get a taste of what Fane was capable of. He wanted to call Fane’s bluff and only asked three men to take him on. “Ah!” Three men rushed toward Fane. “Bang, bang, bang!” Fane jumped and made three flying kicks. One by one, the men flew several miles away and fell onto the floor in pain. “No way!” The man with the buzz cut look dumbfounded at the scene before him. He thought, ‘Looks like this kid has got some game, he can take on three men!’ “F**k, let’s all go! Surround him from all four corners, let me see how he can take us on now!” The man with the buzz cut gave his orders after some thought. It was obvious that this rascal was not stupid. Fane was not using his hands and the group of men was surrounding him. This time, it won’t be so easy for Fane. “Bang, bang, bang!” All the men who rushed forward were lying on the floor in pain. They were either clutching onto their chests or stomachs, each with twisted expressions of pain on their faces. “So what now? Since you all have lost, time to pay up!” Fane laughed cooly and said, “Don’t tell me you can’t even afford a million!”

Chapter 648

“Ouch, Motherf*cker, it’s so painful!” The man with the buzz cut was lying on the floor with blood sprouting from the corner of his mouth. He groaned on and on. He really could not believed that there was such a master fighter on earth. The attacks were coming at him so fast that he could not even see where the kicks began. The only thing he remembered was feeling a kick on his chest and that his bum had fallen right on the floor. “Impossible!” The boss of the restaurant next door had witnessed the exchange and thought Fane had a death wish to challenge the gangsters. Now, the scene that had unraveled before him scared him to death instead. He could not have imagined Tiger would be able to find such a powerful man to help him out.

However, he quickly thought with a cool grin, ‘Hmph, kid, you may think you got them now. This group of gangster is not your average gangster. You don’t know who is backing them. A kid like you can’t afford to offend this gang. I will just silently observe today!’ “Kid, don’t you be demanding. You’ve already beaten us to a pulp. Now, you’re demanding money from us? How illogical of you!” Moments later, the man with the buzz cut had recovered a little and finally got up off the ground together with his men. “Ha, ha, didn’t you guys promise earlier? It’s not just about the money. Don’t forget you all have to kneel and call me your grandfather.” Fane laughingly reminded the group. “Kid, we’re not your average joes. We can consider ourselves unlucky and return your money. However, forget about us kneeling before you and calling you our grandfather. You would be stripping us of our dignity and honor-how will we continue to make a living if we do that?” the man with the buzz cut said after some thought. “Oh, how can you men just go back on your words so carelessly? I want you to give me the money, kneel and call me grandfather-that was what you promised!” Fane laughed and continued, “Plus, I don’t really care who is behind you or which forces are backing you. If you offend me, I will make sure to give your backers a hard time!” The corner of the man’s mouth twitched slightly and said, “Think carefully before you demand that, don’t regret your actions later. We’re the men of Green Hall!” “Green Hall” Fane furrowed his brow. “What a coincidence!” he thought. He was about to swing by Green Hall for a visit tomorrow. He could not believe his fate that he had met these gangsters from Green Hall today. Seeing Fane momentarily stunned, the man with the buzz cut gleefully said, “Haha, kid. Looks like even you have heard of the prowess of the men at Green Hall? We have hundreds of men and hundreds of proficient fighters. You can fight them off slowly yourself. You may think you’re good now, but you can’t be unafraid of Green Hall!” Having said this, he even puffed up his chest and folded his hands. He haughtily continued, “Kid, if you’re feeling regretful, just admit your mistakes and apologize. We won’t hold you accountable or pursue the

matter further. Seeing as you're a good fighter too, let's just forget everything that had happened today." "Hey, you're really cocky!" Fane laughed cooly. "You think I'll drop this just because of the two words 'Green Hall'? Have you guys not come to your senses yet?" Fane's mood darkened, "I'll give you ten minutes. Bring me a million bucks. Otherwise, prepare to lie down completely!" "Kid, are you being serious right now?" The man with the buzz cut gulped. "Do you know how powerful the forces behind Green Hall are? We are backed by Kingston Hall!" "I don't care, give me the money!" Fane had no fear and asked for the money relentlessly.

Chapter 649

The corners of the mouth of the group of men before Fane began to twitch. "I… I don't have that money?" The man with the buzz cut said after a pause, "We don't usually make that much money. We also have to pay Green Hall a monthly protection fee. Whatever we have left, we usually eat and drink it away. Where do you want us to find a million bucks?" "Eight minutes left!" Fane was too lazy to be engaged in mindless chatter. He looked at the time and mercilessly pressed on. "I…" The man with the buzz cut got really angry. He thought and said to his group of men. "What about you guys? However much money you have, give it to me now. F**k, let's pool it. Looks like we have met our match today. What more, he is not afraid of death and he is so relentless. I don't think we can get away with this." The men were speechless and helplessly paid up their share to the man with a buzz cut. Moments after, one of the men looked at the balance in their bank accounts and bitterly said to Fane, "Brother, I'm so impressed. You're not even afraid of Green Hall?" "Stop bullshitting. Get us the money! Send it to Tiger!" Fane said curtly. Tiger was too scared to accept the money. He stepped forward, smiling awkwardly, and said, "Hey big brother, let's not cause them any more trouble. Let it go now so that we won't get into any trouble in the future!" The truth was that Tiger was still afraid. When he heard the gangsters talk about large and powerful forces backing their clan,

he was afraid to offend them any further-to offend such strong powers would not bring them any good. Furthermore, it was only because of Fane's presence today that they were bowing their heads temporarily. What if they come again in the future? Matters may not be as simple as a scuffle or a fight then. Who knows, they could even murder him and his wife. "Yeah big brother, please let it go." Tiger's wife stepped forward and begged. "Hey I can't just let it go. I saw with my own eyes how they were bullying you!" Fane's resolve was clear. He looked at Tiger and said, "Don't worry, it is their responsibility to compensate you. If they mess with you again, I will destroy all of Kingston Hall." Tiger heard this and took a deep breath. He thought that Fane was really way above his head right now. Kingston Hall was Middle Province's top and ultimate Hall. Even the Drake family was afraid of Kingston Hall. Fane was taking Kingston Hall way too lightly, and throwing his words around too casually. "Kid, really? You're not scared of Green Hall? Unafraid of Kingston Hall? If you think you're so capable, why not you pay Green Hall a visit?" The man with a buzz cut glanced sideways at Tiger. "We don't have much money today. After half a day's worth of work, we only have nine hundred fifty thousand bucks with us-it's all for you!" "Tiger, give them your account number!" Fane looked at Tiger and said, "I am in fact visiting Green Hall tomorrow. You'd better prepare the remaining fifty thousand for me tomorrow. I'll treat that as my fee for today's work. Even I cannot do this for free!" "Big brother, it's only fifty thousand…let it go, they've already given us nine hundred and fifty thousand, let's just cut them some slack!" Tiger looked like he was in between a rock and a hard place. He started to feel really afraid. "Ha, ha, don't worry. I'm not just going there for fifty thousand. I am going to settle some other matters!" Fane laughed and patted Tiger's shoulder. "Don't worry, I'll be sure to warn them tomorrow. If they don't listen and still stir up trouble with you, they would have a death wish coming for them!"

Chapter 650

“Alright, kid, you’re really something. We’ll give you this nine hundred fifty thousand bucks today!” The man with the buzz cut really could not believe the blasphemy coming out of Fane’s mouth. He threatened, “We’ll see you at Green Hall tomorrow. If you don’t show up, we’ll know what you’re made of!” The man with the buzz cut transferred the money to Tiger. He paused and continued, “If you don’t show up, don’t blame us the Green Hall men for stirring up some trouble with your dear little friend and his wife. I’m telling you, this woman is surely something. Just from patting her earlier, I got a little excited. Haha!” Fane smiled cooly and sharply kicked in between the man’s thighs. “Ah!” The man’s voice cracked and kneeled on the floor painfully. “I let you go this time and you still dare to clamor and hoot? Don’t even think of any women in the future. You think I can’t live up to my word?” Fane could have let bygones be bygones. It was a small matter to get them to compensate the money. What more, he had promised Selena that he would not be stirring up trouble and that he just wanted to live a peaceful life. He could not have imagined that this rascal would even dare to insult them this way, did he have a death wish? He felt that he could not go soft on them, since the other party still thought that they were pushovers. “Brother Luca!” His underlings were scared. They did not imagine this kid to be so cruel and kicked Luca’s private part. Brother Luca yelled and passed out. His men picked him up and carried him away. “Impossible!” the boss of the restaurant next door was also scared. He did not think that Tiger could be connected to such a skilled fighter, what more a skilled fighter that had no fear for the Green Hall or even Kingston Hall! Most importantly, this man could even beat up Brother Luca to a pulp-was not this asking for it from Green Hall? “You! Come here…” He was discovered by Fane. Fane looked at him and gestured for him to come over. “Bro-brother, are you looking for me?” The boss looked around him and saw that he was the only man there. He was petrified and did not dare to go over. He was just an ordinary businessman. He expected Brother Luca to take care of it for a hundred thousand bucks. Seeing as even Brother Luca

was beaten to a pulp, how would he dare to go over? “Not coming? Do you wish to die?” Fane asked casually. The boss felt his legs going soft and he gulped. He walked toward Fane grudgingly. As he arrived before Fane, his brow was already sweating buckets. “Hey, handsome man, what do you need from me?” The boss took out a cigarette and shakily passed it to Fane. His hand was shaking so much that he dropped the cigarette midway. “I don’t want cigarettes, I’m not interested!” Fane smiled cooly. He said, “Close your restaurant tomorrow onward. Otherwise, you’ll upset me!” “Okay, okay, okay. I’ll shut down the restaurant tomorrow. It’s my fault for bad business. I admit my fault now!” The boss nodded. He was just an ordinary businessman and did not want any trouble. He did not dare to open his mouth and protest, in fear of Fane murdering him. After all, this man before him might have some powerful forces behind him too.

Chapter 651

Besides, his restaurant made losses every day, and he himself felt that he needed to shut it down soon. So long as Fane did not try to blackmail him of more than ten million bucks, everything would be fine and dandy! “Alright, then. Just get out of here!” Fane waved his hand and took out a White-Sand cigarette, lighting it slowly. “Okay, okay. I’ll scram!” The boss of the restaurant immediately darted out of the place as if he would die within the next second of remaining there. “Big Bro, thank you so much. We wouldn’t know what to do if it weren’t for you!” Tiger looked at Fane after the boss left, his eyes red. “And my wife would probably have been bullied by those vagrants if you hadn’t come over with me.” Tiger was feeling extremely lucky—lucky that he had thought of Fane and managed to bring him here. Otherwise, he would not have been able to beat those guys. Furthermore, that man called Brother Luca would probably have taken advantage of his wife. “Heh. Idiot. Just see me if you need anything!” Fane chuckled. “Let’s go, Big Bro. Let’s go drink a few rounds!” Tiger flashed a straightforward smile. “You just made someone give me more than nine

million bucks this time. I've yet to recover from the shock!" "Don't sweat it. Just go and open your business in peace. They won't cause you any more trouble!" Fane took a drag from his cigarette before he added, "On the contrary, I'm the one who'll be causing them trouble tomorrow. I need to see if they've learned their lesson so I'm not going for a drink. I need to return home. It's getting late." "All right then. Let's drink sometime soon!" Tiger nodded, seeing Fane off as the latter drove away. "Tiger, this Big Bro of yours is amazing! He's not any regular veteran, is he?" Tiger's wife could not help but comment after Fane left. "His fighting prowess and aura aren't like a regular person's!" "He saved the Goddess of War's life before, and he's pretty good friends with her. He wouldn't be so fearless before the people from Kingston Hall otherwise!" Tiger smiled. "I never expected that he would become such a man in five years. I heard that he was promoted to the rank of Head Commander. But to me, he'll always be better than a God of War!" "Shh!" His wife immediately scanned their surroundings, fearful. "Don't say such things. How can you spew such nonsense? Saying that he's stronger than a God of War? What if a God of War heard you? They wouldn't be happy, and they're so terrifying. People practically worship the ground they stand upon. Your Bro is strong, but he can't compare to a God of War!" "All right. I get it. Let's go. I don't think we'll be getting much business tonight. Let's close up shop and go back home to see Dad and Mom and our son! "We'll wait until tomorrow when there aren't any rascals disturbing us. I believe our business will start to pick up!" Tiger clenched his fist, speaking confidently. Fane quickly drove back to the villa. After he parked the car, he noticed a Volkswagen parked right beside him. A small smile lit up Fane's face as he studied the new car. It seemed that Ben had truly grown up. This was a good thing to him. However, he also believed that Ben had suffered plenty of emotional trauma. Fane would not forgive what Ivan and Xena had done so easily. He wanted to let them know that everything they had done today was incredibly and utterly foolish.

Chapter 652

“Daddy, Daddy. Come here. Look at this. See what I’ve got…” Kylie ran over to Fane as soon as he entered the villa’s living room, squealing with that cute, angelic voice of hers. Fane’s heart immediately melted at the sound of that voice and at the sight of those doe eyes. He instantly crouched down to heft Kylie up, planting a kiss on her supple cheek. “Good job! My little girl’s got a sticker!” “That’s right. The teacher said I was a good student!” Kylie’s smile was bright and innocent, happiness laced into its curve. “Oh? Of course, my daughter would be the smartest, most responsible kid in class!” Fane carried Kylie up the stairs. “Right. Kylie, would you like a reward? Tell me. I’ll give you one!” “Okay. Bring me and Mommy to the aquarium on Saturday!” Kylie asked, staring at Fane in anticipation after thinking about it for a moment. “Sounds good. We’ll bring you there on Saturday!” Fane only put Kylie down once they were on the upper floor. He returned to his room. Only then did he notice that Selena had already returned home from work and was taking a shower. On the bedside table, there was a poster. Embarrassment clinched Fane when he noticed the poster. This was the advertisement that someone else had helped put up, no? It seemed that Selena already knew about the whole thing. He sat down for a few minutes. Selena walked out of the bathroom, dressed in casual clothing. A hint of warmth graced her lips when she saw Fane. “You really want to send ripples across the entire city, don’t you now? How much money did you spend to advertise it so extensively? It seems like you wouldn’t have achieved such a result if you didn’t spend at least ten million bucks. Your mom will be worried about your finances. Again.” Fane grinned in embarrassment. “My dear, I just want your birthday to be known throughout the entire city so that you’ll have some fine memories. However, I didn’t do the advertisements. I don’t like being so showy.” Selena was surprised when she heard that. “No way. They would’ve had to spend a lot of money. The advertisements are everywhere. So much so that I’m

embarrassed to go out. My colleagues are even discussing coming over during my birthday." Her brows furrowed after she pondered for a while. "Strange. Who would spend that much money to advertise the both of us if it's not you? Isn't this just a waste of money? What benefit would they receive?" Fane could not help but give a wan smile looking at Selena's beautifully arched brows. "Think about it, dear. Not many people know about this, and not many were around either when I made the declaration. Who do you think it is?" Naturally, Selena, being the sharp woman she was, immediately reacted when Fane prompted her. "No way. Xena? But why would she do this? Especially when Ivan had just been sorely beaten up by us. Why would she do this with Ivan?" "Heh. They still think that I've been poisoned. The poison is expected to manifest on your birthday, and they want to watch the show. Do you get it?" Fane spoke lightly as he chuckled. Selena finally understood. "Right. They don't know that you've been cured. Ivan—that son of a b*tch! He really wants everyone to watch you die on my birthday, eh? I never expected him to be so wicked!" Fane nodded. "Hah. It's good that they helped advertise the event though. We don't have to do it ourselves anymore. The news will circulate throughout the entire city very quickly."

Chapter 653

Selena did not know whether to laugh or cry. Ivan and Xena would probably stab themselves in the throat if they knew what Fane was thinking right now. Of course, they probably would not have advertised the event just like that if they had known that Fane cured himself of the poison. "But this is just my birthday. No need to kick up such a fuss over this. That advertisement probably caused a real shock for everyone, claiming that the bash will be the ultimate talk of the town for years to come. They even made a countdown. My God, we'll probably be the butt of plenty of jokes if the party is too…normal!" Selena voiced her concerns after she thought about it. "Idiot. It's not just expensive food that will make the event grand." Fane

wrapped his arms around Selena, giving her a warm smile. “Don’t worry. Just relax. Trust me to handle this!” “Okay!” Selena pursed her flushed lips, then spoke bashfully. “Go and take a shower. We’ll go down to eat after that. They’re making the prawn that you like.” “You really know me well. You already know what I like to eat only after a month of my return!” Fane studied the beauty before him. He could not help but place a gentle kiss on her lips. “Hehe! Daddy kissed Mommy. I’m going to have younger brothers and sisters!” They were not aware that Kylie had slyly opened the door and poked her head inside the room. She clapped a hand over her mouth and chuckled when she saw this. “Ah!” Selena jumped from shock and immediately shoved Fane away, rolling her eyes at him flirtatiously. “Seriously? Why didn’t you close the door?” Fane gave her a bitter smile. “I never thought that our little girl would come in at this time.” “Let’s go down, Kylie. Don’t speak such nonsense, too! You’re more than enough for us.” Selena walked over and carried Kylie, ready to head down with her cheeks colored red. “You can’t do this, dear. We need another child. Kylie will be lonely otherwise!” Fane quickly reminded her after he realized it. As for Selena, who had already walked to the door, the tips of ears were already flaring pink. He did not expect her to cast a bashful glance over her shoulder after she stepped out of the room. She gave him a look that was not unlike a teenage girl experiencing her first love. “Fine. If you can cause a stir throughout the city during my birthday and make me feel like I’m the happiest woman in the world, I’ll agree to have another child. But that won’t happen if you don’t make me feel super, super touched, and happy!” “Hah! I guarantee you’ll be satisfied!” Fane burst into laughter. He knew that Selena was already satisfied with their lives now. She was teasing him on purpose. After he finished showering and eating, Fane hugged Selena to sleep. At this moment, a group of vagrants arrived before the headquarters of the Green Sky Hall. “Sir, you have to help us! Brother–brother Luca has been beaten up, so badly that his balls have been destroyed and his face rearranged. He’s in the hospital now!” a man threw himself at the feet of a

middle-aged man, pleading pitifully. The corners of the middle-aged man's mouth twitched slightly when he heard that. "F*ck. What's with all the commotion today? Spit it out! What happened?"

Chapter 654

The leader of the Green Sky Hall spiraled further into a bad mood. That afternoon, he found out that Flynn had been hospitalized after being beaten up. One of his legs had been broken so badly, it needed to be amputated. He was still contemplating what he should do tomorrow—if he should just let the whole incident slide for that bodyguard of the Drake family. He did not expect his subordinates to come crawling to him again. "Tell me what happened. Why was Luca beaten?" the middle-aged man spoke slowly after having remained silent for a few seconds. The other man finally narrated everything that had happened. After he finished, he said, "I don't know if that fellow was making empty threats, but he said he'd bring trouble to the Green Sky Hall tomorrow morning! He wants us to compensate every bit of that fifty thousand bucks!" "F*ck!" The middle-aged man was extremely angry. He slammed his hand on the table beside him and with a sharp crack, the table splintered into pieces. He stood up and spoke furiously, "Does he think that the people of Green Sky Hall are such pushovers? We've already given nine hundred and fifty thousand bucks. What more does he want? Jeez. That bodyguard from this morning knows the Goddess of War, and he's a son-in-law of the second-class aristocrats, the Taylor family. Who's this b*stard now? Don't tell me he knows Gods of War too!" The man kneeling on the floor furrowed his brows. "We're not sure, but at any rate, he quickly fought us once he came. He probably doesn't know any Gods of War!" "Alright. Leave for now. I'd like to see if he comes tomorrow!" The middle-aged man quickly took a few thousands worth of cash and thrust it to his subordinate. "Buy a few gifts and visit Luca tomorrow. Don't worry about everything here. We'll see if that punk shows his face. If he does, I'll be sure to break both his legs!" "Yes, sir! Thank you, sir!" The men nodded

and hurriedly left. After they left, an elder that was sitting to the side finally stood up. “Master, what should we do? Will those two fellows actually show up? I think they probably just made the threat to scare our men.” The leader of the Green Sky Hall was called Hector Zaborowski. He went silent for a few moments before speaking, “For the fellow who wants fifty thousand bucks, we’ll take his word with a grain of salt. We’ll just kill him if he comes! He was only able to defeat more than a dozen men because Luca and the others were never strong to begin with. With the two of us old pros, we’ll definitely beat him to death!” Hector paused for a while before continuing with a leisurely tone, “But the man called Fane won’t be as easy to handle, I’m afraid. The Gods of War will probably give us trouble if we off-ed him just like that. On the other hand, the Green Sky Hall would lose its reputation if we just answered to his every beck and call like a lapdog!” The elder nodded. He thought about it for a while before adding, “Why don’t we do this, Master? We’ll give him a test. It’ll also be a way for us to lose face gracefully. It won’t be embarrassing if word gets out, right? Or we could test his strength. He might serve us some purpose if he’s truly strong!” Hector’s eyes brightened as he heard the suggestion. He smacked the side of his head. “You’re right! Why didn’t I think of that?” he exclaimed. “I heard that the fellow was a Head Commander. He’s definitely strong. More importantly, he has contacts. It’d be fantastic if he used them for the sake of the Green Sky Hall!” “By the way, I’ve noticed quite a few leaflets circulating the city today, advertising the birthday party this fellow is going to throw for his wife. He even claims that it’ll cause a stir throughout the entire city.” The elder quickly thought of something else.

Chapter 655

“Really? He must have spent a lot of money. Does he really have that much money to splash around? Or perhaps the old master of the Taylor family will be giving him money to celebrate Young Miss Taylor’s birthday?” Hector frowned. “Probably not. He said that it’d be shameful to use the Taylor

family’s money. Besides, he’s just a son-in-law. No one would be so nice to someone like that.” “Mmhmm. Let’s just prepare for tomorrow first!” The elder spoke after a moment of contemplation. “If he comes alone and acts rudely, it’s possible for us to kill him off. No one can pinpoint the murder to us if the body disappears. If we say that he never came, the Gods of War wouldn’t just destroy the entire gang for his sake.” Hector nodded. “You’re right. That man saved the Goddess of War, but he was probably a doctor in the army so it was his duty to save lives. Besides, the Goddess of War boosted his reputation aplenty during Old Man Taylor’s birthday party. She doesn’t owe him anything anymore. If we do kill him and pretend to not know anything, the most the Goddess of War will probably do is to pretend to interrogate us!” The next day, a group of people waited in the huge garden right after the Green Sky Hall’s entrance. They wanted to see if the bodyguard from the Drake family and the man who bellowed about coming to claim the 50 thousand bucks would actually come. Fane parked the car at the entrance. He walked straight in when he noticed that there was no one there. Two muscled bodies immediately blocked him after he took a few steps into the garden. One of them spoke in a rumbly, intimidating voice, “Are you the son-in-law from the Taylor family?” Fane nodded. “Get out of my way. I came here to talk with your master. I don’t want to waste my time with you!” “Heh. Quite crude, eh?” The other man clenched his fists. “You can’t just see the master of the Green Sky Hall whenever you like,” he said viciously. “You’ll have to follow our procedures if you want to see him. Defeat the both of us first. Only then, do you have the right to see him!” Hector and a number of the Green Sky Hall’s men watched the exchange from a distance. Quite a few of them had frosty smiles creeping up their lips. They wanted to see how strong this son-in-law from the Taylor family was. After all, these two were not just any muscle-bound fighters, but they were two excellent fighters from the Green Sky Hall. Even some Head Commanders could not match up to them. Furthermore, it was two against one. That was why they thought it would be difficult for Fane to take them

on if he did not have the strength of a major, in the least. Fane flashed a cold smile, not giving a sh*t about them. “What a load of rules and regulations! Since I have to follow them, let’s go!” After he said that, he gently slapped a hand on the other man’s stomach, the movement a blur. It looked like a casual slap. Yet, that huge man was flung backward, his limbs flailing. He flew for a few good meters before he finally crashed onto the ground. Blood spurted out of his mouth and his expression was contorted. “Ah!” The other man was already throwing a punch at Fane. Fane was fast—terrifyingly fast. However, during the exact moment he attacked the other man, a gigantic fist came straight towards his head.

Chapter 656

Bang! When he saw his opponent making a move, Fane quickly threw his fist forward. It suddenly collided against the other man’s fist. For a moment, there was only silence that followed a dull thud. Then, that big man flew backward as well, just like his comrade. He flew quite a few steps back, his feet drawing beneath him a long, thin line on the ground before finally coming to a forceful halt. “Mmph!” The big man gurgled and spat, fresh blood dribbling out of the corner of his mouth. “Amazing!” Two big men walked over. They clapped their fists into their palms simultaneously after looking at Fane, bowing slightly. Then, they parted to the side. “Clap, clap!” At this moment, Hector also stood up, clapping his hands while walking forward with the people gathered behind him. “Hah. You’re pretty good. I never expected that the son-in-law from the Taylor family would be so frighteningly powerful!” “Hah. Master Zaborowski. I heard that your first name is Hector, right?” Fane laughed and said, “It seems like you had planned to cower me into submission first, eh?” The corners of Hector’s mouth twitched slightly. He stopped a few meters away from Fane. “I was merely being courteous. What do you mean I was trying to cower you into submission? My subordinates have long heard of your fighting prowess, so they wished to test their strength against yours. Now, all of you are

comrades forged through the way of the fist!" "Haha!" Fane laughed aloud again. "What a way to make friends. Thank goodness I'm strong enough. I would've probably been beaten to death if I were a terrible fighter. I have to pay compliments to your way of thinking, though—testing me first to judge the situation. Not bad!" When they heard this, Hector and the elder beside him exchanged a glance. Both of their expressions had soured. This brat was far cleverer than their expectations, seeing right through their scheme in such a short time. "No way. You've misunderstood us, kiddo. Our subordinates really just wanted to spar with you!" the old man stood up and told Fane, smiling. "Really? But they both told me that according to the rules here, I don't have the right to talk to their master unless I defeated them." Fane sneered inwardly, casting a glance toward the two men from earlier. "Ahem. We just wanted to spar with you, dear sir. We only said that because we were worried you'd refuse us!" they quickly reacted and explained, chuckling. The two men were not idiots. "All right. Speak, Mr. Fane. What business do you have with us here today?" Hector maintained his smile as he looked at Fane, giving off the aura of someone engulfed in a fresh spring breeze. Fane smiled. It seemed that Hector was a wolf clothed in sheepskin. Although he had a serene, kindly expression now, he must have stained his hands aplenty behind the scenes. He spoke immediately, "Of course, I came here for business so I won't dilly-dally any longer. You all probably know this as well—that I was the one who beat up the person who pretended to be blind yesterday. They secretly took pictures of a lot of ladies! I want to settle this matter today!"

Chapter 657

Hector still plastered a smile on his face when he heard that. "I thought it was something serious. I heard that the memory card had already been destroyed by you. So, isn't the matter settled already? What more do you want from us?" He paused for a while here, before continuing with a smile, "Hah. I know. You want some money from us to compensate for your losses,

right? It’s normal for one to think like that. I completely understand! Tell me, how much do you want?” Fane replied immediately, “I don’t want money for this issue. My request is simple. Don’t repeat this. Destroy any backups you have. Understand?” The corners of Hector’s mouth twitched. “Are you threatening me?” “Heh. I won’t investigate any further. I’m sure that you know full well I’m threatening all of you here. If you don’t destroy the backups and continue doing all this in the future, I’ll make sure that the Green Sky Hall would be completely obliterated if I catch wind of it!” Fane chuckled. He was not frightened in the least, standing there with his shoulders squared and radiating an aura of utter solemnity. “What a mouth you have on you! I’ll teach you a lesson!” An old woman stood up. “Care for a round with me?” Wrinkles were etched all over the old woman’s face, but there was a perceptible sharpness in her eyes. She looked to be in very good spirits. Fane sensed that this old woman was probably a lot stronger than the two men from earlier. However, he flashed a wan smile toward the old woman who was leaning against a cane. “No way. You look like you’re seventy or eighty years old. Won’t I be a laughingstock if I hurt you? They’ll say that I bullied a granny.” “Hah. Don’t worry. We definitely won’t say that you bullied her!” one of the men from earlier laughed aloud. “That’s right. She’s one of our best fighters. No average person can match her strength. You? Bully her? It’d be a miracle if you can last ten hits from her!” another middle-aged woman also laughed from the side. Fane’s words made her feel as though she had just heard the joke of the century, “Don’t worry, sonny boy. I won’t hold a grudge against you if you do have the strength to beat me to death.” After the old lady said that, she turned toward Hector who was behind her. “Master Hector, take this as a personal grudge between me and him. It’ll be my bad luck if he kills me. There won’t be any grudges between him and the Green Sky Hall. Is that possible?” “All right!” Hector agreed with her, nodding after pondering the proposal for a few seconds. From the looks of it, the old woman was going to fight with a killing intent, which was why she would probably use her full strength for the fight. She

would not have told Hector all of that otherwise. Meanwhile, Hector's goal was the same. If she could not kill Fane because he was too strong for her, he would treat it as a mere spar and a personal grudge. It would not have anything to do with the Green Sky Hall. However, if Fane was not strong enough and was killed by her, she would probably destroy every bit of evidence that he had been here, leaving no trace for anyone to find him. "All right. You can fight me with peace of mind now, boy. Let's see if you have the strength to kill this old granny here!" The old woman clutched onto her cane, the light in her eyes dimming dangerously.

Chapter 658

"Heh. I know you want to kill me, but I won't let you!" Fane flashed a cold smile when he heard that. If this old woman from the Green Sky Hall did not act too brashly, he would not destroy her straight away either. After all, Kingston Hall was behind the Green Sky Hall. It was not because Fane was afraid of Kingston Hall. Tanya, Yvonne, and Sharon knew about the incident today. It would create a huge hoo-hah if Kingston Hall was completely destroyed. Many people would probably doubt his identity. He would not be able to live the peaceful life that he had now. After all, Kingston Hall was the most powerful underground organization in Middle Province and the strongest among the gangs. They did not fear the presence of the Drake family at all. "Really? You're speaking as though you can kill when and wherever you please!" The old woman felt like she was being belittled. She was just old, but her strength was unmatched by a regular person. She took one step forward. The cane in her hands suddenly whipped toward Fane in a vicious arc; a frosty, murderous intent filled her eyes. Whoosh! It looked like a normal ebony cane, but at that moment, it resembled a sharpened sword, slashing forward at a blinding speed. With that sudden thrust, Fane did not have an inkling of doubt that a normal person would already have a hole carved into their chest. That was because Fane had heard the subtle echo of a supersonic boom from that thrust. "So

fast!” Fane was shocked. He really did not expect the old woman to be so dexterous. If he had not gone to war, he would have been completely terrified by her. “Hmph. Scared now, aren’t you? Is your life flashing before your eyes? Don’t underestimate me just because I’m old. Those two huge goons from before can’t match my strength!” Delight crept over the old woman’s expression when she heard Fane gasp. The tip of her cane was extremely sharp. Fane did not have the time to dodge. Yet at this moment, Fane dazzled her eyes. His entire body seemed to meld into the shadows as he sidestepped her attack in a flash. He appeared right beside her. “No way. You dodged that?” The old woman took a sharp breath. She was utterly stupefied. She suspected that she must have imagined it. She knew that Fane was strong after having watched him defeat those two men without breaking a sweat. However, she never expected him to be far stronger than she had imagined. She seriously suspected that only a King of War could have that kind of speed, based on the fighting strength within the military ranks. Fane dodged the attack. The old woman’s cane pierced straight into a wooden pillar behind him. This was a small pavilion that was held up by four wooden pillars. No one expected that such a huge pillar would have a hole carved straight through it. The cane had struck through the entire pillar. “That cane is made out of fantastic stuff!” Fane gave a wan smile when he saw that. “Ah!” The old woman was so frustrated that she missed her mark. She felt embarrassed. She released a huff and jerked her arm. That wooden pillar crumbled, allowing her to loosen her cane from the hole. Bang! The pillar held for three seconds, then it toppled onto the ground in a resounding crash. The entire pavilion went down with it. At that moment, the old woman attacked Fane again. However, Fane did not dodge her attack this time. Instead, he grabbed the cane with a quick sweep of his arm, and a powerful force rippled along the length of the cane. The old woman did not reveal a sliver of panic when Fane caught her cane. She still believed that Fane was not as strong as her.

Chapter 659

Nonetheless, she never thought that the force from that causal sweep of Fane's arm could be so deadly and powerful that it ruptured the end of the cane she was holding. The incredible force streaked through her hand, causing it to tremble uncontrollably as she struggled to hold the cane. "Ah!" The old woman stumbled back a few steps and her right hand was trembling unruly. She gazed at Fane with her eyes full of terror and respect at the same time. Fane's strength was impressive and his speed was as fast as lightning. She even sensed that Fane was having fun with her and that he must not have shown his true strength—the powerful strength that was hidden perfectly. "Hmmm? What now? Giving up?" Fane flashed her a small smile and said in an indifferent voice. "Jesus Christ! Isn't this kiddo too powerful? He's even able to take away Elder Castellano's cane!" a spectator from the crowd could not hold back a loud gasp. The battle between Fane and Elder Castellano was truly eye-opening. "No way! Don't tell me Elder Castellano can't defeat this retired soldier?" Some of them had their foreheads pressed together as they expressed their doubts. After all, they had never seen Elder Castellano defeated in a fight before. The corners of the old woman's mouth twitched involuntarily. At the same time, she was hesitant to admit defeat. If she surrendered now, she would surely become a laughingstock in front of the Green Sky Hall. If she tried again—harder and fiercer—there might be hope for her to win. "Kiddo, it's either you or me in the coffin today!" With her teeth gritted tightly, the old woman charged toward Fane again at lighting speed, switching positions several times in the hopes of trying to confuse and get close to Fane. "Heh! Your cane's in my hand. I must say, you're quite bold to come at me without any weapon!" Fane sneered frostily. With the cane in his hand, he swung it at his opponent before she could even come near him as though he was using the cane to beat a dog. The cane hit the old woman's arms and thighs several times in a row. "Ouch! Ow!" The old woman jumped from the pain as if she were a monkey in the circus. Her

body curled slightly. “You win! You win!” Finally, she yelled her defeat. Every movement sent ripples of pain through the old woman’s arms and legs. Fane stopped at last. The old granny scanned her body and there were many fresh and insidious bruises caused by the strokes of the cane. Although Fane did not use too much force, and all the injuries were merely bruises on the surface, the pain was searing and indescribable. “Now, do you think I’m able to kill you?” Fane stared at the old woman without any remorse but a faint yet callous smile on his face. The old woman felt even more embarrassed. For the first time in her life, she felt that she had been beaten until she could not even counterattack. She lifted her head, staring straight into Fane’s eyes, her voice cold, “Give me back my cane! I know I’m not your opponent at all. Kiddo, you’re young yet powerful!” “Heh? I don’t think it has anything to do with age!” Fane chortled as he threw the cane away casually. It landed right in front of the other party. “Ahem! Mr. Fane, a moment ago you mentioned that as long as we deleted all the backups and we ceased this business immediately, you’d leave us alone?” Hector, blending in with the other spectators on the side, was stunned by Fane’s strength. Fane’s combat prowess was truly astounding! Now, Hector had no other choice, but to put on the warmest smile on his face so that he could look amiable in front of Fane. “Yup, that’s right!” Fane bobbed his head. “Alright! I admire you a lot. It’s a deal then!” Hector immediately agreed to his demand. There was no other way after all. Besides, he did not want to make a big fuss about it. Although there was Kingston Hall behind them, if Fane was truly pissed off, it was highly possible that today would be their last day on the earth. Moreover, Fane was not just a ‘good’ fighter, but the finest and the greatest. Even if Kingston Hall knew about the episode, they would not dare to provoke him, too, given that his fighting prowess was that outstanding. Even if Kingston Hall were to win in a fight with Fane, the losses would be acute and unbearable. “Hmmm. Well. That’s all, then!” Fane smiled lightly and then continued, “Now, let’s talk about another thing!”

Chapter 660

Hector had assumed that it would be enough if he agreed to Fane's demand and that the other man would think about leaving them alone. He truly never expected Fane to bring up another issue. Fane observed the people around him and noticed that the men that had followed Brother Luca from yesterday were not around. He surmised that they had gone to the hospital to see their injured comrade. "What's wrong? Don't tell me that you want money, after all?" Hector spoke with a cold smile. "Heh. I really am going to ask for money!" Fane chuckled. "Your men owe me fifty thousand bucks. They couldn't even cough up a million yesterday. How shameful!" "You beat up Brother Luca, too?" Hector's expression darkened. He nearly fainted from anger. He had been thinking that he was truly unlucky today, to have met such a tough, fearless warrior. He planned to properly torture the fellow who had bullied Luca, ensuring his death. He never thought that Fane was the same man who Brother Luca and the others had provoked. When it rained, it truly poured. They provoked the same fellow on both occasions. "That's right. Isn't it a coincidence?" Fane flashed a cold smile. "Not only do you have to give me fifty thousand bucks, but you'll also have to order your subordinates to not give my brother any trouble. I won't settle for cash otherwise!" "Aren't you pushing it, Fane?" Hector flashed a bitter smile. "You wanted a million bucks, so my subordinates scrounged everything they had in their pockets to pay you nine hundred and fifty thousand bucks. Do you really have to ask for the remaining fifty thousand?" Fane's expression was nonchalant. "What a stupid question. Just pay the amount that we agreed upon." "Fine. I'll just take this as a stroke of misfortune!" Hector's expression hardened and he was displeased, but he nodded at the middle-aged woman beside him anyway. The woman walked towards Fane and took out her phone. "Give me your bank account number. I'll transfer the money immediately." "Now we're talking!" Fane did not hesitate to give his account number to her. What he did not expect was immediately

receiving a notification from the bank after he gave his account number. “So fast?” Fane frowned and looked at her. “I haven’t even keyed in the amount yet!” The woman stared at him, perplexed. Fane opened the message and was taken aback. After he read it, he realized that it was a bank transfer of more than 170 billion bucks. “Oh, it was from someone else!” Fane flashed a pained smile, finally responding. He had asked Skyler to help get rid of the Xenos family in Sky Dragon City and to sell off the assets and shares that they had. They donated some of the profit and divided the rest between themselves, 50-50. He never thought that there would be so much money left even after dividing the portion. “Oh!” The middle-aged woman furrowed her brow, suspicion twinging in her. It could not be a coincidence, right? Unless this brat was merely playing dumb? However, it had nothing to do with her. She keyed in the PIN and quickly transferred 50 thousand bucks to Fane’s account. At this moment, Fane’s phone rang.

Chapter 661

Fane switched his focus to his phone. ‘Skyler Celestino’ appeared on the screen. “Hey, Skyler Celestino!” Fane uttered casually after picking up the call. “Hehe, yeah! According to the ratio you told me, you’ll be getting a hundred and seventy billion bucks for your part. You should’ve received it by now, right? “What a steal. Not only did I fix my itch to fight, but I also made a big profit out of it.” Skyler’s manly voice rang from the phone. “Yup, I got the money. I've got some errands to run, so I’ll hang up now!” Fane ended the call in the next second. The woman before him was standing nearby, and Skyler’s voice was not particularly soft on the other end of the call as well. Fane was not sure if the other party had heard any part of the conversation. At this time, Hector approached the two and uttered, “Brother Fane, I heard that you’re a bodyguard of the Drake family, right?” Fane had already outstretched his leg and was about to leave the place. He did not expect such a question to pop out of Hector’s mouth. He nodded in conformity with the question, “Yes, what’s the matter?” “I heard that they

pay you twenty million bucks a month. I find that you're a gifted talent, after watching you and my men trying out each other. I really admire you for your skills!" Hector answered with a gentle smile. "That's right! Master Hector is right! Brother Fane, we've heard your big name a long time ago. Your talent will be gone into the drain if you continue to stay with the Drake family," the elder—who was standing next to Hector—leaned forward and echoed. "I'd pay you a hundred million a month, how about that? Work with me and help me expand Sky Green Hall. I truly believe that if we work together, it'd be impossible for the Sky Green Hall not to grow in the future!" Hector stretched out his finger, gesturing the number 'one'. His expression turned solemn and firm. "A hundred million bucks. It's indeed quite a lot!" Fane's pallor remained calm and plain. "However, I don't want to work with snobs like you. Forget it! Just coming to this place has wasted a lot of my precious time. I need to go to the Drakes to work now!" In the next second, Fane strode toward the gate without turning his head once. Hector's right index finger was still mid-air. He stayed frozen as though the conversation was a deadly lightning bolt that struck his brain. Many have said that if one person was offered double of what he was earning, that person would take it without thinking twice. He, himself, had offered Fane five times his previous salary, and yet this punk did not even blink an eye and walked away. Moreover, the look in his eyes and the tone of his voice were filled with disdain and contempt, as if 100 million bucks was nothing but stacks of waste paper in his eyes. "What the f*ck? Is this brat an idiot? He turned down a hundred million a month? I swear that there's no salary higher than this in the Middle Province!" A guy could not help but sigh at the scene before him. If he were offered such a salary, even if it were not 100 million per month but per year, he would be smiling all year long, even when he was sleeping. "Yeah! What an idiot! He must be an idiot!" another guy chimed in, laughing aloud. "A hundred million a month, and he just walked away? Instead, he went to work for a job of twenty million a month. What's wrong with this brat?" "Perhaps this punk's drooling over Miss

Tanya or Miss Yvonne. After all, the only thing this brat doesn't lack is money. Since he's not short of money, he's probably after the two beauties! That must be the case!" Another man was hypothesizing the situation. He narrowed his eyes and scratched his chin. The middle-aged woman from before gazed at Hector before slowly opening her mouth, "Master Hector, when Fane answered his phone a while ago, I think I heard something!" "Oh? Really? You were standing very close to him just now, what did you hear?" Hector was no fool. He believed in his subordinates. If his people took the initiative to come forward to report something, that something must be valuable and worth taking note of. "The person who called Fane, I think his name is Skyler Celestino. I vaguely heard the other party mentioning that a hundred seventy-eight billion bucks was transferred to Fane's account. He asked Fane if he had received it," the middle-aged woman said hesitantly, her face scrunched up.

Chapter 662

"Skyler Celestino?" "One hundred and seventy-eight billion bucks?" The crowd present at the scene was completely dumbfounded. Terror streaked through the space. These two pieces of information were overly shocking. "Are you sure you heard it right? Skyler Celestino? Doesn't this name belong to Skyler, the King of War? That's the eight-star King of War!" The elder was paralyzed to the spot, the terrifying surprise holding him in a tightening grip. He only managed to regain his words after a few minutes. "There's only one King of War with the name Skyler Celestino!" The middle-aged woman had a blank look in her eyes as though she was dwelling in a haze of confusion, yet to recover from the news. "If it really was Skyler Celestino, the King of War, why did he give Fane so much money? More than a hundred seventy billion bucks! Are you sure you heard the number correctly? Why did he give that b*stard so much money?" The sudden shock caused Hector's muscles to tense up. Only prominent families could produce that amount of money after they had sold all their properties.

Nobody at the scene could understand why a King of War—an eight-star King of War—would give so much money to an adopted son-in-law. The elder suddenly thought of something and immediately rushed into the house. He took a poster and ran out again. He breathed out heavily, “Master Hector, look! Look at the poster! That brat promised to make his wife’s birthday the grandest event that would shake the entire Middle province. Could he have borrowed money from the King of War so that he could host the greatest birthday party for his wife?” Thoughts were running wild inside the elder’s brain. This was the only possibility that he could think of. Other than this, no other suppositions could explain this situation anymore. Nonetheless, after hearing the words that he had spewed, he started to doubt his own assumption. If that was really the case, 170 billion bucks was too much, was it not? “Hmmm, spending a hundred million is enough to hold the grandest birthday party in Middle Province, right? A hundred and seventy billion bucks, how’s that possible? Besides, a King of War wouldn’t have lent out such a huge amount of money, right? And I truly doubt that a King of War who had just returned from the army would be able to fork out that much money in the first place, right?” After giving some thought to the shocking news, Hector finally said to the middle-aged woman, “Hawa, you must’ve heard it wrong. Yup. You heard it wrongly.” “Did I? But I thought that’s what the other person on the phone said!” “Oh! Now I see it!” Suddenly, the elder clapped his hands together after realizing something. “Damn! I think we’ve been fooled by that brat!” “Huh? What do you mean?” Everyone at the scene turned their attention towards the elder, scratching their heads, not knowing why. “That brat must’ve made someone else make that call on purpose and pretended that Skyler Celestino was the caller! All the contents in that call must’ve been staged and rehearsed!” The elder’s mood lifted and his eyes were full of wisdom. “He did it because he was afraid of offending the great power behind us—the Kingston Hall. This shows that he’s afraid of Kingston Hall and that he doesn’t want to create trouble. Therefore, he pretends to be close with Skyler Celestino, the King of War. However, the

biggest mistake that he made was the amount of money. That sum of money is so unrealistic that it exposed his sneaky plan!”

Chapter 663

“That mother*cker is really f*cking smart! We were almost fooled by him!” one of the injured bulky men slapped his thigh and shouted. “This brat is more cunning than a fox!” a middle-aged man chimed in, wearing a bitter smile. He then continued, “He’s afraid that we might continue looking for trouble and just let him off temporarily. That’s why he kept this wild card in his hand, so he could leave the place. Otherwise, how could the call be so coincidental? How could the call come in right as we were about to transfer the money to him?” After hearing everyone's detailed analysis, Hector bobbed in agreement. That b*stard had almost deceived him! He turned his gaze to the elder and said, “Elder Ward, I’m thankful for your wit and wisdom. Fortunately, that brat revealed himself by saying some ridiculous amount of money—a hundred seventy billion. If he had said a hundred or two hundred million, we would’ve fallen for his trap.” The sound of praise entered the elder’s ears and lifted his mood. With his hands behind his back, he slowly said, “Hehe! I can only comment that this brat has over bragged. His plan would’ve been perfect if the sum of money was lesser. He would’ve scared the wits out of us! But, the more he tried to scare us away, the more mistakes he made. It has become crystal clear that he’s actually afraid of us in his heart.” With a prideful tone in his voice, he continued, “He didn’t come here today to stir up trouble. If he really wanted to, he wouldn’t have been merciful to Elder Castellano and the two during the fight!” “Yes, you’re right! This brat is as sly as a fox! Such a delicate plan!” The old granny—Elder Castellano—nodded in agreement. “I only suffered surface injuries on my body. This brat can control his strength and power very well. It seems that he truly is afraid. He must’ve come today due to yesterday’s episode—he was showing off in front of Miss Tanya and Miss Yvonne, pretending to be all tough and powerful. Hence, he mustered up the courage

today to come to warn us just to complete his bragging show. Secondly, he's afraid that our men would continue to find trouble with his brother—Tiger!" "Yep!" Hector nodded to agree. "Anyway, judging from his combat prowess, I guess I'm not on par with him. Plus, he's clever and witty. He's definitely not someone we should provoke. Let's try not to offend him!" "But…" Elder Ward's forehead creased, and after a moment of silence, he enunciated, "Master Hector, some of the photos that we took are for several domestic websites, and some are for the overseas markets, which are our primary market as well. If we were to follow what the brat had asked of us, we'll make a lot less profit and the other parties may not agree to it!" "Yes. The loss will indeed be quite huge. I estimate at least a hundred million bucks would be lost in a month!" Hector clenched his fists firmly at the thought. "Dammit! This is a low-cost but high-yield business! Now, it's all ruined by the b*stard Fane. If we stopped it, the losses would be huge!" "That's right! If the parties who work with us in the overseas market don't agree with it, I'm afraid that they might create trouble for us. Besides, we're not known by the authority and power behind them. It would be fortunate for us if they let us compensate for their losses!" Elder Ward's face morphed into one of solemn soreness. "We can stop causing trouble for Fane's brother. As for the matter of not taking pictures, it'll be a great loss for us!" Hector flashed them a wan smile, his teeth gritted tightly. "But you saw it yourself, too. That brat is too powerful for us to offend. None of our men can kill him! We'll call it luck that he decided to spare our lives. Even I, myself, am not his opponent, and I don't think those skilled fighters from Kingston Hall are at the same level as him! Our best bet is to do as we were told!" Hector shut his mouth for a moment and then continued, "I'm the master of the Green Sky Hall. I can't go back on my own words! If word gets out that I'm an untrustworthy person, where should I hide then?" "Sigh!" The elder heaved a deep sigh. "This problem, hard to solve. What if you tried talking to someone from Kingston Hall?" Hector presented the elder with a dry smile in return. "That's a no-no! My elder brother doesn't

like me being involved in this business. I do it behind his back. So, you tell me, how can I talk to him about this?" He remained silent for a while after he spoke, and then he uttered again, "We will trade the photos that we took this month. After all, tomorrow's the trading day. We'll do the trading privately and Fane won't know of it. As for next month, let's think about that next time!"

Chapter 664

Meanwhile, at the Drake's residence… Three beauties were casually strolling in the ample garden of the Drake's residence. Yvonne gazed at Tanya, wanting to ask something but she was afraid that her concern for Fane would be too obvious. She feared that the two beauties before her would misunderstand her. Nevertheless, worries and concerns for Fane had been growing uncontrollably within her all day. She knew in her heart that the head of Green Sky Hall and the head of Kingston Hall were biological brothers. The reason why Green Sky Hall managed to develop and expand so well and so fast was because of the power behind them—the Kingston Hall. Moreover, there were several top-notch fighters in Green Sky Hall, whom even Spectre Face from the Drake's family would think twice before picking a fight with them. Therefore, dread and worry gnawed at her insides—she truly worried about Fane's safety. Fane should have come to work by now, yet he had not presented himself. This brat must have gone to do what he had declared he would do. Tanya could not help but keep her eyes on the entrance gate, her face plastered with disturbance. "That idiot Fane, why hasn't he come to work yet?" Sharon George, who was still chit-chatting about another topic, could no longer suppress the uneasiness within her and blurted, "He must've gone to the Green Sky Hall! I don't know if he can solve this matter!" "I think not!" Since Sharon had already mentioned Fane, Yvonne continued smoothly, "The men in Green Sky Hall are not easy to deal with. They have a lot of good fighters that can't be easily handled. They're beyond ordinary good fighters. Besides, Hector's a smiling tiger—

outwardly kind and benevolent, but inwardly cruel and wicked. Fane's a simple-headed person. He's too straightforward and wouldn't know when to retreat and give face to the other party. I'm really afraid that…" Tanya bobbed her head to show agreement. "The most crucial thing now is that Fane has gone to the place. He's not going to let them continue taking such photos. I know Fane, he'd want to solve this problem now and forever, but he's practically chopping off the other party's financial resources." Tanya paused for a second and then continued, "Yesterday, I asked Pa about Green Sky Hall, and he told me that the people in there aren't only trading their photos to domestic websites, they're also trading with some powerful authorities overseas!" When Sharon registered these analyses into her brain, she grew even more anxious. "You're right! Cutting off people's source of money is like killing their entire family! Not to mention, this is their long-existed business! Now that it's been called off by Fane, how could the other party accept it? Green Sky Hall is one son of a b*tch! How could they trade with overseas authorities! This is frustrating!" Tanya flashed a bitter smile. "Before, I didn't know that the Green Sky Hall would do such a thing underground. My Pa and the others only found out about it not long ago, too. There's simply no way to stop them. If Kingston Hall weren't behind Green Sky Hall, we, the Drake family, would've taken action! But with Kingston Hall behind everything, my Pa feels helpless, too!" "No, no way! Fane's in danger now! I…I have to go and save him!" Sharon stomped anxiously. "I'll bring some bodyguards as well as several top-notch fighters from the George family! I must help him! He can't die!" "But, Sasa, Fane said he could solve it alone!" Yvonne pulled Sharon back and added, "If you go there like this, aren't you afraid that Fane might be unhappy?" "But—but, it's better than leaving him to die there, right? I'm really worried about him!" Sharon was so frantic with fear, her face went white. "Don't worry. I believe in him!" Tanya gained a little more confidence in Fane when she thought of the episode that happened outside the city—Fane attended to the challenge in the woods and beheaded hundreds of men, some

of whom were very powerful. Just as her last syllable dropped, a scarlet red Porsche 911 drifted into the gate and swiftly parked in a parking space not far away. “He’s back!” At the sight of this, the corners of Tanya’s mouth curled upward, and she was relieved.

Chapter 665

“Finally!” Sharon and Yvonne exclaimed in unison, both heaving big sighs of relief. Sharon gazed at Yvonne, her rosy pink lips slightly parted. She could no longer hold back and asked, “Yvonne, you seem…you seem to be very very worried about him, too. Don’t tell me you like him, too?” Sharon’s question startled Yvonne, causing her to choke. Her eyes flickered and her cheeks were immediately kissed pink. She retorted instantly, “What? Impossible! That guy’s a pervert who drools over beautiful ladies! I don’t like him at all, hmph!” Lines appeared on Sharon’s forehead as her brows furrowed. “Impossible! If he’s a pervert, then why didn’t he drool over me? I’ve got a great figure and I look good, too!” “Hello, beauties! Looks like nothing’s bothering you and you’re in a good mood, admiring the beauty of flowers,” Fane teased as he walked over to the three of them, a gentle and warm smile on his face. When Fane appeared in front of them, Sharon—whose brain was seized by worries and panic just a few seconds ago—instantly calmed down and her demeanor changed. She became somewhat reserved and shy, putting on a casual face devoid of any worry for Fane at all. “Green Sky Hall, did you really go there?” Tanya, on the other hand, asked aloud. Fane nodded in response. “I’ve got the fifty thousand bucks! I’ll treat you ladies to lunch today!” “Wait! What? What fifty thousand bucks?” Tanya questioned, looking puzzled. “Didn’t you say you were going to talk to them about the photos? What’s this fifty thousand you’re talking about? Don’t tell me that you let them off the hook for a mere fifty thousand bucks?” “What? No way! I thought you’d at least fight them!” Yvonne was as dumbfounded as Tanya. Why did Fane go to Green Sky Hall to make a fuss for fifty thousand bucks? Even if his purpose was to

blackmail them, 50 thousand bucks was too little, no? “Oh, I almost forgot something! You don’t know what happened after I got off work yesterday. My closest buddy, Tiger, came to me and told me that his restaurant….” Remembering that the three had no knowledge about yesterday’s episode, he patiently narrated the incident from stem to stern. Fane shrugged once he finished telling the story. “Therefore, not only did I settle yesterday’s issue, but I also collected what Green Sky Hall owed me yesterday—the fifty thousand bucks!” “In that case, the people in Green Sky Hall are truly sly foxes! First, they tested your strength, and if you weren’t strong enough, they would’ve ended you on the spot!” “Little did they know that you’re not just powerful, but their secret weapons—the skilled Granny and two big men—aren’t worthy opponents as well. Only when they knew they couldn’t beat you did they surrender, just so their problem wouldn’t become worse!” Cold sweat dripped down Yvonne’s forehead as she repeated the episode. Fortunately, Fane was a strong combatant. His experience as a soldier in the past five years had not been in vain. Otherwise, he would have been in a dangerous situation today! “Heh! They’re not that smart. Such dirty tricks can’t escape me!” Fane chuckled nonchalantly, and then continued, “But I have to say that Hector’s nothing but a smiling tiger. He looks benevolent and kind on the outside, but inwardly, he’s full of dirty, cunning tricks. It’s not a surprise that such a person can become the Master of Green Sky Hall!” “What I’m worried about now is whether the other party will go back on their word. They only agreed to your demand on the surface because you’re strong and hard to get rid of!” Tanya frowned deeply after thinking about it. “His elder brother is the Master of Kingston Hall! What if he tells his brother about this? We’re done for!”

Chapter 666

Fane arched his brow upon hearing Tanya’s concern. “I don’t think that’d be the case. Hector’s the head of Green Sky Hall, after all. As the head of an infamous house, how can he just go back on what he’s promised?” Tanya,

on the other hand, could not hold back from shooting Fane a sarcastic glance with her pair of big beautiful eyes. “Indeed, he’s the head of the Green Sky Hall, but their real power is not what you see on the surface. To the world, they’re all about opening spa and wellness centers, but under the surface, they make a lot of deals with dirty trades. Should we really trust such a person?” Fane bobbed his head in agreement at Tanya’s words. “Let’s see how it goes, then. If he doesn’t learn his lesson, he’ll regret it later!” “Alright, then. It’s pretty late now, let’s go shopping!” Tanya suggested tentatively. Fane looked at the watch on his wrist—it was almost noon. After some contemplation, he proposed, “Okay! I have fifty thousand bucks from the Green Sky Hall. Let me treat the three of you to a nice lunch!” “He-he! Thank you!” Tanya chortled. “Oh, right! I almost forgot! It’s payday and it’s your first time receiving your pay. The financial department will transfer your salary to you no later than this afternoon!” Fane looked unconcerned by Tanya’s utterance. “Really? If you hadn’t said anything, I would’ve almost forgotten all about it. Haha!” “What? It’s a salary of twenty million bucks a month! I bet this figure is the highest in the bodyguard market! How could you not look forward to it nor show any excitement at all? Worse, you almost forgot about it!” Yvonne was tongue-tied. Even if Fane had a few million in his hand, a salary of 20 million would still be considered a huge sum of money! Yet, not even the slightest hint of excitement could be seen on his face. It seemed that money was irrelevant to him. “This hopeless brat. How could you forget about twenty million bucks!” Tanya did not know whether to cry or to laugh at Fane. “Had I known you’d forget your own payday, I wouldn’t have been in such a hurry to pay you. It’s great if I could save a lot of money!” In return, Fane flashed her the warmest smile and said, “If you don’t pay me, won’t you be afraid that one day I’d remember my salary of twenty million and spank you for not paying me?” Fane finished his sentence with another hearty laugh before noticing that Tanya’s face had turned as red as a tomato. He then realized that he seemed to have said something wrong. Tanya was a lady, after all. Perhaps his joke was a little

bit too much. Besides, he often made fun of his apprentices this way when he was on the battlefield. Everyone in the camp was used to it, but now they were not in the camp, and Tanya was no apprentice. She was the daughter of the Drake family—the family's most precious pearl! Tanya's face turned scarlet as she shot a glare towards Fane. "Hmph! You…if you dare to do so, I'll never pay you your salary!" "Cough, cough! Ahem! It's just a joke. Alright, let's go…go out to eat!" Fane coughed awkwardly, clearly embarrassed. He then walked to his car in a serious manner in an attempt to cover up his embarrassment. Sharon felt uneasy and uncomfortable hearing the conversation that took place between Fane and Tanya. She curled her lips, pouted, and muttered, "This idiot didn't even look me in the eyes, and now he wants to spank Miss Tanya!" When Tanya heard what Sharon said, she went silent. She instantly took Sharon's hand and said, "Sasa, don't tell me you're jealous? He was just joking around. How could he like a little girl like me? Besides, he has a wife!" Nonetheless, Sharon did not look satisfied with the explanation. She mumbled with a tone of disappointment, "I'm still upset! Why can't he joke around like that with me!"

Chapter 667

Yvonne was at loss for words. She sauntered behind Sharon and landed a soundly slap on her back, then walked away as though nothing happened. "Ah!" A dull ache settled into Sharon's back, causing her to yell out loud. Her eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers. "Yvonne Drake, what are you doing!" A heartless smile plastered Yvonne's face as she wheeled her head around. "Didn't you just say you wanted to be spanked? Just pretend that slap was from Fane." Sharon was dumbfounded. She did not know whether to cry or to laugh. She huffed angrily, "How—how can that be the same?" If the slap was truly from Fane, it might have implied that Fane had some interest in her. In that case, even if she were to be spanked black and blue, her heart would be bursting with joy. However, she had to be realistic. Fane, this idiot, had never given her a chance. She had no idea what to do

next. “Let’s move. It’s the first time Fane’s treating you to lunch, so chop chop!” Sharon’s affection and loyalty toward Fane triggered a sigh out of Tanya. She never thought that love could be like this. Sharon’s love was an obsession. It possessed her and made her lose her sense of self. However, the current situation was of unrequited love. After all, with Sharon’s attractive look and alluring figure, a lot of men out there would be head over heels for her! With such charismatic attributes, Sharon still remained loyal to Fane and continued to actively pursue him. Nevertheless, Fane did not bother to reciprocate those feelings and never gave her a chance at all! At the entrance of the villa, a faint yet cordial smile was hanging on James Drake’s face. He was observing the commotion, standing not too far away from the four of them. “Fane Woods, he’s indeed not an ordinary man. I must give him credit for having the courage to go to Green Sky hall alone!” James whispered to himself, his tone full of mixed emotions. By this time, Fane and the others had disappeared from his sight. “Indeed, not an ordinary man. Miss Tanya said that Fane was going to pay them a visit, but I didn’t expect him to come back so quickly. It seems that everything went well!” Spectre Face nodded in agreement. “For a detailed understanding of the whole situation, we’ll need to spend some money to get the information.” James put on another warm smile in response. “Nah, I think Tanya and the others are pretty close to him. They were chatting for quite a while just now. They should be discussing the events that happened in Green Sky Hall. We could just ask Tanya when she returns later tonight. She should know quite a lot!” Spectre Face chortled. “Miss Tanya’s something else. She’s managed to get close to Fane in such a short time. Young Master Drake, on the other hand, is still the same—stoic and full of disdain toward Fane. He doesn’t look like he’s a fan of Fane, and he never really talks to Fane that much.” Thinking of this son of his, James’s facial expression hardened. “Timothy, this brat. Always making me worry for him! I heard he’s been playing billiards with Grayson from the Mont family whenever he’s free as of late. Furthermore, their betting amount in a single game is quite huge. You could

lose a lot in just one game!" Spectre Face's forehead creased into a frown. Looking at James, he slowly spilled out some words, "Master Drake, there's one thing about Young Master Drake that I'm not sure if I should report." Looking at Spectre Face's hesitant expression, James's heart suddenly felt uneasy. He permitted, with his brows furrowed, "Spill it!" "I've heard that Young Master Drake has been visiting some entertainment centers lately and that he's been mingling with a friend of Michael Wilson. That friend is a young master from a third-class family, and he's got a stinky reputation." James's face turned even darker upon hearing the news. "Timothy, this brat! He's always been obedient and performs pretty well in front of me. I didn't expect he'd start mingling with these people. If he continues to behave in such a way, how am I supposed to hand over the Drake properties to him in the future!"

Chapter 668

In a flash, Fane and the three beauties had arrived at a hushed and serene restaurant with classy decoration. It was a decent restaurant. The environment was quiet and had pastel aesthetics. Although the price was mildly exorbitant, money to Fane was never a problem. The price did not sway Fane in the slightest. "Alright, ladies. Order whatever you want! It's my honor to invite three beauties to lunch for the first time!" Fane handed over the menu and enunciated modestly. "I'm only a bodyguard, and three of you are from noble families. Yet, you're willing to let me treat you to lunch. It's truly an honor!" Tanya was speechless for a while. This jerk was no ordinary man, and he must be a man of a higher social status than she was. Yet, he was acting all stupid in front of her. It was evident to everyone that this guy was not an ordinary bodyguard. "The prices aren't cheap at all. Aren't you worried that fifty thousand bucks won't be enough?" Yvonne purposely teased Fane after taking a look at the menu. "Hehe! Don't worry. Do you think my budget for our lunch is only fifty thousand? It's my pleasure to have you three beauties together with me. I'd be more than happy

to spend five hundred thousand on you, let alone fifty thousand!" Fane giggled, then he gazed over his watch and pondered for a second before saying, "Oh! By the way, Selena's company is just nearby, and it's almost lunchtime now. I've invited her over for lunch with us since she has a two-hour lunch break!" "Wouldn't your dear wife be jealous of us? That you're having lunch with three beauties? Moreover, you're spending so much on us, wouldn't she scold you?" Tanya teased playfully. "Nah, she won't!" Fane uttered confidently. "My wife is a gentle, kind-hearted, generous, intelligent, and virtuous woman. Why would she scold me just because I invited three of you to lunch?" Hearing him compliment Selena and looking at the prideful expression on Fane's face, Sharon's heart sank and her thoughts started to get clouded. She could see that Fane really did love his wife. There was a huge difference between how he treated Selena and herself. All this made her feel doubtful of herself. Was she not charming or good-looking enough? She wondered if Fane would ever fall in love with her. Fane went out to call Selena. At the same time, Yvonne was ordering some food. "F*ck off!" A piercing voice echoed from inside the restaurant into Fane's ears when he was just about to make the call. Fane's brows immediately furrowed after hearing the voice. He looked into the restaurant and in the next second, his face scrunched up. Inside the restaurant, several men with gold necklaces around their thick necks surrounded Tanya and the others. One of them wore a cunning lopsided grin. He stretched out his arm, wanting to caress Tanya's cheek. "Tsk, tsk, you're one hot chick, aren't you? You have silky smooth skin, too. How about my bros and I treat you to this lunch and after that, you come with us for a karaoke session and have fun with us!" the rascal spoke, his mouth twisted into a perverted grin. He switched his focus over to Yvonne and Sharon who were beside her. His Adam's apple moved up and down vigorously. "These two chicks, too! Look at their bodies...so well maintained...and their faces...so gorgeous! If they were born in ancient times, they could be Xi Shi[1] and Diaochan[2] !" "Yeah, you're so right! Miss, the one thing we don't lack is money. We'll

treat you to good food and good wine. Come and have fun with us! Eighty thousand or even a hundred thousand is not a problem for us!" another man echoed while giggling. Just as Fane stepped out of the restaurant to make a phone call, these rascals entered. They noticed the three beauties as soon as they entered the restaurant and they could not help but approach them in an instant. There were a lot of nice-looking women on this earth, most of whom were gold-diggers. They all adored sugar daddies and enjoyed being their sugar babies. As long as the men flashed out some cash and showed off their money, most women would bow down before them! Of course, these few thugs had experiences with such women before, so naturally, they possessed some level of confidence when they approached Tanya and the others. "Just order whatever you fancy, my lovely ladies. Even those super fancy and exorbitant food and drinks, too. We have money!" [1]Xi Shi was, according to legends, one of the renowned Four Beauties of ancient China. She was said to have lived during the end of the Spring and Autumn period in Zhuji, the capital of the ancient State of Yue [2]Diaochan was one of the Four Beauties of ancient China.

Chapter 669

Once the thug who had his eyes fixated on Tanya finished his speech, he stretched forth his hand again, trying to stroke her cheek. "F*ck off!" Tanya slapped his hand away, with a look full of disgust plastered on her face. This was the piercing voice that Fane heard a while ago. He entered the restaurant, his face icy-cold. "Heh! You're some hot-tempered chick, aren't you? How dare you hit me! Do you know how much you need to compensate for slapping my hand? I was going to ask nicely if you'd agree to hang out with us, but since you hit me, you have no choice but to come with us today. Oh well. Of course, you can choose between hanging out with us or paying me one million bucks for the medical expenses!" The man sneered. Since Tanya had hit his hand, he decided to threaten her. "One million bucks is like a peanut to me, it means nothing! But for some jerk

like you, dream on!" Tanya shot up from her seat and leaped forward slightly, trying to push the thug away. "F*cking b*tch! I'm trying to play nice with you, but you don't seem to appreciate it, huh?" This man was not easy-going as well. He pushed her back, hard. "Ah!" The man had obviously trained before, his physical strength was not a joke. How could a young miss from a wealthy family like Tanya be able to take in such a push? Tanya stumbled, losing her balance before she slipped and fell backward. As she was falling, she felt so frightened! She was wearing a short skirt today and her clothes were white! The words 'embarrassment' and 'shame' flashed in her mind. A strong arm appeared from behind her and wrapped around her waist. The owner of the arm caught her in time, and Tanya hung diagonally in his grip, mid-air. The moment Tanya was caught mid-fall, she struggled to release herself from his grip. However, when she noticed that it was Fane who caught her, she heaved a deep sigh of relief. Was this not a scene similar to the ones in soap operas? Before this, she had always found shows like that too ridiculous and silly. How could the male lead always appear on time during critical moments? The male lead would wrap his arm around the waist of the female lead before exchanging glances affectionately. But as she found herself caught in this exact scene, Tanya was frozen, as still as a statue. She could scarcely believe the scene before her eyes. Her heart hammered in her chest and almost leaped out of her throat. Suddenly, she was reminded of the night when Fane accidentally kissed her lips twice. Her rosy cheeks turn redder. However, there was a difference between soap operas and the reality she was living in—Fane did not even look at her, much less in an affectionate way. After catching her from the fall, he immediately helped her up. "Miss Tanya, are you alright? Did he scare you? I'm truly sorry. I just wanted to make a call. I didn't expect the arrival of several wolves!" Fane spoke with a warm smile on his face as he helped Tanya up. "Wow! Isn't somebody trying to play superhero?" The thug who shoved Tanya had a wolf head tattooed on his chest. He ripped his shirt open a little bit wider to show off the tattoo before saying aggressively, "Little

brat, you're right about me being a wolf! I'm not just a wolf, but a wild one who has tasted blood before! Did you know that?" "Haha! Look at this, brat!" The other three thugs glanced at each other before they, too, pulled their shirts open to reveal the same wolf-head tattoo on their chests. "It's just a tattoo. How's that frightening?" Fane let out a frosty laugh after taking a look at their chests as if he was watching a clown show.

Chapter 670

The four rascals in front of Fane thought that he would be scared of them after revealing their tattoos. However, not only did Fane show no sign of fear, he even said some things that made the corners of their mouths twitch. Did this punk not recognize the tattoo? "Little brat, aren't you afraid? Hah! The streets around this area are our territories! We're from the Wolf Fang Gang! The man pointed to the tattoo on his chest and announced proudly, "Although we don't have a lot of members in the Wolf Fang Gang, each gang member is as ruthless as wild wolves! Offending us is equivalent to digging your own grave!" Another one chimed in, "If you understand the situation, you'd make yourself disappear! Besides, this chick provoked Brother Felix. If not, Brother Felix wouldn't have shoved her!" "I understand. Hmmm. Then, do you know who I am? Also, do you know who this lady is? Are you guys dumb or what? How dare you push this young miss!" Fane chuckled and responded nonchalantly. "Do I look like I care? All I know is that she's an attractive woman. Haha!" Brother Felix laughed uncontrollably. Obviously, he did not recognize Tanya and the others. However, the blame was not on them. After all, they were just some local rascals that were not even qualified to meet or be associated with someone like Tanya who was from a noble family. Those who would be aware of Tanya's status usually came from powerful noble families. "I'm her bodyguard, and she's Miss Tanya from the Drake family!" Fane's face sank. "What? No way! She's Miss Tanya? From the Drake family?" One of the thugs was stunned at Fane's words. He was clearly frightened. If it was

really Miss Tanya from the Drake family, then they were in big trouble! Another thug immediately retorted, “F*cking fake! Miss Tanya is a Drake! With her status and identity, she shouldn’t come to a place like this. Besides, if Miss Tanya’s out in public, shouldn’t there be a group of bodyguards with her?” Felix thought the statement was reasonable as well. He commented, “Little brat, you sure do know how to brag, huh! If Miss Tanya from the Drake family has come out, there would be at least a dozen bodyguards with her! They’d be brawny and strong, but here you are, just a single fellow. Look at yourself, you’re neither bulky nor strong! Do you think we’re fools?” “I’ve ordered mine, do the rest of you have anything else to add on?” Yvonne asked as she turned to Fane and the others after placing her order. There was not a single trace of worry or concern on her face. “I’m good. We could always order more food later if it’s not enough!” Fane smiled as he rubbed his fists. “Explaining things to trash like you is wasting a lot of my time and energy. I think my fists can do the explaining better!” “Haha! Do you think I’ll be scared?” Felix laughed aloud and waved his hand, signaling the other three thugs to attack Fane. Boom! Bang! Pow! Nevertheless, with a few simple strokes and punches, the wolves plopped onto the ground, clutching at their chests in pain before they started to cry. Pain seethed through them with a terrible intensity. It felt like being eaten from the inside out by a sharp-toothed creature. “What the f*ck!” Felix’s eyes widened into spheres as large as kiwis. His throat tightened and cold sweat streamed down his forehead. He clenched his jaw, took out a pocket knife from his trouser pocket, and launched the blade in Fane’s direction. However, he did not even get close before Fane snatched the knife away from him. Snip! Snip! Snip! With his right hand, Fane dangled the pocket knife in front of Felix’s face. Felix was so frightened that his body went numb, his blood frozen in his veins. He was unable to move at all. Felix looked down at himself, only to realize that while there were no injuries on his body, his shirt had been ripped and cut, leaving hundreds of holes. He stood frozen in his spot, looking like a peasant begging on the streets. “Si—sir, I was wrong!” Felix’s

legs turned to jelly in a flash and he plopped onto the ground, kneeling before Fane. He truly believed that if Fane wanted to kill him a moment ago, he would have died more than a hundred times!

Chapter 671

“Boss, we… We’re sorry, we made a mistake. We’ll get out of your hair and let you be with this chick, alright?” Another man feebly knelt before Fane once he got over the initial sting of pain. Frowning, Fane coldly snapped, “What are you talking about? I’m Miss Tanya’s bodyguard! How dare you!” “Y—Yes, of course…! This honorable and pretty lady must be Miss Tanya. You’re such a powerful bodyguard. Now I see why she needed only one bodyguard with her all this time… You’re basically a one-man army, with the power of a hundred men!” spoke the man as he quivered, and he wiped the cold sweat off of his forehead from time to time. If the beautiful woman they intended to take advantage of was indeed the Drake family’s Miss Tanya, members of the Wolf Fang Gang would not even mutter a word if they were killed right here. The Drake family was the most prominent family; small groups like them were not qualified to even fight back. “Boss, please let us go,” Felix begged Fane. “Can we show ourselves out?” Fane glanced at them indifferently. “I’d watch yourselves if I were you. You people might lose your lives the next time I see you doing this again!” “Yes, Big Brother,” Felix nodded thankfully. “We’re truly grateful for this mercy you’ve shown us!” Felix lowered his head as he began to walk away with his men. He wanted nothing more than to dissolve from this place. However… “Wait!” Fane called out to him just as he took two steps away. “What?!” The four of them glanced at each other, their faces slowly losing color. They never thought Fane would go back on his word. Was he going to kill them? “I didn’t allow you guys to leave, did I? You guys said that you’d treat Miss Tanya to a meal, didn’t you? Could it be that you’re backing down on your promise?” Fane smirked. Meanwhile, Tanya had already returned to her seat as the blush on her face had receded. Still, she

felt jittery when she recalled the feeling of Fane's arm wrapped around her waist. It was not long after Fane thought to himself that he ordered, "Go pay the bill. Then, kneel here and wait until we finish our dinner before you can leave. I'll let you guys go after that." "Oh, of course, of course! We'll pay the bill right now!" Fearing for their lives, the men nodded vehemently before they scurried to pay the 60,000 worth of bill. Once they paid, the four The four rushed toward Fane's table and knelt right beside them. They were so ashamed that they lowered their heads bitterly, and it showed on their faces too. At this moment, Selena finally came from her company that was located nearby to where they were. Selena frowned when they saw the four men kneeling on the floor. "Hubby, what's going on? Did you get into another fight?" Selena was startled to see four men on the floor, kneeling. She had told Fane many times before to stop getting into fights so they could enjoy a low profile lifestyle. The last thing she expected during this meal was this scene. "These people left their eyeballs at home and dared lust over Miss Tanya's beauty. This punishment is nothing, really." Fane smiled indifferently and pulled out the chair beside them. "Honey, take a seat. The dishes will be served soon. Let's sit and wait for our dishes." "Oh, so that's what happened? I suppose they're rather foolish if they don't know who Miss Tanya is!" Selena smiled impassively once she heard Fane's explanation. Fane was Miss Tanya's bodyguard, so it was only his duty to do something if she was harassed. The four men raised their heads and glanced at Selena. They were once again stunned because of her beauty, and they became green with envy. He was just a bodyguard but had such a beautiful wife. They wanted to die!

Chapter 672

"Selena, you're so pretty! This professional suit looks so classy on you!" Sharon looked at Selena and enviously added, "It's no wonder that Fane loves you so much. I adore him so badly, but he's cold and indifferent toward me!" An awkward smile appeared on Selena's face. "Sharon, Fane

isn’t as good as how you’ve imagined him to be. He has a rather cold face sometimes, and he does things too earnestly. Apart from that, he’s not a romantic person and can be rather violent. He likes to settle everything with his fists. You like him so much because you don’t know him all too well just yet.” Of course, Selena said all these things to Sharon so she could give up. Although Sharon was a nice and rather wealthy person, Fane was her man. As his wife, how could Selena not have any selfish motives? Apart from that, she felt that she should get Sharon to give up if Fane was uninterested in her. “Really?” came Sharon’s reply, her smile still on her face as she did. “I feel that everything he does is great. It’s natural for him to settle matters with his fists if he’s being bullied. If not, what kind of man will he be? Apart from that, he’s a retired veteran who was once in the forces. It’s normal for such a person to constantly have a serious expression on his face. It gives his people a sense of reliability.” Sharon paused here before secretly glancing at Fane. “More importantly, he gives everyone around him a sense of security.” “Honey, let me help you with the prawns!” Fane, on the other hand, acted as though he did not hear what Sharon said and, instead, helped his wife to de-shell the prawns. Sharon was unhappy with this and prodded, “Fane, answer me honestly: Will you consider me if you’re not married and have yet to meet your wife?” Felix and the others were utterly stupefied when they heard this. What was happening? Was he not a bodyguard? How could a mere bodyguard be an object of adoration by some? It seemed that this pretty lady was a rich person from another family, yet she liked a bodyguard? They were practically swimming in envy. Had they been able to have one of these four beautiful ladies, they would not even bat an eye if their lifespan was reduced by a year. There were actually four women fighting over this guy. Above all, this guy seemed downright apathetic toward this girl called Sharon. Goddess... He refused such a good chance. Fane de-shelled some prawns and placed them in Selena’s bowl before looking at Sharon. “Miss Sharon, my wife sacrificed a lot and endured a lot of grievance for me. I came back to have a good life with her.

I love her and our daughter. With that being said, I can only appreciate your kindness, but I can't accept them." "I mean, if… What if she's not here? Will you love me?" Sharon was slightly anxious. Fane was really getting on her nerves as he refused to give her a little bit of hope. "How would there be so many possibilities in this world? There are no such possibilities!" dismissed Fane with a tight smile. "Come on, let's eat!" The four kneeling by the side glanced at each other and were once again surprised. Sharon George? Was that not the name of the elder miss from the first-class aristocratic George family? The George family only had one daughter, and whoever it was that married her could inherit the entire George family's properties. Yet, even with all that, the bodyguard in front of them refused in a high-profile way and without any hesitation. Was this person dumb? For a bodyguard like Fane, it was like getting a free lunch for him to woo for Miss Sharon's love. "Alright." Sharon was disgruntled at the turn of events. However, when she thought about it... Was this not proof of a good man? At the very least, Fane—who had such temperament—was more worthy of her love.

Chapter 673

"Come, let's drink some wine!" said Tanya with a smile on her face as she raised her glass of wine. "After all, the people from the so-called Wild Wolf Gang are paying for this entire table. It'll be a waste if we don't finish the wine we ordered, and we've ordered quite a few bottles!" "Alright," chorused Yvonne as she raised her own glass, "come on!" Yvonne grinned. All five of them started drinking. Though still bitter about Fane, Sharon spoke, "Fane, it's alright that you don't like me, but I have to tell you this: If ever the day comes that you regret your words, come find me. I'm willing to be your second wife and be by your side everyday. I won't cause you any trouble, and I'll even get along with Selena!" Fane cleared his throat at Sharon's bold proclamation. "Ahem, ahem! Sharon, you're still young, and life's still long. You'll meet someone who you'll genuinely like in the

future, I’m sure of it,” he spoke before he sipped his wine. “Still young? Still young?! I’m not young anymore. I’m at the legal age to get married several months ago!” Sharon pursed her delicate mouth. “You’re just six or seven years older than me. Hmph!” All of a sudden… “Felix, what are you guys doing, kneeling here?” A group of seven to eight men walked up to them as they were halfway through their meal. One of them had a head full of bleached-white hair. The men were extremely surprised when they saw Felix and the others on the floor. Meeting the eyes of these men, Felix and his gang were speechless and ashamed. One of the men kneeling blinked at Whitey, the man with bleached-white hair. “Don’t get involved, you guys!” he spoke in a half-shouting voice. He signaled the other person to leave; they could not afford to offend the people here. However, Whitey did not register the signs in time. “What the f*ck. Had they lost a fight?” Whitey then looked at the four pretty ladies sitting at the table and smirked. “Haha! I get it. You must’ve fallen for one of these women here, haven’t you, Felix? You pervert. how can I not understand you? You can’t control yourself whenever you meet pretty ladies. How can you bear it when you meet such extreme beauty?” He paused for a brief moment before he badgered on, “Don’t be afraid, don’t be afraid. I’m here. Your brother Anguis is here! We have a big group of people! Let us help you get even!” “That’s right, Felix. You guys are so terrible! How could you guys lose against one guy? You guys are even kneeling...! This is so embarrassing!” Another guy smiled coldly, not once paying attention to Fane who was at the same table, eating with the ladies. Felix initially wanted to remind them that they should mind their manners before him and the ladies. Thus, it came as a surprise to him that they continuously disrespected him. He decided to pretend that he did not see or hear anything and kept quiet all the while. “Since you can’t get this woman, let me try instead!” Whitey smirked. He abruptly slapped the table and sneered, “Young man, don’t act all innocent and pretend that you didn’t hear us. I’m also from the Wolf Fang Group! You hurt and humiliate my brothers, and now, I’m going to avenge them…! If you understand

what's happening, scram and leave these women here." Glaring at Whitey with fierceness, Fane picked up a chopstick and stabbed the man's hand that was on the table! Whitey had no time to respond to such a quick move. "Aah!" The next thing he knew, a wooden chopstick was stabbed into his hand. He was in so much pain that he instantly fell to his knees.

Chapter 674

"Aah!" Whitey roared in pain. The veins on his forehead bulged out while the color of his face was drained. "Hit him!" came Whitey's thunderous order to his subordinates, all while he gritted his teeth. "Brother Anguis, this…" His subordinates were downright frightened as they were met with Fane's icy glare. Judging from Fane's all-too-quick attack, he was no simpleton. Although they had the numbers, they might not be able to fight him. "Get out. Don't destroy my mood," growled Fane as he noted that more people were surrounding them, and many of the new customers were glancing at them. Felix immediately looked at Fane in anticipation when he heard this. "B—Boss, how about us? Can we go now?" "Scram! Every one of you can get lost! Looking at you guys gives me a headache!" Fane looked at him impatiently and waved his hand. "Okay! I'll show myself out now!" Felix was all too happy when he heard this as he immediately nodded and stood up with his subordinates. "Are you guys dumb? Why are you still standing there? Follow us out right now! This is Miss Tanya from the Drake family, and that's Miss Sharon from the George family!" Felix glanced at the people who were still rooted where they stood. He then looked at Anguis, who was in extreme pain. "Anguis, you're too dumb. I was already kneeling there, and you dared cause trouble to Miss Tanya and the others. Are you on a suicide mission?" "W—Why do you say that?!" Anguis almost fainted in sheer anger. "Why… Why didn't you tell me this earlier?" "Hah! I've given you all the signs, but you're too dumb to understand it!" Felix immediately walked outside in huge strodes after he spoke. The others, especially those who came with Whitey, immediately felt a sense of relief

after they heard this. They thanked their lucky stars that they did not act upon order immediately. Otherwise, they might share the same fate as Whitey. Whitey dared not linger any longer and ran faster than a rabbit. A group of almost 20 people vanished from Fane and the others' sight. With an indifferent smile, Fane turned to Selena and beamed, "Let's continue our meal!" "Okay!"

Chapter 675

Selena nodded in satisfaction. At that moment, she felt that what Sharon said about Fane—that a strong sense of security could be felt when she was around him—was very true. … Selena returned to her office for work after she finished her meal. Meanwhile, Fane and the others took a walk around that area before returning to the Drake family's mansion. Fane rested in the room the Drake family arranged for him upon their return. He was ready to drive home at around five or six o'clock in the afternoon. Meanwhile, in the Clark family's mansion… Flynn was extremely happy when he saw his cousin, Ken, entering the room. He immediately asked, "How did it go, Ken? Is Fane dead? What's the situation of his body? Didn't you say that he already drank the poison? I remember you guys have gone to Sky Dragon City to search for the strong martial artists of the Xenos family too, right?" Flynn believed Fane was physically weakening day by day, since it had been two to three days since he consumed the poison. Under such circumstances, Fane would definitely die if his cousin and Young Master Hugo invited the strong martial artists from the Xenos family over to avenge Quil. His cousin and Young Master Hugo left yesterday and had just returned. Flynn was curious about Fane's fate. Ken looked at Flynn with an expression riddled with many emotions at once. Flynn was his cousin who lost a leg because he offended Tanya while he was enjoying a trip here with Ken. Ken wondered about how he was going to tell Flynn's parents about this. Apart from that, the Bane family in the Lone City was slightly stronger than their Clark family, a second-class aristocratic family. Flynn understood right

away when he saw Ken's darkening expression. Sitting on the sofa, the smile on Flynn's face instantly vanished. "Is he still alive? It seems like you guys haven't made a move yet. Every day is a difficult day for me right now... I want to see this bodyguard named Fane die soon!" He gritted his teeth and looked at Ken with a cold expression on his face. "You're irritatingly useless, Ken! You can't even handle a bodyguard!" Ken was speechless as he meekly sat next to Flynn. "Don't be so impatient, Flynn. Why do you want to rush it so badly when this guy is going to die anyway? Yes, I went to the Sky Dragon City with Young Master Hugo, but the young master of the Xenos family was a troublesome person. He offended a King of War from Middle Province, and this King of War was so angry that he went to Sky Dragon City and wiped out the entire Xenos family!" Ken paused here and smiled bitterly. "F*ck. This King of War—by some divine intervention—helped that useless Fane. He's just too lucky. He would've been dead by now had he not received such help!" "Damn!" Flynn balled his hands into fists as he was overwhelmed with disappointment. He had lost one leg and might have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair. He was unwilling to accept this fate as not only would he have a terrible life, but he would be made fun of by others too. Fane was the object of hatred whenever he thought of his possible fate, and a gloomy fate at that. "There are only twenty-five days left. When it's Selena's time to celebrate her birthday, his time will be up. Don't worry; the poison is very powerful. You don't need to worry about a thing!" Ken comforted Flynn, though a sigh escaped his lips. "It's a shame that Xena and Ivan's private meetings have been exposed. Now, Fane and Ben know about them, and Xena can't continue hiding and spying on Fane. We'd still be able to get news about how Fane is had she not been discovered. At the very least, we'd get updates on his health and know if it's deteriorating." "Haha! That's achievable!" Flynn laughed a sinister laugh. "Wait several days and employ several good fighters to test Fane. If his body is really in a terrible state and his combat abilities are gone, we can even use this opportunity to kill him before he

succumbs to the poison!" Ken nodded in glee. "This idea of yours is a good idea!" He then took out a flyer from his pocket and added, "Still, I really want to see Fane struggling to even walk and his body decaying till he dies at Selena's birthday. Wouldn't that be a better way to vent out our anger? The most important point is that he and the entire Taylor family will lose face if this guy failed to organize a city-stirring birthday party for Selena!" Initially frowning, Flynn took the flyer and nodded. "This sounds right. Why end him so quickly if we can let him die uncomfortably and let him lose face? Let's not kill him first. We can order fighters to beat him up good and assess his physical strength. It's fine as long as they don't kill him!"

Ken nodded, satisfied with Flynn's idea. "Haha! What an idea! This is a great idea! For now, we can beat him up and torture him however we like, so long as we don't kill him. We'll wait until Selena's birthday, when he loses face, before letting him die painfully." "My thoughts exactly!" came Flynn's reply, his eyes filled with malice and contempt. "I heard that his wife's quite a catch." Flynn gritted his teeth. "Hmph! Once he's out of the picture, I'll have his wife kneel at my feet one way or another, and I'll have her begging for me to toy with her…! I'll have fun torturing her by all means!" Hearing this, Ken instantly snapped, "Cousin, I'm afraid that's a no-go. I've had my eyes on Selena all this while, so you can't touch her!" This, of course, did not sit well with Flynn. "Ken, I only want revenge, and you can't even fulfill this request of mine? I… I lost my leg…! I can't vent my hatred if I don't do that!" Ken's face darkened. "Flynn, need I remind you that it was Fane who broke your leg. You wanted to get revenge and I'm helping you, and your vengeance will be exacted when Fane's dead! What does this have to do with Selena? If you want revenge, punish Fane, not Selena. It's highly likely that she'd be your cousin's sister-in-law in the future!" He never expected Flynn would burst out laughing. "Haha! Sister-in-law? Are you daydreaming? You've known Selena for so many years but you failed to get her, even when Fane was in the army. What does this tell you? This woman doesn't have you in her heart. If she likes you, you

would've gotten her without any problems!" Flynn paused here before he added, "I think Selena wouldn't want to have anything to do with you, even if Fane's dead. She doesn't like you at all! What if it's just you infatuated here?" Ken was, of course, pissed at this notion. "You should know that although she didn't express any feelings toward me at that time, she'd occasionally come to meals if I asked her out. I feel that our relationships shouldn't be just as good friends. Do you understand?" Flynn was not letting it up as he countered, "If that's the case, then tell me why you failed to get her before?" An expression of understanding appeared on Ken's face, as though understanding Selena's every thought and motive. "It must be because Fane was still alive, so she didn't make a clear statement or give me any chances at that moment. That was why she made no advancements toward me. After all, Kylie is Fane's daughter, and it's natural for her to wish for Fane's return for her daughter's sake. This shows what a good woman she is…! She's a dedicated woman!" Ken picked up the teacup and took a sip before he added, "Apart from that, she wouldn't have other choices if Fane's dead. She'd choose a reliable and loving man among her pursuers. She'd choose a man with whom she can entrust her life. I am this man!" "Haha! You're really confident!" Flynn laughed and continued, "Just wait and see. It wouldn't be you, even if Fane's gone. It doesn't matter how much effort you've placed into her; she would've given you a chance if she likes you! Oh, and didn't you ask me why I want to torture her? That's because she's Fane's wife. Even if Fane's dead, I want him to die in regret!" "I don't care. You can't touch her even if Fane's dead." Ken glared at Flynn, his tone much darker than usual. "I know I'll win her heart and her hand!" "Fine. I'll give you one year after Fane's death. If you can't get Selena's love and get her to be your woman willingly within that period, don't blame me for getting involved then," came Flynn's cold challenge after he mulled over his thoughts. Ken thought about it and nodded. "Alright. If I still fail to pursue this woman a year after Fane's death, you can do anything you want, and I won't care about her then!" As a thought occurred to him, Flynn

then spoke, “By the way, when you send someone to beat Fane up, remember to ask them to take photos and send it to me so I’ll have something to laugh over.” “Don’t worry, that’s not an issue!”

Chapter 677

Ken nodded at Flynn as they reached an agreement. Meanwhile... Fane was back in his villa, and he took a bath and changed. It was only then when Selena came back from work. “How was work, Honey? Is everything in the company alright?” Fane asked caringly when he saw his wife entering the room. “Yes, everything’s fine. Though… As bad as he may be, Ivan has been anxiously trying to show off his performance. All the materials in this project are able to reach in time, and their quality is quite good too. The general manager is extremely satisfied with him.” Placing her bag down, Selena searched for a fresh pair of clothes as she prepared to take a bath. “Really? Oh, Mother said that Grandfather asked us to come over for dinner tonight, so go on and take a quick shower,” spoke Fane with a small smile on his face. “After dinner, we’ll stroll around the compound.” “Really? Grandfather asks us to come and have dinner with him? Did something happen?” Selena was slightly surprised. After all, this was the first time Grandfather asked them over for dinner since they were chased out of the Taylor family. Fane thought about it for a while before he replied, “Well, I’m not sure if anything happened, but Mother was the one who told me about the invite. Judging his temperament, he wouldn’t have asked us to come if nothing happened.” A small frown appeared on Selena’s face as she racked her brain for a possibility, but after failing to come up with one, she went to bathe instead. Once she was done, the entire family walked over to the Taylor family mansion that was just opposite theirs. When they previously visited the Taylor family, the workers here—including the bodyguards—would not give Selena and her family a good greeting. This time, everyone greeted them curtly and kindly, and it gave Selena mixed feelings at the great change. It was true that one could observe another

person’s heart more clearly when he had no money or have failed greatly. “Fane, say less if you can when we’re having dinner, alright?” Fiona came to urge him. “Although the Old Master had accepted that you’re the Taylor family’s son-in-law, you’re still an outsider. It might be hard for the Old Master to accept you wholeheartedly in such a short time. I’m afraid that you’ll say something wrong and offend the Old Master.” Fane nodded. “Alright, Mother-in-law, I understand. I’ll lower my head and focus on eating later. I won’t speak, alright?” Fiona rolled her eyes at Fane. “It’s best if you understand. I’m afraid that you’ll only cause trouble. If it wasn’t because of you, we wouldn’t have offended the Xenos family back then!” It was only after she said it that Fiona soon remembered something. “Now that I’ve mentioned it, something seems off. We’ve killed the Xenos family’s young master, and I heard that the Xenos family is quite strong in Sky Dragon City,” said Fiona. “Why didn’t they come for us?”

Chapter 678

Hearing what Fiona had said, Joan’s lips curled into a frown. “Yes, and I’m quite worried. Selena’s mother told me that Quil Xenos asked a marshal to come over. Although this other person’s not so capable, it only shows that the Xenos family is really powerful as they had gotten a marshal’s help!” Fiona grew more afraid the more she thought about it. “It’s all because of Fane, and it’s infuriating.” She glared at Fane. “How could he offend someone like that and make people hate him!” When she saw where this was going, Selena quickly jumped in on Fane’s defense. “Mother, we can’t blame this on Fane,” she reasoned. “Fane told me that they were at the veteran’s gathering and the Goddess of War, Lana killed Magnus Sutherland because he forced female celebrities to sleep with him. This Magnus is Quil’s father’s god-brother, and he has to address Magnus as ‘uncle’!” Selena paused before she added, “Nobody knew that Quil would instead pick a fight with Fane when he knew he couldn’t do so with the Goddess of War!” “Don’t worry, Mother. Members of the Xenos family didn’t know

that I did it, considering no one was left alive once I was through with them. Nobody would know if you don't tell others about this." Although Fane knew clearly that the Xenos family no longer bore a threat to them, he had to pretend he knew nothing. "Even if they come and investigate the matter, they wouldn't dare do anything to me if they know that I know the Goddess of War personally and have saved her, too. There's nothing for you guys to worry about, really." "You brat. What do you mean, 'as long as you don't tell others about this'? Am I the kind of person who rambles about everything to others? Your mother-in-law's lips are always sealed!" Fiona stared at Fane angrily. As she walked a few steps closer to him, she spoke, "Even if the other party knew that you did it, they might not attack you. Of course, the Goddess of War doesn't owe us favors anymore. She can't help you for the rest of your life because of one favor, right? She's the Goddess of War! Though, it wasn't bad that she willingly came to the Old Master's birthday party last time!" Fiona then recalled something rather crucial, and it showed on her face as she slapped her thigh. "No, that's not right… I almost forgot something. Wasn't Xena there too? Will she tell others about this?" Andrew was just as frightened when he heard this. "That's really troubling. I used to feel that Xena was quite nice, but we now know she's the complete opposite. She's with Ivan now too, and he's a person who bears grudges. Let's not forget that Fane did injure him before, so if Xena tells this to Ivan, the consequences are unimaginable." Joan's face increasingly darkened as she anxiously blurted, "Why did you offend such a powerful family? If Ivan knows and tells this to the Xenos family, we'd be in trouble!" Quickly coming up with a plan, she then said, "Fane, doesn't Xena like money very much? She's a gold-digger, no? How about this: Don't you still have several tens of millions? Sometime later, ask her out and ask her to keep this a secret. We can give her some money as long as she doesn't tell this to anybody. I know she'd keep that promise the moment she sees some cash." "This is a good idea. What Fane's mother said is correct. I think that spending money to prevent trouble might work." Andrew immediately

nodded as a sign of agreement. “I don’t think that’s a good idea.” Fiona was rather reluctant with the idea. “Fane doesn’t have much money with him now; he’s got only several tens of millions. Xena is such a bad woman. How can we give her money when she’s caused my son so much heartache until now?!” “You...! You’re really…!” Andrew was infuriated with Fiona, and this was the first time he had been this angry. “Do you understand what ‘spending money to avoid trouble’ means? Fane’s your son-in-law! What should we do when the Xenos family doesn’t come after us but kills Fane? “By that time, Selena would lose her husband! Not only does Fane have quite the money to support her, but he treats our family members so nicely too. Isn’t it hard to find such a kind son-in-law wherever you look? How can such a small amount of money be more important than your son-in-law?!”

Chapter 679

“Mother, I can understand that you consider money to be a very great thing,” began Selena. “And yes, you suffered a lot several years ago. Still, you can’t risk our lives, including Fane’s. What if the martial artists from the Xenos family truly come for us and kill us? Are you really not afraid of death?” Selena felt herself getting heated at the moment. She felt that her mother was too much; that she could not even discern right from wrong. Nobody expected, however, that Fane would side with Fiona as he spoke, “What Mother said seems to make sense. We can’t give money to Xena.” Initially criticized and rebuked for her thoughts and opinions, Fiona lowered her head in embarrassment and dared not speak when no one sided with her. She never expected Fane would take her side on this matter. Her lips instantly curled into a smile as she proudly remarked, “Look, I’m not the only one who said this. Fane’s saying the same thing, too. We can’t give Xena money!” Selena was puzzled. She looked at Fane and had no idea why Fane would say something like this. “But why, Hubby? You genuinely don’t look like a person who worships money. I know you dislike Xena a great

deal, but isn't it a good idea to give her some money so that she'd shut up?" "This has nothing to do with whether I hate her or not," came Fane's cool-headed reply. "Xena is too greedy. The situation of our family isn't bad right now, right? Yet she still chose Ivan. How much do you think we should give her? Half a million? Five million?" Fane smiled coldly before continuing, "I can bet she won't be satisfied, even if we gave her fifty million. She might only agree if I give all my money to her! She might even want my future salaries, and I can only keep her mouth shut if I give her money whenever I get my salary." "Yes, whatever Fane says makes sense," came Fiona's enthusiastic reply, the energy of her nodding in agreement matched with her grin. "This is exactly what I meant. This Xena has a big appetite, and she's not easily satisfied. What if she still tells the Xenos family after we gave her money? That's not definite!" Selena eventually sighed. "That's true, too." Suddenly… "Hey! You people really think you're that important?!" yelled Cecilia as she stormed from afar. "The Old Master has been waiting for you guys, and for quite some time, too! Why don't you guys go in? What are you guys still chit-chatting about here? What's there to talk about? We're treating you guys to a meal, and you guys are acting important?" "What are you talking about, Cecilia?" snapped Selena as she rolled her eyes at her. She was in a bad mood; even a well-tempered person had her limits, too.

Chapter 680

Cecilia was startled to hear Selena snapping at her in such a tone. The initial stunned expression on her face eventually disappeared as Cecilia composed herself, folding her arms across her chest in arrogance just like before. "Hah! It seems the way you speak has changed now that you have quite the money, no? No wonder you look down on me. Isn't it only a villa that's worth tens of millions?" Though there was a strange undertone to it, Cecilia did not stop there as she continued, "I heard that a commander's reward is around two million, yet you get such a small amount of money after five years. You even went through uncountable life and death situations, but the amount of

money you get isn't much. You bought a villa and several cars, and didn't I hear that you've even hired bodyguards? With my calculation, Fane doesn't have much money left, right? He only has several tens of millions, no?" Indifferent, Selena icily replied, "Yes, we don't have much money, but we aren't short of money right now either. We're satisfied that we have a house, cars, and several tens of millions. Although we can't compete with other wealthy people, I'm satisfied, and that's enough!" At this moment, Selena glanced at Cecilia and smugly added, "Our situation is better than some woman who's not only not married at an old age, but she also doesn't even have a job and is constantly asking for money from her family." This infuriated Cecilia. "You…" "That's right! How dare you say that our family doesn't have any money? My daughter's salary is a million every month, and she'll even get bonuses at the end of the year. Although my son-in-law is only a bodyguard, his salary is much higher than hers at twenty per month. How about you? You stay at home every day. Does this make you rich?" Fiona could not stand how arrogant Cecilia was. She remembered how Cecilia always mocked them when they were chased out of the Taylor family previously and had no money. They, unfortunately, had no way of avoiding such a fate so they could only endure it. "Hmph! No matter what, your son-in-law is a bodyguard. He's only a bodyguard, and he's working for somebody else. What's there to brag about?" Cecilia scoffed and added, "Do you know why Grandfather asked you all to come tonight?" "Aren't we here to have dinner? What else could there be?" Fiona frowned. She had her suspicions as to why Old Master Taylor asked them to come over and have dinner. Could it be that he had something to announce? She thought about it for some time but could not guess what was going on. She even thought that she had been imagining things. Once Cecilia brought it up, however, it seemed that there was something going on so he asked them to come over. "Haha! I'm not telling you guys now. Go in and you'll soon find out!" Cecilia placed both hands behind her back and walked inside with her head slightly raised. "Let's go. I'm going to marry into a good family soon.

I’d say I’m much better off than some woman who married a bodyguard. I don’t need to work in the future. I only need to stay at home and be a full-time housewife. How good is that?” “She’s getting married!” Fiona’s face turned dark as she saw Cecilia’s retreating form. “Cecilia really is marrying into the second-class aristocratic family, the Gold family. I thought that the young master from the Gold family was toying with her and wouldn't marry her. I never thought he’d actually marry her!” Fiona was slightly envious. “That’s a second-class aristocratic family, and it’s only natural she’s happy. After all, she’s marrying into a rich family, and our Taylor family has just entered the door of the second-class aristocratic family range. This Gold family has been a second-class aristocratic family for the longest time. The highlight of everything is that the Gold family has only one son. Once Cecilia marries into their family, she’d have access to their family’s properties!” She looked at Selena and sighed. “There’s a saying that men are afraid of being in the wrong field of work, and women are afraid of marrying the wrong people. Had you not been so headstrong before, you won’t need to face such humiliation. You could’ve married anyone like Young Master Wilson, Young Master Clark, or anyone else like them. You wouldn’t have suffered for so many years, and sure as heck won’t be shamed today!”

Chapter 681

“Mother, what are you talking about? I chose this myself, and I regret nothing. Just so you know, I feel that Fane is so much better than Young Master Clark and Young Master Wilson!” Irked by her mother’s behavior, Selena rolled her eyes at Fiona and walked past her to get inside. “Hmph!” Fiona looked at Fane, obviously displeased. Everything happened because Fane was incapable as a provider, and others had looked at their family with disdain. While their lives had changed for the better, they could have had that luxury and happiness even from back then. Fiona brusquely walked inside, silently as she did. Andrew’s lips curled into an awkward and

sheepish smile as he patted Fane's shoulder. "Fane, don't take it too seriously. This is how she is. She's not a bad person; she's just hoping that Selena would have a good life." Fane smiled bitterly and nodded. "Don't worry, Father-in-law, I won't let you guys down! I don't care that much about the Gold family or Clark family either!" Fane's reply made the corners of Andrew's mouth twitched. He intended to comfort Fane and alleviate his mood, but he never thought that such proud words would come out in reply instead. This disappointed Andrew; he felt that Fane was not down-to-earth enough. Fane just could not compete with others but he did not want to admit to it. A heavy sigh escaped Andrew's lips before he walked toward the villa's entrance. Eventually, Joan came closer to her son with a serene smile on her face. "Son, don't pay too much attention to this. As long as you've done your best, that's enough. Humans need to learn to be content. Your mother-in-law doesn't understand this and constantly wants to compare with other people." "I understand, Mother." Fane nodded and they walked toward the entrance together. The moment they arrived at the living area, they noted the many tables already set up. Apart from a rather large number of Taylors, members of the second-class aristocratic family—that was the Gold family—were here, most notably their master and young master. "Fane, quickly. We've kept a place for you here!" Cecilia waved him over once she saw him come in last. Fane's face slightly darkened after he caught on to what she was doing. If he was given a choice, he did not want to sit at that table. Old Master Taylor, Theodore Taylor, and the people from the Gold family were sitting on that table. Wasn't it obvious that Cecilia purposely asked him over so that she can humiliate him later? Selena had already sat there, most probably the work of Cecilia. "Haha! Fane, come over. There's still one seat left here!" The Old Master smiled at Fane. The Taylor family was proud of themselves and managed to show-off themselves because of what Fane achieved during his 70th birthday. Apart from that, the birthday present Fane gifted him was worth 500 million, and this caused him to re-examine this son-in-law who married into his family.

Chapter 682

Fane merely wore an aloof smile as he walked over to Cecilia's table and sat on the empty seat next to Selena. Once Fane sat down, the Gold family's young master, Kelly Gold smugly spoke, "Ah, so you're Fane? We went overseas for a trip some time ago and have just returned recently! I've heard quite a lot about you. You're the one who joined the forces, right? A son-in-law who married into his wife's family. Haha! You've been away for five years, no?" On the other side, Old Master Gold's expression darkened as he glanced at Fane. "Old Master Taylor, this… This is the son-in-law who married into your family?" "Yes, and he's been here for a month now!" Old Master Taylor nodded with a smile on his face. The expression on Old Master Gold's face continued to darken, and he added, "We're here to discuss important matters today, and it's about Kelly and Cecilia's wedding. It's not so good for an outsider to sit here with us on the same table, don't you agree?" "That's right, Old Master Taylor," the Head of the Gold Family chimed in. "I feel that the people sitting here need to be a member of the Taylor family. It isn't the best for a son-in-law who married into your family and is a younger generation to sit here, is it?" Old Master Taylor never thought that the people of the Gold family would take such a thing to heart. With a small smile, he gently asserted, "Although Fane married into our family, he's considered as half a Taylor family member. I myself recognized his standing as a member of the Taylor family." Kelly burst out laughing. "Haha! That's weird! I remember Cecilia telling me two months ago that Fane got Miss Selena from your family because he's drunk. If that's the case, what's the difference between him and a rapist? You guys accepted a rapist into your family and welcome him as your own? Your values moved me!" Selena never thought Kelly would disrespect Fane so much. She could still reason with herself if they looked down at him and said he was a son-in-law married into her family, but it angered her when they equated him to a rapist! The expression on Selena's face could easily rival the icy cold, and

she had a matching smile as well. “Young Master Gold, may I know what proof you have when you say this? Don’t listen to someone’s baseless rumors. Does anybody know clearer than me, the person involved, about what happened that night?” Selena glanced at Fane, who was beside her, and her expression lightened slightly. “I did things willingly on the night of my marriage. If I did it willingly, how can a petty person with a hidden agenda change that into a rapist story? Am I wrong?” This angered Cecilia at that instant. “You…!” This damned Selena. Selena had the gall to call her a petty person with a hidden agenda! “What’s going on?” Stunned for a moment, Selena then smiled. “Cecilia, you don’t look very happy. I said that this was said by someone. You won’t jump to conclusions, would you?” “Haha!” At this moment, Kelly started laughing once again. “Miss Selena, you’re a really open person. I heard that you met Fane on the first day and married him on the second day. It surprised me that you slept with him on the night of your marriage and even gave birth to a daughter for him. Hey now, your relationship has improved so quickly.” Kelly took a rather dramatic pause before he disdainfully added, “However, as a woman, aren’t you slightly unreserved?” “Haha! Young Master Gold, you don’t seem to be in the position to worry about this. Both of us fell for each other at first sight and we were married at that time. We were husband-and-wife at that time, so how was it wrong that we slept together?” Fane chuckled as his eyes shifted to Cecilia. “No matter what, Selena and I were already married before we had our daughter. If this isn't considered as being reserved, are girls who are pregnant before marriage considered as being reserved?” Fane had long observed that Cecilia was pregnant; six weeks to be exact. If she did not get married soon, her pregnancy would be a glaring detail.

Chapter 683

This could be why the Gold family agreed to prepare for her and Young Master Gold to get married; she was with child. The Gold family’s future generation. “Why… Why are you looking at me? I’m not pregnant!” Fane

easily noticed the sliver of shock and guilt behind Cecilia's eyes as she averted her gaze, turning to the side. "I'm not an easy woman!" Fane chuckled at her comeback, and he smugly added, "You should be around six weeks pregnant. Being pregnant isn't that much of a strange occurrence. It's quite normal in this current society!" "Cecilia, are you pregnant?" Old Master Taylor's face darkened. Conceiving before marriage was not abnormal, merely a normal happening all around the world. Still, Old Master Taylor was a man who highly preserved his dignity, and the Taylor family has just achieved the second-class aristocratic family title. If news about how the Taylor family's girls got pregnant before they were married got publicized, the Taylor family's value would deteriorate. "Grandfather, he… He's speaking nonsense. How would I not know if I'm pregnant or not?" Cecilia put up a strong bravado, but she was inwardly freaking out. It startled her how Fane could tell things so accurately just by looking at her and without even checking her pulse. Even her parents did not know about her pregnancy. If Fane was making guesses, how did he manage to guess so accurately? Cecilia's father shot up from his seat as he furiously barked, "Don't just spew out nonsense, you brat! How can my daughter be someone like that?" Cecilia's father glared at Fane in all his fury. "You didn't even touch her hand or check her pulse. How can you simply say she's six months pregnant?" "That's right. Don't talk nonsense!" Cecilia's mother got up from her seat, just as angry as her husband. "Although our family doesn't like to speak up, we can't be pushed or stepped on like a doormat. It's infuriating how a mere son-in-law married into the family could say whatever he liked!" Fane was about to talk back when Fiona's face darkened, and she was basically staring daggers at Fane. "Fane, what did I say to you just now?!" Fane was instantly stunned silent. Fiona did tell him not to speak nonsense before he entered the door. However, the situation was different. He could tank it if everyone was ridiculing him as he did not want to be like the others, but they were mocking Selena, his wife. This unsettled Fane to a great deal. Ignoring Fiona, he directed his reply to

Cecilia's father. "Other people might need to check her pulse and western doctors might need to check your daughter with machines, but I'm different. I can see your daughter's situation with my eyes only!" Not wanting to be looked down by these people, Fane raised his chin slightly. "Let me just tell everybody the truth. I'm a medical god; a miracle-working doctor!" "Yes! I'll have you know that Fane was the one who cured my leg!" Andrew chimed in, obviously pleased with Fane's work. "Fane's medical skills are very good. Not only that, but Sharon's obesity-like disease was also cured by Fane!"

Chapter 684

Andrew was displeased at how the Gold family was treating Fane. Of course, he had looked down on Fane way back then, and he recalled the bitterness he held against this young man. Now, Fane had shown his worth, strength, and excellence. It surprised him at how the Gold family was saying such mean things to him. He could not stomach that and decided to stand for Fane. Cecilia smirked pompously after she heard this. "Haha! A miracle-working doctor? That's really funny. How can a soldier call himself a miracle-working doctor? Your boasts are too much!" "My thoughts exactly. Do you think that you're the God of War Ethan Haays? Only a person like him dare address himself as a miracle-working doctor. He's a well-recognized miracle-working doctor to boot!" The Gold family master even said with a smile. "You just got lucky in treating your father-in-law's leg and Sharon's disease. At the very most, it means that your medical skills weren't bad. Still, you have a long way to go before you can become a miracle-working doctor!" Fane burst out laughing when he heard, a laugh filled with mirth and amusement before he settled down and replied, "To be honest, Ethan's medical skills are good, but he's my disciple, really. Most of the time, he asks me for guidance on medical skills!" "Pfft!" Young Master Gold nearly spurted the soup from his mouth. He laughed as though it was the most hilarious thing. "You're amazing, young man! You're really

good. If you dare say that you're number one in boasting, nobody dares admit to being number two!" Old Master Gold turned to Old Master Taylor with a grin on his face. "Old Master Taylor, this son-in-law of yours is really refreshing to see, and luckily, the God of War isn't here. If not, the matter of him addressing the God of War by his first name would land him in so much trouble." The head of the Gold Family smiled coldly and said, "Hey, hey! He's not even shy or anywhere remotely abashed when he calls himself a miracle-working doctor! That's the biggest takeout from this!" "Hubby, what are you talking about?" Stupefied, Selena discreetly tugged at Fane's sleeve and signaled him to stop. It was fine if everybody thought that he was boasting. What would happen if what he so boldly claimed got out? Enraged, Fiona had enough as she snapped, "Shut up, Fane! You constantly say whatever you like every single time. What kind of an existence is Ethan Haays, the God of War Haays? He's excellent at both medicine and martial arts. He's the most adored God of War. Even if his martial arts isn't the best among the Nine Great Gods of War, his influence is the strongest. His position in everybody's heart was the highest, and you're here claiming you're his master!" Joan was also frightened by Fane's words. She ran from her table—one that was next to theirs—when she realized Fane was starting to act out again. "Fane, what are you saying? You can't make jokes like this!" "Auntie, you don't have to worry. Your son doesn't seem too bad. At the very least, he's very brave. If God of War Haays knew about this, being killed would be the best turnout. However, your son might have involved your entire family, and that's…" Young Master Kelly trailed off with a grin. "Mother, I'm telling the truth. It doesn't matter if they don't believe me!" Fane did not want to dive too much into details. He planned on telling the truth; that he was indeed Ethan Haays' master. He never thought he would be met with this much opposition and ridicule. "It's great if you're really a miracle-working doctor… But I still feel you're a quack!" Cecilia even denied with all her might and added, "If you're a miracle-working doctor, how would you simply say that I'm pregnant? I'm not pregnant!"

Chapter 685

Fane glanced at Cecilia apathetically, at her feeble attempt of a comeback. “Aren’t you afraid that you’d be struck by lightning if you lie without even blinking?” “You…” Cecilia saw red in an instant. How dare he spoke to her in such a tone! He was increasingly daring. Old Master Taylor reeled in shock as he glared at Fane“Don’t say things so simply, Fane!” Old Master Taylor then composed himself and wore a smile before turning to the other party. “Old Master Gold, you’ve left the country two months ago, and Fane had just come back one month ago. I suppose you might not understand him well!” Old Master Gold nodded with a smile. “Yes, I don’t understand him well. I didn’t know he loves to boast!” The corners of Zeus’s mouth twitched before he replied, “How should I say this? He’s quite well-versed medically, and there are times where he likes to boast. However, I believe that even if the God of War Haays comes here, he wouldn’t kill Fane. After all, he had been on the battlefield on our Cathysia’s behalf and is a head commander.” Old Master Taylor paused for a moment before he continued, “More importantly, Fane once saved the life of the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs. The Goddess of War wouldn’t let the God of War Haays kill Fane, right?” Old Master Gold frowned after he heard this and blurted, “Wait! Is the Goddess of War also in our Middle Province?” “Haha!” Old Master Taylor chuckled. “You’ve been out of the country for two months and have just returned from overseas, so you might not know what happened around this one month. Not only is the Goddess of War in Middle Province, but she freely came to my seventieth birthday party.” “Really? She actually came?” came Old Master Gold’s surprised exclamation. Understandably, Old Master Taylor became giddy as he shared this story. He poured a glass of wine for Old Master Gold and they clinked their glasses together. “Come. Cheers! I’ll tell you all about it!” Old Master Taylor soon told about how big a scene his birthday party was, and members of the Gold family listened rather attentively. After all, they had just returned and knew nothing of the

occurrences that happened this month. “Come here, Kylie. Eat more!” Selena placed some food for her daughter onto a plate as she listened on as well. “I had no idea that the Goddess of War would give the luminous pearl she auctioned worth five hundred million to Fane,” Old Master Taylor concluded. “Fane is also very filial. He gave it to me on my seventieth birthday as my gift!” Old Master Gold was envious when he heard this. “It seems that this son-in-law of yours is a stellar man. Although he’s only a head commander after five years, he saved the Goddess of War and this brought actual benefits for your family. Now, your family has even become a second-class aristocratic family. He’s a filial child, that’s for sure!” “That’s right. Being filial is the most important quality for a person! Recently, I’ve placed the luminous pearl beside my pillow every day, and I feel like the quality of my sleep has improved. I used to wake up in the middle of the night or suffer from insomnia, but I don’t have such symptoms now,” beamed Old Master Taylor with a smile. “I now feel that my health and spirit is so much better!” Old Master Gold’s eyes brightened after he heard this. “Really? Now that’s truly miraculous. Can you show it to us so that we can learn something new?”

Chapter 686

”Haha, sure!” Old Master Taylor obviously wanted to show-off. He went upstairs and soon came down with the luminous pearl. He then placed it in front of Old Master Gold. Cecilia stopped speaking when she saw that nobody continued pinpointing Fane. After all, she was really pregnant, and Old Master Taylor would be unhappy if everybody knew this. “Oh my, it’s really huge! I had no idea that there are luminous pearls of this size in the world! Everybody must be envious of you” Old Master Gold looked at the luminous pearl in the box with widened eyes. He had seen many luminous pearls but this was the first time he saw such a big one. “Haha, the size doesn’t really matter. The most crucial point is its effect. I heard that it has the effect of prolonging one's life. I hope that I can live an extra few more

years with the help of this pearl. I feel like it really does what it says!" Old Master Taylor said with a smile. He even had a proud expression on his face. "I really envy you! Why don't we switch off the lights and take a look at its lustrousness?" Old Master Gold could not help himself and said as he remembered something. "Sure!" Old Master Taylor asked the workers to switch off the lights. The luminous pearl shone a very bright ray of light and everybody in the room was able to see the pearl without lights on. "Psst, psst… This is a precious treasure! It really is something we don't see very often!" Old Master Gold loved it so much he did not want to let the luminous pearl go. He continued exclaiming "Old Master Taylor, you've really found a precious treasure. Let alone five hundred million. I estimate that this item is worth at least a billion." "Haha!" Old Master laughed and continued saying. "I heard that many first-class aristocratic families were fighting over this. However, nobody could confirm its effect so nobody dared to bet a higher price after it reached five hundred million. After all, they would have suffered a big loss if this thing didn't have the effect it was said to have." "Yes, only someone like the Goddess of War would dare to bet on it with five hundred million without any apprehension!" Old Master Gold nodded. He asked for the lights to be switched on before closing the box reluctantly and passed it to Old Master Taylor. "Although the Goddess of War Lana is a woman, she's such a generous person! She actually gifted something that's worth five hundred million to Fane!" "Haha, after all, Fane saved her life before this. Compared to her life, five hundred million is nothing!" Old Master Taylor laughed out loudly as he was very happy. Old Master Gold also said with a smile. "Come, let's drink!" After they had several drinks, Old Master Gold said, "By the way, Old Master Taylor, let's talk about serious matters. We are here today to send betrothal gifts to the Taylor family. It's not easy for your family to raise Cecilia until she's reached adulthood. Hence, we've prepared eighty million as the betrothal gift!" "Eighty million!" Cecilia's parents were slightly happy after they heard this figure. Although they were also members of the Taylor family, they did not

have that much money. They were able to have a comfortable life because they worked in the Taylor family's companies where they get nice salaries and bonuses. The amount of eighty million had really surprised them. "Haha, Cecilia's mother, you must accept this money from us. Apart from that, you don't need to trouble yourself and think about returning us with gifts or other things. This money is for you to spend the rest of your lives with as you only have this one daughter!"

Chapter 687

The head of the Gold family took out a bank card and passed it to Cecilia's mother with a smile. Cecilia's mother was extremely happy. She took the card and spoke with a smile. "This...this is too generous. I feel embarrassed to receive such a huge amount of betrothal gift!" "Haha... Cecilia's mother, you've raised Cecilia all these years into an adult and has done a good job. It's not easy to raise someone into an adult with an honorable character. Our entire family is very satisfied with Cecilia!" The Head of the Gold family started laughing. "That's right. Cecilia is always very obedient. She also looks beautiful and has an honorable character. Apart from that, she's a university student and had rejected many young masters who pursued her. In the end, she had her eyes on Young Master Gold and this might be their fate!" Cecilia's mother placed the bank card into her pocket, glanced at Selena, and said with a smile. "It's such a waste for the prettiest woman in our Taylor family to marry into a bad family. It seems that they only gave twenty million worth of betrothal gifts. A person's choice is definitely the most important in one's life." The head of the Gold family naturally understood the underlying meaning of what Cecilia's mother was saying. He also said with a smile. "That's right, that's right… Isn't the most important thing for a woman is to marry into a nice family? Once they are married to the correct person, they wouldn't need to worry for the rest of their lives; if they aren't married to the right person, they would have to suffer for the rest of their lives." Fiona's facial expression darkened as these

people were obviously saying that her daughter was not married into a nice family. She felt slightly flustered as there was a huge difference when she thought about how Cecilia's family had 80 million worth of betrothal gifts whereas Fane only gave her 20 million. "Thank you, uncle!" Cecilia said happily. "Hey, young lady, why are you still addressing me as your uncle?" The head of the Gold family adjusted his expression and purposely showed that he was unhappy. "Oh! Thank you, Father!" Only then did Cecilia responded and immediately addressed him happily. "Haha, that's correct!" The head of the Gold family, Ezra Gold, started laughing loudly. He then said to Zeus, "Old Master Taylor, then it's decided. Our next agenda is to discuss the dates of their marriage. Let's choose a nice date and hold a grand wedding for this pair of newlyweds." "Sure, I don't have any issues. Just let me know which day is more suitable, alright?" Zeus nodded. The Gold family people were really rich, and they could pay so much as Cecilia's betrothal gift. He was quite satisfied that they expressed their sincerity with this. "How about one month later?" Kelly said after thinking about it. "In this case, we would have more time to prepare as this is the most important thing in life and we need to make it as grand as possible." "I don't think we need that much time! Why don't we hold the wedding 25 days from today? Yes, that seems to be a good day!" Cecilia thought about it and said after she secretly glanced at Selena. "That's not so good, right? Isn't that day Selena's birthday?" Fiona soon remembered something and said with a frown. "Cecilia, it's best if you change the date. Don't hold both events on the same day."

Chapter 688

"Haha, change to another day? Why do I need to change my wedding to another day? Why don't your daughter change it to another day?" Cecilia's expression immediately turned cold after she heard this. She said unhappily, "I chose this date after much effort and thoughts. How can you ask me to simply change it?" Fiona was not stupid and she realized that the other party

was definitely doing this on purpose. She refuted, “That’s my daughter’s birthday. How can she simply change her date? You’re getting married. There’s no difference if you get married a month later or a few days earlier, right?” “Haha, birthdays can be held several days earlier too. Why do I need to make way for her? Is my wedding not as important as her birthday?” It was natural for Cecilia to not want to change her wedding date. She even said, “Her birthday can be celebrated every year but my wedding is only held once. How can I simply change the date?” Old Master Taylor also frowned and said to Cecilia after he thought about it. “Cecilia, why don’t you slightly change the dates? It’s alright to have the wedding one or two days earlier or later, right? The most crucial thing is, Fane had already advertised Selena's birthday and everybody in the Middle Province already knows about it. He can’t change the date if you ask him to so suddenly!” “Oh, yes. I almost forgot. We saw the advertisement all over the place on our way here and the advertisement said that he was going to hold a birthday party that stirs the city. I almost forget about it if Old Master Taylor hadn’t mentioned it. This birthday party is being held by your son-in-law for Selena?” The Head of the Gold family realized what was going on. He said with a cold smile. “Haha, city stirring? Psst, psst… What a tone! I’ll see how you can stir up the city. If you don’t have at least one to two billion or even more, how can you stir up the city?” “Father, this person is boasting. I think that he has spent lots of money to do the advertisement. How much more does he have? When the time comes, don’t cause embarrassment to the family. That would be a lot of talk and no actions.” Cecilia directly said to the head of the Gold family. “I really want to hold my wedding on that day.” The head of the Gold family thought about it and said to Fane. “You’re Fane? How about this? I’ll pay whatever amount you paid as your advertisement fee and you give that day to me so I can hold my son’s wedding.” Kelly also said with a despicable expression on his face. “That’s right. I’m getting married and this might be the only time I’m getting married. It has to be an extravagant event. Your event is just a normal

birthday party so you don’t need to snatch the date with us, right?” “Fane, how much did you spend? If you’ve spent thirty million, ask them for at least fifty million. After all, you still need to ask for payment for the damage to your mental health, right?” Fiona glanced at Fane and asked softly. Fane smiled calmly, looked at the head of the Gold family, and said, “I’m sorry, Master Gold. I really don’t know how much money was spent so I don’t know how to answer you.” “Pooh!” Before the head of the Gold family could speak, Kelly had already stood up angrily. “Young man, don’t act stupid. You’ve done the advertisement but you don’t know how much you spent? Do you think that we’re stupid? You need to think carefully, if you really want to fight with me because of this, that means that you’re going against the current. Don’t regret whatever you did later on!” “Young Master Gold, don’t get angry! Don’t get angry!” Fiona was surprised when she saw Kelly getting angrier. She secretly felt that this son-in-law was too disappointing. He actually caused trouble again. Before they came in, she had already ordered Fane to speak less and eat more. She had no idea that Fane would still offend the people of the Gold family.

Chapter 689

She said with a smile. “Fane doesn’t have much money with him. The most he has is seven to eight million and the advertisement should have taken him at least two to three million. Hence, he’s only left with five to six million. He wouldn’t be able to do anything extravagant. An advertisement is actually a boastful act. He doesn’t have other disadvantages apart from liking to boast.” “He only spent two to three million, right? How about this, I’ll pay you five million and the rest is your compensation. So that the others would not say that our Gold family bullied you guys!” Kelly hugged his arms in front of his chest and looked down condescendingly and arrogantly. “Sure, that’s agreed then. We’ll change to another day.” Fiona nodded continuously and agreed to it. However, Young Master Gold said, “Whatever you say doesn’t mean anything. I want your son-in-law to nod

and whatever he says, counts. Got it? After all, he's the one who spent the money and did the advertisement." Fiona shrugged her shoulders. "Truth be told, I really don't know how much I've spent. However, I don't want your five million because I don't plan to change the date. I've set the date and that is my wife's birthday." "Fane, are you dumb? You're going to earn so much money, can't we move the date one or two days earlier?" Fiona was furious because of what Fane said, and she stomped her feet on the spot. "Mother, don't worry. I won't change the date." Fane directly looked at Kelly and did not want to back away. Old Master Taylor thought about it and persuaded, "Fane, I can understand how you feel. After all, this is the first birthday you're celebrating with Selena after you've returned from the battlefield. It's natural for you to want to give Selena the best and leave a good impression. However, whatever that's happening today is different. This is Cecilia's wedding. When you compare it, a wedding is definitely more important than a birthday." Selena sighed inwardly when she saw how Old Master Taylor helped persuade Fane. She said to Fane, "Fane, why don't we let it go. Mine's just a normal birthday and this is Cecilia's wedding. There's a huge difference between both as this is her marriage. We don't need to hold our event on the same day as her's." Cecilia and Kelly looked at each other. Both of them had a cold smile at the corners of their mouths. Even Selena softened when she's faced with such huge pressure. They did not believe that Fane would continue to persist. Apart from that, they've given Fane an extra 20 to 30 million. It was just a change of the dates, other people would have agreed to it early on. Although the advertisements were carried out and it was slightly shameful if they brought forward the event. However, they were not the ones being embarrassed. "Honey, this is your birthday. Apart from that, the entire city knows about it. I'm not changing the dates." Fane looked at Selena and said with a serious expression on his face. "Apart from that, we've agreed to this since long ago. When I was not here, it doesn't matter if Cecilia steps on your head and

bullies you. However, now that I'm back, I wouldn't let you endure such suffering."

Chapter 690

"Haha, what a character. You're really a soldier, your bones are harder than anything else." Kelly started laughing after he heard this. "Since you don't want to change your dates and we don't want that too. Then let's do it on the same day. It's actually not a big deal to hold both events on the same day, as long as you guys don't regret it." The head of the Gold family also started laughing. "Since he doesn't want fifty million, we don't need to continue persuading him. Our Gold family is also one of the best among all second-class aristocratic families. I believe that many people will come to my son's wedding. At that time, some people will regret it!" "Haha, that may not be the case. Master Gold, you need to think about it carefully. If you hold the wedding on the same day as us, the people regretting it might be you!" Fane smiled and said without much care. "Haha, that's quite fun. Let's hold it on the same day. I want to see how you stir up the city then." The head of the Gold family laughed coldly and looked confident. Beside them, Cecilia stood up and said to the Taylor family members loudly. "Everybody in the Taylor family, I will only get married once in this lifetime. 25 days later would be the biggest day of my life. I believe that everybody would give me face, right? I hope everybody can come to my wedding and don't miss it!" One of the elders in the Taylor family immediately stood up. "Don't worry, Miss Cecilia. That is your most important day so we would definitely be there." "Yes, marriages are definitely more important than birthdays. We will definitely attend it and drink with you." Another middle-aged man also stood up and said. Cecilia showed a triumphant expression after she heard this. She looked at Old Master Taylor and said, "Old Master, you won't be absent from my wedding dinner, right? I need your blessing the most." "Haha, don't worry. Grandfather will be there. I will definitely be there!" Old Master Taylor

started laughing. Although he understood that Cecilia was doing this on purpose to bully Selena but he could not blame it on Cecilia if Fane insisted. It could only be said that Fane was too strong-headed. He wanted to compete with Cecilia on something like this. “Sigh, this is so f*cking annoying!” Fiona was incredibly angry. She directly sat down, lowered her head, and focused on eating. However, the food did not taste as good as previously. “Thank you, Grandfather!” Cecilia was extremely happy as if she had won. She sat down happily and poured herself some wine. “Come, today is a great day. Let’s enjoy a glass of drink.” “Sure, congratulations!” The other members of the Taylor family also raised their glasses and started drinking. The head of the Gold family looked around him and soon frowned. “This is weird, are we two people short?” “Haha, are you talking about Ben and Ivan?”

Chapter 691

Old Master Taylor roared in laughter and said, “I already called Fangus and he said he was quite busy as he had to work overtime.” At this point, he looked at Andrew Taylor and said, “Oh yes, Andrew, why is Ben not here? I feel like I haven't seen him in these few days.” Andrew smiled indifferently and said, “Dad, Ben opened an internet cafe just a few days ago. Of course, he would be busy. He hasn’t been home in these two days.” Grandpa Taylor smiled satisfactorily and said, “This kid finally knows how to make money. Looks like he’s finally grown out of his games too!” Hearing Grandpa Taylor praising his son, Fiona smiled and said, “Yeah, our Ben is quite hardworking. He used to be young and raw, making mistakes here and there but now he’s really grown out of it.” “Oh, I heard you guys hired ten bodyguards, and that all of them are beautiful and long-legged.” Cecilia looked at Fane and said, “Let me guess. Fane was the one who hired them? You hiring bodyguards or going for a pageant?” Kelly Gold heard and immediately said in a haughty voice, “This is so typical. Some men put on such a ‘good boy’ act when they have no money. When they get rich, they

suddenly become ‘bad boys’ and even visit the spa for the women.” At this point, he continued as a matter of fact, “But some men are different. They secretly flirt with chicks, bodyguards… Miss Selena, you are really pretty, but even pretty girls will get old, and we know all men love young girls.” Cecilia said, “Yeah, Selena, you need to be careful. Your husband doesn’t seem to be an honest man. He hired ten beautiful and young bodyguards. You’re still pretty young now, but once you hit thirty, you will just age rapidly from there.” “Ha, ha, don’t worry. I have faith in my man.” Selena laughed and said, “Fane told me that these women bodyguards will be able to look after my mother and his mother. If they want to go shopping, it will be more convenient for them to have women bodyguards with them. There’s really no other intention.” “Ha, ha, I think those are just ten beautiful vases that don’t have much utility. I mean, how can beautiful girls be of any use? I’m guessing a certain someone is spending money and sneaking around.” The head of the Gold family laughed cooly. “Vases? You’re really getting ahead of yourself.” Fane looked really unhappy. Those ten beautiful girls were not hired from just any security company. They were all decorated war heroes who had sacrificed a lot for the country. Some of them were even Majors. He felt that a grave injustice was being done to these women warriors, as they were being described as vases. “Oh, you’re unhappy!” Kelly looked at Fane’s unhappy face and wanted to poke fun at him. He said, “Since you’re not happy, then why don’t we pit our bodyguards against each other?” “If you’re not fussed about embarrassing yourself, I’m happy to oblige!” Fane raised his wine glass to his lips and sipped it slowly. “Alright, let’s start a match. Why don’t we gamble on the outcome too? How about that? Do you dare to take a bet?” Kelly thought about it and said coyly.

Chapter 692

Fane could not even believe that a gamble was at stake. He said, “Of course, as to how much we should bet, why don’t you suggest it, since it's all your

idea.” Kelly heard and laughed cooly. He said, “Good, then I won’t quote such a high price-in case you lose, you can’t say that I am bullying you and you can’t pay up! Since you still have a couple of millions, let’s bet ten million per round?” “Ten million per round? Isn’t that too much? If we lose a few rounds, then what do we do? We still need money for our daughter's wedding dinner!” Fiona heard this and got a shock of her life. “Yeah, that’s a bit much, Kelly. It’s not good to gamble such a large amount. Let’s just do a hundred thousand per round.” Joan was so shocked that she had stood up by the table and quipped. “Ha, ha, aunty, why are you even joking around? How will ten million even hurt me? Ten million isn’t even appropriate for someone of my status.” Kelly laughed cooly and said, “Don’t forget, it's your son who asked me to pick the sum. A hundred thousand is way too little. What if someone loses a limb or an eye in the fight? That’s not a small matter. How can you ask for only a hundred thousand?” “Ha, ha, Kelly, you want to beat my ladies to death?” Fane laughed. He was not stupid and he was able to read between the lines. “Oh no, don’t misunderstand me. I’m just saying that this is a match of great warriors. It’s not unheard of to die in fights, is it not?” Kelly laughed and looked at Fane. He continued, “Don’t tell me you have no faith in your beautiful bodyguards?” “You’re right. These matches should not be taken lightly. Everyone, just try your best then.” Fane picked up the phone and made a call. At this moment, Orchid and the other eight bodyguards were strolling and chatting in the Villa’s Garden. “Sigh, I’m so bored. All our bosses are out for a meal. They don’t need us again. It seems like we can only go for a stroll and rest up tonight.” One of the beautiful ladies said softly. “Ha, ha, isn’t our life pretty good? We don’t need to do much and receive a monthly salary. Most importantly we can see the Supreme Warrior! How lucky are we to have the chance to be his family bodyguards.” Another lady spoke of Supreme Warrior with a sweet smile. “Remember, don’t spew nonsense. Someone could overhear us. Just call him boss, okay?” Orchid reminded the ladies instantly. “Okay okay, I know. I checked

if there was anyone around us before saying that.” The lady smiled, her dimples showing on the side. She was really attractive. At this moment, Orchid’s phone rang. She looked at the caller gleefully and instantly received the call. As she hung up, she smiled. “Good news! We’ve got a task. Our boss is asking us to visit him. Apparently Mister Gold thinks we’re just pretty vases. He wants us to spar with his bodyguard!” “No way, can’t believe people are still saying we’re pretty vases. I’m so exasperated!” Another bodyguard clenched her fists and said angrily, “Let us show them what we’ve got.”

Chapter 693

#The nine bodyguards arrived at the Taylor family hall very swiftly. “Since we’re done with our meal, let’s go! Let’s see whose bodyguards are better.” Seeing that everyone was done with their meal, the head of the Gold family stood up and said. “Ha, ha, dad, just look at these ladies. They all have such supple and smooth skin, beautiful and fair long legs. How can they compare to our family bodyguards?” Kelly looked at Orchid and the group and furrowed his brow. He said, “That’s weird. Why are there only nine? I thought you had ten bodyguards?” Orchid looked at Kelly and said cooly, “Elaine went to take care of Ben, that’s why there are only nine of us.” “Ah what a shame, well looks like we’re missing out on ten million!” Kelly said breathily. “Ten million?” Orchid and her group looked perplexed. Fane walked before them and said, “Mister Gold doesn't look highly upon you ladies. He thinks you’re all just pretty faces and I’ve hired you to wait on me. I think you should make him swallow his words!” Fane said, “When the time comes, show him what you’ve got. They don’t plan to go soft on you, so you shouldn’t as well. Beat them to death if you wish.” “Got it!” Orchid and the ladies nodded. They felt an injustice bubbling inside. It was really unfair that they were looked down upon just because they were beautiful. If only people knew what their capabilities truly were and if only they knew how many enemies had died under their watch! Everyone headed to an

empty piece of land outside the villa. “Nine of our men, go forward. Who wants to fight with these ladies first? They’ll be begging you for mercy in a bit. If they don’t beg for their lives, kill them off.” Kelly smiled and said cooly. “Ha, ha, come, I can take on two of them single-handedly!” A bulky man who looked around two meters tall boasted loudly. “How can these women be good fighters? Ha, ha, I think they wouldn’t last ten seconds if each of us took one on at a time.” Another man stood up and said. His clothes were tattered and old, but his spirits were high. Fiona felt slightly worried. These bodyguards were hired by Fane, but within these two days, she had become quite close to them. If anything were to happen to any of them, she would be regretful. She walked forward and said to Kelly, “Mister Kelly, this is just a game of sparring. If you guys lose the bet, you don’t need to actually kill them right? Bodyguards are also people.” Kelly smiled cooly in reply, “I didn’t say kill them. I merely asked them to learn from each other and spar. I mean, anything could happen in a fight, why blame me?” “Ha, ha, aunty, the world is a dog eat dog world. Survival of the fittest. If you’re so merciful, just go a nun.” One of the bodyguards from the Gold family stood up and roared in laughter.

Chapter 694

“You…” Fiona was really angry, but she held herself back as she considered Gold’s background. She retreated, fuming. Fane did not say much. He looked at Orchid and the ladies and smiled, “All the best, I’ll buy you guys a meal when you win tomorrow.” “Really? That will be amazing, thanks boss!” Orchid and the ladies smiled. One of the ladies walked in front and jostled her fists at the men. “Who first?” “Ha, ha, let me go at it! I love this scene. What a nice body figure you have, good breasts and bum.” A tan man laughed and walked forward. He almost salivated, “Pretty girl, you’re going to be begging for your life later. If you beg for your life and I don’t kill you, how will you repay me? After all, I am a man who treats women right.” The lady looked at him and smiled cooly, “Well, you can also beg me for your

life. If you beg, I won't kill you." "Max, you better win this okay? I am betting ten million on each of you!" Kelly reminded the men from the sidelines. "Don't worry, its just a few women, how can this be difficult…" The man had a solid and large build. He took a big step forward and tried to grab the girls. At this moment, the woman initiated a few kicks. It happened so fast, she kicked him twice. Max did not expect the woman to be so light-footed. Her strength was beyond his expectations. After experiencing two consecutive kicks, he could not stand straight and almost fell. He took a few steps back. At this moment, the woman jumped and landed a fist on his face. "Smash!" Max was seeing stars. He fell on the floor and passed out. "No way, he fainted!" The other Gold bodyguards saw the scene and were dumbfounded. Max was really strong. They never expected him to pass out even before he could throw a punch. "Dang it, we might actually lose!" The woman walked forward and gave Max two more kicks before she walked back to her group. "No way, we…lost?" Kelly saw this and his face distorted. He did not think Fane's bodyguards would even be a match for them. But looking at how things were progressing, he might actually lose the next nine rounds. At that moment, he might not only have to give a few million to Fane, but he was also worried that he could not come up with the money in time and might embarrass himself. Unexpectedly, the Gold family had already lost in the first round. And what a bad loss! "Ha, ha, Mister Gold, look at your bodyguards. It's fine, you have eight more chances." Fane glanced at Kelly and smiled cooly. "Hmph, that was just one round. I think we only lost because we underestimated the strength of your bodyguards. Don't worry, if I win the next eight rounds, you owe me seventy million." Kelly's face froze. He looked at Fane and said, "I'm afraid to embarrass you if you can't even cough up seventy million." "Ha, ha, don't worry. It just so happens that I got my pay today. I even got a bonus. I will be able to pay for this if I lose." Fane said. "You…you got your pay?"

Chapter 695

Fiona heard and immediately, her eyes sparkled. This was Fane's first month's salary and that would be twenty million. However, her face sank immediately. She said, "So what if you have gotten your salary. The money hasn't been with you for long and you might be losing it!" "Mother, don't jinx it. You have to believe in what the ladies are capable of!" Selena was just a bystander but she had started to feel nervous. However, she chose to believe in Fane and support his decision. "Motherf****r, let me have a go at it!" Another bodyguard stepped out from Mister Gold's pack of bodyguards. "Orchid, let me do it!" Another adorable looking lady, part of the Taylor family bodyguards walked in front and got ready to spar with him. "Little miss, you look so cute. I wonder how long you'd cry for after getting punched by me." taunted the bodyguard as he saw the lady. Truth be told, the adorable looking lady did indeed give off a very innocent and harmless look. It was not surprising to see that others could not take her seriously. "Nero, stop fooling around. Max lost because he underestimated them." Kelly reminded Nero instantly. He could not afford to lose this round-it would be too embarrassing! If he lost two rounds consecutively, it would really prove that his bodyguards are not capable. "Don't worry, I will have no mercy." Nero laughed nonchalantly and rushed toward her. He moved at lightning speed and appeared in front of the lady. He raised his fist and threw a punch at her. Kelly saw this masterful display and looked really satisfied. He thought, 'The lady would not even have the time to make a move! She would be scared to death at his speed. This time, we will win!' "Hmph!" The attack did not perturb the lady at all. She reacted with a kick. "Bang!" Their fists met and a loud sound exploded. The force was strong and the lady stepped back to stabilize her posture. Comparing both their strengths and sizes, it was obvious that Nero was at a disadvantage. "No way, don't tell me Nero won't be able to win?" "Yeah, this lady looks like she's skin and bones. How would she possess such strength?" The Gold family bodyguards looked dumbfounded. If the first bodyguard lost, that could be accepted as an accident. However, if the mistake were to repeat

itself twice, it would not be passable as an accident anymore. They would just have to accept the obvious fact that these beautiful ladies were in fact, pretty capable. “Ah!” Nero felt embarrassed for being thrown backward. He rushed for her and yelled, “I will kill you!” “Feeling angry?” The lady felt the murderous vibes coming from her opponent. Her brows furrowed and her eyes started to glisten, feeling the same fury in her heart, ready to defeat her opponent.

Chapter 696

In the beginning, Fane’s bodyguards did not have any murderous intent. They just wanted their opponents to lose. However, as they felt the rage coming from their opponents, they, too felt a similar rage to annihilate them. ‘This man dares to kill me”, she thought, “I will have no mercy.’ Nero ran toward her with both fists clenched, he threw two consecutive punches with a left jab and right hook, giving off a roar as he faced her. The lady’s posture straightened and she dodged her opponent. She kicked her left leg and dodged to her right, making a sudden jump onto the back of the man. Her thighs gripped the shoulders of her opponent and she had his head in a deadlock. She twisted his head. “Crack!” A crisp sound rang. The Gold family bodyguard’s neck snapped. She jumped down from his body. The eyes of the man still looked surprised as he fell on to the floor, splashing the mud and soil around. “Nero!” A Gold family bodyguard witnessed the scene as his eyes welled up in tears. He never imagined his good buddy would face such a fate. “Ha, ha, Mister Gold. I am sorry to say that I’ve won another round.” Fane laughed and looked at Kelly. Kelly’s expression soured. He began to grind his teeth and said, “Did you bring out the best fighters first? My best fighters are yet to come.” Fane smiled bitterly and said, “To be honest, I don’t really know what they are all capable of because it’s my first time witnessing them in battle. However, I believe their skills are all really not bad.” “Hmph, let’s go for round three!” Mister Gold did not care to hear Fane finish. He just wanted to win one round so that he

would not embarrass himself too badly. “Mister Gold, I think you should just stop and let this go. If we go on, you might lose a few more bodyguards.” Zeus Taylor thought about it and said from the crowd. After all, the Gold family was one man down. If this continues, the other bodyguards might feel resentment toward the Taylor family. He was afraid that they would want to fight to death. It was not about whose family would lose a bodyguard-they would not be losing money. These warriors have all been groomed and trained for years. It would be a devastating loss. “Ha, ha, old man, are you afraid of losing? I have lost my men and how dare you say you want to end this? Are you afraid that my best fighters are soon to come? I have two bodyguard leaders who have not even started yet.” Kelly laughed. Even if Zeus was his senior, he did not care for respecting him anymore. “Yes, old man, we can’t let it go now that we’ve started. Since we’ve all already agreed, let’s continue. Our Gold family folks are willing to stomach any losses hopefully, you have the same appetite.” The head of the Gold family said seriously. “Alright then!” Zeus had no other option but to nod and smile bitterly. He said, “I just feel like we’re all going to be family, and we shouldn’t fight over such matters.” The head of the Gold family laughed and said, “Don’t worry, just treat this as our post-dinner entertainment. This petty matter wouldn’t affect the bond between our family.” Zeus smiled resignedly, “Well, as long as you think that!” Round three was about to begin.

Chapter 697

This time, the Gold family presented a man who was two meters tall. His strength would definitely surpass the two men before him. Even then, after two to three minutes of battle, the Taylor family bodyguards managed to kill him off. “We’ve won three rounds. I’m afraid we might win all ten rounds.” Fane looked at Cecilia Taylor and said, “Cecilia, you haven’t married into their family. You should still be part of the Taylor family right?” Cecilia did not quite get what Fane was trying to imply by that question. She batted him

an eye and said, “Nonsense, of course, I am part of the Taylor family.” “Then, do you wish for the Taylor or the Gold family to win?” Fane suddenly asked with a laugh. The corners of Cecilia’s mouth twitched slightly. She thought that Fane was a little punk trying to make her life difficult by asking this question. She was in between a rock and a hard place now-whichever answer would get her into trouble. “Ha, ha, I wouldn’t know the answer to these things. I think it is so hard to tell who is going to win.” Cecilia laughed flippantly and gave a non-answer. “Who’s next?” Round four was about to begin. A Taylor family bodyguard volunteered herself. “I’ll do it!” A tall and thin Gold family bodyguard walked in front and said angrily, “We’ve lost two men. Pretty girl, I will annihilate you and avenge my brothers.” “Ha, ha, I don’t think you’re capable.” The female bodyguard laughed at her opponent. Very soon, the battle began. Moments later, the Gold family bodyguard was also killed by the Taylor family bodyguard. The entire Gold family’s facial expressions darkened. Every single round did not seem to harm the Taylor family. Even their main bodyguards had been defeated. Nine rounds later, other than the first bodyguard that had fainted, all eight Gold family bodyguards had been killed. “Alright, the competition is now over. Thanks for all your effort. You ladies better head home and get some rest. You don’t need to stand guard for the night. I’ll take you all for lunch tomorrow.” Fane stepped forward and looked at Orchid and the ladies satisfactorily. He added, “Oh, tomorrow get Elaine to come and eat with us.” “Alright, thanks boss!” Orchid and the ladies looked really happy and shook his hand. They left. The entire Gold family fell into silence. They could not believe that they had lost all nine rounds and ended up with eight dead bodyguards-even their two team leaders were dead. This was an embarrassing display. “Mister Gold, now that you have lost, you won’t go back on your promises of ninety million, will you?” Fane laughed and asked Kelly. “Ninety million is nothing, Mister Gold will definitely keep his words.” Fiona was so happy at the thought of ninety million. She would have burst out laughing in glee if not for the Gold family’s presence.

Chapter 698

“Ha, ha, that’s right. Gold family will keep to our word and pay our dues. It’s just ninety million-give us your bank account number!” Kelly held back the anger in his heart and said with a laugh. “Fane, just let this go.” Zeus could not resist but to suggest. After all, Cecilia was about to marry Mister Gold. The opponents would be family soon. To kill their soon to be family’s bodyguards was already bad enough. To pursue the ninety million might add to their anger and offend Mister Gold. This could affect the relationship between both families. Zeus had kept silent before. After all, he had already said not to continue the matches earlier and was refused by the Gold family. He had maintained his silence until now. “Ha, ha, I wouldn’t mind letting this go, but I think Mister Gold is someone who wants to pay his dues. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have heard such good things about Mister Gold’s character and reputation.” Fane laughed and pretended to put on an unsatisfied face. “Give me your bank account now-ninety million is small money!” the corner of Kelly’s mouth twitched as he said cooly. Next to Fane, Fiona’s eyes were shining at the thought of money. He said bitterly, “Mother, where is your card? Pass your account number to Mister Gold. I forgot to bring my wallet out and can’t remember my account number.” “Me? Good, good, good, let me give it to you now!” Actually, Fiona had taken out her card earlier. With so many pairs of eyes on her, she was holding onto her card cautiously, as she did not want them to think she was greedy. Now that Fane had offered her card, she felt so happy at her good fortune-to think that ninety million was coming to her-what a windfall! “Alright, I’ll go now. Master Taylor, the wedding is going to be in twenty-five days. You all had better show up.” Mister Gold said after transferring the money. “Of course!” Zeus smiled awkwardly. He could see that the Gold family was clearly unhappy despite their courteous words. “Master Gold, I’m afraid to trouble you but you should also remove all these dead bodies.” Fane reminded. Gold family was already angry. To hear Fane purposely

remind them of the dead bodies pissed them off even more. They looked at him furiously and left with the bodies. “Fane, didn’t you think you were being too harsh on them?” Zeus said to Fane unhappily. “I don’t think so. They were the ones who called for a match and called my bodyguards useless. Furthermore, it was their bodyguard who asked for a fight till death-why should they blame me for this?” Fane said nonchalantly, “If they really want to blame it on something, they should just blame it on their rotten luck to have underestimated my bodyguards.”

Chapter 699

“Okay, fine, we’re all one family. I don’t think they will take this to heart for a few bodyguards.” Master Taylor said, “I’ve already advised them against it, their family insisted on competing with us-they shouldn’t entirely blame Fane for this.” “But, dad…” Zeus still looked unhappy-he was a little afraid of the Gold family. “But what? The Taylor family is no longer some third class family. We are a second class family. Gold family is also a second class family. We’re on equal footing and you shouldn’t be afraid.” Master Taylor said and looked at Fane. “Fane, although they were the ones who started the fight, you should also be more cautious in the future. They are going to be our family. We should make an effort to maintain a good relationship.” “Don’t worry, I have plans!” Fane smiled. He looked at the time and said, “Alright, we need to go back and rest. We’ll come and visit you next time when we are free.” Fane and the rest left the Taylor family and returned to their private villas. As they entered the door, Fiona said, “Fane, you gave the Taylor family only twenty million in dowry. Look at the Gold family-they gave Cecilia eighty million in dowry. I think my Selena is much better than Cecilia. You can’t do much worse than them.” “Mother, what are you trying to say?” Selena got a little upset at this. She could not help but glare at her mother. She knew that Fiona had no plans to give the ninety million back to Fane. “Why do you care? I think I am right! My precious daughter is more beautiful and well mannered than her. My

daughter is more clever and capable too.” Fiona glanced at Selena haughtily. Fane understood what she really meant and said, “Mother, can you hang on to the ninety million for me? Let’s consider that as Selena’s dowry. You’re right, Selena’s dowry can’t be lesser than Cecilia.” Fiona could not contain her glee. She could not believe her windfall from just a dinner. “Don’t worry! It’s not a gift to me. It’s Selena’s dowry.” Fane smiled bitterly. He knew that Fiona would be unhappy if he did not give the money to her and would even blame him for offending the Gold family. If a little money could help her let go of what had happened, he would gladly offer it up. Furthermore, he felt that he owed the Taylor family much more. Ninety million was nothing to him. “Hubby, are you sure you want to give this to mother? If you give it to her, will we have enough money for my birthday party? You only have a few million. I wouldn't mind on usual occasions, but your advertisements are everywhere-the entire city knows about the party. If it’s not as grand as they imagined, we would be the laughing stock for everyone.” Selena looked concerned and said, “I think what you have is roughly the same as what you won earlier.” “My love, don’t worry about these matters. Leave the money talk to me. A few million is small money.” Fane looked at Selena feeling worried and his heart softened. He was aware that Selena did not care much for the party-he knew that she just did not want him to appear like a fool and be looked down on by everyone.

Chapter 700

“Yes, Fane is so right! This is just small money. What is it to give it to his mother-in-law?” Fiona was over the moon. She had already begun thinking about how to spend the money and did not really care if Fane had offended the Gold family. “Alright, let’s sleep. I need an early night in.” Fiona laughed and went into the villa with Andrew. “How can you say ninety million is small money?” Selena sounded like she was not sure if she should laugh or cry. She took Kylie’s hand and made her way inside. “Hubby, why don’t we scale down my birthday celebration? I don’t care if we look like

fools. I don’t think we should waste money. I’m just so worried that you have prepared so many tables, but there might not be a huge crowd.” “Ha, ha, don’t worry, there will definitely be a huge crowd! After all, this shook up the whole city-we need to keep this up!” Fane laughed and held Selena’s hand. He said, “Let’s go, my dear, you take a good rest and leave it to me.” “Okay! I believe in you!” Selena nodded. Meanwhile, the Gold family had just arrived home after half an hour’s drive. The other bodyguards disposed of the dead bodies. “This live-in son-in-law of the Taylor family is so annoying. He shows us no respect!” Kelly thought of the drama earlier and gripped his fists, feeling the anger bubbling in his heart. Even the Taylor family head had said to let the money go. He could not believe that Fane would dare to insist on the ninety million. The Gold family head smiled bitterly, “Son, you should remember that ninety million is nothing for us. It is also nothing to them since they are also a second class family.” He paused and continued, “However, Fane and his little family would consider it to be big money. It would be enough to cover half a year’s worth of salary-how could he reject such a large sum of money?” “But, the head of the Taylor family even said not to take it. For him to do that, isn’t that a demonstration of disrespect toward us?” Kelly still felt unhappy. “Ha, ha, this money is not for Taylor’s family head. It is for Fane. Master Taylor was just all talk, it’s normal.” The head of the Gold family laughed, “Fane must be dirt poor. It is not surprising that he is greedy for money.” At this moment, Master Gold finally said, “I never expected all the ten beauties to be great fighters. Any one of them can beat our bodyguards, and even our bodyguard team leads.” “Yeah, it definitely won’t be easy to kill Fane.” Kelly continued.

Chapter 701

“What did you kill him for? You’ll marry Cecilia Taylor in the future and we’ll be in-laws with the Taylor family. We’re deemed as one family by then hence there’s no need to slit his throat.” The head of the Gold family orated straightaway. “Father, Fane is snobbish and always going about with

his nose in the air! Okay. Let's just forget the fact that he insulted you and Grandpa but for the deed he did to the Gold family today, killing so many of our men, don't you desire to avenge the dead? "Besides, if the words go out of these walls, what'll be the outcome? It's shame and humiliation toward the Gold family! We challenged the other party to duels, not once but nine times. And guess what? We lost all nine rounds! None of our men had won even one round! Isn't that embarrassing?" Kelly's expression stayed frosty. The more he looked back on the occurrence, the deeper the irritation welled up in his chest. "We can't shove all the blame onto Fane for this. On the contrary, I think the fault is on you! Who asked you to make such a bet with him? Moreover, it's not a small and casual one. And you kept emphasizing, what, 'it's not unheard of to die in fights'? Now that his bodyguard has killed ours, you were saying?" Master Ezra was not particularly delighted with his son's behavior—parading his superiority and desire to prevail over others. He thought that this son of his was too impulsive and reckless. "Hmmm, if we really want to kill off this brat, it's actually not that painful." Old Master Gold tittered and continued, "However, I don't think there's a need to kill him right now. Did he not keep on advertising that the birthday party that he's going to throw for Selena Taylor, will shake the whole Middle Province? That this party will be the grandest and most indelible. Today, he'd shamed us all, so why don't we return the favor on that day?" "You're right, Grandpa. If we end him right now, it would be too simple and painless for him. To shame him and humiliate him in front of thousands is a better idea!" Old Master Gold's utterance knocked some sense into Kelly, he nodded to agree. "It just so happened that Cecelia had the desire to compare with Selena, and suggested having our wedding on the same day as the birthday party. This is an excellent opportunity to avenge ourselves! Just imagine, when the day arrives, all relatives of the Taylor family will come to our wedding instead of Selena's birthday banquet. Many guests of exalted rank will be present at our wedding and no one will go to theirs. Mwahahaha! Just the thought of

it makes my mood soar!" Old Master Gold bobbed to show unison. "When the time comes, we'll need to gather as much information as possible about their party. If they're preparing a dinner worth one hundred thousand bucks, then we'll throw one that's two hundred thousand. If they make it to five hundred thousand, we'll raise it to eight hundred thousand. In short, we have to make Fane realize what true wealth is!" A gentle smile appeared on Master Ezra's face as well. "Hehe! On that day, our event will be more magnificent and eye-catching than theirs will. By then, let's see how he can stand by his promise—a party that will shake the foundation of the Middle Province!" "Yeah! They even made a countdown just for the birthday party! And we did not even use such exaggerated moves! We'll wait until two or three days before the wedding and drop the bomb. It'll be a total humiliation to them when their advertisements are louder than ours but the event is not as happening as ours! Such a shame!" A contented smug appeared at the corners of Kelly's mouth. The image of Fane's vein popped out in his neck and Selena's white blanched face was like a ray of warm sunshine flooding Kelly's soul—he would be flabbergasted with joy. "Kelly, get several men to challenge Fane's female bodyguards someday." Nevertheless, Old Master Gold had abruptly invaded Kelly's mind and broken his chain of imagination on Fane's and Selena's reactions. He did not expect such a question from Old Master Gold. "Grandpa, what do you mean? What am I going to do with those female bodyguards?" Kelly's brows drew together. "These female bodyguards are no vases, all of them are very skilled fighters. The thing that makes me worried the most is that I feel that they haven't revealed their full strength! Such combat prowess is no ordinary. So, try your best to find out, first, how much Fane pays them, then counteroffer with a higher pay and get them to work for the Gold family!" Old Master Gold expressed his thoughts, slowly. Young Master Gold stretched out his hand and gestured a thumbs up right after hearing Old Master Gold's thoughts. "Smart! Grandpa, your plan is bloody smart! Those ten female bodyguards are indeed powerful and strong. If we could get them to work

for us, it’d be marvelous!” “Haha! Fane will spew blood to death by then! Let anger consume him, shall we?” The head of the Gold family laughed aloud at the proposition as well.

Chapter 702

The next morning, Kelly went out with a few bodyguards to execute their ultimate plan. He waited until Fane and Selena were both out only then he spent some money to dig out information about the female bodyguards from some servant of the Taylor family. When he finally got hold of the salary information of the ten beautiful bodyguards, his jaw dropped to the ground and his eyes widened. He was utterly shocked. The combat strength and prowess of those bodyguards were beyond extraordinary. With such skill, fifty thousand bucks pay a month would not be an exaggeration. The most overriding fact was that each of these gorgeous bodyguards possessed long and deceptively delicate legs. If the hirer was some young master of prominent families, they would be willing to pay everything, even if it breaks their bank! “What the heck! And they’d actually agreed to this amount of pay?” Young Master Gold was almost choking at his rage. He could not fathom what was on these female bodyguards’ minds, were they missing some brain cells? How could they have agreed to such a low pay, were they not self-derogating? “Hmmm, Young Master, I think it’s good news. The lower their pay, the easier for us to persuade them to join us. Also, we’ll spend less money too, given that the starting pay is so low!” A bodyguard of the Gold family addressed with a huge grin on his face, wanting to please his young master. “You got a point!” Young Master Gold nodded at his words. He and his bodyguards were standing far away from the villa, paying attention to the situation inside the villa’s gate and waiting for the golden opportunity. After like a century, finally, there were two shadows—Orchid and another lovely bodyguard—showed up at the main gate of the villa. They seemed like they were preparing to go on shopping. “Finally, the opportunity is here!” Kelly smiled slightly at the sight before

him, and soon he ordered a few of the bodyguards to tail the two beauties together with him. Not long after Orchid and the other cute bodyguard left the villa, they sensed somebody was behind them. Both halted and wheeled back immediately. “Oh, it’s Young Master Gold. Hehe, are you upset about what happened yesterday, that none of you managed to defeat us? And you brought all these men with you to create trouble this early? Trying to use the number to press against us, to kill us?” Orchid sneered with a frosty cold tone when she realized the sickos that were tailing them were Young Master Gold and his bodyguards. “Chill! It’s a misunderstanding!” Kelly let out an awkward chortle and approached nearer to the two, and explained, “Oh, my two beautiful ladies, you’ve really misunderstood me. How could I let someone tail you and harm you? Look, both of you are skilled fighters with high vigilance. Hence, even if I wanted to do sneaky attacks, it’s impossible to succeed! It’s dumb for me to do that!” “Hmph! Good to know that you’ve used your brain!” With Orchid’s arms crossed in front of her chest, she jeered with a stoic tone. “My ladies, we’re actually looking for you to discuss some business with you.” Kelly explained with a pretentious smile plastered on his face. “Some business? What do you want?” Orchid and the other female bodyguard exchanged glances, both looking perplexed at the statement. “Yup! I noticed this iron fact yesterday, that all nine of you, wait, no, there’s another beauty. All ten of you are strong combatants and your fighting prowess are incomparable! It’s really rare to have ten lovely masters of fighting… How wonderful!” Kelly said it with a broad mischievous grin on his face, as though he was a greedy moneylender. An obvious irritation washed over Orchid’s face, she barked impatiently. “Stop talking bullsh*t! If you have something to say, just spit it out! Don’t tell me you came here all the way just to praise us!” “What a clever girl! And yes, I came here for an important business. I got to know that your salary is only twenty thousand bucks per month, which is way too little for a skilled fighter like you!” Young Master Gold put on a faint smile, and extended his left palm, showing a figure five, “Fifty thousand bucks! How about the Gold

family pays you fifty thousand per month? Quit your job and work for us!” “Young Master Gold, let’s forget what you’ve said just now. Fifty thousand? We’re not interested at all!” Orchid rejected his proposal straightaway without showing any hint of hesitation. “Yep! You want us to quit our job? Dream on!”

Chapter 703

The other beautiful bodyguard refused Kelly’s proposition as well, without thinking twice. The corners of Kelly’s mouth twitched as though he was having a stroke. He started to wonder if he had misheard them. He had increased the pay from twenty thousand to fifty thousand, it was more than double! Why on earth did the ladies reject this fantastic raise without even thinking about it? “Alright, alright. I’ll pay one hundred thousand. One hundred thousand is pretty good now, right?” Kelly tightened his teeth and stretched out another hand, spreading all fingers of both hands to gesture the figure ‘ten’. “This price is five times your current salary. There’s no reason for you to refuse!” “Hell no!” The two beauties looked at each other and yelled in unison. Once the last syllabus of the word dropped, the two turned and walked away, not bothering to continue this boring conversation anymore. “What the f*ck?” Kelly and his bodyguards exchanged perplexing glances, each of them remained as still as a statue, as though the episode had not registered into their central brain. Did these women just reject one hundred thousand pay per month? Were they stupid or what? “What the heck, I don’t believe it!” Kelly was not convinced, so he ran forward, caught up with the two, and then offered again. “Two hundred thousand bucks per month! How about that?” Nonetheless, the two did not even bother to answer this time. They continued walking, nonchalantly. “Three hundred thousand! “Four hundred thousand! “Five hundred thousand!” Kelly kept increasing the amount as he followed the two by their side. The number was quickly raised to five hundred thousand per month. Each of the ten female bodyguards would be offered five hundred thousand a month, and it would

be sixty million per year. The cost to hire these ten bodyguards was already hellishly high! Nevertheless, Kelly was not convinced of the refusal, and he did not believe that these female bodyguards would reject such a high pay. Finally, Orchid and another bodyguard stopped. Kelly showed a victorious smile when the two had finally stopped for him. He thought that there was hope, and he said expectantly, “How’s it? Five hundred thousand a month and all ten of you will be offered the same amount. This number is considered high in the bodyguard's market, isn’t it?” “Young Master Gold, you won’t give up, will you? Even if you’ve offered us one million bucks, none of us will accept it, let alone five hundred thousand.” Orchid flashed him a mirthless smile, spilling out a statement that would break Kelly’s hope and stop him from dreaming. “What the f*ck?” Kelly’s jaw dropped to the ground, and his eyes widened. “Why on earth did you reject such a great offer? Are you nuts or idiots? That you actually refuse such a high salary! Are you a hardcore fan of Fane? Otherwise, why are you satisfied with only twenty thousand per month?” “It’s because Master Fane is Master Fane. We follow him simply because he’s Master Fane, it’s Master Fane’s personal charm that makes us follow undoubtedly. It has nothing to do with money. So now, can you f*ck off?” Orchid smiled faintly, and she left with the other bodyguard in the next second. Kelly and his bodyguards, on the other hand, stood still on the same spot, completely stunned. After a moment that felt like a century, Kelly only moved a little—he turned his head toward his bodyguards—and asked in a disbelieving tone, “Master Fane’s personal charm? Did I hear it right?” “No, you didn’t. Do you think that it’s because Fane is good-looking? Or it’s the inner kindness that makes up his personal charm?” One of the bodyguards managed to spew some thoughts after squeezing all his brain juice. He looked at Kelly with confusion written on his face. “I know! It must be that Fane has some sort of underground romantic relationships with these women a long time ago!” Another bodyguard blurted out of a sudden as though some truth had entered his tiny brain. He guessed boldly, “Just try to think about it, women, in nature, are

fans of love and romance. Usually, they would be blinded and dazzled by love and thus make such irrational decisions. They're emotional mammals that can't think logically. Otherwise, how could they pick twenty thousand over five hundred thousand? It's a stupid choice! This proves the secret romance between Fane and these women! They would rather take twenty thousand than to leave Fane!" "Jesus f*cking Christ! It totally makes sense! Damn, Fane, this brat is something. All those ten beauties are his collection! Sh*t! This brat is just too good at flirting and seducing, isn't he?" Kelly nodded, his facial expression was full of admiration and envy. How he desired he was Fane right now.

Chapter 704

In the end, Kelly had no other option but to return to Gold's residence, with his gloomy face. The head of the Gold family frowned when Kelly appeared in his sight. He then asked, "What's the matter? You look upset!" "I went to Fane's villa to persuade those bodyguards to leave Fane and come work with us. But everything is in vain!" Kelly explained, smiling bitterly. "Heh? Are you sure? How much do they earn per month now?" Ezra—the head of the Gold family—was slightly startled. The thought of an unsuccessful persuasion had never crossed his mind. Was it because Fane paid them incredibly high? "Only twenty thousand per month!" A wry smile on Kelly's face as he responded. "Twenty thousand? Are you freaking kidding me? They only earn twenty thousand a month, and you couldn't even get them to leave Fane? It should be a piece of cake!" Ezra's facial expression morphed into one of unpleasant surprise, his eyes were as large as saucers. "Father, they claimed proudly that they followed Fane because of his personal charm, and even if I've offered them half a million or even five million a month, they won't budge in slightest!" Kelly added further, his smile bitter. "Ha! Personal charm, can you believe that?" Ezra's mouth was immediately shut for a few seconds at Kelly's claim. "Personal charm? What bullsh*t reason is that? I think they probably have some romantic

affair with Fane. Otherwise, how can they reject money? Which type of woman on earth doesn't like money and branded bags? What a joke!" "Yeah, that's what I thought too. But the real reason is not important anymore, it's impossible to persuade these women to work for us!" Kelly heaved a deep sigh of defeat. It was obvious that he tried to suppress the disappointment within him. After all, if he were accompanied by such a group of pleasing and lovely bodyguards, every existing man on the earth would look at him differently—admiration and approbation. At noon, Fane, Fiona, and the others headed to a high-class restaurant in an opulent hotel, with a team of bodyguards together with them. "Master Fane, are you serious about treating us to lunch? You're so generous!" Orchid could not conceal her smiles, obviously elated. "Of course! You helped me to give the Gold family an unforgettable lesson! And did you notice how snobbish and brazen he was before the duel? And how his expressions turned into one of those ugliest and gloomiest ones, ones that I've not been seeing in quite some time! I'm delighted!" Fane replied and a warm chuckle let out from his mouth. "Ugh! I'm so frustrated! I'm at big loss! Last night was a priceless opportunity for me to showcase my combat skill, and yet I was not there!" Elaine, on the other hand, whined like a dog, then she shot Ben—who was sitting beside—a cold stare. "It's all your fault! If I weren't needed to protect you, I could've had a good fight last night! Ughh!" Ben flashed her a bitter smile in return. "Well, I didn't ask you to protect me. You worry about me and you're the one who insisted on following me!" "Hmph! If it weren't for Master Fane, that he worried about your well being and asked me to protect you, I didn't even want to be near to you! And I still have to endure your vicious and venomous mouth every day when my job is only to protect you! Elaine sneered angrily. "Alright, alright. Don't be mad. C'mon, I'll pour you a drink. Thank you for being the most responsible bodyguard and for protecting me every day! Is that good now?" Ben signed in defeat. He opened a red wine and poured a glass for Elaine. "Hmph! At least you know how to say thank you!"

Chapter 705

Elaine snorted coldly, a closed-lip smile formed at the corners of her mouth, a frosty one. “Ahem! Fane, since it’s a rare opportunity to gather everyone for lunch, today the bill is on me!” Out of sudden, Fiona blurted, followed by a giggly laugh. Fane and Selena instantly looked at each other, their eyes full of disbelief. The thought of Fiona being generous and treating everyone to lunch with her own money had never crossed their minds. “Mother, are you sure? I’ll pay for it, alright? Don’t worry about it!” A pretentious modesty appeared on Fane’s face, he smiled and offered to pay. “Heh! I’m just so happy today. Besides, I’m loaded now, no longer the old Fiona—poor and impecunious. It’s only lunch, I’ll pay for it!” Fiona chortled in return, her mood obviously high and good. “Tsk tsk, it’s not easy for a person to change, Ma. You used to be such a stingy person. You wouldn’t pay even if someone gave you money. I never imagined that you would suddenly have the conscience to do so now!” Ben said, grinning. “What are you talking about? What do you mean I was stingy? We were poor before. I was being frugal, got it? Someone like me is more suited to manage money!” Fiona rolled her eyes at Ben. “Eat all you want, everyone,” she told the entire family. “Just order more wine if you think it’s not enough. The bill can come up to ten thousand, a hundred thousand—it doesn’t matter!” “Hear that? Did you hear that? My mom just said that. Let’s eat. Don’t be shy!” Ben said with a huge grin. At that moment, a middle-aged man was seen in front of the Green Sky Hall’s entrance. He brought quite a few people and went straight in. The head of Green Sky Hall, Hector, immediately frowned when he saw the middle-aged man leading the group. He then went forward to welcome them with a smile. “Oh my. What’s going on? The head of the Eagle Clan is gracing my hall today. I did have a feeling that an esteemed guest was coming to visit today, but never did I imagine that it would be you, Master Neuman!” Lee Neuman, the head of the Eagle Clan gave a wan smile. “Master Zaborowski, I have a matter to discuss with

you today," he said. "Let's talk inside. It's not convenient out here with so many people around!" "Oh. Alright then!" Hector nodded his head, smiling. He only brought a few of his most trusted fighters and they headed back in, along with the leader of the Eagle Clan. "Heh. Master Neuman, you're being too courteous. Just call me Mr. Zaborowski. That's what my men call me. It feels strange if you call me 'master'." "Hah. It doesn't matter if I call you Master Zaborowski or Mr. Zaborowski. It doesn't change the fact that you call the shots here!" Lee burst into laughter. The group quickly filtered into a receiving hall and settled themselves on the seats. "Alright, Master Neuman. There are no outsiders here. You can say whatever you want to say now. The last time we saw each other must have been two years ago. You wouldn't come to see me if nothing was going on!" Hector was still smiling. He looked warm and friendly on the surface. Lee's countenance shifted, turning heavier. He looked straight at Hector. "Not too long ago, 300 men from the Eagle Clan died," he said. "They were killed in the forest outside the city. One of them was part of my cadre—Baldy! Have you heard of this incident, Master Zaborowski?" Hector picked up his teacup and slowly took a sip from it. Then he nodded his head. "Of course, I've heard of it. I even heard that it was a lone murderer. Tsk tsk. A man with such strength is frightening indeed. He must at least be a marshal!" Lee shook his head. "I think even a marshal doesn't possess that kind of strength. Among the 300 men, quite a number were geniuses within the Eagle Clan. You know as well as I do that the Eagle Clan is among the best of all the Halls. Now among the Four Fighters, only three are left. If my guess is correct, it's highly improbable that the murderer is a marshal. Rather, it's highly likely that he's a King of War!" "A King of War?" Hector drew his brows together when he heard the phrase 'King of War'. "It'd be a huge problem if you provoke a King of War."

Chapter 706

“Judging from the strength needed to kill that many men, it’s almost certain that he’s a King of War. And we’ve been deciphering his modus operandi over and over, and all our men died by a clean break to the neck. It’s definitely done by a single person. Doesn’t seem like anyone else helped!” Lee’s expression darkened. “Because of this, we suffered heavy losses and our position dropped a lot. Two of our territories had been snatched away by other Halls!” When Hector heard this, his features twisted into an unreadable expression. “Heh. Master Neuman, don’t tell me you want to get my help to take your territories back? They probably aren’t worth much if they’re just small areas, right? Besides, this is a matter of the Eagle Clan. What does it have to do with Green Sky Hall?” Lee laughed aloud. “We won’t trouble you for this. I’ve managed to recruit quite a few fighters lately. One of them is even stronger than Baldy when he first started out. That’s why we’ve already managed to take our small territories back!” “Then you just came over to complain to me?” Hector frowned. He did not think that Lee would come over for something as menial as that. “We’ve been trying to find the murderer of Baldy and the others for some time now. Finally, we’ve got our man. It’s a 99% guarantee that it’s that person!” Anger sparked in Lee’s eyes as he spoke. That man had killed 300 of their men, including a top fighter. This thought sent his mind into panic every time. “Tell me then. Middle Province only has a handful of Kings of War. It should be easy enough to weed him out if you investigate properly.” Hector spoke slowly after he thought about it, “But let’s say that he’s a high-ranking King of War and that he earned his position through his fists. It would be difficult for you to get revenge then!” “You’ve seen him before!” Lee revealed, smiling bitterly. “I’ve seen him before?” Hector frowned. “No way. I’ve not spoken to any marshals or Kings of War lately,” he said, surprised. “And they think of themselves as the protectors of Cathysia. They’re righteous warriors. We would have nothing common to talk about in a conversation!” “Mmhmm. He came to see you just two days ago. If my guess isn’t wrong, he even fought with your men!” Lee answered, giving a

wan smile. “Fane Woods!” Hector and the fighters around him immediately cried out. “That’s right. It’s the adopted son-in-law of the Taylor family!” Lee spoke in a confident tone, “I conducted a little investigation and found out that my subordinate had offended a good buddy of his, named Tiger. Tiger is a delivery boy, someone unassuming. But that brat actually killed 300 of my men to avenge his friend!” Here, Lee paused for a while before continuing leisurely, “And according to what I know, your men had also offended Tiger and his wife a while ago. And so that punk came looking for you! I believe that he fought with your people!” The corners of Hector’s mouth twitched slightly. It took a while before he replied in a frank tone, “That punk didn’t come to us just because of that. There was something else as well!”

Chapter 707

“Oh, really? Why don’t you tell me about it?” Lee was slightly taken aback. He never thought that Fane would meet the Green Sky Hall for anything else other than the whole outcry over what they had done to Tiger. At this moment, the master of the Green Sky Hall took a step forward. “This is what happened. Our men are also involved in another business,” he explained. “We don’t just make business within the country, but we trade with a foreign organization as well. We secretly take pictures of women and sell them…” After Lee heard the entire story, he spoke up in a huff, “Fane really went overboard. This has nothing to do with him. It’s natural for him to ask for compensation from you because of what happened to Tiger, but you guys didn’t even take pictures of his wife. Why did he have to get so worked up about it!” “Right? This incident really pissed me off too!” Hector’s expression hardened, then his gaze sidled toward Lee. This entire affair was between him and Fane. He was curious why Lee was reacting in such a manner, blowing up even more than he did. “Then what happened? Did you guys fight him after he came?” Lee asked after he thought about it. “Of course, we fought. Initially, we had planned to kill him if he wasn’t any

good. But if he was strong, we would brush the conflict off as a misunderstanding…" Hector narrated the entire incident to Lee. After he finished his story, he released a long sigh. "Unfortunately, we lost! All our people were no match for him." After he said that, Hector looked as though he suddenly recalled something, and could not help but say to Lee, "Right, Master Neuman, isn't Fane, a marshal? I heard that he proclaimed to have two billion bucks to his name during Old Man Taylor's seventieth birthday party. He's probably a marshal. But he claimed that he lost his medal. Why are you saying that he's a King of War?" "Heh. It's obvious that this punk is lying. He's definitely not some run-of-the-mill assistant commander!" Lee chuckled. "I'm very sure that the person who killed Baldy and the rest of our 300 men was Fane. And with that amount of destructive power, he's definitely a King of War. There's no way that so many people would surround him together and still be killed otherwise." "That brat's strength really can't be underestimated. Judging from how our best fighters fared against him, he doesn't seem like a marshal. Even a marshal wouldn't have beaten us so easily!" After Hector began to deduce the information, a shadow passed over his features. If this was truly the case, that brat would truly be difficult to deal with. "Master Zaborowski, that punk told you to cut off the entire photo trade. Do you really want to give it up just like that? You guys make a lot of money from it every month. More importantly, this is a business that will only expand into a gold mine, and you'll just abandon it? Can you really do that?" Lee noticed that Hector was in a dour mood, and he intensified his manipulation. "Why don't our Halls join hands and kill this little brat?" "Hehe!" At this moment, Hector burst into laughter instead. "Master Neuman, you've spoken so much today, but this is your main motive of coming here, isn't it? You don't stand a chance against him, so you're coming to us in hopes that we'll lend you our strength!" Lee nodded his head. "That's right. I was thinking of that when I came here. That punk offended both of our Halls. How can we just let him live?" Hector went silent, pondering. After a while, he finally replied, "For now, we're

not sure if we want to take Fane on. You said it yourself. It's a big possibility that he has the strength of a King of War. It won't be easy to kill him. And in the end, we might suffer heavy losses and still end up on the losing side!"

Chapter 708

"Heh. Can you really stand it, Hector? This is a colossal loss for you! Have you really thought about it? At any rate, I've got some grudges against the kid!" Lee chuckled, although he was a little unhappy. He had thought that the master of the Green Sky Hall would agree to cooperate with him. After all, Fane had bullied him practically to death. He never expected that Hector would choose to compromise himself at this moment. "Master Neuman, what happened to the Green Sky Hall is a little different from what happened to yours. The Eagle Clan lost 300 men. They were your precious comrades, so I understand if you want to kill Fane!" Hector released a breath. He picked up his cup from the table and sipped from it. "However, no one from our side has died," he said slowly, "only two of our men were critically injured. One had his leg broken, and the other had his d*ck rendered useless. So we didn't lose any men, and we've only lost a bit of money. There's no need for us to provoke a man who has the strength of a King of War. Look, let's say we fight—we'll still suffer heavy losses even if we win!" The corners of Lee's lips began to twitch. Green Sky Hall was very powerful, and they had the backing of Kingston Hall. That was why he wanted to cooperate with them and gather their strongest fighters to assassinate Fane together. Now though, if Green Sky Hall refused his proposal, he would have zero chance against Fane, with only the men from the Eagle Clan to rely on. He never expected that Hector would cast him a long look and suddenly break into a smile. "Oh, right. I heard that Fane had offended Young Master Wilson during Old Man Taylor's seventieth birthday party not too long ago," he said. "The Wilsons are very powerful too. That brat's really got some guts!" Lee was not an idiot. When he heard this, he immediately understood the hidden message behind Hector's words. His

eyes brightened as he leaped to his feet. “Master Zaborowski, think about my proposal for a while longer. Once you have truly come to your senses, just give me a call. We’ll stand together, for the enemy of an enemy is a friend. I believe that there’ll be a day where we’ll be allies!” “Heh. Let’s wait and see. For now, though, I really don’t want to provoke someone who’s as strong as a King of War!” Hector chuckled and climbed onto his feet as well, preparing to see his guest off. Soon enough, Lee and the others left Green Sky Hall. After the men from the Eagle Clan left, the old woman of Green Sky Hall finally blurted toward Hector, “Master, Fane is truly a loathsome man. He’s making us lose at least one million bucks in a single month. If we can’t continue our business, I think we should cooperate with the Eagle Clan and get rid of Fane!” Yet Hector had a frosty smile plastered onto his face. “Lee will definitely never forgive Fane for killing 300 of the Eagle Clan’s men,” he said. “I reminded him of something else just now though. I believe that he’ll go see the Wilsons and make an alliance with them. They’ll help us get rid of Fane instead. Isn’t that better? We won’t have to do anything. All we have to do is to sit back and enjoy the show. Isn’t this perfect?” The old woman’s eyes brightened when she heard this. She flashed him a thumbs up. “It’s perfect. It’s absolutely perfect! We’ll reap the rewards for no cost if they’re really able to get rid of Fane.” “Mmhmm. Let’s just wait and see. We need to continue our photograph business. We can’t just give up a gold mine because Fane threatened us.” Hector thought about it for a while and added, “But tell our men to be more careful. Don’t let Fane catch them doing our business anymore. It would be troublesome for us if he did. We’ll just be as careful as we can. As for Fane, we’ll let Lee and the others take care of him. We’ll just quietly rake in the dough. Haha!” The few people surrounding him bobbed their heads. At this moment, Lee and his henchmen quickly arrived on the streets. “Master, are we going to the Wilson family’s estate?” One of the elders had already guessed Lee’s motives. He could not help but step forward and ask. After Lee thought about it, he nodded. “We should pay the Wilsons a visit. But

the fighters from the Wilsons are no match for those from Green Sky Hall. Furthermore, Green Sky Hall has Kingston Hall backing them up. There's no way that Kingston Hall will stand by and watch if anything happens to Green Sky Hall. That's why the Wilson family isn't as reliable!"

Chapter 709

"Why are we still meeting them then, if they're not that reliable and can't guarantee us victory?" The elder furrowed his brows and asked again. Lee gave a bitter smile. "Wouldn't it be better if we made an ally with the Wilson family while we're forming an alliance with Green Sky Hall? Firstly, let's go meet the Wilson family and propose an alliance. But don't rush it. We'll plan our next move once we have Green Sky Hall in the alliance!" "But won't it be difficult to get Green Sky Hall onboard? Hector already expressed that he didn't want to face Fane with us just now!" A middle-aged woman chimed in, frowning, "Unless you have some other plan in mind, Master?" "Hah. Of course, I have a plan!" Lee burst into guffaws. "It's impossible that Hector doesn't hate Fane. He just wants to watch from the side-lines because he fears that we are no match for Fane. He even reminded us of the Wilson family on purpose, hoping that we will cooperate with them and get rid of Fane. As for them, they won't have to lift a finger, and their enemy would be gone. Hmph. Did he really think I wouldn't see through his schemes?" The middle-aged woman clenched her hands into fists when she heard that. "Hmph. What an old fox. He meant to use us as fodder!" The elder asked, "Then how should we drag Green Sky Hall into this, Master? It'll be very difficult for us if they refuse to join us!" "Didn't they say that they wouldn't sell photos to the foreign organization anymore? Heh. I don't believe a word of it!" Lee chuckled and said, "We'll get a few of our bravest men to pretend to be from Green Sky Hall and go around secretly taking pictures. Then we'll get Fane to find out and pin the blame onto Green Sky Hall." "Amazing. Your plan is absolutely amazing, Master. It'd be difficult for them to refuse to join our alliance then!" A few of the fighters

surrounding him nodded their heads. They could not help but admire their master's intelligence. "Let's go and see the Wilson family!" Lee waved his hand. He and his men drove straight toward the Wilson family's estate. "F*ck. That stupid Fane. My face still hasn't recovered!" A few days had passed since the party incident. Michael rubbed his face. It still felt a little swollen. However, the injuries were barely noticeable from a glance. He would probably recover fully in one or two days. "Dad, you must avenge me!" Michael looked at his father, almost bursting into tears. "Of course!" David looked at his son, expression solemn. "Don't worry. I've spent quite a lot of money lately to hire a few fighters to be our bodyguards," he said, "I even recruited some from other cities. They're all pretty strong. Fane won't live for very long."

Chapter 710

"That–that's great!" Michael heaved an internal sigh of relief when he heard that. "Master, the Eagle Clan is here to pay you a visit!" Right at this moment, a bodyguard ran in and reported, "The master of the Eagle Clan is here, along with his fighters!" David and Michael exchanged a glance. They were confused. "F*ck. What does the Eagle Clan want from us? Organizations that operate in the day like us has never had anything to do with Halls like theirs!" David frowned. The Eagle Clan could not be easily provoked. They were far stronger than a second-class aristocratic family like his. Their sudden appearance at his doorstep made him anxious. "Dad, don't tell me that one of our men offended the Eagle Clan so they're here to see us now? It'll be troublesome if that happens. It won't be easy to deal with them!" Michael was worried as well. David looked at the bodyguard. "Tell me, were they extremely angry when they arrived?" he asked. The bodyguard shook his head. "No. They were all very calm. They said that they're here to propose a deal to you!" "Alright. Bring them in!" David loosened a breath when he heard that. Then he waved his hand. "Looks like they're not here for trouble!" David told his son after the bodyguard left.

After a while, Lee and the others came in. Lee raised his hands in a fist-to-palm salute toward David after he sat down. “Master Wilson, long time no see. I heard that the Wilson family has been doing well lately. So admirable!” David managed a wan smile and returned the salute. “Oh, we’re not that great. We’re just getting by. We have no way to match up to a first-class aristocratic family!” “Hah. From the looks of it, your family is drawing closer and closer to the title of a first-class aristocratic family!” Lee flashed a polite smile and looked at Michael. “Young–Young Master Wilson, your face hasn’t recovered completely yet? Tsk. What a shame. I heard that Ivan from the Taylor family was the one who beat you up?” When he heard this, Michael replied immediately in a huff. “It was Ivan’s doing, but the person I’m most frustrated at is that son-in-law of the Taylor family. My face wouldn’t be in this state if he didn’t thought of that method to punish me. I’m mad at Ivan, but I’m most angry at Fane…” Here, Michael ground his jaw and clenched his fists. “If I ever get the chance, I’ll make sure that Fane is flayed and tortured to death!” “All right. That’s the spirit!” Lee instantly stood up as he saw Michael’s temper flaring. He clapped his hands as he spoke, “You’re a true man, Young Master Wilson. You have the aura of someone who isn’t afraid of anything. Men should be like that. To bless when they have received blessings, and to take revenge when they have been wronged!” Delight sprang in Michael’s heart at the other man’s praise. “But of course, don’t judge me just because I’m fat. I’m a grown man as well!” he said, chuckling. Yet David, who was watching all this from the side, could not bear to watch on any longer. “Master Neuman, just get straight to the point,” he said simply, tone blunt. “The Wilson family hardly associates with your Eagle Clan on a normal basis. What business are you here for today?”

Chapter 711

When Lee noticed that David was raising the issue, he said, “To be honest, you know as well as I do that the Eagle Clan has suffered heavy losses before

this. We lost 300 men, and we've been searching for the culprit behind their murders. We must avenge their deaths by killing him!" "Oh? So did you find him?" David's heart nearly skipped a beat. He said, "Master Neuman, why are you here then? Heh. Don't tell me that you suspect one of us? Your 300 men were all elites from the headquarter. One of them was even one of the Four Fighters from the Eagle Clan. We certainly don't have the means to have a man slaughter so many people!" "It's all a misunderstanding! You misunderstood me, Master Wilson," Lee replied hurriedly. "I don't want to cause any trouble by coming to you. I wanted to cooperate with you!" Here, Lee paused for a while and cast a glance toward Michael, who stood to the side. "According to our investigations, Fane was the one who killed our 300 men," he continued. "That son-in-law of the Taylor family, Fane!" "What!" Michael immediately exclaimed when he heard that. His expression revealed utter disbelief. "No way. Is he that strong?" "You don't know who he really is?" Lee was surprised. "I know that you're on pretty good terms with Selena. Shouldn't you have some knowledge about the circumstances surrounding Fane Woods?" "Not really. I've seen him fight before, but he was only facing off against a few dozen bodyguards. I know that he's pretty strong, but no way that he killed all 300 of your men all by himself!" Michael still felt that it was impossible. He looked straight at Lee. "Maybe you've got the wrong guy? The man who killed your people from the Eagle Clan, at least had the strength of a marshal or a King of War. And Fane– Fane is probably just a head commander!" "No way. We've verified our sources. It's definitely him!" Lee was extremely adamant. "Fane is a funny little character. I suspected that he was a King of War who was hiding his true strength and keeping a low profile. But once he's provoked, the consequences are unimaginable." At this moment, David nodded his head after he thought about the subject. "Fane is very strong. I was also curious why so many people respect him even though he was just an assistant commander. And many war veterans had turned up for Old Man Taylor's birthday party!" "Dad, if Fane truly turns out to be a King of War, it doesn't

matter if he’s only a one-star King of War—he’ll be extremely difficult to beat! What do we do? Don’t tell me that I have no hope of taking revenge?” Michael twisted his features into a grimace, clearly unhappy with the news. “Heh. Don’t worry. The Wilsons cannot beat him alone. But we have our brothers from the Eagle Clan with us. Isn’t that right?” David chuckled. “Master Neuman said it himself just now, that he came over to negotiate an agreement between us. You won’t let him go just like that, won’t you, knowing that he murdered your men?” “Bingo!” Lee gave a wan smile. “Just get some of your best men ready and wait for our orders. We’ll get in contact then and set out to kill Fane. We’ll arrange everything else!” “But I don’t feel assured even if we combine the forces from our two families. In fact, I feel like we’ll suffer many casualties! If we lose too many of our men, our position and power will drop significantly!” David felt unsure of the plan after he thought about it for a while. “Don’t worry about it, Master Wilson. Fane is a certified assh*le. He even offended the Green Sky Hall. Soon enough, we’ll have the Green Sky Hall by our side as well!” Lee flashed a mysterious smile and said, “But you’ll have to wait patiently for our arrangements!” “No problem. It’s a done deal then!” David extended his hand. The two men shook hands, faces beaming triumphantly.

Chapter 712

At that moment, Fane and the others had just finished their lunch at the hotel. They were about to go back after a scrumptious meal. “It wasn’t that expensive now, was it? We only spent over seven hundred thousand bucks. I thought the bill would go over a million!” Fiona was rich now. When she spoke, there was an undeniable tinge of arrogance laced in her words. “Ma, you really… Did you forget our struggling days in poverty?” Selena gave a bitter smile. She did not know whether to laugh or cry. “Ah, why would I compare myself to the olden days? Now I have a son-in-law who can bring in the dough, and my daughter makes plenty of money as well. Of course, I should indulge myself. Money is meant to be spent!” Fiona grinned and

looked at Joan beside her. “Let’s go, Joan dear. I saw some nice clothes in a boutique yesterday. I think it’d suit you. Why don’t we go shopping?” “Is it expensive?” Joan frowned. She remembered how Fane had brought her to buy plenty of clothing and all sorts of unnecessary things the last time. Even now, she was still not used to it. Besides, Fane gave her quite a lot of money. Now that it was in her grasp, she could not bear to spend it every time she flashed back to her days as a cleaner. “It’s not that expensive. Just a little more than ten thousand bucks. More importantly, it will look good on you. I'm a little short, so I probably won’t look good in it. Why would I recommend the clothes to you otherwise?” Fiona chuckled as she spoke. Fane had given her ninety million bucks yesterday. She was in good spirits now, and she was even feeling amicable toward her son-in-law. “Alright then!” Joan smiled and agreed to the proposal to go shopping. Of course, two of the beautiful bodyguards tailed after them to ensure their safety. “Let’s go, Ben. We’ll take a look at your cybercafe and see how it is doing now!” Andrew drank quite a bit during lunchtime, and now his cheeks were flushed. He patted his son’s shoulder and they left. Naturally, a few bodyguard followed them as well. “Let’s go, dear. We’ll take Kylie to the aquarium. I did promise her, after all!” Fane looked at the beautiful Selena beside him, smiling as he spoke. “Alright! Kylie had been wanting to go for a long time now. But I didn’t have the time nor the money, so I told her that we would go together once Daddy is back. “That’s why Kylie always hoped that you would return soon so that you could bring her there!” Selena’s eyes began to reddened as she reminisced about what had happened these past few years. At that time, she had been extremely afraid that Fane would never return. She had been fearful that he would die on the battlefield. Kylie would not have a father then, and she would officially be an orphan. Fortunately, the gods were smiling upon them, and Fane returned. He did not disappoint her either, turning out to be a strong and reliable man. “Don’t worry. I'm back now. All we need to do is live our lives peacefully. We’ll definitely be happy together!” Fane was touched. He swept Kylie into his arms and

walked forward. Orchid and three other female bodyguards trailed after them, keeping an eye out for danger. In a car not too far away from them, Flynn was watching the entire exchange furiously. “It’s time to make a move, Cousin. Fane has been poisoned for a few days now. He’s definitely not in his best form to fight!”

Chapter 713

Flynn spoke with such hatred, and he gritted his teeth in fury and bitterness. “Don’t wear yourself out over this. The people I’ve dispatched are ready to give Fane a good beating without killing him. We still need to wait for him to make a fool of himself and die painfully during Selena’s birthday party.” With a cynical grin on his face, Ken then took out his phone to make a call. Not a second later, more than a dozen people walked out from an alley, seemingly dubious and shady-looking. Flynn frowned as he looked at the people slowly emerging from the alley. “Are these people reliable, Ken?” “Don’t worry. I was afraid of exposing myself so I employed gangsters, but there are several strong ones among them, and they’re definitely reliable!” Ken said confidently. “Of course, they’re no match to a not-poisoned Fane, but as luck would have it, he’s weakening due to the poison as we speak. It’s been days now, and he definitely seems to be unaware. Rest assured: these people could give him a good one-two.” Still, Flynn was considerably worried—and rather surprised—when he saw four stunning ladies with Fane. “Look at him. He has four women with him, and the words ‘Taylor family’s bodyguard’ are written on their clothes... I wonder what these four women are like.” “We never heard of Fane employing bodyguards. F*ck!” Ken cursed the wind. “Now that Xena isn’t with them, we won’t get updates about them in real-time.” Once he gave the women a once-over, Ken then surmised, “It should be fine. Look at those four women. Do they look like bodyguards? All of them have long legs, fair skin and pretty faces. Well, there’s no reason to fret. They’re no match for a gang this many in number, and that’s for sure!” Flynn nodded, agreeing to Ken. “Fane is really good at

employing bodyguards, I'll give him that. All of them are so pretty. I don't think he's employing bodyguards... I think he's getting his hands on women!" "My thoughts exactly," snapped Ken. "This womanizer! Selena loves him so much, but he might've had secret affairs with these women since long ago. That irks me so much! And here I am, holding Selena so dear to me and treats her so well. I don't even mind that she's married and has a child. How dare she ignore me! This is so frustrating!" … Orchid's keen eyes noted the group of people walking toward them from afar, and she saw the unmistakable look of malice in their eyes. "Master, see those people there? They seem to be coming our way!" "There are only a dozen people, so I'll leave them to you guys." With his child, Kylie in his arms, he gently spoke, "Kylie, turn your head away, don't look forward now. You might be frightened of what'll happen next. It might get brutal." The last thing Fane expected was for Kylie's defiant, "No!" She then pouted. "I want to see how the pretty sisters fight the bad guys. I want to beat bad guys up when I'm older, too! I'll beat anyone who bullies Mommy and Daddy!" "This girl…" At a loss of words for a good while, he felt a warm sensation going through the fibers of his being. "Alright. Since you're brave enough, you can look." Turning to his bodyguards, Fane then ordered, "If they make a move, you fight back, but don't kill anybody so you don't scare Kylie. Just give them a beating they'll never forget!" "Yes, Master!" Orchid and the group nodded. The gangsters acted nonchalant—somewhat unsuspicious—as they came closer, but they instantaneously reacted once they came close enough to Fane and his company. "Beat them!" yelled one of the people with dyed-blonde hair, and everyone else rushed toward Fane not a moment later. All four beautiful female bodyguards encompassed Fane and his family defensively. They attacked at the same time. Slam! Bang! Pow! In just a blink of an eye, the gangsters dropped like flies as they moaned and writhed in pain.

Chapter 714

“How’s that possible? There are a dozen of them! Hasn’t it only been a few seconds? Every single one has fallen!” Ken’s jaws nearly dropped to the ground when he saw the turn of events, at how the gangsters were defeated so fast. “Didn’t you say that the people you employed were reliable, Ken? Look: We failed to even test that guy’s true power. He hadn’t even done anything, and all our people had already fallen!” The expression Flynn was wearing was equatable to unadulterated fury as his chest heaved. “This is an accident, Flynn. This is definitely an accident! I never thought these girls would be so skilled!” Ken smiled sheepishly. He could only watch as Fane swiftly walked away and left in their car. “These female bodyguards aren’t vases!” said Flynn after he composed himself from his thoughts. “Since you’re afraid that Fane would recognize the bodyguards you normally have with you, my only remaining choice is to call and get the masters from the White family.” Ken nodded after he thought about it. “Agreed. Make the call, and make sure you get several good ones. However, it’s best if you don’t tell your parents about what happened to your leg for the time being. I’m afraid that they’ll be so angry that they’ll go after Fane the moment they knew what had actually happened. If that happens, we won’t be able to see Fane dying painfully during Selena’s birthday party!” Flynn nodded and agreed to it. “Right. We can’t let this guy die so easily!” … “Hubby, do you know who those people are? Why are they after us?” Although those people were no rivals of their bodyguards, Selena was still worried. Their family was exposed for all eyes to see while the enemy hid behind shadows. It was difficult to hide from these people if they were constantly ambushed! Behind the wheels, Fane frowned. “I really don’t know about this. There’s a possibility that it’s Ivan. I did beat him up, after all. Michael must hate me too, so there’s that. Of course, it seems that it might be Ken and Young Master Hugo. Apart from that, I also offended the so-called Green Sky Hall and ended their businesses that earned money. It could be them…” Then, Fane’s eyes brightened as he exclaimed, “Oh, yes! Young Master Gold from the Gold family also lost something last night. If he’s narrow-minded, it

might be him!” Selena was speechless; it only occurred to her how many people Fane had offended without her knowing it. Guessing the perpetrator’s identity would be a difficult task indeed. Mulling over her thoughts for a moment, a thought then stood out among the rest as she exclaimed, “Oh my god! Could it be that the Xenos family from the Sky Dragon City had come for us? Didn’t you say that the Xenos family is very powerful? I heard that they’re almost like the Drake family. We’re in so much trouble if it’s them” Selena was even worried as she continued, frowning as she did, “This is really bad. How are you able to offend so many people? Dear me... What should we do? If it’s people from the Xenos family, then—” Noting that his wife’s nerves were frazzled, Fane quickly assured her, “Honey, don’t worry. I can assure you that it’s not people from the Xenos family. They’re a strong family, so they would’ve come with a group of strong bodyguards. I’ve killed the master’s son, so isn’t it right that the patriarch comes forward?” Fane then added, “Those people are just gangsters, and the Xenos people wouldn’t come with these people if they wanted revenge. Those gangsters seem to be from our Middle Province!” Hearing her husband’s explanation, Selena relaxed as she petted her chest and muttered, “Oh, thank goodness… It’s best if it’s not the Xenos family. We’re lucky that all ten bodyguards that you’ve employed are quite good. I’d say that people with subpar skills won’t break a sweat for our bodyguards.” “Yes! The pretty sisters are so strong! It’d be so good if I can be as good as them when I grow up!” chirped Kylie as she giddily clapped with her delicate hands. “Haha! Don’t worry! A child with clever and intelligent parents will grow up to be just like them. Kylie, you’ll be an extremely strong person when you grow up. If not, you’re not worthy of being my daughter!”

Chapter 715

Fane chuckled aloud right after that. “What are you talking about?” Selena, who was beside him, lightly pinched at his thigh and rolled her eyes at him.

“I don’t want my daughter to be a brawny girl when she grows up!” “With how Kylie’s looking, she won’t be such a burly girl!” said Fane with a grin on his face. “However, we still need to teach her the skills she has to learn so she could protect herself. What’ll happen if she crosses paths with bad people and she can’t defend herself? Look at my daughter: She’ll be a stunner once she grows up!” Selena nodded in agreement. “That’s right. After all, she’s my daughter!” …. Not longer after, Fane brought his wife and daughter to the aquarium. They enjoyed a happy afternoon together and went home at around night time. The following few days seemed normal. However, 20 days to Selena’s birthday, something did happen. As he was driving home, he was stopped on the road. Several people in black suits came down from the car in front of him, and they menacingly rubbed their knuckles as they came closer. Fane got down from his car afterward. “We’ll get him this time, Flynn. The people here this time are the stronger bodyguards from your family. It’s been ten days since Fane drank the poison, so this guy’s body must be extremely weak right now. I do wonder if he notices the condition of his body!” In a car not far away, Ken looked over where Fane was, and a small smile appeared on his face. “Haha! I must admit I feel giddy when I think of how we’ll hurt this guy later!” Flynn seemed just as excited as he had been waiting for this day for a long time now. “That’s for sure. Two of the people I asked to come today are team leaders for our bodyguards. I think their fighting prowess can almost rival that of a major…” Meanwhile… “Who sent you guys?” Fane stood by the roadside and searched for a slightly spacious place. A group of seven to eight men had already surrounded him. “Haha! You’re not qualified to know that, young man! We won’t tell you either!” One of the men smiled coldly as he twisted his head side to side, cracking his neck. “Really? Well, let me tell you all something: You’re all out of luck because my daughter isn’t here today.” came Fane’s reply, nonchalant like the smile on his face. “What does your daughter’s presence have to do with us? The order we received is to beat you up until you can’t move!” said the man opposite Fane before

cackling aloud. “If my daughter’s not here, the only option left for you is to die!” Fane smiled coldly. He stepped forward and made the first attack.

Chapter 716

“Haha! You’re rather boastful, young man!” One of the bodyguards cackled sinisterly. He balled his fist and swung it, aiming for Fane when he saw him rushing toward them. Boom! The fists from both men collided against each other, and the powerful force set off waves of gusts. Such a force sent the man flying. Huff! The man vomited blood and was in disbelief; he never thought that the man before him could conjure such power. Fane’s energy exceeded his that it was the strength of a falling mountain. Thump! The man fell to the ground as blood oozed out of his mouth. His face immediately turned extremely pale. Slam! Fane took no breaks as he gave a sharp punch to another man’s neck. The unmistakable sound of something snapping could be heard, and the man fell lifelessly onto the floor. Bang! Bang! Bang! A few more punches later, several masters died on the spot. “I—Impossible!” The face of the man on the ground turned pale after seeing how the tides had turned. Every companion of his was a master, yet they were massacred so easily. “Argh!” Another man—one with skills on par with a major—was also killed by Fane easily in just two seconds. “You’re the last one. Do you believe me now?” Fane smirked sardonically at the man on the floor as he walked toward him. Fane took out a cigarette and lit it up when he reached that person. He smoked for a short while before asking, “Speak up. Who sent you people?” “I… I don’t know!” The man gritted his teeth and was afraid. By instinct, the man turned to look at the BMW car parked not too far away on the opposite road. Somewhat stunned, Fane followed this person’s line of sight and looked over. “F*ck! What’s that fool looking over here for?!” Ken was immediately afraid when he saw the bodyguard looking over. He immediately started the car, stepped on the petrol and left. At this moment, both he and Flynn were downright petrified. Those were the best fighters among all the bodyguards in the White family.

Among them, two were more-than-ordinary fighters. It never occurred to both Ken and Flynn that Fane could slay them so easily. Fane laughed at the speed of the perpetrators leaving. “Haha! They left so fast! What cowards!” With Fane’s attention different, a flash of fierceness appeared in the eyes of the man lying on the ground. Pulling a dagger out, the man rushed toward Fane and aimed the dagger at Fane’s abdomen. Whoosh! Of course, Fane was much faster. With a flip of his hand, Fane caught his hand and stabbed the knife into the startled man’s chest. Shink!

Chapter 717

When Fane loosened his hand, the man fell straight to the floor, his eyes still wide open in fright. “Quite the bunch of suicidal people.” Smirking callously, Fane went back to his car and swiftly left the scene. This time, he obviously had to show these people some consequences as it was difficult for him to live life in peace if they constantly interfered with his life. … Ken drove far away, still worried when he noted Fane was not trailing after them. He could only get a breather once they reached the Clark family mansion. “Was I imagining things, Flynn? There are people with the fighting powers of majors among the masters from the White family, yet Fane… Fane killed them so easily?!” Gulping nervously, Ken wiped the cold sweat on his forehead. Flynn frowned and was quiet for some time before he spoke, “What’s going on? Why do I feel like that guy isn’t poisoned? Could Ivan and Xena have fooled us?” Ken clenched his fists when he heard what Flynn had said. “F*ck. Now that you’ve mentioned it, I’m starting to wonder if we were played by that woman, Xena. If Fane was poisoned, he wouldn’t have been so powerful. More importantly, Fane has killed masters that were on par with majors of an army. Didn’t he say he’s a head commander in the army? Was he performing extraordinarily? That’s impossible!” “This man is no major, that’s for sure. He kept hiding his true strength, but I think he’s a marshal!” As he thought about it, Flynn then asserted, “It’s almost impossible for him to be a King of War. After all, there are very few people

who are Kings of War, and they're very well-known. I think he's a marshal. There are quite a number of marshals, and it's quite normal for him to not be well-known!" "If Fane really is a marshal, why does this guy want to hide his identity?" wondered Ken. "How would I know?!" Flynn was just as blank and clueless as to why Fane would hide his true strength or identity. A thought then occurred to him as his eyes lit up. "I get it! Some people might have the fighting strength of a marshal, and while he could've been a marshal, he might've made a mistake and was thus demoted!" Ken nodded. "That makes sense. He might be lying when he said he lost his token and that he's just a normal soldier. He might've had a title but was demoted to a normal soldier after he made a mistake. He must've felt embarrassed if he mentioned this, or he might even get scolded by his wife or mother-in-law, thus he decided to better keep it a secret." "Hmm... That must be it!" The more Flynn thought about it, the more possibilities were presented. He thought about it some more before he turned to Ken and said, "What should we do now then?" Ken thought about it and said, "I'll go meet Ivan and Xena first. We're asking Young Master Hugo to join us too. We'll tell them about what happened today and see what they say. After all, we might be able to come up with a good plan when everyone's together." Ken asked someone to carry Flynn back into the house before driving to the hospital with his subordinates. He also asked Young Master Hugo to come over as well. "Why are the two of you here? Haha! I've recovered, and I'm getting ready to be discharged!" said a grinning Ivan as Ken and Neil approached him. "Did Xena tell you that I'm getting discharged? Are you guys picking me up so we can go celebrate over a meal?" "I'm not sure. Young Master Clark called me and asked me here, saying that there's something important to discuss." Neil looked at Ken in doubt. Ivan's grin fell at that moment as he had a bad feeling. "What is it? Did something happen?" Ken looked at Xena meaningfully before he spoke to Ivan, "Let's go and find a place where we can all sit down. I'll explain to you guys while we're eating." Xena

frowned as she was uncomfortable at how Ken looked at her. It made her feel like she was a spy.

Chapter 718

Not long after, Ken brought the group to a hotel, had a private room and ordered some dishes. Once they had finished ordering, Ken looked at Xena and asked, “Miss Xena, are you sure Fane drank the poison we gave you?” Xena was startled at the question and looked somewhat uncertain before she replied, “Yes, I saw him drink it with my own eyes. I even passed him the mineral water myself. I saw him drink half a bottle in one go and threw the remaining into the dumpster.” “You didn’t remember wrongly, no?” Ken asked again, still in doubt of what had actually gone down. “Of course not. I remember everything clearly! He definitely drank it,” came Xena’s defense. “Why? Young Master Clark, what’s going on? Are you suspecting that I’m lying?” A thought occurred to Xena, and her expression immediately turned cold. “I risked my life and worked undercover for you guys. Do you know how nervous I was? I was so afraid that Fane would catch onto what I was doing, and I could only take a breather when I saw him drinking water from that mineral bottle. How dare you suspect I’m lying!” Ivan turned to Ken and said, “Young Master Clark, what happened exactly? Why would you ask Xena this? She doesn’t need to lie to us, even if she didn’t succeed.” It was only then when Ken said, “It’s been more than a dozen days since Fane took the poison, right? The poison would’ve taken effect after ten days, and we’re all waiting for him to die painfully during Selena’s birthday. However, I’ve sent two different groups of people out to get him. I wanted to test how his body was faring, and I wanted to exact vengeance.” Ivan and Young Master Taylor looked at each other, somewhat excited when they heard this. “How was it? It isn’t possible that his body has no symptoms, right?” fretted Xena. Ken took a deep breath and stated, “I think he’s not poisoned. The first time I sent people after him, nothing much happened since he had his bodyguards with him. The second time, my

cousin, Flynn asked several masters from the White family over, and…" Ken halted for a good while before he anxiously remarked, "I think Fane's got fighting capabilities rivaling that of a marshal." "A marshal?" The faces of Ivan and the others darkened. If that was the case, it would be very difficult to get rid of Fane. "No wonder! It's no wonder the pretty bodyguard we hired previously was unable to kill this guy. He had been hiding his true strength!" Neil instantly blurted as he soon remembered something. "That's impossible. I don't think that's possible!" Ivan shook his head. "Why would he hide his true strength if he's a marshal? Why didn't he tell the Taylor family? If that's the case, the old master would definitely be pleased with that. More importantly, Fiona and the others would've accepted him happily the moment he came back from his time in the army!"

Chapter 719

Xena—who sat by the side—was deep in thought with a frown. It was not long until her eyes soon brightened up and she exclaimed, "I get it! This guy must've been afraid of Fiona, Ben, and the others spending his money! That must be it! I heard that majors come back with a billion bucks as a reward from the government when they retire. If this guy's a marshal, he might have a few billion with him, right?" Ivan also immediately nodded. "That's right, that's right. This one's plausible. This guy might've wanted to hide the fact that he has a lot of money." Ken, on the other hand, wore a tight smile on his face. "You guys are definitely imagining things. If Fane has several billion, I'll write my name wrongly." "If that's the case and you don't think so, what do you think the reason is, Young Master Clark? Apart from being a marshal himself, I can't think of any other reason for his unwillingness for Fiona, Ben, and the others to spend his money!" Xena confidently folded her arms across her chest; she believed she was right. Ken smiled indifferently and commented, "I went through the idea with my cousin before, and we both feel that Fane couldn't present the token despite claiming he's a head commander. He's no head commander, that's for sure.

He’s definitely not some team leader; he has to be just some regular, run-off-the-mill soldier.” “Haha!” Xen cackled, followed by her rebuttal, “How’s that possible? Didn’t you say it yourself that Fane’s fighting ability is somewhat like a marshal’s? How can he be a normal soldier? Aren’t you contradicting your own words? You’re getting off-track here!” “Yes, his fighting power was almost like a marshal’s. Even if he’s not a marshal, he must be considered one of the strongest among the majors!” Ken smiled indifferently and commented, “What does it mean if he’s so powerful but is just a normal soldier? It means that he must’ve done something wrong during his time in the army, and he couldn’t keep his title.” Ivan finally understood what Ken’s train of thoughts was soon after. “Haha! I get it now! He’d surely be scolded by Fiona and the others if he says that he has a title of either a marshal, or a major, or a head commander but couldn’t keep it. Moreover, it’d be rather shameful if others heard about this, right?” Finally, Xena and Neil also caught on. It seemed that Fane was ashamed to tell this to the others, so he kept his actual strength and the true situation a secret. Neil soon remembered something and said, “Hey, if Fane used to be some head commander or major, would the country still reward him now that he’s a veteran?” “The country will,” came Ken’s reply. “I heard someone talking about this before. After all, people who were once majors still made huge contributions to the country. The country wouldn’t abandon people like Fane who was in the army for five years, and they’d surely give these people a reward or two.” Ken paused before he added, “However, for people like Fane who’s made mistakes and were demoted to a normal soldier, the rewards might go from one billion to two or three hundred million. If the rewards were originally two to three billion, it might’ve been reduced to five billion. The money would’ve been decreased by quite a lot.” As they talked among themselves, Xena then recalled something. “If Fane really was a marshal like the estimation of Young Master Clark, doesn’t that mean he has around five to six billion now?” It was as though she was hit with a Eureka moment; as though she had seen through everything. “No wonder…

It’s no wonder that guy could claim he’s going to host a huge city-stirring birthday party for Selena. This guy had to have a few billion with him right now; four to five billion at least!”

Chapter 720

“That makes so much sense! No wonder this guy dared to boast about hosting Selena’s birthday grandly. He’s confident because he has the means to do so!” came Ivan’s reply as he, too, saw the clearer picture. “F*ck... Fane had been so low-profile that we thought he only had several million with him. It genuinely didn’t occur to me he’d have four to five billion. If he really had that much, it should be enough to spend around one to two billion on the party!” “Damn it! I was waiting to see him clowning himself. Well, isn’t that just great! We probably won’t get to see him failing miserably like we had thought. At this rate, he can host a grand birthday party after all!” fumed Neil. He poured himself some wine and downed it in one go. “Come, the dishes have been served. Let’s chat while we drink.” Just like that, Ivan’s mood turned sour as well. “I’m even angrier at the fact that we’ve spent several million to advertise the party for them, in hopes that everyone would turn up to see him embarrass himself silly.” Like Ivan, Ken also poured himself a big glass of wine and drank it in one go. “Suddenly, everything falls into place for him,” he hissed, “while we’ve wasted so much money. F*ck! What did we get out of spending such a big amount of money? He can easily go ahead and carry out such a lavish birthday party. Didn’t we help him out and cut his costs? We’ve cut off several million for him!” “Tch! I even borrowed some money from my friends and said that I’ll pay him back. I borrowed that money just to help fund the ads for this jerk!” Neil sighed and was helpless. His father had strict control over him and was afraid that he would cause trouble, thus Neil’s pocket money was reduced monthly. “It’s not entirely useless. We still played him!” Ivan laughed and drank a mouthful of wine slowly before he added, “Regardless, he has no idea that he’s been poisoned. So what if the party stirs up the city? Isn’t

everyone there to see his funeral? To see how he dies? Haha!" "Young Master Taylor, we're unhappy that we've spent money to advertise for him, but we're more concerned that he's not poisoned! That'll be a huge trouble!" Ken was downright worried as he eyed Xena warily. "That's why I rushed to ask Miss Xena if she really saw Fane drink the poison!" Angered by the implication, Xena's hand instinctively raised as she snapped, "Young Master Clark, how many times do I need to say this before you believe me? I, Xena Jackson, swear to the skies. If I didn't see Fane drink the poison with my own eyes, I'll get struck by lightning!" Ken had no other choice than to believe that Xena did not lie to them when he heard what she said. "Alright, we believe you." Ken was quiet for some time before he spoke, "I was just very anxious, worried that Fane had bribed you and that you pretended to be with Young Master Taylor so that you can get intel about us. Seems like that's not the case and all is fine." "How… How dare you doubt me like that?!" Xena's chest heaved in anger when she heard this. She looked at Ken angrily and exploded, "I'm truly in love with Ivan. Don't make assumptions all the time! I'll get very angry if you say that again!"

Chapter 721

"Xena's got a point, Young Master Clark. You're overthinking it." Ivan's facial expression darkened, just like Xena's. Ken offered a small, wary smile before he explained, "I'm only doing things for everyone's sake. After all, it's not easy to deal with Fane. We used to think that he was good in martial arts because he was enlisted in military service for five years. How could we have known that he hid his power, the prowess like that of a marshal's?" At that moment, Xena recalled something. "I remember something," she began. "I remember Quil Xenos asked a marshal to fight with Fane, though Fane eventually killed him. I heard that this marshal was Magnus Sutherland's apprentice who got his title because of Magnus's influences in the army. Fane said it then that this guy didn't have the power of a marshal, and that he was lucky to have won over this marshal." Xena then surmised,

“With this new information, that might not be the case. Even if the marshal was slightly weaker, his capability in fighting shouldn’t be that far off from any other marshal. Fane is definitely a marshal if he’s able to kill that person. Goodness… That guy tricked me into believing his words!” “This guy hid his true strength well!” Neil exclaimed. “Let’s recall everything we can confirm. Firstly, Fane has about four to five hundred million bucks with him, and that’s enough for him to host a city-stirring birthday party in Middle Province. We’ve wasted money to do free advertisements for him. “Secondly, Fane’s strength can be equated to a marshal’s, though he must’ve lost his title due to some unknown reason, so he hid his true identity and strength. “Thirdly, we can rest assured he’s consumed the poison. Somehow, the poison doesn’t seem to have an obvious effect on him, and he’s still astonishingly strong!” concluded Ken as he eyed everyone in the room. “Alright, tell me now: What should we do next?” “You guys told us that the poison would take some time to take effect, so it might be normal for us to not see the effect now, right?” started Ivan as he offered his analysis. “The later days will be the most crucial period, and Fane would be physically tortured by then. His body will rot and he’ll die in pain. It might be normal for his fighting ability to still be at its best if you test his condition right now.” Ken assessed what Ivan had said and nodded in agreement. “It seems that we should stop employing people to test him. Otherwise, we’ll have a repeat of what happened today. We not only lost several people in the fight, but he nearly found me out. It was really not worth it. Let’s just wait patiently for Fane to die during Selena’s birthday.” Neil also nodded in agreement. “Agreed. He’s poisoned and is a dying man. We don’t need to beat him up to vent our frustrations. After all, if he’s still strong, we’d only suffer a huge loss. Let’s also not forget his guy is really good at planning out things, and you’ve said it yourself that his bodyguards are quite strong. Let’s just patiently wait for another twenty days.” Xena sipped her red wine, and her lips curled up into a smirk. “I used to think that this guy is a useless son-in-law, but I never thought he’d be so smart and play us like fiddles.

Lucky for us, he had drunk the poison. Otherwise, we'd never take him down even with all of us combined." "Oh, right. I almost forgot something! Haha!" Ivan soon remembered something and his eyes lit up. Guffawing, he boasted, "Even if Fane has the money to give Selena a city-stirring birthday party, he'll bring nothing but shame to himself!"

Chapter 722

"Bring nothing but shame to himself? What are you talking about? He can host an extravagant birthday party if he has the money, right? Why will it be shameful for him?" Both Ken and Neil were stunned at Ivan's sudden burst of confidence. Ivan laughed heartily before he replied, "It's because one of my cousins is getting married. Do you guys know Cecilia? She's getting married to the Gold family's young master. Nevermind the other details, but Cecilia is holding her wedding dinner on the same day as Selena's birthday party. One is a wedding, the other is a mere birthday party. Which one do you think Old Master Taylor and members of the Taylor family will attend?" Ivan cackled again, and his eyes gleamed with pure satisfaction. "I really like Cecilia. Haha! She's obviously doing this to Selena on purpose!" "Pro move!" chortled Ken as he clapped gleefully. "Haha! Now that we've helped Fane with the ads, the entire city is aware of the birthday party. He'll be in so much shame if so many seats are prepared for the party but no one is attending!" "Oh yes, this cousin of yours is really amazing! She didn't choose any other day but insisted to choose the same day as Selena's party! That's really amazing!" beamed Neil, a huge grin on his face as he did. "Even if Fane changes the date now, he can't escape the people's mockery. After all, it's not good to change dates for something as important as a birthday party. It doesn't help him that the party has been advertised all over the place!" Ivan laughed again, elated at how the tables had turned. "I rang up Cecilia after I heard what happened, just to get the entire story. She told me that Fane was really stubborn and refused to change the dates. He insisted on having the party on the same day as Cecilia's

wedding. This guy is asking for it! Serves him right." "Serves him right, indeed. He'll suffer if he insists on saving his face. If he eventually decides to shift their party to two days early, people from the Taylor family might be there. If that's the case, he wouldn't be in such an embarrassing situation. The Taylors will definitely attend Cecilia's wedding instead of Selena's birthday party at this rate. It's hard for them to not feel embarrassed!" Xena giggled, obviously pleased as well. "Haha! Not moving the party to earlier dates is a good thing. If he doesn't do that, how can we see the moment when he succumbs to the poison at the party? Am I not right?" Neil laughed and raised his wine glass. "It's decided then. We'll sit back and wait to see how Fane will die twenty days from now." "Alright! Cheers!" Ken and the others stood up and had an early celebration. … The next morning, Fane went to work at the Drake family's residence as usual. Meanwhile... A man appeared in the Eagle Clan's operating base and came toward Lee with a smile on his face. "Chief, great news! I've retrieved good information!" Pleased with this, Lee replied, "Really? Did you find information that the people from Green Sky Hall are still secretly taking photos of others?" The man nodded. "Not only did they secretly take photos, but they even sold those photos to some websites and made deals with a mysterious power overseas without anyone knowing. Apart from that, we have news that they'll trade at City God Temple, located on the outskirts of Seven Dragons' Mountain. That temple is already in ruins, and they often trade there." Downright elated with this, Lee went to the masters and hosted a discussion among themselves. In the afternoon, at the Drake family's residence… "Hey, Fane," greeted Tanya. "It's been a long time since we played billiards. Come play with us. Do you know how?" Tanya smiled and glanced at Fane. This guy grew increasingly handsome the more she looked at him. She had no idea why, but she noticed she grew giddy whenever he came to work.

Chapter 723

“Billiards? I’ve never played that, but if Miss Tanya wants to go out and play, I’ll follow you. After all, I’m your bodyguard.” Fane smiled, at ease when he noted the time—two in the afternoon—and Sharon was nowhere in sight. It appeared Sharon finally understood and conceded from trying to win him over. Although what he said during the previous meal they had was slightly overboard, the aftereffect was worth it. At the very least, this girl stopped pestering him. As he was about to leave in a car with Tanya and Yvonne, something unexpected happened. A sports car followed by several Audis entered the grounds and was parked not far away from where they were. “Hey, Tanya! Are you guys heading out? It seems like I’ve made it just in time. You would’ve been long gone if I came a little later!” There was a small yet sweet smile on Sharon’s face. She looked like a fashionista with her sunglasses on, and her black hair was styled into big wavy curls. Fane was dumbfounded when Sharon made her appearance. It seemed that his way of blatantly rejecting her and cozying up with Selena did not work. Before all this, Sharon was not even familiar with both Tanya and Yvonne and seldom kept in touch, but Sharon had been coming over a little too often. If it was not for him, what was it for? Even the Drake family bodyguards were discussing this in private; all of them wished that they were Fane. They wondered if Fane was a dumb guy as he turned down the persuasion of such a pretty woman. “Yes, you’re right on time. It seems like you’ve gone for a hair-do this morning, no? This hairstyle looks good!” Tanya smiled and said to Sharon, “We’re going to play billiards. How about that? Do you want to come with us?” “Billiards? That sounds good!” Sharon giggled. “Although I’m not very good at it, I play it all the time. Let’s go!” Sharon did not even exit her car and chirped, “Lead the way!” Her eyes then shifted to Fane, then to the empty passenger seat beside her. “Fane, you don’t have to drive; there’s not enough space for everyone. Come, I’ll be your driver just this once.” Tanya and Yvonne glanced at each other after they heard this, and they had to stifle their giggles. “Alright. Since Miss Sharon doesn’t dislike me, I’ll take up your offer graciously.” Fane smiled bitterly. Since she made

the invitation, it seemed too abrupt to reject her. Apart from that, would it not seem too cowardly if he did not even sit next to her? Sharon was inwardly happy when she saw Fane agreeing to her suggestion. Once Fane got in, Sharon tailed after Tanya and Yvonne's car that left first. "Fane, does… Does my hairstyle look good?" Sharon could not help it. She had to ask him as she glanced at him from the corner of her eyes. At a loss of words, Fane merely answered, "It looks good." "That's great. Nothing is more important than you feeling that it looks good!" At that moment, Sharon felt butterflies in her stomach.

Chapter 724

Not long after, several cars were parked outside of a lavish-looking mall. "Wait downstairs. We'll be upstairs for some entertainment, so you guys can find a place and enjoy some milk tea if you want." Sharon gave her bodyguards several hundred bucks and added, "Fane is here, so it should be fine for us to go upstairs and play billiards for a while." "Alright! Thank you, Miss Sharon!" The bodyguards received the money respectfully and left happily. As they walked, Fane inspected the area and said, "This place looks quite high-end. Playing billiards here must be quite expensive." "I've been here several times, and the billiards hall upstairs is quite nice. They have all sorts of drinks and dessert for free, though the fee here is based on per entry. It's a hundred bucks per person, no matter how many hours you play here." Tanya smiled and added, "There's four of us here, so it's four hundred bucks." Fane nodded. "If that's the case, then we'll have to play a little longer. It'd be a waste of that much money if we don't." Fane's comment made Yvonne roll her eyes at Fane. "We're not asking you to pay. You're here to company us, so we're going to pay. Apart from that, it's only several hundred bucks. How's that expensive? Didn't you just receive twenty thousand bucks worth of salary?" "But this is how it's calculated!" Fane offered a smile, but the sight of a person not far away soured his grin. "Isn't that Young Master Drake?" Tanya looked and was slightly surprised.

Her expression darkened. “Big brother!” She had gotten wind that her brother recently meddled with people from the Turner family and was progressively gambling with billiards. Not only did he lose money, but he even went looking for prostitutes with these people. If this continued, he would be damaged like those people. Meanwhile… “F*ck, I’ve lost again!” snapped Timothy. “Haha! Be patient and take it slow, Young Master Drake. Your skills have gotten better! Didn’t I lose the last game to you?” The man with a cue stick that stood opposite Timothy laughed and added, “Apart from that, ten million per round is still affordable to you, right Young Master Drake?” Timothy pulled his collar and said, “Ten million is nothing; I can afford that. That’s a small amount of money to me!” He walked over, took a bottle of beverage and started drinking. After he had large gulps, he growled, “Of course, it’s only natural that I’m unhappy since I’ve lost a game that I almost won. We’ve played ten games today, and I’ve only won two. I’m furious!” The man chuckled and reminded Timothy, “It’s been ten games. We make the payment once every ten games. As I’ve won six games more, that’d be sixty million, Young Master Drake!” The corners of Timothy’s mouth slightly twitched before he took out his cellphone. “Don’t you worry, I’ll transfer the money to you now!” “Are we still playing?”

Chapter 725

The man opposite Timothy asked him if their game was still up for another round after he received the money. Seemingly delirious, Timothy vehemently replied, “Of course! Let’s do another ten more games. I’m not satisfied until I win more games than you!” At that moment, someone else noted Tanya and her company entering the billiards hall. “Hey, we’ve got a few angels coming this way!” One of the men standing beside the billiards table could not hide his grin. Timothy instantly turned to see Tanya and the rest, and he murmured, “Tanya? Why is she here? She walks around with this bodyguard all day long, too. Tch! The old master and the rest think that this guy is, at the very least, a King of War. Less to be known, he’s admitted

that he's only a head commander with no token. I really don't understand why they pay him such a high salary as a bodyguard!" The man playing billiard beside Timothy was a young master from a third-class aristocratic family. His name was Leo Turner and was great friends with Michael Wilson. He could not help but smile when he heard this and went right next to Timothy. "Young Master Drake, there's a simple solution. He's just a bodyguard, and we only need to think of a way to play him. Ask him for a game with me, and see how I can punish him!" Timothy chuckled and replied, "It'd be great if you could do that!" "Hey, isn't this Miss Tanya? Oh, and Miss Sharon is also here? That's quite rare!" Leo immediately moved forward to greet Tanya and the group when he saw them coming in. Tanya did not respond to him kindly as she eyed him icily. "So you're the one who's been bringing my brother to fool around?" she sneered. "What are you talking about, Miss Tanya? What do you mean by fooling around?" Leo looked at the three beautiful women in front of him with a smile on his face, and he discreetly swallowed his saliva. These three ladies were the object of obsession for many rich young masters at the moment. People would surely envy him if he managed to marry one of them. This went especially for Miss Tanya and Miss Sharon; they had high ranks after all. If he managed to marry them, he would be marrying above his status. Although Yvonne was only Tanya's cousin, her figure was even sexier. This alone was enough to cause men go crazy over her. "Hah! You guys aren't working, and that's fooling around in my book!" Unbothered to even entertain the man, she turned to Timothy and asserted, "You should avoid going to shady places with these people. It's fine to play some billiards games, but don't gamble with others if you can't contest. I heard that you've lost quite some money recently." Timothy smiled coldly when he heard this. "Oh my, Tanya. You're meddling things that aren't of your concern. I know Father pampers you and that you're well received by the people of the Drake family. Now that your power grows, you want to control your big brother's affairs?" It was plain to see Timothy resented Tanya for being favored by

James, their father. He had changed after being with the young master of the third-class aristocratic family—Leo Turner—for a long time. “Timothy, what are you talking about? You’re my brother. How can I not butt in now that you’re fooling around with these people and have been gambling more and more on billiards? I’m only reminding you of better things. Don’t you know that trifling destroys the will?” Tanya was seething. She felt that the brother before her had changed into another person in just a month’s time. Unable to hold back her frustration, she snapped, “Don’t think that I don’t know anything. You constantly visit those so-called entertainment places, and they’re unorthodox ones with these kinds of people. My friends saw this with their own eyes and told me this. They’ve seen you there more than once! I’ll tell Father if you continue down this road!” “Haha! Are you threatening me?” Timothy chuckled mockingly. “Which rich person now doesn’t like to play? Also, how dare you say that it’s an unorthodox place? I went for massages at regular places. Don’t throw accusations blindly without providing concrete proof!”

Chapter 726

At that moment, Timothy looked slovenly, as though he had not groomed himself in ages. He looked like a good-for-nothing at first glance—nothing close to how he used to look like. Disappointment weighed Tanya down, seeing her brother like this. Her brother had been mingling with the young men before him, all from third-class aristocratic families or wealthy families. Now, after one or two months, it felt as though he was a completely different person. Sharon noticed that the siblings were getting worked up. She immediately stepped forward and plastered a smile onto her face as she spoke, “Don’t bother about him, Tanya. Men have their own ways of relieving stress. Let’s play billiards instead. Aren’t you pretty good at it? Let’s play one round!” “All right then!” Tanya tamped down on the anger building inside her, trying to console herself. Maybe she was overthinking this—maybe her brother was not the man she thought he was. Maybe he was

just indulging himself in some fun. Maybe he was not like the others. “Tch. What a lovely sister you have!” “Right? Must be nice having a little sister looking after the big brother. Tch tch. Maybe she’ll be the one to ‘look after’ the Drake family in the future!” The person accompanying Leo also began to curve his lips into a cruel smile. “Hey, you. You play billiards?” At this moment, Leo placed the cue stick to the side and asked Fane. Fane looked around him before finally pointing at himself. “Are you asking me, sir?” he asked. “That’s right. You’re that good-for-nothing son-in-law from the Taylor family, right? You really had gold falling onto your lap, being able to marry a beauty like Selena Taylor. That sort of luck would make anyone jealous!” Leo took out a cigarette and lit it, sticking it into his mouth. “Sure, I'm jealous,” he said, expression scornful, “but I have to say that it’s like trying to stick a bunch of fresh flowers onto a pile of cow sh*t.” “Hah. Really? Nothing I can do about it though. I had pretty good luck, I suppose. I’ve always had pretty good luck!” Fane was not offended by his words. Instead, he smiled and shrugged his shoulders. However, Sharon was rendered unhappy in a flash when she heard this. How could she not get mad, when someone straight up slandered her idol? Her expression immediately darkened. “Leo, right? What are you talking about? You have no idea how magnificent of a man Fane is,” she said. “You’re not even worthy of polishing his shoes if you were to pit yourself against him. Do you know that? And a bunch of fresh flowers stuck onto a pile of cow sh*t? He and his wife are a match made in heaven. I even think Selena is the one who can’t match up to him!” “Hah. Seems like this son-in-law is being held in very high esteem by Miss George!” Leo grinned when he heard this, apparently not angry. “I’ve always heard that the young miss of the George family has had her eyes set on this good-for-nothing. I thought that it wasn’t true. Who knew that it was!” Another man ducked his head and rubbed his nose. “Ah. I really never thought that a young heiress to a first-class aristocratic family would actually fall in love with a married man,” he mumbled. “Doesn’t she feel ashamed? It won’t do good for the George

family’s reputation if word of this got out!” “Heh. What does this have to do with you? Whoever I like has nothing to do with you! Besides, can any of you match up to his brilliance?”

Chapter 727

Sharon was extremely furious. However, the moment she remembered that Fane was right beside her, she forced herself to maintain the image of a well-behaved lady. She suppressed the rage within her and debated with the other man. Fane could only give a wan smile before these clowns. “So you’re called Leo? Why did you ask me if I could play billiards, Young Master Leo?” he asked. “I don’t know how to play. After all, I was just a delivery boy before I was enlisted into the military!” “Heh. I thought so. After all, to us, military people are just reckless fools. Naturally, you wouldn’t know of such a game of gentleman nature, since all you know is how to fight and kill!” Leo chuckled, his expression disdainful. “I even thought of asking you to play a few rounds against me if you knew how to,” he said. “But it seems that I'm destined for disappointment. I’ll just play with Young Master Drake!” “It’s true that I don’t know how to play. But I’ve watched a few rounds earlier. It doesn’t seem too hard. You just have to aim for the white ball and make sure you pocket another ball with it, right?” Fane said after he thought for a while. “Pfft!” Quite a few of the men could not help but giggle when they heard this. “You’re putting it way too easily, mister. This is a game of skill. Why would it be that easy? It requires technique to get the strength and angle right. Besides, did you really think that the game would be over after you pocket the balls belonging to you? And there are rules to billiards. This game we’re playing is called ‘snooker’. You’ve never heard of it, have you? Hah, playing against you? Forget about it!” A man just straight up burst into laughter. “Don’t speak such nonsense, Fane. A game like this isn’t that easy. People who don’t play it often can’t master it as well as those who have. Besides, I’ve played this for two years, but my skill is a far cry from that of my brother’s, Leo’s, and the others!” Tanya

tugged on Fane's sleeve as she chided him. It was obvious that he knew nothing, from the way he spoke of it as though it was an easy game. If word got out about this, he would definitely be taken as the joke of the century by people who frequently played billiards. "But we can't just allow ourselves to be underestimated like that!" Fane gave a bitter smile. Then he said to Tanya, "Why don't you explain all the rules to me first? Teach me the techniques to play this game. Then I'll have a little contest with this scoundrel." When they heard this, Tanya, Yvonne, and Sharon were all stunned speechless, to the point that they wanted to spew blood. This punk did not know the rules, and he still wanted to play against Leo? It was practically a throwaway match! "Woah, woah, woah. Did you guys hear that? You heard that, right? This p*nk doesn't even know the rules of the game. He doesn't know which balls to pocket first, and which balls that follow after. And yet he wants a match against me?" Leo immediately felt that it was funny when he heard those words. His friends also began to laugh. Another young master from a wealthy family told Fane, "Let me tell you this, punk. Our Young Master Leo here can pocket 70 to 80 points in one sitting when he's in good form. He's even been dubbed as the 'Prince of Billiards'. Very few here can match up against him. You've never played before, and you want to play against him? Are you kidding me?" When he heard this, Fane turned toward Timothy. "If you put it that way, are you saying that Young Master Drake is an idiot as well? After all, Leo is the Prince of Billiards, but Young Master Drake still dared to play against him. Isn't it obvious that he's playing a losing game?" "You…" Young Master Drake was extremely angry. That stupid punk—was daring enough to call him an idiot! His expression instantly hardened. "The f*ck are you talking about, Fane?" he said. "You're the bodyguard of the Drake family. It also means that I'm your master. And you dare to say something like that to me? Aren't you afraid of getting fired?"

Chapter 728

He had thought that Fane would be scared to death when he said something like that. After all, he was a bodyguard who was paid 20 million bucks a month. It was probably the only job in the entire Middle Province that paid that much. Who knew how many people would clamor after it? He would not have spared this punk's reputation if his father and the others did not suspect that there was something more to Fane—that this brat was hiding his true identity. After all, this punk raked in such a huge salary, yet he seemed not to care about his family, coming whenever he liked and leaving whenever he pleased. More importantly, his father and his sister were pleased with him. Furthermore, during Old Man Taylor's seventieth birthday party, this punk claimed that he had lost his badge. Would a King of War use such a tactic to hide his identity? Everyone thought that he was a marshal. Even then, it might not be true. "Heh. I'm not scared of words like that. Did you really think I wanted to be a bodyguard for your family? If your family didn't help mine, and if you hadn't helped my wife to find a job, I would have had zero interest to be a bodyguard for your family!" Fane chuckled. "Besides, it was Miss Tanya who gave me the job," he said nonchalantly. "You have no say in it!' "You…" Timothy was practically on fire. This punk actually dared to say something like that right in front of his friends. Fane did not care about embarrassing him at all. Leo tugged on Timothy, noticing that he was steaming from the ears. "Hey, why are you getting so worked up over a bodyguard when you're the young master of the Drake family?" he reminded the other man. "Who are you, and who is he? How can he ever compare to you!" Timothy dusted the sleeves of his shirt and straightened himself. "Well…" "Oh, right. Hey punk, you said that billiards is easy, right? Then why don't you play against me? Ten million bucks per round. What do you say? Since you're so gung-ho about it, do you dare to have a match against me? We always play ten million bucks per round. I have no interest in a wager smaller than that!" Leo's features were twisted into a goading expression as he spoke to Fane, "I think you should just forget about it, a layman like you trying to play a gentleman's game

such as this." "Heh. Why not? But I'm not interested in a wager of ten million bucks per round. If we play, let's play big. One billion per round. And let's play ten rounds. Do you dare to do it?" No one expected Fane to retort after he heard that, chuckling. Leo had just wanted to stir Fane into a fury. He never thought that he would actually accept the bet—and not only that, he even proposed to raise the wager to one billion bucks per round. "Are you nuts, Fane?" Shock jolted up Tanya's spine. "You can't just agree to that even if you're betting on your pride!" she protested. "You've never played billiards before. How are you going to beat him?" "Yeah. One billion bucks per round is too much. If you're not convinced of that, then just take it down to ten million bucks per round. You'll still get a chance to play against him!" Yvonne also chimed in to advise him, "Besides, it's obvious that he wants to get a rise out of you. Can't you see that?" "That's right. Don't agree with that, Fane. Don't bet with him!" Sharon said as well. Yet Fane did not care about their protests at all. "What do you say?" he said to Leo. "Are you daring enough to play with one billion on the table?" Leo replied, smiling, "Are you serious, p*nk? Sure thing. Hah. But I truly suspect that you have that much cash on you right now." "Don't worry about me. Just worry about yourself. If I can't pay up at the end, I'll just chop my hand off and offer it to you. How about that?" Fane said, smiling coldly. Although he did not play this game before, he had been observing it from a distance a while ago. He felt that it was not too difficult. The only thing was that he did not know the rules of the game. "Sure thing. But you still don't know the rules. How about this? Young Master Drake and I will put on a free show for you. You just stand at the side and watch us play. We'll explain the game as we go along. How about that?"

Chapter 729

Leo smiled as he spoke to Fane. "Okay. You better be sure of this. I won't let you off if you can't fork out that much money by the end of all this!" Fane agreed, nodding his head. Leo smirked instead. "Hah. I've won quite

a lot lately. I have at least 5 billion in my credit balance now. I don't believe that you'll beat me more than five times in ten games!" "Anyway, if you want to win more than five games in ten rounds, you have to win at least eight and lose two. If you win seven and lose three, then you'll only get four billion bucks!" Another man grinned. "Furthermore, it's practically impossible for someone like you to win, seeing as how you've never played this in your entire life." Sharon thought about it, then she clenched her teeth and stood up. "Fane, you can't just chop off your arm if you can't afford to pay. If you can't pay up, I'll help you pay!" Fane was slightly touched when he heard that. He would be losing ten billion bucks if he lost ten games in a row. It was an enormous sum of money. He never thought that Sharon would put herself forward and offer to pay for him. "Have you thought about it?" Fane looked straight at her and asked. "Of course. Don't worry. Fortunately, the George family is a first-class aristocratic family. We can afford to lose ten billion bucks!" Sharon replied confidently. "But it's ten billion bucks. Aren't you afraid that your parents would scold you?" Fane felt speechless. "Of course not. Besides, Papa and Mama like you a lot. They really want you as their son-in-law!" As Sharon spoke, her cheeks grew redder. She could not help but duck her head out of embarrassment. "Tsk tsk. But of course, a lovelorn woman is not a logical one!" Timothy gave a frosty smile. "But now that Young Mistress George is standing up and offering to take the bill for this punk, Young Master Turner won't have to worry about not getting his money any longer. His hand is of no use anyway, am I right?" "Hah. Of course. Ten billion bucks is worth so much more than a hand from this p*nk!" Leo guffawed, then he started the game. "Look closely, p*nk. It's called a break-off shot." The two explained everything to Fane as they played, and Fane watched them very intently—how to control the opponent's play, how to position the ball, among other things. Leo and Timothy quickly finished their game. Timothy emerged victorious, and he had won by quite a big margin. "F*ck. It's a shame that we're not placing bets on this round and just putting on a show for him!" After he won,

Timothy felt unsatisfied. “Heh. Young Master Drake, can’t you tell that you’ve been played?” Yet Fane chuckled coldly. “You won this round when there were no bets on the table. But in reality, it was Young Master Turner who had gone easy on you. It’s a pity that you’re so stupid that you couldn’t tell!”

Chapter 730

“What are you talking about, punk? Heh. How could I just go easy on someone when it’s about billiards?” Leo was immediately agitated when he heard Fane’s words, shooting a glare toward him. “The f*ck you talking about? Won’t I be able to tell if he was going easy on me?” Timothy also spoke in a huff, “I’m a pretty good player!” Yet Fane replied with a mirthless smile, “It’s precisely because he went easy on you that you can’t tell. His angle was off ever so slightly on purpose when he struck the ball, and pretended he almost pocketed a ball. He only needed to go easy once or twice during a game to allow you to win. Besides, you said it yourself—you’re a pretty good player!” Here, Fane paused for a while before continuing in a leisurely tone, “Furthermore, I think you’ve thought about why he would go easy on you, Young Master Drake. Would you still play with him if he never went easy on you, and if you kept losing ten rounds out of ten games? Of course, he would need to let you win a few rounds to let you savor the happiness of winning a bet! But it’s obvious that overall, you lose more than you win. Let’s say that you lose more than one billion bucks today, he’ll probably let you win 20 million bucks the next day. Haha!” Timothy’s expression darkened when he heard that. It was because he realized that whatever Fane said was true. Furthermore, Fane had never seen them play billiards before. However, even after he had carefully thought about it, he still could not see how Leo had gone easy on him. “What sh*t are you talking about! It’s just my bad luck that I lost more, that’s all. Sometimes I’m really just slightly off my game!” Naturally, Timothy did not want to admit that he was a worse player compared than Leo. It was

because he felt that he was already pretty skilled at the game, and was almost on par with Leo. If Leo truly went easy on him quite frequently, did that not mean that his friend was far, far stronger than him? He would rather believe in Leo and the others than to lose face in this matter. Besides, Fane had no evidence to support his claims. He was just being ostentatious. It was possible that Fane was just trying to draw a rift between them, and so he said something like that. “That’s right. It’s natural to win some and lose some when playing billiards, punk. We’re good friends with Young Master Timothy. How can we just do something like that to him?” Leo also spoke up immediately. After he said that, he was afraid that Fane would see right through his ruse, so he quickly changed the topic, “Cut the crap, punk. Are we still playing? We’ll play one billion bucks per round for ten rounds. And you can’t just give up halfway. For example, you can’t say that you want to withdraw after you lose one round. Withdrawing means that you automatically give up on the remaining nine rounds, and you’ll still have to pay me ten billion bucks. Got it?” “It–it’s so obvious that you’re bullying Fane because he’s new at this!” Sharon was so angry that she stamped her foot against the ground. Leo was really a b*stard. They were putting a bet of ten billion bucks—ten whole billion bucks. It was not just a regular sum of money for a third-class aristocratic family. “Hah. I’m bullying him? The f*ck are you talking about? I had proposed to play ten million bucks per round before. It’s this son-in-law from the Taylor’s who claimed that ten million was too little, raising it to one billion. Honestly, I’ve never placed such a big bet before either. It’ll definitely be exciting!” Leo laughed and told Sharon. Fane walked over straightaway and chose a cue stick. Then he walked toward Leo. “You’ve never placed such a big bet before? Then I hope that you won’t be so frightened by the numbers that you can’t be in your best form later—so scared that your hands begin to shake!” “Pfft!” The men in the area began to snigger. It was the first time that this punk was playing. He had just watched them play one round of billiards and had just gotten to know the rules. This was even his first time holding a billiard cue,

and he actually dared to say something like that to the Prince of Billiards. “Should you break, or will I have the honors?” Leo smiled and asked Fane. “You go ahead first. We’ll take turns breaking!” Fane answered after he thought about it.

Chapter 731

“Very well then!” The corners of Leo’s mouth curled upward. In the next second, the cue ball was struck with a great force that sent the red balls scattering around the billiard table. However, unfortunately, none of the balls went into either of the pockets. “Hah, Young Master Leo, seems like lady luck is not on your side!” Fane could not help but giggle at the play. “Now, my turn! The position of the white cue ball is strategic, and several red balls are near to the pockets!” “Yup. The white cue ball is in good position, but for a newbie like you, I don’t even have to plot a defense. Haha! I scattered the balls just so I can beat you in a flash later on!” Leo laughed. Timothy flashed a wan smile at the situation as well. He sneered, “It seems simple. But when he can’t pocket any ball, he will know what makes a good billiard player!” Thud! Once the last syllable of the word dropped, Fane mimicked Leo’s earlier posture and lay on his tummy on the edge of the billiard table. His posture seemed professional and in the next moment he struck out the cue ball with the cue stick, hitting a red ball. “It’s pocketed!” Sharon’s eyes widened as though she saw a ghost, and in the next second, she jumped like a kangaroo, celebrating for the pocketed ball. “Oh my goodness! It went in! Fane actually scored points in his first play! So freaking amazing!” “Wow! The ball is pocketed and the strike was pretty accurate too!” Tanya was puzzled at the scene before her. This brat’s posture was pretty professional, too. If he had not asked so many questions during the play between Timothy and Leo, Tanya would not have thought that Fane was a novice in billiards. His gestures were definitely close to the ones of experts. “What’s the use of only pocketing one ball? There’re so many balls yet to be pocketed, and now it’s time to hit the colored balls. Arms crossed

before Yvonne's chest, she whined. She felt worried for Fane, after all, it was her first time witnessing a billiard game with a one billion bet per round. The crowd from the other nearby tables stopped whatever they were doing and switched their focus toward Fane's table. After all, a bet of one billion per round was something else. "I initially planned to make the white ball stop at this position so that I can aim for seven points. But I couldn't manage the strength well when I struck it out, and the white ball stopped at another position. Hmmm. It's better for me to aim for six points then, especially for someone who had just started to learn how to play billiard. Seven points is too risky!" Fane murmured to himself as he studied the positions of the balls on the table. "Heh! This punk can really act like a pro, huh? Planning for the positions of the balls and aiming seven points? I think he just struck the cue ball randomly and bullsh*t!" One guy from Leo's group sneered aloud. At this time, Fane lay on his stomach again, getting ready for the next strike. After adjusting his cue stick, he flung his arm and struck the white cue ball. In a jiffy, a ball was pocketed and another six points went to Fane. "What the f*ck? Another one? Although this is an easy one because it was in a straight line, as a newbie of billiard, how can he score so easily? The smile on Leo's face that was arrogant and brazen previously, had slowly morphed into a dry and bitter one. Worries and concerns gnawed inside him slightly. Was this punk pretending to be a newbie at this game? His preparation posture and the way he struck out the cue stick, all seemed too professionals.

Chapter 732

"He pocketed another ball? Oh my!" Tanya was jumping excitedly that her feet barely touched the ground. If the first score was due to luck then what about this time? Fane not only pocketed a six-pointer, but the cue ball stopped at a very strategic position where there were several easy red balls that could be pocketed with ease. "It looks like Fane really knows how to plan the position of the cue ball!" Sharon could barely conceal her excitement that her heavy breathing made her chest rose and fall repeatedly.

The boss of the place approached the group. He helped Fane to take out the ball that helped score the six-pointer from the pocket, set it nicely, and then smiled at Fane, “Young man, if this is your first time playing billiards, then you have learned it well. You’ll surely improve immensely after one or two days playing it!” Fane flashed an indifferent smile in return. “Don’t worry, I’ve studied their play just now and I basically know how to hit and where to position the balls. As long as the aim is accurate and the strength is controlled well, it’ll be like shooting a gun. I was at master level in shooting when I was serving in the military!” The crowd was at loss for words. How could this brat compare playing billiard to shooting guns? “Stop spewing nonsense! Keep playing then. I don’t believe you’ll win the game!” Leo tried his best to convince himself that this punk was like a blind cat who stumbled upon a dead rat—sheer luck. There were so many balls on the table yet to be pocketed anyway and each of them was in an excellent position however a minor mistake might just cost Fane his marks. As long as Fane made a mistake later, he would be able to come back in this game. Furthermore, Fane, this punk was really bright. He actually saw through his ruse—he went easy on Timothy and lost the game on purpose. After all, they did not place any bet on that game but was merely using it to explain the rules to Fane. Moreover, he had won a lot of money from Timothy today. He just had to bring Timothy to some night club tonight and spent a couple hundred thousand on him to make him happy again. He not only won the money but at the same time also established a good relationship with Timothy. One stone killed two birds, why not? The few billion in his credit balance were all from Young Master Drake these past few months or so. He would let Timothy win a few rounds occasionally, just to give him a sweet taste of winning. Thud! Just when he was swimming in his thoughts, Fane pocketed another red ball, at the same time positioned the white cue ball into a very strategic spot. He could strike for a seven-pointer. Concerns reared up within Leo as he noticed that Fane was aiming for the seven-pointer. He kept his panic in check and convinced himself that Fane was just a newbie,

he would not score this round! Thud! Nevertheless, the scene before him had made him tongue-tied. Another seven points went to Fane's scoreboard. The strike was fast yet precise. "Young Master Leo, do you think this punk is playing dumb about billiard? How could all these postures and striking techniques belong to a newbie?" A guy who had been playing with Leo and the others all the while, came forward and voiced out his concerns to Leo. "I don't think he's pretending. If he played it before, there's no need to ask about the rules, right? Isn't that act unnecessary?" Leo's forehead snapped together, not believing Fane was pretentious. However, what made him speechless even more was that Fane had pocketed several balls in a row. The red balls on the table became fewer and fewer, and Fane's marks on the scoreboard were increasing each time. Thud! Finally, a seven-pointer did not enter the pocket. Fane frowned at it, his face sunk, looking a little upset like a four-year-old boy. "Damn, what a pity!" Tanya breathed out a deep sigh at Fane's last strike. Sharon, on the other hand, switched her attention to the scoreboard and jumped excitedly. "Look, Tanya! Look at the points! Fane scored eighty points. He had actually scored a freaking eighty points in one go! This means that he has already won this round, and Leo has lost even if he finished off all the balls on the table!"

Chapter 733

"You're right!" Only then did the realization hit Tanya. Even if Leo pocketed all the remaining balls on the table, the highest score would only be sixty-seven, as the total point was only one hundred and forty-seven. And now Fane had scored more than half, did this not smell like victory? "I...I won this round?" Fane's face went blank and confused, then he opened his mouth, "But...but aren't there a few more balls on the table?" "You… I'm speechless. The highest score that one can get is only 147 because the total point is only 147. You already scored 80 out of it. So, even if Leo finished off all the balls on the table, it's impossible for him to score more than you!" Yvonne explained patiently. "Hehe! Sounds about right!" Joy dawned on

Fane then he looked at Leo. “Now, Young Master Leo, it’s your turn!” At this point in time, Leo almost wetted his pants, sheens of cold sweat appeared on his forehead. This punk scored 80 points in one go. Even if he hit all the balls into the pockets, he had already lost! “My turn your *ss! You win this round!” Leo’s fury sprang to life that he practically yelled at the owner of the place, “Boss, reset the game! We’re going for the next round!” The owner immediately went up and set up the balls. He shot Fane a thumbs up as he finished setting up the game. “Young man, amazing play! You’re a genius among geniuses! Before the games, I studied you and realized that you are indeed a newbie. The posture is not particularly correct, and you took several seconds to adjust the cue stick for a better angle. Besides, there are hints of hesitation in your eyes sometimes, but at the later part of the game, you became better and better.” The owner’s high praise toward Fane was like a sharp needle, piercing through Leo and the others’ eardrums. They could feel a flicker of irritation thrumming through their veins. Timothy prayed that Fane would lose the game too, and it would be even more delightful for him to see Fane lose one billion. Even if Sharon offered to pay, Fane would still owe her a great favor—one that could not be repaid easily. Never did he expect that Fane would win the first round. Leo shot Fane an icy-cold glare and barked, “I shouldn't have scattered the balls in the last game. I guess I’ve underestimated you and that’s why you scored. This time, I won’t go easy on you.” “Hehe!” Fane let out an adorable chuckle, flung the cue stick, and struck the white cue ball. The white cue ball touched the red ball lightly and it spread out a little from its original position. The white cue ball on the other hand, bounced back and halted behind a two-pointer ball. “Snooker!” The crowd exclaimed aloud, rubbed their eyes, trying to see clearly the current position of the white cue ball. The white ball happened to be blocked by the two-pointer yellow ball, which made it impossible for Leo to hit the red ball directly. “Sheer luck! Must be sheer luck!” “This doesn’t look like it’s merely sheer luck. The position of the white cue ball is just perfect!” “Jesus Christ, Fane is good!” Sharon was

bursting with joy that she did her little happy dance. The sight of Sharon's bouncing chest when she did her little dance had made the crowds' Adam-apples move up and down. The sight before them was just so phenomenal! Everyone was excited and elated for the show except for Leo. His face twisted and several veins popped out in his neck. He thought that since Fane was a beginner, he would not know how to serve the first strike and scatter the balls on the table, then he would be able to pocket the remaining balls easily and take down this round. The scene before him was truly out of his expectation. Now there was no chance for him to hit the red ball directly from where the white cue ball was at. He had to study and analyze the angle so that the white cue ball would hit the edge of the billiard table and bounce toward the direction of the red ball. Thud! Leo was truly a good player; his billiard skill was not bad at all. He managed to find an accurate angle for the white cue ball to hit the red ball. However, he had also spread out the red ball further than before, leaving Fane an excellent stance to score!

Chapter 734

"Sigh!" When his brain registered that the balls were widely scattered, his heart sank. He let out a heavy sigh and felt an ominous premonition appear in his heart. "Thank you so much, Young Master Leo!" An indifferent smile was hanging on Fane's face as he walked over. Leo wheeled, looked at his friend who was standing behind him, and commanded, "Bring me a bottle of mineral water! It's so f*cking warm here. Dammit!" The young man's forehead puckered, he could easily sense that panic was surging through Leo. When it was a one billion bet per game and one tiny mistake would cost a billion bucks, who would not be in a swivet? After all, the Turner family was merely a third-class family and they did not own many properties and assets. If Leo continued to lose today, his five billion bucks credit balance would not be able to pay up the loss. The young man quickly grabbed a bottle of water and tossed it to Leo. Leo twisted it open and gulped it down. Thud! Thud! In the meantime, Fane had pocketed several balls one

after another and had scored more than 15 points. “Oh my God! Good moves and great positions! Fane has hope to win this round again!” Sharon did her happy leap and exclaimed. From the current situation, she saw hopes of Fane winning another round. “Ughh, so annoying! Can you keep your voice down? This is a public area!” He shot Sharon a dreadful stare. Leo’s sensory system was so sensitive right now that Sharon’s voice sounded like a screeching tone emitting from a violin played by a terrible violinist. “Hehe, what’s the matter, Young Master Leo? Don’t tell me your pants are wet right now? I think you can’t afford to lose such an amount, right? Not only Sharon did not raise her voice after hearing Leo’s complaint, but she enjoyed the view before her—Leo was agitated. She then continued, “What’s wrong? Oh ya, where did that brazen attitude of yours 30 minutes ago went to? Why did it disappear so soon?” “Shut the f*ck up! Ughh!” Thud! Another ball was pocketed, and Leo’s expression grew darker and darker. Not long after, the scoreboards showed ‘Fane–79 points’. “Hmmm…I think I won again? Only these few colored balls are left. Young Master Leo, do you want me to go easy on you? Otherwise, it’d be shameful for an expert like you to get zero points!” Fane did not continue the game instead he smiled at Leo and voiced out his concerns. The colors drained out of Leo’s face and the corners of his lips twitched as though he had a stroke. His hand frantically searched for the water bottle. He grabbed the bottle and took a big sip, only to find that the bottle was empty—he drank it all moments ago. “The second game is yours too!” Leo wiped off the cold sweat on his forehead and barked xenophobically toward Fane, “I quit! You’re a liar! You pretended to be a newbie when you’re actually a master! F*ck! I’m so damn unlucky today. Give me your account, I’ll transfer two billion bucks to you! I’m not playing with you anymore!” Leo had noticed that this brat, Fane was playing better and better. He improved way too fast, and his techniques and his skills in this round seemed to be better than the first round. The time taken to aim was shorter than before as well. Now, his strike was more precise and his control of power was finer. Leo, now, was truly frightened! “Haha!”

Chapter 735

Fane let out a loud chuckle in return upon hearing Leo's words. He smiled, "Sure, Young Master Leo, if you want to pull out now, that's okay too. But you have to transfer me ten billion rather than two billion, right?" Fane paused for a while and then continued, "Before the game, you'd clearly mentioned that we have to play ten rounds and can't just give up halfway. And if you want to withdraw right now, it means that you automatically give up on the remaining eight rounds. In that case, you have lost ten games!" Leo's mouth twitched slightly at Fane's reminder. He had indeed said all these rules before the game, but he had never thought that Fane would be so strong. The thought of him losing billiard to a newbie like Fane had never crossed his mind! He had already lost two billion. Even if his brain chose to continue playing, his heart would collapse before anything. "Stop spewing nonsense. I quit! Just give me your account number and I'll transfer you two billion bucks. Who asked you to lie about your skill and told us that you've never played it before. You've clearly played billiard before and is skilled at it!" Leo tightened his jaw and gritted his teeth. He denied whatever rules they set like a spoiled kid. Fane swung his arm with the billiard cue stick in his hand and pointed it at Leo. His head tilted slightly upward, with a cold tone, he said, "I didn't lie. I learned those techniques by myself when I was watching both of you played a moment ago. If you don't believe me, I can't help it too. But you have only two options now, one is to admit defeat and transfer me 10 billion bucks, and the second option is to finish the remaining eight rounds. In case you're fortunate, you might win one round, who knows right?" The corners of Leo's mouth vibrated again. This punk was totally insane. What did the punk say again? In case he was lucky, he might win one round? According to Fane's performance in the first two rounds, it was not hard to see that Fane was getting better and better in striking and aiming, which made Leo insecure about the outcome. He had a strong premonition of not winning any of the remaining rounds. "Hey, brat, don't press too

much, will ya? You're merely a bodyguard in the Drake family! If it weren't for Timothy or the Drake family, we'd have been greeting you with our fists!" There was one guy in the crowd who appeared to be a good friend of Leo. He immediately stepped forward and sneered at Fane angrily. "He's right! I played two rounds with you and promised to give you two billion. What else do you want? If it weren't for Young Master Timothy, we won't give you any penny not to mention two billion! And by then what can you do to us, huh?" Another took two-step forward, his tone was arrogant. Leo felt slightly calmer and a little bit more confident in his heart when he saw two of his friend speaking up for him. He snarled at Fane, "Brat, I'll give you two billion, tell me your account number if you want it. Otherwise, we're leaving to a bar to hang with Young Master Timothy since it's almost party time. At this time, Fane slid the cue stick in his hand and blocked them from continuing their pathway. "I'll not repeat it again. You will either continue to play with me or admit defeat and give me ten billion. It's as simple as that. But, if you dare to step out the compartment directly, you're digging your own grave!" "What the f*ck! You're only a stinky piece of sh*t who had just returned from the military. What right do you have to act snobbishly?" The first man that stood up for Leo had taken another step toward Fane and barked, "Get the f*ck out of my way!" "Stinky piece of sh*t?" This friend of Leo possessed the attitude that Fane hated the most—looking down upon the soldiers. They had sacrificed so much for Cathysia, for the people of Cathysia. Many of them had even given their lives to Cathysia and would never be able to return home. Now, this thug before him had actually insulted him and his comrades, and even despising them? Fane did not hesitate and flicked the cue stick and gave a head-on collision toward the opponent's arm. Fane did not seem to use too much strength, but the man felt as though his bones were about to be powdered; his face grimaced and cried in great pain. "Fane!" At this moment, Timothy shot up from his seat and reprimanded solemnly, "They're all friends of Leo, and Leo is my dear friend, which means they're my friends as well. Now, listen to me, what

has happened today in this center, let's forget it, not for Leo but for me. Leo will transfer you 2 billion bucks and you'll let us go. Do you hear me clear?" "Young Master Drake, I'd suggest that you to not involve yourself in today's matter. Before the game, they knew that I had not played billiard before and I am a newbie, hence, they kept on pressing, wanting to bully me and win my money!" Fane snarled coldly in return. "Besides, I wanted to avenge you. They've fooled you and taken so much money from you. So this time, I'm sorry that I'd not follow your order!" "Fane Woods, you're merely a bodyguard of the Drake family! I'm the Young Master of the Drake family! I'm your master!" Fury grew inside Timothy like a tumor. He was so angry that he raised his voice and yelled, "Starting on from today, you, Fane Woods, no longer work for the Drake family! You're fired!"

Chapter 736

"Brother, what bulls*t are you spewing? I'm the one who hired Fane; you have no right to dismiss his employment! Besides, how could you fire him without getting father's consent?" Tanya hissed angrily. She became a ball of pure anger the next second she heard Timothy's words. "Hmph! He's merely a bodyguard and I'm the Young Master. Do I need to ask for consent when I'm only firing a bodyguard? And don't you know his real identity? A head commander! He's only a head commander for God's sake! Do we have to kneel before him and kiss his *ss?" Timothy replied in an icy-cold tone. Tanya felt about to burst from the rage that she almost fainted. She never thought that this dear brother of hers would say such a statement. She stomped her foot and yelled, "No matter what you said, you can't decide this!" "Heh! Don't forget that I'm your brother and I'm the elder son in the Drake family!" Timothy chortled sinisterly and then added, "Who asked this dog to bark at the wrong person? I'm his master. And a dog that barks at his master, what's the point of keeping it? For him to bite me?" Fane, on the other hand, sneered frostily at the exchange. He spoke, "Haha! Right, since Young Master Drake has said it pretty clearly, there's nothing left to say. I

will not stay in this position for more humiliation. Perhaps there's a lot of people shaming me behind my back, saying things like 'Fane Woods is such a leech—leeching off the Drake family'." Fane halted for a second and then continued, "Hmmm. I'm not emotionally nor physically attached to the bodyguard position. And Miss Tanya has already paid me last month's salary, as for the salary for these few days, let's forget about it. Consider these few days of service as my gratitude to Miss Tanya. But today Young Master Leo has to pay me the 10 billion bucks, there's no turnaround. If he doesn't pay, he can't leave!" Once Leo heard what Timothy had announced regarding Fane's dismissal, his eyes lit up as though he saw light at the end of the tunnel. He then asked Timothy, "Young Master Drake, you've just fired him, right? He's no longer your bodyguard, isn't he? Since he's not one anymore, even if I have my people to beat him up, it won't affect our friendship, right?" Timothy nodded in reply, but he reminded, "Of course. He's not our bodyguard anymore, it's up to you now. But one thing I must say, this punk is pretty good, I don't think your bodyguards are his match!" "You dare?" Sharon immediately stepped up and barked angrily. "Even if he's no longer the bodyguard of the Drake family, there's still the George family! Don't forget the George family is not a force to be reckoned with! If you dare to touch a single strand of his, you're going against me, Sharon George!" "Oh, Miss George, are you now trying to play the superhero now? Why though? He not only has a wife, but I also heard that he is not interested in you at all! Is it worth it to sacrifice so much for a married man? Leo sneered at Sharon's protective demeanor toward Fane. His face became dark and dull. After all, Sharon was the only daughter of the George family—a first-class aristocratic family in the Middle Province. He was from a third-class family, hence naturally he did not want to offend her, and her treatment had successfully frightened him. "Why do you care? Even if I don't like him, he's still my friend, and I should help my friend!" Sharon nibbled on her bottom lip tightly as she gawped. She looked toward Fane for a second. "Miss Sharon, Thank you for your kind intention!" Fane was slightly moved

by Sharon's action, but he looked at Sharon with a solemn and firm face. "However, I, Fane Woods, don't like to owe favors to others, not to mention, this is my personal affair with Young Master Leo, and I don't like others to interfere. I'll handle this matter by myself. Thanks." "But…" Sharon felt a stab of disappointment inside her heart. Not only Fane called her 'Miss Sharon'—a formal name, but also mentioned that it was his own personal affair and that Sharon as an outsider should not interfere. This statement had clearly stated his intention with her—they were impossible to be together. This brat really did not give her any chance at all… "Hahahaha! Miss Sharon, listen to every single word clearly! Wake up! He doesn't want your help! He is giving you the cold shoulder, can't you sense that? He doesn't appreciate you at all, why do you still want to help him?" Leo clapped his hand excitedly when he heard what Fane had uttered. Now that the last roadblock was finally cleared, Leo was flabbergasted with joy. More than a dozen bodyguards who were waiting outside the center rushed into the place after hearing the exchange. "Young Master Leo, how can we serve you?" One of them immediately stepped forward, bowed before Leo with his hands clapped together, and said.

Chapter 737

"There's one ignorant brat here who clearly did not bring his brain today. I want to go home but he stopped me from doing so. You know what you should do next, right?" Leo jeered cold-heartedly and turned to Timothy. "Young Master Drake, don't worry about them. These bodyguards are not ordinary. They created a unique fighting technique called the Invincible Spinning Void Fist that nobody on this earth knows. Besides, all of them are seniors and juniors from the same place. They're powerful!" Timothy's heart leaped0 for joy and his hopes soared when he heard Leo's words. Leo was right! Although the Turner family was only a third-class family, it did not mean that there was no top-notch skilled fighter in their family. Some skilled combatants might have emotionally tied with someone they met

from a third-class family, and for this reason, perhaps, they were willing to work for them. Looking at Leo's self-confidence soaring high, Timothy finally thought that there were still hopes for the other party to teach Fane an unforgettable lesson. It would be best if they made him bedridden for weeks! "Hey! How dare you offend our young master? Are you sending yourself to hell?" A swamp of bodyguards immediately surrounded Fane. Bang! Pow! Wham! Unfortunately, those bodyguards fell to the ground as soon as they surrounded Fane. None of them were able to get back on their feet right now. Pain sheeted through them with a terrible intensity that caused all of them to wail in agony. Their faces morphed into one of the dead blanched faces. "What the…" Timothy, on the other hand, had his heart hammered in his chest that his face went white. These bodyguards from the Turner family did not seem to be reliable at all now. What Invincible Spinning Void Fist? It was nothing but a cotton candy fist to Fane—soft and useless. More than a dozen men used the same technique and yet none of them could touch the corner of Fane's clothes before plopping onto the ground. "If I don't see 10 billion transferred into my account, you'll have your last breath here!" A stoic yet terrifying smile plastered on Fane's face. He looked at Leo and added, "Oh ya. By the way, if some valuable furniture or things are damaged here, you should pay for it too. After all, you started the fight, and also because you refused to pay, right?" A sheen of cold sweat presented on Leo's forehead, his face turned paler and paler as Fane spoke. After he gave some thoughts to the matter, he finally opened his mouth, "Aren't there 8 more games? Let's go on then. Hmph! I wasn't at my best a moment ago. And perhaps I'll win the remaining 8 games and you'll be the one who owes me money!" "Haha! Alright then. In that case, I'll continue the game with you. I'd only played two rounds, after all. And I really quite like this game, it's fun!" Fane giggled upon hearing Leo's proposal. Every single word and tone from his mouth induced rage inside Leo. Leo was practically boiling with anger that he almost spew blood. What? Had this punk really never played billiards

before? What a joke! “C’mon, it’s my turn to start the game!” Leo wiped the cold sweat on his face and neck, and then strode toward the billiard table, carefully. Of course, everyone noticed that his hands were trembling slightly. He was already not Fane’s match in the first place, and now that he was nervous, he naturally could not perform well. Therefore, in the next eight games, he never won once. In only one game, he saw a glimmer of hope, but in the end, he failed to take down that round. “All right! Ten games are over, do you have anything to say now? Transfer ten billion bucks! This is my account number!” Fane took a pen and wrote his account number on a piece of paper swiftly and handed it to Leo. “But…but I only have five billion in my credit balance. Mr. Woods, my dear Mr. Woods, I’ll give you all five billion bucks, and we’ll call that a deal, is that okay?” Leo knew crystal clear in his heart that Fane was not a simple man. Such a strong person was not letting them leave, thus, he could only plead to Fane pathetically.

Chapter 738

“Fane, have you heard of the saying that goes, ‘Luckiest is he who knows just when to rise and go home’? “Five billion bucks is a lot on its own, and Young Master Turner doesn’t have any money on him anymore. Consider yourself lucky today, being able to wheedle five billion from him,” came Timothy’s response, though laced with arrogance as he gave Fane a crooked smile. Fane was already unsatisfied. With how condescending Timothy had just spoken to him, he offered a tight-lipped smile in return. “No. I know if the situation was different, that I was the one who lost, he wouldn’t have let me get away with a fraction less of ten billion. I’d like to point out that your negotiation skills are horrendous, too. “Young Master Turner was the one who made the bet with me anyway. How can you say that I'm just ‘wheedling’ money out of him? You can’t blame me if he has terrible coordination!” “Don’t overstep your boundaries, punk. This is the Turner family’s young master!” The bodyguards, though still in pain, rose to their

feet after they had been beaten. They were internally terrified of Fane's mere presence. Fane glared at one of the bodyguards, who was so scared that he staggered backward. "Like I care he's the young master of whatever family," he scoffed. "Don't think he can walk out of this place if he doesn't pay me in full… Even if it's just a buck short!" With clenched fists, Leo turned to Timothy, realizing that Fane was not letting him off the hook. "Young Master Drake, help me pay this five billion, why don't you?" Timothy found himself stuck without a proper response before he eventually replied, "Young Master Turner, you're asking for five billion, not fifty million. Even if you asked me to lend you five hundred million bucks, I would have to think carefully about it. Do you think I can lend five billion bucks to you just like that?" Helpless, Leo turned his anxious gaze toward Fane. "I don't have that much money," he blurted. "I only have five billion!" Fane chuckled, amused at the situation. "Heh! I'll make it simple for you: Give me five billion bucks and that stupid pig-head of yours. How about that?" His words terrified Leo, whose face was completely drained of color. Left with no other choice, Leo turned to one of the bodyguards with him and rambled, "Logan, go back and help me tell everyone of what's going on. My father will have to come up with a way to get five billion, or else, I'd die!" After he said that, Leo turned to Fane once again and said, "I'll have my bodyguard return to get my father and the money! It shouldn't be a problem, right?" Fane nodded his head. "Of course not!" As though undisturbed, he turned to his female companions. "Let's play billiards. It's pretty fun after all," offered Fane. "We'll play while we wait for his father, okay?" His words did not seem to sit well with Tanya. "Are you really thinking about quitting, Fane?" she asked, her gaze fixated on him. "Don't quit. Please don't hold a grudge against my brother. He's just saying stuff because he's angry!" Fane merely gave her a bitter smile. "Miss Tanya, I appreciate your sincerity, but I'm pretty sure that you know what kind of a person I am. I'll never repeat what I've said, and I do take everything seriously. I'm not one to fool around, and you know that. Besides, I'm not

quitting; your brother fired me." "Fine…" Tanya grumbled. Tanya knew that it was pointless to argue with him any further; he was firm in his belief. "Then promise me that we'll still be good friends," she gently pleaded. "That won't be a problem, right?" "Naturally not. We'll still be good friends even if I'm not a bodyguard of the Drake family!" Fane nodded. The four of them—including Tanya, Sharon, and Yvonne—played on two tables and started their own rounds of billiards. ... Meanwhile, the Turner family's master was drinking tea with a marshal he knew and was on good terms with. This marshal was from Sky Dragon City, and he was a distant relative of the Turner family. It so happened that he was their guest today. The peaceful atmosphere was shattered when Logan, a bodyguard, barged into the room, huffing and panting.

Chapter 739

"Master, something bad has happened!" heaved Logan in between pants. Master Turner's facial expression darkened as he glared at Logan. "What is it? You're really rude. Don't you know that you should go to the housekeeper? Don't you see that I have an important guest here?" "Uncle, what are you talking about? Who's the important guest? We're a family; this is too generous of you," spoke a young man opposite Master Turner as he sipped his tea, a small smile on his face as he did. Master Turner glanced at the bodyguard—Logan—and level-headedly prodded, "Speak up. What is it? Why do you need to come to me?" Logan replied. "It's not good, Master. Young… Young Master lost quite an amount of money playing billiards with some people!" "Lost money? How's that possible?" Master Turner was stunned. "Isn't he rather skilled at billiards and would win most of his games? Didn't he tell me two days ago that he won several hundred million? Why are you so surprised that he lost today?" Of course, Master Turner knew that his son frequented the billiard table and gambled there. He also knew that his son normally betted ten million per game with Young Master Drake. Even if his son lost, he should not have lost much because of

his skills. “Master, the young master wagered a huge bet this time! He betted ten games with someone, and it was a hundred million per game. He lost a total of one billion!” blurted Logan, his anxiety hung over him. “Young Master only has five hundred million with him and is half a billion short. He can’t leave, and that person said that if the young master can’t come up with the remaining five hundred million, he’ll kill him. Young Master had no other choice, so he asked me to come back and get the money!” “What?!” Master Turner instantly shot up from his seat, bewildered and in disbelief with what Logan had just told him. “He betted one hundred million a game with someone and lost all ten games? Are you joking?! He lost ten games with his skills? Also, what’s in his mind to have betted one hundred million a game with people?” One hundred million was quite a huge amount for the Turner family. They were a third-class aristocratic family and did not have much working capital, although they had many properties. Apart from that, he knew his son very well. His son would not bet on billiard games with others if he was not sure it would turn out in his favor. At the very least, he would not bet one hundred million on a game. Logan then offered his explanation as he spoke, “Master, I suspect that the other person made a fool out of our young master. That person said that he didn’t know how to play, and that it was his first time playing billiards. Young Master must’ve wanted to win his money, so he agitated that person to play with him. The person was pretentious and said that he wants to bet one hundred million for a game. Young Master was confident, so he agreed to it, but it wasn’t expected that the man would be exceptionally good at billiards. He said that he had already mastered it after looking at the young master and Young Master Drake playing one game. In the end, he won ten games continuously!” “Damn. How dare he tricked my son?!” Fabian Turner was extremely angry as he balled his fists tightly. “Right. Who’s this person? Is he rich and powerful? Someone willing to bet one hundred million a game must be a powerful man!” “Master, that person is just a bodyguard from the Drake family, and his name is Fane! Young Master Drake even spoke on the young

master’s behalf, but that guy didn’t even listen to him. Young Master Drake was so angry that he sacked this bodyguard on the spot!” came Logan’s reply, obviously angry as he spoke. “We wanted to escort our young master and leave that place, but we were not that guy’s opponent. He’s really good at fighting!”

Chapter 740

“How dare he trick my son?!” Furious, Fabian’s fists tightened. “No one dared to even intervene. He was the Drake family’s bodyguard, after all. How dare this guy still act so arrogantly after he’s been sacked by the Drake family!” Logan frowned and said, “This guy is out of his mind. He even disregarded Young Master Drake’s plea for the young master’s behalf. Young Master Drake asked Fane to give him face and just take five hundred million from our young master, but this idiot refused!” “Haha! So there’s such a person like this who doesn’t understand the world, huh?” The young man who sat with Fabian stood up. “Who’s this person? For a bodyguard, the man has quite a temper. Moreover, isn’t he afraid that the Drake family will deal with him now that he’s offended Young Master Drake?” With a bitter smile on his face, Fabian responded, “Oh you have no idea, my nephew. This guy is Fane Woods, the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family. He’s also a retired soldier like you, but it seems that he failed to obtain any title within these five years. He told everybody that he had a token but had lost it on the way back home, so there’s no proof. There are rumors that he’s just a head commander!” Logan then piped in, “Who knows if he really is a head commander. Everybody thinks that he wasn’t lying when he claimed to be that, as he’s quite skillful. Nonetheless, this guy really has very good medical skills as he had saved the Goddess of War Lana before. The Goddess of War had already repaid him, though. The reason he’s so crazy might be because he still thinks that the Goddess of War owes him her life, and nobody dares offend him because of that!” Fabian touched the tip of his nose. “This is so troublesome. We can’t kill

this guy since he's done quite the favor for the Goddess of War. What if she comes for us if anything happens to him?" The young man smiled coldly. "But we can't really pay him one billion, right? Wouldn't that make us cowardly in his eyes?" The man then fell into his thoughts before he offered, "I have an idea, Uncle. I'll follow you there, and we'll just pay him five hundred million. If he insists on getting paid a billion bucks, I'll show him who's boss and burst his bubble. He needs to understand that there are masters better than him!" Fabian's eyes lit up when he heard his suggestion; this was what he wanted. He wanted this relative of his to take action, but he was afraid his nephew—now an honorable marshal—would turn him down. It was music to Fabian's ears when his nephew mentioned it himself that he would tag along, without him begging. "Great! It's definitely wonderful to have you on our side." Fabian nodded, pleased at this. "I don't think the other bodyguards need to come with us as they'll be useless there." They soon left in their car—with Logan as the driver—and headed for the mall. ... "Why aren't they here yet?" Leo grew increasingly depressed when he observed Fane improving continuously as he played with his female companions. It was one whole billion. What could he do about it? He wondered if his father would be angry when he heard about his bet gone wrong. He felt that Fane had been lying to him since the beginning. Fane might have been a master at billiards but purposely acted as if he knew nothing. How could he have improved so quickly if that was not the case? Leo was lost in his anxiety and fretting when Fabian walked into the billiard hall with the marshal and their bodyguard, Logan. "Father, why… Why did you only bring two people here?" Leo's facial expression darkened when he saw his father coming over with only two people. It seemed that his father had compromised and paid Fane the money. He had hoped his father would put up a fight and bring more bodyguards to beat Fane up.

Chapter 741

Fabian scanned the room, and once he saw his son, he snapped, “Who’s Fane? How dare you keep my son from leaving?” Fane was unruffled when he saw the new company walking toward them as he potted another ball. He gently placed the cue stick on the table and said, “You’re the head of the Turner family, yes? Your son lost one billion in our game of billiards, and he only has half a billion with him. He’s lost the game and, well, losers need to pay. I won’t let him leave unless he comes up with the remaining money he owes me.” “Haha! Young man, don’t you think you’re going overboard for betting one hundred million a game?” Fabian had a condescending smirk on his face as he added, “Apart from that, you were the one who lied to my son that you didn’t know how to play billiards, and he wagered quite an impressive amount because of that. Are you sure you deserve one whole billion?” Fane merely shrugged. “Master Turner, I hope you can assess the situation before saying something. I didn’t lie to your son or trick him into playing with me; I really have just learnt how to play. Apart from that, your son was the one who wanted to win money from me, so he instigated the competition between us.” Fane paused before he added, “If he didn’t intend to win money from me, how could he possibly lost the game?” At this moment, the young man beside Fabian stepped forward and said, “Uncle, ignore this sharp-tongued guy. We should stop speaking with him. Let’s give him half a billion if he wants it so badly. We’ll still leave with Young Master Turner if he doesn’t want it.” Fabian nodded. “Hmm. You’ve got a point, Cadmus Sanders,” he spoke. “We can’t treat this person with such regards.” A surge of relief washed over Leo when he heard the young man’s name. “Brother Cadmus? You’re Brother Cadmus? Dear me! I didn’t recognize you as it’s been years since we last met. I heard that you joined the army and received an honorary title. You’re a marshal, right? When did you arrive?” Cadmus smiled. “It’s been a long time, Brother. I’ve just been at your house less than an hour ago and had no idea we’d meet under such circumstances.” He paused for a while before he assured, “Don’t you worry. Your Brother Cadmus is here, and it’s considered giving him face that we

give him half a billion. After all, we're not bullying him because we are stronger. He's delusional if he still wants a billion!" "A marshal!" chirped Fane with a smile after he heard this. "No wonder you're so confident. You're a marshal!" Timothy smiled at Cadmus and said, "I've no idea that Young Master Sanders is actually a marshal. I envy you for having this title at such a young age!" He glanced at Fane in disdain. "You're much better than a specific someone in this room. He's so arrogant as a head commander, and he offered me no shred of respect!" Cadmus was happy when he heard this. With a grin, he spoke to Timothy, "This must be Young Master Drake, the Drake family's eldest young master. You look very striking. Let's have some drinks once I settle the matter here." "Haha! Alright! I'll pay for our drinks. After all, this Middle Province, and I should show my hospitality as your host!" Timothy chuckled, obviously pleased. His father and sister spent so much money to cling onto Fane, though he was a mere head commander. Timothy believed he was the better one as he was establishing a connection with someone of better status; a marshal, much more reliable than Fane.

Chapter 742

Fabian liked what he heard from Timothy, and a pleased grin was plastered on his face as he said, "Young Master Drake, you're being too gracious. I should be the one to show you hospitality as thanks. I heard that you've fired this bodyguard for my son? How should I repay your kindness?" Fed up with how these men were acting, Fane snapped, "Who's hosting who later has nothing to do with me. You should transfer the promised one billion to me before I lose my patience." Cadmus was taken aback momentarily at Fane's boldness, but it soon disappeared as he smirked. "Young man, you're quite the talker. How dare you speak to us like that after you know that I'm a marshal?" Fane laughed haughtily. "Haha! Why should I be courteous to a marshal who can't tell right from wrong? And you're just a marshal. You're not worthy of me treating you courteously." "Dear me, you're

extremely hard-headed!" Cadmus balled his fists tightly and smirked. "If that's the case, let's see if your head is harder than my fists!" He immediately stepped forward and rushed toward Fane, his first aimed right at him. Fane's smirk dropped from his face when he saw the man charging right at him. Scoffing, Fane clenched his fists tightly and aimed one right for Cadmus. Cadmus was startled when Fane was not even attempting to dodge. 'He's not evading my attack?!' Of course, his surprise did not last long before his smirk returned. Cadmus was not backing down either as he continued to charge at Fane. Boom! Their fists collided against one another, and the sheer power that came from both fists emitted a powerful force that was audible for all to hear. "What?" Cadmus could feel the horrifying force behind Fane's punch as their fists met. With eyes and mouth wide open in surprise, the force sent him staggering backward a few steps before he could regain his footing. Everybody was surprised when they saw Fane standing there, still rooted, unmoved. On the other hand, Cadmus moved several steps backward after their impact. "Impossible!" Cadmus shook his head in disbelief. A mere head commander would not have such power. Not giving up, he charged once more toward Fane, almost using all his power this time. However, Fane also increased his power and once again caused Cadmus to move several steps backward. This time, Cadmus could not even stand as he fell straight to the floor. "How… How is this possible? Isn't he a head commander?!" Leo was stunned, with eyes and mouth widened like saucers. "Amazing…!" Sharon looked at Fane's figure with starry-eyes. "Hey!"

Chapter 743

Tanya, who stood at the sidelines, could only sigh. She, her father, and Spectre Face had seen how scary Fane was, and could be. After all, Fane had slain 300 people from the Eagle Clan on his own. It still sent shivers down her spine when she recalled what happened that one fateful night: She saw a master that only appeared in the novels. That was also the day she saw somebody killing their enemies without any hesitation. She was familiar

with Spectre Face's strength, and it was a huge difference when compared to Fane's. Her father had already reminded her brother to not offend Fane, that they should always be in his good books, but her brother had thoughtlessly fired Fane just a while ago. This was a huge loss for the Drake family. She really hoped that Fane would not hold a grudge because of this. "You… You're no head commander, not with that fighting power of yours! Who are you? What's your title?" Marshal Cadmus was the most surprised among all. He was very confident with his own strength, but Fane's power was stronger than his even when he used all his power to attack Fane. Cadmus did not want to use his ultimate skill. He had a feeling that this person in front of him was not someone he could win against. Fane shrugged his shoulders. "Who am I? Haha! I'm just a son-in-law married into the Taylor family. I'm just a stinky soldier like what Young Master Leo said, no? He only needed to pay me half a billion and apologize to me sincerely… But since he's called me a stinky soldier, well, that soured my mood!" Pausing momentarily, he then added with emphasis on every word, "Due to that, I won't accept any amount less than one billion!" Cadmus's facial expression darkened when he heard Fane's explanation. He turned around and looked at Leo coldly. "Brother, what did you say? A stinky soldier? We soldiers who sacrifice our lives for Cathysia are such lowly people in your eyes?" "Brother, I… I didn't mean you! You're a marshal! I meant Fane!" Leo immediately lowered his head and explained embarrassingly. Slap! Instead of going after Fane, Cadmus turned to smack Leo with all his might. "This slap is for all the soldiers who died on the battlefield. If you dare say such words of looking down at us veterans, don't blame me for being ruthless!" "Brother, I...I'm sorry!" Leo felt wronged. He raised his head and wanted to argue with Cadmus, but he immediately cowered when he saw Cadmus's terrifying expression. "Cadmus, why…" Fabian looked at Cadmus and was speechless. It did not matter that his son lost the games. His boy called Fane was a stinky soldier. It made sense to him now why this man refused to give Young Master Drake face and insisted on getting one

billion from his son! “Uncle, I can’t help you on this. It’s best if you guys settle it on your own.” Cadmus walked over to the other side, took out his cigarette, and started smoking by himself. He had gone through lots of life and death situations to achieve the title he had today, but not without the sight of many of his brothers dying in the hands of their enemies. It was because of this that he could not tolerate it if anyone called veterans ‘stinky and useless’ soldiers. In his opinion, the comfortable lives these people were enjoying had been exchanged by the blood of these soldiers. They could not be looked down on. The soldiers that have fallen in battle would be aggrieved had they heard such words from the living. Fabian was speechless. He could only smile at Fane and admit defeat. “Young Fane, what happened today is definitely my son’s mistake, and I apologize to you. However, one billion is too much, and we’re just a third-class aristocratic family. It’ll be a huge pressure for us to come up with one billion. Can we agree at the amount of eight hundred million?” Fane smiled coldly after he heard this. “I don’t want to repeat myself. One billion, not a penny less. If not, I will kill both you and your son. I believe that this Marshal Cadmus wouldn’t be able to stop me!” Everybody was once again surprised. Anyone inferior to the other would not claim such bold things, after all. The man in front of them was just a normal son-in-law who married into the wife’s family, right? Was he not just a head commander?

Chapter 744

Cadmus was standing right in front of Fane, yet Fane could boldly claim that he—a marshal—would not be able to stop him. If that was the case, he was really domineering. He would not have dared say something like this if he did not at least have the strength of a marshal or a King of War! “This…” Not wanting to pay Fane one billion, Fabian turned his gaze toward Cadmus. After all, what Fane had so boldly claimed was rather condescending for Cadmus. He had hoped Cadmus would get angry from Fane’s choice of words; Fabian believed Cadmus could win against Fane if he used

everything he got. However, Cadmus merely ignored him and turned his line of sight away. Tongue-tied, Fabian turned to his poor excuse of a son and snapped, “I’ll pay the five hundred million for you, but you have to pay the rest by yourself!” “Alright, father...” Leo had a bitter expression on his face and felt it was unfair for him to be in this situation. However, he could not do anything about the situation. After all, even a marshal failed to topple Fane. What else could he do? He immediately transferred the money to Fane’s bank account. He then told Fabian Fane’s account number and asked him to transfer the remaining amount. Fabian was utterly devastated when a huge amount of money left his bank account. The 500 million from Leo’s side were won from other games, so he did not feel much. However, this 500 million was from his own family. To a third-class aristocratic family, this money meant that they had to reduce their expenses for the time being. Finally, Fabian looked at Fane and asked. “Alright, Fane. Can we leave no?” “Sure.” Fane nodded. “Since you’ve paid the money, I have no need for you guys anymore.” Fabian waved his hand at Fane with a gloomy expression. “We’ll meet again.” He then turned around to address Timothy, Leo and their group of friends. “Young Master Drake, young masters, come with me. Allow me to host you, as you’re all friends of my son.” “Alright.” Despite his answer, Timothy had a darkened expression on his face. He eyed Fane for a good while before walking out with Fabian and the others. ... He was still in a trance when they exited the mall. Was Fane not a head commander? How was it possible that even Marshal Cadmus could not best him? Was it possible that his father’s assumption was right? Was he a King of War who did not want to expose his true identity? He began to regret his actions as he walked outside. If Fane truly was a King of War, firing Fane would surely anger his father.

Chapter 745

Unable to hold back his questions, Leo eventually asked, “Marshal Cadmus, is Fane really that strong, or did you choose to surrender? You must have

some really powerful boxing moves that you haven't used, right? "I don't believe you'd be defeated if you used your full force back there. The guy doesn't have anything but some measly strength, right?" "This person's strength is unpredictable. I'm not certain that I can win if I really fight with him." Cadmus glanced at the second floor, where the billiard hall was. He started smoking his cigarette again and added, "I get him, though. I understand his behavior and why he did it after cousin Leo spoke in such a degrading manner about soldiers and veterans!" "You! How dare you agree to a hundred million on each game? Why didn't you think about why he easily agrees to such a risky yet high-yielding gamble? Did you even think about the consequences if you lose the games?!" Fabian gritted his teeth and looked at his son in disappointment. Leo spoke in a defeated manner, "I did think about it. I thought that he was frightening me on purpose and thought that I wouldn't agree to his suggestion. Apart from that, I had no idea that I'd lose ten games consecutively. With my skills, it would've been difficult for him to even win five games from me. I thought the money I had was more than enough, but who would've thought…" "Nevermind. This guy is highly skilled and is someone we can't afford to offend. Let's just consider it a bad day for us." Fabian sighed and looked at Young Master Drake. "Young Master Drake, this bodyguard of yours is really strong," he spoke, and his surprise was laced with his words. "I never thought he'd be that frightening! However, I also didn't know that you'd be such a loyal person to your friends. You fired such a strong bodyguard for my son!" The corners of Timothy's mouth twitched. Why would he fire Fane if he knew how strong he was? Timothy could only force himself to smile at this situation. "Haha! What should I say... I'm an extremely loyal person to my friends, and I have a good relationship with Young Master Leo. How can I choose my bodyguard over him? Fane is very strong, but he still disrespected me and talked back at me. I have my fair share of distaste toward that man for quite some time now." In order to prove that what he said was correct, he even added, "Not only does he seldom come to work, but he's often late to

work, too! Apart from that, he's constantly with my sister and Yvonne, though he's much closer to my sister. Hmph! I think he's not working for work, if you know what I mean. He's there for my sister, I bet!" "Really? You need to be careful of people like this. Firing him is a good choice!" Leo immediately agreed to what they said. "Fane is a son-in-law who married into the Taylor family. How shameful is it for a man to marry into their wife's family? To me, he's just a weakling, and he's a married man too. How dare he go after Miss Tanya? Which part of him looks worthy of your sister?" "That's right, that's right!" said one of Leo's friends. "This guy is craving for something he can't get. Why doesn't he look at himself in the mirror? He's not worthy of being with your sister!" "Well, I don't know what to do about that. After all, my sister is a woman, and women like flirtatious men. Fane might've buttered her up, even. That would explain why she's so adamant in standing with Fane," came Timothy's reply. "Yes, this guy must be very flirtatious. Otherwise, why would Miss Sharon side with him too? I think that she had been blinded by him so she would fall for someone like that! He's just a dumb teenager, a reckless man!" Leo nodded. He had been extremely unhappy about this since the beginning. He thought of himself a rather handsome man. It would make his day if Miss Sharon fell for him, or if Young Master Drake set him and his sister—Tanya—up. He never thought both beautiful, gorgeous women would fall for a soldier who married into his wife's family. That in itself was a big blow to Leo.

Chapter 746

After Timothy and the rest left the hall, Fane turned to the girls and said, "We should get going now. Though I'm fired, we're all still friends. Let me send you guys home." "Fane, my brother spoke out of anger just now. You really want to quit just like that?" Reluctant Tanya continued to persuade Fane, even though he made himself clear moments ago. Yvonne, her cousin, was just as reluctant. "Fane, you need to think about it clearly. It's very hard to find a job with a monthly salary of twenty million!" Although this guy

annoyed her from time to time, it would have disheartened her to watch him leave. “I won’t regret anything once my mind’s made up!” Fane laughed. “On top of that, didn’t I just win one billion from the few rounds of billiards? I need work for several years before I can earn one billion, right?” There was nothing Tanya and the rest could say once Fane made his decision. Though, Sharon’s eyes seemingly glimmered. “Fane, now that you don’t have a job... Why don’t you work as a bodyguard for my family? I can give you a monthly salary of fifty million. You don’t need to do anything apart from companying me and talking to me every day. How does that sound?” Tanya and Yvonne internally facepalmed; Sharon’s intentions were too obvious. She did not want Fane to work there. She wanted to be with him so that they would have time to build a relationship. “You?” Fane was stunned and poked her forehead with his finger. “I wouldn’t work for you even if it’s a monthly salary of a hundred million. It’d be downright dangerous if I do. That’s like sending a lamb into a tiger’s den!” “What do you mean, ‘sending a lamb into a tiger’s den’? You’re saying this as though I’m a pervert!” Sharon pursed her dainty mouth, flabbergasted at Fane’s choice of words. “Let’s head back, I need to come home early.” Fane smiled and continued saying, “I earned one billion today. It should be enough to hold a birthday party for my wife, right?” Tanya and the others were speechless. This man bagged a billion just like that The people from the Turner family must be extremely angry right now. ... After he had sent the ladies home, Fane made his way home. Tanya, upon entering her residence, immediately went looking for James after Fane left. James was having a chat with Spectre Face and the other masters of the Drake family when Tanya approached him. “Oh. Didn’t you just leave with the rest for some leisure time? You’re back quite early!” asked Drake with a grin on his face. “Father... I’m so angry! Timothy is really getting on my nerves!”

Chapter 747

Tanya sat down with a frown on her face. “Did that fool gamble in billiards again?” The smile on James’s face immediately disappeared and was replaced with a scowl. His son became increasingly unreliable as of late. Timothy had been messing around with Young Master Leo and was neglecting his work. “I don’t care how many billiards games he wants to bet on. We went out with Fane to enjoy billiards today, but Young Master Leo stirred trouble with us. Not only did Timothy refuse to stand on Fane’s side, but he even fired Fane despite my persuasion and warning! Now that Fane’s gone, it’s almost certain he won’t be coming back!” Tanya seethed in rage as she spoke, though her readily lovable face made her look cute even as she was angry. “Fired?” James’ face darkened when he heard this. “What happened? Why did this idiot fire Fane? Tell me everything.” Tanya nodded and told her father, James everything that had happened. James pounded the table angrily. “That rascal! I told him so many times that Fane’s more than just a regular soldier, that he’s at least a King of War. Told him it’d be best for us to be in his good graces…! Now I’m mad at him for firing Fane!” “Agreed, Father. Master Turner brought a marshal with him to challenge Fane, but they eventually conceded defeat when they discovered the marshal was no match for Fane. In the end, they had to pay Fane a billion bucks!” “If even a marshal is no match for Fane, he’s definitely a King of War. I wonder how many stars he has!” Spectre Face sighed with a frown on his face. “Fane is someone who holds himself with dignity and doesn’t go against his own words. Now that Young Master Timothy fired him, it’s impossible to ask him to return!” “What was our young master thinking when he sided with Leo Turner? That’s not a good person!” said another middle-aged man with a frown. “Still, I’m sure Fane is a generous person and won’t hold grudges against such a small issue. It’s a big loss for us that we’ve fired such a great fighter!” “Fane is one-of-a-kind. Nobody knew what he’s really made of as he kept his identity and power hidden. We all thought that he was just a head commander!” Another elder started smiling bitterly. “Surely Timothy wouldn’t have fired him if the fight took place

first. Safe to say, our young master must've thought Fane was all bark but no bite before he could witness his power." James' expression darkened. "Talking about this right now doesn't benefit us! There are lots of people out there that like to stay low-key!" He recalled something and asked, "Do you know why the Taylor family was requested years ago to send a young man to join the army?" The elderly man frowned. "I'm not very clear about what happened back then, but what I do know is that the Taylor family was requested to send a young man older than eighteen to join the military. "At that time, everybody knew that only Ivan Taylor met this requirement!" The elder smiled bitterly. "Nobody knew Old Master Taylor could be such a calculative man. He found Fane and married him to Selena. With that done, this son-in-law joined the ranks in Ivan's stead as he met the requirements as well." James nodded. "That's right. Everybody knew how dangerous the situation was. It was a life-and-death matter, and young masters like Ivan Taylor weren't suited to be in that situation. Ivan wouldn't have survived any battles if he was the one enlisted. "Old Master Taylor is so smart to have come up with that idea, but he never thought Ms. Selena would sleep with Fane on the night of their wedding, and that Fane would return alive five years later!" An elder then recalled something and asked, "Why was the Taylor family appointed a position in the beginning? It's uncommon for this to happen! Was it possible that they offended someone powerful?"

Chapter 748

James nodded at the elder and explained, "Years ago, Ivan crossed paths with a girl that came with several other youngsters, and they were all on a trip. Ivan, seeing the girl's beauty, wanted to take advantage of her so he touched her bump. As a result, the group of young men gave Ivan a beating before they left." James paused here before continuing, "Before they left, however, they asked for Ivan's name and background check. They warned that Ivan should be prepared for his death, as they were people Ivan could not risk to offend!" Spectre Face could not hide his surprise when he heard

this and blurted, “Who are they? They’re that powerful that they can appoint a certain person during army recruitment?” Tanya also looked at her father and was obviously interested in this matter. They only heard news that the Taylor family offended somebody and the recruiters appointed this requirement to them. Luckily, the group of people did not specifically mention names. Otherwise, Old Master Taylor would not have the chance to work his way around it. James continued saying, “I’m not very sure about the exact situation, but I do know that they’re from Gin City. There are ten major families there, all downright frightening. They hold most of the properties and power in Cathysia and have been in existence for a long time now. Their power is infinite!” “No wonder!” Spectre Face spoke in sudden realization. “It might be easy to settle the issue if Ivan offended people from other places, since it’d be resolved easily with money. Tough luck that Ivan offended people from Gin City.” The elder said, “This punishment was considered acceptable. They only appointed a position to the Taylor family and didn’t send a team to wipe out the entire family. That was quite merciful on their side!” Tanya thought about it and replied, “Luckily, we’re quite far away from Gin City. That group of people must have appointed a position to the Taylor family but didn’t bother to follow up about the matter. If they knew that the Taylor family found a son-in-law who married into their family to replace Ivan, they might’ve continued causing trouble for the Taylor family!” James smiled bitterly. “No matter what, these people requested someone from the younger members of the Taylor family who’s older than eighteen years old. Fane, though a mere son-in-law, can be considered as a member of the Taylor family as he fulfills the requirement. Fane surely fitted the bill.” Spectre Face replied with a smile, “The title of a son-in-law married into the wife’s family is unique. He can be a Taylor family member if they forcefully say that. If they don’t, he can only be considered a half a Taylor family member!” “Whatever it is, this matter happened five years ago. Those youngsters might’ve forgotten this since long ago.” “They might even think that Ivan had died on the battlefield. It’s

been five years, so I don't think they will continue pursuing this matter," James continued. "Luckily, we're quite far away from Gin City, and not many of its people would come and visit this place. Under normal circumstances, let's just earn our money and live our lives peacefully!" Tanya was deep in thoughts before she asked James, "Did the Taylor family offend one of the ten major families from Gin City? That'd be a real disaster!" James smiled bitterly. "I don't know about the details, though I do know that they offended somebody from Gin City. Nobody knows if it's one of the ten major families," he spoke, followed with a sigh. "I'll give your brother a serious punishment tonight. Since he's not focused on his work, I'll hand the South City Group matters to you!" "Me?"

Chapter 749

Tanya frowned when James expressed that he wanted her to manage a big project. "How's that possible? Father, I won't be able to enjoy myself anymore if I take this up. I'm still young! It's best to leave this to Timothy!" "Leave it to him?" scoffed James. "Our family would crumble within days if he continues to lose money on billiards games. I seldom take much notice on these things, but I checked our company's accounts several days ago and noted that several of our companies have been losing money for these months. "Some of the projects are put on hold because your brother didn't sign the documents on time, and we've been paying penalties because we can't finish the projects within the time limit! We've been losing money!" Tanya was furious when she heard this. "How's that possible? If that's the case, Timothy has gone overboard!" She finally realized that her brother was really out of hand and that he was not just messing around. Tanya, with a frown, then said, "But Father, South City Group is one of our family's biggest groups. Timothy would surely be upset if you pass it to me!" "Hmph!" came the disgruntled noise from James. "Why do I need to care about his happiness? We can't let him ruin the entire Drake family's business, can we? I've made my observation. Although you like to shop,

you've managed the small businesses I handed to you well, and you've managed to earn quite some money within this year. You've my daughter, and I can't side with Timothy just because he's my son!" Spectre Face also nodded. "This is how the world works; the capable ones are to be crowned. If Miss Tanya is really talented, you should be appreciated. After all, the Drake family is rich, but we'd be surpassed by other powerful families in just a few years if we're badly managed. That'll be disastrous!" "Yes!" Everyone else nodded in agreement. "It's… It's alright if that's the case!" Tanya was speechless. Although she did not want to compete with her own brother, she was really worried about Timothy's current situation. Apart from that, what her father said made sense. South City Group had always been earning money and seldom had any losses. They could not pretend like nothing happened when such a big group that had already been on the right track were experiencing losses. ... At this moment, Fane had already reached home. "Hey, why are you back home so soon? You're back so early!" Fiona spoke happily when she saw that Fane had returned. "It's best if you don't leave work early every day. After all, you're working for them, and it's best if you go to work and leave work on time! I fear Miss Tanya would be displeased if you do this often." Fane smiled bitterly when he heard this. "Miss Tanya wouldn't be unhappy, but Young Master Drake is. He fired me today, so that's why I came back earlier."

Chapter 750

"Oh, you've been fired by Young Master Drake!" Fiona said with a smile before she suddenly snapped at the realization, "What?! You've been fired? You said you're fired? Is something wrong? They fired you for real?" "What's going on? Why are you yelling about?" Andrew asked as he walked out from the house to go on a walk. "Hubby, Fane… He… He said that he's fired. Listen to him! He's been fired from a job that has a monthly income of twenty million!" Fiona stomped her leg in anger and was extremely frustrated. "What?!" Andrew was also surprised when he heard this. "Fane,

are you joking? Are you lying to us? How can you be fired so suddenly?" He was stunned at this moment. "This doesn't sound right. How can you be fired? Don't you have a good relationship with the Drakes? Didn't Miss Tanya speak kindly on your behalf? Why did Young Master Drake fire you? Is the situation really impossible to salvage?" Fiona was just as bewildered and questioned what actually went down. "I don't think so. Didn't you say that you helped Miss Tanya fight off gangsters?" "Haha! Miss Tanya and James wouldn't fire me. Miss Tanya spoke on my behalf, too!" Fane laughed before continuing, "However, what Young Master Drake said caused me to not want to work for them!" "What actually happened?" Andrew grew anxious at the fact that Fane had lost a job with such a high income. What should they do? After all, Fane had less than 100 million with him. Their family had employed helpers and a dozen bodyguards. Selena's one million monthly salary was definitely not enough. Of course, Fiona had quite the amount of money with her, but did Fane not promise her daughter a city-stirring birthday party? The advertisements were already done, too. What should they do if they did not have enough money? Were they going to use her money? "This is what went down. I went to play billiards with Tanya and the others, and I ended up offending Leo Turner. He had a good relationship with Young Master Drake. He wagered a hefty bet against me in a few rounds of billiards, which he lost ten rounds. He was supposed to pay me, but he didn't have enough with him. Young Master Drake helped speak on Leo's behalf but I disagreed with them. Young Master Drake said that I didn't spare or give him face, so he scolded me and said that he wanted to fire me! "Since he's already said that he's going to fire me, why do I need to stay there? I'm not so shameless." Fane smiled indifferently after he spoke. He took out a cigarette, lit it up and inhaled. "You! Are you trying to kill us?!" Fiona was extremely angry. "It's only natural that Young Master Drake would get angry when he helped speak on behalf of his friend and you refuse to give him face! His friend merely owed you a little bit of money, so why did you insist on asking for it? Just don't take that person's

money if he doesn't have enough. Why are you so stupid that you didn't spare Young Master Drake his dignity?" "That's right. I didn't think you'd be this much of a fool. It's just a bet; how much can you lose from that? Even if that person lost ten consecutive games, it's not a lot of money. You have a monthly salary of twenty million, too!" Andrew slapped his thigh in anger. Two of Fane's female bodyguards frowned when they overheard this conversation. Unable to hold her peace, one of them walked toward Fiona and Andrew. "Uncle, Auntie, I can't stand it when the other party says these kinds of things about our master. Since they've fired him, how can he continue to work as their bodyguards shamelessly?" The other bodyguard also stepped forward and said, "That's right! It's their luck that our master had worked as their bodyguard. How dare they fire him?! They're too much!"

Andrew and Fiona were speechless. They wondered if these two women—these female bodyguards—had something going with Fane under their noses since they always stood for Fane and supported him. How could he stop working a job with a monthly salary of 20 million? Apart from that, how could these women say that the richest man was lucky to have Fane work as their family's bodyguard? Fane smiled bitterly and said to Fiona, "Mother, I betted one hundred million a game with Young Master Turner, and I won ten games back to back. Are you sure you don't want this money?" "We surely—" Fiona was about to say 'no' before realization dawned on her. "What?! One hundred million a game, you say? And you won ten games? Doesn't that mean you've won a whole one billion?!" "Yes, one billion," came Fane's calm-sounding reply, added with a shrug. "Do you feel that I should give it up just because Young Master Drake spoke up on his behalf?" "One billion!" Andrew also exclaimed. This...this was too much! How did they settle with such large wagers?! "That;s a lot! I thought it'd be around a hundred bucks bet per game, and at most, a thousand bucks. How did it come to a billion?! We must take the money! We can't give up such a big amount!" Fiona grew increasingly excited when she thought about it. She

walked forward happily and patted Fane's shoulder while saying, "Dear me! It's all a misunderstanding. It's alright to give up the job if it's one billion bucks. This one billion is enough for us, and if we're frugal, we don't need to worry for the rest of our lives. Haha! One whole billion! Fane, you've made a really intelligent choice!" "That's right! How can we give up a billion bucks?" Andrew was just as elated as his wife, and he asked, "Have you received the money?" "Haha! Don't you worry. The money is safe and sound in my bank!" Fane said with a smile. "Alright, the two of you bodyguards better follow me out later. I'll go buy some ingredients, and we'll cook a table full of dishes to celebrate!" Overwhelmed with excitement, Fiona went and patted Fane's shoulders with both hands. "Fane, I'll reward you with a table full of dishes tonight. You've worked hard these past days!" Fane thought about it and purposely brought the matter up once more as he spoke, "Umm… Mother, this job is really gone!" "Hey, it's fine to let it go. We can start a big company with this one billion. Why are we afraid? Let's just be our own boss!" Fiona soon left with both bodyguards forthrightly. "You're really one-of-a-kind. Why didn't you tell us about this right off the bat? You've frightened your mother and I!" Andrew said with a smile after Fiona left. "Frankly speaking, Father, to be honest, I wouldn't continue working as a bodyguard for the Drakes after I'm fired," said Fane, "even if I don't get this one billion. After all, I'm not such a shameless person!" Fane laughed and added, "It's not about the amount of money; it's about the dignity as a person." Andrew was embarrassed when he heard this. He opened his mouth but did not know what to say as; Fane was right.

Chapter 752

Timothy was already drunk, and coincidentally, it was at the period when Selena would finish working and leave her office. With his mood soured, he drank to his heart's content with Leo and the others before he got ready to go home. As they were drunk, Leo asked one of his bodyguards to send Timothy home. However, Timothy asked the driver to stop the car when

they passed by Drake Dynasty Real Estate. The Turner family's bodyguard turned around and asked Timothy with a frown, "What is it? Do you feel like vomiting, Young Master Drake?" "No, I need to go down. I've got something to do! F*ck, I'm getting heated just thinking about it. He's just a bodyguard! How dare he refuse to give me face?" Young Master Drake smirked, got down from the car, and spoke to the bodyguard, "Wait for me here, I'll be back soon." "Yes, Young Master Drake." The man nodded. Timothy soon entered the office, rather tipsy with the aftermath of the win he had. "Young Master Drake, why are you here?" "Young Master Drake, good day to you!" Most of the company's employees looked at him in surprise when they saw Timothy, even more so when they noted he was drunk. "Haha! I'm here to take a look at how you guys are doing recently!" Timothy laughed and walked toward the purchasing department. "Is she here?" Soon, he arrived at Selena's office door. With that smirk still on his face, he opened the door, entered the office, and locked it. "Why is Young Master Drake here? Why does he stink of wine?" The purchasing department's employee, Felicia, asked her supervisor, Sonia with a frown. Sonia smiled coldly and lowered her voice as she said, "Haha! Isn't it obvious? I had a weird feeling for so long now. Why did they refuse to promote me to a manager and suddenly employed Selena Taylor to work as the manager here? Apart from that, the Drake family still treats her husband so nicely." Sonia held her hands in front of her chest and said peculiarly, "Do you know why? Selena must be secretly involved with Young Master Drake. They must've done what they did in private previously. Today, the young master is obviously drunk and is horny. I'm sure he's here to look for her in the office." "Tsk, tsk! If that's the case, isn't Young Master Drake slightly too eager? Selena will finish work in thirty minutes. Can't he wait a little longer? Isn't it better to wait for her to finish work and meet in the hotel?" asked Felicia. "Hey, you don't understand men. Some men get extremely excited after they have drinks. Who knows, he's probably looking

to try something new at a new setting!" Sonia explained. ... "Young Master Drake, why are you here? Can I help you?"

Chapter 753

Selena frowned when she saw Timothy entering her office without prior announcement. Her guard was up when she realized he reeked of alcohol and even locked the door. She immediately stood up and walked out from behind her desk. "Haha! Don't be nervous!" Timothy laughed and sized up Selena under the influence of alcohol. He always thought that Selena was utterly beautiful, but he was not interested as she was married and older than him. In his drunken state, however, he felt giddy as he eyed how the formal dress on this woman accentuated her beautiful figure. He took just a few steps toward Selena and said, "I just so happened to pass this place on my way home, so I'm here to take a look. I'd like to know what's the development of South Hill Real Estate's project. By the way, I heard that you've appointed the Taylor family to supply eighty percent of the project material?" The corners of Selena's mouth twitched when she heard this. She had been worried about how people would gossip about this behind her back. Still, many days had passed without anybody saying anything. After all, the general manager had agreed to this and signed the agreement. Even he felt that the materials from the Taylor family were rather good. Selena eventually relaxed. Regardless, the general manager had already mentioned this to James Drake and Miss Tanya; Timothy should have known about this much earlier. She did not know why Timothy brought up this matter. Selena smiled embarrassingly. "Yes. Young Master Drake should've known about this since long ago, right? The general manager already approved it. Your father and Miss Tanya also knew about it. They had visited the site and were satisfied with the materials as the quality was good!" Timothy smiled and walked closer to Selena. "We're definitely satisfied. I didn't say that we're not. This isn't about the materials!" "If there's nothing wrong with the material, what is it?" Selena turned around with a frown and reached for a

paper cup. “Young Master Drake, you must’ve drunk lots of wine. Let me pour you a cup of warm water.” Selena bent over at the water dispenser and fetched him a cup of warm water. Her alluring bent figure in her formal dress made Young Master Drake feel rather thirsty. He could not help but swallow his saliva. This woman grew increasingly seductive the more he looked at her. Timothy’s imaginations began to wander as he continued to look at Selena. With the cup of warm water at hand, Selena turned around toward him only to be stunned at his rather suggestive gaze. Timothy immediately looked away when he saw Selena turning around. With a grin on his face, he said, “Haha! Miss Selena is too generous, but it’s not about the material. I know several material-supplying companies that have better branding, a longer history, and their quality is quite nice. The materials they have are indisputably reliable!” He paused here before continuing, “If that’s the case, I wonder why Miss Selena chose the Taylor family without even considering these companies? Is it possible that you have some hidden, selfish motives?” Selena was slightly nervous when Timothy asked her this; this matter caused her quite the discomfort for quite some time. Although the Taylor family was not bad, Sonia had filtered the other material suppliers and did not pass them to her. She knew about this, but she chose to ignore it for the Taylor family’s sake and signed the contract. She never expected that Young Master Drake would purposely talk about this after the general manager, Miss Tanya and James had agreed to it. Did the Drakes want to go back on their word? This was the assumption and worry that plagued Selena. After all, this project could help the Taylor family earn quite a revenue. It could guarantee their profit and healthy business development for the next two years. The project had just started not long ago. It would be troublesome for the Taylor family if the Drakes changed their minds. “Young Master Drake, are you saying there are several companies better than the Taylor family? I’m not very clear about this as Supervisor Neal is the one who did the research. In the end, she’s the one who compiled all pieces of information and handed them to me. Regardless, I felt that only the Taylor

family is the most suitable one among all the companies she handed to me!” With a smile on her face, Selena passed the cup of water to Timothy and added, “The agreement was signed and approved by the general manager. This proves that the Taylor family is entirely capable of such an important role.”

Chapter 754

“Is that so?” Timothy walked over to receive the cup of warm water, and he took another step closer and moved closer to Selena. Selena’s faint body odor, coupled with her perfume, stimulated Timothy. “Oh my!” His hand slightly trembled when he took over the cup, causing water from the cup to spill on Selena’s chest. “Ah!” Selena yelped in shock, although the water was not too hot. “I’m sorry, I’m sorry… I didn’t mean to. Let me help you wipe that, Miss Selena.” Timothy was prepared for this. As he stretched out his hand toward her, Selene snapped. “Go away! I can wipe it myself!” Selena was shocked at his advances and took a few steps backing away from him. Timothy was so in taking advantage of her, his hands merely a centimeter away from her attire. Selena instantly took out several pieces of tissue paper and dabbed them at the soaked area on her clothes. Timothy was rather disappointed at Selena’s quick thinking, but it did not erase his excitement at her flustered state. “Allow me to help you with that, Miss Selena,” he urged once more, “I’m good at it!” “Young Master Drake, what are you talking about? Kindly respect our boundaries or I’ll get angry!” Selena’s face darkened when she discovered his true, dark intentions. She then angrily added, “If it’s work purposes you’re concerned with, I’ll make my reports. If it’s about anything else, please immediately leave. I’m not this kind of woman!” It did not enrage Timothy when Selena vocally stated her stance; he merely smirked. “Haha! Miss Selena, stop acting. Do you think that I don’t know what kind of woman you are? You didn’t know your husband when you first met him, yet you married him the day you know him and slept with him right after. You even have a child with him!”

Timothy looked at Selena in disdain. “You slept with a man you just knew. How’s it possible for you to not be charmed by a handsome and rich young master like me? I’ve no intentions of marrying you; I’m not interested in married women like you. Still, you’ve got a nice figure, and you’ve got a rather beautiful face. What say you accompany me for a short while?” Selena almost fainted due to anger, but she maintained her icy-cold expression and she scoffed, “Young Master Drake, you must’ve had too many drinks tonight. I’ll take this as you speaking nonsense, and I won’t argue with you!” Selena then pointed at the door. “Now, please get out and stop disturbing me at my workplace. Your image would be destroyed if others knew about what happened here today!” Selena had a point; Timothy was usually a gentleman in front of others. His actions toward her might very well be due to alcohol influence. Still, he did not seem drunk, though he might have drank slightly more than usual.

Chapter 755

“Haha! You’re a woman! Do you think I, a man, would be afraid if others knew about this if you’re not? Also, who’d believe that you’re innocent? Won’t others say that you’re the one who seduced me for your monthly salary of one million? Who’s in power here: you or me?” Timothy laughed and added, “You think about that, Selena Taylor, and you think it through. I, Timothy Drake, will have you now. You have no choice but to obey me!” “In your dreams!” Selena was downright livid; she never thought Timothy could be so evil. “You’d do well to think it thoroughly. If you don’t do as I say, I’ll terminate the contract with the Taylor family. The compensation is only around one hundred million, nothing too much, and we can afford it!” Timothy smiled coldly. “Secondly, I fired your husband, and he’s out of job now. What’ll happen to your family’s expenses now that he lost his monthly salary of twenty million?” “What?! You...you fired him?!” Selena was taken aback by Timothy’s wicked words. This Young Master Drake was too much of a pain. She never thought he had that sadistic streak in him. “Don’t be so

agitated! I haven't finished speaking!" Timothy smirked with an extremely definite expression on his face. "Think about it: You guys live in a big villa now with an entire family waiting for your support, and you've got bodyguards and workers you need to pay too. "I fired your husband because he acted against me, and if you don't submit to me today, I'll fire you too. You purposely signed the agreement with the Taylor family for their wellbeing. I can fire you based on this point alone!" "You evil man! Young Master Drake, I never thought you'd be such a despicable man!" Selena gritted her teeth in anger. She never thought Timothy would hold the matter against him. She used to think that Timothy was a kind person like Miss Tanya. After all, siblings usually shared quite a few characteristics. Apart from that, Timothy usually looked like a gentleman. She had no idea the man before her would have such a foul, wretched heart. "Oh, I'm despicable?" Timothy laughed coldly after he heard what Selena said. "You're making a false counter-charge. If it wasn't for us Drakes, do you think that your husband would've had such a great job? Do you think that you'd have a great job? You guys were poor people looked down on by the Taylor family and others. You have the life you have now because you guys met us and befriended us. How dare you say that I'm despicable!" Timothy merely shrugged when he noted Selena's silence and cold expression. "Don't you worry about it. As long as you promise me that you'll serve me well this one time, I wouldn't tell others about this. I won't rescind the contract with the Taylor family, and you get to keep your job. A one-million salary is barely enough for your family!" Selena gritted her teeth and was so angry that her face turned pale. Timothy was pleased when he saw her rooted where she stood, wordlessly; he assumed Selena was complying due to the fear he instilled in her. After all, any other woman would know what choice to make, right? He walked forward and pulled Selena into his arms. His face leaned closer to hers as though he was about to kiss her. "Miss Selena, just succumb to me. You lose nothing. After all, I'm the Drake family's young master, son of Middle Province's wealthiest man. No rich

young masters in the entire Middle Province would dare compete with me. Moreover, your husband won't know about this if you don't tell him, understand?" "You bastard, let go of me!" Selena was so angry that she resisted Timothy's embrace and fought back.

Chapter 756

Timothy laughed at Selena's struggle. "Haha! And why should I let you go? Just give in to me!" He pushed her onto the table with all his might, ready to grab her. "Go away!" In her fear and panic, Selena kicked Timothy right in between his legs when he was close enough. "Argh!" Timothy yelled in pain and fell onto his knees in a squatting position. Selena instantly shot up as Timothy fell, merely sparing him a glare as she rushed toward the door. "Young Master Drake, you bastard! I quit!" Selena ripped open the door and rushed out right after. ... "What's going on? Manager Taylor ran out of her office!" Employees were startled to see Selena rushing out of her office. "Did he fail? Manager Taylor's hair seems to be ruffled up a little, but she opened the door and ran straight out. She seemed to have just cried, too," said Felicia dumbfoundedly. "This doesn't seem right. This shouldn't be happening if they have something going behind the scenes. Shouldn't she be very happy?" "How would I know? Let's go check it out." Sonia immediately walked with Felicia toward Selena's office. They peered into the office and discovered Young Master Drake on the floor: he had his hands over his private parts as he hissed in pain. "How dare Selena Taylor do this?! What should Young Master Drake do if he can't bear children in the future?" Sonia said angrily. She immediately went in with Felicia to assist Young Master Drake. Meanwhile, Selena rushed to the parking lot. She pulled the door to her car open and went inside before crying out her frustrations. It took a while before she could reach out for a tissue paper to wipe her tears, and it was only after that was she able to calm herself down before she made her way home. ... Fane was smoking in their yard when he saw Selena's car entering the compound and was parked. "Honey, you're back." Fane walked

over to his wife with a small smile on his face. “Yes,” came Selena’s simple reply and went to sit with him quietly. “Honey, I quitted my job,” Fane started, his smile bitter as he spoke. “But truthfully, I was fired by Young Master Drake. No need to worry, though. Our family will still have money to rely on.” Selena listened on and instantly recalled how she was almost taken advantage of by Timothy. Her nose twitched and her eyes turned slightly red. She looked at Fane upsettingly and said, “Honey, I… I’ve also quitted my job. We are both out of jobs! What should we do?” “You quitted, too?” The news stunned Fane, but he could sense his wife’s unstable emotions. “What actually happened?” he prodded. “That bastard Timothy Drake came looking for me in my office after he had some drinks. He even threatened me with the Taylor family’s agreement about sourcing materials and the fact that he’d fire me. He wants to take advantage of me and even forced himself on me when I refused him! “Thankfully, I reacted fast and kicked his crotch at the given time. I managed to escape right after that.” Face written with fear, Selena looked at her husband and blurted, “What should I do? I’d be in so much trouble if my mother knows I lost my job!” Fane was livid at the details his wife told him. “F*ck... Is Timothy Drake looking for a death wish? I don’t give a damn if he does things to me, but how dare he go looking for you at your office? You didn’t even do anything to him!” Fane shot up from his seat and threw the cigarette butt onto the ground before stepping on it. His hands then tightened, balled into fists.

Chapter 757

“I’m going to get an explanation from him,” snapped Fane. “Don’t! This is the Drake family we’re talking about here!” Selena was extremely frightened when she saw Fane’s impulsive look and took his hands into hers. “Honey, don’t go. It’s the Drake family, and it’s not a good idea to offend them. Apart from that, he didn’t get to touch me inappropriately. While he did forcibly embraced me, I managed to break free!” “That means nothing to me. What would’ve happened if you failed to run away in time? The

Drake family has to give me an explanation! How dare he try to take advantage of you!" Fane's fists tightened even more. He turned to Selena and, carrying her in his arms bridal-style, walked toward the car when he saw her hands still on his. "What are you doing? I asked you to not go there!" Selena was flustered yet worried as he held her up like a princess, though it did not erase her anxiety. After all, the Drake family was a family that even first-class aristocratic families dared not offend. Could Fane succeed alone? "Don't you worry; I won't kill Tanya's brother as a sign of respect for our friendship. However, if he doesn't kneel and apologize, I'll show him no mercy!" Fane still had a darkened expression on his face. He placed Selena at the passenger's seat before he went and sat at the driver's seat. "Honey, just let it go. I know you love me, but I don't want to offend the Drake family! It's not good to have another enemy," coaxed Selena in an attempt to persuade Fane. She did not want him to act irrationally. "Apart from that, they're the Drakes! They might have lots of masters with them!" "Don't you worry. Their masters are no match for your husband. He's far more powerful than any of them combined." Adamant and indifferent, Fane stepped on the gas pedal and the car soon raced out of the villa. "Why are they going out again? Didn't they just come back a while ago?" Several bodyguards who strolled around the perimeter not far away wondered what was happening when they saw the situation. At the same time, they felt jealous as they saw how Fane carried Selena in his arms. "You're so hard-headed! Why won't you listen to my advice?!" Selena relented once she knew it was a point for no return for her husband. He wanted to confront the Drake family! The Drakes might turn hostile against them if Fane went over and caused trouble! More importantly, how could Fane oppose the entire Drake family's masters? ... Young Master Drake struggled in pain for quite some time before he could even stand up. He then walked out embarrassingly and returned to the Drake family mansion. He was more than ready to go to bed as the drinks made him feel dizzy. The last thing he expected was for James, Tanya, and several masters of the Drake family to wait for him when he

entered the villa's living room. "Father, Tanya, why are you guys here? Why aren't you guys asleep yet?" Timothy's face darkened as he sensed something was amiss when he noted several Drake family elders were present. This only happened when something important had to be announced. Coincidentally, he had fired Fane, and it seemed that his sister had relayed the news to them. James' face darkened and questioned Timothy, "You know what you've done today, right?" Timothy was utterly displeased. "Of course I do. I fired a mere bodyguard, no? Did you have to get a crowd here like this? Why did you ask the elders to come out?" came his somewhat apathetic reply as he sat down on the sofa. James laughed bitterly. "What did I tell you? Did you ignore what I've told you? I asked you to not offend Fane and stay on his good side! Why didn't you listen?!" James was downright livid at him and was close to fainting in his anger. His son made the worst move possible with his deplorable attitude.

Chapter 758

Timothy, at that moment, recalled how a marshal failed to defeat Fane. With a guilty conscience, he blurted, "I didn't know Fane could be so powerful! I thought he was just a head commander, unworthy of our family's respect and admiration. I only knew this when a marshal from the Turner family failed to defeat him, and that was only after I fired him!" "Haha! I've told you long before that he's considerably on par with Kings of War. It doesn't matter even if he's just a one-star King of War! More importantly, he's well acquainted with the Goddess of War. Can't you see that? The Goddess of War willingly interacted with me because of our relationship with Fane!" James grew increasingly angry the more he thought about it. "So what? I can just look for them tomorrow and ask them to return to work as usual!" Timothy had no choice but to obey his father after he thought about it. After all, many of the Drakes eyed him sharply and none went up to defend him. "Haha! Think about his temperament! Do you think that he's short of money if he really is a King of War? The country would've given him several tens

of billions as his reward. We were extremely lucky that somebody like him was willing to work as our bodyguard. He agreed to work for us because he was bored with nothing to do. “Do you think he’d still agree to it now?” James laughed. He knew Fane’s identity was not as simple as how he portrayed it, but Fane managed to keep himself incredibly low-profile and seldom exposed his true combat abilities to the public. This caused others to believe he was a mere head commander. “How’s that possible? And does he really have that much money?” Timothy’s face darkened; he made a huge mistake if that was true. Still, as he recalled how ordinary Fane was and how he promised to be their bodyguard proactively, he still felt that his father’s beliefs were too overboard. How could such a rich person agree to be a bodyguard? “Bullcrap. He’s definitely a King of War, so it’s only natural he has a lot of money!” scoffed James with a cold expression on his face. “Why would he willingly work as a bodyguard if he has so much money? If it was me, I wouldn’t work as a bodyguard. I don’t want to be looked down at by others!” Timothy frowned. He glanced at Tanya who was beside him, and his eyes lit up. “Unless... The reason this guy works as our bodyguard isn’t for money but for women. I think he likes my sister. If that’s the case, it’s very easy to get into his good books. We can just marry Tanya to him, right?” Timothy tried to find ways around the matter. Though it took a while, Tanya noticed something peculiar in Timothy’s replies and said, “Wait, Brother. Did you say ‘them’ just now? What does that mean?” Timothy scratched his head in embarrassment. “The thought of Fane talking back at me plagued me after I drank some wine… So I fired his wife in retaliation.” “What?!” James’ chest heaved in anger when he heard this. “You… You! It’s understandable if you committed a mistake once, but how dare you make them one after another! You’re ridiculous! Even if Fane talked back to you, how could you fire his wife too?!” “I… I told you! I was just unhappy at that moment!”

Chapter 759

Timothy tried to find an excuse for his actions. “Aren’t you afraid of offending him? Let me tell you this: If you end up genuinely offending him, I… I can't even save you!” James was so angry that he was at a loss for words. He had one son, and he turned out to be this. “Impossible! Are you joking? We’re a first-class aristocratic family, and we have so many masters here with us! While I admit Fane’s good, I don’t believe we’d lose if everyone fights him as a group,” came Timothy’s somewhat apathetic reply. He did not believe Fane would be that terrifying. James glanced at Timothy and announced coldly, “Oh, that’s right. We’re waiting for you here because we need to tell you something. I feel that you’re out of focus recently, so I’ve visited South City Group only to find out that it’s been losing money. Because of this, South City Group will be managed by your sister, Tanya starting from tomorrow. I suppose you can have a breather and a break of sorts.” Timothy wondered if he had heard his father wrongly and looked at James dumbfoundedly. “What? Did I hear that right, Father? Did you just say South City Group?” In Timothy’s point of view, Tanya was just a child and it was difficult for her to bear such great responsibility. Apart from that, he was the one who managed South City Group all this while, thus he believed no one should interfere with his business. South City Group represented half the Drake family group’s businesses, and the ability to manage this group represented the person’s identity in the Drake family. It was because of this that Timothy had always been extremely proud of himself. He was the subject of people’s envious looks whenever he walked outside because the Drake family relied on him to manage their businesses. While he also managed several smaller companies, those companies were nothing when compared to South City Group. “Yes, you heard right. South City Group,” James said indifferently. “While your sister tends to shop quite often, I observed the companies she managed and they’re doing quite well. I believe your sister would do a better job than you if I hand South City Group to her!” “Father, are you joking?” Timothy was still in disbelief. “Tanya… Tanya is just a young child. How could she be more experienced

than me at business management? Apart from that, I've been managing South City Group all this time. I'm aware we've started losing money during these few months, but it's temporary. We've raked up quite the fortune years before this. Do you not see the success I've accomplished?" He stood up and got increasingly agitated. "You want to change the higher management just because the loss we experience these two to three months? Aren't you afraid that Tanya would fail at managing the place?" James laughed him off before he replied, "Don't you worry. I've thought about it and discussed it with several higher-ups many times before I made this decision. You're definitely unsuitable to continue working as South City Group's highest management with your current situation and status!" Suddenly, Harvey ran into the room with several other bodyguards. "Master, Master! Something bad is happening!" There was a deep frown on his face as he spoke. "Big Brother… No, Fane is here with his wife, and he wants an explanation from us. If he's not satisfied with our explanation, he...he'd make his move!"

Chapter 760

"He… He's too brash! What does he mean by 'make his move'? Father, listen to him. His actions are a disrespect to the Drake family!" Timothy sucked in a deep breath when he heard what the bodyguards were saying about Fane. Admittingly, he was scared. Did Selena tell Fane what happened in the office? He first recalled the fact that he did not manage to take advantage of Selena. It did not matter if Selena was embarrassed or she had the intention of actually manipulating the Drake family; she would not have told Fane about what happened between them. The last thing Timothy expected was for Fane to look for him, and that meant big trouble. Because of this, he had to provoke the relationship between his father and Fane. "He's doing too much. This is threatening our Drake family!" One of the Drake family's masters was displeased. This master's fighting abilities were much stronger than Spectre Face. He feared no marshals and was able to fight with Kings of War. This master was the first one to stand up against

Fane's threats. "Yes, what Elder Gordon says makes sense. This guy always acts like this, and we should put him in his place!" Timothy was relieved that someone shared his stance in the matter, and it was someone powerful to boot. "How dare you agree to the master? He's brave enough to say it because he's got the power to back it up!" Tanya glared at his brother before looking at James. "Father, what should we do now? It seems that Fane is unhappy about Timothy firing his wife. He wouldn't have come here if it wasn't for this matter." "Tanya, what you're doing here is uplifting others and destroying your own. How would we know that Elder Gordon isn't his match without even attempting anything?" snapped Timothy. "Yes, Miss Tanya. Are you looking down on us masters, or do you place too much faith in Fane?" Elder Gordon was slightly unhappy. He was considered one of the best masters in the Drake family though he had never fought with Fane. Tanya's words blatantly meant she looked down on them and stated that they were not Fane's opponents. "Elder Gordon, don't make a move without my order. Fane is here asking for an explanation, and he didn't tell us straightforwardly what he wanted to do. This means that there are ways to settle this!" James thought about it and said, "Let's go and discuss it with him. It might work if we apologize and ask them to return to work tomorrow." Many people nodded and they followed James outside. ... James and his company eventually arrived at the mansion's front door. Fane and his wife, Selena, stood right outside in silence. As everyone gathered, Tanya was the first to walk forward and offered her apologies. "Fane, I heard that my brother fired Sister Selena in anger. I'm very sorry for that," Tanya spoke solemnly. "My brother tends to speak nonsense whenever he's drunk. He was just in his feelings, so please don't take him seriously." "Indeed. Timothy was angry, so whatever he said was only out of his emotions. Go back, rest, and come back for work tomorrow." James was pleased with how understanding his daughter was, and Fane might reconsider his actions after he heard Tanya's sincere words. After all, was it not petty to be calculative with a drunk person? "Come on, Hubby, let's just leave it at that."

Chapter 761

Selena was slightly afraid when she saw that many people in front of her. Most of the bodyguards were also there. Soon, there were one to two hundred people at the Drake family's side. She immediately persuaded Fane. However, Fane still stood there and did not move. He looked at Timothy coldly and said, "Timothy, come over, kneel, and apologize to my wife. Kowtow three times and I will let things slide. If not, you'll regret it when I make my move!" "Bastard, aren't you being too much?!" Elder Gordon could not handle it anymore. He was originally cranky so he walked two steps forward, looked at Fane, and said, "This is the Drake family! Do you know who Timothy is? He's the eldest young master of our family! It's fine to directly address him by his name, but, how dare you ask someone as honorable as him to kneel and kowtow to you! You're being really arrogant!" Fane looked at this old man coldly before saying. "I'm speaking to Timothy so please don't interrupt our conversation!" "You…" Elder Gordon was extremely angry and held his hands into fists. "Sure. They all mentioned that you are strong and since you dare act so presumptuously in front of the Drake family mansion, let me try you!" "Elder Gordon, stop!" James immediately stopped him. He smiled at Fane after Elder Gordon stopped. "Fane, my son really acted on impulsive after several drinks. I hope you can understand him!" James paused here before continuing. "How about this. You guys can come back for work and I will pay you double your salary next month. Apart from that, I will pay you one hundred million as compensation. How does that sound?" As the richest man in the Middle Province, James had already made a huge compromisation by saying this. "Master Drake, I'm sorry but what happened today cannot be solved with money. If it wasn't because the Drake family treated me well and I consider Miss Tanya as my best friend, everybody here would have died, and you would be waiting for your bodies to be collected!" Fane raised his hand and pointed at the people in front of him. His tone was plain but his words were

extremely domineering. “Honey…” Selena was speechless. She knew something like this was going to happen with her husband’s character. The Drake family had already taken such a huge step back but Fane still refused to back away. “You f*cker!” Elder Gordon could not hold it back any longer. He forgot James’s instructions, stepped forward, and rushed toward Fane with his hands balled into fists. Bang! Fane curled his lips into a cold smile when he saw how the other party initiated the attack. He balled his hands into fists and punched toward the opponent too. With a slightly dull bang, Elder Gordon flew outward. He flew several meters away before stepping on the ground and stabilizing his body. “You can’t take such a small amount of my force. How dare you act arrogantly in front of me?” Fane glanced at the opponent in disdain. He had a kingly aura and a contempt for the world as he spoke. Elder Gordon was shocked. Fane’s punch seemed simple but the power in it was so terrifying that it threw him into the air while Fane was still standing there firmly. What Fane said also caused him to be afraid!

Chapter 762

”Elder Gordon, stop! Are you refusing to listen to me?” James also noticed that Elder Gordon was definitely not Fane’s opponent. However, he had already made a move. After his failure, he could only stand there and glare at Fane. After all, he might die very miserably if he rushed forward and fought Fane. If he stopped right now, he would lose his face. Elder Gordon humphed coldly after he heard what James said. “Young man, I’ll bear with it today because my master asked me to. However, this is the Drake family mansion, if you dare act rampantly, I will not hold back anymore!” Elder Gordon retreated after he said that. The corners of Timothy's mouth twitched several times. He finally noticed that if Elder Gordon acted alone, he was definitely not Fane's opponent. Apart from that, Elder Gordon was someone who loved to protect his dignity. He left these words just so he could exit with honor. "Alright, Fane. How about this? It's fine if you and

Miss Selena don't want to come back to work. This time, my son was the one who acted impulsively. I will give you eight hundred million. How about that? Let's agree to let it go! " After thinking about it, James gritted his teeth and proactively said. In his opinion, this amount of compensation was already more than enough. Apart from that, he just found out that his son fired the two of them not too long ago. He was slightly unhappy when Fane did not want to let this go. However, he knew that he could not offend Fane, so he could only hope that he could spend money to avoid disaster. "Honey, why don't we just let it go. Eight hundred million is already a lot!" Selena bit her sexy red lips and persuaded Fane. It was a pity as Fane still sneered. "Master Drake, I would have killed your son if it weren't for Tanya! My request is simple, he needs to kneel down and apologize to my wife. He also needs to slap himself ten times. Otherwise, I will take action!" "Fane, aren't you asking for too much?" Even Tanya got angry. She looked at Fane in disbelief. "My brother shouldn't have fired you nor your wife. After all, your wife did nothing wrong. No matter what, my brother is the young master of the Drake family. How should my brother continue living his life if he kneels down and apologizes to your wife? You even asked him to slap himself in the face." "Fane, please consider this. Eight hundred million is really a lot, why don't you think about it again?" Yvonne bit her sexy red lips. She did not expect Fane to make this matter such a huge ordeal. This was somewhat unlike the Fane she knew. However, Fane sneered and said, "Haha, there is nothing to consider. It doesn't matter if Young Master Timothy fired my wife. However, he tried to take advantage of my wife after several drinks. He went to the office, locked the door, and tried to forcefully take advantage of my wife. If my wife hadn't found the opportunity to kick him and escaped, she might have suffered!" Having said that, Fane looked at Yvonne and questioned her. "Miss Yvonne, would you easily forgive such a person if you were in such a situation? If someone harassed you and gave you some money silent you, would you be able to forgive that person?" "How's this possible? Brother, you...you actually treated sister Selena..."

Tanya finally realized that Fane's anger was not just about Timothy firing his wife. It turned out that her brother actually went to the company alone and tried to rape Fane's wife. If this happened to another man, they might have been afraid of the Drake family or they might have chosen money to avoid disaster. However, if it was a burly and hardcore man like Fane, it was impossible to ask for his forgiveness. "He...he's talking nonsense!"

Chapter 763

Timothy was so frightened. He could only grit his teeth and refused to admit to it when he saw so many people looking at him. "Nonsense?" This time, even Selena could not stand it and looked at Timothy bitterly. "Haha. Young Master Timothy, I didn't expect you to be a coward who dared not admit to what you did. If you say so, why don't we head to the company and ask the people there? We have so many employees, do you think they didn't hear anything?" Timothy's face instantly turned blue and purple when he heard what she said. Yes, it was definitely difficult to explain what happened previously. Originally, he could tell people in the company that it was Selena who wanted to seduce him. Many people would have believed what he said. Now that Fane has brought his wife to his house, nobody would have believed him if he used this excuse. That would be extremely troublesome. "You…you brat!" James finally realized what a nasty thing his son had done. He stepped forward and slapped Timothy with all his might. "I'm really disappointed in you. I thought that you had just fired the two of them, I didn't expect you to hit on Miss Selena. No wonder Fane is so angry!" Elder Gordon, who originally felt that Fane had gone overboard, finally realized that he was almost manipulated by Timothy. If he was in this position and his woman was almost raped by somebody else, he would have killed that person early on. As for Fane's action of asking Timothy to kneel down and apologize while slapping himself ten times was actually very kind of Fane. He did this because of his history with the Drake family and he was giving Tanya face. Timothy, who was slapped in the cheeks,

covered his face in anger. "Father, you…you actually hit me because of this? I admit that I was impulsive at that time. I had too many drinks and Selena looked really pretty. She even had a short skirt on. Isn't that very normal? Besides, I was unsuccessful in my attempt!" "Haha, unsuccessful? If you succeed, none of you here can leave the Middle Province alive!" Fane sneered after he heard this, and walked step by step toward Timothy. His eyes were filled with a murderous aura. The aura was the same one that sent shivers down everyone's spine on the battlefield. "Do you still feel that you did nothing wrong? I gave you a chance, but you didn't cherish it!" Fane approached step by step and his voice was very low. He had a scary and invisible aura around him that made people feel repressed. "You brat, why aren't you kneeling down and apologizing yet? Hurry up and do what Fane said! Kneel down and apologize to Miss Selena. Hurry up and slap yourself!" James was very frightened. The other masters in the Drake Family stood there and were all frightened too. They knew that Fane was about to take action. After all, Timothy did make a mistake this time and they were all embarrassed to make moves. "I won't apologize! I'm the young master of the Drake family, why should I apologize to them?!" Timothy gritted his teeth and looked at Fane. He did not believe that Fane would dare take action. After all, the Drake family was the biggest known power in this province. Bang! Fane directly jumped up and kicked Timothy on his crotch. Timothy flew outward. Bang! The next second, Timothy hit the ground far away and fainted.

Chapter 764

Timothy's pants seeped with scarlet fresh blood. It was a frightening sight. The corners of James's mouth twitched. His features were twisted into a grimace, but he did not let a single word slip from him. The entire area was completely silent—so silent that you could hear a pin drop! This was the Young Master of the Drake family, and yet Fane had lashed out against him all the same. Now he just lay there, and no one knew if he was still alive.

“Master…” Specter Face stepped forward, frowning. He did not know what to say. He knew that James’s heart was filled with excruciating pain. “Come forward all you like, if you wish to avenge him. But I’m afraid that you won’t be able to bear the consequences once you make the first move!” Fane said, expression stony. Although James’s insides were twisted with agony, he forced himself to smile. “It’s all right, Fane, so long as you let off some steam! Just say the word if you need any more compensation!” Fane gave a wan smile. “No need!” He wheeled around and left, taking Selena with him. “Don’t worry. Your son isn’t dead. But I can’t say for certain if he’ll be producing any heirs in the future.” Selena glanced behind her shoulder, afraid that the fighters and the bodyguards employed by the Drake family would rush forward. She only released a sigh of relief once they got onto the car and drove off. “Are you sure Timothy won’t be rendered infertile from that kick of yours, Dear? James only has him as the only son, after all. Won’t he try to take revenge in the future? I know you’re venting your anger, but I’m still afraid!” Selena frowned, her expression morphing to that of concern. Fane glanced at her and managed a mirthless smile. “Don’t worry. James is smart enough. He won’t cause trouble for me even if his son can no longer produce heirs for their family. I’ve already been kind enough to him by sparing his son’s life. No man has the right to touch my woman. You suffered so much for me and our daughter’s sake. You paid the price for so many years. I won’t let you go through any more humiliation!” Warmth filled Selena as she heard him speak such earnest word. She pursed her lips before she spoke, “All right then. I just never expected that you would have no fear even with the Drake family! This is far beyond my expectations!” Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry after he heard that. “Dear, would you be touched or frightened if all nine of the Gods of War came to your birthday party?” Selena went speechless for a while when she heard that. Then she rolled her eyes. “What are you saying? It’ll be an utmost honor even if only Lana came. How can all nine of the Gods of War come? Besides, they’re so busy, and every second of theirs is extremely

precious. How could they have the time to spare for me?" Here, Selena seemed to think of something, then she said jokingly, "Heh. Don't tell me that you're the master of the nine Gods of War? Each of the Gods of War is strong in their own way, and they're extremely powerful. If they even had a master, he would not even be human!" Fane gave a curious expression. Did his wife just tell him that he was not human right to his face? He gave a brittle smile and asked, "What is he then, if not human?" "A god!" Selena spoke in a matter-of-fact tone, "What kind of a person would a master of the nine Gods of War be if not a god? But of course, there's no one like that. In the future, don't simply joke that you're the master of the Gods of War. It'll be troublesome if someone were to write a report about it and spread the news about you." Here, Selena drew a finger across her throat. "You're writing yourself a death sentence if you anger the Gods of War," she said. "It won't get any better just because you're good friends with Lana. A joke like this is too frightening!" Fane placed his hand on her thigh when he heard that, flashing a small smile. "All right. I'll listen to you, dear. I won't claim that they're my disciples anymore, okay? But I still hope that they can come over and celebrate on the day of your birthday!" "You hope?"

Chapter 765

Selena did not know whether to laugh or cry. "What use is there in hoping? Why should I have hope if they're not going to come!" "Do you really want them to come? Then I should invite them over!" Fane smiled and spoke in a confident tone, "I believe that they'll definitely preserve my dignity!" "My goodness. You're speaking as though you had plenty of dignity, to begin with!" Selena rolled her eyes at him. Then she noticed that his hand was on her thigh. She picked it up, cheeks flushing. "Drive properly and don't put your hands everywhere. Seriously!" "Heh. Looks like you're embarrassed!" Fane chuckled. "I'll place it everywhere when it's bedtime. How about that?" The pink on Selena's cheeks deepened. "I can't be bothered with you, you pervert! Now we're both jobless, and you've offended the Drake family.

I just pray that James really won't come for us, like what you said!" "Don't worry. He would have done something just now if he wanted to take revenge! Would he have let us leave just like that?" They quickly arrived at the villa. After he parked the car, Fane said, "Oh, right. Let me tell you how I was fired by Timothy!" "Oh, yeah. I would have forgotten if you hadn't mentioned it. Timothy said that you talked against him. What on earth happened? Weren't you doing your job just fine for the Drake family?" Selena immediately asked as the thought popped into her head. "That's because I struck big today—I won a bet worth ten billion bucks just like that!" Fane got down from the car. "So don't worry. I earned ten billion bucks today," he said, grinning. "We'll be fine even if you stay at home and become a housewife. We can even go for a honeymoon when we're free!" "Our child is already so big, and you're still thinking of a honeymoon? Only you could think of something like that!" Selena's heart was leaping in delight. She wound her arm around Fane's and walked toward the villa's entrance. "So tell me, how did you win the ten billion bucks?" "Billiards. Hah. Because…" Fane then told everything that had transpired in the morning to Selena. "You learned to play that fast? You've never played it before, but you just knew how to play once you got into it. And you won ten billion bucks?" Shock rippled throughout Selena when she finished listening to the story. At the moment in the Drake family's residence. After Fane left, Tanya ran over to check on Timothy, who was still unconscious. She furrowed her brows and looked at her father. "What do we do, Dad?" "What else can we do but to quickly take him to the hospital? If Fane says he's not dead, he's not dead. We need to get him to the hospital immediately. Let's pray that Timothy will still be able to have heirs. But his future will be even more uncertain if we're a second too late!" James immediately declared before ordering his men to take his son to the hospital. "Ah!" He released a sigh. "Seriously. Why would Timothy dare to do something like that? He really dug a grave for himself!"

Chapter 766

“Master, are we really going to let this slide just like that? The young master… He’s…” One of the fighters stepped forward and asked James. Although he could not say that the young master did not deserve it, Fane had just brought his wife to the Drake family’s residence and beat Young Master Drake into a pulp. Plenty of passersby outside would have seen everything. This was a cause of extreme humiliation for the Drake family. Fortunately, not many people had witnessed the incident, but the Drake family’s reputation had really been trampled on. “I really think there’s no way out of this. Fane is too strong. There’s no way to take him on by oneself—at least for me!” Elder Gordon finally spoke up after he thought about it. In reality, he wanted to say that it would be useless even if all of them went for Fane at the same time. He tried to tone it down though, for the sake of their dignity. “It’s obvious that Fane has full confidence, judging from how he spoke just now. He’s very sure of himself. So all we can do is to forget about this incident!” James gave a helpless smile. “I’ve already chided Timothy so many times, but he simply refused to listen to me. Never mind that he fired both Fane and Selena, but he actually dared to touch the latter. Ah. If it were you, wouldn’t you think about killing him? Fane had been considering the relationship between us from before, and his friendship with Tanya, that’s why…” The fighters could do nothing but bob their heads in obedience when they heard him say that, keeping as quiet as they could. “Dad, we’re missing a procurement manager in South Hill Real Estate now that Miss Taylor has quit her job. What do we do?” Tanya added after she thought about it, “Besides, I’m afraid that it’ll turn awry for us if the Taylor family continues to be in charge of that project…” James nodded his head. “You’re right. If news of how Fane had beaten your brother up gets out, and how we did not retaliate, the Drake family will definitely become a laughing stock. We should be stirring up some trouble for him, after all. How about this? You take charge of South Hill Real Estate and make Sonia take the

position of procurement manager. I pray she doesn't let me down!" Tanya nodded her head. "I'll get Sonia to terminate the contract with the Taylor family. And we won't compensate for the breach of contract either. Let's just do that as our 'retaliation'. It won't be so embarrassing for us if word of this gets out then!" Hearing those words fall from her mouth felt like a joke. The Drake family was the strongest, richest family in the entire Middle Province. It was extremely embarrassing that her older brother had been beaten—and beaten into that state. This sort of retaliation was truly a joke, but it was better than nothing. It would convey the Drake family's stance toward the matter. Elder Gordon considered everything carefully before he made a suggestion, "Master, why don't we just tell everyone that the young master's injuries are not too serious even if they're actually serious or if he becomes impotent. This way, we'll only be dissolving our cooperation with the Taylor family because he was not too seriously injured. It won't be that embarrassing if we put it that way." James thought that it made sense. "You're right. We'll go over to the hospital in a while and check up on my son. His condition must be kept a secret. We'll get the doctors to diagnose that he has mild injuries from a fistfight. There'll be nothing serious!" After Fane and Selena went back, they quickly showered and went downstairs, sitting together at the table for dinner. "Selena, Fane has been fired by Timothy!" Fiona smiled. "But it doesn't matter. Heh. Fane won ten billion bucks from billiards," she said. "Ten whole billions! He lost his job, but it's great that he has ten billion to his name now. We won't have to worry about having no money in the future! This money doesn't belong to the entire Taylor family. It belongs to us!"

Charly Ray Holsenbeck

I think this book is good can' t wait to see what happens next

Chapter 767

Selena gave a bitter smile. “Ma, Fane already told me about this,” she said. “Actually, I’ve been fired as well. No—I quit. I didn’t want to do it anymore!” “What!” The smile on Fiona’s face immediately froze. “Fane had been fired for lashing against Young Master Drake, and he had lashed out because of the ten billion bucks in the first place,” she said, stupefied. “This is completely understandable, but why did you quit? This is an entirely different matter.” Selena flicked her gaze between Fane and Fiona. “It’s nothing. I just don’t want to continue doing that job any longer,” she lied, fearing that her mother would fret for her. “It’s pointless to me. More importantly, my subordinates don’t cooperate with me, and they even talk about me behind my back!” “You’re out of your mind, Selena. Fane doesn’t have a job now, and neither do you. Plus, your salary was so high!” Andrew shook his head and took a sip of wine. “But it doesn’t matter now. You’ve already quit, so now we’ll just have to be wise with the money we have. It should be enough.” “You’re right, Dad,” Ben chipped in, grinning. “We only need enough money to live on. We can’t be like Ma, who only has eyes for money. We should always be satisfied with whatever we have!” “What are you saying, you brat? What sane person would give up their chances of getting more money? Why shouldn’t we want more, knowing that we could have more?” Fiona glared at her son. “Besides, ten billion isn’t a lot either. It all depends on how you spend it. I heard that a jeweler in Middle Province has recently crafted an extremely expensive necklace. It’s entirely laid with diamonds, and more importantly, it’s one of its kind in the entire world. There’s also a huge ruby as its main jewel. It’s absolutely gorgeous! It’s called ‘Heart of the Abyss’, or something like that anyway!” “Really? It’s just a necklace though. No way that it’s worth more than a hundred million!” Ben smiled and spoke nonchalantly. He raised his glass of wine and took a sip from it. “The taste of this red wine is splendid, and it cost over twenty thousand bucks. This is a luxury to me already!” “You’re so narrow-minded. They say that that necklace is worth more than 900 million bucks—almost up to a billion!” Fiona continued, “There’s only one of its kind in the world.

But more importantly, this necklace is the jeweler's true treasure. They don't have any intentions of selling it off. They're just putting it on exhibition at a critical moment!" "Pfft!" Ben spat some of his wine out. "What the f*ck. That's way too expensive!" "What are you saying? Of course, the necklace is expensive!" Fiona rolled her eyes at him. "If only I could afford something like that!" Fane was surprised as well when he heard that. He took a sip of wine. "Such an expensive necklace would definitely look good on Selena. Ruby…I remember that you like red!" Selena flashed a bitter smile. "What use is there to like it? No way I can wear something like that. Besides, they won't sell it even if we want to buy it!"

Chapter 768

Fane could only manage a smile. "Mother, where is this necklace housed?" he asked Fiona. "Why haven't I heard of this!" "It's on the second floor in Tamsin Mall—the biggest jeweler there. The jewels they sell there are seriously expensive," she replied. "A regular person would be too embarrassed to walk in there. Any item of theirs is easily worth over a hundred thousand!" Fiona paused here before continuing, "I so happened to catch their advertisement banner while I was passing by. That's how I knew. They imported the jewel from Gin City, and they're preparing to exhibit it in a few days. It's being advertised on television too! "No regular person would be able to dream of wearing it!" Andrew gave an indifferent smile. "The rarest things are the ones that are the most expensive in this world. Of course, the necklace would be so expensive, if it were the only one of its kind. It's normal for it to be worth over 900 million!" "More importantly, no one has ever worn that necklace before. It's been used for exhibitions. They had wanted to find someone to help shoot an advertisement, but it seems like there are no celebrities who were suitable to wear it. Their boss is a very crafty person!" Fiona said, smiling. Fane and the others went upstairs after they finished their meal. "Oh, I can finally sleep in tomorrow now that I don't have to go to work!" Selena smiled bitterly and loosened a

breath. “But I’m still a little worried, dear. What if the Drake family doesn't forgive us and come to us looking for trouble? I really suspect that that kick of yours has rendered Young Master Drake impotent!” Fane thought about it for a while. “It’s very likely that he’ll have to cut his d*ck off,” he said. “No way about it though. Who said that he could bully my wife? No one bullies my wife like that!” After he said that, he glanced toward Selena. A wicked grin spread across his lips. “Dear, why don’t we get all tangled up tonight, since you don’t have work tomorrow?” Selena’s face immediately reddened when she heard this. “Oh, quiet. You’re such a pervert!” “Heh. Can’t help it. You’re too beautiful!” Fane chuckled and planted his lips on Selena’s. For the remainder of the night, Selena felt extremely tired. When she woke up the next morning, it was already ten o’clock. “Thank goodness I don’t have to go to work today. I’d be extremely late otherwise!” Selena’s lips twisted into a wry smile when she saw the time. She craned her head around—only to find that Fane was already gone. “What on earth? He’s not working anymore either. Since when did he disappear?” At the moment, Fane was already outside the biggest shopping mall in the city. He took the elevator and got off on the second floor, heading toward the exclusive jeweler’s shop. He went straight for the entrance. A young, pretty saleswoman welcomed him. “Welcome, sir. Are you looking for any gems in particular?” Fane nodded his head. “I’m here to buy the ‘Heart of the Abyss’!” he said. “Where is it?” The saleswoman was stunned when she heard that. She recollected her wits after a few seconds had passed. “Ahem. You’re such a jester, sir,” she said, smiling. “The Heart of the Abyss is extremely expensive. Not just anyone can afford it. The necklaces we have on public display here are already worth 100 to 200 thousand bucks. We only have the best products here. Besides, we shipped the Heart of the Abyss here for an exhibition. It’s not for sale!” “Isn’t it worth 900 million bucks? I’ll pay two billion. How about that?” Fane believed that anything could be bought so long as the price was right. After all, a necklace like that was still a product.

Chapter 769

“Heh. Are you joking, sir? It’s 900 million bucks, and you’re increasing its worth to two billion?” The pretty saleswoman was tickled by Fane’s words. Another saleswoman walked over after she heard that. “Go out and take a closer look at the advertisement outside our store, sir. Is 900 million written there? If the Abyss is worth merely 900 million, everyone should just sell all their assets to buy it first. They’ll be earning big bucks after they get it!” “It’s not 900 million?” Frowning, Fane walked out; the two pretty saleswoman tailed after him. He looked at the price tag, scanning through the chain of ‘0’s right after the digit 9. He silently counted the zeroes twice, and shock suddenly seized him. “It’s nine billion! Seems like my mother-in-law miscounted and missed a zero there!” “Why don’t you take a look at our other merchandise, sir? It’s clear that you can afford it, and we carry plenty of exquisite necklaces here. The Heart of the Abyss is definitely not for sale. And it’s not worth just 900 million bucks—it’s nine billion!” The first saleswoman to have greeted Fane gave a wan smile. Although Fane was wearing regular clothing, she noted that he dared to pay two billion bucks. He was probably a wealthy man who liked to keep a low profile. However, his mother-in-law had missed a zero in her calculations, causing him to run into this kerfuffle. She believed that he would have given up on the necklace long ago if he knew that it was worth nine billion bucks. There was too big of a gap between 900 million and nine billion; that single digit made all the difference. No one would spend that much money to buy such an expensive necklace. That was why Fane would certainly give up on the Heart of the Abyss if she said that. It was way too expensive. Even someone from a second-class aristocratic family would have to think twice before buying it. “Oh my. Hah! What a coincidence, Fane. What are you doing? Buying jewelry for your wife? A diamond ring, perhaps?” At this moment, a young man walked in, a beautiful young woman in tow. Several bodyguards trailed behind them. Fane immediately flashed a frosty smile

when he recognized the intruder. It was Kelly, the young master of the Gold family, and Cecilia Taylor. “I’m buying a necklace. What diamond ring? I’ll bring my wife over to pick it out herself when we’re both free!” Fane replied, a mirthless smile twisting his lips. “Hah! Take your time!” Kelly guffawed before turning to another saleswoman. “Bring out all the expensive diamond rings here, as well as the bracelets and earrings and necklaces and whatnot. I want the entire set!” “Thank you, dear!” The smile on Cecilia’s face brightened. She lifted her chin slightly, pride etched over her expression. “You’re so nice to me, dear. Unlike someone else who doesn’t have money and is too embarrassed to bring his wife over to pick out a ring. He’s probably scared that she’ll choose an expensive one, and he won’t be able to bring himself to spend the money. It would be so shameful for him!” “Really? Heh. Then I want to see how much your husband is willing to pay for you, exactly. You’re going to wear them during your wedding, right? Aren’t you afraid that no one would even attend your wedding, let alone someone to look at it when you wear it?” Fane chuckled after he heard that, casually standing to the side and anticipating the jewelry they would pick out. “You kidding me? I’m getting married. And what about you? You’re just throwing a birthday party for your wife. You’re the one who’ll be crying then!” Cecilia rolled her eyes at him, picking up a ring and slipping it onto her finger.

Chapter 770

“I like this, babe! Can I get it?” Cecilia asked. “Of course. You’re going to wear this on our wedding day. It’s about 50 million bucks, and it’s all worth it so long as you like it. Just buy!” Kelly grinned. “Oh, this necklace is so pretty. It’s a little expensive. About 100 million bucks!” Soon enough, Cecilia had her eyes set upon a gorgeous necklace. It was expensive, even compared to the other items in the shop. “Hah. It’s not expensive at all. It’s nothing. This necklace looks good. You’ll definitely be the brightest star on the wedding day while wearing this!” Kelly laughed. After a while, they

chose quite a few pieces of jewelry. The bill totaled to over 300 million bucks. They paid for the jewelry, then they noticed that Fane still had not bought anything. Cecilia smiled. “What’s wrong? You’re too shy to choose anything? Are you scared that we’ll laugh at you, saying that it’s too cheap? Didn’t you just win 900 million bucks from my man here? You should have quite a bit of money on you now. Furthermore, you have your own money, so you should have about 2 billion in total. Yet you don’t dare to buy anything too expensive?” Kelly went along with her and said, “Heh, don’t forget, my dear Cecilia, that he just boasted about throwing a birthday party that would rock the entire city. If he buys all this and spends hundreds of millions, he won’t have much left. He’s spending a lot of money already—reserving the hotel, stuff like that. That’s why he’s just buying all these jewelry as a mere token!” Cecilia pretended a look of realization. “Oh, that’s right! I almost forgot. He won’t even be able to afford the banquet if he isn’t careful with his money. Or he won’t be able to afford a lavish meal. He’ll be a truly laughing stock then!” She paused here before continuing leisurely, “Besides, no one pays that much attention to jewelry. So it’s enough to simply buy something that’s worth ten or twenty thousand!” “That’s right. Let’s go, Cecilia. He’ll be too embarrassed to pick something out if we linger here. Hah. Let’s quickly go and get out of his hair. We’ll let this poor son-in-law choose some cheap stuff for his wife!” Young Master Gold laughed. He came before Fane, looked down upon Fane with his head held high, before sauntering out of the store, along with Cecilia. After they left, Fane only noticed that the saleswoman who had been ready to bring out a few items for him was giving him a strange look. “So you’re that son-in-law!” She gave a bitter smile. “It’s all right so long as you mean it. No need to compare yourself to those people!” He gave a small smile when heard this. “Don’t worry. I’m not going to compare myself to trash like them. After all, a family like the Gold family has no right to compare themselves to me!” “Heh. You talk big. But why don’t you actually pick something out?” The saleswoman who had sold Cecilia her jewelry gave a cold smile from the

side. “They don’t have the right to compare themselves to you? It sounds as though you’re richer than them. Then buy something! I want to see what you buy!” Fane could not be bothered with her. He turned toward the first saleswoman. “I’m going to buy the Heart of the Abyss because my wife likes it—at least, I trust that she will like it. Besides, she’s the only woman who’s beautiful enough to wear it!” The saleswoman was speechless. She gave a wry smile. “Sir, that friend of yours said that you only have two billion bucks on you. The Heart of the Abyss is nine billion, not 900 million! You’ve verified that fact for yourself just now. More importantly, we have no intention of selling it!” “Nine billion?” Fane furrowed his brows. He thought about it for a while before speaking: “How about this? I’ll pay 20 billion! I thought that it was worth 900 million, that’s why I offered 2 billion. I never thought that I’d miss a zero there. Then allow me to add a zero to my offer as well. I’ll buy it from you for 20 billion!” “20 billion!”

Chapter 771

The saleswoman before him exchanged a glance with the plump saleswoman who had sneered upon Fane. They both took sharp intakes of breath. “Sir, are–are you sure that you said 20 billion? Did I hear wrongly?” The saleswoman gulped. She suspected that she was hallucinating. “You didn’t hear wrong. Your boss is a businessman. I don’t care about how big your jewelry business is, but businessmen are out to make money. I know that you won’t be able to make a decision as big as this. So why don’t you call your superior and ask about it?” Fane said after thinking about it. “All right. I’ll talk to our manager!” The saleswoman rushed into the office and called the manager out. Yet the manager was not able to call the shots either. He smiled at Fane. “Sir, we don’t display the Heart of the Abyss outside. Instead, we keep it inside for safeguarding. I can’t make the final decision, but you’re in luck. Our district manager who oversees for the Southwest district, so happens to be here. Please follow me, sir. I’ll take you to see him.” “All right!” Fane nodded his head. He was quickly led into a tunnel

by the manager. They wound their way in for a good few meters before the manager opened a heavy steel door. They entered the room. A beauty in her thirties was lying on the couch. It was evident she was tired, and she was closing her eyes and resting. “Manager Lowe, didn’t I tell you to not disturb me if there isn’t anything going on? We’ll be putting the Heart of the Abyss on exhibition tomorrow. I’ve been meeting with the media, and I’m tired. I need a good rest today!” The middle-aged woman wore a crisp white shirt, and she radiated a powerful aura. After she said that, she looked at Fane. “Why did you bring a man in?” she asked impatiently. Fane ignored her. His attention was already pinned onto a necklace inside a glass casing that stood in the middle of the room. A jewel the color of dark blood was its crowning glory, and the other gemstones sparkling in its circumference made it seem even more otherworldly. It was magnificent. “So this is the Heart of the Abyss. It’s beautiful. No wonder it’s selling for such a high price!” He commented as he walked over and observed it. “Hey! Who are you? Who told you that you could just waltz in here? Don’t you dare get close to the Abyss!” The beauty shot up to her feet and gave Fane a warning glare. This was an extremely expensive item. What if he was up to no good? “Manager Lynch, this customer wishes to buy the Heart of the Abyss. That’s why I brought him in!” Store Manager Lowe explained to the district manager. Fane also studied Manager Lynch. He could tell that she was no ordinary woman. Judging from her eyes and her taut, yet relaxed position, she was probably a good fighter. “We’re not selling!” Manager Lynch relaxed a little after she heard that. “Manager Lowe, it’s not like you don’t know that there’s only one of its kind in the world. This is our crown jewel, and we use it specially for publicity. We’re just bringing it here for an exhibition. I may be the district manager of the Southwest, but even I can’t do much. Besides, this item is not for sale!”

Chapter 772

“I’m sorry, sir, but we’re not selling this. Our manager was not clear about this. I apologize for wasting your precious time!” It was evident that the beautiful manager before him was slightly unhappy, but she knew that not any person could think of buying the Heart of the Abyss. That was why she flashed a radiant smile at Fane. “Ma’am, this man here is offering us 20 billion bucks. That’s why I wanted to ask you about this. He’s offering a huge sum. What if the people up top consider selling it? I was afraid that you would pin the blame on me if we missed the opportunity!” Store Manager Lowe’s eyes flickered toward Manager Lynch’s. He spoke hesitantly. “20 billion?” Naturally, Manager Lynch was surprised when she heard this number. Her lips parted. This man was offering too much. This was just a necklace. Was it worth it to spend that much money on it? The necklace was very beautiful though. Any woman would like it. “Can you make the decision, Manager Lynch?” Fane gave a wan smile. “I simply must obtain this necklace!” he added. “I–I’ll ask the boss at our headquarters. I’ll immediately video call him!” Manager Lynch gulped and whipped her phone out. She immediately video called her boss. “Heh. Miss Lynch, why are you video calling me? We’re going to put the Heart of the Abyss on display tomorrow. Make sure that you perform your bodyguard duties well, all right? We cannot afford a single mistake!” An old man with frazzled hair sat on the other end of the line. He chuckled as he spoke, and he looked very approachable. “Boss, we have a customer here who wants to buy the Heart of the Abyss…” Manager Lynch looked at Fane, who stood behind her. She angled the phone so that he appeared on the screen as well. The smile on the old man’s face instantly hardened. “Miss Lynch, the Abyss is worth nine billion, but didn’t I say that its value is worth far more than that?” he answered. “There’s only one of its kind in the entire world. Besides, the Heart of the Abyss is our treasure. It’s not for sale. We won’t be able to find anything to replace it anytime soon. More importantly, this is what we use to promote our store!” Manager Lynch reacted quickly, as though she understood something. “So what you’re saying is that the Heart of the Abyss

holds unparalleled value, right, Boss? Including the advertisements and being out signature product!" The old man nodded his head. He smiled towards Fane. "First of all, sir, I thank you very much for showing interest in our products, and for admiring the Heart of the Abyss so much. But we cannot simply sell this to you…" Manager Lynch pondered for a while, then she cut in before the old man could finish his sentence: "But this man is offering us 20 billion bucks, Boss. Are you sure you don't want to consider his offer?" The old man on the phone creased his brows, obviously considering the offer. After a while, he gave a bitter smile. "I'm sorry, sir…" Fane realized that 20 billion was not enough to persuade the old man, considering how he rejected the offer. "30 billion!" Fane took a step forward and told the old man. The old man was taken aback for a moment. "Sir, you're really making this difficult for us. There is implicit value in that necklace…" "40 billion!" Fane offered again. "But…" The old man was growing speechless… "50 billion!"

Chapter 773

Fane was too tired to continue with the negotiation drama. The sign of hesitation plastered on the other party's face grew more and more obvious, it meant this 'Heart of the Abyss' was truly not ordinary jewelry. Besides, to Fane, 50 billion bucks was nothing. "Are…are you sure? 50 billion?" The boss was visibly elated with the price. "Hehe, boss, do I look like I'm joking?" Fane loosened a chuckle in return. "You have the deal!" "We thank you so much for choosing our 'Heart of The Abyss'. I, on behalf of Cathysia Juwel, am willing to give away 20 million bucks worth of other jewelry for you to choose!" The boss added excitedly. "Wow! Just about right! I need to purchase some diamond rings and earrings too!" Fane's mood lightened, letting out joyous laughter. "Glad to be doing business with you!" "Me too!" The boss hung up the video call on his mobile phone. He was ostensibly elated for customers like Fane—generous and magnanimous. It was his first time in his lifetime encountering such a customer. When the commoners

purchased pieces of jewelry in their shop, the most frequent question they asked was if there were any discounts or free gifts. Meanwhile, this guy did not even ask for a discount nor gift but instead raised the price, billions by billions. If they were not the ones dealing with Fane today, they would not believe such a customer existed. It would be extremely hard to believe that this was true. “Sir…sir, do you really mean it?” The good-looking manager asked in a trembling tone, her hands shaking. For a person who was able to shout out 50 billion bucks in such a casual manner, his net-worth must be at least thousands of billions, perhaps even more. Furthermore, this man’s whole being was sharp, he was standing straight, and firm and his eyes shot out a ray of perseverance, which made her feel that this man before him must be a veteran who had just returned from the military. This was because an ordinary man would not have such a unique aura and temperament. “Pay with a card?” A credit card coated completely with predominant golden colorhanding was presented before the manager. Fane chuckled and gestured to her to take the card. The first thought that came into Manager Lynch’s mind was that this card was privileged and elite, though she had not seen this type of card before. She bobbed her head frantically and then turned to the store manager, “Quickly get the POS machine over, and I will pack up the ‘Heart of the Abyss’ for this gentleman!” “All right!” The female store manager flashed a warm smile and left the private room. Few lines appeared between Fane’s brows; a strange feeling stirred within him. Why did not Manager Lynch pack up the necklace for him first and then went out to swipe the card together? After all, he still had to leave the room and pick the other jewels. Never did he expect, once the store manager left the room, Manager Lynch shot him a few alluring gazes while packing up the ‘Heart of the Abyss’. Then she slowly leaned towards Fane and breathed out slowly, “Dear Sir, can I have your Twitter account? In the future, if Cathysia Juwel produces or stocks in some fine accessories, I could send you some photos!” Fane’s face sunk in the next second; he was speechless. It seemed like the way he raised the price just now had made this good-

looking district manager's heart beating fast. Although the salary for such an executive was certainly not close to low, in the face of such a generous and manly Fane, she was somewhat moved and unable to resist his personal charm. Fane flashed a wan smile, "I don't normally come to these jewelry shops. I bought this necklace for my wife!" Fane was hinting to the other party that he was married. As long as the other party was not a fool, she would not press further on the matter of Twitter. After Manager Lynch had packed up the necklace, she handed it over to Fane, her eyes were completely filled with amorous colors. "It's just adding friends on Twitter. Don't tell me you're scared of a lady like me?" As she spoke, she caressed Fane's hand while handing the jewelry box over. Her tone was provocative and suggestive.

Chapter 774

However, Fane admitted that the manager before him was indeed gorgeous and charming, no matter her temperament or her body figure. Those eyes of her were even more seductive yet captivating. If Fane were the other ordinary man, he would have fallen into her erotic trap. He grabbed the box and smiled indifferently, "I don't think this is necessary. After all, our house is not very far from here. If I'm in need of buying any jewelry, I can just drop by here and see!" Signs of disappointment flashed in Manager Lynch's eyes; she was disheartened at Fane's words. A dirty trick suddenly popped up in her mind and then she pretended to twist her ankle and fell into Fane's embrace. "Ah!" Fane's immediate reflex was to support her from falling further and helped her to stabilize. "Are you alright?" "I'm sorry, I'm so sorry! These high heels are too high and uncomfortable. I nearly tripped because of them!" Manager Lynch's face was kissed pink, and she was tongue-tied at the situation. She had already acted so proactively, and yet Fane did not show any hint of being attracted! It seemed like Fane was truly not interested in other women, even a beauty like her. She had never behaved in such a sultry and dirty way; she did not budge in the slightest in

front of any other average wealthy people, even looked down upon them. After all, she had always been a conservative person, and coupled with her high academic qualification and salary, she would naturally have an eye for a perfect man like Fane. Many filthy rich young masters had been wanting to hook her up, but none of them succeeded as she did not give them any chance. Today, this man before her was not only good-looking and with a benevolent temperament, but also his manly behaviors had captivated her, especially during the moment he raised the price billions by billions. Money to him was nothing but stacks of toilet papers—he did not care at all. Such a man had completely fascinated her. Besides, this was also her first time being so proactive in pleasing a man. She wanted to be conquered by this man; she wanted to become his proudest trophy. However, this man did not even bother to spare her a gaze. “Sir, please swipe your card with this POS machine. Also, our boss has informed us that you still have 10 million bucks for the other jewels. I will show you the way later!” Store Manager Lowe entered the private room with a POS machine in her hand. She quickly let Fane make the payment. “Manager Lynch, I’m sorry for interrupting your break time. I’ll follow Manager Lowe to pick some other necklace and ring!” Fane gave a faint smile and went out of the room with Store Manager Lowe. The awkward smile on Manager Lynch’s face disappeared in the next second the two left. She closed the door feebly, feeling a little lost. Her eyes turned towards the direction of the place where the Heart of The Abyss was once placed, and her heart sank deeply. “Oh ya! Manager Lowe, I need a favor from you. There’s something I need you to pass on to Manager Lynch in a while!” After choosing the ring, earrings, and bracelet, Fane quickly thought of something and turned to Store Manager Lowe. “Could you help me to pass on this message to her? That the Heart of The Abyss has already been sold to me, and you won’t be able to exhibit it tomorrow! Hence please announce to the public that it has been sold. As for the fact that I bought it for 50 billion bucks, I hope this can remain a secret. Could you please help?” “Do you mean we keep the 50 billion bucks as a secret?” Store Manager

Lowe was stunned at Fane's request. "Sir, if we announce that the necklace was sold for 50 billion bucks, wouldn't it be great for you in front of your friend and family? Sir, you're too low profile!" 'Hehe, this is not about me being low profile. If my wife knew that I've spent 50 billion for a 9 billion worth necklace, she would scold me! She will say that I squander hard-earn money. Fane explained in a casual tone, a warm smile showing on his face. A flash of enlightenment, at the same time, a flicker of envy stirred within Store Manager Lowe when she heard his explanation. "I'm envious of your wife! You're so willing to spend money on her and consider everything for her!" By the way, if you and Manager Lynch are available on that day, feel free to come to my wife's birthday party!" Fane chuckled.

Chapter 775

"No way! Are you serious? We can come too?" Fane's invitation elevated Store Manager Lowe's mood that she almost jumped for joy. A birthday party by a big shot was the sweetest dream that one could have! Besides, those who would be attending the party were definitely not ordinary people. They must have possessed certain statuses in the Middle Province. "Absolutely! Just come over empty-handed and tell the guards that you got my permission!" After giving some thought to the matter, Fane showed another warm smile and then left the shop. "Wait. That's not quite right. Isn't he only the adopted son-in-law? Can a son-in-law have so much money?" After Fane exited the door, Store Manager Lowe, who had finally calmed down, thought of somethingasof and yelled in surprise. "This fella is too low profile. 50 billion for a necklace? Just wow! No wonder he promised to give his wife a birthday party that will shake the whole Middle Province. He's so damn rich!" The first thing that Fane did once he arrived at home was to hide the Heart of the Abyss, only then he went to search for his wife. At this time, Selena was strolling leisurely in the garden. As soon as she saw Fane approaching her, she shot him a blank look. "Fane Woods! You disappeared early in the morning! Where did you go, huh?" Fane let

out adorable giggles, extended his hands into his pockets, and pulled out several boxes. “Look, your birthday is around the corner. So I went out to buy you some nice accessories!” “What? How could you go without me? Are you trying to surprise me?” Inside Selena’s reprimand, hid a hint of happiness; a giggly smile plastered on her face. She took one of the boxes and opened it. “Did you purchase in Cathysia Juwel? Their accessories are exorbitantly expensive. Here, look, there’re gems on it, it must be expensive, right? And all these things added up must have cost you a lot!” Fane smiled lightly, “It’s not expensive, it’s merely over nine million!” “What the heck? Over nine million bucks, and yet you said it’s not expensive?” Selena almost fainted at the number. Few lines formed between her brows, and she started to nag in a firmer tone, “No, dear, no! Your act is called impulsive purchase! You’re basically squandering money. Both of us don’t have a job right now and yet you spent so much money on these. If everyone in our house spends like you do, what do you think will happen to our savings? Even if you’ve won 10 billion in billiards, you shouldn’t squander like this!” Nonetheless, these reprimands of Selena’s are like sunshine flooded into Fane’s chest—he felt warm and elated. He wrapped his arms around Selena and pulled her into his embrace. “You silly. This is our first birthday celebration together, I’d break my bank for it!” “Hey, hey, let me go. Others are watching!” Contentment filled her heart as her face turned rosy pink. “Fane Woods, you stupid brat. You’re so heroic, huh? I just got to know that you’ve beaten Young Master Drake up! Are you trying to dig a grave for yourself?” At this time, Fiona returned from her shopping and started to yell at Fane as soon as she spotted Fane in the garden. “Mother, yes, I did beat him up. I went to Drake’s residence last night. And that’s because he deserves it. As for the reason why I hit him, you don’t have to worry anymore. I’ve already settled it!” Fane smiled dryly and admitted the deed without hesitation. “Get out from our house, now! You’ve offended the Drake family, aren’t you having a death wish? I don’t even bother to find out why you beat him up, it must be because he fired you and Selena, and you feel displeased with his action!

But you can’t hit people because of that either!” Fiona pointed at the gate, gave him a dismissive wave of her hands, yelling Fane to get out.

Chapter 776

“The heck are you talking about, Ma? Young Master Drake deserved a beating. Anyway, what’s over is over. I don’t think Fane did anything wrong. He helped me to release my anger—that’s why he beat Young Master Drake up!” Selena was extremely angry when she heard what her mother said. She snarled at Fiona. “I wouldn’t want that to happen to you either, Selena. But he’s from the Drake family. Offending them is like signing your death certificate!” Fiona was truly worried. “What’s going on, Ma?” Ben and Andrew walked out and asked, their expressions furrowed in concern. Fiona released a sigh and shot Fane a vicious glare. “I just heard that this fellow had gone and beaten the young master of the Drake family up,” she explained to Ben. “Isn’t it infuriating? I heard that Young Master Drake is still being hospitalized, and his condition is uncertain!” “No way. Weren’t you being a little brash, Fane? We understand why you spoke against him in the first place—you did it for the ten billion bucks, right? Even if speaking against him would mean embarrassing him in front of everyone. And of course, Young Master Drake did go overboard by firing Selena as well!” Andrew stepped forward, his brows drawing together. “But it’s too much, isn’t it, beating up a young master just because of that?” he continued, “They even offered the two of you, jobs in the first place. They’re stronger than some first-class aristocratic families. Aren’t you afraid that they’ll destroy the entire Taylor family?” “That’s right!” Fiona interjected immediately, “So shouldn’t we chase him out now? He invited disaster upon himself. He shouldn’t drag us into it!” Ben spoke up after thinking for a while, “Ma, it’s true that Fane was being rash, but he did lash out for Selena’s sake. We don’t have much choice now. The past is all in the past. All of us should just leave together. I think James Drake won’t let us off that easily no matter what we say since his son has been beaten up. We can’t just

single Fane out. The rest of us won't be able to escape either!" "That's right. Why don't we all leave together? It hurts my heart to think of leaving this villa, but we can bring our valuables along with us. Most of our money is in the bank anyway that can be easily accessed with our cards!" Fiona instantly suggested, realizing that Ben's words made sense. "Don't be afraid, Father, Mother. They won't come to us looking for trouble!" Fane flashed a bitter smile as he watched everyone fly into panic mode. "Think about it. I brought Selena along last night and caused a ruckus for them. They would have done something about it yesterday if they really wanted to retaliate. Furthermore, it's already this late into the morning, but they haven't sent anyone over. Do you really think they'll come? If you do, wouldn't they be scared that we would take off sooner?" Realization dawned upon Ben when he heard Fane's words. "You're right. If they really wanted to find trouble with us, they probably would have done so yesterday night or this morning. They wouldn't have waited until now." "Hmm. That's true…" Andrew also seemed to realize that the idea made sense. "But I really think that the Drake family won't let us off so easily. It's possible that they prioritized sending Young Master Drake to the hospital because he was so badly injured. Maybe they've already sealed off all the roads leading out of the city. We probably won't even have a chance to escape. They'll come for us once their young master has fully recovered!" Fiona was still fearful—to the point that her imagination began to run wild. "Ma, all this actually happened because Young Master Drake tried to take advantage of me. He was a little drunk last night when he came into the office, and he tried to get all touchy. Fane only beat him up after he knew about this! I believe that even the Drake family themselves would think that this was rational. Besides, Fane is so strong. It's likely they won't cause trouble for us!" Selena cast a side-glance at Fane, then she explained everything in his place. She did not want him to bear the responsibility alone. "What? That Young Master Drake actually tried to…" Only then did Fiona understand that Fane had beaten Young

Master Drake up for other reasons, and not because of the job-relatedrelated incident

Chapter 777

She gave Fane a long look. “All right. I wrongfully accused you just now,” she said. “I thought you had gone and beaten the young master up because of what happened to Selena and your job. You really do have a valid reason for beating him up then, if that had happened!” “Ma, how did you know about this anyway?” Selena asked Fiona after she thought about it. “Oh, I overheard a few people gossiping about it when I was out shopping. It gave me such a scare that I immediately rushed back!” Fiona patted her chest, but she was still anxious as she thought about it. “But what if the Drake family lashes against us in secret, instead of broad daylight? That will be even harder to prevent. I really think that we should all just stay at home and not go out at all!” “No way, Mom. I’ve just opened my cybercafé. I need to make sure that everything’s running smoothly for these few days, especially when we’re getting so many customers!” Ben spoke with a smile, “I trust what Fane said. If he says that they fear him, they fear him. They would have come looking for us a long time ago otherwise.” “No way. It’s not like we lack the money from your cybercafe business. I won’t be able to live on if you ever die!” Fiona did not dare to allow Ben out alone. “Elaine, take a few of the other bodyguards and follow me!” Ben waved Elaine and a few other bodyguards over; they had been standing at the side. “You won’t worry if I’m going out like this. Right, Mom?” After Elaine and the others walked over, Ben said to Fiona, grinning. “Fine. Go on then!” Fiona waved her hand helplessly. “Master, Master! Good news!” At this moment, a man from the Eagle clan ran over to Master Neuman, smiling. “What’s going on? You seem excited!” Lee asked, smiling bitterly. “Good news. Heh. I heard that Young Master Drake has fired Fane and his wife, and the young master tried to make a move with the wife. So Fane brought his wife to the Drake family’s residence and beat the living sh*t out of Timothy Drake. He’s still

in the hospital now!" The middle-aged man grinned as he reported everything. Lee's eyes immediately brightened when he heard that. He quickly leaped to his feet. "Really? Fantastic! This way, we won't have to act so fast for now. We'll wait and watch what happens. Offending the Drake family is practically digging your own grave. Let's see if the Drake family helps us to get rid of that little punk." "Of course the Drake family would do something. James Drake has only one son, after all!" The middle-aged man said, smiling. "Mmhmm. Seems like the gods are smiling upon me!" Lee lifted his chin ever so slightly, his gaze filled with excitement.
"Tell everyone that we're halting operations for now! We'll wait and see how the situation is after two days!" In a flash, Lee's good humor had been restored. It would be fantastic if the Drake family were to kill Fane off. He would not have to do a single thing then. "Fantastic. Absolutely fantastic. Haha!" Ken was excited as well. He guffawed as he came before Ivan, Neil, and Xena before taking a seat. "What's going on, Young Master Clark? Looks like you're excited about something!" Ivan flashed a mirthless smile. He had finally recovered from his injuries, and he could return to the Taylor family's residence. He also thought about introducing Xena to his family sometime during the next few days. When he thought about the expressions on Ben's and the others' faces, delight jolted in him. "Fane has gone looking for trouble again. Hah! He really doesn't quit playing with fire." Ever since Young Master Clark had stepped foot into the coffee shop, he did not stop grinning. "I think we won't need to create trouble for him anymore. He has signed a death wish for himself now." "What? Really? Who did he offend this time?" Neil immediately knew that Fane had gone and offended someone else again when he heard that. After he thought about it, his eyes brightened. "Don't tell me he's offended a first-class aristocratic family this time? Now that punk isn't afraid of us. But he'll be in big trouble if he offended a first-class aristocratic family!" He did not expect Ken to shake his head. The latter earnestly tapped his index finger against the table. "He didn't offend a first-class aristocratic family this time, but the Drake

family!" A frosty smile spread across Ivan's lips as he registered the words. "You're joking, Young Master Clark. Fane has good relations with the Drake family, especially since he's constantly by Miss Tanya's side after he was hired as their bodyguard. He's constantly shadowing her, and they're pretty much good friends. Why would Fane offend them? He's not an idiot!" "Hah! It's all because of the ten billion bucks! That punk's head must have been high at the prospect of that much money!" Ken laughed. Then he told everyone about what he had heard in detail. "So that's what happened. He just pretended that he did not know how to play billiards and swindled Young Master Turner of ten billion bucks. Tsk. Leo's probably really good in billiards. No one would believe Fane if he claimed that he had just picked it up. It's obvious that he's good in the sport if he was able to beat Leo! "No wonder Young Master Drake could not suffer the sight any longer. So he helped to speak up, saying that Fane had gone mad for insisting on ten billion bucks because he wanted money. And he didn't spare Young Master Drake's reputation! That was probably why Young Master Drake was so angry that he went looking for Selena Taylor!" Ivan gave a wry smile and took a sip out of his cup of coffee. "Ah. What a pity. I had hoped that Fane would embarrass himself to no end during Selena's birthday party and that he would just curdle out of shame. Who knew that he won't be living for more than a few days now!" Xena, who was sitting beside him, thought about it for a while. "But Fane is the son-in-law of the Taylor family, Ivan," she said, anxiety laced in her tone. "Won't the Drake family retaliate against the Taylor family as well in a moment of anger?" Ivan furrowed his brows at the idea. "I don't think so. We didn't offend them. Besides, Fane and his family have never lived with us before. James is a reasonable man. They would suffer plenty of losses if they really tried to fight us, especially since Fane is a good fighter." Right at this moment, a phone rang out. Ivan gestured for everyone to remain silent before picking up the phone, getting onto his feet. His expression darkened as the call went on. "F*ck. Fane is

really dragging our entire family through the dirt!" "What's wrong, Ivan?" Xena quickly asked.

Chapter 779

She was a little worried. What if Young Master Drake suffered from serious injuries and his father was absolutely furious? It would be troublesome if they acted against Ivan and the others. It was a small possibility, but it could not be completely ruled out. Besides, it had not been easy for her to become Ivan's girlfriend. It would be extremely unfair if she were to be dragged into this and get killed along with everyone else. She would not even get a chance to enjoy her life for a short period of time! She could not let that happen. "The Drake family called to inform us that we're officially withdrawn from the Southern Hills development project. And they won't give us any compensation for breaking the contract!" Ivan gave a bitter smile. "The old man is super angry right now. He's calling a meeting for all members of the family." As he spoke, his eyes suddenly lit up. "Let's go then. There's no time like the present. Come with me, Xena. Since the old man has called all the Taylor family members for the meeting, I'm sure that Selena, Fane, and even Ben will be there. Since they're all there, I'll introduce you to everyone then. I'll let them know that you're my girlfriend!" Xena furrowed her brows. "Is–is it appropriate to tell them about me now?" "Of course it is!" Ivan splayed his arms. "Everyone will be there. If I introduce you and everyone knows that you're my girlfriend, Fane won't kill you off just like that, right? It wouldn't do if the Taylor family found out. After all, I'm their cousin brother! It'll be insurance for your life, announcing this. If I don't announce it, what if Fane secretly kills you to exact revenge for Ben? What if he says that he didn't know you were my girlfriend?" After Xena heard that, she too, thought that it made sense. She nodded her head. "All right then. I'll go with you. But I'm not prepared for this. I'm so nervous. I didn't even bring any gifts!" Ivan took her hand. "No need to buy anything. I'm just going to introduce you because this meeting

so happened to be now. Don't worry. I'm here!" "Ah, I would go over and see the look on Ben's face if I actually had a reason for going. Haha!" Ken burst into laughter. "Don't worry, Young Master Taylor. Old Man Taylor will certainly be angry because of how the Drake family had canceled all their plans, but it's not your fault. It's all because Fane beat Young Master Drake up. That's why the person to be reprimanded will naturally be Fane. The old man will give him thorough hiding!" Neil flashed a cold smile as he spoke. "That's right. I didn't do anything wrong. Nothing to be worried about!" Smiling, Ivan brought Xena out. Fane and Ben and the others also received calls. They all went to the largest hall in the Taylor family's villa. There were plenty of couches and stools all around. The Taylor family would use this space to discuss important matters whenever they cropped up. At this moment, Old Man Taylor's expression looked grim. The people around him all dipped their heads as well. The atmosphere was thick and heavy. The doors gradually opened. Selena, Fane, and the others strode in. "Hmph!" Old Man Taylor harrumphed when he saw Fane. It was clear that he was furious. " Grandpa, is there something wrong? Why did you summon us over?" Selena managed an awkward smile, asking tentatively. During the call earlier, Cecilia simply told them to come over and admit their mistakes, huffing angrily. She did not speak about the entire situation.

Chapter 780

"What's wrong? What's wrong! Of course, that hotheaded husband of yours went and caused trouble again!" At this moment, Ivan walked in with Xena, a humorless smile on his lips. "Ivan, why did you bring her here? Isn't she Ben's girlfriend?" Theodore could not help but furrow his brows when he saw his son walking in with Xena. Ivan gave a wry smile. He cast Ben a purposeful look before speaking, "Heh. Yes, Xena was Ben's girlfriend. But he's useless. He's already in his twenties, but he's still a good-for-nothing. Of course, Xena would want a more established man!" Here, he smiled at the audience and introduced her, "Everyone, this is Xena Jackson, and she's

my girlfriend. And we're a match made in heaven." Ben's expression soured, and redness limned his eyes although he was well aware that Xena was a cruel and horrible person. A woman like her was not even worthy of his affections, but he had been with her for a long time. His heart still ached when he saw her. "Oh. So she's your girlfriend now? Congratulations! It's only right that a beauty is paired with a prince, instead of some neet who only knows how to play video games all day. It would be a miracle if the girlfriend of someone like that didn't run off!" Cecilia spoke sardonically after she heard that, folding her arms across her chest. "Heh. One man's trash is another man's treasure. Of course, there would be someone willing to pick up what Ben sees as trash. Birds of a feather flock together, after all!" Fane gave a mirthless chuckled when he heard that. "But those who keep money-minded women will live to regret their decision!" "That's right. I've never seen such a shameless person in my life!" Selena also huffed angrily, furious in place of her brother. "You…you're saying that we're shameless? That we're trash?" Ivan was furious now. He took a step forward and glared at Fane. However, he quickly thought of something, and his anger quickly dissipated. Instead, he gave a wry smile. "Fane, not sure if you've been feeling kind of weak lately?" Fane was going to die after ten more days. What use was there in arguing with a person who was sentenced to death? Fane was stunned. He immediately knew what Ivan meant when he said that. The other man was trying to pry and see if he had taken the poison, and if there were obvious symptoms now. He wore a surprised expression on purpose. "That's right. I've been a little out of it lately as if my limbs are weak. But what does it have to do with you?" he said to Ivan. "Isn't it normal to feel lethargic during the summer?" Ivan's heart was delighted when he heard Fane admitting to that. Still, he maintained his composure as he said, "You look like you could use some rest. That's why I asked!" "Enough! I wanted to have a meeting to speak about certain matters, not for the both of you to argue!" At last, Old Man Taylor snapped impatiently. He waited until everyone have quiet down before speaking,

looking at Fane as he did so. “Fane, do you know what your brash decision of beating Young Master Drake up has cost us? Do you know the losses the Taylor family will suffer?”

Chapter 781

“You’ve got some guts, Fane, beating the young master of the Drake family like that. I think you should just get out of the Taylor family. Stop dragging us along with you!” One of the Taylor family members huffed angrily. “That’s right. That’s Young Master Drake we’re talking about, Fane. Sure, you offended some young master of a second-class aristocratic family before, but we wanted to preserve our family’s reputation plus you’re a good fighter, and you are friends with the Goddess of War. We wouldn’t want to cause you trouble so long as you didn’t overstep your boundaries. But you took this for granted. Now you’re so wanton, daring enough to hurt Young Master Drake!” Another family member was furious as well. He was afraid that all of them would be dragged into the matter because of Fane’s action. Fiona gave an awkward smile as she stepped forward. “Don’t worry, Grandpa Taylor. Nothing will happen,” she said to Old Man Taylor. “Fane had a good reason for beating Young Master Drake. It’s not just because the young master fired him and Selena. That man wanted to take advantage of our Selena, and Fane was absolutely livid when he knew about this. That’s why he beat that man up!” Here, Fiona pounded her chest. “But don’t worry. We definitely won’t bring the Taylor family into this,” she promised. “The Drake family won’t simply murder the innocents, right? The most they’ll do is kill our family!” “Heh. You really know how to talk, Fiona!” Theodore chuckled. “You’re not even part of the Drake family. How would you know that the Drake family won’t lash out against us in a fit of anger?” In reality, Fiona was not sure of herself as well. At this moment though, she could not give in. “It’s simple. They would have created a lot of trouble earlier if they had wanted to do so. Fane had beaten that man up yesterday morning, and it’s already noon the next day now. But I don’t see the Drake family’s people

coming over. So they definitely won't come over. After all, Fane has a good relationship with Miss Tanya!" "No way!" Ivan interjected immediately, "He's the young master of the Drake family. They have so many good fighters. How can they just let this slide? I really think that the best thing to do now is to surrender Fane to the Drake family. Make him kowtow and admit his mistakes and ask for forgiveness!" "Heh. Why am I the one who should kowtow and ask for forgiveness when he's the one who tried to touch my wife? Are you kidding me, Ivan Taylor? Do you think I'd do something like that?" Fane chuckled, his expression nonchalant. "It's best if they don't come over. If they do, I'll kill off every single one who steps in!" "You said it yourself!" Old Man Taylor looked straight at Fane. "Since you were the one who caused this mess in the first place, I hope that you'll be able to bear the mistake yourself when the Drake family comes. Don't drag the Taylor family into this!" "Don't worry. I won't!" Fane promised. "You won't? Grandpa, he's already dragged us into this. The Drake family isn't cooperating with us anymore. Southern Hill Real Estate was a huge project, and they don't want to collaborate anymore. We didn't earn anything this time instead we made huge losses!" Ivan was extremely furious. He shot a glare at Fane. "You damn idiot. Did you really think that you didn't drag us through the dirt?" "Ah. Nevermind. We've suffered huge losses, but Young Master Drake had disrespected Selena by trying to touch her. He deserved to be beaten up!" Old Man Taylor heaved a sigh. "We simply lost ten billion just like that. It's a huge blow to the Taylor family, but we won't starve to death," he said. "I just pray that the Drake family won't come looking for us, out of consideration of the friendship they had with Fane!" Right at this moment, a bodyguard of the Taylor family rushed in. "Master, we've just got the news!" he breathed excitedly. "Young Master Drake only suffered minor injuries. There won't be any complications!"

Chapter 782

After knowing that Fane had beaten up Young Master Drake, the first thing the Taylor family naturally did was to send out their bodyguards to inquire about the situation. Old Master Taylor heaved a huge sigh of relief upon learning that Young Master Drake only suffered a minor injury. Since the wound was not serious, perhaps Master Drake would not be so upset with them and make a huge fuss out of it. At most, he would find a hitman to slit Fane's throat, after all, others were not involved. "Thank God, it's only a minor injury. Thank God!" Old Master Taylor plonked down onto the armchair; everyone could see that the boulder in his heart was lifted. Selena and Fane exchanged glances and hints of dismay were obviously displayed in their gazes. The kick from Fane yesterday was not feeble at all. His kick was so powerful that Young Master Drake passed out the next second. It was impossible for his injury to be mild and most likely, he would be impotent from that kick. Nevertheless, Fane and Selena were no fool, it was obviously a beautiful white lie that the Drake family had spread. Since they were covering the truth, it meant that Master Drake was a sensible person, or at least he was smart that he should not make a hoo-ha out of this. "But, Grandpa, though Young Master Drake was only mildly injured, the South Hill Real Estate project is now down the drain. The Drake family won't allow us to continue with the project anymore. Who will make up for the losses?" Ivan could feel raw anger boiling in his blood knowing that Fane was the culprit for the huge loss. He could not just let this b*stard off the hook; he desired to find a way to cast him out of the Taylor family. "I'll pay for the loss!" However, to everyone's surprise, Fane stepped forward and proclaimed aloud. "Isn't it just ten billion or so? I'll pay!" "Hmph! Don't be ridiculous! Have you thought about it? What money are you gonna use to pay? The ten billion you won from Young Master Turner? Don't forget you've promised to hold a party that will shake the entire Middle Province for your dearest wife!" Ivan's face immediately lit up at Fane's words. Since this b*stard wanted to pretend to be some tycoon and offered to make up for the losses, why not? "Fane, what nonsense are you spewing about? You and

Selena are both jobless now! How can you afford to take up such responsibility?" Fiona nearly had a heart attack and her eyes rolled to the back of her brain when she heard what Fane had said. She immediately pulled Fane back to her side as she reprimanded. "Indeed, he should be responsible for this loss! If it wasn't for him, this big project would not have flush down the drain just like that!" Theodore immediately chimed in with a serious and firm tone. "Since the loss was caused by Fane, it's natural for him to pay for it!" "Yes. They're right! Selena's birthday doesn't have to be grand, just a few confetti, wines and pizzas will do. It'll be Cecelia's wedding on that day anyway, the whole Taylor family probably don't have spare time to celebrate with Selena. Oh ya! You really don't even have to prepare a lot of food, since all the big shots and loaded authorities will attend Cecelia's wedding." Cecelia's mother echoed as she stepped forward. Fiona was burning with anger that her eyes were like two fireballs that could burn Fane into ashes anytime. This brat clearly did not bring his brain along with him today, otherwise, how could he spew such nonsense? Since Fane and her daughter were both jobless, Fane, perhaps, only had a couple of millions left. And the 90 million bucks that Fane won from Kelly Gold in gambling had been given to Fiona as well. Now, the issue was about the loss amounting to 10 billion bucks and this brat had actually said that he would bear it. Old Master Taylor nodded in agreement after giving the matter some thoughts. "Fane, this is indeed your fault and since you've said you'd be responsible, then you should transfer 10 billion bucks to the company's account!" "Hmmm. You're right. It's indeed something I should pay for!" Fane bobbed his head and asked for the company's account number from the butler, which then he transferred 10 billion bucks over. Seeing that Fane was such a responsible man, there was a hint of respect shown in Old Master Taylor's eyes. The anger that was swirling inside him a moment ago had dissipated now. "All right. Since Young Master Drake did not suffer a major injury, I hope they won't continue to look for trouble. But Fane, if they do come to avenge Young Master Drake, I hope that you'll step up and bear

the consequences. Don’t drag us down this abyss!” “Don't be preoccupied, Grandpa Taylor. They won’t dare to come, and if they really do, they’re practically digging their own graves.”

Chapter 783

Fane chuckled in return. His words made the crowd rendered speechless. This freaking snob had become more and more braggy. The other party was the Drake family; not some other small shrimps, and he actually dared to say such a thing. Fane and the others went back to their home not long after. The next two or three days, the Taylor family were living in a state of fear; whenever any of the Taylors went out, it was necessary to bring along dozens of bodyguards. While in Fane’s villa, Fiona did not let Fane and Selena out at all cost; everyone must stay at home. After two more days had passed and there were no signs of Drake family then Fiona felt a huge relief. It seemed like the Drake family was not planning to avenge Young Master Drake. “Hell no!” The head of Eagle Clan—Lee Neuman—who had waited for several days for an explosive battle between the Drakes and Fane, was tongue-tied at the current situation. How could he have imagined that the episode of Fane beating up Young Master Drake would be settled in such a perfunctory manner? Although the Drake family had announced that it was only a mild injury, Timothy was the young master of the Drake family after all. How could the Drakes swallow this anger? In the end, the outcome was only that the Drake family had discontinued the South Hill Real Estate contract with the Taylor family. Nothing else other than that. “James Drake, such a coward! He’s really…” Lee was speechless for a while. He initially had planned to use James Drake to get rid of Fane, but he had never expected that the Drakes were such cowards! “Master, I think it’d be better for us to follow the original plan. James Drake is a meticulous and careful man. And since the Young Master Drake was only mildly injured, and since the other party does not want to pursue further, we basically can’t do anything!” The middle-aged man looked at Lee and spoke. “Right. It looks like that’s the

only way to go!" Lee balled his fists firmly and responded. "We've to capture a few men from the Green Sky Hall. Once Fane kills our men, we'll kill those men as well! Only that way we can frame the Green Sky Hall for the deed!" After pondering on the matter, Lee reminded the middle-aged man carefully. "Don't worry, Master. We'll first capture three guys from the Green Sky hall and take away their tokens. It's much more easier this way. The moment our men die, the men from the Green Sky Hall will die too!" The middle-aged man revealed a sinister grin. "All right. Go ahead!" Lee gestured a wave of dismissal toward the man. "Dear, there are only ten days away from your birthday! Let's go out and have a stroll on the street!" Fane held Selena's hand in his as he laughed. "Honey, we haven't made any reservation with the hotel, right? Why don't we do that now? And I think there aren't many halls to choose from right now. Damn! Why did this freaking Cecelia have to do her wedding on the same day as our party! Not many people will come to our party then!" Selena flashed a bitter smile and continued, "But…hmmm…this isn't bad too. The ten billion would be enough to cover everything, but then now, perhaps, you are only left with a few hundred million. We should spend wisely, just a few tables here and there and some basics will do. Let me calculate… I think 10 million should be enough to pay for everything!" "Ha-ha! My dear wife, please don't worry about it. I've booked the hotel!" Fane smiled lightly and continued, "Just relax and wait for your birthday!"

Chapter 784

"No way? You've booked it? Which bodyguard have you sent to make this reservation for you?" Selena was at a loss for words. A few obvious lines formed between her brows as she spoke, "How many pax have you booked for? And how much have you paid for it? I'm afraid that our current savings are not enough to cover everything, then it'll become a problem! We don't have much money left, you better don't spend it all!" "Honey, don't worry. Relax, sit back, and wait for the day to come. I promise you the surprise will

be amazing!" Fane giggled as he pulled Selena outside. "Let's go, my dear! Let's go out for a walk, we can go shopping and then pay a visit to Ben's cybercafe to see how it's going now!" "How is it going? His cybercafe's first-day opening was yesterday!" Selena replied with a bitter smile. "Huh? Yesterday was the first day? Why didn't he say anything about it? I can't even send him a bouquet of flowers to congratulate him!" Fane's feature morphed into one of the true surprises when he heard the news. "It's okay, I've sent a bouquet over. He kept reminding me to keep it a low profile, so we didn't really celebrate the opening. Only in the evening, we all went out together for a simple meal as a celebration!" When the last syllabus dropped, Selena could barely conceal the sudden flare of joy within her that her face lit up. "It looks like Ben has really grown up. He's much more mature than before!" However, not long after the two strolled around the area, a scene of three men following a bunch of young girls appeared before them. One of the men was actually pretending to be blind, putting on sunglasses and using a pathfinder cane, and the young girls before them were wearing miniskirts. "What the heck!" Fane's face sank deeply at the scene before him. Then he said to Selena, "Selena, look over there! Those people who're pretending blind, they must be from the Green Sky Hall. It looks like they're taking photos of the girls' undergarment again! Bunches of b*astard! They just couldn't stop doing dirty deeds, could they?" "What the…" Selena looked toward the direction that Fane had pointed, and she could feel anger rushing through her blood vessels. However, she quickly thought of something and turned to Fane, "Wait, Fane, you're not going to intervene again, are you?" "Honey, you know me, there's no way I'm going to turn a blind eye to such a thing!" Fane ended his last word and strode hastily toward the group of men. He had already warned the Green Sky Hall not to continue such dirty deeds and the other party made the promise as well. He thought that the people of Green Sky Hall would naturally keep to their words, so he did not think much about it and send someone to monitor them. Never did he expect that they were still doing this dirty business under his

nose. It looked like the other party pretended to say one thing front of him but remained as a fox behind them—sly and sneaky. They did not take Fane's words seriously. "Hmph! In that case, if I don't send some of you to hell, you guys would think that I'm a paper tiger!" Fane walked up to the three of them and snarled, "How dare you still do such dirty deeds!" "Ah!" Those three young girls wheeled back and saw a man following behind them, wearing sunglasses and pretending to be blind with the guiding cane in his hand, pointing gently at his feet. The three girls yells their lungs out and stumbled back a few steps in fear. "Motherf*cker! Who the heck are you? Do you have a death wish?" The guy who was pretending to be blind removed his sunglasses without hesitation. In the next second, the three of them surrounded Fane. "No, I think you're the ones who have death wishes!" Fane could not bother with all the nonsense anymore. He leaped two steps forwards, swung his arms, and threw out three blasting punches onto each of them. "Ah!"

Chapter 785

The three girls were so frightened that they ran off at a lighting speed. Fane, on the other hand, squatted down and pulled off the tokens from the men's waist. There were three words carved on the tokens—Green Sky Hall. "Hmmm. It looked like these three are some honourable underlings in the Green Sky Hall, otherwise they wouldn't have these tokens. Fane let out a frosty-cold chuckle. His fists clenched tightly. "Fane, you could just teach them a lesson! Why did you kill them!" Selena quickly ran towards Fane and questioned in a worry tone. "You'll have offended the Green Sky Hall now that you've killed their men. This is the Green Sky Hall! I heard that behind them, there's a stronger and more powerful figure! I remember the name is called something like what, Kingston Hall? That Kingston Hall is nothing but the greatest of all Halls." "Heh! My dear wife, don't you worry about it. I have a good relationship with the Goddess of War, Lana. We're basically best buddies!" Fane giggled wholeheartedly at his wife's concerns

and threw the token aside before taking Selena's hand and whispered, "Hmmm. We've no plans today, why don't we pay a visit to Lana's God of War Manor?" "Are we really going? Will she agree to meet us? After all, she is the strong and mighty Goddess of War!" Selena's plump and rosy lower lip was in between her teeth. She felt that Fane was overconfident. It was true that Fane had saved Lana's life on the battlefield, but Lana had returned the favor! Fane's plan to play Lana a sudden visit, was it really a good idea? "C'mon! It'll be okay, don't worry!" "Everything went so freaking well!" While inside a car in the distance not too far from Fane and Selena, a man was incomparably excited. "That's too great! It's too f*cking great! I thought that Fane would've questioned them which hall they belonged to and make them kill themselves or something along that line. I didn't expect that Fane was so hot headed and actually killed them without hesitation!" "Boss, what should we do next?" The two other men inside the car asked. "What should we do next? Are you dumb or retard? Get out and dispose of the corpses! It's better to burn them and get rid of any evidence. Then we'll go back and kill the three real Green Sky Hall men that we captured the other day!" An evil grin appeared on the middle-aged man's feature. "I'm pretty confident that Fane will definitely go to the Green Sky Hall and make a huge fuss of the matter!" The middle-aged man and the other two, went off to kill the three men from Green Sky Hall after handling the three breathless bodies, and then they returned to Eagle clan and reported to the Head happily. While currently, Fane and Selena were chatting and strolling nonchalantly in a mall. They went to pick a pair of jade bracelets for Lana, the Goddess of War, then not long after they arrived at Lana's manor. In front of the manor, there were several bodyguards hired by Lana. It seemed like they were recent hires because apparently Lana did not want others to simply pay a visit to her and disturb her life. That was why these bodyguards were hired. "Gentlemen, we're from the Taylor family, this is Miss Selena, and I'm her husband. I've come to pay a special visit to the Goddess of War!" Fane smiled and spoke to the bodyguards. "The Taylor

family?" One of the bodyguards was dumbstruck for a moment, then he waved his hand. "I'm sorry but both of you better leave the manor. Even if a first-class family like the Georges, the Monts and so on, came to visit, our Goddess of War wouldn't see them. Not to mention that you're merely some Taylors!" "He's right. There was once James from the Drake family came to pay a visit, he was shooed away!" Another bodyguard guffawed mockingly. "Oh, then I shall trouble you to inform the Goddess of War about our arrival. I believe if you've informed her, she'll definitely see us!" Fane chortled in a disdain manner. If he were not afraid of his identity being exposed, he would really give these guys a good scold. He came here to visit his own disciple, yet these shrimps dared to stop him. If Yoseph Smith, Fernando Campbell and Ethan Haays witnessed this scene, they would have laughed their head off.

Chapter 786

"Sigh! Bro, it's not that I don't want to help you. Even if I inform the Goddess of War, it'll be in vain!" A bodyguard let out a defeated sigh. "The outcome will be the same—she won't see you!" However, he went inside as Fane told even though he had shown impatience in his tone. "Sir, Ma'am, the Goddess of War have a visitor today—the Queen of War—from another city. She deliberately flew a thousand miles to visit our Goddess of War. I heard that they have a close relationship. And this Queen of War is one of Goddess of War's subordinates too. So I guess the possibility of Goddess of War willing to see you today, is non-existent!" Another bodyguard sneered coldly at Fane and Selena and cast them a disrespectful stare. These people were from the Taylor family, a family who was lucky to be upgraded to a second-class family recently, and yet desired to meet the Goddess of War. Not to mention that Fane was merely an adopted son-in-law of the Taylors. He was confident that the Goddess of War would definitely shut them out. Soon after, the bodyguards who had reported the incident all ran out at the speed of light, staring at Fane and Selena in reverence. "Sir, Ma'am, the

Goddess of War has agreed to see you. Please follow me!" "No way!" The other bodyguards involuntarily released exclamations of shock. They never thought that the Goddess of War Lana would actually agree to see Fane and Selena. Soon enough, Fane and Selena were brought into a hall in the villa. A Queen of War in her thirties was chatting with the Goddess of War. "I have such esteemed guests. I never thought that the two of you would come to see me today!" Selena seemed a little nervous. There was a Queen of War and a Goddess of War right before her, and both of them were from the very top of society. Even though she had met bigshots before, there was no way she could remain calm before such eminent figures. "Hmmm. Not bad at all! Your house is well furnished! How opulent!" Selena did not at all expect Fane to be so comfortable at Lana's manor; he did not greet nor salute politely to Lana and the Queen of War, instead he started roaming around and admiring the decoration. Selena quickly pulled the corner of Fane's sleeve to remind him of the courtesy. Only then did Fane arched his hands before the two ladies and greeted politely. "It's my pleasure to meet you, the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs and the Queen of War, Queenie Lynch!" "You know me?" There were signs of shock and surprise in Queenie's eyes. A moment ago when Lana heard that Fane was here, she was flabbergasted with joy and could barely conceal her delight. She did not even think twice before ordering her bodyguards to let Fane and Selena in. Therefore, she was a little bit curious about this man—Fane Woods, wondering who this man really was, to actually be able to get such high regard and respect from Lana. "Hehe, I often heard of the Goddess of War mentioning your name. Hence, I naturally know who you are! Queenie Lynch, the Queen of War, who is not only good-looking but also her Flying-Dagger technique is impeccable. Especially the battle at the mouth of the River Hartmonth, it was marvelous and made you famous since then!" Fane chuckled and spewed those words out slowly. "You…this…I…" Queenie's cheeks were immediately kissed pink at Fane's words. How could this stranger before him know her so well? The most shocking news was that he said that Lana

often mentioned her to him. Did this mean that he always mingled with Lana? In that case, the identity of this adopted son-in-law of the Taylor family was clearly not simple. “Fane and Sister-in-law, welcome to my humble abode. Just make yourself comfortable. Fane is like my brother, always taking care of me, so don’t feel shy or anything, okay?”

Chapter 787

What shocked Selena further was that Lana took the initiative to lean forward and shake her hand. Lana smiled at Selena warmly as she welcomed them with open arms. “This…How can this be okay?” Selena was flattered and astonished, at the same time, she did not know how to respond. “What’s not okay with that? As I said, Fane and I are really close, best buddies that kind of close. So it’s natural for me to call you sister-in-law. As Lana spoke, her expressive eyes looked towards Fane and then only wheeled back to facing Selena. Seeing such intimate behaviors between both of them, reminded Selena of the episode that happened last time. Although the rumor of Fane being the sugar baby of Lana was purely a misunderstanding and Fane did not meet with Lana at all afterward, Selena could help but feel doubtful of their relationship. The relationship between Fane and Lana seemed beyond the ordinary ‘good’. Moreover, Lana called her ‘sister-in-law’, could it be that the two of them truly had an ambiguous yet romantic relationship? Even if Fane was not Lana’s sugar baby, such a relationship only happened when the two had reached somewhat an ambiguous romantic level, otherwise, why would Lana allow them in so easily, and she was being way too enthusiastic about their visit. “Oh right! By the way, this pair of bracelets is from Fane and me. We pick it for you, hope you’ll like it, the Goddess of War!” Selena flashed an awkward smile. She quickly thought of something and handed over the gift box to Lana. “Really? Wow! You shouldn’t have! Mi casa es su casa. Just treat my house as your own, don’t have to buy me anything!” Lana laughed joyously, and then continued, “Feel free to walk around! I’ll ask the kitchen to prepare a few more dishes

and we'll have a few drinks at noon later! I'm so, so, so happy that you guys can come today!" Lana disappeared from the living room to find the chefs right after she finished her sentence. More questions and doubts were mushrooming inside Selena's heart. She felt that the relationship between Fane and Lana was not simple. Besides, Lana had mentioned several times that just treated her house as their own, could this be a hint of something? "Could it be that they have a relationship beyond friendship, and they want me to have mental preparation first?" Selena bit her rosy lips as she murmured to herself. It would not be a bad idea if Fane were to have Lana as his second wife and everyone lived together. After all, Fane was a man who liked to stir up troubles. He had just offended the Drake family a few days ago. This behavior of his was too worrying and made the people around him unable to sleep well at night as they were afraid of revenge from the Drake family. Hence, if Fane was together with Lana, then even the Drake family would not dare to offend any of them. Besides, Lana was an attractive woman with such an alluring good figure, and she had high status as well. It was a blessing for Fane to be with her. "Dear, what're you thinking about?" Fane noticed that Selena was pondering deeply about something, he could not help but let out a small smile. "C'mon, let's go outside for a casual walk. It's really nice and wide here." He took her hand as he spoke. After saying that, Fane turned his head, faced Queenie, and said, "Dear Queen of War, would you like to join us for a stroll outside?" "I'd rather not. I've already walked around with Goddess of War a moment ago. Please go ahead without me!" Queenie laughed warmly. If she agreed to walk with them, she would be the third wheel, was not it? How could she be the third wheel when she saw the couple was all lovey-dovey? "Dear, Lana was not bad at all. As a Goddess of War, she's not arrogant nor brazen!" When they were outside, Selena asked Fane and looked at him like a sneaky thief. She wanted to study his reaction. "Well, she's indeed a good woman!" Fane bobbed in agreement. Lana was his disciple, of course, he knew that she was good.

Chapter 788

Hope bloomed inside Selena when she heard Fane's opinion on Lana. It looked like Fane had a good impression of Lana. In that case, was it possible for them to be together? Or perhaps they had been in an ambiguous relationship that was beyond friendship for a long time? At least, Fane did not reject Lana like how he did to Sharon George. "You really think that she's a good woman? I think the same too!" Selena lowered her head as she verified. Then she continued in a lower voice, "If…If oth of you think highly of each other, then…then… I think, dear, you can have her as the second wife. I totally accept it!" Fane's eyes were as wide as saucers and his jaw dropped to the ground upon hearing what Selena had spewed. "Huh? What's wrong, honey? What nonsense are you talking about? I do think that she's a good woman but I don't think of her in that way! Not in the adult way!" "But, what's wrong with that? Since both of you feel good about each other, we might as well think in that direction. And perhaps you will slowly develop feelings for her!" Selena burst out. "Besides, if you are together, I don't have to be afraid that you'll get into trouble and die one day! Because Lana can protect you!" "She protects me?" A speechless look covered Fane. "It's more like I protect her!" "Stop spilling nonsense again. She is the Goddess of War, how could you protect her? Do you even have that ability to protect her?" Selena did not know to laugh or to cry at Fane's account. She held his hand and continued, "Anyway, don't you think it's really strange? I'm referring to the Supreme Warrior. Who this Supreme Warrior really is? I heard that he is incredibly powerful, beyond all Gods of War. But unfortunately, no one has ever seen his face, so I'm curious!" Fane tried his best to hold back his laughs, at the same time, his cries when he heard it. Inside his mind, he was murmuring to himself 'not only you have seen the Supreme Warrior, but also you've built a family with him!'. A smile escaped from his mouth. He wrapped his strong arm around Selena's waist and said, "Honey, why are you so excited whenever you talk about the

Supreme Warrior? Don't tell me you've fallen in love with him, who's the strongest and most powerful man in Cathysia? Okay. If this man who happened to like you and asked you to marry him, would you say yes?" In the next second, Selena shot Fane a deadly stare and rolled her eyes. "What nonsense again, why would I say yes to him? My husband treats me so well, you're enough for me. Besides, the Supreme Warrior is so good-looking and powerful, and holds a high position in this country, even if he's able to notice my existence, I'm not worthy of a powerful figure like him!" "Okay, what if, what if you're worthy?" Fane smiled bitterly and pried further. "Well. That's won't work either. You're more than enough. " Selena wrapped her arms around fane in return and pressed her face into Fane's chest. Her face was red and adorable. "Silly, you're more than enough too!" In the distance, Lana, who was standing near the door, sneakily took a picture of the lovey-dovey couple in the garden and sent it to the message group. In this group, there were Nine Great Gods of War, except Fane. Usually, the chatting group was as quiet as a mouse, only a few messages popped out from time to time. "Wow, Lana, did I see it wrong or what? It's our Master!" Abner Young—one of the Nice Great Gods of War—exclaimed excitedly in a text he sent. "Oh My God! I haven't seen Master for a long time, is that woman the Mistress? The photo is only showing her back, I'm sad that I can't know what the Mistress really looks like!" Ethan Haays, who was in the midst of treating someone, was equally excited after seeing the message in the group. "Unfortunately, our Master does not want us to disturb his tranquil life. Otherwise, I really hope to pay a visit to Middle Province and see how our Mistress looks like. From this photo, even it's only her back, I can already deduce that she's a beauty!" Fernando Campbell, another God of War, could hardly contain his happiness as well.

Glyn Owen

and so we wait again

Chapter 789

Soon, Sam Johnson and the other Gods of War started to have a heated discussion inside. “Lana, I’m really envious that you get to be with our master. Oh my, such luck!” God of War Ethan Haays said in excitement. “Haha, you guys don’t know this yet but our master is trying to do a wedding ceremony for his wife on her birthday. Master’s wife doesn’t know about this yet and only thinks that our master is planning a birthday party for her. However, I’ve already booked a hotel as per the master’s instructions and he’s already given permission that all of you can come if you want to. Firstly, you cannot expose his identity as the Supreme Warrior; secondly, nobody can expose the fact that he’s your master. Decide what you want to do yourself!” Lana had a smile at the corner of her lips and sent another message to the group. “What?!” Ethan grew increasingly excited. “That’s great. We finally get to meet master after a long time and enjoy ourselves in the Middle Province. I heard that there are many pretty women here. Let’s see if I can get a wife here!” “How’s that possible? Ethan, you’re a God of War. Aren’t their loads of pretty ladies waiting in lines to have blind dates with you after you went home? You are still single? You have really high requirements!” God of War Abner Young replied in surprise. “By the way, can I bring my family members? Lana, I would like to bring my wives. I have two wives now!” Fernando Campbell asked in the group. “Fernando, you’re doing really good! You actually married another wife?” Lana said in surprise. “How can you be seduced so easily?!” Fernando continued to say. “Well, what should I say? There are so many pretty ladies that I had to give in to their seduction. I grew fond of a girl I knew from my younger days! How about you, Lana? You should get someone! However, you do need to be careful as you’re considered rich and have a high status nowadays. Observe those men carefully as some of them might be pleasing you in order to use your power!” Lana smiled and replied. “Don’t worry, Fernando. I understand this very clearly in my heart. Master has already informed me that everybody who wants to bring their family members can do as they please and treat this as a trip. However, the hotel I booked doesn’t have a

helipad. If any of you plan to come over in your private helicopters, you would need to park it on the empty space outside of the city and come in via car!" "Alright, we got it. Thank you, Lana! There are still ten days and I really look forward to it!" Fernando replied. "Okay, I shall stop here as master and his wife are walking over. I'm going to keep them company as I want to have some drinks with our master's wife later!" Lana once again sent a message that caused all Gods of War to be envious before placing the phone in her pocket. "How's it? Do you like it? James Drake really has a good taste and this place has got a really nice design!" Lana smiled and asked when she saw the duo walking over. "It's quite nice. I wonder how's the Supreme Warrior Manor? We should go take a look in the future!" Fane smiled and said. "I don't think you can go in and the most you can do is peek from the entrance!" Selena smiled bitterly. When James knew that the Supreme Warrior and Goddess of War were coming, he purposely ordered people to build a Supreme Warrior Manor and God of War Villa as gifts for both of them. Pitifully, the Supreme Warrior had never appeared until this day. Looking forward to his appearance in Middle Province was like a dream. However, the Supreme Warrior Manor was still useful as the Supreme Warrior could use it for his vacation anytime he traveled to the Middle Province.

Chapter 790

Queenie Lynch was surprised as she could clearly feel how close Fane was to Lana. After they had lunch, they went outside for a stroll. Fane looked at Lana and asked when Selena went to the toilet. "Have you done what I asked you to help me with? Is the hotel booked?" "Don't you worry, I've already booked the hotel, wedding dress and everything else! The wedding dress is a gift from the shop. What should I say? They forcefully gifted the best dress of their shop to me when they knew that I'm the Goddess of War. I think that Selena will definitely look pretty in it!" Lana smiled and continued saying. "As for the hotel, they decided to give us a 50% discount on

everything after they knew that I'm there to book the entire place!" "A 50% discount?!" Fane was embarrassed when he heard. "Aren't they afraid of losing money?" "Hey, you need to understand that I'm the Goddess of War. My appearance at their hotel is automatically an advertisement. The owner won't be losing any money with a 50% discount. Their future business will surely improve when they use me as their subject of the advertisement. These businessmen are very smart!" Lana rolled her eyes at Fane before saying happily. Beside them, Queenie was dumbfounded by what she heard. Were they joking? Fane actually asked Lana to secretly run errands for him? Apart from that, it seemed that Lana really enjoyed helping him. What was going on between them? She started wondering if both of them had some ambiguous relationship between them when she saw how close they were. "Alright, keep this a secret!" Fane nodded and looked at Queen of War Queenie. "Queen of War Lynch, kindly keep this a secret too!" "Don't you worry as this has nothing to do with me. I think I will be going back tomorrow!" Queenie smiled. She did not live there and was only here to pay her superior a visit. "Queenie, you cannot leave because you will definitely regret it if you leave today!" Lana smiled, glanced in the direction of where the toilet was before continuing speaking to Queenie. "Let me tell you about it. Fane prepared a wedding ceremony for Selena and it is disguised as her birthday dinner. He's prepared to surprise Selena and all the other Gods of War are rushing over to attend it. Don't you want to meet Fernando Campbell, Ethan Haays, and the others?" "What?!" Queenie was startled when she heard this. "Lana, did I hear correctly? You're saying that they are all coming here? All 8 Gods of War are coming over to attend the ceremony?" "Definitely! Do you think I will lie to you?" Lana smiled and said. "Oh my god, that's awesome! All the Gods of War are coming over? Oh my god, I...I can't even dream about something like this. They are actually…" Queenie was so excited that she did not know what to say and her voice was trembling. The Nine Great Gods of War seldom had the chance to gather when they were on the battlefield as they were always

leading their team and fighting the enemies. It was considered as a big occasion when two Gods of War gathered at the same place. It would be such a sensation if all nine Great Gods of War gathered at the same place! It seemed that she had made the right choice by coming over here. However, she soon realized a problem. Who was Fane? Why was he so capable and was able to get all Nine Great Gods of War to join his wedding ceremony? A person suddenly flashed through her head. This person had on a dragon-shaped mask and was a stronger master than the Nine Great Gods of War. This person was the strongest master amongst the entire Cathysia army. This person was the Supreme Warrior. All this while, nobody had ever seen the Supreme Warrior's true appearance. Was it possible that Fane in front of her was the Supreme Warrior? "Is...is it possible that you're my idol, Master Su...Supreme Warrior?!"

Chapter 791

Queenie's chest heaved in excitement as she looked at Fane, starry-eyed. Queenie's spot-on guess made Fane flustered. It seemed that he made the right move when he asked the other Gods of War to find an excuse when they came over. "You must be! I've seen you on the battlefield once. Your height and figure definitely matched the Supreme Warrior!" gushed Queenie once she picked up on Fane's silence. Fane nodded. "Keep it a secret for me, alright? I don't want others to know that I'm the Supreme Warrior." "But of course, I'll keep it a secret!" Queenie was so excited that she almost cried. "Ahh!" Queenie shrieked animatedly and rushed forward to hug Fane, unable to control her impulses. "I'm so excited! I'm so, so excited! I can't stop myself! I need to hug my idol!" "Queenie, Selena's coming back!" Queenie's actions stunned Lana speechless. Lana then turned to look and spotted—not too far away—Selena coming out of the toilet. Selena's jaws seemed as though it was unhinged when she noticed what transpired in her absence; she wondered if she was hallucinating. What was going on? Did they not say that it was Lana and Fane that had an

ambiguous relationship? Why...why is Queenie hugging Fane? She could not put two and two together, even when she thought about it deeply. Although Queenie was not as beguiling or voluptuous as Lana, she was a beautiful woman in her own rights. Was it possible that these two women were in a relationship with Fane? Selena smiled feebly before she made her way toward Fane. Queenie was surprised when she heard Lana's warning and quickly let go of Fane, though her nerves were still frazzled with excitement. This Queen of War—who was highly regarded by others—became Fane's fangirl at that instant. Queenie tried her best to maintain calm. She smiled and explained embarrassingly, "My apologies, Selena, I was too excited. I just… I just happened to realize that Brother Fane looked very much like an idol I know, so I couldn't help myself!" "Idol?" Selena wondered what was going on. She looked at Fane cautiously but was unable to make out who Fane looked like. She admitted Fane was rather handsome, but he did not share a semblance with any famous idol. Was it a lesser-known idol? "Yes, it's… It's someone very strong in our division. He's my idol!" Queenie quickly thought about it and explained herself. Selena finally realized what Queenie was talking about. "Oh, I see. You're talking about someone in the armies. I racked my head for anyone in particular, but I just couldn't find the idol match!" They rested there for some time before Fane left with Selena. The moment the two left, Lana turned to look at Queenie. With a bitter, disbelief smile, she said, "You almost exposed the Supreme Warrior!" "I… I couldn't help myself. This is the first time I faced the Supreme Warrior! Oh my god, I actually managed to hug him just now! I'm going to talk about this until the day I die!" Queenie grew excited once again, and her dignity as the Queen of War was nowhere to be found.

Chapter 792

Queenie's antics stunned Lana, and the latter said, "You should wait for another ten days! By then, the other Gods of War will be here and you'll be able to take a photo with them. You'll get the chance to talk all about it all

you want by then, don't you think?" "Yes, you're definitely right!" Queenie grew restless when she thought about it, and with a smile on her face, she added, "I never thought I could attend the Supreme Warrior and his wife's wedding ceremony. This means that I'm able to witness a historic moment!" "Haha! Look how excited you are!" Lana laughed. "Are you still in a rush to go back now?" "No! Definitely not! Why should I go back? I have to stay here and attend the wedding!" Queenie thought about it and continued saying, "By the way, since this is the Supreme Warrior's wedding, how much should I give as their present? How about one billion? Would that be too little? No, no, I need to give him two billion. After all, this is the Supreme Warrior's wedding, and one billion is too little to represent my sincerity!" Lana was speechless. "Queen of War Lynch, it's best if you stay calm, alright? It's too much if you give him one or two billion. Wouldn't you expose his identity to others if you did that? Wouldn't others start questioning it? Apart from that, I don't think the other Gods of War would give that much of an amount!" "If that's the case, how much should I give? I'm going crazy, I can't think straight!" Queenie was still very excited. ... Once they got out of the Supreme Warrior Mansion, Fane and Selena got on a taxi and headed straight to Ben's new internet cafe. "It seems the internet cafe is doing great! Business seems to be good!" beamed Selena, followed with a short chuckle as they looked around the second floor of the internet cafe. Meanwhile, Ben was talking with the cashier. Surely, the people who came with him—such as Elaine, who was there to protect him—were also enjoying themselves. Out of the blue… "Excuse us! Excuse us!" Several gangsters rushed in with baseball bats at hand. They pushed Fane and Selena away with arrogant expressions on their faces as they strode. "Is Ben in trouble?" Selena was slightly worried when she assessed the situation. "I don't think so." Fane frowned. "How's it possible that he offended someone when he just started his business? I think these people are here to cause trouble." The gangsters walked behind the counter before one of them said aggressively, "Our boss said that your internet cafe is interrupting ours. It's

best if you close up tomorrow, get it? If not, we'll break every piece of equipment in here!" "We're in your way?" Ben scoffed after he heard this and said, "You guys are going overboard. The business of your internet cafe is bad because your service is bad. Apart from that, your equipment is bad and old, and you're here to wreck the place because business is bad?" One of the men—with yellow-colored hair—raised his chin as he knocked on the counter lightly with his baseball bat. "Young man, we don't care about those things. Just close up tomorrow or we won't be holding back!" "Does your boss have a death wish?" Elaine and two other pretty bodyguards walked over, expressions darkened with anger. "Oh, and we have three beautiful ladies here. Tsk, tsk! I never expected this. No wonder business is good here... They have pretty waitresses!" One of the men swallowed his saliva when he saw those three pairs of legs that could go on for days. "Big Brother, look at the words on their clothes. Taylor family's bodyguard? What's going on?" Another man was slightly afraid. The yellow-haired man merely scoffed, "Don't be afraid, they're just some women. We have so many people with us! Do you think that we can't settle it? What bodyguards would blatantly state that they're bodyguards on their clothes? They're just lying to us, in an attempt of an intimidation tactic!"

Chapter 793

"You're right. This is the first time I've seen bodyguards with their positions blatantly written on their clothes!" The man who was initially afraid relaxed at the thought. "These ladies look really stunning. Is it possible that this internet cafe provides some other special services? Why else would their business do so well if it isn't true?" "Oh yeah. Why didn't I think of that?" The yellow-haired guy's eyes twinkled as he gulped his saliva. "Bastards!" Elaine and the two other bodyguards looked at each other before charging forward at the same time. In a blink of an eye, the entire group of gangsters fell to the ground as they groaned in pain. Fane smiled. "It seems like I don't have to intervene, someone else will settle this for me." It seemed that his

choice of employing more bodyguards was a wise one. At the very least, they could protect his family under most circumstances. “Let’s go!” The gangsters struggled for some time before they could get back up on their feet. Horrified, the gangsters ran away like drowned mice while their eyes were filled with dread. “Sister, Brother-in-law, why are you guys here?” Ben, upon noticing Fane and Selena, welcomed them with a smile. “We’re free and have no work to be completed, so we came over to see how you’re doing!” Selena looked at Ben with a pleased smile on her face. Ben had finally grown up. “Haha! Thank you for thinking of me fondly, Sister. Have you guys had lunch? Do you want to have something? My treat!” Ben chuckled. “Oh, we’ve eaten already. We’re just here to take a look, nothing more!” assured Fane with a smile. “It seems like your business is doing good. We’re happy for you.” It was then when Ben lowered his head. Shyly, he blurted, “Sister, Brother-in-law, there’s something I’d like to tell you guys. I… I’m in love!” “When did it happen? Who is it? It happened so quickly!” Fane and Selena were surprised when they heard Ben’s announcement. After all, Ben had not been in contact with other girls and was busy with the internet cafe all the while. “It’s… It’s Elaine.” Ben pulled Elaine’s hand shyly and introduced her to them. Elaine’s blush seared across her cheeks as she meekly said, “Master, do...do you guys approve of us?” Fane was over the moon. “Nonsense, of course we do! How can we not approve this?” Elaine was no doubt a nice girl, yet nobody knew she would date Ben after they spent these few days together. “I’m absolutely thrilled with this!” Selena was just as excited. She said to Ben, “Ben, I can see that Elaine is a good girl, and she’s a thousand times better than Xena. Don’t let her down, alright? You have to cherish her well!” “Don’t worry, Selena. He’s a weakling, so he won’t even dare hurt my feelings. We’ll be fine as long as I don’t hurt him!” said Elaine jokingly, a sweet smile adorning her face as she did. “Moreover, he’d never win if we ever fight.”

Chapter 794

Only then did Selena recall that although Elaine seemed obedient and cute, she was no regular girl. Her martial arts was better than Ben by a hundred times. Still, she knew Ben was someone who cherished his girlfriend with all his heart, so she was sure he would not bully Elaine. They were indeed a match made in heaven. “Alright, I’m really happy that the two of you are together. We’ll be taking our leave now.” Selena smiled and was about to leave with Fane. “Selena, since you’re already here with Fane and this is an internet cafe, why don’t you guys spend one to two hours here? Come support my business!” came Ben’s cheeky reply. “Are you kidding? Do you think we’re people who like to surf the internet like that? Alright, that’s it. Bye!” Selena turned around while waving at Ben. Meanwhile… “Ahem, ahem! Elaine, I hand Ben to you. He’s a shy person and doesn’t take the initiative to make moves most of the time. We know this because he had been with Xena for a long period of time, yet he didn’t touch her. Be more proactive, okay?” teased Fane. “Master, what are you talking about? I’m a girl! How can I take the initiative if the guy isn’t actively doing anything? I’m no loose woman!” Elaine’s face blushed a crimson color. She never thought that there would be times when the highly respected Supreme Warrior would make such jokes. “Haha! Oh, Elaine, you’re just asking for it!” Ben glanced at Elaine before quickly kissing her on her cheek. “Ah!” Elaine never thought Ben would act so boldly and kiss her in front of so many people in the internet cafe. This caused her to instantly turn very shy. This was also the first time Ben did something so boldly, and he ran far away after he kissed Elaine as if he was afraid she would hit him. Chuckles escaped Elaine’s lips as she saw Ben scurrying away. “Come over here, I won’t hit you! Don’t make me look like a shrew!” “You… You won’t hit me? You’re not angry?” Ben was in disbelief as he carefully walked toward Elaine. Suddenly, Elaine grabbed onto him tightly and pulled him closer so she could kiss his cheek. “Hmph. I want to kiss you too! You can’t be the only one who gets something out of this!” “Oh my!” Ben jumped in excitement, and many people in the internet cafe started clapping and

cheering after they saw this. Ben chuckled with glee as he gushed to the crowd, “That made me so happy! I’ll treat every customer here to two hours of free time!” “Thank you, Boss!” “The boss is the best!” Every customer in the cafe cheered at Ben’s announcement. Pleased with the turn of events, Fane and Selena happily left.

Chapter 795

Selena felt at ease. She used to worry how Ben led his life in a muddle, and she was also worried about him marrying Xena. She knew it in her guts that Xena was no good for Ben; the girl was terribly calculative and liked to fake things. Elaine was much purer when compared to Xena, and it helped that Elaine was much prettier as well. As they both had clear schedules for the day, they both went to pick up Kylie from school. Needless to say, Kylie was over the moon when both her mother and father came to pick her up from school. Her excitement was written all over her face. Everybody rested well that night. ... Fiona woke Selena and Fane very early in the morning. “What is it, Mother? I still want to continue my beauty sleep. Why did you wake me up so early in the morning? I don’t need to work nowadays,” muttered a disgruntled Selena. She slept rather last night, and it transpired after Fane’s suggestive comment about having a second child. Of course, they both slept late. Selena wanted to wake up much later as she was still very tired. She never thought that her mother would wake her at eight in the morning. “Listen to me: One of my best friends who married a person overseas has returned after ten years since her last trip back. She’s called me and wants to treat us to a meal!” chirped an obviously excited Fiona. “She’s treating you to a meal, Mother, and you can go alone in that case. Why do you need to wake us up? We’re not interested to eat with your best friend. We don’t even know her!” Selena was dumbfounded at her mother’s reasoning. She rolled her eyes at her mother and was prepared to go back to bed. “Get up! Don’t go back to sleep! There’s a reason why I’m waking you guys up. This is not just a normal meal. My best friend’s father has caught

a very weird disease, and since Fane knows how to cure people, I think he can go and help take a look." Fiona pulled Selena back to sit up. "Since your husband is going, you need to accompany him and go too. Apart from that, this best friend of mine is rather wealthy overseas! I heard that they operate a really big company there!" "Are you being serious? Sure, Fane knows how to cure people, but he can't cure every illness, right?" Selena looked at Fane as she pouted. Fane smiled. "Well, I can cure almost all illnesses. Even Ethan Haays's medical skills aren't as good as mine." "Fine. And you're starting to boast again," Selena conceded, though a small smile appeared on her face. "Alright, let's go. Let me tidy myself up and I'll tag along for food." "That's right. Isn't it nice as we're able to enjoy a big meal without paying anything?" With a pleased grin on her face, Fiona then told Selena, "By the way, bring your most expensive bag and put on your expensive jewelry, Selena. I remember how we were once poor, and I can see that even my best friend looked down on me. Hmph! Now that I'm rich, I'm never going to let a repeat of that happening." "Mother, you don't seem like you're going to a reunion with your best friend. It seems like you're only going to show off." Selena grew frustrated. Was it necessary to parade herself before others? "Nonsense! I'm rich now, and it's only right that I get to flaunt however I want to. Years ago, she snatched a man that I really liked and that man fell for her money," Fiona said angrily. "Eventually, she found out that this guy had relationships with several other women at the same time, and she went overseas after they broke up. Who would've thought that she'd marry a man while she's out there, and that man is also from Cathysia!" "Wow, Mother, I didn't know you had quite the story from way back then!" said Selena with a smile after she finished washing her face. "So you married my father later on, huh? You got your hands on a young master from a third-class aristocratic family?" "Absolutely not! The Taylor family wasn't a third-class aristocratic family at that time, though they were considered as a wealthy family who does business!" came Fiona's straight-forward reply, not beating around the bush. "It's a pity that your father is a

disappointing person and doesn't have much talent in businesses. I spent my life in a wretched way even though I'm married to him."

Chapter 796

Fiona's comment on Selena's father—her own husband—stunned Selena to the point she had no proper words to say. She rolled her eyes at Fiona. "Mother, Father is a very nice person. He's at least a person who doesn't talk much and is quite honest. He's considered as a responsible person and isn't hard-headed, and you should be satisfied with his character. Apart from that, he's never looked at other women all this while, right?" Fiona instantly snapped just as Selena finished speaking, "Him? Haha! I wouldn't mind if he gets another wife if he's a really capable person. On the flip side, if he's incapable and still wants another wife, I'll teach him a good lesson!" Fiona paused here before continuing, "On a second thought, if he's capable and can give me ten million monthly so that I can spend to my heart's content, I wouldn't even bat an eye if had two or three other wives!" Fane and Selena were speechless when they heard what Fiona said. It seemed that Fiona was really infatuated with money. "Let's drive the Rolls-Royce," said Fiona right as Fane was about to enter a different car. She chuckled before adding, "This car is much more expensive than the other cars!" Fane and Selena were dumbfounded for the nth time due to Fiona's choices and words. They could only agree and boarded the Rolls-Royce and left. ... The Rolls-Royce entered the compound of a grand-looking hotel, and they parked at the underground car park before they went to the lobby via the lift. Fiona looked around before greeting a woman in her forties standing not too far away from them. "Oh my, Irene! It's been a long time! I barely recognize you!" She led Fane and Selena toward that woman. "Fiona, it's been a long time!" The woman had on extremely heavy makeup and a branded bag in her arms. As Fiona and her company came closer toward her, Irene added, "You look good, Fiona! You've been doing a great job maintaining yourself, and you look rather loaded too. This… This bag is from Hermes, right? Tsk, tsk!

You’re a rich woman now!” Irene then turned to look at Fane and Selena. She smiled and asked, “And these two are...?” “This is my daughter, Selena, and my son-in-law, Fane,” Fiona replied with a smile. She was satisfied when Irene herself noted how rich she had become. “Oh my, your daughter has grown up! She’s got such a great temperament and a real beauty to boot. The daughter of our class belle is undeniably beautiful!” Irene praised them. Fiona’s grin never left her face. “Oh you, stop talking about it. Being the class belle was ages ago!” There was no lie; Fiona was the most beautiful girl in their class back then. “Oh, yes! This is my husband, Lawrence Watson, and my son, Jayden Watson!” Irene introduced the men standing beside her with a smile. One of them was her son and the other was her husband.

Chapter 797

Despite his portly body size, Lawrence’s height gave him the image of a burly man. He had a cigar in his mouth which he was half-way done with. He measured Selena and Fiona for some time before he smilingly said, “Haha! I’ve heard from Irene that her best friend here is the prettiest woman in her class, and now that we’ve met face-to-face, I see that you’re indeed stunning. Your daughter is all grown-up, yet you’re still so charming. You look like you’re in your thirties.” “Oh my, Mr. Watson, you’re too generous! This best friend of mine was also one of the prettiest girls in our class!” Fiona could not control the smile on her face. The group of three in front of her were people from the upper class, and their twenty or-so bodyguards were men from foreign countries. The bodyguards—including two men of color—looked rather strong. Fiona looked at the slightly chubby young man by their side. “Your son also looks handsome!” Fane was bewildered by Fiona’s choice of words. While Jayden was no ugly man, he was not handsome either. “Haha! They all say that. What can I do? All rich people look handsome!” Jayden wore a rather arrogant smirk as he added, “Cathysia seems to be doing quite well and is developing quite quickly, but

I feel that the air here isn't as good as America. The environment there is so much sweeter and nicer compared to this place!" Fane was downright pissed to hear such words. Had it been any other man instead of the son of Fiona's best friend, he would have slapped him with all his might. This guy was from Cathysia. How dare he say something like this just after living several years overseas?! "Is that true? I'm so sorry that you have to suffer here. I wonder why you still came back if the air here is so bad!" While Fane could not put him in his place right then and there, he could not help slipping a comeback at Jayden. "Haha! If we didn't have things to do here and didn't need to send my grandfather back here for treatment, I wouldn't have returned!" Jayden glanced at Fane and smiled coldly. "Your wife and mother-in-law are dressed up so well, but you're dressed so badly. Can't you dress up since you'll be having a meal in such a high-class hotel?" Fane merely chuckled. "It doesn't seem bad at all. This clothing is worth a few thousand bucks, and I think that this is good enough!" Fane looked at the clothes on him. His clothes were quite new and clean, so he did not feel that there was anything wrong. He would not have bought such expensive clothes if Selena and Fiona had not asked him to buy several better clothes. In his opinion, clothes were extra. He never thought such clothes would be ridiculed by others. Still, what Jayden said made sense as Selena and Fiona wore clothes worth ten thousand a piece. Compared to them, what he was wearing seemed out of place. Fiona's face darkened when she heard Fane's reply. She recalled how she only reminded Selena to dress up nicely in her haste, so much so that she forgot to remind Fane. She saw him wearing new clothes so she thought that he had worn something much more expensive. Fiona never thought what he had on was something only worth several thousand bucks. With a sheepish smile on her face, Fiona sheepishly chuckled and said, "My son-in-law isn't a particular person. We actually have lots of clothes that are worth tens of thousands and hundreds of thousands. He's just dressed casually today!" Fiona then hardened her gaze at Fane as she said, "Look at you. You're here to meet the honorable Mr.

Watson! How can you dress so casually? Please take care of your image in the future, alright?" Fane was rather unhappy with that. Fiona asked him to please the other party when they were such arrogant people. Was it only because they traveled to many countries and were well-off people? "Haha! It's okay, it's okay… Let's go downstairs now! I've already booked a private room for us!" Lawrence laughed and alleviated the situation.

Chapter 798

"It baffles me how a man who's daft in picking clothes to wear for certain occasions could get such a beautiful wife! I wonder how you get so lucky." Jayden looked at Fane again before he turned to walk toward the lift, his eyes filled with contempt. "I…" Fane balled his fists tightly and was ready to run right for him. Fane only managed to take one step forward before Selena interjected him. She stopped him with her eyes, and it was only after everyone else had gone before them did she say, "Why do you care about what trashy people like him say? Let's ignore him, and we'll leave after we finish our meal. People like this leave a bad taste in my mouth. I wouldn't have come had it not been Mother forcing us to come!" "Alright." Fane quickly stamped down his anger after Selena coaxed him, and he told himself to not drop to the levels of such trashy people. … The group of people soon entered a well-decorated private room. "Everybody can order what you like to your heart's content. To be honest, I grew up overseas and I seldom eat Chinese food. I don't really like the food here!" Young Master Watson sat down and still had an aloof attitude. Selena and Fiona smiled embarrassingly before taking up the menu and started ordering dishes. "Jayden, be careful when you speak. Although you grew up overseas and you seldom stayed at Cathysia, your mother and I are Cathysians. By default, you're also a Cathysian, with Cathysian blood running in you. Do you understand?" Lawrence eyed his son sharply as he continued, "The war that happened between both countries not long ago is quite embarrassing for people with our status." "Embarrassing? What's so embarrassing about

that? Didn’t Uncle Watson just say that we’re all Cathysians? This is nothing embarrassing, right?” Fane casually replied with a smirk. “Sigh... Although we’re Cathysians, we’re considered Americans since we’ve lived there for quite some time, and this goes especially for my son. He’s been living there from a young age, and he seldom returns to Cathysia. This is his third time back here, and we were the ones who specially wished that both countries didn’t go into war because we have feelings for both countries!” Lawrence sighed and had a helpless expression on his face. Fane started smiling coldly again once he heard this. “Haha! So that’s what you mean. After the rather detailed explanation, it seems like you two are almost becoming residents of both countries. This is really ridiculous! How can you not know where you’re from? What’s the difference between this and being in two relationships at the same time?” Jayden instantly slammed his palm against the table as he shot up from his seat, his hardened gaze fixed onto Fane in anger. “What’s with all this talk? If it wasn’t because your mother-in-law and my mother are best friends, you won’t be walking out of this hotel in one piece!” “Really? Just with these people?” Fane laughed and stood up after he heard what Jayden said. “I’m going to be honest with you: Your bodyguards are nothing in my opinion!” Lawrence intended to reprimand him, wanting to show his anger, but he said nothing when he saw Jayden getting angry. Lawrence smirked a cold smirk at Fane’s boisterous reply. “Haha! You’re rather arrogant for saying such things. It seems like you’re good at fighting. If that’s the case, do you want to test your strength with my bodyguards? You can choose who you want. How about that?” “One? Are you really looking down on me? They can all come at me for all I care!” Fane smiled coldly and looked at their bodyguards in disdain. Most of these bodyguards were Americans, and both men of dark skin seemed rather powerful. It so happened that Fane wanted to test himself out.

Chapter 799

“Sit down, Fane! What nonsense are you talking about? We’re here to eat, not to fight!” Fiona was so angry that she almost fainted. They were here to have a meal and to see if Fane can help treat Jayden’s grandfather. It never occurred to her that the situation would turn sour; she forgot that Fane was a man who liked to cause trouble. It escaped her to remind him. Fiona disliked Jayden, but she was aware he was still so young. Could Fane just not let him be? “Mother, I’m not here to fight. I’m here to exchange experiences with them!” Fane rubbed his fists and walked to one side of the room. “Haha! Are you sure you want to do this, young man?” sneered of the bodyguards—an American—with a condescending smirk. “You have to know that our countries are enemies. Aren’t you afraid that this fight will disrupt their peace?” The other party was obviously implying something to Fane. “I’m really not afraid of this!” Fane thought about it and signaled them as he added, “After all, you guys won’t be able to beat me.” Jayden cackled. “You’re really arrogant!” He then turned to Fiona and said, “Auntie, food isn’t served yet. This son-in-law of yours must be quite a show-off person. This is good, such a person needs to be punished so that his arrogant ways can be corrected.” Lawrence chimed in with a pleased grin, “What Jayden says makes sense. Let’s just treat this as an entertainment program, that they’re entertaining us before our meal. This is quite a good idea!” Fiona was at a loss for words upon hearing what the father-and-son duo had to say. She could only offer a sheepish smile as she spoke, “Alright, it seems like there’s no other way around it. However, everybody needs to be careful. It’s just a test, so don’t go overboard!” “Madam, that’d be quite difficult. Your son-in-law asked us to attack him altogether; he’s basically mocking us!” One of the dark-skinned men walked two steps forward and balled his hands into fists. “Still, I know I’ll be able to settle this matter!” The man then grinned widely, his pearly white teeth seemingly gleaming. He then rushed forward like a panther, and he seemingly blinked rather closely to Fane—fast as lightning—and aimed his punch toward Fane. “Such speed!” Fane’s expression seemingly morphed into one of surprise at the man’s speed.

These bodyguards were really strong, and this dark-skinned man's power was almost the same as Elaine's. "Haha! Are you afraid now, young man?" The black man in front of him smiled when he saw Fane's surprised look. His fist was just a short distance away from Fane, and he wanted to see if this arrogant young man could meet his punch. "Your speed really surprised me, but…" Fane curled his hands into fists and made his move speedily. His fist met the opponent's fist in a powerful collision. Boom! Uprooted, the man zipped through the air and landed on the floor. He felt a sweetness at his throat and vomited blood. "You're no match for me!" Fane stood straight and waved his hands at the other bodyguards. "You guys can come at me together!"

Chapter 800

"Let's get him! I don't believe this!" The brawny bodyguards looked at each other before they rushed toward Fane. Bang! Slam! Pow! Despite their numbers, none of them managed to even graze a strand of Fane's hair before they fell to the ground. The men were either clutching onto their stomach or chest in pain, their faces pale as well. Several people moaned in pain as their ribs had been broken. Lawrence and Jayden's face darkened when they saw their bodyguards lying on the floor. "A group of useless rubbish. How dare you guys claim that you're mercenaries?" scoffed Jayden as he stood up in anger. "You can't even win over a young man! I don't understand this!" "Young Master, we're not rubbish. This young man is genuinely too powerful and we can't beat him, honest!" One of the men had his forehead covered in sweat due to pain. "Young Master, my rib is broken! I need to go to the hospital!" "Get out, all of you! Get out!" Jayden asked his men to go to the hospital with a cold expression on his face. Fiona's best friend, Irene chuckled shortly before she smilingly said, "Fiona, this son-in-law of yours is rather strong. Although he doesn't have good etiquette, he's really good at fighting!" "He's quite good! He didn't waste five years in the army, and I heard that he's a head commander!" It was plain to see that Fiona was

happy when she heard how Irene praised Fane. Jayden sat down angrily and mumbled, “So what if you know how to fight? You’re just a dumb fighter! What kind of masters can’t we get if we’re rich? I can even get the number one assassin!” “Haha! Young Master Watson is really good at this!” Fane laughed and sat down casually. “However, that barely intimidated me. I wouldn’t be afraid even if you invite the Ten Great Assassins here! Of course, you’d have to spend a great amount of money to get them working for you!” “Fane, stop talking nonsense! You can’t make such jokes!” Fiona was startled when she heard what Fane said. Who did he think the Ten Great Assassins were? Every member was frighteningly powerful and deadly; Fane could not make such jokes even if it was for a bluff. Fane looked at Fiona and said with a smile, “Mother, I’m telling the truth. I’m not joking!” “Well, well! You’re quite arrogant when you speak!” Jayden laughed before pretending to be a gentleman. “You don’t need to worry about it. We Watson family aren’t petty people, and we won’t send assassins to kill you just because you hit our bodyguards just now. Apart from that, we don’t need to get assassins if we really want to kill you. There are many masters in our Watson family, and those who you just fought were bodyguards of lower ranks. You’ve seen nothing yet!” “The dishes and wine have been served, so let’s eat,” came Lawrence’s announcement. “Young Brother Fane is indeed rather skilled in fighting. After all, it’s quite difficult for him to fight so many bodyguards alone. His five years spent in the army weren’t wasted after all!”

Chapter 801

At this moment, Fiona spoke again, smiling, “Right, Mr. Watson, not only is this son-in-law of mine a good fighter but he’s also specialized in certain skills. I called him over today in the hopes that he would be able to help you!” “Really? Tell me!” Lawrence smiled, curious. “My son-in-law is a good medical practitioner and knows all about medicine. Let me tell you about a young mistress of a first-class aristocratic family in Middle

Province—Sharon George of the George family. She had been suffering from a strange illness, one that made her obese…" Fiona started narrating Fane's heroic deeds. After she finished her story, she said, "Tell me, isn't he amazing? He actually helped her to lose weight within three days. She went from a huge fatty to a slim and gorgeous young woman!" "What a miracle. To be able to lose so much weight within three days, he must be fantastic at what he did!" Irene exclaimed when she heard that. She looked at Fane. "Look at me. I've been gorging myself with plenty of good food, and now there's so much fat around my waist," she said. "Can you give me one of those miracle pills? Help me to lose weight too. Please?" Fane only flashed a wan smile when he heard that. "I do have the medicine, ma'am, but I can't just give it to you," he replied. "It's extremely expensive. You can't just hope to buy it with a small sum of money!" Irene suddenly felt embarrassed. "No problem. No problem at all," she quickly said, grinning. "Tell me how much it is. I'll buy it from you. Of course, something so effective would be of high value!" Jayden listened to the exchange, and suddenly felt displeased. "Heh. You're being so calculative. We treated you to this meal worth over a million bucks, and you're still asking for money for a single pill? Have you not seen money in your life before?" Here, he paused for a while before continuing leisurely, "But we don't lack money either. Tell us how much it is then. We'll just treat it as charity!" However, Fane simply smiled. "The Watson family should be able to pay for the medicine, right? Since you all have so much money," he said. "It's actually not that expensive. One only costs three billion!" "Three billion! A single slimming pill costs three billion! Are you kidding me?" Jayden immediately cried out, but quickly plastered on a smile. "Heh. Looks like you're trying to swindle us, knowing that we're rich, eh?" he said. Fane answered, "I already told you that the medicine was expensive. It's because the base cost is really pricey, and more importantly, it's effective! Someone like your mother wouldn't have much to lose anyway. If she takes the pill now, all her fat will melt off by tonight!" "Is it that miraculous?" It was evident that

Jayden was cynical. “All right then. Three billion it is,” he said. “Give your account number to me and I’ll make the transfer now. But if my mother hasn’t lost weight by tomorrow, I’ll have your head. Do you still dare to make this deal?” “Why wouldn’t I?” Fane straightaway supplied his account number. It was difficult for Jayden to go on, but he could not back out of the situation now, so he could only clench his teeth as he transferred the three billion bucks to Fane. Selena and Fiona were both well aware that Fane was indeed extorting the other man, simply because the latter acted so high and mighty. However, they never thought that Jayden would actually buy Fane’s medicine for the sake of preserving his dignity. Since they had the opportunity to earn three billion bucks with such little effort, they naturally did not bother to stop him. Besides, Fane had transferred the ten billion bucks he had earned the last time to the Taylor family’s bank account just yesterday. Now they were lacking money. Selena was also worried about what they would do in the future. Of course she was happy, being able to earn this three billion. Fane quickly stuffed his hand into his pocket and wiggled around in it. When he took it out, a single pill lay on his palm. He thrust it toward Irene. “Your son is pretty good, ma’am. He’s a filial one. This is the slimming pill that he bought for you!” Irene was a little taken aback. “You simply just put such an expensive medicine in your pocket? And it doesn’t even come in a box?” Fane grinned. “It’s actually not that precious—at least, not to me. It’s just three billion bucks, am I right?”

Chapter 802

Fane’s words rendered Irene, Lawrence, and the others speechless again. It was obvious that this fellow jacked up the price. Never mind that he extorted three billion bucks out of them, now he was actually saying that the medicine was not that precious. “Hah. It truly isn’t that precious. It’s not expensive at all if it turns out to be effective for Mother. And it isn’t that precious either, now that I think about it. After all, your head itself is probably worth three billion. It’s a pretty good head to whack!” Jayden said,

laughing. “Come. Let’s eat!” Lawrence spoke, grinning. He knew what sort of a person his son was. Everyone smiled while Jayden spoke, as though he were cracking a joke, but if Fane’s medicine turned out to not be the least bit effective, and with the three billion bucks he made them spend, he would truly be digging his own grave. Besides, if not for his wife cajoling them to meet the former belle of their class and to see how she was doing, he would not have wanted to come. It felt as though this meal was a waste of their precious time. Fiona smiled. “You’re so humorous, Young Master Watson. You really know how to joke around!” Here, she looked at Irene beside her. “I remember that the old master of the Watson family suffers from some strange disease,” she said. “After we finish eating, let’s get my son-in-law to take a look at him. He may be able to cure the old master!” “Never mind about that. My grandfather had been undergoing treatment for a few months in America, and he still isn’t any better, even though their medical industry is so advanced. How could your son-in-law hope to cure him? “I’m already dubious about the slimming pill he said would help my mother lose weight. My grandfather is already so old. If he doesn’t cure my grandfather but kills him instead, he probably won’t die alone. He’ll be dragging you, Aunty, as well as that darling daughter of yours!” Jayden swirled the glass of red wine in his hand, speaking slowly, a frosty smile on his lips. It was a threat. Definitely a threat. Fiona was a little frightened. She looked at Fane. “Fane, if you are unsure of this, don’t do it,” she said. “We’ll just head back after we are done eating. After all, Old Master Watson’s disease isn’t any regular illness. He didn’t even recover after receiving treatment overseas.” “I’m fine with it. I don’t know Old Master Watson anyway!” Fane shrugged his shoulders. He was truly fine with it. If Fiona had not bullied him into coming and diagnosing the Watson family, he would not have come. Furthermore, the family put on such high airs. He really did not want to cure the old man. “Heh. You’re fine with it? I think you’re just a quack. You know that you can’t cure my grandfather’s disease, so you’re suddenly guilty.” Jayden flashed a mirthless smile. “But it’s probably for the best. We came here to

search for the best hospitals and the best specialists for treatment. How could someone like you compare to a specialist?" Fane smiled after he heard that. "Indeed, there's no room for comparison. Because I don't even bother to compare myself to them. Sharon George had seen plenty of specialists here before, but they were all useless anyway." "Really? I'm really curious now, did you learn western medicine or Chinese medicine?" Lawrence smiled. "My father says that some of the Chinese medicine practitioners are pretty good. Honestly, I want to try it out—because I think that western medicine is the best. So much better than Chinese medicine. But the old man insists that Chinese medicine is better, that it could possibly cure his illness. So I want to look for a Chinese medicine practitioner this time and try it out if it to shatter his illusions about it!" It was evident that Lawrence looked down on Chinese medicine, speaking as though it were completely good for nothing. "I am a Chinese medicine practitioner. Your father has pretty good taste. The practice has been attracting less and less attention because there are less disciples of Chinese medicine now. Most medical students learn western medicine, totally oblivious about Chinese medicine!" Fane gave a wan smile. "But Chinese medicine can cure plenty of diseases that western medicine can't. I really think that Chinese medicine is much better than western medicine!" "If that's the case, why don't you come over to our house and put your words into practice? It's possible that you can't even diagnose what disease he has. Grandpa will die speechless. Hah!" Jayden actually guffawed.

Chapter 803

Fane frowned as he observed the grin on Jayden's face. He felt as if the father and son duo did not care much about the old master's illness. Besides, they looked like they were finding doctors for the old master, but there was not a single trace of sorrow within them—it was hard to tell if the old master was on the verge of death. "Sure. I'll give it a shot since you two disregard Chinese medicine so much. I don't have much to do anyway. I'll just help

to cure the old master then!" Fane stretched his arms and spoke languidly. His eyes were pinned onto Lawrence, who sat across him. He quickly noticed that the corners of the other man's lips twitched when he mentioned that he would cure the old master. He was agitated. However, his agitation quickly dissipated, as if it had never been there. "All right. But how much will you charge us this time, Fane? You can't just do this for free, right? There should at least be a consultation fee, even if you can't treat him!" Lawrence asked, smiling. "Don't worry. I won't charge you anything this time, and I won't charge after I treat him. Why would I want to charge you, after all, I can demonstrate the miracles of Chinese medicine and show you how it's much better than western medicine!" Fane spoke just as he was chewing on his food, so his words were muffled. Soon enough, they all finished their meal. Fiona was slightly displeased at how Fane said that he would provide treatment for free, but she decided to remain silent when she thought about how he had taken three billion bucks earlier. Not long after, they drove toward a villa. "The old master is upstairs. I'll take you there. My sister has hired a specialist. I don't know if she's back!" Jayden grinned as he spoke. He brought Fane and the others to the second floor. Just as they arrived at the entrance, they saw the aforementioned specialist walking out of the room. "Has he done the diagnosis? How did it go?" Lawrence immediately stepped forward and asked when he saw this. The specialist shook his head. "I couldn't find anything. We've run all the scans we can with our machinery, but we didn't find anything wrong. It's so strange!" "Ah. It looks like the doctors here are no good either!" Jayden released a sigh. Belinda twisted her lips into a bitter smile. "We still have to try no matter what. I'll go to another hospital tomorrow and get someone over to diagnose him!" It looked like Belinda was truly worried about her grandfather's health. After she spoke, she even turned her head around to look at the old man lying on the bed in the room. Her brows were tightly furrowed. "Let me take a look! I'm confident that I can treat him. I can see everything from a single glance." Fane smiled as he spoke.

Chapter 804

“No way. You can tell what the problem is just–just by looking at him?” Belinda’s lips parted slightly. She was extremely shocked, suspecting that she had misheard him. She looked at Irene. “Mom, who–who’s this? Is he a doctor?” Irene nodded her head. “He’s my close friend’s son-in-law. He says that he’s a Chinese medicine practitioner. As for his medical skills, I’m not too sure of it myself!” “Heh. What are you saying? I’m a specialist in this area, and I’ve treated many strange diseases before. I’ve got quite a good reputation in Middle Province. We couldn’t find a single problem even after running so many checks just now, and now you’re telling me that you can tell what’s wrong from a single glance? Bullsh*t!” Fane’s words made the specialist feel as though he had just been punched in the ears. He was just about to leave with a few other doctors, and he was unhappy after hearing Fane’s words. He instantly wheeled around and spoke to Fane. “You must be lying. Dr. Newman here is extremely experienced with near-death patients…” Another doctor also straightaway told Fane. After listening to the doctors saying all this, Belinda, who had been quite elated, suddenly sunk into a glum mood. She could not be sure of him now. The man looked young, and he did not perform any proper checkups. How could he diagnose anything from a glance? “If my guess is correct, sir, he’s been poisoned!” Fane smiled and told everyone. As he said this, he purposely sidled his gaze toward Lawrence. Interestingly, the man’s expression contorted slightly when he heard this. However, he quickly smiled. “No way. My father has been ill for so long. How could he have been poisoned?” he said. “He would have died long ago if he was.” “Cough cough!” The old master seemed agitated when he heard this. He immediately coughed twice, and blood spluttered out of his mouth. “Grandpa!” Belinda quickly ran over and used a tissue to mop up the blood. “Your illness is truly worsening, Grandpa. What should we do?” After she said that, she ran back and grabbed Fane’s hand. “Sir, has my grandfather truly been poisoned? You can tell? Since you

know that he’s been poisoned, can you tell what poison it is? You’ll know how to treat it, right? Don’t worry. Just treat him. We have the money for it if you do!” Fane suddenly felt embarrassed, his hand being gripped by a woman—and a young woman in her early twenties, at that. He gently extricated his hand. “Miss Watson, I’ve just taken one look at him for now,” he said slowly. “I haven’t done a proper checkup on him, so I don’t know the full condition. I’ll need to take his pulse before I can be sure of anything!” “All right. Please do so, sir!” Belinda spoke excitedly, as though she were holding on to a lifeline. “Stop talking rubbish. How could he have been poisoned? If poison were the case, how could we have completely missed it? The old master simply lacks strength now, and everything is normal asides from the fact that he coughs blood.” Dr. Newman huffed indignantly. They had been running the checkup for half a day now, using all sorts of machines to run a diagnosis, and still, they could not tell what was wrong with the old master. Now if a young upstart was able to tell everything from a single glance, it was akin to slapping all of them across the faces. It would be extremely embarrassing if word of this got out! Fane noticed that the specialist would not let the matter drop, so he said, “A piece of advice for you, leave now. At least you’ll be spared of the embarrassment if I can really tell what’s wrong!”

Chapter 805

“You!” The doctors were all infuriated. “All right. I'm going to give Old Master Watson a check-up now. No disturbances allowed. I just need one of you to remain. As for the rest of you, please go out and shut the door!” In the end, Fane laced his fingers behind his back and spoke in a no-nonsense tone, “Miss Watson, please stay behind. The rest can go!” “All right. Let’s get out of here. We’ll let Fane do the check-up properly!” Lawrence’s expression was dark. He took a long look at Fane, thinking that the young man would probably not be able to detect anything. In a flash, everyone got out and Melinda closed the door behind. She then came before

Fane. “Doctor, is there a reason why you asked me to stay behind?” “Your grandfather can’t even talk properly now, right? His throat seems fine, but he just can’t seem to conjure the energy to speak. Is that right?” Fane did not answer Melinda’s question; instead, he returned it with another question. “That’s right. You–you haven’t even taken his pulse. And you know his condition so well!” Melinda was even more surprised. She felt that it was possible that Fane had the potential to diagnose her grandfather. The old master looked at Fane. He opened his mouth, wanting to say something, but he did not have the strength to do so. Nothing but silence rang out. “Ah. I have a few things I do not wish to tell you. I fear that you would not be able to handle it!” Fane released a breath. Then he added, “I told you to remain because I could tell that you have a pretty good relationship with the old master. I don’t trust anyone else!” “What are you talking about, sir? You’re saying that my grandfather has been poisoned, and now you’re telling me you don’t trust anyone else. Don’t tell me, my father…” It was obvious that Melinda was not an idiot. She quickly caught on and clamped a hand over her mouth in shock. “No way. Why would he sabotage Grandpa?” Melinda tried to remain as calm as possible, flashing Fane a bitter smile. “Actually, you didn’t have to worry all that much, sir. I can take it,” she said. “I'm the young mistress of this house, but they don’t like me all that much because I was adopted and raised by Grandpa. The person who loves me most in this family is my grandfather, and I really don’t want to see him die. If he does, I’ll have no relatives in the Watson family. I’m scared that they’ll bully me even more— they might even kick me out!” Realization cracked over Fane. Now only did he understand why Melinda was so worried about her grandfather, why she loved him so much. So that was the nature of their relationship. After he listened to her story, he smiled. “If that’s the case, I can relax now,” he said. “Then I can tell you a few things. I truly suspect that your father, Lawrence, or your brother has something to do with your grandfather’s poisoning. As for why, I do not know.” Here, Fane paused to glance at the old man lying on the bed. “But I believe that the old master

will know. Fortunately, I came today. If I had been two or three days late, it would be impossible to save your grandfather even if the gods, themselves came!" He walked over to the old master's side. Fane whipped out a wooden box from his pocket and opened it, revealing plenty of silver needles within. "I know you can hear me, sir. I'll perform acupuncture on your first then you should be able to speak temporarily. But it's only for a short while, and you won't be able to talk much. You'll have to rest well after that. I'll write a prescription for your granddaughter in a while. She'll go pick up the medicine, and you'll have to use it in your bath. Soak yourself in the solution for half an hour every day. You should be able to fully recover if you continue for a month!" Fane stuck a needle into the old master's arm as he spoke.

Chapter 806

"That's it?" Melinda was taken aback for a while, then she spoke. "The poison has been in his body for a long time now. It's a very strange poison. It'll only chip away at his life bit by bit. All the machinery that those western doctors use, won't be able to detect anything. Even I could only use my medicine to seep through his skin bit by bit, slowly expelling the poison. There's definitely no short-term solution to this!" Fane explained, smiling wanly. "If what you said about my father being the one who administered the poison is true, what should we do? He'll definitely continue to administer the poison!" Fear rippled throughout Melinda once she gave it a thought. "Gasp!" At this moment, the old master abruptly spat a mouthful of poisoned blood, and he regained the ability to speak. He was extremely weak. When he spoke, his voice was harsh and gravelly. "That ungrateful b*stard! That good-for-nothing, backstabbing, lying moron! I really want to strangle him with my own two hands!" "Grandpa, you can talk now! Tell me, why did Father poison you?" Melinda immediately asked. "That ungrateful pig! I advised him to stop doing unsavory business, to stop doing all sorts of monstrous deeds. He must have poisoned me in secret!" The old

master clenched his teeth. Fury practically steamed from his ears. “When? Can you tell me, sir?” Fane asked, looking at the old man. “They came here for other reasons as well. They’re going to exchange goods with a group of people here—photos taken in secret, that sort of thing. Besides, Green Sky Hall kidnapped plenty of young women, and they’re going to use them for the exchange as well…” The old man looked at Fane; a wry smile twisted his lips. “Why am I telling you all this? Heh. It’s no use telling you anyway. My son has zero consciences or remorse over what he does now.” “Of course Green Sky Hall would continue to run this business. But I never thought that they would even kidnap young women to send to America!” Fane clenched his fists when he heard what the old master had say. “They’re going to do the exchange tomorrow, is that right? I–I’ll make sure to wipe them out tomorrow!” After he said that, he looked at the old master and spoke, “Rest and recover in peace, sir. You’ll get better. As for your son, he does deserve to die. Don’t worry. Unless he decides to not make an appearance tomorrow, he will definitely die!” “And you are?” The old master stared at Fane, confusion filling his gaze. Was this young fellow, not a doctor? Unless he was hiding some sort of terrifying secret identity. “You won’t blame me, right, sir? If I kill your son.” Fane posed a question, instead of answering the question. The old master went silent for a few seconds. In the end though, he said, “He dug his own grave if he were to die. But he brought quite a few good fighters over here. I’m afraid that it’ll be difficult to kill him. Furthermore, Green Sky Hall is very powerful here. So I think that there is a huge possibility that you will die if you dare to meddle with this!” “Heh. No need for you to worry about this, sir!” Fane kept his needles. “I hope that you’ll be able to recover soon and live out the rest of your days in peace with your granddaughter. Once I open that door, I trust that both of you will pretend that you never heard whatever that I said, right?” “Don’t worry. I don’t have a son anymore, anyway.” It was obvious that the old master no longer cared. He had tried to stop his son from continuing down the wrong path, but he never thought that his son would actually try to kill

him. This caused turmoil to roar within him. After the old master spoke that last sentence, his voice gradually became hoarser, and soon he was back to not being able to speak again. Meanwhile, Fane pondered for a moment. Then he brought Melinda over to the balcony. “Prepare yourself. Both Lawrence and Jayden are rotten to the core, but Irene might be okay,” he told her. “If they truly go for the exchange tomorrow, I’ll follow them and kill them.”

Chapter 807

Fane paused for a moment before continuing, “When the time comes, it’s obvious that Irene isn’t capable of managing Watson’s properties and companies, so you have to be ready to take over. I’m telling you in advance so that you’re prepared mentally as well.” Belinda’s eyes roamed around the room upon hearing Fane’s words, then she responded, “Mr, thank you for reminding me. It’ll not be easy for me to take over alone. I, too, despise what they did. After I have taken over Watson's business, I think I’ll sell off some assets and return to Cathysia and start some investment business.” “Hmmm…” Belinda paused for a second then continued, “Grandpa Watson wanted to return to Cathysia a long time ago. I believe he will help me in managing the business after he gets well. And Grandpa can finally enjoy his twilight years happily and peacefully in our motherland, Cathysia.” “Mm!” Fane’s eyes lit up immediately upon hearing Belinda’s plan. “I like your plan. It’s brilliant! All right then, I’ll open the door now!” In the next moment, Fane stretched out his arm and opened the door of the room. As soon as the door was opened, Lawrence, Jayden, and the others rushed in. “How’s it? Did you manage to find out what kind of poison it is? Is there an antidote?” A concerned look was hanging over Lawrence’s feature, his tone nervous. Belinda—who was standing beside Fane—sneered coldly in her heart. If it were not from Grandpa Watson himself, that Lawrence had planned to murder him, she would truly think that Lawrence was such a filial son who cared deeply about his old folk. Now, the pretentious concern that

the other party showed, was obviously revealing his interest in knowing whether Fane was able to treat Old Master Watson. His heart was uneasy; he fought hard against a rising panic that almost unmannered him. He was afraid that Fane could really cure Old Master Watson. “Hmmm…I’m somewhat sure!” Fane smiled slightly in return. “Really?” Lawrence’s face sank at his words and his heart was in a complete state of panic. Fane, however, added, “But I’m not too sure, I can only give it a try. I’ve given Belinda a Chinese medicine prescription. Old Master Watson needs to take a bath with the Chinese medicine for half an hour every day. After a month or two, only then you’ll witness the effect!” “A month or two? So slow!” The specialist—who stayed behind to witness the whole scene—jeered sarcastically, “You’re bragging, aren’t you? You know that they’re leaving Cathysia soon, and even if the medicine is not effective on Old Master Watson, you have nothing to do with it anymore, and they can’t get back to you. Am I right about your wicked plan?” Nonetheless, Fane chuckled in return. “Chinese medicine tend to take longer to be effective, I can’t help it!” When Lawrence heard that Fane was not confident in treating Old Master Watson, the heavy boulder in his heart was lifted and he could finally breathe. This brat must be bragging about his medical skill and Chinese medicine knowledge, so he definitely could not cure Old Master Watson’s illness. “Thank you so much then!” Lawrence fist-to-palm saluted and thanked Fane. Fane smiled nonchalantly, “You’re welcome. Old Master Watson and I are fated to meet and I’m a person who is all about fate, hence I’ll naturally save him if I can.” “Let’s go! We’ll go back first!” After saying his last words to Lawrence, Fane then turned toward Selena and Fiona, urging them to go back. “All right! I’ll see you off!” Lawrence quickly walked Fane and the others to the door and saw them off. The car with Fane and the others in it quickly drove off. Those specialists left as well. “Dad, do you think that brat could really treat Grandpa’s illness?” Jayden was sweating in fear and concerns. “What if he really succeeds in curing Grandpa?” “This poison that I’ve found was nothing but unique and strange.

Most of the doctors in this world probably have not even heard of it. So, I don't believe that punk could really find an antidote!" Lawrence grinned coldly. "Tomorrow is the trading day. Nothing is more important than that. We'll talk about this after tomorrow!"

Chapter 808

In the evening of that day, the men of Green Sky hall finally sensed something strange. "Master, I have bad news! Three of our elites have gone missing!" A middle-aged man presented before Hector Zaborowski and reported with his forehead frowning, "And I have gotten another news that not far from Fane's residence, there were three men who were shooting, was caught and killed. I strongly suspect that those three are our men, and they bumped into the adopted son-in-law and were killed by him, what do you think?" "What!" Hector shot up from his chair after hearing the shocking news. "What's going on with these men? I've already told them multiple times to keep an eye on Fane and be careful not to be caught by him! Now what? Trying to show off their bravery by filming the girls near Fane's residence? Weren't they looking for death?" The middle-aged man's face dulled and darkened. He asked in a worrisome tone, "Master Zaborowski, that punk is hot-headed and impulsive. He killed our men without thinking twice; it's obvious that we're nothing in his eyes!" He paused for a moment before continuing, "I'm not worried about the three men who got killed instead what worries me is that the punk would come at us like last time! You've promised that you'd not continue this deed anymore, and now he found out that we're still doing it, I'm afraid that he will not let us go this time." The corners of Hector's mouth twitched involuntarily. "Gather all the elite fighters here! We have to stop that brat from coming to our hall. On top of that, I'll go to my elder brother and ask for some excellent fighters from Kingston hall to stay guard here. I'll just tell him that we're short of manpower these couple of days!" The middle-aged man breathed out a huge sigh of relief when he heard Master Zaborowski's plan. "That's a good idea!

If we can get a few top-notch hitmen from Kingston Hall, that would be excellent! After all, Kingston Hall hired a bunch of good fighters, and they were never short of manpower!" "We really have to guard against the crazy brat. Tell our men the same too, they should change their location if they want to continue filming in secret! All right. You may leave now." Hector gestured to the middle-aged man to leave. "The big boss from America is here, and we're going to trade with them tomorrow night. We can't have any slip-ups at this point!" At night, after Fane returned home, he rang Lana secretly, asking her to get Queenie to observe every movement of the Watson family, and report to him instantly once numerous of the Watsons left the residence. Queenie squeaked in happiness that she was almost paralyzed with happiness when she understood that Fane—the Supreme Warrior—had given her a task personally. This was an honor to her. Moreover, the Supreme Warrior had ordered them to come along with him to the scene to warm up. He was afraid that there would be fish that had slipped through the net—runaway, as both parties would bring many people with them. The next day soon came, Fane, on the other hand, had been waiting patiently for news. It was only at night, almost nine o'clock, that he received a call from Queenie, informing him that the Watson's men had left the area, and it looked like they were planning to go out of town. Fane ordered Queenie to tail behind them and keep him informed of their movement at all times. He then contacted Lana right after and both of them headed toward the outskirt of the city together. In an abandoned factory not far from the city, many elites from Green Sky hall were stand-guarding and waiting here quietly. For the exception of Hector Zaborowski from the Green Sky Hall, there were more than 400 people in the factory—several top-notch hitmen, and the rest were some powerful upper-range fighters. They were all gathered here tonight. Behind them were a bunch of young girls and each of them was stunning and alluring. These women—around a hundred of them—were crouching on the ground in fear. Their body wobbling in terror and none of them dared to move an inch. "This batch of

girls is of good quality. The people of America are truly fortunate this time, they can enjoy these good quality women." Elder Ward smiled blandly. In his hand, there was a flash drive. "This time we have to make them pay at least 150 million, less than that amount is a no-no! Our women coupled with these photos we took, it has to be worth at least 150 million!" Elder Castellano snarled bitterly. She was leaning on her cane as usual. "Ha-ha! Of course!" Two bulky men behind Elder Castellano laughed out loud. One of them said with a smile, "Unfortunately, this time the trading time will be short. Otherwise, there are a few hot chicks here that I really wanted to have a taste!" At this time, Lawrence—the master of the Watson family together with his son, 5Jayden have arrived at the abandoned factory. Behind them were hundreds of their men. "Ha-Ha! It's been a long time!"

Chapter 809

Elder Ward guffawed unimpressively as he faced the other party. "You're right, it's been a long time. And I heard that this time, you got us some good quality stuff. Let me take a closer look!" Lawrence chuckled in return. "The quality is indeed good. And nowadays such quality of young and pretty girls is really not easy to find anymore. Some of us have even gone to other cities to capture them!" Elder Ward let out another laugh and continued, "Take a good look this time. Some of them are as good-looking as beauty queens in those beauty contests, and you can earn a lot out of them. So, this time our Master has said that the trading price has to be increased, at least 150 million for this batch of goods. "What? It was always around 100 million or 110 million. You guys are asking too much this time!" Lawrence's face sank and darkened. "No, no, no. Not too much at all! I believe the money that these ladies will bring you would be more than ten times of 150 million!" Elder Ward, on the other hand, chortled at Lawrence's remark. "How about 130 million bucks?" Lawrence countered with a price after giving some thought to the matter. "Wow! Boss Watson, do you have to? You should increase the price to 10 billion since you're filthy rich!" A familiar voice

rang out from nowhere at this time. From the doorway not far from the crowd, came out a silhouette—Fane Woods. “What the hell? Who is this f*cker? Aren’t there a few sentries outside? One of the bodyguards of the Watson family exclaimed deafeningly. “The sentries? Of course, they’re now with the Grim Reaper!” Fane shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly. Soon, two more silhouettes behind Fane walked out from the dark, slowly appearing into the crowd’s eyes. “What? No way! It’s Lana, the Goddess of War, and another, she seems to be the Queen of War!” Elder Castellano from the Green Sky Hall gasped and had her jaw drop to the ground when the two women appeared before her. Fane’s sudden arrival had already made her heart pounded frantically and worries washed over her face. However, the overwhelming number of great fighters from both Watson’s and their side was like a shot in the arm— it boosted the confidence in her. Besides, Green Sky Hall had borrowed three top-notch killers from the Kingston Hall. Hence, in her point of view, it should not post any problem to kill Fane. Nevertheless, what slipped from her calculation was the arrival of the Goddess of War and the Queen of War. “Hell no! Did you say the Goddess of War and the Queen of War are here?” Lawrence from the Watson family was so frightened that his face blanched instantly. He was not afraid of Fane, but the arrival of these two women had almost wet his pants. Although they brought mountains of great fighters with them, they were not frightened even if a King of War came but to confront the Goddess of War whom they were not known of her fighting prowess, they were frightened to death. After all, they had never fought with a God-like existence like Lana before, though the fighters they had were amongst the top in the world. “Master Watson, it was you who exposed your whereabouts and drew them here, right?” Elder Castellano and the others’ faces sank and dulled as she spoke in a frosty-cold voice.

Chapter 810

“Me? It’s definitely not me! I think it’s you guys who exposed your whereabouts!” A vortex of anger swirled inside Lawrence as he barked at the people from the Green Sky Hall. “You guys have been living in Middle Province for so long, it must have been your people who were so careless that you guys exposed the location!” Elder Ward and Elder Castellano exchanged glances, both of them felt guilty in their hearts. After all, Fane this motherf*cker had warned them before about their dirty deed. It was just that their Master promised that he would not do such deed anymore but still gave an order to continue these dirty trades underground. Besides, that brat killed three of their men three days ago. They initially thought that this brat would charge into Green Sky Hall and teach them a lesson, however, they never expected for him to find out their trade tonight and actually came here. “I think it’s you! Hmph! Our trading location has never been revealed before, how come Fane could find us this time? There is no such coincidence!” A man from the Green Sky Hall faced the Watsons and snorted coldly. They refused to take the blame as well. Sheepish glances were exchanged between Lawrence and Jayden; they were guilt-ridden. After all, they met with Fane last night and who knew Fane would find out their whereabouts and brought along a God of War and a King of War? Inside their heart, they knew that it was them who had exposed the location, which led to the current situation. “Wow. Most amusing drama show I’ve ever witnessed. Do you think this is the time to talk about this?” Fane, on the other hand, sneered frostily. “It doesn’t matter who exposed the location, it’s not important now. The Grim Reaper is coming to y’all!” “Lil’ brat, who the hell are you? Why are you going against us?” A cold face was plastered on Lawrence as he shot Fane a vicious stare. “What did I say? It doesn’t matter anymore, right? The Goddess of War is here with me tonight, it also means that tonight will be your last night on the earth!” “Kill them all!” Fane waved his hand, sending orders to Lana and Queenie. Elder Ward and Elder Castellano finally knew what real terror was. They were completely shocked at the sight before them. Fane had actually shouted toward the

Goddess of War, moreover, he was the one who gave the order to kill? Did this not mean that the Goddess of War had listened to him? “Dang it! We’ll fight them! There's only three of them, I don’t believe that with the number we have, we can’t defeat them!” Elder Ward gritted his teeth as he yelled toward his men. “Ah!” A big and muscular man—who was borrowed from the Kingston Hall—squatted on the ground and stomped on the ground like a sumo. A deep pit formed on the ground; the big guy made a huge pit with just a stomp. He was on his feet again, and his eyes were full of raw rage. Then he kicked backward, leaping toward Fane at a lighting speed. “Go to hell, motherf*cker!” The big man let out a sharp huff, with his balled fist, he charged toward Fane’s direction. The scene was terrifying. “Damn, such a terrific speed! He has the speed of a King of War, I guess!” Fane was surprised at the big man’s speed as well. He did not expect an elite from the Kingston Hall to be this powerful and terrifying. If the opponent of this big man was not Fane but others, they were definitely not on par with him. “Bang!” Nonetheless, Fane clenched his fist firmly and collided with the other party’s fist head-on. The ferocious attack of the big man was suddenly nullified and he was sent backward a few meters, knocking down whoever behind the big man that was charging toward Fane. His momentum was only halted after knocking down dozens of men. “Pfft!” The big man spurt out a mouthful of blood; the red colored liquid was covering his philtrum and his face went white. And those guys who were knocked down by him were heavily injured as well. Some of them spewed blood like the big man and went down. “What the f*ck! How strong is him!” Elder Castellano was weighed down by dread that color drained from her face. Realization finally hit her face hard, that last time Fane had definitely not used his full strength when he was fighting with her. This man was too powerful, no, he was the Grim Reaper to be exact. Bang! Boom! Pow! On the other side, Lana and Queenie were like wolves hunting in a flock of sheep—ferocious, swift, and certain. Those who were struck by them died instantly without registering what had happened.

Chapter 811

A cold and mirthless smile twisted on Fane's mouth. He flipped his palm and dozens of silver needles appeared on his palm. He swung his arm toward the enemy; a horde of men immediately dropped onto the floor, the needles piercing straight through their skulls. More than a dozen men died instantly, and there were a number of elite fighters among them. "It's not looking good. Retreat!" Elder Castellano immediately felt that something was wrong. A swing movement from Fane killed two extremely strong fighters from the Kingston Hall in a blink of an eye. Such terrifying combat prowess was not something they could fight back. In just a few seconds, more than a hundred of their men were murdered and the number of fallen bodies was still rapidly decreasing. They have brought five hundred men for God's sake! "Swoosh!" A stomp of Fane's leg sent him to the front of a gate, blocking the route. Lana and Queenie, on the other hand, blocked another two exits. They were blocking every possible escape route, not leaving any chance for them to flee. "Bang! Boom! Bang!" Blood splattered. No matter which Hall or Family—Green Sky Hall or Watson family—they were from, their final destination was the same—hell. "Fane, please, I beg you, please let us go! My-my wife and your mother-in-law are close friends, aren't they? Not to mention that you and I just had a decent dinner together last night!" The still-alive Lawrence, watching each and every one of his men fall onto the ground at lighting speed, started to plead for mercy. He was in a complete state of panic that he knelt before Fane. Jayden, too, plopped onto the ground and begged, "Fane, we were wrong, we know we were completely wrong. Didn't we just meet last night? Do you want money? I can give everything to you, please spare us!" Fane stretched out his arm the moment he heard their beseech. The silver needles that dashed through the wind and nailed on a wall afar before, had miraculously ricocheted off the wall and returned into his palm. "Spare your life? Didn't you say that the air abroad is sweeter and fresher than the air over here? That you feel disgusted

just by breathing in the air of Cathysia?" Fane let out an icy-cold laugh; his sight slowly moved away from Jayden to Lawrence. "And a b*stard like you, who poisoned his own father, is not even qualified to continue living in this world, let alone 'use' the air. Let's be environmentally friendly and not waste the air, okay?" "I, I didn't…" Lawrence was frightened down to the soles of his shoes; his voice was thick with fear. How on earth did Fane find out the poison plan, how did he know about it? "Heh! Your old folk has filled me in from A to Z. He tried to stop you from doing this dirty business, that's why you poisoned him so that he won't be a thorn in your flesh. Oh ya, I've also informed him that I'll take your life!" Fane waved his palm, silver needles flew out again, cutting through the air and piercing through dozens of men of Green Sky Hall who were behind Lawrence and Jayden and not far from his spot. All of them plonked down onto the ground simultaneously in an instant. Fane ended their lives. After another ten seconds or so, the rest of the men fell one after another. Only Queenie bore a minor surface wound on her arm, whereas the bunch of young girls—hundred or so—crouched on the ground in fear; with their body trembling, their face was ashen, and their eyes were wild with terror. "These sons of b*tches. How could they…" Lana was seething with anger at the sight of these weak and powerless young girls. The three of them quickly came forward before the girls. "It's alright now, don't be afraid! We're here to save you, you're free!" Fane glanced at these girls and finally opened his mouth. "Really? Oh My God, they're here to save us! Thank you!" A woman from the group came forward and plopped onto the ground. She knelt before the three and kept kowtowing, "Thank you! Thank you so much! You're our saviors!" "Thank you, thank you, saviors!" The others imitated the woman; they, too, knelt before the three and kept kowtowing to thank them. "It's okay. You're free, go home now!" Fane waved his hand, and only then did those women stand up, and one by one, they left the horrific place. Fane, Lana, and Queenie strode outside the abandoned factory, Fane then lit a fire and burned the entire factory into ashes.

Chapter 812

“Should we finish off the people over at the Green Sky Hall?” Lana asked Fane. The blazing fire was burning ferociously in front of them. After giving some thought to the matter, Fane shook his head. “They lost a lot this time. Many of their men died, including those elite fighters. What’s remained of the Green Sky hall is merely those useless shrimps and the head of the hall. So, basically, Green Sky Hall is destroyed. They have their shell, but their soul is gone! Today’s incident will be a lesson for them. Keep an eye on them and let’s see what their reactions are in the next few days!” Fane paused and then only added, “After all, there’s a Kingston Hall behind the Green Sky Hall. If we kill the head of the Green Sky Hall and the rest of their men, I’m afraid that Kingston Hall will not let it easily. They will definitely intervene!” Lana bobbed to show her agreement. “Indeed, there’s no evidence left here today, so at most, they’ll suspect you. Let’s see if they’ll stop right here. But if they’re looking for death, the fault is not on us!” “Good job, guys! Both of you did great!” Fane flashed Lana and Queenie a warm and genuine smile as he praised them. “It’s nothing at all! It’s my greatest honor to be at your service, my Supreme Warrior. Please count me in if you have any similar tasks like this today!” Queenie gazed at Fane with signs of admiration and respect in her eyes. Fane gave a small smile and took out a tiny bottle of medicinal cream from his pocket. “Take this, your arm is injured! Apply it to your wound and it will heal in no time. You can keep the rest as a backup!” “Woo-hoo! That’s amazing! Thank you so much, Sir!” Queenie could barely conceal her excitement. “You’re the Master of the divine doctor, Ethan Haays, so this medicine must be effective and precious. It’s truly my honor to be granted personally such a treasure by the Supreme Warrior. Even if I die because of it, it’d be totally worth it!” “What nonsense are you spewing? Don’t say such things, okay!” Fane did not know whether to cry or to laugh at the two ladies before him. He then intervened, “It’s okay for you to call me Supreme Warrior since there’s no

outsider here. But in the future, if there are others around, you should remember not to call me that but only Fane!" "Got it! The Supreme Warrior doesn't want to reveal his identity!" Queenie laughed wholeheartedly in return. Soon enough, the three left the place and went back to their home separately. At this time, at the Watson's residence, Belinda could not sleep at all. She knew clearly in her heart that what Fane had uttered to her last night was not at all fake nor false. Therefore, Lawrence and Jayden's failure to return home would have huge consequences. The old master looked much better after taking the medicinal bath yesterday. It seemed that the medicine that Fane had prescribed was truly effective. Perhaps he would be able to speak in a few days. The seconds ticked past. When morning broke, the many men from the Watson family that had gone out did not return. A smile played at the corners of Belinda's lips. "Strange. Why aren't they back?" Frowning, Irene stared out of the window. "What business were they discussing about? They've even kept it from me. And why haven't they come home even though it's been a full night?" Belinda walked over to Irene's back. "Don't worry, Mother," she said, smiling. "Maybe they'll come back in the afternoon!" Although she comforted Irene with those words, Belinda was well aware that Jayden and the others would never return.

Chapter 813

However, who was that man they saw yesterday. Lawrence went out with many powerful masters and none of them came back yet. This showed how scary that person was. "Did something happen? Why aren't they back yet?" By now, Hector had a darkened expression on his face. He had a bad feeling as he stayed home and was waiting for them to come back. This time, they sent 400 people and all of them were elites. Around four to five masters went with them and they were also joined by two to three masters from Kingston Hall. He had never arranged for such a huge group of elites to work together. However, Elder Castellano and the others were supposed to

be back latest before dawn but they were nowhere to be seen. He immediately sent his subordinates to the trading place to find out. His face turned pale when he heard the news they had for him. The abandoned factory had already been reduced to ashes and none of their people came back. They were obviously killed and their bodies were also destroyed! “Master, what...what should we do about this?” A middle-aged man who was beside Hector looked at him worryingly. “Who is this man? Why is he so powerful? Is he some huge influence?” Hector smiled bitterly. “Huge influence? We didn’t offend any powerful people. Apart from that, we’ve always had a great relationship with the other clans. As for the aristocratic families, they don’t cause us trouble so this possibility is very low!” He paused here before continuing what he was saying. “The only person we offended was the guy named Fane Woods. Apart from that, he killed three of our people. The only thing I want to know right now is how he knew about our trading place? Apart from that, did he kill all our people by himself?” “How’s that possible? Didn’t that guy fight with Elder Castellano and the others? Although Elder Castellano was not his opponent, they would have been able to kill him if the entire team worked together, right? Especially when the masters from Kingston Hall were also there? They would have been able to kill that guy if they used the human wave attack, right?” The middle-aged man in front of Hector was in disbelief. He felt that Hector had thought too highly of that young man. “I’ve felt that this young man was not a simple person when he dared to come to Green Sky Hall previously. I’ve never seen someone with his level of confidence. I’ve seen many great people but I’ve never seen someone so confident!” Hector frowned. “What should we do then? We can’t get revenge even though we’ve suffered such a huge loss? Master, how should you explain this to our boss? You’ve borrowed so many masters from him and if he knows that they’re all dead, he would not be able to hold back his anger!” The middle-aged man thought about it and said. “I feel that it’s best to not offend this guy named Fane!” Hector sighed. In several seconds, his eyes brightened as

he remembered something. “Oh yes, didn’t the people from the Eagle Clan want to work together with us? I did not agree with it and asked them to contact the Wilson family. I wonder if they did that or do they have any plans against Fane. I think we should arrange a meeting with them first!” “Oh yes, master! That is a good idea!” The middle-aged man felt that this was a good plan too. Soon, Hector went to the Eagle Clan with a dozen subordinates. At the same time, Cecilia Taylor and Kelly Gold were standing in front of the grandest hotel in town, a seven-star hotel. “Honey, you really plan to have our wedding dinner here? This place must be super expensive!” Cecilia said but was secretly happy about it. Others would definitely be envious of her because of this wedding.

Chapter 814

"Haha, of course! This is the best hotel here! I want to book the entire top floor. It's a huge plaza and definitely suitable for a wedding!" Kelly laughed and continued saying. "However, the venue upstairs is slightly expensive and I heard that the booking fee for the venue alone is two hundred million!"

"Really? That…that's quite expensive, right? Why don't we change to another venue on another floor?" Cecilia was saying that while feeling very moved. After all, Kelly's intention was all that mattered.

"No way!" Kelly rejected straightforwardly. "We are only getting married once. Apart from that, didn't Fane advertise that he's holding a city-rocking birthday party for his wife? If that's the case, our wedding needs to be even more grand. Haha, our wedding will be the city-rocking event instead and he will be the ashamed one!"

Kelly was obviously unhappy about what happened the other day. Not only did Fane won 90 million from him but most importantly, he also lost eight bodyguards that day. This caused him to lose his pride.

He wanted to show himself off in front of the Taylors that night. Who knew that…

Hence, he definitely needed to put on a good show this time around.

"What you said makes sense. I've always felt that Selena is not as pretty as me but all the young masters like her. They even said that she's the prettiest woman in the Middle Province. I've always felt that those people were wrong. I was still young and was not as pretty as I am now at that time." Cecilia curled her hands into fists as she spoke. "This time, I definitely want to be the brightest presence in the entire city on that day! I want to be the most glamorous person in the Middle Province. No! In the world!"

Kelly, who was beside her, was embarrassed by what she said. Truthfully speaking, he felt that even to this day, Cecilia was still not as pretty as Selena. Cecilia lacked certain femininity and it was not something that could be easily obtained.

He would have gone after Selena too if she was not older, married, and with a child. However, he felt that the chances were quite slim as there were many young masters who still refused to give up on Selena.

Hence, he chose Cecilia under these circumstances. After all, Cecilia had a good body, was a lady from a prestigious family, and was slightly younger. In conclusion, Cecilia was the best choice apart from Selena.

"Okay, let's book the top floor. Let's go and pay the deposit!" Kelly smiled and the two of them soon found the manager of this hotel.

“I’m so sorry but I’m afraid that the day Sir and Madam chose would not be available!” The manager frowned after she heard what they said.

“Why? I know that the top floor of your hotel is a huge an expensive venue. Unless some rich families are holding some important events, nobody would book the top floor. Hence, the venue would normally be available!” Kelly was slightly unhappy when he heard this.

“Haha, I’m so sorry but the venue would be available if you book another day but we really cannot make any adjustments for the day that you have in mind. Somebody had already booked the venue several days earlier!” The female manager laughed and said calmly.

“Several days earlier? Why can’t this person choose another day? Why did they have to choose the same day as us? I’m so angry!” Cecilia was extremely angry as she was very clear what it meant to successfully book the top floor of this best hotel. This was the most romantic and grandest place as it overlooks the whole scenery of Middle Province at night and the lighting are known to very beautiful. By then, Selena would only feel self-abased.

Chapter 815

“Could it be Fane who booked the place? Their event is on the same day as our wedding!” Kelly took in a breath as he recalled something.

“No way! How’s that possible?” Cecilia immediately said. “If

this happened previously, he still had one billion with him. However, the Taylor family suffered a loss because he hit Young Master Timothy and they lost the South City project. In order to save face and maintain their relationship, Fane transferred that one billion to the Taylor family!"

Cecilia paused here before continuing. "So I think that he only has one hundred million if we include the ninety million he won from you previously!"

"I see… Didn't he transfer the ninety million to his mother-in-law? I wonder if Fiona would return the money to him?!" Kelly thought about it and said.

"Oh yes!" Cecilia had a sudden realization. "I almost forgot that Fane had already given the money to Fiona. I know Fiona well and she definitely wouldn't take out the money given to her. She would rather let Fane lose face and fail to hold a grand birthday party compared to giving him her money!"

"If it's not Fane, who is it? I haven't received news about any events held by other families!" Kelly looked at the female manager and asked. "Manager White, I wonder if you can provide us with some information?" In Kelly and Cecilia's opinion, this was a small issue. Providing information to Kelly meant giving the Gold family face and getting into the Gold family's good books.

However, they had no idea that Manager White would shake her head. "I'm so sorry to both of you as we need to keep

the information a secret! We can't tell anyone about it yet, but we can let you know that the venue has been booked by an extremely important person!"

Kelly smiled, took several thousand bucks from his pockets, and handed it over. "Manager White, please accept our token of appreciation and it should be fine to give us a hint, right? After all, we're not here to ruin their event, right?"

"Young Master Gold, it's best if you take your money back. This time, it's not about money. If I provide you with the information, I would definitely be fired. This is my general manager's orders because this person has a very special identity!" The manager smiled.

"If that's the case, just take the money and tell me if Fane Woods and Selena Taylor are the ones who booked the place?!" Kelly refused to give up and stuffed the money into the manager's hands.

Although he was sure that it was not them as they did not have the money to come up with the three hundred million venue fee. However, he had to be absolutely sure.

"Alright!" The female manager looked around before placing the money into her pocket. "I can only tell you that the person who booked the top floor is not the Selena Taylor and Fane Woods that you mentioned!"

Kelly and Cecilia looked at each other when they heard this. They secretly relaxed and felt lucky that it was not them!

Chapter 816

It was obvious that Kelly and Cecilia unknowingly achieved the understanding that whatever they had to do, it had to best Fane and Selena's party.

Kelly, after placing some thought to it, voiced his opinion, "If that's the case, let's book the other floors! I heard that the level under the top floor is quite good. There are huge French windows and is quite beautiful, too!"

However, Manager White had a strange expression on her with a bitter smile to boot. "I'm really sorry to you both, but that floor has been booked. In fact, the entire hotel is booked on that day."

Kelly and Cecilia gasped in shock. "How's that possible? The entire hotel?!" they both exclaimed. "How much does that cost? Your boss wouldn't have agreed to it without going for at least two billion, right? This is a seven-star hotel!"

"That's right. Who is this person anyway? They're so rich!" Cecilia was rather envious as the top floor was the most expensive while the lower floors were cheaper the lower they were. Regardless, the fact remained that it was rather overboard to book the entire hotel.

"Haha! It didn't cost that much, truthfully. My boss only asked for one billion from these people! Consider it as a fifty percent discount!" The pretty manager laughed. "This is the first time I've encountered such a huge discount

throughout my years of working here!"

"Fifty percent discount?" Kelly and Cecilia were once again surprised by the information relayed by the manager.

Cecilia thought about it before asking again, "Aren't you afraid that the other party will rent this place out after you've given them such a huge discount?"

"Haha! Don't worry. That won't happen!" The manager chuckled. "The customer booked the entire hotel because it's much more convenient for the clients to enjoy our facilities, especially the swimming pool and gym on the second floor. They can enjoy everything in the hotel to their hearts' content!"

"It's a fifty percent discount! It seems that the other party is a very powerful person. The hotel wouldn't have given a second-class aristocratic family a fifty percent discount!" Kelly frowned and grew increasingly curious. He wondered who this mysterious person was who booked the entire hotel.

"Haha! Young Master Gold, I've already told you a lot of information, and I can't disclose anything anymore. You have a choice to either change your date or the hotel," concluded Manager White with a smile.

Although Kelly and Cecilia were displeased with the turn of events, they could only nod before they left the hotel.

Once the two reached the plaza, Cecilia turned around and looked at the famous hotel behind her and remarked, “I wonder who that person is. He’s so powerful that he gets a fifty percent discount. The original price to book the entire hotel is two billion, yet he only needed one billion to make it happen!”

Kelly, on the other hand, sighed. “What can we even do? I never thought something like this could happen. Who knew that we’d clash dates with some powerful people!” Kelly frowned and thought about it carefully before he said, “Still, something doesn’t seem right to me. The four main families and the Drake family don't seem to have any important events around this time, right?”

Cecilia thought about it before she replied, “Could it be the clans? Maybe somebody from a huge clan is getting married, and they happened to choose the same day as us?”

Kelly thought about it for some time, but he could not put a finger on it; on who could have made the reservation. In the end, he merely offered a wane smile as he commented, “Well, it doesn’t matter who it is. This is a good thing!”

Cecilia was immediately unhappy when she heard this. “How is this a good thing? Are you thinking that this helps you to save money? Are you telling me that you’re not really sincere when you say that you’d like to have our wedding on the top floor?”

Chapter 817

Kelly instantly hugged Cecilia by the waist upon hearing her comment. "Babe, what are you talking about?" said Kelly. "If I didn't want to have our wedding on the top floor, I wouldn't have mentioned it in the first place, right? Why should I even go into the hotel and find someone to make reservations? I'm actually thinking that since somebody arranged such a huge event here, many rich businessmen and powerful people will attend the event, right?" Kelly had a cold smirk on his face before he added, "By then, many people would also come to our wedding. Don't you think Fane would be ashamed when he learned that somebody actually booked the entire hotel? I'm sure that not many people would attend his event!"

Cecilia finally realized that she had misunderstood Kelly, and her eyes lit up. "That's right! Why didn't I think of that? Now that somebody booked the entire seven-star hotel, how can Fane and Selena stun the entire city? This place is considered as the highest facility in town!"

"That's right! Fane is bound to feel ashamed since he paid so much on advertising the event!" Kelly was downright pleased at the revelation. Since somebody played a hand in making things difficult for Fane and shaming him, did that not mean he had no need to host his wedding in such a high profile way? He only needed to make sure that what he did was better than what Fane was doing!

"Also, their advertisements have cooled down within these few days, and they've stopped advertising in certain places. I think Fane is running out of money, and that's why he's not

able to continue advertising the event," came Cecilia's eventual reply after being quiet for some time.

"Hey, I have a good idea!" Kelly patted himself on his head. "Since the event is just several days away, why don't I cash out ten to twenty million and advertise the event for him? The more we advertise about the event, the more ashamed Fane will get later on!"

"Great idea, honey! This is such a great idea!" Cecilia said in excitement.

Kelly then shifted his gaze and, looking at the hotel opposite of where they were, said, "By the way, this hotel located next door is a six-star hotel. It's almost the same height as the seven-star hotel, and the top floor is a nice venue to be in. Booking the venue is quite expensive, at around one hundred and eighty million. Such a place would definitely bring honor to you and the Taylor family!"

"Honey, you really spoil me! I love you so much!" Cecilia threw her arms around Kelly's neck and kissed him.

"Let's go! I want you to be the prettiest bride of the day!" Kelly had his hands around Cecilia as they walked forward. "Oh, of course. Let's go pick out a wedding dress later! I need to give you a stunning dress!"

At that moment, Fiona was on a shopping trip with several bodyguards, and she—upon spotting them—walked toward Kelly and Cecilia with a smile on her face. "Cecilia, what are

you two lovebirds doing here? You guys look so sweet!"

Cecilia immediately replied with a smile when she noted that it was Fiona. "That's for sure! How can we not be deeply in love when we're getting married soon? By the way, didn't that son-in-law who married into your family said that he'll be hosting a city-stirring birthday party for Sister Selena? There are only a few days left until Selena's birthday, right? How are the preparations going? Did he book a hotel?"

Fiona's facial expression turned solemn upon hearing Cecilia's question. Fane had been staying at home for the recent few days, and he even followed her to the Watson family mansion yesterday. How would he have had time to book a hotel?

The only change she noticed was that Fane bought some accessories for Selena.

"I… I think he hasn't booked a hotel yet. I'm actually not very sure about this," came Fiona's sheepish reply, one that matched the embarrassed smile on her face.

"There's not much time left, and he still hasn't booked a hotel? Is it not important to him after all? Haha! Does he want to repeat what happened five years ago, with having a simple dinner at home? If he does that with all the advertisements in town, that'd be quite city-stirring!" Cecilia immediately started mocking Fiona. "Of course, this would mean that your family would be humiliated by the

entire Middle Province. That's city-stirring on its own too, right?"

Chapter 818

"That's right! Why didn't I think of that? So this is what Fane meant when he said 'city stirring', huh? I thought he meant that he'd be hosting a glamorous event! Had he been joking with us the whole time?" boasted Kelly as he crossed his arms at his chest.

Fiona was extremely embarrassed. She would not have walked over to greet them if she knew they would mock her.

Fiona thought about it for some time before she changed the topic of their conversation. "This is something I leave in the young people's hands. I believe that Fane has his own plans. By the way, have you guys already booked your venue?"

"No, but we're here to book our hotel today," answered Kelly, smilingly as he did. "We have our eyes on this six-star hotel, and we plan to book the top floor!"

"The top floor!" Fiona took in a cold breath when she heard Kelly's reply. "I heard that the venue's booking fee costs one hundred eighty-eight million, eight hundred and eighty thousand. Not only is it a huge venue, but it even has a sight-seeing area together with a see-through class sight-seeing platform. Apart from that, the entire roof of that floor is made from glass, giving people a view of the sky. There are only three of such glamorous hotels in town!"

“Well, what should I say? This is my wedding with Cecilia, so we need to make it a grand one. Apart from that, the Gold family isn’t short of money, right?” Kelly sighed and said with a smile.

“Fane said that he’s going to give Selena the best birthday party ever. I think that what he prepares needs to be better than us if he wants to be the best. Right, honey?” quipped Cecilia.

“That’s right. How would it live up to the city-stirring claims if it isn’t?” commented Kelly enigmatically.

“Ahem! It’s best if you guys hurry and book your hotel. I’ll have to go now so I can continue running my errands.” Fiona’s expression was gradually turning bitter. She smiled embarrassingly, waved her hand, and walked away angrily with her bodyguards in tow.

It was only after they walked a considerable distance away did one of the beautiful bodyguards comforted Fiona, “Auntie, don’t get angry. Don’t you worry about anything. Our master would definitely keep his promise!”

“Hah! Keep his promise, you say? How much money does he have with him? How can he compete with them when he’s only got three hundred million from yesterday? Their venue booking fees are already around two hundred million, and it doesn’t include expenses!” Fiona laughed. “Fane really is one of a kind. People always say to do things according to one's

abilities. He's incapable yet likes to boast all the time. He even advertised about the event all over town! I feel really ashamed even if he doesn't! I don't see him doing anything even as we're fast approaching my daughter's birthday!" Fiona walked toward a mall as she was speaking, and she eventually reached a jewelry shop.

She glanced at the shop and was startled. "How's that possible? That...that diamond necklace that costs nine hundred million has been sold?"

It only occurred to Fiona yesterday about her mistake. The necklace cost 900 million instead of 90 million.

However, there was an announcement at the entrance of this jewelry store saying that the necklace has been purchased by a mysterious buyer.

It was by reflex that Fiona thought that Fiona assumed the person spent 900 million for the necklace. "Nine hundred million for a necklace! That's rather extravagant!"

Chapter 819

"I wonder who the extravagant rich person is!" blurted one of the beautiful bodyguards.

"That person truly is a rich person," Fiona resounded. "It hurts when we compare ourselves with other people. How can they be so rich?! Why is my daughter not fated to marry such a rich person? She's married to that troublesome Fane, and the money he works hard to get is

used to resolve those problems."

With bitterness looming over her, Fiona eventually left after she walked around for a short while.

...

She immediately spotted Fane and Selena leisurely drinking coffee upon reaching home, and this caused her expression to turn more sour than it was.

"Fane, there are only a few days till my daughter's birthday, right? Have you booked the hotel?" Fiona casually dropped her shopping bags at a corner of the room with a cold expression on her face. She walked toward Fane and said angrily. "I'm warning you: If you don't have the money, it's best if you don't try to act like one. You're our son-in-law, the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family. If you lose face, the entire family will suffer the same fate. Do you understand me?!"

Selena frowned at that moment. "Mother, what's going on? Why are you still in such a bad mood when you've already bought so many things? Did someone step on your tail?" Selena asked calmly when she saw what was going on.

Fiona's frosty expression, coupled with an equally wintry glare, maintained as she glared daggers at Fane. "Have you booked the hotel?" she repeated.

Fane smiled bitterly. "Mother, don't you worry about it. I've

already booked the hotel, and you'll understand what's happening in a few more days. I'll surely keep my promise of surprising Selena!"

Fiona still looked at Fane angrily. "Alright, if you've already booked the hotel, tell me which hotel did you book? How many stars does that hotel have?"

Embarrassed, Fane offered a bitter smile as he replied, "Mother, I've already told you that it's a surprise. It doesn't seem to be a good idea to talk about it now, right?"

"Haha! It's not a good idea, you say?" came Fiona's anger-laced reply followed by a bitter chuckle. "You must be embarrassed to speak about it because you booked a cheap and lowly hotel!"

"Mother, I don't really care about these. We don't have much money now, and although Fane got three hundred million from the Watson family, we still need to be frugal with our expenses and not be too extravagant. Apart from that, Fane and I don't have a job yet." Selena smiled calmly and helped persuade Fiona.

Fiona turned to look at Selena upon hearing her reply. "Do you know how Cecilia and Kelly looked down at us when I met them on the streets today? They booked the top floor of a six-star hotel. What's more, the venue's rent is already one hundred eighty-eight million, eight hundred and eighty thousand!"

"Oh, I know that place. The hotel is located opposite the seven-star hotel and they're both right next to each other, right?" Fane could not stamp down his smirk when he heard this. It would definitely be much more shameful for the other party since they chose this particular location. Both venues were right next to each other, and anyone could see the ongoings of the other hotel from the respective venues. By then, Cecilia would definitely regret the choices she made.

"Great! You know that place too!" Fiona was extremely angry. "Don't do advertisements and say that it'll be a city-stirring event if you can't make it happen! I don't want to be in such a shameful situation like you!"

"Mother, don't you worry. I promise you that we won't lose face. By then, you'll be the most glamorous mother-in-law in the entire world!" Fane smiled confidently.

Chapter 820

"Hmph! I don't believe in a word you say. I'm warning you: I might attend Cecilia's wedding if you fail to satisfy me by then. After all, if nobody from our side is attending their wedding, it means that we're not respecting giving them and the Gold family enough. Do you understand me?" Fiona made a sound of indignation with mouth closed, still not believing in Fane.

"Mother, aren't you afraid that Cecilia will mock you if you attend their wedding? I'm sure you know her personality well. She's always looking for chances to look down at our

family!" Selena's face darkened when she heard this and added, "Apart from that, I don't think that anybody from their family is joining my birthday party. Why should we attend their wedding if they're not coming to my birthday? Wouldn't we be asking for it if we do that?"

"Well…" Fiona frowned when she heard what Selena said; she had a point. Based on Cecilia's behavior, Fiona would definitely be mocked if she attended their wedding.

Fiona paused before she glared at Fane. "It's all your fault!"

She then picked up what she bought and strode back to her room.

"Honey, ignore what my mother just said. She's always been a vain person, and she loves to have a sense of proprietary." Selena smiled apologetically at Fane after Fiona left.

"Haha! It's alright!" Fane laughed before he resumed enjoying his cup of coffee.

...

Meanwhile, Hector Zaborowski went to the Eagle Clan with a group of bodyguards.

"Haha! What a surprise, Master Zaborowski! What is such an honorable man like you doing here at Eagle Clan?" Lee Neuman smiled indifferently as he looked at Hector.

“Haha! Master Neuman, can’t I pay you a casual visit in my free time?” Hector smiled hypocritically, and his smile seemed so calm.

Lee inwardly smirked. Although he did not know what happened to Green Sky Hall last night, he knew that Hector was here to work with the Eagle Clan to get rid of Fane.

After all, Lee knew his subordinates killed three people from Hector’s Green Sky Hall two days ago and framed it on Fane. Hector, on the other hand, could not bear the thought of his men being killed.

“I believe that Master Saborowski is here today with an agenda!” Smiling, Lee picked up his cup and calmly drank some tea.

He knew very well Hector was the one who should be panicked, not him.

Chapter 821

Hector gave a sheepish smile as he continued, “By the way, didn’t Master Neuman say that you wanted my help to kill Fane? I informed you back then that the Wilson family harbor quite the hatred for him, too. I wonder, have you contacted the Wilson family? Is there any progress on that?”

Lee knew all too well about Hector’s intention just by listening to him. Hector was still refusing to cooperate with them; he wanted them to do the dirty work for him so he

would not need to do anything. The Eagle Clan and Wilson family could work together and helped Hector get rid of Fane.

Lee grinned at him as he replied, "I've contacted the Wilson family, and it's true that they want to kill Fane badly. After quite the discussion, however, we came to the same thought that Fane is a really strong master. His fighting ability is comparable to Kings of War that even if both parties worked together, we might not topple him. Apart from that, he's killed three hundred of our people before." Lee purposely sighed aloud before he continued, "We can't think of anything else. We're not confident that we can win, not even if both families work together to fight him, and that's why we can only put this on hold till this day."

The corners of Hector slightly twitched. He thought about it and said, "How about this: Do you think that we'd stand a chance if the three of us work together?"

Lee was inwardly happy upon noticing Hector's offer, but he acted calm and replied, "Are you serious this time? You're not joking, right?"

Hector sighed helplessly and said, "Of course I mean what I say, as we've suffered a huge loss after all. We were supposed to trade with the Watson family yesterday, and I estimate that there were around 500 to 600 people from both sides. In order to be safe, I even borrowed two to three masters from my boss, and I don't know how to break the news to my boss!"

"What happened? Did something serious happen? Did something happen to everybody from your side and the masters from Kingston Hall?" Lee took a deep breath when he heard this news. He was obviously frightened by this news.

Hector nodded. "None of our people and the Watson family's people returned. I sent someone to check it out and discovered that the abandoned factory we used as our trading ground was burned to the ground. The opponent burnt the factory after he killed our people, and I think he's destroyed all traces of his crime."

"Oh my god! Are you suspecting that Fane is the perpetrator? If that's the case, isn't his fighting ability too scary? Is he a seven or eight-star King of War?" Lee was shocked. He thought that Hector wanted to get rid of Fane because of the death of three people from Green Sky Hall, but he never thought that Green Sky Hall could suffer such a big loss. As it turned out, they were not as powerful as they claimed to be.

Somehow, Kingston Hall was dragged into the mess as they lost several masters.

Everybody knew that Kingston Hall's master was someone with a bad temper, and he would definitely avenge his brothers when he knew about what happened!

While it did not show on his face, Hector was internally

fretting. “If that’s the case, it’d be really difficult for us to kill him. It wouldn’t work even if the three of us work together, so I plan to go to my boss and get Kingston Hall to lend us a helping hand. The four of us should work together and get rid of Fane!”

“Alright, it’s best if Kingston Hall willingly joins us. Haha! Fane won’t be able to survive our attack this time!” Lee stood up in excitement and said, “Why don’t we ask the Wilson family to come over, and we’ll go visit your boss together to discuss how we can eliminate Fane.”

Hector nodded. “We’ll need a huge amount of people and many masters if we’re to kill Fane. Not only that, but we’ll have to make sure that he’s alone when we carry out the attack. I think that guy has people helping him out, and that’s why we lost so many men this time. After all, he had been in the army for five years and must know many soldiers. A person who can survive five years on the battlefield can’t be assumed to be a regular person!”

“Of course. As long as Green Sky Hall and Kingston Hall agree to the plans, it wouldn’t be difficult to kill Fane!” Lee was extremely confident.

Lee was initially wary of Hector, hesitant if he was genuine in helping them out, but it seemed as though Fane had dug his own grave. Not only did Fane disrupt Hector’s business, but he even killed so many of their people, and this forced Hector to make the decision to join them.

Chapter 822

Not long after, Hector Zaborowski, Lee Neuman, and David Wilson went to Kingston Hall with their subordinates.

The leaders of four powerful families and clans gathered at the same place to discuss how to punish the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family.

Meanwhile, tear-filled Timothy Drake laid on his bed alone.

"Fane, you bastard!" cursed Timothy by reflex, fists balled tightly as he did. "I, Timothy Drake, swear that I'll kill you!"

He never thought that he would see the day when his private parts would get cut off entirely. He never once thought he would be a real-life eunuch.

On the other hand, his father publicly announced that he suffered a minor injury, and Timothy nearly passed out in white-hot anger.

He could not understand why his father was so afraid of Fane. He did not believe that they could not get rid of Fane with the entire Drake family's power.

His surprise only grew when James not only handed the South City Group to Tanya but also several other companies, all while he suffered immense pain. This arrangement meant that he had nothing much to do. He could only manage several small cafes and internet cafes in the Drake family

businesses.

Timothy despised the fate that befell him. Instead of blaming his recklessness and impulsive behavior under alcohol influence, he blamed it on his father for not avenging him.

With those thoughts in mind, he quickly called Leo Turner and asked him to visit him with several of their brothers.

"Just you wait, Fane. Since my father won't avenge me, I'll do it myself," hissed Timothy as he clenched his fists. "I'm not a person you can push around... I won't accept this!"

...

Fiona's displeasure with Fane continued to fester even during dinner. She felt anger overwhelming her when she recalled how Cecilia and Kelly basically made fun of her in the afternoon.

As they ate, Fiona began, "By the way, I suddenly remembered something. Didn't I tell you guys before how I mistook the pricing of a particular necklace with a lone ruby? I didn't notice there was an extra zero behind it, and that nine hundred million necklace has been brought by a mysterious buyer!"

"How's that possible? Are there really people who'd buy a nine hundred million necklace? That person must be really rich!" blurted Ben upon hearing his mother's explanation.

“I wonder which pretty woman is lucky enough to be able to wear such a nice necklace!” Elaine, who sat beside Ben, was rather envious of the fact.

Fiona and Andrew were satisfied that Elaine became Ben’s girlfriend. After all, Elaine was not only pretty, but she also had a nice figure, a sweet mouth, and a pair of lively eyes. It also helped that she was rather rich and was skilled in martial arts.

In Fiona’s opinion, she felt that Elaine was ten times better—or even more—than Xena.

“The shop previously stated that the necklace is used to increase publicity or for exhibition purposes, so it can be considered as the shop’s symbolism. The pricing of this necklace is definitely more than nine hundred million as it still has lots of hidden value. They wouldn’t have sold it for nine hundred million under normal circumstances!” Nobody expected that Selena would have quite the knowledge about these things. “My guess is that the shop must’ve not sold the necklace if it isn’t at least with a two billion price tag. I suspect that this mysterious person must be very powerful and had bought the necklace at a very high price!”

“I never thought that my darling would know so much about such things!”

Chapter 823

Fane praised Selena after hearing her theory on the ruby

necklace. He looked forward to seeing Selena's surprise when she would put on this necklace in a few days' time.

"It's not hard to know of such things. They've used this necklace to publicize their shop for a very long time. They also exhibited this necklace in other cities, so I believe that there were many people who wanted to buy this necklace. All that traffic, yet they never sold the necklace!" Selena drank her wine as she continued, "Apart from that, they spent quite a lot of money on their advertisements, and these are their costs. There's no way they would've sold it for just nine hundred million."

"Sigh! What a shame. The son-in-law who married into our family is a useless person. Had he been a capable person, my daughter might be able to wear such a nice necklace!" Fiona sighed and glanced at Fane.

"Mother, what are you talking about? Fane is a very capable person. Such an extravagant necklace is too expensive, and it has nothing to do with Fane's capability!" Ben immediately spoke on Fane's behalf. "Apart from that, I don't think that your son, me, can buy such a necklace even if I work for the rest of my life!"

Fiona was shocked at this. Ben used to side with her and supported what she said, but he had changed sides and was siding with Fane.

Andrew, most of the time, also sided with Fane, and Fiona felt that the two were rather disappointing as they were so

easily bribed by Fane.

"I don't care. I only know that Fane promised that the birthday dinner will be a city-stirring one, and I won't be satisfied if the party doesn't meet my expectations. Hmph!" scoffed Fiona before she resumed her dinner.

...

Early the next morning, Fane still looked relaxed and did not seem to do anything for the birthday party. It made no sense to Fiona and Andrew. Fane told them that he was giving their daughter a city-stirring birthday party, but they did not see Fane doing anything or even booking a hotel.

Since he had employed a dozen bodyguards, Fane no longer asked Dennis Howard to continue protecting their family. Still, Fane did tell Dennis to be on alert at all times, that he would inform him should any matter arise.

Jenny was also relieved from the chore of picking up and sending Kylie. She was in charge of arranging the workers' tasks and paying their salaries.

Nonetheless, Fane did not expect that Kylie and the bodyguards appointed to pick her up would not return even as it was late in the evening.

At that moment, an unknown number rang Fane's cellphone.

“Fane, are you the one who killed my brothers from Green Sky Hall?” Hector’s voice could be heard from the other side of the line.

Fane laughed coldly and replied, “I’ve warned you before yet you refused to listen to me, so I taught you a lesson. Why?”

“Haha! So it was you. I never thought you’d admit to it, and that fast too!” Hector laughed and said, “If that’s the case, come alone and meet us. Your daughter and your two bodyguards are at our mercy. We’re at the white tower on the top of the hill at the city outskirts. Remember: come alone. If we catch wind that you’re bringing people with you, we’ll kill your daughter in that instant!”

The corners of Fane’s mouth slightly twitched, but he soon calmed himself down. “It’s Blaze Mountain, right?”

“Yes. Remember what I said and come alone. Our goal is to kill you, so we won’t kill your daughter if you come alone. Of course, your daughter will die if we discover that you’re coming over with somebody else!” With that, Hector hung up the phone.

Chapter 824

Blaze Mountain was not far away from the city entrance, and there was an old white tower on top of the mountain. However, the tower had been abandoned for hundreds of years, and nobody even ventured into the mountain.

Fane placed his phone away and clenched his fists tightly.

"You're the ones who forced me into this. Hmph! So I'm not allowed to bring anybody? Do they think that they can kill me if I go alone?"

With that, Fane drove out of the city and headed for Blaze Mountain.

Hector stood on the top of the mountain and had a telescope with him. With it, he spotted Fane driving toward the destination and, upon reaching the foot of the mountain, parked his car.

"Haha! He's here. This guy actually came alone!" Hector laughed. "Since he came alone, he's as good as dead!"

"That's for sure! We've prepared a thousand people for him this time! There's a total of a thousand and two hundred people here, and all of them are elites from different clans. The higher he goes, the stronger our people stationed there are!" said the excited Lee. "We can easily kill him with our human-wave tactic! Haha!"

Their words were met with one of Fane's bodyguards' burst of laughter. "Haha! You guys truly do look down on our master!" She was tied to one of the white tower's huge stone pillars with Orchid Yames and Kylie. While Kylie sustained no injuries, both she and Orchid were badly hurt. Orchid suffered the most as she had several cuts on her arms and her blood tainted her clothes red.

"Haha! We know that he's good, so we prepared a lot of

people for him. This is a continuous battle, mind you, so we plan to tire him out!" Hector laughed. "This guy killed so many of our Green Sky Hall's masters, thus today's the day he meets his end!"

Hector smirked as he continued to speak, "After we kill Fane, we'll slowly torture his wife and this young lady here. We'll be sure to treat his family with special care!"

Kingston Hall's master, Tobias Zaborowski walked toward both pretty bodyguards and caressed their faces with a cold smile on his face. "Aren't the two of you quite strong too? Seems like you've been bested by our masters!"

"Hmph! How dare you even gloat about it? You've ordered a dozen masters to attack us, and many of your people died. If we weren't caught up trying to protect Kylie, do you really think that you'd be able to catch us?" Orchid made an indignant sound with her mouth closed, unbothered by the man's bold claims. "Regardless, your luck's run out today. How dare you kidnap our master's daughter? That's like asking for a death wish!"

Both bodyguards knew how scary the Supreme Master was. Nobody had seen his true power, and he would not use much strength even if there were a thousand opponents.

This was the reason they worshipped him. While there were several masters from Kingston Hall who were very strong and had the fighting ability on par with Kings of War, they would not be able to kill Fane.

“You can be stubborn all you want! Haha! I think that the highest he can go is the middle of this mountain!” The confident Tobias crossed his arms at his chest. “Kingston Hall has their Four Great Warriors, and one of them is waiting for him at the pavilion halfway up the mountain. Surely Fane would be tired after all the killing, and by the time he reaches that place, our people will be waiting for him there. This is a tactic of war, do you understand?”

Orchid ignored him as she placed full faith in Fane's fighting ability.

Although Fane’s adversaries were people of large numbers, there were not many true masters. Apart from that, most of them stayed at home most of the time and enjoyed a comfortable life. They did not have much actual fighting experience, and that reduced their fighting ability.

Compared to them, Fane had fought several years with masters of other countries that were no weaklings. Several years ago, the enemy country was extremely strong and Cathysia was defeated again and again. The country could only send soldiers to the frontline without stopping.

At that period, the soldiers who served at the frontlines merely went through less than half a month of training before they were sent to the frontlines for a life-and-death war with the enemy.

Hence, during the one or two years when Fane and the

others were sent to the frontlines, the soldiers who just joined the war could be described as expendables.

Under such circumstances, only a handful of people managed to survive the war.

Chapter 825

Despite the pressure, Fane managed to rise to the challenge and grew extremely strong. His fighting ability improved significantly along the line as he donned a dragon-shaped mask and had a black sword in his hands.

One after another master appeared after he emerged, and those masters became the current Nine Great Gods of War.

As for Fane, his fighting ability surpassed the Gods of War, so much so that although he was outnumbered, it was no difficult task for Fane to deal with them.

Fane had just reached the foot of the mountain when several bodyguards of the Wilson family rushed toward him. "He's here! Kill him!"

"So, men from the Wilson family are also here?" Fane instantly smirked as he spotted a few familiar faces. He had just arrived at the foot of the mountain when so many people rushed toward him. He knew at that moment that he would meet many more as he scaled up the mountain.

The sky gradually darkened; the night was destined to be a bloody one.

With the cold grin still on his face, Fane flicked his wrists to reveal several dozen silver needles. With a wave of his hands, the needles flew out like afterimages.

Shink, shink, shink!

Many people were killed before they even reached Fane.

"This guy knows how to use hidden weapons, and it's hard to notice them! Be careful!" somebody exclaimed when they saw several dozen people dying just as Fane so much so moved.

"Die!" Standing on higher ground, another burly man jumped up and lunged at Fane with a big, heavy knife.

"Hmph!" came Fane's small sound of indignation. He moved his hand behind his back, and nobody noticed that he had a dragon-shaped ring on his hand. The ring began to morph as a black sword appeared in Fane's hand.

The black sword was like a long ruler, black like charcoal. The handle was shaped like a dragon, and there was a black dragon accented on the hilt.

"How did he take that out?" The burly man was one of the Wilson family's masters, a member of their three protectors with the strength comparable to a major's.

The man was stunned to see a sword in Fane's hand, but he

could only grit his teeth as he resumed his attack.

He believed that since he was attacking from higher ground, the weight of his heavy knife and his dive would increase his fighting ability. Fane was on lower ground, and there was no way for Fane to block his powerful force.

Fane held his sword horizontally, standing where he stood, unmoving.

Clank!

Following the clattering sound of metal, everybody was stunned by what happened next. The heavy knife in the burly man's hands was cut open like it was tofu; the incision was hauntingly tidy.

"How's that possible?!" blurted the burly man. Fane took advantage of the situation and pulled his sword back, only to cut open the man's head. There was a daunting fountain of blood from the dead man's body, and the man rolled down the hill.

Chapter 826

"How's this possible? He's dead!" The faces of those who were attacking Fane turned pale when they saw the burly man's body rolled down the mountain with his severed head. Fane's fighting ability was incredibly powerful, and that sword of his cut through steel like it was mud.

Fane did not even falter after he killed the burly man. He

rushed toward the mountain top, jump after jump.

"Attack!"

Apart from the Wilson family's men, those from Green Sky Hall also made their appearance. The weaker people from Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan also appeared at the bottom of the mountain as they tried to surround Fane there.

Fane's only fear was that Hector and the others would go against their words. If he was late, they might kill Kylie and the other two bodyguards.

Because of that, Fane chose to ignore the extras and continued to rush up the mountain. He swung the sword in his hand as he slashed and cut down the people that tried to surround him.

Blood spurted all over the place. With a leap, Fane moved several meters forward and killed those who blocked him with just a few swings of his sword before rushing to another place with another jump.

There was no hesitation with the way he moved and killed. The sword moved with his arm gestures, and every move was an uninterruptible attack.

"Boss, do you think that this guy will get to where we are?" In a pavilion halfway up the mountain, a middle-aged woman questioned the middle-aged man in front of her as they heard sounds of clashes that came from below the

mountain.

"I believe he would. Otherwise, I'd be disappointed in his fighting capability. It wouldn't be a problem for him to reach this place if he has the fighting abilities comparable to Kings of War. Still, he might be badly hurt!" The man smiled indifferently and continued, "It doesn't matter if this person offended another powerful clan. Isn't he on a suicide mission now that he's offended our Kingston Hall? Kingston Hall is the biggest clan in Middle Province and is even more powerful than Eagle Clan!"

This middle-aged man was none other than one of Kingston Hall's Four Great Warriors. He was a tyrannical killer and was exceptionally good at using concealed weapons. Any regular people would have died before they could even get near to him.

"There are over seven hundred people at the bottom, and it'll be very difficult for him to even get here. I don't think he'll reach this place under twenty minutes!" The middle-aged woman smiled. She was also a strong fighter herself and was one of the Wilson family's masters.

Michael Wilson was also in the pavilion, and as he sat on the other end, he languidly commented. "I'm here to see the guy dying today. Haha! He's no match for you both, especially when he's all worn out and injured!"

Just as Michael finished, however, they spotted a figure that leaped toward them and was just several meters away

within a few jumps.

"Fane!" Michael's eyes widened when it registered to him that it was Fane, and he wondered if his eyes tricked him.

They held the belief that Fane would need at least 20 to 40 minutes to reach where they were.

They never expected that Fane would come rather close to them in just five minutes.

It was a difficult feat for a regular person to run up to the pavilion in five minutes, even without obstructions.

It was only then when they spotted the many people that chased after Fane, though most of them were extremely tired from trying to catch up with him.

Fane was light on his feet as he nimbly and swiftly moved; he bulldozed his way forward and went past everyone else.

"F*ck! How did he manage to come so quickly?!" Both the middle-aged man and woman were just as surprised. Fane's speed exceeded their expectation.

Fwoop! Fwoop!

As Fane killed two other people that stood in his way with just two moves, Fane rushed forward and reached the pavilion.

“Michael? It’s been a long time!” Fane smiled coldly and glanced at Michael.

The middle-aged woman rushed toward Fane with a dagger at hand. “Young man, today is the day you die—”

Fane, without breaking a sweat, dodged her attack. With a flick of his wrist, he slit her throat with his knife and killed her in one move.

Chapter 827

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Without a second wasted, the middle-aged man threw his concealed weapons at Fane.

Fane instantly grabbed Michael and used him as a human shield.

“You—” Before Michael could register what happened, the thrown concealed weapons had stabbed him.

“Young Master Michael!” The middle-aged man reeled back in shock. Fane’s actions were too fast and he could barely catch up with him. All he saw a vague shadow, a mere silhouette, and Fane had already switched places.

Fane tossed Michael’s body forward and slammed it against the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man was knocked two steps backward, and

just as he was caught up trying to push Michael's rotund body away from him, Fane had already placed his sword on his neck.

The middle-aged man looked at Fane in surprise. He finally realized how scary the man before him was.

Both him and the middle-aged woman were considered masters in Middle Province. fearless even if they met two or even three-starred Kings of War. There was a possibility that they might even be able to kill these Kings of War.

Nonetheless, they were helpless when they met Fane.

Swoosh!

Fane flicked his sword. Blood splattered, and the middle-aged man fell. Fane merely pressed on as he scaled up the mountain.

"How's this possible?!" There were bodies all over the place, but many could not catch up to Fane.

They knew how strong the middle-aged man and woman were, thus it surprised everyone that they were eliminated all too quickly.

The remaining people stopped when they reached the pavilion, and they began to question their mission.

"Should we continue pursuing him? He's too f*cking strong. I

don't even think the people up there could stop him!" one of them said after a long period of silence.

"Let's stop here. The clan masters will surely blame us if that guy dies!" another person said in fright.

"But if the clan masters can't even hold up against his attacks, we'd be corpses ourselves if we go up! That guy must've killed half of the people here as he went up!" One of the elders thought about it and, with gritted teeth, spoke, "If that's the case, we'd be on a suicide mission if we go up now. Why don't we rest for a few minutes before we go up?"

The others kept quiet, but nobody continued to go up the mountain. They could not even catch up with Fane the entire time and were frightened by the road littered with corpses. The scene was too much of a nightmare, even for people who were constantly in fights like them.

...

Swoosh!

After killing a few more men, Fane reached White Tower.

"How can this be?!" a man who stood in front of White Tower exclaimed when he saw a man covered in blood rushing toward them. This person was the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family.

Fane was coated in blood, and they could not assess if it was

his own and if he was injured.

Swoosh!

Fane's speed only grew when he saw Kylie and the others tied to stone pillars. He stepped forward, and only his shadow was left behind.

"No, stop him!" David yelled out in fright. This young man had such extreme explosive force. Was it possible that he suffered no injuries at all?

Chapter 828

David Wilson and the others were stunned when they saw the blood-coated Fane, his clothes dyed a crimson color.

They felt that Fane must have been exhausted, with the thought that his body would be filled with scars and the man to be at the brink of death.

They never thought Fane could move so quickly. His speed was faster than the masters at their side.

Much to their chagrin, Fane was already next to Orchid and the others. He severed the ropes that bound Orchid and the others up when they finally reacted.

"Wuu... Daddy!" Kylie was terrified from the start, but she dared not cry. She only started crying when she saw her father—Fane—rushing toward them all covered in blood. It was unknown if she was afraid or worried for Fane.

“Kylie, don’t be afraid!” Fane flicked his sword and slew those who dared run up to them. “Orchid, take Kylie and keep her safe!”

With that, Fane ran toward Hector.

“Kill him! Kill all of them! This guy has to be dying at this point, all out of energy to spend! Remember that you’re all masters!” Hector yelled loudly when he saw Fane rushing over to him.

“Attack!” The fighters roared and rushed toward Fane and his company.

“Today is the day you kiss your life goodbye! Haha!” With a laugh, Fane tightened his grip on the sword and rushed forward once again.

This time, Fane’s speed increased. He slew the masters who rushed in front of the others with just a few slashes, and he ended Hector’s life with one slash.

Fwoop! Fwoop! Fwoop!

The remaining three out of the Four Great Warriors attacked Fane simultaneously, but they only managed to hold up for several seconds before they fell to the floor and breathed their last.

“Im… Impossible!” Kingston Hall’s master shrieked in

disbelief, his face pale due to the fear.

The people around them were so frightened and dared not move. Fane's combat abilities stunned them speechless.

"Who...who are you? How's this possible? We have so many people with us, so many masters! How are they not your match?" Lee Neuman's legs turned to jelly when he gazed at the sprawled bodies on the floor. The people they had summoned were elites, yet Fane managed to kill half of them while none of their masters managed to even graze Fane's skin.

"B—Boss, please let us go! We didn't have any other choice!" One of the masters was so frightened that he knelt on the floor and begged Fane for mercy.

Covered in blood, Fane's eyes seemingly had fire in them. He looked daunting as he stood with his sharp sword.

"I can let you guys go, but there's one condition: Kill all your clan masters and go back to dismiss your clans. As for the properties, divide among yourself and get out of Middle Province. Can you all do that?" ordered Fane, his instructions laced with coldness and apathy. As he had killed numerous people on his way up the mountain, the anger in his heart was soothed though only by a little.

He decided to let go of the remaining men. Otherwise, there would have been too much bloodshed and deaths.

“Thank you for not killing us, Big Brother!” Although the remaining people were skilled fighters, Fane’s very existence scared them witless. They had never once seen such a ruthless person.

“You… You *ssholes! Traitors! Would you have what you have today if I hadn’t provided for you all?!” Tobias’ voice trembled in anger.

“We’re sorry, Master!” One of the men stood behind Tobias and stabbed him from behind, and others followed suit as they surrounded him and killed him.

Chapter 829

“Ahh!” Lee yelled in fright and tried to escape when he saw how grave the situation was for him.

Sadly, several people from Eagle Clan surrounded him, and he was killed right after.

Several strong masters and bosses were killed on the spot.

“Remember to take care of the bodies. After all, they were once your brothers,” commented Fane before he, along with Orchid and the rest, descended the mountain.

The remaining people automatically stood aside to provide a path for Fane when they saw him walking over. They looked on as he left.

Many of them wiped the cold sweat on their foreheads

after Fane and his company left.

It was only after they reached the foot of the mountain that Fane turned and looked at Kylie, who stopped crying, with gentle eyes. "Don't be scared, Kylie. These clans are gone forever! Did they frighten you?"

"Mm… Daddy is the best…! Kylie will stop crying…" Kylie pursed her lips and had a wronged expression on her face.

Kylie gazed at her father, worry evident in her eyes as she asked, "Daddy, are you hurt?"

"Haha! Don't worry, my dear. Daddy is fine. The blood on me is from the fools!" Fane took some clothes out from his car after he spoke. "Wait for me here as I did some preparation. I'll go wash myself and these clothes at the river over there. It'd be too scary for others to see me in this state!"

"Yes, Master!" Orchid and the other bodyguard nodded, and they brought Kylie into Fane's car.

Fane went to the river not far away to take a bath and change. As the river was not too far from where they were, he got to the river after he walked past some trees.

As the pretty bodyguard glanced toward the woods, she murmured lowly, "Sister Orchid, don't you want to go and have a look?"

Orchid rolled her eyes and used her pointer finger to poke the other bodyguard's forehead. "What are you thinking? You're still young, so stop thinking nonsense. Let me tell you this: Our Master's fighting capabilities displayed today are just mere warmup for him. His true abilities are more than just that, and it's too scary to even think about it!" Orchid paused before she added, "If you go there now, I'm sure you'll be discovered in mere seconds!"

The pretty bodyguard clasped her hand over her mouth and giggled into it when she heard what Orchid said. "I thought that Sister Orchid wouldn't have thoughts about it, but it turns out that you're worried about the shame if Master discovers you! Haha! It seems that although you're married, you still think about our master!"

Orchid stared at her. "Nonsense! Isn't this very normal? Any woman would want to take a look. After all, this isn't some random guy, it's the Supreme Master!"

Fane eventually returned after he bathed and changed; he looked handsome and fresh.

"Alright, let's go! It's time to go home!" Fane smiled, and they then drove back home.

...

Selena waited anxiously in the yard at their home. The sun had set, but Kylie and the two bodyguards in-charge of fetching her had not returned. Understandably, Selena was

worried that something had happened to them.

Apart from that, Fane was also nowhere to be seen. She phoned him, but he did not even pick up.

Her nerves only settled down when she saw the familiar car; Fane had returned. "Where did you guys go? Why are you only back at this hour?"

"It's nothing. Somebody kidnapped Kylie, but I've eliminated them!" Fane smiled indifferently and said to Selena, "Don't tell Father and Mother about this so that they wouldn't worry about it. The bad guys are dead!"

"Okay." Selena nodded, though the frown did not leave her face. Her thoughts that plagued her only fueled her anxiety. Orchid and the other bodyguard were extremely good fighters, but the other party still managed to get a hold of Kylie. This meant that the opponents' fighting ability was also quite strong.

Chapter 830

Selena thought nothing odd of the kidnapping; so long as Kylie and everybody else returned safely. She did not say anything much so that her parents would not worry.

After all, Selena knew that Fiona would not only be worried but would also bark at Fane to no end. Fiona might blame it on Fane; she would have said that he made too many enemies and caused something like that to happen.

Fane took a small bottle of medication and gave it to Orchid and the other bodyguard. He then told both bodyguards to take a rest before he picked up Kylie and walked back to the villa.

That night, an uproar filled the entire Middle Province.

News that the Wilson family, Green Sky Hall, Kingston Hall, and Eagle Clan dismantled overnight spread like wildfire.

Rumor had it that they crossed a very important person, and the masters of these clans were killed as a result.

The rumor continued that the remaining people took something expensive and left Middle Province that night as if they were afraid they would also be killed.

The other clans were extremely frightened when they heard it. After all, Green Sky Hall and Eagle Clan were no small clans that people would purposely seek trouble with. Kingston Hall, on the other hand, was one of the biggest amongst all clans, and their Four Great Warriors were extremely strong.

Nobody expected that a clan like that would disappear overnight.

The second day, at the Drake family mansion, James and Tanya were just as shocked when they heard the news.

“Do you know who did it?” James asked as he looked at

Spectre Face, who was beside them.

Spectre Face shook his head. “Not many people from these clans were left, but all of them were so frightened that they left Middle Province last night.” Spectre Face paused for a moment before he went on, “However, I discovered many bodies in a valley not far away from Blaze Mountain, and the bodies of Lee Neuman and the rest were also there. I inspected their wounds and discovered from the attacks that it was done by the same person. It’s daunting that one person can kill so many strong masters!”

James nodded after he heard this. “I suspect that Fane was the one who did it!”

Spectre Face also nodded. “Master, I also suspect that it was Fane as these clans had crossed Fane recently. Apart from that, I heard that Fane’s daughter, Kylie was abducted at the school entrance right after school period. Two of their bodyguards were no match for the abductors, so they were taken away as well.”

“This guy is too fearsome. I wonder if he’s hurt after killing so many people to save his daughter!” James was overwhelmed. “He’s astoundingly unkillable for coming back alive after killing so many people alone. I think that even if he’s not a God of War, his fighting ability is almost the same as one!”

Spectre Face was also in awe. “To be honest, this is the first time I’ve seen such a strong person. Lucky for us,

we've never fought with or pissed Fane off before. We would've been done for if we did!"

James nodded in agreement. "I'll tell Timothy about this later. I'm afraid that this guy would cause more trouble if we don't."

"That's right. It's quite a big blow for our eldest young master. He's been at home all this while, and he doesn't even talk!"

Chapter 831

Spectre Face nodded as he spoke.

After a while, James went to visit Timothy.

Timothy glanced at James before he shifted his gaze and ignored James.

"I'm here today to tell you something," began James as he kept his gaze on Timothy. "It's best if you cease all thoughts of getting back at Fane. Kingston Clan, Green Sky Hall, the Wilson family, and Eagle Clan were all overthrown in just one night. All their masters and leaders are dead. Those that remain aren't skillful enough, so they ran away from Middle Province last night!"

"What?!" Timothy was shocked. "You're saying that both large clans, Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan, together with the Wilson family and Green Sky Hall, have been destroyed?!"

James nodded. "We investigated the matter and discovered that Fane was behind their ultimate downfall. These four powers worked together to kidnap Fane's daughter. Fane went to Blaze Mountain alone, and the path he walked was littered with corpses. This caused all four powers to disappear from Middle Province!"

"He went alone? Impossible... That's impossible! How can he be so powerful? He's no God of War!" Timothy shook his head vehemently. All he thought of for the past two days was how he could get back at Fane and end him, once and for all.

If what his father said was true, did that not mean that he would never get his revenge?

"Even if he's no God of War, his fighting ability can rival theirs. Such a person is really too scary!" James smiled bitterly and advised, "Timothy, I know that you hate him very much, but you can't do anything about it. I've urged you many times to befriend Fane and not offend him, yet my words fell on deaf ears. Shouldn't you reflect the reason why you're in this situation now?"

As he noted Timothy remained silent, James continued, "Do you think that I'd purposely give up getting justice for you? I'm not afraid, but I had to weigh everything in life. If we really went on a quest for vengeance, the entire Drake family would be involved. By then, we won't be able to avenge you. That's not getting revenge; that's going on a suicide mission! Apart from that, why did you try to take

advantage of Selena? You would've been dead had you been someone else. Fane has been benevolent enough to keep you alive!"

"I get it, Father!" Timothy eventually conceded and nodded. "Fane is really too strong. Who knew that he'd hide his true powers so well? Now, he's destroyed three clans at one go, and two of those clans are really big ones. Haha! The hidden powers in Middle Province would act much more cautiously in the future!"

James nodded. "That's right. We dared not offend Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan before because they had the upper hand, a higher edge than us, but things have now changed. With both clans gone, the other clans can't even compare to first-class aristocratic families. We've no need to fear anything else in the future. We'll be fine as long as we don't offend powerful people like Fane or the Gods of War."

"It's quite late at night... Rest early." James sighed inwardly when he saw Timothy withering in front of him and walked downstairs.

He knew his son could not resign to this ending, but what else could they have done? Fane's power was so much more than they initially thought.

Chapter 832

"It's horrifying… It's too horrifying. All four powers have been destroyed overnight!" The George family's master was just as shocked.

He looked at Sharon—who sat before him—and said, "Sharon, do you know the results of our investigation? The destruction of these four powers was done by one person! There's a huge possibility that he did it on his own!"

"How's that possible? One person? Are you telling me that one person did all of that?" Sharon looked at her father with widened eyes as she shared her father's astonishment.

The George family's master nodded. "Yes, and this person is none other than Fane!"

"How's that possible? That's impossible!" Sharon could not believe her ears. "While Fane is rather strong, he can't be that powerful. The masters of Kingston Hall have the power comparable to Kings of War, what more the masters of the other powers. I think that apart from the Gods of War or eight-star King of Wars like Skyler Celestino, nobody can manage this. Even Skyler Celestino would get hurt if he's surrounded by so many people and killed so many…

"He's hurt!" Sharon suddenly stood up. "Father, are you sure that the investigation showed a huge possibility that it's Fane?"

"Yes. Somebody kidnapped his daughter that afternoon, and Fane left the city right after," answered the George family's master.

"That's bad! Even if Fane is alive, he must be injured! I need

to go visit him!" Sharon was extremely anxious and ran out of the villa.

"This…" The George family's master chuckled bitterly as he saw Sharon running out. "Did this girl forget that Fane is a miracle-working doctor? He cured you, so it's only right that he'd be alright, don't you think?"

He sighed. "Sadly, this is unrequited love. We'd be very fortunate if my daughter can marry someone like Fane!"

…

Fane and the others were eating when an old man walked in. "Haha! Seems like I've come at the right time. I'm blessed with some great food!"

"King of War Celestino!" Andrew and Fiona stood up in excitement when they saw that the eight-star King of War Skyler Celestino came to their residence.

"Oh my, an honorable guest is here! Quickly, prepare utensils for the King of War Celestino!" Andrew was beyond thrilled. He was an eight-star King of War—a person who could get everything he wanted—and he came as their guest.

"Haha! I happened to pass by, so I thought I could stop by for a drink!" Skyler laughed and sat beside Fane. "How is everything? Are you still satisfied with the bodyguards I introduced you?"

Skyler knew Fane was the one who destroyed all four powers. He also believed that Fane would suffer no injuries, even if he was alone when he fought such forces.

"Satisfied. I'm very satisfied with them, especially with Elaine, who's about to become Ben's wife," beamed Fane, followed with a chuckle.

Chapter 833

The corners of Skyler's mouth twitched when Fane revealed the news. After all, Elaine was his disciple.

He slapped his thigh and irritatedly commented, "What the hell? Why didn't Elaine tell me this? That's disrespectful; I'm her master!"

"What? Elaine is your disciple?" Fiona was beyond thrilled to have heard such a pleasant fact. When Ben would marry Elaine, would they be able to raise their family status with the master-disciple relationship between Elaine and Skyler? If anything happened, Skyler could not just ignore it, no?

Unfortunately, Elaine and Ben were not present at the table and were at their internet cafe instead. It would be good if they were here. Ben could share a drink or two with Skyler and improve their relationship.

"That's right! That girl should've mentioned it to me!" Skyler said happily. "Had you guys not told me about it, I probably would only find out on the day of their marriage!"

“Haha! Come, drink! Let’s have a drink!” Fane laughed, picked up the red wine bottle in front of him, and poured wine for Skyler.

“Oh my, how can you pour wine for me?” Skyler was startled since it was the Supreme Master in front of him. He mindlessly blurted, “I should be pouring wine for you!”

Right as he spoke that, he realized he made a fatal mistake. Fane concealed his true identity and nobody at the table—including Selena—knew that he was the Supreme Warrior.

Skyler gave an embarrassed smile as he was met with odd looks sent his way, and he sheepishly explained, “I mean, I can do this myself. Surely I can do this myself as I like to pour my own wine! You guys are being too generous. People who drink together are family, and there’s no status difference between us! You guys shouldn’t trouble yourselves, too!”

Fiona and the others finally realized what happened. What Skyler said was too shocking for them. Why did they have the feeling that Fane was much stronger than him, to the point that an eight-star King of War had to pour wine for Fane? What this old man said was too…

Fane was just as speechless about what happened. It was fine for Skyler to join them and have drinks, but why did he have to say something like that?

Fane smiled embarrassingly and offered, "That won't work. Even if we don't consider your status as the King of War, I should consider you as my elder with your age. Shouldn't I be the one to fill your wine glass?"

Skyler immediately responded with a smile. "Oh, but of course! You're very humble, my boy! Come, let's drink together!"

"Of course! Come, let's drink!" Fiona and the others were elated. Joan, who seldom drank, also joined in the toast. After all, it was bad to not honor the eight-star King of War.

The last thing everyone expected was for Sharon to barge in at that very moment. "Is everything alright? Fane, are you okay?" Those who guarded the door knew that she was Fane's friend, so they let her and her bodyguards enter without informing the others.

Sharon instantly hurried toward Fane and ran her hands all over his body. "How are you feeling?" fretted Sharon. "Are you hurt?"

Fane was downright flustered; so many eyes were on him!

"Well, nothing happened," came Fane's immediate answer. "Miss Sharon, I don't know what you're talking about. Don't I look fine?"

Sharon instantaneously relaxed after Fane's reply. "Really? Thank goodness you're alright. I was so scared when I heard my father say that you overturned the Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall and the other powerful clans. I thought that you'd be hurt as you killed so many people on your own!" It was only then when she looked at Selena, who was by the side, and realized that she did too much. She smiled embarrassingly and blushed.

Chapter 834

"What?!" shrieked Fiona upon hearing what Sharon had said. "How's that possible? Miss Sharon, have you gotten some things mixed up here? The four powerful clans that had hordes of men, together with the Wilson family, were overturned by Fane?"

Fane stood, petrified and flabbergasted. If he let Sharon continue to run her mouth, his identity would be exposed for sure.

Sharon frowned and said, "There… There's no actual evidence, so I think so...? My father told me about it!"

Fane laughed and said calmly, "I thank you for your concern, Miss Sharon, but you must've made a mistake here. How can I accomplish such a feat? The only person here who can do that would only be Skyler Celestino, an eight-star King of War!"

He immediately changed the subject as he spoke, "Quick, bring some utensils for Miss Sharon. Since you're here,

come eat and drink with us!"

Sharon smiled. "Oh my, King of War Celestino is also here. If that's the case, I'd accept this with great honor!"

"That's for sure, Miss Sharon. Don't hesitate the next time you feel like coming over. Just treat this place like it's yours, alright?" Fiona felt utterly pleased at that moment, though she wondered what had happened as important people like King of War Skyler Celestino and Sharon George visited them in their residence.

"Really? Haha! Then I'll definitely come and hang out when I'm free!" Sharon laughed and secretly glanced at Fane, her face red due to shyness.

Fiona had high hopes that Fane would marry Sharon, since their family would amass quite the wealth from their marriage.

Unfortunately, Fane—that blockhead—refused to obey her, and Fiona was at a loss for words at the fact. She could not tie Fane up and force him to get married, right?

Fiona could only hope that Fane and Sharon would get closer after meeting each other more and more.

"That's weird. If it's not Fane, who would it be? This person is too strong!" Nobody anticipated that Sharon would whisper to herself after she sat down.

"Who cares about who that person is? It's definitely not Fane!" Fiona remarked at that moment. "Fane is quite strong, and he won't break a sweat if he's to fight ten to twenty people at once, but it's impossible for him to kill a few hundred or thousands of people. How can he be that strong? If he's so strong, he'd be a seven or eight-star King of War, don't you think? Wouldn't that mean that we don't need to worry about anything else in our lives?"

Fane purposely chimed in, "That's right! How I wish that's me, though. How good would it be if I'm that strong! Pitifully, I can only worship that kind of person!"

"Come now, let's not trouble ourselves about this person. In my opinion, this person must be a heroic, stalwart character, and he might also be a master from a different city. After all, Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall, and Eagle Clan are hidden powers, thus it's only plausible that they must've offended many people and had many enemies.

"This time, they must've offended someone they couldn't afford to, thus resulting in their ultimate downfall," commented Skyler as he helped Fane smooth things over. "There are so many small and big powers in this world. It's normal for powers to grow and for some to disappear. Normal occurrences, nothing new."

"Yes, that's right. Come, let's all enjoy our drinks. We're lucky that King of War Celestino granted us a visit and is drinking with us here at our house!" Fane raised his wine glass, and everybody started drinking again.

It was only after a few glasses did Skyler asked, “By the way, how’s the preparation for Miss Selena’s birthday party? There are only six days left. I'll be sure to attend to have a drink or two!”

“Everything is prepared. We welcome King of War Celestino if you can attend the party!”

Chapter 835

Fane smiled.

“Oh, my! That’s great!” gushed Fiona with a smile upon hearing Skyler’s comment. “King of War Celestino, I’ll be frank with you: Cecilia Taylor of the Taylor family is also getting married to Kelly Gold of the Gold family on that day. They’ve already sent out the invitations, and I’m afraid that everybody will choose to attend their wedding instead of coming to our party!”

“Haha! And how is that possible? Even if everybody else attends Kelly and Cecilia’s wedding, I won’t give them any face. I’ll be sure to attend the birthday party Fane is hosting for Selena. Haha! After all, I like this young guy!” Skyler chuckled. What he wanted to say was that all the majors, Kings of War, and maybe even Gods of War would attend the birthday party Fane prepared for Selena.

“Me too! I’ll definitely attend Sister Selena’s birthday party!” Sharon declared her decision with a grin.

"Thank you very much, you two. I'm so worried that nobody would come to the party, and that'd be so embarrassing!" Andrew was grateful. "It's good that both of you will be coming, even if the others won't. After all, Miss Sharon and King of War Celestino are important people!"

"That's too generous of you to say. Too generous!" Skyler immediately said seriously. "Brother, you should drink a glass of wine as your punishment!"

"Yes, I should be punished!" Andrew immediately poured a glass of wine for himself and happily drank it down.

Meanwhile…

The quartet—Neil Hugo, Ivan Taylor, Ken Clark, and Xena Jackson—were in a bar as they drank.

Ken mulled over his thoughts for a moment before he began, "By the way, did you guys know about the huge news that Kingston Hall and four other powerful clans had been overthrown?!"

"Yes, it's a really big issue. My father had just told me to keep a low-profile and not offend anybody, but I think he's just being too careful for his own good!" Neil smiled bitterly, took the wine glass in front of him, and finished all the wine.

Ken, on the other hand, had a frown on his face. "I wonder who that person is; he's really too strong. On another note,

it's six days to Selena's birthday party. I wonder how Fane is doing now. The poison should be doing its job!"

"Yes, I've been thinking about it too. It's unfortunate that Xena isn't with Ben right now as can't get any news about Fane's situation. This guy's got a healthy physique and is rather skilled in fighting. I wonder how he is right now after consuming the poison," Neil responded.

Ivan thought about it, swirled the wine in the glass, and smiled in a contemplating way. "I think that his body is so weak right now that he'd fall from a light touch from others. Don't you think so?"

Ken started laughing after he heard this. "I don't think that far-fetched, but a normal person would've fallen at this point. Fane is quite strong and was a soldier for five years, but I think that his body is almost the same as a normal person's body right now. Any bodyguard would be able to hurt him!"

"He must've discovered that something's wrong by now. I wonder if both he and Selena are worried about what to do next!" Ivan smirked. "No matter. In order to be safe, I think that it's best for us to find a chance and check the situation at their place. I want to see his progress after being poisoned!"

"That's right. After all, his house is just opposite ours. I'll go with you tomorrow. Let's hold hands and go make Ben angry!" said Xena with an impish smirk.

“Honey, you’re really naughty, but I like it! Haha!” Ivan chuckled.

Chapter 836

Early the next morning, while Selena, Fane, and the others were taking a stroll in the yard, Ivan and Xena walked over while holding hands.

“Ivan, why are you here?” Selena’s face immediately darkened when she saw Ivan and Xena. She asked unwelcomingly.

Not only did Ivan snatched Ben’s girlfriend. Ivan still got together with Xena when he knew that Xena was Ben’s girlfriend. Although she had hated this woman since earlier on and wanted Ben to break up with her. They were obviously humiliating Ben.

“Hey, Can’t I come over? We are a family, can’t I come over to take a look?” Ivan smiled and said. “I’m here to ask about the preparation for Selena’s birthday party. I heard that Kelly and Cecilia booked the top floor of a six-star hotel!”

When Ivan was speaking, he was staring at Fane. He wanted to observe if Fane appeared weaker.

“Haha, you don’t need to be worried about this matter, I trust my husband. When he said that everything is prepared, then everything will be prepared. I also believe that my husband will surprise me!” Selena smiled coldly and

showed an estranged expression to Ivan.

“Oh my, honey, I wonder what’s wrong with me. I feel dizzy and my limbs feel weak. Sometimes, I even experience breathlessness and pain in my chest. I feel so weak!” Fane was not dumb and he soon understood why the other party was there. He rubbed his head on purpose and put on a weak look with a frown on his face.

“How’s that possible. Hubby, are you alright?” Selena was shocked when she heard this. Fane was still fine last night. Why did he suddenly feel unwell today?

Xena and Ivan glanced at each other when they heard that. They were extremely happy as the poison must have taken effect. Although Fane did not show it in an obvious manner nor did he seem to be extremely weak, it might just be something related to his physical strength.

“It’s nothing, maybe it has something to do with the fact that I haven’t rested well for a few days!” Fane smiled indifferently and said.

“Do you want to go and get a checkup at the hospital?” Selena was still slightly worried and continued asking.

“There’s no need for that, honey!” Fane shrugged his shoulders. “Look, don’t I look a lot better now? Apart from that, I’m a doctor myself. I have examined myself and didn’t discover anything wrong. It might just be a lack of rest!”

Ivan and Xena were extremely happy when they heard this.

"Oh my, isn't that Ben? You're back?" At that moment, Xena greeted Ben when she saw Ben walking in with two pretty bodyguards. "How are you doing recently? We haven't met for some time but why do I feel that you still look the same as you were previously? Why are you still dressed so plainly?"

Ivan, on the other hand, said with a smile. "I heard that you've opened up an internet cafe and is now a business owner? Do you have a girlfriend yet? Let me tell you about my girlfriend. She's so pretty and so wild at night!"

"Hey, you!" Xena blushed and lightly pushed Ivan on his chest with her delicate fist.

Chapter 837

"Everything is fine as I'm quite easily satisfied!" Ben smiled and glanced at Elaine, who was standing beside him.

Elaine smiled sweetly back and held onto Ben's hand. "Xena Jackson, I really don't know how to thank you. You gave up such a good man and I've gotten this precious person now!"

"You...you've gotten a girlfriend?" Ivan's face darkened when he saw them. He was slightly envious as Elaine had a good figure and beautiful eyes. She also looked younger and prettier than Xena and had a fairy-like aura.

"That's for sure. Do I, Ben Taylor, look like someone who

can't get a girlfriend?" Ben snorted coldly, glanced at Xena, and said. "I believe that I'm much better than someone who's been toyed by many motor robbers previously. I heard my sister mentioned this before but I refused to believe it. Haha, now I finally understand how cheap someone can be! You can get her as long as you have money!"

"You…" Xena was extremely angry. Ivan knew nothing about her past with the motor robbers. She had no idea that Ben would mention that at this moment.

Ivan's face immediately darkened. He knew the last time he slept with Xena, she was no longer a virgin and thought that Ben was the one who slept with Xena previously. He had no idea that Xena had crossed paths with many gangsters in the past. How could he remain calm when he knew that this woman had slept with so many men?

Apart from that, Ben's current girlfriend was so much prettier compared to Xena.

"Is he telling the truth?" Ivan looked at Xena and asked with a dark expression on his face.

"Ivan, don't believe in the nonsense he just said. I did hang out with the motor robbers previously but we only enjoyed a couple of drinks together. I'm not a casual woman!" Xena was so frightened that she explained hastily to Ivan.

The current Taylor family was a second-class aristocratic family and Ivan Taylor was the young master of a

second-class aristocratic family. If they get married soon after, she would be a young mistress. Was this not the life she wanted since long ago?

Ivan wanted to scold Xena loudly. However, he thought about it and realized that he could not be in a conflict with Xena right now.

After all, the situation would turn against him if he angered Xena and she told on him about poisoning Fane. Even Old Master Taylor would change his opinion about him if the old master knew of such a despicable act.

Ivan understood clearly that Old Master Taylor was someone who paid attention to integrity and uprightness. He would not condone someone who used such despicable ways.

"Haha, Ben, I know that you're trying to drive a wedge between us. In your dreams, I'm not falling for this trick of yours!" Ivan laughed. He pulled Xena's hand and said, "Come, let's go. I do not want to waste time speaking to these people!"

After taking several steps, Ivan thought about it, turned around, and said to Fane, "By the way, Fane, although Selena's birthday is on the same day as Cecilia's wedding, you don't need to worry about anything. I will definitely make time to attend. After all, Selena is also my cousin and all of us are from the Taylor family, I will definitely give face to you guys!"

Fane smiled coldly after he heard this and said, “It doesn’t matter if you give me face or not. After all, we don’t really welcome you. You might be disappointed when you come over!”

Fane knew clearly that Ivan wanted to come to the birthday party to see how he dies. However, Ivan would be very disappointed by then.

“Ivan, don’t believe a word the crazy Ben said. He hates me because he can’t get me!” After they exited the villa, Xena smiled and explained to Ivan.

Chapter 838

“Baby, don’t you worry about it. I don’t believe what Ben had said as it’s obvious that he’s purposely trying to drive a wedge in between us. I definitely see his motives!” Ivan hugged Xena and smiled.

However, he was secretly unhappy. Xena was a woman who loved money and he could clearly feel that this woman was a total gold digger so what Ben said was clearly true.

When he thought of this, he strengthened the decision to not marry Xena.

However, he could not have a fall out with Xena right now and tell her that he’s not marrying her. If not, this girl might tell others about how he asked her to poison Fane. Would it not be terrible if Fane managed to find an antidote within these last few days?

He could not take the risk although the possibility was low.

Hence, he had to wait several days until after Fane's death. By then, he could think of ways to break up with her, give her some money, and get her to leave.

"Ivan is really shameless. I think he's here to make fun of Fane. How dare he come over on purpose to ask about the preparation for Selena's birthday!" Ben smiled, held Elaine's hand, and entered the villa.

"Hubby, are you alright? Do you really feel uncomfortable?" After Ivan and Xena left, Selena still looked at Fane worryingly.

Fane felt warm in his heart. "Silly, I feel very good now. Don't you realize what Ivan and Xena are here to check on? They are here to look at how I will be when the poison kicks in. They are here to test the waters and since they want to see me dying from the poison so badly, I gave him a taste of it!"

"Oh, I see… Hubby, you're really bad. How can you be so good at acting that I was also almost tricked by you!" Selena relaxed. She glanced at Fane coquettishly and that look made Fane enchanted.

"Haha, what to do? My wife is a dumb girl with no brains!" Fane laughed and said.

Selena blushed, looked around, and said after she discovered that nobody was there. “It’s all because of you, recently you kept… Humph! How dare you describe me like that. You’re not allowed to touch me tonight!”

“Honey, I’m sorry!”

“Go away!”

…

Time flew and news about the four powerful clans were destroyed soon passed by. Everyone stopped discussing about it and everything returned to its usual ways.

Finally, the day of Selena’s birthday party and Cecilia’s wedding dinner came.

“Hubby, where’s the hotel you booked?” Selena, who had already dressed up, came downstairs and asked Fane.

Although she felt that what Fane said about holding a city-stirring party was slightly overboard but she still looked forward to it.

Fane glanced at the time and smiled slightly. “Let’s go. All of us should leave now! I’ve booked a big hotel and it’s a seven-star hotel!”

“Seven-star?! Fane, are you joking? How much would that cost? You must be joking, right?” Ben inhaled a cold breath

when he heard this as he was extremely shocked.

“I believe in our master!” Elaine smiled. Fane was the Supreme Warrior and such an event would be nothing to him!

“You must be boasting again! Why don’t you tell us that you’re holding the party on the top floor of the seven-star hotel?” Fiona rolled her eyes at Fane and said angrily. She felt that Fane was unreliable.

“Hey, mother-in-law, you’re really a prophet! That’s exactly it!” Fane smiled. “Let’s go, the fleet of cars are waiting for us at the entrance!”

Chapter 839

“A fleet?”

The public was shocked once again.

Everyone walked out. Only then did they notice a fleet of 100 Rolls-Royces, parked at the entrance.

“Are you kidding me? Even if you rent 100 cars, it would cost a hefty sum of money. And they’re all new!”

Ben gulped.

“Fane, don’t tell me this is the fleet that we’re going to take? And why are there fresh flowers on the cars? Why are they all decorated like wedding cars? And there are

words reading 'Just Got Married' on it!"

Fiona looked completely taken aback. Her eyes nearly popped out of her sockets. It could not have been cheap, even if they were just rented cars.

"Oh, I know. It's so obvious that these are wedding cars. They must be the ones that Kelly prepared for Cecelia!"

Andrew's face darkened. "That Kelly and Cecelia," he huffed. "Why did they park their wedding cars at our gates? Are they trying to disgust us on purpose?"

Fiona finally snapped into her senses. That was right. How could a good-for-nothing like Fane have the money to hire such a fleet!

Only the Gold family could probably come up with such a huge amount of money. After all, this was for the wedding ceremony of their young master.

Yet at this moment, another fleet of cars was driving by not too far away. These were wedding cars as well—Porsches, Bentleys, Audis, and BMWs. All of them were luxury cars.

However, this car fleet was insignificant compared to the 100 Rolls-Royces.

Plenty of passersby whipped out their phones to take photos when they saw the sight. Both of the fleets filled them with admiration.

Selena had been surprised as well when she saw so many Rolls-Royces parked at the gate. Then her heart leaped with delight.

The Taylor family had just exited from the place. Each of them was overjoyed, knowing that the fleet had come.

However, disappointment tinged her heart when she heard her father's words. He was right, there were so many Rolls-Royces. No way that Fane had prepared all that.

Yet she never expected the fleet of cars to actually stop at the entrance of the Taylor family's villa.

This stunned her once again.

Fane smiled and took her hand in his. "Selena, I've prepared this fleet of cars for you. Don't worry about the money. You'll be the most beautiful bride today!"

"Bride? Isn't this a birthday party?"

Selena was extremely shocked. Her lips parted in disbelief.

"Idiot. I owe you a proper wedding ceremony too. This has been stirring within me all this while, so today is actually the belated day of our wedding!"

Fane smiled, affection filled up his eyes.

"Fane, are–are you saying that you really prepared this entire fleet of cars for us? But what about the wedding dress? Shouldn't I be wearing a wedding dress for a wedding? And you should have prepared a ring!"

Fiona was extremely excited now, and could not be bothered to ask where Fane had gotten the money. Fane was going to make both her and her husband's reputation skyrocket to the heavens. She even felt a shortness of breath.

"Mom, Fane has already given me the ring. I'm wearing it right now."

Selena rolled her eyes at her mother. "Aren't you being too greedy?"

"What about a wedding dress? There should at least be a dress for a wedding."

Fiona immediately pressed on.

"Don't worry, Mother. A professional makeup team is awaiting Selena at the hotel!"

Fane grinned. "We can't miss that out since it's a wedding. And I've even prepared a necklace for her!"

He took off the necklace that Selena was currently wearing around her neck. "You'll be wearing that necklace instead!" he said, smiling.

Chapter 840

"What's going on over there?"

Kelly, the head of the Gold family, and the others were also in their own fleet of cars. Each of them was elated.

The fleet that they had prepared today was pretty good.

However, they were instantly shellshocked after they got down from the cars, noticing the numerous cars parked in front of the entrance leading to the villa belonging to Fane and the others.

They had only prepared twenty cars for their fleet, but they had nearly a hundred—and all of them were Rolls-Royce.

"No way. Did Fane prepare all of that for Selena?"

The Taylor family had arrived as well. All of them were stupefied.

"Fane seems to be in good spirits!"

Ivan squinted at Fane from a distance. Confusion overtook him. Was he seeing things? According to logic, he should not even be able to get up right now. Was it because his body was so strong that he was still able to hold on until now?

"No way. They're all wedding cars!"

Cecilia, who was in a wedding gown, quirked her lips at the corners. She did not believe that Fane had prepared those wedding cars for Selena.

"That's right. No way that's happening!"

"Selena's not even in a wedding dress," Xena interjected, smirking. "How could that be the case?"

However, as soon as she said that, she herself did not quite believe her own words. After all, the only villa on the other side of the street belonged to Fane and the others. There were no other luxury villas around them.

The next second, shock rippled throughout everyone. The chauffeur who stood before Fane and the others actually opened the car door for them.

Fane waved toward the people on the other side before getting in the car.

"This…"

Even Master Gold's complexion had gone pale. His son was having a wedding now. Was Fane also having a wedding ceremony with Selena? More importantly, their fleet of cars had already lost out to his. It was a huge blow to his reputation.

"Let's go. Get into the car!"

In the end, Master Gold could only flash an awkward smile and tell everyone to hop into the cars.

"Let's follow them!"

Fane told the driver.

Soon enough, the Gold family's car fleet headed the procession, and Fane's car fleet followed them at a leisurely pace.

"Fane did promise that he would send ripples throughout the city. Heh. Does he think he can do that just by hiring a fleet of cars like that? What a joke. There are plenty of other things to spend on for a wedding!"

Master Gold, who was sitting beside Old Master Taylor, chuckled before speaking, "We've booked the top floor of a six-star hotel, Mr. Taylor. We wanted to book one from a seven-star hotel, but we never thought that another tycoon would book the place faster than we did. He booked the entire hotel!"

Here, Master Gold paused for a while before continuing in a careless tone, "So we'll have to trouble you for a while. We really had no choice. We never expected this!"

"The entire hotel? How flamboyant. He'd have to spend at least twenty to thirty billion bucks."

Old Master Taylor took a sharp intake of breath when he heard that. The Taylor family was a second-class aristocratic family now, but they would never spend that much money for a wedding ceremony. It was like burning money, as though it grew from trees.

Even the venue that Kelly had booked could not have been cheap. It was a pretty luxurious place, and it cost them 1,888,000,000 bucks. Yet that mystery man had booked an entire seven-star hotel.

"Huh. Why is Fane's fleet of cars trailing after us?"

Chapter 841

Quickly enough, Master Gold seemed to realize that something was amiss. He frowned. He felt dissatisfied. What on earth was Fane following them for?

"Perhaps it's a coincidence. Maybe they so happen to be going this way!"

Old Man Taylor furrowed his brows. Fane had said that he wanted to throw a birthday party for Selena, but he had been secretive about it. He did not even give them an invitation—in fact, he never even told them about the date and location.

He had even assumed that Fane would have thought that the act was meaningless, considering that the Taylor family and plenty of other aristocratic families would be attending Cecilia's wedding instead of their birthday party. He had

assumed that was the reason why Fane had not told anyone about it.

However, he never expected that Fane would cook up such a display today. The young man must have spent a fortune on the car fleet. Did he truly arrange all that?

"I know!"

At this moment, Master Gold slapped his thigh. "It must be due to that seven-star hotel being booked by a super tycoon family, and Fane and the others probably just hitched a ride from some other person to get to their own hotel, which happens to be around that area, so it'll be along the way… He's just doing it for the sake of his vanity."

"No way. Those are wedding cars. How could anyone agree to that?"

Old Man Taylor flashed a bitter smile. "I think Fane is just bending over backward to maintain his dignity. Ah, young people these days. Never mind them. It's Cecilia's wedding today. We'll definitely take part in it!"

The Gold family's fleet of cars soon arrived at the entrance of the six-star hotel. When they stopped, they realized that Fane's fleet of cars drove on and parked near the entrance of the seven-star hotel.

"No–no way!"

The members of the Taylor and the Gold family were all stunned at the sight once they got down from the car. The seven-star hotel had been entirely booked by a mystery tycoon. Was the mystery tycoon Fane himself?

A red carpet had been unfurled before the hotel entrance. Fane walked forward, Selena's hand in his, and rose petals slowly drifted over their heads.

"It's beautiful!"

Selena lifted her chin, shocked. The petals were falling from the highest floor, dancing with a lazy breeze. It was as though it was raining roses.

Suddenly, the entire hotel transformed into a screen—and Selena's smiling face appeared on it, the beautiful expression captured by a passing drone.

"Not bad. Not bad at all!"

Fiona, Ben, and the others were all extremely moved.

Did Fane actually book this entire hotel? Where did he even get the money from?

"Let's go in. Who cares about them? I don't think that any of the other aristocratic families or those war officers would actually attend the birthday party and forgo the wedding happening on our side!"

Cecilia was so furious that her face had gone white. She stamped her foot.

"It doesn't look like a birthday party. Look at that screen—they're celebrating Fane and Selena's wedding!"

Ivan pointed at the building.

At this moment, everyone's phones buzzed.

They all took out their phones. It was actually a mass message congratulating Fane and Selena on their wedding.

"No way. If we're getting a text like this, doesn't that mean that the entire country has gotten the same thing?"

Old Man Taylor was completely stupefied; he wondered if he had gone blind. Every one of them received the same message. Was this a mass congratulatory message?

"No–no way. It probably got sent out to the entire Middle Province. They must have designated a specific province!"

Cecilia immediately protested.

Even if that were the case, it would have been impossible if not for some figure with considerable influence.

Chapter 842

The location of the hotel was even included at the end of the message.

"Why is Fane holding a wedding now, when he hadn't even bothered to tell us before? Didn't he say it was a birthday party?"

Master Roy frowned. He was just about to leave for Cecilia's wedding when he received the unexpected message.

"What should we do, Master? If we go to Fane's wedding, Cecilia's wedding is still ongoing. And Cecilia and her family had specially invited us! Not only did Fane not give us a notice in advance but he's also holding this ceremony just to make up for what he hadn't done. It's fine if we don't go!"

A middle-aged man beside Master Roy drew his brows together, pondering. Then he posed the question.

Master Roy was speechless for a while as well. "Geez. Couldn't he have chosen another date? Why did he have to hold it on the same day as Cecilia's wedding? I wouldn't even have thought of going if it were a birthday party since Cecilia's wedding is more important—and since I should give face to the Taylor family. But I really don't know what to do now!"

"Why don't we see if the Goddess of War shows up there first? We'll attend Fane's wedding if the Goddess of War is there, and we'll just send our wedding gifts over to the Gold family!"

The middle-aged man suggested to his master after

considering the situation.

"What if the Gods of War don't turn up at either of their weddings? Then we'll just go to Cecilia's wedding and give the gifts to Fane and his family. It'll be fine so long as we don't offend anybody. But essentially, we'll go for whichever wedding that the Goddess of War attends—assuming that she shows up. It's likely that the King of Wars and the officers will all go to the wedding that she's attending!"

Master Roy finally made the decision after weighing his options.

"We'll know what to do, depending on how all this plays out. Aren't the two weddings in the same area? We can go to Cecilia's wedding first, and if the Goddess of War goes for Fane's wedding, it still won't be too late for us to go over. We'll just say that we want to go to their wedding as well—that we can't afford to miss either one of them. How does that sound?"

At this moment, Madam Roy suggested after she thought about it.

"We can go along with that!"

Robert nodded his head. All of them quickly set off in their cars and arrived at the square.

The two hotels were not very far from each other.

They got down from the car and entered the square first. Only then did Robert and the others notice that plenty of wealthy businessmen and third-class aristocratic families were here.

Each of them felt like they were stuck between a rock and a harder place as well. They were wondering if they should go to Fane's wedding instead. He was getting popular lately, after all. Besides, he had booked the entire hotel. They did not know if he had borrowed the money, but the sheer magnitude of his work was somewhat frightening.

Many people came over to the Roy family when they arrived.

"Master Roy, which wedding are you going to attend?"

An old man asked Robert, smiling.

It was obvious that they all wanted to know his decision.

"Has the Goddess of War made an appearance yet?"

Robert asked after he thought about it.

"Not yet!"

The old man twisted his lips into a mirthless smile. "We don't even know if she'll show up. We can't just keep standing here, can we?"

Chapter 843

Robert mirrored the old man's expression. "You're right. It would have been fine to not show up if Fane was just celebrating a birthday, but that little brat just had to go ahead and organize a wedding instead. He probably wanted to throw a surprise for Selena. That's why he did all this. He's making it difficult for us!"

A man from a third-class aristocratic family interjected, "Who cares? He didn't even bother to tell us. It'll be fine even if we don't go. The Gold family had sent out the invites a long time ago. It'll be terrible if we don't show up. I think we should just attend Young Master Gold's wedding instead."

Robert bobbed his head, smiling. "Yes. Let's go to the Gold family's wedding first. It couldn't have been easy for Fane to book a hotel as big as that. There probably will be others who'll attend his wedding!"

In a flash, all of them agreed to go over to the six-star hotel.

"Dad, Fane was the one who booked the seven-star hotel. He even included the location in his message. Will many people choose to not show up here? I'm a little worried. We've already booked a few hundred tables. If no one comes, we'll…"

Kelly, who was currently on the top floor of the six-star hotel, was getting anxious now. After all, Fane had booked a seven-star hotel. Never mind that he had already one-upped

them, he even managed to send a blast message to everyone's phones.

"Don't worry. We sent proper invitations. That brat did not send invites—in fact, he did not even tell anyone about it. Even if he's holding his wedding in a seven-star hotel, no one would go if it's tacky!"

Master Gold gave a wry smile, speaking confidently.

Just as he finished speaking, the elevator doors opened. Plenty of significant figures came into view.

"See? They're here already. Even the Roy family is here!"

Delight leaped to Master Gold's expression. He immediately stepped forward to welcome the guests.

At that moment, Selena had just finished her makeup. She went to the grand ballroom at the very top of the hotel. It was a large, grandiose space, and it was exquisitely decorated. It looked like a fairy-tale came alive.

"Not a single person is here, dear. Look at the other side. Looks like plenty of people are there!"

Selena cast her gaze toward the top floor of the other building, frowning. She knew that Fane had spent a lot of money on this. She did not know if he had borrowed it from Skyler or the Goddess of War, but she could not be bothered to ask.

Now, she was more worried that no one would come even after everything had been prepared. That would be extremely embarrassing.

"Heh. Don't worry, dear!"

Fane chuckled, his expression unfazed.

Yet more and more people appeared at the other building as time ticked by. Plenty of commanders and officers had even gone there.

After all, Old Man Taylor, the others, and the Gold family were a lot more reputable than Fane.

Additionally, Cecilia, Kelly, and the others had sneakily taken plenty of photos and sent them to their social media groups. The photos had been quickly distributed, and plenty of influential people soon knew about the hubbub that was going on there—and they knew that Master Roy and the others were there, so to the six-star hotel they went.

Finally, at the square, Skyler—with a slight grin on his face—went straight for the hotel Fane was in, plenty of officers and Kings of War in tow.

They were subsequently displayed on the screen of the seven-star hotel. They then went straight to the top floor, meeting Fane.

"Skyler Celestino, an eight-star King of War, actually went for Fane's wedding!"

Plenty of influential people looked over to the other side, shock jolting through their veins. Had they chosen the wrong place to be in after all?

Chapter 844

An eight-star King of War, plenty of officers, and another two two-star Kings of War all appeared on the screen of the hotel on the opposite side. The sight made plenty of businessmen waver.

"Heh. Who knew that plenty of people would show up there!"

Robert gave an awkward smile. At least, he had come here first to give his gifts and portray his blessings. It should be fine if he went over for a while.

After all, he had already done them a favor.

Still, there were quite a number of people here as well. Plenty of businessmen came over to pay their due respects.

It was obvious that a lot of people thought of coming to the Gold family's wedding first simply because Fane had not personally informed them of his wedding beforehand. They would consider the circumstances before actually deciding to go for Fane's wedding in a while.

After some time had passed, Master George, along with

Sharon and the others turned up at Cecilia's wedding as well.

However, they had only paid their respects for a few minutes before Master George spoke to Master Gold, smiling, "Master Gold, why is it that Kelly's wedding so happens to be on the same day as Fane's wedding? This truly makes our life difficult. But since I've already given my gifts to you, I should go over to the other side as well. I won't feel at ease if I don't show up there at all!"

Here, Master George paused before continuing, "Don't worry though. I'll bring my butler and the others here for the feast. But you know my daughter is on very good terms with Fane, so she and a few others will just be having their meal there!"

"Sure, sure. Selena is part of the Taylor family as well, after all. We're practically one family now. Go over and give your gifts. But make sure you come back here for the good food!"

Master Gold spoke, grinning. He believed that they were just going over to nose around for a bit and they would return soon.

Soon enough, Master George and the others went over to the hotel Fane and the others were in.

However Master Gold was quickly rendered speechless as the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs, showed up.

Yet she did not come over to his side; in fact, she did not even bother to give them any gifts or pay any respects. She just went straight for Fane's hotel.

Some of the aristocratic families had originally thought about dropping off their gifts to Fane before going over to the Gold family's side for the banquet. At the sight of the Goddess of War turning up at Fane's though, they quickly ordered one or two of their subordinates to give the presents to the Gold family, while they, themselves remained on Fane's side of the hotel.

More and more people were turning up on Fane's side, and the atmosphere grew livelier. Many superstars were here as well, and they performed a few songs on the stage, singing about their well wishes for the happy couple.

In contrast, although the Gold family had hired a few stars as well, they were all B-list celebrities—small fry compared to the ones on Fane's side. The most embarrassing part was that no one was there, except for themselves, the Taylor family, and a few other businessmen and aristocratic families.

"Dad. This–this…"

Cecilia looked at her father, so furious that she could spew blood. This was supposed to be the day where Selena would embarrass herself whereas she would be standing in the limelight!

She never thought that everything would turn out this way. They had already prepared meals for so many tables. If no one came over for the banquet in a while…

Cecilia's father's expression was stormy. He shot a glare at her. "We can't blame anyone even if no one turns up, right?" he said. "They had originally said that they would throw a birthday party on this date. And yet you had to have your wedding on the same day. Who's to blame here!"

Cecilia winced. "I never thought that the Goddess of War would actually go over to their side—as well as Skyler Celestino and a few other bigshots. All those businessmen and aristocratic families are so unreliable. They just go wherever the Goddess of War goes!"

Chapter 845

"Don't worry, Cecilia. We'll have a spectacle to witness later!"

Ivan and Xena exchanged a glance before the former told Cecilia.

"What spectacle? Aren't I the spectacle now?"

Cecilia was on the brink of tears.

"Come over here!"

Ivan grinned and tugged Cecilia over to the side. Then he

divulged how Fane had been poisoned.

"Really? So you're saying that Fane is going to drop dead later, just like that?"

Cecilia immediately felt better when she heard that. Even if she embarrassed herself today, she would be happy once Fane dies. She would forget all her grudges and anger then.

"Of course. I even checked on him a few days before. He already had some symptoms then. He said that he had a headache and that he was feeling fatigued. Basically, he wasn't feeling well. Hah. Look at him laughing on the other side now, chatting with the Goddess of War. But the poison will work its magic anytime soon. His death will come in a matter of one or two minutes!"

Ivan spoke confidently, smiling. He continued after thinking for a while, "But Fane's symptoms are kind of strange though. Some parts of his body should have been rotting by now, and he shouldn't even be able to stand up. It's probably because he has such a strong body!"

"Hmph. He deserves it. Who knows where he got the money to book an entire seven-star hotel? He just embarrassed me to no end. He deserves to die!"

Cecilia looked at the screen on the opposite hotel. "Judging from how he's laughing along with the Goddess of War, he probably borrowed the money from her. Only someone like that would have that much cash to lend out. And she doesn't

have to invest in any businesses. So money isn't all that important to someone like her!"

"That's probably the case. Fane had saved her, after all. They really seem to be on good terms. I really admire how he's practically sitting on her lap!"

Ivan was overwhelmed with emotion. "But he's meeting his end today. Hah! Their wedding will turn into his funeral!"

"Hmph! Which part of the event sends ripples throughout the entire city? He just booked a single hotel. He simply managed to get a hundred Rolls-Royces for his car fleet. This is nothing compared to what they had promised!"

Cecilia snorted coldly. She spoke in a sour tone, seeing as how only a few people were present at her wedding.

"Eh. Why does that person look so familiar? I think I've seen him on TV!"

At this moment, an old man with a few other people in tow went before Fane and the others to give his blessings. The image of this group was quickly captured and projected on the hotel's screen.

"That–that's the boss of Cathysia Juwel! My God. He's a disgustingly rich businessman. Probably one of the richest in the entire country. Shouldn't someone like that be in Gin City? Why's he in Middle Province?"

Cecilia quickly recognized the man. She released a loud exclamation.

"Hah. We meet again, my boy!"

The old man laughed as he walked over, clasping Fane's hand and shaking it. "I didn't know what to give, so I only brought over a few rings. They're not too expensive—probably worth three billion bucks in total!"

Chapter 846

"Isn't, isn't he the owner of the Cathysia Juwel? He is a filthy rich businessman over in Gin City! And now he is here in our humble city!"

Someone in the crowd quickly recognized the elder in front of him, after all, he was a big shot who often appeared on TV.

"Congratulations!"

Manager Lynch was here. She flashed Fane an awkward smile and then switched her attention toward Selena. "What a beautiful bride!" she exclaimed with a hint of envy in her tone.

The moment she saw Selena with her own eyes, she finally realized why Fane did not budge in the slightest at her flirt. Selena was well known for her beauty—Beauty Queen of Middle Province. Besides, her make-up and outfit were done by a team of professional make-up artists and fashionistas,

and with a stunning wedding dress on her, she looked even more attractive.

"Thank you all for coming to my wedding. Honestly, I'm a bit flattered!"

A faint yet shy smile hung on Fane's face as he put a few exquisite and sparkling rings on Selena's slender fingers.

"Do I have to wear so many rings? Look, I have it here…"

Selena's cheeks were kissed pink as though the makeup artist had painted a pink cotton candy blush on.

"Haha! Don't worry! We have to show off our wealth, right?"

Fane laughed wholeheartedly but his forehead frowned in the next second. "Hmmm…This one is too big on you!"

After dropping his last word, he tossed the ring to Joan casually and said, "Mom, this is for you!"

"Oh my goodness! Can you be a little more careful? This is so valuable! What if you break it?"

Joan's heart lurched at Fane's behavior. Fane bought three rings for three hundred million, which meant one ring was around one hundred million. How could Fane just toss it as though it was a plastic ring from a toy shop!

Fortunately, she caught the ring, otherwise, it would have

been a big loss if it was broken.

“Oh my, please be more careful, will you? I’m nearly scared to death!”

Fiona was frightened by Fane’s casual toss as well, that a sheen of cold and shiny sweat appeared on her forehead. Although the ring was given to Joan, they were family, and it would be a pity if the ring were broken because of the toss.

“Ha-ha!”

The owner of Cathysia Juwel chuckled out loud.

Businessmen and prominent families from all over Middle Province appeared at Fane’s wedding slowly, and many people were sent over by their heads of halls to attend Fane's wedding.

On the opposite side, inside the six-star hotel, a young man from the Taylor family approached the Old Master Taylor and suggested, “Old Master Taylor, Selena is your granddaughter too, shouldn’t we at least pay a visit? Today is Cecilia and Selena’s wedding, if we only attend Cecilia’s but not hers, it would not look great, right?”

Old Master Taylor had wanted to go over since a moment ago. He could not help but frown, “Don’t you think it’s humiliating for us to go over in such a situation? I announced before that I might not go to their party, and

now if I go there, I'll be eating my own words! How embarrassing! Besides, there will be no one left at Cecilia's wedding if we leave!"

The middle-aged man opened his mouth, wanted to chime in, but shut up in the end. He knew Old Master Taylor very well, he would not do something that would humiliate himself. But even when the God of War was at Fane's wedding and those wealthy businessmen from Gin city. How could Old Master Taylor still refuse to go over because of his own image and reputation? Was he not finding pain for himself?

"Guys, look! There, there is a helicopter!"

Soon, someone in the crowd pointed out a helicopter hovering toward the direction of the seven-star hotel, slowly approaching the sightseeing platform of the hotel.

"Wait, the helicopter is flying lower and lower, will it crash into the building? There is no helipad on the top of the building!

Ken Clark was dumbfounded. He was here with Neil Hugo to give Fane and Selena a gift, pretending to be friendly, but in fact, they were here to witness Fane's last day on earth.

However, after the long wait, the death did not come as they had expected, instead, the helicopter appeared.

"Here he is!"

Lana showed a big bright smile—she was truly elated.

There was no helipad on this building for this monstrous flying machine, and the distance between it and the sightseeing platform was estimated to be around one hundred meters. At this time, a man hopped and jumped down from the helicopter.

"What the f*ck? Is this guy committing suicide?"

The crowd looked at the sight before them, some were shocked that they gulped loudly.

"Oh, my freaking goodness. Death on a celebratory occasion, what bad luck!"

Chapter 847

Another person was nearly frightened to death when the man jumped down from the helicopter. The man attempting the jump was aiming to land on the sightseeing platform that was on top of the building.

The platform was not spacious, perhaps it could only fit up to twenty persons. Yet, this man chose to land here, how accurate would his jump be?

"Bang!"

The sound was slight and insignificant. The man who jumped down from the helicopter, squatted after landing on the

platform and then slowly stood up. A wicked smile appeared on the corner of the man.

The person in charge of filming and recording ran over and took a look at the man. His jaw dropped and his mouth wide opened, surprise filled up his eyes.

"Yoseph Smith, the God of War!"

After a few moments of silence circling in the crowd, an old man suddenly yelled in excitement and called out the man's name.

Yoseph showed a faint smile and approached Fane relaxingly. "Hey, Fane! It's been a long time!"

He paused for seconds as his attention was caught by a presence beside Fane. It was Selena. "Is this the Bride? How stunning is she!" Yoseph looked at Selena and praised.

"Nice…nice to meet you, God of War!"

Selena was puzzled and somewhat flattered. Did a God of War actually come to her wedding? It was reasonable for Lana, the Goddess of War to come, after all, Fane had saved her life and his relationship with her had always been good. Besides, Lana stayed in Middle Province as well.

But, Yoseph Smith, here, at her wedding? Was he not from the other city? Why was he here?

Moreover, he came in a private helicopter!

After Yoseph landed on the platform, the helicopter wheeled and hovered toward the helipad outside the city. That was the only helipad near the city.

"You're right! It's been a long time!"

Fane nodded in satisfaction as he studied this disciple of his. Then he gently patted him on the shoulder with his hand.

"Phew! Yoseph, I see you've grown handsome!"

Lana approached the group and teased Yoseph with a smile on her face.

"You're beautiful too, haha!"

Yoseph smiled brightly in return. He pondered for a moment then took out a bank card from his pocket. "Sigh! I was in rush and I have no idea what to get you. So, money is the most practical gift I can offer!"

He stuffed the bank card onto Selena's hands in the next second. "Mrs. Woods, congratulations on your big day! This is a humble gift from the bottom of my heart. It's not much, only one billion. And the password is six zeros, you can reset it later!"

"One…one billion!"

Awkward silence suddenly struck the crowd. One billion was not much? It was way too much! This gift was beyond everything!

Although the God of War was said to have received a retirement bonus of several hundred billion but was this not too much?

This only showed that Fane had a good relationship with Yoseph.

"Yoseph Smith, the God of War!"

On the other side, inside the six-star hotel across the street, the head of the Gold family, as well as the Old Master Taylor and the rest, were dumbfounded. They thought someone jumped off the helicopter to commit suicide, but in the end, it turned out to be Yoseph Smith, the God of War. Though his entrance was somewhat a little peculiar.

"What the h*ll! What the f*ck is this!"

Theodore's mouth was extensively widened as if it could fit a cow. He rubbed his eyes a few times, only then did he realize that the man was really Yoseph Smith, the God of War.

"Ahem, Master Gold, hear me out. Look, Selena is also my granddaughter and I haven't gone over to give her my

blessing. Today is her big day too, as her grandfather, I must go over and give my blessing!"

Old Master Taylor no longer cared about his image and reputation. If he were to attend Selena's wedding, he would gain more reputation than what he would lose. It would be his lifetime honor to be able to have a conversation with the God of War, why was he still at Cecelia's wedding?

"Go on, go ahead!"

Although Master Gold was upset and he could feel the anger stirring within him that his face went unsightly, he had to tamp down his irritation and gestured to the Old Master Taylor to take his leave.

Chapter 848

When Old Master Taylor arrived at the entrance of the seven-star hotel, to his surprise, he felt excitement bouncing within him. Two Gods of War came over to Fane's wedding, how dignified Fane was!

Nevertheless, he soon furrowed and muttered in confusion, "Wait, this is strange. How did the Gods of War find out that Fane's wedding was today? It was a short notice, after all. Even if the text messages have gone out to everyone, it's impossible for them to come straight after receiving the text, right? I'm afraid that Fane is not some assistant commander, otherwise, how could the Gods of War come for him?"

Ivan, on the other hand, refused to believe that Fane was some kind of King of War or some other big shot. He laughed sarcastically and said, "Hmph! Grandpa Taylor, surely this whatsoever God of War came here not for Fane but for Lana. Grandpa, think about it, I heard that Yoseph is still single and Lana is so attractive and has a good body figure. So, I'm sure that he is here for Lana rather than Fane!"

Theodore, beside them, immediately chimed in, "Ivan's analysis has a point. Fane, although he has been a soldier for five years and saved Lana before, Yoseph probably does not even know of Fane's existence. So, how can he come here for Fane? I guess he used Fane's wedding as an excuse to meet Lana. Besides, where Yoseph is staying is not far from Middle Province!"

Ivan bobbed his head to echo. "Dad is right! And maybe Lana informed him about the wedding, so that's why…"

Old Master Taylor, however, shook his head. "Didn't you see Yoseph taking out a bank card and handed it over to Selena? And I think there must be a lot of money in it, otherwise, there is no need to give a bank card specifically!"

"That I do not know. Around ten million or one to two hundred million, I guess? After all, he is a God of War, he can't be too stingy with his gift, right?"

Ivan commented after giving the matter some thoughts.

After all, sending a hundred thousand worth of gifts was not uncommon among some filthy rich businessmen. Some prominent families would even give more.

And for a man with such high status like the God of War, it was estimated to be not less than a hundred thousand.

The Taylor family entered the elevator and came up to the rooftop.

When they came out of the elevator, Old Master Taylor was nothing but full of smiles and wrinkles at the corners of his eyes. The decoration here was obviously better than Cecilia's, and the venue was at least twice as spacious. The singers that Fane hired were not of B-list but A-list and even beyond. The overall status and atmosphere was so different compared to Cecilia's, so Old Master Taylor naturally felt happier here.

"Hey, Old Master Taylor, why are you late? I was looking for you just now, and I wondered why were you not here yet."

A marshal approached the Taylors with a wide grin on his face when he spotted them.

Old Master Taylor—Zeus Taylor—smiled awkwardly and explained, "Both of my lovely granddaughters are having their big day today! Cecilia is my granddaughter as well, so it won't be great if I didn't go over and give her my blessing, right? I went there and stayed there for a short while

before I rushed over, it's fine!"

Zeus, after finishing saying his last sentence, came up to Selena smilingly and handed her a gift.

However, to everyone's surprise, after giving out an archaic jade of the Taylor family to Selena, he did not stop there, "Selena, you're now jobless. And I, plan to let you come back to help with the Taylor's company. I plan to open another new company and let you be in charge of it!"

"Grandpa…"

Selena was moved at his words. It looked like Old Man Taylor did not really despise her, and she was still in his heart. After all, her business-managing ability was indeed ten times stronger than Ivan's.

"It's set now! And you can't refuse this time. It's time we let bygones be bygones, alright? You're still my favorite granddaughter!"

Old Master Taylor held her hand firmly and said with immense emotion, "The suffering times have passed, Selena."

"Grandpa, today is my big day, it's supposed to be all smiles and laughter. Let's not talk about these!"

Fane smiled faintly. In his heart, he knew very well that the change in Old Master Taylor's attitude toward Selena was

nothing but because of the fame and reputation.

Chapter 849

Now that the owner of Cathysia Juwel was here at Fane's wedding, coupled with the arrival of Yoseph and Lana, the two Gods of War, this kind of spectacle was absolutely rare. Imagine the fame and reputation that they would bring to the Taylor family in the future, if the Taylors announce the establishment of a new company and the person in charge was Selena, this company would certainly have a bright future.

"The Drake family is here!"

A man from the scene exclaimed aloud. At this point in time, he was not expecting James from the Drake family to come.

After all, Fane beat Timothy up not long ago, hence the possibility of James coming to Fane's wedding was near to zero.

But, now that James, Tanya, and the other Drakes attended his wedding. All of them were wearing sunny and lovely smiles on their faces.

In reality, earlier this morning, James was hesitating whether to attend the wedding. After all, Fane had beaten Timothy up, thus, if he came, it would be ignominy and humiliation to him. He did not feel good about that.

However, at the same time, he was pondering whether any

God of war would attend Fane's wedding. In the birthday party last time in Taylor's residence, he had established some social network with God of war and some Kings of War and left them his contact information. This was a huge gain for him too. So if he did not come over and give Fane his blessing, would it not prove that he was petty and wanted to cut ties with Fane?

After thinking hard about it for a long time, he finally decided to send someone to attend the wedding first, to scout around. Only after he knew that Lana was there, he immediately got ready and brought the other Drakes here.

To his surprise, not only he managed to meet Lana this time, but also the man beside Lana—Yoseph Smith, another God of War.

Within him, he was overwhelmed with shock, at the same time panicking. He never saw that coming, that Yoseph Smith was here. Was he here for Fane's wedding as well?

"It's my honor to meet you, Mr. Smith, the God of War!"

James stepped forward and immediately gave Yoseph a palm-fist salute. He was shocked down to the soles of his shoes that his little heart could barely calm down.

"Great to meet you, Sir!"

The other Drakes were startled and slowly when they found their senses, they quickly bowed and greeted Yoseph.

“Oh, don’t have to be so formal. Chill! I’m here today to attend Brother Fane’s wedding and to meet his lovely wife. So, everyone just let loose and have tons of drinks and good food later!”

Yoseph chortled elatedly.

When people in Middle Province knew that another God of War had come to Fane’s wedding, many people who did not have any relationship with the Taylor family had also rushed over to send gifts and blessings. The crowd was growing bigger and bigger.

Now, the place was lively and merry.

On the other side, on top of the six-star hotel across the street, Cecelia smoldered with resentment that colors were drained out of her face. Her eyes fixated at the rooftop of the other hotel, and huffed bitterly, “James Drake, that jerk! He is just so shameless, isn’t he? Although Timothy is only lightly wounded, Fane was still the one who beat him up, how could James forget this so quickly? How could he be there and not be here!”

The head of the Gold family was smoking a cigarette on the side, his face turned unsightly as well. He had spent so much time and energy to prepare such a magnificent wedding for his son.

He could not imagine that nobody came to Cecilia’s wedding.

Even those who came, only stayed for a while, left their presents, and then went over to Fane's wedding. Some of them sent their people over to give the presents and none of them had stayed. Everyone went over to see the hustle and bustle happening at Fane's wedding. He was rendered speechless at the scene.

"This is a total humiliation to the Gold family!"

In the end, the head of the Gold family could not do anything but sighed.

Chapter 850

The more Kelly Gold thought about it, the more the anger flooded his veins. He shot Cecelia a deadly glare and barked, "Cecelia, is your brain filled with grass or what? Why do you have to have a wedding on the same day as Selena? If we were two days earlier or later, it won't be this terrible. Now look, I can actually hear a pin drop!"

Cecelia was tongue-tied, at the same time, she was burning with rage. She did not expect Kelly to shove all the blame onto her.

She returned the glare to Kelly, an exasperated one, and started complaining, "Kelly Gold, how could you blame me on this? You're part of it as well, do you remember? You are responsible for this too! When I mentioned my plan to you, you agreed to it! Why didn't you oppose it back then?"

"All right, all right, stop arguing!"

The head of the Gold family stepped forward and stopped the fight. He felt a flash of irritation at their argument. "Today is your wedding day, if you argue, you'll become even more like a joke! Do you want to be that?"

"Huh, look, look over there! Why is there another helicopter coming?"

Cecelia immediately noticed something strange and pointed in the direction.

"Yeah, you're right. There's another helicopter. Don't tell me it's here for Fane's wedding again!"

Kelly was stunned at the view, then he commented with a bitter smile on his face.

"How is that possible? It's impossible!"

The head of the Gold family said.

Nonetheless, they all went quiet the next moment when they found out that the helicopter was heading toward the top of the seven-star hotel. It hovered above the building and then lowered down to get near to the sightseeing platform.

"Ay, dios mio! Another helicopter, another one!"

The manager of the hotel quickly contacted his boss for him

come over quickly. After all, two Gods of War were already here. Today, this scene was definitely enough to shake Middle Province.

She was standing outside the hotel and lifted her head to look at the big screen that was hanging on the wall of the building.

"Bang!"

Soon, another man jumped from the helicopter, where the distance between the platform and the huge flying machine was estimated to be one to two hundred meters. He landed steadily on the platform.

The man—who was on bent knees after landing on the platform—had slowly stood up. The camera captured the man's face clearly.

This man, who had caused another commotion, was actually Fernando Campbell, another God of War!

"Oh My God! I'm gonna faint soon. It's Fernando Campbell!"

The manager of the hotel shouted in a direction, "Boss, come here! Quickly come here! From now on, our hotel is really going to be famous. Another God of War has come! Sh*t! I really didn't expect that! Who the hell is Fane? Why on earth are these Gods of War here for him?"

"Alright, good! Three Gods of War are here. We must give

them a huge discount for the hotel and the banquet. In fact, they're doing us a bigger favor by being here. We now have a slogan for our next advertisement for the hotel. Just imagine, 'Gods of War in The Seven', doesn't this sound great? With advertisements like this, our hotel will be beaming in no time!"

The owner of the hotel exclaimed excitedly; his voice was trembling.

"Fernando Campbell, the God of War!"

When James and the others had finally registered into their brains the fact that Fernando was here. They let out a long breath with a hint of shock and surprise. Fernando Campbell was another powerful God of War, and his combat prowess could definitely be considered as first or second among the nine Gods of War.

Nobody had expected to see such a marvelous figure here at Fane's wedding.

"My pleasure to meet you, dear God of War!"

Chapter 851

One of the people instinctively raised his hands to form a gesture of salute.

"It's our honor to meet you, God of War!"

Everyone followed suit, and Fane had no choice but to

return the salute as well as his voice blended into theirs.

"Please, you flatter me!"

Fernando chuckled and walked over.

A seven-star King of War could barely hold his curiosity, thus he turned to ask Yoseph, "Sir Smith, why did you choose to Fane and Selena's wedding banquet? Did you two know each other before?"

Everyone turned their heads when they heard that very question. They were curious as to why Yoseph Smith attended the banquet as well.

Yoseph gave a wan smile. Fortunately, Lana had told them to think of a good excuse before they came so that they would be prepared should they be asked such questions. Yoseph smiled and said, "I had a near-death experience not long after I was deployed on the battlefield, but Fane, with all his proficient medical knowledge, saved me. He's practically my savior, thus it's only right that I attend his banquet!"

Fane was dumbfounded when he heard Yoseph's reply. He had told them to not reveal his identity, but he never thought that Yoseph would come up with an excuse like that. He did not know what to feel about his made-up story.

After all, Lana had used this story once before.

The expressions of James and the others shifted when

they heard Yoseph's story. Who knew that Fane had saved not just one, but two Gods of War?

"What about you, Sir Campbell?" asked the seven-star King of War with a grin on his face.

Fernando did not know how to reply to that; he did not put much thought into his 'excuse'. He had thought of using the same story Yoseph gave out, but Yoseph used it as his own. With how sudden he was asked that question, Fernando could not find a better answer in such a short time, and if he took too long, it would induce suspicion.

The cogs in his brain spun as he tried to come up with a plausible excuse, yet he found not a single good story to reply to the question asked. In the end, he could only offer an awkward smile. "It's the same as Yoseph's, actually. I was injured like him and I almost lost my life too, but Fane saved both our lives!"

Yoseph smiled stiffly and chimed in, "That's right, that's exactly what happened!"

Many of the attendees could not help themselves as they sneakily fished out their phones to take photos. The sight of three Gods of War in the venue was sensational news; they wanted to gloat to their friends and family about it.

Lana stepped forward and changed the topic, "Where's your wife, Fernando? Didn't you say that you were going to bring your wives and your daughter along? Why are you here

alone?"

"They should be here anytime soon. They're actually taking the cab," Fernando replied, smiling. "I had them get off of the helicopter at the city gates, and I'm here first because I couldn't wait to see all of you. There were no hangars around here, so I just jumped off!"

"Hah! I skydived here as well. Great minds think alike!"

Yoseph laughed.

"You're right, Gods of War. We never thought about this before. Don't worry, we'll inform our boss about this and we'll quickly improve our facilities. We'll remove part of the roof there to build a hangar!"

With a large grin, the hotel manager immediately stepped forward and spoke, "It's such an honor for us to host so many Gods of War!"

Meanwhile...

"F*ck." Neil and Ken dragged Ivan into a corner and frantically asked, "Why isn't Fane dead yet? He still looks like he's in fine spirits! Are you sure about this, Ivan? Why isn't he dead yet?"

They grew impatient.

Chapter 852

Both Ken and Neil took part in the banquet Fane hosted just to see him dead. They wanted to see him flat on the floor as his body succumbed to the poison.

More importantly, they wanted to see the shock and horror on everyone's faces. They wanted to see him die before Selena and how her face would morph into one with immeasurable agony.

Still, nothing they expected had happened as they watched as the Gods of War trailed in, one after another, and bolstered Fane and Selena's reputation to no end. It was plain to see how everyone admired them.

"I'm sure of it, and we saw it for ourselves! A few days ago, Fane was complaining about how he was feeling unwell. Xena was there, too!"

Ivan frowned. "Let's wait for a bit. This is the final day, after all. It's possible that Fane has a body strong enough to resist the poison for a bit, so the symptoms are probably suppressed. Maybe the symptoms will just pile on him abruptly, and he'll explode into pieces. That's possible!"

"That's right. I can verify that information since I did follow Ivan that day. Fane did tell us that he wasn't feeling well!"

Xena nodded. "I think it's about time! Either that, or the poison that you two obtained is fake!"

"What are you talking about? There's no way it's fake!"

Ken immediately huffed. "Just wait for it, I'm sure it won't be long. That little punk will die soon enough!"

"Oh, the thought of it makes me so excited. Hah! Selena will surely have a meltdown by then!" Neil emitted a mirthless chuckle.

Back at the banquet, Fernando took out a credit card and thrust it toward Selena. "Right. I didn't buy any gifts, but I do have this credit card. I'm giving it to you, Miss Selena. There's one billion inside, and it doesn't have a personal identification number!"

"That's too much!"

The overwhelmed Selena did not know what to feel as she turned to look at Fane. It was too much. Yoseph had given her one, and Fernando was giving her another.

"Just take it as their blessing!"

The grinning Fane nodded his head reassuringly, and only then did Selena take the credit card.

"These Gods of War are being too generous, aren't they? They're giving out one billion just like that!" blurted Ivan.

"Yoseph had also given one billion. Hmm... They've probably discussed this earlier. It wouldn't look good if one of them

gave less than the other."

Neil flashed a bitter smile.

"Yoseph gave that much too?"

Ivan's expression contorted when he heard that. He thought that Fane would have trouble settling the bills, what with the money he needed to spend to book the entire hotel and organize a wedding banquet.

Who knew that the Gods of War would give him so much money. It was definitely enough to cover the costs, and they would still have plenty left. Fane was earning big bucks!

Concurrently...

In a third-class aristocratic family's residence, the Turner family's master, Fabian asserted, "Let's go. We have to go!"

"Dad, it'll be so embarrassing if we go. We caused such a big issue out of the billiards game with Fane that one time!" countered Leo, his brows furrowed as he did.

Chapter 853

"Don't be an idiot! Just look at the attendees of the wedding banquet. Three Gods of War have already shown up, a billionaire businessman from the Gin City is attending, and there are so many top-tier celebrities. It's mayhem! What if Fane gets angry because we don't go?"

Fabian then continued, headstrong in his stance, "Besides, we gave the money we lost to the kid, right? There shouldn't be much of a grudge between us now. If we go, we'll be able to make connections with aristocratic families, war officers, and the likes. We might even become good friends with the Gods of War!"

"Fine. Let's go." Leo eventually relented as he nodded, and with that, they made preparations to go to the seven-star hotel.

"We have to go. Fernando Campbell is my idol!"

Quite a few run-off-the-mill businessmen who had thought of attending decided to not attend the banquet, as it was embarrassing to not come up with proper gifts. After all, they should give anything that was worth less than 80,000 bucks at a place like that.

However, they suddenly decided to go when they saw the Gods of War. It would be amazing enough if they managed to get a God of War like Fernando into the background of a selfie.

More and more people came to attend the banquet, and Fane fortunately prepared everything beforehand. Moreover, there were a few private rooms and tables ready on the floors below them. Otherwise, there probably would not be enough places to sit.

Meanwhile, on the top floor of the six-star hotel opposite

them...

"H—He literally stirred the city, alright…!" Cecilia's lips contorted into a small, bitter smile. She had lost—and terribly, at that. She did not know why those Gods of War attended Fane's banquet, but her loss was indisputable.

Cecilia did not want to admit that, but there was no way around it.

Just as she felt absolutely hopeless, two helicopters appeared above her.

"Don't tell me that more Gods of War are coming?!"

James looked at the distance, shocked at the sight of two more helicopters that came from different directions. He could sense his breaths turned uneven and ragged.

One of the helicopters arrived and a man jumped down from it. The man smiled faintly before he entered the hotel.

The man feared that everyone would question why he would attend the banquet, thus he took the initiative and greeted Fane smilingly, "Mr. Fane, thank you for saving my life. Your medical skills are unparalleled. I just had to come to your banquet to share a few drinks with you!"

Fane was dumbfounded at the man's greeting, and all he could do was offer an awkward smile.

Lana, Fernando, and Yoseph—who stood by the side—were just as shocked. They never thought that Abner would use the same story. That was too…

It was fine if one or two of them used the same story, but… Three? Four? That was too much.

Lana had told them beforehand to prepare their own replies and stories, but they never did discuss the stories they wanted to use, and they all thought of the same thing.

However, they did discuss the matter of the banquet gift, and they collectively decided that they would each give a billion bucks.

Abner quickly fished out a credit card and handed it to Selena. "Miss Selena, there's one billion in here. Just take it as a token of my blessing and as thanks to your husband for saving my life. You have to take it. The password is six zeros, but you can change it whenever you like!"

"T-Thank you, Sir Young!"

Selena felt touched, and she did not know what else to say. Lana had also given her a billion just moments ago, and she had amassed gifts worth four billion bucks. Would she get rich with just this banquet?

"Ah…! I—I feel dizzy!"

Fiona—who was not too far away—was utterly shocked. They

earned so much in just this banquet! She pinched her thigh tightly. "I… I'm not dreaming!"

Chapter 854

Fiona felt like everything was a dream. After all, four Gods of War attended her daughter's banquet and gave both Fane and her their blessings.

It was only then Fiona knew Fane's claim that he would stir the city was no empty promise; he delivered that promise. They were handed a ridiculously lucky hand, and the presence of the four Gods of War far surpassed what anyone could imagine.

Thump!

Amid her excitement, a loud noise was heard from above them. The other helicopter flew toward them, and another man leaped down from it.

"It's… It's William Nash, a God of War!" a young woman called out, and the crowd was shocked once more. Yet another God of War showed up to the banquet.

"My goodness…! It's true!"

James was stupefied.

"Sir Nash, why are you here?" Queenie excitedly walked toward him, her eyes fixated on him. The God of War had a regal aura to him.

William gave a wan smile; he had already prepared his story. "During the days before I was an accomplished person, I was injured during a skirmish and nearly died with the wound. Fortunately, Mr. Fane was so skilled that he saved me, so that's why I…"

It was only then when William noticed the odd gazes directed at him.

He immediately frowned. "What's wrong? Did I say something?" he asked.

Queenie offered an awkward smile. "No, n—nothing's wrong. Fane truly is a skilled medical practitioner, and it seems like he saved many lives throughout the five years he was in the military!"

"Haha! His medical skills are astoundingly incredible!"

William laughed. He then walked toward Selena, took out a credit card worth a billion bucks, and handed it to her. "So you're his wife. No wonder Fane kept mooning over you on the battlefield!"

Selena's chest was filled with warmth when she heard that. "Welcome, Sir Nash. Please, take a seat!"

"It's our honor to see you, Sir Nash!" the people bowed at him.

"Hah. Don't worry about it!"

William chuckled before he faked his surprise. "Oh, what a coincidence," said William as though shocked to see them. "Yoseph, Fernando, you're both here too!"

"That's right. Fane so happened to have saved us before too!"

Abner gave an awkward smile.

William was stunned when he heard that. No wonder everyone gave him weird looks just moments ago; everyone else gave the same story as he did!

If everyone used the same story, would anyone actually believe it?

Fernando pulled him to the side. "Why did you use the same story?" he asked in a quiet voice. "Couldn't you find some other excuse?"

William did not know what to feel about it. "I couldn't think of a good one, even after spending half the day thinking about it. It so happens that Master is a skilled medical practitioner even better than Ethan Haays, so that's why that's the only story I can think of. I thought it was the best excuse ever. It has a sliver of truth in it though, since he's so skilled in medicine!"

"We're done for! If we're thinking like this, Ethan and the

rest will probably use the same excuse too!"

Fernando's expression darkened, his lips curled into a wry smile.

All of a sudden, another helicopter appeared on the horizon, as it flew in from the city gates.

Chapter 855

Thump!

Just like before, a low thud was heard as a man appeared on the glass balcony that extended from the roof.

"It's another God of War, Sam Johnson!"

Everyone grew even more excited when they recognized him. That added another God of War in the venue.

In truth, everyone expected it was a God of War when they saw him jumping down from such a high altitude. He actually dared to leap down from a height of 100 or 200 meters above sea level yet sustained no injuries. Only the Gods of War could accomplish such a feat.

"Sir Johnson, you're here too! You look so handsome!"

"Oh, yes! Coming here was worth every second of my time. There are already six Gods of War here. My god, I'm going nuts!"

“I’ve never seen so many Gods of War in all the years I’ve served on the battlefield. I’ve only ever seen one, yet here they are, six of them!”

The marshals, commanders, and the likes were all excited. The sight that greeted them shook them to the very core.

“My goodness. Another one!”

At the same time, on the top floor of the six-star hotel opposite them, Cecilia and members of the Gold family watched on with sour expressions. They saw another God of War appearing on the opposite hotel’s screen, and it was a grand sight to see.

“Heh, six of them came to the banquet. Perhaps all nine will show up?” Kelly chuckled. He felt that he had become the joke of the entire universe.

“No way. How can that happen?”

Master Gold shook his head, convinced that he was dreaming.

“Miss Selena, I almost died once on the battlefield, but Sir Fane was luckily skilled in medicine…”

Sam went straight to Selena and conveyed his story, and he did not notice the desperate hints that Lana and the others were giving.

When they heard that explanation, James and the others were utterly speechless. Just how many Gods of War had Fane saved?

Even Selena was at a loss for words; that excuse sounded more like a lie at that point. Was Fane a specialist? Why did so many of the people he saved on the battlefield turned out to be Gods of War, when there were plenty of other soldiers?

Nonetheless, Selena did not want to wear herself out thinking about it. She just smiled and took the credit card worth one billion from him.

It seemed that all those Gods of War were tycoons, and they had discussed beforehand to give one billion bucks each. Still, they were too generous.

The beautiful manager from Cathysia Juwel admired Selena for being able to marry a man like Fane; she had enough happiness just from the banquet to fill her for a lifetime. She was probably the happiest woman in the entire world on this day.

Sam went to join Fernando and the others after he gifted Selena the credit card.

He felt like shriveling when he found out that the excuse he gave was the exact same story that the others had supplied.

Still, Sam had no choice. It would be way too suspicious if

he claimed that Fane's fighting prowess far surpassed his. It so happened that Fane was skilled in medicine, and that was why the story of Fane saving him was flawless.

Despite that, he never anticipated that his comrades shared the same train of thought on their excuse.

"Ethan won't use this excuse, right?"

Lana thought about it before she said, "After all, Ethan's such a skilled doctor, and everybody acknowledges him as a miracle doctor. Ethan probably won't convince anyone if he uses that excuse."

Everyone nodded at Lana's speculation. It would be preposterous if the nine Gods of War used the exact same excuse, and no one would believe them.

Chapter 856

Just as they were talking, two more helicopters appeared in the distance as it slowly flew toward the hotel.

A smile managed to creep its way onto Selena's face. "Don't tell me that the other three Gods of War are coming too?" she whispered to Fane. "With the arrival of those two, we'll only be missing one more!"

Fane nodded. "They don't have much of a choice. They need to come see you, at least. How could they not come to my wedding? I'd give them a good one-two if they don't!"

Selena rolled her eyes at Fane, though her happiness was evident. "You really took this to another level, didn't you? I'm practically trembling in anticipation now, and the gifts we've received today will be enough to cover the costs of the hotel. Even with all that, we'll have plenty left!"

Selena's smile slowly dropped as a thought occurred to her. "We'll have to return the gesture when they get married," said Selena, "and we'll have to give plenty of money then!"

Fane did not know whether to laugh or cry when he heard that. "Don't worry, Honey. They've married long ago. Look there: Fernando's two wives and his son are here!" said Fane as he pointed at the elevator.

Fernando's family had indeed taken a cab over.

"Oh… That's great!"

Selena gave a bitter smile. "I'm so nervous. There are so many Gods of War here. Am I dreaming?"

"No, you're not."

Fane smiled, and within the span of ten seconds, the two Gods of War leaped down from their helicopters.

"It's our honor, Sir Riley Blackwell!"

"It's our honor, Sir Adam McCarthy!"

Everyone cried out in excitement when they saw the two Gods of War.

"It's insane! Another two Gods of War are here!"

One of the attendees whipped out his phone and took photos. The banquet was sensational, and these photos would be enough ammunition to gloat.

Plenty of businessmen were even more excited by then. Fane did not place any restrictions on his guests, so anyone could walk in. This really made them feel elated.

"Oh my, so many people are here already. Seems like Lana and the rest arrived long ago!"

Riley chuckled as he scanned his surroundings.

"You're right. Looks like only Ethan isn't here yet. Everyone else is here, though!"

Adam chuckled as well. The two of them went over to greet Fane.

"Happy birthday to you, Miss Selena, and congratulations on yours and Fane's wedding!" the two spoke simultaneously, and they each presented a credit card worth one billion to Selena.

Selena was truly convinced that all nine Gods of War would attend their banquet with how things looked.

It was then a thought chimed in Selena's mind, and her brows furrowed instinctively. "How did you two know Fane?"

Fane had told her once that the nine Gods of War were his disciples, but Selena never thought much about it as she assumed Fane was just lying.

Yet, with the sight of all the Gods of War—that came from all parts of the country—in their banquet, Selena could not help the thought… Was Fane truly their master?

"Oh, I had been injured on the battlefield once..."

"Fane had saved my life once, so..."

The two Gods of War replied at the same time, but their voices trailed off when they heard the other's words. They both had the exact same train of thought.

Selena was flabbergasted. The first God of War gave that same excuse, yet so did the second. At that point, all eight Gods of War had the same story, and the last one would probably give the same excuse too.

"Fane truly is something else!"

Selena's lips curled into a mirthless smile. She then said to them, "The journey must've been tiring for you two. Stay here for two more days before you leave."

Chapter 857

"Heh. Of course! I rarely swing around these parts!"

Adam and Riley grinned before they walked to one side, away from her.

With disbelief, Riley lowly spoke under his breath, "Seriously, Adam? Why did you have to use the same story as I did?"

"I didn't think this could happen. Why would you say something like that? I also noticed that everyone gave us strange looks... Don't tell me that they gave the same story too? No one's going to believe us if that's the case!"

Adam felt lost at that moment.

"Right? We'll draw suspicion if we all give the same story, and Master won't be happy if his identity as the Supreme Warrior is revealed!"

At that moment, William's voice was heard as he walked over, a small smile on his face as he did.

"The only one left is Ethan. Let's hope he doesn't use the same story!"

Abner flashed a bitter smile as he joined them. "Regardless, it doesn't matter if they're suspicious about us. They can't just interrogate us about the matter, right? Of course,

Master might not be happy about this!"

"Quiet down! Don't let anyone hear you!" Lana quickly reminded him.

Many of the guests in the banquet sneakily took photos of them, though none of them came to disturb their conversation—probably because of their revered status. Everyone maintained a safe distance away from them.

On the other hand, at the six-star hotel opposite them…

"Heh. There are eight Gods of War now!" said Master Gold sardonically as he broke out into a chuckle.

"Seems like all nine are going to come. He's really sending shockwaves throughout the city!"

Cecilia stared into the distance. Another helicopter appeared on the horizon. It was a no brainer that the miracle doctor, Ethan Haays would come as well.

...

"He's here. Ethan is here. He probably won't say that Fane saved him, right?"

James had no idea what to feel as he watched the helicopter. He did not understand why the eight Gods of War used the exact same story. Did Fane truly save all of their lives? It was too much of a coincidence like that.

It was either a coincidence or Fane just had the incredible luck to have saved soldiers who were, in fact, Gods of War. It was enough luck to make the gods jealous.

True enough, the person who was coming was Ethan.

"Greetings, Sir Ethan Haays!" greeted the guests when he arrived.

"Oh dear, I never thought that I'd be the last to arrive!"

The plump, round-faced Ethan emanated a genial aura as he smiled.

"Sir Haays, it's our honor to finally see you. You're such a miracle doctor!'

"That's right. Sir Haays, I heard that your medical skills have saved plenty of soldiers!"

"Sir Haays, don't tell me that you have the same story as the other Gods of War. Were you saved by Fane as well?"

Voices cried out as he slowly walked toward Fane and Selena.

The corners of Ethan's mouth twitched when he heard them. It seemed like the story he had crafted beforehand would not work.

However, he quickly came before Fane and spoke, smiling, "Sir Fane, long time no see. I heard that you're highly skilled in medicine as well, and that you saved the lives of the other eight Gods of War. I've come here to humbly request that you impart your wisdom to me. I hope that I can learn plenty from you!"

Fane was speechless. Someone came up with a different story at last, but that excuse was a little too scandalizing.

"You're too kind, Sir Haays. We should be exchanging our knowledge instead. No master-student relationship required!" replied Fane awkwardly as he grinned.

Chapter 858

The crowd held their breath for a moment when they heard what Ethan had said to Fane. Ethan Haays, the miraculous doctor who possessed incredible medical knowledge, came and asked Fane to teach him the art of medicine?

Would that not mean Fane was even more skilled than him in the medical field?

Fiona could no longer stand idly by the sidelines and went up to them. "Sir Haays, are you saying that my son-in-law's medical skills are even better than yours? It can't be true, right? You've been called a miracle doctor, a divine doctor!" blurted Fiona.

Ethan knew that the woman before him was Fane's mother-in-law, hence he gave her a bright smile and replied,

"Yes, Auntie, his medical skills are spectacular!"

Ethan paused for a moment before he added, "Just think about it: All these highly honored Gods of War had been injured in the battlefield, and not a minor one at that. It's logical that no ordinary doctor could treat them, and only a highly skilled doctor could do that. Not only highly skilled, but top-notch. Like, top-top-notch, if you get what I mean."

Ethan thought of something before he quickly continued, "So, with Fane's amazing skills, he had treated them. Basically, he can be considered as the Gods of War's personal doctor!"

Only then did it dawn on the crowd that Fane had such a highly honored position in the battlefield. Even if he was not some God of War or King of War, with his remarkable medical skills and his relationship with those Gods of war, it was sufficient to make him respectable.

No wonder the eight Gods of War told the same story—Fane truly had saved their lives on the battlefield. The stories were not lies; they were the truth!

"Yes, Sir Haays is right! Fane is our exclusive doctor, specialized in treating Gods of War and some eight-star and nine-star Kings of War!"

Skyler chimed in to help Fane and the others too. He smoothened the situation with a smile on his face.

“Wow...! That’s really amazing! I really didn’t expect that this son-in-law of mine would be so admirable, so promising!”

Fiona patted Fane’s shoulder as she gushed, "Fane, why didn't you tell me this before?"

Fane was rendered speechless. Fortunately, Ethan's explanation about the whole coincidental stories was justified, and the excuses given by the eight Gods of War were covered up beautifully. Otherwise, it would be difficult for others to not think that Fane was the Supreme Warrior.

Fane smiled and faced Fiona. “Mom, it’s not that I don’t want to tell you about it. I’m just afraid that even if I do tell you, you won’t believe me. Besides, I remember saying to you that my medical skills are better than Sir Haays’. That’s what I said, but you didn’t believe it. You thought I was only bragging!”

Fiona’s lips curved into a sheepish smile. “Well… You can’t blame me for not believing you. After all, you seldom cure people, and I thought you were just an ordinary soldier! How can I even think that you possessed such medical skills and knowledge?”

By that time, Joan recalled something, and she went toward them with a frown. “Fane, something’s off. Before coming here, I remember that you told me you’ve purchased a necklace for Selena. Where’s the necklace? Why didn’t you take it out and put it on her? Her neck looks so bare and

empty right now."

"That's right! Where's the necklace you bought?"

Selena rolled her stunning eyes at Fane, the corners of her mouth curling up happily. "Didn't you say you wanted to give me a surprise?"

Fane smiled warmly at Selena before he replied, "That's right, but you'll have to close your eyes. I'll put it on you!"

"Close my eyes? Why all the mystery?" Selena, internally overwhelmed with joy, closed her eyes shut.

With that, Fane quickly took out a jewelry box.

"What's Fane doing? What kind of gift is he giving to Selena? I wonder…" muttered Ivan with a frown.

"The hell knows! Making it so mysterious, as though it's a grand gift."

Xena sneered coldly. "It's just a necklace. How grand would it be? Everyone knows what kind of necklace it is, so why is he acting so extra and asked Selena to close her eyes? What's all the mystery for? It's not like we don't know it's a necklace!"

Xena was green with envy and jealousy; she never thought Fane was such a capable man.

Had she known that from the start, Xena would have used millions of ways to seduce and tempt him with her beauty. It would satisfy her enough to be his second wife.

Yet, even when she entertained that thought, the image of Sharon George came to mind. Xena glanced at Sharon who stood beside her; an incredibly beautiful, gorgeous woman was she. Xena knew she could never top that, even if she did follow through with pulling a million tricks to tempt Fane. It was futile.

Fane would certainly not like her, and it did not help that that punk was no typical playboy that drooled over pretty ladies.

Chapter 859

As Xena mulled over the matter, Fane had taken out the necklace from the box and placed it around Selena's neck.

"What?!"

Xena could feel her blood rapidly rushing through her veins in enthusiasm and her breaths labored at the sight of the necklace. Her eyes felt like it would pop out of their sockets.

That necklace… It was the Heart of the Abyss!

Some time ago, there was a rumor that that exorbitant necklace was bought by a mysterious tycoon. Xena never thought that the mysterious buyer was Fane all along!

“The Heart of the Abyss!”

“Oh my freaking god! It’s the Heart of the Abyss!”

“So it was Fane who bought it! Oh my… Oh my! It’s hella expensive!”

Many of the ladies among the crowd—who usually used luxurious products—gasped and gushed excitedly at the necklace before them. They were obsessed with the necklace.

Selena’s eyelids flipped open at the sound of gasps and excitement from the crowd. She glanced down to look at the necklace that dangled around her neck... There was a huge ruby stone! Her eyes were flooded with tears in an instant.

“Fane… You bought it! You actually bought it! This is too much!”

At that moment, Selena felt that all the aggravation and adversity she had suffered all those years were worth it. Fane’s kindness and love for her moved her completely.

Selena did not even see Fane for five years, yet this man gave her the best of everything.

Selena’s tears rolled down her cheeks like gushing waterfalls.

“Honey, why are you crying? Today is our big day!”

Fane’s heart wrenched at the sight of Selena crying, and he gently wiped them off before saying, “Don’t get your makeup messed up. You want to look pretty on our big day, right?”

Selena let out a laugh. “No, it’s nothing. It’s just… I’m just too happy. These are happy tears! I’ve never been so happy before!”

“Mommy, you’re so beautiful!”

A pair of big, gleaming eyes beamed at Selena. It was the adorable Kylie, blinking at her mother.

“Of course! Your Mommy is the prettiest!”

Fane hoisted Kylie into his arms and gushed, “Quick, give Mommy a kiss!”

“Mwah!”

Kylie nodded giddily before she obediently stretched her neck and gave Selena a peck on her cheek.

“It’s the Heart of the Abyss!”

Xena’s eyes were transfixed on the necklace as jealousy sizzled within her. Life would be perfect if she had that

necklace around her neck, but alas, such an opportunity would not come in this lifetime.

The boss of the Cathysia Juwel smiled with satisfaction; he made the right choice to attend Fane and Selena's banquet. He turned to Fane and said, "Fane, why don't we all take a group photo together? You, me, the Gods of War, and some first-class families."

"Sounds good to me!"

Fane smiled and gestured to Lana and the others to join them. "Madam Zechs, let's come over and take a photo together. Come to think of it, we haven't taken a photo together yet!"

"Sounds great!"

Elated, Ethan and the others joined Fane to take group photos.

Chapter 860

Those who could join the group photos were only those from first-class families and people of such status, like James Drake. This made Ken, Neil, and the others envious as they were not qualified to join.

As Ivan was from the Taylor family, he could join the photograph session. Xena, on the other hand, merely tagged behind Ivan and stood at the back corner. Even if it was just a photo and she barely knew any of them, it was still an

honor and a pleasure for Xena.

"Hubby… I still feel that this necklace is too expensive. How about we find an opportunity to sell it?"

Once the photos were taken, Selena gazed at the Heart of the Abyss wound around her neck. Her feelings overwhelmed her so much that she blurted her worries to Fane.

Selena's words stunned Fane. He leaned close to Selena and whispered to her ear, "Honey, I'll be honest: Such a necklace wasn't expensive at all, and you now have nearly ten billion in your pocket. It's not that much at all, you see. Try to think of it this way. Your husband is the Gods of War's exclusive doctor, so do you think the reward given to me would be so meager?"

Selena took a deep breath after she listened to Fane's reasoning. He was right; he was the exclusive doctor for the nine Gods of War, and that was a great achievement. Besides, the rewards received by the nine Gods of War would be no less than 100 billion. While he was not as honorable as them, Fane must have received 10 billion or so.

With that reassuring thought, Selena playfully rolled her eyes at Fane and pinched his waist. "Fane Woods, why didn't you say so earlier? Why do you have to worry me?"

Selena then followed up when a thought occurred to her, "Still, you're not at fault. If my mother knew about it, I'm

afraid my mother might yell at you and demand a pretty sum. You can't tell her about it. This must remain a secret," Selena suggested thoughtfully.

"Ah, my dear wife is right. I had a hard time buying this necklace for you, so you'll have to keep and wear it, alright?" Fane chuckled wholeheartedly.

"Alright!"

Glancing at the time, Selena turned her head to the hotel's general manager. "You can now serve the dishes!"

"Very well, Mrs. Woods." Once the performance on-stage was paused, the general manager of the hotel sauntered up to the stage and announced through the microphone, "Everyone, please take your seats and get ready to be served with delicious food!"

The owner of the hotel also went up to the stage and boisterously spoke, "Hello everyone, I'm the owner of this hotel. Today's the happiest and most glorious day in my life, all thanks to Mr. and Mrs. Woods for ushering in so many distinguished guests and even invited the honorable Nine Great Gods of War!"

The owner momentarily paused before he added, voice louder than before, "Therefore, I've decided that all the expenses on Mr. and Mrs. Woods' wedding banquet will be in the hotel!"

"What? What was that?! It'll be on them? It's all free now? Won't the owner lose a lot of money?"

Fiona's face beamed with joy and excitement at the owner's words. The expenses on the wedding party today was estimated to be at least one or two billion, not to mention that there were so many expensive food and wine. If the words were not from the hotel's owner himself nor the loud declaration through the microphone, Fiona would have doubted her own ears.

"This can't be a mistake, right?"

Joan and Andrew were both dumbfounded with the same look of disbelief.

Old Master Taylor, on the other hand, smiled warmly. "Well, what do you know? So many Gods of War have come here today, thus his business from today onward will only skyrocket. He gets to receive such success, all thanks to Fane. The aftermath of this grandest wedding banquet is downright staggering—they'll be busy counting money. Moreover, business in a seven-star hotel won't be too good usually because it's too expensive!"

Old Master Taylor then turned his gaze toward the stage, his eyes filled with wisdom. "The most crucial thing is that today he has taken a photo with us, and the Nine Great Gods of War are in it too. It's a great attraction point; he can just say that the Nine Great Gods of War had come to their hotel and feasted in a banquet! His business won't go

down after that!"

"Oh, so that's how it is. I thought so! How could he be so kind and charged us nothing? So there is such a benefit for him!"

Realization dawned on Fiona then, but it did not matter as the hotel charged not a single penny on them. For them, that was a gain!

Chapter 861

"From today onward, whenever the Nine Great Gods of War, Mr. and Mrs. Woods, as well as their family, come to our hotel, it will be free!"

The owner of the hotel smiled blandly and announced the benefits.

"Wow, that's fantastic! Dear, we can come here often to eat all for free!"

Fiona could barely conceal her delight that she practically yelled into Andrew's ear.

Andrew's face dulled in return. "Will you really come often? It's okay if you come once in a while, but if you do often, won't you feel embarrassed? Moreover, the money that the Nine Great Gods of War have given Selena today is already nine billion bucks with the rest given by others, we'll get around ten billion, right? We have so much money now, you can't afford to pay for a meal?"

Only then did realization hit Fiona that she and her family, indeed, were rich enough now. There was no need to take advantage of such a perk.

Nevertheless, she rolled her eyes at Andrew and uttered, "What do you know? This represents our family's status and image in this city! Even for people like James Drake, when he comes here to have a meal, he'll have to pay! The Drakes are no ordinary people; they're someone who can just use their status and reputation to get anything they want, it's not about money right now, it's all about our status and reputation!"

Andrew gave some thoughts on the matter and finally, he bobbed his head to show his agreement. It made sense after all.

"All right, all right. Everyone, please enjoy your meal! I hope you are satisfied with our service!"

The owner of the hotel ended the commotion with a delightful ending.

Since there were too many people at the sightseeing platform, those A-list celebrities as well as some ordinary businessmen, knew that they were not qualified to sit there. Hence, consciously they went to the private rooms a few floors below.

On the other hand, Fane and Selena sat at a table with the

Nine Great Gods of War.

"C'mon! Let's drink up! We must have a few more glasses today!"

Fernando stood up from his seat and chortled brightly.

"A few more glasses? Only a few more? We have to at least empty a few bottles!"

Lana teased with a wide and elated grin plastered on her face.

At this moment, on the opposite side of the roof of the six-star hotel, Cecelia and the others were upset that their faces were as dark as coal; resentment grew within them like a malignant tumor.

They were no fool. The Nine Great Gods of War were all on the other side, and those who told them that they would come back after sending their blessings and gifts to Fane, would not return any more. It was certain that none of them would come back to Cecelia's wedding unless their brains were nothing but full of grass.
"Dad, what should we do? We've spent a lot of money on all the food and wine. Each table here cost up to eight hundred thousand bucks!"

Kelly wheeled his head and looked at the empty tables and chairs behind him, his heart sank to the deepest. He was speechless. Everything was prepared nicely to cater up to

thousands of guests. All the food and alcohol were already prepared. It was impossible to turn back now.

"What should we do? The correct question should be what else can we do!"

The head of the Gold family trembled with rage, anger rose in him like a ride. He glared deadly at Kelly and Cecelia. "It's all your fault! Both of you! Why did you have to choose the same day with Selena? Look what brought us in the end? Empty hall!"

He exasperated and stomped right after he ended his last sentence. Then he yelled again, "Go and ask those singers, cameramen, and whoever to come over to eat. We'll go back immediately after the meal!"

Chapter 862

Cecilia got angrier the more she thought about it, but she could not do anything about it either. She could only clench her teeth and comfort herself with the knowledge that Fane was going to die soon. He was probably going to explode to death at any time. She needed to see how he died.

Only, they had already finished their meal, and Fane and the others on the opposite quickly finished theirs as well. Judging from the huge screen, asides from the slight redness in his cheeks from drinking plenty of wine, he did not seem to be having any other adverse reactions.

"Strange. Didn't they say that he would die today? It's already late in the afternoon. He's not even showing the slightest symptom. What on earth is Ivan doing? Did he lie to me?"

Cecilia frowned, pondering on the matter.

She thought about it. Then she silently crept to the side and called Ivan.

Ivan, Ken, and the others were all waiting for Fane to drop dead onto the floor as well—to see the sight of his rotten body.

However, up until now, they did not see what they came here for. Because of that, they drank quite a few rounds of alcohol.

Fane was truly the star of the entire city today, and this made them utterly speechless. They could not wait for him to drop dead in front of everyone.

Especially now, when Fane had so much money and even bought the Heart of the Abyss for Selena. It seemed that their relationship would only grow stronger.

Meanwhile, Fiona had been all smiles all day. It was evident that she was growing happier and contented with her son-in-law. There was very little chance for interference unless Fane died or the two were broken up.

Fiona, Ben, Andrew, and everyone else had hated Fane before when he was a good-for-nothing. They had thought that there was still a way to convince Selena to marry a young master from a wealthy family.

Now though, with their reputation bolstered, Fane was no longer a good-for-nothing son-in-law. Instead, he was the exclusive doctor of the nine Gods of War. It was a position that everyone respected and admired.

That was why although Fane was not a God of War or a King of War, his position was still slightly higher than that of the revered militants.

Now the only hope that they had was for the poison to work quickly on Fane—for him to die before their eyes.

They never thought that Cecilia would call Ivan at this moment.

He scanned his surroundings. Then he walked to an empty corner before picking the call up. "Yes, cousin? Is there something wrong?"

"Is there something wrong? Idiot! Of course, there is!"

Cecilia's chest heaved violently from anger. "Didn't you and the old man say that you would come over for lunch after presenting your gifts at Selena's wedding?" she snapped. "Great. The businessmen and James Drake aren't here—even you guys aren't here. You're my family, but not

one of you remained at my wedding. It's so embarrassing!"

As Cecilia spoke, she felt that she suffered so much today. Tears threatened to spill out of her eyes, and her voice turned hoarse.

"Cousin, you can see it for yourself. The Nine Great Gods of War are here. How could we leave? Besides, don't you know that the old man loves his reputation? He's drinking with the Gods of War now. This is a matter of reputation for him. Why would he think of you now!"

Chapter 863

Ivan flashed a bitter smile. "Ah, we have no choice. Who knew that Fane would pull a stunt like this, getting the nine Gods of War to come for his wedding!"

Cecilia thought for a while, then she asked, "So you're saying that the eight other Gods of War are all at his wedding because they wanted to boost his reputation? They're not here because they wanted to see Lana?"

Ivan was speechless for a moment. "Of course. They could have seen her at any time they wanted. Why would they choose today, of all days? They're here because of Fane!"

"But how does a good-for-nothing like Fane, know such people? No way that he saved all of their lives before, in addition to Lana's!"

Cecilia huffed. She really could not understand why the

Gods of War would come from afar for the sake of Fane's reputation—just to attend his and Selena's wedding.

"That man isn't a good-for-nothing. Besides, you're right on the nail. With his medical skills, he's become the designated doctor for the Gods of War. Fane had helped to cure them when they sustained injuries. That was why they came here for his wedding. They rushed over once they knew that he was having a wedding!"

Ivan did not know whether to laugh or cry. "F*ck that b*stard. He really managed to do a good job hiding his identity. No wonder he had the money to buy the Heart of the Abyss. With his status, he probably hasn't even received his bonus after he came back."

"I don't care. I just want to see him die. Didn't you say that your girlfriend, Xena fed him the poison? Why isn't he showing the slightest symptoms till now? I'm getting impatient. Why isn't he dead yet?"

Cecilia was so furious that she stamped her foot. She looked at the huge screen opposite her hotel—at Fane and Selena, who were drinking along with the Gods of War and Old Man Taylor. Her throat constricted.

"I don't know either. Jeez. I had seen him just a few days ago. He told me that he was feeling extremely unwell. I don't know why he's still standing there and drinking wine as though he were perfectly fine. Logically speaking, even if he doesn't die anytime soon, he shouldn't be able to drink so

merrily!"

As Ivan spoke into the phone, he pulled out a cigarette and lit it. He was extremely doubtful.

Cecilia thought about it. "Maybe Xena lied to you?" she said. "Women like her are always up to no good. She's only with you because she wants your money. You shouldn't believe someone like her!"

Ivan took a long drag from his cigarette, looking at Xena, who was drinking at a table. Then he shook his head. "I don't think so. She has no reason to lie to me about this. Besides, she hates Fane so much that she wants him dead as soon as possible. She had perfect chances to poison Fane while she was with Ben. No way that she lied to me about this!"

After he remained silent for a few seconds, he made a guess. "Maybe this will be his last hurrah. It should be happening any time soon. Let's wait for a bit. This is his last day. This is probably the calm before the storm!"

"All right. Don't disappoint me!"

Cecilia hung up, huffing.

Ivan walked over to Xena's side after the call ended. "Xena, are you sure that Fane drank that poison?" he asked softly.

"Of course. I saw him drink it with my own two eyes. How many times are you going to ask me about this?"

Xena was speechless for a moment. She felt that Ivan did not trust her.

Chapter 864

Ivan comforted Xena when he saw her getting angry. "It's not that I don't believe in you but why does this guy seem to be in such a good shape?"

Xena also frowned. "Doesn't he have very good medical skills? Didn't Ethan Haays say that he needs to consult Fane on certain things too? Fane modestly said that it's an excuse but I don't think that the miracle-working doctor Ethan Haays is lying about things!" Xena paused before continuing speaking. "Is it possible that this guy has really good medical skills, so he has removed the poison from his body?"

Ivan was also surprised when he heard this. Yes, what if Fane really did it? After all, he's not a normal doctor and has really strong medical skills. If not, how could he be the one to treat the Nine Great Gods of War?

However, Ivan soon shook his head. "I don't think that it's possible. I've asked Ken and the others about this poison. The poison hides in the blood and will be undiscoverable in the beginning. Apart from that, there are no obvious symptoms. After around ten days, when the poison has entered his bone marrow and get distributed to his entire body, there will be no cure for him by then!"

“How’s that possible? How about the antidote from the person who made this poison?” Xena felt that it was quite frightening when she heard this. This weird poison that Ken found was really scary.

Ivan nodded. “If he discovered that he was poisoned during the first ten days, the poison can still be cured with the antidote. However, there will be side effects, even if he’s cured, he might still be paralyzed. After all, this poison is really scary!” Ivan paused for a while before he continued speaking. “However, the antidote wouldn’t work after twenty days. There’s no cure to this poison!”

Xena was quiet for a while after she heard what Ivan said. “Could it be possible that Fane discovered the poison twenty or ten days ago so he managed to detoxify himself?”

Ivan gritted his teeth. “Impossible, how’s that possible? Did you forget that he was uncomfortable when we saw him at his house several days ago? Apart from that, he didn’t know why he was not feeling well. This means that he hasn’t discovered the problem several days ago so he’s surely to die this time!”

“If that’s the case, let’s wait. Let’s wait for some more time, we might be too impatient!” Xena looked at the time. If he didn’t doesn’t succumb to the poison this afternoon, he would tonight.

“Haha, that’s right!” Ivan laughed and poured two glasses of wine. He passed one of the glasses to Xena. “Come, baby,

let's do a pre-celebration. Although I have no idea when, but this guy will definitely die today!"

The scene that Ken and Ivan anticipated did not happen at all.

Even at the wee hours at night, nobody saw the scene of Fane dying after everybody had left.

Fane and the others soon brought the Nine Great Gods of War to the Taylor family mansion. They also arranged accommodation for all of the Great Gods.

Many of the Gods of War had planned to stay at the Taylor family for two to three days. This naturally made other powerful people envious of the Taylor family.

After enjoying themselves for two days in the Middle Province, eight of the Great Gods left the Middle Province with their families.

Two days later, Fane was still alive and was living a better life than anyone else. This caused Ivan, Ken and the rest to feel depressed.

Chapter 865

The group of four consisting of Ken, Ivan, Xena, and Neil gathered again.

"What actually went wrong? It's been two days since the day he's supposed to die. I believe that Xena saw Fane

consuming the poison with her own eyes!" Ivan looked at Ken after he spoke. "Young Master Ken, were you lied to by others? Either the poison doesn't have any effects or it's expired. If not, Fane wouldn't only have symptoms like dizziness and weakness."

Ken also started wondering if there was something wrong with his poison after Ivan spoke. He said with a frown on his face, "Could this be possible? I spent a lot of money to buy the poison!"

Neil said with a bitter smile. "It doesn't matter whose responsibility it is and what went wrong. Those aren't important now. The most important thing is that Fane is still alive and it's impossible for Ken and I to get Selena's heart. So, what should we do next?"

Ken could not help but smile bitterly. "Sigh, the only thing worth being happy about is that the four powerful clans inclusive of the Wilson family, Eagle Clan, and the others, offended somebody strong. Michael Wilson was also killed and we have one less opponent!"

Neil smirked. "Him? Haha, that fatty guy. He's extremely fat, and he won't have any hope even if Fane's dead. He's craving for what he's not worthy of. The hopeful people are me and Young Master Ken!"

"I've thought about it and it's best if we employ assassins. The previous assassin failed because that woman was careless. This time, let's employ more assassins especially

those who are at the top of the list. I believe that it will work!" Ivan remained quiet before continuing to say. "It wouldn't be an issue if we employ more people!"

"This seems to be the only option now. However, this option requires a huge amount of money. It would be impossible to hire several masters from the southwest district killer list without at least five or six billion!" Neil smiled bitterly.

Ken curled his hands into fists, gritted his teeth, and said angrily, "What if we come up with two billion each? This is the last chance we have. It's impossible for Fiona and the others to get Selena to file for divorce. The only chance we are left with now is to kill Fane!"

"Alright, I can secretly divert the company's fund to my account then I can definitely come up with two billion!" Ivan was silent for a short moment before nodding. He looked at Neil with Ken.

Neil put on a sour face. "Guys, this is not a small amount of money. How about this, I can borrow some money from several of my friends. I have some money with me now and let's see if I can make two billion within the next three days!"

"Alright, we are set then. After three days, let's come over here with two billion each to make up for the six billion before contacting the assassins! This time, it's a make it or break it opportunity for us!" Ken stood up, exhaled, and said firmly.

Everybody left after they walked out the door.

Ivan and Xena went to a villa that Ivan bought for Xena when she successfully drugged Fane.

Ivan thought about it and said, "Xena, I think that we should sell this villa first. I need the money now and this villa can be sold for fifty million. With that money, we can make two billion and get someone to kill Fane!"

Chapter 866

Although Xena has gotten many benefits from Ivan, such as branded bags and cosmetics but, the thing that made her ecstatic was this villa Ivan bought for her a few days ago.

This villa cost Ivan over fifty million and her name was written as the owner. This represented Ivan's true feelings for her and the property belonged to her. This made her hopeful of the future.

Right now, Ivan was asking her to sell the villa and this made her unhappy.

Xena's face darkened and she replied, "You just bought this villa for me several days ago and now you're asking me to sell it at a cheap rate? You said previously that you will divert money from your company, not sell this house!"

Ivan immediately comforted her. "Xena, I'm thinking about our future here. Think about it, Fane is our stumbling block.

Selena walked to where she is right now because of Fane's assistance. Now, she's not only back in the Taylor family, the old master even said that he's going to set up a new company and appoint Selena as the person-in-charge of this new company.

Ivan curled his hands into fists and continued to speak angrily. "Yesterday when we were having drinks, the old master said that he's going to invest three billion as the company's reserve funding and Selena is going to be in charge of everything. This company is almost the same as the current Taylor group!"

"So much money?" Xena frowned when she heard this. It seems that Old Master Taylor was appointing Selena to an important position.

"Yes, if this continues, I'm worried that Selena will fight for the Taylor family's properties with us in the future. After all, Cecilia has already gotten married and she is not talented in the business aspect. Cecilia is not a competitor to me, however, Selena is different. Selena is a very capable person. I tried so hard to obtain control of all the Taylor family's properties and the old master actually wants to start a new company for Selena. If Selena's company does well in the future, her position in the Taylor family would definitely change!"

Ivan grew increasingly worried as he thought about it. He looked at Xena and said seriously. "Xena, the Taylor group belongs to us, the Taylors, and I want to inherit everything.

Even if I can't inherit everything, I want to get at least 90% of it. How can that go into Selena's hands? This time around, you have to help me with this!"

Xena thought about it and was still reluctant. She said with a frown on her face. "Ivan, I would like to help you but you've just purchased this villa. We will need to lower the price if we're going to sell it in such a hurry. If that's the case, wouldn't we lose money? Apart from that, since you're already diverting money from the company, what difference would fifty million more, make? Why can't you just directly divert two hundred million?"

Ivan was speechless about what Xena said. "Old Master has already taken three billion out to start a branch company and let Selena do whatever she wants. This leaves me with not much money. Apart from that, the company still needs to operate. I wouldn't be easily discovered if I only divert one hundred and fifty million but I would be easily made out if I directly divert two hundred million from the company."

Xena was reluctant when she thought about how the villa was originally hers. She said with pursed lips, "But what does killing Fane have to do with you getting your inheritance?"

"Both are definitely related. Fane is currently considered a very noble and high positioned man. All Nine Great Gods of War sent him gifts when they knew that he's getting married. Do you think that the other businessmen won't want to work with Selena after she has started a company?

Many businessmen will try their best to work with Selena just to get into Fane's good books and to give Fane face!" Ivan immediately explained. "If that's the case, Selena's company will only get better and bigger. By then, the old master will get increasingly satisfied with her abilities. How much inheritance do you think we will get? However, if Fane dies, the others wouldn't give Selena such opportunities because of Fane. Apart from that, she might be dispirited because of his death. If she remarries somebody else, the Taylor family's properties would be ours!"

Chapter 867

Xena also understood the situation here. She thought about it and nodded. "Alright, honey, I agree to help you. However, you have to promise me that you'll buy two villas like this after you've inherited the Taylor family's properties."

"Sure, whatever that belongs to me is yours by then and we will be a family. It would be nothing to buy two houses for you." Ivan smiled.

At this moment, photos of Fane and the Nine Great Gods of War spread to the public. Now everybody knew that there was a man in the Middle Province who could gather all Nine Great Gods of War to have a meal together and this alone, caused a stir in other cities. This was the first time something like this has happened.

However, Fane was troubled by what happened these couple of days. Many people came to him, asking for treatment. There were some with very common diseases and these

people still came to Fane for treatment. He was speechless about the situation and wondered how much time he would need to spend treating these people.

Luckily his pretty bodyguards stopped these people at the entrance and did not allow them to come in. Who knew what would happen if these people entered.

Fane finally realized how scary it was for someone's social status to be raised by a little. Luckily nobody knew that he was the Supreme Warrior, if not, his door frame might just break from the number of people who came to visit him.

In the end, the number of visitors reduced after Fane placed a 'No Entry' sign at the entrance.

However, there were still many who refused to give up and wanted to ask Fane for treatment. They only gave up after Fane set up another sign that said '100 million bucks per treatment'.

Even then, there were still some rich businessmen who would come asking Fane for help when they encountered diseases that were hard to treat.

Fane did not decline such an opportunity that would earn him 100 million by just treating someone. After all, he was quite free and this was easy money.

After Fane easily treated the cancer of two to three people, his fame increased incredibly and his medical skills

were spread to many places.

Just like what Ivan and Old Master Taylor predicted, Selena's business developed smoothly after the city-stirring wedding.

Ivan was furious when the small factories that cooperated with his companies for outsourcing production actually changed strategies and went to work with Selena instead.

Finally, twelve of the assassins on the Southwest district killer list gradually arrived at Middle Province.

Chapter 868

Finally, twelve scary assassins gathered at an empty land outside of the city. Ken, Neil, Ivan, and the others also went over.

"Haha, are you guys looking down at us?" An old man glanced at the killers around them and started laughing coldly. "Who are you guys trying to kill? Even I, the second on the killer list, can't do it. Why do you need to get so many people here? You even employ the killer who's first on the killer list?"

They obviously felt that the people in front of them were too over the top. They have killed many people and some of them were real masters. However, most of the time, these assassins worked alone and this was the first time so many important assassins from the killer list gathered at the same place.

The man who held the third place also started smiling coldly. “Yes, I also wonder why do you need so many masters here. Haha, with all of us here, it wouldn’t be a problem for us to kill a master who is as strong as a seven or eight-stars King of War, right?”

“Yes, is this really required?” A woman also smirked. “Could it be that we’re not killing one person but a group of people? That would make sense!”

Ivan smiled bitterly before saying. “Everybody, please calm down. This time, we’re asking all of you to kill only one person. How should we put it? This person has really strong combat skills and even has a dozen bodyguards at his house. However, this person is quite confident and never brings any of those bodyguards every time he leaves the house! So, you guys don’t need to worry about his bodyguards!”

Ken also said. “We spent so much money to employ so many of you because we’re afraid of failing. We need to make sure that we succeed this time. If we fail, it would alert the enemy and once that happened, it would be very difficult to kill that guy!”

“Young master, let’s stop beating around the bushes. Just tell us who this person is. He should either be a leader of a clan or some powerful King of War, am I right? You just said that he has a dozen bodyguards. If he has bodyguards but not a large number of them, he’s definitely not a clan master. That makes him a King of War who just returned

from the battlefield!"

At this moment, the man who was number one on the Southwest district killer list started smiling coldly. "To me, employing so many people here is to make a big fuss over a minor issue because I'm quite confident in my own strength. How should I make you guys understand? As an example, as long as the person you're asking me to kill is not a God of War, nobody else matters!"

"Haha, if that's the case, I dare say the same thing too!" The old man, second on the killer list, also started laughing loudly. He held his hands in front of his chest and was also totally confident.

"I'm quite confident when I hear what you guys are saying!" Ivan nodded in satisfaction after he heard them.

Only then did Ken spoke. "I believe you guys heard about this person a couple of days ago. He's none other than Fane, the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family!"

"What?!" Somebody's face darkened when they heard this. "Is it really Fane? If that's the case, it would really be quite troublesome. This man is someone who can gather all Nine Great Gods of War!"

"He's the exclusive doctor to the Nine Great Gods of War? I don't feel that it's a good thing to kill him. After all, he contributed a lot to everybody in Cathysia!"

Chapter 869

One of the female assassins frowned and hesitated.

They thought that they were being asked to kill a slightly strong King of War. If that was the case, she would not be as pressured about it.

They had no idea that these three young masters were asking them to kill Fane, the person who caused a stir in the entire Middle Province and country.

"Why? You guys have not fought him yet. Are you all unconfident?" Ken was startled when he saw how these people reacted.

He glanced at the old man who was second on the killer list and said, "Didn't you say that nobody else would be an issue as long as it's not a God of War? Why do you guys act like this when you hear that it's Fane…"

The old man started smiling bitterly. "Brother, we know this person's combat power very well. However, he's not a God of War or a King of War to our knowledge, so I alone would be sufficient to kill him. With that said, do you know what I'm afraid of?" The old man paused before continuing. "If this young man could gather all the Nine Great Gods of War, this means that he has a very good relationship with them. We will be in big trouble if we anger the Gods of War because we killed him and if they find out that it was us who killed him!"

Even the man in the first place on the killer list nodded in agreement. “It’s not that we are not confident in killing this guy, we’re just worried about the consequences when we anger the Gods of War. Putting other reasons aside, even if two or three out of the Nine Great Gods of War got angry and investigates this, we would definitely be dead!”

Ken, Ivan, and the others finally realized what was happening.

These originally cold-blooded and fearless assassins were worried because to face the wrath of several Gods of War was a catastrophe to them.

“Don’t you guys worry, we promise that we won’t sell you guys out! We can swear on this!” After staying quiet for some time, Ivan raised his hand and surely said.

Ken, on the other hand, said, “Guys, you’re well-known assassins in the southwest district. Now that you’ve accepted the money, it means that you’ve accepted the mission. It would be unprofessional of you to go against your words now. You’re all masters at the top of the list and wouldn’t others look down on you if this was known by others?”

The twelve well-known killers’ faces darkened when they heard this.

Yes, they were twelve famous assassins. Their reputation

would be ruined if news of this incident spread out.

However, the target that they were asked to kill was really peculiar. His identity made killing him even more troublesome than killing the richest man in the Middle Province.

“I have an idea!” The female assassin thought about it and said. “We can work together and kill this guy. This is a simple task. However, we have a condition, you have to lure him out of the city and find an uninhibited place here for us to kill him there. This would ensure that nobody knows about what happened. If we made a move in the city, we might leave traces behind and it would be easy for others to investigate!”

The old man, second on the killer list, also nodded. “That would be great as we can get rid of the body easily as well!”

Chapter 870

”Yes, that would be the best option we have!” The man who was number one on the killer list also nodded in agreement!

Ivan and the others felt what the other party said made sense too.

After all, if they really angered several Gods of War, none of them would be able to run away even if these assassins have a way to escape.

Finally, Ivan nodded. “This would work. Let us think of a way

to lure Fane out. However, you need to promise us that you will succeed this time! We won't accept any failures!"

"Haha, don't you worry. This guy is not a God of War, what's there to be afraid of? Do you think that I'm some useless killer?" The old man, who was second on the list, felt that what Ivan said was quite funny and laughed out loudly.

"That's right. This guy must have quite a strong combat ability for being able to survive on the battlefield for five years. However, his main position is a doctor, right? So, we don't need to be afraid of anything. You guys must have overestimated this person by employing so many of us here!" A middle-aged woman smiled coldly as she felt that Ivan and the others were being too careful.

However, this benefitted them as it would be quite simple for so many of them to kill one person. This was a job with easy money guaranteed.

"Don't underestimate him. Although this guy is only a doctor, he is quite capable of being able to stay on the battlefield for five years." Neil stepped one step forward. "We know that he once fought some marshals and those marshals failed to match to him. They were killed by Fane in the end!"

"What?!" One of the men who was number 18 on the list was surprised when he heard this. "If that's the case, this guy has at least the combat ability of a one-star King of War, or maybe that of a two-stars King of War. It's definitely

difficult to handle someone like that!"

"Humph, it might be difficult for you but it's still not an issue for me!" The old man, second on the list, humphed coldly and still acted indifferently.

"It's good that you guys are confident. This guy would definitely not escape his fate with so many of you working together this time!" Ken nodded and said. "How about this, let's go around and take a look. Let's see where we should lure this guy to so that it would be easier to surround and ambush him. Later on, we will only need to lure him there!"

Everybody started looking around. Finally, an old man jumped onto a tree and looked far away.

When he returned, he had a slight smile at the corners of his mouth. "I've discovered a nice place and it would be difficult for that guy to escape!"

Chapter 871

"Where is this place that you are talking about?" The eyes of Ivan and the others lightened up and they quickly asked.

The old man smiled before saying, "Walking toward this direction and in the middle of that forest, there's a lake. There's a small island in the middle of the lake and there's only a small wooden bridge that links to that island. Haha, isn't Fane's death guaranteed if he goes to that island? As long as somebody guards the entrance to the bridge, it's impossible for him to escape even if he realizes that

something is wrong!"

"Alright, this place is a really good location. I don't think that we need to enter the city now. Let's rest and wait here. We'll hide on the island after Fane leaves the city. Killing him would be a piece of cake then. Apart from that, if we didn't enter the city, the Gods of War wouldn't be able to find anything even if Fane died!" The old man, second on the list, nodded in satisfaction.

"Alright, this is not an issue. How about this, we'll try our best to lure Fane out tomorrow morning." After Ivan made the final decision, the one dozen of assassins left.

After the twelve assassins left, Ivan said to Ken and Neil. "It seems that these assassins are very confident and this is a good thing for us. Fane is definitely dying this time!"

Neil nodded in satisfaction and was secretly relieved. "We've tried so hard to make six hundred million and employ these masters. None of them are below the twentieth position on the list. Fane would definitely die in their hands and this is our only chance. If Fane doesn't die this time around, haha, we would be out of chances!"

Ken smiled bitterly as he spoke. "Why do I feel that we're actually losing money? Fane is not dead as he might have got rid of the poison. However, his power must have been weakened. It would be quite easy to kill him now. Maybe our bodyguards could have done it and we should have gotten somebody to test his current strength. It's quite painful for

us to spend so much money!"

Ivan's face darkened when he heard this. "Why didn't you tell us this earlier? It would have been beneficial if you said something earlier. Now that we've spent the money, there's no way to regret it and we can only continue with the plan!"

Neil was quiet for sometime before saying. "Apart from the three of us, Xena also knows about this. Although she's not here now, but, I'm afraid that the Gods of War would investigate after Fane dies. Can we rely on Xena? We are screwed if she tells others about this."

Ken also said. "Women are nosy and they like to show off, especially these women who are really vain. They enjoy showing-off. What if she tells somebody about what happened today just to show-off? This would put us in a terrible position!"

Ivan smiled coldly after he heard them. "Don't you guys worry, I am not planning to keep this woman by my side any longer. After some time, I will think of a way to kill her. After all, this woman is useless to us now. I got together with her so that she would do something for us. This woman is a bad person, how can I really marry her?"

"Haha, Young Master Ivan, what you said makes sense. We are in the company of the right person!" Neil laughed. "If you kill her, the possibility of what happened today being exposed would be greatly reduced."

“That’s right. Young Master Ivan, you can get any woman you want anyway! Now that the Taylor family is progressing so well and you’re the next master of the Taylor family, you need to make good choices!” Ken also nodded in satisfaction. “You cannot keep a woman like Xena, who would do anything for money, by your side. Apart from that, I heard that she’s been with many other men!”

Ivan nodded in agreement. “Wait a couple of days. I will kill her in a couple of days!”

Chapter 872

”Haha, you’re a man of courage!” Neil laughed. He thought about the situation and said again. “By the way, it wouldn’t be easy to lure Fane out. Why would he believe in us without a probable cause?”

Ken also nodded. “All of us here have some sort of dispute with Fane. Right now, this guy definitely hates us and we can’t just ask him out for tea, right?”

Ivan started frowning when he heard what both Ken and Neil said. This was definitely a troublesome task. Fane was a smart person, why would he believe in them without a good excuse?

He started thinking about it and soon his eyes lit up. “There is a way but we need to continue gathering money for it!”

“What?!” Ken and Neil were speechless when they heard that they needed to gather money again. They spent a lot of

effort to come up with the previous two hundred million and it would be very difficult for them to gather money again now.

"How much? We wouldn't be able to do anything if it's a huge sum! Fane is not a womanizer or we could have utilized that!" Ken was quiet for some time before he asked.

Ivan replied. "Not really. This time, we only need to gather one hundred million. With the three of us here, both of you will be in charge of thirty million each and I will come up with forty million. After we've gathered one hundred million, we just need to find someone to lie to Fane about having a father who's very sick and bring him to the island.

Ken said in realization, "I understand what you're trying to do here. Many people went to sought after Fane's treatment and this guy was very annoyed by these people. So he set a rule where people needed to pay him one hundred million for each treatment. Although he set a high price, there are still many who are going to him for treatment and he's earned quite a bit from this!"

Neil continued in agreement, "Yes, we can use this as an excuse to get him to leave the city and come to the island to carry out treatment!"

They went on separate ways to gather money after they ended their discussion.

At the same moment, Fiona was extremely happy in the

Taylor family villa.

"Oh my, this son-in-law of mine is such an amazing person. He helped treat someone again today and earned one hundred million. Tsk tsk, these businessmen are really afraid of death. Once they are really sick, they will spend money to ask my son-in-law for treatment, no matter how expensive it is!"

Right now, Fiona was incredibly satisfied with Fane. She felt that there was only one son-in-law in this world who was such a capable person. He was not only a great fighter, he also had great medical skills and earned a lot of money.

The most crucial point was that Fane was a very generous person. He gave Fiona, Joan, Ben, and Andrew one hundred million each to spend as they pleased.

"Of course. I knew that my son was not a simple person!" Joan's face was filled with a huge smile. Fane had finally excelled and she had nothing else to worry about for the rest of her life. She planned to spend her life in peace here and wait for the day where she got another grandchild.

Putting everything else aside, Fane was a person who nobody in the Middle Province dared offend.

She even discovered that Neil and Ken, who used to crave for Selena, seldom caused them trouble recently. Michael Wilson had died and everything was developing in a better direction.

"Of course, of course!" Now that Fiona was rich, her hatred for Fane had ceased. Every time she attended gatherings with other rich madams, she praised Fane for his ability and how capable her son-in-law was. This change caused Fane, Joan, and others to be slightly dumbfounded.

At this moment, a pretty bodyguard walked over and spoke to Fane. "Master, somebody is looking for you and they are waiting for you in the private room located on the second floor of the Confidante Cafe! They are asking for you to go over now!"

Chapter 873

"They're looking for me?" Fane frowned. Why did they not come over here if they were looking for him? Why act mysterious when he had already reached the opposite street?

Although he wondered what was going on, Fane still nodded and walked over.

Soon, Fane reached the second floor of the Confidante Cafe.

Just as he reached the second floor, he discovered several men in black suits standing in a row energetically.

One of them walked forward and bowed slightly when they saw Fane. "Young Master Fane, please come in. We've been waiting for you for some time!"

"Young Master Fane?" Fane's face darkened. After pausing for a moment, he followed behind the other party and walked toward the private room in front of them.

The entire second floor was obviously booked by the other party and apart from the person in this room, there was nobody else there.

Fane opened the door and entered the private room. An old man with white hair sat there cross-legged.

The old man immediately stood up and bowed respectfully when he saw Fane entering the room. "Young Master, our family is in grave danger. The master is asking for you to return and uphold the situation!"

Fane laughed when he heard this. "Haha, I was wondering who it is. Who knew that it's somebody from the Woods family!"

Fane started getting agitated as he spoke. "This is ridiculous, you guys ignored me and my mother because I was an illegitimate child. They want me to go back now that my position has changed and they know that I'm the exclusive doctor of the Nine Great Gods of War? You people are shameless!"

Fane still clearly remembered how he knelt outside of the Woods family mansion five years ago when Joan was in grave danger and needed one million for her surgery. It was

raining and he knelt there for the entire night.

However, nobody from the Woods family paid any attention to him. The Woods family's housekeeper even asked somebody to hit and humiliated him before driving him away.

If it was not due to the fact that he had the man's blood in him and he could not change that fact, he would have returned and punished the people of the Woods family.

"Young Master, it's difficult to explain everything right now. You were always in the master's heart but you cannot blame him for not visiting you all these years!" The old man sighed. "After all, you too know that the Woods family is more influential now from the help of Woods family madam. Her family provided the Woods family a lot of help…and…"

The old man wanted to say something more but Fane directly interrupted him. "You don't need to say anything else as I've already made up my mind. I am not going back so all of you can leave now. Tell Nash Woods to take it as though he never had a son before and I will think of him as I've never had a father like him!"

Fane left after he spoke.

"Young Master…" The old man sighed as he totally understood Fane's thoughts. Fane must have gone through lots of hardship to be where he was now.

After all, the Woods family were the ones who mistreated

this pair of mother and son.

Chapter 874

After Fane left, a young beauty in a white dress walked over from the opposite room.

"Miss, what should we do? You've heard the conversation we had just now. It would be very difficult to persuade the young master!" The old man immediately saluted and said to the young lady in front of him.

The young lady smiled calmly. "That is quite normal. After all, he and his mother were kicked out after they were discovered. After so many years, he has never received any care from the Woods family. It might be better if we found him earlier!" The young lady smiled bitterly before continuing. "My attitude wouldn't be any better if I was in his position and knew that my family only came looking for me after they knew that I became the exclusive doctor of the Nine Great Gods of War!"

The old man also nodded and said, "However, we haven't finished what we wanted to say before he left. Sigh, we can't just give up like this! Why don't we visit his family and explain everything to them?!"

The young lady thought about it and said, "We're not in a hurry, let's wait for another day or two. Our appearance was too sudden, let's give him two days to digest things up. As for our next steps, I think that we can think of a way to meet Joan tomorrow!"

The old man thought about it and nodded in recognition. "Miss, what you say makes sense. Fane doesn't have a deep relationship with our master so it's normal for him to react this way. Maybe we can start by persuading Joan. After all, they were once together and if she knows that the master is gravely ill, she might agree to us bringing the young master back with us!"

Fane soon went back to the Taylor family mansion with a dark expression on his face.

He was furious inwardly when he remembered how ruthless the Woods family was years ago.

"Fane, what happened? You don't look good! Did something happen?" Joan walked over worryingly and asked in concern when she saw Fane's dark expression.

Fane looked at Joan before comforting her with a smile. "Mother, nothing is wrong. Don't you worry!"

"Alright, don't pressure yourself too much. We're quite rich now and it would be enough for us if we don't simply spend it. We have enough of everything and Selena's company is growing quite well so there's nothing to worry about!" Joan smiled. Although Fane said that nothing was wrong, she could feel that something was bothering Fane and he just refused to tell her about it.

The next day, a young man came to Fane. "Miracle-working

doctor Fane, please help my wife! She's not going to make it. She's got a weird condition and is constantly feeling a pain in her chest. We've checked at other hospitals but none of them could give a diagnosis!

"She's in pain again today and it happens on an irregular basis. I would like for you to come with me and help take a look at my wife's condition!" The middle-aged man in front of Fane seemed to be worried.

"Fane, why aren't you on your way yet? You're earning another one hundred million. Business is booming!" Fiona was ecstatic when she heard this and said to the middle-aged man. "Don't you worry about it, this son-in-law of mine can treat any condition. Your wife will definitely recover after my son-in-law takes a look at her!"

"That would be great! I heard that Fane is a miracle-working doctor, that's why I came here immediately!" The middle-aged man nodded with a smile. "Doctor Fane, you won't refuse my request, right? My wife is really waiting for you to save her life!"

"One hundred million, transfer it to me first and I will do my job! That is the rule!" Fane said indifferently.

"Don't worry, money's not an issue! Not an issue!"

Chapter 875

The middle-aged man immediately nodded.

“Haha, such alacrity. There was someone who tried to negotiate the price previously. We don’t accept any negotiation!” Fiona was happy and immediately passed a piece of paper to the man. “Here are the details of the bank account and you can make the transfer. Don’t you worry, my son-in-law is definitely certain. If he can’t cure your wife, he would definitely return this money to you!”

The other party quickly made the transfer and drove Fane toward outside of the city.

“We’re not staying in the Middle Province?” Fane was stunned and asked the man driving the car when he saw that they were leaving the city.

“Haha, miracle-working doctor Fane, don’t you worry. We’ll still be in the Middle Province. It's just that both me and my wife like some quiet time to ourselves so we built a small hut in a remote area outside of the city. We like to fish by the lake when we’re free!” The man explained happily.

Soon, the man parked his car in front of a forest and said to Fane, “I’m sorry Doctor Fane but there’s no road in front of us and I can’t drive-in. We can only park here and you’ll have to walk over with me. However, it’s not too far away. We’ll soon reach that place after we go through these woods!”

“Alright!” Fane got out of the car with that man and smiled coldly in secret when he saw the situation around him.

This man was obviously lying.

He could also feel that this might be a trap.

However, he was too lazy to expose the other party. He followed behind the man and they soon walked through the woods, reaching in front of a lake.

In front of them, there was a small wooden bridge that led to the island in the middle of the lake. They could vaguely see a small, worn-out hut not far away from the middle of the island.

"I had no idea that you and your wife enjoyed living life like this!" Fane smiled. The man led the way in front and Fane followed behind him as they crossed the bridge.

The man smiled embarrassingly. He walked forward while explaining, "Well, both my wife and I enjoy quietness as we were quite tired of the hustle and bustle of the city. That's why we found such a quiet place to rest at. Of course, we still constantly go into the city to buy food and other necessities!"

They soon reached the small island.

After they reached a small patch of woods on the island, Fane stopped. "Come out, all of you, I'm not dumb! Since you've chosen this place as your grave, I will definitely grant your wishes!"

“Doctor Fane, what are you talking about?” The middle-aged man turned around with a frowned and asked on purpose.

“Haha, stop pretending. There’s no wife of yours in that hut, am I right? Even if there is, that woman must also be an assassin who’s going to kill me, right?” Fane laughed. “If you really visit this place often with your wife, then the place where you parked your car would have visible tire marks. However, that place doesn’t look like any cars were parked there!”

“If that’s the case, you’ve realized since early on that something wasn’t right?” The middle-aged man laughed coldly. “You saw that something wasn’t right but you still followed me. Tsk, tsk… You’re really confident in yourself!”

Chapter 876

Fane shrugged and said indifferently, “It so happened that I’m not in a good mood these few days. Since all of you came on a suicide mission, don’t blame me for your death!”

Fane smiled. A dozen of people jumped down from the trees around him the moment he finished his sentence, surrounding Fane.

“Haha, young man, you’re really quite smart to know that we’re here to kill you!” An old man said with a smile. “However, I don’t think it’s a good idea that you’re so confident as we have quite a big group of people here!”

Clap! Clap!

Following the sound of people clapping, Neil and Ken also walked out from a patch of short shrubs.

"Fane, you have no idea about this, right? You're definitely dying today!" Ken smiled coldly. Ivan was occupied with something at his company and it was a shame that he could not witness Fane's death in person.

However, Ken promised Ivan that he would immediately send a photo of Fane being killed after Fane's death so that Ivan could share their happiness too.

"Oh I see, so it's the both of you!" Fane glanced at them and rubbed his fists. "Great, I can kill the both of you too so that you guys can stop causing me trouble all the time! I've been giving you so many chances but I had no idea that you guys still won't give up until today!"

"Haha... Fane, stop pretending. If my assumption is correct, you have been poisoned. You might have expelled the poison out of your body, but I don't believe that your body and combat abilities are not affected!" Neil smiled coldly and looked at the assassins around them. "Right now, anyone around here might just be able to kill you! However, we employed this many people just to be safe. Look how good we are treating you!"

"Haha, I'm afraid that all of you will be disappointed today!" Fane laughed, flipped his hands and several silver needles appeared.

“Oh my! Young man, you’ve learned how to use concealed weapons. It so happens that I know how to use this technique too!” A woman started laughing coldly. “All of us here today are assassins at the top of the Southwest district killer list. Even if you have three heads and six arms, it would be difficult for you to leave here alive!”

After the woman spoke, she waved her hand and several knives flew toward Fane.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Fane waved his hand and the silver needles in his hand flew out.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Fane’s needles were fast but the killers here today were not weaklings. Some of them immediately took their weapons out and dodged the attack. Some of them moved to one side swiftly or bent backward to evade from Fane’s needles.

Many of Fane’s needles met the woman’s flying knives and all concealed weapons fell to the ground.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

However, the man who led Fane here, a Clark family’s bodyguard, was punctured by several needles in his head. He

fell to the ground and died.

Neil and Ken were quite terrified when they saw the fight had already started. They had a dozen bodyguards with them even though they were standing quite far away from Fane. They subconsciously stepped several meters away before standing still.

"This guy is really good!" The female assassin spoke coldly after she saw how Fane managed to block her flying knives even though they flew at him at such a tricky angle.

"Let me try!" A bald man, who had a huge hammer in his hand, suddenly jumped up and smashed the hammer at Fane with both hands.

"Humph!" Fane flipped his hand when he saw the man jumping down and a sword suddenly appeared in his hand.

Chapter 877

"Oh my god, that ring is a treasure! I heard a rumor that there were rings that could store things and that these rings were treasures! The ring in this guy's hand is definitely a priceless treasure!" The old man who was second on the killer list could not help but started exclaiming and his eyes turned red.

He rushed toward Fane with his sword after he spoke as if he was afraid that people would beat him to it.

"Haha, it's a treasure but I'm afraid that you won't be alive

long enough to use it!" Fane smiled and moved. He was so speedy that he disappeared.

Swoosh!

When Fane appeared again, he was already next to the old man, and the sword in his hand speedily broke the sword in the old man's hand.

"What!" The old man was stunned and started exclaiming. Fane acted too quickly and the sword in Fane's hand was not a usual sword. The sword was an incredible treasure that was incredibly sharp and could cut through iron like it was mud!

Swoosh!

After a wave of wind blew through them, Fane stopped moving. The old man was cut into two halves with one swift motion. Blood splattered everywhere, and the old man was definitely dead.

"What?" As Fane killed the old man who was second on the list, the man who jumped up previously smashed down with his hammer. He originally thought that Fane would not be able to avoid his attack.

He had no idea that Fane was fast as lightning and managed to avoid his attack in such a short period of time, causing him to miss his attack.

“How’s that possible?! Hades is dead!” The remaining assassins were extremely confident but after they saw the old man, second on the killer list, dead, their faces turned pale.

The man in front of them now appeared scary and was definitely not a simple person. They were thinking that one of them could easily kill him but it seemed that it would be difficult for a group of them to even kill him.

“How’s that possible?! One of them died! This old man seems to be the second place on the killer list, Hades!” Neil was slightly afraid when he saw this scene. Fane’s combat skills seem unaffected by the poison.

On top of that, he was not only unaffected, his combat skills also seemed stronger than what they anticipated.

“Ah!” A middle-aged man gritted his teeth and rushed toward Fane. “Tiger fist!”

The man yelled loudly and punched. A scary wave of air rushed over and his punch sounded like a soft tiger growl.

At this moment, Fane saw an illusory tiger rushing toward him.

“Humph!” Fane waved his sword and a scary wave of sword air appeared.

The tiger disappeared and the scary wave of sword air

broke one of the middle-aged man's arms.

"Ah!" the middle-aged man could not bear the pain and yelled out loudly. His face was pale like paper and the veins on his forehead popped.

"F*ck, how can this young man's attack be so scary! He can actually kill someone with just sword air?!" This time, these assassins once again felt threatened, threatened by death.

Chapter 878

These bodyguards, who were extremely strong and have killed many people were actually afraid at this moment.

After all, the combat power of an assassin second on the list was not something to be exaggerated. However, that person was easily killed by Fane.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

With two more waves of the sword, two of the men who had lower rankings on the killer list were killed.

"All of us attack together!" the man with the hammer stepped forward once again and rushed toward Fane.

Swoosh!

This time, Fane did not give the man any opportunities. He disappeared in a flash and suddenly appeared behind the man's back, swinging his sword at him.

The man only saw a flash in front of his eyes and Fane disappeared. Following Fane's disappearance, a sense of crisis, which caused his scalp to turn numb appeared and it frightened him.

He wanted to turn and fight back but it was too late. The sword flashed and the man fell to the ground.

Fane continued to wave his sword and the scary sword air rushed toward the enemies, killing several.

"Sh*t, we are not this guy's opponent. It's impossible for us to go near him with all his sword air!" One of the assassins was almost in despair. After just a short moment, eight of them were dead and the rest of them were not even close to touching Fane.

"Run, this guy's combat power is comparable to that of a God of War!" The man, first on the killer list, wanted to turn around and run.

Unfortunately, Fane did not give them the opportunity to do so. He killed them with several swings of his sword and the assassins fell to the floor with a look of horror in their eyes.

"Im-impossible! How…how is this possible?! These dozen of people are masters on the killer list!" Neil and Ken were in disbelief. The twenty-plus bodyguards they brought over were so frightened that their legs turned into jelly.

“Haha, it’s your turn!” Fane laughed and walked toward them, one step after another.

“Attack! Attack him! Stall him!” Ken was so frightened that he yelled at his bodyguards while he turned around and was ready to escape.

“Run!” Those bodyguards were extremely afraid. There were so many masters there and none of them were Fane’s opponents. How could they, normal bodyguards, be Fane’s opponents?

Fane smirked coldly and soon caught up with these people. He killed Ken and the rest on the spot.

Chapter 879

Fane flipped his hand and hid the needles in his hand as he looked at the enemies’ bodies on the floor. Ken and Neil had been scheming against him. He had already provided them with several opportunities but they were still obsessed with getting him so they can not blame it on him.

It was a good thing to kill these opponents as it would guarantee him a peaceful life in the future.

However, Fane was wondering why both Ivan and Xena did not come over. It would have been better if the both of them came over as this would prevent him from any other worries if he killed them too.

Especially Xena, who poisoned him previously. If she was here, Fane would not have shown her any mercy.

At this moment, an old man was smiling indifferently inside a courtyard house and cupped his hand at Joan. "Greetings my lady, I'm the Woods family's current butler. We invited you here today in hopes that both you and the young master can return to the Woods family. The family is in danger right now and the master is gravely ill…"

The young woman by the old man's side also spoke up. "Yes, auntie… After all, Fane is the master's son and we hope that he can acknowledge his family!"

Joan started smiling coldly when she heard what they said, "How did you people treated us previously? You are hoping my son will go back now that he's had some achievements?"

Joan's eyes turned red as she spoke. "Do you guys know how I survived all these years with Fane? Do you guys know how hard our lives were?"

"Auntie, how…how could that have happened? Didn't the master ask people to send you guys one million every year? Although it's not a lot, it should be sufficient for you guys to live a comfortable life, right?" The old man frowned. He knew that one million was a small amount for the Woods family but it was definitely sufficient for normal people to live a comfortable life.

"What? One million?" Joan was stunned and disbelief was

written all over her face. “I don’t know what you’re talking about. Since when did Nash Woods give us one million every year? We’ve never received anything! When I was sick previously and needed one million for my surgery, Fane knelt in front of the Woods family mansion for the entire night. As a result, he was insulted and hit by a group of people led by a woman. We were even asked to leave!”

“A woman?” The old man was startled and immediately said, “Auntie, we had no idea about this. As the Wood family’s butler, I didn’t know that something like this happened!” He paused here and finally spoke in realization. “No wonder Fane had such a strong attitude when we met him yesterday and refused to follow us back home. There’s a huge misunderstanding between us!”

“You didn’t know this? The woman said that she did it under the orders of the butler and master. She asked Fane to go away and even called him a b*stard child…” Joan was also surprised and immediately replied.

“I get it now!” The old man curled his hands into fists. “It must be that woman, Lily Lagorio. She’s such an intolerant person and does such terrible things. The master still asked someone to send you money although he did not have much power in the Woods family and dared not fetch you guys back because he was afraid of the Lagorio family. Haha, it seems that Lily must be the one who did this bad deed!”

“This woman…” Joan smiled coldly. “She bullied us mother and son years ago.” Joan continued speaking. “This is quite

funny to me as Nash Woods never came looking for us for so many years. Why did he come now? Apart from that, he was afraid of the Lagorio family years ago but he wanted their help to make the Woods family a reclusive aristocratic family. Why? Is he not afraid of them anymore?"

The old man smiled bitterly and spoke helplessly, "The Lagorio family was quite strong previously and provided the Woods family with a lot of help. However, now that the Woods family has already become a reclusive aristocratic family, the Lagorio family lost many masters in a big fight after they offended another family. The Lagorio family status has now declined!"

"Haha, because he's not afraid of the Lagorio family now, he wants to admit that Fane is his son?" Joan laughed coldly. "He's a coward who caused Fane so much suffering. Fane wouldn't have to go to the battlefield if he didn't need to save me. Luckily my son survived all of this. If not, Fane would have died on the battlefield and I won't have the chance to see my son again! I'm not forgiving Nash Woods so easily!"

Chapter 880

"Madam, you can't blame it on the master as he had his own difficulties. As the Woods family master, he had to consider the best for the entire family! Apart from that, he did arrange for one million to be given to you every year and nobody here knew about the incident where your son knelt outside the house for an entire night!" The old man spoke anxiously. "Hence, it must be that woman, Lily Larogio, who

asked her worker to lie to you, creating such a huge misunderstanding between us!"

The young woman thought about it and also said, "Auntie, it's fine if you don't want to forgive the master. However, the master is dying and I really hope that you will go back with the young master to visit him. Think of it as your chance to pay your last respect to the master. Master has been mumbling your name every day. I believe that he would come to meet Young Master Fane if he can get out of bed now!"

"Are things that bad now?" Joan was slightly worried when she heard what the young girl said. After all, she once loved Nash and he was undeniably Fane's father.

Joan was not worried when she heard the old man say that Nash was seriously ill. She knew that the Woods family was now a reclusive aristocratic family. This meant that they had plenty of great subordinates and masters with them. Nash would be easily treated even if he was sick. However, it seemed to be a serious problem that could not be easily solved.

"The master's condition is quite serious. We employed many well-known doctors previously but nothing has worked!" The young lady smiled bitterly and continued speaking. "Now, the master's only hope is for Young Master Fane to return and inherit the Woods family's properties. He hopes that the both of you can forgive him for his incompetence years ago and his inability to take care of you!"

“Inherit the properties? Didn’t Lily have a son with him? Why does he need Fane to return and inherit the family properties?” Joan was surprised and felt that things had grown increasingly complicated.

Apart from that, it was impossible for Lily to let Fane inherit the Woods family properties according to her character as she was Nash Woods’ wife.

The old man smiled bitterly before speaking, “He went into an unknown forest with several young masters from other families, he never returned after. We think that he might have been eaten by the beasts in the forest!”

“How’s that possible? Didn’t you guys send anyone over to try and find him?” Joan was extremely surprised. Nash and Lily had only one son and they must be extremely upset if he was dead.

No wonder Nash wanted Fane to return and inherit the family’s properties because Lily and his only son was deemed dead.

“Alright, I’ve understood what is going on and I will explain everything to Fane. However, I’m not sure what his decisions are but I will honor whatever he decides!” Joan thought about it and said.

“We’ve rented this house for one week. If Fane is willing to follow us back, he can come over anytime within this week!”

Chapter 881

The old man thought about it and spoke to Joan again. "One of the doctors said that the master cannot live more than three months with his current condition. Hence, no matter what, we hope that you can be there within three months."

The old man passed a name card to Joan after he spoke.

"Alright!" Joan took the card, glanced at the address on it, and finally left.

After Joan left, the young woman asked, "Butler, do you think that Fane would go over?"

The old man smiled bitterly. "I'm not sure about that. However, I believe that since Joan took the name card, she would try to convince Fane. Sigh, what to do… The Woods family owes them too much and I can understand no matter what decision they make!"

The young woman frowned after she thought about it. "However, Madam Lily would be unhappy if she knew how we are trying to get Fane to come back. That woman looks happy all the time but I'm afraid that Fane would be in danger once he returns to the Woods family!"

The old man started frowning too. "That is quite a big problem. However, the great and the other elders would be on Fane's side as they are respectful toward the master's words. The elders from the Lagorio family who stayed and

worked for the Woods family, however, would have a hard time agreeing to it! But since the great elder and the others are very powerful, it wouldn't be a problem. They would be able to suppress whoever that disagrees!"

The young lady nodded. "I really hope that Fane can go back. There must be something special about him as he could grow up independently in the outside world on his own. Apart from that, he even got the Nine Great Gods of War to join his wedding. That is proof of his capabilities!"

"Yes, he has really good medical skills. I wonder if he can treat the master after he returns!" The old man smiled bitterly after he spoke. "Although I think it is very difficult and even if he's capable, he might not agree to help do the treatment. However, we have a little more hope if he's going back. Apart from that, I'm afraid that Lily would not let him off the hook even if he doesn't go back!"

"How's that possible?!" The young woman gaped in disbelief. "Although Lily hated Joan and the master for having a bastard child but both of them never went back all these years. They never wanted to fight for the Wood family's properties. They've already left to such a small town and Lily still won't let him go?"

"Previously, the Lagorio family was an indispensable power to the Woods family and the maiden family was the support for Lily. His son would also definitely inherit the Woods family master!"

"Now that the Lagorio family is out of the question and the Woods family has grown stronger, do you think Lily would remain calm especially when her son has disappeared? Although everybody is still searching for him, he's been gone for one month and it's quite obvious that he's dead. So, if Fane returns, he would definitely be the candidate for the next master!" The old man smiled coldly. "This time, we sneaked out but we cannot let Lily know why we came out. We will be in the clear after we've brought the young master back! After all, it will be difficult for Lily to make a move as there are so many people observing and the great elder will be protecting the young master!"

"Unfortunately, Fane refused to go back. If he doesn't go back and the master dies after two to three months, the Woods family would be in chaos!" The young woman thought about what would happen to the Woods family and was incredibly worried. "Oh my, the Woods family worked so hard to become a reclusive family, we can't have an internal fight just because there's no leader!"

The old man shook his head helplessly. "So the both of us have a very huge responsibility this time. Sadly, we cannot stay here for a long time or it would cause Lily to grow suspicious and I'm afraid that she would come looking for us!" The old man paused before continuing speaking. "Especially when Fane's wedding stirred the entire Cathysia. Although reclusive families like us and the Gin City's ten great families don't pay much attention to these Gods of War, I'm afraid that Lily would learn about how Fane got the Nine Great Gods of War to attend his wedding!"

Chapter 882

The young woman nodded and said, "After all, this proves that Young Master Fane is not a useless but promising person. The great elder and the others would definitely stand by Fane's side and this would increase their determination in supporting Fane. On the contrary, this would give more reason to that prudent woman, Lily, to target Fane!"

"Alright, I hope that Joan can convince Fane as there's a small possibility of us doing that. Joan is his mother and there might be hope for her!" The old man finally said.

It was in the afternoon and Ivan was done with his work. Even Xena came over to fetch him.

Ivan could not help himself but to speak after the both of them stepped out of the office. "This is weird, it's already six in the evening but why hasn't Ken and the others call me yet? Apart from that, didn't I ask him to immediately send me a photo after he killed Fane?"

"Could it be that they've met with some accident?" Xena frowned and made a guess.

"How's that possible? Fane's poisoned and although we don't know why he's still alive, his body wouldn't be as good as it once was!" Ivan said directly. "Apart from that, those assassins are the top twenty on the killer list. Although they are just in the first twenty range of the Westsouth

killer list, they are extremely good and should be enough to kill Fane. You didn't hear what the killers said. Some of them said that they can handle it alone and we were being too cautious for getting so many of them!"

"If that's the case, Ken must have forgotten to send you photos. They might have gone out celebrating with drinks after they saw that Fane was dead?" Xena thought about it and made another guess.

"They went celebrating?" Ivan was stunned and felt that it was possible. He soon took out his cellphone and called the other party.

Sadly, neither Ken nor Neil answered his call.

"Could they have gotten drunk cause they were too happy?"

Ivan finally smiled bitterly. "Why don't we go have a look at the small island?"

"Do we need to go over? I'm afraid to go to that sort of place so late at night. What if it gets too dark?!" Xena pulled Ivan's sleeve and showed an expression of being a timid woman.

"Why are you afraid? There's nothing to be afraid of. Let's go and take a look. Fane's body might still be on that island!" Ivan smirked.

Both of them drove out of the city and the sky slowly

darkened. They could still see clearly before it turned totally dark, the both of them walked through the woods and reached the island.

“How’s that possible?! There are so many bodies here! Ivan, let’s leave!” Xena was frightened after she saw the bodies of the killers on the island.

“Damn it! Weren’t these killers good? These are the bodies of the killers! Where’s Fane’s body?!” How could Ivan give up when he already came over?

He continued his search but the deeper he went, the darker his face grew. “Damn it! I don’t see Fane’s body!t These are all the bodies of the assassins and Ken’s bodyguards. How’s this possible?! Ken and Neil are both dead too!”

Ivan was so frightened that he had cold sweat on his forehead after his search.

It turned out that Ken and Neil were not out celebrating with drinks. It turned out that they were both killed along with the killers by Fane alone.

“Fane’s combat ability is so strong?” Xena was also extremely frightened as Fane was too scary.

Chapter 883

”Is this guy really just a doctor?” Ivan walked out, leaving the island with Xena. She thought about it and lit a fire, burning the entire island. “We cannot leave any traces or the Clark family master and Hugo family master would come looking for me after they read the messages on their phones!” Ivan thought about it and continued saying, “If they knew that their sons were killed after we came up with the money to employ assassins to kill Fane, both masters would blame their son’s death on me!” “That’s right. Especially since the Hugo family master never wanted Neil to mix around with you. He might question you if he knew his son died!” Xena also nodded and said. “Oh yes, don’t tell anyone anything about today. Alright?” Ivan thought about it and reminded Xena after they reached their car. “Don’t worry. I’m not dumb, I won’t tell anyone anything!” Xena smiled and the both of them soon drove off. “We lost more than two hundred million and Fane is still alive. We’re in so much trouble now, this guy is too good!” After they reached a hotel, Ivan and Xena ordered some takeout. They also opened a bottle of wine and Ivan drank several mouthfuls. He was still slightly afraid when he recalled the ground full of bodies. “Yes, Fane has a really strong combat ability, and he’s hiding it so well!” Xena nodded and wiped the cold sweat on her forehead. “Luckily, the both of us did not go over that night. If we did and Fane knew that we had something to do with employing those assassins, he would have definitely killed us!” “Yes, luckily an emergency came up at the company and I needed to be there. If not, our death would have been certain!” Ivan drank another mouthful of wine and suddenly spoke with a frown on his face. “Do you think that both Ken and Neil identified us both before they died? Or would they have said our names by accident and Fane knows?” Xena took a sharp inhale after she heard Ivan and replied nervously, “Ivan, what should we do? Fane is a straightforward guy, would he kill us if he knows that we’re involved?” “I don’t think so. After all, he doesn’t have any evidence and we weren’t there.

We can just say that Ken and Neil were making things up!" Ivan thought about it and continued. "Apart from that, we're all Taylors and Fane cannot kill us because of guesses or lack of evidence. Isn't he afraid of the old master questioning him later?" "It seemed to be the case but…" Xena's face paled and she pursed her lips. "I...I'm still slightly afraid!" "What are you afraid of? Come have some wine and food!" Ivan poured Xena another glass of wine and they cheered each other. The next morning, several middle-aged women and men arrived at the Middle Province. "Haha, I had no idea that we still needed to come back to this place again. It's been a long time!" One of the men had a cold curl on the corners of his mouth. He had a sword on his back with an arrogant manner. "The old man of the Taylor family is really clever. Haha, he actually used someone to replace the actual target." Another woman also started laughing coldly. "I want to see how they protect that young guy's wife this time around!"

Chapter 884

"Sigh, this is so troublesome. The old master said that he feels bad as we caused the Kelly family to be ashamed so we need to go over early in the morning and have lunch with them. This means that we would need to meet Fane and Selena again!" It was morning and Ivan was speaking impatiently as he stepped out of the hotel. Xena, who was by his side, commented, "Especially Fiona, she has been showing herself off now that their family's rich. It's as if she's afraid that other people don't know how rich her family is. She buys branded bags and lots of clothes every day. Does she think she can manage to wear all of them?" Ivan was speechless when he heard Xena's jealous words. If Xena was rich, she would be acting the same as Fiona did. At this moment, Fane and the others were already taking a stroll at the Taylor family mansion. Although the Gold family master, Kelly, and other gold family members were unhappy about what happened the other day, they still smiled happily when they saw Fane. They did not show their anger, instead, there was a feeling of deliberate flattery. They obviously

knew how scary Fane was. How could they offend a man who earned 100 million for every person he treated? They even knew that Selena's new company was growing well. With its current development, the company would surpass the original Taylor family's company. If that was the case, the Taylor family would definitely become a first-class aristocratic family soon. They might even surpass the Drake family after two to three years. Under such circumstances, how could they still offend Fane and Selena? They could only please them and not offend them. After all, they were members of the Taylor family and were considered the Gold family's relatives. Would they not be making their lives difficult if they did not please such powerful relatives? Cecilia's face darkened when she saw how the Gold family master, Kelly, and others were chit-chatting happily with Fane. However, she knew clearly that she could not do anything even though she was secretly unhappy. At this moment, several young people arrived at the Taylor family mansion's entrance. "Master Taylor, Old Master Taylor, get out here!" One of the men yelled loudly after he arrived at the entrance. "Who's that? How dare you cause trouble here? Are you suicidal?" Two of the bodyguards who were guarding the door immediately walked over angrily when they saw how wanton this person was. Everybody in the Middle Province knew to not offend and cause trouble with the Taylors because of Fane. The two men and two women in front of them were suicidal for being so arrogant in front of them. However, the man smiled coldly and pulled his sword out. He rushed forward and attacked both bodyguards. Both bodyguards directly covered their necks and fell to the ground.

Chapter 885

"Who's that? How dare they cause trouble at our Taylor family mansion!" Fane, Theodore, and the others who were taking a stroll in the yard walked over. Theodore was the Taylor family master so he naturally walked in front. The old master, Fane, and the others followed behind him. "Haha, there's

quite a huge number of people!" The man laughed before speaking. "Years ago, didn't we ask for a young man from the Taylor family who reached the age of 18 to join the war? Why did I receive news that the bastard Ivan is still alive?" "Who are you people? What does the internal affairs of our family have to do with all of you?" Theodore frowned when he heard this. The four people in front of them were not simple people. He was worried, especially when he saw how speedy the man who attacked their bodyguards was. "Haha, how about you? Who are you?" The man on the opposite end did not answer Theodore's question. Instead, he smiled coldly and said, "If I did not see wrongly, you're the Taylor family master, right? I have no idea that you have already forgotten about us after five years. Did you forget how your son touched my fiance's butt when I was not around years ago?" "You…You are from Gin city?" Theodore's face turned pale when he recalled what happened years ago and inhaled deeply. Years ago, these people gave Ivan a beating because he offended them. However, they said that they would make Ivan regret what he did before they left. Nobody knew that the country started enlisting soldiers for the war not long after and the Taylor family was appointed a quota. It so happened that the only person in the entire Taylor family who fulfilled all the conditions was Ivan Taylor. The Taylor family knew at that moment that the people who came from the Gin City were people they could not afford to offend. If not, why were they so powerful? "Haha, that's right. If we didn't know that your family is famous now because you have a son-in-law who married into your family and is someone who can get all the Gods of War to attend his wedding, we wouldn't have known that you people secretly swapped the person who was supposed to join the war!" The man laughed. He pointed his sword straightforwardly and directly addressed Theodore. "We were still young and not as powerful five years ago. We wanted to torture your family so we gave you face. We only asked for Ivan to join the war and for him to die on the battlefield. We have no idea that you guys were so daring to ask a son-in-law who married into your family to join the war. Today, surrender Ivan

to us and let us kill him here. If not, don’t blame us for killing your entire Taylor family!” “Young man, you can’t blame us for what happened years ago, right? None of you specially assigned Ivan to be the one to join the battlefield in the beginning! Apart from that, although Fane is just a son-in-law who married into our family but he’s also considered as one of our Taylor family members. His age and other conditions fulfilled the requirement so we asked him to join the army. We did not violate the regulations the government set!” At this moment, Old Master Taylor could not bear it anymore and stepped forward. “None of you said that Ivan must join the army. If the government appointed Ivan and he must join the army, we would have definitely let him serve the country. Hence, I hope that all of you would stop looking into this. Fane also served the country well and killed many enemies leading to his achievements today!” “Haha, old man, f*cking stop acting dumb. Although we did not appoint Ivan but the only person in your family who fulfills the conditions is Ivan Taylor!” The man gritted his teeth and said angrily. “Do you think that we are dumb? A son-in-law who married into your family is considered as a member of your Taylor family? A son-in-law who married into your family isn’t considered as a member of your family! He’s an outsider!”

Chapter 886

”Haha… Young man, you can’t say that. To us, Fane is not an outsider but one of our family members because he gets along well with us!” Theodore laughed. He was slightly more confident when he recalled how Fane had very strong combat abilities and even marshals were not his opponent. Although he had no idea which powerful families these people were from, he still spoke straightforwardly. “Young man, we won’t fuss over how you killed our bodyguards just now. Please leave!” “Haha, what a joke! We came from far away and you expect us to leave just because you asked us to?” Another man also laughed and walked two steps forward. “Today, you have to hand Ivan Taylor over to us and the guy who dared to go on the battlefield in place of Ivan has to kneel in front of us and apologize for what he did. We won’t accept anything less!” “You...you are saying that you only need the both of them to kneel and apologize?” Old Master Taylor started calculating the situation secretly. These were people from Gin City and there were many masters there. Some masters stayed hidden and were basically hermit crabs. Their combat power might be comparable to that of the Gods of War. This was why the powerful people in the Gin City looked down on the Gods and Kings of War. “Nonsense, we mean that we’re killing Ivan Taylor and the replacement guy only needs to kneel down to apologize!” The first man, who was in white, smiled coldly and said angrily. “After all, the person who offended my fiance was Ivan Taylor and not that guy. However, this guy also made a mistake by replacing Ivan Taylor to join the army!” “About this…” Old Master Taylor frowned. “What do you think if we make it up to you with money? How does that sound? This incident happened five years ago, can’t we just sit down and have a civilized chat?” “Haha, do you think that we, from the Lambert family, are people that you can push around? Make it up to us with money? Do you think that we are short of money?” The man once again started laughing loudly. “I’m giving you guys ten minutes. If you cannot hand Ivan Taylor to me after ten

minutes, don’t blame us for being ruthless. We will show you what real masters are by then!” Whoosh! One of the women behind both men directly drew her sword and waved it across the air. A wave of wind blew and a huge gap appeared on the branch of a plane tree not far away. “What?!” The Taylors turned pale when they saw what happened. Which powerful family were these four people from? They have never heard of the Lambert family but the family seemed to be a strong one from the way the opponents spoke. The most crucial point was that Fane’s combat abilities did not seem comparable to this young woman. After all, the woman could carry out such a scary attack without getting close to her opponent. “Not bad, sword aura attack. You made sure it did not disappear after traveling such a long distance!” Fane glanced at the gap and said calmly while smiling indifferently. “Haha, you must be that young guy. Tell us, where did they hide Ivan Taylor? If you hand him to us, you won’t need to kneel and apologize to us. The most crucial point is, your wife and your family members don’t need to die!” The woman looked at Fane, laughed, and said. “You’re quite young. If you stay alive, there’s hope for you to obtain a certain breakthrough and become a true master! However, I’m afraid that nobody here will survive if you don’t obey us!” Another woman smiled coldly and said. “Now, you only have eight minutes left. Time is running out so make your decisions swiftly!”

Chapter 887

”Haha, although I have the urge to hand him over to you but I better not as some people will be unhappy if I do that!” Fane shrugged his shoulders and spread his hands as he spoke. “I’m afraid that you can’t kill anybody here. After all, my wife and family are here. It’s impossible for me to just sit around and do nothing!” “Fane, what are you talking about? What do you mean when you say you want to hand him over? How can you have such thoughts when you’re the son-in-law who married into our family, a member of the Taylor family?” Theodore was surprised when he heard that Fane

wanted to hand Ivan over. If that was the case, his son's death was definite. Theodore was still worried even though he spoke to Fane. After all, the group of four in front of him had already proved their capabilities when they simply carried out an attack. That was not an easy thing to do. "Guys, many...many of us here are from the Gold family and we're not a member of the Taylors. We're here today for a simple lunch. Can we leave as your business with the Taylor family has nothing to do with us Golds?" The Gold family master immediately stood to the opposite side and wanted to immediately sever all ties with the Taylor family when he saw that the situation had escalated. "That's right, we're not members of the Taylor family. You people cannot kill us as we are innocent!" Kelly and his bodyguards immediately walked over and stood behind the Gold family master. "I...I am also from the Gold family!" Cecilia thought about it before quickly running over to stand with the Golds as if she was afraid that she would be dragged into what was happening. "Haha, who knows if you people are really from the Gold family? What if you're a member of the Taylor family but is pretending to be a member of the Gold family?" The man who stood at the front was called Lucas Lambert. He smiled coldly and said. "Haha… Today, I, Lucas Lambert, would not let anyone go. Now, all of you still have five minutes, make a decision!" "There…There's only four of you. Don't make us angry! After all, powerful outsiders can hardly afford to neglect local bullies!" Although they were afraid, one of the Taylor family's bodyguards still gritted his teeth and said. "Apart from that, Fane and the Gods of War are good friends, offending him means offending the Nine Great Gods of War! You're on a suicidal mission!" "Humph, I don't believe that the Nine Great Gods of War would fight us if we kill such a doctor!" The man smiled coldly. He was not worried although he was slightly fearful of the Nine Great Gods of War. The opponent's family was obviously very strong so they were not worried. Theodore was secretly rejoicing that his son was not present. His son would still be able to escape even if these people could not find Ivan and would kill them instead.

Hummm! However, at this moment, a sports car drove over and stopped at the entrance. “What’s going on? Why is this bodyguard dead?” Ivan and Xena came down from the car and were stunned. “Ivan, run!” Theodore’s face turned pale and immediately exclaimed when he saw that his son had returned.

Chapter 888

”Why run? Why do we need to worry when Fane is so strong? Apart from that, our Taylor family…” Ivan smiled coldly and said without much care. He had no idea the seriousness of what was happening. “Haha, you’re back? Today is the day of your death!” Lucas Lambert turned around and looked at Ivan coldly. The coldness in his eyes caused people to feel uncomfortable. “You…You are…” Ivan originally had a smile on his face but his smile soon froze and his expression was replaced by horror. Although it happened five years ago and this man had slightly matured over the years, Ivan still recognized him. “Sh*t, they are from Gin City!” Ivan was extremely frightened. These people had so much power years ago, this meant that they were from an influential family. They must be quite confident as they dared come looking for him. He wanted to escape after he spoke. Whoosh! The opponent waved his sword and a scary sword aura rushed toward Ivan. “No!” Theodore yelled out loudly. He knew how scary this person’s sword aura was. He also knew that his son knew nothing and was a normal person. If such an attack landed on Ivan, he would definitely die. The Taylors immediately looked at Fane. At this moment, only Fane could help Ivan. Fane was stunned as this was a good chance to kill Ivan. He had long wanted to kill Ivan but there was no suitable chance. Apart from that, he did not make a move because he was afraid that Old Master Taylor and the others would be angry when they found out. It was best for these people to help him kill Ivan. “Stop!” Fane did not hesitate although he had such thoughts. He yelled, jumped up, and rushed toward the opponents. However, he controlled his speed. He could definitely save Ivan but because he did not

intend to, he reduced his speed. After all, sometimes life and death during fights between masters happened in the blink of an eye. Whoosh! The sword aura blinked and arrived in front of Ivan. “Ah!” Ivan was frightened. He pulled Xena, who was beside him, over and blocked himself. Bang! Blood splattered everywhere as the scary sword aura landed on Xena’s chest. A scary cut appeared on her chest and blood spluttered out. “You…” Xena lowered her head to take a look before turning around and glanced at Ivan. She fell straight to the ground. “I’m sorry!” Ivan turned around and was ready to escape. “Bastard!” Ivan was secretly happy but had an angry expression on his face and he yelled loudly. Whoosh! Another woman pointed her sword at Fane and blocked him. Fane deliberately slowed down previously and he immediately stopped after the other party finally caught up with him. He paused his movement and backed several meters. Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! The remaining three people directly rushed forward. They were quite speedy and caught up with Ivan within one to two seconds, surrounding him in the middle.

Chapter 889

“What are you standing there for? Go save the young master!” Theodore immediately yelled. “Die!” Many bodyguards from the Taylor family cried out and rushed forward. “What’s going on?” At long last, the ten beautiful bodyguards in Fane’s house—who was on the opposite side—noticed the ruckus that was going on and rushed over as well. “Let–let me go. I was wrong!” Ivan was extremely frightened. His opponents were far too strong; he was no match for them. “Just die!” With his fiancée keeping Fane at bay, Lucas did not have an ounce of worry in him. He swung his sword and killed Ivan. “No!” Theodore cried out at the sight of his own son dying before his eyes. He fainted straightaway. “Master!” Many members of the Taylor family propped Theodore up. Selena’s fists were clenched tight. She was worried. Fane was gripped with anxiety when he noticed the Taylor family’s bodyguards and Orchid and the others rushing over. After all, these four people were strong fighters—probably not as strong as the Gods of War, but almost. “Don’t come over. You’re no match for them!” Fane suddenly hollered. He flicked his wrist, and a black sword appeared in his grip. Whoosh! He slashed his sword. The immense strength from the swing created a blade of pressurized air that flew toward the woman before him. “What!” The woman, who was just about to leap forward, was stunned when she sensed the pressurized air blade. She quickly brought her sword up. Bang! The wind blade struck against her sword. Although she had managed to block it, the force still sent her flying backward for a good few meters. She landed on the ground with a heavy thud. “Pfft!” The woman spat a mouthful of blood. Shock filled her eyes. “That man has such amazing strength and technique with the sword. He knows how to harness inner energy from within!” The other three had initially thought that Fane was no match for the woman. They had been prepared to kill the Taylor family’s bodyguards, but they never expected that this scene would play out before them. “You know all about inner energies, huh? Seems like you’re a better

fighter than some of the Kings of War!" Liam stared at Fane, finally looking as though he were taking the other man seriously. Not many knew that some relied on brute force to bolster their fighting prowess—their physical strength and speed to boost their attacks. Of course, those who knew some techniques in martial arts were considered pretty good. However, the truly outstanding fighters were the ones who knew how to use their inner energies. Once a person has mastered their inner energy, their fighting strength would be multiplied tenfold. Additionally, it was necessary to use plenty of brute force—so long as one had excellent control over his or her inner energy, their fighting prowess was extremely frightening. Still, there were extremely very few people who knew how to harness their inner energy. No one expected Fane to be one of them. "Heh. I did tell you that it won't be easy to kill my family!" Fane chuckled. He leveled the sword at the person before him. "I will avenge Ivan and Xena!" he declared. Theodore, who had just woken up, heard this, and gratefulness filled his heart. His son had always plotted against Fane, yet the man was willing to let go of past grievances, for now, declaring that he would avenge Ivan and stand up against them. "Yes, Fane. Avenge my son!" Theodore stood up. He cried out, suppressing the pain that plagued his heart. Selena felt a little at loss for words. She knew that Fane had wanted to kill Ivan long ago, and the only thing that was stopping him was the fact that the man was her cousin. Evidently spewing those words went against his beliefs, but she did not expect Theodore to actually buy them. Yet judging from Fane's furious, intimidating aura, she probably would have believed him too, if she did not know him.

Chapter 890

"Don't go!" Orchid, who was about to rush forward, immediately told Elain and the others to stop when she heard Fane's words. She surmised that those four people were not any regular people. Fane would not have stopped them from going over otherwise. It meant that even if they went, not only would

they not be of much help, they would probably be killed too. Of course, it was not difficult for Fane to kill all four, but he had purposely slowed himself down so that he seemed like he could not save Ivan. The Taylor family would seriously suspect him if he finished the four of them off quickly and easily now. That was why he needed to control himself now. He would kill them, but he would make it seem as though it were a close call—as though he were using all his skills and strength. “Let’s come together and kill him! How dare he hurt Snow!” The man named Lucas huffed. Suddenly, the four surrounded Fane. Still, Fane and the others did not know that an old man and a young woman were watching all this unfold from afar, nestled safely in their car. “Sir, should we go over to help the young master?” The young woman furrowed her brows before asking the old man, “No mishap can fall upon Young Master Fane. The young master might even harbor gratitude for us if we help him now, and he’ll probably agree to go back with us.” “Let’s wait and see. He won’t be too happy if we help him now. After all, we don’t know if Joan has briefed him on the entire situation!” The old man flashed a bitter smile. “Besides, our young master still has the advantage. Maybe he can kill all four of them by himself!” The young woman’s eyes brightened ever so slightly when she heard that. “It would be fantastic if he can kill them alone. That means that he’s a good fighter. He won’t be able to match the younger ones who’ve received training since young—like me—but he’s able to grow so strong even without the ideal conditions at such a young age. It means that he has potential!” Whoosh! Just as the two were discussing the matter, Fane had exchanged plenty of blows with the four of them. Then the opportunity came, and he struck one of the women down with his sword. “Layla!” One of the men’s eyes began to redden. It was obvious that this woman was extremely important to him—that they were not just friends. “Ah!” The man released a war cry and rushed toward Fane, obviously having lost all sense of control. “Fantastic. He’s already killed one. Now there are only three left. With this, a lot of pressure will be taken off his shoulders. Maybe he’ll be

able to kill the other three too!" Theodore's bloodshot eyes immediately brightened when he saw one of them die. He felt elated at the sight. "Ah!" Yet Old Man Taylor released a sigh beside him. Although Fane had killed one of them, he still was not happy. Still, in a deathmatch like this, he naturally hoped that Fane would emerge victorious and kill them all. But he also knew that if Fane killed these four people, they would be provoking a powerful force from Gin City.

Chapter 891

Plenty of eyewitnesses had spectated the bloody fight between martial artists. The people from Gin City would surely investigate the matter if those four people died, and they would find out everything that had transpired. The Taylor family would be in big trouble then. Selena noted the old man's expression and said, "Grandpa, why are you sighing? It seems like Fane will be able to eliminate them all!" Fiona and the others also stared at him, confused. "There are way too many powerful organizations in Gin City. Even if you eliminate the all-powerful Ten Families there, the families that are slightly weaker than them are still plenty strong. The Lamberts are so strong, and their elders are all extremely powerful. We'll be offending a great power if they die!" Old Man Taylor sighed and added, "But Fane has to kill them now, considering the circumstances. There's no other way out of this." Slam! Bam! Pow! The fight was just as intense as before, and it was not long until Fane slew the three remaining fighters. "F—Fantastic. Haha!" Theodore roared in laughter and ran to hug his son's lifeless body. "Did you see that, Ivan? All the people who wronged you are now dead. Fane avenged you!" The Woods family butler—who sat in a car from afar—nodded with satisfaction. "The young master is truly a skilled fighter, able to slay all four fighters. The master will be pleased once he hears about this." The butler then turned to look at the woman next to him. "Fane is probably not as strong as you, but he has far more talent and potential than any of you," stated the butler. "After all, you've all received training at a young

age, and only then did you manage to grow into who you are now!" The young woman was rather miffed at his words, but all she could do was nod. The butler had a point; she might have never been able to do what Fane could if she was stuck in this mundane world. Had Fane received resources provided by the family, he would have been much stronger—perhaps stronger than her. "Don't worry. I'll definitely help out as much as I can if the young master truly returns. He is the only legitimate son of the master, after all," stated the young woman as she offered a wan smile. A sigh then escaped the old man's lips before he voiced his thoughts, "Ah, now I'm worried that Fane won't go back. We've done everything we can. There's no helping it now." The young woman mulled over his words. "But Fane has provoked the Lambert family now, and he won't be able to protect all of his family now," she said, frowning. "Who knows if he'll return to the Woods family? If he does and chooses to use the forces we have, he won't have to worry about small fry like the Lamberts." The butler nodded at her statement. "It's a possibility. I, too, hope that he can return to the Woods family and take his rightful place as the pillar of our family." The two quickly drove off, and it was at this moment that Orchid and the others came before Fane. "Master, those four were so strong yet were so young! Where were they from?" asked Orchid. Her brows furrowed as she looked at the corpses of the four young fighters. "Gin City. One of the men was called Lucas Lambert, and he's probably from one of the powerful families there." Fane gave a mirthless smile and sheathed his sword.

Chapter 892

"They're from Gin City? That's troublesome... There are plenty of skilled fighters among the powerful families." Orchid's expression turned grave when she heard that. "It's a pity that they didn't send all their experts when they started the fight. We would've won a long time ago otherwise." "Quick, get rid of the bodies." Old Man Taylor instructed his subordinates to handle the bodies. People would instantly pick up the mayhem that went down the

longer it was left unresolved. It would be far easier for the Lambert family if they came here to investigate Lucas and the others' deaths. Old Man Taylor took a moment to himself as he sorted out his thoughts before he spoke to Theodore, "Ivan met his doom today because of how he provoked them five years ago, Theodore. None of this would've happened if he hadn't tried to fool around with another man's fiancée. I myself never thought that they'd come looking for him after all these years when they found out that he wasn't dead." Theodore's eyes reddened as he nodded. "I understand, Father. I've told him so many times to control his actions, but he never listened to me. Ah… Fane just killed all four people from the Lambert family. What should we do if their relatives come looking for us?" Old Man Taylor mulled over the situation for a while. "How about this: We'll quickly bury Ivan's body. There's plenty of distance between Middle Province and Gin City," he suggested. "They won't be here for at least half an hour. After we bury Ivan's body, we'll sell off our fixed assets for cheap and leave Middle Province." Theodore feebly nodded, well aware that his father grew up and lived in Middle Province all his life—he had a deep attachment to the city. If he spoke about leaving Middle Province, it meant that they were in a dire situation. "No way! Are we really moving? Where should we move to then?" Fiona frowned. It was evident that she was adamant to not leave her home. Alas, they had wronged a terrifyingly powerful family, and they would probably be far safer if they left Middle Province. "Let's just do everything we need to do. I'm not that scared of the Lambert family, but we should prepare to leave... Just in case." Fane took out a cigarette and took a long drag out of it. He knew he was powerful; he had nothing to fear. However, he probably would not be able to handle it if the Lamberts sent too many fighters. "Ah, what misfortune!" Andrew sighed. "I'll give Ben a call," he said, "he needs to settle his cyber café as well." Joan was silent for a good while before she slowly walked toward Selena and Fane. "Fane, Selena, let's take a walk in the garden," offered Joan. "All right, Mother." Selena's brows knit tightly together, puzzled. She knew Joan wanted to tell

them something important if she invited them for a private talk. Fiona instantly went up to them when she heard this. “What are you going to talk about, Joan? Can’t I listen to it too? I’m so curious!” Joan gave a bitter smile. “It’s not convenient for me to tell you any of this for now, Fiona,” she replied. “I’ll tell you everything when the time is right, but right now, I just want to talk to Fane and Selena.” Fiona’s face fell. “All right then... Jeez. We’re already family. Why can’t she just tell me? It’s not like I’m an outsider.”

Chapter 893

Joan could not be bothered with her. She took Selena and Fane to the center of the garden of their villa. Fane began the conversation before his mother could, “Mom, did that old man and that woman come looking for you? Did they tell you to say something to me?” She smiled. “You’re right. You guessed it before I even said anything.” “What old man? What woman?” Selena was perplexed, clueless as to what they were talking about. Joan turned toward Selena and said, “Selena, there’s something that we’ve never told you before. Fane’s father isn’t dead yet… He’s still alive. His name is Nash Woods.” “What?!” Selena inhaled sharply, utterly shocked to the core, and it took her a long while to recover. “So now he’s back looking for Fane?” blurted Selena. “Both of you knew long ago that he was still alive?” Joan nodded her head. “How do we put this...? There are plenty of powerful associations in this world, like the Ten Noble Families of Gin City. They’re considered plenty strong, right?” Joan paused a good while to let that sink before she continued, “Yet there are even more terrifying forces in this world—far stronger than the Ten Noble Families of Gin City. They’re the underground family clans. They usually don’t bother with us, since they live so far removed from us. Not many even know about their existence.” “No way... The Ten Noble Families of Gin City are already so strong, and you’re telling me that there are families even stronger than them?” Selena gulped. “Are you saying that Fane’s father is from one of those underground

families?" she asked cautiously. Joan's lips curled into a mirthless smile. "That's right. I didn't know this before either. He was young back then, and he just mingled with regular people for fun. We fell in love at first sight, being so attracted to each other. I thought that we'd live the rest of our lives in bliss, but I found out that he had a very high position down the line, and—he didn't tell me then—he had wives!" Selena nodded. She stared at Joan as she attentively listened and waited for her to complete her story. Joan resumed, "He wanted to make me his third wife, since he already had two others. I didn't protest because I loved him, and I agreed to the arrangement. After all, it wasn't easy to find someone I truly loved…" As Joan spoke, her eyes wandered into the distance as though she swam in her memories. There was a faint smile as she spoke of Nash. Fane noticed everything. He still hated Nash for how he offered no help and no sympathy at that time, but he knew that his mother still had not forgotten him. She still cherished him in her heart. Should Fane choose to not return, his mother would never again get the chance to meet him again. At that moment, a tangle of emotions knotted his chest. He wondered if he was too selfish, that he did not have the capacity to think of his mother. "But why aren't you two together then?" asked Selena, and there was a frown on her face. "That's because the Woods family wasn't that strong back then, but they wanted to become a true underground family, to be a first-class clan. He needed help from his first wife, who was from the Lagorio family." Joan flashed a bitter smile. "Lily Lagorio protested against our marriage...and Nash gave in to his parents' and Lily's demands."

Chapter 894

"Really? I don't know what to say about Nash Woods... Sure, he sacrificed a lot for his family, but he's not a responsible father!" Selena heaved a sigh after she heard that. "Mother, did Nash at least give you money when he told you to leave?" she asked Joan. "Did he know that you were carrying Fane?" Joan's lips curved into a wry smile. "He never dared to tell Lily

when Fane was born, but he did arrange a house for us. He'd come and visit us from time to time and give us some money, but when Fane was about five or six years old, he finally mustered up the courage to tell Lily everything… And she was absolutely livid. She, along with members of the Lagorio and Woods families, came and chased us away. She told us to get away as far as we could." Fane's expression hardened. "But after so many years, he managed to accumulate great power for himself," explained Joan. "He didn't know where we went after we left, but I believe he could've found us very quickly if he wanted to. Sadly, he didn't." A cold, bitter smile appeared on Fane's face. "I went to the Woods family residence five years ago, when my mother needed one million for her surgery, but I got nothing even after kneeling before them for an entire night. Instead, a butler came out and told me that Nash Woods wanted me gone. They shamed me so badly. From that moment on, I told myself that I didn't have a father anymore." Joan took it all in. "I hated your father for a time too, Fane," she said earnestly, "but I cleared up some matters with the old man yesterday. Your father isn't as heartless as you think he is." Fane was stunned for a moment before he asked, "What do you mean? Are you saying that he tried to look for us?" "He didn't, but that old man is the butler, and he said that your father always got his subordinate to give us one million bucks every year. We, on the other hand, knew nothing about it." Joan gave a bitter smile. "Besides, your father didn't know anything that had happened that night," she continued. "He didn't mean it. I guess that Lily knew about it, so she told everyone to keep it a secret. I suspect that she's the reason why we didn't receive any money." "What a dangerous woman!" Only then did Fane realize that it was all a series of grave misunderstandings. "If he got someone to give you money every year, it seems like your father still loves and cares for you. He probably was helpless among his own family." Selena's expression crumpled as she was overwhelmed with emotions. She never imagined that Fane's father was still alive, that they had such a long history behind them. "So you're telling me that the fat woman who came

out when I knelt before that entrance wasn't a butler for the Woods' family?" Fane went silent, unable to comprehend the situation, as he pondered. "But that old man told me to go back that day," he said, "something about monitoring the overall situation. I don't even know what he's talking about." "This is what happened: The Lagorio family got into a fight with someone from another family, and many of their men were either killed or injured. Their power weakened. Instead, the Woods family has grown stronger," Joan explained. "Your father took charge in order to seize power for himself. "Your grandparents are both dead, and your father is gravely ill. The butler said that he wouldn't last three months, and he hoped that you'd go back to see him. He even wishes for you to inherit the Woods family's business."

Chapter 895

"Me? Taking over their business? Not happening. The Woods family won't agree to it. Lily has a son with him, and that woman won't let this happen even if it kills her." Fane was dumbfounded once more. "Besides, what illness could Nash possibly have? Can't they just treat him, considering the Woods family's circumstances now?" "I don't know what illness it is, but all the butler told me was that your father would only last another three months. "As for the Woods family, the elders and quite a few of their family members all want you to go back. Lily and Nash's son went into an uncharted forest along with the sons of other great families, but they never came back out. The Woods family even searched for them extensively but never found them. They've probably been eaten by wild creatures." Joan gave a bitter smile. "You're the only son Nash has now," she said to Fane. "Of course he, along with members from the Woods family, would want you back to take charge. Of course, Lily and the Lagorio family will probably make it hard for you, so you'll have to steel yourself should you choose to go back." Fane went silent. The seconds ticked past before he finally raised his head to look at his mother. "Mom, do you want me to go?"

he asked, tone serious. She released a long sigh. “I’ll respect whatever decision you make, Fane,” conceded Joan. “After all, Nash never took care of you all these years, and you two don’t have a strong father-son bond. Moreover, we don’t owe the Woods family anything.” Yet, Joan then shifted in her stance as she continued, “But as your mother, I hope that you can go and see him. I don’t care if you become the family head—it’s not that great of a job anyway. You might attract plenty of unwanted trouble. Still, he’s your father, and he’s dying. I want you to go back and see him.” Selena thought about the matter as well. “We’ve provoked a great family from Gin City now,” reminded Selena. “If Fane goes back, it doesn’t even matter if he doesn’t become the family head—so long as everyone knows that he belongs to that family. The Lambert family probably won’t do anything to us once they know this. They might just leave everything behind.” Joan nodded at Selena’s speculation. “That’s right. I never thought of that, but now that you mention it, it makes sense! “Oh, yes, that butler and the young woman will leave in five or six days. They asked me to tell you that you can return with them if you want to. Of course, Nash still has three more months, so you have time to think about it. You can go later.” “Let’s talk about it later then. I…I’m confused now. Let’s settle Ivan’s body first and sell whatever we can in this villa. We’ll discuss the whole Woods family issue later.” Fane sighed and took out a cigarette. He took a long drag out of the cigarette between his fingers. He always thought his father was dead, but all of a sudden, the old man came and looked for him after so long. There was an indescribable knot of emotions that tightened at his chest. All of a sudden, Lana appeared and walked toward them. “Fane, you’re here!” yelled Lana from afar when she spotted him. “I want to talk to you about something!” Fane met her half-way and noted the rather excited expression she had on her. “What’s going on?” he asked. “It must be important if you came to see me yourself.” Lana scanned her surroundings and noted that there were not too many people around. “A dragon’s scale appeared!” she said, tone low. “It’s in Swallow City—not too far away from Gin City!”

Chapter 896

Fane got excited when he heard what Lana said. “Are you serious? A dragon scale?” he asked eagerly. “A real dragon scale?” “Of course! It took me a long while to track the rumors down, but I don’t know who has it now. What’s important is that it’s made its appearance!” Lana was evidently excited as well. “It’ll be fantastic if you can get this, Master. After all…” “Plenty of people will fight for something like that if it really appears out in public. It’s not very useful to the common person, but it’s a treasure, nonetheless. There’s value in keeping it!” Fane spoke, his emotions overwhelming him at that moment. “We don’t know who has it, but Fernando lives nearby. He’s already gone there to help you look for it and claim it! We were afraid that it’d be taken or moved if we didn’t do anything quickly,” commented the grinning Lana. “All right, get him to investigate first. We must get the dragon scale. We’ll go there soon after!” Fane nodded. “I’ve provoked the Lambert family from Gin City here. They’re not a huge force to be reckoned with, but they’re no small fries either. The Taylor family needs to settle their fixed assets in these two days first, and only then will we set out.” “Alright. I’ll follow along then!” chirped Lana, her smile still plastered on her face. “You? Follow us?” Fane was speechless. He did not know what to feel at that moment. Lana rolled her eyes at him. “Just let me stay by your side, Master. I’ll be so bored if I don’t come along. Once you and Selena leave this place, I have no reason to stay here anyway,” she spoke coyly. Fane nearly wanted to faint at how that Goddess of War was acting; she never behaved that way before. He could feel goosebumps on his skin. Only after a good while did Fane relented, “Alright. Come along if you want to then, but you better find an excuse. If not, it’ll be hard for the others to accept it if you come along!” “An excuse?” Lana frowned. “I’ll just come up with something,” she said, smiling. “I’ll just say that I’m tagging along like a vacation or something!” Her reasoning rendered Fane speechless, but he merely nodded his head since that reasoning was

acceptable. “Alright. I’ll call you when we leave.” “Okay. I’m off then!” Lana smiled and went over to say goodbye to Selena before leaving. Selena walked over after Lana left and gave Fane a faint smile. “What did she talk to you about? She even wanted to talk to you alone.” “It’s nothing. She said she wants to come along with us for a holiday after she found out that we’ll be leaving. She heard that we had run into some trouble here and asked if we needed any help,” Fane spoke in a casual tone, smiling. “Really? That’s great! Lana is a God of War, so we’ll be a lot safer if she comes along. The Lambert family is pretty strong, after all, and it’ll be troublesome if they find us.” Selena was delighted when she heard this. “Oh, right. Have you thought about where we’ll go?” she asked Fane.

Chapter 897

Fane went silent for a while as he thought it through before he replied to Selena, “Swallow City.” Selena instantly fretted at his reply, her brows furrowed with worry. “No, not happening. Swallow City? That’s not very far away from Gin City! I thought we should be getting away as far as possible. It’ll be dangerous if we go to Swallow City!” “I think the most dangerous place might be the safest for us. If we hide in plain sight, they might just miss us. Besides, there’s something I need to do in Swallow City.” Fane paused to let that sink before he added, “Plus, it’s close to the Woods family. It’ll be convenient if we choose to go back.” At that, Selena’s lips slowly curled upward into a smile. His reply moved her so. “Really? That’s great! I could tell that Mother still loves Nash Woods. Besides, you’re his son, and he’s dying. I hope that you can visit him. You’ll regret it if you don’t see him before he dies. As for the whole issue about becoming the house head, well… I don’t really mind whatever decision you make.” After all, she did not want Fane to live on with hatred festering in his heart. Furthermore, there were plenty of misunderstandings between him and his father—all caused by Lily Lagorio. “Oh, right,” Selena piped up. “Since you’re so skilled in medicine, why don’t you do a checkup on him? Maybe

you'll be able to cure him." Fane nodded at that. "Don't worry, I'm not heartless. I'll go visit the Woods family after a while… But don't tell Mom about my decision yet." "Okay. I understand." Selena nodded in acquiescence. Afternoon came, and the Taylor family chose a plot of ground to bury Ivan and Xena. … The next day, Joan went to see the Woods family butler again. He told them that she had persuaded Fane as best as he could, but Fane would make the final decision of whether or not he would visit the Woods family. Fane would not follow them back for the time being, at least. At the very least, both the butler and the young woman—Beth Woods—knew Fane would not visit for a few days. Afraid that Lily and the others would suspect them for being absent too long, the two quickly headed back. Unfortunately, they never noticed the people that spied from the shadows, and they found Fane. Later that night… Fane and Selena laid down on the bed, ready to sleep. The former scrunched his brows together and immediately sat upright. "What's wrong, Hubby?" Selena was startled at his abrupt movement and stared at him, confused. "Someone's coming." Fane's expression darkened and, in a blink of an eye, flickered into the shadows before leaping out of the window. There were seven or eight men clothed in black who had just jumped over the fence, prepared to assassinate Fane and the others. They never expected Fane to rush out and appear before them. The black-clothed men stopped in their tracks. One of the older ones frowned. "Never thought that your senses would be so acute," he said, surprised. "You realized our presence as soon as we entered." "No way about it. I wouldn't be able to protect my family if I didn't know anything." Fane gave a frosty smile. At that moment, Orchid and the others who were on patrol noticed the exchange and immediately ran over. "Who are you? How dare you break into the Taylor family's residence?!"

Chapter 898

"What's your name again? Fane Woods, right? Your acute senses and keenness are rather impressive, you'll still breathe your last tonight!" The

old man chuckled and narrowed his eyes. Fists balled tightly, he ran full speed ahead and flickered right in front of Fane at the next second. “Oh, you’re fast!” It surprised Fane—though only by a bit—when he noted that this old man’s combat prowess was equal with the four from the Lambert family who came this morning. There were not many elite fighters like this old man in this Middle Province, hence Fane immediately understood that these people were most likely sent by Lily Lagorio. After all, four from the Lambert family had just died this morning, and the Lamberts should not have known about the matter. These men were not sent by the Lamberts. There was only one explanation for this: Lily—the vicious and sinister woman—had somehow found out that the butler of the Woods family and Beth had visited Fane and had her men tail them. Moreover, he reckoned that the men before him knew where he was, though they might have feared that Beth and the butler would discover them. They were afraid that Beth and the butler would intervene when they tried to kill Fane. Thus, these men waited in the shadows as they waited for the right moment to strike—once Beth and the butler left. They planned to end him tonight, once and for all. Fane instantly grasped the situation in his mind. With his fist clenched tightly, he swung his arm and slammed his fist against the old man’s. A slight and dull whine escaped the old man’s mouth as he was sent seven or-so steps backward due to the force. Only then could he regain his footing and stood his ground once more. Shock and surprise washed over the old man’s face. He was the strongest among the men with him, and he thought that his punch would have sent Fane to hell easily. Unexpectedly, Fane’s combat skill was a lot stronger than his. “How is that possible?!” A woman from the group was astonished at the scene before her. “This brat wasn’t raised in the Woods family. He grew up here, in this commoner’s world! He didn’t receive any training from the Woods! How can he possess such power?” The old man’s face sank and clenched his fist. “Kiddo, I underestimated you before this, and that’s why I didn’t unleash my full strength in my punch. Don’t you think that I’m weaker than you! Well, it

looks like I have to use my full strength today for you.” Fane, on the other hand, gave a wan smile. “If I’m right, you’re sent by the Madam of the Woods family, Lily Lagorio. The butler has just left, and you couldn’t even wait for the next day. I don’t think you would dare do anything had they stayed here, yes?” “Heh! You don’t have to know who sent us and where we came from, kid. You only need to know that today is your last day on the earth!” The old man laughed sinisterly. He crouched slightly and, with a powerful stomp, leaped to the sky before plummeting toward Fane with his fist clenched. Fane could clearly feel the immense power in the old man’s body, a far cry from his initial strength moments ago. The old man had put in every ounce of his strength in this attack. Fwoosh! Just when the old man was about to land on Fane, Fane moved instantly. In the blink of an eye, he leaped mid-air, raised his knee, and slammed onto the old man’s chin. Slam! A dull and painful cry echoed through the air as the old man’s head was knocked backward by the powerful force, sending him flying in the air. The old man spurted a mouthful of blood mid-air as his face turned pallid. The old man then fell to the ground as blood was expelled from his mouth once more. Shock, surprise, and disbelief were plastered all over his face for a long time. “What? No! It can’t be!” The remaining men reeled back in shock at the scene before them. Never did it occur to them that Fane could survive from the old man’s full strength, what more overpowering him. Fane’s speed and combat skill far exceeded their expectations. His speed could be compared to the speed of Patronum—the top-listed fighter in the Woods family. “What are you waiting for? Don’t forget our purpose today! Kill him!”

Chapter 899

The old man gritted his teeth, enduring his pain, and forced himself to get up. He then called the others to charge at Fane. “Grahh!” The group drew out their fine swords, one by one, and rushed toward Fane. “Since you guys want to dance with death so badly, I’ll grant your wish!” Fane flipped his

palm, and the black-metal sword appeared in his hand. Fwoosh! Fane flicked his wrist as slashes from the sword formed terrifying pressurized wind blades that flew toward the group. Just like that, the men fell to the floor, lifeless. “You… You know how to cast pressurized wind blades!” The old man was startled. He thought that Fane would be slain by this night, what with the large number of people with him, but all was in vain. “Spill it! Did Lily send you here?” Fane held the sword in his hand and stalked toward the old man. His eyes were dull and emotionless, his voice flat and merciless—it sent chills down others’ spine. The man before him looked all too ordinary, thought the old man. Who would have thought that the blades of wind were conjured by him? “I’ll fight you to death!” Not wanting to divulge in the truth, the old man raced toward Fane with a sword in his hand, wanting to cut his head clean from his shoulders. The old man’s ambition was cut short as a gash appeared on his neck in the next second. The old man fell straight onto the ground. “W—What… What’s going on?!” Andrew and Fiona, who had heard the noises caused by the fighting, ran out from the house. By the time they got out from the house, they were greeted with a floor of corpses that littered the ground. The scene paralyzed them both. Fane did not know where to start the story nor how to explain the situation to the two. After all, he did not intend to tell Fiona and the others about the matter concerning the Woods family. After putting some thoughts onto the matter, he kept away the sword in his hand and opened his mouth, “I’m not too sure. Seems like someone hired these assassins. After all, many people out there want our heads. I think it’s better for us to leave Middle Province quickly.” Though Fane said those himself, he knew those assassins were not from Middle Province. After all, he had killed the people in Middle Province who wanted him dead. That effectively eliminated everyone who had Fane on their hit-list. He would not have to leave Middle Province had he not caused trouble for the Lamberts. He did not want to create more trouble, and that was why he decided to leave. “Yeah, you’re right. You’ve even offended the Clarks, the Wilsons, and the Hugos! Not only that, but

the Drake family is in the list too. Sigh! You're right. We'd better leave soon, it's too dangerous here!" After listening to Fane's analysis, Fiona was so frightened that she pestered them to get out of Middle Province. Andrew, on the other hand, asked in fear, "Fane… It can't be that what's-his-name's family—Lambat, Lambert—looking for us, right?" "Father-in-law, don't worry. The Lambert family may not know that those four are dead, and even if they do, they won't know that they died in Middle Province. I assure you, these assassins aren't from the Lamberts," assured Fane, a small smile on his face to calm Andrew. All of a sudden… "Hahaha! Want to leave Middle Province? I'll have to stop you there!" A gruff voice was heard from the main gate of Fane's residence.

Chapter 900

Dozens of people stood outside the residence's main gate, each of them robust, tall, and Herculean. They looked powerful. The two security guards who watched the gate immediately scurried into the residence area and stood behind Fane, their bodies trembling in fright. Fane saw the men that gathered outside his gate, thus he immediately ordered, "Orchid, take Selena, my mom, and the others into the villa. Hide in there. Leave this matter to me." "Yes, Master!" Orchid nodded and yelled out loudly, "Everyone, go into the villa with me, now! No one is allowed to come out until Master says so!" "Fane, be careful. They're all from America, and I've no idea when and how we offended them!" Selena's forehead creased as she spoke to Fane, and only then she followed the rest back into the villa reluctantly. "Heh! You're someone who values family and friends, huh punk? But to what extent do you think you're able to protect them?" A big bald man—who looked like he was from America—rubbed his bald head and laughed. "Once we end you, we'll send your family and friends to meet you on the other side!" "The war is over, and I really can't fathom why you're here. You actually dare to come here and create trouble. Don't forget, your country lost to ours! We're the victorious ones." Fane let out a frosty

cold smile; it would be riveting to end the lives of these foreigners. “Haha! You’re right, the war is over, but a small group battle won’t do any harm, right? It’s normal!” The bald man laughed out loud and said, “Besides, we’re not representing America. We’re here for our own people, to kill you. Serves you right for interfering with our business and cutting our financial source!” “I interfered with your business and cut your source?” Fane was a little puzzled at the accusation, wondering how he had offended these people. Was it because the last time he was at the bar—the time he met up with Selena’s college classmate—entered the ring, and killed the American fighter? Did these people actually come here merely for that silly reason? That seemed way too off for Fane; the matter had long passed after all. Moreover, not many people knew about that and none could inform the other side. If the dead person were one of those powerful authorities, they would have come to seek revenge a long time ago. They would not have waited so long to exact vengeance. “Kiddo, don’t spend your brain cells guessing anymore. Have you forgotten about the Watsons? You ruined the trade between the Watsons and Green Sky Hall. Do you understand now? That’s why I said you have a death wish!” The bald face, his face full of flesh and meat, looked at the corpses on the ground and laughed. “Haha! Seems like you’re still causing trouble everywhere, huh, kiddo? You’ve offended a lot of powerful families in the Middle Province, and now you want to leave? Tsk, tsk! We came at the right time, didn’t we? We could’ve lost you had we come later or got our investigation delayed!” “That’s right! If we let this punk escape to another city, we won’t be able to find him so easily. Plus, we don’t have that leisure time to find him!” A blonde woman—with an alluring, seductive figure on her—laughed as she rubbed her fists. “So, this is the will of God, that God wants this punk to die. Nothing else to do about it, since it’s God’s will.” Another man from the group chimed in with a bland tone. After pondering for a moment, Fane decided that he wanted to get some information out of the other party’s mouth. “Hmm... Since you all think that today will be my last day, can you

let me die with understanding? For example: Tell me which powerhouses of America do you guys belong to? How strong is it, and how many people are in it? After all, I'm an incredibly curious person." "Haha! Let me tell you then, kiddo. The powerhouse behind us is unbelievably strong, powerful, and with high authority. Anyway, it's a power that you can't afford to offend at all." The bald man chortled and then continued, "Let me put it in this way: It's a power that can easily take away your life!" "Heh! In the end, your words are useless. You better don't say it!"

Chapter 901

Fane chuckled. He felt a little speechless. It seemed that these people knew how to keep a secret. “Enough with the talking. Kill him!” The head honcho with the bald head waved his hand. A mass of people surged toward Fane. “Trying to bully me with sheer numbers, eh?” Fane narrowed his eyes. He cracked his knuckles, but he did not reveal a lick of fear. Instead, he rushed forward. “Striking Eagle Fist!” One of the men used one of his skills when he came before Fane. He launched punches after punches, the air seeming to rip apart before him. One could even hear the clear whoosh that shot through the atmosphere. Bang! Fane could not be bothered with his attacks. He swiped a fist at the other man, spun on his heel, and went straight for another person. The man who used the Striking Eagle Fist was probably as strong as an army major. He was already considered an exceptional fighter. Unfortunately, Fane merely saw him as a child, trying to emulate the grandmasters—and his fist technique was really no technique at all. The man flew to the side from Fane’s blow. His arm shattered. “Ah!” The man released a pained cry. His face immediately paled. Bang! Bang! Bang! Fane struck a few more fists straight into the center of a few people’s chests. Their sternums shattered, and they all spat mouthfuls of blood. Each of them was sent flying, and by the time they landed on the ground, none of them were breathing. They were all dead. At that moment, Fane seemed to have melded into the shadows under the dim lighting, slaughtering the Americans in a spray of blood and gut-wrenching cries. The people hiding in the house, especially Fiona, Joan, and the others, had never seen something like this before. Now though, as they bore witness to the scene, shock seeped into their marrows. Their breathing hitched. In a short while, Fane killed every single one of those dozens of men at the speed of light. “You’re so strong, Fane. Why do I feel like you’re fighting way better than you did in the morning?” Fiona was no expert at martial arts. Yet she still felt the rush of his speed, the confidence in every move he made, the deadly aura he

emanated. Fane flashed an awkward smile. “Oh, Mother. Don’t you know that it’s always best to reserve some of your strength when fighting, no matter where and when? We always need to keep a trump card for ourselves!” “Oh. So that’s it!” Fiona bobbed her head as if she understood. She scanned across all the corpses. “What do we do with them? It’ll be difficult for us to clear this mess at night. But it’s bad luck for us if we don’t clear them. We’ll probably be working through the night!” Fane thought about the issue for a while. “It’ll be difficult for us to sell this villa in such a short time. It’s not like we’ll be worse off without the money though. Okay, how about this, I’ll get Master George to send some of his bodyguards over to get rid of the bodies. Then I’ll give the villa to them.”

Chapter 902

You’re going to give away such an expensive villa? It’s such a pity!” Fiona’s expression darkened the moment she thought about giving away such a nice villa. “We already have plenty of money, Mom. Now, the Taylor family would be able to do pretty well in Swallow City or even Gin City, even if we are not one of the strongest families there. It’ll take a long time to sell this villa. So it’s best that we just give it away. And we can also move out early!” Selena tried to convince her, smiling. “All right. Why did Ivan have to refuse to go to war? Why did he have to offend the Lambert family in the first place? Ah. We’ll just chalk it up to bad luck!” Fiona heaved a long sigh and entered her room. Fane called Master George. Master George had just finished his meal and was taking a walk in the garden. His heart leaped in delight when he realized that it was Fane who called. “Anything going on, Fane?” he asked. Fane smiled. “Master George, I don’t have many servants at my place,” he spoke into the line. “I’ve just killed dozens of men in my garden. Can you send some people over to help clear the bodies?” Master George was rendered speechless when he heard this. He nearly wanted to spit blood. He knew about Fane’s strength because of the latter’s relationship with the Nine Great Gods of War. Even a first-class aristocratic

family like his could not afford to provoke him. It was also because of Fane's brilliance that he had hoped that his daughter, Sharon, would marry him, even if she was relegated to the position of a second wife. However, he never thought that Fane would have not the slightest bit of interest in his beautiful, stunning daughter. He did not even give her a chance and she was left completely heartbroken. Yet now that this punk had gone and killed dozens of men, he was asking them for help to clear the bodies? He was practically bullying them now. Still, Master George reminded himself of how terrifying Fane could be. He could do nothing but hold his frustration in. "No problem," he answered, grinning. "It's a small matter!" "All right. My family and I will be leaving Middle Province tomorrow or the day after, and we won't be coming back. So we'll give the villa to you!" Fane's coming reply made Master George extremely excited. The villa was worth at least ten billion bucks, and Fane had successfully bid for it at the price of one billion. "Are you serious? This–this is too…" Master George felt as though he was dreaming. Money was practically falling onto his lap. "Of course I'm serious. I'm a man of my word." Fane smiled and hung up the phone. "Men, men!" Winston George called out as he walked. Soon enough, 70 to 80 bodyguards appeared before him.

Chapter 903

"You called for us, Master?" The assistant commander of the bodyguards quickly asked Winston. It was already late at night, and everyone was preparing to go to sleep. They could not comprehend why their master was calling for them and was curious as to what was going on. "There are dozens of bodies in Fane Woods' garden. Go over, help clear it out and find somewhere to burn the bodies!" Winston said, smiling. "No way. Master, the George family is a first-class aristocratic family too. How can we be used just like that? And for such a degrading task too…" The assistant commander did not know what else to say. "What do you know? Fane and his family will be leaving Middle Province soon. I heard that they had killed

some people from Gin City in the afternoon. They probably offended some influential family, and so are forced to leave. His villa could not have been easy to sell off, so he's going to give it to us! "Go on then! After you finish your work, see me for your bonus tomorrow," Winston said, chuckling. "I'll give each of you 10,000 bucks!" "You have our thanks, Master!" The bodyguards were suddenly elated. Each of them rushed off to help Fane and the others to get rid of the bodies. The next day, the Taylor family realized whatever assets they could. At night, Old Man Taylor and the others invited Fane and his family as well as Cecilia and the Gold family over for dinner. After they ate, Old Man Taylor directly addressed Selena. "Selena, Cecilia is now married into another family, and Ivan is dead. I'm growing old, and I cannot oversee the Taylor family matters for very long now. And you know that Theodore is no good at business. Our cash now is far less than what the assets are worth. I think you'll be able to make the right decision on what we should do with it from now!" After he said that, he thrust a credit card toward Selena. "Each of us has about ten billion bucks left for us to spend when we need it. The money in this credit card belongs to the Taylor family. I'm entrusting it to you now. It's up to you to decide if we're going to venture into business again, or if we should keep a low profile and live simple lives!" "You're stressing me out, Grandfather!" Selena had not been mentally prepared for this at all. After all, she had never thought about taking over the Taylor family. Under their current circumstances now though, it seemed that only she was capable of leading the Taylor family. "What are you talking about?" Fiona was excited when she heard Old Man Taylor deciding to entrust the Taylor family business to Selena. She immediately rolled her eyes at her daughter. "You have the best head for business out of anyone here. If not you, then who? Besides, your grandfather said it himself—you can use the money to invest in businesses, or you can just keep it if you don't want to. The Taylor family will be able to survive for quite a few generations so long as we don't simply spend it, right? We're just putting you in charge of our finances!" Selena did not know whether to

laugh or cry. She could only bob her head and accept the card. “All right. Since Grandfather has declared his belief in me, I will seize this opportunity to make the Taylor family great again!” Yet Old Man Taylor, who had always been ambitious, always finding ways to make the family stronger, felt lukewarm toward his decision. He gave a wan smile. “Ah, it doesn’t matter if we’re strong or not,” he said. “We’ll be fine as long as we have enough money to spend. I just hope that we can all lead peaceful lives!” Here, Old Man Taylor divulged his worries once more. “After all, we don’t know how strong the Lambert family is. Even if we aren’t strong enough to face them, it won’t be easy for them to find us if we go into hiding and keep a low profile. That won’t be a problem at all! But if the Taylor family rebuilds its business empire and becomes famous enough, it would be pretty easy for the Lambert family to find us if they wanted to.” Only then did Selena understand her grandfather’s intentions. It was not that he did not want the Taylor family to grow into a powerful conglomerate—he was afraid that the Lambert family would easily find them if they had a strong presence. If word got out, the Lambert family would probably send their people to destroy the Taylor family.

Chapter 904

“Grandfather is right. Life will be meaningless with that much money anyway. We’ll lead very comfortable lives just by spending a few hundred thousand bucks per year!” A member of the Taylor family offered a reassuring smile. “The money is enough to sustain us for a very long time,” he said. “No need to become a powerful conglomerate. It’ll be terrible if we reveal ourselves!” Selena considered the opinions, then she nodded her head. “Whatever comes later comes later, I suppose. For now, we can only open small companies and do small businesses. It would be safer since it’ll be harder to find us that way. And we’ll have a steady stream of income. We can’t just keep digging into our savings!” Old Man Taylor bobbed his head in satisfaction. “You’re right. It’s plausible for us to do small

businesses. It'll be fine so long as it doesn't grow out of control. We can do it!" After he said that, he looked at Fane. "Right. You're the strongest fighter we have here, Fane. And the ten female bodyguards of yours are pretty strong too. The rest that we have aren't that reliable. So where should we go now? I hope you can make the decision. We'll listen to you!" Fane was a little moved when he heard this. If Old Man Taylor said that they were going to listen to him, it meant that the family was entrusting all the lives of the Taylor family to him. Fane thought about it. "Since you've given me the authority, Grandfather, I say that we move out tomorrow," he said. "We'll drive off at night. It'll be harder for people to track us this way. I don't plan to tell you where we're heading now. My car will be leading in the front, and all of you just follow along. I'll tell you where we're going after we've arrived at another city!" Old Man Taylor creased his brows slightly after taking it in, then he slowly nodded his head. At that moment, he was not questioning Fane's decision to keep the destination a secret—and he was also appraising the young man's discreteness in his mind. After all, the Gold family was here for dinner as well, and there were plenty of people around them. What if the Lambert family tracked down their movements through these people? They would be in deep trouble then. He doubted that the Gold family could keep their lips completely sealed if the Lambert family came knocking on their door. After all, they immediately revealed their relationship with the Taylor family the other day, when the four people came to them. It seemed that this would be the last time they were going to have a friendly meal with the Gold family—and with Cecilia. At this moment, Fane added, "Give the workers here some money tomorrow—the guards, the bodyguards—and dismiss them. The female bodyguards working for me told me that they would follow, and they're strong enough fighters. It won't be good if we bring too many people along. It'll attract attention." Fane paused here before continuing, "Of course, if any one of the Taylor family members does not wish to follow us, and wants to find their own place to hide and live their own lives, that's fine by me. But you can only take 50

million bucks tomorrow when you leave. I believe that it'll be enough if you're thrifty. It all depends on you!" At Fane's words, Old Man Taylor scanned the faces of his family members. When he studied them, he could not help but furrow his brows. He noticed that plenty of people were seriously considering the proposition; it was evident that they were moved. Old Man Taylor heaved an internal sigh. He had thought that everyone would be united enough to go together. He never thought that so many people would be so fearful of dying. The chances of being tracked down shrunk exponentially if they left alone or with their small family, settling down in a rural area. It would be difficult to find them, and they would get 50 million bucks. Add the ten billion from before and they would have plenty of money. They would lead comfortable lives, at least. Obviously, they could not afford to be too showy.

Chapter 905

"Think about it tonight. If you want to leave on your own, come see me tomorrow morning. I'll transfer the money to your accounts. But you won't get 50 million bucks per person. It's 50 million per family. For instance, if Uncle Roger leaves, he'll definitely bring his family along. Then you get 50 million as a whole!" Fane said, smiling. Everyone dissipated after they finished their meal. On the way back, Cecilia did not seem too happy. "What on earth is Fane doing? He can't even tell us where he's going? Does he think we're outsiders?" Cecilia could not help but mumble. The more she thought about it, the more frustrated she became. "And Grandfather even gave the Taylor family's money to Selena. Seriously? Doesn't he trust us to manage part of it?" "Heh. You're already married to another family. It'll be strange if he gave it to you. Besides, you married a young master from a second-class aristocratic family. They won't be worried about you!" Kelly chuckled. "Ah, they refused to tell us their destination just to ostracize us—they're pretending that we're outsiders! But it's better this way. We don't want to associate with them any longer now that they've offended a

powerful family. It'll be best if we don't communicate with them at all!" The next morning, the members of the Taylor family—especially the ones who were not very close to the family—indeed brought their entire family to meet Fane and claimed their 50 million bucks before setting off. Although this made Old Man Taylor very disappointed inside, he was well aware that it was a wise choice on Fane's part. After all, they would have a larger target on their backs if they traveled in such a big group. It would be more difficult for the Lambert family to track them down if everyone were scattered around. This would ensure their safety. Besides, Fane was the one who had killed those four people. The Lambert family would probably give up finding the other members of the Taylor family if they were difficult to trace. That was why Fane, Fiona, Selena, and their family would be the first target of elimination for the Lambert family. Fane and the others needed to draw attention so that the other Taylor family members would have an easier life, and they would not be dragged into the same pit. Essentially, it was a good thing. In the end, there were only about 20 Taylor family members who chose to stay behind. If Fane and the others were included, there were 30 or 40 of them. In the afternoon, the bodyguards from the Taylor family were all dismissed. Aside from Orchid and the others, who had insisted on following Fane and the rest, the other bodyguards and servants all left. At night, about a dozen cars slowly drove out of Middle Province, heading for the north. They drove the entire night, finally stopping at another city to rest. Here, Fane told Old Man Taylor, Theodore, and everyone else that their destination was Swallow City.

Chapter 906

"Swallow City?" Theodore was shocked when he found out about the destination. Never in his wildest dreams would he imagine that Fane would actually decide to head straight for the north—toward the direction of Gin City. Swallow City was practically right next to Gin City! The Lambert family was a prominent family in Gin City. They would be serving

themselves on a silver platter if they went ahead. “Seriously? Wouldn’t it be better if we get away as far as we can, Fane? It’s way too dangerous to go to Swallow City.” Fiona was shocked as well. She quickly asked him. She did not expect Fane to flash a mirthless smile in response. “I have business to do in Swallow City. Besides, I think that the Lambert family will start their investigation in Middle Province, assuming that they want to track us down. And what will they do once they find out that we’ve left? They’ll definitely search for us in neighboring areas—perhaps even in cities in the south. They would think that we would run as far as possible from Gin City!” Realization dawned upon Theodore. “I get it. They’ll be less vigilant if we hide under plain sight—they won’t search those areas. It’ll be far easier for them to find us if we head south of Middle Province, right?” “That was my train of thought. It’ll be safe for a period of time in Swallow City, at least! We’ll be fine so long as we don’t create a ruckus and be careful! Besides, we don’t have many people with us now. There’s a smaller chance of us being suspected.” Fane spoke with finality in his tone. “All right. We’ll head for Swallow City. Let’s eat and have a good rest tonight. We’ll continue our journey in the afternoon!” Old Man Taylor considered the idea, and he thought that Fane’s words made sense. He released an internal sigh of relief. “Oh, right. Our cars have number plates from the Middle Province. So when we’re nearing Swallow City, we’ll burn our cars in a secluded area. We’ll buy new cars when we’re in the city itself, and our cars will have number plates from there. We’ll be even safer then!” Fane went silent for a moment before speaking, “I’m not afraid of the Lambert family, but they’re probably pretty strong. It’ll be best if we don’t provoke them unnecessarily. Besides, we have quite a number of people here. It’ll be difficult for me to protect all of you on my own.” At this moment, a car drove toward them and parked right before Fane and the others. Lana and Skyler exited the vehicle. “You–you brought Skyler too?” Once Fane saw that Skyler was coming along, he suddenly did not know whether to laugh or cry. “Master Lana, Sir Skyler, why are you two here?” Theodore and the others cried out,

utterly stupefied. They had not stopped for very long, but the Goddess of War and King of War had quickly arrived. They must have been tailing behind them long ago. “Heh, I already told Fane that I would be tagging along for a spin. This is my holiday for me to relax. Besides, it’ll be so boring if I were to be left alone in Middle Province!” Lana chuckled. Then she cast a glance over her shoulder. “Oh, right. There are others who’ll be following along too,” she said. “They told me that they want to be your bodyguards!” “Seriously? Who?” Theodore exclaimed in surprise. He was in awe. He would feel ten times safer if Lana and the others were coming along. True enough, a few other cars quickly came along and parked nearby. “No way about it. I’m bound to follow Fane wherever he goes for my entire life, and Elaine wants to follow too—and she’s my disciple. I don’t feel comfortable about leaving her alone, so I decided to follow. And some of my older disciples all wanted to come along with me, so here they are!” Skyler chuckled. “I’ll be the commander of your bodyguards from now on, and my disciples will make up the troops. How about that? You won’t chase us away, will you?” “Oh my. Sir Skyler, you’re not joking, are you? You’re such a respected person. How could we accept you to be the leader of our bodyguards!”

Chapter 907

Old Master Taylor was overwhelmed with emotions. Every member of the Taylor family was afraid of being dragged into the mud and fear of being killed. All of them left the Middle Province without informing. Instead, the elders, Skyler, and the others were the ones willing to protect and leave with them. They were willing to go to hell with them. “Old Master Taylor is right! Sir Skyler, your status and identity and those of your disciples are high and honorable. Each and every one of them is nothing but powerful and strong. Two or three of them are even comparable to the King of War. Such strong people, we’re afraid that we can’t afford to hire all of you.” Fane was bursting with gratitude in his heart. These people before Fane, who knew

that he was now in trouble, did not run away like the other Taylor members, instead, they were willing to follow him to hell and protect him and his family. Only such people could be deemed as loyal and upright. “We don’t ask for much. A couple of million a month will be enough. It’s affordable, right?” Skyler’s face was solemn and dull at the same time. He wanted to tell them that they did not have to pay to hire him. But if he really said so, he was afraid that Fiona, Andrew, and the others would suspect Fane’s identity. Thus, he simply called out an amount to cover it up. “A…a couple of million? It’s absolutely fine! This is great! Sir Skyler, thank you for serving us!” A wide grin immediately appeared on Fiona’s face. Getting a King of War to work for the Taylors for such a price was totally worth it! A few vertical lines formed between Fane’s brows. He opened his mouth after much thoughts. “It’s fine. But you and Lana are no commoners. You are not any common bodyguard or fighter, you’re an eight-star King of War and Lana is a Goddess of War! Hence, there’s a high chance for others to recognize both of you even if it’s in Swallow City. And everyone knows you are from the Middle Province, so I’m afraid that Lana and your presence will cause suspicion!” “You’re right! What should we do though? Both of us will wear masks from now on!” Skyler blurted after giving the matter some thoughts. He felt that every word that was from Fane’s mouth was nothing but logical and reasonable. “It’s not a bad idea, but it’s too aggravating for both of you!” Fane frowned, though he thought this idea seemed to be a good solution for now. “Heh! What’s so difficult about this, let’s do it!” Lana, on the other hand, said nonchalantly, “I’ll go and pick some better-looking mask. That kind of mask that reveals half of my pretty face. Must be stunning!” “Cough, cough! The pursuit of beauty is really in a girl’s nature, huh? You thought you’re participating in a beauty mask contest? It’s only a mask!” Fane let out two awkward coughs and teased Lana. “Fane, what bullsh*t are you talking about? She is the Goddess of War, how can you talk in such a disrespectful manner!” Old Master Taylor was startled and immediately reprimanded Fane. In Old Master Taylor’s

heart, he believed that Skyler and Lana were only here because of fun. They treated this as a fun tour, and that was why they came along. Perhaps after a while, when they are bored, they would leave. Therefore, he did not think otherwise about Lana's utterance about masks. In contrast, Fane was being rude and disrespectful toward Lana. "Old Master Taylor, don't mind it. From now on, there is no Goddess of War but the Chief Captain of the bodyguards in the Taylor family. Hehe! Chief captain, a little higher and more glorious than Sir Skyler! Ha-ha!" Lana chuckled warm-heartedly, then she continued, "From now on, we're a family. As for, what, one or two million a month? Just forget about it. I'm not here for a part-time job, but to have fun with you guys!" "Nope! The pay will be food and accommodation!" Fane returned jokingly.

Chapter 908

"That's fine by me as well! As long as there are good food and a place for me to sleep, I'll be satisfied!" To everyone's surprise, Lana accepted Fane's suggestion and smiled joyfully. "Master Lana, you're the least demanding Goddess of War that I've ever seen!" Skyler, on the other hand, laughed out loud, looking very cheerful. "Right, about your cars, they're all with Middle Province's plate numbers. So, before we arrive at Swallow City, you guys have to sit in our cars and dispose of your cars outside the Swallow City. But, don't you worry, after we enter the city, I'll buy each of you a car. You can pick whatever car you want!" Fane gazed over Lana's and the others' cars, and smiled bitterly, and said, "Haha. Well. If I can get a new car, why not?" Skyler chortled loudly again at the side. Soon, the group arrived at the city center of the Middle Province. Skyler and Lana bought themselves masks, rested for a while, and then finally set off. Not to mention, the mask that Lana chose not only did not obscure her beauty but also intensified the beauty of her alluring body. With her face half-covered by the mask, she let out a mysterious aura, luring others to her realm of seduction unconsciously. "Master Lana, the mask looks really good on you! You're stunning yet

mysterious! Especially your exposed long legs, even I'm a little envious of you!" Selena, who was sitting in the same car with Lana, gazed over at Lana's outfit. She could not help but compliment Lana. Now that Lana was with them, it made Selena's heart breathe a huge sigh of relief. With Lana around them, even if those strong and powerful people from the Lambert family were to come to avenge, they might not be her opponents. Furthermore, Lana coupled with Fane, Skyler, and the others would be considered as a scary force to be reckoned with. Before that, she felt upset about how the other members of the Taylor family left, fearing to be involved. Now, it seemed that it was the right decision for them to leave, at least they would be safe too. Besides, it was a good thing for Selena, Fane, and the others as well—they could travel faster and safer with fewer people. Now, with the additional forces from Lana and Skyler, their overall combat power was naturally increased to the point that they could say they would not have to be afraid anymore. "Really? Aww!" After hearing Selena's compliment, Lana was flabbergasted with joy. "Actually I'm envious of you, Miss Selena. You're so gentle, beautiful, and with a noble temperament. These are the characteristics that I don't possess. They always say that I'm too boyish, too manly and domineering, and lack of gentleness. Sigh! I'm worried that I'll not get married!" "How can you not get married? Don't be a fool. You're the Goddess of War! Besides, you're really good-looking and attractive. I bet a lot of men out there would be head over heels for you when they see you!" Selena smiled and added, "But an excellent woman like you should pick your life partner carefully and this matter cannot be rushed!" "You're right. Oh ya! You guys shouldn't call me Master Lana or Goddess of War, especially when we get to Swallow City. If you continue calling me that, won't I wear this mask for nothing?" Lana reminded the group after thinking about it. "Is it okay for me to call you Lana?" Selena asked with a frown. "Don't worry, it's definitely more than okay. There're too many people in this world with the same name. Lana is just a popular common name. Besides, most of the people know that Lana

the Goddess of War is in the Middle Province, who knows that she'll come to Swallow City?" Lana smiled gently in return. "That makes sense!" Selena bobbed her head in agreement. Another day had passed. On a fine morning, the caravan finally arrived at a valley not far outside the Swallow City. "Push the cars to the open space over here and burn them!"

Chapter 909

Although these cars were branded and exorbitantly expensive, but now there was no other way, Fane could only give the order, helplessly. The group immediately pushed the cars to the open space and burned them. Then only did they head toward the Swallow City on foot. They could already see the incomparably tall and magnificent city walls of the Swallow City from afar. The city was surrounded by an archaic yet ancient atmosphere and a layer of faint mist. This city looked mysteriously ethereal. Although the Swallow City was a lot smaller than the Gin City, it was at least two or three times larger than the Middle Province. "The Swallow City. It's an ancient city, isn't it? There are many high authoritative powerhouses in it. And the main thing is this city is a wonderful place for people, families, or houses to improve and expand their power!" Staring attentively at the city before him, Skyler could not help but to express with a sigh. "Yes, this is indeed a wonderful place!" Lana, too, sighed with emotion. Fane looked at the group, then finally said, "We've now arrived at the Swallow City. Let's hurry up and buy a villa to live in as soon as possible. It's fortunate that it's morning now, we've time to purchase a villa. As for cars, we'll wait till tomorrow morning!" Old Master Taylor nodded in accordance. "I'm afraid that the villa here will be very costly. For the time being, we don't need to recruit any bodyguards, but I think we have to hire some helpers to help clean up the house. So, we'll have to prepare a few more suites for them." "Hmmm. Alright, let's do this. We'll purchase twenty units of terrace house and these should be enough. We don't have to buy a single huge villa. Perhaps, we can opt for terrace houses or townhouses. Also, when we buy more units,

we'll let the developer enclose them with walls. This should not be a big problem!" Fane uttered his thoughts to the group. At this time, Lana's phone rang. After she took a look at the number, she sauntered to the side and picked up the call. "Hey Bro, what's the situation?" "Bad. It's, it's a trap…" Fernando's weak and feeble voice came out from the phone and followed by a light thud. The phone call ended after the thud sound. Lana's finger pounded the last-call button on her phone to call back, but only then did she found out that the number was no longer available. Her face turned blank and gloomy in the next second. She immediately approached Fane and pull him to the side, then reported, "Master, it's not good. Brother Fernando seems to be in trouble!" "Has something happened? What's the situation?" When Fane heard of the news, he frowned and wondered if he had heard it wrongly. Fernando was one of the disciples whom he considered strong and powerful. His combat prowess could be placed at the top of the list, how could something bad happen to such a strong person? "I'm not too sure myself. He called just now and his breath is very feeble. He only told me that it was a trap and then the call disconnected. I tried to call back but I could not get through!" Lana's forehead ceased together. She was anxious beyond measure. "Dragon scale, it's a trap?" Fane's brows snapped together, and his face was full of worries. "Even if it's a trap, Fernando is not that weak that he can't defeat the other party, right?" "Sigh! I don't know, Master. Will Brother Fernando be alright?" The more Lana thought about it, the faster her heart pounded. Fernando's fighting power was a few levels better than her; he was the eldest disciple among them. What kind of fighter did he meet this time? "We can't do much now. We're here and worries will only drag us down. Let's enter the city first, then we'll slowly investigate the matter. Since it's a trap, I believe Fernando will not die, because the other party is actually targeting me!" Fane jeered coldly, and then continued, "The other party was trying to set traps and catch me. I bet they know who's the owner of the dragon scale!"

Chapter 910

“No way, you mean the other party knows who this dragon scale belongs to?” After hearing this, Lana took a deep cold breath. She was taken aback. “I’m just guessing. Since Fernando said it was a trap, I believe the other party will only incarcerate him and not kill him. This act will lure us out. Hence, I guess the other party must know more about the dragon scale!” The whole situation was giving Fane a headache. There were not many people, perhaps less than a dozen people, who knew about the dragon scale. Furthermore, Fernando’s words did not reveal much information. Hence, Fane could only suggest settling in first. Soon enough, Fane brought everyone into the city. They first looked for a hotel to stay in. Then Fane and Selena went ahead to look for a villa. They soon found themselves in the lobby of a sales department. A young saleswoman noticed them and quirked her lips into a small smile, walking toward them. “Good morning, sir and madam. Are you here to look for a villa? Or do you want to look at bungalows? We have both here!” The young saleswoman flashed a brilliant smile—one that could dazzle the sun. “Villas!” Fane gave a wan smile and replied. “All right, sir. Please follow me! We’ve already renovated all the villas here, so you can move straight in. That’s why the price will be a little higher…” The saleswoman introduced as she brought Fane and Selena toward the sandbox. Not too far away, another two saleswomen began chatting quietly to themselves. “That new girl really doesn’t have a good eye. Those two are wearing pretty nice clothes, but didn’t she see them getting off from a cab?” One of the women gave a frosty smile as she spoke. “Right? She was right at the door. No way she didn’t see it. Someone who needs to call for a cab definitely has no money to buy a villa. It’s obvious that they’re just here to browse around!” The other woman added in a low, conspiratorial tone, “We don’t sell many houses here because of the price. Although the villas here are just townhouses, they’re super expensive because they’re in the middle of the city. One would cost at least 120 million

bucks. No way someone like that can afford to buy the villas here." Fane and Selena so happened to walk past them. They spoke softly, but they heard their voices—and they clearly heard each and every word. The two exchanged a glance. They could not be bothered with the two women. After they walked over and scanned the sandbox and listened to the saleswoman's explanations, Fane spoke up, "How much is one unit? There should be a discount if we pay in full, right?" "Ah! Why don't you two look at our showcase unit? I'll take you there. It won't take much time…" The saleswoman was a little surprised. She suspected if she heard wrongly. Honestly, she had seen the couple getting off a cab from the entrance. She did not expect them to have the money to buy a house. However, she recalled what her manager had told her in the beginning—to not give up on any customer that walked through the door. She was new and she did not have a stellar performance to boast off. She used this opportunity to practice her negotiation skills, to familiarize herself with talking to customers, and introducing the houses to them. Basically, she took this as a chance to improve herself. That was why she kept a smile on her face the whole time, carefully explaining every detail to the couple. Yet they had never asked many questions, and they did not talk much. They seemed very impassive. They did not pose many questions. From that, she surmised that they did not have much interest in the property, and they would never even think of buying it after hearing the price. Still, they were probably too ashamed to walk away immediately. She did not expect the man to ask straight away if there were discounts if he paid in full. Even some customers who were interested in buying would negotiate with them a few more times and mull over the decision for a few days. After all, a single unit was worth millions. A big celebrity would also have to consider this for half a day if they wanted to purchase a unit.

Chapter 911

However, the couple in front of her did not even bother to look at the showcase unit. They just took a glance at the sandbox and inquired about the price. “No need. We’re in a hurry to move in!” Fane flashed a wan smile and responded emotionlessly. “Well. If you were to pay in full, surely there would be a discount for you. The company is now promoting cashback for these units. So, it’ll be 110 million bucks per unit!” The young and pretty salesgirl hung a smile on her face, but muttered inside her heart, ‘Don’t tell me they’re really planning to buy a villa!’ It was precisely because of the price of these villas; they could hardly sell even one unit per month. However, if they were to successfully sell one unit, the commission for that month would be a lot. “110 million per unit? So if I buy twenty units, it’ll be 2.1 billion, right?” After calculating in his brain, Fane replied in a carefree tone. “Twen—twenty units?” The pretty salesgirl released a deep breath of surprise, doubting her own ears—whether did she heard wrongly. It was not twenty bucks or 200 bucks but freaking 2.1 billion. Could it be that this couple came from a rich family? “Yes. This side, the side near the gate, I want twenty units. But, I have a small favor to ask!” After pondering about it, Fane pointed at the sandbox and uttered. “What is it?” The salesgirl gulped loudly, thinking that could it be that this man before her was setting a trap? Was he trying to do something bad to her? After all, she had been hearing that some thugs and b*stards always liked to tease salesgirls like them. These thoughts made her heart pound harder than ever; she could not help but worry for herself. She was afraid that Fane was one of those b*stards. But the worries soon subsided when she saw a woman stood next to Fane—Selena. She felt that she was overly worried. No words could describe Selena’s attractiveness and beauty. Such a woman was hundred times better looking than her; how could Fane possess dirty thoughts when he had such a beautiful wife in his life? Besides, if Fane really wanted to do something bad to her, he would not be doing it in front of his wife, right?

“Can the developer enclose these twenty units with walls? Separating our villas from others. This should not be a problem, right?” Fane gave a light smile and then only slowly uttered his request. “This, this can be done! It’s only a small matter. I’ll talk to our manager right now, and you can look at the map here, pick the unit you want, and circle it with this pen!” The young salesgirl took out a pen, a leaflet of the villas as well as the layout map. She handed these over to Fane as she spoke. She requested Fane to circle the unit they wanted. “No freaking way? Twenty units? Did I hear it right?” The other two salesgirls—who were talking about Fane a moment ago—passed by the three and overheard the conversation. Their jaws dropped to the ground and their eyes were widened as large as saucers. They doubted their ears. 20 units of villas? The commission of these 20 units, for them, would be… “Sir, no problem, absolutely no problem. Have you circled up?” The manager of the store and the young salesgirl appeared before Fane again. The manager asked cautiously, with excitement, delight, and joy plastered all over their faces. After all, if these 20 units were sold off, the manager could receive a lot of bonuses, though it would not be as much as what the young salesgirl would receive. “Yup. It’s done. Just these 20 units. Let’s sign the contract!” Fane spilled nonchalantly as he handed the pen and leaflet to the other party.

Chapter 912

“Sign…Sign the contract?” The manager was taken aback. Never in his life had he seen such a quick purchase. “Stop gibbering! I don’t have much time. I still need to buy some house supplies later and I’ll have to move in this afternoon. Do you want to sell or not?” Fane, on the other hand, did not entertain the manager further but shot him a deadly glare. Fane was impatient. The manager was dumbfounded once again. “Of course, Sir! Just that I’ve never seen such a generous person like you!” The manager returned with a smile on his face, meanwhile, the salesgirl was getting the contract over for the transaction. A small smile appeared on Fane’s face as he said

to the manager, “By the way, all these sales must be credited to this young salesgirl. This is because she is the one who served us well. Don’t you dare to steal her credit!” The young salesgirl was touched when she heard Fane’s words that she almost cried. This couple was so kind-hearted that they thought of the low position employees. “Don’t worry, this will not happen, because manager’s bonuses depend on the total sales of every month. Even if I wanted to take credit for today’s sales, it would be useless and meaningless!” The manager chuckled and responded. Soon, Fane completed all the formalities. He then stood up, ready to go over to swipe his credit card for payment. However, to everyone’s surprise, Selena pulled his sleeve and whispered, “Swipe my card. These houses are bought for the Taylor family, so naturally, it should be paid with the Taylor family’s money!” “Alright, Dear, since you said so, I won’t compete with you this time. Anyway, whatever is mine is yours and yours is mine!” Fane shrugged his shoulder as he spoke. A gentle smile plastered on his face. The two saleswomen who have been watching the scene at the side were completely speechless. It was a 2.1 billion bill, and this couple was actually competing to pay the bill. It seemed like this couple was not short of money, perhaps buying another 20 units would not be a problem. After the money was paid and the formalities were completed, the manager asked all the employees to line up in two rows, saluted Fane and Selena, and saw them off the store. “Damn, rich people really do have deep pockets, huh?” The manager of the sales department looked at the back of Fane and Selena with an envious look. The manager then wheeled around and faced the young salesgirl. “Carol, let me say this to you, you’re now officially a permanent staff member. Also, I’ll call the general manager and inform him about today’s incident and advise him to promote you to the supervisor position. It just so happens that we lack a supervisor.” “Ah! I…thank you so much! Thank you so much, Sir!” Carol was overly shocked that her tongue was tied. In the beginning, she did not think that Fane and Selena could afford a villa, let alone 20. However, with a humble mindset of taking it as a business

practice, she went forward and served them well. Little did she expect that the two of them changed her fate in just half an hour. The commissions of these 20 villas were enough for her to buy two houses and may even allow her to save a lot of money. This was basically a miracle—to become wealthy in just half an hour. Moreover, the salary and year-end bonus for the supervisor position was outstanding. “No way, Sir, she has only been here less than a month, how can she be a supervisor?” The two saleswomen could not hold back any longer, approached the two and questioned the manager in an exasperated tone. The young salesgirl had already taken so much commission today, which they were envious and jealous of, and now the manager had actually wanted to make her a supervisor? They could not approve this matter. After all, the two saleswomen were promising candidates for the supervisor position. They were not only veteran staff but also very discerning and often observed how customers entered their shop—whether in sports cars or sedans—and estimated roughly which unit to sell to them. They knew how to choose customers. However, they did not expect that today they missed out on Fane and Selena—the ultimate filthy rich customers.

Chapter 913

“She’s been here less than a month, so what’s wrong with that? Her sales and performance today is something you can’t achieve. You two were with her just now at the entrance, why didn’t the two of you bother serving the two customers and make such a sale?” The manager retorted. He could not be bothered by their resentment instead, he left to report to the general manager about today’s incident. The two saleswomen exchanged glances. Right now, they could not feel anything at all other than regrets. Meanwhile, at this time in Gin City, the head of the Lambert family, as well as Patronum and the elders, were gathered together. “We couldn’t get hold of Lucas. I’m afraid that something bad has happened. We’ve been trying to contact him for these past few days. And it’s not just him, we couldn’t keep in touch

with the other three too. The head of Freeman has been coming over to ask us the whereabouts of his daughter—Snow Freeman. Snow went with Lucas and it's Lambert's responsibility to keep her safe!" The head of the Lambert family frowned. His features were terribly unsightly. The loss of three Lamberts had already broken the members' hearts. Moreover, Lucas Lambert was the son of the second master of the Lambert family. They could not get hold of him for the past several days, it was highly likely that they were dead. The death of Snow Freeman had worsened the situation. Snow was the fiancée of Lucas and the two initially decided to get married soon. However, nobody had expected that bad things would happen to them at this time… "They went to the Middle Province. Looks like sending our men to investigate the matter is the only way." An old man finally spoke with a bitter smile on his face. "Middle Province is just a small city. What kind of person can actually kill the four of them?" Another person responded to the old man's suggestion instantly. The head of Lambert family pondered and then said, "In the Middle Province, only some eight-star or nine-star, and God of War is capable of killing them. They went to Middle Province to kill Ivan Taylor because they didn't expect that Ivan was still alive. But, this time they…" "The grand wedding that the Taylor family held previously, I heard that the son-in-law is the Gods of War's exclusive doctor. That's why all Nine Great Gods of War attended his wedding." The grand elder of the Lambert family paused for a moment to ponder over some matter, and then said, "So, I guess Lana Zechs, the Goddess of War in Middle Province had killed them!" "Damn. How could this Lana Zechs offend the Lambert family just because of some guy named Fane. Doesn't she know that there's a more powerful existence backing us?" The second grand elder barked. His resentment grew within him like a tumor. The third grand elder had not spoken anything, but his face was the most unsightly among others. He was no other than Lucas Lambert's father. The thought of his son dead had caused agonizing wrenching pain in his heart. "This afternoon I'll go to meet with the Freeman family, ask them to bring a few good fighters, and go with

us to the Middle Province. Maybe the head himself will be going because of his daughter's death!" The third grand elder—Tao Lambert—balled his fist firmly as he uttered. "Alright. If we successfully identify the killer, you guys must avenge the four of them!" The head of Lambert family bobbed his head to give permission. He then added, "Tao, when do you plan to leave?" "I'll go to the Freeman family's residence in a moment and plan with them. We'll leave early tomorrow morning!" Tao was gloomy all the while. After finishing his sentence, he took his leave. "Sigh!" The head of the Lambert family could not help but to only breathe out a deep sigh.

Chapter 914

Fane and the others went out to buy daily supplies before shopping for a new car. They then started moving happily. At the same time, in one of the villas located in the villa neighborhood, a beautiful superstar could not help it but to complain to another beauty. "This is so weird. I saw the developer ordering for a wall to be built on my way back. When I went over to enquire about the situation they told me that somebody had bought 20 villas in one go and asked them to build a wall to surround the area!" "20 villas?!" The beauty on the other side inhaled deeply. "This person must be rich and powerful to be able to afford so many villas. Well, there are so many rich people here in the Swallow city that this is considered as normal!" The other beautiful lady pursed her lips and started complaining, "It's quite normal but you weren't there to see it yourself. After this person puts up the wall, the afforested area that we can carry out activities in will be reduced. I bought this property because I really liked the green areas. Now that this person has built a wall around the 20 villas, our homes will be right next to the wall." Blake Knight could only smile bitterly. "Well, what can we do? People like us can only accept our fate. Somebody who can buy so many villas in one go is not someone we, as celebrities, can offend!" Tianna Scott also said, "Yes, we seem well-regarded as celebrities as many people chase after us for our signatures wherever we go. However, we really can't afford

to offend people who are really rich and powerful." "Don't even think about offending them, it's nice enough if we can sing and earn money in peace!" Blake once again smiled helplessly. "By the way, Blake, didn't a director ask you to join his movie? How is it? Did you think about transitioning?" Tianna thought about it and asked curiously. After all, many singers dreamt of transitioning into movie stars. It would benefit their careers in the future if the movie they filmed got famous. This was a good opportunity to grow their income. Different to Tianna's imagination, Blake started complaining, "Don't even mention that bastard. He's a dirty old man. He asked me out for a meal the other day with the excuse that he wanted to discuss some details about the character. Turns out, it was just the two of us and that guy started touching me right after I began eating. I was so angry that I turned around and left!" "Sigh, nine out of ten directors nowadays are womanizers and it's really difficult for us to meet one who's not. I think it's best if we continue singing and produce records. At least, this industry is much cleaner!" Tianna sighed and spoke with a hint of helplessness. The developers acted really swiftly. The next day when Fane and his family woke up, the walls were already done. "I've already asked Skyler and his disciples to help get news about the Dragon scale. Let's hope that we can get some clues soon!" Lana walked over to Fane and said to him. "Alright!" Fane nodded and walked over to Selena. "Selena, let's go take a stroll so that we can familiarize ourselves with the environment. After all, the Taylor family will be staying here for a long period of time!" Fane smiled and said to Selena. Selena nodded. "Sure, I was about to go out and take a look. I want to look around this area and see if there are anywhere suitable for us to start some businesses so that we don't waste time." Fane, Selena, and Lana soon walked out. They had no idea that when they started their stroll, they would see two beautiful women coming out from the side door and it looked like they were going shopping. Whoosh! At this moment, two cars halted in front of them and several men came down. They restrained the girls and were about to stuff them into the car. "Help!" Tianna was

extremely frightened and immediately started yelling loudly while struggling. However, her struggles did not work as there were three to four men restraining her.

Chapter 915

Beside Tianna's, Blake was also struggling to break free from these people. The both of them were leaving the house to go shopping. They had sunglasses on and did not have any bodyguards with them. Who knew that they would meet with such an awful incident as soon they stepped out of the house. "How dare these people kidnap commoners under broad daylight?" Lana could not help and started scolding. She stepped forward and kicked a small pebble she saw by the road. The pebble flew forward and hit one of the men's thigh. "Ah!" The man was in so much pain that he almost knelt on the ground. "Who did that? Are you trying to get yourself killed?" The man was extremely angry. He turned his head around and his eyes lit up when he saw Lana running toward him angrily. "Oh my, it's a sexy and pretty lady!" "Are you suicidal? Bring this one with us, maybe our director will like her too!" Another man said with a smile on his face. "That's right! She has such a nice body. Haha, she might just get famous if she stars in a movie!" Several men from that group of people temporarily let go while the others continued to hold on to Blake and Tianna. "I was wondering why their voices sounded so familiar, it's them!" Fane glanced at the duo. He recognized them although they had on sunglasses. Bang! Bang! Bang! Lana defeated those people with just a few moves. They fell to the ground and started moaning in pain. "What sort of director is this? Is he suicidal? How dare he kidnap somebody under broad daylight!" Lana scolded those people. They used all their might to climb up before leaving in their car. "It's you!" Blake and Tianna covered their mouths in surprise when they saw Fane amongst the people walking over to them. "Oh my, you guys came over to Swallow City?" Tianna was in disbelief. She looked at Fane from head to toes. "Thank you so much! We would have been done for if it weren't for

you! Normally we won't meet with incidents like this. Who knew that we would be so unlucky just as we were about to leave the house!" "Cough, cough… It's us… We've moved here to start a new life here!" Fane was embarrassed and immediately reminded them. "Oh yes, please don't tell others that we are from Middle Province. The wedding happened some time ago and not many people remember me and Selena!" "Don't worry, we won't say anything!" Blake smiled as she spoke. How could they go around spreading news about Fane when he had saved both of them? They did not even know how to repay his kindness. Apart from that, there must be a hidden reason for them to be here as Fane purposely mentioned this to them. "The car seems to have come from that direction as if they knew that you guys were leaving the house!" Fane thought about it and looked at both ladies. Soon, he stepped forward and stretched one of his hands out toward Blake's chest.

Chapter 916

The startled Blake's face turned crimson red when she saw Fane reaching out his hand toward her chest. How bold of him—she was a famous superstar! Had she not known Fane was a decent man and Selena was not with them at that moment, Blake might have thought that Fane was a pervert that tried to take advantage of her. Blake's heart raced, out of control. Still, she did not step back with the belief that Fane was not trying to take advantage of her. Selena frowned, curious as to what Fane would do. Fane merely smiled as he freed a button on Blake. "Ah!" yelped Blake, blush searing her face as she crossed her arms at her chest. Her collar was exposed after Fane unfastened one button. "A tapping and locator device." Fane smiled coldly and, with just a small force, crushed the button between his fingers. Everyone saw a small chip hidden among the broken button's remnants. "How's that possible? It's so small and..." Blake took a sharp intake of breath, shuddering at the thought. Fane chuckled. "I think they took the opportunity to do something because they knew you're leaving the

house without bodyguards with you, all with this small device," remarked Fane. "Where did you buy these clothes, Blake? How can it…" Tianna was equally frightened. None of them would have known Blake had a spying device on her if Fane had not come to them. Blake's face darkened. "That damned director gifted it to me yesterday, some time ago. It looked pretty, so I've been wearing it these few days!" Blake grew angrier the more she thought about it and scoffed, "It's best if we go back and change, and I'm throwing this away. It seems best to not take any clothes people give me!" She turned to look at Fane, her gaze kinder as she smiled. "Thank you very much for today, Brother Fane. I hope to treat you to dinner whenever we have the time. I want to thank all of you!" "Haha! That's mighty generous of you. This is my name card, call me if that bastard director still comes causing trouble. Since we're neighbors now, I'll get to swiftly come to your aid." Fane smiled and passed his namecard to them. He initially had no name cards, but Tanya made some for him when he worked as the Drake family's bodyguard. He carried some with him so that it would be much easier to pass his contact to other people. "Thank you so much!" Blake and Tianna exchanged glances and were delighted. They immediately exchanged contacts with Fane and the others. "By the way, Brother Fane, you're staying in this neighborhood too, right? Which building are you staying at?" asked Blake, curiosity peaked as Fane mentioned they were neighbors. "I live here, in this area that's surrounded by the wall!" Fane pointed at the area behind him. "What?!" Blake and Tianna gaped at the revelation. It was just yesterday that they both talked about who it was, wealthy enough to have bought so many villas in one go. They even grumbled at how such a wall would reduce their greenery significantly. Astounded were they when Fane revealed it was him and his wife who bought that area!

Chapter 917

“You… You’re really rich!” said the grinning Tianna. “Alright then, Brother Fane. Please do join us for dinner when we invite all of you!” Blake smiled and walked back to their houses with Tianna. “I need to go back and change.” “Alright!” Fane nodded and agreed with a smile. After all, they were famous A-class celebrities, and it would be ungentlemanly if he kept refusing them when they repeatedly mentioned they would like to thank him with a meal. “It seems that Swallow City isn’t such a peaceful place, too!” exclaimed Selena as the three of them walked on. “That’s fair. This place is also known as the City of Martial Arts as many masters and powerful people gather here. There’s constant news about how powerful clans or families grow or are wiped out,” remarked Lana with a smile on her face. “City of Martial Arts? Swallow City has such a name?” Selena frowned; she had never heard of that before. “Oh, Sister Selena doesn't know about this yet. There are quite a lot of powerful people in this world. In this City of Martial Arts, many people have worked as bodyguards or opened martial arts clubs since ancient times. This is an old city, so there are many masters here. Because of these ancient practices, the people here like to practice martial arts to stay healthy,” Lana explained patiently to Selena as they walked. “Oh, I see. I had no idea that Swallow City is such an interesting place!” Selena spoke with a deep realization. “It’s alright, I don’t need to care about all this. I only need to know that both my husband and you, Lana are powerful people. That’s enough for me!” “Of course! Giving a sense of security to my wife is a must!” Fane chuckled, and the trio talked while they walked, familiarizing themselves with the area. At the same time, Tanya, Sharon, and Yvonne were drinking coffee in a cafe, seemingly bored. “Sigh! Why didn’t Fane tell us that he’s leaving? We could’ve at least had a farewell gathering!” At the thought of Fane, Tanya remembered how Fane took her first kiss by accident, and she somehow felt like a piece of her heart was missing. “That’s right! That guy had the audacity to leave quietly with

the entire Taylor family without telling us a word. Hmph!" scoffed Yvonne. "Well, what could we have done?" murmured Sharon. "He doesn't like us. Don't bother denying it; I see how you both fawn over Fane. You two just don't want to admit it!" "Nonsense!" Tanya rolled her eyes, refusing to admit it. "That's right! That guy is dumb, and I don't like him!" quipped Yvonne, though she was bitter at the thought. Fane was a flawless man! Could he not just think of having two wives? Had Fane mentioned it or acted more proactively, Yvonne did not mind being his second or third wife. Meanwhile... The Woods family butler and the young lady, Beth Woods had returned to the Woods family mansion. Nash Woods laid on the bed with a pale face, his breaths shallow as he coughed. "How did it go? Did you guys manage to meet Fane and Joan?" he asked weakly.

Chapter 918

The butler, Titus Woods gazed at his master, Nash Woods, who laid on the bed. Titus nodded solemnly. "We managed to see them, but they refused to come back with us. Moreover, they gave us no clear answer on whether they'll come here or when they'll come." Disappointment welled in Nash's eyes when Titus relayed that piece of information. "It's all my fault… I've wronged them. I just didn't realize that Fane would hate me so much that he refuses to come back and see me one last time, knowing that I'm going to die. Sigh, this has to be my retribution, isn't it?" However, different from what he imagined, Titus spoke again, "Master, I believe that the young master will return because before we left, Joan told us that Fane has something important to do and needs time to think about it. I believe that Fane will come back to see you, but it might take some time, no sooner than now." "Is that true?" The corners of Nash's eyes grew moist when he heard that. "That's… That's good to hear! I haven't seen Fane for so many years, and I really want to see what he looks like now…!" "Master, the young master is as handsome as you!" Titus immediately smiled. "Apart from that, the young master is incredibly talented. Four young people from the

Lambert family paid a visit to the Taylors because they had some misunderstandings with them before. Those people stirred trouble with them, and we saw how Young Master Fane killed all four of them on his own. His sword aura attacks were hauntingly powerful!" "Really? I had no idea that Fane could achieve so much in the normal world and under such an environment. If he grew up in the Woods family and we trained him from a young age, he would've achieved an even higher altitude now!" Nash was pleasantly excited when he heard this news. That was his son! Nash Woods' son was really talented and successful. Titus paused before continuing to speak, "By the way, Master, there are some misunderstandings between us and the young master. I think that the eldest madam caused such issues!" Nash frowned and immediately asked. "Misunderstandings? What misunderstandings?" "Didn't you ask the Ninth Patronum to send the young master and Joan one million every year? You even asked him to send resources that will help their physical fitness, right? However, Joan told us that they've never received any of these things or any of the money, and Fane went to the battlefield because they lacked money. Although he managed to survive the challenges throughout those five years, Young Master Fane must've experienced many life-and-death situations on the battlefield," Titus's eyes turned red as he spoke. "Sigh! I can't imagine how difficult life has been for them these past few years!" "Damn it…! How dare Brenton take these things for himself?! He even pretended to leave the house several days every year, and told me that he found Fane! He lied to me, saying Fane and Joan lived a comfortable life!" Nash knew then why Fane refused to return and visit even when Titus told him his days were numbered. It turned out that the Ninth Patronum, Brenton Woods had always been lying and hiding things from him.

Chapter 919

"There's more. Five years ago, Joan was severely ill and needed one million for a surgery…" Titus then went on to tell Nash everything that had

happened to Fane and Joan five years ago. Nash's fists balled tightly as he gritted his teeth in anger. He supported his body and sat up with the remaining strength he had in him left. "How dare she get someone to act as the butler and even humiliate Fane! I never knew he knelt for one whole night! Lily, you're really too cruel!" With that, Nash ordered, "Beth, bring the elders here. I have to kill Lily and that Yvette Lagorio! How dare she pretend to be the butler?!" Nash knew right away the 'fat woman' Titus spoke of was Lily's personal maid, Yvette Lagorio. She was Lily's maid when Lily married into the Woods family and had always been under Lily's lead, loyal to a fault. "Master, we can't do that!" Titus was surprised when he heard this and immediately added, "Master, it's true Madam went out of line, but the Woods family doesn't have an actual leader right now. Although you are alive, you're severely ill. If we have an internal war at this moment, the other families will be over the moon and attack us when we're occupied with each other! What should we do if we don't have an actual leader by then?" Nash knew it himself that he was acting irrationally out of anger. Although the Woods family developed speedily and had many masters, the Lagorio family still had many masters working in the Woods family. The Woods family might win if they fought wholeheartedly, but they would have suffered severe losses. Above all things, Nash was dying and would not hold up for much longer. There was a huge possibility that the son he had with Lily had died. They failed to find his body after searching for so long, and it was highly likely that beasts had devoured his body. Moreover, he did not know if Fane would return, willing to inherit the Woods family's properties. Under such circumstances, having an internal fight was not a good idea. "You're right, I'm acting impulsively." Nash smiled bitterly. "I still need to tolerate it. For the time being, have the accomplished youths in the Woods family to better themselves. I really do hope that our Woods family can have a peaceful relationship with the Lagorio family. However… If Fane returns, Lily would be displeased, what with that insufferable attitude or hers." "Haha! You need not worry about

that, Master. Although Lily is a bad person, she wouldn't show her bitterness out in the open. After all, the elders are observing and you're still alive. Still, she might do something under the table to attack Fane when he comes, all while a gentle facade is maintained." Titus smiled; he understood the madam well. "That's for sure..." Nash nodded. "Lily is my wife, and she chose me many years ago. Our family grew stronger and became a real reclusive family under the support of the Lagorio family. Forgive her, and spare her life as long as her actions aren't too overboard." Nash then asserted, "However, the Ninth Patronum, Brenton Woods and that woman, Yvette Lagorio have to die! I won't forgive them for what they did to my son and Joan!" "That's right. Brenton is one of the Woods family members, and nobody knew Lily had bribed him. We can't keep this person around." Beth was deep in thought all the while before she broke her silence, "Master, although Yvette is only Lily's personal maid, they've been together for so many years and are like sisters. Madam won't let it fly if you're to kill her, and it might even make her furious."

Chapter 920

“I don’t care how good their relationship is. She’s just a maid yet had the gall to treat my son so cruelly. Not only did she pretend to be the butler, but she even humiliated him and made him kneel outside for the entire night. Fane is my son, and I have to avenge him…!” Nash’s fists tightened in agitation. Beth agreed with Nash, thus she nodded and suggested, “Yes, but this it’s not the right time yet. Let’s wait until Young Master Fane comes over; I think that it’s best to find an excuse to kill her if she dares humiliate Young Master Fane when he’s here. That way, you can avenge Young Master Fane for him to see, and he’ll then know how much you do care for him.” Nash’s eyes lit up when he heard what Beth said. “That’s splendid! Oh, how I wish Fane would come already… It would be nice if he could stay here for a few days, even if he doesn’t want the Woods family’ inheritance…” At that moment, Nash wheezed as he broke out into coughs. … By noon, the trio—Fane, Selena, and Lana—had finished walking and had coffee. Fane noticed a restaurant not that far away from, nicely decorated. “Let’s go have lunch!” suggested Fane. “That restaurant looks nice. Let’s go have a look!” Meanwhile… “Look at that guy! He’s got two beautiful ladies with him, and I’m just jealous of him at this point!” People began to murmur among one another as they enviously looked at the trio, especially Fane. “That’s right. It’s already good enough to get just one of these ladies, and this guy has two! Look at how they’re interacting; they must be this guy’s first and second wife!” Some people made bold guesses as they stared at those two pretty ladies. Fane found a table by the window once they entered the restaurant, and they sat down. A waitress came over with the menu. “The dishes here are really expensive!” exclaimed Selena as she looked at the menu. The same dishes were 50 percent cheaper when they were in the Middle Province. That showed Swallow City’s cost of living was much higher than where they came from. Four men at a table not far away overheard what Selena randomly said. One of the men, dressed in

branded clothes, smiled and walked over. “Dear me, pretty lady, do you think that this is expensive? The dishes in this restaurant do cost a pretty penny, but they’re delicious. Apart from that, the decorations are really pretty, so their business is good. Many rich people like to eat here!”

Chapter 921

The man slightly bent his body as he spoke so that his hand could lean on the side of the table where Selena was sitting. The branded watch on the man’s hand looked very conspicuous. The man had a small smirk on his face as he showed his branded watch and continued speaking, “It’s nice meeting such pretty ladies. Would the both of you like to be my friends? Let’s exchange contacts. As long as you’re willing to be my friend, I’ll pay for your meal today!” Young Master Quinton spoke confidently and had a smile on his face. He believed that most pretty ladies could be reeled in with money. Apart from that, the prices of dishes in this restaurant were nothing to him. Judging from this beautiful lady’s words, they might opt to leave as they could not afford the food in this restaurant. After all, many poor people could not afford the food here, so they would leave after looking at the menu. He would have sat himself next to these pretty ladies had it not been for the man with them at their table. He did not know what their relationships were. Regardless, he believed these women would write down his number and contact him secretly later on—assuming they were not idiots. This was not the first time he had such a situation. As long as they accepted his courtship, it meant that there was a possibility that they would come out the next time he asked them out. The man leered at the two beautiful women, and his heart raced with excitement as he moved nearer to them. He was filled with anticipation as he smelt Selena’s faint fragrance. What the man failed to realize was that Selena said what she said not because she had no money; she merely exclaimed out of surprise that the level of consumption was somewhat higher when compared to that in Middle Province. The Taylor family prospered for quite some time, and all

the family's wealth and finances were with her from operating funds, money from the company, and the huge amount they earned from the wedding banquet. How could she not afford a dish in this restaurant? She would have spent several hundred thousand if she ordered a whole table of fine dishes and wine. That amount was also nothing to them. Even if Selena was out of the picture, Lana had a lot of money with her too. They would never be in a situation where they could not foot a bill, no matter how expensive it was. Hence, Selena only smiled indifferently and commented, "Thank you for your great courtesy, Sir. We can pay our own expenses here." The corners of Young Master Quinton's lips slightly twitched. His brothers were looking at him from the other table, and it would only shame him if his offer was turned down. He was momentarily stunned before he insisted, "Pretty one, why do you want to put yourself in such a bad situation? I'm sure you can afford two slightly cheaper vegetarian dishes, but we as humans should enjoy ourselves. Isn't it good if we can get a serving of seafood, lobsters, and red wine here?" The man then straightened himself and gestured toward the Rolls-Royce parked outside, an affirmation of his wealth should Selena be blind to it. "Look, the cars outside are ours. What does that tell you? This means that I have enough money. Be my friend, and you can order whatever you want. I can even pay for the meal if they cost one whole million!" Selena dumbfounded. She was reasonable in turning the man down, but the man was so persistent. She smiled indifferently once again and affirmed, "Young master, we know that you're rich, but we're not poor. We can afford the food here." "Oh dear, they're not entertaining Young Master Quinton!" Those three men stood up and one of them could not help himself from laughing. Young Master Quinton's face darkened when he heard what the men said. He spoke to Selena, "Pretty one, think about this carefully. If you reject me now, don't blame me for not giving you guys face later!"

Chapter 922

The threat in Young Master Quinton's words was evident as he glanced outside; there were seven to eight bodyguards smoking beside his car. "Haha! Young Master Quinton, how much is your face worth?" Fane could hold back his laugh when he heard the man's words. "My wife treated you kindly and refused you so euphemistically. We don't want to cause trouble, so it's best if you quickly leave as that's best for us all. Apart from that, she's not some gold-digger; she's happily married to me. Do you understand?" Fane was unafraid to face Young Master Quinton and maintained his gallant disposition. While Fane wanted to keep a low profile in Swallow City as he had just moved in, he had a limit that should not be crossed, and that was on his wife Selena. It felt like a slap to the face when the man asked Selena out. Moreover, how could the Supreme Warrior's wife be bullied like that? How could anybody treat her like that? After all, there were many powerful people in Swallow City. Who knew who this Young Master Quinton in front of them was? "Haha! So what if she has a husband? There are many who are married!" Young Master Quinton jeered at how Fane stood his ground. "Many married women get with me in the end. Everything is fine as long as I, Caleb Quinton, am rich!" Caleb then turned to Selena and commented, "Pretty lady, stop following this guy. You're really pretty—why don't you follow me instead? I'll give you five million every month, and if that's not enough, ten million per month is doable too! That's a pretty penny, mind you!" He then turned to look at Lana and cooed, "Oh, yes. If this pretty lady wants to follow me too, I can pay you the same amount!" "In your dreams!" Lana was displeased with from the start, but she never thought Caleb would get bolder by the minute. Lana stood up and walked away from the table, waggling her finger as a taunt to come at her. "Are you trying to take advantage of me? We'll talk about this after you've won against me!" Caleb's eyes lit up at Lana's words. "Not bad! This pretty lady has good characteristics, I like you more by the minute!" With that, Caleb balled his fists and rushed toward Lana. Lana had to give it to Caleb—he seemed to be a capable fighter. His speed was so great, he got close

enough to her in just seconds. It seemed to make sense that Swallow City was dubbed the City of Martial Arts. These young masters from wealthy families seemed to have seasoned combat abilities. However, this man was not her opponent. While he had the talent in martial arts equivalent to that of an assistant commander, how could he beat the Goddess of War, Lana? Slam! Lana swung her fist and slammed it against Caleb's, though there was not much force in her first. Despite that, Caleb was sent backward before he could regain his footing. He stood in place while his arm shivered in pain. "Who would've thought that you're a master!" Young Master Quinton waved his slightly numb arm and had a playful smile on his face. His interest in her only grew. "You'd leave instead of disturbing our meal if you're sensible enough!" Lana glanced at him coldly with a slight impatience in her eyes. At that moment, Caleb's three companions walked toward him and grinningly said, "Young Master Quinton, it looks like you can't settle this yourself. Do you need our help?" "Sure. This woman is quite strong, but there won't be problems if we team up." Young Master Quinton felt as though this woman—who had a face mask on—was the stronger bunch among the three. After all, Fane and Selena did nothing. Despite what happened, the woman had only a small upper hand against him, but he would surely win with his companions joining him.

Chapter 923

Firm in his decision, Caleb then gave the order, and the quartet rushed toward Lana. Lana internally facepalmed at the sight of all four men rushing toward her. She showed only a fraction of her strength as she did not want to make a scene; all she wanted was to teach him a lesson that would make him admit defeat and leave. She did not expect them to grow more confident with themselves and attacked her together. Slam! Thump! Pow! Lana no longer reserved her strength. All four men fell to the floor as Lana kicked them relentlessly, and blood spurted from their mouths as their faces turned pale. “Young Master!” Several of the bodyguards who waited outside hastily rushed when they saw the scene. “Damn, this woman is really strong. Seems like we can’t do anything against her!” Young Master Quinton stood up and wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth. “Young Master, don’t you worry. We’ll kill her for you!” One of the bodyguards with a Herculean build glared daggers at Lana. It was quite obvious that these bodyguards were much stronger than those useless rich second generations. The other three young masters seemed to have a good relationship with Young Master Quinton, but they did not come from a strong family like him, so they naturally treated him with more respect. “Oh, dear… It seems that you guys won’t leave without being taught a lesson!” Lana sighed and ran toward the men. The waitress was stunned by what happened and stood by the side helplessly. That kind of commotion happened all the time in Swallow City. Meanwhile, Fane nonchalantly ordered, “Pretty lady, give us three lobsters—one for each of us—and three bottles of this wine. We’d also like to have this…” Only then did the waitress snap out of her trance and wrote down Fane’s order. “Alright!” By the time Fane finished ordering the dishes, Lana languidly walked back to her seat after giving the bodyguards and the four rich second-generations a serious beating. “Young man, wait here for us! Don’t you dare leave!” Young Master Quinton threatened before leaving with his people. “They asked for it!” Fane looked outside and

smiled indifferently when he saw how those people ran. “You’re really something. How can you just sit here and let Lana do all the fighting?” Selena rolled her eyes at Fane. Lana was the Goddess of War, yet Fane did nothing. Would Lana not be angered as she did all the fighting? “It’s alright. After all, I’m quite free!” said Lana with a smile. “Sir, Madams, I think it’s best if you guys leave. What should we do if Young Master Quinton brings the master from his family here?” reminded the waitress after looking at them for some time.

Chapter 924

“Is this Young Master Quinton from a strong family?" Selena was slightly worried when she heard the waitress’ suggestion. After all, they had just moved into Swallow City. It was not possible for them to provoke a powerful family too quickly, was it? The waitress eyed her surroundings before she softly explained, "How should I say this... They used to be a small family back then and were some sort of low influential force. Still, they were considered a strong power around this area." The waitress paused before continuing, "However, ever since Young Master Quinton’s second uncle came back from the battlefield, the Quinton family's status rapidly improved, and they’re now regarded as a third-class aristocratic family. The Quinton family developed so quickly because his second uncle is none other than a King of War!" "A King of War?" Fane was not afraid when he heard this. Instead, he felt anger sizzling in him. As a dignified King of War, how could he allow his nephew to behave so terribly in public? Had it been Fane instead, he would not stop at just refusing to help Young Master Quinton… He would give him a beatdown! "So you’re saying that this King of War doesn't know right from wrong and only knows how to protect this Young Master Quinton?" Sure enough, Lana was just as displeased when she heard the waitress’ explanation and asked with a cold expression on her face. "Yes, and because the young master has such strong support, he's used it to show off and bully people in this area!" After the waitress finished speaking,

she asserted, "Why aren't you guys leaving yet? It'll be too late if you don't leave now!" Lana smiled and said to the waitress, "Haha…! Thank you for that, but we don't plan on leaving. We're here for food, so you can ask the kitchen to start cooking!" "What…?" The waiter was speechless as she did not expect them to stay, even after she kindly suggested that they leave for their own sake. Were these three that unafraid of Young Master Quinton? She gave the trio a thoughtful gaze before she left. "If this dignified King of War truly does nothing to discipline his nephew, we can help him with that today!" commented Fane with a cold smile on his face after the waitress left. Worried, Selena softly said to Fane, "Will this matter escalate? We've just arrived here, and we haven't figured out the situation yet..." "There's nothing to be afraid of. Didn't you hear what the waitress said just now? This Quinton family can be considered as a third-class aristocratic family, and that means they're not formally a third-class aristocratic family in Swallow City. There are too many of such forces in this city and it doesn't matter if they're destroyed, let alone giving them a lesson!" Fane had an indifferent expression on his face. Although there were many forces and strong people in the city, not many of them scared him. The only thing that he was worried about was what Fernando said. He said that it was a trap, and even Fernando was not their opponent. Could it be that there was a reclusive family like the Woods family, or was it a certain super master from the Gin City who took action? After all, Fane knew the extent of Fernando's combat abilities. If Fernando could not win against such a person, it meant that either the opponent was very strong or there were many powerful masters besieging him. Fane hoped that it was the latter because there would not be anything to be afraid of. It would be slightly worrying if it was the former. Lost in his thoughts, he did not realize the table had been filled with delicious food. "Let's eat! It smells really good. What Young Master Quinton said about the food here being good got me excited about it!" Selena smiled and began to eat.

Chapter 925

Fane then joined in the meal, and while the dishes were on the pricier side, it genuinely tasted delectable. As they ate, they had some drinks as well. Ten minutes passed... “Hey, that Young Master Quinton didn’t come back for revenge. Seems like he’s all bark but no bite when he threatened us just now, and he won’t be coming back!” Lana smiled and raised her glass of red wine. “Brother Fane and Sister-in-law, cheers!” Selena smiled and said to Lana, “Sure! Still, it’s best to not drink so much in the afternoon so we don’t get drunk!” “Don’t you worry. Both me and Brother Fane can hold our alcohol down well, so one bottle of wine won’t affect us at all.” Lana finished her red wine in one go, her smile never leaving her face as she looked at Selena. “You should mind your wine though, Sister Selena, and don’t get drunk!” “I might not be able to hold down that much like you two can, but one or two bottles won’t affect me.” Selena smiled. “After all, I had to drink when I started working for the Taylor family, and I’ve gone through some training.” “Really? If that’s the case, let’s get another bottle later. This is the first time I’m drinking with you both!” Lana shrugged her shoulder. To be honest, she somewhat envied Selena. To Lana, Fane was god-like. He was her idol, extremely strong and handsome. If she did not know that Fane was married and was very faithful to his wife, she would want to be his woman. Still, Lana knew that Fane thought of her only as a childish disciple. “Sure! Get us three more bottles of wine, please!” Selena smiled and ordered with the waitress tending to them. Selena was incredibly touched that the Goddess of War Lana was willing to be by their side and protect them as their bodyguard. Selena was happy so long as Lana was, even if she got drunk. “He’s really back with a gang of people!” Lana looked outside and stood up. “Brother Fane, Sister-in-law, please continue your meal. Let me go out and teach them a lesson. Don’t worry, I’ll be back in a short while!” Lana walked out after she spoke. The young master brought quite a huge number of people with him, about 50 to 60 bodyguards. Many of them

looked like really strong masters. Their status seemed much better than the previous seven to eight bodyguards. “It’s her!” A smile appeared on Young Master Quinton’s bruised face when he saw Lana walking out. “Haha, not bad. You’re really bold! I was afraid that you guys ran away already. Who knew that you’d still be eating here!” “Haha! How can we leave when we’re halfway through our meal?” Lana laughed and replied, “Where’s your second uncle? Is he here yet? If he is, ask him to come out so I can teach him a lesson!”

Chapter 926

“My second uncle?” Young Master Quinton was taken aback at Lana’s question, stunned for a good while before a grin appeared on his face. “Well, well! This lady made a thorough background check on me. You even know about my second uncle!” Young Master Quinton paused before continuing to speak, “We won’t be needing my second uncle here to get you guys, though. The Quinton family’s bodyguards are enough!” One of the Quinton family’s bodyguards stepped forward as he chuckled. “Young lady, since you know about Young Master Quinton’s second uncle, you should know who he is. He’s a three-star King of War. It’s best if you give up all resistance so we won’t have to resort to more extreme methods. Everything will be fine as long as you apologize to our young master wholeheartedly and leave with him!” Unexpectedly, Young Master Quinton piped in right after one of the guards spoke, “That won’t work. There’s another pretty woman inside the restaurant, and both of them are the cream of the crop. If we leave, both of them would have to come with me!” “Haha! You’re nowhere handsome, yet you’ve got high hopes and demands!” Lana did not bite back a condescending grin after hearing Young Master Quinton’s bold claim. “Ahaha! Seems like you’re not wanting to leave with our young master, young lady. Allow this assistant commander to test out how good you are!” The bodyguard rushed toward Lana without any hesitation. Whoosh! The bodyguard’s speed was comparable to a major’s. His combat

prowess was considered excellent in Swallow City that was filled with many powerful fighters. That in itself fueled his confidence. As he sprinted toward Lana, the assistant commander bent his fingers as though they were claws, aiming at Lana's face in an attempt to take off her mask. The bodyguard grinned coldly; Lana would not have such impeccable reflex to dodge his speed and sudden attack. He would have taken down Lana's mask by the time she could react, but they would have all seen what she looked like under the mask by then. "Oh, so you're acting alone?" Lana gave a cocky smirk as she acted swiftly. She caught the man's hand with her palm just as his hand nearly grazed her face mask. "Ah!" Lana's palm caught the man's hand like iron tongs. She exerted force into her grip that made the bodyguard kneel in pain. "How's this possible?!" The bodyguard was startled by Lana's power that rendered him—a powerful individual—somewhat helpless. Thuck! With the man still in shock, Lana swung her leg and kicked him at his chest, the force sending him zipping through the air. With an audible thud, the bodyguard fell several meters away and landed on the floor in an awkward position as dust flew. "How's that possible? How can the assistant commander lose just like that?" Some of the Quinton family's bodyguards were baffled at the sight, unable to hold back their shock. "This woman is really good!" The assistant commander withstood his pain and got back up on his feet. He hesitated to rush forward again and instead, walked over and glanced at an elder who stood at one side.

Chapter 927

The elder had greater and better combat abilities than the assistant commander and was a head commander of the Quinton family's bodyguards. "Attack together!" The head commander would not take chances when he knew how strong Lana was. He gave the rest of the guards a signal—to attack together. "Haha! That'll save me the trouble if you're all attacking together!" Lana laughed at the sight of the men rushing toward her, and she nonchalantly met them halfway. Bang! Slam! Pow! Daunting,

blood-curdling noises were heard as several of the Quinton family's bodyguards flew backward, and they were all on the ground just moments later. Only Young Master Quinton and the three rich young masters—who shared a table with him and drank with him before—stood there dumbfoundedly. Many passersby gazed at Lana with awe and respect. "How's that possible? How… How can she be so strong?" Swallow City was also known as the City of Martial Arts. Most of the people in the city advocated power and worshipped masters very much. People from the Quinton family had always bullied and oppressed people around this area, and Young Master Quinton was nothing but savage. Still, no one expected to see him getting schooled on that very day. Lana glanced at the group of four with a slight smirk and said indifferently, "You four, it's time for you to learn!" Frightened to the core, Young Master Quinton instantly begged, "D—Don't…! Pretty lady, we're only weaklings. What if you end up killing us? I'm the Quinton family's young master, and you also know that my second uncle is incredibly powerful!" Once she mulled over her thoughts, Lana then remarked, "Didn't I tell you that I don't care about your second uncle? I'm giving you two choices now: One, you receive your punishment from me. Two, kneel here until I finish eating, and then you can leave!" "Isn't this woman acting too arrogantly? How dare she look down on a King of War?" blurted one of the bodyguards to his companion. Another bodyguard thought about it and added, "That's right. Who's this woman? Why haven't we seen her before? She doesn't seem to be from around this area. If she's better than the three-star King of War, we'd surely hear about her at some point!" "How… How can I do that? I… I'm Young Master Quinton!" said Caleb with a grimace. He would be extremely ashamed if others saw him kneeling outside the restaurant under the bright sun. Lana got closer to the group of four and, rubbing her knuckles, grinningly commented, "You leave me with no choice then. I can only take action since you guys don't want to kneel here. Sometimes my fists don't obey me, and my punches and kicks still hurt even when I'm not trying to kill. I might

accidentally kill someone if I slightly lose control of my punches!" The other three rich young masters glanced at each other and knelt while ignoring Young Master Quinton. "We'll kneel!" One of them even said, "Pretty lady, please go enjoy your meal!" Caleb's face darkened as his lips twitched for a good while. "I'm the Quinton family's young master," he uttered. "Are you sure about this?"

Chapter 928

"Haha! You still got the guts to threaten me right now!" Lana laughed and questioned, "By the way, how many stars does your second uncle, the King of War have?" Caleb was embarrassed. This woman had no idea how frightening his second uncle was, yet she dared force him to kneel. He turned his head to the side and arrogantly scoffed, "Hmph! My second uncle is no one or even two-star King of War—he's a three-star King of War! Three-stars! Do you get it now? Are you afraid yet? Let us go if you are. If not, all of you will face my uncle's wrath today!" "Three-stars? Oh my, I'm so scared! Why didn't you tell me earlier?" Lana's expression intentionally morphed into one of pure fright before it died down into a more neutral expression. "Kneel!" she snapped. "I'll hit you if you don't!" It only occurred to Caleb then that she was mocking him. "How… How dare you toy with me?" Still, he had no choice but to kneel under Lana's intense, sharp gaze, all while he gritted his teeth. "Alright, I'm going in to have my meal. You guys can leave after I'm done with my meal and after I leave!" Lana clapped and walked into the restaurant. "Who's this woman? How dare she humiliate us like this!" growled one of the rich young masters once Lana left them. "Haha! Humiliate us? You were the first one to kneel!" Caleb was rather displeased at that. These three were gutless and they caved in all too quickly, kneeling down all too soon. He at least tried to fight back. "What could we even do, Young Master Quinton? That woman is fearless, and I do believe she's never lost before. She's so daring to threaten us. What if she killed us if we didn't kneel?" muttered one of the young masters with a bitter

smile on his face. “He’s got a point, Young Master Quinton,” another piped in. “You at least have your second uncle supporting you, but we don’t have such support. Our deaths would’ve been in vain!” The third guy then added, “That’s right. This city is a chaotic one with so many masters, and they don’t care much nor do they care what sort of support you have. They don’t care much about their lives, and there are many desperados who’d kill you before explaining why!” Caleb had nothing to say to that; they were telling the truth after all. “What are you guys still lying on the ground for? Stop pretending. I don’t believe that you guys are dying from those beatings!” barked Young Master Quinton as he glared at his bodyguards on the ground. “Young master, what else can we do apart from lying down here? Moreover, that woman got us real good. Although we’re still alive, our wounds are really bad!” whined one of the guards. “Come here and kneel beside us too. If not, how shameful will we be when so many people walk past and see us!” Caleb thought about it and continued saying, “Apart from that, you guys can cover me while I call my second uncle. F*ck, I don’t believe that we can’t get back at those people right now!” The rich young master beside Caleb thought about it and immediately reminded him, “Young Master Quinton, are you sure you want to call your second uncle? You need to know that he’d surely come and punish them on your stead with just one call. After all, he’s really nice to you.” Then, the young master’s stance shifted as he added, “However, you’ll have to think it through. You won’t be getting those two women. Your uncle might help you, but he hates it when people try to get handsy with civilian women!”

Chapter 929

Caleb frowned at the other young master’s advice. He gave it a thought before he made his decision. “Hmph, I don’t care! We’ll teach them a lesson. I’ll ask my second uncle to hurt that woman. As long as she’s badly injured, the remaining two won’t be a threat. It’d be easy for me to follow these three later on and beat them up myself after my second uncle’s gone.” Everybody

nodded at Caleb's words. Meanwhile… "Why are they kneeling on the ground?" As his eyes wandered, Fane noticed the bodyguards kneeling outside the restaurant. Lana's eyes wandered to the same direction as she calmly smiled. "Haha…! That guy's probably unsatisfied and is calling his second uncle. His second uncle is a three-star King of War! I'll surely teach him a thing or two!" "Leave him be if he's a good person at heart and that it's just his nephew acting up. After all, he's somebody who fought for the country!" advised Fane after he assessed the situation. "However, if he tries to protect his nephew and is acting aggressive, get one of his fingers." "Alright." Lana nodded and ate her steak in a relaxed manner. Their conversation stunned Selena. Why did it feel like Fane was ordering Goddess of War Lana? Why did it feel like Lana listened to everything Fane said? Was it because Fane was the Great Nine Gods of War's exclusive doctor? That could not be. Was it not supposed to be the doctors respecting the Gods of War? "Honey, eat. Eat more!" Fane smiled and placed more food into Selena's plate. Eventually, the group of three were full after their meal. "Why isn't he here yet?" Lana was slightly impatient as she glanced outside again. "It doesn't matter if he doesn't come over. Let me go pay the bill!" Fane stood up and walked over to pay the bill. … "Young Master Quinton, why isn't your second uncle here yet? Look, that guy is paying the bill. Dear me, they're done with their meal and are leaving!" informed one of the bodyguards as he looked into the restaurant. "No way! F*ck, they are done!" Caleb scowled at the sight. His second uncle had yet to arrive when Fane and his company were leaving after their meal was finished. Locating them would be too much of a hassle. After all, Swallow City—a large city, at that—made it hard for people to locate one another. "He's here! He's here!" At this moment, a car drove into view and was parked not far away. A man in his forties came down from the car. He was accompanied by two other middle-aged men, and all three of them were rather red in the face due to the alcohol they drank before coming to the restaurant. "Which woman bullied my nephew?" snapped the man in his forties upon his arrival.

Chapter 930

“Seems to me like he’s full of himself!” Lana smirked when she caught what the man had said, and she then remarked to Fane and Selena, “This guy’s losing one of his fingers after this!” “Uncle! My dearest uncle! You’re finally here!” Young Master Quinton stood up from the ground as both his legs were numb from the kneeling. “I almost died from being under the sun, and it really doesn’t help that we’re humiliated, kneeling in public!” “That’s right, King of War Hunter Moore. These people are downright detestable! Not only did they hit us, but they even forced us to kneel under the sun!” one of the young masters helped explain the situation. “That’s right, King of War Hunter Moore! The woman even boldly claimed that she’s not afraid of you, even if you came!” said the other young master as he stood up and rubbed his knees. “Uncle, it’s that woman wearing a mask. She’s utterly despicable! I was kind enough to treat them to a meal, but they refused me and said that I was making fun of them for being poor. We started fighting because they spared no respect to the Quinton family!” Caleb immediately pointed at the trio walking over and added details into the story. “Alright, I get it now!” Hunter nodded and walked several steps forward. “You guys are rather bold, I’ll give you that. Do you know who this is? This is the Quinton family’s young master and my nephew, yet you guys not only hit him but even made him kneel to you? Are you guys looking down on me, Hunter Moore?” The arrogant-looking Hunter placed both his hands behind his back, seemingly condescending. “Haha! These people are suicidal for looking down on King of War Moore!” The two men that accompanied Hunter seemed to hold important positions as well. They smirked as they eyed Fane and his company. “Tsk, tsk! You guys won’t even ask about the situation before you start accusing us, huh?” Lana stepped forward and said straightforwardly, “No wonder Young Master Quinton dared to act so arrogantly in this area—he’s got this kind of uncle, that’s why. People always say that the subordinates will surely follow the bad example of the

leaders!” “You’re really naive. How can King of War Moore not know what sort of people Young Master Quinton is?” A man stepped forward and cupped his hands at Lana. “I’m a one-star King of War, and I really want to ask this lady for clarification!” “Even if my nephew made a mistake, you guys shouldn’t have asked him to kneel here!” Hunter wore a dark expression, seemingly not believing he was mistaken. “Alright! If that’s the case, we can only resolve this with a fight!” Lana did not want to waste time rambling with those men, thus she waved at the one-star King of War. “Then I won’t hold back!” The one-star King of War stepped forward and a strong aura surged out of his body. Although this invisible aura could not be seen, it gave people a strong feeling of oppression. “Hmph!” Lana zipped toward her opponent so quickly that she got right in front of him in mere seconds. She swung her leg and kicked. “You’re really fast!” Skilled in his own rights, the one-star King of War raised his leg that collided against Lana’s. “What?!” He initially held no expectations on Lana, but he was evidently surprised by then when he felt how strong she was. Stronger than him, even! Thump! With an audible noise, the one-star King of War flew several meters back as he spun in the air, regaining his footing after a while. “You’re really good. You’re stronger than me!”

Chapter 931

The one-star King of War’s face darkened. “Haha! Didn’t think you’d be a one-star King of War. It looks like you people plan to help Young Master Quinton no matter the reason or consequences, huh? It does look like some people do change after they return!” commented Fane as he eyed the man with a faint smirk. “Young man, this isn’t the time for you to speak. We’ll get to you after we’re done with this woman!” barked Hunter as he glared daggers at Fane. Caleb spoke as he stood by their side, “Uncle, this person is really terrible. You gotta beat her down badly, even if you don’t kill her. Teach her a lesson and make sure that she can’t get out of bed for at least half a month!” Caleb inwardly sneered. This woman did not seem any

stronger than the one-star King of War, and she was surely no match for his uncle. So long as Caleb's uncle could incapacitate her, they could follow after both women once his uncle left. They could then bring those women to a hotel to enjoy themselves. As for the guy? Simple; he would be killed. "Haha! Half a month? Are you dreaming?" Lana gave a cold grin as she pointed at Hunter, saying, "Hunter, you're a three-star King of War. How dare you allow your nephew to do whatever he wants! You'll receive a severe punishment today from yours truly!" "You? You want to punish me? You are the one dreaming!" Hunter inwardly smirked. "Who do you think you are? The Goddess of War, or maybe the Supreme Warrior? How does a young girl like you have the rights to punish me?" He balled his fists tightly and aimed for Lana, and the winds whistled with the velocity of each punch. "I'm not in the mood to explain anything to you!" Lana felt like Hunter would not believe her anyway. Lana threw her fist as it collided against the opponent's fist. Thoom! Men from the Quinton family anticipated the sight of Lana flying backward. Which was why it shocked them to see King of War Hunter Moore zipping through the air instead. Fwoosh! Lana caught up with the still-airborne Hunter Moore. "How can this be? Such speed...is ridiculous!" Hunter's face turned green as Lana moved at breakneck speed. She had just sent him flying yet managed to catch up to him so quickly. Lana's lips curved into a menacing smirk as she sharply punched his abdomen. Puff! Blood spurted out of Hunter's mouth and his body immediately changed course. He plummeted to the floor. Puff! Hunter's hurled a mouthful of blood as several thin cracks appeared on the floorboard. "Uncle!" yelped Caleb as everything unfolded before him—everything happened so quickly. The uncle that he assumed was invincible had been bested by a woman, and the attack seemed rather brutal as well. "I'm not going to kill you today, but I'll take one of your fingers as a lesson for you to think of!" Lana looked at Hunter, who laid on the ground and had blood on the corners of his mouth. She took a dagger out and knelt next to him. "How dare you? I'm a three-star King of War! How dare you attack

me after I've fought for this country for so many years!" Hunter looked at Lana hatefully. "Haha! How dare you say that you're a King of War?" With that, Lana flicked the dagger at his hand.

Chapter 932

"Argh!" The pale-faced King of War Moore roared in pain as his finger was severed. Despite his agony, he glared viciously at Lana instead of showing fear, and the sight of him was downright feral. Lana sneered, "You don't seem convinced about your punishment!" Lana calmly stood up as she wiped off the blood on her dagger. "You'll definitely regret this!" growled Hunter through gritted teeth. "Haha! This is your lesson. Don't blame me for ending you next time if you still refuse to repent and change your ways!" commented Lana, a cold smile on her face as she left with Fane and Selena. The other man who came with Hunter was also a King of War; a two-star King of War at that. He stayed rooted when he saw Hunter attacking her, and he was utterly floored at the turn of events. Hunter was no match for the woman, and he was defeated in just a short while. The outcome would have been the same had he been the one attacking her; he would have failed as well. "King of War Moore, are you alright?" A number of the bodyguards stood up and ran to him. "Uncle, how are you?" Caleb was frightened by what happened and quickly ran over to Hunter's side. He never thought that the woman would best his uncle so skillfully; he never saw it coming. "Why is that woman so strong?" Hunter stood up as he held his wrist, saying, "We need to go to the hospital first. F*ck! I won't let that woman go so easily!" "Let's go! We need to hurry to the hospital to stop the bleeding!" The other two Kings of War immediately asked the others to make way so they could send Hunter to the hospital. "I never thought my uncle would fail to defeat her. Seems like I won't be able to have my way with both women!" Caleb was disappointed as he looked at the car driving out of his view. Both women were belles that he rarely came across, and his desire for them only increased due to his defeat. He wanted them to regret what they did. He

wanted them to kneel in front of him and beg for his forgiveness. “Young Master, the woman who had good combat abilities is really good, but the remaining two don’t seem to be good fighters. Even if we can’t get the one with the mask, we might be able to get the other one, no?” suggested one of Caleb’s guards. Caleb’s eyes lit up as he heard this. “That’s right! Why didn’t I think of that? F*ck, go investigate the three of them and find out where they’re from! I want to know where they’re staying. We’ll snatch the woman right from the man given the chance, or get her when she leaves her house alone!”

Chapter 933

Decision made, Caleb then instructed, “Alright! Move quickly. Both of you, follow them in your car to see where they live. Be smart and keep your distance—don’t let them see you, understand?” After all, the trio had not walked far and they did not come to the restaurant by car. Surely his guards would catch up to them if they followed them swiftly. “Yes, Young Master!” Both bodyguards nodded respectfully and sneakily followed after Fane, Selena, and Lana. Meanwhile… “We’ve spent half a day outside but haven’t seen any good shops suitable for doing business with!” Selena was extremely tired upon arriving home. She took a bath and laid on the bed. “We don’t need to work, but it definitely won’t work for us if we don’t do some business. People will question us and our backgrounds.” At that moment... Members of the Lambert family had arrived in Middle Province and started their investigation secretively. Hearing the report of the incident, the Lambert family’s third elder, Tao Lambert and the Freeman family’s master, Louis Freeman wore an ill-omened expression. They found out that Fane and his family had left Middle Province dead of night, anticipating that they would search for them. The Lamberts discussed among themselves before they came to a decision and barged into the George family’s mansion. “You are?” Winston George glanced at his bodyguards who were on the floor, injured, as he asked the unwelcomed guests before him, all while he wore an uncongenial expression. “Haha! Master George, it came to my attention that the son-in-law married into the Taylor family, Fane Woods gifted you a villa before he left. Is that correct? It seems like you people get along rather well,” came Louis’ languid comment Winston’s face darkened and his heart sank when he heard that. He never expected that the Lamberts from Gin City would come to Middle Province that quickly. More importantly, they went straight to his residence after failing to find Fane and the others. “Gentlemen, I don’t have a good relationship with Fane, though we’re thankful to him for healing my daughter, and I won’t deny his

incredible medical skills! Apart from that, you also know about how all the Gods of War attended Fane and Selena's wedding. Anybody in their right mind would attend their wedding and try to please them. At the very least, we had to maintain a good relationship with them as we're afraid of offending them. Our family did the same." Winston smiled indifferently, momentarily pausing before he concluded, "We, the George family, are the same as any other families. We try to keep a good relationship with Fane and the Taylors, and we don't know anything else about them!" Winston's answer seemed to make sense to Louis, but he still pressed on, "If you don't have a good relationship, why did they give the villa to you?" "Haha! They left in such a hurry that they couldn't get rid of the villa in such a short time, and it didn't help that a dozen people wanted to kill them before they left. Fane killed the assassins, though, and the ground was littered with bodies everywhere. They asked me to help them get rid of the bodies as they've disbanded their bodyguards previously and were only left with a meager handful. "They gave me the villa so that I can send people to clean up the bodies. I mean, why else would they just hand me the entire villa like that?" Winston laughed. He did not want to lie to them about things like this; they were intelligent and would know everything with just a simple investigation. They would not be interacting with them so nicely if they knew he lied to them. These people were powerful masters, and they could not offend any of them. Louis could tell Winston was not lying to him after hearing his entire explanation. He thought of it and said, "Oh, right, do you know which way they headed off to? You must know something, right?" Winston smiled bitterly. "How would we know? Fane's no fool, and they left in the middle of the night. They must've been hyper-alert that others would see them and know which way they headed off to!"

Chapter 934

Louis did not know what to say after hearing Winston's answer. He went silent for a moment as he thought things through before he commented,

“How about this: We’ll leave now, but we’ll leave our contacts with you. Call us as soon as you receive any news about them, know where they’ve gone, or if they’re back. As long as you provide us useful news, we’ll give you a handsome reward as our thanks.” “Alright, don’t you worry, gentlemen. I’ll surely contact you once I have news about them!” Winston nodded and agreed to it. “Excellent.” Louis nodded and left with Tao and his subordinates. Winston wiped the cold sweat on his forehead after they left his mansion. “They almost gave me a heart attack. They’ve brought more than a hundred people with them, and there must be a lot of masters in their ranks!” At this moment, Sharon—who had been standing behind Winston and the others—walked forward. “Fane and the others made a wise decision. Who would’ve known that these people would come looking for them in such a short period of time. They’d be in so much trouble if they hadn’t left!” “I wonder if Goddess of War Lana can match up to those people. Of course, Lana can’t always be next to Fane and his family, no? What if these people manage to catch up with Fane and the others before they leave? They might be dead by the time Lana manages to catch up with them!” Winston wiped his cold sweat as he spoke. “That’s right. Although Fane has a good relationship with these Gods of War, the Lambert family is a powerful family from Gin City. Who knows if the Gods of War will offend such a big power for Fane and his family!” A thought then occurred to Sharon as she hastily said, “I need to quickly call Miss Selena and get her to change their phone numbers. I’m afraid that they’ll locate Fane and the others with their phones if they manage to catch one of the Taylors’ extended relatives!” Winston nodded after he heard what Sharon said. “Definitely. Fane and the others helped us greatly, and Fane is an incredibly great person. I suspect that he was the one to have overturned several clas, or perhaps he asked someone else. Our lives had gotten better without those forces causing trouble!” Sharon nodded. “If they hadn’t offended the Lamberts the Taylors would’ve surpassed the Drakes. Now that the Taylors have left Middle Province, the Drakes benefit the most from all this.

Powerful clans like the Eagle Clan and Kingston Hall have disappeared, and nobody can stop the Drakes on their path of expansion." "Yes, but the Drakes are reasonable people, luckily," said Winston with a small nod on her head. "By the way, I heard that nobody could reach the Goddess of War Lana these couple of days. Nobody saw her leaving her house." A frown appeared on her face as Sharon thought things through. "Could she have left with Fane and the others? That'd be for the best. Lana's skilled in combat after all, and Fane and the others would be much safer with her!" Winston inwardly sighed when he saw his daughter's happy expression. "Sharon, I know that you like Fane very much, but he's a married man and shares a beautiful relationship with his wife. Above all, he's rather far above the pedestal and doesn't share your feelings for him." "Sigh! I really hope that you can let go of those feelings and start to look for a man who's good for you. Find a boyfriend so that your mother and I can stop worrying about you." Sharon's smile immediately disappeared. She pursed her lips and said, "Father, I understand the situation. Fane truly is a stellar individual, and we may not be suitable for each other. Don't you worry, I'll see if there's someone I like and I'll try to get into a relationship. I'll treat Fane as a dear friend of mine." "Good. My Sharon has grown up!" Winston nodded in satisfaction and soon went back into the house. ... At that moment, Fane, Selena, and the others were enjoying their meal when Selena received a text message.

Chapter 935

"Miss Sharon sent me a text and said that about a hundred people from the Lambert family came to Middle Province, asking about us even going to their house for information. She suggested that we change our phone numbers so that we can be much safer," announced Selena as she eyed her phone. "Yes, we'll have to change our phone numbers. What do we do if we don't change and they manage to find us?" Fiona was startled when she heard the news and was afraid that they would come looking for them.

Andrew agreed and added, “It’s best if everybody ceases contact with our other relatives after we change our numbers. They might end up telling who we are and where we’re staying—it’ll be hell to get through!” Old Master Taylor sighed. After all, those were also members of the Taylor family. Although they chose to leave heartlessly, they never wanted anything to happen to the other relatives nor did they want to stop contacting them. Fane, on the other hand, nonchalantly spoke, “Truthfully, I don’t think that it’d be a big deal if we change our numbers or not. I’m not really afraid of this Lambert family, especially now that we’ve got so many masters here with us. Both King of War Celestino and Goddess of War Lana are with us, too. “I chose to hide from them and come here for another reason. Apart from that, I didn’t want to involve myself with the troubles of the Lambert family!” “You can continue your boasting. Just tell the truth about how you’re not confident! How can you say that you don’t want to involve yourself in the mess? What’s so good about us running to such a faraway place? I rather stay in the Middle Province; life was good there!” Fiona rolled her eyes at Fane and felt that Fane was boasting. “Mother, there are many advantages in moving here!” Fane smiled and explained, “Did you notice that this city is always veiled by clouds and mist? This city is also known as the City of Martial Arts, and there are many masters here. What I’m trying to say here is that this city is located at a special geographical location. People who work in this city have a longer lifespan, and the prosperity of such a big city is incomparable to Middle Province!” “This city can make people live several years longer? Are you lying to me?” Fiona was suspicious of what Fane was saying. Fane chuckled at her suspicion as he commented, “Mother-in-law, there are many things in this world that are unexplainable. For example, grandfather’s luminous pearl. Now that he’s placed it by his bedside while he sleeps, don’t you see that the old master’s body is much healthier than before? He doesn’t get sick so easily, and the probability of him getting the flu has been reduced as well!” “Haha! This is true. I don’t get the flu so easily, and my appetite and spirit have gotten

better as well. I’m enjoying my meals better, and it seems that this luminous pearl Fane gifted to me is an incredibly special item!” Old Master Taylor chuckled heartily. “Since Fane said that this is a good place, then it must be so. Let’s see if I can live till I'm a hundred years old.” Fiona momentarily went silent at that, thinking things through before she replied, “I don’t know if you can live that long, but I insist that everyone changes their numbers tomorrow to be safe. Got it?”

Chapter 936

In the evening, Fane and Selena were once again on the bed after they took their baths. Fane could not help but hug and kiss the pretty woman in front of him. “Aren’t you tired?” Selena blushed with a shy expression on her face. Selena frowned as she looked at the weird scar on Fane’s arm after he took off his clothes. She said, “Honey, I feel weird every time I see this scar on your arm. Why does it look like a huge fish scale? Apart from that, since you have such good medical skills, why can’t you get rid of it?” Fane smiled bitterly after he heard what she said, “It’s not so easy to get rid of this scar but it might be gone soon!” Fane kissed Selena after he spoke. The next morning, the bodyguards came before Young Master Quinton. “Young master, we’ve inquired clearly and the three of them are staying at the same place. Apart from that, they have also just arrived recently. I think they’re a family who recently moved from another city and just got settled in here. They bought 20 villas in one shot!” The bodyguard greeted Caleb and said. “What? They’ve just arrived here? F*ck, they dare act so outrageously when they’ve just reached this place? They even dared to hit my second uncle!” Caleb frowned and said. “My second uncle knows many masters. I need to act quickly and make my move soon as my uncle is really angry at these people. If my uncle finds out where they’re staying and send masters over to kill them, wouldn’t I lose my chances to touch that gentle beauty?” The bodyguard also nodded and suggested, “Young master, how about this? Get several people to guard their door every day. Get them to wait and to immediately call you when that woman comes out alone or with her boyfriend. How does that sound?” “Alright, you go and make the arrangements. Don’t call me immediately. Catch the girl and bring her to the hotel before you call me!” Caleb smiled indifferently. “It wouldn’t be a problem to handle a woman, right? That man looks like he does not have any combat abilities. If not, why didn’t he say anything the other day?” “Alright, young master. We’re getting it done now!” The bodyguard nodded

and left to make the arrangements. In Wood's family mansion, the Ninth Patronum, Brenton Woods, walked toward the madam, Lily Lagorio with a heavy expression on his face. "Madam, we're in trouble!" Brenton said to Lily with a frown on his face. "What happened?" Lily drank the tea in her cup and asked with a frown. "Two days ago, I still had contact with those people. They said that both the butler and Beth Woods went looking for Fane and Joan. Although I don't know why, they must be there to persuade Fane to come back!" Brenton was speechless. "The young master has disappeared for such a long time, many people must have thought that the young master had definitely died. Our people didn't manage to find the young master so Nash Woods must be thinking about getting Fane back to inherit the Woods family's properties now that he's dying!"

Chapter 937

Lily's face darkened when she heard what Brenton said. She held the teacup with all her might and the teacup turned into dust with a bang. She stood up and said angrily, "Is there nobody else in the Woods family? Can't the other young people in the Woods family be the inheritor? Anybody can be the next master apart from Fane Woods!" She looked at Brenton after she spoke. "Oh yes, did Fane come back with them? You said that we're in trouble, does that mean that Fane has returned with them? If that's the case, I've sent so many people and none of them are Beth and the butler's opponents. F*ck, I can't get them killed on the way!" Only then did Brenton replied to her, "Our people told me that Fane doesn't want to come back with them because of what happened previously so the butler and Beth came back by themselves! I told my people to make a move after they leave!" Brenton paused here before speaking again. "However, I've been calling them since yesterday and I failed to make contact. I think that they're all dead and I don't know what's the situation!" "You're telling me that our people started taking action after Beth and the others left but they still ended up dead?" Lily inhaled a deep breath and exclaimed. "Sh*t, if that's the case, that

means Fane might have really strong combat powers? If not, how could he kill people from the Woods family? We sent several of them!" Brenton shook his head. "This might not be the case. There's a possibility Fane has masters helping him. After all, he's quite rich and powerful in the Middle Province. He might have hired a couple of strong bodyguards!" "Our people did not expose their identities and said that they were from the Woods family, right?" Lily thought about it and asked. "Definitely not. I told them to not expose their identities and to just kill Fane!" Brenton said confidently. "Let's hope that Fane has a master with him. If he really has the strength to kill our people, it doesn't matter if he doesn't come back to the Woods family. If he really does, Nash and the others from the Woods family will focus on training him. They will help him to be the Woods family's inheritor whole-heartedly!" Lily was also upset when she thought about it. "No, we can't let Fane back no matter what happens. Continue to send people over. Fane might not know who wants him dead since they did not expose their identities. Don't act carelessly this time, send several really good ones over!" "Yes, madam!" Brenton nodded. "Go get things done. Don't you worry, I won't forget about you after we're done." Lily finally waved and asked Brenton to leave. She thought about it before sending someone to get the third elder over. "Madam, how can I help you? Are you missing me so early in the day?" The third elder smirked and hugged Lily from behind after he closed the door. Lily directly rolled her eyes at him and pushed him away. "I ask for you to be here today to discuss something serious." "What's there to worry about? Nash is dying. Haha… We just need to wait for another two to three months and we have nothing to worry about after he dies!" The third elder smirked and his hand started exploring Lily's body.

Chapter 938

"Stop it!" Lily escaped from the third elder's hug and gave him a flirtatious look. "I need you to do something important. You need to add another 200 people to look for my son and get him back! Do you understand?" The third

elder's face slightly darkened when he heard this and he said helplessly, "Babe, do you think that I don't want to get Lance back? We've sent hundreds of people searching for him previously. That unknown forest is very deep in, and the landscape is very complicated. Do you know how difficult it is to search for one person there? Apart from that, there are many beasts inside. If we are not careful, our people might die there!" However, Lily responded with a cold expression. "I'm asking you to find one person, we're looking for several people. Lance went in with several people so they must have left some trails, right? Since you also said that the forest is very big and deep, we must not have sent enough people in. It would work if you send another 200 people! Apart from that, the people who went in would be much safer with the extra number of people we are sending in!" The third elder sighed. "Honey, do you think that only we, the Woods family members are worried? We've already sent lots of people and the families of those who went in with the young master also sent people in. Now, the forest has thousands of people searching for them. The most crucial point is that they still can't find anything after searching for two months. So, the young master and the others might have…" "Impossible, my son cannot be dead. He's so talented! He might be stuck in there! That must be it. You have to search for him, add more people and search for him!" Lily's eyes were red and she looked crazy. "Okay, okay! I will make the preparations tomorrow, alright?!" Although the third elder was impatient, he could only agree to make Lily happy. "That's more like it. Nothing will happen to my son!" Lily's emotions calmed down a bit. "You might not know this but that young man, Fane, might be coming back." "You mean the bastard child of the master and that woman?" The third elder frowned and finally realized why Lily was in such a hurry to get the eldest young master back. She was afraid of Fane's return. "Yes. I discovered the butler and Miss Beth leaving with several people some days ago. I felt that something was not right so I sent someone to follow them in secret. As a result, our people discovered that Titus and Beth really went looking for Joan and Fane. They might be

thinking about bringing them back here! However, I secretly severed the relationship between the father and son. This caused Fane to hate Nash so he did not return with Titus and the others!" Lily said slowly. "F*ck, luckily they did not return together. Now that everybody thinks that the eldest young master is dead and if we fail to find him within another two to three months, Nash might ask Fane to inherit the position of the Woods family master when he dies. That would be troublesome for us!" The third elder could not help but inhaled a deep breath after he heard what Lily said and finally acknowledged the seriousness of the issue. After thinking about it, the third elder spoke again. "Since Titus and the others are back without Fane and that woman, why don't you send people over to kill them? We can get rid of the threat once and for all. Previously, they weren't a threat to us because the master never contacted them and the eldest young master was really talented. However, it's different now that young master is missing and the master is very ill. If Fane returns, the Woods family members will definitely help Fane to raise his strength and be the Woods family master!" ' Lily smiled bitterly. "Do you think I did try that? I lost contact with the people I sent over and they might be dead." "How's that possible? Were the people we sent over very weak? That's impossible. Our people are from a reclusive family and any one of them is a one in a million master. How can they fail to kill a pair of mother and son?" The third elder was once again surprised. Everything seemed to have gone out of his control.
`

Chapter 939

“I’m not sure either. Maybe Fane just grew a lot stronger returning from the battlefield or he had someone helping him. Our men have heard of rumors that Fane has an excellent relationship with the Goddess of War from Middle Province. I suspect that either the Goddess of War has a hand in this, or the Taylor family is rich enough to hire better bodyguards to protect them now!” Lily speculated after she thought about it. “Then what will you do now?” The third Grand Elder frowned. “From the looks of it, Fane and Joan can’t stay!” “I’ve already assigned Patronum to take care of them. This time, he’ll be recruiting stronger fighters in bigger numbers!” Lily gave a frosty smile. “Even if my son is dead, I will never let Fane become the Woods family head. Never!” “Mmhmm. It should be fine since you’ve already assigned people to the job.” The third grand elder gave a small smile. Then he had his arms wrapped around Lily in a flash. “We haven’t been together in so long, babe. Let’s enjoy ourselves tonight. Don’t worry. I’ll send 200 men to help you find Lance tomorrow!” “Now we’re talking!” Lily rolled her eyes at him as he carried her onto the bed. “They’re out, they’re out!” At this moment, outside the villa where Fane and the others were staying, a few cars were parked nearby. Soon enough, a bodyguard in the car—who was from the Quinton family—immediately told the bodyguard beside him. “Excellent. The masked man isn’t out, only that man and woman have come out this time. They won’t be very strong fighters, probably. Heh. This will make our job easier!” The other bodyguard observed Fane and Selena as they emerged out of the house, grinning. The people in the car were extremely excited. Vroom! They waited until Fane and Selena took a few more steps forward, then the cars zoomed and screeched to a halt right beside them. 17 to 18 bodyguards from the Quinton family quickly emerged from the vehicles and circled Fane and Selena. “Who are you?” Fane noticed the delighted expressions on their faces, and he sensed that they did not come here out of goodwill. He furrowed his brows and asked. “Heh. You

offended Young Master Quinton, and you think that you can escape?" One of the bodyguards flashed a cold smile. "Our young master has his eyes on the woman here. As for you, he has his eyes on your life! Haha!"

Chapter 940

"Hah! Your young master has pretty good taste. He has his eyes on lots of things. It's a pity that he doesn't have the right to do so!" Fane guffawed when he heard that; disdain sharpened his gaze. "Let's get him first!" The bodyguard did not waste any more time talking. He extended an arm and latched his fingers onto Fane. "Ah!" The next second, Fane was catching the bodyguard's wrist. He twisted the other man's arm, and a sickening snap of bones breaking rang out. The bodyguard from the Quinton family immediately released an agonized yelp. He was in so much pain that all color was leached from his face, and he keeled over. "Do you have a death wish?" Another two bodyguards were stunned for a moment at the sight of such strength from Fane. They quickly recovered and lashed out at the same time, attacking him from both sides. Bang bang! Fane sent two fists flying in rapid succession. The two men flew backward in a split second. "No way!" The other bodyguards were all taken aback at the sight. They rushed forward, attacking Fane. Bang bang bang! The bodyguards were pretty skilled in martial arts. It was rare to find bodyguards of their caliber back in Middle Province, and a few of them were probably as strong as head commanders. However, they were nothing to Fane. All of them were downed in less than ten seconds. Quite a few of them were in so much pain that they fainted. A number of them had their ribs broken as well. "Go back and tell your master that we're not people he can offend that easily. So he better not come looking for trouble again. Otherwise, he probably won't have a chance to regret his decision!" Fane shot a cold stare at the men writhing on the ground. He spat those words before he took Selena's hand and stalked away. "Let's go!" The bodyguards were all in utter shock. They took their injured men and left the place in a hurry. "What!" In the garden

of a villa, Caleb was absolutely furious when he received the report from his bodyguards. “You’re telling me that those men were no match for him? He defeated more than a dozen of you, alone?” “That’s right, Young Master. We never expected him to be so strong either. His fighting prowess probably matches that of our assistant commander!” One of the bodyguards released a sigh. “Quite a few of us are still being hospitalized. More than a few have their ribs broken!” “We were careless. We never expected him to be so strong! Maybe that woman can fight as well. But they’re probably no match for the masked woman from the other day, so they didn’t show up then! Seems like they’re as strong as generals, really!” Caleb drew his brows together. His expression darkened. If that was the case, it meant that he would have no chance of getting that woman. “So you’re saying that the two were going out for a walk?” He thought about the situation, then Caleb could not help but ask.

Chapter 941

“Yes, Young Master! Why?” The bodyguard was confused. He did not understand why the young master would suddenly ask that question. The corners of Caleb’s lips curved upward. “In which direction? If they were walking, they should be nearby. They couldn’t have walked that far. Hmph. Since it’s going to be difficult to get that woman, so it seems like I’ll have to learn to share!” “Share?” The bodyguards before him exchanged glances. All of them were bewildered. “No need to think so much about it. Just tell me where he went!” Caleb spoke again. “They were walking toward Cornflower Street. Right, there’s a famous street there that attracts a lot of rich people. There are plenty of upscale neighborhoods around there, where there are plenty of villas!” One of the bodyguards replied after he thought about it, “I think it’s highly likely that they went there to stroll around Waltz Street!” “All right. Got it. Go down and take a rest and see Little Jake. Get him to withdraw one million bucks from the account, and divide the money for the injured men. Make sure all of you get a good rest!” Caleb gave his

orders and recruited three to four bodyguards before driving off. “Young Master Caleb, where are we going?” In the car, one of the bodyguards asked. Caleb gave a cold smile. “I’m going to look for Peace!” “That fatty?” The bodyguards were confused when they heard the reply. Peace loved physical beauty, but he did not have many friends because he was fat. Additionally, Young Master Peace Chaffman did not have a good reputation, so many other young masters could not be bothered to interact with him. However, the Chaffman family was a true blueblood family. In Swallow City, also known as the City of Martial Arts, they were a true second-class aristocratic family. They had plenty of fighters in the family. Meanwhile, the Quinton family was not even a third-class aristocratic family. True, he could rely on his uncle to kill Fane, the masked woman, and Selena but it meant that he would not even be able to get a single woman. He had been beaten and humiliated. He would never be at peace if he could not touch a single woman. That was why he could only go to Peace for help this time. The Chaffman family’s residence was not too far away, so Caleb quickly arrived at their villa and looked for Peace. “Heh. What a surprise, Young Master Quinton. What brings you here? I never thought I’d see the day where you would visit me!” Peace was truly like a pig, his cheeks were fat and blushing red. Yet he had two sexy women on both sides. His eyes narrowed into a smile; it was obvious that he was happy. It seemed that Caleb had been expecting a scene like this. He sat down on the side and smiled. “You’re so suave, Young Master Chaffman. It’s so early in the morning, yet you’ve already found yourself, two beautiful women. Tsk tsk. You’re so admirable!” “I am?” Peace was slightly taken aback. He gave a light push, and one of the women stumbled forward. “Why don’t you play around with one? You’re our guest now since you’re here. Of course, I must extend my hospitality!” Caleb was speechless for a moment, but he stroked the woman’s cheek, chucking. “These two women are indeed beautiful, hot and sexy, but they lack some sort of…aura,” he said, smiling. “I found a beauty the past two days who’s a true treasure in the trove. Her body, her face, and
her dignified aura—heh, your two beauties here are nothing compared to her!”

Chapter 942

When he heard this, the smile on Peace's face immediately dropped. Instead, he looked angry. Peace had met plenty of beautiful women before. He thought of himself as a connoisseur of true beauty, and that no normal person could match his eye. The two models he had found today were quite beautiful. He never thought that Caleb would comment that they were nothing compared to the beauty he had found. Before Peace could say anything, the two models were evidently unhappy too. "Young Master Quinton, you must be joking, right?" one of them said, her expression stony. "We're the top models for plenty of car showcases. And you're saying that we're nothing compared to this other woman? You're exaggerating!" "Heh. You two are good looking, but you lack a certain quality of a woman. A gentle aura, coupled with a sense of generosity—topped off with unrivaled beauty, the kind that immediately captures you when you see it. And the more you see it, the more enthralled you'll be!" Caleb maintained his smile. "If I, Caleb Quinton, spew a single lie," he said simply, "may the gods strike me!" "There's really a woman like that?" Peace's eyes brightened when Caleb swore. He instantly leaped to his feet and asked eagerly. "Of course. It's a pity that she already has a man though. How troublesome!" Caleb released a long sigh on purpose, speaking with a tinge of forlornness. "Heh, you came over just to tell me this, Young Master Quinton? To tell me that the women I have aren't as pretty as the one you saw?" Peace chuckled, obviously displeased. Caleb quickly waved his hands. "No, no. Don't misunderstand me, Young Master Chaffman. I had no such intentions. I was just overwhelmed after seeing her. Every time I think about her, I'm reminded that I can't touch her, and it's agonizing!" Peace slowly became interested as well. "There's really a woman like that? What's her name? Can you take me to see her, Young Master Quinton?" "Of course. She just went out—shopping, probably. Let's go and see. You'll expand your horizons, Young Master Chaffman!" Caleb was delighted. He was well aware that

there was no way Selena could run away once Peace was interested. He thought about it, then he added, “As for her name, I think she’s called Selena!” “Selena?” Peace was stunned. “Hmm. A good name!” “Young Master Chaffman? Then–then what about the two of us?” The two models suddenly clutched onto either one of Peace’s arms, simpering. “Heh. Go off first. Come see me another day!” Peace chuckled and took out a few thousand bucks, flinging it at the women. “Go buy yourselves a meal and take a good rest. I’ll be spoiling you in two days!” “You said it yourself, Young Master Chaffman. Don’t you go back on your word!”

Chapter 943

The two women immediately bent over and picked up the money. “Let’s go. Young Master Quinton, I’m really looking forward to seeing if this woman you speak of is as beautiful as you say she is!” Peace stroked his nonexistent chin and got ready to leave. Caleb noticed the bodyguards accompanying Peace, and he furrowed his brows. “Young Master Chaffman, are your bodyguards strong? Aren’t there too few of them? I’m telling you, you’ll probably want to find some way to get that woman once you see her!” “Hah, don’t worry. My bodyguards are pretty strong. They wouldn’t be hired otherwise.” Peace laughed. Then he added, “Speak no more, Young Master Quinton. The more you do, the more anxious I get. I really want to see her. If she truly is that beautiful, you’ve struck lottery!” Caleb chuckled. “Look at you. I knew that you like beautiful women, and I knew that you had exquisite taste. I just wanted to introduce her to you!” “Tell me, what do you want? Money? One million seems too little. If she’s that beautiful, I’ll give you one billion. How does that sound?” Peace gave a small smile as he spoke after he thought about it. He was well aware that Caleb would want some form of compensation, suddenly introducing a beautiful woman to him like that. Giving one billion bucks was no problem in exchange for a top-class woman, so long as he was satisfied. Besides, he would be establishing a friendship, and they might work together in the future. “Young Master

Chaffman, I've always admired you. I would never want money from you! I see you as my big brother!" Caleb smiled. "But of course I do want some small reward, telling you all this," he said. "This woman's husband is a strong fighter. All of my bodyguards were absolutely useless. F*ck. There were more than a dozen of them, and they couldn't even take him down. So I'll tell you straight, Young Master Chaffman—I was hoping that you could help me take that woman and kill her husband!" "So that's the case!" Peace came to a realization. "The bodyguards from the Quinton family are truly useless. They couldn't handle one man? Seems like the husband is probably as strong as a head commander or a major. Heh. Don't you worry, my bodyguards are anything but weak!" "Your words give me such reassurance!" Caleb was elated when he heard that. "You're truly reliable, Young Master Chaffman! From now on, you're my big bro. Heh. When we get this woman, you can have a taste of her first. I don't mind going later!" "Hah. Seems like you're getting antsy. You really take after me!" Peace guffawed and gently clapped a hand on Caleb's shoulder. "All right. I will recognize you like my little bro from now on. But if this woman isn't as beautiful as you promised she would be, I'll be beating you up for wasting my time!" Caleb's insides grew cold. He had long known that Peace was intelligent, but he was infamous for his mood swings as well. He needed to tread carefully around the fatty. If he accidentally riled the fatty up with his words, he would be signing a death warrant. It was because of this that he did not interact much with young masters from second-class aristocratic families. If not for the beautiful woman, he would never have thought about talking to Peace in the first place. "What's wrong? What are you thinking about? Getting cold feet now? Don't tell me you were bluffing just now?" Peace noticed that Caleb was momentarily stunned. His eyes curved into narrow slits, and his voice iced over.

Chapter 944

“I wasn’t bluffing. Not at all!” Caleb was so shocked that he quickly waved his hands. “Young Master Chaffman, think about it. I don’t even want the one billion bucks you offered. I just want that woman. Isn’t that an indication of that woman’s beauty already?” “Hah. I was just joking. Wanted to see you nervous!” Peace suddenly burst into laughter. Then he waved a hand. “Get on the car. We’ll go look around Waltz Street and see if she’s there. If not, we’ll just go straight to her place to grab her!” “You’re so decisive, Young Master Chaffman. You don’t waste a single second!” Caleb immediately flattered Peace. Soon enough, three Audis drove straight out of the entrance of the villa. “Oh, right. I really think that all women are gold diggers. Why don’t we try and see if we can use money to solve the issue first!” In the car, Peace smoked on a cigar, considering the situation. Then he spoke. “It might be difficult. The other day, I told them I would treat them to a meal—to whatever they liked, so long as she gave her number. They refused!” Caleb replied after thinking about it. Surprisingly, contempt swept over Peace’s expression. “You’re too naïve. You’re just treating them to a meal that costs—what, a million? Two million bucks? And you think you can get her just like that? You said it yourself. She’s such a beautiful woman. Plenty of men will have their eyes on her. Her own husband is probably rich too. Of course, that bit of money won’t have the slightest effect on her!” The corners of Peace’s mouth quirked upward. He took another long drag out of the cigar before saying, “I’ll give it a try later. I’ll offer her ten million bucks, then one billion. I don’t believe that she’ll refuse. Hah!” “One billion?” Caleb frowned. “Young Master Chaffman, isn’t one billion a bit too much just to bed her?” “What do you know? I won’t be running a loss if she’s as beautiful as you say she is. I’ll give her one billion and tell her to be with me. It’s not like I’ll sleep with her just one time!” Peace chuckled. He added, “Of course, she’ll be my woman if she’s willing to, and you can’t touch her. But I’ll let you try her out if she doesn’t agree—after I’m done with her, of course. Then we’ll kill her! I prefer obedient women. No way I’m keeping a defiant woman!” Panic suddenly

filled Caleb. What if that woman was really dazzled by the money and agreed to be with Peace? That would mean that he would have done all this for nothing. He would not get a single benefit at the end of the day. “Then– then what if she refuses despite the money?” After he thought about it, Caleb could not help but ask. “Hah. We’ll see what she’ll do from there. If one billion isn’t enough, I’ll offer two billion. If she refuses that, I’ll just get my men to take her away. Even the most beautiful woman on earth would be worth around that!” Peace guffawed. “I believe that plenty of women would be willing to accompany you so long as you spend a bit of money. And you can get any woman you want at any time!” Caleb’s features twisted into an unreadable expression when he heard this. She would probably easily agree to two billion bucks. It was a huge sum of money, after all.

Chapter 945

Soon, they found a place to halt their car. On their way there, they did not see Fane nor Selena. Perhaps, they had really gone to Waltz Street. “Let’s get out of the car. We’ll knock around Waltz Street, and if we don’t see that woman, then we’ll go to where they live!” Peace said with a wicked smile plastered on his face. Caleb gave the matter some thoughts and then reminded Peace. “Young Master Chaffman, that is a bad idea. It won’t work! I almost forgot to inform you that, other than Fane and Selena, there is another woman who is wearing a mask that blocks half of her face. That woman, wow, has a really hot body. She has a totally different aura and temperament compared to the woman that I told you about. The two are different types!” Peace’s eyes immediately lit up as bright as a lightbulb upon hearing Caleb's claim. “What the heck! Why did you only tell me now? There are two beautiful women, it wouldn’t be logical if I only want one of them! Why don't we get both of them?” However, a bitter smile hung at the corner of Caleb’s mouth. “Actually…I wanted to remind you to not go to where they live, this is because the hot woman’s combat prowess is totally another level. She is stronger than my second uncle, he is not even her opponent! My second uncle was beaten badly by her yesterday, and even got his finger cut off!” “What the f*ck? It can’t be! Your second uncle is a three-star King of War, right? He can’t even win against that woman?” Peace was stunned at this piece of information. “No wonder…no wonder you thought of coming to me. Heh! Young Master Quinton, it turns out that your second uncle couldn’t even defeat that woman. In that case, we can’t go to their house then. Alright, first we’ll get the first woman you told me, and as for the hot woman, I’ll get someone strong in my family to get her next time. This plan should be no problem!” “Yes, you should do that! There’s a lot of top-notch fighters in the Chaffman family, your family can definitely defeat that woman. Hmmm. With these bodyguards that you brought along today, it would be considered fortunate if they could take care

of that man. As for the woman that wears a mask, I guess she is at least a four-star Queen of War!" Caleb chuckled. The two strolled along Waltz Street for a while but did not see any sign of Fane nor Selena. They were a little disappointed. "Look, over there! The women's clothing store!" Suddenly, Caleb noticed two familiar figures coming out from a women's clothing store. He pointed in that direction and almost jumped for joy! Peace instantly looked in the pointed direction and his eyes brightened up. "Wow, wow, wow! I haven't even seen her face; her back is already making my heart beat frantically. And look at her silky hair and her alluring body. This is so amazing! She releases a noble yet amiable aura!" "Let's go! Chop chop!" Peace could not wait any longer. He gestured for everyone to follow him and marched toward Fane and Selena. Soon, a group of men chased up to Fane and Selena and stopped them from their path. "Young Master Quinton, heh, it's only this morning your bodyguards were badly beaten up. And now you're here again with a new batch of bodyguards?" Fane stared at the people before him. He could not help but let out a small laugh. "Didn't I ask your bodyguard to bring you a message? That you should stop pursuing! We're people that you can't afford to offend. Why are you here again with another batch of bodyguards? You're really like a roach, aren't you? Stubborn, annoying, and stinky!" Selena smiled in disdain as well. "A dozen of your men weren't even my husband's match this morning. Why on earth do you think only several of them could defeat my husband this time?" "Hmph! Do you think I'm that stupid?" Caleb snorted coldly. "This is Young Master Chaffman, and they're his personal bodyguards! They're no ordinary lousy fighters; their combat ability is surely a lot stronger than mine!"

Chapter 946

"I see. I thought they're your bodyguards. So, ya, you're getting some help from others, aren't you? Haha!" Fane could not hold back but let out a loud laugh. "Perfect! Only the word 'perfect' can be used to describe her! This

woman is stunning; she is basically a goddess!" Peace, on the other hand, could not be bothered about whose bodyguards and what bodyguards. His gaze was fixated at Selena's perfect face. He looked like a silly person, drooling over a beauty before him. "Stinky fatty, have you stared enough? If yes, then get lost!" Fane was annoyed by Peace's perverted gaze and face. He reprimanded impatiently. "Brat, watch your mouth! You certainly have a death wish, huh? How dare you talk to our young master in such a manner? Don't you know how wealthy and powerful our young master is?" One of Peace's bodyguards casted Fane a deadly stare as he barked. He looked like he was about to charge forward and strike. "Shush! Keep your voice low! Don't you dare frighten this beautiful lady!" To everyone's surprise, Peace yelled at that bodyguard. After he shut the bodyguard's mouth, he then wheeled around and laughed. "Hey, beauty, I desire you and I'll make you my woman. Don't worry, I'll pay you a mountain, 10 million, how about that?" Selena's tongue was tied at the situation, and she shot the other party a fierce and stoic glance. "Dream on, you fool!" "Oh, 10 million is too little, right? I guess that you'll definitely not agree to this amount, and if you did, I'll feel weird!" Peace had a playful look on his face, and then he offered again, "How about…100 million?" Selena was even more speechless and could not bother to continue the conversation anymore. The fierce and stoic glances that were shot at Peace stayed. "Still too little, right? Ha-ha! Good! I like this kind of prideful attitude! How about one billion? I've never offered such an amount before. As long as you leave this man, I'll give you a billion, sounds good right? And you don't have to worry about anything for the rest of your life!" Peace laughed aloud. Not only did he not get pissed off, but his fondness toward Selena grew even stronger. Young Master Quinton—who stood beside Peace—was icy with nervousness upon hearing Peace's offer. One billion, this price was too high. Before this, did Peace not say that he would offer at most 200 hundred million? Moreover, Peace expressed that if the other party did not agree to 200 million, he would take her away by force and share her with him. Caleb did not expect that Peace

had actually offered the woman such an exorbitant price—one billion! Such a price was considered as the most extortionate among the extortionate. If it were any woman, it would be difficult for them to refuse such a price. Even for those A-list celebrities or whosoever, they would nod their head and say yes to a price lower than this price. “Young Master Chaffman, didn’t you…you say before that you’d offer at most 200 million for even the most beautiful woman? How come you offered a billion this time?” Caleb immediately chimed in and reminded Peace, fearing that Selena would accept Peace’s exorbitant offer, then he would not have a chance to taste Selena. However, Peace’s face turned dull upon hearing Caleb’s voice. He retorted, “What do you know? This woman has captured my heart, so one billion is not a problem at all. Indeed, I said that to you before, but that was because I didn’t expect her to be so beautiful!” “One billion, right?” Selena suddenly voiced out in a gentle tone, with a smile hanging on her face. Peace’s legs suddenly went weak and he almost plopped onto the ground when he saw Selena smiled at him. He was even more into her right now. That smile sparked hope in Peace, he thought that Selena would say yes to his offer, so he nodded aggressively like a chicken pecking grains on the floor. “Yes, my lady, yes, one billion! I’ll immediately transfer one billion to you as long as you agree!” “Oh, is that so? But sorry, you’ll never get a yes from me, even if you offer 10 billion or 100 billion!” Selena did not give the other party any chance. She rejected Peace’s offer cold-heartedly while her smile turned from gentle to cold. Young Master Quinton heaved an obvious sigh of relief after hearing Selena’s answer, but at the same time, he thought that this woman was really dumb and insensitive. How could she not think through the matter and consider it at all? Peace was the Young Master of the Chaffman family, moreover, it was one billion! Now, she did not only turn down an attractive offer but has also offended Young Master Chaffman.

Chapter 947

True enough, the corners of Peace's mouth that were once lifted, slowly flattened and soon a gloomy sensation dawned on his face. "If money can solve the matter, I wouldn't choose to use force, I'm that kind of person. Heh, Miss Pretty, I've given you the opportunity to avoid that but you didn't seize it. Since we can't come to an agreement then don't blame me for being brutal!" His eyes were fierce and ruthless. He waved his hand and yelled out an order, "Kill the man and take the woman!" "Yes, Young Master!" The bodyguards put on wicked grins and took a few steps toward Fane and Selena. They were pumped up to kill. Fane walked forward and stood in front of Selena. He clenched his fist tightly and swung his arm at the two bodyguards. "Humph! Kiddo, look at the flabby body of you, you…" One of the two bodyguards snorted coldly. Then both of them balled their fist and blasted head-on with Fane. Bang! Unfortunately, before the bodyguard could finish his sentence, both of them were blasted several meters back and smashed heavily onto the ground far from them. "Pfft!" The two gushed out a mouthful of blood when they hit the ground. The color drained out of their face; their face turned white. "No f*cking way! One of them is on par with a major and another is comparable to a marshal!" Surprise surged through Peace; he was in a complete state of shock. His eyes widened and his jaw dropped to the ground. "Young Master Quinton, didn't you say that this brat isn't that powerful?" Caleb almost spewed blood when he heard that. "Young Master Chaffman, I didn't say that this brat isn't powerful. I clearly told you that dozens of my bodyguards weren't his opponent and I suggested for you to bring elite fighters from your family. But you, yourself claimed that it's enough to bring these few bodyguards!" Peace was weighed down by dread as well. "F*cking d*ckhead. This bodyguard is as strong as a marshal and should be competent enough to kill this man. How am I supposed to know he's not his opponent at all! Looking at this brat's fighting power, I guess he is as competent as a king of war!" Bang! Bang! The remaining two bodyguards were skilled fighters as well; their combat prowess was quite good. However, even with such combat prowess, it was

nothing but trash before Fane's eyes. After a few seconds, like the previous two, the two flew backward, spewed blood and their face went white and unsightly. "Dear Young Masters, guess it's your turn now!" Fane stretched his fingers and rubbed his fists. He looked at both the young masters attentively, with a wicked wide grin plastered on his face. Caleb was startled that he jumped back a little. He mumbled in terror, "Brat, I…do you know…I'm…" He wanted to tell the other party that he was the Young Master of the Quinton family. He had said so before and it had worked every single time. Nevertheless, this time, before he could utter the remainder of his thought, realization dawned upon him, that these words would definitely be useless on Fane. Yesterday his second uncle confronted Fane and that did not even work, what more this young master title? The other party definitely was not afraid of him. Pow! Sure enough, in the next second, Fane punched harshly into Caleb's face. Blood immediately sprayed out of his nose and he plopped onto the ground. He was like the bodyguards, spewing mouthfuls of blood and several of his teeth fell out. Peace wheeled his head and stared at the miserable-looking Caleb behind him. Terror stabbed his heart, and his body was wobbly with fear that the fats on his chubby face was bouncing uncontrollably. "Brat, Young Master Quinton's family is nowhere near mine. I'm the young master of a second-class aristocrat family in this Swallow City! Hmph! If you dare touch a single strand of my hair, you'll pretty much be done for!" Peace barked with a feeble and shaky voice. He knew very well that the Chaffman family was very powerful, but at the same time, he was also afraid of a man like Fane, who did not fear death. He was unlucky to meet such a man. Bang! Fane did not bother to continue the useless conversation with the other party, instead, he swung his leg and kicked Peace in his thick belly.

Chapter 948

Young Master Quinton was as fat as a swine in others' eyes. He was said to be about 200 pounds. However, he was as light as a feather when he received

a head-on kick from Fane, that he flew backward several meters then only fell onto the ground. Bang! Caleb endured the pain, gritted his teeth, and got on his feet, only to be knocked down by Peace who flew backward in his direction. He plopped onto the ground again, causing a secondary injury and another mouthful of blood spurted out. It was such a miserable scene. After teaching the other party a lesson, only then Fane walked over and looked at the two young masters who were lying painfully on the ground. “I, Fane Woods, ain’t someone bad; I’m very kind-hearted. But you, this ugly fatty, dream to get your hands on my wife, huh? You’re like a toad lusting after a swan’s flesh—asking for too much without looking at yourself. How dare you hit on my wife, you’re basically looking for death!” After saying that, he paused for a moment to give the matter some thoughts, then he uttered again, “Let’s take today’s incident as a valuable lesson for you. I hope you’ll behave from now on, otherwise, the result wouldn’t be pretty and you might drag your family down into this mud too. I understand that living is difficult and I’m the kind that is willing to give second chances. But if you do not cherish this second chance, then don’t shove the blame unto me when you and your family disappear from this earth!” “My gosh! Who the heck is this brat? Such a bully. He even dared to beat up Young Master Chaffman! Doesn’t he know that he is the young master of a second-class family!” “You’re right! Even some young masters of second-class families have to pay respect to Young Master Chaffman when they meet him on the street. They all know that this Young Master Chaffman is vengeful and merciless. But this man actually dared to beat him up so badly!” Many onlookers who commented loudly were wealthy and authoritative people, hence they naturally recognized the two young masters. They were all afraid of these two young masters, especially Young Master Chaffman; he was someone they dare not offend and were not hesitant to stay far away from him. Little did they expect a more reckless yet ruthless person who dared to teach him a lesson. “Let’s go, dear!” Fane smiled warmly at Selena, held her hand, and walked away from the scene. After a few minutes, they halted at a place that

looked like a Chinese medicine store. There was a notice on the door, ‘For sale’. The lot was quite spacious and well-decorated, but the business seemed to be doing badly that they needed to sell it off. “Dear, why don’t we open a Chinese pharmacy? We don’t know what kind of business we want to do anyway. So we can open a Chinese apothecary and others will know we’re providing Chinese medical treatment!” Fane pondered about it and then spilled it slowly. “Hmmm. This is possible, but I’m afraid that I couldn’t help you much in this field and you’ll be burned out! After all, I have zero medical knowledge.” A bitter smile plastered on Selena’s face. She paused for a moment then continued, “And nowadays Chinese medicine is not that popular anymore. It’d be hard for us to earn.” “Hehe, dear, you thought so thoroughly! But the references you have are only applicable for those common and average Chinese doctors. Don’t forget that your hubby is a genius doctor. For those diseases and illnesses that are untreatable by western medicine, I’m confident that I can treat them. Slowly we’ll gain fame and they’ll be willing to pay for our treatment even if it’s exorbitantly expensive, right? Or have you forgotten that back in the Middle Province, I’ve treated quite a number of weird diseases?” Fane chuckled nonchalantly in return. “Alright then. Let’s head in and take a look around!” Selene bobbed her head and walked into the store together with Fane. This Chinese medicine store was called Will’s Apothecary. The decoration inside was well-maintained and there was a courtyard with a row of chambers behind the store. Obviously, the price would not be cheap. When they stepped into the store, a huge sigh of defeat rang through the air—it was from the owner here. “I can’t really do much now, this is this month's salary and you don’t have to come to Will’s tomorrow onwards. Nowadays it’s very hard for Chinese medicine to survive, everyone only trusts western medicine. And I guess it’s difficult to sell Will’s to others, this store is too big!” The owner was talking defeatedly to an old-aged doctor. The old-aged Chinese doctor sighed together with the owner. “Yes. In fact, Chinese medical knowledge is so broad and profound. There are so many illnesses that can’t be treated

by Western medicine but possible with Chinese medicine. Moreover, Chinese medicine gives little to no side effects on our human body. It's such a shame that this knowledge is whittling down and fading out. People only go to big hospitals when they're sick!"

Chapter 949

"This gentleman is right and insightful!" Fane nodded in satisfaction and chortled. "Are the two of you here to seek a doctor?" The old-aged Chinese doctor immediately went up and served Fane and Selena when he noticed they entered the store. "No. We saw the notice outside. Isn't this place going to be sold? I'm interested in that. How much is it?" Fane returned the doctor with a gentle smile. "Sir, this place is in a strategic location, and it's very wide and spacious inside! Let's go in and I'll show you around, shall we?" The owner of Will's Apothecary went up to them immediately after noticing Fane's interest in the place. Although he felt that the possibility of the other party taking over this place was highly unlikely, he still put on the warmest smile and served them. After all, it was rare for others to be interested in a place like this. "Good idea! Let's look around." Fane nodded in agreement and followed behind the owner for a tour around the apothecary. When they came out after they were done, Fane popped the question directly, "How much does it cost? And could you also let me know where to get those Chinese medicine supplies?" "Don't worry, Sir. All the seller's contact information is recorded in this notebook!" The owner handed a notebook to Fane and then added, "About the selling price for this place, I don't want to earn, so one million will do. I've spent more than that for renovation, but you seem very sincere, so I'll not ask for more. One million will suffice but I've to tell you that, this location is strategic and every inch is worth gold. I've paid the rental 3 years in advance when I first rented and it cost 10 million annually. Also, these Chinese herbs have value too, hence, the total price will be more than 30 million bucks!" The owner carefully spilled out the details, fearing that the numbers would scare Fane to death. "Young

man, if you paid the 30 million bucks, you'd not have to worry about the rent for the next three years. Then when the contract ends after 3 years, you can negotiate again with the landlord to renew the lease…" The owner added. "Hmmm. How about this, I'll pay you 100 million and this place will be mine. I'll recruit a few helpers tomorrow to do the cleaning and administrating stuff. Then I'll just change the store's name, and that's all!" Fane was silent for a few seconds then suddenly spilled out. "100 million?" The owner was utterly shocked. He was initially prepared to lose a big amount of money including the rental fee for the next three years. He believed that nobody would want this place as it was too big and pricey, and he would be elated if he managed to sell it for 30 million. He truly did not expect that the young man before him had offered 100 million. "Sir, you…you're not joking, right?" The owner's Adam apple jumped as he swallowed his saliva hard. "It doesn't matter. I might be able to earn 100 million back in a day or two in the future. And for me, 100 million is just a small amount of money!" Fane, however, put on an unconcerned look. "Besides, you seem like a good person to me. So, that's why I'm willing to offer 100 million!" The owner was grateful that his voice trembled. "Young man, 100 million is too much. I understand that you must be from a rich family, and money is not a problem for you. But how could you say that you can earn the amount back in a day or two just to put my mind at ease? You don't have to tell such a white lie. I understand the situation." "Hand me your bank card, please." Fane stretched out his hand. "Sir, I didn't lie to you. People certainly would not spend 100 million for treatment. But for cases like cancer, incurable diseases, or any illnesses that threaten their lives, they'll be willing to spend a billion, not to mention 100 million."

Chapter 950

"Young man, you're not bragging, are you? You know how to cure cancer?" The owner's voice trembled with excitement after hearing Fane's words. He wondered if he had heard it wrong. "Young man, aren't you talking big?

Even big and prominent hospitals can't treat cancer. With the current medical advancement, cancer is incurable, especially for those with stage four cancer!" The old-aged Chinese doctor stood up from his armchair and walked slowly over to the group. His legs were wobbly, and his voice was shaky. "Heh. Didn't both of you discuss that a moment ago? That in fact, Western medicine is not as good as Chinese medicine in many aspects, especially those big hospitals who only rely on all sorts of machines to treat diseases. If technologies and the machines were to be taken away, they may not even be able to figure out what exactly is the illness, right?" Fane laughed wholeheartedly, with a bemused look on his face. "Yes, that's what we discussed, but I didn't expect for you to have such perception at such a young age!" The old-aged Chinese doctor looked at Fane with reverence and respect in his eyes. "If what you said is true, that you're able to treat and cure those strange and incurable diseases, even cancer, then you can be called a genius or miraculous doctor!" "Haha! Well. These names don't really bother me!" Fane chuckled excitedly and then said to the owner, "So…what now? Is this place still for sale?" "Of course! I'm old but not a fool. Haha! It looks like I've met my savior today!" The owner laughed elatedly together with Fane and then he gave his bank account number to Fane. Fane transferred 100 million to the owner right after he got the account number. "Alright. Well. It just so happens that I need people here. Doctor, if you're willing, please continue to work here tomorrow. I'll hire a few more helpers to assist you. What do you think?" Fane faced the old-aged doctor and proposed his thought. "Sir, you…you're not planning to test my medical knowledge? Are you going to hire me without knowing the level of my medical skill? What if I can't take on this important role?" The old-aged herbalist felt a bit flattered. How could he have imagined that Fane would ask him to come to work tomorrow? How much did this kiddo trust him? "If you're gonna employ a man, don't doubt him; if you doubt him, don't hire him! Haha! I trust you. Besides, I've heard your exchange with the owner and I believe that you're a great doctor with professional medical

ethics. An ethical doctor wouldn't be so poor in his skills." Fane responded patiently then he added with a humble laugh. "Tomorrow I'll recruit some helpers and I'll change the store sign, and… I think that's all. Nothing else to change!" "Alright, alright! Thank you so much, sir. You're truly my savior!" The old-aged doctor was grateful that he thanked Fane again and again. "Oh, right. Doctor, how much is your monthly salary now?" Fane asked again after some thought popped into his mind. "Well, it's about 12 thousand right now. As you know, Swallow City is an expensive city. Though my children are working, I still hope that I can contribute a little to the family and not burden them so much. So I decided to continue working to earn some money and to kill some time as well!" The old-aged doctor gave a small smile and answered. "I see. Hmmm. Starting from this month, you're gonna get 30 thousand per month! I'm gonna get two to three assistants for you so that you can take turns to take a break, and I'll give those assistants 20 thousand per month." Fane blurted out his carefully planned thought. "Sir…sir, 30 thousand is too much. I… This…"

Chapter 951

The old-aged doctor was startled at the amount. "Sir, how can I address you? I know you're a good man, but 30 thousand is too much!" "Oh, not at all, not at all! I'll need to trouble you to look after the store today! And my name is Fane Woods!" Fane chuckled and then looked at his lovely wife who was standing beside him. "I'll leave with my wife first." He then added. "Alright, Mr. Woods. I'm Terrance Chaffry, just call me Terry." Terrance chortled warmly and sent the two off at the entrance. "Fane, I know you're trying to help, but you're too generous, don't you think so?" When they got out from the apothecary and on their way back home, Selena could not hold back but tease Fane. "You're too generous that you scare the old doctor!" "Haha! It's okay. Terry and his family don't seem to be doing well. And it's obviously not easy to survive in Swallow City. After all, to own a house in Swallow City is challenging for ordinary people and it's indeed burdensome. Terry

is a kind man; he works just to lessen the burden on his son's shoulders." The corners of Fane's mouth faintly curled upward. "Sigh! Parents will always worry about their children!" Fane whispered with emotions. "You're right. We're not lacking any money anyway, at the same time, we can help people! Besides, once we make a name for your medical skills here, I believe that all those rich people will come to us and by that time we'll earn back all the losses!" Selena smiled at Fane. Fane could definitely be called a genius doctor with his outstanding medical skills. And with such skill, Fane could make as much money as he wanted, unless he had no desire to do so. The couple soon went back to their home. At this time, Caleb arrived at his home as well but with a severe nosebleed. Initially, Caleb thought that with the aid from Peace, getting Selena would be a piece of cake. However, little did he expect to get bruises on his face in the end; he did not even get to touch a single strand of Selena's hair! Never mind the bruises, now that he finally gets to rest on his bed in a luxurious villa he bought for himself, he was worried sick about what would happen next. He knew his second uncle's character very well. He was a three-star king of war. How could he accept the fact that he was beaten up badly and had his finger was cut off; he certainly would not let that matter go. His second uncle—Hunter Moore—was someone with little fame. He was friends with several kings of war who were more powerful than he was. The last time he met his uncle in the backyard, he was drinking with a five-star king of war! What if his second uncle brought a few elite fighters to where Fane and Selena live and killed the two beauties—Selena and Lana, then he would not be able to taste the two beauties anymore! Caleb was feeling unfair that he was beaten up twice but did not even have the chance to touch those women once. "No, no, no. I have to go find my second uncle tomorrow. But I'll rest up a bit today!" Caleb mumbled to himself after thinking about the matter. Then he took a few painkillers to ease his pain so that he could rest up and heal faster. Perhaps, it was because he had failed twice in a row and he was uncontented. Moreover, he knew very well in his heart that based on Young Master

Chaffman's temperament, he would definitely not let the matter go. After all, the Chaffman family was a prominent family and has quite a few elite fighters. At this time, Hunter and five other kings of war were drinking and chatting in a hotel bar. These five kings of war, in addition to the two kings of war that were with him that day, there were three other kings of war—two four-star kings of war and a five-star king of war! "Sir Moore, what happened to your hand?" One of the kings of war noticed Hunter's missing finger and asked in surprise. "I met a female fighter, and I don't know if she has five-star or four-star combat prowess. She is quite strong, and I could not defeat her!" Hunter bellowed angrily, with his fists and teeth both gritted tightly.

Chapter 952

"Are you f*cking kidding me? Sir Moore, you're not her opponent?" A four-star king of war had a surprised look plastered on his face. "There're many elite fighters here in the Swallow City, but Sir Moore is not some commoner that anyone could just defeat! What's more, the other party is a woman! How can it be?" Hunter bobbed his head in agreement. "I didn't expect that the other party would be this powerful. The other day, they humiliated my nephew, compelling him to kneel under the hot sun for a long time. They beat him and his bodyguards up too! So I went over in hope to help my nephew out, but I seriously didn't expect that woman to be this strong and to defeat me in the end!" After hearing this new piece of information, three kings of war exchanged glances to convey certain messages between them. They were not stupid at all; they knew and understood Hunter's and his nephew's characters inside out. Hence they naturally knew who was at fault. After analyzing the situation, the three assumed that the nephew was probably head over heels for the other party's beauty and wanted to own her which lead to such an incident. Moreover, Hunter was very protective of his nephew. Everyone knew that. Just that the thought of Hunter getting defeated and have one finger chopped off did not cross their minds. Hunter

had actually gone to them for help this time! “Sir Moore, you’re the only one who has fought with the other party, so you naturally know how good their combat power is!” The five-star king of war chimed in with a rhetorical question. He gave a faint smile. “Hmmm, I guess the woman should be on par with a four-star king of war! But it doesn’t matter whether she is comparable to a four-star or a five-star, if we all join forces and attack them together, it shouldn’t be any problem!” Hunter nodded and raised his arm with a glass of beer in his hand. “My dear brothers, as you know, I, Hunter Moore, rarely ask favors from others. But this time, it seriously affected my pride and ego as a king of war! So you guys must give me a hand!” “Don’t worry. We’re brothers and we have fought together on the battlefield. So we’ll definitely help you!” For the sake of reputation and image, the five-star king of war was somewhat forced to nod his head and agree to Hunter’s favor. Since a five-star king of war had promised to avenge Hunter, the other two four-star king of war naturally had their tongue-tied but proceeded to smile and nod to show agreement. After all, what Hunter said was true, he rarely asked for favors from others. For a prideful king of war to open his mouth and beg for help, it was not easy. The group soon bottomed up couples of beers. “Alright. I’ll treat everyone to a karaoke night! Also, I’ve sent my men to scout where the other party lives. Tomorrow at nine o’clock sharp, we’ll gather together at the Dragon Phoenix Skyscraper, then go over to their house and end them!” Hunter shot up from his chair and yelled his lungs out, with his fist clenched tightly. “Yes!” All kings of war stood up and echoed with Hunter. They possessed a strong aura that nobody else would be able to emit. The next morning, Caleb woke up and found that his soreness and wounds had recovered quite a bit. He then immediately brought a few bodyguards and drove to his second uncle’s house. Soon, he arrived at his second uncle’s villa. “Mr. Wallace, is my uncle inside?” Caleb quickly approached Mr.Wallace—who was the butler of Hunter’s residence—and inquired about his uncle’s whereabouts with a smile on his face. “Umm. He’s already gone out; I think about ten or twenty minutes

ago!” “I think he went out with a few kings of war, to somewhere I’m not too sure. Oh right! Yesterday he met with the kings of war and had a few drinks together!” Mr. Wallace added as he recalled. “Oh sh*t!” Caleb cursed and slapped his thighs right after hearing the news. He woke up slightly later than usual this morning, it must be due to his injuries. He did not expect his uncle to act so fast that he had sought help from other kings of war and went straight to find Fane and Selena. He initially thought that he could rest up a bit and come over this morning to inform Hunter that Fane had offended the Chaffman family, and perhaps they could wait patiently for the Chaffmans to make a move. When shepherds quarrel, the wolf has a winning game; they could be the wolf that benefits from the situation. At least, this way, he would have the chance to taste those two beauties. After all, he knew Young Master Chaffman’s character well. If Peace wanted to kill the women, he would have had fun nights with them before killing them! On the other hand, according to his second uncle’s temperament, he would not care about fun nights nor fooling around. They would go straight for the other parties’ heads; after all, they were people who thought they were righteous and just. It was impossible for them to do such dirty deeds. Therefore, if the second uncle and the kings of war were to behead the other party, then he would lose the chance to…

Chapter 953

“Dammit! I was too late! Few minutes late!” Caleb let out a defeated sigh and he was rendered speechless. “Young Master Quinton, what do you mean by you’re too late?” Mr. Wallace was confused at Caleb’s utterance, not comprehending what Caleb meant by that. “It has nothing to do with you!” Caleb cast Mr. Wallace a glare and blurted. After the last syllable of his word dropped, Caleb got into his car and was ready to drive to Fane’s residence to witness the other party’s fallen bodies. This time his second uncle was not alone; he brought several kings of war with him. These combined forces were nothing but splendidly formidable and frightening.

Hence, Caleb was convinced that today would be the other party's last day on this earth. A total of six kings of war gathered in front of Fane's residence a few minutes ago. "Isn't this area new? And these villas as well?" One of the kings of war furrowed while trying to peep into the enclosed villas. "That's right. But I didn't know that there is a person who is as strong as a four-star king of war living here!" Another king of war chimed in and gave his two cents. The group stood before the entrance of Fane's residence, however, they were stopped by two bodyguards at the entrance. "Gentlemen, may I know your purpose here?" One of the bodyguards stepped forward and inquired about the group's identities. These bodyguards followed King of War Skyler Celestino to the Swallow City. They were his disciples and each of them was competent and has strong combat prowess. "We don't want to kill innocent people! You can either move aside and let us in or hand over three of them to us! A woman wearing a mask, a man and another beautiful woman! The man is called Fane and the beautiful woman is called Selena!" King of War—Hunter Moore—raised his head slightly as he commanded in a cold and disdain voice. "Hand them over?" A few vertical lines formed between the bodyguard's brows. It was obvious that this group of six was not here for a friendly matter. "May I know what's the purpose of you meeting our master?" One of the bodyguards asked. "Humph! What's the purpose? Of course, it's to grant them their death wish!" Hunter snorted coldly and spitted his thoughts. "Hand them over to us now! All of us here are kings of war, you two are certainly not our opponents and we don't want to kill weaklings! Their lives are what we came for!" The bodyguard who blocked their way into the residence had a confused look on. "Sir, if you want to kill the three of them, I'm afraid that it's an impossible task. Or at least you should first defeat our captain of bodyguards!" "The captain of bodyguards? Get him here then! Then I'll see if he can defeat all of us!" Hunter leered frostily. "Alright, I'll get him over!" One of them quickly ran off into the area. At this time, Skyler was enjoying his tea leisurely in the courtyard. However, he was not used

to relaxing; he felt odd having so much free time recently, and eventually, he got bored. At that very moment, his disciple ran to him, articulated huffingly. “Master, there’re a few people who called themselves kings of war, yelling to kill Master and Mistress Woods and Goddess of War!” “Ha-ha! What a joke!” Skyler hollered, then he stood up from his chair, cracking his fingers. “Let’s go and meet them!”

Chapter 954

“Master, there’s six of them and I can recognize one of them, but the other five, I have no idea who they are! If you go out and fight them, wouldn’t this be a bad idea?” The bodyguard cast a wan smile and doubted Skyler’s decision. “You know one of them? Hmmm. Then do I know them?” Skyler listened attentively to his disciple and questioned with a frown. “Oh, you definitely know this person! He used to be your subordinate. But he certainly doesn’t know me!” The bodyguard then continued with a mixture of feelings. “It’s Sir Miles Stone, you do remember, don’t you? He was not only your subordinate, you’ve even saved his life before!” “Ah! It’s him!” As soon as Skyler heard of the name, he was excited and could not wait to meet this good old friend. However, after striding for a few steps, he stopped. He suddenly remembered that the other party was not here to hang out but to look for trouble. If he were to go out like this, the other party would be embarrassed in front of the other kings of war. After giving some thought to the matter, he asked his disciple again, “The one who yelled for Fane’s head was not him, right? Miles is a nice and kind-hearted guy, he’d never offend Fane, Selena, and Lana. It’s ridiculous!” “The one who yelled was not him; it’s a guy with a missing finger. Probably this person was beaten up by Master Woods before, and that’s why he went to Sir Stone for help!” The bodyguard breathed out a wan smile. He was certainly confused about the whole situation, after all, he and the other disciples were only here as bodyguards because they followed Master Skyler. Skyler was a dignified and honorable man with a high social position. He was a real eight-star king

of war and his combat prowess was said to be on par with some of the nine-star kings of war! No one would ever believe that such a strong person would be willing to follow Fane and serve as his bodyguard. The disciples knew that Fane was the personal doctor of the Nine Great Gods of War. However, since Fane was only a doctor; the bodyguard did not think that Master Skyler should behave submissively toward Fane. Only when they have arrived and settled down in Swallow City that Master Skyler revealed the shocking news to them—that Fane was not at all the personal doctor of the Nine Great Gods of War, but he was the Supreme Warrior, who was also the master of Nine Great Gods of War! Besides, Fane's attainments in medical skills and knowledge were way beyond Ethan Haays's; that Ethan would never be on par with Fane in the medical area. Nevertheless, Master Skyler had made them keep this a secret. Unless the Supreme Warrior revealed his identity himself, otherwise, nobody should say anything about his identity. Therefore, when the bodyguard watched the king of war screaming and yelling to kill Fane, he felt funny and at the same time, pathetic for the other party. To seek trouble with Fane, would not this be digging a grave for oneself? If they had pissed off the Supreme Warrior, with a single swing of Fane's arm, all of them would be lying on the ground, lifelessly. "Hmmm. If I were to go out and teach them a lesson, Miles would lose his image and reputation. He'd be embarrassed beyond measure. How about this, you bring him in." Skyler leisurely plopped his butt onto the seat again after he analyzed the situation thoroughly and waited casually in the courtyard, enjoying good tea. "Brat, where's your so-called captain of bodyguards? Where is he?" Hunter cursed loudly after seeing that the bodyguard came out alone, without anyone next to him. Hunter felt a flicker of irritation. The bodyguard smiled and then only bowed before the group of kings of war. "Our Captain said that he wanted to meet Sir Stone in private, and he believed that after Sir Stone has met him, Sir Stone'd change his mind!" "Heh! He's only a captain of bodyguards, why would Sir Stone change his mind because of him! What a joke!" A one-star king of war—

who was close to Hunter—clasped his hand in front of his chest and sneered sarcastically. “That’s right, who does he think he is? Tell him to get out here himself. Don’t tell me he’s a pussy and is afraid of us, that’s why he is hiding inside like a scaredy-cat? Another four-star king of war echoed and laughed. It was ridiculous at the same time funny in his point of view.

Chapter 955

For whoever who possessed combat power comparable to a king of war was certainly not going to volunteer to be a bodyguard. So the other party was obviously pretending to be a king of war, but in reality, he was probably afraid, at the same time, did not want to admit weakness due to his image. Thus, he had asked Miles Stone to go in, so that he could pay Miles off and Miles would let him off the hook. “Heh! I’m a five-star king of war, and you’re making me go in to meet him? Are you sure?” Miles snorted frostily, his face was releasing an aura of resentment. “Brat, hurry up and ask your Captain to come out, or else I’ll end your life here!” Hunter got a little impatient. He stepped forward, choked the bodyguard, and lifted him up high in mid-air. Hunter thought that the bodyguard would wet his pants out of fear. Nonetheless, the other party did not even show a hint of fear, but rather he shot Hunter a deadly stare. “If you want to kill, then kill. Do you think I’m afraid of death? But I need to tell you that, if you kill me right here, all of you will regret it later, and all of you will have to compensate me with your lives!” “Hunter, don’t kill him!” The boldness of the bodyguard suddenly woke Miles up, perhaps, it was not that simple. After ordering Hunter not to kill the bodyguard, Miles said to the bodyguard, “Lead me to your Captain. If he is just a useless prawn, I’ll kill him on the spot. I hate it when people lie to me!” Only then did Hunter put the bodyguard down. “Let’s go in!” The bodyguard cast another fierce glare at Hunter, then only he brought Miles into the residential area. After a few minutes, Miles and the bodyguard arrived at the courtyard, under a big tree. They met with a man who was enjoying the breeze and drinking tea there.

He was about 40 or 50 years old. “Hiss!” When Hunter could finally see the other party clearly, he instantly recognized him. Miles sucked in a breath of shock and stumbled a few steps forward. He rubbed his eyes repeatedly to clear his vision as though the scene before him was blurry. “Oh my freaking God, Sir Celestino, is that you? It’s you, right? Why are you here?” Skyler looked at the other party and commanded with a strong aura, “Come, sit down and talk. Tell me, what brings you here? And why did you want to find fault with our Master?” “No way! Sir Celestino, you’re an eight-star king of war! Why are you here? Why have you become the captain of bodyguards? Am I seeing this correctly? Aren’t you supposed to be in Middle Province right now?” Miles sat down beside Skyler. Shock and confusion clouded his thoughts. Not only did Skyler became a bodyguard, but he called the person behind him, his Master. Did that mean the person behind him was even more powerful than Skyler? Or was he some sort of high-status person? Otherwise, how could it be possible for an eight-star king of war like Skyler to call this person Master? “Hehe, you don’t have to squeeze your brain juice thinking about this. We arrived a few days ago, and we plan to go around the city for some sightseeing and fun. Did I explain myself clearly?” Skyler laughed out loud and then added, “So…what now? Do you still want to proceed with your plan? To kill my master? Our Master’s position and identity is not something you could ever imagine nor you could ever offend. If you want to take his life, first you’ll have to possess the ability to kill me first!” “Oh, no, no, no! Brother Skyler, how could I ever be stronger than you? Besides, I was your subordinate and you even saved my life before! How could I possibly have the guts to fight you? Even if you’ve given me a hundred or thousand of guts, I wouldn’t dare lay a finger on you! You’re my savior, I could never fight you!” Miles was in a complete state of panic. He waved both his head and hand to strengthen his statements. “Hehe, no more fighting or killing my Master then?” Skyler chortled at Miles’s gesture and asked. “No more fighting, no more killing your Master! I came here today because Hunter and I are pretty close, that’s

why I thought of helping him out. In fact, that nephew of his is not a dignified man in the first place. We all know that!" Miles waved his hands again and then added, "I'll go out in a moment and ask them to leave." "Good then. It looks like I don't have to do anything!" Skyler gave a warm smile and stretched his back. "Actually, it's been a long time since I last fought. I'm really not used to it anymore. Look, my hands are shaking because I've not been fighting!"

Chapter 956

"Don't, please don't, Sir Celestino! Your hands must not shake, if they do, we'll be in trouble!" Miles did not know whether to cry or laugh at the situation. Then he was suddenly overwhelmed with emotion. "Sir, I really didn't expect to see you here. Okay! It's set now, I'll come here again tomorrow!" "You're coming here again tomorrow?" Skyler smiled faintly. Miles burst out in laughter. "Haha, I'll come over to visit you tomorrow. Let's have some drinks and talk. I couldn't do it today, because there are a few people waiting for me outside!" "I see. But you can't leave right now! I've poured you a cup of tea, you have to at least finish it before you leave!" Miles was one of his close subordinates. They have both experienced life and death moments on the battlefield. Hence, Skyler was in a good mood after meeting Miles. "Haha! Alright then!" Miles chatted with Skyler for a while, then bottomed up the tea in front of him, only then did he walk toward the gate by himself. "Why isn't Sir Stone back yet?" Hunter and the others who were waiting outside were growing more and more impatient. Miles had been inside for almost ten minutes, which made the others feel strange. "It can't be that something happened, right?" The four-star king of war guessed with his brows ceasing together. "This is bad! They know we're here and the toughest opponent is Sir Stone. So, they've requested him to go inside alone to siege and assassinate him! They have the number; they might be able to kill him! In this case, our overall strength is weakened and we might be in trouble!" The other four-star king of war chimed in. Hunter's

face turned unsightly at the analysis. If Sir Stone was killed, their overall combat power would be weakened instantly. “Let’s go! Let’s go inside and help Sir Stone. We can’t let them weaken our force! Motherf*cker! They’re cunning foxes!” The one-star king of war waved his hand and yelled. But, inwardly he was frightened to death. At this time, a figure resembling Miles slowly appeared within their sight. The corners of Miles’s mouth curled upward as he walked toward the group. “He’s here! Sir Stone is here!” Everyone let out a huge sigh of relief when they learned that Miles was safe and sound. After all, he was the only five-star king of war here, and the only one who could possibly defeat the woman with the mask—who was said to have the combat power of a five-star king of war. Therefore, Miles played a vital role in the group; if it were not for him, the remaining kings of war would not come along today! “Sir Stone, what took you so long? Why did the so-called captain call you over? Don’t tell me he’s trying to pay you some money to cease fire?” Hunter was so impatient that he instantly went up to Miles and questioned him. “How is it possible? Sir Stone is not someone who lacks money. How much would the other party pay Sir Stone in order to cease fire?” One of the four-star kings of war sneered sarcastically at Hunter’s guess. “Guys, leave the place with me, now!” Miles looked at everyone and then commanded. Miles then brought the rest to a corner outside the villa and said to them with a gloomy and dull tone. “Sir Moore, I think it’s better for us to let this matter go. Let’s stop here!” “Miles Stone, what do you mean by ‘stop here’? We all agreed to this plan before, didn’t we? How could you change your mind after going in? Aren’t you a coward?” Hunter’s face darkened—he was extremely upset at Miles’s suggestion. He could not imagine why Miles refused to help him after seeing the so-called Captain.

Chapter 957

“Umm. The mysterious person inside is not someone we can afford to offend. If we go according to the plan, it’s equivalent to digging graves for

ourselves!" Miles chuckled, loosening up the tensed atmosphere. "Do you know who the captain of bodyguards is? He's an eight-star king of war, Skyer Celestino! My former boss on the battlefield, moreover he'd saved my life before! If we were to fight against him, we'd die within a few minutes!" "What the f*ck? An eight-star king of war?" One of the four-star kings of war was bewildered at the news. He was so frightened that he held his breath until he almost passed out. "Sir Stone, this is not a joke, right? The eight-star king of war, Skyler Celestino, is actually in there, serving as the captain of bodyguards?" The four-star king of war could barely squeeze out a few words. "Impossible! How is that possible?" Hunter had his face turned unsightly. If that was the case, his plan for revenge had to be flushed down into the drain. Unless…unless he knew any nine-star king of war, or a God of… "Why would I lie to you guys?" Miles shot Hunter an impatient glare then added, "Well, Sir Moore, let's head back. Now you understand why we can't afford to offend the people in there. Skyler is an eight-star king of war, and he is willing to serve this person behind as a bodyguard. This means that the identity of this person is not that simple, do you understand?" "Mm!" Hunter nodded his head. Although his heart was upset about losing his finger and his plan was in vain, he was somewhat thankful for Miles. Fortunately, he and the others did not go ahead with the plan and charged into the residence. Otherwise, they would not be able to come out alive. "My apologies for troubling you guys. Let's find a nice place and have a cup of tea. Then we'll have lunch together at noon, couples of wines, and just laze around!" Hunter poured out his thoughts and quickly left the residential area with the rest. Not long after Hunter and the group left the scene, an opulent sports car arrived and parked not too far away from Fane's house. Caleb Quinton was inside the sportscar. He looked at the bodyguards at the gate from afar; he could not help but frown. If the vicious fight had started, it was impossible for these bodyguards to stay alive, standing there like nothing happened. "Strange, hmmm. Could it be that the second uncle and the others have yet to arrive?" Caleb's brows knitted and his heart was

filled with doubts and questions. He wandered around the entrance for a while, trying to peep into the residence. There were no signs of any intense and ferocious fighting. Caleb breathed out a huge sigh of relief; he could finally rest up a bit. It looked like his second uncle has yet to come over with the others to look for trouble. Perhaps tomorrow or the day after tomorrow. Suddenly, a loud ring came out from Caleb's pocket—his cell phone was ringing. Caleb's mood brightened once he saw the name on his phone, and he immediately answered the call. It was Peace Chaffman. "Damn, Young Master Quinton, where the heck does the man and the woman live? The bodyguards that I brought along yesterday were not strong at all. Besides, you've said that your second uncle is a three-star king of war and he can't even defeat the woman with a mask, right?" The thick voice of Young Master Chaffman came out from the phone as soon as Caleb answered the call. "Humph! This time I've asked for two professional fighters; both are six-star kings of war! The man and the woman would not stand a chance against them, and this includes the woman in the mask! I'll surely capture her alive!" "You're not kidding, right? That's amazing!" Such great news bloomed the hope inside Caleb. As long as his second uncle and the others had not gone to revenge, he still had a chance to taste the two beauties. The thought of spending wonderful nights with the beauties made Caleb's adam's apple jump. "Young Master Chaffman, you didn't forget our deal, did you?"

Chapter 958

"Hah, don't worry, Young Master Quinton. Of course, I remember our deal!" Over the phone, Peace's voice rang out again, "But we can't go along with our original plan!" Caleb's expression darkened when he heard that. Was that man going to change his mind so quickly? Still, he was well aware that he could not do anything even if Peace abruptly changed his plans. After all, the Chaffman family was too strong. He would not have gone to them in the first place otherwise. "Heh, there was only one woman before, that's

why we agreed upon taking turns. But it's different now—there are two women. I've thought about it already. Give me the beautiful lady from yesterday, and you can have that woman in the mask. How about that?" Peace quickly replied the next second, chuckling. When he heard this, Caleb's heart leaped in delight. Peace had probably never seen the woman in the mask before, so he assumed that she would not match the demure beauty from yesterday in terms of looks. In reality, the woman in the mask was just as attractive as the woman from yesterday. "All right then. You'd better keep your word, Young Master Chaffman. No regrets!" Caleb immediately agrees to the proposition and instantly emphasized the point in fear that the other man would retract his statement. "Of course! Quickly send me the location. We won't need many men this time. These two fighters should be enough!" Young Master Chaffman grinned confidently. After all, aside from a second-class aristocratic family like the Chaffman family, not just anyone could hire two fighters who were as good as six or seven-star Kings of War. Soon enough, Caleb shared his location. Two cars quickly drove over and parked not too far away from him. Caleb got down from his car when he saw Peace arriving. Then he helped the rotund man open the car door in a fit of excitement. "So it's here. Seems like these people aren't too shabby. This villa is worth quite a sum!" Young Master Chaffman could not help but exclaimed as he studied the villa before him. "Let's go. Clear the way!" Young Master Chaffman waved a hand and walked straight in with his men. Two hulking men flanked his sides. They were the few of the stronger fighters among the Chaffman family's bodyguards. Meanwhile, although the other bodyguards before them were not as skilled, they were good fighters nonetheless. "What are you doing?" The two bodyguards guarding the entrance stepped forward and asked as they saw a band of people approaching them. "Hmph. What are we doing? We're here to see someone!" A few of the Chaffman family's bodyguards attacked straightaway. Bang bang bang! The Chaffman family's bodyguards were in a scuffle with the two bodyguards at the entrance. No one expected

that the larger group would be no match for the two, and they were all seriously injured. The two bodyguards also took a few blows, but they were not as gravely injured as their opponents. “F*ck. These bodyguards are pretty strong!” The man on Peace’s left took two steps forward after observing the situation. He clenched both fists and rushed toward the two men before him. The man was huge, but he moved at a blinding speed. Before the two bodyguards knew it, he was already before them. The two bodyguards were shocked when they saw this. They realized that the man before them was a far stronger fighter than the rabble from before.

Chapter 959

They clenched their teeth and threw all of their strength into fighting him. Bam! A loud noise resounded. The huge man stood rooted in his spot, unmoving, yet the two bodyguards have been sent flying backward. “Ah!” The two clinched their arms. The arms they had used to attack had broken bones now. “Not bad. But you unwittingly walked into a death trap by running into these two fighters of mine!” Peace gave a cold smile, radiating an arrogant aura. “Kill–kill them!” Caleb cried out from the side. He had been beaten twice, and now he could finally see retribution falling upon his enemy. “Die!” The huge man’s lips curled into a frosty smile. He pulled out a sword from behind his back. Whoosh! He swung the sword ferociously. A thin, pressurized air blade suddenly flew straight toward the two bodyguards on the ground. Whoosh! Yet another air blade sliced forward just as the two bodyguards were about to be killed, stopping the huge man’s air blade. “Who?” The huge man, Caleb, and the others looked toward the original direction of the air blade. “Who are you?” Skyler was absolutely livid. He had just managed to chase Miles and his men off just moments ago, and he never thought that another group of fighters would come around less than half an hour later. Furthermore, these fighters were very skilled. Skyler immediately suspected that these people had been hired by Miles. After all, Miles did not lash out to save his reputation just now, and that was

the only reason why he had managed to walk away alive. After he left, he probably hired people that no one would recognize. Still, he quickly shook his head and dismissed the notion. After all, the fighters here were far stronger than Miles. They were not as skilled as eight or nine-star Kings of War. If Miles had been behind this, he would be sending them to their graves. “What’s going on? Young Master Chaffman, there are more fighters in there. And it seems like this one is almost as strong as I am!” The huge man was taken aback at the sight of his attack being blocked so easily. Judging from the other man’s pressurized wind blade, it seemed that it was more solid—more powerful than his own air blade. “Young Master Quinton, why are there more fighters here? Didn’t you say that the masked woman was the strongest of them all?” Peace gulped, just as shocked as everyone was. “I–I didn’t know that there was a fighter like this here!” Caleb was speechless too. “But you have more men than him, Young Master Chaffman,” he said. “It shouldn’t be a problem!” “Young Master Quinton and Young Master Chaffman?” Skyler flashed a cold smile as he heard their conversation. “Who cares what young masters you are? You dared to barge your way in here and injure my disciples. Both of you will die right here!”

Chapter 960

“Hah. What a mouth you have. Listen here, bud, I’m Peace Chaffman, a young master of a second-class aristocratic family. Are you kidding me? You dare to offend the Chaffman family?” Peace immediately burst into laughter when he heard that. “Besides, I don’t believe that you have the ability to defeat the two fighters I have here!” “A second-class aristocratic family?” Even Skyler was stunned by his words. After all, Fane and the others had just arrived here. Furthermore, Fane had declared that he had other matters to attend to. He did not wish to cause trouble here in Swallow city. If he truly killed this young master from a second-class aristocratic family, he would be blowing the issue up. The master of the Chaffman family and their other fighters would definitely attempt to avenge their

young master. He did not fear the Chaffman family, but they most certainly had plenty of men. If he destroyed the entire Chaffman family, Fane, Selena, and the others would soon be attracting the attention of other powerful families. When he thought about it, Skyler felt that he should refrain from killing Young Master Chaffman and Young Master Quinton for now. Besides, Fane and Lana were not here. What if they blamed him for being too hasty if he killed them? “Never mind. Don’t kill the two young masters, but get the rest. Let’s teach them a good lesson. We can’t let them walk off without letting them see some blood being shed!” Skyler quickly decided. When Peace had seen Skyler contemplating, he had thought that the other man was truly afraid. He gave a cold smile. “What now? You’re scared because you know that I’m a young master of a second-class aristocratic family, eh? Since you’re so scared, just bring the two beautiful women and Fane here. Otherwise, you’ll be meeting your end here!” Caleb seemed to have thought of something, and he said to Skyler, “It looks like you’re a pretty good fighter. Just step aside or bring your master out—you don’t have to fight for him any longer. I’ll pay you a billion bucks per year and make you an elder in the Quinton family!” “Hmph. I don’t care for it!” Skyler could not be bothered to talk anymore. He immediately lunged forward and attacked the two strong men before him. “Whoosh!” Pressurized air blades quickly clashed, creating terrible slashing noises. Fiona and the others heard it and rushed out of the villa. “What’s going on? Why is there a fight?” Fiona was shocked when she saw the scene unfolding before her from a distance, her face went white. She was anxious. “Hey! Why are they fighting? Don’t tell me Fane provoked someone again?” Andrew spoke in an exasperated tone, “What a reckless man. He’s so stubborn and he always causes trouble. I really suspect that he’s stirred up another storm. Why would people come looking for us otherwise? We haven’t even spent two days here!” “Don’t jump to conclusions. They’re not here now either. Perhaps it’s because of Selena’s beauty. Look at that fatty there—one glance tells me that he’s up to no good!” Old Man Taylor defended Fane. Bang bang! While they talked,

the fight grew fiercer. The two bodyguards from the Chaffman family, who were almost as strong as six-star kings of war, were quickly downed, blood pooling over their bodies. “No–no way.” Peace and Caleb exchanged a glance when they saw the two fighters on the ground. Horror crept into their gazes. “I’m telling you, these are powerful fighters from the Chaffman family…” Peace immediately tried to threaten Skyler when it looked like the latter was about to kill them. Unfortunately, he did not get a chance to finish his sentence when Skyler raised his sword and brought it down. The two powerful fighters were killed just like that. Whoosh whoosh whoosh! With a few flashes of Skyler’s hands, the rest of the bodyguards fell down one by one, each of them with terror froze onto their expressions.

Chapter 961

“Don’t–don’t kill us!” Caleb’s legs immediately crumpled beneath him when he realized that only he and Peace were left; he dropped onto his knees. “Please, let me go this once. I’m a young master of a second-class aristocratic family. I won’t dare to do something like this again!” Peace had never seen a scenario like this before. His feet went cold, and he was so terrified that he wet his pants. Just like Caleb, his knees turned into jelly and he plopped onto the ground. At that moment, Skyler was absolutely terrifying to them. He had killed without batting an eyelash. They had never seen such a terrifying scene before. “You injured two of my disciples. I killed all these men as punishment, so we’ll call it even. Get out of my sight!” Skyler cast a cold glare at the two men who were on the ground. “I won’t let you off so easily if you dare to show your face here again!” “Don’t worry. We’ll never come here again!” Caleb wiped away the cold sweat filming over his forehead. Then he pushed himself to stand upright. “We’ll never do it again!” Peace tried to stand up, but stumbled, and almost fell onto the ground. Caleb managed to help him up, then the two ambled out of the gates. “Trash!” Skyler spoke in an unsympathetic tone as he watched the two fellows, who had been scared out of their wits. “Mr. Celestino, what happened? Why did these men come looking for us?” After Andrew stepped forward, he asked in a polite manner. “I’m not too sure myself. Seems like they wanted us to hand Master Fane, Miss Selena, and Lana over!” Skyler flashed a bitter smile. “That fatty was a young master from a second-class aristocratic family. I had hoped that he would not pursue the matter any further, since I didn’t know if I should kill him without Fane’s direct orders. I was afraid that the issue would blow out of proportion!” “A second-class aristocratic family. That’s trouble!” Old Man Taylor could not help but sighed after he heard that. “What happened to the two of them? Their hands are swollen!” Fiona looked at the two bodyguards on the ground. She did not know what to do. “Don’t worry. I’ll give Fane a call. He has a miracle

medicine with him right now. Their arms are broken, but they'll be as good as new in two or three days once they take Fane's medicine!" Skyler smiled at everyone. Then he turned toward the rest of the bodyguards. "Take whatever valuables you can find from their bodies, then get rid of them," he said. "Just take them to the outskirts of the city and burn them!" At that moment, Fane, Selena, and Lana were in their newly opened pharmacy. They have changed the signboard of the pharmacy. It now reads 'Amity Apothecary'. Besides, Fane had sought out two female Chinese medicine practitioners to assist the old Chinese doctor. The two were pretty skilled doctors. They would probably be able to treat regular diseases even if he was not around. Along with the old Chinese doctor, they could run the show perfectly fine. "Your monthly wages will come up to 20 thousand bucks. I assume that amount isn't a problem?" Fane said, looking at the two before him. "20 thousand!" The two exchanged a glance, shocked. They had thought that 10 thousand was a pretty good salary already. They never thought that they would be paid this much over here. Their boss was too generous.

Chapter 962

"What's wrong? Is it too little?" Fane's lips curled into a bitter smile as he spoke to the two young women before him. "No, no. It's more than enough. I never thought that we'd be paid so much!" The two quickly waved their hands and replied. At this moment, an old man was seen at the entrance. He was shabbily dressed, and he seemed like a beggar. He scanned the interior of the pharmacy, hesitation in his eyes. Fane looked at the old man, sensing that he was in a pickle. He stepped forward and asked, "Are you looking for something, sir?" The old man furrowed his brows. He remained silent for a few seconds before finally speaking, "Young man, Chi–chinese medicine is a lot cheaper than Western medicine, right?" Fane suddenly understood everything. The old man wanted treatment, but he was probably worried that he did not have enough money to foot the medical bills. He gave a wan

smile. “That’s right. Chinese medicine is a lot cheaper than going to big hospitals. But not many people seek our treatment, simply because there aren’t many who believe in our treatment.” Here, Fane carefully studied the old man. “But you seem pretty healthy, sir. You’re not ill, are you?” The old man took out a plastic bag from his pocket, his expression embarrassed. He slowly opened the bag, revealing a few dozen notes inside. After he looked at Fane, he dropped onto his knees. “I–I’m not sick, young man, but my granddaughter is. She’s in so much pain that she can’t walk now. I–I only have this much money. Can you please take all of this to cure my granddaughter? I’m begging you!” Fane’s chest tightened after he heard that. “Where is she now? What are her symptoms?” “She’s underneath a bridge that’s not too far away from here. She has some problems with her waist. She probably twisted a muscle. We were picking up trash a few days before, and it was too heavy. She insisted on carrying it all by herself…” The old man thought about it, then he told Fane, “I don’t know what to do anymore. We can’t go to a regular hospital!” Fane considered the situation before flashing a smile. “It’s probably a dislocated bone in the thigh. It’s not a problem. Keep your money. I’ll come along with you to see her!” “All right. I’ll bring you there. But you must keep this money. It’s only right to give you a consultation fee, at least.” The old man hauled himself onto his feet. With a relieved expression, he stubbornly shoved the money into Fane’s hand. Fane never expected the old man, a beggar who is so advanced in age, would still have such strong principles. He could not help but admire the old man. “Hah, no need. We just opened this pharmacy, sir. You’re our very first customer, so let’s call this an opening discount, eh? You don’t have to pay me. Let’s go. Take me to see her!” Fane laughed. After he said that, he turned toward the old Chinese doctor, Terrence Chaffry. “All right, we’re going off first. Just keep watch here, Dr. Chaffry. Call me if you run into any uncertain or incurable diseases. If you meet any terminally ill patients who are rich, tell them that I can cure them. But their bill will probably come up to a few hundred million or a billion bucks. Depending

on their condition." "All right. Got it!" Terrence nodded his head, smiling. He could tell that Fane was somewhat of a modern Robin Hood. He would treat the rich who came to see him, and if they were suffering from a serious disease, he would charge them exorbitant fees. Meanwhile, he would not charge the poor much, even if they were suffering from regular diseases. For example, he decided to help the old man today for free. Soon enough, the old man brought Fane, Selena, and Lana to a nearby bridge, where they stopped below an arch. "Ah!" A young woman could be seen lying below the bridge. She wanted to move, but pain suddenly lanced throughout her body—so furious that it made her veins pop and raked an anguished cry from her mouth. The woman was about 20 years old. Dirt smudged across her cheeks, and her clothes were tattered, but she had fine features, and anyone could tell that she was a beauty from a single glance. She would probably be gorgeous if she dressed up. "Oh my, it's a beauty!" Lana could not help but smile when she saw the other woman.

Chapter 963

"Who–who are you?" The young woman was frightened by their appearance, worried that they were up to no good. "Don't be scared, Brianna. I brought this Chinese medicine practitioner here to take a look at you!" The old beggar quickly explained to his granddaughter. The young woman managed a sigh of relief when she heard that. Fane walked over and crouched down, placing a hand on her shoulder. "Lie down first!" The young woman did as he said, enduring the pain. Fane began to gently massage the area around her waist. "Heh. You have a dislocated bone, miss. I have no choice, so don't mind me!" Fane gave an embarrassed cough before moving his hand downward, stopping right above her buttocks. Brianna's face reddened, and her pulse quickened. She could do nothing but clench her teeth in silence. She was well aware that the little money her grandfather had was not enough for any doctor to prescribe medicine for her. This doctor though was willing to come from afar just to see her. This

was a rare opportunity plus he did not mind her grandfather and her dirty, scraggly appearances. He probably was not a bad person. However, the position of his hand naturally made a young woman like her extremely embarrassed. Her cheeks were as red as tomatoes. “Hold on for a little longer. It’ll be over soon!” Fane kneaded his wrist, then gave a light slap. “Ah!” Brianna released a cry of pain. Her thigh bone and femoral head finally clicked back together, resulting in a clear crack that sliced through the air. Crack! The sound rang out clearly. However, it was easy to miss it too, if one was not paying attention. “All done!” Fane stood up, his lips curling into a reassuring smile. “It–it’s done?” Brianna was astonished. She moved her leg experimentally. She could truly move now, and it was not the least bit painful. “Th–thank you, sir. My leg is truly better!” Brianna immediately got up and bowed toward Fane. “No need to thank me!” Fane smiled. “Right. So how did you end up in this predicament?” The old man looked at Fane and released a long sigh. “Ah, it’s a long story, young man. We can’t help that we’ve been reduced to this state. Let’s not talk about it!” Selena observed the two beggars before turning toward her husband and saying, “We’re looking for some servants, right, dear? Why don’t we…” Fane instantly understood what she meant. He bobbed his head and spoke to the beggar and his granddaughter, “That’s right. We’re looking for some helpers around our house. Perhaps you’re interested? If you’re fine with it, sir, you can help to maintain the garden. And this young lady can help with cleaning the house!”

Chapter 964

“S–sir, we’re just beggars. You’ve already helped us so much. It won’t do for you to have beggars in your workplace, no?” The old man was extremely touched, but he spoke with a tinge of embarrassment. “Heh, you won’t be beggars any longer if you work in my place. More importantly, food and lodging will be covered, so you don’t have to worry about it!” Fane chuckled and replied. “Th–thank you, Doctor!” Tears welled up in Brianna’s eyes, threatening to spill out. She stepped forward and thanked him profusely. “Let’s go. First off, let’s get you two some new clothes. You can shower and get a good rest when we get back. You’ll start work tomorrow! “And I’ll pay you 10 thousand bucks per month. How about that?” Fane spoke in a flippant tone, smiling. “Young man, this–this is too much, isn’t it? You don’t have to pay us that much. Just give us any amount. We’ll be eternally grateful so long as we have a place to stay and food to eat!” The old beggar could not hold his tears in for much longer. “Haha, don’t say that. I treat everyone equally. All my subordinates receive the same amount of wages. It makes it easier for me to keep track of my funds too!” Fane burst into laughter. At this moment, his phone rang out. He could not help but frown when he saw that it was Skyler who called. The king of war rarely called him, so when he did, there was something going on. After the call ended, Fane shook his head slowly, a bitter smile creeping over his lips. “What’s wrong? Did something happen at home?” Selena furrowed her brows and asked Fane. He nodded his head in return. “Yes. Skyler told me that a few kings of war came to our place looking for trouble, but they had to leave when they saw him so in the end they didn’t do anything.” Here, Fane paused before continuing, “But Young Master Chaffman and Young Master Quinton came by not long after with a few men in tow, looking for trouble. They injured two of our bodyguards, and their arms had been broken. Skyler was afraid of blowing the matter up, so he just killed the two fighters and their bodyguards, leaving those two b*stards alive!” “So that’s what

happened. No wonder he called you!" Selena came to a realization. "Then we'd better head back first. The two injured bodyguards need your medical attention!" "Yup!" Fane bobbed his head. "We'll quickly get two sets of clothes for them, then we'll head back straightaway." The old beggar and Brianna were moved after they heard the conversation. They wondered which family the young man before them belonged to. A few kings of war came to them, looking for trouble, but they were so scared that they left. Even Young Master Quinton and Young Master Chaffman ended up frightened to their wits after they had gone to them, looking for trouble. It seemed that the people before them were indeed very powerful. Fane quickly brought the two to buy clothes before heading back. He ordered a servant to bring the two to their accommodation to take a rest. Fane also handed them two thousand bucks each, ensuring that they had some pocket money. Only then did he attend to the two injured bodyguards.

Chapter 965

"Fane, I didn't know what to do when you and Miss Selena weren't around, honestly. I didn't want to cause any trouble for us when we've just arrived in Swallow City. Besides, the two fighters from the Chaffman family were really strong—probably as strong as six-star or seven-star Kings of War. I killed them, just to teach them a lesson." Skyler explained everything to Fane when he saw the latter's arrival. Fane took out two pills and gave one each to the bodyguards. Then he looked at Skyler. "Good job. You really showed them that we can't be bullied," he said. "Even a second-class aristocratic family would be frightened if you killed two of their fighters in a flash!" "Hah. Here I thought that you would blame me for my actions!" Skyler could not help but smile, seeing that Fane was not mad at him—rather, his master was pleased with his decision. "Why would I? These two bodyguards are your disciples, and they're such strong fighters. They killed so many heroes from the enemy's side on the battlefield, and they were injured. Of course, you can't just let them off!" Fane was relieved. After he

said that, he looked at the two bodyguards. “Take a good rest,” he said. “You can start training again after you both have adequate rest and try to improve your skills. We’re in Swallow City—the City of Martial Arts. There are plenty of strong fighters here!” “Hah. I would have killed all of them if I wasn’t afraid of revealing our identity. F*ck. I really want to weed out the arrogant idiots who think they can throw their weight about and bully everyone!” Skyler flashed a bright smile. “Fane!” At this moment, a voice abruptly rang out. Fiona stalked over, huffing. “What’s going on? I heard that you brought two beggars in. Either I’m drunk, or you’re drunk. We’re not some no-name family now—we have a powerful social standing. How could you just bring beggars in?” Skyler, Elaine, and the others exchanged glances. Their features twisted into snide expressions. Only a mother-in-law like Fiona would dare to order Fane about like that. He was the Supreme Warrior! However, they knew that there was no way about it. She was his mother-in-law, and Fane insisted on concealing his identity. He could not yell, he could not fight back; he could only endure it all. Still, they only realized that Fane’s temper had gotten better with her. When they had been on the battlefield, nobody dared to provoke the man who could make dozens fall with a swoop of his arm. They all needed to mind their words around him. “I suggested it, Mom. They were in such sorry states, so I wanted Fane to help them!” Selena smiled and explained to Fiona. “But how can we just take in beggars? We’re not some refugee camp, nor are we a charity. Besides, it would be so embarrassing if anyone found out about this!” Fiona’s expressions softened slightly when she learned that it was Selena’s idea. Nevertheless, she had both arms folded over her chest, and she spoke in an exasperated tone. “Mom, they were beggars before. I’m not taking them in for free. They’re going to work here, and they’ll be our servants from now on. They’ll receive 10 thousand bucks per month just like the other servants. They won’t be beggars then, right?” Fane tried to negotiate, smiling. “Hmph. I’ll forgive you this once. But don’t simply take in beggars next time!” Fiona harrumphed before leaving in a huff. The two beggars,

Nathanael and Brianna Sullivan, quickly finish showering and changed into the clothes that Fane had bought for them. The two went to see Fane and thanked him and Selena. Fane's eyes immediately brightened when he saw the two. He could tell that these two carried a strange dignity that could not be found in any regular person. Especially Brianna, who had a poised manner that was not unlike that of a young lady of a significant household.

Chapter 966

Fane did not pester them with any more questions no matter the consequences; they did not seem to want to resume their chat either. After all, everybody had their own secrets. "It's noon now, and you guys must be hungry. Let me ask the kitchen staff to prepare some lunch for you! Rest well this afternoon since you've got some free time, and we'll get Elaine to arrange some work for you tomorrow!" Fane, after sorting out his thoughts and plans, made some arrangements and asked them to leave. It was only after walking a good distance away that Brianna Sullivan spoke to Nathanael Sullivan, "Grandfather, why haven't we heard about the Woods family before? It looks like Skyler Celestino is very good. He was able to kill two masters that were on par with six or seven-star Kings of War. He's incredibly skilled!" Nathanael smiled and replied, "That's right. Fane and Selena are rather wealthy as well—what with those twenty villas—but it seems like most of them are empty. This means that they're not a strong power. Nonetheless… Why are they daring enough to offend a second-class aristocratic family when they're not strong? Aren't they afraid that their enemies would get back at them as they killed the masters owned by the second-class aristocratic family?" Brianna also nodded. "Think about it, Grandfather: What does it mean when such a strong master is willing to follow Fane and Selena around? This means that Fane is either a significantly important individual that Skyler Celestino willingly dedicated himself to Fane, or Fane's that strong for the master to willingly follow him." Brianna paused and gave a wry smile before adding, "There's also the

possibility that the pair has deep pockets to offer him a handsome salary, so much so that it moved the other person to agree to work as their bodyguard's head commander!" Nathanael thought about it and nodded. "Yes, that makes sense." Nathanael was still unsure of the situation and what to make of it when Brianna continued, "But if we're talking about handsome pays, then it'd make no sense since a master like that could've joined first-class aristocratic families or other more powerful clans, don't you think? Their salary offer would surely be higher, and it's stranger that I've never heard of this Woods family before!" Nathanael sighed. "Whatever it is, we've finally met someone nice. Let's just stay here and work hard to repay their kindness." Brianna frowned and reluctantly argued, "But Grandfather, you know what I want. I really want to get my revenge!" Nathanael gave her a bitter smile and shook his head at her words. "Revenge? Do you know how difficult that is? Apart from that, it's really nice that they're able to help us. On what grounds should we ask people to help us? Apart from that, we shouldn't involve them as they'd be like mere ants to our enemies who, might I say, are powerful." The dejected Brianna inwardly sighed and fell silent. ... "Young Master Chaffman, I—I'll be taking my leave now!" stammered Caleb, wiping the cold sweat on him after he helped Young Master Chaffman into the car. Too shook to even comprehend, Peace merely gave a short, "Alright, alright!" Upon arriving in his own home, Caleb smoked several cigarettes in his room to calm himself down. To the two, it felt like they had a narrow escape from death. It was in the afternoon that a thought occurred to Caleb, and he immediately drove to his second uncle, Hunter. Hunter had just finished lunch and was back in his own villa. Sitting under a large tree in his yard, he sipped his tea as he peacefully listened to relaxing music. "Uncle, thank goodness...! Thank goodness that you're still here instead of picking on Fane. I'm telling you—don't. Don't do it. Even if your Kings of War friends went, they would've failed!"

Chapter 966

Fane did not pester them with any more questions no matter the consequences; they did not seem to want to resume their chat either. After all, everybody had their own secrets. “It’s noon now, and you guys must be hungry. Let me ask the kitchen staff to prepare some lunch for you! Rest well this afternoon since you’ve got some free time, and we’ll get Elaine to arrange some work for you tomorrow!” Fane, after sorting out his thoughts and plans, made some arrangements and asked them to leave. It was only after walking a good distance away that Brianna Sullivan spoke to Nathanael Sullivan, “Grandfather, why haven’t we heard about the Woods family before? It looks like Skyler Celestino is very good. He was able to kill two masters that were on par with six or seven-star Kings of War. He’s incredibly skilled!” Nathanael smiled and replied, “That’s right. Fane and Selena are rather wealthy as well—what with those twenty villas—but it seems like most of them are empty. This means that they’re not a strong power. Nonetheless… Why are they daring enough to offend a second-class aristocratic family when they’re not strong? Aren’t they afraid that their enemies would get back at them as they killed the masters owned by the second-class aristocratic family?” Brianna also nodded. “Think about it, Grandfather: What does it mean when such a strong master is willing to follow Fane and Selena around? This means that Fane is either a significantly important individual that Skyler Celestino willingly dedicated himself to Fane, or Fane’s that strong for the master to willingly follow him.” Brianna paused and gave a wry smile before adding, “There’s also the possibility that the pair has deep pockets to offer him a handsome salary, so much so that it moved the other person to agree to work as their bodyguard’s head commander!” Nathanael thought about it and nodded. “Yes, that makes sense.” Nathanael was still unsure of the situation and what to make of it when Brianna continued, “But if we’re talking about handsome pays, then it’d make no sense since a master like that could’ve joined first-class

aristocratic families or other more powerful clans, don't you think? Their salary offer would surely be higher, and it's stranger that I've never heard of this Woods family before!" Nathanael sighed. "Whatever it is, we've finally met someone nice. Let's just stay here and work hard to repay their kindness." Brianna frowned and reluctantly argued, "But Grandfather, you know what I want. I really want to get my revenge!" Nathanael gave her a bitter smile and shook his head at her words. "Revenge? Do you know how difficult that is? Apart from that, it's really nice that they're able to help us. On what grounds should we ask people to help us? Apart from that, we shouldn't involve them as they'd be like mere ants to our enemies who, might I say, are powerful." The dejected Brianna inwardly sighed and fell silent. ... "Young Master Chaffman, I—I'll be taking my leave now!" stammered Caleb, wiping the cold sweat on him after he helped Young Master Chaffman into the car. Too shook to even comprehend, Peace merely gave a short, "Alright, alright!" Upon arriving in his own home, Caleb smoked several cigarettes in his room to calm himself down. To the two, it felt like they had a narrow escape from death. It was in the afternoon that a thought occurred to Caleb, and he immediately drove to his second uncle, Hunter. Hunter had just finished lunch and was back in his own villa. Sitting under a large tree in his yard, he sipped his tea as he peacefully listened to relaxing music. "Uncle, thank goodness...! Thank goodness that you're still here instead of picking on Fane. I'm telling you—don't. Don't do it. Even if your Kings of War friends went, they would've failed!"

Chapter 967

Caleb approached Hunter and instantly advised against offending Fane. With a displeased expression, Hunter curiously asked, "How did you know that? Didn't you want me to teach them a lesson not long ago? Isn't this a trouble you caused?" The fact that Hunter lost one of his fingers all because of his nephew, Caleb, made him rather bitter. Apart from that, the other party gave him respect and asked him to go in alone because Miles Stone

was Skyler Celestino's old subordinate. If Miles was not there, or if Miles did not have a good relationship with the eight-star King of War, all of them would have been dead. The thought of what happened on this day still shook him to the very core, and all would be Caleb's fault if he died because of it. "Sigh… You don't know anything. I was really angry when I thought about how you lost a finger. I thought about it and used the trick—get somebody to do my dirty work!" Caleb poured himself a cup of tea before he added, "You know how Young Master Chaffman likes women, right? Under my instigation, we brought an impressive number of bodyguards with us. Two of them were masters who had combat powers comparable to a six-star King of War, but they were all killed in a fight! The other party eventually spared us and let us go unharmed!" "Two six-stars Kings of War were killed?" Hunter inhaled sharply at that. Skyler truly was ruthless to have killed two masters mercilessly. "They're not six-star Kings of War. They're just masters from the Chaffman family who had combat powers comparable to six-star King of War, yet they perished in the end. I estimated that the Woods family master must be exceedingly strong where you and your friends might not stand up to his attacks. Surviving the ordeal, I rushed all the way here, afraid that you might've gone over with your people," Caleb explained. Hunter glanced at Caleb before making an indignant noise. "Hmph! I'll take it that you still have your conscience and still think of me!" Hunter once again smiled bitterly at this point of the conversation and said, "However, we've gone to the Woods' residence just now, and I'm lucky my friend, Miles, knows the master in the Woods family. I would've been a goner otherwise!" "What?! You guys have gone there?" Caleb had chills down his spine when he thought about it. "You're saying that they let you go because Miles knew them and did it out of respect for him?" "Exactly. We're incredibly lucky, now that I think about it." Hunter smiled bitterly. "It's best not to offend the Woods family. We'd die from it, and there's no way of avenging ourselves then." Caleb never thought he would see the day his powerful uncle would say something like that. He finally nodded.

“Nevermind, nevermind… It’s good that we’re alive to see another day. Even though they’re afraid of the Chaffmans, our family wouldn’t be able to avenge me. After all, our Quinton family isn’t even a third-class aristocratic family!” “Haha… Has that finally registered to that head of yours? Next time, keep a low profile. Don’t come to me the next time you cause trouble—I won’t help you. Don’t always think that your uncle will clean up your mess,” fumed Hunter, a cold, condescending smirk on his face as he did. “I understand. Still... I believe that Young Master Chaffman won’t give up as he’s never suffered such a loss. The Chaffman family has never suffered something like this either,” theorized Caleb.

Chapter 968

Hunter nodded at Caleb’s words, agreeing to him. “That’s possible. Anyways, it’s best if we don’t provoke them. Who knows who these people are to be able to get an eight-star King of War working as their bodyguard!” Hunter then added, “Truly, I don’t think Young Master Chaffman would give up. After all, he lost two masters who had powers comparable to six-star Kings of War. He can’t hide this, and when the Chaffman family knows about it, they’ll surely start something.” Caleb nodded. “This is good for us. We don’t need to do anything and just let them fight among themselves!” Despite his positive opinion, Caleb was bitter at the fact that he would not have a chance with those women if they fought. Caleb left Hunter’s residence after he drank tea for some time. At that moment… Several members of the Taylor family were caught in a city not far away from Middle Province. The Taylors knelt on the ground, shivering as they anxiously eyed the people surrounding them. “Be honest! Tell us who killed my son and Freeman’s family master’s son. If you don’t tell us the truth, I’ll kill you all!” The Lambert family’s third elder, Tao Lambert, was extremely angry when he recalled the death of his son, Lucas. Unable to eat properly for the past few days and had waited for news every day, he unfalteringly searched for members of the Taylor family in nearby cities. At last, they

managed to snag a few of them. Despite having captured extended relatives of the Taylors, he was unsatisfied; Tao Lambert knew these damned Taylors were smart. Not only did they sneak away at night, but they even ran separately. It was extremely difficult to get all of the Taylor family members. It would still prove to be a difficult feat to find all the Taylors and kill them, even though he had many men working for him. One of the Taylors was an old man who quivered out of fear. “If… If we tell you everything we know, will you really let us go?” stammered the old man. “You’ll be released—you have my word,” Tao smirked. “Tell us, who killed those four young people and where they ran off to? I believe you guys must still be in contact with them, right?” “I… I’ll tell you!” A middle-aged man gritted his teeth, raised his hand, and forced out, “It… It was Fane. We saw him kill that young man with our own eyes.” “Fane?” Tao frowned and looked at Louis next to him after he heard what the man said. “Master Freeman, he sounds rather familiar, no?” Louis thought about it and also frowned. “It does, indeed, but I just can’t put my finger on it right now.” The middle-aged man immediately spoke in order to keep his family alive, “Fane is the man who married our family’s young miss, and the Nine Great Gods of War attended their wedding. He’s the exclusive doctor of the Nine Great Gods of War, so he’s in a rather genial relationship with them!” Tao sharply inhaled at that. “It’s that guy. I remember it now! Years ago, one of the people from your family, Ivan Taylor, offended my son’s fiancee, who’s also Freeman’s family master’s daughter, Snow. However, my son didn’t plan to kill Ivan. Instead, he assigned a quota for your Taylor family to join the war…”

Chapter 969

“That’s right. However, our Taylor family’s old master came up with an idea. He asked Miss Selena and that young man, Fane to get into a fake marriage. Once they were wed, that son-in-law who married into our family went to the battlefield as Young Master Ivan’s replacement, but no one

expected him to safely return! “Fane was a low-profile person. If he hadn’t reorganized a wedding ceremony for Miss Selena, we wouldn’t have known that he was so good that the Nine Great Gods of War attended his wedding!” The middle-aged man from the Taylor family immediately explained to them. “How can someone be so strong after spending five years on the battlefield? You have to understand that the person who had killed my son and the rest had to be on par with some Kings of War—those with many stars. It seems like this young man named Fane is quite talented,” surmised Tao. “Fane Woods! We can let the others go but Fane, his wife, and his family must’ve escaped together. We have to find him and kill them all. Only then would I have avenged my daughter! I don’t care if he’s friends with the Nine Great Gods of War. Those people attended his wedding ceremony as a sign of respect, but it’s possible that they won’t avenge a mere doctor like him!” The Freeman family master was extremely angry at that moment, wanting nothing more than to shred Fane into pieces. “Where are they? Where did they go? Tell us now, or we’ll kill you!” Tao aimed the tip of his sword at the middle-aged man’s neck and forced him to answer. “I—I don’t know! Fane was very cunning! They told us to go to him privately if we don’t want to leave with him. He’d give each family some money and asked us to find a hiding place. How would I know where they run off to? For all I know, they’re probably somewhere far away!” The middle-aged man was so frightened that he stumbled in his words as cold sweat appeared on his forehead. A thought then occurred to Louis as he ordered the middle-aged man, “Phone number! You guys must have his phone number. Call him and try to probe for the location they’re at right now, ask which city they’re hiding in, and make sure you don’t slip up about being captured when you make the call. Do you understand me?” “Yes! Act like it’s a normal call, got it?” said Tao firmly with a nod of his head. “Yes, w—we have their contact!” The middle-aged man took his phone out with trembling hands and made the call. It did not take long for them to realize the phone number was no longer in use. “It looks like they’ve canceled this

number and gotten a new one.” The middle-aged man looked at the people in front of him with a frown on his face. Tao gritted his teeth. “These people are sneaky, but they seem to be quite afraid of us. They wouldn’t have acted so carefully otherwise.” “Nonsense. It’s natural for them to be afraid. How can they not be afraid when they’ve offended powerful families from Gin City?” Louis’s face darkened. Although they managed to capture several people, they failed to obtain any useful information. They only know that the opponent’s name was Fane and had a wife named Selena. Of course, they could easily get their hands on their photos from some propaganda or posters.

Chapter 970

The middle-aged man from the Taylor family swallowed his saliva and fearfully stammered, “Guys, do… Do you still have questions to ask? If not, can...can we leave?” Tao thought about it before pulling Louis to the other side and spoke, “Master Freeman, why don’t we release these people? After all, we promised that we’ll release them once they tell us everything that they know.” “Release them?” Master Freeman smiled coldly. “Elder Lambert, you promised to release them, but I didn’t. However, you needn’t worry as I’ll be the one to kill them—you won’t even need to lift a finger. That way, you won’t be breaking your promise, right?” Tao thought about it and offered, “Killing these people means nothing as we won’t get our revenge. Why don’t we let them go and have them inform us when Fane and the others contact them? Since we’re letting them go, it’s likely that they’d be indebted to us and do just that! If you kill them, on the other hand, the other Taylors would hide from us when they know about this.” Tao paused before he added, “By then, it’d be even difficult for us to find this Fane.” “Fine” It did make sense to Louis after mulling it over. He then walked toward the captured Taylor family members and remarked, “I can let you guys go, but you must tell me if Fane contacts any of you. I’ll handsomely reward you at least a hundred million if there are any valid leads. I’ll even pay one billion if the lead proves to be useful to us!” “Yes, yes, we’ll surely contact you if there are any leads. After all, it’s all because of Fane that we’re in this situation today!” The middle-aged man nodded vehemently, inwardly relieved at the opportunity to leave. “Leave,” Louis waved his hand dismissively. The Taylor family members immediately ran away as though afraid they would change their minds and kill them instead. “Fane and Selena? I don’t believe it. I’ll get you people, sooner or later!” Louis gritted his teeth, furious at the turn of events. “Master Freeman, we’ve at least received some intel, right? Now, we have a rough picture of what went down. Seems like Fane’s got quite the skills to have slain the group of

four—my son and three others." Tao walked over to pat Louis by his shoulder and assessed the situation. "Apart from that, there's something else that we're sure of: That guy is really talented, and that means we need to find him soon and kill him. It'll be difficult to kill him in several years after he grows!" "Yes, you're right, but that guy is really cunning as well. He asked most of the Taylors to run away by themselves after they took the money. To be honest, he's afraid that too many people would draw attention. Hence, it'd be difficult to find him. The Nine Provinces are so big, and it'd be very easy to hide several people." Louis smiled bitterly. "It's alright if they remain in the country, but it'll be burdensome to look for them if they leave." "Sigh… There's nothing else we can do aside from looking for them. Search the nearby cities and townships. We also need to search further south!" Tao sighed. "At least we know that they're hiding from us—they're not that powerful though they're good, it seems. Otherwise, they won't be afraid of us coming to search for them." Meanwhile... In a villa in Swallow City, Peace Chaffman felt rejuvenated at last after taking a bath and a nap, relieved after being terrified down to the core.

Chapter 971

"How could they just kill the masters of my Chaffman family? Those useless bodyguards don't matter much, but they dared kill the masters comparable to six-star Kings of War. How should I tell my family about this?" Peace growled to himself. "I have to tell my father and the others, even if it costs me to lose those two women. I have to get my revenge!" Peace made up his mind and drove to a huge villa with several bodyguards in tow. It was a residence where the Chaffmans stayed most of the time, and the villa where Peace lived in was where he would go to enjoy his personal space. It was also the place he enjoyed his time with pretty women when he had nothing to do. He always went behind his father and elders' back because they did not like how he did not engage in honest work. The Chaffmans normally choose to turn a blind eye, so long as Peace did nothing overboard. "Oh my,

Young Master! Why are you back today?" One of the maids immediately came forward and greeted him after he got down from his parked car. Peace walked two steps forward and patted the maid's buttocks upon recognizing her. "It's been a long time, Jean, and your figure has gotten better! Haha! Let me admire your body someday when we're free. How does that sound?" "Bad? Young Master, you're getting better at joking. You aren't short of pretty ladies, are you? When would you remember somebody like me?" The maid rolled her eyes at Young Master Chaffman flirtatiously, her words rather suggestive tinged with displeasure. Although Peace was frivolous with women, he was a generous person. Everybody knew that the money they would get for spending a night with him was enough for maids like them for the rest of their lives. Sometimes, he spent several millions in a go. That explained why some maids would not decline Peace's advances; they even anticipated it. "Haha! I'm thinking about you right now, aren't I, Jean?" Peace smirked and suggestively added, "Oh yes, clean up nicely and sneak into my room tonight. I'll explore life with you, how does that sound?" "Young Master, that's very bad of you. I won't talk to you anymore!" Jean acted reserved and ran away blushing though she was giddy at the thought, happy at the prospect of spending time with him. Not long after that, Peace arrived at the living room of a big villa. At that moment, Master Chaffman and Old Master Chaffman were playing chess in the living room as several elders of the family observed them from behind. "Why have you come back? Haha! The sun must've come up from the west side. I thought you've forgotten that you're a member of the Chaffman family!" remarked Old Master Chaffman, followed by a chuckle at the sight of Peace coming in through the door. "Oh, right! I heard that you've asked two of our secret guards to go out with you. Were you in trouble or something?" Peace lowered his head and gritted his teeth before he muttered, "A very huge trouble. Grandfather, the secret guards... Both secret guards…have died."

Chapter 972

Not many people could become a Chaffmans' family guard. Of course, all their secret guards were true masters. People with strength comparable to four or five-star Kings of War were qualified to be the Chaffman family's secret guards. These guards would lay low under normal circumstances, only taking action when the Chaffmans faced great trouble or threat. Alas, there were only a dozen of these family guards despite their combat prowess. When Old Master Chaffman came back, he was secretly unhappy when he found out that Peace ordered two of the secret guards to go out with him. He decided to let it slide, however, as Peace was his grandson. Some women outside might have caught his eye. Never did Old Master Chaffman see it coming, however, that Peace would tell them their two secret guards were dead. "Peace, are you telling the truth? You're saying that those two secret guards are dead?" blurted the startled Master Chaffman as all eyes—the Chaffmans—turned to Peace. After all, the person who could kill the Chaffman family's secret guards definitely had strong combat powers. The crucial point was that the opponent dared kill two secret guards when they knew the Chaffmans employed them. It seemed like his son had offended some powerful people. "It… It's true!" Peace nodded, knowing well that he could never bury this incident. It would have meant nothing had it been a regular bodyguard or even the leader of their usual guards. After all, they were rich and could employ anyone, anytime. Moreover, people dying was a regular occurrence in Swallow City. It was not called the City of Martial Arts for nothing, after all. However, the death of the secret guards was a great loss to the Chaffman family. Old Master Chaffman exhaled deeply before slowly standing up. He gazed at Peace with a sharp, intense gaze as he crisply commented, "I think we've spoiled you a little too much. We normally don't control you when you bring bodyguards to show-off publicly, only asking you to not cross powerful people, but it seems you've done just that this time." Old Master Chaffman paused here before asking, "Tell us: Which powerful people did you offend? Which family do they belong to?" "I'm not actually sure which power they're from…" replied the

unsure Peace, unable to search his thoughts. “What?!” The members of the Chaffman family gazed at each other in speechless dismay. “You caused two of our secret guards to die without even knowing which powerful family those people are from?” The flabbergasted Master Chaffman almost passed out from anger. They suffered such a huge loss, yet his son had no idea of the assailant’s background. “They’re not powerful people. I only know that there’s a guy among them called Fane and a woman called Selena. There’s also a woman who wears a face mask!”

Chapter 973

Peace thought about it and remarked, “That man called Fane and the woman wearing a mask seemed to be skilled, though the other woman—Selena—seemed rather ordinary. They’re no match for our secret guards for sure, but... Many of our bodyguards and our secret guards were killed by a man seemingly in his forties or fifties, and he was the head commander of their bodyguards!” “Head commander of their bodyguards? That powerful?” Old Master Caffman frowned and asked again, “How strong were the two secret guards you brought with you?” “Their combat abilities are on par with six-star Kings of War,” said Peace, a bitter smile on his face as he continued, “which was why it surprised me to no end how they were slain so easily. My guess is that the old man is equal to a seven or even eight star King of War.” “You…” Old Master Chaffman felt white-hot anger coursing through him as he pointed sharply at Peace, saying, “Those secret guards that have died are very powerful. Oh my god, these people you offended must be from a second-class aristocratic family at least!” “Grandfather, I didn’t ask for this. How would I know that they’d be so strong! Sigh... What should I do now? I suggest that we end them soon or we’d be shamed for it. Others will laugh at us when they hear about this!” Peace could not help himself and tried to instigate Old Master Chaffman. “Do you think that they won’t have other masters helping them when a head commander of theirs can kill two of our masters? We’re strong, that’s correct, but our family is only a second-

class aristocratic family. If we continue investigating this issue, the other party might kill many of our people if they act in desperation, even if they only have a master comparable to a seven or eight-star King of War!" "By then, our power would be greatly weakened. I'm afraid that it'd be difficult for us to continue living in this Swallow City!" one of the Chaffman family's elders spoke up after assessing the situation. "However, won't others laugh at us if they heard about this?" another young man of the Chaffman family chimed in and voiced out his thoughts. "Apart from that, I've never heard about any strong Fane Woods in Swallow City!" He then turned to Peace and insisted, "Young Master, you should know how big the place they live at, right?" "It's not very big, about twenty villas next to one another. Seems like they're not much of a threat, and I didn't see many bodyguards," replied Peace after recalling the information he had with him. "Of course, the woman with a face mask is rather skilled. The Quintons' young master, Caleb Quinton offended the trio while his second uncle, King of War Hunter Moore wanted to help him get back at them. Alas, the woman with a face mask easily bested him." "Hunter Moore?" Master Chaffman frowned. "He's a three-star King of War. Looks like the woman you mentioned is a master with combat abilities comparable to four or five-star Kings of War. I'm sure that this woman and the older man you've mentioned moments before are people that should never be crossed." "We really can't let something like this go, but I get that we can't act rashly either since we don't know much about them. If we don't take action now, we might be the ones regretting it later!" Old Master Chaffman kept quiet for a while before he spoke, "Peace, don't start anything with them, do you understand? I'll send someone over for a background check on them. If they're powerful people from other places and are here for a trip, we might suffer the consequences of offending them." "Grandfather is right. We should investigate their backgrounds and make our move after we know a little more about them." Peace smiled embarrassingly. Although he wanted to

bring people to pay Fane and the others a visit, he could not do anything apart from admitting his bad luck for the time being.

Chapter 974

Selena was overwhelmed with worry that night, evident with the frown on her face as she laid down with Fane on the bed. “Honey, do you think the Chaffmans will come back and cause us trouble?” After all, the Chaffman family was much stronger than Caleb’s family. This was a second-class aristocratic family, and a second-class aristocratic family from Swallow City was far stronger than a second-class aristocratic family of a small city like Middle Province. “Haha! That’ll depend on how smart they are. I can’t help it if they’re daring enough to cause us trouble when they know that we have such a strong master with us here! If they’re smart, they won’t act so rashly like that. “After all, we’ve just reached Swallow City, and I don’t think they know much about who we are or anything like that!” came Fane’s nonchalant reply, accompanied by a chuckle of his own. “That’s true.” Selena smiled and laid on Fane’s chest. She raised her head and asked again, “Hubby, when are you going to meet your father?” To that, Fane offered a wry smile. “Sometime later. I’m still investigating something else here. Honey, a piece of dragon scale appeared in this city. I’m quite interested in it, so I plan to investigate it thoroughly.” “Really? Are there really dragons in this world?” Selena frowned at Fane’s words. “You’re sure it’s a dragon scale and not the scale of some other animal?” “Haha! Honey, there’s more than dragons in this world, and I believe you’d have the chance to see them in the future!” assured Fane heartily. “Really? I fear that they’d scare the daylights out of me. That’s a mythical animal. I wonder if it really looks like that...and does it eat humans?” came Selena’s reply, though she paid not much mind into such an idea. “Haha! I’m a dragon, and I’ll eat you up!” With a hearty chuckle, Fane turned and pressed Selena under his body. “Dash, it’s so late and you still want to do it!” Blush seared Selena’s face as Fane kissed her deeply. At that moment, in the Woods family… The Ninth

Patronum, Brenton Woods came toward Lily. “How did it go? What’s the progress on sending people to kill Fane? Now that we know where they live, it won’t take much time to go there and kill them, right?” Lily asked impatiently when she saw the Ninth Patronum coming over. Brenton smiled bitterly before saying, “Madam, Fane and the others have left Middle Province.” “What? They’ve left?” Lily shot up from her seat at the news Brenton relayed. “Where did they go? Do you know?” “We don’t know yet. When our men came to the residence, they discovered that the house was empty and the people were gone, and they found out that Fane had crossed quite a handful of people. After our people were killed, powerful people from overseas came looking for him, but they were killed by Fane. Apart from that, he also offended a powerful family from Gin City—the Lambert family, and they silently left Middle Province as they offended such a powerful family.”

Chapter 975

The Ninth Patronum smiled bitterly and reported his findings. “They secretly left Middle Province?” Lily’s expression shifted into one of distaste. “Is that guy thinking of coming to the Woods family after he offended powerful people from Gin City? He’s probably trying to seek shelter under the Woods family after angering such strong people and is left without much of a choice. He might seek protection from the family!” “We don’t know that. I heard that they sneaked out of the city in the middle of the night, and our men don’t know which direction they went to. I’m concerned that they’d go to the Woods family. If so, they might be reaching in another two days!” Ninth Patronum fretted at the possibility. After all, he had been taking the money meant for Fane and even received a lot of money from Lily. The Lagorio family was initially formidable while their eldest young master was extremely talented. Everybody was sure that he would become the Woods family’s master and, because of all this, he was daring enough to work for Lily, in the belief that Fane stood no chance of returning.

Never did he think such sudden changes would happen, and that worried him. He thought of singling Fane out to kill Fane and Joan. It would be conducted secretly, burying everything else that had happened over the years effectively. Alas, he never expected his men would return empty-handed—Fane and the others had already left Middle Province. “We can’t let that guy reach the Woods family!” Lily was slightly worried. She thought about it and ordered, “Send more people and station them on the main roads to the Woods family. Kill Fane, Joan, and the others on sight!” “Alright. We can’t let them come to the Woods family alive, or there’ll be trouble!” The Ninth Patronum immediately nodded and was prepared to arrange his subordinates accordingly. However, Lily stopped him after he walked two steps away. “Ninth Patronum, remember that the men you dispatch have to obey you and keep everything confidential. Do you understand?” “Yes, Madam.” The Ninth Patronum made a gesture of respect before he headed out. He had to quickly make relevant arrangements or it would be difficult to kill Fane when he and his company came. The next morning, Lana came looking for Fane. “Master, what happened to Senior is quite troublesome. We’ve been doing our investigation but found nothing useful. However, I know that he used to live at a hotel and made contact with powerful underground forces. Nobody knew what happened next.” The look in Lana’s expression and eyes bore seriousness and solemnity. “He made contact with the underground forces? Is it possible that the dragon scale is in the hands of some powerful people among the underground forces?” Fane thought about it and surmised, “The underground forces don’t do serious businesses. However, since your senior said that it’s a trap, I believe that they’ll definitely contact us or find a way to locate us.” Lana thought about it and said, “You’re saying that we don’t need to hurry?” “Yes. Just send some people and ask around. I believe that the other party will contact us the moment they can. Of course, our people would have to investigate the matter as well, or they might not find us.” Fane nodded and stretched his

body. “I want to see who it is, trying to oppose me. Haha! I’m not afraid of anybody in this world apart from the really reclusive families!”

Chapter 976

At that moment, a bodyguard ran over and said to Fane, “Master, two beautiful ladies are looking for you outside. Oh, yes, they’re also looking for Miss Selena and Miss Lana.” “They’re looking for the three of us?” A small frown appeared on Fane’s face as he quickly walked outside with Selena. As they got to their entrance, they realized that it was the two gorgeous-looking celebrities that lived next door. “Greetings, fair ladies. Can we help you with anything? Come in and take a seat,” offered Fane as he smiled toward Blake and Tianna. “We won’t be going in. We’re grateful that you saved us not too long ago and helped us. The weather is good today, so we’d like to invite you out for a meal. May we have the honor?” Blake smiled shyly and glanced at Fane sheepishly. “Why, yes! How can we refuse the invitation from two beautiful women? Of course, it’s our honor to have lunch with two famous celebrities!” Fane nodded and agreed to it. Tianna stretched her limbs as she smilingly beamed, “Then let’s go. With you two, we don’t even need to bring our bodyguards. It’d be much more comfortable like this!” “Do we need to drive?” asked Selena after thinking about their offer. “No need for that—there’s a nice restaurant not far ahead of us. Both me and Blake like to go there for food when we’re free. The taste and other aspects of the restaurant are amazing!” Tianna smiled and led the way with Tianna. The quintet soon arrived at a nice restaurant. Many passersby secretly took photos of them with their cell-phones as they made their journey. They felt envy sizzling within them, especially toward Fane. After all, he was the only man among the group of five, and his four female companions were utterly stunning. How could others not be envious of such a scene? Even when Fane left the house with Selena and Lana, he would attract many envious looks. How could the others not be jealous of him as he walked with two A-class celebrities? “F*ck! Who's that man? He’s with

Blake and Tianna, no joke, and it's hard enough to invite those two beautiful celebrities!" Many customers saw the five and murmured among themselves when the group of five sat down for food. "He must be some super rich young master. Only those young masters from aristocratic families who can afford to pay thousands or billions of money are qualified to invite such pretty celebrities. Otherwise, chances of asking them out would be flat-out zero." Another middle-aged man gushed, "Them Blake and Tianna don't involve themselves in scandals normally. Celebrities like these are rare in the current entertainment world!"

Chapter 977

Of course, everyone else in the restaurant kept their voices low on purpose in a rather hushed manner. Still, Fane—who sat there—heard everything as clear as day, and his opinion about Blake and Tianna rose by several points. After all, it was not easy for them to stay clean in such a circle. Unbeknownst to them, however, a few men who walked past them from the road outside the restaurant spotted the beautiful women with Fane. The eyes of one lit up. He ran to the other side and secretly made a call to a director. "Director Wagner, I saw Blake and Tianna, and they're having a meal with another man and two women. There are five of them in the restaurant, and no bodyguards in sight. This is a good chance!" The eyes of Director Wagner—on the other side of the phone—lit up as the corners of his mouth curled up in satisfaction. "Really? Splendid! Send me the address and I'll send someone to get it done. I'm sending better men over this time, the last ones were downright useless. They can't even bring in two women and even suffered a beating!" The man on the other side of the phone immediately sent the location to him. The man knew all too well that while Director Wagner was a director and majored in film-making, he was a far cry from being a good one and filmed several bad films. However, because he was a rich young master from a filthy rich family, a true third-class aristocratic family at that, he had the money to fool around. That was why he was able

to employ good celebrities to act in his films. The newbies would have a sexual relationship with Director Wagner because they wanted to be the female main lead. That was what Director Wagner loved to do, and that was why he insisted on his dreams. He constantly made films so that he could meet such celebrities. He had his eyes set on Blake and wanted her to film in his new movie so he could get his hands on her. Never did he expect, however, that she would turn him down despite offering her a handsome pay. That made Director Wagner displeased. “Haha! Once Director Wagner gets his hands on this woman, I’d be considered to have done a great service. It’d be nice if he gives me a good character!” The man laughed as he placed his cell-phone back into his pocket before he left with his friends. “Please, order whatever you like, everyone. Don’t be courteous with us!” Blake smiled as she stole glances of Fane in front of her with charming eyes. That man was not only utterly handsome to behold, but he also saved her twice. Blake recalled how Fane took the tracker device from her button, and it made her heart jump furiously. Fane’s charms gradually caught her attention, and Blake would catch herself thinking of him during her free time for the past two days. She had to admit that he was too outstanding, and she was immensely interested. “Then we won’t hold back.” Fane smiled. He ordered quite a number of dishes before passing the menu back to the waiter. After the dishes were served, the group of five started eating. Once they finished their meal, Blake took the initiative and paid for their meal, and that induced jealousy from the people around Fane. They assumed that the man would be the one paying for the meal they shared with the beautiful celebrities, thus it shocked them when the celebrities were the ones treating the man to a meal. That was a distant dream for many. As the five stepped out of the restaurant, several cars drove over and surrounded them in a circle. Around 20 people came down from the cars and circled the five. “So many babes we got here!” one of the bald men said with a smile after eyeing them. “Why didn’t Director Wagner ask us to bring all the beauties away

with us? All he asked for was Blake. Won't it be a waste to leave the other three?"

Chapter 978

While the bald man had tattoos on his head, he seemed to be someone of importance and seemed to be the leader of this team. Another person with a sharp-shaped mouth and monkey-like features smiled as he spoke to the bald man, "Boss, there's a simple solution for this: why don't we just take 'em all since we're here and ready for action? In for a penny, in for a pound—let's just capture them all! We'll kill this man. As for the other four ladies… We'll give Blake to Director Wagner and keep the others." "Haha! I like the sound of that! Why does it seem like these other two babes are somewhat better-looking than these two celebrities?" spoke the bald man, smirking as he wore a sleazy expression. "It seems like this so-called Director Wagner is quite powerful. Haven't I given him punishment before?" Fane smiled coldly as he looked at the people in front of him. Blake was rather worried at the sight of so many men. She estimated that these people had superior combat power than the previous ones. She looked at Fane and the others and, with a faintly worried expression, fretted, "I'm so sorry—seems like I've caused you people trouble again. It seems difficult to handle these…these people!" Fane smiled at her nonchalantly. "Don't worry—they're just trash bags. This Director Wagner must have a death wish or something, wanting to try again after failing. It looks like I have to teach him a lesson!" "Director Wagner isn't just a director. His family is very rich and is a third-class aristocratic family! How else would he have that much money to fund his trashy films? He's filmed several bad movies and not only did he fail to make any money, but he's lost quite a lot. His parents, sadly, are so rich that they barely bat an eye at the fact, considering they could afford losing money." Tianna smiled bitterly and said, "This guy loves filming movies because of the young people who have dreams of getting famous." Everything clicked for Fane after he heard everything, and he

nodded. “No wonder he acts so arrogantly: that casanova, so fixated on pretty women, came from a third-class aristocratic family!” “You’re quite a womanizer, aren’t you, young man? I’m jealous that you get to go out with four enticing women!” The bald man smiled sinisterly and continued, “My apologies, however, that this will be your last day on earth.” “‘Last day on earth’, huh? Are you sure?” Fane smiled coldly and focused his sight. He moved speedily and flickered right before them. “So fast!” The bald man lost focus as a flicker of light flashed before him, and he was greeted with the abrupt face of Fane the moment he regained focus. Startled at his speed, the bald man clenched his fist and was prepared to punch Fane. Unlucky for him, Fane made the first move as his fist sharply jabbed against his chest. Thunk! With a slightly dull sound, the bald man flew outward and landed several meters away. Embedded to the ground, he lied motionless as blood spewed from the corners of his mouth. “What?!” Somebody took a look and was frightened till his face turned pale. That was a display of immense power, no doubt. However, that person looked around him and was slightly more confident in himself. “F*ck, let’s attack together! This man is no simpleton! We’ll get him together and kill him!” Slam, bam, pow! Fane and Lana acted together, and all 20 people dropped like flies onto the floor.

Chapter 979

Just like that, the bald man and his comrades were killed with only a few left alive; Lana and Fane let them off leniently. “That’s… That’s too strong, no?” Blake and Tianna inhaled sharply, floored by Fane and Lana’s combat ability. It was seldom for them to meet such strong masters. “Haha! That’s nothing!” Fane laughed and said to the people lying on the floor, “My name is Fane. Go back and tell Young Master Wagner to stop troubling Miss Blake and Miss Tiana, you hear? They’re my best friends. If anything happens to them, he’ll be walking on eggshells the rest of his life.” Tianna and Blake—who stood behind Fane—gazed in awe, conquered by his extremely domineering tonation. He was incredibly domineering and

manly, threatening his enemies like that and vowed to protect them both. “Let’s go, time to head back.” Fane turned around and smiled before leaving with the others. It was only after they left that one of the men hastily called Director Wagner. “Young Master Wagner, we’ve met with some f*cking strong people this time. The woman wearing a mask and the man is too strong; we’re no match for them. Our people couldn’t even fight back, and half of our group was slaughtered so easily. Only a few were spared, though still badly hurt!” “How’s that possible? Are they that powerful?” Young Master Wagner’s face darkened, his fists clenched tightly as it did. “Who’s this person? How dare he go against our Wagner family? Not only did it happen once—it happened twice now! F*ck! I’ll definitely kill this guy!” The bodyguard frowned at that and hesitantly stated, “Young Master Wagner, the guy called himself Fane, and he asked us to pass a message to you. He said that Blake and Tianna are his friends and he’ll kill you if anything happens to them.” “He said that he’d kill me?” Young Master Wagner almost vomited blood in his fury. “That guy’s suicidal! F*ck! I don’t believe that Fane, a man I’ve never even heard before, dare stand up against us, a third-class aristocratic family!” Young Master Wagner eventually ended the call and went back to the Wagner family mansion. He directly went to an elder and said to him, “Old man, don’t forget your promise before. You owe me a favor, and it’s time to go through that.” The elder with grey hair nodded. “I’ve long waited for this chance to pay back this favor of yours. I owe you nothing after this.” Young Master Wagner smirked and said to the elder, “Excellent. You said this yourself, and I’m sure you won’t disappoint me as you’re a seven-star King of War. I believe in you! I want you to kill a few people and capture a woman for me.” “It shall be done.” The elder nodded without any hesitation. “Haha! That’s great! Let’s go!” Young Master Wagner asked the elder to leave with him after that. He ordered a dozen of the Wagner family’s masters to follow him as they drove toward the direction where Blake and Tianna lived. “There’s a group of four women and a man, eh?” As their cars arrived at the villa

where Fane and the others stayed, Young Master Wagner's eyes landed at the group of five who were slowly walking back home. His eyes lit up. "That other woman is a stunner herself!"

Chapter 980

The elder from the Wagner family grimaced at Young Master Wagner's words, and his eyes held faint disdain. He loathed those who oppressed others, but when he thought of the favor he owed Young Master Wagner and the Wagner family, the elder followed them out of the car. "Who's this?" Fane frowned when he saw the other party from far away. "That's Young Master Wagner, also known as Director Wagner! He got here so quickly!" Blake took a look and her face slightly darkened. She fretted at the trouble she brought for Fane. "Well, it's great that he's here. Let's teach him a lesson so he won't hang onto these bad ideas every day. This time, I'll turn him into a eunuch so he won't constantly crave after women." Fane smiled coldly as he eyed the men before him, rubbing his fists as he did. "You'll be a goner today, young man. You're rather gutless to even dare challenge me, Dylan Wagner!" Dylan arrived not far away from where Fane was and stopped. He smiled coldly as he scanned Selena and Lana from head to toe. "Young man, you're doing quite good yourself. There seemed to be lots of beautiful women around you. Although a lot of my subordinates are sacrificed today, it seems like I've gained more than I've lost. Doesn't seem fair if we only take home Blake today." "That's right, Young Master. It'd be a waste if you don't get the remaining three! Haha!" The other bodyguards also started laughing. The four beauties in front of them were extremely stunning. "Are you sure? You ordered twenty people to come after us before this, yet none of them could contend against me. You want to capture the ladies with these trash bags?" Fane eyed the people in front of him, his eyes filled with disdain. "Haha! You're a blind one, young man! This old man is a seven-star King of War, and he alone can kill you a hundred times over!" Dylan laughed out loudly. "How many heads do you

think you have that we can cut off?" "Seven-star King of War? You're a King of War?" Fane looked at the elder and frowned. "I never thought that a King of War would wallow in the mire with rubbish like these. You're rather disappointing." The corners of the old man's mouth twitched and his facial expression immediately darkened. "You only have yourself to blame, young man," said the elder. "When I was on the battlefield, I didn't have the time to care about my family. It was the Wagner family master who helped me bury my wife after she passed away. I owe their family a favor, and I'm here to return the favor." The old man glanced at Dylan and continued, "While I don't condone his actions, I need to fulfill my promises." Fane smiled indifferently and said, "Alright. This means that your favor would be considered gone once you take action today, yes? Even if it means that you'd lose to me?" "Haha! I'm a seven-star King of War! How will I lose to a young man like you?" The elder started laughing after he heard what Fane said. "Young man, you really don't have much respect for us Kings of War!" "You can try if you don't believe me!" Fane made an indignant sound as he beckoned them to start. "Hmph!" The elder no longer wasted time in idle chat and stretched his hand out to hit Fane. A strong force of gust blew toward Fane as it carried an imposing momentum. "Your fighting ability is really good!" Fane was slightly surprised. Although this elder was a seven-star King of War, he already had the combat power equal to some eight-star Kings of War. Fane slightly moved to one side and simply evaded the old man's attack when he saw the old man moving toward him.

Chapter 981

"What?" The elder never expected Fane was faster than him and could evade his attack. By the time he regained his focus, Fane had kicked his abdomen. Thoom! A dull sound was heard as the elder was sent backward several meters away. He stepped on the ground with his full strength to stabilize himself. Puff! However, as he managed to stabilize himself, he felt a sweet taste that surged from his throat. He vomited a mouthful of blood and his

face turned pale. “Impossible! What sort of power is this?” Dylan’s eyes widened in surprise when he saw the elder vomited blood. His mouth hung open so widely that it seemed as though his chin could touch the ground. “Goodness! Even the seven-star King of War is no match for him?!” The other masters from the Wagner family were baffled at the outcome. That elder was their endgame, and he was the reason Dylan dared to act so rampantly. After all, this elder owed them a favor, and he planned to utilize that in a critical moment. Dylan never used that favor all the while, but he had to use it this time as many of his family bodyguards were slain. He never thought things would turn out differently. “Ahh!” The elder gritted his teeth and flipped his palm. A sword appeared and he swung it toward Fane. “Are we seriously fighting?” Fane had noticed the ring on the elder’s hand since early on. He estimated that it held a sword as these rings were small storage units. Not many people owned such rings, and not many people could use them. Fane smiled coldly and flipped his wrist. His black sword appeared right after, and he swung it toward the elder. Fwoosh! Two powerful sword aura forces clashed against one another, yet an even more daunting gust of wind was released. “Aah!” The strong wind caused many people to move backward. Selena could not stand straight and moved several steps backward from the scary impact. The wind blew Blake’s dress up and showed her sexy long legs, to which she blushed embarrassingly. Both strong energies fought each other. Eventually, Fane’s sword aura gained the upper hand. The overwhelming power suppressED the opponent’s sword aura as the aura rushed through the elder. Whoosh! A scary wound appeared on the elder’s chest. The elder flew outward and the blood from his wound painted a perfect curve in the sky. The elder laid on the floor and was unable to stand up as he gasped for air. Fane walked over and spoke with a cold smile on his face. “You can rest easy now, you’ve followed through your promise.” “Haha... “ The elder smiled bitterly as he awaited his death. “It feels much better...now that I’ve done my end of the bargain…” Fwoosh, fwoosh, woosh! Fane ignored the elder. He swung his sword and the sword

auras flew out toward the bodyguards, killing them in the process. Only Dylan—who was so frightened that his legs had turned to jelly—was left standing in front of Fane.

Chapter 982

“Young man, I...I’m the young master of a third-class aristocratic family! You can’t kill me!” Dylan’s legs turned into jelly in his bone-chilling fright. He wanted to escape but both his legs did not cooperate. Fane flipped his hand and the black sword in his hand was nowhere to be seen. It had disappeared into thin air. “I won’t kill you,” commented the indifferent Fane with a tight smile. Dylan relaxed and smiled when he heard this. “And that’s a wise choice, my brother. It’s always better to have a friend than an enemy, right? From today onward, you are my brother, and we’ll be best friends. You should know that being friends with a third-class aristocratic family’s young master would only benefit you!” Thunk! Just as Dylan finished, Fane lifted his heel and slammed it against Dylan, breaking his balls. “Aaargh!” Dylan immediately knelt in pain. The veins on his forehead popped due to the excruciating pain he was experiencing, and his complexion was extremely pale. “I said that I won’t kill you, but I didn’t say that I won’t turn you into a eunuch!” Fane smiled coldly and loathingly added, “Now scram, you eunuch. You should stop fantasizing about women with this parting gift!” “Young man, you...you’re going to regret this! Do you t—think our family is j—just an ordinary one?” On the verge of fainting, Dylan gritted his teeth as cold sweat kept appearing on his forehead. Though he struggled, he managed to get up, ordered a taxi, and left the scene. “Haha! And he still dared threaten me after all that?” Fane laughed. He walked toward the elder and looked down at the other party. “Do whatever you want. If I, Walter Lamington, frown, I’ll give up my surname!” The elder’s name was Walter Lamington. He laid on the ground and had shallow breathing. However, the look in his eyes was extremely firm. The elder was surprised, however, when Fane took out a small pill instead and tossed it at him. “This is

medication to cure your wound—your wound will heal speedily once you eat it. The favor you owed them has been paid. While you aided him in his despicable quest, you're a person who values relationships and promises. I'm not going to kill you." "Thank… Thank you!" Walter gazed at Fane, rather astounded yet perplexed. He never held back when he attacked him. After all, he was a seven-star King of War and he thought that Fane would kill him to prevent any troubles in the future. He never anticipated a merciful Fane instead who handed him medication that could heal his wound instead of ending him. Walter took the pill after he spoke. "Thank you so much, Fane. We've troubled you so much this time!" Blake walked over and smiled at Fane. She expressed her gratitude once again. Tianna, on the other hand, fretted at the outcome and softly reminded, "Fane, you might get into trouble for turning Dylan Wagner into a eunuch." "Oh? Is that so?"

Chapter 983

Tianna's warning, however, did not even perturb Fane. "I know," said Fane. "Their family is a third-class aristocratic family, right? I don't really care much about these third-class families. You saw it too, that I'm not afraid of a seven-star King of War. Why would I be afraid of a third-class aristocratic family?" "No, I'm afraid that their family is more than what you think." Unexpectedly, Tianna shook her head. "True, the Wagner family is indeed a third-class aristocratic family, but Dylan's mother, Louisa Lowe belonged to a powerful family of the underground forces. This family is very powerful, but Louisa's parents disliked Dylan's father and disapproved of them. Therefore, they didn't pay much attention to Louisa. They have a bad relationship and seldom keep in touch." Tianna paused before she explained, "Regardless, Dylan is still Louisa's parents' grandson. I believe they'd pay attention to what has happened and won't ignore it, since it's a rather serious incident." Fane's face turned slightly solemn hearing Tianna's words. "Never expected that trash bag would have such relationships. Still, I've always disliked underground forces. Haha! It doesn't matter if they don't

cause us any trouble; I'll teach them a lesson if they try anything funny." Tianna, anxious at his demeanor, persistently added, "Fane, I know that you're very powerful, but you don't know how big this underground force is. Not only do they have lots of people, but they have many masters with them as well. More importantly, they're not powers from Swallow City—they're daunting forces from Gin City!" "I didn't think they'd be related to Gin City!" Tianna assumed Fane was intimidated by the new information she offered, but he was only momentarily surprised before his expression watered down, completely calm and normal. "It's okay. No matter what power they are, things will turn out the way they should be. I've hurt Dylan, and I can't back away from that. Apart from that, do you think that it'll make a difference if I go over and apologize? They'd kill me for sure." "That's right!" Lana smiled bitterly and said, "Alright then. You ladies should head in first—no need to worry about this or blame yourself about it. It's Fane's decision to make the other party a eunuch. It happened, so let it be." "Alright... We'll head home now." Blake looked at Fane before walking toward the gate that led to their villa with Tianna. Fand and the remaining duo glanced at the old man on the ground before they left him there and entered their villa. It was not long until the old man sat up and was shocked at his wound. It was only a brief moment, yet his wound was almost completely healed. His wound no longer oozed blood as well! The pill Fane gave him was indisputably miraculous. "Who is this man? Not only does he have such strong fighting power, but the healing pill he gave me is terrifyingly good as well. He's even unfazed when he's told that the Wagner family's young master is related to the Gin City forces. Who are they?" Walter frowned, his mind overwhelmed with thoughts. After sitting by the side for another hour, Walter was surprised to find that the wound on his body had completely healed. After thinking quietly for a short moment, he walked toward the entrance of Fane's house. "I wish to see your master," said Walter to one of the bodyguards solemnly. "Haha! We saw what happened just now. You can't defeat our master, but it's good enough that

he spared you. Are you trying to cause trouble again?" One of the bodyguards gave a tight smile as he ushered, "You should go—" "No, I'm not here to cause trouble—the previous me is dead. I'm thankful to your master for sparing my life, and my life belongs to him from now on. I'm willing to serve your master," declared the serious yet determined Walter.

Chapter 984

Walter was brought in to meet Fane. "You really want to join our family?" questioned Fane as he took out a cigarette, leisurely lighting it up, and smoked. "Think of what you're getting into. I've got bad blood with too many people, and Dylan's mother is related to some underground forces from Gin City. They might come looking for me soon. Are you still willing to work for me under such circumstances?" Unexpectedly, Walter nonchalantly replied, "Since when am I, Walter Lamington, ever afraid of death? When I was fighting with you, I understood the difference between our strengths after I vomited blood as a result of your assault, but I never gave in and stood my ground till I nearly died. I've made up my mind before I came to fight you, knowing that either you or me has to go." Walter paused before he added, "I just didn't expect that you'd spare me, seeing that I went rather all-out on you. I see in you a good man, and it'll be a pleasure working for you." Fane chuckled, satisfied at his answer. Walter was a true man, no doubt. "Haha! Since you've said so, then I'll agree to it. I'll be upfront with you though, that the salary I offer isn't low. What do you think of twenty thousand a month?" "Money doesn't matter; all I need is food. I'm not lacking money, you see." Walter arched his hand at Fane. "Thank you, Master, for taking in me regardless of what happened previously. I promise to do my best." "This is great! We have another master in our ranks!" Elaine smiled, elated at the outcome. "Elaine, bring him away and arrange accommodation for him," Fane waved his hands and asked Elaine to bring Walter away. ... Dylan went straight to the hospital by taxi. After the doctor did the diagnostics, they had no other choice but to undergo a resection

operation. Dylan, true enough, became a eunuch. Not long after the surgery was completed, the Wagner family members took him back and prepared private doctors for him. Looking at Dylan who was lying on a bed, the Wagner family master, Kane Wagner balled his fists tightly with a stormy expression. “How dare the bastard do this to my son?! Doesn't he know that our family is not one to be trifled with?” Kane held his fists so tightly and gritted his teeth tightly. “A peculiar incident, it is. Although we’re a third-class aristocratic family, those who know our situation won’t wish to provoke us; this applies to even second-class aristocratic families. After all, everybody knows that Madam comes from a very strong family!” Another Wagner family’s elder thought about it and muttered in confusion. “That bastard’s got guts. I only have one son, and the Wagner family only has one son too. He dared abolish my son and made him into a eunuch! Does he want the Wagner family to end with Dylan?” Louisa was also extremely afraid. The current master of the Wagner family, Kane was already old, and there was no way for them to bear another child. The Wagner family only had one lone seedling, yet something so unfortunate happened to him. It was impossible for the Wagners to not be furious.

Chapter 985

“Mother, Father… A guy named Fane did this to me. He stays at Elegant Villa Park and has occupied about twenty villas there. Fane lives there with the others,” sobbed Dylan to his parents, lamenting his fate. “Mother, Father, you have to avenge me. I… I can’t be a normal man for the rest of my life. I rather die than live like this!” “Son, you mustn’t have such suicidal thoughts. Don’t worry—we’ll definitely avenge you,” assured Kane. Louisa, meanwhile, commented, “Ask the seven-star King of War, Walter Lamington to come here. Don’t he owe us a favor? It’s time for him to return that favor. It’d be easy for a seven-star King of War to destroy a small power we’ve never heard of.” To that, Dylan quickly responded, “Mother, don’t ask Walter to come over—that Fane guy is too much. I brought Walter with

me when I went to him because that guy killed many of our masters. I never, ever thought Walter would fail to contend against Fane, and I think he's dead from Fane's sword attack!" "What?!" All the Wagner family members inhaled sharply, wondering if they heard wrongly. They never expected that Dylan had already brought Walter to Fane yet failed to win against him. "If Walter can't even beat that guy, none of the masters from our family can defeat him," came the comment of one of the Wagners' elders. "That's right. Walter is a seven-star King of War and has extremely strong combat capabilities. If such a strong fighter can't take him down, we'd fail no matter how many bodyguards we send over!" exclaimed another middle-aged man. Kane's facial expression grew increasingly dark. He thought about it and looked at Louisa. "Honey, we've never asked your parents for help all these years, and our relationship with them is rather good these days. Although they still look down on us, they allowed us to go back for meals during New Years'. So…" Louisa nodded. "I know what you're trying to say. I didn't want to rely on them or beg them previously with hopes that we can grow stronger, but for the sake of our son, I'll call on them." Kane stressed once again, "Our opponent this time is so powerful that even a seven-star King of War failed to eliminate him. I'm afraid that our opponent's combat prowess is comparable to an eight-star King of War, and it'll be difficult to fight such a strong master!" "That's immensely troublesome," spoke the serious Louisa. "If that's the case, we can only ask my father to send more people, and they gotta be extraordinarily strong too." Both Kane and Louisa asked Dylan to take a rest after they finished their discussion. Louisa exited the room and quickly called her parents. Louisa's parents only had a daughter and a grandson. Louisa's parents were extremely angry when they heard what happened. After they assessed the situation, they personally brought several hundred masters from the Lowe family to avenge their grandson. Kane was relieved when he knew both his parents-in-law were coming over. Fane and his company were guaranteed goners with so many masters coming over. They believed that they would be able to avenge their

son. Afraid that Fane and the others would escape, the Wagner family sent many bodyguards to spy on them. The bodyguards were ready to report to Kane at any time.

Chapter 986

“There’s trouble, Master. I realized that there’s someone monitoring our movements around the house!” Walter came before Fane the next day, reporting with a solemn expression. Fane, who was drinking tea in the garden, did not seem to care. He gave a wan smile. “Then who do you think it is?” he asked. “It must be from the Wagner family. They were afraid that we would take off. But they didn’t attack us because they don’t have proper fighters in their family. They are a third-class aristocratic family after all. Aside from me, their best fighters are those who are the same level as a three-star King of War. That’s why they don’t dare to attack! “As for the fighter from the Lowe family, it’ll take him at least a day to rush over from Gin City. That’s why the Wagner family is keeping tabs on us, they’re afraid that we’ll run away!” After Walter said all that, he asked Fane, “What should we do now, Master?” Fane gestured for him to sit down. “Skyler had already told me about this,” he said slowly. “There’s nothing to be afraid of. We just won’t go out for these two days and wait for them to come. Don’t worry, we won’t have to run away. It’ll be fine so long as we stay put!” “All right!” Walter nodded his head. He felt as though the longer he knew Fane, the lesser he knew about the man. He only learned that Skyler was an eight-star King of War after he came in, yet a man of his status was willing to stay by Fane’s side—willing to fight for Fane. The b*stard was probably far stronger than a nine-star King of War or was at least as strong as one. Only, there was no way that there were no rumors about someone as frighteningly strong as him, and this made Walter confused. Someone like him would have a powerful presence in Gin City, what more a place like Swallow City. At that moment, the Chaffman family quickly got the news. One of the men came before Master Chaffman. “Master, we heard that Fane and his family

were not from our city," he said. "They're probably from another city, but we don't know which one. Still, they must have come from outside. We also did some investigations. He provoked the Wilson family recently, and now their young master is rendered infertile!" "Really? Dylan's son had been rendered infertile by Fane?" Master Chaffman was slightly taken aback after he heard that. "That punk is bold. Not only is he not afraid of us, he actually dared to do something like that to Young Master Wagner…" Peace, who was standing to the side, loosened a small breath of relief as he heard this. He had been fortunate; if Fane had been in a bad mood the other day and rendered him infertile as well in a fit of recklessness, he would never see the light of day again. However, Peace quickly thought of something, and his eyes brightened. "Eh, doesn't the Wagner family have a seven-star King of War? Will they find trouble with Fane?" After he said that, his expression darkened. "Doesn't seem probable though. There's an eight-star King of War in that punk's house. Even if the Wagner family send their King of War over, he still wouldn't be a match!" "Master Wagner had sent that seven-star King of War over. I heard that he received a fatal stab wound. He's most likely dead!"

Chapter 987

The man who made the report could not help but twist his lips into a bitter smile. A fighter as strong as that would have a significant presence, and plenty of people would be pandering to him. Yet he had been killed by that punk. "Hold on. Was the seven-star King of War killed by the eight-star King of War from the Woods family, or someone else?" Peace quickly thought of something and asked hurriedly. "He was killed by Fane Woods!" The man replied. When they heard this, Peace exchanged a glance with his father. They both took a sharp intake of breath. Fane's fighting prowess must be no joke. Luckily they had not acted rashly. His fighting ability as well as that King of War's were terrifying enough, never mind the masked woman. The woman seemed like she was no pushover as well. "Fane is not

easy to deal with. Thank God we didn't act rashly!" The old master of the Chaffman family considered the situation, then he spoke, "The Wagner family has only one son, and he's infertile now—it's a great loss to them. There has not been a child from the Wagner family for so many years, and now they probably won't have a next-generation. That's why the Wagner family will definitely avenge their son. We just need to stand by and watch!" "Mmhmm. Master Wagner's wife is from the Lowe family, who happens to be a significant secret powerhouse in Gin City. They'll definitely bring plenty of skilled fighters. We just don't know if the Woods family will choose to run away if they find out that the Wagner family is out for them!" Master Chaffman added after a moment of silence. "If everything goes well, the people from the Lowe family will be arriving by tomorrow morning. We can go over tomorrow to survey the situation from afar in the pretense of going out shopping. I'm sure that Fane and his men are done for this time." Old Master Chaffman's lips curved into a cold smile. "After all, Old Master Lowe and his wife are as strong as nine-star Kings of War. And they have plenty of fighters aside from themselves. There are probably nearly a hundred people who have the strength of a King of War." "Excellent. We won't need to spare a single man like this, and we'll get to witness Fane being brought to his knees. F*ck. I'll definitely record the entire thing in secret tomorrow for posterity!" Peace's heart leaped in delight after he heard all this. He could not kill Fane himself, but the idea that he would be able to see that man die, made him excited all the same. However, the only thing he would regret was the two beautiful women Fane had, whose looks were out of this world. He would never get the chance to bed them after this. Young Master Chaffman never gave up a woman he wanted. Usually, cash was enough to buy them over—so long as he gave enough, they would gladly throw themselves into his arms. He never thought that he would fail so miserably this time. It was probably the worst failure he had ever experienced in his entire life.

Chapter 988

The next morning, the Chaffman family set out early to a street that was near to Fane and his family's house. They quickly found themselves seats at a snack shop, watching the villa before them as they ate. Anticipation swelled within Peace. He kept staring at the villa's entrance, now free of chaos. He was well aware that the peace was temporary—the calm before the storm. After the clock hit ten, a few men from the Wilson family came over, along with over 200 fighters from Gin City. "They're here, they're here. Quick! Inform the master!" The two bodyguards noticed the retinue from afar and immediately cried out, running. Fane made everyone else hide in the house. He took Lana, Skyler, Walter, Pendragon, Dennis, and a few dozen other men to the empty space before the villa's gates, waiting for the enemy to arrive. "Hah. I never thought you'd be here waiting for us!" Master Wagner burst into laughter when he saw this. "Are you the b*stard who dared to do something like that to my grandson? Do you have a death wish?" There was an old man whose hair had gone completely white. He slapped a hand against the head of the stone lion at the entrance, which was at least half as tall as a man. Bang! A sharp crack rang out, and that frightening stone lion broke apart, shattering into little pieces. "What!" Walter could not help but exclaimed when he saw that. The old man looked like he was giving a light slap, but there was so much strength in his hand. It seemed that he was an extremely formidable fighter. "How are you still alive, Walter?" Kane huffed after he noticed Walter's presence, "Why are you standing on their side? Are you telling me that you wish to make an enemy out of the Wagner family?" "B*stard! You traitorous snake!" Louisa grew even more furious and snarled at Walter. Walter was angry as well after he heard that. "What are you talking about, Kane Wagner? Do you wish for me to die?" he snapped. "I owed the Wagner family debt, and now that I've cleared my debt, I don't owe you anything anymore. I didn't sell myself to you. It's my choice to follow Fane Woods!" "Fine. You asked for it, Walter. You can't

blame us for anything that happens since you have a death wish!" Louisa gave a cold smile. "It seems like you're not aware of just how strong my family is. We have two fighters who are as strong as nine-star Kings of War, and there are nearly a hundred men who have the strength of Kings of War. How are you going to beat all of us?" "If that's what you say, Walter, it seems like we'll just have to get rid of you!" Kane also huffed at Walter. "Heh. Since I've already decided to follow Master Fane, I've set aside my fear of death long ago." Walter lifted his chin, speaking without an ounce of care. "I'll kill this traitor first!" The old man from the Lowe family clenched his fists. He stamped a foot against the ground and launched himself straight at Walter. "No way you'll kill one of my men without me saying so!" Fane flashed a mirthless smile and clenched his fist. He slammed a foot against the ground and rushed out. "Since you're so eager to die, I'll be happy to oblige!" The old man gave a wry smile. Bloodlust surged in his gaze as he saw Fane rushing forward. He threw a fist toward the younger man. "Back at you!" In the face of his opponent's powerful strike, Fane threw out his own fist without hesitation, and their attacks clashed.

Chapter 989

Bang! A powerful force erupted, and a frightening wave of energy rushed out from the fist, a result of a shockwave. "What!" The old man quickly sensed the terrifying amount of strength in Fane's fist. Terror filled his eyes. "Pfft!" He flew a few meters back before stopping. Blood spat out of his mouth. "Dad!" Louisa cried out when she saw that the old man was injured, not believing the sight before her. Her father was as strong as a nine-star King of War. Nearly everyone deferred to him in Gin City, yet he was injured by just that one blow from the punk. "I'll forget everything that happened if all of you leave now. But if you don't, and if you keep causing trouble, don't blame me for being ruthless!" Fane laced his fingers behind his back, speaking in a lofty tone. "What should we do? This punk…" The old woman immediately stepped forward and asked the old man. "I'm fine.

It’s just that he has a good arm!” The old man glared at Fane and wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth. “It shouldn’t be a problem for us to kill them, considering our numbers,” he said. “This punk just wants to scare us off!” The old woman nodded her head. “I think so too. And he’s even giving us a chance. Heh. He wouldn’t be saying anything of that sort if he truly had the ability. He’s afraid to get into a fight with us!” “That’s right. He must have thrown all of his strength into that one punch earlier, and Dad hadn’t expected him to be so strong, so he didn’t use his full strength! He only got injured because he underestimated that punk!” Louisa nodded her head as well, thinking that her parents’ deduction made sense. “Heh. Seems like you chose death!” Fane chuckled and spoke in a cold voice after he heard their discussion. “Heh. Did you really think I was frightened? Did you think you could scare us?” The old man chuckled. He flipped his palm, and a sword appeared in his grip. “You’re strong, but you might not necessarily know how to use sword aura!” The old woman flipped her palm as well, another sword appearing in her grip. “Don’t forget, you little brat, that both of us are as strong as nine-star Kings of War,” she said, a cold smile on her lips. “Can you beat the two of us alone? Besides, out of the 200 odd men we have here, almost a hundred are as strong as Kings of War. How can you hope to match us?” “That’s right. They can’t beat us with the few people they have now!” A young man stood up, a sword in his hand. He hollered with a ferocious bite to his tone. “Heh. Then why don’t you try us?” Lana chuckled and flipped her palm. A purple sword appeared in her grip. “That sword!” Walter took a sharp intake of breath when he saw the sword. Was that not the weapon of choice of Lana Zechs, the Goddess of War? And this masked woman was named Lana as well. He had not thought much about it before, thinking that they happened to share the same name. Now only did he realize that the masked woman was, in fact, Lana Zechs. He had heard long ago that she was a beauty as well. Why did he not put two and two together? He looked at Fane. Walter grew even more excited. There was only one man

who could make the Goddess of War follow him—and that was the Supreme Warrior!

Chapter 990

Walter was extremely excited when the idea appeared in his head—Fane, the Supreme Warrior! No one had ever seen his face before, and even his name was not known. Yet he had the chance to meet the Supreme Warrior, to witness his skills and fight alongside him. He would have never dreamed of something like that, but now he was in such close proximity with the Supreme Warrior. If Fane was truly the Supreme Warrior, he would be able to take out all these people in front of him with ease. Plus, he would not need to even use his full strength—it would be as easy as breathing for him. However, he knew that the Supreme Warrior was someone who liked to keep a low profile. It was likely the reason why he had kept his identity a secret in the first place. No one knew his name all this while, although he had contributed greatly to the nation. “Walter, why are you staring into space?” Skyler noticed that Walter was staring at Fane, and palpable excitement flashed in the man’s eyes, so he chided the younger man. “Oh. I’m sorry!” Walter snapped back into his senses and quickly flipped his palm, taking out his own sword. “Go for the head first!” The old man attacked Fane first, slashing his sword. He clearly had good technique. The sword aura was practically a solid object, emanating a sense of sheer ruthlessness. The attack was amplified tenfold from the technique alone. “Hmph!” In the face of this attack, Fane simply flashed a wan smile. He flung his hand outward, and another shot of sword aura forth. Whoosh! The old woman was no slouch either. She slashed an air blade toward Fane, just as frightening as her husband’s. Fane threw out another air blade toward her. He was fast, but the strength of the blades was not compromised at all. They were just as sharp, just as fierce—and they reached a good few meters before they finally dissipated. It was a powerful attack. Bam bam! Soon enough, Fane’s air blades clashed with the couple’s. The resulting shockwave sent

ripples that even shook the earth. A frightening crash rang out at the contact point, as though thunder were clapping right before them. “They’re fighting. Fantastic!” In the distance, Peace and the others were extremely excited when they saw the fight breaking out. Fane would be done for this time. Bam bam! Unfortunately, he quickly noticed that the old couple’s attacks were quickly blocked by Fane’s counterattack. They even formed aftershocks, and the excessive energy bounced back toward the old couple. “Pfft!” The old man and the old woman flew backward, their faces as pale as death. Whoosh whoosh whoosh! On Lana’s side, there were no men who were a match for her. She threw a few air blades out, and plenty of her opponents fell onto the ground, dead. “No way!” The old man and woman were so shocked at the sight that all color leeched from their cheeks. There had been quite a few fighters who were as strong as five or six-star Kings of War, and they had all been killed by that masked woman. They did not even have the chance to fight back against someone as strong as that. “Die!” Skyler and Walter sprang into action after seeing so many fighters being killed. Adrenaline filling their veins, they sprang forth into the array. “No way. The four of them are so strong!”

Chapter 991

The old couple was even more frightened when they saw their men falling one by one around them. Now they finally understood that Fane had truly been giving them a chance to live. Still, it was too late for regrets. “Die!” In a flash, Fane appeared between the old couple, sweeping his sword in a circular motion. The action formed a frightening air blade; it caught the light in a furious glint. The old couple and nearly ten of the Lowe family’s fighters were all caught within the attack’s radius. Bang bang bang! All of them flew backward and landed on the ground with heavy thumps, no longer breathing. “Dad! Mom!” Louisa released a shriek when she saw her parents killed so easily. Only now did she realize that it was a foolish decision to bring her parents along to exact revenge. Not only did she not get her

revenge, but she also led them to their deaths. In a moment, nearly a hundred of their men had died; only half were left. “No–no way!” Some of the Lowe family’s fighters shook their heads vigorously. They were terrified at the sight of the corpses strewn all over the ground. “Run!” Fane slashed another two air blades, and over a dozen men fell to the ground. Someone could not take it anymore, and wheeled around and sprinted off. Whoosh whoosh whoosh! Lana and the others took a few steps forward and killed more fighters. Bang bang! Kane and Louisa were killed as well. Only about a dozen men were left at the end, escaping with every inch of their remaining strength. They were only able to live because Fane and the others did not go after them. On the other entrance, plenty of people from the housing estate had sneaked over to watch the commotion. The fight had caused a huge ruckus and attracted their attention. Among the crowd, Blake Knight and Tiana Scott heaved sighs of relief when they saw that Fane had clenched victory. They had never thought that the Lowe family would find them so quickly—and they certainly had never expected that Fane and his fighters were so strong. They had killed so many fighters from the Lowe family in a flash. The Lowe family was powerful, and they had plenty of people. However, they had mustered all their troops for this, and so many of them had died. The Lowe family would be reduced into nothing now. Furthermore, the Lowe family’s enemies would definitely take the chance to take revenge once the news reached Gin City, completely destroying the Lowe family. Of course, the Wagner family was done for as well. The head couple of the Wagner family, as well as a few of their elders, had all died here. The Wagner family would be no more. “No way. The Lowe family had so many fighters, and they were all killed? And only a few bodyguards from Fane’s side were injured, but none of them died. Is this how it’s all ending?” Peace wondered if this was all a dream as he watched everything from afar. He glanced at his grandfather and father, who was sitting next to him. Their expressions were that of utter shock as well. “He–he’s too strong!” Old Man Chaffman wiped a layer of sweat filming at his forehead.

“We can’t afford to provoke him,” he told his son. “Remember this, do not provoke them no matter what!” “With these few men, they don’t have to be afraid of even a first-class aristocratic family in the City of Martial Arts,” Master Chaffman added, “what more a second-class aristocratic family!”

Chapter 992

“Take care of the bodies!” Fane’s lips twisted into a bitter smile when he saw the bodies all over the ground. He had wanted to find the dragon scale without creating a ruckus, and he had never wanted to cause trouble in the first place. He never thought that it would end up like this. The Wagner family was dead. Furthermore, plenty of fighters from Gin City had died there as well. It seemed that plenty of powerful families from Swallow City would have their eyes on him and his family now. However, now that he thought about it, it might not be a bad thing after all. At least the families who had set up a trap for him would be more cautious of him after this incident. “I was so scared with so many people coming at once. Thank God all of you are strong. We would have died otherwise!” Fiona and the others emerged from the house as they saw that the bodyguards were cleaning up the bodies. Fiona patted her chest. It was evident that she was still recovering from the shock. “You were amazing, dad. I want to be as strong as you when I grow up!” Kylie ran over, staring at Fane with admiration, her eyes large and round and beautiful. Fane was speechless for a moment at the sight. “Why did you allow Kylie to come?” he said to Fiona and the others. “We haven’t even finished cleaning up here. A child shouldn’t be seeing all this!” “What’s wrong with that? Didn’t you yourself say that this was the City of Martial Arts, where plenty of families are in a constant tussle of power, with some rising to eminence and others fading into obscurity? Plenty of people die every day. It’s normal. How can you expect her to face hardships in life if she’s never experienced it herself?” Surprisingly, Fiona replied, rolling her eyes at Fane. He was speechless and did not know whether to laugh or cry. “Hah, that does make sense. And she’s not the least

bit afraid! Kylie is so young, but she's so wise!" Skyler laughed and could not help but playfully pinch Kylie's cheek. Ever since Fane had come back, everyone was able to have full meals and wear nice clothes. Now, Kylie had put on some weight, her cheeks were pinchable than before. She had also turned fairer and was growing more adorable by the day, stealing the hearts of more and more people. "Hmph. Basically, I want to be as strong as you when I grow up!" Kylie harrumphed and folded her arms across her chest, puffing herself to make herself look bigger. Everyone could not help but smile at her antics. Soon enough, Caleb and the others from the Quinton family caught wind of what had happened. Hunter was shocked when he heard this. "My goodness. They had two fighters who were as strong as nine-star Kings of War, and they were all killed. How can they be so strong! Luckily we felt that something was off and did not go looking for trouble. We would all be killed otherwise!" "That's right. They're all so strong. Who knew that there were four skilled fighters among them—especially Fane. I heard that he had killed the two fighters who were as strong as nine-star Kings of War. Furthermore, he did not do so much as waste a single breath!" Although they knew of the situation for a few hours now, Caleb was still reeling from shock. The Wagner family was far stronger than the Quinton family. They were a true third-class aristocratic family, and they were gone, just like that. The Lowe family, meanwhile, was a powerful underground family from Gin City, and they too were wiped out in a blink of an eye.

Chapter 993

Soon enough, this news spread to every corner of the City of Martial Arts—Swallow City. "Pa, Ma, Grandpa, Grandma, I—I'll avenge you…" On the other hand, outside of Swallow City, Dylan brought a few bodyguards with him, heading toward the direction of Gin City in a car. After three days, Lana came before Fane. Joy radiated through Lana that her face could hardly contain her happiness. "Master, I have great news! We finally have news about the Dragon scale!" Lana stared at Fane with her eyes filled with

excitement and her tone cheerful. “There is a huge villa outside this City of Martial Arts, and I heard that a secret auction will be held in that huge villa tomorrow night. A filthy rich hidden figure, who has secretly contacted quite a few rich families in the city, intended to gather all the prominent families and businessmen to attend the auction they organized. There’s only one item to be auctioned and that is the Dragon Scale!” “Hmmm. Is that so? What do you think about this matter then?” Fane’s brows knitted as he queried. “In my opinion, as long as the problem can be solved with money, then it’s not a problem. Others probably think that the Dragon scale is something rare and worthy to be kept in their private museum for collection. They’re just curious!” Lana paused for a while and gave this matter a further thought, then she continued, “So, that means the Dragon scale doesn’t really mean much to them hence they won’t spend so much money bidding for it!” Lana halted again before continuing, “Therefore, I think we can spend some money and bid for it!” Fane bobbed his head as he was listening to Lana’s analysis. “Alright then. I’ll go with you tomorrow and have a look. But since it’s a secret auction and the other party invited others under the table, I don’t think it’d be easy for us to get in, right?” Lana nodded. “Yup, indeed. The other party scanned through the list and only invited those who are capable to participate. The public can’t join. You must have their invitation card to enter the secret auction. Otherwise, it’s impossible to get it!” “Hmmm… It looks like the only way to get into that auction is to get hold of somebody’s invitation card then!” After a moment of silence, Fane finally opened his mouth and suggested. “I have a plan in mind. Also, I heard that an invitation card allows only two person to enter, and some families have more than one card; they have two or three invitation cards! Those families can have four to six members to go to this secret auction. My plan is this, we can approach one of these families and buy an invitation card from them, what do you think?” Lana smiled gently. She had done her homework well before approaching Fane about this matter. “Sounds like a good plan!” Fane chuckled. “It just so happens that I managed to find out that the Chaffman

family has two such invitation cards. Let's go to them and buy the card from them, how about that?" Lana suggested. "Buy? No way. Peace Chaffman tried to hit on you and Selena a couple of times. So, I'd not spend a single penny on his card. I'd just ask him to give us one!" Fane chortled then he looked at the time. "It's late, let's go now. We will first get the invitation card and then I'll go to the villa tomorrow with others." Fane and Lana immediately drove toward the direction of the huge villa where the Chaffmans lived. "Master, Master, it's bad! The brat is coming, the brat is coming!" One of the bodyguards who was on duty at the gate ran into the house and reported loudly when the Chaffmans were having their dinner.

Chapter 994

"What brat? Which brat?" The head of the Chaffman family yelled at the bodyguard who rushed into the dining room. He was having a good time drinking with the family and was abruptly disturbed. He naturally felt a flicker of irritation and his forehead puckered. "The brat—the brat, Fane… Didn't we witness them kill a lot of people from the Wagner family and the Lowe family the other day? The brat from that day came here with the woman in a mask!" The bodyguard's voice trembled. He was once proud of being the bodyguard of the Chaffman family. He had a lot of confidence in the Chaffman because, in common circumstances, nobody dared to offend such a prominent and powerful family which was why Young Master Chaffman was so arrogant and snobbish. However, the two people who came to the Chaffman's residence today sent chills down his spine; he was weighed down by dread. This was because the two's combat prowess was too terrifying. If he had not known all the names of the Nine Great Gods of War, he would have suspected Fane to be one of them! "What the heck? Why are those two here?" The head of Chaffman was startled at the news that he shot up from the chair. He was sober all of the sudden that he stopped feeling tipsy or drunk. "Dad, are they here to seek revenge? But, but, didn't they already beat me up last time? Don't tell me he's here for his woman

again!" Peace had been behaving well lately and had not been fooling around. But now after hearing that Fane had come to his house with Lana, his face went white in an instant and his hands turned cold and clammy. Old Master Chaffman uttered after thinking for a while, "It's highly unlikely they came here for that matter, if so, he would have come here two days ago, why now? Besides, the Chaffman family is not an ordinary family, we have so many elite fighters, hence if they were here for trouble, why only the two of them? Why didn't they gather the other four skilled fighters? The head of the Chaffman family, on the other hand, was worried beyond words. "Pa, what do you know? Only two of them came which means they know that they're able to defeat us with just the two of them. If that's the case, don't you think it's more petrifying?" The head of Chaffman gulped loudly and then continued, "Have you not seen with your own eyes that day? Fane possessed greater combat prowess than the old man, and the old woman of Lowe family did! The old couple of the Lowe family is on par with a nine-star King of War! But what happened in the end? Both were killed by Fane! Now, you tell me, how terrifying Fane is?" The corner of the Old Master Chaffman's mouth twitched uncontrollably at the information. However, in the end, he still shook his head to disagree. "No, if they're looking for trouble, they would have just come in and killed all of us. Why are they waiting outside and allowing the bodyguard to come in and report?" Old Master Chaffman then wheeled his head and faced the bodyguard. "Go out and let the two in. Remember, you must be polite and respectful when you speak to them, understand?" "Yes, Sir!" The bodyguard bowed and went off. They were two strong people; how could he disrespect them? He would not even know how and when he died if he really did offend them. The bodyguard thought to himself. Soon, Fane and Lana were brought to the Chaffman family by the bodyguard. "Hey, my old friend, Fane! I truly apologize for my carelessness that I didn't come to greet you. I didn't know you were coming, I'm truly sorry!" Master Chaffman studied the two and bowed before them while apologizing. Then he quickly turned to one of the

servants and commanded, “Why are you still standing there? Go get new plates and bowls! They will join us for dinner and a couple of drinks! I’ll drink tonight with these strong and powerful people!” “Oh, Master Chaffman, stop it, you’re being too kind! We’re not strong nor powerful!” Fane giggled and bowed to greet the other party as well. “Nah, my friend, you’re being too modest! The episode that day has spread all over the City of Martial Arts, or at least the families in this vicinity are all aware of it!”

Chapter 995

Old Master Chaffman chuckled with a wide grin on his face. Fane did not bother with all the formality and went straight into the topic. “Old Master Chaffman, I’m here for some matter. As for dinner and drinking, I don’t think it’s necessary. After all, I had some unpleasant moments with your grandson before. So I don’t think I can enjoy the dinner or drinking at all!” “It’s a misunderstanding! It’s all a misunderstanding!” Peace immediately chimed in with an awkward smile. “That incident was purely a misunderstanding. I was ignorant and rude, that’s why it happened. But I really have to say this, that the two Mrs. Woods are truly beauties. Brother Fane, you’re blessed to have both of them as your wives. I’m envious!” Fane’s face immediately sank at his comments. He retorted with a cold but controlled voice, “Peace Chaffman, first of all, don’t call me Brother Fane and don’t you dare look at my wife anymore. For a trash like you, I don’t want to have any kind of relationship with you!” Fane did not even spare the other party’s face at all, even when the other party was from a prominent second-class family in Swallow City. Peace’s face turned red; he was embarrassed that he could not wait to find a crack in the ground and hide his head into it! Lana—who was standing beside Fane—listened to the exchange and her face was immediately kissed pink. She did not know that she would be mistaken as Fane’s wife. How blessed was this? “I’ll be straightforward. I’m here for something serious. I heard that tomorrow night, you’re going to attend an auction held by some anonymous

organization, right?" Fane fixed his glares at the Chaffmans. The head of the Chaffman family nodded in return. "Yes, you're right. We only received the invitation last night, I didn't expect you to know about it this so soon. It seems that nothing can be hidden from you, Mr. Woods!" "Hehe, I'm merely a nobody who just moved to Swallow City not long ago. How could I compare myself with a second-class family like yours?" Fane chortled then added, "My motive today is very simple. I know that you have two invitation cards for that auction, how about giving one of those to me? I don't need two, one is enough. It shouldn't be a problem, right?" "Wow, Mr. Woods is interested in the Dragon scale? I didn't see that coming. Well. No problem, we have two cards, and it's fine to share one with you!" Master Chaffman flipped his palm and an invitation card suddenly appeared on his hand. He then handed it to Fane. "Haha! Master Chaffman, such a pronto! You indeed possessed the characteristics of the family head! I thank you for the card. Also, I hope that Master Chaffman and the others will keep this as a secret!" "Now, may we excuse ourselves!" Fane let out a warm laugh, bowed, and thanked Master Chaffman before the two left the residence. "Wow, I didn't expect them to give us the card so easily! It seems like Master Chaffman is not indecisive!" After leaving the Chaffman's residence, on the way back, Lana praised Master Chaffman from the bottom of her heart. Fane, however, smiled dryly. "They're not fools. That day during the battle with the Lowe and the Wagner family, I noticed their presence; they were watching the fight from afar, from the other side of the store. Although the Chaffman owned a lot of elite fighters, deep inside they know that even if they've gathered all these strong fighters, they wouldn't stand a chance against us!" "What? They were watching us? I didn't expect that!" Lana dazed.

Chapter 996

"Strange, Fane came here specifically to ask for the invitation card. This means that this brat is interested in the Dragon scale!" As soon as the two left, Master Chaffman could not help but mutter aloud, "Now we only have

one card left, so only two of us are able to go to the auction tomorrow. We're fortunate that Fane did not ask for both cards!" "But, how did Fane know about this? They're not ordinary people, aren't they?" Peace's brows snapped together, with a puzzled look on his face. "The secret organization sent us the invitation cards. How did he find out about this? This means that the other party must have been searching and gathering information about the Dragon scale. Otherwise, how is it possible for Fane to know about the auction so quickly?" "This is so weird! Why would he be so interested in the Dragon scale? While we're still speculating whether this Dragon scale is a real thing or not, they've already investigated it thoroughly. They must have interest in it a long time ago!" Old Master Chaffman, too, felt that Fane's interest in the Dragon scale was certainly not on a whim. Otherwise, he would not have come to them specifically for the invitation card! "Hmmm…they just moved here not too long ago. Oh, now I see it! Not too long ago, there was news about the Dragon Scale and then after there was no news about the Dragon Scale at all. Nobody knows anything about it. But Fane and the others moved here…hmm… they must have heard the news and came here for the Dragon scale!" Suddenly, Peace understood the situation as though some wise spirits possessed his body. "We've never heard about Fane and others before; they must have come here for the Dragon scale. And since they're from the other cities and they came here for the Dragon scale, what does this mean? This means that this Dragon scale is real! Since it is real, there might really be a dragon in this world!" "What? Dragon is real?" Old Master Chaffman was startled at the information that his eyes widened. "This thing has always been a legend, none of us have seen it. I initially thought that this secret auction about the Dragon Scale is a fraud to lure us and cheat our money. But if our guesses are right, this means that the Dragon scale is real! There's really such a thing in this world!" "Also, Pa, on the invitation card, it writes that this Dragon scale possesses a miraculous effect, if you were to soak it in tea and drink it every day, you can live longer! It's not one or two years longer but decades!

If the Dragon scale really exists, doesn't that mean that the miraculous effect is real too?" Master Chaffman soon thought of something and excitement suddenly glowed brightly on his face. Old Master Chaffman's eyes, too, revealed signs of excitement after hearing the miraculous effect of dragon scale. "If this is true, then we must try to bid for this item tomorrow! After all, auctions are all about money! It's a wealth competition!" Master Chaffman bobbed his head in agreement. "Yes, a lot of prominent families must be thinking that there is no such thing as dragon scale, not to mention its miraculous effect that was written on the card. They must be thinking that it's fake and a fraud. And some of them merely want to get it as a collection. So, they certainly wouldn't and cannot afford to spend so much on it. In that sense, our chances to get the Dragon scale is incredibly high!" "Heh! I'm afraid it's not that easy!" To everyone's surprise, Peace—who was drinking silently at the side—suddenly interrupted with a loud laugh. "If Fane and his men came here all the way from other cities solely for this Dragon scale, then they are determined to get it. Hence, Fane will definitely compete fiercely with us in the auction!" "Humph! This is an auction, the only thing that matters is money, and not fighting ability. So, what are you afraid of? As long as we have money and the other party doesn't, then it'll be our show!" Old Master Chaffman could not wait to get the dragon scale. It would be wonderful if he could live a few more decades! "What I fear is even if we bid for the Dragon scale and got it in the end, the other party will come and seize it. In that case, we're no match for him!" Peace let out a dry smile. "The only families that are not afraid of him could only be some first-class families in this city, I guess!" Old Master Chaffman was rendered speechless. What Peace said was true; if they were to get the dragon scale successfully in the auction, and Fane came and asked for it, they would have no choice but hand it over to Fane.

Chapter 997

The next day, some of the families who were invited to this secret auction were not interested at all in the dragon scale, and some even thought that it was a fraud. Hence, quite a number of those prominent families did not go to the huge villa outside the city. But most of the invited families wanted to find out the truth of dragon scale; they brought a few bodyguards with them and went to the huge villa outside the city. More and more people were gathered outside the villa, however, the owner of the villa did not open the gates, instead, the owner made them wait outside the villa. “Who the heck organized this auction? How could the organizer make us all wait outside and not even give us a place to sit! How arrogant!” An old man from the crowd huffed angrily. “Damn right! The organizer only gave us three invitation cards, how are my bodyguards going to get in? Only six of us can get in!” Another middle-aged man—who stood beside the old man—could not help but cursed out loud. He brought tons of bodyguards with him to here, only to find out the rules. This made him upset. “Hey, Young Master Norton, look over there! Can you see that beauty? I’ve never met her before, isn’t she attractive?” On the other side of the crowd, there were a few rich young masters gathered together, chilling and smoking cigarettes. One of them noticed Lana in the crowd and his eyes fixated on her, never turning away. Young Master Norton looked at the direction pointed by his friend; his eyes brightened up. “Holy f*ck! That chick’s body is so damn amazing! Look at the slender yet plump thighs. I bet all men would be head over heels for her!” “Hehe! Young Master Norton, you may not have met that woman and man yet but they’re not someone you should mess with. Have you heard of the news where all the members of the Lowe family and the Wagner family being murdered? You must’ve heard about it, right? They’re the ones who did it!” One of the young masters chortled bitterly as he uttered to the other young masters. “It looks like she’s a thorny rose—a beautiful woman who can’t be touched!” After hearing the news, Young Master Norton could not help but mock with a bitter laugh. He was a young master of a first-class aristocratic family, so naturally many pretty women would offer themselves

to him as though he was a magnet that attracted women effortlessly. However, since he had met so many pretty women, common pretty women would not catch his eyes at all; his aesthetic taste toward women was naturally heightened. However, he never expects to meet such a beautiful woman like Lana tonight; that this woman had lit up the soul in his eyes. Well. It seemed that a trip to the outskirt tonight was not in vain at all! Soon enough, the crowd grew bigger and bigger, and several staff members of the auction came out to the entrance gate, and then stood still in two rows. One of the guys with thick eyebrows and sharp eyes uttered aloud, “Attention, please! We apologize for making everyone wait for a long time. Now we’ll open up the gates and let everyone in. Please line up here, and remember, one invitation only allows two people to go in, the remaining will have to wait outside!” The crowd lined up in pairs as requested by the staff, then handed the invitation card and entered the villa. “Let’s go!” Fane threw the cigarette butt on the ground, stomped it fiercely to put out the fire. Only then he strode toward the entrance with Lana.

Chapter 998

After Fane handed the card to the staff, he and Lana entered the villa and came into a nicely decorated hall. On the side of the hall, a stage was built temporarily for this auction and there were stools for the people to sit. The light was dim, and the atmosphere was eerie; the crowd could not help but frown. The hall was soon filled with people—nearly a hundred of them. Then an old man wearing a charcoal black robe and a mask on his face walked up to the stage slowly. The old man’s blond and shiny hair caught Lana’s eyes; her face immediately dulled and sank. “Is this organizer from America?” Lana whispered to Fane. Fane’s brows snapped together at the scene before him. “How come? How did the Dragon scale fall into the hands of the people of America?” At this moment, once Fane finished his last sentence, hundreds of black-clothed people came into the hall from the front

doors and side doors, surrounding everyone in the center of the hall. “What the…” The situation of being surrounded by hundreds of bulky, black-clothed men had the prominent families feeling worried. “Oh, everyone, please stay calm. They’re here today to maintain the order and help with the auction. Don’t have to worry!” The old man on the stage opened his mouth with a warm laugh and his arms extended, signalling everyone not to panic. The old man then clapped his hands, gesturing the staff to bring out the item. A female usherer walked up to the stage with a plate on her hands. On top of the plate, there was a golden scale. “That’s the legendary Dragon scale?” All gazes with sparkles in them were fixed on the dragon scale on the plate. “I guess so? It looks like fish scales! I can’t tell if it’s real or fake but it’s really huge, almost as big as a palm!” Another man from the crowd muttered with overwhelming emotion in his voice. “Brother Fane…” Lana was bursting with joy that her eyes were full of excitement. “It’s the Dragon scale, make sure we get it!” Fane nodded to confirm its truthfulness. When he thought of it, his fists clenched tightly. Without this piece of dragon scale, he could not advance and further elevate his overall combat power; he could not take his strength to another level. This dragon scale seemed to have become a tangled knot in his heart. The current Fane was at a critical juncture of breaking through his combat prowess. His heart had longed to retrieve this dragon dcale. “Haha! Ladies and gentlemen, look, this is the legendary Dragon scale!” The old man chortled warmly then added, “I believe many of you are here just to experience something new, and most of you don’t even know how precious this Dragon scale is, and how useful it is! This is not ordinary treasure like rare gemstones; it is a real treasure!” “Old man, how can you prove that it’s a real treasure? Even if it’s a real dragon scale, how can you prove that it has the miraculous effect of prolonging human life in addition to being somewhat collectible? Didn’t you say that it has such an effect?” At this point of time, a young master of a family stood up and spilled out his question gently, with his hands behind his back.

Chapter 999

“He’s right! You have to prove it and tell us more if you wanna get money from us in this auction!” Another young master echoed with a sarcastic tone. “I came over here today merely to see something new. I’m a young master of a prominent family; I have other priorities, you know? And there’s just one item in today’s auction, that’s the Dragon scale. I came here for it, so you better don’t disappoint me!” “This young master is right! Haha! We’ll certainly not make your money go to waste! It’ll be worth it!” The old man of America who was on the stage laughed out loud at the young master’s comment. “I believe this is nothing new for everyone, that in this world, everyone is always seeking for improvement and enhancement in their combative area; Everyone wishes to become a master of martial arts or even the ultimate grandmaster of martial arts of the era! The real strong fighter acquired the techniques of enhancement and only with the knowledge of those techniques, only then one can become the real ultimate strong fighter.” Everyone nodded their head after listening to the old man’s speech. As citizens of the City of Martial Arts, they understood this point clearly. The old man opened his mouth once again and spilled the words in a slow manner, “And only a real strong fighter is able to control the Chi in their body and release it and use it to attack. Such strong fighters are rare, and we see them as someone who has surpassed the level of the ultimate grandmaster of martial arts; such a person is basically considered a semi-god! Because they can fly in the air!” At this time, an old man from the crowd stood up from his chair and jeered, “Why are you telling us about that? Who doesn’t know about that! In general, those common elite fighters in our families are like the majors and the marshals from the military; and the elders are like the kings and queens of war; and the Nine Great Gods of War, heh, they’re the semi-gods! Am I right?” “Pretty much. They’re called Gods of War in Cathysia, but in terms of their combat prowess, they are pretty much at the semi-god level!” “There are some semi-god-like fighters

in the City of Martial Arts, but they are rare. Fighters of the level of Kings of War are slightly more!" The old man on the stage bobbed his head in agreement. Then he faced the crowd and threw out another question, "Then do you know, what is the level above the semi-god level?" Puzzlement and confusion were plastered on the crowd's faces. "Well. Not sure about that!" Some shook their heads. "I did hear about it before!" The previous old man from the crowd once again uttered, "It's said to be a true god. In fact, from the name of it, you can know how strong, powerful, and terrifying the combat prowess of the true god is. A level lower is semi-god, and the ultimate level is true god, naturally true god level is way more powerful than semi-god level!" "Haha! You're so right, Mr !" The old man from America who was in charge of hosting the auction said, "We all know that after the war between America and Cathysia, Nine Great Gods of War are born and there is another existence above these Nine Great Gods of War, that's the Supreme Warrior!" A middle-aged man from the crowd suddenly stood on his feet and yelled excitedly, "Are you—are you saying that this Supreme Warrior's combat prowess is at the true god level?" "Hehe!" The old man on the stage chortled. "There are too few human beings who have reached the true god level. And I guess most of you don't know that in this world, there are many hidden strong, and powerful families. They live in the deep mountains and away from the public. And most of the true god fighters are hidden in these families. But, these hidden families will not mingle with peasants like us nor intervene with the commoners' lives." The old man paused for a moment before continuing, "If I'm guessing correctly, the Supreme Warrior of Cathysia has not reached the true god-level either. He is already at the peak of the semi-god level and is about to break through to reach the true god level. This piece of Dragon's scale is exactly what fell off of him!" The corners of Fane's mouth twitched awkwardly at the old man's speech, and his face turned unsightly. Fane's eyes were stoic and gloomy at the same time. Who the heck was this old man? How could he know so much about him? He even guessed correctly about his combat prowess level.

Fane did try to break through the semi-god level several times recently, however, unfortunately, he was not able to reach the true god level. He thought this fallen piece of dragon scale was exactly the reason behind him not being able to breakthrough!

Chapter 1000

“Are you joking? This Dragon scale fell off of a person? Haha! Old man, we may not even fully believe it when you say this fish-scale-like thing is a Dragon scale, and now you’re telling me that this Dragon scale fell off of a person’s body?” Someone from the crowd could not help but mock uncontrollably, “You’re making up stories so that you could increase the value of this Dragon scale, aren’t you? But we’re no fool. Your story is too ridiculous, and we’ll not believe you. I’m afraid today you can’t sell this scale off for much money!” Another man stood up as well. “Old man, why are you telling us all these? Now I know there is one level higher than the semi-god level, which is the true god level. Person of true god-level should be already taking the top position of humanity, right? But what does this have to do with you auctioning this Dragon scale?” “Haha! Of course, there is a tight connection! The person who had this dragon scale had been desiring a breakthrough in his combat prowess, and this dragon scale fell off of him, hence, it is naturally nourished by the spiritual energy of the person, as well as, absorbing the spiritual force of the earth and heaven. This Dragon scale is a real treasure!” The old man chuckled nonchalantly. “But, if you guys really think that our motive today is to auction the Dragon scale off, then you are all idiots! Hahaha!” The old man jeered cunningly. “Oi, Old man, what do you mean? Are you fooling us? Since you’ve invited us all here, why don’t you auction it off? Making our trip here for nothing?” Another middle-aged man shot up from his seat and yelled angrily. “Motherf*cker! You’re playing us around, aren’t you? Well then. If you don’t auction it, I’ll grab it by force!” Another old man was even more furious that he basically jumped off from his seat and charged toward the

stage. He was soon standing before the old-aged host and swung his arm, throwing a heavy punch toward the host. “Oh my… This force and this speed. This old man’s fighting skill is comparable to an eighth-grade grandmaster, isn’t it?” Lana was shocked at the sight before her and she continued, “That means this old man is as strong as an eight-star King of War!” Fane bobbed his head at Lana’s guess. This old man was definitely something else. “But I think he’s not even his opponent! Sigh.” Fane breathed out a bitter smile as he replied to Lana. Sure enough, just as Fane’s words fell, the old-aged host on the stage—who was wearing a mask—balled his fist firmly and threw it toward the fist of another old man. One could visibly witness a layer of Chi energy surrounding the balled fist of the old-aged host. Bang! A loud sound pierced through the air and sent waves that shook the place for a few seconds. The old man who challenged the host was knocked backward and smashed heavily into the crowd. A mouthful of blood was spurted out. “Pfft!” A eighth-grade grandmaster was blasted away just like that, and he was badly wounded! “Who—who the hell are you?” The old man on the ground stared deadly at the old man on the stage, his eyes full of shock and confusion. The injured old man was deemed as a strong fighter of a first-class family; an eighth-grade grandmaster for god-sake! It was rare to see an eighth-grade grandmaster appear in public, but to everyone's surprise, that even such a powerful person was not the opponent of the old man on the stage! The old man with the mask held the dragon scale in his grip, then he flipped his palm, and the dragon scale disappeared. Only then he sneered scornfully, “Hahaha, the main purpose of inviting all of you here today is to lure someone out, who I believe is already here and hidden within this crowd, am I right?” The old man paused for a few seconds before continuing, “This someone is no other than the owner of this Dragon scale, hahaha!” “Are you f*cking kidding me? The dragon scale really fell off a person?” The crowd was murmuring; some people still could not bring themselves to trust the old man’s words and feel that everything was too magical. “Haha! The owner of the Dragon scale, what’s wrong? Don’t dare

to come out? Such a coward! The Dragon scale is with me right now, come and grab it if you have the guts!" The old man laughed rampantly like a chimpanzee. "Hey, Old man, since you're not auctioning this dragon scale, we're allowed to leave, right?" A few people stood up and ready to leave the hall. "He's right. Old man, we're not the someone you're looking for. So, see you never!"

Chapter 1001

The others also did fist-to-palm salutes as they huffed. "Leaving? I'm afraid you can't leave once you're here!" The old man waved his hand. The black-clothed man from before all raised their fists, radiating dangerously quiet auras. "You want to fight us when we have so many people on our side? Are you looking for death?" A bald man craned his neck to look at the old man atop the stage, his expression stony. "Hah. The people here should be pretty good fighters," the old man said, smiling. "We'll just kill those who can't fight properly and take those that aren't too bad as our puppets so that they can contribute to our society. Hah!" "Just hand the dragon scale over, you old fart!" Fane could not stand it any longer. He shot straight onto his feet and glared at the old man. "Heh. See if you can get it from me!" The old man chuckled, speaking with an impassive voice. "Since you put it that way, we have no choice but to take it from you by force!" Fane lifted his foot and speared toward the sky—toward the direction of the old man. "Don't tell me you're that Supreme Warrior?" The old man was stunned. Fane was even faster than the elderly man from before. He finally realized that Fane was the person he and the others were waiting for. "The Supreme Warrior?" Many people took sharp intakes of breath when they heard that. This man was so young. Was he really the Supreme Warrior—the one person who was far stronger than the Nine Great Gods of War? "Hand it over!" Fane curled his fingers into a fist and struck it against the old man's fist. Bang! A resounding crack rang out. The next second, the old man had been thrown backward by Fane. Blood sprayed from his mouth, and even his mask had

fallen off. The crowd finally saw the scars that riddled the old man's face. It seemed that he had sustained burn injuries from before. He looks grotesque, monstrous. "Let's go. F*ck. This was a trap all along!" Some came to their senses and were prepared to leave. "Kill them!" Yet the black-clothed men around them whipped out their swords. They started to move between these men from powerful families, drawing blood and shedding carnage. "Pfft!" The old man who had been whacked by Fane clenched his blood-stained teeth. He wheeled around and rushed toward the entrance. "Catch me if you can. Hah!" "As if I'm afraid of you!" Of course, Fane could not let him escape; he had the dragon scale. He did not think twice as he shot forward, blurring into the shadows. Holes were quickly rammed into the villa's walls. The fight was too intense. As plenty of powerful families were invited to the auction, even a few men from the first-class aristocratic families were here. That was why they were strong. After fighting for a while, everyone came to the garden. However, several young masters who were slightly weaker were quickly killed.

Chapter 1002

Bang bang bang! The fight was extremely intense. Lana scanned through her surroundings. She quickly realized that the black-clothed men were fearsome fighters. More importantly, some of them seemed to not fear death, rushing forward in spite of the wounds on their body. They could continue to fight as though they were completely fine. Judging from the situation, a black-clothed sixth-grade grandmaster could probably match an eighth-grade grandmaster. The grandmasters had ranks from the first-grade to the ninth-grade. The black-clothed men here were all grandmasters. In fact, some of them were comparable to the semi-god strength of the Gods of War. "Look. Get the bodyguards to help us!" Someone cried out after realizing that they could not break through to escape. "Bad news. The bodyguards outside the area are already dead. And plenty more of those guys are coming for us!" Someone quickly noticed the situation and was so shocked that their

face turned pale. The bodyguards who had been waiting outside had all been killed. Even more black-clothed men, who probably had been waiting outside for an ambush, all rushed in, surrounding everyone and leaving no path of escape. “Fane, don’t you think something’s wrong? The men seemed to not have emotions. They just know how to kill!” Lana clawed her way through a group of men and came to Fane’s side, posing the question. Fane bobbed his head. “The old man mentioned something about ‘puppets’. I noticed that there are a lot of Americans in their group; meanwhile, the powerful fighters are all from Cathysia. This means that all these powerful Cathysians have lost their sense of self and have become their puppets. Now all they know is to fight!” “No way. Black magic like that still exists?” Lana’s expression darkened after she heard that. However, Fane quickly thought of something. “No. If that was the case, Fernando would have been able to beat that old man.” “Hah. How clever. You guessed what happened already!” The old man cackled. Then he took out a flute and began to play it. In a flash, a shadow rushed over from a distant forest. It vaulted over the villa walls and landed before Fane and Lana. “Brother!” Lana stared at the man before her. It was Fernando, no doubt about it. Fane looked into his empty eyes. “Your comrade has been brainwashed,” he said. “It seems like he’s become a puppet!” “No way. Does that mean he’s dead?” After Lana heard that, her features crumpled. Sorrow filled her heart. Fernando was a very powerful fighter—one of the best even among the Nine Gods of War. It would be frightening to think that someone like him could be controlled like a puppet. “Probably not! “If he was truly dead, they would be able to establish some sort of astral connection with him—like the puppets over there who are being controlled by the Americans with just a thought,” Fane said. “But the old man needed to play his flute to get Fernando. This tells us that some part of him is still alive. He still has a sliver of consciousness!”

Chapter 1003

“Thank goodness!” Lana released a sigh of relief after she heard that. She believed that so long as he was not completely dead, he still had a chance with Fane and Ethan’s miraculous prowess in medicine. “Careful, everyone. These are puppets that are attacking you. They’re dead. Their bodies are hard and they do not feel pain. It’ll be difficult for you to blow them apart or to cut their limbs.” Fane saw that the men from the powerful families were being surrounded, and they were gradually overwhelmed. He immediately reminded everyone, “Attack the Americans if you want to dodge the puppets. Only then will it will work!” “American b*stards. How dare they resort to such measures!” “That’s right. Not only did they kill our men, but they also turned them into puppets and use them to do all the fighting!” “That’s right. No wonder plenty of men from smaller families, who were strong and those self-taught fighters all disappeared. They were kidnapped by the Americans and turned into puppets!” Plenty of people realized after they heard Fane’s words. They were so furious that their faces had gone white. “F*ck. Didn’t the war already end? These Americans infiltrated Cathysia to do such a thing!” A man snarled in anger. His arms had a gaping wound, and blood poured forth, staining the sleeve of his shirt. “Kill them. Kill those American b*stards!” Someone cried out. They would not tangle with the puppets any longer. Instead, they were going straight for the Americans. “You’re pretty good, eh? You saw through everything so quickly!” The old man looked at Fane and flashed a cold smile. “But we have so many puppets. They’d have to die before they can get to our men!” “Really?” Fane’s lips curved into a mirthless smile. He jumped straight up, to a height of over ten meters. Then he yelled, “Come forth, my disciples!” If one ascended to a semi-god status, it was possible to use the Chi energy inherent within one’s body to temporarily levitate or fly, by condensing it at one’s feet. It could only be used for a short time, but that was the reason why semi-gods were far stronger than grandmasters. That was also the reason why the Nine Great Gods of War were able to easily kill any eight-star or nine-star King of War! Whoosh whoosh whoosh! At this moment,

shadows flew in from a field outside the villa, rushing into the area. After the seven shadows appeared, they immediately killed the Americans, who were standing outside and controlling the puppets. “What! The other seven Gods of War are here?” Some of the people immediately cried out when they saw the seven Gods of War. “My God. I didn’t hear wrong, did I? That–that young man called them his disciples? Ethan and the others are his disciples? So the nine Great Gods of War are the Supreme Warrior’s disciples!” Another old man was extremely excited. He never thought that they would appear just as death yawned at them—these heroes who had fought and bled for the country. It was as though angels were descending from heaven to perform divine retribution. “No–no way…” The old American leader shook his head vigorously, wondering if he was going blind. “How could you have the time to prepare in advance? Don’t tell me you knew that the auction was a ruse?”

Chapter 1004

Fane could not help but smile when he saw the other party’s panicked expression. “Fortunately, Fernando had called me before he had been captured, telling me that it was all a trap! That’s why I sensed that the dragon scale auction was a trap. And since this auction only has the dragon scale up for grabs, I had a backup plan just in case!” Bang bang bang! Many Americans were killed very quickly. The dozens of puppets that they controlled immediately fell to the ground, not moving a single inch. “How wonderful! The Nine Gods of War are here. I never thought that I would see the day where I would fight side by side with the Gods of War and the Supreme Warrior. Hah. This is amazing!” An old man, whose hair was a tuft of white, laughed aloud. “Jeez. I had heard that the Supreme Warrior was a young man, but I never expected him to be Fane. And I never thought that he would be so powerful!” Another middle-aged man cried out to Fane as he fought, “Supreme Warrior, my daughter is in her mid-twenties. She’s as beautiful as a rose, single, and her elegance is unmatched. Will you be

willing to see her? I'm willing to marry her off to you as a second wife. It'll be fine even if she's a mistress!" Fane nearly spat out blood when he heard that. Of course. Plenty of such trouble would come once he revealed his identity. Still, he never thought they would be doing this while they were in the middle of a fight… "Supreme Warrior, my daughter is also extremely elegant and adorable. I really hope that you can come over to our place for a few drinks! We'll bring out the best alcohol!" Another man refused to be sidelined. He yelled at Fane as he fearlessly mowed down his enemies, fighting ferociously. Fane was even more speechless. "All of you better focus on killing the Americans first," he hollered. "Who knows what their intentions are, coming into Cathysia!" "That's right. Let's get them!" Anger spiked through everyone who heard Fane. They all rushed forward. Before, the battle had seemed to be hopeless. With the arrival of the seven Gods of War, it began to turn in their favor. It was obvious that the Americans could not hold their ground. When one of them fell, plenty of puppets followed suit. This racked up their losses exponentially. "We have a rough estimate of your strength, kiddo. Hah. And we know that you're strong. But Fernando should be almost on the same level as you. Now that he's a puppet, he going to be twice as strong. We'll kill you today!" The head of the Americans played the flute as soon as he finished speaking. This time, the flute rang out even more sharply than before, and there was a killing intent interwoven with its tune. Whoosh! As soon as he heard that, Fernando flipped his palm and took his sword out, jumping into flight and aiming at Fane with his blade. Whoosh! The frightening sharp air blade slashed toward Fane, flying a few meters. "What a powerful technique. His attack is indeed stronger than before!" Lana's expression darkened when she saw this. "Go help the others. If you can, kill the head. He won't be able to control your comrade that way!" Fane's expression also turned solemn when he saw the air blade. He flipped his palm and took out his own sword. Then he whipped his own air blade toward Fernando. Bam! A resounding crash rang out. The two pressurized wind blades clashed, and blinding light went up in a flash.

Everyone shut their eyes on reflex. A frightening wave of energy rippled throughout the area from where the blades had clashed. Bang bang bang! Many of the men who were a little weaker staggered backward from the whiplash. Others were straightaway thrown backward and landed on the ground with resounding thuds. They almost spat out blood. “What a scary duel!”

Chapter 1005

Everyone was scared out of their wits. It was the first time for many to witness an attack of this magnitude. “So this is the strength of a semi-god?” Some were horrified seeing what unfold before their eyes. The grandmasters and the fighters were all ranked from the first-grade to ninth-grade. As for the semi-gods and the true gods, their fighting prowess was not dictated by such specific ranks. No matter if they had the strength of semi-gods or true gods, they were all divided into beginner, intermediate, advanced, and ultimate ranks! That was because someone who had just become a semi-god was able to use their internal chi energy to fly for a short period of time, as well as to attack. The internal chi energy within a true god was far stronger than that of a semi-god. After the white light faded, the two men’s attacks dissipated. It was evident that Fernando was far stronger now that he was being controlled. He could almost match up to Fane. “Why is Brother fighting our master?” Ethan frowned when he saw this. “He’s being controlled. Sh*t. D*mn these Americans. How dare they make a student and his master kill each other!” Abner clenched his fists in anger. “No way. What if the Master kills Brother Fernando or vice versa? What do we do?” There were many Americans surrounding them. They wanted to rush over to help, but it was not possible. Besides, Ethan realized that plenty of the Americans could rival their fighting prowess. The enemy could even easily control the puppets so that they had no choice but to confront them. They had the upper hand, but it was difficult for them to do anything in such a short span of time. “Thank goodness Little Sis is going over!” Sam said

when he saw that. “Stop her!” Someone cried out when she noticed Lana dashing toward their leader. Many Americans suddenly rushed toward her, determined to stop her. “Hah. Go forth!” The old man laughed and played his flute again. Fernando flew toward Fane. This time, the old man did not make Fernando launch any attacks. All he did was fly toward Fane. “If you have the strength, kid, use your blade to cut your disciple into half. Then his last strand of life will be cut off, and he’ll truly be dead!” The old man cackled. His eyes were crazed with venom. “You b*stard!” Fane’s expression darkened. How dare he used Fernando’s life to threaten him. He had no way about it. Fernando was drawing closer. His fist was raised at Fane, clearly about to initiate close combat. “Hmph!” Fane harrumphed. He had the chance to split Fernando into two because his enemy had given him plenty of time to do so. However, this was his most beloved disciple. Fernando had achieved so much on the battlefield. Fane did not want him to die in his hands. He could not do it!

Chapter 1006

In the face of Fernando’s fist, Fane had no choice but to grit his teeth and throw a punch of his own. “What?” Fane soon realized that Fernando’s body was a lot tougher now that he was a puppet. His fist was as hard as a rock, and his strength was monstrous. That immense strength actually made him stumble a few steps backward after their fists collided. It took a while for him to regain his footing. Whoosh! Yet Fernando showed no signs of slowing down. He assailed Fane with a barrage of attacks, moving at a blinding speed. Fane could barely react to them all. “Hah. What’s wrong, kiddo? Can’t bear to use your full strength? You’ll probably be killed if you continue to hesitate!” The old man laughed and momentarily stopped Fernando’s movements. “Today will be your death anniversary, kiddo,” he said. “You should know that someone who doesn’t feel pain nor fear death will always continue to fight. Hah!” After he said that, he blew the flute again. Fernando’s eyes were just as empty; he clenched his right fist, which

morphed into a dragon claw. “What?” Everyone was shocked when they saw that claw. “What’s there to be so surprised about? We have a technique named True Dragon Claw. We can even turn both of our hands into dragon claws once we’re semi-gods! If we can ascend to the status of a true god, we can transform into a dragon!” Ethan could not help but speak with contempt when he saw everyone’s stupefied expressions. He thought that they were overreacting. “Seriously? What a powerful technique, to transform into a dragon. No wonder it’s called True Dragon Claw!” An old man’s eyes shone with admiration. The sheer strength and menacing aura of a dragon’s body was enough to intimidate anyone if they could truly transform into a dragon. “Ah!” At last, Fane did not dare to slip up in the least when he saw a claw slashing toward him. He released a furious cry and clenched his fist as well; his internal Chi gathered at his arm, and it also transformed into a dragon claw. He swung it forward. Bang! When the two collided, the frightening crash rang out again, clapping through the sky like thunder. The sound even hurt the ears of many people. Some were thrown backward from the aftershock, blood spilling out of their mouths. “No way. The kid is holding his ground?” The old man could not help but was surprised when he saw that Fane and Fernando were at a standstill. They had lost the previous war. He knew that it was because the only man who could match Fane was dead. Furthermore, Fane was extremely powerful. They had no choice but to surrender. If they could kill Fane or grievously injure him, they could take Fane and the Nine Gods of War as their puppets to fight for them. Then, Americans would retaliate, and they would emerge victorious. “Ah!” Fane clenched his jaw and used all his strength to fight Fernando.

Chapter 1007

He believed that he just needed to hold out for a while longer; Ethan, Yoseph, and the others were definitely able to kill all the other Americans. Then they would attack the old man all at once, and victory would be theirs.

That was why he did not need to kill or triumph over Fernando. So long as he held out, he would be closer to victory. The two dragon claws continuously clashed against each other. It was hard for them to land a blow on each other. Fernando's strength was immense, but Fane clenched his teeth through it, sweat beading all over him. Yet he persevered. "Just die already. It doesn't look good for us, with this going on! We'll be in big trouble if Fane doesn't quickly die while our men are dropping. We'll be able to turn the tides once Fane is dead!" The old man realized the gravity of the situation too. His mouth grew more downturned as time ticked by. However, he quickly thought of something. His eyes sparkled with light. He flipped his palm, retrieving Fane's dragon scale from between his fingers. "Hah. I know that you want this dragon scale really bad, Fane. It took you so long to refine this, and you'll be greatly affected without it. Not only will you be unable to showcase your true power, but it'll also affect your progress and spirit. It'll be likely for problems to crop up when you're trying to progress!" The old man laughed. Then he took out a sword and slashed it in half. The dragon scale was extremely important to Fane; he had honed it after many hours of blood and sweat and tears. When it was with him, it was practically invincible. It would be completely invincible if it was coated in an aura of congealed Chi energy. Not even the sharpest sword would break through it. However, Fane had not had the dragon scale for too long; it did not possess a protective aura. It was evident that it was not as tough as the scales on Fane's dragon claw, so it was easily shattered by the old man. "No!" Fane's heart clenched after the dragon scale was broken into two. He released a cry. In a split second, he was weakened. "Pfft!" With part of his strength gone, blood rose and spurted out of his mouth. "Master!" Ethan and the others, who were fighting ferociously, all cried out when they saw this. They did not expect the old man to be so cruel. Bang! Fernando was not weakened even the slightest. As Fane was injured and weak, Fernando swiped his claw forcefully, swinging straight into Fane and sending him flying backward. Bang! The next second, Fane immediately crashed against

the villa's wall. A large hole appeared on it—and he was splayed on the floor, blood continuing to flow out of his mouth. "Don't hold back any longer, Master. You'll die if you continue like this!" Lana yelled at Fane as he hauled himself onto his feet, wobbling. Tears streamed from her eyes. She was well aware that Fernando was a puppet now; he was barely alive. He was not dead, but he might as well be. Although Fernando was fearsome, being so strong and insensitive to pain, it was precisely because of that that he was not very agile. There were plenty of holes in his stance when he fought, and he was not as dexterous as usual. Fane had plenty of chances to kill Fernando. Still, he did not want to kill his own disciple. After all, Fernando had achieved so much on the battlefield for Cathysia.

Chapter 1008

"Don't hold back any longer, Master. Just destroy Brother's body. You can't go on like this. You'll die!" Ethan did not want Fernando to die either, but he spilled words out of his mouth as tears streaked down his cheeks, "Besides, we don't know how his situation is like, Master. Even if you don't kill him, it might be impossible to revive him!" "That's right. Since Ethan already said so, it's likely that it won't be easy to cure Brother!" William's eyes were also reddishly rimmed as he fought the tears building in them. "Cough cough!" Fane coughed a little, and more blood spilled out. "I–I can't kill him… We went through so much together on the battlefield, and he survived through all that. I won't be able to forgive myself if I killed Fernando, and I will certainly not progress as a fighter!" Fane walked forward, step by step. His face was slightly pale; it was obvious that he had sustained pretty serious injuries. "Hah. Kill him. Kill him now! Hah!" The old man cackled when he saw this. "Your dragon scale has already been destroyed, kiddo," he said, a triumphant expression on his face. "Now you're missing a scale on your dragon claw, so you can't exercise your full strength. And you're injured too. Haha. Careful now, kiddo. I don't want you to die. I just want you to be on your verge of dying. I want you and your

disciples to become our puppets and fight for us!" "Like h*ll I'll let that happen!" Fane was so furious that he grinded his teeth and clenched his fists. With his human hand, he kept his sword, and it transformed into a dragon claw. "You had the chance to kill Fernando. But you didn't. And now you're injured. Let's see how you fare against him!" The old man played the flute again after he said that. Fernando moved toward Fane in a flash. A layer of aura gathered around his dragon claw, and a powerful force radiated from it. "Roar!" No one expected Fane to release such a frightening roar at this moment. In the area where a scale was missing on his claw, Chi rippled intensely, coalescing until a completely new scale grew out. "What! A new one grew! Fantastic. Haha. Master grew a new scale!" Lana was extremely moved when she saw this. Ethan was moved too when he heard this. "That's great. He's now a true god, being able to regenerate a dragon scale. I never thought that Master would fulfill his potential here and ascend to the status of a beginner true god!" Sam was also extremely moved. Fane's breakthrough would definitely mean that he would grow exponentially stronger. His internal Chi would also increase. If this was the case, Fane could defeat Fernando easily. "No way. How–how did this happen?" The old American man was also shocked. If that was truly happening, he would not be able to stand a chance. "Roar!" Fane shot toward the sky, golden scales rippling over his entire body and he completely transformed into a dragon. He started to circle the air. "Goodness gracious. The True Dragon Claw technique really enables you to transform into a dragon?" The old man looked at the dragon. It emanated a ferocious aura, and gooseflesh prickled along his skin. "Roar!" Fane released another roar before plunging straight toward him.

Chapter 1009

"Motherf*cker, stop him!" The old man's face turned unsightly in an instant. He played the flute, fingers trembling. Whoosh! Fernando—who was under the old man's control—transformed into a residual shadow and

bolted upward toward Fane, who was dashing downward from mid-air. Bang! This time, Fane headbutted Fernando's abdomen with a terrifying force. Fernando was like a cannonball, smashing heavily into the ground, forming a deep crater on the surface. "No—No f*cking way!" The old man was frightened down to the soles of his feet when he saw Fernando was not able to defend at all and was smashed to the ground by the golden dragon—Fane who had transformed into one. Fane, now a golden dragon, was heading straight for the old man. The old man quickly stomped on the ground and instantly leaped into the air, wanting to escape from the golden dragon. Bang! Unfortunately, Fane appeared in front of him before he could escape. The golden dragon bashed unto the old man's body with a much more irresistible and brutal force than before. The old man—whose combative prowess was at a semi-god level—had his body explode and turned into a mist of blood after receiving the overpowering strike from Fane. A layer of faint aura lingered around Fane's body, and when he landed on the ground, a ray of golden light emitted, and in the next second, he transformed back into human form. "This is bad! The boss is dead! Run!" "Motherf*cker, how did that punk suddenly breakthrough the semi-god level?" There were not many men from America left in the scene; they were fleeing in all directions. "Kill them all!" Nonetheless, Ethan and the others did not give the other party the chance to escape. One by one, they plopped onto the ground lifeless. Swoosh! Two American fighters with semi-god levels transformed into shadows and flew into the air, heading toward the other direction far away from Fane and the others. Fane did not grant them the wish; he swung his arm and immediately shot two wisps of Chi consecutively. The wisps of Chi looked like stretches of white and shining silks; they did not travel far, only one or two meters away from Fane, however, when the wisps of Chi touched the opponents, their bodies were blasted into hundreds of pieces of flesh, falling onto the ground as though the place was raining flesh. "The power of the true god is truly no joke. It's totally superior to ordinary fighters! No wonder—no wonder Master Fane

struggled at the peak of semi-god level for so long, even with his natural raw talent!" An envious look plastered on Abner Young's face. Only after reaching the true god level, those who trained and acquired the True Dragon Claw technique, could transform into a real dragon. Only those who had reached the true god-level could separate the Chi from the body and control it to cast an attack. Such an attack was hundreds of times more powerful than the fist that was enclosed with a layer of aura, more powerful than the attack of sword aura. The Chi in the body was without impurity, thus its power was naturally stronger than any fist aura or sword aura. Because of Fane's sudden breakthrough in his combat prowess and the continuous killing of several American fighters of semi-god level, the secret organization was soon finished off by the others. The shadowy puppets, too, fallen onto the ground, not moving an inch. "Hooray! We won! Haha! We finally won!" Someone from the crowd cheered happily. This was because a moment ago, they were still facing thousands of people from America, and struggling to fight against them as they had fighters of semi-god level. The fighters from those families even thought tonight would be their last night on the earth. However, to their surprise, seven more Gods of War came to the rescue. Not only that, they were even more shocked at the information of Fane being the mysterious Supreme Warrior, and he even broke through the semi-god level, attaining the early stage of the true god-level during the battle; Fane became the top in the world, which gave them the victory in this horrific battle. Ethan and the other Gods of War, on the other hand, did not cheer for the victory, instead, they came to Fane and together they gazed at the motionless Fernando who was lying at the bottom of the deep pit. They were silent. Ethan went over and checked Fernando's pulse. "Master, before this, Brother Fernando was already at the gates of death. And fortunately, you only used a little strength when you went head-to-head with Brother Fernando. He has only a faint breath of life left now; the breath is very weak. I think…he wouldn't make it!"

Chapter 1010

Sadness and heartbreak dawned on the others' faces. Their heads were lowered as their hearts sank to the bottom. "Don't give up! As long as there is a breath of life, there is a glimmer of hope!" After a moment of silence, Fane opened his mouth. "He is like this because of me! He helped me investigate the dragon scale. So, no matter what, I have to save him, otherwise, how can I explain to his family! I have to save him! I'll save him!" Tears stoned in Ethan's eyes, he then looked up to Fane, "But, Master, Brother Fernando is dying! His breath of life is very weak and he's losing it little by little! He won't live past ten days!" Ethan grieved sadly. "Sigh!" Everyone sighed aloud; their eyes were reddened and glossy. Fane gave a dry and bitter smile. "Let's go back first. I do have a way to save Fernando. I know there is a sacred item that could help Fernando; it can heal Fernando. It's hellishly difficult to get it, but now that I've broken through, I'm going to get it no matter what!" "Supreme Warrior, thank you so much! And Gods of War, thank you for saving our lives!" An old man approached the group and gave them his thanks with a sincere bow. "You're welcome!" Fane smiled awkwardly. This time, with so many witnesses, he could not hide his identity anymore. Fane laughed bitterly and then he spoke to the crowd, "Guys, please leave and go back to your home. We're not sure if there are still people in this mysterious organization. If any of you have found any clue about this mysterious organization, please do contact us as soon as possible! So that we could put an end to these god-d*mn people from America. These people invaded our country, captured our people, and made them into their puppets, how could we forgive them!" "You're so right! These people are sh*ts! Too abominable!" Anger rose in the crowd like a tide. At this time, Yoseph Smith pulled Fernando up and carried him on his back. "Guys, let's go back." Soon, the group arrived at Fane's villa. Skyler was in shock when he saw everyone was covered in blood; they were a mess. "G—guys, what happened? Did you just go through a fierce battle?" Fane

bobbed, “Yup, there’s a mysterious underground organization from America. They have many powerful fighters and some of them are extremely powerful! Fernando was hypnotized by them and made into their puppet. His breath of life is very feeble now and he’ll not live longer than 10 days. But I’ll think of a way, I’ll definitely come up with a way to save him!” “My goodness! Wh—why are there so many Gods of War here?” Fiona walked out of the house and was surprised at the sight before her that her jaw dropped to the ground. Gods of War gathered at the courtyard of her house and were having a conversation with Fane and Skyler, how could she not be in shock? Andrew and Old Master Taylor strode out of the house and saw the same scene. Their eyes were widened as big as saucers and their jaws were widely opened. What happened today? Why were the Gods of War here in their courtyard? Looking at their current state, did they fought a fierce battle today? “Brother Fane, do you still want to hide it from them? I’m afraid you’re exposed now that so many people from the event know about your true identity!” Lana plastered a bitter smile on her face, her eyes fixated at Fane, waiting for his response. Fane’s identity was exposed to many people from high authoritative and prominent families in Swallow City tonight. Not more than two days, the news of Fane being the Supreme Warrior and the Nine Great Gods of War being his disciples would spread to every corner of the City of Martial Arts. “What? What did you hide from us?” Fiona and the others were puzzled at the strange statement. “Sigh! Indeed, I couldn’t hide it anymore!” Fane, too, plastered a bitter smile on his face. Then he slowly walked toward Selena and uttered softly, “Dear, umm, actually, umm, I’m not their personal doctor or anything. In fact, I’m the mysterious Supreme Warrior that you’ve always talked about!”

Chapter 1011

“The Su—supreme Warrior?” Selena gulped loudly, doubting her own ears. Did Fane just tell her that he was actually the high and almighty Supreme Warrior? The Supreme Warrior who was way more powerful than all Nine

Great Gods of War? “Master!” The other eight Gods of War exchanged glances to emit some sort of information and then they knelt down in front of Fane. “Master?” Selena, Fiona, and the rest were dumbstricken. They were completely confused about the situation! “Please get up.” Fane raised his hand, gesturing to the Gods of War to stand up. He then wheeled to Selena and said, “Dear, they’re indeed my disciples, including Fernando!” “Nin—nice Great Gods of war, they’re all your disciples? Yo—you are the Supreme Warrior, their master?” Joan questioned in a trembling tone as she clapped her hands over her mouth and her eyes went round. This news was far too shocking. “Yes, he’s our Master! He’s much more powerful than all of us here!” Lana chortled warmly and turned to Joan, “ Aunt Joan, your son is the most excellent and outstanding man in this world!” “Re—really?” Happiness glowed inside Joan and her cheeks glistened with tears. “It—it’s my pleasure to meet you, the Supreme Warrior!” The realization dawned upon Old Master Taylor. He quickly knelt before Fane and greeted him formally. This man before him was the Supreme Warrior, the highest and most almighty existence in this world. For him, to be able to meet and even talk to the Supreme Warrior was nothing but his utmost pleasure. How could he have imagined that Fane was the Supreme Warrior—the mightiest existence. How could he have ever thought that the Supreme Warrior had been by their side all along, protecting them discreetly! “Pleasure to meet you, Supreme Warrior!” Fiona and the rest of the Taylor family followed behind Old Master Taylor, knelt down, and greeted Fane politely. Selena—who had finally snapped out of the shock—prepared to kneel too. Fane was rendered speechless at the situation before him, he hastily held Selena up and cried out, “What are you doing? Get up, get up. Why are you kneeling? Are we not a family? Well. Of course, for the exception of those Taylors who didn’t treat us as their family and left us for fear of being dragged into the mess, the Taylors who stayed behind and by me are my family! You are my family!” Only then Old Master Taylor got back on his feet. “Sir, why didn’t you tell us earlier? We treated you so badly back then and even

despised you as a trashy adopted son-in-law! I thank you for being so kind-hearted and not hold grudges against us! Sir, your heart is tender!" Old Master Taylor chortled warmly. "Grandpa Taylor is right! Why didn't you inform me earlier? If you'd told me earlier, I could have brought breakfast to your bed and even clean your feet every day! My god, my son-in-law is the Supreme Warrior! Does this mean I'm the mother-in-law of the Supreme Warrior? Then my daughter is the wife of the Supreme Warrior? Dios mios!" "Sigh! If you'd told me earlier, I could have bragged about it in front of my friends and classmates in the Middle Province! Sigh! Now, I don't know anybody in this city, who am I going to show off to?" Fiona exclaimed excitedly, at the same time, whined irritably. Fane and Selena who stood beside her could only shake their heads and sighed. "Haha, I really didn't expect you to be the Supreme Warrior! You've tricked our family so well!" Ben giggled cheerfully and continued teasing, "Now, tell me honestly! You this filthy rich brat, how much money do you have?"

Chapter 1012

Fiona's eyes sparkled with excitement at Ben's suggestive question and she was buzzing with happiness. Her breath was heavy. She hurriedly stepped forward and held Fane's hands in her palms, with a shaky voice, she asked, "M—my dear son-in-law, you…you have returned from the army, and the country must have given you tons of money and bonuses, right? Umm… How much…how much do you have on you now? "It's not that much though. Less than a trillion bucks!" Fane chortled casually, and then he added, "Anyway, money is just an external material. It's more crucial and important for us, the fighters, to advance in our combative strength!" Fane paused for a moment, then continued, "Alright! Let's go in and take a break. You can take a nap, take a shower, whatever you want. I'll ask the kitchen to make some dishes for dinner tonight!" Elaine led the crowd into the villa and arranged for each of them, a room to rest. At this time, on the other side, Dylan Wagner—who had been turned into a eunuch by Fane—finally

arrived at the residence of Lowe family along with his men. “Uncle!” After seeing his uncle standing before him, Dylan burst into tears. “Dylan, what’s wrong? Why are you here with your people? Didn’t your Grandpa and Grandma brought someone over to help you kill that brat? What’s his name again? Fane?” Jaxon Lowe—the head of the Lowe family—asked, with his forehead furrowed. He was confused at the arrival of Dylan at this time. “Uncle, something terrible happened! Grandpa and Grandma, they’re both dead! And my parents, they’re dead too!” Dylan’s eyes flooded with tears; they were glossy. “What the hell? Pa and Ma, they are as strong as the nine-star Kings of War! They were ninth-grade grandmasters, and were about to reach semi-god status! How could they not be able to defeat the other party?” The color drained out of Jaxon’s face in a few seconds; he could feel nothing but blind terror and shock. He stumbled a few steps backward and nearly passed out at the news. “Yes, that brat is too powerful! Uncle, what should we do now? What should I do? I want to avenge my parents, I want revenge!” Dylan fixed his gaze at Jaxon with a helpless expression, as though he was a lost child in a crowded plaza. Jaxon plopped onto the ground abruptly and mourned, “It won’t be that simple. You should have known that the reason why we, the Lowe family, are so strong and powerful is because of strong people like your Grandpa and Grandma. They brought several strong elders and fighters and went all out to help you this time. Sigh! Now there is only a bunch of trash left in the Lowe family. If we send them over, it is as well as sending them to hell!” Jaxon then turned to Dylan with a pair of wet eyes, “The other party only killed those who went. We’re already considered fortunate that he spared the rest of the Wagner family and did not come to the Gin City and put an end to the Lowe family!” Hearing what Jaxon had spilled, Dylan felt upset and powerless. He was reluctant to give up so soon, but what could he possibly do at this point in time? Nothing at all! “Fane Woods, this motherf*cker!” Jaxon could not help but curse loudly. However, after he cursed, he immediately thought of something. “Fane Woods… Hmm… This name sounds so familiar to me,

how come?" "Master Lowe, Fane Woods, doesn't this name sound like the person that the Freeman family and the Lambert family are going after? I remember some time ago, there were flyers with that name on them and if I'm not mistaken, it was Fane Woods. And there'll be a grand reward for anyone who found Fane Woods. Just that I'm not sure if this Fane Woods is that Fane Woods." An elder of the Lowe family stepped forward and reported to Jaxon after thinking about it. "Yes, yes, yes! You're right! I remember the person they're looking for was called Fane Woods. There are photos, wedding photos I think, on the flyer!"

Chapter 1013

Jaxon suddenly thought of something and rushed into his room, and after a while, he came out with a flyer. He handed it to Dylan and asked with immense excitement, "Dylan, take a look! Is it this brat? Is it the same Fane Woods you've mentioned? If it's the same person, we'll finally be able to avenge our family!" Dylan looked closely at the picture on the flyer. He gritted his teeth and balled his fists. "Yes, Uncle, yes! This is the brat who turned me into a eunuch just to play a superhero in front of two celebrities. He killed my grandparents and parents! That's him!" "Great! This is great news! God heard my prayers! I can finally avenge my folks! Mwahahaha!" Jaxon squeezed his eyes shut and tears ran down his cheeks as he spoke. "Let's go now! We'll go to the Lambert family and the Freeman family! Fane had killed the daughter of Master Freeman and the son of Tao Lambert—the third elder in the Lambert family. Both families are looking for him everywhere. They hate him to the bones and can't wait to cut him into pieces!" "Oh my goodness! Is that for real? That's great! These two families are prominent and powerful families in Gin City. They owe favors with several elite grandmasters of the semi-god level! They're as strong as Gods of War! With such combat prowess, Fane will not be able to survive this time! Mwahahaha!" Dylan felt a sudden flare of joy that he exclaimed happily, "Let's go now! Uncle, let's hurry up! We'll drive over there now

and inform them about this. We'll leave tomorrow morning so that we can come back early and destroy these wicked bunch of people, Fane, Selena, and the other motherf*ckers!" "Alright!" Jaxon nodded in agreement. Soon, several opulent cars left the Lowe's residence, heading toward the direction of Lambert's residence. Currently, in the Lambert's residence, many men were gathered in the hall. Each of them has their face twisted and contorted—they were upset about something. The head of the Freeman family—Louis Freeman—and the elder of the Freeman—Tao Freeman finally returned to Gin City from the Middle Province this afternoon. They spent a few more days in the Middle Province, looking for Fane but to no avail. Hence, they left a few underlings there to continue the search for Fane while the rest returned to Gin City. "There was not a single f*cking clue about Fane's whereabouts in the Middle Province! We captured a few Taylors but none of them know sh*ts! We only know that some of the Taylors are scattered all over the world to flee from being detected. Moreover, Fane and the others have changed their mobile phone number, the other Taylors couldn't even contact them!" Tao smiled bitterly and said, "If we couldn't find them in the next two or three years, I'm afraid that it'll be impossible for us to locate them anymore by that time!" "Master Lambert, do you have any news about them while you were in Gin City?" Louis Freeman looked at the head of Lambert family—Charles Lambert—and asked. Charles shook his head. "It's not an easy task. If the other party is determined to hide from us, we'll never be able to locate them. They are probably hiding in some forest or mountain by this time. Besides, if they've escaped to other countries, it'd be more impossible for us to find them!" "Master Lambert, Master Lambert! The…the head of Lowe family has come to see you." A bodyguard panted as he reported. The bodyguard—who guarded the entrance—rushed into the hall while the group was discussing the next steps. "The Lowe family?" Several lines formed between Charles's brows as he was informed of the arrival of Master Lowe. The Lowe family was considered an underground family—specializing in

illegal businesses and trading. They did not want to have any connection with such a wicked family. After all, they despised such people. “Ask them to leave. I got no time!” After pondering about the reason for Master Lowe’s arrival, Charles commanded and gestured to the bodyguard to send the other party away. “Hold on…” Tao halted the bodyguard, stepped forward, and uttered, “Brother Charles, the Lowe family came over at the wee hours of the night, it must be something important. If it’s not urgent, they could have come over tomorrow, or send people over to ask for a meeting. But this time, Master Lowe has come here personally, so, there must be something crucial. Why don't we meet them first?”

Chapter 1014

“Alright then. Let’s meet them. After all, the other party is the head of the Lowe family. If we refuse his meeting this time, he might hold a grudge against us. We shouldn’t try to offend such a villain, lest in the future when we face any hardship, he won’t make matters worse or cause more trouble.” Charles bobbed to show agreement after giving the matter some thoughts. He then instructed the bodyguard to bring the other party into the hall. “Master Freeman is here as well? Perfect then!” When Jaxon entered the hall and found out that Louis was there too, his mood lifted in an instant. “Ahem! So, tell us, why are you here today? It’s already late, so just spill your intention! If it's for any business collaboration, I don’t think this meeting is necessary. After all, our businesses are different from one another and we have nothing to collaborate with the Lowe family!” Charles cleared his throat as he questioned Jaxon. “It’s my pleasure to meet you, Master Freeman and Master Lambert!” Jaxon was long aware that these families who thought they were noble and dignified, had always looked down on them—an underground family. So, he was not surprised by the cold attitude from the other side, and he was not upset at all. Jaxon greeted them with a palm-to-fist salute, then he uttered, “I’m here today to tell you something vital! The person on your wanted notice, I know where he is!” “What!”

Charles and Tao exclaimed loudly in unison upon listening to the shocking news. “We know exactly where they are living now!” Jaxon responded with a wicked grin on his face. Then he turned to the crowd and expressed, “Gentlemen, this is my nephew, Dylan Wagner, he’s from Swallow City. I guess I don’t have to explain more. The brat who is called Fane Woods, his wife Selena, and many other Taylors, they’re all living in a huge villa in Swallow City!” “Great! After a long and unsuccessful roaming and searching in the Middle Province, finally, we have located Fane Woods!” Tao clenched his fists, his eyes burned with desire, at the same time, excitement. “My son, finally I can avenge you!” “Kiddo, are you sure the person you saw was Fane Woods? The one we’re looking for? Kiddo, if you’ve mistaken someone for him and make our trip in vain, I’ll make sure your life is miserable. After all, we’re prominent families in this Gin City…” Charles stared at Dylan stonily. With his fists clenched and his eyes full of resentment, Dylan opened his mouth, “Gentlemen, I remember every inch of their faces and I can recognize them even if Fane and the other motherf*ckers had turned into ashes! Fane is the one who killed my parents and several elite fighters of the Wagner family! He killed them all!” “Heh, that brat is a real fan of trouble, isn’t he? Shouldn’t he be hiding when he is wanted by our Lambert family? Heh! He actually dares to cause more trouble to others! Isn’t he stupid to expose himself?” A satisfied smile was plastered on Louis’s face. Looking at Dylan’s indignant manner, he believed that this news was real. All these killing deeds must be done by Fane and those freaking Taylors!

Chapter 1015

“Heh, he hid in the Swallow City, he’s a clever man, isn’t he? The Swallow City is not far from here, we should be able to reach there in no time. Humph! That punk, he actually hid right under our noses, making us look like a fool!” Tao sneered frostily. “But, unfortunately, that brat clearly doesn’t know how to spell the word ‘death’; he continues to be so high

profile and creating more troubles. He dares to cause such a huge commotion there, clearly having a death wish!" "Do you know what this is called? You reap what you sow!" Charles snorted sarcastically with a cold smile on his face, he then turned to Jaxon and said, "This piece of information is indeed excellent! Tomorrow Dylan is going to take us there, and I'll give you ten billion bucks as a reward for providing this information. As for how you divide it among you and your nephew, it's your business!" Jaxon, however, shook his head. "No, I don't need any reward nor money. I don't want a single penny. I only hope that tomorrow both Lamberts and Freemans will bring your strongest men to kill Fane, and I'll bring mine too. I'll go with you. I want to see that brat die with my own eyes!" "Haha! Alright! You want to avenge your family. Excellent idea! Brother Jaxon, why don't we have a few drinks to pre-celebrate our success?" Charles laughed out loud wholeheartedly. Jaxon's idea was naturally good for them. Not only did the other party not want to accept any penny, but they also offered to help out. After all, they could have accepted the money, at the same time went with them to kill Fane. Therefore, it really surprised him that the other party made such a choice when they could have just watched the fight from afar. "Do they have a lot of men? If not, we don't have to bring all the elites, right? We're prominent families after all, do we really have to bring all our strong men?" The elder of the Lambert family inquired with some doubts on his face. "No, they don't have a lot of men. But, among them, there are three eight- or ninth-grade grandmasters—two men and one woman with a mask. As for Fane, he is strong too; he is at the early stage of the semi-god level. Of course, all these estimations are from our men who had witnessed the battle. But I'm not too sure about the real situation!" Dylan gave some thoughts to the matter and then he spilled, "So, they have a fighter with semi-god strength. We'll definitely need more strong men. What if the other party manages to escape, right? And if they really flee, it'd be more difficult for us to locate them by that time!" "Tsk, tsk, tsk! Damn, I didn't expect that such a strong person had been living in a small city like

Middle Province at all!" Charles sighed softly. "Don't worry. All fighters with semi-god levels from both Lambert and Freeman family will come along with us tomorrow! We should be able to kill them with these strong people, right? Moreover, adding up the men from my family together with the Freeman family, we have around three hundred fighters with grandmaster level. And these people are as strong as those Kings of War!" "Haha! That's great! Tomorrow morning, eight o'clock sharp, we'll meet you at the city gate!" Jaxon nodded in satisfaction, he then continued, "As for the drinking offer, I think I'll pass. After all, we have a tough battle tomorrow, so it's better for us to go back earlier and rest!" Louis Freeman laughed at Jaxon's words, and blurted, "Hahaha! The other party doesn't have a lot of men, you were saying? We have so many strong men with us tomorrow, together with hundreds of grandmasters and several semi-gods, the other party would probably be frightened to death when they saw our army!" "Haha! Frightened to death is exaggerated. But, they'll definitely pee their pants!" The elder of the Lambert family chuckled out loud, "Fane was a veteran who had experienced life and death on the battlefield. So I think he won't be frightened to death so easily!" "Hahaha! You're right, Elder. He'll only pee his pants!" Tao echoed happily and the crowd laughed at the exchange.

Chapter 1016

Dylan and the others then left, and both he and Jaxon were rather thrilled with their plan. They drank a lot of wine after they went back to the Lowe house before taking a rest. ... The second morning, the Freemans brought around 500 to 600 masters and arrived at the city gates, and they were then joined by the Lamberts with several hundred people. It surprised them, however, when the Lowes showed up with just 100 people, with only two or three grandmasters in their ranks. Everyone else looked like any regular fighters, and there were not many strong grandmasters. "Haha! It looks like you people aren't very sincere, Master Lowe. We all know that your old

master and old madam are masters nearly achieving semi-god status, and you have many powerful elders as well. Why didn't you bring them?" commented Charles, his tone laced with displeasure as he gazed at them coldly. In his opinion, it made no sense if the people they brought with them were not powerful enough. He felt that Jaxon was pretentious for bringing these people. Jaxon smiled bitterly. "Family masters, it wasn't up to me. I wanted to bring the masters, to be honest with you, but Fane had slain them all when they tried to avenge my nephew before this. Both our elders had no idea that Fane is a strong master with semi-god status, hence…" "I see. I'm sorry for your loss, Master Lowe," uttered Charles upon hearing Jaxon's confession. "Both our families have sent out all our masters. It'd be easy for us to kill the other party together with your people; he'd surely be crushed with our combined might. Today, we'll get to avenge both elders!" Jaxon smiled at that and said, "Thank you for your understanding, Master Lambert. Let's make haste since everyone's here." They then swiftly made their move. At that moment, in the Taylor family mansion… Old beggar Nathanael and his granddaughter, Brianna hesitated for a long time before they finally decided. Nathanael asked Fane to go to Brianna's room so they could talk. That puzzled Fane, though he followed along as he noted Nathanael's anxious expression. Fane opened the door to Brianna's room. He was instantly greeted with the sight of Brianna in a loose sleeping robe when he entered. Brianna's face blushed a crimson color when she saw Fane entering the room. She unrobed herself before Fane could even get a word out, and there was nothing underneath the robe. Fane frowned when he saw what he saw and moved his line of sight away. "Miss Brianna, what's the meaning of this? Please have some respect for yourself!" Fane was rather enraged when he saw Brianna's actions. He took in these paupers as his helpers and even paid them a handsome monthly salary. He had to suspect if Nathanael and Brianna had other thoughts in mind when they saw how wealthy Fane's family was. She might want to marry him and enjoy an extravagant life. It took Fane by surprise, then, when Brianna's eyes

reddened as she knelt before him. “Master, I know you’re the Supreme Warrior and that you’re incredibly powerful. You have strong combat powers, so we hope that you’ll help avenge our family. I have nothing to offer you, so I can only dedicate my innocent body. I only want your help!” “Put on your clothes first!” Fane glanced at her and spoke after Brianna put on her clothes. “Who’d honor you if you belittle yourself? Also, am I that kind of person? Your actions tell me that you’re looking down on me!” “I… I’m sorry… I… I really don’t know what to do!” Brianna’s eyes were filled with tears as her expression morphed into the look of helplessness. That stood out to Fane as he curiously asked, “Who’s your enemy?”

Chapter 1017

“Gin City’s Lambert family. Our family was smaller than theirs and my father refused to cooperate with them on businesses… I never thought that they’d send someone to kill my parents. My grandfather and I escaped the killing because we were out fishing. “Even so, they still wanted to eliminate us, thus beginning their manhunt for us. We’ve lost them here and became beggars; there were no other ways to escape their chase.” Brianna explained to Fane about what happened. “After we knew that you’re the Supreme Warrior and the Nine Great Gods of War are your disciples, we thought of asking for your help to get our revenge…” “The Lambert family?” Fane gave a small smile as he replied, “You don’t need to ask us for help on this.” Brianna’s eyes watered with faint desperation. Fane’s next words caught her off-guard, however. “Because the Lambert Family is our enemy as well. Haha! I’m going to wipe the family out sooner or later. The reason I’m here at Swallow City isn’t because of fear for the so-called Lambert family. I just wanted to get rid of some members of the Taylor family who can’t go through thick and thin together. Of course, I’m here because of the dragon scale. Apart from that, this place is close to my family…” “Your family?” Brianna was ecstatic when she heard what Fane said; the Lambert family was also Fane’s enemy. If that was the case, surely they would go after them.

Still, Brianna was riddled with curiosity. What sort of a family was Fane from? Fane never talked about it before. “Haha! Nothing much to talk about.” Fane had complicated feelings when the Woods family was mentioned. He walked out the door. “Tell your grandfather that your family will soon receive the justice they deserved. After all, how can I go back to the Woods family in peace if I don’t get rid of the Lamberts and the Freemans?” Fane had no idea that a large gathering of aristocratic families from the City of Martial Arts would be there when he walked out the door. “Greetings to the Supreme Warrior!” All of them knelt when they saw Fane. “And you people are...?” Fane was speechless at the sight of so many people at his residence, and almost half of the City of Martial Arts’ powerful people were present. However, most of them who came over were elders of the families. “Haha! Many people have yet to meet you, Supreme Warrior, and they’re here to pay you a visit after they heard of what you’ve done.” A first-class aristocratic family’s elder laughed. “Supreme Warrior, here’s a small gift from us as this is our first visit. I hope this is to your liking!” A family master respectfully presented two jade bracelets. “Thank you so much. This is really too much! It’s nice that you guys visit us. Why send us gifts?” Fiona’s eyes lit up when she saw the presents. She walked forward and received the gift before Fane could say anything. “Supreme Warrior, this gift from me is to thank you for saving both mine and my son’s life!” Another old man went forward and presented his gift. “Oh, dear! Thank you, thank you…! Please come in and have a seat. Everybody come in and help yourselves to a seat!” Fiona was extremely proactive. She ordered Selena while she received the gifts, “Selena, why are you still standing there? Book a hotel, and we’ll treat our guests to lunch. We’ll have it…”

Chapter 1018

“Alright, I’ll book the hotel now.” Selena nodded, still unsure how to react at the sight of all the expensive gifts brought to them. Her mother must be happy as she was the one receiving them. “Madam, there’s no need to

trouble you. Why book a hotel when we can all go to my hotel? We have a seven-star hotel. Let me call my subordinates to make the arrangements. It'll be my treat!" beamed an old man, grinning as he started taking out his cell-phone. "How can we let you do that? You're our guests and are here to visit us. It has to be our treat!" disputed the sheepish Selena. "L—Let's go to my hotel. It'll be my treat! let's go!" spoke another man. Everybody understood that inviting the Supreme Warrior and the other Gods of War to eat at their hotels was something worth showing off. It was natural for everybody to fight for such a good opportunity. "Stop fighting," assured Fane with a small smile. "Let's all go to Old Master Lager's hotel!" The old man was ecstatic when he heard this, and he smilingly gushed, "Great! Let me ask my subordinates to prepare things up. It's my treat, so enjoy yourselves and eat to your heart's content!" "Haha! Then we'll be sure to enjoy ourselves!" Another middle-aged man started laughing happily. These families were people who had loads of money, thus it did not matter who would pay for the bill. Everybody conversed among themselves as they strolled in the garden. Just then, when everybody was ready to go out for lunch at noon, they saw a large gathering of people outside the villa and was blocking the main entrance. "Master, something bad has happened. There are many people outside, and they look aggressive. We came here as fast as we could, 'cause things don't seem right." Both guards on-duty guarding the gate sensed that something was wrong when they saw those people. They immediately ran to the garden at the back of the villa and reported the matter to Fane. "How's that possible? There are still people who dare cause trouble here? Do they have a death wish? How dare they cause trouble with the Supreme Warrior?" Somebody chuckled, amused at the fact. Another middle-aged lady chimed in with a smile, "Did you guys make a mistake? Who dares cause trouble here? Haha!" "I know what I saw. There are over a thousand people!" one of the bodyguards persisted anxiously. "I got it. Let's go out and take a look." Fane nodded and led the others forward. Many of the powerful people could not contain their happiness. If somebody truly

came to offend Fane at this moment, it was the best opportunity for them to get into Fane's good books. This was the Supreme Warrior, after all, and pleasing him would only be beneficial for them! "Come out here, Fane! Haha!" An old man laughed and kicked at his gate. One of the huge stone lions at the entrance flew up and crashed into one of the villa's windows. A huge hole appeared in its wake. "Fane, today is the day you die!" Dylan yelled aggressively. The group of people soon arrived at the garden in front of the villa. "Haha…! Amazing! I had no idea that so many people were here. It looks like all of you are from Gin City?" Fane laughed and soon walked over with people behind him. "Cut the crap. You killed my son, and we're here to avenge him today!"

Chapter 1018

“Alright, I’ll book the hotel now.” Selena nodded, still unsure how to react at the sight of all the expensive gifts brought to them. Her mother must be happy as she was the one receiving them. “Madam, there’s no need to trouble you. Why book a hotel when we can all go to my hotel? We have a seven-star hotel. Let me call my subordinates to make the arrangements. It’ll be my treat!” beamed an old man, grinning as he started taking out his cell-phone. “How can we let you do that? You’re our guests and are here to visit us. It has to be our treat!” disputed the sheepish Selena. “L—Let’s go to my hotel. It’ll be my treat! let’s go!” spoke another man. Everybody understood that inviting the Supreme Warrior and the other Gods of War to eat at their hotels was something worth showing off. It was natural for everybody to fight for such a good opportunity. “Stop fighting,” assured Fane with a small smile. “Let’s all go to Old Master Lager’s hotel!” The old man was ecstatic when he heard this, and he smilingly gushed, “Great! Let me ask my subordinates to prepare things up. It’s my treat, so enjoy yourselves and eat to your heart’s content!” “Haha! Then we’ll be sure to enjoy ourselves!” Another middle-aged man started laughing happily. These families were people who had loads of money, thus it did not matter who would pay for the bill. Everybody conversed among themselves as they strolled in the garden. Just then, when everybody was ready to go out for lunch at noon, they saw a large gathering of people outside the villa and was blocking the main entrance. “Master, something bad has happened. There are many people outside, and they look aggressive. We came here as fast as we could, ‘cause things don’t seem right.” Both guards on-duty guarding the gate sensed that something was wrong when they saw those people. They immediately ran to the garden at the back of the villa and reported the matter to Fane. “How’s that possible? There are still people who dare cause trouble here? Do they have a death wish? How dare they cause trouble with the Supreme Warrior?” Somebody chuckled, amused at the fact. Another

middle-aged lady chimed in with a smile, “Did you guys make a mistake? Who dares cause trouble here? Haha!” “I know what I saw. There are over a thousand people!” one of the bodyguards persisted anxiously. “I got it. Let’s go out and take a look.” Fane nodded and led the others forward. Many of the powerful people could not contain their happiness. If somebody truly came to offend Fane at this moment, it was the best opportunity for them to get into Fane’s good books. This was the Supreme Warrior, after all, and pleasing him would only be beneficial for them! “Come out here, Fane! Haha!” An old man laughed and kicked at his gate. One of the huge stone lions at the entrance flew up and crashed into one of the villa’s windows. A huge hole appeared in its wake. “Fane, today is the day you die!” Dylan yelled aggressively. The group of people soon arrived at the garden in front of the villa. “Haha…! Amazing! I had no idea that so many people were here. It looks like all of you are from Gin City?” Fane laughed and soon walked over with people behind him. “Cut the crap. You killed my son, and we’re here to avenge him today!”

Chapter 1019

Tao spoke to Fane with such fury and hatred. “We’re also avenging my daughter today!” Louis gave Fane a death glare as he gritted his teeth. However, Charles, who was by their side, glowered as he asked Dylan and Jaxon, “What’s going on? Why are there so many people? Didn’t you tell us that there aren’t many people here? It looks like there are people from other forces here!” “Sh*t! What happened? Why are the Gods of War here too?” Someone soon recognized Ethan and the others. Their expressions darkened. Although there were many of them, only four of five were masters at the semi-god level that could rival the Gods of War. Not only were the Gods of War real masters at the semi-god level, but some of them were at the mid-tier or later stage of the semi-god level. They were seasoned with combat experiences. Under such circumstances, the strongest person among them would not be a match against Fane’s group. It did not help that Fane

led so many out with him, and they know nothing about their opponent's combat powers. They originally thought that there were only one to two hundred people, but it looked like there were 500 to 600 people with Fane. Lana removed her mask at that point. After all, Fane had exposed his identity while she cared not much about hers. Dylan scrutinized her facial features before it clicked in his mind. "It's… It's the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs!" he gasped. Dylan almost spewed out blood when it dawned on him who he had offended. "Kill them." Fane smiled coldly and waved his hand at his people. "Great timing. I was just thinking about when I should go find you guys, but now that you guys are here at my doorstep, I'll gladly take this opportunity. I'll resume my search for Fernando's cure after I settle this." Whoosh! Suddenly, Ethan, Abner, and the others flew upward. Afraid that the other party would escape, they flew to the opposite direction and surrounded the opponents. "Damn it! Dylan, Jaxon, didn't you guys say that only Fane might be at the initial stage of demi-god level and that there…there weren't many others at the grandmaster tier?" Louis was so livid that he almost vomited blood when he saw this combat situation. He had it set in his mind that they would attain surefire victory with all his subordinates present. He never thought that there would be so many Gods of War and masters. Charles, after assessing the situation, smiled and gestured to the crowd, "Everybody, this matter is between us and Fane, so there's no need for others to step in, don't you think? I hope that the forces that aren't involved and the Gods of War won't involve themselves in our affairs." Louis chimed in at that moment as he added, "Everybody, we're big families from Gin City. Getting involved in our business will automatically make you our enemies. Think about that carefully!" "Haha! I'm sorry, but Fane is our master. How can we not intervene with his matters?" Riley laughed. He was standing in the air and had an overpowering aura. "Fane is your master?" The expression on Charles and the others darkened when they heard this, wondering if their ears played tricks on them. "Haha! Supreme Warrior, you've sacrificed so much for our

country. I'm definitely standing on your side today!" The elder who owned a seven-star hotel chuckled. "Supreme Warrior?!" Charles and the others were mystified. Fane was the Supreme Warrior?

Chapter 1020

"How's that possible? He...He's so young! How can he be the Supreme Warrior?" Dylan's face had the unmistakable expression of sheer disbelief. He shook his head incessantly, unable to accept what he had just heard. However, the Gods of War in front of them were known to the public. They were still familiar with these people's faces. Hence, the Gods of War were not lying to them. Fane—the man who stood before them—truly was the Supreme Warrior and their mentor. "The person we offended…is the Supreme Warrior?" Jaxon was just as speechless. He would not have asked his parents to avenge the Wagner family had he known Fane was the Supreme Warrior. Unfortunately, everything was too late. "Kill them!" Fane did not hold back. With a wave of his hand, he uttered the order. He understood that both families were large powers, and the people who came were truly strong masters from the families. Should they be left alive, they might pose a great threat in the future. If they killed these people, both families would not have any opportunity to start over again. Without the masters of semi-god level and so many high-grade grandmasters, the remaining others would not have any power to fight back. Whoosh, fwoosh, swoosh! All eight semi-god-level masters moved speedily. They rushed downward in a flash and killed almost 100 people with several sword auras. Whoosh! Whoosh! One of the semi-god level masters from the Lambert family quickly flew out in an attempt to escape. However, he soon frowned when he felt an extremely powerful power surge behind him. The power was moving speedily and coming straight from behind. The Lambert family's master immediately turned to take a look and immediately turned pale from fright. An almost thirty-centimeter-long wisp of Chi sharply aimed at him at a breakneck speed. "No!" the old man yelled loudly before

the alarming wisp of Chi blew him up. He was mangled into pieces mid-air. “How can it be?! Chi leaving the body to carry out attacks? Isn’t… Isn’t that only attainable for a master of the true god-level?” Another semi-god-level master was prepared to fly away and escape after searching for a suitable opportunity. The horrifying sight sent him into despair and fear as he turned pale. This Supreme Warrior was a master of the true god-level. Although his cultivation looked like he was only at the initial state of the true god-level, it was already difficult for even ten semi-god-level masters to surround one true god-level master and kill him. After all, it was a huge realm difference despite seemingly looking like they were only one step away. The difference between the power was unimaginable. Boom! Boom! Boom! Loud booming noises could be heard and the people from Gin City were slain left and right. They fell in puddles of blood. “Arghhh!”

Chapter 1021

Tao roared with all his might as he rushed toward Fane with a large sword in his hands. Alas, he did not even come close when Ethan slew him with a sword aura. Just like that, about 1000 masters were killed in just 10 minutes. As for Fane and his people, they achieved total success by only sacrificing several people and a dozen people being hurt. “Haha! That felt so good! It’s been such a long time since I had a huge battle!” One of the old men from a first-class aristocratic family in the City of Martial Arts burst into laughter. Fane looked at the time and said, “It’s late now. These people must have many trophies on them. The weapons and other things seem nice! Everybody should calculate the trophies and divide the items between us, and then we’ll go out for lunch!” That was music to everyone’s ears. After all, their opponents were distinguished people of powerful families. The money and weapons on them were eye-catching, and such trophies were enough to make others jealous. They then drove to the seven-star hotel after they got rid of the bodies and cleaned the area. At that moment, where the Woods family was… The Ninth Patronum, Brenton Woods once again

appeared before Madam Lily. “How’s everything going? It’s been a couple of days, yet you still haven’t found Fane and the others? You still don’t have a way to kill them?” Lily was constantly on edge at the lack of news on Joan and Fane. They could not even find her son, Lance, and they knew not whether he was alive or dead. If nothing was done and Joan truly returned with Fane, the heir of the master’s position would truly fall into Fane’s hands. Apart from that, Nash’s condition only grew worse. The request for an heir to the master’s position in the family was gradually increasing. Brenton sighed in front of Lily. “I know that Fane and the others have left Middle Province, so we immediately sent people to guard the only path that leads to the Woods family. I asked my people to kill them upon sight.” Brenton paused before he added, “However, it’s been several days. They would’ve appeared long ago if they truly were headed here, yet there’s still no sign of them.” “Didn’t you say that Fane offended some powerful people from Gin City, and that made him leave with his family?” Lily frowned and started thinking. “If Fane and the others offended the other party but have no intention of seeking refuge under the Woods family, then there’s only one possibility left… They’ve gone into hiding. They’ve found an inhabited place to hide!” Brenton nodded at his Madam’s words; that seemed plausible. “That’s a good thing for us if that’s the case. This means that Fane misunderstood Nash and still hated him because of what happened years ago, and that meant he never thought of returning to inherit the Woods family properties. If that’s the case, then it’s good news for us!” It was not long before Brenton’s frown resurfaced. “But what should we do if Fane doesn't inherit the position and we still can’t find Young Master Lance, worse still if he’s dead? Seems like Nash’s days are running out as well.” “Nash won’t die, and my son is still alive—I know it!” Lily shook her head and continued, “Even if we can’t find my son, we can’t allow Fane to be the inheritor, even if that meant a son of another Woods family’s elder becomes the inheritor. Fane should never rise to the position!” Brenton nodded. He finally looked at Lily and said, “Madam, it’s been so many days, and Fane

is still not here. I believe he won't be coming, so why don't I withdraw my people? They've been complaining about eating and sleeping in the wild for so many days, with no Fane in sight!" Lily was quiet for some time before she replied, "Alright, ask them to return tomorrow morning, but you still need to send people outside and get news about Fane's whereabouts. Is that clear?"

Chapter 1022

Brenton nodded to Lily's instructions, knowing that she would never be in peace until Lance was found, returned to the Woods family, and successfully became the inheritor. He also wanted to find and kill Fane. After all, it did Brenton no good if what he did was exposed. The Woods family members still honored Nash and obeyed every word he said. After Brenton left, the third elder of the Woods family, Wade Woods came into Lily's room. Wade sat down and glanced at Lily. "Sigh… They still haven't found Lance and the others." He would ask two of his disciples to guard the area in the yard every time he came to her room, making it safer for him to come and meet Lily in secret. After all, nobody knew about their secret relationship. Of course, as both Lily and Nash appointed Wade to lead the search for Lance and the others, it was understandable that he would constantly come over and report to Lily. "Sigh!" Lily glowered. "Honey, don't you worry. I've already thought about it, and Nash only has an estimated two months. If we still can't find Lance by then, we'll find Fane and kill him. If Nash dies before Fane returns, we'll ambush the first elder and kill him before Nash dies." The third elder smirked and continued, "After all, the first elder is the strongest in the Woods family at this moment. Who'd defy me once we kill him? I'd be the Woods family master!" "You, the master?" Lily had a solemn expression on her face. Previously, the third elder discussed with her to secretly drug Nash, and her son would be the master once he died. She discovered that Nash had plans of getting Fane and Joan back, and she could not accept that. She had no idea that Wade would

want to be the master if Nash died, should they fail to find Lance. Lily soured at that. She even wondered if Wade had always thought of becoming the family master himself. Wade smiled bitterly before moving two steps forward, taking Lily into his embrace. “Sigh... You know that I’m quite old, and I’m not interested in the family master’s position, Honey,” he coaxed. “However, this position can’t fall into the hands of other people. Even if it doesn’t land in that bastard’s hands, it can’t land in the hands of another Woods family member!” Wade then paused for a moment before he remarked, “Think about it: If the position of family master falls into my hands, I can just pass it back to Lance when we find him. Won’t that work?” “Do you truly mean that?” Though a frown was on her face, Lily relaxed as she gazed at the man who was more than 10 years older than her. “Of course, I mean it! I can just give it to Lance once we find him. After all, I’m not interested in the position of family master. The one I’m interested in is you, Honey!”

Chapter 1023

Wade coaxed Lily as his hand trailed along Lily’s back. “Where are your hands going?” Lily glanced at Wade flirtatiously before kissing him. … The second morning, Brenton asked all his subordinates to return. Little did they know that Fane started to pack his bags. “Master, the life in Fernando's body has reduced. Seems like he’ll only hold up to five or six days.” Ethan inspected Fernando’s body and eyed Fane worryingly. Fane nodded. “There’s an heirloom in our Woods family that helps to prolong people’s lives. It’ll at least ensure Fernando doesn’t die. We’re leaving soon.” “I want to go too!” Fiona piped in. “Didn’t you say that the Woods family is a reclusive family? Since it’s the legendary family, I’m sure they have many precious items and some can help prolong people’s lives, right? Since you’re the Woods family’s young master, it shouldn’t be an issue for you to give me some, right?” Fiona was over the moon when Fane told them about the Woods family. She could not imagine that Fane was not only the Supreme

Warrior, but he had such a strong background as well. Fane's family was the legendary reclusive family—the strongest power that rose above all powers in the world. Fiona did not want to miss out on the opportunity when Fane said he was making a trip back. Her mind raced with thoughts of getting her hands on some precious items that would really make her rich. Andrew scratched his head as he spoke, "Fane, I'm not as secular as her. I just want to be able to train like you and fly up in the air someday. It'd be nice if I can fly!" Both Fiona and Andrew took Fane by surprise with their words, and he was speechless. He offered Andrew a wan smile as he explained, "Father-in-law, training isn't an easy task. People at Selena's age can still clean her body in certain ways so that they can be martial artists and train, but people of your age would find it impossible to do. You won't be able to withstand the cleansing!" Andrew's expression fell upon hearing Fane's explanation. "Sigh! Nevermind, nevermind... This must be fate. Why didn't we meet you guys earlier?" However, his eyes soon lit up as he added, "Fane, since you say that Selena can wash her body and train, can Ben train too? He's younger than Selena!" Fane nodded. He looked at Ben and said seriously, "Training isn't some trivial matter—only those with firm determination can travel far on this path. Although they can obtain stronger power, it's something against nature and the wash will be painful. You'll have to think of that properly, Ben." Ben's eyes were filled with excitement. "I've thought about it! I've had it in mind for a long time now, Brother-in-law. Think about it: Elaine can train, and she's a master. How would it work if I can't train? As a man, I should accompany her. I might be able to protect her if I'm talented and manage to catch up with her!" Ben's words flustered Elaine as her blush seared across her cheeks. His words warmed her heart, and they tasted saccharine-sweet.

Chapter 1024

"Haha. Great! As long as you're determined to do it!" Fane chuckled, hearing Ben's declaration, as he then added, "Although I've not heard that

cultivation can increase a person's lifespan, cultivation does make you stronger and your skin fairer. Your body will also have extraordinary spiritualism!" Fane paused before he clarified, "This isn't so obvious for people who are at the martial artist-level, though. It'll be much more obvious when the person achieves the semi-god-level!" Fiona thought about it and asked Fane, "Who do you need with you for this trip?" "Selena, Ben, and Elaine can go with me," replied Fane. "Apart from that, Lana, Ethan, William, and my mother need to go with me too. That should be enough, since it's not convenient if too many of us go there together!" "Honey, didn't you say that Lily is against you and even sent people to kill you before? Will we be in danger if we go back like this?" Selena thought about it and was slightly worried. Fane smiled indifferently. "Don't worry about it. I've asked Willian, Ethan, and Lana to travel with us. With the four of us traveling together, it should be enough! The three of them would be able to protect you all! I want to bring you and Ben along because I want to see if we can get some resources from the Woods family to train you and make you into martial artists!" Selena nodded. "Once we become martial artists, does it mean that we've entered the path of cultivation?" To that, Fane gave a tight smile as he answered, "To be exact, becoming a martial artist means you're much stronger than normal people. You need to be a grandmaster in order to enter the path of cultivation, and that's because your body would have a slight aura when you've reached the grandmaster-level. Only then would you be able to train and start cultivating!" "Really? Cultivation only starts after reaching the grandmaster-level? Does that mean I need to have a one-star King of War's combat power before I can call myself a cultivator?" Ben was speechless after he heard this. "This is so difficult!" "Haha… Of course it's difficult. Do you think that it's easy to be masters of the semi-god-level like the Gods of War or a true god-level like your brother-in-law? Even the Woods family only have a few true god-level masters like your brother-in-law!" Skyler laughed loudly and said to Fane, "Supreme Warrior, don't worry about this side of your family—we'll take care of them. You go

ahead and treat God of War Campbell and your father." They started their journey after packing up their belongings. Meanwhile, at the Woods family... Brenton came before Lily. "Madam, we've asked our people to return, and I've asked them to rest. I've sent another twenty to help search for our young master. Hopefully, we can find Young Master Lance soon." Lily nodded in satisfaction after she heard this. With a flip of her hand, she came up with two Chi Congregation Pills and gave them to Brenton. "Good job. It's been a tiring time for you." Brenton took the pills gratefully. People who carried out cultivation could absorb the Chi around them based on the practice method they obtained. The reason all eight reclusive families hid in the forest to cultivate in silence and cared not about the outside world was that they found places with immense Chi that were suitable for them to stay in. The cities in the outside world did not have much Chi and were not suitable for cultivation. Even if they cultivated in the cities, their speed would be reduced, and it was obviously not worth the effort. This was also the reason all eight reclusive families did not involve themselves in the outside world's affairs.

Chapter 1025

Brenton cupped his hand and thanked Lily as he spoke, "Thank you, Madam. The happiest moments in my life are when I get to serve Madam. It's part of my responsibility, after all. Apart from that, I believe in the eldest young master's talent. I hope that Young Master Lance will soon become the Woods family's master." "Haha… Don't worry. Carrying out tasks for me means that you're working for the Lagorio family, and I wouldn't treat you shabbily. When we find my son and he becomes the Woods family's master, he won't treat you badly either. "You should work hard to increase your cultivation, and I can raise you to the elder position if you do," offered Lily with a smirk. The Ninth Patronum was ecstatic when he heard her offer, and he immediately knelt on one knee. "Thank you, Madam! I'll work hard to live up to your expectations!" The Ninth Patronum left Lily's living

quarters after that. He came to a pavilion not long after he left. The pavilion was located by the cliff, and there was an elder of about 50 years old standing inside. He had his hands behind his back as he gazed at a small town at the bottom of the hill. “Third elder.” The Ninth Patronum cupped his hand submissively to the Third Elder as he stood behind him. “Yes?” The Third Elder nodded and turned around slowly. “What did Lily ask you to go over for?” Ninth Patronum, Brenton smiled as he answered, “What else can it be? She’s asking about news regarding Fane and others. She’s also asked me to send more people to help search for her son.” Wade smiled coldly. “Haha! Her son has been lost for almost three months now, and he’s gotta be long gone since we can’t even locate him nor his body!” Wade paused before he added, “However, the plan remains—kill Lance if we find him. We can’t allow him to come back alive!” An equally sinister smile appeared on Brenton’s face. “Fret not, Third Elder—the position of Woods family master belongs to you. You’ve done so much for the Woods family. It’s a great thing that you’ve used the b*tchy Lily to help us get rid of Nash Woods!” “Hmph! Nash Woods should’ve died long ago!” Wade made an indignant sound through closed mouth as he added, “He’d vomit in anger if he knew that I was secretly meeting his woman. Haha! How would he ever climb to be the family master had he not received support from Lily and the other Lagorios years ago? I would’ve been the master!” “That’s right! This time, Lance was suicidal as he wanted to go look for a way to surpass the real god-level. That’s complete nonsense! How could there be a way to surpass the true god-level? Others would’ve found it if there’s such a way!” The Ninth Patronum laughed coldly. “We only need to wait another month or two. Everything would be perfect once Nash dies!”

Chapter 1026

At this moment in a house, Nash once again coughed out blood. His face looked much paler, and he seemed rather hollow as well. “It’s been so many days. Why isn’t Fane here yet? Is he not coming after all?” Nash felt sad

when he thought about Fane. “It’s all because of me. I blame my previous incompetence which kept me from accompanying him during his growth. He must’ve suffered a lot. No… No wonder he hates me so much...” The Woods’ family butler, Titus, comforted Nash, “Fret not, Master. I can feel that Fane is a filial child. Apart from that, it’s not that you don’t care about them. You’ve been asking the Ninth Patronum to send money and cultivation resources to Fane. Who knew that the Ninth Patronum would return to lie that they lived a good life.” Titus balled his fists tightly as he fumed, “He must be lying when he said that Fane had reached the level of a seven or eight-grade martial artist. He must’ve also taken all the cultivation resources that Master provided!” “Damn it!” Nash clenched his fists and seethed through gritted teeth, “Did you inform First Elder about this? Don’t tell anybody else. The only ones I trust now are the First Elder and Second Elder. While the Third Elder looks happy all the time and is actively helping us to search for Lance, he comes off as an untrustworthy person to me.” Titus nodded. “Master, to be honest, I used to think that the Third Elder is a nice person and contributed a lot for the Woods family, but ever since you told me that old man’s more than what he seems, I paid more attention to him. As it turned out, he truly isn’t a good person after all.” Titus paused for a short while before he continued, “I discovered that the Third Elder is very close to the Ninth Patronum, and they both often got together to talk. As the saying goes, ‘birds of a feather flock together’. I think there must be something wrong with the Third Elder.” Beside them, Beth said, “The Third Elder has been hiding himself well, and we can’t really tell what sort of a person he is. We must have some evidence before we do anything to him. After all, it’s not nice to wrong a person.” Nash agreed. “That’s right. The Third Elder has been an elder for a long time, and he’s a member of the Woods family. He’s contributed a lot to our family and has many loyal subordinates. We can’t make our decision hastily. If we do anything to him without solid proof, many people won’t be convinced, and this might pull them to his side!” Titus smiled bitterly. “Haha… Even if we have evidence

to prove that he's not a good person, many people would still fight for him, though it might cut the number of his supporters." ... At that moment, Fane, Lana, and the others had reached the bottom of the mountain with the lifeless-looking Fernando. "This place is really remote, but the air is really good, and cars can't get here as well. I feel like I can have a long lifespan if I stay here!" beamed Ben when he saw the huge mountain in front of him. Elaine, who was beside him, smiled. "You're not a martial artist yet. When you're one, you'll be able to feel tiny particles that are light blue in color in the air. That is Chi." Lana then chimed in, "Yes, and the Chi here is incredibly thick. It's at least two to three times thicker than the Chi in the City of Martial Arts!" "Sigh! Even though it's thick, it's a pity that we can't see or feel it."

Chapter 1027

Selena sighed. She had longed to become a martial artist. A thought then occurred to her as she spoke to Fane, "I never thought we'd have a problem-free journey, Honey, considering how Lily hates you so much and even sent people to kill you." Fane gave a tight smile. "True, it went too smoothly. I also didn't expect it to be so smooth, and we're already at the foot of the mountain." Fane then held Selena's hand and solemnly spoke, "Honey, don't you worry. I'll try my best to get the ingredients for you and Ben that can clean your bodies so that you can become martial artists. I'm not sure about your talents, but hopefully, both of you will have nice talents and that you'd be able to cultivate quickly." "Your father would be over the moon if he knows you're here, Fane." Joan smiled. Silently, she had waited for this day. After all, Nash was the man she loved years ago. He was, of course, Fane's father. Fane sighed. "I wonder what sickness he has. Let me take a look at him and help treat him. I think that his illness won't be that difficult to treat." Fane turned and looked at Fernando, hoisted on William's back. "The one that I'm worried about is Fernando. Would the Woods family take out their precious item, considering how important it is? Even if the Woods

family members agree to it, I’m afraid that the Lagorio family members and Lily would step forward and stop them.” “Master, do you know how many people of the Woods family are at the semi-god level? How many of them are masters of the true god-level?” Lana asked curiously. “I’m not sure. I’m not too familiar with the Woods family, see, ” replied Fane, that faint smile still on his face. “However, they’ve become a true reclusive family and can be considered the cream of the crop. I estimate that all the Elders are at the real god-level while the Patronums are at the semi-god level. I believe that they have multiple grandmasters in their ranks as well.” Lana was inwardly startled; masters of the real god-level were extremely strong. Fane, who was such a strong existence, had just achieved the initial stage of the real god-level. There were so many of such people like Fane in the Woods family. Apart from that, were there truly eight families like the Woods family? Lana managed to collect herself after some time and replied, “That’s right. They’re the top eight powers, and it's normal that they have so many masters who’d achieved the real god-level. After all, they’re enjoying the best resources and places for cultivation in this world.” Joan smiled bitterly and spoke, “Previously, the Lagorio family had the highest hope to become a reclusive family, but no one foresaw that the Woods family would develop later on and become a reclusive family. Different from the Woods family, the Lagorio family declined and fell. They’re only considered as a hidden family instead of a reclusive one.”

Chapter 1028

Fane was speechless when he heard this. “The Lagorios must be infuriated if that’s the case. After all, they helped the Woods family, but they never thought that the Woods family would work hard and rise to the occasion while theirs...” “Haha. What could they have done? According to what Titus said, many of their elders have huge breakthroughs and the younger generations showed spectacular performances. They grew step-by-step as they trained hard, and many geniuses emerged! As for the Lagorios, they

had a huge fight with the families that were of the same status and lost many people." Joan also smiled bitterly, and the group talked as they reached a stone-paved road. However… "Stop! Who are you? This place belongs to the Woods family. None of you can enter unless you're a member of the Woods family and have the Woods family token!" Seven to eight young men were guarding the stone door. One of the men stepped forward and snapped at Fane while the others revealed their swords. Lana immediately walked forward and explained, "Everybody, we're members of the Woods family. This is Fane Woods, the young master of the Woods family. We're here to meet your master!" "Woods family's young master, Fane Woods? Why haven't we heard about him?" The man immediately frowned after he heard what Lana said. "That doesn't seem right. The Woods family has two madams, and the eldest madam only has a son, Lance who has disappeared for three months now. The second madam has a pair of twin daughters. Since when do we have another young master?" The eyes of a young lady lit up after she heard what Lana said. "Is it really Fane? He's Fane?" She glanced at Fane as she spoke and nodded. "You look like the master. Are you really the young master of Woods family?" Joan smiled bitterly. Although she was embarrassed, she explained, "Young lady, please help us to pass on the message and inform the butler, Titus Woods, or even the First Elder that we're here. Please tell them that I'm Joan, and I've brought Fane to visit his father." "Alright. Although I'm not sure about what's going on, I'll help pass on the message. Still, you can't enter the Woods family residence without their permission." The young lady looked at Fane again before turning around to walk up the mountain. The other man glanced around before quickly running up the mountain without saying much. The man traveled speedily. He rushed over when he saw a familiar figure at one of the squares, thus he informed, "Ninth Patronum, they're here. They're at the foot of the mountain. What should we do?" "Who's here?" The Ninth Patronum, Brenton frowned, puzzled. Eyeing the young man huffing and puffing before him, he spoke, "Didn't you ask us to assassinate Fane and

Joan? They're here! I saw eight of them and another man being carried, thus making nine of them!" stated the young man. "F*cking hell! Who knew that they'd arrive at the bottom of the mountain by afternoon when we've just withdrawn our men by morning?! Mindy Woods has agreed to help them pass the message on to Titus or First Elder. I came to you via the shortest path." "No, they can't be allowed to go up the mountain!" Brenton instantly sensed the gravity of the situation. If Fane and the others ascended the mountain, what happened years ago would be exposed. Once both sides meet, Nash would know about what happened years ago with just a simple chat. Teeth gritting, Brenton then ordered, "Come, you need to go with me. We need to kill Fane before the First Elder and the others arrive!" Without hesitation, he pulled the man with him and flew toward the bottom of the mountain.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1029

This Ninth Patronum was obviously a master with demi-god status.

A Patronum with such cultivation showed how strong the White family was.

The Ninth Patronum traveled speedily. He flew for a period of time while pulling another person before landing on the ground. He tapped with the tip of his toes and jumped upward to continue flying. After a while, he reached the stone door and stopped.

Brenton was at ease when Mindy had not returned with the others, and he had the upper hand.

He glanced at the people in front of him before he firmly asked, “Which one of you is Jack, and who’s Joan?”

“I’m Jack, and this is my mother, Joan.” Jack walked forward and gave a small bow to the stranger in front of him. He politely gestured with his hands. “And you are?”

The Ninth Patronum glanced away. “Haha! You’re here to pay a visit to our master? You’re looking for our butler?” he spoke.

“Yes. Didn’t the lady go in to pass on the message?” Jack eyed the person in front of him and replied honestly.

“I’m one of the Patronums here. Our master said that he has no other son apart from his one and only son, Lance. It’s best if all of you leave!” Brenton smiled coldly and crossed his hands on his chest.

Jack was slightly stunned when he heard this. He was, however, inwardly smirking.

The butler had informed Jack about Nash's prevailing condition previously. Nash was on the brink of his death and that was the reason why he was sent to seek Jack. Nash wanted to meet Jack and even wanted Jack to take over the White family properties.

Yet, all of a sudden, they were stopped at the door when they had just arrived. It seemed like Lily and the others were very afraid of Jack meeting Nash.

All the more reason for Jack to meet Nash, if that was the case. He wanted to see how many people wanted to attack him.

Jack smiled coldly after he thought about it. "Greetings to you, Patronum. I truly am Nash's son, and I heard that my father is gravely ill, so I came back for a visit. I won't be leaving, even if you asked me to."

Jack then added, "Also, I might be killed not long after I leave this place, right?"

The corners of Brenton's mouth twitched several times; he did not anticipate Jack's keenness that could guess his every thought.

There were so many people present, and it was inconvenient for him to do anything, thus it was best to wait until Jack and the others left. Nobody would know that he was the one who killed them once they walked out of the White family members'—who were guarding the door—sight. Even if somebody suspected him, he only needed to insist that it was not him, and there would be no evidence as they were all dead.

It was a good while before Brenton pulled out his sword and pointed it at Jack. “Young man, your actions tell me that you really want to disguise as our master’s son and enter by force. I’ll take action if you don’t leave!”

He had thought about it. If Jack refused to leave, he could say that these people were forcing their way in and that he took action because he did not know that he was Nash’s son.

He might escape death as long as Lily sided with him and protected him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1030

“I’m sorry, but I’m not leaving!” insisted Jack, secretly smirking. “However, I won’t force my way inside too. It’d be fine to just stay here and wait for the butler to come over. I believe we’ll soon know if I’m Nash White’s son!”

Jack fell silent for a short while as he eyed Brenton coldly before he added, “Seems like you don’t want me to meet Nash, am I right?”

“Damn it! Since you’re not leaving, you’re asking for it, young man!” Brenton looked behind him. He swung his sword toward Jack, fearing that Titus and the others would see them if it was prolonged.

A scary sword aura rushed toward Jack—there was no mistaking the murderous intent behind such an attack.

Despite the daunting move, Jack merely stood still while William, who was next to him, pulled his sword out as a scary sword aura flew outward. It immediately stopped the Ninth Patronum’s sword aura.

A deafening blast could be heard as the attacks from both sides canceled one another.

William knew that Jack had just returned; he knew multiple enemies from the White family had their sights on Jack.

Hence, it was better if Jack kept his cultivation level a secret for the time being.

Brenton never thought that there was such a strong master by Jack’s side, though after he got past his initial surprise, he threatened William.

“Who are you? You’re a master of the demi-god level. Do you know the results of going against the White family, young man?”

“Haha… My identity doesn’t concern you, but I won’t stand idly by if you attack him.” William laughed, a sliver of disdain visible in his eyes.

For Brenton, he could sense that his opponent was at the initial stage of the demi-god level. He had nothing to be afraid of as he had already achieved the last stage of the demi-god level!

Meanwhile, Mindy had arrived at a square where she asked a man, “Where’s the butler? Do you know where he’s at?”

The man smiled. “Butler Titus seems to be at the master’s quarters with Beth. After all, the master’s condition is degrading, and they constantly visit him.”

“Alright, thank you!” Mindy nodded and quickly rushed toward Nash’s quarters.

However, she was stopped by two White family members who were guarding the door when she arrived there.

“Mindy, is there anything that you need?” one of the men immediately asked Mindy. “We can help pass on the message if it’s urgent.”

“Oh dear, it’s something important!” Mindy was extremely anxious and immediately yelled loudly inside, “Sister Bella, Butler Titus! Quick! There’s something important, and I need you out here!”

Beth and Titus, who were inside, walked out from the house when they heard Mindy.

“Mindy, what’s going on?” blurted Titus as he walked out. “How can you yell so loudly when the master is taking a rest? Aren’t you afraid that you’ll disturb the master’s rest? It’s so impolite of you!”

Mindy smiled sheepishly and said, “Butler, there’s a woman who came with a younger man. She said that her name is Joan and her son’s name is Jack. Her son is the master’s son, and I don’t know if it’s true or not. They don’t seem to be lying, so I immediately came in to report this.”

“Is it true?!” Titus’ eyes widened as his expression morphed into joy. “What news! What splendid news! Let me inform the master, and we can all go down to welcome Young Master Jack!”

“So he really is the master’s son!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1031

Mindy's eyes widened when she saw how the butler reacted.

"Yes, that is the case!" Titus ran back into the house in excitement after he spoke.

"Titus, what's going on? Is Mindy here for something important?" Nash had already sat up on the bed. Although he looked weak, he still managed to sit while putting all his weight on the headframe.

"Master, great news! It's great news! Madam Joan has brought Young Master Jack with her and they're at the bottom of the mountain!" Titus immediately announced with extreme excitement. "Wait here, Beth and I will go invite him here!"

Titus was ready to leave with Beth after he spoke.

"Is it true? That's great! Hold on, I want to go too. I want to personally welcome them here!" However, Nash stood up with excitement and wanted to follow them.

"Master, you can't even stand steadily with your body's condition. It's best if you lay here and wait for us. We'll be back soon!" Titus quickly returned to support Nash and persuaded him.

"No, I have to go. I feel ashamed for what happened to them. I would be worried if I don't go and fetch them personally!" Nash insisted.

"Alright, hold on to me then!" Titus did not know what to say when he saw how persistent Nash was. He could only help Nash as they walked to the garden before flying upward and toward the bottom of the mountain.

Beth had no other choice but to rush toward the bottom of the mountain at her fastest speed. She travelled speedily.

At this moment, Brenton had already been engaged in a fight with William for some time. However, his attacks were useless and he was angry over it.

Brenton yelled to the guards behind him when he realised that the fight could not go on this way. “Why are you guys still standing there? These people are forcing their way into our place. Kill them! Kill all of them!”

“This…” The remaining people hesitated.

The man who notified Brenton gritted his teeth and rushed toward Jack. He clenched his hand into a fist and had a ferocious look in his eyes. He intended to kill Jack.

“How dare you!” Lana swerved out and defended in front of Jack when she saw the man attacking Jack.

“Kill both of them!” Jack ordered when he realized Brenton really intended to kill him.

He knew clearly that it was easy for William to kill Brenton. However, Brenton was the White family’s patronum and William dared not kill him without Jack’s orders. Hence, William had been attacking with defensive strikes only.

Lana avoided the man’s attack effortlessly and punched the man on his chest after she heard what Jack said.

The middle-aged man flew outward and landed on the ground. He twitched several times before dying.

On the other side, William also killed his opponent with a slash of his sword.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1032

Two figures leaped from the stone steps high above within the next few seconds before finally landing not far away from Jack and the others.

Lana and William immediately looked at them with their guards up high.

“This…” Titus was speechless as he looked at both bodies on the floor. Why did Jack kill somebody when they had just arrived here? On top of that, the Ninth Patronum—Brenton White, who they had always wanted to get rid of, was also one of the casualties.

“J…Jack!” At this moment, Nash ignored the bodies on the floor and looked at Jack as his body shook slightly due to extreme excitement.

Jack opened his mouth and felt that his words were stuck in his throat. In the end, he said nothing.

“Joan, what…what happened?” Nash finally smiled bitterly and turned to look at Joan. It was great that Jack had returned. His son had grown up and was an adult. He was satisfied to have this chance of seeing his son and Joan.

“Both of them refused to let us enter. This patronum even claimed that we were trying to barge in by force when we didn’t. He attacked us and wanted to kill us!” Joan smiled bitterly. She then turned around and said to Jack, “Jack, this is your father, Nash White!”

“Young Master Jack, Master insisted that I bring him to meet you after he heard of your arrival. He refused to stay in bed even though I asked him to! He wants to see the both of you so badly!” Titus spoke on behalf of Nash.

Jack looked at the man who had a pale face. His heart softened as he walked two steps forward and said, “Father, I know that there were some misunderstandings between us. This time, I’m here to visit you and I also have a request!”

“You… You’re addressing me as your father!”

Nash was so touched that his eyes turned teary. He looked at Titus and said, “Titus, did I hear it wrongly? Jack… Jack called me father!”

At this moment, Nash was excited like a child and did not know what to say.

“Yes, Master. Young Master Jack is an understanding person.” Titus nodded his head in satisfaction. He then turned his sight to look at the Ninth Patronum’s body on the floor. He spoke softly, “Master, weren’t we always short of a reason to kill Brenton White? Isn’t it good that this friend of Young Master Jack killed him?”

Nash also nodded and said, “It’s great but Lily’s hatred toward Jack will increase.”

“Why should we be worried? The First Elder and many of the White family’s members are on your side. It’s their mistake and even the Lagorios cannot confuse what’s right with what’s wrong!” Titus said.

At this moment, many masters flew down after they heard fighting noises from the bottom of the mountain.

“Master, why did you come? The wind is so strong and it’s not good for your body!” An old man immediately asked caringly when he saw that Nash was here.

“Master, who are these people? Are they the ones who killed our people? Is the Ninth Patronum dead?” Many people looked at Jack and the others alertly. It looked like they would take violent action if words could not solve the issue.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1033

Nash spoke angrily, “Everybody, the Ninth Patronum is a wildly ambitious person. This is my son, Jack and that is Joan, my woman. I did not treat her well previously and I’m returning her status to her. I officially announce here that she’s your third madam!”

Nash paused here before continuing to speak, “I had no idea that the Ninth Patronum would embezzle all the money and cultivation resources I asked him to deliver. Now that I’ve found my son, he wanted to kill them to cover up what he did and forbid them to go up the mountains. Luckily my son’s friend has strong combat powers and killed him!”

“You… You’re Young Master Jack?”

The red-haired old man immediately stepped forward and said in excitement, “Great! This is great news that you’re back! Haha… The White family has an heir! I heard that you have good talents! You must be a seven or eight-grade grandmaster?”

Jack smiled indifferently and said, “I was lucky. I’ve been cultivating hard after I obtained the way of cultivation. I’m still far behind compared to you!”

Titus, who was by their side, made an introduction. “Jack, this is the First Elder, Kenneth White. He’s a real master and is already at the last stage of real god status. He’s just one step away from the highest level of cultivation.”

“This is the Second Elder. This is the Fifth Elder… This is the Seventh Patronum. There are still many who are not here. I’ll introduce them to you when we have time!” Titus introduced the remaining people.

“Greetings to all of you! I’m Jack White.” Jack cupped his hand and greeted them.

However, a middle-aged woman with a cold expression walked down the mountain with a group of people at this moment.

“I heard that somebody killed a member of the White family as soon as they arrived. This person had also killed the Ninth Patronum, am I right?” Lily said angrily.

“Who did this?! How dare this person do such a thing. How can the members of the White family be killed simply like this?” The Third Elder also had a darkened expression on his face and was extremely angry.

“Yes, who is this person? They really have the guts!” Two other elders joined the conversation angrily.

After all, the Ninth Patronum was a master of the demi-god status. They had spent lots of cultivation resources to groom such a strong master and his death was a huge loss for the White family.

“Everybody, this is the Third Madam, Joan. This is the son she had with our master, Young Master Jack!” Titus knew that Nash’s body was not doing good so he immediately made the introduction. “They returned today and the Ninth Patronum falsely accused them of forcing their way in. Young master’s friend had no other choice but to kill him as a defence because he intended to kill the young master!”

“Oh, this is the bastard child!” Lily commented with a cold expression on her face. “How dare you return now? This woman too! How shameless of you to return. If she did not seduce Nash years ago, why would Nash get together with a normal woman who doesn’t even know how to cultivate?!”

“Nonsense! She… She did not seduce me! We… We liked each other mutually!” Nash was agitated and he panted as he spoke. He could not help but cough after he finished speaking.

He knew Lily disliked Jack and Joan. However, he had no idea that this woman would act so brazenly and made him ashamed in public.

“Is this really the master’s son? This is great! The Eldest Young Master has gone missing and might be dead as we failed to find him after such a long period of time. Jack seems mature and the White family bloodline would be continued if he returns and inherits the White family!” Some of the White family members say in excitement after they heard that Jack was Nash’s illegitimate child.

Lily’s facial expression grew increasingly dark when she heard what they said.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1034

Lily had an extremely darkened facial expression. It was natural for the White family members to hope for Jack to return and lead the family after they learned about his situation. They hoped that he would be the White family's heir.

"Haha… This doesn't seem right. Although Young Master Jack is the master's son, we're all considered White family members. The position of the family master's heir is very important and we cannot treat it lightly!" Another young man of the White family hugged both hands in front of his chest and laughed coldly.

"Yes, the position of an heir cannot be decided so hastily. My son is also a member of the White family and carries the White family bloodline. He is also very talented. As people in general honor the strong, the heir should be chosen based on the talents of the person!" The young man's father was one of the elders who immediately stood forward to support his son.

At this moment, another elder of the White family thought about it and said, "Master, Young Master Lance was considered as the White family's most talented master. We were well-convinced when he was the successor of the master's position. The younger members were also utterly convinced. However, Young Master Jack is a child you had with an outsider and had only just returned from the outside world. Many people would be dissatisfied if he could become the heir!"

Lily was secretly happy when she heard this and immediately said, "In my opinion, we should send more people to search for my son, Lance. He can continue to be the heir after he returns. This is the only way everybody would be convinced, am I right?"

"Let's not talk about this first. Young Master Jack killed our Ninth Patronum as soon as he returned. We can't let this go without a legitimate reason, am I right?" The Third Elder stood up and looked at Jack angrily while saying. "Young man, the friends you brought with you are really strong. However, how can you be so ruthless? It's clearly a misunderstanding as the Ninth Patronum didn't know that you are the master's son and thought that you were barging in with force. Why did you kill him when you could have just injured him?"

The Third Elder paused before continuing, “Humph, regardless, the Ninth Patronum’s actions were not enough to deserve death, right?”

The First Elder immediately stood forward and spoke on behalf of Jack, “Haha… Third Elder, I believe you understand that fists have no eyes and it could hit anywhere in a fight. After all, Jack and the others said that they did not barge in. How can you blame it on Jack when the Ninth Patronum made the first move? Would you stand there and let someone kill you and make their wish come true?”

He turned around after he spoke and said to the young people guarding the door previously. “Tell us what actually happened just now.”

The young people immediately stood forward. “The Ninth Patronum insisted that Jack and the others were trying to barge in and started the fight first!”

“Yes, we all saw what happened with our own eyes. Young Master Jack said that he would wait here for Titus and the elders but the Ninth Patronum seemed to be in a hurry. He pulled out his sword and attacked Jack. Jack’s friend killed the Ninth Patronum as he could not bear the sight of what was going on!”

Several young men of the White family stood forward and spoke on behalf of Jack.

They had a clear look of the situation just now and they could feel that there was something wrong with the Ninth Patronum. He seemed frightened of Jack meeting the master.

“Did you hear what they said? Third Elder, Madam, Jack’s friend was forced to take action. Apart from that, I wonder why the Ninth Patronum is in such a hurry to make the first move without understanding the situation?” The First Elder smiled coldly and looked at the Third Elder questionably.

“Never mind, then. Since Jack really is Nash’s son, let’s just let this go. The Ninth Patronum had gotten what he asked for!” Lily immediately waved her hand as she was afraid of the plot between the Ninth Patronum and others to come to light.

“Don’t move!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1035

However, Jack discovered a fat woman standing not far behind Lily and the others. The woman's facial expression darkened when she saw Jack. She acted as if she was afraid of being discovered so she turned around and was ready to escape.

The woman's face turned pale after she heard Jack yelling at her. She stood there not knowing what to do next.

The others looked over to where Jack was looking at and the person Jack called out to was Lily's maid, Yvette.

"Fat lady, have you forgotten what you did? Didn't we meet five years ago when I knelt here for one whole night, begging to meet my father?" Jack smiled coldly and said.

The fat woman turned around and her eyes were flickering around. She quibbled, "Young Master Jack, have you remembered things wrongly? When have we met? This is the first time I've seen you."

"This is the first time? I might not be able to recognize you if you've lost weight during the past five years. However, your figure did not change so I do recognize you!" Jack laughed and said to the crowd, "Five years ago, my mother was gravely ill so I came here with the wishes to meet my father. I wanted to ask for my mother's surgery fees and it was only one million dollars. This woman said that she's the White family's housekeeper and that my father refused to see me. I was asked to p*ss off! She humiliated me after she gave me a scolding. I will never forget your face!"

"Yvette, how dare you impersonate me?" Titus walked forward and looked at Yvette angrily. It was an opportunity to kill Yvette since Jack mentioned this incident and the Ninth Patronum was dead.

“I… I did not… He’s making it up! Don’t believe in him, he’s obviously framing me!” Yvette was extremely afraid but she knew clearly that she could not admit to it at this moment. If she admitted to that, Lily would not be able to save her life.

“You’re still denying it? Haha… Why didn’t Jack frame somebody else? There are so many people here and you’re the only one he pointed out to?” The First Elder looked at Yvette angrily. Titus had told him about this previously, so it was good that Jack was here to confront Yvette.

However, he knew clearly that it was not easy to kill Yvette if Yvette denied the charges without Jack showing any evidence.

“Haha… First Elder, how can you stay that? What if Jack came up with an excuse to kill Yvette because he knows that Yvette is a Lagorio and my maid? After all, nothing is impossible!” Surely, Lily stood forward and spoke on behalf of Yvette.

“That’s right, this won’t work without evidence. We cannot blame someone good for this!” Another elder from the Lagorio family thought about it before stepping forward and said.

Yvette was a member of the Lagorio family and he did not want her to be killed because of what Jack said.

If this happened, the position of the Lagorios in the White family would be further lowered.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1036

“That’s right, Young Master Jack. You’re the master’s son—that is something that can’t be changed. That’s why we’ll acknowledge you. But you can’t just kill the people of the Lagario family at your whims and fancy!”

Another old man stood up as well. “Unless this is your little gift to us for your recent return?” he said to Jack.

Jack’s brows creased together as he saw many members of the Lagorio family stepping forward. Many of the elders, as well as Lily, had all voiced their opinions. It seemed that the Lagorio family had considerable influence over the White family.

Furthermore, the incident had taken place over five hundred years ago. There had been two to three hundred witnesses, but they had emerged along with this fat woman. He was certain that they were allies, and that they were not in a position as strong as Yvette.

If that was the case, it was evident that none of the people here would give a truthful testimony.

“Fine. I’ll forget that this ever happened!”

Jack thought about it for a while before he spoke, flashing a frosty smile.

“That’s fantastic. No matter what, Young Master Jack has returned. Let us arrange his accommodation first!”

The First Elder stood up. “We’ll discuss about the successor to the head of the house another time!” he said.

However, he did not expect Jack's immediate reply. "I don't have much interest to be the head of the house. I'm not that close to the White family, after all. If someone else wants to take the position, let them have it. I came back just to see my father—and to find a way to save my friend, Fernando!"

"That fellow is practically dead, isn't he? Can he still be saved?"

The Third Elder looked at Fernando, slung over Ethan's back. He noticed that the young man was not moving a single inch, and his chest was not heaving. He frowned.

"I know that the White family possesses a treasure called the Cryo Pearl, which can seal a person in ice and preserve their life. My friend can only live for three or four more days. That's why I thought…"

Jack struggled to put his thoughts into words, and when he did, he did it so shamefacedly.

Yet Lily cut in before he could finish his sentence. "Don't even think about it. Who is your friend? Why should we use our treasure to save him? The Cryo Pearl is priceless. Do you know how difficult it was for us to obtain it?"

The Third Elder also gave a cold smile. "Don't overstep your boundaries, Young Master Jack. Do not forget that you're an illegitimate child, and you've never contributed anything to the White family all these years. Upon your arrival, you killed the Ninth Patronum, and you even slandered the Lagario family's name. Heh. We won't hold you against all of this for the sake of the master, but you asking for the Cryo Pearl is too much."

Another elder from the White family also had a gloomy expression. "Young Master Jack, did you really not consider becoming the heir to the White family at all? If you're just back to see the master and to take the Cryo Pearl, don't dream about it. We can't give our treasure to anyone."

The First Elder thought about it. “Young Master Jack, you’ll only have the authority to use the treasure if you become the heir to the White family, and take over the White family’s business. Even I cannot support you in your endeavors otherwise!”

“No way. The position of the heir is extremely important, where only someone qualified is deserving of that position. We can’t just hand it to anyone! Unless Jack has so much talent that he far surpasses the younger generation and makes them obey him. Otherwise, even as an elder of the White family, I cannot simply agree to this proposal!”

Another elder from the White family stood up again and spoke.

“I think we should wait and see. I believe that Lance is still alive. He will be the heir after he comes back!”

Lily argued in favor of her son.

“Enough!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1037

Nash was furious. He never thought that everybody would start arguing upon Jack's return.

He glared at his audience. "We'll make the decision tomorrow," he said. "Jack has just arrived. Let him have a good rest. We'll talk business tomorrow!"

"All right!"

Many people gritted and raised their hands into a fist-to-palm salute.

"Oh my. I heard that Nash's third wife is back. Where's Young Master Jack? Let me take a look…"

At this moment, Lizzie, Nash's second wife, came down from the mountain, with a few other people in tow. She had heard of the news and had come over to see what was going on.

"Lizzie, this is my son, Jack. This is Joan. She's my wife from now on!"

Nash gave a small smile when he saw Lizzie approaching and introduced them.

"Tsk tsk. So this is Young Master Jack? What a handsome and strapping young man!"

After Lizzie studied Jack, she looked at Joan. “No wonder Nash was in love with you. You don’t seem to be someone who practices Chi manipulation, but you have such a unique aura about you! No ordinary person possesses that.”

Joan managed a wan smile. “What aura are you talking about?” she said. “I’m just an ordinary woman. I’m no match for you!”

Jack did not know what sort of a person Lizzie was. He could not tell if she was pleased with his return or not.

He could do nothing but smile politely. “How do you do, Madam Lizzie!”

Lizzie nodded her head, satisfied. She dragged the young woman behind her forward, who was about seventeen or eighteen years old. “Yolanda, this is Jack. Just call him Brother Jack from now on. We still don’t know if Brother Lance is dead or alive. Let’s hope for the best.”

“Hello, Brother Jack!”

Yolanda greeted him softly after studying him for a while. She ducked her head, as though she was shy upon meeting others for the first time.

“Hello there, Sister Yolanda!”

Jack nodded his head. Yolanda was young, and she seemed like an obedient girl—as if she was a winter bud that had not bloomed.

“What’s happened? This…”

Lizzie noticed the bodies on the ground, and her expression contorted in shock and confusion. She then looked at Jack, as well as Lily, whose features had turned sour. She immediately got the gist of what had taken place.

It seemed that Lily had wanted to kill Jack at the foot of the mountain. If Jack had truly died, Nash—who was already sick enough—would probably die on the spot in a fit of rage.

“It was a misunderstanding. All right, let’s go back in first. We’ll announce our decision about the heir and the Cryo Pearl tomorrow!”

Nash looked at everyone and ordered.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1038

Since even Nash had said that Lily and the others could not say anything more. Everyone dissipated from the area except for the few servants from the White family who stayed behind to help clean up the bodies.

Soon enough, Jack, Joan, and Selena went into Nash's room. Meanwhile, Lana and the others got a good rest after being taken to their respective rooms.

"What a wonderful day. You've grown so much, my son. And you're such a distinguished man!"

Nash sat on the bed and looked at Jack, who stood before him. His eyes were full of excitement and joy.

Jack scanned his surroundings. Only the butler, Beth, Yolanda, Lizzie, the First Elder, and the others were here.

He thought for a while. "Mr. Titus, can we trust everyone here?"

Mr. Titus nodded his head. "Everyone here is an insider, and Lizzie is a good person. Don't worry. She and Yolanda are not outsiders!"

After hearing the certainty in Titus' answer, Jack asked another question, "Are there lookouts in the garden?"

Titus sensed that Jack had something gravely important to talk about. He bobbed his head. "Don't worry. The men guarding the entrance are ours too, and they are people of good character. Young Master Jack, do you have something to say?"

“There were too many people down there,” Jack replied, expression solemn. “It was not the best place for me to talk!”

“Don’t worry, Young Master. Just speak your mind here. We won’t breathe a word to outsiders!”

The First Elder said, smiling.

Jack nodded. “I think it’s fine whether you choose to be the heir or not. It’s not like Father has an incurable disease. More importantly, it’s not chronic!”

He paused here before continuing slowly, “He’s been poisoned!”

“What!”

Everyone was shocked when they heard that.

“No way. How is he still alive after so long, if he was truly poisoned? Besides, the doctor already checked him, and they said that he has two or three months left to live. What poison is it that acts so slowly?”

The First Elder immediately exclaimed, utterly stupefied. Fear gripped his chest. After all, Chi fighters like them had extremely powerful bodies. Regular poison was useless against them.

“Young Master Jack, are you sure that he was poisoned?” Titus chimed in, tone serious. “That would be terrible if that was the case. Normal poison won’t work against Chi fighters like us, and even if it did, we would have sensed something off. We never felt something was wrong, and plenty of doctors came to check him. None of them said that he was poisoned!”

Lizzie also took a sharp intake of breath. “My God. Who did it then, if it was poison? Don’t tell me it’s Lily. It doesn’t seem probable though. Why would she want to kill Nash? She has no reason to do so.”

“Heh. There’s no evidence yet, but the most likely culprit is her!” Jack said, flashing a cold smile.

He never thought that Nash would shake his head in disbelief. “It’s not likely. She doesn’t like you or your mother, but she wouldn’t harm me. We’ve been husband and wife for a long time, after all. She’s not a bad person, it’s just that she has a slight vendetta against the two of you. She always blamed me for going behind her back and getting together with your mother, saying that I cheated on her!”

The First Elder also added, “I think that she couldn’t have hurt your father. She has nothing to gain out of it. What she wants the most now is to find Lance, and make him the heir to the White family. It’s been such a long time since we last heard from Lance, and everyone knows that it’s very likely that he’s dead, yet she refuses to accept reality!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1039

Titus chipped in, “That’s right. It’s been so long. She insists that she needs to see the body, at least. Heh. If he’s truly dead, it would be impossible to find his body. It would have been eaten by wild animals long ago!”

At this moment, Selena took a step forward. “If Jack says that my father-in-law has been poisoned, he has been poisoned. I don’t know if the shadow families are aware of this, but Ethan Hayes is known as a ‘miracle doctor’ in the mortal realm, and Jack is his master. This, I’m sure, is enough to prove that Jack is extremely skilled in medicine!”

“Really? That’d be great! Since Jack can tell that he’s been poisoned, surely he knows how to cure it. After all, it should be easier to solve the problem now that we know what’s wrong!”

The First Elder’s eyes brightened when he heard that.

Nash’s expression was stony though. “Jack calls me ‘father’ now,” he said to Selena. “Why are you still calling me ‘father-in-law’? What should you call me instead?”

Selena was immediately embarrassed. “Father!” she said in a small voice.

Nash was elated when his daughter-in-law called him ‘father’. He flipped his palm, and a few herbal pills appeared on it. He thrust them toward Selena. “Fantastic. This is the first time I’m seeing you, even though you and Jack have been married for so long. Take this as your wedding gift.”

“Thank you, Father!”

Selena did not know what the pills were for, but she took them anyway, a bitter smile on her face.

Jack grinned. “This medicine will help to cleanse your body. With this, you’ll experience a breakthrough and become a martial artist in a few days, and then you can start training!”

“Really? Thank you so much, Father!”

Selena was extremely excited. She had been suspicious of the medicine, but she never thought that they would be so precious.

At this moment, Nash flipped his hand again and took out a tattered scroll, shoving it toward Selena. “This is the guide to master Chi manipulation. I picked this scroll up in the forest long ago. I’m not sure to what extent it teaches you, but judging from a glance, there should be some pretty good techniques in there. It shouldn’t be a problem if you want to practice to the level of a true god!”

Here, Nash paused for a while before continuing slowly, “And this fighting style is suitable for women, but only for those who have never practiced Chi manipulation before. Those who are already a martial artist or grandmaster will have no use for it. That’s why I’m giving it to you!”

“That sounds fantastic. Thank you, Father!”

Selena did not know what else to say. She was extremely excited.

“Right. I think your brother isn’t a martial artist as well, right? He was panting all the way up to the mountain!”

At this moment, Lizzie asked Selena after she thought about it.

“That’s right. He’s never trained before!”

Selena smiled.

She never thought that Lizzie too, would flip her palm and take out a few herbal pills. She gave them to Selena. “It’s our first time meeting, but I haven’t given you anything yet. These are cleansing pills too. Give them to your brother!”

“Th–thank you, Madam Lizzie! All of you are too kind!”

Selena smiled and took the gift, blushing.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 1040

“Hah. Now I’m embarrassed for being the only one who hasn’t given something!”

The First Elder laughed and flipped his palm as well, taking out a martial arts scroll and giving it to Selena. “The techniques here are suitable for men. Give it to your brother! Just take it as a token of kindness.”

“I–I don’t know how to thank you all!”

Selena took everything and felt very embarrassed. All these gifts were true treasures. Furthermore, she and Ben could put it to good use.

“Hah. It’s easy if you truly want to thank us.”

The First Elder laughed and looked at Jack. “Miss Selena, please help us convince Jack to become the heir to the White family,” he said. “You’re always by his side. Just help us to talk some sense into him!”

Lizzie smiled and said, “That’s right. Please help us convince him. He’ll listen to you, rather than us. If he takes over the White family business and becomes the master, you’ll have all the training resources you could ever want at your disposal. You won’t have to worry about practice anymore!”

They had thought that Selena would immediately agree to this, as she had experienced a taste of their generosity.

However, she considered the proposal for a while, and she said something that no one expected. “This is not a small matter. Besides, the affairs of the White family are deeply entangled with the Lagario family. I’m in no position to interfere in this matter. Besides, as Jack’s wife, I will always support his decision!”

After they heard this, everyone nodded their heads in approval. A rational, sensible woman like her was hard to come by.

“I really do not wish to become the heir of the family. Besides, you all know that I have no deep connections with the White family!”

Jack gave a bitter smile. “I only came back because I heard that Father was gravely ill,” he said. “At first, I didn’t know that Fernando would be used to this point by the Americans. I only just found out about this.”

Here, Jack added, “Since I can tell what Father is suffering from, I roughly know how I can treat him. It’s getting serious, but I believe that he’ll make a full recovery. If that’s the case, I think that you can temporarily hold off choosing the heir of the White family anyway.”

“You–you can really help to cure your father?”

The First Elder was delighted when he heard this. “You told us it was poison, right? Do you know what herbs you need to cure it with?”

“I know how to cure him, but it’s not easy to find the herbs I need. Some are endangered species. It’ll be difficult to find them!”

Jack gave a bitter smile and said, “Don’t worry though. I still have confidence in my abilities.”

“Jack, I understand if you do not wish to take over my position. After all, the White family are practically strangers to you!”

Nash looked at Jack calmly. “But if you truly wish to save your friend, you must become the heir,” he said. “You will not have the authority to use the White family’s treasure if you’re not one of us. It’ll be difficult even for me to help you!”

The First Elder chimed in, “That’s right. You said it yourself, Jack. Your friend won’t last long. If you wish to save him, you must become the heir to the family, and you must quickly go through the initiation. Otherwise, you won’t have a chance to save him! Your father may be the master, but his body is weak now, and the White family does not rely on his decision alone. That’s why…”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1041

Jack was rendered speechless. Yet he was well aware that the Cryo Pearl was the treasure of the White family. Even if the First Elder and the others from the White family supported him in loaning the treasure, it probably would not work out in the end.

After all, he could not predict the future if too many people disagreed with his motives.

"But if he becomes the heir in such a short span of time, there may be some who will be dissatisfied!"

Titus's lips twisted into a mirthless smile when he thought about it. "Not only Lily and the others will oppose him, but even the younger generation and the elders of the White family also will not approve of him. After all, Lance had gained the support from the younger generation because of his talent and his fighting prowess!"

"Then I have no choice but to make them support me!"

Jack clenched his fists. "I'll become the heir of the White family for Fernando's sake. We'll make the announcement tomorrow, and we'll hold a fighting contest for the younger members the day after. So long as I can overpower them, no one will oppose me!"

Jack had wanted to hide his powers, but judging from the circumstances, he had no choice but to show it off.

"Are you serious, Young Master? The younger members of the White family are a stubborn sort, and their martial arts and chi manipulation skills are probably stronger than yours. That's why it might be difficult for you to beat them!"

The First Elder was startled when he heard this. “If we do have a meeting to choose the heir, your chances of actually obtaining the position are more likely, since we have more elders—and the master and I will support you. But the chances will be significantly reduced if you were to use fighting skills as a standard!”

Although the First Elder had heard that Jack had good technique and fighting skills. However, he did not think that Jack could compete with the younger members of the White family, who were practically monsters in their own right.

More importantly, he did not know where Jack had learned his techniques from. Still, he believed that it was no match for the White family’s techniques.

“That’s right, Jack. Think about it!”

Lizzie looked at Jack. “Don’t take this matter so lightly. Plenty of people want to see you downtrodden,” she said. “If you get in the ring, your opponent will hold no punches back—they won’t beat you to death, but they won’t let you off so easily!”

“But if we go by vote, I don’t think the majority would approve anyway!”

Jack gave a wan smile. “I think we should hold the competition,” he said. “No one can say a word against me once I become the heir and use the family treasure then. It’ll be a lot easier for me!”

“All right. Since you so desperately want to save your friend, we have no choice but to agree with you!”

Nash gave a bitter smile and nodded his head in agreement. He believed that Jack had a card hidden up his sleeve since he spoke with such confidence.

No matter what though, it seemed that holding the competition to nominate the heir seems like the best possible decision under these circumstances. It was the only choice that would make people unanimously support the heir!”

“Oh, right. Father, they’re not my friends actually. They’re my disciples!”

Jack thought about it for a while. “I was just afraid that Lily would find out more about my circumstances,” he said, smiling. “That’s why I said that.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1042

"Your disciples? Really?"

When Nash heard this, his eyes brightened.

If Lana and the others were truly Jack's disciples, and if they were able to kill the Ninth Patronum, who was at the beginner stages of the true god level, it would mean that Jack would at least be at the intermediate stage of the true god level. If he were that strong, his fighting talent would be monstrous.

He could be a match for the masters in the White family, at least.

"Hah. All right!"

The First Elder was extremely excited. "Since that's the case, I'll make the announcement tomorrow morning. Then we'll organize the martial arts competition for the younger generation of the White family, and anyone below the age of thirty can join! And the champion will become the White family heir!"

Nash thought about it for a while. "Why don't we add this prize? Not only does the champion become the heir, but they will also have the authority to use the Cryo Pearl however they please. How about that?"

The First Elder's eyes immediately brightened when he heard that. "All right, Master. We'll go with your plan. If we lay the conditions down like that, no one can say a word against Jack using the treasure once he becomes champion!"

“Hah. That’s right. If this condition were only mentioned after Jack becomes the champion, there may be people who will oppose the decision. If you mention this beforehand, no one can say a thing!”

Titus also laughed. Then he looked at Jack. “Young Master Jack, you were the one who suggested this competition. We have full confidence in you. Do not disappoint us!”

“Do not worry. I will do my best!”

Jack nodded his head and flipped his palm, taking out a pill. He gave it to his father. “This is a medicine I formulated myself, Father,” he said. “It is an antidote to poison. It won’t be able to completely cure you, but it will slowly alleviate your pain. And it will improve your condition for these next few months!”

Here, Jack flashed a bitter smile as he spoke, “But this is only a temporary cure. It’ll stop the spread of the poison throughout your systems!”

“All right. I never thought that I would see the day where I eat the medicine my own son made for me!”

Nash bobbed his head excitedly and swallowed the pill.

“All right. We’ll go down first. Take a good rest, Father!”

Quickly, Jack smiled and left along with Selena and Joan.

After Jack left, the First Elder smiled at Nash and spoke, “It seems like the young master is as magnanimous as you, Master. If he forgives you, it means that he’s not a petty person!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1043

Titus, on the other hand, teased, “Haha! Well. Blood is always thicker than water, after all!”

However, Titus furrowed again. “Master White, you trust Jack a little too much, don’t you? What if this medicinal pill is poisonous? How could you not check the content of it, and just swallow it!” Titus questioned with a careful tone. “Besides, Young Master Jack asked for a competition, and you agreed to it without thinking twice! What if Young Master Jack’s combative prowess is hard to make him the champion in the competition? And your position as the head of the family fall into the hands of others?” Titus continued his concerns.

Nash did not respond immediately but laughed aloud at Titus’s worries instead. “I owe Jack and his mom too much. And I trust that he won’t harm me. Even if the medicine is poisonous, I would take it anyway. He’s my son, and he made the pill for me, I’ll eat it for sure!” Tears welled up in Nash’s eyes, then he continued, “I’m very content that I’m able to see them before I die. Besides, if he didn’t come here today, not only would I not have the chance to see them, I’d not even know that someone had poisoned me!”

Nash paused for a moment and his body leaned slightly backward. “As for the competition that he has proposed, I believe that he must have a certain level of confidence as well as combat prowess. At least he has the heart to fight for the position of the family head, he shouldn’t fight at all! Moreover, this position should fall into the hands of other White’s than into the hand of Lance!”

“What? No way! Master White, didn’t you always praise Lance highly? How come you don’t want him to be the heir of White family now?”

Lizzie’s jaw dropped to the ground and she looked stunned.

Nash replied with a stern and serious tone. “You’re right. Lance has the best ability to take over the White family, I don’t deny that. And I’ve always thought highly of him. But he’s not suitable to be the heir of the head to the White family; he’s not good to be the head of White family in the future!”

“May I know why? He has the talent, and he will become stronger and stronger in the future, how is this not a good thing? How is he not suitable to be the family lead?”

Lizzie did not quite understand Nash’s words. She knew that Nash had always liked Lance. She thinks that if Lance was still here, Master White would definitely make Lance the heir of this position. However, listening to Nash’s words with a stern tone, the situation did not seem so now.

Nash plastered a gentle smile on his face and said, “First, Lance is highly likely dead by now. Second, the Lagorios, especially Lily, spoiled him too much. Everything they gave Lance was the best. This has resulted in Lance becoming an arrogant and petulant man. He can’t stand any offenses nor teases; he is bad at controlling his temper! In fact, such situations may not be good for his future growth…”

The audience nodded in agreement after hearing Nash’s words. Indeed, Lance was born in the lap of luxury; he was spoiled and pampered by everyone, even up until now. This made him an arrogant and peevish man. He always wanted to be more superior wherever he went.

Nash then continued, “On the other hand, Jack is mature and composed. Whenever he does things, he is calm and balmy. All his disciples are so strong and powerful. And before that, he used to tell others that his disciples are his friends just to stay low profile and not create problems. Such a temperament is suitable to be the head of White family!”

“Master White, you’re really wise!”

The First Elder bobbed his head. He thought that what Master White said was right. “I really hope that Young Master Jack can get first place in this competition. In that case, the heir can be determined and Jack could also use the treasure to preserve the life of his disciple!”

“Yup. Although it’s wrong to think this way but we have to thank his disciple this time, otherwise, Jack would not agree to participate in the competition to be the head of the White family, let alone come meet me!”

Nash nodded and spoke with great satisfaction. “Jack was able to agree to this without hesitation for the sake of Fernando Campbell, which also shows that he is a person who values love and righteousness!”

“Dad, I find that you’re too partial toward Brother Jack. You keep complimenting him!”

Yule White, who was standing beside, whined bitterly with a pouty mouth.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1044

“Alright, alright! Stop whining. I’m biased toward you too!”

Nash could not hold back his laughter as he looked at his lovely daughter in front of him. “My dear Yule, you’re becoming more and more charming and beautiful! By the way, you’re considered as the young generation of the White family, so you can register for the competition too!”

“Hmph! That’s for sure! My strength and fighting prowess are not weak at all! You can’t blame me when I defeat Brother Jack in the competition!”

Yule pouted and huffed angrily.

“Yule, whatever you’ve heard just now, don’t tell anyone else. Do you understand?”

Lizzie reminded Yule after thinking about the seriousness of the matter. “After all, if the incident of your father being poisoned is true, it means that the one who poisoned your father is someone really close to him! It’s horrible!”

“Yes, Mom! I understand. I won’t go around and spread it. I won’t talk about it at all!”

Yule bobbed obediently, and then she said, “I’ll wait until Brother Jack is free, then I’ll have a good chat with him. I really want to know what the outside world looks like! How does it feel like growing up in a secular world? For a person to grow up in a secular world and dare to participate in the competition of the heir of the White family, he must be really brave and confident. I truly want to know the level of his combat prowess!”

Titus spoke to Nash after a moment of silence, "Master White, did you really exclude Mrs. White from the list of suspects who poisoned you? There are not many people who are close to you and are able to poison you without you noticing. Jack suspected Mrs. White with good reason after all, and I do feel that Jack's right. Mrs. White is the most suspicious!"

The First Elder had a gloomy look on his face. "He's right. This poison is so strong that even we—excellent martial artists—could not detect it. Moreover, Master White, your prowess is way stronger than us, but you still got poisoned. For us, ordinary poisons are useless and can't do us any harm. So, we must get rid of the person who poisoned you! Such a person is a scourge!

Nash understood the severity of this matter as well. If Jack did not arrive in time, Nash would never have known in his life that he was poisoned; he might wonder if he had gotten any strange disease.

Nonetheless, Nash and Lily were married for years and they cared for each other dearly. Hence, Nash could not bring himself to believe the possible truth. He shook his head and blurted, "We don't have any proof in this matter, so let's not accuse somebody of something that is not proven. After all, the White family was a rather small family back then, and Lily was the one who lifted the family up. She chose to marry me even when the Lagorio family was opposing. The pressure that she bore was tremendous. And after that, together with Lily, we make the White family stronger and stronger!"

Nash suddenly paused and popped a question to the crowd, "Do you really think that such a person would poison me? Would she be so ruthless?"

"Master White, people do change over time!"

After a moment of silence, Titus decided to break the silence and reminded, "In the past, Mrs. White merely wanted to stop you from seeing Joan and Jack. But what about now? She sent people to assassinate them! Do you still think that she is the same old Lily Lagorio?"

The First Elder breathed out a huge sigh. "Titus is right. The matter between you and Joan has long passed, but Mrs. White is still holding a grudge against Joan. Besides, it has been two or three months and there is

no trace of Young Master Lance at all. He's most probably dead by now. But, Mrs. White cannot accept this fact and keeps sending men to search for Lance!"

Titus echoed, "He's right. We've sent too many people out there, it's not a good thing. If suddenly there's any prominent family or strong authority coming to us, we'll be in big trouble! Fortunately, we have not been offending any other powerful families; we always ask our men to be calm and tolerant even when our men are bullied. Sigh..."

"Alright! I get it. I'll keep this in mind and be careful toward her!"

In fact, Nash was reluctant to face this truth. He could not help but concurred with the others that Lily and the Third Elder were the most suspicious people.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1045

Nevertheless, the Third Elder had less chance to get close to Nash to poison him, hence highly likely the person who poisoned him was Lily Lagorio.

"Master White, please rest early. Tomorrow I'll make an announcement to the entire White family about the competition!"

Master Nash and the others soon left.

At this time, inside the abode where Lily stayed, she was so furious that she could feel anger thrumming through her veins! Her face was ugly.

"Ugh! I'm so pissed off! Our men were ambushing Jack and the others for so many days, just when we gave up on waiting and requested them to return from mission, Jack and the others came! Wasting my time! What an irony!"

Anger welled up in her chest like a tide that she breathed heavily to attempt to calm herself down.

"Man proposes, God disposes! It's fate!"

The Third Elder had a gloomy look on his face. He then lamented, "The most devastating thing is that when they came back, they killed our right-hand man, Brenton White! Brenton was a fine fighter of a demi-god level! Although he was only at the early stage of the demi-god level, for another person to kill him, the person has to be at least at the intermediate phase of the demi-god level!"

“That’s right!”

Lily concurred in a confused tone. “It looks like our men were all killed, and I guess the killer is Jack’s friend. It really surprises me that Jack actually knows such an elite fighter! If it weren’t for his friend, that punk would have died by now!”

The Third Elder—Wade White—took a seat next to the table. He remained silent while stroking his beard. “Jack has returned to the White family. It would be harder now to strike at him. And I heard that Butler Titus has arranged a place for them to settle down, not far from the abode of the First and Second elders. His motive is apparent, which is to protect them!”

“Hmph! Unless he stays within the White family residence all the time and does not go out at all, otherwise, kill him as soon as he steps out of the White family residence!”

Lily snorted frostily with her fists clenched and her eyes filled with malice.

“Heh! What if he stays in there forever? That’s even more troublesome!”

The Third Elder cried and laughed at the same time, “I guess Nash White can’t wait to make his son the heir of the White family! Jack has good talent. If the White family gives him full training, Jack will hellishly improve! By that time, I’m afraid that the position to the heir will fall into his hands! Now there are still noises opposing Jack from being the heir because, in everyone’s opinion, Jack’s combat prowess is not that high!”

“Then…then what should we do? We can’t just sit around and hope for the position to fall into our hands, right?”

Worries twisted in Lily’s gut; she looked at Wade with a desperate gaze, hoping that Wade could come up with a solution.

“I think…I think maybe this brat doesn’t truly want to be the heir of this family. He came back here this time most likely for that treasure—Cyro Pearl, so that he could save his friend’s life. That’s why he came back!”

Wade pondered for a little while before saying, “That friend of his is not doing well, isn’t he? Since Jack desires that treasure so much, let’s not let him get it! We must oppose it firmly!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1046

After hearing Wade's words, Lily, who was unsure of what to do previously, had her eyes lit up.

She smiled sinisterly, "What you said was absolutely right! The more he wants to get something, the more I want to stop him from getting it! Hmph! He wants the Cryo Pearls to heal his friend? Dream on! Not will I be the only one opposing that idea, the other White will certainly not agree to that! For a beggar who just came back from the secular world, what right does he have to obtain the treasure of the White family?"

"Right! Jack is an adopted son-in-law of the Taylor family. If the news of a White being the adopted son-in-law gets out, it would shame the White family and ruin our reputation!"

Wade quickly thought of something and sneered sarcastically, "Actually, this news could be our weapon in the future. Perhaps we could do something with this piece of information so that everyone knows that this brat is a disgrace to the White family!"

However, Lily's forehead puckered again. "The possibility of Jack getting this treasure is rather small. No one will be willing to hand over such a treasure to an outsider. Moreover, based on his combat level, it'd be impossible for him to improve tremendously in such a short time. Hmph! Wait until Nash is dead, the White family will be in chaos!"

"Sigh! The problem is that the White family is stronger than the Lagorio family right now. Furthermore, the elders from the Lagorio family—who serve in the White family—obey the First Elder and only listen to his words. Therefore, as long as the First Elder and the others step up to defend Jack, it'd be cumbersome for us to kill him!"

Wade breathed out a huge sigh of defeat. He then added, "I think it'd be better for me to improve my strength and fighting ability, try to surpass the First Elder so that I can seize the opportunity to assassinate

him! If he is dead, I'll be the head of the family, by then nobody dares to disobey me! Whoever disobeys, they'll be killed!"

Lily nodded and uttered her concerns, "But don't forget about our agreement! When my son returns, you'll have to pass the position of the family to him, got it?"

"Don't be preoccupied! I'll never break the promise!"

Wade's mouth was full of promises, but in his head, he was sneering frostily. When he has managed to be the head of the family, how could he just give up the power and position just like that? Was he dumb or something? Not to mention that Lance was very likely dead, even if he was alive and found by his men, he would not let him return alive!

"Sigh! Jack's return has completely disrupted our initial plan! Dang it!"

Lily sighed aloud; she was weighed down by irritation.

"Stop worrying. At least Nash won't live long, and once he dies, the White family will be in chaos. Some of them are probably after that position too. Then once the First Elder dies, I'll be the strongest elder. Then naturally I'll become the head of this family."

Wade chortled bemusedly. Everything was still within his plan.

Nevertheless, what he least expected was the announcement the next morning. A notice about the competition had been posted at the plaza of the White family residence.

When the notice was up, complete pandemonium thrummed through the entire White's residential area.

“What the f*ck is going on? There’ll be a competition for the young generation of the White family tomorrow? And whoever wins the first place will be the heir of the family?”

A young man from the crowd was taken aback at the shocking news. His eyes went wide, and his mouth formed an ‘O’ shape.

Another man, on the other hand, laughed at the young man’s response. He then expressed, “This is amazing! Whoever is capable will be the heir. It’s fair! It shows that Master White is not biased toward his son, Jack. As long as the decision regarding the heir position is not made internally, and everyone has a fair chance, then whoever won the competition naturally gets my respect!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1047

Another tall and bulky guy guffawed out loud, “Haha! That’s great! I’m twenty-nine years old this year, not yet thirty, so I can participate in this competition too! It’s great that they organize such a competition to pick the next family head, at least I still have a chance at it. Hmmm. What if I really get first place? Then I’ll be the heir to the family head, right? And perhaps in a few months, Master White will be…Mwahahaha! Then I’ll be the head for sure!”

“Not limited to gender. So, as long as you’re one of the Whites, you’re eligible to sign up?”

A woman in white beamed delightfully at the notice. Her eyes were full of joy! “That’s great! I truly did not expect that girls would have a fair chance to participate and compete for the heir position! Master White is indeed an open-minded and upright person! In such a way, whoever with a stronger ability gets the throne and the heir is guaranteed to be capable and strong!”

“Heh! Bunch of idiots! If Lance was here, do you think you would stand a chance in the competition? When the cat’s away, the mice will play, huh?”

Another young man, who was close to Lance, clasped his hands in front of his chest and snorted sarcastically from the side.

“He’s right. No words can be used to describe Lance’s fighting prowess and capability. If he was here, he would definitely be in first place!”

The tall and bulky guy lamented emotionally. “However, he’s gone for almost three months now. Not a single f*cking news about him, apparently he’s dead. Sigh! I shall do my best and be the heir for his sake!”

The corners of Hudson White's mouth twitched involuntarily at the tall guy's words. He felt a flicker of irritation toward the man before him, he then censured, "You're a reckless and dull-headed dude, do you think you're worthy of being the heir to the family head? Among all of us, I have the most right to be the heir!"

"Oh? Hudson, the notice doesn't say that a reckless and dull-headed man can't be the heir. As long as the person gets first place, then he'll be the heir! Hmph! If you want to grab the position from me, it's easy to settle! Let's meet in the competition tomorrow!"

The tall and bulky man was called Martin White. He was chubby. He seethed coldly to Hudson, "I'll not hold back on tomorrow's competition, and try not to kneel down and beg for mercy then!"

"Haha, you're a big talker, aren't you? Martin White, I'll be waiting for you at the final. Please don't get yourself eliminated in the early stage!"

Hudson hissed icily with a wicked smirk.

"Guys, don't you see a problem here? The competition is too soon, right? The notice came out today, the deadline for registration is today and then tomorrow will be the competition. Any White with fighting prowess of grandmaster level and above is eligible for the competition. People who are in the top fifty of the competition will be awarded, and the rewards are not too bad at all! But...but, why are they rushing the competition? We don't even have time to prepare!"

The woman in white—Liah White—had her brows snapped together.

"Heh? Are you dumb or something? Look at the bottom of the notice, what does it say? The person who gets the first place in this competition will be the heir of the family head, not only that, but the person will also get the treasure—Cryo Pearl—as well! What does this mean? It means that Master White wants his son—Jack White—to win this competition!"

Hudson scoffed sassily. “That brat doesn’t seem like he’s interested in the position of the heir to the family head. But because his friend is dying, he definitely wants to use the Cyro Pearl to preserve his friend’s pathetic life temporarily! Then he’ll find a way to save him later on. And Master White saw through this, hence such a competition is being held. So, I’m sure that that brat will sign up for this competition!”

“Well. Signing up is easy-peasy. But to get first place? Heh, hellish hard!”

The tall and bulky Martin mocked with a giggly tone.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1048

"As the saying goes, one who knows his own strength and that of the enemy is invincible in battle! Jack only came here yesterday. We don't know anything about him, how his fighting prowess is, what is his signature combat move, does he have the strength to challenge beyond his level as such. We don't even know the basics of him!"

Liah was more cautious compared to the other two White. After a moment of silence, she blurted, "Master White dares to organize an immediate competition, not even giving Jack the time to practice or prepare himself. Could it be that Master White has faith in him?"

"Heh? Faith in him?"

Hudson sneered. "That beggar is from the outer world. Who the hell knows where he lives and from whom he learned his martial arts? Even though he has raw talent, what could he really achieve from the secular world? What strength and power does he have to compare with us?"

Hudson halted to ponder for a moment, then he continued, "I'm certain that even if our combat prowess and his is on the same level, we can defeat him easily. Any of us can defeat ten of him easily. Because his fighting technique and control of Chi won't be as good as ours! So, naturally, he can't win against us."

Martin concurred with Hudson and said, "I agreed with what Hudson said. It's already a miracle for that beggar to have the fighting prowess of a grandmaster level. Besides, if he's not at the grandmaster level, then he's at most a senior fighter! Definitely not at the demi-god level!"

"You're too sure of that, aren't you?"

Hudson sneered at Martin's childish claim.

"Hmph!"

Martin snorted coldly. "I went to ask the bodyguards at the gate about Jack yesterday. They said that the beggar didn't even make a move yesterday when Ninth Patronum was attacking him. He hid behind his friends! So, I think since he's hiding behind his friends, his fighting prowess is definitely not strong. His friends are afraid that he'll be killed! And that's why they fought for him!"

"If this is the case, isn't this beggar wasting his time participating in the competition tomorrow? If what you said is true, it also means that the chances of him winning the position of the heir of the family and getting the Cryo Pearl are close to none. Haha! He wouldn't be able to get the Cryo Pearl!"

A few lines appeared between Hudson's brows; he was deep in thought. "Hmmm…If it's so, why would Nash do this? The opportunity to make his son the heir of the family head is non-existent, isn't it? Once the heir of the family head is elected, the heir wouldn't be replaced in the next ten to twenty years. Unless this heir becomes the family head and dies at an early age!"

"Perhaps, Master White is giving his son a chance. After all, he knows that Jack needs the Cyro Pearl to save his friend. If he just hands the pearl to Jack, nobody in the White family will agree to that. Sigh! Now isn't the time to overthink. We'll know what the real situation is tomorrow!"

Martin waved his hand and shook his head. He was too tired to use every single brain cell of his.

The news about the competition soon spread out. When the news entered the ears of the Third Elder and Lily, their faces went white and unsightly at the same time.

"What the heck is happening? The idiot Nash, what the hell is he thinking? Why the sudden competition?"

Wade was completely dumbfounded. He initially thought that Nash would hold a meeting and try to persuade them into giving the Cyro Pearl to Jack.

He had an in-depth discussion with Lily about how to handle this situation—to firmly oppose the idea of giving Cyro Pearl to Jack. Wade had even planned to meet some other elders and convinced them to take their side!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1049

He had never expected that such a notice was issued the next day. The notice of competing for the position of the heir to the family head. This had completely ruined their plans.

"Why in such a hurry to hold a martial art competition?"

Lily was rendered speechless. The more she thought about the matter, the stronger the anger that pulsed through her veins. "I'm not letting that happen! My son has not returned! What bullsh*t competition is this? I must go talk to them; I must go now! The position of the heir to the family head belongs to my son. This trashy competition has ruined it all! My son doesn't even have the chance to sign up for this competition, this is too ridiculous!"

Nonetheless, just when Lily extended her legs, preparing to storm out the room, she was pulled back by Wade. "Stop being stupid! Don't stir things up! If you go and make a fuss, it won't do you any good at all. The notice is already posted up there, there's no way for us to change it!"

"Why can't it be changed? Nash White, that old sc*mbag! He didn't even inquire about my opinion about this competition, and went ahead to announce it! What does he mean by that? I am his f*cking wife! Isn't he being too disrespectful toward me?"

Anger rose in Lily like an endless tide. She was so upset that she did not know what to curse anymore.

"Lily, ever since he was poisoned and his health declined, you rarely go over to visit him, will he be happy about this? Moreover, you were always cold and had a b*tch face in front of him all the time! He's not dead yet; he's still your husband! Even if it's an act, could you at least act like a good wife in these last two months?"

Wade let out a bitter smile. “There’s nothing you can do even if you go to them right now. Because this announcement is what everyone wants, it’s aligned with everybody’s desires! Only in the case of holding a fair competition, then the young generation and other elders will be convinced truthfully. Because in such a way, they have a fair chance for the position of the heir too; it’s ten times better than an internal decision on who the heir will be!”

Wade stopped the train of thoughts and paused for a moment. He then continued, “Therefore, under this circumstance where nobody supports your argument, going over there to talk to them will be a waste of time, not to mention that this might worsen your relationship with Nash. If you go over to him and cause more trouble, the loss is yours!”

“But—but, if I didn’t fight for it, my son wouldn’t have the chance to be the heir! If we let the competition happen, no matter who’s the heir of the family head, when Nash dies, that person will replace Nash’s position! Lance couldn’t be the head neither could you!”

Lily was burning with anger that her eyes were glossy. If Wade became the head of the family, he could still pass the position to Lance in the future. After all, she was in cahoots with Wade and had been having a romantic affair with Wade all this while!

Hence, if the position of the family head were to fall into the hands of others, even if the hands were not of Jack, but some other talented fighters, it would be impossible to pass this position to Lance anymore!

A gloomy look plastered on Wade’s face. “That old sc*mbag, he really caught people off guard, didn’t he? The appearance of Jack as well as this sudden competition for the position of the heir… Heh! Nash had utterly ruined my plans! But, we can’t do anything now; we’ve always been on the passive side. As long as Nash and the First Elder are still alive, I won’t even have the chance to rebel!”

“Oh, by the way, although the rules of this competition say that you can’t murder your opponent, we would never know what might happen in a fight, right? If that beggar, Jack White, is accidentally killed in the competition, Nash can’t do much, right?”

Lily’s eyes lit up like a bulb when a seemingly marvelous idea came into her mind.

“You’re so smart! Why didn’t I think of this before? That brat’s fighting prowess is not that strong. Hmmm…Why don’t we talk to two young Whites, order them not to hold back when facing Jack in the competition, and kill him ‘accidentally’? And that time, we could argue that it was merely an accident, a mistake, that they didn’t control their strength well. It will work, right?”

Wade’s eyes lit up as well as though he had finally seen the light at the end of the tunnel. “Hahaha! Brilliant idea! I can’t wait to see Nash’s face when Jack dies in front of him! This will definitely piss him off!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1050

“We can trust those close to Lance, like Hudson and Tyler. I’ll go call them over in a minute. We’ll have more assurance that way!”

Wade quickly searched for the two of them after he thought about it.

…

“The competition is tomorrow, dear. Are you confident?”

At that moment, Jack had already finished registering for the competition. He, Selena, Ben, Elaine, and the others were taking a stroll along a pathway on a mountain.

“Don’t worry. I’ll be the champion no matter what. After all, I must take the Cryo Pearl. If I don’t get it by tomorrow, Fernando won’t stand a chance of living any longer!”

Jack clenched his fists. “I’ll help you brew the herbal pills after this competition is over,” he told Selena. “You should prepare yourself. Then you can become a true warrior when the time comes!”

Selena nodded her head after she heard that.

“Oh dear, Young Master White, we heard that you’re a live-in son-in-law? Tsk tsk. I never thought that a young master from the White family would fall this far. You’ve truly shamed our family!”

At this moment, Hudson had just returned from Lily's residence and was walking over with a condescending expression on his face. He spoke in a sardonic voice.

"Fall?"

When Jack heard that, he spoke with a cold smile, "I don't think that it's shameful to be a live-in son-in-law. Only those who despise themselves are shameful! Besides, I am capable enough, and I never thought about having my wife take care of me. I don't eat my meals for free. Is that shameful?"

"Tsk tsk. Trying to convert your shame into glory, eh? Should I give you a prize for that? Live-in Son-in-Law of the Year. How does that sound?"

Hudson maintained the frosty smile on his face. "You want the Cryo Pearl, don't you? I'm sorry to tell you this, but you don't stand a chance to get it," he said. "You probably don't know how strong us masters from shadow families are. Our fighting prowess is far beyond the likes of those from the mortal realm, like you!"

"We'll know the results tomorrow!"

Jack gave a wan smile. He could not be bothered by Hudson's provoking. He took Selena's hand and walked forward. "Don't think that you're a master simply because you've been training with the White family since a young age. True masters are born in constant battles. I've killed more men than you ever have!"

"You little punk. You'd better pray that you don't run into me tomorrow. I'll make you eat your words then!"

Hudson yelled after Jack and the others as their silhouettes became smaller.

Time passed by quickly. Plenty of people registered for the competition, since the top 50 contenders had prizes anyway.

Some did not hope to win the first place, but they still wanted to try their luck. After all, the chi congregation pills awarded to the top 50 contenders were enough to last for two months. It was worth a shot for them.

However, nobody thought of anything of Jack. They did not believe that he would be able to become the champion.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1051

The next morning, a lot of people were gathered on the rooftop of a huge plaza located on the peak of a hill. Aside from the main family within the White family, a few other branches of the White family as well as some families attached to them had all come.

All of them never expected that Master White would hold this event to choose his successor, right after his only son had returned to the family.

"You're becoming more and more daring now, Nash. You didn't even bother to discuss such a big matter with me, and you went ahead and made the decision yourself. Do you hold no respect for me?"

On a gallery high above the square, Lily, who was seated next to Nash, rolled her eyes at her husband, huffing angrily.

"Heh. This was a last-minute decision. But as the head of the White family, I think I have some authority in this matter, especially since I've discussed it with plenty of elders already."

Nash chuckled, speaking as though he was not the least bit angry.

"Hmph. I think you just don't want Lance to become the successor. And you've been brainwashed by that vixen from the earthly realm. Are you thinking of surrendering the entire White family to the son you had with her?"

Lily harrumphed coldly and shot Nash a glare.

"Why are you still hung up over something that happened ages ago, Lily? Besides, I didn't do anything that grieved you, right, besides that one thing? If you can accept Lizzie, why can't you accept Joan and Jack? Can't we just live together happily as one family?"

Nash frowned and stared at the woman before him. He realized that Lily had changed so much—she was not the woman he used to know. Back then, she was outspoken and abrasive and prevented Joan from marrying into the White family, but she would never hire hitmen to kill Jack and the others.

"Heh. Joan is a woman from the mortal realm. She's not even a Chi practitioner-in-training. How can you tell me to accept her? Anyone who doesn't know how to manipulate Chi is beneath us. I don't want people talking behind your back, badmouthing you because you married a woman like that!

"Let's say you married her and she gave you a son—would he have innate talent? Will he be as pure bred and as esteemed as us?"

Since Nash refused to spare her reputation, Lily did not hold back in demolishing him either. She stood up and spoke loudly.

"Hmph. Jack can give us a run for our money if I say so!"

Nash harrumphed coldly. He coughed after he said this. It was evident that his body was still weak.

"Him? Give us a run for our money? That brat is definitely a lot worse than my son. You'll find out for yourself in a while!"

Lily sat down and spoke flippantly, "I'm telling you, Nash White, that Lance isn't dead. He's still alive. It doesn't matter if you choose to hold this competition or whatnot, I'll never acknowledge the winner of this heir selection. My son is the true successor, and he's the one most suited for the role!"

"Whatever you say!"

Lily was refusing to budge, and Joan remained silent at the side. Nash unleashed his temper and said in a cold tone, "It doesn't matter if you acknowledge this competition or not. All the members of the White family recognize it for what it is, and the elders all think that this is the fairest way to move forward. That itself is enough for me!"

After he said that, he cast his attention to a middle-aged woman who was garbed in a red dress. He nodded his head. “Let us begin!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1052

The Fourth Elder, clad in a red dress, was a beautiful woman of around forty years old. Despite being forty, her skin was still smooth and radiant, and she was extremely beautiful!

Chi practitioners had their bodies maintained by chi, and the aura surrounding them was out of the ordinary. Furthermore, they age slower than regular people. That was why a woman like that would immediately enamor plenty of men from the mortal realm if they saw her.

She leaped and drifted toward the fighting stage in the middle. “I am the Fourth Elder, Wendy,” she announced to everyone. “I was fairly late in joining the White family, and I am neither a member of the White nor Lagorio family. That’s why I think it’s only appropriate that I host this competition!”

Many of the elders could not help but smile when they heard this. It was true that if anyone else were chosen as the host, it was likely that they would be beating around the bush all day.

Although Wendy was an elder of the White family, she was not born into the family nor the Lagorio family. Nobody could speak against her if that was the case.

“As you can see, there are ten fighting stages set up here. The one on my far left is the first stage, counting all the way up to the tenth to my far right!”

Wendy gave a small smile and introduced everything, “There are a total of 230 people participating in this competition. And they’re all the younger members of the White family…”

“So many people!”

After he heard that, Jack could not help but be astonished. The younger generation had plenty of guts to come forth and participate in this competition. It was evident that they were grandmasters, at the very least. He still never expected there to be so many people.

Furthermore, all these people definitely descended from the main family, and this number did not include people from the White family's branches as well as other families who answered to the White family.

The White family was truly an illustrious family that deserved its position as one of the Eight Shadow Families!

"The first competition is easy enough. We want to elect the top hundred candidates from it!"

Master Wendy smiled. "The rules are simple. If you're pushed off the fighting stage, you're out. We'll do this melee until only a hundred people are left on the stage, and these hundred will move on to the next round!"

"What! It's a melee!"

Some people were surprised when they heard this.

"Heh. There's some element of luck to this round. Even if an individual is not very strong, they'll still advance to the next round with a bit of luck and some determination!"

An old man could not help but smile.

"That's right. There's also the possibility of joining forces to kick someone stronger out, no?"

Another middle-aged man smiled as he spoke.

"Hah. This should be interesting. Luck is also a type of strength. It'll be fun to see how this plays out!"

Someone's lips curved into an amused smile.

"You're still smiling? Your son may be at the beginning stage of the true god status. He is pretty strong, and he could have easily entered the top hundred, but what if his luck is so bad that he runs into someone else of his status or an advanced practitioner of the true god status? Heh. Then your son would be eliminated first. Wouldn't that be too bad for him?"

The old man beside him could not help but say.

"No worries about that. The fun side of this competition is the participation! It doesn't matter even if my son doesn't emerge as the champion and clinch the title of the heir!"

The man from earlier smiled.

On the stage, Wendy was waiting for everyone to quiet down before speaking. "All right, all participants, please come to Stage Number One!"

In a flash, plenty of people leaped onto fighting stage number one.

Everyone exchanged looks between each other, every single one of them ready to wage war.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1053

Some people who knew each other quite well clustered together, preparing to watch each other's backs.

"This is a good chance. Let's get that adopted son-in-law first. Hah. He'll know the cruelty of the world once he's eliminated in the first round!"

One of the participants from the White family looked at Jack from a distance, a hint of a smile on his lips.

He was a ninth-grade grandmaster. He was one of the top fighters among the younger generation of the White family.

After all, he would be considered as an eight or nine-star King of War outside, with his fighting prowess.

As he spoke, he set foot to go over to Jack's side.

However, he only closed half of the distance when he stopped, shock painted all over his expression.

The two beauties of the White family, Beth, and Yule, were actually walking over to Jack.

"No way. Those two masters are going to help get rid of Jack? Seems like plenty of people are targeting him already. Heh! He sure has a big fat target on his back. Everybody wants to get rid of him first!"

The man flashed a bitter smile. it seemed that there were plenty of people who were thinking along his lines. He did not have to go over then. If he did, he might be eliminated by the two beautiful masters instead.

“Hah. Seems that Jack is in bad luck today. I wanted to go over and eliminate him first—tell him that he’s not good enough to become the heir to the White family. Never thought that someone would beat me to it!”

Martin burst out in laughter as he watched this from a distance.

“Heh. It’s obvious that he’s going to be eliminated soon. He’ll be the laughing stock of the century. Hah!”

Plenty of participants from the White family also stared at Jack, cold smiles on their lips.

“All right, since everyone is here, let the first round officially commence!”

The Fourth Elder smiled and flagged off the start of the competition.

“Hah. Get your a** off here!”

Some people had already set their eyes on their opponents. They all rushed toward various people once Wendy’s voice rang out.

The cacophony of various brawls immediately exploded at stage one. The fighting grew fiercer with every passing second.

A second-grade grandmaster was punched off the stage by a fifth-grade grandmaster.

“Ah. I’m no good. I can’t even get into the top hundred!”

The second-grade grandmaster immediately heaved a sigh and shook his head forlornly.

“Who are the two of you?”

Jack's lips twisted into a bitter smile as he saw the two beauties before him. He did not know why they came to him.

"I'm here to protect you. But I've no idea why Yule is here!"

Beth said with a smile.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1054

Beth folded her arms after she finished speaking, glancing toward Yule with a slight smile on her face.

Yule did not know whether to laugh or cry. She shrugged her shoulders. “I never thought that you would think the same as I did, Beth,” she said.

She paused here and looked at Jack before continuing, “I had no choice. This punk is my older brother, unfortunately. It’ll be embarrassing if he were to lose terribly and become the butt of everyone’s joke. Besides, my mother told me to take care of him. I have to think of some ways to prevent him from losing the first round. We’d never live it down otherwise!”

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry when he heard the conversation between them. Still, warmth tinged his insides; these two young ladies were trying to look out for him.

In a split second, over 30 people had been shoved off the stage.

“Strange. Why aren’t those two liftings a finger?”

Someone realized that something was off. He could not help but mutter after he managed to get rid of an opponent.

“Nash White!”

In the viewing gallery, Lily’s expression had darkened. “You actually told those two to protect Jack? Heh. I never thought that you would resort to such dirty tactics for the sake of your son.”

Nash had been watching everything unfold on the fighting stage as well. “Heh. I didn’t arrange for this. I never thought that they would help Jack either,” he said, a bitter smile on his face. “Or perhaps they wanted to help him because they thought that he was a pretty good man!”

The corners of the Third Elder’s lips twitched when he heard that. “Heh. Shouldn’t you have thought of a better excuse, Master?” he said, expression stony. “Beth and Yule have only known Jack for a short time. How could they help him on their own accord? But it doesn’t matter, since he’ll be eliminated in the second round. He’ll just lose less shamefully!”

“How interesting, Beth, Yule. You’re…actually helping the live-in son-in-law?”

At this moment, a man could not stand the sight any longer. He threw an opponent off the stage and stomped his foot, streaking straight before the trio. He spoke with a cold smile.

“Heh. We’re not going against the rules, Lionel, are we? You can fight us if you’re not pleased with anything!”

Beth folded her arms before her chest. “You, an eighth-grade grandmaster, are thinking of eliminating the two of us?” she said haughtily.

A muscle worked in his jaw. A cloud suddenly fell over his face.

However, he quickly reined in his anger. “Are you a true man, you punk? Hiding behind these two women’s backs. Some hero you are,” he said, looking at Jack. “Fight me if you have the guts. Stop hiding behind other people like some ostrich!”

“Heh, Jack won’t fall for your trap. He’s not an idiot. He’ll never be roused by your provocation.”

Yule folded her arms across her chest and spoke without hesitation, lips curved into a frosty smile.

That smile instantly disappeared after she said that—because Jack was actually slowly walking forward until he became before her and Beth.

“Heh. You do have a point. As a man, I shouldn’t hide behind others.”

Jack came before the man and stared at him, smirking.

“He’s provoking you, Jack. Can’t you tell? He can’t beat us, so he wants to lure you out to eliminate you!”

Yule began to panic. “You are the Master’s son,” she whispered to Jack. “Plenty of people will take you for a joke if you’re eliminated during the first round!”

“That’s right, Jack. Listen to your little sister. I think she’s right too. I want to help you because of this!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior –

Chapter 1055

Beth also tried to convince Jack.

The two of them were fighters who had attained the true god status. Regular participants did not dare to seek trouble with either one of them.

After all, there were not many fighters like them among the younger generation.

“Hah. You’ve got guts!”

Lionel also never expected Jack to fall for it. He flashed a thumbs up. “Don’t worry, you’ll be respected even if you lose to me. At least you’re not a wimp who hides behind women’s backs!”

“Heh. I don’t have the right to even touch the Cryo Pearl if I can’t beat you.”

No one expected Jack to speak with such a grudging tone, a wan smile on his face.

“Oh my. You’re aiming for the treasure? So you want to be the champion!”

Lionel smiled; his gaze hardened. “You’re all bark and no bite!”

“Cut the crap. There’ll only be a hundred people left on this stage very soon if I don’t throw you out!”

Jack took a step forward and curled his fingers mockingly.

Lionel stomped his foot and came before Jack, directing a punch at the latter.

He was fast, and his attack was ferocious. It was evident that he was not holding back.

“Heh. Seems like your son isn’t listening to your orders, Nash. I think Lionel will be the one to eliminate him!”

Lily smirked as she observed what was happening on the fighting stage. She knew that Jack had been provoked by Lionel’s words to come forward and fight.

Yet the very next second, Lily’s expression crumpled.

Jack did not dodge Lionel’s blow at all, raising his fist instead to meet his opponent’s.

Lionel, the eighth-grade grandmaster, was actually flung backward from the impact, landing heavily below the stage. He spat a mouthful of blood, and his cheeks were leached out of color.

“What! That punk…is of a true god status?”

Lionel was shocked that he had been eliminated. Disbelief filled his eyes. He never thought that a brat from the mortal realm would actually be so frighteningly strong. The force behind Jack’s punch made him feel like there would have been no way to counter it.

“Heh. My apologies, dear, but Jack is not as weak as you think he is!”

Nash nodded his head in approval, speaking to Lily.

The corners of Lily’s lips twitched. “He’s not bad, but he’s far below the likes of my son,” she said. “My son isn’t here today, but if he were, he would be crowned champion!”

"Heh. My apologies, dear, but Jack is not as weak as you think he is!"

Nash nodded his head in approval, speaking to Lily.

The corners of Lily's lips twitched. “He's not bad, but he's far below the likes of my son," she said. "My son isn't here today, but if he were, he would be crowned champion!"

Lionel was shocked that he had been eliminated. Disbelief filled his eyes. He never thought that a brat from the mortal realm would actually be so frighteningly strong. The force behind Jack's punch made him feel like there would have been no way to counter it.NSW Chapter 1056-1060

Chapter 1056

"No way. Lionel actually got thrown back by that punk with just a single punch, and he's an eighth-grade grandmaster. This means that the punk is at least a ninth-grade grandmaster!"

Plenty of contestants had been observing this as well. All of them were stunned when they saw the scene unfolding. They never imagined for that easy target to actually be that strong.

"He's not as weak as we think he is!"

Hudson also saw this, and he looked slightly ill.

He clenched his fists and stalked toward Jack. "Looks like I'll have to deal with you myself!"

Hudson's veins flooded with evil intent. He had not meant to eliminate Jack, but instead kill him right off. Lily had told him about this privately. He was to say that he had accidentally killed Jack, and Lily would do everything in her power to protect him.

Besides, he would be granted plenty of rewards after.

"Really? Let's see if you've got the skills to back those words!"

Jack was stunned. He looked at Hudson, grinning, as though he was not worried at all.

"Jack, Hudson is at the advanced stage of the true god status. Even I may not be a match for him! He has a chance to become the champion!"

Beth frowned and walked over, stepping before Jack.

"And so ends the first round!"

Yet no one expected Wendy's voice to ring out at this moment.

"It's over?"

Yule was stunned for a second, then she smiled. "That's great. Now there are only a hundred people left on this fighting stage, Hudson. You can't lift a finger now that the first round is over!"

The corners of Hudson's mouth twitched violently. He scanned the people on the stage; including the four of them, there were indeed a hundred people left.

He clenched his fists and glared at Jack. "You were lucky today, punk. I never thought that so many people would be eliminated so fast. Heh. You would have been thrown out otherwise!"

"I think you're the lucky one. Otherwise, a genius at the advanced stage of a true god status eliminated in the first round? How embarrassing would that be for you!"

Jack shrugged his shoulders and spoke in a nonchalant tone.

"Hah. You're pretty good at boasting, punk. Just pray that you don't meet me the next round. Otherwise, I'll teach you a good lesson on what it means to be weak!"

Hudson said, laughing.

"All right. The first round is over. To all who have advanced to the next round, please exit the stage!"

The Fourth Elder spoke at this moment.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

The victorious candidates all leaped down and stood to the side.

"We will now commence with the second round. It will not be a melee competition, but a one-onone battle!"

Wendy announced in a clear voice as she stood on the fighting stage, "The matches will be drawn via lottery. We have a hundred cards, with numbers from one to fifty written on them. For every number, there will be a pair. The one who draws the same number as you do will be your opponent!"

While Wendy was speaking, two workers carried trays over, with cards splayed over them.

Jack simply picked a card with the number '21' written on it. It seemed that his opponent would be the person holding the other card with the number '21' on it.

"All right. Has everybody gotten their number?"

Chapter 1057

After a while, Wendy added," Participants who drew numbers one to ten, please take the fighting stages accordingly. For example, those who drew the card with number one will go to stage number 1. After all ten pairs have finished their battle, I will call upon those who have drawn up until the number twenty!"

After she thought about it, she said, "The rules for this round are simple. You cannot kill your opponent, and you win by getting your opponent off the stage. Of course, you'll automatically win if your opponent surrenders!"

After Wendy finished announcing the rules for this round, the contestants who took the number one to ten flew up to their respective stages.

Evidently, the competitors who emerged victorious in this second round would be able to become the top 50 contestants, and then they would be guaranteed a prize already.

"Hah. You've got some luck to run into me!"

On one of the fighting stages, a seventh-grade grandmaster was paired with a fourth-grade grandmaster. The former could not help but grin.

Since the first round was a melee, there were a few people who were not very strong that managed IN hold on to the very end as they got lucky.

This seventh-grade grandmaster was considered an average fighter. After all, the people who won were all pretty strong-and that was why he was afraid that he would run into geniuses of true god status.

He never thought that his luck was in his favor. He actually got a fourth-grade grandmaster as his opponent. Excitement flooded through his veins.

The fourth-grade grandmaster flashed a bitter smile. "I did not have hope anyway unless I was paired with the other fourthgrade grandmaster here!"

After he said that, he actually jumped off the stage. "I surrender!"

"I-I won?"

The seventh-grade grandmaster was stunned for a moment. Then he smiled.

"Jeez. That fellow is so lucky. He advanced to the next round just like that!"

Someone was extremely envious when he saw this.

Bang bang bang!

However, the people on the other nine fighting stage were not so lucky. The opponents they had were about the same level as they were, and naturally, they would not give in without a fight. They threw themselves at each other, and the frightening cacophony of skirmishes filled the air.

"The fighting skills of this family are pretty good!"

Jack was astounded by the sight as he peered down from the audience stand. He could tell that these geniuses from the White family spent plenty of time honing their martial skills, and all of them were stronger than regular fighters.

Soon enough, the first batch of contestants was done. The people who had won were all elated and quickly went to claim their prizes first. The losers left dejectedly, their heads hung low as they joined the crowd to watch the rest of the competition.

Of course, there were some who had sustained more serious injuries. They could only sit at the side, take a few healing pills, and have a good rest.

The second group of people quickly went up as well.

"Hey, what number did you get?"

Unexpectedly, Yule tapped Jack's shoulder from behind at this moment.

Jack turned his head, surprised." Why did you ask that, Yule?"

"Can't I ask? I just want to know when it'll be your turn!"

Yule replied, a sweet smile on her face.

“Oh, it'll be my turn soon!"

Jack smiled. “You'll soon find out what number I drew!" he said.

Chapter 1058

Just as Jack finished his last syllabus, the Fourth ElderWendy Wind-had already flitted back onto the stage of the tournament once again.

She plastered a gentle smile and spilled, "Very well. Let's invite participants from number 21 to number 30 to the stage!"

"Hehe! Brother Jack, it's my turn to go up!"

Yule giggled warmly and strode toward the stage. She stomped on her right foot, leaped upward to the air, and landed on the stage. All these happened within a few seconds.

Jack stared at Yule who was already on the stage, then he looked down at the tiny piece of paper in his hand. The number on the paper made him completely dumbfounded

"No way! How could it be her? What should I do now?"

Jack did not know whether to cry or to laugh. How could he have imagined that Yule would be his opponent? What a coincidence!

Shoo! Swoosh! Whoosh!

The other competitors jumped onto the stage of the tournament, and some of them glided onto the stage.

"Where's my opponent?"

Yule frowned with a puzzled look. Her opponent had not come up to the stage yet.

Soon, her puzzled look was replaced with speechlessness. Jack stepped out of the crowd, then with a gentle stomp, he appeared in front of Yule in the next second.

"No freaking way! Brother Jack, you're my opponent?"

Yule's eyes went wide, and her jaw dropped to the ground when she saw that Jack stood before her. She could not believe her own eyes. Did she see wrongly? Was the person in front of her Jack? Too much of a coincidence!

"What the h*ll?"

The crowd gasped at the arrangement on the stage. Each of them had a strange look on their faces.

"The illegitimate trash of Nash White will fight against his own daughter. Heh! It's interesting, isn' tit? Doesn't this mean that the Brother will be competing against the Sister?"

Some people laughed sarcastically. They had never expected to witness such an episode today.

"Hahaha! That b*stard, I don't think he is his sister's opponent. Although Yule White is young, she is talented and a genius! She's only 17 or 18 years old but she has already reached the middle stage of a semi-god status. Such martial skill and fighting prowess are similar to those so-called God of War. That illegitimate Jack is obviously not her opponent!"

Another person giggled with a playful tone. "I'm afraid that this time the Brother is going to lose to his sister!"

"What is this? Nash, don't tell me you've arranged this? Heh! You're quite smart, aren't you? You actually make your daughter compete against your son in the second round. What a trick!"

Lily was stunned at the scene. She then said with a face of contempt, "I didn't see that coming, and clearly didn't expect such a dirty rick from the Head of the White family! You made this arrangement on purpose so that your son would win the tournament, am I right? Don't you feel ashamed at all!"

"Dirty trick? What trick did I use?"

Nash's face went dull and then reprimanded, "Lily, don't talk bullsh*t if you have no evidence!"

"Oh? Do you think I don't know what you were doing? In the first round, you had Yule and Beth protect your lovely son, so that he could enter the second round!"

Chapter 1059

Lily sneered coldly. "I didn't expect you to pull such a trick in the second round. You must have used some dirty tricks to mark the cards during the card drawing session so that your dear son would face your daughter in this round! The next step is even simpler, you'll just have to ask your daughter to lose to Jack deliberately for Jack to enter the next round, are my guesses correct? Then he can eventually get into the top 50, am I right?"

"I...."

Anger instantly welled up in his chest when Nash heard Lily's claim. He never expected Lily to see him that way. He coughed harshly then only managed to spill some words out. "I didn't!"

Hmph! You didn't? If you didn't plan it, how can there be such a coincidence? Anyhow, I'd still want to see what's up in your sleeve next! How will you make your son the champion of this tournament!"

Lily snorted cold-heartedly and her face had become more and more unsightly.

"Madam, Nash didn't do this, it's really coincidental. You've known Nash for so many years, you know he is not that kind of person. He has always done things openly and honestly!"

Lizzie who was standing aside could not stand watching both of them argue, so she intervened to help Nash.

"Lizzie, just mind your own business, will ya? Is it because you think Jack is back with the White family and there's a high chance for him to be the heir? Are you trying to befriend him so that he'll take your side in the future? Hahaha! Don't think that I don't know what your little, tiny brain is plotting!"

Lily hissed unceremoniously. She did not see that coming. Lizzie who had never been a talker nor an arguer dared to stand up and speak for Nash this time.

"Mrs. White, no, I-I've never thought of it that way. We're a family, we shouldn't fight. This round of tournament must be coincidental..."

Lizzie had never wished to stir up trouble, though she disliked Lily in her heart quietly. Lily was a rather forceful and quick-tempered woman. This was why Lizzie had always shut her mouth up and even rarely step out of the house, hoping to live a quiet and peaceful life.

"Hmph! We'll know soon if it's staged or coincidental! Yule is already at the middle stage of the semi-god level. Hence if she loses to Jack this round, it must be on purpose! After all, we're all martial artists with good eyesight; we definitely know which move being done on purpose!"

Lily hummed frostily and left her last sentence.

Nash was deep in thoughts about Lily's claim. He then wheeled his head, facing the First Elder, and asked in a careful tone, “First Elder, did you...did you arrange all this?"

Indeed, this seemed a little bit too coincidental for him to comprehend. He now had somewhat suspected that there could really be someone plotting this without him knowing.

The First Elder was rendered speechless for a few seconds and then replied in a calm voice," Master White, it's not like you don't know what kind of person I am. How could it be possible for me to arrange all this?"

"Alright! Since you've said so, I trust you! That's fine."

Nash bobbed his head with a bitter smile hanging on his tired face.

At this moment, the tournament has already started. The other nine candidates had started fighting each other, except for Yule and Jack.

Yule and Jack were at stage number one; they were looking at each other with an awkward look plastered on their face.

"Brother Jack, I can't believe that you're my opponent! Sigh! I heard that you're very talented. Well. Let me test that hearsay out!"

Yule halted to ponder for a few seconds, she then clenched her fist and said, "If you can't even defeat me, you'd never get first place. After all, Sister Beth is a lot stronger than me! She's already at the late stage of the semi-god level. Not to mention that Hudson and Martin have both signed up for this tournament; they're both at the late stage of the semi-god realm as well. There's a lot of others who are stronger than me. Therefore, even if I let you win on purpose this time, it'd be in vain!"

Few seconds of silence brushed through the air, Yule then continued, "But, well, even though my martial art status is not as high as theirs, I'm a powerful fighter with stronger determination compared to them. So, I actually have a little hope in winning them." Yule felt proud of herself. "Anyway, you don't have to worry about the Cryo Pearl. I've discussed this with Beth. The two of us, no matter who wins the first place, when the time comes, we'll give you the Cryo Pearl!"

Jack suddenly felt a flicker of warmth inside his heart when he heard Yule's words. "Thank you for your kindness. But, I better get first place, so that it'd be certain that I'll get the Cryo Pearl!"

Chapter 1060

"You get the first place? Are you serious? Do you know that I'm already at the intermediate stage of the semi-god level?"

Yule was puzzled at Jack's exaggeration, wondering if she had heard him wrong. She was relatively young among the younger generation in the White family, and to be at such a level, she was considered a genius among geniuses!

How could Jack be so confident with his own ability? Could it be that his martial art status and fighting prowess were even higher than hers?

"I know your martial art status, I will hold back a little. After all, you're my sister; I won't hurt you!"

Jack gave Yule a faint smile. Though the smile was faint, it was radiant and sunny.

He could see that Yule was a kindhearted person, although she might have been spoiled since young and had always carried a frightening yet noble aura, she was a young woman with a pure and simple heart.

"Hehe! Not bad at all! You take care of your sister!"

Yule returned with a wide and amiable grin. Near to the corner of her mouth appeared a cute dimple.

After teasing Jack, Yule balled her fist firmly, stomped on her feet. She leaped toward Jack, yelling, "Brother Jack, I hope you won't let me down!"

Just as Yule's words fell, she had come before Jack. Her speed was not as fast as lighting, but rather like a phantom that no one was able to catch a sight of. Less than a second, she was right in front of Jack.

Jack clenched his fist as well when he saw Yule blasting toward him with a firmly balled fist.

Bang!

The seemingly ordinary clash of fists between two humans emitted a terrifying loud bang and cast a powerful and forceful circular wave outward to the audience.

"What the!"

The radiant smile that was on Yule 's pretty face a moment ago soon faded into the thin air. What was soon dawned upon her face was shock and puzzlement.

The strength and power that erupted from Jack's body were clearly way stronger than hers. Based on the strength she had felt from him, this man before him should at least be at the late stage of the semi-god level. Moreover, he seemed to belong to the topnotch category in the late stage of the semi-god level.

With Yule's round and astonishment-filled eyes, she was blown away by the force and flew two to three meters backward before she stomped on the ground, halting, and stabilizing herself.

This was the first clash between the two, and to everyone's surprise, it was Jack who had the upper hand.

"My God! Did you see that? That punk Jack had actually blasted Yule, the little genius, away?"

In the stands, the crowd could not help but gasp aloud at the scene before them. They initially thought that Jack would soon be eliminated within seconds. They truly did not expect him to be so strong.

At this time, most of the battles on the other stages had already ended. Some were eliminated and some advanced into the next round. All of them were paying attention to the situation on the other stages.

And when they witnessed the clash between Yule and Jack, confusion and astonishment were written on their face. After all, Yule's combat prowess was already at the semi-god level; how could an adopted son-in-law who had just returned from the secular world be stronger than her?

"That's freaking awesome! Master White, Young Master Jack is so awesome, isn't he? Haha! He is more powerful than I expected!"

In the viewing stand, Butler's eyes were immediately lit up as though he had seen something wonderful. "If Jack could win the first place and become the heir to the family head. We finally have a successor for the White!" Titus chortled warmly.

Nevertheless, just as he finished his words, he could feel a pair of burning eyes staring at him with malice and hatred.

If this gaze could kill, he had no doubt that he would have died a million times over.

A wave of fury crashed through Lily that she was almost choking on her rage. She glared at Titus with eyes full of hatred, and then she barked, "What do you mean by 'finally have a successor for the White'? Is my son not a member of the White family? Isn't he the son of Nash White? I watched the battle with my own naked eyes, and it was so fake! It was obvious that Yule went easy on that punk! You all must have discussed the strategy before the tournament started! Otherwise, it's impossible for that punk to perform that way!"NSW Chapter 1061-1065

Chapter 1061

"Went easy on him?"

The First Elder could not bear to hear all those toxic words anymore. "First Madam, are you joking? It's clear that the battle just now was serious; Yule did not go easy on Jack at all! That was a test attack, but Yule definitely did not go easy on Jack!"

The Third Elder-Wade White sat aside, watching the commotion. He did not comment on anything, but

somehow his forehead puckered.

It was because he saw the attack clearly with his own naked eyes. That attack did not seem like Yule was going easy on Jack deliberately.

"Could it be...could it be that this punk truly possesses the strength to get the first place? Nash White has so much confidence in him."

Wade's face went dull and gloomy. It seemed like there was only one way for him to grab the position of the family head, which was to find a way to assassinate the First Elder and then murder Jack after Nash dies from the poison.

By that time, his martial level would be the highest and strongest in the White family, and if he says that he wanted to become the head of the White family, who would dare to disobey him?

Bang!

At this moment, on top of the tournament stage number one, Yule charged toward Jack with her fist clenched once again. She was surprised, at the same time, felt humiliated when she was blasted away by Jack.

However, this time, there was a thin layer of light blue Chi wrapped around her clenched fist. Obviously, her attack was much stronger and more terrifying than before; she actually controlled her Chi to surround her fist to enhance her attack.

"It looks like I have underestimated you!"

When Yule came close to Jack, the corner of her mouth curled upward, and her fist lunged at Jack at a lighting speed.

Jack responded quickly with a gripped fist. He, too, can control the Chi in his body well, and within a second, a layer of light blue Chi embraced his fist.

Boom!

Facing Yule's attack, Jack balled his fist and blasted directly with Yule's fist.

The sound of their clashing fist was so much louder than before, and the powerful impact blew Yule off the tournament stage.

"I..."

Yule's tongue was tied. She has not even used any martial arts technique yet she was eliminated from the competition by Jack just like that? With only a punch?

When realization finally dawned upon her, she was already standing under the stage, outside the tournament ring.

"Thank you, Sister Yule! I'm sorry if I've harmed you. This is the only way for me to win this competition!"

Jack chuckled warmly, and then only he jumped down from the stage.

"There's absolutely no faking in that punch just now! I didn't expect that punk to be at the semi-god level!"

The Third Elder gasped, at the same time, released a huge sigh of defeat. "Furthermore, looking at the

thickness and richness of the Chi of that punk, also his control over the Chi, I suspect that punk could already be at the late stage or even the peak stage of the semigod realm!"

"No freaking way! Is he really that strong?"

Lily was somewhat speechless; she could not deny Jack's strength. Jack's ability to use Chi to attack had already shown that he was definitely a solid semi-god. That was something that could not be faked.

"Not bad, huh. You're a lot stronger than me! Now I have faith in you to win first place!"

Yule approached Jack when she saw him jump down from the stage. "Now, go there and collect the rewards for the top 50! Five Chi Congregation Pills!" Yule said to Jack with a bitter smile on her face.

Chapter 1062

"No freaking way! This punk defeated our stunning genius Yule and got her eliminated from the tournament? Hehe! This competition is out of the ordinary, isn't this exciting?"

In the viewing stands, one of the heads of the White branch family could not hold back but to laugh aloud.

"Yes, it's indeed exciting and surprising! Jack was brought up and trained in a secular world, yet he possesses such skill and achievement! I wonder, at which level his martial art status is currently at now. It shouldn't be weaker than any of the White!"

Another head of the White branch family chimed in.

The precious head of the White branch family then responded. "This shouldn't be possible. We're a great and prominent family in the hidden world, and Yule is from the White main family. She should have a better fighting technique and strategy. As for Jack, who defeated her, perhaps he has higher a

martial art status, most probably he's at the late stage of the semi-god level."

"Haha! In fact, I do hope that brat could win the position of the heir of the family head. After all, only such a person-who rises slowly from the mundane-will understand acquiring martial arts and improving fighting prowess is hella difficult. I think it might be better for him to be the heir than the high and almighty Lance. Lance is too proud, isn't he?"

Another head of White' branch family laughed out loud after giving some thoughts to the matter.

"Shush! Keep your voice down. You'll be in big trouble if Lily overhears you! If that's the case, the resource for enhancing martial art status for the branch family will be halved next month! That woman holds grudges for a long time!"

An old man who was standing beside the heads of White branch family reminded them in a panic tone.

The head of White' branch family looked around, then whispered tensely, "We're so far away though, it's not possible for her to overhear us, right? Speaking of her, this time her son has disappeared for so long and still hasn't been found, I guess he's highly likely dead by now. Furthermore, the position of the heir to the family head is now going into others' hands. I guess she must be infuriating and seething!"

"Of course, she is upset! But she deserves it, doesn't she? She always looks down on people whenever and wherever she goes, especially members of the branches of the White family. We're under her barbaric management all this while; she requests for top-notch quality resources for the enhancement of martial art status, and leaving us with only elementary and low quality resources."

The head of the White branch family released a huge sigh and said, “Sigh! We are only the members of the branch family. If the branch family members want to grow, the main family members have to evolve even more, hence it's reasonable for us to hand all the good-quality resources to the main family so that they can be stronger. Otherwise, the White family wouldn't achieve what we have today, the White wouldn't be one of the Eight Reclusive Families on this earth!"

"But, she is asking more and more every year, and I heard that the main person in charge of collecting these resources is the Third Elder. This Third Elder has a close relationship with the wicked First Madam, so I guess the request is ordered by the First Madam!"

The old man said with a stern tone.

At this time, Jack had claimed his five Chi Congregation Pills. He kept the five pills inside his martial ring, only then he returned to the victor's team.

"Kiddo, you're not that bad at all! You won again, and you're actually at the semi-god level. How surprising!"

Suddenly, a man approached Jack with a sinister grin. It was Hudson-who had won the second round and got into the third round.

"I have to win. In order to get the Cryo Pearl, the only way is for me to win this tournament!"

Jack studied the person in front of him as he spoke in a calm tone.

"Haha! Did you all hear that? This punk has declared his intention of coming to the White family! He is eyeing on the Cryo Pearl! What does this say? It says that he wants to be number one!"

Hudson sneered sarcastically. He then turned to the crowd and uttered in a rough and loud voice, "Guys, if any of you face him in the future rounds, don't go easy on him, okay? And even if you win against him, you've to cripple him. Otherwise, if we let this punk get the first place, we-the geniuses who were trained in the White family-would be embarrassed, and others will think that we're weaklings!"

“Don't worry! I'll definitely make sure he is bedridden for months if he is ever my opponent in the next rounds!"

Chapter 1063

The tall and bulky Martin intervened in a gruff voice.

“That punk merely got lucky in the previous round and defeated Yule!"

Another man chimed in with a cold smile. "First, Yule simply didn 't expect for him to be at the semi-god level, so Yule certainly didn't use her full strength in the battle, giving him the advantage to win over her. Second, Yule has not had the time to use her martial techniques and skills. Heh! If she had the time to use them, or even take out weapons, it'd be easy-peasy for her to win that round!"

The man who chimed in after pondering was a ninth-grade grandmaster.

Jack did not bother paying attention to these men, instead, he sat down, crossed his legs, and waited leisurely for the next round.

The contempt from these people, sooner or later, he would use his fists to respond and make them understand that although he, Jack White, came from the mundane world, he was not any inferior to these so-called geniuses of the White family.

Jack noticed the Third Elder from afar, who was at the high viewing platform. The only person that concerned him was the Third Elder.

Because Titus had told him before that this Third Elder, Lily and the Ninth Patronum Brenton White were basically a team; they were close to each other. The Third Elder was very good at hiding himself in the dark. A warm yet fake smile always hung on his face whenever he talked to someone. Jack thought that he should be cautious of the Third Elder.

The most concerning thing was that the Third Elder's martial art status and combat prowess were top-notch. Other than the First Elder, only Nash White would be able to fight with him. But now that his

father was poisoned; therefore, the only person left who could hold the Third Elder was the First Elder.

Jack could not care less about these so-called geniuses. He was already at the true god realm; with such martial level and combat prowess, it was sufficient for him to defeat these geniuses easily.

Nonetheless, he was completely clueless about the Third Elder and his people. If the other party had plotted a murder on him, he did not know if he was able to defeat them.

After all, Jack had never fought such a strong person before.

Soon, the second round was finally over.

"Next will be the third round! Listen carefully, in this round of competition, there are only five winners, the top five. So this is another melee round, and it only ends when there's only last five standing on the stage!"

"And the top five candidates will be awarded a first-grade premium spirited grass!"

The Fourth Elder flew onto the stage and announced the rules for the third round aloud.

The candidates' spirits were suddenly soaring high when they heard of the prize for the top fivethe spirited grass. They clearly did not see this coming; they did not expect the top five would receive such a treasure.

"What's a spirited grass? Firstgrade premium spirited grass? Is it something powerful? Why is everybody so excited?"

At a spot under the stage, Selena asked with a puzzled face. Jack winning all the previous rounds was within her expectation, after all, she knew very well that Jack's martial art level was already at the elementary stage of the true god level. Anyway, she still went and inquired about the geniuses and felt

instant relief when she knew of their martial art level.

She truly believed that the position of the first place in this tournament belonged to Jack.

Chapter 1064

Elaine, who was beside Selena, cast her a faint yet gentle smile, then she explained in a casual tone, "Sister Selena, everything on this earth has spirit, including trees, grasses, and so on. If the living things grow in a place where the spiritual energy is dense and rich, and is nourished by the spiritual energy for a very long time, these grasses or whatever will become spirited. They will start to absorb the spiritual energy around them."

Selena nodded with confusion plastered on his face. "Everyone is really happy about this spirited grass. What does it do though? Does its benefit truly amazing?"

"Of course, it's amazing! It's arduous and hard to find spirited grass, which makes it extremely rare. These spirited grasses not only have to grow in a place with a high density of spiritual energy, but the age is important, too. The older the age of the spirited grass, the rarer and the better it is!"

"Besides, we will look into their degree of richness of the spiritual energy in them and categorize them into grades accordingly. There's a total of nine grades, the first grade is the lowest of quality and the ninth is the highest. Within its own grade, we further divide them into elementary, intermediate, and premium. These spirited grasses help us to enhance our martial art status and combat prowess faster than usual."

Elaine smiled warmly and explained to Selena in a patient manner.

"Wow! If one has consumed enough spirited grass, does it mean that he could enhance his combat prowess and martial level faster and greater?"

Ben, who was beside Selena could not help but exclaim aloud at Elaine's explanation. His eyes lit up and were full of desire, as though he had found the love of his life.

A strong fighter, who did not want to become a strong existence? A strong fighter like Jack, he could kill dozens and even up to hundreds of men with just a wave of his palm

In the past, Ben did not know of any of these, hence he naturally had no desire over martial prowess. Now that he had learned about all these, he naturally had the desire to become stronger.

The only way to protect his family was to become stronger. He was a grown-up; he did not want to be protected by Elaine all the time. He wanted to protect her too.

"That's certain. But the speed of enhancing the martial art status depends heavily on the techniques used. The higher the level of technique, the faster you gained enhancement in the martial prowess!"

Elaine smiled, paused, and continued. "Well. It's like a game; it 's always easy to gain enhancement in martial art status when you first start practicing it. And it grows harder and harder as you reach a higher level. When you reach the ninth-grade grandmaster level, it basically depends largely on your talent to breakthrough and go into the next level. But, for some people, they could not even reach the first-grade grandmaster level. Hence, it largely depends on a person's talent, resources, and techniques. These are all inter-related!"

Selena was shocked upon hearing Elaine's words. "It's really not easy, isn't it? Sigh! I wonder how my natural talent is in this area. Sigh! I don't want to become a burden to Jack all the time and ask for his help."

"Don't worry, Sister Selena. I have faith in you. You're definitely more talented than most of the people!"

Elaine chuckled. “Besides, when Brother Jack becomes the heir to the family head, he'll surely give you some superb pills like Chi Congregation Pills to help you in improving your martial art status. You're at the early stage, so it'd be fast for you to improve your martial art status, and even faster with all those pills and herbs!"

Selena bobbed her head cutely after thinking about what Elaine said. But she was quick to wonder about some questions. "This is strange though. These geniuses are already at a high level of martial art status, why are they still happy about the first-grade spiritual grass? Didn't you just say that the ninth grade is the best? So, first-grade ones are not even that precious, right?"

Ben was in the same confusion as Selena was. "Yeah, why are they happy over the first-grade spirited grass?"

Elaine returned with a bitter smile. "The grading system is what I heard from the older generation. It was passed down from generation to generation but in reality, even a third-grade spirited grass is extremely rare, not to mention a ninth grade. All these grasses are considered supreme treasures. Moreover, for a ninth-grade grandmaster martial artist or even a semi-god level artist, even a first-grade spirited grass could help them a lot!"

Chapter 1065

Here, Elaine paused for a while before continuing, "That's why a lot of people doubt if a third or fourth grade or higher-grade spirited grass even exists because no one's ever seen it before. Besides, there's another legend that's even more exciting. Who knows if it's true!"

"What legend is this?"

Selena and Ben asked simultaneously.

Elaine smiled. “The highest status a chi warrior can attain as of now is to be at the peak of the true god status. It's very difficult to improve once you've hit that stage since we don't have any martial art skills that advance beyond that. Still, there's a legend that says that it's possible to achieve something even more-the ultimate god status."

Elaine thought about it, then she looked at the siblings before him, utterly solemn. "According to the legends, you'll be able to prolong your life when you hit the ultimate god status," she said. “Apparently, you'll be able to live until two hundred years-old!"

"No way!"

Selena and Ben took a sharp intake of breath, wondering if they had heard her wrong. If the legends were true, then someone of that status could live until they were two hundred years old. Who would not want something like that?

Besides, a person of the true god status was frightening enough. A person with the ultimate god status must be exceedingly strong.

"The competition has started. Let' s go watch. These are just legends; no one knows if they're true. Heh. The eight reclusive families are all trying to unearth this mystery. They've been to so many dangerous places, but they haven't found a single clue even after so many years. That's why I think it's likely that all these legends are just legends!"

Elaine flashed a hapless smile. "If there really is an eighth or ninth grade spirited grass existing out there, they must contain unimaginable amounts of chi. And it might just make my body explode in an instant. After all, there's no way a body like mine can take in that much energy."

At that moment, fifty contestants were left on the fighting stage. Only five would advance to the next round after the melee battle. It was evident that the competition was far fiercer than the previous melee.

After all, everyone who was still standing there were all strong fighters-at least seventh to ninth-grade grandmasters.

Only fighters like that stood a chance to hold on until then.

"Heh. You won't escape this time, Jack!"

Before the fight even began, Hudson already had his eyes pinned on Jack, arms folded across his chest, and a cold smile on his lips.

"Heh. I wasn't planning on that!"

Jack could not help but gave a bitter smile. "You leave me with no choice then," he said, "since you're so eager to be eliminated!"

"Let the round begin!"

The Fourth Elder stood on the tip of her toes then flew off the stage. Then she announced in a clear voice.NSW Chapter 1066-1070

Chapter 1066

“Hmph!” Upon the sound indicating that the competition had begun, Hudson-who had achieved the final stage of his semi-god level power-balled his hand tightly. His fist emitted Chi as he rushed toward Jack.

“Not wasting a single second, huh?” Jack’s lips shifted into a smirk as he noted that ferocity in wanting to eliminate him, and his tightly clenched fist was covered with a thick layer of Chi.

Swoosh!

All so suddenly, however, a beautiful figure appeared in front of him like a flash of lightning as they met Hudson’s punch with their own.

“Beth?” Jack dismissed the Chi covering his fist and was slightly surprised.

Boom!

A powerful explosion could be heard as they both flew backward several meters due to the sheer force before they could regain their footing.

There was not much difference between their true powers.

“Beth White!” The enraged Hudson gave Beth a disgusted glare as he growled, “What’s the meaning of this? You want this illegitimate child who returned from the outside world to win this competition? Do you want every White here to lose their dignity? Haha…! How shameful would we be when news about this got spread outside? They’d say that geniuses like us can’t even compare to someone who returned from the outside world!”

Beth met Hudson’s glare. “I’m sorry Hudson, but there’s nothing shameful about this. In my opinion, Jack is a member of the White family, and more importantly, he’s also the White family master. Jack’s ability shows how powerful the White family’s younger generation is. He’ s able to grow, even though he went to a place that didn’t have enough Chi. To me, that’s not a shameful thing. Instead, it’s a good thing and something worth showing off!”

“You…” Hudson was angry when he heard what Beth said, but he had no way of fighting back.” Haha… What you’re saying is a fallacy. I’m going to ask you this: Are you getting out of my way?”

“No!” answered Beth, no hesitation in the way she responded

Beth then looked at Jack who was beside her and said. “Jack, this guy keeps pinpointing on you. I know that your fighting prowess isn’t bad, so why don’t we work together? We’d have one less competitor if we eliminate Hudson first.”

It was true that people like Hudson and Beth, who were at the last stage of the semi-god level, were rare among the younger geniuses in the White’ main family.

They were the ones that had the highest hope of winning the competition.

The only person who could surpass them was Lance as he had already surpassed the semi-god level capstone and was one step away from the first stage of the real god-level.

Still, there was a possibility Lance was dead after being missing for a couple of months. Under such circumstances, Hudson, Beth, and other prodigies were the ones with the highest hope of winning the competition and becoming the family master's inheritor.

"Beth White, you're really shameless! You actually want to work with this guy and get me eliminated?" Hudson's face turned pale from anger after he heard what Beth said.

Chapter 1067

After all, Jack had already eliminated Yule, who was also a strong fighter. Even though it was due to Yule's carelessness, it proved that Jack was a rather remarkable fighter. Hudson had no confidence in winning if Jack and Beth worked together.

"Nash White, you're still telling me that you didn't arrange this? This is obviously your doing, and you've gone all out for your son!" Lily, who was on the observing platform, almost burst in anger. She looked at Nash angrily and seethed, "You asked Beth and Yule to protect your son during the first round, and you then cheated during the second round and asked Yule to purposely lose to Jack. Now, you've changed the third round into a group-fight and had Beth helping him. Haha... He'll definitely be in the top five with your help, won't he?"

"You're really...really trying to make a scene!" Nash grew angry at that as he coughed, and he took a breather before he added, "You... You saw Jack's Chi yourself-he's achieved semi-god prowess. Could I have made that up too?"

"... I don't care about all that! Everything seems like it's been set up to me!" Lily was anguished when her thoughts went to how her son was absent from this competition; he could have been the champion.

"I can't help it if you want to think about it in that way!" Nash stopped entertaining Lily and ignored her.

However, his face immediately darkened when he saw the situation on the competition stage. He saw several White family disciples were moving i to surround Jack and Beth.

"Oh?" Lily's mood instantly shifted for the better as she saw the scene as well, chuckling at the sight. "Haha...! I believe you've not anticipated this, Nash White. Although you've arranged for Beth to protect Jack and help him enter the next round, the other White family disciples don't like him. So many well-versed prodigies want to eliminate that son of yours first!"

Lily let that sink before she added, "This is fate. Nothing would work even if you've already made arrangements when everything has been fated as such!"

Nash's expression fell, but he still managed to say, "Say whatever you like, because I believe in Jack. I believe he's capable of becoming the champion because he said he' d work hard for it."

"Tsk, tsk! You're still so confident under these circumstances. I wonder where your confidence comes from." Lily had a smirk on her face before it slowly fell.

She discovered that Nash seemed to be in a better condition than before. The other day, Nash looked pale and still needed Titus to help him walk when they met at the bottom of the mountain. Today, he did not pant as much when he spoke, and his complexion seemed much better.

"How peculiar could it be my imagination, or is he in his last hours?" mumbled Lily to herself as that thought occurred to her. She grew increasingly suspicious.

Wade, who was by their sides, seemed to also feel that something was different. He looked at Nash and started to frown.

"Jack, we're in trouble. They seem to be coming for you!" Beth's facial expression darkened when she

saw that the other prodigies like Martin and Liah moved forward and surrounded them.

Martin and Liah were like Hudson; all three of them were in their final stages of semi-god level prowess. Apart from them, there were three other masters who achieved mid-stage of the semi-god prowess. The strengths and weaknesses were very obvious when six of such masters surrounded and attacked them.

Jack was speechless as they were surrounded, and he glanced at Beth by reflex as he said, “Beth, we wouldn't have attracted so many people over here if you didn' t come to help me. This many people are coming because you're here with me!"

Chapter 1068

What Jack said made Beth speechless.

Because of this, it fueled the other prodigies' determination to eliminate Jack, thus they surrounded them.

The remaining others dared not come over when they saw how many powerful masters gathered at this side. They could only pick out those with lower combat prowess and try their best to eliminate those people.

"Haha... So, you're siding with Jack, huh Beth? I'm sorry, but you seemed to have forgotten about me, I also want to eliminate this guy!"

“After all, he's obnoxiously haughty and said that he's aiming to be the champion!" came the hoarse voice of Martin, a man with a towering stature, as he crossed his arms at his chest.

“We're in trouble. There are so many of them!" Beth looked at Jack with a disconcerted expression.

"Haha... Don't you worry. Since they want to take me out so badly, I'll just have to eliminate them first!"

Jack's behavior was far from what Beth expected; he had an indifferent smile as he seemed undaunted.

"How can you still be in the mood to make jokes when we're in the situation?" Beth rolled her eyes at Jack and felt that he was unreliable. They were up against six prodigies, and even the one with the weakest prowess was at the middle stage of semi-god level. Three of them had the cultivation of the last stage, yet Jack was shamelessly bragging!

"Haha! I'm not joking!" Jack laughed and curled one of his hands into a fist, and the Chi that came from his fist was much more than the last. Apart from that, his Chi was more condensed compared to those of the other geniuses.

“Be careful!" Martin warned the others. He was startled when he saw Jack in a flash.

Whoosh!

Jack appeared in front of Hudson and swung his fist powerfully.

“He's so fast!" Hudson was taken aback at how Jack singled him out first. Hudson, after all, was in the last stage of the semi-god level.

He knew that there was not enough time for him to perform his martial arts, thus he could only meet Jack's punch with his own.

The moment he took Jack's punch, Chi was discharged immensely, and his punch was covered with Chi.

"Hmph! So what if you're light on your feet? I'm at the last stage the semi-god level, and I don't believe that I can't defeat you!"

"Not only will I defeat you today, but I'll also break your hands and legs. Madam would surely reward

me handsomely at the sight of you being crippled. If I kill you, she might even give me a bounty of spirited grass!" At the thought of the reward possibilities, Hudson 's eyes twinkled with craze as he threw his fist at Jack unreservedly.

However, a strong wave of energy surged through, and the collision between the daunting forces resulted in a humming sound from the interception of their fists.

Thoom!

Hudson, who was at the last stage of the semi-god level, flew outward like a kite severed from its string. He crashed onto the ground after he flew several tens of meters backward and landed outside the competition stage.

Puff!

Blood was expelled from Hudson's mouth upon impact, and his face immediately turned pale.

Chapter 1069

"How...How's that possible? How can I lose?" Hudson's eyes were filled with disbelief. He did not believe that he would lose to the illegitimate child, the son-in-law who married into the wife's family he looked down upon in front of so many people.

He had lost terribly under everyone's gazes with just one punch. Hudson truly had lost his honor.

"What?!" Many people stopped fighting after they saw what had happened on the stage. Their mouths were wide open and their chins almost dropped to the floor.

Moreover, they never thought that Hudson-who had the highest possibility of winning the competition-would be eliminated by Jack with just one punch. It did not help that Hudson completely lost under the

circumstances where both of them utilized their Chi.

They could say that Yule deliberately threw the competition away and let Jack win because they were siblings.

However, they did not feel that Hudson would purposely lose out on the competition.

"What?!" People like the First and Second Elder also stood up from the observation stage in surprise.

The force behind Jack's punch had already reached the highest stage of the semi-god level; he would not have blown Hudson down the stage so easily had he not.

“How's this possible?" The faces of the Third Elder and Lily darkened after they glanced at each other. Only Lance could have displayed such an attack as Jack's.

"That's amazing! Brother-in-law is amazingly strong. Haha! He truly is a one-of-a-kind genius!" Ben could barely fight back his grin as he turned to Selena and teased," Sister, I really admire your insight. You hit the jackpot, scoring a man like him!"

Ben still managed to find a way to jest with her sister. "By the way Sister, did you realize how different Brother-in-law was on the night of your wedding that you had a child with him?"

Selena rolled her eyes at Ben by reflex. "Do you think that I have special eyesight? How'd I know he' s the young master of the White family? Also, how'd I know that he' d become such a formidable person after being on the battlefield for five years?!"

She glanced at Jack who was on the competition stage and spoke abashedly, “Still, you got a point... I truly have hit the jackpot with him."

“Definitely! You really have good insight!" beamed Ben. "Of course, my sister is just as outstanding. Both of you can be considered as a match made in heaven!"

"Tsk, tsk! And when have you become such a sweet-talker, huh?" Selena could barely hold back her chuckle.

Meanwhile. “That young man seems so different!" Masters and elders from the branch families were also stunned. Many of them even stood up in shock.

"F*ck, it looks like this Jack guy might just be this competition's champion!" gushed an old man.“ Genius! He's a genius, no doubt! It must've been difficult for him to reach this step as he didn't have such conditions as the other geniuses from the White' main family!"

"Yes, and I never saw it coming that he'd take down Hudson firstthat genius! This looks very interesting!" another family master said emotionally.

"You five are next!” Jack smiled and said to the remaining five.

Chapter 1070

The sight of Hudson, a man who achieved the final stage of the semi-god-level, defeated by Jack with a single punch shocked everyone to the core.

Comments began to spiral on top of the observation stage. Before this, they could still say that Nash set everything up and that Yule lost to Nash on purpose.

However, it was obvious that Hudson did not throw the game away on purpose.

The five people standing in front of Jack had disbelief written all over their faces.

It was only after a good while that Liah, her expression shifting into a more grim mein, spoke, "This guy's at an incredible state level now, and he's also adept in combat. Don't underestimate him. I say we attack together!"

"Yes, let's attack together and eliminate this guy first. We can't let him win again. We'd have no place to hide our faces if he wins and becomes the champion." Martin immediately nodded. There was still hope for them if all five of them attacked Jack together.

"Jack, I can help block one or two!" offered Beth, her countenance alert and sharp.

What she did not expect was for Jack to shake his head and said, "Don't worry about it. I don't need your help here; I can handle them all no problem!"

Martin, Liah, and the others had their lips uncontrollably twitching. The guy before them was practically rubbing it on their faces.

“Exploding Wolf Punch!" Not wanting to spare a single second for Jack, Martin balled his fist and condensed Chi to cover it. He performed a martial-art skill and rushed toward Jack.

"What?! He executed the Exploding Wolf Punch? That's a first-grade premium martial skill, an impressive skill for a young person. Their attack power can increase by several folds after using this skill!" Many people at the observation deck exclaimed after they saw this.

“Look, it's the illusion of a wolf head. I had no idea that Martin could perform this martial skill so well. It's unfortunate that he's not a master in the real god-stage; he' d be able to send the wolf head to the opponent and attack his opponent if he was a master at that level. The attack power would be magnificent!" exclaimed some among the people.“ However, it's quite difficult for Martin to perform the Exploding Wolf Punch in such a manner."

At that moment... "Exploding Wolf Punch!" Liah performed the same punching skill and rushed toward Jack with Martin.

The Exploding Wolf Punch that Liah performed had also achieved an extreme thorough status. The Chi on her punch was also thickly condensed, and there was also an illusion of the wolf head on it.

"Clouds Flowing Palm!" The other three people who were halfway in their semi-god level carried out a first-grade premium martial skill. Although this martial skill was not as strong as the Exploding Wolf Punch, the power was daunting enough when three prodigies at the middle stage of the semi-god level used it to attack Jack altogether.

"Hmph! I'd like to see what you'll do this time, Jack." On the observation deck, Lily-seeing how five younger geniuses attacked Jack altogether with strong martial skills-smiled a triumphant smile.

She knew Jack was as good as gone. That guy was delusional when he said he wanted to win the competition.

"Haha... A big wave is coming!" However, Jack only smiled indifferently when he saw the attacks and remained unperturbed.NSW Chapter 1071-1075

Chapter 1071

All of a sudden, Jack let out a loud roar as he balled his hands into fists. Chi surged from his fists as Jack bent his knees and threw his punch.

The group of five had just appeared before Jack, aiming toward him when he threw his punch.

They initially thought that their attacks, when combined, would overpower Jack, making him lose.

That was what they believed until they saw wave after wave before them. These waves were illusions that rushed toward them from Jack's fists without relief. The waves merged and became an invisible yet strong impact!

Thoom!

A loud blast could be heard and the strong power blew all five people away. They banged into the stone slabs under the competition stage like kites with broken strings.

Puff!

All five prodigies helplessly vomited blood still mid-air, flying from Jack's attack.

They vomited blood again when they crashed to the ground. They laid on the floor and felt as if their body was going to break.

"How's this possible?!" The eyes of Martin and the others were filled with disbelief. They could not believe that they could not topple Jack, even as all five of them joined forces. The guy in front of them was incredibly powerful.

"What martial skill is this?!" The First Elder, who was on the observation stage, stood up. His eyes lit up and seemed excited." That's no simple martial skill and definitely isn't a first-grade martial skill. It looks like a second -grade martial skill!"

Titus, who was by the First Elder's side, chimed in, "Above all, that's a rare martial skill capable of attacking a group of people simultaneously. If it has such good effects when it's being used by a semi-god-level martial artist, the attack power when it's being used by a real god-level martial artist would be far more terrifying!"

"That's right! If a real god-level martial artist uses this martial skill, the skill can attack externally. It's terrifying when you think about how a big wave shoots outward!" Nash was pleased as well. That martial skill was not only a high-level skill, but it was also a skill that could carry out group attacks, and not everyone knew of it. Nobody knew that Jack had such a great martial skill.

"Im... Impossible!" Lily's smile disappeared, replaced by the look of shock.

She could not believe that geniuses like Hudson and Liah, who had the possibility of becoming the champion, would also be eliminated by Jack.

If this was the case, there was no doubt about the champion position as some of the people left on the competition stage were not as strong as Hudson and the others.

“Haha! You truly didn't let me down!" Nash, who was beside Lily, was overjoyed at the outcome." This is my son-the son of Nash White!"

Lily shot Nash a glare, so furious that sounds of bones cracking could be heard from her tightly balled fists.

She never expected that this illegitimate child would have such impressive talents and combat ability.

"This is great! The other geniuses should be convinced with such a person being their family master' sheir!" Many of the branch families' masters thought about it before speaking in extreme shock.

The competition truly exceeded their expectations. The people that they thought had the ability to fight were all eliminated. Instead, Young Master Jack, the illegitimate child who grew up in the outside world and the one they had just met, excelled in the competition.

Chapter 1072

"This is great! There's hope for us to get to the top five!" Not many contenders were left on the stage at that moment, and several men who were at the middle stage of the semi-god level were elated at the prospects.

They had thought it would be impossible for them to get to the top five placement, but they never

expected that Jack would eliminate five to six masters in one go. Even geniuses like Hudson, Martin, and Liah-who were in the last stage of the semi-god level-were eliminated by Jack.

"What..?" Beth, who stood not far away from Jack, was stupefied. She was the First Elder's daughter, and her father purposely asked her before the competition to help Jack whenever there was a chance.

They never thought that his combat prowess would exceed the rest.

She was stupefied when she saw the scene in front of her.

Both her and Jack stood on the stage, but nobody dared fight them as everybody knew defeating them was impossible.

Beth had a tight smile on her face. It looked like she was going to proceed to the next round and be in the top five without doing anything.

Moreover, she might even be the competition's first runner-up, given the situation at hand.

"What is it? I'm thankful for your offer, Beth, but I really don't need your help," said the smiling Jackt to Beth when he saw her stunned on the spot.

"You're really too strong! What grade is that martial skill you've performed just now? I feel that it's a second-grade martial skill. If that's not the case, how can you defeat them when you're only mid-way the semi-god level?" Beth smiled bitterly. She thought about it and continued speaking. "With your attack just now, I feel that you should be at the peak stage of the semi-god level. You're really strong-your prowess almost matches that of Lance's!"

Jack became sheepish at that; it surprised him at how they would say his prowess had reached the peak of the semi-god level.

Still, it made sense when he thought about it. After all, he did not carry out attacks where his Chi left his body, and it was natural that they did not know that he was already in the real god -level. It was best if

he could win the competition while still hiding his true power.

"Big Wave Hits-a second-grade intermediate martial skill. It's handy," replied Jack with an indifferent smile.

Beth's eyes lit up when she heard this and she said with a smile." Second-grade intermediate? That astounding skill can be used for group attacks. I think the master will ask you to contribute it so that all the White family members can learn this skill, too!

"You're now the family master's inheritor, and you'll be the master in the future. You won't refuse to help the White family, right?"

Beth's excitement baffled Jack; she was obviously interested in his martial skills, too!

He gave a weak smile as he replied, "It's still too early to assume things. I'm not the inheritor yet, and I can only be considered as one of the top five."

Beth rolled her eyes at Jack and said, “Stop being so humble! Which one of these people can beat you? There's no doubt about the result!"

Everything happened just as how Beth predicted it to be, and there were no doubts about the results. Jack, Beth, and three others were left on the stage, and all five of them instantly emerged as the competition's top five.

Chapter 1073

Every person who won the top five position got a first-grade premium spirited grass as their reward, much to their joy.

Hudson, Martin, and the others sat on the floor below the stage as they tended to their wounds, all

while they wore a soured expression.

They originally had hoped of being in the top five and obtaining the spirited grass, but not only did they fail to defeat Jack, but they failed to obtain the spirited grass as well.

Hudson glanced at Lily who was on the observation stage and thought to himself, 'If I knew that this guy was that talented, I wouldn't have thought about what rewards Lily would've given me. Now, I have nothing!

Everything that happened afterward was just like how everybody imagined it to be: Jack was crowned champion while Beth was the first runner-up.

"Let me announce that the martial arts competition has come to an end. Congratulations to Young Master Jack for winning the competition and becoming the family master inheritor.

He obtains the right to keep and use the White family's treasure, Cyro Pearl, but he'll need to inform all elders before he could use it," the Fourth Elder, Wendy Wind announced loudly on the competition stage. "I invite Young Master Jack to come up the stage and receive his reward!"

Jack exhaled heavily before wearing a small smile. He flew upward to the competition stage and arrived before the Fourth Elder.

"Young man, is the power of a second-grade martial skill? How did you obtain it?" Wendy could not keep her question at bay as she softly asked, passing the Cyro Pearl to Jack as she did.

Jack smiled sheepishly and said," I was lucky to obtain it, but I can tell you that it's a second-grade intermediate martial skill."

"A second-grade intermediate skill is a really good one. Even the White family only has several." Wendy smiled indifferently.

Jack nodded. He then raised the cold Cyro Pearl up and announced, "I plan to use this Cyro Pearl later as one of my brothers is badly hurt, hanging only onto his last breath. The Cyro Pearl is one of the reasons I joined this competition! Since everybody is here, I'm notifying all of you now."

At this moment, the Third Elderpissed off at the competition's outcome-slowly stood up and spoke in his slightly worn-out voice, "I don't think that your friend is badly hurt. I had a good look at his body, and his wounds are superficial. The most crucial point is that someone had trained him into a puppet, so his body is extremely stiff while his breath of life has been reduced to an extremely small amount. Won't it be wasteful to use our White family treasure on someone like this?"

"Puppet? Why did his brother become a puppet?"

"Oh, my! Such evil skills really exist?"

Hushed murmurs spread throughout the square after hearing what the Third Elder had to say.

Startled, the First Elder immediately asked, "Jack, is the Third Elder telling the truth? Why did your brother become a puppet? Why do such evil ways still exist?"

"There really are such skills in this world, but they don't exist in Cathysia. This was the work of a mysterious power from overseas," answered Jack, his fists tightening as he did. "We had already killed their people before, but I'm not sure if there are still people in this group or even how many still live on."

The Third Elder thought about it before folding his hands behind his back and firmly said, "I object to you using the Cyro Pearl on your brother."

Chapter 1074

Jack did not expect that the Third elder would fail to contain himself and stepped forward to make him look bad.

He smiled indifferently and stared at the Third Elder who stood high up on the observation stage.“ Really?" challenged Jack. "Please explain why you're objecting to my choice?"

The Third Elder then replied, "It's simple. This Cyro Pearl is a treasure we've obtained with much difficulty, so it's best if we use it with care. We need to think about its value before we use it. No harm is done if we're to use the Cyro Pearl on the family master or other important people of the White family." He let that sink before he added, "But to use it on your brother, an outsider... It doesn't seem to fit, now does it?"

Noticing Jack's silence, he then continued, "This is only one of the reasons. The second one is because the Cyro Pearl has no healing properties. Apart from sealing a person in ice and keeping a dead person somewhat alive, it has no other effects. Even if you seal this friend of yours right now, do you have ways to treat him later on? He won't escape the fate of dying if you don' t have the means to treat him after you unseal him."

At the same time, Lily also laughed and stood up. "That's right. Putting the fact that you're using this on an outsider aside, the most crucial point is if you can revive a puppet. Haha..! I'd say that's rather impossible. It's better that you end that once and for all."

Many people started discussing among themselves after they heard what the Third Elder and Lily said, sharing their opinion that it was indeed wasteful to use such a treasure on an outsider when there was no definite way of saving that person.

Apart from that, there was only one Cyro Pearl, and it would be gone after it was used.

Jack smiled and said, "Firstly, I've won the competition, and the Cyo Pearl is my reward. Am I not right to say that nobody has the right to interfere with how I use this pearl or who I use it on? Secondly, I'll definitely search for a way to cure my brother after I've frozen him. How I treat him seems to have nothing to do with you."

“Haha... You've got a point, Young Master Jack. Indeed, we have no right to intervene since this item

belongs to you, and based on the rules, you can use it however you like. I'm merely providing a suggestion, and you can choose to ignore the suggestions from us, the elders." Wade chuckled aloud, satisfied with Jack's reply.

He knew Jack would not just give up on saving his friend.

However, the other Elders and everyone else would naturally have some comments based on what Jack had said. They would feel that Jack liked to do things his way without thinking about the bigger picture or listening to the recommendations from other people. A person with such characteristics was naturally unsuited to be the future family master.

The reason Wade stood forward and said the things he did was to lead Jack so he would leave a bad impression in the hearts of the other Elders.

Chapter 1075

Nash was not stupid; he noticed what Wade was trying to do. He smiled and stood up. "To be honest, the Cyro Pearl is a treasure when we say that it is because it can freeze up an area the size of a room. Even if you're a dying man, it can also remain the person's condition after being frozen with the Cyro Pearl. However, this pearl can also not be considered a treasure as it has no healing properties. It doesn't have any other functions apart from freezing things up."

Many people nodded after they heard what Nash said seemed as though this Cyro Pearl was not such an extremely important object after all.

Once the noises of the people's discussions died down, Nash continued, "Apart from that, we're one of the eight reclusive families, and we need to keep our promises. Since we've promised to give this pearl to the champion and Jack won the competition, the pearl belongs to him. He's entitled to do whatever he wants with it. Don't that make sense, everyone?"

"Yes, Master is right. I feel that this belongs to Jack, so on what grounds can we interfere with how he uses it? If it was mine, I'd use it based on my needs!" said the Seventh Elder confidently once he stood up. "Young Master Jack is so talented at such a young age. To me, Young Master Jack is the true treasure.

He returned regardless of previous unpleasantries and became our family master's inheritor. Compared to the Cyro Pearl, Young Master Jack is the treasure with unlimited possibilities that the gods gave us!"

The Sixth Elder was slightly stunned, but he also stepped forward and smilingly said, "Yes, Young Master Jack is really talented. Young Master Lance isn' t here today, but I don't think he could receive the attack we've just seen if he's here."

Meanwhile, a branch family master also stood up and chimed in, "Yes, we strongly support Young Master Jack. Young Master Jack is so talented, and we' re convinced that he becomes the family master's inheritor. I believe that with Young Master Jack's talents, it'll only take him another one to two years to break through and achieve the primary stage of the real god-level!"

The corners of the Third Elder's mouth twitched several times when he heard this. These people must have stood forward with such an attitude because Jack was the current inheritor.

They wanted to please Jack as he would be the future family master once Nash would pass on.

After all, if they stood forward and spoke on Jack's behalf, they would become closer to Jack and he would remember them. Their future lives would be much better then.

Lily, who was by their side, had a darkened expression on her face." What you're saying is too overboard," she seethed. "Isn't my son, Lance, talented as well? Haha ... My son might have reached the true god-level by now. After all, he' s only one step away from the true god-level, and he's been away from home for two to three months. How can Jack be his opponent if he had already achieved the true god-level?"

"What the eldest madam says makes sense. If Young Master Lance is back, the competition would be a fight between two great masters!" A man from the Lagorio family, who happened to be an elder, slightly smiled as he spoke. "Nobody could anticipate the results, and we can only say that Jack is lucky. After all, the condition of our Young Master Lance is still unknown!"

"Alright, let's stop discussing this and settle down on what happened today. Now that the competition has ended and Jack is the inheritor, he can do what he wants with the Cyro Pearl. Let's stop this gathering." Nash waved his hand and gestured for everybody to leave.NSW Chapter 1076-1080

Chapter 1076

"Congratulations! Congratulations! Congratulations to Young Master Jack for becoming the inheritor to our family master!"

Many people started leaving. Jack had just come down from the competition stage when some masters of the branch family immediately surrounded Jack to congratulate him.

Another old man with white hair also walked forward to Jack, gesturing politely as he praised, "Indeed! It must've been difficult for you to rise from the common world, Young Master Jack. It's really rare to have such talents. Truly, you'll lead the White family on a glorious path!"

"Oh, yes, I'm not very clear about certain situations in the branch families. If any of you are free, please stay and leave tomorrow We'll have a gathering at my place and talk about the issues among the branch family while we drink. After all, I've just returned to the White family, and there are many things that I don't understand," commented Jack as he smiled to the crowd.

"Sure! Haha... Then I, Lancelot White am staying, and I'll only head home tomorrow so I can have a drink or two with Young Master Jack!" replied Lancelot, chuckling as he did. The eyes of this branch family master lit up when he heard what Jack said.

After all, every previous member of the main family was arrogant and never paid heed to suggestions from the branch families. Was it possible that Young Master Jack planned to start caring about the branch families' situation? If that was the case, that would be miraculous how members of the main family paid more attention to the branch families!

The branch families, in their own rights, had many prodigies among them, but they had limited resources for enhancing their martial status--they had to hand in most of their materials, after all. As a result, prodigies of the branch families were neglected.

Jack thought about it and said to the crowd, "Sure! Anybody who wants to come over can come, but make sure that there aren't too many of you as my living quarters can't contain so many people. Moreover, too many of you might attract unnecessary attention, and I'm afraid of what others would say."

The branch family masters were no fools. After all, Jack had just returned, and although he became the inheritor of the family master with his own strength, there were many among the branch families who did not want him to be the inheritor. People like Lily were obviously unhappy about Jack inheriting this position.

However, the rules and notices of this competition had been announced previously. Coupled with the fact that this was an extremely fair-and-square way, most of the people approved this competition and accepted the competition's outcome. Hence, Lily and the others dared not say anything even though they were inwardly displeased. They could do nothing else but accept the result.

"Alright, I need to head back now and see my friend. Let's meet tonight. It'll be easier when the sky turns dark." Jack smiled and soon asked the branch family members to leave.

Jack did not want to inherit the White family master's position, but it was clear that those who poisoned his father did not want him to be this inheritor. Jack thus decided to take up the mantle, and he would excel stellarly in it. In that case, the other party would definitely want to kill him.

It would be easier for the other party to unmask their true identities under such circumstances. By then, he would be able to identify if it was Lily and the others. He could think of a way to kill these people once their identities were revealed.

Chapter 1077

After the members from the branch families left, Elaine, Selena, and the others walked toward Jack.

Selena came closer and smilingly gushed, "Congratulations, Honey, you're now the family master

inheritor. You've gone up the ranks, and rather highly at that!"

"There's nothing worth congratulating me for. To be honest, I didn't want to be the inheritor." Jack smiled bitterly. "However, to get this Cyro Pearl and find out the person who poisoned my father, I've no other choice but to take up the family master title."

"Hey, this is such an important thing. You're the family master inheritor now, and that means you 're the future White family master!" Ben stared at Jack. "Many people wished for something as good as this to happen to them, but you, on the other hand, are reluctant! Think about it! My sister and I won't lack resources for enhancing martial statuses once you inherit the title!"

"Don't worry, you won't lack materials even if I don't be the family master inheritor," assured Jack. "After all, martial artists don 't need so much resources for the enhancement of martial status. I can get several Chi Congregation Pills as I'm a member of the White main family!"

"That won't work," Elaine chimed in afterward. "Think about it... They dared send people to assassinate you when you were outside. They won't have the guts to harm you if you're the family master inheritor, even though they desperately want to kill you. You're safe in the White main family! However, if you're not the family master inheritor, some people might not give you face!" Elaine paused here before continuing to speak with a bitter smile on her face, "However, they wanted to get rid of you before you returned. They're probably getting antsy now that you're here, just wanting to get rid of you."

"Yes, Jack. It's best if you don't simply leave the White main family. At least the Eldest Elder and Second Elder would protect you when you're still at the main family. We'd be in trouble if you sneak out by yourself!" Lana, who was beside them, also reminded Jack.

"Alright, I understand, but I don't feel that normal people can kill me with my martial level!" Jack gave a small smile as he tightened his fists. "Fighting with these people today made me understand my combat power even more. I feel like I won't have a problem killing people of other levels with my combat power! It seems like the training technique we've used is no low-level technique!"

"Yes, now let's go. We need to visit Fernando and use this Cyro Pearl soon. I'm afraid that your senior won't hold on if we don't use it quickly."

.....

Jack led everyone to a cave.

There was a stone room inside the cave, and many White family members stood quard at the entrance.

Inside, Fernando lied on a stone bed as Ethan kept watch silently.

Ethan broke into a smile when he saw Jack coming over. "Master, how did it go? You must've succeeded with your martial level! I've analyzed Senior's situation again, and his breath is rather weak. If we don't freeze him now, he might not make it tomorrow."

Jack nodded. He flipped his hand and took the Cyro Pearl out. "I've gotten the item. Let's freeze him now."

Chapter 1078

Jack walked forward to inspect Fernando's form afterward, noticing that his breath of life had indeed weakened. If they did not freeze him, it would be impossible to save him the following day.

They were fortunate that the old man from the mysterious group was in a hurry to kill him and the others, so he did not linger to wait for Fernando to be a complete puppet. He used Fernando in his fights when Fernando still had a slight sense of intelligence and breath of life.

If the other party had waited a couple more days for Fernando's breath of life to completely disappear before using him in battles, Fernando would have been dead.

Jack's eyes turned red when he thought of Fernando--the man who once made great achievements on the battlefieldhad fallen into such a poor state.

Exhaling heavily, Jack took the Cyro Pearl, gently opened Fernando's mouth, and placed the pearl into his mouth,

Once done, Jack tapped one of his fingers on the pearl, and strands of Chi appeared from his fingertip into the Cyro Pearl with his thoughts.

With the Chi entering the Cyro Pearl, it slowly emitted a faint blue light.

As the blue light grew stronger, Jack removed his finger and stood up.

The light shone as ice crystals emerged continuously. The temperature of their surroundings also started to drop.

"Go, step back."

Jack relaxed when he saw Fernando's body frozen little by little. The ice crystals gradually increased and thickened.

Jack had no methods of curing Fernando, but at least he would not perish in his frozen status. Of course, Jack had to come up with a method to heal Fernando.

Not long later, Fernando's entire stone bed was frozen and he was entombed as though it was an ice coffin.

"Incredible... I had no idea that the pearl would be that useful!" blurted Ben at the sight of how the pearl worked. "There really are all sorts of precious items in this world. Such a precious item must be worth lots of money if we sell it in an auction!"

Elaine rolled her eyes at him in response. "Who'd sell such a precious item? They'd be a fool to do that."

Jack smiled bitterly and said, "It's not worth that much because this item can only be used once. The pearl would disappear when the ice coffin is opened."

Selena, who was beside, thought about it and asked, "But Honey, Lily and the others are malicious people. What if they come in and destroy this ice coffin when nobody is here? Won't that be a grave problem?"

Jack's heart was filled with a warm feeling when he saw Selena' s worried face, and he smilingly assured, "This isn't just a regular treasure. Once this ice coffin freezes Fernando, nobody would be able to destroy it. Even a master of the true god-level won't be able to forcefully destroy the coffin. How could it be the White family's treasure if that's not the case?"

"Oh my.. It's that amazing? It's really that strong?" Ben exclaimed when he heard what Jack said. However, he soon frowned again and said, "How should we undo this freeze on Fernando when you find a way to heal him in the future?"

Chapter 1079

To Ben's question, Jack explained, "When I inserted the Chi, I inserted a strand of my mental strength into it. You guys still can't use this mental strength yet at the moment. This mental strength is an invisible and mysterious power. You guys can't see it, and you can only feel and use it after reaching the true godlevel."

"If I want to undo this freeze, I just need to connect to the Cyro Pearl through my thoughts. The freeze would be undone after I communicated with it."

"Alright, we should leave. This place is ice-cold right now!"

"We're fine, but you and Selena are not martial artists yet, so your body quality is bad when compared to us," stated Jack." You might get a cold if you stay here too long."

The group soon walked out of the cave.

Ethan thought about it before asking Jack, "But Master, we can only prevent Fernando from dying right now, it'd be difficult if we want to heal him. His body has totally stiffened, and so have his muscles and stones. He's like a stone right now. How are we going to save him? I'm out of ideas, really."

Jack smiled bitterly before speaking, "Truthfully, I don't know myself, and all I can do right now is stop him from dying."

Jack's reply flustered everyone else. They had no idea that even Jack had not thought of ways to save Fernando.

"How's that possible? Does that mean we'll have to keep him frozen forever? That's no different than dying." Ben could not help but smiled bitterly as he followed Jack on the way back.

"That won't happen. I know a family who has a precious item-a medical book. I heard that this book is very powerful, and there's a possibility for us to find ways from the book."

Jack fell silent for a moment as he thought of something, a tight smile appearing on his face afterward. "Sadly, we're in trouble because the White family has a bad relationship with this family, and we can be considered as enemies. The most crucial point is that they're one of the eight reclusive families, and they're very strong. They might not show us the medical book."

Ben felt that he was in trouble after he heard this.

"Sigh... Let's talk about it later. At least Fernando is still alive now, and I'll try anything as long as there's hope!" Jack sighed again and said, "What we need to do now is to wash your bodies and make you martial artists before leading you guys onto the path of training. Apart from that, there's also my father's poison. I already know what medication I need to help cure my father based on his body's condition, but finding those herbs are difficult."

"Yes, we can halt with Fernando's issue right now as it's not that urgent. However, we need to think of a way to help treat your father." Ethan also nodded after he heard what Jack said.

"I have several herbs with me, but I 'm still short of a few others. Of course, I'll try my best to think of a way to resolve my father's ailment." Jack smiled.

The group soon arrived at their living quarters.

Chapter 1080

Meanwhile, Lily was seething in her room, feeling as though her heart was blocked by something." I'm furious! This bastard kid actually has such high fighting prowess, and he even knows a second-grade intermediate martial skill. Oh, that boils my blood!"

Lily had thought of asking Hudson and the others to kill Jack during the martial arts competition, they could say that their hands slipped or that they failed to control their power.

Even if they failed to kill Jack, they could have at least stopped him from becoming the champion and obtaining the family master's inheritor.

It was to everyone's bewilderment that that young man managed to suppress everybody in that competition and obtained the position the family master acknowledged. He even obtained the White family treasure, Cyro Pearl.

"Who knows where that wretch got such a martial skill!" The Third Elder sat by the table in the room and drank a mouthful of white liquor. He then growled, "I estimate that this young man's martial level is already at the peak stage of the semi-god level. Together with the second-grade intermediate martial skill, it really was easy for him to be the competition's champion."

"It seems like his technique is very powerful, too, and it's no surprise he won with that martial skill of his!" fumed Lily, her expression darkening as she did." What infuriates me more is how some of the elders are behaving. Jack's yet to be the official family master, yet they buttered him and flattered him since he's the family master inheritor!"

"Well, what can we do?" said Wade with a smirk. "Everybody knows that although Jack is the family master inheritor, Nash won't live for much longer. In fact, it'll be a miracle if he lived for another two months! Hence, they naturally think that Jack will soon become the family master. This is why they want to flatter him before that happens."

"We must kill Jack, though that guy surely won't leave the White family. We can't take any actions as long as he stays with the White family." Lily frowned as she could not think of a way right now.

"Haha... Jack is really talented, but his martial level is still rather bland. He's not something we should worry about, considering he won't impede us much!" Wade laughed at this moment and said," Although his return had disrupted our plans, his martial level is too low, so he won't bring much effect. The person we need to worry about right now is the First Elder. I feel that I should concentrate on retreating and training. We'd have no need to fear the First Elder once I reached the fighting prowess at the peak stage of the true god-level!"

"Sigh... Seems like that's the only option we have right now," Lily sighed, her heart filled with helplessness.

Evening came...

As darkness filled the sky, several branch family masters came to Jack's living quarters silently with elders of the branch families.

Jack had already prepared good food and wine on the table as he waited for them.

"Oh my... Young Master Jack, this is too much! You've prepared so much food!" The white hair old man chuckled heartily at the sight.

"Haha... Elaine said that this is the meat of monster beasts, and consuming it benefits the body. I definitely need to eat more today!" There were two tables in the garden. Ben laughed when he saw the meat on the table and his saliva almost dripped from his mouth.

What Jack said next, however, seized him. "You, Selena, and my mother need to eat less. Although this meat is beneficial, your body can't take it if you eat too much, considering you guys are not martial artists yet and this is your first time eating this. Sure, these monster beasts are low-leveled, but don't eat too much of it."NSW Chapter 1081-1085

Chapter 1081

Elaine nodded to Jack's reminder and chimed in, "That's right. You can't eat too much!"

"Oh, dear…This meat smells so good, but we can't eat too much of it," grumbled Ben as he swallowed his saliva.

"Everybody, come and take your seats. There's no need for any formalities!" Jack smiled and said to the masters of the branch families. "We're all members of the White family and, by right, makes us one whole family Everybody must enjoy themselves when we drink later, alright?"

"Yes, yes! Young Master is correct!" Everybody sat down smiling and started drinking.

After a while, Jack turned to Lancelot and said, "By the way. Lancelot, is everything alright within the branch families? Let me know if there's anything to be done. I'm not very familiar with the situation among the branch families."

Lancelot opened his mouth as he hesitated to speak openly, and he instinctively glanced at the other branch family masters.

They looked like they wanted to speak but were afraid to do so.

Jack immediately comforted them when he saw their reactions. "Don't worry. Just speak openly. I won't tell anybody, so you don't need to worry too much."

Lancelot was quiet for several seconds before he began, “Young Master, how should I put it? The branch families had always been supporting the main family. Even the monster beast meat that you’ re eating comes from the beasts that we’ve hunted in the forest. We sacrifice our lives every month, supplying and sending the meat. Apart from that, we also supply spirited grass. These are the things we supply, and we make sure that we supply those of good quality. We genuinely hope that the main family can grow stronger.”

Lancelot paused here, glanced at the crowd and added, “Truthfully. This is nothing because the main family has grown strong, and we’ re satisfied with the development of the main family.”

“If that’s the case, what do you actually wish to say?” Jack frowned and continued to push on the matter.

Lancelot replied, “Yet… The White family seldom cares about our situation after it grew in these couple of years. Not only did they not spare us some martial enhancement resources, but they even requested for more!”

Chad, the old man with white hair, also nodded. “Yes, we only needed to send in fifty percent of what we got in the beginning, but it gradually increased to sixty or seventy percent in recent years. We didn’t complain about anything, but several months ago they increased our requirement to eighty percent. If we’re lucky enough to get a hundred spirited grass, we need to give eighty pieces to the main family and can only keep the remaining twenty for ourselves!”

“You had to hand in that much?” Jack’s face darkened when he heard this-that went too far. After all, these people from the branch families risked their lives and went into the forest to find spirited grass and food, yet the main family only allowed them to keep 20 percent of what they obtained. The grievance in their hearts would only deepen if this continued

Jack thought about it before he solemnly asked, “Does my father know about this?”

Chapter 1082

“We don’t know if the master knows about this, and we dared not ask. We’re afraid of offending others if we ask too many questions.” The old man was one of the branch family masters. He spoke with a frown, and helplessness was written all over his face.

It was apparent that they feared the main family members while wanting to get more martial enhancement resources for the branch families.

“Who’s in charge of these things? Questioned Jack.

“First Elder was in charge when the requirement was fifty percent, but he then had to manage other things, thus Third Elder was placed in charge of the matter.” Lancelot smiled. “Not long after he was tasked with managing the martial enhancement resources, he told us that the upper management decided to raise it to sixty percent, concluded in a meeting.”

“He said that the main family had developed well and many of their youngsters had breakthroughs. We were asked to be considerate toward the main family and sacrifice a bit more. They also said that they’ll let us keep some of the resources after the family master gets better.”

Chad, the old man with white hair, also nodded. “Yes, and we understood the difficulties the family master faced. After all, it was best to concentrate the resources and let a small amount of people breakthrough, and that’s why no one said anything. Alas, the amount increased again not long after that.”

Another old man chimed in, “Yes. Several people voiced their unhappiness when the requirement rose to seventy percent, but the Third Elder killed them in front of everybody else. He was furious, indeed, saying that the branch family members are inconsiderate and even said that we’re supposed to serve the main family!”

These people from the branch families were obviously angry but they dared not say it out loud. They could only hold it in as there was strict management between the main and branch families.

A thought then occurred to Jack as he prodded, “By the way, are these resources safely kept by the Third Elder after they’re collected?”

He finally understood what was going in. He seriously suspected that the non-stop increase in the resources submission from the branch families was not his father’ s idea, and it was the Third Elder’s action alone.

The Third Elder was afraid that his actions would be exposed, which was why he killed those against the requirement and him, effectively silencing the branch family members despite their anger.

Apart from that, the branch families were far away from the main family, and it was difficult for them to come to the main family under normal circumstances. Even if they were to come, they might not be able to meet anyone from the main family.

Moreover, they feared that that was what the main family wanted and that the Third Elder would kill them, so they could only keep themselves in check and endured it throughout the years.

Jack felt that the reason they could muster their courage and tell him what happened was that he was not a member of the main family before this, and it helped that he himself invited them to stay for drinks and share whatever they had in mind.

These family masters were brave enough to tell him everything because of that.

Lancelot said, “Our family master must be afraid that if only one person was placed in charge of these things, embezzlement might take place, thus the Third Elder is only in charge of collecting these resources. He would need to submit these resources to the First Madam-she ‘s in charge of allocating the resources and doing the accounts, after all.”

Jack’s expression darkened when he heard that, and everything clicked for him.

Chapter 1083

Today, the Third Elder had openly spoken on Lily's behalf, and coupled with that were the rumors about how close they were as of late. This made him sure that Lily and the Third Elder were working together and were responsible for poisoning his father.

It seemed like that was not all. They must have worked together to embezzle lots of martial enhancement resources.

A few of the branch family masters were rather unnerved when they noted how silent Jack was with a grave expression.

One of the branch family elder immediately shifted the conversation and said, "Young Master Jack, don't misunderstand us. We're saying this without resentment, just to get things off of our chests. We feel that the branch families lack martial enhancement resources, nothing more than that!"

Another of the branch family masters said, "Come, let's drink, Young Master Jack. We never suspected Third Elder and First Madam, especially First Madam. She's the family master's wife, so we're sure that she won't do something like this!"

Lancelot was also afraid of Jack getting angry and that everything was really the main family's idea. He quickly held his wine glass up. "Yes, Young Master Jack. We're only talking about it and we dare not make assumptions. Apart from that, the main family had finally one of the eight reclusive families. We're happy that the family has grown!"

Jack looked at the crowd before saying. "Don't be afraid. I invited everyone here so I can hear your concerns and pleas. I'm not sure why they collected that many martial enhancement resources, and I'm also unsure if this is the decision my father and the other elders came to after the meeting. I' ll ask about this on everyone's behalf."

Startled, Chad blurted, "No, no, no…..! Young Master Jack, if you're to ask, the Third Elder and First Madam will be downright enraged when they know about this. It won' t matter what's going on, we'd be killed!"

“That’s right, Young Master Jack,” Lancelot added. “If you asked, and if this truly was the decision everybody made in the meeting, the Third Elder would be unhappy and say that we conspired against him. However, if this was not the decision made by the main family members and somebody was hiding the martial enhancement resources, they’d be just as angry, and we’d still suffer the fate of being killed.”

Jack smiled and raised his wine glass when he saw the frightened expression on the other party’s face. “Come, let’s raise our glasses and finish this drink!”

The group of people glanced at each other anxiously, not knowing what Jack was thinking. They carefully finished the wine in their glasses when they saw how Jack finished his.

Jack placed the glass down and said softly, “Don’t worry, I’m not stupid. I’ll secretly ask my father about this, and I won’t let the Third Elder and First Madam know about it.”

The branch family members relaxed when they heard what Jack said.

“Thank you, Young Master Jack!” Lancelot immediately gestured to Jack with a sincere expression on his face.

“Master Lancelot, how about this. Tomorrow, find a place to gather after all of you leave the main family area. Master Lancelot should come to me alone tomorrow morning. I’ll inform you about the situation, and you can pass the message to the others.”

Jack spoke to the people in the room, convicted and with sincerity, “I’ll ask my father about what you said, and we’ll soon know what really happened. I won’ t let the Third Elder and the others know about this plan. We’ll definitely handle the situation if the Third Elder and First Madam embezzled the martial enhancement resources.”

Chapter 1084

“Then, Young Master Jack, we thank you for your attentiveness to act. In fact, we just need to complain and express ourselves. We don’t need anything else!” explained an old man, carefully so. “The main reason is because there are no other ways. In fact, we have prodigies among the branch families, talented to boot, but we’re lacking resources. Dare we say that the materials we’ve got are downright scarce, and that resulted in a slow progression of their martial level. Alas, all we could do was look on in worry.”

Lancelot also nodded. “The same applies to our branch family. Those geniuses are very unconvinced and complain all the time. After all, they can find better treasures and spirited grass if their martial level increases. We could do nothing to help them, only offering words of consolation when they’re doubting.”

The white-haired old man also nodded. “That’s true. I promised my granddaughter before I came over this time that I’ll man up to tell members of the White main family. I didn’t keep my hopes up, though, since I didn’t know who to talk to or who to tell. I’m afraid!”

Having said that, the white-haired old man paused and glanced at Jack before he continued, “I have to thank Young Master Jack for making such a request. We discussed it and decided to tell you our concerns.”

Lancelot raised his wine glass and gave a toast to Jack. Finishing his wine in one go, he spoke, “Young Master Jack, as the White family master inheritor, you’ve honored us by inviting us to dinner. If you find this issue complicated, it’ll be fine if you don’t say anything. Kindly just disregard what we’ve said.”

Jack was very emotional when he heard these words.

There seemed to be a huge status divide between the branch and main families. Otherwise, these men from the branch families would not have been that afraid to express their worries nor would they have said such humble words.

They really wanted to tell Jack about these things as they really hoped that somebody would perform

justice for them and take care of them.

However, at the same time, their hearts were filled with fearafraid of invoking the wrath of their master. They were afraid that the Third Elder and Lily would find out about this and find trouble with the branch families. That would be the end for them.

“Don’t worry, I understand.” Jack smiled and drank the wine in his glass before he continued, “I’ll try my best. Don’t worry, it’ll get better soon. There will be new rules that are beneficial for you people.”

“Thank you, Young Master Jack! Allow me to raise a toast in your honor!” The white-haired old man was intensely moved when he heard Jack’s conviction. There were obviously very few who could understand them who were from the branch families.

Before they came, they hesitated for a long while about telling him everything that happened, afraid that Jack might be upset or even lie to them somehow. They were also worried that Jack would be afraid of the Third Elder and Lily

It looked like Jack truly was considerate for them.

A thought then occurred to Lancelot as he slowly began, “By the way, Young Master Jack, the Third Elder has a high martial level, and Lily is your father’s first wife. You have to be careful. When I watched today’s game, First Madam didn’t seem to like you very much. Your return and everything that happened had been too sudden. I’m afraid that they won’t accept you so much in their hearts!”

After all, they had seen a lot of people fighting civil wars just for the sake of power.

“Don’t worry, I know. Come, come, let’s drink!” Jack nodded.

The group of people drank for a while before gradually leaving.

Chapter 1085

The branch family masters came to a rather secluded pavilion and sat there after leaving Jack's living quarters.

One of them then spoke, "Everyone, do you think we can rely on Young Master Jack? It concerns me, seeing as he had just returned to the White family. I think that many people can't accept him yet, and Lily might work against him. Moreover, he's yet to settle down. Do you think he can truly help us?"

Another old man smilingly replied, "It matters not to me if he can help us or not. It was already difficult for him to say what he said today, but he even invited us for a meal to boot. I've already kept my opinion to myself for a very long time. I feel much more comfortable after I say it out."

"Haha... Exactly! I feel much at ease too!" Lancelot laughed. He then said, "How about this: Let's all slowly leave the main family tomorrow morning. You can wait for me at the bottom of Dragon Mountain, which isn't far from the main family. I'll go talk to Jack tomorrow and see what he says. After all, he did tell me to see him alone tomorrow morning."

Chad frowned and asked. "It's so late. Would he still go and ask his father about it?"

"That, I don't know, but I'll still go since he said so. I can't just not show up!" Lancelot smiled bitterly. "Go back and sleep early. I hope that Jack can prosper continuously. If he can grow up successfully and be the family master, better days truly are ahead of us."

After the group of branch family members left, Jack came to where Nash lived.

"Greetings, Young Master!" As he arrived at the door, two young men who were guarding the door greeted him loudly, their eyes filled with respect.

"Yes, thank you for your hard work!" Jack nodded before he continued to walk.

Before Jack entered the room, Jack heard that Nash was having a chat with Joan.

He stopped in his tracks and listened intently.

"Jo, I'm sorry for what happened to you both over the years. Sigh! I don't know how to make it up to you two... Had the butler not told me anything, I wouldn't have known that you didn't receive the money I've sent for you. I also didn 't know that Jack didn't get the martial art technique and martial enhancement resources I sent!" Nash, who was lying on the bed, sighed and continued to speak, "I don't think that it'll be easy to cure my poison. I'm not afraid of dying, but I'm genuinely afraid that Lily or the others would work against you and Jack after I die."

Joan smiled bitterly and said," Jack is a great son, and he's very outstanding. He didn't let me down. Although he didn't receive the things that you gave him, he still became the man he is today. I was really worried about him during the five years that he was on the battlefield, but I knew he'd return safe and sound. As expected, he came back and had grown to be who he is today."

"Thanks to you. It was you who brought our son up to be such an excellent person." Nash held Joan' s hand in excitement as he asked, voice laced with ardent affection, "Jo, do you hate me? Do you hate my incompetence years ago?"NSW Chapter 1086-1090

Chapter 1086

Joan gave a bitter smile. “Why should I hate you?” she said. “I did hate you at the start-I hated how weak you were, and how you couldn’t take care of us!”

Here, she heaved a sigh and stood up. “But I no longer hate you. I know that you truly love me, and I can feel your sincerity,” she continued. “I also understand your helplessness. You are in this position after all. And your father and your family would never have approved of us even back then. Besides, as the master of the family, you must always take the White family into account!”

“Thank you, Joan. Thank you for being so understanding and forgiving!”

Nash's eyes reddened. "Or may be this is God's punishment, to make me, the master of the White family, die on a bed instead of a battlefield," he added. "I thought of plenty of ways I could die, but I never thought that I would be poisoned!"

Joan turned around and looked at Nash, smiling. "Don't be so pessimistic. Jack's very skilled in medicine. I believe that there will be a way to find an antidote, I believe that he'll find a way!"

"I don't think it'll be easy. It's extremely difficult to find a poison that can successfully take effect on a chi practitioner, what more a chi practitioner like me means that this poison is very lethal!"

Nash flashed a bitter smile. "Jack probably said that earlier to console me and for me to know of the truth. Are all of you on it too? All of you are probably well aware that there's no way of finding an antidote for this poison. I'm not afraid of dying, to be honest. I'm already contented because I got to see you and our brilliant son before I die!"

"Tsk tsk. Aren't you being too sentimental for a grown man?"

No one expected Jack to walk in at this moment. He studied his father, who was lying on the bed. Don't worry. I didn't give up on Fernando even when his condition was so serious," he said. "It'll be difficult to find the ingredients for the antidote, but I'll get it. I already know how to treat you. So long as we get those ingredients, the antidote won't be a problem!"

Nash was stunned. "When did you arrive?" he asked Jack.

Jack was speechless for a while. He thought for a moment before lying, "I had just arrived at the door when I heard you voicing your woes, talking about how the poison has no cure to. How little faith you have in your son!"

"Really? Hah. I don't have to worry about anything with you around. I trust you!" Nash laughed. He thought for a while before saying, "Oh, right. Why aren't you asleep yet, Jack? You must be here to talk

about something!”

“Bingo. I have something to talk to you about!”

Jack replied, smiling, “All right. I’ll go back and rest first. I’ll give you two some time alone!”

Joan’s lips curved into a soft smile when she looked at Jack, then she left.

“Did you use the Cryo Pearl?”

Nash asked after Joan left.

“I did. The results are promising. It completely encased Fernand in ice!”

Jack bobbed his head and sat down by the bedside. “Father, how much tithes do we receive from the branch families every year?” he asked Nash.

Delight leaped in Nash’s heart. If Jack was starting to show concern about the White family’s matters, it seemed that he was intent on making it his own family now.

Otherwise, he would never ask about the White family matters.

Chapter 1087

Nash flashed a grin. "Well, we've always made them pay 50 percent. But we've raised this by 10 percent in recent years for the sake of developing the main family, so they give 60 percent. There's no way about it though. The branch family members have to make some sacrifices to help some of us get stronger."

Here, appreciation crossed Nash's expression. "The branch family members are pretty good. The Third Elder said it himself, they truly understand us, and they fully cooperate with us. They even give the best-spirited grass to us. I' m thinking of reverting the tithing to 50 percent after the main family is more stabilized."

It was just as Jack had thought it would be. The Third Elder and Lily had been lying to everyone by taking plenty of resources for the enhancement of martial status for themselves.

"So you've never increased the tithing after raising it to 60 percent? Not even once?"

Jack asked again just to make sure.

"No!"

Nash did not think twice before answering, "60 percent is plenty enough. The other big families only make their branch families give 50 percent. Sometimes, people from the main family will even help to find resources. But here, we wanted everyone to focus on their training and get stronger. That's why we had the branch families find the resources and give 60 percent to us!"

After he said that, Nash also realized that something was amiss. Jack would not have come over in the middle of the night if there were no problems. Why did he ask such questions anyway?

A crease formed between his brows. "What did you hear, Jack?" he tentatively asked his son." What do you know?"

Jack bobbed his head. "Father you have to promise me that you will not breathe a single word about this to the Third Elder and Lily!"

"Don't worry. I'm not a chatterbox! I'm discrete enough to keep a secret!"

Nash offered a smile. "Don't tell me that they've secretly made the branch families give more resources?" he guessed.

"Why should they stop at some? They made the branch families give 70 percent before, and now they've raised it to 80 percent. The branch families barely have anything for themselves, and they' re afraid that we'll continue to raise the tithe-and they won't be able to survive then. But they've held their dissent in, all this while. They told me in secret just today!"

Jack was extremely furious. He clenched his fists.

"No way!"

Nash was furious as well after he heard this. He clenched his fists and yelled.

"Pfft!"

However, just as he said that a surge of blood spat out of his mouth. Color immediately leached from his face.

"Don't be angry, Father. Your body is weak now. The medicine I gave you can suppress your symptoms for a while, but not for long either Please don't get mad, or your condition will worsen!"

Jack was shocked when he saw this. He quickly grabbed a tissue to wipe any traces of blood away from the corners of Nash's mouth.

"This blood is nothing, my son when I have you taking care of me."

Nash looked at Jack, elated.

Chapter 1088

When he heard this, warmth filled Jack's heart. "Don't worry. I'll help to treat your condition," he said, smiling. "Now I'm suspecting that it was Lily who administered the poison. She already sent assassins after me in Middle Province. Who's to say that she won't do something like this!"

"Ah. She sent assassins after you, and the Ninth Patronum, who are in a good relationship with the Third Elder and the others-was waiting to kill you at the entrance. Furthermore, she joined hands with the Third Elder to take some of the martial art resources for themselves by raising the tithe. They've made their linkage clear before us!"

Jack released a sigh. "I'd be a fool to not believe it even after all this!" he said impatiently.

"What should we do now, Father? I think it'll be difficult. After all, the Third Elder is a powerful chi practitioner. The only one who can probably match him now is the First Elder! That's why we have no way of weeding them out."

"And Lily is no slouch either. More importantly, she's the first daughter of the Lagorio family. We'll thoroughly ruin our relations with the Lagorio family if we kill her. The Lagorio family has fallen, but they're not weak. If we get into a war, there are a few elders from the Lagorio family here that might side with them. So...."

Jack frowned when he considered the situation. He truly felt that there was no easy way to go about this.

If they truly fought, there were plenty of servants from the Lagorio family in the White family who might take their original family's side. Even if the White family emerged victorious from the feud, both sides would take grave blows.

Besides, it had not been easy for the White family to have grown so strong-to finally stand among the Eight Reclusive Families. If they entered a familial war, they would probably drop quite a few ranks in

standing, putting all of their previous effort to waste.

Jack nodded his head in approval after he heard this. "You're truly an intelligent man. You've understood the situation immediately. Ah, it would probably be better if I were healthy! Honestly, I'm not afraid of killing the Third Elder and Lily and I'm certainly not afraid of the White family losing their reputation and strength. If Lily and the others have already done such deeds, it means that they're eager to see us fight the Lagorio family. But I'm afraid that we'll fight against the branch families!"

Jack never thought that Nash would be able to look at the bigger picture while holding his pain in. It made Jack reevaluate his character.

It must have not been easy for this man to become the master of the White family to be able to guide the family, step by step, until they reached where they were now, and to make difficult choices from time to time.

Now, the branch families were being forced to give 80 percent of their martial resources. If this went on, the anger and hatred stoked within them would only grow deeper-until it reaches a boiling point and explodes. By then, everything would be in chaos.

The branch families were no match for people from the main family, but if they chose to fight the main family without regard for their lives, the main family would be unable to bear the consequences.

More importantly, the members of the branch families, as well as the forces attached to the White family, totaled to about six or seventy percent.

"Father, let us not act first. We'll just pretend that we don't know anything. I'll first think of a way to find the antidote for you. Your fighting skills are probably stronger than the Third Elder. So long as you get better, we can at least suppress the Third Elder!"

Jack went silent for a while before continuing, "Or we could hold a meeting to have the responsibility of receiving and making records of the tithes to someone else! What do you think?"

Chapter 1089

Nash frowned, deep in thought.

It took a long while before he finally replied, "It's a good idea, Jack, but it's too dangerous. Once we hand the responsibility over to other elders, it's as though we know about how Lily and the other have secretly extorted 70 to 80 percent of martial resources from the branch families. If the other elders know about this, we can't pretend that we are oblivious about it."

Here, Nash paused for a while before continuing, "Once the elders from the main family find out about this, chaos will erupt. We'll enter a war anyway!"

"Ah!"

Jack heaved a sigh. He thought about it before saying, "Then why don't I secretly convey your opinions to the branch families? I' ll get them to hold out for one or two months. We'll revert the tithe to 50 percent after you get better. But I do have an idea to give some benefits to the branch families!"

"Oh? Let's hear it out!"

Nash was delighted after he heard that. He admired Jack's intelligence and ability to remain calm. He believed that the White family will enter an era of prosperity if Jack truly became the master of the house.

"The masters of the branch families all told me that there are plenty of fighting geniuses among their members. Unfortunately, they don't have enough martial resources, so their progress is slow!"

Jack smiled and sat down. "We can get the branch families to pick out two or three young people who they think have potential and let them become members of the main family," he continued. "They'll get to enjoy the martial resources used by the main family then. How about that? This way, the branch

families will have a bit of hope, and this will soothe their dissent for a while!"

"Not bad. Why didn't I think about it before?"

Nash's eyes brightened. "You'll be responsible for these newcomers then. How about that? They'll definitely be grateful to you once they grow up, and they'll be of great help to you. You also know that the highest honor we can have is to achieve the true god status. If you can help some of them attain true god status, they' ll be extremely powerful!"

Jack was speechless. He had just wanted to help the branch families, but Nash had taken it and twisted it into an opportunity for him to rise to the top instead.

However, after he thought about it, he nodded his head anyway. "We'll announce this during tomorrow's meeting. Lily and the others won't have much of a say in it. Besides, the people from the main family have been spending all these years focusing on training. Those geniuses have truly grown stronger, and they've progressed fast, but I think that it's about time that they go out to find resources and treasures for themselves!"

Here, Jack's features lit up in excitement. "I believe that they can only grow stronger after experiencing true bloodshed. People from other main families all go out to find the resources themselves, getting into fights with beasts and spirits alike and struggling to stay alive. Meanwhile, if our people have no fighting experience, they'll have huge targets on their backs even if they train themselves to be of a higher level than that of their opponents!"

Jack was extremely grateful when he heard his son's words.

He cast a solemn look at Jack." You're right. We can't just think about elevating their status. If that 's the case, these fine young disciples from the White family should indeed get some real-world practice!"

Finally, Nash said, "All right, Jack. We'll go along with your plan. I'll announce these two decisions at the meeting tomorrow. Please help me handle the branch families! Get them to hold it out for a while

longer!"

Chapter 1090

"Rest earlier, Father. I'm going back first!"

Jack nodded his head and left.

"Al-alright. My son is truly grown up. And so mature too much more mature than Lance!"

After Jack left, Nash lay on the bed, gratitude written all over his face.

The next morning, the members of the branch family who had stayed the night began to head back.

Everything seemed normal.

However, no one thought that Hudson, who was talking to the two daughters of the White family in a pavilion, would actually observe Lancelot heading toward Jack's place.

"Strange. Why is he going to Jack's place? The rest of the branch family members have already left. Why hasn't he left? Why has he gone to see Jack instead?"

Hudson frowned as he stared at Lancelot's back, suspicion carved on his expression.

He had been thoroughly embarrassed yesterday. He had wanted to kill Jack, but he had not been able to lay even a finger on him before he was eliminated.

He had even thought that Jack would be the last contender in the world to become the champion and

the heir to the White family.

"Heh. Who knows? He's probably going to lick Jack's boots. That guy's the heir now, after all. Everyone knows that the Master won't live long after contracting that strange disease. Jack will become the young master then. Plenty of people will be sucking up to him!"

A woman clad in a purple dress spoke in a sour tone, "No way about it though. The branch families are in such lowly positions. Of course, they would want to gain Jack's favor so that their family will be able to have a better life!"

Hudson bobbed his head. "That's true. That punk is the heir to the White family now. We shouldn't provoke him. We'll put ourselves in a terrible position once he becomes the family head and holds a grudge against us. He'll definitely take his revenge on us!"

"That's right. I never thought that a live-in son-in-law like him would rise up the ranks so quickly. What more, I never thought that an outsider would snatch the heir position when you guys or Lance were poised to take."

The woman answered with a cold smile. It was evident that she was displeased. "It's so unfair!"

The corners of Hudson's lips twitched. "Nothing we can do though. He's the only son-and the only son of Nash, to boot. Plenty of elders from the White family also follow Nash's orders very well, and they all serve him without a shred of doubt. If he were not the only son, he would have never become heir. He might not even have had the chance to take part in the competition!"

"I actually admire him. Think about it. He was raised in the mortal realm. Someone like that must have insane innate talent. Who wouldn't be envious of that!"

The other young woman flashed a small smile. "We just don't know if he'll be able to lead us properly once he becomes the master. After all, the White family is huge. Being the master is a difficult position!"

At that moment, Lancelot had already arrived at Jack's place.

Meanwhile, Jack had risen early He now sat below a tree in the garden, sipping tea from his cup and waiting for Lancelot.

"Greetings, Young Master Jack! never thought that you'd be up this early!"

NSW Chapter 1091-1095

Chapter 1091

Lancelot greeted Jack with a fistto-palm salute as he stepped forward.

"Take a seat!"

Jack gave a wan smile and waited for Lancelot to sit down. "I've already talked to my father about your problem," he said slowly. "We held a meeting to discuss about raising the tithe for the martial resources."

Jack paused here for a while before continuing, "But we only raised it once, increasing it from 50 percent to 60. And we didn't raise it anymore after that. That's why it's obvious that the Third Elder and the Mistress have conspired to take the martial resources you gave!"

"I never thought that they would take it for themselves!"

Although he had long suspected that this was the case, Lancelot was still shocked after Jack confirmed the fact. At the same time, anger sparked in him.

"Then what does the Master want us to do?"

In the end, Lancelot cast a heavy look at Jack. He was aware that although this corruption was confirmed, it was not going to be easy to solve it.

Furthermore, the master was suffering from a strange disease.

It was possible that there were others who wanted his position.

Jack was the current heir, but he was young, and he was not that skilled yet. It would be difficult if the Third Elder wanted to launch a coup now.

Jack returned the look and raised his cup to his lips, taking a tentative sip. "He told you to hold out for a while longer first. Spread the word about this to the other heads of the branch families in secret," he said. "The situation's complicated now. I believe that it' ll get better after two or three months!"

After he heard this disappointment flashed in Lancelot's eyes. Still, he quickly tempered himself and forced a smile. "Thank you, Young Master. Thank goodness that Master knows about who the ones working behind his back are," he said. "He's not in the best condition right now, and the Mistress is the first daughter of the Lagorio family. This is definitely complicated!"

He never thought that Jack would smile at this moment. "However, after discussing a little further with my father, we agreed that every branch family as well as affiliated families are able to choose two or three of their genius youths every month to join the training in the main family, They'll receive the same treatment as the disciples in the main family do!"

"What!"

Lancelot's eyes immediately brightened when he heard this. "Young Master, are you serious?"

"Yes. My father will hold a meeting later. Besides, he'll allow me to take charge of these youths!"

Jack smiled. "Of course, there's something else too. The people from the main family will be tasked with finding food and martial resources in the forest from now on. Firstly, to train them. Secondly, to ensure that they know how to work for things!"

After all, the members of the branch families would definitely benefit from these two initiatives.

Not every member of the branch family would be able to savor the reward, but at least the geniuses would have the chance to take more martial resources they would have the chance to become true fighters.

At least they had hope now.

Chapter 1092

"Heh. Get up first. You're being too polite!"

Jack hastily hauled the other man up. "All right. You can leave now. Everyone should be waiting for the news," he said. “And you've been here for too long. It won't be good if someone else spots us!"

"All right. I'll tell everyone about the good news!"

Lancelot declared excitedly.

"Remember to tell them to keep it a secret. Don't worry. We may not be able to deal with Lily and the Third Elder for now, but I'm sure that my father can settle a matter like this during a meeting!"

Jack reminded him after thinking for a while.

Quickly, Lancelot left, giddy with happiness.

At the foot of a mountain that was not too far from the White family' s residence, the heads and elders of the branch families who had pretended to leave were actually gathering together.

"Ah. I wonder if Lancelot will bring good news to us!"

Chad White, who had a head tufted with white hair, could not help but heave a sigh after waiting a while.

"Heh. Don't worry. He won't bring bad news, that's for sure. Jack is a fine young fellow, but he just officially joined the White family."

"He's the heir, but I think many people won't respect him either. He could be willing to help us, but his hands may be tied!"

Another middle-aged man chuckled. "It's good enough that he can report our grievances to the master," he said. "But I think it' ll be useless even if he told the master everything!"

"That's right. Master has no way of confronting the Third Elder and the Mistress even if he knows what's going on. Furthermore, his physical condition is terrible now!"

A woman said helplessly after thinking about it.

"That's right. It's useless even if Master knows. But it's still better that he knows, rather than not knowing at all. Besides, we don't know if the Third Elder and the Mistress truly conspired to take the martial resources. What if it was Master who ordered them to do so!"

The middle-aged man from before flashed a bitter smile. "So let's not hope too much. The higher your hopes, the bigger your disappointment. It's good enough that Young Master Jack treated us to barbecue and beer yesterday!"

"He's coming!"

At this moment, Chad noticed Lancelot's silhouette. Excitement leaped in his heart.

Lancelot spotted them too and rushed over eagerly.

"What happened? Did Jack spill what happened to us to the master? Were the Third Elder and the Mistress in cahoots to take the martial resources?"

Chad immediately stepped forward when Lancelot came before him. He looked at the other man expectantly.

"He did. Whatever Young Master Jack says he'll do, he will do!"

Lancelot's lips curved into a slight smile. "The master was furious when he found out," he announced to the crowd. "Because the White family only requested to increase the tithe by a small percentage up to 60 percent. They never talked about raising it to 70 or 80 percent!"

"I told you so. Master wouldn't have done something like that. That's why I said that it must have been the Third Elder. He and the Mistress are such wretched people. Why would they want to take so much martial resources for themselves? They won't even be able to finish it!"

Chad stomped his foot, swathed in a righteous aura.

"Then? Does the master have a solution to this?"

Chapter 1093

The middle-aged man from before smiled bittered, and asked somewhat helplessly.

Lancelot turned to the crowd and uttered, “Master White has said it clearly, that he will handle the matter, but not now. Please be patient and give him another two to three months!”

“Another two to three months? How much longer do we have to put up with this? If he can’t handle it right now, what makes him able to do it in two or three months? And I think his body would have turned cold and stiff after two months-he’ll be dead then! By that time, he can finally NE rest’ and not care about anything!”

The middle-aged man had a stomach full of rage and frustration. He barked sarcastically. “We’ve put up with it for so long, how much longer shall we continue enduring the bullsh*t! See, what I’ve been saying? Even if Master White knew about the matter, he certainly can’t do anything! How unreliable!”

“Mason, you can’t shove all the blame onto Nash. He certainly did not want any of these to happen. After all, the devils are the Third Elder and Lily. Master White has to find absolute proof and evidence before he can do anything!”

Although Chad was disappointed at how the matter was handled, he still took Nash’s side and comforted Mason

Lancelot chimed in with a supportive voice, “Guys, stay calm. We know very well ourselves that this matter would be very hard to handle. But we’ve gotten some good news as well. Jack discussed with Master White about this matter and has come out with some good mitigation plans for us. I think Jack and his father are now in a meeting to further discuss the new policies, and soon it’ll be implemented!”

“New policy? What other policy can there be?”

Mason’s mood instantly lifted, and the heavy boulder was finally removed from his heart upon hearing Lancelot’s announcement.

“The new policy is that, these branch families of ours, as well as the forces that are collaborating with the White family, can pick two or three outstanding young martial artists and send them to the main White family every month. They will train there and enjoy the same training resources and facilities as the main White family members!”

“Furthermore, the person in charge of these new policies is no other than Jack!”

Lancelot smiled faintly and articulated clearly to the heads of the White branch family.

“Is that for real? This is good news! With this new policy, the young and talented ones of our branch family can have better resources and facilities to improve their martial art status! At least, in such a way, the talents of those geniuses will not be buried!”

Chad could barely conceal his delight as he heard the news, his face immediately lit up and his spirits lightened.

“Oh ya, there’s one more thing. Jack has said that in the future, he will request the members from the main White family to go into the White and forest to look for resources and materials too!”

Lancelot chuckled brightly, “This way, the people of the branch families can finally hold their heads high during the material foraging in the forest; because they have always been looked down by the other families and dare not fight back. Hence, with some people from the main White family, the situation would improve; we can look out for each other!”

“That’s wonderful! Looks like the people of the main White family have finally started to pay attention to people of White branch families!”

Mason was flabbergasted with joy that his face lit up in an instant as he heard the plan. “Finally, there’s good news for me to bring back to my people, and for once our young geniuses can feel cherished and treasured. I can talk to them in peace now!”

“All these new plans and benefits are what Young Master Jack has done for us; none has thought of these plans before!”

Lancelot's mood lightened as well. "Now, I do sincerely hope that Young Master Jack could improve his martial art status and combat prowess, so that he could put an end to those two satanic scourges. If he becomes the head of the family, it'll be good for the family branches too!"

"That's so true! Young Master Jack has thought of us and tried to help us in every way even when he has yet to establish his own path in the White family. If there' s anything in the future, I'll definitely take his side!"

Chad announced aloud, full of conviction.

Mason patted his chest and echoed loudly with confidence, "That's right! Starting from today, my life belongs to Young Master Jack! Whenever he needs any help, I'll be the first one to offer no matter what!"

"Alright, guys. One more thing, please keep this matter a secret. You may inform your people about the new plans, but don't spread it! As for the corruption behaviors of the Third Elder and Lily, please keep quiet about it. You may tell a few important and trustable elders of your branch, but don't say any words to others! Let's just endure the current situation for a little more. I believe Young Master Jack will fight for us!"

Lancelot wheeled his head toward the direction of the residence of the main White family, gazing afar with deep thoughts. He then left with the crowd.

Chapter 1094

At noon, Nash called for a meeting.

The two new plans that were said before were brought up in the meeting and most of the attendees agreed to them.

Lily, the Third Elder, and two other elders were somewhat against the ideas, however, the majority of the members agreed to the plans. Most of them opined that those branch families had been making

indelible contributions over the years, hence they approved of the new policies. Lily and the gang could not do anything even if they despised the ideas.

After the new policies were set, the matters were passed onto Jack to handle. Beth and Yule would be assisting Jack in this matter.

Lily and the Third Elder left the meeting room in a huff.

They ran into Hudson who was walking toward them on the way back to their residence. They were in deep discussion until Hudson appeared.

"Good day, First Madam! Good day, Third Elder!"

Hudson greeted Lily and Third Elder with a wide grin on his face.

After greeting them, when he was about to continue his walk, he suddenly thought of something else, and then he immediately wheeled around and shouted toward Lily and Third Elder, "Right! Third Elder, there's something that I don't know if I should inform you and First Madam about it!"

"What is it about?"

The Third Elder looked at Hudson with a curious look and asked.

"Hmmm...I saw Lancelot, the head of White branch family, meeting Jack, and then leaving the place not long after!"

Hudson answered smilingly.

"Is that so? That fella, what did he meet Jack for? Don't tell him he's licking his *ss right now to garner some benefits?"

The Third Elder's forehead puckered; he was puzzled at the news.

"Hmmm, I'm not sure if the secretive meeting between Lancelot and Jack has anything to do with the meeting just now. Could it be that Lancelot is actually the one who suggested those plans to Jack?"

Lily pondered hard about the strange meeting between Lancelot and Jack and spilled out the question.

"That's really possible! After all, the two new policies, letting a few talented young martial artists of White branch families join the training with the main White family, and making the members of the main White family go into the forest to collect resources, are both good news to the White branch families!"

Wade furrowed and slowly uttered his analysis.

"Meeting? There's a meeting today talking about these new policies?"

Hudson heard the exchange and exclaimed. "It looks like Lancelot really did go to Jack for these matters. These f*cking b*stards from the branch families, they're asking more and more now, aren't they? How could they suggest sending their young martial artists to our main family? Making us share our resources and facilities with them! Our share of martial enhancement resources will be lesser!"

Lily echoed with fury, "I truly agree! The most frustrating thing is that you and the other young talented martial artists, whose martial status and combat prowess have reached grandmaster level or even semi-god level, have to spare your precious training time to go into the forest and scavenge for resources! This not only uses up your training time, but it's also dangerous for all of you to go to that kind of place. If any of you were not blessed by the Lucky God, and get killed by the monsters in the forest, it'd be such a waste!"

Wade saw the opportunity to drive a wedge between Hudson and his grandfather Nash, he quickly chimed in and fanned the flames of trouble. "What First Madam said is absolutely logical! What I don't get is that your Grandpa agreed to this, saying that young people should go out to venture or something, and that's the only way to grow, to expose oneself to different worldviews and to improve combat prowess!"

Chapter 1095

Lily and Wade thought that when Hudson heard of what his grandfather had done to the main White family, he would quiver with anger.

Little did they expect, Hudson's eyes had brightened up at the new ideas and beamed happily." That's so great, isn't it? In fact, going into the forest and scavenging for those resources is like treasure hunting, so exciting! I feel good about the idea. Especially when you have to stay home every day to train and train and train, it's so routine and boring! So, I'd want to go into the forest to practice and explore the world. I, Hudson White, am not afraid of death, if I want to become stronger, I should take up the challenges…"

Lily and Wade's face immediately turned unsightly when they heard Hudson's words. They were rendered speechless.

"Alright! First Madam and Third Elder, I'll leave first! Letting the members of the branch families to come train here is definitely something I resent but sending us out to the forest and hunting for resources is something I find interesting, and I like it very much!"

"I have long yearned to go out for a break!" Hudson walked away as he spoke aloud.

"What is this brat thinking? How could he agree with the new policies?"

Lily's face sank deeply as she watched Hudson's back becoming more and more distant from her. "Sigh! The lady of luck has not been with me recently! Why is everything not going well? And about my son, is there really no clue at all?" Lily asked, whining.

Wade shook his head and said, “First Madam, nothing about Young Master Lance yet. If there’s any news or clue, I’ll definitely inform you immediately. I feel strange about the incident; a few families went together and they have brought men with them, how come they just evaporated into thin air? Without any news at all!”

“Yes, even if they’ve encountered some powerful monster beast, they have so many men with them, they could have scattered and escaped to different directions! One or two of them should have been able to escape and survive long enough to come to us, right? What’s more ridiculous is that my son and the other talented fighters of other families are all capable fighters, and their martial statuses are not low at all. The generic monster beasts are not their opponent at all. If they can’t fight, they can always escape!”

Lily’s heart was overwhelmed with worry and fear; she was tormented by these fearful feelings every day.

“Don’t worry, I believe that Young Master Lance will come back alive, he is one lucky boy who is always blessed by God. And our people will continue to look for him!”

Wade consoled Lily with a gentle tone.

He halted to ponder and continued, “What is burning right now is Jack. His combat prowess is not very high, but he is very smart. He helped the people of the branch families and made use of the new policies to gain trust and a good impression. He has bought their hearts this time.”

“You’re right. Lancelot is someone that we need to be cautious of too. He dares to meet Jack and plot all these matters. How abominable is he!” Lily huffed angrily.

As she spoke, Lily suddenly thought of something and exclaimed loudly, “Oh My God! We’ re so done for, we’re so done for! Third Elder, Lancelot has gone to Jack for the new policies, do youdo you think he has told Jack about the tithes? That we’ve increased it to 80%? If that’s the case, Jack would definitely tell Nash!”

Wade gasped at Lily's words. Terror stabbed his heart all of sudden that his four limbs went cold and clammy.

If these dirty deeds of theirs were exposed, then it would be troublesome. After all, they had pocketed a lot of martial enhancement resources all this while. Initially, when they only increased the percentage to seventy, they were weighed down by fear.

However, when they saw there was not much noise from the branch families, plus Wade had killed a few-who opposed the raise to act as a deterrence effect to warn the others, nobody dared to make any noises anymore; they were obedient.

This way, Lily and the Third Elder had tasted the sweetness of their dirty deeds, hence they had become bolder and increased to eighty percent.

They thought that their deed would not be exposed, and they could continue pocketing the resources until the death of Nash. By that time, they would find a way to become the head of the family.

The two clearly did not expect the arrival of Jack in the White family, and his presence ruined their plans.

"F*ck! If Nash finds out, we're so done for! He hates these deeds the most, he'll definitely slit our throats!"

Wade's face turned gloomy as he said, and his heart was in a complete state of terror.NSW Chapter 1096-1100

Chapter 1096

Lily calmed her head down and thought about the matter. "It shouldn't be possible that Nash knew

about this. If he did, he would have said something at meeting today, and even smash the table or something. He looked happy today and was smiling throughout the whole meeting, so I bet he has yet to know about this!" Lily shook her head and suggested.

Wade released a huge sigh of relief when he heard Lily's analysis. "You're right. If Nash knew about it, he'd have exploded a long time ago. Besides, Lancelot, as the head of the branch family, is not a bold man. Every time I went to collect the resources from him, he has always greeted me with a smiley face and even prepared good food and wine to treat me. Such a person wouldn't dare to spill a word unless he has a death wish!"

"Hmmm… Looking at the situation, I think Lancelot just wants to fight for some benefits for his people of the branch family. Other than that, I don't think he has anything against us!"

Wade chuckled then added, "The b*stard Jack, I bet he dares not leave the main family. He is quite smart, isn't he? As long as he's not a fool, it's impossible for him to leave the White family. After all, his father is dying, so he'll definitely stay by his father's side and spend the rest of his time here peacefully!"

"Right, aren't you planning to go on a retreat? When are you going? In this retreat, you must strive to break through the semi-god realm and reach the true god realm! Once you breakthrough, the First Elder will no longer be your opponent! You can find an opportunity to end his life, and then Jack's life as well. After all that, the position of family head will be yours!"

Lily was impatient at her thoughts. With her fish clenched, she blurted, "Hmph! After you kill the b*stard Jack, please do not touch Joan's a single strand of hair, leave that b*tch to me. I'll make sure she suffers 'properly' in the White family, that she will beg to die rather than continue living!"

In order to comfort Lily, Wade agreed and added, "At that time, you and the other elders have to support me to get the position of the family head. Once the First Elder, Nash White, and Jack have died, I'll be the strongest fighter here in the White family. Although it'd not be cumbersome for me to be the head by that time, with the elders' and your strong support, the other wouldn't squeak an opposing noise at all!"

"Don't you worry. When the time comes, you have my full support!"

Lily cast Wade a salacious wink as she spoke in a coquettish tone. “But don’t forget our agreement, as long as my son comes back alive, you’ll return the position of family head to him. Understand?” She added.

“Haha! Don’t be preoccupied, I’ll definitely give it to him!”

Wade chuckled aloud and stopped his laughter when he saw someone walking toward them. “Alright then, I’ll go on a retreat now. If there’s nothing serious, you shouldn’t come and disturb me. I strive to break through the semi-god realm this time and get to the true god realm. When I finally reach the true god realm, soon you’ll feel pain when the essence of spirited grass water penetrates into your body through the pores and then permeates your limbs. The pain will become stronger when time passes. I’ve to give you a heads up so that you have a mental preparation!”

Jack plastered a warm smile on his face and reminded the beauty before him with a calm and gentle voice.

“Hmmm. Don’t worry, I’ll endure it! Elaine has given me a lot of lectures and explanations about martial arts and combat techniques these days. And I fully understand that this path is not an easy one, but you won’t forget the joy you get when you break through a level. Your body will become stronger and more powerful. That kind of pure excitement and joy is something the commoners will not get to feel in a lifetime!”

Selena bobbed her head. She then took off her clothes slowly, let Jack pick her up, and put her into the Whiteen barrel full of spirited grass water.

It was true. Selena did not feel anything at all at first.

Chapter 1097

However, as time flies, she started to feel a tingling sensation throughout her body, as though thousands of ants were crawling on her body and biting her sensitive skin. The sensation grew stronger

and stronger, that it was no longer only tingling, it was hellish painful.

In a short while, there were beads of shiny sweat on her forehead, constantly dripping down her beautiful features. Fist clenched, teeth gritted, she endured.

“Eh? Why is there black color grease flowing out of my body? And it smells really bad, is everything okay?”

Soon, Selena found her arms emitting black and greasy liquid. It was disgusting and repugnant.

“Not to worry. It’s all normal These are the impurities inside your body, as well as some toxins. They’re forced out by the spirited grass and once they’re all out, you’ Il feel good. And it’d be hard for you to catch any cold or fall sick in the future!”

Jack giggled and continued, “Why do you think I prepare two barrels of water then? When you’re done with the spirited grass water spa, go soak yourself in the other barrel and scrub yourself thoroughly!”

“Ah!”

“No..No freaking way! In later times, will the pain will be more excruciating than now? My God, how long will this take?”

A few horizontal lines formed between Selena’s brows as she listened to Jack. It looked like it would be more painful than she imagined.

“Haha, don’t worry too much. The treatment will be done in half an hour time. A lot of people can normally endure the pain at the beginning of the treatment, then the peak of pain will come, and once you’ve endured the peak, the pain will slowly subside until your body no longer feels anything. Then the body is completely purified!”

The corner of Jack’s mouth curled up gently. “After your body is washed and purified, you’re considered a martial artist! Your overall strength and power will be enhanced. In general, for people with average talent, after their body gets purified, they’ll become a first-grade martial artist, for people with a little bit of talent, they will become a second-grade martial artist, and for people with natural raw talent, they can directly reach the third-grade of martial status!”

“My Lord, so many grades!”

Selena was surprised, at the same time, speechless. “I only hope that I’m not a first-grade martial artist then this talent of mine would be too average. Sigh! I still wish to become a grandmaster one day!”

Chapter 1098

"Ah!"

As time passed, Selena felt more and more pain. She finally could not help but let out a loud cry of pain.

On the side, Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry at his wife' s cry of pain. "Dear, do you want me to come in and keep you company?" Jack suggested, smiling.

Selena's face immediately turned rosy pink. She shot Jack a deadly stare and jeered. "Such a jerk! How could you still joke at this time? The water is full of black and greasy impurities, do you even dare to come in?"

"Hey! As long as my dear wife allows it, what is there to be ashamed of? Of course, I'll go in!"

Jack giggled wickedly and made Selena laugh and cry at the same time.

"It's almost time. Endure it a little bit longer. The painful sensation will start to subside once the peak is

over. You'll get through it!"

Jack looked at the time and explained to Selena. "Dear, you're doing great! You can make it! You will make it!" Jack cheered.

"Mm!"

Selena bobbed her head like an obedient little girl. She gritted his teeth and continued enduring the pain.

Finally, her body was fully purified. She then went into the other barrel of clean water and washed her body thoroughly. Then she came out and exhaustedly put on her clothes.

"I'm so, so, so exhausted! I feel like my whole body is falling apart. Now I just want to go bed and have a good sleep!"

Selena felt weak in her limbs. She looked at Jack with a bitter smile.

"Let's go. I'll carry you back to rest. After resting fully, you'll feel like your body has changed completely. And after your body is purified, you will sense a faint hint of spirituality in your body. It's like chi energy. Your body will emit a glow of confidence which will make you even more beautiful than before!"

Jack smiled as he picked up Selena in his strong arms and strode toward the direction of their abode.

"Really? I didn't expect that there would be so many benefits to practicing martial arts! No wonder there are so many people who can't wait to become one!"

Selena looked at Jack in embarrassment. Her face blushed. "I've never imagined that I would one day embark on the path of martial art!" she added.

Time passed quickly, and by the next morning, Selena finally became energetic again.

Right after she got up and walked to the courtyard with Jack, Ben and Elaine were hopping toward them excitedly.

"Sis, this is so fantastic! I have good news to tell you! I've successfully purified my body yesterday! Moreover, Elaine mentioned that my martial art talent is not bad at all!"

Ben blabbered excitedly as he saw Selena. He was jumping up and down with happiness that his feet barely touched the ground.

"Is it? You look so happy. Let me see how good your talent is!"

Selena returned with a dry smile.

In the next second, Ben picked up a basketball-sized rock and faced Selena, "I can blast this size of stone into pieces. Elaine told me, with such a strength, I can be considered a second-grade martial artist! Moreover, I'm not too far away from the third-grade martial level! What does this mean? It means that I'm a genius! Well, at least I'm much better than average people!"

"Wow! That's really great!"

Selena's mood lightened as she heard his words. She was truly happy for Ben. "That's so great! If Ma and Pa knew that you've become a martial artist and possess such talent, they would be proud of you too!"

"What about you, Sis? Have you successfully purified? Here, try this!"

After the final syllabus of the word dropped, Ben shoved the basketball-sized rock into Selena's arm.

Chapter 1099

"That's huge! No way. I can't break that. It scares me just by looking at it!"

Selen a looked at the rock in her palm and spoke in a panicked tone. She felt that she was already unable to break a rock the size of a fist what more one of a basketball size.

"You won't know if you don't try."

Yet Ben rolled his eyes at her. "I thought that I couldn't break it either. But I did," he said. "Give it a try, Sis. Don't you realize that the rock isn't as heavy as you thought it was while you're carrying it? That's because your strength is no longer an ordinary person's strength. You have the body of a martial artist now!"

Here, Ben paused for a while before continuing, "Sis, do you know that a person who is truly strong is the one who doesn't flinch before a tiger, and even thinks of a tiger as an ant!"

When Elaine heard this, she could not help but chortle. "I just told you all that a while ago. You sure pick up fast!"

"Heh!"

Ben rubbed the back of his neck. "I've always been a believer of lifelong learning."

"Give it a try, Dear. You're his sister, you have the same mother. If he can do it, you can't lose to him as his older sister! Besides, your body is strong now. It won't be too much even if you punch the rock. You're different from before, alright?"

Jack spoke from the side, grinning.

"All right. I'll give it a shot!"

Selena cradled the rock in one arm and clenched her other hand into a fist, smashing it straight into the rock.

Bang!

All remained silent after the enormous bang, and the rock in Selena's hand shattered into pieces and fell onto the ground.

"My God. No way. You're amazing, Sis!"

Ben exclaimed when he saw this.

"Did you see that, Jack? Did you see that? I did it! And it was so easy. My hand doesn't even hurt!"

Selena jumped excitedly after she saw this. "This is amazing. Seems like I'm a second-grade martial artist like my brother now. I'm just as talented as he is. We're practically geniuses!"

"I think your strength is more than that of a second-grade martial artist, Sis!"

Elaine simply stared at her and managed a bitter smile. "Ben placed the rock on a bench and used all his strength to shatter it. You were holding it in one arm, but you broke it anyway. This strength is probably that of a third-grade martial artist!"

"Ah!"

Selena's eyes widened. "So you're telling me that Ben didn't break the rock that way?"

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry. "You're a true genius, my dear. You're definitely a thirdgrade martial artist. You're pretty strong already!"

"That's right. With talent like yours, you can have the fighting skills of a major with a bit of practice. Furthermore, I guarantee that you can even become a grandmaster in a month's time so long as you put in the effort!"

Jack said with a grin after he thought about it.

"No way. I'm that strong?"

Selena was extremely excited. She never thought that she would actually be stronger than her brother, who already possessed immense talent.

Chapter 1100

"Selena, do you see that rock over there? The one on the ground, a little larger than a basketball. Go over and hit it, if you're still in disbelief. If it breaks, it means that you definitely have the strength of a third-grade martial artist!"

Jack scanned his surroundings before he singled out a nearby rock. He spoke to Selena.

"Really? Let me try!"

Selena took his words in and grinned. She walked over and punched the rock.

Bang!

A crack resounded through the air, and that enormous rock split opened and shattered into pieces.

"This is amazing. Sis, your talent is making me jealous!"

As Ben watched, his initial excitement abruptly subsided; he felt as though his ego had suffered a serious blow. He had wanted to show off just now, but now he no longer had the chance to.

"I can't help it. I'm your older sister, after all!"

Selena's face was lit up with an infectious grin. Then she thought about something and added, "Kylie would be so happy if she could see me right now. She would be happy to see her strong mother!"

After she said that, her brows creased together and she turned toward Jack. "We haven't seen Kylie for a few days already. Dear," she said. "I miss her!"

Jack quickly raked his eyes over his surroundings. "We'd better not mention Kylie under these conditions. Understand?" he replied. "Lily and the Third Elder are definitely up to no good. It'll be troublesome if they use Kylie against us. After all, people like them would resort to all sorts of tactics!"

After Selena heard this, she took a sharp intake of breath. "Ah, why do they have to be so powerful? When can we get rid of them?" she said, worried. "If only they could disappear. Otherwise, we can't even get a good night's rest!"

"Don't worry, Dear. I'll do my best!" Jack offered a reassuring smile. I'll be out collecting some chi congregation pills tomorrow. You and Ben better stay here and practice," he said. "Lana, Ethan, and I plan to sneak out. We have to go and find the herbs to cure my father. After we get the herbs to create

the antidote, the Third Elder and Lily will be in big trouble!"

"No way. If Lily knows you're going out, she'll send people to kill you!" Elaine said, panicking, "I think you should stay back and practice to get better first. It'd be better that way! With your talent, Young Master Jack, you'll be able to achieve the middle stage of true god status very soon."

She never thought that Jack would reply in such an offhand manner, "Don't worry. I believe in my own abilities. Besides, the Third Elder and the others don't know how strong I am, they probably have no idea that I've already achieved the true god status. So they won't send strong people to kill me anyway! Furthermore, I realized that our fighting skills are slightly stronger than the White family's fighting style from the last competition. I'll definitely be able to hold my ground!"

"Really? So you won't be afraid even if you run into the Third Elder?"

Elaine's eyes brightened after she heard this. She asked in an eager tone.

Jack nodded his head. "I've never traded blows with him, but he won 't have an easy time killing me. Furthermore, one's strength and fighting skills increase exponentially by transforming into a dragon!"

After he said that, Jack thought of something else. "Selena, they just gave you that untitled fighting scroll because they so happened to have it," he said to Selena.

"After studying it, I realized that it's a difficult style to master, and it's very strong too. You'll be extremely fast after you practice according to it. Besides, it has fantastic potential to enable you to practice till you achieve the true god status!"NSW Chapter 1101-1105

Chapter 1101

"Really? That's great!"

Selena grinned and added, "You have to find the right time to you go out, okay? After all, it won't be easy for them to find you since they can't follow you. This way, they won't know where you're heading!"

"Of course not. I'll give them a signal to make them think that I' m going to the branch family! I'11 wait for them to head over to the branch families, and then I won't turn up there at all!"

Jack flashed a wicked grin. "We'll make them go on a merry hunt. There are so many branch families. They'll be wasting plenty of time while they're going on the search!"

"That's a great idea. Hah!"

Ben laughed after he heard all this.

However, he quickly frowned and said, "But how are you going to hint them? You can't just run up to them and announce it just like that. They'd never believe you that way!"

"Of course we can't do that!"

Jack smiled. "Your sister and I will put on a show before Hudson. I noticed that he's always sticking around the Third Elder and Lily and he's definitely up to no good. He'll definitely report any rumors he hears to the Third Elder or Lily!"

"All right. So that matter is settled! You have to leave in secret, okay? Only then will the plan work!"

Selena nodded her head.

The next morning, Jack heard a piece of good news-the Third Elder had retreated.

"That's great. The Third Elder has retreated. It'll be even safer for you when you go out, Dear! Any regular person is no match for you!"

Selena heaved an internal sigh of relief when she heard the news. After all, Jack feared the Third Elder the most at present. The Third Elder and the First Elder were fighters at the advanced stage of the true god status, and the strongest fighter in the White family was Nash, who was at the peak of the true god status.

Now, with Nash's physical condition in this state, the only person who could match the Third Elder was the First Elder.

"It's definitely good news!"

Jack gave a bitter smile. "But it might not necessarily be a good thing," he said. "If the Third Elder is choosing to retreat at this moment, it means that he has a plan. Right now, only the First Elder can beat him. The Third Elder must be trying to break through the peak of the true god status in one shot! It'll be troublesome if he actually achieves that!"

"No way. So you're saying that he wants to rebel?"

Selena's expression darkened when she heard this. "He still wants to be the head of the house even though he's so old?"

"Of course he does!"

Jack's lips curved into a frosty smile. "I overheard two members of the White family talking after they has just returned from the search the other day. They were probably in charge of helping to find Lance. After listening to their conversation, I think that the Third Elder does not believe that Lance will return alive!"

Chapter 1102

"No way. That old fox is so dangerous!"

Selena was shocked after she heard that. "He's already so old. I never thought that he'd want to take the head of the house position for himself!"

"Who knows what he's thinking? He wants to kill me and Lance, and now he's even retreated. It'd be odd if his intention was not to be the head of the house!"

Jack gave a cold smile. "However, I heard that it's not been that long since he achieved the advanced level of the true god status. That's why it won't be easy for him to experience a breakthrough. It'll take a long time. That's why I must quickly find the antidote for my father!"

As the two talked, they actually saw Hudson walking over.

Jack and Selena exchanged a glance and smiled. They immediately understood each other's thoughts.

"How many branch families are there, dear? What are you going there for? Are you going to every single one of them?"

Selena asked Jack on purpose once Hudson walked a little closer.

Jack bobbed his head. "Mmhmm. I 'm going to see all of them. I'm not very familiar with them yet. I'll also take a look and see if ther are any geniuses among them. If So, we should converse more with the members of the branch families!"

"When are you leaving?"

Selena asked again.

"Tomorrow! Since I've nothing much to do for now."

Jack replied, smiling Hudson, who had just happened to pass by, scrunched his brows together when he heard of the two s dialogue. Delight leaped in his heart, and he quickly scurried away to find Lily.

"First Madam, I've got some big news!"

Hudson could not help but burst into laughter after he came to Lily' s residence.

After all, Nash was dying, and Lance was missing. No one had found any traces of him even after so long, so he was probably eaten by monsters already.

Furthermore, if Jack was truly killed by Lily, he would be the only true genius in the White family. This meant that he still had a chance to become the heir to the White family. He might even become the master.

When he thought of this, he was extremely elated.

"Big news? Heh. How big could it be?"

Lily chuckled after she heard that. "Tell me. I've not heard of any good news ever since Jack got here! I truly hope you are here with some good news!"

After she said that, Lily thought of something, and her eyes immediately brightened. "Don't tell me that Lance is back?" she guessed. "Has he been found?"

Hudson was speechless for a while. He shook his head slowly." That's not the case, First Madam. But it's some other good news!"

"All right. Just spit it out. It probably won't be much of a good news, since it's not about Lance!"

Lily released a long sigh, disappointment flashing in her eyes.

"First Madam, I think this piece of news is worth two stalks of first-grade premium spirit grass!"

Hudson looked at Lily, grinning, trying to hint at the news.

Chapter 1103

"Two stalks?"

Lily's expression darkened. "You must be joking. I might believe you if you said that it's worth a first-grade intermediate spirit grass. You're telling me it's worth first-grade premium spirit grassand two stalks, at that! Do you realize the sheer value of that?"

"No, no. It's definitely worth two stalks of first-grade premium spirit grass. Trust me!"

Hudson tilted his head.

"No way. Two stalks of first-grade intermediate spirit grass, at most!"

Lily was also a stubborn person.

She folded her arms over her chest, her features twisted into a flippant expression.

"All right. I take it that you don't want to grab an opportunity to kill Jack. All right then!"

Frostiness tinged the corners of Hudson's lips. He wheeled around and stalked out.

He was well aware that aside from wanting her son to come back alive, Lily desperately wanted to kill Jack.

He did not believe that Lily would be able to resist that idea.

"Wait!"

Lily immediately called out to Hudson when she heard that it was an opportunity to kill Jack.

She flipped a palm and took two stalks of first-grade premium spirit grass, thrusting it toward Hudson. "Tell me. What news do you have?"

Hudson swiped the spirit grass away and grinned. "You truly are generous, First Madam," he said." In all honesty, Jack is digging a grave for himself! I overheard him and his wife talking just now. He said that he was going to the branch families tomorrow to meet them!"

"The branch families? What on earth would he want to go to the branch families for?"

Lily's eyes brightened when she heard that. "Fantastic. This is indeed good news. That bratis actually leaving the White family residence. He's truly digging a grave for himself. This is a golden opportunity to kill him!"

"That's right. He said that he wanted to get to know more of the branch family members and survey the geniuses among them so that he can contact them more easily!"

Hudson smiled. "I think that punk knows that plenty of members from the main family look down on him because he's from the mortal realm. So he wants to curry favor with the branch family members

and get their recognition instead."

"That's probably it!"

Lily nodded her head. "He's leaving tomorrow, right? I'll assign two guards to keep watch at the bottom of the mountain tomorrow. They'll inform me immediately once he leaves. Then I'll send more people to kill him!"

"Right. This is a serious opportunity to kill him. We can't miss it. That's why we can't afford any slip-ups," Hudson immediately replied. "He's a pretty strong fighter, and he has good talent-who knew that he would be a second-grade intermediate fighter. That's why we should probably get those who are at the peak of the true god status to kill him. If we can't muster that manpower, we must at least get people at the beginning stage of the true god status after him!"

Lily frowned when she heard this. "Actually, the best man for the job is the Third Elder. He would guarantee us results. But he just had to retreat. We have to find someone else to kill that brat!"

"Mmhmm. And we must find someone we can trust. Before, it'd be fine to kill him because he was not the heir, but it's different now that he's the heir. That's why we must find someone trustworthy and dependable. Someone who won't reveal their identity, and someone who won't let that brat escape!"

Since Hudson wanted to become the heir, he willingly helped Lily in her schemes!

"What about this? I'll look for two fighters who are at the beginning stage of the true god status. That should be enough. We'll just kill him and those friends of his if he brings them along. We won't give them a chance to escape!" Lily decided after thinking for a while.

Chapter 1104

Lily quickly went to look for two members of the Lagorio family after considering the situation.

These two were from the Lagorio family, but they were Patronums in the White family, who had always relied heavily on them.

They had the Lagorio surname, but because of the relationship between the First Madam and Nash and how the White family treated them nicely, they worked hard for the White family, putting effort into whatever they did.

"What? You're telling us to follow Young Master Jack and kill him?"

The two Patronums could not help but exclaimed once they knew why Lily had come to them.

They had never imagined that she would assign them to such a task.

"What's wrong with it? Don't tell me that you have a problem? You both are fighters who are at the beginning stage of the true god realm. Surely it won't be difficult to kill Jack."

Lily was taken aback for a while, then she spoke with a cold smile hanging on her lips.

"We didn't mean it like that!"

The young woman among them scrunched her brows together." First Madam, even if Young Master Jack snatched the position that your son should have taken, we shouldn't kill him over this, right? After all, he is the master's son. The master is already in such state, and Young Master Lance is..."

A shadow immediately fell over Lily's face. "What are you saying? Are you trying to tell me that my son will never come back? That he' s dead?"

"Don't misunderstand me, First Madam. We didn't mean that. But we don't know if Lance is alive or not, and the master is in such a poor state. Young Master Jack has strong talent, and he's the master's son. I

think it's fine if he becomes head of the house! We can't have someone unsuitable sitting in that position, right? Hudson isn't too bad, but he's no match for Jack!"

Yolanda, the young Patronum, finally managed to wrangle her thoughts out after pondering for a while.

"Are you betraying your own for another now, Yolanda? Don't forget that it was me who brought you over to the White family. You were weak then, and no one cared about you in the Lagorio family. But you advanced so much after you came here, and your fighting skills grew rapidly. Besides, it was I who fought for the Patronum position on your behalf. And now you want to help Jack?"

Lily's expression darkened, as though a storm were brewing across her brows. "I gave this task to the both of you because I trusted you. I never thought that you would say something like that to me, Yolanda Lagorio!"

"Don't worry, First Madam. We are from the Lagorio family. We will listen to whatever you say!"

Yolanda thought for a while before adding, "I just think that it would be a shame if a genius like Jack were to die just like that. And I'm afraid that there won't be a successor to the White family. What if Young Master Lance doesn 't return? What do we do then?"

"First of all, I believe that my son will come back." Lily replied, huffing. "Secondly, even if my son doesn't come back, we can't let an illegitimate child like Jack become the head of the house and he's a live-in son-in-law, to boot! We'll become a laughing stock if word of this gets out to other families. Understand?"

Here, Lily paused for a while before continuing. "At any rate, be here tomorrow morning. Follow Jack once he sets out for the branch families, then kill him once you're some distance away from the White family residences, Kill all his friends if they're with him. Got it?"

"Don't worry, First Madam. We will carry out your commands without fail!"

The other Patronum, a young man, gave a wan smile and swore to Lily.

"Good. Keep this a secret. Got it?"

Lily nodded her head and said.

Chapter 1105

Yolanda heaved an internal sigh, but she had no choice but to nod her head and agree to it.

However, she did not expect her partner to quickly flash another smile at the First Madam, "Shouldn't you give us some spirited grass, First Madam? After all, we can't carry out such a big assignment for nothing. If we advance to the intermediate stage of the true god realm, we'll be able to carry out your orders even better!"

"You're really honey-tongued, aren't you!"

Lily rolled her eyes and took out two stalks of first-grade premium spirit grass. "I'll give you both one stalk each," she said. "Come find me here once you're done and I'll have more waiting for you!"

"Thank you, First Madam!"

The two immediately did fist-to-palm salutes after they took the spirit grass.

Soon enough, the two exited Lily's residence.

"It's true that Jack has good talent, Yolanda, and that it would be a shame if he died!"

After they walked some distance away, the man spoke to Yolanda," But why think too much into it? The First Madam is the mistress of the house, and she's the first daughter of the Lagorio family. If we don't help her, who will? I also think that she can be a little too petty, but there's no way about it. It's the way of the world. Jack is just unlucky!"

"Ah!"

Yolanda released a sigh and managed an awkward smile.

At night, just as the sky settled into a deep, dark blue, Jack, Lana and Ethan left the estate.

The next morning, the two people that Lily had commanded, went to take the new shift. They talked with the others who were changing shifts, and they knew about this.

The two took in sharp intakes of breath. One of them went straight to see Lily.

Lily had initially thought that Jack would be killed very soon. She had been so excited that she could not sleep the whole night, and she had woken up very early this morning.

Now, she, Yolanda, and the young man from the Lagorio family were waiting for Jack in the garden.

"They're back. So fast. Jack must have made his appearance!"

Lily's face broke into a smile when she saw that the guards at the foot of the mountain ran up Anticipation pounded in her chest.

Yet the man's expression seemed grim when he ran over. "First Madam, you told us to keep watch on Jack and inform you immediately when he leaves the main house. But it seems like we won't get the chance anymore!"

"Why?"

The smile on Lily's face hardened. She asked him immediately.

"We talked to the people who were changing shifts and found out that Jack had gone off last night. They left just as it turned dark!"

The young guard gave a bitter smile. "When I asked further, it turned out that Jack was not the only one who left," he continued." There was another woman and that man called Ethan who left with him. There are three of them!NSW Chapter 1106-1110

Chapter 1106

After she heard all that, the corners of Lily's mouth twitched violently.

She waved her hand after a while. "All right. Understood. Go back to your post first!"

"Yes, First Madam!"

The young man did a fist-to-palm salute before wheeling around and descending the mountain.

"What should we do now, First Madam? He has already left last night. We can't kill him now!"

The young man from the Lagorio family twisted his lips into a bitter smile. "We can't return the spirit grass you gave us yesterday," he reminded her. That 's a down payment!"

Yolanda was delighted as well. It seemed that she would not have to get her hands dirty now.

After all, she had always thought that Nash had treated them nicely. She had some reservations about killing his son.

Yet she never thought that Lily would cast a wicked grin instead." Why's that brat in such a hurry to leave, that he would take off a day earlier?" she said. "He must be afraid that I will send someone after him. That's why he left earlier!"

Here, Lily paused before continuing, "But I know where he's heading for. So he can't escape!"

"Do you know where he's heading, First Madam?"

The Lagorio man was surprised. "Seems like we'll have to do our jobs anyway then!" he said, a bitter smile on his face.

"That brat is heading off for the branch families, as well as families that are bounded to the White family... That's why it's time for you to go off!"

Lily flashed a mirthless smile and spoke as she looked at the two.

Yolanda and the young man's expressions darkened. However, they nodded their heads in agreement in the end.

Soon enough, Yolanda and Dean went down the mountain and followed the path toward the branch families.

"Sh*t. It's so hard. There are so many branch families. Are we really going to ask each and every one of them to find Jack? How are we going to do it?"

Dean's expressions were fogged by a dark cloud. "I had thought we would receive plenty of benefits. Seems that these benefits won't be easily obtained!"

"Of course. It's not easy to obtain!"

Yolanda had a hapless expression. "Let's go. He left just the night before. We're both of the true god status and we've been flying a lot longer than him. He can't fly for long before he has to resort to walking. Those of the semi-god status don't have strong chi within them, so they can't overuse it, just in case they run into trouble. That's why we should be able to catch up to him if we fly more than we walk!"

"You're right. It's a long way off to the branch families. We'll catch him near a branch family so long as we speed up!"

Dean's eyes brightened when he heard that. "Yolanda, plenty of women are only good for their looks, not their brains," he praised her, "but you're an exception!"

Yolanda was speechless inside. She regretted her words now, honestly. She had no intention to kill Jack, but she made that proposal without thinking twice.

If only she had kept her mouth shut. They could just talk as they walked slowly, and it would be difficult to catch up to Jack then.

"Let's go and catch up to them!"

Yolanda rolled her eyes at Dean. The two flew toward the direction of the branch families.

Yet Jack and the others had long arrived at the outskirts of a small city.

"Where are we heading now, Master?"

Chapter 1107 Lana could not help but ask Jack after thinking about it.

Before Jack could reply, Ethan spoke up, "If my hypothesis is correct, Master probably wants to have a meal and rest here first. Then we'll buy tickets to the Soul City, right?"

Jack bobbed his head. "We'll buy the tickets tomorrow after resting here for a while. Soul City is a province rich with natural resources, and there are plenty of rare herbs there. I'll probably find the materials I need there!"

"All right. We were in a rush yesterday night, so it's been tiring. places to properly train oneself. I think it'll be harder for future generations if they want to break into the true god status. After all, it 's very difficult to get the spirit grass if there isn't enough chi to nurture it. Our martial resources are getting scarce!"

"Oh, right. Do you think Lance and the others are truly dead, Master? They should have returned long ago if they hadn't died. But even if they had died, they were geniuses from significant families. There must have been traces of fighting left behind in that mysterious forest they went into if they were killed. Or there should have been a footprint or something. Why isn' t there a single trace?"

Lana quickly thought of something else and asked out of curiosity as she walked with Jack and Ethan.

"It is rather strange!"

Jack's lips twisted into a bitter smile. "But we don't have time to consider if Lance and the others are dead or alive. Right now, we need to find the materials we need and craft an antidote for my father so that he recovers. Only then will we be able to prevent the Third Elder from acting against

us!"

The three quickly found a place to eat and a hotel to stay in. They also booked flight tickets headed for Soul City scheduled the next morning.

The next day, at just over eleven o'clock in the morning, the three had already arrived at Soul City Airport.

"The air is good here, and there's quite a bit of chi around. But it's lacking compared to the City of Martial Arts!"

Ethan could not help but criticize after breathing some of the air here.

"Move over, Uncles. Don't block the way."

At this moment, a young woman appeared behind them, clad in stilettos and wearing sunglasses She was pushing a luggage bag and cried out impatiently."

"Uncles?"

Jack and Ethan craned their necks around. The two could not help but be stunned speechless. They look like twenty-seven or twenty-eight at most.

The woman before them was probably a lot younger. She actually addressed them as uncles.

"What's wrong? You don't like the title, Uncles?"

The beautiful young woman stopped and took her sunglasses off, casting a condescending sneer at them.

"What should I call you then, since you're dressed so shabbily?"

"All right, Aunty. You may pass now. All right?"

Jack gave a wan smile and stepped aside. There was plenty of space around them, but the woman did not even think of going around. She just had to say that they were blocking the way.

"Aunty? You dare to call me that?"

The woman was so furious that her chest heaved heavily. She raised a leg and aimed a kick toward Jack.

Chapter 1108

Jack looked at the arrogant woman before him, he was tongue -tied.

The other party started the episode by calling them uncle jokingly, only then he called her aunty.

To everyone's surprise, this was a sensitive woman; once she heard the word 'aunty', she swung her leg.

The woman was wearing high heels and the heels were sharp. If Jack really gets hit by this sharp heel, he would be...

When the heel was about to hit him, Jack bent slightly and grabbed the woman's foot with one hand, and gently pulled it toward himself.

"Ah!"

The beautiful woman failed to stabilize herself and lunged toward Jack. Her other foot twisted, and the stiletto of the heel broke off.

"Let go of me, you b*stard!"

The woman landed gently into Jack's embrace; her cheeks were kissed pink. She cursed at Jack as she was feeling hot on her cheeks.

Only then did Jack let go of the other party and said, "Miss, take this as a lesson for you today! These heels are so sharp, please don't use them to kick anyone in the future!"

"Brat, do you know who I am? I'm from the Lancaster family, and my father will come to pick me up with a bunch of bodyguards in a moment! How dare you take advantage of me! You definitely deserve some good punching today!"

Shirley looked at Jack huffily. and her hands clasped in front of her bosom, looking high and almighty.

"Oh, is that so? They're going to pick you up? Good to know. Well then. Nice to meet you, we'll make a move first."

Jack smiled faintly, not bothering to pay further attention to the other party.

At this time, not far away from Jack and the others, a young man with his hand holding a bouquet of flowers strode toward them with a dozen bodyguards following behind.

Shirley gazed over to the men and her face sank instantly. "What the heck? That guy, why is he here?"

The young man was a young master of a filthy rich family who often pestered her and clung to her like superglue.

Shirley's face turned unsightly and dull.

Nonetheless, an idea suddenly popped up in her mind. She took off her heels, pulled her suitcase, and paced toward Jack, trying to catch up. She then grabbed Jack's arm from behind and leaned her head on Jack's shoulder. "Hmph! You touched my leg just now, and I 'm yours now. I don't care! You have to be responsible for me, understand?" Shirley said to Jack.

Jack looked at Shirley and then looked at the gloomy young man who held a bouquet in his hand, standing not far from them. Jack' s face went dull, and he was speechless at the woman's act. It was obvious that this woman was trying to use him as a shield to cast away the demon-the young rich man.

"Oh! Is that so? Hehe! Alright, don't regret it then!"

Jack chuckled happily and wrapped his arm around the other party's waist gently. Shirley's face immediately turned into pink, the sort of pink that brought champagne roses to the imagination.

"You..."

Molten anger rolled through Shirley as she shot Jack a deadly glare.

"Oh? Weren't you the one who asked me to be responsible for you? What's wrong? Do you regret it now?"

Jack uttered with a cold smile.

Chapter 1109

Shirley gritted her teeth, but when she noticed the young rich man was striding towards them in a huff, she immediately changed her attitude. "That's impossible. I. Shirley Lancaster, never regret anything I do. Do you even dare to tell me your name?" Shirley responded with a pretending warm smile.

"Jack White!"

Jack smiled frostily and added, "Jack White is my name and I'm proud of it. Why should I be afraid of telling you my name!"

"That's good!"

The beautiful woman smiled faintly, and after noticing the young rich man stood before them, she then greeted him, "Hi, Young Master Norton, it's been a long time! What brings you here? Are you picking someone up?"

When the Young Master Norton saw the intimate behaviors between the two, the corners of his mouth twitched awkwardly.

With a gloomy and darkened face, he looked at Shirley and said, "Shirley Lancaster, who is this brat? Don't forget your role! You're my fiancée, you and I are engaged! Who am I here to pick up? Don't you know that clearly in your heart?"

Jack heard the exchange and was rendered speechless. He did not see this coming; he truly did not expect that this man was actually Shirley's fiancé.

However, from the looks of it, their marriage was not by their own will but arranged by their parents. Shirley was clearly unsatisfied with the arrangement, hence she wanted to piss this so-called fiancé off.

"Heh! Young Master Norton, you'. re not that dumb, are you? Our marriage was arranged by our grandfathers before we were born into this world! You and I are totally not compatible!"

Shirley stared at the other party impatiently and then continued," Let me introduce to you my boyfriend, Jack White. We've been together for almost two years, so you better give up. I didn't tell you sooner because I was afraid it would affect your self-confidence. But since you've seen us together today, it is

what it is!"

Shirley paused for a few seconds and then added, "However, since I' m the one who broke off the engagement, I'm willing to compensate you with a hundred million bucks to comfort your wounded heart, how about that? After all, you're Young Master Norton, who is never short of women, right? I've always heard that you're often accompanied and surrounded by beautiful young ladies, so why do you still want to marry me?"

"Hmph! Shirley, it's not like you don't know that a hundred million bucks is nothing but stacks of paper in my eyes!"

Young Master Norton smiled icily. "On the contrary, those other women who are seen with me, are nothing but tools for me in handling business. They're just for show, and you're my fiancée! Once we're married, I promise that I'll stay with you every day and every second!"

"Wilton Norton, didn't I alread say it crystal clear? This man is my boyfriend and we've been together for almost two years! What else do you not understand?"

Shirley grew even more frustrated. She had already laid out all the cards for him to see clearly, but the other party refused to give up on her and continued to cling onto her.

Wilton cast Jack a despising glance and sneered coldly, "Haha! Shirley, do you think I'm that stupid? I don't believe your bullsh* t at all! How is it possible for our Young Miss Lancaster to find such an ordinary and lowly guy to be your boyfriend? You're testing my intelligence, right? Let's say what you said is true, you've been with him for so long, hence you should've bought him branded and premium clothes and watches, right? Why does this brat look like a beggar then?"

He paused for a moment as he looked at Shirley's bare feet. "Why are you barefoot?" He asked with a confused look on his face.

"None of your business! I like him that way. It doesn't matter if he's poor, at least he's better looking

than you, more charming than you!"

Shirley stared at Wilton puffingly. She was completely mad at the other party.

Wilton's expression grew even more unsightly. He pointed at Jack with a devastating yet ugly look on his face. "Shirley, you're insulting me, do you know that? You're my fiancée for f*ck sake! And you'd rather choose this trash than to be with me?" Wilton started to yell. "Hmph! Since you said you've been with him for almost two years, then you two must have slept together right?" He asked cynically.

Shirley scrunched up her face and a vein popped out in her neck. She turned to Jack with her teeth gritted and said stiffly, "Of-of course, we've slept together. What about it then? Are you hurt or disappointed? Oops, I'm sorry but I can't help. I just don't have feelings for you, so you can't force me. Besides, the marriage agreement was between my grandfather and yours. Now that they're both dead, the agreement is no longer valid! You'd better give up and leave!"

"I don't believe it! You must be lying to me!"

Wilton's face contorted and anger clouded his features. "Unless both of you kiss each other in front of me right now!" He yelled.

Chapter 1110

Jack immediately went pokerfaced when he heard Wilton's words. What the f*ck was this? He had just taken a long flight and landed in Soul City. He never expected to get involved in this drama.

Initially, he thought that he only had to help this pitiful woman by pretending to be her boyfriend to upset the other party so that they would leave.

Little did he expect the young master would actually request for them to kiss in front of him, in public, or else the young master would not believe.

But to think about it, Shirley had never had a boyfriend before, and suddenly she claimed that there was a boyfriend? It was too untrustworthy even for Jack himself.

A scarlet flush crept up Shirley's face and her eyebrows knitted. She was in a difficult situation right now.

However, Jack had touched her leg and wrapped his strong arm around her waist, if she were to deny that Jack was her boyfriend right now, all her previous efforts would go down the drain. Besides, she cared a lot about her reputation and public image, and right now she had no way to back down.

Watching Shirley's face go blank and dull, Wilton laughed and sneered sarcastically, "Oh? What's the matter? I was correct, right? Hahaha! Shirley, I'm no fool, it's not that easy to trick me! I, Wilton Norton, am not stupid!"

"Well. It's not that we don't want to, it's just that Shirley would be embarrassed if we were to kiss on the street!"

However, at this time, Jack intervened with a faint smile plastered on his face. His arm that was wrapped around Shirley's waist was now, tighter. He turned to Shirley and smiled warmly at her, "Besides, Shirley is tired after flying for such a long time. We should find a hotel to have a good meal and good rest first. Things like love and affection, we'll wait till the night when the atmosphere is right."

Shirley's blushed cheeks were even redder by now. She gazed at the Jack before him, realizing that he was truly a good-looking guy. Now that they were close and her waist was held tightly by him, she somewhat felt a little weird inside, like butterflies in her stomach.

Lana-who had been standing behind the two-was jealous of them in her heart. Even though the episode before her was just merely an act, she was envious of Shirley. If she were Shirley right now, she would die of happiness!

"You're such a pervert!"

Shirley quickly reacted to Jack's acting and cooperatively threw him a wink and scolded him in a coquettish tone.

Wilton burned with anger and fury vibrated through his being when he saw the couple flirting with each other, moreover, the woman before him was his fiance! How could he not have thrummed with anger?

"Motherf*cker! How dare you touch my woman! I'm Wilton Norton for f*ck sake! You certainly have a death wish!" Wilton hissed and stared deadly at Jack.

"Huh, brat, how dare you threaten me? There aren't many people who threaten me, but for those who did, they don't end up well in their life!"

Jack chuckled nonchalantly and continued, "In a moment, Uncle Xavien will be here to meet us. And there'll be dozens of bodyguards coming together with him. So, what now? Do you dare to beat me up in front of them?"

"Is that so? Do you really think that I'm afraid of the Lancaster family?"

Wilton jeered frostily and gestured to his underlings. "Beat him up! Uncle Xavien and his men aren't here now, let me, the Young Master of the Norton Family, teach this beggar a good lesson today! And I'll tell Uncle Xavien that his daughter is together with a stinky beggar with no power and no money! We'll see if Uncle Xavien agrees with your relationship then!" Wilton commanded to his underlings, at the same time, critiqued the couple.

As Wilton's last word dropped, the body guards behind him immediately charged forward and surrounded Jack; they prepared to beat him up.

Shirley merely wanted to piss Wilton off initially, so that he would give up on her. However, she did not expect at all that the other party commanded his men to beat Jack up.

She was in complete shock and terror right now. She was the culprit of this episode; she stirred up the problem, and yet Jack was the one who would receive the beating. Jack was innocent!

When Shirley thought of this, she clenched her teeth and stepped forward, standing in front of Jack and blocking the men from harming Jack. "Wilton Norton, don 't you understand the theory you can take a horse to the water, but : you can't make him drink'? You can't force a relationship nor marriage onto somebody else, And how could you beat people up when the outcome is not what you desire!" Shirley huffed angrily.NSW Chapter 1111-1115

Chapter 1111

"You're wrong. I'm not kind or generous at all. You're my fiancée and this trash slept with you! If I don't beat him to death today, I'm not Wilton Norton!"

Anger flooded Wilton's veins and his eyes were filled with rage. "Shirley Lancaster, I was being too nice to you before and you took my kindness for granted! How dare you sleep with another man, such reckless behavior! I'm not afraid of the Lancaster family at all! Don't forget, the Lancaster family is merely a third-class family here, and the Norton family is a second-class! A thirdclass can't do anything to a second-class!" Wilton barked as he stared fiercely at Shirley.

"I'm...I'm sorry, Jack. I didn't expect that things would turn out like this..."

Terror dawned upon Shirley's face as she heard Wilton's words. She started to consider whether or not to tell the other party the truth.

Nonetheless, Jack chortled and comforted her gently, “It's alright. He has body guards, I have two here, too!"

Ethan and Lana immediately stood up upon summon. "Hey, maggots, do you have a death wish? How dare you offend our young master!" They barked at Wilton and his men.

Those bodyguards who surrounded Jack stood frozen upon hearing. The two behind that man were his

bodyguards? And this brat was actually a young master? Could he be a young master of a certain prominent family?

The bodyguards were afraid of offending a highly authoritative person, hence they all wheeled their heads and looked at Wilton for the next order.

"Young Master Norton?"

Puzzlement appeared on Wilton's features as well. He quickly adjusted and sneered with a sinister laugh, "Oh, boy, your acting is not bad at all, who are you trying to intimidate? In this Soul City, I've not heard of any young master of the White family. Moreover, there are only a few first-class families here, what is there to be afraid of? Even if he is rich, he is at most a young master of a rich businessman! Beat him to death!" he ordered.

"Young Master Norton is right, I think this brat is probably just trying to stall for time, waiting for the head of Lancaster family to come and rescue them!"

One of the bodyguards smiled coldly. He charged directly with a clenched fist toward Ethan who stood in front of him.

"Bang! Wham! Pow!"

Ethan and Lana exchanged glances for a second and both found their eyes full of excitement. They had not fought for a long time; all their muscles and joints were screaming for some good exercise. It looked like they could use these bodyguards to practice.

Within a few seconds, dozens of bodyguards that Wilton had brought with him were all lying on the ground, wailing one after another.

"No f*cking way!"

Wilton was completely dumbfounded. He did not expect that the two bodyguards of this brat called Jack were so strong and powerful. With a few blows and blasts, his bodyguards were all knocked down and crying for pain on the ground.

"Your...your bodyguards, aren't they too powerful?"

The bare-footed Shirley who stood beside Jack had a silly look on her face. She studied Jack again-a man who was dressed so ordinary; she did not expect his bodyguards to be so powerful.

She had also heard that the majority of Wilton's bodyguards were former mercenaries and they possessed strong combat prowess. Ordinary fighters were not on par with them at all!

She clearly did not expect that these skillful bodyguards were like tofu in front of them-soft and weak.

"Take your people and leave!"

Jack looked at Wilton who almost wetted his pants-and reprimanded coldly. "Let me give you a piece of advice, feelings and love can't be forced, same goes for a marriage. Don't pester Shirley anymore, do you hear me?"

Chapter 1112

"Brat, I'll let you win this time!"

Wilton was smoking with anger inside, but he could not do anything. He had never imagined that he, as a young master of a second-class family, could not do anything about the current situation-his fiancée was with another man and he could not even teach the brat a lesson. Even worse, he was threatened by the man!

With his teeth gritted firmly and his fist balled tightly, he took his men and left the scene. He knew that if he continued to stay on, it would only bring him more trouble.

"Phew!"

After the other party left, the boulder in Shirley's heart was finally lifted. She heaved a huge sigh of relief and said, "I bet he wouldn't come pestering me again! Thank you so much!"

Jack had already loosened his arm around Shirley's waist. He smiled at the other party and uttered, "Miss Lancaster, I've done you a great favor this time. But looking at Wilton's expression just now, I bet he will be holding a grudge against me. Well. It doesn't matter, I'm not afraid anyway!"

Jack halted for a few seconds then continued, "But, I've helped you. Now how should you thank me?"

Shirley initially thought that Jack was a kind-hearted man. She did not expect Jack to ask her to return the favor. She could feel the anger building within her.

She studied Jack and suddenly thought of something. "You're such a pervert! You want to bring me to a hotel, don't you? I'm telling you; the episode just now was a ploy, I couldn't think of anything better. If you really want me to give my body to you, dream on! I'm not that kind of woman!" Shirley huffed, staring at Jack fiercely.

"Heh? Not that kind of woman?"

"Then why did you pretend to my girlfriend?"

The corners of Jack's mouth curved upward, and he teased the woman with a playful tone. The girl before him looked a few years younger than him, and her outfit and her appearance exuded a youthful aura, with a hint of daintiness.

Furthermore, her body was well maintained, otherwise, the filthy rich Young Master Norton would not be pestering her all the while.

Jack was even more convinced that if Shirley was not a good-looking woman or with an ordinary face, Young Master Norton would have broken the marriage agreement long ago.

“Girl...girlfriend? I.. I.. That was a ploy! Got it?"

Shirley rolled her eyes at Jack and added, “Besides, you broke my expensive heels! My heels are now scrapped; they cost me twenty to thirty thousand bucks! But since you've done me a huge favor, I'll not ask for compensation. It's even now!"

Jack laughed wholeheartedly at Shirley's reaction. “Don't worry. I' m not interested in you or your body at all. You're not as goodlooking as my wife and your figure is not as attractive as my body guard over here, right?"

When Lana heard the reference, her heart was pleased. She had always been confident of her body and now her self-confidence grew even more.

Although she knew that her body was attractive and wellmaintained that it was almost impossible to say a negative comment about it, when she heard it from Jack, the feeling was completely different.

Shirley's anger had not subsided since the conversation started. She peeped at Lana who stood beside Jack and realized that Jack was right, this woman's figure was indeed very alluring.

However, she snorted coldly, "Indeed, her body is wellmaintained and alluring. As for your compliment about your wife's good-looking features, I do not know. After all, I've not seen her before. So, lying is not a good thing, understand?"

"I'm too lazy to continue this argument with you. Anyway, I need a small favor from you. Help me out if you're willing to, if not, just forget it!"

Jack shrugged his shoulders and asked, "I want to know which are some of the famous apothecaries here? Preferably those with a lot and complete medicinal materials!"

"This is the favor you ask?"

Shirley was slightly tongue-tied at Jack's favor. He only wanted to inquire about apothecaries in the Soul City. Such a simple favor!

Chapter 1113

Jack was speechless as well. He laughed bitterly to break the awkward atmosphere. "Young lady, do you really think that I would want you to repay me with your body? Although you're good-looking like I've said, I'm not interested in you, so don't make a fool out of yourself!"

"What make a fool of myself! Keep dreaming on! I was so uncomfortable when you wrapped your arm around my waist just now!"

Rage churned inside Shirley as she spoke. She was considered one of the most beautiful women in the Soul City and there were always many men who were head over heels for her! She truly did not expect that this brat was not interested in her, moreover, he had said that into her face twice! That was like a blow to her selfesteem!

After saying that sentence, she looked at Jack and thought of the incident a moment ago--Jack offended Young Master Norton to help her. So she softened her tone and said, "Well, it happened that I m very familiar with what you've asked! How about this, you and I go over to that shop and you buy me a pair of shoes as compensation for my broken heels, and then I'll take you around to various famous apothecaries. Sounds good?"

Jack's eyes immediately lit up when he heard her plan. "Hehe, that would be perfect! After all, we' re

not familiar with this place!"

"But, I have one more request. I have no shoes on now, and I don't think you want a dainty lady to walk to the mall across the airport barefooted, right? So you have to carry me over there. This way, you can also show your sincerity in..."

Shirley suggested with an evil grin plastered on her face.

"I..."

Jack's face turned unsightly at her request.

A few horizontal lines formed between Shirley's brows as she saw the unwillingness on Jack's face. "What's wrong? I'm considered a good-looking woman with a dainty aura! There are so many men out there waiting for an opportunity like this! You only have to carry me to the mall, why did you put on such a reluctant look!" She said in a exasperated tone.

“Do you know who he is? How dare you let him carry you? Are you not afraid of death?"

Lana who witnessed the whole exchange-could not bear to see it continue anymore. Jack was the Supreme Warrior, how could she ask Jack to carry her? Ridiculous!

In her point of view, because of Jack's good-looking features, Shirley must have fallen in love with him at first sight, only then she requested ridiculously to approach Jack. Perhaps, this woman did not even know where the famous apothecaries were!

Nevertheless, Jack quickly shot Lana a glance, signaling her to shut her mouth. Apparently, Jack was afraid that she would accidentally expose his identity as the Supreme Warrior.

"Who is he then? Isn't he Jack White? I don't believe that I'll die just because he carried me on his back!"

"Let's move!"

Jack squatted down with a helpless look.

Shirley smugged and jumped onto Jack's back, and said to Lana," You, help me to carry my suitcase. It's a simple task and it's what a bodyguard should do, right? And you can't let your Young Master carry me at the same time to carry the suitcase, right?"

Jack carried Shirley on his back and strode toward the direction of the huge shopping mall across the stress. Lana followed closely behind them with an exasperated face. She balled his fists tightly and punched Shirley a few times, but only in her imagination.

"Let me do it, Lana. Carrying a suitcase should be a man's responsibility!"

Looking at Lana's hot and boiling face, Ethan immediately went over and pulled the suitcase. "By the way, Lana, don't tell me you... you like our Master?" Ethan whispered softly.

"Tch! Don't talk nonsense!"

Lana shot him a deadly stare was so frightening that Ethan could feel chills travel along spine.

Chapter 1114

Soon, Jack arrived at the mall outside of the airport with Shirley on his back.

Shirley's face was crimson red as she was on Jack's back. The manly aura that Jack emitted caused her to be extremely nervous. She had no idea that this guy, who made her angry, would give her such feelings.

"Hey, am I heavy?" Shirley thought about it and purposely asked to lighten the mood.

"You're alright!" Jack dismissed perfunctorily in a few words. He carried Shirley into a shoe shop he saw in front. "Oh yes, are you sure that you want to buy two pairs of shoes?"

"Of course! You've broken my shoes. Don't you know about double compensation?" Shirley pursued her delicate mouth and said arrogantly.

"Alright. Double! Double!" Jack smiled bitterly.

"Oh, my, cousin! Are you in a relationship?" As they finished speaking, a young girl who was trying on shoes in the shop immediately ran over when she saw Shirley. The girl opened her eyes widely and her eyeballs almost popped out of her sockets as she was very surprised.

"Let...let me down now!" Shirley's face was blushed in crimson color and she wanted to hide underground. She was absolutely speechless. All she wanted was to bully Jack, she had no idea that her younger cousin's sister would spot them

Jack also did not expect to meet someone familiar so he immediately placed Shirley down.

"Cousin, this is your boyfriend? You have very good taste, he's really handsome. I'm envious!" The young girl looked at Jack from head to toe as she walked over and said happily.

"What are you talking about? He's not my boyfriend!" Shirley rolled her eyes at the pretty girl in front of her before saying. "Willow, so nice to meet you here. I have no idea that I will bump into you right after I got off the plane!"

"Yes, cousin. What a nice coincidence. If it wasn't for this coincidence, I would not have seen this sweet interaction between you and your boyfriend!" Willow said with a smile. "Don't bother to deny it. Haha... If this is not your boyfriend, why are you on his back? Cousin, there's nothing to be shy about. Don't worry, I will keep this a secret from you. Uncle and the others won't know about this!"

Willow said happily. She soon thought about something and added. "Oh right, there's still Wilton. He can't know about this too."

"This guy broke my shoes so I...I asked him to carry me and pay me back. If you don't believe in me, you can ask him!" Shirley glanced at Jack and he actually started smoking the cigarette he took out. She was slightly speechless as he did not stand forward to help explain.

Previously she did this to make Wilton angry. It was troublesome if Willow misunderstood her for this and people learned about it. How would she explain to her father and the others?

"She's tight. Don't misunderstand us, I'm only repaying her shoes!" Jack smiled and said to Willow.

Chapter 1115

Willow's eyes lit up when she heard what Jack said. She walked forward and looked at Jack with her bright eyes. "Hey, are you still single when you're so handsome? Since you're not my cousin's boyfriend, how about being my boyfriend? Although I'm not as pretty as my cousin, I don't look bad too. Apart from that, I'm still young and I have not grown to my full potential yet. I'm sure that I will be even prettier in another two years. What do you think?"

The corners of Jack's mouth slightly twitched. He had never imagined that a young girl who was around 18 years old would confess her feelings to him. Apart from that, this was the first time they met each other. Were girls nowadays so proactive?

"Kid, stop messing around. I'm not from Soul City and I'm only here to run some errands. It so happens that I need your cousin's help for somethings!" Jack smiled helplessly and said to Willow.

Willow pursed her lips unhappily and said. "This is so boring. I'm so pretty but I'm being turned down. You're really insensible!"

"You better choose your shoes quickly!" Shirley could not help but laughed when she saw how Willow was turned down. She turned around and started looking for her shoes.

She spoke to Jack after she chose two pairs of shoes. "Hey Jack, these two pairs of my shoes are not cheap. They cost tens of thousands. You have the money right?"

"How much is everything, including hers? I'll pay by card!" Jack smiled as he glanced at Willow, who was beside them. He directly handed his bank card to the salesperson

"Alright, sir!" The salesperson was extremely happy and went over to settle the sales. It seemed like she had met with a rich person today.

"Oh wow, handsome! You're really generous. I really like men who are generous like you. Hey, you really don't want to consider being in a relationship with young girls like me? I might be able to let you experience something different?" Willow said happily when she saw that Jack had also paid for her shoes.

"Willow, I have no idea that you had started thinking about such things although you're so young! After all, I've never seen you being so proactive in the past!" Shirley could not help and started laughing when she saw how Willow acted.

"What do you know? It's seldom that I meet such a handsome guy. Apart from that, I can see a different aura on him. He's different from others but I can't describe it. I feel that he's like a king when he stands there!" Willow rolled her eyes at Shirley and said.

"Psst psst! You are giving him such high appraisals!" Shirley smiled bitterly before she continued to speak. "Come on, we need to go. I'll lead you guys to the pharmacy to take a look!"

"Oh my, you guys are here to buy medication? Is somebody gravely ill?" Willow immediately said when she heard their conversation. "One of my classmates has a grandfather whose an experienced traditional doctor and his medical skills are quite good. Do you guys want me to bring you to meet him? Ask the old man to take a look at you?"

"Haha... There's no need for that as we know how to treat the patient. We are just short of several herbs and it's difficult to obtain these herbs so we came here to take a look!" Jack laughed and said.

Soon, the group of people left.

However, several cars quickly drove over and stopped by the side of the road.

"Shirley, when did you come over here? Luckily we spotted you or it' s really difficult to find you!" Master Lancaster walked over with his bodyguards, butler, and a young man when he saw Shirley. He then spoke with a cold expression on his face. "Young Master Norton said that you have a boyfriend?"

He glanced at Jack after he spoke and continued to speak as his face darkened. "Is this guy the boyfriend that Young Master Norton mentioned?"NSW Chapter 1116-1120

Chapter 1116

"Father, you know I can't stand that guy. Since my grandfather has passed away and his grandfather also passed away last year, our marriage agreement doesn't matter anymore!"

Shirley quickly moved forward and took Xavien Lancaster's hand, acting persuasively, "Also, you know that Wilton's no good. I met him entering hotel rooms with different pretty women several times. Do you think that he's there to discuss business-related matters? From how they acted, they're definitely there for pleasure!"

Xavien eyed Jack suspiciously as he grumbled, "No matter what, you can't just simply find somebody, right? What's this guy' s name?"

"He... He's Jack White." Shirley smiled embarrassingly and continued, "Father, I just met him today, and I purposely said that he' s my boyfriend to agitate Wilton. I want him to give up, and things would be much easier if he does."

"Haha! Have you been watching too much drama?" laughed Xavien, his outburst stunning Shirley. "Don't you know what sort of a person Wilton is? He's not somebody you can offend. Although I don't want you to marry him, he comes from a second-class aristocratic family. Not only is his family rich, but we work with them on many of our projects!"

Xavien let that sink before he continued, "Wilton had already called and asked you to get ready for the wedding in two days. He's sending the invitations out today, and he'll redraw all his investments in the projects we're working together with them on if you don't marry him. Do you know the consequences?"

"What?!" Flummoxed, Shirley stood in silence as she felt her head buzzing.

"How's that possible? Uncle, what is Wilton thinking? How could he act that way? Isn't it too much for him to force cousin to marry him, knowing she doesn't like him?" Unable to stomach Wilton's ridiculousness, Willow voiced out her opinion as it was unfair for Shirley. "Wouldn't Shirley be treading on dangerous grounds if she ends up marrying him for real? Will she have even a single peaceful day?"

"Sigh! I know that!" grumbled Xavien in extreme distress. "However, we'd be losing so much funding operation if they redraw their investment. We'd be losing a lot by then. Apart from that, we'll need to pay the other business owners penalties, and that's a huge amount. Our family will be done for when all that happens."

The young man in white suit, who was beside Xavien, stepped forward and said, "Sister, it's best if you marry him. After all, you're bonded by a marriage agreement. If you don't marry him, not only will our third-class aristocratic family be unstable, but we'll also fall into bankruptcy."

Shirley's eyes turned red and she looked at her brother, Hendrix Lancaster in disbelief. "I can't believe you had the heart to say that, Hendrix! Don't you know my life is ruined if I marry him? It'll be ruined, all down in ashes! Do you think that Wilton is a good man when he can think of such shameless ways to threaten you guys? Do you think that he'll be a good husband?"

What Hendrix said next made Shirley reel back in shock... "But Sister, who's going to marry him if you

don't? Young Master Norton is rich and powerful! If you marry him, our families will get even stronger as we'll be working together. Not only will our position as a third-class aristocratic family be strengthened, but we might be able to become a second-class aristocratic family soon. I believe that we'll take it up a notch within a couple of years!"

"Oh, I can just die in anger right now..! How can you think like that, Hendrix? Haha...! You guys are going to disregard my wellbeing for the future development of the Lancaster family?" Shirley's face turned pale from anger and stared at them angrily.

"Daughter, don't get so worked up about it!" persuaded Xavien. "You've angered Wilton gravely this time. This isn't the only thing he's threatening us for. As long as you don't marry him in the wedding ceremony he prepared in two days, he'll bring men and take you away. He might even attack us! You know that he's acquaintances with a seven-star King of War, and they have a really good relationship!"

Chapter 1117

Shirley was stumped when she heard that Wilton was going to fight against her parents, reeling two steps back in her shock.

"Come on, Sister, let's go back. You should rest well today and get mentally prepared so that you can get married in two days," uttered Hendrix, a wan smile on his face as he did.

"You won't just let a seven-star King of War annihilate the entire Lancaster family, will you?"

"I never thought that Wilton would be such a bastard that he'd go through such lengths to make me marry him." Shirley smiled coldly and looked at Xavien in front of her and growled, “It's all your fault! I've told you that it's best if you reduce your collaboration with the Norton family and to not make the projects so huge. What did you do? You never listen to me and insist on making the projects huge! Haha...! You did that just to make more money. Do you see what's happening now? You've just ruined your daughter's happiness for the rest of her life!"

"Sigh... I know I'm the one at fault here, my daughter, and I should' ve listened to you from the start, but I'm left without a choice. I know that you're an obedient child. You won't just stand by and look as the

Lancaster family gets wiped out, right?" Xavien was obviously helpless and looked at Shirley pleadingly.

Jack thought about it and asked," Are you sure that the seven-star King of War would do something so bad on that person's behalf?"

"Of course. This King of War is really close to Wilton. Many people asked for his help to get rid of their competition. He would do it as long as people pay him enough money!"

“You people should quickly leave Soul City," said Shirley. "The Norton family has many masters and you guys are going to be dead the next time they see you, considering how you offended them today. They might be sending people looking for guys now!"

"No way. I won't go back until I have all the herbs I need." Jack smiled calmly and placed his hands behind his back. He still looked so indifferent.

To him, what happened was like listening to a story. It was as if the seven-star King of War and the Norton family meant nothing, barely a threat to him.

"Father, you guys should go back. I 've promised Jack that I'd bring them to the pharmacy to take a look, and I have to see that through at least." Shirley smiled bitterly and pulled her luggage over. "Help me bring my luggage back. Don't worry, I won't run away. I'll do it for the Lancaster family."

"Alright." Xavien nodded and soon left with his people.

"Miss Shirley, you really plan on sacrificing yourself for the Lancaster family?" Lana walked forward and asked when she saw how Shirley's eyes were filled with despair.

Chapter 1118

Shiley offered a weak smile. “What else can I do? I never thought I'd make Wilton act like this when my

original plan was to make him give up. I don't have other ways to resolve this, now that he's using such ways to threaten me."

She smiled bitterly and muttered, “Nevermind, I shouldn't think so much about it. He might treat me well once we're married."

Although she comforted herself with these thoughts, Shirley knew all too well Wilton was a playboy. How would she enjoy her days after they got married?

"Is it happening in two days? We might be able to help you, so don't be disheartened," Jack came forward and spoke indifferently.

"You?" Shirley was stunned. She then shook her head with a bitter smile on her face. "How can you guys help me? The bodyguards Young Master Norton took with him today are just regular ones, but they have several masters in their family. Apart from that, he's acquaintances with that sevenstar King of War, and that's daunting. Simply put, his family isn't some power we can offend. Do you understand?"

"You only need to remember that I' 'll help you since I said so." Jack was too lazy to explain things to her, so he said, "Let's go! Which pharmacy shall we go first?"

"Hehe! I want to go with you guys, Cousin!" Willow giggled. "It's nice to follow a handsome guy and ogle him-it's good for the eyes!"

"Don't you need to study? Why do you want to follow us?" Shirley rolled her eyes at Willow, annoyed. Since when did this girl become someone who would drool over men?

"Cousin, it's Saturday, and I'm resting. I'm also resting tomorrow. Don't you know that?" Willow also rolled her eyes at Shirley. "Apart from that, I'm a senior and I'm almost graduating. There aren't many classes recently, so it doesn' 't matter if I go or not."

With Shirley leading the way, the group arrived at a large pharmacy.

Not wasting time, Jack entered and asked an old man, "Boss, do you guys have a hundred-year-old Sinomenium?"

"A hundred-year-old Sinomenium? Haha! Are you joking with me, young man? How would I have something like that here? I have some that are ten years old, and I also have ginseng, wolfberries, and angelicas that are a hundred years old. Do you need these?" The old man laughed. "I don't think that the item you mentioned exists. A hundred-year-old Sinomenium would be a treasure among treasures. You won't be able to buy it without tens of millions!"

Jack's face darkened when he heard this; finding the Sinomenium was a difficult task after all.

Such an item truly was a rare treasure.

Thinking some more, Jack then asked, "How about the Snow Lotus? Old Sir, do you have any here?"

"There's one," blurted the old man.

Pleased with that, Jack excitedly asked, "How much is it? Name your price, and I'll give it."

However, the old man smiled bitterly. “Sir, I haven't finished speaking yet. I do have one, but a woman had just bought it. Yes, it was purchased by the Zimmer family's maid, so you're a little too late, and there's nothing I can do. I can't sell it to you no matter how much money you can give me."

Jack was extremely disappointed when he heard this.

However, he thought about it and immediately asked. "Oh, right, how long has the maid left?"

"She just left a couple of minutes ago," replied the old man.

"Really? Come on, let's go to the Zimmer family now!"

Chapter 1119

Jack saw a glimpse of hope when he heard what the pharmacy owner had said to them. The group immediately took a taxi to the Zimmer family mansion.

Jack and his group, however, were stopped when they arrived at the entrance.

"You guys are...?" questioned one of the bodyguards.

"Oh, I'm the young miss of the Lancaster family, Shirley Lancaster. I'd like to request a meeting with the Zimmer family master," Shirley politely greeted the other party.

She had reminded Jack to be on his best behavior prior to their arrival. The Zimmer family was a first-class aristocratic family in Soul City, and even the Norton family dared not offend them, let alone the Lancaster family.

Nonetheless, she believed that it would not be a problem if she requested to meet their family master based on her honor.

"Oh, you're Miss Shirley!" The bodyguard glanced at Shirley and smilingly added, "How about this, Miss Shirley: why don't you come back tomorrow? I'll inform my master tonight and you just need to come over tomorrow. I'm sorry, but it's not possible to meet him today."

"Can't we meet him today? Why not?" Shirley wondered what was going on. She knew Jack and the others needed the Snow Lotus, and should they return only the day after, the Zimmer family might have already used the Snow Lotus.

They came to the Zimmers in hopes that they were in time.

"There's a well-known doctor here with us today. He's an honorable King of War, and he's treating our old madam now!" the bodyguard explained.

"Let us in-we're in a hurry. We might not make it if we're late!" Jack's face darkened as there was no time to lose. Where would he find a second Snow Lotus if this one was used?

It was a rare item and it was no easy to find one, so he had to get his hands on it.

However, he was not going to grab it or snatch it away from them.

"Who are you? Didn't you hear what I said just now? We're polite to her because she's Miss Shirley Who are you to speak to us? You look like the Lancaster family's bodyguard. Haha...! The Lancaster family's bodyguards are not qualified to talk to me. Don't think of me as just a door guard, I'm an assistant commander of the bodyguards unit with a fighting prowess of a nine-grade martial artist!" The bodyguard sized Jack up condescendingly.

"Get out of my way. We're running out of time, and I don't have the time to explain everything to you!" Not wanting to waste a second longer, Jack pulled Shirley with him as they walked into the Zimmers' mansion.

"Jack, this is a first-class aristocratic family we're talking about. This is the Zimmer family's residence!" Shirley was startled at Jack's brash behavior, though she failed to resist Jack's strength as she walked with him against her will.

"Stop him! How dare he barge into our Zimmer family's residence?! Is he suicidal?!" The assistant commander of the bodyguards immediately yelled loudly.

Several bodyguards immediately stood in front of Jack and the others, blocking their way.

Perplexed, Willow called out anxiously behind them, "Oh my god, Jack! Stop it! Although you're handsome, you can't not honor the Zimmers!"

Of course, there was no denying Jack looked rather spunky with that attitude, but who knew how long this handsome figure could stand his ground? He would be humiliated if the Zimmers' bodyguards pummeled him to the ground.

Chapter 1120

Both Willow and Shirley were very worried for Jack.

After all, these bodyguards could not be equated to the Norton family. These were the Zimmer family's bodyguards, and there was an assistant commander among them.

"Got a death wish?" The bodyguards did not hold back when they saw Jack and the others barging in. Balling their fists, they lunged and charged at the group of three.

Bam! Slam! Pow!

They fell to the floor, defeated as their faces darkened.

"Oh dear, they've really started fighting now!" Shirley and Willow s faces morphed into horror when they saw the group of three won.

It was better had they lost, but as they had beaten the Zimmer family's bodyguards, there was no denying that Jack and his company crossed the line.

Still, Jack and the others did not stop at all as they moved forward, taking down guards that came in their way.

Willow eyed Shirley anxiously as she asked, "Cousin, what should we do? Should we follow them?"

"Let's go!" Shirley gritted her teeth and walked forward, quickly catching up with Jack and the rest.

Glancing at the guards lying on the floor, Willow immediately followed suit.

The pale-faced guard on the floor yelled loudly, "Help, somebody is barging in!"

The bodyguards in charge of patrolling the compound immediately ran over when they heard the yelling.

It did not take long until guards after guards lined up before Jack and the rest, glaring at them angrily and pointedly. "Who are you people?! How dare you barge into our family's residence?! Are you people trying to get yourselves killed?"

“Ask your family master to come out. I have something important to see him for, and I need to see him now!" Jack directly said as he did not want to waste time talking to them.

"Haha... What high-sounding sentiments! Do you think that you can just make a request to meet our family master?" Another bodyguard laughed and said, "If you kneel down and apologize now, we'll allow you to leave here alive. Otherwise, prepare your tombs!"

"Guess we can only force ourselves in then!" Jack smiled coldly and directly walked forward.

Whoosh!

A guy appeared in front of Jack and swung his fist toward him.

This guy's speed showed that he was at least a grandmaster at an impressive level.

Thomp!

That man, however, was sent flying by Jack's punch. He crashed onto the ground and he vomited blood. His face immediately turned pale.

"How's this possible?" The other bodyguards were frightened when they saw this scene-they never thought the man before them was that powerful. No wonder they dared barge in.

Nonetheless, they surrounded Jack, confident in their number and fighting prowess.

Slam! Thunk! Pow!No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1121-1125

Chapter 1121

Unfortunately, once the chaos subsided, all the Zimmer family's body guards fell to the ground as they wailed and groaned.

"What? How are they that powerful?" Shirley and Willow were dumbfounded, unable to register how powerful Jack and the others were. The masters of the Zimmer family were not their match.

"Master, it's bad! It's bad! There's a fight going on outside!" A bodyguard rushed into the Zimmer family's living room.

"There are several people trying to barge into our house to meet you. They refused to listen when we told them to come back tomorrow, and they fought with our men!"

The bodyguard lowered his head in shame and continued, "They're that strong that we can barely fight against them. Even the head commander was sent flying by their punches."

“How's that possible?! Who are they? How dare they barge into our house!" The Zimmer family master's face darkened as he stood up.

The King of War, who was treating the old man, also stood up. "It looks like we need to go out and take a look!"

"Alright!" The Zimmer family master nodded. He walked outside with several of the Zimmer family's guardians and the King of War.

It was not long until they came across Jack and the others.

"Young man, it looks like the Zimmer family had never offended you guys. What is the meaning of this? You've attacked our people!" The Zimmer family master's face darkened as he looked at Jack. He knew almost all the masters in Soul City, but he had no recollection of such a guy.

Jack smiled bitterly when he heard this. "I had no choice, Master Zimmer. Would I be able to meet you if I didn't do anything? I can only apologize for what I did."

"You're rather wild, young man! Do you think you can hit anybody in the Zimmer family as you wish?" growled one of the Zimmer family's guardians with a Herculean physique and face covered with his bushy beard.

He stepped forward and stared at Jack fiercely.

Jack looked at him and smiled indifferently as he spoke, "You're no match for me, so it's best if you don't waste your energy. I'm here today because I need to discuss something with your master."

"You got a very grating behavior!" The corners of the burly man's mouth twitched as he clenched his fists, and weak Chi was emitted. He was a master with the fighting prowess of the semi-god level.

He rushed forward speedily and his punch was aimed at Jack's face. He moved so speedily with an imposing manner.

"Hmph!" Jack made a small sound of indignance at the attack as he met the attack with his own fists.

Jack's attack looked simple and fast. His punch met the opponent' s punch without any hesitation.

"Such power!" The man's fist had just met Jack's fist when he was shocked at how daunting Jack was.

Unable to stand his ground, the man flew backward at the next moment, only landing several meters back. He moved a couple of steps backwards before he could stabilise himself.

"How's this possible? Even Guardian Wright can't topple him?" Many of the Zimmer family s masters' faces darkened when they saw this scene. Guardian Wright was sent flying while Jack remained perfectly where he stood; even a dumb person could see the difference between these two.

Willow and Shirley, who were standing behind Jack, looked at each other and were utterly stupefied-this Jack guy was really strong. Before this, she did not believe Jack when he first said he would help her.

In her opinion, there was nothing scary about the Norton family as long as Jack took action. Even the seven-star King of War was not Jack's opponent!

"Haha... Let's discuss this peacefully!" The Zimmer family master quickly sweetened his tone when he saw what happened, surprised as he was. Pray tell, what does a young brother need from us? Let's go in and discuss it!"

Chapter 1122

"Yes, yes, yes... Everybody, please go in... Please go in!" Several of the Zimmer family's elders offered genial smiles to Jack and his company, no longer arrogant and disdainful like they were moments ago.

They looked at Jack fearfully.

Such a master could kill everyone in the residence had he wanted to, after all.

"Alright." Jack nodded and followed them inside.

Soon, everybody was seated in the living room.

Not one to beat around the bush, Jack instantly began, "Master Zimmer, I'm Jack White and I'm here because I heard you've just purchased a Snow Lotus. It so happened that my father is gravely ill, and he needs this herb, so I'm here today with hopes that Master Zimmer will give this herb to me."

"Well..." Master Zimmer looked awkward. He glanced at the old madam, who laid on the sofa, and said, "Jack, my mother has been sick for several years, and finally a miracle doctor is here to help cure her. I need this Snow Lotus badly, and the doctor even said that if my mother isn't cured, she won't live past this year."

Meanwhile, The King of War kept staring at Lana and Ethan. The two looked awfully familiar, but he could not put his finger on it.

Jack walked toward the table and picked up the Snow Lotus before speaking with a smile on his face.

"Don't worry. Since I've taken something that belonged to you, I'll definitely help cure Old Madam's sickness. After all, it won't settle with me if she passes because I took the Snow Lotus."

Jack flipped his hand and put the Snow Lotus away. He then asked the Zimmers to bring him a pen and paper.

He wrote a prescription on the paper and passed it to Master Zimmer. “This prescription will cure Old Madam's sickness. This prescription uses normal herbs and you can get them from any normal pharmacies. There's no need for you to use something like the Snow Lotus."

"Really? Thank you so much for this!" Master Zimmer had no idea if this prescription would work, but he could not do anything as Jack insisted on taking the Snow Lotus away.

After all, he was a powerful individual that the Zimmers could not fight against.

"We'll be taking our leave now." Jack smiled and left with Shirl Willow, and the others.

Master Zimmer's face immediately darkened after Jack and the others left. He held his hands into tight fists. "This is too much! Is this prescription better than yours? If this doesn't work, my mother will... It's not so easy to find something like the Snow Lotus!"

At that moment, the King of Wara miracle-worker himself-took the prescription and read it. A surprised look flashed through his eyes. "Amazing...! Truly amazing! I had no idea that such way exists! This prescription will definitely work! Why didn't I think of this? Not only is this effective, but there are fewer side effects compared to my prescription."

"Is that true, Sir? Is that young man's prescription really useful?" Master Zimmer immediately asked in excitement.

"Yes! Ask your people to get the herbs based on this prescription. I think that Old Madam's illness will be

completely cured after drinking the medication twice!" The King of War nodded and looked toward the entrance.

"How strange... That man and woman look so familiar. I must've seen them somewhere."

Chapter 1123

The King of War frowned and wondered.

It was seconds later that his eyes widened as his expression morphed into awe. "Goodness, it really was them. It's really those two after all! I never thought that I' d meet them in this lifetime!"

"Sir, who are you talking about? Do you know those people?" Master Zimmer was baffled, and he could see from the King of War' s expression that those were important people.

"Yes, and it would've been better if I recognized them the moment I saw them. Alas, I only remembered when they left." The King of War said in extreme excitement. “That woman is the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs, and the man is the God of War, Ethan Haays! Ethan Haays is a true miracle doctor, my idol!"

"What?! There were two Gods of War?! No wonder they were so strong!" Master Zimmer was extremely afraid when he heard of this. "Strange... Since both of them are Gods of War, who is this Jack White? The Gods of War seem to address him respectfully!"

"There's only one person who those two Gods of War would address respectfully!" The King of War raised his head and said slowly, "That person..is the Supreme Warrior himself."

Hiss!

Everybody took a sharp inhale. The Supreme Warrior... Never in a million years did they think the mysterious Supreme Warrior would enter their residence. The person who spoke to them jus moments

ago was, in fact, the Supreme Warrior.

The guardian who fought with Jack was embarrassed. Had he actually fought against the Supreme Warrior? Was he suicidal? Thank his lucky stars the Supreme Warrior did not go all out on him, or he would have died.

"Jack, you're so strong! You're my idol!" Willow walked beside Jack and looked at him in awe. "Are you sure that you don't want to consider my offer? Let me be your girlfriend! Oh, you got to be older than considering you're married now, right? Don't worry, I don't mind being your second wife!"

"..." Willow's boldness embarrassed Jack, unable to reply to her.

Jack offered a tight smile and said, “Let's go take a look at the next pharmacy!"

They went to several pharmacies throughout the entire afternoon. Jack had already gotten all the herbs he needed, yet there was no sign of the hundred-year-old Sinomenium.

None of the pharmacies had it.

"There's none?" Jack could not control his disappointment after receiving the same news from another inquiry.

He did not expect, however, that the pharmacy owner would smilingly comment, "Young man, it's difficult to obtain Sinomeniums, let alone one that is a hundred years old. That is a precious item among treasures!" The owner paused before he continued, “However, I know that the Sky City Auction House in the city center is having a special auction tomorrow for rare herbs. You can try your luck there tomorrow and see if you'll get anything!"

"Really? Thank you so much!" Jack's hope was restored with that news, thanking the pharmacy owner as he gestured with his hands.

Chapter 1124

"Alright, Miss Shirley, thank you for today. Don't worry, I'll go to you the day after tomorrow. You don't need to worry about the Norton family--I will destroy them if they dare force you to marry him," spoke Jack with an indifferent smile after they exited the Zimmer family mansion.

"Do remember this promise. Anyway, I'll take you for your word, and if you don't show up, I'll hate you for the rest of my life." Shirley rolled her eyes at Jack and looked at the time before saying, "Why don't I treat you to dinner? It's quite late now. After all, this is the first time you guys are here in Soul City, and I don't think any of you know which restaurants taste better. I can also take this chance to be a good host."

"Haha... Sure! Since Miss Shirley is being so generous, we'll just follow you!" Jack laughed and agreed to it.

The group of people soon found a hotel. Shirley and Willow left after dinner.

The next morning, Jack arrived at the entrance of the Sky City Auction House with Lana and Ethan.

This was a huge auction house located in the city center of Soul City.

Jack and the others were stopped when they were about to enter." Sir, we'll need to verify your assets if you'd like to join our auction. The assets in your card need to be more than one billion to enter."

Jack was led to the side for his assets to be verified before they could enter the auction house.

The auction was centered around herbs, hence the people who attended were successful businessmen who did herb business or well-known pharmacy owners.

Hence, many people from the neighboring cities also came due to the successful marketing.

Some of them were here just to observe while some came because they knew that there were certain herbs for sale.

Soon, an old man walked onto the stage.

"Greetings, everyone! Welcome to today's herbs-themed auction at Sky City Auction House!" The old man was a worker of the auction house. He smiled and started introducing the items to everybody.

"Alright, we'll start with the first item of the day. The first item is a thousand-year-old ginseng, and I'm sure that all of you know how precious ginseng of this age is. The price is naturally expensive and starts at one million. Each call needs to be more than one hundred thousand!"

"Alright, Sirs, you may start your bid!" The old man signaled for the bidding to begin.

"One million and five hundred thousand!"

"One million and eight hundred thousand!"

That thousand-year-old ginseng was sold at the high price of 1.5 million.

Jack and the others were here for a hundred-year-old Sinomenium, and nobody knew if such a precious item would be sold in this action. They silently waited at the corner, waiting for the next herb to be auctioned.

In truth, all the herbs in the auction were rare, but they failed to catch Jack's eyes.

Many people joined the auction, and some even had heated arguments over some herbs.

However, Jack had not joined any of the biddings.

The old man in charge of auctioning the items also noticed Jack. In his opinion, Jack was here to observe, so he did not pay much attention to Jack.

Time slowly passed by, and Jack grew agitated when he noted that despite the many herbs auctioned, the hundred-year-old Sinomenium that he wanted never showed up.

"It looks like we've wasted our time here." Ethan, who was by Jack's side, smiled helplessly. The hundred -year-old Sinomenium was so rare, it felt natural for it not to be auctioned at that moment.

Chapter 1125

Jack needed that Sinomenium to cure his father from the poison that plagued him.

As the auction was about to end, the old man on the stage smiled." Next, we're auctioning the most precious herb in this auction. It can be considered a precious item, and it is a hundred-year-old Sinomenium! This..."

Jack and Ethan instantly eyed each other, and their eyes glistened with excitement. Turned out that herb was up for grabs after all!

If that was the case, they definitely had to get this hundred-year-old Sinomenium quickly.

After the old man introduced the herb's usage and rarity, he stretched a finger forward and said, “The starting price of this hundred-year-old Sinomenium is one hundred million, and the bid can't be less than a million. Now, everybody can start bidding!"

"This is a true precious item! Haha! I'll pay a hundred and fifty million for it!" A middle-aged man was

intrigued by this item and raised the price by fifty million.

"Two million!" A wealthy-looking woman stood up and doubled the price of the initial bid.

"It looks like there's some fierce competition today!" Ethan smiled bitterly and reminded Jack.

Jack nodded. "This is a rare hundred-year-old item, and the starting price of one million is obviously too low. This hundredyear-old Sinomenium is worth at least five million!" Jack paused before he continued, "I'm taking it with me, no matter how expensive it gets."

"Three million!" Another old stood up and bidded.

The price gradually increased, and it was not long until the herb reached the five-million mark.

At this moment, the people bidding for the item had obviously decreased.

"Six million!" It was only then Jack bade, slowly standing up and calling out a number.

The face of the guy who bidded five billion immediately darkened.

He stood up again and said, "Seven million!"

"Wonderful! Who knew that this hundred-year-old Sinomenium of ours would reach the price of seven million. It looks like everybody here is good at recognizing wonderful items!" The old man on the auction stage was smiling happily. After all, the higher the price of the auction, the greater their commission.

"One billion!" Before the old man could finish speaking, Jack once again called out a number, and his

offer shocked everyone.

"Must you take this from me, young man?" A middle-aged man not far away immediately looked at Jack angrily, his eyes threatening Jack.

"This is an auction house, and the item belongs to the highest bidder. Don't you know the rules?" Jack looked at the other party and smiled coldly. That man thought he would back down with that so-called intense glare of his.

"Haha... Young man, you're quite daring!" The middle-aged man started laughing loudly and said, One and a half billion!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1126-1130

Chapter 1126

"What? It's at 1.5 billion now? That man's a lunatic, and rich at that! This is more than what the item is worth!" some random person exclaimed, unable to comprehend the middle-aged man's bid.

"Yes, that offer's too high. I get it's a precious item, but does he need to spend that much money?" Another person was also completely stunned.

An old man thought about it and said, "You guys don't understand. His offer sounds too much, but if they need this herb urgently, they' ll need to buy it no matter how expensive it is. They definitely have a need for it!"

"1.5 billion! The pricing is at 1.5 billion now! Anybody else wants to bid for it?" The old man in charge of the auction once again yelled in excitement from the stage. Such a high price made him lose his composure.

Just when the other party thought Jack would not bid any higher, Jack smiled indifferently and called out, "Two billion!"

"What?! Two billion?! Who is this young man? He actually called two billion!"

"I've never seen this guy before! He must be from another city!" Many people were completely shocked when they heard Jack increasing the price again.

"This guy is really daring. Don't he know that the guy he's offending is from a huge clan in Soul City? This person's nickname is Mountain Tiger, and he's a ruthless person.

Anyone who offends him won't end up well. Such discussions were heard as murmurs from the crowd.

Jack could not help but frown when he heard this-seemed though that man was from an underground, large power clan. No wonder the other party dared threaten him previously.

Nonetheless, Jack was not one to be intimidated easily.

Apart from that, Jack needed that herb to cure the poison in his father's body, thus Jack was not about back down.

The man with the nickname 'Mountain Tiger' had a darkened expression as he glanced at Jack heatedly.

"Brother Tiger, why not just let it be? We can't be responsible for this guy's suicidal actions," said a muscular man beside Mountain Tiger.

Two others signed toward Mountain Tiger; they would get Jack once the bidding was over.

"Alright, young man. I'll give it to you." Mountain Tiger smiled indifferently and sat down.

However, many people knew that Mountain Tiger would not simply give up things he had his eyes.

It might be better if the other party continued to increase the price and win the auction. The other party must have something else in mind if they directly gave up bidding for the item under such circumstances.

"Two billion! This young brother bid two billion! Anybody else with a higher price?" The old man on the stage was slightly worried for Jack. Nothing would happen in the auction house, but Jack was on his own upon exiting the building. After all, the clan supporting Mountain Tiger was so strong that even their boss dared not offend them.

Mountain Tiger was one of the important subordinates to the clan master.

"Two billion, going once!"

"Two billion, going twice!"

"Two billion--sold!"

Chapter 1127

As the gavel slamming was heard, the 100-year-old Sinomenium finally belonged to Jack.

A beautiful female server sent the Sinomenium to Jack and brought him to the counter for payment.

After they paid, a man walked toward Jack and his company. "Sir, the person in charge of this auction house sent me to inquire. Do you need anybody to escort you out? If you're from another city, we'll take you safely out of this city. Don't worry, we can still protect your safety when you're in this city."

It was obvious that the auction house owner also knew that somebody who could simply come up with two billion for an auction was no average person.

Apart from that, it would affect the auction house's reputation if anything happened to Jack and the others.

"Haha... Thank you for your kind gestures, but tell your boss that there's no need for that. Leaving this city won't be as difficult, in my opinion." Jack laughed and rejected the man.

He promised to help Shirley tomorrow, thus leaving the city was the last thing in his mind.

Wilton had started promoting his wedding ceremony with Shirley at that moment, and Jack heard people discussing it on his way here.

Wilton obviously did not plan to give up.

"Yes, Sir." The man was evidently surprised at Jack turning their offer down, but he left nonetheless.

After Jack paid and bought another two items, the auction was completed.

"Let's go!" Jack smiled as he led Lana and Ethan toward the door.

"Go, follow them!" The man named Mountain Tiger immediately led half a dozen of his subordinates as he followed behind Jack and the others.

"Sigh!" exhaled the old man on the auction stage when he saw how Mountain Tiger and the others followed behind Jack.

He obviously felt that Jack and the others would be fraught with grim possibilities. The people with the bigger fist had the most say in things; that was how the world worked.

Many people had made their estimation and they could not help but stare at the group of three after they left the auction house. They wanted to see if the people from the Green Dragon Clan would attack them.

Sure enough, Mountain Tiger and the rest surrounded the group of three after they walked some distance away.

"Oh no, those three are done this time!" blurted a person as the situation slowly escalated.

"Yeah. I saw the worker of the auction house ask the guy something just now, probably offering protection, but that guy turned them down. Beats me, what he's thinking." Somebody smiled bitterly. "These people from the Green Dragon Clan might not simply let them go, even if they leave the city."

"Those three might've had a better fate had they robbed the herb from someone else, but nothing can be done since it's Mountain Tiger. I wonder where these people come from as they don't seem to know how terrible Mountain Tiger and the others are!" Somebody glanced at them with a pitiful look but did not know what to say.

"You're rather bold, young man. You took what Brother Tiger wanted! Haha... I've seen daring people, but none of them are as daring as you!" A man smiled and looked at the group of three with a funny look on his face.

Another guy looked at Lana's pretty figure from head to toe. "That woman's pretty, Brother Tiger, and she has such a nice figure. Tsk, tsk! It's not easy to meet a beautiful woman with such a face. Seems like it's our lucky day today!"

Brother Tiger smirked and said, "We've hit the jackpot, everyone. Kill the men, and we can toy with this woman. What's more, we don' t need to spend a penny on the hundred-year-old Sinomenium. Haha!

We've gotten lucky, now that I think about it!"

Chapter 1128

"Lucky?" Jack smirked when he heard what the men said. "I need to tell you guys this: be smart and walk away. All three of us are people you can't afford to cross."

"Pfft!" The people standing opposite them started laughing when they heard this.

"Hahaha! Young man, have you even asked around who Brother Tiger is? He's a member of the Green Dragon Clan and one of the important subordinates to our clan master. Who in this city doesn't know what happens when you anger the Green Dragon Clan? You're acting funny when you try to threaten Brother Tiger. Do you think threats would budge Brother Tiger?" The muscular man laughed loudly as if he heard the funniest joke in the world.

"Young man, I can understand your feelings right now. You know that you're done for, so you pretend to be unpredictable so we' d back down and leave, am I right?" Brother Mountain grinned, "Sadly, these tricks won't work on us! It's already too late, even if you obediently hand over the hundred -year-old Sinomenium to us and kneel to beg!"

"That's right, young man. Brother Tiger gave you a fair warning when you were bidding against him. You were the one who refused to listen, and it's too late for you to regret it now!" added another old man smilingly.

"Regret? Haha! Do you think I'll regret that?" Jack laughed and looked at the other party coldly." Get out of my way!"

“F*ck. How dare you act this way to me? Brother Tiger, allow me to teach him a lesson!" Angered at Jack's unperturbed mannerism and daring to threaten them, the burly man rushed forward and swung his fist toward Jack.

"Idiot!" Jack grew angry when he saw how the other party still dared to attack them. A strong aura

spread from his body, and the invisible pressure caused the air around him to move.

Thomp!

Dodging the attack with just a slight movement, he swung his fist angrily to the man's abdomen.

A slightly muted sound could be heard and the burly man flew several meters away. He crashed onto the ground with a huge bloody hole at his abdomen.

"He's dead!" The others were stunned when they saw what happened-one of their masters was killed within one second.

Apart from that, Jack's punch was so speedy that everything seemed like a blur.

"Attack together!" Realizing Jack was no regular fighter, Mountain Tiger ordered everybody to attack together.

"Kill them!" Jack also gave an order. These people failed to win during the auction and actually plan to rob them on the streets. If this happened to somebody else, would those people not suffer?

Thomp! Pow! Slam!

The noises from their combat were frighteningly audible, and it was not long until the remaining six to seven people-including Mountain Tiger-were killed by Jack and the others. All of them laid on the floor, motionless.

"How's this possible?! Even Mountain Tiger was killed!"

Chapter 1129 People were baffled by what they saw. Some of them originally pitied Jack and the others, thinking they were done for.

Nobody expected they could kill Mountain Tiger and the others within a few moves. They were so strong and did not hesitate to take action.

"Let's go. They're all just trash." Jack smiled coldly as he looked at the bodies on the floor. He quickly left with the others.

"Bad news... Bad news! Master, Brother Tiger has been killed!" Not long after, a member of the Green Dragon Clan hurried back to the Green Dragon Clan.

"What?!" The Green Dragon Clan master and the others were surprised when they heard this. They immediately enquired about what happened and later learned that the group was killed because they got into a fight with others after a round of bidding at the auction house.

"F*ck! How dare they kill members of our Green Dragon Clan?! Find out what happened, and you have to find out who those three are!" The Green Dragon Clan master was so angry that his face turned pale. Mountain Tiger made countless contributions to their clan and was the most loyal follower.

His murder was like a slap to their faces.

The master's subordinates soon started looking into the incident.

However, many people estimated that the other party would have left Soul City after killing Mountain Tiger. It was obviously difficult to investigate who they were.

News about the incident spread like wildfire; the death of Mountain Tiger from the Green Dragon Clan was obviously a huge incident. Many clans and aristocratic families soon learned about this.

Meanwhile, in the Lancaster family villa, Xavien went to Shirley's room, his eyes reddened as he spoke, "Shirley, Wilton had notified many of the aristocratic families. He even notified some of the clans, and you can't refuse to show up tomorrow... Your Dad feels so sorry for you; I should've listened to you from the start and not expand our businesses with the Norton family. Now that it's such a huge problem, there are no other ways to end this. They wouldn't have ways to threaten us if this did not happen."

Shirley smiled bitterly. "Father, you're being naive. Even if you didn't expand your business and caused such big trouble, Wilton will still threaten me with your lives. Haha... He's a complete bastard!"

"Perhaps if you didn't find someone to agitate him, he might've not gone through such an extreme." Xavien sighed and sat by the bed. He looked as if he had grown old in an instant.

"Father, you're wrong again. I'm absolutely certain about what kind of a person Wilton is. This time, I can only say that me angering him only revealed his true nature early." Shirley once again shook her head in helplessness and said, "If this didn't happen now, it would happen sooner or later if I refuse to marry him. It's only a matter of time before he forces me like this."

"Shirley, I feel bad when you speak of it like this. I'm the one who's incapable and failed to protect you! It's my fault!" Xavien looked at his precious daughter and felt sad.

He had no idea that a slight smile would appear on Shirley's face as she looked at the dark sky through the window. "Father, don' t worry. I believe that everything will turn better after tomorrow. Jack said that he would come to my rescue, and I believe in him. He'll surely do as promised!"

"The young man will come and rescue you?" The corners of Xavien's mouth slightly twitched. "Shirley, are you joking? What can that young man do? He dares fight against the Norton family, a second-class aristocratic family? He must be lying to you!"

"Fret not, Father. He's capable, and I believe that he wouldn't lie to me. You'll know everything tomorrow!" Shirley smiled and continued. "Alright, it's not early, so you should get some rest. Jack has said that if Wilton dares force me into marrying him, he'd wipe out the entire Norton family and give the

Norton family properties to us!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1131-1135

Chapter 1131

Shirley turned around and looked at the wedding dress before saying, "I think he's on his way to the hotel. Alright, I'll wear this, but I'll definitely not marry that bastard Wilton Norton!" She took the wedding dress and went back to her room angrily after she spoke.

Xavien then turned toward the makeup artists next to them and ordered, "Go do her makeup."

Unable to hold back her worry, Alba spoke, obviously still hopeful, "Honey, do you think that Jack guy will really come and rescue our daughter?"

She hoped someone could truly save her daughter.

"Sigh! It's not that easy, so it's best if you don't count your chickens before they hatch. That guy met our daughter at the airport the other day. We can't take the words of somebody like this seriously. Apart from that, he wouldn't be able to do anything even if he really comes over. Come on, let's go down.." Xavien sighed and went downstairs with Alba.

When Shirley came downstairs, Wilton was already waiting at the entrance.

Wilton's smirk bested him as he eyed her. "Haha...! Miss Lancaster, didn't you say that you wouldn't marry me? Why? Have you changed your mind? I really like to look at your arrogant expression. I wonder how much longer you can maintain this." He purposely looked around and mockingly spoke, "By the way, where's that boyfriend of yours? Did he run away because he's too afraid? If that's the case, he's a real coward. Haha! The bodyguards I had with me the other day weren't strong, so the guy was given a chance to act strong. Did he really think that I' m afraid of him?"

Xavien and Alba inwardly sighed when they saw Wilton's insolent ways. They could see that this guy was

not a good person from the outside. How could he treat their daughter well?

"Wilton Norton, are you sure you want to marry me? I'm warning you now, you'll most likely regret it if you really bring me to the hotel!" Shirley had a darkened expression on her face, still acting cold and was hostile toward Wilton.

"F*ck! Shirley Lancaster, who do you think you are? How dare you act arrogantly in front of me? Do you know that your family is done for if you make me angry?" Wilton had been unhappy about Shirley's cold expression since long ago. He stepped forward and pinched Shirley's mouth with one of his hands before speaking with a cold smile on his face, "Hmph! I'll show you how powerful I am tonight. Looking forward to seeing if you can keep up that arrogance later

on!"

"Young Master Norton, what's the meaning of this? Today is the wedding day, and this is the Lancaster family!" Xavien, Hendrix, and the other could not imagine that Wilton would dare bully Shirley in front of their house. What would happen if she really married him?

They immediately stepped forward and shouted at Wilton when they saw what was happening.

"Why? Do you guys want to fight? I 'm not here to work things out. I would've been courteous to you before, but there's no chance that right now!" Wilton smiled coldly when a group of Norton family's masters immediately blocked his way. He stared at the Lancasters aggressively.

Xavien's face turned pale from anger. However, he gritted his teeth and said, "It's late... Let's not miss the best timing of the day."

Chapter 1132

Wilton released Shirley when he saw Xavien submitting to him and smiled. “Haha! Father-in-law, I was just joking with you guys. Look at how scared you guys are! Don't worry, I'll treat Shirley well after she marries me. She's got a weird temper, but I'll train her to be obedient. She'll definitely obey me in the future."

Wilton's words bled Xavien and Alba's hearts. If they were still hopeful toward Wilton previously, they were in complete despair at that moment. They knew that Wilton would not treat their daughter well.

"Let's go. The wedding cars are ready, and it's almost time for our beautiful bride to appear to the crowd!" Wilton had a triumphant smile on his face when he saw how effective his power displaying actions were. He pulled Shirley toward the cars with one hand.

"Let's go." Alba and the others secretly sighed as they tried to smile. The Lancasters followed and boarded the car.

Many people awaited the bride and groom in a six-star hotel.

Apart from the Norton family, many powerful people who were friends with the Norton family, the seven-star King of War, and people from several clans were attending the ceremony.

"I heard that Miss Lancaster had never liked Young Master Norton. Never thought she'd suddenly agree to marry him. Apart from that, the preparations for this wedding ceremony takes such a short amount of time. They only notified us yesterday, and the wedding happens today!" The master of a third-class aristocratic family could not help but said with a smile.

Another family master who was beside them looked around him and said softly, “What do you know? I heard that Miss Shirley never planned on marrying Young Master Wilton, and she was forced to do so this time. He forced her with the lives of her family members and their properties. Miss Shirley had no other choice. Although she's somewhat arrogant, she's a very filial child..."

"Truly? I had no idea that Young Master Wilton would use such methods. Sigh... why must he do that? Even if that's the case, will he be happy if Miss Shirley marries him?" The previous third-class aristocratic family master sighed after he heard this. He thought that he was here to attend the wedding, but the wedding seemed meaningless with what he heard.

"They're here... They're here!" At this moment, Shirley, who was in a beautiful wedding dress, stepped on the red carpet at the main entrance with Wilton, and they entered the venue under the company of others.

However, Shirley's cold demeanor was visible, obviously rather unhappy.

"Haha.! Miss Shirley, today is the wedding day between you and my son, and the way that you're acting doesn't look good." Ashamed with how Shirley was behaving, the Norton family master, Todd Norton walked toward them with a smile on his face. “This is your wedding day; who do you want to show your cold expression to?"

Shirley still maintained the cold expression on her face as if she heard nothing.

“Haha... Master Norton, this daughter-in-law of yours seems rather unruly. It looks like your son won't be able to control her even after they're married!" At this moment, a family master who was beside them started laughing. His jest caused many around them to start laughing as well.

Todd immediately felt extremely embarrassed as his face burned a crimson color. It felt like a slap to his face.

"Shirley Lancaster, I'd tread carefully if I were you. If you anger us, the Lancasters will be wiped out!" Wilton bent her head toward Shirley and reminded her when he saw the situation. "Woman, I'm telling you this, don't ignore our goodwill in maintaining your honor!"

Shirley directly turned around and looked at Wilton distantly. "Wilton, Jack spared your life the other day, and that was a chance from him to you. However, if you don't know how to cherish it, the people dying will not be from the Lancaster family, but the Norton family instead. He, Jack White, is no normal person!"

Chapter 1133

Shirley's fearlessness in standing her ground shocked Wilton.

Though, after a moment of silence, Wilton laughed loudly. "Hahaha! What nonsense is that, Shirley? Are you trying to say that your so-called boyfriend didn't run and he's daring enough to come and stop the wedding?"

Shirley's words struck the masses as a joke as well. The Norton family was an actual second-class aristocratic family. How powerful a person needed to be if he wanted to stop the wedding?

Apart from that, there was a seven-star King of War with them, and he had a great relationship with the Norton family.

"Haha..! Let them come. If somebody dared stop the wedding, let them come!" The seven-star King of War started laughing loudly when he heard this. "Let's not talk about the Norton family's masters. Nobody would dare act out with me here, right?"

"Haha… We're rest assured with what Elder Lafoy had said!" Todd started laughing loudly when he heard this.

At that moment, however…" Really?" Two men and a woman appeared at the entrance as they walked in.

"Jack, you made it…! I knew you'd come!" Shirley almost jumped up in excitement when she saw Jack' s appearance.

She really made the right decision about Jack, he was someone who meant what he said.

"You're really here. Haha.! You're so daring to have crashed my wedding!" The corners of Wilton's mouth slightly twitched before he waved his hand and spoke to the Norton family's masters." Everybody, this is the man who dares to come and take my bride. Kill him! Those two with him are strong, so kill

them too!”

“What? Somebody is really here to snatch the bride?” Many of the attendees were stunned; they thought that the Nortons were joking when they talked about this. They had no idea that somebody would really show up.

“Oh my god, is this a rehearsal program? This is an out-of-body experience!” Somebody even spoke in extreme shock.

“Snatch the bride?” Jack was stunned and he immediately announced, “Everybody, please don’t misunderstand this. I’m not here to snatch the bride. Miss Shirley is a best friend of mine, and she doesn’t want to marry Young Master Wilton here. Even if the gods came to this wedding, nobody can force her to do it!”

What Jack said was extremely domineering. He spoke in a loud voice as if he was an emperor, giving an irrefutable order.

Wilton felt like he was losing his honor. “F*ck… Who do you think you are? This is my fiancée! My woman!” He waved his hand and said, “What are you guys waiting for? Kill him! I want this guy in pieces!”

“Young man, you’re suicidal!” Several masters of the Norton family jumped up while yelling loudly. They rushed toward Jack and the others.

Chapter 1134

The Norton family's masters had frightening expressions on their faces while they surrounded Jack and the two others.

"Well, it seems like the Nortons got a death wish-can't do anything about that. Never thought I'd be in a big fight before I leave Soul City today!" The corners of Jack's mouth curled into a soft cold smile as he faced his attackers boldly.

Bang! Slam! Pow!

As the enemies were attacking, Jack and the others immediately moved. They were so quick that many failed to see what was happening. The so-called Norton family's masters directly flew outward from the attack.

They flew backward like kites with broken strings. They were killed on the spot when they landed on the floor.

"W-What?! They're actually..." Wilton's face turned pale when the outcome was revealed. He had a darkened expression on his face as he had no idea that these Norton family's masters would be so vulnerable.

"Attack! All of you, attack!" ordered Todd in his shock." Norton family bodyguards, attack! There are so many of us, and I'll give whoever that kills the three of them a hundred million bucks reward!"

Some of the Norton family's bodyguards were fueled with the promise of money and were no longer afraid.

Thomp! Thunk! Pow!

Still, the Nortons' men failed to contend against Jack and his company despite their numbers. Soon, there was a floor full of bodies around Jack and the others.

There were around a total of 200 people.

The remaining Norton family bodyguards were completely surprised as they looked at the floor full of bodies. They were so afraid that they dared not move one step forward.

"Go! Go!" The legs of several bodyguards turned into jelly due to being afraid. They ran away speedily after they retreated to behind the door.

"It looks like these are some powerful people!" The seven-star King of War Lafoy smiled coldly and stood forward at that moment.

"King of War Lafoy, help me to kill these three, and ... I'll pay you a hundred million!" Todd was slightly frightened and even trembled as he spoke.

"Haha...! Don't worry! They're just three youngsters; they must be dreaming if they want to act presumptuously!" King of War Lafoy smiled as if nothing bothered him. He stepped forward and immediately appeared in front of the group of three. He looked at them with a playful expression on his face.

"Sigh... Who can imagine that a King of War would help others do bad things for money." Jack could not contain his sigh when he looked at the old man in front of him.

Somebody like that was able to become a King of War. He was a seven-star King of War, so he obviously had a meritorious service on the battlefield. Who could have imagined that he would stoop so low?

"Haha! I love money! What can you do about it?" The old man started laughing loudly. He curled his hands into fists as a thin layer of Chi emitted from the fists." Young man, let me show you my true power!"

Just like that, King of War Lafoy appeared in front of Jack and swung his fist.

"Such speed! Jack is definitely dead this time!" Wilton was extremely happy, his eyes filled with expectation when he saw the King of War attack Jack.

His excitement did not last, however, as he noted how Jack was far quicker than the King of War. He only felt a blur, and it was as if Jack disappeared.

Chapter 1135

"What?!" The King of War was also stunned when his punch landed empty. He then felt a slight cold breeze blowing past his back, and he felt fear creeping up on him.

"Not good!" King of War Lafoy was ready to turn and run when he felt that something was wrong.

Unfortunately, a sharp blow fell to his back.

Thomp!

With an audible thump, a sevenstar King of War was killed.

"How's that possible? King of War Lafoy's killed, too!" Wilton's face turned pale from fright. Todd, who was beside him, was also frightened. To him, it should be an easy thing for King of War Lafoy to kill Jack and the others. However, what happened in front of him proved him wrong.

"Honey, this man named Jack is really good!" Alba, who stood by the side, had her mouth slightly open at a loss for words.

She had no idea that the man her daughter spoke of would show up. Apart from that, he was so domineering and powerful.

"Yes, he's really strong! It makes sense now... No wonder our daughter..." Xavien was also totally shaken at this point. No wonder his daughter wanted to marry such a man. How could such a man be a simpleton?

.....

None of them knew that men from the Green Dragon Clan had eyed Jack and his company as they entered the hotel.

"Master! Master!"

"What is it?" The Green Dragon Clan master sat on a chair as he leisurely sipped his tea. He squinted at the person reporting to him.

In his opinion, Jack and the rest must have left the city as they failed to find them after a thorough search.

Although their people were still continuing their search for Jack and the others, he was not really hopeful about it.

"Master, those three went to a six-star hotel, and they must be there to attend the Norton family's wedding! We saw them going in. We've no idea if they're relatives of the Nortons or not. They must ve been invited to join the wedding!" said one of the men as he immediately walked forward.

"What?! The three of them didn't leave the city and even publicly attended a wedding?" The clan master immediately stood up when he heard the report, his hands balled into fists. "Great! This is great! It's great that they're suicidal! Come, bring our men and let's go!"

Soon, the Green Dragon Clan master brought many of their masters as they headed for the hotel.

"Jack, let's... Let's talk this through nicely. I know you like Shirley, right? Can't I just give her to you? Can we consider that our friendship grew because of blows? I wouldn't forcefully ask for it since this woman doesn't like me. I'll give her to you, so can you just let us off the hook?" The initially arrogant Wilton knelt on the ground as his legs turned to jelly when he saw Jack. He bitterly begged Jack.

"Yes, young man. It's our fault, and we won't force her into marriage anymore! You can't actually blame everything about this on us, right? After all, we had a marriage arrangement. Brother, I heard that you're Miss Shirley's boyfriend, and we shouldn't have severed your relationship. We'll give her to you!" Todd had cold sweat all over his forehead, terrified as he knelt before Jack helplessly.

Jack smiled indifferently and came in front of them. "Didn't I say it just now? I'm only Miss Shirley's friend, but I can't stand the sight of powerful people bullying others, forcing others to marry them, so egging me right now will be useless!" Jack paused here before speaking word by word, "After all, I did say that if you dare force her to marry you, I'll wipe out the entire Norton family and give all your properties to the Lancaster family."No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1136-1140

Chapter 1136

Both Todd and Wilton collapsed directly onto the floor after they heard what Jack had said. Their faces turned grey and went pale from being frightened.

Step by step, Jack walked closer to them causing cold sweat to break across their foreheads. The aura of death pressed against them that they could hardly breathe.

“Bastard, come out and accept your death!” At this moment, a loud yell could be heard from the entrance. The voice was like a loud bell ringing and it slowly entered everybody’s ears.

“Who knew that there would be a semi-god level master in this Soul City!” Jack could feel that this was definitely a master of the semi-god level just by listening to the voice.

Only a master of the semi-god level could do something like this.

However, a semi-god level was nothing in the eyes of Jack, who was already at the beginning stage of the real god level.

“It’s…it’s the clan master of the Green Dragon Clan. Oh my god, Jack has offended people from the Green Dragon Clan?” Xavien was immediately frightened when he heard this voice.

The smile on his face disappeared and was replaced by a frightened expression.

However, nothing worried him when he thought about it. At least the Norton family masters and most of the bodyguards were dead. The rest must have escaped after they heard of the news. Only Wilton and Todd, who had no followers with them, were left behind. Under such circumstances, it was impossible for them to threaten Shirley into marrying into their family.

As for Jack, although he did a great favor for their family, it was not a loss for them if he died. After all, the person who offended the Green Dragon Clan was Jack and not the Lancaster family. He was sure that the Green Dragon Clan would not involve them.

“What? Green Dragon Clan?” Todd and Wilton, who were awaiting their deaths, grew excited when they heard that the people from the Green Dragon Clan were here.

They had no idea that Jack had offended such a powerful clan. The Green Dragon Clan was an extremely powerful clan in Soul City. It was obvious that Jack was suicidal if he offended them.

At this moment, Todd and Wilton saw the glimmer of hope for them to survive.

“These three are really strong but how did they offend the Green Dragon Clan?” Many people were also stunned.

“Jack, I heard that three people killed Mountain Tiger yesterday and members of the Green Dragon Clan were searching for them all over the place. Were they looking for the three of you?” Shirley, who already made everything out, could not help but walked two steps forward and asked carefully.

Jack nodded. “I originally planned to leave Soul City after helping you. I have no idea that the people of

Green Dragon Clan would find us so quickly!”

Shirley frowned and apologized after she heard this. “I’m so sorry. If it wasn’t for what happened to me, you guys would have left earlier on and you would not have attracted so much trouble. I am the one who caused all these troubles for you guys!”

Jack smiled carefreely. “What are you talking about? I will fulfill what I promised you. Apart from that, so what if the people from the Green Dragon Clan are here? We are not afraid!”

“Haha… Young man, you’re really crazy to not be afraid of the Green Dragon Clan. Don’t you know that not only is the clan master, a master of the semi-god level, two other elders of the clan are also in the initial stage of the semi-god level!”

Todd stood up and laughed loudly as he spoke. “You actually said that you aren’t afraid when there are three semi-god level masters together with so many grandmasters and martial artists? I’m telling the three of you that you guys are definitely dead today!”

Chapter 1137

At this moment, Wilton also stood up and smiled arrogantly. “Jack, oh Jack… I’m sure you had no idea that Mountain Tiger, whom you killed, is a member of the Green Dragon Clan? You actually dared to not leave this place? You’re really daring! Haha.. It doesn’t matter if I get killed by you right now. After all, you guys will definitely die together with me! Sigh, the gods must be looking after the Norton family for letting me know before I die that you’re going to die as well!”

“Haha… You were shivering on the floor like a rat who bumped into a cat just now! Who knew that you would start to act arrogantly again after a short while?” Jack started laughing loudly at this moment. “Don’t worry, I don’t need to kill you first. I will kill the people from the Green Dragon Clan before coming back to kill you. I will make you understand why you’re dying and who are the people you cannot offend!”

“Alright, young man! You said this!” Todd’s eyes lit up when he heard this. If Jack took action right now, he could totally kill both of them right now. Who knew that Jack would choose to kill the people from

the Green Dragon Clan first. This guy was being too arrogant.

Maybe Jack would be killed first and then the both of them would be able to survive.

How could Todd be unhappy when he saw the chance to stay alive?

“Nonsense, are you the one who did this if it’s not me?” Jack smiled coldly and stared at him.

“Young man, you really are here, Two men and a woman…” Soon, a group of people entered and there were around two hundred people. They turned many of the tables over and emptied a large piece of land out.

The Green Dragon Clan master was stunned and stopped speaking halfway. “Aren’t you guys here to attend the wedding ceremony? It looks like you guys are here to cause trouble!”

“Clan master, it really is you!” Todd spoke in excitement when he saw the Green Dragon Clan master. “Clan Master Zell, this guy killed our people after he arrived here. You have to help us kill them!”

Wilton also whined as he complained. “Yes! Apart from that, look at this, our seven-star King of War was also killed by them. This King of War contributed a lot during the war and doesn’t it send chills down your spine when you learn that they’ve killed him?”

“Cut the crap. Do we need you guys to tell us this? This guy killed our helpful subordinate, Mountain Tiger so he definitely has to die!” An elder from the Green Dragon Clan stepped forward and looked at the three who were in front of him. “The three of you, tell me your names and we will make sure that your body is intact after you die!”

“Haha… Keep our dead bodies intact? That would depend if you are that capable!” Ethan smiled coldly after he heard this. He flipped his hands and a sword appeared.

Lana also smiled coldly and as she flipped her hand, a purple-colored sword appeared in her palm and it was shining softly.

Jack also took his black color dragon-shaped sword out and held it tightly in his hand. “There are many of them and we can save time if we attack with sword auras!”

“Haha… I’ve been alive for many years and this is the first time I’ve seen such an arrogant person!” The old man also took his sword out when he heard what they said. “Young man, Mountain Tiger is my grandson and I will kill you today to avenge him!”

Chapter 1138

"No wonder...no wonder you would stand forward so quickly!" Jack smiled and stepped forward. "Fine, if that's the case. I'll give you a chance and let's fight one on one!"

Lana, who was beside them, spoke. "You're really shameless. We bought the item at the auction house. Your grandson did not want us to leave since he failed to win the bid so he planned to snatch it by force. It's true that his grandfather is not a good person too!"

Ethan, on the other hand, said." These are people from the clan, how good can they be? It's good to kill this group of useless bastards as we're helping Soul City to clean up its trash and make the lives of the Soul City's occupants better!"

"Shameless boasts!" The old man' s face turned red from anger. He directly jumped up and cut toward Jack with his sword." Look out!"

An extremely sharp sword aura rushed directly toward Jack as the old man waved his sword. There was some faint Chi mixed among with the sword aura!

"You really are a master who's at the initial stage of the semi-god level. This is a really powerful attack!"

Jack spoke coldly after he took a look. He then directly waved his hand and an equally scary sword aura rushed toward the other party.

Whoosh!

The sword aura was absolutely scary and flew forward in a flash, turning into a ray of light.

Bomb!

The next second, both sword aura collided and emitted a dazzling light. The powerful energy fluctuation scared many people into backing away.

The attacks from the masters of the semi-god level were so scary!

"This is impossible! How can this guy's attack be so strong? Could he also possess the fighting prowess of a semi-god level?" The old man originally thought that even though Jack and the two worked together to kill a seven-star King of War, none of them have achieved the semi-god level yet. Hence, it should be an easy task for him to kill Jack.

He soon felt that the movement in Jack's attack was slightly stronger than his attack waves.

Rumble!

The rumbling noise was still continuing. The old man's attack was continuously being used up while there was still some leftover power in Jack's attack. That power arrived in front of the old man in a flash.

"What?! There is still some power left?" The old man's eyeballs almost dropped when he saw it. If this attack landed on him, he would be terribly hurt even if he did not die.

His facial expression changed as he was frightened and he immediately blocked it with his sword.

Bang!

Jack's attack arrived and hit his sword so hard at the very moment he used the sword to block himself.

The strong power suddenly trembled and the sword hummed. Blood flowed from the man's hand that was holding the sword as the web between the old man's thumb and finger broke from the tremble.

The old man directly walked several steps forward before finally stopping.

Puff! Puff!

However, he had just stopped when he felt a tingling feeling in his throat and then vomited a mouthful of blood again. He had suffered some internal injuries.

"Such a strong attack!" The old man was secretly dumbstruck and his eyes were filled with disbelief. The young man in front of him had a sword aura of similar length as him but the young man' s attack power was double of his.

"It looks like we've met with a master today!" The Green Dragon Clan master originally had a playful expression on his face but it slowly turned into a dignified one. He took out his sword and waved it. "Everybody, attack!"

Whoosh!

Chapter 1139

Suddenly, all the fighters flew upward and got ready to kill Jack and the others.

A smile tinged Jack's lips as he watched the black circle in the sky. He concentrated his chi toward his sword.

Buzz!

Together with the chi, the sword in Jack's hand emitted a light buzzing and vibration. Blackcolored air blades lingered upward.

"Black air blades? And there's chi too!"

All color drained from the master of the Green Dragon Clan's face when he saw this. Jack seemed like he was going to use his chi to attack directly. This was a skill that was beyond any blade technique. Only a fighter of the true god status could conjure an attack like that.

"Blade wave!"

Jack cast an impassive glance toward the black-clothed men from Green Dragon Clan, who all leaped into the air. He swiped his blade toward them.

In a flash, a black wave coursed toward them at a blinding speed. The chi-infused air blade was extremely powerful.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The wet crunch of explosions rang out, and the men who had leaped up were suddenly cleaved into halves. Their bodies fell onto the ground.

Blood suddenly cloyed the air, frightening many guests at the wedding. They all released yelps and dodged into corners.

Some of those who were more frightened fainted on the spot.

"My God. What technique is that? He just killed over seventy people in one go!"

Somebody cried out after he saw Jack's attack.

"God, that truly is an off-body chi attack. That's not bladework. The attack is too strong. Is that the power of a fighter of the true god status?"

Somebody was so shocked that their mind went blank. They were actually witnessing a fighter of the true god status.

"No way. He's of the true god status!"

The master of the Green Dragon Clan was so scared that his knees trembled. The entire Clan was no match even for a single fighter from the true god status. If the three of them were semi-god fighters at the advanced or peak stage, they could still give Jack a run for his money. However, among the three of them, two were at the beginning stage of the semi-god status, and the other was at the intermediate stage.

They were no match for Jack.

Furthermore, the other two people with him were probably strong fighters as well.

Whoosh whoosh!

While everybody was still in shock, Lana and Ethan rushed out and killed another few dozens of people with their air blades.

"Those two are probably just as strong as Master!"

The elder's face had gone ashen. He never thought that the Green Dragon Clan would fall because of these three people.

"I told you that he's really strong, Father. R-right?"

Shirley, who was standing to the side, gulped nervously. She felt as though she was dreaming.

She was eternally grateful toward Jack, who had saved her as promised, and she was indebted to him.

However, she soon found out that Jack and his friends had offended the Green Dragon Clan. This made her worried-she had thought that Jack had lost the chance to escape Soul City and that she had sentenced Jack to death.

She never thought that the events that unfolded before her would put her on such a rollercoaster ride. Jack was actually powerful far more powerful than she had expected.

"Witnessing this scene, even if I die it is worth it!"

At the entrance, Master Zimmer and the King of War who is a miracle doctor happened to saw this spectacular sight after coming over. The two were extremely excited.

"Is that the strength of the Supreme Warrior and the God of War? They are so powerful!"

Master Zimmer gulped and exclaimed.

Chapter 1140

"Supreme Warrior? God of War?"

Someone who happened to be standing by the entrance took a sharp intake of breath after hearing this.

"No wonder I sensed something different about their auras! I never thought that he was the Supreme Warrior!"

Someone exclaimed.

"Sis, I heard someone saying that they're the Supreme Warrior and the Gods of War! Jack must be the former because he's so strong. My God. The Supreme Warrior is my idol!"

Hendrix rushed over to Shirley's side after he heard that. He was so excited that he was practically bouncing.

"He's so cool. I want to marry him!"

Shirley looked moonstruck as she watched Jack's silhouette.

However, she was well aware that she was just an ordinary girl. She was no match for the Supreme Warrior.

He was the man of plenty of girls' dreams.

"That kid is actually the Supreme Warrior..."

Xavien's voice was trembling. He was wondering if he had heard wrong. Before, he had wondered if the kid would actually show up because he was afraid of the Norton family.

He never thought that he would actually turn out to be the Supreme Warrior.

"Keep it down, Dad. Who are you calling a kid? You'll have mobs coming after you if you call him that!"

Hendrix immediately turned sullen when he heard that. He reminded his father with a stony face.

"Heh. You're right. I was too excited. I didn't know what to say

Xavien was internally speechless.

"Did you hear that? Wilton, the people we've offended this time are a Supreme Warrior and two Gods of War!"

The father and son of the Norton family were so frightened that they plopped onto the floor, once they found out. They were goners this time.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The battle before them raged just as fiercely as before.

Yet the people from Green Dragon Clan were all quickly killed. In a few moments, only the heavilyinjured master and the two elders were still standing. The rest were dead.

"What now? Do you still think that we're no match for you?"

Jack flashed a bitter smile toward the trio before him. He spoke softly.

"We were unlucky to run into the Supreme Warrior and the Gods of War!"

The master clenched his teeth." But I'm a man, so I must die a glorious death!"

After he said that, he swiped his blade across his own neck and committed suicide.

Slick slick!

The cool steel of the blades flash ed, and blood sprayed across the air. The two other elders committed suicide as well.

"Father..."

Wilton took up a sword from the ground and looked at his father's body. "It was my fault," he said.“ The Norton family wouldn't have fallen like this if I hadn't tried to force Shirley into marrying me!"

"No, It was my fault. I shouldn't have let you do whatever you wanted all these years!"

Todd was remorseful as well. After he said that, he gritted his teeth and committed suicide too.

With his father dead, Wilton also killed himself.

"At least you were a man when you died!"

Jack gave a cold smile at this scene. "Looks like a man will only be truthful when he's about to die!"

"Mr. Supreme Warrior! Gods of

War!"

Master Zimmer immediately brought his people over and bowed toward Jack and the others.

"Thank you, Mr. Supreme Warrior and the Gods of War!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1141-1145

Chapter 1141

Everyone fell to their knees as well, admiration and gratitude on their faces.

Jack was speechless. He raised his hand toward them. "On your feet!"

After everyone stood up, he spoke to Master Zimmer, "We have business to attend to, Master Zimmer. We can't stay for long. Please take care of the bodies here. The businesses of the Green Dragon Clan have been reverted to the Zimmer family now. Tell them that I, the Supreme Warrior, said this if anyone asks!"

Here, he turned his head to look at Shirley and the others. "Meanwhile, the businesses of the Norton family are reverted to the Lancaster family!"

"Don't worry, Supreme Warrior. We know what to do!"

Master Zimmer was elated. With those words, the Zimmer family could become a powerful family in

Starvane City.

Of course, since Jack said that the Zimmer family might have to watch over the Lancaster family as well. After all, the Zimmer family had been able to reap the benefits with no efforts because Jack had saved Shirley Lancaster.

After Jack thought about it, he added, "Right, we ruined this hotel. We can't just let this issue slide. Help me compensate the boss with one billion bucks!"

The hotel boss and his staff were at the entrance. They had been thinking that they could only bow to their misfortune. After all, they were not lacking money, opening such a big hotel.

After hearing Jack's words, they were touched. "You truly think of us commoners, Supreme Warrior!" they cried out.

"Hah. All right. We should get going. I'll see you when I see you!"

Jack laughed and kept his sword. He got ready to leave with Lana and Ethan.

"Wait!"

At this moment, Shirley could not contain her excitement any longer. She rushed toward Jack and said, "You said that we're friends. I didn't even get to thank you!"

"I'm just helping out a friend. No need to thank me."

Jack gave a wan smile. He studied the young woman clad in a wedding dress before him. He had to admit that she was good-looking.

"I have to!"

Shirley pursed her lips. She seemed slightly angry.

"All right then!"

Jack shrugged his shoulders helplessly.

He never thought that Shirley's cheeks would redden; she tiptoed and planted a kiss on his cheek." All right," she whispered shyly. "I' m done thanking you!"

Jack was stunned. He never thought this would happen.

"Ah, that girl..."

Xavien shook his head and smiled as he watched this. It seemed that his daughter's heart had truly been moved.

"I'm going off first!"

Jack's cheeks reddened as well. He walked forward.

"Thank you!"

Shirley grinned as she watched him leave. She could never be with him, but she believed that the memory of this brave kiss would always remain as a beautiful image in her life.

There may even be plenty of other girls who admired her bravery in the future.

Shirley kept staring at the entrance long even after Jack and the others had left. Her lips were curved into a sweet smile.

"I have something good here, Sis. Heh. But you'll have to pay for it!"

Hendrix ran over at this moment and spoke, grinning.

"I have to pay you? Dream on!"

Shirley rolled her eyes. "You even told me to marry that useless Wilton. Consider yourself lucky that I'm not putting you in debt!"

"Sis, I never thought that he'd be such a rotten character!"

Hendrix put on an innocent expression. "Besides, I did it for the Lancaster family. I had no choice!"

After he said that, he probed further, "Are you sure you don't want this? I took a picture of the moment you kissed the Supreme Warrior. You sure you don't want the photo? If not, I'll delete it!"

Chapter 1142

"Really? Are you lying to me?"

Shirley was delighted when she heard this. It would be fantastic if she had a picture to commemorate the occasion.

Besides, plenty of her friends would be very envious if she showed such a picture to them.

Hendrix quickly thrust his phone toward her. The picture had been taken at the perfect moment-just as Shirley was kissing Jack's face. The lighting in the background created a dreamlike effect.

"What do you think? I'm not bad, eh? This picture is perfect!"

Hendrix was happy when he saw the smile on his sister's face.

"How much is it?"

Shirley's smile was absolutely radiant. She looked like a young woman blossoming into life at the moment.

"Heh. I was joking. I don't have the guts to ask you for money. Since the Norton family's businesses are now ours, and you helped us a ton!"

Hendrix chuckled. "You were amazing, being able to recognize that Jack is such a powerful man! It's a pity that he's out of our league. I'd want to marry him if I were a girl, never mind you. It's a pity, but we'll just chalk all of this up to fate!"

"You've really grown through this incident. You're so much more mature than before!"

Shirley stared at her little brother. She was taken aback by his words.

At that moment, Jack and the others had arrived at the airport.

"Heh. I never thought you would have a mini affair here in Starvane, Master!"

Lana gave a sneaky smile as she watched Jack.

His stupefied expression when he had been kissed really tickled her bones.

She never thought that the Number 1 Supreme Warrior of

Cathysia-and its only Supreme Warrior-would be so flummoxed in such situations!

"Heh. What affair? We're just friends. It's nothing... Don't spout nonsense when you get back!"

Jack suddenly felt awkward and nervous when he heard that.

"It's nothing? Do you really think that a woman will simply kiss another man? She's the first daughter of the Lancaster family and has never been in love before. That beauty actually kissed you. Do you think she thinks you as' just a friend'?"

Lana could not resist jabbing Jack when she saw his expression. Honestly, she herself had been surprised at the moment, and she admired the girl for her guts.

"Anyway, don't let my wife know about this. She might misunderstand me! I really have nothing going on with Miss Lancaster!"

Jack reminded them.

"Hah. Don't worry, Master. We've been by your side all this time. We won't testify even if Selena finds out. Besides, being kissed by a girl just means that you're attractive, Master. And you're not the forward type, are you?"

Ethan also grinned. "But I'm sure that you'll have another wife if you were a little more forward,

Master!"

Lana rolled her eyes at him. "He's not a two-timing man like that. Miss Tanya and Miss Sharon would have long been with him if he loved women more!"

After she said that, she studied Jack's face. "Eh, there's still traces of lipstick on your face, Master," she said. "It's not obvious, but you can tell it's there if you look closely!"

Chapter 1143

Jack took a sharp intake of breath when he heard this. “Where?” he said, panicking. “Help me wipe it off quickly!”

Lana could not help but grin at his flustered demeanor. She took out a piece of wet tissue. “Don’t worry,” she said. “I’ve got wet tissue here. I’ll wipe it off for you!”

As she spoke, she pressed the wet tissue against Jack’s face and carefully wiped the lipstick stain off.

The two were very close. Lana’s heart pounded wildly as she was mere inches away from Jack’s handsome profile.

After a while, she stepped backward, her cheeks slightly flushed. “All-all done!”

“Thank you!”

Jack nodded his head. “It’s about time. Let’s go. We should get back. Everything went by very smoothly, and we’ve got all the herbs we need. We can find a proper antidote for my father now.”

“All right. Let’s go!”

Lana threw the wet tissue into a trashcan nearby. The three quickly got onto the plane and left.

At that moment, in the White family’s estate.

Lily’s expression was grim. She called Dean and Yolanda. “What’s going on? It’s already been a few days. You still can’t find Jack? Which branch family did he go to? You two had better think of a way to kill him, understand? And you can’t let the members of the branch families witness it!”

On the other side of the phone, Dean flashed a bitter smile. “First Madam, we’ve visited over a dozen branch families over these past few days, and it shouldn’t have been a problem catching up to Jack, with our speed. But we don’t know why the branch families are all saying that Jack never came over. Not even one!”

“No way. Jack and his friends should have visited at least half of the branch families by now. No way that the ones you visited all so happened to be the ones he hasn’t visited yet.”

Lily’s features abruptly darkened after she heard that. She scrunched her brows together No. We’ve been fooled!”

“We’ve been fooled? How?”

Dean was confused.

“We’ve been fooled by Jack. That brat never had any intention to visit the branch families. He must have gone to some other place. He must have revealed that bit of information to us on purpose!”

The more Lily thought about it, the angrier she felt. It was highly likely that that was the case. After all,

Dean and Yolanda should have caught up to Jack a long time ago, with their strength. Even if they could not catch up, they should have been able to find him at the branch families.

Yet they had not seen hide nor hair of Jack and his friends even after visiting so many branch families. That was why they must have fallen into a trap.

“Sh*t. So you’re saying that he was just toying around with us?”

Dean was so angry that he wanted to spew blood. He was a fighter at the beginner stage of the true god status, and he had been led in circles by the nose.

“That’s right. That brat never went to the branch families. You’ve wasted your time and energy!” Lily was internally speechless as well. She felt sorry for Dean and Yolanda since it was her who had ordered them on this wild goose chase.

However, she had no way around it. How could she have known that Jack was so cunning that he would spread a false rumor just to trick them?

“Basically, this kid is being cautious against you!”

Dean released a sigh. Jack does not look very matured however credit must be given for his wits.

Chapter 1144

Lily nodded her head slowly. "It was my mistake. I had been very much against him since he arrived at the White family.

He must be suspecting that I had ordered the White family members to kill him. That's why he's on his guard. It won't be easy to kill him now!"

"That's right. He would not have thought that it was you who sent people after him at the beginning. But once he came here, it was you who most vehemently disliked his presence, so of course, he would suspect you. First Madam, if you had shown that you could accept him from the start, and if you had been nicer toward him he would never have suspected

you."

Here, Dean paused for a while before continuing, "This way, it would be far easier to act against him, since he has no walls around you."

The realization shook Lily's core, but she knew that it was too late." Ah, can't do anything about it now. You know what my temper is like. I don't know if Lance is dead or alive, and Jack snatched the head of the house position just like that. How could I have been able to hold it in?"

She paused before continuing. That brat is my nemesis. How can I put on a smiling mask before my nemesis?"

Since the call was on hands-free mode, Yolanda heard everything clearly.

Only did she found out that Lily was the one who sent assassins after Jack. She was such a vicious woman.

Meanwhile, Jack was able to return to the White family and become the house heir. Now, he had fooled them all. It was clear that he was clever.

She wanted to tell Lily to let go of her grudges, but she was well aware that it was an impossible task.

"What do we do now, First Madam? Since we've been fooled, returns? Then we'll be waiting in vain."

Dean was aghast. "There must be a time limit to this, First Madam," he said reluctantly. "We can't just

keep waiting."

Lily thought that his words made sense too. She spoke after a moment of silence, "I think Nash has two months to live at most," she said. “No matter where Jack goes, he won't abandon his father when he's on his death bed. It's possible that he'll return soon. So you'll need to keep watch for two months at most. You may return if he doesn't show up after two months."

Dean thought about it, then spoke, smiling, "First Madam, this won't be a problem, but we're exhaust RE MASTER after running around these few days for nothing. We'll have to get more compensation if you're asking us to keep watch for two months. We should talk more about the fees!"

Lily was speechless for a while." Don't worry. I'll give you two stalks of first-grade premium spirited grass. That'll work, right?"

Two stalks of first-grade premium spirited grass was a very tempting offer.

Yet Lily never thought that Dean would speak these words, "Two stalks? First Madam, you should at least give us three stalks for this, no?"

"Three? If I give you three each, I'll be giving you six in total! You should just rob me!"

Chapter 1145

Lily burned with anger at the other end of the phone. "What happens if you fail? What if Jack gets away?" She bellowed.

Dean immediately assured Lily. "Don't you worry. If we failed the task and let that brat get away, we won't be taking a single spirited grass at all! But if we succeed, then you must give each of us three spirited grass, how about that?"

"No way! It's too much. The best I could offer is two spirited grass per person!"

After Lily gave the matter some thought, she still felt that three spirited grass per person was a little bit too much.

Besides, she was the First Madam, she should be respected.

Dean was too insatiable right now. Lily had given him spirited grass before, and she did not expect that this time Dean had asked for three first -grade premium spirited grass instead.

"Oh, is that so? In that case, First Madam, I'm sorry that I couldn't serve you this time."

Dean sneered coldly and continued, "Yolanda and I returned in a critical period - when the weather has begun to turn cold.

Moreover, we'll be incarcerated in the ghostlike mountain top for two months and all this suffering is not even worth three spirited grass. So, I'm afraid that we'd pull out from this plan!"

Dean understood the situation thoroughly. The current Lily was overpowered with hatred and anger that she could not wait to end Jack's life in the next second. Hence, he knew that Lily would not want to miss such an opportunity-Jack left the main White residence.

Once she missed it, there would be no opportunity as good as this in the future anymore.

As expected, Lily was in a state of panic when Dean wanted to pull out of the plan. "Don't, don't! Everything is negotiable!

Three spirited grass, I can give them to you, but you have to promise me to keep this a secret, okay?"

"Don't worry, it's safe with us!"

Dean smiled the second Lily agreed to their request. "Alright then, that's the deal! First Madam, please be rest assured and wait for the good news!"

"Alright. I'm not too worry about the both of you, you two are powerful fighters who already reached the early stage of the true god realm. It shouldn't be much of a challenge to kill that brat and his little friends. But please do keep a close eye while you're waiting on the mountain! Don't miss them!"

Lily nodded and only then did she hang up the phone.

After hanging up the phone, Lily could not help but jeered icily," Dean Lagorio, what a greedy fox! Yolanda didn't even think about getting a reward, but he is sly and knows what to ask. Three firstgrade premium spirited grass? Hmph!"

Dean, on the other end of the line, looked at Yolanda on the side and laughed, "Yolanda, don't you think your brother is smart and great? I' m able to get a better deal with just one phone call. If we let the old hag Lily offer us, she wouldn't make such an offer and twospirited grass would be her limit!"

Yolanda gave a reluctant smile and said, "You're indeed smart and great. The offer is indeed very tempting."

"Hehe! You have to buy me a drink to thank me then! This is what I fought for you. You just stood aside and didn't say a word!"

Dean paused for a few seconds and continued.

"You've said what I've wanted to say! What else do I have to say!"

Yolanda rolled her eyes at Dean before flying into the sky and said, "Let's go, we have to speed up too, otherwise we might miss out on the other party if he arrived home today!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1146-1150

Chapter 1146

"Hahaha! You're right, Yolanda! Let's go!"

Dean flew up to the sky together with Yolanda. Looking at Yolanda' s delicate figure from behind, Dean could not help but swallow his saliva hard.

This woman possessed an alluring body figure-plump chest, slender waist, and full b*tt cheeks. When she flew in the air, the lock of black hair flew according to the wind current, how fascinating!

Although she was not as alluring and charming as Jack's wife and his friend, among the people he knew, her body and features were one of the few.

"My dear Yolanda, I'll own you one day! Then I'll sleep with you and you'll obey me! You'll be my obedient little woman beside me!"

Gazing at the back of Yolanda, Dean thought while smiling to himself.

As both did not stop for a break, they arrived at the top of the high mountain hill only a few miles away from the main residence of the White family in the afternoon.

"Yolanda, I found that you're not much of a talker, are you? You didn't talk all the way here! You're too aloof and indifferent, don't you think so?"

Dean asked as he sat on a huge boulder with a green bristlegrass between his lips.

"Is it? Indeed, I prefer quietness and serenity. But indifference is not the word."

Yolanda smiled bitterly, then the space went silent again. Yolanda pondered about something and suddenly she turned to Dean," Dean, I truly think that Jack is incomparably smart and talented. For example, like this time, although he had tricked us, I have to admit that if such a person could be the head of the White family, he would definitely be able to develop and make the White family stronger and better, don't you think so?"

Dean nodded in return to show his agreement. "Indeed, in terms of talent and intelligence, even in all aspects, Jack is a step above Lance, there's no doubt about it!"

Yolanda was happy and her eyes lit up immediately upon hearing Dean's words. "Really? You really think so too?"

"Of course! I'm not a fool, naturally, I can see it!"

Dean responded casually though he was a little puzzled as to why Yolanda would say that.

"Hmmm... How about this? Let's not kill Jack and forget about the deal?"

Yolanda looked at Dean and asked in a tentative tone. "Think about it, Master White is dying, and if Young Master Jack dies too, then who's going to be the head of the White family in the future? Although First Madam holds the belief that Young Master Lance is still alive, we all know that he's dead.

As for Young Master Hudson, he is ten times worse than Jack!" Yolanda added.

Dean's expression dulled in the next second upon hearing Yolanda 's words. "Yolanda, how can you think like that?

Think harder about it, we've promised the First Madam to kill Jack, if we didn't do it, then we've offended the First Madam!

Secondly, even if we don't kill Jack and let him go, the First Madam will have other people go after him anyways!"

Dean halted for a moment and continued, “Besides, you and I are both Lagorios, we're part of the Lagorio family. Thanks to the First Madam, we're able to have what we have today, to become the Patronums of a great reclusive family. We must repay her kindness toward us too. Besides, Jack is merely an outsider who came from a secular world. He's an illegitimate son of White, so I think it's best to kill him!"

Yolanda was rendered speechless. She had wanted to convince Dean to give up, but to her surprise, Dean possessed no such intention at all.

However, she was still holding on to some hope and said to Dean with a determined voice, "In fact, we can pretend that we missed out on Jack and the others; we didn't manage to find them. In such a way, we won't offend the First Madam, at the same time, Jack and the others can live, right? We can just think of a reasonable excuse like Jack and his friends use the other route and so on. That's logical and reasonable!"

“No, no, no, Yolanda, you can't think like that. Okay, even if we aren't Lagorios, Jack is worth killing for the sake of the three first-grade premium spirited grass! We should kill them!"

Chapter 1147

Dean said smilingly in an icy cold tone, "Do you not want us to be able to break through to the middle or even late stage of the true god realm sooner? We're geniuses who are considered relatively young. If we are able to break through, we'll be promoted to elders in no time! Besides, Jack is destined to die, whether it's killed by us or others. So don't try to persuade me anymore."

"Well, I just feel that it's quite a pity for such an intelligent and talented person to die. After all, Nash White is a good leader, and he has always been good and kind to us. He didn't treat us as outsiders at all!"

Yolanda peeped at Dean as she said, she was still fighting as hard as she could

Yolanda was having inner turmoil lately because she truly did not want to see a fine and potential heir of the White family be murdered by them.

She felt especially sorry for Jack's father. On top of that, she had also witnessed the greatness and excellence of Jack these days, hence she really admired and respected Jack from the bottom of her heart.

Lance was nowhere to be found right now, and nobody knew if he was dead or alive. If Jack died too, then no one would be the family head, by then internal war and fight over the position of the family head would be unavoidable. The White family took a lot to become one of the Eight Reclusive Families, it would be such a waste to see it get ruined because of this.

At this time, three silhouettes appeared within their sight.

"There are three people over there. Look, two men and one woman. Heh! It must be Jack and his little friends!"

On a narrow and rough road, came a group of three, pacing slowly toward the direction of Dean and Yolanda. Dean shot up from the boulder with a happy face.

Dean laughed out loud. “They are like three walking spirited grass! Let's go, Yolanda!"

Dean stomped on his feet and flew straight in the direction of the mountain foot as soon as he finished his sentence.

"Sigh!"

Yolanda, on the other hand, heaved a huge sigh of defeat, and then she followed closely behind Dean.

As soon as Jack and the two passed through a forest, they spotted Dean and Yolanda, who were standing in front of them, waiting for them.

"You guys are from the White family, right?"

Jack looked at the other party and halted immediately. "Oh wow! I didn't expect someone to be waiting for us here!"

Dean, however, clasped his arms in front of his chest and jeered with a cold smile, "Young Master Jack, you're quite observant, aren't you? It's only during the competition in the White family that perhaps you've seen both of us in the crowd. I didn't expect you to recognize us as members of the White family!"

Dean stopped for a second before continuing with a confident tone," Indeed, we're from the White family, but our surname is Lagorio, now you know what's the deed, right?

We're waiting for you here and you should know why we 're here"

Chapter 1148

“Heh! If I remember correctly, you two should still be the Patronums of the White family, right?"

Jack gave a wan smile, looking unconcerned. “Two guardians of the White family came all the way here for me, surely you didn't come here to say hi to me. So, most likely you're here to kill me, right?" Jack stared at both of them nonchalantly.

"Clever! You're very clever, aren't you? You know what we came here for!"

Dean snorted coldly, "We're Lagorios, we've no choice. First Madam introduced us to the White family and for us to work as Patronum. We've to repay First Madam's kindness to us, besides, the benefits she is offering us for killing you are attractive. Anyhow, we should kill you."

"Hahaha! Moreover, you guys are not on good terms with me, nor do you have a good relationship with me, right?"

Jack chimed in and finished Dean' s sentence. “But, it's really good for you guys to tell me that First Madam has her target on my back? Aren't you afraid that you won't be able to kill me, and I'll get away?" Jack continued.

"Nah, even if we don't say it, you'll know who's behind this. Besides both of us are strong fighters with true god level. It's easy-peasy for us to kill the three of you. Furthermore, you can't even control the chi and use it to attack, and your flying speed is definitely not as fast as ours, how on earth are you going fight with us or even escape from us?"

Dean spoke confidently with an unperturbed tone. He then flipped his palm and a fine sword appeared in his hand.

“Kiddo, anyhow, I admire your bravery and intelligence. You tricked us and made us merry-go-round, traveling from one branch to another branch doing nothing. But, I guess you didn't expect that we found out your dirty trick this early and are waiting here for your return, right? Hehe! Today I'll send you to the underworld with my own hands!"

When the last syllabus of Dean's word ended, he held firmly the sword and shook his arm-flows of chi inoculated into the fine sword in his hand.

Bang!

However, little did everyone on the scene knows, a palm with terrifying force blasted in Dean's back. It was from Yolanda.

"Pfft!"

A mouthful of blood was spurted out of Dean's mouth and he eventually fell to the ground, spilling another mouthful of blood onto the ground.

This blast had wounded Dean severely. He used almost all his strength only then barely managed to roll himself over and face upward. He looked at Yolanda in disbelief, "Yolanda, why did you do that? How dare you strike at me!"

This scene was something that Jack, Lana, and Ethan did not expect. Their eyes went wide and filled with surprise.

"Dean, I'm sorry. Master White is a good leader and he has always treated us well. Besides, I don't want to see a talented man fall here. If he dies, the White family sooner or later will be ruined!"

Yolanda took out her fine sharp sword and slowly paced toward Dean. Her eyes are guileless yet intense. "I believe in Young Master Jack's leadership skill and under his leadership, the White family will grow stronger and go further. I can't stand to watch the only hope of the White family end in our hands!"

Once Yolanda ended her sentence, she shut her eyes firmly and swung her arm in the direction of Dean who was lying on the ground.

Swoosh!

A sword aura shot out and Dean's life was ended.

"Yolanda Lagorio?"

Chapter 1149

The corners of Jack's mouth curled upward. "I didn't see this coming. I didn't expect this Pratonum to take our side this time. She did her job as a protector of the White family!"

Yolanda put away the sword in her hand then she bowed to Jack, "I was in a huge dilemma for a long time, but in the end, I couldn' t bring myself to kill you. So, I hope that Young Master Jack, you'll train harder and grow up quicker, and not make me regret my decision today!"

Jack nodded and studied the woman in front of him. She could tell right from wrong and pick a right side. "Don't worry. I will not let their treacherous plans succeed!"

Jack paused for a moment then continued, "Hmmm…but right now, you failed the task given by Lily!"

Yolanda had thought about it before. "I have no other choice but to do this. After I return to her, I'll report that you have already reached the early stage of the true god realm and you're stronger than both of us combined together. Dean was too careless and gullible that he was killed by you. And I barely managed to get away from three of you. Sounds good?" She suggested.

Before Jack could intervene, Yolanda spoke again in a hurried tone, "But if I report to her this way, Young Master Jack, after your return this time, you can't leave the White's main residence anytime as you wish anymore. Otherwise, the First Madam would definitely find someone else to slit your throat, then your real fighting prowess will be exposed."

"Besides, I truly hope that you'll be able to break through to the true god realm as soon as possible so that the First Madam will not suspect my story!" Yolanda added.

After hearing Yolanda's words, Jack tried his very best to hold back his laughter but he failed. He waved

his palm and suddenly terrifying wave of chi shot out from his palm and blew off a large tree not far away from the group.

“What the…”

Yolanda’s eyes went wide as large as saucers and her jaw nearly touched the ground. “You…you’re already in the true god realm?” She asked in a surprised tone.

“Haha! I’ve never said that I was at the peak of the semi-god realm! That’s just what you all think. I’m actually at the early stage of the true god realm. But, just in case, this time going back to the White’s main residence, I should try to reach the middle stage of the true god realm. So that if anything happens in the White family, I have the ability to protect myself.”

Jack chortled aloud. Since Yolanda had not thought of betraying the White family, and she even went out to offend Lily to help him, he did not intend to continue hiding his true strength from this Pratronum.

He should at least let the other party trust him and have hope in him so that the other party felt worthy for what she just did.

“Oh my, I didn’t expect that you’re already at the early stage of the true god level. Judging from the richness and thickness of your chi just now, I think even if Dean and I really fought you, we might not be your opponent, right?”

After Yolanda thought about it, she could only laugh at herself bitterly in her heart. Nevertheless, she somewhat was a little glad for her decision just now, if they really fought, it was highly likely that they would be killed by Jack not to mention slitting Jack’s throat and completing their task.

Shock and surprise gnawed at her insides. That was the right decision she had made just now. With such a talented man like Jack, he could kill Lance, other geniuses, and fighters of the other seven reclusive families.

“Alright, Miss Lagorio, you head on first, we’ll go right afterward!”

Jack bobbed and spoke.

“Alright! I’ll be telling that to the aligned!”

Yolanda turned to Jack and reminded. She then lifted up her palm and blasted against her own chest. With a muffled grunt, she spewed a mouthful of blood and her face went pale. After that, she stomped and flew straight to the direction of the main residence of the White family.

“Hmmm… Looks like not all Lagorios are bad. There are quite a few Lagorios who are loyal to the White family!” Jack uttered with emotion, fixing his gaze at the back of Yolanda in the air.

Chapter 1150

It was a warm afternoon; Lily was ready to take a break.

Suddenly, Yolanda barged into her room at a lightning speed.

“Yolanda? Why are you here? Didn’t I call you a moment ago and ask you to wait at the mountain to ambush Jack and the others? What’s wrong? Don’t tell me you’re not satisfied with three first-grade premium spirited grass?”

When Lily saw that the intruder was Yolanda, she barked with an unpleasant tone.

Nevertheless, just as she finished her words, she noticed that Yolanda’s face was unsightly. “What’s wrong? Are you injured?” Lily fretted aloud.

Yolanda was gasping so loud as though she had a ruptured lung. She finally calmed herself down, sat

down, and uttered, “I barely managed to come back alive. We were waiting for Jack and they appeared not long after…”

Lily’s face immediately lit up at the news. “What about Jack? Is he dead now? And you’re injured during the battle because Jack was quite strong? Where’s Dean though? Why didn’t he come back with you?” Lily lilted with a happy mood.

Yolanda lifted her head and faced Lily, only then she spilled out some words with a gloomy face. “First Madam, Dean…Dean will not return here anymore. That brat, Jack, has actually reached the early stage of the true god realm! We didn’t expect that at all! Dean died because he underestimated Jack’s power and charged toward Jack without thinking twice. Jack killed him. As for me, after Dean died, I was under the siege of the three of them. I barely managed to stay alive and ran away!”

Terror and fear thundered down on Lily that she stumbled several steps back upon hearing Yolanda’s report. “Impossible, how is it possible? The two of you are not their opponents? Even worse, Dean was killed? That brat has fighting prowess of a true god level?” Lily shook her head with a face full of disbelief; she tried to deny the truth.

“First Madam, actually, if Dean hadn’t underestimated the opponent, he definitely wouldn’t have died, and he would have fought together with me, we’d have hope in winning!”

Yolanda plastered a bitter smile on her face. “How could we have imagined that Jack has reached the early stage of the true god realm? After Dean died from his recklessness, I had to deal with three by myself, which was even more cumbersome for me. So I had no choice but to flee!”

“I didn’t expect that at all. Jack is hiding so deep that none of us knew he was already at the early stage of the true god realm!”

Lily squinted firmly and then said, “That brat clearly did not use his full strength during the competition some time ago. He did not reveal his martial status of true god level. If he had used a chi attack during the competition, I believe all of us would have known he was already in the true god realm. Dang it! From the looks of it, that brat has been being cautious around us!”

At the side, Yolanda smiled bitterly, “First Madam, that was because you have been targeting him since the beginning, and he already knew about your motive, so it’s easier for him to guard against you. Not to mention, you’ve sent someone to kill him before!”

Yolanda halted as she spoke. Her eyes were suddenly filled up with dread and terror. “First Madam, what should we do now? That brat may have already been back by now! Will he tell Nash White about us? Will he tell the First Elder? Will they kill me? First Madam, if Master White and the others want to kill me, you must protect me!” Yolanda cried with a trembling voice.

“Don’t worry. Jack is no fool! He won’t choose to go against us right now. I’m certain that he will let this slide, pretending not to know anything!”

Lily, on the other hand, sneered coldly yet confidently.

In fact, Yolanda knew that Jack would definitely let this incident slide, but to gain Lily’s trust, she had to say it on purpose.

Yolanda deliberately released an audible sigh of relief upon hearing Lily’s assurance. “That’s good then. I was truly scared to death just now. Even now I still feel that I’ll be the next Dean if I didn’t flee in time. And I was really afraid that Jack would report this incident to Master Nash. After all, Jack is only afraid of you and the Third Elder but not of me. I’m just a Patronum, merely a protector of the White family. I can’t stop thinking ‘what if Jack wants to kill me?’”

“Heh! Don’t worry, it won’t happen. Jack is a smart guy. He knows that you’re my people, so he’ll definitely pretend nothing has happened. But, if he is daring enough to make trouble, I’ll protect you, you have nothing to worry!”

Lily clenched her fist as she gave Yolanda her promise.No.1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1151-1155

Chapter 1151

"Sigh! It's a pity that I didn't manage to end his life this time. I'll leave to treat my injuries first!"

Yolanda bowed to Lily and wheeled around, preparing to leave.

"Hold on!"

Lily called out to Yolanda.

Yolanda's heart leaped into her throat when Lily called out to her. Did she say something inconsistent, and Lily found out? Why did Lily call her?

However, to her surprise, Lily flipped her hand and a first-grade premium spirited grass appeared on her palm.

She turned around, facing Yolanda, and gestured to her to take the spirited grass. "Although we have an agreement before, that you won't get any spirited grass if you failed the mission, you were injured this time, so I'll give you one anyway. I hope you'll improve faster and reach the middle stage of the true god realm soon. You're talented; once you've reached the middle stage of the true god realm, I'll find an opportunity to promote you to an elder!"

"Thank you so much, First Madam!"

Yolanda nodded with a happy grin on her face as she took the spirited grass. She then left the scene.

After leaving Lily's residence, Yolanda strolled for a while, only then did she sigh aloud in her heart.

Lily was very sensitive and skeptical; if she sensed something strange, Yolanda would be in big trouble.

At this time, Jack and the others have returned to their residence respectively.

“Dear, you're finally back! You've been out for days and I'm worried sick!"

Selena skipped toward Jack, jumped into his embrace, and hugged him tightly the moment Jack stepped in.

After all, Lily and her gang were vicious and sly foxes; they were not easy to deal with. Although the strong fighter-the Third Elder had gone for a martial retreat, the White family still had many other strong fighters. What if the vicious gang had sent out a powerful elite to kill Jack and he was not able to fight against him? Would not Jack's life be jeopardized?

"Hehe, don't worry. Everything is within my control!" Jack answered, smiling. "Well, it's true that today when I came back, I ran into the people that Lily had sent to kill me!"

Jack added nonchalantly.

"Oh no! Didn't you bring them on a merry go around by saying you're going to the branch families of the White? How did the assassins manage to find you?"

Selena was sweating from fear and her voice was edged with panic upon hearing Jack's encounter.

"The assassins are pretty smart. After going around, searching for a few days, they knew they were tricked. So, they ambushed us on the way back to the White’s main residence!"

Jack smiled while hugging Selena. “However, one of the two assassins named Yolanda is loyal to the White family. At the critical moment, she killed her companion and asked me to cooperate with her in lying and hiding the truth from Lily!"

Chapter 1152

"I see. Lily would probably be furious to death if she knew that the people she sent to kill you took your side!"

Selena burst out in laughter after hearing Jack's utterance.

"She can't know any of these! If she finds out, Yolanda will be in big trouble!"

Jack chuckled together with Selena, then he loosened his arms, letting Selena go. He walked toward the coffee table, poured himself a cup of tea then sit down on the chair nearby.

"Yolanda is a kind and loyal person. We can definitely rely on her in the future. Besides, I believe there should be quite a number of Lagorios who work for the White family and are loyal to the White. After all, Lily's sly behavior and those dirty trick of hers have disappointed some of the Lagorios." Jack uttered as he took a sip of the tea.

Selena nodded her head in agreement. She sat down beside Jack and added, "That's so true. But, in the future, how can you distinguish clearly which of these people are on your side, and which of them belong to Lily's side? It's difficult to know someone's mind!"

Jack's forehead puckered as well. "Indeed, it's difficult to know people's minds. But when the time comes, we can ask Yolanda about it. And if there's no other way but to fight, we'll fight. By that time, we should know who's taking our side!"

"You're right. Also, have you found all the herbs needed to treat your father? It should be tough to find all of them, right?"

Selena popped another question, with a concerned look hanging on her face.

"It's indeed hard and strenuous to get all of it. But fortunately, I've gathered all of the herbs!"

Jack smiled. “It's getting late now. I'll get some rest, and tomorrow morning I'll make the pill for Father. After taking the pill for a few days, Father should be well. By that time, when the Third Elder comes back from the martial retreat, he wouldn't be a match for Father!"

"That's amazing!"

The heavy boulder inside Selena finally lifted as she heaved a huge sigh of relief. As long as Nash recovers from the poison, nobody in the White family could ever be his opponent. Even if the Third Elder teamed up with some other wolves, they were definitely not Nash's opponents.

"By the way, Dear, when I was away, did you use the Chi congregation pills that I gave you in your martial training? You have good talent, and those pills will help elevate you to the next level faster."

Jack quickly thought of something and he asked, "You were a third-grade martial artist before I left, and I guess if you weren't lazy these few days, you should be a sixth-grade martial artist by now, right? But even if you were slacking, with the aid of the pills, you should be at least a fifth-grade martial artist!"

"When you were not home, I was bored to death and once I stayed still and do nothing, I'd be worried sick for you. So, I might as well train hard every day to kill time. This way, the time passed by super fast! Sometimes, it feels like I was just starting to train but the day has already ended! Hehe! So, the conclusion is, your dear lovely wife is not slacking at all!"

Selena laughed with her face full of smugness.

Looking at Selena's smug look, Jack could not help but chuckle. It looks like my dear lovely wife is already a sixth-grade martial artist! Congratulations, Dear!"

"Who said I'm a sixth-grade martial artist?"

Selena, in return, barked at Jack and shot him a deadly stare. "My brother is a sixth-grade martial artist, and I'm already an eight-grade martial artist! Didn't you say it before? That I'm super-duper talented! Hehe! After I underwent the purification of my body, I was already a third-grade! With such raw talent, an eight-grade martial artist is definite!"

The corner of Jack's mouth twitched involuntarily a few times. How could he have imagined that his wife has already become an eighth-grade martial artist in such a short time?

That was way beyond his expectations!

Chapter 1153

"Wonderful! That's wonderful!"

Jack nodded with satisfaction. "In that case, let's strive to reach the grandmaster level! You're only considered a strong and powerful martial artist once you've stepped into this threshold!"

"For me to become a grandmaster, I don't think there'll be any problem. But, to break through to the semi-god level, I'm afraid that it will take me ample time. Because I found out that it's rather easy to train and improve at the early stages but the higher the level, the more difficult and slower it is to breakthrough!"

Selena had her eyebrows snapped together as she uttered.

Jack smiled bitterly in return. "That's reality. The gap of difficulty to train between the grandmaster and the highestgrade martial artist is wide, but, at the same time, the strength and power that a grandmaster possesses is a whole lot greater than the highest-grade martial artist. Once you reach the grandmaster level, you'll learn about chi energy, to control it is difficult. Hence, it's tough to climb when you're a grandmaster; it needs not only talent but patience and hard work."

Jack paused and studied Selena for a while, fearing that what he said would discourage Selena." Your raw talent is greater than anyone else. You'll certainly reach the grandmaster level and semi god-level faster than others!" Jack comforted. "But I want to give you a piece of advice, don't merely seek to breakthrough and reach the other levels blindly, you need to spend time to feel the strength of your current level and comprehend it thoroughly. Feel the strength and the chi energy before continuing to breakthrough to another level, especially after reaching the grandmaster level!"

Selena bobbed her head. "Yea, you' re right. After all, Ethan, Lana, and the other Gods of War have trained for so long before they became strong in the semi-god level. I can't be impatient and rush myself. It's always better to take one step at a time and have my feet on the grind!"

After pondering critically, Jack then said, "The reason why you could reach the eight-grade martial level in such a short time, I believe it's because of the raw talent you possess, coupled with the training technique. Although the martial art technique has no name and they obtain it through a random occasion, when I looked at it, it seems complex."

"Is that so? That's amazing!"

Selena smiled and then she added, "My brother has been devastated lately when he saw that I've become a martial artist two grades higher than him."

“Right. Dear, it's getting late. Let's go to the town at the foot of the mountain to get a good dinner, barbecue or something else. That town is near to the White residence. If we go out later in the night, Lily and her snakes will not find out!"

“Besides, her men lost to me some time ago, they probably wouldn't think that I would go down the mountain and have fun at this time!"

After thinking about it, Jack held Selena's hand and said, with hopeful eyes.

"Alright then. I have been staying in for quite some time now. It's good to go out for a change!"

Selena smiled sweetly at Jack and nodded her head as though she was a mother who gave permission to her son--Jack.

After a while, when the sky turned darker, Jack and Selena went down the mountain without anybody knowing.

The town at the foot of the mountain was lively and prosperous. Although it was a small town, the structures and its liveliness were comparable to a city.

The town being in close vicinity to the White residence was blessed with various businesses that traded martial resources and materials. Besides, the natural chi energy around the mountain was not weak, hence there were quite a number of martial fighters gathered around here.

Moreover, there were even some prominent families staying at the foot of this mountain and some of them were strong fighters of the semi-god level.

But, of course, there were only a few of them of the semi-god level.

Chapter 1154

"Honey, it's so bustling and lively down here. It's just like an ancient town; everywhere is full of ancient aura and flavor! I'm starting to fall in love with this town!"

Selena strolled on the streets of the town and could not help but exclaimed at the ancient beauty of the town. The crowd of pedestrians, traders, shoppers, and others could be seen walking on the busy street. Some of them were wearing primordial yet fancy clothes, some of the men grew their hair long on purpose. If it weren't because some were clothed slightly more contemporary and there were mobile phones in their hands, Jack and Selena would think that they had traveled back in time.

"Dear, if you were to wear those ancient costumes, you'll definitely look stunning!"

Jack noticed a shop selling ancient clothes not too far away; he then pulled Selena into the shop.

"Dear, try it!"

"Umm...okay. But it's embarrassing!"

Selena's cheeks were kissed pink. Nevertheless, she picked a few sets of clothing and tried them on.

"Oh my... Dear, you're absolutely stunning! If you were born in ancient eras, you'd still be the Queen of Beauty!"

Enjoying the view of Selena wearing the ancient costumes, Jack nodded in satisfaction.

"Shameless! We already had a kid this big! How can you praise me like that without feeling embarrassed!"

Selena blushed and responded in a shy tone. She stared fiercely at Jack.

"We'll buy all these! Dear, you don' t have to change back into your clothes, just wear these. Quite a few people are wearing ancient costumes on the street, so there's nothing strange and embarrassing about it, right?"

Jack chuckled aloud with a radiant smile plastered on his face.

"Sir, are you sure you're taking all of these? All these clothes are made of silk; they'd be more expensive!

Besides, the few sets that Madam had tried on just now, one set costs more than one hundred thousand! If you were to buy all these sets, it would be close to a million!"

The lady owner of the store had her eyes lit up when she heard Jack's words. The clothes that she sold in her store were all of top -notch quality. But because they were all expensive, they may not even sell one set a day, and sometimes they only managed to sell a set in two or three days, and

that was considered as good!

The lady owner could not have imagined that the two would buy four sets at once!

"What's the matter? Are you afraid that I can't afford them?"

Jack stared at the other party coldly and then he flashed out his card. "Take this, swipe it, and enter one million. No password is needed!"

“I'm glad to serve you, Sir! A man like you deserves to marry such a charming wife!"

It was the owner's first time meeting such a generous customer. She then took the bank card and went to make the payment.

Soon, the two left the store.

However, shortly after the couple left the store, a slightly plump and chubby woman- dressed in an ancient costume-paced toward the store with a group of people.

She quickly spotted Selena wearing a dainty and beautiful ancient costume-which was significantly better looking than hers. Her fury sprang to life in a second.

The chubby woman pointed at Selena and huffed to the man beside her gruffly. "Honey, that dress is really nice. I want it!"

The rotund man-who walked behind the chubby woman looked toward the pointed direction. He could not help but his eyes lit up excitedly. "Alright, babe, I'll take you to buy one!" He smiled and nodded.

Nonetheless, to the man's surprise, the chunky woman was exasperated in the next second. "No! I want that dress on that woman! That dress is dainty and beautiful, and it might be a limited edition. There'd be only one piece of such dress in this world! I want the one on her!" The woman pouted.

"Umm...Babe, it's not nice to snatch from her though."

Chapter 1155

The rotund man's forehead snapped together, showing hints of hesitation.

The woman saw the hesitation in the man, and she was not happy at all. She pinched his earlobe and barked at him huffily, "You're going to get me that dress, do you hear me? Don't you ever forget that you're merely an adopted sonin-law of our family, don't you dare to disobey my command! If I tell my dad that you're bullying me, you'll be in the grave in no time!"

The man was frightened down to the soles of his shoes when the threatening words entered his ears. He was so scared that he responded almost instantly." Okay, Dear, okay, let go of my ear. I 'll get that dress for you!"

After the drama ended, the man paced toward Jack and Selena together with the wife and a group of men.

Jack did not prepare for such a situation to happen. He was just about to have a nice dinner at the nearby barbecue restaurant; however, they were stopped by the group before they were able to enter the restaurant.

"Huh? What's wrong? Something wrong? I don't think I've met you guys before!"

Looking at a bunch of people in front of him, Jack smiled frostily. He was a true god-level martial artist, and the heir to the family head of the White family, if these people wanted to look for trouble, they were definitely wishing for death.

Nevertheless, perhaps, he just came to the White family not long ago and had not been to this town before, that was why no one knew him.

Otherwise, these men would not be so brave to block his path.

"Heh! Kiddo, it doesn't matter if you've met me before or not!"

The rotund man smirked and gazed at Selena. "The costume on your wife is dainty and beautiful, my Honey here is very fond of it. So, let's make a deal. Take it off and sell it to us. The price you've paid for it, I'll double it!"

"Take it off and sell it to you?"

Before the conversation, Jack thought that it was his wife's beauty that attracted this bunch of flies. He did not expect that the other party was eyeing the costumes on Selena.

"Of course! Take it off right here right now. We'll buy it. Haha! How about this, if you think the doubled price is too little, I'm willing to triple it. After all, this dress doesn't look cheap, it has to be more than one hundred to two hundred thousand bucks, am I right?" The rotund man chuckled and continued, "You have made hundreds of thousands of profit just by selling this costume to me!"

The plump man chortled aloud, his face full of mirth.

The few bodyguards behind the man could not help but swallow their saliva hard when they heard their master's suggestion. After all, it was rare to see such a beauty in this town.

"Hmph! You're funny, aren't you? With just a few hundred thousand, you want to buy my wife's clothes, even worse, you want her to take it off on the street for you guys?"

Jack sneered coldly, in fact, he was seething inwardly that he felt about to burst from rage. 'Damn fatty, you're sure a dreamer!

"Brat, my hubby is being considerate and polite to you guys!"

At this time, the chubby woman stepped up and bellowed condescendingly, "Why don't you ask around about our identities? Our family is one of the three prominent families in this town! We've tripled the price to buy your clothes! It's considered as an act of kindness from us!"

"Oh, what do you mean by not being polite and kind then?"

Jack continued plastering a cold smile on his face, clasping his arms before his chest.

"Heh! We don't even need to buy the clothes from you! We could just take it off your wife coercively!"

The woman jeered with wicked laughter. "But, I'm being considerate for the dress. What if your wife resisted and the dress tears in the process of taking it off? Then my loss will be huge. So we initiated the deal and was nice to you for you to take it off and sell it to us, got it?"

"Oh, I don't know about this!"

Jack's eyes went cold and frosty; he shot the couple a deadly stare. "What I do know is that you're digging your own grave!" Jack hissed.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1156-1160

Chapter 1156

"Oh boy, what a low life are you. I didn't expect this from you. How dare you threaten me!"

The woman guffawed when she heard that. "It looks like money can't solve this matter today. I planned to give you some money for the clothes, but now I no longer bother to do so. Since you have a death wish, I shall grant it!"

After ending her last word, she pointed toward Jack and Selena and commanded with a stern tone. "Kill this man, and then take off the woman's clothes. I don't believe that whatever I, Autumn Maack, want, I can't get it! Except for a few, there's almost no one in this mountainous area that I couldn't offend!"

"Hey, punk, you're seeking your own death. Who asked you to refuse the kind offer from our Young Mistress Maack! Now you can't blame our lady!"

Several bodyguards sneered as they walked toward Jack with their fists clenched tightly.

'How arrogant and snobbish were these people?' Jack thought in his mind; a cold smile appeared on his face. Did they actually want Selena to take off her clothes in the street?

The proposal itself had successfully awakened the angry beast inside Jack.

Jack had trimmed down his temper in seeing things for Selena. But solely for the matter related to Selena-which was a forbidden area that no one could provoke-he could not contain his rage.

"Wait, hold on!"

At this time, a young teenage girl stood out and spoke up.

“Miss Maack, it's just one dress, why bother? I saw a few nice pieces yesterday and they're of good quality too! Why don't I take you there to have a look? I'll buy you those clothes. So, why bother with common people?"

The young girl looked only seventeen or eighteen years old.

Her smile was accompanied by two little radiant dimples at the corners, projecting a youthful and sunny aura.

Jack was a little surprised at the sudden appearance of the young lady. He did not expect somebody to speak up for him in such a situation.

Nevertheless, Jack did not plan to let the matter slip; he did not plan to spare the rotund couple's life. The other party had completely angered him in every way. Even if the other party wanted to let him off the hook, he had no intention to let them go at all.

"No f*cking way!"

The plump woman snapped. "Kayla Leigh, don't you try to play superhero today! They pissed me off and I'll not just let it go! Today, this man will die right here! I've already given them a chance, but they don't know how to cherish it!"

Kayla gave an awkward smile. "Miss Maack, hold on. Just wait a little bit longer, I'll try to persuade them!"

Kayla immediately came before Jack and said softly to him, "Mister, a wise man knows when to retreat, don't fight with them, okay? Take it off and sell it to her. She is Autumn Maack from the Maack family and her family is unbelievably powerful and authoritative, even my family, the Leigh family, has to bow

before them. Listen to me, take the dress off, sell it to them and you still can make a profit out of it. It's better than being killed, isn't it?"

Jack laughed out loud upon hearing Kayla's words. He smiled and said, "Miss Leigh, thank you for your kindness. But, I would like to know your opinion on this matter as well. If you were to take off your clothes in the street like this, publicly, and sell your clothes to others, would you do that?"

"What? No way! How is that even a question?"

Kayla answered without even thinking about it.

Nonetheless, she still tried to advise Jack, "But, that's because without shame."

"Sigh! Forget it then. If you guys are looking for death, I can't help it too."

In the end, Kayla could only retreat to the side, looking helplessly.

"Hmph! What a waste of our time!"

Those few bodyguards had long wanted to strip Selena.

Although they could not do anything with her, at least the view of uncovered Selena could feast their eyes.

After they grunted for a few seconds, all of them charged toward Jack with a tightly balled fist.

"Go to hell!"

Chapter 1157

Jack breathed out a cold laugh, and in a split second he disappeared; he was shuttling among the bodyguards at a lighting speed while swinging his arm. With a few flashes, all of the body guards laid lifeless on the ground.

"What the f*ck!"

The fatty and the plump womanwho witnessed the scene-had their eyes widened as large as saucers and their jaws dropped to the ground. They were in shock. The bodyguards that they brought were of high-grade martial artists, and one of them was even a first grade grandmaster! The two did not expect their men to be killed in just a few seconds.

"It...it looks like this brat must have reached the higher grade of grandmaster level; his martial prowess and skill are not bad at all. Now I finally understand why he wasn't afraid of them a moment ago. If he and his wife hurry up and leave the place, and not stir up a bigger trouble, they should be fine!"

Kayla whispered to herself while watching the scene on the side.

"Punk, I'm a Maack! How dare you kill my men! Are you looking for trouble with the Maack family?"

The woman fumed hotly, at the same time, her voice trembled. She used the Maack family as a tool, in hopes to threaten Jack.

"Heh, I see. Should I wait for your men to beat me to death, only then I could fight back?"

Cold and heartless smile plastered on Jack's face; he slowly paced toward the two fatties.

"You...you...you...stop right there! What are you doing?"

Seeing Jack walking toward them at a painfully slow pace, the fat couple looked at each other and were both in complete terror.

"Oh? What do you think I'm doing?

Jack chortled wickedly and threw the question back to the couple.

"Punk, you're not trying to end us, are you? Let me give you the last warning, my father-in-law is a strong fighter of the semi-god level. If you dare to make a move on us, today will be your last day!"

Jack let out a good laugh, then he turned to the rotund man. "Well. There's one way for you to get out of here alive, which is for you to cut off one of your wife's arms right here. Perhaps, in that way, I can let you two live. Otherwise, you'll have to die here tonight!" Jack proposed.

After he finished his last word, he flipped his palm and a fine sword appeared in his hand. He threw it on the ground in front of the fatty.

"Your choice" Jack dictated.

"Brat, I'm the Young Mistress Maack, are you looking for death! How dare you ask my husband to cut off my arm! Who gave you the guts!"

Autumn's temper sparked that she could feel anger thrummed through her veins; she put on the almighty and authoritative look as she barked.

Snap!

Nonetheless, a heavy slap landed on her cheek right after she finished her sentence. The force pushed her down that she plopped onto the ground harshly; a stream of blood flew out of the corner of her palm. Jack slapped her.

"Dear, can't you read the situation properly? This time we've met someone who's not afraid of death. This brat is hot-headed and reckless! He's not afraid of anyone!"

The fatty stomped his foot at the situation, why could not his wife grasp the current atmosphere of the situation? He then gritted his teeth and picked the fine sword on the ground.

"Honey, you're not really going to cut my arm, are you?"

Autumn looked at the sword, tears shimmered in her eyes and her face was ashen. How could she have thought that the other party

was not afraid of the Maack family and daring enough to attack her?

"Brat, you've promised to let us live if I cut her arm, right?"

The fatty wheeled around and looked at Jack.

Jack nodded, "A promise is a promise!"

Chapter 1158

“Alright. You said so!"

The fatty nodded his head. He clenched his teeth and raised the sword in his hand. "Hold on for a while longer, my wife," he told Autumn, who was on the ground." I have painkillers and medicine that stops bleeding here. You'll be fine. Just grit your teeth and through it!"

"Ah. I'm scared!"

Autumn was so frightened that she was on the verge of tears. She looked at Jack. "I was wrong," she said. "Please, let us go. I'll give you one billion bucks. How about that? One whole billion!"

"Heh. Did you really think I would care about one billion?"

Jack chuckled, his eyes full of disdain.

"Ah!"

The rotund man swung his sword, slicing the woman's arm.

Blood sprayed the moment the blade's lethal edge came in contact with skin, and the arm fell off.

"I have medicine here!"

After he cut his own wife's the fatty threw his sword to the side and gave her painkillers medicine to stop the bleeding.

“Ah!"

Even so, the woman was still in so much agony that all color leached from her face. Cold sweat beaded across her forehead, and she looked like she was about to faint at any time.

Quickly, with the fatty's support, the two quickly disappeared from Jack's vision.

Jack picked up the sword lying on the ground and wiped the

ind wined the blade clean on the body of a bodyguard. Only then did he flip his palm and kept the sword.

"You don't mind me letting them go, do you, Dear?"

Jack smiled and asked Selena.

"I'll just follow whatever decision you make from now on, Dear!"

Selena clung onto Jack's arm.

Delight had shot through her when she had seen that woman's arm being lopped off. The woman had overstepped her boundariesshe was a straight-up bully. Even for someone as kind as Selena, the bully was unbearable.

“No way. You can't just listen to whatever I say. What if I had agreed to sell the clothes to them? Would you listen to me then?" Jack said, smiling.

Selena rolled her eyes at him. "You 're not someone like that. Or would you want to shame your wife in front of so many people?"

Amazingly, the two still had the strength to argue back and forth here. Kayla panicked and stepped forward. "Why aren't you two leaving? Seriously. You let them go! Aren't you afraid that they'll bring more fighters here?" she said. “Those bodyguards were just normal bodyguards. They're not even strong among the Maack family. Just hurry up and get out of here. You won't get a chance to leave if you're one step too late!"

"That's right. Just leave, both of you. You managed to put Miss Maack in her place. She always

disregards others and bullies the townsfolk regularly, so you're helping us to take revenge. She's like this because her family has the White family backing them up. So you'd better leave!"

An old man also advised Jack and Selena.

"The White family is backing them up?" Jack frowned after he heard that. That surprised him.

Chapter 1159

Kayla assumed that Jack was afraid when she saw his brows scrunching together. “That's right. Let me explain everything," she said. "Sometimes, the White family will get a familiar friend to introduce someone, or they will come down from the mountain to choose a few talented warriors to enter the White family. This rarely happens, but some people become part of the White family like that!"

Here, Kayla paused for a while before resuming, "One of the Maack family members had been lucky enough to enter the White family. And he managed to mix quite well with them, so he's the helmsman now, and he's a warrior at the intermediate stage of the true god status. Miss Maack is so cocky because of this!"

"Just leave, young man. It'll be too late if you don't. I'm sure that Autumn won't let this slide just like that, judging from her personality! Besides, you were the one who chopped off the the first daughter of the family. Master Maack won't let you off the hook either!"

The old man advised Jack and Selena anxiously.

"Thank you for your concern. But if that is truly the case, all the more we shouldn't leave!"

Jack raised his hands into a fist-to-palm salute toward the two. Then his attention wandered toward a barbecue stall not too far away. "We came here to eat barbecue," he said, smiling. “But we haven't even eaten yet. How could we leave now? Right, Dear?"

"Right? I'm hungry!"

Selena gave a wan smile. She took Jack's hand in hers and walked toward the barbecue stall.

"Those-those two still have the heart to eat barbecue!"

The old man was so agitated that his mustache practically bristled. He huffed and stalked over to the side.

Kayla was furious as well. However, she did not give up on them. She chased after them and stared at Jack, huffing. “Don't you love your wife? If you do, you two should leave. Now!" she said." Even if you don't fear death, you can't drag your wife along with you!"

Warmth filled Jack's chest at the sight of this compassionate How talented are you, girl?" said, smiling.

Kayla was speechless for a moment. "A ninth-grade grandmaster. Why? You refuse leave, and you still want to ask about my talent. At any rate, I'm pretty strong, and I have good talent. I'm probably stronger than

you!"

Jack grinned. "You truly have a talent for someone so young. Have you never thought of training with the White family and becoming one of them?"

"The White family?"

Kayla furrowed her brows. "I do. But I don't have a single connection with the White family. There's no way I can get in. Besides, who knows when they' ll be in the mood to come to town to recruit people. I have no hopes no matter what, I'll keep dreaming!"

Kayla was stunned for a while here. "Ah. Why am I telling you all this? More importantly, I think you two are good people. I don't want to see you die!" "Hah. Don't worry. We won't!"

Jack laughed. "Kayla, right?" said to the girl. “Sit down and join us. I'll treat you!"

"All right. I'll join you. Since you're going to die soon, I should help you spend whatever money you have right now!"

Kayla rolled her eyes at Jack and took a seat before the huffing.

"You're too cruel. You actually cut my arm off!"

At that moment, Autumn plodded forward, supported by the fatty.

“I had no choice. Don't you understand that both of us would have died if I hadn't done that? At least we get to live like this. We had no choice.

The fatty was helpless. "Ah, you were rude just now too. Why would you want her clothes? We wouldn't have landed ourselves in this situation otherwise!"

Chapter 1160

"Hmph. I couldn't bear to see it. I look good in traditional clothes. That woman had no right to look better than I do. The sight just offends me!"

The woman harrumphed; venom filled her eyes. "Let's hurry back," she said. “We can't just let the couple go like that. I'll get Daddy to kill them!"

The fatty was internally speechless, but he had no words of protest. After all, he was simply the Maack

family's live-in son-inlaw, with no particular standing in the Maack family. If he did not give in to her whims, she and her family would make his days miserable.

"I had no choice just now, Dear. Do you still hold a grudge against me?"

The fatty prodded as they walked forward.

Autumn's expression darkened. “It 's your fault for being such a lousy and weak warrior. I wouldn't have been bullied like this if you weren' t a piece of trash," she snarled, glaring at her husband. "Just look at that man from just now. He's nothing like you-only a sixthgrade martial artist at such an old age. You'll be a laughing stock if words of this got out."

.....

The fatty was speechless. He just supported Autumn until they finally arrived at the Maack family.

"Young Miss, what-what happened?"

The bodyguard at the entrance was shocked when he took in the sight. One of the bodyguards quickly went in to make a report.

Autumn and her husband had not walked very far in when the master of the Maack family, Ace, came out with a group of people.

"What happened, Autumn? Who was it? Who dared to cut off my daughter's arm!"

Ace stared at the stump that had een his daughter's arm. He was so furious that he had gone purple and his teeth were gritted.

After all these years, he never had any sons. He only had her as his only daughter. That was why she was the apple of his eye, and he always coddled her as though she was a precious piece of porcelain.

He never thought that someone would be so bold to cut off his daughter's arm.

"It was a young man, Father. Autumn and I were shopping when she noticed a couple, where the wife was wearing a hanfu. Out of goodwill, we told them that we would buy the clothes at three times their worth. But we never thought that they would refuse. They even rebuked us with sharp words!"

"Autumn, naturally, was furious. She got the bodyguards to snatch the clothes, but her husband was extremely strong and killed all the body guards. Then he forced me to chop off one of her arms, or he would kill the both of us otherwise. I had no choice. It was to save the both of us!"

The fatty immediately dropped to his knees and narrated everything that had happened, while adding his own flair to the tale.

"You piece of sh*t. You can't even protect your own woman!"

Ace was so angry that he sent the fatty flying a few meters away with a single kick. "The lot of you, take the Young Miss and her husband back to rest," he said. "I'll bring the rest of you to find that couple. We must avenge my daughter!"

"No. I don't want to rest, Daddy. I must go. I need to see them die before me. I want to see that punk begging for his life on his knees!"

Autumn raised her head, her features twisted into a vicious expression. “Besides, you don't know where they had attacked me. Get people to carry me there. Quick. I'm afraid that they'll leave if we're one step too late!"

"All right. Let's go!"

Ace announced, huffing.

"I'm going too, Father. I want to see them die before my eyes. Those two were too much!"

The fatty ran over, holding in his pain, subtly declaring his loyalty.

"Let's go!"

Chapter 1161

Ace shot a look at his weak son-in-law. He took a group of elders and powerful fighters and rushed for the place. They were all extremely fast, as though they were shadows racing in the darkness.

“Wait for me…”

The fatty, who was weak, was quickly left behind. He was so tired that he kept huffing and puffing, unable to keep up with the speed of those fighters.

“Daddy, I think he must have left. I shouldn’t have told them that I was the daughter of the Maack family just now. Now that they know, they must have left!”

Along the way, Autumn spoke to her father.

Ace’s expression hardened. He did not say a single word, rage boiling in his veins.

“Aye. They’re still here. They’re there, Daddy. They’re eating barbecue!”

However, Autumn’s eyes brightened soon after she noticed the three people eating at the barbecue stall.

“Why is Kayla there? Is she their friend?”

Ace clenched his fists as he observed the scene from a distance.

“I don’t think Kayla knows them. She had even advised the two of them to sell the clothes to me earlier. Maybe they’re treating her to a meal because they think she’s pretty nice? If that’s the case, Kayla has unintentionally helped me by stalling them!”

Autumn’s eyes brightened. “Maybe Kayla wanted to help me because she saw that so many of our men died. We’re pretty close, after all. Yes, that’s possible!”

“No matter what, that couple can no longer escape now that we’ve seen them!”

Ace gave a frosty smile. The group quickly stopped nearby.

“You’re done for. See? They came so quickly. The two of you are dead meat!”

Kayla sensed a frightening aura behind her. She took a glance over her shoulder, then cast a bitter smile at Jack.

“Heh. No need to fret!”

Jack chuckled and stood up. “You and Kayla can continue eating, Dear. I’ll come back quickly!”

After he said that, he strolled straight toward the Maack family’s forces.

“Hey, don’t tell me that your husband is of the true god status? He’s being too confident here, saying that he’ll come back soon. Don’t tell me he’s at the advanced stage, or the peak already?”

Kayla finally realized something. She frowned and whispered toward Selena.

“My name’s Selena. He’s Jack, from the White family. And don’t worry about his strength. The Maack family is nothing before him!”

Selena gave a reassuring smile and picked up a chicken skewer, biting into it. So long as Jack was beside her, she had a sense of security blanketing her.

“Seriously? He’s from the White family? No wonder he wasn’t afraid. So he’s a fighter from the White

family!”

Kayla’s eyes widened. She quickly realized that the Maack family had run into some serious trouble now.

However, she could not blame them for accidentally picking a fight they could not win. The White family frequently visited the town at the bottom of the mountain, but the Maack family already had one of their own as a helmsman in the White family. Besides, the Maack family had been here for a long time now, and they knew the people that they should never provoke in the White family. That was why they did not have much to be afraid of since they already knew who were the ones who could not be offended.

Yet they just had to run into Jack and Selena, unaware that the former was from the White family. They were unlucky this time.

Chapter 1162

“Autumn, right? Heh. I never thought that we would meet so soon. I didn’t even get to finish my food!”

Jack walked leisurely toward her. “Don’t tell me you’re here to thank me for sparing your life?” he said, grinning. “Hah. If that’s the case, there’s no need for your gratitude. You even brought so many people here to thank me. You’re embarrassing me!”

Plenty of people who were still worried about Jack could not help but chuckle at his words. He still had the spirit to keep joking, even at this moment.

“Heh. You chopped my daughter’s arm off, and you’re telling me I should thank you, punk? Do you think I’m stupid?”

Ace chuckled and shot a vicious glare at Jack. His eyes were turning bloodshot, and he looked fearsome. The aura of a demi god status fighter enveloped him.

“Master, let me be the one to kill this punk. F*ck. He’s even eating barbecue here. He has no respect for the Maack family!”

An old man who was an eighth-grade grandmaster walked a few steps forward, speaking in a vicious tone.

Ace gave a mirthless smile. “Thank goodness he’s still eating barbecue here though. Where would we find him if he took off?”

“Second Elder, don’t kill this punk right off the bat,” Autumn reminded him. “I want to see him get tortured. Cut off bits and pieces of his flesh and feed them to the dogs. Otherwise, I won’t be satisfied!”

Here, Autumn looked at Selena. “Oh, right. And we can’t let his wife go so easily either,” she said. “I want to make this punk watch as his wife is manhandled. I’ll make him understand the price that he must pay for my arm!”

“Oh my. Usually, people would only forget the lessons they’ve learned once the pain subsides. Your pain hasn’t even subsided, yet you’ve forgotten your lesson. Weren’t you on your knees, begging for your life before this? Why are you so fierce now!”

Jack just smiled when he heard that.

“Die, you brat. How dare you bully the Maack family!”

The Second Elder saw that Jack still dared to act so flippantly, and so he took several steps and rushed toward Jack.

The old man’s steps were light yet steady, and his fist was as fast as the wind. As he threw the punch toward Jack, an aura of a tiger head appeared right before his fist, as though it were an open-jaw ready to swallow Jack whole.

The spectators around them were so frightened at the sight of the attack that they stumbled a few steps backward.

Jack easily sidestepped the attack. Then he swung his leg toward his opponent’s abdomen.

A dull thud rang out. The old man flew backward and crashed onto the ground. He spat a mouthful of blood, and his face had gone white.

“No way. The Second Elder is no match for him?”

All of the elders’ faces blanched when they saw this. They had seen the strength, speed, and precision in the Second Elder’s attack earlier. They were well aware that it was not easy to dodge an attack like that.

Yet Jack had dodged it so easily, and he had even seriously injured the Second Elder with a single attack.

The Second Elder lay on the ground. He struggled to stand up, but it was obvious that it was too much for his body to handle, and he failed to do so.

“I don’t believe that. Come!”

Ace flipped his palm when he saw this, and a sword appeared in his grip. He slashed his blade toward Jack.

Suddenly, a frightening air blade slashed toward Jack at an unimaginable speed.

As he took out his blade, Jack took out his as well. He swung his blade toward his opponent.

Another air blade rushed out to meet the other, colliding mid-air.

Chapter 1163

Suddenly, a ferocious explosion rang out. Ace's air blade was destroyed as Jack's air blade quickly overcame it.

That frightening air blade was gone, and Jack's air blade lost its momentum too. It pummeled the rest of its strength onto Ace's body.

Ace immediately spat out blood. He flew backward, and a long imprint could be seen across his chest.

"Master!"

Many of the Maack family's fighters were so terrified that their faces went white at the sight. Their master was at the beginning stage of the demi god status, yet he was still no match for Jack.

Jack threw out several more air blades. Many of the elders who were grandmasters were immediately killed.

“Run!”

The rest of them, who were not very strong fighters, quickly turned tail to run after assessing the situation.

The fatty, who had finally caught up, felt relieved when he saw this. He immediately blended into the Maack family crowd and escaped. The strongest fighters of the Maack family were dead now, and their family was practically gone.

Ace manages to stand up, another mouthful of blood dribbled from his mouth. He stabbed his sword into the ground to steady himself and gritted his teeth, staring at Jack. “Who are you, you brat? How could you be so strong!”

“Heh. Who am I? Why should I tell you? Just treat me as a friendly passerby. At any rate, you can’t go around provoking me!”

Jack chuckled and gave the other man a cold stare. “You gave me no choice. You were too fierce just now. Today will be the day you and your daughter die. It’s better to kill than to allow you to live and continue to bully others around here. Many of the townsfolk hate you, saying that you had earned public ire a long time ago. It’s just that they chose not to voice their anger!”

“That’s right. Kill him, kill him! Don’t let them oppress us anymore!”

Plenty of bystanders cried out from the sidelines. It was evident that the Maack family had offended plenty of people.

“Who dares to kill my brother? Does he have a death wish?”

Yet at this moment, a voice rang out from nearby. A man strode over, fury in his gaze.

“We’re done for. Gaius is here!”

Many people were scared out of their wits when they heard this voice.

The man had a terrifying aura. He rushed over and helped to support his elder brother. “Are you okay, Brother?” he asked, concerned.

“My injuries are serious, but at least you’re here. I’m not dead yet!”

Ace heaved an internal sigh of relief with Gaius here. With this, that punk was done for.

After all, Gaius was the helmsman in the White family. That brat had dug his own grave.

“So what if I want to kill him? You’re Gaius, right? You dare stop me?”

Jack spoke in a frosty tone, glaring at Gaius.

Gaius was shocked when he finally recognized the man before him. He stepped forward and kneeled before Jack. “Young Master Jack!”

Chapter 1164

“Young...Young Master Jack White?” Ace Maack was stunned when he heard how Gaius Maack knelt and addressed Jack as a young master. Could that mean that this guy was a young master from the White main family? If not, why did Gaius knelt in front of him?

“A young master from the White family!” Kayla Leight inhaled deeply and the barbeque skewer in her hand almost fell to the ground. She finally realized why Jack was not afraid of the other party. This young man not only had great fighting prowess but he also had a powerful position as well.

“Young Master Jack, how...how did my second brother offend you? Please forgive them!” Gaius’s face turned pale. Previously he would inform his brother of the people from the White family that they could not offend because he knew that his brother would spoil his niece as she kept bullying the people in the town.

He had personally advised Ace and the others on this. He asked Ace to control his daughter or something serious would happen sooner or later.

However, Ace had always said he would but still obeyed his daughter secretly and spoilt her.

Gaius had always thought that none of the powerful people in the town were stronger than the Maack family. Apart from that, nothing huge would occur as Ace knew about all the masters and young masters from the White family that he could not offend.

He was very busy recently during Jack’s return. He originally wanted to go down the mountains this evening to inform Ace about everything that happened with Jack and Selena’s return. He also asked somebody to draw portraits of everybody new so that his family could remember that they cannot offend these people.

Unfortunately, he was a little too late. He discovered that something had happened when he arrived home so he immediately rushed over. He had no idea that the person they offended was Jack.

“I said that I have to kill this pair of father and daughter today!” Jack had a cold expression on his face. “His daughter deserved to die as she asked my wife to strip in public. However, I still chose to let her live and only cut off one of her hands. Who knew that her father and the others would dare come to us? Do you think that I will still let them go?”

Jack paused before continuing to speak. “I am not the one who did not give them an opportunity to do so. I have already provided them with a chance but you can’t blame me if they did not cherish it.”

“Young Master Jack, we know our mistakes! Please forgive us!” Both Ace and Autumn Maack knelt on the floor as they continuingly beg for forgiveness. They had finally realized what sort of a person they had offended.

“Gaius, tell me, do you think they deserve to die?” Jack looked at Gaius and continued speaking. “As the helmsman, you must have played a role in supporting them to misbehave as such, right?”

Gaius started sweating profoundly when he heard this. “No, Young Master Jack! I’ve been busy all day long in the White family and I seldom come back. I did not protect them…”

Gaius was really afraid. Jack was not only in a much higher position than him, he had a higher fighting prowess and power compared to Gaius. He was completely subdued by Jack’s talents during the previous martial art competition and he was secretly rueful that Jack was a master.

Right now, he would be very unlucky if Jack blamed this matter on him and killed him for his involvement.

After all, although Ace always took advantage of his position to act so arrogantly, Gaius had never helped them to do anything wrong.

He rushed over angrily as he was anxious when he heard that his niece was almost killed and his brother almost died.

Who knew that Autumn was actually suicidal and actually dared to ask Jack's wife to strip on the streets?

Chapter 1165

"Really?" Jack smiled coldly and looked at the people around him before speaking. "Did Helmsman Maack directly take action on normal days and do anything hurtful to everybody? If there are such actions, please tell me so that I can kill him and clean up my family name!"

Jack's words were so domineering and he stood there like a godly statue.

Gaius was so frightened that the sweat on his forehead dripped down continuously. Although he felt that he never did anything bad, he was extremely afraid that somebody would come forward and make things up to get him killed. After all, the fact that he was the White family's helmsman had caused many people to be jealous, envious, and hateful of him.

“He had never done anything bad all this while!” At this moment, Kayla thought about it and stood up. “Gaius seldom comes down from the mountain and he’s always busy with training. He must be thinking about being promoted to the position of patronum. Hence, his wife always complains about this. She’s always saying that he’s in the mountains and seldom comes down to accompany them!”

“Yes, that seems to be the case. His wife always complains!” A woman also nodded in agreement.

Gaius was secretly relaxed when he heard this. He looked at the crowd and said. “Thank you everybody as you’ve all spoken fair words!”

“Alright!” Jack nodded and directly threw his sword to Gaius. “Gaius, if you feel that you did nothing wrong and you’re guilty of nothing, you definitely know what to do as a White now that Ace wants to kill me. His daughter even wanted to humiliate my wife!”

Gaius swallowed his saliva and stood up with the sword in his hand. “I know what young master means, you are asking me to place righteousness before family!”

Gaius walked toward Ace and Autumn after he spoke with the sword in his hand.

“Uncle, you...you...” Autumn was so frightened that her voice was shivering.

Gaius looked at both of them and said, “Brother, niece, I’ve urged you guys many times to act low-key but you guys have never listened to me. Today, you can only blame yourselves for getting into such trouble!”

Gaius attacked them directly with the sword. Both Ace and Autumn immediately succumbed to the cuts on their neck as they crashed onto the ground with fear in their eyes.

Gaius walked toward Jack and returned the sword. “Young Master Jack, the other relatives in their family are weak and have never done anything wrong. I beg you to let them go!”

Jack took over the sword and smiled. “Don’t worry, I only kill those deserving of death and there’s no need to harm the innocents. I will not involve the other workers and relatives. Get someone to bury them!”

“Thank you, young master!” Gaius gestured with his hands and soon left to get people from the Maack family so that they could clean up the bodies.

“Never have I imagined that you are the young master of the White family!” Kayla looked at Jack differently as Jack approached her. “You’re really powerful to get rid of the bully in this town.”

Jack smiled. “Do you want to go to the White family? I can bring you to the White family and you can join us if you want to!”

Chapter 1166

“Join the White family?” blurted Kayla excitedly, her eyes twinkling in delight. “Are you for real? You’re not lying to me, are you?” Her expression changed into apprehension as she added, “Normal people don’t have the authority to bring anybody into the White family unless they’re people with a high position in the White family, such as the elders, patronums, or the elders’ son!”

Selena could hardly bite back her grin at how this young girl acted. “Don’t worry, you definitely can join the White family if Jack says so. He’s the White family master’s son and the inheritor to the White family master position right now.”

“Oh… Oh my god!” Kayla was utterly shocked at the news, her jaws wide open that an egg could fit it.

Seconds later, she gulped her own saliva and said, “The family master’s inheritor…? Doesn’t that mean that there’s hope for you to be the family master in the future? I had no idea that you have such an honorable status. No wonder Gaius knelt without hesitation when he saw you!”

“Haha…! I’m not interested in being the family master, so I don’t hang around the thought. Apart from that, my father is doing a good job!” Jack laughed.

He believed that he would be able to quickly cure his father after he made the pills. With Nash’s age, it would not be a problem for him to continue being the family master once his body was cured.

Apart from that, they did not have to be afraid of Lily and the Third Elder after Nash recovered!

“Haha… I know some things about the White family. I heard that you returned from the outside world and that you won the previous martial arts competition Lance White didn’t participate in. I really admire you for being so stellar, even though you just returned from the outside world. I wondered what such a master looked like… Who would’ve thought I’d get to meet you guys today!” Kayla laughed and was incredibly happy. “By the way, should I follow you guys to the White family tonight? Isn’t it inconvenient to go so late at night? It should be difficult to arrange accommodation and everything else, right?”

Jack fell silent for a good while at that. “It’s best if you go home and say goodbye to your family. Tomorrow, wait for me at the entrance into the mountains at nine in the morning, and I’ll come down and pick you up by then.”

“Alright, great! This is fantastic! Who would’ve imagined that I’ll be able to enter the White family!” Kayla nodded appreciatively, her eyes gleaming with respect for Jack.

She worshipped Jack after she heard of his story. She had no idea that she would meet him today. He was even willing to bring her to the White family and make her one of them.

“Alright, we’re almost done, so we’ll take our leave now. Go home to inform your family and say your goodbyes nicely.” Jack stood up and paid for the meal before leaving with Selena.

Exhilarated, Kayla returned to the Leigh family happily.

“Girl, where have you been? Why did you come back so late at night? I heard from our neighbor next door that something huge happened in town tonight!” Kayla’s father, Lincoln Leigh, immediately said to her when his daughter walked into their house.

“I went out for a walk. Haha…! I met a high-ranking person!” Kayla laughed, unable to describe her joy.

Chapter 1167

“Let me tell you this: the Maack family is completely done for this time. I heard that they offended the White family’s young master, and this young master has a high fighting prowess—a master. He killed the Maack family’s masters, family master, and Autumn, much to everyone’s joy,” Lincoln sighed. “Who knew that the usually arrogant and domineering Maack family would suffer such an ending. People would be so happy!”

Lincoln’s brother, who was beside them, chimed in, “I wonder what’s the name of the Young Master White? He’s really smart. I heard that he questioned Gaius if he defended the Maacks. Then, for Gaius to prove his innocence, he asked Gaius to kill his own brother and niece. Since Gaius was the one to do it, Gaius would not hate him…”

Kayla smilingly nodded at that. “Yes, that’s really smart of him, and I think so too!” She continued speaking while looking at his father and uncle after she spoke. “Father, Second Uncle, I need to tell you something... I’ll be leaving the Leigh family tomorrow.”

“Leave the Leigh family?” Their eyelids flipped open at the sudden bombshell, wondering what on earth happened.

Lincoln immediately said, “Where are you going? This is a blessed ground for training. We, the Leighs, had an aggrieved life when the Maack family was domineering this place. Now that the Maack family is completely done, families like us, who are only slightly weaker than them, will have better days. We don’t need to spend days walking on thin ice at least. Apart from that, this place is a nice training grounds as it’s right next to where the White family is, and the Chi is thick. If you don’t stay here, where do you want to go?”

Kayla’s second uncle also immediately persuaded him. “Yes, Kayla, we were still thinking about having you train here. With your talent, it won’t take long for you to break through and enter the initial level of the demi-god stage. After you’ve broken through, you will have a chance when the White come down to pick someone to join them if you’re lucky. Why do you even think about leaving?”

Kayla once again smiled and, seeing their worried faces, explained, “Don’t worry, I’m not going to some random place. I’m going to the White family! I happened to meet Young Master White today, and he asked me to join the White family when he saw how talented I am!”

“Really? That’s splendid news!” Lincoln was immediately ecstatic and laughed exuberantly. “The Chi is much thicker in the mountains, and more than that, you can get quite a number of Chi Congregation Pills every month. This is your golden opportunity!

“Ah, yes, what’s the name of this White family’s young master? He actually defeated somebody at the initial stage of the demi-god level so easily at such a young age. He’s definitely a master in the White family. You have somebody to rely on since he’s referred you,” said Lincoln smilingly.

“He… His name is Jack White, and he’s the White family’s inheritor right now. How about that? Am I lucky?” Kayla slightly raised her delicate head and had a proud expression on her face.

“Jack?” The smile on Lincoln’s face shifted sourly, and such an expression was not one of pleasantness.

Kayla soon realized that Lincoln did not seem happy so she frowned and asked, “Why, Father? He’s the White family’s inheritor, and he’ll be the White family master if all goes to plan. What are you worried about when he’s the one to bring me into the White family?”

Lincoln sighed and said, “This seems to be a good and bad thing at the same time.”

Chapter 1168

“Father, what are you talking about? Why don’t I understand you at all?” Kayla rolled her eyes at her father in agitation. She could not understand how entering the White family and knowing the White family master’s son would be both good and bad at the same time.

This was obviously something great.

Lincoln smiled bitterly and explained, “This is good because you’re able to enter the White family, and you’ll be able to get better martial enhancement materials. We’re naturally happy that you get to train

in the White family because our daughter gets to quickly breakthrough and become a master of the demi-god level!"

Lincoln paused momentarily before he added, "I've also said it's a bad thing because I'm worried about the White family's current predicament; it doesn't look too good. You also know that the White family's First Madam isn't happy when Jack becomes the family master's inheritor, and she really wanted to kill Jack. Apart from that, Lily has a high position in the White family. She brought many of the Lagorias over, so…"

Kayla understood what her father, Lincoln meant. "Father, I know what you mean. You're afraid of me getting involved after I follow Jack, no? You're afraid of a civil war within the White family, that they'll start fighting, am I right?"

"Yes. After all, Jack is the one who brought you into the White family. If he asks you to stand by his side at that moment, would you not do it? Apart from that, Nash's condition seems to be getting increasingly serious. I'm afraid that if he dies soon, many people will go after the position of family master!" Lincoln nodded helplessly. "I also want you to be able to enter the White family, but this doesn't seem to be a very good chance, especially when you're being introduced into the family by Jack. What if the First Madam hates you too?"

"Don't worry, Father. Why would she pinpoint me when I don't even have a position? You're really cowardly. It'll mean something that the First Madam has her eyes on me if I'm a patronum or elder, but I'm just a nobody who just joined, and they won't have time to think about me!" Kayla was speechless at her father's antics. "Apart from that, Jack is really talented. He's also somebody smart, so he'll definitely think of ways to handle the White family's issues, so don't worry about these things. Didn't you always tell me that training is going against nature, and I can't be afraid of death? What's so frightening about death?"

“Who’d want to die when you can stay alive?” Lincoln’s face darkened as he countered. “This is definitely an opportunity, but you have to be careful, alright? Don’t take Jack’s side just because he’s the one who brought you up the mountain; you’ll be in trouble if you accidentally offended First Madam or the others. You need to train well after you enter the mountains. Speak less unless necessary, and don’t walk around, alright?”

“Yeah, yeah, I get it!” Kayla nodded. “Father, I’m leaving tomorrow, so should we celebrate tonight and have a nice dinner?”

Only then did Lincoln smile proudly as he spoke, “Yes. This is the first time after many years that somebody from the Leigh family gets to enter the White family, so we should definitely celebrate.

“Come on, I’ll ask the kitchen to prepare several dishes that you like!”

Meanwhile, Jack and Selena soon returned after they finished their food. They rested well for the night and the next morning, Jack went downstairs to bring Kayla up the mountain.

After arranging accommodation for Kayla and giving her the token to show that she belonged with the White main family, Jack returned to the house he stayed alone.

When he arrived at the room, Jack flipped his hand and a small pill furnace appeared.

Chapter 1169

“Honey, what is this?” questioned Selena as she eyed the object skeptically.

“This is a pill furnace, and it can be used to cultivate pills. It took me some effort to get my hands on this, years ago. Apart from this pill furnace, I also got my hands on several recipes for first-grade pills at that time.” Jack smiled and continued, “By the way, don’t tell anybody about this as alchemists are very rare. The training result after consuming pills is definitely better compared to spirited grass. However, pills require all sorts of ingredients, and it’s not easy to become an alchemist.”

“Dear me… I never thought you’d be able to make pills too, Honey! Have you successfully made any pills then? Elaine once told me about them. She said making them would need solid mental fortitude and great talent!” Selena was slightly surprised. Elaine had once told her that a person’s training period would be much shorter after consuming the pills compared to when they had the spirited grass. Moreover, results obtained with the pills were much more promising as the energy in the pills has been filtered, and only the essence was left.

However, Selena had never imagined that Jack was actually an alchemist.

Jack gave a tight smile as he replied, “I’ve got recipes for first-grade elementary-level pills, first-grade intermediate level pills, and one for first-grade high-level pills, but they’re rather difficult to cultivate. I’ve found many sets of ingredients for my first-grade elementary-level pills, but I’ve failed many times during cultivation. In the end, I succeeded in cultivating two first-grade elementary pills.”

Jack paused before he continued, “So, I’m only a first-grade elementary alchemist right now. It’s not an easy thing to learn it by myself without the guidance of a teacher.”

“It’s already quite good that you can cultivate a first-grade elementary pill when you’re only learning it by yourself. You’ll definitely improve in the future.” Selena smiled and continued, “It shouldn’t be an issue for you to cultivate a pill to cure your father’s poison, right? You won’t fail, right?”

“I won’t fail in this as these aren’t cultivating pills,” assured Jack smilingly. “I’m only slightly refining the herbs to increase their effectiveness, and it’s not very difficult. Many people who train are able to cultivate such healing pills, but it’s not the same as cultivating pills—now that’s a whole nother story.”

Jack was prepared to start the cultivation after he finished speaking. He could start a small fire with his Chi, but he had to feel and control the temperature and strength of the fire with his mental power.

Soon, Jack succeeded in cultivating the pills, and there were a total of five pills.

Jack had bullets of sweat on him by the time he completed the cultivation; it was no easy feat to achieve.

“It’s a success. Honey, let’s go cure father!” Jack smiled and kept the furnace away. He pulled Selena and went toward Nash’s living quarters.

Chapter 1170

Upon arriving at Nash’s bedroom door, Jack and Selena saw Joan talking to Nash inside.

“I heard that Jack sneaked out. I really don’t know why he does that, considering how dangerous it is right now.” Nash, who was laying on the bed, was obviously worried for Jack. He knew that Lily had wanted to get rid of Jack from the start, knowing how vexed she was that Jack took the position that belonged to Lance and became the family master’s inheritor. Her urge to get rid of Jack skyrocketed.

It was too risky for Jack to leave the main family as that would be Lily’s golden opportunity to take him out.

“You don’t need to worry; Jack won’t leave the main family if he’s not sure of himself. He must be confident enough to leave the house, and there must be something very important that led him to do that.” Joan sat beside with her usual gentle smile on her face. “He had already returned yesterday, so there’s nothing that you need to worry about.”

Outside the door, Selena stole glances at Jack and smiled inwardly. Jack’s prejudice toward Nash might lessen after he heard his father’s concerns about him.

Jack looked at Selena as they both walked into the room.

“Oh my, Jack, what a coincidence! We were just talking about you, and here you are,” beamed Joan when she saw him coming in.

Jack walked to where the bed was and spoke, “Father, Mother, I have wonderful news for you both. I’ve

successfully cultivated the herbs to detoxify the poison in Father's body. I went out this time to search for some herbs, and I believe Father will recover tomorrow or the day after tomorrow after he takes my medication."

"Really?!" Joan's eyes lit up when she heard this, turning to Nash excitedly as she gushed, "Nash, did you hear that? Your son went out to find herbs for your cure!"

"I heard him, I heard him...! Lower your voice so that the others won't hear you!" Nash was just as excited. "I don't care if this medication works or not. I don't mind if I die because of this medication that Jack risked his life to obtain for me."

"Let's not talk about death and take one of the pills. I've cultivated five pills, and you need to take one for three times every day. You might be able to get down from bed to talk tomorrow evening." Jack smiled bitterly and continued, "However, I recommend that you share nothing about your physical improvements. The Third Elder has gone into retreat for training, but I think that old fox is plotting something. We should take this chance to see who's scheming and who's not."

Nash nodded in satisfaction after he heard this. "Haha…! It looks like my son is very confident in this medication. I've asked many famous doctors to cure me previously, but none of them were certain enough to cure me. They couldn't even make out what condition I had."

Jack chuckled as he sat by Nash's side. "It might be because they thought it's nothing out of the ordinary, thinking anything but poisoning."

Nash took a pill and said, “I don’t have high hopes of recovering; all I thought of was if I could see you two before I go. Who would’ve expected my son to be so talented and have such good medical skills! This has been a great surprise for me.”

Chapter 1171

Jack thought about it and said to Nash, “Father, it’ll be quite troublesome if Lily and the Third Elder really want to go against us after you’ve recovered, so you should prepare for that.”

Nash nodded solemnly. “If that’s really the case, then our White family would definitely drop out of the eight shadow families. The seven other families won’t recognize our standing, but I don’t care about that. I used to care a lot about this, but things become much clearer to me after I’m poisoned. So what if we’re a shadow family? So what if we’re not? Such titles mean nothing,” he spoke as he gazed at Joan and Jack. “I’m already satisfied to be with you two and have a peaceful life. I’ll never allow Lily to hurt you!”

“Alright, Father. You rest well. Selena and I will excuse ourselves now.” Jack nodded. “I believe your body will recover tomorrow.”

Nash nodded, assured at the idea. “It must’ve been a tiring couple of days for you. Thank you for risking your life out there for me.”

“There’s nothing tiring about this. I held prejudice against you because of what others did, but such a misunderstanding has been resolved.” Jack smiled and soon left with Selena.

At this moment, an old man appeared in Lily's room.

The old man greeted Lily dutifully before he spoke, "First Madam, we got news about the things that you've wanted updates on. Jack and his subordinates went to Soul City after they left this place, and that young man caused a huge stir after he arrived at Soul City. It was easy to obtain news about him because he wiped out an entire second-class aristocratic family and a very huge clan. News about this has been spreading all over the place."

Lily had a small frown as she heard his report. "Strange. Did that guy purposely take a trip to Soul City so that he could cause trouble with these powerful people? Did he have to do that? Apart from that, he's the White family master inheritor. Isn't he lowering his position when he causes trouble with others?"

The old man smiled bitterly and said, "I don't think he purposely went there to look for trouble. I heard that he went over to the auction house for herbs and bought a herb at a sky-high price. It so happened that those people offended him because of this!"

"Herbs?" Lily's heart dropped when she heard this. Jack purposely went to Soul City in search of herbs?

She heard that Jack excelled and was well-versed in medicine. Was he out there looking for medication to heal Nash?

Lily began to worry at such a thought as she instantly asked the old man, "What herbs did he buy? Did you investigate that?"

The old man frowned. “That, I do not know. Our people are rushing over there, and they got news about this while they’re on the airplane.”

Lily nodded and firmly spoke, “You have to get exact news about what sort of herbs that guy bought.”

“Yes, First Madam.” The old man nodded and soon left.

Chapter 1172

Lily’s frown deepened after the old man left, her anxiety plaguing her mind as she did.

“I heard Jack has exceptional medical skills. Had he gone looking for a cure for Nash?” Lily started talking to herself, but she soon shook her head. “That’s impossible. The First Elder brought many miracle-working doctors before, but those people couldn’t even identify Nash’s body condition. How can Jack cure him? He must be preparing medication for that brother of his, Fernando!”

Lily’s thought calmed her as she began to loosen up, under the impression that Jack was looking for herbs to cure Fernando. The Third Elder ensured her that no normal person could identify the poison in Nash’s body, and only a handful of people could identify it.

As the symptoms of this poison looked more like asthma, many doctors might even treat it as such. The

result would be a definite failure.

...

As he had ample free time, Jack started cultivating pills with two sets of herbs as he returned to his room.

He did not have many ingredients with him at that moment, and he only had some first-grade elementary ingredients that would produce first-grade elementary pills.

Nonetheless, these pills were suitable for people who were at the level of grandmasters or demi-gods. Among them, grandmasters would have better results if they used this. Hence, Jack planned to let Selena use it when she broke through the grandmaster level.

Such first-grade elementary pills were obviously useless for Jack; he had to consume first-grade premium-level pills for good effects.

Unfortunately, he could not even cultivate first-stage intermediate level pills, let alone first-stage premium-level pills. Apart from that, he did not have many of such ingredients with him.

It was already late when he finished his cultivation. Jack took out first-stage premium spirited grass after

he had dinner with Selena.

This spirited grass was one of the rewards Jack won in the competition. He planned to cultivate the grass in order to increase its power. Even though he did not have a breakthrough and enter the intermediate stage of the true god level, he could at least have some improvement.

Jack had successfully cultivated the spirited grass during the middle of the night so he went to sleep.

Others would envy Jack if they knew how quickly he could cultivate this first-level premium-grade spirited grass. After all, this was a first-level premium-grade spirited grass, and the energy in it was incomparable to other spirited grass.

The next morning, Joan came looking for Jack in delight.

“Jack, I have great news to share! Your father told me this morning that your medication worked wonders, so much so that he felt obvious improvements in his body, especially during last night after he vomited several mouthfuls of black-colored blood. That has to be poisoned blood, yes?” Happiness was written all over Joan’s face. There was no hiding her love for Nash, and it showed in her jubilant expression knowing Nash would recover.

“Yes!” Jack nodded. “I’m confident in curing his poison. The only thing that I’m worried about right now is Fernando’s situation. His situation is so troublesome, and we have to get that ancient scroll.” Jack paused here before he added, “Luckily, his body has been totally frozen, and there’s no rush for things. It won’t be an issue even if we spend two to three years to get the ancient book and come up with a

treatment solution."

Joan's joyful grin fell a little as though she would frown, but a wan smile took its place. "Jack, I have to tell you some bad news... The Cyro Pearl is indeed a precious item, and it can completely freeze someone, but it still has its own limitations, and that would be time. The Cyro Pearl's effect would decrease after three years, and the ice would slowly melt. That means you only have three years, Jack. Your dad told me this and he wanted to tell you, but he didn't know how to."

"Three years?!"

Chapter 1173

Jack's expression fell when he heard that. If he only had three years, he had no time to waste. He had to get his hands on the ancient scroll, and fast.

Jack smiled bitterly. "Alright, I understand," he replied.

Two days later, Nash's body had completely recovered.

Nash kept it a secret from everyone else, all except his two trusted people—Titus and the First Elder, Kenneth.

Titus and Kenneth were overjoyed to hear Nash's news.

Despite their joy, however, they felt restless to keep such a secret. They suffered in silence for it.

Another day passed and the Third Elder finally walked out from his room. He had a smile on his face and he quickly went to Lily's living quarters.

"Why did you come out so quickly?" rushed Lily upon seeing Wade. "I have a really bad feeling. Before you went into retreat, Jack went out with Lana and Ethan."

Wade was stunned when he heard this. "What do you mean, they went out? This is a great opportunity to kill him! Did you not send anybody to kill him?"

"I did. Sigh! This guy is really at the initial stage of the real god-level. Dean's carelessness led him to be killed in their hands. Yolanda escaped and ran back here as she was hurt under the attack of those three people!" Lily sighed. "What could we have done? It'll only get difficult to kill him now since we've missed such a great opportunity. This guy doesn't go out of the White family anymore. He hides in his room to train, and I think he also knows to not easily leave the grounds."

"Initial stage of the real god level?" Wade was also surprised when he heard this. "This young man is really talented—he's more talented than Nash when he was younger. Apart from that, he's really shrewd. He'll grow into something powerful if we allow him to grow like this."

“Yes. I have a bad headache right now, and I don’t know what to do!” Lily frowned and asked Wade, “Why did you come out so quickly? Have you failed to raise your fighting prowess?”

Wade, instead, smiled as he diverted, “Has Lance returned yet? Is there any news?”

Lily felt warmth in her heart when she saw how Wade cared for her son, thus she replied, “Yes, nothing’s changed—there’s no news. Sigh… Could he be really dead?”

Wade smiled coldly. Even if Lance was not dead, he would not allow him to come back alive. Lily was delusional to think Lance could still come back alive.

He stepped forward and hugged Lily by her waist before he smilingly assured, “I’ve already broken through, and I’m in the peak stage of the real god-level right now. I’m not afraid of even the First Elder right now.”

Chapter 1174

“What?!” Sharply inhaling, a smile slowly broke out on Lily’s face as she grabbed the Third Elder’s shoulder in surprise. “You… You’ve really broken through? You’ve broken through and entered the peak stage of the real god-level? Does that mean you’re the same level as Nash?”

The Third Elder laughed in satisfaction. “Haha… Of course! Nash is in no condition to fight right now. The First Elder and the others are at the last stage of the real god level, so even the First Elder can’t compete

against me right now. I have the highest fighting prowess in the entire White family, and I'm the strongest fighter in the White family. I'll take that family master title this time!"

"Wonderful! Oh, how wonderful!" Lily also became slightly excited and said to Wade, "Wade, don't forget what you promised me. After you become the family master, you have to keep this position for my son in the future!"

Wade immediately responded with a smile, "Don't you worry, my dear. I treat Lance as if he's my own son. I won't have this chance if you hadn't secretly poisoned Nash. Don't you worry; I'll only be the family master for a maximum of two years. I'll give this position to him after he returns."

"Alright. Lance will definitely come back. He definitely will!" Lily nodded.

She knew that for her son to be the family master, she had to allow Wade to take the position for a certain period. Otherwise, Jack would eventually get that position.

Jack was only an illegitimate child, the child Nash and Joan bore in the outside world without her consent. Her hatred for Jack felt as though it was carved into her bones.

She could have ignored the mother-and-son pair had they just stayed in the outside world and never returned to the White family.

However, Nash getting Jack to return after Lance went missing had completely infuriated Lily.

She could not let Jack take what belonged to her son.

Hence, she was willing to do whatever it took for Lance to be the White family master.

However, the Third Elder started frowning at this moment. “The only thing I worry about right now is the loyalty of many toward Nash White. Will others oppose me being the family master?”

“Oppose?” Lily had a sinister and vicious look in her eyes. “I’ll kill whoever that dares oppose it. I want to see how many aren’t afraid of death. Now that you’ve broken through, we need to act quickly. The other will be afraid once we kill Nash, First Elder, and Second Elder. Once these powerful units are killed, the others will have no choice but to obey!”

Lily thought about it and immediately added, “Also, we’ll need to kill Jack. This guy is really talented, and he’ll be our worst enemy if we allow him to grow within two to three years.”

The Third Elder nodded. “Not only do we need to kill the First and Second Elders, but we also need to kill the housekeeper, Titus. He’s Nash’s most loyal follower. Killing these people will act as a warning for the others. After they die, I’ll be the strongest in the entire White family. Who’ll be the family master if not me? Nothing can stop me if you show your support and ask the Lagorios to also support me.”

“No problem. Don’t you worry! The Lagorios aren’t stupid. However, you need to make sure that you kill the First Elder, Nash, and the others in order for you to be convincing. If I support you later on, the Lagorios will definitely be by your side too,” advised Lily.

“That’s right. Apart from that, I can also use the fact that the First Elder doesn’t know about my breakthrough. It’ll be much easier to kill him when he least expects it.”

Chapter 1175

Wade voiced his opinion.

“How about tomorrow? We’ll be paying our respects to the ancestors tomorrow, so they’ll definitely lower their guard. You need to secretly attack the First Elder by then, and there’s nothing worth being afraid of once the First Elder dies!” suggested Lily after a silent moment of consideration.

“Ah, yes, I almost forgot about tomorrow! Would’ve forgotten it had you not mentioned it. Tomorrow, we’ll need to go to the back of the mountain to pay our respects to the ancestors. Haha… What an opportunity! Many of the branch family masters will also be there, and I can use this opportunity to announce that I’m the new family master in front of them. Haha!” The thought of being the family master excited Wade incredibly.

“Yes! We can officially order the branch families to hand over as much martial enhancement material as we want. We don’t need to be afraid of Nash finding out!” added Lily.

“Yes, you’re right. I’ll be the White family master from tomorrow onward. By then, we can work together to manage the White family, and I’m sure that we can manage it well!” Chuckling, Wade hoisted Lily into his arms and walked toward the bed.

Lily rolled her eyes at Wade and said coquettishly, “You’re nasty!”

...

The next afternoon, many of the branch family masters rushed over to join the occasion of paying respect to the White family ancestors.

Lancelot, Chad, and the others arrived at Jack’s living quarters that night.

“Young Master Jack, we had no idea why but some time ago, Dean and Yolanda Lagorio arrived at the branch families looking for you. They enquired if you guys went there and we were worried because of this. We were afraid that something happened to you. It’s nice to see you being healthy and safe right now!” blurted Lancelot.

“This was what happened. I planned to leave the White family some time ago, and I knew that Lily would definitely send people to kill me, so I purposely leaked the news…” Jack told everybody a summary of what happened.

“Who knew that Yolanda would kill Dean at the most important time. It looks like Yolanda is somebody worth trusting!” Chad could not hold back and responded after he heard what Jack said. “Many of the Lagorios received great care from the family master after they arrived at the White family. Some of them still understand how to be thankful and can tell right from wrong!”

“Yes!” Jack nodded and said, “I heard that old Wade had come out from his retreat. I wonder if he came out because he had already broken through his fighting prowess, or that he came out early to join the ancestors' praying occasion. I’m afraid that this guy might go all out if he truly had achieved his break-through.”

Chapter 1176

Stunned at what Jack had said, everyone inhaled sharply.

Chad swallowed his saliva nervously. “You’re saying that the Third Elder has the intention of rebelling? How’s that possible? He’s a member of the White family!” he blurted.

On the other hand, Lancelot responded, “To be honest, this guy is really daring. He dared to scheme with First Madam and adjusted the material submission from seventy percent to eighty. He’s already that brazen, so what else can he not do? I think he might’ve been planning to take over the position of family master since long ago.”

“F*ck! Wouldn’t we be in trouble if he has really broken through?” fretted Mason. “After all, the master’s health has deteriorated and he can’t really fight. Third Elder and First Elder originally have the same combat power, but the First Elder won’t be able to compete with Third Elder if he has broken through!”

“That’s right! If this old bastard kills our First Elder, nobody in the White family can stop him.” Lancelot had a serious expression on his face as he thought about it, his worries overriding his senses.

“This isn’t the only issue. The most crucial point is that the First Madam might stand with him. If the First Madam leads some of the Lagorios to support the Third Elder to be the family master once the First Elder and Second Elder are gone, many people will have to agree just to save themselves. That way, that old bastard’s sure to get the family master title,” spoke Jack, all while he had an indifferent smile on him.

Chad thought about it and said, “Will the First Madam work with him? Although they worked together to embezzle lots of martial enhancement material, hadn’t the First Madam always hoped that her son would become the family master? How will she allow the old bastard, Wade White to be the family master?”

Jack’s smile caught them off-guard; it was as if he had expected it all. “Wade White is extremely cunning, so who knows how he tricked the First Madam. I think that old bastard used her, toyed her. No matter what, we need to be extra cautious for tomorrow.”

“Understood.” Everybody nodded and left in a short while.

Jack, on the other hand, asked the First Elder, Kenneth White, Second Elder, Weston White, and Titus White to meet him at Nash’s living quarters.

“Young Master Jack, may I know why we’re asked to be here so late at night?” Kenneth and the others asked in suspicion after they arrived.

“The old bastard, Wade White has come out from his retreat, and none of us know if he has broken through. Every one of you needs to be extra careful tomorrow, especially First Elder. I fear that guy might suddenly attack you if he has already broken through. After all, you’re the only obstacle in his way. The Second Elder and housekeeper’s fighting prowess aren’t as strong as his.”

Jack smiled bitterly and continued, “I’m also not sure if I’m overthinking it, but no matter what, please be careful tomorrow. This old bastard might be docile tomorrow if he didn’t break through, but he wouldn’t act so honestly if he had.”

“How’s that possible? The Third Elder has contributed a lot to the White family. How could he do something like this, even if he doesn’t like you?” The Second Elder was obviously surprised when he thought about it.

“Haha… I’m just reminding all of you to be careful. Everybody will soon know if the Third Elder has broken through!” said Jack with a chuckle.

“Alright, thank you for the reminder, Young Master Jack. All of us will take precautionary steps tomorrow,” said the First Elder with a nod.

...

The next day, everybody was ready to go to the back mountain to pray to the ancestors in the afternoon.

Chapter 1177

After preparing quite a number of tributes, Nash walked toward the back of the mountain supported by Joan and Second Madam Lizzie.

Not long later, the crowd arrived at the back of the mountain. There was a cemetery in the area where the ancestors of the White family were buried. A huge stone slab covered the cemetery's entrance, and it gave everyone a somber, solemn feeling.

After arranging the tributes to honor the ancestors, Titus appeared in front of the crowd and said lots of propitious words. He then said to the crowd, "Bow."

Everybody immediately bowed solemnly.

The Third Elder purposely stood behind the First Elder all the while, and at that moment, Chi surged from his palm. He struck at the First Elder's back with all his might.

The First Elder had been guarding against the Third Elder. He was surprised when he felt the movement behind him and immediately concentrated a thin layer of protective Chi layer around his body.

His protective Chi barrier managed to intercept the Third Elder's attack right at the nick of time.

A loud rumble was heard as the Chi barrier was destroyed. The Third Elder's attack directly landed on the First Elder's back.

The First Elder was sent flying as blood spewed from his mouth. He dropped to the ground right after.

"What's going on?" Many people immediately moved backward after they realized what had happened.

"Third Elder, you…" The First Elder eyed the Third Elder, shocked and fearful. He was lucky that he had his guard up against the Third Elder, and that was why he could concentrate a Chi protective layer so quickly. Although he was hurt, his injuries were not that serious.

If Jack had not told him of this before, Wade's attack would have done a total on him, and he might not have managed to form the protective Chi layer on time. He might have been injured gravely… He could have died, even.

"Haha…! Never thought you'd be so alert and quick on your feet, First Elder. I thought of ending you in one swift move—who knew you'd be able to react!" The Third Elder laughed loudly and said loudly, "Still, it doesn't matter that you were quick. You're injured, and I've already reached the peak stage of the real god level. Killing you now would be as easy as pie."

“Third Elder, you… You really disappoint me!” Nash shot the Third Elder a deadly glare.

At that moment, Lily—who stood beside Nash—glowered viciously.

She flipped her hand and came up with a dagger, aiming it at Nash. “Die! You’re the reason why my son isn’t the family master. I’ll end you, Nash White!”

“You think so?” Jack had been guarding against her. He appeared in front of Nash in a flash and kicked Lily hard at her abdomen area.

Chapter 1178

Lily was sent flying, blood spurting from her mouth as she did. She flew several meters back before Wade managed to catch her. They stopped and stood up.

“Eldest Miss!” Several Lagorios immediately ran over and studied Lily anxiously.

Nonetheless, they could not fathom why Lily would attack Nash—they were husband and wife for over 20 years.

“Lily, how dare you attack the family master?!” Titus and the others stood forward and stared at Lily angrily.

Lily laughed loudly at this moment. “Haha…! Don’t blame this on me; blame Nash for being an ungrateful bastard. The Lagorios worked hard to help the White family turn strong and become one of the eight shadow families. He, on the other hand, wants to bring back that vixen Joan and make Jack, this illegitimate child of his, the family master inheritor! He deserves to die!”

“Lily, you’re ruthless! Young Master Jack is the family master’s son! And why are you still hung up on it when this has already passed for so many years?” growled Titus as he shot Lily a heated glare. “Apart from that, isn’t it normal for the family master to want to meet them when he knows he’s not going to live for long? Apart from that, we’ve heard nothing about Lance, and he’s probably dead. You better wake up! Lance had gone to the most dangerous place, and no prodigies from other families that went with him returned. There aren’t any leads, and he would’ve returned if he was still alive after such a long time!”

“Shut up!” shrieked Lily. “My son’s not dead! He’s very talented, and he’s the most suitable person to be the family master inheritor. He should be the family master after Nash dies. Why is this illegitimate child eligible too?!”

Kenneth sighed and began, “First Madam, stop being so stubborn. Young Master Jack being the family master inheritor is the best choice given our current circumstances. Can’t you see his talents? He’s much more talented than Young Master Lance! Isn’t it nice for us to continue our lives as a family?”

The other two elders of the White family stepped forward and said, “Seems like peace within the family

isn't a choice, considering how Lily made her choice to go against Nash. If the young master hadn't responded speedily, Lily would've killed him."

"Haha… It's true that there's no other way!" Lily laughed loudly and said to the crowd, "Let's end this today. Although my son can't be the family master inheritor, Nash is also dying. I'll kill all of you today and make everybody regret their actions!"

"That's right. On what grounds can an illegitimate child who returned from the outside world be the family master?" Wade also smiled coldly. He appeared mid-air in a flash as a strong aura immediately radiated from him.

"How's this possible? It looks like he's achieved the peak stage of the true god level!" exclaimed the people when they felt his strong wave of aura.

"Oh my god. How's this possible? The peak stage of the true god level? This is the highest fighting prowess!" Many of the branch family masters grew fearful. They knew it in their guts that life would be a true struggle if Wade became the family master.

"Wade White, what's the meaning of this? Are you planning to rebel against us?" Nash had a darkened expression on his face, holding onto the hope that it was all just a joke. He trusted the Third Elder all along, and he never thought this old bastard would do this to him.

"Haha…! Is there really a need to confirm this, Nash White?"

Chapter 1179

Wade laughed loudly and said to Nash, “I’ll kill you, Titus, Kenneth, your son, and everybody else. Then, I’ll be the White family master!”

“Listen to me, members of the Lagorio family. Wade White has the highest fighting prowess in the White family right now. If you don’t want to die, and this applies to the White family members too, come forward. Nash will die soon, and it’s time the title is moved to someone else!” Lily shouted loudly.

“I agree with what the First Madam says. Jack is just a son-in-law who married into his wife’s family in the outside world. It’d be shameful for the White family if he becomes the family master. People will think that the White family don’t have any other choices! I support the Third Elder in becoming the family master!” As expected, an old man from the Lagorio family, who was also an elder, proactively walked forward and stood beside Lily.

“What the heck? I’ve just arrived at the White family and things just...” Kayla was speechless as she stood among the crowd. Who knew her father’s worries would come true so soon.

There was nothing she could have done. After all, somebody like her could not change the situation.

“Young Master Jack, the position should be given to the capable person. Now that the Third Elder has the highest fighting prowess, why don’t you just give him the position of family master inheritor?” Two other White family elders wavered in their faith. After all, Nash treated them well and they chose to carry out persuasion at this moment.

One of them even looked at Lily and said, “First Madam, why don’t we let Jack and Nash go if they willingly surrender the family master title? What if they acknowledge the Third Elder as the family master and support him?”

Lily’s face darkened when she heard this. “I don’t think so. The First Elder, Jack, Nash and the others have to die today!”

“Haha… You speak in such a boastful way!” spoke the smiling Jack as he unhesitantly walked forward, seeing how the people grew wary of him and wanting to side with Lily and the others. “Lily, my father isn’t sick. You poisoned him, didn’t you?”

“How’s that possible? How could the First Madam poison the family master?”

“Exactly. How could she when they’re married?!” There was a wave of exclamation after they heard this. Lily was a horrible, vicious woman if what Jack said was true.

“Haha… It doesn’t matter if I tell you the truth. Nash White isn’t sick but poisoned, and this poison won’t be easily detoxified!” Lily completely fell out and said with a cold smirk on her face. “He’s the one who asked for this. He was the one who summoned Joan and Jack back and even made Jack the family master inheritor. He can’t blame me for his suicidal actions!”

She stared straightforwardly at Nash as she spoke, “You never saw that coming, did you, Nash White? It must’ve never occurred to you that I’d poison you, right? Haha…! Ah, but what can you do? You’re going to die. No, I’ll ask the Third Elder to kill your son, Jack, and your lover, Joan. I’ll make you see how they die in front of your eyes!”

“Never thought you’d be so heartless!” Nash felt a wave of heartache when Lily admitted it in front of the crowd, even though he had an inkling of what had happened.

“Die, you b*tch!” The Second Elder was so angry that he flickered and rushed toward Lily.

Chapter 1180

The Second Elder was fast but the Third Elder, Wade was faster.

Swift like the wind, Wade appeared before the Second Elder and threw his fist against the Second Elder’s.

The force condensed and exploded deafeningly, and the impact sent the Second Elder flying like a kite severed from its string. Brought down to the ground by gravity, blood spewed from the Second Elder’s mouth.

“Haha…! Even the First Elder can’t beat me, yet you want to kill my darling when you’re just in the intermediate level of true god status, Second Elder?” Wade laughed rambunctiously as he saw how the Second Elder vomited blood from his attack. He even approached Lily with the crowd watching and

hugged her waist.

Shooting him an abashed stare, the blushing Lily tried to free herself from his arms.

“What are you afraid of? Baby, they’ll know about our relationship sooner or later. We can’t continue sneaking around like this, right? Haha…! It’s good for Nash to look at us; maybe he’ll die out of anger without us doing anything!” sneered the Third Elder, laughing as he did. “Who dares to go against me today is suicidal. I have the highest fighting prowess right now while both the First and Second Elder are hurt. Their combat power is pitiful, and I have two to three Lagorio family elders who are willing to fight with me. I think everyone gets the gist of things about now, no?”

“You disappoint me, Lily... Who knew you’d go behind my back with this old bastard!” Nash’s face turned pale from anger and inwardly told himself that this woman was not worth getting angry over. He was lucky to have recovered entirely—he could have actually died in anger had the poison remained in his body.

“I support the Third Elder to be the family master!” Nobody could have imagined that two White family’s helmsmen would walk forward at that moment and stood beside the Third Elder and Lily.

“Look here, everyone, even members of the White family know which team to choose. Members of the Lagorio family, what are you waiting for? Do you guys want to support the White family and go against me? I’m the eldest miss of the Lagorio family!

“Has everybody forgotten that you guys carry the Lagorio surname?” addressed Lily as she smirked.

Sure enough, many Lagorios who came with Lily also walked over and stood by their side.

“Haha… Good. Amazing. Whoever feels that I, Nash White, have wronged you should side with them,” Nash chuckled bitterly as he spoke. “However, I’m grateful that none from the branch families stood over. What does this mean? This means that they’d rather die than stand with you lot!”

Lancelot stood forward and said loudly, “That’s right! Lily and the Third Elder colluded and secretly raised the percentage of the martial enhancement material we hand in. They never gave us any option to survive and raised it up to eighty percent. How can we follow such people? Today, my branch family will stand by master Nash’s side, even if it means death!”

“What? They raised the percentage of the martial enhancement material handed in by the branch families?” Murmurs among the elders and patronums were heard right after. Not only did they secretly raise the percentage, they even raised it to 80 percent. Did that not mean that the two of them secretly took 20 percent?

Chapter 1181

“Third Elder and First Madam, aren’t you going a little too overboard? The branch families have provided us with lots over the years, yet you both secretly raised their hand-in percentage by so much!” One of the White family’s women stood forward, her face pale from anger.

“Yes, you two are incredibly selfish. Why do you need so much material? Both of you can’t finish that much, right?” Another middle-aged man also stood forward. They were members of the White family,

and they could not stomach Lily's actions.

"Hmph! The branch families were supposed to service us, the main family. So what if I ask them to hand in more?" spoke Lily indignantly. "Apart from that, you people wouldn't be so strong if it wasn't for the support from the Lagorio family. It's time for the White family to repay the Lagorio family. To be honest, I've given all the extra materials to my Lagorio family."

"Lily Lagorio, this is too much!" Nash's face turned green from anger, and he looked at Lily angrily as he spoke, "It's true that the Lagorio family had helped us when we were weak, but we've been helping you guys all these years as well. Don't you understand why the Lagorio family didn't grow? It's because you guys have suffered many deaths when you were secretly fighting the other families. Apart from that, the younger generations of your family are too pig-headed, refusing to train hard. This is the reason the Lagorio family turns into what it is right now!"

Nash paused before continuing, "Do you think the Lagorios' failure is due to limited resources? You guys have lots of resources and we constantly help, yet you still can't succeed, and it's mainly because your people refuse to work hard!"

"Nash, you should understand that people with stronger combat ability wins. Now, Wade is already at the peak level of the real god stage. I'd love to see who can top that!" Lily looked like she could care less. She calculated how many members of the Lagorios were with her before she spoke, "Why? You people are members of the Lagorio family, but you don't plan to stand by my side?"

"Eldest Miss, you… You've gone too far. Master White has always treated us well!" said a member of the Lagorio family.

“That’s right, Eldest Miss. Why do we need to cause such a situation? What’s more, you actually got together with Wade White? If news of this is spread…” A woman from the Lagorios felt slightly ashamed. She obviously had no idea that the Lagorio family’s eldest miss would be a woman who did not honor her womanhood.

“Alright, it doesn’t matter that none of you won’t support us. I’ll ask the Third Elder to spare you once he becomes the family master, since you’re all members of the Lagorio family, but don’t expect me to put you in important positions.” Lily smiled coldly. She looked at Yolanda and frowned. “Yolanda, what’s the meaning of this? Why don’t you stand with us?”

Yolanda smiled bitterly, her eyes filled with disappointment. “First Madam, you’ve changed, and you’re not the eldest miss that you once were. I had no idea that you’d do so many hateful things just to obtain the family master title for your son. You actually poisoned the family master and secretly embezzled so much martial enhancement material… I’m so disappointed in you!”

“Lily, I know that I’ve treated you and the Lagorios well all these years. Who knew that you’d stab me in the back!” Nash walked forward and levitated off the ground as his being emitted a daunting, powerful aura.

“What?!” Many people were frightened after they felt this wave of aura.

“Im...Impossible!” Wade turned pale after he felt the wave of aura, his eyes filled with disbelief.

Chapter 1182

“Such a strong aura! This aura is really the glorified aura among those in the peak stage of the real god level!” exclaimed an old man after he felt the aura.

“Yes! How can the master fly so easily? Apart from that, his facial complexion doesn’t look like he’s poisoned. He looks much more spirited than he used to be!” One of the patronums was extremely excited and seemed to have seen a glimpse of hope. Was it possible that the master was entirely well? He did not seem to be faking his condition before!

“What… What’s going on? Isn’t he poisoned?” Lily was also speechless as she stood there. She looked at Nash dumbfoundedly.

“Impossible! How can you…” The Third Elder was so frightened that his facial complexion alternated between being green and pale. Although he was at the peak stage of the real god level, he was still a long way behind Nash as he had just entered this level. Nash was in this level for two to three years, and his combat power was better than Wade.

Apart from that, the wounds the First Elder and Second Elder had were not fatal. They could obviously still fight, and Wade was surely no match for the three as he stood on his own.

Nash did not plan to be merciful. He pointed at Lily and the people who supported her as he spoke, “Kill these people, and leave the old bastard Wade to me!”

“Nash White, how dare you?! I’m the eldest miss of the Lagorio family! I’m warning you: the White family will suffer a huge loss if you dare kill me and the members of the Lagorio family. My father and the others will come to avenge me! The White family won’t be able to keep your current position!” Lily threatened Nash angrily.

Nash seemed aloof for a while before he spoke, grinning, “Yes, it’s too easy for you if you’re killed. Kill the others. I’m divorcing Lily Lagorio, and I’ll destroy her fighting prowess before driving her out of the White family!”

“You… You dare wish to destroy my fighting prowess?!” Lily’s face paled in anger. Destroying the fighting prowess of a person who spent lots of time to become a martial artist, especially a master who had reached the initial stage of the demi-god level, was worse than killing her. It was like ripping a master off of their position before dropping them from the skies, making them a mere mortal once more.

Apart from that, the person’s body would be badly injured after their fighting prowess got destroyed, and they would not be able to train without resting for half a year or one whole year. They had to start from scratch as a martial artist, and this would require so much more time and dedication!

“Haha… You were daring enough to cheat on me with another man, so why can’t I destroy your fighting prowess?” Nash laughed and waved his hand, signaling everybody to take action.

“Attack!” Many of the Lagorios who chose to stand by the White family secretly rejoiced that they made a smart choice. Otherwise, they would perish in the upcoming war.

“Attack!” None of the other branch families members supported Lily and the others as they had long hated them. They felt relieved as they finally had the chance to vent the anger in their hearts. They rushed toward the Lagorio family elders and those who supported Lily.

“How’s this possible? Father… We’re done for!” Hudson and his father almost vomited blood from anger. They did not make much consideration when they stood by the Third Elder and Lily’s side knowing that Nash was poisoned. Apart from that, both the First and Second Elders were hurt, and the Third Elder had achieved the peak stage of the real god level. Hudson was even thinking about the benefits he could obtain after the Third Elder became the family master. After all, he had always been benefiting from their side. Who knew…

“We’re really unlucky! How could this be?”

Chapter 1183

Hudson’s father wore a grave expression. He flipped his palm and a sword appeared. “Fight… Fight our way out!”

“Attack!” Those who sided with Lily only knew then they had no other choice, thus they rushed forward and fought.

Nash smiled coldly and spoke to Wade, who was standing in front of him, “Wade White, I’m sure both you and Lily had no idea that my son, Jack had cured me of my poisoning, no?”

Lily had a sudden realization and her face darkened. “The last time Jack went out was to find the detoxifying herbs for you...? How did he know you’ve been poisoned?”

“Haha! My son’s a master with medical skills, and he knows the treatment plan!” Nash once again laughed and tightened his grip on the sword in his hands. He quickly adjusted his Chi and waved the sword outward. “Burning Chop!”

As Nash waved his sword, a fierce aura emerged from his swing. His Chi and sword aura were weaved together and it looked like a fireball. It also looked like a meteor with a long tail as it flew forward.

“Great, he’s using a second-grade elementary martial skill right off the bat!” The Third Elder’s face darkened when he saw this attack. He gritted his teeth and also showed his martial skill. Soon, another cut flew forward.

Accompanied by a loud thunder-like noise, two powerful attacks collided as a strong wave of energy rippled throughout.

Trees shook with the wind, a result of the impact.

“Damn it… There really is a difference?” The Third Elder realized something was wrong even though both of them used second-grade elementary martial skills. His martial skill obviously could not uphold and the energy was parried with ease. Nash’s attack still had remaining energy, and it went for his body.

Sensing something was wrong, the Third Elder immediately concentrated a thick layer of Chi to protect himself.

The energy-fused attack clashed against his Chi barrier the moment it was summoned.

The Third Elder was blasted several meters backward before he could regain his footing.

However, the Chi protective layer covering his body had also shattered loudly, and blood spurted from his mouth.

“Sh*t. The Chi protective later can’t even withstand the leftover energy from his attack?” The Third Elder had a darkened expression. He was so frightened that he directly waved his sword at the opponent before turning around to run away.

“Going somewhere?” Nash directly blocked the Third Elder’s attack with his sword when he saw how the Third Elder planned to escape. He immediately turned into an afterimage as he chased after the Third Elder.

Chapter 1184

After several waves of explosions, the people siding with Lily and the Third Elder were killed. Only Lily was badly wounded, lying on the ground with a grudge-filled expression.

Nash also flew back with a heavily wounded Wade and threw him on the ground.

“Why? Nash White, do you plan to shame me before killing me?” Wade, who was paralyzed on the floor, stared at Nash hatefully. “I’ve calculated every step thoroughly, never once thinking your son would have such high medical skills. Not only did he realize what was wrong with your body, but he cured you as well. If that didn’t happen, I would be crowned the family master today!”

“Haha… I brought you back here without thinking of shaming you. Third Elder, you’re imagining things. I brought you back here because I want to kill you, a sinner, in front of the White family’s ancestors!” Nash laughed and raised his sword.

“Sinner?” Nobody expected Wade to laugh out loudly at that moment. “I don’t feel that I’m a sinner of any kind. As the saying goes, ‘The capable are to be crowned.’ The world operates based on how big a person’s fists are, and it’s always been that way. I should be the family master if I’m stronger than you. Why should you be the family master? On what grounds does your son get to be the family master after you die? I’m also a member of the White family, and I’m qualified to be the family master too!”

“Haha… You speak like you come from a justified stance. How dare you mention ‘the capable are to be crowned’ when you colluded with the First Madam and made her poison my father?” Jack could not help but laughed coldly when he heard this. “It makes sense if you rebelled because you’ve improved your fighting prowess and are stronger than my father. However, you used such ways against my father and even secretly attacked the First Elder. How dare you say that you’re worthy of the saying ‘the capable are to be crowned’ with these despicable ways?”

“Wade, what do you mean? Why… Why does it feel like you want to be the family master all along? Didn’t we have an agreement that if I cooperate with you and make you a family master, you’ll give the position of family master to my son when he returns?” Lily felt that something was wrong after she heard what Wade said. She could not help but look at him curiously. It looked like Wade had never planned to give the family master position to Lance from the beginning.

Wade looked at Lily and smirked. “Lily, do you really think I’d give your son such a powerful title when he returns? Why don’t you dream about it? Haha! Why should I give it to your son when it's so hard to get this position? Apart from that, your son is dead! Stop thinking that he’ll return!”

Wade paused here before he continued, “Haha… First Madam, you really are willing to sacrifice everything for your son. Not only did you sacrifice your body, but you even helped me with all your power. Ah, shame, but I was just using you. I even ordered several people to kill your son if they found him. He’s not allowed to come back alive and, even if he does, I won’t hand him the family master title! Haha!”

“You… You animal!” Lily’s face was filled with despair. She knew, at that moment, she was just one of Wade’s pawns.

“Hmph! You can only blame your stupidity. If I really become the family master, what if your son returns when I’m stable in the position? By then, nobody can take it from me without a fight!” spoke the indignant Wade. “I’m unlucky today, and I admit my defeat.”

He closed his eyes and said loudly, “Come, Nash White! Make it quick!”

Nash held his sword tightly and swung it downward. Wade's head fell to the ground as his body fell backward.

After killing Wade, Nash came behind Lily and placed his hand on her back.

Chapter 1185

Lily vomited a mouthful of blood and her fighting prowess was destroyed.

"You really are heartless, Nash...! You destroyed my fighting prowess?!" Lily turned around to look at Nash, her eyes filled with hatred. "We were together for over twenty years—I had no idea you'd be so cruel to me!"

"I kept you alive because of our relationship that spanned over twenty years. I'll ask a member of the Lagorio family to send you back, but you'll have to watch you back when you do," spoke the merciless Nash as he crossed his arms at his chest.

"Let me escort her back." One of the White family elders, who carried the surname Lagorio, felt bad for Lily even though he was already a member of the White family and was willing to work for the White family.

"Nash White, remember what you did today. I'll hate you for the rest of my life, and I'm sure you'll regret not killing me!" Lily's face was pale as she stood up. She wiped off the blood from the corner of her mouth and the old man from the Lagorio family supported her as they left.

Nash looked at the bodies on the floor and secretly sighed after Lily left.

Although these people deserved to die, there were many masters among them. The White family has suffered a serious loss this time, especially since they lost a very strong master like the Third Elder.

This caused the White family, who had just entered the ‘eight shadow families’ cluster, to drop in their position.

However, they were still temporarily in eighth place as they still had Nash White, a master of the peak stage in the real god level, to support the family.

Unfortunately, their relationship with the Lagorio family was severed after this civil war. Although the Lagorio family was not as strong as the White family and that they might not counter-attack, the White family had to be on guard.

Nash shook his head at the thought. He forgot about his troubles and said, “I’m really sorry about Lily and Wade secretly raising the percentage of the material you guys hand in. From this month onwards, the branch families only need to submit fifty percent of the materials gathered.”

Nash glanced at Jack, who was beside him, and added, “I’ll send Jack to the branch families to bring a handful of prodigies here for training. I’ll also send some of our youths with good training prowess to

help collect martial enhancement material to raise their combat power."

"That… That's wonderful! Master, you're wise!" Mason's eyes reddened in excitement, nearly tearing up when he heard Nash's words.

"Great! This is really great!" Lancelot also smiled in excitement.

Nobody expected Nash to smile at that moment and raised his hand to quiet down the crowd. He continued, "We've lost several elders and patronums this time, so I plan to re-select several elders and patronums to take over their positions."

Nash paused for a moment and announced loudly, "However, it'll be different from our usual ways of selecting among people of the main family. The branch family masters, especially those who have achieved the intermediate stage of the real god level, can also enter the main family and become our elder!"

Chapter 1186

"Intermediate stage of the true god status and the people from the branch families can be elders at the main family?" Lancelot was extremely excited when he heard the news. His fighting prowess was considered high among many of the branch families and had already reached the intermediate stage of the true god status.

He obviously fulfilled all the requirements.

He would be given a very nice stipend once he became the main family's elder. Not only could he stop worrying about the branch family, but he would also have enough martial enhancement material to train himself. He would be able to raise his fighting prowess in peace and enjoy the best martial materials.

The most important point was that nobody from the branch families has ever entered the main family and became the main family's elder.

This decision of Nash obviously broke the previous rules.

This was not something good for the main family's members, but it definitely was extremely good news for the branch family's members.

After all, if any of them became the main family's elders, they would have the chance to suggest or hold some decisive votes when there were important discussions. His vote might be vital on some critical issues.

They could even help improve the welfare of their branch family.

"Definitely. I welcome anybody who's in the intermediate stage of the true god status and is willing to be our elder!" Nash nodded in satisfaction and said with a smile. "I'm only afraid that all of you are used

to being the branch families masters that you aren't really interested in being our elders!"

Lancelot immediately raised his hand and said, "No way. I'm willing, Master! I'm willing to be the elder!"

"Haha… Good, but this needs to be done after six months as you guys still need to hand over the affairs regarding the people of the branch families. Come over for the position after you've chosen a new branch family master!" Nash laughed and said.

"I...I'm already quite old. Can I also come over and work as an elder?" Chad stood forward and looked at Nash longingly.

"You...You've also broken into the intermediate stage of the true god status?" Nash was slightly stunned and surprised. Under his impression, this old man came over to the main family once last year and he remembered that this old man was at the initial stage of the true god level.

"Haha… Yes, I've been lucky. I've broken through and achieved the intermediate stage of the true god status some time ago!" Chad smiled shyly.

"That's great, Chad. You've been well prepared!" Nash smiled happily and said to Chad. "I'm more than happy to have you coming over!"

“Haha… Alright, alright, I’ll definitely be back to give the position of elder a try!” Chad laughed loudly. He had no idea that he would be given such an opportunity.

“Sigh, I really envy you guys. I’m only at the initial state of the true god status!” Mason, who was also there, could not help but sighed and looked quite pitiful.

“Then you need to work hard. If our family continues to grow, we will constantly need to choose some outstanding people from the branch families!” Nash smiled and said. “Anyways, if you don’t mind being a patronum, you can still join us!”

“Patronum? Sure, master! I will come over and be a patronum!”

Chapter 1187

Mason immediately said in excitement. “Master, it’s decided then!”

“Alright, it’s decided!” Nash smiled and said.

“I think it’s best if everybody stays the night and leaves tomorrow. I will go back with you tomorrow to enlist some of the masters. I only need to pick two or three from each branch family. Based on the number of people in these families, I will pick three from the bigger ones and two from the smaller ones!” Jack thought about it before speaking to Lancelot and the others.

“Haha, great! This is great news!” Everybody was extremely happy. Although the White family really suffered a huge loss this time the decision Nash made really caused the people from the branch families to have hope. Apart from that, they would be able to provide a good explanation to their family when they return.

Everybody returned to their respective living quarters after they cleaned up the bodies.

“Honey, I miss Kylie and the others!” In the evening, Selena said when she was laying in Jack’s arms.

Jack smiled bitterly and said, “Yes, I also miss the kid and I’ve wanted to bring them over some time ago. Unfortunately, I didn’t want to bring your parents and Kylie over because the situation at the White family wasn’t resolved!”

Jack paused for a short while before continuing to speak. “How about this? Tomorrow, I will ask Lana and Ethan to go back with you. You can bring all of them over in one go. You can ask if Abner and Sam are willing to come over for training. If they are willing to, bring them over. However, you need to tell them about the situation here. The location of such shadow families needs to be kept a secret and you can’t tell anybody about it! This also means that they cannot constantly leave after they arrive here.”

Selena was delighted after she heard this. “This is great. If that’s the case, I will be able to see Kylie after a day or two. Our girl must miss us too!”

Jack nodded. “Unfortunately, I can’t leave with you guys. I need to go to the branch families to choose masters from their families so that they can train here. The branch family members will be happy under these circumstances. I believe that it will also be good for the development of the main and branch families.”

“Don’t worry, everything will be fine since Lana and the others are going back with you. You can go do everything you need to get done!” Selena was excited when she thought about how she could meet her daughter soon as tightened her hug on Jack.

The next morning, Jack left with Lancelot and the other branch families’ masters. Selena, on the other hand, left with Lana and Ethan to fetch Kylie.

Early next morning, Jack arrived at the branch family nearest to the main family, the one Lancelot was in.

The other family masters left first to notify their family members about what happened these two days and the good news that Jack was going over for a visit.

“The master is back!” Several people who were guarding the entrance of a small village yelled in excitement after they saw Lancelot and their elders returning.

Soon, several hundred people came out and stood at the village entrance to welcome them. Over time, there were still many rushing over.

“Master, how is it this time? Did the people from the main family say when they will send somebody over to pick candidates? It has been several days, are they lying to us?” A middle-aged man immediately walked forward and asked when they saw those who returned.

“Yes, master. The people from the main family had always been sweet-talkers. I think that they were just delaying the time when they asked us to endure it. I think what they said about choosing masters to train at the main family are just lies.” Another young man hugged both hands in front of his chest and said lazily.

“What nonsense are you talking about?” Lancelot stared at the young man before introducing him to the crowd there. “Everybody, this is Young Master Jack and he’s the main family master inheritor. He’s here today to choose masters for the main family!”

Chapter 1188

“What? He’s the White family master inheritor? He’s the Jack you mentioned, the person who returned from the outside world?” The young man’s eyes were filled with surprise the moment he heard that. He obviously did not expect Jack to really be there.

“Everybody, come to say hello to Young Master Jack!” Lancelot’s face darkened and reminded everybody in a hurry.

“Greetings to Young Master Jack!” Everybody immediately stood straight and greeted Jack respectfully. They were still wondering who this young man that came back with their master was. Nobody knew that he was actually the young master from the main family.

“There’s no need for you to be so polite. You’ve been giving too much for the uprising of the White family. It must have been really hard for you!”

Jack bowed proactively after he walked two steps forward. “I apologize on behalf of the White family because I know that the percentage of the martial enhancement material you need to hand in has been increased. Hence, you would need to search for more material if you want to train. Everybody must be tired because of this. There must have been many who have died in the hands of monster beasts because of this. I can only apologize for this!”

An old man’s eyes turned red when he thought about his grandson who died several months ago.

However, he still walked forward and said, “Young Master Jack, there’s no need to be polite. As martial artists, we should not be afraid of death and we can only grow into real masters after experiencing the blessing of fresh blood. Dying in this process only means that we weren’t working hard enough! It might also mean that it was fated!”

Jack looked at the old man and said, “Thank you all for your understanding. However, there will not be such a casual increase in the percentage of material that you guys hand in!”

Lancelot also nodded and addressed the crowd. “I’m here with good news. The family master has announced that the percentage of the martial enhancement material we need to hand in has been changed to 50%. It’s no longer 70% or 80% like previously, it’s 50%!”

“Really? Is it happening this month? Great, this is really good!” Several young men were really excited when they heard this. This meant that they only needed to hand in half of the martial enhancement material and keep the other half. Apart from that, this was much better as they would have double the previous martial enhancement material.

The young people who never got any material previously would be able to get some training material.

“Great! This is great!” The old man also looked at his remaining grandsons and granddaughter in excitement at the brink of tears.

“That doesn’t sound right, master. If that’s the case, won’t the First Madam and Third Elder oppose it? Didn’t you say that they increased the ratio without authorization? Would they agree to it right now?” One of the branch family’s patronums asked Lancelot after he thought about it.

“Haha…everybody, there’s no need to worry about that in the future. That guy, Wade White, colluded with the First Madam and many of the Lagorio family elders and patronums to plan a rebellion. They wanted to seize the position of the family master!”

Chapter 1189

“Wade suddenly made a breakthrough and reached the peak of the true god status. If Young Master Jack had been any less skilled in medicine and failed to help his father recover on time, that man would have succeeded. But the master has killed them, and the First Madam now has no more power—she’s been chased out of the White family! That’s why we don’t have to worry about them anymore!”

Lancelot laughed as he explained the situation to everyone.

Before, he never knew how to respond to the branch family's queries. He knew that everyone harbored deep grudges.

Now though, they managed to tide through their difficulties.

"That's fantastic. Wade should have died long ago!"

"That's right. It's a shame that we couldn't see him get killed by the master in person!"

"It's truly fantastic. This means that the Master's body should have recovered just fine. Now the White family will flourish under his leadership!"

"So the master had been poisoned. Thank goodness the young master was skilled enough to cure him. Otherwise, we would have eternal suffering under the leadership of Wade, that b*stard!"

The members of the branch family were all extremely excited and launched into a fervent discussion.

Jack's emotions were a tangle as he watched the branch family members chatting away excitedly. Taking 50 percent of martial resources was probably a normal occurrence for other families. As for the branch families of the White family, being able to return to their initial tithing rate was big news.

He could only imagine how much they had suffered all these years.

After everybody had quietened down, Jack spoke up, smiling, "Right. From now on, the members of the main family will search for martial resources as well. We cannot continue to remain comfortable on our pedestal; we must go out and train as well. I believe that only trials from the real world will train true warriors. Also, the branch families should pick out a new master soon!"

"Eh? Why should we choose a new master?"

A girl around seventeen or eighteen years old pursed her lips, a purple dress draped from her shoulders. "Young Master Jack, I cannot agree to this," she said, displeased. "For all these years, my father slaved away for our branch family because we got to keep so few of our martial resources. So to ensure that we get more martial resources, my father would always bring a few elders to head out and find more!"

The girl grew more and more agitated as she spoke, "My father suffered so much for the sake of all of us. Among the branch families, our branch family is stronger, and our strength is directly correlated to my father's efforts. Besides, he has always said good things on behalf of the main family, assuring us that everything will be better. He even told us that the master would remember our sacrifice!"

Jack and Lancelot exchanged a glance. They could not smother the grins growing on their faces.

Anger boiled in the girl's veins when she saw that Jack was smiling. "You're still grinning? My father sacrificed so much for everyone, for the White family. Now, not only are you refusing to reward him, you're telling us to elect a new house head at this crucial moment. I will never agree for my father to step down!"

An old man from another branch family also stood up. "She's right. Young Master Jack, how could you do this? Master Lancelot is a good master, and we all like him. Now we'll get more martial resources since we're tithing less. We finally got our deserving share. Why are you doing this?"

"We do not agree!"

Many people cried out at the same time.

Chapter 1190

"Hmph. I don't care if you're the young master of the White family. This decision is totally unfair to my father. It's just so heart-wrenching!"

The girl harrumphed coldly and folded her arms across her chest. She pursed her lips, huffing but she looked cute at a glance.

“That’s right. How could we do that?”

Many people felt displeased for Lancelot’s sake.

After all, their master would be able to obtain a little more martial resources, and he would finally get to enjoy his days comfortably. Yet something like this had to happen. Naturally, the branch family members were furious.

“What are you talking about, Sally? Apologize to Young Master Jack now! Have you forgotten all of my teachings?”

Lancelot furrowed his brows and put on a stern aura, snapping at the girl before him.

“Dad!”

Sally felt frustrated and proceeded to stamp her foot. “I didn’t say anything wrong. Why should I apologize to him?” she retorted. “Besides, I wasn’t pinning everything on him. I was expressing my displeasure at the decision Master White made. You can’t just restrict my freedom of speech!”

Another youth also spoke up, “That’s right. He’d be no different than the Third Elder if he doesn’t allow us to speak freely!”

A middle-aged man to the side jumped in shock. “Luke, you apologize to Young Master Jack too!” he barked at his son. “The White family’s decision already benefits the branch families. We should be grateful, got it? Besides, surely Master has something else in mind with this decision!”

Although the middle-aged man felt disgruntled regarding the decision about Lancelot, he was well aware of the difference in status between the main family and the branch families. They could not afford to offend the main family. If they did, the branch families would suffer serious consequences.

“I–I’m sorry!”

Although the young man was still displeased, he gritted his teeth and ducked his head.

No one expected that Jack would step forward at this moment. “All of you were right. A house head like Lancelot indeed has contributed great things for the White family,” he said to the crowd, smiling faintly. “How could a talent like him be unimportant to us? We would be suffering great losses if not for him.”

Sally further pouted when she heard this. “I’m glad that you realize that. Then you can’t make us elect a new house head!”

Rather than being angry at the girl's temper, Jack seemed delighted instead. "I can't do that," he replied. "Our decision is final. Even your father agreed!"

"Dad, what's wrong with you? How could you agree to that?"

Sally was speechless for a moment. She could not comprehend what he was thinking. He had said that he would work hard for the branch family himself. He practically treated the other members like his own immediate family. How could he just give up his position?

"Why would I disagree?"

Lancelot finally grinned and said, "Master White praised my performance, and I've already achieved the intermediate stage of the true god status. He asked me to become an elder in the main family. So since I'm leaving for the main family, there will no longer be a house head for the branch families. That's why we must elect another one!"

"Ah. You–you're going to become an elder in the main family?"

Sally's eyes widened; they looked as though they were going to pop out of their sockets. It turned out that her father was not being fired. He was going to the main family. He would be in a much higher position there, compared to being the house head for the branch families.

Never mind an elder—the master of the branch families had to treat helmsmen or Patronums with the utmost respect when they came to visit.

“That’s right. So we have to choose another house head. Master White said that so long as someone from the branch families trains till they reach the intermediate stage of the true god status, they would have an opportunity to become an elder in the main family. There will be a chance every few years, all to strengthen the White family!”

Lancelot nodded his head as he spoke.

“That’s great. This arrangement is absolutely fantastic. It’s so much better than before!”

Chapter 1191

A man at the beginning stage of the true god status immediately cried out excitedly after he heard that.

“Heh. You’re a pretty strong warrior, Wally. If no one has any objections, I’ll nominate you as the next house head!”

Lancelot chuckled as he spoke to the middle-aged man.

“I’ve been an elder in the branch families for such a long time. I’m not prepared to suddenly become the house head!”

The middle-aged man flashed an awkward smile.

“It has to be you. You’re the strongest after our master!”

An elder said, chuckling.

“That’s right. It’s decided then. It’ll be him!”

Someone else nodded his head in satisfaction.

“Then I guess we’ve all agreed upon this decision. We saved the trouble of calling for votes!”

Lancelot smiled.

Sally's gaze sidled toward Jack. "Young Master Jack, I sincerely apologize for my behavior just now," she said apologetically. "I didn't know what was going on. I misunderstood your intentions the moment I heard that we were reelecting our house head. Please forgive me!"

"Heh. Don't worry. I won't hold a grudge over something like this. I'm not that petty. Besides, you all were unaware of the situation. Your anger just now proved that Lancelot was truly a good master who served you well, no?"

Jack answered, giving a wan smile.

"Of course. He's my father."

Sally lifted her chin, speaking with a proud lilt to her tone.

Yet Jack just smiled as he spoke to Lancelot, "Oh, right. I discussed this with my father last night—we considered the possibility that you wouldn't be able to hone yourself properly once you get into the White family. So we agreed that an elder who is training at the main family can bring along their wife, son, or daughter along, and they'll get a place to themselves."

"What! Are you serious? My mother and I can go too?"

Sally was so excited that she was practically bouncing once she heard that.

Jack bobbed his head. “But we don’t have that many accommodations in place. So the Patronums don’t get this privilege. Only the elders do.”

“Young Master Jack, I–I don’t know how to thank you!”

Lancelot stared at Jack. He was so excited that he did not know what to say. Although chi practitioners had to be in constant control of their emotions, always able to take an objective view toward things, they were still human—it would be difficult for them to leave their family behind.

It would be a lot better if he could bring his wife and daughter along.

He knew that it was Jack who had helped to secure these benefits for him.

“Young Master Jack, you’re truly a considerate man. I’ve decided that I’m yours from now on!”

Sally was elated. She spoke as she pounded her chest.

Chapter 1192

“You’ll be his?”

A youth’s expression turned knotty when he heard that. The way she worded it was ripe for misunderstandings.

Sally was slightly taken aback. A flush of color stained her cheeks as she rolled her eyes at the youth. “What are you talking about?” she snapped. “I meant that I’ll serve him from now on. Where he goes, I’ll follow!”

“Hah. You never knew how to suck up to others, but today you learned how to do so. What a sight!”

An old man burst into laughter.

“Who’s sucking up to who? I’m telling the truth. Isn’t it a good thing that Young Master Jack helped us so much?”

Sally shot a vicious glare at the old man. “Who knows when’s the next time we’ll get a chance like this?” she said.

“All right, all right. Young Master Jack has had a long day, and it’s getting late. We’ll go back to rest first before celebrating properly over dinner!”

Lancelot said, chuckling.

“All right. Heh. Today is truly a good day. I haven’t heard news like this in a long time. We must celebrate till morning breaks!”

Sally spoke happily, “This way, Young Master Jack. I’ll arrange accommodation for you in our house.”

“All right. We’ll have a good celebration tonight. You young ones should rest properly though. I’ll be choosing the talented ones among you. Since your branch family has more members, I’ll be selecting three in total. I’ll only be selecting two from the smaller branch families!”

Jack nodded his head and announced to everyone.

“That sounds great. Do we get to have three candidates? So that means I have a chance too!”

A young man grinned excitedly after he heard that.

“That’s right. I thought that only one would be selected. If there are three slots, we have a chance of being chosen!”

A master from another branch family also broke out into a grin after he thought about it.

“I’m a master too. I’ll be a package along with my father once he goes to the main family. This way, I won’t have to compete with the others, right?”

Sally asked as she walked.

“Of course. This way, you get to nominate someone else!”

Jack gave a smile. “It’s all up to you. You can hold a martial arts competition to choose your champions. But you can also just discuss to make the selection if you prefer it that way!”

An elder bobbed his head. “Some of the branch families have two clear masters, and if the difference between them is too great, there’s no need to hold a competition. We can just nominate them both!”

After he said that, he turned his attention toward Sally. “For example, Sally here is our top talent. She’ll definitely emerge as the champion if we were to hold a competition,” he said. “So the only people we’ll really be looking out for are the first and second runner-up. Fortunately, her father is going to become an elder in the main family, so we get to nominate another candidate!”

Many others also nodded their heads after hearing that. This would greatly aid the development of the branch families, as well as the youths.

After all, everyone hoped that more fighters of the true god status would emerge from the branch families. Only fighters like them were considered to be the cream of the crop.

After the accommodation was arranged, Jack rested for a bit. When night fell, everyone set up two bonfires in an open space and began roasting skewers made from monster meat.

“What a delicious fragrance!”

Chapter 1193

Jack was stretching himself when he caught a whiff of the barbecue. He walked out of the house.

“Heh. We were afraid that you were training or sleeping, so we didn’t dare to disturb you. The food’s almost ready. We were about to call you!”

Sally walked over happily when she caught sight of Jack. She thrust a plate toward him, a huge slab of meat sitting on it. “I’m not particularly good at anything, but I’ve got mad skills with barbecue. I made this myself. Give it a try!”

“All right. I’ll see just how good you are!”

Jack took a bite out of the meat. His eyes brightened immediately. “This tastes amazing!”

“Hah. Young Master Jack. There’s alcohol here!”

At this moment, Lancelot walked over as well, a smile plastered on his face. He gave the huge bottle of alcohol to Jack.

“Thank you!”

Jack inhaled the heady scent of the alcohol before taking a huge gulp.

It was evident that it was a joyous night, especially for the members of the branch families. All of them had smiles ready at their lips.

The next morning, the branch families got five or six of their masters to briefly spar against each other before choosing three out of them.

They would leave for the main family along with Lancelot and his family in two weeks. Meanwhile, Jack went to another branch family.

Soon enough, he arrived at the entrance of another branch family.

“You brats! You’ll meet your comeuppance one day!”

A woman’s voice rang out from deep within a forest next to Jack. As she must be some considerable distance away, it was practically inaudible if one did not pay attention.

If not for Jack’s sharpened senses, even he would have difficulty catching the voice.

His brows furrowed. He rushed toward the depths of the forest.

There, a middle-aged woman and a younger woman were surrounded by a few men.

The former was breathing heavily, and there were bloodstains at the corner of her mouth. It was obvious that she was seriously injured.

Yet she planted herself between the young woman and the men unwaveringly, glaring at the group before her.

“Heh. You run pretty fast. It wasn’t easy for us to catch up to you here!”

A bald man chuckled. “But we still managed to catch you even though you were about to arrive at your place,” he said. “You must feel hopeless now.”

“You’d better let us go! My father will get people to kill you if he knows about this!”

The young woman looked not much older than Sally, probably around seventeen or eighteen. She snarled at the seven or eight men in front of her, clenching her teeth.

“Heh. I know. Your father is an elder, right?”

The bald man chuckled. “And your mother is the elder’s wife. You two have quite prominent positions!” he said.

Meanwhile, lust burned in another man’s eyes, a small mustache above his upper lip. He gulped. “Patronum, this pair mother-daughter is pretty good-looking. They’re a good catch.”

Chapter 1194

The bald man was tall and sturdy. He lifted one of his eyebrows after listening to Mr. Moustache. “Hehe, which one do I like? Let’s get ‘em all and bring ‘em down the mountain!”

Mr. Moustache was displeased with his response. “Patronum Lanich, how can you do this? Well. What I meant is you can take the young one!”

The bald man smiled wistfully, “Oh, I see. So you like the older one? This woman, although she is a middle-aged lady, she maintained her body well! She could be considered to be around thirty years old; only the word ‘charming’ can be used to describe her overall aura. Moreover, she’s the wife of an elder, I naturally like the challenge!”

The middle-aged woman’s brows snapped together. With her teeth gritted, she bellowed, “Fine! I’ll go with you, but let my daughter go!”

“Mama, what are you talking about? We’ll get away from them!”

As soon as her daughter heard that, her face sank and turned unsightly. She held her mother’s hand and opposed her.

“Silly, we’re not their opponents, their combat prowess is stronger than ours. Besides, they have the numbers. Let’s just hope that one of us could survive!”

The middle-aged woman was feeling helpless in fact. Her heart knew very well that if the other party defiled them, they would most likely murder them as well.

Therefore, it would be better to let her daughter survive, and, if she managed to return alive, she might be able to inform her father, so that he could bring some people and come back to avenge her.

“Hahaha! Do you think I’m that dumb?”

The bald man, on the other hand, laughed out loud. “I won’t let any of you leave at all. If I do that, your man will certainly bring a bunch of people and avenge you, even if you know your man will not be our boss’s opponent. By that time, your man will hold a grudge against me and that’d be so annoying!”

After the last syllabus of his word dropped, the bald man gestured and commanded, “Take them down but leave them alive. Then take them far away from here, this place is too near to their village, and from time to time, there’ll be people from the White family passing by here. It’d be troublesome if they found out!”

“Mama, let’s fight them! If we can’t defeat them, then we can end ourselves here. We can’t let them violate us!”

The teenage girl looked at her mother with her teeth gritted and her voice determined.

“Alright!”

The middle-aged woman nodded, but she thought otherwise in her heart; she knew clearly that the two of them were of no power to resist and fight the other party at all.

“Ah!”

However, she still balled her fist and charged directly toward the other party. Her fist was covered with a faint sheen of blue chi energy, it looked like she could be a great fighter of the early stage of the demi-god level.

“Haha! Still wanna fight?”

The bald man guffawed, and with a lighting speed, he dodged the middle-aged woman’s attack easily. Not only that, he countered with a slash on the other party’s back.

Once again, the woman spewed a mouth of blood and fell to the ground. The injury was even more grievous than before.

It was obvious that the middle-aged woman was injured severely in the last round, that her speed in this round was significantly slower. The bald man could easily dodge her attack.

“Mama!”

As the scene of a fallen body on the ground appeared, the young girl shouted and rushed toward the enemy, hoping to blast the bald man.

“Bwahaha! You tryna fight me? You’re not even in the demi-god realm, how on earth you think you could defeat me?”

The bald man sneered at the young lady and then swung out his fist. His fist directly blasted on the young girl's fist and blew her a few meters away.

The young girl laid injured on the ground. A mouthful of blood gushed out from her mouth.

“Hehe! Now, now. You can’t possibly fight anymore, right?”

Mr. Moustache chortled and paced over to the middle-aged woman. The corners of his mouth curled upward, smiling sinisterly.

Chapter 1195

Nonetheless, at this moment, a terrifying air blade cut through the air and blasted on Mr. Moustache’s back. The air blade split him into two, his body falling straight to the ground.

“What the f*ck? Who the h*ll did that?”

The bald man and the others were shocked by the sudden attack, and their eyes were frantically looking around to spot the attacker. It was Jack. He stood under a tree not far away, and slowly he strode toward the crowd with an elegant-black fine sword in his grip.

“You’re so right! It’s indeed easy to run into a White here!”

Jack gave a faint smile. He listened to the whole exchange just now and deduced that this group of people were not even from the White family. Jack did not know where these guys were from, but how dare they bully the two who were from the White family branch.

“You’re from the White family?”

The bald man’s brows knitted; his eyes were full of solemness.

Another underling, on the other hand, uttered, “Patronum Lanich, this brat is quite young, I bet he’s not that strong. We don’t have to be afraid of him! If it weren’t for his sneaky attack just now, Mr. Moustache wouldn’t have died!”

Patronum Lanich bobbed his head, agreeing to the underling’s statement. “Indeed. He’s alone; there’s nothing to be afraid of! Especially since he’s young, his combat prowess and martial status shouldn’t be strong!”

“Mama, he…he’s from the White family?”

The young girl, who laid injured on the ground, inquired, face full of confusion. She used up all her strength to get herself up and sat on the ground. She did not remember there was this person in the White family.

“I’ve never seen him either!”

The middle-aged woman was dumbfounded at the situation as well. She was confused, confused over why this man helped them; confused that this man said that he was from the White family?

Nonetheless, the other party had the number, and this man was on his own. Was he even a rival to the other party?

“Hey, little punk, are you sure you’re from the White family? Don’t you dare lie to me!”

The bald man—who happened to overhear the conversation between the mother and the daughter—could not help but ask with a furrowed forehead.

“Of course, I’m from the White family. How dare you attack our members! You certainly have a death wish!”

Jack gripped the black sword tightly in his hand and swung his arm slightly in the direction of the bald man.

This time, what had flown out from the black sword was not a simple wind blade, but it was wrapped with a layer of terrifying and powerful chi energy. The blast was fast and furious; its strength and power were ten times stronger than the previous attack.

“Humph! Don’t you dare to think that I’m afraid of you!”

The bald man snorted coldly and then he flipped his palm, a sharp sword appeared in his grip. He was so ready to launch an attack.

However, before he moved an inch of his arm, he sensed something strange in Jack's wind-blade attack. "No way, there's a sense of chi energy inside the attack! That's an attack of true god level!"

"What? No way!"

A long arc-shaped wind blade embedded with chi energy was flying toward them. The men who had just taken out their weapons, after hearing the bald man's words almost peed their pants. If the young man before them were truly at the true god level, they would be like ants in front of him—and would be crushed easily.

"We're so done for!"

Several of them were so frightened that they forgot to weaken the attack with any technique. The wind blade that Jack shot out had cut through their waist, chopping them into half. With merely one attack, all seven men were killed.

“True god level!”

The mother and the daughter exchanged looks among themselves; both of their pupils demonstrated the color of disbelief. They could not believe that this young man was actually at the true god level.

Nonetheless, they knew that in the White branch family, only the head family possessed the power of a true god level; no one else had reached that level.

Chapter 1196

Jack gazed over the two; he put on a faint yet gentle smile on his face, and slowly paced toward the mother and the daughter.

When the two saw Jack was walking toward them, their hearts leaped into their throat.

“What—what are you doing?”

The middle-aged woman clenched her teeth, her body instinctively moved closer to her daughter, trying to protect her from Jack.

“You—you are not from the White family! Who are you? What do you want from us?” The young woman asked in a trembling voice. “As long as you let my Mama go, I’m willing to…” She added.

The young woman tightened her jaw muscles and proposed.

Jack was rendered speechless. He had already announced to the group that he was from the White family, how on earth did these two still think that he was one of those bad guys?

“Don’t worry. I’m not a bad guy!”

Jack laughed bitterly, trying to explain himself.

“Brat, what have you done to both ladies there?”

The thing that was out of Jack’s expectation was that the battling sound had attracted three men from the village who were strolling nearby.

When the three heard the loud swooshes and whooshes, they rushed toward the sound. Right after they arrived at the scene, they saw Jack walking toward the two women on the ground. One of the three—a middle-aged man—immediately shouted at Jack angrily.

“It’s Moon and Aunt Tulipa!”

The young man of the three noticed that Jack was still holding a sword in his hand, he then quickly flipped his palm to take out his sword. He pointed it at Jack and hissed, “Brat, we’re from the White

family! How dare you strike at them, are you digging your own grave?”

Jack was tongue-tied inwardly; he did not know whether to laugh or to cry at this moment. “You’ve misunderstood me. I saved them. If it weren’t for me, they would have been taken away by these guys on the ground by now!” Jack explained, smiling bitterly.

“Is that true?”

The young man turned to Moon and Tulipa on the ground, asked in a dubious tone.

“Brother Troy, it was indeed this young man who killed them and saved us just now. But, this man said he was from our White family, but—but he possessed the strength of true god level. How could he be from the White family?”

After Moon White thought through the whole situation, she then looked at Jack again and uttered with a skeptical voice, “I’m—I’m not sure what exactly is his purpose here…”

The two other men, on the other hand, carefully approached the duo and helped them up.

“Oh, I’m truly from the White family! Your family head should be able to recognize me once he sees me!”

Jack chuckled and explained.

“Young Master Jack!”

At this time, coincidentally, several more people came into the scene, and one of them—a big guy—was excited after seeing Jack.

The big man immediately ran over and shook Jack’s hand. “Hey, Young Master Jack, I thought you’d only come tomorrow and didn’t expect that you’d arrive here today! You’re fast!”

“Haha! Master Mason, fortunately, I arrived here earlier than expected, and just happened to run into these bastards who tried to kidnap these two and defile them. They’d have been in trouble if I only came tomorrow!”

Jack chortled aloud and stretched out his hand to pat Mason’s shoulder.

“Young Master Jack? He’s the so-called Young-Master of the main White family?”

Chapter 1197

Only then did the crowd react. Puzzlement, shock, and surprise were written on their faces. It seemed that this man was truly a White.

“Ah, he’s the heir of the family head?”

Moon gasped as she said, her eyes were widened as large as saucers and her lips parted widely. After a few seconds, when realization dawned upon her, she kneeled down before Jack and said, “Thank you for saving our lives, Young Master Jack! If it weren’t for you, my Mama and I would be…”

“Yes! Thank you so much, Young Master Jack!”

The middle-aged woman plopped onto the ground on her knees. Her eyes swam with tears and her voice trembled. “We’ve not met the Young Master from the main White family, so we thought that you’re not from the White family. We’ve misconceived your identity, Sir! Please forgive us!”

“Please get up. How can I blame you when I know it’s all a misunderstanding? Surely I’ll forgive you!”

Jack approached the duo, flipped his palm, and two healing pills appeared in his hand. He handed the pills to the duo and said, “Both of you, take one of these each. Hurry up and swallow it. It’s for your injuries.”

“This…I…how can we accept such a treasure from you, Young Master Jack!”

Moon lowered her head, somewhat embarrassed at her behavior toward Jack a moment ago. She thought that Jack was no different from the group earlier, that he was here to take advantage of them. What made her more embarrassed was that Jack did not only forgive them but also offered them healing pills for their injuries.

“She’s right, Young Master Jack. We don’t deserve it. You saved our lives; we don’t even know how to repay you for your great kindness!”

The middle-aged woman panicked and quickly rejected Jack's kindness toward them. She was somewhat flattered at his kind gesture.

Jack was slightly puzzled at their behaviors. In the past, when the Third Elder and his men came over to collect martial resources and offerings from the branch families, they must have shown themselves in a high and almighty position. Even worse, they could bully these people from the branch families.

Due to that, the people of the branch families, each of them was obsequious when they met the people of the main family.

Moreover, Jack's status and position were much higher and nobler than the Third Elder and his men—who would become the next family head. If such a person offered them healing pills, it would naturally make them feel frightened and insecure.

"Heh, just take it. We all belong to the White family, and you've made great contributions to the expansion and rise of the White family in the past. These healing pills are nothing compared to your contribution all these while!"

Jack uttered with a gentle and radiant smile surfaced on his face.

"Take the pills! Young Master Jack is an amiable person; he always puts us first before anything else!"

Mason chuckled and gestured to Moon and Tulipa to take the healing pills.

“Thank you very much, Young Master Jack!”

The duo took the pills and swallowed them.

Jack looked at the corpses on the ground. “Who are these people? They seem to know a lot about White branch families, hmmm.” Jack wondered.

“Damn, these b*stard again!”

Mason took a look at the bodies on the ground and huffed angrily. “They’re the mounted brigands who stay on the opposite side of that big mountain. They rarely go looking for spirited grass or resources or anything, instead, they always come down here and rob us of spirited resources! Their leader is a strong martial fighter, who possessed martial status of the early stage of true god level. That’s why they dare to act so boldly and recklessly!”

One old man from the group stepped forward and said, “Fortunately, there’re not many of them, only three to four hundred of men, whereas our branch family has nearly a thousand men. That’s why they don’t dare to fight with us. All this while, as long as they don’t cross the limits, we won’t do anything to them, after all, their leader is at the true god level and quite a number of their men possessed strong martial prowess. We can’t afford the loss, we can’t fight them.”

“So, if things aren’t too serious, you guys would just let them be?”

Jack’s brows snapped together at this new piece of information.

“Yes, Sir. People of the main family rarely come to our place and we seldom go over too. So, we don’t have the chance to report this matter to the main family.” Mason responded with a bitter smile. “Before that, when the Third Elder came here, we’ve informed him about this issue. With his martial prowess, he could definitely eradicate these people and bring back peace to our branch family.” Mason added, smiling dryly.

“Unfortunately, the Third Elder always has a reason not to eradicate them for us. Some reasons and excuses like he’s busy recently or he will deal with them later, blah, blah, blah.” Mason continued with a slight hint of anger on his face.

Chapter 1198

Not long after, Moon’s expression looked better than before. The healing pills given by Jack had some great and quick effect upon Moon.

Moon pressed her lips together and formed a smile. “Those mounted brigands knew that we’re from the White family, so all this while, they dare not go too far too, well, at least they won’t kill our people. But today, looking at the situation, Patronum Lanich seemed like he wanted to kill me and my mother!”

Jack nodded and said, “You’re right. Since they were going after your beauty, after they’ve violated you, they’d certainly kill you and destroy your bodies. By that time, our people will not have a clue if you’re still alive or even we knew, we wouldn’t know how you died, and the other party naturally wouldn’t admit the deed!”

Jack’s fist clenched tightly as he thought of the highly likely outcome of the episode. “Looks like it’s time to exterminate these b*stards!” Jack condemned.

“But, Young Master Jack, you’re only at the early stage of the true god realm, right? I’m also at the early stage of the true god realm. Even if we join forces together, I’m afraid that our loss would still be great. I don’t have much confidence on this matter.”

Mason furrowed as he spoke to Jack in a solemn tone.

Nonetheless, Jack was completely unconcerned. “Don’t worry, I can assure you that the loss won’t be huge. They have only one fighter with the power of the early stage of true god level—the leader, and I’ll deal with him. As for the others, I’ll leave them to you guys, it should be fine, right?” Jack smiled.

“Of course! If I can free up my hands from the leader, I can easily end their two fighters, who are at the peak stage of the demi-god realm. Then, we have a few strong elders, coupled with our numbers, it’d be so much easier to exterminate those b*stard! It will naturally become a facile thing!”

At this time, an old man interrupted the conversation. “Young Master Jack, what if the leader of the mounted brigands flees away before our attack? Once he’s escaped, I’m afraid that it’d be so much difficult to exterminate the group.” The old man popped out a question after giving some thoughts to the matter.

“Don’t worry. There’s nowhere for him to run!”

Jack gave a gentle smile, and his tone was filled with confidence.

“Young Master Jack, when are we going to exterminate them then?”

Mason pondered for a while and asked.

Jack paused for a second and said, “We’ll go back and prepare our people now. Whoever with fighting prowess below grandmaster level shall stay back because the possibility of them dying is high. We have the numbers; we’ll bring all the grandmasters and go to kill those b*stard right now. It’s best to give them a sudden attack!”

“Perfect! Motherf*cker, they’ve been crossing boundaries and I’ve long wanted to teach them a lesson.”

Mason slapped his thigh and roared.

Soon, the group returned to the village.

When Moon’s father found out about what happened to his wife and daughter, he was beyond furious. At the same time, he knelt before Jack to thank him.

Back at the village, Mason quickly gathered all the men with fighting prowess of first-grade grandmaster level and above. All these people added up to more than three hundred people.

“Hehe, Young Master Jack, do you want to say a few words to them?”

After gathering all the eligible men, Mason said to Jack with a radiant smile plastered on his face.

Jack let out a dry laugh and turned to the crowd. “Gentlemen, those mounted brigands have been bullying our White family members for too long, and I believe that none of you are happy about it. Today is the day! Let us kill to our heart’s content and slaughter each of them! After today, everyone can live a peaceful life! I don’t have more to say, just remember not to let them get away. Remember, don’t spare any life!”

“Kill them all!”

The crowd chanted these words aloud repeatedly in unison.

Chapter 1199

“Alright! Let’s go!”

Jack waved his hand, and the crowd set off in an organized manner.

After a while, they arrived at the bottom of a huge mountain on the opposite side of their village.

“Young Master Jack, those mounted brigands will occasionally go look for martial resources, but most of the time they rely on robbing us. Sometimes, they straight up waited for us at the entrance of the forest where we scavenge for the resources; some people from other families who don’t know about them will be robbed by them too. But, under normal circumstances, they will only rob but dare not offend the people of other families. So, most of them can only endure their bullies!”

On the way to the peak of the huge mountain, Mason pondered deep on certain issues, and then added, “So I think these mounted brigands have kept a lot of resources in their place. If we kill them all, maybe we could also get all those resources!”

“Young Master Jack, when we successfully raided the brigands and end them, do you think it’s possible to consider it as one of our missions in finding resources? And that if we could share half of the resources with the main family?” Another elder chimed in, with a somewhat unsettled tone.

This elder was smart and observant. He could see that Master Mason’s intention of mentioning these resources in front of Jack deliberately; Master Mason obviously had an idea in mind about these resources, after all, that was a lot of resources!

However, Jack was the heir of the family head of the main family, and Master Mason was too embarrassed to ask for the resources directly. So, as an elder, he saw the hint and took initiative to propose.

“First Elder, what nonsense? This is not a finding resources mission, but it’ll be a task of Young Master Jack leading us to exterminate the enemy and raid their resources. No matter what, it will be Young Master Jack who helps us to win! Without him, we simply can’t do anything! We wouldn’t dare to launch the attack! So naturally, these resources should all belong to Young Master Jack!”

Mason shot the First Elder with a fierce glare and reprimanded him strictly.

Jack knew that this exchange before him was a show; the two were giving a two-man comic show—collaborating and echoing with each other.

“This gang of mounted brigands has been bullying all of you, and you’ve been suffering all this while.” Jack smiled gently at Mason. “So, this time, I’ll first take a look at the loot to see if there are any suitable materials for making pills. If there is, I’ll pick a few and the rest of it belongs to you. You’ll take it and distribute it among all of you. It’ll belong to you and there’s no need to submit it to the main family as an offering!”

Mason’s eyes immediately lit up as he heard. “Really? Young Master Jack, you treat us too well! If I were a woman, I’d want to marry a man like you!”

Jack looked at the tall and sturdy man in front of him and his face immediately turned unsightly. “Don’t, please don’t! This figure of yours, if you were really a woman, it’d be scary!”

“Hahaha!”

The crowd burst out in laughter at the exchange.

Soon enough, the group arrived at a square halfway up the mountain.

“Who are you, people?”

A man looked at the group of people and approached them with big steps. “This is a place that you should…”

The sentence stopped halfway. A fine wind blade slashed open the man within a second. Jack killed the man; he and the sword were the culprits.

Another sword aura was shot out, and a house in front of Jack was split in half. The strength and power of that sweep of sword aura were terrifying as though the grim reaper was there.

Within a minute, many people rushed out from different directions and gathered at the square.

Chapter 1200

Inside an adobe, a middle-aged man was drooling over a young woman who was tied up on the bed and injured. His throat was tightened, at the same time, moved vigorously to swallow the saliva.

“You’re a stunning young woman, aren’t you?”

The middle-aged man rubbed his hands as he approached the bed with an evil grin on his face. “My little beauty, I’m the Chief of the Windfall Pavilion! If you be my woman, do as you’re told and serve me well, you’ll become the wife of the Chief of Windfall Pavilion!”

The young woman stared at the other party with malice and hatred. “What chief and what pavilion? You guys are merely a group of mounted brigands who are robbers!” She hissed in an exasperated voice. “You’re becoming bolder right now! You used to only rob things, but right now, you guys actually dare to kidnap people! People like you who give themselves the name and the power, are truly shameless! Windfall Pavilion? Are you joking? Do you guys even deserve a name like that?”

The Chief could not help but laugh in return, “Hehehe! Don’t judge the book by its cover! Although we look big and thick, I’m a romantic and tender gentleman.”

He then extended his hand and caressed the young woman's cheek softly. "Don't worry, little beauty. If you take the initiative and follow me, I can promise that you won't have to worry about anything at all in the future. But, well, if you don't, I'll still make you my woman, just that your remaining days won't be good."

The young pretty woman spat on the Chief's face. "Do you f*cking know who I am? I'm the third daughter of the Cabello family! Release me right now! Otherwise, you'll be dead meat when my father finds out. You'll have a miserable death!"

The middle-aged man showed a puzzled look upon hearing this. He was somewhat surprised.

Looking at the puzzlement and the speechlessness of the other party, the young woman thought that he was afraid of her family. "Now what? Do you finally know what fear is? Let me go right now! Otherwise, my father will raze your place to nothing!"

"Let you go?"

To her surprise, the middle-aged man laughed and the puzzlement that was once plastered on his face had gone. “Haha, little girl, do you think I’m that dumb? The Cabello family is one of the Eight Shadow Families! If I let you return to your home, will your father let me go?”

The man paused for a moment and then continued, “On the contrary, if I keep you here, nobody knows! No one saw us capturing you. So, it means that even if the Cabello family wants to search for you, they won’t succeed. Besides, we’re hiding in this remote mountain and if I remember correctly, the Cabello family is located on an island surrounded by sea, right? You guys don’t know anything about the mainland! Therefore, finding you is like finding a needle in the haystack!”

“I…”

Third Young Mistress Cabello was tongue-tied. She could not refute the other party’s argument.

“So, you’ll stay here and serve me. And if you try to escape and, unluckily, get caught by my men, then I could only kill you!”

The Chief of Windfall Pavilion chortled and added, “Do you know why I decided to capture you this time after so many years of robbing but not capturing people? That’s because you, this little ninny is so stunning and beautiful! You emit a fresh, unadulterated, and unstained aura, and this figure of you makes me thirsty!”

“You—you let me go! I swear, as long as you let me go, I definitely won’t tell my father about it! In that case, he won’t find trouble with you either!”

Third Young Mistress Cabello pleaded with the other party.

“Hahaha! Little girl, I told you, I’m not a fool. Do you think the Chief of Windfall Pavilion will be persuaded by a little girl like you?”

The middle-aged man laughed, and in the next second, he pounced on her. “My little beauty, here I come!”

However, a loud thud rang out at this time. The house next door was split in half.

“What’s the f*ck is going on?”

The middle-aged man immediately shot up from the bed and looked at the woman on the bed. “My little beauty, wait for me here. I’ll be right back soon!” He said in a reluctant tone.

The Chief of Windfall Pavilion opened the door of the adobe and rushed out of it at a lightning speed.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1201-1205

Chapter 1201

"Master Mason, what do you mean by bringing all these people?"

When the Chief of Windfall Pavilion arrived at the square, his face immediately sank to the deepest bottom of the abyss.

He did not expect the head of the White branch family-Mason White-to bring over elders and experts of grandmaster level.

He knew by heart that the people in the White branch family had not dared to fight against them all this while. Unless the White had a certain degree of confidence and certainty that they would win the fight. Moreover, he knew extremely well that the main White family had never seemed to care about this matter at all, hence dared not act recklessly and launch attacks at them.

Besides, what frightened the other party the most was once they fought against the Windfall Pavilion; their loss would be so great that it would affect the whole White branch family.

It was not worth it at all.

The only thing that the Chief of Windfall Pavilion did not foresee was that Mason had brought someone with him today.

Mason snorted frostily. He clapped his hands as a signal.

Without warning, several men of the White branch family stepping out from the crowd and threw the heads of Patronum Lanich and the gang onto the ground.

“You…”

The Chief of Windfall Pavilion’s face immediately went white as though all color drained out of his face. “Master Mason, what do you mean by this? How could you simply kill our men? And I don’t remember any of us have robbed you recently!” The Chief hissed angrily.

“Master Mason, don’t think that we’d be afraid of you! We drink blood like the vampires; we’re not ordinary men and certainly not afraid of shedding blood! And our overall combat prowess is no worse than yours!”

Several elders of the Windfall Pavilion huffed and puffed.

“Oh, let me tell you. Today at the bottom of the mountain, near our village, your people robbed our elder’s wife and daughter and even tried to force them both to…”

Mason sneered with an angry smile hanging on his face. “You people are getting bolder and bolder; you’ve crossed the impassable line! Today is your last day on the earth!”

“You’re gonna exterminate us? Heh! Funny! It’s easier to brag, isn’t it?”

The Chief of Windfall Pavilion laughed sarcastically at Mason’s statement. He then balled his fists, and a layer of chi energy enclosed his fists, vibrating vigorously. He swung his fist and blasted toward Mason.

Nevertheless, at this time, Jack moved like a thunderbolt and stood in front of Mason. He blasted his fist against the Chiefs.

Boom!

A loud thud rang. The seemingly simple punch made a terrifying collision, and the next scene was the Chief of Windfall Pavilion flying several meters backward.

“Pfft!”

It was thirty meters worth of strength. The Chief of Windfall Pavilion dropped onto the ground, his throat twitched, and a mouthful of warm red liquid spurted out of his mouth-blood.

“You…who the h*ll are you? You have the strength of a true god level, how is that possible? Such combat strength…you’re already at the middle stage of the true god realm, am I right?”

After testing out Jack’s true strength, terror thundered down upon the Chief. No wonder… No wonder Mason and the others would dare to come up the mountain and announce the extermination of the Windfall Pavilion. The White family did actually possess such a strong and powerful force.

“Who am I? It doesn’t matte anymore!”

Jack smiled blandly before he slowly spewed a few more words.” You only have to know that, from today onward, your life belongs to me!”

“Kill them all and leave this fella to me!”

After the last word of his sentence dropped, Jack waved his hand and gave the order.

Chapter 1202

"Holy moly! A strength of the middle stage of the true god realm? That's too.."

Several great fighters of the Windfall Pavilion's faces slowly became unsightly after hearing the Chief's

words.

In fact, the Chief of Windfall Pavilion had always reminded them that since the White branch family was in close vicinity to them, it would be acceptable if they snatched some of their resources, but they should not cross the boundaries and kill any of them. If they had really angered the other party and the other party decided to fight against them, they would not at all be their opponents.

The Chief believed that if it was merely some petty snatches and robs, Mason and his people would endure.

On the contrary, for several other families, if they were out to hunt for the resources and materials, the people of Windfall Pavilion could act rougher and more reckless toward them.

Once the men of Windfall Pavilion finds out that the other party was alone or was a group of juniors, they would rob them mercilessly. After all, several other families did not even know where the Windfall Pavilion was. Hence, even if they wanted to avenge their people was not easy to do so.

The Chief of the Windfall Pavilion did not expect at all that Patronum Lanich and the others had targeted an elder of the White branch family. If this were not asking for a death wish, what would it be then?

The Chief of Windfall Pavilion's face became paler and paler once he thought of it. "Hold up!" He extended his arm in a panic and gestured a stop sign with his palm.

The men of the White branch family were just about to charge toward them but halted when they heard the Chief's words.

The Chief stood up from the ground and paced toward Jack. He bowed before Jack and said, "Sir, I don't understand. I have not offended you at all, why did you help the White branch family? Even if it's one of my people who made a mistake that they shouldn' t have, you don't have to intervene in this matter, right?"

He knew by rote that, in general, such a powerful person did not like to meddle in nosy matters. Hence, he truly could not fathom the other party's behavior at all. Why would a martial artist with a strength of true god-level intervene?

Without waiting for Jack to further explain, Mason stood out and spoke aloud, "Munro Quinn, do you f*cking have any idea who he is? He is the heir of the White family head and the Young Master of the main White family! Now you tell me, does he have the right to take care of this matter?"

"Young Master?"

Munro gasped at the answer. "The Young Master of the White family is already this powerful? His combat prowess and strength are more powerful than some elders, am I right?"

"I'm only at the early stage of the true god realm. However, it's not hard for me to kill you!"

Jack gave a wan smile and said in an emotionless tone.

Munro was rendered speechless.

The strength of a fighter in the early stage of the true god realm could blast him away so easily and injure him that much? He was at the early stage of the true god realm, too!

Moreover, he had stayed at that level for almost three years and could be considered as a strong fighter of the early stage of the true god realm! This was also why the White branch family had not dared to act rashly and went against them, though they had many men.

Obviously, the young man before him acquired the ability to kill every single life of the Windfall Pavilion. What a terrifying existence!

"Hold on!"

Munro immediately stretched out his hand and showed a stop sign. His face was ashen and his blood froze in his veins, he was in complete terror. "My men had made a huge mistake. It's also true that I didn't discipline them well. But both the White branch family and Windfall Pavilion are located so close to each other, we can be considered as living in the same neighborhood, and we should live peacefully and help each other, right? How about this, I 'll send you some spirited grass and resources, and we'll call it a wrap to this matter?" Munro proposed in a trembling voice.

"Heh, it's too late!"

Jack laughed. "You still have the nerve to talk about the neighborhood? When you bullied my men in the past, why didn't you say you were a neighbor and that we should live peacefully and help each other out?"

Jack gripped the black fine sword tightly, and a layer of chi energy enclosed the sword. He swept the sword and shouted, "Big Wave Hits!"

Like magic, waves of sword aura coalesced out of Jack's sword. The sword aura went straight ahead with formidable strength and horrendous power.

Most of these waves of sword aura, under the control of Jack's chi control ability, went straight to Munro. A small portion of these waves was sent directly towards several strong fighters of the Windfall Pavilion who were in front of him.

Chapter 1203

"Sh*t. What do we do in the face of a fighter who's of the true god status?"

Someone was so shocked that all the color leached from his face. For a grandmaster or someone of the semi-god status, there was no way to beat someone of the true god status. His aura alone had this much power, and it was difficult for them to close in on him.

An old man flipped his palm and took out an object that resembled a small tortoiseshell. He imbued in with his chi, and the tortoiseshell emanated a flash of light before growing in size.

That thing was actually a shield.

The old man raised the shield before him and heaved an internal sigh of relief.

"You actually had a treasure like that!"

Munro went speechless when he saw it. Logically speaking, he should have gotten a treasure like that. He never thought that the old man would actually stash it away for himself. If not for the peril they were in, the old man would probably have never taken it out-and Munro would never have known that such a treasure existed.

Bang!

An attack landed on the shield and glanced off; not a single scratch was left on the tortoise shell.

Still, that powerful attack sent him stumbling a few meters backward before he regained his footing.

As for the fellows around him, although they had quickly demonstrated their martial skills, they still crumbled like paper before Jack's attack, and they were all killed.

The old man took the scene in and loosened a breath.

Fortunately, he had the luck to obtain such a treasure-which could change its size as well. It made it convenient for him to kept it hidden. He would have been killed over it otherwise.

Munro was displeased because his First Elder had hidden such a treasure, but he did not have the liberty to give it much thought right now. Most of Jack's attacks were being directed at him.

"Damn!"

When he saw the attack, his expression tightened and he threw a fist out. A giant python manifested from the chi that coalesced in his body.

After the python appeared, it roared and charged toward the waves of the sword auras.

Munro quickly constructed a thin, protective bubble of chi around him to keep himself safe right after he threw that attack out. Only then did he feel a little more relaxed. He believed that he would be able to withstand Jack's attack then.

After all, his attack was considered a pretty high-level skill-one that was second-grade elementary. It could be said to be his trump card.

Bang!

A resounding explosion tore through the air. He never thought that his python was already starting to crumble beneath Jack's attack, although a few seconds had not even passed. It was going to disappear soon.

"No way. It only lasted for so long?"

Munro's eyes nearly popped out of their sockets; he was so shocked that he did not know what to say. At least thirty or forty percent of Jack's attacks were being directed somewhere else, yet he still was not able to withstand the attacks, even after using a second-grade elementary martial skill!

"I have to hold on!"

Munro told himself that, but he already sensed that day might be his very last. That punk was far too strong for him.

Chapter 1204

"I have to hold on!"

Munro was repeating the same phrase to himself inside, however, not even one second before he repeated the phrase, everything collapsed.

As soon as the thought of holding on was inside his mind, the giant chi python collapsed and disappeared into thin air completely.

Although his python had successfully neutralized most of Jack's attack, the remaining attack was still terrifyingly powerful and strong. It landed directly on the top of Munro's protective bubble of chi.

Wham!

The sound of the blow was lighter than before, but Munro's shield of chi could only withstand Jack's attack for two to three seconds before it completely crumbled and shattered into pieces.

Even after canceling out Jack's attack with the bubble of chi, the attack still had almost a tenth of the strength left, and it blasted solidly on Munro's body.

A mouthful of blood spurted out of Munro's mouth, and he flew backward-like a cannonball-into the roof of the house not far behind him, smashing a hole in the roof and falling onto the floor of the house.

"Hmph!"

The scene before Jack made the corner of his mouth curl upward, and in the next second, he darted into the house at a lighting speed.

"He's so f*cking strong! Our Young Master is so f*cking awesome! He actually killed several elite fighters in only one move! And I don't think Munro can survive this time!"

After killing a semi-god level fighter, Mason looked at Jack's lightning speed, his eyes filled with shock and puzzlement.

Before they came to the Windfall Pavilion, he was concerned whether Jack could defeat Munro, after all, even he himself was not confident in fighting Munro. However, unexpectedly, Jack not only injured him gravely but also killed several elite fighters for them.

Now, they only had to deal with the remaining, and the job was as easy as ABC.

It could be said that they basically only have to take care of the remaining without having to pay much of a price.

"Pfft!"

Munro-who had fallen from the roof-hit the ground heavily and spewed out another mouthful of blood. He, who was already injured from the previous attack, was now even more severely injured. His face went white, and all possible colors were drained out of his face; his breath turned weak.

"Cough cough!"

He coughed a few times, and every cough was accompanied by a mouthful of blood. He could barely

support himself to stand up.

"Ah!"

The third daughter of the Cabello family managed to stand up from the bed. Her limbs were tied up, so she could only hop off the bed and landed on the floor. She tried to muster her chi energy to break the rope.

However, only then did she realize that the Chi Dispersing Pill that Munro had given her was too strong and effective, making it impossible for her to mobilize and gather her chi energy in her body.

According to what Munro had told her before, this strange pill would last for three days; one who swallowed it could not control the chi energy in his or her bodywhenever one tried to mobilize the chi energy, it would immediately dissipate.

Moreover, if one repeatedly tried to forcefully coagulate the chi energy in the body, he or she would experience some severe damage to their bodies.

Just when the Third Young Mistress Cabello was in despair, Munro fell down from the roof and plopped onto the floor not far below her feet.

"Great, you son of a b*tch! You deserve it!"

The Third Young Mistress Cabello felt a sudden flare of joy inside her, but soon some thought popped up in her mind. "Strange! When I was captured, nobody from the Cabello family had witnessed it. Could it be that someone accidentally saw it, informed my father of it, and then my father brought people to rescue me?" She babbled happily.

When the thought process came to this point, she quickly shook her head to deny it, feeling that it was simply impossible. She was captured and brought there not too long ago, and the Cabello family was in a

place where it was almost impossible for the commoners to locate, not to mention that the distance to that place was far. Even if the Cabello family knew about the kidnap, they would at least need ten days to come to her rescue.

Chapter 1205

Therefore, the rescuer was obviously not from the Cabello family.

"Don't tell me it's another group of bandits who set their eyes on them?"

Instantly, the Third Young Mistress Cabello's heart thumped at this possibility.

After all, no matter if the brigands were from the Windfall Pavilion or any other gang, they were all bad people. The phenomenon of a big fish swallowing a small fish-the strong bullying the weak-was common among groups of bandits.

It looked like this time there must be another group of mountain bandits coming to rob the Windfall Pavilion.

The Third Young Mistress Cabello' s thoughts ran wild within these few minutes, her heart was uneasy and her fear spiked.

After all, she had the most goodlooking face among the three daughters of the Cabello family, though her sisters were beautiful. Furthermore, several other young masters of the reclusive families were fond of her and wanted to pursue after her.

If such a good-looking woman were to fall into the hands of another stronger group of bandits, it was highly likely that she would be captured to be the wife of the chief of bandits.

She was in despair and could not even escape from the hand of the Chief of the Windfall Pavilion, what

more a stronger and more powerful bandit? She would not even have the slightest chance to escape.

Swoosh!

At this time, a figure dashed into the room and stood not far from her.

When the other party noticed her presence, the other party did not make any move but studied her.

Jack's eyes lit up slightly when he saw the beauty before him.

The beautiful woman before his eyes was indeed very fascinating and alluring. Her look was somewhat perfect, and her body was even more indescribable. That beauty could definitely compete against Selena and the result was hard to say.

Jack's heart had actually pounded a little faster than usual at this moment.

"You, you, don't come over! I warn you, you won't get me! I am the third daughter of the Cabello family, and the Cabellos are strong and prominent! I'm warning you, if...if you dare to bully me, you're dead meat. My father will find you and kill you even if you've hidden underground!"

Seeing Jack staring at her attentively, the Third Young Mistress Cabello was even more frightened. She stammered, trying her very best to use her tied -up feet to move backward.

Jack woke up from her beauty, then he walked indifferent toward Munro, stopped in front of him, and stabbed his sword into Munro' s chest emotionlessly.

When the Third Young Mistress Cabello saw that Jack killed Munro without blinking his eyes, she was so done for; she could feel nothing but blind terror.

If she had known it earlier, she would not be stubborn and sneaked out to search for treasure. She felt confident about her fighting prowess and martial status and wanted to come to mainland to search for treasure. She longed for the excitement and fun, but little did she know that she would be captured.

"You're the daughter of the Cabello family?"

After Jack ended Munro's life, he paced toward Third Young Mistress Cabello slowly.

"Yes, yes, I'm the third young mistress of the Cabello family! My father likes me the most! You this b*stard bandit, don't come near me! Don't you dare take advantage of me!"

The young mistress was scared to death in her heart, but she still clenched her teeth and tried her best to threaten Jack.

"Bandit?"

Jack was rendered speechless." Take a good look at me, do I look like another bandit?"

Only then the Third Young Mistress Cabello studied Jack in detail, she then huffed, "Hmph! You're either a bandit or a brigand and neither of them are good people! Don't think you can cheat me just because you're goodlooking! You this bandit, none of you are good!"

Now, Jack was completely tonguetied. He shook his head helplessly and approached the other party slowly.

"Don't you dare come near!" She shouted. "You...what are you doing? I have a good reputation, if you dare to ruin me, I...I'll not spare you even when I become a ghost in the future!"

The Third Young Mistress Cabello was so scared that she tried to move backward quicker, however, she

seemed to have forgotten that her legs were all tied up. She wanted to move swiftly but her tied-up feet did not allow, instead, she plopped back onto the ground. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1206-1210

Chapter 1206

Jack did not bother at all to pay attention to the Third Young Mistress Cabello who just fell heavily onto the ground, instead, he continued walking toward her and aimed the sword in his grip at her.

"No, don't!"

The Third Young Mistress Cabello thought that this would be her last day. Her brows puckered together, she closed her eyes and shouted with all her strength.

Swoosh!

Unfortunately, the Third Young Mistress Cabello had guessed wrongly. Jack flickered the sword in his grip, and the next second the rope that she was tied up in, snapped.

The Third Young Mistress Cabello soon felt that the rope seemed to have loosened, only then did she open one of her eyes to peep. Jack had cut the rope.

"You...you're not going to kill me?"

The Third Young Mistress Cabello breathed a huge sigh of relief, but soon her face sank again, “Wait, you must have known that I took the Chi Dispersing Pill and knew that I couldn't control the chi energy in my body to defend myself! That's why you cut the rope and let go of me, right?" She assumed. "Let me tell you straight, this beautiful body you're looking at right now, you;re not getting it!"

Jack was once again at a loss for words. "First of all, I'm neither a bandit nor brigand. Secondly, I'm

married and have a four-year-old daughter. Although you're goodlooking, I've no interest in you at all." Jack explained with a bitter smile on his face.

He studied the other party, paused for a moment before saying, "Count yourself lucky today to have met me, otherwise, I' m afraid that you'll end up as the wife of the head of brigands. Hehe, now leave, you're freed!"

"You, what you say is true?"

Color of disbelief and puzzlement was plastered on the Third Young Mistress Cabello's face. Did she really misunderstand this man before her and mistaken him as some sort of bad guy? Was he not a bad guy?

"Young Master Jack, great news! We've defeated them all! All of us are well except for a few people who suffered an injury. What a great victory!"

At this point in time, the sound of battling outside the house had stopped, and Mason bolted in excitedly.

However, he quickly noticed the beautiful woman in front of him, then he asked, "Who is this woman? And why are there ropes on the ground? Damn, that mother f*cker Munro hid a girl here?"

"This is the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family. I don't know how she got caught. Anyway, she was saved in time."

Jack let out a bitter laugh and explained.

"The Cabello family? Young Master Jack, aren't we on bad terms with the Cabello family? The Cabellos always compete and fight against us. How about we kill this what Third Young Miss? The head of the Cabello family will not know it anyway. He'd only think that his daughter was killed by these brigands!"

Mason quickly thought of something and proposed to Jack, smilingly.

"Nah, although we have some unpleasant episodes with the Cabello family, all those episodes are rather minor. If we really kill the daughter of the Cabello family, then the problem will become bigger and graver!"

Jack smiled gently and said to the Third Young Mistress Cabello, "Miss Cabello, you're free to leave!"

"Now I finally know, you're the Young Master of the White family!"

Daniella Cabello smiled faintly and asked, “You're the young master of the White branch family here? Your talent is amazingly good! I thank you for saving me this time... So, may I leave now?"

"What? This..."

Mason stepped forward, wanting to tell the other party that this gentleman was the heir of the family head of the main White family.

However, he was quickly held back by a sign from Jack. Jack held out his hand, signaling him not to utter further, thus, Mason immediately had his mouth shut tightly.

"This..? What?"

Daniella frowned and puzzled slightly.

Mason returned with an awkward smile. "Well, I wanted to say that this time it was the White family who saved you, so don't you ever forget our kind gesture!"

Daniella bobbed her head and replied, "Don't worry. I'll go back and tell my father about this. And I 'll let our people pay more attention in the future and not to collide with the White family anymore!"

After Daniella finished her sentence, she looked at Jack again and smiled, “I'm sorry that I' ve misunderstood you before this. Will-will you forgive me?"

Chapter 1207

"Heh. I never thought much about it because I'm not that kind of person!"

Jack gave a wan smile and wheeled around, stalking off.

Astonishment flashed across Daniella's eyes as she watched his silhouette.

Many men fawned over her looks. The geniuses from the Cabello family and other families all clamored to catch a glimpse of her.

That man was no brigand, but logically speaking, he should have at least asked for her name or show some semblance o attraction toward her. Yet he just turned around and left. Dissatisfaction roiled in her.

She quickly chased after him." Hey, aren't you curious what my name is?" she said to Jack.

Jack turned his head to look at her. "Why should I?" he replied impassively.

"I...."

Daniella was furious. The man was completely clueless. Did he not consider trying to show some interest

in a beauty like her?

She rolled her eyes at him. "I'm Daniella," she said. "You?"

"Oh. My name is Jack!"

After he said that, he walked out. At this moment, the White family members were sorting through their war trophies.

"Young Master, this is a true treasure. You must take it!"

The First Elder ran over happily, thrusting an object that resembled a tortoiseshell toward Jack.

"Yes. You must have this. We would not have been victorious if not for you today!"

Mason quickly said.

"Thank you!"

Jack smiled and took the object. He flipped his palm and kept it in his martial ring.

"We'll burn the corpses along with this house later! Let's take the war trophies and head back before we do the cleaning up!"

Jack announced after thinking about it.

Daniella was stunned speechless when she saw this. Who on earth was this man? Was he a young master from the main family of the White family? Why would the fighters from the branch families all listen to him otherwise?

After considering it carefully, she felt sure that this was the case. No way that he would be so strong if he were not from the main family, he would not have been able to kill Munro.

"Why haven't you left yet?"

After everyone had cleaned up the corpses, Jack noticed that Daniella was still standing nearby. A crease formed between his brows. The White family did not have good relations with the Cabello family. He did not want to show the slightest bit of weakness.

"Why so fierce?"

Daniella grew even more speechless when Jack seemed impatient. Never mind that he did not try to butter her up, and now he was trying to chase her away? Never had she suffered such humiliation before.

She shot him a glare. "I'm not leaving. I'll be staying at the White family's place for two or three more days!" she said.

Jack was internally speechless; his expression soured. "Miss Daniella Cabello, am I correct? I saved you because you so happened to be there. It was an accident. Never mind that you don 't wish to return the favor, but why do you want to stay here? You 're stepping out of your boundaries."

"Can't a beauty like me want to stay a few days at the White family's place? You really don't know how to prune a rose when you see one. I've no idea how someone like you found a wife!"

Daniella folded her arms across her chest, speaking indignantly.

Chapter 1208

When Mason heard this, he grinned at Jack. "Young Master Jack, she said it herself-you truly don't know how to recognize a rose," he said. "Since you saved her in such a dashing manner, of course, she has an interest in you now. How cruel of you to reject her request so outrightly!"

Another elder from another branch family also chipped in, "That's right. You two look as though you were a match made in heaven. Just agree with her request. The third daughter of the Cabello family is famed for her beauty. How could you decline her just like that?"

Daniella's cheeks reddened as the two spoke that way. She rolled her eyes at Mason. "What are you talking about? I have no other way out, okay? I won't have access to my chi for these few days, since I ate those Chi Dispersing Pills. If I run into any danger while I'm alone, I won't be able to fight back at all."

Here, Daniella paused before she continued, "That's why I must stay at your place for two or three days. I'll leave once my chi comes back!"

"Chi Dispersing Pills?"

Jack frowned. "I never thought that such a pill would exist. It's my first time hearing of it."

"Oh, it's here, Young Master!"

Mason quickly took out one such pill from his martial ring and gave it to Jack.

Jack quickly discovered a counter pill's prescription, as well as a small pill furnace. "I never thought that Munro would have gotten this. It's a first-grade elementary pill, but this pill can come in handy. It's a wonderful product!"

"Really? That man actually knew alchemy. Not everyone can do that. I never thought that Munro knew

all this!"

Mason could not help but exclaimed after he heard that.

"Hah. I'll be keeping the prescription and the pill furnace. It 'll be useful for me!"

Jack laughed. Being able to obtain such items was indeed a propitious incident.

Furthermore, the shield that resembled a tortoiseshell from before seemed pretty good too. However, Jack would only determine how precious it truly was once he had the time to study it properly at home.

"Hah. Just take it if you like it, Young Master. The pills and the pill furnace are useless to us."

Mason laughed. At that moment, the house on the opposite side began to catch fire. The corpse of Munro's men burned along with it.

After all the corpse had been cleared, Jack and the others head down the mountain.

"Hey, if you're not saying anything, I take it that you agree to let me stay at the White family' s place for these few days!"

When she saw that they were leaving, Daniella quickly skipped after Jack.

"Fine. It's not like we lack rooms!"

Jack could not be bothered with her. This time, the White family had obtained plenty of martial resources. Mason and the others should be overjoyed now.

Mason and the others still had grins plastered onto their faces.

Mason sang all the way down the mountain.

"No way, no way. I'm tired!"

Not long after, Daniella was already tired. “All of you are martial practitioners. You all walked in a fast pace walk as though it were nothing. Now that I have no access to my chi, I'm as good as a normal person. I don't want to walk anymore!"

"You don't want to walk? Then what should we do? Don't tell me you want me to carry you?"

Mason stared at her. "What a pain!" he snapped.

Chapter 1209

"I'm not getting on your back!"

Daniella rolled her eyes at Mason. She had no inclination toward his hulky figure.

Her eyes sidled toward Jack. She pressed her lips together. "Youyou carry me down!" she said bashfully.

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry. However, it was true that they were making slow progress with her tagging along.

He could only walk toward her, huffing. "I can carry you down, but you owe me a favor then. Got it?"

"Got it. I'll definitely return the favor. How could a man be so petty? It's your privilege to be able to carry

a beauty like me!"

Daniella scuttled toward Jack's back and hopped on. "Let's go, Young Master Jack!"

"Let's go. What are all of you staring at?"

Jack roared when everyone was staring at him. Only then did they continue downward.

Meanwhile, Daniella's heart was pounding wildly in her chest.

Once she knew that he was not a brigand and that he was the young master of the White family, her impression of him grew more positive. It meant that he had a pretty lofty position. He could match her, at least.

Daniella's mind began to wander. After all, it was the first time she had met such a handsome man who showed no interest in her.

'He's strong too. So much stronger than the young masters I know!'

The more she thought about it, the more she realized how attractive Jack was. She looked at the scene as they trod down, her face hot. She felt that this was fate.

"Hey, you're a member of the White' main family, right?"

Daniella rested her head against his back and asked softly.

"Yup!"

Jack answered as he strode down the mountain.

"Can't you walk a little slower? Be considerate of me."

Daniella pursed her lips. With the uneven mountain road, hers and Jack's body frequently bumped against each other. Since she never dated before, she felt extremely embarrassed.

"You told me to carry you down. It' s a wonder I gave in to you. And now you're complaining?"

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry. "You must have been spoiled in the Cabello family and rarely left the house," she said. " The treasure spots, the monsters, and the martial artists of the outside world will never entertain your whining!"

"You're a psychic! I do very rarely leave the Cabello family's house!"

Daniella smiled. "If I had never met you, I would have been a goner."

"Really? Then are we friends now?"

Jack paused for a while. A scheme began to stir in his mind.

Chapter 1210

"Of course. You're my savior. So I' ll definitely find a way to repay you!"

Warmth spread in Daniella's chest. She thought of something and quickly added on: “But don't you let your mind wander everywhere. I won't repay you with my body. Hmph. Anyone who wishes to go after me must prove that they're worthy. Got it?"

"You're really confident, aren't you?"

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry. It was true that she was not half-bad looking, and the light fragrance emanating from her was intriguing, but Jack was confident in his self-restraint.

"Hmph. I know all you men speak one thing and then think another. You're definitely thinking of something, what with a beauty like me splayed all over your back now!"

"I'm telling you, it's your privilege to carry me. So many men wish to do so but don't have the chance!"

Daniella was as proud as ever, as though she were a princess high above the clouds.

"You're saying that it's my privilege to carry someone as heavy as you? Heh. I'll be more than happy to get rid of this weight!"

Jack smiled. This girl was far too cocky.

She was pretty, but he was not the sort to butter up to nasty people.

"You-you're calling me fat? What are you talking about? Hmph. So many people admire my figure!"

Daniella was furious when Jack told her that she was heavy. She resisted the urge to strangle him. His vision must have had problems. She was a little plump in some areas, but she was not fat at all.

After talking to her for a while, Jack popped the question, "Right. I heard that the Cabello family has a precious ancient tome. Something about forbidden medicine, right?

"That's right. How did you know? Do you know medicine?"

Daniella answered without thinking twice.

"That's right. I have an interest in medicine. I heard that the tome contains precious knowledge, so of course, I know of it. It'll be fantastic if I got the chance to look at it!"

Jack told Daniella after he thought about it.

"Heh. You want to take a look?"

Daniella chuckled. "I don't even get to take a peek at it even if I wanted to. It's currently in our First Elder's possession. That old man hangs onto it as though it were his life source, always talking about how complex it was and how he needed to study it. He even said that it contains alchemy methods of crafting third and fourth-grade pills. My father and the others know about this!"

"Third or fourth-grade pills?"

Jack took a sharp intake of breath after he heard this. Even second-grade spirit grass was extremely hard to find, yet this tome contained alchemical records of third and fourth-grade pills? Did this mean that he was getting close to finding the mother of pills?No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1211-1215

Chapter 1211

If there were third or fourth-grade pills, that meant that the third or fourth-grade spirited grass existed. If that was the case, where were these spirited grass? Spirited grass or pills like that would likely cause a person of the true god status to combust with energy. This meant that the legends of the ultimate god status may very well be true.

"That's right. My father said that the third and fourth-grade pills exist which means that the ultimate god status might be real."

Daniella did not seem to have many walls around her, and she spoke easily with Jack, "That's why the tome is a true treasure to the First Elder. He'd study it with every moment of spare time he has, trying to dissect its secrets. And sometimes he goes looking for true treasure, to see if he can find the third-grade spirited grass described in the tome!"

"Have his searches been fruitful?"

Jack's eyes brightened when he heard that. He asked her a question.

Daniella gave a bitter smile." Zilch. He's got nothing to show for even after all these years. I don't think the third and fourth-grade spirited grass exists. He did not find a single stalk. Perhaps someone wrote that tome just to play a long-running joke on future generations!"

"I don't think so. Your First Elder would have noticed that it was fake after studying it for so long. Besides, I heard that he's pretty skilled in medicine. He's pretty famous for alchemical research too!"

After Jack thought about it, he spoke with firm resolution, "I believe that the ultimate god status is real. We cannot give up on the clues that point directly toward it!"

"Heh. That might be a little difficult. All eight reclusive families are trying to discover the path to the ultimate god status. Everyone thinks that there is a this now. He needed to get that tome to see if there was a technique to heal Fernando.

"That's right. At any rate, I don't really believe in all this talk of 'ultimate god status' and whatnot. Besides, I don't have a high martial level, and I'm still young. I' ll leave the thinking to my father and the elders-especially for those who are at the peak of the true god status. They have no way to improve anymore, so nothing else interests them more than finding a way to break into the ultimate god realm!"

Daniella smiled and said, "But there's no way you're going to look at that tome. The First Elder won't

heed my commands even if I screech at him to take it out. He's even the one to flip the pages for my father when he wants to read

it!"

"Your father needs to obtain permission from the First Elder if he wants to see it?" Jack frowned. "That means the First Elder has a very powerful position in your family!" he continued.

"Of course. The First Elder is at the true god status, just like my father, and his martial skill is even higher. More importantly, he knows alchemy and medicine. That's why he has even greater status in the Cabello family than my father. My father has to be respectful to him!"

Daniella's voice was full of pride when she spoke of her family. "Not many families have more than one fighter at the peak of the true god status like the Cabello family. Even you people from the White family must only have one at most!"

Jack was internally speechless when he heard that. He did not expect the Cabello family's First Elder to be so powerful.

It would be extremely difficult to get the tome from him.

Chapter 1212

"The Cabello family truly is strong!"

Jack gave a wan smile and threw the words out in a callous manner.

Yet he was internally speechless. It was evident that the First Elder treasured the tome more dearly than his own children if he had any-and wanted to find the way to break into the ultimate god realm within its pages. There was no way that Jack was going to be able to borrow the tome for a split second. If he did not even allow the third daughter of the Cabello family to take a peek at it, never mind him, a complete outsider.

That was why the only way around that was to get his hand on the tome.

Although Jack was still at the beginning stage of the true god status, he felt that it would not be a problem to kill someone at the intermediate stage of the true god status. He could probably give someone at the advanced stage of the true god status a good run for his money.

However, the First Elder of the Cabello family was at the peak of the true god status. Even among the fighters who were ranked the same as him, he was outstanding. With all this considered, it was impossible to snatch the tome directly from him.

Unless Jack was stronger than the old man. Only then did he have a chance.

"Of course. The Cabello family is probably one of the top 3 strongest families among the eight reclusive families. But the strongest still isn't us!"

Daniella had a huge grin plastered onto her face. It was evident that the Cabello family gave her a lot of pride.

Soon after, they finally arrived at the residence of one of the branch families. Jack set Daniella down.

"Not bad. I thought you would have abandoned me halfway down the mountain. I didn't expect you to really carry me all the way here!"

A smile curved Daniella's lips when she saw the beads of perspiration on Jack's forehead. She laced her fingers behind her back. “Don't tell me that you wanted to carry me for a while longer?" she said. "Is that why you didn't put me down?"

Jack was internally speechless. In order to dispel some of her worries, he had struck a conversation

about the Cabello family-at the same time, he could understand her family's situation a little better. As they spoke, they gradually came close to the village. He was not giving her much thought, honestly.

He gave a bitter smile. "No one would want to carry you for a while longer, with you being so heavy," he replied. "I just forgot to put you down because I was talking to you. I would have dropped you at the foot of the mountain if I had realized it earlier!"

"As if I'd believe you!"

Daniella rolled her eyes. "Where are you staying?" she asked bashfully. "I'll stay in the house beside yours!"

"What!"

Jack did not know what to say." Why do you want to follow me? Don't tell me that you like me now? I do have some confidence in my charm, after all!"

He was only joking, but his words made Daniella panic. She quickly wheeled around, cheeks flushing. What are you talking about? No way that I like you. There are plenty of other young masters who are better than you," she said. "Hmph. I just had the impression that you're a pretty good person, so you won't get any funny thoughts. That's why I wanted to stay beside you!"

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry. He stretched his arms. "I'll get them to choose two talented youths and their branch family master in the afternoon, then I'll be moving to another branch family tomorrow morning!" he said. "Don't worry. I'll tell the branch family members that I'll skin anyone who dares to lay a finger on you alive!"

"That won't do!"

Chapter 1213

Unexpectedly, Daniella immediately retorted, "If something happens to you and my purity is tainted by someone, it 'll still be a great loss to me, even if you kill that someone. Besides, not a single one of the lives of your branch families is worth mine. Hmph! At any rate, I'll be tagging you around for these few days. I only trust you now. I'll leave once my chi returns to me!"

"Fine. It doesn't matter to me anyway!"

Jack brought her along and instructed Mason to arrange a room at the place he was staying for Daniella.

In the afternoon, Mason and the others had categorized their spoils of war-including spirited grass-and lay it before Jack, allowing him to choose whichever objects he liked.

After he studied the items for a while, Jack only chose a few stalks of medicine that would be suited to make chi pills.

"There's plenty of spirited grass here, Young Master. Why don't you take more?"

Their First Elder blurted after he noticed that Jack had picked out so few items.

"No need. I have enough!"

Jack smiled. "Mason will be leaving for the main family. Have you selected your next house head?"

The First Elder gave an apologetic smile. “They all chose me. So I-I have no choice but to take up the mantle of house head of this branch family."

Jack bobbed his head. "Then what about the talents? I need two names. Will you be using a fighting competition to decide on the champions, or do you already have obvious talents among you?"

"We do have two clear geniuses in our house, Master," Mason explained as he stepped forward. "Amos and Dawson. We wanted to nominate them both, but the Second Elder's granddaughter, Nikini, still wants to have a martial arts competition, even though she's not as strong as either of them... What should we do?"

Jack was slightly taken aback when he heard this. "How big is the gap between them?" he asked.

"Amos and Dawson are at the intermediate stage of the semigod status, whereas Nikini is at the beginning stage of the semigod status. Seriously, I don't know what that girl is thinking. She's a whole level lower than them but still insists on a battle to prove their position. No way that it'll be easy for her to beat them. Besides, she just broke into the beginning stage of the semi-god status. That kid..."

At this moment, a teenage girl not too far away stood up and cried out to Jack, "Young Master Jack, choosing geniuses is not solely a matter based on their current fighting skill, am I right? I won't be satisfied unless we have a competition, at least. My parents also wish for me to enter the White family. My chance to uphold my family's name depends on this!"

Jack nodded his head after he heard that. "All right. We'll have a competition since someone is unsatisfied with the selection criteria!"

After he said that, he addressed the audience, "Those of you who are not satisfied may step forward as well to participate in the battle. Does anyone wish to pit themselves against the three of them?"

Jack waited for a while. No one raised their voice, so he spoke to Nikini, "All right, you can choose to fight either Dawson or Amos. I' ll judge your potential based on the duel!"

"Thank you, Young Master Jack!"

Nikini's heart leaped in delight when he agreed to her proposal. Her eyes flickered between Dawson and Amos.

"Heh, I'll fight you, Dawson!" she finally declared.

Chapter 1214

"Challenge me?" Dawson White widened his eyes and was obviously not convinced. "Nikini White, turns out I'm not as good as Amos White in your opinion. Are you looking down on me?"

Nikini immediately smiled in embarrassment. “No. Brother Dawson, both you and Brother Amos have similar fighting prowess and your combat power is almost the same too. To be honest, I have to choose one even though I really don't know which one of you to choose. Hence, I choose you!"

Dawson glared at Nikini. "Young girl, I'm sure you feel that I'm not as good as Amos and that I'm a weakling, right?"

Dawson directly walked toward a slightly empty area and raised his eyebrows at Nikini provocatively." If that's the case, Sister Nikini, I will not hold back. After all, the chance of entering the White main family is very important for me. It's relayed to me or my parents' destiny!"

"Who's waiting for you to hold back? It's meaningless for me to win the competition if you're holding back!" Nikini soon arrived in front of Dawson. She curled her hands into fists and Chi started surging on top of her fists.

"Alright, let's have a serious fight today!" Dawson was immediately filled with the urge to fight when he saw how serious Nikini was. He curled his hands into fists and the two of them soon started their battle.

It had to be mentioned that although Nikini's fighting prowess was much lower than her opponent's, their combat powers were almost the same when they started battling.

Jack had a decision after he observed for a while. If Nikini's fighting prowess was slightly stable, she would be able to win against Dawson even if she did not enter the intermediate level of the semi-god

stage.

Unfortunately, Nikini had just achieved the initial stage of the semi-god level and she was not so skilled in the utilization of her Chi. Together with the fact that the Chi in her body was not as sufficient as that in Dawson's body. Compared to Dawson, she would not be able to withstand the use of her Chi if the battle continued.

"This young lady has quite a good combat ability, does she have the opportunity to win?" Third Young Mistress Cabello could not help but ask Jack. She was also stunned as she looked at the duo fighting aggressively.

"She won't be able to win! She might be able to win if they have the same fighting prowess. Sadly they have huge differences in their fighting prowess and she will not be able to hold it if the chi consumption continues!" Jack smiled bitterly and continued to speak. "The main thing is that the both of them have almost the same martial skills, hence she doesn't have any advantages!"

Daniella nodded in realization after she heard this. "That's sad!"

Sure enough, just as Jack expected, Nikini's forehead was covered in sweat and she seemed unable to withstand anymore after the both of them battled for some time.

Bang!

Finally, Nikini took a kick and she flew backward like a kite with no strings. She vomited a mouthful of blood and her face turned pale.

"Nikini!" Nikini's father could not help but sighed as his heart hurt for his daughter when he saw this.

"Nikini, you've lost!" Dawson stopped and looked at Nikini, who fell on the floor, and said, “To be honest, you have really strong combat ability. Unfortunately, there's no other choice as there are only two

positions for us today and I have to fight for it!"

Unexpectedly, Nikini petted the floor and once again flew upward. She wiped the bright-colored blood from her mouth as she stood there. "Haha... It's just some attack and it's a small wound. This is nothing and I've not admitted defeat. The battle is not over yet!"

Nikini stepped on the floor again after she spoke and directly rushed toward Dawson's knife.

"Again?" Dawson was speechless. He had no idea that Nikini was so stubborn and would still want to battle him.

Dawson dared not take it easy when he saw how fiercely Nikini was coming at him. He quickly curled his hands into fists and continued rushing forward.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

A wave of fighting noises could be heard but everybody knew clearly in their hearts that Nikini, who was already hurt, would not be Dawson's opponent no matter how hard she tried.

"My child's father, please try to persuade Nikini!"

Chapter 1215

Beside them, Nikini's mother could not continue looking at them so she asked her husband.

"It's alright, she has always had this character of unwillingness to lose. I won't persuade her on this!" Although he was also extremely distressed, Nikini's father still tightened his fists and said persistently.

"Sigh!" Nikini's mother sighed.

Bang!

After a while, Nikini flew backward once again and laid on the floor. She once again vomited blood and her face grew increasingly pale compared to previously.

“Nikini, admit defeat, you're not my opponent!" Dawson also felt sorry for this young girl as he looked at Nikini.

After all, they had a good relationship between them. To search for martial enhancement material, the youngsters of the branch families had always been taking care of one another in that dangerous forest. They also grew up together and had good relationships.

However, they had to fight on that day for their respective futures.

"I have not lost yet! You will not admit defeat so easily!" Nikini gritted her teeth and once again stood up. She curled her fists and once again rushed outward.

However, her speed had obviously decreased and Dawson managed to easily evade her punch, instead he flipped his hand and slapped her on her back.

Puff!

Nikini flew forward and fell face down on the floor. Blood splattered and some dirt sputtered upward.

"This girl!" Nikini's mother could not hold it back anymore and yelled at her. "Nikini, admit defeat, you're not Dawson's opponent."

"Mother... I.. I can still fight!"

Nikini once again stood up and still wanted to fight.

“Enough!" At this moment, Jack actually said softly and the entire area quieted down.

"Young Master Jack, I haven't admitted defeat. This competition is not over yet!" Nikini looked at. Jack with expectations written all over her face.

"There's no need to continue fighting!" Fand smiled at her before speaking loudly to the crowd. “After observing the battle between them, I have to say that they are all geniuses that are hard to come by. It's a great thing for the branch families to have such great geniuses. I believe that they will definitely be masters of the true god status in the future if they are nicely groomed and trained!"

Jack paused here before continuing to speak. “Hence, I've decided to add a position for this branch family. Dawson, Amos, and Nikini, the three of you only need to follow Patronum Mason and report yourselves to the main family!"

"What! Is... Is this true?" Nikini's parents were extremely excited and had no idea what to say.

"Your daughter is really marvelous, I'll give you guys another quota!" Jack nodded in satisfaction and said while looking at them.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1216-1220

Chapter 1216

Overwhelmed with joy, Nikini's eyes reddened as she almost cried.

"Thank... Thank you, Young Master Jack!" muttered Nikini shakily.

Mason, who was by their side, then chimed in, "Young Master Jack, I know that you're kind, but isn't this somewhat unfavorable? We from the branch family are facing shortage in numbers. The other branch families who also only have two quota will be unhappy when they see that three of our people go over."

Nikini's father also frowned and solemnly added, “Yes. If this is the case, the other branch families might feel that this is unfair. I'm afraid that this will affect your image by then, Young Master Jack. Although they won't say anything on the surface, prodigies from the branch families will definitely say something when they come down."

The initially elated Nikini bit her luscious lips as she heard Mason and her father's opinion and thus spoke, “Young Master Jack, thank you for your kindness, but thinking things through, it does seem rather unfavorable for you. I think it's best if I don't go over, but I'll strive for it when there's a chance like this in the future."

Jack was touched when he heard this and responded with an indifferent smile, "Don't worry. Since I've spoken about this, then it wouldn't be a problem. So long as I feel that you're good enough, it 's nothing to break the rules and increase the quota. You don't need to worry yourselves over this matter. If the other branch families have prodigies with such talents, it's not a big deal to add another quota for them. I'll speak with those from the other branch families about this."

"Then... If that's the case, we thank you, Young Master!" Mason immediately gestured politely to Jack with his hands. "You truly have thought of us kindly, Young Master Jack. We from the branch families will go over and beyond if you need anything, even if it needs our lives."

Bikini's father gazed at Jack admiringly and excitedly."Young Master Jack, you... you really are our family's benefactor!"

"Haha... Don't mention anything about benefactors or what not. We' re all members of the White family, and we naturally can't let good seedlings go to waste! Apart from that, if Nikini had the same fighting prowess as Dawson, I think that even with Dawson and Amos working together, they can' t beat her. Won't it be a waste of time if I don't bring such a good seedling to go train with the White main family from the start?"

Jack chuckled and added, "After all, a youth has the best talents and understanding for training. It' s also the best timing for training!"

Nikini's mother gazed at Jack appreciatively. "Young Master Jack, can you stay a couple of days here with us? We'll give you cordial hospitality."

Jack gave a small smile and turned them down, saying, "There' s no need for this. I'll be leaving early tomorrow morning after a night's rest to go to the next branch family. After all, there are quite a lot of branch families and powers that rely on our main family. Even if we try to shorten the entire journey, it'll still take an estimated time of two days on this."

Everybody nodded-Jack's position in these branch families' hearts was obviously different.

When the Third Elder was still alive and Lily still in power, they · would bully the branch family's members. They handed in increasingly more martial enhancement materials that they worked hard to get. There was really too little in their hands for their training.

After all that was over, everything progressed for the better ever since Jack stepped in. Everyone was happy after the Third Elder died and Lily was removed from the White main family as nobody would continue this cruel treatment towards them.

Meanwhile, Lily was brought home to the Lagorios under the lead of an old man of the Lagorio family.

Her wounds gradually healed after several days of rest on her way back.

It was bad enough that her son's status was uncertain and she was thrown out of the White family, but the fact that Wade had used and manipulated Lily turned her haggard in just mere days.

Chapter 1217

Lily had lost almost five kilograms within several days.

Lily exhaled a long breath as she gazed at the entrance to the Lagorio family's residence before entering with the old man.

Not long after, several young men guarding at the mountainside saw Lily. "Eldest Miss has returned!"

Someone immediately ran to inform the others after they saw them.

A girl walked toward her and smilingly spoke, "Eldest Miss, why did you come back alone?"

It was not long until the girl take much. Didn't I bring all of it to our Lagorio family?"

Lily grew increasingly agitated as she spoke, “Apart from that, Lance is so talented. Why must the position of the family master inheritor be given to the illegitimate child, Jack? On what grounds? We gave so much, and I gave so much for the White family, so the next family master of the White family has to be my son!"

Master Lagorio also nodded and said to the old master. "Father, I also feel that what Lily says makes sense. Lily shouldn't have been with the Third Elder and the others, but it was for our family. Otherwise, how could we have noticed something wrong with Lily. Once an all-smiles, joyful woman every time she returned, the current Lily looked as if she did not have any energy and was extremely dispirited.

The young girl frowned and asked carefully, "Eldest Miss, what... What happened to you? Why do you look so languish?"

The old man beside them sighed." Young Susan, stop nosing in. It's hard to explain everything in just seconds."

The duo continued walking forward and they soon arrived at a huge square at the mountainside.

At that moment, Master Lagorio, along with Old Master Lagorio and quite a number of elders, rushed out to welcome them.

As Lily had not returned to her maiden family for many years, the Lagorios were naturally happy when they heard she was back.

“Daughter, what... What happened to you?" Lily's mother immediately recognized that something was wrong with Lily the moment she saw her daughter and immediately guessed, "Had... Had they found Lance's body? Could it be that Lance really died?"

Lily shook her head lifelessly before raising her head to look at her father. With reddened eyes, she spoke, "Father, I don't even have my fighting prowess right now. That bastard Nash White chased me out of the Lagorio family and destroyed my fighting prowess. I'm a commoner right now."

"What?!" Master Lagorio almost fainted due to anger after he heard this. He took a long while to regain his composure before asking, “What actually happened? How dare Nash White treat you like that!"

The old man from the Lagorio family sighed and said, "Master, Eldest Miss was in an illicit relationship with the Third Elder, and they... They even wanted to rebel to take the White family master title. They didn't expect to fail, and Wade White was killed. Several elders and patronums that were ready to rebel together with them were also killed."

Stunned at what he heard, Master Lagorio grew increasingly doubtful. "What is all of this? Wasn 't everything alright previously? Why do you want to rebel? Didn't Nash catch a weird disease and was dying? I just thought of visiting him in another two days, too. Why am I hearing treasons and illicit relationships?"

Chapter 1218

The old man, who carried the surname Lagorio and brought Lily back, explained, "It all happened like this: Lance has yet to return, and since there was no news of him, the White family members have been searching for him."

The old man paused before continuing, “None of their searches came up fruitfully, however, and the White family members naturally thought that Young Master Lance is dead. Coincidentally, the White family master, Nash White wanted to meet his mistress in the outside world, Joan and his illegitimate child, Jack. Displeased, Eldest Miss secretly poisoned Nash. Nash wasn't suffering any weird disease-he was poisoned by a rather peculiar poison..."

The old man slowly told the Lagorios everything, from the beginning to the end, with a cold expression.

Old Master Lagorio was infuriated with everything he heard and pointed at Lily angrily. "Lily, what ... What did you do? No wonder Nash destroyed your fighting prowess and expelled you out of the White family. The Third Elder is so old, and you don't cherish your position as the Eldest Madam. You actually poisoned Nash and even got together with the Third Elder?! You shame me so!"

The old master grew extremely agitated as he spoke, so angry that his entire face turned green. He never thought his granddaughter would do something like this. If news of this got out, the Lagorio family will lose all their honor.

"Grandfather, I did all of this for our family!" Lily, on the other hand, still had no remorse as she glared at the old master angrily." We supported the White family so much in the beginning," she argued, "and shouldn't they support us now that they've risen? I secretly took many martial enhancement materials together with the Third Elder, but he didn't take much. Didn't I bring all of it to our Lagorio family?"

Lily grew increasingly agitated as she spoke, "Apart from that, Lance is so talented. Why must the position of the family master inheritor be given to the illegitimate child, Jack? On what grounds? We gave so much, and I gave so much for the White family, so the next family master of the White family has to be my son!"

Master Lagorio also nodded and said to the old master. "Father, I also feel that what Lily says makes sense. Lily shouldn't have been with the Third Elder and the others, but it was for our family. Otherwise,

how could we have gotten so much martial enhancement materials over these years? Apart from that, I also feel that the White family master should be my grandson. Lance is so talented and worked so hard. Why should a young man who returned from the outside inherit the title instead?"

The old master sighed and said," But Lance hadn't returned after such a long time, and there's a huge possibility that he's dead. No matter what, that guy named Jack is Nash's son. It's not going overboard if he wants to meet his son and wife after so many years. It's also nothing if he wants them to return and restore their positions."

The Lagorio family master, Trenton Lagorio, solemnly nodded. "It's definitely nothing, but I don't agree if he, Nash White give the position of family master inheritor to Jack. Apart from that, even though my daughter made mistakes, it doesn't matter if he expels her out of the White family...but why did he need to destroy her fighting prowess? How many years does she need to train to get back to her original fighting prowess? Even if she managed to train back, my daughter would be old by then!"

Old Master Lagorio was speechless-it did seem like Nash went too far. Yes, Lily made some grave mistakes, but the White family wouldn't have had their current position if the Lagorios hadn't helped. No matter how huge the mistake Lily made was, it shouldn't have resulted in her being expelled from the White family. Destroying her fighting prowess was much more painful than killing her."

He also felt a wave of heartache when he saw how haggard Lily had become.

Lily almost started crying as she spoke, “Father, I don't care. From today onward, the White family is our enemy. I want to wipe out the entire White family! I want to make them pay!"

Chapter 1219

"Eldest Miss, why.... Why do you think that? You were married to him, might I remind you, and you were the one at fault in the beginning. Master Nash wouldn't have treated you in such a way otherwise."

The elder who carried the Lagorio surname tried to coax Lily after hearing her rather aggressive stance. "I think it's best to just let it go; surely Master Nash won't harm Young Master Lance should he return if you stand down. He'd surely ask him to return to us Lagorios since there can't be two tigers in a

mountain. He definitely won't let Young Master Lance to continue staying in the White family as you've already been expelled from the White family."

The old man paused before he added, "As for the situation where both families really started a war ... Firstly, the Lagorio family is definitely no match for the White family. Although the White family lost the Third Elder and several people who were faithful to you, Miss, but the White family can definitely withstand this loss. Secondly, once the war starts, how do you think the White family members will treat Young Master Lance if he's alive and returns to the White family? They' Il kill him on sight!"

Old Master Lagorio also nodded in agreement after he heard this and said to Lily, "Lily, I think Xavier has a point. No matter from which point of view we look at it from, we don't have the capability right now to wipe out the White family. Apart from that, Lance's situation is unknown. Although he's Nash's son, Jack is the family master inheritor right now. Our relationship with the White family will affect Nash's attitude towards Lance after he returns."

Master Trenton also nodded after he thought about it. "It's true, my dear. I also understand that you want to kill Nash and Jack badly, but we can't act impulsively on this matter. As the saying goes, 'a starved camel is bigger than a horse.' We'd get nothing out of a war, so we'll have to keep ourselves in check on this matter."

Lily's mother, Diana Simpson, also stepped forward to persuade her daughter, "Daughter, it's best if you go back to your room and rest well for the next two days. I believe that Lance is still alive, and for the sake of Lance's safety, we shouldn't fight with the White family right now. Fret not, my dear, the Lagorios will deliver justice in your stead, little by little."

Only then did Lily nod in agreement. She thought about it and spoke again, "Father, our Lagorio family also needs to send some people into the White to search and see if we can find Lance. It'd be best if we can find him."

"Alright, alright, alright. I promise I'll send people to carry out the search." Trenton nodded continuously and promised Lily.

Diana glanced at the servants by her side and ordered, "The few of you, bring my daughter so she can take a rest. Cook some good soup tonight for her to replenish her body."

Soon, Lily left with several servants in tow.

Finally, Trenton looked at the old man who sent Lily back and asked, "Xavier Lagorio, how about you? Do you plan to go back to the White family or stay at the Lagorio family from now on?"

Chapter 1220

Sheepish as he was questioned on the spot, Xavier smiled bitterly and said, "Master, I plan to return to the White family. After all, the White family master treats me well, and he even saved me once... While I am a Lagorio, I used to be a mere member of the Lagorio branch family..."

Hearing his response, Trenton smirked bitterly. "Amazing. Never thought you'd be the White family 's lapdog despite being there for several years. Haha... This is absurd! Have you forgotten that you're a Lagorio?"

Xavier was enraged to hear Trenton's remark; never once was he treated well when he stayed with the Lagorios, extremely angry. Instead, he was bullied.

Surprisingly, upon entering the White family, not only was he given an important position but he was also saved by Nash once. He had secretly vowed from that day on that his life belonged to the White family.

That was why he chose to side with the White family instead of being with Lily and the Third Elder.

Never did he think that him kindly sending Lily back to the Lagorios would be met with sarcasm from Trenton, who even called him a lapdog.

Through gritted teeth, Xavier denounced, “I'm well aware I'm a Lagorio, Master, but as humans, we need to push forward, not to mention that I owe Nash White my life. My family name is Lagorio, but I understand the need to have gratitude.

A person can't be without their conscience! My sons died fighting for the Lagorio family, and I don't owe the Lagorio family anything!" He turned around and was prepared to leave.

"Are you insane? How dare you speak to our family master like that!" The First Elder of the Lagorio family flipped his hand and took a sword out, ready to attack.

"Stop!" came the sharp order from the Lagorios' Old Master. "Let him leave."

Xavier stopped walking and turned around to look at the crowd before gesturing with his hands. "Goodbye."

After he spoke, Xavier stepped with the tips of his toes and Chi appeared under his feet. He directly rushed upward into the sky and flew downward.

Within several breaths, Xavier had disappeared from everybody' s sight.

The Lagorio family's First Elder said to Old Master Lagorio anxiously after Xavier left, "Old Master, Xavier has a high martial level, and we can't let him leave. We're considered enemies of the White family, and we'll be in war against them sooner or later, it'll be in our best interest to kill such a strong semi-god master. He's at the peak level of the semi-god stage, and he might be able to break into the true god-level someday soon."No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1221-1225

Chapter 1221

However, Old Master Lagorio shook his head. "We can't kill him no matter what. If news about this gets out, our Lagorio family will be the laughing stock of the entire world."

"Why? We're getting rid of a hidden problem. Apart from that, he's a member of our Lagorio family, and now he's an accomplice to the enemy, willing to work for the White family. Could it be possible that the other families will say something if we kill him?" The First Elder frowned, unable to comprehend his logic.

Old Master Lagorio replied, "His sons died fighting for our Lagorio family in the past, and he did nothing to wrong our Lagorio family. Won't others say we're savages when news about this gets out?"

Old Master Lagorio placed both arms behind his back and looked at the area where Xavier left. He continued to speak, "He would've died if he sided with Lily from the beginning and instead of being with the White family to repay their kindness. Sending Lily home is a generous act from his part."

At this moment, Trenton also nodded. "True... If nobody escorted Lily back after her fighting prowess was destroyed, who knew what dangers she'd face as she returned alone. Surely, the White family won't send somebody to escort her back. Xavier's action of proactively sending my daughter back here is considered as him doing something great for our Lagorio family."

The First Elder, after hearing their rational thoughts, nodded, "You're right... And I acted out of impulse just now. Thankfully, the old master stopped me, or I would've done something I'd regret for life. After all, Xavier sent Eldest Miss back without anyone telling him and if I killed him then and there, we'd get the bad brunt of it all if people found out."

"Nevermind, nevermind... We'll be enemies in the future, and we can attack without holding back the next time we meet him." The old master sighed before he added," Lily gave us a lot of martial enhancement material during the previous two to three years, and our family has grown quite a lot, though we still beat them-both parties will lose. We still need to make plans if we want to avenge Lily."

Diana said angrily, "It's indisputable Nash is responsible over how my daughter ended up in this situation today. Why did he have to get Joan and Jack back home? None of this would've happened if he didn't have such thoughts. He should've focused on solely searching for and making him the family master! He's the one in the wrong, and that's why my daughter would go to such extremes."

Another slightly younger middle-aged man also said angrily, "We have to avenge my sister. Sadly, it' s been four months and we still haven't found Lance without even a clue or lead to where he is. It's going to be very difficult. Not only him, but there's also no clues about those from the other families. After all, they went hunting for treasures together!"

"No matter what, let's send a dozen people to start searching from tomorrow onward. If we don' t do that, Lily will forever be restless." The old man smiled bitterly. He thought about it and soon his eyes lit up. "Oh yes, I almost forgot. One month later, there will be a martial art competition among the younger generations of the eight reclusive families, right? A martial art competition that happens once every three years. Perhaps we can use that to our advantage."

Trenton's eyes also lit up after he heard this and smilingly added," Yes, this is a huge event. The White family definitely suffered a huge loss after what happened this time. If we tell others about this, many families which are of the same capabilities as them won 't agree to their position and identity!"

Diana thought about it and said, "Some families had quite the rift with the White family, such as the Cabello family, and there are also those who had smaller disputes with them. If we can drive a wedge between them and deepen their conflicts, we'd be able to act together with them. There's a possibility for us to win if we fight against the White family together!"

Old Master Lagorio also nodded and said, "Seems like rallying with other families will be our only option; we'd be delusional if we plan to wipe out the White family on our own."

Chapter 1222

Diana frowned when she thought about it. "Though these families have misunderstandings with White family, it's nothing too bad, too much. Previously, some families suppressed them and didn't want them to rise, but Nash was really good at handling issues. He disciplined his subordinates and stopped them from having conflicts with the others. Hence, it's obviously very difficult to let them and the White family completely start a war with just mere misunderstandings."

Old Master Lagorio also nodded and said, “Don't worry, there will be opportunities. Otherwise, we'll make some our own."

From then on, The Lagorios readied themselves and became the White family's enemy.

Jack woke up early the next morning and went to wash up. Walking to the garden soon after, he noted Daniella was already waiting for him there.

Smiling, Jack spoke, "You're up so early this morning, Third Young Mistress Cabello!"

"Can't I do that? Hmph. You'll probably sneak away had I woken up any later. What should I do by then?" Daniella pursed her delicate mouth and placed both hands behind her back before she poked, "Anyways, I don't care. I'm following you for these two to three days before my fighting prowess returns, when I can use my Chi again."

"Alright, you can follow me if you' re alright with wearing yourself out. After all, you can't keep asking me to carry you on my back as we're traveling for such a long journey, no?" Jack shrugged his shoulders and walked toward the main entrance..

"I never thought of that! You came up with that yourself!"

Daniella's face flushed a crimson red as she followed behind Jack. She then pursed her lips and said, "Did you have that thought since you carried me yesterday? Did you gain something out of it?"

Jack was speechless. "You seem really confident of your own beauty."

"That's for sure. My beauty is obvious for all to see!" Daniella had an arrogant expression on her face as she followed behind Jack, though she grew abashed at what she spoke. "But, seeing you rescued me yesterday, I guess I can let you carry me."

The fact that Jack allowed Nikini to join the main family yesterday made Daniella see Jack in a new light. It seemed like Jack was quite kind, and his act could win the hearts of the people. This caused members of the branch families to completely venerate him.

As they walked toward the village' s entrance, Jack noticed that Mason and the others were already there, waiting for them.

"You're all up so early in the morning!" Jack smiled and was slightly moved-it was evident they wanted to see him off.

"Young Master Jack, we prepared a fine steed for you, and this is the best horse among all the horse thieves' horses!" Mason led a horse over and smilingly explained, "This is Blood Dragon Horse and can be considered a low -level monster beast. Swift and speedy, it won't take you long to reach the next branch family. The most important point is that you'll be able to conserve your Chi if you don't use it to fly, right?"

Jack's expression shifted uneasily as Mason explained it all. "What a gift you've prepared for me, but I've never ridden a horse before, and I don't know how to ride this even if you give it to me."

"How's that possible.? You don't know how to ride horses?!" Many were stunned at Jack's reply. Everybody was a trainer, and most of them knew how to ride such horses. Jack not knowing how to ride a horse baffled them.

However, it seemed true when they thought about it. Jack was different from the others as he had returned from the outside world. It was normal that he had not practiced riding a Blood Dragon Horse.

"I know how!"

Chapter 1223

Although she could not use her Chi, Daniella still retained her physical strength.

Hoisting herself up with, one hand, Daniella saddled herself on the back of the horse, smiling at Jack as she called out, "Come sit behind me; I'll carry you!"

"This doesn't seem right, though ...?" Jack felt slightly embarrassed, seeing they were of two different genders. This Third Young Mistress Cabello was not only pretty, but she had a nice figure to boot as well. Jack tried not to hold back unnecessary thoughts when he carried her on his back yesterday, though he was still a young and vigorous man, so there were occasions where he still had some interruptions in his thoughts.

If he had to sit behind Daniella on that horse throughout their journey, he feared that...

Daniella, on the other hand, silently harbored interest in Jack when she noted how shy he was when a rather 'interesting' opportunity was given between the two.

She rolled her eyes at Jack and sourly remarked, "Are you a man? You don't even have the balls to jump up here. I'm only willing to carry you because you carried me up the mountain yesterday, and I want to pay back this favor. Alas, though you're a man, you're still not man enough to get up here."

Mason tried to bite back a smile as he stood near. Why did it sound like these two were flirting like lovers?

Apart from that, he prepared one horse for today with hopes to see them riding a horse when Daniella left with Jack. Who could have expected that Jack would not do it?

"Who says I'm not man enough? You're no tiger-you think I'm afraid of you?"

Jack threw himself up and saddled the horse behind Daniella.

However, Jack dared not sit too close, seeing the physical differences of men and women. He purposely distanced himself so their bodies would not touch.

"We'll meet again at the main family's residence, Young Master Jack, but it seems like we'll have to wait much longer, seeing as you may need around one month to finish doing everything." Mason waved his hand with a smile when he saw how awkward Jack had gotten.

"Goodbye, Young Master Jack!" Everybody immediately waved and said goodbye to Jack.

“Alright, everybody, do go back. You've gotten lots of martial enhancement materials after we wiped out the horse thieves, so it's best if you guys take this time to train well. Those who are able to break

through should strive to go up another level." Jack looked at the crowd as he waved and bade farewell.

"We'll take our leave no. Go!" Daniella pulled the reins and softly nudged the horse with her heel. The tall and handsome Blood Dragon Horse, with that, began to race away.

"Ah!" Caught off guard at the sudden motion, Jack was frightened as the horse rushed forward, stopping for a while before it raced again. Jack fell right against Daniella's back due to inertia, hugging Daniella's waist in a conditioned reflex.

"Ah!" Daniella shrieked at the sudden contact, blushing sheepishly as her heart raced. She was inwardly relieved, nonetheless, as the horse had brought them several hundred meters away from the eyes of the White branch family members... How embarrassing would it be if they saw it all!

Jack was flushed out embarrassed. “This... This horse runs really fast!" His heart thumped uncontrollably as he hugged her delicate waist. Their bodies rubbed against each other as the horse galloped and ran. All out of ideas and embarrassed, Jack attempted to shift the awkwardness with a different topic.

Chapter 1224

"This horse is rather fast!" Daniella had ridden a fair share of Blood Dragon Horses when she was young, though she stopped as she grew up and trained'her fighting prowess instead.

Never before had a man sat behind her with his arms around her waist; never did she think such a day would come as well.

Her heart was thrashing against her ribcage that it felt like jumping out of her chest at that moment.

All Daniella could do was act normal and speak normally. With Jack's chest against her back, she felt much shier than she was yesterday when Jack carried her.

It was not long when Jack realized something quickly reminded Daniella, "No, no, we're going the wrong way. Go right!"

That baffled Daniella. "Well, why didn't you say so earlier? I don't know where your next branch family is located!" Not knowing where to go, she only knew to continuously run forward and had totally forgotten to ask Jack which direction to go.

"There's a small power that relies on our family over there. Although they're not members of the White branch families, they' ve been treating the White family well. They had always handed in materials based on the requested percentage. We can't leave any of these powers when we're choosing prodigies to join the main family!"

Jack smiled and spoke, "We can't let them down, right?"

"No, we can't... Seems like you really think for everyone else. You' ll make a good family master if someone like you becomes the family master!" Daniella blushed." However, the family master's position is normally inherited by the family master's son. If your father isn't the family master, you won't inherit the family master title no matter how talented you

are."

That caught Jack off-guard.

Daniella obviously knew Jack was one of the young masters from the White main family. He might be the son of an elder or a patronum and was out running chores for the family. What she did not know was that Jack was indeed the White family master's son and the main family master's inheritor.

He smiled sheepishly. "I'm not really interested in that."

Daniella wore a silk dress, and though it was made of good material, it was still rather thin. With nowhere to place his hands, Jack wrapped his arms around her waist and felt the silkiness of her skin at the same time.

Considering it was his first time riding a horse-and a rather feisty, fast one at that-he feared he would fall down. Because of that, he could only act nonchalant and placed his hands on her waist.

He purposely made small talk with Daniella the entire trip with hopes to ease the embarrassing atmosphere.

"You're genuinely not interested in the family master position. You' re quite a special person!" Daniella grew interested in getting to know Jack in their journey, and she noticed that.

This man was obviously different from the other men she met previously.

However, Daniella could not help but frown after they rode on for some time...

The embarrassing thought occurred to her as she blushed so much that blood seemed to be bursting out from it.

Jack was also speechless, thinking of how disappointing his acts were.

Soon, the both of them arrived at the entrance of a small village.

Chapter 1225

Both Jack and Daniella got down from the horse right after it stopped.

The blushing Daniella tied the horse under a tree not far from where they were before she walked back to Jack. "Well? How's your first experience riding a horse?" she spoke in an attempt to diffuse the awkward atmosphere, only realizing moments later how wrong it sounded.

Did she just ask Jack how he felt?

To disperse the tension, Jack so casually replied, “It's my first time riding a horse. I felt quite nervous initially, but it became exciting soon after!"

Jack noted that Daniella's face turned a crimson red after he spoke as she lowered her face, not daring to meet his gaze.

"Alright! Let's go in!" Jack's behavior baffled her-'this man just blatantly said it was 'exciting.

What a pervert! How could it not be when he held her by the waist? Jack probably liked her, but he refused to admit it.

Jack was also speechless as he knew that this pretty last had misunderstood him. However, he did not know how to explain himself. Why did he even say it was 'exciting' in the first place?

Not long after they entered the village, two men guarding the entrance walked forward to them and spoke, "Greetings. The two of you are...?"

Jack smiled indifferently. "I'm from the White main family. Please ask your family master to come out."

"Somebody from the main family?" One of them was stunned as they had never seen Jack. They nodded in doubt before going in to make the report.

Soon, the master of this clan came out with several people, his expression shifting into excitement when he saw that it was Jack. He quickly brought his people with him and greeted them, "Greetings, Young Master Jack!"

"Jack? It's Jack!" Many from this small clan that relied on the White family had never met Jack, though they had heard about things happening in the main family after their family master returned. When they heard that the person before them was Jack, all of them were extremely excited.

"Greetings, Young Master Jack!" Everybody immediately saluted him.

"There's no need for such politeness. I'm here today to choose two prodigies for training at our main family. I believe that Master Asher Owens has informed everybody?" addressed the smiling Jack.

"Yes, he told us!" One of the elders of this power immediately walked forward happily and nodded in satisfaction. "The family master told us that Young Master Jack might come over to pick, prodigies and asked us to make a preselection. We've made our selection, but we thought that you won't be coming. After all, we're a small clan that doesn't carry the White family surname... We thought you won't be coming."

The elder then glanced at Daniella as he smilingly added, "However, our family master only said that Young Master Jack was coming; we never thought you'd bring your wife as well. We've heard rumors about how extremely beautiful Young Master Jack's wife is. Seeing her now in person, she really lives up to the rumors!"

"Wife?" Jack was baffled, stunned silent at such a remark. It seemed like this old man had never met Selena, so he thought Daniella was his wife.

Daniella, who stood next to them, blushed so hard, wanting to bury herself in a deep hole.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1226-1230

Chapter 1226

"Oh my, Mrs. Jack White is so abashed that she's blushing like a little girl! Nonetheless, you still look sweeter. No wonder Young Master Jack chose you!" added the elder, much to everyone's surprise.

That comment filled Daniella with mirth.

She rolled her eyes at the other party flirtatiously before speaking, "You're right about me being beautiful, but I'm not his wife."

"W...What?" The elder was embarrassed when he heard that. Had he gotten it all wrong?

Go back to exit full-screen view.

Jack gave an awkward smile before he walked forward to explain, "This is Third Young Mistress Cabello, Ms. Daniella. Please don't misunderstand us."

The elder was shocked to hear Jack's explanation. "Third Young Mistress Cabello? She's one of the well-known bells, which is why I assumed her identity wrongly. After all, I heard Young Master Jack's wife is also extremely gorgeous and that...that's why I misunderstood. Please forgive me, Third Young Mistress!"

"Don't sweat it-one who doesn't know, isn't guilty! After all, you've never seen me before, too!" Daniella waved her hand dismissively, though the butterflies still fluttered in her stomach. After all, that meant that she looked gorgeous, and any girl would have been just as flattered with such a compliment.

Jack was dumbfounded at the elder. "Seems like you've got a knack for flattery!" He could see that this old guy was flattering them with wishes so he could make a good impression or familiarize himself with Jack. Never did the elder think the person following Jack was the young miss of the Cabello family.

"By the way, since you had your pick from your people, ask them to come out so that I can register their name," said Jack, getting back to business.

Startled, the Owens' family master stuttered, "They c-can register right now?"

Jack was slightly stunned before he said, “Definitely. It's alright since you people have made your choices and there are no objections. It saves up my time too!"

"It's no trouble at all! I just feel like we're dreaming right now... I thought that you'd ignore us after analyzing our people, knowing their fighting prowess isn't good enough!"

The Owens' family master glanced at the boy-andgirl pair from his clan before he added, "After all, small clans like us normally don't have any martial enhancement resources, so although they're quite talented, their fighting prowess reaches only the ninth-grade grandmaster level. They aren't even in the elementary level of the semi-god stage. I fear you'll regret having them when you find that their fighting prowess is too low..!"

Jack immediately replied with a smile, "It's not about whether anyone's suitable or not. It doesn't matter if you're big or small clans -you're still clans of our White family, and every clan has at least two positions. How can I take your two positions because of a low count of members or 'not good enough' prodigies? This would be hard to explain. Our White family aren't like that!"

After he spoke, Jack looked at the two young people and said, "What are your names? Come and register yourselves."

"Thank... Thank you, Young Master Jack!"

The young man and woman glanced at each other, joy filling their eyes as they walked toward Jack and registered their names.

Jack smiled and said, "Alright, you guys can prepare yourselves to register at the main family."

"Young Master Jack, do you want to go in and take a rest? It's still early, no?"

Chapter 1227

One of the elders walked forward and looked at Jack expectantly.

Jack glanced at the young man and woman in front of her. He thought about it and said, "How about this: I'll go take a rest first, but can you both meet me in my room about one hour from now?"

“Alright, Young Master Jack!" The young man and woman looked at each other. Although they were slightly puzzled, they still nodded and agreed to it.

Soon, the Owens family arranged residence for Jack and Daniella in a secluded garden.

"Weren't you in a hurry? Why aren't you in a hurry now?" Daniella glanced at Jack and said curiously. "Why did you ask the geniuses of this family to meet you in your room later? Is there something that you need to personally tell them?"

"The two of them are ninth-grade grandmasters, and they're only one step away from the elementary stage of the semi-god level," Jack explained to her. "I happen to have several groups of ingredients for pills. I can cultivate one for each of them and help them break into the elementary stage of the semi-god level."

"You... You know how to cultivate pills?" Daniella was taken aback by the news, she did not know Jack knew how to cultivate pills.

After all, alchemy was not something any random person could learn... That meant Jack had to be talented enough and had a high mental capacity.

Smiling, Jack replied, “I learned by myself and had some knowledge as to how to cultivate certain pills. I can't say that I'm well-versed in it!"

That added more shock into her system. It was difficult to enter the field of alchemy without a teacher, or anyone for that matter, to guide him, yet Jack told her that he learned everything himself?

Goodness... What a genius!

"You're really clever." Eyes lit up with interest, Daniella insisted," No, I need to see it with my own eyes!"

Jack frowned and glanced at her before he spoke, “I'll let you, but you can't make a sound as it'll disturb me. The art of alchemy requires the alchemist to be one hundred percent focused, and no one should interrupt them."

"Alright, alright, I get it!" Daniella pursed her lips and smiled.

They both closed the door to their room and, with a flip of Jack's hand, he took out a small pill furnace.

Meanwhile, at the entrance of the village, the young man and woman stood under the trees as they conversed.

The man leaned against the tree and looked at the young woman in front of him curiously. "Why do you think Young Master Jack asked us to enter his room after an hour? Is there something important that he had to purposely stay here for?"

"Who knows? We'll know about it in a while, won't we?" The young woman had a smile on her face." Never thought Young Master Jack is that fetching, and added to that mix is his kindness in offering us two positions even though we're a small clan. We need to train well in the future and fight to break through to the semi-god level. We need to be masters of the semi-god level after we reach the White main family!"

Her excitement was met with the young man's worried expression." I'm worried. You're so beautiful, could Young Master Jack have other thoughts toward you? I mean, why else would he change his mind when he planned to leave right after finishing his business here?"

Chapter 1228

However, the young woman rolled her eyes at the young man. "What are you talking about? Why would he ask you to go come along if he' s interested in just me? Unnecessary, no? Would he ask you to observe us when he takes advantage of me?"

The guy smiled bitterly. "I'm worried because you're quite the pretty face. What if Jack made up that excuse because everyone else was present-including the family master-and have me leave after we both go to him later? What if he asks you to go into the room alone? We'll never know!"

"What are you talking about? Young Master Jack isn't that kind of person!" The young woman once again rolled her eyes at the young man before a sweet smile appeared on her face. "It's good if such a prepossessing man like Young Master Jack can fancy me... but I heard that his wife is dropdead gorgeous. You can see what a beauty that Third Young Mistress Cabello is. I think those two share a tight bond, which probably explains why such an angel is willing to follow him!"

The young man frowned. "Didn't they explain themselves? The woman isn't his wife, and they're only friends!"

"Are you really dumb?" grumbled the young lady. "Just think about it: If they truly are just friends, how can they both share a horse? I can see the eyes of the Third Young Mistress of Cabello lighting up when she looked at Young Master Jack. They obviously have an unusual relationship, even if they aren't husband and wife!"

"You got a point. Why didn't they ride two horses and instead rode just one? Seems like it truly is some ambiguous relationship!" The man nodded and thought about it before speaking again, "Of course, no harm in them both being together; the Cabello family is hauntingly powerful after all. The White family's position must ve plummeted after what happened with the Third Elder and First Madam. If Jack can be together with the young miss of the Cabello family, it ensures a prosperous development for our White family!"

The young lady frowned. "Yeah, that's true, but the relationship between the White family and Cabello family has always been strained. Hence, it's definitely difficult for the Cabello family's master to give them blessings..."

Meanwhile...

Busied with cultivating pills in the room, Jack would have been appalled to hear whatever the Owens family's prodigies were discussing outside.

Daniella, who was by his side, fell silent in awe at what she saw-the pills Jack cultivated were indeed first -grade intermediate pills. The most important thing was how skilled Jack was. He looked almost the same as a First Elder who had researched pills for many years.

Daniella was completely attracted to Jack when she saw how focused he was. As his expression would shift from frowning to smiling lightly, Jack's expressions seemingly affected her thoughts. She eyed the changes in his mood, his nervousness, and happiness. It was as if Jack was not the person cultivating the pills but her as well.

"Done!" Finally, Jack raised his hand and finished cultivating a furnace of pills. Two pills flew upward before landing in Jack's palm.

The pills looked round and plump. They carried a faint smell of herbs and medicine and were obviously of good quality

"Look at you, you're all sweaty!" Daniella could not help but take out her handkerchief and helped wipe Jack's forehead when she saw that Jack had completed cultivating the pills.

Her beautiful eyes looked very serious when she helped him.

"Err, well... Thank you!" Jack had an embarrassed expression on his face as he smiled shyly, placing the furnace away.

Chapter 1229

Resting for a couple of minutes, the Owens family's prodigies came to Jack's room not long after.

"Young Master Jack, is there anything important that you've asked us to come?" asked the duo curiously, glancing at one another when they realized that Daniella was also in the room.

Jack had cultivated five firstgrade intermediate-level pills just now. He took two out with a flip of his hand and said, "Here's one for each of you. These are first-grade intermediate-level pills, used to increase fighting prowess. They should be able to help you both break through and achieve the elementary level of the semi-god stage. I suggest that you both spend some time here and leave for the main family after you've broken through. That would help increase your speed when you travel."

"W-What? This...this is for us?" The young man gulped, wondering if he heard wrongly. These were pills, and having these were much better than having spirited grass.

It was because of this that pills were extremely precious and hard to obtain.

Jack had genuinely taken two incredibly rare items to give them both!

"Thank you, Young Master!" The young girl took the pills with a small frown on her face before her expression shifted into utter shock and awe. "Why... Why are these still hot?"

The man took the other pill and was just as surprised. "Oh, my stars... It's still hot! Are these recently cultivated?"

Jack nodded at their shocked faces. "Haha...! Yes, they are, considering I had just cultivated them. There's no loss of Chi from the pills, so the effects are best if you take it right now. While it's not much, the pills will gradually lose their Chi."

"You're incredible, Young Master Jack! Did you truly cultivate these pills yourself? That's mighty kind of you to cultivate these yourselves for us!" The young girl was extremely excited. "I... I don't know how to thank you for this!"

"That's right, Young Master Jack. I had no idea that you're so nice and considerate toward us..." The guy gazed at Jack appreciatively yet guiltily, as he did secondguess Jack while he stayed in the residence merely to cultivate pills for them. He thought Jack had his eye on his beautiful prodigy companion from

their Owens family. Thinking back at it, he truly was gauging the heart of a gentleman with his own mean measures!

“Alright, we should leave. I need to save time and complete my mission as soon as possible!" Jack glanced at the two prodigies and said, "The two of you don't need to send me off; just train well. The best way to repay me is to break through the semi-god level soon."

They then left for the village's entrance once more. At this moment, the Blood Dragon Horse was full and was enjoying the warm sunshine.

Daniella brought the horse over, subtly shy when she glanced at Jack. Getting up the horse, she said to Jack, “Come up. I don't know which directions the next branch family is at, so you need to lead the way!"

Chapter 1230

"Thank you very much...!" Still embarrassed at what happened this morning, he fought his shyness and got up the horse's back, sitting behind Daniella.

"Are you sure you don't want to hold on to me? Don't fall later!" reminded the blushing Daniella.

"Alright...!" replied Jack before placing his hands around Daniella' s waist from behind.

Recalling something, Daniella then said, "Oh, right. The triennial martial arts competition among the reclusive families is coming up next month. Although it's just for us to learn from each other, it bears great importance for the eight families and the other reclusive families. As a member of the White main family, you have such high fighting prowess. You'll definitely join since you must be a genius of the main family, right?"

Jack nodded. "My father told me about that, and that's why I got to make this trip of choosing prodigies for the main family short. I need to go back earlier so that I can join this martial arts competition, and that's why I don' t want to rest here for too long, leaving once everything is settled."

Jack paused for a moment before a smile grew on his face as he spoke, "I'm lucky that the White branch families aren't far from the clans depending on us. I'll get to wrap up everything if I get to it quickly."

"But you'll still be out of time!" Daniella thought about it and said, "I got an idea: Why don't I just take the reins on the horse from now on? This will be much faster. You' ll only wear yourself out and deplete your Chi if I leave and you rely on flying. You'll also need more time, too!"

"It doesn't sound too good..." Jack was embarrassed. Riding the horse from one place to another would spare him several days, and they would need an estimated 20 days to get things done.

If things went out of plan, however, they would need at least 20 more days, meaning he would not have enough time to return for the tournament.

"Hey, what's not good about it? If it wasn't for you, I would've been insulted by that bastard back then, and that's even worse than killing me. This is the same as saving my life, do you understand? You saved my life, so what's the big about me helping you?" Smiling, Daniella then added, "Of course, you'll have to repay me since I'm helping you!"

"What is it, then?" Jack frowned, never expecting she would ask for a favor after she offered him help without him asking for it.

"It's simple: I'd like to follow you to the White family and take a look after we're done. I've never been to the White family yet. Will you welcome me there?" Daniella was filled with expectations. Not only was Jack handsome, but he had a respectable position and identity. He was nice to people and even knew how to cultivate pills. To her, Jack had surpassed many of the young masters who had courted her.

Those genius young masters who bore great positions seemingly paled insignificantly when compared to Jack, and that was no stretch nor lie.

"This doesn't sound too good, right?" Jack was slightly worried.

After all, the Cabello family and the White family never had a good relationship. Should the Cabellos turn hostile entirely, things would take a turn for the worse as Daniella knew where their branch families were.

"Hey, what's so bad about that?" Daniella soon thought of something. "I get it... Knowing that the White family and the Cabellos aren't on good terms, you don't want to let me go there, right? True, the Cabello family doesn't have a good relationship with the White family, but it's not that bad, right? Apart from that, I can't completely represent the Cabello family. I just want to go to the White family and play!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1231-1235

Chapter 1231

Jack fell silent for a moment before he spoke, “That's not the only problem. You've been out for so long, and if you don't go back, the Cabello family members will search everywhere for you when they learn you've been captured. Won't your parents be worried if you don't go back for such a long time?"

Daniella's face darkened when she heard this. She thought about it and said, "They don't know I was captured by Munro Quinn. All they know is that I've gone out to play, so they won't be too worried since I have good fighting prowess, though they'll still worry if I don't come home after quite some time."

Stopping the horse at that moment, she turned to Jack and smilingly spoke, "However, I've made up my mind to follow you to the White family to play. After all, you guys will be joining the martial arts competition within several days, so I'll follow you to the competition and meet my parents then..."

"A... Alright!" Jack nodded, agreeing to her stance. It was nice to have a genial relationship with this Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family, and he would at least get information about the Cabello family...even if it was to learn about the Cabellos' first elder so he could take the ancient book from them.

Jack kept his thoughts in check, however, reminding himself that he needed to prioritize breaking through into the intermediate or the later stage of the true-god level. Only then could he get the ancient

book.

Otherwise, he would not stand a chance against that person.

Jack thought about it and set a goal for himself. "It's alright. Fernando has three years, so I'll try my best to strive and grow as quickly as I can."

"That's set, then. You've made your promise!" Delighted that Jack agreed to her, she then called out to the horse as it began to gallop again.

As the saying went, 'familiarity breeds fondness,' they both met every day for the next 20 days as Jack would sit behind Daniella and held her waist. Unknowingly, an unfamiliar feeling for Daniella blossomed within Jack.

There were even times when Jack could not control his excitement when he sat behind this beauty and caught whiffs of her pleasant scent.

His understanding of Daniella had grown over those 20 days. While she was considerably arrogant and spoilt by the Cabello family, she was not a bad person. Apart from that, she was also a simple and uncomplicated person.

She did not seem to place her guard up against Jack, at least.

"Goodness, I'm tired from all this running around with you during these couple of days!" When they finally left the last branch family, Daniella, who was on the horse's back, could not help but complain. "Apart from that, there are several clans and families on this trip who think I'm your beautiful wife. I'm really looking forward to seeing how your wife looks."

"The past couple of days must've been tiring for you!" Jack smiled." As for my wife, you'll meet her as you follow me to the White family."

"It must've been tiring for you? No, that won't do-you gotta treat me to a drink at least!" said the grinning Daniella

"Alright. Let's go left and follow that direction. We can rest for a night if we see a town, seeing that it's almost nightfall. I'll treat you to a drink tonight as a reward for your help these couple of days. How does that sound?"

"That's more like it!" Daniella rolled her eyes at Jack, but her heart felt like it was lathered by something honey-like and sweet.

Chapter 1232

Thus, they continued their journey ahead on their steed, with Daniella eager at the thought of having dinner with Jack alone.

Moreover, she found that being next to Jack gave her a sense of security. Although he was six or seven years older than her, the mature Jack made her even more fascinated as she spent days with him.

He was a far cry from the other young masters that gifted her roses, chocolates, jade pendants, and spirited grasses. They bored her senseless.

Eventually, the duo arrived outside a small town as the sky slowly turned dark.

The small town seemed rather vast as it was brightly lit at this hour, festive-looking as many night market stalls were put up on the streets.

"Not bad... This small town looks much like an ancient, bygone town. What a sight for sore eyes!" Daniella had a smile on her face as she walked on the wide bluestone street with the tall Blood dragon Horse in tow.

"Feel free to tell me whatever you' d like to eat, Third Young Mistress Cabello, there's no need to be polite. You can choose from any of these restaurants!"

"There's a hotel in front that looks promising, too!" said Jack to Daniella as he enjoyed the night view.

"Well, I don't want to go to big hotels. Let's just find a small restaurant with a better environment; that's the highlight of it all!" Daniella nodded before turning to Jack again and said," By the way, can you stop addressing me as Third Young Mistress Cabello? You know that you...you can call me Daniella, right?"

"Alright, Daniella." Jack smiled. The two of them walked for a while before they found a quaint yet pleasant restaurant.

"Let's go to the second floor. We can still sit on the side of the second floor and enjoy the night view of the streets below." Daniella pulled Jack, ready to go to the second floor after asking the waiter to bring the horse to the stables.

Two muscular men guarded the staircase that led to the second floor, however, and when they saw Jack and Daniella about to go upstairs, one of them stopped the duo with an extended hand.

"What's the meaning of this?" Daniella frowned, confused at the sudden gesture.

Eyeing them both, one of the men sneered, "Guests, in our restaurant, the first floor is for the commoners, but the second floor is different. Only the young masters in our town can afford to pay for things that are served on the second floor. Besides, the recipes here are different. They serve monster beasts' meat, and spirited stones are used to pay the bill, got it?"

Spirited stones were materials that martial artists often used for training, and they contain immense Chi. The purer the stone, the more Chi it contained.

Ordinary low-grade spirit stones were similar to Chi Congregation Pills, but its effects were not as good as Chi Congregation Pills.

However, the more advanced middle-grade or high-grade spirit stones were far more potent than the Chi Congregation Pills, especially the high-grade spirit stones that were awfully rare. A high-grade spirit stone was equal to one hundred medium-grade spirit stones.

Of course, there were also the legendary top-grade spirit stones, which only existed in legends. No one had ever seen them since topgrade spirit stones were also rarely seen. It was considered good enough to occasionally see some middle-grade spirit stones.

Being a martial artist meant that they obviously did not have much interest in money. They basically trade with spirit stones, as spirit stones were much more practical.

Therefore, the two Herculean men thought that Jack and Daniella could not afford to be on the second floor when they could not recognize them as any members of the families in this town.

Chapter 1233

Much like casual martial artists, people like them would only have small amounts of spirited stones. It was considered nice to have several pieces, though they would use such spirited stones to train and try improving themselves as much as possible. How could they use it for food?

"This is ridiculous! Open your doglike eyes and see who I am! Do I look like somebody who can't afford a meal?" It was apparent that Daniella had never received such treatment in the past as she was on the verge of exploding. She never expected to be looked down on when she came to a small town for food.

"What are you talking about, young girl? Do you know who the boss of our restaurant is? How dare you say 'open your dog-like eyes' to us! Haha...! Let me tell you this: even employees like us aren't people you can simply offend!" The burly man immediately got angry and looked at Daniella despicably. "You're a stunner, but that's all you are, no cash on you. Women like you are trophy women -what else would you know apart from looking pretty?"

"That's right!" The other burly man also immediately chimed in." I think you're just a trophy woman, too. Haha...! If you can't afford things, just let this handsome young man treat you to a simple meal. You want something nice instead? You look like the leeching type, those who' 11 dip after having their fill!"

Not forgetting Jack, the man turned to him next. "Young man, you look like a good person, so I'll leave you a piece of advice: There are many women out there who suck people dry these days. You should be careful and not let her control you."

"What the f*ck..? I'm really, really angry now!" Daniella saw red at that instant. She was the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family, a family completely capable of entering the top three positions among the eight reclusive families. They had three people with the fighting prowess of peak level true god stage, and such power was much stronger than the White family, who was at the bottom of the food chain.

As the third young mistress of the Cabello family, she was treated as a precious girl among the Three Golden Flowers.

Both her sisters spoiled her and her entire family loved her.

How could she not be angry when somebody called her a trophy woman that leeched off of others?

Before Jack could speak, she threw her fist at one of the men, squarely at his abdomen.

Thomp!

The burly man flew backward for a couple of meters before landing on the ground, and blood leaked out of his mouth.

Daniella could utilize her Chi, one with power of a peak stage semigod level master that no regular person could withstand.

Hence, a simple punch would inflict intense pain on her opponent.

"How dare you cause trouble here! Do you have a death wish or something?!" The other burly man was enraged at what transpired. Balling his hands into fists, he threw one at Daniella.

"Pfft! You, alone?!" Noting how the man was charging straight for her, Daniella swung her fist and sent that person flying.

Thump!

That guy also fell to the ground and vomited blood.

A man soon rushed in from the entrance with a dozen people and surrounded the duo. "Who are you? How dare you cause trouble in the place owned by our Murphy family?"

Chapter 1234

Upon seeing who came for them, both burly men scrambled to their feet from the floor as they whimpered and muttered, "Young master, this young girl is too...too much..! She hit members of our Murphy family!"

Annoyed, Young Master Murphy glared at both men. "You're both useless. You can't even win in a fight against a woman!"

"Young Master, this woman has the fighting prowess of the semi-god level, and it's only natural that we in the grandmaster stage will lose..!" one of them reasoned as he held his abdomen, face scrunched up in pain. "She doesn' t look to be from around here and seems to be more than just a casual trainer!"

"Semi-god level?" Young Master Murphy's face darkened when he heard this. A person with this level of fighting prowess would be regarded as a master.

His father was also in the final stages of the semi-god level and was a considerably formidable force in

this town. Their family also had several masters, but they could not go offending some master of the semi-god level, especially those of the last or peak stage.

That was why he held back from promptly acting out, even though many were present.

Jack, who was next to them, smiled indifferently and said," They deserved what came for them. This is the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family, yet they dared to ridicule and said she 's a trophy woman. Aren't they asking for it?"

"Cabello family...?" Although Young Master Murphy was a young master in this small town, he was quite knowledgeable. He inhaled sharply when he learned she was from the Cabello family and noticed how beautiful this young woman in front of him was.

The Cabello family was one of the eight reclusive families.

“Here, this is my token." Daniella flipped her hand and revealed a black-colored token, shoving it to their faces soon after.

The other party broke out in cold sweat when he recognized the token and thanked himself for not picking a fight with them both. He was also lucky that he did not have other thoughts when he saw how beautiful this girl was.

Otherwise...

Forget the restaurant, their entire Murphy family would disappear from this world in a blink of an eye.

"It really i-is the Third Young Mistress Cabello!" The man from the Murphy family gulped before turning to the two well-built men and barked, "You buffoons! This is the third young mistress of the Cabello family! How dare you two offend her?"

Terrified, both men knelt on the ground and bowed incessantly as they begged Daniella, "We're sorry, Third Young Mistress Cabello! Please forgive us! We're really ignorant and had no idea that Third Young Mistress Cabello would come to such a humble place as ours. That is why we offended you!"

"Hmph!" Daniella indignantly spoke, “Who gave you the right to call me a trophy woman? Take them out and kill them, or I'll wipe out the entire Murphy family!"

Overwhelmed with horror, Young Master Murphy inhaled deeply and snapped, "Take them both out and kill them!"

There was nothing he could have done. Under such circumstances, comforting Third Young Mistress Cabello was better than anything befalling on the Murphy family.

"Please forgive us, Third Young Mistress..! We know that we're at fault, and we won't do it again!" Both burly men were so frightened that their legs turned into jelly and were paralyzed on the floor.

Several other men pulled up both men, ready to take them outside.

"Let it go, Daniella. You can't blame them, seeing as they genuinely don't know who you are," interjected Jack after assessing the situation. "I say, have them slap themselves a thousand times and we'll let this go."

Daniella blushed when she heard what Jack said, but she nonetheless turned to the Murphies and said, "Alright, alright. I won't take your lives as Jack is treating me to a meal today. Since he asked for forgiveness on your behalf, I'll spare you both. Slap yourselves for a hundred times then!"

"Of course, of course...!"

Chapter 1235

Relieved that they were pardoned, both burly men knelt again and started slapping themselves.

"Thank you for forgiving the faults of these petty people, Miss Cabello!" Young Master Murphy was also relieved. After all, these two subordinates of his were at the grandmaster level. They were fifth or sixth-grade grandmasters, and such fighting prowess was considered stellar to the Murphy family. That was why they were sent to guard the restaurant.

He never foresaw such an event would happen, and it made him feel helpless.

He thought about it and said again, "All of you, listen to me: Everything Third Young Mistress Cabello orders tonight will be free, understand?"

"Yes, Sir!" The other waiters in the restaurant immediately replied.

"That's more like it!" Daniella patted Young Master Murphy on his shoulder when she saw how understanding he was. "Remember to ask your subordinates to not look down on others in the future. I'm not the only one they can't afford to offend. This good friend of mine is the White family's young master, and they shouldn't cross him as well. He can wipe out your entire town with one hand. Do you believe that?"

"I believe... I do believe..." Young Master Murphy's sweat dripped down his forehead unknowingly. Still, it made sense that the friends of Third Young Mistress Cabello had high positions. How else could they be qualified to stand beside the Third Young Mistress Cabello?

Jack smiled and said, “Let's go."

Danielle turned and walked upstairs before remembering something. "Serve us a serving of every specialty you have here!" she called out.

"A...Alright!" Young Master Murphy wiped his cold sweat and nodded vehemently.

"That's more like it!" Daniella smiled and turned to walk up the stairs.

"Goodness... Who would've known that the Cabello family's third young mistress and the White family's young master would come to our town? F*ck... My heart shook at that! Our Murphy family nearly got destroyed!" Young Master Murphy relaxed as both Jack and Daniella went upstairs, and he then noted how his legs turned to jelly.

"Luckily, that guy helped us to beg for forgiveness, or we would've died!" The two burly men, their faces swollen and bruised from all their slaps, were inwardly relieved. They never imagined that two people of such honorable positions would dine at a humble place like theirs.

"We have a situation, Young Master!" At this moment, a guy standing beside Young Master Murphy yelled in surprise.

"What? What happened?" Young Master Murphy nearly fainted from fright. He just got the time to take a breather!

Why did his subordinate shock him again?

That subordinate immediately said, "The young master of the Ladenberg family, Ezra Ladenberg is also having dinner upstairs tonight."

"Ezra Ladenberg...!" Young Master Murphy's face darkened. The Ladenberg family was the enemy of the Murphy family, and their overall power was slightly stronger.

That was why Ezra Ladenberg had been tyrannical and bullied those around him all the time. He never paid whenever he had meals in their restaurant, much to Young Master Murphy's chagrin, yet there was nothing he could do.

Chapter 1236

"Yes young master. Ezra Ladenberg is not a nice person and the Third Young Mistress Cabello is really beautiful. It so happens that Ezra is an extremely lecherous person and I'm afraid that something bad will happen later!" The subordinate looked anxious as he thought about it. He immediately said, "Young master, this won't work. We need to rush over and remind Young Master Ladenberg or they will definitely get into a fight!"

However, Young Master Murphy stopped him. "Remind? Why should we remind him? The Ladenberg family had been suppressing our Murphy family all this while and that Young Master Ladenberg is wildly arrogant. This is a great chance to get rid of the Ladenberg family. Those two almost died because they offended that woman. Do you think that they would still be alive if they took advantage of Third Young Mistress Cabello?"

The subordinate's eyes lit up when he heard this. "That's right, why didn't I think about this. I was only thinking about how our tables and chairs would be destroyed if they get into a brawl later. With the protective nature of Master Ladenberg, he would definitely avenge his son without finding out the reason if Young Master Ladenberg was killed. If that's the case..."

Young Master Murphy nodded." There are many guests upstairs and who knows how the news is going to reach the Ladenberg family later?"

A smile appeared on the corners of Young Master Murphy's mouth when they arrived at that point of the conversation. He said to his subordinate, "Immediately go and send the message to the Ladenberg family if they get into a fight later. Do you understand?"

"I understand!" The subordinate smiled with his face filled with anticipation.

Jack and Daniella sat at the space next to the window after they went upstairs.

The view from the second floor was extremely beautiful.

However, as what Young Master Murphy and the others had expected, Young Master Ladenberg and several others also saw the two over there.

"Psst psst, what a scene. Why haven't I seen such a beauty before?" Young Master Ladenberg could not help but swallow his saliva and exclaimed after he looked around for a while.

The guy opposite him said with a smile, "It looks like these two are casual trainers who passed by this area and are here for a meal."

"Casual trainers?" Young Master Ladenberg had a smirk on his face and said, "Then we can't let them leave so easily. Since they are not people from our town, it would be difficult for others to find them if anything happens to them. If we let such a beauty leave, it would be difficult to meet one the next time even if we want to!"

"Haha... Young master, don't worry about it! Leave this in my hands!" The subordinate opposite the young master directly stood up after he smiled and walked toward Daniella.

"Young lady, you are really gorgeous! Your beauty will make the moon and flowers shy!" The man said flirtatiously as soon as he arrived in front of Daniella.

Daniella frowned and glanced at him as her facial expression darkened. "I don't know who you are, how can I help you?"

The man smirked as he glanced toward where Young master Ladenberg was and said, "Young lady, our Young Master Ladenberg would like to invite you over for a chat. I hope that you will give him face!"

Daniella looked over and a fatty was sitting there with beautiful women on each side of his arms. He had oil stains on the corners of his mouth and was smiling at her like a lecherous fool.

She directly glanced at the man in front of her with a cold expression on her face. "F*ck off! I'm not interested in such rubbish!"

"Haha... Young lady, you don't need to be in a hurry to reject us!" The man in front of her did not seem to be angry. He flipped his hand and came up with a middlegrade spirited stone. He placed it on the table. "This is a middlegrade spirited stone and it has an equal worth to one hundred lowgrade spirited stones. Casual trainers like you have never seen spirited stones like this right? Haha... How about that?"

"You're giving it to me?" Daniella glanced at the spirited stone on the table in despise.

The man nodded with a smile. "Of course. Young lady, we're all smart people. You only need to keep our young master company tonight. As long as our young master enjoys himself tonight, this middle-grade spirited stone is yours! Not any person can meet with such a good opportunity!"

Chapter 1237

"Haha... Is this a joke? You expect me to accompany that fat-ass with one piece of useless spirited stone?" Daniella laughed.

Jack also could not help but stand up. "Didn't you hear when she asked you to f*ck off?"

This was the first time he purposely brought Daniella out for a meal and it started off with an unhappy incident. Jack was also unhappy as they were suddenly disturbed hence he did not want to be nice to the other party.

Daniella was secretly happy and touched when she saw how Jack was slightly angry In her opinion, Jack proactively stood forward and got mad meant that he had some of affection toward her. Why was Jack so angry if he did not like her?

"Who are you? How dare you speak to me this way?" The man was one of the butlers in Young Master Ladenberg's family and he was considered a highly positioned person in the Ladenberg family.

However, he never liked to take action under normal circumstances. In his opinion, most of the situations could be resolved by using spirited stones. There was no need to take action if the issues could be resolved by using spirited stones.

"Who am I?" Jack humphed coldly and directly punched the other party his head.

Bang!

Jack did not use much strength but this butler of the Ladenberg family flew directly several meters backward before landing on the floor with blood trickling down his nose.

"What the f*ck?!" Young Master Ladenberg directly slammed his hand on the table and stood up when he saw that his subordinate was hit. “Attack them and kill the guy. Capture the woman and bring her over. F*ck, they need to submit to pressure after turning down my nice request."

"Attack!" Several of Young Master Ladenberg's subordinate immediately rushed toward Jack.

"Don't blame me since you guys are the suicidal ones!" Jack flipped his hand and took the black sword out when he saw the group of people daringly rush forward.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

With several swipes of his sword, the people who rushed forward were killed.

Many guests on the second floor were frightened and hid directly by the side when they saw that there was a fight

"Who are these two? How dare they kill the Ladenberg family's people!" Some of them could not help but started discussing what happened. Everything was moving so quickly and they only realized what happened when the Ladenberg family's subordinates were killed by that young man.

Jack directly went in front of the Ladenberg family's butler after he killed all those people and looked at him coldly.

"Young man, do you know who our young master is? I think you ..." The Ladenberg family's butler wanted to threaten Jack. However, he was killed by Jack before he had the chance to finish speaking.

Bang!

The butler fell onto the ground, dead.

Chapter 1238

"Ah!" Both women in Young Master Ladenberg's arms were so frightened that they turned pale. They immediately ran away and hid at a corner.

"Young...young man, I'm the young master of the Ladenberg family. You will be going against the Ladenberg family if you dare kill me!" Young Master Ladenberg stood up and pointed at Jack. His voice and his finger, however, were trembling and he was obviously afraid.

Whoosh!

Jack did not pay much attention to him and carried out his attack.

He then turned around and walked toward Daniella while putting his sword away.

Bang!

Young Master Ladenberg fell onto the ground in disbelief as he covered his neck with both his hands.

"This... This..." Several subordinates of the Murphy family were surprised when they ran over to take a look. They immediately ran downstairs.

One of them went toward Young Master Murphy. "Young master, this is great! That guy really killed Young Master Ladenberg! Haha... Even heaven is helping us!"

"Is that true? Why haven't you guys send the message to the Ladenbergs yet? Go change your clothes as it's bad if the Third Young Mistress Cabello and the others learned that we were the

ones who sent the message!" Young Master Murphy reminded his subordinate with a smile after he thought about it.

"Haha... Alright, young master! I'm on my way now!" The subordinate then went to change his clothes happily.

After Jack killed those people, he went back to where Daniella was and sat down. "What an annoyance. Who knew that we would meet such annoying people the first time officially treating the third Young Mistress Cabello to a meal. I hope this has not affected your mood for food."

How could Daniella blame Jack when she felt as sweet as if she had taken honey. She felt that Jack had killed those people because he was unhappy with them bullying her.

Apart from that, she was extremely happy as Jack acted in such a decisive and unhesitating manner just now.

"Don't worry, such a small issue would not affect my mood!" Daniella placed her arms on the table and placed her head in between her hands as she looked at Jack happily. Her beautiful eyes were filled with love for Jack.

Jack's heart stopped for a moment when he saw how Daniella looked at him with the infatuated smile at the corners of her mouth.

He was not dumb so he had already realized that Daniella had feelings toward him and he had no idea how to respond to her feelings.

Luckily the waiter served their food at that moment. All the dishes that were served smelled extremely good.

"It smells so good! We can start eating!" Jack smiled and said to the waiter. "By the way, please serve us some of your best wine here!"

"It's coming, it's coming!"

Chapter 1239

At this moment, Young Master Maack walked over with a smile on his face and placed two bottles of wine on the table.

"Third Young Mistress Cabello and Young Master White, I present to you the legendary monkey wine, a wine whose sweetness is unparalleled, and its aroma thick and flavorful. It's extremely beneficial for those who are training to become chi masters!"

Young Master Maack introduced the wine to Jack, grinning. “My father stores it here, and I usually don't dare to drink it. I only take a few sips when he's around. Best of all, a wine like this is extremely hard to procure!"

Jack noticed the other man's bootlicking demeanor and frowned. "If this wine is truly as rare and as good as you say it is, why would you bring it out for us?"

Daniella's brows creased together when she heard Jack's words. Her gaze toward Young Master Maack sharpened. “Don't tell me that you' ve spiked this drink, Young Master Maack. We're not as gullible as you think we are!"

Young Master Maack nearly collapsed after he heard that. "I would never dare to do something like that even if you gave me a billion bucks," he replied hastily."

How could I do that? I have no right to even touch either of you, being the powerful heir and heiress you two are. Why would I harbor ill intentions toward you!"

Here, Young Master Maack paused for a while, his eyes skittering toward the body of Young Master Ladenberg, "To be honest with you, that dead fatty is the young master of the Ladenberg family," he finally said, huffing. "The Ladenberg family is the most powerful family in our city, and that fatty regularly bullied us. I was so glad when you killed him, so of course, I had to thank you in some way. Besides, it' s just two bottles of wine. It's nothing compared to what you did!"

"Good. I knew you didn't have the

guts!"

Daniella swiped for one of the bottles and uncorked it. Its thick, heavenly scent hit her nostrils, and she felt as though she could get drunk from its smell alone.

“My God. That's the smell of monkey wine. I want some too!"

A few guests sitting at the surrounding tables caught a whiff of the wine. All of them gulped and stared at Jack and Daniella in admiration.

No one thought that the Maack family had such a prized possession-and that it would be taken out just for the two of them.

“My God. This... this is beautiful!"

Jack's eyes brightened once he smelled the wine. He liked alcohol and had a high tolerance for it, so naturally, a wine like that would make him excited.

"Then I'll go for it!"

Jack smiled and opened the other bottle, gulping it down straight from the bottle.

He only reluctantly set the bottle down after taking a few gulps." This is fantastic. It doesn't burn at all, and its aroma is so strong. This is one amazing wine."

Daniella and Young Master Maack stared at him, boggle-eyed. He had downed the alcohol a little too fast, had he not?

"Eat something, Jack!"

Daniella smiled and heaped a piece of monster meat onto Jack's plate. Then she poured the wine out into a glass and took a sip out of it. “This is really good!"

"You'd better eat up too, Daniella!"

After all, she was of a significant position, and she had taken a piece of meat for him. Jack felt slightly embarrassed, so he did the same for her as well.

However, this simple gesture stirred Daniella's heart. Jack had actually given her food. Was he trying to hint at something else?

"Take your time here. I'll get out of your hair. Just inform me if you need anything!"

Young Master Maack, who was very observant, noticed the slight flush on Daniella's cheeks. He surmised that the two might be a couple, and he left with a grin on his face, not wanting to become the third wheel.

Chapter 1240

Daniella could not help but feel worried as she watched Jack practically inhaling the wine. She frowned and said, “Jack, I know this is a rare wine but don't down it like that. You'll get drunk!"

Jack gave a careless smile when he heard that. “Heh. Don't worry about me. I have a pretty good alcohol tolerance. No ordinary person can lure me into a drunken state. And do you know that martial artists have a far higher tolerance for alcohol than normal people? Martial artists have a far stronger body composition, so that 's why normal people can't compare to us."

"That's true!"

Daniella flashed an awkward smile in return

The two drank for a while. Master Ladenberg then brought many fighters from the Ladenberg family over.

"F*ck. Who killed my son?"

Master Ladenberg rushed over and scanned the area, absolutely livid.

He quickly realized that many of the guests had their attention directed toward Jack.

"Were you the one who killed my son, you little sh*t? Do you have a death wish?"

Thomas Ladenberg flipped his palm and took out a sword, pointing it at Jack.

Jack stood up and flipped his palm as well, staring at the intruder impatiently. "I think you' re the one who has a death wish here. Your son was stupid enough to want to have Miss Daniella Cabello, so of course, he had to die. And you're trying to avenge him?"

"Of course!"

Thomas was so furious that a vein throbbed at his forehead. He could not be bothered to talk to Jack anymore, so he gathered his chi in his palm and channeled it into his sword.

Then he slashed the blade toward Jack.

Whoosh!

A sudden sword aura infused with a lot of chi slashed toward Jack, arcing into a flash of light.

"Hmph!"

The master of the Ladenberg family was a pretty strong fighter.

However, Jack did not care for him. After he harrumphed coldly, he threw out his own sword aura.

Whoosh!

Another sword aura appeared. It was evident that it was much longer than Master Ladenberg's, and the amount of chi that the older man's attack contained could not be compared to Jack's.

Bang!

A frightening clash rang out. The next second, Master Ladenberg's sword aura had been destroyed by Jack's. He had been no match for Jack's power.

"What!"

Master Ladenberg was so shocked that he took a sharp intake of breath when he saw what happened. All color drained from his face.

“No!"

The remaining energy from Jack' s sword aura was rushing toward him. Master Ladenberg released a cry and used the elder next to him as a shield without giving a second thought.

Bam!

A dull thud rang out. Blood sprayed, and the elder stared at the gaping hole in his chest in disbelief. He looked at Master Ladenberg. “You..."

After he said that, and as Master Ladenberg released his grip, the elder collapsed onto the ground, no longer breathing.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1241-1245

Chapter 1241

Large beads of perspiration dropped from Master Ladenberg's forehead. His face had gone white. He would have been the dead one if he had not reacted in time.

"Go for him! Attack him together!"

However, he saw the body of his son on the floor, and he saw the numbers he had on his side. Master Ladenberg gave the order.

"Heh. You think that you can beat me because you have more people?"

Jack chuckled and looked at Daniella. "Please continue to eat. Just leave these vermin to me!"

After he said that, he stamped his foot and rushed toward the men.

"Okay!"

A smile tinged Daniella's lips. Warmth filled her chest. Jack actually told her to stay put? It seemed that the man truly cared for her.

Bang bang bang!

Frightening sounds of fighting rang out. Many of those who were dining were terrified and jumped straight from the second floor in fear of being roped into the cacophony.

The men from the Ladenberg family were no match for Jack.

In a flash, they had all dropped onto the floor, chests no longer heaving.

"Young Master Jack, you-you're so strong!"

Young Master Maack had pretended to find out about the situation and leisurely came forward to check the scene out. He was wickedly delighted when he saw the bodies on the floor, yet still, he pulled a mask of bewilderment. "You're so strong. The master of the Ladenberg family is the strongest fighter in our city. I never thought that you would beat him so fast!"

Jack gave him an impassive look and kept his sword. "Can I trouble you to clean the corpses up around here?"

“Not a problem at all. I am at your service, Young Master White!"

Young Master Maack immediately ordered his subordinates to clear the bodies up. He had been waiting that very day for a long time, but never had the opportunity to do so until then.

"That felt good!"

Jack walked over and sat beside Daniella. "I don't think anyone will be disturbing us now."

After he said that, Jack took huge swigs out of the wine bottle.

Daniella was internally speechless when she saw him drinking as though there was no tomorrow. "You can't just drink like that, Jack," she hurriedly reminded him. "It's monkey wine. It's not regular alcohol. You can't drink it that way even if you have a high alcohol tolerance. It's extremely potent, and even martial artists can easily get drunk on it!"

Here, Daniella paused before she continued, “Besides, only people who have drunk this twice or thrice before will be able to drink more as their bodies have adjusted to it. But even then, they can't just gulp it down. You'll definitely get drunk if you've never drunk it before!"

"No way. Is-is it that strong?"

Jack was internally speechless.

He did not feel anything at all and had only thought that it was good wine. He had not cared much when Daniella had advised him to drink it slowly, but he never thought that this wine would make even martial artists, drunk.

Still, he suspected Daniella's words. Others might have gotten drunk because their alcohol tolerance was lower. His was naturally high.

He smiled and replied, “Don't worry. I know my own limit. I won' t drink anymore once I get dizzy!"

"Oh, okay then. I just wanted to tell you because you were gulping it down!"

Daniella offered a wan smile and scooped some vegetables for Jack. "Eat up. This hotel's restaurant has pretty good food!"

Young Master Maack, who was arranging for the bodies to be cleared up and the area to be tidied, noticed her gesture toward Jack. What a lucky guy, to be able to be served by such a beautiful woman.

Chapter 1242

The two continued to savor the wine; Jack felt his muscles relaxing as he drank from the bottle.

After a while, the area had been cleaned up. The broken tables and chairs had all been carted away.

However, there was no way to fix the gaping slashes along the walls and the floor for the time being.

Fortunately, Jack had been controlling his strength during the fight. The hotel might have been completely destroyed otherwise.

After drinking for a while, Jack felt his head growing heavy. "This is some wine. I didn't feel anything just now, but now I'm getting dizzy."

Jack's face had gone all red. He blearily stared at Daniella's perfect features, as if he was being pulled toward them

He had to admit that the longer he looked at her, the prettier she seemed. No wonder many young masters of the reclusive families wanted to court her.

"Slow-slow down. I told you just now, didn't I? People who are drinking this for the first time can' t take too much. And you didn't believe me..."

Daniella felt extremely embarrassed with Jack staring at her. She dipped her chin slightly, her heart pounding.

She had never experienced a feeling like this before.

By the time she raised her head, she saw that Jack was already slumped over the table. It seemed that the alcohol had finally worked its way into his system.

“Jeez. He's completely drunk!"

Daniella did not know whether to laugh or cry at Jack's drunken state. She walked over with a rueful smile on her face, lifting him up.

"Let's go, Jack. You're drunk!"

She supported Jack down the stairs.

"I'm not drunk. I can take some more of that delicious wine!"

Jack's speech was slurred.

"Never mind. I'll just carry you!"

At the staircase, Daniella hefted Jack onto her back and strode downward.

He was heavy, but he was easy enough to carry for Daniella, who was at the peak of the semi-god status.

She only put Jack down when they were at the concierge. "Give me two rooms please!" she told the staff.

The beautiful woman at the concierge looked at the two of them. "My apologies, Miss, but only one room is left since it's late," she replied, smiling.

"One?"

When she heard this, Daniella drew her brows together. It was evident that she was in a dilemma.

However, she took one look at Jack beside her and said, “Fine. I' ll take the room!"

After she paid, Daniella supported Jack and went up the building.

Chapter 1243

Master Maack also quickly arrived at his family's hotel. He headed for the concierge to look for his monkey wine.

However, he got angry after searching for a while. He immediately called his son over." Where's my wine? There were three bottles of it. Why is only one left?"

Young Master Maack proffered a smile when he heard that. "I gave two bottles of wine to two of our customers!"

Master Maack was so furious that he nearly spewed blood when he heard this. That wine was so precious that he could not even bring himself to drink it, yet his son just gave it away to customers. Even if he had allowed customers to drink it, they should have at least paid a considerable sum of money for it instead, it was given away just like that.

"Are you getting a kick out of seeing me angry? Those are my treasured possessions, which I had kept for so many years. And you just gave it to someone else?"

Master Maack was livid. He shot his son a stormy look. "You ungrateful pig!"

Young Master Maack gave a bitter smile. "You can't just accuse me of that, Father," he explained helplessly. "You would praise me if you knew the circumstances, and you would think that giving those two bottles of wine away was worth it!"

"Worth it?"

Master Maack was so angry that he was speechless. "Fine. Explain everything to me," he huffed. "Let' s see how 'worth it' it can possibly be. If I think otherwise, I will give you two hard slaps. Don't think that I'll spare your dignity!"

Young Master Maack was internally speechless. "We had two extremely important figures who visited us over dinner, Father," he explained. "One of them was the third daughter of the Cabello family. The other the young master of the White family. Heh. They helped us kill the fighters of

the Ladenberg family, and now the Ladenberg family's territory is ours. I've already ordered our men to handle the takeover. Do you think that it's worth giving the two bottles of wine to them now?"

"What!"

Master Maack took a sharp intake of breath after he heard this. "Are you serious? So you're saying that Master Ladenberg and his men are all dead?" he said excitedly. "If that's the case, giving away those two bottles of wine was the best possible exchange to make!

"Oh, are Young Miss Cabello and Young Master White still around? I need to drink with them just to see their faces for a bit."

Master Maack was extremely excited. The fury on his expression had long dissipated, and in its place, there was pure delight.

"They've gone! You don't have the chance to drink with them anymore!"

Young Master Maack smiled. "We were fortunate. It so happened that Young Master Ladenberg was drinking upstairs when he spotted the third daughter of the Cabello family, and he could not help but have dirty intentions toward her. That fellow sentenced the entire Ladenberg family to death!"

"That's fantastic. This way, nobody will dare to bully the Maack family in this city anymore!"

Longing suddenly flashed across Master Maack's features. "It's a pity though. Third Young Mistress Cabello is famed for her beauty. Not many can hope to compete against her. It would have been nice if I could even catch a glimpse of her. I've never gotten the chance to see her myself."

He did not know that Daniella had carried Jack into the room. She nudged the door close with her foot and supported Jack onto the bed.

Yet just as she heaved a sigh of relief when they were at the foot of the bed, Jack hurtled straight onto the mattress. She was unsteady on her feet, so she fell along with him and landed atop his body.

Jack's handsome visage was right before her. Her heart thudded against her chest, and nervousness clenched her veins.

"Water. I want water!"

Jack felt extremely thirsty and spoke thickly.

"All right. I'll get water for you!"

Daniella shook herself to her senses and got up hurriedly, pouring water onto a cup for Jack.

She helped him drink the water before placing it on the bedside table. Then she noticed that Jack was dead asleep on the bed already.

"No way. He's already sleeping!"

Daniella could not explain why a pang of disappointment filled her chest at the sight of his sleeping figure.

Chapter 1244

Daniella took a shower after taking off Jack's shoes, then she settled herself on the bed beside him.

She grew even more nervous as she studied his face.

He was asleep, but this was the first time that she was lying next to a man in her entire life. Furthermore, he was a man she liked. How could she not be nervous?

"He won't realize it if I peck him, right?"

Quickly, a daring thought fleeted across Daniella's head.

Then she could not help herself anymore. She steadied herself on her palms and crawled over so that she was leaning over Jack, then she kissed him on the cheek.

She quickly laid back down after that kiss, her heart drumming erratically. She was so nervous she could die.

"Is-is this my first kiss!"

Daniella felt as though her heart was about to burst out of her ribcage. She had never been so daring in all her entire life before.

However, she quickly thought that this did not count as her first kiss. Only a direct kiss would count, so that kiss was not counted.

After she thought about it, Daniella leaned over Jack's body again, her gaze shifting toward his lips.

After much deliberation, she clenched her teeth, supported herself on her palms, and planted a kiss on his lips.

Warmth spread throughout her body after she kissed him. She had given her first kiss to someone she liked.

"My first kiss has been taken by you," she whispered as she looked at Jack. "You're responsible for me now!"

After she said that, she laid back down and finally closed her eyes contentedly. Slowly, she slipped into slumber as well. By the time she woke up, the sky was bright.

She had been awake for two or three minutes when Jack also cracked his eyes open. He slowly registered that he was in a strange room, and took a sharp intake of breath.

When he saw Daniella beside him, he was completely stupefied.

"I-I was sleeping on the same bed as you last night?"

Jack gulped when he saw Daniella, who was wearing a nightgown. He never thought that he would get drunk. Besides, he had no recollection of how he had arrived there.

"That's right. There was only one bed here, so of course, we shared."

Daniella quickly sat upright and ducked her head bashfully. Her cheeks flamed so redly they looked as though they were about to catch fire.

"No-no way. We-we didn't do that right?"

Jack was speechless. If he had bedded Daniella while he was drunk, it would be troublesom.

Chapter 1245

Daniella was stunned, and suddenly an evil thought popped up in her mind. Teasing might be a good idea under such circumstances, to see how Jack would react.

After plotting the evil idea, Daniella deliberately nodded her head and uttered in a diffident tone, “I'm your woman now. You... you have to be responsible for me!"

"What the...No way, really? Did we both..."

Jack was tongue-tied. For once he did not know what to do.

How was he supposed to explain to his wife this time?

"The bedsheet was even stained red last night, and I had to ask the housekeeper to change the sheet. You acted like a barbarian, didn't even know how to treat a lady tenderly..." Daniella informed in a more bashful voice.

Jack's mind went foggy.

His head was buzzing and spinning. He did not expect at all for himself to do such a thing with Daniella after he got drunk.

Jack took a while before he could react. "Why didn't you get an extra room? Besides, I was drunk, why didn't you push me away?" He looked at Daniella, helplessly.

Daniella's face sank immediately when she sensed a hint of malaise on Jack's face. "Now what? Jack, I didn't expect you to be such an irresponsible man! I've given you my precious first time, how could... How could you deny it!"

Daniella groaned; her face full of belligerence. "Do you know how tired I was to carry you back alone last night? I asked for two rooms but there was only one available!" She barked. “I was already exhausted and planned to get some rest after taking a shower. But at that time, you thought I was your wife, and you...you...you bully me!" She said in a sobbing tone.

Jack could not bear to see a girl crying. With the fear seeing Daniella cry, he immediately comforted her and his tone was full of panic. "Don't, please don't cry. I don't mean it that way. I

just ...I just think that I'm a few years older than you, and you were not drunk at that time, so you can push me away!"

Daniella raised her head and faced Jack. She bit her alluring rosy pink lips and pouted, “But, I don't care about your age at all. I like you, that's all. Besides, I was exhausted after carrying you back to the room and I was a little tipsy at that time too. That's why I didn' t push you away!"

"Sigh! What should we do now? I promised my wife that I would only love her. But now we two... Sigh! Moreover, you're still very young!"

Jack gazed at Daniella, who was six or seven years younger than him and felt bad about what had happened. This time he had stirred up big trouble. But, no matter how hard he tried to recall, he could not remember anything. Only images of him drinking, and more drinking ran across his mind. Then he felt dizzy and was eventually carried by someone on his or her back.

Daniella smiled sheepishly, looking at Jack's embarrassed face. “Don't worry about it. What's done is done, it can't be undone now. I'm now your girlfriend. But don't tell your wife about us first. Wait until we're closer with each other then we'll tell her." Daniella comforted him, trying her best not to laugh.

Jack cast Daniella a look and replied, "But, it won't be fair to you right now!"

Daniella kept her laughter in check, trying not to burst into laughter. "Hey, hey. It's okay. As long as you treat me well in the future, I won't feel unfair!" Daniella put on a solemn tone and patted Jack's shoulder to comfort him.

Jack went silent for a long time, before he finally said to Daniella," Then..then later on when we return to the White family, you've to tell everyone that you're my friend, okay? Sigh! I haven't thought about how to tell Selena this..."

Jack was kicking himself for getting so drunk and making such a foolish mistake. Daniella even warned him not to drink the wine too quickly then.

However, he was full of himself at that time, thinking that his alcohol tolerance was good, so he disregarded Daniella's warning. Now he had to reap what he had sown.

"No problem!"

Looking at lines appearing between Jack's brows, Daniella smiled contentedly. She then got up and went to the bathroom to change.

Jack sat on the edge of the bed and smoked a cigarette, in hopes that it would calm his panicked soul. He waited until Daniella was.

one washing up only then did he went to wash up too.

When he stood before the mirror in the bathroom, Jack took a look at his cheeks, red lipstick marks imprinted on his cheek. “I'm so done for... It looks like last night we did really...What's more, Daniella is still a young girl. If I shove the responsibility away, the head of the Cabello family would kill me, right?" Jack sighed defeatedly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1246-1250

Chapter 1246

Jack was rendered speechless. There was nothing he could do right now, he could only shut himself down, trying not to think about it first, and hoped that he had the chance to explain to Selena soon.

After washing up, the two rode on the blood dragon horse and set off toward the direction of the main residence of the White family.

Nonetheless, this time the feeling of awkwardness left Jack when he was holding Daniella's waist from behind on the horseback. Perhaps, it was because of what happened last night that had made Jack at ease.

On the contrary, he felt that Daniella was stiff and awkward in front of him. Her cheeks were kissed pink, and her blush extended to the root of her ears.

Soon enough, the two arrived at the bottom of the mountain and both hopped off the horse.

"Young Master Jack!"

The two bodyguards at the gate were shocked at Jack's early return. Jack was supposed to visit plenty of White branch families by himself to select young geniuses to come over to the main White family. But how could he return in merely twenty days? Moreover, he brought back a beautiful woman!

What shocked them the most was that the two rode on a horse together.

"Cough, cough! This is the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family. It just so happens that I coincidentally met her and saved her from the hands of brigands. She wanted to come over to visit the White family as well, that's why she's here with me!"

Jack let out dry coughs, trying to cover up his embarrassed face.

The two bodyguards were taken aback at this new piece of information. This beautiful woman before them was actually the legendary beauty queen of the Cabello family. The person in reality was much more stunning than in hearsays.

"May I trouble you to take this horse to rest and feed him well? I won't be riding him for a long time."

Daniella beamed and handed the horse to one of the bodyguards.

Jack eyed Daniella and introduced in a serious tone, “Miss Daniella, our residence is not as spacious and as large as your Cabello family. Let me bring you to meet my father first!"

"Hehe, it's okay. Let me look at this place. The scenery is breathlessly exquisite, not bad at all, and the spiritual energy surrounding your residence is dense too. No wonder the White family has developed so well and fast in recent years!"

Daniella chuckled. She followed Jack's pace, walking toward the top of the mountain.

Just after arriving at the square halfway up the mountain, Jack ran into Kylie who was playing with Lana and the others.

He felt a sudden surge of happiness at the scene before him.

“Kylie!" He beamed.

Kylie wheeled her head. Her bright and brilliant huge eyes were immediately lit up.

"Daddy!" She skipped toward Jack.

"Sigh! That fella has finally returned!"

Fiona smiled as she saw Jack at the square.

However, after she noticed the other person's existence standing beside Jack, an attractive and lovely woman, her brows immediately snapped together. "Who's that woman beside Jack? How come she came back with Jack? This woman looks like a vixen. Don't tell me Jack found himself a second wife!"

Lana immediately responded," That's not possible. Jack is not a callous man. Besides, I've never seen this woman before, and since she came with Jack, I guess she should be one of the geniuses that Jack picks from the branch families. She just so happened to come with Jack."

"Oh, that makes sense!"

'Fiona nodded, then again she furrowed and said, “This woman is a natural beauty, isn't she?"

Lana could not help but look in the direction of Daniella after hearing Fiona's compliment for that woman. Not knowing why, Lana was feeling bitter, and perhaps jealous, in her heart. This woman looked younger than her, more good-looking than her and her skin was even more supple and smoother than hers. She was envious.

"Hehe! Kylie, do you miss Daddy?"

Chapter 1247

Jack picked up Kylie who ran to him and planted a kiss on her chubby cheek; his action was full of love and dote.

"Mmm!"

Kylie bobbed her head and said in a childish tone, "Mommy said she will ask you to take me to the town below the mountain to have fun when you return!"

"Haha, alright, alright! I'll take little Kylie and Mommy to go to the town and play together tonight!"

Jack chortled wholeheartedly.

"This is your daughter? She's cute and good-looking!"

Daniella, who was standing next to Jack, could not help but smile awkwardly at the affectionate exchange between the Father and che Daughter.

"Yup, her name is Kylie!"

Jack smiled. He held Kylie in his arms and paced in the direction of Lana, Fiona, and the others.

"Well. Needless to say, this beautiful woman, she is your wife, am I right? She really has a good figure!"

Before Jack could introduce the others to Daniella, she studied Lana and uttered with a smile plastered on her face.

Lana's spirits immediately brightened, and her cheeks turned red. "No, no. I'm not his wife, I'm his disciple! My name is Lana!" She quickly explained.

After the explanation, Lana looked at Jack and asked," Master, and this girl is?"

Only then did Jack smile and introduced Daniella. "This is the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family, Daniella Cabello!"

"The Cabello family? One of the eight reclusive families?"

After hearing Jack's words, surprise dawned upon Lana's face. How could she have imagined that the Third Young Mistress Cabello knew Jack and followed him back to the White residence?

Moreover, they looked close. It seemed that the relationship between the two was good.

Yes! You're right!"

"I heard that Jack's wife is the queen of beauty. And when I looked at you, I thought you were his wife. I didn't expect that his disciple would be such a beauty too. Hehe. The White family has a lot of pretty women, I presume." Daniella chucked and continued.

Lana could barely conceal her delight after hearing Daniella's sincere praise for her. "I'm nowhere near a beauty. I heard that the Cabello family has three beautiful daughters who are

known as the Three Golden Flowers; they're all famous for their beauty. I think only those who live in the secular world

would have not known your presence. Many reclusive families are keen to meet any of you!"

On the other hand, Jack smiled at the exchange and approached Fiona, "Ma, how're you guys doing? Everything fine here?"

Fiona laughed in return. "Of course, everything is fine! Although Andrew and I were a little too old to start practicing martial arts, I heard from our inlaws that this place is full of spiritual energy. So, if we live here all year round, we can live to very old age." She chuckled and then continued, "Oh ya, the Taylor family came here as well and everyone loves it, especially your Grandpa Taylor! He planned to

retire here and not leave this place at all!"

Jack's heart stopped a few beats after listening to Fiona's words. An unsightly look scrawled up his face. Fiona and Andrew were his own parents-in-law, therefore it was still logical to bring them here. But it was strange to bring Old Master Taylor and the other Taylors here!

"And my father allows it?"

Jack frowned and asked.

Fiona bobbed her head. "Yes. He even asked his men to build a house over there for some of the Taylor family to live in. Your Father said that since there are not many of us, it won't be a big deal. Besides, if some of the young martial artists of the Taylor family want to improve their status, they would help to purify their bodies so that they can train better!"

"Auntie, do you and Uncle want to train too?"

Daniella's voice suddenly interrupted the conversation. After hearing the exchange, Daniella, without blinking her eyes, approached Fiona and popped the question. This was a golden opportunity to please her future parents-in-law! If they liked her and were happy with her, they would probably speak up for her in the future, then it would be more likely for Selena to accept her!

Chapter 1248

"Of course, we want to train! It'd be good even as elementary martial artists. At least our bodies will grow stronger and won't catch a cold or fall sick easily. After training, the overall being is certainly stronger than ordinary people!"

But, Fiona let out a bitter smile and said, "Unfortunately, Jack said that we have long passed the age of becoming a martial artist. When you're old, you can't train and become a martial artist. It's not only about the martial talent but also about our old body, it can't withstand the process of purification!"

However, to everyone's surprise, Daniella flashed them a smile." Well. There's a way for both of you to train and become martial artists! And I know how!"

Jack could not help but gasp at the information. “That's impossible! What other ways do you have to be able to make them into martial artists?"

"Are you serious? That's amazing! Miss Cabello, do you really have a way? It'd be really great if we could train and become one!"

Andrew felt a ray of sunshine flooded his old soul when he heard Daniella's words. He asked with an excitement plastered over his face.

Daniella nodded again to affirm them, at the same time, rolled her eyes at Jack. "Tsk tsk. Jack, you' ve not experienced everything in this world, have you? There's a forbidden pool in the Cabello family. The water inside that forbidden pool is a real treasure! This treasure allows the old or people with incapability to train to become a martial artist!

This water is called the Bone Marrow Cleansing Water. The person only needs to drink a small sip of this water, and his body will be cleansed and purified! What's more amazing is that there are no side effects and pain at all!"

Excitement streaked through Jack like a comet. "Is that real? The Cabello family has such a treasure! It's really out of my expectation! So, does it mean that if my mother takes a sip of this water, she will be able to train and become a martial artist?"

"Your mother is also a commoner?"

A quiet joy spread through Daniella upon hearing. She was smiling inside. If that was the case, would not that mean that she would be able to please Jack's mother as well? After all, Jack's mother would be her future mother-in-law!

"Yes, my mother is a commoner now. I hope that she can train and become a martial artist or perhaps a grandmaster in the future. Then that will be wonderful!"

A bitter smile crept on Jack's face. “The Bone Marrow Cleansing Water, since it's a treasure of the Cabello Family and it's at the forbidden place, I'm afraid that you can't just take it, right? Besides, this water is too precious, there shouldn't be much of it, right?"

Daniella peeped at Jack and responded with a faint smile, "Don' t worry. Indeed, this water is very precious, even if others want it, I won't hand it over. But since you' ve saved my life, and we're now considered good friends, I'll get it for you. Even if I have to steal it, I' ll get it for you!"

"It's not a good idea for you to steal. Why don't you try asking your father if he's willing to spare you some? If it's not possible, just forget about it, I don't want you to be in a difficult situation!"

Jack gave some thoughts to the matter and uttered with a frown.

However, Fiona-who stood beside him-heard Jack's words and her face immediately turned unsightly. She went forward and shot Jack a deadly glare, "What nonsense are you spewing?"

After reprimanding Jack, she immediately approached Daniella with a wicked smile. "Miss Cabello, there's absolutely nothing wrong about it. This treasure belongs to your family, even if you took some of it when no one is looking, it's alright too. You're the Third Young Mistress Cabello, you're only taking something from your family, it won't be considered as stealing, right? Because that treasure is originally from your family!" Fiona held Daniella's hands in her palms and persuaded her in a sincere tone.

Fiona paused for a moment before she continued, "Also, even after you took it, your father and the others won't know that you're the one who took it, right? If they don' t know about it, surely, they can't do anything about it, and they won 't blame you either."

Jack and Lana exchange glances on the side, not knowing what to say. If a person took something when there was no one, was that not considered stealing? How could Fiona spew some unreasonable logic? Even though the treasure belonged to the Cabello family, it was not an ordinary thing. That water could be considered as one of the most precious and priceless treasures in this world. If that treasure were to be taken to an auction, it could be exchanged with a lot of high-grade spirited stones and materials!

"Yes, Auntie, you're absolutely right!"

Daniella smiled awkwardly, but she still reassured the audience. "Auntie, don't worry about it. I'll go get some for you guys no matter what. It's indeed not much of it, but it's definitely enough for a few people! Just think of this as a payback for Jack saving my life!"

"Hehehe! Yes, you're so right! You' re such a good kid who knows how to show gratitude!"

Chapter 1249

Fiona's joy unfolded like a flower and her mouth curved into a smile. "Right, you and Jack are good friends, so whenever you have time, you should come to the White family to hang out together! Just treat it as your own home, do visit us more often!"

"Ma, what are you talking about? The Cabello family is actually not on a good term with the White family. I don't think such an offer is appropriate right now."

Jack was speechless at Fiona's behavior. He reminded her.

Daniella, on the other hand, rolled her eyes at Jack and pouted unhappily, "Can't I come to visit at any time too?"

Jack was tongue-tied once again. "Except for you, of course!" He smiled awkwardly.

Lana studied the scene before her, she could not help but frown slightly. Why did she feel that Jack was somehow afraid of Daniella? Was it her illusion or something else?

"Jack, you're back!"

At this time, Joan, who was strolling together with Nash, approached the group.

"Yes, Mom. I thought the competition would start soon, so I came back early for that!"

Jack responded, smilingly.

"This...isn't this the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family? Daniella Cabello, right? May I know why you're here in the White' residence?"

Nash quickly recognized Daniella of the Cabello family. His eyes were full of surprise but soon a few lines formed between his brows. After all, the Cabello family was not on good terms with the White family. Why did Jack bring her here?

"Master White!"

Daniella looked at Nash and a hint of surprise flared in her eyes." Strange. I heard that Master White, you've gotten some strange disease and couldn't even get off the bed now, right? But I can see that you look healthy, and your spirit is good!"

Daniella had come out of the Cabello family for more than a month and apparently, she did not receive any news about the things that had happened in the White family, not to mention the incident about the mutiny of the Third Elder and Lily Lagorio. If she was to stay in the Cabello family all this while, she would have known of the news.

However, she was busy accompanying Jack in the selection of geniuses among the White branch families, hence she was not well-informed of the news. Nash smiled, "Hehe, thanks to my son who not only possess powerful combat prowess but also acquires excellent medical skills and knowledge! He studied my condition and made an antidote for me!"

Daniella turned to Jack and then wheeled back to Nash. "Wait, what ...what do you mean? Jack is your son? He..he is the son of Master White?" Daniella took a sharp intake of breath.

"Hahaha! Yes! He is my son, my best son and I'm so proud of him! He is also the heir to the family head of the White family!"

Nash exclaimed with his face full of pride and delight, as though his son was the king of the world.

Chapter 1250

"What's wrong? You didn't know Jack is my son?"

Nash lifted an eyebrow, confused about the current situation. Daniella followed his son back to the White family, but she did not know that Jack was his son? It seemed like this young woman had no evil thoughts.

Perhaps, Jack knew that she was kind-hearted and without wicked thoughts, only then he allowed her to follow him.

"I didn't know! He didn't tell me!"

Daniella rolled her eyes at Jack again. "Eh? Wait a minute! Don't you have only one son, called Lance White?"

"Miss Cabello, I'll explain it to you personally when I'm free later. As for why I didn't tell you that I'm the son of the family head, it's because you didn't ask about me either!"

Jack gave a wan smile and replied.

Daniella chortled, "I thought that you might be the son of some elder or Patronum. I didn't expect that your background is actually that noble!"

"By the way, Miss Cabello, may I know why you have come to visit the White family?"

Nash spoke out the doubts in his mind with a faint smile on his face.

"It just so happens that I encountered some strong b*stard in my journey; they captured me and Young Master Jack rescued me from their hands. Besides, I was curious about where the White family was, so I follow him to take a look!" Daniella chuckled in return.

Once the last word dropped, Daniella flipped her palm and two second-grade elementary spirited grass appeared in her grip. She then handed them to Nash and said, "Master White, this is my first visit to the White family and I didn't prepare any good gift. These are just some small gifts, hope you would like it!"

"Second-grade elementary spirited grass?"

The two elders who were standing beside Nash exclaimed aloud and their eyes lit up at the appearance of the spirited grass. They rubbed their eyes, wondering if they had seen it wrongly. First-grade premium spirited grass was already considered as a relatively high-level treasure and a rare one; it was suitable for artists who were at the semi-god level or perhaps those who were at the early stage of the true god level.

As for this second-grade elementary spirited grass, the chi energy inside was several times more than the first-grade premium spirited grass! Such treasure was absolutely incredible.

The elders gulped at the second-grade spirited grass. Was this Third Young Mistress Cabello a little bit too generous? She could simply give only one stalk of spirited grass, but she gave two!

"This, this is too generous of you! Miss Cabello, such treasure is too precious to take!"

Nash thought that the spirited grass was too precious and expensive to accept. He shook his hands, refusing to take them.

"Oh no. If you don't accept it, it means that you look down on the Cabello family. Or you secretly think that the gift is too petty?"

Daniella pouted and put on an angry expression on her face on purpose.

Nash sweated with awkwardness. This young little woman was a little too domineering, was not she? How could she actually use a provocative method on Nash?

Jack, on the other hand, chucked aside. “Father, just accept it. It represents Daniella's sincerity too!"

"Alright then. I'll take it. Thank you!"

Nash gave a warm smile, and only then did he take the spirited grass.

Jack turned to Joan and said," Mother, by the way, Daniella said that the Cabello family has a treasure that allows people to train and become a martial artist without any side effects after drinking it. And she will find a way to get it for you, and also for parents-in-law!"

"What? Are you serious? But is it okay to take it?"

The words elevated Joan's mood in an instant and she felt dizzy with excitement. She imagined such a treasure must be worth a lot. The White family did not even possess such a treasure, only the Cabello family had it. She truly did not know how to thank Daniella for such a treasure.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1251-1255

Chapter 1251

"Hey, it's nothing. Jack saved my life; he is like a brother to me now. We're good buddies! Just take it as a reward for Jack's deed. Don't take it to heart!"

Daniella chuckled while explaining, and put her hand on Jack's shoulder, with a wide grin on her face, as though they were brothers from the battlefield.

"You're referring to Bone Marrow Cleansing Water, right? This water is terrifically exorbitant! Although the people of the Cabello family started training young and don't really need this water, that precious pool of the Cabello family couldn't produce that much water in a year for us, right? Moreover, this kind of water is suitable for any martial practitioner too; whoever takes it will greatly improve their martial level!"

Nash was surprised at Daniella's offer to give them some of the water. With his eyebrows snapped together, he continued, "The Cabello family must have kept such a treasure very securely, and only reward those who have made significant contributions. Besides, the pool could only produce five to six portions per year, right? I'm afraid that your Father wouldn't approve of this idea so easily. Even worse, if he were to find out that you planned to give such treasure to us, he'd definitely say no."

"Heh!"

"If he doesn't agree to it, I'll just have to get it without him knowing. And by the time he finds out, it'd be too late. Anyway, if I don't mention that it's for the White family, how would he know then?" Daniella spewed out the words gently and nonchalantly.

"Miss Cabello, you're being too generous to us! I don't even know how to repay you!"

Joan chimed in; her tone uneasy.

"Hehe, Auntie, Jack and I are good buddies, and you're his mother, that makes you my mother too! So don't mull over it anymore! It's nothing at all!"

Daniella patted her chest and reassured Joan.

Jack, who stood aside, witnessed the whole exchange and felt speechless. What did she mean when she said his mother was her mother? Did she not fear what others might think of this sentence?

"I see, I see. That's good then!"

Joan was taken aback by Daniella' s response as well. She returned Daniella an awkward smile and then went silent.

"Right, Jack, since the Third Young Mistress Cabello is here, please take her around when you're free! She's your responsibility now!"

Nash then smiled faintly at Jack and ordered.

"Don't worry, Father. I'll arrange a place for her to rest!"

Jack gave a bitter smile in return.

"Hey, there should still be empty rooms in your residence, right? You don't have to arrange a separate residence for me, just vacate a room for me in your residence. It'd be more convenient for me to find you this way, right?"

Daniella smiled sheepishly and proposed to Jack.

"Oh, okay, alright!"

Jack was rendered speechless but he could only agree with an awkward smile.

Only then a contented smile appeared on Daniella's pretty feature. She then turned to Nash and said, "Master White, the competition is about to start, and I guess you guys will leave in another

five to six days, right? I think the Cabello family will definitely participate as well, so I think I'll stay here for a few days and depart with you guys then. You wouldn't mind that, right?"

"Mmm, don't worry. I don't mind it at all!"

Daniella Cabello was the apple of her father's eye, and since she has developed a good relationship with Jack, it would be a good opportunity to ease the tension between the two families.

After all, the current White family had experienced a great loss in their power after the Third Elder and Lily incident. The White family could not afford to have another huge clash with another great powerful family right now.

Chapter 1252

"Hehe, thank you so much! I'll go check out the place first!"

Daniella chortled happily as though she was a kid who got praises from her parents.

“Go ahead then. Jack, take Miss Cabello back to rest first, you guys must be tired from all the rushing to get back here!"

Nash nodded in satisfaction and instructed his son.

Jack then handed Kylie over to Joan and left with Daniella.

After the silhouette of the two disappeared from the group's sight, Joan laughed and commented, "Miss Cabello seems to be a generous and benevolent person. She had already given us these spirited grass as a reward for Jack's rescue. But she went the extra mile and promised to get us the Cabello's treasure! This lady is truly a warm-hearted person!"

Nonetheless, Nash thought otherwise. "Why do I feel like there 's something more than friendship between Jack and Miss Cabello? It's not as simple as good buddies. After all, the Bone Marrow Cleansing Water is not an ordinary treasure, and she is actually willing to steal it for us,

moreover, three portions! Such an act has obviously gone beyond any kind of friendship, don't you think?" he explained with a bitter smile on his face.

Joan rolled her eyes at Nash. "You must be overthinking. Miss Cabello is a few years younger than Jack. Moreover, Jack is already married and has Kylie! Miss Cabello certainly does not like Jack in a romantic way!" She huffed.

Joan paused for a moment before continuing, "After all, Jack saved her life from the brigands, and that act itself is more valuable than the precious water! If she wanted to repay Jack in such a way, it's reasonable!"

"Maybe I am overthinking!"

Nash said with the corners of his mouth curled up.

Fiona, who was standing aside, had her eyes lit up brightly." Master White, I heard that the Cabello family is much more powerful than the White family. They are ranked in the top three of the eight reclusive families, right? So, if Jack could really get together with Miss Cabello, that'd be a great thing, isn't it? And that will be a so-called strong union, am I right?"

"Well, it's true that it'd be a great thing." Nash smiled awkwardly at Fiona's response. "But it's highly unlikely for it to happen because we are not on good terms with the Cabello family. It's considered a blessing for Jack to have a good relationship with Miss Cabello and ease the tension between the two families. But if you want Miss Cabello to marry Jack, it's almost impossible. The Cabello family will not agree to it!"

Nash halted for a few seconds before continuing, "What's more, Miss Cabello is young and there are plenty of powerful, wealthy, and talented young masters falling head over heels for her. Miss Cabello wouldn't choose a married man-Jack and be his second wife!"

There was one elder in the crowd who stepped up at this time and reminded everyone, "We shouldn't discuss this matter openly. We are merely relying on our own imagination and discussing excitedly, but what if Miss Cabello overheard us? She might not feel happy as she only sees Jack as a friend. If we talk about things like that without a basis and make her unhappy, that'd cause a problem!"

At this time, Jack and Daniella were pacing toward Jack's residence. Along the way, he recounted the incident about the Third Elder, Lance, and Lily to fill Daniella in.

Daniella sighed loudly after listening to the story. "So you're the illegitimate son of Master White. But you manage to reach the true god realm by yourself in the secular world! That's amazing! Although Lance and I, our talents are not on the top of the list among the younger generation, we 're considered as talented geniuses too! I didn't expect that my talent is nothing in front of you. Hehe!"

Jack chortled embarrassingly." Nah, that's not true. Your talent is excellent as well! After all, you're a few years younger than me!"

The two of them were so engaged in their conversation that they did not realize that they had arrived at Jack's residence.

Inside the residence, Elaine, Selena, Ben, and some others are chatting happily in the courtyard.

"Dear, you're back! I didn't expect you to be back so soon! I thought you might need a few more days!"

Selena shot up from the chair when she saw Jack and Daniella push the gate open and walked in. Selena's mood lightened and a broad wide smile hung on her face.

"Master!"

Chapter 1253

Ethan and Sam were flabbergasted with joy as well when they saw that their Master had returned. The corners of their mouth curled upward, showing their pearly white and even teeth.

"Brother-in-law, why did you bring a beautiful woman back with you? Tsk tsk, she is really good-looking! Don't tell me, you went out for a trip and came back with a little wife?"

Elaine noticed the presence of Daniella beside Jack and teased the two jokingly.

Nevertheless, Jack's face immediately sank to the bottom. "What nonsense are you spewing about? This is the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family! It just so happened that I rescued her from a group of brigands during my journey. So, she decided to follow me to visit the White family and depart with us in a few days for the tournament. The Cabello family will attend the tournament too!"

"Hehe! Look at you, why are you all nervous? I'm just kidding. She' s truly good-looking and attractive!" Elaine chuckled at Jack's big response and said.

"This beautiful Miss is your wife?"

Daniella took two steps forward and studied Selena from head to toe, carefully She could feel that Selena, other than being good-looking and beautiful, was more mature than she was. Selena emitted a feminine sensation that she did not possess.

However, it was really hard to tell who was prettier and more good-looking between Selena and Daniella. Each of them had their own attractive points!

"Yes, and her name is Selena!"

Jack smiled on the surface, but in fact, he was sweating in worries inside his heart. He was afraid that Selena might have noticed something.

Jack was actually in a complete state of panic, as though he was sitting on pins and needles. He was kicking himself inside at the thought of that particular night. If he had not drunk the monkey wine, he would not get drunk; and he would not have done such a thing with Daniella!

He had violated a girl and took away her first time. If he pretended as if nothing happened and chose not to be responsible, that would be a d*ck move and he would be restless for the rest of his life, thinking that he had violated a young girl.

"Hello Sis Selena, my name is Daniella Cabello and I'm the Third Young Mistress of the Cabello family! You can call me Daniella!"

Daniella approached Selena and extended her hand graciously to shake Selena's hand.

Selena returned her with a faint smile and then extended her hand to hold Daniella's. "Nice to meet you, Daniella. My husband is a kind-hearted man. If he encounters an unjust incident, he will step up and intervene! It's fate that we can get to know each other. From now on, we're good friends!"

"Mm!"

Daniella bobbed her head happily.

After that, Jack introduced others to Daniella, and then he arranged a room for her to rest.

"Master, we haven't seen each other for so long, shouldn't we get together and have a few drinks?"

Yoseph walked over and said to Jack, smilingly.

"Hehe, that's a great idea! It just so happens that Kylie wants to visit the town at the bottom of the mountain, and Miss Cabello has never been there either. How about this, let's go to the town together tonight to eat and drink? We can also stroll around the night market there!"

Jack chortled brightly and agreed.

Chapter 1254

Soon, the evening came. Jack took everyone to the town for a hearty meal and good night's stroll.

The town was prosperous and well -developed; they even had a school in the town. Jack planned to let Kylie train in the White residence, and she could attend the school in the town to learn too. The plan sounded perfect.

The teachers in the school taught accordingly to a fixed syllabus and were keen to pass down the knowledge of the outside world to the kids.

For example, the students were taught to recognize first or second -grade spirited grass, and basic knowledge of martial training, as well as characteristics of some demonic creatures in the wild.

After all, the kids who attended the school were generally from martial families, and when they are older, they would eventually train and practice as martial artists.

The group returned to the White residence in the late evening. Jack was exhausted from being busy the entire day that he laid down and fell asleep in no time.

The next morning, Jack woke up and asked Selena, "Dear, how's your martial training lately? I've been away for quite some time, and you only had to pick up Kylie from school, so it shouldn't take much time."

A cute smile formed on Selena's face, "Well, I didn't really have much time to train this time. After all, I had to accompany Mother and Father for walks to get familiar with the place. And I also had to spend time with Kylie, so I didn't have much time to train and there's no obvious improvement in my martial status. But, I would say my progress is not that bad at all. The morning before yesterday, I barely broke through to reach the firstgrade of grandmaster level!"

Jack was suffused with happiness that his eyes lit up upon hearing Selena's progress in martial training. "Wow, that's amazing! You're already at the grandmaster level! You have such talent, and such skills are considered excellent!"

"Thanks to you, Dear! I wouldn't have achieved this if it weren't for the Chi Congregation pill and spirited grass that you gave me. With the help of those miraculous resources, I can train and improve a lot faster!" A cute, bashful smile crawled onto Selena's face as she spoke.

Jack bobbed his head to show agreement. "I'll be leaving in a few days. Although I can't really train on the road, I'll make time at night to train. I can confidently say that I have already stabilized myself at the early stage of the true god realm. So, during the trip, I'll see if I could use some of the pills and spirited material to try to break through to the middle stage of the true god realm!"

"Middle stage of the true god realm?"

An envious look plastered on Selena's pretty feature when she heard Jack. "I'm so envious of you, for being able to break through to the middle stage of the true god realm. Your talent and combat prowess are extraordinary, if you really reach the middle stage of the true god realm, you can even fight against those who are at the late stage of the true god realm, right?"

Jack, however, felt a little guilty. He wrapped his arms around Selena's waist and said, "Sigh! It's just that I'll be busy training these days, so I'm afraid that I won't have time to accompany you and Kylie." Jack sighed. “Also, you have to inform this to your parents as well." He added.

Selena shot Jack an attentive look. "Don't worry about it. I told them a few days ago. My parents are understanding, they know that martial practitioners often require ample amounts of time to train and practice. And they're okay with it. It won't affect us!"

Jack stared at the beauty in his embrace. He could not help but plant a tender kiss on Selena's rosy, pink lips. "Dear, I have to follow them to attend the martial tournament in a few days. Please stay back with Kylie and enroll her into the school in town, meanwhile, please continue to train hard too. Thank you, dear!"

It was rare to experience a gentle Jack. Selena's cheeks immediately blushed and she felt a surge of sweetness and happiness. “You're welcome! We' re a family. You don't have to say' please' at all."

"Oh, I just thought that I didn't get to spend much time with you lately. So I felt a little guilty!"

Jack laughed off as he explained.

Chapter 1255

"It's nothing. Martial practitioners always had to train in isolation for months. It can't be helped, right?"

Selena smiled in return. "Alright, train well, dear. I'll stop bothering you now. Hehe!"

Selena soon left the adobe. Jack then flipped his palm and took out three pills-all three pills were first-grade intermediate training pills!

Jack smiled as he looked at the three pills in front of him. These three pills could help him break through to the middle stage of the true god realm. After all, he was not too far away from the middle stage now.

Jack then put one of the pills into his mouth and swallowed them. Thick and inexhaustible energy then dispersed from Jack's abdomen in an instant. The energy was immense, at the same time aggressive.

A gentle smile formed on Jack's face when he felt the energy within him. He closed his eyes and started to control the energy in his body, channeling chi energy and gathering it in his abdomen. The chi energy formed a whirl in his abdomen, as though there was a tiny tornado in his body. The small whirl had slowly become bigger and bigger; Jack's overall strength and power had increased as well.

The time passed by slowly, and soon the spirited energy inside the pills was fully absorbed by Jack, and the chi energy inside Jack obviously become stronger and more powerful than before!

He smiled faintly and threw the second pill into his mouth and swallowed. He repeated the training technique, absorbing the chi energy inside the pill.

It took almost two days for Jack to train and absorb all the energy from the three pills. Fortunately, his martial level had also broken through to the middle stage of the true god realm.

Jack steadily stood up, clenched his fists and his bone joints emitted a clear clicking sound. The robustness and strength of his body had obviously advanced a lot, and the inner power in his body was doubled or even tripled after the training; the mellowness of his chi energy had become richer and thicker two or three times than before.

"Hahaha! It feels really different to be in the middle stage of the true god realm. The feeling is too good, and my combat power is a lot greater than before!"

Jack smiled with satisfaction, and then he walked out of the room.

Selena-who was playing with Kylie outside the house-was surprised at the appearance of Jack at this time. "No way! How did you complete your training this quick? Have you succeeded yet? I've heard that it's not that easy to reach the middle stage of the true god realm! And for some people who failed to break through, they'd have to rest for a while before they can continue to try again! And if you're unfortunate, you might even be physically wounded!"

A ray of warm light surged in Jack 's heart when he saw Selena's concerned look. "Don't worry, dear. I've broken through to the middle stage of the true god realm!" He smiled and comforted.

"Wow! Wow! Daddy is definitely more powerful than before now!"

Kylie jumped for joy that her feet barely touched the ground.

"Hehe, my little Kylie, when you get a little bit older, you can start training, and in the future, you've to strive to be more powerful than daddy, okay?"

Jack picked up his daughter from the ground and gently pinched the little girl's cute nose. His eyes were full of warm fatherly love.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1256-1260

Chapter 1256

"Middle stage of the true god realm?"

Daniella, who had just walked out of her room, overheard the conversation between the couple. She was shocked at what she heard and then exclaimed with joy, "You're truly talented! Your speed in training and absorbing the energy from the pills were too fast! Others might need at least a week or longer to break through to the middle stage of the true god realm! But you actually used only two days and succeeded!"

At this moment, the admiration toward Jack grew deeper and deeper within Daniella. She was even fantasizing that if she had the chance to introduce Jack as her boyfriend to her father, what would her father think?

"Oh, I'm just slightly luckier!"

Jack laughed it out and said modestly.

"That's awesome! That's truly awesome! With your current martial level and combat prowess, you might be able to win first place in the upcoming martial tournament! You can finally bring glory to the White family!"

Daniella looked at Jack, her eyes full of unexplainable beams. Even if you can't get the first place, surely you'll be placed in the top three!"

"Top three?"

Jack was slightly stunned at her words. "It seems like the White family didn't have good raking in this tournament in the past!"

After all, before he returned to the White family, Lance White-who was at the peak of the semi-god realm-was considered the first seed in the White family.

And now, since Jack had already hit the middle stage of the true god realm, he thought that taking the first place would not be a problem.

He did not expect that Daniella saw him as the top three but not the champion.

Daniella smiled and she explained, "The White family had always bottomed the list in the past tournaments. Although the White family was not the worst in the tournament, your family has just become one of the eight reclusive families not long ago, so the White family is definitely the last in the eight reclusive families!"

Jack bobbed his head. Indeed, the White family had only become one of the first-class eight reclusive families recently. Although the White family was more powerful and stronger than those second-class and thirdclass families, the gap between the White and the other seven reclusive families was still wide.

Daniella approached Jack and patted his shoulder gently. "You' re not bad at all. Think about it, the Cabello family and the other reclusive families, we've been first -class families for decades and some of them even have hundreds of years of heritage. And your family has just risen lately, it's not possible to compare with us." She comforted him.

Daniella was afraid that her words might have hurt Jack's confidence, hence she smiled and said, “But your martial level and combat prowess is considered high and strong. You'll certainly impress many first-class reclusive families this time around!"

"Oh, I'm not trying to impress, but I'll try my very best!"

"Oh ya, Jack, Father asked me to tell you that there are three days left before we leave, so you should prepare yourself."

Selena quickly thought of something and interrupted the conversation.

"Alright, I'll rest for these few days and try to maintain and stabilize my martial level, so that I can get used to the power!"

Jack nodded.

During the conversation, Selena noticed the bright and shining beam in Daniella's eyes when she was looking at Jack. She did not show the same when she was engaging with the others, only with Jack. And the beam emitted something attentive-it was full of love and affection.

Selena's brows snapped together as she thought of it. "Daniella, I won't be going this time. Please help to take care of Jack, will you? I entrust him to your care!" Selena said to Daniella after thinking for a moment.

Chapter 1257

Daniella did not expect such words would come out of Selena's mouth out of sudden. She stood frozen for a moment before peeking at Jack. "Don't worry. Jack and I are good friends, we'll definitely take care of each other! I 'll also ask my sister to go a little easy on Jack during the tournament!" Daniella nodded.

"Is your sister very powerful?"

Jack frowned upon hearing it. According to Daniella's words and tone, it seemed that her sister was a strong martial practitioner; her martial level should be high.

"For this tournament, as long as you're from the martial families and you're below the age of thirty, you're eligible to participate. I'm still young, so it's normal for me to have a low martial level."

Daniella smiled softly before saying, "But, my second sister, she' s at the early stage of the true god realm, and my elder sister, she is at the middle stage of the true god realm. Although she is similar to you, at the middle stage, she is only one step away from the late stage of the true god realm. She might break through to the late stage at any time. And her combat prowess and martial ability are among the top of those in the middle stage of the true god realm!"

Daniella shrugged as she spoke. "Hmmm. I'll say more about my second sister, but my elder sister, she is too strong for you. It's nearly impossible for you to defeat her." She added.

"I see. Thanks for the reminder. But I don't think your sisters will listen to you and go easy on me."

Jack gave a dry smile. Although the Lagorio family had not been finding fault with them lately, the affair that happened between the Lagorio family and the White family had seemed to spread out.

Therefore, this time round in the tournament, he felt that the Lagorio family and some of the forces would most likely target them. He was not confident to say that there would not be any issue during the tournament.

Especially, those forces and families-who were about the same level with the White family before the White became one of the eight families-would certainly be jealous of the White family. They could not wait to pull the White family down from the first-class reclusive families!

"Huh? Nah. My elder sister and second sister love me the most. If I talk to them personally, it shouldn't be a problem!"

Daniella pursed her rosy pink lips and said, "Sigh! I have to work hard too and strive to break through to the early stage of the true god realm. I can't always use my young age as an excuse to be lazy!" She sighed.

"Cough, cough! Looking at you, I guess you have been loafing on the job."

Jack teased Daniella after hearing what she said. The young girl before him sometimes emitted a youthful and cuteness in her words and behaviors that made Jack feel something different in him.

"Hehe! Yup, but just a little! Well. Sometimes, training is kind of boring!"

Daniella giggled.

Time flies by quickly and soon three days had passed.

During these three days, Daniella would come over to talk to Jack and Selena whenever she was free and would even purposely please Selena by telling her some insights about martial training and technique.

Finally, after three days, the day had come. Together with Nash and Jack, there were many Elders of the White family, as well as some other White family members. They set off in the morning.

"Sigh! If the Third Elder hadn't thought about mutiny and had broken through to the peak of the true god realm, we would now have two strong people at the peak of the true god realm. And we can finally hold our heads up high in this tournament. Now, after the incident, not only did we not improve our family's overall strength and power, but we also regressed a lot!"

On the way to the tournament, the First Elder breathed a huge sigh and added, "And I'm afraid that this time the target will be on our backs. Many forces and families will target us."

Nash, however, put on a sanguine face. "It's alright, it's fine. I have faith in our family. We will be strong very soon!"

Chapter 1258

On the other side, the head of the Cabello family and others were worried about something. They paced around the hall and their faces looked concerned.

Daniella had been out for more than a month. When she left a letter announcing that she went out to search for treasures and resources in the forest, the group did not expect that she would not return for so long.

The Cabello family had sent out a lot of their men to search in the forest that they normally frequent for the treasure hunt, nonetheless, not a single trace of Daniella had been found. This made the Cabello family feel agonized and worried.

"Dad, don't worry about Daniella, she'll be alright. Let's go!"

At the square of the Cabello family, the First Young Mistress Cabello gazed at Alejandro Cabello--the head of the Cabello family--and said, smilingly," Daniellita is a smart and quick-witted girl. She will not be in trouble; she'll be alright. Besides, who has that brave heart to offend the current Cabello family? Aren 't they afraid of our revenge? So, I think Daniellita is just being playful and not wanting to come back so soon. She must be hanging and fooling around somewhere!”

"I do hope so. Sigh! That young lady is prideful and arrogant sometimes. What worries me is that she had never gone out of Cabello island before. Now that she is on her own, I'm worried that she is too simple-minded, and that others would dig a pit for her! That'd be really troublesome!"

Alejandro sighed aloud in his heart. The more time passed, the more concerned was his heart.

After all, his three daughters were good looking and considered as beauties of the island. Even though one of them, the elder daughter-was already twentynine years old, a lot of young masters still fell head over heels for her! Not to mention his youngest daughter, a playful, high-spirited yet gorgeous young lady, who would make any young men fall for her effortlessly. Her every gesturesmile, laugh, walk-was like a drug, injected into young men's veins and making them addicted to her.

Therefore, if such a beauty left the home and went on an adventure for more than a month, the father obviously would be worried.

The First Young Mistress Cabello's pallor went unsightly after hearing her father's words. She was worried but she could only force a smile and comfort his father, "She'll be okay. She's definitely alright. I have faith in her!"

"Sigh! Let's depart now. We can only try to be optimistic!"

Alejandro knew that his daughter was saying that to comfort herself too. He smiled and waved his hand. A flying carpet suddenly appeared in front of everyone.

The flying carpet rose in the wind, and soon it grew to a size that could accommodate nearly a thousand people.

"Let's go!"

Four to five hundred men hopped onto the flying carpet and sat on it. With a flicker of movement in Alejandro's mind, the flying carpet flew out and went straight in the direction of the mainland.

"Sigh! The White family doesn't have any flying treasure. Every time we have such an event, we have to go by land!”

Jack and the others were on their way to the tournament at this time. The First Elder -- who was at the front-sighed at the situation.

"Such treasure is rare. The higher-level treasures are known as spiritual tools. As for a treasure that can fly, heh, it's even rarer!"

Nash smiled bitterly and explained.

"Spiritual tool?"

Jack heard the words and a few lines form between his snapped brows. “I don' t have much knowledge about spiritual tools, and I've never heard that there are different levels among spiritual tools!"

Chapter 1259

Guilt filled Nash's heart when he heard that. Jack had been training in the mortal realm for all this while, and it seemed like he did not have much knowledge about treasures.

He gave a small smile and explained to Jack in a patient tone, “There are two types of tools: normal tools, and spiritual tools. And the latter has several grades as well according to how much strength it gives you in battle and its fluctuations after absorbing chi: lower-grade, middlegrade, and upper-grade. And the most powerful of them all, ultimate-grade tools!”

Here, Nash paused for a while before continuing, “But most martial artists still stick to regular soldier weapons. It's pretty good if you have a lower-grade tool, and only a few people possess middle-grade tools-never mind upper and ultimate-grade tools!”

Jack thought about it for a while and flipped his palm, taking out an object that resembled a tortoiseshell. He thrust it toward Nash. "Dad, take a look at this. I think this is a spiritual tool. But I don't know what grade it is. This is a defensive weapon that grows bigger to fend off attacks!”

Nash's eyes brightened when he heard this. "Defensive tools are really rare too. It might save your life at a critical moment. I never thought that you'd get your hands on one!"

After he said that, Nash passed the treasure back to Jack and said, "Try channeling your chi into it!"

The treasure had already recognized Jack as its owner and had traces of his energy in it. Nash definitely had no way of making it move, and if others wanted to make that treasure theirs, they needed to completely wipe off every trace of Jack's chi from it.

As Jack injected his chi into it, the tortoiseshell shield slowly grew bigger, till it reached the height of a man. A warm yellow glow emanated from its surface.

"From-from its fluctuations, it should be a middle-grade tool. Not bad. Not bad at all. We only have a few of such weapons in the White family!"

Nash studied it for a while before a smile lit up his face. He was glad that Jack managed to get his hands on such a treasure.

"Oh, right. I have another word here. It's probably a spiritual tool!"

Jack kept the shield and smiled as he took out the black sword. He then poured some of his energy into it.

Suddenly, a black flash emitted from the dragon-shaped sword. A fierce, yet quiet ripple spread throughout the area.

Jack gave a smile. "This sword is a spiritual tool as well. But probably a lower or middle-grade, right?"

"Let me take a look!"

Nash took a step forward and observed it. Then excitement spread across his features. "There's a small hole on this sword. Here. Do you see it? So you can't just pour your energy in like that. You have to make it enter through this hole to make it release its full potential!"

Jack took a sharp intake of breath after he heard that. "So you're saying that I haven't been using this sword properly all this while? I've only been tapping into a fraction of its power?"

Nash bobbed his head. "But even so, I can already tell that it's a spiritual tool. You'll have to pour your chi through the hole for me to determine its grade!"

Jack nodded his head. He followed Nash's instructions and focus his energy into his palm, before threading it through that tiny hole.

Hum!

The sword, originally rather full, suddenly brightened and emitted a frightening hum. The fluctuations were even stronger this time around.

Chapter 1260

Jack never expected the sword to grow bigger as well. A different aura also seeped into his head.

After he received the message, he was extremely excited. His features showed extreme delight.

“This-this should be an ultimate-grade tool!”

The First Elder was so excited that his voice quivered. Only the very strongest of the reclusive families had such a treasure, and even then, they only possessed one of it.

It was evident that this was extremely precious. No one thought that Jack's sword was an ultimate-grade tool.

“That's right. I never thought that it would be an ultimate-grade tool. I never noticed anything extraordinary about it either when Jack had taken it out!"

Nash was excited as well. He never expected Jack's sword to be such a valuable treasure.

"Dada! I think-I think I received a message from the sword just now!”

Jack was excited. He waved his hand, and the sword flew upward, rapidly expanding in the sky until it looked like two or three thousand people could stand on it.

With an internal shove, Jack's sword shrunk again, till it could take about a thousand people.

“This-this is a tool that can fly? My god. You can use it to fight and fly. Such a treasure is so hard to come by!”

Many elders immediately understood what Jack had meant when they saw him remotely controlling it.

"This is great. If that's the case, we can sit on this sword to head for the competition!"

Daniella also jumped excitedly after witnessing all that. Even her father's flying carpet was not that high of a grade. It could only fly, and you could not use it to fight. It was her first time seeing such a treasure as well.

"Let's go!”

With a blink, Jack stood atop the sword and announced to everyone.

"Hah! All right!"

Nash laughed and flew up as well, landing softly on the surface of the sword.

"Let's go!"

Everyone also happily hopped on.

"I really never thought that such a sword would exist. Hah. Never imagined that I would be sitting on this!"

The First Elder laughed and sat cross legged. The sword flew out under Jack's control.

"Not only is this a flying sword, but it's also an ultimate-grade tool!”

Admiration spread across the Second Elder's face. "You're at the beginning stage of the true god realm now, but with this sword, you can head toe-to-toe with those from the intermediate stage. And you even might stand a chance of defeating them!”

Everyone nodded their heads when they heard that.

"It's a pity that Jack's level is not quite there yet," Nash chimed in. "If he were to be at the intermediate stage of the true god realm, we'd have another fighter at the advanced stage with the enhanced power this sword gives!"

"You're amazing, Young Master Jack," Lancelot said, smiling.

"You've surpassed us so quickly!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1261-1265

Chapter 1261

No one expected Daniella to speak up at this moment, a knowing smile on her face, "I see that you didn't know Jack is already at the intermediate stage of the true god realm. He underwent the breakthrough a few days ago. With this sword, he might have the fighting prowess of a fighter at the advanced stage!"

"What? He-he already broke through?"

Nash was stunned. He swiveled his head toward Jack in excitement. "Jack, is that true? You-you're already at the intermediate stage of the true god realm?"

"My God. He broke through so fast? You're a true genius, Young Master Jack! Young Master Lance cannot match up to you!"

Many elders could not help but exclaim. They were suspecting if they were dreaming.

After all, the shock of finding out that Jack had an ultimate-grade weapon had not completely subsided yet, and now they were saying that he had broken into the intermediate stage of the true god realm.

It was not easy to advance through the stages of the true god status. It required great ability from the practitioner.

More importantly, some would not succeed in breaking through even after trying a few times, and they' d have to rest for quite some time before attempting to break through once more.

That was why everyone knew how difficult it was to advance through the stages.

Jack nodded his head when he saw everyone's excitement. "I did breakthrough. I've also been growing accustomed to my chi over these past few days!"

"Heh. Like father, like son! How could we not envy a genius like you, Jack?"

Titus nodded his head in satisfaction, evidently excited as well.

At this moment, a flying sword appeared from another direction, heading toward where they were going.

"It's the Norman family!"

The First Elder frowned when he recognized them, their swords drawing closer to each other.

"The Norman family?"

Daniella frowned as well when she heard this. She was well aware that the Norman family was on par in terms of strength with the Cabello family.

However, the Norman family had pretty good relations with the Cabello family, and since the Cabello family was on bad terms with the White family, the Norman family was not close with the White family either.

Furthermore, plenty of young masters from the Norman family were interested in Daniella. That was why they frequently fought the White family members-all to gain recognition from her and her two sisters.

She never thought that they would run into this bunch not long after leaving for the competition.

"Eh!"

The people on the other flying sword also quickly recognized Jack and the others.

"Look. There's a flying sword there! It must be another powerful family!"

A young woman spoke to the person beside her, smiling.

"It looks like the White family."

The elder standing at the forefront furrowed his brows together after observing them for a while. "Strange. Since when did the White family have a flying sword like that? I thought they'd be walking there."

After they heard this, many people burst into laughter.

Although the White family was one of the eight reclusive families, their strength was nothing compared to the other seven. That was why they looked down upon them.

Chapter 1262

"Don't laugh. They probably picked up a lower-grade tool that so happened to fly toward somewhere, so they're using it!"

The First Elder of the Norman family spoke in a sardonic tone.

After all, Jack's sword looked dull and ordinary then, and only a tinge of black encased it. It flew at a leisurely pace, not too fast and not too slow.

That was why there was no way to tell the grade of the treasure.

The only thing they could be sure of was that a flying treasure was no doubt a spiritual tool. Some of the low-grade spiritual tools could also fly, but they could not go very fast.

"They picked it up?"

Their Second Elder was taken aback for a while. "Hah. Even a flying treasure is not worth picking up if it' s a low grade one," he commented, smiling. "They must have spent quite a fortune to buy that secondhand item."

A young master from the Norman family rolled his eyes.

"Second Elder, how could you say that?" he said solemnly. "They're one of the eight reclusive families as well and are a first-class family. How could you just say that they bought a second-hand item?"

"Heh. That's true. I forgot about that!"

The Second Elder cleared his throne, making everyone laugh again.

The young man also grinned. It was evident that they were in cahoots with each other.

However, his smile quickly hardened, and his muscles stiffened.

"That-that woman. Why is Daniella Cabello there?"

The young man squinted at the flying sword, brows knitted. The more he studied the woman, the more she looked like Daniella.

However, he thought maybe he was wrong. The Cabello family and the White family were not on friendly terms. As the third daughter of the Cabello family, why would Daniella be mingling about with the White family? She was even on the same flying sword as them.

Many people also went goggle-eyed when they noticed this.

"You're right, it's her!”

A young woman exclaimed after she saw them.

"We'll know who it is once we get closer. No way that it's Daniella!"

Master Norman thought about it for a while before directing the sword toward Jack and the others, closing the distance between them.

"Why are the Norman family members coming our way? Are they trying to greet us?"

Chapter 1263

The First Elder could not help but frown when he saw them coming over. Worry clenched his chest.

"Who cares. We have nothing to be afraid of. Besides, we can't hide from them forever. We'll run into them at the competition venue anyway."

Nash gave a frosty smile and spoke languidly.

"It...it really is Third Young Mistress Cabello!"

After they closed some of the distance, an elder exclaimed and scrubbed his eyes.

"Daniella, why are you on the White family's flying sword?"

Master Norman's eldest son, Keith, was slightly taken aback. "Miss Daniella, were you kidnapped by the White family?' he asked. "If you were, blink. The Norman family will save you!"

The second son of Master Norman also stepped forward. "This beautiful young woman is the Third Young Mistress Cabello, White family members," he hollered. "I'll make sure to give you h*ll if you dare to touch a single hair on her head!”

A fatty, who was the third son, also spoke up in a blustering manner," Upon my pride as a Norman son, I swear we won't be able to face the Cabello family if anyone bullies her!"

Daniella was internally speechless." I wasn't forced into this," she replied. "I just wanted to go for the competition, and I so happened to bump into them. Since we were heading for the same place, I just hitched a ride from them!"

Daniella was well aware that the three young masters all displayed affection toward her-as well as her two older sisters. It was evident that they were out to gain attention from any of the three girls.

Keith immediately heaved a sigh of relief. "Really? I thought you were kidnapped. After all, the Cabello family isn't on good terms with the White family!"

Here, he felt that something was off. "Third Young Mistress Cabello, don't tell me that you've been forced to lie because they've blackmailed you or because you're afraid of them?”

The second son was also stunned. "That's right. Your families are not close with each other, Third Young Mistress Cabello. You have no obligation to sit on their flying sword even if they're going in the same direction. Come over and sit with us. It's more comfortable here. More importantly, we're faster. We'll arrive at Kobe Mountain in no time.

"I appreciate your concern, but there 's no need for that. I'll just sit on their flying sword!"

Daniella felt awkward. It would be taxing to sit on the same sword with those three fellows, who were likely to be sucking up to her all the way. She would rather be dead than listen to their groveling.

Master Norman suddenly felt embarrassed. All three of his sons tried to coax Daniella, but she unexpectedly did not reciprocate. She would rather sit with the White family than them.

Master Darryl Norman suddenly spoke with a frosty expression, "Ah, surely I've heard that wrong, Third Young Mistress. The relation between your family and theirs is sour, yet you'd rather go together with the White family instead of the Norman family. You're taking a jab at my reputation. Besides, aren't you afraid that I'll tell your father about this? He'll be angry."

Daniella did not expect that Darryl would get mad over something so trivial. She hated it when others threatened her.

"Master Norman, it just so happened that we're going the same way," she said, pitching her tone low. "It's such a small matter. And you're saying that I look down on the Norman family because of this? They're one of the right reclusive families too. It's not out of the ordinary for me to follow you or follow them. What do you mean that I'm jabbing at your reputation?"

Here, she spoke straightforwardly," If you're really so petty that you would tell my father about this, please, go right ahead."

Chapter 1264

It appears that what Daniella uttered was extremely straight to the point and Master Norman was unable to refute it.

If he still continued to hold onto that matter and report to the Cabellos about how she was with the White, would he not appear as being petty? However, if he let it go at that moment, the Norman family would be extremely embarrassed. After all, they got into such a situation when they kindly asked Daniella if she was kidnapped and even invited her to travel with them instead.

He proactively changed the topic of their conversation after thinking about it. He glanced at Nash and smiled coldly. “Master White, I heard that something happened in the White family around one month ago? Tsk tsk... If such an interesting plot was written into a book, the book would surely be a hit!”

The corners of Nash's mouth slightly twitched. He knew that some people would bring up that matter and talk about it.

However, he did not expect it to be mentioned during their journey to Kobe Mountain.

He glanced at Darryl and smiled bitterly. "Haha... I had no idea that the Norman family was so well-informed and actually paid attention to the situation at the White family!”

Nash paused before continuing to speak, “Something did happen previously but it's our family's internal affairs and we ve already resolved it!"

Nash obviously did not intend to continue the conversation with him.

Unfortunately, Darryl who was humiliated a moment ago, did not plan to let Nash go so easily.

He had a playful smile on his face as he said, "Have you really resolved it? Aren't you slightly too confident about it? In my opinion, this is not something that you can resolve so easily. Your wife was actually involved in an affair with the Third Elder. Sigh, who knew that Lily Lagorio is that sort of a person. I heard that she even poisoned you. Tsk, tsk... What a scary woman."

The First Elder of the Norman family also stood forward. "That s right. This did not only cost the Lagorios their honor, even the White have lost their faces. Apart from that, Master White, you had been really careless for letting them poison you."

Nash's facial expression darkened. Something like this was a disgrace to the White family. Who knew that these people would mention it on purpose without sparing him some dignity.

He could only smile bitterly." Everything is in the past. We've killed those who deserved to be killed and punished those who deserved to be punished. Our White family will definitely have better development in the future!”

Darryl's son, Keith, then said with a smile, “Will you be able to have better development? I don't think so. Haha... You've worked so hard to become a first -class aristocratic family. You must have suffered quite a loss now that the Third Elder, several other elders, and patronums have died. Haha... some of the families that once stood by your side might not even acknowledge your positions this time.”

Nash smiled bitterly. "Eldest young master, you are right to say that we've suffered quite a huge loss. However, we've progressed nicely over the past two to three years. The position of Third Elder and the other elders have been taken over by the other branch family masters. We are also working hard to grow stronger. We'll need to observe our growth in the future!"

Although Nash was secretly unhappy, he knew clearly that it was best to not offend these seven families. Hence, he would try his best to give in under such circumstances and not get into a fight with the other party.

Hence, he remained a calm expression even though the other party had said such things about his family. He even maintained a smile on his face as he conversed nicely with them.

"Haha... I'm afraid that it would be hard for you people to get the recognition from others this time. As one of the eight reclusive families, you can't get low positions in this competition. It would be shameful if you did not enter the top ten and end up with a low placing in this competition!" Darryl Norman once again laughed loudly and said.

“Don't you worry, Master Norman. I believe that there's a possibility that the White ER family will surprise everybody this time!" Daniella, who was by the side, could not stand it anymore.

In the past, she would have ignored any comments the Norman family had about the White family. She might even gloat because she was a member of the Cabello family.

However, she felt uncomfortable and unconvinced for the White family when she heard others commenting on them now. She even stood forward and proactively speak on behalf of the White family.

Chapter 1265

Darryl did not expect Daniella to not only refuse to travel with the Norman family, she helped to speak on behalf of the White family.

He was slightly stunned before he spoke with a smile, “Really? Let's see how it goes?"

He thought about it after he spoke before asking Daniella again. "By the way, Daniellita, are you sure that you don't want to come with us? If you sit on this wasted flying sword with the White, it might take you some time. Isn't it better to reach the towns under Kobe Mountain earlier for a rest?”

"Uncle Darryl, why do I feel that sitting on their flying sword would be much faster than traveling with you?” Daniella smiled as she turned her head to ask Jack. "Jack, our flying sword would be faster than them, right?”

Jack kept quiet the entire time as he believed that the White family's development would be proven in time.

However, he still nodded as Daniella was doing so much talking on behalf of them.

"That's for sure!”

"Haha... Who knows where they got this wasted piece of junk from. It's a joke that they even think about comparing speed with our flying sword!” Keith smiled coldly. "Daniellita, it doesn't matter if the White have gone mad. Why have you decided to follow their footsteps? My father's flying sword is a middle-grade spiritual tool. How can your useless flying sword compete with his?”

"We'll know if we can compete with his flying sword after we try it out!” Jack was too lazy to explain to them. He changed his thoughts and with an increase in speed, the flying sword flew out with a whoosh.

"Such speed!" Darryl was stunned. He discovered that Jack 's flying sword was already a huge distance away from theirs.

"F*ck, I don't believe that I can' t catch up!" He immediately controlled the flying sword to increase its speed as he wanted to catch up with Jack and the others.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

However, Jack's flying sword was already speedy and he was still increasing it's speed. After ten seconds, they had completely thrown the Normans behind and disappeared from their line of sight.

"How's that possible! We failed to catch up!” Darryl's eyes were wide open as he swallowed his saliva hard. He wondered if he had made a mistake. He had been increasing the speed of his flying sword without stop and it was at it's limit. However, their distance with the White family' s flying sword was getting further and further away until they were completely thrown behind.

This can only prove that the level of the White family's flying sword is higher than ours!” Darryl had raging emotions in his heart and slowly spoke after some time.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1266-1270

Chapter 1266

The Norman family's First Elder was in disbelief at what he saw." That's impossible. The White family doesn't have any middle-grade spiritual tool as I recall, especially a flying sword at that. Such a spiritual tool is even rare! Our swords failed to fly faster than theirs. Could their sword be an upper-grade spiritual tool?”

He was not hallucinating or dreaming-everyone else saw the same thing, after all.

Darryl said with a cold expression on his face. "Never thought the White family would get lucky and score themselves a rare item from who knows where. If this is an upper-grade spiritual tool, it'll be able to increase quite an amount of combat power! If Nash uses this sword, I won't be able to take him down on my own!”

"By the way, who's that young man,” a young man chimed in after he spotted them, "and why does it seem like Daniella is well -acquainted to him?”

"Daniella seems to call him Jack!” added another.

"Jack, that illegitimate child?” The Norman family's second prodigies like us are compatible with Daniellita!” scoffed Conley Norman, chin raised high haughtily.

In their opinion, the White' flying sword is only an uppergrade spiritual tool and not an ultimate-grade spiritual tool, even though it was much faster than their flying sword. After all, there were only a handful of ultimate-grade spiritual tools.

The competition's venue was at the bottom of Kobe Mountain. The top family among the Eight Reclusive Families would announce the rules and rewards of the competition once everyone had

gathered.

There was a small town at the bottom of Kobe Mountain where, due to its generous Chi, many would train.

The Eight Reclusive Families and a few second or third-class reclusive families would arrive earlier before the competition started to have a good rest. They would then leave together and gather at the empty ground outside the forest located at the bottom of Kobe Mountain.

"Haha... We're so fast! I'd love to see the look on Master Norman's face!" chirped the gleeful Daniella, extremely happy with herself on the flying sword.

"You should try to have a low-profile. After all, our White family don't want to offend the Norman family!" quipped Jack as he wore an awkward smile." We can't afford to be engaged in several huge fights. We need to try our best in increasing our overall strength so that the other families won't ever belittle us."

Lancelot and the others were embarrassed when they heard this. They never expected that Jack would make such a comment toward Daniella without fearing she would be upset.

Surprisingly, Daniella, instead of grumbling, blushed instead as she lowered her head. "Alright, I get it," she muttered.

"I'll listen to everything you say in the future, alright?"

Chapter 1267

Many were baffled by what Daniella had said? What did she mean, listen to everything he would say in the future? Why did that sound like a conversation between a couple?

Jack was just as startled. He could only smile sheepishly as he looked in front of him while urging the sword to fly forward.

With this flying sword, the group arrived at the outskirts of the town under Kobe Mountain that night.

Jack stopped the flying sword when they arrived at the main entrance. “Alright, let's get down and walk in. It's best to keep a low-profile, too, seeing as it's a hassle if someone set their eyes on such a precious item.”

Nash nodded in satisfaction. “Alright, let's head in."

Jumping down from the flying sword, they walked toward the entrance after Jack made it much smaller and hid it into his martial ring.

"Seems like we're the early birds. It won't be easy to get accommodation had we come much later." The First Elder TER smiled bitterly. "Back then, we' d only be able to look for caves outside the city to stay in if we failed to find a place to stay."

"Haha...! We have to thank Young Master Jack for his flying sword; we wouldn't get here at such speed had it not been for his sword?” Mason chuckled heartily. Although the White family suffered a serious loss with what happened previously, they were still confident toward their development, especially since Jack's was immensely talented and had the fighting prowess of the real-god stage's intermediate level.

Together with this ultimate grade spiritual tool, his combat power was compatible with the masters of the real-god stage's peak. It would be even better should Jack break into the realgod level's final stage- the White family would be graced with another master of the real-god level's peak stage should Jack achieve such height.

Such an addition would increase the entire family's position to a whole new height.

After all, the seven other reclusive families basically had two of such masters while some had three or four.

The existence of a master in the peak stage real god level was an important measure of a family's overall strength.

In the past, there were only seven first-class reclusive families, but along the line, the White family grew stronger after constant development. Although they only had one master in the peak stage realgod level, their overall strength was not bad, which was why everyone was ready to add another reclusive family.

The White family emerged victorious after competing against several other powerful families, and that was how they obtained the acknowledgment of others and became the last in the Eight First-Class Reclusive Families.

As they got closer to the entrance, Jack and the others were suddenly stopped by guards at the entrance that they never saw before.

"What's the meaning of this?" Nash frowned, rather unhappy that he was blocked. Nothing like this had happened in the

past.

One of the guards walked forward and gestured politely with his hands before he resounded, "Greetings, Master White! Kobe City had always been controlled by the small clan, Kobe Clan, and had never asked for entrance fees in the past. However, you might not know it, but the Kobe Clan had started depending on the firstclass reclusive family, the Hunt family. They're now considered a dependent clan of the Hunt family!"

Nash's face darkened. "So there' s an entrance fee for entering the city this year?"

The guard nodded. "That's right. This is the Hunt family's orders, and there's nothing we can do about it. We're only subordinates who obey orders. I m sure Master White can understand this, right?"

Chapter 1268

The news shocked Nash. The Hunt family obviously did this to rake in profit.

It was obvious that a small clan like the Kobe Clan would not simply depend on the Hunt family all of a sudden. The Hunt family must have searched for them, and the profit must be shared between both parties later on.

However, the Hunt family was a huge clan, and they had four masters in the real god level's peak stage. They also had several masters in the final stage of the real-god level.

What could the White family even argue about when faced with such a powerful family?

Nash could only smile at the guards. "Now how can we make it harder for you? This is something we should do! We'll do it! Tell me: how many spirited stones do we need to pay?"

The guard smiled. “Hmm... Two lower-grade spirited stones per person, and I see that there are fifty-two people here. That means that a thousand and forty lower-grade spirited stones would be enough?"

"Over a thousand?” The corners of the First Elder's mouth twitched as he heard the rather expensive fee. They needed to pay spirited stones to enter the city, and it was too expensive at two pieces per person.

After all, such items were needed for grandmasters and needed training.

“Yes. This is the order they've given, and there's nothing we can do about it,” said the guard rather impatiently as he eyed the First Elder. “I don't believe the White family can't even come up with such a small amount of spirited stones. If that 's the case, you guys aren't living up to the reputation of being one of the Eight Reclusive Families!"

The First Elder was dumbfounded. It startled him how such a person of the Kobe Clan would address

them disrespectfully.

Nonetheless, he knew he could not get agitated as the Kobe Clan was supported by the Hunt family in silence. Everybody wanted to please the Hunt family, so offending them clearly proved to be fruitless.

"About that... Can the price be reduced? How about a thousand pieces?" offered the smiling Nash.

"Master White, isn't your request making it difficult for us? This rule is set by the upper management, and as their subordinates, how can we simply reduce the number of spirited stones you need to pay? What if they find out and have us make up for the lost stones?" The man stretched his body and said extremely lazily. "Sigh! Never thought that the White family, one of the Eight Reclusive Families, isn't as candid as some second-class reclusive families."

Nash's facial expression continued to darken, though he flipped his hand and came up with 1,040 lower-grade spirited stones and passed it to them." By the way, how long can these stones last us?"

The man took the spirited stones and calculated them before smilingly saying, "This is the entrance fee, and we won't ask for any other payment if you don 't leave the city after you enter. However, if you enter the city today and come out tomorrow, you'll need to pay again if you wish to re-enter. After all, too many people have visited recently, and we can't possibly remember if you guys have paid or not, right?"

"You're right." Giving a small smile, Nash waved his hand and led the group into the city.

Just as they walked past the guards, they heard them speaking, "Who knew that the White family would be so stingy ... They negotiated on a small amount of entrance fee. I can't believe it!"

Chapter 1269

Jack stopped walking and closed his hands into fists as he was extremely angry.

Such a fee should not have been taken from them in the first place and they had never asked for this fee

in the past. It was unfair as it was something the Hunt family came up with to make money. Who knew that the other party would take the payment as if it was reasonable. They even dared look down at them because they had the support of powerful people behind their backs.

“Let it be!" Nash glanced at Jack and smiled helplessly." This is how the world is. The right to speak goes to those who are more powerful. The Hunt family has four masters of the peak stage real god level. They also have a large number of masters who are in the final and intermediate stage of the real god level. We aren't compatible with them as they have high level martial skills. Not only the Hunt family, we also need to give way to the other families!”

Jack naturally understood that his actions also represent the White family. He loosen his fists after nodding in agreement and said, "Alright, I understand. Those families would not dare to bully us or look down at us if we strengthen the White family!”

"Yes, there's no other ways. Let' s try our best to strengthen the White family!” Nash sighed. The 1000 over pieces of spirited stones were sufficient for the younger generations of the White family to use for one month.

However, they could not do anything when they were faced with such domineering charges. They were not the only one, even families like the Cabello family would have to pay the spirited stones when they arrived.

"We should not have entered the city if we knew that this was going to happen. We could have found a cave and stayed outside for several days!" the Second Elder said angrily as he walked. He had obviously never experienced such abbreviation.

"That would not work!” Nash shook his head. "That would be nothing if this was ten years ago. However, we're one of the Eight Reclusive Families not and a member of the first-class reclusive family. The others might look down on us or despise us if we stayed outside. Especially those families who lost to us, they're working hard to increase their strength with hopes to pull us down and make themselves one of the first-class reclusive families!”

The Second Elder nodded helplessly. "That's true. After all, it had been mentioned in the last meeting

that the first-class reclusive families have to remain at eight families within the next twenty years while the other families are second or third -class reclusive families. There will be a discussion for the increase of the numbers after twenty years!”

As it had turned dark, the group soon found a small hotel.

"Oh my, isn't this Master White?” The owner immediately recognized Nash and welcomed them happily.

"Boss Lane, we need fifty-two rooms. How much spirited stones do you need?” Nash smiled at the other party. "We should follow the old rules and how about a 20% discount?"

Boss Lane smiled bitterly after he heard this. "The budget is too tight. Master White, the other hotels don't give discounts nowadays and after calculating everything, you would need one hundred pieces of spirited stones. What if I only take ninety pieces from you?”

"One hundred pieces?” Nash was slightly surprised when he heard this. “Isn't fifty enough based on the previous pricing? Why is it so expensive?”

"Brother, the price has increased. The price of everything has increased over the year. Everybody had increased their prices and if I don't, those in the same industry might cause me trouble. It's impossible for me to go against those big bosses, right? You need to put yourself in my shoe!” The boss smiled bitterly. He raised his hands and reassured Nash as he was afraid that Nash did not want the rooms.

“Brother, ninety bucks is already a discount for you. I can swear to you if you don't believe me. You can take a look at the other hotels out there. Those hotels are more expensive and they don't offer discounts!”

Chapter 1270

Boss Lane smiled when he saw that Nash was still hesitant. "Master White, my rooms here are only enough for you and five hundred other people. If you're set here, I'll put a sign out there to indicate that we are full. If you don 't plan to check in here, you will need to go look at other hotels and let other people come in later!"

Nash smiled slightly. "There's still another five days and it's a total of four hundred and fifty spirited stones, right?"

The boss nodded. "That's right. This is already considered a very low price!"

Nash flipped his hand to come up with his spirited stones and was ready to pay.

"Hold on, we are staying here!" Unexpectedly, the sound of a man speaking could be heard at this moment.

The corners of Nash's mouth immediately twitched several times when he heard this voice.

The person speaking was none other than Master Trenton of the Lagorio family.

"Haha... Nash White, what a coincidence. Who knew that I would meet you when I've just arrived in Kobe City!" Diana also smiled coldly and stared at the White hatred. She wanted to kill the entire White family so badly.

"Master Lagorio, what a coincidence. Who knew that we would meet so soon!"

Although he knew clearly that he would definitely meet members of the Lagorio family and was prepared for it, he had no idea that it would happen so soon.

Trenton humphed coldly before his sight finally landed on Jack." You're Jack? You really look like Nash!"

"Master Lagorio, I know you hate us but your daughter asked for what happened to her. Not only did she work together with the Third Elder to plan a rebel, she even poisoned my father. Haha... Let's not talk about my father. Would you put up with it if something like this happened to you?" Jack laughed and showed no signs of backing down. He wanted to wipe out the Lagorio family so badly. He would

have done it if the White family was not strong enough while his father wanted to develop the White family.

The Lagorios carried themselves as if they did not think that Lily made a mistake, they even blamed his father. It was true that a father would raise a daughter of the same character.

Trenton felt ashamed when he heard what Jack said. After all, it!

was true that his daughter cheated on Nash and even did something despicable when she poisoned Nash.

"You guys must have vented yourself since you guys killed so many members of the Lagorio family? No matter what, my daughter and Master White were once married. Directly destroying her training is even more brutal than killing her!" Diana was extremely angry. She felt a wave of heartbreaking pain when she recalled how haggard her daughter looked previously.

After all, their daughter was treated previously before Lana was married to the White family!

"Haha... Are you blaming my father for not killing her?" Jack laughed coldly when she heard this. "If that's the case, you just need to tell me earlier. My father won't need to go through so much trouble and could have killed her if you told us earlier!"

"You..." Trenton could not hold it back anymore. He clenched his fists and appeared in front of Jack in a flash. His punch was flying directly at Jack.

Trenton travelled speedily and there was no sign that he was making moves. Everything caught people by surprise.

Nash also had no idea that this old man would be so shameless and make a move toward his sona younger generation. He quickly clench his fists and was ready to rush over and stop them.

Unfortunately, the current Trenton was so much faster and Nash was obviously unable to make it in time.

"B*stard, how dare you?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1271-1275

Chapter 1271

Nash gritted his teeth in anger. He said as he rushed over. "I will wipe out your entire family if you dare kill my son!"

"Humph!" Trenton only had hatred in his heart at this moment. He planned to hurt Jack badly if he did not kill Jack.

After all, the younger geniuses from every family would enter this competition. Jack was the White family master inheritor and it was impossible for him to not join the competition.

Jack would become a huge joke if he did not join the competition.

Hence, he did not need to kill Jack. He only needed to hurt Jack badly and Nash would have nothing to say when Jack is killed by somebody else during the competition.

After all, this competition was a life and death competition. Deaths in the competition could not be looked into after they came down from the stage. This was what all the families agreed to all this time.

Many times, some geniuses of some families would kill their enemies in the competition without any restriction when they had contradictions in the outside world. This was because the firstclass aristocratic families could not say anything even if the young masters from second-class aristocratic families killed

young masters from first-class aristocratic families.

Although there was a small possibility for this to happen, there were many of such things happening in the past.

He was afraid that Nash would get crazy over him accidentally killing Jack and both families would start a war. After all, the Lagorio family was not the White family's opponent right now.

Hence, Trenton, who knew that Jack was at the primary level of the real god level, controlled his power and combat power slightly at this moment.

Bomb!

Jack clenched his fists and met the other party's punch. He was sent several steps backward before he managed to stabilize himself with a step on the floor.

"What!" Trenton, who originally planned to hurt Jack, actually moved several backward too. The attacks of these two people were comparable and waves of emotions filled his heart. After all, his combat power was comparable to that of the intermediate stage real god level and Jack actually received the attack in such a relaxing way?

"B*stard!" Nash had already rushed over and punched towards Trenton at this moment.

Trenton was startled. He immediately curled his hands into fists and Chi moved around them. He dared not to respond with negligence and quickly met the attack with a punch.

Bomb!

Another huge bomb sound was heard. The next second, Trenton was sent backward several meters

before he managed to stabilize himself. Nash on the other hand stood there stably and did not move one step backward.

"This power..." Nash was stunned and immediately understood what Trenton planned to do. This old man did not use his full power when he fought with Jack just now. He was surprised to discover that Trenton only displayed his full energy when they were fighting. Trenton's power was actually at the peak stage of the real god level.

"You've actually broken through into the peak stage of the real god stage?" Nash retracted his punch and had a serious look on his face.

Trenton only had the training level of the last stage real god level previously and there was a huge difference between their combat power. Who knew that this old man would break through? That was troublesome.

He could see that the other party's power was not very stable yet and he was not very handy with his control over power. It looked like she had just broken through recently.

If some more time passed, his combat power might increase more after he had adapted to the newly increased power.

"Haha... You never expected this? Nash White, I've broken through!" Trenton laughed loudly. "I only planned to test your son's level, why are you being so nervous? I did not expect your son to really be in the intermediate stage of the real god level. He is really talented!"

Chapter 1272

Jack was not dumb. He was also surprised when the other party rushed over.

However, he soon understood that this old man dared not kill him and was only planning to hurt him.

After all, if this old man killed him here at this moment, his father and the elders of the White family would go into a war with them. The Lagorios were obviously not the opponents of the White.

Hence, this old man wanted him to be hurt and let the other opponents kill him in the competition.

However, Trenton had really underestimated Jack's combat power. Jack thought that the other party had the fighting prowess at the final stage of the real god level so he did not use his entire strength too. In the end, he ended in the same situation as the other party. He believed that if he used his full strength, Trenton would be unable to kill him even if he used his full strength.

"Haha... This test of yours really caught me by surprise!" Jack laughed but he had already made up his mind. He would definitely kill this old man when there is a chance in the future.

He was lucky that his father and the elders were here today. If that was not the case, this old man would definitely kill him without holding back.

"This young man is really at the intermediate stage of the real god level?" Diana's facial expression was also darkened.

Jack's talents caused her to secretly feel unsettled. Such talents were hard to come by, especially when this young man came back from the outside world. If this guy had always been training in the White family and did not lack martial resources, his current fighting prowess...

Nash's facial expression also darkened. Trenton had broken through and achieved the peak stage of the real god level. This meant that their family also had a master in the peak stage of the real god level and the overall strength of their family was hugely raised.

The current Lagorio family had looked at the White family as their enemy and it was not a good thing for this to continue.

"Yes, if he isn't at the intermediate stage of the real god level, he would not have been able to block my attack so easily just now!"

Trenton glanced at Jack again before turning to speak to Boss Lane. "Boss Lane, why don't you give these rooms to us. We've always been helping you with your business in the past!"

An awkward expression immediately appeared in Boss Lane's face. He also heard about the change in the relationship between these two families. Such important news would definitely be spreaded around as long as a person was discussing it.

He smiled bitterly before speaking to Trenton. "Master Lagorio, I'm sorry but we've already decided on the price. Apart from that, I need to honor those who come first when I'm handling a business deal. I'm really sorry about this today. I think it's best if you check the hotels next door for rooms!"

"I can pay more money. How about six hundred pieces of spirited stones?" Trenton was obviously unconvinced and wanted to compete. That was why he proactively raised the price.

"This..." Boss Lane hesitated before finally smiling bitterly and said. "Master Lagorio, there's really not much that I can do about this. It's not only about money!"

"Haha.... I know. It's because they are a first-class aristocratic family, right? I think that you're bullying the weak and afraid of the strong. You're really stupid for not earning that money!"

Trenton laughed and soon he was stunned when he saw a beauty among the crowd. "Hey, isn't that the Third Young Mistress Cabello? Third young mistress, I am curious as to why you're with the White?"

"Haha... Master Lagorio, it's not up to you to decide people from which family I run with?" Daniella saw what happened just now. She was surprised and extremely worried when she saw how the other party attacked Jack.

However, she was embarrassed to say anything on behalf of the others because she was not a member of the White family so she only remained standing among the crowd.

Who knew that Trenton would discover her so quickly.

Chapter 1273

"Haha... That's right, that's right. Who am I to say anything about what the Cabellos want to do!" Trenton laughed embarrassingly before waving his hands and said to the other Lagorios. "Let's go, let' s go!"

Trenton led them to the streets after he finished speaking

However, he had no idea that he would run into another crowd just as he walked out from the hotel.

He was instantaneously happy when he saw this crowd because this was none other than the Cabellos.

He immediately ran over and said to Master Cabello. "Master Cabello, we are really fated with one another. Who knew that I would bump into you guys just as I arrived in this city! Such fate!"

"Haha... Yes, it's been a long time since we last met, Master Lagorio!" Alejandro laughed with a slight despise in his eyes.

He had never liked the Lagorios because the Lagorios and the White had an exceptionally good relationship in the past when Lily was Nash's wife. Hence, the disciples in both families had always got into altercations when they were searching for valuable items.

"Master Cabello, by the way, I'm curious about something. I just saw Third Young Mistress Cabello and I'm wondering why is she with the White family members? Apart from that, she even spoke on behalf of them. After all, you also know that the relationship between your family and the White was not that good?" Trenton quickly said. He added another sentence after he finished. "Our Lagorio family is also the enemies of the White family right now!"

"What?! You're saying that Daniellita is with the White family right now?" Alejandro had been worried about Daniella's safety. His eyes lit up when he heard this and he immediately spoke in excitement.

"Where is she? Why is she with the White and is speaking on behalf of them?"

Trenton pointed at the hotel not far away. "They are in that hotel. I can see that the third young mistress is very innocent and I'm worried if she had been conned by the White family!"

"They are in the hotel?" Alejandro was slightly stunned before he led the Cabellos and walked into the hotel.

“Third sister, it really is third sister!" First Young Mistress Cabello was delighted when she immediately saw Daniella who was ready to go upstairs.

"This is great, it really is Daniellita!" Venus Cabello smiled as she was also extremely excited.

“Eldest sister, second sister!" Daniella immediately ran over when she saw them. “This is great! I really miss you guys as it's been a long time since I last saw you. Who knew that I would meet you once I entered this city!"

"Daniellita, why are you with this bunch of people? Did they make things difficult for you?" Alejandro relaxed when he saw that Daniella was safe but he still asked with a cold expression on his face.

"Father, it happened like this. I was caught by a bunch of mounted brigand when I was out looking for treasures. That mounted brigand is so disgusting that they even want to make me his wife!" Daniella immediately had a wronged expression on her face. She turned around to look at Jack before she continued to speak. "Luckily the young master of the White family, Jack, saved me. That's why I can stay alive and meet you guys today!"

Chapter 1274

"Really? A White family member rescued you?" Alejandro had a weird expression on his face when he heard this.

According to the situation between both families, it was good enough that the White family did not hit the Cabello who was in danger. Who knew that they would actually save his daughter.

He had to wonder what the White family wanted and if they had other thoughts in their heads.

"Yes, father. Jack is really talented and strong!" Daniella was slightly shy when she mentioned Jack. She proactively praised Jack.

"Who's Jack?!" Alejandro looked in front as he said loudly.

Jack smiled slightly as he walked forward. He gestured towards Alejandro and said, "Greetings to Master Cabello, I am Jack. I helped Third Young Mistress Cabello as I happened to see her in a difficult situation the other day.

After all, I cannot stand the people who bully and humiliate women all the time!"

Alejandro looked at Jack before nodding and gesturing at him." Thank you very much!"

"You're welcome, Master Cabello!" Jack returned the polite gesture.

Unexpectedly, Trenton, who was listening for some time after a short while, would push the crowds away and walk in at this moment. He said to Alejandro." Master Cabello, don't you fall for this guy's sweet words. This young man is Nash's illegitimate son and had returned from the outside world. He has many bad habits and is definitely not a good person. It's best if you don't believe in him!"

Daniella was extremely angry when she heard how this old man dared come in and said something bad about Jack.

She immediately walked forward and said to Trenton angrily. "Trenton Lagorio, what are you talking about? You must hate the White family because your daughter acted indecent all the time and was

finally swept out of the house by the White family. Do you think that my father is stupid? Do you think that he doesn 't know that your family hates the White family right now? Do you think that he will listen to what you said?"

"You..." Trenton's face turned crimson from anger. The Third Young Mistress Cabello was so daring. Not only did she talk back at him, she even dared to directly call him by his name.

However, he soon suppressed his anger. He knew clearly that Daniella dared act so arrogantly at this moment because the Cabellos were here, if not, she would never dare say something like this.

He chose to ignore the Third Young Mistress Cabello, instead said to Alejandro with a smile. "Master Cabello, take a look. You should take a look at this daughter of yours. She has been brainwashed by the White and is speaking on behalf of the White. Have you people forgotten how many of the Cabello family disciples fought with the White family disciples? Have you forgotten about the Cabellos who died?"

The corners of Alejandro's mouth slightly twitched before he smiled at Trenton. "Master Lagorio, don't you worry. I know clearly what kind of a person my daughter is. We do not need you to say anything regarding the affairs of the Cabello family. After all, I'm doubtful about the hidden intentions behind your words based on the situation between the Lagorios and the White."

“Haha!" Trenton laughed and gestured with his hands before walking towards the door. “Master Cabello, I'm just reminding you out of kindness, you can choose to believe it or not. After all, you know clearly about your previous grudges!"

Trenton soon left after he finished speaking.

“No matter what, I have to thank you for saving my daughter!"

Chapter 1275

Alejandro glanced at Jack after Trenton left. He then flipped his hand and came up with a first grade

premium pill. He threw the pill to Jack. “This is a token of our gratitude. We, the Cabellos, do not like to owe others any favors.

Alejandro paused before continuing to speak. "However, just to set the record straight. The people from our family will not hold back if they meet anybody from the White family during this competition. Do you understand?"

"A first grade premium pill?" Jack looked at the pill in his hands.

Although this pill looked normal, it was a hard to comeby precious item. After all, this had a great effect for someone in the final stage of the real god level.

It looked like Alejandro really loved her daughter, Daniella. Not only did he apologize to his opposing clan, he even gave them a pill to show his gratitude. No ordinary people could do something like this.

"Master, this..." The facial expression of a Cabello family's old man darkened. He was obviously unwilling to give such a precious item to a member of the White family.

"It's alright, it's just a pill. My daughter's life is much more valuable than this pill and I don't want to owe the White family anything! If not, I don't want them speaking things behind our backs if our people accidentally kill geniuses of the White family during the competition. I don't want them saying that we repaid their kindness with hatred and that we don't know how to be grateful!" Alejandro smiled coldly and said.

The elder nodded before walking back.

"Father, can't the relationship between both families ease up? Jack rescued me and he's a very nice person!" Daniella was extremely anxious that she stomped her leg as she spoke.

"I said that these two are different things. I do not want to owe the White family but the competition

will be just like how it used to be. Do you understand? If there are any altercations during the competition, we can't allow our people to give in to them, right?" Alejandro looked at Daniella seriously. "Alright, I haven't given you a scolding for running away secretly and almost lost your life. How dare you talk on behalf of the White family? Do you know that you're making yourself a joke to the entire family if you act like this?!"

"I don't care. I only know that Jack and I are good friends and he 's the one who saved me so I'm remembering his good deeds in my heart!" Daniella pursed her lips and hugged her hands in front of her chest while saying angrily.

"You..." Alejandro gritted his teeth before turning around to look at Nash and the others. He gestured at them. “Nash White, your family has suffered a huge loss previously and if your younger geniuses suffer a huge loss in this competition... Haha... By then, it would be difficult to keep your position of number eight and nobody would admit that you're a first-class reclusive family!"

Nash smiled and gestured with his hands. "Thank you Master Cabello for your care. We are clear about this and I believe that my son and the others would be able to get great results!"

"Haha... It's great that you guys are so confident!" Alejandro laughed and walked towards the entrance. "Daniellita, let's go!"

"Father..." Daniella was feeling extremely bad. She originally thought that Jack rescued her and she hoped that the relationship between both families would ease up because of this. Who knew that her father was still so hard-headed and she was lucky to not have mentioned that Jack was her boyfriend or that she wanted to be with Jack. Who knew how angry Alejandro would get if she said that.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1276-1280

Chapter 1276

"Let's go, Sister..."

Helena and Venus Cabello pulled the reluctant Daniella to leave with the Cabellos.

"Seems like the grudge between both families is deeply implanted, Father," said Jack with a bitter smile after the Cabellos left.

Nash smiled awkwardly as well." This is a long-winded story, and the hatred wasn't only accumulated for one or two days, which is why Alejandro's attitude is normal. However, I didn't expect him to give you a pill."

Jack hesitated as he looked at the pill in his hands. He then walked toward the First Elder and said, " First Elder, I think it's best to give this pill to you."

"You're giving it to me?!" First Elder's eyes widened, thinking he heard wrongly. Such a precious item was enough to make many real god level masters crave it, but Jack wanted to give it to him just like that?

Jack nodded. "I heard that you've been in the final stage of the realgod level for several years. I hope that this pill can help you break through and reach the peak stage of the real-god level. After all, having a master in the real-god level's peak stage is extremely important to a family. Our family would be blessed with two masters in the peak stage of the real-god level if you really break through!"

Titus also nodded. "First Elder, Young Master has a point, and you should accept the pill. If our White family has another master in the peak stage of the real-god level, arrogant clans will look at us differently!"

Nash also nodded in extreme satisfaction. "First Elder, why are you still hesitating and not receiving the pill?"

First Elder was very touched as he took the pill. He nodded continuously as he gushed, "AAlright. Thank you, Young Master Jack!"

Jack chuckled and responded, "Haha... We're all members of the White family, and I hope you can break through into the real-god level's peak stage as soon as possible!"

First Elder nodded after he thought about it. "Alright. I can try to break through my fighting prowess as there are still four to five days before the competition." It was no easy feat to break through after achieving the realgod level's fighting prowess, and because of that, he was not so confident and feared he would waste the pill Jack gave him.

"Alright, everybody should go get some rest. All of us can rest during these few days and go out for a walk whenever we have the time. Those with hopes of breaking through their fighting prowess can train well during this period-it'll be best if those who are joining the competition can break through before the competition!" Nash finally said to everybody

Jack slept after he returned to his room, training the following morning to continue stabilizing his fighting prowess. He was prepared to take a stroll in the afternoon.

Little did he expect he would stumble across three beauties, Daniella, Helena, and Venus of the Cabello family not long after he left the hotel.

"Jack!" Daniella immediately walked toward Jack with a delighted heart upon seeing him. She had purposely brought her sisters to stroll around the hotel with hopes of meeting Jack.

"By the way, don't care too much about what happened last night. My father has such a temperament. He's actually a nice person, but he tends to be too stubborn."

Chapter 1277

Daniella explained what happened yesterday with a smile as she walked toward him. Not only was she afraid Jack would be upset about what happened yesterday, but she also feared he would distance himself from her because of it.

"Third Sister, why are you explaining that to this guy? Sure, he saved you, but we've returned the favor and don't owe him anything!” fretted Helena as she grimaced.

"That's right, Third Sister. Don't forget that both families had our fair share of arguments during the competitions in the past!" Venus also reminded Daniella angrily. "Sister, Father had reminded you to not get too close with members of the White family. Do you get it? We're afraid that you're being used!"

Daniella stomped her leg anxiously and quickly explained," Sister, Jack isn't that sort of person!"

"Ladies, both of you are overthinking things. With the White family's current position and situation, we can't compete with your Cabello family, and we don't want to cause any trouble either. Apart from that, I don't use such means when I do something, so you can all relax!" Jack smiled indifferently before speaking to the two of them again, "Think about it, you two: If the White family wants to do anything to Daniellita, will you still have the chance to see her?"

Helena crossed her arms at her chest as she refuted, "That's not definite. Who knows what you people are thinking about."

Venus, on the other hand, frowned as she noted something peculiar. "Young man, you addressed my sister as Daniellita? Who allowed you to address her in such an intimate way? You're really gutsy for addressing my sister that way. I think you have thoughts about my sister. It's true that men are perverts, and they're all bad!"

Venus looked at Daniella at this point and said, "Daniella, you need to be careful. I think he's being nice to you just for your beauty. There are no good men nowadays. I think he's just a toad craving for something that's out of his league!"

Surprisingly, Daniella blushed abashedly as she replied, "Sister, stop speaking nonsense! I... I was the one who asked him to address me as that. The two of us are really, really good friends right now, and him calling me Daniellita doesn't mean anything!"

Helena and Venus were embarrassed when they heard this. They could not imagine that Daniella was the one who asked Jack to address her as Daniellita.

They wondered if Daniella felt good toward Jack or had feelings for him because he rescued her.

At that moment, several people walked over and one of the men in white clothes said happily, "Oh, my! Aren't these the three beauties of the Cabello family? We' re really lucky to bump into these Three Golden Flowers in our stroll!"

Jack also glanced at them, his expression darkened at that instant. He never expected to meet members of the Norman family again.

"Haha... Seems like we got a toad here, too!" spoke Keith disdainfully as he glanced at Jack. "Young man, Ms. Daniella traveled with you people before, but why are you still following them when she's already met up with the Cabello family? Are you thinking of ways to win the affections of these three Cabello beauties?"

"You should remember your identity," Joshua Norman chimed in. "Your family is far beneath the Norman family. Apart from that, you're just an illegitimate child who returned from the outside world. You aren't worthy to be with any of them based on these facts!"

"You are not the ones to decide if I'm worthy or not." Jack had a darkened expression on his face and grew irritated.

Chapter 1278

"Haha... This means you're really interested in getting the attention of our Third Young Mistress Cabello, no?" Joshua rubbed his fists when he heard what Jack said and eyed him playfully. "We, the onlookers, have great sight. Do you truly think the White family can be considered as a first -class aristocratic family? To us, you're no different from those second-class aristocratic families!"

"Second Brother, let's not waste time talking to this guy. Let me teach him a lesson so he'll learn the difference between him and the true first-class aristocratic family!" Conley walked two steps forward and balled his fists as Chi surged and covered his fists. It looked as if he had boxing gloves made of Chi.

"Don't be careless, Third Brother. This guy might have a high fighting prowess and is in the real -god level's initial stage. After all, he's the White family master inheritor," Joshua crossed his arms at his chest as he reminded his Third Brother when he noted how Conley was ready to fight.

However, Conley did not pay much attention to Jack. “Don't worry, this guy's just lucky. He had the chance because the talented Lance White of the White family had gone missing. He wouldn't be the family master inheritor otherwise."

In his opinion, it was definite that Jack did not have a high fighting prowess and luck played a huge part in his journey to becoming the family master inheritor. After all, how powerful would a guy who returned from the outside world be?

Nonetheless, Conley knew he could not kill Jack at that moment. After all, the competition had not started, and this guy was the White family master's son. Killing him and falling out with the White family was no good starter.

Still, that did not mean he could not beat some sense into Jack.

He came toward Jack in a flash and threw his fist at him.

Daniella knew how powerful Jack was and did not worry for him when hearing Conley's threat. After all, Conley's fighting prowess was only at the real-god level's initial stage. "Haha! You just signed up for a beatdown!"

Such fighting prowess was really powerful before the White family' s prodigies, but they had no idea what extraordinary talents Jack had compared to them.

"Hmph!" Jack wore an ominous smile. Tightening his fist, he intercepted the incoming punch without even using Chi.

"What?!" Keith and Joshua gasped when they noted how Jack did not use his Chi. This guy was downright arrogant. How dare he look down at their third brother like that?

They believed Jack failed to react because he had an incredibly low fighting prowess and vigilance. It was obvious his reflexes were slow to even activate his Chi and had to hurriedly meet Conley's attack.

Well then, he might be badly hurt or suffer a fracture on his arm from Conley's punch based on his brother's combat powers.

However...

Thoom!

They did not expect that what happened next was a powerful explosion, and they saw Conley flying backward like a kite with broken strings at the next second. Vomiting blood, he staggered backward as he landed on the ground before he managed to stabilize himself.

"What is this?!" This time, even Helena and Venus were stunned. They stared with widened eyes and opened mouths, wondering if their eyes played tricks on them.

After all, Jack managed to send Conley flying away without even using his Chi. What did this mean? This meant that Jack's combat power was much stronger than his.

Jack, however, had an indifferent expression as he retracted his fists. He placed both hands behind his back and, eyeing Conley, smilingly spoke, "How does that feel? Do you think you can easily bully members of the White family? The competition hasn't even started, yet you dare attack someone on the streets?"

Chapter 1279

"Hmph! This isn't over, young man. Don't forget: a person's true combat power is assessed with that person's weapon and martial skills. And I haven't used my full power either! I admit that I've underestimated you." Conley was bitter as he had lost his dignity in front of three beautiful ladies.

Wiping the blood from the corners of his mouth, Conley flipped his hand and revealed a sword.

"A weapon?" Jack smiled and said, "Are you forgetting something?"

Jack also flipped his hand after he spoke and revealed the black sword.

"That... That flying sword is yours? You can use it to attack apart from flying?" Conley's facial expression darkened when he saw that the sword in Jack's hands was identical to the flying sword they saw previously, only smaller.

He thought that such a precious item would belong to Nash. Who would have thought that it was Jack's?

With that, they did not have any advantages in terms of weapons.

They knew that this sword was an upper-grade spiritual tool. Such a weapon was superior with his lower -grade spiritual tool at hand, and the sword in his hands was already a rare treasure.

Joshua and Keith, who were in the real-god level's intermediate stage, glowered just like Conley.

It felt impossible to fight against Jack individually, but they could surely win if they attacked together.

However, it was a petty move if they attacked Jack together with the three Cabello beauties present. Would they not leave a bad impression on Helena, Venus, and Daniella if they teamed against Jack?

“What? Are we continuing the fight?” Jack asked with a smile when he saw them stunned.

Conley put the sword in his hand away and growled, “I'll hold myself from hurting you now, young man, but you'd do well to remember this-I'll settle this with you in the competition. By then, I won't hold back.”

"Really? I hope that we can meet by then!” Jack chuckled, knowing how the other party held fear against him. Why else would they let him go?

"We'll see then, young man!” ended Joshua and left with his two other brothers in a dejected manner.

Venus glanced at Helena and said softly, “Eldest sister, I think Conley underestimated Jack, so he didn't give it his all. Don't you think so?”

"That has to be it,” Helena replied warily. "However, no matter how it is, this young man is at least in the real-god level's intermediate stage. This level of fighting prowess is incredible!”

Chapter 1280

"You've guessed correctly, Sister, he is in the real-god level s intermediate stage. Isn't he talented? Although he had just broken through, Second Sister can't beat him!” Daniella was filled with pride as she talked about Jack, admiring his brilliance and wisdom. She had lied to Jack that they had slept together the other night when they were drunk, not thinking he would genuinely believe it and take responsibility.

Jack dared not comment on the matter and approach his wife about it, everything happened so suddenly.

As for Daniella, she had already taken Jack as her boyfriend though she kept quiet about it, fearing her family would be outraged.

"What? I can't beat him? Haha! My combat power is one of the highest among those in this level of fighting prowess!” Venus refused to believe in Daniella's words, frowning when she noted Daniella's pridefilled, awe-struck expression." Daniellita, have you fallen for him?"

Daniella reeled in shock at the sudden suggestion, and she quickly denied the idea with a wave of her hand.

"W-What? Don't make things up, Sister, I don't like him!”

Alas, her guilty conscience gave her away in her reaction, and the blush on her face added the evidence.

"Look at you, you're all shy and blushing! I think you really like him!” Venus was irritated as she warned, “Daniellita, I'm telling you this, our family has bad blood with theirs. Father will be extremely angry if he learns about this!"

"Nothing's going on between us, Sister. Why don't you believe me? Nothing's happening!" Daniella started explaining again. She knew she could not say anything about their relationship at this moment, no matter what it was. Her parents would only accept if others saw Jack's talents in the future and that everybody knew how strong he was, or when the relationship between both families was better.

“Alright, alright! I believe in you.” Venus stopped insisting when she saw Daniella's eyes turn red from being anxious. Instead, she glanced at Jack before speaking to Daniella, "Daniellita, let me tell you something: Don't be fascinated because he looks handsome. Most of the time, such a handsome man is unreliable, especially a man with a wife is even more unreliable.”

Daniella was ashamed, though she offered a sheepish smile. "I get it, Sister!"

"I best take my leave, girls. With you beautiful three ladies here, I' m afraid somebody will accuse me of having motives if I stay longer.” Jack gave an awkward smile and gestured his hands at the three. He realized that the hatred between the White family and the Cabello family was unusually deep, and it would not be easy to resolve.

Helena glanced at Jack and said, "I acknowledged that you saved my sister before, young man, but don't expect us to let you win deliberately during the competition. Do you understand?”

"I know. I won't let you girls win just like that either!" Jack turned around and slowly walked forward.

At that moment, a portly man came toward them with his clique. "Oh my, Helena, what a coincidence! Never thought we'd meet here!”

This man's eyes lit up upon seeing the Cabello sisters. He strode toward them and held Helena's hand in excitement.

"Young Master Hunt, please have some respect for yourself!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1281-1285

Chapter 1281

Utterly displeased, Helena's expression darkened as she quickly withdrew her hand from Young Master Hunt's grip.

She would have gotten angry from the start had it been anyone else that held her hand so abruptly...but the fat man before her was the Second Young Master Hunt. Not only was he overweight, but he liked women too and had always involved himself with them.

Alas, this fatty had a high fighting prowess and was talented in cultivating pills. Together with the fact that she had materials to cultivate pills, his fighting prowess was naturally quite high.

Second Young Master Hunt laughed and said, “Helena, you' ve grown beautiful in my eyes. I told my father that I should find a fiancée, and I think you're the perfect fit!”

"Young Master Hunt, stop joking. I... I already have a boyfriend. Apart from that, I'm almost thirty and I'm several years older than you. We're not fit for each other!" Helena was livid at his suggestion, but she dared not ruin his image and could only smile embarrassingly.

Second Young Master Hunt replied with a smile when he heard this, "Haha! Don't lie to me, First Young Mistress. Firstly, I like women who are several years older than me. Such women are much more charming. My heart moved the moment you touched my hand, and I've never felt that before!"

Second Young Master Hunt paused here before he continued, "Secondly, you're obviously lying to me when you said you had a boyfriend. I had asked around recently, and I know you don't have a boyfriend yet. I plan to ask my father to ask your hand for marriage after this competition so I can make you my fiancée. We'll get married and have children once we get to know each other more!"

"Mmph!" Helena mentally vomited three liters of blood. Asking her to marry him and have his children was a much worse fate than killing her. His talent and his skills in cultivating pills were indisputable, but he was awfully ugly.

Helena turned down many of the handsome young masters who wanted to date her. She had a headache just thinking about this damned fatty asking her to marry him and have children with him.

"I swear I have a boyfriend!" Helena bit her red lips, and she instantly piped up when her line of sight happened to land on Jack's back, who was less than 100 meters away.

Their Cabello family and the White family did not have a good relationship. They hated each other, even, and this was a great chance to take. Not only could she make Second Young Master Hunt give up, but she could also make him hate Jack. This was what people would say, killing two birds with one stone.

"Jack, come here quickly!" She immediately waved her hand at Jack after she spoke.

Jack, who had not walked far away, turned his head back when he heard Helena called out to him from far away.

He frowned, though he still came toward them, not knowing why Helena called out to him.

“What is it? Why is the first young mistress looking for me?" Jack walked over and smiled at Helena.

Unexpectedly, Helena gave her a flirtatious gaze the next second and, walking toward him, held his arm and said shyly, "You're cruel! Just call me Helena. Don't you like calling Helena?”

“Helena?” Jack frowned and was stunned.

"Yes, Jacky!” Helena responded by calling out shyly. She even shook Jack's arm and looked so helpless as she relied on him.

Chapter 1282

"Jacky?” Daniella and Venus stared in disbelief, eyes wide open at the nickname Speechless, they wondered if they heard wrongly.

Daniella, all the more, was frozen on the spot. Did her sister not detest Jack? What was she doing all of a sudden?

Of course, she quickly caught on that Helena was using Jack to get rid of Second Young Master Hunt's badgering. She might be able to frame Jack with this.

Jack also understood what was going on and immediately shook Helena's hand away, taking two steps back. "First Young Mistress Cabello, please have some respect for yourself. I'm not interested in you, and I don't want to be your shield.”

Second Young Master Hunt was initially enraged, but knowing what was happening, he grinned as he spoke, "You're a good actress, Helena Cabello. I almost believed you!"

Helena was naturally unwilling to admit defeat just like that. She immediately caught up with Jack and hugged his arm. "Jack White, how can you do this?

"Didn't you say you're no coward? What's going on? How can you chicken out when a love rival suddenly pops up? You'll lose me if you're acting like this!”

Jack almost fainted; Helena truly was good at blaming others.

He got increasingly exasperated when Second Young Master Hunt did not seem to be any smarter. He was extremely angry when he saw Helena hugging Jack's arm and growled, "Young man, is what she's saying true? Are you truly her boyfriend? Are you that suicidal to take a woman from me?"

"Second Young Master Hunt?” Jack had never met anybody from the Hunt family. He was ashamed when he heard how Second Young Master Hunt was addressed and immediately fell into embarrassment. "Second Young Master, don't misunderstand this. Why would I take a woman from you? Look at her: She's the one who came to me, and there's nothing between the two of us!”

Unable to tolerate the nonsense, Daniella walked forward and explained, “That's right. Second Young Master Hunt, there's nothing between my eldest sister and Jack. If you think about it properly, everything becomes clearer. Arrogant women like my sister look down on so many young masters. How would she even set eyes on Jack, this young master from the White family?"

"That's right. Look, even the third young mistress had said it, so you shouldn't believe in what the first young mistress said.” Jack relaxed. Luckily, Daniella shared a close bond with him or he would never clear his name no matter how hard he tried.

Helena was speechless. She never thought that her sister would speak for an outsider's behalf, moreover did it in front of her. Did she hold Jack's hand for nothing, then?

Helena always had a haughty streak in her. How could she admit defeat when she had finally come up

with a way to get rid of Second Young Master Hunt?

She turned her gaze and mumbled, “Alright, Third Sister...You like Jack too, don't you? You want to push me to the Second Young Master Hunt to get him, don't you...? H-How could y-you do this to me?"

Helena even deliberately sobbed as she spoke, “Third Sister, I'm telling you that I've been together with Jack for so long now, so you can't think of breaking us up!"

Daniella was flabbergasted, not believing Helena would make things up like this just to harm Jack. However, her sister was right in one thing-she did like Jack.

She immediately responded," Sister, what nonsense are you talking about? How can you harm Jack like this? He saved my life!

Helena finally realized that her sister was too kind. She must have stood forward to speak on his behalf because he saved her.

Chapter 1283

Nonetheless, Helena wanted to insist-she had gone too far to back down. Blushing, she speculated, "Unbelievable, Third Sister... You'd want me to marry somebody else so you can have Jack all to yourself? You... You're really too harsh!"

Second Young Master Hunt, standing by the side, completely flabbergasted. He had no idea who was telling the truth and who was lying at that moment.

In the end, he looked at Venus and questioned, "Second Young Mistress, what's the meaning of this? What's going on between this Jack and your sister? Are they a couple?"

Venus glanced at Daniella then Helena before finally speaking," Second Young Master Hunt, my... my

sister and Jack truly are in a relationship. I just didn't expect my third sister to have feelings for him too!"

"What? Who's this young man that two young mistresses from the Cabello family liked?"

"That's right. All three beauties are famous, yet they're both infatuated with him? It seems like they're love rivals!"

Several members of the Hunt family who stood behind Second Young Master Hunt started discussing among themselves softly. Everything felt so unbelievable!

"Nonsense!" Second Young Master Hunt's face darkened before he growled, “How can a member of the White family be worthy of the Cabello family's beauties? Isn't there a big difference between this young man's identity and yours?"

"Second Young Master Hunt, he's the family master inheritor of the White family, and he's likely to be their family master in the future. I don't think he's not good enough for us!"

Helena was slightly happy when her second sister spoke on behalf of her. This time, Jack was completely done.

"I never thought you'd lie through your teeth, Second Sister!"

Daniella looked at her second sister with a blushed face. Were they not driving Jack into hot soup? It would be troublesome if Second Young Master Hunt really hated Jack in the future.

Venus pulled Daniella to one side and said softly, “Daniellita, this is a good chance to get rid of this guy. If we get rid of Jack." She chuckled lightly before she continued, “The White family will have one less true prodigy, and Father will be very happy then! You should stop remembering him as your savior, do you understand? We don't owe him anything!"

"But... But..." Overridden with anxiety, Daniella glanced at Jack, who stood not too far, and spoke in a half-whisper, "I... I really like him, and I'm already in a relationship with him. I just dare not tell Father yet as the timing is not right!"

Venus was extremely surprised, red lips parted in her shock as she struggled to process the situation. "Preposterous! Stop scaring me, Daniella. The hatred between our families didn't just come up in these recent one or two years. Even if our relationship isn't as rigid as it used to be, I'm sure Father won't agree to the two of you being together. How can you fall for the enemies' son?"

"Second Sister, you can't tell anyone about this. You have to keep it a secret!" Daniella pulled her second sister's hand and pleaded, "Please don't push Jack into trouble. I'll kill myself if he dies!"

Chapter 1284

Stupefied at Daniella's revelation, the speechless Venus felt like she was in an awkward predicament.

She gazed at Daniella before saying, "Third sister, I... I've just said something about it. How can I take it back, and how would our eldest sister not hate me for it if I did? Mind you, she's in a sticky situation that's hard to get out of!"

"But... But..." Daniella was left in a disarray, not knowing what to do.

Running thin on his patience, Second Young Master Hunt yelled, "Hey, hey, hey! What are the two of you speaking about over there?"

"It's... It's nothing!" Venus smiled embarrassingly and rejoined them with Daniella. "Second Young Master Hunt, you're a handsome gentleman and are the Hunt family's second young master. Are you afraid that no beautiful woman would like you? I' m sure that there are many talented women out there who'll want to marry you!"

Daniella immediately agreed to it. "That's right, Second Young Master! You're also a genius in cultivating pills and have a high fighting prowess, and I'm sure many beautiful ladies adore you. Why have eyes for my eldest sister?"

Second Young Master Hunt was taken aback at their words and, glancing at both Daniella and Venus, he gulped as he breathlessly speculated, "Are you two saying that you like me?"

That shocked Daniella as she quickly explained, “No, what we meant to say is that how can somebody like you have so few admirers, am I right? So there's no need for you to think of us, right?"

"That's right, Second Young Master. Look... I already have a lover, so you should forget about me. I'm also old, right?" Helena smiled embarrassingly.

"But there aren't many beauties like you. I like beauties and they like me, but I still like the three of you as you're all true beauties with individual characteristics!"

Second Young Master Hunt had no plans to give up.

"About that... Second Young Master, I've been with Jack for so long now, and I... I'm not a virgin anymore, and I've already done the deed with him. So... a prodigy like you don't have to have a deflowered woman like, don't you think so?" lied Helena through gritted teeth after making sure no one else was in the vicinity.

"I..." Jack was speechless, never expecting that the First Young Mistress Cabello would say such a thing to get rid of this Second Young Master Hunt. Was she not ruining her reputation?

"What about you? You still plan to deny it?" Helena rolled her eyes at Jack flirtatiously as she was afraid Jack would continue to refute. Her eyes seemingly quavered helplessly as she gazed at him, however.

Jack glanced at Second Young Master Hunt, noting that he indeed seemed peculiar. Apart from that, it seemed like this guy had his fair share of women by the tone of how Helena and the others spoke, and it would be a tragedy to see a beauty like Helena marrying such a man.

Sure enough, Second Young Master Hunt's expression darkened when he heard what Helena said. He had heard all this time that the three young mistresses of the Cabello family were sophisticated and did not have boyfriends. He adored Helena, head over heels for her.

That was why the news of her giving herself to the White family' s young master took him by surprise.

"I don't believe it." He was still furious after thinking it through." Hmph! The Cabellos have a bad relationship with the White family, and I don't believe that you' re actually with this guy, unless... unless you prove it to me!"

Chapter 1285

Helena's expression seemed to sour as she hugged Jack's arm, saying, "Isn't this...enough to prove it? How else do you want me to prove it when the two of us are acting this way?”

The last thing she expected was for the Second Young Master Hunt to insist, "Haha! Didn't you already give yourself to him? Do you two dare to kiss on the streets? If you don't, this means that you're lying to me!”

Second Young Master Hunt grew increasingly angry as he disdainfully added, "Helena Cabello, I'm the Hunt family's young master. If you dare toy with me, I'll ask your father for your hand in marriage tomorrow; it'd be best if our powerful families can come together. Should you disagree to our union, I'll have my father wipe out the entire Cabello family. Hmph!"

"You...” Helena reddened in anger, not expecting the Second Young Master Hunt to go to such extremes with the lives of the Cabello family members.

Second Young Master Hunt had both his hands behind his back as he arrogantly declared," Why? You don't dare to? Haha! If so, this means that you're toying with me. I'm not like the young masters from the other families: the women I have my eyes on can never escape. I don't care if you're not a virgin. I'll get a taste of the First Young Mistress Cabello, even if it means I have to interfere in a love affair!”

Helena was extremely angry yet helpless; things would be irreversible if such a man genuinely asked her father for her hand in marriage.

After all, everybody knew that the Hunt family had two sons, but the one the Hunt family master favored the most was his second son. His son was undeniably talented, but he, more importantly, knew how to cultivate pills. Had he been a more diligent person and trained more, his fighting prowess would have been higher than the eldest young master.

Although the eldest young master was not as talented as the second young master, he was not bad. As he did not like to speak much and loved training in silence, the eldest young master had an obviously higher fighting prowess compared to the second young master.

"Who says I don't dare to?" In her anger and bitterness, Helena turned and came toward Jack with gritted teeth.

Before Jack managed to react, she stood on her tiptoes and, wounding her arms around his neck, kissed him on the lips.

"No way!" Venus was extremely surprised when she saw this scene as she then glanced at Daniella, who was beside her, in a peculiar way.

She had no idea what to say as their eldest sister had actually...for...

"What...?" Daniella was speechless and she had a weird expression on her face.

However, she eventually understood what her eldest sister was experiencing. She would not want to marry the Second Young Master Hunt, too.

“Oh my god...” Many of the passersby on the street were stunned when they saw this. Nobody could ever imagine that the Cabello family's first young mistress would kiss a man in the streets.

Helena shyly took two steps backward after several kisses and blushingly stuttered," Alright, do... do you believe it

now?"

“Never thought my goddess would be preempted by this guy!" Second Young Master Hunt obviously believed Helena after that. Fists balled tightly, he then turned to Jack as he resentfully growled, “Next-inline to be the White family's master, huh? Wait for it, young man. I won't kill you now, but you can't blame me during the competition!"

"Let's go!” Second Young Master Hunt waved his hand after he spoke and left with his people.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1286-1288

Chapter 1286

Ptooey, ptooey, ptooey!

Helena spitted a few times right after the Second Young Master Hunt left the scene. She was so disgusted that she spitted and wiped her mouth several times.

“Haha! Missy, you’re really something. You’re willing to sacrifice your first kiss to frame me!”

Jack chuckled at the side. “This is the downfall of trying to harm people! Also, don’t forget, it was me who helped you out this time. You owe me a favor!” Jack added.

Helena shot Jack a deadly glare upon hearing his words. “From what I see, you’re taking advantage of me! And you actually dare to say that I owe you a favor?”

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. If it wasn’t for me, the Second Young Master Hunt would have brought his men and gone over to your Cabello family to ask for your hand in marriage. Shouldn’t you thank me for saving you from him?”

Jack sneered coldly. In Jack’s eyes, she brought the trouble upon herself.

Nonetheless, he quickly thought of something and wheeled his head, facing Daniella who stood not far away from them. The current Daniella was full of loath and hatred; her face sank into the deepest abyss and she could not be more unhappy. She pouted.

She saw with her own eyes this time, that Jack and Helena…

“Daniella, I did not expect that to happen. Your sister…”

Jack approached Daniella and explained to her in an embarrassed tone.

Daniella gave a bitter smile. She quickly calmed down and said,” Well, I know. It’s not like you initiate it, how can I blame you? Besides, my sister had no other options then. That Second Young Master hunt is too abominable!”

Speaking of which, Daniella’s face turned solemn. “The Second Young Master Hunt has now targeted you. I’m worried that he would play tricks against you during the tournament. We’re not clear with the rules of this tournament up until now. I’m afraid that he would talk to his father and plot against you! They might set unreasonable rules just to bring you down!”

Jack’s brow snapped together at Daniella’s concerns. “It shouldn’t be possible, right? After all, there are so many families participating in this competition. If the competition is bias against a certain family, it’d be unjust, and everyone would know! The Hunt family is the strongest among the eight reclusive families. If they really did that, their reputation and image would be ruined.

“Daniellita, why are you worried for this fella?”

Helena interjected when she saw her sister chatting happily with Jack. And when she thought of her kiss with Jack a moment ago, she was furious and disgusted. But, at the same time, she could not think of a better way to deal with the situation.

“Sis, it’s all your fault! If it weren’t for you, Jack wouldn’t have been targeted by the Second Young Master Hunt.”

Daniella looked at Helena in exasperation. Although Jack possessed excellent combat prowess and martial status, it would still be a headache if the Hunt family decided to target him. After all, the Second Young Master Hunt was much stronger than the Young Master of the Norman family

“I…I had no choice. Daniellita, do you truly want to see your big sister marry that fat *ss? Besides, didn’t you hear what he said? If I didn’t kiss Jack, he’d think that I was fooling him and he’ll make his father fight the Cabello family!”

Helena explained with an aggrieved expression on her face.” What else could I do? Although I’ve lost my first kiss and it was a big loss to me, I was out of wit at that moment. The Second Young Master Hunt is the apple of his father’s eyes! It’d be more difficult to deal with if they ordered an attack on the Cabello family!”

Chapter 1287

“Hmmm, but I don’t think that will happen. Although the Hunt family is strong, the Cabello family is not weak either. Thus, I believe that if the Hunt family were to attack the Cabello family, they’d experience a grave loss as well. And if the loss is too huge, it might jeopardize their number one position among the eight reclusive families!”

Jack chimed in after giving the matter some thoughts.

However, Helena rolled her eyes at Jack's analysis. "That's because you don't understand Master Hunt at all. The head of the Hunt family is a domineering and bossy person, it's just that he hasn't reached the ultimate god level. If there's someone on earth who can break through to the ultimate god realm, that someone would be Master Hunt. He has been at the peak of the true god realm for many years. His combat ability is no joke. His martial status is on par with two or even three martial practitioners whose combat prowess is at the peak of true god realm."

"Is he that strong?"

Jack was taken aback by Helene's words, and shock dawned upon his heart. No wonder the Second Young Master Hunt was so prideful and arrogant. Jack truly did not expect that the Hunt family would be this strong. They were stronger than he thought. It seemed that he had underestimated the Hunt family' s combat ability.

"Jack, please be careful. The tournament has yet to start and your White family is a first class family, the Second Young Master hunt will still have some scruples. So I bet he won't make a move against you now. But, perhaps, during the tournament, he won't be so nice!"

Daniella bit her rosy pink and alluring lips and said, "The Second Young Master Hunt is at the middle stage of the true god realm, and he has been stuck there for some time. His combat prowess is more powerful and stronger than my sister's." She paused and then added, "If he manages to break through to the late stage of the true god realm, his combat ability would be more frightening! What's scarier is that the Hunt family has powerful martial arts and techniques for them to train, and these arts and techniques are not something we can

Compete with!"

"Daniella, thanks for worrying about me. I need to leave now."

It was awkward to stay there any longer. Hence Jack showed a small smile and bid the sisters goodbye.

“Sigh!”

Daniella breathed out a huge sigh. Her mood was affected. She then walked toward the direction of the hotel where she was staying. She was not in the mood for shopping right now.

“Daniellita is out of her mind. She knew that our Cabello family is not on good terms with the White family. After I did that, not only it got me out of trouble, but it’ll also create trouble for the White family, isn ‘t this a good thing? Why is she in such a bad mood?”

Helena and Venus were mumbling and complaining behind.

“Big sister, didn’t you know that Daniellita is fond of Jack? And that the two of them are actually a couple? It’s just that she dared not tell Father. And now that you ‘ve caused her lovely boyfriend to be in such a dangerous situation, how can she be in a good mood? Didn’t you see how worried she was for Jack?” Venus whispered into Helena’s ear.

Helena was completely dumbfounded. She remained silent and uttered, “The two of them…are a couple? Jesus Christ, just now I…” Her face distorted.

“Ahem, don’t worry. Daniellita won’t blame you. She saw the situation just now, and you had no better idea at that time.”

Venus immediately comforted Helena

On the other side, the Second Young Master Hunt entered his residence huffily and slammed the door behind loudly. He flipped his palm and a second-grade elementary pill appeared on his palm. “That White b*stard. Humph! Initially, I didn’t plan to participate in the tournament, but since he treated me that way, I’ll start training now and breakthrough to the late stage of the true god realm then I’ll kill all the geniuses with the surname White. I’ll let him know what the consequences are if you’ve offended me!”

Chapter 1288

It was said that the Second Young Master Hunt's talent in martial art was extraordinary. He managed to fully absorb the essence of the second-grade elementary pill at one shot. He had successfully broken through to the late stage of the true god realm.

Such talent was rare. With his current martial status and combat prowess, many family elders were not his match not to mention the young generation of geniuses. Besides, the Hunt family possessed excellent martial techniques and high-grade weapons.

Days passed by quickly.

Jack, who had returned to the hotel, was worried that the

Second Young Master Hunt would find trouble with him. However, this guy was somewhat trustworthy and stuck to his promise that he would not.

Nonetheless, at this time, the head of the Cabello family. Alejandro Cabello, heard some news from the street.

He angrily commanded Helena's presence in his room. "Helena, what's wrong with you? When I was striding on the street, I heard people talking about the First Young Mistress of the Cabello family kissing the Young Master of the White family! You must supply me with a really good explanation this time!"

Helena was rendered speechless. She would not want any news about that incident to reach any ears of the Cabello family. She thought she could escape by not going out that frequently as there were not many people that day and little to no people knew Jack. Since the tournament was in a few days, she thought that it would keep them busy and they standing feud with the White family! Our relationship is not grave to an extent that we want to wipe out each other, but all along I don't want you to interact with any of them! There are skirmishes between the Cabellos and the White! Now, look at you, you've disgraced me!"

“Dad!”

Helena was speechless. “I really had no other choice at that time! I was pestered by the Second Young Master Hunt that day. That fella said he wanted to come to the Cabello family to ask for my hand in marriage! He asked me to marry him, won’t you feel angry too? I don’t want to marry him! I’d rather find a random person to get married to!” Helena stomped her feet angrily.

“What!”

Alejandro gasped at the new information; shock gripped him.

He remained silent for a moment before he nodded, “You ‘re telling me that the Second Young Master Hunt planned to come to our house and propose to you? And that’s why you lied to him by saying that you have a boyfriend? And it just so happened that Jack was there, so you used him and kissed him to make the other party believe in your claims?”

Helena bobbed her head. “Yes. I feel that this is a little mean because the target is on Jack’s now, but I was out of my wits at that time, I really don’t want to marry him! Besides, I was afraid that because of me, the Hunt family would come looking for trouble with the Cabello family. Although the Cabello family is strong, compared to the Hunt family, we’re like an ant before an elephant!”

Alejandro nodded after knowing the truth. “Helena, don’t take it to heart. It will pass. Indeed, it was a little cruel to Jack. After all, he saved your sister’s life before. But you’ve no other choice then, so please don’t give yourself too much pressure on this matter!”

Helena pursed her red lips and nodded slightly. “The Second Young Master Hunt warned Jack fiercely. He said that he’ll participate in the tournament and if he meets Jack, he’ll kill him!”

Chapter 1289

“I’m not sure about Jack’s martial status. If it’s high, it shouldn’t be that easy to kill him.” Alejandro responded after giving some thoughts on the matter.

“Daniellita said that Jack has reached the middle stage of the true god realm. Moreover, that fella’s talent is extremely extraordinary!”

At this moment, Helena’s thought ran back to the scene where she and Jack shared a kiss on the street. She could not help but blush at the thought. That was her first kiss; she never expected her first kiss would be taken away by Jack just like that.

The only thing that comforted Helena was that Jack was quite good-looking. If he were ugly and unsightly, Helena would have banged her head against the wall, feeling like she had lost something precious.

“Middle stage of the true god realm? His martial status is not bad at all. Hmmm. Why do I feel that his talent is much stronger than yours?”

Alejandro smiled bitterly. “The White family finally has an extraordinary martial genius. If they continue to grow like it, wouldn’t it be bad for us?”

Alejandro paused before continuing, “If the Second Young Master Hunt could defeat and kill Jack in the tournament, it might not be a bad thing at all. After all, we’re not on good terms with the White family, and we don’t know what the future is like. That brat came back from the secular world, and he managed to reach this state, which is incredibly talented. If he were to continue to improve, breaking through to the peak of the true god realm is not an impossible task!”

“Sigh! Do you think the White family will blame me for his death when the time comes? After all, I’m the culprit for making Jack the target of the Hunt family!”

Helena sighed aloud; she was overwhelmed by her conscience.

“Silly girl!”

Alejandro hastened to comfort.“ The world works in such a way that the weak are always the prey to the strong. You did nothing wrong. Besides, even if Jack was killed by the Hunt family, the murder is done during the tournament. Even if Nash White feels unhappy, he has to swallow his anger, because the tournament’s rules are set by many powerful families together. It doesn’t matter if Jack was the one who killed the other party or vice versa, both parties are not allowed to take revenge and pursue further!”

“But, the Second Young Master Hunt is not a kind man. I’m afraid that he will not only target Jack but also the rest of the men in the White family. If too many men from the White family die on that day, I don’t think Nash will sit aside and abide by the rules!”

Helena gave a dry smile. Although she knew that the Cabello family was not on good terms with the White family, she never wanted to stir up any trouble for the White family. It would be more troublesome in the future.

“All right, don’t overthink this matter anymore. You must not affect your heart and spirit. If it does, it will affect your future breakthrough to the next level, understand?”

Alejandro reminded Helena gently, then added, “Go back and rest early. Tomorrow we’ll depart in the morning for the tournament. Please prepare yourself and do your best in the tournament. After all, this is a matter of the Cabello family’s reputation!”

“Okay!”

Helena bobbed her head and left the room.

Time passed quickly. On the next morning, the major families among the hidden families, including the eight reclusive families, dozens of second-class families, and some third-class families had set off to the

tournament. They headed straight to the Kobe Mountain outside the city.

Chapter 1290

“That’s so amazing! Young Master Jack, thank you so much! If it wasn’t for you, I wouldn’t have had the chance to break through to the peak of the true god realm!”

On the way to Kobe Mountain, the First Elder of the White family-Kenneth White-said with immense joy.

“Hehe, you’re welcome. It’s only a matter of time for you to break through to the peak of the true god realm. We’re all White, there’s nothing to thank me for!”

Jack chuckled and responded nonchalantly.

Nash-who was beside Fan was worried; his face sank.” Jack, I heard that you’ve offended the Second Young Master of the Hunt family, and the other party had even warned you about killing you in the tournament. So when the tournament starts, you have to be extremely careful and pay full attention to your opponent!” Nash said to Jack.

Jack nodded and smiled,” Father, don’t worry. My combat prowess and martial status are not low, it’s not easy for him to kill me. Besides, I have the ultimate-grade spiritual weapon, remember? If I can’t fight anymore, I’ll run. He can’t catch up with me.”

Nash felt relieved at Jack’s words and laughed, “Oh, you’re right! I almost forgot about the

Weapon!”

“We don’t know how the tournament rules are going to be. But if that Second Young Master Hunt wants to fight against Young Master Jack in the tournament, it won’t be easy, right? After all, there are so many other contestants in the competition!”

Yolanda Lagorio-who had broken through from the early stage to the middle stage of the true god realm -gave her two cents after thinking about the whole situation.

“But, don’t forget this time the tournament’s rules are all set by the Hunt family. If they insist on fighting against Jack in the tournament, I don’t think we can avoid that!”

Nash let out a bitter smile and said, “In the past, we didn’t have to be careful with the Lagorio family; they even helped us in the tournament. But this year, everything is different. We not only need to guard against the Hunt family but also the Lagorio family. I’m afraid that we’ll experience a big loss if they target our men!”

Titus White-who was beside them-opined with a gloomy face. The young generation of the White family possessed good talent. Within these two months, several young geniuses gained breakthroughs in their martial arts and techniques; the overall combat prowess was one level above than before.

However, the White family still seemed feeble compared to the other seven families whose foundation and heritage were built decades ago.

In the past, the White family had help from the Lagorio family in these tournaments, plus the other seven families tried not to offend each other, hence the loss was not big in such tournaments.

But the situation was not quite the same this year. Not only the White family had to fight without the help of the Lagorio family, but they have also offended many people from first -class families. Even worse, some second-class families who were at a similar level with the White family, could not wait to pull them down from the first-class family status. This time, the crisis that the White family had to face was a hundred times worse than before.

“Everyone, please be careful and be fully focused during the tournament! Several young masters from the Norman family seem to dislike Young Master Jack as well. So, we have to put our guards up against the Norman family too!”

Titus reminded the group with a bitter smile after realizing something important.

Yule White, on the other hand, pouted and expressed in an exasperated tone, “It’s not easy for me to break through to the late stage of the semi-god realm. Hmph! I thought I would be able to achieve good results this time, but looking at this situation, this tournament is big trouble for us!”

Beth White laughed out loud at the side, “Yule, don’t think too much, okay? How much better results can you get? It'd be considered fortunate if we were able to defeat some of those second-class families. Our White family has always been at the bottom of the eight reclusive families' list. We were at the bottom in the past, so I think it’ Il be the same this year too. As for the Lagorio family, nah, they won’t be able to defeat us!”

“Sister Beth, I’m truly envious of you! You’ve broken through to the early stage of the true god realm. It’d be great if I could break through to the true god realm as well!”

Yule stared at Beth with an envious expression on her face.

“There’s nothing to be envious of because I’m older than you! You, sooner or later, will break through to the true god realm!”

Chapter 1291

“Right, the best I could do is to break through to the peak of the true god realm. After that, I can’t go any further, so I’ll be waiting for you there. After all, the ultimate god realm is just a myth; it’s too unreliable; it’s completely legendary. If there’s really a way to reach the ultimate god level, I think we would have found it already!”

“Hmmm… about the ultimate god realm, since everyone is talking about it, I think maybe it’ s true!”

Jack, however, smiled and chimed in, “Only that the route to this ultimate god realm is extremely

difficult. Perhaps, the link that connects to the ultimate god realm had broken during the passing down. But I do think the ultimate god realm did exist in the past." He added.

Just when the group was happily exchanging opinions, they had arrived at the entrance to the forest under Kobe Mountain.

Outside the forest, there was a spacious meadow. Many families had arrived and gathered at the field in front of the forest.

"The White family is here!"

A man, who sat on the grass, saw that the White family had arrived, quickly announced their arrival to the others.

"Hehe! I heard that Lance of the White family is highly likely dead. And the head of the White family-Nash White-decided to make his illegitimate son the heir of the head of the White family. That illegitimate son has good talent; the White family is actually solely relying on their younger geniuses to get such a position!"

An old man chortled aloud and said to the people next to him.

"His talent is indeed excellent.

But that brat offended the Second Young Master of the Hunt family! So, I think they're in big trouble this time!"

A young man responded with a cold laugh.

"What? No way! How could he offend the Second Young Master Hunt? They don't even know each

other, right?”

The young man’s speech had sparked interest in the surrounding people.

“It happened like this…”

The young man gathered the people, only then he started telling everyone what he had heard.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. Really? I’m so jealous of that brat! He got a kiss from Helena Cabello, the First Young Mistress of the Cabello family? Jesus f*cking Christ! Any of the young mistresses of the Cabello family is my dream woman! Any of them can be called the queen of beauty! And that brat was…was actually kissed by one of them!”

Another young man expressed his jealousy upon listening to it.

“Hehe! What’s there to be envious of? Soon that brat will be sent to hell. If he is dead, it’d be useless even if he had a beauty by his side! Now, which one is more important? Life or beautiful woman?”

The old man from before said with a laugh.

“If I was kissed by such a beautiful woman, I’m willing to die a hundred times!”

The young man, on the other hand, said smilingly,” Moreover, didn’t this young man tell us about it? That Helena Cabello is no longer pure. Just thinking of the scene makes my every cell dance excitedly! Sigh! That brat is really lucky to have such a beautiful girl!” He drooled and further added, “Besides, that brat is the heir of the head of the White family, the Second Young Master Hunt wouldn’t dare to kill him without any reason, right? Also, they have to meet each other in the tournament for that to happen, right?”

After hearing that, the old man nodded in agreement. “This is true. Although he’s being targeted by the Hunt family, his social status and position is still noble. As long as they don’t meet each other in the tournament, there shouldn’t be a problem!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1292-1294

Chapter 1292

“Look, over there, the Cabello family is here!”

Just as Jack and the others had found a place to sit down, the field once again became lively due to the arrival of the Cabello family.

Jack gazed in a specific direction, indeed, the Cabello family slowly appeared in his sight not far away.

“Heh, this is my first time seeing the three sisters of the Cabello family! I can’t wait to see them!”

Some young men had long heard that the three sisters of the Cabello family were good-looking and alluring. Their eyes could hardly contain their excitement and delight.

“They’re all beautiful, stunning! But it’s a pity that the First Young Mistress is taken by a man called Jack. I’m so jealous!”

Some men, on the other hand, felt pity and lamented.

“Sigh! The First Young Mistress is not young anymore, she’s almost in her thirties, and should actually get married by now. Such a woman, her beauty is already in full bloom. I’m truly jealous of that brat! It looks like what we have left is the Second Young Mistress or the Third Young Mistress, we’ve to find a way to please them!”

A fat guy drooled and swallowed hard just by looking at Daniella and the others across the field.

Several guys, who stood beside the fatty, stared at the pig-like fatty with a disgusted look on their faces. With a pig-like face, it was already considered as fortunate if he could find a wife, not to mention to have the Second or the Third Young Mistress Cabello as his wife. He was like an idiot talking about his fantasy.

The Cabello family chose a place not far away from the White family and sat down to take a break.

Complicated feelings and thoughts dawned upon Helena when she saw Jack from afar.

She did not think much about it when the incident happened that day. But within these two days, she replayed the scene again and again in her mind and pondered on it, realizing that Jack helped her with no other intention.

She falsely accused Jack and Jack tried to refute it at first. Jack could have continued to refute by saying that they were not in a relationship after she forcibly kissed him.

But Jack did not do so. He stood there and remained silent and let the show continue, which eventually made the Second Young Master Hunt believe that they were a real couple, and in the end, he left the scene huffily.

If on that day, Jack insisted that he had nothing to do with Helena, the Second Young Master Hong would have not believed what Helena had claimed that they were a couple.

If that truly happened, the Second Young Master Hunt would certainly be angry at Helena, blaming her for fooling him. Then he might stir up trouble with the Cabello family by proposing a marriage with Helena. And if the Cabello family were to disagree, a fight would be born.

“What the heck was he thinking that day? Why did he choose to help me at the very last

Moment?”

Helena murmured to herself, her eyes fixated at Jack, full of dazzlement..

“First Young Mistress Cabello, what a surprise!”

Several men from the Norman family approached her out of the blue.

Keith Norman gazed at Helena and the corners of his mouth curled upward, forming a perfect arc. “Strange. Before we came to Kobe City, we saw that the Third Young Mistress Cabello was close with the Young Master of the White family. Tsk, tsk. It’s really out of my imagination that the First Young Mistress is also Jack’s girlfriend?” He exclaimed loudly on purpose.

Daniella was still feeling salty in her heart, although she knew that her sister had no other choice under that circumstance. “Keith Norman, what does this have to do with you? Who is close with Jack is totally none of your business!” Daniella shot up from the ground and said in anger.

Keith did not expect Daniella to be so disrespectful to him, hence he decided not to give in. “I’m just curious. You see, you said before that you and Jack are good friends, extremely ‘good’ friends. And according to the timeline, your sister has not known Jack for that long, right? Should be later than you, right? Then how did their relationship develop so quickly?”

Chapter 1293

“How does this concern you? Can ‘t they fall in love at first sight? What’s wrong with that?”

Daniella huffed. She was so angry that she could feel anger thrummed through her veins. She was already upset with the incident, who knew Keith Norman would deepen the wound in her heart by trying to pick a fight.

Helena sensed the enraging anger from her sister and felt sorry for her. She only thought of getting rid of that damned Young Master Hunt that day and did not expect Jack to be Daniella's boyfriend. If she had known it earlier, she would not have done that.

Only two people knew about the relationship between Daniella and Jack, which were herself and Venus. They did not dare to tell Alejandro; they could only pretend as if they did not know anything

"Heh, I intend to clarify about that. Your sister is so beautiful. It 's such a pity for her to be with an illegitimate b*stard."

Keith sneered, smilingly. "To my surprise, it turns out that it's not so difficult to get the daughters of the Cabello family!"

"Haha! He's right! All along we thought that the Cabello ladies are hard to pursue. They seemed distant and full of pure and noble aura. We didn't think that they're actually sl*tty in their bones! And get laid by the young master of the White family!"

Several guys chimed in and mocked like sour grapes. Jealousy rushed through their mind, especially those men who fell head over heels for the First Young Mistress Cabello.

Many of them looked at Jack fiercely as if Jack had taken their wives away, wanting to tear him apart.

"What's wrong? The male lead of this drama, why don't you come out and give a speech? You can talk about your triumph feeling for winning the Cabello ladies."

Here, the Second Young Master of the Norman family-Joshua Norman-interrupted and looked down his nose at Jack." You're composed, aren't you? Do you know how many men here are envious of you?" He mocked.

“Jack, are you and Helena really in a relationship?”

Nash, who sat next to Fan had his brows snapped together and asked, “You didn’t meet her before, did you? I think if you’ve not met her before, you should stand out and explain yourself clearly. A lot of men are fond of Helena, and I’m afraid that it’ll become a disadvantage to you in the tournament, although some of them may not be your opponent!”

Nevertheless, Jack sneered nonchalantly, “Father, there’s nothing to explain. The mouth is on their faces, we can’t control their mouth, so they can say what they like. Helena had a hard time then, if I stand out at this time, the Cabello family…”

“You…”

Nash was tongue-tied at Jack’s answer. From what he heard, he realized that Helena and Jack were definitely not in a relationship, and to get rid of Young Master Hunt at that time, Helena had no other choice but to kiss Jack.

But if Jack did not stand out and explain, the White family would be in trouble!

“Sigh! Fine, you’re not young anymore. I’ll support you anyway!”

When Nash thought of what he owed Jack and Joan over the years, he smiled and gave his support.

He did not blame Jack; if his son chose to do it, he must have a reason. Besides, if it were not for Jack, he would probably be a cold body by now. Hence, his view toward life was simple, as long as he and his family could live peacefully and harmoniously every day, he was content.

“Don’t you blame me?”

Jack was stunned at his father's reaction. He was surprised that Nash did not reprimand him.

"Haha, you're my son, and as a Father, I believe in you and I support you. I don't blame you!"

Nash patted on Jack's shoulder, chortling.

Chapter 1294

Warmth spread across Jack's chest. He smiled. "Don't worry. The First Elder is already at the peak of the true god status. I'm not too shabby either. When I've broken through the advanced stage of the true god status, we won't have to be afraid of the Cabello family or the Hunt family anymore!"

Nash bobbed his head. Now that the First Elder had achieved the peak of the true god status, their fighting strength had been significantly increased.

More importantly, although Jack had just achieved the intermediate stage of the true god status, he had a keen fighting talent. Along with that ultimate-grade spiritual tool, the White family would grow even stronger if Jack continued to improve his martial level.

"Oh my. I never thought that he would be such a coward. Hah. I really don't understand why First Young Mistress Cabello would like a coward!"

When Keith saw that Jack did not supply an answer, he became even bolder in his taunting, not caring about the White family at all.

"Why doesn't he try to explain himself?"

Alejandro looked at Jack, frowning. His daughter was with Jack not because they were in a relationship, and the White family was on bad terms with his family. Logically, Jack should explain everything. If Jack refused to admit to anything, not only would the Cabello family suffer, Helena would lose face as well.

Yet although Jack was being wrongfully accused, he chose to keep silent. While Alejandro was plenty confused, he was actually delighted as well.

“Do you have a death wish,

Keith?”

Helena could not bear to watch on any longer. “Whatever relationship I have with him, and the type of men I like-none of it is your business!” she huffed. “Are you telling me that I can’t be in love?”

“Tsk tsk. You’re mad because we said that your man is a coward?”

Joshua stood up as well, grinning. “Young Miss Cabello, we did not mean to be rude. But you and your sisters are the captors of our hearts. And Jack is an illegitimate son from the mortal realm—a cat trying to be a lion is still a cat at heart. We don’t want a beautiful woman like you to marry a dog!”

“You…”

Helena was so furious that her face purpled. She clenched her teeth and strode over to sit together with Daniella and the others. “You’d better pray that you don’t run into me in the competition. I’ll make sure you see red otherwise!”

“A dog?”

Nobody expected Jack, who had been keeping quiet all this time, to slowly stand up with a cold smile on his face.

“What’s wrong? Hit a nerve there once it’s about you?”

Joshua gave a cold smile and clenched his fists. “If you’re that angry, why don’t we have a show of strength?”

“All right then. I have no right to deny the great Young Master Norman a duel!”

Jack also gave a cold smile. In a flash, he flew into the sky.

“So fast!”

Many of the youth exclaimed when they saw this.

“That speed is definitely one of the true god status. He definitely has talent. No wonder he’s the heir of the White family!”

Some of the young masters from second-class families stared at him with admiration.

“He may be strong, but the second young master of the Norman family has already broken into the intermediate stage of the true god status. Can this genius from the White family match up to him?”

Someone flashed a bitter smile.” That punk from the White family will only invite trouble now, since he was unable to rein his anger. Heh. He’s too reckless!”

“No way about it. You probably wouldn’t be able to hold your anger in either, if someone told you that you were a coward with a finger jabbing into your nose. What sane person would tolerate that?”

Chapter 1295-1297

Chapter 1295

Someone spoke in a helpless tone.

“All right. You’re less of a coward than I thought!”

Delight sparked in Joshua when he saw that Jack had boldly agreed to the duel. He flew into the sky as well.

However, he quickly thought of something: there was an ultimate-grade spiritual tool in the White family’s possession. It did not matter if it belonged to Jack or Nash, the latter would definitely pass it to the former in fear for his son’s safety. Just to give that extra boost of power during the competition.

Even if Jack were at the beginning stage of the true god status, he would be tricky to handle with that ultimate-grade tool.

“Heh. I think you like to look down on others!”

“Hey, why don’t we just use our fists for this? No spiritual tools.”

No one thought that Joshua would say that after thinking for a while.

Jack’s brows drew together. He did not know whether to laugh or cry. That fellow was actually afraid that he would bring out the ultimate-grade tool and beat him into a pulp.

“Sure!”

Jack nodded his head and clenched his fists, concentrating his chi.

“The competition hasn’t started yet, Joshua. Just spar for a little while and don’t beat him to death. Just give him a good enough beating to teach him a lesson!”

Master Norman said, chuckling.

His three sons were all very competitive, and they were about as strong as the three young daughters of the Cabello family.

He even had the thought of marrying his sons to the Cabello family’s daughters, then they would forge a powerful alliance. They would not even be afraid of the Hunt family then.

Furthermore, it would be of great benefit to him if his three sons married all three daughters of the Cabello family. After all, they were all talented fighters as well.

He never thought that Jack would become Helena’s boyfriend. That news displeased him greatly, and he had told his son yesterday to find an opportunity to kill Jack during the competition.

That was because killing was allowed in this competition. The elders and masters of the families were not to interfere.

“Don’t worry, Father. This punk doesn’t know his place. I’ll make sure to rearrange his teeth for him!”

Joshua spoke, grinning confidently.

After he said that, he tightened his fists and chi poured out of his body. In a blink of an eye, he appeared

before Jack and attacked him.

“Hmph!”

Jack merely emitted a soft harrumph at his opponent’s attack. He met Joshua’s fist with his own, and the two fists, enhanced with chi, collided.

Bang!

A powerful burst of energy surged from the contact point of the fists.

Chapter 1296

The two fighters at the intermediate stage of the true god status were very powerful, and had thick auras of chi. The frightening explosion of energy resembled a thunderclap, releasing an ear-deafening noise. Many people jumped to their feet in shock, staring at the sky, stupefied.

“No way. That guy didn’t get blown away!”

Darryl had thought that Jack would be knocked out by his son with a single fist and sustain serious injuries. Yet after holding on for two seconds, his face began to pale. It seemed that Jack was about as strong as his son.

“That guy!”

Helena stared at Jack, lips parted in shock.

“I told you he was conserving his strength, Sis. After all, he wouldn’t want to show his true potential with so many people watching!”

Daniella watched her sister, then lifted her head, pleased with herself. Any man she had her eyes on would have some form of substance.

“No way. That guy is stronger than Joshua?”

Helena was even more taken aback. No wonder Daniella had taken a liking to him. It seemed that he was far more than what he showed on the surface.

At this moment, Jack’s lips curved sardonically. He attacked once more, and his fearsome strength completely suppressed Joshua’s. The other man spat out blood and flew backward, landing a good few hundred meters away.

“Pfft!

A spray of blood came out of Joshua’s mouth as soon as he landed on the ground. Color leached from his face.

“Are you still able to continue fighting, Second Young Master?”

Jack gave a wan smile. He peered down at this opponent from high above, radiating a superior aura.

Jack’s gaze was practically humiliating Joshua.

Joshua gritted his teeth and clenched his fists, but he was well aware that he was no match for Jack. It would be troublesome if he brought out that ultimate-grade tool.

“No wonder the First Young Mistress Cabello likes you. You are very capable and possess great ability

after all!”

Joshua stood up and glared at Jack. “I won’t forget this, you punk. We’ll stop our little duel here. I need to conserve my energy for the actual competition, then we’ll see who ‘s stronger!”

“Fine by me!”

“Young Master Jack is amazing!”

The White family members were all delighted. Jack’s fight greatly boosted their reputation.

Before, the White family members did not dare to speak much at every competition and tried to keep a low profile. The more they did that though, the other seven reclusive families all thought of them as easy pickings, and paid no mind to them.

The White family was far stronger than the second-class families causing some of the second-class families to harbor resentment toward them. On the other hand, the other seven first -class families looked down on them. They were basically stuck in the middle, neither here nor there.

Today, Jack showed that they were strong

“Hah, your brother couldn’t beat me the other day and said that he ‘d wait till the competition. And now you’re saying the exact same thing.”

Jack laughed at Joshua. “You two truly are brothers, spewing the same vicious words.”

“Don’t you dare trash talk others! My son doesn’t want to fight you any longer, yet you’re still making fun of him. I should put you in your place!”

Chapter 1297

Darryl felt embarrassed. His sons were all geniuses, and more importantly, they were one of the stronger ones of the eight first-class families.

Yet his son had lost to an illegitimate son from the White family, who came from the mortal realm, no less. That fact alone had embarrassed him enough, but he never thought that Jack would dare to make fun of his son.

He was someone who have always protected his family. He quickly flew forward and clenched his fist, rushing toward Jack.

Whoosh!

On the White family's side, the First Elder also flew forward and stood before Jack, his fist blocking Daryll's.

"It's just a duel between youth. Don't tell me that the Norman family is a sore loser?"

The First Elder's eyes were ablaze with anger. The two backtracked a few meters after their fists collided.

"No way!"

Darryl was shocked, and his eyes nearly popped out of their sockets. If he recalled correctly, the First Elder of the White family was only at the advanced stage of the true god status. Sure, he was not using his full strength just now, but he was at the peak of the true god status. The White family's First Elder should not have been able to take even a simple swipe from him.

"He has attained the peak of the true god status?"

Darryl quickly thought of the possibility, and his face blanched.

He had always thought that the White family only had a single fighter who was at the peak of the true god status. That was why the other families looked down on them.

After all, even the sixth or seventh strongest first-class families had at least two fighters at the peak of the true god status.

If Kenneth had truly broken into the peak of the true god status, it would mean that the White family was comparable to some of the weaker first-class families.

“You do have a good eye, Master Norman. I was lucky enough to break into the peak of the true god status recently, and I have grew several times stronger. I wouldn’t have been able to take your punch otherwise.”

Kenneth burst into laughter. At this moment, everybody’s attention was on him, and he was basking in the glory.

“Kenneth White has achieved the peak of the true god status?”

At this moment, the Lowe family members had just arrived in time to witness all that was happening. Trenton’s face immediately soured.

After all, they have since viewed the White family as their mortal enemy. If Kenneth had broken

Into the peak of the true god status, the gap between them and the White family would further widen. Who knew when they would be able to avenge his daughter now.

He had thought that the Cabello family were also mortal enemies with the White family and had considered joining forces with the former to go against the latter. He never thought that just a few days ago, First Young Mistress Cabello would actually turn out to be a couple with Jack.

If this was the case, he did not know what to do anymore.

Fortunately, Jack had offended Second Young Master Norman. This sparked delight in his heart. Perhaps there was a way to plot revenge through this.

He had been happy. Then he arrived here and learned that the White family's First Elder had actually broken into the peak of the true god status. It felt as though his heart had been run over by a freight train.

"Heh, Master Lowe, if you can do it, why can't I?"

Kenneth could not help but smile when he noticed Trenton's darkening expression.

"Tsk tsk. Before, we would be hard-pressed to hear news of someone suddenly breaking into the peak of the true god status over a year and a half. Now, why do we have two such specimens today!"

At this moment, the Lancaster family also flew over on a carpet. A beautiful middle-aged woman spoke with a small smile.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1298-1300

Chapter 1298

“Long time no see, Master Lancaster!”

Nash immediately stood up when he saw the Lancaster family’s master. He clapped his hands in a fist-to-palm salute and smiled faintly.

The Lancaster family members leaped down from the flying carpet, and Master Lancaster kept the carpet. “Master White, long time no see. I’ve heard about what happened to your family,” she said, smiling. “I never thought that the person who shared your bed would be the one to poison you. How frightening!”

Here, the middle-aged woman looked at Trenton. “More importantly, somebody thinks that his daughter is not at fault at all, and even nursed a grudge against your family,” she insinuated. “Tsk tsk. He truly knows no shame!”

“Who are you talking about, Shelby? Don’t push your boundaries!”

Trenton was so furious that he clenched his fists and gritted his teeth.

“What? You want to make an enemy out of the Lancaster family?”

Shelby’s brows furrowed. “I never pointed out names, but you react so strongly to my words,” she said, a cold smile on her lips. “Does this mean you’re owning up?”

“You…”

Trenton clenched his jaw. The Lancaster family was at the bottom rung of the eight reclusive families- only faring slightly better than the White family. Even then, they only had two fighters who were at the peak of the true god status, and one of them had only achieved the breakthrough last year.

Perhaps it was because of that the Lancaster and the White families had a strong relationship; they often helped each other out.

Trenton was angry, but he knew that the Lagorio family was not even considered as one of the eight first -class families but one of the better second-class families. That was why he could do nothing but swallow his dissent.

“Hah. Almost everyone is here!”

At last, the Hunt family arrived as well. The old man of the Hunt family laughed as he stepped on a flying sword, clearly in good spirits. He radiated otherworldly energy.

“Only the George family and the Xenos family has yet to arrive. There are also a few third-class families who aren’t here!”

Trenton immediately raised his hands into a fist-to-palm salute when he saw them flying over, speaking reverently toward Master Hunt.

Nash was internally speechless when he saw all this. It was way too obvious that Trenton intended to cozy up to the Hunt family.

“Mmph!”

Old Master Hunt nodded his head. Then he swiveled it in the direction of the White family. “I heard that

Lance died, Nash," he said, frowning. "Did you find an illegitimate son to come back?"

Nash stepped forward and did a fist-to-palm salute. "Greetings, Master Hunt. We still have no idea if my eldest son is dead or alive. We're still searching for him," he said.

"Several other families are also searching for their sons. More than half have turned up dead, but I decided to keep searching for another month!"

"So you'll give up after a month, Nash? He's still your son. You can't give up so easily even if my daughter offended you. That's my grandson. You-you're too cruel!"

Trenton was suddenly enraged when he heard this. "If you won' t find him, I will!"

Chapter 1299

"Master Lagorio, it's not that I do not want to prolong the search, but we've been doing it for months now. You know that the forest is enchanted and dangerous. I didn't manage to go into its deepest parts, but we've scouted nearly every inch of the forest. If we don't find them, they're most likely dead!"

Nash gave a bitter smile. "Lily wronged me, but Lance is still my son. Of course, I want him to be alive, and of course, I want to find him. Whether he follows me or Lily is up to him then. I will respect his decision!"

"Heh. You're just putting up a show. If I were you, I would have sent the White family members into the deepest White to find him!"

Trenton chuckled, expression disdainful. "Or are the White family members afraid of dying?"

"It's not a question of fearing death. Everybody knows that no one walks out of that forest alive. I don't want to throw the other family members' lives away just like that!"

“Why don’t you go in and look for him then since you love your grandson so much!” Nash snapped, the tips of ears reddening with fury. “I won’t stop you!”

Jack could not help but frown as he took in all that was said. He never thought that a place as mysterious and dangerous as that existed in this world.

“All right. All right!”

At this moment, the old master of the Hunt family grew impatient. “Everybody is here today to participate in our competition which happens only once every three years. They are not here to see the two of your families fight,” he interrupted.” Settle your disputes on your own. Don’t let it affect today’s competition!”

After Old Master Hunt said that, he turned toward Nash, “I’m curious as to what your illegitimate son looks like. I heard that he stole the heart of First Young Mistress Cabello not long after he came to Kobe city. He must have quite the charisma!”

The corners of Jack’s mouth twitched. He stepped forward and did a fist-to-palm salute.” Greetings, Old Master Hunt. I am Jack White!”

Old Master Hunt appraised Jack for a while. “Heh, you are rather handsome,” he said, smiling.“ No wonder you’ve earned the favor of the First Young Mistress Cabello!”

The old man had a smile on his face, but Jack did not sense any warmth from it at all.

This was Second Young Master Hunt’s grandfather. Since he knew what was going on between Jack and Helena, that meant he knew the poisonous words that Second Young Master Hunt had spewed. Logically speaking, the old man should be rankling at him, but there was no trace of malice in his expression.

The old man was definitely an old fox who hid his blades beneath a winsome smile. A frightening person -someone to stay away from at all costs.

Old Master Hunt did not wait for an answer before continuing, “It’ s been a long time since we’ve had a cause for celebration, what about this. If you and First Young Mistress Cabello are still alive by the end of this competition, I’ll help you two organize a wedding in a month. And I’ll be your guest of honor. How does that sound?”

“What!”

Helena’s expression crumpled when she heard this. It seemed that the old man did not believe that she and Jack were in a romantic relationship, so he said that on purpose to test them. If they did not admit to it, it would mean that they had played his grandson. The old man would be absolutely furious at them then.

Here, Helena’s head spun. This single lie had landed them in a huge pit now.

There was no way she could marry Jack. She had only just met him. He was not a bad person, but she had no feelings whatsoever for him. Furthermore, he was Daniella’s boyfriend. There was no way she could just snatch her man.

“No way! I don’t agree to this!”

Daniella panicked when she heard this. She jumped onto her feet and huffed.

Chapter 1300

“You don’t?”

Old Master Hunt frowned; he had not expected this.

“Why isn’t she agreeing to it?”

Many people were taken aback as well. It was clear that Old Master Hunt was being kind, and he wanted a cause to celebrate for-that was why he had offered to organize the wedding for Jack and Helena. It was a point of pride to have an eminent person such as Old Master Hunt giving his blessings.

Yet Third Young Mistress Cabello was disagreeing.

“Sister!”

Venus jumped in shock and immediately tugged on Daniella’ s sleeve. She shot her younger sister a look. Everything would go down the drain if the girl told everyone that Jack was her boyfriend

Daniella had been overtaken by emotion just now. She had spoken without thinking.

With Venus’ reminder, she finally understood the gravity of the situation. She rolled her eyes instead. “My sister just met him twice or thrice, and they fell in love at first sight,” she said. “I don’t think that warrants a wedding just yet.”

Venus heaved a sigh of relief.” That’s right. No need to rush.” She smiled as she played along.” We’ll know if they’re suitable to be a married couple sooner or later. What if they find out that they have conflicting personalities?”

Helena also chipped in, “That’s right. Thank you for your offer, Old Master Hunt, but I’ve only just met Jack. We’ve just started a relationship, and we don’t know what will happen in the future. It’s too soon for us to get married. I never thought about it myself!”

“That sounds great. I might have a chance if they break up later!”

A young master from a second-class family suddenly spoke excitedly after he heard that.

The fellow beside him gave a wry smile. “Heh. Dream on. There are plenty of geniuses from first-class families that even she doesn’t care about. When will someone from a second-class family like you get a chance?”

That young master folded his arms before him. “Don’t speak so soon. Jack may be a young master from a first-class family, but his position isn’t all that prominent either. He’s an illegitimate son plucked from the outside world. I even heard that he was a live-in son-in-law before!”

“No way. He was a live-in son-in – law? How embarrassing. For a young master of the eminent White family to go to the mortal realm and be a live-in son-in-law-that’s worse than torture. If it were up to me, I’d rather stay single forever than become a live-in son-in-law!”

Quite a few youths heard this and began casting sympathetic or disdainful looks at Jack.

“Hah. Interesting, interesting!”

Second Young Master Hunt, who was staring at Helena with a grin on his face, finally spoke up.

He took a few steps forward. “So you and Jack only met twice or thrice? It’s fine if you get into a relationship with him after meeting just a few times, but giving your first time to him? Aren’t you being too careless?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1301-1303

Chapter 1301

The last time Helena said that she was Jack’s girlfriend and that she was no longer a virgin, Second

Young Master Hunt, who had been infatuated with her, was devastated. A beautiful flower like her had been tainted by someone else just like that? Every time he thought about it, he simply felt furious!

"No way. This – this is such an important thing. And you…"

Many young women stared at Helena. A woman's first time was precious, and no lady would give it away just like that.

Furthermore, the Cabello family was a first-class family, and Helena was the first daughter of their master.

No one thought that she would just…

"I'm fine with it. Even if the child isn't mine, it's fine if she's willing to marry me!"

Many men who had liked Helena all spoke unabashedly.

It was evident that a woman of Helena's caliber was hard to find.

Helena's expression soured. She had spun this story because she wanted to wrench herself out of Second Young Master Hunt's grip by breaking his heart. She never thought that he'd be so shameless to say something like that before so many families. He just shamed her to no end.

Alejandro's face flushed. He knew why his daughter did this, so all he could do was grit his teeth through all of it.

Helena's eyes reddened, and the tip of her nose turned hot. She barely kept the tears from spilling. She had never felt so suppressed before.

She glared at Second Young Master Hunt. “This is my business, Second Young Master Hunt. You don’t have a say in anything. You can think that I have no morals, but you didn’t need to say anything in public, right?” she said. “Heh. Because you did this, my opinion of you has lowered even further. It doesn’t matter if I marry Jack or some other man in the future. But I’ll never be with a man like you!”

The corners of Second Young Master Hunt’s mouth twitched violently. His expression immediately darkened. If she said that, it meant that any man she would meet was stronger than him.

Her words truly caused embarrassment to Second Young Master Hunt. Many people looked at him and whispered among themselves.

Master Hunt too felt embarrassed. They had always thrown their weight around before, but he never thought that Helena would actually say something so shameful toward the Hunt family and criticize his son just like that.

Still, it was true that his son should not have said something like that out loud and shame the Cabello family’s daughter. It was not very respectful of him. It was no wonder that she was mad.

He tried to smile. “What now? We came for a competition, and no one can predict the matters of the heart. Anyway, youngsters nowadays are often impulsive. Heh. So it’s normal that they’re together after that one moment of impulse!”

After he said that, he purposely shot his son a glare. “Tyrell, apologize to First Young Mistress Cabello. You have no say in who she chooses to love.”

Tyrell took a step forward and raised his hands into a reluctant fist-to-palm salute. “First Young Mistress Cabello, I wasn’t thinking just now. I was just surprised because you had been abstinent for over twenty, almost thirty years, and I never thought that you would bloom so fast. I was just surprised. I had no intention of belittling you. Don’t take this to heart!”

Helena's features were set in stone, and the backs of her eyes burned as she stared at the grass. That was no apology. He acted as though he had all the power in the world. It just made her even madder.

Chapter 1302

Helena's actions were clearly sullying Master Hunt's reputation. It made him feel awkward as if he did not know how to exit the stage.

Jack furrowed his brows. He knew that they could not go on like this. The Hunt family would definitely hold a grudge because of this.

The Cabello family members did not know what to do either. All of them tried to flash indicative glances at Helena, but she kept staring at the ground, refusing to look up.

After a few seconds of awkward silence, Jack boldly walked over and took her hand, her eyes widened in surprise.

Helena was taken aback; she could not help but withdraw her hand.

Jack tightened his grip instead and gave her a small smile. "No need to throw a temper anymore, Helena," he said gently. "Second Young Master Hunt has already apologized. He did not seem very sincere, but it' s already a good thing that he chose to say sorry!"

Helena's cheeks reddened, and panic gripped her. This man dared to call her by her first name?

She quickly recovered and matched his smile. Then she spoke to Second Young Master Hunt, "All right, all right. I'm not a petty person. I just hope that you won't react so badly the next time. Even your father knows that youths nowadays should be more open!"

After she said that, she rolled her eyes at Jack. Her antics added depth to her character, and many young

men sighed in admiration.

“Don’t worry, Helena. I’ll be by your side no matter what happens!”

Only then did Jack release her hand and stood to the side.

Alump lodged itself in Daniella’ s throat when she saw all that, but she also heaved an internal sigh of relief. If she did not know better, she could not tell that the two were putting on a show for everyone to see.

At least Jack’s words proved that they were a couple-it would shut the brat’s mouth for now.

“Tsk tsk. It’s unwise to be so affectionate before everyone, no? It’ll be a brutal competition later. Who knows if you two lovebirds will even survive!”

The first young master of the Hunt family had been watching everything silently from the side. He radiated a haughty aura.

“Don’t worry. I’m not that powerful, but I believe that it shouldn’t be a problem for us to survive!”

Jack just gave an impassive smile at his disdainful words, as if he did not care about them at all.

“Hah. Good. I like confident people like you!”

First Young Master Hunt laughed and continued, “This way, it’d be all the more delightful if I have you as my opponent later!”

After the whole hubbub, the George family and the Ximenes family also arrived.

The George family was a lot weaker than the Hunt family, and the Ximenes family was only slightly weaker than the former. The two families were one of the stronger ones of the eight reclusive families.

Chapter 1303

“All right. Everyone’s here then I ‘ll start briefing about the rules for the competition!”

Quentin, the master of the Hunt family, scanned the audience before flying up. His voice boomed across the atmosphere.

Everybody looked at him when they heard that. No one else knew about this year’s competition rules, save for selected people from the Hunt family.

With everyone’s eyes on him, Quentin continued, “The rules are simple. I think all of you have seen the forest around here. There are plenty of monsters and spirited grass in it, and usually, the Hunt family keeps guard around its perimeters, and very few people are allowed entry. Atop Kobe Mountain and throughout the forest, we’ve placed a total of 10, 000 black plaques. Your mission is to collect those wooden plaques, and whoever collects the most at the end is the winner of the individual competition! You have one month to do this.”

Here, Quentin paused for a while before resuming, “After that, all participants will compile their plaques, and the family that has the most plaques will be the

Winner of the group competition. Prizes will be given out accordingly!”

Master Ximenes could not help but frown when he heard this.” So you’re saying that this competition is not a ring match and that there won’t be one-onone matches?” he asked, stepping forward. “This means that even within a single day, it’ s likely that there’ll be many-on -one, a whole group on one, or even group fights?”

Master George's expression also turned grave. "Master Hunt, if this is the case-if we do not care if our participants are alive or dead-this method of elimination is too cruel. Many will die here!"

"Heh. Isn't dying a very common occurrence? Anyway, this is a competition. Everyone should go through such a brutal process once in their lifetime!"

Quentin chuckled without care.

Yet many of the family members turned gloomy.

They all knew that the Hunt family was not afraid because they had plenty of geniuses – plenty of fighters of the true god status. They also had plenty who were at the advanced or peak stages of the semi-god status. That was why they were not afraid.

As for the other families, they had geniuses among their youth, but some of them had just entered the beginning stage of the semi-god realm. There were even some third-class families who had eighth-grade or ninth-grade grandmasters taking part to round up the numbers. If this was the case, they would have great losses among their ranks.

They still had the opportunity to admit defeat with the ring fights before. The masters and elders from the families all kept watch as well, so nothing extreme ever happened.

Now though, the Hunt family made all the participants enter the forest and Kobe Mountain. Since they have never been into the forest and mountain, they had no way of knowing what was goes on inside.

Furthermore, anything can happen inside the forest. If a group of people from the Hunt family disliked a genius from another family, it was likely that the genius would be killed by a mob.

More importantly, the competition is taking place for one month. How many people would die over the course of one month?

“This is bad. Jack, you have to be careful. I think the Hunt family set these rules just to target us!”

Nash’s features were contorted. He leaned toward Jack and whispered, “Besides, you’ve offended Second Young Master Hunt now. He’ll be even more ruthless toward you. I seriously suspect that he was the one who came up with these rules!”

Jack was not an idiot. Rules like these clearly favored the strong. The competition was clearly unfair.

“I’m afraid that they’re right though. It’s not just the White family that’s in danger!”

Jack went silent for a few seconds before replying Nash.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1304-1306

Chapter 1304

Nash was stunned momentarily when he heard that. He took a sharp intake of breath. “So you’ re saying that the Hunt family realized the other families are growing stronger and wanted to use this opportunity to get rid of the younger geniuses to solidify their position? If each family’s heir is gone, this means that the Hunt family will become even stronger!”

Jack bobbed his head. “That’s very likely. It’s only natural for them to grab the chance to kill some of the geniuses they are not on good terms with,” he murmured. “As well as the families who had crossed blades with them!”

Nash’s frown deepened. “The Lagorio family was once our ally, but now they’re our enemy. The Norman family, Second Young Master Hunt, and many people who are envious of your relationship with First Young Mistress Cabello will all be out to get you. Even the Cabello family might try to kill you. We’ re in grave danger this time!”

“We have no choice but to rely on ourselves then. No backing out now!”

Jack gave a bitter smile. “But I won’t be that easy to kill. And anyone who wants to kill a member of the White family will pay for their folly!”

Nash’s gaze flitted over toward the Lancaster family. “The Lancaster family is on good terms with us, and they’re reliable people,” he told Jack.” We also have a pretty good relationship with the George family and the Ximenes family. We’ve had a few disputes before, but nothing substantial.”

“Don’t worry, Dad! I’ll definitely survive!”

Jack spoke earnestly to prevent Nash from worrying too much.

“All right!”

Nash nodded his head. He could do nothing but have trust in his own son now.

Everyone had a cloud over their heads, and some were muttering among themselves. Master Hunt coughed lightly and added, “All of us are martial artists. Yes, you have children, but so do I.”

As he spoke, more emotion filled his voice. “We all know that we can only experience a rainbow once we’ve weathered a storm, and no victory comes without losses. These young people need to experience their rites of passage, and only those who have can appreciate the meaning of life-only then will they be able to become even stronger as they cultivate themselves. And they will have a better chance of becoming fighters at the peak of the true god status!”

“Master Hunt is right!”

At this moment, no one expected Trenton to step forward. “Master Hunt has only achieved the peak of the true god status today because he went through many battles

When he was young, experienced plenty of life-and-death situations,” he said, clearly attempting to butter the other man up. “Only then could he stand where he is today. We cannot allow our descendants to become snowflakes!”

Here, Trenton raised his arms and lifted his chin. “We applaud you!” he said, his voice dripping with praise.

With those words, the Lagorio family members automatically raised their heads and began applauding. The other families all could not stand Trenton’s bootlicking behavior, but with his entire family clapping hands, they had no choice but to follow along.

“You see that? The Lagorio family is only a second-class family, not a first-class. But Master Lagorio’s sentiments run deep, and everyone should take a page out of his book!”

Old Man Hunt gave a small smile and appraised Trentor. He felt that Trenton truly knew his purpose here.

Trenton immediately answered courteously, “Ah, I have nothing for others to learn from, Old Man Hunt. I am just saying what I feel!”

Chapter 1305

At this moment, Darryl also stood up and chuckled. “The Norman family feels this way as well, Old Man Taylor,” he said. “ Everyone’s men will be entering the competition, so it is fair. What are all of you afraid of?”

“All right. If no one else has any protests, then the matter is settled.”

Quentin raised his arms and called for everyone to remain silent. “But don’t worry. They won’t go in as a big group. We’ve already repaired the summoning circle at Kobe Mountain that is an ancestral heirloom. Hah. Once the contestants enter the area, the summoning circle will scatter them at different places. So it’s fair for everyone!”

“It’s fixed now? I heard that Master Hunt had been researching summoning circles, but I never thought that he would have such patience for the subject. He’s probably the only one in the world who knows how to create and fix summoning circles!”

Master George’s expression contorted in surprise. It was evident that he never thought the old, dilapidated summoning circle at the foot of Kobe Mountain would actually be fixed by Quentin.

Perhaps the Hunt family members chose to hold the competition here to show off Quentin’s skills of using the summoning circle, just to show everyone just how great he was and tell everyone that he was a genius at summoning circles.

“Master Hunt, you’re sure it’s fixed? Will it be safe once we enter? What if something goes wrong? It’ll be terrible!”

Master Ximenes was still worried that the summoning circle would turn out faulty.

“Hah. Don’t worry. Master Ximenes, I would never toy around with the lives of so many geniuses at stake.”

Master Hunt laughed and spoke confidently, “Besides, my sons and the Hunt family members are all going in. Do you think I’d put their lives at serious risk? You all know that my second son has never been interested in such competitions since young, but he came to me and told me that he was interested in this year’s competition and that he wanted to participate!”

When he said this, Quentin’s eyes sidled toward Jack.

Jack gave a bitter smile. It was obvious that Second Young Master Hunt wanted to kill him during the competition. After all, he had embarrassed the other man that day. That fellow must harbor a grudge.

Everyone felt comforted at Quentin's words.

If everyone were to be scattered in the forest after entering the summoning circle, there might be lesser sacrifices. Some of the less skilled martial artists could at least find a place to hide.

Otherwise, if so many people were to enter the forest at the same time, there was a chance that the Hunt family and the George family would band together to kill geniuses from other families. For those families, it would be like sending their children off to a death mission.

"Oh, right. Is there anything else we should take note of, Master Hunt?"

Alejandro asked after he thought about it.

"There is one more thing. Asides from the 10,000 black plaques I mentioned beforehand, we've also placed a thousand white plaques and a hundred red plaques!"

Quentin's lips curved into a small smile. "And these plaques will appear more frequently once you venture deeper into the forest-toward the mountain itself. This means that there aren't that many plaques at the outskirts, but you'll find more once you go in deeper.

Chapter 1306

Nash could not help but step up after thinking about it. He raised his hand in a fist-to-palm salute toward Quentin. "If I may be so bold to ask, Master Hunt, is there any significance to the different-colored plaques? Otherwise, why would there be three different colors?"

Quentin laughed. "Of course the colors are significant. The black plaques are the most basic whereas the

white plaque equals ten black plaques. As for the red plaques, their numbers are few, but one of them is equal to a hundred black plaques. So if you' re lucky enough to find a red plaque, you get a hundred black ones!"

Here, Quentin paused for a while before continuing, "I must tell you all this-you know that there will be more plaques the further you venture in. So the white and red plaques are also scattered with that logic. In this competition, not only will you have to be strong, but you'll have to have some measure of luck!"

"Let's open the summoning circle!"

After Quentin explained all the rules, he looked at the two tall stone gates nearby and yelled.

In a flash, two elders from the Hunt family flew over to the stone gates. Each of them took out a piece of middle-grade spirited stone and placed them on the indents in the middle of the stone pillars.

With the spirited stones in place, the gates whirred and opened with a heavy groan. A blue sheen of light burst forth and spread across the area. Everyone watched in surprise as it gradually formed a glowing blue dome and covered the entire forest and the mountain in it. No one could see what was going on inside.

"It seems like this ancient summoning circle has truly been fixed by Master Hunt. Amazing!"

"That's right. He could even restore the symbols and writing on them. Otherwise, this summoning circle will just rot away in waste!"

Plenty of people could not help but exclaimed when they saw the giant blue veil. They even felt grateful that they could witness it at least once in their lives.

"Master Hunt, this dome is covering the entire forest and the mountain. We can't see anything going on inside anymore. Then what's the use of the dome?"

Master Ximenas could not help but ask Quentin after he thought about it.

Quentin smiled before replying, “This summoning circle is able to scatter anyone who enters in different places. We won’t be able to see what’s going on inside, but you can see tiny dots on its surface. That’s how we roughly tell what’s happening to the participants. If one of the lights flickers for a while before disappearing, it means that the participant has died!”

Master Ximenas nodded his head after he heard that. “What an amazing summoning circle. I never thought that it would be able to sense if the people inside are dead or alive.

Quentin looked flattered. “This summoning circle is nothing. According to my research and knowledge, there should be some summoning circles out there that can teleport a person anywhere. It’s called a transporter, but a tool like that is too complex. I’ve only managed to find some basic formulas in my book. There’s no way to find more information, unfortunately.”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1307-1308

Chapter 1307

Here, Quentin paused before continuing, “But since there are summoning methods as strong as that, I can safely say that there is a way to break into the ultimate god realm and that it’s not just a myth!”

The First Elder of the Cabello family, who was usually a man of few words, became excited. He took a few steps forward and declared to everyone, “What Master Hunt has said is right. I can also say that the ultimate martial art techniques and ultimate god status exist. But we have not found a way to achieve them!”

“Oh, really? Do you have any proof of that, First Elder Cabello?”

When they heard this, many fighters at the peak of the true god status were excited. They had been unable to progress any further than the peak of the true god status. If this went on, all they could do was live their days out in monotony till the end, just like normal people.

It had not been easy for them to achieve their martial level. After hearing rumors about they hoped to achieve it and live for two hundred more years and as exalted beings.

That was why the people at the peak or advanced stage of the true god status all got excited whenever they heard anyone mentioning the ultimate god status.

First Elder Cabello could not help but gave a bitter smile as he saw the hopeful faces. “I don’t have definite proof, but I think all of you know that the ancient book in my hands contains records of cures to strange diseases. Other than this, it provides formulas on creating pills and characteristics of the third and fourth-grade spirit grass! It even has formulas on third-grade pills…”

In all honesty, not many people knew about this. First Elder Cabello had rarely spoken about the contents of his books as well. He would always dodge questions whenever they came around.

Since Master Hunt talked about the ultimate god realm though, he decided to share everything with everyone.

“First Elder Cabello, can you let us see the formula for the third-grade pill then? I just want to take a look. I don’t want your book. How about that?”

Tyrell was the residential expert alchemist in the Hunt family and was practically obsessed with alchemy. Master Hunt enjoyed researching summoning circles, and his alchemy. The Hunt family’s position had always been relatively strong with the two’s profound knowledge in such sacred fields.

“That’s right, First Elder Cabello. Let us have a look. Perhaps this will give us a better chance of finding out how to achieve the ultimate god status.

This isn’t just for our sake-it’s for yours and your descendants as well. This will be a significant legacy!”

Old Man Hunt also looked on with anticipation. If he had not known that First Elder Cabello was far stronger than Alejandro, he would have tried to snatch that tome away a long time ago.

“I’m afraid I’ll have to decline!”

First Elder Cabello’s expression suddenly darkened. He just wanted to bring this up to make everyone believe that the ultimate god realm did exist and that all of them would be motivated to find a method to break into it. He did not think that they would actually want to see his book. There was no way he would let anybody look at it.

Chapter 1308

People are naturally selfish. Never mind a formula for third-grade pills, he would not even let Second Young Master Hunt see a formula for second-grade pills.

That was why First Elder Cabello had always kept the book vigilantly. Even Master Cabello could not access it easily. The most he could do was flip a few pages before the book had to be returned that was why First Elder Cabello had not hesitated a split second before refusing all of them.

“Never mind. Forget about it, since First Elder Cabello is so distrusting of us. But there are some things that you just can’t discover on your own!”

Quentin waved his hand, clearly unhappy.

“That’s right. You’ve been holding on to that book for a very long time now, but you still haven’t found anything after all these years. I think that book just contains records of medicinal treatments and pill formulas, but it won’t be much help in finding a way to break into the ultimate god realm!”

Old Man Hunt also smiled. “But since you brought this up, anyone can deduce that third-grade pills and fourth-grade spirit grass do exist- and that the ultimate god status is real. After all, if the third and fourth -grade pills really exist, nobody from the advanced stage or even at the peak of the true god status would dare to take anything like that. It would contain too much energy!”

“All right, all right. This discussion is going nowhere. Let’ s start the competition. It’s getting late too!”

Quentin looked at all of the contestants. “Every family has four hundred candidates. Please step forward, all of you. Once I say that the competition starts, you may enter the dome,” he announced. “After you enter, you can’t get out until thirty days have passed. You’ll be able to come out once the competition is over.”

Old Man Taylor reminded everyone from the side,” According to the rules, all competitors cannot be over thirty years of age. Don’t blame me if the Hunt family goes berserk if any family dares to break this rule. There is plenty of spirit grass in this forest and quite a few treasures too. If you happen to find them, consider them your spoils of war!”

After all the contestants have walked through the glowing surface of the Dome, Quentin announced, “Let the competition begin!”

Whoosh! Whoosh! whoosh!

In a flash, everyone blurred into shadows and leaped toward the dome.

Jack studied the dome and quickly realized that as everyone jumped in, more dots lit up across the surface. These lights were scattered everywhere, and one could estimate each individual’s positions from the surface.

“Summoning circles are amazing!”

Jack could not help but exclaim. This was his first time hearing and seeing something like that.

“Let’s go. What are you waiting for! There are plenty of treasures waiting for us inside!”

Daniella walked over to him and rolled her eyes before flying straight into the dome.

“That girl…”

Jack smiled and flew in as well.

It was as though the dome were made out of air. After he flew in, Jack’s vision briefly went white before he appeared in the middle of a forest.

He studied his surroundings, and a small smile curved his lips. There had been plenty of people from the White family who rushed in with him, but they must have all been scattered in different corners of the area. He had to admit that the summoning circle was both awesome and terrifying.

“Since there are more plaques inside, and since the white and red plaques are scattered that I’ll just head toward the mountain!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1309-1310

Chapter 1309

Jack lifted his head and looked at the peak of the mountain in the distance. He hovered only a meter or two off from the ground and flew forward.

Roar!

In the depths of the forest, a frightening roar of a beast tore through the atmosphere. Jack knew that there were plenty of powerful monsters here, but he was not that afraid because his martial level was pretty high.

However, those monsters would be trouble for some contestants from third-class families who were still at grandmaster levels.

“Eh!”

Jack’s martial level was high, and he was not slow, so he quickly spotted a black plaque after a while. He flew over and picked it up and kept it in his martial ring

“There’s still one month left. No need to hurry. The fighting will grow fiercer toward the end!”

Jack thought to himself as he flew. There were many people searching for plaques upfront. This way, they would have many plaques at the critical moment, and some would attempt to take the plaques by force. There would be plenty of cases where people were killed for their plaques.

The contestants from the same family might even band together toward the end. Then, fights would frequently erupt between two families.

“The people from the White family are not weak, but they’re not very strong either. I need to find them quickly. After all, there are plenty of people out to get us in this competition!”

Jack quickly frowned and started to worry for the other contestants from the White family.

At first, he had not even wanted to allow those geniuses from the branch families to take part in fear of their safety.

However, those geniuses were confident and strong, and they wanted to experience the world. After discussing the matter with Nash only did Jack allow them to come.

Of course, the White family was still a first-class family. The geniuses who were qualified to participate

were all at least in the semi-god realm and were pretty strong.

But she had been unfortunate enough to run into three people from the Lagorio family not long after she had entered. Among the three, two of them were at the beginning stage of the semigod status, and another was at the intermediate stage. She was clearly no match for them.

“Plaques?”

One of the men laughed wickedly. “We have no interest in whether you’ve picked up any plaques. We’re interested in the geniuses from the White family!”

Chapter 1310

“Gentlemen, could you spare me for the sake of my family and your family? Our families were close back then. And we just came in, you don’t want to kill me, right?”

Nikini sighed aloud in her heart, cursing for the bad luck she had today. It was already hard to participate in the tournament. She came to this tournament in hopes to improve herself and assess which level she was at, however, she did not expect to be targeted like that.

Moreover, were not these three people too lucky? They actually found a White out here effortlessly.

“There’s nothing I can do, little beauty. Our families ‘were’ close. But now? Before we departed for the tournament, our master has repeatedly reminded us not to spare anyone from the White family if we meet them on the way, especially those who are traveling on their own.”

One of the men scoffed devilishly and studied Nikini carefully. “Little beauty, you actually have a hot body. Why didn’t I remember there’s such a pretty genius from the White family?”

Another man of the Lagorio family chimed in with a wide evil grin. “Tsk tsk, this beauty, she’s hot! It’s

such a pity if we just kill her here. Moreover, she doesn't have the token on her, wouldn't we be wasting our chi energy on her? We'll be at a huge loss! And since everyone just came in, why don't we just find a covered area, bush maybe, and we can…"

The two exchanged glances and nodded in unison. They then slowly paced toward Nikini.

Jack-who was on a tree clenched his fist and was ready to go out and teach them a good lesson.

Nonetheless, at this very moment, a figure flashed past him and appeared not far away out of sudden. "What the h*11 are you doing? How dare you attack our White family member! Are you looking for death?" a raging voice rang through space.

Through branches and leaves on the tree, Jack-who was still hiding in the tree-peeked at the figure who had just flashed past him and found out the person was Sally White. He could not help but frown.

If he was not mistaken, Sally was at the middle stage of the semi-god level, and he wondered if Sally and Nikini would be a match for these three men of the Lagorio family.

"Sis Sally!"

As soon as she saw that it was Sally, Nikini's eyes lit up with hope and her mood brightened up. However, it did not last long before Nikini frowned. She met Sally after entering the main White family and the two of them had a good relationship. However, she was worried that even if she and Sally joined forces and fought together, they might not be a match for the three men.

"Another White has come! What should we do?"

One of the Lagorios exclaimed and his brows snapped together after realizing the arrival of Sally.

“There’s nothing to be afraid of! Three of us have pretty decent martial status and combat prowess. Not to mention that we have three here and only two of them!”

The guy who was in the middle stage of the semi-god realm possessed strong confidence in his own combat ability. He sneered coldly.

“Sally, these two here, they’re at the early stage of the semi-god realm, and another here is at the middle stage of the semi-god realm. Although I’m also at the early stage of the semi-god realm, it shouldn’t be a problem for me to deal with these two who are at the early-stage level. But, the other one, I’ll have to leave it to you!”

Nikini gave the matter some thoughts and suggested it to Sally, however, at the bottom of her heart, she was not confident. She was hit by these three a moment ago when she was not paying attention. She was now wounded and could only clench her teeth and fight herself to death.

Sally, on the other hand, gave a mirthless smile. “Don’t worry. These guys are definitely looking for death!”

Once the last word dropped, Sally balled her fist tightly and went straight to the guy in the middle-stage level in an instant.

“Beat the sh*t out of them! F* ck! God has been gracious to us, sending us two beauties to enjoy today! You two, handle the wounded one, there shouldn’t be a problem. After killing her, come and help me with this one who has stronger combat prowess!”

As soon as he saw Sally make her move, the guy who was at the middle stage of the semi-god realm clenched his fist and enclosed it with chi energy. Then he charged toward Sally.

“We got you, Young Master Fabio! Leave this beauty to the two of us!”

The other two rubbed their fists and smiled as they walked over to Nikini.

Wham!No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1311-1313

Chapter 1311

Nonetheless, a shocking incident had happened.

The Lagorio who was at the middle stage of the semi-god realm was blown away by Sally's punch effortlessly and smashed onto the ground with a mouth of blood spurting out of his mouth. He was badly injured.

"No… no way! This strength… You 're at the late stage of the semi-god realm!"

The color drained out of his face after spitting out a mouthful of blood. His face turned unsightly and he was extremely shocked in his heart. The strength that Sally possessed right now was definitely not of the strength of the middle stage of the semi-god realm!

"Bingo! I broke through to the late stage of the semi-god realm a few days ago! So, now you can go to hell in peace!"

Sally sneered coldly. She flipped her palm, a fine sword appeared in her grip, and she appeared in front of the man in a flash and swung her sword.

"What the f*ck!"

The other two men looked at each other, and both were frightened down to the soles of their shoes. Their legs went soft and they plopped onto the ground.

If Sally were truly at the late stage of the semi-god realm, then the two of them were destined to die. They could not even fight back.

They initially thought that, as long as Young Master Fabio held on for a while, and waited until the two of them finished up the wounded one, they would be able to win. Little did they know that that new White girl was actually already at the late stage of the semi-god realm! Young Master Fabio was simply not her opponent!

Sally stabbed through the opponent's heart and quickly pulled out her sword. Blood splattered, Young Master Fabio, a fighter who was at the middle stage of the semi-god realm, had fallen.

"Miss…miss White? Spare us, please? None of us wanted this to happen, none of us did it on purpose! We're instructed by Young Master Fabio!"

One of the two remaining guys cried out loud when he saw Sally paced toward them. His legs went weak and kneeled to plead for his life.

"Yes, yes, yes, it's that damn Young Master Fabio's fault! If he hadn't told us to do this, we wouldn't have had the guts!"

The other guy begged in a trembling voice. He knelt together with the other one.

"Oh, spare your lives? Are you fooling me? Do you think I didn't hear what you spilled just now?"

Sally scoffed icily. With two consecutive slashes, she ended their lives.

The two men saw the hint of murder in Sally's eyes and knew that the situation was not right. They stood up to escape. Unfortunately, just as they stood up, a sword was swung on their necks and they fell

directly onto the ground.

“Sis Sally, you’re freaking awesome! You’ve actually broken through to the late stage of the semi-god realm! It if wasn‘t for you today, I would have arrived at hell by now!”

Nikini skipped over to Sally excitedly and held her hands while praising her.

“Hehe, it’s because the spiritual energy in the main White family is truly dense and rich, plus I kept training and practicing the past few weeks. That’s why I’m able to break through to the late stage of the semi-god realms a few days ago!”

Sally chuckled warm-heartedly. She then took out a healing pill and handed it to Nikini.

“Thanks a lot, Sis Sally! You’re good to me!”

Nikini swallowed the healing pill. Her hand was still holding Sally’s arm; apparently, they had become a pair of good sisters.

“Let’s move. If we don’t leave now, the stench of the blood will attract the monster beast here and if a powerful monster beast is attracted, we’re doomed!”

Sally smiled and continued, “We ‘re both coming from the White branch families, and also parts of the White family. Naturally, we must help each other!”

Chapter 1312

“Hold on! Let’s search their martial rings and see if there’s any treasure in it!”

Nikini quickly thought of something, ran over to the three dead bodies quickly, and took down their

martial rings.

“Eh? Not bad! There are a few healing pills and a few first-grade spirited grass. Wait, what’ s this? Jesus! There’re two black tokens in this guy’s ring! We found treasure!”

Nikini exclaimed loudly as she took out the treasures from the rings and handed them to Sally.” Sis Sally, thank you for saving me! These treasures all belong to you! They’re your spoils of war!”

“You’re giving me everything? Nah, let’s share them! Whoever participates gets to share, right? Hehe. Besides, with these spirited grass, you can break through to the next level sooner!”

Sally was polite; she did not take them all but took only half of the treasures and handed them to Nikini. She had even shared one of the black tokens with Nikini.

“You keep the tokens. My combat prowess is not as strong as you, it’s not safe for me to keep them. You’re a lot stronger than me, you should keep them. And if we were to run into any danger, at least I could hold the other party up and you can escape with the tokens. That’s a better plan!”

Nikini smiled and handed the black token back to Sally.

“What nonsense are you saying? Just be careful and we’d be fine. Both of us have a high martial level, there shouldn’t be a problem. We both will get out alive!”

Sally rolled her eyes at Nikini and reprimanded her gently.

Nikini, on the other hand, said,” You have to keep these tokens no matter what. There’s an individual competition and group competition, either one is good for the White family. So it doesn’t matter who keeps the tokens. If the White family gets more tokens, our ranking will improve in the group competition. The top few of the group competition has a reward!”

Sally nodded in agreement.” Alright, then I’ll keep these tokens first, and when we meet with Young Master Jack or any other White of the true-god realm, we’ll let them keep the tokens. It’s better that way. Because no matter who you give it to, it’ll not affect the group competition’s result, and if the tokens were to given to those with high martial status, then he or she will be able to advance more in the individual competition and improve the individual ranking!”

Nikini bobbed her head in approval. “That’s right! I believe the other families will do the same, giving the tokens to those who are strong and high in martial status in their families, so that they can compete in the individual competition.”

“Let’s move, if we don’t leave now, the beast will smell the blood and come here in no time!”

Sally flashed a warm smile, and after Nikini kept the treasure into her martial ring, the two of them disappeared in a flash.

Jack hopped down from the tree not far away after seeing the two leave the place.

Initially, when he saw that Nikini was in danger, he was planning to rush out and help her, but he did not expect Sally’s arrival at all, even better, she had broken through to the next level.

“Hehe, let them fight and practice more then!”

Jack chuckled to himself, and only then continued his journey ahead

“First-grade premium spirited grass!”

After flying for a while, Jack noticed a first-grade premium spirited grass under a large tree before him. This spirited grass was a rare type that could be used to make pills.

He disappeared and then appeared again within a second in front of the large tree, wanting to pluck it off. After all, there were a lot of people coming into this place and searching for treasure; four hundred men from each family

-first-class, second-class, and third-class families. There were dozens of families, hence adding all the men up, there would be ten thousand men in here.

“Roar!”

However, just as Jack was about to pluck the spirited grass, a terrifying roar pierced through the air. A red-fire python appeared suddenly, from the bush next to Jack. Its mouth was widely opened and heading straight for Jack.

The python came out too abruptly and came in front of Jack in a flash, leaving Jack stunned.

Chapter 1313

From the faint aura that was coming from the python, Jack could instantly conclude that this python should be a monster beast that had power comparable to the early stage of the semi-god realm in the human world.

It was surprising and shocking for such a monster beast to appear in this forest periphery. After all, this python was considered extremely rare and its strength and power were generally stronger than ordinary martial artists, especially those amateurs. In other words, a martial artist who was at the early stage of the semi-god realm would not be a match for such a monster beast, and even a martial artist with the strength of the middle stage of the semi-god realm might not be able to kill a monster beast of such power-early stage of the semi-god realm.

Nonetheless, Jack had already broken through to the middle stage of the true-god realm, such a monster beast was nothing in his eyes.

He clenched his fist, and with a flash, he appeared at the top of the python's head, and then punched down with his fist on the python's head.

Bang!

The python was huge and long around seven to eight feet long. Jack had never seen such a long python before. After all, he had not really encountered a monster beast and fought with it, he had only heard it from others.

With a faint dull thug, the python 's head was smashed onto the ground in the next second, knocking the ground harshly, creating a deep pit on the ground. And when the python's body plopped onto the ground, dust splashed up, polluting the air.

Blood flowed out from the red fire python's huge eyes, and after it twitched a few times, its breathing and movement had finally ceased.

"Hmph, how dare you try to sneak an attack on me!"

Jack stared at the dead python and smiled coldly. He came in front of the spirited grass, squatted down, and plucked it.

However, what Jack did not expect was that just as he stood up, a harsh and frightening chi energy came straight at him from behind.

He could sense the chi energy, hence he hopped to the side around 5 meters away from the original position.

Swoosh!

Just after he dodged the first attack, another terrifying slash of the sword, enclosed with chi energy, landed on a big tree right in front of where Jack was standing before.

Bang!

The big tree was neatly cut into half and the upper part fell onto the ground with a loud thud.

Jack wheeled around and stared at the young man standing in the mid-air. Jack furrowed, this man before him should be a genius from the Zachary family.

The Zachary family arrived late, therefore they did not witness the battle between Jack and the Young Master of the Norman family and did not know of Jack s combat prowess and martial level.

Of course, from the two attacks just now and the chi energy, this man's martial level was definitely not low at all, and he should be a powerful fighter of the true-god realm.

"Wow, attacking from behind? Wouldn't this be too shameless from a first-class family?"

Jack smiled faintly and shot a deadly stare at the other party.

"Hehe, brat, don't you know the world is cruel itself? Some people will even kill their own siblings to become stronger and for the sake of treasures, let alone a petty thing like sneak attacks from behind."

The man chortled and said in a daze, "Oh, I remember you! You' re the Young Master of the White family, Jack White, right? I can see that you came from the secular world and have experienced too little fighting and killing, that's why you're so naïve!"

Jack did not know to cry or to laugh upon hearing his words. All these years, he was able to become the Supreme Warrior and breakthrough to his current martial level. The battles he had experienced were

not less than these young people from the hidden families.

Only, he did not expect that these young masters of the high and mighty reclusive first-class families would take advantage of people's unpreparedness and attacked sneakily from behind.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1314-1316

Chapter 1314

"Whatever you say!"

Jack stretched his limbs and said, "You just came here and you're so eager to snatch things away from others? What a pity. I' m no pushover!"

"Heh. I'm the grandson of the second elder of the Zachary family and I am at the intermediate stage of the true god status. So if you're smart enough, you'd just give up that stalk of spirited grass you just plucked. I'll let you go!

The man from the Zachary family held a sword in a single hand and had a lofty aura about him. "The Zachary family is not on good terms with the White family, but we don't have a sour relationship either. I won't kill you as long as you give it to me. After all, it must have been difficult for you to become the heir to your master. It'd be a pity if you died here!"

"You're so confident even though you're only at the intermediate stage of the true god status?"

Jack shot upward in a flash." How about this? You give your sword and everything you have, and I'll spare your life because you offered to spare mine!"

The man was taken aback for a while, but he quickly recovered. "Heh. You've got a daring mouth on you, you punk," he said, smiling wryly. "You dare to use my threat against me. You've got guts!"

After he said that, chi began to coagulate in his palm. His sword emitted a frightening hum.” This is a low-grade spiritual tool, and it’s extremely sharp. Don’t blame me if I accidentally kill you for being an idiot!”

“Then let’s see if you can actually do it!”

Jack gave a wan smile. His sword did look pretty good, and he wanted to take it to give to the other White family members. It was only a low-grade spiritual tool, but it was a spiritual tool, nonetheless. It would serve much better than many regular weapons.

Whoosh!

The other man slashed his sword. With this low-grade spiritual tool, a frightening sword aura arced toward Jack like a strike of pure flames.

Jack clenched his fists and gathered his chi, then he threw a punch toward his opponent.

As he threw the punch, a fist of chi that was as tall as a man formed before him. It looked very solid, and it rippled with powerful energy. It truly looked like it was real.

“That technique is probably the first-grade premium. But that energy wave..”

The other man’s expression immediately turned serious after he saw Jack’s powerful attack. He never thought that this punk would throw out such a frightening attack so casually.

Whoosh!

The other man's slash quickly collided with Jack's chi fist at a breakneck speed.

Bang!

Right after that, a resounding boom ripped through the forest. A flash appeared at the collision point like a clap of lightning.

Crack!

Jack's attack quickly destroyed his opponent's attack. His giant chi fist shrunk and dimmed, and the rest of the momentum hurtled straight toward the man from the Zachary family.

"Sh*t. That punk is probably about as strong as I am. But why is his attack so much stronger than mine? Our skills should be around the same level!"

All color drained from the man's face when he saw this. The attack was right before his eyes now, and he quickly drew a thin veil of chi around his body.

Just as he managed to create the veil, the remaining energy from Jack's fist landed on him.

The chi veil kept rippling under pressure, and Jack's attacks kept diminishing

"No way!"

Chapter 1315

Haiden quickly felt that something was amiss. Small cracks began to run across his veil, and it was going to give way soon.

“No way. There’s no way I can’t beat a punk from the mortal realm!”

Haiden cried out. At the same time, the cracks on the shield around his body grew bigger and bigger, then it shattered into dust.

Bang!

A frightening noise rang out.

The next second, Haiden had been thrown back as if he was a stringless kite. He landed heavily against a tree.

The tree toppled over from the impact. Haiden spewed out

Blood, and his face went pale.

He gritted his teeth and hauled himself to his feet. Another spurt of blood escaped his mouth. He dug his sword into the ground and steadied himself.

Jack flew over nonchalantly, appearing before Haiden with a small smile on his face.

“You have good talent, Haiden Zachary!”

Jack smiled and added, “It would be a real pity to kill you right here. It must have been difficult to train yourself to be this strong!”

The corners of Haiden's mouth twitched violently. This accursed b*stard was twisting his own words to use against him.

"Hmph. I was unlucky, punk. I never thought that a genius like you would pop up in the White family!"

Haiden harrumphed coldly. He threw his sword at Jack, huffing. "Take it!"

Jack never imagined that this fellow would be so decisive. He practically handed the sword over without hesitation.

However, when he thought about it, there was no one else here but the two of them. Even if Jack killed him, all of his possessions would be Jack anyway. The Zachary family would have no way of finding the truth since no one was watching them.

That was why this fellow was smart enough to know his position. There was no contest over which was more precious, his life or this treasure.

"What about your martial ring? I want to see if there's anything good in there!" Jack smiled and said.

The corners of Haiden's mouth twitched slightly. However, he still took off the martial ring and threw it at Jack, gritting his teeth.

Jack took the ring and looked at it. Then he took out two black plaques, as well as two stalks of first-grade spirited grass. Then he threw the ring back.

"You don't want the spirited stone?"

Haiden was slightly taken aback.

He had thought that aside from the clothes and the living items in his martial ring, Jack would definitely take the spirited stone and other such objects. He did not think that Jack only wanted the two black plaques and two stalks of first-grade spirited grass.

“I don’t care about those that are not worth anything!”

Jack kept everything and took out a pill, flinging it at the other man.

“You’re giving me medicine?”

Haiden stared at Jack, suspicion sketched over his expression.

His martial ring had already contained medicine yet Jack still gave him a pill anyway. He could not comprehend why the punk did that.

Chapter 1316

Jack could not be bothered to respond to him. He turned around and slowly flew away, leaving behind only these words, “This medication of mine to cure wounds should be much better than yours. Best that you treat yourself as soon as possible, or don’t blame me for wounding you when you die in a fight against prodigies from the Hunt family when you bump into them!”

Haiden Zachary was still rooted on the spot even as Jack left, dazed as he wondered if everything was a lucid dream.

After all, he was the one who secretly attacked and looked down on Jack. He never thought the other party would not seize his belongings even after defeating him, and he even left Haiden some healing pills and spirited stones for him.

“Is this pill poisonous?” mumbled Haiden as he eyed the small pill in his palm.

He shook his head. Was this not unnecessary if Jack truly wanted to kill him? Would it not be much easier to just stab him with his sword?

“Hmph. Let’s see if your medication is better than those from our Zachary family!” Haiden let out an indignant noise before he popped the pill into his mouth and swallowed it.

Merely two minutes later, Haiden could already feel that his wounds were mitigating. Such healing speed was several times faster compared to the healing pills the Zachary family cultivated.

It stunned him. “How can the healing pills from the White family have such alarming effects? This pill must be much better than those cultivated by the Hunt family pill-cultivating genius, Second Young Master Hunt, right?”

Surely, who knew what would appear in his thoughts if he knew that this was personally cultivated by Jack.

“This sword is quite nice, but it isn’t that suitable for women. Otherwise, I would’ve given this to Selena!” Jack flew forward at a slow pace. He got two black tokens and two first-grade intermediate-level spirited grass from Haiden’s martial rings. He was quite lucky to have such an acquisition.

After flying for some time, Jack picked up two more black tokens, rather speedy in collecting them.

Of course, there were not that many tokens. His acquisition was quite surprising as he managed to get five black tokens in such a short time.

The sky gradually dimmed as time slowly passed, and Jack had traveled about 20 kilometers deeper into the forest when he eventually discovered another second-grade elementary-level spirited grass.

Jack was rather elated to have spotted it. “A second-grade elementary-level spirited grass. Tsk, tsk! This is quite nice, seeing that spirited grass of such grading is hard to come by!”

He was more cautious than before as he eyed his surroundings for any monster beasts, only flying over to carefully pick up the spirited grass and stored it in his martial ring when ensuring no monster beasts were in sight.

“No hitches this time!” Jack was overjoyed as he stored the item. He was prepared to find a place to rest through the night and would continue moving the next morning

Although everybody was quite spirited to move at night, the monster beasts who were good at traveling at night had an obvious upper hand when both parties were compared.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1317-1319

Chapter 1317

Hence, it was far more dangerous to roam at night as compared to daytime.

All of a sudden…

Thoom!

Jack heard a loud frightening noise, sounding like a battle was happening nearby, and the fact that there were no howls from beasts meant that it was between the competitors.

With that deduction, Jack flew to the source of the sound.

Arriving on top of a small slope, he hid among the bushes and looked toward the bottom of the hill slope.

“Helena Cabello?” A beautiful figure soon appeared in Jack’s line of sight, and his expression slowly changed as he felt his feelings meshing altogether.

This woman was almost 30 years old, two years older than Jack, yet she was not married. She had lied how Jack was her boyfriend when Second Young Master Hunt pestered her, wanting him to give up.

Never was it foreseen that her choice would further complicate things and make it difficult to explain themselves. They could only bite the bullet and continue the lie.

Jack had already thought about it: all they could do was pretend to be a couple. Eventually, once the competition drew to a close and everyone returned home, this would be over in another one or two years when there was no gossip about them.

In the future, he could just come up with an announcement that he and Helena had peacefully gone their separate ways when everybody does not care about it anymore.

However, Jack was helpless when it came to Daniella. Since something happened between them and she had given him her virginity, Jack felt that he had to be responsible for his stupidity to not treat her shabbily.

‘I don’t think I need to go down and help her, do I? Although the fight seems quite intense, Helena has a high fighting prowess. She’s at the final stage of the true-god level, and her fighting prowess is much higher than mine.’ With such a thought, Jack decided to leave as he did not want to interfere in this matter. After all, he did not want to continue the entanglement with this woman.

As he was about to leave, he suddenly discovered that the man Helena was up against was rather familiar.

It’s Second Young Master Hunt!

Jack's expression darkened when he realized who the other person was. Who would have expected Helena to bump into Second Young Master Hunt during their first day of entering the forest.

"This doesn't seem right. Isn't Second Young Master Hunt in the intermediate-stage of the real-god level? Why is his power somehow stronger than Helena's?" Jack felt that something was wrong after observing them for some time; their fight seemed rather daunting to behold. Helena, who had a fighting prowess of the real-god level's final stage, gradually fell at a disadvantage while every new martial skill Second Young Master Hunt used was stronger than the last. Helena's forehead was already covered in sweat at this moment, unable to tank his attacks.

"Hundred Leaves Chop!" Second Young Master Hunt smiled coldly as he carried out an attack with his sword. The sword attack turned into 100 pieces of small leaves in front of him, formed by sword aura and Chi. The dense wave of attack covered the entire space and went toward Helena who was in front of him.

Chapter 1318

Helena's expression darkened as Second Young Master Hunt's attack unsettled her. The two of them had been fighting for some time and she underestimated him, seeing as she was already in the true-god level's final stage. She believed he was not her opponent.

However, she did not expect him to have broken through to the true-god level's final stage. Under the circumstances where his fighting prowess was equivalent to hers, his martial skills or martial art techniques seemed to be much stronger than hers. His overall combat power was slightly stronger than hers.

At this moment, it was obvious she was on the losing end, drenched in sweat and was in disarray.

She never expected Second Young Master Hunt to use such a powerful martial skill at that moment.

"Haha…! Let me show you my second-grade intermediate level martial skill!" Tyrell Hunt laughed loudly

as triumph filled his eyes when he saw Helena's defeated expression.

"Conqueror Punch!" Not wanting to slip up, Helena mobilized the Chi in her body and swung her palm toward him.

Helena's nerves rested at that moment; she hoped it would withstand the opponent's attack…but what happened next shocked her.

The humongous Chi palm that she activated was cut open by the scary sword aura leaves moments later. The sword aura leaves left many cuts on the palm, and the cuts widened uncontrollably before the palm dispersed with an explosion.

However, although the Chi palm did not fully block the attack, almost half the Chi leaves were worn away by the palm. Only a few dozen leaves that looked not as condensed went straight for Helena

"Sh*t. How can I evade so many leaves?" These leaves traveled speedily and soon covered a huge area like strands of light.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The leaves flew past in a flash. Helena flew left and right, hoping to evade the attack, yet several still got to her.

Several cuts appeared on Helena' s sleeves, and with that, fresh blood slowly seeped through the wounds unsightly.

The worst part was that the area above her chest was also hit by a leaf. Her clothes were also cut open and blood trickled down from the wound.

The strong attack caused Helena to crash to the ground. She cried out loud as her face turned pale.

“Haha…! It looks like you are badly wounded!” The Second Young Master Hunt had a satisfied look on his face, flying closer to Helena and licking his lips as he landed not too far away. “It looks like breaking through my fighting prowess before entering is a wise choice. If I had not broken through my fighting prowess…” He chuckled. “You might’ve defeated me!”

“You bastard! What do you want? Our Cabello family had never offended your Hunt family! Don’t go too overboard!” Helena gritted her teeth as she curled her hands into fists, glaring with hatred.

“Haha…! Are you sure you didn’t offend the Hunt family?”

Chapter 1319

Surprisingly, Second Young Master Hunt once again laughed out loudly. “It’s true that the Cabello family never offended our Hunt family in the past, but didn’t you offend me just some time ago? You dared reject me in front of so many people and even made me look bad. You crossed me! Hmph! It’s your privilege for me to take a fancy in you! Our Hunt family is the number one reclusive family, yet you don’t know chalk from cheese!”

“I’ve already said that I have a boyfriend, so you should give up!” growled Helena as she wore a cold expression. “Apart from that, you’ve said it yourself: the Hunt family is the strongest reclusive family, and you’re the Hunt family’s second young master. Are you afraid you can’t get women?”

“Stop this nonsense!” snapped the Second Young Master Hunt.“ There are many women, but I only like you. I like women who are aloof and cold like you and

Your two sisters!”

As he spoke, Second Young Master Hunt glanced at Helena’s chest that had cuts before licking his lips

smirkingly. “So what if you have a boyfriend? So what if you’re not a virgin? Hmph. I don’t care about all these. I want to taste Jack’s woman right now.”

Helena immediately covered the wounds at her chest with her hands when she saw the look in his eyes. She moved several steps backward in fright. “Don’t … Don’t come near me. I’m the eldest young mistress of the Cabello family. If you dare do something so heinous to me, my father will kill you and avenge me!”

‘Revenge? Kill me?” Tyrell was stunned as if she said the funniest thing ever. “Firstly, you need to have the opportunity to go out alive. Apart from that, even if you can go out alive, what can your father do with me? The lot of you can’t go against the Hunt family. This is such a scandal that I don’t believe your father will dare come knocking on my door if I only rape you, not kill you!”

Tyrell walked closer toward Helena as he spoke, “Hmph, you forced me to do this. How am I, Second Young Master Hunt, weaker than that damned guy? How dare you choose that illegitimate son over me?!”

Whoosh!

Helena’s eyes flickered before she sped outward and tried to run far away.

“Thinking of escape?” Tyrell caught up with Helena in a flash when he saw she tried to escape. Quick on his feet, he managed to catch up with the wounded Helena within a mere two to three seconds.

Thump!

Tyrell punched Helena at her back after he caught up with her, causing her to crash to the ground followed by a slightly dull noise. She vomited a KINEMASTER mouthful of blood, and her complexion continued to turn pale.

“Haha… You’re thinking to escape? Let me see how you’re going to run!” Once again, Tyrell laughed and walked toward Helena step after another.

“Don’t… Don’t come closer!” Helena gritted her teeth as she struggled to get up from the ground. Sadly, she was so badly wounded that she had lost all her combat power.

She was filled with fear as the Second Young Master Hunt was a despicable person, capable of doing anything. With the Hunt family supporting him and the competition permitting killing competitors, he had nothing to fear.

Just then…

Whoosh!

A scary sword aura flashed toward Tyrell from the other direction.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1320-1322

Chapter 1320

As Tyrell truly was a master in the true-god level's final stage, he immediately detected something was wrong when the sword aura appeared and avoided it in a flash. The sword aura swept past him and cut down a tree.

Jack flew down from the slope, where he hid.

"It's you?" Tyrell was so angry that veins on his forehead surfaced when he saw Jack." What a coincidence, young man; you came just when I'm about to violate your girlfriend. Haha…! What fate this is!"

"Why… Why are you here?" Helena eyed Jack warily. How long had this guy been observing them, and why did he rush forward at this moment?

"Haha…!" Jack smiled bitterly and joked, "What could I have done? How can I not rescue you when he's already said you're my girlfriend?" Apart from a few who knew about their relationship at this moment, most people would have really thought of them as a couple. That bewildered Jack entirely.

Helena failed to fight back the blush on her face when she heard this, though she still rolled her eyes at Jack. "Why are you here? Do you have a death wish or something? I can't even defeat him, so you're no match for him either!"

She hesitated at this moment before she added, "It's best if you leave. One of us dying is better than both of us losing our lives!"

Truthfully, she felt extremely moved that Jack was willing to stand forward at this moment. She believed that it was the battling noises between her and Tyrell that captured Jack's attention.

Nonetheless, Jack should quickly leave, seeing that she was not Young Master Hunt's opponent. Going up against him was purely suicidal.

All of a sudden, Jack chuckled coldly, much to her surprise, as he said, "You really don't have much faith in me. We haven't started our fight yet. Isn't it bad to raise his ambitions and destroy my prestige at this moment?"

"Haha… Alright! I was afraid that we wouldn't this month, but I never thought you'd walk right into your death. I've never seen such a dumb person!" Tyrell, who was by their side, started laughing loudly. "It's good now that you've appeared!"

"Tsk, tsk. You're really boasting shamelessly. See, I'm not afraid of you, seeing as I did come up to you. I wouldn't stand before you if I was afraid of you." Jack smiled coldly and appeared apathetically

Tyrell was slightly stunned before he looked as if he had seen through his act. "You're a rather smart young man. Do you think I'll be afraid of you if you act like this? No matter what, I' m in the real-god level's final stage. Do you think that I'd be afraid of you? Let me tell you this: you might not be my opponent even if you're at the real-god level's peak stage. My combat power can't be compared to a normal being. Moreover, I know you're just at the true-god level's intermediate level!"

"Jack, it's best if you leave. I'm grateful for your kindness, but you can't go up against him. I can still fight for some time, and I'll help to drag this out, so you should quickly escape. Remember to tell my father who killed me after you've gotten out." Helena gritted her teeth as she walked a couple of steps forward. She seemed ready for another battle.

"Don't talk such nonsense. I've never planned to kill you; I only plan to sleep with you! Haha…! It 'd be even better if I'll get your second and third sister. Many people will envy me when I've tasted all Three Golden Flowers!" Second Young Master Hunt had a sleazy expression on his face. To him, Helena was already his.

"In your dreams!" Jack stepped forward and balled his fist as Chi was emitted.

Soon, a thick layer of Chi coated his fist.

Whoosh!

Chapter 1321

Jack swiftly flickered in front of Second Young Master Hunt and threw his fist at him.

This guy…truly is hard-headed to fight Tyrell in a life-and-death situation!' Helena was baffled as she saw Jack rushing forward. She merely used Jack as a decoy to deter Second Young Master Hunt from pestering her, yet not only did he not expose her lie, but he even came forward and helped her!

'Is he genuinely thinking I'm his girlfriend? Is it because I'm pretty and we once kissed?' Ideas began popping in Helena's head, thinking that this was most likely the case. After all, she and her two sisters were first -grade beauties and anybody else would be all too eager to become a hero saving a damsel in distress.

"Don't blame me; you're the one with the death wish!" Second Young Master Hunt also closed his hands into fists and activated his Chi before meeting Jack's punch.

Thoom!

A terrifying explosion could be heard as their fists met, and a strong wave of energy rippled outward from them.

The smirking Tyrell frowned right after. He thought his punch would send Jack flying, but the power that surged from Jack was not much weaker compared to his, and they were temporarily deadlocked.

"Impossible!" Helena took out a healing pill and consumed it, all the while thinking Jack would be sent

zipping through the air, but she stood corrected.

The horrifying waves of energy were still counteracting. Both Jack and Tyrell suddenly increased their power, causing them to fly backward for a couple of meters before they regained their footing on the ground.

“How’s this possible? Your fighting prowess is obviously weaker than mine. How can your power match mine?” Tyrell was in disbelief. After all, he believed that the Hunt family’s martial art techniques were the best, thus it was impossible for Jack to be able to stand his ground when they both had the same fighting prowess.

Jack’s fighting prowess was obviously slightly lower than his, yet their fight showed that there was not much difference between them.

“Isn’t it quite normal for people to kill enemies of different levels?” Jack smiled indifferently and looked straight at Tyrell.

The corners of Tyrell’s mouth twitched. Jack’s words would not mean anything if he was just an ordinary casual trainer.

Who was he, then? He was the Hunt family’s young master, and what Jack said was undoubtedly humiliating him.

“That is it, young man!” Tyrell flew upward in a flash. He flipped his hand as he stood mid -air and a sky blue-colored sword appeared in his hand.

“Middle-grade spiritual tool!” Jack, who had also flown to the skies, was slightly surprised when he saw this sword.

Chapter 1322

Tyrell was quite satisfied with Jack's surprised expression.

He had a sinister smile as he raised his eyebrow and spoke," How about that? Are you afraid? Haha..! Seems like you got foresight, seeing as you can see that this sword of mine isn't that simple!"

Tyrell raised his sword and, pointing it at Jack's direction, declared domineeringly," Today, I'll cut off your hands with this sword of mine and wound you gravely!"

'Sigh! How troublesome… Jack has quite good combat power and is a genius among geniuses, but it's sad to see him going against this perverted Second Young Master Hunt!" Helena sighed inwardly as she eyed the sword and felt a faint fluctuation from it. Second Young Master Hunt used another sword, a lower-grade spiritual tool when he dealt with her, yet he suddenly pulled out this middlegrade spiritual tool against Jack.

It seemed like she and Jack were done for.

'Is this guy here to rescue me because I'm Daniella's sister?'

Thought Helena once more and smiled bitterly. This guy seemed infatuated, but it was sad to say he would die offending Second Young Master Hunt.

"Tsk, tsk. You're still so confident!" Jack looked as if he could care less. He closed his fist and Chi started to surge on top of his fist again.

"Don't you have a weapon, or do you plan to defeat me with your martial skills and without a weapon?" Tyrell was taken aback when he saw that Jack did not even take out his weapon.

However, he soon grinned as he sneered, "Alright, I get it now.

You know you can’t take any good weapons out that can increase your combat power!”

“Let’s talk after you successfully block my attack!” Jack did not want to say much to Tyrell. He punched at his direction and the horrifying Chi immediately surged out unstoppably. A daunting Chi wave appeared in front of Second Young Master Hunt.

The wave surged unavoidably as it grew increasingly larger. Then, the horrifying wave went pouncing toward Second Young Master Hunt who was below.

“Sh*t. This martial skill is at least a second-grade elementary skill, but its momentum seems deadly in his hands!” Second Young Master Hunt’s face turned serious when he saw the frightening wave in front of him. He had no idea that Jack’s martial skill would be so powerful and had such momentum. This attack was not weaker than Helena’s, who was at the real-god level’s final stage.

Second Young Master Hunt heightened his guard when he heard Jack’s scary martial skill, and he immediately infused his Chi into the sword in his hand.

The sword gave out a chilling humming sound, and the vibration of the sword grew stronger.

“Hundred Leaves Chop!” Second Young Master Hunt once again executed his powerful martial skill, but the leaves this time were far bigger than the previous ones and looked firmer as well.

It was obvious that Second Young Master Hunt’s attack was stronger compared to before after he changed into a stronger weapon.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1323-1325

Chapter 1323

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The leaves that were formed by coagulating Chi and sword aura zipped forward speedily. After covering a huge space, they landed on Jack's Chi wave one after another.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Blasts followed one after another, and as the leaves exploded, Jack's Chi wave dispersed as it mitigated Second Young Master Hunt's attack successfully

"Damn!" As his attacks failed, Second Young Master Hunt's mouth twitched as his expression darkened at the sight…of a missing Jack. Not only that, but even the wounded Helena, who stood at the sidelines as they fought, had also disappeared.

Jack used the mighty Chi wave to rush and block Second Young Master Hunt's line of sight once it stacked up before escaping with Helena

"This guy is too smart. He runs away after knowing he can't defeat me. F*ck, he better wish we never cross paths again, or I' ll cut him into pieces!" growled Tyrell through gritted teeth, fists balled tightly in anger.

Meanwhile…

With his arms around Helena's waist from behind, Jack speedily flickered from the fight, occasionally changing direction from time to time.

Helena was bewildered in Jack's arms. She thought Jack would continue fighting Tyrell, seeing as his combat power was so impressive that it shocked her.

She did not expect that he would run away, taking her with him.

Helena's heart thrummed vehemently at the presence of Jack's masculine temperament. She secretly turned around to see Jack's handsome face and was absentminded for a short moment.

She had no idea that a man who she had framed previously would desperately help her at this moment.

After flying for some time, Jack eventually let Helena down after he was sure it was safe and that Tyrell was not after them.

"You… I thought you'd exert your utmost strength in fighting him. I'm surprised you chose to escape, taking me with you!" began Helena as she sat under a tree, her face slightly pinkish. She secretly glanced at Jack before saying, "You made the right choice, nonetheless. He has a higher fighting prowess compared to you, and I'm sure he hasn't used his strongest attack. If the battle continues, we 'd both die back there. You purposely used your strongest attack and deliberately acted to exert your utmost strength in fighting him, then choosing to escape with me as the attack blocked his sight. Your intelligence is commendable!"

Jack smiled bitterly after he heard this. "Do you truly think I can't fight him? I just refuse to fight him as he's the Hunt family 's second young master. If I kill him, the Hunt family will have our heads when we get out of here!"

"You can continue boasting. There aren't any other people there back there, and how sure are you that you can slay him?" Helena rolled her eyes at Jack." It's not shameful to escape when you can't win a fight against him. Why are you ashamed to admit it? Your fighting prowess is much lower than him, and it's good enough that you can still escape with me!"

Jack smiled as he walked over and spoke while looking at Helena, "How do you know that! There aren't any other people over there? I've already felt two extremely hidden breathing sounds not far away from us. They were obviously attracted by your previous fighting sounds. If I really kill Tyrell Hunt, those two will definitely inform the Hunt family after they leave this place!"

Chapter 1324

"That's impossible. You can sense someone was watching us?" Jack's claim shocked Helena, seeing as

she felt nothing else out of the ordinary back there. She had no idea if it was because she was too zeroed in on Jack and Tyrell's fight.

If that was the case, Jack should have been more focused on his battle. Why, then, was he able to make out the presence of more people?

Jack noted Helena's puzzled face as he smilingly said, "I'm an alchemist, and my mental strength is naturally much stronger than yours. My perception of the surroundings is stronger than yours, and I can feel that the other party's breaths are very hidden. Seems to me that their fighting prowess isn't low, either."

Jack paused here before he continued, "That's why I think it 's best to let Second Young Master Hunt go this time."

Uncomfortable, the unimpressed Helena countered, "You can talk all you want. You' re speaking as if you can win had you continued your fight with him. Who knows if Second Young Master Hunt still has any last tricks up his sleeves? After all, he's from the Hunt family, and I'm sure he didn't use all his power in fighting you just now, just toying with you as he pleased."

Surprised that Helena underestimated him, Jack smiled coldly. "Fine, fine, fine… You can just take it that I can't win if I go against him. However, at least I managed to escape with you safely. How about you? If I didn't appear in time, you would've died there!"

Helena bit her sexy red lips as she lowered her head and abashedly replied, "Since you know that Second Young Master Hunt has such a high fighting prowess and combat power, why did you still come for me then? Aren't you afraid of dying? Don't you hate me as I…I've ruined your reputation and forced you to act as my boyfriend?"

Stunned momentarily, Jack then replied, "Hate you? Sure, I hated you and despised you, but it eventually clicked that you had no choice but to do it. Apart from that, I don't think it's possible for me to not acknowledge our relationship later on. By then, people from the other families would say that we were toying with them and were taking them as idiots!"

“Then why did you rescue me?”

Helena could not help but ask again after thinking about it.

“I can’t explain clearly why I rescued you. Maybe I didn’t want a beauty like you to be insulted by that fatty!” replied Jack.

His reply somewhat disappointed her. “There’s no other reason than that?” she asked as she lifted her head to look at Jack.

“Other reasons? Why would there be? I’m just rescuing a person, so I didn’t put much thought into it. I don’t like that fatty either, so I can’t let him have his way,” replied Jack nonchalantly, frowning soon after. “If we need to come up with another reason, it might be because I feel that you’re not a bad person. Apart from that, you’ re Daniella’s sister, and we’re truly good friends.”

Helena was dejected at that but was unable to pinpoint why she felt like that. She wondered if it had something to do with her giving her first kiss to this guy.

“Alright, thank you very much.”

Helena smiled and tried to not overthink things. She secretly reminded herself that this was her sister, Daniella’s boyfriend, and she had no relationship with this guy. It was already quite nice of him for not exposing her lies in front of everybody.

Jack lowered his head and looked at her, noticing the cut on her clothes and blood still seeping through the wound.

Jack frowned and reminded her, “You… You’re still bleeding.”

Chapter 1325

Helena lowered her head toward her chest, and her initially pale face turned crimson red with her blush. So embarrassed was she that she wanted the ground to part and consume her entirely.

She immediately covered herself and stared at Jack. “Don’t you understand the saying, ‘see no evil’? Why are you still looking at me? You’re a pervert, no good like every other man out there!”

That shocked Jack entirely. Just a kind reminder from him painted him a pervert.

He grew unhappy as he recalled how troublesome Helena had been within these two days.

He simply smirked. “Really? Didn’t you announce in front of everybody that I’m your boyfriend? Why are you so shy when we’re in a relationship, even giving your virginity to me? Weren’t you very proactive when we were on the streets the other day?”

“You…” His behavior angered Helena. She did not expect this guy to act rascally with her.

She rolled her eyes at Jack before saying, “I’m sure you know that I said that because I had no other choice. All we can do is just prolong that, now that everybody knows about our relationship. Don’t you worry: we’ll just announce that we’ve broken up after some time, and I won’t implicate you.”

Jack was speechless. “You won’t implicate me? Haha…! Haven’t you implicated me already? The Hunt family hates me so much and many of the young masters who like you also hate me. I’m now a public enemy!”

Helena could not control her smile at Jack’s complaint as she pompously replied, “Well, I can’t help it, I’m just that pretty. I’m sure many young masters dream of being mistaken as my boyfriend.”

“Fine. Take this, and I’ll think of this as karma from my past life.” Eyeing the woman on the ground, he flipped his hand and took a healing pill out before throwing it to Helena.

“What’s this?” Helena looked at Jack suspiciously. “Let me tell you this: don’t think about feeding me some strange medication. I, Helena Cabello, am not so gullible!”

Exasperated, Jack argued,” Hey, do I need to use such means if I really have any intentions toward you? You can’ t fight me, not when you’re this badly wounded!”

“Plausible. But, I’ve already taken a pill to heal my wounds. There’s no need to take this pill of yours.” Helena glanced at her wounds before speaking again,” Look, I’m not bleeding anymore.”

“Your medication has a bad effect. Your wounds would’ve stopped bleeding some time ago had you eaten mine, and your wound might’ve even healed!” Jack shook his head before saying again, “Up to you. Eat it if you believe in me; don’t take it if you don’t.”

“I… I’ll give it a try.” Helena glanced at Jack and hesitated for a short moment before swallowing the pill Jack gave her.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1326-1328

Chapter 1326

Helena discovered that her wounds had started to heal shortly after she took the pill. The speed of her recovery was far better than the pill from her family, and not even a single scar was visible.

“The White family has such good healing pills? Seems like your family also has a good study into such things!” exclaimed Helena, assessing how powerful the pill Jack gave her was.

“This isn’t from the White family. I cultivated these when I had free time, and I’ve cultivated quite a lot of them.” Jack gave an awkward smile before he added, “I’ll teach the other members of the White family when I’ve got the time. They’ll be able to use better healing medication in the future!”

“I never thought you’d have such talent!” Helena looked at Jack in admiration. She had to admit that this man, her third sister’s boyfriend, was an outstanding person. To top off his talented self, he was generous and quite the looker himself.

Envy sprung from within her, though faintly so. How was it that she never met such outstanding men throughout all these years?

Was it possible that her meeting with Jack would have been perfect had he not been her third sister’s boyfriend?

Helena slowly fell into a state of trance as she thought about it.

“I see there’s a cave over there, and it’s quite late. Why don’t we rest there for one night?” Jack glanced at Helena and continued, “You have blood on your clothes. Why don’t you go in and have a change while I stand guard for you outside.”

“You’ll guard me?” Helena frowned and meekly continued, “How would I know if you’ll peek?”

Flustered, he exasperatedly said, “It’s up to you. You don’t need to change if you don’t want to and feel that wearing your current clothes is more comfortable. Might I remind you, though, that you got several tears in your clothes, and I’m afraid that others would stare at you no matter where you go after this.”

Helena’s pretty face immediately blushed into a crimson color. She glanced at Jack before agreeing, “Alright. You can’t peek no matter what, do you understand? I… I’ll tell my sister if you do!”

Jack was speechless. “You’re going to tell Daniella? Tell her that I peeked at you? Haha…! Will you be shameless enough to tell others about something like this?”

“Hmph! Don’t act dumb. Do you think I don’t know anything? You ‘re dating my sister-even Daniella admitted to it!” Helena spoke indignantly and walked toward the cave that Jack mentioned. “So if you’re a pervert and dares peek at me, you’ll be done for when my sister learns about it. She’ll definitely break up with you then!”

Trotting behind Helena, Jack grumbled, unable to hold back,“ It’d be nice if she actually does break up with me.”

“Hmm? What did you say?” Who would have expected Helena to have such good hearing. She stopped walking and looked at Jack with a puzzled look on her face.

Jack quickly said, “It’s nothing. Sigh! I didn’t have a choice. I’m married and am much older than your sister, but your sister insisted and pestered me. I don’t have a choice but to accept my fate!”

Helena immediately rolled her eyes at Jack. “Alright, keep acting like that if you want. Do you think I’ll believe in what you say? You must’ve tricked my sister into being yours after seeing how young and pretty she is. My sister fell into your trap because she’s too naïve and had never been exposed to the outside world. After you’ve gotten what you want, you’re saying now that my sister pursued and pestered you. You really don’t have any conscience!”

“Uh!” Jack knew nobody would believe him if he told others about this story. After all, any man would have fallen for such a beautiful and young woman when they encountered one. Even he experienced a feeling of restlessness that he never had in the past when he rode on the horse with Daniella.

Chapter 1327

Jack never thought of pursuing Daniella, but that one night when they slept together after they got drunk changed it all.

“Alright. I’ll go in and change, so you can keep watch outside. Remember, don’t peek or you won’t hear the end of this!” Helena turned around and smiled before entering the cave alone.

“That woman…!” Jack smiled bitterly before taking out a cigarette and slowly enjoyed a smoke outside.

He never thought he would chance upon Helena and Second Young Master Hunt during the first day of this competition. Everything seemed as if it was fated.

All of a sudden… “Ah!”

Jack heard Helena’s yell from inside the cave just as he took two whiffs of his cigarette.

“This is bad. She’s in danger!” Startled, Jack rushed toward the cave.

“Roar!” He saw a tiger attacking Helena as he rushed into the cave.

With a flip of his hand, the black sword appeared in his hand and he waved toward the tiger.

Whoosh!

Jack rushed forward and a sword aura flew forward, severing the tiger’s head. The tiger landed on the ground with an audible thud, lifeless as it did.

“A monster beast that’s at the final stage of the semi-god level, and you…” Jack turned around to look at Helena who stood near the cave’s wall after he killed the monster beast.

“Don’t look!” With a new dress at hand, Helena quickly draped it before her form as her soiled clothes were on the ground.

Jack was stunned when he saw such a scene. Although Helena had covered herself with her dress, her

fair thighs and collarbone looked sexy and alluring. He was rather bewitched at the sight.

Jack had no doubt that if another man saw her abashed expression and under the circumstances that her wounds were not completely healed, they would have acted on impulse.

“You… You’re still looking!” Helena blushed terribly and was tongue-tied; no man had ever stared at her in such a state.

Jack soon snapped out of his trance and had an embarrassed expression on his face. He immediately pretended to look around. “I’m seeing if there are any other monster beasts around here!”

Jack rushed outside after he looked around for a couple of times and said, “Ask me to come in after you’re done dressing up!”

Helena pursed her lips angrily after Jack left. She looked at her almost perfect figure and did not know how to react to what happened.

Chapter 1328

“Alright, you can come in now!” Changed into her new dress, Helena took a moment to recollect herself before calling out to Jack.

Jack entered the cave with a dead rabbit in his hands before he threw it aside.

“Why did you bring a rabbit in?” Helena immediately asked when she saw the tiny monster beast’s body on the ground.

Jack smiled. “Since we have time, let’s roast it as food later!”

He then exited the cave in search of some dried wood. He then ignited it and started roasting the rabbit after taking off its skin.

Sitting next to Jack, Helena took her time before softly asking," Did you see anything just now?"

"Ahem, ahem! I didn't see anything. Didn't you cover yourself with your clothes?" mumbled Jack as he coughed, embarrassed. "Although you're hurt, that monster beast isn't a high-level one, and you should ve been able to handle it."

Helena rolled her eyes at him and said, "The tiger hid at the dark spot over there, and I didn't notice that there was a monster beast in here. I was surprised when it jumped forward. Also, do you think I should fight without wearing clothes?".

Only then did Jack realize what had happened as he sheepishly said, "You're right. This is the first time I've come to such a place. I've forgotten that there are many monster beasts here, and I should've checked the cave before letting you in."

"Hmph," scoffed Helena. "lad you know this." A moment later, she then said, "By the way, you cannot tell my sisters about what happened just now."

Smiling, Jack assured, "Don't worry. I've seen nothing, so there should be nothing to say, right?"

Helena frowned and said angrily, "What do you mean? You mean to say that you'd tell people about what happened just now if you've seen something?"

"Uh, there's nothing much say even if that's the case!" Fan smiled.

He pulled the rabbit's thigh down when the roasted meat was almost done and passed it to Helena. "Do you want to have eyeing Jack, the rather shocked Helena spoke, "You really know how to enjoy life. You actually brought this out with you!"

“Haha… Do you want a sip?” Jack smiled and handed the wine in his hand outward.

“I don’t want to drink it. I can have a couple of sips if we’re with the Cabello family, but I dare not drink at such a place since it’ll only spell trouble if I get drunk.”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1329-1333

Chapter 1329

Helena waved his hand before she recalled something, asking Jack with great interest, “By the way, since you’re with Daniella, how did the two of you meet?”

“Some mounted brigands captured her, and I have history with them, so I killed them and incidentally rescued her.” Jack ate big mouthfuls of the rabbit meat in his hands and gulped down a huge mouthful of wine before he continued, “We gradually got together after spending some time together!”

Helena had a doubtful expression on her face. “You’ve just known each other for around one month, and you’re telling me you got together after spending some time together? That’s too fast, in my opinion. Many people who knew and pursued Daniella for many years, maybe more than a dozen years, had never won her heart before. You truly have some dumb luck to be able to win her heart.”

“Me, dumb luck? Haha!” Jack smiled awkwardly when he heard this and a complicated feeling rose from his heart.

It grew late as they chatted on.

The next morning, Helena’s wounds had completely recovered.

“Alright. I won’t follow you now that I’ve healed, or we’d fight over precious items that we come across!” Helena exited the cave and stretched herself. Her almost perfect body was once again out for

show.

“Alright. Be careful now, and don ‘t run into the Second Young Master Hunt again,” reminded Jack before he flew upward.

“It won’t be so easy to meet someone!” Helena also started flying in a flash. She glanced at Jack and said, “Don’t worry, there aren’t many of my opponents here.”

Just as they were about to leave, however…

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

They heard battle noises not far away, and it sounded closer to them by the second.

“They’re members of the White family!” Jack took a look and soon discovered that four or five members of the White family were escaping from a group of people. He immediately rushed forward, hands curled into fists.

Helena initially had no plans to intervene, but she soon noted something else. The seven to eight people who were chasing participants from the White family were prodigies from the Cabello family.

She smiled bitterly, shaking her head before flying toward them.

“Damn it, Beth! Why don’t we just give it to them? They’re so persistent in chasing us!” said Yule, who was flying in front, frowning as she turned to look at their chasers.

“No way! We tried so hard to get a white token. Why do we need to give it to the Cabellos?!” growled Beth through gritted teeth as she saw the group chasing them came closer. “Why don’t we split up while we fly? The both of us won’t be killed at the same time if we do that!”

At that moment, Yule saw a man flying toward them, and hope filled her expression when she noticed who it was. “Hey, that… That seems to be brother Jack!”

“It really is him. This is great! We don’t need to escape anymore. F*ck, we’ll definitely win now that Young Master Jack is here to kill these damned Cabellos!” Beth immediately stopped and was relieved. Jack was here at last, and the Cabellos behind them were no match for him, no doubt.

Yule thought about it and said, “ Do we really need to kill them? There’s no need for it, right? Although these Cabellos are detestable, aren’t my brother and Eldest Young Mistress Cabello a couple? There’s no need for us to bring the situation into a deadlock, right?”

Astounded by her reasoning, Beth rolled her eyes at her before she argued, “You’re such a gullible young lady. Can’t you see what’s going on? Your brother Jack and the Eldest Young Mistress Cabello aren’t a couple, and they’re forced to be a fake couple, left without a choice! Some time later in the future, the two of them will surely announce their break up after Helena finds the person she really likes!”

Chapter 1330

Beth’s reasoning clicked for Yule. “That’s true. I was also wondering how my brother and Helena dated all of a sudden. After all, they had just met each other and never crossed paths before! Looks like my brother is being kind to help Helena, so he didn’t expose her. Otherwise, the Cabello family would’ve been in big trouble!”

Beth also nodded. “The most crucial point is the domineering nature of the Hunt family members. Both the Second Young Master Hunt and Eldest Young Master Hunt are greatly talented. It’s best to not offend them if possible.” Beth paused here before she continued,” However, if I’m Helena Cabello, I won’t fall for that fatty, Second Young Master Hunt. I would’ve done something like forcefully kissing Young Master Jack to shake of Second Young Master Hunt!”

The second they finished speaking, Jack appeared in front of them and stopped.

The seven to eight Cabello family members also stopped not far away from them.

The expression of one man from the Cabello family darkened when he saw Jack arriving. “F* ck, this is troublesome! Why is the White family’s young master here? This guy is in the real-god level, intermediate stage!”

“Brother Jay, why don’t we just give up? We won’t be able to defeat them right now!” suggested a young lady to the man, Jay Cabello, after she glanced at Jack and the others.

Bitter, Jay was about to give up when his eyes lit up as he pointed to the area not far from their location. “Look, it’s the eldest young mistress!”

“Family master inheritor a couple? Would she help us take it? ” A man thought about it and said with a weird expression on his face.

Jay thought about it with a frown on his face and said with a slight uncertainty, “I think she’ll help us. I heard from the elders of the Cabello family that the eldest young mistress said that on purpose so the Hunt family wouldn’t force her hand in marriage. Hence, she’s not that guy’s girlfriend. These are two independent incidents, and I believe that Eldest Young Mistress Cabello will help us!”

Whoosh!

After some time, Helena flew over and stood together with the Cabellos.

Helena glanced at Jay and the others before she asked, “What’ s going on here?”

Jay walked one step forward and said to Helena, “Eldest young mistress, they got a white token, equivalent to ten black ones. Apart from that, that woman even got a second-grade elementary spirited grass. Let’s take it from them!” His eyes were seemingly ablaze as he mentioned the token and spirited grass—both items were worth fighting for.

“Young master, we found them first yet these people wanted to take them after we’ve gotten them!” Beth, Yule, and the others once again wore serious expressions on their faces when they saw that Helena had arrived.

Chapter 1331

“I get it now, don’t worry.” Jack smiled and said nothing else. Instead, he looked at Helena indifferently, wanting to see what Helena would decide on. After all, not only did he help her stop Second Young Master Hunt from pestering her, but he literally saved her life last evening.

However, there were many fights between both families in the past, so he was curious to know Helena’ s choice.

“This belonged to them as they discovered it first. Why do you people need to take it from them?” Helena glared at Jay and the others before she continued,” Jack is a good person, and he even helped me at a very important moment yesterday. Let them have what they’ve earned!”

Met with looks of surprise from the Cabello family’s geniuses, Helena thoughtfully added, “By the way, when you meet members from the White family in the future, don’t take things from them. We’re friendly allies, do you understand? You guys need to help them if we happen to come across incidents where the Hunt family wants to bully them, do you understand?”

“Uh!” Jay and the others had their jaws wide open in shock, wondering if they heard wrongly.

Their chins almost dropped to the ground as they wondered: when did both families become friendly allies? Apart from that, they even had to help when the Hunt family members bully the White family members?

Helena once again glared at everyone before placing her hands behind her back and spoke in a serious manner, “Why are you people so surprised? Do you still remember what my father said? In this competition, I have the highest fighting prowess among all the contestants from the Cabello family, so

everybody has to obey my arrangements, understand?"

"Yes, eldest young mistress!" The people from the Cabello family could only nod in agreement. However, they still could not accept the fact that the Cabello family had become friendly alliances with the White family.

Eyeing Jack, they recalled how Helena seemed to have flown over from the same direction as this guy did. They started to wonder if their eldest young mistress was genuinely dating Jack, or if their relationship had upped a notch within these couple of days because of what happened before.

"Alright, then we'll make a move first!" In the end, Helena glanced at Jack and gestured to him.

"Alright!" Jack nodded and looked on as they left.

"Young Master, you're awesome! It looks like Helena Cabello has fallen in love with you. I mean, why would she help you without any hesitation?" said Beth happily as she walked toward Jack after Helena and the others left.

"That's right! Congratulations on scoring another beautiful lady, Young Master Jack. Haha!" Another young man from the White family also started laughing. "It'd be best if we let go of our past grievances and become friendly allies. The relationship between both families will further improve when Young Master Jack and Young Mistress Helena get married."

Jack was speechless. What sort of nonsense were they talking about? Things had not started to take shape yet, and they were already thinking about marriage? That must not happen; that was Daniella's sister!

He immediately glared at that guy. "Stop speaking such nonsense about getting married. I' ve never even thought about it!"

“Uh!” The guy had a startled look on his face. “What? Young master, she’s a beauty-a sexy and aloof angel. She obviously likes you, and that’s why she helped us just now. You’re already dating her, yet you never thought of marrying her? The two of you are obviously made for one another!”

Chapter 1332

“What? Young Master, are you just playing with her? You’re being too irresponsible if that’s the case. Apart from that, Eldest Young Mistress Cabello is really pretty, and I think she suits you well!” Another young man from the White family was also startled. They never expected that Jack would only want to be in a relationship with Eldest Young Mistress Cabello without even thinking about marriage. Eldest Young Mistress Cabello would be saddened to hear this.

Those words made Jack embarrassed, and he had no idea what to say or how to explain himself at that moment. If he made an explanation and these people ran their mouth about how they were only a fake couple, both the Hunt family master.

“Alright, alright… Why should people like us worry about our young master’s relationship issue? You people really are…” Beth stood forward and rolled her eyes at both young men. With a flip of her hand, she took out two to three pieces of black tokens and one white token. Apart from that, there was also a second-grade elementary spirited grass and several firstgrade spirited grass. “Young Master, it’s best if you take custody of these things as they won’t be safe with us. Moreover, we won’t be able to place at the front few positions even if we take it with us. You should take it and bring honor to our White family by ranking top in the individual category!”

Yule chimed in, smilingly saying, “That’s right, Brother Jack. In the past, we didn’t have anybody with such a high fighting prowess or combat power like you when the White family joined the competition Hence, we all kept the respective tokens we got during the competition. This also meant that nobody was really strong in the individual category, but our placement as a group was quite good. Still, the other families still made jokes out of us because

Of this.”

Yule then added, “Right now, everything is different. We can give all the tokens we got to you and make sure that we have someone at the top placing in the individual category!”

Jack was quiet for a short while before he took the tokens and spirited grass from them. Stashing it away, he said, “Alright, I’ll take the tokens and other items with me. I think that it’s best if you guys travel with me; it’s much safer for you that way.

I’m afraid that the people from the Hunt family and Lagorio family will find an opportunity to strike at us.”

Yule frowned the moment she heard this and thoughtfully offered, “Brother Jack, I think it’s best if we travel separately as the forest is huge. I don’t think that members from both the Lagorio and Hunt families have gathered together yet. Although it’s much safer for us to travel with you, it’d be difficult to find more tokens in that case!”

Beth also nodded. “Yes, why don’t we do this instead? Let’s gather at the bottom of the Kobe mountain before we go up the mountain together. That’d be much safer as there are more tokens in the mountain, and many people must be rushing there right now!”

Assessing the idea, Jack replied, “Why don’t we move separately and inform other members of the White family that we’ll gather at a specific part at the bottom of the mountain before moving up together? After all, I’m sure that many people from the other families would also gather here. It wouldn’t be beneficial to us if we move separately!

“Alright. We’ll surely ask everybody to inform one another and try our best to be extra careful. Then, we shall be able to get more tokens!” said Beth enthusiastically.

Jack nodded and said, “Alright. Be on your guard, everyone.”

“Jack! This is great!”

Chapter 1333

A familiar voice was heard all of a sudden as a woman came flying toward Jack.

She rushed into Jack's arms in excitement as soon as she came before him, hugging him as she gushed, "This is great! I've finally met you! I was so worried about you!"

Jack was embarrassed. He did not expect Daniella to be so excited to see him.

"What…?" Yule and the others looked on in confusion and shock. Two of them had their jaws hung wide open until their chins almost dropped to the floor in their shock.

Was it not the Eldest Young Mistress Cabello Young Master that was Jack's girlfriend? Why did Daniella jump into Jack's arms the second she got in front of him? Could it be possible that they had made a mistake?

"Cough, cough…! Daniella, you…" Jack quickly reminded her.

Only then did Daniella glanced to the side and immediately blushed before she walked a couple of steps backward. "Don' t… Don't misunderstand me. I'm too excited because… Haha…! It' s been a long time since I've met Young Master Jack!"

Everyone was baffled at her explanation; that sounded rather unconvincing. Had they not just arrived here for one day? Why did this young lady imply she had not seen Jack for a long time?

"Haha…! We get it, we get it!" Yule laughed and exchanged glances with Beth. They were smart and could see that Daniella definitely liked Jack.

However, they were curious about why Daniella would fight her sister for her boyfriend when she knew that Helena was Jack's girlfriend.

At this moment, a young man from the White family stood forward and coughed embarrassingly. They obviously did not want to be thirdwheelers. “Ahem, ahem! We’ll be taking our leave now.”

“Let’s go! Go! Go!” Yule and the others also smiled before waving goodbye to the two of them. One by one, they slowly flew away.

“Look at what you’ve done. They ‘ve misunderstood us!” Jack was exasperated as he noticed the White family’s members leaving. Daniella was quite impulsive as she was slightly younger.

Daniella also felt that she had

Made a mistake. She bit her sexy red lips while lowering her head, saying, “I didn’t do it on purpose. I was only worried about you because I haven’t seen you. Apart from that, this can’t be considered as a misunderstanding as I’m your real girlfriend. You’ve said that you’d take responsibility toward me. Do you want to break your promise?”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1334-1338

Chapter 1334

Jack smiled and said to Daniella, “Don’t worry. I, Jack White, never broke a promise!”

“Alright, let’s go! I’m traveling with you!” Daniella felt butterflies in her stomach. With a flip of her hand, she revealed two black tokens and handed them to Jack. “Haha…! I found these yesterday. Here, they’re for you!”

“For me?” Jack was flustered.“ You’re a member of the Cabello family. It’s best if you reserve this for your eldest sister!”

“I am a member of the Cabello family,” said the blushing Daniella before she added, “but I ‘m also yours. You’re going to be my man in the future, so I have to help you!”

Her thoughtfulness moved Jack. He tidied up everything and held Daniella's hand as they flew down.

Daniella hugged Jack from his back the moment they landed on the ground. She then tilted her head toward Jack's back, lips curling into a sweet smile.

Jack had no idea that this young girl would be such a clingy person. Smiling awkwardly, he said, "Come on, let's continue searching for treasures. Stop clinging to me; we gotta look for the tokens."

"What are you afraid of? I'm your actual girlfriend. I notice I' d think of you so often if I don't see you for one day. Apart from that, both the young masters of the Hunt family have such terrifying combat power, and I' m afraid they'll attack you if they run into you!" Daniella still hugged Jack tightly, reveling in the heartwarming feeling. "My worries are finally resolved now that I've seen you."

All of a sudden… "My, oh my… Who knew I'd be fortunate enough to see such a scene. Haha!" A man's voice was heard not far from them several seconds later.

Daniella immediately let go of Jack, awfully nervous as her face blushed a crimson red color.

The two of them immediately turned around and saw eight people standing behind them. Four of them were prodigies from the Norman family while the other four were geniuses from the Lagorio family.

The person who spoke was none other than Joshua Norman, the person who lost to Jack before.

"This is so interesting. It looks like the saying, the brother-inlaw owns half of his wife's sisters,' is true!" Another man from the Lagorio family smiled with a teasing expression on his face.

"Daniella, does your sister know about this?" asked the smirking Keith.

Daniella looked bitter at their words. She wanted to tell these dumb people that she was Jack' s true girlfriend, and her sister was just faking it with Jack. She wanted to tell them their relationship was just a makeshift stratagem.

Nonetheless, she knew she could not bring it up, and she dared not to as well.

"Why? Are you jealous of me?"

Chapter 1335

Facing the taunts, Jack grabbed Daniella by her waist, pulled her close to his chest, and lowered his head to kiss her on her red lips.

Daniella's heart raced wildly in her bewilderment, taken aback at how Jack decided to prove their relationship at this moment in such a domineering way. Was he not afraid of these people spreading news about them? What should they do when the Hunt family learn about this?

"You…" All three sons of the Norman family liked the three young mistresses of the Cabello family. Their main target of persuasion was Danielly as she looked especially young and quirky. She, to put it simply, captivated them.

How could Jack make both Helena and Daniella fall for him? They spurned with jealousy that rose from their hearts. Moreover, they resented how the woman they loved was taken away by someone else.

"Oh, you'll die today, young man!" growled Conley Norman.

"Young Masters, what say we kill them together, seeing that we've easily outnumbered them?" The Lagorios immediately suggested it to Keith and the others as they were delighted when they heard this.

"Haha… Just with you people?" Jack laughed and had a cold expression on his face. "Since you guys like

to come at me so much, I won't hold back today. Keeping you people alive doesn' t benefit our White family!" Jack had made up his mind: They had to die, especially when the three sons of the Norman family were so talented. Keith and Joshua were at the intermediate stage of the real god stage. If they left this place alive, they would definitely attack prodigies of the White family in the later stages of the competition.

Jack decided to kill these geniuses from the Norman and Lagorio family at that moment.

"Haha! I'd love to know where you got all that confidence from." Joshua laughed out loudly. "Jack, do you think you can defeat us just because you' ve won against me and my second brother? Take a good look at our numbers and yours, not to mention that all eight of us are masters of the true-god level!"

"It's even better that you're all masters of the true-god level. You guys won't be able to threaten our White family if I get rid of everybody in one go!" Jack flipped his hand to take his black sword out before speaking, "Daniella, you should stay behind me. I can handle these people alone!"

"Can you handle it alone?" Daniella frowned and obviously did not believe in what Jack said. Sure, Jack was in the intermediate level of the true god level, and he might be able to defeat Keith and the others if they fought individually, but there were so many of them. How could Daniella not worry when so many of them were going to attack Jack altogether?

"Don't worry. They can't beat me." Jack smiled indifferently and asked Daniella to step back.

"Ah, no wonder women like you so much, young man-you're good at being chivalrous!"

The corners of Keith's mouth curled into a light smile." Although I'm in the intermediate stage of the true god level like my second brother, my combat power among those in this stage is almost invincible. Even if there are three masters in the intermediate stage of the true god level, they might not be opponents. Are you sure that you alone can stop all of us?"

"Young Master Norman, let's stop talking with this guy and kill all of them!" One of the men from the

Lagorio family was impatient. Their family master, Trenton Lagorio would be happy if they managed to kill Jack, the White family master inheritor, with the help of the Normans.

“Kill all of them? That won’t work. We can kill that man, but it ‘d be unfortunate to kill Daniella!” said the grinning Keith, and he swallowed his saliva at the sight of Daniella’s long legs.

Chapter 1336

“You’re absolutely right, Big Bro. This woman is a rare beauty. It would be a pity to kill her just like that!”

Joshua gave a wicked smile.“ Besides, we can kill whoever we like in this competition. Haha. Even Daniella’s father wouldn’t dare to do anything to us if we toy around with her for a bit before killing her!”

Conley also chimed in, “Both of you are right. Daniella isn’t Jack’ s girlfriend, so it’s a possibility that she’s still a virgin. Hehe!”

“You’re right!”

Another genius from the Norman family had a wicked smile carved on his face.

The other two men from the Lagorio family also had wicked smiles. They stared at Daniella and gulped.

After all, it was difficult to find a beauty like her. Many men lusted after the daughters of the Cabello family, and taking their womanhood would give them plenty of bragging rights.

The two young women from the Lagorio family were internally speechless. They believed that all men were perverts who reverted to their cavemen selves once they saw a beautiful woman.

“Idiots!”

Jack was speechless before this lot. He was holding an ultimate grade spiritual weapon. Never mind if it did not increase his fighting power, but at any rate, this group of idiots would never be able to catch up to them if he were to flee with Daniella.

“What a mouth you have!”

Keith took a step forward and waved his hand. “Let’s all do this. Give your all if you want to have a taste of Third Young Mistress Cabello. Don’t hold back. Let’s join forces and get rid of this punk!”

“Big Bro, that sword looks like a flying sword. That-that’s an upper-grade spiritual tool. We’d better be careful!”

Conley thought about it for a while and told Keith, holding a weapon in his own hand.

“Don’t worry. In cases like this, a flying sword may be able to fly fast, but it’s not very strong in combat. I think it’s no good in increasing your fighting power!”

It was evident that Keith had some knowledge about spiritual tools. He gave a wan smile and spoke confidently, “I’m telling all of you that I’m the strongest here. After we kill this punk, I’ll take that sword. How about that?”

“Of course. It belongs to you!”

Joshua and Conley chorused in synchrony.

Several geniuses from the Lagorio family were eyeing the treasure, but they were only at the beginning stage of the true god status. They could do nothing but bow their heads and concede.

“You’re going to die here today, punk. I’ll show you the secondgrade martial technique from the Norman family-Feral Slash!”

Keith channeled his chi into the sword in his grip. Its blade began to glow and emit a terrifying hum.

Hum hum!

Joshua and Conley also took out their weapons, gathering their chi into them.

The other five people also began to scatter and take out their weapons.

Daniella, who was standing behind Jack with clenched fists, was worried about him.

Chapter 1337

After all, the eight men before him were all fighters in the true god realm, and two of them were at the intermediate stage. They were probably the aces among the contestants today.

Could Jack handle attacks from the eight of them alone?

Yet a small smile hung on his lips even as he faced against them. He tightened his grip on the black sword in his hand, slowly pouring his chi through the small hole on its hilt.

Hum!

As chi flowed into it, the sword started emitting a frightening hum. The blade rippled, and Jack’s aura grew stronger.

“What a powerful aura. The sword increased his martial ability!”

Joshua quickly sensed something and his expression darkened.

“Big Bro, didn’t you say that a flying sword wouldn’t usually increase the fighting prowess of its wielder?”

Conley was frightened after he felt that wave of energy. He quickly looked at his elder brother for assurance.

Keith’s expression stiffened, and he clenched his jaw. “I said’ usually’. F*ck. There’s something different about that sword. That aura doesn’t belong to an upper-grade spiritual tool -it’s an ultimate-grade!”

“What? An ultimate-grade!”

Conley and the others were shocked beyond comprehension when they heard this as if they had just seen a ghost. Only the Hunt family should be able to pull out a treasure like that. How did that punk possess an ultimate-grade spiritual tool?

“Kill him! No backing out now!”

Keith gritted his teeth, and his eyes flashed with the promise of violence. He slashes his sword, and blade after blade of sword auras formed before him. They looked feral and their trajectories were unpredictable as they swept toward Jack.

“Get him!”

The other seven did not dare to hesitate for a second longer. They immediately lashed out with attacks of their own.

“Hmph. I’ll show you my second -grade premium martial skill!”

Jack gave a cold smile in the face of so many attacks. He took a vehement step forward, both hands gripped around the hilt of his sword. He arched his back and slashed outward. “Blade Wave!”

As he cried out, waves of sword auras appeared and continuously rippled, flying everywhere.

“No way!”

A girl from the Lagorio family was so frightened that her face paled at the sight of this attack. She felt as though she was facing someone at the peak of the true god realm.

“You’re kidding me. The White family has a second-grade premium martial skill?”

Keith was also shocked. It was rare to see martial skills that

Were second-grade premium.

Even second-grade intermediate martial skills were hard to find. The Feral Slash technique from the Norman family was already unique to them.

Yet Jack used a second-grade premium martial skill. With amplified power from the ultimate-grade spiritual tool, that skill was pushed to its absolute maximum. All of them felt a grave premonition of death descending upon them.

Chapter 1338

Even Keith with the highest cultivation level and was the strongest fighter, was frightened, feeling as though death was coming for them. That feeling became stronger and stronger, and the other seven were all so terrified that color was completely leached from their faces. Fear filled their gazes.

“Don’t worry. We’ll definitely win. We have so many people attacking together. We’ll get him!”

Conley was so scared that his voice was trembling, yet he gripped tightly onto his sword and tried to encourage his comrades.

Bang bang bang!

A frightening explosion tore through the air. In the next second, the attacks from the Lagorio geniuses who were at the beginning stage of the true god status were all destroyed.

“Pfft!”

Those fellows spat a mouthful of blood, their faces twisted into grimaces.

“Sh*t. Their attacks were destroyed so easily!”

A few of their attacks had been destroyed by Jack. It was obvious that the attacks from Keith and the remaining men were not going to hold out for long. In a flash, beads of sweat began to drip from his forehead.

“This is bad, Big Bro. Let’s retreat!”

Joshua’s attacks were being suppressed as well. Jack’s sword auras were flying toward him non-stop,

and he was so scared that his voice trembled.

“F*ck!”

Keith clenched his teeth and wheeled around to leave.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Yet Jack was too fast, with the chi-enhanced sword and the sword auras. The blade swung outward, and immediately killed those of a lower cultivation level.

Only Keith and Joshua, who were a little stronger, managed to survive. Still, they were thrown backward by that horrifying force. Blood spilled from their lips and they fell with a heavy thud onto the ground.

“He’s too fast. We can’t escape!”

Joshua gritted his teeth. By the time he could lift his head, he realized that Jack had already flown over. He stood before the two brothers, giving them a cold

Stare.

“We are the young masters of the Norman family, Jack. We’re the young masters of a firstclass family. My father won’t forgive you if you kill us!”

Keith threatened Jack, gritting his teeth.

He did not think that Jack would give a mirthless smile instead.” You said that we can kill whoever we

like in this competition, and no one can do anything about it. Besides, nobody is bearing witness to us. Who would ever find out that I killed you?”

After Jack said that, he swung his sword.

Chapter 1339-1345

A terrifying arc-shaped slash flew directly out and landed on the chests of the two brothers, killing them instantly.

“It’s too… too amazing!”

Daniella on the side was already dumbfounded. After a while, she swallowed her saliva.

Jack collected all the loot from the eight people, and then he came to Daniella for a moment, before smiling at her, “Let’s get out of here quickly, otherwise people will know it’s me who killed these guys. When it’s time to leave the forest and the Norman family finds out, even if they won’t make a move for the time being, they will definitely find trouble with our family in the future!”

“Yeah!”

Daniella nodded obediently. She actually stretched out her hand and held Jack’s hand, then they flew forward together, quickly disappearing from the place.

After the two flew for a while, they stopped, and Jack took out the tokens and spirit grass in their rings, and put it into his ring. Then they threw all of the rings collected in the grass.

Daniella, who was on the side, felt sweet in her heart. Jack actually kissed her proactively in front of those guys. This really surprised her. She never thought that such an old-fashioned, very serious guy would be so emotional as well.

Thinking of the previous scene, Daniella's mouth unconsciously showed a silly smile, and she was still a little nervous.

"By the way, yesterday, I saw your eldest sister!"

Jack thought for a while, then said to Daniella: "The second young master of the Hunt family has actually reached the late stage of True God Realm. This guy's combat effectiveness is really high. Your eldest sister is not his opponent. Fortunately, I saved her at a critical moment and escaped with her. Otherwise, I'm afraid your eldest sister would've already been killed."

"No way! My eldest sister's cultivation base is so high, she has already broken through to the late stage of True God Realm, and she actually couldn't beat the second young master of the Hunt family!?"

After listening to Jack, she couldn't help taking a breath: "The second young master of the Hunt family is really a master. He knows how to make pills and has a good talent for cultivation. If he joins the young master of the Hunt family, the strength of those two people will be even more terrifying."

After finishing speaking, she looked at Jack, then smiled and said: "Your combat power just now, I feel it is comparable to the strength of a true god peak powerhouse. You're too powerful, no wonder you could save my eldest sister! She must be very grateful to you for saving her. In the future, the relationship between our two families will get better and better!"

"Yes, what happened between our two families before and why? For many years, the relationship between the two families has not been very good and I don't know exactly what kind of hatred is there between our White family and your Cabello family!" After thinking about it, Jack looked at Daniella with a solemn expression.

"Hey, old grievances, it's been many years!"

Daniella smiled bitterly, then said to Jack: "It was your grandfather and my grandfather trying to snatch a treasure back then. As a result, the two sides fought and died together. Later, the two families began

to have a bad relationship, and they fought. A few times there have been many deaths and injuries. So, now that so many years have passed, there are still some frictions between the two families. However, there is no direct war!"

After hearing this, Jack was a little bit dumbfounded: "That's it, it's actually a normal thing to snatch each other for treasures. After so many years, it should actually be let go."

Daniella smiled again: "I feel it, in fact, my father and your father don't hate each other anymore, but no one thinks that they are wrong, and they are prideful, not wanting to be embarrassed. Therefore, every time they meet, They are still like enemies, to put it plainly, they are doing it for the sake of their reputation."

Hearing this, Jack was speechless, but thinking about it, if he was the head of a first-class family. In this case, who would bow his head to admit his mistake to the other party?

Daniella took a step forward and took Jack's arm: "Don't worry, when we get married in the future, the relationship between the two families will definitely get better. I will definitely convince my father!"

Not long after Jack left, several contestants from the Norman family once again came to the place where they had fought before.

After they found the corpses on the ground, they looked ugly.

"It's over, the three young masters are dead, what can we do?"

One of the men in the early stage of the True God Realm frowned: "Especially the two young masters, Keith and Conley, they are the most hopeful of inheriting the Master's position. They are also the most powerful masters in our Norman family. With them dead, I'm afraid we're going to lose this competition!"

The other man on the contrary, was slightly happy in his heart. At this time, he actually chuckled: “It is indeed a big loss, but well, since the three sons of the master of the house are dead, doesn’t it mean that we have hope to inherit the position of master of the house in the future?”

The man in the early stage of the True God Realm was overjoyed after hearing this, yes, these three masters are dead, their current cultivation base, among other masters, is considered very high, isn’t it? They have the greatest hopes to be the heads of the family in the future.

However, he quickly suppressed the joy in his heart, and then said to the people: “I don’t know who killed our Master’s three young masters. It is really disgusting!”

“There are still four Lagorios here! It’s impossible for the people of the Lagorio family to do it. The people of the Lagorio family are not so powerful. Moreover, judging from where they lie, the opponent should be standing opposite them. Therefore, the Lagorio family’s people and people in our family should have teamed up with each other, but they were still not a match for their opponent, and then they were beheaded!”

There was a girl who looked at the situation here and analyzed it again: “The most important thing is, you can see the look of fear in everyone’s eyes, which is enough to show that the other party is really too strong, so much so that our eldest master did not even have a chance to escape!”

“Yes, in this case, I feel, The opponent is definitely not one person, one person who can kill eight people who were considered strong, and they did not even have a chance to escape, is just not possible!”

The man at the early stage of the True God level also nodded: “If anyone can do it, it must be someone in the late stage of the True God Realm, and there are strong people who can fight against the peak power of the True God Realm, for example, The eldest young master of the Hunt family, as well as the top masters of the Canmore family and the Lucas family!” The girl nodded, but insisted: “I feel that even if there was such a strong person, it shouldn’t be possible with just one person, and it was two or three people who worked together to prevent our people from escaping!”

“Well, now we can only guess, everyone is gone, and I don’t know the specific situation. Besides, even if it’s from the Hunt family. The young masters did what they did, and there is nothing to do about it. In

this game, it was originally agreed that they could kill at will within this month."

The man smiled bitterly, and then said to the people: "Let's try to hide as much as possible. Four of our strong men have died. Now we don't even have anyone in the middle of the True God Realm. Let's try our best not to go to the depths of the forest and look outside here to find the tokens, and not lose too badly, what do you think?"

"Just outside?" The girl frowned, "If we don't go to the depths of the forest or the mountains, doesn't it mean that we are likely to lose to a second-class family? If we not only lose to a second-class family and also lose to a third-class family, then we will be shamed!"

The man also sank, and after a moment of silence, then said, "Okay, in order not to be shamed, we can go in, but if we meet a strong person from a first-class family, we immediately surrender and hand over the things, what do you think? It's better than death, right?"

"This is also true. Even the three sons of our Master were killed. It seems that this time they really met some lunatics who are not afraid to cause trouble!" The girl finally nodded helplessly. If this goes on, the Norman family would have suffered a lot of losses. Should the family master know that all of his three sons were dead, he would probably be half-dead with anger.

At this time, Jack and Daniella flew slowly to the deeper part of the forest, continuing to search for tokens."Jack, great, here is another piece!"

Soon, Daniella found another black token, picked it up, and flew back to Jack before passing the token to Jack.

"If you are like this, are you not afraid that your dad will find out and become unhappy?"

Jack smiled bitterly and then put the token away. With Daniella helping to find tokens, it was obvious that Jack's efficiency in finding tokens would have been directly improved by at least more than half.

“I don’t care if he is happy or not, you will be my man in the future, and I will follow you!”

Daniella snorted, and then said with a shy expression: “I will help my man find tokens, helping him achieve a good place in the competition, there is nothing wrong with it!”

Jack’s heart warmed slightly, and as soon as the thought of Selena who was staying in the White family house came up again, he couldn’t help but sigh: “Hey, I don’t know how to speak to Selena. I don’t know how her cultivation is now. There are still twenty or more days left here. before we can go out if we are lucky enough to survive, She should also have broken through to the demi-god realm by then!”

“Sister Selena used to be a common person, yet her cultivation is really growing faster than normal. It seems that she must be very talented!” Daniella smiled and said, ”In this practice, you have to have better techniques and better resources. In addition, talent is also a must!”

Jack also said with emotion: “Yes, in this world, there may be some people once on the path of cultivation, their talents will be very good, but unfortunately, there is no chance at all to break through. How can they even break through without the martial exercises, therefore they can only live their life normally and dull..”

After the two flew for a while, they heard a terrible beast roar not far away, and soon they saw dozens of people flying over here desperately.

“Wow, there are several people from the Cabello family, as well as from the White family, as well as from the Lucas family!” After Daniella took a look, her eyes lit up, facing the Cabello family woman who was wearing a purple skirt. Daniella yelled, “Second sister, second sister!”

Venus looked at her and immediately exclaimed, “Run, there are monsters!”

“What are you afraid of? Don’t you have many people? Second sister, aren’t you in the middle of the True God realm? With this cultivation base, what monsters do you fear in the periphery of this forest?”

Daniella said nonchalantly: “Don’t worry, even if you can’t beat it, there is still Jack. As soon as he makes a move, it will be okay!”

There was another roar, Jack’s face sank, and he said to Daniella on the side, “There seems to be more than one monster beast! It’s a group!”“No way, a group?”

Daniella breathed a sigh of relief when he heard it. This monster was already powerful, and difficult to deal with it alone, let alone a group of monsters.

“Go fast, it’s too difficult to deal with. It’s a pack of wolves. There are hundreds of them. The adult wolves are comparable to the early stages of the True God realm. Once you are surrounded you would be done for!” Venus said out of breath after flying over.

“Master, there are too many. Many of us here are in the early stage of the demi-god Realm, and there are also a few Ninth Stage Grandmasters. They dare not fight with the wolves!” Kayla Leigh also ran over and said to Jack out of breath.

Kayle Leigh, since she met Jack last time in the town under the White Family Mountain, and was recommended by Jack to join the White Family, under the hard work of cultivation, she has also made breakthroughs from the ninth level Grandmaster to the early stage of demi-god Realm. Because of her incredible talent she was selected for the games.

Jack thought about it for a while then said. “The monster beasts in the early stage of the demi-god Realm are not worrisome. However, if there are too many, fighting with them is just a waste of time. When the time comes, all our aura will be wasted, and time will be wasted!”

A man from the Lucas family who is in the early stage of the True God Realm, though he was not afraid, understood that with a pack of low level animals they would still be overwhelmed and some of the younger people may die. Seeing that the people of the White family and the people of the Cabello family were still discussing it, he stood speechless for a second, then shaking himself he flew up and shouted. “Everyone, come here! We won’t fight. Let’s run!”

“Everyone, come up here! These are low level monsters and they cannot fly!”

Jack smiled lightly, flipped his palm, took the sword out, and threw it into the air, and it suddenly became bigger.

“That’s great! You actually have a flying sword!” The Lucas family man’s eyes lit up and he immediately jumped up.

The others jumped up immediately, while Jack was controlling the flying sword and started to fly.

A Mochizuki wolf with a height of almost three feet tall, roared and rushed over, and when Jack and others were about to fly, two Mochizuki wolves in the middle stage of the demi-god realm roared and rushed towards two young women of the Lucas family.

“Ah!” Those two women were not high in cultivation. One in the early stage of the demi-god realm, and the other in the middle stage of the demi-god realm.

Though they are masters, however, facing such a monster beast, they obviously couldn’t compare, and they immediately yelled in fright, as if they didn’t know what to do.

However, at this moment, Jack appeared in front of the two of them in a flash, clenched his fists, and blasted the wolves.

The two huge Mochizuki wolves were slammed on the ground with one fist and one blow by Jack. Blood flowed directly from their mouths as they lay there motionless. Just liek that they were killed by Jack.

“He’s too strong!” The two women swallowed their saliva, both frightened by Jack’s combat effectiveness.

“This guy!” Venus on the side was also slightly surprised. Although she could match the attack power, the speed at which Jack rushed out just now was so fast that she was a shocked.The other wolves all charged toward them, trying to take revenge on their fallen pack members. But Jack controlled the flying sword and flew far away in a flash, leaving behind the snarling and howling pack of wolves.

“What fast speed! What level is your flying sword?”

Seeing the speed of this flying sword, Venus couldn’t help but curiously ask.

“Second sister, this is an Ultimate Grade Spiritual Weapon. With this sword, Jack’s offensive power is much more powerful. Even ten of you are not his opponent!” Daniella said of Jack, her head raised and her eyes full of pride.

“Ten of me are not his opponents?” Venus was taken aback, and then said with some suspicion: “Danielle, you are exaggerating. My cultivation in the middle of True God Realm is almost invincible. Ah! Even if I can’t beat him, it’s impossible that 10 of me couldn’t beat him, right?”

“That’s right!” After thinking about it, Daniella nodded, and said quickly: “I think ten was too low, it should be twenty!”

“I…” Venus was speechless. She thought her sister looked down on her too much.

Soon, those Mochizuki wolves who we’re chasing them were thrown off the trail by Jack.

After flying for a while, Jack lowered the flying sword and everyone jumped down. Then he put the flying sword away.

The man in the early stage of the True God Realm of the Lucas Family, after thinking about it, came over and took out five black tokens, and then handed them to Jack: “Master White, thanks to you just now, if it wasn’t for you I am afraid we would have lost many of our family. This is regarded as a reward for

you!”

“No, there’s no need for that!”

Jack smiled awkwardly. The Lucas family’s relationship with the White family is not bad. They didn’t have much interaction before. Therefore, Jack didn’t even think about it just now, and asked them to jump onto the sword.

If this were the Norman family or Lagorio family, then he wouldn’t be polite.

“Master White, don’t be humble. It is only natural, you saved us, and we will repay you. You earned it!”

The man smiled and stuffed the tokens into Jack’s hands. “If it were someone from a stronger family, they would probably have just robbed us!”

“Haha, brother, don’t say that. I’m just glad I was able to help out in the time of need.” Jack laughed as he replied.

“By the way, my name is Harry Lucas. Although my cultivation level is not high, I am also the grandson of the Elder of the Lucas family. Thank you so much this time. I hope that we will see you again!” Harry also smiled heartily and replied. After that, he quickly left with the Lucas family.

“That was worth the visit!” Looking in the direction they were leaving, Jack had a smile on his face.

“I will give you a few tokens!” Venus on the side gave Jack a blank look, and then took out five tokens and handed it to Jack. “Take it, The relationship between our two families is not good, I don’t want to owe you favors!”Jack’s was embarrassed, he smiled bitterly, and did not take the token in Venus’ hand. “Miss Venus, with our relationship, I really can’t take that from you.”

When another Cabello family heard this, he immediately stepped forward and smiled: “Second Miss, have you forgotten, this is your eldest sister’s boyfriend. He will be your brother-in-law, so there is no need to give any tokens, you should put them away!”

“Yeah, yeah, Master White and the eldest Miss are a couple. How could he take your tokens?”

Another Cabello girl also stepped forward, her face full of excitement: “Hey, that is great! Since he with the eldest Miss, we won’t have to be afraid of being bullied in the future!”

Venus gave the girl a fierce look, and then said to Jack: “Fine. Don’t take it if you don’t want it, but don’t say I didn’t try to give you something!” After speaking, Venus flipped her palm, and then put away the token in her hand.

Several young people from the Cabello family looked at each other, their expressions were a little weird. The temper of this second young lady was really similar to that of the Master. At this time, they had to deliberately draw a line.

“Well, let’s go! We can’t go with our enemies. They might decide to attack us from behind if we find more treasures!” Venus said with a wave. She took the Cabello family members to leave.

However, after they walked a few steps, Venus couldn’t help but frown, and looked back at Daniella, who was still standing next to Jack, and then said with a deep frown. “Daniella, why aren’t you coming with us? Could it be that you still want to be with this enemy of our family?”

Daniella frowned, and was rather embarrassed: “Sister, that happened many years ago. In the past two or three years, the relationship between our two families has eased a lot. Jack and I are good friends so I will stay with him!”

“I…” Venus was speechless for a while, she didn’t expect that Daniella would stick with Jack so strongly even though they were not married.

But she also knew in her heart that Daniella and Jack are the real lovers. Therefore, after she thought about it, she glared at Daniella and said, “Well, you can do whatever you like. Anyway, even though I am your older sister I don’t need to hold your hand everywhere!”

“Hey, sister, be careful!” Daniella smiled awkwardly, and waved to Venus.

“Let’s go.” Venus sighed, and finally left with her family quickly.

“Looking at this, your second sister seems to know that we are in a relationship!” Jack looked at Venus’ back and couldn’t help but speak.

Daniella nodded: “Yes, the eldest sister and the second sister know about it, but they didn’t tell my father. They are cold about it but I know in my heart that they are actually good to me.”

“Well, let’s go!” Jack nodded and left with Daniella.

In one afternoon, the two found several spiritual grasses, and they also found 5 tokens. The harvest was quite good.

After all, with so many people coming in such a large forest, some might find it difficult to find even one token in an afternoon. If you want to find the white token and the red token, it will be really difficult. After all, there are only a few, especially the red ones!

Previous Chapter

Back to Section

Next Chapter

Daniella said to Jack “Jack, it will be dark soon, let’s find a place to rest!”

Jack nodded and looked around. After searching for a while, Jack found that there was a big crack that was not easy to see on the rock wall of a cliff. Based on how it looked, it should be able to easily allow two or three people to spend the night in it.

“If you didn’t find the cave, it would be more dangerous if you rested on a tree. There is a crack on the cliff over there. Will that make do tonight?”

Jack looked at Daniella in front of him. The young women are indeed good-looking, but they have lived in a big family since they were young, and I don’t know if they can endure hardships.

“Hey, let’s go!” Daniella smiled and held Jack’s hand: “I will sleep with you anywhere you want, as long as you are next to me, I will be happy! ”

After Daniella finished, his face flushed.

“You girl!” Jack smiled bitterly. Daniella’s simplicity is really rare, it makes one feel like a first love.

The two quickly flew towards the crack, which was big enough for two people to walk in side by side.

What Jack didn’t expect was that the crack was small on the outside and big on the inside. There was more than ten meters space inside, and the space inside was enough for two people to sit inside and have a good rest.

Someone had been here before, and there were a lot of weeds in it. Sitting in it was also very comfortable.

“Great, I can spend another night with you!” With a smile on Daniella’s face, she sat next to Jack and couldn’t help but gently lean her head on Jack’s shoulder.

“Master Trevino, you promised me that as long as you meet someone from the White family, you will kill them for me. You can’t keep any of them alive!”

After sitting for a while, Jack and Daniella heard a faint voice coming from outside.

“Haha, don’t worry, baby, what I, Hugh Trevino, will not break my promise!”

Soon, a man’s hearty laughter sounded, and then he said: “Baby, look, there is something over there, a crack in the cliff. Let’s go inside the crack and have fun!”

Hearing this, Daniella and Jack looked at each other. Someone else had found them so quickly!

“There are so many masters from the Trevino family around? How about we go out later after the games and I can give it to you then?”

The woman deliberately said coquettishly, and the voice was so close that Jack heard it all.

“Dog men and women!” Daniella gritted her teeth and said angrily.

“That’s not good, baby, we do things for you and you will benefit now, but you might not give any benefits after the game is over. Maybe when we leave you will not admit to anything that happened here.” The man named Hugh Trevino said again.

Chapter 1345.
Daniella pursed her lips and said to Jack, “It’s getting dark. Let’s find a place to rest!”

Jack nodded his head and scoured through the forest.

After a while, Jack found a huge crack that was easy to miss on the surface of a cliff. It was probably large enough to allow two to three people to spend the night there.

“We can’t find a cave, and it’ll be too dangerous to sleep on a tree. There’s a crack on the cliff face there. Why don’t we spend the night there?”

Jack looked at Daniella. She was beautiful, yes, but he did not know if she could rough it out, being raised in a first-class family since young.

“All right. Let’s go!”

Daniella took Jack’s hand, grinning. “I can spend the night anywhere if you’re with me. I’m happy with you by my side!”

Her face flushed after she said that.

“How adorable!”

Jack gave a bitter smile. Daniella ‘s innocence truly made one feel as though they were experiencing their first love.

The two quickly flew toward the crack. The crack was big enough for the two of them to squeeze in.

However, Jack did not think that there would be such a huge space behind the crack, extending for a few dozen meters. The area was large enough to allow two to sit and rest comfortably.

Maybe others had stayed there before. There was plenty of wild grass in it, and it was comfortable to sit on.

“This is great. I can spend another night with you!”

Daniella smiled and sat beside Jack, resting her head on his shoulder.

“Young Master Church, you promised me that you would kill anybody from the White family if they came your way!”

Not long after they settled down, Jack and Daniella heard a soft voice from outside.

“Hah. Don’t worry. I, Nathan Church, will fulfil all my promises to you!”

Soon enough, a man's carefree voice rang out. He added, "Look over there, Babe. There's a crack. Why don't we have some fun in there!"

When they heard this, Daniella and Jack exchanged a glance, speechless. They did not imagine that someone else would spot the crack on the cliff.

"There are still so many geniuses from the Church family around us. Why don't we do it after we get out of here?"

The woman spoke in a flirty, coquettish tone. Goosebumps prickled all over Jack's skin.

"Such pigs!"

Daniella gritted her teeth and huffed.

"No way, Babe. You asked us to help you, so of course I want to experience the benefits now. If you don't give me something now, you might just forget about our deal once we get out. Who should I go to then?"

The man named Nathan spoke again.

Chapter 1346.
"You…"

The woman from the Lagorio family hesitated for a while. Then she nodded her head. "All right then," she agreed." Seriously though. Nobody ever does it in a place like this…"

Nathan gave a wicked grin." Hehehe."

After he said that, he told the few dozen men from the Church family behind him, "Go on top of the cliff to rest. Miss Lucy Lagorio and I will join you after a while!"

"Hah, go ahead, Young Master Church. Go ahead!"

A man gave a wicked smile. "No

Time to waste, Young Master Church. Even we're getting smitten by such a sexy lady!"

"It's Lucy!"

In the cliff's crack, Daniella jumped to her feet. "The Lagorio family is terrible. They would resort to using a seductress to get the geniuses from the other families to kill the White family members, all because they have a grudge against you and want to make your geniuses die in this competition!"

"You know Lucy? Is she

Popular?"

Jack's brows creased together. It had not been long since he returned to the White family. He did not quite know the geniuses from the other families.

Daniella nodded her head. "Not just Lucy. I know Nathan too!"

Here, she told Jack with a grave expression, "Nathan is strong. The Church family is one of the eight reclusive families, as you probably know, and Nathan is the Third Elder's grandson. He has excellent natural talent, and he's already at the advanced stage of the true god realm. He's probably as strong as my eldest sister now. Lucy, on the other hand, is a popular beauty from the Lagorio family. She has a voluptuous figure!"

"I never thought that the Lagorio family would resort to such tactics to bring the White family down!"

Jack clenched his fists, angry." If she convinces Nathan to order the Church family members to kill the White family members on sight, my family will suffer great losses. They'll definitely run into the White family members at some point in this competition!"

"That's right. They're so vicious. The Church family is one of the eight first-class families," Daniella said solemnly, bobbing her head. "Nathan had his eyes set on Lucy a long time ago, but he has never managed to win her over. Now that she's serving herself up to him, of course, he'll agree to whatever she says. More importantly, if a genius like him hunts down your family members with his men, it'll be bad!"

"Thank goodness we're only two or three days into the competition," Jack replied. "And thank goodness I found out about this. It'd be troublesome otherwise."

Here, he paused before continuing, "It'll be best for the White family if I get rid of him now!"

"All right, but be careful. Nathan is pretty strong, and he's a good fighter!"

Daniella could not help but feel worried. After all, that man could probably go toe-to-toe with her eldest sister.

She did not imagine that Jack would answer so flippantly, "It's not like you haven't seen my strength!"

Only then did Daniella recall that Jack had killed eight fighters from the true god realm all alone. Her eldest sister could not accomplish a feat like that. Among the people he killed, there were two fighters at the intermediate stage of the true god realm.

"All right, I believe you!"

Daniella nodded her head.

At this moment, the two people had flown before the crack's entrance.

Chapter 1347.
Jack gave an icy smile, taking deliberate steps outward.

“Oh my. I didn’t think that there was another couple here!”

Nathan, who was at the entrance, was shocked when he saw Jack and Daniella. Then his lips curved into a mischievous grin.

“Jack?”

Lucy was taken aback as well when she recognized Jack. “Tsk tsk. I never thought that you were together with Third Young Mistress Cabello, Jack,” she quickly said, smiling. “Never in a thousand years!”

“That’s right. Aren’t you a couple with First Young Mistress Cabello? Why are you sneaking around with the Third Young Mistress here!”

Nathan gave a wicked smile. “I never thought that you two were bedfellows!”

Daniella folded her arms across her chest furiously. “What are you talking about? We’re just spending the night here. We did nothing! What the h*ll are you saying?”

After she said that, she added with a frosty smile, “Now you, Lucy, are absolutely shameless. Don’t think that we didn’t overhear your conversation. Heh. You’re actually using your body to gain favors-to get the Church family to help you kill the White family. Even a cow has more shame than you!”

“You…”

Lucy was livid, but she quickly tamped down on her anger.“ Heh. Who knows if you two were up to some sneaky stuff before we arrived here,” she said in a mysterious tone. “You must have put on your clothes after you heard us talking. And you dare to speak about us. A woman who steals her sister’s man is the real b*tch!”

“You-you think I’m as shameless as you?”

Daniella was angry. “We were just preparing to spend the night here!”

“Sure, you can spend the night here, but we don’t know how you are going to spend the night, right?”

Nathan spoke with a cold smile on his face.

At this moment, the men waiting below flew up. “Young Master Church, why aren’t you two going in yet?” they asked. “ Who are you talking to!”

When they came before the entrance of the crack, they were stunned by the sight of the two people inside. “My God. Never thought that there’ll be people inside here,” they said. “Isn’t this the heir of the White family? And Third Young Mistress Cabello!”

“No way. Aren’t relations between their families terrible? Why would the Third Young Mistress hang around Young Master White?”

One of the men spoke doubtfully after thinking about it, “Isn’t the First Young Mistress a couple with this fellow? Why is the Third Young Mistress together with him?”

“You all have a lot to say!”

Jack’s expression darkened. “I heard everything you said just now,” he said. “You want to kill the White family members? Heh. You really don’t know how to pick your fights!”

“I never thought that you’d be so feisty. Did you think that the White family is truly considered one of the eight reclusive families? The Church family will never recognize you!”

Chapter 1348.

“All right, Young Master Church. Help me kill him. He really is a big fish!”

Lucy’s eyes brightened after she heard that. “Young Master Church, if you kill this guy, I’ll stay by your side day and night for this entire month!” she spoke happily.

“Hah. Okay. You said it yourself!”

Young Master Church also gave an ecstatic grin after he heard that. He even slapped her *ss.

“You’re such a tease, Young Master Church!”

Lucy’s expression turned flirtatious.

“You dirty people!”

Jack shook his head impatiently. “Nathan, I heard that you’re the grandson of the Third Elder,” he spoke to Young Master Church, “and you have the strongest talent and cultivation level in the Church family. It must have been difficult to break into the advanced stage of the true god realm!”

“Heh. You know a lot about me, eh?”

Nathan chuckled. “No way about it though. I won’t let you go even if you beg me on your knees now,” he said. “Because I made a promise to Lucy!”

“I have no intention of begging!”

Jack clenched his fists and rushed toward his opponent. “I wanted to tell you that it’s a shame you choose death over life with such immense talent. What happens next is your problem!”

“You’ve got a mouth on you. I heard that you’re only at the intermediate stage of the true god realm. You’re an illegitimate son from the mortal realm. Trash like you dreams of killing me?”

Nathan also clenched his fist when he saw Jack rushing over and initiating an attack. His fist collided with Jack’s.

Bang!

A dull explosion rang out. The next second, Nathan was thrown a few dozen meters backward before he managed to steady himself, even though he was of a higher cultivation level than Jack.

Bam!

A man had been standing not too far behind him, never imagining that Jack would send Nathan flying. He did not have time to react before Nathan rammed into him, and blood spurted out of his mouth. He slammed onto the ground, color leached from his face. As someone at the intermediate stage of the semi-god status, he had sustained serious injuries.

“What a powerful attack!”

The rest of them flew backward to gain some distance. Most of them were in the semi-god realm, with only one at the beginning stage of the true god status.

After all, there were not many geniuses at the true god status even within a first-class family.

“No-no way!”

Lucy, who flew backward as well, was utterly stupefied. She suspected that she had seen it wrongly.

She heaved a sigh after she thought about it. “Seriously, Young Master Church? You must have been holding back your strength because you’re underestimating him,” she told Young Master Church.” Seriously. You scared me. You can’t just look down on him like that!”

Nathan did not have the guts to admit that he messed up before the woman he had wanted for so long.

He flashed an awkward smile.” You’re right. I was underestimating this punk. He must have been training particularly in body refinement techniques, so he has quite good strength!”

Here, he flashed another smile at Lucy. “Don’t worry. I’ll use my chi this time. This punk’s cultivation technique isn’t as strong as mine. He’s no match for me!”

Chapter 1349.
After he said that, he clenched his fists and gathered his chi.” You’ve pissed me off, you punk,” he said, glaring at Jack.” I’ll be using my full strength this time!”

“Hmph!”

Jack merely gave an icy smile and clenched his fists as well, gathering his chi.

Whoosh!

This time, Nathan initiated the attack and flew over in a blink of an eye, his fist barreling toward

Jack.

Bang!

Soon enough, a frightening bang rang out. This sound was a lot more terrifying than the earlier explosion.

Yet Nathan only managed to hold on for two seconds before being blown backward by Jack.

“Young Master Church. What….what’s going on? You’re not a match for him?”

Lucy was completely stupefied. Jack flew out and stood before the cliff, staring at them disdainfully, as though he were the most powerful being on earth. His eyes made Lucy suspect Nathan’s ability.

Nathan felt extremely embarrassed. He clenched his teeth and flipped his palm. “Don’ t worry. He’s skilled in using chi, but my weapon is a middle-grade spiritual tool,” he said.” Hmph. Along with my second-grade elementary martial skill, this punk will be reduced into dust!”

Jack flipped his palm and took out his black sword, pouring his chi into it.

Hum!

A terrible shriek of metal rang out, and the black fog began to encase the blade, rippling as though it was swaying to a mysterious dance.

“Why does this resonance feel different?”

Lucy frowned, sensing that something was off. It was as though Jack’s sword had a stronger resonance than Nathan’s middle-grade spiritual tool.

“Flaming slash!”

After Jack poured his chi into the sword, he gave a powerful swing of his sword.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a glowing red sword aura flew out, as if it were a blade of flames streaking toward Nathan.

“Sh*t. That punk’s martial skill is strong!”

Nathan had no more confidence after seeing Jack’s fearsome attack. He threw his own attack out in panic.

Bang!

The two terrifying attacks collided with each other. A scary bang rippled throughout the atmosphere, sending a few Church family members nearby stumbling backward.

“No-no way!”

Soon, Nathan realized that his attack had been completely suppressed by Jack’s. He was so shocked that all color drained from his face. He wheeled around to escape after he cried out.

Unfortunately, after Jack’s attack destroyed his, the remaining sword aura was still terrifying. It rushed toward him with unstoppable force and landed on his back.

Bang!

Nathan flew outward like a kite without a string. He thudded heavily on the ground, spurting blood out. His limbs fell, and he was dead.

“Oh-oh no. Young Master Church is dead!”

The geniuses from the Church family all paled when they saw this. He was the strongest fighter among the Church family geniuses, yet Jack had killed him so easily!

Chapter 1350.

Nathan, who was at the advanced stage of the true god status, was one of the top geniuses among the eight first-class families. These geniuses were considered to be the aces of this competition.

Even if they could not defeat their opponent, it should not be a problem for them to escape difficult opponents. They only had a small possibility of getting killed

Unless their opponent’s fighting strength was far stronger than theirs.

Nathan's death shocked the Church family members that their faces paled. They could not believe their eyes.

"Run!"

Everybody prepared to escape after they recollected themselves.

Jack had dared to kill their Third Elder's grandson, what more them, who had far lower cultivation levels. They were also in a much lower position than many Church family members.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Yet Jack clenched his sword. With a few flashes, he sent a few sword auras flying, immediately killing the fellows who wanted to escape.

Whoosh!

With another flash, Jack appeared before Lucy.

She scanned her surroundings, realizing that all the Church family members were now dead. She was the only one left alive.

She was so frightened that her face paled. Jack slowly raised the sword in his hand, and she quickly fell onto her knees.

"Young Master Jack, please spare me! I-I'm absolutely no match for you!

"If you spare me, Young Master Jack, I-I'll give all the plaques I have to you!"

Lucy kneeled before Jack and begged profusely.

When she saw that he was pouring his chi into the sword and had no intention of replying, Lucy was frightened even more.

However, she quickly thought of something. She bit her lower lip and exposed her collarbone.

"I'll be yours if you spare me!"

Lucy stared straight at Jack, expression determined.

She still had some confidence in herself. She was not as beautiful as Third Young Mistress Cabello, but she had the best figure among the young women in the Lagorio family. She also had vixen-like features. She had not met a single man who was not perverted. Even some elders who were forty or fifty years old would sneak glances at her whenever she swayed her hips.

“So shameless!”

Daniella watched as Lucy tried to seduce Jack from the entrance of the crack. She was so furious that she clenched her teeth. She was too much. That girl seriously had no dignity.

Whoosh!

Yet Daniella did not think that Jack would only be stunned momentarily before he swung his sword. In a moment, Lucy’s head had been chopped off.

Bang!

Her body also thudded onto the floor. Quiet returned to the air.

Chapter 1351.
Jack kept his sword and flew down, collecting the martial rings from all the men.

Daniella flew down as well and flashed a sweet smile at Jack.” You didn’t hesitate at all even when she was trying to seduce you. She was practically serving herself up to you! And you still didn’t fall for her?”

Jack’s actions made Daniella felt very contented. The man she had her eyes on was truly a good man and was not weak to such temptation.

“Heh, do I have to accept someone when they offer themselves to me?”

Jack chuckled and said, “ Besides, a woman like her is like a wh*re without a soul to me. I’ ve only met her once. How could I like her!”

“Let’s go back into the crack and see what you’ve found!”

Daniella gave a small smile and got ready to fly toward the crack.

Yet Jack gave a bitter smile. “Let ‘s not go back in. The bodies are all there. If anyone passes by they’ll spot the crack easily. It’ll be bad if they found out that I killed all of them! Although they said that we could kill anyone in this competition, it’s best if we don’t offend the Church family!”

“You’re right! They might hate you in the future!”

Daniella smiled. “Let’s go. We’ll find another place to rest!”

The two searched for a while before coming across a small cave a few kilometers away. They went right in.

After they went in, Jack took out the martial arts he looted from Lucy and Nathan, and the others.

The regular men from the Church family did not have many items of importance, but Nathan's martial ring contained a red plaque and a few black plaques, as well as his middle-grade sword and a few stalks of spirited grass..,

What Jack did not expect though, was to find a lower-grade sword, a few stalks of spirited grass, and a few plaques in Lucy's martial ring.

"This is a good haul. We actually have a red plaque. This means that we have a hundred black plaques!"

Jack took everything after he studied the spoils of war before him.

"That's right. This means that the red plaques are popping up now. After all, we've already traveled pretty deep into the forest!"

Daniella sat to the side, resting her exquisite head on her palms. She stared at Jack with such eagerness, completely lost in love.

Jack felt embarrassed on the receiving end of the stare. He took out a stalk of first-grade premium spirited grass and a few ingredients, as well as the alchemy pot.

"No way. Are you going to create pills now? I thought that we could finally talk!"

Daniella pursed her lips when she saw that he was going to make pills, clearly unhappy.

"I've never gotten my hands on a first-grade premium spirited grass before, that's why I've had no chance to create first-grade premium pills. Now that I have the ingredients, I should give it a try. I'll give it to you if it's successful!"

Jack flashed a wan smile and spoke to Daniella.

Warmth bloomed in her chest when she heard this.

"Think about it. I've never given anything to you before. Take this as my first gift to you!"

Jack flipped his palm, looking at the young, beautiful girl before him. The alchemy pot floated in the air. With a wave of his hand, a small fire sparked from the chi gathered in his palm, heating the bottom of the pot.

Chapter 1352.

The small flame began to flicker beneath the pot. After a while, Jack managed to heat the entire pot. It was clear that he was an old hand at this.

Daniella did not dare to interrupt Jack. She sat quietly at the side, appreciating the serious expression on Jack's face as he hovered over the pot.

Jack quickly grabbed some ingredients and threw them into the pot, controlling the flame through his willpower, and started to extract some of the liquid.

After a while, he added another handful of ingredients, quietly sensing the changes in the formula and extracting the medicinal liquid.

Time trickled by. After a while, Jack threw all his ingredients into the pot. Beads of sweat began to gather above his brow.

A small smile hung on Daniella's lips as she watched Jack brew the concoction. He knitted and unknitted his brows sporadically, and she thought it was a joy to watch him make pills.

Soon enough, he extracted all the medicinal liquid he could, doing everything with a practiced hand.

After a moment, the most important step of creating pills came along; the liquid started to harden.

Jack continued to control the fire, and the liquid continued to boil and bubble. It shrank and shrank and began to solidify.

"Rise!"

In a flash, Jack raised his hand, and small pills flew up, floating before him. His lips curved into a satisfied smile.

"Was it a success? My God. You succeeded on the first try!"

Daniella's eyes brightened once she saw this. She scurried over." Our First Elder is an expert alchemist, but even he can't create pills on the first try. He always fails a few times before he gets it right."

"Phew!"

Jack released a huff and studied the pills carefully. "Not bad. It was a success. But the color is off. It's probably an ordinary pill!"

"It's already good enough that you succeeded yet you're picking at the color?"

Daniella rolled her eyes at Jack. "If you failed, those ingredients would have truly been wasted!"

Jack nodded his head, then he gently placed the pills onto Daniella's palm. "They're for you. You have good talent, but I heard that you like to slack off. Hopefully, this will help you break into the intermediate stage of the true god realm quickly!"

“All right. Thank you!”

Daniella grinned so hard that her eyes narrowed. “I’ll cultivate myself every night when I’m free,” she said. “Once my level is stable and I’m about to break into the intermediate stage of the true god realm, I’ll take these pills to help me!”

After she said that, she kept the pills and leaned her head against Jack’s shoulder. “You’re so nice to me, Jack!”

The two watched the moon quietly from the outside of the cave. After resting for a while, the sky began to brighten.

The two quickly flew out from the cave and set out for the day.

Both of them did not run into much trouble in the morning. They saw a few monsters after they flew a little deeper into the forest, but the monsters were not very strong, so Jack took care of them quickly.

However, their search was not very successful. They only found two black plaques and two stalks of first-grade premium spirited grass throughout the morning.

Bang bang bang!

In the afternoon, a terrifying explosion tore out not too far away from where the two of them were. It sounded ferocious.

Chapter 1353.

“It seems like a big fight involving a lot of people!”

Daniella frowned. “Let’s go and take a look. What if our family members are there!”

“Okay!”

Jack nodded his head and flew toward the direction of the sound with Daniella.

After they flew for a while, they saw more than a dozen youngsters from the Cabello family on a field of grass. They were surrounded by more than twenty geniuses from the Lagorio family and another dozen more from the Hunt family. The two families were viciously staring at their prey.

There were already seven or eight geniuses from the Cabello family on the ground, their chests no longer heaving.

“Sh*t. The Lagorio family is truly shameless. They actually joined forces with the Hunt family to kill our people!”

Daniella was so furious that she shivered.

“Your second sister is there as well!”

Jack gave a hapless smile once he spotted her from a distance.

He was not that surprised by this turn of events. The Lagorio family was not on good terms with the White family, so of course, they would turn to the Hunt family.

Meanwhile, the Hunt family was evidently holding a grudge against the White family and Cabello family because of what happened between Jack and Helena.

Hence it was not surprising for them to attack the Cabello family members.

“Looks like my sister’s arm is injured. Crap. There are at least two intermediate stage fighters in the true god realm in the Hunt family, and the Lagorio family has one. Even if my sister is at the peak of her form, she’s no match for three fighters at the intermediate stage of the true god realm!”

Daniella quickly realized that there was a nasty gash on Venus’ s arm. Blood poured from the wound, staining her sleeve red.

At that moment, the fighting had temporarily stopped. The people surrounding the Cabello family members all had a wicked smile plastered on their faces, staring at them as though they were prime cuts of meat.

“Listen to me, everyone. Kill all the Cabello family members but keep Venus alive!”

A man at the intermediate stage of the true god realm from the Hunt family declared to everyone. “After all, the Second Young Master told us to bring Venus and Daniella to him if we see them. He’ll appreciate them very much!”

“The Second Young Master is a true womanizer. He even told you this beforehand!”

A man from the Lagorio family flashed a teasing smile.

“Heh. Not bad. There are plenty of geniuses here, and two are at the absolute peak of the intermediate stage of the true god realm. The Hunt family will probably be p*ssed if they were to die!”

Yet at this moment, Jack’s voice rang out nearby.

“Second Young Mistress, it’s Third Young Mistress and the young master from the White family! This is great. I think he’s at the intermediate stage of the true god realm, and the Third Young Mistress is also at the true god realm. Are we finally saved?”

A girl from the Cabello family spotted Jack and Daniella, and her eyes brightened. She told venus.

Venus's heart leaped in delight when she saw them both. She knew that Jack had a flying sword that could go at high speeds. Even if they could not defeat their opponents, it should not be a problem to escape so long as everybody hopped onto Jack's flying sword. At least not everyone would die there.

She was not going to let them capture her alive. She would rather die than be tainted by the fatty Second Young Master Hunt.No. 1 Supreme Warrior
Chapter 1354-1356

Chapter 1354.
"Sh*t. That punk from the White family is here!"

A youth from the Hunt family noticed Jack and Daniella, and his expression darkened. "I heard that the punk is pretty good at fighting!"

"This will be troublesome!"

One of the two intermediate stage true god realm fighters from the Hunt family, named Shawn, could not help but frown when he saw Jack.

However, he quickly managed a cold grin. "He'll be a nuisance, but we have the numbers on our side," he said. "Besides, Venus and the other Cabello family members are severely injured. They're not a match for us even if they work together. But there might be quite a few losses on our side!"

"So confident!"

Jack flipped his palm and took out his black sword, pouring his chi into it.

"The resonance from that sword is very strong!"

Someone quickly realized that the sword was special. His expression darkened as he told the two fighters from the Hunt family.

"Sh*t. I think that punk's sword is an ultimate-grade spiritual tool. Only our master has one of those, yet he has one too!"

Shawn's expression darkened. He flipped his palm and took out his lower-grade spiritual tool, gripping it tightly.

He had originally thought that his tool was a pretty good find, but as he wrapped his fingers around it, he did not feel its novelty anymore.

“Don’t worry. The Lagorio family will attack the Cabello family, while the Hunt family will surround the White punk first. We’ll get his ultimate grade spiritual tool once we kill him!”

The other man at the intermediate stage of the true god status looked at Jack’s sword, desire flaming in his eyes. His fighting strength would be increased substantially if he manages to snatch it.

Shawn’s eyes also brightened when he heard this. They would suffer heavy losses, but everything would be worth it if they could kill Jack.

Jack could only flash a cold smile as he watched the two. They wanted to snatch his treasure away even at their cultivation levels. They were seriously looking down on him.

“Good thinking. But let’s see if you can follow it through!”

Jack emitted a mirthless chuckle and slashed a few sword auras.

“Die!”

The Cabello family rushed toward the Lagorio family again. Meanwhile, the Hunt family retreated to fight Jack instead.

“I’ll help you, Second Sister!”

In a flash, Daniella rushed to Venus’s side.

Bang Bang Bang!

The frightening noise of a fierce skirmish rang out. A few Hunt family members had no way to counter Jack’s sword auras, and they fell dead.

“Feral Slash!”

“Sky Cleaver!”

The two men who were at the intermediate stage of the true god realm threw out a martial skill each.

They thought that they could use their martial skills to easily take on Jack’s normal attacks perhaps they might even injure Jack.

Yet they did not imagine that Jack’s sword aura was so fast. The force behind his slashes were immense, and their attacks were immediately destroyed.

“No way. That punk didn’t even use his martial skills, and…”

Chapter 1355.
Shawn's face darkened. The desire to obtain the ultimate-grade spiritual tool that had flashed before his eyes had diminished. Solemnity replaced it instead.

At that very moment, he sensed how terrifying Jack truly was, thinking about how the man before him was a difficult opponent.

"Heh. I won't waste any more time playing around with you. I can't allow more Cabello family members to die!"

Jack chuckled and poured his chi into the sword again. The resonance that rippled off the sword was even stronger than before.

"Burning Chop!"

Jack took one step forward and gave a mighty swing with his sword. An attack propelled toward his front.

The slash emanated a faint hint, as though it were a comet threatening to burn everything in its path. In a flash, it came before Shawn.

"Sh*t. What martial skill is this? A second-grade premium?"

Shawn was so frightened that his face turned white as he sensed the power behind Jack's attack. He did not know what to do.

"Whirlwind!"

He quickly tapped into his strongest attack. Unfortunately, it was of no use, as Jack's attack destroyed his in a moment. The remaining energy landed on his body.

"Pfft!"

Blood flew everywhere. Shawn's body was immediately cut into half, and he dropped from the sky, completely, utterly dead.

"Sh*t. Young Master Shawn is dead!"

The other man at the intermediate stage of the true god realm was so scared that all color leached from his face. He gave a quick slash and got ready to run.

Yet Jack easily deflected his attack with his own slash. He rushed forward and easily killed the other man with his Flaming Slash.

"Run!"

The other Hunt family members were all shocked when two of their best fighters fell dead.

They scattered into the forest.

“Die!”

Venus and the others were almost defeated by these people. They had zero intention of letting them go, chasing after every one of them and killing them.

The Lagorio family member who was at the intermediate stage of the true god realm wanted to run after seeing that the two fighters from the Hunt family were dead, but he did not manage to escape Jack’s attack.

“Thank you, Young Master Jack. You’re so strong. We would have died if not for you!”

A few girls from the Cabello family flew over, looking at Jack with admiration shining in their eyes, as if they were fans of a celebrity.

“That’s right. You were amazing, Young Master Jack. I think you’re much stronger than the Second Young Mistress!”

“I seriously think that Young Master Jack is stronger than our First Young Mistress as well. He managed to kill two fighters at the intermediate stage of the true god realm with one slash each!”

“I’m in love with you, Young Master Jack. Your fighting ability is amazing. I admire you!”

A few girls from the Cabello family looked like lovelorn fools. Some even confessed straight to Jack.

Venus was internally speechless. Did they have to degrade her like that?

“Ahem. Don’t fret about it too much, Second Sis. He’s just that strong. Hahaha.”

Chapter 1356.
Daniella laughed even though her Second Sister was clearly glum. She was well aware that Second Sis and Big Sis were the idols of the younger generation in the family. Now though, the geniuses of the Cabello family were lavishing Jack with their praises, making him their new idol. Naturally, Second Sis would feel salty about it.

“You’re right. No way about it. He is much stronger than me.”

Venus pursed her lips. She thought about it before speaking, irritated, “But he managed to do so because he has an ultimate-grade spiritual tool. I could be just as strong as he is if I had one too!”

She did not think that Daniella would roll her eyes. “Why don’t you just go ahead and say that you want a superior-grade spiritual tool? Legends say that there’s a treasure that’s even stronger than an ultimate-grade spiritual tool, and that’s the superior-grade spiritual tool. It’ s

just as mysterious as the ultimate god status. It's a pity that no one has actually seen one before. Anyone who gets their hand on one will be unstoppable!"

"A superior-grade spiritual tool?"

It was the first time Jack has heard of this item, and his heart leaped. There were tales of the ultimate-god status and the superior-grade spiritual tool. The third and fourth-grade spirited grass was recorded in the book that the First Elder of the Cabello family had, as well as third-grade alchemical pills. All this was definitely not a coincidence. Jack felt that the ultimate-god status had truly existed before.

"Heh. If I truly had a superior grade spiritual tool, I might just be able to easily kill the First Young Master of the Hunt family. Even Master Hunt might beg for his life before me!"

Venus grinned and folded her arms before her chest.

"Hey. How should we divide the spoils?"

After Venus said that, she asked Jack the question, looking at the bodies on the ground.

Jack could not help but furrow his brows when he heard this. Quite a few fighters from the true god realm as well many of those in the semi-god realm had died. They would probably have plenty of plaques and goodies in their martial rings.

However, even though Venus and the others were saved by him, he could not bring himself to ask for all of it.

Besides, the Cabello family members were already starting to clean up the spoils.

Yet Jack did not expect Daniella to step forward and reply before he did, "Second Sis, all of you managed to survive and win this battle because of Jack. Heh. I think we should give all of the plaques to him. Besides, he's the underdog here. The White family has never won a prize before, right?"

Venus rolled her eyes at Daniella. This girl has not even married Jack but she was already being strung around like a cow. She would be even worse once she was married.

Still, Venus nodded her head once she recalled that it was because of Jack's help that they were able to emerge victoriously. "All right. We'll give him as many plaques as we can find. This is the second time he's saved the Cabello family, after all. We'll split the spirited grass and the weapons fifty fifty!"

"Heh. Surely that's too much. There are so many dead bodies here. If I take all of their plaques, the White family might just have hope of winning!"

Jack coughed awkwardly and flashed a hapless smile.

“Young Master White, just take it. You saved our lives. I’m sure that the plaques are enough compensation.”

Before Venus could give a response, a girl from the Cabello family told Jack with a dazzled expression.

Chapter 1357.

“That’s right. You saved Young Mistress Venus, and you’re a couple with Young Mistress Helena. We’re family. No need to feel sorry!”

Another girl stared at Jack with her wide, doe eyes. Saliva dripped from the corner of her mouth, and she did not realize it.

At the sight of all the young female geniuses from the Cabello family becoming more and more unrestrained, Venus felt even more speechless. She shot a glare at them. “What are all of you doing? Why are you surrounding Jack? Don’t forget that you’re ladies. Behave yourselves!”

The girls gradually retreated when they saw that Venus was angry, but they would still cast glances toward the strong, handsome man.

Daniella did not think that they were out of line though. At any rate, if so many young female geniuses admired Jack, it meant that she had made the right choice. It meant that she had a good eye.

After a while, everyone had finished gathering the spoils of war, with over twenty black plaques in total. Other than that, there were two white plaques.

“So many plaques. Take it quick. Don’t make me regret my decision!”

Venus waved her hand, and the plaques flew toward Jack. She rolled her eyes, her beautiful face even more attractive with the indignant expression.

Jack smiled and took the plaques.

“Can I choose the spirited grass? Some work better for alchemy. But don’t worry. I won’t take more than my share!”

Jack said after he looked at the spirited grass.

“You know alchemy?”

Venus’s lips parted in surprise. Alchemy was a highly technical field, and it required great mental strength. Only those who had fire properties to their chi were able to practice alchemy, and any other practitioner was lucky enough to even produce a few ordinary pills.

Furthermore, there were very few alchemists in the world. They were practically an endangered species. The First Elder of the Cabello family and Second Young Master Hunt were alchemy experts, and it was because of that fact that they earned the respect of many others.

Venus did not think that Jack, who was from the mortal realm, would actually know alchemy.

“Of course he does. Not only is he an alchemist, but a first-grade premium one at that!”

Daniella spoke of Jack with a proud expression. She flipped her palm and took out the first-grade premium pill that Jack gave her. She waved it before her sister’s eyes in a goading manner. “See, Second Sis? Jack created this and gave it to me!”

“My God. It’s really a first-grade premium pill. It’ll be very useful to anyone at the true god status. I didn’t think that Jack could create such a precious item and give it to the Third Young Mistress!”

Quite a few youngsters from the Cabello family stared at the pill with admiration. No wonder the First Young Mistress so easily liked him and even kissed him in public. A man like this was one in a million.

Chapter 1358.
Never mind the others. Even Venus was looking at the pill with admiration.

She stared at it for a while before she simpered toward Jack,” Hmph. Not fair!”

“Not fair?”

Jack furrowed his brows, unsure of what she meant. Venus knew that he and Daniella were the real couple around here. Was it not normal for him to give a pill to his girlfriend?

The other Cabello family members exchanged glances, strange expressions on their faces. It was their first time seeing Venus using a simpering tone when speaking with someone else.

“Of course. Hmph. You’re a couple with Big Sis, and you gave Daniella a first-grade premium pill. But don’t forget that I’m their sister as well!”

Venus harrumphed coldly and spoke in a coquettish voice.

Daniella’s lips parted. She never thought that even though her second sister knew the relationship between her and Jack, she would still pull on a mask to fight for a single pill.

Jack also never thought that Venus would use that excuse to get a pill. He gave a bitter smile. “No problem. I’ll give you another pill like that,” he said.” But I’ll only do it once I’m free at night!”

When Venus heard this, her face broke into a grin. “You said it yourself,” she said excitedly.” Don’t you dare go back on your word!”

“Of course. I always keep my promises!”

Jack nodded his head, then he heard a roar from the distance.

“All right. Let’s split the weapons quickly and get out of here,” he said. “A few monsters are close. Let’s not look for unnecessary trouble!”

“All right. Half-half!”

Venus was especially happy. She had been stuck in the intermediate stage of the true god realm for a while now. If Jack truly gave her the first-grade premium pill, she would be able to break into the advanced stage of the true god status a little sooner. It would be difficult, but the pill would be a significant boost to her abilities.

After all, not only would such a pill contain purified ingredients, without the impurities, it would give a burst of energy when one was about to make a breakthrough. Once one broke through, it could still provide a source of chi.

If one did not have a pill, they would need at least second-grade elementary or second-grade intermediate spirited grass. They would require a few stalks of it as well as some first-grade premium grass before they could even attempt to make a breakthrough

If they only used spirited grass, the effects would be far weaker than using a pill. Not only was the chi in spirited grass less purified than the chi in a pill, but it also does not contain much chi. A stalk of spirited grass would not supply enough chi so one needed to use a second stalk to replenish their chi when they were trying to make a breakthrough.

With this method, one’s spirit could easily be affected while switching between spirited grass and failing to make a breakthrough. If one was unlucky, they would suffer from backlash and become injured. They would need to recuperate for a while and realign their spirit to try once more.

Some people were talented enough, but they would fail to break into the next level multiple times after they reached the intermediate stage of the true god status. Some would have their spirits severely affected but would still be unable to take the next step even after decades of trying, and even till their last breath.

Chapter 1359.

Of course, for some people who lack natural talent, they might even arrive at a bottleneck and not able to advance further in practicing martial arts.

“All right, let’s go! Remember, from today onward, the Cabello family and the White family are on good terms. We’re one family, understand? If we were to meet the White family again, don’t get into any disputes, do you hear me?”

After distributing the spoils of war, Venus waved her hand and gave the order to the geniuses of the Cabello family.

Ray of warm sunshine bloomed inside Jack as he heard Venus’s words. He hoped that the relationship between the two families would improve and become better moving forward through this tournament. At least the three sisters of the Cabello family no longer harbor hatred toward him. It would be even better if they could praise him and say one or two good things about him in front of Alejandro.

Soon, Jack and the others left the scene.

Not long after Jack and the others left, the Second Young Master of the Hunt family arrived at the same place together with several men from the Hunt family

“Sh*t! It’s Shawn! God d*mmit! Shawn Hunt and Hanson Hunt were both at the intermediate stage of the true god realm, and they were killed!”

Staring at the cold bodies on the ground, one of the Hunt family members was shocked to the core. There were quite a few dead men from the Hunt family here on the ground and their martial levels were not low at all. Who could that be who killed them all? They wondered.

“Judging from the condition of these bodies, the fight was not very intense. And from the mess, we can presume that Shawn and Hanson had joined forces with the fighters of the Lagorio family to besiege the Cabello family! Damn, I didn’t expect that even when they have joined forces, they were no match for the other party!”

Tyrell took a closer look at the situation around the scene and concluded with certainty. “There ‘s only one person in the Cabello family who was able to kill Shawn and the others!”

Chapter 1360.

“Am I in heaven now? I get to watch a good-looking man concentrate on refining pills!”

A young girl whispered to another young girl next to her. Her gaze toward Jack was full of admiration and adoration.

“Yes, it’s such a rare opportunity!”

The other pressed her lips together, forming a shy smile. They spoke in a low and gentle voice, fearing that they might disrupt Jack.

“The entrance of this cave is wide and noticeable, we’ll be discovered easily!”

Venus stared at the cave's entrance and her brows snapped together. She was worried.

However, she was confident in the Cabello family's overall prowess. The Cabello family was one of the eight reclusive families and they held a high position in the list. Among the families that participated in the tournament, not many of them could induce fear in the Cabello family. As long as the lady luck was with them today, there should be no problem.

Time passed slowly. Jack's speed in refining the pills was obviously much faster than the previous time when he first made the pill.

After all, the successful experience he had last time boosted his confidence in refining pills. Now he was more and more comfortable with this alchemy process.

"It shall be completed soon. It seems to have started to condense and coagulate. I've observed how the First Elder refined this pill once before!"

Venus wheeled her head and looked at Jack. She breathed a sigh of relief in her heart. She believed that Jack would successfully refine this pill as long as there were no interruptions in a while. The chances of him creating the pill successfully were high since everything seemed to be going very well.

"Hey, there's a cave over here. Let's spend the night there today!"

Nonetheless, at this very moment, Venus heard a man's voice come from outside the cave.

"Good idea, Cousin! The cave seems wide and spacious enough for all of us to stay for the night!"

Another woman's voice sounded right after the man's voice, and it was followed by the chatter of several men. It seemed like there were a lot of men who came to this cave.

Venus's face sunk into the deepest. Daniella, on the other hand, stood up and came next to Venus with a dulled and gloomy face.

"Venus, what should we do?"

Daniella whispered into Venus's ear.

"Sigh! Let's go out and see who they are!"

Venus flashed a bitter smile and walked out of the cave together with Daniella and several geniuses of the Cabello family.

By the time the two of them and their geniuses arrived at the entrance of the cave, the group of people had already stepped into the cave, not too far away from them.

Venus immediately breathed a huge sigh of relief when she noticed that the group of people turned out to be just men from a third-class family. These men before them did not at all pose a single threat to them.

“Sh*t! Young Master, the cave is occupied! And by the people from the Cabello family! We’re so done for!”

A fatty recognized the group of people-Venus and her peoplewho came out from the cave, and terror immediately stabbed his heart. He was trembling inside as he reported to the guy who possessed the strongest combat prowess among them

These were only geniuses from a third-class family; therefore, the highest realm they could go, at most, would be the late stage of the semi-god realm. There was not even a fighter at the peak stage of the semi-god realm, let alone the elementary stage of the true god realm.

Hence, when they saw a member from the Cabello family, their smiles faded and all possible colors drained out of their faces. Some of them even stumbled back a few steps in fear.

“Dear sir and madams, we…we were robbed of our tokens by the Hunt family just before, and now we are really out of tokens. Please spare us and let us go!”

Chapter 1361.

The man who was leading the group was equally frightened. They were afraid of such an encounter with martial practitioners of true god-level ability. The heads on their necks depended on the mood of the stronger fighters. If the stronger ones were unhappy, the weaker ones had to say goodbye to their heads.

They truly did not expect to meet strong geniuses from the Cabello family this late at night.

Venus shot the other party glances before saying, “Leave the place and find another site to stay!”

“Thank you so much, Second Young Mistress Cabello!”

These men before the Cabellos let out a sigh of relief in their hearts and quickly left the scene.

“Sigh. They’re really unlucky to run into the Second Young Master of the Hunt family. The tokens that they’ve worked so hard to get the past few days were snatched away just like that! In a blink of an eye!”

Daniella expressed her thoughts as she saw the other party left the cave.

“They’re considered fortunate that the Second Young Master Hunt did not take their lives. Their family has not offended any other families, they’re good. But the reality is cruel. If the Second Young Master Hunt was in a bad mood, I’m afraid that they will no longer be alive!”

“Hahaha, it’s been a long time!”

Venus’s expression morphed into one of horrified shock in the next second.

At this moment, a cheerful yet sinister laugh shot through the air in the cave. The Second Young Master Hunt and several of his men strode toward the direction of the cave from the White not far away. He looked at Venus and the others smilingly.

“What the heck! Aren’t we too unfortunate? Jack is in the most critical moment in creating the pill right now and he’s gotten nearer and nearer to the end. If he’s disturbed, I think everything will be ruined!”

Daniella’s forehead creased as she spoke to Venus. Concerns and worries were all written on her face.

Venus’s expression hardened.” His martial status is the same as mine. I’ll try to hold him up for a while, and we’ll have to put our bet on Jack. See if he can succeed.” She added.

“Okay. You’ve never fought him before, and I heard that his fighting prowess is very strong and powerful. Second Sis, you have to be extra careful!”

Daniella pressed her lips together and the lines between her brows grew deeper. She was worried for Venus.

“Don’t worry. I’ll be careful!”

Venus replied in a gentle voice.

“Oh my little beauties, what are you muttering over there? Hmm?”

The Second Young Master Hunt stopped not far away and waved his hand, while his men dispersed and surrounded the cave in formation.

The geniuses of the Cabello family who were inside the cave came to the entrance immediately when they heard sounds coming from outside.

Their faces blanched and turned unsightly when they found out that the other party was the Hunt family.

“Nah, nothing worth your attention. Second Young Master Hunt, it’s really been a long time! How’re you doing lately?”

Venus flashed an awkward smile. This was the first time she met the Second Young Master Hunt since the competition started. She was clueless to the fact that the current Second Young Master Hunt was no longer lingering around the intermediate stage of the true god realm and has broken through to the late stage of the true god realm. His combat prowess was a few times stronger than Helena who was already at the late stage of true god realms for several years.

Nonetheless, the Second Young Master Hunt did not know Venus intended to stall him. He simply thought that Venus and the others had already fallen into his grips and were trapped. “Well, I m doing quite well lately. We’re the Hunt family, you know, many of those people from what second-class or third-class families surrender their tokens the second they see me. I don’t even have to fight them! Haha!” he said slowly.

He then stretched his back and added in a prideful tone, “Sigh! It’s really amazing to have high combat prowess and martial status. Everything will be smooth sailing and effortless for me. And such a tournament, for someone like me, actually means nothing!”

Chapter 1362.
“What do you mean by it means nothing? Would you mind elaborating?”

Venus asked deliberately to hold him up and create more time for Jack.

“Heh, it’s not that simple? Those fighters from the second and third-class families can only surrender their tokens to me when they meet me. I don’t even have to fight for it and the tokens are already in my hands. There are not many that can defeat me, even your sister is no match for me! Well, except for my brother, I don’t think there’s anyone else on this earth that can defeat me. Was I clear enough?”

Tyrell chortled and added, “I’ m definitely in the top three in the tournament this time. And based on the overall result, the Hunt family is definitely number one!”

“You’re a little overconfident, aren’t you? I don’t think my sister is weaker than you!”

Venus sneered. Hints of contempt formed in her eyes.

“Heh, you’re not informed, are you? Your sister was almost captured alive by me before. If it wasn’t for that b* stard Jack, who took advantage of my inattention and fled with your sister, she’ d have become my woman by now! Hmph!”

The Second Young Master Hunt snorted coldly. He rubbed his chin and looked at both Venus and Daniella in front of him. “But well, God is fair to me. Your sis has indeed gotten away from my grip, but now God has sent both of you to me. Hehe! It’s going to be even more fun this time around!” he expressed playfully.

Venus did not expect Tyrell to be such a b*stard and shamelessly spill those words. “Oh wow, I initially thought that since you have excellent talent and exceptional alchemy skill, you would be a decent gentleman! I truly didn’t expect that the Second Young Master of the legendary Hunt family to be such a brazen and shameless jerk!”

“A decent gentleman? Heh!”

Tyrell laughed out loud after hearing Venus’s words. “Is being a decent gentleman worthwhile? In the past, I was very conscious of my image and reputation, wanting to

become a ‘decent gentleman’ in your eyes, but what has it brought me? In the end, I’m only a fool who was neglected by the three of you!”

The more Tyrell expressed his feeling, the more agitated he became. “On the contrary, I found that this time the tournament is really tailor-made for me! I don’t have to take into account your feelings. Whoever I want to kill, I will kill, whoever I want to violate, I will violate, including you, the legendary Three Golden Flower of the Cabello family! Gentleman? Decent man? Bullsh*t! You’ll not fall in love with me even if I’m decent! You dislike my ugliness, and my fattiness, don’t you?”

“Funny. We won’t like someone like you, even if you ‘re good-looking!”

Daniella rolled her eyes at the other party and countered without giving face to the other party.

“Hmph, you don’t like me, right? It’s alright. I’ll make you like me in a moment!”

The Second Young Master Hunt grunted coldly. He clenched his fists and a layer of chi energy formed around his fists. The chi energy was vibrating aggressively around his fists.

Venus, on the other hand, was tongue-tied at the situation. She initially planned to hold him up for a while, hence she deliberately asked questions to take Tyrell for a conversational stroll. But, one sentence from Daniella had completely agreed with the beast inside Tyrell.

“Daniella, why did you provoke him!”

Venus expressed her dissatisfaction. She was left with no other way but to step forward with gritted teeth and clenched fists. The chi energy surrounded her clenched fists as well. “I hope I can hold him up for a little longer,” she said.

Daniella only then realized her mistake. Her words caused her and the others the trouble that she could not imagine. She was rendered speechless. She could only ball her fists and enclosed them with chi energy and stood beside her sister.” Venus, this fella is way too powerful. You would find it difficult to fight him alone. We’ve to join forces together to fight him. Besides, we don’ t know about the incident that involved Helena, not sure if he was bragging or if it was true!”

“Alright, your martial status is not low, we shall fight together!”

Venus nodded. The two exchanged glances and charged toward Tyrell in a flash.“That’s right! Only Helena Cabello is capable of that! Venus Cabello was not bad either, but her combat prowess could not wipe off both Shawn and Hanson. Besides, the genius from the Lagorio family was also at the intermediate stage of the true god realm. To kill three geniuses at the intermediate stage of the true god realm in one shot, only Helena could do that!” The men of the Hunt family from before commented and concurred.

Tyrell's face sunk into the deepest. "There's no trace of any monster beasts here, which means they haven't gotten too far from here. Let's go, let's hurry to the forest to pursue after their tracks and see if we could run into them!"

Tyrell's fists clenched tightly as he spoke. "Helena Cabello, hmph! It looks like she has gotten into the killing spree mode against the Hunt family since her escape last time. She better pray that I'd not run into her, otherwise, I'll let her know what the consequences are for going against the Hunt family!"

The geniuses of the Cabello family had become very enthusiastic and warm-hearted toward Jack. Every one of them would listen to his words, including Venus. After Jack had saved her life twice in a row, she had no enmity toward Jack anymore.

When the night arrived, everyone found a spacious cave to live in. Jack took out the alchemical material from the night before to continue his pillmaking

"Jack is going to make and refine the pills; you guys try not to talk loudly so that he could concentrate on refining the pills!"

Venus felt a flare of joy when she saw Jack taking out his pill furnace. If Jack succeeded in refining the pill this time, he would definitely give it to her, she thought.

At the thought that she was about to receive a first-grade premium pill, Venus's spirit lightened and happiness swelled within her.

Chapter 1363.
Swoosh!

Both of the Cabellos were fast; one charged toward Tyrell on the left, and another on the right. They arrived in front of Tyrell within seconds and punched their fists out at him in anger.

"Hmmph. Trying to stall me?"

Tyrell frowned and then laughed sinisterly." Seriously, I don't know what would be the use of you guys holding me up. Haha! You'll still be my spoils of war in the end, sooner or later!"

In just a blink of an eye, he took advantage of the gap where Venus was slightly faster than Daniella and instantly blasted two punches toward the ladies.

Bang Bang!

Two loud thud sounds pierced through the air, and in the next second, Venus has blasted several meters away, only then she managed to stabilize her body and landed on the ground.

However, Daniella-whose martial status was only at the early stage of the true god realm-was blasted several feet away, and after falling onto the ground, mouthfuls of blood gushed out of her mouth. Her face blanched in an instant.

“Daniellita!”

Venus looked in the direction of Daniella, her eyebrows knitted together. “You…you’ re already at the late stage of the true god realm?” She stared at Tyrell with a solemn yet intense

Expression.

“Haha! I was a fan of procrastination and didn’t fancy training and practicing my martial arts. And I still broke through to the middle stage of the true god realm in no time. But this time, to make sure the Three Golden Flowers would be no match for me, I specially trained a little harder before the tournament and broke through to the late stage of the true god realm! So now, not to mention your sister who obviously is not my opponent, even if the three of you join forces together, you guys are still no match for me!”

Tyrell laughed hard and then sneered with a playful expression, “The reason why I want to break through so badly is because I want to make sure I can own the three of you. So that you’ll know that I, Tyrell Hunt, the Second Young Master of the legendary Hunt family, is not someone you can mess with!”

“Shameless b*stard!”

Anger rose in Venus like a tide as she listened to his words. She stared deadly at the other party with malice and hatred; she did not at all see this coming, that this Young Master Hunt was a shameless b*stard!

“Shameless b*stard?”

Tyrell chuckled loud again.” What’s so shameless about me? Even if I kill all geniuses of the Cabello family, it’s still within the rules of the tournament. But, I won’t kill you now, I still want to have some fun with you. I’ll keep you with me, and when we go out to public places, I’ll show everyone that the Three Golden Flowers are my women!”

Tyrell’s eyes were covered with madness. “If the three of you carried my babies in the future, that would be even better! Maybe, by that time, each of you heavily pregnant with a baby belly will beg me to marry you!”

“Dream on! Even if I die, I won’t marry you!”

Fury vibrated through Venus’ s whole being. Tyrell used to have a decent image and reputation. Unexpectedly, he completely tore off his disguise in the midst of this tournament.

Venus clenched her fists and the chi energy once again desperately gushed out and enclosed her fists. She then blasted out a punch toward Tyrell.

A huge fist-shape chi energy soon appeared before Venus. She shot out an incomparably solid fistshape chi energy-that was taller and wider than a mantoward Tyrell. The chi attack carried thick and harsh chi energy, heading straight for Tyrell.

Chapter 1364.

“Heh? Just this?”

When Tyrell looked at this martial technique, a cold smile formed on his face.“ What makes you think that a first-grade premium level yet basic technique would earn you the win? You’re using a technique that people of second-class families

Uses!”

Tyrell recognized this martial technique at first glance. It was an elementary technique. He then clenched his fist and enclosed it with chi energy and blasted out with a single punch.

Swoosh!

In front of him, a larger fist shape chi attack was formed and the attack seemed even more solid than the attack that Venus had just blasted out.

Boom!

A huge thud sounded. Venus’ s attack was easily countered by the other party, even, the other party had cast a more powerful chi attack. Waves of chi energy headed straight toward Venus and blasted her a few meters away. She could taste the bittersweet in her throat, and the next second, mouthfuls of blood spewed out of her mouth.

“I’m getting bored. Let’s end this!”

Tyrell, once again, let out a cold smile and slapped out another punch.

This time, an even larger palm-shaped chi attack flew out of his palm. The air around the attack vibrated vigorously and the leaves on the trees nearby had fallen due to the strong air vibration. Leaves and dust began to dance with the wind resulting from the chi energy. The attack was more terrifying than the previous one.

In facing the frightening chi attack, Venus’s eyes were filled with a grave and solemn look. She then flipped her palm and drew out a precious sword, and began to inject her chi energy into the sword.

“Ah!”

Venus let out a soft cry and swung her sword. A semicircular blade was shot out and headed straight for the palm-shaped chi attack. The blade attack carried unrelenting chi energy.

“Heh? A second-grade martial technique? From the looks of it, it should be a second-grade elementary level!”

On the opposite side, Tyrell’s eyes slightly lit up at the blade attack in front of him.” This martial skill is not bad. And you made it seem terrifying too. Good job! But, it’s nothing in front of me. You’re still too naïve to hope that this kind of attack could counter my attack!”

Boom!

Just before Tyrell’s words fell, the attacks from both sides once again collided with a deafening sound, causing the geniuses of the Hunt family-who stood not far away-to stumble a few steps back. The clash between the two powerhouses, allowing them to, once again, witness the strength of the top three of the reclusive families.

The huge palm-shaped chi attack was naturalized a lot by the blade attack, however, the blade attack by Venus was obviously not solid and strong enough to hold back Tyrell’s attack. Tyrell’s attack had slowly devoured every bit of Venus’s attack.

“Dammit! He’s too powerful! We’re simply not his opponent. He’s completely at a different level!”

Venus’s face turned even more unsightly at the realization. Beads of sweat were dripping down from her forehead.

In order to make her attack a little more powerful, she had actually injected some of her mental strength into it, so that her attack could be stronger and more solid.

Nonetheless, if her attack was destroyed, she would also suffer severe injury.

“Pfft!”

Sure enough, Venus’s sword aura was completely destroyed by Tyrell. She spurted out plenty of blood.

Tyrell’s palm-shaped chi attack was only neutralized by a little. With the remaining chi attack, it continued to rush forward and was about to land on Venus’s tiny body

“It’s over. I’ll be seriously injured this time!”

Venus could not help but smile bitterly at the situation before her. The other party was already at the late stage of the true god realm. The thickness and powerfulness of his chi energy was nothing she could compare with.

Chapter 1365.

Not to mention that Tyrell was the prodigy among the geniuses. The technique he used was a high-level technique of the Hunt family. Venus was no match at all.

Swoosh!

Nevertheless, a dark silhouette bolted out from the cave within milliseconds at that moment and stood in front of Venus. A sword aura was cast out toward the front.

Swoosh!

The sword aura appeared and landed directly on top of the palm-shaped chi attack. The two chi attacks clashed wildly together, and in the end, they neutralized and canceled each other out.

“Jack! You’ve done refining the pill? That’s great!”

Seeing that it was Jack who blocked Venus, Daniella’s spirits flew high, at the same time, the boulder in her heart was lifted. She had seen Jack s combat prowess with her own eyes. He was so much stronger than her second sister-Venus.

“Yup, the pill is completed. Thanks for helping me to earn some time. I was about to succeed, and if I was interrupted, everything would be ruined and I’d have to restart the whole process!”

Jack bobbed his head and then looked at Venus who was behind his back. “Leave it to me!”

“You, alone? Are you sure you can defeat him? Why don ‘t I join forces with you and perhaps we have a chance to win that way!”

Venus was a little concerned.

Without responding to Venus, Jack flipped his palm and took out a healing pill for Venus. “Retreat to the cave. This fatty sc*mbag, I’ve long wanted to teach him a lesson, and this time there are no intervening factors; no one else is here. I won’t let him off the hook again this time!”

“Tch, tch! Who else can that be? Of course, the b*stard Jack is here. Last time I let you get away with Helena. Today, God sent you to me again, I won’t let you have the chance to escape anymore!”

Once Tyrell saw that the dark figure was Jack, he started to laugh coldly. Then he wheeled his head to face Daniella and Venus, “Oh, now I get it. You two were trying to earn some time for this b*stard, right? Waiting for him to finish refining the pill and come out to rescue you! Hehehe! What a bunch of naïve toddlers. This b*stard escaped with your sister from me! Do you think he could save you when he was the escapee?”

“I believe in Jack!”

However, Venus stepped forward and voiced her faith. “Hmmm. What’s that name again? Shawn? Shawn Hunt? Wasn’t he killed by Jack in a blink of an eye?”

“You killed him?”

The Second Young Master Hunt was taken aback by the new piece of information. He was surprised. “Right, I forgot, that you were able to rescue Helena right under my nose, so your combat prowess should be similar to Helena’s. It looks like you’ve also broken through to the late stage of the true god realm!”

Tyrell halted before continuing, “But, even if you’ ve broken through to the late stage of the true god realm, that’s of no use too. Helena is in this realm and she’s considered as one of the tops and yet she is no match at all!”

“I didn’t kill you last time because, first, I don’t want to offend the Hunt family, and second, I sensed two unfamiliar auras hiding under the shadow that time. If I were to kill you that time, they’d have fled immediately and reported to their masters. Then, when the tournament was over, everybody would know that I killed you. That’d be bad!”

Jack responded with an emotionless face. “But now there are no outsiders here, and the things you’ve done recently have made me set my mind to kill you!”

“Wow, set your mind to kill him? Brat, aren’t you a little bit too arrogant? The strength and power of our Second Young Master is not something you can be compared with!”

A genius of the Hunt family who was standing aside sneered and had his arms clasped before his chest, as though he was hearing the biggest joke ever.

“That’s right, our Second Young Master Hunt’s talent is so powerful that even the First Young Master has to be careful with him! It’s just that he was slacking before and didn’t really like to train. Otherwise, he’d have become the youngest person to have reached the peak of the true god realm!”

Another young female genius chimed in, likewise, she worshipped and admired the Second Young Master Hunt immensely.

“Brat, come on. You won’t be able to get away this time!”

Tyrell stretched out his hand, the chi energy on it began to surge incessantly. The chi energy on his body also dispersed and blended into the surrounding, making the leaves under his feet flew and fluttered around him.

Chapter 1366.

“What a strong aura! Can Young Master Jack take it?” Several young people from the Cabello family started worrying for Jack after they felt the Second Young Master Hunt’s strength.

“There’s nothing to worry about. We’ve witnessed Young Master Jack’s combat power before this!” said the several women who adored Jack, confidently so. “Their strength must be comparable even if he can’t win. By then, there would still be time for us to escape. Anyway, it wouldn’t be an issue if Young Master Jack took action!”

“Tiger Roaring Fist!” came Second Young Master Hunt’s roar, fists balled tightly as he punched toward the person in front of him.

“Roar!” The sound of a terrifying tiger roar could be heard following his punch. A tiger accumulated by his Chi appeared in front of him.

The realistic tiger seemed to stand a few meters tall as it carried itself like the king of the jungle.

“Oh my god!” Face contorted in horror, Daniella yelled to the rest, “Everybody, back off!”

Members of the Hunt family were also startled by this. They traveled some distance away as they were afraid of getting hurt in the fight.

“Young man, do you know how strong I am right now?” Second Young Master Hunt smiled coldly. “I’ve already connected my mental strength with this attack so that its power can be maximized to the strongest level. This is all to end you, right here, right now!”

“Let’s see if you’re capable of that!” Jack curled his hands into fists and also punched forward. A light-blue color dragon took to the air as a frightening dragon’s sound could be heard.

This dragon seemed to be equally shocking. The dragon seemed lifelike in appearance as its whiskers, talons, and scales could be made out clearly.

“What the f*ck?! This martial skill is quite strong!” Daniella’s eyes lit up when she saw this. “Is this the Tiger Dragon Fight? Where did Jack get this martial skill from? He’s impossible; this is a second-grade intermediate martial skill!”

“Seems like you’re strong enough to stand against me, young man!” Second Young Master Hunt’s fighting spirit was also ignited. “You’re a surprise in this competition. It looks like you’ve broken through and achieved the final stages of the true-god level. It’s impossible for you to carry out such a powerful attack if you hadn’t! You’ve broken through, so it’s no surprise you dare fight me!”

Jack was speechless. “Let me show you my fighting prowess!”

Jack slowly released his suppressed aura after he spoke. For the first time, the aura his body and his vibration that he hid well for so long was released “I–Impossible!” Second Young, Master Hunt shook his head continuously when he felt that Jack’s aura was much stronger than his. “Based on your vibration, you still have the fighting prowess of an intermediate stage at the true god level, but your aura has already achieved the final stage,

maybe even the peak stage of the true-god level. What… What martial art technique did you train yourself with?"

"Haha… I don't think there's a need to explain that to you!" Jack laughed, no longer bothering to continue. With a wave of his hand, the dragon flew to the sky before rushing down at the tiger.

"Roar!"

Second Young Master Hunt also waved his hand and the tiger in front of him rushed forward.

Thooom!

Both animals immediately crashed onto each other.

"Die!" Second Young Master Hunt gritted his teeth as he looked forward in hatred. He had tightly connected his mental strength with the tiger.

Jack could also feel how strong Second Young Master Hunt's combat power was. If that was not the case,

Helena, who was already in the final stage of the true-god level, could not have lost to him.

Chapter 1367.
Nonetheless, Jack's combat power was much stronger than Helena's.

"Go!" Focusing his line of sight, he controlled the dragon to roar continuously with his mental strength. The dragon lunged at his opponent with its huge talons.

Crack!

Unable to withstand its might, the tiger slowly fell apart.

Although Jack's dragon had started to dim and looked like it would break at any moment, its attack was much stronger than the tiger's, and that showed.

"Mphf!"

Eventually, Second Young Master Hunt could not hold up as he vomited a mouthful of blood. He turned pale as he stumbled a couple of steps backward.

"How's this possible? He's wounded?!" The Hunt family prodigies that were extremely confident in Young Master Hunt were floored at the turn of events before their eyes, and they wondered if they were hallucinating.

Jack's attack had genuinely wounded Second Young Master Hunt.

“This is great!” Inwardly ecstatic, Helena nearly leaped in excitement. She could never have withstood Second Young Master Hunt’s attack.

However, not only did Jack withstand this attack, but he even destroyed the attack and wounded the opponent.

Roar!

The dragon had dimmed and turned smaller, though it still rushed toward Second Young Master Hunt with its overpowering dragon’s might.

Second Young Master Hunt saw the dragon come rushing to him the moment he vomited blood, and he was so frightened that his face continued to pale. In a hurry, he could only gather a thin layer of Chi protective layer around his body to protect himself.

Second Young Master Hunt regained a faint peace of mind after he protected himself. He was lucky to have made it in time, or he would have been badly wounded if he was struck by the remaining wave of energy from Jack’s attack.

Thoom!

The dragon carried its remaining power and crashed against Second Young Master Hunt’s protective layer the moment it was formed.

The protective layer started to tremble and the strong impact forced Second Young Master Hunt to move several steps backward.

Second Young Master Hunt’s face was covered in cold sweat, but he managed to withstand it in the end as the barrier blocked the entire attack.

“It looks like there’s still some difference!” Jack sighed faintly when he saw how his opponent managed to hold himself against his attack. He seemed to be displeased with himself.

Second Young Master Hunt’s heart bled when he heard this. This guy had wounded him already, yet he was still displeased with what he did. This was a huge humiliation to him.

“You got on my nerves, young man!” Second Young Master Hunt dismissed his protective layer and moved forward. With the flip of his hand, a sword appeared.

“A middle-grade spiritual tool?” Jack gave it a glance before taking out his sword with a flip of his hand. He then infused his Chi into his black sword.

The sword in Jack’s hand immediately emitted a daunting wave of fluctuation. As for Jack, his imposing manner had increased by several folds compared to previously.

“What is this weapon? Even his momentum has changed!” Several young people from the Hunt family grew fearful when they saw Jack’s sword and the confidence Jack unconsciously showed.

If… If their Second Young Master Hunt died, none of them—who had low fighting prowess-could escape.

Chapter 1368.

“It’s an ultimate-grade spiritual tool!” Tyrell soon felt the difference of that black sword in Jack’s hands. Initially pompous and confident in himself, he grew wary as realization dawned on him, his doubt reflected in his expression.

“What?! It’s an ultimate-grade spiritual tool?”

“No wonder this guy is so confident; it’s because he owns such an invaluable item!”

“I wonder if the second young master can still defeat that guy this time!” Several members of the Hunt family were slightly worried after they confirmed that the sword in Jack’s hands was indeed an ultimate-grade spiritual tool.

“Don’t worry. Our second young master had trained his martial skill, Hundred Leaves Chop, to its best. His combat power isn’t something a normal person can compete with. As for Jack, even though he has the support of an ultimate grade spiritual tool, he’s only in an intermediate of the true-god level. There’s still a lot of hope for us!” a man from the Hunt family said confidently after he thought about it.

With that, many of them grew somewhat more confident about the situation after they heard this analysis.

“Hundred Leaves Chop!” At this moment, Tyrell swung his sword toward Jack.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

One by one, attacks in the form of leaves appeared in front of him. There were more than 100 leaf blades as they covered a huge space.

Jack eyed the attack and discovered that these leaves were much faster compared to those Tyrell used to attack Helena before. These leaves were also sharper than before.

This guy was an indisputable genius as his fighting prowess had once again risen within these couple of days upon entering the forest.

Jack had no doubt that Tyrell would be able to break through and achieve the peak stage of the true-god level if he focused on training.

“Blade Wave!” As he noted the leaves aiming toward him, Jack swung his sword and used his second-grade premium martial skill, Blade Wave.

Fwoosh! Fwoosh! Fwoosh!

Waves of sword aura appeared in front of Jack as though they were like flying swords. The flying swords coagulated into waves and went surging toward Tyrell, endless as they attacked him.

“This guy has a secondgrade premium martial skill too?” Second Young Master Hunt was extremely frightened when he saw Jack’ sattack. He remembered how Jack also used a martial skill when he rescued Helena, but that martial skill was not as domineering as this one.

Nonetheless, the previous martial skill was just as daunting.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Two horrifying attacks collided against one another at that moment, and bursts of explosions could be heard.

Members from both the Cabello family and the Hunt family watched on, utterly nervous. Everybody knew that such a fight between experts would decide the outcome this time.

No matter which side won, the other party would only be left with death.

Within seconds, the members of the Hunt family started exclaiming as they realized that there was something wrong about the situation, “This is bad. Second Young Master Hunt’s Hundred Leaves Chop couldn’t break through Jack’s attack. The leaves were crushed upon impact!”

“Run!” One of them turned around and started flying toward the forest, not bothering to think twice about the situation.

“Go after them!” Daniella immediately ordered members of the Cabello family when she saw how the people from the other side had prepared to escape.

Chapter 1369.

“We need to run! Quickly!” The other members of the Hunt family started to fly away and attempted to escape when they saw that Second Young Master Hunt was no longer able to stand his ground against the attack

Thoom!

Tyrell could not bear it anymore after the explosion occurred. All his leaves had been destroyed and he vomited a mouthful of blood.

Already heavily wounded before, his face turned extremely pale after he was gravely injured again.

About half of the power from Jack's attack came toward him.

"No!" shrieked Tyrell. When he realized he no longer had the time to escape, he gritted his teeth and quickly formed a small Chi protective layer around his being to surround himself.

Jack's remaining attack pummeled against the protective Chi layer the moment it was formed.

Crack!

Second Young Master Hunt had hoped that the protective Chi layer could tank at least half of the attack for him, but unexpectedly, the protective layer burst into pieces and fell apart in less than a second after the attack landed on it.

Thoom!

The terrifying attack burst on Second Young Master Hunt's body, and it sent him flying several meters far.

Thunk! Thunk! Thunk!

Several trees broke and fell to the ground as his body crashed against them. In the end, Second Young Master Hunt laid on the ground like a dead dog that could not even move a finger.

Jack once again appeared in front of Second Young Master Hunt in a flash. At this moment, Second Young Master Hunt's eyes were filled with disbelief as he spouted mouthfuls after mouthfuls of blood.

Jack had a cold expression on his face as he raised the sword in his hands.

"How… How dare you want to kill me? I'm the Hunt family's second young master. Young man, if you kill me…" Second Young Master Hunt threatened Jack with his faint breath.

Fwoosh!

Unfortunately, Jack had stabbed him with his sword before he finished his sentence. Blood spluttered out and Second Young Master Hunt died just like that.

Jack knelt and picked up Tyrell's martial ring.

"Mphf!"

At that moment, blood audibly sputtered out of Quentin's mouth as he waited outside the forest.

"Master Hunt, what happened?!" asked Trenton immediately as he felt that something was wrong after he saw what happened. Everybody else also looked at Quentin.

“Damn it… Somebody killed my son! Tyrell… Tyrell has been killed!” So enraged was Quentin that his face turned green and his voice trembled.

He never thought his son would die. Apart from that, the competition had just started for a couple of days.

“That’s impossible. How do you know that, Master Hunt?” The other family masters were in disbelief when they heard this. They could not believe that a genius like Tyrell would die in such a competition.

Apart from that, nobody would be daring enough to kill him even if his opponent was stronger than him. Although life-and-death matters were placed aside in this competition and nobody could look into what happened after the competition ended, everybody knew how strong and domineering the Hunt family was. Who would dare kill the son of the Hunt family ‘s master under normal circumstances?

Even if they wanted to kill somebody from the Hunt family, they would have chosen somebody who did not have a high position instead of Tyrell Hunt.

“The Hunt family has a secret technique, and we’re able to form connections with a person after we inject our mental strength into them. At the very least, we’re able to know if he’s alive or dead.” Quentin gritted his teeth as hatred filled his eyes. He wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth as he added, “If the other person died, the person who used this secret technique on him would also be wounded.”

Chapter 1370.

“Now, the connection between me and my son, Tyrell…is severed! My son!” Quentin seemed to have grown a couple of years older within mere moments as he plunged into despair.

“I’d like to know which family this prodigy who killed the Second Young Master Hunt came from!” came the hushed murmurs among some of them.

“That’s right, this person is really daring. I think only the top geniuses from the Eight Reclusive Families are able to do this!” said a family master from the second-class aristocratic family after carefully thinking over it. “It’ s considered remarkable for prodigies from aristocratic families like ours to be in the initial or intermediate stage of the true-god level. They don’t have the strength to kill the Second Young Master Hunt!”

“My… My son had already broken through to the true god level’s final stage before he entered the forest, and he also has a middle-grade spiritual tool with him! Who’ d be strong enough to kill him? I want to know, now!” The furious Quentin tightened his fists, unable to register his son’s death.

Although life-and-death was also a personal responsibility during the previous competitions, the competitions were carried out on a stage in a one-on-one configuration. Apart from that,

the competition was considered over when one of them proactively admitted defeat and jumped off the stage.

He had his reasons for choosing to have a tangled fight in the forest under Kobe Mountain.

He wanted the members of the Hunt family to kill as many prodigies from the first -class aristocratic families as possible. If he succeeded, the families would face a gap between old and new prodigies. By then, the Hunt family would maintain their indisputable first-place ranking

That was also the reason he repeatedly stressed that life and death were personal responsibilities in this competition. Nobody was allowed to investigate what happened during the competition after it ended.

He never would have imagined that his second son would die inside the forest.

“He had broken through into the true-god level’s final stage and still got killed?

Whoever killed him must be in the true-god level’s final stage too!” Family Master Lagorio immediately thought about Jack when he heard this. Even if the Hunt family did not look into this right away, the members of the Hunt family would surely hate the White family if he framed the White family for Tyrell’s death.

Trenton immediately walked forward and spoke after he thought about this, “Master Hunt, I don’t think there are many who can manage this, and there’s a huge possibility that it’s that young man, Jack White. That guy is extremely talented and has a rather daunting combat power. I met his punch before, and I know how scary his true strength is!”

Nash was furious when he heard this. How could he not know what the b*stard Trenton was trying to do?

He immediately walked forward and said, “Master Hunt, you can’t listen to the nonsense Master Lagorio talks about; this old fella is obviously lying through his teeth. How can my son match up to the second young master when he had just broken through to the truegod level’s intermediate stage recently? All of you know that our relationship with the Lagorio family is extremely bad right now, and he’s blatantly trying to frame us for this!”

“Haha… I still think that there’s a huge possibility that this is your son’s doings. We all know that Second Young Master Tyrell Hunt pursued Eldest Young Mistress Helena Cabello previously, but Helena publicly kissed your son on the streets and said that the two of them are lovers!”

Chapter 1371
Trenton then continued, as if he saw the fight with his own eyes, “No doubt, Second Young Master Hunt hates your son for that. It’s highly likely that they had a fight to the death if they happened to meet during the competition. Your son is highly suspicious in this case!”

“Nonsense!” Nash was so angry that his face turned green as he resentfully snapped, “My son is quite strong, but he’s just broken through and achieved the true-god level intermediate stage recently, around one month ago. Even if Second Young Master Hunt hadn’t broken through, my son wouldn’t have bested him. Moreover, Second Young Master Hunt had already broken through and achieved the final stage of the true god level. How could my son stand up against him?”

Agitated to the extreme, Nash could not allow Trenton to blame Tyrell’s death on members of the

White family.

The Hunt family’s old master was also infuriated and stood there in silence. He spoke up when he saw how agitated Nash was, “That’s enough. I don’t think your son is capable enough. I know my grandson’s combat power, and he had trained the second -grade premium martial skill to its best. Together with the fact that the middle-grade spiritual tool can also increase his combat power, it’ s impossible for that illegitimate son of your family to kill him!”

Nash relaxed when he heard this. With a faint gesture of his hands, he commented,” Old Master Hunt is a wise man. It’s obvious that this old b*stard Trenton Lagorio is trying to sow discord and get rid of us with a borrowed knife!”

“Haha! Why are you so agitated, Nash White? I was just making assumptions since nobody knows about the situation in the forest at this moment. We can’t even hear the fighting noises there as everything has been isolated by this blue-colored cover. Who knows if your son truly did it? You’re so agitated because you’re afraid and guilty!” Although Trenton also felt that Jack did not do this, he did not want to miss out on this great opportunity to frame Jack.

After all, Jack would really be in trouble if he succeeded in persuading everyone. There was a possibility that the White family would be ripped apart without Trenton doing anything about it.

“I don’t want to waste my time talking to you—all you know is framing others!” Antagonized, Nash crossed his arms at his chest as he ignored Trenton.

Master Ximenes, Master Zachary, and even Master Cabello had grim expressions as their families had prodigies at the final stage of the true-god level. Hence, all of them felt that there was a possibility that somebody from their families killed Second Young Master Hunt.

Alejandro Cabello was extremely worried as Second Young Master Hunt had pursued Helena before. What if Helena was the one who killed Second Young Master Hunt because he pestered her during the competition?

After all, he felt that Helena had a terrifying combat power, and it was very likely she was the one who killed him.

Trenton suddenly glanced at Alejandro at this moment. He thought about it before he patted his head and said, “I get it now. That guy Jack might not be able to defeat Second Young Master Hunt, but what if he worked with Eldest Young Mistress Cabello? That’s likely, no? Jack has quite strong fighting prowess, and Eldest Young Mistress Cabello has the fighting prowess of the true-god level’s final stage!”

Quentin had a small frown on his face as he turned to Alejandro.

Alejandro was inwardly nervous, considering Quentin had the highest combat power among all the family masters. Even the number one master, the first elder from the Cabello family, was not his opponent.

This was the first time he felt afraid as he met Quentin’s cold, hateful gaze.

Chapter 1371.
Trenton then continued, as if he saw the fight with his own eyes, “No doubt, Second Young Master Hunt hates your son for that. It’s highly likely that they had a fight to the death if they happened to meet during the competition. Your son is highly suspicious in this case!”

“Nonsense!” Nash was so angry that his face turned green as he resentfully snapped, “My son is quite strong, but he’s just broken through and achieved the true-god level intermediate stage recently, around one month ago. Even if Second Young Master Hunt hadn’t broken through, my son wouldn’t have bested him. Moreover, Second Young Master Hunt had already broken through and achieved the final stage of the true god level. How could my son stand up against him?”

Agitated to the extreme, Nash could not allow Trenton to blame Chet’s death on members of the White family.

The Hunt family’s old master was also infuriated and stood there in silence. He spoke up when he saw how agitated Nash was, “That’s enough. I don’t think your son is capable enough. I know my grandson’s combat power, and he had trained the second-grade premium martial skill to its best. Together with the fact that the middle-grade spiritual tool can also increase his combat power, it’s impossible for that illegitimate son of your family to kill him!”

Nash relaxed when he heard this. With a faint gesture of his hands, he commented, “Old Master Hunt is a wise man. It’s obvious that this old b*stard Trenton Lagorio is trying to sow discord and get rid of us with a borrowed knife!”

“Haha! Why are you so agitated, Nash White? I was just making assumptions since nobody knows about the situation in the forest at this moment. We can’t even hear the fighting noises there as everything has been isolated by this blue-colored cover. Who knows if your son truly did it? You’re so agitated because you’re afraid and guilty!” Although Trenton also felt that Jack did not do this, he did not want to miss out on this great opportunity to frame Jack.

After all, Jack would really be in trouble if he succeeded in persuading everyone. There was a possibility that the White family would be ripped apart without Trenton doing anything about it.

“I don’t want to waste my time talking to you—all you know is framing others!” Antagonized, Nash crossed his arms at his chest as he ignored Trenton.

Master Lucas, Master Canmore, and even Master Cabello had grim expressions as their families had prodigies at the final stage of the true-god level. Hence, all of them felt that there was a possibility that somebody from their families killed Second Young Master Hunt.

Alejandro Cabello was extremely worried as Second Young Master Hunt had pursued Helena before. What if Helena was the one who killed Second Young Master Hunt because he pestered her during the competition?

After all, he felt that Helena had a terrifying combat power, and it was very likely she was the one who killed him.

Trenton suddenly glanced at Alejandro at this moment. He thought about it before he patted his head and said, “I get it now. That guy Jack might not be able to defeat Second Young Master Hunt, but what if he worked with Eldest Young Mistress Cabello? That’s likely, no? Jack has quite strong fighting prowess, and Eldest Young Mistress Cabello has the fighting prowess of the true-god level’s final stage!”

Jared had a small frown on his face as he turned to Alejandro.

Alejandro was inwardly nervous, considering Jared had the highest combat power among all the family masters. Even the number one master, the first elder from the Cabello family, was not his opponent.

This was the first time he felt afraid as he met Jared’s cold, hateful gaze.

Chapter 1372.

“What sort of nonsense is that?!” Alejandro aimed his glare at Trenton. “Master Lagorio, don’t you think I’d kill you if you continue speaking such nonsense? On what grounds are you saying that my daughter is the killer when you don’t have any evidence? Show us the evidence if you’re so capable!”

“That’s right. It’s in your others without any evidence!” The White family and Cabello family had bad blood between them for a long while, and that placed them both at odds with each other.

However, this was the first time Nash sided with Alejandro

“That’s right. Jack had just broken through and achieved the true-god level intermediate stage, so his combat power isn’t strong. Also, while it’s true that my daughter is powerful in her own rights, it wouldn’t have been so easy if they wanted to kill the Second Young Master Hunt. I don’t think they’d both be able to kill him, even when they worked together!” refuted Alejandro angrily.

“Haha… That’s hard to say. What if your daughter pretended to seduce Second Young Master Hunt with her beauty? After all, it’s difficult for Second Young Master Hunt to resist her seduction, since he likes her so much. What if she attacked the second young master sneakily when his guard was down? Wouldn’t the second young master be in trouble then?” Trenton started laughing; it was obvious he would utilize the situation to the best he could for his gain.

The memory of Nash ripping his daughter’s fighting prowess set him ablaze with hatred.

Unable to tolerate Trenton's nonsense, the Cabello family' s first elder walked forward and snapped, "Trenton Lagorio, you're like a dog right now-a rabid dog, might I add. Do you plan to bite anybody you see?" He looked at the crowd and continued, "Among the geniuses from the Ximenes family, Zachary family, Lancaster family, and even the Church family, which family doesn't have geniuses that are in the final stage of the true-god level? Even if one can't manage it, what if several geniuses work together? Haha… You framing our eldest young mistress baselessly disgust us!"

Similarly, Master Lancaster stepped up to the plate and chimed in, all while he wore an indifferent smile, "That's right. I think that this might be the doing of the Lagorios. Don't the Lagorio family have beautiful ladies, too? Haha…! Since Master Lagorio was the first to speak of seducing one with beauty for a sneak-attack, I'm sure the members of your family are no strangers to such a tactic!"

Master Ximenes was also afraid that it was his son. He thought about it and asked Quentin tentatively, "By the way, Master Hunt, since you' re the one who activated this formation, do you know who killed your son via this formation? Apart from that, can your secret technique only inform you that your son died and which of your sons died, but not the killer's identity?"

In fact, this was the first time anyone heard about such an undisclosed technique, and it piqued their curiosity greatly. They had no idea that Master Hunt could come up with something like this.

Quentin smiled bitterly. "I am the one who restored this formation, but this is how the formation is. How would I know what happened in the forest?"

Quentin paused here for a short moment before he continued, "I used this secret technique on my sons because I was worried about them, and also because I wanted to test this secret technique. Alas, this technique can't reveal his killer."

Master Ximenes, Master Zachary, and the other family masters inwardly relaxed when they heard this. All of them were afraid that it was a genius from their family who did this. After all, even though they were strong, they were still weaker when compared to the Hunt family. Apart from that, who would offend the Hunt family without any reason?

"By the way, Master Hunt, didn't you all agree that life and death are personal responsibilities when participating in this competition? In my opinion, Master Hunt should repress your grief and accord with this inescapable change. Is Master Hunt intending to investigate the matter? That doesn't sound fair… When I paid you a visit yesterday, you purposely told me that this competition aims to challenge our prodigies, and that there might be a lot of deaths…" Master Lancaster, Shelby, smiled and continued, "Hence, the prodigies you spoke of must've included your son and other members of your Hunt family, am I right? It's unfair that our geniuses can die during the competition and yours can't, right?"

Chapter 1373.
The corners of Quentin's mouth slightly twitched when he heard this.

The Hunt family's first elder stepped forward and glared at Shelby angrily while he spoke," Shelby, what's the meaning of this? How can this be the same? That is our Hunt family master's son, and the second young master is the proudest son of our family master. Second young master is not only talented, but he's also a second grade elementary alchemist. How can you compare such a genius with yours?"

"Haha…! It looks like you people never planned to treat all of them equally!" Shelby smiled coldly. "If that's the case, you guys should've never allowed your family master's son to join the battle!"

"That's right! Are you implying that our sons aren't human beings?"

"You've gone too far this time. How could our sons die but yours can't? Why did you people set such a rule for this competition then?" One by one, some of the elders and family masters from the third-class aristocratic families stood forward and started to show their infuriation.

After all, they had started to worry about their prodigies upon learning the competition's rules. They somehow felt that this competition was a way for Master Hunt to weaken the strength of other families, in fear that some of the families had too many geniuses and would surpass their family in the future.

They could do nothing about it when rules were set in stone.

Nonetheless, how could they not get angry when the other party expressed such a controversial thought?

"First Elder, what nonsense are you speaking about?" argued Old Master Hunt with a cold expression on his face when he saw that the first elder had caused a wave of outrage. "This is a competition, and everything should follow the rules since it's a competition!"

He paused and glanced at Shelby before he added, "Master Lancaster is right. Her children had joined the competition, and whose children aren't children No matter how talented they are, they need to experience adversity. It's fated for Tyrell to die in this competition, and there's nothing to grumble about. We're martial artists, and we should have looked past life and death!"

Quentin eventually nodded, anger suppressed before a smile slowly formed on his face. "Everyone has a point," he began, "I was just sad because the news of my son's sudden death shocked me, though I don' t plan to look into it. Regardless of which young master or young mistress from which family killed my son, this only means that there's an extremely strong genius from your lineage. Congratulations."

"Master Hunt truly is a wise man," spoke Shelby with a gesture of her hands.

“Master Hunt is really understanding.”

“That’s right. We have to follow the rules that we set. Otherwise, how do we convince others?” spoke the other family masters, one by one.

Alejandro inwardly relaxed as he felt that Second Young Master Hunt’s killer was Helena -it was highly likely. Tyrell did like her, and being the stubborn person she was, she definitely would not agree to it. It was entirely normal for battles to the death to happen under those circumstances.

Chapter 1374.

“Haha… Don’t worry, the Hunt family can still afford to lose. Apart from that, how can we not follow the rules we set?” Old Master Hunt laughed and seemed to have forgotten that the person who died was his grandson

However, everybody knew the old man would never ignore his grandson’s death entirely. If he knew who did this, he would do his worst and wreak havoc to that person’s life. He would also kill that person if the opportunity surfaced.

“That’s right, let’s all wait and see. Have a look: Several dots of light disappeared from that area, and that meant several people died. I wonder which family they’re from!” spoke Quentin, chuckling as he purposely diverted the conversation while pointing at some area on the screen.

Many people from the families sighed when they heard this. They had made their assumptions when they saw the dots of light disappearing from the screen during this competition. As Quentin reminded them of it, they inwardly prayed and hoped that more geniuses from their families would come back alive.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

In the huge light-blue colored cover, Helena and the others finally flew back at this moment and arrived in front of Jack.

Jack looked at Venus and Daniella before he asked, “How did it go? Have you killed all of them? None of them escaped, right?”

Daniella smiled bitterly and said. “One of them escaped, and this guy took a flying sword out. Since everyone ran away in different directions, scattered, that guy managed to escape.”

Jack’s expression faltered upon hearing the report. “That’s gonna be troublesome. If we kill all of them, nobody would know who killed the Second Young Master Hunt. With that guy escaping and if he leaves this place alive, members of the Hunt family would know that I was the one who killed him.”

“What are you afraid of? The Hunt family are the ones who made the law. They said that life and death are personal responsibilities, and nobody is allowed to look into it after the competition,” spoke a woman from the Cabello family disinterestedly.

However, Venus shook her head. “True, he said that, but he naturally hoped that those who’d die are children from other families, not his own. Under normal circumstances, nobody would really kill his son even if they had the opportunity to do so. That’s their way of giving honor to the Hunt family!”

“That’s right,” Daniella chimed in. “How can he not care about what happened, now that his son is dead? He said that they won’t look into the matter, but only for a moment. Who knows if they’d find some other excuse after some time to cause conflict between both families and attack the other party?”

The woman from the Cabello family glowered at the thought. She turned to Jack and muttered, “That’ll be troublesome. Goodness gracious, we allowed somebody from their side to escape…!”

“I’m sorry, Young Master Jack. We’re useless!” whimpered another genius from the Cabello family, head lowered in shame.

Jack smiled when he saw everyone around them had lowered their heads like children who had made mistakes. “It’s alright. No doubt, it’s difficult to kill all of them when there are so many of them, and they even escaped in different directions. Apart from that, that guy had a flying sword and was so fast. It’s understandable that none of you could catch up with him.”

“Jack, you were the one who killed Second Young Master Hunt, and we’re thankful that you appeared in time. We won’t divide the things in his martial ring with you. You can keep it!”

Chapter 1375.

Venus offered the ring to Jack after careful consideration.

Everybody knew that since members of the Hunt family roamed with Second Young Master Hunt, putting the other things apart, they must have handed all the tokens they got to him. That meant Second Young Master Hunt’s martial ring stashed various valuable items in it.

“Alright, I’ll thankfully accept it.” Jack did not act hypocritically. He flipped his hand and took out the first grade premium pill he cultivated previously before handing it to Venus. “I didn’t disappoint you, and I’ve succeeded in cultivating the pill this time. This is a gift to you, as promised.”

“Oh, my! What did you give her? Let me see it!” Jack and the others did not expect Helena to fly toward them with over 20 people at that moment.

“A first-grade premium pill!” Helena inhaled deeply when she saw the pill in her second sister’s hand and gushed,” Impressive, Jack, you have such a high-grade pill! But why did you give this to my second sister?”

Jack immediately felt a wave of embarrassment swept through him. He never thought this fake girlfriend of his would come at this moment when he gave the pill to Venus.

It looked like he would be tricked into giving out another pill.

Venus smilingly commented,” Eldest sister, this boyfriend of yours is a treasure. He knows how to cultivate pills, and this pill is the fruit of his labor. This means he’s a first-grade premium alchemist. Isn’t that astounding? No wonder my eldest sister would fall for him and even forcefully kiss him!”

Helena blushed a crimson color when Venus said that; she commented in such a way because she obviously knew Jack and her were only faking it. Their third sister was his girlfriend. Venus’s comment stunned her.

She could not help but roll her eyes at Venus. She soon thought about something and her eyes immediately lit up. She then pretended to walk forward and hold Jack’s shoulder as she said, “Look at you, Jack. You gave my sister a first-grade premium pill, and you haven’t given your girlfriend, me, anything! Shouldn’t you give me a pill too?”

Daniella’s sisters made her flustered. Who would have expected that her elder and second sisters would pretend to not know about her relationship with Jack just so they could blackmail pills from him?

Jack was embarrassed as he was being stared at by the members of the Cabello family who did not know the truth. He could only bite the bullet and continue the act. “Alright, alright, alright… How can I forget about you? Don’t worry. I’ ll help cultivate one for you when I have time!”

“Eldest Young Mistress, isn’t… Isn’t this Second Young Master Hunt?” One of the young men who flew over with Helena only realized the body on the ground and inspected it, and the corpse grew more familiar to his memory the longer he looked at it. He inhaled in fright after he walked over to take a look.

“Second Young Master Hunt?” Helena immediately appeared beside the body in a flash, and a frown appeared on her face as she glanced at the body. She looked at Jack and the others before she asked, “Who killed him? Are you the ones who did this?”

“Elder sister, your boyfriend is really strong. He’s the one who killed him!” Venus purposely said with a smile. She even glanced at Daniella, who was beside them, to see if she would be jealous.

Chapter 1376.
“You killed him? Do… Do you have such strong combat power?” Helena, who Second Young Master Hunt nearly killed before, was shocked to the core when she learned that Jack was the one who killed him.

Jack smiled helplessly. “I can’t deny it when so many people saw it.”

“It’s really you!” Helena was in a daze, seemingly unable to comprehend the revelation within such a short moment. She had no idea that Jack was so strong.

She considered it and walked to glance at Jack before she spoke skeptically, “Could it be that you’ ve broken through? Have you broken through into the final stage of the true-god level? It’d be difficult for you to kill him if you haven’t broken through, right? I remembered that you brought me to escape before.”

Jack smiled bitterly before he explained to Helena, “Didn’t I tell you previously that there were people eyeing us fighting from the dark? If I killed him back then, members of the Hunt family would easily know about it, and I was worried about the trouble that would cause. Also, I didn’t kill him back then because I didn’t want to offend the Hunt family.”

Jack paused here before he continued, “This time, however, he was the one who came searching for us. He even said that he’d do despicable things to Venus and Daniella after he killed the others. I killed him because there were no outsiders here!”

“Oh, I see!” Helena finally realized what had happened. Jack had indeed mentioned to her that he would have killed Second Young Master Hunt if nobody was secretly observing their fight. Helena thought that Jack was boasting back then and did not pay much attention to it.

Who would have imagined that this guy really had the strength to do it.

“Eldest Young Mistress, Young Master Jack truly overwhelmingly powerful and outstanding. The two of you are a match made in heaven! I really hope that I get to enjoy your wedding dinner sooner or later!” gushed a man from the Cabello family.

“That’s right, Eldest Young Mistress. You truly have good insight, and it’s no surprise now that you insisted on staying single all these years. Turns out, you’ve been waiting for the person fated to be with you. Not only you, but any other woman wouldn’t be able to control themselves around such an outstanding man!” A young woman glanced at Jack and said to Helena, “All of us envy you so much!”

“That’s right, Eldest Young Mistress. Not only is he extremely talented and is able to kill somebody from a higher level, but he’s also capable of cultivating pills. He’s a first-grade premium alchemist at such a young age-who knows how good he’ll grow to be?”

Another young woman was also extremely envious of Helena.

Helena felt abashed and sheepish. She found herself teetering on the thought, sometimes, that it would have been amazing if Jack truly was her boyfriend. This guy became

increasingly outstanding the more she observed him, and it helped that he was also quite handsome.

It was also a boon that she could enjoy the envious looks people sent their way.

However, she shook her head and silently told herself to not overthink it as he was her sister's boyfriend.

She smiled and said to the crowd, "Alright, let's go. We need to quickly leave this place, as it'll be troublesome if others saw and knew that we're the ones that killed Second Young Master Hunt."

Chapter 1377.

"Yes, let's go. We need to leave here quickly, and we can't stay in this cave tonight!" Venus immediately spoke up. It was not good if the Hunt family was informed about what happened in this place.

The group of people immediately left the place.

"Oh, thank goodness. We've found you guys at last, Young Master Jack!" Jack and the others met a group of people in an open area after flying for half an hour. They were Beth, Yule, and the White family's other prodigies.

Jack was slightly relieved when he saw so many familiar faces. "How are you guys doing? Did you guys meet with any troubles?"

Yule smiled as she spoke," Everything is fine. We've been on our best guard and hid far away when we meet people we can't afford to offend. We bumped into some from the Lagorio family, though, and they wanted to take our things despite their somewhat average fighting prowess. As a result, we killed them and took all their tokens!"

Beth immediately walked forward and took a martial ring out from her pocket before handing it to Jack. "We saved all the tokens into this martial ring and thought of handing it to you when we meet you. Haha …! We've gained quite a lot of tokens. We found a handful of them and snatched some from prodigies of third-rated aristocratic families!"

"Tokens are a small issue being careful is your priority." Jack felt a slight warmth in his heart. After all, Yule, Dawson, Bikini, and the others were extremely talented, though they lacked time and resources to train. He believed that if they got out alive and trained well after they went home, their family would have many experts of the true-god level in the future.

Dawson smiled bitterly and said, "Young Master Jack, we discovered that members of the Hunt family who entered this competition enjoyed killing. They didn't let go of those with

lower fighting prowess, even though they handed their tokens obediently. I saw a group of people from the Hunt family chasing after a few prodigies from the Ximenes family!”

“That’s right. I saw members from the Hunt family hunting people from the Ximenes family yesterday. The geniuses from the Ximenes family had already given up their tokens and all their spirited grass, but the other party still hunted them to kill them!”

At that moment, Yule also walked forward and piped in, The people from the Hunt family have gone too overboard. How can they spare none, even though they have so many experts?”

Jack smiled bitterly after he heard this. “The members of the Hunt family and Lagorio family even cooperated to hunt people from the other families. I think they chose to hold this competition here and made it thirty days because the Hunt family noticed other families had grown well during recent years, so they want to kill our geniuses. They want the other families to have a temporary deficit in manpower so they can enjoy their position in the ranks!”

“They’re so hateful and shameless!” Daniella tightened her fists, enraged without relief. “Curse them! The next time I meet somebody from the Hunt family, I’ll kill them without being afraid of offending the Hunt family!”

“Alright.” Jack nodded. “The other families have no idea about the Hunt family’s intention. These competitors would let go of the Hunt family members with lower fighting prowess once they surrender so they won’t offend the Hunt family. The Hunt family, on the other hand, would kill them all without a chance of escaping, given the opportunity to do so. If that’s the case, many members from the other families might die.”

Helena was speechless. “This is really instigating. We met several members of the Hunt family yesterday. We let them go after they proactively handed their tokens to us and asked me to let them go. I’m afraid that they would not let the other members of the Cabello family go in the future.”

“The next time any of you meet people from the Hunt family, kill them even if they surrender! Our people will only be safe if more of their people die, especially those at the final stage of semi-god level, peak stage of semi-god level, and true -god level!” Jack balled his fists tightly and gritted his teeth, all while fury burned in his eyes.

Chapter 1378.
Everybody rested for the night. In order to be safe, Jack did not let Yule and the others travel by themselves. There were 70 to 80 of them when the members of the Cabello family were gathered together, and all of them continued to travel forward.

However, everybody kept some distance between them to search for the tokens. They then separated, though not too far from one another, and slowly traveled toward the bottom of Kobe Mountain.

It had to be mentioned that there were quite a lot of precious items in Second Young Master Hunt's martial ring. Apart from a large number of tokens, Jack had gotten quite a substantial amount of spirited grass. However, this was not the most exciting part for him. To him, the most exciting part was that there was a nice pill furnace and a couple of pill remedies in Tyrell's martial ring

Some of the pill remedies among the remedies were for second-grade pills. This excited Jack greatly as he did not have any remedies for second-grade pills, and he worried about what he could do in the future. He never thought he would get a myriad of valuable items after killing Tyrell.

Of course, Jack took all of these things out and placed them in his martial ring before throwing away Second Young Master Hunt's martial ring. It would be troublesome if the Hunts found out that Second Young Master Hunt's martial ring was with him after they left this area.

Jack and the others got several tokens within the next three days. They also met several members of the Lagorio family and Hunt family. True enough, Jack and the others took their items and killed them without hesitation.

Time flew by quickly, and the number of Cabellos and White they met gradually grew over time.

The relationship between the Cabello family and White family grew better after they spent their days together; constant fights to take items like what happened before did not happen. Instead, they helped one another when they met with danger and seemed to have become friendly allies.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

As they were about to reach the bottom of Kobe Mountain, Jack and the others heard the sound of an intense battle in front of them.

"Let's go and take a look!" Jack waved his hand and flew over with the others.

It did not take long until they noticed a dozen of the Lagorio family, the Church family, and the Hunt family each surrounded about 20 Lancasters.

There were also many bodies lying on the ground.

“What’s the meaning of this? You people formed an alliance and are attacking us together?” A woman of the Lancaster family at the truegod level’s initial stage was infuriated as she glared heatedly at the people in front of her.

There were quite a large number of them and they would be safe and secure under normal circumstances, unless they met a huge group of people or some psychos who were in the intermediate stage or final stage of the true -god level.

Never did the Lancasters expect to meet 40 to 50 people from a group formed by three families that wanted to attack them.

“You people are despicable. We’re willing to give you our tokens yet you still refuse to agree!” Another man from the Lancaster family was so angry that his face turned green. “This is just a competition! Do you people need to be so ruthless?”

“Haha… What about the competition? This time, our master said that we can kill as we like. These are the rules; what can we do? You weaklings deserve to be killed!” sneered one of the men from the Hunt family as he cackled loudly.

“Really?” A voice, at that moment, chimed in out of the blue, coming from behind them. “This means that you’re weak and deserve to be killed?”

“It’s somebody from the White family!” The people from the Lancaster family were delighted as they had a good relationship with the White family and they would always help each other. Apart from that, Jack was a master in the true-god level’s intermediate stage. They were not sure if the members of the White family would help them after they arrived.

“Why are the White together with the Cabellos?” A member of the Lancaster family frowned before they spoke, smiling bitterly, “I almost forgot that Young Master Jack and the Eldest Young Mistress Cabello are a couple right now. It’s no wonder that their members would travel together.”

Chapter 1379.

“Young man, we’re members of the Hunt family. Does the White family want to go against our Hunt family?” The man from the Hunt family turned around to look at them before arrogantly speaking, “We’ve got our sights on these people from the Lancaster family. Are you people wanting to get involved in this trouble?”

“You mentioned just now that this is the rule, and we’re allowed to kill as we like! Are members of the Hunt family playing favorites and are on a higher pedestal?” With a flip of his hand, Jack took his sword out.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Members of the White family and Cabello family immediately flew over and surrounded the opponents.

“Amazing! The White family is amazing!”

“That’s right. Never thought the Cabellos would help us, too!” The Lancasters were at the brink of despair before they came. After all, there were fewer of them compared to the opponents, and they were no match for the Hunts who had higher fighting prowess.

They never expected they would come to a turning point at this moment.

“You people need to consider this carefully. What you’re doing is crossing the Hunt family, and you’re standing against the Hunts!” The man from the Hunt family was so frightened that his voice trembled when he saw Jack and the others taking action. In the past, everybody they met had to honor them no matter where they were, so long as they mentioned they were from the Hunt family.

Alas, it backfired this time.

“Haha… You were the ones who mentioned that weaklings deserved to be killed!” Jack laughed and waved his hand. “Kill them!”

“Attack!” The Lancasters straightened themselves in an imposing manner. The fire in their heart was fueled as they could finally exact revenge.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

The surrounded opposing party-about 50 of them – were no match for Jack and the others. Not only were they outnumbered, but their fighting prowess were not as high as Jack and the Cabello sisters. The battle at this area ended within one minute.

“Thank you, Young Master Jack!”

“Thank you to the three beauties of the Cabello family!”

Every member of the Lancaster family was extremely thankful as they stepped forward to thank Jack and the others.

“It looks like the people from the Church family have formed an alliance with them too. They must’ve agreed to this from earlier on.” Jack smiled bitterly as he glanced at the bodies on the ground.“ It’s good that we noticed something was wrong about them and killed quite a lot of them.”

“What does that mean? Are these three families conspiring something?” A man from the Lancaster family frowned with a puzzled look on his face.

Jack nodded and surmised," Yes. They must've agreed to kill members of the other families together and not let anybody go, even if they surrendered or hand over their tokens. They're doing this to solidify the Hunt family's position! Surely, I believe that the Hunts promised some benefits to the Lagorio family and Church family!"

Chapter 1380.

"The Hunts truly are despicable. I'll definitely inform the family master about this after we leave this place alive!" growled the man from the Lancaster family as hatred filled his eyes.

At that moment, the White and the Cabello families have collected all the martial rings from those lying on the ground.

"How should we allocate these?" Jack frowned as he looked at Helena.

Helena had a matching frown, clueless as to how to distribute the items they had.

The Lancasters immediately stepped forward and humbly spoke, "Thank you for rescuing us. We won't take any of these items, so you can just distribute them among yourselves!"

Helena thought about it for a moment before she said, " How about this, Jack: This time, you guys get sixty percent while us Cabellos take the remaining 40 percent. In the future, let's form an alliance with the Lancasters. My family and the Lancasters shall take thirty percent each in the future while your White family gets forty. How does that sound?"

Jack was taken aback to hear her suggestion. "Won't you guys suffer losses with this plan? If I get the most number of items every time, won't you guys be unable to surpass our White family in terms of collecting tokens?"

Helena smiled indiffere So what? You have the highest combat power, and even I am not your opponent. It'll be good enough if you don't take our tokens. Apart from that, you're the strongest, so you do the most work and you've even rescued our lives. It's no issue if you take more!"

The members of the Lancaster family chimed in as they smilingly approved, " That's right. What could be more important than our lives? If you guys didn't come on time, we would've been dead by now. It'll be in the best interest to form an alliance with both families!"

Daniella, on the other hand, rolled her eyes at Jack. "Why are you regarding yourself as an outsider? We'll agree to this, got it? Apart from that, your White family had never entered the top seven position, and your best results in the past had been the eighth place. There were even instances where you were positioned behind the tenth position. Don't you want to earn the championship for the White family?"

“Alright them. Since you guys proposed this and supported it, I’d like to thank everybody for this opportunity!” spoke Jack as he gestured to the crowd with his hands.

“Let’s quickly allocate the items and go to the mountaintop. We should immediately gather any members from our families when we meet them on the way,” suggested Helena smartly after giving it a thought. “We can’t allow others to fall alone at this moment. It’ll be troublesome if any of them bump into people from the Hunt family, Lagorio family, and Church family.”

“Alright!” agreed Jack after he assessed the situation.” The most troublesome part right now is still the First Young Master Hunt and the others. I’ve already killed the Church family’s prodigy, Nathan Church. The geniuses from the Lagorio family had been killed while Second Young Master Hunt had also died. Right now, our main threat is First Young Master Hunt!”

“Second Young Master Hunt is also dead?” The Lancasters inhaled sharply when they heard this, unable to believe it.

They could accept that Jack killed the geniuses from the Hunt family to rescue them back there, but Second Young Master Hunt was the son of the Hunt family’s master. Jack and the others were really gutsy to have killed him.

“That’s right! Second Young Master Hunt is dead!”

Chapter 1381.

Helena nodded before she glanced at the Lancasters and reminded them, “I hope that everybody can keep this a secret and not tell anybody who killed him, understand? Although the rules were set, it’ll still trouble us in the future once the Hunts’ family master knows who killed his son.”

“Don’t worry, we’ll definitely keep this a secret,” promised every member of the Lancaster family present as they patted their chest in their vow.

Helena thought about it and a frown graced her features once more as she turned to Jack.” Jack, what if we bump into the First Young Master Hunt?” she spoke. “It’ll be nothing if we don’t meet him; a fight would b e inevitable if we bump into him! This guy has a much stronger combat power compared to the second young from that, we also need to kill the person from the Draco family that escaped back there!” Helena was evidently anxious. She feared that the Hunt family would learn about what had happened.

Jack sighed, feeling relatively low-spirited. “It’ll be for the best if we don’t bump into them. Nonetheless, I’ll do my best if we happen to run into them.” It had to be mentioned that both young masters of the Hunt family were incredibly talented. Second Young Master Hunt was already quite good, and the first young master was, in fact, better than him. This made Jack rather unsure a s he had no idea if he could manage to kill him.

“Don’t worry. I believe in Jack, he can definitely do it!” attested Daniella faithfully as she was all too confident in Jack.

The group soon separated their trophies. Sure enough, Helena and the others knew that Jack knew how to cultivate pills, so they allowed him to get first pick on the ingredients suitable for cultivating pills in terms of spirited grass while they took what was left.

That evening, they could not find a cave large enough for all of them to rest in. Apart from that, Helena, Venus, and the others had quite a high fighting prowess, so there was no need for that. They found a n empty plot of land and started a fire. They were prepared to spend the night surrounding the bonfire while arranging for several people to take turns in keeping watch.

Jack was free but he did not let time go to waste. He took the pill furnace out and started cultivating pills. After all, he had promised to give Helena a first-grade premium pill, and Jack did not want to owe her anything. He wanted to give her the pill as soon as possible so the burden would be lifted off of his mind.

However, the first batch of ingredients failed at the most crucial part this time around. The second time, Jack took another batch of ingredients out and successfully cultivated the pill.

“I did it!” Jack looked at the

Pill in his hands and nodded in satisfaction. “The color of this pill is quite good!”

“Haha…! This is for me, right?” Helena looked at the pill with anticipation. The pill’s faint aroma made her swallow her saliva.

“Of course, it’s what I’ve promised you!” Jack smiled and was inwardly speechless. These three beauties had managed to get three pills from him, and the astounding part was that their excuses made him feel like he had to give it to them.

After giving the pill to Helena, Jack found a place before he started to look at the secondgrade elementary pill remedy h e got from Second Young Master Hunt’s martial ring, considering the sun had not risen yet and it was still early. Images of how to cultivate this pill appeared in his head while he inspected the pill remedy.

Chapter 1382.
Another two days passed and Jack and the others had met members from the Lancaster family and Cabello family on their way, which increased the size of their group.

Jack and his group took no prisoners when members from the Hunt family, the Church family, and the Lagorio family came to attack them. Jack took 40 percent of the trophies they obtained while the Lancasters and the Cabellos took 30 percent each.

At that moment, everyone saw the changes on the huge blue light cover from outside the cover.

“Have you seen that? There must be about two hundred people from that group of people, no?”

They had gathered so many people so quickly! There’s another group of light spots with quite a huge number of people, but they’re staying at that place and aren’t moving. The people from this light group are slowly approaching the other group. I’m afraid the other light spots are going tog o out soon!” Somebody once again analyzed the situation o n the screen. There were only about ten days left for the competition, and about one third of the light spots on the screen had disappeared.

This meant that one-third of the prodigies overall had died I n the forest.

Many members from various families started to experience a wave of heartache, especially members from the second-class and third-class aristocratic families. After all, the geniuses from these families did not have a high fighting prowess and were not comparable to the eight reclusive families. They wondered how many from their families had died.

The most crucial part was that since there were ten days left, most of the people had started t o move toward Kobe , Mountain, situated at the heart of the forest, to gather. People would surely drop like flies once they meet at the mountain, much faster than ever before. If that was the case, some of the families would suffer a huge loss.

“Master, do you think that the largest group of light spots are members of our family?” The Hunt family’s First Elder walked two steps forward and spoke to Quentin softly after he glanced at the screen. “The Second young master might be dead, but don’t worry about it — the first young master will surely find the killer and kill him to avenge the second young master!”

Quentin’s heart ached at the thought of his second son. He gritted his teeth and said with a low voice, “I wonder which genius is capable enough to kill Tyrell. Hopefully, the eldest is able to avenge his younger brother!”

“Don’t worry, Master. Cloud will surely avenge Young Master Tyrell,” comforted the Hunts’ First Elder.

He paused for a short while before he continued, “No matter how it is, our second young master won’t be lonely a s prodigies from other families are accompanying him in the afterlife.”

Quentin, however, smiled bitterly. “Unfortunately, we’ve suffered too big of a loss this time. Tyrell isn’t only talented, but he’s also an alchemist. A second-grade alchemist! He may be able to cultivate second -grade premium pills after a couple of years. By then, our Hunt family will be…”

Quentin’s heart was filled with regret when he thought of this. He regretted his impatience. Truth be told, it was already very difficult to sway the Hunt family’s position. His son was capable of cultivating second-grade premium pills, and that was extremely helpful to people in the intermediate or final stages of the true-god level. What did their Hunt family have to be afraid of?

The group that showed up as over 200 light spots on the screen, and the light spots at the bottom of Kobe Mountain, finally converged into one group. Everybody started to pay attention to that area as they wanted to see if there would be a fight. After all, although they did not know the situation inside, they were able to determine the situation inside by observing the activity of the light spots and if the light spots would suddenly disappear.

They soon noted, however, that none of the light spots in that area disappeared. This meant that no fights happened there as those people had instead banded together.

“This is great. Look: I was right when I said that the young master asked us to wait here!”

Chapter 1383.

In the cover, hundreds of members from the White family were elated upon meeting Jack and the others. They hid on top of the trees and only jumped down when they spotted Jack and his company.

“This is great. At least there are still so many members of the White family waiting here!” Jack was slightly at ease when he noticed a sizable amount of the White family’s prodigies. He feared beforehand that many of his family were slain in battles.

There were at least 100 of them present. As for the other members of the White family, who knew how many of them were scattered in which areas?

Yule thought about it and asked Jack, “Brother Jack, what should we do now? Do we still need to continue waiting here?”

“Yes, let’s wait for another two days. After all, many members from the White family should be on their way here,” replied Jack as he came to a decision.

“Oh my god. Your people have been waiting here You guys have discussed this before? I envy you people. I wonder how the members of my family are right now. Who knows how many members from our Lancaster family are still alive right now!” A genius from the Lancaster family and was in the true-god level’s final stage was incredibly envious when he saw the large gathering of the White family in this spot.

“Luckily, we arrived quite early, and other families with a larger group size have yet encountered them. Otherwise, we’d be in trouble if they were destroyed by members of another family.” Jack could not help but smile bitterly. After all, he discovered that most of the White family’s geniuses in this spot were at the semi-god level, and only one or two of them were in the true-god level. There were, in total, about seven or eight ninth-grade grandmasters.

With such fighting prowess, these people would have found themselves in a tight situation if a much stronger family with several strong masters encountered them.

“This is true. It’s great if there are masters when everybody gathers together, or it would’ve been quite dangerous!” Helena nodded seriously after she thought about it

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

At this moment, a group of people were running toward them from not too far away as they were hounded by a group of people.

Jack, who was originally sitting in the tree, flew upward in a flash and looked over there from far away.

“This is bad. Several members of the White family and Lancaster family are behind, hunted by about twenty members of the Church family!” Jack’s face immediately darkened after he took a look. Only his shadow was left in a flash as he flew forward.

Chapter 1384.

“Guess the people from the Church family truly have become the Hunt family’s obedient followers!” Helena also flew upward, though she did not follow after Jack knowing he could easily settle everything alone.

In this competition, the only person who could fight him would be the first young master of the Hunt family, Cloud Hunt!

“Everybody, quickly. Move faster! Faster! There should be members of the White family in the front area, since Young Master Jack asked them to wait there. Let’s continue to fly; we’ll be saved if there are members of the White family up ahead!” The young woman flying in front had the fighting prowess of the semi-god level’s final stage. Such fighting prowess could be considered applaudable.

However, her arms were covered in blood as sweat covered her forehead. She was slightly pale, a telling sign she was badly wounded and worn out.

There were seven to eight people behind her. Some of them were Lancasters while the remaining others were from the White family.

Tailing them were over 20 members from the Hunt family that launched attacks after attacks maniacally.

“Get them! Don't let them escape!” A man from the Church family had a spiteful expression on his face as he led his people forward, swinging his sword at the attempting-escape party.

Whoosh!

A wave of sword aura swung forward.

“Curses!” A man from the White family saw that the sword aura was aiming at him, and he was obviously within the range of attack. He gritted his teeth and stopped. “Go ahead, guys. I’ll stop them here as long as I can. You guys have to avenge me when you guys find backup later!”

“Brother Aiden!” A woman turned around to him as her eyes turned red. She grew up with him, and they were like genuine siblings. She knew that Aiden would die if he stayed back.

However, there was nothing they could do. If they did not leave one person back to stall the other party, everybody might die. There were already a few people who stayed back to buy time for everybody else.

“Look, somebody is coming over to help us!” A member of the Lancaster was filled with hope and joy when he spotted someone flying toward them.

“There’s only one person. What can he do? If he has low fighting prowess, he’s just going to die!” spoke another member of the Lancaster family with a bitter smile.

“No, he’s traveling toward us so quickly. It seems…to be the young master of the White family!” The first person from the Lancaster family then realized it was Jack, and he was delighted.

Thoom!

Behind them, Aiden forcefully withstood the sword aura from his opponent, but he was incredibly tired. He had been fighting continuously for a long period and had escaped for some time. There was not much Chi left in his body.

“Die!” Another member of the Church family standing opposite of him activated a martial skill. He balled his hands into fists and punched forward. A fist formed by coagulated Chi appeared and rushed toward Aiden who was in front of him.

“D*mn it… Am I going to die?” Aiden White did not have time to turn around and look. He believed that the delay he caused would help Chloe and the others to fly further away. In that case, the chances of them staying alive would increase hugely,

The chances of them being saved would be higher if other members of the White family discovered them shortly after this.

Whoosh!

However, as he was prepared to carry out another attack while he gritted his teeth, another figure appeared in front of him in a flash. He tightened his fists and swung one toward him without even using his Chi.

“I don’t even have time to use my Chi. Crap! Will I die?!”

Chapter 1385.
Aiden was slightly stunned and frightened at the same time. He thought that one of his teammates that ran away with the rest turned back to find him.

He was extremely moved but, at the same time, felt that this person was foolish. Would this not result in another death?

It was not longer until he noticed that the incoming figure was so familiar and stalwart.

“It’s Young Master Jack!” He soon recognized Jack and was filled with joy. Jack was a master in the intermediate stage of the true-god level. Although Jack did not use any martial skill, it was not difficult for a master in Jack’s level to receive the attack from a person in the final stage of the semi-god level.

Thoom!

Sure enough, Jack easily destroyed the Chi punch from the other party into ashes after a horrendous explosion was heard.

“Sh*t! Who’s that?” Frightened, members from the Church family immediately stopped chasing after their opponents when they saw what happened.

The members of the White family and Lancaster family who ran for their lives also stopped running as they struggled to catch their breath

“This guy seems to be the White family’s young master!” One of the geniuses from the Church family frowned, and his expression continued to darken after he thought about it. “Curses. This guy is actually here. He’s in the intermediate stage of the true-god level!”

“Run!” None of the prodigies-over 20 of them-that chased after Aiden and his friends were at the true-god level. Overridden with fear upon recognizing Jack, they turned around and started escaping. Their previously imposing manner to conquer everything was nowhere to be seen.

“Hmph!” Jack made an indignant sound before he swung his sword toward their direction several times, and the scary circle-shaped sword aura flew forward.

Shink! Shink! Shink!

With that, some of the opponents were cut into halves as they lifelessly dropped from the sky.

“Big Wave Hits!” Jack activated his martial skill and killed the remaining others.

“Young Master, you… You came just in time. I thought I was going to die just now!” Aiden gazed at Jack, grateful that he came.

Aiden was one of the geniuses Jack chose from the branch families, and he was just in the initial stage of the semi-god level when Jack chose him, not too far from entering the intermediate stage. At this moment, he had already achieved the final stage of the semi-god level. It could be said that he was already extremely talented.

“These people from the Church family are suicidal!” Jack glanced at the bodies on the ground and smiled at the crowd. “Don’t you guys worry. Those who are hurt should rest! And tend to your wounds. Rest for a couple of days before we discuss the next steps. The others are in the forest over there.”

“Young Master Jack, can you help us? There are a dozen Lancasters, including our young master, who is surrounded over there by others. We tried our best to escape from being surrounded and wanted to see if we could get some help!” A woman from the Lancaster family flew over and looked at Jack beggingly. “Please, Young Master Jack. Are there a lot of people from the White family over there? If there are a lot of them, please help us. We’ll remember your great kindness!”

“Are there a lot of people surrounding your young master and the others?” asked Jack immediately after hearing the woman’s plea. “How many people are there?”

“I think there are about fifty to sixty members from our Lancaster family, but I have no idea how many of them are left right now. There are about a hundred people surrounding us, and they’re mainly members of the Lagorio and Church family!” explained the woman thoughtfully. “Ah, yes, there are also a couple of members from the White family who didn’t manage to escape and are with our young master.”

“Alright, the others should take a rest over there. Bring me to them!” With the flip of his hand, Jack took the flying sword out and threw it into the sky. The flying sword enlarged and he jumped onto the sword with the woman. The two of them went flying toward the direction they originally came from in a flash.

Chapter 1386.

“Master White, there are a lot of people on the other side. Moreover, our young master is in the middle stage of the True God Realm. They can’t rush out of the encirclement, because there are three in the Lagorio family In the middle stage of the True God Realm. They also have several in the early stages of the True God Realm, plus there is a large number of them. I don’t know how long our Young Master can hold on!”

Flying through the sky, the Tudor girl was a little worried. Jack had rushed forward to save her people, and her heart was moved, but if Jack rushed over by himself, it seemed a little too reckless.

“Don’t worry, I’ll just go by myself. If I get others to follow, a lot of time will be wasted. I’m afraid I would be late, and then your young master will not be able to hold on!”

Jack smiled bitterly and flew for a while. Soon, the sound of fighting could be heard.

“That’s the direction, right?” Jack pointed to the direction from which the sound of fighting came.

“Yes, we’re almost there!” The woman nodded and looked at Jack. This guy is too confident. It seems that his combat effectiveness is really extraordinary.

“Master, it’s over, we’re dead!”

The people in the middle were still fighting desperately. There was a man standing next to the son of the Tudor family’s Master, feeling a little desperate in his heart.

The number of them is really too small, and as time goes by, the number will decrease.

They now have only more than 30 people left, and there are still more than 90 people on the other side. They’re far outnumbered.

“These guys are really tenacious!”

A man from the Trevino family temporarily stopped his attack. After a long battle, he was exhausted and used a lot of aura, and he was also very tired.

“Haha, don’t expect those people who just fled to be able to find anyone to rescue them. Our people will definitely catch them up and kill them!”

Another Lagorio family man also laughed loudly: “You are too stupid. Just listen to the White family’s people saying that they agreed that the White family should gather in the middle of the foot of the mountain. They really thought that the White family’s people would be able to save them? Even if they found people from the White family, they may not be able to save them!”

“Impossible!”

Rufus Tudor, the young master of the Tudor family, at this time there were a few sword-chi cuts on his body, and his sleeves were stained red with blood, looking very tragic.

However, he still clenched his teeth and fought because he knew that even if they surrendered, these people would not let them go! they could only fight desperately.

Yesterday, he saw several Tudor family members with his own eyes, who had already surrendered and handed over the token, but in the end they were killed by the other party.

“There are four or five White family members here. If the White family members find out, they will definitely come back to help. Humph, if they can bring one or two hundred White family members over, you will be dead!”

Rufus gritted his teeth, this was their only hope. although he didn’t know whether he could hold on for that long.

The other people also temporarily stopped attacking. while the Lagorio family and Trevino family members stood aside one by one, looking at the people who were surrounded by them, like lambs to be slaughtered.

“I believe the people of the White family and the Tudor family are very loyal, and the relationship between our two families has always been very good!”

Said Rufus after gritting his teeth. He spoke firmly. He knew that It’s their only hope, and he can only say that so everyone will not despair and will continue to kill the enemy, and wait for the arrival of reinforcements.

“Among the White family, I don’t think there are many who can fight. The only one who is more powerful, called Jack. He is only in the middle stage of True God Realm, so even if he comes, it’s useless, you know?”

The man in the middle of True God Realm opposite the Trevino Family laughed again.

Chapter 1387.

“Master, Master, look! Someone is coming over there!” At this moment, a man from the Tudor family suddenly saw a flying sword above him, quickly approaching.

Hearing that someone was coming, Rufus was happy at first. When he saw only two people, his smile instantly faded. What’s the use of just two people coming?

“Perhaps they are passing by!” Rufus smiled bitterly at last, and said helplessly.

“Yes, it’s the young master of the White family!”

Soon, another guy recognized Jack with a smile on his face.

“Really? That’s great, his cultivation is in the middle stage of the True God Realm!”

Hearing that it was Jack, Rufus’s originally hopeless mood became a little excited.

“He has a flying sword, if we can rush in, maybe we can use the flying sword to escape, even if we escape halfway, that’s fine!”

Another woman, after thinking about it for a while, was also ignited in her heart with a glimmer of hope.

The man from the Trevino family twitched slightly at the corner of his mouth: “Do you really dare to come?”

He clenched his fist and blasted his fist directly at Jack: “You are alone, I think it’s time to kill you! This will be a great achievement!”

As he blasted out with a punch in front of him, an aura fist appeared, and went straight to Jack.

Jack stopped not far from there, and after a cold snort, he also clenched his fist and blasted his fist out.

In front of Jack, there was also a huge aura fist. but this aura fist was obviously much larger than the opponent’s aura fist, and it seemed to be a lot more solid.

A huge roar sounded, and the opponent’s fist soon cracked, and the cracks continued to spread. Finally, it exploded with a bang and turned into dust.

And the fist that Jack blasted out, with some remaining energy, continued to move forward and came in front of the Trevino man.

When the Trevino man saw the situation, his face was gloomy. He had no time to gather more aura, so he could only grit his teeth and blast out with his fist.

He believed that although he did not use aura and did not have time to use martial arts, he was a powerhouse in the mid-True God Realm. The opponent’s attack had already been decreased by 70% or 80% just now, so he should be able to easily accept take the attack.

There was another terrible roar. In the next second, Jack’s attack hit him.The Trevino man was shocked by this powerful force. After being thrown back several tens of meters, he barely was able to stabilize himself and catch his footing.

The Trevino man spit out a mouthful of blood, his face was shocked “How can this kid’s combat effectiveness be so strong?”

Chapter 1388.
Jack was clearly in the middle stage of the True God Realm. But at this moment, the man from the Trevino family felt like he was facing a strong person in the late stage of the True God Realm. That kind of pressure is really extraordinary.

Judging from the fight between the two just now, both of them had a very ordinary attack, but he was simply at a complete disadvantage.

“This guy is very strong. I will join forces with you to kill him. The rest of you kill the Tudor family and the White family members. Rufus and others are already seriously injured. They won’t be able to hold on for long!”

Another man in the middle of the Trevino Family’s True God Realm also felt the terribleness of Jack, and flew over and stood with the other man.

Jack looked at the Tudor family woman behind him, and said. “You take a rest!”

“Okay!”

The woman was a little bit astonished, but it was true that she was also seriously injured. In addition, she used too much aura. After thinking about it, she flew to the side, stood there, and took out a small spiritual stone and began to absorb spirit stones, intending to restore some aura.

After Jack shrank the flying sword, he took it in his hand and said “I think you won’t be able to hold on for long!”

“Hehe, boy, we are two people. As long as we hold on for a while, they will kill the rest, and when those guys are killed, we will besiege you together. We will see if you can face us by yourself!”

The man from the Trevino family chuckled, also flipped his palm and took out his sword.

Jack snorted coldly, too lazy to talk nonsense with the other party, and directly injected aura into the sword in his hand.

On his body, a terrible aura was slowly released, and the two people on the opposite side felt a very powerful aura in an instant.

“This kid is clearly in the middle stage of the True God Realm. This aura is too strong!” The Trevino family man who flew from behind couldn’t help swallowing his saliva. He took out his sword and injected aura into it.

“You guys have reached such a high cultivation level and you are still so young. To be honest, it’s a pity that you are going to die!” Jack sighed and slashed out.

In front of him, there was a terrible wave of sword aura suddenly. The wave was getting higher and higher, and it mixed with the aura with an extremely swift and violent rush.

“Kill!”

The other two also send out two terrifying sword auras.

Two terrible roars sounded almost at the same time, all of them were bombarded with Jack’s attack.

However, their attack was like two big rocks smashing into the lake water. Although there were countless waves, it did not have a substantial effect at all, and it was destroyed after a while.

“No, run away!”

One of the men from the Trevino family saw Jack’s attacks coming at them and his face turned pale in fright. At this time, he knew the guy in front of him was terrible. They even wondered whether they were facing a powerhouse at the peak of True God Realm.

“My God, how could it be possible!” The other guy swallowed his saliva and turned around to run away.

Jack’s attack was too fast. They just turned around and before they flew a few meters away, they were hit in the back by the terrifying aura wave and beheaded.

“No way, the two strong men of our Trevino family were actually beheaded in less than a minute?”

The Trevino family and Lagorio family were full of confidence, but when they looked back, they were completely dumbfounded. The two True God Realm powerhouses died so quickly.

Chapter 1389.
Rufus looked at the situation and instantly aroused his fighting spirit. Jack suddenly killed two strong men. leaving only one in the middle of True God Realm, while his morale was definitely low, this turned it around. They finally turned defeat into victory!

“No way, our plans will be ruined!”

The Lagorio family’s mid-True God Realm guy saw that two others were not Jack’s opponents and they were both beheaded. Suddenly he was very scared. Looking at the other people here, there was no fighting spirit. After gritting his teeth, he turned around and prepared to escape.

However, what he didn’t expect was that he had just turned around and found that Jack was already standing behind him, looking at him with a smile.

“Master Jack, our Lagorio family and your White family have had a very good relationship in the past. Although Miss Lily’s affairs caused some conflicts between the two families, we can’t ignore the past friendship, can we?”

The man’s eyes turned around, he looked at Jack white with a smile.

“The friendship from the past?”

Jack listened and felt funny in his heart. He pointed to the corpses of the several White family members on the ground and sneered: “Look, this is the friendship you were talking about, isn’t it? With the past friendship, will we hurt the masters of the White family and join hands with the Trevino family, huh? If I didn’t come today, I’m afraid the people here would all die here!”

“It’s Young Master Hunt!” The Lagorio family’s man frowned, and then pointed behind Jack.

Jack was taken aback, and immediately looked back.

From this look, Jack discovered that there was nobody was behind him, and when he turned around again, the Lagorio Family fellow had already turned and flew out two or three miles away.

“The speed is quite fast!”

Jack smiled coldly, and caught up with him in a flash.

The Lagorio family man used his speed to the extreme. He believed that as long as he flew farther and rushed into the forest over there, he would hope to escape.

However, Jack’s speed was too fast. When he looked back, he was speechless. Jack’s speed was at least twice his speed. After a few breaths, he had already come behind him.

“Go to hell!” Jack blasted out with a punch, and the thick aura on it wrapped his fist with strong fluctuations.

As soon as the man saw it, he had to stop immediately, and also punched out.

Jack’s power was too great. In the next second, he slammed into the ground like a cannonball. A small pit appeared on the ground, and the man also spurted out a mouthful of blood.

“Please, let me go, I know I was wrong…”

The man kept coughing up blood, looking at Jack pleadingly.

“Go and beg those who were killed by you before!”

Jack smiled coldly, and killed the opponent with a single blow.

After taking down the opponent's ring, Jack flashed and flew back again.

After seeing that Jack killed the three mid-True God Realm powerhouses so quickly, the other dozens of people, completely demoralized, and after several more people died, fled one by one.

However, under Jack's pursuit, in the end only a few people barely rushed into the forest and escaped a catastrophe. Everyone else was beheaded.

"There are too many people, all of you are seriously injured and can't catch up, otherwise, they have all died here!" Jack flew back again and said with a wry smile.

Chapter 1390.

"Haha, you, you are too greedy!" Rufus laughed loudly "Killing so many of them this time satisfied me. If you came later, I guess we would be dead!"

"Yeah, Master Jack, thanks to you, otherwise we would be dead. Those guys wouldn't give up!" A master from the White family said with emotion.

"Let's go, clean up the battlefield first, I will take you with my flying sword afterward, and go to meet the White Family, Cabello Family, and Tudor Family!"

Jack smiled and said to everyone.

"Tudor family? Is there anyone from the Tudor family over there?" After Rufus heard this, his eyes lit up and he was happy.

"Not a lot! They are all waiting for us in the woods under the mountain!" Jack nodded and said.

"Tudor family come here!" Rufus called the Tudor family over, then knelt down and bowed to Jack: "Thank you, Master Jack for saving us. Your great kindness, it will be remembered forever!"

Thank you, Master Jack for your kindness, we will never forget!" The other masters, now kneeling on the ground, in front of Jack shouted.

"Get up all of you, this is too much, it's no big deal!" Jack was embarrassed and called everyone up in a hurry.

"Master Jack, I will give you all the spoils for a while!" Rufus said directly after thinking about it.

“No? You killed so many people from the Trevino family and Lagorio family and you want to give me all the spoils?”

After Jack listened, his face showed his shock, wondering if he had heard it wrong.

“Yeah, I’ll give it all to you. If it weren’t for you, I’m afraid I would not see the sun tomorrow in Rufus. You must keep it!” Rufus said while the other went to collect the loot.

“Well, I’ll hold it for now. When we are about to leave the arena, let’s see how many tokens there are. Then, let’s distribute it again. Otherwise, I will be far ahead of everyone. I’m afraid it’s not good, right?” Jack smiled, facing Rufus.

Jack knew very well in his heart that he would be happy if the spirit grass was given to him, but if all the tokens were given to him, at that time, his tokens alone would be several times that of other family master tokens. This is too difficult to explain.

When the time comes, even if the Hunt family has no evidence, they will doubt him.

“Haha, okay, anyway, you have to take the first place, it does not matter if we have tokens or not, this time, you must get the first place!”

Rufus paused, then said: “By the way, brother Jack, I have decided that you will be my eldest brother in the future. I really admire you. The fact that you can come back from the common world and cultivate to the point where you are today is definitely not easy. From now on, I will be your little brother, and you will be my elder brother!”

Jack’s expression was a little weird, and he was humbled: “That’s not good, but you are the son of the Tudor Family Master, how can you recognize me as the eldest brother? No? I know how many people look down on me because I came back from the common world. They look down on me as an illegitimate child. If you recognize me as a big brother, I am afraid that you will be laughed at!”

“Laughed at? Who dares laugh at me behind my back? I will kill them!”

Chapter 1391
“All right. The matter is settled,” Randall declared.” You’re my Big Brother from now on!”

“All right. Let’s go, Brother Randall!”

Noticing that everyone had cleaned up the spoils of war, Jack tossed his sword forward. It abruptly grew in size and floated before everyone.

“Let’s go. We’ll rest once we arrive at where everyone else is!”

Randall and the others leaped onto the sword before settling themselves onto the surface.” This is an amazing sword, Brother Jack. It can fly and it can serve as a weapon as well, and it seems to increase your fighting power by a good margin. It must be at least a middle-grade spiritual tool, yes?”

Before Jack could answer that, a girl from the White family cut in proudly, “Young Master Randall, your judgment is off this time. Young Master Jack’s flying sword is not a mid-grade spiritual tool, but an ultimate-grade spiritual tool!”

“Holy sh*t. An ultimate-grade?”

Randall and the others all took a sharp intake of breath, wondering if they had heard her wrong. They heard that only the Hunt family had one o f those. They would never imagine that Jack would possess such a treasure.

Jack bobbed his head placidly a t the sight of the other man’s stupefied expression. He controlled the flying sword, zipping toward somewhere in the middle at the foot of Kobe Mountain

Before arriving at the forest proper, Jack noticed that Daniella, Helena, and the others had flown above the canopy line, looking in his direction. It was evident that they were waiting for him to return

“He’s back, Big Sis. I knew that he would be able to handle it easily!”

Daniella broke out into a proud grin when she caught sight of the silhouettes of Jack and the others.

Admiration sparked in Helena. “That’s right. He’s amazing,” she replied, a wan smile on her lips. “I’ve never met such a genius and fantastic man before!”

“Of course!”

Daniella smiled and scanned her surroundings. “Otherwise, would I have set my eyes on him?” she whispered.

“Mmhmm. You have good taste!”

Helena rolled her eyes at her younger sister, then added after thinking for a while, “But I’m afraid that he’ll have to play the role of my boyfriend for a while longer before I can return him to you. We can’t let the Hunt family see through our ruse and find an excuse to say that we played them!”

“All right, all right. I understand!

Daniella spoke callously. After she thought about it, she could not help but add in a joking manner, “Right. You won’t let your drama bleed into real life, right, Big Sis?”

Helena’s cheeks reddened, and she shot Daniella a glare.” What are you talking about? He’s your boyfriend. Why would I try to snatch him away from you? Don’t say anything like that next time, got it?”

Daniella pursed her lips. “I was just joking. Why are you mad at me!”

“How could you joke about something like this?”

Helena shot Daniella another glare. The two only clamped their mouths shut when they saw that Jack and the others were drawing near.

“Oh my. The two beauties from the Cabello family are here. No wonder Brother Jack flew so fast!”

Randall spoke in a genial tone after he saw Daniella and Helena

“What do you mean just the two of us? There’s another one waiting down there!”

Daniella studied him for a while. “Aren’t you Master Lancaster’s son, Randall Lancaster?” she said. “Why are you calling Jack ‘Brother?”

“He’s my Big Bro from now, and I’m his Little Bro!” Randall said, grinning.No. 1 Supreme Warrior
Chapter 1392-1394

Chapter 1392
“No way. Did I hear that wrong? You-you’re willing to be his Little Bro?”

Helena was taken aback. This was Master Lancaster’s son, who was in a powerful, significant position. Besides, the Lancaster family was about the same level as the Cabello family among the eight reclusive families, so this was unprecedented.

“What are you talking about? We’re brothers. None of that ‘big’ or ‘little’ nonsense!”

Jack’s lips twisted into a wry smile as he explained hastily.

“Heh. Anyway, I’ll just listen to whatever you say, Big Bro!”

Randall chuckled and pounded his chest. “At any rate, you saved my life, Big Bro. So I’ll dedicate it to you!”

“All right. You all had better rest for two days. It won’t be too long till the competition ends. Once all of you have recovered, we’ll still have time to ascend the mountain!”

Jack decided as he scanned the audience.

Everyone hopped down from the flying sword, one by one. Some took out medicinal pills and began treating themselves as they sat on the ground, while others took out spirited grass or spirited stones and started to absorb its Chi to replenish their own.

“There are too many people here, especially those from the White family. How did we get so many people to gather here!”

Randall heaved an internal sigh of relief when he saw so many people. “Hah. We’re completely safe now that we have Brother Jack and the three geniuses from the Cabello family here. Our next step would be to wait till time runs out, and we’ll be able to get out of here!”

“The only thing I’m worried about now is First Young Master Draco. The other second-class and third-class families are no match for us.”

Daniella also sat down by the side. “Quite a few geniuses from the Lagorio family are dead, and the Church family has also lost plenty of people. Their families would be furious if they found out.”

“Mmhmm. We should try to gather as many members of our families as we can to avoid unnecessary sacrifices!”

Jack nodded his head as he spoke.

“Young Master Jack. There are a few people coming this way!”

Two people were keeping watch atop the trees to see if any more White family members were coming over while everyone was waiting.

“Really? No one is chasing after them?”

Jack stood up, his heart leaping in delight. He hoped that he would find more White family members. That would mean that many of them were still alive.

“Er, not really. Looks like they’re escaping from something… There’s a monster chasing after them!”

One of the men spotted this and told Jack, “They’re pretty far out. I can’t tell what level the monster is at!”

“All right. I’ll go get them!”

Jack flew up, and after discerning their direction, he shot straight toward them.

Roar!

Quite a few White family members were desperately flying away from the giant python snapping at their heels. It released earthshattering roars, and its maw was wide open, emanating a distinct promise of death.

“Hurry, hurry. We’re arriving at the designated meeting

Spot!”

Martin swung his sword backward as he tried to urge the people before him.

At that moment, Martin, just like Liah, was at the beginning stage of the true god status.

They had looked down on Jack at first and wanted to fight for the position of house heir, but they were so badly defeated that they were rendered speechless.

Chapter 1393
Now, the two had finally broken into the beginning stage of the true god status. However, Jack had already broken into the intermediate stage. His cultivation level had already surpassed theirs, what more his fighting skills? That fact made them completely submit to him.

“The monster’s hide is too thick. The two of us are no match for it!”

Liah spoke haplessly as she battled the python, “Seems like this python is no longer at the beginning stage of the true god status—it’s probably going to break into the intermediate stage soon!”

“You’re right. We’re no match even though the two of us are combining our strengths. Sh*t. I wonder if Young Master Jack has arrived at the designated meeting spot! If he’s not there, we might just harm more White family members instead by bringing it there!”

Martin quickly thought of something, and his expression darkened. Worry filled his chest.

Liah gave a dry chuckle. “You ‘re right. What do we do now? We’ll be doing more harm if the White family members waiting there are mostly at the semi-god

Realm.”

“We also don’t know if Beth and the others are there. We still have a few fighters at the beginning stage of the true god status, but we don’t know if they’re there!”

Martin slashed his sword again. The closer they came to the meeting point, the more worried he felt.

“Look. It’s the young master. He saw us, and he’s coming!”

At this moment, Liah quickly realized that Jack was flying over. Relief abruptly flooded her limbs.

“It’s really him. This is great. We’re saved if he’s coming over!”

When Martin recognized Jack, his expression lit up with excitement. Jack was at the intermediate stage of the true god realm, and he was a powerful fighter. They would not have to fear the giant python if he was coming to save them.

Roar!

The python’s body was riddled with wounds, and blood poured out from those wounds.

However, these injuries were nothing to such a giant being. Instead, the injuries made it even more agitated. It released a shriek before suddenly spearing forward at an accelerated speed, going straight for Martin.

“F*cking monster. It’s too fast!”

Martin was frightened when he saw this. Unable to dodge the attack, he hurriedly clenched his fist and poured his Chi into it, slamming it into the python’s head.

Bang!

A dull noise rang out. The next second, Martin was flung outward. He steadied himself with great effort, and blood spurted out of his mouth.

The giant python had also been dropped two or three meters, but it quickly righted itself and released a ferocious roar, rearing up toward Liah.

Whoosh!

At this moment, Liah swept a fearsome sword aura, which landed on the python’s body.

“Roar!”

The python twisted its head and lashed its tail.

“Sh*t!”

Liah cursed when she saw that the attack was coming for her. She quickly covered her body with a layer of protective Chi.

Bang!

The python's tail immediately shattered her shield, and it smacked straight into her, sending her flying backward as well.

Chapter 1394
"Pfttt!"

Liah was blasted backward, and a mouthful of warm red liquid spewed out of her mouth. Her face immediately blanched.

Nonetheless, she still gritted her teeth, preparing to continue fighting. That god damn python! It had previously killed several men from the White family; the White family had long wanted to murder this beast.

Seeing Martin getting hurt by it, it fumed the flame inside Liah even more.

"Liah, don't fight head-on with this monster! Its skin is too hard to penetrate through! Young Master Jack will soon arrive and it'll be so done for!"

As soon as Martin noticed that Liah stood up and planned to charge and fight again, he flew over to her side and advised her.

Roar!

However, the giant python that was wounded once again – was even more furious this time. After a roar, it bolted toward the direction of Liah and Martin.

"Die, you monster!"

A shadow bolted and arrived at the scene. Finally, Jack had arrived. He balled his fist and a thick layer of Chi energy encased his fist completely.

With a flash, he came to the side of the giant python and blasted his fist directly on it.

Bang!

A terrifying boom echoed through space. The gigantic body of the python received the blast from Jack, causing it to slant downward and hit the ground. The dust on the ground splashed messily as though they were dancing enthusiastically in the air.

Roar!

The giant python was severely injured, it hissed in pain. A pair of huge eyes were staring straight at Jack, deadly.

Nevertheless, it seemed to have known the strength and power that Jack possessed. Thus, it turned around and flew off into the distance, seemingly wanting to escape from Jack.

“What the heck?”

Liah and the others who had just witnessed the human python-one-second battle were completely baffled. They knew that Jack was strong, but they did not expect that he would be that strong! The blood-thirsty demonic python would actually be afraid of Jack and flee! The monster seemed to have the strength of the true god realm and possessed a certain level of spiritual intelligence.

“That’s so amazing! That monster beast was completely enraged by us before that. It was determined to pursue after us even when it is injured! Now, it actually got frightened away by Young Master Jack!”

A few members of the White family were relieved and all stopped to rest, breathing heavily.

Swoosh!

Jack chased after the python at lighting speed. Although the body of this monster beast was hard, tough, and resistant to beatings, it was also because of this, their movement and speed were often not fast. Their body was too huge, clumsy and not flexible.

Soon, Jack caught up with the gigantic python. With a flip of his palm, a black sword appeared in Jack’s grip. Chi energy flooded his sword, and the black sword instantly became a powerful weapon.

Swoosh!

Jack swung his arm. A frightening slashing blow with unrelenting Chi energy in it, landed on the python, splitting the python into two. He killed it.

Blood splashed, and the python smashed heavily onto the ground, breathless.

“Woohoo! This freaking monster is finally dead! It chased after us for almost an hour! I’m so exhausted!”

Martin flew toward Jack, looked at the python’s corpse, his spirits were flying high.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1395-1397

Chapter 1395

“Young Master Jack, you’re so, so, so strong!”

Liah also flew toward the group and looked at Jack with an envious face. “Why do I feel that you’re not at the intermediate stage of the true god realm at all? With your combat strength, you’re at least at the late stage of the true god realm or perhaps even at the peak stage!”

“She’s right! You this brat, if you break through to the late stage of the true god realm, I think that even some strong fighters at the peak stage of the true god realm would be afraid of you!”

Martin was envious of Jack.” Now I think about the past when I was looking down on you. Ugh. I’m so ashamed of myself. I’m definitely not a match for you! Sigh! I must admit that, right?” He was reminded of the past and could not help but self-deprecated.

“Haha, you two. Stop praising me!”

Jack smiled gently, then he waved his hand and two healing pills appeared in front of them. “Take it. You look heavily wounded!”

“Hehe, thank you very much, our dear Young Master Jack!”

The two chortled sheepishly and took the pills that Jack had offered. They then swallowed the pills.

After only a few minutes, Martin could sense the effectiveness of the healing pill, and felt that the injuries on his body were recovering slowly. Even more unbelievable, several injuries on his skin were healing at a speed visible to the naked eye.

“Holly-molly! Young Master Jack, how is this healing pill of yours is so effective? Okay. I need to learn from you. When you have time, you have to teach me how to create such a pill. I have no idea how to refine such a healing pill, with my current knowledge and ability, I should still be able to learn it, right?”

Martin looked at Jack with shining eyes, as though he was a puppy begging for food from his Master.

“Alright, I’ll teach everyone how to create and refine it once we return to the White family residence after the tournament ends. The creation process of this healing pill is not hard to learn. The only thing you will find troubling learning is matching the ingredients of some drugs. As long as you master it, you’re good to go!”

Jack beamed warmly. He then led the crowd and soon arrived at the place where everyone gathered.

“My goodness, there are so many people here! The Three Golden Flowers of the Cabello family, as well as Randall of the Lancaster family, are all here!”

When they arrived in the White, Martin, Liah, and the others were stunned at the scene before them. Many people were gathered there.

“Let’s wait out for the next two days, and after tomorrow, we’ll all set out for the mountains together to find more tokens!”

In the afternoon, more of the White family and Lancaster family came. When they noticed Jack and the others were there too, they were all overjoyed.

All of them breathed a huge sigh of relief, especially those who had been chased by the Lagorio family and the Church family before and had escaped from death. As long as they survive the next few days, they could leave safely, and it marked the end of the tournament.

Of course, the number of participants in the tournament was decreasing.

Two days passed by quickly, and on the third day, the crowd set off, heading toward the mountain.

As for the distribution of the tokens and spoils of war, everyone decided to go according to the previous agreement. The White family would take 40 percent, and the other two would take 30 percent respectively.

In the opposite direction of the Kobe Mountain, several geniuses from the Hunt family had finally met up with Cloud Hunt.

“First Young Master Hunt, we ‘ve finally found you!”

One of the men was thrilled that he almost jumped for joy.

Cloud bobbed his head, but his expression was somewhat solemn. “Strange, why didn’t I meet people from the Hunt family along the way? Moreover, even strong fighters of the Church and the Lagorio family are nowhere to be found. Instead, I only met a few weaklings.”

The man’s face sunk to the deepest, and with a gloomy tone, he said, “Young Master Cloud, Young Master Tyrell and the others including people of the Hunt family, elite fighters from the Church and the Lagorio family, they…they’re all dead! We saw their bodies on the way!”

Chapter 1396

The corners of Cloud’s mouth twitched a few times, and his body froze, unable to believe the new fact.

After countless seconds, only then he grabbed the man’s collar and lifted him up. “Say it again! If you dare to lie to me, I’ll tear you apart!” He stared at the man with hatred.

“Young Master Cloud, it’s true! You can ask the rest of them; they saw the body too.

And we found Young Master Tyrell’s ring in the bushes! The killer must have taken the things inside the ring and thrown it aside!”

The man scrunched his face and his voice trembled with fear. He then took out the ring shakingly and handed it to Cloud.

Only then did Cloud let go of him and took the ring from the man. His eyes were flushed red and his teeth gritted tightly. “Who the hell did this? Who on earth could actually kill my brother? That person must have broken through to the late stage of the true god realm in order to do that, and possess terrifying combat prowess. My brother is actually dead…”

“Young Master Cloud, we do not know who did it. By the time we got there, a pack of wild wolves was already there, gnawing on Young Master Tyrell’s body. If we went there a little later, I’m afraid that we would not even recognize Young Master Tyrell’s body!”

Another man from the Hunt family spoke up with a gloomy face. “Young Master Cloud, although Young Master Tyrell was a little bit mischievous, he was indeed a rare genius. He sometimes even gave the pills he made to us! You must avenge him!”

“Of course!”

Cloud was so angry that he gritted his teeth and clenched his fist. “No matter who did it, I must avenge my little brother!”

“But, but, we don’t even know who did this, how can we possibly avenge Young Master Tyrell?”

The man before furrowed and asked after giving the matter some thoughts.

Cloud sneered coldly and viciousness took over his eyes. “Isn’t it obvious? There are only a few who have the strength and power to kill my brother. I just need to find all of them and kill them one by one. Then it’d be considered as revenge for my brother!”

A young girl from the Hunt family stood up and gave her two cents, “Young Master Cloud, I think the First Young Mistress Cabello is most likely the killer!”

“Why so?”

Cloud frowned and asked.

“Young Master Tyrell confessed his love to her the last time, and this woman rejected him. Even worse, she kissed the young master of the White family in front of Young Master Tyrell! Perhaps you were not updated on this matter as you were training in isolation at that time. Anyway, I feel that the kissing part was a huge blow to Young Master Tyrell. The woman shamed him in public!”

“Besides, you also know that Young Master Tyrell cared about his image and reputation dearly. He didn’t show it on the surface, but why did he suddenly want to participate in the tournament when he refused a few times before? Why did he do that? Was it not for that woman? He must have met that woman and wanted to make a move on her, only, he didn’t expect to be killed by her instead!”

The man chimed in and presented his analysis to Cloud.

After listening to them, Cloud bobbed his head slowly in agreement. “Sounds reasonable and logical! The possibility of Helena killing Tyrell is very high. And my brother trusts women too easily. Perhaps that woman used her beauty to seduce and confuse my brother, then gave my brother a fatal blow when he was defenseless! She knew my brother’s weakness toward beautiful women, seized the opportunity, and killed him!”

“You’re right! If the Second Young Master was aware and defensive, basically nothing and no one could

possibly kill him! But if he was distracted and defenseless, the tables are turned! So I feel that it was definitely that b*tch Helena Cabello who did it!”

The man from before, once again expressed his thoughts with confidence, as if he had witnessed the whole incident.

“Helena Cabello, I think she is the one. It’s impossible that the killer is from the Church family, not to mention the Lagorio family. And the Norman family has a close relationship with our family, so the possibility has decreased by now. There are not many families remaining!”

Chapter 1397

Cloud clenched his fist tightly. “The brat from the White family has weaker martial status and combat prowess, so he can’t be my brother’s killer. As for the Lancaster family and the other families, although we’ re not close with them, we’re not enemies, and they have no issue with my little brother. I think our main goal now is to find Helena Cabello and kill her to avenge my brother!”

“Now there are only a few days left till the end of the tournament, and I guess the other party has already arrived at Kobe Mountain. So the possibility of running into each other is also high

Now!”

Someone shouted from the crowd.

“Let’s go!”

Cloud waved his hand, gesturing to his men to leave.

“Young Master Cloud, look! There’s a group of people coming over. It seems to be the Church family! Fantastic! Our team is getting stronger now! Haha!”

A man burst out in laughter when he found something.

They had more than two hundred people of the Hunt family gathering here, and over there, more than a hundred people of the Church family were arriving. They had a total of four hundred men or so right now!

“Haha, look over there, the Lagorio family is here too! Quite many of them are here!”

Cloud laughed wholeheartedly, pointed to the other side, and then said, “Hehe, they arrived just in time! But why are there only ninety people from the Lagorio family? That’s not even a hundred!”

When the Lagorio family came before Cloud, he said straightforwardly, “What happened to your people? Are there no longer any elite fighters in your group? Ok, forget about the elite fighters, there are so few of you, why is that? Didn’t we agree to gather here and ambush other families?”

A man from the Lagorio family stood up and responded with a dull face,” First Young Master Hunt, a lot of our people have died, and we don’t know how many of our men are still alive out there. The Lagorio family has brought many geniuses and elite fighters to this tournament this time, but on the way here, we found a lot of dead bodies of the geniuses from our Lagorio family! And we only manage to gather these people right now.”

Cloud was rendered speechless. Initially, he thought that he could gather a thousand people to do the ambush, nevertheless, there were only five hundred gathered here right now. He was utterly disappointed.

“Forget it. Let’s separate our formation and move. Everyone, remember, once you run into Helena Cabello and her people, notify me immediately! I want to end her life with my own hands!”

Cloud gave a last wave and led his men to set off.

At this time, Daniella had found another white token and she almost jumped for joy. She then handed the token to Jack.

Helena, who was beside Daniella, expressed her discontentment. “Hey, Daniellita! Why are you giving everything to Jack?”

Daniella pressed her lips together and gave a warm smile. “Hehe, what? Isn’t it the same? Didn’t we agree to let Jack keep all the tokens in his martial ring, and then we’ 11 distribute them according to the ratio at the end?”

“Hahaha! Miss Daniella, the problem is you’re too enthusiastic toward Jack! He’ s your brother-in-law, of course, your sister will be jealous of you when she sees it!”

Randall laughed cheerfully yet nonchalantly. “Hahaha! But this can’t be helped, my Big Brother Jack is too charismatic. If I were a woman, I’d definitely fall head over heels for him too, not to mention Miss Daniella!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1398-1400

Chapter 1398

“Stop it!”

Daniella rolled her eyes at Randall, but in her stomach, butterflies were flying everywhere. Randall’s words spoke to her heart. If it was not for the sake of not letting the Hunt family finding out, she would have let the whole world know that Jack was her boyfriend!

“Young Master Jack, some Zieglers are there!”

After flying for a while, Jack and the others stop the group of people from the Ziegler family, a second-

class family.

They had more than twenty people.

When they finally noticed Jack and the others in front of them, they were frightened down to the soles of their shoes.

“My God, did I see it right? Three families are actually all gathered together!”

A man from the Ziegler family shouted with a gloomy face, and his face became more and more unsightly as the time passed. It looked like the token that they had worked hard to obtain in the past few days would have to leave their pockets. Their efforts were in vain.

“Three families gathered together, and they have almost seven hundred men! How did they even manage to gather so many people? Especially the White family, they have the most people!”

Another woman expressed her helplessness with a bitter face.

Standing in front of the Ziegler family, Jack could not help but smile in his heart. The overall strength and power of the Ziegler family were actually excellent; they managed to compete with the White family last time for the position of the eight reclusive families. They could be considered as one of several strong families.

However, in the later stage, the White family extended and developed faster than the Ziegler, and in the end, obtained the valuable position of the eight reclusive families.

“Hand over the tokens. As for the spirited grasses, keep them.”

Jack smiled gently and commanded the other party.

“Huh? Just the tokens?”

As soon as a guy from the Ziegler family heard that, his face beamed and could hardly conceal his happiness. “Thank you, Young Master Jack, thank you so much!”

“Quick! Everyone, take out the tokens you have on you!”

Another genius from the Ziegler family started to help collect the tokens, and after collecting all the tokens from more than twenty of them, he then respectfully handed them to Jack.

“Let me give you guys some advice. It’s better for you to descend the mountain, after all, the higher you climb the mountain, the more elite fighters and geniuses with the high martial status you’d run into. There are not many geniuses with the strength of true god-level among you guys, so if you unlucky and happen to run into the Hunt family, I’m afraid that day would be your last day!”

Jack looked at these people in front of him and started to advise them. “If you go down the mountain and find a place to rest for a few days, the tournament will be over by that time. At least you won’t get yourself killed and cause damage to the Ziegler family. Besides, judging from your family’s current situation, you won’t actually get a much better ranking in this tournament, right?”

“Young Master Jack is right. I concurred that. Our Ziegler family actually had a few geniuses of the true god realm, but some were killed by the Hunt family and the Church family. The people left here, it hasn’t been easy for us to survive till today!”

A man from the Ziegler family breathed out a huge sigh, lamenting the difficulty. “I think we should take Young Master Jack’s advice and descend the mountain. We’ll find a cave and hide until the end of the competition.” He said to the other Zieglers. “We’ve tried our best this time and collected some spirited grasses along the way too. These are the best rewards we could get from this tournament. I think except for the top three in the tournament, the consolation prizes are not that great after all. It’s more worth it for us to find spirited grasses in the White!”

“That’s right! Let’s go!”

Chapter 1399

After the Ziegler family discussed for a while, they took Jack’s advice and went down the mountain.

“You’re too considerate. Never mind that you didn’t take their spirited grass, you even let them go!”

After they left, Helena looked at Jack and could not help but give a wan smile.

“It wasn’t easy for them to survive this far. Besides, they ran into us this time, but if they ran into the Hunt family, they wouldn’t be spared even if their martial levels are low.”

Jack’s attention wandered toward the peak, his eyes oddly grave. The closer they were to the peak, the higher the chances of running into the Hunt family. It was likely that he would be fighting them eventually.

Everyone continued to march forward, and another two days passed by. There were only five days left until the competition ends, and Jack and the others finally spotted a huge group of people in the distance.

At that moment, Jack and the others had managed to gather many people from the White, Cabello, and Lancaster families, and their numbers totaled to about eight hundred people. The other group however had about six hundred

“Young Master Jack, it’s the people from the Hunt, Church, and Lagorio families. There are many of them, but we outnumber them by quite a bit!”

Daniella told Jack after scanning the distance.

“Sh*t. Their three families truly made an alliance. They killed so many members of my family. Today is the day of our revenge!”

Randall clenched his fist when he saw them, huffing

Helena thought for a while before speaking to Jack, “This is what I’m thinking. You and I will attack Cloud. They shouldn’t have that many powerful fighters left by now, and we probably have more fighters in the true god realm on our side! With our strength combined, we’ll be able to kill Cloud!”

Jack’s brows furrowed, then he addressed everyone in a solemn tone, “All of you must pay attention. Do not let a single person escape. This is likely to be our last battle with them. It’ll be bad for us if they escape!”

“Everyone heard that? We must wipe all of them out. Otherwise, the Hunt family will come after our throats once they get out and tell everyone who killed their family members. But they forced this from us as well. It’s time we avenge our fallen brothers and sisters!”

Randall hollered.

“Oh, thank goodness, First Young Master. I finally found you!”

On the other side, a man from the Hunt family quickly flew toward the group, looking at Cloud, agitated.

Cloud looked at him and nodded his head. Then he cast his attention toward the front, gaze serious. “I had thought that our numbers were enough to overwhelm these families. But I never thought that those three families would have allied with each other as well!”

The man who had just flown overlooked to the front, then spat angrily, “Jack is there too! First Young

Master, you must avenge Second Young Master!”

Cloud’s expression darkened when he heard that. “What are you talking about? Do you know who killed my brother? Don’t tell me it’s Jack White.”

The man bobbed his head. “That’s right. I was with the Second Young Master then, where I escaped once I saw that the situation was dire. Fortunately, I had a flying sword with me, and everyone had scattered everywhere, so I managed to escape. But Second Young Master and the other Hunt family members were all killed by him!”

“Jack is that strong?”

Shock jolted in Cloud. He had assumed that Helena was the one who killed his brother. He did not think that it was Jack.

Chapter 1400

“That’s right, Young Master Cloud. I saw it with my own eyes! He killed the Second Young Master!”

The man was furious. “But I believe that he’s no match for you. He’s a goner this time!”

“Of course I can take revenge!”

Cloud’s expression was as stony as ever. “But if he’s truly that strong, I’ll probably be fighting him for a long time. We’re outnumbered. By the time I finish him off, we might lose many of our people!”

The Church family and the Lagorio family members all went green around the gills.

They had thought that they could easily kill their enemies’ geniuses by allying with the Hunt family, and

the Hunt family had even promised them plenty of benefits once they fulfilled their end of the bargain. Then, they would be able to surge together and eliminate the White and the Lancaster family.

After that, they would be able to become one of the strongest families around in two or three years, barring the Hunt family, of course.

They did not think that the White, Lancaster, and Cabello families would form an alliance. They even had a premonition that the other alliance would be picking them off first. If this was the case, their two families would suffer heavy losses.

“What’s wrong? We’re already here. Don’t tell me that you have cold feet now?”

Cloud seemed to not care about the Church family and the Lagorio family members’ worries. His expression darkened as he shot a vicious glare into the distance

“No-no! Of course not!”

The two families’ members hastily waved their hands. They did not dare to offend Cloud Hunt.

“Then come with me!”

Cloud waved his head and said.

“Young Master. Look. They’re flying toward us now. It seems like they’ve spotted us!”

A girl from the Hunt family spoke with a startled expression when she saw this.

Cloud emitted a frosty harrumph. “Hmph. They think that they can swallow us up just because we have fewer people. But they didn’t notice that I’m here!”

After he said that, he rushed forward with his people at a blinding speed

Soon, the two armies stopped and faced each other.

“I heard that you killed my brother, Jack. You’ll be dying today!”

Cloud glare at Jack. He was close with his brother. Tyrell did not like to train, but every time he made a pill, especially a new one, he would always give the first pill to his big brother. This truly touched Cloud’s heart.

“I’ll be dying today? You sure?”

Jack flashed a frosty smile. “Since you already know that I killed your brother, then don’t think we’ll let a single person escape today!”

After he said that, he waved his hand. “Listen to me,” he said. “Surround them!”

Whoosh Whoosh Whoosh!

Suddenly, the people behind him flew forward in formation, surrounding their opponents.

“Not a single person will escape? All right then. Let’s see if you have the bite to match your bark!”

Cloud flew a little higher and flipped his palm, a sword appearing in his hand. He poured his Chi into it.

“A middle-grade spiritual tool?”

After Jack sensed the resonance from the sword, a smile curved his lips. He also flew upward and took out his own sword.

Whoosh!

Helena also followed suit. Then she smiled at her opponent. “My apologies, First Young Master Hunt, but we’re using our numbers to our advantage today!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1401-1405

Chapter 1401

“Hmph. You think you can overpower us with just numbers? Let’s see if you have the ability!”

Cloud gave a cold harrumph, disdain filling his gaze.

“Charge!”

Under the orders of the three, the two sides began to clash. In a few moments, a few people started to drop, lying dead on the ground

“Fight, Young Master Hunt! We might not last any longer!”

At the beginning stage of the true god status, a man from the Church family looked at his opponents, his expression weighed with worry. After all, not only were they outnumbered by Jack’s army, but they also had fewer fighters in the true god realm compared to them. Furthermore, Venus and Randall were fearsome fighters, far above the likes of people of a similar cultivation level

That was why he was worried.

“Don’t worry. I’ll come over to help in a moment. I just need to kill that sl*tty couple. The rest won’t be a problem!”

Cloud’s lips curved into a mirthless grin. In his eyes, the only people who could give him a run for his money were Jack and Helena. The rest were like annoying gnats he could wipe out without a problem.

Besides, he did not care if they died. Other than the Hunt family members, for whom he would mourn if they died, he did not care if the Church family or the Lagorio family members were dead or alive by the end of the battle.

The only thought treading in his mind was to kill Jack and Helena. After all, his brother would not have died if not for them.

“Sl*tty couple? You’re the real b* stard around here!”

Helena’s temper flared when she heard him insulting her in that manner. As the First Young Mistress of the Cabello family, she had never been humiliated like that before. She nearly exploded in anger, and she immediately poured Chi into her sword, glaring at Cloud.

“Heh. You still won’t admit it? You two tumbled together even though you haven’t known each other for long. Of course, you’re a sl*t.”

Cloud chuckled, his expression as contemptuous as ever.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a frightening sword aura flew out, the Chi coalescing into a long lash.

“There now. Why so agitated?”

Cloud maintained his frosty smile as he returned the attack with a swipe of his own sword.

Whoosh!

Another sword aura flew out, and the two attacks collided against each other.

Bang!

An explosion rang out, and Helena’s attack was quickly destroyed. Meanwhile, Cloud’s attack still had some leftover Chi surging toward her.

She quickly swerved a few meters upward, barely dodging the attack. Her expression darkened ever so slightly. He was at the same cultivation level as her, but it was evident that his fighting prowess was far stronger than hers.

“Burning Chop!”

Jack’s eyes hardened as he poured Chi into his sword and leaped upward, swinging his sword in a wide arc motion.

Whoosh!

An attack that had the intensity of burning flames streaked toward Cloud, its tail leaving a trail of white

light like a comet.

“This guy’s attacks are strong!”

Cloud’s expression darkened when he saw the attack.

Chapter 1402

“I never thought that an illegitimate child from the mortal realm like you would be able to kill my brother. But I will avenge him today!”

Cloud’s gaze hardened. A fearsome aura emanated from his body. In a split second, he countered with an attack of his own.

At that moment, outside the giant blue bubble, everyone’s attention was fixed at one spot.

Especially the Hunt family, Quentin, and the others. He had thought that the larger group of lights among the two was his people. After all, there had been a secret agreement between the Hunt, Lagorio, and Church families. He had promised to give the two other families plenty of spirited grass and pills if they upheld their end of the agreement, to wipe out the geniuses from other families.

That was why the three families gradually banded together while the other families were scrambling to assemble themselves. They cooperated to target the lone geniuses from other families and were met with great results.

However, he never imagined that after the two giant spots collided with each other, the fighting began.

“They’re in battle. Many are involved. Seems like neither side is comprised of one family. Otherwise, there wouldn’t be so many people.”

The Second Elder of the Hunt family thought for a while before taking a step forward, whispering toward Quentin, Master, if this is the case, it seems that the other families have allied with each other to fight our people. If I'm not wrong, this is the final battle. After all, there's not much time left until the end of the competition. The others are probably scattered elsewhere!"

Quentin nodded his head and gave a cold smile. "If the person who killed my son is there, I pray that Cloud will be able to avenge his brother!"

On the other side, the other families were also staring at that one spot on the screen, speculating what was happening inside.

"Master, who knows how Young Master Jack is doing?"

Titus, who was standing beside Nash, was growing slightly anxious. "After all, he offended the Second Young Master of the Hunt family, and he even offended the Norman family. Now the Lagorio family hates us too. The Young Master isn't afraid of the Lagorio family, but the Hunt family and the Norman family will be trouble!"

Nash remained silent for a few seconds before answering, "It shouldn't be a problem. After all, Jack has an ultimate-grade spiritual tool in his hands. His cultivation level is slightly lower than those geniuses at the peak of their game, but it shouldn't be a problem with that spiritual tool helping to boost his fighting power!"

Titus flashed a bitter smile. "It's true that Young Master Jack has an ultimate-grade spiritual tool, but it's precisely because he has a treasure like that that he might attract unwanted attention," he added. "That's why I'm worried that people will go after him!"

Worry began to stir in Nash after Titus said that.

Still, he thought about it and said, "I believe in my son. Besides, it's no use worrying now. We can only wait. There are only a few days left. We'll know the results once everyone comes out!"

Bang!

At that moment, at the waist of the Kobe Mountain enveloped in the bubble, Jack and Cloud's attack collided.

Light pierced through the atmosphere, and Jack squeezed his eyes shut. A terrible wave of energy rippled from the impact point, and everybody felt as though the air itself was trembling

However, Jack quickly realized that his attack was as strong as his opponent's. After a while, the two attacks crumbled against each other, signifying of nearly the same strength.

"You are good, punk! Now I believe that you killed my brother! You have the strength to do so!"

After the light faded, Cloud glared at Jack. He was well aware that his attack would be difficult to block even for a genius like Helena. Yet Jack's attack was able to withstand the impact.

Chapter 1403

"Let's attack him together, Jack!"

Helena looked at Jack and said to him

"All right!"

Jack bobbed his head. With their sword in hand, they rushed toward their opponent again

This time, Helena used a powerful technique instead, her sword aura slashing outward like a comet streaking through the sky. Meanwhile, Jack used the second-grade elementary martial skill from earlier, Burning Chop

He believed that Cloud would not be able to defend against two simultaneous attacks if he were to use the technique from before.

“Twin Dragons Fist!”

They did not expect Cloud to sheathe his sword and clench his fists, slamming them against each other.

Roar!

Suddenly, two giant dragons formed out of Chi rose into the air. They almost looked as though they were alive, and their scales glimmered dangerously. After they roared, they rushed toward Jack and Helena.

Bang!

Jack’s attack quickly landed on it, coming to a standstill against the dragon for a moment.

Yet on the other side, Helena’s attack could only hold out for a while before it shattered, unable to hold out anymore. The dragon coming for her was reduced to half, yet the remaining momentum landed on her, sending her flying a few dozen meters backward before she managed to right herself.

“Pfft!”

Helena spat a mouthful of blood, and her face turned white.

“He’s really strong. I’ve only heard about his prowess before, but I’ve never actually fought against him. Now I finally know how monstrous he is!”

Helena wiped at the blood at the corner of her mouth, rattled.

His martial skill was very strong too, to be able to defend against two attacks at the same time. It also had good attacking power. It was probably a secondgrade intermediate martial skill, at the very least.

Bang!

On Jack’s side, after the noise subsided, he realized that their attacks had all vanished. It was evident that their strength was almost on equal footing.

“Not bad!”

Cloud looked at Jack and gave a cold smile. “But I wasn’t using my full strength earlier. That martial skill only used about seventy percent of my fighting power. Let’s see how you take me on at full power!”

Chapter 1404

“Seventy percent!”

Jack and Helena exchanged glances, their gaze suddenly turned grave.

“What’s wrong? Scared?”

Cloud laughed, expression pleased. “It’s no use being scared now. I won’t let you go even if you beg me

on your knees. I will avenge my brother today!”

After he said that, he clenched his fists and gathered his Chi again. The resonance of the Chi was stronger than before.

“Blade Wave!”

Jack did not dare to let his guard down, so he used his second-grade premium martial skill.

Suddenly, Chi and sword auras mingled and merged, forming wickedly sharp blades of flying swords, flying outward with a fearsome aura.

“Falcon Strike!”

Helena also used her strongest attack. As she slashed her sword, her Chi pooled into the form of an eagle, spreading its wings, which were about twenty feet in length. It emitted a terrible screech as it dove forward.

Bang!

Cloud used the two giant dragons again, the dragons looking bigger than the ones from before. They almost appeared far more solid.

One of the dragons collided straight into Helena’s attack. Her frightening falcon was easily destroyed, and the remaining energy from the dragon rushed toward her again.

“Sh*t!”

Helena was so frightened that all color leached from her face when she saw the remaining Chi headed for her. She could clearly feel that the remaining energy from the attack this time was two to three times stronger than before. Even generating a Chi shield right now would be of no use. She would die if the attack landed on her.

Meanwhile, Jack's flying swords continued to rain on the other dragon. When one of the swords was shattered, another came to take its place. There were at least a few hundred swords slowly chipping away at the Chi dragon's energy.

Whoosh!

Just as Helena felt that she was about to die, Jack rushed before her, flipping his palm and taking out the tortoiseshell shield.

The shield grew bigger, large enough to cover the two of them behind.

The remaining energy from the Chi dragon landed smack onto the shield.

Bang!

As the explosion rang out, Jack and Helena were thrown backward, flying a few dozen feet before they managed to right themselves.

"Are you all right?"

Helena immediately looked at Jack, grateful that Jack was there. Otherwise, even if she did not immediately die, she would succumb to her injuries.

"I'm fine!"

Jack managed a smile at her. He looked at Cloud, delight on his face. “His attack won’t hold out for long!”

Helena looked at Jack and then scanned through his arm that held onto the shield. Asides from the area between the base of his thumb and index finger, a large portion of his skin had been shredded. Blood welled at the wounds and dripped onto the ground, yet Jack said that he was fine.

At that moment, gratitude filled Helena’s heart. A strange thought also sparked in her mind, if only he was her boyfriend!

Unfortunately, he was not her boyfriend, but her sister’s.

She heaved an internal sigh then cast her attention into the distance.

Chapter 1405

The dragon that was colliding with Jack’s Blade Wave was not going to hold out for long. Lashes appeared wherever the swords connected, then a loud crack tore through the air, and it shattered into pieces.

Meanwhile, there were still a few dozen swords left behind from Jack’s attack. They speared forward relentlessly.

“No-no way!”

Cloud shook his head, unable to believe the sight before him. His expression darkened, as though a cloud veiled his feature.

As the flying swords drew closer, Cloud threw up a Chi shield enclosing him before turning around and

flying off.

Whoosh Whoosh Whoosh!

The flying swords were fast. Two of them quickly shot toward him, but they were blocked by his shield. Another two surged forth, finally cracking the shield open.

Bang!

One of the swords landed on his thigh. Blood gushed out of the puncture wound.

Bang!

Cloud managed to dodge another sword, but it grazed his arm, ripping through his shirt and gave him another wound.

“Ah!”

Cloud cried out, flying extremely fast.

“Still thinking of escaping?”

Jack kept the shield when he saw that his opponent was trying to escape. He took his sword and gave chase.

Whoosh Whoosh Whoosh!

Cloud was extremely fast. In a blink of an eye, he was down the mountain and zipped into the forest.

Jack was not slow either, managing to keep pace. He refused to allow the other man to escape. If he did, the consequences would be fire.

“Don’t push it, you punk…”

Cloud noticed that Jack was drawing closer, as he was going at a slower pace. He clenched his teeth and flipped his palm, taking out a pill and popping it into his mouth.

“Ah!”

After he swallowed the pill, a ferocious expression came across his features, and his eyes were bloodshot. His entire countenance had turned feral, violent.

He stopped, yet the resonance coming from his body gradually rippled outward.

“You pushed me to this, you punk. My cultivation level will drop a bit if I use this pill, but it’s fine so long as I can kill you two. Hah!”

Cloud laughed, a feral grin lighting up his face.

“What pill did he just take? His aura is a lot stronger, and the pressure he emanates makes me feel as though he’s at the peak of the true god status!”

Helena stared at him in shock.

“He must have used some sort of forbidden pill to increase his cultivation level for a short period of time. But judging from his tone, it seems that he won’t be able to maintain it for long. There might be a backlash later as well that will make him unable to maintain his current cultivation level.”

Jack looked at him, expression solemn. “But we don’t know how long the pill lasts for,” he said. “It’ll be troublesome!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1406-1410

Chapter 1406

“What should we do? We’ll be in trouble if he has truly broken into another cultivation level, and it seems like he has already done so. His aura now feels different than before!”

Helena looked at Jack, worry etched onto her brows.

Jack glanced behind him. “If the two of us can’t beat him, the others will be in trouble. We’re at an advantage over there, but we can’t go on like this. You go there and kill everyone in the other battle. I ‘ll think of a way to distract him!”

“What!”

Helena took a sharp intake of breath after she heard that.” Are you nuts? We barely managed to deal a good blow to him just now. We wouldn’t be able to do that if not for the two of us working together. You’ll die if you try to take on him alone!”

She did not expect Jack to remain so persistent. “We have no other choice. We have to kill the Hunt family, the Church family, and the Lagorio family,” he said, flashing a bitter smile. “This is a rare opportunity. We can’ t let them go after they’ve killed so many of our people. Besides, we can’t let Cloud walk out alive!”

“I know that we can’t let him go, but the two of us together won’t be a match for him at his current cultivation level. You’ll be walking to your grave by going alone!”

Jack thought about it and added, “I will look for you if I’ m alive. Don’t worry. With my fighting strength and this flying sword, it’ll be difficult for him to kill me!”

“All right. You’d better be careful!”

Helena chewed her bottom lip and flew forward for a distance. Then she threw over her shoulder, “Don’t die. Daniella will be sad, and so will your wife, daughter, and your parents. All of them are waiting for you to go back home!”

“Don’t worry. I won’t die!”

After Jack heard that, warmth filled his heart. Helena took off toward the larger battle without a second glance backward.

Daniella’s heart leaped in delight when she saw that Helena was flying over to help. “Oh, have you killed him already? We’ve also killed plenty of people here. Hah. Not a single one of them will escape if you and Jack coming over to help!”

It was true that they had complete control over the situation. They have only lost a few dozen people, whereas over two hundred people from the opponent’s side had died. Now there’s a stark difference in the number of fighters from each side, and their opponents had no way of bouncing back with their lack of strong fighters.

That was why they would be killed off even faster if Jack and Helena had won.

“No way. Why’s Helena here?”

The people from the Lagorio, Church, and Hunt families were all frightened when they saw her. Their fighting spirits were already low, and they had been clinging onto the hope that the First Young Master would arrive to save them all. Now all their hopes were crushed.

“F*ck. We shouldn’t have trusted Cloud. Didn’t he say that he would kill them off easily?”

A man from the Church family grew furious. They were in big trouble now.

Chapter 1407

Helena looked at Daniella and swung her sword toward the opponents. She flashed a smile to not worry her younger sister. “Don’t worry. First Young Master Hunt has been seriously injured, and now Jack can handle him alone. He asked me to come over and help. He’ll come over once he kills Cloud!”

“Really? I knew that he could do it. That’s great. Everyone, charge!”

Daniella was ecstatic when she heard this. Their people’s fighting spirit grew exponentially, rushing toward their opponents with full strength.

Helena’s white lie was truly useful. Randall and the others were so fired up by it like a sudden surge of adrenaline rushing through their veins. On the other hand, their downtrodden opponents descended into chaos once they heard this. Fighting back was no longer a priority, only thoughts of ways to escape clouded their minds.

In the chaos, it was even easier to kill them. Meanwhile, the White family and their allies did not lose many people.

“You actually dared to face me alone, punk. Then I’ll finish you off first!”

Not far away, Cloud was glaring at Jack, an aura of aggressiveness cloaking him. His muscles seemed to have bulked, and his body brimmed with pure energy.

“Hah. Come at me. Your brother was just asking for it, trying to take my woman. I’ m glad he died!”

Afraid that the other man would not give chase, Jack leaped onto his flying sword and taunted Cloud, “Heh. Let’ s see if you have the stamina to keep up with me if you want to kill me!”

After he said that, he directed his sword and shot off into the distance.

“You’re glad that he died? I’ll be glad when you die!”

The use of the pill made Cloud’s logic slip, so when he heard this, anger sparked in his heart and consumed him. He had no room to spare for a thought of the other geniuses of the Hunt family. He roared and turned into a shadow, chasing after Jack.

Once Jack noticed that Cloud was almost on his tail, he increased his speed.

“Come at me. Hah. You can’t even catch me, and you want to kill me!”

Jack laughed. He felt fortunate that he had this ultimate-grade spiritual tool, able to fly at breakneck speeds. His opponent’s fighting power was high, but it would not be easy to catch him.

Furthermore, he was constantly twisting left and right. His opponent had no chance to attack

“Stay still, you little sh*t!”

Cloud snarled. In a moment, the two disappeared from everyone's line of sight.

After a while, Daniella noticed that Jack was not coming and looked behind. Her expression darkened." Big Sis, where's Jack? Why is Cloud and him nowhere to be seen?"

Helena did not know how to answer that, but she thought for a while before replying," Maybe Cloud wanted to escape, so Jack gave chase."

Chapter 1408

"So that's what's going on. That's

Great!"

Daniella had no idea that Helena was lying to her. She was delighted when she heard that.

Everybody continued to kill their opponents. They truly did not leave a single person alive, wiping the enemy army out.

"This is great. We have lost less than a hundred people in total. This is a total victory for us. Hah!"

Randall laughed, extremely happy.

"That's right. This is great. We've avenged all those who died!"

Venus also smiled excitedly, feeling as though her heart were about to burst from joy.

“This time, the Hunt, Church, and Lagorio families will suffer great losses. I’m sure that they’ll still have plenty of geniuses left in their families, but those who joined the competition must have been the stronger ones. With so many people dead, they’ll definitely faint from shock or wail to the gods!”

Yule was also delighted. Meanwhile, everyone started to gather their spoils of war.

Daniella furrowed her brows because she realized that Helena did not seem too happy. Instead, she was frowning, staring in a certain direction.

“Sis, why isn’t Jack back yet? If Cloud was injured, he should have finished him off a long time ago!”

Daniella flew over to Helena’s side. “He’s your boyfriend,” she said. “Aren’t you worried about him?”

Helena’s gaze sidled toward Daniella, red tingeing her eyes. She did not know what to say to her younger sister, who was so innocent and believed in everything she said. Daniella even had the heart to joke with her at this moment.

“What’s wrong, Sis?”

Daniella knew that something was off when she saw her sister acting like this. “Big Sis, where’s Jack?” she asked, panic seeping into her tone. “Why isn’t he back yet? Let’s go find him and see if he’s won, okay?”

“That’s right. Miss Helena, where’s my Big Bro? Why isn’t he back?”

Randall flew over and looked at Helena in anticipation.

She opened her mouth, then Helena finally managed to speak, apologetic “Jack…Jack ran off!”

“Ran off?”

Everybody’s eyes widened, unable to comprehend what she had just said.

“Basically, Cloud ate a powerful pill that enabled him to break into the peak of the true god realm. To ensure everyone’s safety, Jack led-led him away and told me to come here and help to kill the other Hunt family members!”

Helena bit her lower lip. Then she narrated everything in one go, “He should have successfully led Cloud away by now. But I don’t know how he’s doing!”

“The peak of the true god realm?”

Chapter 1409

Daniella was stupefied. Cloud was already powerful enough at the advanced stage of the true god realm. If he was truly at the peak of the true god status now, Jack was absolutely no match for him.

“What? Jack’s in danger then. What if he was caught and killed? How could he do that? I’m telling Father about this once we go back!”

Yule began to panic, blinking her tears away. She was at a loss.

Although she and Jack were stepsiblings, he was kind to everyone, and he was nice to her. At least, he was much nicer than Lance. That was why when she heard that Jack drew Cloud away to save everyone, worry sprouted in her heart.

“Ah. If he did not draw Cloud away, the latter would have killed both me and him, and he would have come over to help his people. All of you would be dead then!”

Helena heaved a sigh. “Jack chose to sacrifice himself to save us all,” she said. “But he said that his flying sword is extremely fast and that escaping shouldn’t be a problem!”

“What are you saying? It shouldn’t be a problem? Sure, that sword is fast, but the Hunt family is the strongest family among the firstclass families, and they have the longest history. Have you forgotten that they have a rune paper which they retrieved from some mysterious place? It enables them to increase their speed!”

Worry added to Daniella’s brain. After she said that, she flew forward. “This won’t do. I have to help him. What will we do if he dies!”

Everybody was dumbfounded when they saw this. Why was Daniella more worried than Helena about Jack? It was as though Daniella was his girlfriend instead.

“Don’t go!”

Helena immediately flew over and took Daniella’s arm. “Don’t rush in, Daniella. You won’t be able to catch up. And you won’t be of any help even if you do. You can’t go in with your cultivation level. I won’t be able to help him either!”

Here, Helena spoke with a solemn expression, “When Jack and I were fighting Cloud, I would have died if Jack wasn’t so strong and helped me. Now that Cloud has broken into another level, we’ll be heading straight for our deaths if we go!”

“But-but…”

Daniella was in such a panic state that she did not know what to do. She suddenly felt that she should not have slacked off when she had good talent. Excellent talent, even. Perhaps even better than Helena’s.

However, she slacked off too much, until she was only at the beginning stage of the true god realm. At this moment, when Jack was in danger, she realized that her cultivation level was true of no use. She realized that she was not strong enough, that she was too weak.

“Big Sis is right. Never mind that you can’t catch up to them, you won’t be able to help even if you do. You’ll drag him down instead!”

Venus also took two steps forward and spoke earnestly, “Let’s divide the spoils of war first. According to our agreement, the White family will get forty percent. Jack helped us win this victory and all our future victories!”

Here, Venus paused before continuing, “The only thing we can do now is to not cause trouble to Jack, and pray that he’ll survive!”

“Cloud’s cultivation level is so high now, and he has that rune paper. He’ll definitely catch up to Jack and kill him. Jack doesn’t stand a chance of surviving!”

Daniella’s expression was still knotted in bitterness. The more she thought about it, the more frightened she was. Yet she knew that Jack made the right choice.

“Oh right, Jack said that the pill should only work for a limited time. It’ll be fine so long as he can hold out until then. Besides, the pill will give backlash. Once its effect wears off, the user’s cultivation level will decrease, and he’ll be seriously injured. Cloud will definitely die then!”

Helena quickly thought of something and tried to cajole Daniella, “Jack has that flying sword. He’ll definitely survive if he can hold out for a while longer!”

Chapter 1410

Although Helena Said all that, Daniella was still worried. She also heaved a small, internal sigh of relief.

At least Jack had that sliver of hope. There was a chance of winning if he held out.

Even if that chance was slim.

“Ah, what should we do now? Wait for him here?”

At last, Daniella sighed and asked Helena.

Everyone else looked at Helena. After all, she had the highest cultivation level and fighting power without Jack around. Furthermore, everyone thought that they should listen to her since she was Jack’s girlfriend.

Helena took in everyone’s gazes, then spoke slowly, “Jack told us to leave Kobe Mountain. The competition is ending soon, so we should head to the outskirts of the forest. If he survives, he’ll come to find us. We’ll just need to wait for him somewhere!”

“All right. Then let’s head down first. We’ll fly for a few hours before resting for the night to treat everyone’s injuries and allow everyone to replenish their Chi. We’ll head out again tomorrow morning for the forest outskirts!

Daniella nodded her head. She knew that she could only pray for Jack now.

“The battle has ended. So many people died!”

At that moment, the audience who were watching the light spots from the outside were both hopeful and terrified.

Nearly half of the people had died. Many people's hearts felt heavy.

"Master, the remaining group is the one with more people. Heh. It's definitely the First Young Master. He avenged the Second Young Master!"

The First Elder of the Hunt family chuckled, delight painted over his features. "Seems like the smaller group must have been the leftover troops from the other families. Hah. They must have realized that something was amiss and banded together in an attempt to fight back. It's a pity that they lack the fighters. Hah. They were killed so easily by the First Young Master!"

"That's right. This is great. He took revenge!"

Quentin also nodded his head, delight sparking in his heart. Although they had paid a huge price for the competition, he believed that more geniuses from the other families were lost compared to the Hunt, Church and Lagorio families.

That way, the Hunt family's position was secure.

Master Church and Trenton exchanged a glance, nodding their heads ever so slightly. It was evident that they knew that they were the true victors in this competition.

Especially Trenton, who had dreamed of Jack dying before his eyes. Relief flooded his veins, and he managed to avenge his daughter.

However, this was not enough. There was still Nash White. He believed that in another two years, they would become even stronger. He would wait for the opportunity to strengthen their relationship with the Hunt and Church families, then find an excuse to wipe out the White family. Only then he would be satisfied.

The White family and the Cabello family were extremely worried. They also saw everything happening

on the screen. The huge group of light had swarmed and engulfed the smaller group, and they thought that the former must have been the Hunt family's army. Only they would be able to amass so many people. Strong people, at that. Only First Young Master Hunt would be able to pull that off.

"Ah, I wonder how Young Master Jack is doing. Seems like everything went by terribly, judging from the screen. I hope that he's not among the few hundred casualties!"

Titus heaved a long sigh, worried about Jack. "If something does happen to him, we would suffer great losses. Never mind Young Master Jack, the flying sword he has will be a great loss!"

"Ah, let's just wait!"

Nash sighed and closed his eyes. He was worried as well, but worrying was no use. He could only wait outside.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1411-1413

Chapter 1411

"Haha! Come on, little Cloud! Don't you want to avenge your little brother? Let's see if you can catch me first, you bird brain! Do you still want revenge? Dream on!"

Inside the light shield, over the forest, Jack controlled his flying sword and glided through the air at lightning speed, maintaining a distance where the other party could not reach him at all. He turned back and mocked the other party.

"You bastard! Do you think I can't catch up with you? Don't be too cocky just because you have an ultimate-grade spiritual tool"

Cloud was so angry that he gritted his teeth. Then he flipped his palm, took out a talisman paper, and injected some Chi energy into it. The talisman paper immediately emitted some light. Cloud then pasted it on his body, and out of a sudden, his speed dramatically increased by double.

“What the heck?”

Jack gasped aloud. He had never seen such a treasure before. Seeing the distance between them becoming closer and closer, Jack’s face blanched and turned unsightly.

He could not utter a word to tease the other party right now. He had already flown out so far, Daniella and the others should be safe by now.

However, he found that even if he increased his speed to the extreme, he could not outrun the other party. Cloud was extremely fast and he would catch up with Jack soon!

“Damn! What kind of paper is that? How could it….”

Rage quickened Jack’s blood. At this time, Cloud clenched both his fists and blasted toward Jack.

Roar!

Two terrifying dragons once again appeared in the sky. The mighty dragons were heading straight toward Jack, releasing a powerful sense of oppression

Jack wheeled his head back, the huge Chi dragons came straight at him, and they were fast. One of them attacking from the right, and another from the left; it was impossible for Jack to dodge them. If these attacks hit on him, he would surely die this time.

“Grr! I have no choice but to fight!”

Jack clenched his jaw and ceased flying. The flying sword stopped midair then Jack held it in his grip and

swung his arm toward his front side.

“Blade Wave!”

Jack once again used his highest-ranked martial technique-Blade Wave. A stalk of Chi flying swords appeared before him within a second, looking fierce and sharp. The Blade Wave shot out, swooshing and flying ahead, heading straight for the two Chi dragons

Boom! Bang! Boom!

Terrifying booming sounds pierce through the air as though God was angry at mankind.

Jack stood frozen. He snapped out of his thoughts and immediately flew away again. After all, he should be able to resist and delay the dragons’ attack for a few seconds. As long as he could buy himself a few more seconds, then he might have increased his

Chance of living.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

A loud sound rang out behind him, and those blade waves of Jack were only able to hold out the dragons for two seconds and were then destroyed one by one. The Chi dragons, with their remaining mighty Chi energy, headed straight for Jack.

However, this time, Jack’s flying speed outran the dragons; his flying sword was fast. He then commanded and controlled the flying sword to fly forward with a faster speed. Just a few moments later, the distance between him and the dragons has pulled away. He finally flew out of the attack range of the remaining Chi dragons

In the end, the dragons landed in the White and hit a few trees like a bomb. The explosion was appalling!

Chapter 1412

“Piece of sh*t! This brat is too

Resourceful!”

Cloud looked to the front, and h e was so angry that he once

Again chased after him.

His heart knew very well that h e had to kill Jack as soon as possible, otherwise, the effect o f the pill would soon be obsolete. Once the pill was no longer effective, then he was bound to be killed.

Swoosh!

Both of them were fast, cutting a streak in the air, playing a chasing game

“I wonder how long will the pill last in his body. That magical paper of that brat, it should have a time limit too, right?”

Jack mumbled to himself while flying forward at lightning speed

“Go to hell!”

However, soon Cloud caught u p with him again. Jack once again appeared within his attack range, thus, he clenched his fists and blasted out toward Jack again.

Roar!

Two huge dragons appeared within a second. They came straight for Jack as they roared angrily

“What the f*ck! He’s catching u p again!”

Beads of sweat dripped down on Jack’s forehead. He had to stop and fight the battle again.

Of course, he utilized the same technique as last time; he cast his Blade Wave immediately, the blades flew out again while he continued his fleeing journey

“Stop right there, you wimp!”

Cloud panicked. If this went on, once the effect of the pill in his body wore off, he would be I n real trouble. The time he had left was getting lesser and lesser by now.

Jack dodged and hid. Now and then, after being caught up, he would use the same methodcast Blade Wave to wear off the two dragons, to buy himself a few seconds to flee.

When Cloud’s attack destroyed

His attack, the remaining attack would continue flying toward Jack, but Jack would have already escaped from the attack range by that time.

Boom Boom Boom!

The two people were as though playing the tag game, while the explosive and terrifying sounds of

fighting kept sounding in the forest. The situation was intense.

Another ten minutes had passed, and Jack's forehead was covered with fine beads of sweat.

"Damnit! How long will the effect of the pill last? I can't continue like that, and that brat has used another talisman paper! He brought a lot of this talisman paper with him, huh?"

Jack's face grew more and more unsightly. To make Jack stop and fight with him, Cloud continued insulting Jack, calling him a goon and coward from behind

However, Jack knew very well that the other party merely wanted to provoke him to make him stop fleeing. So, instead, he just turned a deaf ear and kept on running away.

But, if the situation persists, it would be bad for Jack. The other party had a higher martial level than he does. If this went on, his Chi energy would definitely be used up faster than the other party!

"Ah!"

Nonetheless, after flying for a while, Jack heard a miserable scream from behind.

He immediately stopped and turned around to see that Cloud gave out a painful expression and the Chi energy in his body was actually receding little by little.

"Haha! Awesome! That's great!"

Jack's spirit lifted. The effect of the pill seemed to have diminished, and the other party would be suffering the backlash of the pill.

Chapter 1413

Cloud was in agony; he looked like he was in extreme pain. The kind of aggressive twitching he had, showed that his martial level was dropping quickly from the peak stage to the late stage of the true god realm, and then to the middle stage of the true god realm…

“My goodness, his power has already dropped to the middle stage of the true god realm, yet it’s still dropping?”

Jack saw that the other party’s martial level was still falling after a while, he became more and more excited. That way, it would be a lot easier for Jack t o kill the other party. Just patiently waiting until the effect of the pill wore off, that brat would just be a sickly cat.

Finally, the drop stopped. Cloud’s martial level dropped t o the early stage of the semi-god realm, and nearly decreased to the grandmaster level.

“Heh, early stage of the semi-god level?”

Jack smiled happily and his heart was relieved. Before this, he was chased by the other party so badly and almost died. Now that the effect of the pill had diminished, Jack was

Now safe.

Swoosh!

Cloud looked at Jack for a second and turned around to flee.

However, Jack blocked his escape route and appeared in front of him in a flash. “Heh, d o you think with your current speed and martial level, you will be able to get away from m e? Your talisman paper is amazing, I’d give you the credit. But after your martial level dropped, even with the talisman paper, your

speed won't be fast!" Jack looked at Cloud with a cold smile.

"Brat, I'm the Young Master of the Hunt family. If you dare to kill me, you're so done for!"

Cloud gritted his teeth and threatened Jack with a vicious hatred.

"Young Master Cloud, you're quite something, aren't you? I killed your little brother; do you think I'm afraid of killing another Young Master Hunt?'

Jack sneered icily, "What's more, there's no one else here, and you were chasing after me just now with an intention to end my life! And now I have to let you go? What a joke! I think you're so used to being a young master of a great family and thinking that 'Hunt family' is very useful for you to get away with any situation, right?

"Go to hell!"

Cloud clenched his teeth and blasted out attacks again.

Unfortunately, this time the two huge dragons did not look mighty at all; dragons were too weak compared to the previous one, and they were only a third in size of the previous ones. They looked like two little green snakes.

Jack blasted out two consecutive blade waves and the attacks destroyed the two tiny dragons within a second. He then threw another attack toward Cloud.

Bang!

Cloud received the attack head -on, and his body was halved, falling to the ground from high up in the air. He was dead.

After killing the other party, Jack immediately got off the flying sword and landed on the ground. He took the sword that was in the other party's grip, as well as the martial ring. Fearing of being discovered, he then flew away in a flash, disappearing between the tree.

After flying for a while, Jack arrived at a cave. He then sat down and recovered his Chi energy.

After recovering all the Chi energy in his body, the sky outside was turning darker. It seemed like the night was about to arrive.

He kept Cloud's sword into his martial ring, took out all the things from Cloud's martial ring, and laid everything nicely in front of him.

He was amazed by how many tokens were kept inside Cloud's martial rings. He then proceeded to keep them in his own ring. Not only the tokens but there were also several pills and a small bottle. Inside the small bottle, there were five pills; these pills were light red in color. Jack remembered clearly that the other party consumed the same light red pill to increase his strength and martial status!

There was also plenty of spirited grass-second-grade and first-grade spirited grasses. Besides, the mystical talisman papers were in there too; the paper that accelerated the speed of flying

"Heh, a lot of treasure in here!"

Jack smiled and put everything away in his martial ring, then threw Cloud's ring to the side. There were only a few days left, hence he took out several materials and started alchemy.

He took out the second-grade elementary pill prescription that he got from the Second Young Master Hunt, studied it carefully, and compared the materials in front of him." Let's try it, a second-grade elementary pill! If I can create I t successfully, I'll become a second-grade alchemist!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1414-1416

Chapter 1414

Jack was excited when he thought about the opportunity to finally create a second-grade pill.

He never had a formula for a second-grade pill before, so this was extremely precious to him. Even if someone else had the formula, they would never share it with him so easily.

He did not think that after killing the alchemical genius, Second Young Master Hunt during the competition, he would reap such excellent benefits and obtain many formulae to create second-grade pills.

Now, he could try to create second-grade elementary pills. If he succeeded, he was truly a second-grade elementary alchemist. Only Second Young Master Hunt and the First Elder from the Cabello family were at such a level.

Jack took a while before he suppressed his excitement, slowly heating up the stove before him and throwing the stalks of spirited grass in according to a certain sequence. He then extracted the juice from the grass.

Time trickled past slowly. It was difficult to create a second -grade pill, much more so than a first-grade pill. Just as Jack was about to solidify the pill, h e failed. The flame was just a little bigger than what was prescribed, yet it nearly caused the stove to explode and made the juices disappear into fumes. This batch of precious ingredients was wasted just like that

“Ah. It’s so much harder than first-grade alchemy!”

Jack wiped the sweat beads on his forehead, heaving a sigh. However, it was a secondgrade pill he was trying to create after all when he thought about it, and he had n o master to guide him. He could only follow the instructions on the alchemy manual. It was already an accomplishment that he managed to get to the very last step.

He rested for over ten minutes. Then he started to create a new batch.

This time, it was evident that Jack was slightly faster, and his movements were more practiced. Coupled with the experience he had from the previous attempt, Jack's focus did not waver, and the attempt went by smoothly.

"Rise!"

At last, Jack gave a wan smile and lifted his hand. A small pill flew out from the pot and floated before his eyes, "Hah. Not bad!"

Jack laughed, ecstatic. He did not think that he could successfully create a secondgrade elementary pill on his second attempt.

By the time he looked outside the cave, he realized that the sky was brightening.

"There's another four days left. We're definitely at the top of this competition. Besides, we've gotten so much spirited grass by killing people. Yule and the others must be searching for spirited grass. I'll just stay here to try and break into the advanced stage o f the true god realm! After all, I don't know what will happen out there!

Jack looked at the pill in his palm, confidence brimming in him.

He had already broken into the intermediate stage of the true god realm for some time. His Chi was thick and rich, and his cultivation level was stable. He believed that with the secondgrade elementary pill, it would not be a problem for him to break into the advanced stage o f the true god realm.

After all, the Hunt family would not let them off so easily once they went out. If he managed to break

into the advanced stage of the true god realm, he would not have to fear Master Hunt with his fighting prowess enhanced by the ultimate-grade spiritual tool.

Jack was also confident in his fighting skills. If he had the fighting power of someone at the peak of the true god status, it would mean that the White family had three people who were at that status. The White family's strength would be bolstered.

Of course, Jack was not sure of how he would fare compared t o Master Hunt and if he could even compete against him since they had never fought before. Even those of the same cultivation level were not equal fighters, and Master Hunt was the strongest fighter of the Hunt family, the strongest family of the reclusive families.

Chapter 1415

After he thought about it, Jack looked out of the cave and felt that where he was was fairly out of reach, as he was at the outskirts of the forest. He had also killed plenty of fighters, so I t should not be a problem.

He popped the pill into his mouth and swallowed it.

As the pill slid down his throat, a powerful force began to build within him. The second-grade pill was powerful. Even if it was only a second-grade elementary, the energy it contained was a few times more than a first-grade premium pill.

Jack immediately use his martial skill and focused the Chi into his diaphragm.

As time went on, the vague aura around Jack also grew a little stronger.

Another two days passed. There were only two days left till the end of the competition.

Daniella and the others sat beneath a big tree, expressions glum.

“What’s Young Master Jack doing? The competition is ending tomorrow. Will he be able to find us today?”

When Martin thought of Jack, his huge, bulky body deflated.

“He’ll definitely come back. He’s my older brother. I trust him! He pulled off miracles before. He’ll definitely make it this time too!”

Yule spoke confidently, clenching her fists.

“It’ll be difficult because his opponent has the runes. He’s a goner if he’s caught!”

A man from the Lancaster family heaved a sigh. He felt that Jack hardly had a chance of surviving. They had been waiting there for a few days now, with some of them frequently flying up to survey their surroundings, trying to look for any trace of Jack.

Yet there were no signs of Jack even after a few days. It was highly likely that he was dead. If he was alive, he would have circled around that area and found them in no time at all with his flying sword, even if the forest spread across a large area.

“What are you talking about? You want me to smack some sense into you?”

Randall shot to his feet. “That’s my Big Bro,” he told the man angrily. “Shut your trap. My Big Bro won’t die so easily!”

“I hate to be the bearer of bad news too, Young Master, but he still hasn’t appeared after all these days. Besides, First Young Mistress Cabello said that she and Jack could only match First Young Master Hunt’s

fighting power when they combined their attacks. If he used that pill, there's no way that Jack would b e able to take him on without First Young Mistress Cabello."

The man released a frustrated sigh.

Everybody went silent.

They all knew that there was only a ten percent chance of Jack surviving.

Chapter 1416

"Sigh! Why are they not back yet?!" Somebody sighed again after they waited for some time.

"Hey, there's a man flying our way on a flying sword!" joyously exclaimed a man from the Lancaster family, perched on top of the branches.

"Really? That's great!" Helena, Daniella, and the others were extremely excited when they heard this. They immediately flew upward to see who came their way.

However, the expressions on their faces fell when they noticed who it was on that flying sword moments later.

The other party felt threatened a she got closer, noticing so many people in the area. Sure, he was a member of a first-class aristocratic family, the Zachary family, and he usually had nothing to fear of any other day.

However, how could he fight when the people he spotted at that moment were masters of a couple hundred in the forest?

“Greetings, e-everybody. I’m alone, and I don’t have many tokens with me. If you want them, I…I can give them to you. Please, don’t…don’t hurt me!” The man had a frightened expression on his face. After all, he was only in the initial stage of the true-god level, and although his fighting prowess was not low, he was no match against those like Helena, Daniella, Venus, and Randall. He did not even have the opportunity to resist them.

“Who would want your tokens? They’re just icing on the cake for us. Apart from that, the competition is ending tomorrow. It’s meaningless to take a couple of tokens from you!” Daniella was extremely disappointed when she saw that the person was not Jack. She rolled her eyes at that person and, crossing her arms at her chest, grumbled, “Shoo, shoo! Get lost now, it’s annoying to look at you!”

The man was at a loss for words. While he was thankful that they did not take his belongings, they looked as if the very sight of him annoyed them. He had no idea how he offended this beautiful lady and was despised in such a way.

“Alright, alright, alright!” The man was extremely puzzled, but he nonetheless quickly flew far away with his flying sword that was a middle-grade spiritual tool

Some time later, four to five members of the White family flew over from far away.

Their expressions darkened when they spotted Daniella and the others standing among the woods, somewhat frightened as they wondered if those people would take their things.

“Kaleb!” Yule, who was in the woods below, immediately flew upward and called out to them when she saw them.

Kaleb White eased when he saw that it was Yule. Looking at the woods below, he discovered that many had gathered in that spot, and most of them were members of the White family.

“This is great, Miss Yule! This is great! I didn’t expect everybody t o be here!” Kaleb was extremely excited as he spoke. “We were extremely careful these past couple of days as we personally saw many

geniuses from other forces being killed. Sigh… This competition is totally different from the last ones!”

Kaleb seemed to have recalled something as he spoke. He looked around and asked, “By the way, where’s Young Master Jack? Why don’t I see him? Isn’t he together with you guys?”

Everybody’s facial expression darkened as they heard this.

“How could this be? Did something happen to Young Master Jack?” Kaleb panicked when he noticed everybody’s reaction and felt that something was wrong. Anxious, he then blurted, “This is impossible! Young Master Jack is such a nice person, and he’s so talented. What should our White family d o if something happened to him? I’m sure that nothing would happen to Young Master Jack!

“It all happened because of…” Yule sighed and told Kaleb about every detail that happened previously.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1417-1419

Chapter 1417

“Young… Young master is an incredibly affable person! He actually chose to sacrifice himself for everybody else!” Before Kaleb could sob, a woman who came with him had started wailing sadly.

“Look everybody! Jack! It’s Jack!” Daniella was over the moon when she spotted a very familiar figure flying toward them atop of a flying sword.

Everybody in the forest was extremely excited when they heard Daniella’s exclamation and flew upward.

Soon, a huge group of people appeared in this part of the sky.

Initially searching for them, Jack smiled and headed right for the masses when he saw the large group that flew up mid-air.

“Oh, how wonderful! He really survived!” Helena was just as elated, so much so that her eyes slightly reddened at that moment.

“We knew Young Master Jack would definitely make it!” spoke a man as he patted his thigh in excitement

“That’s right. Young Master Jack is the prodigy among all geniuses. The so-called First Young Master Hunt is no match for him, too!” A man from the Lancaster family was also extremely excited.

All of them knew that they owed everything to Jack for rescuing them. If Jack did not lead Cloud Hunt away, all of them would have died on the spot.

“Haha… Hi, everybody! We haven’t seen each other in a couple of days!” beamed Jack happily upon arriving.

“You! Why are you only here after vanishing for so many days? We were all terrified and afraid that you might’ve died!” Daniella almost rushed over to hug Jack, but recalling that her sister was his girlfriend in public, she held herself back and instead offered him an eye-roll.

“Daniella, how can you blame him for this? It’s not an easy task for him to stay alive, and he must’ve been healing his wounds from the fight. Apart from that, it’s not easy for him to look for us in such a huge forest. It’s impressive enough that he managed to find us!” refuted Helena as she instinctively spoke on Jack’s behalf.

“That’s right! It’s good enough that he’s alive!” All the prejudice Venus had toward Jack disappeared at this moment, and in its wake was just a faint adoration for Jack in secret.

She had to admit that her sister had great insight since she managed to find such a wonderful man.

“Alright, let’s take a rest here. We should be able to go out tomorrow!” Jack smiled and flew down. Everybody followed after him and landed on the ground.

Recalling something, Helena asked Jack curiously, “By the way, what happened to Cloud? Is he dead? I remember the Hunt family has some sort of rune that can help somebody to fly and increase their flying speed. Did he not use the rune? Or did he use it but still failed to catch up to you?”

“Oh, so that weird piece of paper is known as a rune?!” Jack had a sudden realization but continued, “Don’t worry, that guy is dead. I admit he got faster after he used the rune, but I was still able to withstand his attack. I continued to fly after I blocked the attack. Anyways, this continued for a long time and, in the end, the effects of his pills dissipated. His fighting prowess dropped to the initial stage of the semi-god level after he experienced a backlash!”

Chapter 1418

“How’s that possible? Is the backlash effect of this pill that terrifying? He almost dropped from the final stage of the true god level to a ninth-grade grandmaster?” Everybody inhaled deeply when they heard Jack’s story and were inwardly embarrassed.

It should be mentioned that the pill was truly powerful as it would increase a person’s fighting prowess and combat power within a short period of time, and this was something that could help a person win during incredibly crucial moments. However, it seemed that the price to be paid was steep on its own.

“That’s for sure. Cloud wouldn’t have taken the pill if the backlash was so terrible. He only took the pill because he was also hurt and wasn’t our opponent.” Jack could not help but paused for a while before he continued, “Luckily, that flying sword of mine flew quickly or he would’ve killed me!”

“That’s true. It really is quite dangerous now that we’re listening to you talking about it!” Randall was overwhelmed with mixed emotions. He thought about it and reminded everybody, “By the way, everybody will be able to go out tomorrow. By then, none of us here can disclose if members of the Hunt family asked us who killed their second or first young master, understood? After all, those from the three families who knew about it are already dead!”

“Don’t worry. We won’t say anything, since Young Master Jack saved our lives. Am I right, everybody?” vowed a man from the Lancaster family as he patted his chest.

“That’s right. We’ll keep everything to ourselves from here on out!”

“I won’t say anything even if they kill me!” One by one, the others also immediately made their promises.

Jack smiled and took out an impressive amount of tokens with the flip of his hand. He then passed it to Randall and Helena. “Why don’t the two of you take half each?”

“Why are you giving us so many tokens? It’s really too much, Brother Jack. We cannot take this!” Randall immediately declined.

“That’s right, Jack, you should keep it. By the way, we’ve separated all the trophies we obtained during the big battle according to the proportion and gave them to your sister, Yule!”

Helena did not take the tokens Jack offered to them. They had already gotten enough tokens after all, and it would not be a problem for them to enter the top three positions, thus they had no need to take the tokens from Jack.

They did not expect the awkwardly smiling Jack to insist, “You guys have to help me share some of these things. There are too many of them!”

“There are too many, you say?” Randall and Helena exchanged baffled glances with one another.

Jack nodded. “That’s right. Cloud had a lot of tokens in his martial ring, and I have to take some for you guys! I estimated that you guys had given us the tokens you’ve obtained from the other members of the Hunt family based on the forty percent proportion.”

“That’s right, Brother Jack. I’ve stored everything in this martial ring, and I can hand it to you now!” Yule smiled and handed the martial ring to Jack.

Jack took the ring and inspected it before a satisfied smile graced his features. “This time, we’ve gotten quite a lot of spirited grass and other items!

“That’s right. This competition is rather cruel, but it can be considered training for everybody. After all, the survival-of-the-fittest notion and the ‘law of the jungle’ are the rules to follow in order to survive in this world!” Randall was also overwhelmed with emotions.

“Once we get out of here, those from the Hunt family, the Lagorio family, and the Church family are going to be furious!”

Jack spoke up at this point, “The Norman family, too. I’ve killed all three young masters of the Norman family.”

Chapter 1419

Randall laughed out loudly. “Haha! This is the ending for going against my older brother. They can’t blame others for their suicidal ways!”

That night, everybody hunted a few monster beasts and roasted them as food.

As there were no strong monster beasts at the outer ring of the forest, everyone could afford to let their guard down and relax.

Many of the other competitors started to move toward the outer ring of the forest while some found a place to hide as they waited for the competition to end the next day.

Hours later, the sun rose and everyone conversed among themselves as they waited for the competition to end officially.

The sky started to move and there was a golden-colored pattern in the sky on top of Kobe Mountain. There were seven light spots of different colors in the pattern, and they started to blink since their appearance.

“It looks like we’re going out. Is this light dome disappearing soon?”

“I have no idea. I don’t know how we should go out, but why do I feel that the sky has some sort of attraction?”

Many people started to discuss amongst themselves. The attraction coming from the sky grew increasingly stronger by the minute.

“That golden-colored pattern looks very familiar,” exclaimed Daniella, much to Jack’s surprise. “Did you guys realize that? I seemed to have seen it somewhere else!”

“This is incredible. Let me take a couple of photos with my cell phone!” Venus took her cell phone out and started taking photos.

“Why does this pattern look much like a map?” Randall spoke up after staring at the pattern for some time.

Jack’s heart felt like it stopped for a moment. “You’re right, it does look like a map. Randall, everybody, take a look at the seven light spots with different colors. Can you think of anything that has the same position as to where they’re located?”

Jack suddenly came to a daunting theory. He believed that the ultimate-god level existed, but this inheritance was discontinued for unknown reasons.

As for this formation, it was a broken formation from years ago and was recovered by Quentin. He felt that maybe this formation was some sort of guidance, and the old stone pillars at the original location the formation formed might have been broken by others on purpose. There was a possibility that they did this to cover up something

“This map looks very much like our Cathysia!” As she racked her brain for a plausible answer, she then inhaled deeply moments later. “Oh my god… These seven light spots aren’t just randomly located where they are. Think about it: Did you guys notice that they’re positioned just like how the seven dangers are located in Cathysia?”

“That’s right! The positions are almost the same as the location of the seven dangers!” Daniella chimed in. “Oh my gosh. I was thinking that these patterns were some random patterns and that they only appeared in the formation because it’s almost time for us to exit the forest. Never thought it has a much deeper meaning!”

“This is great!” Jack balled his hands into tight fists as he was overwhelmed with happiness.

At this moment, a swirl appeared in the sky and it had a strong suction power. It soon sucked everybody upward and into the spiral.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1420-1422

Chapter 1420

“This is marvelous. It looks like the geniuses are coming out!” The members of the families were overwhelmed with emotions as they gazed at the huge pale blue-colored light dome from the outside.

Among them stood the all-too-confident Quentin. He walked a couple of steps forward and said loudly, “Everyone, it is obvious that many geniuses have died in this competition. Sigh… This is a training for them, and the geniuses who survived this competition are true geniuses.

They’ll definitely have a longer journey in life after experiencing a baptism of blood.”

Quentin had no idea that the secret technique that connected him and his son had stopped working after his eldest son took the pill to increase his fighting prowess. Hence, he did not feel anything when Cloud died.

As a result, he naturally thought that Cloud was still alive and had avenged Tyrell successfully.

“That’s right. The geniuses who survived would definitely have some achievements in the future!” The master of the Lagorio family, Trenton Lagorio agreed wholeheartedly, believing Jack had perished and that the cooperation between the three families would surely bring them the results they wanted.

The only incident was that the opposing motley crowd took some precautions in the later stages, so many of their people should have died as well.

However, it was sufficient so long as 300 to 400 of the competitors from the White family, including Jack, had died. That was the result he wanted.

The family master of the Church family also stood forward with a smile on his face. “That’s right. Everybody has been informed of the rules before the competition, and everybody should obey the rules. Even Master Hunt accepted the death of his second son. Indeed, he must be saddened, but this has been fated. All we can do is accept the outcome.”

Quentin also nodded. “Sigh… It’s alright, seeing as a couple of days have passed. It’s normal to be unable to accept it in the beginning and feel sad. I believe that many of them who come out later would be sad too. However, as martial artists, we should focus on pursuing the principles of life, right? We shouldn’t put too much attention on relationship related issues.”

“That’s for sure. What Master Hunt said is very true,” replied Trenton smilingly. He then looked at Nash and asked,” Master White, that son of yours is a genius. Oh, that’s right. You had two sons, but one of them didn’t return after traversing a dangerous area, and he must’ve died for sure. That’s quite regretful, and my heart aches as he was my grandson.”

Pausing for a moment, Trenton then continued, “However, you’d be hurt much more than I’ll be if this second son of yours, Jack also died, am I right? By then, you’d only be left with a daughter, Yule! Haha!”

Quentin, knowing that Trenton hated Nash to the core and that Trenton had tried his best to butter up to him, wanting to get into the Hunt family’s good books, he chimed in sarcastically, “That’s right. If that’s the case, Master White will truly be in a miserable situation. I still have my eldest son, while you’ll be left with none!”

Master Church even added on with a smile, “Didn’t that daughter of his also join the competition? What would he do if she also died in the forest? He might have to go home and hurry up in making babies. Otherwise, his line of descent would genuinely end!”

Nash’s face darkened, baffled as to how these three family masters would gang up on him and speak in such an unscrupulous manner in front of everyone.

Noticing his bitter expression, Trenton continued to throw jabs at him and sneered, “Is something wrong? Master White, we’re just joking here, and the competitors aren’t even out yet. Could it be that you’re really afraid? You can’t even take a joke?”

Nash glared at the other party fiercely and said, “Trenton Lagorio, you’ve also said that the competitors haven’t come out yet. How would you know that my son is dead? It is true that my son’s combat power isn’ tas strong as some geniuses, and that his fighting prowess is also slightly lower compared to some geniuses, but the forest is huge and Kobe Mountain is vast as well. He might not have bumped into those strong masters. As long as he’s careful, I know he’ll walk out alive!”

Nash glanced at the light dome at this point and continued to say, “My daughter, Yule, would definitely come out alive as well!”

Suddenly, several people were hurled out from the light dome and accidentally fell to the ground as they were not on their guard.

“Oh my, they’ve come out. They truly have come out. Surprising how they’re all just hurled out like that!”

Chapter 1421

A man stood up and rubbed his butt before looking at the crowd in front of him. At this moment, many competitors were also thrown out of the spiral.

Some of them who reacted in time immediately activated their Chi to help them land smoothly. Those who reacted slightly slower, on the other hand, landed straight on the ground in an embarrassing manner.

“Haha… Haiden, I knew you’d be alive. Quickly, come to me, my beloved grandson!” The Second Elder of the Zachary family was delighted when he saw that his grandson had emerged unscathed

Haiden rubbed his butt and dusted himself before walking toward him. With a bitter smile, he spoke, “I’m alive, but my luck was really bad. I didn’t get many tokens!”

“Forget about the tokens, they’re not that important. The most important thing is how many people are alive right now. From the light spots on this light dome, we can deduce that almost half of the people in this competition have died.” Emotions overwhelmed the Second Elder of the Zachary family. Although his grandson was quite strong and was in the intermediate stage of the true god level, there were a couple of freaks who joined this competition. Some of those people had extremely high combat power, hence he was slightly worried, even though Haiden was talented.

“So many have died? Sigh… I wonder how many from our Zachary family are alive.” Haiden sighed as he despondently watched on as more people were hurled out from the spiral.

Many of the family masters tightened their fists as they waited anxiously.

Spotting Yule’s figure not long after, Titus turned to Nash and excitedly exclaimed, “Yule has come out!”

“Yes, I see her! I see her!” Nash was slightly at ease when he saw Yule coming out. There were quite a few geniuses from the White family who came out beside Yule, and a dozen of them slowly emerged.

However, he was still slightly worried. After all, 400 people from each family joined the competition, and only a dozen had returned at the moment. He had no idea what to expect next “Beth has returned too!” added Titus happily upon spotting Beth.

Kenneth was overwhelmed with delight when he saw his daughter coming out. “Beth, come here!” he gushed.

Beth quickly flew toward him when she saw them. “Father!”

Kenneth immediately asked,” Where’s Jack? Did you see him? Is he still alive?”

Nash and the others also looked at Beth, unable to control their anxiety as they anticipated news of Jack.

Chapter 1422

Beth rolled her eyes at everybody when she saw how impatient they were and said," Why are you guys so impatient? Isn't he coming out soon? Goodness gracious!"

"He's coming out soon?" Nash was stunned before an ecstatic expression appeared on his face. "What great news! This means that my son is fine, and he's coming out soon!"

After he finished speaking, Nash -unable to contain his excitement-walked toward Trenton and gloated, "Did you hear that? Our geniuses told us Jack is fine upon returning here. Nothing happened to him, and he's coming out shortly!'

"How… How is that possible?" Trenton frowned in disbelief. Did Jack not join the last huge battle, or was this guy a coward that he hid somewhere during the last couple of days to wait for the competition to end?

Sure enough, a figure was sent flying outward at this moment and almost fell to the ground. He quickly focused his Chi at his feet and landed slowly on the ground.

"This is great, Young Master Jack has returned!" Many of the elders and patronums from the White family were delighted. Jack's talents were greatly recognized by them.

Jack was the beacon of hope among the White family's younger generation. Many people looked forward to having him being their next family master, and he had gained the support of many.

If Jack died during the competition, that would be a huge loss for the White family.

"How's this possible? This guy truly had walked out unscathed!" The family master of the Hunt family, Quentin Hunt immediately glowered in disbelief, momentarily at a loss for words.

He suspected that it was indeed Jack who killed his second son and was aided by Helena. After all, his son had some contradictions with them previously. Initially, his son did not want to join the competition as he felt that it was meaningless, and Tyrell only decided to join the competition after the squabble between him and Jack happened.

Hence, there was a large possibility that his suspicions were true.

If Jack was still alive, that meant that Cloud had not avenged Tyrell yet.

“Could it be somebody else?” Old Master Hunt, who was standing at the side, could not help but frown as he secretly guessed. After all, none of them knew for sure what happened inside.

The First Elder of the Hunt family thought about it and spoke, “There were so many people in that forest. I refuse to believe that none of them knew nor saw how the second young master died!”

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

As more and more people were thrown out of the dome, Jack slowly walked toward his

Family

However, Jack was stopped by Alejandro just before he got to his father.

“What’s wrong? Is there anything Master Cabello needs?” Jack frowned. It was known that the relationship between these two families had been strained all along.

Alejandro immediately smiled embarrassingly and asked,” Jack, you’re dating Helena, right? Have you

seen the three of them there? Do you know about their current situation?”

Jack could see how worried Alejandro was about his three daughters. Perhaps this was the love of a father.

He smiled and said, “Don’t worry -all three of them are well and alive. Nothing happened to them!”

“Great! It’s great that they’re all alive!” Alejandro stepped a couple of steps back and gave way to Jack after he received the news. The burden that weighed his heart was removed at last.

After all, half of the people who joined this competition were dead even though his three daughters were talented. His worries were unavoidable as too many people had died. He was most worried about Daniella, as her fighting prowess was only at the initial stage of the true God level.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1423-1425

Chapter 1423

Jack’s words had very much assured and calmed Alejandro.

True to his word, Helena and the others were thrown out one after another not long after.

Some time later, about 100 to 200 members of the Cabello family, White family, and Lancaster family had come out.

“I heard that Tyrell Hunt had died?” Nash asked Jack when the latter stood before him.

Jack smiled and spoke, “Let’s talk about the details after we go back. Some of the people from the other families might cry due to anger soon.”

Nash nodded; talking about what happened at that place was not the best idea to do. It would be bad if people from the other families around them overheard them, even if they spoke softly.

“Cry due to anger?” Nash was stunned though was delighted as he realized something.

They were able to notice some things from the light dome previously. The people from the Hunt family seemed to have formed an organization with people from some families and were killing geniuses from the other families.

However, it looked like their opportunities to do so failed eventually

“This is weird. Why are the only ones returning from our family so few?” The members of the Norman family started to panic when they saw that not many of their people had returned while many of them from the White family, Cabello family, and other families had returned.

Everybody started to worry, especially when none of the family master’s three sons came out.

Time slowly passed. Some third-class aristocratic families were delighted as they had around 300 people remaining, while those who only had around 100 people left had darkened expressions on their faces.

The light dome gradually darkened as well, which meant that almost everyone inside had come out.

“Impossible!” Finally, Trenton could not hold it back anymore. Up until that moment, only about | two dozen people out of the 400 contestants from the Lagorio family who entered had returned. From the proportion, it was obvious that many of their members had died.

His glower was dark, bitter, and spiteful.

“Why hasn’t Cloud come out yet?” Quentin was equally irate. Not only did Cloud not come out yet, but only a dozen of the Hunt family’s geniuses had returned a this moment. The situation, no doubt, looked bleak.

After a while, the First Elder of the Hunt family reminded Quentin with a frown on his face, “Master, there are only a dozen light spots left on the light screen.”

Obviously, only around a dozen people had not returned.

“Don’t speak about it!” Quentin tightened his fists and gritted his teeth.

After around ten seconds, the remaining people had come out. The White family had around 300 people left while the Lancaster family and the Cabello family also had about 300 people. Only a few dozen of their people had died yet, compared to the other families, the situation of these three families was obviously better.

Even the Zachary family and the Ximenes family were in a neither good nor bad situation as about 200 of their members had returned

“Impossible! Why… Why hasn’t Cloud come out?” Old Master Hunt shook his head continuously after the light screen disappeared, unable to comprehend the truth. He knew all too well about Cloud’s fighting prowess and combat power. He could be considered as the best among the younger generations, yet he did not come out.

Nash could not help but feel amused by what Quentin said previously. He stepped forward and persuaded the latter, “Master Hunt, we’re sorry for your loss, but please accept what has been fated. You mentioned previously that this is quite normal. The young people can only grow after they experience the baptism of blood!”

Chapter 1424

The corners of Quentin’s mouth twitched uncontrollably a couple of times, and his facial expression

contorted uglily upon hearing Nash's words. Quentin was mocking others just moments ago, never once thinking what went around would come around.

"Master Lagorio, your family seemed to have suffered a serious loss this time as well!"

"By the way, why does the Church family only have so few people left? All three of your families are big families!" Shelby could not help but step forward and started mocking the other family when she recalled how they gloated and paraded themselves moments ago.

"Impossible! I'm sure that Cloud is still alive! I'm sure of it!" yelled Quentin loudly after mulling over his thoughts. Eyes slowly reddening, he could not accept the fact that his eldest son had also died. He even struggled to recover from Tyrell's death, and his heart had only started to feel better. Never did he see it coming that his eldest son had also died.

One of the elders from the Hunt family wore a grieving expression as he stepped forward and said, "Master, everyone is out now. This formation and the light screen had also disappeared. The young master has…"

"Master, this… This…" Trenton also stepped forward. Apart from the grieving expression on his face, he was also in disbelief. How could the union between the geniuses from three families fail to topple their opponents? Worse still, their three families had suffered such a huge loss. Although these three families had many geniuses, it was still difficult for them to accept that more than 300 top-tier geniuses had died in one occasion.

"What about this? I didn't expect something like this to happen either!" Quentin glared at Trenton angrily, inwardly facepalming at how insensible this guy was. What would they do if the other families realized their plans based on what he said?

However, Jack stood forward at this moment and humored, "Master Hunt, I think an explanation is required from you about certain things."

“Explanation? What do I need to explain?” Quentin’s facial expression contorted into bitterness and pale anger. He was in grief as both of his sons had just died, and he suspected that Jack and Helena were the ones who did it. After all, Helena was incredibly beautiful, and she needed only to bewitch his son and look for an opportunity to sneakily attack him, mortally wounding his son. There was a huge possibility of his son being killed if the two of them attacked him together.

It shocked him that this Jack would talk to him in such an interrogative way.

Jack smiled coldly as he challenged the other party, “Haha… When we were fighting inside, some of us heard about how members of your family wanted to work together with people from the Lagorio family and Church family to kill geniuses from other families. Isn’t that a bit overboard? Apart from that, we keep bumping into people from these three families attacking our people. They worked together to kill those who were isolated!”

“So that’s what this is about. Quentin Hunt, isn’t this a bit too much? Did you guys agree earlier before this to work together and attack our people?” Darryl Norman had been extremely angry as many from his family had died, including his three sons. How could he not get angry when almost half of the contestants from their family had died? He suspected at that moment that all three of his sons had died because of this prearrangement!

“That’s right! You’re crossing the line if you people had colluded since early on! You’ve caused so many of our people to die!” Many people from other families also stood forward and expressed their protest.

“How can you call this a competition? I think you people just want to work together and kill the geniuses of our family, aren’t you?”

Chapter 1425

Alejandro from the Cabello family spoke his mind in anger.

“I hope you’ll be able to offer us a decent explanation, Master Hunt!” persisted Nash.

Jack was appeased when he saw how the people from the Hunt family had instigated everybody there.

Guessing that Quentin would have been pissed and angry because both his sons had died, Jack believed he would have also questioned what happened during the tournament and would search for the killer. Even if he could not kill the person at this moment, Quentin would not simply let it go.

However, Jack's prompt action of questioning him before he could do anything had forced Quentin into a state of passivity.

"Explanation, my foot!" growled Quentin instantaneously as he slapped his thigh. "We've never had such thoughts. If that's the case, why are so many members from our families dead? If you aren't prepared and our three families have united, more of your people should be dead compared to ours, as all of you were isolated in the beginning!"

Trenton turned his hate-filled glare toward Jack and scoffed, "Don't make up such slanderous charges, Jack. I'll let you know that you're going to face retribution for saying such things!"

"Retribution?" Jack smiled coldly and added, "There are so many people from different families and so many contestants. They know very well about the situation they have faced. If I'm making things up, it's impossible that everyone is implying the same thing, no?"

Helena immediately stood forward and angrily rebuked, "Master Lagorio, are you with a guilty conscience? Let me tell you: Many members from our family had faced the murderous hunt from the geniuses of your families! Your people even killed those who handed their tokens willingly and surrendered!"

"That's true! The members of our West family had also met with many of such situations. I was lucky to be alive because I managed to escape, and that's even a struggle!" a young man from the West family chimed in as he stood forward.

"That's right. Our people also faced the same thing!"

“Yes, this is too much!”

The geniuses from the other families came forward and expressed their utter fury. It was natural that they were unhappy as they felt that they had been schemed against by others who had a headstart in a competition

Those third or second-class reclusive families were especially furious.

“Master Lagorio, what else needs to be said? It looks like my son isn’t the one making slanderous charges, right?” Nash smiled coldly as he looked at the other party. Although the Hunt family was strong, all other families apart from the Church and Lagorio families-were on their side. This made him more confident when he spoke. After all, these three families could not go against so many families, could they? If everybody cooperated, these three families would be no match for them collectively.

“How would I have known about this? Anyway, our families never had such discussions before the competition in secret!” Trenton immediately replied without much confidence, flustered and guilty. “Anyway, I don’t know about this. What is this actually about? Apart from that, why would so many of our people die if that was the case? This doesn’t make sense!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1426-1428

Chapter 1426

“We’re alive because we

Noticed everything much earlier, and we got lucky!” said the smiling Jack.

“That’s right!” Daniella crossed her arms at her chest a s she challenged, “This competition of yours has gone overboard, and it must’ve all been premeditated!”

“Master Hunt, I hope that you can give us an explanation! None of my three sons came out! None of them!” Darryl, overtaken with fury, wanted nothing more than to rush forward and fight, and he was only held back because his deep -seated conscience told him he was no match for the man before him.

“How would I know how your son died? My sons are dead, and so many members of the Hunt family are dead. This is too weird!” Master Hunt stomped his feet in anger. He then said to the many competitors who survived the competition, “Do any of you know what actually happened? I’d understand that my second son has died; I’ll presume that it’s because he wasn’t really skilled. My eldest son on the other hand had pills with him t o increase his fighting prowess, and he even had a speed-enhancing rune, the Divine Traveling Rune. He has such a high fighting prowess, and his combat power is comparable to the Peak stage o f true-god level. Who on earth I s strong enough to kill him?”

“We truly know not about it, Master Hunt!” exclaimed members of the West family immediately.

“That’s right, we didn’t see both young masters of the Hunt family when we were in there. How would we have known that they died?!” insisted a genius from the Zachary family. “On that note, we hope that Master Hunt won’t change the topic of the conversation. Please answer our question as to why you and the other two families would unite and go against our families. You guys must’ve planned everything out much earlier than this!”

Quentin had no idea what to say at that moment. He wanted to get the person who killed his sons out and whip the person’s dead body to resolve the hatred in his heart.

However, he had to face the inquiry of so many people here.

He closed his eyes as he clenched his fists tightly. After some time, he exhaled deeply.” Firstly, I have to clarify that all three of our families had never discussed nor planned anything about uniting and killing people from other families. I assume the reason they did that was because their friendship had grown during the competition, and that they felt they would fare better in fighting against the others when they band together.”

Quentin paused here before he continued, “With that being said, this was something the competitors conceived impromptu, and it has nothing to do with our families, and no way was it premeditated!”

“That’s right! This was something they thought of at the spur of the moment, not something premeditated!” Trenton immediately went along and said, “It’s normal for our younger generations to have united, considering the relationship between our families had been well all this time. For example, the White family has a better relationship with the Lancaster family, so their prodigies must’ve teamed up to fight against their enemies as well. Apart from that, the Ximenes family and the Zachary family also have a good relationship!”

Master Church also nodded and said, “Exactly-this is all a normal, much expected behavior. I urge everyone to have no ill thoughts about the matter!”

Quentin glanced at Master Norman again before he spoke. “Master Norman, I felt that extreme heartache that all three of your sons had died inside. However, these are the rules of the competition. We had agreed that surviving and dying in the competition are personal responsibilities. If they have perished, no one can look into it after they come out, right? I do not plan to look into it, even though my son is dead!”

“That is true. Let’s not think about what happened inside. The situation had gotten to this point, no matter what happened in that forest.” At this moment, Old Master Hunt stepped forward. Although he was heartbroken, they were the ones who set these rules. Apart from that, they purposely stressed the rules because they thought that their people would surely win. How could they embarrass themselves at this moment? So many geniuses had died, including his two grandsons. Those who died would not come back alive. It was not worth being on the receiving end of the ridicule.

“What Old Master Hunt said is right; let bygones be bygones. I believe that your Hunt family wouldn’t do such a despicable thing,” said Master Ximenes as he stood forward, thoughts mulled over. “Since the competition has ended, it’s time to calculate the tokens. Let’s distribute the rewards for this competition based on the ranking. How about that?”

“Master Ximenes is right, let’s calculate them.” The visibly crestfallen Quentin felt waves of heartache at that moment.

As everybody calculated the tokens, Quentin helplessly turned to the Hunt family's First Elder and muttered," First Elder, I feel that Cloud isn't dead. His secret technique … I can still feel the connection with him in my body!"

"There's still a connection? He's surely alive, then!" The First Elder of the Hunt family was over the moon when he heard this and continued, "I'm sure the other party left because they thought that the eldest young master was dead.

He must've survived and played dead back there. Haha… He's probably still in that forest!"

"That's right! Why didn't I think about that? You should bring a few men to go search inside. Find Cloud, do you understand?" Quentin's eyes lit up as he was inwardly delighted. It was feasible enough. What if his son still had not died or was acting dead?

The First Elder immediately brought a group of people as they rushed over to search for their eldest young master.

Jack immediately frowned when heard this, though he relieved himself at the thought Cloud was genuinely dead. After all, he did cut Cloud into two halves with his sword, and Quentin was probably thinking his son survived due to that secret technique of his that made it such that he was still in connection with the eldest young master. Jack estimated that the technique might have malfunctioned on him.

Helena and Daniella, on the other hand, were worried silly when they heard this. They were anxious. Would they not b e in trouble if Jack did not end Cloud's life for certain, and that he managed to survive after all?

Never did the two ladies expect that Quentin had caught their frowns and worried expression. He could not help but frown and his heart immediately dropped.

Quentin felt that his son's death definitely had something to do with Helena. Why else would she be so worried and

Nervous when she heard that Cloud was still alive?

Not long after, the calculation o f the tokens was completed.

The top-three of the individual category were Jack, Helena and Randall. The White family triumphed in first place in the family category, followed by the Lancaster family, and then the Cabello family!

The Norman family, Hunt family, Church family and the Lagorio family had a very, very low position in both the individual and family categories.

However, they did not care much about the ranking as the geniuses who died in this competition had caused them enough grief.

"Unbelievable! The White family managed to get first place in both the individual and group categories!" Titus, Kenneth, and the others were overjoyed. The White family had truly shone in the competition.

Chapter 1428

"The White family has made a great earning this time. Who would've thought they would snag two first-place positions!"

"That's right. It's like the saying, 'You can't judge a person by appearance, just as you can't judge riches by measurement.' The White family's young master is truly favored by the gods. He managed to get first place with his intermediate stage of true

God level's fighting prowess, and he had gotten so many tokens!"

“He might’ve been lucky. After all, this competition is about finding tokens, and there’s no need to fight with others. I’m sure that he wouldn’t be able to fight the other freaks who are I n the final stage of the truegod level!” Many of the people surrounding them also started t o discuss among themselves.

Darryl then came forward toward Quentin and, thinking I t through, asked, “Master Hunt, do you truly think the eldest young master isn’t dead? If he wasn’t, the formation would’ve sent him out, right?”

Quentin nodded and said, “ There’s still such a possibility. This is the first time we’ve used this formation, and there’s a possibility that it failed to sense him. Apart from that, what if my son pretended to be dead? What I can confirm right now is that the connection between me and Cloud is still obviously there. The connection will always be there if I don’t cut it off or if he’s truly dead.”

Quentin looked at the forest in front of him at this moment and continued, “Regardless of that, the close connection is still there, and this means he’s definitely alive!”

“There might be a possibility that the formation failed to sense him? Maybe it can’t sense those who are badly hurt?” Darryl also frowned before his eyes lit up faintly. He then turned around and yelled t o their First Elder, “First Elder, First Elder! Bring some people with you and go in for a search. See if you can find some of the Norman family’s geniuses and I f my three sons are still alive. Nobody had ever used this formation previously, and this I s the first time it’s used. It might not have accurately detected everyone’s status in that forest!”

“Alright, alright! I’ll bring some people in for a search!” The eyes of the Norman family’s First Elder also lit up when he heard this. His grandson had died inside, and I t would be best if what Darryl said was true. What if his grandson was still alive?

“It’s like what I’ve said: how could so many people be dead? There might be people who weren’t sent out because the formation can’t sense them!” rushed the master of a family. Around half of the contestants from their family had died, and such a matter was somewhat unacceptable.

Many of the families sent people in for a search after they heard this.

“Jack, should we send somebody in for a search?” Nash glanced at Jack. He believed that what was shown on the screen was definitely correct. The spots that disappeared one after another surely meant deaths.

Jack thought about it and said softly, “Yes, send some people in as a ruse.”

Nash nodded and pretentiously sent people in to search.

The Cabellos and Lancasters also sent some people in for a search when they saw that the White had sent some people into the forest

Since everybody had gone in for a search, none of them were impolite enough to leave. Jack also could not tell Nash o n the spot that he was the one who killed all three young masters of the Norman family and both young masters from the Hunt family. With that, everyone else had to wait out there.

About two to three days later, those who went in to search for possible survivors had returned, though with dispirited expressions as they came out fruitless.

“Impossible; I can still feel the connection. Could there be something wrong with this secret technique of mine?” Quentin still could not believe that his eldest son had died. He shook his head continuously when he received the report from the First Elder and the others.

“Master, let’s face the truth. W e… We found the eldest young master’s body and it…it had been separated into two halves. He can’t be alive!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1429-1432

Chapter 1429

The First Elder sighed as he helplessly explained.

Quentin was so infuriated that he gritted his teeth. His figure shook in anger as growled," Argh!"

However, nobody expected Jack to fly upward at that moment and became the person that caught everybody's attention.

Quentin looked at Jack and questioned him, "Jack, why did you fly up? Do you know who killed my son?"

Jack looked at him and said," I'm sorry for your loss, Master Hunt. Those who are dead can't come back alive, and you said this yourself that this is the competitions' rule. Everybody has to bear the consequences no matter what it is, am I right?"

"You…" Quentin was furious but he also did not know what to say. These were the words he repeatedly told everybody.

"Then why else did you fly up, young man? Do you want to get everybody's attention?" questioned Trenton as he pointed at Jack. His family had lost a large number of prodigies, and the thought of it embittered them.

"I flew up because I want to inform everyone about something everybody wants to know!" replied Jack, smiling a s he did. "We discovered something wonderful back there, and this might be related to finding ways to breakthrough into the ultimate god level!"

"Really?" Many people had excitement written in their eyes. Those who were in the final stage and peak stage of the true-god level were especially excited.

Even the originally grieving Master Hunt and Master Norman also had a glint of something different in their eyes.

“Young man, this is greatly related, and you can’t simply make things up!” The First Elder of the Cabello family was just as invigorated. He was looking forward to Jack telling them something useful, but also feared what he would say instead would be garbage.

“That’s right, young man. So many of us had never found anything viable over the years, yet you suddenly found one? Are you boasting?” Trenton had a cold smile on his face, not believing Jack had found something useful.

“Don’t worry. How would I dare say something like this if I’m not certain about it?” Jack glanced at the other party coldly before he addressed the crowd, “Have everyone noticed that there was a pattern in the sky of the screen previously? That pattern was like a map of our Cathysia. As for those seven flashing light spots, I asked Helena and the others about those spots with different colors… Everybody said that those positions were the same positions as the seven dangerous places!”

“Brother Jack, are you saying that there might be secrets about the ultimate god level in the seven dangerous places?” gushed Randall in utter excitement.

“That’s right!” Jack nodded before he spoke, sure of himself, “Apart from that, I feel that the possibility is greater than normal! The seven dangerous places definitely have secrets about the ultimate god level!”

Chapter 1430

A family master was inwardly shocked when he recalled it.“ Yes, it does look like that pattern is the map of our Cathysia. We didn’t look too much into it before, but they do match now that we think about it!”

“Yes, the seven dangerous places are very well-known, and not many escape to tell the tale of those dangerous places! Although there are precious items inside those places, none of us dare to truly enter them!”

Another woman thought about it and nodded. “We searched for many places but failed to obtain any news about the ultimate god level. Could it be possible that the items related t o the ultimate god level are in these seven dangerous places?”

“That’s right. We’ve never traversed the deeper areas of these dangerous places. Is something in there, though? Goodness. Should we go have a try? Although it’s difficult for those with the semi-god level fighting prowess to survive after entering, that’s because none of those in the true-god

Level had entered the area. Wouldn’t it be much better if a large number of us, and best if they have the true god level fighting prowess, enter the area?” The First Elder of the Cabello family already looked like he wanted to leave.

It was obvious that he had long wanted to breakthrough into the ultimate god level, seeing a s he was rather old and that his fighting prowess had achieved the peak stage of the true-god level since long ago. Based on legends, he would achieve another 200 years worth of life if there truly was a way for him to break through and achieve the ultimate god level.

“First Elder Cabello, don’t be duped by this young man!” Unexpectedly, the Hunt family’s old master smiled coldly at this moment as he added, “I think this young man is making silly guesses and is unreliable. He might want to deceive us old people into entering dangerous places and let us die inside when we do that! After all, none of us clearly know how dangerous that place is!”

First Elder Cabello’s face instantly darkened when he heard this. He then asked Jack, “Young man, how can we trust you about things you simply say without any evidence?”

“Haha!” Jack chuckled abruptly. “I wouldn’t say something if I truly have no evidence. Yes, these are my assumptions, but there are still some basis to them.”

Everybody looked at Jack in silence as if they awaited his explanation. Even if Jack was just making an induction, they also hoped that he could give them much more reasonable facts to increase their confidence.

Jack took a moment before he continued, “Everybody, think about it. The book from First Elder Cabello and the legend tells of the ultimate god level. Apart from that, the presence o f the names of the third-grade pills, fourth-grade spirited grass, and others are proof of the ultimate god fighting prowess’

truthfulness! This formation, on the other hand, I s truly ancient, which means that it was left behind by people many years ago. It seems like it's going to, and wants to, tell us something, but it's been too long and these stone pillars had been destroyed for certain reasons t o cover up some things!"

Everybody nodded after they heard this. After all, what Jack said seemed to have proved something-the truthfulness o f the ultimate god level.

Quentin thought about it and said, "How about this: I think w e should all return and take a rest, seeing as the competition had just ended. Regarding the seven dangerous places containing secrets about the ultimate god level, let's come back and discuss this a month later. What do you say? After all, every family has lost quite a lot of people, and I'm sure some family masters and elders are rather despondent right now. Everybody should regain their mental fortitude during this time and try their best to breakthrough in terms o f fighting prowess. What do you say if we agree on a location to discuss this matter one month after this?"

"I think it's well-thought-out. It's decided then. Well, since the Cabello family is in the middle position, everybody can come to our place for a discussion a month from now and decide on it. What do you guys think?" Alejandro proactively proposed after thinking about it.

"Haha…" Quentin chuckled before he concluded, "Alright, it's decided then!"

"Alright, let's all leave."

Chapter 1431

The family masters gradually left with their families.

"Father, Jack is my best friend. Can I go for a trip to the White family and come backt o the Cabello family next…next month?" begged Daniella hesitantly after they walked a short distance away. "Oh, yes, my eldest sister can follow us. Jack saved our lives during the competition, right? He's also your boyfriend! Don't you want to go?"

Daniella purposely mentioned Helena in fear that her father, Alejandro would be suspicious and would stop her from leaving.

Helena was embarrassed as she noticed Daniella was deeply involved. Her sister wanted to follow Jack just moments after leaving him. She was too clingy for her own good.

However, Helena could only play along as she smiled at Alejandro. “Father, shall we go out on a trip? Let’s take this as a way to relax. What do you think?”

“The White family is our enemy. You two…” Alejandro wanted to remind his two daughters just like how he did before, but he trailed off halfway.

As he thought of what to say next, he spoke, “It’s best if the two of you don’t follow them. I know that Helena pretended to say that Jack was her boyfriend to reject Tyrell; any person who knew what was going on could tell. Still, I never thought Jack would choose to keep quiet and even pretend along to help you. This young man had really done something good!”

Helena frowned. It looked like she would not be able to visit the White family with Daniella.

Alejandro’s heart suddenly stopped when he saw Helena’s expression. “Goodness, Helena,” he uttered, “you’re thinking about going to the White family? Have you genuinely fallen for the young man from the White family?”

Panicked, Helena hurriedly denied, “No! How’s that possible? The time that I know him isn’t even as long as Daniella did. It’s just that he saved our lives during the competition and even saved the lives of many of our prodigies, so we treat him as a great friend!”

Venus, who was by their side, also jumped in instinctively and said, “Father, don’t you think that we should ease the relationship between both families a little? After all, it’s easy to make enemies but hard to resolve them, right? Those involved during what happened years ago had died, and it’s quite normal for somebody to kill to snatch precious items, right?”

“I…” Alejandro had such a thought for a long time but he could not let go of his pride. He had stood firm on this matter all along.

“Master, Young Master Jack truly saved us. Why don’t we just let go of what happened many years ago?” implored a young genius from the Cabello family.

“That’s right, Master! Let it g o!” Several young geniuses also stood forward.

“Alright, alright!” Alejandro smiled bitterly as he took a couple of second-grade elementary level spirited grass out with a flip of his hand and passed it to Helena. “You and Daniella can go catch up to them. Tell them that what happened between our families has been resolved. This is a token of appreciation for Jack assisting the Cabellos.”

Chapter 1432

“That’s the spirit, Father! You’ve finally figured it out. We’ll definitely improve the relationship between our families!” Daniella exchanged glances with Helena after hearing Alejandro’s verdict before taking the items from him. She held Helena’s hands and went running where Jack and the others left.

Stunned, Alejandro watched as both beautiful figures slowly faded from his view. “What’s going on? Why does Daniella seem to be more excited than Helena?”

Venus, who was by his side, had a weird expression on her face as she smiled and said, “It might be because Daniella is more playful and is thinking of going out to play!”

Many chuckled upon hearing her words.

After they travelled some distance away, Alejandro asked, “Alright, Venus, now that we’ve traveled so far, I have a question for you…”

Unexpectedly, Venus interrupted Alejandro before he could finish, “Father, I know what you want to ask. Let’s wait till we get home.”

“Alright.” Alejandro nodded embarrassingly with an awkward smile on his face.

Jack and the others slowly left Kobe Mountain on foot to not raise the suspicion of the Hunts or let them know he had an ultimate-grade spiritual tool.

Plagued by his curiosity, Titus then spoke up, “By the way, Young Master Jack, is it true that nobody knows who killed both young masters of the Hunt family and the three young masters of the Norman family? More importantly, the two young masters of the Hunt family, that is, considering they have extraordinary combat power. It’s rather hard to digest!”

Unexpectedly, Jack smiled mysteriously and confessed, “I’m the one who killed them.”

“Haha! How can that be? You’re pulling our leg, Young Master Jack!” Titus laughed in disbelief. However, he soon frowned and said, “Did you? Had Helena seduced those people and wounded them badly before you gave them the fatal blow? If that’s the case, you truly have passed the death sentence on them!”

Jack looked at this old man, momentarily at a loss for words, before he spoke, “Housekeeper White, I have to admire your imagination as you can think of something like this. Do you think that the first young mistress of the Cabello family is such a person?”

“That’s right. Housekeeper White. What are you talking about? Do I look like that kind of person?” The two of them did not expect their conversation to be overheard by Helena and Daniella, who had just caught up with them. Helena immediately rolled her eyes at him, rather stunned at his random guess.

“Oh my… Speaking…speaking of the devil! It looks like we should never talk about somebody behind their backs!” Titus had a smile written over his face as he spoke. “Firstly, I have such thoughts because

the First Young Master Hunt had a high fighting prowess and strong combat power. Secondly, it’s because Miss Helena is much more beautiful compared to the others and is extremely talented to boot!”

“Hmph! Don’t think I’ll forgive you just because you praise me for my beauty!” Helena pretended to be angry as crossed her arms at her chest.

“By the way, ladies, the two of you are…”

Chapter 1433

The second elder faintly froze, then jokingly said, "It can't be that you can't let go of our young master, and that's why they are catching up, right?"

Once Helena and Daniella heard this, the two beauties couldn't help but have slightly red cheeks.

"Not at all!"

Daniella tilted her head, then took out the spirit grass and handed it to Nash: "By the way, Master White, my father said, this time In the competition, Jack saved our lives. Moreover, Jack also helped my sister to resolve the crisis. So looking at all of these things, the previous feud between the two families, hopefully, can be dissipated, and these are from my father's heart, as a thank you to Jack!"

"Oh, I really didn't expect that your father would become so polite!"

Nash had actually stopped hating the other party a long time ago. It was just that the other party targeted him at every turn, and sometimes he had to hit back at the other party, so that the people of their family wouldn't be too tolerant.

He took the spirit grass and put it away, then smiled: "Good, good, our two families' hatred can dissipate. I hope our two families can build more friendship in the future!"

"Hey hey, right, it just so happens that while we were in competition, we were quite stressed. My sister and I intend to go to your White family for a stroll, as a break. After all, Jack and ourselves can be classed as good friends, right? You will not mind, right?"

Daniella asked with a smile as she put her hands behind her back.

"Oh, I can't wait, I can't wait for the two of you to visit our house, this is something I can't wait for!"

Nash laughed, he is not stupid, it seems like Jack’s relationships between the two girls was not like the relationship of ordinary friends. Otherwise, after sending the spirit grass, they should go back, so why do they still want to come visit our home?

"Could it be that Helena and Jack, as a fake couple, slowly developed real feelings?"

Finally, Nash thought secretly in his heart that he thought it was a great possibility. It should be that Helena would like Jack, but if she came alone, she was afraid of being seen. After all, the two were pretending to be lovers. If this was seen, she would be embarrassed at that time, so she called Daniella to come with her. If that was the case, it made sense.

"Second elder, the Hunt family young master was really killed by Jack, his combat power is too strong, you guys don't underestimate him!"

Helena looked at the White family second elder, said: "But you rest assured, we will certainly keep it a secret. Although this is known by more people, paper can not cover the fire, I'm afraid that sooner or later, the Hunt's will know, but we certainly will not say anything. At that time, maybe the White family will develop and surpass their Hunt family!"

"Beyond the Hunt family? Oh, this is too difficult, too difficult, we do not dare to think so! To be acknowledged as one of the Eight Shadow Families is already a great ambition!"

Nash was very modest, after he finished speaking, he looked at Jack again, wanting to confirm again, "Jack, did you really kill that Young Master Hunt?"

"Dad, really one-on-one, it's hard for me to be his opponent, it was mainly with the help of my sword. This is what happened....."

Jack then briefly explained what happened.

"So that's how it is, fortunately you have a very high quality spiritual weapon, the speed of the flying sword is also fast enough to delay the time, so that Cloud suffered the backlash of that elixir, which, come to think of it, is too thrilling!"

After everyone knew what was going on, Nash and the others only then had a burst of clarity in their hearts. Jack's combat power, indeed, was so much weaker than the Hunt family's young master, if it wasn't for Helena teaming up to attack at the beginning, plus the flying sword delaying time later, it would have been impossible to come out alive.

"However, I feel that if I were to fight the young master of the Hunt family again now, he should not be my opponent at all!"

Jack, at this time, actually smiled slightly and said with confidence. "Even if now the people of the Hunt family know that I killed him, our White family is not easy to bully anymore!"

Chapter 1434

Hearing Jack's words, everyone was shocked!

Jack actually said that it is not a problem to deal with Young Master Hunt alone now?

After thinking about it, Nash suddenly thought of a possibility and said with some excitement, "Jack, could it be that you have broken through?"

All the Elders and others, one by one, sucked in a breath of cold air. They could remember, Jack seemed to have broken through to the middle stage of the True God Realm, and it had not been a few months. His combat power was already comparable to a strong person at the late stage of the True God Realm.

If, after only a few months, Jack has broken through again, then his talent is too good to be true.

Moreover, if Jack breaks through to the late True God realm, plus with the ultimate grade spiritual weapon increasing his attack power, then Jack's combat power is comparable to someone in the Peak of True God Realm! In that case, not only would he not be afraid of Young Master Hunt, but Cloud would not even be his opponent!

"No way! You've broken through again?"

The faces of both Daniella and Helena also revealed a look of surprise as they each looked at Jack in disbelief.

In the crowd's expectant eyes, Jack smiled blandly, then nodded: "I have broken through, and moreover, I can now refine a second-grade low-level pill, and I am considered a second-grade low-level alchemist."

"My goodness, no way, a second grade alchemist, this, this is something!"

The First Elder's voice was trembling with excitement.

"Oh my god, great. Great! In the future, our White family will definitely become stronger and stronger!"

"Yes! Now his cultivation level is already at the late True God Realm and his combat power is comparable to the peak of the True God realm, in that case, our White family will have almost three people in the peak of True God realm. We are now no longer the bottom of the Eight Shadow Families but we are in the top tier!"

The other masters of the White family, after hearing the good news, were all extremely excited.

"Master White, did you hear that? The second young master is already a second grade low level alchemist, a second grade alchemist! With this our White family has hope to surpass the Hunt family!" Titus was excited, his voice trembling. He really did not expect the Jack's alchemy talent was so amazing.

"Haha, I heard it, I heard it!"

Nash then laughed out loud, this excellent young man in front of him, that is Nash White's son. He really wanted to tell the world about it.

He thought about it before saying, "If we have a second-class pill, in the future when our disciples want to break through to the early True God realm and the middle True God realm or something, it will be even easier. And this time our White family did not experience much death and injury, we also got a lot of spiritual herbs, plus this time we also got the main prize, the harvest is too big!"

After thinking about it, the First Elder said: "Right, Master White, I suggest this month, our White family people do not have to go out to look for cultivation materials, with so many cultivation resources we can issue them out to the family. Then everyone can focus on cultivation and we can gain major improvements in the next month."

Nash also nodded: "Yes! Our family reaped a lot of benefits, but inevitably there will be others who are jealous and angry. Because of this we should quickly improve ourselves and not wait until our enemies react. We must reach a level where they would not dare mess with us before that happens!"

Chapter 1435

"Yes, we have three strong people comparable to the peak of the True God realm, and this time the Hunt family loss is not small. Plus we have a good relationship with the Tudor family and with the Cabello family, and now we can also make a good relationship with some other families. Plus we did not provoke others much, if the Hunt family even knew that young master Jack killed the two young masters, they would not dare to act rashly!"

The First Elder, on the other hand, nodded, and he felt a lot of pressure lift off of him at this understanding.

"Well, now that we have gone so far, let's go. Everyone, come on up, let's talk in detail about some of the things that happened during the game on the road!"

Jack flipped his palm and took out his flying sword, then floated in front of everyone.

Everyone was full of smiles, and one by one, they jumped on, while Jack controlled the flying sword and flew in the direction of the White family home.

By that time the people from the other clans had all left, while the people from the Lagorio family and the Trevino family were still here, each with a gloomy face.

"Master Hunt, who do you think did it? Moreover, we were prepared. Those other clans, before, had no idea that our people would join hands to kill their people. We can't be so unlucky!"

The Lagorio family head was gloomy, still a bit puzzled.

"How do I know? I really don't know who actually killed my son! We must investigate slowly in the future. We can't just forget about it, I still don't believe that there will be an impervious wall!"

Jared's fists clenched, when he thought of his two sons, he was so angry that he almost vomited blood.

"Yes, we will also inquire about it, we can definitely find out something!"

Master Trevino clenched his fists, although his son did not die, but the third elder's grandson, who was a well known master, was actually also killed, he also had a medium-grade spiritual weapon that was stolen from him. Their family's loss this time is really too big.

The most speechless was Trenton, who originally wanted to take advantage of this opportunity to kill this kid Jack. But he did not expect that the White family would not lose many people. Jack is alive and well, but his family has lost a lot of masters. Now he does not know how long they will have to wait to have their revenge.

He had broken through to the peak of the True God realm cultivation, which is great news, originally he thought that would bring revenge one step closer.

However, he did not expect that the First Elder of the White Family had also broken through to the peak of True God Realm, in which case, he felt that his desire for revenge was really a bit distant.

"Master Hunt, I think it’s very likely that it was the kid Jack White and Helena Cabello. If you think about it, the second young master went for them, and with Helena being so beautiful, if she tricked him and then Jack came in the help, he would not have stood a chance.” Trenton thought about it, and said to

Jared.

"Now there is no evidence at all, even if there is, we can't make a move!"

Jared said gloomily "You guys better go back, take a good rest, perhaps, inside these seven dangerous places, there really is a way to find a breakthrough to the Ultimate God Realm, and once I break through to the Ultimate God Realm, I will seek every one of them out."

After hearing this, Trenton felt a little fear and immediately said, "Anyway, it's not our family, we are allies, what's more, our family doesn't have anyone who can do this!"

Chapter 1436

The Trevino family's head also panicked, "Then it's definitely not our family's people. After all, the second young master and the first young master's cultivation is pretty good, the second-class and third-class family masters certainly do not have such ability, and the three young masters of the Norman family also died. There are only a few people who can do this, right?

Jared nodded, "No way, this breath, I can only swallow it and bear with it first!"

"Cough, Master Hunt, we had agreed beforehand that on completion of this matter, you would give us two spiritual herbs or something? This is what you said, our two families lost so much, and you promised this benefit to us. You should honour it, right?"

After thinking about it, Trenton coughed slightly twice before asking with a cheeky face.

One of the reasons why both he and the Trevino Family Master hasn’t left yet was for this matter.

"Yes, Master Hunt, it's definitely a promise!"

The Master Trevino also chimed in.

Unexpectedly, Jared said with a cold face, "I am talking about after the completion of the matter, was this not to be handed out at the end of the competition had this matter been successful. Now that our plan has failed, you want me to give you guys benefits as well? You guys are too greedy, right? Besides, your two families have died, and my Hunt family has lost so many people, not to mention, my two sons have died, and I still have to give you benefits?"

The Master Trevino and Trenton looked at each other, and both of them were so speechless again.

"Alright, then we'll leave first, Master Hunt, our condolences for your loss!"

In the end, the two men could only bow to Jared and take their people away.

After walking a bit further away, Trenton could not help but curse, "Damn, he is too deceitful, not giving us any benefit at all, if I had known that this was the result, I would not have agreed to cooperate with them privately in the first place!"

The Master Trevino was thoughtful, smiled bitterly and said, "He did not give us any benefits, but I expected that, after all, this time so many masters of the Hunt family died. His two sons had also died. Whatever resources he promised us, he certainly will not give after that!"

After thinking about it, Trenton frowned again, then said to the Master Trevino, "Master Trevino, this Jared is an old fox, you mentioned that he said to go to the Cabello family a month later to discuss, will he privately find someone to go inside the seven dangerous places to explore first?"

"This possibility is still there, however, this possibility is not very large, because these seven dangerous places are full of danger. Nobody knows what is in there and they are deep, so nobody will go alone. Moreover, it’s not just one dangerous place, but seven dangerous places, so I believe they will definitely discuss it with us before making a decision!" Master Trevino thought for a while before he said.

"That's right, if it's just one dangerous place, they will definitely continue to think of ways to act, but seven dangerous places, they are just one family, how could they deal with it? Moreover, some of the dangerous places are not far from the four ancient clans!" After thinking about it, Trenton said.

Two days quickly passed.

"Sister, do you think that according to reason, shouldn’t brother-in-law have returned two or three days ago? It's been almost a month and a half since they went out, how come they haven't come back yet? I heard that this time the competition may be more dangerous, brother-in-law won't have any problems, right?"

Inside the courtyard where Jack and the others lived, Ben looked at Selena, then said with a frown.

"Blah blah blah, don't talk nonsense, your brother-in-law is so talented and has such high combat power, he won't be in trouble!"

Selena, on the other hand, immediately gave Ben a white glance, then asked, "By the way, how's your cultivation now? Don't stick to Elaine every day, she needs to cultivate as well!"

Chapter 1437

"Don't worry, sister, I'm a first-grade grandmaster; I occasionally go to the mountain with Elaine to stroll around!"

Ben laughed and asked, "Your talent is better than mine, and you can cultivate more quietly than I can. I rarely see you cultivating your level; I'm afraid you've already become a third-grade master, right?"

"Third-grade master?" Selena smiled. "Oh, you also underestimate your sister, your sister is already a fourth-grade master."

Selena frowned at her own cultivation improvement, and was not very satisfied "Hey, I can break through to the demi-god realm. The grandmaster cultivation is powerful, but he can not fly, a demi-god realm cultivation is good and can fly for a short time. With a demi-god realm cultivation level, even several ninth-grade grandmasters are not your foes!"

Ben laughed "Come on, I think you are greedy, your cultivation is already very good, I do not know how many people envy you for this cultivation breakthrough speed. I see you, if you reach the demi-god realm cultivation, you must want to break through to the True God realm cultivation sooner!"

At this time, Elaine actually also came back from outside, with Kylie who went out with her to play together.

"Kylie, you go inside and play, I have something to do with your mother!"

"Sister-in-law, what's the matter?"

Seeing that Elaine had sent Kylie away, Selena's eyebrows knitted slightly, sensing the fear that it was not a simple matter again, her expression also became serious.

"There is something, I do not know how to tell you, you have to take a minute to prepare yourself!"

After thinking about it, Elaine bit her lips.

Selena was immediately startled, thinking about Ben's speculation just now, she now seriously doubted if Ben had just given her a precautionary shot, could it be that Jack really died in the competition?

Selena was silent for a moment before saying. "Did Jack die in the competition? Say it, I can handle it!"

"This is not true, this competition is estimated to have just ended a few days ago. How can we learn know yet? Nobody has even spread the word!" Elaine laughed bitterly before she said.

"That's good!"

Selena's heart felt suddenly relieved: "Then what is it, I see you so gloomy, making it seem like the sky is about to fall, and I didn't have a moment to prepare!"

"It's like this, I heard that, in Kobe City, the Cabello family's first lady announced that she and Jack are a couple. People inside that city are all talking about it, it's already out there, everyone is saying that Helena kissed Jack in the street, and the two announced that they are lovers!"

Elaine looked at Selena: "So, I feel, brother-in-law may want to marry a young wife, a second wife!"

Chapter 1438

"Wait, you're talking about the Cabello family's eldest lady, Helena? Is it Daniella's sister?"

Selena frowned, then asked with a surprised face, this news caught her a bit off guard. Moreover, the Cabello family's eldest miss, was so proactive in the city, in front of many people, and took the initiative to forcefully kiss Jack? What is this?

"Yes, the rumor came out that it was Helena!" Elaine nodded: "'I'm sure of it!"

"It can't be, right? If it was Daniella, I think it still makes sense, I can see that Daniella looks at Jack differently. In fact, I have also been prepared. Now many family heads and what not, have several wives. some elders also. I can only say that he is an excellent man, and so there would be many people who like him!"

Selena smiled bitterly, then said again: "And, I think if Daniella and Jack are together, then it is also very good, for the development of the White family it is quite good, Daniella is simple-minded but thinking of giving my parents their family treasure, so that my parents can also become martial artists, and also can cultivate, is very kind. If the two families are married, it will be good for the development of the White family!"

Speaking of which, Selena didn’t know whether to cry or laugh as she said: "But how come it was Helena who kissed Jack? Why not Daniella? Have you guys misheard?"

"I also feel strange because, according to reason, they have not known each other for long, right? They should not have known each other before, they should have met only in Kobe City, right?"

Elaine was also confused.

She looked at Selena, then said with some admiration again, "Sister Selena, a woman like you, it's really not simple. I think you have that feeling of being an empress! For Jack to be able to marry a wife like you is really considered a blessing!"

"You just asked me to prepare myself and that really scared me. I was worried he died, but instead you have news that he may have found a second wife. In my opinion, the latter news is not even bad news at all!"

Selena smiled, and said: "Of course, if he likes a woman who is not a good woman, I naturally will not agree, but the Cabello family's three daughters, it is said that any one of them are very beautiful and very cultivated. The White family also needs to get on good terms with the Cabello family, so the White family will also benefit!"

"That's right, after all, women are selfish, I was afraid you wouldn't be happy!" Elaine laughed, then added: "No, in the future, ah, even if Jack has other wives, they all must listen to you only, you are the queen, they are all concubines!"

"You girl!" Selena gave Elaine a white look.

Ben heard the conversation between the two, he couldn't help but cough twice and said to Elaine, "Ahem, Elaine, then do you want to be the queen?"

"Be the queen? Do you think you are Jack? If you can surpass your brother-in-law in cultivation, it's not a bad idea! When your cultivation surpasses your brother-in-law, then I agree with you to find another wife, even if you find eight to ten, I'll agree!"

Ben suddenly hung his head and said: "Forget it, that is more difficult than ascending to heaven!"

"Humph, you do not have the ability, and still want three wives and four concubines, dream on you!" Elaine coldly snorted.

Seeing her brother and her sister in law both flirting with each other, Selena, who was on the side, once again couldn't help but laugh.

After another moment, Joan came out with Kylie in her arms.

She looked at Selena and the others. She worriedly asked: "Selena, Jack did not say how long he would be gone? It's been so many days. Why hasn't he come back yet? According to reason, it should have returned a few days ago, right? There's nothing wrong, right?"

Chapter 1439

"Mom, don't worry, Jack is with Dad and the others, surely nothing will happen!" Selena smiled gently and said.

Just as her words fell, up in the sky in the distance, a flying sword was flying quickly towards them, and on top of that flying sword, there were several hundred people standing.

"They're back, they're finally back!"

Elaine was the first to see Jack and the others, and immediately stood up, excited beyond measure.

"Mom, look, he's back, isn't he?"

Selena was also happy in her heart, she hadn't seen Jack for more than a month. Honestly, it was wrong not to miss him, however, she found that this time passed quite fast if she tried her best to cultivate, and she didn't have time to think about him.

"Well, it's good to have him back!"

Joan also nodded.

"Wow, Daddy is awesome. Oh, he actually has a flying sword, when Kylie grows up, Kylie also wants to be so cool!"

After Kylie saw Jack, her big beautiful eyes couldn't help but shine with a kind of adoration.

"Good Kylie, in the future, you have to work hard to cultivate, you know?" Selena turned back and looked at Kylie and said.

Just as they finished speaking, everyone had already jumped down from their flying sword and landed one by one in an open space, while many of the White family's youngsters and guardians and so on, all immediately rushed over to this side.

"In-laws, you guys are back, huh? What a hard time, how was it? How was the result of this competition?"

Fiona and Andrew also rushed over and immediately asked Nash with a smile.

Nash smiled and said to the two people,"Don't worry, this time, we got first place in two competitions, the reward of spiritual herbs is quite a lot, and everyone is very competitive. In the competition forest, they also found a lot of spiritual herbs. Only a few dozen people died!"

"A few dozen people?"

The seventh elder immediately frowned,"Master White, this is a bit much, right? In the past, there weren't many people in a competition like this, right?"

"Hey, it's a long story, how about this, I will let Jack tell everyone about the specific things. After all, some of the things that happened in the middle of the competition, I'm not very clear about!" Nash smiled bitterly and finally said.

Jack then stood out, and then said, "The thing is this competition and the previous competitions are a little different. In the previous competition, there were challenges and so on, while this time the competition was....."

The crowd listened to the fascination, especially about what happened on in the inside, how Jack saved others, and trying to distract the young master of the Hunt family. When they heard these things, everyone broke out in cold sweat for Jack.

Especially Selena and Joan and others, who were also worried in their hearts, if not for the power of Jack's flying sword, they probably wouldn't have been able to see Jack.

Chapter 1440

"Honey, this is too dangerous for you, if not for that flying sword, I'm afraid you wouldn't have come back!"

Selena's heart had a burst of fear. She could feel that inside the forest it was extremely dangerous for jack and he couldn't have a moment of carelessness.

"Haha, now there is no need to be afraid, this is also considered a blessing!"

At this time, Nash laughed out loud: "Jack, after killing Chet Hunt, was able to recover his alchemy formulas. He can now refine pills and has become a second-grade low-level alchemist. Moreover, with the help of a second-grade low-level pill, he has managed to break through to the late stage of the True God realm cultivation. Now his combat power is about the same as mine!"

"No way, Jack is so powerful?"

When Fiona heard this, she sucked in a breath of cold air, she really did not expect that her son-in-law

was actually so excellent in his cultivation talent.

"My goodness, a second-grade low-level alchemist? Brother-in-law, you are too good! Does it mean that in the future, if you are happy, you can reward me with a second grade pill?"

Ben was also incomparably excited, with such a good brother-in-law. In the future, as long as I have a good relationship with my brother-in-law, then occasionally getting two pills should not be a difficult thing.

When Fiona heard this, her eyes also lit up and she immediately said, "That's for sure, you are his brother-in-law, of course he is happy, after all, he has married such a beautiful sister like yours, can he not be happy? Right Jack?"

Jack couldn't help but smile: "Yes, when in need of pills, I will naturally give. However, the pills, which also depend on the time, can't be used too often."

"Haha, good son-in-law, that's fine!"

Andrew, on the other hand, laughed. He had no need to worry. Jack will be the next head of the White family so he does not need to worry about anything., He is getting old now so he can live a leisurely life here, and have a few more good years. But his own son, if with the help of Jack, can become a strong person with a cultivation like the True God realm or demi-god realm, then he will have it much better.

After all, as parents, naturally all want their sons and daughters to be good.

"Haha, in-laws, just rest assured, Jack will certainly not treat you badly!"

Nash laughed out loud, his face was so satisfied. Jack's outlook had far surpassed that of Lance, and he was relieved that the White family could be handed over to Jack in the future.

Moreover, his heart is also very sure. Now that Jack is already so powerful, if in a few years, Jack can break through to the peak of the True God realm cultivation, then not even Master Hunt will be Jack's opponent.

Although Master Hunt's combat power is in the peak True God realm, but Jack’s combat power is not that simple.

"Great, looking at this, our White family is going to rise soon!"

"Yes, this time, the Trevino family, the Lagorio family and the Hunt family, have all lost so many masters. Because of this, our White family can really take advantage of the opportunity to rise!"

"However, young master Jack killed two young masters of the Hunt family. Everyone must not say anything, or else that Hunt family people will certainly make trouble sooner or later. What we have to do now is to secretly improve our cultivation and improve the overall strength of the family!"

Many people of the White family, after knowing the specific situation, then they also discussed it among themselves.

"By the way, this time, we also found out a big secret, that is, the seven dangerous places are likely to be related to the legend of the Ultimate God Realm. However, all these families have agreed that in a month's time, they will go to the Cabello family to gather, and then discuss this, then go to the seven dangerous places to find clues!"

"I decided, within this month, everyone will not need to go out to find materials, we got a lot of cultivation resources this time. plus the rewards we won are quite a lot. I intend this month to tell the branch family’s that there is no need to pay cultivation resources. leave everyone to cultivate well for a month, we have the materials. We will also take out according to each person's needs and distribute them down. Everyone will have a good month of cultivation!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1439-1441

Chapter 1439

“Mother, don’t worry. Jack went with Father and the others. Surely nothing will happen!”

Selena comforted Joan with a gentle smile.

Just as her words fell, in the distant sky, a flying sword was rapidly flying over toward their direction, and on top of that flying sword, stood hundreds o f people.

“They’re back! They’re finally back!”

Elaine was the first to see Jack and the others. She shot up from her seat and shouted; she could hardly contain her excitement.

“Mother, look, they’re back!”

Selena was smiling inside. She had not seen Jack for more than a month, and honestly, it would be a lie if she had not missed him at all. But, she also found that time passed quickly when she tried her best to train and breakthrough. She did not have much time to miss Jack.

“Yes, it’s great that they’re back!”

Joan nodded in return.

“Wow, Daddy is so cool! He has a flying sword! When I grow up, I want to be as cool as Daddy!”

Kylie's beautiful eyes were as big as a saucer when she saw Jack, and full adoration sparkled inside them.

"Sure, my little Kylie. You have to work hard and train hard in the future, okay?"

Selena turned her head and looked at Kylie as she said.

Just as they finished conversing, everyone had hopped off of the flying sword and landed onto the open ground one by one, meanwhile many young members of the White family, as well as the elders and patronums, rushed over to welcome them.

"In-law, you guys are back! You guys have worked hard. How was the competition? How's the result?"

Fiona and Ben were pacing over to Jack and the others too. Their face was plastered with warm smiles.

Nash returned them with a gentle smile and said, "Don't worry, we got first place in two events of the competition! We were rewarded with quite a lot o f spirited grass, and our men tried their very best to win! Besides, we've found a lot of spirited grass in the forest, but unfortunately, a few dozen of u s perished in the competition.

The seventh elder immediately frowned upon listening to Nash's words. "Master White, a few dozen is a little too much, right? In the past competitions, we had not lost that many men!"

"Sigh, it's a long story. How about this, I'll let Jack tell everyone about the specific incidents that happened in the competition. After all, I'm not very clear about what happened during the competition."

Nash smiled bitterly and said.

Jack then stood out upon Nash's cue. "Well, this was what happened. The competition this year was different from the previous ones; in the previous competitions, they'd have a ring tournament and other small competitions, but this time, the competition is…"

The crowd listened to Jack's narration attentively, especially the incident where Jack distracted the Young Master Hunt to save the others. When the crowd heard of this, they were worried and nervous for Jack, specifically Selena and Joan. If it were not for the power of Jack's flying sword, Jack would not have survived at all!

Chapter 1440

"Dear, that was too dangerous for you! If it were not for the flying sword, I'm afraid that you won't be able to come back alive!"

Selena's heart burst with fear; she could imagine Jack being surrounded by threats and danger in that forest and Jack could not afford the slightest mistake and carelessness at that point in time.

"Haha, now there's no need to be afraid. I see this as a blessing in disguise!"

At this moment, Nash laughed out loud. "Jack this brat, after he killed Tyrent Hunt, he got all his alchemy prescription! Now he is capable of creating pills on his own, and has become a second-grade elementary alchemist! Moreover, with the help of a second-grade elementary pill, he has managed to breakthrough to the late stage o f the true god realm! I think his combat prowess is as good as mine now!"

"No freaking way! Jack is that powerful?"

Fiona gasped at the latest information. She truly did not expect that her son-in-law was that excellent, and possessed an incredible martial talent, as well as combat prowess!

"My goodness, a second-grade elementary alchemist? Brother Jack, you're a godlike figure to me right now! Does it mean that in the future, if Brother Jack is happy, he could also refine some second-grade

pills and reward me?”

Ben’s mood was drastically elevated as well. With such an excellent brother-in-law, he would not have to worry about training pills in the future! As long as he maintained a good relationship with Jack, getting one or two pills from him occasionally would not be a difficult task!

Fiona’s eyes lit up and shined bright like a diamond upon hearing that. “That’s for sure! You’re his brother-in-law! After all, he married your pretty sister, Selena, and is living a happy life. How can he not be happy with this? Right, Jack?”

Jack could not help but smile.“ Sure. When I’m refining pills, I’ll definitely give one or two. However, the creation and refinement of pills depend on time too. The alchemy process can’t be performed too often, otherwise, my skill could not b e stabilized in the secondgrade realm.”

“Hehe! No worries, Jack, as long as we have your words, that’s fine!”

Andrew, on the other hand, laughed. Without a doubt, Jack would be the next head of the White family. Andrew did not care much about himself, he was at his old age after all; he was happy to live a leisure life here for a few more years. But for his own son-Ben, if Jack would help him, he could become a strong martial artist with a semi-god or even true god level. That would be great for him.

After all, as parents, they naturally want their children to live a good life.

“Haha, in-laws, don’t worry! Jack will certainly treat them well!”

Nash laughed wholeheartedly, he looked satisfied. Jack’s overall ability and capability had long and far surpassed that of Lance, and he was relieved that the White family could be handed over to Jack in the future.

Besides, he was very sure that Jack could handle it. Jack was already extremely powerful right now, and

he was highly likely able to breakthrough to the peak stage of the true god realm in the next few years. By that time, even the head of the Hunt family may not be a match for Jack!

Although the head of the Hunt family's martial power was considered number one in the peak stage of the true god realm, Jack's overall combat prowess was not weak as well.

"Great! Looking at our pace, the White family is going to rise soon!"

"Yes, the Church, the Lagorio, and the Hunt family have lost s o many geniuses this time. Our White family can take advantage of this to rise up!"

"But, the incident of Young Master Jack killing two young masters of the Hunt family must be kept secret. Everyone must not spill anything, otherwise, once the Hunt family finds out, they would certainly seek trouble with us sooner or later. What we need t o focus on now is to secretly improve our martial prowess and enhance the overall strength of the White family!"

Many people of the White family started to discuss the next steps after hearing what had happened in the competition.

"By the way, we found out a big secret this time! That is, the Seven Dangers is likely to b e related to the legend of the ultimate god realm! However, all of the families, including us, have agreed to gather at the Cabello family in a month's time, and then we will discuss the exploration in the Seven Dangers together!"

"So, I decided that, within this month, everyone will stop going out to look for resources and materials. We've got a lot of training materials this time, coupled with the rewards from the tournament. We have quite a lot. And I also decided that the White branch families do not have to offer the White main branch training materials for this month. All White branch families should keep their materials, use them and train hard this month. As for the White main branch, we will distribute according to everyone's needs. So, everyone should break through train hard this month!"

Chapter 1441

“For the eighth and ninth-grade grandmasters, please strive to break through to the semi-god realm; for those who are at the peak stage of the semi -god realm, please strive to break through to the early stage of the true god realm. It’s particularly crucial for those at the peak stage of the semi-god realm because once you’ve broken through to the true-god realm, that would be a big upgrade in your overall strength. After all, the number of the fighters with the true god realm status in a family is truly important!”

Nash looked at the crowd, and once again announced aloud to everyone.

Lancelot White, Chad White, and the others were bursting with joy. They could imagine everyone’s faces once they brought back such a news to the White branch families.

Looking at the White family’s current situation, they were going to rise fiercely to the sky.

All of them, all of a sudden, could finally see a glimpse of light at the end of the tunnel.

“By the way, Miss Daniella, why are you and your sister here too? Or you are here to deliver the Bone Marrow Cleansing Water?”

Fiona quickly noticed the presence of Daniella. Once the thought of that divine water could purify her body and allow her to become a martial artist ran through her mind, she could barely conceal her impatience.

In her point of view, the competition had ended and Daniella should have gone back to the Cabello family after the competition. But she actually followed Jack and the others back to the White family, hence, most likely she had brought the divine water with her.

“Auntie Fiona, I… I haven’t gotten the chance to go back yet. Next time when I go back, I’ll definitely bring it to you!”

Daniella was rendered speechless at Fiona's behavior. After all, she did not tell the other Cabellos about this matter, because she had told them that she would go back and secretly get the divine water for them. However, Daniella truly did not expect Fiona to be so anxious that she asked her about it in front of others.

Well. Actually, it did not matter if Fiona said it aloud, the problem was Helena was here too!

"Alright, alright. No rush, alright?"

Fiona forced an awkward smile, but everyone could sense the impatience in her.

Helena, who stood beside Daniella, frowned at the situation but she did not say anything.

"Alright, everyone, go have some rest. We'll set up a banquet in the square halfway u p the mountain tonight to celebrate our victory together, how about that? It's been a long time since we've had fun!"

Nash quickly announced again.

"That's great! Haha! Tonight w e must drink ourselves to death! Hahaha!"

The First Elder and the others chuckled aloud; their spirits obviously lifted and brightened.

"Oh ya, I almost forgot one thing! I still need to arrange accommodation for Miss Daniella and Miss Helena!"

Nash thought of something and added.

“It’s okay, Uncle Nash. I’ll stay in the same room I stayed in before, and my sister will stay with me. Please don’t be bothered!”

Daniella shot Nash a bright smile. She stayed at Jack’s residence with Jack and the others before.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1442-1444

Chapter 1442

“Haha, alright! I’m good with that!”

Nash chortled aloud in return.” Moving onwards, the White and the Cabello families are one big family! Our relationship has been reconciled and we are on a good term with the Cabello family right now. We’ll help each other in the future, and the same goes for the Lancaster family!”

“That’s for sure!”

Daniella responded with the corners of her lips curled upward.

Soon, the crowd dispersed.

“Miss Helena and Miss Daniella, please go and rest. Then come join us in the victory celebration this evening! Both of you are welcome to the party!”

Jack wheeled to the two Cabellos and invited them.

“Sis, the scenery over here is absolutely stunning! Let me take you around!”

Daniella bobbed her head and then she pulled Helena along with her and left the scene.

Daniella was sensible and considerate. She knew very well that Jack and Selena had not seen each other for more than a month; the two must have had endless words and stories to share, so she did not want to be here, making a nuisance of herself.

“My little Kylie, come here! Give Daddy a hug!”

Jack lifted Kylie up with his strong arms, planted a kiss on her chubby cheeks, and laughed, “My little Kylie, let daddy see you. You’ve grown chubbier and a little taller, have you? It’s only been a while, and my little Kylie has obviously grown a little taller!”

“Daddy, you’re so cool! When I grow up, I want to be like you, standing on a flying sword and fly around the sky! And I want t o fly to the moon!”

A faint hint of childishness was present in Kylie’s voice, and a rare spirit was seen in her big and bright eyes.

“Haha! Great! My little Kylie will definitely fly to the moon when she grows up!”

Jack giggled wholeheartedly, with Kylie in his arms, his heart was filled with the warmth of sunshine. He was glad that his family could stay harmoniously together, even if Jack had to work his *ss off to sustain the family, it was worth it.

“Alright, Daddy! I’ll work hard I n my studies. My teacher said that I am the best learner in the class and my memory is good too!”

Kylie nodded and said in a gentle and well-manner tone.

“Really? That’s awesome! Make sure you listen to your teachers, alright?”

Jack caressed Kylie’s little head, with a fatherly smile plastering on his face.

“Let’s go inside and take a good rest. You must be exhausted from the long journey since you have no time to rest. Others had a chance to rest on your flying sword while you were flying it. I think you’ve used up a lot of Chi energy to control the sword to fly back here!”

Selena gazed at Jack; the heartache was visible in her eyes.

“Mm, alright!”

The three of them soon went back to the courtyard where they lived.

When they arrived at the courtyard, Kylie went down to play in the courtyard, while Jack and Selena entered their room.

“Dear, do you miss me?”

He immediately pulled Selena into his embrace right after closing the room’s door; he could no longer resist his longing for Selena. He took a whiff of her scent and became addicted to the light fragrance emitted from Selena’s body.

Indeed, the charmingly matured yet gentle aura in Selena was not something that any ordinary woman possesses.

Selena could not help but for her cheeks to turn pink. “Of course I miss you! How could I not miss you?

Sometimes when I'm missing you badly, I'd distract myself with martial training and that enables time t o pass by quickly! Hehe. In this way, it made me feel as if you've not been out for too long!"

"That's a good idea!"

Jack nodded in agreement." Let me guess, my dear wife must have broken through to the grandmaster level. Hmmm but I still don't know which grade of grandmaster you're at right now. Hmmm…are you a second-grade grandmaster? Wait! Or perhaps a third-grade grandmaster?" He guessed.

Selena, who was enjoying the warmth of Jack's embrace, was flabbergasted with joy; sunshine flooded her soul and happiness glowed inside her." Hehe, Silly, you're wrong! I'm a fourth-grade grandmaster now!" she pressed her lips and smiled.

"Wow, wow! Aren't you too talented? I had already guessed a higher grade, but I truly didn't expect I was still underestimating your talent!"

Jack's eyes lit up as though he was a kid who just got a compliment from his teacher." You should take a good rest for a few days to stabilize your current martial level. I have just broken through a few days ago as well, so I need to stabilize and adapt to my current martial level. Let's train together when we're free and well-rested. I'll refine some first-grade pills for you too! For sure it'll be helpful for you to raise your martial level!"

"Right, Dear, I've heard that you and the First Young Mistress Cabello-Helena, are in a relationship and that she even forcibly kissed you, right?"

Selena peeked at Jack and expressed her thoughts.

Jack's forehead immediately puckered the moment he heard Selena's words.

"Sigh, she indeed kissed me by force, and I totally didn't see that coming. But we're not in a

relationship!" he expressed bitterly.

"You guys are not?"

Selena furrowed and questioned with a doubtful expression. "I studied Miss Helena for a moment just now. She is not only beautiful and captivating but also exudes a noble yet benevolent aura. Don't worry about me though, and you know my parents too; they can't wait for you to marry a noble daughter of a prominent and powerful family! As for me, I'd need to train really hard to improve, so I won't have much time to accompany you hence a woman like Miss Helena is someone you should consider!"

Jack felt a surge of warmth inside his heart upon hearing Selena's thoughtful words. He did not expect that Selena would be this understanding, gentle and kind.

However, he shook his head and explained, "Honey, I'm not in a relationship with her. The thing is, the Hunt family that you know, they're the strongest among the eight reclusive families and they always behave domineeringly. At that time, the Second Young Master Hunt had a desire for Miss Helena and was always pestering her. So Miss Helena, kissed me on the street to get rid of him!"

"You and Helena are really not a couple?"

Selena gave the matter some thoughts then she laughed at herself bitterly. "In fact, I also felt that that was not the case. I f you were to tell me that Miss Daniella and you are a couple, then I'd feel that that was more plausible. After all, you and Miss Helena have only met for a few days, so the possibility of you being in a relationship with her is rather low. As for Miss Daniella, you've known each other for a while, and she seems to be interested in you too!"

"How do you know that she's actually interested in me?" Jack gasped and asked shockingly. He did not expect Selena's sixth sense to be so accurate.

"Of course I know. The Cabello family is almost at the other end of the earth yet she is willing to follow you around, not to mention her gaze toward you. It's so affectionate as though you're the only man she

could see in her eyes. Her affection and admiration toward you is crazily strong and obvious, I can naturally sense it!"

"Besides, Miss Daniella is willing to steal their family's treasures for my parents and your mother, this cannot be merely a friendly act between ordinary friends, right?" Selena rolled her eyes at Jack a s she laid out her observation.

Selena continued speaking as she saw that Jack was pondering deeply. "Daniellita I sa simple girl; no evil thoughts nor dirty tricks present in her mind and she treats you so well. So I think you shouldn't let her down. If you like her, take the first step to approach her!"

"Sigh!"

Jack heaved a loud sigh, only then spoke his heart out," Indeed, Daniella treats me quite well and is a decent woman. Sigh…I shall tell you the truth. The truth is Daniella and I are in a relationship. It's just… just that I didn't know how to tell you and I'm afraid o f Kylie's reaction too. I'm afraid that you and Kylie will not be happy!"

"Tsk tsk, I knew it! The relationship between you and Daniella is not simple!"

Selena rolled her eyes again at Jack and then added, "Don't worry about it, I'll not blame you. As for Kylie, I'll talk to her about it."

"Dear, the thing is I got drunk the night when I had monkey wine with Daniella. I didn't see myself getting drunk at all, but I did. And…and… I was so drunk that night that Daniella and I… Sigh! If I didn't drink that stupid monkey wine, I wouldn't have committed that mistake. Daniella was a decent lady and now I've ruined her purity. I am a man; I shall be responsible for my behaviors!"

Jack returned a bitter smile. Selena's thoughtful words eased up his heart and lifted the heavy boulder away. Before that, he did not know how to break it to Selena about Daniella and he was so afraid that Selena would be upset and disappointed.

However, he truly did not anticipate Selena to be thoughtful and reasonable, which warmed his heart and eased his frantic mind. In fact, Selena's kind-heartedness made him feel even guilty. He genuinely hoped that nothing had happened that night.

Chapter 1444

"So that's what happened. I've said that someone like you who's so dense and straightforward won't go chasing after girls yourself. Instead, the girls will come chasing after you. You haven't known Daniella for long, and logically speaking, I think that your relationship wouldn't have progressed so fast. I didn't think that that would happen!"

Selena took in Jack's demeanor and spoke in a solemn tone instead, "If that's the case, you have to take responsibility for bullying a fine young lady like that while you were drunk. If you don't take responsibility, I'll be embarrassed by you!"

"Don't worry, dear. I've had a good impression of her since the beginning, and she's a fine woman. Since this has happened, I'll definitely treat her well!"

Jack tightened his grip on Selena, then he ducked his head and kissed her.

After they kissed for a while, a passion sparked within Jack.

However, Selena quickly clamped down on his hand. "N o. It's broad daylight. You should rest!"

"You said so yourself. Don't simply pin the blame on me later!"

Jack smiled, then planted

Another longing kiss on

Selena's face.

In the afternoon, Ethan, William, and the others had also arrived. During this period, they all cultivated their strength at the White family

Estate, and many of them broke into another level.

Especially William, Yoseph, Adam, Riley, and Sam, who had broken into the peak stage of the semi-god realm, only one level away from the beginning stage of the true god realm.

Meanwhile, Ethan, Lana, and Abner had broken into the advanced stage of the semigod realm. All of them had improved tremendously.

After they found out that Jack had returned, they were all overjoyed. At night, they all drank aplenty while they were celebrating.

After the night's celebrations were over, Jack and Selena went to bed after they were done bathing.

Meanwhile, in another room, Helena spoke to Daniella, unable to contain herself any longer, "Daniella, aren't you being too much? The Bone Marrow Cleansing Water is a true treasure to the Cabello family, and more importantly, we don't even get much of it throughout an entire year. And you're actually going to steal it and give it to them?"

"You cannot tell Father about this, Big Sis," Daniella replied, grinning. "After all, Jack has been so nice to me. Besides, his mother and parents-in-law can't cultivate themselves because they've long passed the prime age to begin training. Only our treasure can help them, so we should help them!"

Helena shook her head hopelessly. "Fine. You would have gone ahead and stolen it even if I refused to

help," she said. "And you've promised them already. What choice do I have?"

Daniella immediately tugged o n Helena's hand, simpering." You're the best sister ever, Big Sis!"

Right there and then, Daniella suddenly thought of something and added, "Oh, right. Now that the two young masters of the Hunt family are dead, and so are the three young masters of the Norman family, Big Sis. Heh. This is great! Those fellows had been the ones to pester you the most. Especially Second Young Master Hunt, who was the worst of them all. Now they're all dead and you don't have to worry about them bothering you anymore!"

"That's right!"

Gratefulness flashed across Helena's expression. "Thank god for Jack. I didn't think that he would be able to get rid of all those b*stards during the competition!"

Daniella pursed her lips. Her big, beautiful eyes darted to the side once. "Sis, so you're not afraid anymore, right? Since Second Young Master Hunt is dead," she said to Helena.

"Then when will you end the fake relationship with Jack? When are you going to break up with him? Then everybody will know that you've broken up, and you won't need to be afraid of Second Young Master Hunt pestering you anymore right?"

Helena eyed Daniella for a while, poking her skull with a forefinger. The former rolled her eyes. "What's the rush? We've only just started being a fake couple. It'll be embarrassing if we were to announce that we've broken u p now. Second Young Master Hunt may be dead, but if Master Hunt finds out that Jack and I had separated so soon, he'd definitely suspect that we were fooling his son. H e might hate us even more then!"

Helena then paused for a while before continuing, "I think we should wait it out for a while more, at least until everybody has forgotten about it. Then we'll make the announcement!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1445-1447

Chapter 1445

“Sis, you said that Jack stole your first kiss. I’m wondering if your acting is slowly turning to reality and if you like him now.”

Daniella frowned, speaking nonchalantly, “What are you saying? No way! He’s a married man. No way that I’d like him. Besides, he’s your boyfriend. No way that I’ll snatch him away from you!”

Helena immediately answered in hasty tone, “Why are you so nervous? I was just asking!”

After Daniella thought about it, she asked another question, “Oh, right, what did it felt like when you were forcing a kiss on him, Sis?”

“Daniella Cabello, why on earth are you asking all these strange questions! It’s so late already. You either go to bed now, or you properly cultivate yourself!”

Helena could not be bothered to answer her. She turned to her side on the bed, her back facing Daniella, ignoring her.

“I was just curious. Forget it then!”

Daniella said, pursing her lips.

The next morning, Trenton and the others finally returned to the Lagorio family estate.

Only a few dozen geniuses of the Lagorio family had survived the competition, out of the initial number of over four hundred. That made Trenton extremely furious.

“Dad, why are there so few who are back? Where are the others?”

Lily saw that so few had returned home, and instantly asked in surprise.

“That’s right. Why are there only these few people left, Master? Where are the others? Don’t tell me that they’ve all died. What happened during the competition? Was it necessary for so many to die?”

The other Lagorio family members who had stayed behind were also confused.

“Ah…”

Trenton released a long sigh. At that moment, it was as though he had aged ten years.

After he sighed, he told everybody about everything that happened during the competition.

After listening to everything, Lily was so angry that she clenched her fists. “So you’re saying that the White family only lost a few people, and obtained plenty of martial enhancement materials? And they even won the individual and group categories? They won that many prizes?”

“That’s right. I thought that the gap between our two families have narrowed when I broke through to the peak stage of the true god status But I never expected their First Elder to have broken through to the peak as well. And the White family have benefited greatly from this competition! It’ll be even more difficult for us to take revenge now!”

Trenton heaved another sigh, restlessness boiling within him.

Chapter 1446

“Ah!”

Lily released a sudden roar after she heard that. She felt as though she was going to go insane. She had thought that with her father breaking into another level, they could make the White family suffer great losses during the competition. She did not think that everything would end up like this.

How was she going to take revenge from now on?

After she has rested over a period, her body had recovered aplenty, and she had started training again. Up until then, she was only a third-grade martial artist. This cultivation level was a far cry from her previous condition.

“Ah, I’ve tried my best, my dear daughter. I wanted to avenge you as well. But it seems that we have no way to do it with this turn of events. After all, since the White family has received so many benefits, they’ll definitely be training themselves properly and strengthening themselves!”

Trenton sighed, looking at his distressed daughter. His heart clenched as well.

“Why? Why are the gods so unfair? We helped them so much before, but now we are left suffering in the dust like this?

“The position of house heir belonged to my son anyway. Lance definitely hasn’t died yet. He’s definitely still alive. I will take revenge, Dad, I must take revenge and find my son!”

Tears welled in Lily’s eyes, dissatisfaction broiling in her.

“Ah!”

Trenton sighed again. “I truly understand your feelings, my daughter. But there’s nothing we can do

about the current situation. Unless… unless I can break into the ultimate god status!”

As Trenton spoke, his eyes gradually brightened. Excitement stirred his heart. That’s right. If he could break into the ultimate god realm, he could probably kill Nash, Jack, and the others easily. The ultimate god status was a whole other level, and it would yield a denser and more powerful pool of Chi. According to the rumors, someone with the ultimate god status could defeat a few fighters who were at the peak of the true god status alone.

“Ultimate god status?”

Lily’s lips twisted into a bitter smile after she heard that. “It’s a pity that this ultimate god status is nothing but a myth. We don’t even know if it even exists. We might as well be dreaming!”

“No, it must exist. The ultimate god status does exist. We even have a few clues! Didn’t Quentin manage to repair the summoning circle? When the competition was ending, a picture actually appeared in the sky…

“That’s why we suspect that the Seven Dangers have something to do with the ultimate god status!”

After Trenton thought about it, he told all of it to Lily.

“There are only Seven Dangers, and there are Eight Major Families. Then will the Eight Major Families allow second-class and third-class families in?”

Lily furrowed her brows when she heard this. “What if you can find a way to break into the ultimate god status inside there. Then won’t the White family have an advantage if they go in? If they do find a way, they will definitely not tell us after they are out. How are we going to take revenge then?”

“We have to go. The Hunt family members already said that they would agree to this matter, even if the other families don’t. Furthermore, we have pretty good relations with the Hunt family now. They’ll

definitely bring us along!”

Trenton clenched his fists. “I’ll definitely fight for the chance. Not only must I break into the ultimate god realm, but I must also do it fast,” he said. “I want to be the first who does so, and help to avenge you!”

Chapter 1447

“Thank you, Dad. I would take revenge myself, but my cultivation level is useless now. I can only rely on you and the other Lagorio family elders!”

Lily’s expression was grateful.

“You’re my daughter. I’ll never allow you to be bullied!”

Trenton smiled, features soft.

“Oh, right. Why is there not a single trace of Lance, Dad? Quite a few members from other families went along with him. Who knows if they have some news!”

Lily asked after she thought of it.

Trenton shook his head again, hopeless. “There’s no news at all. I asked them before I came back, and they haven’t found a single clue. And those families are ready to stop searching!”

“Why are they giving up? How cruel. It’s their family members that have disappeared, and they’re not going to bother?”

Lily grew angry after she heard that. If the other family members send in search parties, there would be more people on the job, and there would be a higher possibility of finding the lost members

Now though, they were giving up on the search. That meant that the possibility of being able to find Lance had shrunk.

“Ah, it’s different from them. They’ve been searching for a few months already. Some are the sons of a Patronum, some are sons of an Elder, some are even grandsons of an Elder. Basically, the lost family members didn’t hold very high positions. That’s why they don’t want to waste their time and resources since their search has not been fruitful. Besides, the place that Lance and the others went into is near the dangerous zones. Nobody dares to venture deeper into it!”

Trenton felt helpless. “My daughter, it’s likely that Lance is truly dead, and that his body had been consumed by monsters,” he told Lily. “I hope that you will be able to accept this reality.”

Trenton paused before continuing, “But we’ll still conduct the search parties for another twenty days. If there’s still no news after that period, we’ll have to give up. We can’t just go on searching forever, right? The other families have also given up, and our chance of succeeding is even smaller!”

“All right, Dad. I get it!”

Lily nodded her head forlornly. She mulled over the situation, then she thought of something. “Oh, right, Dad. I’m guessing that the Four Ancient Clans don’t know anything about the ultimate god status?” she asked Trenton.

The Four Ancient Clans were colossal and powerful families. A family like the Lagorio family was nothing before them. Any one of the Ancient Clans was just that formidable and did not care about the reclusive families at all.

Of course, the members of the Four Ancient Clans also never mingled with the mundane. They have cultivated themselves contentedly within their own grounds, and nobody dared to provoke them.

The Four Ancient Clans also rarely interacted with one another.

“Heh. We, the reclusive family members are not fools either. Why would we tell them something like that? If we do, we probably don’t even stand a chance to get the scraps!”

Trenton chuckled and was about to leave. “This is the one secret weapon the reclusive families have. If we have a chance to turn the tides, why would we want to be oppressed by the Four Ancient Clans?”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1448-1450

Chapter 1448

Trenton quickly left while Lily returned to her room alone.

She lay on the bed, unable to fall asleep. Soon, she sat up again.

“No way. If this goes on, I’ll never be able to take revenge for the rest of my life. Jack also has good talent. With the White family crowned as the champions this time, they’ll definitely improve immensely. I’ll have to think of something to take revenge!”

Lily clenched her fists, beginning to scheme in her head.

After a while, her eyes brightened. “Oh, right, instead of going on like this, why don’t I secretly inform the Four Ancient Clans about this and strike a few deals?”

The more Lily thought about it, the better the opportunity seemed. The Four Ancient Clans would not be bothered about other news, but they would definitely be interested in something about the ultimate god realm.

After all, there were plenty of powerful fighters in the Four Ancient Clans, and a lot of them were in the true god realm. There were practically over a dozen fighters at the peak of the true god realm in every

Ancient Clan.

Although they seemed to be lofty, as if they were a cut above the rest, they still could not avoid death.

That was why the ones who wanted to find a way to the ultimate god status the most were naturally the powerful fighters at the peak of the true god status.

After she thought about it, Lily finally fell asleep. The next morning, she sought out an elder who was at the beginning stage of the true god realm.

“Eldest Miss, what’s the

Matter?”

The old man frowned. Lily certainly needs something from him.

“It’s nothing much. I just want to go out for a stroll and was hoping that you could come along with me, Eighth Elder. After all, my cultivation level is so low now. I probably won’t b e safe if I go out alone!”

Lily said, giving a wan smile.

“Oh, so you want to go out? No problem at all. But I think you should inform the master first, Eldest Miss. That might be a better idea!”

The old man finally understood everything. He suggested it with a small smile on his face.

“Don’t worry. I’ll inform my father later!”

Lily nodded her head and went out with the old man, then she informed Trenton of this.

Trenton agreed happily when h e heard that Lily wanted to go out for a walk. After all, he had been afraid that his daughter would do something foolish outside. That was why he had ordered everyone to keep their eyes on her.

Now though, it seemed that Lily was feeling a lot better. It was a good thing that she wanted to go out.

After she had gotten Trenton's approval, the elder used his small flying carpet and ferried Lily, slowly flying down the mountain.

"Eldest Miss, which city do you want to go to? We can't just waste the entire day at such a languid pace now, can we?"

The elder sat to the side, asking after thinking about it.

"Let's head for the Pavilion of Gods and Kings!"

Lily spoke in a soft tone after remaining silent for a few seconds.

The old man was shocked when he heard this. He immediately stopped the flying carpet mid-air, staring at Lily, stupefied. "Eldest Miss, surely my ears have not deceived me? You-you want to go to the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, the place that belongs to one of the Four Ancient Clans? All of the Ancient Clans are so mighty. They won't even spare a second glance at us reclusive families. Why do you want to g o to the Pavilion?"

Chapter 1449

"I want to avenge my son, Eighth Elder. That's why I hope that you can keep this a secret. Please don't

tell anyone about me going to the Pavilion of Gods and Kings and how I'm seeking the Four Ancient Clans!"

Lily looked at the Eighth Elder, speaking solemnly, "I'll tell m y father about this once we get back!"

"All right. But I just think that they might not even see when you go there!"

The Eighth Elder flashed a bitter smile. He continued to guide the flying carpet toward the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.

The White family members were all training hard. Meanwhile, Yoseph, Adam, and the others all hoped that they could break into the beginning stage of the true god realm within a month.

After all, they had caught wind of rumors of the ultimate god status too. They wanted to achieve that.

Nash was also elated, seeing how Jack's disciples were all working hard to cultivate themselves.

When Jack was free, he would accompany the ladies to shop I n the city or teach Kylie about cultivation. He also helped to purify her body so that she could become a martial artist and start training.

However, something unexpected occurred. Kylie was still young, but after purifying her body, her talent was revealed to be shocking. Immediately after her body was purified, she was already a t the level of a third-grade

Martial artist.

Her talent was comparable to that of Selena's. More importantly, she was still young. She would definitely be a powerful figure if she trained properly from then on.

After seeing Kylie's strength, Nash and the other White family members were overjoyed. Furthermore, Kylie's wise yet adorable behavior made everybody dote on her more.

Daniella was obviously trying to win Kylie over these few days. In the beginning, Kylie had been rather antagonistic toward the beautiful stranger.

However, over the next few days, Daniella had brought Kylie shopping. After buying a few toys and other things for the little girl, the two were practically like sisters.

At this moment, Lily and the Eighth Elder of the Lagorio family arrived outside the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.

"Who are you? Do you know where you stand?"

Outside the gates, the two were immediately barred from entering by two guards of the Pavilion.

"Greetings, my friends. We are from the Lagorio family, one of the reclusive families. I am the Eighth Elder, and this is our First Young Mistress, Mistress Lily!"

The Eighth Elder studied them for a while, fearing that their cultivation levels were high. He immediately raised his hands into a fist-to-palm salute and spoke in a respectful tone.

"There is a Lagorio family among the reclusive families?"

One of the men was taken aback. He spoke with a mix of confusion and suspicion on his face.

It was evident that he was mocking them, looking down o n the Lagorio family.

“I think so. Usually, we only hear about the eight first-class families. But the Lagorio family isn’t too shabby either. I think they’re second-class!”

Another girl chimed in after thinking about it.

“A second-class family? Forget that. People from second-class families have no right to speak to us about the Pavilion of Gods and Kings!”

The man from before hardened his expression when he heard this. “Go. All the elders and masters here are busy people. They don’t have time to spare for you second-class families.”

The Eighth Elder and Lily exchanged a glance. The two’s expressions were awkward.

Chapter 1450

Lily was furious.

Before, she was the eminent young mistress of the Lagorio family, born with a silver spoon in her mouth and coddled by her parents since

Young.

After she got married, she was the wife of the First Young Master of the White family. After the White family had become a first-class family, her position had been further elevated. Plenty of people traipsed their way around her and curried her favor.

She never thought that she would see the day where she was dismissed so easily by these people in the semi-god realm. That greatly embarrassed her.

“You…”

Lily was so angry that she clenched her teeth, and her veins purpled.

“Eldest Miss, we should leave!”

The Eighth Elder feared that Lily would not be able to control her feelings when he saw her expression. It would be troublesome if she offended the members of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.

He was of a high cultivation level, and these guards were no match for him.

But the fighters inside would definitely catch wind of any fighting. They would rush over, and it would be terrible then.

The guards had powerful people supporting them. Furthermore, this was their headquarters. There were over ten thousand apprentices in one Pavilion. If they dared to stir up a ruckus there, they might as well be digging their own graves!”

“What are you saying? Is the Eldest Miss displeased?”

The Pavilion apprentice gave a cold smile, folding his arms across his chest. “You look like you’re over forty years old,” he said. “You have a good figure, and you’ve managed to maintain your beauty pretty well, but I don’t like aunties like you. Hah. Perhaps we’d be nice if you were young and beautiful!”

“Hah!”

The others laughed together as well.

Lily released a long sigh, tamping down on her anger. Then she smiled and said," Heh. You have pretty good eyes, being able to tell my age a t first sight. Not bad at all!"

Here, she rolled her eyes at him and continued, "Young man, w e won't see your elders nor your masters. But why don't you see if we can talk to a Patronum? Can you allow us to see them?"

The man seemed to be in a much better mood after Lily praised him.

However, he still grinned and answered, "This is the Pavilion of Gods and Kings. Not even a Patronum is so readily available. Our Patronums here are all at the beginning or intermediate stage of the true god realm. People of that status among the reclusive families can already become an elder, right?"

Lily immediately batted her lashes at the Eighth Elder, who was standing beside her, signaling to him to bring something out.

The Eighth Elder was stunned for a while, then he recovered and flipped his palm, taking out a stalk of first-grade premium spirited grass. "We truly hope that you can help us, young man," he said. "Just spread the news. As for whether they grant us an audience, that's up to them."

The man saw that it was a first-grade premium spirited grass, and his eyes brightened.

However, he quickly responded, "There are five of u s here. Why are you only taking out one stalk of spirited grass? How are we supposed to divide this? Are you kidding me? Do you take us so lightly?"

The corners of the Eighth Elder's mouth twitched violently. He was seething, but he knew what the brat was hinting at. He flipped his palm and took out another four stalks of first-grade premium spirited grass. "I hope that the rest of you won't take my oversight to heart!"

The five apprentices exchanged glances, clearly delighted.

The man from before flew forward and took the spirited grass, passing it to his comrades.

“How about this? Since you came from afar and your journey was arduous, I’ll get someone to report your arrival to our Patronum. What message do you have for him?”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1451-1453

Chapter 1451

The man smiled before agreeing to the deal.

“Please inform your head Patronum that I want to see your grandmaster,” Lily immediately said. “Because we have information about the ultimate god status!”

“Ultimate god status!”

The disciples were shocked when they heard this. Naturally, they had heard of this legend, but no one had found any clues leading to it all these years.

They did not think that Lily would mention it then.

“Carlos, I think you should bring them to see the First Elder. I’m sure that the First Elder will take them to see the Grandmaster after listening to them. Even if the Head Patronum knows about this, he’ll probably just take them to see the First Elder!”

The man frowned and immediately turned serious. He told another man beside him, who was clothed in a long green gown.

“All right. You two, follow me!”

The male disciple named Carlos nodded his head and waved at Lily and the Eighth Elder.

They exchanged a glance, delighted, and followed him in.

After the three flew some distance away, one of the female disciples asked the man from before, “Brother Darren, no one has been able to find any clues about the ultimate god status all this while. Even the Four Ancient Clans have not found a single clue even as we continue to search in secret. Do you think we can trust those two?”

The man named Brother Darren gave a cold smile. “They should be pretty trustworthy. If they didn’t come bearing the truth, they would be serving their heads on a platter,” he said. “This is the Pavilion of Gods and Kings. They can’t just swing by and attempt to swindle us as they please. Besides, each of us gets a stalk of first-grade premium spirited grass by bringing them over. There are no visible disadvantages to us!”

“Heh. You’re right, Brother Darren!”

The girl instantly chuckled.

At that moment, the First Elder of the Pavilion was leisurely drinking tea in the courtyard, basking in the sun. His white hair and long beard gave him the appearance of a being from the heavenly realms.

He placed his teacup on the stone table, frowning. He craned his head slightly to catch sight of the three people flying in through the entrance. He did not look happy.

“Who are these two, Carlos? I’m the First Elder here. Don’t bring anyone who walks up to our entrance to me. Understand?”

Before Carlos could say anything, the First Elder spoke in a patient tone.

“I would not have brought these two here if they did not have any important business, First Elder. I think you’ll definitely be interested in what they have to say. That’s why I brought them to you!”

Carlos stepped forward and said, raising his arms in a fist-to-palm salute.

“Really?”

The First Elder gave a cold smile. “Then let’s hear them out. If I’m not interested, I might just kill these two outsiders.”

The corners of their mouths twitched slightly when Lily and the Eighth Elder of the Lagorio family heard him. The First Elder of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings was way too brutal.

“Greetings, First Elder. I, Lily Lagorio, am the daughter of the head of the Lagorio family, Trenton Lagorio, of the reclusive families. Indeed, I did come here on an important business today, and I would like to see your grandmaster! So…”

Lily raised her arms in a demure fist-to-palm salute. She bowed over slightly, speaking with reverence in her voice.

The old man furrowed his brows, slightly vexed. “What are you trying to say? Even I can’t handle your problem? The matter is so big that you must see our grandmaster? You’ve got guts!”

Chapter 1452

When he heard this, the disciple was shocked as well. He immediately told Lily off, “What are you saying? This is our respected and venerable First Elder. It’s your honor to be able to meet him. Besides, even first-class family members won’t get to meet him so easily. You’re only a daughter of a second-class family. It’s good enough that we let you in, and still, you’re not satisfied?”

Lily was so frightened that cold sweat beaded down her forehead. At that moment, the First Elder got onto his feet. The frightening aura that he radiated made her, whose level was only a martial artist, unable to stand on her two feet. She dropped to her knees, and even the Eighth Elder next to her was starting to turn pale. He too sensed the immense pressure.

“I–I did not mean that, First Elder. What I meant was that you would still seek out the grandmasters to discuss the matter even after I’ve consulted you. This is a matter of unimaginable proportions to the Pavilions!”

Lily clenched her teeth, her face turning paler by the moment. “Because I have clues that lead to the ultimate god status!” she said hurriedly.

“The ultimate god status?”

When he heard this, the First Elder of the Pavilion immediately frowned. The frightening aura radiating from his body slowly dissipated until it completely vanished, as though it had never appeared.

“That’s right. The ultimate god status!”

Lily heaved an internal sigh of relief. She wiped at the sweat filming across her forehead.

“Hmph!”

Yet she did not think that the old man would simply just smile. “Every day, there are plenty of people who come bearing news of this, but they’re all liars and tricksters. You should know that you will die if you provide useless information!”

Lily took a sharp intake of breath after she heard that. If there were not any rewards from going into the Seven Dangers, did that not mean that she was in danger?

However, after she thought about it carefully, she still spoke to the old man in a resolute tone, “Do not worry, First Elder. The information I have will definitely be useful. Besides, the eight first-class reclusive family members have already discussed this, and they’re prepared to move out!”

“All right. Tell me!”

The First Elder of the Pavilion retook his seat, leaning against his chair, and slowly closed his eyes.

Yet he did not think that Lily would just frown and say, “I think we should meet the grandmaster instead before deciding further on the matter. After all, you’re well aware of the value of information like this. Besides, the other families have not told you of this, so you should know what it means. It means that they’re confident in this clue leading toward the ultimate god status!”

After Lily said that, the First Elder could not help but chuckle internally.

It seemed that the information would likely lead to a way to break into the ultimate god status. If the first-class family members snatched the opportunity and a few of them broke into the ultimate god realm, the Four Ancient Clans would no longer be as powerful as they once were.

After all, who knew how terrifying a fighter at the ultimate god status could be?

The First Elder suddenly realized the gravity of the situation and sprang onto his feet. “All right. Let’s go. I’ll take you to see our grandmaster!”

When they heard this, Lily and the Eighth Elder exchanged a glance, delighted. They could finally meet the Grandmaster of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.

After a while, the First Elder of the Pavilion took the two of them before the Grandmaster.

At that moment, the Grandmaster was playing chess with the Vice-Grandmaster. When the First Elder brought the two of them to where they were, they did not dare to disturb them. They could only stand to the side and wait in silence.

After they finished the game, only did the Grandmaster and the Vice-Grandmaster acknowledge their presence.

Chapter 1453

“Who are these two, First Elder?”

The Grandmaster of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings was also a white-haired elder, and he looked very old. If he could not break into the ultimate god status, he could only wait for his death, just like the grandmasters before him.

However, the Vice-Grandmaster looked a lot younger, and he was probably forty or fifty years old. He looked like he was full of life.

The First Elder raised his arms into a fist-to-palm salute. “Grandmaster, this is the first daughter of the second-class Lagorio family, and this is their Eighth Elder. They came bearing news of critical importance,

which is why I had to bring them before you!”

“Really? Tell us then! It’s been quite boring lately too. Who knows how interesting their news can get!”

The Grandmaster glanced at Lily, speaking slowly.

Everyone thought that Lily would just spill everything this time.

Yet she raised her arms into a fist-to-palm salute and said, “Greetings, Grandmaster. This news is of utmost importance, and I fear that the first-class families will be furious if they hear that I’ve revealed this. I can tell you, of course, but…”

The Grandmaster was well-versed with human intentions, and he immediately understood what Lily wanted when he heard her words.

He gave a wan smile. “You will be rewarded, of course,” he said. “But it depends if your news is of any value!”

He then paused for a while before continuing, “If your news has no value, not only will you not be rewarded, you will not be able to walk out of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings alive! After all, it’s difficult for a second-class family member to even negotiate niceties with us!”

“Do not worry. It is valuable enough. This concerns your ability to break into the ultimate god status, and the news I bring this time is real enough.”

Lily smiled and said, “I do not ask for much. I only want five hundred stalks of second-grade intermediate spirited grass, as well as some pills. You are free to give us as many pills as you wish!“

“Eldest Miss…”

The Eighth Elder was shocked when he heard this. She was too bold, actually daring to lay out those terms. She was overstepping her boundaries, even though the Pavilion of Gods and Kings could certainly fulfill those demands. However, they were lofty and proud. If they were unhappy, they would kill them both. That would be troublesome.

Yet Lily did not seem to care. She looked at the Grandmaster in earnest, as though she had never heard him.

“No problem. Speak now!”

The old man nodded his head after giving it some thought. If he could break into the ultimate god status, it was a small price to pay.

Besides, no one else had brought information like that to them before, while the first daughter of the Lagorio family did. This meant that her family probably lacked martial enhancement materials.

Lily was delighted. She then told them everything.

The corners of the Grandmaster’s lips curled into a cold smile after he finished listening to her.

“I never thought that the first-class families were so clever. They actually repaired the summoning circle, which showed images and a few cryptic clues. I think we should be able to find something in the Seven Dangers!”

The Grandmaster bobbed his head. “All right, First Elder, take them down and give them the items they requested for,” he told the First Elder. “This information is worth the price. Give them fifty first-grade

premium pills. If we give any less, they might call me an old miser!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1454-1456

Chapter 1454

“This is great. Your plan is fantastic, Eldest Miss. I even thought that we would get ourselves into trouble if you only intended to tell the news to them. I didn’t think that we’d get so many rewards. If this is the case, we didn’t come here for nothing!”

After they got out of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, the Eighth Elder’s nerves were still on the edge. He had been afraid that they would have been killed if the Ancient Clan was not happy. They would truly be in dire straits then.

Furthermore, the two of them had sneaked here. If they died, the master would not have known how they died.

Lily gave a mirthless smile. “Think about it. The Lagorio family is only a second-class family right now,” she said. “We’re much weaker than the White family, to begin with, and after the competition, we suffered great losses with so many geniuses dead. It’ll be difficult for us to rise again. Who knows how long we’d have to wait till then?”

Here, Lily paused before continuing, “That’s why even if we don’t tell the Four Ancient Clans about this, we won’t be able to get much out of an excursion into the Seven Dangers. Why don’t we then secretly spread this information? This way, our losses won’t be so great, and we’ll even get rewarded for our efforts. Isn’t that the ideal situation?”

“Hah. You’re getting smarter, Eldest Miss!”

The Eighth Elder burst into laughter. “Just by using the spirited grass and pills we’ve obtained, the geniuses in the Lagorio family will be able to grow in a shorter time. This way, the gap between us and the White family won’t be as big until we can never hope to catch up to them.”

“Next, let’s go to the Pavilion of Divinity!”

He did not think that Lily would give a wan smile as she responded to him.

“The Pavilion of Divinity? You want to go there?”

The Eighth Elder drew his brows together. He was surprised.

“Heh. I didn’t say that I would only leak the information to a single Ancient Clan,” Lily said a cold smile on her lips. “We should visit each Ancient Clan. Wouldn’t that be better? Think about it. We can multiply our gains by four. Wouldn’t that be amazing?”

“Hmm. You’re right. That’s true!”

The Eighth Elder immediately bobbed his head after he heard this.

At that moment, in the main hall of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.

The Vice-Grandmaster looked at the Grandmaster. “Grandmaster, why did you give them those items just now?” he asked, tone serious. “They can’t do anything even if we don’t give them anything. They’re only a second-class family!”

The Grandmaster of the Pavilion shook his head, smiling. “We would seem like a petty clan if we didn’t. Besides, I’m in a good mood today after hearing such great news. Think about it. It’ll be fantastic if we can break into the ultimate god realm. We’ll be able to live for two hundred years then. Two whole hundred years. I’ve been dreaming of this day for so long, and it’s finally dawning!”

“You’re right!”

The middle-aged man nodded his head, and his eyes brightened. “Then when should we make a move? The first-class families all fear the Seven Dangers, but we have nothing to be afraid of. Heh. There are plenty of fighters in our clan. No need to wait for external parties, right?”

Grandmaster Harry gave the suggestion some thought. “How about this? We’ll have a meeting with the elders first, then we’ll dispatch seven units to search each of the Seven Dangers,” he said.

The middle-aged man was excited when he heard this. “That sounds good. But we can’t afford to hold our numbers back. The Seven Dangers cover an enormous expanse. It won’t do if too few of us go!”

Harry nodded his head. “That’s true. We’ll have at least two hundred people per unit. They’ll move out tomorrow!”

Chapter 1455

“Hah. All right!”

The middle-aged man laughed and went down to inform the other elders.

Lily only thought of getting rewards, but she had no idea that the people of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings were already discussing how to dispatch people to the Seven Dangers. After all, these people would not rush over to the Seven Dangers according to the time that the eight first-class families had set.

After they arrived at the Pavilion of Divinity, Lily and the Eighth Elder managed to see their grandmaster without a hitch and obtain the rewards they wanted.

The Grandmaster of the Pavilion of Divinity was slightly more generous than the Grandmaster of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings. They gave ten more pills.

Soon, they exited the Pavilion of Divinity.

“No, no. We can’t just keep asking for these rewards. Even if we have this much, other than being able to allow us to increase our cultivation levels quickly, the Lagorio family will still have a hard time catching up to the White family!”

On the way to the Pavilion of Skies, Lily quickly thought of something and frowned.

These materials will last us for a long time, Eldest Miss. We won’t be able to catch up to the White family, but we can’t help that. If we ask for more, they might not be willing to bargain with us!”

The Eighth Elder answered after he thought about it.

“We can’t ask for rewards this time!”

Lily clenched her fists, venom filling her gaze. “This time, I’ll ask for an even better favor!”

“Really? What favor would be better?”

The Eighth Elder was confused. It was evident that he did not understand what Lily was trying to say.

“Hmph. It’ll be easy enough for the Pavilion of Skies to help me take revenge. Isn’t the White family

going into the Seven Dangers as well? We'll get the people from the Pavilion of Skies to kill the entire White family then! That'll be great. Haha. This way, we'll get our revenge without lifting a finger!"

Lily emitted a cold harrumph, a dark smile curving the line of her lips.

"This–will they agree to this? Asking them to give spirited grass and other things is different from asking them to wipe out the White family!"

The Eighth Elder frowned when he heard this diabolical plan. "It'll indeed be easy enough for the Pavilion of Skies to wipe out the White family, but the White family has two fighters at the peak of the true god realm. Not to mention they have plenty of other fighters in the true god realm. If the two families clash, the Pavilion of Skies would emerge victoriously, but not without great losses. If you're asking them to get into a situation that might risk some of their most valuable fighters, they won't help you!"

"This is indeed troublesome!"

After listening to the Eighth Elder's reasoning, Lily realized that there was a good possibility of that happening.

However, after remaining silent for a moment, she could not help but say, "How about this? They won't agree to kill the entire White family, but it shouldn't be a problem for them to find an opportunity to kill Nash or Jack, right? And they should kill their First Elder as well! If those three are killed, the White family won't have proper fighters!"

Here, Lily climbed to her feet on the flying carpet and clenched her fists. "I would have practically taken revenge if those three were dead," she spoke confidently. "Then if the Lagorio family fights the White family then, the remaining fighters can only await death

Without their heroes there to defend them!"

Chapter 1456

“If they’re only asked to attack these three, they might just agree!”

The Eighth Elder nodded his head after giving it some thought. “After all, it’s impossible to walk away with zero losses if they were to fight a huge family such as the White family. Once news of how one of the Four Ancient Clans attacked a reclusive family gets out, it’ll be troublesome!”

Lilly was well aware that the Four Ancient Clans and the reclusive families had always maintained an unspoken understanding that they would never meddle in each other’s waters.

Besides, the Four Ancient Clans had also promised that they would never interfere in the reclusive families’ affairs to not impede their growth.

Furthermore, there was the occasional scuffle or friction between them and the reclusive families, such as the eight first-class families, but the possibility of an actual war breaking out was pretty low.

They had their disagreements, but once an Ancient Clan attacked a reclusive family, the other reclusive families would definitely band together to oppose the Ancient Clan, even going to war with them.

This was because the reclusive families were aware that if something like that happened once, it was likely to happen again if they did not fight back together. The next target could be any of the families.

The Ancient Clans could attack the families until all of them were destroyed.

That was why it would be difficult to convince the Ancient Clans to attack the White family, which was a first-class family. The chances of them agreeing to the proposition were very small.

However, if it was to attack only a few people, it was extremely likely that they would agree to it. They

only needed to target two or three people, and if they secretly killed the targets in the danger zone, nobody would be able to determine if they were the murderers.

“Naturally. But still, I must test their waters. I’ll first suggest that they wipe out the entire White family, and they’ll definitely refuse. This way, they’ll feel like they’ve made a bargain if I reduce my conditions. The chances of them agreeing to it will be even bigger!”

Lily gave a wicked smile and said.

The Eighth Elder’s eyes brightened. He flashed a thumbs up at Lily. “All right. Your plan is great, Eldest Miss. You’ve truly become wiser. Haha. I think we’ll definitely be able to see this through!”

“It’s dark already. Let’s find a place to rest before moving out tomorrow morning!”

Lily said after looking at the sky.

The two found a small town and rested for the night. The next morning, they continued to make their way toward the Pavilion of Skies.

At noon, the two finally arrived at the gates of the Pavilion of Skies.

Like before, a few disciples standing guard at the entrance halted them.

“Greetings. We’re here to discuss a matter of utmost importance with your grandmaster. We hope that you can pass our message along!”

The Eighth Elder smiled and flipped his palm, taking out four first-grade premium pills and thrusting them toward the guards. “Young lads, just let them know that we’re here. Will these work?”

They had obtained these pills from the Pavilion of Divinity. That was why they were more generous this time, taking the pills out right off the bat.

The four disciples were not of high cultivation levels. Their eyes immediately brightened when they saw the pills. The pills would be of great help to them.

“All right!”

One of the men took the pills without hesitation before dividing them with his fellow guards.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1457-1459

Chapter 1457

“Are you sure about this, Brother? Shouldn’t we inform the First Elder, at least? You didn’t even ask who these people are, and you’re going to bring them in to see the Grandmaster?”

A female disciple frowned when she saw this and then reminded the male disciple.

Only then the male disciple recollected himself and asked, “Right. Who are you people? I can’t just accept gifts from you!”

Lily proceeded to introduce herself and the Eighth Elder to them. “We are here on truly important business,” she said. “We have news about the ultimate god status. Do not worry. I’m sure that your grandmaster will see us once he knows that we are here for this.”

The Eighth Elder also chimed in, “It’s true. He’ll definitely see us. Think about it. Your grandmaster is at

the peak of the true god status. But he's old now. I hear that he's over seventy now. He can be stronger and faster than the rest of us, but even he can only await death if he does not break into the ultimate god status. The most important thing to him now is to break into the ultimate god realm and prolong his life…"

"All right, all right. No need to say another word. I'll bring you in if you do have news like that!"

The male disciple was unused to the Eighth Elder's winding speech. He waved his hand and interrupted the older man saying, "Let's go. I'll bring you in!"

"All right. You work so efficiently, young man, taking us to see your grandmaster so soon!"

Lily and the Eighth Elder immediately followed him in.

The three quickly arrived in a huge palace, coming before an old man clad in a red gown.

"Greetings, Grandmaster Collins!"

The three did fist-to-palm salutes before the old man, then they sank into bows, not daring to display an ounce of disrespect.

The old man was playing with a parrot in a cage. He looked at the three then set the birdcage down. "Why did you bring these people here? Didn't I say that all matters should be handled by the Patronums or the Elders? If it doesn't concern the Pavilion's immediate welfare, no need to seek me. Besides, a disciple like you has no authority to come informing me of matters, even important ones."

Cold sweat suddenly beaded down the male disciple's forehead. If not for the first-grade premium pill

and the fact that these people were bringing news that the Grandmaster would gladly welcome, he would not have risked his life to bring people in.

He immediately raised his arms into another fist-to-palm salute and said, “Grandmaster, they are here to bring good news to you. It does not concern the Pavilion’s immediate welfare, but it is close enough!”

“Close enough?”

The old man furrowed his brows, then he studied Lily. He realized that not only was she beautiful and fair, but she also carried an air of dignity about her. Not everyone had this aura of a mature woman.

Furthermore, her martial aura was rare.

“Look at me!”

He told Lily.

“Yes, Grandmaster Collins. I am the first daughter of the second-class reclusive family, the Lagorio family. I bring good news to you today!”

Lily lifted her head and gave a wan smile. She had already seen two grandmasters of Ancient Clans. She was not so nervous now.

“You’re pretty calm. You’re not actually afraid of me!”

Grandmaster Collins’s eyes brightened when he saw Lily’s face. She was a striking woman.

Chapter 1458

“Heh. I have no choice, Grandmaster Collins. After all, I know that it’d be useless for me to be nervous!”

Lily gave a bitter smile. “Besides, I believe that a powerful and benevolent figure such as you wouldn’t bother with us small fry, right?”

“Haha. That’s true, that’s true!”

Grandmaster Collins studied Lily again, and his heart was troubled. The woman maintained her looks well, and she looked as though she was in her thirties. She also had an excellent figure. She was just his type.

He sat down and asked slowly, “All right. Tell me. What news do you bring me?”

“Grandmaster Collins. I’m here to tell you something about the ultimate god status!”

Lily said in a mirthless tone.

Joel Collins’s eyes immediately brightened when he heard this. He had just sat down, but he sprang to his feet again in excitement. “News about the ultimate god realm?”

However, he quickly noticed that something was off, and his lips curled into a frosty smile. “However, why would you tell us of the Pavilion of Skies about such news? Heh. I don’t think you’re that generous!”

“You catch on quickly, Grandmaster Collins,” Lily replied, smiling. “You’ve seen right through us. Naturally, we’d like some sort of reward after coming such a long way to reveal this piece of news!”

“Hah. I knew it. Say it. How much do you want? Spirited grass, pills? What grade do you want? Do you need weapons?”

Joel laughed and said, “The Four Ancient Clans never mingled with the reclusive families for fear that we would be affected by you. We can break that tradition today since it’s about the ultimate god realm!”

Lily looked at the disciple beside her and frowned.

Joel was no fool, and he instantly understood what she wanted. He waved his hand and told the disciple, “Take your leave first!”

“Yes, Grandmaster!”

The disciple who had brought them in exited the hall respectfully.

After he left, Joel said, “All right. You may speak now!”

Only then did Lily say, “I don’t want spirited grass or treasures…”

Joel was taken aback. “You don’t? Then what do you want?” he said, astonished. “Don’t tell me that you admire me that much?”

Lily was internally speechless, but she replied, “Of course I admire you, Grandmaster Collins. After all, you’re the great Grandmaster of the Pavilion of Skies!”

“Haha. Speak then. What do you want? It won’t be a problem so long as I can fulfill it! After all, news about the ultimate god realm is hard to resist for an old man like me!”

Joel laughed again.

“Help us kill the entire White family. How about that?”

Chapter 1459

Lily finally revealed her thoughts, ‘I know that this might be difficult for you, but I have no choice. I need to take revenge. I must take revenge!’

“Wait!”

Joel was stupefied when he heard this. He drew his brows together. “I just remembered that the master of the White family is Nash White, right?” he said. “Isn’t his woman named Lily? Why would you want to kill him?”

“Hmph. That traitor. He found another woman from the mortal realm. Never mind that that was embarrassing enough, he even welcomed her and the illegitimate son they had together back into the house. And never mind that he welcomed them back, he even gave the position of the house heir to that illegitimate son. Of course, I’m angry!”

Once Lily recalled this, fury sparked in her again. “The White family has been growing stronger,” she said. “Their First Elder had broken into the peak of the true god status. As for that good-for-nothing illegitimate b*stard, Jack, he has strong talent and fighting power. I even heard that he has a powerful spiritual tool, probably an ultimate grade tool. During the competition, the Lagorio family has suffered great losses. It’s difficult for me to take revenge now!”

“All right. I get it now. So because of this internal conflict, you are now enemies with your man. That’s why you want our help to get rid of the White family, right?”

Joel had a grasp on the situation after listening to her.

“That’s right. This matter is simple enough for you so long as you’re willing to help. After all, you have over a dozen Elders in the Pavilion of Skies, and all of them are at the peak of the true god status. This will be easy enough for the likes of you!

“Besides, I’m sure that you’ll be able to find a way to break into the true god status with the information we’ll share with you. You’ll definitely find a way no matter the martial art technique!”

Lily grew more excited as she spoke, “That’s why I believe that the ultimate god status is important to you. I’m sure you know this as well. My terms for supplying the information is not too much, isn’t it now?”

It was evident that Joel seemed to have been stirred. He went silent for a while, then said, “I do want to help you, but you should know that the Pavilion of Skies has no reason to attack a reclusive family. If we do attack, all the reclusive families including some of the second-class families will come together and fight us. I’m afraid that even we would be unable to defend against them then…”

Here, Joel paused for a while before continuing, “This has been the agreement between the Four Ancient Clans and the reclusive families, and it has existed for many years. Nobody would dare to break the peace so easily!”

“I know that this is a difficult decision for you to make. But I have no other way around this!”

Lily frowned, thinking for a while before speaking, “That’s why I won’t say a single word if you won’t help me.”

“You won’t?”

After Joel heard that, an amused smile crept across his lips. “Aren’t you afraid that I’ll kill you if you don’t say anything?” he asked.

“Heh. First of all, I trust that you wouldn’t stoop to such underhanded methods, Grandmaster Collins. After all, you are a grandmaster of one of the Four Ancient Clans. If you attack a martial artist from a second-class family, you’d become the laughingstock if news of this gets out. My father and the others all know that I’ve come to meet you!”

Lily chuckled and added, “Besides, if I don’t say a word, what can you gain from killing me? I didn’t think that I would return home alive when I set out on this journey!”

“You have guts. You’re truly Master Lagorio’s daughter!”

The old man nodded his head in satisfaction. He realized that this woman was exactly to his taste.

However, after he thought about it, he could not help but say, “Why don’t I just give you spirited grass? Even second-grades. And I believe that you’ll need pills and things like that too! Think about it. The White family is a first-class family. They have the numbers. No way that we’d be able to clamp down on all rumors if we kill them. It’ll be troublesome if news of that gets out!”

When Lily heard this, she was delighted. She knew that her original plan would be successful as the old man was now, stirred.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1460-1462

Chapter 1460

“How about this? I understand that this will be difficult even for you, Grandmaster Collins. I don’t wish to push you into a corner. After all, there will be unimaginable consequences if the entire White family were to be wiped out. See if this works for you then. The White family will definitely go into the Seven Dangers soon. We’ll keep in contact, and I’ll tell you which danger zone they went into!

“After you enter the danger zone and finds Nash, Jack, and their First Elder, Kenneth, help me kill the three of them. That shouldn’t be too hard, right? The area has always been chaotic, so it’s not easy for people to be seen. It shouldn’t be a problem if you only kill these three people!”

Lily pretended to be deep in thought for a moment before speaking her mind, “And so long as the three of them are dead, the Lagorio family will definitely clinch victory if we were to attack the White family. Battles between reclusive families shouldn’t bother you, right?”

“That makes sense!”

Joel nodded his head. Then he looked at the Eighth Elder of the Lagorio family. “However, I still wish to discuss this matter further with your Eldest Miss,” he told the Eighth Elder. “I hope that you can wait outside for a while. There is a banyan tree outside the palace. You can wait there!”

The Eighth Elder was surprised, unable to comprehend why the old man suddenly wanted him to leave but he did not dare to make a single protest. He simply bobbed his head and raised his arms into a fist-to-palm salute, striding out of the palace.

Lily also furrowed her brows. She did not know what the old man wanted from her.

She looked at him for a while. “Grandmaster Collins, I do not understand why you made my subordinate leave all of the sudden,” she said. “He’s the Eighth Elder of my family, and so he is one of my own. He already knows everything we talked about here. Was that truly necessary?”

“Haha, how would you know that wasn’t necessary, sweetheart?”

Joel curled his fingers as if he were pulling Lily over. A frightening energy dragged Lily toward him, and he wrapped an arm of his around her waist.

“You…”

Lily was suddenly so furious that her face went red. She glared at him, and her stomach churned with disgust. After all, she had not the slightest bit of attraction toward this old man.

However, he was the grandmaster of one of the Four Ancient Clans. A powerful figure and his fighting power were not to be trifled with. She was evidently no match for him as someone only at the level of a martial artist, never mind that she had even made a request to him. That was why even though Lily was broiling inside, she could only clench her teeth, not daring to say another word.

“Do you think that that was necessary now?”

Joel emitted a mirthless chuckle and inhaled Lily’s scent. “You smell so good,” he continued. “You have a good figure, Dearie. Not bad, not bad. It was truly love at first sight!”

When Lily recalled her grudges, the anger on her expression immediately dissipated. Instead, she rolled her eyes at him and spoke in a coquettish tone, “Grandmaster Collins, you are in such a high position. Why would you like someone like me? You could always find a younger lady if you wanted a woman!”

“Haha. I feel bad if I go for the young ones and my wives are old too. Now, I prefer women like you! Besides, very few young ladies are as good-looking as you, from my perspective!”

Joel saw that she was playing along, and could not help but plant a kiss on Lily’s lips. “It’s not difficult at all to get me to agree to help you kill those three. But I am afraid that someone will seize the opportunity to strike us if we attack a reclusive family’s members. It will be troublesome then. That’s

why I will only agree to your terms if you agree to mine!”

“Seriously? Fine. I’ll tell you about the method to break into the ultimate god realm later, and I’ll sleep with you once. Will that work?”

Lily pulled on a coy mask, batting her lashes at him.

Chapter 1461

“I’m afraid that’s not what I want!”

Yet she did not think that Joel would say, “I intend to marry you and make you my ninth wife. Of course, you must accompany me in a while!”

“Ninth wife?”

When she heard this, the corners of Lily’s mouth twitched slightly. She never imagined that he would want to make her his ninth wife.

She was not interested in marrying such an old man. If word of that got out, it was not something to be proud of. Besides, there would be plenty of people talking behind her back if she married him.

After all, she had never known Joel before. If she married him so suddenly, it was evident that she was only interested in his position.

However, she thought about how she wanted to kill Jack and Nash to take revenge. She thought about how she would be able to command many fighters from the Pavilion of Skies to find her son if she became the ninth wife. She quickly made a decision then.

“All right. I accept your proposal!”

Lily nodded her head. “But since I’m going to become your ninth wife, I hope that you’ll make sure that the announcement is blasted to everyone and that you’ll invite powerful figures to our wedding. How about that?”

“Haha. Of course, of course. I’ll come to visit your parents in another two days after you get back. Okay?”

Joel suddenly burst into laughter, absolutely ecstatic. He carried Lily into the room. “Let’s go, babe. We’ll take a shower first, then you’ll tell me everything about breaking into the ultimate god realm. Understand?”

“All right!”

Lily nodded her head. However, she was internally speechless. If she had known that this would happen, she would not have told the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Gods and Kings about the ultimate god realm. She would have come straight to the Pavilion of Skies.

Once she became the ninth wife, the Pavilion of Skies would be able to help her get rid of Nash, Jack, and the First Elder of the White family. The White family would be done for then.

After that, she could give the Lagorio family some martial resources with her connection to the Pavilion of Skies, making the Lagorio family grow stronger and becoming a first-class family. Maybe they could even become the strongest first-class family in a few years and completely overtake the Hunt family and the others.

When she thought about it as she was being carried into the room by Joel, she could see her bright and

beautiful future.

“Ah. What are those two talking about? Why aren’t they coming out yet?”

Under the banyan tree outside the palace, the Eighth Elder of the Lagorio family had been waiting for a very long time. He began to worry.

However, he could not just barge in recklessly. He could only wait outside in silence.

Chapter 1462

The Eighth Elder of the Lagorio family waited quietly. After a while, Lily finally came out.

“What happened? I guess that he agreed to the proposition? Why did he ask you to stay behind? What’s so critical that he must talk with you alone?”

When he saw Lily emerging, the Eighth Elder quickly rushed over, confusion filling him.

Lily’s emotions were in a tangle. She still felt disgusted after having been ravished by an old man.

She looked at the Eighth Elder. “Let’s leave this place first,” she said. “I’ll tell you everything in a while!”

“All right!”

The Eighth Elder frowned. He could tell that Lily was in a bad mood, so he did not dare to press her any further. He took out the flying carpet, and the two hopped on it and flew into the distance.

After they had flown for some time, the Eighth Elder finally asked, “Eldest Miss, should we head for the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles?”

Lily had not intended to go there, but she gave it some thought and said, “Let’s go. We’ve been successful so far. Besides, we shouldn’t just give up our chances of taking spirited grass. Since the other three Pavilions already know of this, it should be fine if another is in the loop!”

“Haha. You’re right, Eldest Miss. We shouldn’t waste this opportunity!”

The Eighth Elder burst into laughter after he heard this.

“Eighth Elder, do you want to know why Grandmaster Carter wanted to see me alone?” Lily said. “Since you’ll know this sooner or later, I might as well tell you now. The old man fell for me at first sight! He wants to marry me and make me his ninth wife!”

“Ninth wife?”

The Eighth Elder was shocked when he heard this. He frowned and asked, “So what are you saying, Eldest Miss? Don’t tell me that you actually intend to marry him? That man is so old. Isn’t the age gap a bit too much!”

Lily stared ahead, a wan smile curving her lips. “He’ll visit the Lagorio family in a few days to introduce himself. It’s a good thing that we’re able to establish a relationship like this with the Pavilion of Skies, one of the Four Ancient Clans. This will greatly benefit the development of the Lagorio family. Besides, he agreed to kill Nash, Jack, and Kenneth!”

“Ah!”

The Eighth Elder released a sigh. “Eldest Miss. You sacrificed so much for us!”

Lily flashed him an easygoing grin. “No worries. We can take revenge and kill the White family, and more importantly, I’ll be the powerful ninth wife in the future. Hehe. Think about it. The disciples from the Four Ancient Clans from before all looked down on us. Next time, they’ll be on their knees when they see me. That’ll be such a powerful feeling. I don’t think this is a bad thing!”

“Mmhmm. It’s great that you think that way, Eldest Miss! I was afraid that you would feel like you’re suffering!”

The Eighth Elder nodded his head and increased the speed.

Their visit to the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles was successful as well. They quickly told them about the ultimate god status and got their rewards.

Of course, Lily also told them that the reclusive family members would be making a move in another twenty days.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1463-1466

Chapter 1463

“Master, the Eldest Miss has been gone for a few days already. Why isn’t she back yet? Where has she gone to?”

At the Lagorio family, the butler could not help but ask Trenton.

“No matter where she goes, it’s a good thing so long as she’s enjoying herself. I hope that she’ll be in a better mood when she returns this time!”

Trenton gave a bitter smile. “I hope that everybody has been training hard lately?” he spoke to the butler. “There are only a few days left till the meeting at the Cabello family’s place. But even if we don’t have a meeting, we’d be heading into the Seven Dangers anyway. That’s why if we can increase our fighting power, we should. After all, those are dangerous places. Some monsters are probably as strong as fighters at the advanced stage of the true god realm, or even the peak of the true god realm!”

Here, Trenton paused for a while before continuing, “After all, even I might not survive if I go in!”

“Don’t worry. Everybody is training hard. However, those that go in must at least be in the semi-god realm. Otherwise, they’re going to die!”

The butler, Hilton Lagorio, nodded his head and spoke.

At this moment, the two noticed that a flying carpet was gradually heading toward them in the distance.

“Master, see! It’s the Eldest Miss and the Eighth Elder. They’re back!”

The butler immediately cried out, pointing at them.

Soon, the flying carpet was before them, and the two jumped down from it.

Lily immediately threw a martial ring at Trenton once she got down. “Dad, there are plenty of pills and spirited grass in there. It’s enough to supply the Lagorio family members for a long while. Besides, those pills will help a few of our fighters to increase their cultivation levels in a short time!”

Trenton was so stunned that he stood rooted to the ground. He studied the martial ring carefully, then took a sharp intake of breath. “No way. So many? What happened? My God, where did you get these

martial resources, my dear daughter? Where did you go?”

“No way!”

Hilton also came over and snatched the martial ring away to take a look. He also took a sharp intake of breath and was completely stupefied. “Eldest Miss, where–where did you get all these treasures?”

“Dad, I–I told the Four Ancient Clans about what we know of the ultimate god status!”

Lily truly dropped the bomb straight off the bat. Her words completely shellshocked the two old men before her.

“You–what were you thinking, Daughter. How could you tell this to the Four Ancient Clans? This is the chance for us reclusive families to turn the tables on them. Do you think we can actually get benefits by doing this?”

Trenton slapped his thigh, furious. His voice was trembling, “I’d rather throw away all these martial resources than tell the Four Ancient Clans about this. Besides, everybody agreed to not breathe a word about this to the Four Ancient Clans. Once the other reclusive families find out that we leaked this information, they will hate us. Then, our relationships with all the reclusive families will be severed!”

“Dad, you’re thinking too much!”

Lily gave a cold smile. “We’re only a second-class family. Did you really think that we’d get plenty of rewards if we did not speak a word about it to outsiders? Even if there are rewards, the eight first-class families would get the lion’s share of it, no? No one knows how we can break into the ultimate god status. What if it’s some kind of magical fruit, and there are only eight of its kind in the world? Do you think the first-class families will give us a portion?”

Here, Lily paused, lacing her fingers behind her back. “Not only will we obtain nothing, but the gap between us and the White family will only grow wider. That’s why there’s hardly any difference for us if we tell the Four Ancient Clans about this!”

Chapter 1464

“Ah. What do you mean there’s no difference, Daughter! I thought that you were just heading out to enjoy yourself so that you can clear your mind. I didn’t think that you would tell the Four Ancient Clans about this!”

Trenton heaved another sigh. “You fool. We have these treasures, but the other reclusive families will surely hate us for leaking the information. And the Four Ancient Clans have never meddled in the reclusive families’ affairs. We may have gained rewards this time, but we’ll be oppressed in the long run. The benefits do not outweigh the losses!”

As Trenton spoke, he slowly squatted as he despaired. “I barely managed to suck up to the Hunt family and build a good relationship with them,” he added. “I didn’t think that you would actually give them a reason to hate us! Ah. You had good intentions, but you did nothing but drag us down!”

He did not think that Lily would simply give a wan smile after she heard that. “Dad, you can’t keep looking at things from your old perspectives. You have to think of the future. This was indeed the case in the past. The many reclusive families and the Four Ancient Clans never mingled and meddled with each other’s affairs, and we’ve maintained this unspoken agreement for a long time.

“But the circumstances are different now. Even if we know the techniques to attain the ultimate god status, we don’t know how many of us can actually break into it, and we don’t know who will make the breakthrough first. Perhaps it’ll be someone from the Four Ancient Clans or someone from the reclusive families. At any rate, the balance will soon be destroyed. This is an opportunity for us, and if we don’t seize it, we’ll be completely out of the game!”

As Lily spoke, she clenched her fists and spoke earnestly, “At any rate, the Lagorio family must not be shoved out of the game so easily. We must take this chance to rise!”

After Trenton heard this, he thought that it made sense. He sank into a thoughtful silence.

However, after he considered the matter for a while, he still could not help but say to Lily, “But the information about the ultimate god status is all speculation on our part. Who knows if the Seven Dangers actually contain a way to break into the ultimate god “IN status? What if they don’t? The Lagorio family will be finished then!”

The corners of Lily’s lips twitched ever so slightly, but she quickly recollected herself. “I don’t care. We have to throw all our stakes into this now. We can only believe that we’ll find a way to break into the ultimate god realm inside there. It might just be some kind of magical fruit. Besides, there are definitely cultivation techniques and martial arts techniques. How would we cultivate ourselves otherwise?”

“That’s right, Master. I agree that the Eldest Miss’s decision is risky, but if we don’t do this now, we’ll never get the chance to take revenge!”

After the Eighth Elder thought about it, he also chimed in to support Lily.

“Don’t worry, Dad. We’ll be able to take revenge soon!”

Lily smiled again. Then she told Trenton, “The Grandmaster of the Pavilion of Skies has already agreed to help us!

“No way. The Pavilion of Skies is one of the Four Ancient Clans. The White family is not some obscure clan. They’re a first-class reclusive family. The consequences will be unimaginable if they wipe out the entire White family. It’ll be terrible if word of that gets out. Besides, why would the Pavilion of Skies help us, a second-class reclusive family?”

Trenton was surprised at first, then he quickly shook his head. He thought that it was unimaginable. Something like that would never happen.

“Dad, Grandmaster Carter, and I immediately hit it off when we met. I think he’ll come over tomorrow or the day after to visit you, then he’ll announce the preparations for our wedding!”

Lily managed to smile as she said, “Then I’ll be his powerful ninth wife!

“What!”

Chapter 1465

Trenton nearly fainted right there and then. The grandmaster of the Pavilion of Skies was a few years older than him. He would have to call such an old man his son-in-law?

He staggered backward, and for a moment he could not find his breath. However, he was no fool. He quickly understood the sacrifice his daughter made.

He also understood that the matter had already been settled.

He had no way to change the circumstances. If he disagreed, he might as well have started a war with the Pavilion of Skies.

When the Grandmaster of the Pavilion of Skies came to visit him with his fighters and present their offerings, he could not just turn them away at the door. If he did not spare their dignity, he would be digging a grave for himself.

“All right, since you’ve already decided upon the matter, and if you two get along well, I have no objections!”

At last, Trenton stood up and gave a wan smile. “If we have the Pavilion of Skies supporting us, the other reclusive families won’t simply dare to attack us even if they find out that we leaked the information. Even if they don’t wish to spare our face, they have to at least respect the Pavilion of Skies, right?”

“Of course! I’ll be the powerful ninth wife soon!”

Lily clenched her fists. “If I train in a place like the Pavilion of Skies, I’ll be able to improve quickly with twice as little effort. I believe that one day, I’ll be able to quickly cultivate myself and return to the strength I had before. I’ll even become a fighter that everyone admires!”

“Ah. If you marry into the Pavilion of Skies, you must maintain a low profile too. Your cultivation level is low now, and you’ll be the youngest wife. I’m afraid that the other eight wives might band together to bully you!”

Trenton quickly thought of something and warned Lily.

“Bully me?”

Lily gave a frosty smile. “I, Lily Lagorio, am no pushover. If those women dare to bully me, I’ll make sure that they pay the price for it! Besides, once I’m the ninth wife, I can use the forces of the Pavilion of Skies to find Lance!”

Trenton did not know how to comfort Lily, seeing that she still could not let Lance go, believing that he was still alive. He could only nod his head.

“But even if you marry Joel Carter, I don’t think they’ll just help to wipe out the White family since their numbers are so big. Aren’t they afraid that the other families will come together to fight them?”

After falling into silence for a while, Trenton spoke with worry in his tone.

“Don’t worry, Dad. Joel and I have already negotiated the terms. They won’t directly attack the White family. I just need his men to kill Nash, Jack and Kenneth when they’re in the Seven Dangers. So long as

the top three fighters in the White family are dead, we can handle the rest of the White family members without a problem!

“Besides, aren’t we on good terms with the Church family and the Hunt family now? If you can get their help to attack the White family, they’ll be completely wiped out!”

Lily spoke confidently, as though the entire world was in her palm.

Chapter 1466

“Well, when you put it that way, it might just work!” Trenton’s worries were eventually lifted as he nodded in satisfaction.

He then took two steps forward and caressed Lily’s hair as he lamented, “You’ve grown, my daughter. You know how to think and make plans now, but you’ve sacrificed too much for the Lagorio family.”

“Father, what are you talking about? I feel that Joel Collins is a kind man. Though there are rumors of how he loves to toy with women, he’s quite a nice person in other aspects. Our family wouldn’t need to be afraid of anything else after I marry him.” Lily steeled herself and wore a brave façade.

Eventually, Trenton nodded and spoke, “Alright. You must be tired, so you should go take a rest now. I’ll ask the elders for a meeting about these martial enhancement materials and let everybody share some so that everybody can use the materials for training.”

Sure enough, the pavilion master of the Skies Pavilion led several elders and came at noon the next day. They sent a large amount of martial enhancement materials as betrothal gifts once they arrived and decided on the engagement instantly. The wedding was then decided to be seven days later.

Another two days passed and there were about 12 days left before the White family had to go to the Cabello family when they received an invitation.

The elders, Jack, housekeeper Titus, and the others were summoned to the discussion hall. First elder Kenneth White curiously asked upon seeing Nash's hardened expression, "What is it, Master?"

Everybody could see that something serious must have happened when they saw Nash's solemn expression. Otherwise, he would not have summoned them—important members of the family-when everybody was busy training.

"Father, did something happen? Did members of the Hunt family make a move to enter the seven dangerous areas first and find ways to break through to the ultimate god level?" guessed Jack all while he wore a frown, expression shifted into a solemn expression.

It would be troublesome if that truly was the case. After all, he was the one who killed both young masters of the Hunt family, and only a few others could raise the other party's suspicion. Both him and Helena were the highest in the suspicion list.

The Hunts would seek him and the others out sooner or later for it, and it was because of that that Jack hoped someone from the White family could breakthrough to the ultimate god level, or they would be in trouble if the other party broke through first.

"No, that's not it. The seven dangerous areas cover a huge area and nobody knows how deep it actually is, so the Hunts won't dare to act rashly." Nash smiled bitterly. He took the invitation and passed it to Jack. "Take a look. The pavilion master of the Skies Pavilion from the Four Ancients Clans is marrying his ninth wife. He's inviting us to his wedding."

"How's that possible? This…this old man is marrying another wife when he has eight wives?" The First elder was shocked when he heard this, though a chuckle followed soon after. "Master, this shouldn't be a big issue, right? Him marrying again isn't a big deal. Although we'll need to spare some time to go there for a meal, it's nothing much. After all, it's just a meal! Members of the other families will surely attend the wedding. Apart from that, members from the other clans might show up too, right? They definitely have to honor the pavilion master of the Skies Pavilion!"

"That's right. Master, this is nothing, right? It's just him getting married. It's mind boggling how this old pervert is marrying his ninth wife when he's so old!" Another elder also started laughing.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1467-1469

Chapter 1467

Titus, as he was next to them, had a frown on his face as he commented, “I’m afraid that it’s not so simple.”

Jack’s expression fell the moment he opened the invitation and read its contents before turning to everyone else present. “This ninth wife is Lily Lagorio!” he told them.

“Lily Lagorio?” The smile on both the First Elder and the other elder’s faces dropped instantly when the news was revealed, petrified as though they had seen a ghost.

They finally understood why Nash would have such a solemn expression on his face. Lily used to be his wife, the First Madam of the White family.

Although Lily committed quite the offense that caused Nash to lose his honor when she colluded with the Third Elder in a rebellion, she and Nash were once wedded to one another.

Were they purposely making it difficult for Nash in asking him to present himself during Lily’s wedding? How would others look at Nash? What would they say in private?

“This is too overboard. I’d understand it if they invited other families. Pavilion Master Collins should know that our master is Lily’s ex-husband, and he has to be detestable for inviting our White family!” seethed First Elder as he balled his hands into fists. “Master, why don’t we attend the wedding and you sit this one out?”

No one expected that Nash would shake his head instead with a bitter smile on his face. “That won’t do. I might be able to get away not attending this wedding had it been some random people from a second-class aristocratic family or some other families. As the master of the White family, if I don’t attend the

wedding of the Skies Pavilion's pavilion master and send my subordinates, I fear rumors of me not honoring him would float around, thus I must attend this."

"Sigh! How embarrassing would it be if you go!" Another elder sighed. If anybody else was placed in such a situation, they would feel uncomfortable to attend such a wedding

After all, Nash and Lily used to be very in love in the past, but she became vicious and sinister after what happened to Lance.

Of course, Lily was also very sinister before Jack became a soldier, but she hid it well.

"Let it be if this wedding becomes embarrassing. After all, I have no relationship with her right now.

I'll think of this as attending a stranger's wedding," decided Nash, that bitter smile still on his face. "The thing I worry the most is why Lily would suddenly marry the old man, Joel. After all, he's the pavilion master of the Skies Pavilion, and it unsettles me when I thought she might use them to act out against our White family. After all, she wants to kill every person in our family so badly!"

Jack had such a thought from the start as well, and his expression hardened. "It's incredibly likely, it seems. We've received lots of benefits this time and our family is much stronger compared to the past. However, it's difficult for the Lagorio family to take actions against us because of this. Hence, Lily must've thought of a way to fight back against the White family by gaining the support of the ancient clans."

Titus inwardly held his breath when he heard those words before he quickly beseeched, "Master, you shouldn't go if that's truly the case! Why do I feel that this is a treacherous banquet? It'd be troublesome ir you attend but fail to come back!"

"It won't work if the master refuses to attend-it might even anger them. Then again, it'll be extremely dangerous if the master truly attended the dinner. Urgh!" First Elder frowned as he realized how troublesome it was.

In the end, he stomped his feet and growled, “This Lily Lagorio truly is a vicious woman to use such means!”

Chapter 1468

“Don’t worry. The Four Ancients Clans have an unwritten agreement with us reclusive families, and we don’t interfere with each other. It’s highly likely they won’t truly do anything against us,” spoke Nash after thinking through the situation, more so when he saw how anxious the First Elder was. “However, not too many people can attend the wedding this time, though we’ll need to be careful as well. The members of the other ancient clans and families would also attend the wedding, so I’m sure they won’t try anything funny there.”

Nash paused momentarily before he added, “Nonetheless, we need to be careful on our journey back as I fear they’d ambush us on the way home. After all, it wouldn’t be a big hustle if they only kill a couple of us. They would have nothing to be afraid of if they got rid of the bodies!”

Jack nodded in agreement. “Father, it’ll only work if you, me, and the First Elder attend the wedding this time. If there are too many of us, those with lower fighting prowess would be sacrificed on the spot if those people ambushed us. We’d have a much better chance of outrunning them if they chose to attack anyway, and coupled with the fact that all three of us have quite the strength and fighting prowess, they can’t take us down easily!”

“That’s right. Many people don’t know that Young Master Jack’s flying sword is an ultimate-grade spiritual tool. With that item, it wouldn’t be easy for them to catch up with us. Hence, we wouldn’t need to be fearful if they try to ambush us on the way back!” First Elder’s eyes immediately lit up. “They wouldn’t dare chase after us to kill us in the White family after we’ve flown far away. They won’t dare amplify this, will they now?”

“Yes, the three of us would do. It’d be much more difficult to escape with too many people. Apart from that, too many people will affect the speed of the flying sword!” Jack smiled. “It so happens that the three of you don’t need to train much recently. Let’s start our journey in three days-we should be able to make it in time. The others only need to focus on training at home!”

“The three of us are masters with strength comparable to the peak stage of the true-god level. The current White family will not be so easily bullied!” Nash’s expression hardened as his heart was filled with anger. “I’ve never thought of wiping out the Lagorio family before; she and I were once a married couple after all. Who would’ve thought that members of the Lagorio family would come at us in such an overbearing way? It looks like we can’t let go of the Lagorio family so easily when we have the chance in the future!”

Jack turned to the Second Elder and the current Third Elder after thinking about it and said, “Second Elder, Third Elder, the two of you are now at the final stage of the true-god level. Let me cultivate some second-grade pills for you guys within these two days and try to give two pills to each of you. Although the two of you have stopped at the final stage of the true-god level for only a short while now, you can try speeding up. What if you succeed?”

Second Elder was delighted when he heard this and immediately gestured politely with his hands as he spoke, “Thank you, Young Master Jack!”

The new Third Elder was Lancelot, the previous branch family master. His fighting prowess had always been rather impressive, being in the intermediate stage of the truegod level previously. One month ago, he had achieved the final stage of the true-god level, and he followed it up with constant training with never taking extensive rests.

There was a slight possibility of success as the realm might be unstable to give him pills and let him try pushing his fighting prowess instantly to the peak stage of the true-god level. Although they seemed to be in a rush, it was a great opportunity for Lancelot nonetheless.

After all, Jack was willing to give him two second-grade elementary pills, and such a good opportunity was hard to come by so often.

Together with Jack and the two others masters, the combat power of the White family’s masters in the peak stage of the true-god level would be so powerful that they need not fear the Hunt family, if even both him and Second Elder, Weston White also broke through

“Thank you, Young Master Jack. I’m willing to give it a try!” Lancelot also stepped forward to gesture

with his hands as he thanked Jack. Such an opportunity made all the other elders in the intermediate stage of the true-god level extremely envious.

“Alright, come find me in the morning three days later. I’ll pass the pills to both of you before leaving with First Elder and my father.”

Chapter 1469

Jack nodded and inwardly decided.

“With an alchemist like you, it’ll be impossible for our White family to not grow strong in the future!” Nash gazed at Jack, utterly content.

The group of people quickly scattered while Jack went back to cultivate pills.

Selena and the others were slightly worried about Jack when they knew about the situation. After all, Lily would be the ninth wife of the Skies Pavilion in the future, and no one knew what she had planned

Despite that, Selena could do nothing about it and could only train harder as she felt how urgent the situation had become.

While Jack was busy cultivating pills, Daniella and Helena who were guests at the White family felt slightly bored. The two of them invited Kylie to play around if they were free.

Finally, they found Jack in the morning of the third day when he exited his room after completing the cultivation of the pills.

Daniella smiled at the sight of Jack as she then began, “Jack, my sister and I had thought about it, and we’d like to join you in attending the so-called Skies Pavilion’s wedding!”

“The two of you want to attend the wedding? That won’t workit’s too dangerous. Lily Lagorio married the old man so she could retaliate against us, and we suspect that we’d get ambushed on the way back!” Jack immediately waved his hands when he heard this.

Danielle, however, rolled her eyes at his response. “Don’t worry, we’ve both thought it through. They surely won’t ambush you on the way to the ceremony, but it is likely they’ll attack you on the way back. So, we’ll follow you to the wedding but won’t follow you back!” she offered. “I’m sure that they’ve also invited people from our family, so my father and the others would be there, no doubt. If my sister and I follow you there, we’ll leave with our family home afterward instead of leaving with you. After all, your family will eventually visit our family some time after returning!”

Helena then chimed in, smiling as she did, “We’ve played a couple of days here and noticed every member of your family has been working hard in training; this has influenced both my sister and me. We’ve felt that we’ve wasted our time somewhat, and we truly want to go take a look in the seven dangerous areas later on. With that, we’ll return home after attending the wedding, and we’ ll strive to improve our strength!”

“Well, in that case, let’s go with that!” Jack nodded when he heard this. At this moment, Lancelot and Weston came walking in from outside.

“Oh my, both beauties are here. Is it not suitable for us to come over at this time?” spoke Lancelot jokingly as he noticed them.

“Haha..! The two of you are here just in time. I’ve been waiting for you both!” With a flip of his hand, four pills appeared in his palm. “Two for each of you! If anyone of you broke through, our family would have quite an increase in combat power. Although we don’t have as many people in the final and intermediate stage of the truegod level compared to the Hunt family, we still have quite a few people in the peak stage.”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1470-1472

Chapter 1470

“Don’t worry, Young Master Jack. We’ll try our best!” Lancelot and Weston took the pills from Jack before leaving after they thanked Jack.

It was then Selena came toward Jack and his company as she held onto Kylie's hand. "Father, you need to come back as soon as possible!"

"Don't worry, we'll be back soon. Obey your mother at home, and listen to your teachers when you're learning. Do you understand? Study well, and train well in the future!" Jack gazed at the adorable Kylie in front of him and could not help but caressed her delicate head lovingly.

"Yes, I'll train hard and become a master like Father in the future!" Kylie nodded obediently, incredibly wise despite being young.

At this moment, Daniella also walked over and touched Kylie's chubby cheeks before she spoke with a soft smile, "Kylie, me and your Auntie Helena will be leaving with your father to join somebody else's wedding, but we won't follow them home, afterward. We'll be returning to our own home."

Kylie grew upset when Daniella told her this, and with pursed lips, she muttered, "Auntie Daniella, it won't be fun if the two of you leave. I still want to play with the both of you!"

"Good girl. I'll come and visit you when there's time, but you need to work hard on training and try to break through into a grandmaster as soon as possible!" Daniella looked at the young girl in front of her and was slightly reluctant. After getting along for several days, she had already thought of Kylie as her own daughter.

Selena smiled as she saw how well Daniella and Kylie had gotten along. "Don't worry, Kylie, we'll have time in the future. Your aunties Daniella and Helena are going home because they have things to do. They'll surely visit you when they have the time!"

"Alright!" Kylie nodded, and her lovely smile once again returned to her face.

Another two to three minutes later, First Elder and Nash came toward them, and Jack quickly informed them both about Daniella and Helena's plans.

“Alright, since they wish to come with us, then we’ll let them!” Nash nodded in agreement.

Jack then took out his flying sword and threw it forward, and the item grew large enough that the five of them stood on them after flying onto the sword.

“Don’t worry, Selena, we’ll be alright. Train well at home, and we’ll be back about four or five days from now!” assured Jack turned to Selena, and only then did he pilot his flying sword and went toward the direction of the Skies Pavilion

After flying for a while, Daniella soon thought of something as she chirped, “Oh right, there’ll be quite a few families or forces traveling to the Skies Pavilion this time. Won’t it be cool if we

Chance upon members from the other families on the way, and they recognize that your flying sword is an ultimate-level spiritual tool?”

Unexpectedly, Jack smiled nonchalantly. “It’s alright. I was truthfully afraid of people knowing about it when I used to be in the intermediate stage of the true-god level. However, I’m already at the final stage of the true-god level, and my fighting prowess has stabilized throughout these past few days.

You also know that my combat power has always been much stronger than the others of this fighting prowess. Now that I have such a sword, I’m not afraid of people taking it from me!”

Jack paused for a short moment before he spoke again with extreme seriousness, “In comparison, the members of other families dare not offend our White family because we have this flying sword. After all, this sword can increase a person’s combat power greatly, and among the reclusive families, only the Hunts’ family master can come up with it.”

Chapter 1471

“You’re right. Although the other party might be jealous that you have this with you, they might be

more afraid of your combat power. Apart from that, your combat power must be extremely strong after you've broken through. I think some of those masters at the peak stage of the true god-level won't be able to fight against you!" Helena also nodded after she heard this. They had witnessed Jack's combat power personally-killing others of another realm did seem possible for Jack to do.

Sure enough, their journey was absolutely smooth. The next morning, Jack and the others spotted the mountain top where the Skies Pavilion was located.

"Goodness, Master White. Long time no see!" Not far away, another flying sword flew toward them as they greeted Nash.

Nash was delighted when he realized that it was the flying sword of their allied first-class aristocratic family, the Lancaster family. He gestured at them with his hands and replied, "Haha…! It's been a long time, Master Shirley!"

"Aren't there too few of you? The White family only sent three people?" commented the upbeat Shirley when she saw that only three masters from the White family were present. Compared to the over-20 people from their side, it was obvious that there were too few people from the White family.

"Well, what to do? We don't have as many people as your family, especially those in the semi-god level and grandmaster level. We might go into the seven dangerous areas after some time. I asked them to train themselves for their own safety, with hopes that they can improve their strength!" replied Nash.

"Brother Jack!" Randall came flying over from their flying sword and stood in front of Jack before saying happily. "Brother, you're really enjoying yourself, and I envy you for that! You've got two beauties accompanying you, even though you're just making a casual journey!"

Flustered at Randall's comment, he blushed as he coughed dryly twice. "Cough, cough! They just happened to be traveling this way, too!"

As she noticed the amicable relationship between her son and Jack, Shirley turned to Nash and beamed,

“Master White, I need to thank your son for the previous competition. If it wasn’t for him, my son would’ve died inside too. Jack’s strength really is the strongest among the younger generation. My son, Randall, had told me about all his doings!”

“Haha…! We’re all acquaintances, and we should help each other! It’s nothing!” chuckled Nash happily.

“You guys are here too? What a coincidence!” At this moment, members of the Hunt family flew toward them on a flying sword from the other direction.

Nash’s and Shirley’s expressions faltered for a moment when they noticed it was Quentin Hunt from the Hunt family, but they recollected themselves and gestured with their hands politely to greet him.

Quentin maneuvered his flying sword to fly next to the White family’s flying sword. He could not help but look at the flying sword underneath Jack’s feet and frowned. “Young brother Jack, this flying sword seems to be an ultimate-grade spiritual tool. Am I right?”

“Yes, Master Hunt. This flying sword of mine is an ultimate grade spiritual tool, and I happened to find it along my journey,” replied Jack as he gestured with his hands.

“Oh! You’re quite lucky to have gotten such an item!” Quentin smiled, but his suspicion of both his sons killed by Jack and Helena working together increased.

After all, he had never imagined that Jack would take such an item out. This item was able to increase a person’s combat power.

Chapter 1472

As he was free, Quentin had been deep in his own thoughts during the past couple of days.

Not many were in that category of those who could kill his sons, especially his eldest son, Cloud Hunt

He initially held the belief that Helena and Jack were in on it together, but he knew that although Helena had the same fighting prowess as his eldest son, her combat power was definitely not above his eldest son's. Coupled with the fact that Jack had a low fighting prowess, the possibility of them defeating his sons was not great.

That suspicion of his resurfaced and only grew, however, as he noticed Jack's ultimate-grade spiritual tool

After all, his sons did not offend any other prodigies from other families. They would not have dared to kill his sons even if a fight happened inside.

Jack and Helena, on the other hand, had an altercation against Tyrell before the competition started. After they entered the area, they must have worked together to kill Tyrell while Cloud was killed possibly due to his carelessness when avenging his brother. It was also possible that Jack and Helena had some other vicious actions.

Of course, these were only his suspicions. Apart from that, he did not have the reason to take action even if he had proof that Jack was indeed the killer.

He thought about it and said to Nash, "Master White, the bride of this wedding is your ex-wife. Any thoughts about this?"

Many of the elders and other members of the Hunt family had weird expressions on their faces after they heard what he said. After all, such a thing was no doubt an embarrassing incident

However, they also knew that Nash had no choice but to attend this wedding as he was the White' family master. The one who invited them was the pavilion master of the Four Ancients Clans, and not attending the wedding after the invitations were sent would mean not honoring him.

"Haha… What sort of thoughts can I have? I'm no longer married to Lily right now, and we might be

enemies, so whoever she marries has nothing to do with me." Nash smiled bitterly and continued to say to Quentin, "On the contrary, Master Hunt also knew that the Four Ancients Clans had never interfered with our family affairs. If Lily wants to take advantage of the ancient clans to fight against the White family, I hope that everyone from the reclusive families will condemn such an act with one voice."

The family master of the Lancaster family, Shirley Lancaster, agreed with Nash as she spoke, "Yes, we can't allow them to set such a precedent. Once they wipe out one of our families and nobody from the other reclusive families step forward or unite together, more and more of such things would happen in the future. We can even be the next targets!"

Quentin nodded. "I agree with what you both have said-we mustn't allow them to set such a precedent. It'll be terrible if something like that happened. Any contradictions between us reclusive families need to be settled internally, and what happens between the Four Ancients Clans should be settled by themselves. If the Four Ancients Clans plan to pick on us, then we, the reclusive families, need to unite and defeat them unanimously."

"Indeed. We're relieved to hear this from Master Hunt!" beamed Shirley.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1473-1475

Chapter 1473

Unexpectedly, Quentin acted humbly, a rare occurrence indeed. He glanced at Nash and said, "Oh, what do you mean you're relieved to hear this from me? The White family are the same as ours and other first-class aristocratic families; we have the same position and there's not much difference in our status, be it high or low. The Hunts were somewhat stronger back then as compared to other first-class aristocratic families, but this may very well have changed as of late. I'd say the White family is progressing quite nicely!"

Nash knew this man did not mean what he said, thus he immediately waved his hand and interjected, "No, no, no… Your Hunt family cannot be so easily surpassed. Your inheritance isn't something we can compare to. After all, your Hunt family has such an established inheritance!

Nash then looked forward and, in an attempt to shift the conversation, then spoke, "We're here, we're here… The Skies Pavilion has quite a large piece of territory. There are so many plazas and mountains

around the area. Tsk, tsk! The Chi here is also very rich, and training here is definitely guaranteed. The Chi is much thicker compared to where our reclusive families are located!

That's for sure. This is how the world is. They are strong, and there are more than a dozen masters in the peak stage of the true-god level. They also have a huge amount of masters in the final and intermediate stages of the true-god level. Our families can't simply compare to these ancient clans!"

Quentin smiled bitterly before he glanced at Nash and added, "So, you're forced to come here even if the person marrying pavilion master Collins is your ex-wife, and you're extremely embarrassed?"

"What else is there to say? I can only hate myself for being not strong enough." Nash could only offer an awkward smile everything was proven by a person's strength, after all. The Four Ancients Clans was not something a reclusive family could contend against.

Quentin drove his flying sword when he suddenly stopped. He turned to Nash and Shirley with a frown on his solemn face. "By the way, family masters, I suddenly recalled something rather worrying."

"Worried? Master Hunt, what do you have to worry about?" asked the curious Shirley after she thought about it

"Don't you think it's a bit too sudden for Lily to marry Joel Collins? I've been thinking about it, and they shouldn't have known one another previously, right? Why did they suddenly announce that they're getting married? There must be something hidden here, am I right?" fretted Quentin as he looked far away, airing his worries. "Apart from that, if Lily Lagorio becomes the ninth wife, would she tell Joel information about the ultimate-god level fighting prowess? That doesn't look too favorable for us."

Nash and Shirley exchanged glances as their expressions instantly turned grave. After all, everything had indeed happened so suddenly. Apart from that, with Lily and Joel getting married, this woman might tell the old man about the ultimate-god level to further strengthen the Skies Pavilion

Nash was quiet momentarily before he said, "I had always felt that Lily got together with Joel because

the woman had obviously seduced the other party, never expecting to succeed. Her main goal is to revolt against the White family. However, I forgot about this. This woman might've told that old guy about going into the dangerous areas, and that's surely no good for us!"

"Sigh! There's nothing we can do about it," muttered Shirley with a bitter smile. "We only have a very, very small chance if she talks about it, but we don't know who'll break through into the ultimate-god level first!"

Chapter 1474

Everybody understood clearly in their hearts that there would be an undeniable, vast change in the situation if everybody managed to find out how to break through into the ultimate god level.

Undoubtedly, the first person to

Eak through into the ultimate god level was the luckiest of all.

For example, some elder of a random family who broke through into the ultimate god level could easily kill their family master and seize the family master position if they so wanted.

"Alright, let's go! Quentin was in that same haze, unable to foresee their future. With that, he waved his hand and everybody went flying toward the plaza in the center

Everybody could see from afar that the plaza was filled with people standing; rather densely packed it was.

Only a few like the Lancasters and Hunts who bought about one or two dozen people to attend the wedding. Some families even brought a couple of dozen people over to congratulate the pavilion master of the Skies Pavilion.

After presenting their gifts, Nash and the others found a place to sit down for the time being.

As there were too many people and those making the registration of gifts had already done their job, he did not want to appear too conspicuous as his attendance was enough. He could leave after the meal.

Alas, he could not stay hidden as many members of other families spotted him. Some of them even started whispering among themselves, more so about him and Lily's old relationship.

Soon, the pavilion master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings arrived with his members. The person in charge of recording the gifts announced loudly while making his entry, "Pavilion master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, Harry Yeager, comes greeting with members of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings. He presents ten second-grade intermediate pills and fifty second-grade premium spirited grass…"

"That's the pavilion master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings? He's truly unusual. He's incomparable to others for having such spirit with his high age!" This was the first time for many elders of the other families to see the pavilion master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, and his appearance once again caused a wave of commotion.

"Haha… Welcome, welcome! Pavilion Master Harry's appearance has truly brought light to our Skies Pavilion!" Joel, who was initially conversing with the pavilion master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles, happily went toward him with his wives upon his arrival.

"Haha… Pavilion master Joel, you're being too modest. We don't talk like this between us!" Harry smiled and looked at Lily before speaking, "This must be the ninth madam, yes? Pavilion Master Joel truly has a good eye. She is no doubt an incredibly beautiful lady!" It was obvious Harry did not want to expose that Lily went looking for him initially and told him news about the ultimate god level, so he purposely pretended to have only met Lily for the first time during the conversation.

Lily rolled her eyes flirtatiously at him as chuckles spilled through her lips. "Haha…! Oh, please, stop pulling my leg, Pavilion Master Harry. I'm definitely not a beauty at my age. I fell in love with Pavilion Master Joel at first sight and, well, we quickly hit it off!"

“Remarkable! You’re such a remarkable woman!” praised Harry smilingly.

As a thought occurred to him, Joel then looked left and right. “By the way, I heard just now that the master of the White family is also here?”

With that, Lily started to scan the crowd of attendees.

She eventually discovered that Nash, Jack, and the others sat at a corner, chit-chatting with Shirley and the others.

Chapter 1475

Lily pointed to a direction and, though inwardly angry, spoke smilingly, “Honey, aren’t they over there? That guy must be embarrassed!”

Joel smiled before he turned to members of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings and said, “Everybody, sit or go everywhere you wish. The dinner will start in a short while. It’s been a busy day, and I hope that everybody will forgive us if there have been some hospitality issues!”

“Haha… Go do your thing, you old bridegroom!” Harry laughed before leading his people over to a side.

Only then did Joel lead his company toward Nash.

Walking up to him. Joel then began as he smiled at Nash,’ Master White, the two of us haven’t met for the past seven or eight years, have we now?”

“Indeed, Pavilion Master Joel. Congratulations!” Nash gave an awkward smile as he gestured with his hands.

Those around them slowly turned toward them, one by one, and the atmosphere grew rather solemn then.

“Really?” Joel pulled Lily closer toward him and hugged her by the waist in front of Nash before he spoke, “I heard that this beautiful lady was once your First Madam. Sigh! Why didn’t you know how to cherish such beauty? Haha…! Since you don’t know how to cherish her, I’ll do it for you from now on!”

Jack, who stood beside, was stunned silent at the old man’s behavior. He had the audacity to come up bragging to his father and run his mouth to anger him.

However, he was only a family master’s inheritor, and he knew he was in no position to speak. All Jack could do, thus, was watch on as he looked at his father.

Nash was just as enraged, though he managed to come up with a smile as he replied, “Yes, yes, yes… This woman almost killed me before, secretly poisoning me, and I just can’t handle it! I dare not cherish her at all!”

Nash paused here before he continued to speak, “However, I believe Pavilion Master Joel isn’t afraid of being poisoned or not. After all, who dares do something reckless with your fighting prowess and position? Am I right?”

The smile on Joel’s face immediately froze as the corners of his mouth involuntarily twitched. He then turned around and asked Lily, Ninth Madam, you won’t poison me, right? I’m actually somewhat worried, hearing him say that!”

Lily’s facial expression also darkened but she soon said with a smile, “Honey, how could I do that? How could I poison you when you treat me so nicely? This Nash White didn’t know how to cherish me previously, and he’s a malicious b*stard, that’s why I poisoned him to kill him. I just didn’t expect his son to have great medical skills and was able to rescue him.”

Nash gritted his teeth and tightened his fists but dared not act irrationally.

Only then did Joel pretended to be angry as he fretted, “Sigh! Honey, how can you call him a b *stard? Master White is a guest at our wedding. How can you say such a thing to our guest? It’ s too rude. You need to be more aware of your choice of words next time, alright?”

“Yes, yes, yes… Don’t worry. I’ll definitely take note of this next time and won’t say the truth straightforwardly!” came Lily’s immediately, though spoken in a weird tone.

“By the way, Master White, you’ re here to congratulate us, right?” Unexpectedly, Joel looked at Nash again at this moment. He stared at Nash as if he wanted to announce that Lily was already his woman and he had conquered her.

“Of course!” Nash smiled. “I don’ t have anything with Lily, so I’m here today to greet you both!”

“Since you’re here to greet us, I’ d like to hear words of blessing from you!” said Joel with a smile.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1476-1478

Chapter 1476

Joel Collins humiliated Nash terribly at that moment. Not only did he not honor Nash and ignored Nash’s feelings at that moment, but he even wanted Nash to grant him and Lily words of blessings for their union.

Many from the reclusive families also felt that Joel had crossed his boundaries awfully. It was shameful enough that Nash had to attend the wedding, but they even purposely humiliated him for all eyes to see.

After he deliberated his words, Nash smiled and said, “Then I shall wish for the both of you to be happy. Live for a hundred years and prosper! Have a child soon!”

Lily immediately remembered her son when Nash mentioned having a child. The corners of her mouth twitched several times, and her expression soured a little at that.

“Haha! Ninth Madam, did you hear that? Master White is wishing for us to have a child soon. Well, I’d say we better get to work on that later on. Is it possible for me to have a child in this old age?” Joel laughed out loudly after he heard this, though he paused momentarily before he added, “I’m quite satisfied with your words of congratulations, Master White, but I must disagree with you about that living for a hundred years old bit. What if I find the way to break through into the ultimate god level someday and become an ultimate god master? I’d have a long life of two hundred years then!”

Many people also started laughing after they heard this.

Trenton, who was at the side, grinned as he chimed in, “Haha! Pavilion Master Collins, I’m sure you hope that there will be some other fighting prowess after the ultimate god level. There might be a possibility for humans to live for a thousand years, no? Won’t you be living for one thousand years by then?”

“One thousand years?” said Joel jokingly as he raised his eyebrows. “Just like the saying goes, ‘A tortoise lives a thousand years while the turtle lives ten thousand years.’ Master Lagorio, it doesn’t sound too nice to say something like that, no?”

“Haha.! If there really is this sort of fighting prowess, I’d rather somebody call me a thousand-year-old tortoise. How good will it be to live for one thousand years? That would be extremely powerful!” Trenton started laughing.

Joel then turned to the crowd and addressed them, “Alright, everybody can take a look and walk around while waiting for a short while, seeing as there are some families that have yet to come, but the celebration will start when everyone is here! Don’t be prudish; it’s my wedding today. Everybody should help themselves to drinks and food. Enjoy yourselves, alright?”

At that moment, the man in charge of recording the gifts announced, “Pavilion of Divinity’ s pavilion master is here with the sacred lady and elders to congratulate…”

Upon hearing that, Joel led Lily and the others to greet the members of the Pavilion of Divinity.

After they left, Jack frowned as he asked, “Father, what is this sacred lady from the Pavilion of Divinity exactly? Why is she as well-known as the Pavilion of Divinity’s pavilion master? Why do they need to announce her name independently?”

Nash glanced over to that side and explained, “The Pavilion of Divinity is different from the other three Ancient Clans. More than ninety percent of their disciples are women, and they don’t have that many men disciples. As for the sacred lady of the Pavilion of Divinity, she’s the most talented one in their pavilion and she’s fated to be the next pavilion master. There’ s a rule in the Pavilion of Divinity that the sacred lady of the Pavilion of Divinity needs to wear a veil when she goes out, and nobody is allowed to see her true features. She has to be pure and not marry anybody.”

“How’s that possible? There’s such a rule?”

Chapter 1477

The information Nash told Jack flustered the latter as he glanced at the sacred lady from far away

She emitted an extremely mysterious and sacred feeling as she stood among the crowd. She had on a white tulle dress and a white veil that covered the lower half of her face. Her white dress gave people an extremely pure feeling.

Although only her bright, big eyes, forehead, and long, dark hair could be seen, it would not be a stretch to say she had an inimitable beauty.

Unfortunately, nobody would be allowed to see the true appearance of such a beauty, and she would never marry for her entire life.

“Haha… This had been the Pavilion of Divinity’s rules since long ago,” laughed Nash as he explained to Jack. “By the way, there’s a legend which says that the Pavilion of Divinity has been around for thousands of years, and the same legend told that the founder of this ancient clan was a woman, one

with astounding beauty, but a man had badly hurt her. It was then she made such a rule that every pavilion master in the future will need to protect her virtue. She said that the pavilion master's training wouldn't be affected as she would not be troubled by feelings."

After some time, everybody sat down and started eating.

After Joel offered a toast to all his attendees, Lily pulled him to a secluded area alone.

Joal, pulled away from his drinks, soured a little when she pulled him away. "Why did you pull me over here?"

"Honey, only three people from the White family are here, and this is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity. More importantly, they're Nash, Jack, and Kenneth -all three who I intended to kill. We can't let go of such an opportunity!" Lily's eyes gleamed with excitement as she could barely hold herself from acting on her words.

Joel, however, frowned at the idea. "This doesn't seem to be a good idea. If we want to take action, it's best if we do it in the Seven Dangers. After all, today is our wedding day. Wouldn't it be not too auspicious to experience blood today?"

"I…" His response baffled Lily, and she rolled her eyes at him." What's not auspicious about this? Are you truly such a superstitious person? You surprise me!"

Lily paused momentarily before she continued, "Think about the opportunity we have right now, a truly once-in-a-blue moon chance that is. There are only three of them, and it won't cause a big commotion. All you need to do is gather a group of masters and ambush them on their way home. Choose a location slightly further away from our ancient clan, and it'll be best if this location is near to their home. They'll surely lower their guard, and by then, it'll be easy to wipe them out!"

The idea still seemed risky to Joel, even after he fell silent for a while on it. "But they have quite high fighting prowess. Would they inform other family masters about this if they escaped? That'll be

troublesome!”

However, Lily could not wait any further as she challenged,“ You’re really single-minded. It’ll work if all of them wear casual clothes instead of the ancient clan’s clothings and without bringing the token of our clan. Apart from that, Master Hunt’s sons have died during the competition, and I’m sure the Hunts are suspecting the White family. How would Jack and the others dare to say that it was us when something like this happened? If you send more people and barricade all exits, it’ll surely work!”

“You are really too impatient!” said Joel as he smiled bitterly.” Alright, let me make arrangements for that right now.”

Chapter 1478

After the banquet, a few families bade their farewells to Joel before they left.

Nash also led Jack and Kenneth as he said his goodbye to Joel before the trio started their journey home, flying as they did.

Daniella frowned as she saw the White family leaving. Turning to Alejandro, who stood beside her, she then fretted,” Father, I’m genuinely worried. I wonder if Jack and the others will encounter any danger on their way back. The Lagorios want to kill them White family men so badly, and Lily marrying that old man Joel Collins makes me feel like something else is running behind the scenes.”

Alejandro also nodded. “That’s true. I was just as surprised when I received the invitation. Who would’ve thought Lily would marry Joel now, and quite the pivotal moment too! It’ s possible that she wants to use him to get rid of the White family!”

Daniella’s worries increased when she heard what Alejandro said.

Alejandro smiled bitterly when he saw how his daughter frowned. “You need to train well; this is how the world is. Nobody would dare bully you if you’re strong enough. Otherwise, killing you will be as easy as killing an ant. You won’t be given any opportunity to resist!”

“Yes, Father, I understand. I won’ t loaf on the job in the future,” spoke Daniella, smiling as she gazed at the other Cabellos. “Let’ s go, Father. We should be heading home, too!”

Jack and the others took out the flying sword once they were a short distance away from the Skies Pavilion. They then drove the flying sword and headed straight to where the White family’s residence was located.

“I wonder if our journey will be smooth-sailing,” said Kenneth with an awkward smile after they flew a good distance. “Joel Collins went too far back there. Although our reclusive families aren’t as strong as the Four Ancients Clans, the White family is still a first-class aristocratic family. How dare he dishonor our family master! He humiliated our family master in front of everybody!”

Nash only smiled. “It’s alright. We can only blame our family for not being strong enough. Would he still talk to us like that if we’re so strong that he fears us?”

He then glanced at Jack, who was beside him, and said seriously, “You’re blessed with talent, Jack, but it’s not as safe as it used to be. It’s possible that we’re on the Skies Pavilion’s hitlist. Apart from that, I estimate that we might really find ways to break through into the ultimate god level in the Seven Dangers, so you’ll need to break through into the peak stage of the true god level as soon as possible.”

“Master, it’s not good to break through fighting prowess so speedily,” said the anxious Kenneth after hearing Nash’s idea. “Young Master Jack is truly talented, but he had just broken through into the final stage of the true god level recently. His current combat power is totally sufficient to protect himself. Although he hasn’t fought any people in the peak stage of the true god level, enemies who have just broken through into the peak stage of the true god level won’t be able to take him, no?”

Kenneth paused here before he continued, “I still hope that Young Master Jack can break through his fighting prowess, one step at a time.”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1479-1482

Chapter 1479

Only then did Nash speak of his worries helplessly, “How can I not understand this? Of course I’ m hoping Jack can break through step by step, but what if somebody breaks through to the ultimate god level first? It’s alright if said person is one from our alliance, but it’ll be hell if they’re our enemy. Things will change, no longer the same as they are now!”

“Don’t fret, Father. My realm has always been stable, and I have quite a solid foundation! Hence, there wouldn’t be any huge impact if I try to break through into the peak stage of the true god level earlier!” assured Jack after he deliberated the situation. “No rushing on it, seeing as we’ve yet to enter the Seven Dangers yet. I think it’s best to let my fighting prowess settle down for a while before I try to break through in one go, given the chance in the future. I’ll try to cultivate some second-grade intermediate pills within these two days to see if I can break through and become a secondgrade intermediate alchemist. It won’t be a problem to prepare some pills and carry them with me!”

Nash nodded at that as he confessed, “Yes. I said what I said because I’m afraid that something sudden will occur. Lily’s wedding this time had caught me by surprise, after all.”

Jack thought about it and said,” Father, I wonder if Lily had told the other three ancient clans about the ultimate god level? I’ m sure she had told the Skies Pavilion, but I wonder if this woman would secretly tell the other three ancient clans about the news.”

“How’s that possible? She wouldn’t have done that unless she’s dumb!” Such a thought seemed impossible for Nash and Kenneth after they pondered on the possibility.

“Young Master Jack, you must have overthought it. Lily told Joel because she’s married to him and she wants to use him to ruin us. That’s why she told the Skies Pavilion! Still, it’s somewhat likely that she told the other three families, and that meant she had told the information to the strongest and most powerful opponent of the Skies Pavilion!” Kenneth soon said with confidence.” After all, us reclusive families aren’t a huge threat to the Skies Pavilion. However, the three other ancient clans are great threats to them!”

“Well, I hope I’m just overthinking it,” replied Jack with a wary smile. “It just boggles me: How did Lily become acquainted with the Skies Pavilion’s pavilion master? Joel is in the ancient clans, and it’s some

distance away from the Lagorio family. He managed to meet Lily, meaning that Lily went searching for their ancient clans. If that's the case, how can Lily make sure he'd fall for her? It seems like falling for Lily was an accidental situation, and I'm sure Lily didn't go to the Skies Pavilion, thinking of marrying him from the get-go."

Jack's analysis struck Nash as he inhaled deeply. "Now that you've mentioned it, Jack, that does seem likely. Otherwise, they wouldn't have interacted, and everything happened so quickly as well!"

"Yes. Lily must've had something in mind to have gone to the Skies Pavilion, and she might've even asked, or thought of it, about how they can avenge the Lagorio family. After all, how can Lily be sure that the other party would help her? Still, I'm wondering if Lily went searching for the other party for martial-enhancing materials. She might've been exchanging martial-enhancing materials with news!"

Everything Jack speculated made sense to Kennet as he gritted his teeth. "Tsk, tsk! This woman truly is… She's truly despicable for exchanging martial-enhancing materials with such news!"

Chapter 1480

Thinking more about it, the frowning Kenneth spoke, "Young Master Jack, even if that's the case, we can only assume that Lily went to the Skies Pavilion with hopes that they'll act against her. I'm sure that her initial aim was to obtain something from them, but the pavilion master happened to fall for her."

Kenneth paused momentarily before he continued, "Still, this doesn't indicate she had gone to the other ancient clans, right?"

"I thought so too in the beginning. However, I thought about it more, and the route from the Lagorio family to the Skies Pavilion indicated that she would've passed the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Gods and Kings. It won't make sense if she doesn't go to the ancient clans nearer to her. She must've gone to at least the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.

"I also came to a very important thought today. The pavilion master and many of the elders from the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles were there in the banquet, and those who were in the peak stage of the true god level were also there, right? Meanwhile, not many of those in the peak

stage of the true god level from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings were there, and only the pavilion master and the deputy pavilion master were present. Apart from that, more than half of those who came were in the final stage of the true god level!"

Jack smiled and made another assumption, "Think about it. It'd make sense if those in the final stage of the true god level didn't attend as they require training. Those who are in the peak stage of the true god level can no longer advance in their fighting prowess, so why didn't they attend the wedding?"

Jack's recall caused Nash to inhale sharply as he commented, "You mean to say that the members of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings had already acted? That they had sent masters into the Seven Dangers?"

Jack nodded. "That's right. Our reclusive families have a slightly weaker overall and individual strength. We had agreed back then that we needed to find time to discuss things, and that's why we've yet to dispatch anyone, but an ancient clan like the Pavilion of Gods and Kings won't be so calm if they received such information."

"That's going to be trouble. It'll get tricky if they found out how to break through into the ultimate god level before everyone else. By then, the Pavilion of Gods and Kings would have many masters in the ultimate god level, and the other three ancient clans might fall into a passive state because they're late." Kenneth's expression shifted into one of light bitterness.

Haunted by the thought, he spoke through gritted teeth at Nash, "Master, why don't we stop waiting? What's the point of a discussion? Let's just go to the Seven Dangers. There's only a few of us, and we can just search for a less dangerous place to enter. What if there really are ways to train for the ultimate god level? We'd be one step ahead!"

"I…" Nash frowned, somewhat hesitant about it. After all, nobody knew how strong masters in the ultimate god level were. Based on legends, however, such a realm made sure that several masters in the peak stage of the true god level might not be able to defeat a guy who had just achieved the ultimate god level.

"Master, how will we know if we don't try? There's a possibility… It's likely that those from the Hunt family and the other ancient clans had left earlier, no?" Kenneth once again persuaded Nash as he

assessed the hesitation. “There are times falling back behind will decide the White family’s fate!”

Carefully pondering the situation, Nash decided, “I think we should wait. After all, we don’t need to wait any much longer. We’ve all made a pact previously, and if we act before the other families did, we might cause public anger.”

“Alright, that’s fine. It won’t be long anyway!” Kenneth sighed. “I’ll admit that it is somewhat dangerous if we go in alone, seeing as there are quite many strong monster beasts inside. I heard that there were many monster beasts of the true god level inside! That’s why nobody went deep into the area when they went searching for precious items.”

“That’s right. It’s something good for everybody that people from other families entered together, right?” Nash smiled bitterly. “Sigh, never mind that. If this happened a bit later, the people from our family would be able to raise their combat power. If that’s the case, those who enter would have a better chance of surviving!”

Chapter 1481

Jack, who had not said anything for a while, piped in, “Those with fighting prowess lower than semi-god level don’t need to follow us this time. Apart from that, we’ll have to put on standby some in the semi-god level and true god level at home to prevent any accidents from happening.”

Time passed quickly. Jack and the others were extremely careful, so they went through the day without any accidents.

Around nine in the next morning, they were not far from the White family.

Relaxed, Kenneth chuckled. “Haha… Seems like we’re just too paranoid. Those from the Skies Pavilion didn’t plan to do anything to us! I think the pavilion master was so busy with his wedding that he didn’t think too much about it. If he wanted to do something against us, he would’ve done it in the danger area. After all, others would think of this as a fight over precious items if he takes action out here in the open. Oh, won’t others think monster beasts killed me if I died here?”

“We can’t act carelessly. We need to keep our guard up the nearer we get to the White family!” Jack, however, frowned. He understood that woman, Lily Lagorio, well. This woman would not have given up on such a great opportunity, and it was definite she had wanted to kill them since long ago.

Their deaths would signify the deaths of those with the highest combat power in their White family. By then, even the Lagorios would be able to get rid of the remaining members of the White family.

Suddenly…

Whoosh!

A daunting sword aura came flying out from the woods below at this moment. It suddenly flew out from the rear left direction, rushing toward Jack and the others.

Whoosh!

Jack immediately reacted and made the flying sword evade the attack at the nick of time.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Then, several figures came flying out from the woods as they surrounded Jack, Nash, and Kenneth in a circle.

These people donned regular clothes and masks to cover their faces. They did not even have a token to prove their identity.

“Tsk, tsk! Six masters in the peak stage of the true god level. They think highly of us!” Nash’s face

darkened as he studied their attackers. “Apart from the Skies Pavilion, which other ancient clans can come up with such a group of people? You lot don’t need to wear masks-we know that you’re members of the Skies Pavilion!”

“Haha! That’s not important. What is important is that you three will die today!” One of the old men laughed as the sword in his hand gave off a cold glow.

Chapter 1482

Nash and First Elder Kenneth hardened their gaze as they studied their six opponents

Those who sent the men purposely arranged six people, knowing that only three of them traveled together. They planned to have two fighting each one of them so they would not survive the attack.

Kenneth took his weapon out with the flip of his hand and said with a heavy heart, “Master, what should we do? It looks like we can only rush toward one side. If we manage to break through, Young Master Jack can bring us away speedily with this flying sword.”

“Jack needs to use this flying sword, but if all six of them attack simultaneously, it won’t be easy to make our way out!” Nash flew slightly outward in a flash. He knew that Jack’s combat power would weaken if he did not use this ultimate-grade spiritual tool.

Both him and Kenneth would not last long if they needed to fight two alone. After all, the martial art technique the other party trained in must have been extremely powerful, and their martial technique would be even better. The masters of the Skies Pavilion naturally trained with the best materials.

He even suspected that they would not be able to match up against them if they were to fight these people, one-on-one. Who would have expected the other party to send six peak stage true god level masters to kill them? It was too much.

Moreover, Jack’s fighting prowess was only in the final stage of the true god level. Even if he had the spiritual tool, it was difficult to say if he could take them on, one-on-one. Their odds of winning were

pitiful when he had to fight two on his own.

Jack soon minimized the flying sword and held it in his hands. “Father, let’s try to fight them. It’s difficult to kill our way out, so why don’t we fight with our lives?

Death doesn’t scare us, so we might be able to find a breaking point if we fight them before we rush out.” There was no sign of fright in Jack’s eyes as he spoke –they were filled with fire instead. “I’ve never fought masters like these. I want to see how my true combat power is after breaking through into the final stage of the true god level!”

“Haha… Great! It’s decided then! The worst thing we’ll face is death, though we might have hope if we try our best fighting!”

Nash laughed. Jack’s fiery will ignited the flame in his own heart as he, too, wanted to test his mettle.

“Tsk, tsk! You guys truly can brag shamelessly!” One of the six eyed Jack and smiled coldly. “Young man, you truly are talented for achieving the final stage of the true god level at such a young age, but alas, this is where you die. I’d say that it’s a waste that you’ll perish, but there’s nothing I can do when you’ve offended our pavilion master!”

“Hmph! The powerful Skies Pavilion sent six masters to ambush us; that’s cowardice!” smirked Jack. “People will laugh at this if this ever gets leaked to the masses. The Skies Pavilion, one of the Four Ancients Clans, ambushed me?”

“Haha! Enough with this useless talk, young man. After all, I don’t plan to tell anybody about this. Apart from that, even if we killed you in this barren area, nobody will see us! This place is quite serene, and it’s a suitable burial ground. We purposely chose this place for you three!” The old man laughed as his eyes were cold and distant.

Jack laughed coldly before he fell silent. He held the sword in his hands tightly as Chi quickly gushed out and intertwined with the sword.

With the infusion of the Chi, the sword trembled lightly as it hummed. The overpowering manner from Jack kept on increasing and was slowly released.

“Everybody, don’t underestimate them. This young man is no simpleton. He seems to be impressively strong from his aura alone and is no weaker compared to us!” One of the opponents looked stern and grim after he felt the overpowering manner from Jack. “The sword in this guy’s hand isn’t just a flying sword, it can be used to carry out attacks. It must be capable of increasing his combat power by leaps and folds. This is an ultimate-grade spiritual tool!”

“Kill him! That thing is mine!” Shrieked an old man impishly.

“That won’t work, I have my eyes on the item first!” responded the man who spoke previously.

“Haha! Then let’s both attack and see who lands the final blow on him!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1483-1485

Chapter 1483

The old man laughed out loud. “Whoever lands the killing blow on this young man will get the sword. How about that?”

The middle-aged man smirked at the challenge. “Sure,” he agreed, “it’s decided then!”

He then turned and stroked toward Jack. “Ferocious Wind Strike!”

Whoosh!

A horrendous strike rushed toward Jack like a hurricane.

“Youngsters these days have no reverence for martial principles!” The old man was enraged when the middle-aged man attacked first; the old man was not even ready. If this attack could kill Jack, more so if he was weak, Jack’s sword would go to the middle-aged man instead of him!

Furious, he immediately adjusted his Chi and was ready to activate his martial skill.

“Burning Chop!” Jack, who was already prepared, swung his sword as his opponents made their move.

Whoosh!

A strike that looked like a ball of flames was conjured, and the Chi that zipped through the air seemingly radiated heat. The Chi was extremely condensed and the fierce sword aura had perfectly fused with the Chi.

Meanwhile, Nash and Kenneth took on two opponents each and began fighting back. “Attack!”

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Deafening explosions were heard, one that could cause deep terror.

Thoom!

At that moment, Jack and the middle-aged man’s attack clashed.

Confident in himself and his skills, the middle-aged man smirked triumphantly. ‘Hmph! You’re only in the final stage of the true god level, but I’m a senior elder of the Skies Pavilion. My fighting prowess had broken through into the peak stage of the true god level since long ago. This attack will cost you your life,

and that flying sword of yours will be mine! My combat power will increase greatly with it!'

What he experienced and witnessed next, however, shocked him to the core. 'Impossible!' He noticed that his martial technique attack was in a stalemate with Jack's attack, and that meant Jack's combat power was on par with his.

Seconds later, the middle-aged man grew even more startled as he discovered his attack began to falter and weaken against Jack's, but the latter's attack consistently resisted and persisted.

'How could this young man's combat power be so powerful?' The middle-aged man was stupefied on the spot as shock overwhelmed his features.

The middle-aged man's downfall was brought during his loss of focus as Jack's attack managed to shatter through his while just as he regained his focus. Unable to defend himself, the attack landed on him.

Thoom!

The middle-aged man was sent flying backward.

Chapter 1484

Mpfh!

The middle-aged man's eyes were filled with horror as the force sent him zipping through the air several meters away. He spat out a mouthful of blood as he stabilized himself by stepping in the middle of the air.

The old man who was initially prepared to attack Jack was also stunned. He temporarily dispersed his Chi and looked at the middle-aged man in surprise as he exclaimed, "What's going on? That was a power

move you unleashed there, yet you still couldn't withstand his attack?"

The middle-aged man blushed in embarrassment. "I was careless; I underestimated that guy. I didn't use my full energy and only used about seventy to eighty percent of my strength, thinking I'd test out his power. Who would've thought this guy would be so strong!"

"That's more like it. You scared me a little back there!" The old man eased a little at his explanation—he was fearful that the middle-aged man could not contend against Jack. If that was the case, they would need to spend lots of energy to kill this young man who stood before them.

At that moment, Jack turned to look at Nash and Kenneth's side.

Both men unleashed powerful attacks as if they had used up everything they had, but it seemed as though they were faltering by the moment as their opponents were much stronger. Apart from that, the opponents' attack might be tentative attacks, and they had not used their full capacity.

Nonetheless, Jack was inwardly pleased after his test-out with the middle-aged man.

After all, he noticed that it was not that hard to fight off masters in the peak stage of the true god level, even if it was a master from the Four Ancients Clans. His previous attack was also just a tentative attack, and he had yet to go at his full capacity.

"That's good… That's good!" The old man's confidence returned upon hearing the middle-aged man's explanation. He activated his Chi with all his might and swung his palm toward Jack.

'This old man is giving his all!' The middle-aged man scowled upon noticing the several meters tall Chi palm in front of him. After all, he would be at a huge loss if the old man got to kill Jack, and whoever landed the killing blow on Jack would get the ultimate level spiritual tool as well.

"Burning Chop!" Jack took a sudden leap and swung his sword at his opponent when facing the attack.

His skill baffled the middle-aged man—he did not expect Jack to have used the same martial skill. This old man's attack was obviously much stronger than his previous attack, and Jack might be killed if he reused the same technique.

'Seems like this young man from the White family doesn't have any strong martial skill. This so-called Burning Chop must be his best attack!' The old man grew pompous when he saw Jack's attack. In his opinion, the sword in Jack's hands was already his for the taking.

However, his smile faltered the next second as he discovered that even the manner of this attack was much stronger. That speed and horrendous impact was incomparable to its former self. 'That's not right. This young man's attack is much stronger than it was before!'

The middle-aged man also noticed the same problem quickly as he inhaled sharply. He thought that this young man had the lowest fighting prowess and should be the easiest to handle.

It soon occurred to him, however, that the young man's combat power was incomparable to his fighting prowess. His combat power had highly surpassed his fighting prowess. Apart from that, this young man dared not use his full power in a situation, even as he faced two masters in the peak stage of the true god level to test his combat power.

Thoom!

Chapter 1485

Both the middle-aged man and the old man were floored as Jack's attack clashed against the old man's huge Chi palm.

Thoom!

Unexpectedly, Jack's attack blasted the huge Chi palm open like a sharp blade. A huge hole was left in

the center, and although Jack's attack had dwindled a little and it had slowed down, the attack's remaining power raged still toward the old man.

The huge Chi palm flew several meters forward, despite the gaping hole left by Jack's attack, before the palm eventually dissipated.

'I—Impossible!' Disbelief was written all over the old man's face. He did not even hold back upon unleashing his attack, and though it was just one first-grade premium martial skill, it was an absolutely powerful martial skill. He even exerted the martial skill to its maximum potential.

The old man was horrified to the core upon seeing Jack's attack fast approaching him. He quickly coagulated a huge Chi dome around himself to shield himself. It made him feel somewhat better, a little more at ease when the shield was formed as he believed no attacks could break through his shield.

However…

Boom!

Just as his protective Chi dome was formed, Jack's attack pummeled against it and the dome started to fluctuate continuously.

Crack!

A daunting crack appeared in the aftermath as it grew wider. Jack's attack had successfully crushed the old man's Chi protective dome!

"No!" The remaining large amount of power shot at the old man's chest which sent him flying backward.

Mpfh!

The old man zipped through the air due to the impact, further than the distance the middle-aged man was thrown back. The old man vomited blood as his face turned pale, wounds more grave than his younger counterpart.

“By the gods… This is impossible!” The middle-aged man was stunned by what he saw. He had never expected the old man to lose to Jack with his martial skill.

He thought about it and looked at the old man while probing, “Were you…testing him with that attack too? Don’t look down on our opponent!”

The old man was so angry that he almost vomited blood again. He glared at the middle-aged man and growled, “Testing, my foot! You think I’m testing him when I use that first-grade premium martial skill in that manner? Why don’t you try testing then? Curses… This young man is incredibly strong!”

Before then, Nash and Kenneth were very worried about Jack. If Jack failed to fight against them and was killed in action, his opponents would come to them both instead. They might not be able to put up much of a fight by then.

Both Nash and Kenneth had attempted to fight their way out of their own opponents, all to no avail as they were surrounded.

The sight of Jack wounding his opponents, however, flabbergasted them both. Never did they expect to see such a sight; the sight of Jack triumphing against his opponents!

Jack, surprisingly, still had the upper hand even when outnumbered!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1486-1488

Chapter 1486

“Young Master Jack, keep on fighting! We can’t hold on any longer. It truly depends on your side now, see if you can create an opening to survive. Even if all of us can’t escape alive, you can!”

At this moment, Kenneth turned and shouted at Jack; he was drenched in sweat.

Jack was fighting two elite fighters alone. He just broke through to the peak stage of the true god realm not long ago, while his two opponents who were veterans of the Skies Pavilion were already at the peak of the true god realm. It had not been easy for Jack to hold out that long.

“Jack, don’t mind us! If you can create an opening to escape, please do so! Use that flying sword to escape quickly! I’m glad that you’re my son. Avenge us in the future when you have the opportunity!”

Nash was overwhelmed by the enemy. Before the real battle took off, the other party attacked him only to test out his prowess, and he could barely deal with it. But now, the other party seemed to have known the real deal on their side, so they began to show their true strength by using more terrifying martial skills and techniques!

Jack’s face immediately sank to the deepest upon hearing Nash and Kenneth’s words. If this went on, it would truly be troublesome. He could hold on longer, but his father and Kenneth obviously could not hold on much longer. If they had succumbed, Jack would have to face six of those fighters all alone.

The only hope was for Jack to kill the two in front of him, then only he could free up his hands and help his father and Kenneth and win the tough battle.

The two opponents also began to join forces and were constantly mobilizing their Chi energy in their bodies, preparing to give Jack a fatal blow.

“Let’s end this now!”

Jack tightened his grip around the longsword and injected his Chi energy into the sword continuously. A thick layer of black-colored aura enclosed the sword, making the sword appear domineering yet mysterious.

“Haha, brat, do you think you could beat both of us? What’s the matter? Seeing your father and the others dying makes you anxious? So you decided to give us the final blow? Dream on!”

The middle-aged man laughed out loud sarcastically.

“That’s right. Let’s not talk about killing you, even if we can’t kill, your father and the First Elder can’t hold out any longer if we drag on slightly longer. After that, what’s waiting for you is only death!”

The old man laughed sinisterly. In his opinion, they had already won for sure, there was no longer any suspense nor plot twist to it.

“Is that so? If I don’t try, how do I know if I could kill you two?”

Jack laughed icily. At that moment, the sword vibrated aggressively, and the aura enclosed around it shined bright like a diamond, fluctuating vigorously.

Bang!

However, Kenneth did not manage to hold on; he was blasted and flew more than ten feet away, a mouthful of blood gushed out from his mouth. His face instantly blanched.

“Motherf*cker!”

The First Elder’s face was as pale as a white paper, but he still gritted his teeth and once again stomped his feet, and continued to control his Chi energy to fight with the other party.

“Hahaha! Old man, you’re injured! I’ll see how long you can hold on!”

Kenneth’s opponent—an old man—laughed out loud with a smug look.

“First Elder, please hold on!”

Jack’s face sank deeper, and killing intent surged in his eyes. He swung his arm and shouted out, “Blade Wave!”

Swoosh! Swoosh!

In the blink of an eye, hundreds of terrifying Chi attacks in the form of blade waves shot out and charged forward. Behind the first wave of the blade wave was another wave, forming a series of blade waves. The attack flew toward the other party with unrelenting momentum.

“Be careful! His attack is strong!”

The two opponents—who were the veterans in the peak of the true god realm—already knew that Jack’s attack was strong with just one glance. They changed their demeanors, clenching their fists tightly and cast out a Chi attack. In front of them, two huge Chi attacks in the form of fierce tigers appeared.

Chapter 1487

The two humongous tigers were both powerful and terrifying. They were more than ten feet tall and

possessed the mighty aura of strong creatures—tigers. A thick layer of Chi energy was leaping on them.

Roar!

The fierce tigers let out a roar and charged straight ahead toward Jack.

“Go!”

A huge amount of Jack’s Chi energy was injected into his attack so that he could control the flying sword, and thus the attack power was naturally more extraordinary than before.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Waves of flying swords went forward and soon separated into two groups; each wave blasted head-on against the giant tigers respectively.

The loud and horrifying sound pierced through the air, and the ground was shaking incessantly. Waves of Chi aura dispersed and radiated out in all directions when the blade waves collided with the tigers.

The two huge tigers were beating and destroying the blade attacks ceaselessly; the flying sword Chi attack cast by Jack was smashed without mercy.

However, Jack’s flying swords were too many, and soon the gigantic tigers could not hold on any longer. The flying swords under Jack’s control kept targeting the tigers and were attacking the same spot, trying to create an opening and annihilate them completely.

“This brat is quite experienced in battle!”

After only a few moments, the middle-aged man and the old man—who were on the opposite side—had bean-sized beads of sweat dripping from their forehead. Obviously, pressured by the situation.

“Dammit! It seems like our attack can’t hold out against the flying swords anymore!”

After a few more seconds, the old man’s face turned unsightly.

Sure enough, just as his words fell, the two gigantic and almighty tigers could not hold on anymore and were blasted away into pieces. Meanwhile, the remaining dozens of flying swords charged straight to the two of them.

“No!”

Although there were not many left, both of them knew the strength and power of the flying swords. Even worse, the remaining flying swords—that had not been fended off by the tigers—charged toward them in full speed and power.

Terror stabbed their hearts to the point that they could feel nothing but blind terror. The flying swords were flying toward them at lightning speed; the attack was too fast for them to dodge. Thus the two could only shout and immediately condensed their Chi energy to create aura shields.

Boom boom!

The first flying sword landed on their bodies just as the aura shield finished coalescing.

“Boom!”

Almost in the same instant, the aura shields were crushed and the remaining flying swords bombarded their bodies, one by one.

They were elite fighters of the peak stage of the true god realm; the build of their body was robust. However, when the first two flying swords collided with their bodies, they were blasted away. Blood splattered from the wounds on their bodies, and mouthfuls of blood spurted out of their mouths.

However, the remaining flying swords did not cease at all; they continued to attack the two of them incessantly, and finally penetrated their chest, forming a bloody hole. The two of them hit the ground hard, lifelessly.

The two elite fighters of the peak of the true god realm—elders of the Skies Pavilion—were killed by Jack just like that.

Bang bang!

However, just at this time, Nash and Kenneth, on the other side, could not hold on anymore. They flew backward simultaneously and hit the ground harshly. Although they were still alive, mouthfuls of fresh red blood spat out from their mouths, and they could not even stand up.

“Father! First Elder!”

Jack looked over there and cried out.

Chapter 1488

“Jack, go! Just go!”

Nash and Kenneth were not dead, but both of them were grievously injured and had no fighting power left.

However, the two shouted at Jack, pleading him to go. Jack had killed two opponents by himself, and

now there was an opening in his direction; it was a golden opportunity to escape, even better if he used that flying sword to escape.

“Father, there’s no way I’m leaving you and First Elder behind!”

Jack, however, refused the proposal, his face stern. He wheeled around and, in a flash, appeared in front of Nash and Kenneth, stopping the other four from killing Nash and Kenneth.

“This brat is powerful. He actually killed both Elder Shaw and Elder Lake!”

When the four men glanced at the two corpses on the ground, the corners of their mouth twitched involuntarily. That ending was something they did not anticipate at all.

“This brat is only at his late stage of the true god realm, if he breaks through to the peak of the true god realm, that’d be troublesome! By that time, I’m afraid that even our pavilion master is no match for him!”

One of the four said as he flew to the other side of Jack. Four of them surrounded Jack, who was now in the middle of the circle.

Nash and Kenneth exchanged looks, and both could not help but sigh out loud in their hearts. Jack had the best opportunity and golden time to escape from this battle but he gave it up!

“We can’t let this brat live! If the four of us join forces, it’ll definitely not be a problem to kill him!”

One of them was an old lady. She suggested it to the other three with a cold smile on her face.

However, little did everyone expect, Jack sneered in return. “If six of you joined forces, I’m truly not confident that I could survive. But I killed two just now, my chance of surviving and beating all of you is still there!”

“Motherf*cker, you’re truly a big talker, aren’t you?”

“Ya. Who do you think you are? Elder Shaw and Elder Lake have already made you use up a lot of Chi energy, and I think you’re pretty much exhausted by now. It’d be easy to kill you with only the four of us!”

When the other two elders heard Jack’s shameless statement, they responded in a huff. They felt that they were despised and being underestimated by Jack. They were four strong elite fighters at the peak of the true god realm! How could that brat think that four of them were not even his opponents!

What they did not expect was that Jack waved and gestured the flying sword to fly straight toward Nash and Kenneth. The flying sword stopped right in front of them.

“Get onto the sword!”

Jack commanded in a deep voice, his face turned expressionless.

Nash and Kenneth looked at each other, and they used all their strength to get up and hop onto the flying sword. Then, with the slightest movement of Jack’s hand, the flying sword flew upward and further away from him. The flying sword finally stopped after it was a considerable distance away from the battle scene.

“Oh, brat, you’re sending them far away so that we can’t attack them while fighting with you, right? Heh! You’re quite filial, aren’t you?” The old crone said in an icy tone. She studied Jack’s action and immediately understood his intentions. “But, even if you send them far away, it’d be pointless. The flying sword recognizes you as its master and not the other two; they can’t control the flying sword. So if you die, they can’t escape either! Moreover, you have now lost a premium spiritual weapon, your combat prowess will be weakened. In that case, I don’t see how you can beat the four of us!” she added coldly.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1489-1491

Chapter 1489

Another old man, on the other hand, laughed at the situation. “Hahaha! His action is tantamount to committing suicide, right? Initially, he had a chance to escape, but now there is no chance anymore! Let’s join hands to kill him! By the time he dies, Nash and Kenneth won’t be able to

Escape as well!”

In the distance, Nash, and Kenneth, who was standing on the flying sword, each took a healing pill. Then they sat on the sword and rested. Their expression turned solemn as they looked in the direction where Jack and the other four

Were at.

“Master Nash, why did Young Master Jack do this? Isn’t this seeking death? In that case, there’s not even the slightest chance of victory!”

Kenneth’s face turned unsightly as he sighed again,” Young Master Jack, he’s too reckless this time!”

A gloomy face was on Nash as well. After giving the matter some thought, he then expressed his analysis,” Although I don’t know why Jack wants to guarantee our safety first but I believe in him. Perhaps, he has some tricks up his sleeve that….”

When Nash was expressing his point of view, his voice got softer and softer; apparently, he was not too convinced of his own words either, even he felt that there was absolutely no chance for Jack to win. Other than flying swords, what else did Jack have?

“You’re forcing me to the corner, I have no other choice but to fight!”

Jack clenched his fists, soon his body shook violently, a powerful force swept the space. “I train True

Dragon technique hard, and after breaking through to the true god realm, I can actually transform into a real dragon. However, I have not tried it yet. Today, I'll let you see what I truly am capable of!"

Just as his last word dropped, h e roared, emitting a terrifying sound of a dragon's roar.

A ray of green light flashed before everyone, and Jack who initially was human turned into a huge real dragon, a green dragon that was hundreds of feet long.

"Mas-master! My eyes are functioning well, right? Am I seeing wrongly? What kind of technique did Young Master Jack use to train? Does it actually transform Young Master Jack into a dragon? That is a real dragon!"

Far from the battle, in the distance, Kenneth shouted in a trembling yet excited voice. He could not help but keep rubbing his eyes, just to make sure he was not hallucinating.

"Hmmm. I think he…he mentioned the True Dragon technique just now!"

Similar to Kenneth, Nash was shocked down to the soles of his shoes. That was his first time seeing a dragon, and the most incredible part was that the dragon was Jack! Jack transformed into a real dragon!

After he thought about it, he could not help but become worried. "Jack has transformed into a dragon, but I don't know what strength and combat power it has.

What's more concerning is, his transformation is not some kind of horrible voodoo art, right? I don't know if there'll b e any backlash from this transformation!"

Kenneth's heart immediately got worried upon hearing Nash's words. He was afraid that Jack had to pay a price to perform this transformation technique.

“What-what the heck? This is not real, right?”

Looking at the green dragon that emitted mighty dragon aura and power in front of them, the four elders who surrounded Jack earlier on, flew backward unconsciously t o distance themselves from the dragon. They were in a complete state of shock and surprise; was it their first time witnessing such a thing.

“Playing the devil? Guys, don’t be afraid! This brat is just playing some dirty tricks in hopes of scaring us away! I don’t believe that he can increase his combat power this much after the battle with Elder Lake and Elder Shaw!”

One of the four-an old man clutched the sword in his grip a s he shouted. “No matter what you are, God, Buddha, Jesus, or even a dragon, I will end your life! If we join forces, we can behead it!” the old man pointed his sword toward Jack.

“He’s right! Let’s kill it together! There’s nothing to be afraid of!”

Another man chimed in and concurred with the old man, at the same time, cheering for himself. After all, the dragon emitted a humongous dragon aura as though it was the mightiest creature on the earth, not allowing the mere mortal to desecrate it, gave the four of them a strong sense of oppression.

Chapter 1490

“Roar!”

Jack-who had now transformed into a green dragon-performed the moves of the technique for the first time. After the transformation, he could instantly feel the increase of power and strength inside his body; both the thickness and richness of his overall strength were enhanced tremendously.

On top of that, his body was way more powerful and robust than before; he believed that his attack resistance had improved immensely as well.

Nonetheless, the only thing that worried him was that his body was indeed bigger and stronger now, but his speed and agility would be compromised-he would not b e as fast as before.

“Kill him!”

The old lady shouted huffily, and she, who had already injected her Chi energy into her sword, swung her arm, sending out two consecutive sword attacks toward Jack.

Roar!

The green dragon once again let out a deafening roar after seeing the old lady’s attack and directly charged at the old crone.

“Kill him now!”

The other three immediately waved their swords to join the battle, casting out several sword auras toward the gigantic green dragon-Jack.

Jack did not care about those sword auras at all; he continued to storm toward the old lady.

Boom! Boom!

The two sword auras that the old lady cast out were destroyed by Jack in a blink of an eye, leaving only two teeny tiny cut marks on top of Jack’s head.

“What the hell? My attacks only cause two small cuts?”

The old woman stared at the damage she had done on Jack, her face blanched as though all colors leached from her face. Her attacks were of high quality and full power; she truly did not expect that her attacks did not leave any serious injuries on Jack's body. The skin of the green dragon was thick and impenetrable, the overall strength and build were way too remarkable.

Jack did not flinch in the slightest, he continued storming toward the old woman.

Boom! Bang! Boom!

The attacks from the other three had finally landed on Jack's body, however, the attacks caused only a few small gouges; the wounds seemed to be nothing at all for the green dragon who had a huge body.

"No!"

When the old woman saw that the green dragon did not flinch in the slightest, and received the three's attacks head-on, she shrieked hysterically, and white color crept up her face. Terror twisted in her gut. She was then blasted away by the impact of the green dragon's head.

"Pfft!"

A mouthful of fresh and bright red blood spurted out from the old crone; she flew backward intensely for several meters like a kite with a broken string before she was able to stabilize herself.

"Pfft!"

Another mouthful of blood gushed out of her mouth, her face became even more unsightly and pale. The blow from Jack just now did cause her some serious injuries.

“What a powerful physique!”

One of the other three-the old man-tried his best to fight a rising panic in him after seeing the scene before him. This, all o f this, was way beyond their imagination!

“This is too scary! This brat truly has the power of a dragon after transforming into one!”

Another one of the other three – the middle-aged man-who stood next to the old man gasped at the situation. He then sent out a few more sword auras, hoping to hurt the dragon, but the attacks only left several shallow slashes on the green dragon’s body.

Roar!

Although Jack’s body had become strong, the attacks still caused him pain. Jack immediately changed his strategy by swinging his big dragon tail, swiping side to side.

“Dodge it!”

The old man and the middle-aged man exchanged glances and both of them were frightened to the bottom of their hearts. The impact of the swiping tail would not be less powerful than the impact just now.

The two men immediately stomped and hopped upward, preparing to fly further away. However, the speed of the green dragon was too fast, the tail came straight over and smacked the two men, sending them backward far away.

Bang! Bang!

Chapter 1491

Two dull thuds rang out; the two men were jerked a few meters away, each of them spurting out a mouthful of blood and sustaining injuries.

Roar!

The green dragon, however, did not cease his attack for a moment. Jack swung his body, and he flew up to the sky, going for another dive. He then bolted downward in the direction of the other man who was still casting Chi attacks at him.

After knowing that the other three were injured, this man here performed a few more random attacks but not much effect and damage were left on Jack's body.

The green dragon sprinted straight toward him at full speed and strength, blanching his face white, and he quickly ran in the direction of the old crone and the other two men." Everyone, quick! Attack it! Quickly…" He ran as he spoke.

Roar!

Although at the peak stage of the true god realm, were so vulnerable under the tremendous power of that dragon claw.

"This is too much! All three of u s are severely injured, we're not his opponent! Run while w e can! This beast is overwhelmingly powerful!"

"You're right. The four of us were not even his opponent, not to mention there's only three of us left and injured at that. We certainly can't beat him!"

The old lady and old man yelled. They underwent a lot of work and challenges to reach who they are today, naturally, they did not want to die. It was the first time they felt the threat of death. Fear pulsed through them, and all colors drained from their faces.

“What angers me is that his body is too hard and impenetrable. Although our attacks could hurt him, he can completely resist them!”

The middle-aged man dispatched another sword chop toward the dragon, and finally, the attack left a nice sword scar on the dragon’s body where blood flowed out.

Roar!

However, the attack did not cause any severe nor substantial damage to Jack – who had transformed into a green dragon, but instead it angered him.

With a deafening roar, he made a fierce acceleration and headed straight for the middle-aged man.

“Run, run!”

The middle-aged man shouted in terror. He looked up to the sky, the dragon claw was right above him; he panicked and quickly flashed to the side, barely dodging the dragon claw.

Nonetheless, the green dragon charged again and aimed at the middle-aged man, attempting t o grab the man.

“No!”

This time, the middle-aged man was not so lucky anymore. He was caught by the sharp dragon claws, and just like the guy before, he was squeezed into meat paste.

In the distance, Nash and Kenneth, who were resting on the flying sword, had been completely

dumbfounded at the situation. Jack, who had transformed into a green dragon, his attack and strength were too dominating and overpowering. Although Jack was fighting for his life, he managed to kill two powerhouses who were at the peak stage of the true god realm in such a short time, That was something they did not even dare to dream about before.

Together with Elder Shaw and Elder Lake, there were four who had been killed by Jack!

The old woman and the old man, who were fast, both fled separately in different directions.

Roar!

Nevertheless, what they did not expect was for the green dragon to spit out two enormous fireballs from its mouth, directed toward the two, burning them to death.

“Oh, my freaking goodness! Master, he is too strong! This technique of Young Master Jack was insanely strong!”

The First Elder swallowed hard at the scene. He thought he was dead, but to his surprise, after Jack performed the True Dragon technique, he actually turned the tide of battle so quickly. And by himself, he killed six of the elite fighters whose martial art levels were a t the peak of the true god realm!

Roar!

The green dragon flew and ceased in front of Nash and Kenneth. In a flash of green light, the green dragon disappeared, and Jack appeared, his face was a little pale and his forehead was covered with cold sweat.

“Pfft!”

A mouthful of blood gushed out from Jack and he almost fainted.

Nonetheless, he immediately controlled the flying sword, flew to the woods, only then sat down to rest. He flipped his palm and a healing pill appeared, he then put it into his mouth and swallowed it down.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1492-1494

Chapter 1492

“Young Master Jack, are you alright? How are your injuries? Is it serious?”

Seeing Jack in such a state, Kenneth was a little worried in his heart, fearing that Jack had sustained severe injuries.

“I’m all right. The humandragon transformation technique could only be performed when I reach the true god realm, and I am barely able to do it. The good side of this technique is that the overall combat power and strength can be increased a lot, but the downside is that it consumes too much Chi energy!”

Jack showed a small bitter smile before explaining, “I need to replenish my Chi energy now. Let’s rest for an hour or two!”

“It’s good that you’re fine. I’m glad!”

Nash and Kenneth immediately breathed out a huge sigh of relief upon hearing that Jack was all well. The heavy boulder in their hearts was finally lifted away.

After resting for a while, everyone’s injuries had gotten better, and Jack’s Chi energy had gradually recovered over time. Hence, he returned to the battlefield and collected the martial rings and weapons of the six dead people.

After all, these six people were all strong martial artists at the peak of the true god realm, since they were elders from the Skies Pavilion, thus their martial rings must be kept with a lot of treasures and even their swords were of top-notch quality.

“Look, Father, we have four swords here and all of them are upper-grade spiritual weapons! Haha! This time you get to use upper-grade spiritual weapons too! That’s amazing!”

Jack handed the swords over t o Nash and then continued,” There are a lot of spirited grasses and stones inside their martial rings, and even some pills! What a great earning!”

Jack’s happiness had cheered the others up; Nash, who had just gone through a hellish near-death experience, patted Jack’s shoulder with a relieved expression. “Silly boy, it doesn’t matter if it’s an upper grade sword or what, the most important thing is that you’re fine.” Nash then added in a worried tone, “When you transformed into a dragon, I thought you would be like the young master from the Hunt family who took the pill and pursued after you; I afraid that you’d get devoured by the technique! But it looks like you didn’t suffer from any side effects, that’s great!”

Jack harnessed the flying sword, slowly flying in the direction of the White family. “Father, I have several of the pills that Cloud had taken last time. This pill has a strong side effect, devouring the Chi energy of the consumer after its effect is over, but overall, the combat power will be greatly enhanced with the pill. So, in this case as a last resort, perhaps these pills can save lives! So it’s still quite useful!”

Nash nodded in approval,” Yes, if the opponent has a higher martial level and combat prowess, in facing death, it’s always better to regress the martial level rather than dying!”

“Young Master Jack, why do I still feel like the battle just now was a dream? You actually transformed into a dragon! How cool was that! That’s too amazing! And those six fighters of the peak stage of the true god realm were killed just like that, not to mention they were killed by you, alone! My goodness! Your fighting power I s overwhelmingly strong, isn’t it?”

Kenneth was still recalling the after effects of the battle just now. It was a total shock and surprise to him.

“Hehe, I did not expect that I could actually have such strong combat power in this form as well. This is also why I acquired and trained hard for this technique, just that I haven’t been using it.”

Jack laughed warmly then continued, “Unfortunately, my current martial level is still too low. If I were to break through t o the ultimate god realm, I believe that I would be able to maintain this form for a longer time. Because by that time, I would have more Chi energy in my body to perform this technique!” Jack paused before continuing, “If the four of them had held on for a little longer, I’m afraid that the Chi energy in my body would be completely used up. In other words, the current Jack is still not ready to use that kind of technique to fight for a long period of time!”

“Haha! The transformation just now was already powerful enough to kill all those four elite fighters in such a short time. If you truly maintained this form for a longer time, then the earth would be destroyed!”

Kenneth burst out in laughter after hearing it.

“Now, even if it’s the Hunt family, we don’t have to be afraid anymore. But, the fact that Jack has acquired this technique must be kept only between the three of us now. It’s better not to spread the news or even use the technique unless the situation is critical!”

Chapter 1493

After giving the matter some thoughts, Nash then expressed with a smile.

“Tsk, I bet this time the people of the Skies Pavilion would cry t o death. Six of their fighters of the peak stage of true god status had all died at once. This is a big loss for them! Initially, the four ancient clans could be said to have equivalent power and strength, but now Skies Pavilion could only be the youngest brother’ in front of the other three ancient clans!”

Kenneth was somewhat excited at the thought of what kind of reaction and expression the master of Skies Pavilion – Joel Collins-would have when he found out that six of his elite fighters had died.

“I’m not interested in how Joel would react, instead, I’m more keen to know how Lily would react after she finds out about this!”

Nash smiled along. “Perhaps, they wouldn’t even think of us as the killers, and they might even think that it was done by people from the other three ancient clans!”

“Right. They definitely wouldn’t have expected that the three of us could kill six of their elite fighters!”

Kenneth nodded in agreement.

Although he had not recovered from his injuries, he was happy that he was avenged.

After flying for less than an hour, the White residence finally appeared in the sight of Jack and the others.

Selena knew that Jack and others would return on that day, so she intentionally skipped her training. She waited patiently at the entrance of the courtyard early in the morning and from time t o time she peeked at the distance, worrying about Jack and the others.

After all, she has heard of the four ancient clans and how none of the reclusive families had the power to fight them.

Soon, Jack and the others appeared in her sight.

“Jack! You guys are back! I’m s o happy that you are back!”

After the three figures entered Selena’s range of sight, she left out a huge sigh of relief.

The flying sword soon halted a little above the ground of the courtyard, and the three hopped down. Jack then flipped his palm to put the flying sword away, keeping it in his martial ring.

“Are you injured? Is everything okay? Is it serious?”

Selena noticed the bloodstains on their clothes and sleeves, and she was worried. It looked like they had undergone a tough fight and were probably ambushed on the way back.

They probably had to use Jack’s flying sword to escape from the attack and flee the scene.

“Dear, don’t worry. It’s not serious at all. We have taken the healing pills, just need to rest for a little while, then we’ll be fine!”

Jack smiled faintly and said to Selena, trying to comfort her.

“Mistress Selena, you know what? Young Master Jack was so hell of amazing that he killed six strong people who were at the peak of the true god realm! Alone! Oh my goodness, this is my first time seeing such a domineering and powerful strength!”

Kenneth was still excited from what he witnessed from the fight. He admired Jack to the bottom of his heart. Jack was so young, yet he had such exceptional fighting power. If h e could really break through to the ultimate god realm, would not he be the best in the world then?

Chapter 1494

“What? You killed six elite fighters of the peak stage of the true god realm alone?”

Selena gasped at the newly learned news, wondering if she had heard wrongly. Her husband Jack, did he not just break through to the late stage of the true god realm recently? How could he be able to kill six

elite fighters by himself?

“Don’t listen to the First Elder, he’s spewing nonsense! If it wasn’t for him and father helping to hold up the other four, how could I have killed six by myself?”

Jack replied with tears and laughter. How could he have imagined that this First Elder exaggerated the situation to such an extent?

“That’s also very powerful!”

Selena stood frozen and finally smiled at Jack. “Well, get some rest first. Take a bath and change your clothes. Look at your body, it’s covered with blood!”

“Alright then, we shall not disturb the two of them, let’s leave! Have a good rest for the coming days and we’ll have to leave again in another ten days!”

Nash smiled and left with Kenneth.

Jack then quickly went into the house, took a warm bath, changed his clothes, laid on the bed, and had a good nap.

The morning incident made him physically exhausted and worn out, the kind of exhaustion he had not experienced for a long time.

When he woke up, the sky outside had already turned dark, while Selena was sitting by his side, looking at him with a gentle smile on her face.

“What? It’s already dark outside? I took such a long nap!”

Jack chortled and sat upon the bed, feeling that the wounds his body had completely healed.

He gazed around the house before asking, “By the way, Dear, where’s Kylie?”

“Kylie? She’s playing in the courtyard! Little Kylie knows that you’re back, her spirits are flying high that she could barely conceal her happiness! She wants you to take her around!”

Selena beamed in return. “But you’re resting, so I told her to play in the courtyard and don’t disturb you.”

“Hahaha! My silly little Kylie. Alright! Let’s go strode around the town below the mountain and have a wonderful meal together!”

Jack giggled, got off the bed, and held Selena’s hand before the two left the house.

“Dear, your fighting prowess is so amazing! If you breakthrough to the peak of the true god realm, then you truly don’t have to be afraid of those four ancient clans anymore!”

Selena could not hold back but praise Jack when the two of them walked out of the house t o the courtyard.

“That won’t work. There are too many of them, if they join forces together and surround m e, I won’t be able to defeat them!”

Jack laughed as the two arrived at the courtyard.

“Daddy!”

As soon as Jack entered Kylie's range of sight, she darted over, jumped up, and wrapped her arms around Jack's neck.“ Daddy, you woke up from your nap!”

Jack hugged and held Kylie.” Kylie, I heard your mommy said that you want me to take you to town to have some fun? Let's go now and we'll have nice food!” he smiled at his cute daughter.

“Yay! We can go down and have fun! I'm happy!”

Kylie's big eyes twinkled and shined bright like a diamond upon hearing Jack's proposal. Her excitement and joy unfolded like flowers in spring.

“Daddy, can you use the flying sword to carry me and mommy down to the town? Mommy and I haven't ridden on your flying sword before.”

Suddenly, Kylie spewed such a request. She looked at Jack with expectant eyes and a pleading expression.

“Hahaha! Alright! Sure!”

Jack chortled aloud. He then took his flying sword out and threw it in front of them. The flying sword grew in size in an instant; Jack then held both Kylie and Selena in his arms and hopped onto the sword together.

Swoosh!

The flying sword flew slowly, gliding across the sky. “Let's fly a little longer and farther and then we'll come back later!”

Jack put Kylie down and sat her on the top of the flying sword as well.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1495-1497

Chapter 1495

“Wow! This is so cool! I finally rode on a flying sword!”

Kylie, who was now sitting on the flying sword, gazing at the ten thousand lights below; she could not help but exclaim aloud, her tone full of excitement.

The next morning, Lily was impatient in her adobe, wondering why all six elders had not returned yet.

“Honey, why haven’t the six of them returned yet? Based on the plan, they should have been back this morning, right? But it’s already noon now, yet no one is back!”

Lily approached Joel and doubted, frowning.

“Heh, what’s the hurry? It’s not a problem at all for the six o f them to kill those three maggots! They must have found a place to drink and celebrate after winning the battle. Don’t worry! They’ll definitely be back by afternoon!”

Joel shrugged and grinned nonchalantly, not the least bit worried about what would happen to the six elders he sent.

However, in the afternoon, Joel had grown a little worried when none of the six elders had yet to return

Joel then immediately dispatched a group of men to look for the six of them in all possible locations, including the area and the route toward the direction of the White residence. He believed that as long as there was a fight, there must be signs of it.

It was not until the next day at noon when those scouts, who had been sent out, returned to Skies Pavilion.

“Master, Master! We have bad news!”

Just as they arrived at the entrance of the pavilion, one of the old men exclaimed aloud.

Joel and Lily–who were sitting inside the main hall—had their brows puckered together when they heard of the noise.

The old man, together with his men, quickly rushed into the hall and kneeled before Joel.“ Master, something bad has happened!”

“What’s the matter?”

Joel immediately responded; h e was worried sick.

“They…they’re all dead!”

The old man held his breath, and after a while only did he spew these few words.

“All dead? That’s great news! All three White are all dead? Hahaha! That’s amazing!”

When Lily heard this, she laughed uncontrollably as though she was on a certain stimulant drug.

Nonetheless, just as she finished her words, she reacted again. “No, wait! What’s so bad about it? You

can’t possibly say that it’s all our people who are dead, right?”

Another middle-aged man then nodded gloomily. “Yes, Madam. All six elders are dead, and we couldn’t find the bodies of those three White family members!”

“No way! It’s impossible! How I s this possible? Absolutely ridiculous!”

Lily simply did not want to true god realm!”

Joel, on the other hand, was unable to register the fact as well. To him, it felt like it was not the truth.

“Master, it’s indeed the case. All six of them are dead!”

The old man sighed, “Sigh! And some of them died in a very tragic and miserable…”

“Tragic and miserable?”

Joel frowned and looked at the old man.

“Yes, Master. The bodies seem to have been crushed by some intense beast claws. They seem to be sharp, incredibly sharp claws!”

The old man then continued,“ We too feel strange about that. The injuries on their bodies do not seem like they were caused by a human!”

“Why is there nobody from the White family at all? How is that possible? Or could it be that the six elders did not even have the chance to meet the White before they got killed by some demonic beast?”

Joel thought for a while before guessing uncertainly.

Chapter 1496

“Master, we’re not sure about this. After all, we did not witness it. The area is surrounded by nothing but forests, and there’s hardly anyone around, that’s why there’s no way to investigate what actually happened!”

The old man gave a bitter smile, his expression hapless.” This means that the place that the six of them chose was truly suitable to trap and kill Nash White and the others. But as to why ferocious beasts suddenly appeared and killed the six of them, there is no clue!”

Here, the old man paused for a while before continuing, “Oh, right. We can’t tell much from the damage at the scene since most of the battle probably took place in the sky.”

“What kind of beasts could it b e, to be able to kill the six of them? Even if these beasts are a t the peak of their true god status, surely they would also have difficulty killing all six of them. Even if my men couldn’t defeat the beasts, some of them could have escaped if one or two held the beasts off, right? This means that the beasts are far more powerful than them!”

Joel’s face had taken on a deathly pallor. His six fighters had died just like that. With that, the Pavilion of Skies would be weakest among the Four Ancient Clans.

“The White family definitely did not kill them. They do not have the ability. It’s not them!”

Lily’s face had also turned pale. She sat to the side disappointed, and she seemed t o be slightly stupefied. “We can only admit that they were lucky today. Before the six Elders could reach the ambush point, they must have run into the ferocious beasts and were killed!”

The more Joel thought about it, the angrier he got. He looked at Lily impatiently. “It’s all your fault. If

you weren't in such a rush to kill them, our six Elders wouldn't have died," he said." I wanted to take them down in the danger zones. Now we've suffered a great loss!"

Lily was angry as well. "How can you pin all the blame on me? You agreed to this too. Besides, this was an accident. Who knows where such ferocious beasts came from?" she told Joel, huffing. "Besides, if we only act when they're in the Seven Dangers, how would you know which section of the Seven Dangers they're in? The place is huge. It would be difficult to find them!"

Joel clenched his fists. After a while, he looked at the old man with confusion. "There's something wrong. If there were beasts, why are all the bodies still around? Don't tell m e that these beasts don't like eating humans?"

Lily also came to her senses. If beasts had truly killed the Elders, they would not have just left the corpses there. Logically speaking, even if not all the bodies were consumed, a t least a few would have been eaten.

She suddenly thought of something, and asked the old man, "Right. Where are their martial rings? And their weapons? Are they there?"

The old man shook his head." We tried searching for them, but found nothing!"

"It must have been taken by humans. It's likely that they were not killed by beasts!"

Lily was shocked. "But if it was not the beasts that did it, why are there claw marks and signs of maiming? If it was humans, why would they attack like that? But if it wasn't done by humans, why are their martial rings gone?"

The old man gave a bitter smile. "There's an explanation for that. I think the Elders must have run into the fearsome monsters first, and they were killed. Later, the three men from the White family saw them while they were passing b y, and took their martial rings and other items! It must have happened like that. Only this can explain everything!"

“F*ck. If that’s the case, not only have our men failed to kill those three, they even gave them plenty of treasures!”

Joel was so angry that he clenched his fists. His expression was a deathly sight.

Chapter 1497

“More importantly, if the three men from the White family saw their bodies, they would probably have guessed that I sent people to ambush them. If that’s the case, they will definitely be on their guard from now on!”

The old man added after thinking about it.

“All right. It must have been difficult for all of you. Head offt o rest first!”

Joel waved his hand, signaling for everyone to go down.

“Ah, this loss is too great. With this, we will not be able to lift our chins before the other three Ancient Clans!”

Joel heaved a sigh only after all the people had left. He looked a t Lily, and regret tinged his heart. She was beautiful, but it was a pity that his pavilion had suffered great losses because o f her.

At last, Joel sat to the side.“ Thank goodness there are still plenty of people at the advanced stage of the true god realm in our pavilion,” he said.

“They’ve been training hard lately. It’ll be good if one or two of them are able to make a breakthrough.”

Time passed by quickly. The days trickled past.

Eight days before they were to head out for the Cabello family, a man suddenly rushed out and stood in the air, laughing.” Haha. This is great. I broke through. I finally made a breakthrough!”

This voice caused excitement among many who were familiar with him. They all ran out immediately.

After Jack heard this, he was excited as well. He instantly flew out of the garden. “Not bad, Third Elder. Haha. You’re finally at the peak of the true god realm,” he said. “In a short span of time, the White family has gained another powerful fighter!”

Lancelot’s expression was brimming with exhilaration. H e immediately smiled at Jack.” Ah. Thank goodness you gave me two pills. I actually didn’t have much confidence, so I didn’t expect to actually succeed. Although I took some time to make a breakthrough, I did it anyway. I spent so much time on this small breakthrough. Ah. It’s fine as long as I succeed!”

“Haha. Congratulations!”

Plenty of Elders and Patronums also flew over, admiration written over their faces.

“This is great. We now have at least three fighters who are at the peak of the true god status. Haha. With Young Master Jack’s fighting power, we don’t have to fear the Hunt family at all!”

Titus also laughed. Although news of how Jack had killed six fighters in the true god realm by himself had not spread, everyone of the high ranked members of the White family and their elders knew. This gave the White family’s Elders confidence. They all felt that the White family was actually as strong as the Four Ancient Clans.

If they did not take their entire population into account, with the fact that they had fewer fighters in the true god realm, and that their lineage did not extend that far into history, they could probably contend

with the Four Ancient Clans.

“Haha. This is great. I broke through. I broke through!”

No one expected to have another old man rush out from the house at this moment, crying out.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1498-1500

Chapter 1498

“No way. The Second Elder also broke through?”

Everyone took a sharp intake of breath when they recognized the person who rushed out. What on earth was going on that very day? Two Elders at the late stage of the true god status suddenly broke into the peak in rapid succession. Now, as there was still no way to break into the ultimate god status, the peak of the true god status was the highest cultivation level.

“Amazing!”

Some people at the intermediate stage of the true god status admired them. Those who had reached the peak of the true god realm were god-like figures to them.

“You broke through as well?”

The Second Elder saw Lancelot and was stunned for a moment. He suddenly came to his senses.

“Haha. I was faster by one or two minutes. You came out right after I did!”

Lancelot said, laughing.

“This is great. Haha. This is fantastic! I didn’t think that the two of us would make a breakthrough. If this is the case, why should we be afraid of anyone? We don’t need to fear the Hunt family anymore. Haha!”

The Second Elder, Weston, laughed in elation. In a flash, they had two more fighters at the peak of the true god’s status. The White family’s overall fighting power was now increased by a significant chunk!

“Haha. There’s still some good news I haven’t told you yet. I’ll tell you personally later!”

The First Elder, Kenneth, burst into laughter, speaking with a mysterious expression.

“What news? My goodness, what happened while we were holding ourselves up? This is great!”

Lancelot grew even more excited when he heard this.

“Hehe. I will tell you two later. There are too many people here. We are trying to keep this information a secret for now. After all, we might attract unwanted attention!”

Kenneth chuckled, and his words made the Second Elder and the Third Elder even more curious.

“Oh, right. I have good news to tell everyone!”

No one expected that at this moment that Jack would look a t the crowd, smiling as he made an announcement.

“Young Master, you have good news as well? This is great!”

Kenneth and the others were stunned. They all stared at Jack.

“That’s right. I’ve been trying t o make second-grade intermediate pills these few days, and I finally succeeded two days before!”

Jack gave a wan smile before speaking slowly.

“My God. Really? This is great. Young Master Jack, if that’s the case, you’re now a secondgrade intermediate alchemist!”

Titus was excited. He took two steps forward and spoke to Jack, “Young Master Jack, do you know what this means?”

“What does it mean?”

Jack frowned. He thought that everybody was celebrating a little too much.

He knew that everyone would b e happy once he announced this. But judging from their gazes, they seemed to be far more excited than he had predicted.

Chapter 1499

“Haha. You still don’t know what this means, young man? I t means that you are the top alchemist now!”

Titus laughed and said.

The First Elder saw that Jack

Did not seem to comprehend the situation and explained," Before, the only people capable of alchemy were Second Young Master Hunt and the First Elder of the Cabello people. We had admired them for a long time, and when we heard that you practiced alchemy as well, we were already overjoyed. After the Second Young Master Hunt died, only you and the First Elder of the Cabello family are the only practicing alchemists left!"

Here, the First Elder paused for a while before continuing," The First Elder of the Cabello family is a second-grade elementary alchemist. That is impressive enough, but you're now a second-grade intermediate alchemist. Tell m e, aren't you the greatest alchemist now?"

"No way. I thought that the Cabello family's First Elder was at a very high level!"

After Jack heard this, he did not know whether to laugh or cry. If he went by the First Elder's words, it was as though he was truly the strongest alchemist out there.

"How high can you go? All the previous alchemists never had masters to teach them. They all practiced and researched the techniques themselves. And after they master an alchemy method, they test it repeatedly. Besides, only those who have Chi and are born with the fire element can be an alchemist. Any other individual would have zero chance of doing so!"

"Oh, right. And I think your spirit and focus must far exceed those of a similar cultivation level only then can you perform alchemy!"

Titus also added a sentence, smiling mirthlessly.

"Oh, right. Who are those who managed to train until they're a t the intermediate stage of the true god status? Come forth!"

Jack asked after thinking about it.

“I’ve been at the intermediate stage of true god status for a while now!”

After Yolanda pondered for a while, she stepped forward. She could not bear to carry out the assassination task that Lily had assigned her before, so she launched a surprise attack on Dean to help Jack.

Now she thought that she had made the correct choice. With the White family’s progress now, the Hunt family and the others were all left in the dust. Besides, the White family had great potential. Now they are beginning to pay attention to the branch families’ progress. The branch family members all obeyed and revered Jack, and their young geniuses had been training even harder lately. Since then, there were quite a few exceptional talents who had sprouted.

A few other White family members at the intermediate stage of the true god status also stood up.

“Seven people? Good!”

Jack waved his hand, and seven second-grade intermediate pills flew over and floated before them. “Now we lack people at the advanced stage of true god status. This status is very important, so I’ll give each of you a secondgrade intermediate pill. I hope that all of you will be able to make a breakthrough in due time, and I hope that you do not disappoint me!”

After Jack thought about it, he reminded them, “Oh, right. For those of you who have just broken into the intermediate stage, no need to rush. We aren’t in a hurry for now. Once your power has stabilized and you can make a breakthrough, you can use this pill to aid you!”

Yolanda’s eyes reddened. She took the pill before her, looking at Jack excitedly. “Young Master Jack, my-my surname is Lagorio. Are you sure you want to give such a precious thing to me?”

Jack looked at her and replied, smiling, “Hehe. For those of you who stayed behind and voluntarily remained with the White family, I trust all of you. I believe that you stand with us.”

“Thank you. Thank you, Young Master Jack!”

Yolanda carefully kept the pill, preparing herself to try and make a breakthrough in two days.

Jack suddenly saw another old man in the crowd. He clearly recalled that his name was Xavier Lagorio. He had been the one to send Lily back to the Lagorio family after she lost her power.

After sending Lily back, he still chose to return to the White family. This was enough to discern his loyalty “Xavier. Come over here!”

After Jack thought about it, he waved his hand at the old man.

“Me?”

Xavier was stunned for a moment before he flew over.” Young Master, what is the matter?”

Chapter 1500

Frankly speaking, Xavier was worried.

After all, when Lily’s power had been stripped away, he was worried that she would be killed by someone on the road, or she would have an accident. That was why he sent her off.

Along the way, he occasionally tried to talk some sense into Lily, hoping that she would not harbor a grudge against the White family. He told her that she had done wrong, and hoped that the two families would leave it at that.

However, Lily did not say a single word. She soaked in her sorrow, and he did not know if his words had any effect on. Lily.

Now though, it seemed that not only had Lily not taken his words into heart, she hated the White family so much that she wanted to kill them all.

He felt helpless. He knew that Nash was a good man, but he was afraid that the White family members would not be happy with him. After all, he had accompanied Lily back home.

However, after he returned, he realized something, that the White family members did not seem to hold a grudge against him because of this. They gave the martial resources he needed, and he was now a Patronum. He also broke into the beginning stage of the true god status a month ago.

Jack looked at him and said," Right. Patronum Xavier. What cultivation level are you at now?"

"Oh. I'm at the beginning stage of true god status now. It is because of the White family's generosity and blessings that I was able to make the breakthrough a month ago!"

Xavier nodded his head and spoke earnestly.

Jack flipped his palm and took out a second-grade elementary pill, thrusting it toward the old man. "I'll give you a secondgrade elementary pill. I hope this will help you to make more breakthroughs. I heard that you made great contributionst o the White family before. This is your reward!"

When Xavier heard this, his nose reddened, and his eyes burned.

He had been afraid that because he was a Lagorio, and that he had sent Lily back, Jack and the others would treat him differently. He did not think that Jack would actually give him a pill.

“It was only right of me to do s o. In the White family, your father treated me kindly. He even saved my life before. I do not know how I could ever repay you!”

Xavier did not take the pill that Jack thrust toward him. Instead, he tried to decline the gift politely.

“Just take it. If you break into the peak of true god status, that’s the best possible repayment toward the White family!”

Jack smiled and stuffed the pill into the old man’s grip.

“Ah. I do want to break into the peak of the true god’s status, but I’m afraid that I will not have a chance in this lifetime. I am getting older, and I do not know how long I have left to live. I do not have great talent. I f you give me this pill, I’m afraid that I will waste it if I fail to make a breakthrough!”

Xavier heaved a sigh. He was now over seventy years old. He was already satisfied that he managed to break into the beginning stage of the true god status. He did not think that Jack would actually waste such a precious pill on an old geezer like him.

“Don’t worry. It won’t be a problem so long as you’re willing to work hard. If you truly fail to make a breakthrough with this pill, I’ll give you another, and another. Until you break into the intermediate stage of the true god status. Then, the peak of the true god’s status. I believe in you!”

Jack patted his shoulder and smiled. “I believe that we’ll be able to find a way to break into the ultimate god status. Then, the elderly like you will have something to look forward to. If you can break into the ultimate god status, what are you afraid of if you have two hundred years to live?”

“Hehe. I don’t dare to hope for too much!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1501-1503

Chapter 1501

Xavier gave a bitter smile. He was well aware of the extent of his talent and thought that he did not have much hope during his current lifetime. Besides,

Even if Jack was an alchemist,

He could not bear to waste his given pills.

“Every person should have goals. Otherwise, what difference would there be between us and salted fish? Don’t you think so, everyone?”

Jack looked at the crowd, speaking while chuckling.

“Yes. Haha!”

Everyone laughed. All of their futures were full of hope.

“You’ve given the pills to everyone. Now, what are you going to use to cultivate yourself? Didn’t you say that you were going to break into the peak of the true god status before going to the Cabello family’s estate?”

Nash looked at Jack and smiled bitterly.

“Don’t worry, Dad. I have a bit of time, no? I’ll create a few more pills today and tomorrow. Then I’ll try

to make a breakthrough. I've decided that it's fine even if I fail this time. I can try again next time!"

Jack gave a wan smile and asked everyone again, "Oh, right. I don't think there's any more news, right? If there isn't, everybody should work hard with the remaining time w e have. For those who can break into another level, quickly make your breakthroughs. The danger zones are extremely dangerous. All those who are in the true god realm must go except for two or three who will remain behind to look after the White family."

"Don't worry, Young Master. We'll definitely work hard to cultivate ourselves!"

Yolanda and the others answered excitedly.

After everyone dissipated, Jack accompanied his wife and child for the afternoon. At night, he finally began to quiet himself down to create pills.

Before, he had obtained plenty of martial resources and alchemy materials from the competition. Then, he killed the six elders from the Skies Pavilion, and he obtained even more goodies. That was why Jack had picked out plenty of alchemy resources to put into his martial ring. If he were not pressed for time, he could create even more pills, helping everyone to cultivate themselves.

"It's a pity that there are too few alchemists in the White family. The alchemists that the First Elder spoke of are those outside the Four Ancient Clans. After all, we don't usually interact with the Four Ancient Clans and don't bring them up in our conversations.

"There must be quite a few alchemists among the Four Ancient Clans!"

Jack thought about it and muttered to himself, then he took out a bunch of secondgrade intermediate alchemy materials and started to create the pills.

He worked for three straight days to create over ten secondgrade intermediate pills. The more familiar

one was with creating pills, the higher the success rate of creating them.

However, Jack still felt hapless. He was aware that the alchemy methods he knew were few. He only had two methods to create secondgrade intermediate pills. He has been using the same method and did not have the time to try and practice the other method. After all, it was good enough that he increased the chances of successfully creating the pills.

He rested for two days, then he told Selena that he wanted to isolate himself and cultivate his level, as he intended to break into the next level.

Meanwhile, throughout the one month, Selena had also greatly increased her martial level. She was already a seventh -grade grandmaster. The rate a t which she had improved was tremendous.

As for Ben, he had reached the level of a third-grade grandmaster. For him, it was satisfactory progress.

Of course, Jack did not expect Kylie to be a prodigy. She had been a third-grade martial artist before, and now she was a sixth-grade martial artist. The little girl still went to school every day, and would only train herself when she had free time.

Chapter 1502

Two days before they were to set out for the Cabello family's estate, Nash and a handful of elders were anxiously waiting a t the gates.

They all wanted to know if Jack could make it, with him needing to practice alchemy and trying to make a breakthrough within such a short time.

Furthermore, if he was not out any sooner, they would not be able to make it on time. After all, the Cabello family estate was some distance away from the White family estate.

At long last, while anxiety was seizing them, the doors slowly crept open. Jack walked out.

“Young Master Jack, you’re finally out. Have you managed t o make a breakthrough?”

The First Elder, Titus, and the others all stared at Jack in anticipation. They all knew that Jack had fearsome fighting prowess. If Jack could break into the peak of the true god status, then they truly had nothing to fear.

As everyone’s eyes were pinned on him, Jack nodded his head slightly. “Haha. Don’t worry. I did it!”

As Jack spoke, he slowly released the aura within his body, allowing it to seep into the atmosphere.

“My goodness. Such a powerful aura! Is this truly the aura of someone at the peak of the true god realm? Why do I feel like it’s the strength of ten fighters at the peak of the true god realm?”

When Jack released his aura, the crowd was shocked.

“That fellow is a strange one. W e even thought that we could beat him in the beginning!”

Liah and Martin exchanged a glance, not knowing whether t o laugh or cry. They still remembered how they previously tried to fight Jack for the position of house heir.

It was as though it had just happened yesterday. Jack was now on a whole other level – one they could not hope to reach.

Even though they made great progress and trained hard, the gap between them and Jack was growing wider and wider.

“Forget it. Now he could probably beat a hundred of me!”

Yule did not know whether to laugh or cry. “I even thought that I would be the one to help him in the beginning. Who knew that he would be so much stronger than I am. What a great hidden talent!”

“This is fantastic. Haha. Absolutely fantastic. The White family is blessed!”

Nash and the other Elders knew that while Jack was still a t the advanced stage of the true god status, he managed to kill six fighters at the peak of the true god status alone.

Now, Jack has broken through to another level. Even if he did not transform into a dragon, h e could easily beat the old fighters at the peak of the true god status.

More importantly, now the Second Elder and the Third Elder were also at the peak of the true god status. The White family had gained five fighters at the peak of the true god status in a short span of time. I n other words, they had nothing to be afraid of anymore.

“Oh, right. Young Master Jack, while you were busy practicing alchemy and cultivating yourself these few days, you probably don’t know that Patronum Yolanda has made a breakthrough after using your pill. She’s now at the advanced stage of the true god status. We’ve already promoted her to an Elder!”

Titus took a step forward and spoke to Jack, chuckling, “As o f the other six who received your pills, two of them also made breakthroughs, and they’ve been promoted to the Elder status. The other four had just broken into the intermediate stage of the true god realm, and their powers are not stable yet, so they have yet to use your pill to make another breakthrough!”

“Haha. Good, good. That’s good news!”

Jack laughed when he heard this. He was delighted. Now the White family was truly getting stronger. “Humph. We don’t have to lie low anymore! I’ll just punch whoever dares to look down on the White

family!”

Chapter 1503

“Of course. Haha. Especially the Lagorio family. We’ll wipe them out if they dare to create trouble for us. Let’s see if they dare to come for us!”

The First Elder also burst into laughter. Everybody hates the Lagorio family, especially Lily Lagorio. Even after she had done unspeakable crimes, she still dared to declare that she was going to take revenge.

Furthermore, not only did she not repent, she even tried to use the Skies Pavilion to kill the White family. The last time, if not for the fact that Jack had a serious trump card on him, the three of them would probably be killed by the six fighters. If the three of them were dead, the Lagorio family would probably not spare a single White family member.

“Those in the true god status and the semi-god status can all go. But we still need to leave eight people of the true god status behind, and more than ten people of the semi-god status. They’ll be guarding the White family estate!”

Jack said after he thought about it.

Soon, Jack chose those who were to stay behind. He even made Lancelot stay behind, even if he had just broken into the peak of the true god status. That way, the other families would not dare to trespass their territory so easily.

“Sorry to trouble you, Third Elder. If you all stay back, you can look after the White family estate and have some time to stabilize your martial level!”

Jack patted Lancelot’s shoulder and gave the order.

“All right. Master, you and Young Master Jack can head out without a worry. Leave the White family estate to us!

Lancelot nodded his head. “We will be waiting for the good news you’ll bring us!”

“Let’s go!”

Jack quickly increased the size of his flying sword, and all the fighters from the White family flew onto it.

This time, the fighters were not just from the White main family, but also the branch families. In total, they had about twenty thousand people. It was a force to be reckoned with.

The remaining twenty thousand people were of lower cultivation levels or were assigned to look after the White family estate, so they stayed behind.

As a first-class family, the number of troops they had was astounding.

Whoosh!

At Jack’s telepathic command, the flying sword zoomed forward.

At that moment, in the Cabello family, Helena came before Daniella. “Third sister, you’ve managed to make great progress in cultivating yourself. Now you’re already at the intermediate stage of the true god status. It seems that you’ve not been slacking off all day!”

“Didn’t you make a breakthrough as well? You’re at the peak of the true god status already. Stop making me jealous!”

Daniella looked at Helena, and could not help but roll her eyes before speaking

“Heh. I’ve been at the advanced stage of true god status for a long time now. I barely managed to succeed this time with the pill that Jack gave!”

Helena gave a bitter smile. “But you’ve managed to improve so quickly,” she said. “Besides, I’ve never seen you work so hard to cultivate yourself before!

“Of course. I’ll only be dragging him down if I don’t work hard.”

As Daniella spoke, her cheeks began to flush, and her voice grew smaller. It was evident that she was bashful.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1504-1507

Chapter 1504

“Oh, so you’re working so hard because of that fella. I must say that the power of love is amazing!”

Helena looked at Daniella, and could not help but tease her, “Oh, right, The person you like is probably coming tomorrow. How do you feel now? Are you nervous? Excited?”

Daniella grew even shyer when her big sister teased her like that. She lowered her gaze and ducked her head. “Of course. Can’t I be excited and nervous at the same time? I wonder if he’ll be happy to see that I’ve made a breakthrough!”

“Heh. You’re already in a relationship with him. You just haven’t made the official announcement yet. Of course, he’ll be happy that you’ve made a breakthrough!”

Helena smiled, admiration welling in her heart. She was happy for her third sister, who was able to find such an incredible man. However, she did not know why a tinge of envy twinged her chest as well.

“What relationship? You are the one in a relationship with him. Everyone has acknowledged you! Who knows when we can finally reveal our relationship?”

Daniella pursed her lips, sitting down under a stone pavilion. “Sister Selena is pretty nice to me, and Jack told me that Selena has accepted me. I’m happy because of that. But now I’m worried about how I should break this to Kylie.

“Kylie? Doesn’t she like you? She was sad to see you leave. It shouldn’t be a problem!”

After Helena gave it some thought, she could not help but ask, “oh, right. Since you came back, you’ve been training till yesterday. Are you sure you haven’t forgotten anything?”

Daniella looked at Helena and said, smiling, “I didn’t forget. I promised Jack that I would give some Bone Marrow Cleansing Water to his parents. Heh. I’ll go in a while! I didn’t go earlier not because I was busy, but because I was afraid that Father and the others would catch me. With the other families coming soon, they’ll be busy arranging the family estate and preparing to receive guests. Then they won’t have the time to care about the Cleansing Water!”

She did not think that Helena would give her a grin, then take out a small bottle and thrust it toward her.

“What’s this?”

Daniella was confused when she saw it.

“Open it up and see. Then you’ll know.”

Helena rolled her eyes at her sister.

Daniella took a look and took a sharp intake of breath. “My God. This-this is enough for ten people. Big Sister, you stole it for me? Thank you! But someone will definitely tell because you took so much. What if Father finds out?”

Daniella was extremely excited. After she thought about it, she added, “Oh, right. If Father finds out, just say that it was me. Heh. Thank you, Big Sis. I love you so much!”

As she spoke, Daniella kept the bottle, then she hugged Helena and jumped elatedly.

“Don’t-don’t! I didn’t give this to you. It’s Father!”

Chapter 1505

Helena rolled her eyes at Daniella. “I told Father that you promised to give some Bone Marrow Cleansing Water to the White family,” she said. “The idea of stealing didn’t sit right with me, even though it’s our own family possession. That’s why I told Father. I didn’t think that he would agree to it so easily. He even said that because we haven’t received news that Master White had been killed, it means that the White family members have managed to fend off an attack. We can’t look down on the White family any longer, and we should establish good relations with them!”

“So it was Father who gave this. How nice of him. I even thought that he would be furious once he found out. I didn’t think that he would give so much Bone Marrow Cleansing Water too!

Daniella was even happier. She was as excited as a child who had just gotten candy.

“Heh. Father said that Jack helped us to kill the First Young Master Hunt and saved so many of our people, so we must maintain a good relationship between our families. He-he even advised me…”

As she spoke, Helena’s expression grew bashful. She was embarrassed to speak any further.

“Advised you? What did he advise you?”

Daniella frowned. Judging from her big sister’s behavior, it seemed that! It was a touchy subject.

“He advised me to get closer to Jack and see if we can make our relationship a real one. So that our families will be related. This will greatly benefit the Cabello family because Jack has great talent, and the White family will only grow stronger. That’s why…”

As Helena spoke, she bit her lower lip and glanced at Daniella.

Daniella was furious when she heard this. “I’m so mad. Why would Father think of that?” she said, clenching her teeth. “He agreed that you two were a fake couple. Why is he doing this? Seriously…”

Here, she looked at her big sister again and spoke, “You. What did you tell him then? Big Sis, don’t tell me that you agreed to his suggestion? Don’t tell me that you’ve fallen for Jack? My God. He’s too amazing. You’ll definitely like him. That’s definitely the case. What should I do? He’s my boyfriend. Sis, you can’t just snatch my boyfriend away. We have a connection!”

Daniella truly flew into a panic. After all, her sister was just as pretty as she was. She was cute and doe-eyed but her sister was matured and aloof. What if Jack liked women of her type? What if the two truly developed feelings for each other after fake dating for a while? Then what should she do?

“Me? I didn’t know how to answer him, so I told him that I was just putting up an act with Jack. I told him that there’s no chemistry between us so that he’ll stop getting wild ideas!”

Helena smiled and added, “I even told Father that you seem to have taken an interest in Jack. And you’ve known him longer, so you must have fallen for him!”

“Really? What did Father say?”

Daniella's eyes brightened when she heard this, her expression pinched in anticipation.

"Father was surprised. He said that if Jack liked you as well, a relationship could grow from there. But feelings can only develop in their natural course. Our parents won't bother with what happens between us!"

After Helena said that, she jabbed Daniella's forehead with a finger. "You were so panicky. Have you calmed down now?"

"Heh. I'm all right now. I was afraid that Father would disagree because relationship between our families were not great before. With this, can finally put my mind at rest!"

Daniella chuckled, her heart dancing with joy. Since Jack's wife had no objections, and her parents agreed, then she would definitely become the second mistress of the White family!

Chapter 1506

"But the First and Second Young Masters of the Hunt family died not too long ago. The Hunt family members are probably trying to find out who it was who killed them. Now is really not the time for me to announce my breakup with Jack!"

Helena pondered on the matter for a while before speaking her mind.

When she heard this, Daniella also scrunched her brows together. She thought for a while before replying, "That doesn't matter. At any rate, Second Young Master Hunt won't be disturbing you anymore. Heh. As time goes by, people will start to forget about this. If anyone asks you, just say that the two of you broke up because of irreconcilable differences!"

"You're just waiting for our fake dating gambit to be over so that you can be with Jack, right?"

Helena rolled her eyes at Daniella, then said in a joking manner, “Seriously. Maybe I should keep him to myself. Your boyfriend is a fine Specimen, after all!”

“Big Sis, you-you. If you do that, I’ll be absolutely livid!”

Daniella stamped her foot, acting cute before her elder sister.

“Heh. I was just joking. I wanted to see how you would react!”

Helena answered, chuckling.

Time passed by quickly. The next morning, the Cabello family began to stir into excitement.

Soon, some second-class and third-class family members arrived.

The second-class and third-class families were going all out this time. They had brought people of the true god and semi-god status along.

Although few fighters were at the peak of the true god realm among these families, those at the advanced or intermediate stage of the true god status still looked forward to finding the method to break into the ultimate god status.

After all, if they found an object that would help them, they would be able to use it one day in the future. It was an unparalleled treasure, something that everybody had their eyes on.

“Ah. The second-class and thirdclass families are here to join the fun. Seriously…”

The First Elder of the Cabello family could not help but heave a sigh when he saw that many people were starting to gather in a huge plaza halfway up the Cabello family's mountain.

He did not think that even though the Hunt family restored the ancient summoning circle and organized the competition for the younger generation, it would be Jack and the others who won the fame, discovering a clue that might lead them to the ultimate god realm.

Now that he thought about it, he felt pathetic. He had toiled away all those years for nothing

"Let's go. We can head down now. There are plenty of people there. The Second Elder and the others are welcoming guests there!"

Alejandro smiled and said, "Of course the aristocratic families would come. Who wouldn't be interested in a matter as big as the ultimate god realm? But they brought so many people here. Plenty will die in the danger zones as well. We have no choice though. We can't just stop them, can we?"

"Heh. That's true!"

The First Elder chuckled, flying down along with Alejandro. "The White family is amazing. We still haven't heard of anything from them. Unless the Skies Pavilion did not send anyone to attack them after the wedding, while they were heading back to their estate?"

Chapter 1507

"Indeed, it's strange. There's been no news from Skies Pavilion as well. Logically speaking, Lily Lagorio must have married their master to attack the White family. Even an idiot would figure that out!"

Alejandro furrowed his brows. The two quickly flew down the mountain.

Not long after, the other seven first-class families slowly arrived.

When Master Hunt spotted Jack and the others, his expression darkened. He had the urge to skin Jack alive.

“Master White, I didn’t think that your son would be so capable. It isn’t an exaggeration to call him a genius, right?

Old Master Hunt commented after seeing Nash.

“Heh. I don’t know what you mean, Old Master Hunt!”

Nash chuckled after he heard that. Before, he would have been worried by the old man’s words. Now though, he had no reason to fear the Hunt family.

“Oh, it’s nothing. We just heard rumors that your son killed both of my grandsons!”

Old Master Hunt gave a frosty smile. “With that fighting power, your son is truly the Number One Genius among the younger generation. Who else has the right to that title?”

When he heard this, Nash did not think that it was anything out of the ordinary. After all, plenty of people knew what had happened. Although the Lancaster family and the Cabello family members had promised that they would not speak of it, there were far too many people in the two families. Coupled with the White family members, someone might have accidentally leaked the information while they were idly chatting among themselves.

That was why so long as the Hunt family investigated and observed intently-perhaps even catching and interrogating a few Lancaster or Cabello family members—they would certainly find a few rumors.

“No way! The young master of the White family killed them? My God. His talent is amazing.”

The Church family members took a sharp intake of breath after they heard this. They were evidently shocked.

However, after Master Church and his Elders recollected themselves, hatred sprang in their hearts once more.

They had allied with the Lagorio and Hunt families at first, ready to take down the geniuses from the other families. That way, they would obtain benefits, and the Hunt family’s position would be solidified.

They did not expect the two young masters of the Hunt family would be killed during the competition. Meanwhile, the three families had sent over four hundred geniuses, and only a few dozen of them had emerged alive. It was a colossal loss.

If Jack had killed the two young masters of the Hunt family, he had no way to clear himself of a connection to the other geniuses of the families.

“All right. I had suspected that Helena and Jack had worked together to do this. You even told us to stop making baseless accusations, since there’s no evidence. Nash White, it seems like Old Master Hunt and the others have found something. How are you going to defend yourself?”

The master of the Lagorio family, Trenton, was delighted when he heard this. He immediately stood up and glared at Nash.

Joel was embarrassed by the incident that had happened to Skies Pavilion. If a word that six of their fighters at the peak of the true god status had died, their position would definitely plummet. Until now, the Skies Pavilion has yet to declare anything. Even Trenton did not know what was happening in Skies Pavilion.

Now, aside from the White family, only the Skies Pavilion knew that they had suffered such a great loss. The other families and Ancient Clans had no idea of that incident. They still assumed that the Skies Pavilion had plenty of fighters among their ranks.

“Heh. I had no idea. Besides, does it! Matter who killed them?”

Nash chuckled and shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1508-1510

Chapter 1508

“Does it matter who killed them? Nash White, they were Master Hunt’s sons, two genius sons! They’re now dead! And you think that it’s not a big deal?”

An elder of the Hunt family stepped forward and snarled at Nash; his tone was full of malice and hatred, and his face was so red as though he was burning with anger. How could this old fella before him speak I n such a nonchalant tone? Did the old fella forget the status of the Hunt family in this martial world?

Another elder of the Hunt family chimed in and sneered, “Nash White, it looks like you’re unaware of the power of the Hunt family, aren’t you? Let me tell you, another Elder I n the Hunt family has broken through to the peak of the true god realm lately!”

The elder raised his head higher as he bragged; his face was full of pride as though the Hunt family had conquered the world. After all, the strength of a family depended on the number of elite fighters one had. There was an addition of strength at the peak of the true god realm in the Hunt family, the top position of the Hunt family among the hidden families was definitely more stable than before.

“What? Another one? The Hunt family is really something!”

“Yes, that is so cool! It’s only been a while! The Hunt family I s very talented in training people, and the other hidden families like us can’t even be on par with them!”

“Five, tsk tsk tsk. They have five elite fighters at the peak of the true god realm! Other firstclass families only have two or three, right?”

Animated discussions soon arose among the people of second-class and third-class families upon hearing the news. All of a sudden, the Hunt family was once again under the spotlight.

“Haha, Mr. Elder of the Hunt family, you look so proud of the mentioned elder. Hmmm. The elder that broke through to the peak stage of the true god realm…is you, right?”

Jack noticed the prideful look o n the other party and pointed it out nonchalantly. “I don’t think there’s anything wrong with what my father said. No matter how many elite fighters at the peak stage of the true god realm the Hunt family had, it has nothing to do with the White family. Secondly, they were indeed killed by me, but s o what? At the beginning of the competition, didn’t you, the Hunt family, say that life or death didn’t matter in the competition?”

“Oh my goodness! It was only a rumor that he killed them. But today he actually admitted the deed!”

Some people gasped at the fact that Jack admitted to the killing deed. Jack was bold and dauntless.

“This brat actually dares to admit it? So the rumor is true! But isn’t he afraid of death?”

Helena and Daniella exchanged glances; both of them were rendered speechless.

The old man of the Hunt family trembled with rage; his resentment grew inside him like a tumor. The death of his two beloved grandsons had been a pain in his heart.

In the past few weeks, he even secretly sent people to investigate and inquire about the death of his grandsons, and until three days ago, only did they learn that the one who killed his grandsons was Jack

White. The newly learned information made them want t o tear Jack apart with their own hands.

The Hunt family members did not expect that Jack would actually dare to admit his deed in front of them.

”Haha! Great! It’s so great!”

Old Master Hunt was so angry that he burst into laughter instead. “Master White, this son of yours is not only a talented genius, but he is also the most courageous man in the world! He admitted his deed and is not afraid to offend our Hunt family at all. Such courage, I don’t think anyone else in this world possesses the courage he has!”

Chapter 1509

“Old Master Hunt, I don’t think there’s a problem with what my son has said. Previously in the competition, the life or death rule was repeatedly stressed by the Hunt family too. All we did was follow this rule. Hmmm. Don’t tell me you want to shove all the blame onto my son and avenge your grandsons, hmm?”

Nash smiled gently while responding to the Old Master Hunt. If the same thing happened back in the time before Jack appeared in his life, he would not dare to speak up so confidently in front of the Hunt family.

“Heh, what are you all talking about here?”

Before the Old Master Hunt could say further, Alejandro immediately stepped in and mediated the situation. “The tournament has long passed, and many sons of families died in that tournament; they were the pearls of families.

However, the principal topic for today is to discuss how to venture into the Seven Dangers and to find a way to break through to the ultimate god realm, right? Those are the things we should be discussing!”

“Master Cabello is right. Let’s not fight over this matter, alright?”

Shelby Lancaster-the head of the Lancaster family-stepped up and voiced out as well. “I’m actually worried about one thing, it’s about the daughter o f the Lagorio family. She married the master of Skies Pavilion, and I wonder if she told them about the Seven Dangers and the ultimate god realm.”

Everyone stared at Trenton upon hearing Shelby’s words.

Although the Hunt family members were angry, it was not a good idea to strike Jack then so they could only swallow their rage and bury the hatred in their hearts for the time being. When the opportunity comes, they would behead Jack to avenge the young masters of the Hunt family.

“Hey, don’t look at me like that! I don’t know either!”

Panic surged through Trenton when he noticed that all gazes were on him. His face was ashen, and his throat tightened.

It was because he knew the truth, that his daughter had not only told the Skies Pavilion about the ultimate god realm, but she also told the other three ancient clans!

If the people of these hidden families knew that Lily was the snitch and even used the information to exchange for training materials and resources, they would not be happy with the Lagorios. Even worse, they might target the Lagorio family in the future.

“You don’t know? Stop pretending! You’re Lily’s father and you claim that you don’t know anything about it? Don’t tell me she never tells you anything at all!”

Shelby stepped toward Trenton and stared straight at him.” But I was informed that your daughter

visited the Pavilion of Gods and Kings before she married the master of Skies Pavilion. What's more interesting is that some time ago, a group of people from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings explored two sites of the Seven Dangers! How do you think those men found out about the Seven Danger?"

"Master Lagorio, you must give us an explanation regarding this!"

Nash's face sank to the deepest as he spoke. None of the hidden families had spread the news, instead, they worked hard to train and prepare themselves sufficiently before discussing how to go to the lands of the Seven Dangers.

The news that the Lancaster family had found out was like a bomb.

"Master Lagorio, did your daughter really spill such important information to the ancient clans? I had doubts before that she would tell the Skies Pavilion, but after listening to Master Lancaster's findings, it seems like your daughter has told all the ancient clans about the Seven Dangers and ultimate god realm! Humph! Now all four ancient clans know about it, right? Sigh! I wonder if the other three ancient clans have made a move to the Seven Dangers yet."

Old Master Hunt was running o n sheer anger; he stared deadly at Trenton with malice and hatred written on his face." The four ancient clans are very powerful! They might act first t o get to the Seven Dangers and find the way to break through t o the ultimate god realm! And what if they won't tell us after they've figured it out? Then what? Are we, the reclusive families, going to be trampled under their feet for the rest of our lives, and never be able to rise?"

Numerous pairs of eyes focused on Trenton that he was mute with horror. His legs were wobbling in fear, and his face went white.

Nonetheless, he wiped the sweat on his forehead and tried to tamp down the panic within him. "Ladies and gentlemen, II really don't know anything about this at all! Lily never tells me about her plan, and even when she wanted to marry that old man, I tried to stop but to n o avail! She simply doesn't listen to me. So, about the four ancient clans and the ultimate god realm, I truly don't know anything!"

Chapter 1510

Trenton knew very well in his heart that he could not admit that his daughter told the four ancient clans about the Seven Dangers. If these hidden families knew about it, they would blame the Lagorio family, and that would be a huge problem for the Lagorio family.

Old Master Hunt sank into deep thought with a solemn expression on his face. “It doesn’t matter who snitched. We’re here today to discuss how we should approach the Seven Dangers; each of the place in the Seven Dangers is extremely hazardous and risky, and none of us have been there before, not to mention the deepest site of the Seven Dangers. We don’t know the situation there, and even if each reclusive family sent one elite genius and joined forces together, I still think it’d be dangerous!” He expressed his thoughts and opinion about the plan.

“I wonder what the seven bright spots on the map mean… Hmmm… Moreover, if the four ancient clans have already sent men out to explore the Seven Dangers, we’re not sure which of the Seven Dangers they’ve been and if they put their men there to guard the place.”

The head of a second-class family spoke his mind after giving the matter some thoughts.

“In the past, the ancient clans, perhaps, would not make a move against our people of hidden families. But now the situation has changed, it involves some clues about the ultimate god level. Thus, if our men meet their people in any of the Seven Dangers, I’m afraid that they’ll strike at us for the sake of treasure and clues. This would be the most worrying problem of all!”

The head of the Lancaster family had her brows puckered together as she spoke. If it was not because of the sudden intervention from the four ancient clans, the hidden families only had to divide the forces equally and send their men out to all the Seven dangers; there would be no problem with such a plan.

All of a sudden, at this time, in the distance, a large crowd of men in black was seen gliding through the wide sky.

“Everyone, look! Why is there a group of people heading in our direction? Are there any other families coming to the meeting?”

Someone noticed the situation and immediately exclaimed.

“No, there shouldn’t be anyone else! The eight first-class reclusive families are all here. There are at least forty thousand people in that crowd that is coming over, right? It can’t be any family!”

Quentin’s face sank into the deepest, with a sense of foreboding.

“It’s people from the Skies Pavilion! Damn it! Why are they here?”

Alejandro soon recognized the other party; he cursed at the situation and his face turned unsightly.

Dread and irritation gnawed within the other heads of families as well; all their expressions were solemn and unsightly. Although they knew that they were right about Lily snitching on them, telling everything to the people from Skies Pavilion, they were still upset when they saw the other party appear.

“Wow! There are quite a lot of people here!

Joel Collins commented as he and his men stopped in the sky, not too far from the square where the hidden families gathered. They looked at the crowd from above.

“Hey, my lovely son-in-law, what brings you here?

Trenton immediately felt relieved and somewhat confident at the arrival of Joel. He immediately approached Joel with the gentlest smile on his face.

“Greetings, Master Lagorio. I heard from your daughter that you guys have some clues about the ultimate god realm, saying that it is related to the Seven Dangers. How could I not come for such

important information?”

Joel replied, chuckling.

“Lily Lagorio, that woman didn’t come along? Is she afraid of us bashing and criticizing her?”

Out of everyone’s expectation, Jack stood out at this moment and asked Joel directly. His arms clasped in front of his chest and stared at Joel as though he was the master and Joel was his servant.

“My goodness, did I hear it wrong? This brat is so bold! How could he talk to the Master of Skies Pavilion in that manner?”

Chapter 1511

Some people in the crowd gasped at the situation, worrying for Jack.

“Why didn’t the head of the White family remind his son of his manners? Aren’t they afraid that Master Collins would get angry and kill his son on the spot? Even worse, Master Collins might end the entire White family!

A family head of a third-class family was surprised at how bold Jack was and exclaimed the same thoughts as the others.

Although everyone felt upset at what Lily had done-snitching on them, they certainly did not dare to spill such things to Joel, the pavilion master of Skies Pavilion

However, what the crowd did not know was that the other party knew what Jack got up his sleeve when Jack and the other two attended Lily and Joel’s marriage ceremony at the Skies Pavilion. If Jack did not reveal his hidden card, the other party would have long killed Jack and the other two. And if the three of

them had died, the existence of the White family would be impacted grievously—the White might become extinct.

When Jack thought about the day the Skies Pavilion sent out six elite fighters to besiege and kill the three of them, raw anger flowed through him like lava.

“Jack, you do have courage, don’t you? Do you know who he is? He is the Master of the Skies Pavilion! You’re merely a young master, a junior! How dare you speak to Master Toel in such a tone, what a rude lad you are! I think you’re looking down on our Master Joel of the Skies Pavilion and being disrespectful to him!”

Happiness bloomed inside Trenton; he had not been able to find an opportunity for his son-in-law to make a move against the White family, but Jack dug the grave for himself. If the Master of the Skies Pavilion could strike at Jack right then and there to kill him, would not that be awesome?

Was it not Jack digging his own grave right now? Such a good opportunity to eliminate Jack was too rare to come by!

Sure enough, Joel’s face instantly turned dull and solemn; he felt that Jack was being disrespectful toward him.

However, he soon understood why Jack would talk to him in that manner; it must be due to Jack and the other two having encountered the six corpses of the elders from the Skies Pavilion that day and guessed that they were sent to assassinate Jack and the group.

But, this brat had no evidence about the assassination at all, how could he speak to him in such a disrespectful manner? Was he not looking for death? Such a good opportunity was presented in front of Joel; he

Naturally would not miss it.

“Brat, you do have guts, don’t you? You don’t even try to respect an elder like me. How dare you call Lily ‘that woman’! She is my ninth wife and she’s older than you! Don’t you even understand the basics of being respectful toward the elders?” Joel smiled coldly and stared at Jack angrily.

“Well, she is that woman’ in my eyes. What to do? Humph! That woman was bent on causing trouble and eliminating my White family, why do I have to be respectful to her?”

Jack snorted coldly in return. “You humiliated my father at your wedding, and I haven’t forgotten about that matter yet. Now, old man, tell me, do you think you deserve my respect? Do you think I’m afraid of you?” Jack added.

“Master Collins, I have some doubts. On the day of your wedding, when we were on our way home, we encountered six elite elders from Skies Pavilion! Hehe, it can’t be that they were trying to protect us while sending us off, right? No such coincidence, right? Skies Pavilion has several elite fighters at peak stages of true god status, and we actually met six of them!”

Nash stepped in and supported Jack. He looked at Joel with an icy-cold smile plastered on his face.

“What? The Skies Pavilion made a move against the people from the hidden families? It’s so abominable! How could they break the tacit agreement that has been in place?”

Shelby immediately took a stance at Nash’s side and said with a surprised expression. “In that case, didn’t the Skies Pavilion break the silent agreement and did not at all respect the hidden families and the agreement? If they can strike at the White family, meaning they would strike at any of the hidden families in the future! Which of our families can resist their attack by then?” She added agitatedly.

“Master Lancaster is right! What a shameless act! The White family went to their wedding to give blessings, but the Skies Pavilion actually repaid the blessing with evils by sending people to assassinate them on their way back home? What logic is that? How abominable!”

The people of other families huffed and expressed their opinions in anger. The crowd was taking the

side of the White family.

“What the hell? Something like that happened?”

Some of the White family members who were still unaware of the episode were feeling shocked, at the same time, furious about the newly learned information. Their faces turned unsightly. After all, only several elders of the White family knew about that incident.

Chapter 1512

“Young man, don’t accuse us without any proof!”

An old man from the Skies Pavilion immediately stood out and defended loudly. “We learned that a terrifying monster beast was appearing in that forest, so we sent our people to kill it. This is to prevent the beast from entering the village or town nearby and harm the innocent people there! But we did not expect that the beast was that powerful and had extremely sharp claws! It killed all the six elders of the Skies Pavilion!”

“No way! There is such a powerful monster beast in that forest?”

“My goodness! Six elders! Those who can become elders of the Skies Pavilion must have broken through to the peak stage of the true god realm! With such combat strength and prowess, they were killed by the beast?”

Many people gasped upon hearing the words. They were shocked by this news.

“Monster beast?”

Jack and Nash exchanged glances and their expressions turned strange. The Skies Pavilion did not believe that their elders were killed by the three of the White family, and they thought that the six

elders had encountered some powerful monster and were killed by it!

But their reasoning was not completely wrong, after all, Jack did transform into a green dragon. He used his sharp claws to grab and crush the elders, and some were even crushed into meat paste. Looking at the wounds of the corpses, it was reasonable and logical for the Skies Pavilion to think that it was the works of some kind of powerful beast!

As expected, at this time, another elder of the Skies Pavilion stepped forward and chimed in, “Humph! You just happened to pass by the scene and encountered the corpses of the elders. How dare you accuse us based on that? You’re simply slandering the Skies Pavilion!”

“Nash White, your son is being disrespectful toward us; he did not at all put the Skies pavilion in his eyes! Never mind that he humiliated my ninth wife, he actually dares to slander our clan!” Joel was furious. “Today, I’ll teach you and your son a good lesson!”

Seeing that majority of the crowd seemed to believe his words, Joel was actually happy inside. He then took a huge step toward Nash, emitting his high and mighty aura to pressure him.

A terrifying sense of oppression came right at Nash as Joel released his domineering aura.

“What an overwhelming tension! He’s truly a veteran in the peak stage of the true god realm. Although their martial status stops at the peak stage of the true god realm, in terms of releasing a sense of tension and pressure, they are truly good at that. Their mighty aura will only get stronger and stronger!”

Several people from the White family had obviously felt the overwhelming tension emitted by Joel. They could not help but worry for Nash.

Joel flashed in an instant, clenched his fist, and bolted straight at Nash. Apparently, he wanted to give Nash a good beating, so that these hidden families would recognize the mighty majesty of the four ancient clans! The ancient clans must not be trampled on nor be desecrated at all!

“Come at me!”

However, at this time, Jack jumped and appeared in front of Nash in a flash. He, too, clenched his fist and blasted straight ahead at Joel.

“Brat, are you looking for death? Do you think you’re worthy of being my opponent?”

Joel’s fury sprang to life when he saw that Jack came forward for his father.

In his eyes, Jack was at most a junior, a rising star among the younger generation. Even if he was an elite fighter in the intermediate stage or even late stage of the true god realm, Jack’s overall strength and power were still inferior to his! So when Jack dashed out for his father, Jack had indirectly insulted Joel, implying that Joel was on the same level with him!

Boom!

Just as Joel’s last syllabus of words fell, two huge fists collided, and a deafening sound of collision rang out. Waves of Chi energy emitted from the blast, shaking the ground.

Bang!

What happened in the next second had everyone completely dumbfounded. Jack stood firmly in place, while Joel was blown away by Jack’s fist.

“No f*cking way!”

Almost everyone cried out in shock; their eyes were widened as large as saucers and their jaws dropped to the ground. The fighting outcome before them was completely beyond their expectation.

Chapter 1513

Was it not Jack that was supposed to be blasted away? How did it turn out to be the high and mighty Master Collins of the Skies Pavilion?

“Pfft!

What was truly out of everyone’s expectation was that the Master of Skies Pavilion was thrown a hundred feet away before he could stabilize himself on the ground. However, he could not resist the power but spurted out a mouthful of fresh blood, and his face immediately went white.

“No freaking way! He’s injured!”

Daniella of the Cabello family and the others were shocked and dumbfounded. Before that, when they saw that Jack spoke to Joel in an impolite manner, they were truly worried for Jack.

And when Joel charged toward Nash and Jack rushed out to block the attack, Daniella was so scared that she almost fainted. She could not imagine how worried he was. Jack tried to fight against Master Collin’s attack, was he not looking for death?

But now, the scene before her eyes told otherwise!

“Jack, this brat, he’s more powerful than Master Collins?”

Alejandro was even more frightened and could not control but swallowed hard. He then turned to Nash and asked, “Master White, you, he… Your son…which martial status is he at now? Don’t tell me he broke through again!”

Alejandro's voice was trembling as he expressed his doubts to Nash. Who was Joel? He was one of the top fighters in the peak stage of the true god realm! He could even resist against two or three fighters with the strength of the peak stage of the true god realm if they were to join forces together.

Nonetheless, such a powerful existence was actually blasted away by Jack!

"No! Impossible! There's no way he's stronger than me!"

Joel was even more bewildered at the fact. All of this felt so unreal to him; he pinched his thigh harshly, only then he learned that the pinch pained him. So, it meant all of this was real!

"To be honest, my son has broken through to the peak of the true god realm a few days ago!"

Nash smiled nonchalantly at Alejandro and responded in a gentle tone.

"Wow! Jack! You broke through to the next stage too fast!"

Daniella could no longer hold back her excitement and gazed at Jack with a face full of adoration, as though Jack was some priceless jewelry. Sunshine flooded her soul, and she could barely conceal it within her. Jack, the man that she adored deeply, did not at all let her down. He was the perfect man.

"Haha! Brother Jack, you're so cool! You're really awesome!"

Randall Lancaster laughed out loud as he came over to Jack. He looked at| Jack with excitement present in his

Eyes.

“Master Collin, what’s the matter? Do you still want to fight with us? Haha! You said it yourself that the Skies Pavilion has already suffered losses; six elite fighters of the peak stage of the true god realm died! Indeed, Skies Pavilion is powerful and deeply rooted, but our White family is not afraid of you!”

Kenneth was even prouder of the White family that he annoyed Joel with a smug look on his face. Jack's attack had truly shocked everyone there; he made the White family proud, and the status of the White family would definitely increase after the great collision of punches just

now.

Besides, the status of the White family would be different in the eyes of these hidden families from now

on.

"You..."

Anger stirred within Joel that he was almost choking on his rage However, when he thought about Jack's massive power and strength just now, his heart pounded frantically

At that point in time, he truly did not dare to fight Jack again. What if he lost if he were to fight Jack again? Then the reputation of the Skies Pavilion and the image of Master Collin would be flushed down the drain.

He felt that his martial techniques would definitely be more powerful than Jack, and if he used his full strength to fight, his chance to win was higher, but what if he lost? There were many spectators in front of them. Watching him lose to Jack, how humiliating would that be?

After giving the matter some thought, he huffed, “Humph! I underestimated you a moment ago. Do you really think that you can be my opponent? I came here today to discuss important matters and not to fight! So, for the time being, I’d not haggle over you!”

Chapter 1514

When Joel spilled the sentence, his tone was arrogant and domineering, not emitting the slightest sense of weakness.

Moreover, most people of the Skies Pavilion also thought that their master pavilion was careless, underestimated Jack, and did not use his full strength. That was why Jack managed to hurt him.

The people of the Skies Pavilion had absolute trust and confidence in Master Collins's fighting prowess.

The crowd consisting of people from the hidden families was not stupid. A high and mighty person like Master Collins of the Skies Pavilion was injured by Jack, moreover, he did not want to pursue further! That had obviously implied that Joel was afraid of Jack's strength to some extent. From these behaviors of Joel, the crowd understood that Jack's strength and combat prowess were crazily strong.

"Master Hunt, the situation tells us more about young masters' death. This proves that our young masters were indeed killed by this fella!"

An elder from the Hunt family leaned toward Quentin and whispered into his ear softly.

"You're right. His combat power is far stronger than what we expected, and it is certainly stronger than his current martial level!"

Quentin nodded in agreement. He learned that Jack possessed an ultimate-grade spiritual weapon and that weapon had aided in increasing Jack's overall combat prowess.

"Master Collins, spill it! Since you already knew that we intend to explore the Seven Dangers, we'll not hide it from you anymore. The main reason we didn't share this information with you is cause we are not familiar with what's in there ourselves. We only blindly plan it without any in-depth information, so we can't let you take the risk with us!"

Old Master Hunt explained to Joel with a faint smile hanging on his face.

That excuse of Old Master Hunt' s was sensible and reasonable; it did not offend the mighty status of Master Collins, and even seems to be for the sake of protecting him.

However, Joel was not stupid; he naturally knew the underlying meaning of Old Master Hunt's sentences."

"Hmm. Thank you for your consideration. But for such a big thing, it's worth it for the Skies Pavilion to try too. Now, what's next?" He decided not to argue with Old Master Hunt and thank him instead.

Several horizontal lines formed between Old Master Hunt's brows when he was just about to share his plan. "Sigh! I'm afraid it won't be easy to arrange anything right now. Someone else is coming. Heh! It looks like the Skies Pavilion is not the only one who knew about this!" he looked away to the far distance as he spoke.

Joel wheeled his head and looked around, then his face suddenly went gloomy and solemn. "People from the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles are coming this way, why are they here? Humph! Lily Lagorio, that woman only knows how to create trouble! It looks like she told the other ancient clans as well!"

Anger welled up in his chest; he was upset that Lily told the other ancient clans about the matter; what was worse, she did not inform him about it at all!

If Lily spared the other three ancient clans about Seven Dangers and only told him, the Skies Pavilion would become the boss among the ancient clans! They would definitely have the leading advantage! How could he possibly foresee that Lily had actually told the other ancient clans as well?

Trenton's face fell; he stood aside and remained silent, pretending that he was unaware of everything.

A few moments later, the people of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles arrived at the square. It was not surprising for the Master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles to see that the people of Skies Pavilion were there too. After all, Lily married the Master of Skies Pavilion, it was only natural and logical for Lily to

inform Joel about the Seven Dangers.

“Hahaha! It’s lively here, isn’t it? I guess the people of the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Gods and Kings will arrive in a moment, too!”

The Master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles laughed as he spoke. He was a middle-aged man who looked like he was in his late 40 to early 50. “Shall we wait a little longer for them to arrive?” he added.

Chapter 1515

“The Pavilion of Divinity will definitely come, but I’m not sure about the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.”

Shelby sneered with a distant smile. “The Pavilion of Gods and Kings has already dispatched some elite fighters into the Seven Dangers. I only found out about this a few days ago!”

The Master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles choked at the news; the corners of his mouth twitched involuntarily several times. “Humph! The Pavilion of Gods and Kings, they’re too sneaky! Lily informed us about the date and the venue of the meeting, saying that all families will gather in the Cabello estate before entering the Seven Dangers. How could they just go ahead with their own plans?”

The master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles hesitated for quite a while, but in the end, he gave up a similar idea, afraid of causing public anger. If he had known that the Pavilion of Gods and Kings had already acted, he would not have hesitated and instantly sent out his men to explore the Seven Dangers!

After several minutes, the Master of the Pavilion of Divinity also arrived with a large group of people. “It looks like we’re not the latest! The Pavilion of Gods and Kings is not here yet!”

“Oh, they won’t come. They have already sent their men into the Seven Dangers. And I don’t know what’s the latest situation there.”

The Master of Pavilion of Soaring Eagles said huffily. He was upset; he was very upset. If the Master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings had broken through to the ultimate god-level earlier than the other masters of the ancient clans, then it would be a huge problem. The other three ancient clans would have to listen to him in the future!

Sure enough, when the Master of the Pavilion of Divinity heard the news, her face sank, and raw rage seared through her. “Master Yeager, Harry Yeager, what an abominable man! He actually acted in advance, huh? Seven Dangers are not some common forests or caves, aren’t they afraid that the Seven Dangers are beyond their own ability? And in the end, the loss will be greater than gain!”

“I don’t think they are that bold to explore all seven places at the same time. Because then their strength and power will be scattered, and the death rate will be higher!”

Joel scoffed indifferently. “I think they’ve gone in for some days, and if they have found the way to break through to the ultimate god realm, it will be troublesome! And it will be more tedious and cumbersome if several of them break through to the ultimate god realm! By that time, even though we are elite fighters in the peak. Stage of the true god realm, in front of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, we could only bow down!” he continued.

The Master of the Pavilion of Divinity carefully scanned through the men beside Joel, and said, “Joel, what are your plans then? Also, I remember there are several elite martial artists with power of the peak stage of true god level in your pavilion. Why are they not here today?” She asked in a skeptical god-level tone and with her forehead puckered together. “Logically, this meeting is about finding a way to break through to the ultimate god realm, and those who are already at the peak stage of the true god realm should be eager to know the way, right? Could it be that you have some other plans?” she added.

The words of the middle-aged woman stirred up some fear in the crowd. The people of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles exchanged glances, evaluating her words. All of them were afraid of the real reason for the Skies Pavilion leaving so many elite fighters behind; they feared that the Skies Pavilion had another arrangement. What if the elite fighters were sent to attack their pavilions? It would be a big headache for them. After all, all families and pavilions had brought along all their elite fighters for the expedition to the Seven Dangers!

“Dead. They’re dead!”

Joel initially did not plan to spread this news, but since the other pavilions had noticed the missing of his elders, he had no choice but to explain. “They encountered a powerful monster beast and were killed by it. What’s worse, I don’t even know what kind of monster beast it is!”

“What? No freaking way! What kind of monster beast could be so powerful that it actually killed all the six elders who were at the peak of the true god level?”

The Master of the Pavilion of Divinity was called Aureole Hoffman, a middle-aged woman. She gasped at Joel’s words. If such a terrifying monster beast truly existed in this world, it would be horrendous.

“Could it be…could it be that the beast is from the Seven Dangers? Only Seven Dangers could have nurtured such a powerful monster beast! Other than Seven Dangers, I don’t think it’s possible to find such a beast in any other place!”

Griffin Langley, the Master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles, furrowed and speculated.

“How do I know? Anyway, that monster beast has very sharp claws! Very, very sharp, and powerful!”

Gloominess was all over Joel’s face; he looked at the crowd and said, “But, don’t worry about us, as the saying goes; no matter what a starved camel is still bigger than a horse. Although the Skies Pavilion has suffered a great loss, six experts from the peak stage of the true god realm, two people managed to break through to the peak of the true god realm lately! So, at worst, the status of the Skies Pavilion has dropped among the four ancient clans, but we’re still a lot stronger than the first-class families!”

Chapter 1516

“Is that so? Congratulations to you for having two breakthroughs into the peak stage of the true god-level during this period!” congratulated Aureole Hoffman from Pavilion of Divinity as a small smirk graced her features. “Sigh… Our clan also had fourteen in the peak stage of the true god-level previously. Just like your clan, we recently had one who broke through into the peak stage, so we have fifteen right now!”

It was obvious Aureole flaunted the fact as if she was telling the other party that their Pavilion of Divinity had grown stronger while the Skies Pavilion had recessed instead of improved, so they would need to back off a little in the future.

Not wanting to be overshadowed, Griffen Langley chimed in, announcing the strength of their clan, “Haha… Coincidentally, our clan also has two who successfully broke through and achieved the peak stage of the true god-level, and with that, we’ve grown from fourteen to sixteen. It looks like our clan has more masters in the peak stage of the true god-level!”

Joel’s expression grew dark before he changed the subject of the conversation, commenting, “What’s the use of having so many masters in the peak stage of the true godlevel? I think the monster beasts might be in the ultimate god-level, or they wouldn’t have been so strong. This means that the Seven Dangers definitely contain the secret of breaking through into the fighting prowess of the ultimate godlevel. It might be something like a spirited fruit or spirited grass!”

Quentin frowned as he theorized, “Everybody, I have a bold assumption. Does everyone think it’s possible that the monster beasts came out because members from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings offended the powerful monster beasts after they entered the Seven Dangers? These monster beasts might have quite a high spiritual intelligence if they’re almost, or already are, in the ultimate god-level. Is it not possible that they’re out here to exact vengeance against humans?”

“There’s a huge possibility of the assumption you just made. Otherwise, our six elders wouldn‘t have died!” Joel still felt heartbroken when he remembered his six elders; it was a big blow indeed.

The elders of the White family, Nash, felt off on the matter as their weirded-out expression showed. It seemed that Jack had been misunderstood as an extremely strong monster beast.

“Since everybody is here, let’s make our arrangements for entering the Seven Dangers,” suggested Quentin to the crowd after deliberating his thoughts.” If we don’t take action now and members from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings break through into the ultimate god-level, we’ ll be struggling if they want to suppress us.”

“That’s right. If several of their members had broken through into the ultimate god-level, it’ll be easy to topple us, the three other ancient clans!” fretted an elder from the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles.

Just as they had this exchange, however, an old man from the White family pointed at a direction and exclaimed, “We have a situation, everyone. Look over there! Why are the people from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings here?”

“What? The people from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings are here?” Everybody inhaled sharply at the old man’s exclamation as their expressions darkened.

“Quite a number of people are here. Could it be possible that they have returned? Have their members broken through into the ultimate god-level already? If that’s the case, would they hurt us?” A family master of a third-class aristocratic family was so frightened that his face alternated between paleness and being flushed, in fear of being killed.

“I don’t think we need to worry. It might be easy if they want to defeat each of us individually, but there are so many of us here as there are eight first-rate aristocratic families and three ancient clans. They won’t dare to act recklessly even if there are two to three members in the ultimate god-level, right? That is, of course, unless they have one to two dozen members in the ultimate god-level,” opinionated a man from a second-class aristocratic family, frowning as he did.

Nash and Jack exchanged glances, rather worried. They did not understand why members from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings would come to them at this moment.

The sacred lady of the Pavilion of Divinity thought about it and said to the people present,” Could it be that their members have yet to return and they, thinking we don’t know that they’ve entered the dangerous areas, pretend to come to us to enter the Seven Dangers with us?”

Chapter 1517

Nash immediately nodded. “It’s likely. After all, they have no idea we know they’ve dispatched their members there.”

Moments later, members of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings flew over and landed before them.

Aureole frowned and was the first one to question, “Master Harry, you guys are…?”

Harry’s gaze swept over the crowd before he spoke with a frown on his face, “To be honest, our people have already separated into three groups and headed for three of the dangerous areas to check things out, and they’ve also returned.”

“Haha…! We thought you wouldn’t admit that, Master Harry, but here you are, admitting it straightforwardly. Lily told me she informed your company about when to gather here, and that we’d enter the Seven Dangers together. Who knew you’d jump into action so quickly? You even gave your word before this!” spoke the chuckling Joel, though dissatisfaction sizzled in his chest.

Harry once again smiled bitterly. “Our people had returned from three of the dangerous areas, but we suffered greatly as many of them in the true god-level and semi-god-level have perished. Many of those in the intermediate and final stages of the true god-level had died, as well as five of our members in the peak stage of the true god-level.”

“And? Are there any leads?” Everybody immediately looked at him expectantly. It seemed to be a good thing that their people had already exited the place, after all. Was it not beneficial to gain information about the areas before they dispatched their own members? After all, the other party sacrificed so many people in exchange for these results!

“Indeed, there are,” Harry’s indifferent reply aroused everyone’s excitement.

“Have you truly obtained ways to break through into the ultimate god-level?” Trenton gulped, and even his breathing had deepened.

Harry smiled and said, “We obtained three balls!”

“Three balls?” Everybody was baffled, not knowing what Harry meant

An elder from a second-class aristocratic family pondered about it and said, “Would consuming these three balls allow us to break through and achieve the fighting prowess of the ultimate god-level then?”

“Oh my god… One ball for each dangerous area? Does this mean there are four others who have the opportunity to break through into the ultimate godlevel?” theorized another old lady.

“Eat it?” Harry had a weird expression on his face as he took a red ball out. “It’s so big and incredibly solid. Are you guys sure we are to eat it?”

Everybody was speechless when they looked at the ball. Not only was it as large as a basketball, but it also seemed to be made of rocks and had weird designs engraved into it.

Chapter 1518

Stunned momentarily, Joel then turned to Harry as he smilingly spoke, “Master Harry, can I have a closer look at it? This is the first time I’ve seen such a thing!”

Harry, however, smiled coldly. It’s nice enough that I came here and relayed information about some things, but you want me to show it to you? Haha … I’ve sacrificed so many of my people to get this. What if you don’t return it to me after inspecting it up close? Now that so many of the masters from our clan are dead, do you want me to fight you if you don’t return it to me?”

“Err… There’s really no need for you to worry about this. Our clan was struck with bad luck as we encountered a frightening monster beast, causing the deaths of six masters in the peak stage of the true god-level.” Harry baffled Joel. Well, there was no need to keep this hidden as other forces knew about this as well.

“Six of your people died?” Harry took a careful look at the people from the Skies Pavilion side, and it did

seem like several powerful elders were missing.

Nonetheless, he denied his request smilingly, “That won’t work either. We obtained this with much difficulty, and I didn’ t get anything out of it even after studying it the entire night yesterday. I still need to go back and study it well!”

Another Elder from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings stepped forward and addressed everyone, “Our pavilion master is here today for everybody’s benefit, and we wish not to instigate any fights among the people here. If there’s a way to break through into the ultimate god-level, we hope that everybody can get along in peace. It’ll be best if we can break through together. We hope that all of us can share if it sa martial art technique. Of course, there’s nothing we can do if it’s some edible item and there’s a limit in number.”

“Thank you, Master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings.” Jack stepped forward and gestured to the other party with his hands. “It looks like Master Harry came here with your people to inform us of something, right?”

Harry nodded. “I’m here to tell everyone which areas we’ve traversed so none of you need to repeat those areas. With this, no trips will be wasted nor any deaths to occur. I won’t be heading for the four other dangerous areas, but it’ll be fine if you guys go into the areas. As for the secrets of these balls, you can slowly study them after you obtain them.”

“Thank you, Master Harry!” Jack gestured with his hands sincerely as he looked at the old man with white hair in front of him. Of course, it was somewhat wrong of him to act without everyone else in his hurry to search for the way to break through into the ultimate god-level.

Nonetheless, it was good for everybody that he came forward and informed everybody about the news he obtained. At least, they would not sacrifice many people in vain.

Joel, however, was wary as he examined the matter before he questioned, “Master Harry, how can you be sure we’d be able to search for the way to break through into the ultimate godlevel via these three balls? What if you’re mistaken? What if it’s some other precious item?”

Harry smiled coldly when he heard this. “You can try it if you don’t believe me. No matter what, our men came across an ominous ancient tree when they reached the deepest part of the dangerous area. This ball is placed in the middle of the ancient tree, and there’s one in each area; I’m assuming it’s the same for the remaining four dangerous areas. There should be a total of seven balls.”

“Apart from that, we didn’t see any other precious items, and we obtained all these items with our lives. Apart from this weird ball, there were other spirited grass and spirited fruits in the areas, but they have nothing to do with the ultimate god-level.”

Chapter 1519

The First Elder of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings came forward at that moment and said, “I’m sure that everyone here doesn’t believe in us, so you can all try it yourself. We were kind enough to inform you, but we won’t stop you if you don’t believe us and want more people to die in the process.”

“I believe in you, masters!” Jack once again gestured with his hands and, still bent in a slight bow, asked, “I hope that Master Harry and honorable masters can tell us which three dangerous areas you went to.”

“This young man is a well-mannered person indeed.” The First Elder of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings nodded. “We went to the three dangerous areas nearest to the Pavilion of Gods and Kings. The other four places that we haven’t visited include the Night Forest, Dragon Head Black Mountain, Bright Snow Mountain, and Black Windy Island. Help yourselves.”

“Alright, we’ve said everything we needed to say. I hope that everyone will contact and communicate with us when you notice anything after obtaining weird balls like these. We’ll be taking our leave now.” Master Harry of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings kept away the stone ball in his hand before leaving with his subordinates.

After the people from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings left, everybody exchanged glances, wondering what arrangements should follow suit. As there were four unvisited dangerous areas, it was difficult to plan things out as there were so many families and three ancient clans.

Joel thought about it before he smilingly suggested, “Everybody, now that there are four dangerous areas left, it means that there are four balls left, and everyone knows the dangerous areas are filled with all sorts of dangers. How about this: To protect the safety of the aristocratic families, the members of our ancient clans shall go to one dangerous area each while all members of the families go to the remaining dangerous area. It’ll obviously be much safer for you guys with this arrangement.”

“That sounds perfect!” The eyes of Griffen from the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles immediately lit up as he stepped forward, grinning as he agreed, “We made such arrangements while putting your safety as a priority. Apart from that, your rate of success would be much higher when so many of you enter one dangerous area. If too many people die, we, the ancient clan, fear you might not be able to cope with the loss.”

The people from the Pavilion of Divinity stood there without saying anything, but they were obviously agreeing in silence.

The people from the reclusive families glowered at their suggestion. They felt that the ancient clans were overbearing when only four balls left and wanted to take three of them. So many families were expected to take one ball? A fight for the balls would ensure in that case, what more being killed by the monster beasts.

“I don’t think this is a good idea.” Quentin eventually voiced his disagreement. Unable to accept such a suggestion, his expression soured as he spoke, “There are only three ancient clans, but each of you wants to take up one dangerous area, leaving over a dozen families here to kill and fight for the remaining area? Haha! That’ll only lead to more bloodshed!”

“That’s right! This is too much. How can you do this?” Several elders or family masters of first-class aristocratic families mustered their courage when Quentin stepped forward, and they immediately protested as well.

An old man from the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles stepped forward and smiled coldly with an arrogant temperament. “Overboard? Haha…! You people are only reclusive families! How can you compare with us, the ancient clans? We’re already honoring you by giving up one dangerous area and allowing you to take one of the balls. Don’t fail to appreciate our kindness!”

Chapter 1520

At this moment, another old lady from the Flying Eagle Sect came forward and, with a smirk on her face, sneered, “You shadow families aren’t qualified to discuss conditions with us. Let’s just agree with it. You guys will still have an opportunity, though it’s somewhat smaller, as we’re giving all of you one of the areas. Putting other things aside, which of your families dare to compete with us on the number of masters in the peak stage of the true god-level?”

Jack smiled coldly after he heard this. He stood forward and said to the old lady,” Honorable elder, what you say doesn’t sound right. If we compare individually, the number of our masters in the peak stage of the true god-level surely can’t compare with your so-called ancient clans, but what if we compare the total number? There are so many families here, and some of our second-class aristocratic families also have masters in the peak stage of the true god-level. What do you think if we add them all up? Are we still so few to you then?”

Jack paused momentarily before he continued, “Apart from that, isn’t it somewhat unsuitable for you to only give us one dangerous area when there are so many families here? If you insist on your suggestion, I can’t assure that our people won’t enter the other areas and take the balls from you. By then, things won’t happen as smoothly as you wanted it to, don’t you think?”

“That’s right. To heck with this, then. Why do we need to distribute the areas? Let’s just enter the areas altogether and see how it goes based on our individual strength!” growled one of the family masters from a second-class aristocratic family, who was also in the peak stage of the true god-level. If that was the case, their people could be distributed to two or even three dangerous areas. With that arrangement, the possibility of them obtaining the balls would greatly increase

“Young man, do you think we need to discuss this with you? Who do you think you are?” The old lady was furious and glared at Jack angrily

“Who am I? Haha… No matter what, I’m entirely against such a distribution from you people!” Jack smiled coldly. Many members of the White family, Cabello family, and even the Tudor Family also started to make a scene as they shouted their refusal loudly.

As the situation grew restless and chaotic, the old lady from the Flying Eagle Sect narrowed her gaze and

came rushing toward Jack in a flash. She tightened her fists as horrendous Chi came surging out from them.

“Young man, since you don’t know how to respect your elders, let me show you what I mean when I say there’s a great difference between us!” The old lady rushed up to Jack as her gaze was set ablaze, fully intending to punish Jack activated her Chi. Scoffing at her, he tightened his fist before he threw it to intercept her attack

“This young man dares to stand his ground still, forcefully resisting me?’ The old lady’s heart dropped when she saw how Jack still stood up bravely against her.

However, a smirk soon appeared at the corners of her mouth. Since this young man was so insensible, this punch would surely wound him badly. It might not be able to kill him, but it would be enough to display their strength. This would put enough pressure on the so-called shadow families to change their minds in the End.

“This young man is being ridiculous. He dares go against our Third Elder?” Many elders from the Flying Eagle Sect looked at the scene in front of them as if seeing the joke of the town, smirking coldly at them.

Something unexpected happened just a mere minute later…

Thoom!

What they saw, to their horror, was not the body of the young man zipping across the air due to the impact. Instead, the Third Elder of their ancient clan was sent flying backward.

Chapter 1521 Medz

Jack’s punch sent the Third Elder flying backward, so much so that she flew about 100 meters before she regained her footing.

“Ah!” The Third Elder grasped her right arm with her left arm. Her right arm was fractured due to the impact as the bones broke into several sections.

“How’s this possible? The Third Elder is hurt!”

“It looks like her arm has been broken, doesn’t it? Tsk, tsk! She might only heal in about eight to ten days, even if she took pills to heal her wound!”

“Oh my… What’s the fighting prowess of that young man? The Third Elder is a master with a higher combat power in our ancient clan, yet this young man bested her so easily? Her combat power is one of the highest among the elders in the peak stage of the true god-level!”

The disciples from the Flying Eagle Sect were shocked to the core as their eyes nearly popped out of their sockets. What happened had completely overturned their recognition.

In their opinion, it was impossible for masters of the younger generation to compete with masters of the older generation, no matter how strong they were. After all, not only were the elders in the peak stage of the true god-level, but they were also in this fighting prowess level for many years.

“This guy is too strong!” Daniella gulped. “I wonder what’ll happen if he uses his full power!”

“He must’ve used his full power, no?” Helena, who was beside her, also swallowed her saliva as she spoke with uncertainty.

However, they did not know Jack had already broken through into the peak stage of the true god-level, and he did not need to use his entire strength to go against someone with the same fighting prowess. The old lady would not be alive and wailing if he genuinely did.

“Ah!” The old lady wailed in pain, and her agony receded only a little after she took a healing pill out and consumed it.

“How dare you hurt an elder from the Flying Eagle Sect, young man? Let me teach you, one who doesn’t know the immensity of heaven and earth, a lesson!” The pavilion master of the Flying Eagle Sect felt shameful when he saw how an elder from his ancient clan had lost. He then released his overpowering aura and directly flew outward in a flash, colliding against Jack.

“The pavilion master has taken action. That guy is done for this time!

“That’s right. That guy is a dead man, now that the pavilion master has taken action!”

The disciples of the Flying Eagle Sect felt somewhat emboldened when they saw their pavilion master zipping straight into action.

However, they did not expect their pavilion master to be sent flying backward the next second while Jack remained where he stood and did not even falter a step back.

“This…” Not only the people from the Flying Eagle Sect, but even those from the Pavilion of Divinity were stunned by what they saw. It felt like an out-of-body experience, utterly surreal. A young man from a shadow family was capable of blasting their pavilion master away.

Chapter 1522

The master of the Flying Eagle Sect managed to stabilize himself with great difficulty before waving his slightly numbing hands forcefully. His expression seemed dark, hardened.

Despite using his Chi back there, he was still flung in the air. This proved how much Chi Jack had in him, and his energy was also overpoweringly scary.

In the end, Griffin softened temporarily. He smiled at Jack indifferently and said, “Then let us know what sort of arrangement will be more suitable in this case, young man. There are so many forces here, and it’ll be difficult to make divisions. We suggested the plan with consideration for you shadow families in

mind, so don't say I didn't warn you people when you incur too many deaths upon entering the dangerous areas guys, just because you didn't recognize our effort."

Many members from the shadow families were puzzled. Jack was incredibly strong, and it was somewhat terrifying. The pavilion master of the Skies Pavilion and the pavilion master of the Flying Eagle Sect could only back away as they gained no benefit in their fight.

Everybody turned to Jack, knowing that it was not an easy feat to make divisions and arrangements. After all, there were too many forces and it was difficult to make average arrangements.

Jack thought about it before he smiled at his opponent. "I have something in mind. It's unfair for us to get one while you get three of the remaining four dangerous areas. I'm sure you won't agree if we get three and you get one. In that case, let's divide equally. You three ancient clans can choose two of the dangerous areas and the remaining two belong to the shadow families!"

"Alright, this can work. Let's just separate it as such!" Quentin immediately stood forward and agreed to it.

To him, Jack was a young man with extremely strong combat power, and he would not be able to assassinate him on his own. On the other hand, having a few hands to help him out would do the trick.

First and foremost, he needed to stop considering revenge for the time being and fight for two dangerous areas. At least they would have the chance of obtaining one stone ball.

If they only had one dangerous area with one ball, he might not be able to win if he had to fight with Jack to get them.

"I agree as well!" The Tudors' family master, Karima, also raised her hand to show her agreement

"Yes, I agree as well!" The members of the other shadow families also agreed loudly.

On the other hand, members of the three ancient clans glowered at the suggestion. What should they do when there were two dangerous areas with three ancient clans?

However, the losses would be unbearable if both parties started fighting

“Let’s get on with it, then!” Joel was the first one to compromise. He sighed as he looked at Aureole and Griffin. “What do you two think?”

Both parties nodded. “Alright, let’s make the arrangement as such. However, we get to choose from the remaining four dangerous areas first!”

“Sure!” Jack nodded. Although he looked like he was not afraid of them, he could not act too forcefully toward the people from the ancient clans. After all, the other party had a deep background, and many members of the White family would die if a battle broke out.

On top of that, the shadow families were not as united as they seemed to be.

“We choose the Night Forest and the Dragon Head Black Mountain since our disciples are more familiar with these two dangerous areas. These places are also nearer to the position of us three ancient clans.” Joel thought about it and asked the other two pavilion masters, “What do you two think about it?”

“Yes, that’ll work just fine!”

Chapter 1523

The other two also nodded.

Jack and the others could only nod after they looked at each other. “Alright, then we’ll be going to Bright Snow Mountain and Black Windy Island.”

“Let’s move out.” The people from the three ancient clans left the area as they waved.

After they left, Quentin said angrily, “Those foxes just want to oppress everyone here!”

“That’s right. Among the four dangerous areas, the Night Forest and the Dragon Head Black Mountain aren’t as dangerous as the Bright Snow Mountain and the Black Windy Island. Those wretched people left two hauntingly dangerous areas for us!” Another elder from the Hunt family looked just as livid.

“Be content. If it wasn’t for Brother Jack’s strong combat power and fighting for two dangerous areas, we’d only be getting one!” interjected Master Ximenes with a bitter smile.” How should we divide the places among ourselves next?”

“What about this? Everyone had witnessed the White family’s prodigies’ combat power just now and the White family is even developing at an impressive rate, so I think it’s best if the White family go to the Black Windy Island. The other families can go there if you want, too,” suggested the smiling Quentin after pondering over the matter.

“Master Hunt, your family said nothing when we were fighting for others’ rights, even though your family is publicly known as the most powerful family among the shadow families. Jack was the one who stepped forward to fight the pavilion master or elder. Haha… Now that we’ve succeeded, you actually want us, the White family, to go to the Black Windy Island?”

Kenneth came forward and said with a cold smile, “I think you guys know that it’s not only dangerous in the seas of the Black Windy Island, but the seas are filled with numerous monster beasts. You wanted us to go because the journey won’t be smooth-sailing, don’t you? Aren’t you being a little shameless?”

“You…” Quentin was enraged at his claim, though his hands remained clasped behind him.” You’re overthinking it-I’m just thinking of what’s best for everybody. After all, we won’t easily get the stone ball after landing on Black Windy Island as it’s too dangerous. Jack has a high combat power and the White family is developing so nicely. Wouldn’t it be great if capable people do more work and help ease the burden of others?”

“If that’s the case, Master Hunt, does that mean the Hunts plan on going to Bright Snow Mountain?” Jack looked as if he did not care. He smiled calmly with his hands behind his back.

The flustered Quentin coughed and said, “Us Hunts will indeed be going to Bright Snow Mountain since we’re closer to the area! Isn’t that quite normal?”

Trenton then smilingly spoke,” The Lagorios naturally want to tag along and take a look at Bright Snow Mountain.”

“We’re going to Bright Snow Mountain, too!” The family master of the Church family also chimed in. Those three families worked together and cornered the other families previously, and many families knew about it. If they went to Black Windy Island on their own, who knew how many families would pinpoint on their Church family.

Obviously, being with the Hunts and the Lagorios would be the safest.

“Alright, then our White family will go to Black Windy Island!” Jack nodded and directly flew to the other side as he spoke,” Those going to Black Windy Island should come along. Those going to Bright Snow Mountain can stand with the Master Hunt.”

Daniella looked at Alejandro, who was next to her, and asked with a smile, “Father, shall… Shall we go to Black Windy Island?”

Chapter 1524

“Nonsense. Can we choose not to? It looks like your soul followed him! Don’t think I don’t know about this: you’re the one who’s head over heels for Jack while your sister is fake-dating him!” Alejandro grumbled as he glared at Daniella before flying toward Jack and his company.

“How’s that possible? Don’t the Cabellos harbor grudges against the White family? How did they become friends so soon?” Some from the shadow families muttered and gossiped among themselves when they saw this scene.

“Haha… Those grudges were something that happened long ago. What grudges can’t we let go of after so many years? Apart from that, the Eldest Young Mistress Cabello is in a relationship with Jack. They’re dating one another, which implies wedding bells might happen in the future. It looks like these two families have completely reconciled!”

Another family master smiled and said, “Those from the White family and the Cabello family aren’t weak in combat power despite being genial. We won’t be able to get anything good if we follow the Hunts, so let’s just follow the White family!”

The family master went and stood at Jack’s side with his people.

Without much thought, the Tudors went to follow the White and the Cabellos. Apart from that, the Ximenes family also stood at Jack’s side.

The remaining Norman family and the Zachary family from the first-class shadow families chose to fly toward the Hunt family. It was obvious they did not want to risk themselves in a place like Black Windy Island.

The people from the other second-class aristocratic families and third-class aristocratic families also knew how awful Black Windy Island was. Not only would it incur a long journey, but all sorts of dangers were on the road, let alone risking everything in a place like Black Windy Island.

Hence, 60-percent of those from the second-class and third-class aristocratic families went with the Hunts, choosing to go to Bright Snow Mountain. Only 4 0-percent of those people chose to go to Black Windy Island,

Nash’s gaze swept across everyone present as everyone was separated into two. He waved as he spoke,

“Alright, if that’s the case, let’s go!”

Everybody set out and went southeast.

After Jack and the others left, Trenton curiously asked Quentin, “Master Hunt, Jack had killed both your sons, and he has admitted to it. Don’t you want to get your revenge?”

“Nonsense. How can I not think about revenge?” Quentin gazed at the direction where Jack and the others left before adding, “I want to exact my revenge, but is getting revenge a simple thing? Didn’t you see that young man’s combat power? He has an impressively powerful combat power, and those two pavilion masters were no match for him-they failed before him. Do you think I can win against that young man under such circumstances?”

Trenton immediately said,” Those two pavilion masters might’ve underestimated him, though, so the young man had taken advantage of them. Had they not underestimated him, they might not-“

Quentin shot him a cold glare.” It can still be explained if you’re saying that the first pavilion master underestimated him, but the second pavilion master obviously didn’t. He only took action after his elder was wounded. He must’ve given his everything in that strike, but he was still blasted away!”

Chapter 1525

“This doesn’t mean Jack is stronger than them. After all, they merely exchanged regular blows back there, not with martial techniques or the likes. If they truly gave it their all, I don’t think Jack would’ve won!” Trenton was still unconvinced. He wanted to rely on the Skies Pavilion to wipe out the White family, and it was to his joy when Joel attacked Jack, but never did he anticipate Jack would send Joel flying in the air.

Joel was even embarrassed to act since so many members of the shadow families were looking at them. That was explainable, at least.

However, the Hunt family was no weak power, and it would be even better if the Hunts fought against

the White family.

“Yes, but I don’t have much certainty on the matter. The young man from the White family has power beyond what we expect. We might, however, be able to kill him if we have four or five people attacking him at once,” explained Quentin after he thought about it.

“How’s that possible? Even if the young man has fighting prowess in the peak stage of the true god-level, he had just broken through into that level not long ago. A master like you will be sufficient to go against several of them. If I throw in another one or two more, we can surely kill him!” insisted Trenton confidently.

“Don’t think about killing him yet. Let’s go and inspect the dangerous areas first. I also don’ t know if the ball is the precious item to help break through into the ultimate god level. Sigh… Let ‘s get that ball first before anything else. Let’s study it well; it’d be much easier to break through into the ultimate god-level so I can get my revenge then.” Quentin balled his fists tightly before he waved to them and said, “Come, let’s get going. Once we get to Bright Snow Mountain, we’ll act separately. It’d be up to our respective abilities to find and get the stone ball.”

“Jack, this…this is for you!” Daniella flew up to the White family’s flying sword and passed a small bottle to Jack.” This is the Bone Marrow Cleansing Water from our family. A person only needs one or two drops, and there’s enough for a dozen people in that bottle!”

“Is that so? Thank you!” Jack immediately kept the porcelain bottle into his spatial ring before he softly spoke, “Won’t you father and the others blame you if they knew you gave this to me, though?”

“Don’t worry. My father already knows about it, so it’s alright.” She giggled. “Also, my father also knows that I like you and that you’re just pretending to date my sister, though it’s not time for us to announce our relationship. We’ll be able to do that when the time’s right!” chirped Daniella as she smiled gleefully, filled with anticipation

After flying for some time, Jack stopped his flying sword and, turning to those with him, said, I believe everyone here is willing to follow us to Black Windy Island, but I’m sure everybody has their own agenda. I’d like to ask right now: Seeing as only one of those balls will be there, should the families separate to

go on individual searches once we get there? If we meet, do we wrest the ball or should we enter together and nobody takes action by themselves?"

"That's right. Only one of those balls is in that area, so what should we do? If we go separately, the sacrifice will definitely be greater, but if we don't, everybody will still fight for it when we see it!" A family master from a third-class aristocratic family frowned. After all, humans were selfish, and everyone wanted to get the stone ball. What if they managed to learn something from the weird stone ball and break through into the ultimate god-level? This was a precious item that everybody longed to obtain.

By the looks of it, the White family had a great relationship with the Cabellos and the Tudors. If the stone ball really appeared in front of everybody, they might fight to the death for the ball.

Chapter 1526

"I have no chance of defeating you if we're fighting for the ball." Alejandro glanced at Jack and smiled bitterly. "I've seen from your combat power just now, and I surely am no match for you."

Many were shocked to hear Alejandro's bold words. After all, he was the Cabellos' family master, a master of a first-class aristocratic family. Jack's strength must be exceptionally strong for such a family master to claim such high praise in an indifferent way.

With a tight-lipped smile, a family master of a second-class aristocratic family, who was in the final stages of the true-god level, suggested, "In my opinion, we'll only have such a chance if we travel separately. If we go our separate ways and no one else is with us, people with lower fighting prowess like us will have the chance to get the ball should we spot it."

Another family master countered, "Won't we be in trouble if we truly go our separate ways yet encounter extremely strong monster beasts on Black Windy Island? Apart from that, there are many indigenous masters on the island, and it's likely they'll attack us mainlanders on sight! These indigenous people must have quite a high fighting prowess, too! This is why the Hunts chose Bright Snow Mountain instantaneously!"

“That’s right! It’s true that our safety is guaranteed if we travel with masters from the White family, Cabello family, Ximenes family, and the Tudor Family –there is strength in numbers, after all. However, we won’t have a chance in obtaining the stone ball.” The previous family master sighed inwardly. They knew that an important treasure, something that everybody was willing to fight for, had appeared, but they could not stand on the same level as other families. They were inferior.

However, he could not miss this trip. He could have a strike of luck if he went, however slim it was, and not going at all would dissipate the opportunity entirely. It would be difficult for him to change his destiny in this lifetime if that was the case.

The thought of attaining the ultimate god-level greatly tempted everyone, even those in the demi-god-level.

The family master of the Ximenes family looked at Jack and asked, “Jack, my brother, what do you think about this?”

Jack’s combat power convinced him greatly, but he also felt that members of the White family would not act so cruelly or cunningly.

For example, they abhorred how the Hunt family and the other families worked together during the previous master-level competition. Who knew what would happen to those who followed the Hunt family into the dangerous area? It was then he weighed his options before he eventually joined the party that would leave for Black Windy Island.

At least he felt that Jack would be slightly open in the way he acted; it was better compared to fighting with those sinister people.

Jack thought of the situation before he answered, “I see that there are around two dozen families here. I’ve thought it through, and it doesn’t matter if it’s the White family or the Cabello family. Everybody might suffer huge losses if we go our separate ways. On the contrary, why don’t we work together? We need to work as one, especially after we enter Black Windy Island. If that’s the case, everybody won’t suffer greatly…”

“As for the balls, they’re rather peculiar items. Those from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings had looked into them for one whole night. They have three balls, and I’m sure that there are more than one person studying the balls, and it’s likely that three people are studying one ball each but failed to learn anything. I’m making a bold guess here. Since there are seven balls in the Seven Dangers, it’s possible that nothing can be learned from a singular stone ball.”

“What do you mean to say? Do we need to gather all seven stone balls and study them together to learn the secrets of breaking through into the ultimate god-level?”

Chapter 1527

Master Ximenes was stunned at Jack’s theory, but as he pondered over it, his expression slowly grew into one of surprise.

Jack nodded. “The stone ball isn’t some spirited grass or some spirited fruits, and everyone has seen that it’s not some martial art technique, either. It’s because of this that I’m sure nothing will come out of studying a singular stone ball, no matter who it goes to or how many years you’ll study it. It’s even possible that without gathering all seven stone balls, nobody will learn anything from it!”

“Your words seem to make sense. It’s best if we try to reduce the number of people sacrificed. After all, nobody wants too many people from their family to die in that area, right? This time, some forces might suffer huge losses if they don’t plan ahead. Look at the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, they've lost so many masters!” concurred Shirley with a nod. “Why don’t we do this instead: If we come across any spirited grass or fruits, we’ll gather them in a martial ring and give it to one of us for safekeeping. We’ll separate them accordingly after we leave the place. Of course, the families who do more will get more, and others will get less. Everybody. Will need to be ready to encounter monster beasts. How about that?”

“Good, good, that’s doable!” The members of the second-class and third-class aristocratic families were elated to hear the suggestion. They initially fretted that too many people would die and, more so, afraid that the first-class aristocratic families would take the stone ball or kill their disciples upon entering the dangerous area. The suggestion Shirley spoke out, however, benefitted them well as it would ensure the safety of their people all while they had a share of items from the dangerous area.

“Haha… It looks like we made a wise choice to follow Master White and the others!” one of the family masters chuckled and spoke heartily, and many resonated with his sentiment.

“Later on, no matter who obtained the stone ball first, nobody is allowed to take it once it’s stored in the martial ring. Everyone, what do you think of that?” added Jack after he weighed in mentally. “Surely, if the other party hasn’t stored it into the martial ring, it doesn’t belong to anybody, and we can still fight for it. What do you guys think?”

A man in the intermediate stage of the true god-level was delighted. “Yes, yes, that’ll work! Doesn’t this mean that those in the intermediate stage of the true god-level can have a go at it?”

“Alright. Since you’re the strongest person here, we’ll follow what you said!” Alejandro was initially sour about a few aspects yet he still agreed to it, knowing he would not have a chance in getting the ball without any rules as he was not as strong as Jack.

Jack nodded and continued, “However, we’ll have to set in stone one other matter right now, and that’s no matter who gets the stone ball in the end, it can be placed with their family. However, this stone ball belongs to everybody present. This means that if we’re able to obtain a martial art technique from this singular ball and break through into the ultimate god-level, we’ll need to make several copies to distribute them to each family. It’ll depend on individual talents to see who manages to break through into the ultimate god-level!”

“Amazing! Your suggestion carefully took everyone into consideration, Young Master Jack. Splendid!”

“Yes, Young Master Jack! We, the third-class aristocratic families, will have such a chance with this suggestion!” Many members of the third-class aristocratic families gazed at Jack in a different light. He and his White family were powerful people, yet he still considered their circumstances. Such a young man, yet he carried the entire world in his heart.

Chapter 1528

Jack looked at the other firstclass aristocratic families’ family masters and smilingly asked, “How about this? Master Cabello, Master Ximenes, what do you guys think?”

“Haha… No problem with that! If it truly is a martial art technique, we can surely share it with everybody. After all, this is for everyone’s greater good! We need to try our best in forming an alliance as it’ll benefit everyone.”

Alejandro chuckled and nodded in satisfaction, starting to admire his daughter’s insight. He had to admit that Jack was indeed a master. Not only was he talented, but he was also well-behaved. More importantly, he was extremely smart as he knew how to win over members of the second-class and third-class aristocratic families.

Members of the second-class and third-class aristocratic families who followed them might even try to indulge or butter up the White family after what Jack had said and done.

At such a rate, the White family would surely emerge as the best among the shadow families sooner or later.

On the contrary, the Hunts were always awfully domineering. Alejandro deduced that with their attitude, they surely would not cooperate with these second-class and third-class aristocratic families, let alone forming such gentlemanly agreements with them.

That attitude would surely make them fight the others upon entering the dangerous area, and they would suffer huge losses for it. It was even likely that these second-class and third-class aristocratic families would not maintain friendly relationships with the Hunt family-they would only be at odds and have a strained relationship instead.

Shirley thought about it and asked, “That sounds doable, Jack, but it’s under the circumstances where we manage to obtain martial art techniques from the stone balls. What if it’s a singular item? For example, what if the stone ball can be consumed after all? What if it’s only sufficient for one person to break through into the ultimate god level? We won’t be able to share that, would we? I mean, there are such possibilities!”

Jack had obviously thought about that as he instantly answered, “That’ll be much simpler; the stone ball

will belong to whoever obtained it. After all, this person fought hard to get the item, and we have to respect whoever it is, right? What I mean to say is that if the item can be shared, it belongs to everybody, but otherwise, it'll belong to the person who got it!

Shirley nodded in agreement. "That's doable! It's settled then. I think we should head for Black Windy Island now. The dangerous area of Black Windy Island is in Black Windy Forest, located in the heart of the island. All of us will need to work together when we get there."

"Alright, it's decided then. We'll bring the stone ball back and study it upon getting it. If we truly fail to learn anything from it, we'll ask the other families who'll have the stone balls to bring them for a meeting. We'll then see if all seven balls have to be placed together for us to learn something from it!" Nash was satisfied by his son's performance. Once they finished discussing things, everybody continued their journey and went straight for Black Windy Island.

As they were large in number and many of them were in the demi-god level, some of them were able to fly as quickly, so they only arrived at the beach located in the southeast direction two days later.

Alejandro turned to the crowd as he addressed, "Everybody, let's rest to recover our Chi. There are many monster beasts in these seas and we seldom travel by sea, so it's best if we rest to recover our Chi before we continue traveling!"

The group rested for a few hours before they continued to fly with their carpets, heading toward the vast sea.

Chapter 1529

"Our current altitude is at least one thousand meters away above sea level. Ordinary monster beasts won't find us so easily while monster beasts with low fighting prowess can't fly up here, so everyone should rest assured," said the First Elder of the Cabello family, Kevin Cabello, to the people as he looked beneath them. "I've traveled to some of the islands in these seas a couple of times now, searching for materials used in cultivating pills, and I'm quite familiar with a few things about these seas!"

Jack looked at the First Elder standing on the flying carpet and said, "First Elder Cabello, I'm interested in

your ancient tome. Since we have time to spare and a long journey before we get to Black Windy Island, may I look at your ancient tome?”

The smile on Kevin’s face froze as the corners of his lips quavered. This young man was daring enough to make such a request!

Did he not know that even their family master had to discuss with him if he wanted to take a look at his ancient tome, and he could only read it for a limited period?

He was momentarily stunned before he recovered a few seconds later, saying, “Haha! Young Brother Jack, there’s nothing interesting in my ancient tome as there are only introductions to some pill materials and pill remedies, apart from some information about medicine and other miscellaneous things.”

Kevin paused for a short moment before he lamented, “Sigh… I used to think that I’d find ways to break through into the ultimate god-level from my ancient tome. yet I find myself disappointed in not finding anything no matter how much I studied it. It was Then I understood that this is just a tome recording pill remedies and other medical skills with absolutely no regard toward our capability in breaking through into the ultimate god-level.”

Jack understood what Kevin was trying to say.

This old man’s reply was absolutely intelligent. As Jack had a high fighting prowess now and everyone held him in high regards, the old man would seem to be dishonoring Jack if he rejected the request. The old man also feared offending him.

It was why the old man said a lot but did not mention if he would lend Jack the ancient tome or let him look at them. The underlying meaning of his words, however, translated into his refusal to lend Jack the ancient tome.

Jack, instead of being enraged, smiled indifferently at Kevin and said slowly, “Don’t worry, First Elder

Cabello. I won't read your tome with nothing in exchange. As long as you promise to let me take a look at the ancient tome, I promise to exchange a second grade intermediate pill remedy with you. I can even teach you how to cultivate pills. What do you say?"

"A second-grade intermediate pill remedy?" Kevin's eyes lit up when he heard these words. This could be considered a precious item that they seldom saw.

Although he had many second and third-grade pill remedies in his ancient tome, who would not want more? As a person who knew how to cultivate pills, he craved to have such items.

Nonetheless, he glowered at the fact that Jack mentioned he could teach him to cultivate pills.

Kevin coldly teased, "Haha! Who would've thought you knew how to cultivate pills, young man. It looks like you're quite talented.

An alchemist who only has a small amount of knowledge like you plans to teach a second grade elementary alchemist like me how to cultivate pills? Aren't you over-exaggerating your abilities?"

He smirked as he continued to speak with contempt, "Tell me then: what pills do you plan to teach me? First-grade elementary, or first-grade intermediate?"

"Haha! This young man thinks of teaching our elder how to cultivate pills. Is he dreaming! Does he truly think having a high fighting prowess means he's also good at cultivating pills?" Many youths of the Cabello family also started laughing, though they spoke with faint envy. Jack's talents were enough to make them jealous.

Jack smiled indifferently. "Second-grade intermediate, how about that?"

Chapter 1530

“Second-grade intermediate?” Kevin was stunned and his eyes were soon filled with shock as his breathing turned heavy.

After all, pill remedies were not the only things important to an alchemist-their capability of cultivating a higher grade pill was even more important.

Being able to cultivate a higher pill grade marked the alchemist’ s growth to a higher grade.

Of course, the value brought on by the successful cultivation of a pill was incomparable to the previous pills. A second-grade elementary alchemist and a second-grade intermediate alchemist seemed to differ slightly by level, but this slight difference was enough to raise the latter’s position to be much higher than the other.

After all, the value of a second grade intermediate pill was several times more than a second-grade elementary pill.

“Goodness! Did I hear him correctly? This young man wants to teach our First Elder how to cultivate second-grade intermediate pills?” exclaimed some of the youths from the Cabello family after reeling in shock, thinking they were dreaming.

Some of the older generations frowned and asked in slight disbelief, “Is this a joke? Even if this young man knows how to cultivate pills, it’s impossible for him to learn how to cultivate second-grade intermediate pills on his own, isn’t it? Our First Elder had been studying pill cultivation for so many years, and he can’t possibly be inferior to this young man from the White family!”

Alejandro, who stood nearby and was unable to refrain himself, immediately stepped forward to remind Kevin, “First Elder, what are you waiting for? You can’t learn anything regarding the ultimate god-level from your ancient tome. Why don’t you let him read them? The two of you are alchemists, and it’s nothing strange to learn from each other, right?”

Kevin was still hesitant after he heard this. He thought about it and asked Jack, “Do you truly know how to cultivate second grade intermediate pills?”

Jack laughed and said, “Haha… Of course. Do you think I’d lie to you? After all, I’m the family master inheritor of the White family. How can I lie to you in front of so many people?”

Kevin was quiet for a short moment before adding another condition for himself, “If that’s the case, apart from giving me the second-grade intermediate pill remedy and promising to teach me how to cultivate these pills, you need to give me a second-grade intermediate pill first. How else will I know you’ll keep your promise to teach me in the future?”

“That’s right. You need to give him at least a second-grade intermediate pill!” Alejandro chimed in as it was great for them to get more benefits.

Some among them who understood pills were just as stunned after they heard the First Elder’s exclamation.

Two of them even moved forward to take a closer look, and there was indeed an obvious layer of cloud-like texture on top of the pill.

Chapter 1531

“They’re pill clouds, alright. A pill this guy studied and cultivated on his own can achieve such a level?” An old man gulped as he gazed at Jack in shock.

Kevin eyed the pill for a long while before he turned to Jack and hesitantly asked, “Are you truly willing to give me such a pill?”

Jack nodded. “Didn’t we have an agreement?”

“Yes, yes!” Kevin nodded. No longer was there doubt that Jack was not a second-grade intermediate alchemist. He believed that Jack was the one who cultivated such a pill.

Jack flipped his hand again and revealed a pill remedy for the second-grade intermediate pill before giving it to Kevin.

Only then did Kevin take out the ancient tome discolored in yellow out and passed it to Jack.

“Thank you, First Elder!” thanked the beaming Jack courteously.

“No need to be so polite. I’ve thought about it, and this ancient tome isn’t that important. I’ve studied it for so long and it doesn’t carry any use. I used to think that it had something to do with breaking through to the ultimate god level.” Kevin smiled bitterly.” This ancient tome doesn’t mean much to others, truly, but it’s important to people who know how to cultivate pills like us.”

Jack looked at the ancient tome and said to Kevin,” Truthfully, what I wish to learn from this ancient tome is information regarding diseases. I’d like to see if there are any pills that can help rescue a person who only has a thin breath of life left.”

Kevin had understood this ancient tome since long ago. Frowning at Jack’s confession, he then replied, “I recall such information is documented at more later pages in this ancient tome; you can read them. There's A pill and two other special items that can help save such a person.”

Jack’s eyes lit up after he heard this. “Thank you, First Elder Cabello, I’ll read that later. I wonder if there are any precious items that can make an incredibly stiff body turn somewhat softer?”

“An incredibly stiff body, you say?” Kevin’s interest grew when he heard this and he started thinking about it. “How peculiar. Don’t we martial artists like it when our bodies get sturdier and firm? It shows our capability of resisting attacks is stronger! You wish to become softer instead?”

Jack wore a bitter smile as he explained, “That’s not my intention. My eldest disciple’s body is at the brink of being honed into a puppet, and he only has a thin breath of life left. His body is lifeless and stiff like he’s a rock.”

Kevin paused the moment he heard Jack’s confession, and it was only after a while that he spoke, “I don’t think there’s a way to change such a situation on a human’s body. I remember not encountering such items to aid it in the ancient tome.”

However, he soon added, “Don’t be defeated. You can take a look at the pill and the two other precious items first. As for the precious item that you mentioned regarding changing the hardness of a person’s body, I believe we’ll come across the information in the future, even though it’s not recorded in the ancient tome. The world is a vast place, after all.”

Jack felt somewhat dispirited to hear his words. After all, the Cyro Pill was capable of freezing Fernando’s body only for a limited time, and they had 20 months left. If he failed to find the precious item to resolve the issue with Fernando’ s body, Fernando would die.

“I’ll find it; mark my words,” promised Jack, fists tightening as the fire in his eyes were ignited.

Chapter 1532 medz

Fernando’s status weighed Jack’ s heart with guilt. Jack swore he would do whatever it took to save him.

It was not just because Fernando was his disciple, nor was it because Fernando killed numerous of their country’s enemies and contributed immensely to Daxia.

Above all, the reason Fernando was in this situation was that Jack tasked him to search for information regarding the dragon scale’s whereabouts, and that led to Fernando’s downfall to his current state.

Of course, Jack’s body was completely consummated because they retrieved the dragon scale. That was why he could transform into a dragon after he broke through into the true god-level.

Jack's gaze averted to the lower half of the ancient tome and started looking through it page by page. It was only after some time that he spotted records of the three precious items Kevin mentioned

One of these items was a fourth-grade elementary pill known as the resurrection pill. The other two were the spirited fruit with the name 'psychic fruit' and the thousand-year-thrive grass. Both of these precious items were of high grading and were third-grade premium items.

Jack recorded the features of these two precious items and copied down the resurrection pill's remedy before he returned the ancient tome to Kevin.

"First Elder, the three items you mentioned must be these three. It looks to be a difficult feat to rescue my disciple. Two third-grade premium spirited grass and a fourth-grade elementary pill; do these things truly exist in this world? Only those in the ultimate god-level would dare use such things, no? My disciple is only in the demi-god level, can he use it?" Jack frowned. Although he had a place to start, he lacked the confidence.

Kevin looked at the items Jack recorded on the paper he held and nodded. "Since the ultimate god-level might truly exist, I believe these precious items exist as well. We didn't truly enter the dangerous areas- only a small group of people did. There might be some third or fourth-grade items in there, don' t you think? Apart from that, did you realize that although these precious items have high grading, they aren't spirited grass or pills for breaking through? Instead, these are precious items used to treat a human body or greatly benefit the soul and life energy. I'm sure it can be used!"

Jack's eyes lit up after he heard this. "Thank you for answering my questions, First Elder. It's true that this precious item is used to cure diseases and has nothing to do with breaking through. It contains an energy level that isn't very high and is slightly mild, even."

"Why did you return the ancient tome to me so quickly? Won't you pretend as if you can't search for the things you want, recording pill remedies of the other third-grade pills instead? There are a few fourth-grade pills here, and they're of the elementary level! They're all invaluable, yet you don't even want to read up on them?" Kevin glanced at Jack and thought highly of him. Jack, instead of writing down other things apart from those that he needed, merely took a brief look and wrote down the things he said he

wanted. Such an honest person was hard to come by.

“Haha! This ancient tome belongs to you, and I’m already satisfied that you’ve allowed me to read up on ways to save my disciple,” confessed Jack as he chuckled.

Unexpectedly, Kevin threw the ancient tome back to Jack. “We’ve got time to spare during the upcoming journey, so you can have it for a few days. Just return it to me once we get to Black Windy Island. I didn’t even allow the alchemists of the Four Ancient Clans to read them when they asked, yet I feel good about you, so I’ll lend it to you for a couple of days.”

“Are you sure?” Jack’s eyes lit up when he heard this, elated at his offer. True, he hesitated to read it for a longer period, and he merely skimmed quickly to memorize some of the third-grade pill remedies.

Chapter 1533

Jack eventually dropped the plan as he felt guilty in just doing that.

However, he did not expect he would impress Kevin with his honesty that eventually made him lend the ancient tome for a couple more days.

“Haha! Yes, I’m sure about it. As the First Elder of the Cabello family, would I lie to you? Of course, I hope you’ll continue to share whatever insights you have concerning pill cultivation!” Kevin laughed heartily; it was the first time he realized being generous would bring him great happiness.

“That’s for sure, haha!” Jack chuckled with mirth as well. He started reading through the ancient tome as he maneuvered the flying sword.

“First Elder, aren’t you being unfair? I asked you to lend me the ancient tome for a short while before, and not only did you ask me to go through it in front of you, but you even set a timer for me to read it. You set an alarm for me as if afraid I’d spend an extra minute on it!

“Now you gave it to Jack and allowed him to have several days with it? Dear me… I wonder if you’re the Cabello family’s First Elder. I suspect that you’ve become the White family’s First Elder!” said Alejandro, who was beside them, between laughter and tears.

“Nonsense! I am the First Elder of the Cabello family. You won’t be able to understand a thing, even if I allowed you to read up on it. You’re wasting your time just looking at it, seeing as you don’t know how to cultivate pills. Allowing Jack to study it will truly bring out the item’s value!” Kevin rolled his eyes at Alejandro, his words rendering the latter speechless.

The group slowly walked forward, and Kevin’s claim held true after all. Although there were many sea monster beasts in the seas underneath them, they could not fly up and attack them as they had low fighting prowess.

Occasionally, a few monster beasts in the semi-god level or elementary stage of the true god

Level flew up from the seas to attack them, but as the group was large in number and had masters among them, they slew the monster beasts mere seconds after they flew up.

That went especially for William Nash, Yoseph Smith, Sam Johnson, Adam McCarthy, Riley Blackwell, and others who broke through into the elementary stage of the true god-level. To familiarize themselves with the newly obtained strength, they intentionally went to the frontlines.

At that moment, Ethan Haays, Lana Zechs, and Christopher Yates had already achieved the peak stage in the semi-god level’s fighting prowess. They were only one step away from becoming a master in the elementary stage of the true godlevel.

Nash was elated over Jack’s disciples and held great expectations toward them.

Nash knew these people were like Jack and trained the True Dragon Claw technique. Once they would break through into the true godlevel’s elementary stage, they would have the same last resort as Jack

and can transform into true dragons. At that stage, their combat power would be much stronger compared to those with the same fighting prowess. Killing enemies of higher status than them would not be much of a struggle for them.

Although Yoseph, William, and the others were only in the true god-level's elementary stage, it would not be much of a struggle for them to kill someone in the intermediate stage of the true god-level.

With that, Nash was filled with sheer confidence in the White family's future development.

Chapter 1534

As the sky turned dark, everyone had used up quite a lot of Chi as they took to the skies for a long period. They then found an unoccupied island and spent the night to replenish themselves.

When Jack was free, he sat by the bonfire and read the ancient tome. He had new insights toward medicine related items with it.

He came across numerous pill remedies he had never seen before in the ancient tome and, fascinated by what he read, tried his best to memorize them.

The next morning, everybody resumed their journey.

As expected, they met more monster beasts compared to their first day, and these monster beasts had higher fighting prowess and combat power.

Needless to say, the deeper they traversed the seas, the stronger the monster beasts were.

Some of the small islands had some small forces, but these dared not come forward and enquired anything when they saw the large group of people, about two hundred to three hundred thousand people flying in the sky. They even secretly prayed that these people would not come down and cause

them trouble.

Sure enough, such a huge gathering of people attracted the attention of larger forces in the seas as time passed.

“That many of them? Do they look like they’re formed by many forces?” In a huge island was a force known as the Hall of Divine Royal, one of the largest among all the forces within these tens of thousand miles of seas.

As the clans in the seas seldom mingled with families of the mainland, not many people knew about this force.

However, all the forces located in these seas were absolutely terrified of this force and dared not offend them.

The leader of the Hall of Divine Royal sat in the huge dragon-shaped stone chair and looked toward his followers standing at both sides.

One of them knelt in the middle of the hall and reported, “That’s right. Many smaller forces grew fearful as they had no idea what these people were up to in the area. Not only were they many in number, but some even stood on an ultimate-grade spiritual tool. They felt that these people have quite a high fighting prowess, and they must be visiting our seas for some important matter.”

“Ultimate-grade spiritual tool?” The eyes of the masters lined at both sides lit up when an ultimate-grade spiritual tool was brought up. Such a precious item had seized the attention of these masters in the peak or final stage of the true god-level.

“Ultimate-grade spiritual tool? Formed by many forces? They must be reclusive families from the mainland. The four ancient clans on the mainland were always so pompous and didn’t like to deal with other forces. Since you guys say that they’re made up of many forces, it’s highly likely that these are reclusive families formed into a group.”

The Hall of Divine Royal's hall master's gaze narrowed as he stood up. "These mainlanders truly don't know the immensity of heaven and earth. They dare barge into our seas with such a large number of people. I just had a thought-should we teach them a lesson?"

An old man, one well-known for his incessant flattery to the hall master, gestured with his hands and spoke, "Hall Master, these people dare barge into our seas, not honoring us at all. I think we should teach them a lesson!"

The Hall of Divine Royal's hall master thought about it and said to the old man, "What do you suggest we do?"

"Haha…! Gather the surrounding forces that rely on us, and have them join us to surround them. There are many forces in our seas and a huge number of masters to boot. I don't think we need to fear these reclusive families. We can just surround them and ask them to hand over the precious items they have with them!"

"There are so many of them, and quite a large number of masters are in their ranks. They have quite a large number of flying items and even have all sorts of weapons. Tsk, tsk! We'd earn a large profit just by robbing them!"

Chapter 1535

The old man's eyes lit up as he spoke, "We have so many masters in the true god-level here. Together with all the forces under our lead, we'll outnumber them if we act together. I believe they won't dare to fight and will hand over their valuables."

Many people nodded in agreement at the thought, thinking they could achieve a great feat this time.

The Hall of Divine Royal's hall master turned to Elder Moseley, who stood at the side and said nothing, as he asked, "Elder Moseley, why aren't you saying anything? Any thoughts on this?"

Almost all the elders nodded and agreed to the old man's point of view, yet only Elder Moseley stood there as if he did not hear anything.

"Haha! What thoughts can Elder Moseley have? I'm confident that my idea is the best, and since everyone else agrees with me, it doesn't matter what other ideas he has!" Elder Hartman laughed, eyes filled with contempt and provocation as he did. After all, he and Elder Moseley were always at odds.

Elder Moseley did not like his flattering ways and had always called him out.

It was why elders of the Hall of Divine Royal were separated into two groups. Those who loved to flatter supported Elder Hartman, who was deeply loved by the hall master. Some of them followed Elder Moseley, who was extremely strong and loyal.

"Indeed, Hall Master, I do have a different opinion." Elder Moseley smiled coldly and stood forward.

"Really? Come, speak up. After all, this is an important matter, and I'd like to listen to everybody's opinion on it." The Hall of Divine Royal's hall master obviously dared not act briefly as the other party had over 200,000 people. Although they did not know the details of their fighting prowess, most of them were able to fly. Some of them stood on flying carpets while some traveled by flying sword. Not knowing their fighting prowess levels, he dared not act rashly.

"Hall Master, I think it's best if we don't act for now." Elder Moseley smiled indifferently as if he had looked past everything.

"Don't act for now, you say?"

"Quiet! Let Elder Moseley speak his mind before we make our decision!" The Hall of Divine Royal's hall master pressed his hand and gestured for everybody to quiet down.

Elder Moseley smiled indifferently as he theorized," Based on my understanding, the members of the

reclusive families aren’t so united, but they are capable of traveling together this time. The team seems to be formed by several forces, right? Why are they here in the seas? I assume they must be here to break through to the ultimate god-level!”

“Don’t act for now, you say?”

“Quiet! Let Elder Moseley speak his mind before we make our decision!” The Hall of Divine Royal’s hall master pressed his hand and gestured for everybody to quiet down.

Elder Moseley smiled indifferently as he theorized,” Based on my understanding, the members of the shadow families aren’t so united, but they are capable of traveling together this time. The team seems to be formed by several forces, right? Why are they here in the seas? I assume they must be here to break through to the ultimate god realm!”

Chapter 1536

“The ultimate god status!”

Everybody jolted when they heard those four words, clearly taken aback.

The ones there for the meeting were top-tier fighters, with their cultivation levels of at least the advanced stage of the true god status. As they frequently fought the monsters in the sea, the fighters from the sea territory had frightening martial arts skills. Their physical endurance had been forged through numerous experiences.

“Elder Moseley, you must be joking? You’re saying that they came to our territory to obtain the ultimate god status? What proof do you have?”

Elder Hartman was stunned for a moment. Then he managed to calm himself down and ask Elder Moseley.

“That’s right. Elder Moseley, don’t be fooled by them. We’ve been in the ocean for so many years and

have no idea about the ultimate god status. What clues can those on land find? Don't tell me that they're more familiar with the ocean than we are?"

An Elder behind Elder Hartman stepped forward as well, flashing a frosty smile.

Yet Elder Moseley ignored the two of them. He faced the master of the Hall of Divine Royal again and raised his hands in a fist-to-palm salute. "Think about it, Master. The forces in the ocean have never been to land for so many years, and the land forces also rarely seek us out, right? Sometimes there would be visitors, but they're all smaller powers, with only a few dozen people among them. And they all came to search for spirited grass or other things."

Here, Elder Moseley paused for a while before continuing, "Now, so many of them have come to us in one go. They even managed to get the divided shadow families to form troops. What does this tell us? That means there's something that moved them! That's why I think they've definitely found some clues about the ultimate god status. That can only be the reason they're coming to us!"

The anger in the master of the Hall of Divine Royal's eyes dimmed when Elder Moseley dissected the situation.

"Master, I think Elder Moseley is correct. This must be it. Otherwise, these people would not simply enter our sea territory. After all, they've traveled far to come to the ocean here. It would have been a long and tiring journey, and there are frightening monsters along the way too. Why are they doing all this? There must be something that all of them desire to attain!"

The Elders behind Elder Moseley were also excited.

"Seems like there is the possibility!"

Even Elder Hartman could not help but rub his nose, conceding oftly.

After he said that, he asked Elder Moseley, “What should we do then, Elder Moseley?”

Elder Moseley gave a frosty smile. His eyes gleamed with hands behind his back and said softly, “It’s simple enough. At any rate, we can’t do what you suggest, which is to surround them and snatch their possessions. We need to understand the situation carefully, and only approach them once we know what to do! Then we’ll make a sudden appearance and see if we can get the treasure that will enable one to break into the ultimate god status!”

“That’s right. Now, we can’t alert the enemies before we’ve made a move! We just need to get the forces in the surrounding islands to pay close attention to these people!”

The master of the Hall of Divine Royal, Matthew Charles, nodded his head. He was excited.

His father had been a master among masters. When he was over thirty years old, he had already broken into the peak of the true god status.

Yet they still could not find a way to break into the ultimate god status. His father could only grow old, and he watched such a powerful fighter remain stuck at

He passed away from old age with no way to extend his life.

At over forty years old, he was already a master as well. He had also broken into the peak of the true god status at a young age. He did not want to wait around for death like his father. All this while, he had been assigning people to find clues about the ultimate god status.

It was a pity that it was extremely difficult for them to obtain any clues at all.

Chapter 1537

“Master, we can’t alert them before we make a move, but I think that we can’t just leave them alone either!”

No one thought that Elder Moseley would speak up again at that moment.

“What do you mean? Didn’t you say that we can’t just attack them? If that’s the case, why would you say we can’t leave them alone? What are you talking about?”

The master of the Hall of Divine Royal frowned and asked.

“We can quietly investigate and see how strong they are! Or check to see if they’re truly here for the ultimate god status!”

Elder Moseley replied, smiling.

“How are we supposed to check what their motives are? We won’ t be able to do so if we don’t take action!”

Elder Hartman waved his arm. He felt that Elder Moseley was joking around

“It is simple enough. We just need to send a small group of fighters to attack them. We’ll tell them to get out of the ocean and not think about taking our resources. It’ll be enough so long as we threaten them. If they insist on moving forward and are not afraid of offending us, this means that they’re definitely here for the ultimate god status. After all, the land has plenty of martial resources too. There’s no reason for them to risk their lives to come here!”

Elder Moseley revealed his thoughts.

“We’ll get the people from White Sands Island to test them. They brought plenty of people here-over

ten thousand of them. And there are four or five me fighters at the peak of the true god status. Our forces will be enough to test them!”

The master of the Hall of Divine Royal gave the order after thinking about it.

“All right. We’ll pass your orders along!”

Elder Moseley did a fist-topalm salute. The crowd quickly dissipated.

At that moment, Jack and the others were drawing closer and closer to Black Windy Island. When the sky darkened, everyone searched for an uninhabited island and stayed there temporarily to replenish their Chi, just like before.

Meanwhile, Jack was deeply engrossed in the ancient tome. He was completely focused and tried his best to remember all the alchemical methods and the ingredients to create pills.

“First Young Mistress Cabello, isn’t Jack your boyfriend? Why aren’t you going over to talk to him? I noticed that the two of you barely exchanged a word throughout the journey!”

A young master from a second-class family came before Helena, Daniella, and the others and asked, grinning.

“He’s focused on reading the ancient tome. I won’t disturb him!”

Helena smiled, but she heaved an internal sigh. After all, such a wonderful man was not her boyfriend. She felt like she had missed an opportunity.

She looked at Daniella beside her. Admiration sprang in her heart again.

“That’s true. That ancient tome is pretty famous, and it’s very precious. It’s a blessing to just be able to lay your eyes on it!”

The young man smiled and added, “First Young Mistress Cabello, you and Young Master White are truly a match made in heaven. We’re all waiting for the day of your wedding!”

Chapter 1538

Helena’s cheeks reddened when she heard this. She glared at him. “Don’t talk nonsense. Nothing’s happening yet. I haven‘t known him for too long anyway!”

Helena then looked at Jack again. “Actually, he’s not as perfect as you think he is!” she said.

“My goodness. First Young Mistress Cabello, such a man is not perfect enough? His cultivation level is so high, and he’s young and handsome. Even the masters of the Four Ancient Clans are no match for him. Besides, he knows alchemy. Even I think such a man is perfect. And you think he’s not?”

The man’s expression was full of disbelief after he heard that.” The women in our family have all become his fans, and they all dream of getting married to him. And you think he’s not good enough?”

Helena was furious. She shot him a vicious glare and spoke angrily, “How can one person speak so much nonsense? Why does it matter to you if he’s perfect or not? Leave!”

The man did not know why Helena would get so riled up. He could not help but murmur an apology and quickly return to his family.

Daniella looked at her sister from the side, biting her lip as she sank deep into her thoughts. It was true that Jack was fantastic, from her sister’s furious behavior, she probably had some feelings for him too.

The next morning, everyone moved out again. Yet at noon, a group of people appeared before them, blocking their way.

“It seems like we’ve attracted the attention of some forces here!”

Shelby looked at the people in front of them and could not help but grin. “They didn’t even bring thirty thousand people. And they wish to fight twenty thousand of us? Are they naïve or stupid?”

“Who knows!”

Jack smiled, unable to bother himself with them. He resumed reading his book. “I’ll just keep reading. These people will be a piece of cake!”

Those people flew a little closer before stopping. One of them, an old man, looked at the crowd before him for a while before stepping forward. “If our eyes have not deceived us, travelers,” he said, “you do not belong to the forces of the ocean. You’re from the mainland, am I correct?”

Alejandro stepped forward and raised his hands in a fist-topalm salute. “Indeed. We have come from the mainland,” he said. “We have something to do in the ocean. I hope we have not caused any disturbance among you.”

“Heh. You’re probably here to find treasure. You rarely come here on a normal basis, so we’ve never been bothered about you. We didn’t interfere even when fights broke out.

“But this time, you’ve brought so many people with you. Aren’t you going overboard? Don’t look down on us from the ocean-big and small forces alike!”

The old man chuckled and waved his hand at the crowd. “If you know what’s best for you, I think you should just turn back. I‘m here to advise you. Otherwise, it’ll be terrible if we were to attack you!”

“Attack us? We’re not some motley crowd here.” Alejandro replied, chuckling.

"Might as well try it then?"

The old man's eyes narrowed slightly, his palms surged with aura, and with a wave of his hand, a terrifying flying sword made up of aura actually appeared.

This flying sword was incomparably huge, it was actually more than ten feet long, and after it appeared, it lifted upwards, quickly flew over and then chopped downwards.

"Hmph!"

As soon as he saw this attack, Alejandro sensed that this old man was not that simple, and that this fellow judging from his appearance, must be a strong person at the peak of the True God realm. Moreover, this attack of his had such ferocity, it seems that he did not have any intentions of staying his hand.

He likewise clenched his fist and blasted out, and instantly, an incomparably huge fist of aura appeared, and the fist charged straight towards that flying sword with a terrifying wind-breaking momentum.

"Boom!"

A huge roar rang out between the two, a terrifying impact that sent a wave of fluctuations scattering in all directions, so much so that many people were blown over by a terrifying wind, and even those with low cultivation levels were so frightened that they took two steps back.

A ripple appeared on the sea below, showing how terrifying the strike of two peak True God realm powerhouses was!

"Bang!"

That old man on the opposite side, although also very formidable, was ultimately not a match for Alejandro, and was directly blown back quite a bit, his entire face instantly turning somewhat ugly.

"Sorry but this time we do have an important matter, so we have to continue on. I hope that senior can make our journey easy!"

Alejandro looked at the other party, and with a wave of his palm, he took out several second grade intermediate grade spirit herbs and floated them in front of the other party.

"Fine, since you guys insist on doing so, then you can continue on, I'm just reminding you guys that the forces inside our sea are not that weak, some of the islands have a lot of strong people on them!"

The old man narrowed his eyes and after thinking about it, he put his things away, before he waved his hand and signalled for everyone to make way, allowing Jack and the others to leave.

Once Jack and the others had left, there was a middle-aged man, who then turned to the old man and said, "Family head, do we just let the other side go? Didn't the top tell us to properly test the other party?"

"Nonsense, do you really want to fight the other side? There are so many people, even the people from the Divine King Hall wouldn’t dare to make a rash move, letting us test the waters first, do you really think we can beat them?"

The old man gave the middle-aged man a good-natured look before saying, "Besides, I've already tried it out, that man was very strong, and there was a young man who sat on top of that flying sword and read a book without even looking at us. It means that the other side has no fear of us, it means that the other

side is confident that the others can easily take care of our group, we are only 20,000 to 30,000, how can we fight with hundreds of thousands of people from the other side?"

"What the family head said is true, if we really fight and anger the other side and kill us all, that's not even possible!"

Another middle-aged woman also stood out, "Although, we are a force under the God King Hall, but in such a case, it will be fine. Earlier on when I looked carefully, the other party had some families and quite a lot of people. Such families must be big families, so they most certainly will have a lot of people in the peak stage of the True God Realm. With their families' strongest people combined, we are definitely no match for them!"

The old man looked at the middle-aged woman and nodded in satisfaction before he said to the middle-aged man, "You must learn from now on to look at the situation more, to let us test it out, and not let us have to fight with each other, if we really fight, we are no match for these people! Let's go, go and tell the top that we have fought with the other side, and that they're very powerful, afterall, they don't listen to advice at all!"

Chapter 1539

"Then why don't we try it out?"

The old man's eyes narrowed slightly, and he activated his Chi, pooling it in his palm. With a wave of his hand, a frightening sword made of Chi appeared.

The flying sword was enormous, nearly over twenty feet in size. After it appeared, it lifted upward and zipped over, then it slashed down.

“Hmph!”

Alejandro sensed that this old man would not be an easy opponent after seeing his attack. From the looks of it, the man must be a fighter at the peak of the true god status. Furthermore, his first attack had been so ferocious. It was as though he had no intention of holding back

He also clenched his fist and punched it outward. Suddenly, a giant fist made out of Chi appeared. The fist had a frightening aura, and it flew toward the flying sword.

Bang!

A huge bang rang out in the space between the two. The terrible clash caused waves of energy to ripple in all directions. A frightening wind rushed over many people, and those who were of lower cultivation levels were so scared that they took two steps backward.

Ripples appeared in the water of the ocean beneath them. One could tell that the two fighters at the peak of the true god status had such frightening attacks!

Bang!

The old man across him was strong, but he still was no match for Alejandro. He was pushed backward, and his face turned pale.

“I’m sorry, but we truly have something urgent to attend to here. That’s why we must move forward. I hope that you can let us pass through!”

Alejandro looked at the opposing side. He waved his palm and took out a few stalks of second-grade intermediate spirited grass, making it float toward them.

“Fine. Since you’re adamant about it, you may continue to press forward. We’re just warning you that the forces in the ocean are not weak. There are plenty of fighters on the islands too!”

The old man closed his eyes and took the items after giving it some thought. Then he waved his hand, signaling for everyone to clear a path, allowing Jack and the others to pass through.

After they had left, a middle-aged man spoke to the old man, “Master, are-are we letting them go just like that? Didn’t our superiors tell us to investigate the situation properly?”

“Stop talking nonsense. Do you seriously want to fight them? Not even the Hall of Divine Royal dares to attack them rashly, and instead, they told us to test them. Did you really think that we can beat them?”

The old man looked at the middle-aged man impatiently.” Besides, we’ve already tested them. The man from just now was very strong, and there was a young man who was reading a book on the flying sword,” he said. “He did not so much as spare us a glance from start to finish. What does this mean? It means that he’s not afraid of us in the slightest. It means that he’s confident in the others-he’s confident that they’ll be able to defeat us easily. We only have thirty thousand people. How are we supposed to beat them?”

“You’re right, Master. If we had truly fought and angered them, they might just kill all of us!”

Another middle-aged woman also stood up. “Although we’re a force serving the Hall of Divine Royal, we’ve done enough to test them. I’ve observed them closely just now. Some of the families among their numbers have many people. They’re definitely the bigger families, so they’ll have quite a few fighters at the peak of the true god status. Coupled with the fighters from the bigger families, we’re no match for them here!”

The old man looked at the middle-aged woman and nodded his head in satisfaction. He spoke to the middle-aged man, “You’d better learn and observe the situation carefully next time. They did not say that we needed to fight them by sending us to test them. If we truly fought, we would have been no match for them! Let’s go. We’ll report to our superiors that we’ve tested them and that they’re very strong. Furthermore, they didn’t even listen to our advice!”

Chapter 1540

“There are many fighters? And they’re still moving forward?”

That night, the master of the Hall of Divine Royal called the other Elders to gather. He told everyone about the report he had received.

After he told them the report, he said, “Judging from their line, of course, they’re heading for Black Windy Island!”

“No way. They’re really going to Black Windy Island? There are plenty of forces there. They’re no match for us either, but if those people are heading straight to Black Windy Island to look for something, heh, those forces will probably attack them!”

Elder Hartman chuckled and said.

“That’s a danger zone and that many people are heading into a danger zone? Black Windy Island is extremely dangerous, we can’t even enter easily. Why are they going there? Unless it so happens that they are able to find the clue to break into the ultimate god status there.”

Elder Mosely frowned and began to consider the matter seriously.

“What are we afraid of? The Hall of Divine Royal is so powerful. Conversely, those families are just a motley crew who only banded together recently. A group like that can be easily broken up. Once they enter, they might try to kill each other for some kind of treasure! Heh, Won’t it be easy for us to get what we want then?”

Elder Hartman had a nonchalant expression.

“I hope what you said is true. If that group of people is still united after entering Black Windy Island, then they’ll be extremely strong for us to attack. With such powerful forces and so many people, they’ll definitely be able to venture deep into Black Windy Island!”

Elder Moseley frowned in worry.

“Never mind. We’ll inform the people on the other islands about this tomorrow morning. The people on the few dozen islands around here must prepare themselves adequately. We’ll gather and head for Black Windy Island! This time, if there is truly a treasure that enables one to break into the ultimate god status, we must get it at all costs!”

The master of the Hall of Divine Royal could not wait to head out. He clapped his hands and decided on the matter promptly.

The next morning, the forces inhabiting the few dozen surrounding islands that submitted to the Hall of Divine Royal all gathered together. They quickly went toward Black Windy Island

Another day went by. Black Windy Island finally appeared before Jack and the others.

“Is that Black Windy Island? What a strange place!”

The eyes of Jack and the others brightened as they watched the island.

Last night, Jack had finished reading the contents of the ancient tome, and he memorized everything. Only then did he pass it back to Kevin Cabello.

“It’s truly a strange island!”

Daniella stood beside Jack and could not help but be surprised.

The island before them was far larger than the islands that they had seen before. More importantly, a dark, swirling vortex of dark clouds hung over the island at a low altitude. It gave off an ominous atmosphere.

“Jack, there are many forces on the island. We’ll probably run into a few obstacles if we are headed straight there, right?”

Master Ximenes asked Jack after thinking about it, “See now, why don’t we head for this island here first and let everyone replenish their Chi? Once it’s dark at night, we’ll sneak onto the island and enter the forest there.”

Chapter 1541

It was evident that Jack had become the strongest fighter there. Even the master of a first-class family like the Ximenes family had to first seek out Jack’s opinions and speak in a deferential tone.

Jack nodded his head. “I was also thinking about how we should enter the island! Then we’ll enter at night! For now, let’s rest at the island over there. There are plenty of trees for us to hide temporarily!”

Soon, everyone flew over and temporarily hid on the small island.

At night, everyone moved out for Black Wind Forest.

“It’s time, let’s go and be careful everyone. The deeper we go into this forest, the more monsters we’ll encounter. Furthermore, there are plenty of monsters in the True God Realm!”

Kevin looked ahead and saw that there was nothing but trees before him, and his eyes turned solemn.

Fortunately, there were many fighters. It seemed safer to enter the forest that way. If everyone had acted on their own and decided to fight among themselves without proper strategies, the last person walking out was lucky enough if they could emerge with half their body intact, what with the number of ferocious beasts inside.

“Roar!”

In the distance, a frightening roar of a monster rang out. The noises made some people subconsciously uncomfortable.

“For those of higher cultivation levels, try to stay on the perimeter of our group-lead the front and flank the sides. The ones who are at the demi-god status should walk in the middle. Also, this forest is massive. Don’t walk too close to each other, everyone. If we scatter ourselves a little, our search radius will be widened!”

Jack thought for a while before coming up with another suggestion not long after they entered the forest. When everyone heard that, they all thought that it was a good idea. They followed Jack’s instructions without hesitation and forged forward.

Yet what Jack and the others did not expect was that after almost two hours since they first entered the forest, the Hall of Divine Royal people and the aboriginal families had also entered the perimeter on Black Wind Island. There were over thirty thousand of them in total.

“Let’s go. This is our chance to find the secret to break into the ultimate god status!”

The master of the Hall of Divine Royal looked forward and waved his hand. He led everyone to fly in.

“Roar!”

In front of them, multiple roars rang out. Hundreds of giant Storm Wolves appeared before Jack and the

others.

“These monsters have high cultivation levels. It seems like many of them are at the intermediate stage of the demi-god realm!”

Nash gave a bitter smile as he watched the monsters before them. “We’ve just entered, and we’ve already encountered so many monsters already. It’s truly dangerous here. Monsters like these are hard to find in the treasure spots on the mainland!”

“Young Master Jack, leave them to us. It just so happens that these monsters will be a good exercise for us!”

Adam, Riley, and the others were all excited. They were looking at the blood-sucking monsters as though they were a flock of sheep.

“You must be exaggerating. You all are already at the beginning stage of the true god status, Adam. These monsters are perfect for us!”

Lana’s face darkened, speaking unhappily.

“All of you, attack together and get rid of these monsters as soon as possible. We need to go in as fast as we can. It’ll be even better if we can avoid alerting the forces on this island and other islands. The aboriginals on this island are not very strong, but they have plenty of fighters in the True God Realm too!”

Nash told them straight away. “It’ll be harder for them to find us if we venture deeper. After all, they won’t come this far into the forest if they have nothing to do.”

Chapter 1542

Yet Jack shook his head. “I think we’ve been discovered long ago,” he said, smiling bitterly. “Otherwise that group of people would not have shown up yesterday! Besides, they only fought with Master Cabello for a short while before letting us pass through. Isn’t that strange!”

“I don’t think it’s something we should be concerned about. They must have seen the number of people we have but attempted to fight Master Cabello. Naturally, they were frightened by how strong Master Cabello was, and so they left!”

Three old men from third-class families spoke up after thinking about it.

Yet Jack flashed another bitter smile. “We have so many people. They should have spotted us from afar. It’s illogical for them to not have any good fighters among the many people they have. Since they knew of our circumstances and came over to test us, they definitely have some hidden motive!”

“So you’re saying that we’re already being watched. But if they let us go so easily, it seems that they want to know where we’re going. If this is the case, they’re probably following us now!”

Nash thought about it and added, “But this is something we didn’t predict. This is probably why the Hunt family members chose to go to Bright Snow Mountain.”

“Let’s go. At any rate, we all must be careful!”

While everyone was speaking, Ethan and the others had already killed the wolves before them. They all moved forward again, going deeper into the forest.

The forest was extremely dangerous. By the time the sun rose, Jack and the others had already encountered many monsters.

However, since they had many people among their ranks, some of the smarter monsters chose to run away after spotting them.

Still, some monsters were extremely vicious. They rushed forward when they spotted humans, being dumb beasts. Some of the monsters had even formed packs of hundreds. They were truly fearsome.

Since the outer ring was formed by those who had higher cultivation levels and those of the demi-god status were protected by everyone in the middle, only two or three men had suffered minor injuries once night fell. There were no casualties for now.

At that moment, the people of the Hall of Divine Royal were also bringing a huge group of people, marching forward relentlessly into the forest trying to find the tracks that Jack and the others left behind.

“These people didn’t even rest at night. They’re moving in fast!”

Looking at the field of monster corpses before him, Elder Moseley was taken aback.” These people are smart. They’ve already encountered so many beasts along the way, but we haven’t found a single human corpse. They’re undoubtedly strong, and they seem united! If they don’t get scattered, it’ll be hard for us to take them down even if we run into them!”

Elder Hartman was unhappy when he heard this. “Elder Moseley, why are you giving them so much credit and looking down on your own men?” he said, expression glum. “We have far more people. Even if they have a few more fighters than us, we have nothing to be afraid of, right? Besides, they helped us kill so many monsters along the way. Let’s not follow behind them too closely. We’ll wait till they’ve lost a good number of men before catching up to them. This way, we’ll be able to attack them while they’re weak. They'll be easy pickings!”

Another Elder immediately smiled and said, “Terrific. Elder Hartman’s plan is terrific. If we go a little later and wait for them to clean up the powerful monsters before us, we won’t encounter that many beasts along our way. Haha. This way, we’ll definitely win!”

They did not think that Elder Moseley would flash a cold smile instead. “Are you sure you want to go in later? If they go in fast, and we’re too slow, they’ll be able to obtain the treasure that enables them to break into the ultimate god status,” he said. “If they have a master who can make the breakthrough, what should we do? Don’t tell me you think you can handle an ultimate god status’s fighting power?”

Chapter 1543

Elder Hartman’s face fell upon hearing Elder Moseley’s words. Nevertheless, he was stubborn enough, refusing to admit his defeat. “Breakthrough to the ultimate god level? Do you think it’s that easy? It took me two to three years to break through to the peak stage of True God Realm, what’s more, I failed several times in between. Besides, within our territory, a lot of people indeed broke through to the peak stage, but it’ s almost impossible for one to break through to the peak stage of True God Realm in one go, am I right? Not to mention that the ultimate god realm is colossal.”

“No matter what, we can’t afford to take the risk, we should advance faster. What if the thing that could help us to break through to the ultimate god level is actually some spiritual fruit, and only a few of them exist? They might take and consume everything without leaving some to us! In that case, we won’t stand a chance to get to the ultimate god realm at all!”

The Master of the Hall of Divine Royal pondered on the matter, then again he turned to an old man, “How about this, Elder Lock, you take a few men with the strength of the late stage of True God Realm and scout around for the situation. If there is something strange, return and inform us immediately! You must not delay any second and move fast! We have too many people with us, and the risk of us being discovered by the other party is high. So, it’d be better for you to go in smaller numbers and scout around for us!”

“Roger that, Hall Master!”

Elder Lock arched his hand and bowed to his hall master. He then went and got four to five men with the strength of the late stage of True God Realm to go ahead of the group to explore the situation.

“I remember that the pavilion master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings told us before that the strange stone ball is located on top of a powerful tree, and in that tree is inside a very deep place in the dangerous land! The master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings is generous enough to help us by providing this information. With this piece of information, we can save a lot of time and avoid unnecessary troubles!”

Jack said as he flew with his men.

The sky above the island had always been covered with dark clouds even during the daytime. And because of the dark clouds, the sunlight was dim, and the place did not look any different from the night

Furthermore, the monster beasts had seemed to be completely adapted to the poor-light situation. their visions were good even with minimum lights. Therefore, Jack and his men did not dare to fly at full speed even though they were all strong fighters. They could only carefully travel through the sky.

Roar!

A terrifying sound shot through the sky. Jack and the others looked toward the direction of the sound and realised that there were pairs of eyes staring at them from the front.

“Guys, look! My goodness! If we don’t look carefully, we can’t even see that they are right in front of us! Black feathered monster beasts and they look like they belong to the family Accipitridae-eagles!”

One man spotted the black feathered beasts in front of them; he could not help but gulped and ceased flying immediately.

This time it seemed like there were many monster beasts like this appearing in their journey to the middle of Black Windy Island.

“Judging from the situation, I think there are thousands of them, right? Dammit! This kind of eagle-type

of the monster beast is very annoying, they are extremely fast, even worse, they are black feathered! It makes it hard to see and track them, especially when the dark clouds above us are like camouflage for them. Not only that, they are also powerful beasts!"

An old man who possessed the strength of the early stage of True God Realm-said in a gloomy tone after seeing the beasts in front of him.

"I think they have more than a few thousand; looking at the situation, I'm afraid that there are more than ten thousand, and many more of them hiding in the dark clouds, which is even more difficult for us to locate them!"

Jack looked at the dark sky and his expression turned solemn. He heard that the Black Windy Island was the most hazardous and most dangerous place of all Seven Dangers. Now it made sense that the Pavilion of Gods and Kings went to the other three dangerous places but not this island and the same went to the other ancient clans-they refused to explore this island. The dark clouds here were already a huge problem for the explorers, not to mention the beasts here.

Chapter 1544

"Ten thousand of them? Crazy! If they fly into the dark clouds, descend toward us at full speed and attack us, it'd be hard for us to deal with!"

Nash, who stood beside Jack, fully trusted Jack's analysis. After all, Jack was a second grade intermediate alchemist, his ability to focus and his patience were much stronger than any one of them. So, Jack naturally could sense the situation, the number of beasts, and the fluctuation of Chi energy in the cloud more accurately than all of them.

"Everyone, please be careful. The flying beasts are hovering orderly in the dark clouds above us; obviously, they prepare to attack us. We have many strong fighters, but we can't be careless at all! We must strive to reduce our losses."

Jack stared at the sky above him and said to the crowd.

Roar!

Another sound of roars descended from above; waves of black figures charged toward Jack and the group like black rain pouring heavily onto the ground.

“Stay focused! Here they come!”

Once Jack noticed the beasts initiated the attack, he waved his hand, and a huge palm-shaped Chi attack flew toward the sky at once!

“Kill them all!”

The other people immediately controlled the Chi energy in their bodies and cast out a few blasts against the flying beasts who were bolting down toward them.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Those black eagle beasts were extremely fast, with the advantage of their speed and agility, several of them managed to dodge Jack and his men’s attack and directly rushed into the crowd. The beasts used their sharp claws and grabbed a few people.

Bang!

A man of the level of the early stage of the demi-god realm could not dodge the claw attack. His head was grabbed and crushed by the sharp claws, bursting into minced meat. He died instantly on the spot.

Boom Bang Boom!

However, many black eagles were hit by everyone's attacks as well, and they were blown away, falling down onto the ground, lifeless.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Those black eagles, who were in the dark clouds, bolted down toward Jack and the crowd as well. Some of the black eagles flapped their colossal wings and in an instant, Chi attacks in the form of wind blades were shot out of their colossal wings, flying toward Jack and the group.

"These beasts can actually perform martial technique?"

One of the elders gasped at the situation before his eyes. He could not help but his face immediately turned unsightly.

Alejandro, who stood aside, explained patiently, "Some monster beasts are more spiritually intelligent, and their bloodlines are more noble and precious. This bloodline allows them to inherit martial techniques. Now, look at the two black eagles over there. They're obviously at the middle stage of True God Realm, and have probably killed more than a dozen elite fighters!"

Gruesome and terrifying roars pierced through the sky incessantly when the black-feathered beasts were killed. Only a few of the higher combat prowess managed to survive. They soon flew away into the distance when they noticed that the odds were not in their favor.

"We lost more than thirty men in this battle and hundreds of us are injured!"

Kenneth reported to Jack and others after looking at the overall situation.

Chapter 1545

“Hmmm… the number of casualties is actually bearable, after all, we have two hundred thousand of us. But we don’t know how far are we from the deepest part of the forest, and how many fierce monster beasts are there. We don’t know any of that, so we can’t afford to be careless; we must stay alert all the time!”

Jack bobbed his head. The men that they lost were all of the demi-god levels. Those with higher martial levels were able to cope with the previous battle easily.

But it was also because they were able to spot the beasts early and be prepared. If they did not notice the presence of those black eagles earlier, they would have suffered greater loss! If they only figured it out after the black eagles launched an attack, the number of casualties would be more.

“Thanks to our plan; we joined all our forces and that’s why we were powerful enough to fend off the eagles!”

The head of a third-class family expressed his thoughts in a tone full of emotions. “If we act and explore the place separately, especially for a family like us, a third-class family, we will suffer a great loss in the black eagle’s situation, even worse, completely annihilated by those eagles.”

Many third-class families bobbed their heads in agreement. Some third-class families could only fork out around ten thousand men for this risky expedition, and these ten thousand men were considered top-notch fighters in their families. If they were to encounter ten thousand black eagles alone, the outcome would truly be abysmal. The situation would be even worse if they did not notice the black eagles in advance, and more than half of them would die.

“He’s right about this! I’m so grateful for the agreement and plan proposed by Young Master Jack. We’re indeed much safer if we join forces and explore the place together!”

Even some people from the second-class families nodded along. The hazardous situation inside this Black Windy Island had somewhat exceeded their expectations.

The crowd continued to fly forward, and after less than an hour, several men came into their sight.

“Some of the corpses here are still warm to touch. Looks like we’re getting closer to them. They’re not far ahead of us!”

Elder Lock from the Hall of Divine Royal touched the bodies on the ground and studied the corpses of the flying monster beasts all over the ground. “This group of people, they’re strong and united! Even if the combat level of these flying beasts were not high, there were more than ten thousand beasts here, moreover, they were flying beasts! This is even harder to deal with! But these beasts actually only managed to kill a few dozen of them.”

“Indeed, they’re strong. If our men truly need to fight against them, I’m afraid that the casualties will be great even if we manage to grab the treasure!”

Another middle-aged man chimed in and agreed with a gloomy face.

“Hmmm…the Divine Royal Hall and the islands under it are united. That’s why, all along, none of the forces and families within the circle of ten thousand miles of our maritime territory dare to fight against us.”

Elder Lock nodded in consent. “But, I didn’t expect that this time, this group of people who are obviously from twenty or more different families, are so united! They joined forces and entered the sea area. If this continues like that, it would cause a huge problem!” He then added.

“Heh! They’re united? I think their unity is only temporary! After they discover the treasure that can help them to break through to the ultimate god realm, the unity among them will shatter in an instant! They will definitely start to loot from each other!”

Another wise old man said in an indifferent tone and his face was icy-cold. “Let’s leave a note here for the hall master so that when they arrive here, they’ll know that the other group of people is not far ahead from us. As long as we speed up for a little while, we’ll be able to catch up with them in the afternoon. After that, we only have to tail behind them silently.”

Jack and the others continued to move forward ceaselessly. Since they had not stopped and rested for some time, that very night they simply found a hill and rested. Hundreds of people took turns to patrol, while the remaining sat down to take a rest and to restore the Chi energy in their bodies.

The next morning came. At this time, the people of the Hall of Divine Royal were only a few miles away from Jack and the group, and they were just trailing behind the group closely

Boom!

A cacophony of the deafening fighting sound traveled through the air once again. Jack and the group encountered a group of powerful monster beasts; the battling sound was incessant.

“Haha, it looks like they encountered another group of monster beasts again! And this time, it will make them lose some people again!”

Elder Hartman flew onto the top of the tree and looked from far away at Jack and the group. He then hopped onto the ground after observing the situation and said with his face full of excitement.

“Since we are trailing behind them, they will kill the monster beasts making it easier for us! Even if we were to run into some monster beasts, it would only be those single beasts or weak beasts that won’t cause any harm to us at all!”

The Master of the Hall of Divine Royal sneered sinisterly.” Hahaha! They are destined to be our cat’s paw!”

Chapter 1546

“It’s so hard to fight against these monster beasts! The most difficult beasts to deal with were the ones with the strength of True God Realm! We’ve lost more than two hundred people in this battle!”

Kenneth’s pallor had taken on a deathly shade as he looked at the corpses on the ground. Although only two to three people of the White family died in this battle, nobody wanted to see any of their family members die here.

Not to mention that they were already in this forest for the past several days! They flew above the trees to see and estimate the journey ahead of them, but all they saw was an ample patch of the forest ahead of them. They did not know how wide and huge this forest was and how far away they were from the deepest end of the forest.

“The situation is considered good. The number of this group of monster beasts is not much, but their combat level is so much higher. For us to be able to have such an outcome, it’s considered good. And the road ahead of us will be much more dangerous and difficult!”

Jack gave a bitter smile as he spoke. He led the people to continue to advance into the forest.

However, they obtained quite a lot of second-grade spirited grass along the way. When any of them spotted a spirited grass, they would pick it and hand it over to Jack, and Jack would keep those materials inside a martial ring. Then by the time when they got out of this forest, Jack would distribute the materials to each family according to the agreed ratio.

Another two days had passed. Jack and the group had suffered casualties of more than four thousand men. The frequency of them encountering monster beasts of demi-god and true god levels increased tremendously as they moved forward.

Furthermore, some of these monster beasts were moving in hordes. It was difficult for Jack and the team to deal with.

“With a place like this, I think the natives who are living on the island will not venture this deep in the forest to seek for treasure. And the two-headed hurricane leopard from just now was really terrifying! It was at the peak of True God Realm! Luckily, Young Master Jack stepped up and fought it, and used only one punch to end its life. If we were the one facing it, I don’t think we would be alive!”

An elder from the Cabello family praised Jack highly, staring at him with awe, admiration, and excitement in his eyes.

The monster beast’s body was stronger and sturdier than human martial artists. Generally, when human martial artists encounter monster beasts of the same level, they would try to attack the beasts from a distance. This was because, in a melee battle with a beast of equal level, human martial artists would not stand a chance to survive.

However, in the previous battle, not only Jack did not distance himself from the beast, but he charged toward the beast and killed it with a one punch. That kind of combat prowess and strength surprised the others, especially Alejandro, at the same time, made them be in awe of Jack even more.

They, as the elite fighters of the peak of True God Realm among the older generation, were not even on par with Jack, who had just broken into the peak of True God Realm. This made them speechless.

Some young girls of the younger generation, who were confident in their looks, would deliberately approach Jack, strode around Jack, and have small talks with each other, obviously wanting to attract Jack’s attention.

Some of them were even bolder! They took the initiative to go forward, and then used the excuse of desiring to learn medical skills from Jack to strike up a conversation with him.

This situation made both Lana and Daniella exasperated. How could they be happy seeing beautiful girls going over to chat with Jack?

“These guys, they’re really powerful! What kind of place is this? They’ve reached this far into this forest,

but look, only a few thousands died! It looks like they're really united!"

The family head of one of the prominent families on this Black Windy Island studied the corpses on the ground and said with his brows puckered together. "Furthermore, they're truly strong! We were merely tailing them and have encountered some remaining monster beasts from time to time. But look, we've lost almost three hundred men! For f*ck sake, they're in front of us and have already killed most of the monster beasts for us, but still, they only lost a few thousand people!

"You're right! It looks like they have more than three or four thousand elite fighters of the peak of True God Realm. Perhaps they have seven or even eight thousand of them!"

The master of Divine Royal Hall chimed in with grave expression. "It seems like their group is made up of several first -class families on the continent. Otherwise, how can there be so many powerful fighters?"

"I agree!"

Chapter 1547

The man from before nodded his head and then expressed, "So the fighters they lost are mostly of demi -god level, and they only lost two or at most three fighters of true god level. That's why their overall combat power is not reduced by much!"

"Heh, we don't have to worry too much. Although we don't have many fighters of true god level, our total number of men is definitely more than them. Not to mention, Black Windy Island is not an ordinary place. We, the Hall of Divine Royal, did not want to risk venturing into Black Windy Island before. My father has said before, there are powerful beasts inside this forest, and their combat prowess is at another level; they are not beasts that fighters of true god-level can easily deal with.

The Master of the Hall of Divine laughed as he spoke. "We'll just continue like this, tailing carefully behind them. We'll know soon once they start to fight each other for treasure, and those treasures are likely materials and tools to break through to the ultimate god level. At that time, Elder Lock will inform us of the situation immediately!"

Another three days passed by quickly. During these three days, Jack and his alliances had suffered greater losses compared to a few days ago. They encountered more and more monster beasts, and the combat prowess of these monster beasts were getting stronger and stronger. The series of battles and fights have cost the group the lives of more than ten thousand men. Adding up to the previous death, it made up to a total of twenty thousand casualties.

On the other hand, the Hall of Divine Royal lost many lives as well, although the number of casualties were not as high as Jack and the group, they suffered a total of four to five thousand casualties too.

As the number of casualties kept on increasing, those people from second and third-class families felt even more grateful that they agreed to explore the place together with several first-class prominent families. They now truly felt that the plan and arrangement that Jack had proposed and made was perfect! What a wise choice they have made!

If they had chosen to enter the forest alone and fight these beasts, they would have lost a lot of fighters, not to mention they might even need to fight against Jack and the other first-class families for the treasure when they find it. Some weaker families might not even reach up to this point, they most likely would retreat halfway.

“My goodness! Another horde of monster beasts in front!”

Just as the crowd defeated a group of monster beasts, they found that there were thousands of colossal ferocious tigers charging toward them from the front.

“These tigers look like their spiritual strength and power are not low at all. And they’re intelligent! They sensed that we intruded into this forest, so they actually gathered together and then ambushed us!”

Kevin peeked to the front and his face turned unsightly. Everyone had been fighting incessantly for quite a while now. Just when they wanted to take a break, another horde of monster beasts appeared before them again.

“We’re like intruders to them. They see us as intruders who came in to steal their martial resources away. Of course, they want us dead!”

A bitter smile plastered on Nash’s face as he spoke.

“They’re here! Everyone, stay focused!”

With his palm flipped, the topnotch sword appeared in Jack’s grip. He injected Chi energy into it and the sword immediately emitted a deafening sound, and then a sword attack was blasted out toward the tigers.

Swoosh!

A frightening combination of sword aura and Chi energy flew out toward the tigers, and in a blink of an eye, several colossal ferocious tigers plopped onto the ground, lying lifelessly.

“Kill!”

The others, too, immediately joined in the battle, putting their martial skills into play and attacking the ferocious tigers.

“Hahaha! Did they encounter another horde of monster beasts again? That’s amazing!”

Not far away from Jack and the group, the people of the Hall of Divine Royal commented on the situation, each of them laughed sarcastically and sinister smiles were hanging on their faces.

Chapter 1548

"Rumble!"

A loud roar rang out, the battle ahead was exceptionally fierce. By the time the battle was over, there were actually more than a thousand people dead and several thousand who were injured quite badly in Jack's group this time.

"The losses this time are huge, because the battle had just ended earlier, and everyone has not had time to rest, and those who were injured have not had time to recover from their injuries. Then, they met another group of extremely powerful beasts, and suffered huge losses!"

Some people looked at those corpses on the ground and couldn't help but lament that if they had time to rest, they would obviously be a lot better off.

"Everyone, let's go, hurry up and leave here. That group of demonic beasts were perhaps lured here by the sound of the fight plus the smell of blood from our side earlier. Let's leave here quickly, find a place to rest before talking, while those who are injured hurry up and take healing medicine to recover from their injuries as soon as possible, otherwise, if we meet several waves of such attacks consecutively, then the number of people we lose might increase greatly!"

After thinking about it, Jack said to the crowd.

The middle-aged man soon left, and sure enough, not long after Jack and the others left, another group of demonic beasts arrived and began to gnaw on the corpses here.

Jack and the others found a hilltop and rested for a while before continuing on their way.

Another two days had passed, and Jack and the others had lost more than 10,000 people again, and the price they had to pay was getting bigger and bigger.

"Young Master Jack, look, look ahead!"

Just then, at the bottom of a cliff, a huge ancient tree drew the attention of the crowd.

This ancient tree, which was more than several times taller than the ones they had met before, could be seen from afar, with extremely dense branches and leaves, while in the middle of the ancient tree, there was a golden oval-shaped stone, which looked like a huge egg and had mysterious patterns on it.

"It's that stone, it's fantastic!"

The crowd took a look and their faces were all filled with excitement. In the past few days, everyone didn't dare to relax, their nerves were all tense, all for this huge stone, and now that they saw it, everyones' eyes were red.

"Phew!"

Everyone froze for just that second before many strong people rushed straight out.

"Don't rush!"

Jack quickly thought of something and immediately shouted.

"It's strange not to be in a hurry! Our family has had so many members die, and it's so hard to find this treasure, how can we not be in a hurry?"

There was an elder of a second-class family, with a mid True God realm cultivation, flying in a relatively front position, his eyes filled with madness.

This thing, which would most likely allow him to break through to the Ultimate God Realm in the future, was so tempting that he couldn't care less about it now.

However, thinking of how good Jack was, he still couldn't help but say out loud, "Don't worry, Young Master Jack. This time too, thanks to the agreement you mentioned to everyone before. don't worry, if there are any techniques inside this thing, when the time comes I will definitely share it with everyone as agreed, and when the time comes, everyone will have to rely on their talent and see who breaks through to Ultimate God Realm first! "

"Just by you?"

A man at the late True God realm quickly rushed up and blasted the old man on top of his back, knocking him down to the ground with a mouthful of blood spurting out.

"You ....."

The old man was furious, glaring at the other man with malice and hatred.

The middle-aged man turned around and sneered, then said, "Oh, old man, have you forgotten? According to the agreement, once this treasure appears, everyone can grab it. only after someone grabs it and puts it into the nano ring must everyone then stop grabbing and go back together. Now, I don't care too much, but this strange stone is definitely mine!"

Chapter 1549

"Bang!"

However, at this very moment, not far away in the woods, a flare shot straight up into the sky, and after a flash, it blossomed open like a beautiful eye flower.

"Treasures have appeared!"

On the other side, the people of the Divine King Hall, after seeing the signal, were all excited beyond measure.

"Charge for me, and you must snatch that treasure for me, got it?"

The Hall Master of the Divine King Hall, with a command, turned into a streak himself and flew up from the forest, heading straight for the direction where that flare appeared.

"Grab it!"

Almost three hundred thousand people, one by one, shot up into the sky and flew from the forest into the air, heading straight for Jack's side.

"What!"

After Nash and the others heard the shouts not far away, they all had ugly faces, and all of them were surprised.

After all, they had already entered such a deep part of this forest, they had never expected that so many people would actually follow them in.

"My god, this number of people on the other side, there are even more than us, damn, it's so close to us,

looking at this, they will fly over in less than two minutes, have we been watched for such a long time?"

There was an old man from the Cabello family, who was equally frightened, his face ugly.

After all, the forces in the middle of these seas were not easy to deal with in the first place, and although there weren't many big forces, the other side had gathered so many people, so I'm afraid that it wouldn't be that easy to kill them out.

"It looks like Jack is right, we've been targeted before!"

Chu Kaiwen looked at those people, and his eyes were equally as gloomy.

"Young Master Jack haha, I don't care that much, this thing will be in our hands soon. I hope everyone will keep the agreement then, whoever gets it, it's theirs!"

The middle-aged man who had blown the mid-stage True God realm old man to the ground saw that he was getting closer and closer to the huge stone ball, then he laughed out loud, he only needed to hold on for a few more seconds, the stone ball would definitely be his, as long as he took it into the Nascent Soul Ring, according to the agreement, everyone could not make a move against him.

If he got hold of the stone ball, and it would only allow one person to break through to Ultimate God Realm, he hoped it would be himself since his chance to change his fate depended on this one time.

Thinking that he might become an existence that many peak True God realm powerhouses could only look up to in the future, the middle-aged man's heart became even more excited.

"Sigh, did they all forget one thing, that the Divine King Sect's Master had said that this stone ball was on top of an extremely dangerous tree?"

Seeing the people flying out frantically in front of him, Jack couldn't help but let out a sigh.

Sure enough, just as the man was about to get his hands on the stone ball, less than ten metres away from it, a terrifying tree branch, which had violently grown larger, like a sharp sword, rushed straight out, causing the body of the middle-aged man, who had been caught off guard, to be pierced straight through.

"No, it can't be!"

The middle-aged man stretched out his hand, looking at the stone ball that was close at hand. his eyes full of resignation, looking at the branch that had already pierced his chest, the life force in his body quickly dissipated, and he directly lost his breath.

"Shoo shoo shoo!"

At the same time, those several hundred people who were not far behind the middle-aged man were similarly pierced through their bodies by a terrifying tree branch, blood flowing down their bodies and then dripping onto the ground.

Chapter 1550

"Oh my god!"

Alejandro and the others immediately stopped, although they heard Jack's admonition, one by one, they were all a little more careful and flew a little bit behind. but the temptation of the stone ball still made them all red-eyed, since they were considered as belonging to the second group of people.

Looking ahead, hundreds of people were killed in just a second, defencelessly, so abruptly, which made them all terrified, and some of them were so terrified that they immediately retreated hundreds of metres away, which made them stop, and then looked ahead with awe.

"My god, this ancient tree is too terrifying, several strong people with True God realm cultivations have died too!"

Some people with demi-god realm cultivations looked at the blood there, and they, who had also been overwhelmed by the treasures, were temporarily sobered up.

"Shoo shoo shoo!"

At this time, the ancient tree's branches shrank back, and the cultivators who had been stabbed to death by the ancient tree before, one by one, just fell to the ground.

"It's not good, all the house masters, look over there, there are too many people. What should we do? It looks like we are being watched by the great powers in the middle of this sea!"

There was a family head of a third-class family, who looked at the people over at the Divine King Hall who were getting closer and closer to this place, and exclaimed with an ugly face.

"What are you afraid of, I think they have a few forces combined as well, I don't believe they won't desperately try to grab this stone ball! I'll take this stone ball first, and after snatching it, I'll escape alone, so I won't be easily targeted!"

One of the Lucas Family's elders, at the peak cultivation of the True God Realm, held a precious sword in his hand and directly charged forward.

"Phew!"

Jack looked at the crowd and likewise quickly headed straight for that ancient tree, he also felt that the old man was right, those people, although many, were not very united, the most crucial thing now was

to snatch this stone ball first, if it was snatched by the strong people from the other side, it would not be that easy to snatch it back.

At that time, if the other party wanted to escape and split up and escape, with so many people, someone to help delay the situation, that strong person would definitely be able to escape with the item.

"Charge!"

Many people from other clans, one by one, also rushed out again, but this time they didn't dare to be careless, each holding martial skills in their hands, fighting that ancient tree in passing at any time.

"Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh!"

The branches of that ancient tree once again reached out. The black ancient tree was like a tree monster at that moment as if these humans had entered its territory. Therefore, it had to kill all these humans.

A terrifying branch, like a sharp sword, like a spike, flew out straight ahead, still able to change direction at any time.

"Kill!"

There was a man, who chopped out with his sword, instantly cutting off several branches.

However, there were too many branches. several other branches like slithering spirit snakes, stabbed over from another direction, the man was caught off guard got directly pierced through his body and died.

"Bang Bang Bang!"

People kept attacking the branches, but the branches were so dense that after they were cut off, they actually managed to continue growing as if they were longer again, and then continued to attack at the front.

"Boom!"

That one elder of the Lucas family at the peak of the True God Realm from before flung out his sword, a terrifying chopping blow that flew straight out and cut off a large portion of those tree branches in front of him.

"Swoosh!"

Seeing that quite a few branches had been cleared, the old man flashed once again and flew forward some distance again, much closer to the huge ancient tree.

"Swoosh!"

Chapter 1551

Nevertheless, what he did not foresee was the roots burrowing out of the ground below him at that time. The roots were sharp like spears and fast like lighting; they penetrated through his body from below.

“Pfft!”

The elder of the Ximenes family gazed at his punctured body, blood gushing out of his mouth. He took one last look at the strange stone ball that was just a short distance away from him and exhaled his last breath.

“What sh*t?! The Second Elder…the Second Elder died!”

The head of Ximenes family could not believe what he had just witnessed, his eyes widened as big as saucers and his face blanched.

“Stall these people!”

At this time, the people from the Hall of Divine Royal were not far away from Jack and the group, and they started launching attacks at Jack and the group.

“Kill them all!”

Two parties instantly engaged in battles; it was chaotic.

Jack flickered several times with his unbelievably fast speed. The sword in his grip, coupled with his lightning speed became sharper and more powerful. With a few swings, the tree branches before him were chopped off.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

However, the ancient tree seemed to be spiritually intelligent. After knowing Jack’ s power and strength, the ancient tree shot out more branches toward Jack, attacking him.

“Humph!”

Jack snorted coldly, and then he injected more Chi energy into the sword, which then became even more colossal, and the Chi energy surrounding it became more intense and more aggressive.

“Blade Wave!”

With a swing of his arm, waves of Chi attacks in sword form were cast out, and like waves, they flowed fiercely and violently toward the front.

The branches were densely packed, yet they were cut off by Jack’s attack. The view in front of Jack immediately brightened up as branches were no longer blocking the view.

Jack was extremely fast. He rushed toward the front, while branches came from all directions, attacking Jack from every possible angle.

“Blade Wave!”

Jack did not stop in the slightest. Another wave of sword aura attack was shot out. The surrounding area was once again emptied by the attack. Jack flickered a few more times and finally, he came before the huge stone ball and grabbed it with his hand.

“What the f*ck! This brat’s strength and combat prowess are too powerful! A lot of true god realm elite fighters can’t even get near the stone because of the ancient tree, not to mention to even grab the stone! I didn’t expect Jack to be this strong and managed to get the stone!”

After witnessing Jack’s true strength and power, Alejandro was in a complete state of surprise. He then led his men to fend off the people from the Hall of Divine Royal.

With a flip of his palm, Jack kept the stone ball into his martial ring, and then with another swing of his sword, he blasted at the center of the ancient tree.

Boom!

A loud explosion echoed the forest; the ancient tree was halved by Jack's frightening attack. The ancient tree was split into half and fell onto the ground, lifeless along with the branches and roots.

Although the ancient tree was finally dead, a few seconds before its death, several thousands of elite fighters died under its branches and roots. And among them, there were many elite people with the strength of true god level.

"Jack had already put away the stone ball into his martial ring! Everyone shall cease fighting to get the stone ball according to the agreement! Now, let's join our forces and fight against these enemies in front of us!"

As soon as Nash saw that Jack had obtained the stone ball, he quickly gave the command to the alliances. But, inside, he was bursting with joy.

Some alliances were upset in their hearts, but they understood that they had to be united then. After all, their situation was not great then they were surrounded by tons of people.

Chapter 1552

"Everyone, gather together, don' t panic! There aren't many of them that are of the true god level!"

Jack pointed out aloud when he noticed that some people were panicking

After hearing Jack, many fighters of the alliances breathed out a sigh of relief, and they began to gather together as fast as possible.

The battle went on for a while and the number of casualties went up to a few thousand. The other party suffered several thousand deaths.

After several minutes, the Master of the Hall of Divine Royal realized the biggest issue in his group after fighting against Jack and his people. Although they outnumbered the other party, Jack and his groups had more fighters in the late stage and peak stage of the True God Realm!

Most of his men were only at the demi-god level.

He then waved his hand, gesturing to his men to cease the attack, and to surround Jack and his groups.

“You people from the mainland, how dare you intrude into our sea territory! Even worse, into the Black Windy Island! Are you guys wishing for death? Whatever treasure or stone you have obtained just now, hand it over!”

An elder of a big clan from the Black Windy Island stood out and pointed at Jack and the others with a fine sword in his hand. His tone was arrogant and aggressive.

“He’s right! You only have at most 180 thousand men left, and we have almost 300 thousand men with us! How are you gonna fight us, huh? Now, hand those treasures over, then we might consider letting you all go! Otherwise, we don’t mind shedding some blood and killing every one of you damn intruders here!”

Elder Hartman laughed sinisterly.

The Master of the Divine Royal Hall, on the other hand, frowned. He truly could not understand these barbaric people from the mainland at all. Merely a moment ago, they were desperately trying to snatch the stone from each other, but ended up joining forces to fight against them. Furthermore, these barbarians dared to stare at them angrily for intruding on their island! What logic was that?

Why? Why did they not think of killing that young man who got the stone?

But from the way the other party madly attacked the ancient tree just to get the stone ball, he could say with certainty in his heart that the stone ball was closely related to breaking through to the ultimate god realm.

“Oh, in fact, I’ve long known that several dogs are tailing behind us secretly!”

To everyone’s surprise, Jack was not the least bit nervous even though he and the group were surrounded by so many fighters. He smiled gently and then said in a calm tone, “But, it must be out of your expectation that we would be so united for so many days and that we did not lose many men. Moreover, you wouldn’t have thought that after I’ve obtained the treasure not only did the others stop attacking, but we are also very united to fight against you, right?”

The corners of the other party’s mouth twitched involuntarily upon hearing Jack’s words. “So what if it is? You guys are now surrounded by so many of us, do you think you can run away?”

The master of the Hall of Divine Royal retorted in a deep voice.

“Hahaha! Funny! Well. Let me give you a piece of advice, you and your men better get out of the way! You indeed have the number, but the unison and the overall combat prowess are way too weak compared to ours! You don’t have as many strong fighters as us. Now, tell me, do you think you can beat us?”

However, Jack chuckled in return. “We must return to our land, so we will fight hard for our lives. Don’t tell me you’ll fight us to death solely for an object that you don’t even know if it’s a treasure?”

“That’s right! We’ll fight for our lives! Don’t underestimate us! It’s not easy for you to defeat us!”

Daniella and the others shouted in unison, tone sharp and aggressive.

After all, if they could make the other party give way to them, it would naturally be a better idea,

because they would not have to pay an unnecessary price of losing their men.

“Heh? Let you go? Sure!”

The Master of the Hall of Divine Royal laughed out loud.“ However, you must hand over that object to us, otherwise, that’ s no way for us to let you go. We’ll have to snatch it from you!”

Chapter 1553

“What makes you think that we’re not united punk? You guys are merely a rabble of several families. Although we have men from other powerhouses within this sea territory, they are under the Hall of Royal Divine and have been working together with us. We’re like one big family. So, which party do you think is more united in this case? Us or you?” Elder Moseley intercepted and responded gruffly.

“Ya! Brat, think about it carefully. If you hand the stone ball over to us, you can avoid unnecessary deaths but if you don’t. Humph! You’re inviting trouble to your group!”

After giving the matter some thought, the Master of the Hall of Divine Royal intentionally sowed discord among Jack and his allies by saying, “Listen, families other than this brat with the stone can leave this place; we’ll let you go because you did not obtain the treasure anyway. You don’t have to risk your life to stay with this brat. Of course, if the family of this brat would like to leave as well, you may, we’ll let you go too!”

“Right, right. Other families can leave this place, you guys didn’t get the treasure anyway. Those who didn’t get the treasure can leave, you don’t have to die here together with this brat!”

Elder Lock chimed in and supported his master immediately.

He believed that once they affirmed the other families and gave them a chance to live, the unity among them would definitely be affected. After all, they were not from the same family, and most of the time when people encounter such a situation like this, they would rather choose to stay alive.

As for the family of that brat, there were not many of them. Hence, it did not matter if they let them go or not, because they would die anyway-whether killed by them or by the monster beasts in the forest.

However, they were not aware of the agreement between Jack and these families. If there were no such agreement, those families would have left Jack and his family behind.

Due to the prior agreement that Jack had with the other families, which was, if there was any method or technique from the treasure, the person who got the treasure would share it with others. In this way, everyone could have a taste of the benefit; it also implied that every family had the opportunity to get the benefits of the stone ball!

So, how could they give up such a great opportunity?

“What the heIl? None of them are leaving?”

After some time had passed, not one person of the other party had any intention to leave, all of them stood still and none left the scene. The situation puzzled the people of the Hall of Divine Royal.

“Heh, I’m afraid that we’ll have to let you guys down today!”

Jack chuckled smugly; he gripped the sword in his hand tightly and pointed it to the front. “Everyone, listen! Since they refuse to get out of our way, we’ll fight them, beat them, and kill them, until they understand that we’re not to be messed with!”

“Kill!”

All the alliances yelled in unison, as though they were motivated by the fervent and enthusiastic aura emitted by Jack.

“Kill them all!”

The Master of the Hall of Divine Royal gritted his teeth and commanded his men aloud. He was reluctant to fight against the other party, after all, even if he won the battle, the loss would be too great to bear. But when he thought of the stone ball being the only way to break through to the ultimate god level, that temptation made him clench his teeth and give out the order.

Both parties rushed towards each other and fought fiercely. Frightening battling sound, once again, pierced through the eerie Black Windy Island.

Swoosh!

With the fine sword in his hand, Jack flew to the front of Elder Hartman in a flash.

Through the series of shouting and yelling a moment ago, Jack could tell which of these people from the Hall of Divine Royal held important and authoritative positions among them. If he managed to kill a few people with the strength of the peak of true god level, the other people on the other hand would naturally be frightened.

By that time, their morale would be impacted. Moreover, they did not have a lot of people with the strength of true god level, thus, in the end, they would be defeated completely. It was useless to have more people than a few with true strength and power!

Chapter 1554 Skrappie

“Hahaha! Young man, I’m our master’s right-hand man! Do you think you can kill me just because you say so? Dream on, punk!”

Elder Hartman sneered at Jack sassily. Would it not be funny for an unknown brat like Jack to strike at him? Not to forget that Jack was so much younger than him. Hence, not only was he not afraid of Jack,

but he also laughed at him for being naïve.

He was even bursting with joy and excitement in his heart. That strange stone ball was in that brat's hand, if he managed to kill this brat and take over his martial ring, then the stone ball would be his! What a great opportunity!

No one would notice that he has taken Jack's martial ring after he killed him because everyone would be busy fighting and fending off the opponents; no one would be free to watch his every step! And he only needed to kill that brat, keep his ring, and pretended to fight for a little while, then escape from the battle to the outside of the forest. He planned to then find a secret cave and study the strange stone ball.

What if he was fortunate enough to discover the method to breaking through to the ultimate god realm? And because of that, he broke through to the ultimate god realm? Then he would be the Master of the Hall of Divine Royal!

Of course, if he was unable to discover anything from the stone ball, he would then return to the Hall of Divine Royal and tell everybody that he was afraid that the other party would pursue after him and snatch the martial ring back, thus he could only leave the battlefield with the ring and hide somewhere else first. This sounded reasonable and logical!

Elder Hartman's eyes could barely conceal his delight and excitement as he thought. With a flip of his palm, a sword appeared in his hand and he injected Chi energy into his sword.

"An upper-grade spiritual tool?

Jack's eyes immediately shined bright the moment he saw the sword in the elder's hand. His mood lightened. If he was able to snatch this sword from his hand, then he would obtain another incredible treasure!

And he would let his father use that fine sword. That should be able to increase the overall combat prowess and strength of his group.

“Oh, brat, are you thinking of snatching my upper-grade spiritual weapon? Well, I’m sorry that you can’t do that, instead, I’ll be getting the spiritual weapon that’s in your hand!”

Elder Hartman laughed sarcastically. Clenching the hilt of his sword, he chopped forward toward Jack.

As he chopped toward the front with his sword, a huge amount of Chi energy condensed and formed a big fish. The big fish then charged toward Jack at full speed.

“Wow, it’s my first time seeing such martial technique!”

The big fish Chi attack did not seem powerful at all. But because it was colossal, the impact of collision would be huge too. If one was to be hit by this giant fish, severe injury was definitely unavoidable.

Swoosh!

Jack, too, chopped toward the front with his sword. In a blink of an eye, a sword aura within a thick aura casing was formed, creating a frightening attack. It slashed out as though it were an arc of light.

“You don’t even want to use any martial technique? Do you think such a slashing attack would do any damage to the giant fish? What a naïve brat you are!”

Elder Hartman sneered upon seeing Jack’s seemingly weak attack. He was not happy in the slightest! How could this brat look down on him by casting such a frail attack?

Boom!

However, in the next second, Elder Hartman was completely tongue-tied. The big fish that he cast out

was absolutely destroyed by Jack's attack. Moreover, Jack's attack was not worn off at all by his big fish; the remaining residual of Jack's attack was heading straight at him.

"No freaking way! My…my fish is destroyed…just like that? And…"

Elder Hartman could feel nothing but blind shock and terror right now; his eyes widened, and his jaw dropped to the ground. Jack did not even use any martial skill; it was just a casual attack of his! How could a casual attack like that destroy his big fish?

Elder Hartman punched towards the front once again, only did he manage to destroy the residual power of Jack's attack. Hints of solemnness and gloominess appeared in his eyes as he stared at the young man before him.

"Well. It seems like the right-hand man of the Master of Divine Royal Hall is not as strong as he claimed."

Jack, who already grasped the situation, knowing the level of combat prowess of the elder, once again swung his sword and blasted towards the elder, his smile cold and sinister.

Chapter 1555

However, this time, Jack cast out a more powerful attack than before. He used a martial technique-Burning Chop.

"No!"

Elder Hartman did not dare to slack in the slightest. He immediately performed a more powerful martial technique of his.

However, his martial technique was like a fly buzzing around the head-weak and poor. The technique

was unable to resist the attack of Jack at all and was completely wrecked. Meanwhile, Jack's Burning Chop still carried a lot of remaining strength, heading straight at him.

Elder Hartman who had no time to execute the second technique in time, immediately cast an aura shield to enclose himself in the center for protection.

However, this thin and shaky aura shield could not withstand the frightening attack at all. It only lasted for a second before the shield was destroyed, and the attack landed directly on his chest, throwing him a few meters away.

Bang!

Elder Hartman flew backward recklessly like a kite with broken string before hitting the ground heavily and spurting out mouthfuls of blood. With his legs straightened and muscle stiffed, he died just like that.

"No f*cking way! Elder…Elder Hartman died…died just like that…"

Several fighters of true god level, who stood nearby and witnessed the disastrous death of Elder Hartman, were frightened down to the soles of their shoes. Fear and terror reared up within them that they could barely speak properly.

After all, in the Hall of Divine Royal, apart from the hall master, Elder Hartman, Elder Moseley, and Elder Lock were considered as the strongest martial practitioners among them.

However, a strong and powerful fighter like Elder Hartman did not last more than half a minute in the battle, and was killed by the other party. The gap of strength and combat ability between them and the other party-Jack and the group-was enormously wide.

Jack flew toward Elder Hartman's body, took off his martial ring, and kept the upper-grade sword into his own martial ring.

That treasure sword was a rare weapon and since Jack and the alliances did not discuss the distribution of the treasure and goods after obtaining the stone ball, he intended to keep this rare weapon first.

Swoosh!

With another flicker, Jack went straight for Elder Lock.

Just as Elder Lock blast a fighter of late true god level, he saw Jack flying toward him. He did not even manage to enjoy the brief victorious moment, yet Jack was already coming at him. He was taken aback.

Was this brat not fighting Elder Hartman just a moment ago? Why did this brat come to his side now? Elder Lock pondered hard.

When he wheeled his head around and found that Elder Hartman was lying on the ground lifelessly, his face instantly fell He gasped at the newly learned fact.

Elder Hartman was killed by this brat? In such a short time? Furthermore, his combat prowess and strength were almost the same as Elder Hartman's, so how could he be a match for this brat?

"Elder Moseley, come and help me! This brat is extremely strong! I'm not confident in dealing with him by myself! Let's fight him together and kill him!"

Elder Lock yelled in the direction of Elder Moseley. His eyes fixated at Jack with a gloomy expression written all over his face.

"Motherf*cker! I can't even hold on! They have too many true god level fighters on their side! Two of them are fighting against me right now!"

Elder Moseley was sweating profusely. He was surrounded by Nash and Kenneth. He was about to collapse.

Elder Lock immediately looked over to Elder Moseley's side as soon as he heard his cry. He was rendered speechless. They were clearly no match for them in terms of true god realm cultivation. Moreover, the battles between the others obviously showed that their men could not hold up any longer, and the speed of their men falling and dying was so much faster than that of Jack and his group's.

Chapter 1556

"Damn, the true god level fighters on their side are just too powerful!"

Matthew-the master of the Divine Royal Hall-looked at the situation and his face turned unsightly. Lana, William, and Ethan, although they were only at the early stage of True God Realm, their combat strength and ability were enough to defeat several early-stage true god level fighters! It was just tough to behead these three people.

Boom!

On the other side, Jack decimated Elder Lock in no time. The Hall of Divine Royal lost another strong elite fighter.

"Dammit! We've lost almost fifty thousand men, and what the f*ck?! The other party's casualties are less than ten thousand! If this continues, the speed of people dying on our side will only increase!"

Elder Moseley studied the current situation and realized that although they outnumbered them by a hundred thousand at the beginning, the gap was getting smaller and smaller. Their advantage in this battle was fading fast. They have even lost many strong fighters like Elder Hartman and Elder Lock. The situation would worsen for them when the true god level fighters on Jack's side was not occupied anymore. They would turn their targets on their demi-god level fighters! In this case, Divine Royal Hall would suffer greater and more severe loss than before!

“Master, this is not good at all! Run, we have to run away! They’re simply overwhelmingly strong! There must be several extremely strong fighters in their team. Besides, that brat, he is crazily powerful! Even Elder Hartman and Elder Lock were killed by him just like that!”

Elder Moseley gritted his teeth, swallowed his pride, and flew a long distance away from the battlefield before he warned Matthew.

“Dammit, dammit!”

Matthew was reluctant to give up, but what else could he do? In such a situation, he knew that if he persisted, he would lose the entire hall! It was an absolute defeat.

Furthermore, that young man, that b*stard, killed both Elder Hartman and Elder Lock within minutes, and if that b*stard came at him, he was definitely no match for him.

“Retreat! Everyone, retreat!”

Matthew waved his hand, gesturing everyone to retreat. He then threw out a wisp of Chi, wheeled around and turned into a shadow, fleeing into the distance.

“Run!”

Even their Hall Master ran away, what about the underlings of the Hall of Divine Royal? They were not motivated to fight anymore. One by one, they fled the scene like ants running away from a water droplet-messy and scattered.

Swoosh, shoo, swoosh!

Jack flickered in succession, killing several elite fighters of the true god level from the Hall of Divine

Royal, only then did he cease the attack.

“Kill!”

Jack’s team pursued and killed another ten thousand men when they saw these people started fleeing. They chased after the escapees for some distance.

“Stop chasing!”

Jack yelled. The other party had too many people. They successfully killed a lot of them, but they would suffer great casualties too if they continued to pursue after them, even though they would win in the end.

Besides, now that Jack and the others had killed many people especially the strong fighters on the other side; the other party had suffered heavy losses. Since their goal was already accomplished, there was no need for them to pursue after the other party.

“Hahaha! Young Master Jack, you’re truly amazingly powerful! You killed several strong fighters of true god level alone! How cool is that!”

Kevin teased Jack as he flew over to him.

“Let’s clean up the battlefield! Then we’ll distribute the spoils according to merit. Jack contributed the most, so I suggest letting him distribute them later. What do you all think?”

Chapter 1557

Alejandro proposed his thoughts to the crowd.

“That’s a great idea! We all have to thank Jack this time, if it were for the agreement Jack had made for us agree to before entering the forest, we’d be in a huge mess; we wouldn’t be so united. And if we weren’t this united, we’d be robbed of that stone ball by those people!”

The head of the Ximenes family bobbed his head to show agreement. However, he did not forget to remind Jack, “Young Master Jack, if this stone ball is really the way to the ultimate god realm and it can be used repeatedly, we hope that Young Master Jack will not forget our agreement.”

Everyone’s gazes suddenly all turned to Jack fearing that Jack would keep it without sharing it as per the agreement.

Now, the White family had grasped the overall situation. There were only five people who reached the peak of True God Realm, and among these five, Jack topped the list he could fight and hold off several men with the strength of the peak of true god realm by himself. Hence, the overall strength and combat ability of the White family increased tremendously; they could even win against the Skies Pavilion.

If it were not for the fact that there were not many fighters of the middle stage or late stage of True God Realm in the White family, the White family would be stronger than most of the ancient clans including the Pavilion of Divinity and the Flying Eagle Sect. The White family would not have to fear those clans anymore.

“Please be rest assured! If I discover anything about this stone ball, I’d definitely contact all of you. Of course, if the stone ball only allows one person to break through to the ultimate god level, I could not do anything else. Please then forgive me for being somewhat powerless in such a situation!”

Jack looked at the crowd and said in a serious tone.

“By the way, for the martial rings of those who have died in this battle, the people of the same family should keep it. It won’t be considered as the spoils of war. The spoils of war should be those treasures inside the martial rings of the opponents!”

After pondering for a few seconds, Jack then announced to the crowd.

The third-class and second-class families who suffered grave loss, cast grateful glances at Jack for being considerate of them.

After all, these families lost a lot of their men, and it would be unfair to them if they had to take out the treasure from the martial rings of their dead men and share it with others.

“Let’s leave this place. Right, when we go out, we have to be fast. After all, the closer we are to the outside of the forest, the lesser monster beasts there will be. In fact, the faster we leave the forest, the more advantageous it is for us!”

After everyone had collected all the loot, Jack again suggested it to the crowd.

“That’s not a problem. But, Young Master Jack, we have quite a few people injured in this battle, what should we do about them? Should we find a place and let them recover from their injuries first?”

Shelby frowned as he walked up to Jack and popped her concern.

Obviously in everyone’s hearts, including those heads of families, they saw Jack as an important person; Jack had clearly become the backbone of group there.

“Hmm…How about this? The others will leave the forest in different directions, and those who are injured will ride with the White family atop the flying sword. They should rest on the flying sword and let their wounds heal. It’ll be a lot safer to go in the middle. We have to at least leave this bloody place first because the smell of blood here will definitely attract a lot of powerful monster beasts!”

“After we’ve gone a little further away from this place, we can then find a safe place to rest. Then we’ll set off again tomorrow morning!”

After giving the matter some thought, Jack proposed to the crowd

Jack and the others then left this place shortly.

Jack was right about the monster beasts. Not long after they left the scene, hordes of terrifying and blood-seeking monster beasts flew to the bloody place and gnawed on the corpses there.

“Motherf*cker! Why are they so strong?”

On the other side, at this time, the people of the Hall of Divine Royal had fled a long way away.

They then gathered together at one place after finding out that Jack and his group were no longer chasing after them. A huge sigh of relief was let out in the crowd in unison.

“Yes. Especially that young man! He’s way too powerful. How can a young man like him be so strong? This is absolutely illogical!”

Elder Moseley said huffily, his heart palpitating.

Chapter 1558

“Elder Moseley, what now? The other party wouldn’t hand over the stone ball! Also they’re so united, and…and we can’t defeat them! Ugh! What a mess!”

Matthew was down in the dumps and he did not know what to do next. In a blink of an eye, he lost more than fifty thousand men, plus those who died before the battle with Jack and his groups, he was at a huge loss right now. Even worse, strong people like Elder Lock and Elder Hartman were killed by the other party as well.

He was truly out of ideas.

“Sigh! We’ve no other way anymore. We have lost so many men, and those who survived the tough battle suffered injuries as well. Even if we go after them right now, we’re simply no match for them. Not to mention there is no fighting morale nor spirit among us. So, for the time being, we can only cease our attack temporarily.”

Elder Moseley gazed at the crowd blankly and shook his head helplessly in the end. His tone was full of despair.

“Temporarily? What do you mean? Are you saying that there’s still a way, a hope, for us to get the stone ball?”

Matthew’s eyes immediately lit up upon hearing Elder Moseley’ s words.

“That stone ball is obviously important, so much so that those people from other families of the mainland would not want the stone ball to fall into our hands. Perhaps, they thought that if the stone ball is in the brat’s hand, they would still have a chance to snatch it from him once they get to the mainland. And if the stone ball is with us, it won’t be so easy for them to grab it anymore!”

Elder Mosely paused for a few seconds before continuing, “So, I guess that’s why they were so united beforehand and did not fall for our scheme of sowing discord among them. Instead they decided to stay still!”

“Yes, you’re right. Sigh! There’s no other way now, right? That stone ball…the more reluctant they are to give it up, the more I feel that the stone ball is the way to the ultimate god realm!”

The Master of the Hall of Divine Royal said with a sigh.

“Master, this is what I think. Everyone should go back to rest first, and then we’ll send some people to the continent and scout. If there’s any news about the ultimate god realm, we’d know!”

Elder Moseley gazed at Matthew and then said, “By the way, do you want to seek help from your senior? I know there have been some conflicts between the two of you and are not on good terms, but so many years have passed, he shouldn’t be upset at you anymore. Besides, if you tell him that there’s news about the ultimate god realm, I believe that your senior will definitely be interested! After all, if you could get help from him to find out who that brat is and where he lives, half of our job is considered done!”

“My senior?”

A few horizontal lines formed between the brows of Matthew and his expression turned solemn. “I’m afraid that he would command his men to strike against me, and I’ll definitely be no match alone! Unless…unless, we go in a larger group! At least one or two hundred strong people! It’s safer that way!”

“All right! Let’s go to him with hundreds of strong people! Besides, we should send more people to poke around about the stone ball!”

Elder Moseley nodded and the conversation ended. The crowd rested for a while before they continued to set off, heading out of the forest.

Only, what made the Hall of Divine Royal hesitate was that there was no Jack nor his team to help kill the monster beasts and create an opening for them anymore. Before that, they fled in a panicky manner and encountered many monster beasts. That made them lose another number of men.

On the contrary, Jack and his group possessed amazing combat ability. When they were heading out, they paced at a faster speed. So, they only lost a few men before successfully exiting the Black Windy Island!

Chapter 1559

Another few days passed by quickly. Jack and the others have finally left the sea territory and arrived at the continent in the southeast of Daxia.

After resting for a short while, the group went on a discussion about how they should distribute the spoils, then they distributed all the spoils they had gotten throughout the trip.

Those people from the second and third class families were grateful for the expedition to the Black Windy Forest. The journey to the Black Windy Island was not only treacherous but also full of traps and monster beats, and if it were not for Jack and the others, they were afraid that not many of them would have come back alive, and they would not even have the chance to share the martial materials and resources from the spoils.

“Although we lost more than ten thousand men, the outcome is better than what we expected. Hmmm. I wonder how the other teams are doing, especially the team of the Hunt family. They were assigned with Bright Snow Mountain, and it’s a lot nearer than Black Windy Island, perhaps, they have already returned to Daxia. I wonder what’s the result!”

Nash spoke his mind as he pondered.

“Well, based on what I have observed and understood about the Hunt family’s style of doing things, it’s true that they have a lot of men, and they are strong, but they would certainly act separately after

entering the mountain together. They might even fight and kill each other for the treasure. Although Black Windy Forest is more dangerous than Bright Snow Mountain, their number of casualties might be higher than ours!"

The First Elder of the White family, Kenneth White, laughed as he analyzed the Hunt family' s temperament. In the dangerous excursion to the Black Windy Forest, the White family contributed a lot and naturally, they received more resources and benefits. What was more delightful was that the stone ball was with Jack! Therefore, throughout their journey back to Daxia, happiness, and excitement were hanging on their faces; they were bursting with joy and could barely conceal their delight.

"He's right! This is the best and the wisest decision I've ever made for my family to follow the White family, Cabello family, Ximenes family, and Tudor Family to the hazardous Black Windy Forest! Best decision ever!"

The head of a second-class family exclaimed with a smiley face; he arched his hand and bowed to Jack and the other prominent families. "Well. We shall bid you adieu now. Young Master Jack, thank you very much and I hope you'll deliver good news to us very soon!"

"Young Master Jack, we're leaving too. Looking forward to the good news!"

The people from the other families also took off after saying goodbyes to Jack and others.

Jack's strength, power, and combat ability had completely convinced these families and powerhouses, and many of them even started to flatter the White family, hoping the White family would take care of them in the future.

"Master White, Jack, we're leaving too!"

When most of the crowd were almost gone, Alejandro, too, arched his hand and saluted Jack and others. "Hopefully you manage to examine this stone ball and discover the way to break through to the ultimate god realm. It'd be really worrying and problematic if we can't find a way to break through to the

ultimate god realm through this stone ball. We finally got some clue about the ultimate god realm, and if this stone ball…sigh!"

"Master Cabello, don't be preoccupied with it. That ancient formation was left behind by someone in the past. Now that the ancient formation has been activated, the location of the seven points appearing on the screen is pointing toward the Seven Dangers. I believe that this is not a coincidence. And there is a stone ball in every seven dangerous places! It's certainly not a coincidence I believe."

Jack responded confidently." What I'm suspecting is that the ancient formation might have been destroyed by someone deliberately…could it be that someone does not want us to know about the clue? Or, perhaps, the ancient formation was ruined because of the long period of time? I'm not too sure."

"All right. Then we'll wait for your good news!"

Alejandro nodded his head, and only then took Daniella and Helena—who was somewhat reluctant to leave Jack, and the others and left together.

After the other families had left, Jack summoned his flying sword and took the White family member home.

Chapter 1560

"Mommy, why isn't Daddy back yet? I have broken through to the next level again. He'll definitely be happy to know when he comes back!"

In one of the courtyards of the White family, Kylie, who had been playing for a while, ran to Selena and whined with a pouty face.

"Really? My little Kylie is so amazing!"

Selena's eyes immediately lit up after hearing her daughter's words. "Your Daddy has been away for ten days; he should be back soon. And if he knew that our little Kylie had broken through to the ninth-grade martial practitioner, he would be delighted!"

Kylie was incredibly talented, and Selena was happy about it. Kylie was so young and yet she was already at ninth-grade martial level and was about to break through to the grandmaster level! She would definitely be able to attain good achievements if she trained hard!

"Hehe, Mommy is amazing too!"

Kylie chuckled in return. Then she ran away to have fun with some other kids in the courtyard.

"Sigh, I wonder how Jack and the others are doing. Sigh! That is an extremely dangerous place!"

"Sigh!"

Selena gazed upward at the sky and sighed out loud.

Just as her words fell not long after, she saw a group of people riding on a flying sword in the distant sky heading toward her.

It was Jack's flying sword! This sight before Selena cheered her soul instantly. She shot up from her chair and said to Kylie, who was playing on the side, "Kylie, look! It's Daddy! He's back!"

Sunshine flooded Kylie's big and beautiful eyes the moment she heard Selena's words. She immediately ran over and yelled, "Yay! Daddy is back! Daddy is back!"

The others from the White family also turned their heads toward the sky and saw Jack's flying sword heading toward them. Their spirits were flying high and they were jumping excitedly as though Jack was

the Santa Claus who brought them gifts!

There's a lot of people on the flying swords! Looks like our White family did not lose a lot of people this time!"

Someone from the crowd said with a relieved face.

At this time, Jack's flying sword stopped midair, slightly above the courtyard of the White family residence. Everyone on the sword hopped off and landed on the ground

"Master White, how was it? What happened there?"

Lancelot and the others immediately approached Nash and surrounded him in the center with immense excitement written over their faces.

"Hahaha! Oh my…we gained a lot this time! We went to the Black Windy Island, and we did not suffer a lot of casualties, only around one thousand or so. We're satisfied with the outcome!"

Nash laughed wholeheartedly as he spoke. "Also, Jack is so amazing! He grabbed the stone ball!" he added.

"The stone ball?"

Lancelot exchanges puzzled glances with the others. They were confused.

Nash then told the crowd everything.

“Oh, so there’s a stone ball inside every Seven Dangerous Place, hmmm. This stone ball must have a lot to do with being able to break through to the ultimate god realm!”

An old man from the crowd frowned and fell into contemplation.

“Tch! The Hunt family is truly sleazy and cunning. They knew that the Black Windy Island is the most dangerous place out of the Seven Dangers, yet they as a strong family chose to go to Bright Snow Mountain and made you guys go to Black Windy Island! How unfair!”

On the other hand, Lancelot was huffing and puffing at the situation, clenching his fist and face burning with anger as he spoke.

Chapter 1561

“Heh. Once us aristocratic families knew that we could only choose from two danger zones, I knew that they would definitely choose Bright Snow Mountain, which is closer and is not so dangerous!”

Nash chuckled and added, “But thank goodness Jack thought of a plan and made agreements with everyone in advance. This is how we were able to prevent the forces from the sea from successfully driving a wedge between us. Only then could we get the treasure back without suffering huge losses!”

“That’s right. It’s true that we were fortunate to have Jack, so clever and strong in fighting. He killed so many fighters from the Hall of Divine Royal, and only then did they give up on attacking us and escape!”

Kenneth was emotional when he thought about what had happened a few days before.” The monsters of Black Wind Island are not only strong, but they frequently appear in groups. No wonder they’re so fearsome!”

“I think that the tree was too powerful. An Elder at the peak of the true god status from the Ximenes family was actually killed when he was not being careful!”

Another Elder from the White family spoke with a pang of regret.

“That tree is indeed strange. Who knows why it’s so strong? And it is also smart. Thank goodness it couldn’t move. If it could run like the monsters, it would be even harder for us to fight it!”

Nash also furrowed his brows. It was the first time they had seen a tree like this.

“I think it has something to do with the stone ball!”

Jack thought about it and made a guess, “The people of the Hall of Divine Royal said that there was a powerful ancient tree somewhere deep in the danger zone, and we even saw it. This means that all those ancient trees are of a similar type, and the only point of similarity between them is that they all have a stone orb on them. That’s why I think this has something to do with the stone ball!”

Here, Jack paused for a while before continuing, “Also, I noticed something strange!”

“What is it?”

Everyone immediately looked at Jack in anticipation, their eyes filled with curiosity.

“While I was taking this stone ball, I realized a problem. It’s actually absorbing Chi in small quantities. I couldn’t help but be suspicious and think if it’s some kind of living thing. If it can absorb Chi on its own, doesn’t this mean that it’s able to cultivate itself?”

Jack did not beat around the bush. He flipped his palm and took the stone orb out of his martial ring, showing it to everyone.

“It’s truly absorbing Chi, but not at a very fast pace. It’s very slow!”

Everyone was stunned after they observed it for a while.

“Why would they absorb Chi? Unless they can truly cultivate themselves?”

Kenneth frowned.

Lancelot gently knocked his hand on its surface and put his ear closer to it. “Strange. There’ s nothing. It doesn’t sound hollow either. Don’t tell me this is some kind of egg?”

Mason burst into laughter after he said that. “Haha. Don’t speak too soon. Asides from its unusual color and the fact that it has some strange inscriptions on its surface, this thing does look like a fossil of a dinosaur egg, judging from its size. Maybe it’s actually a monster’s egg? If that’s the case, then it might not have anything to do with breaking into the true god status!”

“No way!”

Lancelot shook his head. “If it were a fossil, why would it absorb Chi on its own? Besides, why would it appear on top of the seven big trees in the Seven Dangers? I don’t think all of this is a coincidence. Rather, it feels like someone had specially arranged this!”

“Specially arranged?”

Lancelot’s words evidently struck something within Jack.” Now that you mention it, I do think that people from the past have arranged this. This object absorbs Chi by itself and is placed in danger zones, so it’s difficult for people to find it. But what’s the use of the Chi after it’ s absorbed?”

“Ugh, I have a headache from this. I think we won’t be able to get any information out of this for a while. I wonder if the master of the Divine King Sect has found anything after conducting research for so long?

Furthermore, he has quite a few eggs in his possession!”

Nash heaved a sigh and spoke slowly.

Chapter 1562

“That’s true. So many days have passed by already. I wonder if they’ve found anything. It seems like we should find some time to pay the Divine King Sect a visit!”

Jack also thought of something and could not help but say,” That force in the sea territory, I think it’s called the Hall of Divine Royal? The names of the Hall of Divine Royal and the Divine King Sect seem related. Is there a connection between these two forces?”

“I know!”

He did not think that the First Elder would speak up at this moment, “When they were younger, I think they were fellow disciples of the same master. They fell in love with the same woman, and the woman did not make her feelings clear between the two. At first, the woman was the girlfriend of the master of the Divine King Sect, but later I think she was caught in bed with the master of the Hall of Divine Royal. So the master of the Divine King Sect killed the woman, and the two disciples became enemies since then!”

Here, Kenneth paused for a while before continuing, “And between the two, the master of the Hall of Divine Royal chose to leave the mainland and went into the ocean. So the master of the Divine King Sect was the fellow disciple of the current master of the Hall of Divine Royal!”

“The two of them actually apprenticed under the same master? Won’t it be troublesome if those two forces decide to make an alliance? Who would be able to oppose them then?”

Titus’s expression darkened after he heard this. He spoke with a worried tone.

“Heh. I don’t think it’ll be happening. Although they haven’t interacted for years and don’t quite see each other as mortal enemies anymore, and the animosity between them has decreased, I still believe that they won’t cooperate with each other. The master of the Divine King Sect has a pretty good character. As for the master of the Hall of Divine Royal, while I’m not familiar with him, I don’t think he’s a nice person. After all, he had seduced the girlfriend of his own fellow disciple!”

Kenneth chuckled and spoke.

“It seems that they will not make an alliance no matter what happens. We have nothing to fear then!”

Jack gave a bitter smile and spoke with emotion, “Who knew that the two disciples from the past would actually become the masters of such powerful forces.”

“All right, everyone, go and take a rest. We’ve managed to obtain quite a lot of spirited grass this time. It’ll be enough for everyone’s cultivation for some time now. Especially for those at the advanced stage of the true god status-you must work hard! If Jack manages to find something from the stone orb, and we discover the method to break into the ultimate god status, you will have the chance to do so!”

Nash flashed a satisfied smile and told everyone to leave and rest first.

Jack kept everything and walked over, lifting Kylie up and carrying her into the place where he stayed.

“Daddy, guess what cultivation level I’m at now?”

Kylie immediately asked, grinning. The little girl wanted to give Jack a surprise earlier.

“Hmm, you were still a sixth grade martial artist when I left. From your looks, you’re definitely not just a seventh grader. You wouldn’t be so happy if you were a seventh grader!”

Jack thought about it and said, “I think you must be an eighth-grade martial artist now, right?”

“Hehe!”

Kylie giggled when she heard this. “If you came back two days earlier, Daddy, I would have been an eighth-grade martial artist. But I already broke into the ninth grade yesterday! And Mommy has already broken into the level of a ninth-grade grandmaster. Don’t tell her I told you. She wants to give you a surprise!”

“Naughty girl!”

Jack heard this and gently patted his daughter’s head.” Before I know it, you’re already seven years old. Time passes by so quickly!”

“Oh, right. Mommy said that she wants to quickly break into demi-god status. Once she does, she’ll be able to fly. And she can follow you wherever you go, and she’ll be able to defend herself too!”

Chapter 1563

Kylie quickly thought of something and told Jack all this.

“All right, I got it. Good girl, The next time your mommy has anything in mind, tell them to Daddy. Understand?”

Jack smiled and told Kylie, “All right. I’ll bring you and Mommy to the bottom of the mountain to play at night. How about that?”

“Okay. Yay! We can go out to play!”

Kylie cried excitedly.

At night, Jack did not rush to research the stone orb. At any rate, he already possessed it, and he had time to study it.

After he accompanied his daughter and wife to the bottom of the mountain, he rested for the entire night

The next morning, Jack was just about to take the stone orb out to study it. He did not think that Fiona would drag Andrew, Theodore, and Joan to see him at this time.

When he saw the four of them and Fiona’s grinning expression, Jack knew that Fiona must be highly anticipating something. She even dragged his mother over.

“Jack, Didn’t Third Young Mistress Cabello say that they were going to give some of their treasure to you -the Bone Marrow Cleansing Water or something. What happened? Did she forget?”

Fiona asked, grinning.

“That’s right, Jack. We wanted to see you yesterday, but your mother said that you were working hard outside. So she prevented us from seeing you, to let you rest properly. See, we care about you!”

Theodore also looked at Jack with a grin on his face.

“Don’t worry. There are only four of you here, so it won’t be a problem. Just one drop per person will do the trick!”

Jack gave a bitter smile and took out a small porcelain container. Then he took out four more bottles and dropped a single drop of Bone Marrow Cleansing Water into each of the four bottles. He then thrust them on everyone.

“Is-isn’t one drop too little?”

Andrew took the bottle from Jack’s hand and frowned. It seemed that he was unhappy.

“Jack, I’m sure you have more in that bottle. Seriously, my daughter is so pretty, and she’s married to you. And our family has treated you well. Why are you so stingy? Aren’t you being too miserly, giving me only one drop?”

Fiona was also unhappy. She spoke in a sour tone.

Jack’s expression darkened when he heard this. “All of you are older, so one drop is enough to cleanse your entire body. You only need to mix it with hot water and soak in the water for half an hour, then you can become a first-grade martial artist already. Is that not enough for you? Besides, even if I were stingy, I wouldn’t have given my mother only a single drop, right?”

Fiona continued stubbornly,” Then how would we know that you’re going to secretly give your mother another drop later?”

“Heh. I can give you two drops if you want but your body won’t be able to take it. Not only will you cleanse your body, but you’ll also die while you soak in the water. Think about it for yourself then!”

Jack spoke with a cold smile on his face.

Chapter 1564

“Gasp!”

Fiona took a sharp intake of breath after she heard Jack’s words. She was scared witless now. “Two-two drops will kill you? Never mind then. I’ll take one drop!”

“Thank you, Young Master Jack!”

Theodore gave Jack a fist-to-palm salute, his emotions in a tangle. His son had provoked Jack so much before, yet Jack still treated him well. This made him feel sorry. Perhaps his son did deserve to die.

“Heh. No worries!”

Jack chuckled. Only then did Fiona, Andrew, and Theodore leave the room.

“Third Young Mistress Cabello stole this treasure, right? It seems like she really likes you. Will the master of the Cabello family scold her for this?”

After Fiona and the others left, Joan asked with worry in her voice.

“Don’t worry, Mom. Master Cabello is a nice person. Daniella told me that her father knows about this, and he himself had given it to us! Now relations between our families are good. I believe that it won’t be like before, where the two families saw each other as mortal enemies!”

Jack smiled and assured Joan.

“Mmph. Then I can relax. I don’t really care about cultivating myself. I’m so old already. It’s definitely too late for me to start training now. If I can’t be a fighter, I definitely won’t be someone at the ultimate-

god status who can live for two hundred years. My only wish is to see you lead a happy life!”

Joan nodded her head and spoke, her voice thick with emotion.

“Mom, even if you can’t be a fighter, you’ll already be a martial artist once you cleanse your body. You’ll be a lot stronger than regular people, and at least you won’t easily fall sick. Of course, if that’s the case, I believe that you’ll be able to live a long life without a problem, Mom!”

Jack took his mother’s hand and smiled.

“All right. As for you, I hope you’ ll be able to succeed soon. Your father told me that being able to find the way to break into the ultimate god status is of utmost importance, as well as who will be the first to find the way. This might change everything in the future, and it might change the entire structure of the cultivation world! You must work hard. After all, the White family and our relatives from the Taylor family who came over with us all rely on you to protect them!”

Joan nodded her head and spoke earnestly, “But I believe that you will break into the ultimate god status! Selena has good talent too. I hope that she’ ll be able to catch up to you and become a fighter at the ultimate god status too!”

“I’ll definitely work hard, Mom!”

Jack bobbed his head.

Yet at this time, a few youths from the White family came running in

“Young Master Jack, there are two women at the bottom of the mountain who want to see you. And they have children with them!”

One of the youths immediately reported to Jack in a respectful tone.

“They want to see me? And there are children?”

Jack was confused. “Did they say who they were?”

“They didn’t. They just said that you’ll know once you see them!”

The young man replied immediately.

“All right. I’ll go see them!”

Chapter 1565

Jack nodded his head and answered.

“All right. I’ll get out of your hair now and prepare to cleanse my body and be a martial artist as soon as possible. Last night, your father even taught me some knowledge about the cultivation arts.”

Joan gave a small smile and left.

Jack followed the youths and quickly went down the mountain.

“Greetings, Supreme Warrior!”

The two middle-aged women were each holding a child. When they saw Jack, they immediately kneeled down. There were a few bodyguards behind them.

“You – Why are the two of you here?”

Jack’s heart thudded when he saw the two.

He had seen these two once when he had gotten married. It was Fernando’s two wives. One of them was named Sarai, and the other was River.

Jack did not know how to inform them of what happened to Fernando all this while. A month ago, he finally told Lana to inform them of the situation.

All this while, he was filled with regret, and he did not know how he could ever compensate the two.

After all, they were not in need of money now. They had lower cultivation levels, but they were already seventh or eighth-grade martial artists. He wanted to find some time to visit them and take them in. He had told Lana about this too. He did not think that they would actually bring their children over at this moment.

“Supreme Warrior, we know what happened to Fernando. The forces that attacked him were foreign forces, so he still contributed to the country and brought glory to our land. We managed to find our way here because we asked the Goddess of War, Lana, to give us directions. We wanted to come and see Fernando, and we’ve brought our children over!”

Sarai’s expression was pinched when she spoke about Fernando. Red began to rim her eyes.

The two children were still young, only about two or three years old. They looked rather pitiful.

“Supreme Warrior, we have no wish to disturb you, but we truly want to see him. Don’t worry. After we see him, we’ll leave in two days!”

River also chimed in hurriedly, afraid that Jack would be unhappy with their appearance.

Jack gave a bitter smile. “I wanted to bring you two over in a few days,” he said. “I was busy before, having to take part in the martial arts competition for the youths among the eight main families, and then going into the Seven Dangers to search for treasure. I was so busy that I didn’t have time to see you. It’s great that you two are here now!”

Here, Jack paused before continuing, “Since you’re here, you should stay on. There’s plenty of Chi here. You can properly cultivate yourselves here. I’ll arrange accommodation for you, and you’ll be my esteemed guests here from now on! Don’t worry. Fernando won’t die. I’ll find a way to bring him back!”

“Can we truly stay here? Thank you, Supreme Warrior!”

Sarai and River’s expressions were filled with excitement.

“Of course. Just treat this place as your own, and tell me if you need anything. I’ll also get Lana to pass some martial resources to you to help you cultivate yourselves! This way, by the time Fernando wakes up, your cultivation levels will be increased. Won’t it be great if you can give him a surprise?”

Jack smiled and spoke to the two, “Oh, right. And don’t call me ‘Supreme Warrior’ anymore. Everyone calls me Young Master Jack here. You should call me Jack or Young Master Jack. Either one is fine.”

“Thank you, Young Master Jack!”

River smiled, then she added, “But the Gods of War, Lana, and Ethan, told us about our husband’s situation. And we’ve been regularly keeping in touch. He’s in terrible condition now. We’re afraid…afraid that he won’t be able to come back!”

“We have hope so long as he’s not dead!”

Jack clenched his fists. “of course, I only have a year and seven months left at most. The Cryo Pearl will probably only last that long before melting. Now though, I know a few treasures that can save him, at least. I’ll definitely think of something to get them, even if I have to tear the entire country apart!”

Chapter 1566

What Jack said moved both women near tears.

Sarai Campbell, on the other hand, still had that bitter smile on her face as she lamented, “Sigh… It wouldn’t be so easy since Ethan Hays also said that what we need is a fourth-grade pill, while the two other precious items are third-grade premium spirited grass. We’ve only read about fourth and third-grade items from the ancient tome. Haha… We don’t even see third-grade elementary items on a regular basis, let alone third-grade premium and fourth-grade items!”

River Harris chimed in, “Young Master Jack, we know that you purposely said that to comfort us. Don’t worry; both Sister Sarai and I are strong-willed. After all, we’ve spent some time on the battlefield before, and we’ve learned to take matters of life and death easily. Let’s put aside how difficult it is for you to find these things and only focus on the pill. Are you capable of becoming a fourth-grade elementary alchemist in one year? That’s too difficult!”

Their words made Jack sighed inwardly as he knew it truly was a difficult feat. Firstly, the existence of these precious items was an issue. Secondly, so what if they existed and they managed to find all the different ingredients needed for the pill? He was just a second-grade intermediate alchemist, and it was a very troubling journey to become a fourth-grade elementary alchemist!

He had been running away from this fact all this time. He could only repeat to himself, Lana, and the others that this would work without fail.

However, the hope of succeeding was as small as winning a five million lottery.

“Yes, it is difficult, but I’ll try my best!” assured Jack after a moment of silence. “Alright, let’s stop talking about this. As long as Fernando is still alive, I, Jack White, won’t give up on him. Come, let me bring everyone to visit him!”

River thought of something and added, “Let’s visit Lana first so she can help us take care of the children. We don’t want the children to see their father lying there…”

Jack nodded and quickly led them up the mountain. He arranged accommodations for them before ordering his subordinate to gather Lana, Ethan, and his other disciples over.

Lana immediately stepped forward and said to both women, “Sisters, we planned to fetch the two of you after a couple of days. I never thought you’d find your way here!”

“We’ve dismissed all the helpers in our house, and I decided to come with the children after discussing it with your Sister River. We plan to visit Fernando. We haven’t seen him for quite a while now, and we miss him badly.”

Sarai smiled weakly and said, “We don’t want the children to see their father in that state, though, so please help us take care of them for some time, and we will go take a look later.”

“Sure, no problem!” Lana agreed to it. Jack soon led the two of them to pay Fernando a visit.

Jack felt waves of bitterness in his heart when he saw how Sarai and River acted after they saw Fernando. The two of them sat by the thick ice layer and started crying.

Chapter 1567

Jack never imagined that such an unyielding man, a man who made great contributions to Daxia, would end up in such a situation and be enslaved into a puppet by others.

This was also because the other party was in a hurry to lure Jack out so they could kill him. Otherwise, Fernando's life energy would completely disperse some time later to the point he could not be saved.

Even as he returned to his room, Jack still looked dejected with a deep frown on his face.

Selena walked toward him and took his hands into hers as she studied his expression. "Honey, don't give yourself too much pressure-just try your best. Don' t blame yourself, do you understand? Otherwise, I'm afraid that this will affect your power to train! It'll be troublesome if this affects your breakthrough as you'll meet obstacles difficult to overcome."

"Alright, I understand." Jack nodded and continued speaking to Selena, "By the way, Selena, the Cabellos gave us Bone Marrow Cleansing Water sufficient for ten people. I've used four of the portions as I've given some to our mother and the rest today. There's still enough for six people, and I just had a thought: Should we make a trip back to Middle Province? Shall we distribute some to Sharon, Tanya, and the others?"

Selena smiled gently. "Sure! They've treated us well before, and there's not much use to keep this item. You should go back and give it to them, but I think I'll be staying back to train so I can break through into the initial stage of the demi-god level soon. By then, I'll be able to fly around. I'll stay at home to accompany our daughter. I've been talking with Sarai and River these past couple of days as well, I'll bring them around so they'll be well acquainted with the White family!"

Jack was inwardly relieved, never thinking his wife would be incredibly understanding. "I was afraid that you'd be unhappy due to jealousy because I planned to send these to Sharon and the others!"

However, Selena rolled her eyes when she heard what Jack said. "Why should I be jealous? They're all amazing girls, anyway. Previously, my mother wished for you to get involved with the George and Drake family. Who knew that the White family was actually one of the eight shadow families and you had such a strong background"

Jack smiled bitterly. "I never thought that I'd return to the White family someday. I initially thought that I'd never return to the White family in this lifetime, too. Who would've thought that that woman, Lily Lagorio, was the one who impeded the journey all this while."

Selena smiled and said with great understanding, “You’ve been quite tired and under great pressure recently. It’d be nice to go out and relax!”

“Don’t worry, I only see them as great friends. I’ll be back soon,” promised Jack smilingly.

The next morning, Jack headed for Middle Province on his flying sword.

“Ah, I’m so bored!” whined Tanya in a café located in Middle Province. “I wonder how that guy is right now. That guy never contacted us after he went to Gin City, but I heard that they’ve been wiped out after they offended a great force. He must be alright!”

Yvonne, who was next to her, had a wane smile. “You shouldn’t think so much; Jack’s incredibly capable. How can people like us be worthy of him? Apart from that, Jack has such a great relationship with his wife, so how can it be easily shaken? Isn’t that the person we fell for?”

Tanya glanced at Yvonne and said with a bitter smile on her face, “Cousin, you’ve finally acknowledged that you like him as well. You had always denied it in the past!”

Chapter 1568

Unexpectedly, Yvonne rolled her eyes at Tanya. “How dare you comment on me when you also acted the same way before? It’d be great if you were as brave as Sharon. Even though she failed, at least she confessed, right?”

Tanya smilingly replied, “That’s right-at least she had more things worth remembering him by. Who would’ve thought Jack was the Supreme Warrior and had such strong combat power? There hasn’t been any news or rumors about him in recent months. He might be living in seclusion, even.”

At this moment, Yvonne actually saw Sharon walking with a guy on the streets outside, and she seemed incredibly happy. “Tanya, look over there. Isn’t that woman Sharon? Why is she with a guy?”

“Hey, why does this guy’s figure look so familiar?” Tanya could not help but frown as she eyed the man.

Soon, the two of them exchanged looks and simultaneously exclaimed,” Jack!”

“Oh, my, it is him! Why has he returned?” Tanya suddenly stood up and walked toward the entrance of the café.

“Tanya, would it be bad for us to just barge forward like this? Would we be interrupting them?” Yvonne was just as inwardly excited as she followed after Tanya meekly.

“What are you afraid of? We’re good friends with Sharon, so why should we be embarrassed?” Tanya had longed to meet Jack again, and she did not want to lose such an opportunity after seeing him again

Although she knew Jack harbored no feelings for them, she would still be satisfied even to speak with Jack once again.

“Jack, Sharon!” Tanya stopped and called out to them after running a couple of steps forward with her bodyguards.

Jack and Sharon turned around at the same time, seemingly surprised

“Jack, it really is you. Why have you returned?” Tanya was delighted when she saw that it was indeed Jack.

Before Jack could even explain, Sharon chirped, “The two of us were about to go look for you guys. Who would’ve thought we’ d meet in the streets! Jack had just returned and went to visit my house, and he was prepared to go to yours!”

“Is that true? You still know that you should visit us?” Tanya wore the look of suspicion yet felt giddy inwardly. Even if this guy thought of her as a friend, it was better for him to remember her than to forget her.

“Of course. I have something that I’d like to give to everyone!” Jack smiled. “It just so happened that I have a precious item sufficient for a couple of people, so I thought about you guys. That’s why I’m back; I’m prepared to give it to you.”

“Really? It’s great that you still remember us, your old friends!” spoke Yvonne with a roll of her eyes. “It’s quite late. Why don’t we search for a place to have dinner?”

“Alright, this will be my treat. Let’s go and search for a place to eat. We’ll catch up on old times over food!” Jack nodded. The group soon found a hotel and ordered a table full of food.

Chapter 1569

“By the way, Jack, we heard news that you went to Gin City when you left and also the so-called Swallow City, right?” asked the curious Tanya minutes after they dug into their meal.

Jack nodded as he then relayed some of the events that happened these few days while drinking

After they finished speaking, he took out three small porcelain bottles and placed them in front of the three women. “This is what I’ve mentioned. It’s a precious item capable of purifying the body and making you a martial artist, enabling you to join the journey of training; the Bone Marrow Cleansing Water. Just add it into hot water and soak yourself in the water for half an hour, but it’s best if your maid can be on guard next to you as it might hurt over time. I fear you girls might pass out due to the pain!”

“It doesn’t matter if it’s painful or not. It’s nice to be able to train!” Tanya took the small porcelain bottle in front of her as her eyes burned with determination.

“Yes. It doesn’t matter how strong I am-so long as I can train. Becoming a grandmaster in a place like

Middle Province will mean not everyone can harass me!" Yvonne was equally happy and looked just as fired up.

"I still have three more bottles here, so everyone should take another bottle each. Those that aren't too old should be able to use it. You can give it to others in the future!" Jack took out the remaining three bottles and placed them on the table.

"That's too much considering how…precious these are. You're giving more to us when you've already given us a bottle?" Spoke the abashed Sharon.

Tanya thought about it and said, "That's right, Jack. Aren't you treating us a bit too nicely? By the way, does your wife know about this? Won't she be unhappy?"

"Haha… It's alright, I've told her about this. You guys can take everything. I've also prepared a copy of martial art technique, some spirited grass, and other items as well. It should be enough for everyone to train for one to two years!" Jack smiled again and took out the martial enhancement material before giving it to the three of them.

"Jack, you…you're so nice to us. I don't know how to thank you!" Sharon came toward Jack with a blush on her face and said, "It might be difficult for us to meet in the future. Can I get a hug?"

Jack originally wanted to refuse the suggestion but he failed as he was hit with Sharon' s expectant yet pitiful expression. With that, he stood up and stretched out his arms.

Sharon was secretly delighted. She immediately rushed into Jack's arms shyly and hugged him tightly.

After some time, Sharon felt the welled-up embarrassment in her that made her back away with a flushed face.

"I… I want a hug too!" Tanya abruptly stood up and walked over angrily, hugging Jack instantly

Yvonne was still hesitant when she saw how proactive Tanya was. She looked at the wine glass in front of her before pouring a whole glass of wine for herself. She gulped everything down in one go before standing up. “We might not see him anymore in this lifetime once he leaves. I want to hug the Supreme Warrior, too!”

Jack was embarrassed, but he could only stand there and let the three women take turns in hugging him for a while.

Everybody had their fair share of drinks before they left the hotel.

Jack also sent the three of them home before spending the night in the hotel. The next morning, he left Middle Province on his flying sword.

Jack could not help but stop when he flew toward the edge of Middle Province. He turned around and glanced at the familiar city. “I hope that the three of you can find someone suitable for you and cherishes you three fondly.”

Chapter 1570

Jack soon left the Middle Province and then returned to the White Family.

After returning to the White family, he studied that stone ball for two days. After all, he had not only reached the peak of the True God realm, but was also very stable in this realm. Therefore there was no need to cultivate, and what he had was plenty of time.

Unfortunately, after studying this stone ball for two days, he couldn’t learn anything from it other than the fact that it was absorbing the surrounding aura into it all the time.

"It looks like I should go to the Divine King Clan and ask, although I’m afraid that if I sent someone to inquire, there would be nothing useful from that inquiry!"

Jack couldn't help but smile bitterly after thinking about it for a while.

He didn't have much time, he didn't dare to keep delaying, even if he delayed for one more day, Fernando would be in a bit more danger.

"Are you planning to go alone, or are you taking more people with you? Would it be too dangerous for one person? What if, when the time comes, the people from the Divine King Clan want to snatch that stone ball of yours, what then?"

Hearing Jack's words, Selena asked with some concern.

"I'll just go alone, don't worry, that Divine King Sect already has three eggs in their hands now, there's no need to grab this one from me, besides, with my current strength, it's not that easy for them to keep me there!"

Jack smiled, when he went to that Black Wind Island before, his realm wasn't even particularly stable yet, he hadn't fully adapted to that newly increased power in his body, but even so, he was able to easily kill strong people with peak True God Realm cultivation.

But now that realm of his was even more stable, and his combat power was also a few points more powerful. so even if he went alone, he had nothing to fear.

"Well, the other party has been holding those three stone balls for almost twenty days now, right, and with so many people in their Divine King Sect, there must be more than one person staring at those stone balls, so it's good for you to go and ask!"

Selena said after thinking about it, she nodded.

At noon the next day, at the Divine King Sect.

Several old men, all staring at the three stone balls in front of them, kept studying them, and after studying them for half a day, one after another, they continued to shake their heads one after another.

"Hey, there's not much progress, other than finding out that this stone ball can actively absorb aura, there's no other clues, these strange runes on it, we can't read them either, these patterns are connected to them, it can't be some kind of formation, right?"

The First Elder of the Divine King Clan, after taking a closer look, couldn't help but speculate.

"Master, a group of people have come outside, saying they are looking for you, there are eighty or ninety people here, each with a cultivation level that isn’t low!"

Unexpectedly, just at this moment, a few disciples of the sect flew in and immediately reported.

"So many people? Did they say what kind of people they were?"

Master Yates frowned and immediately put away the stone ball that was placed on top of the table.

The First Elder laughed and said, "There is no need to guess, it is probably people from other family powers, recently there are always people coming over, wanting to ask you if you have researched anything. hehe, there are even some second-class family heads, privately looking for me for tea. as for the purpose, it is merely in hopes to get a glimmer of information. After all, any bit of information about the Ultimate God Realm is quite sensitive."

"No, even if other clans or sects come to visit, they usually don't come with so many people, it's too

disgraceful for them to come with so many people! Even if they want to guard against our Divine King Clan, then they should just let the others wait on the mountain not far away. there is no need to come with so many, not to mention so many experts!"

Master Yates, however, shook his head.

The man who had come to report the news, however, smiled bitterly and arched his hand to the crowd, "Master, the other party said, you will know who he is when you see him, saying something about being an old acquaintance, he just hasn't seen you for many years, so he came to visit you!"

"An old acquaintance?"

Chapter 1571 skrappie

The elders looked at each other, confused.

The group of people soon flew out and arrived at the front of the sect, stopping in front of the group of people who had come to visit.

"You are?"

Master Yates looked at these people in front of him with a puzzled look on his face, among them was an old man who looked somewhat familiar, but he could not recall where he had seen him.

After all, once his younger brother had left back then, decades had passed. Everyone had gone from being middle-aged back then, to being old men now.

"Older brother, it's been a long time!"

Matthew Charles chuckled, before he arched his hand at Master Yates in front of him and asked.

Hearing this somewhat familiar voice, Master Yates finally recognised who the person in front of him was, and the smile on that face instantly stiffened, and his face became ugly.

His fist clenched as he gritted his teeth and said, "It has indeed been a long time, I didn't expect that you would dare to bring people to come here and find me?"

After saying that, Master Yates clenched his fist with a thick surge of chi on it, then in a flash, he appeared in front of Matthew and blasted his fist at him.

When Matthew saw this, he also immediately clenched his fist, mobilized the chi in his body, and then directly blasted a punch at Master Yates.

After this punch was thrown, both of them were shaken and sent flying for several steps before they stopped.

"Senior brother, don't fight. I've come to see you today for something, besides it's been so many years, why hurt the peace between us as brothers over a woman?"

Immediately after standing firm, Matthew advised Master Yates.

"Who is your elder brother? It’s been long since I have disregarded you as a younger brother, so don't call me senior brother in the future!"

Master Yates was so furious that he directly waved his sleeves, then put his hands behind his back, "Get lost!"

"Master, no, Master Yates, it's fine if you don't recognize me as your younger brother, let's just pretend we're strangers, okay?"

Matthew smiled awkwardly before saying, "I've come here on behalf of the Hall of Devine Clan to ask you something! Look, we've come all this way, can we go in and talk?"

"If you have something to say, say it, and say it quickly!"

Master Yates coldly dropped a sentence.

"It's about some matters regarding the Ultimate God Realm. Any other matters, I believe that would not interest you at all Master Yates, but this matter regarding the Ultimate God Realm, I believe this would definitely interest you!"

Matthew smiled, he thought that as long as he mentioned this matter of the Ultimate God Realm, his elder brother would definitely be very excited and interested.

However, he soon realised that he could not see that excited look on Master Yate’s face.

"Strange, could it be that the Elder Brother had already known about it?"

Matthew immediately frowned and began to contemplate.

Seeing that look on Matthew’s face, Master Yates also reacted instantly before deliberately revealing a few moments of surprise, "Really? About the Ultimate God Realm thing? If it’s true, oh, then do tell me about it!"

Chapter 1572

"Master Yates, it’s not good if we talk about it here is it? I’m thinking, how about we find a place to sit down and talk?"

Matthew smiled and finally said to Master Yates.

"Fine, then let's go over there to the council chambers to talk!"

After Master Yates thought about it, he led the people to fly directly in the direction of a palace, while Matthew and the others, immediately followed behind.

Soon, everyone was sitting down around a huge stone table.

"Speak!"

Although Master Yates agreed to let the other party in, his attitude wasn't very good. after sitting down, he also had a nonchalant look.

"Hey hey, elder brother, oh no, Master Yates, let me tell you, you may not know, some time ago, there was a group of people from the upper mainland who went to our side of the sea, think about it, our place is so far away from God King Hall, so just what did they go there for?"

"Our people, at once, guessed that these people must have known some secret about the Ultimate God Realm, and that's why they went inside our sea! So, we secretly followed them and eventually found out that they had actually gone inside the Black Wind Forest of Black Wind Island! In the end, it seems that there was a fight over an egg that was like a stone!"

Matthew looked at Master Yates with a smile and gave the general situation, and finally said, "So, we

guessed that this stone ball like thing, must have some relation to breaking through to Ultimate God Realm. So we got into a fight with them, but the other side was quite strong. we actually couldn't beat each other, especially that White family's kid, it was really terrifying! We weren't even a match for him, and he even killed two of our strongest people at the peak of the True God realm!"

"Hehe, is that so? The White family's brat is so formidable, good on him! His killing, it's also kind of helping me out!"

Unexpectedly, when Master Yates heard this, he instead smiled coldly and said with an indifferent expression.

The corners of matthew's mouth twitched viciously for a few moments before he said, "Master Yates, the past is the past, is it, are you not interested in this stone ball? What I mean by this is that water rich in nutrients shouldn't flow to outsiders' fields!"

"Water rich in nutrients should not flow to outsiders' fields? What do you mean?"

Master Yates raised his eyebrows and slowly asked.

"Hehe, what I mean is simple, that is, at that time, there were quite a lot of people from the other side, and now they must have gone back to their respective families. But even so, this White family is not that easy to deal with, so, our two families should join forces. go and snatch that stone ball, and then study it together to see if we can break through to the Ultimate God Realm together!"

Matthew chuckled, before he gave his idea away.

"You have a good idea!"

Master Yates sighed with emotion and said to Matthew "However, I'm not interested in that stone ball right now, so you'd better go!"

"Not interested? Are you kidding? That thing, it might be able to find the mystery to break through to Ultimate God Realm, and you're actually not interested?"

Matthew rubbed himself to his feet, his eyes full of disbelief. how could he have ever imagined that his older brother would say such a thing. to be able to break through to the Ultimate God Realm, might allow one to have a life span of two hundred years, in such a case, he was actually not interested?

Master Yates then directly took out a stone ball and placed it in front of him, "I have one here already, just study it yourself, why would I want to rob it? What's more, you've also said that the White family is not to be messed with!"

"You have one too?"

Matthew took two steps forward, and then intended to walk over and look at the stone ball.

Chapter 1573

However, Master Yates placed his hand on top of the stone ball and it was gone in a flash, stowed away.

Matthew was speechless for a while, before he retreated and sat down, frowning, "Actually, there are two of them? No wonder you didn't want to rob the White family's stone ball!"

"This thing, there are more than two, there is one inside each of the Seven Great Dangerous Lands. I could have not told you this piece of information at all, but it's fine to tell you, after all, even if I don't tell you about this, you will definitely be able to inquire about it after you go down there!"

Master Yates said with a smile.

"There is one in each of the seven great danger zones? In which dangerous land did you get this one?"

As soon as Matthew heard this, his heart moved and he immediately asked.

"I know what you're thinking, you want to go and see the stone balls inside the other dangerous lands, right? Unfortunately, it's too late for you to go now. the ancient sects and clans on the other continents have already acted long ago, and by now, those stone balls have all been taken out. So, you'd better stop dreaming!"

Master Yates finally laughed, "Alright, I can only tell you this much, I've already given you enough face, you'd better go, go back to your seas!"

Matthew naturally did not want to die, nor could he be willing to go back just like that. After thinking about it, he then asked Master Yates, "So, you should have gotten this stone ball for some time, right? I wonder, have you researched anything out?"

"Hehe, if I had already researched something, why would I be here talking nonsense with you? I must be in a hurry to break through, and if I break through to the Ultimate God Realm, one day when I'm in a bad mood, I'll go to your bullshit God King Hall and show you how powerful I am!"

When he thought of what happened back then, Master Yates's heart was still a little troubled, so he didn't have any good words to say.

"Hey, elder brother, why do you have to? It's just for a woman, and it's been so many years and she's dead, so you'd better let it go!"

Matthew sighed and persuaded.

"Let it go? If it wasn't for you, she wouldn't have died!"

Master Yates slapped the table and stood up, "Get lost, I never want to see you again! To be able to talk to me for that long today is already considered good enough for you!"

"Alright, in that case, then we'll leave!"

Matthew also knew that even if he continued to stay, he wouldn't get any more information, and he was already satisfied with being able to get so much useful information today.

Next, he planned to have someone ask around to see which other powers had obtained this kind of stone ball, and when the time came, to see which of the powers that had obtained this stone ball was the weakest, he would find this weakest power and snatch one over first.

In his heart, he could only pray that the White family would not be the weakest power, after all, that kid from the White family was too strong, and he did not want to fight against them.

"Master, there's someone visiting outside!"

However, just as they were about to leave, a disciple of the Divine King Clan ran in and once again arched his hand.

"I'm not in the mood for visitors today, no matter who it is, tell him to go back first and say that I'm not in a good mood!"

Master Yates waved his hand, he reckoned that it was some family head who wanted to come and inquire about the situation again. These days, he was so annoyed by this matter, plus today, he was a bit more impatient after meeting this murderous junior disciple.

But Matthew had brought so many people here, and he had just tested Matthew’s strength, and it was not an easy feat to kill the other party. so he simply did not want to pay attention to the other party.

Chapter 1574

That disciple did not immediately withdraw, and after thinking about it, he then said softly, "Master, the person who came is not from a second-class family or a third-class family, it's, it's the young master of the White family, Jack!"

"It's that brat?"

Elder Mosley glanced at the others and Matthew upon hearing this, and the other people from the Divine King Hall were also slightly shocked, not expecting that that brat had actually come as well.

"It's him?"

The Divine King Clan’s Master also froze for a moment. if it was a general family head of a small power, it would be alright if he chose to either see or not see him, there was no need to give face to the other party.

However, if it was Jack, then he had to give face, not to mention that he had just learned from the God King Hall's Hall Master that Jack still had one of those stone balls in his hand.

However, after thinking about it, he asked again, "How many people did he come with? There wouldn't be many, would there?"

That disciple then said, "Only one person came, this kid came on his flying sword. He's quite bold to dare to come alone!"

"Really only one person?"

Before Master Yates could say more, Matthew's face had more than a hint of excitement. If only Jack was alone, wouldn't this be the best chance to snatch the treasure from his hands? This kid definitely had that stone ball on him, and there were dozens of them here, and each one of them was also a strong person with True God realm cultivation. so if they all went together, couldn't they still snatch the treasure over?

"Yeah, there's only one, and we've all seen it!"

That disciple immediately said.

"Let's go, go out and take a look at this kid!"

With a wave of his hand, Matthew flew out with the others.

"Go!"

Master Yates was stunned and instantly reacted to what Matthew meant by this, and immediately flew out with his men as well, and also asked one of the elders to go and call some more of the clan's strongest people over.

"You guys are actually here too?"

Jack waited for a while, but he didn't expect that the first ones to fly out were dozens of people, and they were actually from the Divine King Hall, which made his face frown slightly, quite surprised.

"Haha, kid, isn't that quite surprising? I truly didn’t expect it. you are actually coming to the Divine King Clan alone, you brat, you must be looking for my elder brother to discuss this matter of the stone ball?"

Matthew laughed out loud, a few more moments of excitement in his eyes.

Of course, he deliberately mentioned the fact that Jack had come alone, just to see if Jack had really come alone. In case this kid had brought others with him, hiding in the distant woods or on the big mountain, then they wouldn't dare to make a move easily.

"What I had come to discuss with Master Yates, has nothing to do with you, right? I really didn't expect that Master Yates was actually your elder brother!"

Chapter 1575 Medz

Jack smiled coldly and said.

Hearing that Jack did not emphasize that he had not come alone, Matthew’s heart was pleased. it looked like this kid had really come alone, so that would be good.

"Shoo shoo shoo!"

Just at this time, Master Yates flew over with his men as well, along with more powerful people from the Divine King Sect, who also rushed over one after another.

"Master Yates, this kid is the person we want to find. He actually came alone, If we strike at him later, I

hope you won't interfere. after all, this is a personal grudge between me and him, this kid killed two of my peak True God realm powerhouses, and quite a few True God realm experts, this debt, it's time to settle it!"

After seeing Master Yates arrive, Canghai Ming smiled and said in a calm manner.

Master Yates froze for a moment, then sneered, "Hall Master Canghai Ming, this is not very good, this Jack is not an ordinary person, he is the son of the White family's head, moreover, he is the heir to the White family head, and he came to my place, I should naturally receive him well. He came to my clan today, thus he is the guest of honor of my Divine King Clan. How can I allow you to kill the guest of honor in my clan? What if word of this gets out? When that happens, who will dare to visit my place anymore?"

The corners of Canghai Ming's mouth immediately twitched slightly a few times before he said, "Master Yates, this is nothing, right? After all, this is a private matter between our two families, so if you don't help either party, it would be justifiable for word to get out.

But Master Yates sneered, "In my eyes, Jack is my guest, and you people are not.

When Jack saw that Master Yates was actually trying to help him, his heart was slightly warmed.

However, he still arched his hand at Master Yates, "Master Yates, thank you for your kindness, however, the Master of this Divine King Hall is right, between me and them, it is indeed considered a personal grudge, and I don't want to involve your Divine King Clan in our two families' affairs!"

"What! You ....."

Divine King Sect Master Master Yates was speechless in his heart, was this Jack crazy? The other side had several peak True God Realm powerhouses, not to mention that there were so many late True God Realm and mid True God Realm cultivators, so many people, and Jack still didn't appreciate it? Wasn't this tantamount to sending him to his death?

The First Elder of the Divine King Clan was also furious and directly said with a cold face, "Jack, are you crazy? Can't you see that our Master is trying to help you? If you do that, what's the difference between that and seeking death?"

Jack did not care and said, "It doesn't matter, there are not many of them, even if they all came at me, I'm afraid there are only five True God Realm peaks, with many more in the middle True God Realm and early True God Realm, if I don't show them a little bit of skill, they really won't know how foolish it is to chase us to this continent!"

Now that Jack's cultivation level has completely stabilized, his combat power had also improved a lot compared to before. The most crucial thing was that he was the only one here, the other White family members were not here, he didn't have so many worries anymore, in such a situation, he really didn't put these dozens of so-called strong people in front of him in his eyes.

"Hall Master, this kid is too crazy, isn't he? How dare he say that there are only five strong people with peak True God realm cultivation!"

"Yes, Hall Master, this kid actually doesn't mention us, the late True God realm cultivators, could it be that he doesn't put us in his eyes?"

Many of the strong men from the Divine King Hall were all furious and looked at Jack in front of them with anger and great displeasure.

"Jack, since you have thought it over and have said so, then let it be, I won't care about this matter, if you regret it then, it's useless to beg me, I am a person, once I decide not to interfere, I will definitely not interfere!"

Master Yates was also a little upset, he wanted to help out with good intentions, but he didn't expect this kid Jack to be ungrateful.

"Think about it!"

Jack smiled and flew a little further away in a flash, then hooked his hand at the Hall Master of the Divine King Hall, "Are you sure you want to fight me? Don't regret it when the time comes! The people of this Divine King Clan will not help you!"

Chapter 1576

“Haha, do we still need their help? Kid, you're joking, right? Here we have five strong people at the peak of the True God realm, each and every one of them is a super powerful existence, not to mention, there are a dozen or so late True God realm, with many mid True God realm and early True God realm cultivators, and not even a single person at the demi-god realm cultivation, do you think you still have a chance of surviving?"

There was a man in the middle True God realm, but after hearing this, he laughed out loud.

"Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!"

Those other men, too, immediately scattered and formed a circular arc, preparing to attack Jack.

Jack's eyes narrowed slightly, his fist surged with aura above his fist, and he actually flashed, taking the lead in charging out.

"Swoosh!"

Jack's speed was as fast as lightning, instantly turning into a streak and disappearing in place.

"What speed!"

There was a guy who immediately exclaimed in amazement, feeling like his eyes were blurry.

"Be careful!"

An old man next to him, immediately exclaimed in shock.

However, it was already too late as Jack abruptly appeared in front of the man from before and blasted him above the chest with one punch.

"Boom!"

A huge boom sounded, and the man with an early True God Realm cultivation level was actually directly blown away by Jack's fist.

"My god, no way, he has at least an early True God realm cultivation, and his body is already very hard, but he was actually blown up?"

Someone immediately exclaimed after seeing this scene, seeing how powerful the explosive power within that body was with this punch from Jack just now.

"Boom!"

However, just as his words fell, Jack appeared in front of another man of the middle True God realm, and similarly, he blasted the other man away with a single punch.

"This power, I'm not even a match for sure!"

Master Yates, who saw this scene, sucked in a breath of cold air, the power within Jack's body was just too powerful, this kid's combat power was indeed perverted to a terrifying degree.

However, with so many strong people on the other side, could Jack, alone, really be a match for the other side?

"This kid, charging directly into the crowd of the opponent, if they fight in close quarters, the opponent's people are not good enough to make a move for fear of hurting their own people, this kid is really too smart!"

The First Elder of the Divine King Clan, after looking at it, actually spoke up.

Master Yates's heart dawned, then he understood why Jack actually took the initiative to rush out, as long as the people on the other side, didn't pull away for a short time, it would be hard to strike at him, moreover, with this speed, he was flying between the people, it would be hard for everyone's attacks, to be aimed at him.

"Damn it, this kid, it's so abominable!"

Seeing that in a matter of moments, Jack had killed two more strong people with True God realm cultivation, Canghai Ming was so angry that he gritted his teeth.

"Everyone, spread out a bit!"

Canghai Ming was not stupid and instantly saw through Jack's intentions and said in a panic, "Everyone don't make a mess, this will even let him have his way!"

After such a short while, Jack had killed several powerful people, Canghai Ming also felt it, and almost

all of them panicked, one by one they were nervous.

After all, there was a good chance that they would be next.

With a flip of his palm, Jack directly took out that extremely high quality spirit weapon, and quickly injected his aura into it, the sword in his hand instantly glowed brightly, and Jack's aura, instantly followed by climbing up a lot.

Chapter 1577

"Swoosh!"

Jack chopped out with his sword, and a slash of flame went straight for several guys in front of him.

"Give me an attack!"

Those guys clutched the swords in their hands, and one by one, they also put their attacks into play, this time Jack was a bit far away from them, and finally had a chance to counterattack.

"Boom boom boom!"

However, even so, the four men's attacks were actually destroyed easily by Jack's attacks, and the next second that remaining aftermath landed directly on them.

"Bang Bang Bang!"

Several slightly dull sounds rang out in quick succession, three guys were directly decapitated, and the other old man, whose cultivation level reached the late True God realm, was not decapitated, but he was also seriously injured and fell heavily to the ground, a mouthful of blood gushed out, unable to even stand up.

"Roar!"

At this time, one of the elders at the peak of the True God realm finally aimed at Jack and attacked him, an incomparably huge fierce tiger made of aura just appeared in front of him and then charged at Jack.

"Hmph!"

Facing such a terrifying attack from his opponent, Jack, however, coldly snorted, not only did he not show the slightest fear, his eyes even had a little more fighting spirit in them, a terrifying battle spirit that filled his heart.

"Great Wave Impact!"

Jack leapt fiercely and slashed his sword out in front of him, and a wave of aura appeared in front of him, flying directly out in front of him.

As Jack now performed this move, that attack was again clearly a few points more powerful than before, the wave covered a larger area and the wave looked higher.

"This kid's fighting power seems to be a few points more powerful than before!"

A guy's face looked ugly after seeing this scene.

"This attack of his covers a very wide area directly, there are more than a dozen people on the opposite side, all within the attack range!"

Master Yates couldn't help but let out a sigh of relief after seeing this scene, Jack's combat power made him feel scared.

He no longer had any doubt that if it was himself who met such a strike from Jack, he was afraid that he would not be able to dodge it and would only be able to resist it, not to mention that he might not even be able to resist it for long.

"Ah!"

The powerful people on the other side that were covered by the attack, one by one, also unleashed their most powerful attacks.

However, in front of Jack's attack, their attacks were destroyed as if they had been wiped out.

Twelve people were killed by Jack just like that, which also included the peak True God realm powerhouse who had cast out a huge fierce tiger.

"Urgh!"

Seeing this scene, Canghai Ming sucked in a breath of cold air and his face turned white with fear, only now did he realize how terrifying this fellow Jack was, he flung his sword out and actually turned around and ran, "Everyone, run, this kid is too powerful, if this continues, if he performs a few more attacks like the one he just did, we will all be finished!"

Those other people were also terrified, the attack of twelve people just now could not even block Jack's strike, killing all of them, this was the first time they had seen such combat power.

Of course, if they knew that Jack had killed six strong people with peak True God realm cultivation when he had not yet broken through to the peak of the True God realm, he wondered how they would feel.

"Want to leave, it's not that easy?"

Jack's speed was too fast, and after blocking his opponent's chop with one sword, he directly aimed another sword at Canghai Ming in front of him and chopped out.

"Wave Sword!"

This time, Jack executed an even more powerful attack, a stalk of aura flying swords, which was actually like a sword dragon, directly rushed out.

Chapter 1578

Canghai Ming looked back and turned white with fear, Jack's attack this time was even more powerful than before, moreover, the speed of this attack was really too fast, it caught up with him in a flash, obviously even faster than him.

"Fire Phoenix Chop!"

Seeing that he was about to be caught up, he had no choice but to turn around immediately, injecting his aura into the extremely high quality spirit weapon in his hand, and blasted out with his sword at the front.

Several other guys, who were also within the range of the attack, also immediately stopped and executed their attacks.

"Roar!"

In front of Canghai Ming, a huge phoenix actually appeared, which looked like it was all condensed from aura and charged straight ahead with a terrifying fluctuation.

"Boom boom boom!"

Those flying swords of Jack landed on top of the fire phoenix in an instant, attacking it non-stop, blasting that phoenix away after a few moments, moreover, those flying swords were still continuing forward, destroying the attacks of those few people behind them.

Although the flying swords kept being consumed, the attacking power of each of those flying swords was amazingly powerful, and there were still quite a few of them left, which separated directly and went at those five people in a flash.

"Luckily, the Hall Master has bought us a lot of time!"

Someone had already flown a dozen miles away, and after looking back, he was still in a state of shock.

"I wonder if the Hall Master will survive!"

Another fellow, also with a sunken face did not care too much and left. They scattered in all directions one by one and fled.

"Bang bang bang!"

Those four guys, unable to resist at all, were struck by the terrifying flying swords of aura, directly piercing through their bodies and falling from the air.

"Make it bigger for me!"

However, that Hall Master of the Divine King Hall, however, immediately threw out his extremely high quality spirit weapon which then grew larger, forming a very large shield.

Almost as soon as he threw the flying sword out, he turned and fled, turning into a streak of shadow and heading straight ahead.

"Boom boom boom!"

Jack's attack was parried by the flying sword, but the flying sword was also blown away.

"Pfft!"

The Extreme Flying Sword had a hint of spiritual connection with Canghai Ming, and now it was being blasted one after another, causing a mouthful of blood to gush out of Canghai Ming.

However, he still gritted his teeth and controlled the flying sword once again, continuing to fly and blocking in front of Jack.

"Boom!"

Jack blasted out another attack, landing on top of the flying sword, and the connection between Canghai Ming and the flying sword was completely shattered. Canghai Ming once again gushed out a

mouthful of blood, and the flying sword immediately became smaller and fell down.

Seeing this extremely high quality spiritual weapon, Jack hesitated for a moment and flew down directly, catching it before it hit the ground, and only then did he fly up again.

However, with such a delay, those guys had already rushed into the distant woods of the big mountain, and it was obviously not that easy to continue the pursuit.

"Forget it, let's spare your life for now today, killing more than twenty strong people is enough, not to mention, there are still two Elders at the peak of the True God realm among them!"

Jack looked at the ground, smiled faintly, and flew down again to pick up his spoils of war.

Chapter 1579

"This kid, he's too strong, so many people surrounded him and he actually killed more than twenty people from the other side unscathed, if it wasn't for Canghai Ming and the others who escaped quickly, I'm afraid they would have died here too!"

Looking at Jack who was picking up the spoils of war below, a middle-aged woman from the Divine King Sect said with immense emotion.

"This son must never be offended, and must even be befriended... Fortunately, we have, before, always acted in a low profile and have not offended him! Although this kid's cultivation level is at the peak of the True God realm, his combat power has far exceeded his cultivation level, I suspect that it's even comparable to the combat power of an Ultimate God Realm powerhouse! Although, I've never seen a strong person with an Ultimate God Realm level either!"

Master Yates also let out a long breath, that scene just now was too shocking, especially the two consecutive moves that Jack performed before him, which still reverberated in his mind.

"En, I'm afraid that the people from the Cloud Sky Clan and the Lagorio Family are in trouble, haha, if they offend the White Family, they are looking for death, especially the Cloud Sky Clan, they had already lost six strong people at the peak of the True God realm when they said they met a terrifying demonic beast before, now they are even more reduced in strength!"

The First Elder of the Divine King Clan nodded, then said.

"En, this time, I don't know how the Yunxiao Clan's losses will be after entering that dangerous land, if their losses are large, I reckon that the White family might dare to strike. If the losses are small, the White family's people, I reckon, won't strike for the time being, because quite simply, the White family's top powerhouse, as a whole, is still a bit less, and Jack doesn't want to have a big sacrifice, if a big sacrifice is needed in exchange for the White family's victory, that's a bit uneconomical!"

Master Yates thought about it before guessing.

And just as their words fell, Jack also flew up from below, then he arched his hand at Master Yates: "Thank you for your kindness just now, Master Yates, but this whatsoever Divine King Hall's people, they followed us to that Black Wind Island before, causing us to lose some more people overall as well, since we ran into them today, we must teach them some lessons! "

The corners of Master Yates's mouth twitched slightly, this was not a lesson to the other side, if the other side ran a little slower, these strong people would have been killed, then, the God King Hall would basically be considered to exist in name only!

"Haha, Young Master Jack, your combat power is really unspeakable of!"

Master Yates laughed, "After all, you are a valued guest of our sect, so I naturally want to help if I can, but I didn't expect that Young Master Jack would be so powerful, we didn’t even need to help and you could handle it alone!"

After saying that, Master Yates thought about it and immediately led the way, "Let's go, if Young Master Jack has anything to do, let's talk inside!"

"Good!"

Jack nodded, he also felt that after such a battle just now, these people from this Divine King Sect were obviously looking at him a little differently than before, with a little more respect.

"By the way, these corpses ....."

However, after just a few steps of flying, Jack stopped again and looked at those corpses on the ground.

"Hey, you don't need to worry about this, our people, they know how to clean up!"

Master Yates laughed.

"Thanks a lot then!"

Jack arched his hand.

Canghai Ming and the others, one by one, were scared to death in their hearts, and kept flying for an hour or two before they stopped. Canghai Ming was also pale, obviously suffering from a lot of injuries.

"Damn, this kid’s power is too perverted, how can he have such terrifying fighting power?"

Canghai Ming took out a healing pill and after swallowing it, he said with a big gasp of air.

"Hall Master, now, what should we do?"

"Yes, Hall Master, that kid is too powerful, we'd better go back to the seas, this White family, it's better not to offend!"

Several old men, all persuaded Canghai Ming as they were really scared.

"You guys are really no good! If we go back to the seas, I'm afraid we won't be able to break through to Ultimate God Realm for the rest of our lives, moreover, this time we failed to surround that kid, now he might be afraid of our large number of people and not bother us, but what if he breaks through to Ultimate God Realm and directly leads people to kill our God King Hall? What then?"

Canghai Ming glared at these guys in front of him with no good grace, then clenched his fists and said with a firm face, "We can't leave, let's find a place to stay first, and then we'll discuss it afterwards!"

Chapter 1580

Canghai Ming and the others were prepared to find a place to stay before making plans, keeping an eye on the movements of the major powers on the mainland.

Moreover, they quickly sent two people to go back to the God King Hall and bring some demi-god realm True God realm powerhouses with them, intending to stay on the nearest island off the coast from the mainland and wait for orders at any time, so that they could not come in time when they needed to use a large amount of manpower.

At this moment, Jack, Master Yates and the others, once again returned to the immense and incomparable council chamber.

"Well? Master Yates, let's talk about matters regarding this stone ball. I got one, but I studied it for the past two days and couldn't see anything. I know Master Yates has been studying it for quite some time now, I'm not sure if there were any breakthroughs?"

Jack smiled and said directly, "If there are any ideas, I wonder if you can tell me a thing or two!"

"Haha, you kid, you're really straightforward!"

After Master Yates was stunned, he actually laughed out loud, "So many people who came to visit all wanted to inquire about this matter, but they all beat around the bush and talked about other irrelevant matters for half a day, some even patted me on the back for half a day before getting to the main matter, you are different, you went straight to the point right away!"

"Haha, isn't that good? This way we can all save time, right? Especially Master Yates, your time is so precious, how can you waste it on something insignificant?"

Jack laughed and quickly looked at the other party seriously again and said, "Right, Master Yates, if you don't want to tell me anything or don't want to discuss it with me, I'll leave now!"

"Why the need to leave so early? I like your character!"

Master Yates said with a smile, then with a flip of his palm, he took out a stone ball and placed it on the table in front of him, "We have been studying this stone ball, and we have been staring at it every day, but to be honest, we haven't seen anything so far. The only thing we know is that the stone ball is automatically absorbing aura, and the runes on it feel like they were left over from a long time ago, and we don't know what they do!"

"Right, Young Master Jack, we even tried to smash this stone ball, but it couldn't even be smashed, it felt solid, not hollow, it shouldn't be any kind of egg. We even put it on fire and burned it, but didn't find any change either!"

Another elder of the Divine King Sect, after thinking about it, then said at the side.

After hearing this, Jack looked slightly strange, he really didn't expect that the people of this Divine King Clan had actually tried so many other methods.

"One more thing, we found that this thing, if it's in the night of the full moon, then the speed of absorbing spiritual qi is incredibly fast, at least ten times faster than at ordinary times, maybe even twenty times, this can absorb a lot of spiritual qi in a day!"

Master Yates spoke again.

Jack sucked in a breath of cold air, his heart was really shocked, "In two or three days it will be the full moon again, wouldn't this rate of absorption be even faster if the seven stone balls absorbed spirit energy at the same time? The spiritual chi in our places is not as dense as the spiritual chi on that Black Wind Island, if we go at this speed, more will actually be absorbed?"

"Yes, this thing is only absorbing aura and not spitting it out, what is it trying to do? This is indeed nothing if you look at it for a short period of time, but if they keep on absorbing aura non-stop, then it will still be scary after a long time!"

Master Yates said with a frown again after thinking about it.

"Young Master Jack, what about you? Do you have any other views, or thoughts?"

Master Yates asked Jack again after thinking about it.

"Yes, this thing is only absorbing aura and not spitting it out, what is it trying to do? This is indeed nothing if you look at it for a short period of time, but if they keep on absorbing aura non-stop, then it will still be scary after a long time!"

Master Yates said with a frown again after thinking about it.

"Young Master Jack, what about you? Do you have any other views, or thoughts?"

Master Yates asked Jack again after thinking about it.

Chapter 1581

Jack smiled bitterly. “I’ve just obtained this thing several days ago. I’ve studied it during these two days and have gotten some information about it, but not as much as you did. I concluded the same thing as you did!”

Harry and the others were not surprised at Jack’s reply. After all, they had studied the stone ball for so many days and all of them were experienced, but they still failed to get anything. Jack had just gotten the stone ball, and he only had one ball. Without extra balls, it was natural he did not dare to do anything to it in fear of accidentally destroying it.

On the contrary, Harry and his people had three balls. They were able to take one for testing and to see if it could be easily destroyed.

They did not expect, however, for Jack to speak up after a moment of silence, “I have a bold idea.”

“What is it?” Harry and the others immediately asked.

Jack thought about it and said, “ I’m thinking that we won’t be able to get anything out of it if we

continue to study it like this but if we can take all seven stone balls out, I wonder what'll happen if we placed them together? What do you think?"

"Place all seven together?" Harry frowned, obviously troubled at the thought. After all, it was great enough for the other forces to get one ball each, while their Divine King Sect had three of such stone balls.

These three stone balls were obtained at the cost of many masters from their ancient clan. They even suffered the deaths of many of their disciples.

It was not cost-effective for them if they were to lend the balls. They had suffered a huge loss for visiting three dangerous areas. If that was the case, they should have just visited one instead.

Jack instantly understood the other party's difficulties when he saw how Harry frowned. He smiled with uncertainty and said, "Of course, this is just a thought of mine. You can consider them later, Master Harry, while we conduct our research separately. After all, both our families have a total of four out of those seven stone balls right now. Who knows whose hands the remaining three are in."

"Yes. We also heard that the eight shadow families got two dangerous areas while the three remaining ancient clans got two dangerous areas, too!" Harry nodded before turning to look at Jack in admiration. "I was thinking back then why the three ancient clans promised to give you guys two of the dangerous areas so easily instead of asking for three themselves. It looks like your strength was one of the reasons they gave way, right?"

"Haha! Then I'll make my move now. I believe I'll soon learn which forces got the other stone balls," said the smiling Jack.

"You don't need to make guesses. The Supreme Clarity Sect got one while the Flying Eagle Sect got one as well. People from those two ancient clans had just visited us for a chat two days ago, wanting to know if we had any development since we got the stone balls first." Harry smiled and continued, "I'm just wondering which family among your aristocratic families got the remaining balls."

Jack was stunned before he laughed loudly with alacrity. “If that’s the case, does the Cloud Sky Sect get nothing? Joel Collins must be vomiting blood out of anger right now! Haha!”

Chapter 1582

“Haha!” Harry burst out laughing as he added, “That old weasel Joel is very cunning. He’d want to get a stone ball through whatever means necessary if he hadn’t had one already, so you best be on your guard. He won’t dare steal from us, the three ancient clans, but I’m not so certain about your White family. That is, if he doesn’t have a clear idea of your true strength.”

“Hmph! Unless he doesn’t come over. If he dares come to our White family, I’ll make him regret it!” scoffed Jack, absolutely confident with his current strength

Harry nodded thoughtfully and replied, “Yes, and I heard that the Cloud Sky Sect had lost six masters in the peak stage of the true god-level. When they traversed the dangerous area, they encountered numerous strong monster beasts and fought with two other ancient clans. The Cloud Sky Sect suffered the biggest loss this time, and they might not dare confront your White family.”

“That’ll be for the best. Although I’m not afraid of them, the White family will suffer greatly if they go all out on us, and I don’t want our people to be sacrificed. Our White family is growing speedily right now, training rigorously since we have martial enhancement materials.” Jack then threw out his sword and, jumping on it, gestured with his hands to Harry. “I’ll be taking my leave now, Master Harry. Let’s contact each other if anything arises.”

With that, Jack flew out on his sword and left.

Harry was silent as he watched Jack leave before he commented, “It’s difficult for the White family to not progress with this young man in their family. Such a person looks at the bigger picture. Although they have the strength to defeat the Cloud Sky Sect right now, Jack doesn't act out of impulsiveness and instead wants to buy more time for the White family so they can grow stronger. They won’t be defeated easily, even if they’re to fight the Cloud Sky Sect.”

Meanwhile, at the Cloud Sky Sect.

Joel glowered intensely.

“Jack is the one to be blamed. If it wasn’t for him, we don’t need to only get two dangerous areas for three ancient clans. There isn’t enough to go around, and it’s bad enough that we had to fight those from the other clans, but we still had to fight those strong monster beasts. Ah, curses! Not only did we lose a few thousands of people, but we even lost many from the true god-level!” Joel grew angrier the more he thought about it, dumping the blame entirely on Jack. If that young man did not have such astonishing combat power and made them temporarily back down, their ancient clans would not suffer such a huge loss.

“That’s right. It’s all because of Jack, and we should blame it all on him. If it wasn’t for him, our Lagorio family wouldn’t be suffering. I heard that my father followed them to the so-called Bright Snow Mountain and many people died there. My father, especially, was badly wounded and almost died there!” growled Lily, wanting nothing more than to tear Jack into shreds.

Joel glanced at Lily, who was beside him, as his heart was filled with extreme regret. Why did he allow his lust to consume him when he married this woman? He would not have to go through so many problems had he not.

Chapter 1583

As he grew angrier at the thought, Joel mumbled, “My Cloud Sky Sect wouldn’t have been afflicted greatly if it weren’t for you.”

Lily, however, heard it all as her head whipped toward Joel furiously. “Joel Collins, what are you talking about?” she hissed.” How can you blame this on me? Who could’ve known that a few indomitable monster beasts would appear when you sent six masters to ambush those three from the White family, killing all six in the process? Can I be blamed for that? I’m not those monster beasts!”

Lily’s eyes turned red from anger as she continued, “Also, I'm not the one who forced you to go to Bright Snow Mountain this time. How can you blame me when you guys were the ones who went by yourself? I

only asked you to help me kill Jack and the others…"

The sight of a teary Lily softened Joel's heart as he coaxed," Alright, alright… Everything is my fault, alright? I won't blame it on you next time."

Joel paused momentarily before he continued lamenting, "Still, we've suffered a devastating loss, and three masters in the peak stage of the true god-level had died there. We're only left with seven people, so we're not able to avenge you and wipe out the White family right now. We can only consider this at length."

Lily's anger subsided little by little at his words, thus she walked toward him and wrapped her arms around his neck, coquettishly saying, "Honey, we aren't in a hurry- we can take it slow. The most important thing right now is to see if the White family had obtained the stone ball upon entering the dangerous area. Apart from that, we need to see the situation of their losses. What if they have suffered even greater losses? Won't we have an opportunity then?"

Joel sneakily grabbed Lily by her beguiling waist before he smiled. "Don't worry, I'm no fool. I've already sent people to inspect and ask around, and I believe we'll have results soon. I'll surely take action if there's an opportunity, but if there's none, we'll have to bear with it for now. The White family dare not attack us right now, after all. We'll think of a way to take a stone ball for ourselves. It'll be in our best interest if I manage to break through to the ultimate god-level."

"Yes, honey, work hard! I believe in you, and you'll surely be the first to break through to the ultimate god-level!" spoke Lily encouragingly as she pumped her fists.

At that moment, two disciples of their ancient clan rushed in.

Joel instantly glowered in the interruption, and with Lily still in his arms, he eyed the two in disbelief. "Why did you both rush in so hastily? You're both awfully rude! Speak up, what happened?!"

Those two knelt down on one knee and said, "Clan master, we've finished the investigation. This time,

the people who went to Bright Snow Mountain are mainly people from the Hunt family, and almost half the families went with them. The Hunts didn't obtain the stone ball, but nobody knows who has the stone ball right now."

"Impossible! Nobody knows who got the stone ball?" Joel frowned. "If the Hunts didn't get the stone ball, could it be people from the other first-class aristocratic families? As long as it's in the hands of some first-class aristocratic family, it'll be difficult to take the stone ball from them. We've suffered too much and we can't afford to go head-to-head with first-class aristocratic families. They surely won't go out alone after obtaining the stone ball, either. They'd stay in their house to study the ball together!"

"It looks like the other first-class aristocratic family didn't get it, too," said one of the kneeling disciples. "We don't know if the third-class or second -class aristocratic families got it!"

Chapter 1584

"You mean that the other first-class aristocratic families that entered Bright Snow Mountain with the Hunts didn't get the stone ball either, and no one knows which aristocratic family got it?" The news shocked Joel for a moment before the joy settled in his system. "If it's not with first-class aristocratic families, it might be in the hands of someone from the second or third-class aristocratic families. If that's the case… Haha! What good news! We still have the chance to ask around, and I believe news of who has it will be revealed. We'll then take it from whoever has it once we know who has the stone ball!"

Joel thought about it and asked," By the way, how about the White family? Which dangerous area did they go to? Any news about their situation?"

"Members from the White family, Cabello family, Lucas Family, Lanaster family, and several smaller families went to Black Windy Island together. I think the White family didn't want to enter the same dangerous area as the Hunt family. After all, the dangerous area is immensely treacherous, and they'd suffer another great loss if they get into another fight with the Hunt family, thus they went to Black Windy Island instead," reported another disciple as he gestured with his hands.

"They went to Black Windy Island?" Joel frowned. "If that's the case, is there any news on who got the stone ball?"

“We haven’t got news about this yet, but we’ll surely hear about it soon. We’ve visited about two dozen forces,” replied the disciple.

“Alright, then you both can go get your reward and continue to ask around for news. As long as it‘s news about the stone ball, ask around about it. You’ll be greatly rewarded once there is useful news.” Joel waved his hand to dismiss them.

“The situation of the White family isn’t clear, but the Hunts suffered quite the loss apart from not getting a stone ball. They must be depressed! Haha!” Joel found it hilarious when he recalled how the Hunt family went to Bright Snow Mountain in an aggressive manner yet failed to obtain the stone ball.

Lily, on the other hand, scowled, “You truly are something. Why are you taking pleasure when the Hunt family didn’t get any benefits? Why are you so happy? Mind you, the Hunts are our allies!”

“Allies?” Joel was stunned. “Us, the ancient clans, have always been superior. Since when are we placed on par with those from aristocratic families and are allies with them?”

Dumbfounded, she rolled her eyes at Joel. “You…! Do you understand that the situation is different right now? Our Cloud Sky Sect and other families had lost so many masters, but there are families that didn’t suffer much losses and might take this opportunity to rise up. The future setup of this world isn’t clear, and it all depends on who breaks through into the ultimate god-level first. Every second counts, do you understand?”

Lily paused for a moment before she added, “The Hunt family and the White family are enemies. Jack killed both sons of the family master, so it’s natural for the Hunt family to want to get rid of the White family. As we also wish to get rid of the White family badly, we’re allies by nature!”

“That’s true.” Joel nodded. “Let’s wait for a couple of days and see if we’ll hear about who has the stone ball from Bright Snow Mountain. We can then try to take it from them.”

Time slowly passed and Jack returned to the White family during noon the next day. He had also

informed Nash and the others about his trip to the Divine King Sect.

Of course, he did not forget to include the part where he killed many of the masters from the Hall of Divine Royal.

“Father, this is for you!” Jack chuckled, “The weapon that once belonged to the Hall Master of the Hall of Divine Royal is an ultimate-grade spiritual tool!” Jack smiled as he took the weapon that once belonged to the Hall Master of the Hall of Divine Royal and passed it to his father.

“Really? You’ve just given me an upper-grade spiritual tool a couple of days ago. Never thought I’d get to swap it for an ultimate-grade spiritual tool so quickly. Haha! After all, this is quite a rare item!” Nash held the sword as he beamingly inspected it from all angles.

He then took his upper-grade spiritual tool out and passed it to the First Elder next to him.” First Elder, it looks like I can only give this upper-grade spiritual tool to you. I’ll be using this ultimate-grade spiritual tool in the future; keeping the upper-grade spiritual tool would be useless for me.”

The First Elder was stunned for a short while before he took the sword happily. “For me? Great!” He laughed with mirth. “I won’t reject it then. This shall increase my combat power greatly!”

Chapter 1585

All of a sudden, a young man from the White family rushed in and reported, “Master, Young Master Jack, several people are… are outside, wishing to have an audience with you.”

“Who’d visit our White family at this hour?” Nash frowned before he questioned the young man who bore the announcement, “Only several people came?”

“Yes, and there are only five or six of them, yet they’re acting awfully mysterious!” responded the man with an awkward smile

Jack frowned as he immediately continued asking, “Mysterious? What do you mean by that?”

“They wear large bamboo raincoats and all of them have hats that cover themselves. It seems as though they don’t want to be recognized,” the man explained

Deliberating his thoughts, Nash then waved his hand. “Go and bring them in.”

Once the man who made the report left, the First Elder immediately said, “It must be somebody from other families who wishes to ask about the stone ball. They must be here to ask if Young Master Jack managed to study anything from it.”

“I don’t think so. They don’t need to cover themselves if that’ s the case,” replied Jack smilingly.

Moments later, those people were led in.

They took off their huge bamboo raincoats and hats after they entered the door.

“The Hemperly family?” Nash slightly frowned upon recognizing the members of the Hemperly family.

“Greetings, Master Nash. Greetings, Young Master Jack and the elders of the White family!” The family master of the Hemperly family immediately led his son to greet Jack and the others politely with a hand gesture.

“Haha! Please, be seated. Serve them tea!” Nash gestured for them to sit down before asking,” I do wonder what business Master Hemperly has for coming to our White family today?”

The family master of the Hemperly family, Darcy Hemperly, nodded at Nash. “To be frank, Master White, we’re here to ask for a favor, and we hope that the White family is willing to give us a hand. Of course, we’ll repay your kindness with spirited grass if you’re willing to.”

“You’re here to ask for a favor?” Nash was slightly puzzled. The Hemperly family was a second-class aristocratic family and had been developing nicely for the past few years. The young master of the Hemperly family, Paul Hemperly, could be considered a rare master. The Hemperlys had always been very low-profile and had not offended any other forces, so they did not have many enemies.

No one thus knew why they came to the White family for help.

Darcy stayed quiet for a couple of seconds before speaking up about the situation, “To be frank, we went to Bright Snow Mountain to test our luck, but none of us expected my son to be so lucky and get the stone ball in the end. Right now, only a couple of people in my family know about this as Paul only informed us about this yesterday.

Chapter 1586

Nash was shocked. He then said, “We received news a couple of days ago that the first-class aristocratic families that went to the Bright Snow Mountain did not obtain the stone ball and we have no idea who from which family obtained the ball. Who would have expected that somebody from your Hemperly family got it!”

Nash frowned as he paused. He then continued, “However, how can our White family help you? You guys are ballsy for coming here with only a couple of people. Aren’t you afraid that we will rob you?”

Darcy laughed before he spoke again, “To be frank, Master White, we’ve thought of this possibility. My son, Paul, and I had discussed at length before we agreed unanimously that your White family is the most reliable family right now. The reason we come to you and not other ancient clans is because we don’t know them well, what if they snatch our stone ball away?”

Darcy paused momentarily before he continued to speak,” As for the Hunt family and others, they obviously would not be of much help. Why would they agree to help us when they don’t have any stone balls with them? Only the White family possesses a stone ball and we’ve witnessed how powerful Young Master Jack was the other day. We have unanimously agreed that the White family would be the most reliable one!”

Paul, who was standing aside, also added, “Apart from that, Master White had always been open and candid. Since you have a stone ball with you, we believe that Master White would not do anything despicable!”

Jack glanced at Paul. It had to be mentioned that this young master of the Hemperly family was not only a man of striking appearance but also had a meticulous mind. Not only did he praise Nash with his words, but he was also implying that they would be considered despicable if they snatched the ball from the Hemperly family. They would have to think twice with consideration of the White family’s honor!

Jack thought about it and replied to the other party,” Master Hemperly, I wonder what sort of favor do you need from us?”

“It’s very simple. I will return while my son and a couple of our elders stay here to study the stone ball in peace. Don’t worry as the other members of our family have no idea that the stone ball is in our hands. Hence, as long as both our people keep quiet, the others would not come searching here!”

“Certainly, allowing us to stay here would cause your family to face a certain degree of danger. If we are being pinpointed by the Hunt family or other ancient clans, I hope that the White family will help us. I believe that with Young Master Jack’s strength and how strong the White family is right now, the Hunt family or Cloud Sky Sect would not dare to cause any trouble for you guys!” Darcy smiled indifferently and told them about his intentions.

“This is quite troublesome as the Cloud Sky Sect, Hunt family and many other first-class aristocratic families had not obtained this stone ball. The easiest target right now would be the one in your hands. There’s a possibility that even some second-class aristocratic families have their eyes on this stone ball of yours. I’m afraid that this would really bring us unwanted trouble!” Nash frowned as he dared not simply agree to this as it was quite a huge issue.

He thought about it and finally looked toward Jack. “Jack, what do you think?”

The others also glanced toward Jack. It was obvious that Jack had become the backbone of the crown at

that moment as he had the highest combat power among them.

“Let me see how much resources you can give us!” Jack kept quiet a moment before he spoke while looking at Darcy and the others.

Darcy immediately took out two martial rings and passed them to Jack. “One of these contains spirited grass while the other contains some weapons. Young Master Jack, please take a look!”

The other members of the Hemperly family were obviously nervous. It was true that they had brought quite a lot of precious treasure over but nobody would want to cause themselves trouble under normal circumstances. On top of that, the White family had just returned from the Black Windy Island not long ago and it was rumored that they had greatly benefited from that trip. Hence, they might not have much regard for the items the Hemperly family had to offer!

Chapter 1587

Jack examined the items for some time before a smile appeared at the corners of his mouth. “Haha… Master Hemperly, there isn’t a lot of spirited grass here but they are attractive enough. Hence, I agree to your terms!”

The members of the Hemperly family relaxed when they saw that Jack had agreed to their suggestion.

Master Hemperly immediately stood up and gestured with his hands to Jack as he voiced out his appreciation. “Thank you, Young Master Jack. If that’s the case, I shall leave my son and the others here with a reassured mind. I believe that they will be safe as Young Master Jack promised us!”

“Haha… I can only assure you that nothing would happen to them while they are with the White family as we will try our best to protect them!” Jack laughed before he continued speaking slowly. “However, there’s nothing I can do if they leave the White family by themselves. After all, we can’t restrict them with a rope, right?”

“That is true, that is true. We promise to not simply run around!” One of the elders from the Hemperly

family nodded in satisfaction.

“If that’s the case, let me arrange accommodations for your people!” Nash nodded. He ordered a member of the White family to lead the Hemperlys out and arrange accommodations for them.

After the other party left, Nash turned around to ask Jack,” Jack, have you thought this through? If we don’t promise them, we can slightly relax when the other first-class aristocratic families or Cloud Sky Sect that did not obtain the stone ball focus on the Hemperly family. You also mentioned that they did not give us a large amount of spirited grass and we aren’t suffering from a shortage, why did you choose to get involved in this trouble?”

The First Elder, Kenneth, also immediately spoke up with a frown on his face. “That’s true, Young Master Jack. If we ignore them, we would benefit from this. We don’t owe the Hemperly family anything. On the contrary, we would have more time to focus on studying this stone ball if the others had them as targets!”

“They didn’t give us a lot of spirited grass but they were not stingy either!” Jack started explaining. “What is important is that a lot of the gifted spirited grass were suitable to be cultivated into pills. These items were separated and placed aside. They know that I’ m an alchemist and they specially arranged these gifts. The most critical part of everything is that two of these items are auxiliary materials required when cultivating a fourth-grade elementary pill, the resurrection pill.”

“I see!” Nash and First Elder exchanged glances as they finally understood Jack’s intention. After all, the fourth grade elementary pill known as the resurrection pill was indispensable if they wanted to save Fernando’s life. Based on Jack’s temperament, he would not pass on the auxiliary materials even if there was only a slim chance for them to succeed in cultivating the pill.

“That would be fine then. Some of our masters had continuously broken through these few days, and our overall strength is still improving. We also have an increasing number of people in the initial stage of the true god level. Apart from that, who would know that we have hidden a few people at our place if we kept this a secret?

Even if they learn about this later on, who knows when that would be!” In the end, Nash smiled and said.

Chapter 1588

After their accommodations were arranged, Master Hemperly left that afternoon. As for Young Master Hemperly and his other elders, they stayed in the White family to continue studying the stone ball in peace.

Certainly, Jack also went over in the evening to have a chat with them and asked about the situation after they went to the Bright Snow Mountain.

It turns out that everybody acted on their own after they reached Bright Snow Mountain.

After encountering several dangers, Young Master Hemperly had also wandered away from the other members of the Hemperly family. Luckily, he had high fighting prowess and managed to spot the ancient tree in the end after he continued the journey on his own.

He was obviously not an opponent of the ancient tree and many other masters also discovered the ancient tree at the same time. All of them fought the ancient tree individually and many died.

In the end, a master from the Cloud Sky Sect that was in the peak stage of the true god-level finally obtained the stone ball and was preparing to fly off.

However, that person was killed by the ancient tree's roots as he was about to escape, and that benefited Paul, who hid in the dark.

There were not many people at that time and apart from him, the others were all dead. Hence, no one else knew that he managed to obtain the stone ball except for himself.

Naturally, Paul put the stone ball away without demur after obtaining it and left Bright Snow Mountain speedily. He only informed his father and several trusted elders when he returned to the Hemperly family after several days.

The members of the Hemperly family were naturally delighted when they learned of the news. However, they were also worried that this item would cost them their lives. Hence, they asked the White family for a helping hand after a discussion.

It was obvious that Paul and the others did not manage to learn anything about the stone ball.

However, when Jack mentioned that they should gather all seven stone balls to study them together in the future, Paul agreed without hesitation.

The next couple of days, Jack handed the stone ball to Nash and the others for them to continue studying it. As for himself, he visited the Supreme Clarity Sect and Flying Eagle Sect respectively to inform them about his thoughts.

Both ancient clans were quite unwilling when Jack suggested placing all seven stone balls together to study them. However, they insisted on studying the stone balls by themselves and that everything can be discussed later.

Jack could only helplessly return to the White family and get some rest

Jack could not even train as there were no more levels for him to advance to. He could only look on as the other younger masters continued improving.

Jack felt as if he was being tortured as time passed by. After all, the Cyro Pearl had a limited time. Based on what Nash mentioned about it losing its effect after two years, he only had one and a half years left.

Jack felt hopeless as he had to obtain the third-grade premium items, common life fruit and thousand year thrive grass, on top of cultivating a fourth-grade elementary pill, the resurrection pill, within one and a half years.

Even the third-grade premium spirited grass was nowhere to be seen, let alone the fourth-grade pill. Apart from that, even if he broke through into the ultimate god level, where shall he search for these items?

However, Jack refused to give up when he thought of Fernando, who was frozen and lying helplessly in the cave. He did not want to give up as long as there was a slight hope.

“Honey, this is great. I’ve finally broken through into the initial stage of the demi-god level!” Another day had passed, Selena ran in and jumped in excitement while holding Jack’ s hands.

“Really? That would be great. Before I realized it, you have already broken through and become a master in the initial stage of the demi-god level. As for myself, I can’t continue training and can only observe as everybody else trains!” Jack smiled as he felt happy for Selena

After all, breaking through to the demi-god level meant that the person was a true master.

The capability to fly when one reaches the demi-god level was not something a normal person could achieve.

Chapter 1589

“By the way, where’s Ben? I’ve seen him training recently and it looks like he’s working hard. He even asked for two pills from me two days ago!” Jack soon thought of Ben and asked curiously

“He’s not bad as he’s already a seventh-grade grandmaster. He has been working even harder when he saw that I’ve broken through to the initial stage of the demi-god level. He even said that he’s gonna catch up to you as you can’t train right now and is waiting for us!”

Selena smiled and glanced at Jack flirtatiously before she continued to speak. “Honey, I’ve never dreamt of breaking through to the initial stage of the demi-god level! Apart from my talents, I have to thank you

for constantly cultivating pills for me to break through so quickly!”

“This is all because of your hard work. Even if you have great talents and resources, your fighting prowess would not breakthrough by itself if you did not train hard!” Jack said with a smile.

At this moment, an old man rushed out from the nearby houses and came flying over in excitement.

“This is great! I’ve made it! I’ve finally made it! Jack, I’ve succeeded!” This old man was none other than the First Elder of the Cabello family, Kevin Cabello. Jack remembered something a couple of days ago and sent someone to invite him over.

After all, Jack promised Kevin that he would teach him how to cultivate the second-grade intermediate pill if Kevin borrowed him the ancient tome.

The old man was really into cultivating pills. He tried cultivating for the past two days but failed and Jack originally thought that Kevin would take a couple more days before he would be able to comprehend how to successfully cultivate the second-grade intermediate pill. Jack did not expect him to succeed so quickly.

“Congratulations, First Elder Cabello! You’re also a second grade intermediate alchemist now!” Jack happily congratulated Kevin with a polite gesture with his hands.

“Haha… This is all thanks to you as you’re a great teacher. If not, I would not have succeeded so quickly!” Kevin smiled happily with a satisfied look on his face.

“This is great. After succeeding in cultivating one particular second-grade intermediate pill, it would be easier when learning how to cultivate other second-grade intermediate pills. After all, the level of difficulty is almost the same and there would be some similarities!”

“That’s for sure!” Jack said with a smile.

“By the way, Young Master Jack, you guys have been studying the stone ball for so long, have you managed to learn anything from it?” Kevin soon thought of something and asked Jack.

“We have yet to learn anything from that thing. If anybody is capable of learning something from it, it would be the people from the Pavilion of Kings and Gods. After all, they have three of those stone balls!” Jack smiled bitterly as he also felt helpless about the situation.

At this moment, a large group of people was seen flying over from the other side.

“Who are those people?” Jack looked ahead and his facial expression soon darkened. Unexpectedly, it was the Hunt family who had gathered several families that were close to them and came together.

Chapter 1590

The members of the Hunt family led those from the Lagorio family, the Trevino Family, and even those from the Norman family to the White family residence.

“Jack, what should we do? There are so many of them! This is worrisome as they seem to be here to cause trouble!” Kevin had a darkened look on his face after he looked at the situation in front of him. Although not all members of the other party were present, those who came were masters. There were around one hundred thousand people from those four families combined.

“There’s no need to be afraid! There’s a lot of them but not many are in the peak stage of the true god level. Recently, many of our White family’s members have broken through into the true god level. On top of that, some of my nine disciples have achieved the intermediate stage of the true god level and their combat power is incomparable!” Jack, however, smiled indifferently.

“They are so shameless. Aren’t aristocratic families banned from taking action against each other without a valid reason? Are they going to break this tacit understanding?” Kevin clenched his fist. “F*ck! Unfortunately, we can’t contact the Cabello family and Tudor Family. There is no way a water source far

away is capable of quenching our thirst!”

“Haha, don’t worry! I know that these four families have suffered huge losses when they went to Bright Snow Mountain previously. They thought that a combination of several families could attack our White family? They are being naïve! What’s more, there are several masters from the Hemperly family here so we have quite a large number of masters!” Jack still smiled and acted indifferently.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The other members of the White family soon discovered the situation as well. After notifying each other, they all flew up and gathered together.

“It’s over! A big group of people are heading over, what should we do?” Inside a courtyard house, an elder from the Hemperly family immediately asked the others.

“There are quite a lot of them. I knew that the Hunt family would come looking for us but I didn’t expect them to come so quickly!” Paul also had a darkened expression on his face. He then continued, “Let’s not go out first. If we go out now, it is equivalent to a silent admission. Let’s wait and see what the other party is here for. If the other party is here for us or wants to take action against the White family, we must go out and help the White family!”

The First Elder of the Hemperly family frowned and said in embarrassment after hearing that. “Young master, what if they aren’t here for us, but because of their grudges with the White family? After all, the Hunt family knows that it was Jack of the White family who killed their two sons. Moreover, in the previous competition between the aristocratic family, the main reason the Lagorio family, the Trevino Family, and the other families suffered huge losses is because of Jack. Hence, there’s a huge possibility that they aren’t here for us!”

The Second Elder also immediately spoke up. “That’s right, young master. If the other party is not here for us, there’s no need for us to take action, right? If a fight happens later, it's best if we just find an opportunity to sneak out. There are too many people on the other side. How can the White family be their opponent? We will be in trouble if we get involved!”

“Haha… Sneak out? How should we sneak out? With so many people staring at us, can we just disappear into thin air?” Unexpectedly, Paul sneered and said, “We are already involved. Once we leave, the members of the Hunt family would see us. They aren’t stupid so they would certainly know that the stone ball from Bright Snow Mountain is in our hands. When the time comes, do you think they would just let us go? They only need to kill a few more people. If they are daring enough to come directly to the White family, would they even care if they had to kill a couple more of us?”

Chapter 1591

The facial expressions of the other Third Elder turned unsightly.

At this moment, Paul put his hands behind his back and said, “We have no other choice. If there is a fight, whether it is because of us or due to the hatred between the White family and the other families, we should all step up and take the White family’s side and fight the others together with the White family! Only if we fight, there is hope for us to live. Even if we don’t want to, we have no other choice!”

“But I’m afraid that it’s difficult to survive this fight. The White family’s alliances are not here. If the Hunt family were the only one here, the White family would be able to handle it. But… but there are four families here! Even worse, three of them are first-class aristocratic families! And they outnumbered us by many too. How is it possible for us to make it through?”

The First Elder was obviously not confident and even felt regretful in his heart. Why did he choose to come to the White family and ask for help from them? If he had just found a remote place to hide, it would be a lot safer!

“The only thing we can do now is to believe in the White family. Jack must have something up his sleeve, otherwise, he wouldn’t dare to give us his words! Do you really think that just because we offered them some spirited grass, they would be tempted and promised to help us? They must have weighed their strengths beforehand! Do you know how many fighters at the peak stage of true god-level they have right now in the White family?”

Paul looked at the Third Elder before him and popped up the question.

“Hmmm. For this matter, I truly don’t have any idea. But it’s certainly not as many as the other four families combined!”

A bitter smile surfaced on the First Elder’s face, and he muttered, “In my opinion, if we want to win this battle, the White family must reduce the number of the true god-level fighters in the four families quickly, and kill them in a blink of an eye. Otherwise, there’s no hope at all! Sigh! But now, the other party has more fighters at true god level and they obviously outnumbered the White families by a lot. Even if we help the White family, it would be in vain!”

“As the saying goes, to shoot a rider, first shoot his horse; to capture a gang of bandits, first capture its leader! If Jack is smart and able to kill the head of the Hunt family and several other top fighters in the other party, the other party would lose their boss and they’d certainly fall into chaos. Their fighting spirit and morale will be greatly impacted! Then it won’t be impossible for us to win this fight!”

After giving the matter some thought, Paul then spilled out his analysis

At this time, the strongest fighters in the White family flew into the sky, and those fighters with lower combat ability and cultivation level gathered at the square beneath. Gloominess covered the crowd’s faces as they stared intensely at the enemy before them.

In the main branch of the White family, there were not many people. However, Jack had long predicted that there would be a time that someone or some families would seek trouble with them. Hence, Jack had gathered a lot of demi-god and true god-level fighters from the branch families some time ago, and they were living in the main White family.

Therefore, there were now more than forty thousand people of true god-level flying in the sky and this number was considered extremely impressive.

“Oh? There are quite many of you, aren’t there? So are you guys prepared for this? Impressive!

Hahaha!”

The Hunt family head looked at the White family before him and then said with a peal of sinister laughter.

“You have many men with you too. It looks like the only ones left in your family as well as the other families are those with low combat prowess and strength. Or perhaps the remaining are from the branch families!”

Jack laughed fearlessly in return.

“Master Hunt, I wonder, what are you doing here in our White family residence with Master Norman, Master Church, and Master Lagorio? Judging from this melodramatic situation, I’m afraid you’re not here for a friendly visit, right? If you’re only visiting the White family, you’ve certainly brought too many people with you.”

Nash stepped forward and asked in a stern tone, his face cold.

Chapter 1592

“What are we here for? Master White, let’s just cut to the chase. Your son killed my two sons and made several families here suffer great losses in the competition! It’s time for us to settle this matter, right?”

Quentin chuckled aloud, and ruthlessness appeared in his eyes.

“Jack, we’ve finally found out the killer of my three sons! And it’s you! I demand a confession and explanation from you!”

Darryl—the head of the Norman family, stood forward and questioned Jack with vicious stares. His tone was full of hatred.

“Yes! I killed the three of them. The life-and-death rule of the tournament allowed me to do that. Besides, your sons wanted to kill me, I couldn’t possibly stand there and let them kill me, right?”

Jack shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly. He dared to admit his deed, without the slightest hesitation.

“Humph! You nasty brat! It’s you! I knew it! You do have some guts to admit the killing, don’t you?”

Anger poured through Daryl like lava upon hearing Jack’s confession. He was so angry that he clenched his fists so tightly. The other Norman family members were staring at Jack angrily as well.

“I merely followed the competition rules. Why can’t I say it?”

Jack smiled blandly and then added, “What’s the matter? Master Hunt, this particular rule was set by you from the beginning. It hasn’t been long since the tournament, and you're already going back on your word?” Jack paused before continuing, “Didn’t you say so at the beginning of the competition? That no revenge nor trouble shall be sought privately after the competition. Look at your behavior today, aren’t you afraid of being spat upon by the other families?”

However, as he heard Jack’s words, Quentin thought that Jack was afraid of them.

He immediately laughed out loud, “Jack, you killed my two sons, and even more so, you made us, the prominen Families, suffer great losses! We lost a lot of masters of the younger generation! And yes, you’re right about the competition rules. It was indeed like that at that time. However, that was one situation, and this is another. The situation has changed, and you know it. So, tell me, do you think we’re still abiding by the previous rules?”

Daryl balled his fists firmly and yelled at Jack, “Jack, today I must avenge my three sons! I need you dead, for your death would be a catharsis for me!”

Trenton Lagorio stepped forward and supported, “Jack, today is your last day on earth! If you obey us, hand us the stone ball and come forward to kill yourself before us. We promise to spare the rest of the White family.”

“Tsk tsk. I would say your plan is pretty good. But do you think I ‘d fall for it?”

To everyone’s surprise, Jack was not intimidated at all, instead, he laughed coldly upon hearing them. “The main purpose for all of you here is to obtain the stone ball, am I right? And avenging your whatever sons is only the second goal.”

Jack paused for a few seconds before continuing, “You all know that I’m the strongest here, and I can fend off several fighters at the peak stage of True God Realm by myself. So you want to trick me into killing myself on the spot, and when I die, it’ll be even easier for you to exterminate our White family, am I right?”

Once Jack’s words fell, the corners of Quentin’s mouth twitched in voluntarily a few times. He did not expect that his and the others’ plan would be seen through by Jack in such a short time.

“Jack, don’t worry. We’re men of our words. As the head of the Hunt family, I can guarantee you that as long as you do as we say, hand over the stone ball and kill yourself in front of us, whatever happened during the competition, we’ll write it off. How does it sound?”

Quentin looked at Jack and assured him with a faint smile on his face.

“You bullsh*t!”

Chapter 1593

Nonetheless, Jack sneered at Quentin’s offer. “Before the competition started, you guys set the rules and agreed not to pursue further privately after the competition ended. Competition rules are such a formal and important thing, but you guys still went back on your words. So, what makes you think that I will trust you?”

“Quentin Hunt, you underestimated our White family! Do you think we’ll be afraid of you just because you have more people than we do? Let me tell you, you better not regret your presence here in the White residence today once the war starts!”

Nash, too, stared at the other party icily. “You know that my son is the strongest in the White family, so you want to trick him into cutting his own throat. Do you really think that we’re so stupid?”

“Master Hunt, are you not afraid of being laughed at by the world for what you have done today? I don’t think you know which family had obtained the stone ball from the Bright Snow Mountain, am I right? And you're afraid that the White family would discover something out of the stone ball and break into the ultimate god realm. If this truly happened, it would affect the first position of the Hunt family among the eight shadow families. Hence, you’re using revenge as an excuse to get the stone ball from us, right?”

Kevin could not stand the other party’s bullsh*t anymore. He stared huffily at the other party.

“Aren’t you the First Elder of the Cabello family? Why are you here?”

Quentin squinted at Kevin and stated. “You’re an excellent alchemist. It’d be too bad for the world to lose an alchemist like you. So, let me advise you, leave this place at once and save yourself from the battle later. If you die in the battle, we won’t be able to do anything about it!”

“Elder Kevin, this matter has nothing to do with you. I think you should leave!”

After pondering for a few seconds, Nash said to Kevin.

“Master Cabello had stated that the Cabellos and the White are no longer enemies; we’re one big family. So, since I’m here today, I’m not gonna leave. And I believe that if Master Cabello was here today, he would stay on and help the White family!”

However, Kevin responded in a determined manner after giving the matter some thought.

“Thank you so much!”

Nash arched his hands and gave a fist-to-palm salute to Kevin, feeling moved in his heart.

“Oh no, oh no! What should we do now? They’re going to start a fight! What can we do?”

Joan, Ben, and the others were watching the whole ordeal from a room in the residence. Fiona, too, was trembling with fear and worry. Although she had purified her body and could be considered a martial arts practitioner, her strength and cultivation level were just too weak. Those with low strength and combat ability could only hide inside the room; not able to step foot out.

Seeing that the other party had brought so many people; the sky appeared dark as they filled the air space above as if it was going to rain soon. The other party had outnumbered them by two or even three times! Fiona blanched just by looking at the situation.

“Oh, God! What should we do? Selena is still outside? What should we do?”

Fiona paced back and forth, looking panicked

“Stop pacing up and down. You're making me even more anxious right now. Why don’t we rush out and fight with them?”

Ben clenched his fists, and his eyes showed the aura of determination.

“No! We can’t go out there. If we do so, we’re digging our own graves! Other fighters with low combat

prowess are hiding in rooms as well, and Jack and the others will not let them come near to us! They will be able to stop them at the gates from coming in, and if we go out, we' 'll only be a burden and drag them down!"

Nonetheless, Joan stopped Ben and the others immediately. Selena is outside with others, and her combat prowess is not weak, so don't worry about her. Jack and the others will definitely take care of her. The only thing we can do is to wait here and pray for them!"

Chapter 1594

"Mom, I think Aunty Joan is right. We'd better wait here!"

After thinking about it, Ben sat down and said, "Worst comes to worst, we'll all die together! If they were killed by the enemy, we won't be spared anyway!"

"Ugh! Why am I so unlucky? I've just become a martial artist, hoping to live a longer life. I didn't expect to die this soon at all! Why is my life so unfortunate, so bitter!"

Fiona was getting more upset the more she thought about it. She straightaway plopped onto the floor and started to whine like a kid.

"Mom, stop it! It's annoying!"

Ben barked at Fiona, his tone unfriendly. "Dammit! I'm still too weak. I'm only a grandmaster at the moment and can't help much! If I were in the demi-god realm right now, I would have rushed out and fought with them!" Ben bellowed, clenching his fists.

"Are you trying to upset me even more? Your sister is outside right now, and I'm already worried sick! Yet you still want to go out? You unfilial brat!"

Fiona, who was throwing a tantrum on the floor, immediately reacted upon hearing Ben's words. Her temper sparked and spiked, shaking with fury.

Ben looked at his mother and switched his gaze to the outside, and then said, "Elaine is out there too! If she dies, I don't want to live either!"

At this time, inside a room of another courtyard.

The First Elder of the Hemperly family looked at Paul and said, "Did you hear that? They're here for Jack, for the White family, and not for us! Jack offended the four families. No wonder these four families joined forces together and came here to cause trouble!"

"In that case, a fight is unavoidable. Listen to me, later when the battle starts, we will rush out and help the White family. Hearing Jack's boastful tone, I think, perhaps the White family may not lose in the battle. I think that Young Master Jack does not even see us as his opponents at all."

Paul smiled faintly in return. Hints of wisdom shone in his eyes.

"What? No way! The young man, Jack, is that powerful?"

The First Elder of the Hamperly family frowned as he heard. However, he was still worried about the upcoming fight. After all, the disparity in numbers was too great.

At this moment, up in the sky, both parties were glaring at each other heatedly. A solemn and tense aura was swirling in the air.

Old Master Hunt stood out at this time and said with a cold smile on his face, "Jack, I guess you've heard that the Hunt family suffered great losses in the excursion to the Bright Snow Mountain, and among them, two true god-level fighters had died. So, you thought there are only three fighters at the peak level of True God Realm left in the Hunt family, right?"

Old Master Hunt halted a few seconds before continuing, “Unfortunately, you’re so wrong! You underestimated our Hunt family. Recently, another elder in the Hunt family had broken through to the peak stage of True God Realm, and several true god realm breakthroughs happened in the other families too! We, the Hunt family, have four true god peak level fighters, while the Church and the Norman family each have three. That makes ten! Oh! And the Lagorio family has another two! Hahaha! We have twelve fighters at the peak stage of True God Realm! How can you fight us?”

Jack’s brows puckered together upon hearing the new information. “The Lagorio family has two of them? Wow, it’s quite surprising. Hmmm. It seems like the news of the ultimate god realms and the stone ball have pressured you all, forcing out all your potential.”

Anger welled up in Trenton’s chest and the corners of his mouth twitched vigorously. “Jack, what do you mean by that? Are you looking down on the Lagorio family? My wife broke into the peak of true god status too, you can’t imagine it, right? Humph! Now I’m truly anticipating seeing how the White family is going to fight us!

“Hahaha! Your true god-level fighters are inferior to ours, and the number is lesser than ours too! Tsk, tsk. I wanna see how you are going to overcome this wide gap to fight us! Jack White, one last chance! Kill yourself in front of us in exchange for the lives of the White family members! If you don’t agree to it, we’ll launch an attack!”

Old Master Hunt flipped his palm and took out a precious sword, pointing it at Jack. His tone was rude and aggressive.

“Haha! Let me tell you, don’t look down on us! Do you really think that only the First Elder and I are at the peak stage of the True God Realm?”

Chapter 1595

Jack snickered and sneered in a cold voice.

“Hahaha! Let’s fight them to death!”

The Second and the Third Elder of the White family-Titus and Wade-exchanged a glance then stepped forward in unison, emitting a powerful and domineering aura within them.

“What? No way! They have another two in the peak stage of True God Realm?”

The people from the Hunt family looked at both elders in surprise; shock dawned upon them that their eyes widened.. They had thought that the White family had only three true god peak level fighters. And even if one of them had broken through to that stage, there would be four of them at most! But they did not expect there were actually five of them!

Furthermore, adding the First Elder of the Cabello family—Kevin Cabello—into the list, there are six of them in total! Not to mention that Jack’s combat prowess was so powerful that he could fight three or four elite fighters of the same realm. Following closely to this train of thought, although the four families may win this battle, they would suffer humongous loss!

“Everyone, calm down! We have more fighters at the middle and the late stage of True God Realm than they have! We don’t . have to be afraid! In terms of numbers, we have an absolute advantage! Now, kill ‘em all!”

Quentin took out his long sword, waved it, and yelled,” Avenge your family! Avenge your sons!”

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh!

When the battle was about to start, four other people flew out from a room of another courtyard and stood next to Jack and the others.

“Young Master Hamperly?”

Jack was taken aback. “They’re not here for you, you could have just stayed in the room. Even if you do that, we’ll not blame you!” Jack said.

“Heh! Young Master Jack, since we’re here in the White family, we can’t just sit back and do nothing. And I don’t think they will spare us if you lose the battle. So, let’s fight them together!”

Paul chuckled warmly, looking fearless.

“Sorry to disappoint you, Master Hunt. You are going to face another fighter at the peak stage of True God Realm now.”

The First Elder of the Hamperly family stepped forward and released the frightening aura. Within him. He was also a strong elite fighter in the peak stage of True God Realm.

“You’re actually…”

Nash was stunned at the newly learned news, he was truly surprised. The Hemperly family was merely a second-class family, and they had always stayed low profile. None of them had heard that the Hamperly family had any fighters at the true god peak level. The First Elder actually Hid his ability secretly.

“Haha! I broke through a year ago. Just that the Hemperly family has always stayed low profile and does not wish to offend any families. Naturally, we do not wish to expose our strength too.”

Since he had already made up his mind, the First Elder of the Hemperly family expressed his thoughts without hesitation.” Dang it. I’ve broken through to the peak stage a year ago, yet I’ve not tested my current strength! So, the battle today is just nice! And perhaps I would die in this battle, but I will enjoy

this fight to the fullest! Let's fight to our contentment!"

"That's right! Let's fight to our fullest ability! Haha!"

Jack laughed wholeheartedly. With the fine sword in his hand, he injected Chi energy into it. The sword trembled slightly, emitting a terrifying aura.

Chapter 1596

"Kill!"

With a command from the Old Master Hunt, the order to attack was announced.

"Hahaha! Kill 'em all!"

Jack laughed and then looked over to the First Elder by his side and said, "First Elder, please take good care of Selena, so that I can fight without worries. I'll let them know how useless their fighters at the peak stage of True God Realm are!"

Once the last syllable of his word fell, Jack flickered and appeared at the front of the battlefield within seconds.

"Besiege this brat and kill him! One strong fighter at the peak of the true god-level strength from each family will handle the others, and the remaining six will surround this brat and kill him!"

Quentin asserted after giving the situation some thoughts.

“Count the two of us in!”

Trenton and his wife-Diana flew over and stood beside Quentin.

“Count me in as well! I have to kill this punk myself!”

Darryl from the Norman family flew over together with his First Elder too.

“Great! I’ll join in too!”

The First Elder of the Hunt family came over as well. Soon, six strong people with the strength of the peak stage of True God Realm were gathered together, ready to besiege Jack and kill him.

“Great, that’s great! You guys came just in time. Since you guys see me as your enemy and vice versa, I won’t let any of you leave here alive today!”

Seeing the six strong fighters standing in front of him, not only did Jack not have the slightest fear, but he sneered Coldly in return.

“Can Young Master Jack fight so many of them? Shall I go over and help him?”

The First Elder of the Hemperly family peeped in the direction of Jack and got a little worried. Jack was alone, facing six strong elite fighters. That seemed a little too overwhelming.

“Don’t go over. Maybe you haven’ t seen him fight before, our Young Master Jack is extremely powerful!”

Kenneth however chuckled aloud. “Don’t worry about him. We just need to focus on the enemies before us. The White family, indeed, is under great pressure this time, but I believe that Jack will be the key to victory in this battle. As long as he wins against the six of them, the victory is ours!”

Upon hearing Kenneth’s words, the Hemperly family froze in surprise. If they wanted to win this battle, Jack had to kill those six elite fighters! And not only so, but he also had to do it quickly. Only then Jack could free up his hands and help the others. Only then, the White family would have a chance to win the battle.

“White, fight!”

Lancelot roared with all his strength, his eyes glowing red. One by one, the White family members and several alliances charged toward the front and fought. They believed that if they had won this tough battle, the future of the White family would be a strong force to be reckoned with! Even the four ancient clans had to pay respects to them.

After all, to be able to face four families all at once-three of which were first-class families, and obtain victory was not something any ancient clan could do.

Of course, what Lancelot did not know was that the last time Jack killed a group of powerful fighters from the Hall of Divine Royal, it made the people from that hall terrified of him. They feared his strength and power..

“Blade Wave!”

Jack did not test the waters this time; he directly swung his sword toward the opponents, executing the most terrifying attack, the Blade Wave.

In front of him, a frightening and powerful gigantic dragon formed by thousands of flying sword auras, heading straight ahead and even covering a large area of space.

“What a powerful attack but don’ t panic, everyone! The six of us will strike him at the same time! I don’t believe that he can take six attacks from us all at the same time!”

Quentin was startled at Jack’s attack, but he quickly calmed himself down and chopped out with his sword. “Hundred Leaves Chop!”

As he performed the Hundred Leaves Chop, hundred aura leaves flew out. These seemingly floating aura leaves were surprisingly fast, carrying huge amounts of Chi energy and heading straight at the aura Sword dragon.

Roar!

In another direction, Trenton from the Lagorio family cast out a long aura dragon. As soon as the long aura dragon appeared, it let out a terrifying dragon roar and charged directly toward the aura sword dragon.

Chapter 1597

“Feral Slash!”

The fighter from the Norman family, on the other hand, cast out his family’s martial technique, the Feral Slash!

Boom, bang, boom!

At once, a terrifying boom rang out in the sky, and the air particles vibrate vigorously as though the sky was boiling. It was extremely horrifying.

“What? Im-impossible! Our attacks are being devoured little by little!”

Quentin took a look at the current situation and color drained from his face, feeling as if his heart was about to explode. The attacks from the six of them did not gain an upper hand in the battle!

The attacks from both parties stayed mid-air for a while and after a short moment of stalemate, Jack's attack had overpowered the others, gaining the upper hand.

"What the f*ck! We have people attacking at the same time here! Even if each of our attacks can only weaken his attack a little, logically we could still outperform him! How can his power and strength be so terrifying?"

Diana's eyes widened as large as saucers and her jaw dropped to the ground at the scene before her.

"He's too powerful!"

In the distance, after Paul had killed a man at the middle stage of the true god level, he could not help but look over to Jack's direction. It would be fine if he did not glance over, but that one glance tormented him alive. The battle there was extremely horrendous and gruesome; the flare and glow emitted from the clashing of martial techniques almost blinded the others.

Rumble!

The startling rumble continued, and after several more seconds of stalemate in the sky, Jack's attack completely defeated the attacks from the six of them.

"Sh*t! There's still a lot of residual Chi energy!"

"Many residual flying swords are coming straight at us! Run!"

“It’s too late. The swords are too fast! Everyone, create the aura shield! Quick!”

Six people peered at the situation, they were in a complete state of panic.

Bang, bang, bang!

Trenton and Diana were stabbed in the chest by several flying swords, leaving a huge. Bloody hole in their chests. Their eyes were full of terror and fear, and within a second, they fell onto the ground.

Likewise, Daryl and the First Elder from the Norman family were straightaway decapitated by Jack.

Whereas Quentin and the First Elder of the Hunt family were slightly luckier. Although they did not die immediately, both of them were blown far away and fell heavily to the ground. Mouthfuls of fresh blood gushed out of their mouths and the severe wounds on their bodies were bleeding incessantly too.

“No way!”

Many others witnessed the gruesome scene and were even more frightened. Six strong fighters at the peak of True God Realm and four were easily killed by Jack just like that; while the other two were severely injured, lying on the ground unable to move an inch. They were not much different from being dead.

Swoosh!

Under the watchful eyes of the crowd, Jack flung out two consecutive sword attacks, and two sword auras were shot out, heading straight at Quentin and First Elder Hunt. They died on the spot.

“No way! No freaking way! How can he be so strong?”

Whether it was the people of the Hunt or Lagorio family, each of them stood frozen at the scene before them. How could they continue on?

“Dios mio! Young Master Jack is so awesome! He’s so strong!”

After witnessing the ultimate battle, the White family members were bursting with excitement and joy. The other party had too many people with them, so much so that the White family was at a disadvantage at the beginning., The White family suffered a few hundred casualties.

However, within a short period of time, Jack had killed six strong fighters and the fighting morale among the White had increased tremendously.

“Go to hell!”

With another swing of his sword, he cast out sword attacks at the crowd of those four families in front of him. The flying sword, once again, killed them all at once.

Chapter 1598

“Attack, attack them now!”

Those who were at the front lines were weighed down by dread and terror and several old men in the late true god realm shouted

Unfortunately, none of them knew what to do next. Facing such a terrifying attack, some of them actually flew farther to the side, trying to dodge the attack.

Boom, boom, boom!

Several people clench their fists and gritted their teeth, casting out their attacks.

Nevertheless, these attacks were like a giant in the presence of a super-giant paled into insignificance. The attacks were destroyed instantly in a destructive manner. Meanwhile, those flying swords of Jack continued to travel forward at full speed, charging into the crowd.

Bang, bang, bang!

Some fighters of true god elementary level and demi-god advance level were directly blasted away by the flying swords and exploded in the air, while those who were in the middle or late stage of True God Realm did not manage to dodge the attack but at least they died with their body staying intact

Blood splattered all over the place. More than two hundred men from these four families were instantly killed by Jack in one round

Furthermore, among these two hundred men, there were several expert fighters at the late stage of True God Realm, as well as a dozen elite fighters who were in the mid and early stage of the true god level.

“Ugh! I want to take revenge for my sons!”

Old Master Hunt could no longer hold his anger back upon seeing Quentin’s body on the ground. He immediately ceased fighting the opponent before him and rushed toward Jack.

“Old Master Hunt, you’ve lost your mind.”

Looking at Old Master Hunt who charged toward him, Jack spilled several words indifferently and then

chopped forward with another swing of his sword.

Boom!

A huge explosive sound rang out, Old Master Hunt had fallen.

“What now? Master and Madam are both dead! Run!”

Once the people of the Lagorio family looked at the current position, they knew they were no match. Once the backbones of the Lagorio family, Trenton, and Diana had died, the fighting morale and spirit were severely impacted; many of them had already lost their motivation to continue fighting and were planning to retreat.

Not only the Lagorio family experienced the loss of fighting spirit, the Norman and the Hunt family felt demotivated as well. The morale was dead. Jack alone had killed so many strong fighters, and he did not stop. He kept killing the other party’s strong fighters, incessantly. soon Lancelot, Kenneth, and the other strong fighters of the White family would be able to free up their hands and fight the others. The people of the four families who had hopes of victory at the beginning of the battle slowly felt feelings of despair and hopelessness.

“Oh yay! Motherf*cker! We’re winning now!”

First Elder Hemperly, who thought it was his last day on the earth, was flabbergasted with joy at that moment, so much so that he did not know what to say but cursed. It was the first time he had encountered a battle where they were at a disadvantage in terms of the number of people

Nevertheless, it was mainly because of Jack. Jack’s combat ability was overly powerful, at the same time, frightening. Although he had not met any of the ultimate god-level fighters and certainly did not know how powerful they were, he thought that Jack’s current combat prowess was, perhaps, already at the ultimate god level.

First Elder Hemperly killed two men of the early stage of True God Realm, and he could not help but stare at Paul who was fighting at the side.

Respect and admiration came over him for Paul; it seemed like Paul's decision to help Jack was wise and a smart one. The Hemperly family stepped up and helped the White family in such a tough time, naturally, the White family would feel grateful toward them.

Now that Jack was so powerful, if they could have the White family to back them up, they would not have to be afraid anymore. He suddenly remembered how he was not supportive of the White family earlier and felt foolish.

Chapter 1599

"Kill!"

Seeing that some of the people from the four families had already started to flee, Jack was even more delighted in his heart. Obviously, once the other party started fleeing for their lives, Jack and the others would not have to lose any more of their men.

Of course, Jack would not spare any of the four families who were in the peak stage or late stage of True God Realm. Jack then charged toward those people and terminated them instantly.

Those strong fighters, one by one, were killed by Jack instantly. Nash and the others, who had now freed up their hands, frantically chased those of the true god-level strength and killed them. This caused the four great families to lose seventy to eighty thousand strong men. Only then did the battle end.

Of course, the White family lost several thousand men, and a few thousand men were injured throughout the battle as well.

However, after the startling battle, the status of the White family in this martial world would be greatly

strengthened. Even the four ancient clans would be afraid of them then onwards.

In the end, the people from the four families scattered and fled in all directions. Only those fighters with low martial levels were fortunate to be spared. However, the great loss they had suffered eventually impacted their status; they were even worse than some third-class families now, and could only be deemed as ordinary hidden martial families – they could no longer be prominent families.

“Everyone, hurry up and clean up the place!”

Nash commanded as he looked at the corpse scattered on the ground

“Sigh! These four families came to us a little too early. If they were to come one or two months later, I think we wouldn’t have lost so many great men!”

Jack gazed at some of the White family members’ bodies; his face turned solemn, and his heartfelt heavy.

After all, the White family was growing and developing rapidly lately, and the number of fighters who had broken through to True God Realm was increasing speedily as well. Nash was right. If they were given another month or two, they would not have lost so many men in that battle.

“We should be satisfied with the outcome today. Such a huge difference in numbers and we only lose around five thousand men. This is considered good enough. Fortunately, you had long been prepared for such a fight and assembled a lot of strong fighters from the branch families. Otherwise, I think the outcome would not be like this today. even if we win the battle, we’ll be on the verge of losing the whole White family. Today, we only lost a few strong ones, and those who died were at the demi-god level. The result is good!”

Lancelot glanced at Jack who was in front of him and comforted him with great emotion in his heart. “Of course, it’s also fortunate that the other party underestimated us, so they only brought the elite fighters from the main family but not from the branch families. Otherwise, we wouldn’t have obtained such a

victory!”

“You’re right. As for the rest of their people, let them go. They're only some remnants with low martial levels. Their strong fighters are all here, lying lifelessly on the ground. And these four families, sigh, they won’t be on the list of the hidden families anymore.”

Jack spilled out his thoughts slowly after thinking about it.

“Mmhmm!”

Lancelot bobbed his head to show agreement.

Jack then flew off and landed in front of Selena. “Dear, are you alright? Is everything fine?”

“I’m fine. Just a shallow cut on my arm from the sword aura. Oh ya! I managed to kill several others with the same martial level as me! It looks like my combat power is quite good!”

Selena chuckled. “Hehe. We’ve won the battle! If my dear husband says that we can win, we can definitely win!”

“Selena, come down now, come here! The battle just now almost frightened us to death!”

Fiona and the others ran out from the rooms and gathered at the square. Fiona yelled at Selena who was still in mid-air.

“Elaine! My dear Elaine! You’re okay, you’re okay!”

Ben’s eyes frantically searched for Elaine and finally found her flying down from the sky. A grown man like him actually cried out of joy and excitement.

Chapter 1600 Medz

“The people of the branch families, listen! This time you’ve put in a lot of effort in this battle, and that’s why we could win this battle. To reward your indelible credit in this battle, the main family and the branch families will share the spoils of war equally! I believe each branch family can obtain a lot from this battle. After all, many of the strong fighters from the four families have died here, and their martial rings must have a lot of cultivation resources and treasure!”

Seeing that the spoils of war were almost collected, Nash immediately flew into the air and announced loudly.

“Yay! That’s great!”

“Ya! Master White is the best! And he is really sensible and wise! Although the branch families have experienced great loss, it’s worth it! I truly believe that the White family will only grow stronger and stronger!”

The people of the branch families were elated upon hearing the latest announcement. They could hardly contain their excitement.

“First Elder Cabello, and gentlemen from the Hemperly family. I, on behalf of the White family, thank you dearly for helping us out this time!”

Jack smiled as he walked over to thank Kevin, Paul, and the others.

“Hehe. You’re welcome! We’re your friends after all. Right and your combat power. Wow! I don’ t know how to describe it. It’s amazing!”

Kevin chuckled.

“After today, the news will surely spread widely. The four families will be removed from the first tier list, and the White family’s reputation will be enhanced! This will certainly alarm other forces!”

Paul, on the other hand, shared his thoughts emotionally. The White family had lost a few thousand men, but the people who survived the tough battle were all elite fighters. Not to mention that the White family did not lose any fighters of the late or peak stage of True God Realm. So, the top fighters of the White family were still alive; the other forces would not dare to mess with the White family anymore.

Now, the people of those four families were merely a bunch of people without a head to lead them. After they returned to their families from the deadly battlefield, they began to divide the treasures and resources of the family. Some of them were afraid that the White family would come and take revenge, so they fled.

As for avenging the dead ones, they did not dare to even think about it at all.

Other than that, the remaining remnants of the Lagorio family did not flee, instead, they came together and discussed their future fate. In the end, they went to Cloud Sky Sect to find Lily Lagorio to seek refuge with the Cloud Sky Sect.

“What! My…my parents, and my grandfather…are all dead?”

When Lily was told about the battle, terror and disbelief stabbed her heart that she almost fainted. She could not believe the truth; her hands went cold and clammy and dread twisted in her gut.

“That’s impossible! Four families went there! F*cking four! They had around 120 thousand fighters with them! How could they lose the battle so badly? What’s more ridiculous is that the White family had only lost around five thousand people? And they managed to kill all your strong fighters, leaving 40 thousand remnants who barely escaped from the deadly fight? What a joke! There were people from the Hunt,

the Norman, and the Church families too!”

Joel was not convinced. Disbelief and shock were written all over his face, finding the news hard to believe.

“Sigh! What to do? Kevin Cabello and several fighters from the Hemperly family were there too. The most important thing is that the Young Master of the White family is extremely strong! Six strong fighters at the peak stage of True God Realm besieged him, and logically he would be dead in no time. But he managed to turn the table around and kill all six of them within a minute!”

“Six in one minute?”

The buzzing sound was ringing inside Joel’s head, trying to comprehend reality. He was the master of one of the four great ancient clans, and his combat power was definitely stronger than the average fighters with the true god peak level!

Chapter 1601

However, even so, if he could kill two fighters at the peak of true god-level by himself or even deal with three of them on his own, it would already be considered exceptional!

Six of them together? That was ridiculous! He would surely die.

What was even more unbelievable? Jack’s opponents were not just ordinary fighters at the peak of true god-level, but one of those strongest people in that realm-old Master Hunt, Quentin Hunt, who was also the head of a first-class family.

Their combat power was much more powerful than those who had just broken through to the peak

stage of the true god realm.

However, in the end, these well-known strong fighters, in front of Jack, were as weak as a kitten-could not even withstand a single blow.

“Wait. What if the six elders of the true god-level that we sent out to intercept and kill the White trio before were also killed by him?”

After a moment of silence, a frightening thought appeared in Joel’s mind and his face blanched instantly.

“No…no way! Didn’t the scouts say that there were some kind of sharp claw wounds on their body? Judging from the state of the corpses, they should be killed by some powerful demonic beasts!”

An elder of the Skies Pavilion frowned and spilled out his confusion aloud after thinking about it.

“Nothing is impossible. Jack, that brat, he is capable of killing six opponents of true god peak level now, and even if he could kill six of our elders that time, there was still Nash White and Kenneth White helping him. Nash and Kenneth could have helped to stall two of them!”

As Joel continued to analyze the situation, he felt that the possibility of Jack killing their elders increased tremendously. With his eyes narrowed, he analyzed, “It is also very possible that Jack has some powerful ultimate martial technique, and could perform claw-like attacks.”

“Honey, I don’t care. I don’t freaking care!”

Lily, who plopped onto the ground sobbing, crawled over to Joel and hugged his thigh. With a pleading expression hung on her face, she begged, “Honey, you have to avenge my family. Avenge my father, mother, grandfather, and the rest! They can’t just die like that. And they died because they wanted to avenge me! Please, I beg you, please, avenge them! You’re the only hope I have now!”

Joel went speechless for a while and then let out a long breath, “Sigh! Dear, it’s not that I don’t want to help you. I have the same feeling as you, I can’t wait to kill him right now. But… but the current Skies Pavilion is simply not their opponent at all. I’m already thankful if the White family doesn’t come to us for trouble.”

“Humph! Revenge is a dish best served cold! I’ll avenge my family one day!”

Lily clenched her fists and gritted her teeth as she bellowed. “Honey, you must work extra hard to break through to the ultimate god realm! Strive to be the first to breakthrough! By that time comes, kill that b*stard for me!”

“All right, all right. My dear wife, don’t worry. When I break through to the ultimate god realm, I’ll definitely kill that brat for you. Sigh! Take a good rest and calm yourself down. I’ m, too, feeling angry and upset about your parents’ death, but now we really can’t afford to do anything to Jack nor the White family! Not only Skies Pavilion, but I bet the other three ancient clans feel the same. All the four ancient clans have to bow down to the White family and be polite to them from now on!”

Helplessness surged through Joel. The tables had turned dramatically to the point that he was not prepared for it. In the past few months, the situation that was peaceful at the beginning started to tremble and was in constant turmoil. Nobody knew what would happen in the future.

“Fine!”

Lily sighed and left the space to rest.

However, when she was just about to leave, she quickly thought of something and wheeled back, “Wait. In the conversation just now, you mentioned that Kevin Cabello and some people from the Hemperly family were there too? They helped the White family in the battle?”

One of the old men from the Lagorio family who had come to seek refuge nodded and said,” Yes, the

First Elder of the Hemperly family is actually a strong fighter who's at the peak of the true god realm. Moreover, the young master of the Hemperly family, although he had only broken through to the late stage of the true god realm not long ago, his combat power is very strong too. He killed many of our people!"

Chapter 1602

"The Cabello family is really close to the White family now. The situation is completely different from before. So, it also makes sense for Kevin Cabello to be at the Wood's residence. But why was the Hemperly family there in the White residence?"

Several horizontal lines formed on Lily's forehead as she thought about the matter. She muttered with some doubts.

"Right. If you didn't mention it, I would not have noticed that too. It's really strange. Why are the Hemperly family members there? Furthermore, they offered to help the White family in the battle!"

Joel's brows snapped together upon listening to Lily's reminder. He began to think.

"The Hemperly family has always been in a neutral position and they were usually low-profile, not offending nor intentionally trying to please other families. So, why are they there in the White residence?"

An old man of the Lagorio family could not help but mutter a few words.

Soon, Lily quickly thought of something, and her eyes lit up." Wait! I know! It must be this. Haven't we been unaware of which family who had obtained the stone ball inside the Bright Snow Mountain? Now it seems that the stone ball must be in the Hemperly's hand! They're the ones who got it!"

"The Hemperly family?"

The Lagorio family members were startled and puzzled at Lily ‘s words, they exchanged glances in confusion.

Finally, a man broke the silence. “Indeed, the Hemperly family was in the Bright Snow Mountain excursion team with the Hunt family. They didn’t choose to go to the Black Windy Island at that time.”

Lily nodded before saying, “Let’s think of it this way. If we were the Hemperly family, we’d definitely avoid seeking help from the ancient clans after we got the stone ball because we’re too weak. And as for the Hunt family, it’d be useless to find them because they don’t have a stone ball at all! So, the only family that could help the Hemperlys would only be the White family. And the Hemperly family wouldn’t have to fear that the White family will snatch their stone ball because the White have one themselves. As long as the Hemperly family offers great benefit to the White family, the White would naturally agree to protect them!”

“So that’s how it is! It seems that the other stone ball is in the hands of the Hemperly family. And those Hemperlys who are staying at the White residence, one of them must have had the stone ball!”

Joel bobbed his head in agreement, however, he soon furrowed. “If that’s the case, it’s almost impossible for us to snatch the stone ball since the White family is willing to take them in. If we head over to snatch the stone ball, we’re basically looking for death!”

A man from the Skies Pavilion expressed his thoughts after thinking about the matter.” Master, how about this? The Hemperly family only sent a few people to the White family, and Master Hemperly is still in the Hemperly residence. This Hemperly family is merely a second-class family. Why don’t we go to the Hemperly residence and capture the young master’s parents, then force Young Master Hemperly to hand over the stone ball? What do you think?”

Before Joel could react, Lily interceded and barked, “No! It can’t be done that way! The most important thing in this battle is that the four great families are going after the White family not the Hemperly family. It was the Hemperly family who offered to help the White family! So, both families must be on good terms right now. If we kidnap the Hemperly family members, the White family might come at us!”

“Lily is right! We’d better not fight with the White family. If we really do that, most likely we won’t be

able to defeat them, instead, we would suffer great loss!”

Joel could not help but let out a long breath again. How could he have imagined that it had only been a short period of time but the White family, which he had not put in his eyes before, had now reached such a level that they all had to be afraid of?

“That would be bad. In that case, wouldn’t that mean that we can’ t get any of the stone balls at all?”

One of the elders of the Skies Pavilion said in a gloomy tone.” If we don’t have any stone balls, we won’t be able to stay ahead of the curve. And if the White family or any other families who possess the stone ball, discovers something from the stone ball and takes the lead in breaking through to the ultimate god realm, I’m afraid that they won’t even let us off! After all, we’ve sent someone to assassinate them before, right?”

Chapter 1603

“Yes, Master. That brat hasn’t broken through to the ultimate god realm, yet he is already overwhelmingly powerful. If he truly managed to reach the ultimate god realm, nobody could defeat him anymore! And by then, we’ll have to hide from him!”

Another elder chimed in, expressing his concern.

“Sigh! There’s nothing we can do now. Let’s wait. We can only pray that they don’t discover anything. We must keep an eye on those families with stone balls more often now. We’ve to know their latest progress and situation at all times!”

This was the first time Joel had felt the feeling of despair and powerlessness. “Those of you who are from the Lagorio family, listen up. Although there are quite many of you, I have to say honestly that there are not many fighters with the cultivation of true god and semi-god realm. I’ll have someone arrange a place for you to stay. Please train hard and strive to breakthrough!”

“Thank you so much, Master Collins!”

Those remnants who came from the Lagorio family bowed and thanked Joel.

Joel shot them a faint smile. Although the remnants of the Lagorio family were not strong in combat power, it was always better to have more people. Then at least the overall combat power of the Skies Pavilion can be increased even just by a little, and to cover the loss they suffered previously

The other families and the other three ancient clans were shocked to the core when they found out what had happened.

Two more days had passed. The people of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings could not stay still anymore. They went to Jack, discussing whether they should gather seven stone balls together and investigate the stone balls.

After all, they had analyzed, studied, and examined the stone ball for so many days but all their efforts were in vain.

Jack had long been expecting their arrival. Without any hesitation, Jack agreed to the plan; Paul responded similarly as well-he agreed to it without the slightest hesitation.

However, Harry Yeagar, the Master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, did not expect Jack to tell them that they had to report the research progress to the Cabello family and some other families. After all, Jack had had the agreement with them.

Upon hearing this, Harry felt a flicker of irritation. But after giving the matter some thought, he finally nodded to agree.

After the discussion, Harry went to meet the people of the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles to talk over this matter. He planned to get the other two ancient clans to gather at the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, take out the seven stone balls, and analyze these balls together. He wanted to know if anything different would happen if these seven stone balls were gathered.

Two days after Harry left the White residence, Jack and Paul were in the room, studying the stone balls in front of them

“Young Master Jack, I have a bold idea. What do you think will happen if we put our palms on the stone ball and inject our Chi energy into it?”

After studying at the stone balls for a while, Paul suddenly expressed a bold thought.” These two stone balls can absorb the Chi energy pretty fast, and one similar thing between these two stone balls is that their speed of absorbing the Chi energy is even!”

Jack frowned at this sudden idea. “You mean, we inject Chi energy to break this uniformity?” Jack asked.

Chapter 1604

“Hehe, I suddenly thought of this idea. But I don’t dare to try it, because I don’t know what’s going to happen!”

Paul chuckled warmly.

Surprisingly, Jack’s eyes became determined and firm after a moment of doubt. “I think we can give this a try!”

“Wait, Young Master Jack, we shouldn’t act recklessly. This thing absorbs spiritual energy, and it’s actively absorbing! If you suddenly inject some Chi energy into it, disrupting the balance in it, who knows what’s the consequences? What if the consequence is so grave that it’ s unmanageable? It’d be troublesome!”

The First Elder of the Hemperly family instantly jumped and panicked upon hearing this bold suggestion and stepped forward to advise them.

“He’s right, Young Master Jack. We can’t act impulsively. We don’t know what will happen. What if the stone ball explodes? Or becomes a monstrous ball that sucks all the Chi energy out of your body? Then you’ll be doomed!”

Titus also immediately chimed in and warned Jack. “Young Master Hemperly’s idea is too bold and too risky! Besides, even if you want to try it, it’s better to find a random branch family member to do it! You’re the future head of the White family, you’re too important and the entire White family is depending on you! We can’t afford any mishap to happen to you!”

Jack, too, knew that the idea was bold and perilous.

However, when he thought of time slipping by like sand through an hourglass and yet to find a way to break through to the ultimate god realm, he grew anxious.

And when he thought of Fernando Campbell, who was still frozen in ice, his heart sank to the deepest, at the same time, it made him more determined

He extended one of his hands, placed it atop the stone ball in front of him, and then began to inject Chi energy into it.

“Don’t do it, Young Master Jack!”

Titus and the others stood frozen by his action. Jack’s behavior was too sudden! When the others reacted, Jack had already injected his Chi energy into the stone ball.

“Young Master Jack, you’re being too hasty!”

Paul’s heart leaped into his throat when he saw what Jack had done. What if Jack died because of this

impulsive behavior? Then he was definitely responsible for it! At that time, the White family would kill him!

“Ten days have passed! For God’ s sake, we can’t continue to drag on like this! I can’t! I must try every possible way!”

Jack’s eyes were firm and determined as he continued to inject more Chi energy into the stone ball.

Soon, he found that the absorption power coming from the stone ball grew stronger and started to absorb Jack’s Chi energy even faster!

“The speed is getting faster and faster! It’s actively sucking the Chi energy right now! That’s bad!”

Titus was frightened by the scene before him. He immediately rushed out in a flash, flew into the air, and shouted, “Master White, it’s bad! Master White, come here quickly! It’s really bad! Young Master Jack is too reckless!”

Not long after, Nash as well as many other elders rushed over to their room, while plenty of others surrounded the room outside.

“Jack, you’re too reckless! If you want to try it, you should let others do it! You’re so young and talented, how could you do this yourself? What if something bad happens to you, then what can we do?”

When Nash came into the room, he was worried, fearing that something bad might happen to Jack.

“I’m fine, Dad. I’ll hold on a little longer!”

Jack gritted his teeth, and soon there were beads of sweat dripping down from his forehead.

Buzz!

At this time, the stone ball, which had never reacted to anything else, let out a slight tremor, and a powerful force was emitted. It directly blasted Jack several meters away.

Bang!

The blast was so sudden that Jack was not prepared for it. He flew away for several meters and almost plopped onto the ground.

Chapter 1605

Jack shook his palm, trying to ease the numbness on his palm. “This stone ball actually shook me off by its own will. Could it be…could it be that there’s really something alive in the stone ball?”

“Ya! It also made a sound!”

Nobody expected this outcome at all. But it made the crowd breathe a sigh of relief when the stone ball pushed Jack away and stopped sucking his Chi energy.

Buzz!

Again the stone ball sounded. And a red beam of light shot out directly from it and straight up into the sky.

The beam of light was thick and bright to the point that it could be seen from a far distance.

“Oh my goodness! What’s that beam of light?”

From ten thousand miles away, the master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings who had just returned to his residence spotted the red beam of light and exclaimed aloud.

“It shot out from where the White family is situated! My goodness! It’s from the White family! Why did such a red light suddenly appear out of nowhere?”

An elder of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings said in a daze.

Harry quickly thought of something, and he took a sharp intake of breath. “It must be like this! It must be that brat from the White family or Paul from the Hemperly family… They must have discovered something from the stone ball that caused such a vision to appear! Otherwise, there wouldn’t be such a light!”

“My God! Could it be that one of them has found the way to break through to the ultimate god realm? If this light is a sign of breaking through to the ultimate god realm, it’s too scary! Ultimate god realm…somebody has already reached that realm?”

Another old man of the same Pavilion boldly guessed after pondering on it, his voice trembling

“Move…move…let’s move! Take the people and we’ll head over to the White family immediately! We must go and see what’s going on. We must know if it is Jack who has broken through to the ultimate god realm!”

Harry had long been impatient. He then led a large group of people, heading straight in the direction of the White family.

Not only the Pavilion of Gods and Kings had acted this way; the other clans and families went straight in the direction of the White family after seeing such a sight in the sky.

Of course, the news spread like a wildfire.

“Look! Oh my god! A red beam of light shot out from the direction of the White family! Could it be that someone from the White family has discovered something out of the stone ball?”

Joel and the others from the Skies Pavilion also noticed the bright red light emitting from the direction of the White family. They exclaimed aloud in shock.

“This won’t do! We must…must go! Let us go and see what’s going on. That brat from the White family, he can’t have broken through to the ultimate god realm!”

Joel quaked.

“Honey, I’m going with you!”

Lily immediately ran to Joel upon hearing his words. “I want to go, even if I could only stay outside and watch from a distance!”

Joel’s forehead puckered together. “You have not even reached the grandmaster level. You trained so hard and could barely reach the seventh-grade martial level. It’s not good for you to go. If Jack has truly broken into the ultimate god level, and fight with us, I don’t think I’ll be able to protect you at that time!”

Nonetheless, Lily was dead determined. “Honey, I must go! We have so many people with us, I can disguise myself as a commoner and blend in with the crowd, and they may not even spot me. Besides, we can stay at the mountain farther away from the White family and send a few strong people to scout and inquire about the red light, can’t we?”

“Alright, let’s go then!”

Seeing that Lily was so resolute, Joel could not do much. Soon, they brought strong men with them, heading straight in the direction of the White family.

Of course, those remnants of the Lagorio family were put on the Skies Pavilion’s disciple clothes, disguised as one of them. Although there were not as many strong people as before, the Skies Pavilion team had a great number of people.

Chapter 1606

No matter which clans or families the people belong to, they all witnessed that bright red beam of light above the sky. Some third-class families knew that it would be useless for them to go to the White residence, but they could not resist wanting to go over to witness the fun. Or perhaps, they wanted to know about the ultimate god realm. Hence, one by one, clans and families headed toward the direction of the White family.

“Look! There’s another beam of light, just of a different color!”

At this time, Harry Yeager, the Master of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, who was heading to the White residence with his men, found out there was another beam of light that shot out of the White residence. They exclaimed aloud.

“It must be another stone ball; it must be the other one! It looks like the Hemperly family does have a stone ball! I heard that they hid in the White residence and now they must have all discovered something out of the stone ball!”

Harry yelled; his voice trembled with excitement. If Jack and Paul had truly discovered something out of it, he must make them tell him, and he would have a share of that hope too.

Sure enough, the only thing that he worried about was that Jack was not willing to tell him the method to break through to the ultimate god realm. Nevertheless, Harry had already planned within his heart; he had three stone balls in total, and if Jack did not want to tell him the method, he would offer him one stone ball to exchange the secret behind it. In this way, Jack and the others would definitely agree to it.

“Look, Master! Two beams of light!”

The Hemperly family, who was rushing toward the White residence, also noticed the two beams of light that were shot into the sky. They were jumping with joy that their feet barely touched the ground. They understood what those two beams of light meant!

“Hahaha! It was the wisest choice to let Paul and the others stay there and get protection from the White family! Everyone, . remember, from now on, we must pay our utmost respect to the White family whenever we meet them! They helped and saved us! So we must have a good relationship with them!”

Darcy Hemperly-the head of the Hemperly family-laughed out loud. His looks told everyone that he was intoxicated with joy and excitement.

“Dad, look, look over there! Another ray of light…”

Likewise, the Cabello family, who was heading toward the White residence, was flabbergasted with joy.

“Yes! I saw it! Hahaha!”

Alejandro chuckled aloud; he looked at his youngest daughter, Daniella, and said, “My little Daniella, I heard that you’ve been training really hard lately, and you have broken through to the late stage of true god realm, just like your second sister!”

Daniella felt proud of herself and said in a prideful tone, “of course! I’m talented by birth and you all know that! If I wasn’t playful and didn’t slack off before, I must have long broken through to the late

stage of the true god realm! But late-stage means nothing, I have to work harder and harder, to break into the peak of the true god realm! And even to the ultimate god realm one day!”

Helena, who stood beside Daniella, rolled her eyes at Daniella’s boastful remark. “I think you’re just afraid that when someone breaks through to the ultimate god realm, he gets to live two hundred years of life but you don’t have two hundred years to spend with him and grow old together!”

Although Helena did not announce their relationship to the others, most of the Cabello family members knew that Helena was playing a fake couple with Jack, and the person who truly liked Jack was their third young lady, Daniella Cabello!

But Daniella was not mad at all, instead, she felt happy that most of them already knew about it! There were already quite a few people who knew that she was in a relationship with Jack, and they were the real couple!

As for Helena, she was calm. The Hunt family could be considered as finished right then and there; that family was completely delisted from the prominent family list. And families like the Lagorio, Church, and Norman family, faced the same ending as the Hunt family. These four great families disappeared from history just like that. Therefore, she did not have to continue to be a fake couple with Jack anymore.

Chapter 1607

Helena was happy for Daniella; her heart was full of joy, at the same time, envy. She was envious that her little sister could find such a good man.

“Nonsense, stop it! I just want to become stronger!”

Daniella’s face was suddenly kissed pink upon hearing Helena’s words. She responded; her tone full of embarrassment.

But at this time, Venus thought of something and turned to Alejandro, “Dad, why are there two lights? Does that mean it’s some magical treasure instead of martial technique? If it’s not a martial technique,

likely, we can't learn it! And that also means that a single light can only allow one person to break through to the ultimate god realm! Wouldn't all our effort, including going there right now, be in vain?"

Alejandro's face sank immediately after hearing Venus's words. He and the other, whose faces were full of excitement, had now been overwritten by gloominess.

However, after a short period of silence, Alejandro smiled and shrugged nonchalantly. "No matter what the situation is, we have to go over and take a look. Even if only seven people can break through to the ultimate god realm with the seven stone balls, it'd be God's will. I can only say that some things may be predestined, and we can't help it, right?"

Venus bobbed her head, showing understanding. "Well, I just want to remind you all of it. I'm afraid that everyone might have too much hope and in the end, when we can't get what we desire, we'll fall into the abyss of despair."

"Thanks, but don't worry. We understand the situation very well!"

Alejandro, the First Elder, and others exchanged glances and bitter smiles were plastered on their faces. "After all, Jack had promised to share with us if the method is some sort of martial technique. He's kind enough to be willing to share the tips. But if the ultimate clue is not a martial technique, then we can't help it either! Everyone has to abide by the original agreement!"

The Pavilion of Gods and Kings was the closest clan to the White residence, and because they marched day and night and took no rest, they finally arrived at the White residence on the second day.

Along the way, the people of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings were feeling strange, because the two beams of light had not disappeared at all, so they did not know what the situation was.

"These rays of light shot into the sky and stayed there for a whole day! But, other than that, there's nothing special about it. If the lights continue to stay on, I'm afraid that the other clans and families would see it and all come over to the White residence. Sigh! What should we do?"

Looking at the two stone balls and the two beams of light before him, Paul rubbed his temple, not knowing what to do. Yesterday, after Jack caused the stone ball to emit the first beam of light, he naturally followed Jack's practice and began to actively inject Chi energy into the other stone ball. Of course, the end result was similar to Jack's another beam of light shot up into the sky.

However, up until now, they did not know what these lights were for and what it could do.

"Right. Other clans and families will definitely come here after spotting this vision in the sky. Sigh! And I think some of them are already arriving!"

Jack flashed a bitter smile. Up until now, they did not find out any other peculiarities other than the lights. Instead, they drew the attention of other clans and families, and they would surely come here to know what had happened.

"Young Master Jack, Master White, there are many people outside the gate! They seem to be people from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings!"

Just as Jack's last word fell, a few young men from the White family ran in and reported.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1608-1610

Chapter 1608

“Oh, speak of the devil, here they are! It looks like they did not rest along the journey here.”

When Nash heard the report, he could not help but smile bitterly then comment, “Let’s go. There! S no room for too many people here. We’ll meet them outside. And if they want to come inside and take a look, they can, but not too many of them!”

Jack nodded in agreement. He asked a few people to stay in the room to watch after the stone balls, and then he flew out of the room.

“Hahaha! Master White, Young Master Jack, you guys are working out something? We spotted these two beams of light from far far away! Congratulations!”

Harry immediately bowed and greeted Jack and Nash with a fist-to-palm salute the moment he saw them. He then congratulated them.

“The room is rather small, so I’m afraid that not every one of you could go in. Master Harry and some elders, you may go in and take a look. As for the rest, please rest outside in the square!” Jack smiled.

Harry’s eyes immediately lit up once he heard Jack’s invitation. “Yes, yes, of course! Everyone, listen, rest in the square! Elders and I will go in and take a look!” He commanded his men.

Soon, Jack and the others led Harry and the elders into the house.

“Those lights are truly from these two stone balls! Brother Jack, how did you make them glow? And about these lights, is there anything special about them?”

Harry gazed at the two stone balls that were placed on the huge table. He asked in awe.

Jack, on the other hand, shot him a dry smile. “To be honest, we’ve studied the lights for a while now, but could not find anything special about these lights. Please, take a closer look.” He continued.

Harry’s face fell and the beams in his eyes dimmed down the moment he heard Jack’s words. “I thought these lights represent the auspicious signs of breaking through to the ultimate god realm. But when I noticed that these lights were still there in the sky, I felt strange. Sigh! There’s not much progress, is there?” He said with disappointment in his tone.

The elder of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings chimed in,” Well! I think the progress is good! We’ve studied and analyzed the stone for so many days, but we found nothing at all! And at least Jack and Paul have discovered something different.”

“By the way, Jack, how did you make this light appear?”

Harry finally could not hold back any longer but ask.

“Oh, actually, it’s quite simple. This stone ball will actively absorb the surrounding Chi energy, and after observing this feature, Paul and I found that the two stone balls’ speed of absorbing the Chi energy is the same and constant. So, we want to break such uniformity!”

“So, in the end, we took the risk. We placed our palms on the stone balls and injected our Chi energy into them. The stone balls reacted to our action and began to quickly absorb our Chi energy. And when the absorption reached a certain level, the stone balls released an expulsive force to push the Chi injector away. And then, the beams came out.”

Jack smiled faintly, telling the incident from head to toe to the other party

“So that’s how it is!”

Understanding dawned upon Harry’s face. “But, you guys are bold, aren’t you? What if anything bad happened to you? If any unforeseen accident happens, it’d be a problem!” He continued

“Yup! At that time, we were shocked too! Young Master Jack directly put his palm on it and began to inject his Chi energy into it. Very risky! Fortunately, nothing bad happened to him!”

Titus immediately added.

“Well? Master Harry, since you guys are here, do you want to take out your three stone balls and try this method on them together? Since everyone is here, why don’t we study and explore the stone balls together right here?”

Jack looked at Harry and said straightforwardly.

Harry hesitated for a few seconds. After all, they had three in their hands, and it seemed to be unfair and not profitable to take them all three out.

Chapter 1609

However, Jack was already so proactive about what they got, telling himself and the others everything about it. Moreover, Jack’s combat power was so strong that even he himself would not want to be his opponent. So, if he was reluctant to take the three stone balls out at that time, the White family would be upset.

After pondering for a few seconds, he had made a decision. “Alright, alright! Let’s take them out and try them together!” He smiled.

With a flip of his palm, one stone ball appeared in his hand. He then turned to the First and Second

Elders.

After seeing that Harry had agreed to Jack's proposal, the First and Second Elder of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings also took out the stone balls they had with them. They placed the stone balls on the table.

"Come on, try and inject your Chi energy into it!"

Harry eyed the two elders once more and then walked to the stone ball. He placed his hand on it, mobilized the Chi energy in his body, and began to inject Chi energy into the stone ball.

After a while, Harry was obviously scared by the speed of the stone ball absorbing his Chi energy. The speed grew faster and faster and it began to actively suck the Chi energy in his body.

"Jack, how long is this going to take?"

Harry immediately shot Jack the question. The first and second elders who stood aside, also looked at Jack with concern in their eyes, fearing that something bad might happen to them. If these stone balls did not stop sucking the Chi energy in their body, they would be doomed by then!

"Don't worry, it's almost done!"

Jack, on the other hand, was feeling bashful.

Bang bang bang!

At the same moment, all three were bounced off by the expulsive force of the stone balls. They were flown several meters backward before they could stabilize themselves and stood still. They trembled and felt the numbness on their hands.

What followed the scene was three different colors of light beams were emitted by the stone balls and shot into the sky.

“The light! It really did appear! Only that the color is different!”

Harry exclaimed aloud.

“My goodness! Look, three more beams of light appeared in the sky!”

The Ximenes family, who was on their way to the White residence, saw three more beams of light shooting up into the sky, one after another. They exclaimed in amazement.

“Judging from the situation, the people of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings also went to the White residence! They’re fast, eh? We have to speed up! We want to get a share of good things, don’t we?”

The head of the Ximenes family ordered his men to speed up after witnessing the five different colored beams of light in the sky

In the other direction, the Hall of Divine Royal people had sent out tens of thousands of experts to the White residence. They were heading there at full speed

“Five beams of light in the sky! Freaking five! My goodness! Does this mean that five people have broken through to the ultimate god realm?”

Matthew Charles-the master of the Hall of Divine Royal-stared at the beams of light in the distant sky and sighed.

“Master, we’d better not go. The White family is too powerful! They can kill all four families at once, including three first-class hidden families like the Hunt, Church, and Norman families! These three families were removed from the prominent list right now. And we have even more enmity with the White family. So if that brat has truly broken into the ultimate god realm, we won’t even have a chance to escape by then!”

One of the elders of the Hall of Divine Royal was worried and warned Matthew in a panic.

Chapter 1610

“Better not go? If we don’t go, there’s no way for us to turn the tables anymore! And by then it’ ll be impossible to break through to the ultimate god realm!”

Matthew stopped. With his tone upset, he criticized, “If we go back to our sea territory like a shrinking turtle, we can never break into the ultimate god realm! We could only hide within our pathetic territory and wait for death. And what if Jack and others came here and wanted to terminate us? When that time comes, where do you escape to?”

“But…but it’s too dangerous for us to go there this time! If they found out that we were there, we can’t escape either!” |

The old man lowered his head, murmuring

“We’ll hide on the big mountain a distance away from the White family when we arrive so that we’ll not be discovered by them so easily. And when the time comes, there’ll be more clans and families going there, and we’ll send a few men to blend into the crowd. In that way, we could at least find out something. It’s better than staying behind and not going. If we go, we can find out about the situation, then we can still find a way to overcome it. Otherwise, this marks the end of our Hall!”

Matthew stressed his point again.

Elder Moseley, at this time, chimed in and supported Matthew, “Master is right. I should go this time

and see what those beams of light are. Perhaps, you only need to enter into the beams of light and let the light shower you for a while, then you can break through to the ultimate god realm? Who knows. And I guess there'll be a lot of people rushing into the beams, and at that time we could seize the advantage and blend in."

"Yes, yes! What Elder Moseley said is absolutely right! Maybe those lights are some kind of magic or treasure that allows people to break into the ultimate god realm!"

Matthew's eyes immediately lit up at that thought. The ultimate god realm, how wonderful was that?

"Let's go and take a look! We should take the risk this time!"

After pondering for a short while, those elders who were somewhat scared of the perceived risk and danger clenched their teeth and their gaze turned determined. The crowd set off toward the White residence once again, flying in the sky at full speed.

"Five beams of light right now! It looks like the Pavilion of Gods and Kings have already arrived at the White residence!"

The Cabello family immediately understood the situation after spotting three more additional lights appearing in the sky. They then accelerated their flying speed, hoping to speed up their pace.

"Young Master Jack, Master White, the Zachary family are here! They said they're here to visit you."

Several young men of the White family entered the room where Jack and the others were and reported to them about the arrival of the Zachary family.

Nash's face fell the moment he heard the report. "Why is the Zachary family here too? Humph! They're close with the Hunt family and used to look down on our White family! They still have the nerve to come here?"

“Hehe, because they want to know if they can have a chance to break through to the ultimate god realm, right?”

Jack flashed a bitter smile and then studied the room again.” This room is small. If people keep coming here, I don’t think it will fit everyone!”

“Let’s move to the council room in the main hall over there!”

Nash said after giving the matter some thoughts.

“Sure!”

Jack bobbed his head, ready to keep the stone ball into his martial ring.

However, he could not. He tried again and found that he could not keep the stone ball into his martial ring anymore.

Likewise, Paul, Harry, and two other elders encountered a similar issue-they could not keep the stone ball away.

They exchanged glances with each other; their eyes were full of surprise and puzzlement.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1611-1613

Chapter 1611

“How’s this possible? It can’t be stored back into the martial ring!” Harry was embarrassed.” It looks like once the light appears from the stone ball, we are unable to store it back in the martial ring!”

Jack, on the other hand, also smiled bitterly. “It looks like we can only carry it around!”

After he spoke, they flew out while carrying one stone ball each.

“Jack, what about the people from the Zachary family?” Nash had no idea if he should allow the people from the Zachary family to enter. Many of the masters from the White family were outside and they were in the sky, taking care of the order. Obviously, the members of other forces were not allowed in without permission from Nash and Jack.

On top of that, some of the forces brought quite a number of people with them. They did not only bring those in the true god-level but also those in the semi-god level.

Jack thought about it and said, Nevermind then, we would be seen as stingy people if we don’t allow any of them to come in!”

He looked at the men from the White family who were here to make the report before saying,” How about this? Announce that those forces who went to the Black Windy Island with us are given a twenty pax quota if they are here for a visit as we made a promise previously. The others can stay outside or rest on the empty land at the mountain foot. As for those who did not follow us to the Black Windy Island, such as the Zachary family, they are only given three quotas if they wish to visit us! As for the Hemperly family, twenty of their people are allowed in as they are considered our alliance!”

“Alright, Young Master!” Those young men looked at each other before flying out.

Nash also nodded in satisfaction after he heard what Jack said. The way Jack handled this was extremely well. Not only would they avoid offending the forces that did not follow them to Black Windy Island but those people were also given quotas to enter and take a look at the situation.

As for the forces that followed them to the Black Windy Island, twenty people from each family were allowed to enter. This would give them a sense of superiority and those people would be delighted

because of this.

“Young Master Jack, what about the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles? Only three of their people are allowed to enter if they are here? As for the Skies Pavilion, I don’t think they dare to come!” Titus soon remembered something. He walked up and reminded Jack.

Jack was embarrassed. “I almost forgot about them. The people from the Skies Pavilion would not dare to come as they would be considered suicidal if they come over. As for the Pavilion of Divinity and the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles, they have one stone ball each. We are also waiting for their stone balls as it’s better to study the seven stone balls together. It’s obviously not suitable if they are also given a three pax capacity and I’m afraid that they would be unhappy about it!”

“I think we can give them the capacity of twenty people each. What do you think?” Titus immediately recommended it.

Jack nodded. “Alright. Housekeeper Titus, please assist me in notifying them. It really isn’t a good idea to not treat these two ancient clans the same as the others!”

“Haha… Young Master Jack, you’ re too polite! We are a family, nothing is bothersome!” Titus laughed as he flew out toward the entrance of the mountain

He had never imagined that the illegitimate son of the White family that he and his granddaughter, Beth, went searching for would grow so extensively in such a short period of time. Now, even the members of the other ancient clans had to pay attention to Jack’s facial expression when they spoke.

Those young people soon flew out and looked at the master of the Zachary family. “Master Zachary, our young master has given his order. Your people did not follow us to the Black Windy Island nor have any agreement with our young master so you can’t be considered as a friendly alliance. Your people head down the mountain or rest at the plaza over there. However, since you’re here to visit us, we will allow three people to go in and have a look!”

The Fourth Elder, who was standing there to maintain the order also said with a smile.” That’s right. Since you’re only here for a visit, there’s no need for too many people to enter. It’s quite nice that three of you are allowed to go in. Discuss among yourselves and see which three shall go in!”

Chapter 1612

After hearing this, the members of the Zachary family were embarrassed while their hearts were filled with regret. If they chose to be friends with the White family and followed them to the Black Windy Island, they would have gotten into the White family’s good books. Then they would not be treated differently.

However, the White family was benevolent enough to allow three of their family member to go in and observe. There was nothing they could do even if the White family did not give them face and ask them to leave.

After all, they knew about the strong combat power that was capable of wiping out four families. The most crucial point was that the White family did not suffer any huge losses in that battle.

“Thank you, thank you! We are satisfied that three of our people are allowed to enter!” The hint of a smile soon appeared on Master Zachary’s face. He thought about it and said, “How about this? I shall enter with the First Elder and Second Elder. The others can just wait at the empty land at the bottom of the mountain!”

“Yes, family master!” The others immediately led their people and flew away. They knew that their family only had three masters in the peak stage of the true god-level so it was best if the three of them entered together

As the members of the Zachary family prepared to enter the White family, a large group of the Cabello family’s members had also rushed over.

When Alejandro saw that the members of the Zachary family had gone down to rest and only three were prepared to go in.

Alejandro also frowned as it looked like only the three of them were allowed to enter.

At this moment, Titus also flew over and informed the Fourth Elder of the situation Jack

Said previously in private before flying in

“Greetings, Master Cabello, it’s been a long time. Haha!” The Fourth Elder laughed as he gestured politely to the other party with his hands.

“We happened to see a weird effect appearing in the sky over here so we came over to take a look. We would like to ask Young Master Jack if they had found something!” Alejandro also gestured politely with his hands. He then asked again. “I wonder if the members of the Cabello family are also given a three pax capacity to go in and take a look?”

“Haha… Master Cabello, the situation is different for your Cabello family as your family is a friendly alliance of ours and you guys have made an agreement with us previously. Our young master had said that a twenty pax capacity is allowed for forces like your family so that you can go in to take a look or study the items.” The Fourth Elder started laughing and said to Alejandro.

“Haha… Alright! Twenty pax… Twenty pax is already a lot!” Kevin started laughing loudly after he heard this. It looked like borrowing the ancient tome to Jack previously was an extremely wise choice. Apart from that, he also helped them greatly during the battle. The members of the White family really knew how to repay one’s kindness with gratitude.

“This is great. Does that mean that we are allowed to go in too?” Daniella, Helena, and the others also smiled happily. If they were only given three quotas like the Zachary family, they would not be given an opportunity to enter with their family members. However, they were given a twenty pax quota. It was enough for them, the Three Golden Flowers, the other elders, and their father to go in together.

“Jack is quite a nice young man.”

Chapter 1613

Alejandro had a proud expression on his face as he instantly felt that he was one whole level better than the Zacharys. He immediately started picking people to go in with him. After he finished making his choice, he asked the others to rest at the empty space at the bottom of the mountain

The members of the Zachary family were extremely envious when they saw that the Cabello family had a quota of twenty pax.

The members of the Hemperly family also arrived soon. They were also delighted when they learned that twenty of their people were also allowed to enter.

More and more forces arrived. The second or third-class aristocratic families that followed the Hunt family to the Bright Snow Mountain regretted their decision when they found out that they were only given a three pax capacity.

As for those forces that followed the White family to the Black Windy Island, they instantly felt that they were in a much higher position than other forces when they knew that they had a twenty pax capacity

At this moment, many people were standing on a mountain top a distance away and were looking at the situation at the White residence. These were none other than the people from the Skies Pavilion.

“There are five beams of light now. It looks like these lights originated from the stone balls. However, I don’t see anybody flying up toward the beams of light. This means that these beams of light aren’t capable of helping a person to breakthrough to the ultimate god level!” Joel slowly guessed after observing for some time.

Lily, who was beside Joel, said,” There’s one stone ball for each dangerous area. It looks like there will be seven beams of light in the end. It looks like the people from the Pavilion of Divinity and Pavilion of Soaring Eagles aren’t here yet but I think they will arrive soon!”

“Unfortunately, we failed to snatch any of the stone balls. If not, we would be allowed to go and the members of the White family would long for us to take the stone ball out so that we can study together!” Joel curled his hands into fists and said in a bad mood. “This is all because of the people from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings. They are despicable as they secretly went to three of the dangerous areas before everybody else and got three stone balls. If they went to one less dangerous area and left one for us, we would not be in such a passive position right now. We would not be out of options and can only look from far away while others are studying the items inside.”

“That’s right. It would be troublesome if the people inside breakthrough to the ultimate god-level after they successfully finished their research. We don’t have any ways to rush in right now as many of the forces obey Jack’s words. If they are researching the stone balls together at this moment, the forces who own the stone ball would definitely stand at the same front. If we dare rush in right now, they would definitely work together to kill us!” An old man from the Skies Pavilion said with a helpless expression on his face.

In the woods on top of the other mountain, the members of the Hall of Divine Royal had also arrived as they looked forward from far away

“Hall master, it looks like there are already five stone balls. If that’s the case, there shall be two other balls and seven beams of lights shall appear!” Elder Moseley looked forward and said after he thought about it. “Should we send somebody to linger among the other forces and see if we can learn of any news?”

“We shall wait here and see how it goes. The others are outside and they also do not know what’s the situation inside is like too. We shall stay here and see how it goes!” Matthew thought about it and finally decided

At this moment, a group of people could be seen flying toward the White residence from far away

“The members of the Pavilion of Divinity are here!” Some people exclaimed after they took a closer look.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1614-1616

Chapter 1614

The members of the Pavilion of Divinity immediately asked about the situation inside after they arrived. However, they obviously would not get any news from the Fourth Elder.

In the end, the members of the Pavilion of Divinity also found a place to rest. As for their pavilion master, she and nineteen other masters with high fighting prowess went walking slowly toward a hall in front of them.

“What’s the situation now?” The pavilion master of the Pavilion of Divinity immediately asked after she took a look at what was going on and her eyes were filled with expectation.

“Haha… We’ve been looking at it for some time but we did not realise anything. We touched these beams of light with our hands and they are just usual beams of light. We can’t raise our fighting prowess through these beams of lights.” Harry laughed and said to the pavilion master of the Pavilion of Divinity, Aureole.

Jack, on the other hand, said,” We’re waiting for you now and we would like to know if anything else would happen after all seven stone balls light up. Apart from you guys, we are waiting for the members of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles too!”

“How did the light come out from the stone balls?” Aureole did not hesitate and asked curiously after she took a look at these stone balls.

Jack and the others soon informed them about the specific steps. A beam of light soon appeared in the line of sight of everybody present.

“There are six beams of light now. Did you guys discover that there was some slight fluctuation in these beams of lights and they are different now!” Soon, somebody discovered some abnormality and immediately said.

“Yes, if we don’t look carefully, we won’t realize the fluctuation. I wonder if bigger changes will happen

after the last stone ball lights up!" Nash was also extremely excited. Since there were already some reactions after the beam of light appeared from

The sixth stone ball, everybody started to look forward to the arrival of the last stone ball.

"The pavilion master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles arrives with the members of their ancient clan!" Just as everybody was looking forward to it, the voice of a man from the White family could be heard at the entrance.

Soon, under the expecting eyes of the crowd, Griffen slowly walked in with nineteen masters from their ancient clan.

"I discovered that there seems to be something weird about the light beams here when I was at the entrance just now. There seems to be some fluctuation? Did you guys manage to study anything? I originally planned to go to the Pavilion of Gods and Kings to research the stone ball. However, before the agreed time arrived, I saw the beams of light appearing in the direction of the White family and there were even two of them. Hence, we rushed over!" Griffen immediately asked the crowd after he entered

"Haha… What we realized is what you're seeing right now. We're waiting for you to take out the stone ball that belongs to your Pavilion of Soaring Eagles now!" Harry laughed heartily.

"How did this light emerge?! You guys are really good. We've been studying it for so many days but we failed to get any clue!" Griffen started smiling bitterly.

"Haha… This is all thanks to Young Master White and Young Master Hemperly. They are the ones who discovered this!" Harry laughed before telling Griffen the steps in detail.

Griffen immediately took out his stone ball and placed it beside the other balls. He then activated his Chi and started proactively injecting his Chi into the stone ball he obtained.

As time passed, everybody grew increasingly nervous.

The reason being, something different had happened after the sixth beam of lights appeared. They had no idea what the situation would be after the last beam of light appeared and if something different would happen.

Chapter 1615

“Hopefully…hopefully, there shall be some sort of hint that allows us to directly breakthrough into the ultimate god level!” Even the pavilion master of the Pavilion of Divinity could not help but curled her fists tightly. As a superior pavilion master of an ancient clan, she had always been resolute no matter how serious the matter was. However, she was really nervous this time.

Hum!

Finally, another beam of light appeared and all seven beams of lights of different colors looked extremely beautiful as they rushed into the sky.

“There are seven beams, seven beams!” Many people outside the hall witnessed the scene. Those who were resting on the floor immediately stood up. Although they had no idea what was happening inside the hall, their hearts were filled with either anticipation or speculation

“There are seven beams of light!” On the faraway mountain top, the members from both the Skies Pavilion and Hall of Divine Royal felt a tug in their hearts. However, nobody dared make a move as they had no idea what the situation inside

Was.

“There are seven beams of light and the fluctuation is so much stronger. However, it seems like nothing special is happening?” In the large meeting hall, everybody stared at the seven stone balls in front of them. It was as if they were afraid that some precious item would be released from the stone balls the next second and somebody shall snatch it away if they were distracted for a split second.

Hum!

The beams of lights hummed and in the end, gathered together.

“What’s happening?” At this moment, the First Elder of the Cabello family felt a strong absorptivity pulling on the martial ring he had on his finger.

“These lights seem to be interested in my martial ring?” Kevin looked at his martial ring and he could clearly feel that the absorptivity grew increasingly stronger. He was also extremely nervous at that moment and did not know what to do.

“There seems to be nothing special with this martial ring of yours? Why is it attracted to your martial ring?” Alejandro frowned as he was equally puzzled.

“Take off your martial ring now and maybe walk toward the absorptive force? Or there might be some item in your martial ring that these seven stone balls are attracted to. Why don’t you take out all the items inside the martial ring?” Jack thought about it before suggesting it to Kevin.

“Alright!” Kevin was extremely nervous as the unknown was fearful and he had no idea what would happen next.

He immediately changed his thoughts and sent all the items in his martial ring flying out after he finished speaking.

The next moment, all the other items fell to the ground and the martial ring was no longer absorbed by the weird power. Only the ancient tome flew up and went straight into the beam of lights.

“It’s that ancient tome!” Kevin inhaled deeply after he took a look. All this while, he had always felt that

this ancient tome had something to do with breaking through to the ultimate god-level as it recorded so many high-level pills, pill remedies, spirited grass, and others that were unheard of. Hence, he had always treated it like a precious item.

In the end, he discovered that the clues to breaking through into the ultimate god-level had nothing to do with the ancient tome. Instead, it was those seven stone balls discovered in the Seven Dangers that were related to it.

However, he was surprised to discover that the ancient tome was still not a simple item as it was still greatly connected to the ultimate god level.

Chapter 1616

“It’s that ancient tome!” Jack was just as taken aback when he saw the situation. He had also read the tome, and though he merely spent a few days on it, there was nothing special about the tome apart from some spirited grass among others.

Unexpectedly, after researching these seven stone balls for such a long period, the beams of light these seven stone balls released were able to attract this ancient tome.

Everyone was shocked as the ancient tome was absorbed in.

It flew on top of the beams of light and remained floating there.

Soon, golden light shone on the ancient tome.

Gulp!

The surrounding people became quiet, so much so that the sounds of people gulping could be heard. It was horrifyingly quiet.

Everybody wondered if something was to happen the next second.

Soon, the beams disappeared without a hint. All seven stone balls once again restored their normal state as the ancient tome fell to the ground.

Whoosh!

The pavilion master of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles was the fastest. He rushed forward in a flash and picked up the ancient tome.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Members of the other forces immediately surrounded him, afraid of him running away.

Griffen smiled embarrassingly when he realized what happened. “Fear not, everyone. I just want to take a look and see if there are any changes on this tome.”

“Haha! This ancient tome belongs to me, Master Griffen. Why should you be so anxious when I’m not even in a hurry?” Kevin smiled coldly as he continued, “There are many masters from different families here. Do you think that members of your Pavilion of Soaring Eagles can escape after you take this item? You and your people might be able to run if this happened long ago, escaping with your fastest speed, but it’d be all too easy if Young Master Jack wants to kill you now, right?”

No one was foolish, and they knew Griffen had not gotten used to the current situation. He still thought that the four ancient clans were still highabove, so he wanted to take the ancient tome and see if it was some sort of martial art technique. If it was a martial art technique, there was a possibility that this guy might immediately fight his way out with the 19 other people from his ancient clan.

Unfortunately, things have changed from before.

Griffen smiled again before opening the ancient tome.” Come over… Come, come… Let’s study it together.”

Jack, Kevin, and the others exchanged looks before they gathered forward.

“All seven beams of light have disappeared. Hall Master, we have no idea what the situation is like right now. Shall we rush in to take a look?” suggested an old man from the Hall of Divine Royal to Matthew after all seven beams of light disappeared. “If there are some precious items…”

The corners of Matthew’s mouth twitched a couple times after he heard this. He wanted to rush in badly, but there were so many masters from the mainland there. It was like signing his death warrant even if more people came, let alone his own men there.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1617-1619

Chapter 1617

Matthew balled his fists and reluctantly replied, “Let’s wait and see. We’d be crazy if we rushed in now. Let’s see what the situation is like later on.”

Similarly, Joel and the rest from Skies Pavilion were also puzzled as they had no idea what was happening inside. However, they could only wait on standby

On the other hand, Jack and the others stared at the ancient tome as they started reading it.

“The pill remedies and information about the pills have disappeared!” After flipping through several pages of the ancient tome, a surprised expression was written all over Kevin’s face. He then continued to say, “What’s written on it?”

Everybody started looking at it together, and all of them looked surprised after they inspected it.

“Dear me… It’s recorded in this tome that there were a lot of Chi on this earth many years ago, and many had broken through to the ultimate god-level. There was even another fighting prowess level and is known as the soul-penetrating level. Both the ultimate god and soul penetrating level is divided into nine grades, from the first to the ninth grade!”

“On top of that, the people in the ultimate god-level can live up to two hundred years while the person in the soul-penetrating level can live up to five hundred years!” Kevin inhaled deeply when he read this and was deeply astounded.

“My god… The ultimate godlevel should be quite terrifying! What sort of existence would the soul-penetration level be? Apart from that, a person who’s in the soul-penetration level can live for five hundred years. Oh my goodness, five hundred years!” An old man with white hair from the Lancaster family was so excited that his eyes turned red. If he was given the opportunity to reach the ultimate god -level or achieve the soul-penetration level, he could live for at least 400 years. The thought of it filled him with hope.

He was already 70, and if he failed to break through, death was the only ending left for him despite being in good health. He would not be able to live long,

After he sighed with excitement, he immediately said to Jack and the others, Bosses, please take a look quickly and see what’s written behind. Are there any other fighting prowess?”

Jack smiled bitterly before he continued to flip the tome. After looking at it for a while, he said, “I think the Chi on this earth must’ve been several times more in the past compared to how it is currently. From the records, many have entered the soul-penetration level, but to break through into the soul-penetration level, a person needs a lot of Chi. They need third-grade pills or fourth-grade spiritual grass to provide enough Chi to help them break through into the level!”

“If that’s the case, our earth had third and fourth-grade spirited grass many years ago. There must also be quite a lot of such items. Otherwise, how could so many people break through into the soul-penetration level?” gushed the old man at Jack’s explanation

The sacred lady of the Pavilion of Divinity, Melody Lawson, also frowned and asked curiously," However, where are those masters from years ago? Have all of them passed away? Why can't we even see third-grade spirited grass, let alone fourth grade spirited grass? If those who were at the soul-penetration level had already died after their time was up, does this mean that this was five hundred years or maybe longer ago?"

"Yes. Due to some unknown reason, the Chi of this earth had thinned out, and it's unknown where those so-called masters went." Jack wore a solemn expression

"What about behind? Is anything written behind?" urged the curious Titus at Jack and the others. All of them wanted to know what happened. Where did those previous masters go? Would they still have the opportunity to break through into the ultimate god level? Jack once again took a look and said, "The records here said that our people were abandoned by others for unknown reasons. Those masters who had broken through into the so-called soul-penetrating realm disappeared within a short period. However, some people saw that some of the masters in the soul-penetrating level went toward the direction of Misty Forest."

Chapter 1618

"Misty Forest?" Many people were baffled when they heard the term. Misty Forest was an extremely special place, and though it was not extremely dangerous, many people failed to come out after entering the forest. The deeper they walked into the forest, the more difficult it was to escape.

More importantly, flying was impossible after arriving at the deeper parts of Misty Forest. The gravitational force in the area was obviously different from the outside world.

As his expression faltered and darkened, he turned to Jack and confessed, "Lance and the others went to Misty Forest."

He still had complicated feelings toward Lance. After all, what Lily did made him shameful, and he had also punished Lily

Unexpectedly, Lily still remained impenitent and worked together with the Lagorio family to go against the White family. This was the reason the Lagorio family no longer existed

However, Lance had no idea about what happened before, and he did not know the whole story, thus Nash did not hate Lance.

Of course, Lance and those from other families had completely disappeared after they went to Misty Forest. There was a high possibility that they had long died inside.

He did not expect that the final destination these seven stone balls pointed to was Misty Forest.

Harry, from the Pavilion of Gods and Kings, then recommended, If we're truly out of options, let's just chop off all the trees in the forest. Also, there are so many of us here, and it shouldn't be an issue for us to go in and take a look together!"

Nash smiled bitterly and immediately disproved Harry's idea, "I'm afraid that won't work. Everybody knows that the trees in Misty Forest are ancient and extremely huge. It isn't so easy to chop off any of the trees. The most crucial point is that this forest is huge, and even if the people from our forces enter the forest, it'd be like throwing a stone into the sea. You wouldn't know how long you'd need to chop the trees."

"The most crucial point isn't those trees from Misty Forest-it 's the mist. The deeper you go, the more difficult it'll be to walk into the area. If you accidentally lose your way, you won't get out." Titus also started frowning and a darkened expression appeared on his face.

As a thought occurred to him, Paul said to Jack and the others, "Let's take a look at the back part, shall we? Aren't there a couple more pages in this tome? Is there anything else written there?"

Jack also continued to flip the ancient tome. He inhaled deeply before he spoke again, "It' s said here that an absolute genius appeared here and had the martial art technique for training left from his father. He led many people in breaking through into the ultimate god level, and there were even people who

broke through into the soul-penetration level. In the end, he collected all seven stone balls according to the clues his father left him, and he found the entrance to the sacred grounds according to the beams the stone ball released…"

Aureole grew ecstatic at what she heard. "This is great. It looks like the masters in the past were forced to leave this place and headed to a place known as the sacred grounds together for some unknown reason. This sacred ground must be where those masters went, and it's definitely much better than this place. I mean, why else would they want to go to that place?"

Chapter 1619

"Yes, and it looks like one of the masters secretly stayed behind to train the martial art technique for the sake of his son, and he even told his son how to get to that place. He just didn't expect his son to lead many people there. No matter what it is, we also have hopes of going there now that we have this news and these seven stone balls!" Nash nodded, and the excitement in his eyes could not be hidden.

"Everybody, please take back your stone balls for safekeeping!" Jack immediately said after he realized the importance of the stone ball, and the forces who owned the stone ball retrieved theirs.

Jack once again looked at the records at the back of the book and said, "Nothing much is recorded in the back of the ancient tome. A map with the directions to Misty Forest is drawn there, and the approximate course is there. With these directions, it shouldn't be an issue if we follow it."

"Haha! This is great! When shall we depart? Let's go now! After all, I've already brought all the members of my family who are in the semi-god level. Why don't we go now since all the larger forces are here?" The family master of one of the second-class aristocratic families, who made an agreement with Jack and the others, wanted to depart immediately in his haste.

"That's too sudden. Apart from that, there are many forces or casual trainers who rushed here to be onlookers," reasoned Jack. "Apart from that, members of the Skies Pavilion must be hiding somewhere out there and want to look at the situation here. After all, the people present aren't the only ones who saw those beams of light!"

“We’ll listen to your suggestion then, Young Master Jack. Apart from that, we believe that you won’t leave us and ignore us. Please tell us what to do, and we’ 11 follow your instructions,” responded the family master from a second-class aristocratic family profoundly.

After all, they followed the White family to Black Windy Island previously, and Jack made a pact with everybody before they entered the island.

From what they saw, Jack was a very reliable person as he allowed them to enter, observe, and analyze things together. He even gave them a 20 pax capacity each, and this proved that Jack was a person who kept his promise.

“Yes, Young Master Jack. Give us your order, and we’ll listen to you!” All members of the third-class aristocratic families looked at Jack as their leaders. This caused the members of all three ancient clans present to glower in embarrassment.

“How about this: Everything has happened so suddenly, and I’m also in a hurry to take a look at the so-called sacred place. After we go out, let’s not talk about the situation here and just say that we didn’t discover anything. The casual trainers and the onlookers shall leave by then.

“Leave with your brethren after getting out, and upon returning home, discuss among your people to see how many people should be brought and how the matters at home should be arranged. Remember to say goodbye to your family members; nobody knows what’ll happen once we get there. Nobody knows if we’re able to break through into the ultimate god level, right? We’ll depart one week later and gather outside Misty Forest before entering the forest together,” suggested Jack to the crowd.

“Alright, it’s decided then. Let’s all go back, and we’ll all depart one week later. Let’s all wait outside of the forest and enter Misty Forest together once everybody has arrived. We’ll follow the directions on the map and head for the sacred grounds!” Harry nodded as he spoke, and everybody else also agreed to it.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1620-1622

Chapter 1620

Since Harry said this, Aureole and Griffen naturally made no comments and agreed altogether.

Soon, the masters in the hall walked outside one after another.

Those who waited outside had waited from earlier on, and all of them wanted to know what had happened inside. They even wanted to know if anybody had broken through into the ultimate god-level or found clues about the ultimate god-level.

“Pavilion master, how did it go? How was it? Have you guys broken through?”

“Pavilion master, have you received news about the ultimate god-level? Were there any useful clues? I see that all of you have smiles on your faces, so there must be some good news, yes?

Members of the Pavilion of Kings and Gods who did not follow them inside immediately walked forward and asked with anticipation when they saw their members coming out.

“Family master, how did it go?” Members of the Cabello family also went forward in excitement as anticipation filled their eyes.

Alejandro looked at the crowd and said, “Nothing has come out from the research. Let’s talk more when we go back.”

“What? You’ve learned nothing, even after all that?!” Members of the Cabello family felt dejected after they heard this. If they failed to learn anything after putting all seven stone balls together for research, it would be even more difficult in the future to learn anything

“Come on, let’s return for now.” Alejandro looked far away and noticed a few forces who came to take a look after they saw the heteromorphism where they were. Jack was right: It was best that they try to

keep a low-profile about what happened. They should leave this place and make arrangements on the number of people back home. One week should be enough to make the necessary arrangements.

Paul thought about it and said to Darcy, “Father, you guys can go back to make the arrangements first. I’ll continue to stay at the White family with our three elders, and I’ll follow Young Master Jack over later on. We can’t return with you as I’m afraid that the forces that don’t have the stone ball, like the Skies Pavilion and others, would think of a plan to get ours. It’s better to be careful. They won’t cause us trouble if they know I’m still at the White family with our three elders!”

“You’re right. It’s best if you and the elders don’t go back. We’ll be taking our leave, then!” Darcy nodded and soon left with his people.

Members of the other ancient clans and families soon left v their people. Some family members even purposely shook their heads and sighed loudly while saying that they failed to realize anything. It was as if they not hear them.

At that moment, Joel and the

Others who had been waiting for some time on the opposite mountain started frowning.

“I wonder what the situation is like. Why are these people starting to leave?” Lily was somewhat worried as she looked in front of them. She was afraid that somebody from the White family had already broken through to the ultimate godlevel.

“Be patient. I’ve already sent a couple of people pretending to be casual trainers there. They’ll return in a short while.” Joel was just as terribly anxious, but there was nothing else they could do. They could only wait quietly.

After some time, a couple of people flew back.

“How was it? Are there any clues? What did they say?” everybody asked with anticipation after they saw those people returning.

Chapter 1621

One of the men smiled bitterly and said, “Pavilion master,” he chuckled, “I have some good news! Good news!”

“Good news?” Joel immediately frowned and pestered, “Tell me about it!”

“Haha! They failed to learn anything. I saw some of them looking very dejected,” spoke the man, his joy evident in his tone. “I think that those seven stone balls are useless, and it’s possible that it has nothing to do with breaking through into the ultimate god-level. Everybody was just wasting their time doing nothing!”

“This means that nobody broke through to the ultimate god level, yes? Well, this is indeed good news!” Joel was slightly relaxed.

However, he was slightly disappointed when he thought about how there seemed no chances of breaking through into the ultimate god-level. Would that not mean they would not have any more opportunities, too?

Was the ultimate god-level nonexistent?

One of the elders smiled bitterly and said, “Let’s go, Pavilion master. Look at the other forces; they’ve started to leave. I think it’s best if we return to our ancient clan as we’ve wasted our time waiting here. Of course, it’s good that nobody broke through to the ultimate god-level. We’d be in great trouble if any of the White family’s members broke through into the ultimate god level and came causing trouble to our Cloud Sky Sect!”

Lily, however, frowned at the news as she stood beside them. She thought about it and said, “This doesn’t seem right; I have a bad feeling about it. Is it true that everybody seemed dejected at that moment?”

The men then started to ponder on it.

After some time, the previous man said, “That doesn’t seem to be the case. Although many of the family masters and others sighed, they didn’t seem extremely dejected. Some of the elders were even smiling!”

Lily immediately scoffed. “Hmph! I don’t think they didn’t learn anything. They must’ve learned something and pretended to say that they didn’t.”

“Pretended that they learned nothing? Are you saying that they purposely said that they didn’t receive any information when they did?” Joel inhaled deeply when he heard this and looked surprised

“Think about it “Would they say anything if they truly received any good news? Definitely not, and they’d certainly keep it a secret. After all, there are quite a number of casual trainers, unknown or third-class aristocratic families outside who rushed over from nearby areas. It’s even possible that they anticipated our arrival.” Lily started to make her assumption. “After all, we can also see the beams of light, and it’s quite normal for us to rush over, so they’re definitely lying. If there truly isn’t any useful news, every one of them should’ve been disappointed as some things can’t be hidden, especially when there are so many people there. Hmph! How many people do they think they can lie to?”

“Honey, what you said makes so much sense!” Joel also felt that there was a high possibility of it. He thought about it and asked Lily again, “What should we do, then? We can’t do anything if these guys don’t say a word!”

“This is simple. Some third-class aristocratic families also sent people in, and quite a number of them have entered. How about this: Now that they’re leaving, we just need to single out a considerably weaker family on their way and ask them what’s going on.” A calculative gleam flashed through Lily’s eyes as she tightened her fists. “Kill a couple of their people. We’ll surely get something then.”

“That’s very smart! Seems like bringing you with me is a wise choice after all, Honey!” Joel laughed. After taking a look, he aimed at the direction where a smaller family flew away. He then led the members of the Cloud Sky Sect and secretly followed them from the other direction.

Chapter 1622

Meanwhile, Elder Mosley from the Hall of Divine Royal also discovered the problem. They soon secretly followed another small third-class aristocratic family after they had an internal discussion.

After flying for half a day, members of the previous third-class aristocratic family were stopped by Joel and the others.

“Master Joel, what…what a coincidence! It’s such a coincidence to bump into you at such a place, no?” The people from this third-class aristocratic family faltered when they noticed a large number of members from the Cloud Sky Sect in front of them. They were extremely nervous; they were here for nefarious intentions. Why else would they encounter them in such a desolate area?

“Haha… It truly is a coincidence!” spoke the laughing Joel as he sized them up. “Master West, I won’t beat around the bushes and get straight to the point. You guys have just come out from the White family, and we’ve followed you all the way. Speak up, cause I know that quite a few of you have entered. Tell me about the situation inside.”

The family master of the West family immediately had a slightly darkened expression on his face after he heard this. He was silent for a couple of seconds before he smilingly replied, “Master Joel, it’s true that we went to the White family. They allowed twenty of us to enter because of our previous agreement!”

Joel was slightly stunned and asked with a frown, “Agreement? What agreement?”

“Before we went to Black Windy Island, aristocratic families like us made an agreement with the young

master of the White family to work together when entering Black Windy Island so that we could reduce our casualties. As for the stone ball, no matter who obtained the item, the other forces can't fight over it once it was stored in a person's martial ring…" The family master of the West family could only tell Joel the more insignificant details to dissolve his suspicion.

"I see. No wonder none of you suffer huge losses after going to Black Windy Island and not many of the White family members died. However, many of the members from my ancient clan and the Hunt family who went to Bright Snow Mountain perished. Turns out that there was such an agreement!" Joel finally realized what had happened. He then said with a smile, "Then can you tell us what you saw after you entered the White family's hall just now? Did you guys learn anything?"

Master West immediately said. "Master Joel, we did enter the hall with them, but I believe you also saw what happened. There were seven beams of light following the arrival of the seven stone balls. However, we discovered that the beams did nothing after they joined together, and it didn't help anybody in breaking through into the ultimate god-level. Everybody studied the beams of light for some time but still found nothing. That's why we can only go back to our respective homes."

"That's right, Master Joel. We were looking forward to it. All of us thought that a person's fighting prowess can be elevated and that a person could break through into the ultimate god level after those seven beams of light joined together. In the end, it was all for naught and we just expected too much," another elder from the West family immediately assented from the side.

They were not stupid. If they said nothing, the other party would surely distrust them. If they said something irrelevant, however, the other party might believe in what they said.

"Is it true? You guys learned nothing after spending so much time on it?" Joel observed these two people closely, and he obviously questioned the reliability of what they said.

"It's true, Pavilion Master Collins! Where would we have the guts to lie to you? Your Cloud Sky Sect is one of the four ancient clans, and we don't have the guts to lie to you!" spoke the family master of the West family, nodding as he did.

"Hmph. You could be lying!" Lily, who was at the side, scoffed and glanced at Joel.

Joel immediately caught what Lily meant. He grabbed the elder by his neck and held him up. The Chi on his hands surged. “Be honest, or I’ll kill you if you don’t tell me the truth!”

“It… It’s true, Pavilion Master Collins! They really didn’t learn anything, and we don’t know how to break through to the ultimate god-level!”

Chapter 1623

Startled at Joel’s behavior, master west insisted on their stance at the thought of how kind Jack was to him and the others.

Joel was not one to be fooled easily, however. He snapped the elder’s neck simply by tightening his grip.

Snap!

“Fifth Elder!” Many were furious when they saw this situation and some clenched their fists tightly, but they knew they did not have as many people compared to Joel and his men. They did not even have a master in the peak stage of the true god-level.

The only person with the highest fighting prowess among them was the family master in the final stage of the true god-level. How could they fight off the people from the Cloud Sky Sect?

“Hmph! You don’t want to tell me?” Joel ignored the burning gazes sent in his direction as he lifted an old woman by her neck and raised her from the ground. “Tell us what you learned inside honestly. If you don’t speak up, she’ll be the next one to die!”

“Grandmother!” A young lady was anxious as her eyes reddened.

“W…We’re not lying to you!” spat Master West through gritted teeth.

“Hmph!” scoffed Joel as he tightened his grip and killed the old lady. “You truly are capable of retaining your composure, Master West. Then, the next one shall be him!”

Joel flickered and raised a young man in the blink of an eye. The man was none other than the son of the West family master.

Joel was inwardly unsure if the West family was lying to him, but he still planned to test them even if he killed the wrong people.

As expected, Master West eventually conceded as he gritted his teeth, “Let go of my son, and I’ll tell you what happened!”

Pleased at the confession, Joel placed the young man back on the ground with his hands still gripping his neck. “Speak up, and your son won’t die if you’re honest. Of course, if you lie, not only will I kill your son, but everybody here will die, too!”

The corners of Master West’s mouth twitched several times before he confessed, “The ultimate god-level exists.”

“It does exist. Go on, continue. How can a person breakthrough into the ultimate god-level? Has anyone among them broken through? Did they obtain anything like a martial art technique or other items?” Joel was extremely delighted, and his eyes were filled with anticipation. He would have let the Wests leave had Lily reminded him.

Unexpectedly, he obtained the information he wanted after he acted craftly.

“Nobody broke through into the ultimate god level, but there are some clues. There were many masters in the ultimate god-level long ago, but they’ve gone into Misty Forest.”

“We made arrangements to gather outside Misty Forest one week later, and we’ll enter Misty Forest together by then,” grumbled Master West through gritted teeth.

Chapter 1624

“To Misty Forest one week later?” Joel was pleased with the news he discovered-excited, even. It seemed that visiting Misty Forest would give one hope of breaking through into the ultimate god-level, and it seemed to be a great opportunity for him and the others.

Master West looked at Joel and pleaded, “Master Joel, I’ve already told you everything I know. Can you release my son and let us go?”

Joel thought about it and released the young man from his grip before he said, “You guys can forget what happened today. Jack and the others won’t know that you were the ones who informed us about the situation. You guys won’t suffer any losses if that’s the case!”

Joel paused here before he continued, “Of course, I won’t suffer anything if you spill. On the contrary, the White family or the other ancient clans would think of you as a traitor, that you ratted them out. None of them will forgive you and your West family!”

Lily, who stood beside them, thought about it and said to Joel, “Honey, I think we should take several of their people with us to prevent them from acting dishonestly. It’d be better if we capture several people back as hostages.”

“You said you’d…let us go after we told you about what happened!” Master West was enraged, never thinking that they would be so despicable. Not only did they kill two of the West family’s members, but they changed their minds so quickly as well.

“Haha! That was then, and this is now!” Joel laughed out loudly and ordered, “Capture five of their people: the young master of Master West and several other elders!”

“That’s unacceptable, Honey!” Lily immediately persuaded, “Won’t it be easy for the people from the White family to find out what we did if you capture their young master and their elders? After all, won’t it look problematic if the West family members didn’t bring their young master and their elders to a place like Misty Forest?”

Only then did it dawn on Joel. “You’re right. Ah, my wife is still the smart one. How about this: let’s capture several of their patronums or grandsons of some elders. That’ll work, right?”

Lily nodded. “That’s more like it!”

Although the members of the West family were extremely unwilling to comply, Joel and the rest took several of their people as hostages.

“Haha! Thank you for your cooperation, Master West. It’s very simple: All you guys need to do is just think of a way to leave some markings for our people who’ll follow after you. If not, these people from your West family will die!” Joel and the others laughed loudly before they left.

Master West was so angry when he saw the two bodies on the ground that his voice slightly trembled, “I never expected the people from the Cloud Sky Sect to be so despicable to do something like this!”

“Sigh! We can only blame ourselves for being unlucky. Now that they’re holding our people as hostages, we can’t tell anybody about this. Otherwise, the Cabello family, White family, or any of the people from the three other ancient clans would be capable of getting rid of them with a wave of their hands!”

Chapter 1625

An elder sighed and lamented their fate.

“We’ll remember these hateful actions of theirs. We’ll avenge our people when we have the opportunity to breakthrough into the ultimate god-level or become a master!” growled Master West’s son through gritted teeth.

Master West nodded, but he then muttered, “ Yes, but there’s nothing else we can do right now apart from obeying their orders.”

“Father, how many people should we bring with us to Misty Forest a couple of days from now?” asked the son of Master West. “The forest will get more difficult to come out of the deeper we go. It’s difficult to travel both in and out of that place, and we also have no idea where those masters from years ago went to in the end. Won’t it be dangerous if we go with them? Everything is unknown!”

“You’re right, but the temptation of the ultimate god-level is really strong, and we should try our best to send more people there. Still, I think it’s best if we leave a few people in the true god-level here as it’s too dangerous. We should encourage those in the elementary and intermediate stages of the demi god-level to not go with us, but if they insist, it’ll be up to them. Of course, no one can confirm that they’d be coming back home from this trip.”

Master West said purposefully after he was quiet for some time. “After all, the ancient tome recorded that none of those masters returned after they went there, and it’s unknown why that‘s so. It’s possible that there’s a place where there‘s more Chi compared to this place, and nobody is willing to return.”

“Alright, let’s go back and talk about it some more.”

With that, members of the West family left and headed back home.

Meanwhile, at the White family…

Jack had already returned to his room.

Selena walked toward him and grabbed his hands, saying, “Honey, I’ve learned about the situation. I have to go with you this time!”

“Sigh… We’re not sure about the situation over there, and it might be extremely dangerous. To be honest, I don’t really wish for you to risk everything with me!”

Jack sighed before he continued, “Mother, Grandfather, your grandparents, and Kylie can’t go with us as their fighting prowess is too low, especially Kylie. She’s still too young. Have you made up your mind?”

“I’ve already made up my mind. I couldn’t accompany you during your previous adventures because I was afraid I’d trouble you with my low fighting prowess. I’ve been training hard, and I’ m already in the intermediate stage of the demi god-level. Yes, it’s not that high, but it’s nowhere pitiable either, so I have to go with you!”

Selena had a persistent expression on her face.“ On top of that, so many experts never returned after they went there, and I’m afraid you’d find it hard to return from there, so I…must go with you! No matter how things will be after we go there, I’ll follow you. I’m not afraid, even though this journey might cost me my life.”

Jack was incredibly moved when he heard Selena ‘s proclamation. “Alright, let’s go together this time, and I believe we’ll return. After all, Fernando is still waiting for me to rescue him. I originally wanted to leave after half a month. You‘d have more time to accompany your parents and our daughter. After all, our future is uncertain this time, and I have no idea how it’ll be, but Fernando didn’t leave us much time.”

“Yes, I understand. I saw that you’ve been spending your free time cultivating second grade premium pills recently. How is it going? Did you break-through?” Selena also smiled when she saw that Jack had agreed to it. She also knew that if she had not been training hard and was quite talented, Jack would not have brought her along with her newfound fighting prowess.

Chapter 1626

“There’s been some improvement, but I still haven’t succeeded in cultivating the pill,” replied Jack with a tight-lipped smile. “I don’t plan to cultivate pills for the next few days so I can accompany Kylie and the others, but I’ll resume it whenever I can and will try my best to become a third or even fourth-grade alchemist as soon as possible.”

The next few days, both Jack and Selena accompanied Kylie, Joan, and the others to stroll in the nearby town in their spare time.

As for Ben, he had no choice but to stay back as he had not broken through into the semi stage of god level. On the other hand, Fiona and the others also required his company. As for Elaine, Jack asked her to stay back and guard the White family because Ben remained.

They had also arranged for some people with higher fighting prowess to go to Misty Forest with them.

To be on the safer side, Jack left two to three members in the final stage of the true god-level to protect the White family.

Several days later, Jack and the others finally started their journey when they noticed that it was almost time.

Almost 20,000 people went with them, and they were at least in the intermediate or final stages of the demi god-level.

These 20,000 people segregated and either went up on Jack’s, Nash’s, or Kenneth’s flying sword as they journeyed to Misty Forest.

Jack and the others were able to see Misty Forest from afar the next morning, and the forest before them looked much like a boundless sea with no end in sight.

“Oh my… This is the first time I’ve seen such a huge sea of forest. It looks so beautiful with the wind drifting through!” Selena’s eyes twinkled faintly at the sight.

“Yes, the area before us is so dreamlike, blanketed in mist, but it’ll be easier to get lost in the woods the deeper a person goes with this strange mist around. The deeper we go, there’s even another mist that’s pink in color. We dare not enter that area as we can’t fly in that area. It’s a maze in there, and it’ll drain the energy out of you to just get out.” Titus explained.

“Young Master Lance and the others didn’t come out after they came to this forest, and I’m afraid that they’ve died inside. The people we sent to search for them previously dared not enter the area and could only search at some of the places out here.”

Nash, hearing this recount, sighed. “Lance and the others must’ve been curious about this forest, that they entered by mistake and not knowing the area well. Sigh… It’s been such a long time-everyone must’ve perished already.”

Jack thought about it and asked Nash, “Father, what if… What if they didn’t die? What if Lance is still alive? Do you think that he’d hate you? Would he accept me?”

His question stunned Nash momentarily before a bitter smile graced his face. “That’s highly unlikely. There are quite a number of monster beasts in this Misty Forest, and everybody needs to be careful. Lance had always had a good relationship with his mother. If he’s still alive, I think it’d be hard for him to accept everything that has happened. Of course, there’s a possibility that he had no idea about what his mother had done. Things might be different if he knew about it.”

“Alright.” Jack nodded, and the group continued to fly forward.

Meanwhile, a family master of a second-class aristocratic family chuckled in excitement as they stood on a plot of empty land outside the forest. “All we need is to wait for the members of the White family. Our people have been here since yesterday. Haha… We can hardly wait!”

Another family master from a third-class aristocratic family even said, “I’ve been here since two days ago! We’re the earliest one to be here!”

Alejandro smiled bitterly after he heard this.“ You people are afraid that forces with the stone balls would arrive earlier and go in without waiting for you guys, aren’t you? All of you are here so much earlier than planned!”

“Haha… That’s not the case, Master Cabello. The main thing is that the scenery here is also quite nice, and it seems like a great idea to come earlier so we get to enjoy the scenery. Apart from that, we can benefit from this trip and breakthrough to the ultimate god-level or higher realms if we’re lucky. On the contrary, we might die inside if we’re unlucky. Nonetheless, it’s not going to be easy if we wish to come back! Let’s just enjoy this sky and land while we can."

Chapter 1627

The family master of the third-class aristocratic family smiled embarrassingly.

“I can’t wait any longer. Why are the members of the White family so slow? Shall we go forward and take a look? Could something have happened?” Harry from the Divine King Sect started to worry.

After all, he knew that forces like the Hall of Divine Royal and Cloud Sky Sect were not people to be offended, especially his junior brother. Although he ran away after Jack defeated him, he would not give up so easily.

When everybody came out, they clearly stated that they did not discover any news about breaking through into the ultimate god-level. However, if the other party suspected something throughout these few days, there was a possibility that they might be able to discover hints.

“Don’t worry, everything should be fine. Even if somebody wants to snatch the stone balls, they’d choose the people from our three ancient clans and not the White family. With Jack’s combat power, they just can’t take the stone ball from him!” Shelby smiled indifferently as she looked forward in

anticipation.

Moments later, the crowd spotted a group of people flying toward them from afar. “They’re here!”

“It’s Jack, Paul, and the others. They’re here! We‘re only waiting for their stone balls!” gushed the members of the Lucas Family.

“Master, it’s young master and the others!” One of the patronus from the Hemperly family was just as elated when he spotted Paul and the others. Everything resumed to its original position once more.

“I’m sorry for making all of you wait.” As they stopped their flying swords mid-air, Jack and the others gestured politely with their hands to the crowd that waited for them.

Inspecting the crowd, he noticed that apart from the families they made a pact with before, the Canmore family and Lucas Family had also come forward. Apart from that, the three ancient clans were also present. The large gathering of people nearly equated to a total of 300,000 people, and it was a huge crowd of people.

“Haha… It’s alright, we’ve just arrived anyway!” The family master who had arrived a day earlier smiled modestly. He then asked intimately, “ Young Master Jack, you guys must’ve been tired on this journey. How about everyone resting before we continue to travel?”

“I think we should get to the area where we can’t fly, and we’ll then rest there,” suggested Jack carefully.

Everybody looked excited when Jack planned to start the journey right off the bat.

At this moment, Kevin took the ancient tome out and took a look at the map. After looking at it in detail, he said, “Traveling in this direction will do the trick!”

“Alright, let’s go!” Jack nodded, and everybody started flying. A large gathering of people thus went straight into the forest.

Chapter 1628

Joel and his company had waited in a mountain far away for a long time. Excitement was written all over Joel’s face when he spotted Jack and the others flying up and into the forest. “Good, that’s very good. They truly are gathering there!”

“Haha… It’s true, alright. We killed two of their people and have several hostages with us. They won’t dare lie to us!” Lily smiled coldly as she gazed at the forest before them. With reddening eyes, she muttered lowly, “I’m here, Lance, at this very forest. Please tell your mother you’re still alive. You’re still in this forest, right? You must’ve gotten lost and couldn’t find your way out, right? That must be it!”

Noticing Lily’s foul mood, Joel impatiently grumbled, “Stop sighing; your eldest son must’ve died long ago. I know about that young man, and he’s quite talented. If Jack hadn’t resurfaced and your son didn’t come to such a hellhole, your son would be the next in line for the family master title!”

“Remember the direction they flew to, and we’ll follow far behind them. By then, most of you will fly below the trees while two of us fly higher than the trees to secretly observe the directions they’re flying in. When we reach the area where we can’t fly, the members of the West family will leave markings for us. There won’t be any mistakes if we go in that direction!”

Joel smiled indifferently, and he had to admire Lily’s wisdom. He smilingly spoke, “Ninth mistress, do you know why I only brought you and not my other wives this time? It’s because you’re the smartest among them. Not only are those eight old women old, but they’re extremely dense as well. Bringing them with me is useless, and you’re the only one who can be of my assistance.”

“Is that so?” Lily purposely looked at Joel flirtatiously and said, “You have to help me in killing that young guy, Jack, once you break through to the ultimate god-level. My only wish in this lifetime is to see that guy dying in front of me!”

“Haha… Don’t worry! I’ll definitely work hard to break through so I can help kill that guy for you!”

Chuckling, Joel glanced at the hostages beside him and beamed, “Luckily, my darling thought of a way and kept several people as our hostages. Otherwise, we won’t be able to do anything to the West family if they don’t leave any markings as clues for us after they enter!”

“It’s almost time. We can start our journey now!” reminded Lily as she looked forward.

Joel nodded. With a wave of his hand, everyone flew toward the outskirts of Misty Forest.

However, after flying some distance away, they discovered another group of people traveling towards the same area from another direction.

Joel frowned when he saw this.” Quick, take a look over there. Why is there another group of people?”

Lily also frowned and spoke, somewhat baffled, “What’s going on? That’s a large number of people. D*mn it! Had Jack and the others had some backup plan to kill us here? Had the West family informed Jack and the others, ignoring the lives of these people?”

At the same time, Matthew and the others also discovered Joel’s group flying out from the other direction

“What’s happening? Why is there another group of people? Are they the people that come late?”

Chapter 1629

Matthew frowned and looked alert, not wanting to be discovered as it would only trouble him.

“That’s impossible! Jack and the others wouldn’t leave without everybody present; they’ve all made that promise. From their attire, those should be people from the Cloud Sky Sect!”

Elder Mosley looked far away and relaxed when the sight registered to him. “I’ve inquired quite some news recently, and this Cloud Sky Sect is the enemy of the White family. Let’s go over to them! It looks like they’re also secretly following the others, and they may have several hostages from small families like we do!”

Matthew and the others relaxed when they heard what Elder Mosleyseley said.

Matthew also started smiling. “Since they’re enemies with ours, that’ll make us allies. Haha..! Let ‘s get acquainted, then!”

“They’re coming! They’re coming! They’re coming toward us-be alert, everyone!” Joel was on high alert as they fast approached the empty plot of land outside Misty Forest. The members of the Cloud Sky Sect also looked forward in an extremely alert manner.

“Who are you people?” questioned Joel loudly at Matthew and the others after they stopped some distance away.

“Haha… No need to panic; we’re friends!” Matthew laughed out loudly before he started to make the introductions. “You’ve never seen us, but we’ve heard about you guys. Let me introduce ourselves. We’re forces from the sea. When Jack and the others went to Black Windy Island, we had a fight that resulted in the deaths of many of our people. Due to that, we’re the White family’s enemies. We’re here this time because of the ultimate god-level, so that makes us allies of sorts.”

Joel relaxed when he heard this. “I see. You’re our friends from the seas! It looks like you’ve quite a large number of people, and there should be about seventy to eighty thousand of you. Tsk, tsk! I’ve never realized that there’s such a large force among the seas!”

“Haha… There are many forces in our seas, and most of them obey us, the Hall of Divine Royal. However,

we've lost many masters during our battle with the White family and the other families. This reduced the number of our masters, and we aren't capable of contending with the White family now." Matthew laughed heartily. I know that you guys nurse a very deep grudge with the White family, so I think we can team up and enter this forest together."

Joel nodded. He then observed the other party's people in detail before saying, "Although you have quite a large group of people, and not many of them are in the true god-level, there's still potential. Let's go. We can't continue wasting our time here. It'll be troublesome if we lose them here!"

"That's right! Let's go, and we'll talk along the way. However, there's a small possibility of losing them. We've captured several hostages here, and some of the people traveling in front of us will leave markings for us!" spoke the grinning Matthew.

"What a coincidence! We also have several hostages with us here. Haha…! It is true that great minds think alike! We've thought of the same idea!" Joel also laughed out loudly. The group soon flew forward and entered the vast forest.

Chapter 1630

Jack and the others had no idea at this moment that two large forces had followed them into the forest.

After the group of people flew inward for around two hours, they finally arrived at the area where the pink mist was located. Once they reached this area, Jack discovered that his Chi grew disoriented as it became difficult for him to control his Chi.

Jack and the others immediately controlled their flying sword to stop before they descended in the forest.

"This faint pink mist looks really weird but is quite pretty. They should be harmless to humans, right?" spoke Selena curiously as she looked at the mist in front of them.

“Don’t worry, sister Selena. The mist in front of us is totally harmless to humans!” answered Daniella as she walked over. “Of course, the mist is still quite thin over here and it’ll grow thicker the deeper we walk, so we might get lost or even fail to find our way out by then!”

The continuous growls from the monster beasts could be heard from the forest in front of them. From the muffled growling sounds, it seemed like these monster beasts had quite a high fighting prowess!

However, there were too many people in their ranks, and the top masters of the entire world were with them. Such monster beasts were nothing to be feared.

Turning to the crowd, Jack then spoke, “ Everybody, let’s rest for half an hour to recover your Chi. The Chi here is slightly weird, and we can only use the spirited grass to recover ourselves. Half an hour later, we’ll open the path with beams of light from the stone balls!”

With that, everyone sat with their legs crossed and rested.

After resting for half an hour, many of them had replenished the Chi in their body. Jack and the others took the stone balls out before they infused their Chi into the stone balls.

As their Chi entered the stone balls, streaks of light appeared just like what happened days ago.

However, Jack and the others aimed the streaks of light from the stone ball toward the red mist before them so as to not catch the attention of others.

One streak, two streaks, three, and four streaks…

Soon, seven streaks of lights appeared and interweaved with each other like a bright and colorful rainbow.

As the interweaved streak of light rushed into the pink mist in front of them, the mist dissipated to reveal a rather large road.

“Haha…! It looks like everything is fine after the streak of lights appeared! Let’s go!” Alejandro and the others grew increasingly excited at the revelation. With this streak of light leading the way, it would not be so easy for the monster beasts to attack everybody.

Apart from that, they could not get lost as Kevin had the map with him.

Kevin walked forward while looking at the road in front of them and started doing his research.“ There’s a mountain not far away from the entrance in front of us. I have no idea how long we need to walk before we arrive at the mountain, but once we reach the foot of the mountain, we can estimate how much longer we need to walk before we arrive at the final destination based on the distance on the map.”

Based on the map, there was a mountain not far away from where they were, but they had no idea that they would only arrive at the bottom of the mountain the next afternoon.

Chapter 1631

“We’ve finally arrived at the bottom of the mountain. Oh my … Based on the journey, we still need to walk another seven to eight days before we can get to the final destination marked on the map. That’s so far away!” Kevin was exasperated when he looked at the huge mountain in front of him and the distance on the map.

“It really is quite far. The main issue is the gravity here is quite different, and we can’t walk too quickly. It’s quite tiring if we continue walking like this, and our walking speed might reduce greatly if this continues. We can’t estimate based on our current speed, so I think we might need to walk another ten days before we reach the destination.” Jack frowned as well. After all, delaying another day meant that Fernando had one day less, much to his dismay.

At this stage, however, he had no other option but to take one step at a time.

After resting for half a day, Jack and the others continued their journey, continuing to move forward once they got through the mountains. As they entered deeper, the originally dispersed mist behind them had slowly reconverged. It was as if nobody had ever traversed their path.

“Quickly, quickly! The mist will reconverge around half an hour later. We can’t be too far behind them. We’ll be twenty minutes behind them, so just follow the road that the mist had dispersed from!” Joel had a smile on his face as he hurried his people.

“Haha… It looks like asking the West family to leave markings for us is redundant. We only need to follow the path where there is no mist and walk forward before the mist reconverges. There’s no need to worry about getting lost!” Matthew chuckled aloud, though he stopped momentarily. “If that’s the case, Master Joel, these hostages are useless, right?”

Joel fell silent before he finally understood what the other party meant. “They seem to be useless. Kill them!”

Bang! Bang! Bang!

These hostages did not have high fighting prowess and could not use their Chi at that place, what more with flying prohibited. Surrounded by masters, they were killed.

“Haha… Let’s go. These hostages truly are useless, just like the markings left by these two small families. Haha!” Joel laughed loudly and the group continued to walk forward and followed those in front of them.

Time passed by quickly as they traveled in the dense forest, but after walking for 11 days, they arrived in front of a cave.

There were seven dented holes around this hole, and there was a sky blue-colored screen in front of the cave that shielded the insides of the cave.

“Had those masters gone inside of this place?” An old man from a second-class aristocratic family directly walked over when he saw the light screen as he was extremely excited.

However…

Thomp! He was bounced away the moment he touched the light screen and fell on the ground with a thud.

“This is impossible! He bounced away!” One of them was stunned. He then looked around. “There isn’t any mist around this area. This is so weird! Apart from that, we can actually use our Chi here.”

Jack looked at the seven indented holes and said, “Are we to place the seven stone balls in here to open the area?”

“That’s possible. It isn’t a coincidence that there’s seven indentations here. Let’s place all the stone balls in!” Paul thought about it and nodded as he spoke.

Chapter 1632

Hum!

As the first stone ball was placed into the indent, the sky blue-colored light screen trembled slightly as there was a noticeable reaction. The color of the screen also turned much darker.

“Something happened! There truly is a reaction! Haha… This is great! Since the masters entered this light screen, there must be something better inside. Otherwise, why didn’t they come out?” One of them chuckled heartily as excitement filled his eyes.

Soon, the second stone ball was placed into the second indentation, followed by the third and fourth stone ball. In the end, all seven stone balls were placed in the holes.

“This is such a strong motion. I don’t think we’d be bounced away now, right?” asked another curiously.

“Why don’t we give it a try?” An old man gritted his teeth as he flew up and rushed toward the dark-blue colored light screen.

This time, the light screen gave no obstruction as the old man rushed in and disappeared.

“He disappeared!” Many people exchanged looks and swallowed their saliva.

“I wonder what the world inside is like!” Some people started to be slightly worried.

“There’s nothing to be afraid of as we’re already here! F*ck! This is the only chance we have to break through into the ultimate god-level and become a master of the soul-penetrating realm!” Another old man from the Lucas Family also gritted his teeth as he flew up and rushed into the light screen in a flash.

“Come, let’s go!”

“Yes, let’s go in quickly. Who knows if there is any time limit. If this can only be opened for a short period, we won’t be able to enter later!” With that thought, some immediately flew up and rushed toward the light screen.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

More and more people flew upward and rushed into the light screen.

“Everybody, don’t panic! It looks like only two hundred people are allowed per entry. Don’t rush! Don’t rush!”

Alejandro called out loudly when he saw how more of them rushed toward the cave’s light screen.

There were too many people there, entering like hasty ants.

Once most of them had entered through the light screen, Jack held Selena’s hand and flew in together. “Let’s go!”

The area outside the cave became vacant after a short while…but another group of people soon arrived.

Chapter 1633

“Haha! This is the cave, alright. All of them have gone in!” Joel chuckled loudly in glee.

However, his joy faltered as he glanced at Lily, who was beside him. “Ninth mistress, what’s going on with you? Shouldn’t you be happy that we’ve found the entrance? Why do you still look so bitter?”

Lily sighed before she said, “I’ve been observing throughout the journey, but I can’t seem to find any clues regarding my son. Sigh … My son and the others must’ve died… Sigh!”

Joel was speechless and he spoke, “I’m sure he’s been dead for a long time; you should stop thinking about it. How could he have stayed alive after entering Misty Forest?”

Lily once again sighed to herself when she coincidentally spotted a sword that stuck out on the cliff. Although half of the sword was embedded into the stones on the cliff, half of it was exposed, and it

looked familiar to her.

“Honey, quickly! Quickly! Do you see that sword? Please bring it down for me!” gushed Lily after she studied it.

“Why do you want me to take a sword that’s been there for who knows how long?” Joel did not look happy about it, but he flew up nonetheless and took the sword down before passing it to Lily. “It’s just a low-grade spiritual tool, yet you’re making a fuss over it. You truly are something!”

However, Lily’s hands that took the sword trembled slightly as she, with hope, explained, “It’s Lance’s sword. This is…is his sword! He likes this sword very much!”

“How’s that possible?!” Joel inhaled when he heard this and exclaimed, “If that’s the case, could it be that Lance and the others visited this area? Could it be that they accidentally came here? If that’s the case, it truly is a coincidence!”

“Yes, yes, yes! That must be it! Lance and the others must’ve visited this area! They must’ve come here!” Lily was extremely agitated as she failed to hold back the tears that trickled down her face.

“Sigh… You should stop crying. Take a look at the surface of the mountain; there are many traces of battle left here. They might have encountered some strong monster beast here and have perished,” comforted Joel.

However, Lily still shook her head in disbelief and said, “ Impossible! My son can’t be dead. Why isn’t his body here, then? I know they’re still alive.”

Matthew hated when women cried, so he glared at Lily with impatience before he grumbled, “There are quite many monster beasts here. How can you still see the body if he’s already died? Apart from that, your son had entered this area a long time ago. It’d be very strange if we’re still able to see his body!”

“Come, let’s go in quickly and see what’s the situation inside. We’re going in if you guys don’t plan to do so!” Elder Mosley from the Hall of Divine Royal smiled coldly before he continued to speak to Lily and the others. “We were working together previously because all of us wanted to come in here. If we see any items that can help us break through to the ultimate god-level upon entering, we’d have to fight for it later on.”

“Haha! You’re right. However, if we bump into Jack, we have to kill that guy if we can break through to the ultimate god level soon!” Joel laughed and waved his hand at the members of his Cloud Sky Sect. “Come, let's go in and take a look at what’s going on inside.”

After Jack rushed into the light screen while holding Selena’s hand, he discovered a strong wave of energy that separated them instantly.

When Jack looked around him, he noticed that no one was in sight and he was alone. The place had blue skies and white clouds while trees as tall as the sky surrounded him. It looked like a completely different place.

“The Chi here seems to be extremely rich.’ Jack could not help but inhale deeply after he felt the richness of the Chi in this area. The Chi’s quality was a couple times richer compared to where the White family was. More importantly, this area gave people a feeling that one was extremely perceptive. Jack could feel that the speed of training in such a place would be increased greatly.

Chapter 1634

Roar!

Jack heard the horrifying roars of beasts from far away. They sounded so harrowing, and the faint imposing manner in the roars made Jack think that the monster beasts in this area were far stronger compared to those outside.

At that moment…

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Jack heard the sounds of battle on a mountaintop not far away from him.

'What's going on? They've started fighting the moment they came in? Looks like we're not too far apart, even though everyone that entered was separated. I should see what's happening,' thought Jack as he flew toward the source of the sounds of fighting.

As the Chi was rich in this area, Jack flew swiftly on his flying sword and went straight to the mountaintop.

Of course, Jack did not fly too high in the sky as he feared monster beasts would spot him, thus he merely flew a meter or two above ground speedily.

Soon, Jack arrived at the mountaintop where the battle seemingly took place.

"Drats! How did these people get in?" A bald, burly man with straight eyebrows and looked extremely domineering seemed gargantuan as he held a humongous mace. He wore no upper clothes, and it exposed his terrifying-looking muscles that resembled a scaly dragon.

Next to him was a thin young man and looked slightly shorter than the bald man.

The thin young man looked extremely gaunt and his face had an unhealthy hint of paleness.

In front of these two people was Melody Lawson. She was knocked down on the floor, and there was a cut on her thigh. She was hurt by the thin man's sword aura, and blood oozed out from her wound.

“Who are you people?” Melody looked at the two in fright; they were frighteningly powerful. She was in the peak stage of the true god-level and was extremely talented. Her combat power was comparable to the Pavilion Master of the Supreme Clarity Sect.

She never expected to experience the horrifying strength of these two men. Her combat power was much lower compared to them, and she was no match for them after all.

“Tsk, tsk… How dare you ask who we are? Who are you, and where did you come from? From the token on you, you’re not one of our people on these sacred grounds. Speak: how did you come in? How many of you have come in? This is the entrance to the sacred grounds from the abandoned land, and we expected no visitors!” growled the burly man. His voice was loud like a great bell and sounded aggressively gruff. The meat on his face could pressure people without him being angry.

“Dummy, this woman has a nice figure and charming eyes. I wonder how she looks under the veil!” The thin man smirked and looked at Melody-who got up on her feet, struggling-with a playful expression. “It’ll be a waste to just kill her like that, even though we will. Why don’t you let me play with her for a bit? I’ve never slept with women who came from that side!”

However, the burly man said expressionlessly, “What are you thinking about? I’m worried that there’s more where this woman came from. We have to report to the management if too many people have entered. We have to kill these people! We can’t allow these people that came from the abandoned lands to enjoy our martial enhancement materials!”

“You’re right, but this woman looks so pretty…” The thin man still looked reluctant to give up as he licked his lips.

Before he finished, however, the look in Melody’s eyes changed in a flash as she immediately turned around and flew toward the bottom of the mountain.

“Haha! The young lady plans to escape, huh? Let’s see how you plan to do it!”

Chapter 1635

The burly man laughed sonorously at the sight before he chased after Melody swiftly.

'Such speed!' Jack was startled as he watched on. The burly man's speed surpassed that of usual masters in the peak stage of the true god-level.

Of course, the man caught up to Melody in a flash and smashed forward with his hammer. "Pretty one, since you refuse to explain yourself, I'll take action!"

Melody knew that he was extremely strong, but she never thought he would be two times quicker than her and would catch up to her so quickly. She quickly turned around and as she looked at the hammer dropping down, she infused Chi into the sword in her hands before she lifted it above her head and shielded herself.

However…

Bang!

The man was too powerful as Melody dropped to the ground with an audible thud. Melody vomited blood at that moment, and it sullied her veil. A deep hole appeared on the ground, and Melody was so deeply wounded that she could not stand up.

The thin man quickly flew over and stopped the burly man when he saw what happened. "Dummy, don't kill her! What a waste! If you don't want to sleep with her, I will! Haha! Let me sleep with this woman, and you can go look around the area to see if anybody else came in!"

"You…! You're gonna die because of a woman sooner or later!" The burly man glanced at the thin man before he turned and ran straight toward the foot of the mountain.

“Haha! Seems like you’re at the mercy of my hands now, young lady. I do want to see what you look like!” The thin man laughed as he slowly walked toward Melody. He then squatted down and was prepared to unbutton her clothes.

“You… You b*stard!” Melody horror was written all over her face, but what else could she have done when she was already immobile?

“Hmph! Shall I take a look at your face first? I’d be scammed if the upper part of your face looks pretty but the lower part is ugly!” The thin man’s hand stopped mid-air momentarily before he stretched it toward Melody’s veil. However…

Whoosh!

A shadow flashed by at this moment as the man was oblivious, and a sword pierced through his body from behind.

“You…!” The thin man turned around and looked at Jack, who stood behind him, in disbelief. As Jack pulled out his sword, the man fell to the ground.

“These two people have extremely high fighting prowess; they must be masters in the ultimate god-level. Let’s leave this place for now!” Jack glanced at Melody, who was lying on the ground. He then lifted her into his arms, much to her surprise.

After hoisting Melody into his arms, Jack looked around them and noticed two stone statues. It looked like the two men were guarding this place.

“T-Thank you, Young Master Jack!” Melody, settled in Jack’s arm, blushed a crimson color. This was the first time a man carried her in such a way, and a stranger, no less. She could feel her heart racing.

Chapter 1636

Melody clearly knew in her heart that as the Melody Lawson , she could not have any thoughts about the relationship between man and woman. She tried to stopped herself from imagining things.

However, being held by Jack so intimately, she could not stop the thoughts from appearing in her mind neither could she not ask Jack to put her down or they would be in trouble if the bald burly man returned.

Jack thought about it and suddenly recalled something. He then put Melody down.

Melody widened her pretty eyes as she looked at Jack and said, “Do…do you plan to leave me here?”

Melody was afraid at that moment. She was at an unfamiliar area and met two masters who might have been in the ultimate god-level once she arrived. If Jack ignored and left her, she would definitely die if that burly man returned.

Jack smiled bitterly before he walked over to take down the token from the man’s waist and his martial ring. He then said with a smile, “I almost forgot to take my trophies. This guy should have quite a high fighting prowess and there might be some nice items in his martial ring!”

Melody felt embarrassed before she finally relaxed.

After all, it was not the outside world and Jack did not have any obligation to save her in that unfamiliar world. It was already great if anyone could survive on their own.

After Jack kept all the items, he picked Melody up again and flew down the mountain from another direction.

“I wonder where my father, Selena, and the others appeared after they arrived. It would be quite

troublesome if they really met such a burly guy! If I didn't sneakily attack the guy just now, I would not be his opponent if we really got into a fight." Jack said with a frown on his face as he flew.

Melody thought about it and said to Jack, "Your combat power has surpassed usual masters in the peak stage of the true god level. I feel that everybody would be safe if we manage to kill that bald man!"

Jack hesitated when he heard this. He stopped as he had just flown a short distance away. "Do you think that I have hopes of killing that bald man if I work hard enough? But I have no idea what his fighting prowess is! During his fight with you, I have no idea how much power he used and if he held back his power! Would it be too risky?"

"From the conversation between those two people just now, they were sent to guard that place and nobody had entered this area throughout the years. I think that no matter what forces they are from, they must have forgotten about this place. Hence, the people they sent would not have such high fighting prowess. They must be people that are here for a show!" Melody thought about it before speaking her thoughts. "Why don't you think about it? We have no idea when the ancient tome had been written and the last batch of people who came here must have been many years ago. During that time, they were able to break through into the ultimate god level in Daxia and all of them managed to come here. This meant that the Chi at our place was still very rich. Now, so many years have passed without people entering this area and nobody would pay much attention to this so-called entrance. Hence, those who are sent here to take care of this place would be miscellaneous soldiers, right?"

Jack also nodded after he heard this. "You are right. Even if their fighting prowess is at the ultimate god level, it might not be impossible to fight them with my combat power. However, it's going to be difficult if I'm going to do this alone. We might stand a chance if there are several people here!"

Chapter 1637

"Yes! We have no idea how big this forest is. If the burly man went back and delivered the news that many people had barged in from Daxia, I'm afraid that all the people that entered this area, including your White family, would be killed!"

Melody had a worried expression on her face. She thought about it and continued, "Hence, why don 't try and see if you can kill that burly man. Then we would be safe if this is a deserted place and the

people of their forces don't pay much attention to this place. Let's see if we can try to break through into the ultimate god-level first!"

Bang bang bang!

At this moment, the sound of people fighting could be heard from a place at the bottom of the mountain.

"How about this, let me see if there's a way for me to attack the other party sneakily like just now. If that's the case, we have a better chance of succeeding!" Jack thought about it and finally made up his mind.

After all, they would really be in trouble if the burly man discovered that many people had entered and notified the masters of his forces.

Jack was sure that there were many masters in the soul-penetrating level there and not many of them were capable of defeating masters in the ultimate god level, let alone those in the soul-penetrating level.

Apart from that, the thin man's reaction was slightly slow while the burly man failed to kill Melody with his hammer attack. Hence, Jack felt that the burly man's fighting prowess might be just like what Melody had guessed which was not very high. They might be sent to guard the place because they did not have a high position in their families.

He placed Melody down and took a healing pill out for Melody to consume. "There's a small cave over there and I will leave you there for now. Your wounds will heal soon with my healing pill. I will give it a try and see if I can settle the burly man. I'll come back and look for you if I can settle him. If I don't after a long time, there's a possibility that I will not return!"

"You don't need to take the risk. This is quite a huge forest and you can hide to train well. You are so talented. There's a possibility of you breaking through to the ultimate god-level soon and you can think of a way to leave this place. I said that because I am worried about the safety of the members of our

Supreme Clarity Sect! That is why I asked you to take the risk!" Melody said embarrassingly when she saw how Jack faced death with equanimity. After all, she felt that it was a huge risk, asking Jack to kill the burly man.

"Don't worry, I know that this is a huge risk to take but I have to give it a try. I'm also doing this for the members of the White family. After all, my wife, my father, housekeeper Titus and the others are also in danger." Jack smiled bitterly and once again picked Melody up before rushing into the slightly hidden cave in front of them.

Moments later, Jack flew out and went straight toward where the fighting sounds could be heard.

Chapter 1638

As she stayed in the cave, Melody started feeling a sense of regret after Jack left. 'Sigh… Is it too selfish of me to persuade him to gamble his life like this? However, I have to give it a try in order for our Supreme Clarity Sect to obtain peace for some time!'

Melody felt slightly guilty about her actions. After all, Jack did not have a huge possibility of winning in her opinion. If the bald man did not use his full power and only used:1% of his energy previously then Jack would not be the other party's opponent.

However, she soon shook her head and comforted herself. "Impossible, even if the bald man was a master in the ultimate god level, he would only be in the First or Second-grade of the ultimate god level. Jack still stand a chance of winning. After all, I could feel the killing intent from the bald man's look previously. He definitely would not only use a small portion of his power under such circumstances and he would have at least used most of his strength!"

She bit her sexy red lips after she finished speaking and mumbled to herself, "Jack, you definitely have to come back alive!"

At this moment, Jack had already arrived at the place where the fighting sound were coming from.

Bang!

As he hid on top of a tree, he happened to see a master from the Cloud Sky Sect, who was in the peak stage of the true god level, being killed by the bald man. Beside them, another man from the Cloud Sky Sect and an old man from the Hall of Divine Royal were laying lifelessly on the ground.

'D*mn it! Why are the people from the Cloud Sky Sect and Hall of Divine Royal here?' Jack frowned when he saw the situation and was speechless. It looks like the people from these two forces had thought of ways to follow them in. It was even possible that they were already following behind Jack and the others when they were in the Misty Forest.

'Never mind, it's also good that they have followed us here. It would be troublesome if all of them were left outside, especially the members from the Cloud Sky Sect, as they might take action against the members of the White family who are outside!' Jack felt much better when he thought about it that way. After all, members of so many forces had entered and it was impossible to completely keep this a secret throughout these seven days.

Apart from that, he did not have the time to ponder about that issue then. What he was thinking at the moment was how to kill the bald, burly man.

After the bald, burly man killed the old man from the Cloud Sky Sect, he curled his hands into fists and mumbled to himself. "F*ck! It looks like more than one person has entered. What is really going on? How did they discover the entrance to the sacred grounds when it's concealed so well? Nothing has happened when the others were sent to guard this place for so many years but so many people have entered when the two of us are guarding this area. We are so unlucky! Luckily there aren't any masters in the ultimate godlevel as the abandoned area doesn't have much Chi and they haven't inherited any martial art technique. If not, it would be really troublesome."

Sounds of people fighting could be heard from many other places. The bald man thought about it and went rushing toward another area where fighting sounds could be heard.

Jack thought about it and secretly followed the other party.

“Haha… I’ve never imagined that we would bump into Master White here. It looks like even the gods are helping me!” Four people surrounded Nash and Selena under a tree.

Nash, who was in the peak stage of the true god level, had a darkened expression on his face as he looked at these four people in front of him.

He had never imagined bumping into Selena, his daughter-in-law, not long after he entered this area.

Chapter 1639

Selena had a low fighting prowess and everybody was worried about her safety. Nash was delighted when he saw her.

However, as the two were prepared to search for other members of the White family, they were coincidentally discovered by four people who stood in front of them.

Among these four people, one of them was Joel from the Cloud Sky Sect while the other was Matthew from the Hall of Divine Royal. The other two people were masters in the final stage of the true god-level from the Cloud Sky Sect. Nash did not have any chance of winning against the combined combat power of these four people, especially when he was accompanied by Selena, who had a low fighting prowess and would only drag him down.

Nash was confident that he would still have the chance to escape if he was facing these four people alone. However, it was obviously difficult for him to escape on his own and leave Selena behind.

“Father, are these…these people strong?” Selena had never met Joel and the others. She was worried when she saw the serious expression on Nash’s face.

“They are very strong. There are two masters in the final stage of the true god-level while the other two are the sect master of the Cloud Sky Sect and the hall master of the Hall of Divine Royal. I believe you

don’t need me to tell you about their fighting prowess!” Nash said with a serious expression on his face. He clearly knew that Selena’s fighting prowess was nothing compared to the other party. On top of that, these four people had completely compressed the fluctuation of their bodies. Hence, Selena was unable to see the situation of their fighting prowess.

Selena’s facial expression grew increasingly darkened when she heard this. She knew that these four people in front of her were not simpletons but she never expected them to be the bosses of their two enemies. One of them was a sect master while the other one was a hall master.

Selena only hesitated momentarily before she gritted her teeth and said to Nash, “Father, you don’t need to care much about me, you should just escape by yourself. If you have to take care of me, the two of us would end up dead. If you escape by yourself, you might have hopes of surviving as you have an ultimate-grade spiritual tool with you! You only have to ask Jack to avenge me when you find him!”

“No way!” However, Nash had a determined look on his face. “You’re my daughter-in-law, how am I supposed to explain to Jack later on if I escape alone? There’s no way I will agree to this! I think I shall stall them and you can escape by yourself. I will stall them and try to buy you some time to escape. You are still young while I’m already old. It doesn’t matter if I die!”

“Haha… This is such a touching scene!” Matthew started laughing loudly. “Unfortunately, do you think you are capable of stalling the four of us? If your son is here, not only the four of us, we wouldn’t be his opponent even if there are four more of us. However, you…you are very much behind compared to your son!”

“Surely, Jack’s wife looks stunning and is comparable to the Melody Lawson . She even looks as pretty as Helena and Daniella. I really want to try what a woman like her taste like!” Joel smirked as he was extremely happy.

“Jack’s woman. Haha… You are right! I don’t really like other people’s wife but Jack is an exception!” Matthew also smiled coldly. As Jack killed so many members of their Hall of Divine Royal, he really wanted to know what would the expression on Jack’s face be like if he learned that his wife had died in their hands and was even taken advantage by them before she died.

Chapter 1640

“Father, you should leave now. If you don’t leave now, I will commit suicide here!” Selena gritted her teeth and yelled at Nash.

“No way, don’t you act irrationally. You are the one who should leave as I’m already at this age. When I was poisoned by the vicious Lily previously, I had already looked past life and death when I thought that I was dying. Hence, I’ m not afraid of death. You’re different! You’re still young and you still have a long life with Jack. You have to survive for Kylie’s sake! Do you understand?” Nash said to Selena with a certain expression on his face as he held onto his sword and looked at the four people in front of him vigilantly.

Selena’s facial expression slightly wavered when she heard the name, Kylie. She had obviously started to hesitate.

“F*ck me! There’s really quite a large number of people! There are six people here!” Unexpectedly, a burly man with no hair came flying over from the forest at this moment. He had a huge hammer in his hands and looked at the people in front of him domineeringly.

‘Father, Selena?’ Jack was surprised when he saw the people below him as he was hiding in the trees. He had never expected his father and Selena to bump into Matthew, Joel, and their people.

“Who are you?” Joel and the others frowned when they saw the bald man. The faint imposing manner of this person caused Joel to slightly worry.

“Who knows which small family this guy is from? Why? Do you plan to cause trouble here? You want to be a hero and rescue the beauty?” An old man from the Cloud Sky Sect smiled coldly and slowly walked toward the bald man. “Young man, bugger away if you are a tactful person. You must be suicidal to think that you can meddle with the affairs of our Cloud Sky Sect and the Hall of Divine Royal!”

“Haha… Such arrogance! I’m not here to rescue that woman, I’m here to kill all six of you!” The bald man said hoarsely and he paced over while carrying his huge hammer. With every step he made, a deep footprint appeared on the floor.

“Such an arrogant tone! You must be suicidal!” The old man appeared in front of the bald man in a flash and directly punched forward.

Fast and it was difficult for normal people to avoid his punch.

However, he was surprised to discover that his punch had missed its target after he punched forward. The bald man in front of him had disappeared.

“Im-Impossible!” The old man was extremely shocked. He looked up and a huge hammer came smashing down at him.

“Be careful!” Joel immediately yelled loudly when the old man punched forward. He was able to see the burly man’s travel path and that man was extremely fast. He had rushed into mid-air in a flash and came crashing down at the old man with the hammer in his hands.

It was too late by the time the old man managed to realize what was happening, he exploded after being smashed by the hammer.

“His speed is too fast. This person must be a master in the ultimate god level!” Matthew looked at the token on the waist of the other party with a cold expression on his face and said, “Bloodshed Clan? We’ve never heard of such a clan! It looks like this should be a clan in this area. D*mn it! He’s an aborigine from this area!”

Joel inhaled in fright when he heard what Matthew said and his facial expression immediately darkened. They had never imagined that they would bump into a master in the ultimate god level.

“Haha… I don’t have a high fighting prowess or I won’t be sent to such a deserted area. However, it is nothing difficult for me, who has almost broken through into the Second-grade of the ultimate god level, to kill you people!” The bald man touched his head and started laughing loudly.

Chapter 1641

“Second-grade ultimate god realm? Matthew, why don’t we fight him together?”

Joel thought about the matter and proposed.

“Fight him? That won’t do at all! Although the other party is only in the first-grade ultimate god realm, the gap between the true and ultimate god realms is too huge! With the three of us joining forces together, we’re no match to him! And even if Nash joins in and fights with us, we’re still unable to defeat him!”

Matthew’s face turned solemn and gloomy.

He gritted his teeth and spewed a few words, “Then we’d better escape!”

He immediately wheeled around and flew away after dropping his last words, storming away from the scene toward the distant sky.

“Trying to escape from me? Not that easy!”

The bald man immediately flew after Matthew while injecting his Chi energy into the huge hammer. The huge hammer shone brightly like a diamond, and he smashed out with the hammer at a distance.

In an instant, a frightening wisp of Chi was shot out. The Chi energy of the wisp carried a faint golden color.

Boom!

Matthew, who had already flown several miles away, was blasted by the attack and exploded instantly.

“What the heck? That was extremely fast!”

Witnessing the speed of the attack, Joel, who had planned to fly and escape as well, stood frozen. The confidence in his heart was instantly crushed at the sight before him. The bald man’s attack was obviously faster than them, and the range of his attack was very far as well. Perhaps, only the ultimate god-level fighter could be this powerful.

“Ma-master, what should we do?”

The face of the elder of Cloud Sky Sect blanched. He looked at Joel, who stood beside him, his eyes full of terror and his voice trembling.

It was such an arduous and tiring journey to come to the place where one could finally break through to the ultimate god realm. How could they expect to encounter a native as soon as they stepped into the land? Even worse, the native was a first-grade ultimate god-level fighter. How unfortunate was that?

“Now, now. It’s your turn!”

The bald man looked at the elder, letting out a cold smile.

“No, no! Don’t kill me!”

The old man was so frightened that he turned around and swept out in a storm, exerting his speed to the limit.

Boom!

Unfortunately, another horrifying golden wisp of Chi shot out, instantly catching up to the old man and blasting him away.

Joel was so scared that his body went cold with dread. Matthew was the freaking master of the Hall of Divine Royal! And he was one of the strongest in the sea territory. Nobody would expect him to be killed just like that.

Plus, his men were all good and strong fighters; they were killed without being able to counter the attack at all! Now, the other party's eyes were fixated on him, did it mean that he was his target right now?

Similarly, Nash and Selena were in a complete state of terror. They started to doubt whether entering the area was a wise choice to make. These natives seemed like they loathed intruders from outside.

"Hold on!"

Seeing that the bald man was ready to strike at him, Joel stretched out his hand and said desperately, "Brother, I have a question for you. You and I, we have no grievances nor grudges between us, why do you want to kill me? We've not offended you in any way!"

"Haha!"

The bald man laughed out loud instead. With a rough and coarse voice, he bellowed, "The moment you stepped into this place, you were doomed to die! You foolish people, how dare you intrude our place and take our martial enhancement resources! You are clearly seeking death!.

Chapter 1642

"My dear good brother, please spare my life! I' ll give you everything that I have in my martial ring! Alright?"

Joel was frantic with fear and his face was ashen. After a quick thought, he knelt on the ground before the bald man, begging for mercy, his tone panicked. “My good brother, it was not easy for me to reach my current martial status, and we came here not to offend you but out of curiosity. We are trying to find out if there are really strong fighters of the ultimate god level. If you’re willing, we’ll get out of here immediately, okay? How can we exit this place?”

“Hmph! Get out of here? Isn’t it good to die here instead? Besides, if I allow you to leave, there’ll be more people who will find out about this place!”

The bald man snorted coldly; he raised his huge hammer and swung toward Joel, casting a martial attack.

Joel was rendered speechless at the bald man’s behavior, at the same time, fear pulsed through him.

However, something quickly popped up in his mind and his eyes lit up. “Wait, wait! As long as you let me go, I’ll tell you exactly how many of us have come in, which clans and families are here, and even, I can help you to lure them out and kill those guys!” He yelled in a shaky voice.

Sure enough, the bald man stopped his movement the moment he heard Joel’s words. He was tempted by Joel’s proposal.

After all, he did not know how many people had entered this time. In only a short time, he had encountered and killed many of them. There must be more intruders entering the vicinity. Hence, it was useful for him to spare this b*stard and used him to lure the others.

Jack, who was hiding not far away, was speechless at the scene before him; the corners of his mouth twitched several times upon hearing Joel’s ridiculous proposal. He did not expect him to betray the people of Daxia just to save himself!

“Joel Collins, what a shameless punk! You want to betray even the people of your Cloud Sky Sect as well?”

Nash's fury suddenly sprang to life. He stared furiously at Joel with malice and hatred in his eyes.

"Hahaha! As long as I can live and this man from the Bloodshed Clan is happy, he can take in the people of Cloud Sky Sect. My people and I are willing to work under them. And if they were upset with us one day and want us dead, then I'm also willing to offer our lives!"

Joel's eyes were reddened, and he laughed out loud. "Nash White, can't you see? This place is not like any place in our area! There must be many real strong people here! Bullsh*t true god peak level fighters like us are nothing compared to any of the strong people here! I just need to live! As long as I live, there's

Hope!"

At this moment, Joel, who had witnessed the death of several strong fighters, was edged with terror and fear. The only thought in his mind was to survive this ordeal, to the point that he could sacrifice the lives of other clans and families.

"Hahaha! Good! Obey me if you want to live! I'll finish these two off first, then I'll take them back to the clan. And you shall tell us how many people have entered this place, who are they, and which families they belong to! Then we'll be able to kill these people who came in together!"

The bald man was delighted at Joel's nasty proposal. "Don't worry. Just obey and behave well, and our clan leader or elder or whatever you guys call, as long as they are happy, perhaps, they might even spare you and your sect's lives. But this also depends on your cooperation in this matter. Behave well and cooperate with us properly…"

However, just before the big bald man could finish his words, a terrifying aura came straight at him with a flash behind him.

The bald man felt the terrific danger approaching and he was so frightened that he immediately veered

to the side.

Unfortunately, he was still too slow in dodging the attack. A powerful sword attack landed solidly on his shoulder and in the next second, one of his arms was chopped off.

“Ah!”

Chapter 1643

The bald man dodged to the side, only then did he wheel his head and look at what was behind him; his eyes filled with panic and shock. If he had not sensed the danger behind him and had been half a minute slower, his body would have been split into half and he would have died for sure.

Blood flowed out from the shoulder, and only after a brief moment, the bald man’s face turned pale.

He instantaneously took out a hemostatic healing pill and swallowed it down. The bleeding slowed down. But even so, the injury that Jack had inflicted on him was way too heavy.

“Ja-Jack!”

Joel took a sharp intake of breath as he looked at Jack. How could he have imagined that Jack would appear at this moment and give the bald man a surprise attack.

“Jack!”

Selena turned her head and took a look. It was Jack! Her eyes immediately welled up and her nose reddened; she could not help but feel relieved and happy. Just moments ago, she thought that she and Nash was going to die and that she could not see Jack again.

To her surprise, Jack appeared and sneakily attacked that big bald man, inflicting a heavy wound on him.

“He reacted pretty fast, eh? I used my fastest attack, but he could actually sense it. Sigh! I couldn’t finish him in one blow, what a shame!”

Jack sighed aloud, but soon a smile crept onto his face again. “However, I’ve given you such a big surprise-you’re heavily wounded! So, your combat prowess should be sharply reduced too!”

“You, kill him now! Aren’t you a sect master? Killing this brat shouldn’t be a problem for you, right? As long as you kill him, I will put in good words for you when I go back! This is the moment for you to take credit!”

The big bald man gritted his teeth and glared at Jack with malice and hatred in his eyes. He then ordered Joel, who was beside him, to kill Jack.

Joel almost fainted when he heard that. Him killing Jack alone? Was the bald man kidding? He knew that even if there were five of him, he still did not have the confidence to terminate Jack, not to mention he was now alone. How could he do that?

He gulped, then took two steps backward and replied, “Senior, I… I’m not able to do so. I don’ t have that ability to kill him. You don’t know who this brat is, his name is Jack. His combat prowess is overwhelmingly powerful. Although he has not reached the ultimate god realm, I do think that his combat prowess is already comparable to first-grade or second-grade ultimate god level! This brat has killed many people in my clan before!”

“Ugh! What a useless shrimp!”

The bald man was upset at Joel. He looked at Jack with a stony face. “Young man, you don’t have any martial virtues, do you? How dare you ambush me!”

“Haha! There can never be too much deception in war, don’t you think so? Besides, you are so strong and powerful, why should I uphold those goddamn martial virtues?”

Jack laughed sinisterly. He pointed the long sword in his grip at the other party. “I must kill you today. Otherwise, you’re gonna be a huge threat to my White family members!”

“Hmph! I’m injured but do you think you have the ability to kill me?”

The bald man’s face was full of sweat, cold, and clammy. With one hand holding his huge hammer, he directly leaped up high and smashed down furiously at Jack.

Chapter 1644

The bald man had lost one arm, which made it inconvenient for him to carry such a huge hammer, however, he could not afford to underestimate the other party’s combat power. The attack of the huge hammer carried a wind whistling sound, heading straight to Jack and giving a strong sense of oppression.

“Humph!”

Nonetheless, Jack snorted icily at the attack. He then clutched the sword in his hand tightly, injected Chi energy into it, and then chopped out against the huge hammer.

Swoosh!

At once, a frightening wisp of Chi flew straight up and heavily blasted the top of that huge hammer of the opponent.

A huge explosive sound rang out as the two powerful attacks collided together.

Joel, who was standing aside, watched the scene before him in surprise. His heart could not help but leap into his throat. If Jack successfully decapitated this big bald man, he would definitely not let him go.

The bald man, although he was powerful, was injured by the blow just now. Compared to a two-handed attack, there was a huge difference in using one hand to swing the hammer toward Jack.

Furthermore, even if Jack was no match for the bald man, he would still be able to slow down the other party; that would not be a problem for Jack to do so given that he was such a powerful fighter.

After thinking momentarily, he immediately mobilized, surged his Chi energy, and went straight into the distance in a flash.

“That punk actually escaped!”

The moment Nash saw that Joel fled, he flew for some distance, wanting to go after him.

However, once he thought of how powerful Joel was, he would most likely not be able to catch up. Even if he did, he would not be able to kill him. Hence, he ceased going after Joel.

He was more concerned about Jack’s situation after all. He was afraid that Jack was no match for the bald man and worried that the bald man would suddenly strike at Selena. Hence, he decided to stay and could only watch Joel flee the scene.

“Damn, this brat, didn’t he come from that place? A peak true god-level fighter could have such strong fighting prowess too?”

The big bald man thought that Jack was definitely not his opponent, but Jack’s attack had obviously weakened his speed of smashing downward. His heart was uneasy at the outcome.

He was not a first-grade ultimate god-level fighter but a second-grade one. So, he was much stronger and more powerful than that skinny guy before.

So, in his point of view, even if he was injured, Jack was definitely no match for him.

However, from the situation right now, Jack blocked his attack and reduced his speed.

His speed of smashing downwards was descending incessantly, and soon Jack's attack could actually overpower his hammer attack and instantly blew him a dozen feet away.

Swoosh!

At this time, with a powerful stomp, Jack leaped up to the sky, flew to the front of the bald man, and swung his sword toward the bald man.

"Amazing! Judging from the situation, that bald man may not be Jack's opponent! Luckily Jack ambushed and injured him before that, otherwise, it's very unlikely for Jack to defeat him!"

Looking at the two men fighting in the sky, Nash was slightly relieved. The situation that seems like Jack was now in the upper hand.

Moreover, the blood on the bald man's arm had not completely stopped. The blood was flowing out little by little, making the color drained from his face; his face was paler than before. He was obviously getting more and more strained in the battle.

"Blade Wave!"

After fighting for a while, Jack let out a faint cry, casting out the Blade Wave. Waves of aura flying swords were shot out like long aura sword dragons flying toward the bald man. Soon, the bald man had

fallen.

Chapter 1645

“He’s finally dead!”

Staring at the corpse on the ground, Jack could finally breathe out a huge sigh of relief. If Jack had not sneakily attacked the other party and severely injure him before the battle, he was afraid it would be difficult to kill the bald man.

After taking off the bald man’s martial ring, Jack turned around and walked toward Selena, who was at the other side.

However, just as Jack extended his leg to walk away, the bald man opened his eyes at this time. A black skull flew out of the bald man’s body, rushing straight to Jack. The bald man’s body squirmed a little, completely lifeless.

“Jack, watch out!”

Both Selena and Nash were shocked at the sight of that little black skull. They immediately yelled at Jack in panic, alerting him.

Jack did not even dare to turn around and immediately dogged aside in a flash.

Right after he veered to the side, the black skull charged forward faster and in an instant, it came before Selena. Before Selena could react, the little black skull burrowed into her left cheek. Selena’s eyes widened.

“What the hell?”

Jack was completely dumbfounded. He totally had no idea what that was. He looked back at the bald man who was completely lifeless, and he was even more puzzled right now. What was that freaking attack that the bald man had cast right before his last breath?

He flickered and within a second, he came to the front of Selena. And at this time, a thumbsize black spot appeared on Selena's left cheek, like a huge black mole.

"Selena, you…how do you feel right now?"

Jack gulped and asked in a voice full of concerns. He did not know what it was.

"I…I don't know. I don't feel any pain at all. What was that thing?"

Selena looked preoccupied. She took out a mirror from her martial ring and looked at her face closely.

"Heh? What…what is this! Dear, what is this?!"

After spotting the black mole-like thing on her face, Selena was scared. Her almost perfect face was now ruined by a black lump of flesh. It ,downgraded her beautiful face in an instant; she did not look as good as before. She was basically disfigured by the huge black spot.

"Sigh! I don't know what it is either. That little skull was getting faster and faster. If I had known that the skull would enter your body, I would not have dodged it!"

Jack felt a pang of heartache and guilt when he looked at Selena's worried expression. He sighed aloud.

"Right, we should see what's in the bald man's martial ring!"

Jack suddenly thought of something, and he took out the bald man's martial ring, searching through it.

Within several minutes, he found a book from the ring. He took it out and began to look through it.

His expression grew more and more unsightly as he read through the book. "Dammit! This is a curse technique of the Bloodshed clan and it' s very vicious! If the curse is not removed, the person who is struck by this curse will not live more than a year!"

"A year!"

Terror thundered down on Nash the moment he heard Jack's words. Selena, who stood beside them, was startled at the newly learned information. They did not expect that the bald man's attack was actually a vicious cursing technique.

However, after a moment of silence, Selena said with a bitter smile on her face, "A can do with a year. I'd have long gone to hell if you did now appear in time a moment ago. I should feel content to be able to see you now, and even better to be by your side for another year!"

Jack studied the book meticulously before saying, "Don't worry. I'll heal you! According to this book, there's a way to remove this curse!"

Chapter 1646

"Is there really a way? Hubby, you're not lying to me, are you?"

A bitter smile was plastered on Selena's face upon hearing Jack's words. She was afraid that Jack was only telling her white lies to comfort her.

"Yes. There's a solution to the curse. To remove the curse, we must craft a fourthgrade intermediate level pill, and…and we need a treasure from the Crystal Cloud clan."

Jack smiled dryly, and to make Selena believe his words, he shoved the book to Selena, letting her look at the content written in the book.

“Fourth-grade intermediate level pill…could we possibly find such a thing within a year? And there’s the Crystal Cloud clan. We’ve never even heard of this clan before! How could they possibly offer the treasure to help us? Besides, the natives here can’t wait to kill those of us who have intruded their place, how could they possibly help us!”

Selena’s brows puckered together, losing her spirit.

“Don’t worry, my dear. As long as there is a way, there’s hope. And we should work hard for it!”

Jack held her hand and said to her, his tone serious.

“Alright. Let’s see what else is in the bald man’ s martial ring!”

Selena bobbed her head, only then she pointed at the martial ring and reminded Jack.

Jack immediately searched through the ring again. “Wow! There’s quite a few spirited stones and spirited grasses in his martial ring. There are many second-grade spirited grasses and several third-grade spirited grasses. Unfortunately, there’s no martial or cultivation technique to help us break through to the ultimate god realm. Sigh. I wonder how these people broke through to the ultimate god realm!”

He then took out another martial ring and showed it to Nash and Selena before saying, “ This martial ring belongs to another person and he’s from the Bloodshed clan as well, just like this bald man. He tried to violate the sacred lady from the Supreme Clarity Sect, but I killed him in the end. I feel like his martial level should be a little lower than this bald man‘s!”

Jack rummaged through that person's martial ring as he explained to the other two. "Wow. Not bad at all! He kept ten or so third-grade spirited grasses in his ring, moreover, some of them are third-grade premium spirited grasses! Tsk tsk. These premium grasses can't be found outside! Wait! There's actually a fourth-grade elementary spirited grass!"

"What? Fourth-grade elementary spirited grass?!"

Nash gasped at the finding, and soon his face was overwritten by excitement and joy. "Since these two fellas were able to break through to the ultimate god realm, it also means that we have come to the right place, and we have a high chance to break through too! Also, the bald man mentioned that he was sent to guard this remote place, which means, in this space of theirs, the Chi energy is considered low and less dense than their other spaces. For a remote place like this, the Chi energy is already that rich and dense, I can't imagine how rich are the other places!"

"Let's go. We should leave first. I'm worried that the corpses here will attract the monster beasts of this forest. We don't know what kind of monster beasts there are in this forest. As for these third-grade spirited grasses, I can use them to craft some third-grade pills."

Jack put on a gentle smile and walked toward the front. "Melody is still waiting for me inside that cave. Since this is a remote place and the two people guarding it were already killed by me, the Bloodshed clan won't find out about this so soon. What we need to do is to find a way to break through to the ultimate god realm as soon as possible!"

Nash nodded and followed behind Jack, "I truly didn't expect that the people from the Hall of Divine Royal and the Cloud Sky Sect would actually tail behind us and sneak into this place. These two powerhouses are our enemies! But fortunately, that bald man killed the head of the Hall of Divine Royal, it's a good thing. Sigh! The only bad thing is that the old man, Joel Collins, managed to escape!"

"There's nothing we can do with Joel. It's hard for you to go after him, and I was fighting with that bald guy. So, we had to let this old man slip away."

Chapter 1647

Jack smiled helplessly; he turned to face Selena and then said, “We have to find a way to remove the curse on Selena as soon as possible. I hope a year’s time is enough for us. We’re practically racing against time right now!”

“Dear, don’t put too much pressure on yourself. Try your best, and even if you can’t make it, I won’t blame you at all. Perhaps, it’s my fate!”

Selena bit her rosy, pink lower lip and said to Jack in a comforting voice.

“Fate? I’m not gonna resign myself to fate! Moreover, this bald man did this to you and I certainly won’t let this matter go! When I grow stronger in the future, I’ll make the sh*tty Bloodshed clan pay the price!”

Jack bellowed with a furious tone, clenching his fist.

At this moment, in the cave, since Melody had consumed the healing pill given by Jack, her injury had recovered quite a bit. Although she was not completely healed, she could stand up and walk around

The healing effect of Jack’s healing pill was beyond her expectations. She did not expect that the healing effect would be this good.

“Sigh! He’s out for so long. Why isn’t he back yet? Did something bad happen to him? Oh no! If he dies, and the White family finds out that I sent him to fight the bald man, they will definitely hate me to death!”

The thought of sending such a powerful and talented fighter to their death due to her own selfish needs made Melody restless. She blamed herself for sending Jack to the bald

Man.

“No! I have to go out and take a look! What if Jack managed to kill the bald man but was also badly injured to the point that he couldn’t even stand up? I’m severely injured too, and I can’t fight yet, but I think I can still help to bring him here to recuperate!”

After pacing back and forth for a few minutes, Melody made a decision! Her eyes emitted a hint of determination.

However, just as she was about to exit the cave, a man’s voice rang into the cave from outside.“ Seriously? The Melody Lawson can’t even fight now? It looks like you’ re heavily wounded!”

Along with this masculine voice, a middle-aged man strode into the cave. “Well, well. I truly didn’t expect to see the sacred lady hiding in such a place to recuperate from her injuries. Tsk, tsk tsk. Who is it that could injure you, a person who is at the peak stage of True God Realm?»

“You’re one of the guardians of the Flying Eagle Sect?”

Melody stared at the middle-aged man in front of her and could not help but furrow. Judging from the token displayed on the middle-aged man’s waist, he was someone from the Flying Eagle Sect.

Besides, from the look of his clothes, it was obvious that he was not an ordinary disciple in the Flying Eagle Sect. If she remembered correctly, he should be one of the patronums.

“Oh, hahaha! Wow. I’m amazed by your memory! That’s right! I’m the head patronum of the Flying Eagle Sect. And my martial level is not high, just around the intermediate level of True God Realm!”

The other party snickered and continued, “The Melody Lawson , you’re said to be the best-looking woman in the Divinity Pavilion. But why wear a veil all the time? It’s such a waste! Well! We’re fated to meet each other here; don’t you think so? So, why don’t you let me take a look at your face?”

Chapter 1648

The head patronum of the Flying Eagle Sect spoke, and he was about to reach out to remove Melody's veil.

Melody was startled at his behavior. She immediately veered a few steps aside, dodging the other party's dirty hand, and yelled angrily, "How dare you! I'm the Saintess of the Supreme Clarity Sect and will be the sect master in the future. How dare a stinky patronum like you offend me! Don't you know that a Saintess can't unveil her veil until she becomes the sect master?"

"Hehehe! Of course, I know! And I know that if the veil is removed before you become the sect master, you'll have to kill the other party. Oh right! Being the sacred lady in your sect means you can't enjoy any romantic relationship at all for the rest of your life, right?"

The middle-aged man laughed sinisterly. He flickered and, in a flash, he appeared at the entrance of the cave, blocking it. "But, I'm gonna look at your divine face' today no matter what! I wanna see what the Saintess of the Supreme Clarity Sect looks like!"

"You dare?"

Rage flowed through Melody like lava as she looked at the evil grin on the other party's face; she gritted her teeth and clenched her fists, staring at the middle-aged man angrily.

"Haha, why not? This is not Daxia anymore! After entering this place, nobody knows how to get out anymore. Besides, everyone is so scattered and none is with you. Do you think you're still the high and almighty Saintess of the Supreme Clarity Sect? The situation in this martial world has already long changed! Nobody knows who's gonna reach the ultimate god realm first!"

"Hehe, besides, you can't even use your Chi energy now, right? Even if I kill you right here right now, nobody will know! And you don't even have the slightest ability to counter me! So, what exactly gives you the courage to talk arrogantly in front of me right now? C'mon, don't be shy, let me see your 'divine face?!"

His eyes were full of greed and evil excitement. With a flicker, the middle-aged man charged toward Melody.

However, just at this time, a silhouette flashed over and appeared in front of Melody. A powerful punch was blasted on the defenseless middle-aged man, sending him a few meters backward.

Bang!

A dull thud rang out, and in the next second, the middle-aged man actually smashed heavily on top of the stone wall of the distant cave.

A mouthful of blood spurted out from the man and his face instantly blanched. He then plopped heavily onto the ground and spewed out another mouthful of blood again.

“Young-Young Master Jack!”

After the middle-aged man finally registered that the punch was from Jack, he was so scared that his voice was edged with fear. He knew that the man before him was terrifyingly powerful. Even twenty of him would not be able to defeat him.

“I didn’t know that the Flying Eagle Sect is rearing such a brute!”

Jack’s face was icy-cold, and his eyes were filled with killing intent.

“Thank God! Jack, I thought you were dead! I’ m so glad that you came back!”

Melody, who initially thought that she would die in that b*stard’s hand, burst with joy when she saw

that the figure that came to her rescue was Jack. She almost jumped into his embrace out of happiness.

However, when she thought of her status and identity, she ceased her action and smiled shyly at Jack instead.

“Don’t worry. I won’t die. I’ve killed that guy!”

Jack returned a faint smile to Melody, then he turned to the middle-aged man from the Flying Eagle Sect.

“Young Master Jack, it’s a misunderstanding! I …I’m not a pervert! I…I just want to see…see what the Saintess looks like!”

The middle-aged man finally climbed onto his feet as he stammered in pain and explained.“ After all, the Saintess has been wearing a veil! And many people are curious about her look, not only me! I was being reckless and impulsive. I just wanted to see how she looks like!”

“Humph! What a nice script you’ve written in such a short time! Do you think I don’t know what evil scheme you have in your mind? You, shameless sc*mbag, trying to take advantage of her when she’s heavily injured!”

Chapter 1649

Melody was so angry that she wheeled to Jack and demanded, “Young Master Jack, please do me a favor and kill this b*stard!”

At this moment, Nash and Selena entered the cave, walked over, and stood behind them.

“Master White, Selena, you guys are here too!”

Melody's eyes were filled with surprise when she saw the two enter into the cave.

"Yes. Thanks to Jack! He killed the bald man, otherwise, we won't stand a chance to live!"

Nash nodded. He then turned to the patronum of the Flying Eagle Sect and said, "We were outside the cave and overheard all the outrageous things you said to the Saintess of the Supreme Clarity Sect just now. Tsk tsk tsk. A patronum of the Flying Eagle Sect? One of the greatest Four Ancient Clans? Shameless!"

The patronum's face grew more and more unsightly, and the corners of his mouth twitched several times. With his fists tightened, he flickered and charged toward Nash, trying to rush out of the cave.

Nonetheless, his martial level was only at the middle stage of True God Realm; he was no match for Nash at all! Nash gave the patronum a smack on his chest, directly blasting him backward and smashing him onto the ground. The patronum was squirming involuntarily; he could not even stand up on his feet right now.

Jack pulled out his treasure sword and handed it to Melody who stood beside him. "His life is yours now!"

"Thanks!"

Melody nodded gratefully and approached the middle-aged man. She swung the sword in her grip, the middle-aged man stopped squirming, laying lifeless.

"Guys, let's all take a rest for a while. I took out the two men who were guarding this cave. We' ll set off after the Saintess is completely healed of her injury!"

Jack spoke his thoughts.

“Hmm… Since the entrance is here, then the others won’t be too far away from us. So, we can afford to rest and set off after, and we’ll still be able to catch up with them!”

Nash thought about it and then said.

“What’s on Selena’s face?”

Melody soon found out the black lump of flesh on Selena’s face. The black color has completely diffused into her facial skin and it looked like a birthmark. Compared to a moment before, the black spot had actually grown a little larger.

“Sigh! That bald man is from the Bloodshed Clan and many of them practice the art of curse

Jack breathed out a huge sigh and started to narrate the incident in detail to Melody. Another huge sigh was let out by Jack as he thought. “Sigh. It’s all my fault! Although the bald man was pretty much dead at that time, he was still at his last breath. I truly did not expect that under such a tough situation, he would use his last breath and cast a curse technique! If I had just killed him right after he fell onto the ground and make sure he was dead then such thing won’t happen at all!”

“Honey, please don’t blame yourself. After all, you didn’t know the Bloodshed clan would practice such an evil curse art!”

Selena, on the other hand, smiled bitterly. “Let’ s work together, shall-we? It’d be best if we can remove the curse, but if we can’t, it’s okay too. After all, my wish of seeing you and being by your side is granted. I’m happy and contented.”

“I’ll definitely try my very best to remove the curse!”

Jack tightened his teeth, and his eyes were filled with determination.

Seeing that the sky had turned dark, the group rested for the night. The next morning, Melody ‘s injuries were completely healed, so the four of them set off and walked out of the cave together.

Chapter 1650

The quartet soon left the cave and advanced forward.

“The bald man killed the master of the Hall of Divine Royal. It’s a good thing!”

Nash chuckled as he recalled the scene. “The only thing I regret was letting Joel, that old man, escape!” He said to the other three.

A bitter smile crept onto Jack’s face upon hearing Nash’s words. “Whether those two die or live, they’re not the biggest threat to us. The biggest threat to us right now is those who have the strength of the true god peak level and have entered this place! Because it means that their forces are already infiltrating this place! And if they break through to the ultimate god realm earlier than us, that’d be problematic!”

“Hehehe!”

Melody, however, covered her mouth with her hand and giggled. “They must not have thought that even if they break through to the ultimate god realm, they’d still be no match for you, right? After all, you killed two fighters of ultimate god-level yesterday. Furthermore, those two people were already in the ultimate god realm and must be very stable, yet they were killed by you. So, how could those who have just broken through the ultimate god realm be your opponent?”

“Well, that’s not wrong at all, but then I’m afraid that those people will make a move on our White family! Now that everyone is so scattered and some of them don’t even know where to go. It’s hard to gather everyone now. The situation would be better if I’m with them, but now…” Jack smiled helplessly.

Nash, who was on the side, said to Jack,“ Jack, in fact, you don’t have to worry about these things. Sure, it’s a good thing that you’re concerned about whether the White family will be in danger, and this is what you should feel as the young master of the White family. But it’s useless for you to think about that now. Rather, since everyone is so scattered and it’s an opportunity to train them and let them progress!”

Selena bobbed her head in agreement. “Yes, they can’t always be protected under your wings. They have to grow up someday. They have their own path to walk. And maybe the first to break through to the ultimate god realm would be our First or Second elder, who knows?”

“That’s true!”

Jack finally beams, free of worries. He then flew in the direction of a fighting sound coming from ahead.

After flying for a few minutes, Jack and the others spotted that around ten disciples of the Supreme Clarity Sect were surrounded by a group of people from the Cloud Sky Sect. Gloominess surged through the atmosphere among the female disciples and several of them were badly injured.

“Damn, they’re from the Cloud Sky Sect! Why are they here?”

A female disciple of the Supreme Clarity Sect, who was also a patronum, seethed. This female patronum had broken through to the late stage of True God Realm. Although the breakthrough was not long ago, to have such strength was considered excellent!

“They have more people than us! We only have a dozen or so with us but they have more than thirty people! Worse still, they have several fighters of true god late-stage and two of true god early stage. Ugh! We’re in trouble!”

Another female disciple of the Supreme Clarity Sect stressed sullenly; her face was unsightly and she further tightened the sword in her grip.

“Hahaha! Why can’t we be here? Our master is smart and wise. After knowing what you girls have gone through, he asked us to tail behind until we are here. Heh! Didn’t you, the female disciples of the Supreme Clarity Sect, always feel that you’re above the rest? High and almighty. Humph! And now you want to live? Sure! We can spare your lives with one condition!”

Among the male disciples of the Cloud Sky Sect, there was a male disciple whose martial level had already reached the late stage of True God Realm. He could not help but laugh sarcastically while eyeing at these delicious female disciples before him with an evil and playful look in his eyes.’

“Really? You are willing to spare us?”

A female disciple’s eyes immediately lit up when she heard him as if she finally saw a glimmer of hope.

“Of course, it’s for real! We’re the disciples of the Cloud Sky Sect, we will keep to our promises!”

That man nodded with an evil grin plastered on his face.

“Brother Moo, this is not a good idea! These women, all of them are so f*cking good-looking! It’d be such a waste to let them go! Are you sure?”

Chapter 1651

Next to Brother Moo, stood a male disciple from Cloud Sky Sect. His forehead tightened and seemed unhappy about Brother Moo’s suggestion of letting the ladies go.

“Spill it! What’re your terms?”

The patronum of the Supreme Clarity Sect asked the other party, biting her pinkish lips.

The man, who the others addressed as Brother Moo, snorted coldly before saying his terms, “It’s simple. Except for that fat b*tch, all of you ladies will take off your clothes and dance here in front of all of us! Then we will spare your lives, how about that?”

“Aha! Brother Moo, that’s an excellent idea! Hahaha! A good one! I, too want to witness what is hiding beneath these noble and pretentious ladies of the Supreme Clarity Sect. It would be fun to see them dance, haha!”

The male disciple from before laughed out loud upon hearing Brother Moo’s terms and conditions. Excitement and anticipation were burning in his eyes.

“Dream on, you b*stards! We, the disciples of the Supreme Clarity Sect, would rather die than do such a thing!”

The female patronum was so angry after hearing the terms that her face immediately turned white. The request from these donkeys were simply too much.

“We won’t do it! I have always known that the disciples of Cloud Sky Sect are shameless and without dignity, but I never thought that you would be this shameless!”

The female disciple, who beamed at the idea of the other party letting them go just now, shook with fury and disbelief. Initially, she thought that the other party would only ask for the martial resources that they had collected such as spirited stone or grass, then they would be spared. However, little they expect for the other party to ask them to do such a thing. If that was the condition, she would rather die!

“Hahaha! Well. If you don’t agree to our terns, you’ll not only die in a moment but also you will be played with before you die. So, tell me, are you sure you don’t want to accept our proposal?”

The man croaked deeply with an evil grin and a sinister yet confident look on his face.

“I-I don’t want to die! I accept your

Terms!”

The chubby female disciple raised her hand and surrendered herself after thinking about the suggestion.

Those male disciples of the Cloud Sky Sect almost spewed mouthfuls of blood when they saw that the voice belonged to the fat female disciple.

“F*ck off! You make me sick even when you’re with clothes on, not to mention you without the clothes. Eww, gross!”

Brother Moo shot the chubby disciple a deadly glare and tightened the sword in his hand. With a sarcastic tone, he said, “Humph! These cheap sluts don’t know what’s good for them. Since they are not willing to dance for us, then we’ll make them do it by force!”

“Ya! Make them do it!”

Another male disciple, who had long waited for the ladies to dance for him, stepped forward and rushed toward the women in a flash.

Swoosh!

However, just at this moment, a deadly sword aura flew from the side and halved the man, killing him alive.

“Initially, there were no grudges nor hatreds between the Supreme Clarity Sect and Cloud Sky Sect.

However, I declare that from today onward, Cloud Sky Sect will be the enemy of the Supreme Clarity Sect!”

Melody stared coldly ahead and announced in a heatless tone.

Chapter 1652

“Heh! What a snobbish attitude! Who are you to declare such…!!”

The leading male disciple of the Cloud Sky Sect-Brother Moo-clenched his teeth, turned around, and said in a huff.

However, he only finished half his sentence when he turned and saw who the speaker was. He took a sharp intake of breath and his eyes widened. The speaker was the Saintess of the Supreme Clarity Sect, and as the Saintess, she was indeed able to declare such a decision.

“Sacred lady… Oh my goodness! It’s our Sacred Lady Melody!”

Hopes bloomed among the female disciples of the Supreme Clarity Sect when they saw that the orator was the sacred lady of their sect. Their eyes reddenedat the scene before them; they felt like they were lucky survivors from a holocaust knowing their sacred lady had come to their rescue.

“Wait, Young Master White is here too! Thank God!”

Some of them noticed the person standing next to Melody, it was Jack. They were full of hope now. Furthermore, Jack and Melody seemed to have a pretty good relationship, and as long as Jack decided to help them, none of those b*stards from the Cloud Sky Sect would live through the day.

“Greetings, Young Master Jack and Sacred Lady Melody!”

The Cloud Sky Sect disciple chuckled awkwardly before putting on a smile on his face and said, “We we were just joking with your disciples just now. Don’t take our jokes to heart. Besides, since a long time ago, the Four Great Ancient Clans and the Eight Great Hidden Families have a tacit agreement, each going their own way without interfering with the other and no hatred should be harbored between the ancient clans and hidden families, right?”

“Oh, you were just joking with them?”

Melody sneered and peeked at the injuries on the female disciples before continuing, “If I had come a little later, they would have died. Do you really think no one could hear you when you spewed those shameless words?”

When the last word fell, Melody injected her Chi energy into the sword in her hand.

Buzz!

As the Chi energy flew into the sword, the sword shook violently, emitting a buzzing sound, and the trembling of the sword grew stronger and stronger.

“R-run!”

The Cloud Sky Sect disciples naturally knew how powerful Melody was. When they saw that Melody was ready to slit their throats, they were terrified and turned around to escape.

“There’s quite a few of them. Let me help you!

Seeing those guys trying to escape, Jack flew forward and swung his arm, chopping out two consecutive sword auras in the distance.

Boom boom boom!

With the two of them joining forces, those disciples of the Cloud Sky Sect were no match for them. In less than half a minute, they were all eliminated.

“Freaking strong! They’re invincible!”

“Right? Young Master Jack only swung his sword for two times and most of them are already killed!”

Some female disciples of the Supreme Clarity Sect looked at Jack admirably as though they were worshipping God.

When Melody saw that her people were worshipping Jack as if he was a powerful being who descended from heaven, she did not know whether to laugh or to cry. Normally, they would not behave like this, but now, each of them had turned into Jack’s huge fans; even worse, some of them were drooling over Jack and wanted to devour him as though Jack was a perfectly roasted juicy drumstick.

“Let’s go. We have to try to find our White family members as well as the people of the Supreme Clarity Sect!”

Jack frowned as he continued to fly forward with his people.

“A third-grade intermediate-level spirited grass!”

After flying for a short while, Jack spotted a third-grade intermediate-level spirited grass; he then flickered to the front of the grass and plucked it off. It was hard to find such treasure outside that piece of land, and he did not expect to be able to find such a treasure after roaming for only a few minutes.

Chapter 1653

Roar!

However, just as Jack was about to pluck that spirited grass, a horrifying flaming tiger sprinted out. With its jaw widely opened, it pounced onto Jack and spat a fireball out of its mouth toward Jack.

“Go to hell!”

While everyone was worrying for Jack, he abruptly stopped moving, then with a swift flicker, he appeared above the gigantic flaming tiger and smashed its head with his fist.

Boom!

A dull thud rang out, and the gigantic flaming tiger crashed heavily on the ground, forming a deep pit on the ground’s surface.

The cracks spread out of the deep pit and reached three meters in length, revealing the extremely powerful strength of Jack.

The colossal tiger struggled and squirmed for a few seconds in the deep pit, then laid lifelessly.

Swoosh!

After terminating the tiger, only then did Jack fly over and plucked the spirited grass.

“My goodness! His strike is so decisive and accurate! Moreover, I feel like this monster beast at the very least possessed the strength of true god peak level. Did he just finish it with a punch?”

Staring at Jack's back, Melody's eyes were in a trance.

A female disciple, on the other hand, could not help but frown, and pulled Melody to the side before saying, "Saintess Melody, I know it'll be safer for us to travel with Jack and his group. I also know that we have more people than he has, but…but we won't be able to attain any benefit if we follow him. That man is a second-grade alchemist, his spiritual power is incomparably strong, and his ability to sense and sniff out treasure is definitely more powerful than ours!"

Here, she paused before continuing, "It's indeed a lot safer traveling with him, but he will get his hands on the treasures faster before we could even have time to react. If this continues, we'll not be getting any benefits! Besides, it's not just spirited grass, what if there's some kind of treasure or martial technique out there that can help us break through to the ultimate god realm? And if there's only one of it, what happens then?"

Melody's forehead puckered together upon hearing the disciple's words. What she had said indeed made sense. Although Jack was kind to them and had saved their lives, he was still a member of the White family after all.

And if there was only one martial technique that allowed one to break through to the ultimate god realm, she did not think that Jack would let her have it when that time came.

"Let's do this!

Melody was silent for a moment, then she finally bobbed her head.

When Jack flew back to the crowd, Melody approached Jack, her movement awkward. "Young Master Jack, thank you for saving my life. Now that my injuries are completely healed, I think we should move separately. I'm going to find our sect master and the other disciples!"

Jack stood frozen for a moment, not fathoming why Melody would propose such an idea out of a

sudden. However, after looking at the spirited grass in his hand, realization dawned upon him.

He smiled at Melody before speaking, “All right. You are from the Supreme Clarity Sect after all. After you’ve met with your people, please let them know about the Bloodshed clan as well, so that everyone will be extra careful in this place. Those natives don’t seem to welcome outsiders like us!”

“Sure, thanks for reminding me! Then, we shall take our leave!”

Melody nodded. There was some reluctance in her eyes, but she still departed from the group with her people.

“Saintess Melody, Young Master Jack saved our lives and he doesn’t even mind that we’re weak. He’s not afraid of us being a burden to him, why don’t we join him? He has such high combat prowess; wouldn’t it be safer for us to travel with him?”

After some moment of thinking, several disciples of the Divinity Pavilion popped the question to Melody, their faces unhappy.

“It would indeed be safer for us to travel with him, but we’re from the Supreme Clarity Sect after all. We have our own path to travel. Besides, if we continue to travel with Jack and his group while finding a treasure or a method that allows people to break through to the ultimate god realm, it would be difficult. The peaceful and harmonious relationship between us and them will be shattered by that time.”

The disciple, who had called Melody aside and told her this theory, stood out and explained to the others before Melody could open her mouth.

Chapter 1654

Several female disciples were feeling sullen in their hearts, obviously desired to travel with their idol-Jack, but they also understood the situation; what Melody and the other disciple said made sense, after all, they were not from the same clan, so if they kept following Jack around, their sect master would definitely be unhappy about this.

“Why did they leave?”

Selena could not help but frown at Melody’s departure, her expression confused. “Wouldn’t it be safer for them to travel with us?”

Nonetheless, Jack returned Selena a bitter smile. “We are from different clans after all. We’re the White family and they belong to the Supreme Clarity Sect. Not to mention that people from the Four Great Ancient Clans have always looked down on hidden families like us. So, it’s humiliating for them to follow us and hide under our wings for protection. On top of that, if we travel together and find the treasure that leads to the ultimate god realm, we will fight each other to obtain the treasure. By that time, there’ll be no more peace and harmony between us!”

Selena finally grasped the underlying reason for their leaving. “Oh! So that’s it! They can’t compete with you in finding treasures and grabbing them. No wonder they left!”

“Hehe. Let’s go! We have to find our people. Also, it’d be inconvenient for us to travel with a group of women, plus, when we want to discuss something, we have to be aware of their presence. So it’s better for us to travel separately. They’re not the White after all!”

Nash put on a smile and expressed his thoughts.

After traveling in the sky for a while, Jack and the others found another third-grade premium spirited grass, and Jack remembered clearly from the ancient tome that the spirited grass was an auxiliary material needed for making a third-grade premium alchemical pill!

“This is great, this is so great! The Chi energy in this place is exceptionally rich and dense. So, third-grade spirited grass is common here but not outside. It’s almost impossible to find a third-grade spirited grass outside!

Jack’s spirits brightened; hope bloomed inside his eyes. “With sufficient spirited grasses and materials,

I'll have more chances to practice creating third-grade pills. Only with the opportunity of having enough material to keep creating the pills, will I have the possibility of success and be able to keep improving myself!" He tightened his fists and spoke.

Selena's forehead creased as she heard Jack's words. "But, Dear, now you're not able to refine a second-grade pill yet, and we need a fourth-grade pill to save my life. Not to mention about the treasure of the Crystal Cloud Clan; they're unlikely to hand it to us easily. Sigh! I feel…it's too difficult and a year is too short. Time flies."

"Second-grade pill is almost done, just that I have no time to refine it these few days. Don't worry, Dear. What we have to do now is to breakthrough to the ultimate god realm as early as possible, and then we'll collect more spirited grass and materials that can create pills. The more we gather these items, the better chance we have! Only in this way do we have hope to succeed!"

Jack smiled gently. He then led the people to continue flying forward.

"Master White, we finally found you! Oh my god, I'm so happy!"

After gliding in the air for a while, Jack and the group ran into several people, it was Kenneth, Titus, and some of the White family members.

"Great, great! It looks like the others are not far away from here! Let's continue to find our people! And there are sounds of fighting everywhere in this place, it looks like there are quite a few monsters here.

Also, people are starting to grab treasures!"

Nash bobbed his head in satisfaction as he said.

"Yes, there are too many treasures here. Just the presence of the third-grade spirited grass itself has made a lot of clans and families fighting each other for it. We ran into some people from the Divine King

Sect grabbing spirited grasses, but they were no match for us at all! Hahaha! And the third-grade intermediate spirited grass is ours in the end!”

Kenneth narrated the previous encounter with a warm chuckle.

Titus, who stood beside Kenneth, interrupted, with his forehead puckered. “Master White, I’m not sure why and how it happened, that the people of Cloud Sky Sect, Divinity Pavilion, and Gods and Kings Pavilion are here too. We met several of them on our way here, and of course, we killed them!

“Yup. It’s pretty complicated right now. Take that mountain over there as the center of this place, and I guess several different entrances are nearby here as well. Also, there’s a native clan called Bloodshed clan living here.” Nash bobbed his head as he spoke.

Chapter 1655

Nash then told the episodes that had happened to them to the White family members, sparing no details.

“What? How could these people of the Bloodshed Clan be so abominable? They dare to actually cast a curse on our Young Madam Selena!”

Rage pulsed through his vein and his fists tightened as Kenneth looked at the lump of black flesh on Selena’s face.

Selena was famous for her beauty, and the existence of such a big black spot on her face had practically destroyed her perfect face. It made everyone angry just thinking of it.

The most frustrating part was that there was only one year to remove this curse; if it was not removed, Selena would die. This newly learned information made them explode with rage.

“There’s nothing we can do right now. We don’t know how strong this Bloodshed Clan is; their weakest disciples are probably in the ultimate god realm, and they certainly have a few more men who are in the soul-penetrating realm. We don’t have the fighting ability to go against them right now even if we want to!”

A bitter smile crept onto Nash’s face as he spoke. The White family members then continued to search for spirited grass.

By the evening, Jack and the group had found several third-grade spirited grass. Although they had not found a fourth-grade one, they were satisfied with their findings. After all, these spirited grasses were all of the third-grade premium level!

Of course, during their search for the spirited grasses, they ran into the disciples of the Flying Eagle Sect; these disciples wanted to snatch the spirited grasses from the White family members, however, Jack spotted them and killed them within seconds. The White family had gradually grown stronger and bigger as they found several other family members.

At night, the group lit a bonfire outside a cave, while Jack stayed inside the cave to refine the second-grade premium pills.

In their scavenging journey-inside and outside, they had found many second grade spirited grass. So, Jack had more than enough material to refine the second grade premium pills.

After one failed refinement, Jack finally finished refining the second-grade premium pills at his second attempt. And right now, he was a second-grade premium advanced-level alchemist!

Jack made several more pills over the night and distributed them to several White family members who needed the pills. The next morning, the group left the cave and continued their adventure.

The crowd continued searching for treasures, and after gliding for a while, they found that there were more than a hundred people ahead flying toward them.

“It’s the Third Elder and the others! It’s them! Finally, we found them!”

Kenneth’s spirits were flying high that he could barely conceal his excitement upon seeing the Third Elders and the other members. He laughed out loud.

Similarly, when Lancelot spotted the crowd, he almost jumped for joy! He and his group quickly flew over to Jack and the others.

“Master White, it’s so great to finally reunite with you all!”

Lancelot looked at everyone, his eyes sparkled with excitement, and he was almost paralyzed with bliss.

Nevertheless, the excitement lasted for only a brief moment before his forehead knitted together. “Master White, there are truly abundant treasures in this forest! This forest must be a treasure-hunting hotspot, and I suspect that there is already someone who has broken through to the ultimate god realm!”

Chapter 1656

Awkward expression crawled over everyone’s faces upon hearing Lancelot’s words; the comers of their mouths twitched several times at the news. Someone had already broken through to the ultimate god realm that fast?

“Lancelot, is that true? Who is it? And what did that person use to break through? Was it some spirited fruit?”

Nash reacted first; he stepped forward and asked.

“Master White, it’s not some spirited fruit but a martial art technique! I heard that person is Master

Zachary! Just on the second day after he and his men entered this place, he found a martial art tome and acquired the technique in it. And very soon, he broke through to the ultimate god realm! He became arrogant and egotistical after breaking into the ultimate god realm. To get spirited grass and resources, he killed many people from the Ximenes and the Cabello family! Sigh! Especially the Lucas Family, they were very close with the Canmore family in the past!" Lancelot replied.

A young man chimed in, his tone fearful, "We saw it from afar, so we immediately wheeled around and flew away! Also, we found out one thing about the ultimate god realm! Once one broke into that realm, the Chi energy that he uses will carry a hint of gold color! And the attack power of this golden Chi energy is apparently several times stronger and more violent than our Chi energy!"

"Yup, we're aware of this!"

Nash bobbed head, showing that he was listening, and a bitter smile plastered on his face.

"You knew about this? How did you guys know? Did you guys meet some strong person with true god peak level who had also broken into the ultimate god level?"

Lancelot was startled at Nash's reaction. "Hold on. This…what happened to Young Madam Selena?" Only then did Lancelot notice the black spot on Selena's pretty face; he frowned and said immediately.

"Sigh! It's a long story!"

Nash had to start over again, narrating the incident to the rest of the White family members.

"Oh my, are there indigenous people here? Holy-moly! Those people should be the ones who came in a long time ago, right? Doesn't that also mean that Bloodsh*t Clan, whatsoever, might even have people with the power of soul-penetrating level?"

Lancelot was surprised after hearing it.

“Yup, they must have people of soul-penetrating levels, but not all of them have such powerful cultivation; it’s not possible that they are all of the ultimate god level. Those natives, who settled down here a long time ago, will have their offspring and their offspring were definitely not born with strengths of ultimate god level. The soul-penetrating level allows people to live up to 500 years, and I guess the earliest people who came in here are already long gone. Unless…unless there’s a higher cultivation level!”

Jack guessed after giving the matter some thoughts.

“You’re right. There may be many cultivators of grandmaster or martial artist level among the younger generations. If every one of them were of ultimate god level, then it’d be truly troublesome. It looks like those natives hate the outsiders. Luckily, Young Master Jack had killed two of them! Hehe. If it wasn’t for Young Master Jack’s powerful fighting prowess, those two natives would have returned to their clan and reported to their master on us! And we’d be in big trouble!”

Lancelot and the others were overwhelmed with emotion at this moment. This place, this forest, was indeed full of opportunities to break through to the ultimate god realm!

“Oh, right. Young Master Jack, we obtained a few third-grade spirited grass in the past two days. Please take a look and see if there are any suitable grasses for you to use for alchemy. If there is any, keep them all!”

Chapter 1657

Lancelot’s eyes suddenly lit up as some thoughts crossed through his mind. With a flip of his palm, he took out several third-grade spirited grass.

“Thank you!

After assessing the spirited grasses carefully, Jack picked two of them and kept them into his martial ring. “I’m a second grade advanced level alchemist, and I’ll proceed with the creation and refinement of third

-grade elementary level alchemy after a few days."

"Young Master Jack, you were able to kill two fighters of the first-grade ultimate god level, so this also implied that we won't have to fear for the Canmore family when we run into them?"

A young fighter of the White family asked

With excitement beaming in her eyes.

"It's hard to say. Everyone is in a race against time now. The breakthrough to the ultimate god realm itself may be more difficult, but once you make the breakthrough, your Chi energy will become richer and stronger. not to mention that there are a lot of third-grade spirited grasses here. So, if Master Zachary uses spirited grasses and trains himself desperately, he could break into the second or even third-grade ultimate god realm easily!"

Jack flashed a dry smile, and explained, "Besides, it's true that I killed those two people, but I killed them separately, and it was a sneak attack. So, according to my own analysis and estimation, if I were to run into individuals of the first-grade ultimate god realm, I might stand a chance to defeat them, but if the opponent were of second grade, I'm not too sure about the outcome. I might be the one who will be killed!"

Jack paused for a few seconds before continuing in a confident tone, "However, if I break into the ultimate god realm, they are nothing to me!"

Nash patted on Jack's shoulder; his face full of satisfaction. "Everyone is racing against time. Before this, those who were at the late stage of True God Realm did not have sufficient resources to train and reach the peak stage. Now, with abundant spirited grasses here and an environment full of Chi energy, it'd be easier for those people to train and cultivate. This is to say that they will be able to break through to the peak stage of True God Realm faster than before. And if they obtain the martial technique and break into the ultimate god realm, then I'm afraid that…

Speaking then, Nash chuckled aloud. “But, in my opinion, my son is the most talented and promising fighter! I have faith in you! Once you break into the first-grade ultimate god realm, your combat prowess could easily surpass anyone else, even those who are in the second-grade ultimate god realm!”

“Hmm. Let’s go. We don’t know when we’ll obtain the technique to break into the ultimate god realm.”

Jack breathed out a long sigh and said, “If.. if Master Zachary shared the technique to his people of the true god peak level and let them cultivate, then by that time the Canmore family will have more than one fighter of the ultimate god level! The moment we and the other prominent clans and families stepped into this piece of land, we are all destined to face the constant changes and shifts of overall combat strength among clans and families. The situation is ever changing, And it’s hard to conclude which clans and families will grow faster and be the strongest among all!”

Boom Bang Pow!

At this very moment, in the sky not far away from them, a terrifying battling sound pierced through the air, accompanied by a deafening roar of a monster beast.

Jack hopped into midair to take a look, and he was shocked at the sight. “Someone from the Cabello family is being chased by a monster beast!”

“We have to help that poor Cabello. The Cabello family has a good relationship with us. Besides, Young Mistress Cabello is close to Young Master Jack! Hehe!”

As soon as Lancelot heard Jack’s exclaim, he expressed his thoughts with a playful smirk on his face.

CHAPTER 1658 WIP

After Lancelot finished speaking, he flew up with a smile and came to a big tree.

After he clearly saw the huge ape monster in front of him, he couldn't help swallowing the saliva fiercely. Looking at this, the terrible breath of the monster was already comparable to the feeling of heaven and gave him a strong sense of oppression.

"No way! This monster is almost dozens of feet tall. This power and speed are too scary!"

Nash also flew up. After looking at it from a distance, his face was called a gloomy face. He immediately looked solemnly at Jack, who said, "Jack, this monster is too powerful. I'm afraid you may not be its opponent!"

Jack frowned and then said, "Even if I can't beat it, it should not be difficult for me to hold it. After a moment, you take the people of the Cabello family to go first. If you see the mountain far in front of the right, we can gather there!"

After thinking about it, Jack did a flash and flew out with a flying sword.

Although they are far apart, he has seen several familiar figures from the Cabello family in the distance. It is impossible for him to die!

"Be careful!"

Nash looked at Jack's back and felt a little worried.

"Run, everyone!"

Alejandro swept out with a sword in front of him. His gray face, his eyes were full of horrible blood, and he shouted at the Cabello people in front of him.

"Roar!"

The huge ape monster roared directly, and the sound was called a resounding from the world, and it immediately punched it below.

"Master, help me!"

Several people from the Cabello family, flying a little slowly, were directly hit by huge fists, exploded at once, turned into a piece of flesh and blood, and fell from the air.

"Boom! Boom!"

The attack of Alejandro and Daniella has fallen on the huge monster. However, the body of this monster is not only extremely tall, but also hard and similar, so that the attack of the two left only two small openings on the other side.

Two cuts, each 20cm long, such a wound, if it is replaced by a smaller monster, it must be extremely terrible.

However, for this huge monster comparable to heaven, it is nothing at all.

Elsewhere, there are many wounds, with blood penetrating from there little by little, and the pain from the body angered the monster in front of it and made it roar terribly again.

"Roar!"

After killing several Cabello family people with one punch, the huge monster suddenly squatted high and jumped directly into the sky nearly 100 feet high. Then he smacked his fist and hit Daniella below.

"No, Daniella , run!"

Seeing the monster go straight to Daniella, Alejandro was shocked and shouted immediately. He stopped, And terrible sword spirit went straight to the monster and cut it over, trying to attract the monster's attention and attract the monster to himself.

Unfortunately, after the sword gas fell on the giant ape, it was completely ignored by it. There was no dodge and carried it down. The huge fist was still straight to Daniella.

"No!"

Seeing the huge ape fist, it was getting closer and closer to Daniella. Alejandro's eyes turned red, and tears almost flowed down. Before that, dozens of Chu people had been killed by the giant ape. Now his daughter is going to die in the hands of this beast. Alejandro's heart It's really dripping blood.

"No!"

Daniella looked up and looked at the huge fist. Her eyes were full of fear, scaring her face.

"Jack, let's see you in the next life!"

CHAPTER 1659 WIP

At this moment, a figure in her mind appeared again. It was a handsome figure with a man's perseverance on her face. Although he usually looked serious, he always appeared at the most dangerous time and saved her.

Unfortunately, I will never see this figure again.

Just when the fist was getting closer and closer to her, only more than ten meters, Daniella saw a dark shadow flashing, and directly punched the opponent.

"Who is it? Isn't it to kill you to fight against this monster?"

Seeing this figure, Daniella's mind came to such an idea. The only thing she could be sure of was that her father was quite far away. Obviously, he didn't have time to rush to help, but she didn't know who the sudden person was.

The next second, Daniella actually found that this figure was so familiar. Soon her heart trembled slightly, because this figure was completely integrated with the figure she wanted to see the last side in her heart.

"Jack!"

Alejandro in the distance also felt like a dream. He rubbed his eyes, but Jack unexpectedly appeared at this time.

"Ah!"

Jack clenched his teeth and his fists surging. He looked less than the monster's fist.

"Go!"

Jack insisted that he felt this terrible pressure for the first time. This monster is comparable to the first grade of heaven, and its combat effectiveness must be comparable to the combat effectiveness of the second grade of human monks. Let's not talk about anything else, at least this strength must be

comparable to the physical strength of the second grade monk of human beings.

He turned back and shouted at Daniella, gritted his teeth, and his eyes were full of a kind of madness.

"You, be careful!"

Daniella knew that if she would stay, she would certainly only drag Jack down. She flew quickly to her father's side and looked back from time to time.

She and Alejandro were shocked. Jack, the guy, temporarily blocked the terrible punch of the great ape.

"Miss Three, run!"

There was an elder who flew quickly with Daniella, and finally came to Alejandro and others.

"Dad, what about Jack? He is definitely not an opponent alone!"

Daniella looked worried. Jack's appearance saved her, but she did not want Jack to die here to save her.

Alejandro gritted his teeth: "We must believe him. He lets us run away, just run!"

"But..."

Daniella looked at Jack. At this time, Jack was obviously about to be unable to hold on.

"Go, not that much, but!"

Alejandro gritted his teeth and shouted.

"It's a 'Don't!"

Daniella was very helpless, but she still turned around and reluctantly followed Alejandro and others to fly forward.

"Bang!"

After a while, Jack finally couldn't hold on. The other party's powerful force hit him to the ground and hit a deep pit.

CHAPTER 1660 WIP

"Master White, why are you here?"

After flying for a while, Alejandro and others finally met Nash and others.

Nash frowned and pointed to the mountain in the distance and said, "Let's go. I believe my son. He will definitely hold the monster. He said, let's wait for him at the foot of the mountain over there. As long as he is not dead, I believe he will catch up soon!"

"Unse father white, Jack is alone. I'm worried..."

Daniella bit the sexy red lips and frowned.

"Don't worry, we can't help much if we stay! Let's go!"

Nash smiled and said.

"Sister Selena, is this on your face?"

Just after flying forward for a while, Daniella found the black spots on Selena's face. She asked slightly in a little consternation. She could see that this is definitely not an ordinary black spot. If it is just an ordinary black spot, it is impossible to grow on the face of the practitioner. According to Jack's magical medicine, it is impossible. There is no way to solve it for Selena.

"Let's talk as we go!"

Selena smiled bitterly, and everyone flew into the woods and went straight to the direction of the mountain.

"Grandma's, a heavenly monster, really not simple! Too powerful!"

After Jack was bombarded on the ground, he almost didn't spit out a mouthful of blood.

He stood up, shook his numb wrist, and rushed straight up again.

"Roar!"

Jack's punch was followed, which made the already angry ape even more angry, and the violent atmosphere emitted from his body was also more obvious.

"Bang!"

Jack took another punch and was bombarded out by the ape again. After a hard time, he stabilized his figure.

"Good boy, since you have suffered so much injury, I might as well add some more to you!"

Jack turned his palm, carried the sword, injected the reiki into it, and then chopped it out with a sword in front of him.

"Wave Sword!"

With Jack's soft drink, a reiki flying sword appeared, and flew out to the huge ape, forming a sword dragon.

"Roar!"

When the giant ape saw such a terrible attack as Jack, his huge arms kept waving, and soon hit a flying sword into powder.

However, there are too many flying swords. There is still a part of the flying sword, which directly landed on the great ape, blowing up the openings on its body again.

However, these openings caused by Jack to the great ape are obviously much greater than the kind of damage caused by Alejandro and others before. The wounds look like they are shocking, and blood keeps flowing from there.

"Roar!"

CHAPTER 1661 WIP

The great ape roared and shook it directly. The aura on the palm converged into a light red aura light ball. After the light ball appeared, it flew straight to Jack.

"This beast still knows how to attack like this!"

Jack didn't dare to be careless at first glance, and another wave sword was stretched out. After a long time, it blocked the opponent's attack.

After blocking it, he looked at the distance again, and he was relieved. At least Alejandro and his people have now flown far away. It is not so easy for the great ape to catch up with him. As long as he persists for a while, Selena and others are safe.

Of course, the premise is that they will no longer meet more powerful monsters. In this forest, there are many treasures, but there seem to be many powerful monsters, comparable to Ultimate God Realm monsters, but I didn't expect that there were also them.

"There is no need to fight with the beasts. If I delay for a while, I can escape. This guy is bulky. Although the speed is not slow, I have a sword and just fly in the other direction. It is full of injuries. If it keeps bleeding, I'm afraid it won't continue to chase me after chasing him!"

Jack soon thought of something, and a smile on the corners of his mouth aroused a smug smile. Seeing the giant ape punched again, he directly flashed to the other side, and then a sword on the back of the great ape, leaving a wound again.

"Roar!"

The great ape roared, and the injured became more and more angry. He suddenly slapped Jack again with a backhand.

"Boom!"

Jack immediately stepped back and took another sword. A terrible sword spirit flew out, but it was patted by the great ape.

One person, one animal, fought for several minutes, and Jack also found the opportunity from time to time, leaving shocking wounds on the ape.

Jack could feel that the great ape seemed to be exhausted. Judging from its attack speed, it was obviously not as good as before. He believed that as long as he persisted for a period of time, he might consume the great ape.

However, at this time, it was obviously not easy. Although he was not hurt, the aura in his body was consumed a lot because of constant attacks. Similarly, he should be vigilant at all times. This feeling is not good. If you don't pay attention to it a little, he will be firmly formed by this ape. If so, that will be troublesome.

After all, his body is not comparable to this great ape.

It is estimated that the time is almost enough. Jack no longer continues to waste time here. He directly controls the flying sword and turns to Selena and others to escape in the opposite direction.

Seeing Jack want to leave, he was not a very big ape with great wisdom. He thought that Jack's reiki had almost been consumed. He had been injured. Naturally, he chased Jack without thinking about it.

"Boom!"

Jack kept flying in front of him. Behind him, a huge object kept beating the ground, and deep pits appear one by one. Many tall and incomparable trees were also directly broken by the waist. The great ape rushed across, destroying everything under his feet all the way, which seemed very violent.

However, Jack has the help of the best spirit weapon, and the speed is naturally fast. In addition, the blood flowed on the ape, the speed of the ape is getting slower and slower.

Finally, the great ape could only look at Jack, gradually opened the distance and disappeared in front of its eyes.

"Ha ha, kung fu, it's kung fu!"

"It's mine!"

Jack flew forward. When the reiki was almost recovered, he continued to look for treasure. Unexpectedly, he was just about to take a detour to Selena and chase him in the direction, but heard a fight coming from the front.

"How to do it?"

When Jack heard these two words, even his breath became a little short. Is there a skill that breaks through to Ultimate God Realm that can attract the crowd in front of him to compete?

CHAPTER 1662 WIP

The word "kung fu" made Jack's heart boil with blood. He flew along the voice and found that there were many masters here to grab it.

Among them, there are several elders of small families, in addition to several elders of the Lucas family and several elders of the Canmore family.

In the middle position, there is an ancient stone platform. Above the platform, there is a light blue light ball, in which there is an ancient book floating in it, obviously mostly a skill.

"It seems that this forest is indeed a good treasure hunt place, and it is really good!"

Jack is about to fly out in a flash.

However, at this time, in the other direction, the head of the Canmore family, rushed out of the woods next to him and went straight ahead.

"Ha ha, the skill is the skill, this skill should also be our Canmore family!"

head laughed, not fast enough.

"Don't think!"

There is an old man in the late stage of the Lucas family's realm. His cultivation is quite good. Seeing that he is very close to that skill, he did not expect that at this time, master would suddenly kill him.

He immediately turned around and was about to stop the other party.

"Looking for death?"

eyes were slightly condensed, with a little disdainful color. With a grip on his fist, the aura poured out, with a faint golden color.

"Boom!"

A strong man who was about to break through to the peak of the realm was blown out by Zhuge Master, hit the ground heavily, spurted blood out, and died.

"Sky-level cultivation!"

Many people exclaimed one by one when they saw this situation.

And master also knew that his combat effectiveness would scare everyone. Instead, he stopped without worry and put his back on his back and said, "Ha ha, you never thought that Zhuge Hongyun would be the first person to break through to heaven-level cultivation, right? However, I'm sorry, I want this skill. For our elders of the Canmore family, we can have another strong man with Ultimate God Realm!"

"It's a 'Don't!"

However, what Zhuge Hongyun never thought was that at this time, someone dared to rush out directly against the skill.

"Can't you find death?"

Seeing that the other party was getting closer and closer to the skill, Zhuge Hongyun was so angry that he immediately shouted softly and glared at the front.

However, Jack did not intend to stop. He flew directly to the photoball, grasped it hard, crushed it, and took the skills inside in his hand.

CHAPTER 1663 WIP

"Did, don't you hear that I am on theUltimate God Realm?"

Zhuge Hongyun gritted his teeth and felt that the guy in front of him was too disrehing.

"Jack?"

At this time, Jack also slowly turned around, and Zhuge Hongyun also recognized the people who came.

"Zhuge, this thing is a masterless thing. Now I have grabbed it, so that's mine!"

Jack smiled faintly and looked at Zhuge Hongyun in front of him and said.

"Ha ha, little brother Jack, I really didn't expect it, it's really you!"

At this time, another elder of the Canmore family, who was at the peak of the real world, laughed first: "When you are outside, your combat effectiveness is the highest, and everyone respects you. That's because you have to be respected. After all, even our masters, perhaps even the masters of the four ancient sects, are not your opponent so everyone listens to you!"

At this point, the old man paused and then sneered, "However, after we enter here, the situation is different. Especially since our master is now a strong man of Ultimate God Realm. Do you think we still need to give you face?"

After listening to this, Jack sneered in his heart and ignored the other party. Instead, he looked at Zhuge Hongyun: "Zhuge Master, what do you think? Are you elders right?

master showed his hands: "Isn't this an obvious fact? This world is so cruel. Whoever has a hard fist has the right to speak. Haha, let's not talk about anything else, Jack. Before that you said that our Canmore family did not go to Windy Island with you, and there was no bullshit agreement, so when you go to your White family, let's only three people in. Other people who have a good relationship with you can enter. Go to twenty people, in this regard, I have already seen you unhappy!"

master smiled coldly and continued, "However, what else can we say if we knew you were good at the beginning? But now, the times have changed. Zhuge Hongyun is lucky to be the first strong man to break through to the heavenly level of cultivation. No matter how powerful you are, you can't be my opponent. If you are funny, you'd better hand over your skills.

"Zhuge Jiazhu, are you too inhuman?"

There was an old man from the Lucas family who couldn't stand it any more. He couldn't help but say, "This time, you can come in here and break through to the Ultimate God Realm. Jack has made great contributions. If they hadn't found this place, they could have come in with those of our forces who had not received stone balls. In this case, do you have a chance to break through to the Ultimate God Realm?"

Another second-class family owner couldn't help but say: "Yes, Zhuge Master, you can enter here and break through the current cultivation. Master Jack has a lot of credit. If you don't appreciate it, just forget it. Isn't it good to say such a thing?"

"Ha ha, what's not so good about this?"

However, Zhuge Hongyun laughed: "I can enter here, which is also my life. I'm lucky, I'm lucky, can't I?"

At this point, he pointed directly to Jack and said, "Today, I will not only grab the skill, but also kill this boy. This boy's talent is amazing. If he gets the skill, it may not be a few days later, he can break through to the cultivation of heavenly grade. At that time, the cultivation of heavenly grade. I'm afraid it's hard for him to be his opponent!"

"Yes, yes, the master is so right. Grab the skills for us. At that time, more people in our Canmore family will break through to the Ultimate God Realm. Haha, in the future, our Canmore family will be the masters here. At that time, do you family's dare not listen to us?"

The old Zhuge parents at the peak of the real world laughed, his eyes were full of excitement, and obviously they had begun to look forward to a better future.

"It's really beautiful!"

Jack said with a cold smile, "Have you forgotten the strong people who entered here many years ago? Even if some people have died after many years, will their descendants practice in such an environment, will there be fewer strong people in heaven and strong people in the soul world? Still want to dominate here, dream!

CHAPTER 1664 WIP

Hearing this, Zhuge Hongyun's mouth immediately twitched a few times fiercely. Unexpectedly, he forgot about this matter and forgot about it. There are many predecessors. Now their descendants are also breeding here. I don't know how many forces there are.

However, he soon laughed again and said, "I don't care. Anyway, I am the first to break through the people we come in with. In the future, no matter what the ancient sect or your family forces, you must obey my words. I want to establish a big force!"

Jack smiled coldly: "The idea is very beautiful, and the reality is very boney. For example, if you can't get through this skill!"

While Jack spoke, his palm turned so much that he directly included the skill into the commandment.

Of course, he also glanced casually at it. The ancient book said that Ao Longjue sounded good, but he didn't know what the skills were, but it was definitely the skills that could break through to the heavenly level.

"Is it? I really didn't expect that in the face of me, a strong man with Ultimate God Realm, you didn't take the initiative to beg for mercy. In this case, I'm welcome!"

Zhuge Hongyun felt a little surprised. With a clench, the faint golden aura on it surged, and then he flashed to Jack's front of him and hit Jack angrily.

"Young Master Jack is powerful, but in the face of the strong cultivation of heavenly level, I'm afraid he is not the opponent. The aura of this Ultimate God Realm is obviously different, not only the color is a little different, but also the fluctuation of the aura is not the same. This seems to be only one step away, in fact, in fact, There is a big gap!"

There was an old man of the Zhou family who couldn't help sighing in his heart that if Master Jack chose to escape, he might have a chance to escape with him with the help of the best spiritual weapon.

However, this guy looked like this. Not only did he not choose to escape, but he actually wanted to fight with the other party. Isn't it looking for death?

In the face of the opponent's unreciated punch, Jack did not dare to be careless. Although he almost killed a monster comparable to heavenly grade before, Zhuge Hongyun in front of him is also a Ultimate God Realm. Once he is careless, he may kill himself.

Jack's fist was full of aura, and one punch was directly bombarded with the opponent.

"Boom!"

As the fists of the two people bombarded together, a terrible roar sounded directly, and a powerful

wave also emanated from the junction of their fists, and the surrounding fluctuations made the leaves on the ground fly with them.

"Well, what's the reason to bombard our master?

The elder of the Canmore family, after seeing this scene, hummed coldly and his face was full of complacency.

However, the next second, his smile completely solidified, because the scene of Jack being bombarded did not appear in his imagination. The person who was bombarded was Zhuge Hongyun, the owner of their Canmore family.

"No way!"

Not only him, but also the onlookers around him were also surprised. The boss with an open mouth almost petrified on the spot.

"The Zhuge master of Tianyipin was actually blown away?"

Someone swallowed the saliva for a long time before he said such a word in a trembling voice.

"Impossible!"

CHAPTER 1665 WIP

master flew out ten feet backwards, which barely stabilized his figure, and his heart surged into waves. He looked at Jack incredulously. He thought that he had broken through to the Ultimate God Realm, and Jack would definitely not be able to beat him. However, the person who was blown up was himself.

Jack looked at his fists, but his eyes were a little more surprised: "It seems that your combat effectiveness, which has just broken through, is really not good. It's really not comparable to the monster of that grade! It's a little far!"

"Ye, Master Jack, what do you mean? Have you fought with the monster of Ultimate God Realm before?

The old man of the Lucas family beside him was once again surprised by Jack's words. He was a monster with extremely powerful physical strength, and his ability to resist attacks was far from comparable to human beings.

I'm afraid that a monster with a celestial level and one product can be subdued by several human monks.

"If I don't think it's troublesome, I'll kill the monster!"

Jack looked at the other party and answered truthfully. The expression was called a plain one.

However, his plain sentence shocked everyone present again. Jack actually said, "It was troublesome, so did he let the monster go?" This breath is too big.

"Impossible! Boy, you must be lying!"

Zhuge Hongyun immediately clenched his fist and glared at Jack and said, "Huh, bastard, do you think I will be afraid of you and let you go? Dream, I just underestimated you. You don't know at all that if we are strong in Ultimate God Realm, the aura in our bodies, if displayed, is not small for the improvement of martial arts combat effectiveness!"

Zhuge Hongyun said, and directly took out a sword, which was actually the best spiritual weapon.

"The best spirit weapon?"

Jack's eyes lit slightly when he saw it.

"Ha ha, boy, do you think you are the only one? This best spirit weapon, I got in this forest, may be much better than the one in your hand. Well, with this treasure and my current cultivation, I don't believe it. I can't kill you!"

Zhuge Hongyun smiled, and he was obviously more sure of holding the best spirit weapon.

"Your sword is good, but it seems that it is relatively small, and it is obviously suitable for women to use?"

Jack couldn't help laughing.

Zhuge Hongyun's mouth twitched slightly. This treasure is indeed suitable for women and obviously for women. However, of all his weapons now, the highest level is the best spirit weapon that he only got yesterday.

He gritted his teeth and pointed his sword at Jack: "Well, this sword is really not easy to use, but it can improve my combat effectiveness. I killed you later. The sword in your hand is naturally mine!" Haha, don't worry, I will use your sword to kill your White people, including your father and your women!"

Jack also sneered: "I'm afraid you don't have that opportunity. The sword in your hand is quite suitable for my wife. If such a gift is given to my wife, I believe she will like it!"

Jack said, injecting reiki into the sword in his hand, and the sword made a soft sound of sword, and Jack's somewhat obscure momentum was also climbing up little by little. For Zhuge Hongyun's ungrateful guy, he would never be soft.

CHAPTER 1666 WIP

"Ha ha, you still want to grab the sword in my hand?"

After Zhuge Hongyun listened, he was listening to a big joke and quickly injected the reiki into the sword. One sword was cut at Jack in front of him: "Flying dragon cut!"

With Zhuge Hongyun's soft drink, in front of him, a large sword spirit flying dragon soon appeared.

After the appearance of the flying dragon, it actually carried a faint golden color, giving people a sense of hegemony.

"Ha ha, boy, just wait to die. This is our master's most powerful move. Coupled with this time, his cultivation and the increase of this sword, humph, see if you are not unloaded?"

The elder of the Canmore family laughed again, his eyes were full of madness.

"Wave Sword!"

Jack smiled coldly and also injected reiki into the sword and cut it out in front of him.

"It's a 'Don't!"

A reiki sword with a handle appeared and rushed out in front of him, like a terrible sword dragon. From a distance, it looked like two sword dragons impacting together, to divide them into height and bottom.

"Boom!"

A terrible roar sounded. Unexpectedly, Zhuge Hongyun's attack, whose cultivation had reached the top grade of heaven, was only a few seconds deadlocked in front of Jack's attack, and gradually defeated by Jack's attack, and then completely defeated.

"No, it's impossible. Is my attack not as good as his attack?"

Looking at his sword-spirited dragon being defeated little by little, Zhuge Hongyun shook his head one after another, his face was full of incredible color, and he could not believe it at all. After breaking through, he was still not Jack's opponent after the help of an excellent spiritual weapon.

"Boom!"

The terrible roar continued to sound, and Zhuge Hongyun's sword spirit flying dragon was finally defeated by Jack's attack, turned into powder. Jack's attack was still one-third of the flying sword left. He rushed straight to him and had already reached his face in a blink of an eye.

Seeing the flying sword coming straight, Zhuge Hongyun was scared and stood on his head. Seeing that he had no time to perform martial arts again, he could only gritt his teeth and quickly condensed a thin reiki light mask outside his body.

After the reiki mask was condensed, Zhuge Hongyun's heart was also relieved.

He believes that with his own reiki mask, it should not be a big problem to block Jack's next attack. After all, the reiki he has cast now is different from the previous reiki, but it is more or less gold, so that the mask on his body now looks like a kind of Light golden yellow.

"Boom!"

Just after his reiki mask was condensed, the terrible attack fell on his mask and made a terrible roar.

"Click!"

The first flying sword was resisted. However, Jack's second flying sword fell directly in the same position and directly broke it. A crack appeared, which spread constantly and finally dissipated.

"No!"

Zhuge Hongyun's eyes were big. He never thought that after Jack launched an attack, after such a long distance, he could easily control the flying sword so that the flying sword could attack at the same point. This can only show that Jack's spirit is really too powerful, at least harder than him. Too much harm.

"Boom!"

A flying sword with a handle fell directly on Zhuge Hongyun's body, and he flew out backwards.

CHAPTER 1667 WIP

Zhuge Hongyun kept spitting blood in his mouth. Finally, on his chest, he was directly bombarded out of a blood hole and hit the ground. His eyes were still filled with fear before he died. He lay there, but he did not move.

"No way, Zhuge Hongyun was actually killed?"

"Yes, looking at this, Master Jack did not lie before. He really has the ability to skip the level to kill the enemy. Moreover, he can actually kill the strong man of heaven and grade at the peak of his real real

world!"

The people around them were shocked one by one. This scene was unexpected by them.

"Gul!"

Several people of the Canmore family looked at each other one by one and swallowed the saliva fiercely.

And the elder of the Canmore family before, who also thought of something first, turned around and went straight ahead to escape.

He is not stupid. With what he said before, I'm afraid Jack will not let him go.

"It's a 'Don't!"

However, a sword spirit caught up directly, and the speed was so fast that he was killed in an instant.

In addition, the Canmore family members also failed to escape, and were directly killed by Jack.

The other family members turned pale with fear, because they didn't know whether Jack would continue to attack them. After all, everyone has been in for two days, and they got some three kinds of spirit grass or something more or less. In case Jack wanted to kill them and rob the treasure on him, then I'm afraid none of the people here can escape.

"Ye, Master Jack, can we go?"

There was an old man of the Lucas family, who had been helping Jack speak before, and finally

summoned up his courage and asked Jack softly.

Jack looked at each other's party and nodded gently: "You go!"

"Thank you, Master Jack!"

The people around them, one by one, breathed a sigh of relief and quickly prepared to fly forward.

"Wait!"

However, as soon as they flew not far, they heard Jack's voice again.

The people who had just flown out not far away took a breath one by one, scaring their backs to get a little cold. Could it be Jack that he could not go back on his word so soon?

"Ye, Master Jack, what else can I do with that?"

Everyone looked back at Jack in a little fear. As long as Jack did not kill them, at worst, he would hand over the three pieces of spiritual grass he got. Almost at this time, everyone thought so in their hearts.

Jack smiled and reminded everyone: "By the way, I also said before, in the world we came in, there are strong people who came in before, their descendants, etc. They are considered indigenous people here now. There are many strong people, and even sent two people to guard the entrance here, but no one knows what's the reason. The people we came in did not appear at the entrance. I guess it was caused by the formation time being too long. Everyone was just separated. But those people are not friendly to us. When you meet your masters and yours, you must tell them, be careful!

Speaking of which, Jack paused and then continued to say, "However, those two people were killed by me. Now this forest is basically safe. Everyone try to find resources and improve their cultivation!"

"Thank you, Master Jack, for reminding me!"

After listening to it, everyone was relieved one by one. Originally, they thought Jack regretted it, but unexpectedly reminded them kindly, which made many people's hearts, and their manners, have to look up at Jack again.

Jack smiled and then flew down to get his own trophy.

CHAPTER 1668 WIP

"There are really three kinds of spirit grass in Zhuge Hongyun and Najie!"

Jack brought all the treasures in the other party's Najie. After he brought Zhuge Hongyun's Najie, the harvest actually showed a satisfied smile on his face.

It seems that after Zhuge Hongyun became a strong man of Ultimate God Realm, he was afraid that he robbed many other people's things, but he did not expect that he would die under Jack in the end, but instead, Jack got a lot of benefits.

"Go, there is a skill. They went to find the rhyme of poetry!"

What makes Jack most excited is naturally that he can break through the heavenly level of cultivation. Zhuge Hongyun's skill can be completely given to Nash and them to practice. In addition to this set, he also has a set of skills in his hand, which can be called perfect.

Nash and others finally came to the foot of the mountain the next morning, and also met a lot of spiritual grass along the way. Fortunately, the monsters they met were not particularly powerful. In addition, with the help of Alejandro and others from the Cabello family, they came here very safely.

But along the way, Daniella and Alejandro and others were all very worried. After all, the monster's body was too strong and very anti-ant.

"This mountain is too big. Waiting at the foot of the mountain, and it's also very wide. If we wait here, can he find us? Besides, how many days will it take?"

After a while, a man from the Cabello family couldn't help asking, "In case, in case Jack was killed by the monster, we don't know that it's impossible to wait here all the time, right?"

Hearing this, Daniella was so angry that she stared at the other party fiercely: "What are you talking about? Jack is not going to die. Even if he can't kill the monster, can't he escape?

The man immediately smiled bitterly and said, "Miss Three, don't be angry. I'm just saying that in case, in case, Master Jack was in danger to save us. Naturally, I don't want him to make any mistakes!"

"It must be all right. I said it would be fine, so it would definitely be fine!"

Daniella pouted and sat down under a big tree: "We'll wait here, at least five days!"

Alejandro and others are ashamed, five days, which is a little too long. After all, if Jack is alive, he can't have not caught up for so long.

"So, you are here!"

Unexpectedly, at this time, Jack stepped on the flying sword and finally found them.

"That's great. I knew it. You'll definitely be fine!"

Seeing Jack coming, Daniella immediately got up, smiling: "You fought against the monster to save me. If you die, I'm afraid I will feel guilty in my life!"

"Don't worry, the monster was almost consumed by me. I don't want to waste time. I just left."

Jack jumped off the flying sword, then put away the flying sword and said to everyone, "Guess, who did I meet later?"

"Who did you meet? It's not my sister, is it?

Daniella frowned and guessed.

"No, I met the old guy Zhuge Hongyun and killed him and several Canmore family members."

CHAPTER 1669 WIP

Jack shook his head and came to Selena. Then his palm turned over, took out the smaller sword, and handed it to Selena: "Wife, this sword is just for you, just suitable for women, or the best spirit weapon!"

"Is it?"

Selena's eyes lit up, happily took over the sword, and looked carefully: "It's really good-looking, or the best spirit weapon, husband, you're too awesome!"

Daniella, beside her, was vaguely envious when she saw the love of the couple. Although Helena broke up with Jack, many people know that they are not lovers.

But her relationship with Jack, but now no one knows about them, which makes her heart a little sour.

At this time, Jack took out a skill and handed it directly to Nash: "Dad, this skill I got from Zhuge Hongyun. I took a look. This skill can not only be cultivated to the heavenly nine products, but also to enter the soul world. Haha, you take it!"

"Mys!"

Hearing this, everyone took a breath of cold air. Unexpectedly, Jack got such a powerful skill.

However, think about it, Zhuge Hongyun can break through to the heavenly level of cultivation, naturally because of this skill, and Jack killed him. How can such treasures be unwanted?

"That's great. Let's copy two more copies later. The elders, the elders, the second elders and the third elders can all practice. If they can break through to the heavenly level of cultivation, it would be perfect. Our White family must walk ahead!"

Nash laughed and his eyes were full of hope.

"That's great. If I can break through to the heavenly level of cultivation, I will have a longevity of 200 years!"

After Ye Wu crazy listened, it was a happy one. Now he is in his seventies and has long been looking forward to such a day.

"I found that after Zhuge Hongyun broke through to the Ultimate God Realm, his whole person looked several years younger and in good spirit!"

At this time, Jack said with a smile, which made the people here more excited one by one.

Alejandro and others beside him, that's called an envy, opened their mouths, but were embarrassed to open their mouths.

Jack has seen through the other party's thoughts and smiled at Alejandro and said, "Master Cabello, when the time comes, I will give my father this skill. Come and copy it. After all, we are also friendly forces. Last time, thanks to your marrow washing psychic water, it was my father-in-law, mother-in-law and my mother who could successfully practice and become a practitioner!"

Hearing this, Alejandro's heart was ecstatic and immediately said, "How can this be good?" Well, thank you!"

"Ha ha, we can still trust the Lord Cabello family. We entered here together mainly for heavenly skills. I don't want our two families to grab them for the sake of skills or something. We have skills and practice together. Maybe we can help each other in the future. After all, we are not very clear about the specific situation in this!

Nash laughed and said to Alejandro.

"Yes, yes, yes, we must help each other!"

Alejandro nodded one after another. The people of the White family were actually willing to take out such treasures and share them, which made him grateful.

Jack looked at the sky and then said, "Let's go. For the safety of the next road, let's find a bigger cave first, hide in it and practice well for a period of time, and see if we can strive to break through to the sky-level cultivation as soon as possible!"

CHAPTER 1670 WIP

Jack and others found a more remote cave, let several people patrol outside and leave guard, and others hid in it, and several of their masters of the peak cultivation in the real real real realm began to prepare to try to break through to the heavenly level of cultivation.

Nash originally wanted to copy a copy of the skill to Jack, but unexpectedly, Jack still had one in his hand.

Jack sat down cross-legged and carefully looked at the skills in his hand.

In front of this skill, it is described very powerfully. As long as you practice this set of skills, you can make your body very powerful. You will nourish the body with reiki all the time, and even a reiki whirlpool will appear in your own body, so that the whirlpool will keep rotating, even if It is not practiced in the future. When sleeping, the whirlpool will also keep rotating, and a little bit of initiative helps the practitioners absorb the aura between heaven and earth.

However, the only drawback of this skill is that ordinary people really can't practice, and they need people with relatively strong mental power to practice, because when this small whirlpool is condensed, it is not something ordinary people can do for the control of spiritual power.

Because he couldn't wait to break through to the heavenly level of cultivation first, Jack did not look at the content behind this skill, but thinking that the skill was very powerful, he was ready to practice this skill.

As soon as his palm turned over, he directly took out a second-grade elixir, then swallowed it, closed his eyes, and according to what was said in the technique, he began to let the aura emitted by the elixir step by step, flow along a specific vein route, and pulled it to the center of Dantian little by little.

Because it is a new skill, which is completely different from the previous practice, Jack dares not be careless. When tractioning these auras, he is also very careful and afraid of making any mistakes.

The energy of the second high-grade elixir is obviously very pound. At the beginning, because Jack's

speed of traction of reiki was a little slow, the energy in his body made him feel a little uncomfortable and blushed.

"What's wrong with Jack? Will he have no problem with his skill?

Someone soon found Jack's face turned red, his face was solemn, and there were bean-sized sweat on his forehead and began to drip down.

"No way, he should practice my father. After all, Zhuge Hongyun has tried this skill before. It shows that this skill must be good to practice. I don't know whether it will be difficult to practice this skill he is practicing now. I heard that some powerful skills, although powerful, are also very complicated to practice, which is not something ordinary people can practice!"

After Daniella saw this scene, she couldn't help frowning and worrying.

Listening to Daniella, Selena also frowned slightly, and she was also worried about Jack. If something went wrong with this skill, she heard that if she was slightly injured or her cultivation would be regressive. In serious cases, I'm afraid she would go crazy and directly become insane. Son.

However, with the passage of time, Jack's face gradually improved, because he was becoming more and more familiar with the vein route, and the speed of traction of reiki was obviously several times faster than before.

Seeing Jack's face returned to normal, everyone's heart was slightly relieved.

Time flies, unconsciously, it has passed three days.

In Jack's Dantian, there is now a small whirlpool. However, the whirlpool seems to have some erratic, which makes Jack's heart worry, and he has to use mental force to assist the rotation of the whirlpool and keep its center of gravity.

Another day passed, and the whirlpool was a little bigger than before. Jack withdrew his mental strength little by little, and unexpectedly found that the whirlpool could still rotate independently, and the aura of the whirlpool unconsciously added a faint golden yellow.

”

Chapter 1661

The great ape roared and shook it directly. The aura on the palm converged into a light red aura light ball. After the light ball appeared, it flew straight to Jack.

"This beast still knows how to attack like this!"

Jack didn't dare to be careless at first glance, and another wave sword was stretched out. After a long time, it blocked the opponent's attack.

After blocking it, he looked at the distance again, and he was relieved. At least Alejandro and his people have now flown far away. It is not so easy for the great ape to catch up with him. As long as he persists for a while, Selena and others are safe.

Of course, the premise is that they will no longer meet more powerful monsters. In this forest, there are many treasures, but there seem to be many powerful monsters, comparable to Ultimate God Realm monsters, but I didn't expect that there were also them.

"There is no need to fight with the beasts. If I delay for a while, I can escape. This guy is bulky. Although the speed is not slow, I have a sword and just fly in the other direction. It is full of injuries. If it keeps bleeding, I'm afraid it won't continue to chase me after chasing him!"

Jack soon thought of something, and a smile on the corners of his mouth aroused a smug smile. Seeing the giant ape punched again, he directly flashed to the other side, and then a sword on the back of the great ape, leaving a wound again.

"Roar!"

The great ape roared, and the injured became more and more angry. He suddenly slapped Jack again with a backhand.

"Boom!"

Jack immediately stepped back and took another sword. A terrible sword spirit flew out, but it was patted by the great ape.

One person, one animal, fought for several minutes, and Jack also found the opportunity from time to time, leaving shocking wounds on the ape.

Jack could feel that the great ape seemed to be exhausted. Judging from its attack speed, it was obviously not as good as before. He believed that as long as he persisted for a period of time, he might consume the great ape.

However, at this time, it was obviously not easy. Although he was not hurt, the aura in his body was consumed a lot because of constant attacks. Similarly, he should be vigilant at all times. This feeling is not good. If you don't pay attention to it a little, he will be firmly formed by this ape. If so, that will be troublesome.

After all, his body is not comparable to this great ape.

It is estimated that the time is almost enough. Jack no longer continues to waste time here. He directly controls the flying sword and turns to Selena and others to escape in the opposite direction.

Seeing Jack want to leave, he was not a very big ape with great wisdom. He thought that Jack's reiki had almost been consumed. He had been injured. Naturally, he chased Jack without thinking about it.

"Boom!"

Jack kept flying in front of him. Behind him, a huge object kept beating the ground, and deep pits appeared one by one. Many tall and incomparable trees were also directly broken by the waist. The great ape rushed across, destroying everything under his feet all the way, which seemed very violent.

However, Jack has the help of the best spirit weapon, and the speed is naturally fast. In addition, the blood flowed on the ape, the speed of the ape is getting slower and slower.

Finally, the great ape could only look at Jack, gradually opened the distance and disappeared in front of its eyes.

"Ha ha, kung fu, it's kung fu!"

"It's mine!"

Jack flew forward. When the reiki was almost recovered, he continued to look for treasure. Unexpectedly, he was just about to take a detour to Selena and chase him in the direction, but heard a fight coming from the front.

"How to do it?"

When Jack heard these two words, even his breath became a little short. Is there a skill that breaks through to Ultimate God Realm that can attract the crowd in front of him to compete?

Chapter 1662

The word "kung fu" made Jack's heart boil with blood. He flew along the voice and found that there were many masters here to grab it.

Among them, there are several elders of small families, in addition to several elders of the Lucas family and several elders of the Canmore family.

In the middle position, there is an ancient stone platform. Above the platform, there is a light blue light ball, in which there is an ancient book floating in it, obviously mostly a skill.

"It seems that this forest is indeed a good treasure hunt place, and it is really good!"

Jack is about to fly out in a flash.

However, at this time, in the other direction, the head of the Canmore family, rushed out of the woods next to him and went straight ahead.

"Ha ha, the skill is the skill, this skill should also be our Canmore family!"

head laughed, not fast enough.

"Don't think!"

There is an old man in the late stage of the Lucas family's realm. His cultivation is quite good. Seeing that he is very close to that skill, he did not expect that at this time, master would suddenly kill him.

He immediately turned around and was about to stop the other party.

"Looking for death?"

eyes were slightly condensed, with a little disdainful color. With a grip on his fist, the aura poured out, with a faint golden color.

"Boom!"

A strong man who was about to break through to the peak of the realm was blown out by Zhuge Master, hit the ground heavily, spurted blood out, and died.

"Sky-level cultivation!"

Many people exclaimed one by one when they saw this situation.

And the master also knew that his combat effectiveness would scare everyone. Instead, he stopped without worry and put his back on his back and said, "Ha ha, you never thought that Victor Canmore would be the first person to break through to heaven-level cultivation, right? However, I'm sorry, I want this skill. For our elders of the Canmore family, we can have another strong man with Ultimate God Realm!"

"It's a 'Don't!"

However, what Victor never thought was that at this time, someone dared to rush out directly against the skill.

"Can't you find death?"

Seeing that the other party was getting closer and closer to the skill, Victor was so angry that he immediately shouted softly and glared at the front.

However, Jack did not intend to stop. He flew directly to the photoball, grasped it hard, crushed it, and took the skills inside in his hand.

Chapter 1663

"Did, don't you hear that I am on theUltimate God Realm?"

Victor gritted his teeth and felt that the guy in front of him was too disrehing.

"Jack?"

At this time, Jack also slowly turned around, and Victor also recognized the people who came.

"Zhuge, this thing is a masterless thing. Now I have grabbed it, so that's mine!"

Jack smiled faintly and looked at Victor in front of him and said.

"Ha ha, little brother Jack, I really didn't expect it, it's really you!"

At this time, another elder of the Canmore family, who was at the peak of the real world, laughed first: "When you are outside, your combat effectiveness is the highest, and everyone respects you. That's because you have to be respected. After all, even our masters, perhaps even the masters of the four ancient sects, are not your opponent so everyone listens to you!"

At this point, the old man paused and then sneered, "However, after we enter here, the situation is different. Especially since our master is now a strong man of Ultimate God Realm. Do you think we still need to give you face?"

After listening to this, Jack sneered in his heart and ignored the other party. Instead, he looked at Victor Canmore : "Zhuge Master, what do you think? Are you elders right?

The master showed his hands: "Isn't this an obvious fact? This world is so cruel. Whoever has a hard fist has the right to speak. Haha, let's not talk about anything else, Jack. Before that you said that our Canmore family did not go to Windy Island with you, and there was no bullshit agreement, so when you

go to your White family, let's only three people in. Other people who have a good relationship with you can enter. Go to twenty people, in this regard, I have already seen you unhappy!"

the master smiled coldly and continued, "However, what else can we say if we knew you were good at the beginning? But now, the times have changed. Victor is lucky to be the first strong man to break through to the heavenly level of cultivation. No matter how powerful you are, you can't be my opponent. If you are funny, you'd better hand over your skills.

"Victor Canmore, are you too inhuman?"

There was an old man from the Lucas family who couldn't stand it any more. He couldn't help but say, "This time, you can come in here and break through to the Ultimate God Realm. Jack has made great contributions. If they hadn't found this place, they could have come in with those of our forces who had not received stone balls. In this case, do you have a chance to break through to the Ultimate God Realm?"

Another second-class family owner couldn't help but say: "Yes, Zhuge Master, you can enter here and break through the current cultivation. Master Jack has a lot of credit. If you don't appreciate it, just forget it. Isn't it good to say such a thing?"

"Ha ha, what's not so good about this?"

However, Victor laughed: "I can enter here, which is also my life. I'm lucky, I'm lucky, can't I?"

At this point, he pointed directly to Jack and said, "Today, I will not only grab the skill, but also kill this boy. This boy's talent is amazing. If he gets the skill, it may not be a few days later, he can break through to the cultivation of heavenly grade. At that time, the cultivation of heavenly grade. I'm afraid it's hard for him to be his opponent!"

"Yes, yes, the master is so right. Grab the skills for us. At that time, more people in our Canmore family will break through to the Ultimate God Realm. Haha, in the future, our Canmore family will be the

masters here. At that time, do you family’s dare not listen to us?"

The old Victor’s parents at the peak of the real world laughed, their eyes were full of excitement, and obviously they had begun to look forward to a better future.

"It's really beautiful!"

Jack said with a cold smile, "Have you forgotten the strong people who entered here many years ago? Even if some people have died after many years, will their descendants practice in such an environment, will there be fewer strong people in heaven and strong people in the soul world? Still want to dominate here, dream!

Chapter 1664

Hearing this, Victor's mouth immediately twitched a few times fiercely. Unexpectedly, he forgot about this matter and forgot about it. There are many predecessors. Now their descendants are also breeding here. I don't know how many forces there are.

However, he soon laughed again and said, "I don't care. Anyway, I am the first to break through the people we come in with. In the future, no matter what the ancient sect or your family forces, you must obey my words. I want to establish a big force!"

Jack smiled coldly: "The idea is very beautiful, and the reality is very boney. For example, if you can't get through this skill!"

While Jack spoke, his palm turned so much that he directly included the skill into the commandment.

Of course, he also glanced casually at it. The ancient book said that Eternal Reiki skill sounded good, but he didn't know what the skills was, but it was definitely the skills that could break through to the heavenly level.

"Is it? I really didn't expect that in the face of me, a strong man with Ultimate God Realm, you didn't take the initiative to beg for mercy. In this case, I'm welcome!"

Victor felt a little surprised. With a clench, the faint golden aura on it surged, and then he flashed to Jack's front of him and hit Jack angrily.

"Young Master Jack is powerful, but in the face of the strong cultivation of heavenly level, I'm afraid he is not the opponent. The aura of this Ultimate God Realm is obviously different, not only the color is a little different, but also the fluctuation of the aura is not the same. This seems to be only one step away, in fact, in fact, There is a big gap!"

There was an old man of the Zhou family who couldn't help sighing in his heart that if Master Jack chose to escape, he might have a chance to escape with him with the help of the best spiritual weapon.

However, this guy looked like this. Not only did he not choose to escape, but he actually wanted to fight with the other party. Isn't it looking for death?

In the face of the opponent's unreciated punch, Jack did not dare to be careless. Although he almost killed a monster comparable to heavenly grade before, Victor in front of him is also a Ultimate God Realm. Once he is careless, he may kill himself.

Jack's fist was full of aura, and one punch was directly bombarded with the opponent.

"Boom!"

As the fists of the two people bombarded together, a terrible roar sounded directly, and a powerful wave also emanated from the junction of their fists, and the surrounding fluctuations made the leaves on the ground fly with them.

"Well, what's the reason to bombard our master?

The elder of the Canmore family, after seeing this scene, hummed coldly and his face was full of complacency.

However, the next second, his smile completely solidified, because the scene of Jack being bombarded did not appear in his imagination. The person who was bombarded was Victor, the owner of their Canmore family.

"No way!"

Not only him, but also the onlookers around him were also surprised. The boss with an open mouth almost petrified on the spot.

"The master of the Cannore family was actually blown away?"

Someone swallowed the saliva for a long time before he said such a word in a trembling voice.

"Impossible!"

Chapter 1665

Victor flew out ten feet backwards, which barely stabilized his figure, and his heart surged into waves. He looked at Jack incredulously. He thought that he had broken through to the Ultimate God Realm, and Jack would definitely not be able to beat him. However, the person who was blown up was himself.

Jack looked at his fists, but his eyes were a little more surprised: "It seems that your combat effectiveness, which has just broken through, is really not good. It's really not comparable to the monster of that grade! It's a little far!"

"Ye, Master Jack, what do you mean? Have you fought with the monster of Ultimate God Realm before?

The old man of the Lucas family beside him was once again surprised by Jack's words. He was a monster with extremely powerful physical strength, and his ability to resist attacks was far from comparable to human beings.

I'm afraid that a monster with a celestial level and one product can be subdued by several human monks.

"If I don't think it's troublesome, I'll kill the monster!"

Jack looked at the other party and answered truthfully. The expression was called a plain one.

However, his plain sentence shocked everyone present again. Jack actually said, "It was troublesome, so did he let the monster go?" This breath is too big.

"Impossible! Boy, you must be lying!"

Victor immediately clenched his fist and glared at Jack and said, "Huh, bastard, do you think I will be afraid of you and let you go? Dream, I just underestimated you. You don't know at all that if we are strong in Ultimate God Realm, the aura in our bodies, if displayed, is not small for the improvement of martial arts combat effectiveness!"

Victor said, and directly took out a sword, which was actually the best spiritual weapon.

"The best spirit weapon?"

Jack's eyes lit slightly when he saw it.

"Ha ha, boy, do you think you are the only one? This best spirit weapon, I got in this forest, may be much better than the one in your hand. Well, with this treasure and my current cultivation, I don't believe it. I can't kill you!"

Victor smiled, and he was obviously more sure of holding the best spirit weapon.

"Your sword is good, but it seems that it is relatively small, and it is obviously suitable for women to use?"

Jack couldn't help laughing.

Victor's mouth twitched slightly. This treasure is indeed suitable for women and obviously for women. However, of all his weapons now, the highest level is the best spirit weapon that he only got yesterday.

He gritted his teeth and pointed his sword at Jack: "Well, this sword is really not easy to use, but it can improve my combat effectiveness. I killed you later. The sword in your hand is naturally mine!" Haha, don't worry, I will use your sword to kill your White people, including your father and your women!"

Jack also sneered: "I'm afraid you don't have that opportunity. The sword in your hand is quite suitable for my wife. If such a gift is given to my wife, I believe she will like it!"

Jack said, injecting reiki into the sword in his hand, and the sword made a soft sound of sword, and Jack's somewhat obscure momentum was also climbing up little by little. For Victor Canmore 's ungrateful guy, he would never be soft.

Chapter 1666

"Ha ha, you still want to grab the sword in my hand?"

After Victor listened, it was like he was listening to a big joke and quickly injected the reiki into the sword. One sword was cut at Jack in front of him: "Flying dragon cut!"

With Victor's soft drink, in front of him, a large sword spirit flying dragon soon appeared.

After the appearance of the flying dragon, it actually carried a faint golden color, giving people a sense of hegemony.

"Ha ha, boy, just wait to die. This is our master's most powerful move. Coupled with this time, his cultivation and the increase of this sword, humph, see if you are not unloaded?"

The elder of the Canmore family laughed again, his eyes were full of madness.

"Wave Sword!"

Jack smiled coldly and also injected reiki into the sword and cut it out in front of him.

"It's a 'Don't!"

A reiki sword with a handle appeared and rushed out in front of him, like a terrible sword dragon. From a distance, it looked like two sword dragons impacting together, to divide them into height and bottom.

"Boom!"

A terrible roar sounded. Unexpectedly, Victor's attack, whose cultivation had reached the top grade of heaven, was only a few seconds deadlocked in front of Jack's attack, and gradually defeated by Jack's attack, and then completely defeated.

"No, it's impossible. Is my attack not as good as his attack?"

Looking at his sword-spirited dragon being defeated little by little, Victor shook his head one after another, his face was full of incredible color, and he could not believe it at all. After breaking through, he was still not Jack's opponent after the help of an excellent spiritual weapon.

"Boom!"

The terrible roar continued to sound, and Victor's sword spirit flying dragon was finally defeated by Jack's attack, turned into powder. Jack's attack was still one-third of the flying sword left. He rushed straight to him and had already reached his face in a blink of an eye.

Seeing the flying sword coming straight, Victor was scared and stood on his head. Seeing that he had no time to perform martial arts again, he could only gritt his teeth and quickly condensed a thin reiki light mask outside his body.

After the reiki mask was condensed, Victor's heart was also relieved.

He believes that with his own reiki mask, it should not be a big problem to block Jack's next attack. After all, the reiki he has cast now is different from the previous reiki, but it is more or less gold, so that the mask on his body now looks like a kind of Light golden yellow.

"Boom!"

Just after his reiki mask was condensed, the terrible attack fell on his mask and made a terrible roar.

"Click!"

The first flying sword was resisted. However, Jack's second flying sword fell directly in the same position and directly broke it. A crack appeared, which spread constantly and finally dissipated.

"No!"

Victor's eyes were big. He never thought that after Jack launched an attack, after such a long distance, he could easily control the flying sword so that the flying sword could attack at the same point. This can only show that Jack's spirit is really too powerful, at least harder than him. Too much harm.

"Boom!"

A flying sword with a handle fell directly on Victor's body, and he flew out backwards.

Chapter 1667

Victor kept spitting blood in his mouth. Finally, on his chest, he was directly bombarded out of a blood hole and hit the ground. His eyes were still filled with fear before he died. He lay there, but he did not move.

"No way, Victor Canmore was actually killed?"

"Yes, looking at this, Master Jack did not lie before. He really has the ability to skip the level to kill the enemy. Moreover, he can actually kill the strong man of heaven and grade at the peak of his real real world!"

The people around them were shocked one by one. This scene was unexpected by them.

"Gul!"

Several people of the Canmore family looked at each other one by one and swallowed the saliva fiercely.

And the elder of the Canmore family from before, who also thought of something first, turned around and went straight ahead to escape.

He is not stupid. With what he said before, I'm afraid Jack will not let him go.

"It's a 'Don't!"

However, a sword spirit caught up directly, and the speed was so fast that he was killed in an instant.

In addition, the Canmore family members also failed to escape, and were directly killed by Jack.

The other family members turned pale with fear, because they didn't know whether Jack would continue to attack them. After all, everyone has been in for two days, and they got some three kinds of spirit grass or something more or less. In case Jack wanted to kill them and rob the treasure on him, then I'm afraid none of the people here can escape.

"Ye, Master Jack, can we go?"

There was an old man of the Lucas family, who had been helping Jack speak before, and finally summoned up his courage and asked Jack softly.

Jack looked at each other's party and nodded gently: "You go!"

"Thank you, Master Jack!"

The people around them, one by one, breathed a sigh of relief and quickly prepared to fly forward.

"Wait!"

However, as soon as they flew not far, they heard Jack's voice again.

The people who had just flown out not far away took a breath one by one, scaring their backs to get a little cold. Could it be Jack that he could not go back on his word so soon?

"Ye, Master Jack, what else can I do with that?"

Everyone looked back at Jack in a little fear. As long as Jack did not kill them, at worst, he would hand over the three pieces of spiritual grass he got. Almost at this time, everyone thought so in their hearts.

Jack smiled and reminded everyone: "By the way, I also said before, in the world we came in, there are strong people who came in before, their descendants, etc. They are considered indigenous people here now. There are many strong people, and even sent two people to guard the entrance here, but no one knows what's the reason. The people we came in did not appear at the entrance. I guess it was caused by the formation time being too long. Everyone was just separated. But those people are not friendly to us. When you meet your masters and yours, you must tell them, be careful!

Speaking of which, Jack paused and then continued to say, "However, those two people were killed by me. Now this forest is basically safe. Everyone try to find resources and improve their cultivation!"

"Thank you, Master Jack, for reminding me!"

After listening to it, everyone was relieved one by one. Originally, they thought Jack regretted it, but unexpectedly reminded them kindly, which made many people's hearts, and their manners, have to look

up at Jack again.

Jack smiled and then flew down to get his own trophy.

Chapter 1668

"There are really three kinds of spirit grass in Victor’s Ring!"

Jack brought all the treasures in the other party's Ring. After he brought Victor's Ring, the harvest actually showed a satisfied smile on his face.

It seems that after Victor became a strong man of Ultimate God Realm, he was afraid that he robbed many other people's things, but he did not expect that he would die under Jack in the end, but instead, Jack got a lot of benefits.

"Go, there is a skill. They went to find the rhyme of poetry!"

What makes Jack most excited is naturally that he can break through the heavenly level of cultivation. Victor's skill can be completely given to Nash and them to practice. In addition to this set, he also has a set of skills in his hand, which can be called perfect.

Nash and others finally came to the foot of the mountain the next morning, and also met a lot of spiritual grass along the way. Fortunately, the monsters they met were not particularly powerful. In addition, with the help of Alejandro and others from the Cabello family, they came here very safely.

But along the way, Daniella and Alejandro and others were all very worried. After all, the monster's body was too strong and very anti-ant.

"This mountain is too big. Waiting at the foot of the mountain, and it's also very wide. If we wait here,

can he find us? Besides, how many days will it take?"

After a while, a man from the Cabello family couldn't help asking, "In case, in case Jack was killed by the monster, we don't know that it's impossible to wait here all the time, right?"

Hearing this, Daniella was so angry that she stared at the other party fiercely: "What are you talking about? Jack is not going to die. Even if he can't kill the monster, can't he escape?

The man immediately smiled bitterly and said, "Miss Three, don't be angry. I'm just saying that in case, in case, Master Jack was in danger to save us. Naturally, I don't want him to make any mistakes!"

"It must be all right. I said it would be fine, so it would definitely be fine!"

Daniella pouted and sat down under a big tree: "We'll wait here, at least five days!"

Alejandro and others are ashamed, five days, which is a little too long. After all, if Jack is alive, he can't have not caught up for so long.

"So, you are here!"

Unexpectedly, at this time, Jack stepped on the flying sword and finally found them.

"That's great. I knew it. You'll definitely be fine!"

Seeing Jack coming, Daniella immediately got up, smiling: "You fought against the monster to save me. If you die, I'm afraid I will feel guilty in my life!"

"Don't worry, the monster was almost consumed by me. I don't want to waste time. I just left."

Jack jumped off the flying sword, then put away the flying sword and said to everyone, "Guess, who did I meet later?"

"Who did you meet? It's not my sister, is it?

Daniella frowned and guessed.

"No, I met the old guy Victor and killed him and several Canmore family members."

Chapter 1669

Jack shook his head and came to Selena. Then his palm turned over, took out the smaller sword, and handed it to Selena: "Wife, this sword is just for you, just suitable for women, or the best spirit weapon!"

"Is it?"

Selena's eyes lit up, happily took over the sword, and looked carefully: "It's really good-looking, or the best spirit weapon, husband, you're too awesome!"

Daniella, beside her, was vaguely envious when she saw the love of the couple. Although Helena broke up with Jack, many people know that they are not lovers.

But her relationship with Jack, but now no one knows about them, which makes her heart a little sour.

At this time, Jack took out a skill and handed it directly to Nash: "Dad, this skill I got from Victor Canmore . I took a look. This skill can not only be cultivated to the heavenly nine products, but also to enter the soul world. Haha, you take it!"

"Mys!"

Hearing this, everyone took a breath of cold air. Unexpectedly, Jack got such a powerful skill.

However, think about it, Victor can break through to the heavenly level of cultivation, naturally because of this skill, and Jack killed him. How can such treasures be unwanted?

"That's great. Let's copy two more copies later. The elders, the elders, the second elders and the third elders can all practice. If they can break through to the heavenly level of cultivation, it would be perfect. Our White family must walk ahead!"

Nash laughed and his eyes were full of hope.

"That's great. If I can break through to the heavenly level of cultivation, I will have a longevity of 200 years!"

Kenneth went crazy after he listened, it was a happy moment. Now he is in his seventies and has long been looking forward to such a day.

"I found that after Victor broke through to the Ultimate God Realm, his whole person looked several years younger and in good spirits!"

At this time, Jack said with a smile, which made the people here more excited one by one.

Alejandro and others beside him, that's called an envy, opened their mouths, but were embarrassed to

open their mouths.

Jack has seen through the other party's thoughts and smiled at Alejandro and said, "Master Cabello, when the time comes, I will give my father this skill. Come and copy it. After all, we are also friendly forces. Last time, thanks to your marrow washing psychic water, it was my father-in-law, mother-in-law and my mother who could successfully practice and become a practitioner!"

Hearing this, Alejandro's heart was ecstatic and immediately said, "How can this be good?" Well, thank you!"

"Ha ha, we can still trust the Lord Cabello family. We entered here together mainly for heavenly skills. I don't want our two families to grab them for the sake of skills or something. We have skills and practice together. Maybe we can help each other in the future. After all, we are not very clear about the specific situation in this!

Nash laughed and said to Alejandro.

"Yes, yes, yes, we must help each other!"

Alejandro nodded one after another. The people of the White family were actually willing to take out such treasures and share them, which made him grateful.

Jack looked at the sky and then said, "Let's go. For the safety of the next road, let's find a bigger cave first, hide in it and practice well for a period of time, and see if we can strive to break through to the sky-level cultivation as soon as possible!"

Chapter 1670

Jack and others found a more remote cave, let several people patrol outside and leave guard, and others hid in it, and several of their masters of the peak cultivation in the real real real realm began to prepare

to try to break through to the heavenly level of cultivation.

Nash originally wanted to copy a copy of the skill to Jack, but unexpectedly, Jack still had one in his hand.

Jack sat down cross-legged and carefully looked at the skills in his hand.

In front of this skill, it is described very powerfully. As long as you practice this set of skills, you can make your body very powerful. You will nourish the body with reiki all the time, and even a reiki whirlpool will appear in your own body, so that the whirlpool will keep rotating, even if It is not practiced in the future. When sleeping, the whirlpool will also keep rotating, and a little bit of initiative helps the practitioners absorb the aura between heaven and earth.

However, the only drawback of this skill is that ordinary people really can't practice, and they need people with relatively strong mental power to practice, because when this small whirlpool is condensed, it is not something ordinary people can do for the control of spiritual power.

Because he couldn't wait to break through to the heavenly level of cultivation first, Jack did not look at the content behind this skill, but thinking that the skill was very powerful, he was ready to practice this skill.

As soon as his palm turned over, he directly took out a second-grade elixir, then swallowed it, closed his eyes, and according to what was said in the technique, he began to let the aura emitted by the elixir step by step, flow along a specific vein route, and pulled it to the center of Dantian little by little.

Because it is a new skill, which is completely different from the previous practice, Jack dares not be careless. When tractioning these auras, he is also very careful and afraid of making any mistakes.

The energy of the second high-grade elixir is obviously very strong. At the beginning, because Jack's speed of traction of reiki was a little slow, the energy in his body made him feel a little uncomfortable and blushed.

"What's wrong with Jack? Will he have no problem with his skill?

Someone soon found Jack's face turned red, his face was solemn, and there were bean-sized sweat on his forehead and began to drip down.

"No way, he should practice my father. After all, Victor Canmore has tried this skill before. It shows that this skill must be good to practice. I don't know whether it will be difficult to practice this skill he is practicing now. I heard that some powerful skills, although powerful, are also very complicated to practice, which is not something ordinary people can practice!"

After Daniella saw this scene, she couldn't help frowning and worrying.

Listening to Daniella, Selena also frowned slightly, and she was also worried about Jack. If something went wrong with this skill, she heard that if she was slightly injured or her cultivation would be regressive. In serious cases, I'm afraid she would go crazy and directly become insane. Son.

However, with the passage of time, Jack's face gradually improved, because he was becoming more and more familiar with the vein route, and the speed of traction of reiki was obviously several times faster than before.

Seeing Jack's face return to normal, everyone's heart was slightly relieved.

Time flies, unconsciously, it has passed three days.

In Jack's Dantian, there is now a small whirlpool. However, the whirlpool seems to have some erratic, which makes Jack's heart worry, and he has to use mental force to assist the rotation of the whirlpool and keep its center of gravity.

Another day passed, and the whirlpool was a little bigger than before. Jack withdrew his mental strength little by little, and unexpectedly found that the whirlpool could still rotate independently, and the aura

of the whirlpool unconsciously added a faint golden yellow.

Chapter 1671

Jack's mouth evokes a faint smile, and he finally succeeds.

Moreover, at the moment of this breakthrough, he seemed to have come to a dark world. Photospheres floated in front of him, like meteors, and disappeared thousands of miles in the blink of an eye.

However, the picture stayed for a second or two, and suddenly disappeared.

A powerful fluctuation emanated from Jack's body, making the surrounding space slightly swung.

This powerful fluctuation was collected back by Jack in an instant. If everyone hadn't felt the terrible momentum, I'm afraid they would have doubted whether this fluctuation had ever appeared.

At this time, Jack also opened his eyes and stood up slowly. He had a somewhat unusual temperament on his body, which seemed to give people a more ethereal feeling.

"It's successful. It must be successful. This is too fast. It's only four days before it's successful!"

Daniella almost jumped up when she saw the smile at the corners of Jack's mouth.

Jack smiled indifferently. He was very clear in his heart that the main reason was that this skill was indeed a little profound. If you want to practice, it is very complicated, and there are many veins that are needed. Otherwise, I would have succeeded long ago.

However, since this skill is so complicated, it can only show that this set of skills is very high and quite good.

"Husband, how's it going? Dad and several of them are still practicing. It seems that I'm afraid they will have at least a day or two!

Selena also came over and said with a gentle smile, "Luckily, this cave is relatively remote. No other person has broken in these two days, and no monster has found it here. Now that you have broken through, our hearts are relieved!"

Jack nodded: "Breakthrough, and finally break through to the cultivation of heaven-level products. The main reason is that this is a new skill, which is completely different from the previous skill. It's a little complicated. It took so long, otherwise, it should not take long!"

"Yes, this first time must take a lot of time, and it is estimated that the practice will be much better in the future!"

Selena laughed.

Unexpectedly, at this time, a terrible fluctuation in another direction spread out, and was quickly collected again.

Looking at the past in the direction of this fluctuation, Jack and others were happy. This time it was Nash who broke through.

"That's great, Dad. You are also a strong man of Ultimate God Realm now!"

Jack said excitedly.

Chapter 1672

Nash's fist shook his fist, and his body's sense of power soared several times in an instant, which made his heart also excited.

His mind moved, and immediately appeared some reiki on the palm of his hand. The reiki jumped, with a faint golden color on it. He was sure to be in the Ultimate God Realm, and his eyes were slightly red.

"Well, it's a breakthrough. This feeling is really cool. It feels like there is a tacit understanding between this world!"

Nash nodded and said again, "It's very strange that at the moment I just broke through, I seemed to have come to another world at once. In that world, there were photospheres passing by me, like meteors. In the blink of an eye, there was no trace! Maybe it's a breakthrough, and I have hallucinations!"

After listening to this, Jack took a breath of cold air, and his whole body was stunned and exclaimed, "Dad, you, you have also been to that space? When I broke through, I also saw the same picture as you. Later, I thought it was an illusion, and I thought it was the only one I met. Unexpectedly, you actually saw the same picture!

"No way? Have you seen such a picture?

After listening to Nash, he was really surprised by taking a breath of cold air.

He thought that only he had seen that moment, but he didn't expect that Jack also saw that moment, which made his heart wonder for an instant.

After a while, he frowned and said, "Is it that people who have broken through to Ultimate God Realm will enter that place? Will all let the soul enter that place?"

"This is not clear. Maybe so, otherwise, how can we both see the same picture?"

Jack frowned, looked at Alejandro and others who were trying to break through, and then said, "If they break through later, ask them and see how they are doing!"

After almost half an hour, Alejandro stood up with a smile. He looked very energetic. Like Nash, he seemed to look much younger all of a sudden.

"Dad, did you break through too? Great, you look younger than before!"

Daniella immediately ran over and looked excitedly at her father's Ultimate God Realm, which was what everyone dreamed of. Before, she tried her best to find the stone ball and the clue to break through to the Ultimate God Realm. Now, it is finally done.

This means that my father also has a longevity of more than 200 years. Now my father is only in his forties. Isn't it that as long as he is not lucky enough to be killed, there are at least more than 150 years of longevity left. There are so many longevity yuan left. As long as you work hard, you can break through to a more enviable entry. The soul is in place.

"Ha ha, it's a breakthrough, it's a breakthrough, grandma's, this level of cultivation is good, it feels completely different, it feels more tacit understanding with this world. I feel that now I can play the previous seven or eight me!

Alejandro laughed and was full of joy.

He soon arched his hand directly to Nash again, "Thank you, Master White, for your kindness, and shared copies of the skills with our Cabello family. Otherwise, I Alejandro still don't know if I have a

chance to break through to the Ultimate God Realm in my life!"

Chapter 1673

Nash smiled indifferently and waved, "The Lord of the Cabello family is welcome. Even if we don't give you this skill, I believe you will soon get the skill in the forest. Therefore, it should also be a matter of time to break through the Ultimate God Realm. It seems that this should be a treasure hunt place. There must be a lot of treasures in it, otherwise Jack would not have two skills in such a quick hand!"

"Ha ha, that's not necessarily true. It's still necessary to break through to Ultimate God Realm as early as possible, and be more secure. Otherwise, if you meet a monster comparable to Ultimate God Realm, as before, it really has no resistance. If you break through now, even if you can't beat it, you can drag the other party, at least you can fight!

Alejandro laughed. Unfortunately, other strong people who practiced the peak of the real real realm of the Cabello family did not see it. Otherwise, let them practice with it. Maybe now the Cabello family can have two, or even three strong people with one-class cultivation!

Nash and Jack looked at each other, and then asked Alejandro, "By the way, Master Cabello , when you broke through the heavenly level of cultivation, did you have a flash of eyes and felt that the whole soul had entered another space?"

"Another space? What space?"

To Jack and Nash's surprise, Alejandro looked at them confusedly. Obviously, he did not know what they were talking about.

Nash felt a moment in his heart, and then he asked the other party, "That is, like a black starry sky, surrounded by photospheres, flying like meteors. Such photospheres are large and small, and the color is different. They fly by in a flash, but in a flash, they disappear. That's it.

"Yes, my father, too, had such a feeling at the moment of breakthrough!"

Jack immediately asked, "We thought that everyone who broke through to Ultimate God Realm could see this scene. Didn't the Master of the Cabello family really see it?"

"No, I broke through like this!"

Alejandro looked puzzled and did not know what the situation was.

After a while, Kenneth, the elder of the White family, actually stood up with a smile: "Ha ha, that's great, breakthrough. I'm finally a strong man of heaven, the strong man of heaven, I finally achieved it!"

Looking at Kenneth's crazy excited appearance, everyone's faces showed a smile. They were all very clear that this kind of cultivation is more and more expected for the older people.

"Big elder, your gray hair is much less!"

Selena looked at the other party and indeed seemed to be much younger, so she said with a smile.

"Is it?"

Kenmeth immediately couldn't wait to take out a mirror. After looking carefully, he said, "Sure enough, he looks much younger and energetic. Although he is still a bad old man, he looks much better than before, and the appearance feels much greater!"

After saying that, he looked at Jack with envy: "It's still Jack's better. You broke through to Ultimate God Realm at such a young age. A Genius like you will break through into the soul world in the future. Sooner or later, it's also a matter of time. You can really retain your youthful face!"

Chapter 1674

“Ha ha, this is the way talent is like this. People are more popular than people!"

Alejandro laughed and said to Kenneth wildly again, "However, I am very satisfied that we can break through to the Ultimate God Realm. Not to mention Ultimate God Realm, there are many practitioners who can't even break through the real realm in their lives, so old!"

Kenneth immediately nodded with a smile and said, "What the Lord of the Cabello family said is that this man, you should know how satisfied you can be. I am very happy to achieve it now. By the way, the talent of the girl Selena is also excellent. She competes with the three daughters of the Cabello family. I guess it won't be long before she can break through to the heavenly level of cultivation!

After listening to Kenneth, Salena reluctantly smiled. After all, her curse could not be eliminated. After a day, it was one less day, and several days had passed before. Now Jack and others practiced, and four days have passed. She has not had much time left. If she can't lift the curse, it's true. What is that you can only wait to die.

Seeing Selena's slightly bitter smile, Jack naturally knew what Selena was thinking and immediately changed the topic and said, "By the way, elder, did you see a picture when you broke through?"

Kenneth was crazy, and then he said in surprise, "Young Master Jack, have you seen it? I thought it was an illusion. When I broke through, I arrived in a mysterious space. In that space, there were photospheres with different eyes, flying quickly from my side..."

After listening to it, Nash frowned deeper: "It's strange why did the three of us see that scene, but the Lord of the Cabello family did not see this scene?"

Alejandro looked a little worried: "I don't know whether it's good to see that scene or not. The three of you have seen such a scene, all of which seems to have come to a special space, but I don't! However,

my cultivation is really real and breaks through to the top of the sky? Needless to say, Jack's skills practiced by you two are the same as those of mine! Why is there such a difference?"

Everyone, look at me, I look at you, it's really puzzling. Finally, everyone's eyes on Ye Wuyi and Lancelot, who have not yet broken through.

Before long, Ye Wuyi broke through and broke through to the heavenly level of cultivation, and he was also very happy.

However, what is surprising is that he, like Alejandro, did not see that picture and did not enter the mysterious space.

"Sneering!"

However, at this time, Lancelot spurted out a mouthful of blood. He opened his eyes and was reluctant to see more: "Oh, it was almost that, I didn't expect that in the end, it was a failure!"

Lancelot's impact cultivation failed, and his body was also injured. He had to swallow a healing pill immediately to heal the wound first.

When he learned that several other people had broken through to Ultimate God Realm, don't mention envy him. Six people hit the Ultimate God Realm together, and all five succeeded, but he did not succeed, which made his heart feel more or less frustrated.

Chapter 1675

Jack smiled, and then comforted Lancelot and said, "Don't worry, Third Elder. It's not been a long time since you broke through to the peak of the real world. Take a break first and try to break through the next time. After all, this is a big realm. If everyone can easily succeed, it's not very present. It's true.

Lancelot nodded and then said, "That's right. Now our White family, at least we have four strong people with one-class cultivation. I believe that among the forces that come in together, our White family should run the fastest!"

"Ha ha, this can't be said. After all, many people have gone away. This time we have delayed here for four days. I'm afraid everyone has gone away even more. I don't know the situation of others! Here, the people of the White family and the Cabello family add up to only a few hundred people!"

Nash smiled and said modestly.

Alejandro also nodded: "Oh, I don't know where Helena and Venus are now. They have come in for so many days and haven't met them. Now we are here, and we have delayed four days or four days. Some people estimate that they have gone further. I hope I have never met them. What kind of cultivation is good to see!"

Daniella quickly comforted and said, "Dad, don't worry. My sisters, their cultivation is not bad. As long as it's not too bad luck, there should be no problem. Besides, the elder sister has been the peak of the real world. Maybe she has broken through to the Ultimate God Realm now? That's also possible!"

"Let's go. We have also lost a lot of time. Now it's only one or two o'clock in the afternoon. At this time, we should find a lot of spiritual grass before dark. There are a lot of people here. We can be slightly separated and have a care for each other. I'm going to look for spirit grass during the day, and at night, I can try the refining of three low-grade Pills !"

Jack smiled indifferently, and then said, "For those who practice in the false or real world, the elixir of these two products are very fast. However, for those who have Ultimate God Realm, although they can also improve their cultivation, the effect is not obvious. If I could refine the grade three pills earlier, That would also be of great benefit to people with Ultimate God Realm!"

"Grade Three products!"

After Alejandro and others listened, they took a breath of cold air one by one. Such a level of elixir was scary to think about before, because outside, I have never seen much of the three products of spiritual herbs, let alone the grade three products of elixir pills .

Now, Jack, whose talent for alchemy is amazing, has unconsciously become a senior alchemist of the second grade. He can indeed say that under his hard research, he may really become a third alchemist in the near future.

Selena frowned slightly. She was very clear in her heart that Jack couldn't wait to improve his alchemy level as soon as possible, and it must be closely related to the desire to refine four-pin elixir as soon as possible to help her lift the curse.

Although all this may be difficult and difficult to do, Salena is also very satisfied with his efforts for her.

"By the way, Master Jack, we have also got a lot of three kinds of spirit herbs these days. Look at whether the spirit herbs we have got are suitable for you? If so, you just need to take it directly. After all, if it weren't for you, we wouldn't have had skills to practice so soon, and I wouldn't have broken through to the sky-level cultivation so soon!"

Alejandro quickly thought of something, hurriedly took out his commandment ring, and then handed it to Jack.

Chapter 1676

"Is this not very good? You have worked so hard to find the spiritual grass!"

Looking at the spiritual grass in front of him, Jack said embarrassedly.

"Hey, what's wrong with this? No matter how many spiritual grass there are, there are no more valuable skills you share with us. The skills you give are not only the Ultimate God Realm method, but also the

practice method of entering the soul. There is no problem practicing the nine grades into the soul world!"

Alejandro said with a smile. Speaking of this, he couldn't help looking at Daniella beside him, and then said with some pointing, "Besides, we are not just friendly forces now. Maybe we will be a family in the future. Why do we see each other like this?" Right?"

Daniella beside him suddenly looked shy, which was called shy.

"Yes, yes, yes, the Lord of the Cabello family is so right. We should have helped each other in the first place! Right?"

Nash immediately smiled happily, and then said again, "Because of them, you can use those materials from the Lord of the Cabello family. When you refine the three-pin elixir in the future, won't you give him one or two?"

"That's true. If I can become a third-grade alchemist, it will naturally not be much difficult to refine elixir!"

Jack nodded, then looked carefully at the spiritual grass in front of him, and then selected two or three useful spiritual grasses.

Hearing what the two said, the people of the Cabello family were excited one by one. Yes, the third-pin elixir was completely the treasure in the treasure. In the future, the two families got along well, and Jack casually threw them two or three pills. Is that okay?

They are even more sure that if Jack becomes a third-class alchemist, I'm afraid that no one can stop the development of the White family.

After all, although you haven't seen the third-grade elixir, you can think of it. The energy must be

extremely majestic. Even a third-grade low-grade elixir may suddenly make people break through the cultivation of two or even third-grade elixir. In that case, the speed of cultivation will be particularly fast.

And if people with Ultimate God Realm can only rely on some spiritual herbs to practice without the three-grade elixir, the speed of cultivation will naturally be much slower.

"Let's go, let's go!"

Jack waved his hand and set off again with everyone.

Sure enough, after everyone walked out of the cave this time, they felt that the fighting sound that happened everywhere a few days ago had become much less. Moreover, the direction of some fighting sounds was far away from here. It was difficult to tell whether it was a fight between any monster or between monks because of robbing treasures. The fight that happened.

Jack and others identified the opposite direction of coming in here and went all the way forward. At night, everyone had also gained a lot.

However, in the afternoon, I also met a few monsters, but their cultivation was not high. Basically, they were comparable to monsters in the middle or late stage of the real world. Now for everyone, there is no need to pay too much attention to such monsters.

Chapter 1677

In order to adapt to the newly increased strength in their bodies and better control the soaring strength, whether it is Alejandro or Ye Wuman and others, every time they meet monsters, they rush up one by one to fight against monsters.

The people of the Cabello family will take out some of the spiritual grass they got after night, so that Jack can see if there is anything suitable for alchemy. If so, they will simply give it directly to Jack.

After all, they all know that Jack and others asked them to copy a copy of that skill, which is a great kindness for their Cabello family.

At night, when everyone sat down to rest, Jack also began to study the third-grade low-grade elixir.

In the first half of the night, he mainly familiarized himself with the elixir prescription and some steps of alchemy, reaching the point of being cooked. By the second half of the night, Jack began to try refining.

In one night, he refined it three times and failed three times. Although this was also expected by himself, Jack couldn't help but have a burst of meat pain.

Because this is used to refine three low-grade elixir, it not only needs one three-grade low-grade spiritual herb as the main material, but also some second-grade spiritual herbs as auxiliary materials, and some suitable herbs to match the refining.

Once you fail once, the loss will really be huge. If you fail three times in a row, you will lose at least three third-grade low-grade spiritual herbs and more than a dozen second-grade spiritual herbs. How can such a loss not make people heartbroken?

Seeing that the sky had lit up, Nash also came to Jack and comforted Jack: "The difficulty of refining the third-grade elixir must be more than ten times that of refining the second-grade elixir, or even more than that. This second-class senior alchemist, to the third-grade low-level alchemist, is also an essential improvement. It's a jump. Failure is inevitable. Don't worry about it.

Jack nodded: "Yes, the second-grade senior alchemist is also a second-grade alchemist, and he can refine a third-grade low-grade elixir, that is, the third-grade alchemist, which is different. It's nothing wrong with this failure. The main reason is that I really love these spiritual grasses.

"It's okay. We can find a lot of Sanpin spiritual herbs every day, among which are also many materials suitable for you to use for alchemy. As long as you are willing to work hard, I believe that you will be able to continue to break through and become a third-grade alchemist. After all, I think when you

refined for the third time, that technique was much more proficient than the first refining!"

Nash smiled and patted Jack gently on the shoulder.

"Sister Selena, don't worry too much. Jack's talent is one of the best in cultivation and alchemy. I believe he will definitely help you solve the black spots on your face and help you lift this curse within a year!"

On the other hand, Daniella persuaded Selena next to her.

Selena nodded with a smile, and then said to Daniella, "You, don't be so shy. When you are free, chat more with Jack. What can you do if you always have your side?"

Speaking of this, Selena paused and then whispered, "Although I also believe that Jack will try his best to help me lift the curse, there will be so few days in a day. The fourth-grade intermediate elixir is not so easy to refine, not to mention that Qingyunzong in such a short time. Baby, why is it easy to talk about it? If, if I die, you don't have to be sad for me. I know you are a good girl, and You will definitely take good care of Jack and Kylie for me!"

As soon as Daniella heard this, her face suddenly darkened: "Selena, don't talk nonsense. You will definitely be fine. Your relationship with Jack is so good, and he won't let you have an accident. What's more, even if you are for Kylie, you have to work hard to survive, okay? Don't think nonsense or affect your cultivation, okay?"

Chapter 1678 WIP

Looking at Daniella's excited appearance, Selena's heart warmed slightly. She could see that Daniella not only really liked Jack, but also was indeed an innocent and simple good girl.

Selena smiled bitterly and then said, "Don't worry, I will definitely not give up easily. After all, Kylie is still waiting for me at home, saying that I should also work hard to live, and my parents are waiting for me to go back home!" What I said is just in case!"

"Sister Selena, I believe this will definitely not happen!"

Daniella smiled and put Selena's arm and said.

The group continued to set off. Unexpectedly, at noon, there was a fight in front of them.

Jack and others looked at it from afar and frowned immediately, because he found that it was Venus and several young people of the Cabello family surrounded in the middle, and the people who surrounded them were also from the Cabello family.

"What's going on? Why did the elders of the Cabello family surround Miss Venus and them in the middle?

Jack frowned, a little confused.

"I'll go over with you first to see what's going on, and the rest of you will come later!"

Alejandro also frowned and said to everyone that he flew straight ahead with Jack.

Under a big tree, Venus, the second daughter of the Cabello family, and several young people were surrounded in the middle by the second elders of the Cabello family and several people of the Cabello family. Moreover, Venus's mouth was still with blood on the corners, which was obviously seriously injured.

"Second Elder, don't go too far. I won't agree!"

Venus looked at the man in her fifties in front of her and said angrily.

"Ha ha, Miss Venus, do you think it's the same as when you were outside? It has been here for so many days. Maybe your father and others have died here long ago."

The second elder of the Cabello family in front of him laughed and looked proud: "Don't you know yet? Since entering this new world, everything has begun to be reshuffled. Not to mention the size of this forest, can we still meet your father and others? Even if we meet, what can we do? I'm now a strong man of Ultimate God Realm. Even if your father is here, he is not my opponent. At that time, he can only be killed by me?"

Hearing this, Venus's face turned gloomy. Yes, the second elder of the Cabello family, not long after he came in, had broken through the cultivation of heavenly first-class. Even if her father is here now, what if so? Can you still play against opponents who have supernatural cultivation?

However, if she marries such an old man in front of her, she can be her father's old guy. She might as well die.

After all, when they were outside, their three sisters were recognized as the three golden flowers of masters. Over the years, many talented young masters have been flattering them. They have not answered the answer, and they have not met the right person. How can they marry such a bad old man?

She bit her sexy red lips before frowned and said, "Er., when you were in our Cabello family, our Cabello family was good to you. I didn't expect that you were such a person!"

"Ha ha, how's I done? These people are all my cronies. I pulled them up in one hand, so they are willing to fool around with me!"

Chapter 1679

The second elder laughed and looked at dozens of masters around him, and then shouted, "Besides, my fair lady, gentleman is good. After my cultivation breaks through to the second grade and the third grade, I will not only accept you as my daughter, but also let your eldest sister and your sister be My

woman, let you three golden flowers serve me well!"

Speaking of this, he clenched his fist again, and then said confidently, "At that time, all the other people of the Cabello family will listen to me. Those who obey me will prosper, and those who rebel against me will die. If anyone dare not listen to me, there will be only one end at that time, die!"

"Yes, yes, yes, this position of the head of the Cabello family should have been replaced for a long time, and my master should be replaced!"

Next to the second elder, a man smiling and slugged, "In the past, the Cabello family was indeed good to my master, but if there was any good thing, the first thing that came to mind was the Elder Cabello Kevin. Ha ha, why? Isn't it because my master's surname is Chu? Is it a person with a foreign surname?"

"That's right. What's the result of saying it's good to me? Is there anything good? Why don't you think about the elder first?"

The second elders also sneered, and then said to the young people of the Cabello family in front of him, "You, I still hope you can be more interesting and don't resist stubbornly in the corner. At that time, there will be only one dead word!" If you arrest Miss Venus, I can let you go and save you a life!"

"Roy Bentian, if you like women, young and beautiful women, some of them, and more importantly, can't you find a good-looking woman with your current status? Why do you have to do it with our second lady? You go too far!"

A young man from the Cabello family said angrily that although other young people of the Cabello family were surrounded in the middle and had been killed before, no one still has planned to surrender.

"Ha ha, that's true!"

Robben laughed, and then looked at Venus with a playful face before saying, "However, there are not many beautiful women like your three ladies of the Cabello family. The only pity is that the eldest lady had fallen in love with the boy surnamed White before. Although she has broken up now, most of them have. Have you fallen asleep? However, it's not bad. Miss Second and Third Miss are still perfect, and they are still waiting for me to pick!"

"Bonnah!"

The young man was so angry that he cursed with hatred.

"I think you're looking for death!"

Robben's weather was not good. He flashed directly and rushed over. He suddenly got stuck in the man's neck and shook it hard. There was a crisp click, and the man was directly angry.

"Cousin!!”

As soon as she saw her cousin, was killed like this. Venus was so angry that she clenched her fist and attacked this way with one punch.

"Ha ha, I just broke through to the peak of the real divine realm and also want to fight with me?"

In the face of Venus's attack, Robben sneered unintentionally. He shook his fist and didn't even use Reiki. He punched Venus directly.

"Bang!"

A slightly dull voice sounded. The next second, Venus flew directly backwards and spewed out a mouthful of blood. Her already pale face looked even whiter.

Chapter 1680

"Whew!"

However, just as Venus was about to land, two figures galloped over, one of which directly put around her waist, which made her fall to the ground safely.

Venus saw that it was Jack, and she suddenly felt a little embarrassed. She couldn't help blushing and standing in a hurry.

Jack turned over the palm of his hand and directly took out a healing pill, and handed it to the other party: "Little beautiful girl, take this pill to heal the wounds. Just give it to us here!"

"Well, thank you, Master Jack!"

Venus took the pill embarrassedly, and then found that the other figure turned out to be her father. Suddenly, she looked at Alejandro slightly red in her eyes and said, "Dad, that's great. I finally saw you. I'm afraid that something will happen to you. I heard that the Canmore family owner had already broken through to the Ultimate God Realm. I'm afraid there are many breakthroughs to Ultimate God Realm here. I even heard that some time ago, someone saw you and Daniella being chased and killed by a monster!"

At this point, she looked around anxiously: "By the way? Where's the third sister? She won't have an accident, will she?"

"Don't worry, your third sister and others will come in a moment. We were indeed chased and killed by

a monster that day, but thanks to the help of Master Jack, we were out of danger!"

Alejandro looked at his daughter and was relieved. Fortunately, he and others came here properly, and he happened to see this scene. If it was a little late, it would be really troublesome. I'm afraid that he would not be able to see his daughter again.

Seeing Alejandro and Jack appearing at the same time, the second elders were immediately shocked, and his face also sank in an instant.

But when he thought of his current cultivation and that he was no longer the same as before, he had a little more confidence in an instant and sneered, "Alejandro, long time no see. I really didn't expect that you would appear at this time!"

Speaking of this, Robben paused and continued, "That's good. I'm looking for you everywhere. You happen to be here and kill you. At that time, I will be the head of the Cabello family. Of course, if you are willing to abdicate voluntarily and marry all three of your daughters to me, I can consider letting you go!"

"Well, Robben, I really didn't expect that you would be such a person. Your cultivation and combat effectiveness were not as good as mine before. That's why you were so obedient when you were in the Cabello family. Unexpectedly, as soon as the cultivation broke through to the first grade of heaven, your fox tail was exposed. I, Alejandro, I really misunderstood!"

Alejandro snorted coldly and turned blue with anger: "Do you still want me to marry all three daughters

to you? I think you are such a fool's dream!"

"Ha ha, obsession. Since you and the boy of the White family are here, I will kill both of you. In the future, let me see who dares to oppose me!"

Robben laughed, stretched out a hand, and the aura poured out with a faint gold on it. Then he smiled at Alejandro and said, "Do you see the golden aura of heaven-level first-class cultivation? Do you envy it? Give you a last chance. If you are still obsessed, I will take action!"

"It's really crazy!"

Alejandro sneered and also stretched out a hand. Soon, on the palm of his hand, there was also a light golden aura, and began to surge.

"You, have you also broken through the Ultimate God Realm?"

Seeing the faint golden aura in Alejandro's hand, Robben took a breath of cool air, and his face was so gloomy in an instant.

In the past, when he was in the Cabello family, his cultivation, like Alejandro, was the peak of the realm, but his combat effectiveness was much worse than Alejandro, and there were more powerful elders of the Cabello family, so this was also one of the reasons why he had never dared to think anything wrong.

Originally, I thought that Alejandro was definitely not his opponent when he broke through the cultivation of the heavenly god realm. Unexpectedly, Alejandro is also the cultivation of Heavenly god realm now, which made him, who had been under Alejandro under his feet, instantly lost confidence.

However, he soon showed a little viciousness in his eyes: "What if you break through? Well, the skills I got this time may not be worse than yours, so now you may not be my opponent!"

The confidants of the second elders were originally a little worried, but when they heard this, they were finally relieved.

Chapter 1681

"Is that right? Then try it and you will know!"

Alejandro sneered, clasped his fist, and rushed directly to Robbe.

"Ha ha, give it to me for the rest of these people!"

Jack smiled indifferently, clasped his fist, and the aura surged. In that aura, there was also a little gold. Even this kind of gold looked much more obvious than Alejandro's gold.

"No way? Did he break through, too?"

Seeing Jack also breaking through to the Ultimate God Realm, those people who used to be with Robbentian were looking ugly one by one.

"Master Jack, no, no, we were also forced by the second elders. We didn't want to rebel!"

The previous apprentice of Robbentian, when he saw that Jack was also a heavenly strong man, knew that he and others were sure to lose, so he immediately waved his hand and said.

"Ha ha, am I a fool?"

Jack sneered and no longer talked nonsense to the other party. He rushed up like a wolf into the sheep. After a moment, dozens of strong people of the Cabello family actually lay on the ground like this and became corpses.

After killing these guys, Jack also looked at the battle between Alejandro and Robbentian on the other side.

Obviously, the skill practiced by Alejandro is obviously higher than that of the opponent. Robbentian was directly crushed by Alejandro. Although he has not been able to distinguish the winner or loser for a while, it is estimated that the other party will also lose.

"Master Jack, thank you for your help!"

Venus's face at this time was much ruddy than before. The healing pill given by Jack was obviously unusually good.

"Ha ha, you're welcome. Our two family’s are friendly forces!"

Jack said with a smile.

At this time, Daniella, Nash and others also rushed over.

"Second sister, that's great. I finally saw you!"

After seeing Venus, Daniella immediately rushed up and hugged Venus excitedly: "A few days ago, we were chased and almost killed by a monster. Fortunately, Jack appeared in time. Otherwise, I'm afraid I will never see my second sister again!"

"Well, I also heard that! it's great to see you. I really didn't expect that my father and Jack broke through to Ultimate God Realm. Now, our safety factor is much higher!"

Venus looked at Jack and envied her sister. It was really her blessing that her sister could find such an excellent man.

"Ha ha. Sister, it's not just the two of them. Uncle White, as well as the elders and the second elders of the White family, have broken through to the first grade. The third elder, almost broke through a little bit, but I guess it's also a matter of time sooner or later!"

Aww

Daniella said with a smile.

Chapter 1682

After Venus heard this, the gap in her mouth could almost stuff an egg.

After several seconds, she said, "My God, plus Jack, and Lord White, aren't they four heavenly strong people with first-class cultivation? That's awesome!"

Daniella looked at Jack beside her sweetly, and then said proudly, "Yes, thanks to Jack, He got two sets of skills, and they asked us to copy one set. Otherwise, how can my father break through to the heavenly level of cultivation so quickly?"

"Is that right? That's really great. In this way, won't I be able to practice this skill in the future? At that time, can I also break through to the Ultimate God Realm?"

After Venus listened to it, her eyes lit up in an instant.

"Sister, didn't you just break through to the peak of the real divine realm? You came in here and then broke through to the peak of the real divine realm. Even if you want to impact cultivation, you have to wait a few more days no matter how much you are. When the realm is completely stable, do you dare to try impact cultivation, right?

Daniella's mouth beeped. Thinking of the cultivation in the middle or the later stage of the real world, she vaguely envied Venus.

"Yes, I mean, now that you have skill, you are not afraid. You only need to practice for a period of time, at least you don't have to worry about finding the skill again!"

Venus smiled, and then smiled at Daniella slightly provocatively and said, "Sister, you are going to cheer up!"

After saying that, she undoubtedly saw Selena standing behind. She was stunned and exclaimed, "Well, isn't this Selena? She, what's going on?"

Selena sighed silently in her heart. Such a big black spot on her face completely ruined her appearance. The black spot looked even a little scary.

And every time she was seen by the previous people, she still needed to explain it, which made her

heart even more painful.

Only then did Daniella hurriedly pull Venus aside and explain it to Venus.

"No way, so many things have happened here, and what other people have they met? Jack killed two more? Tut, Jack, now his combat effectiveness, I'm afraid it's easy to kill people with heavenly first-class cultivation, right?"

After listening to this, Venus looked at Jack beside him again in shock.

"Tian-class Yipin? Ha ha, sister, when he killed the heavenly first-class strongman, he was really the cultivation at the peak of the divine realm. Now he has broken through to the heavenly first-class. I think it shouldn't be difficult for him to kill the heavenly second-class, or even the heavenly third-class cultivation!"

Daniella said with a smile. When talking about Jack, her face was full of pride. After all, this is the man she recognizes. Such a man is too excellent. She believes that whether it is her eldest sister or second sister, she must envy her for finding such an excellent man.

"No way, this, this is awesome!"

Venus looked at Jack's eyes, as if there was a little more worship.

"You two, what are you talking about over there?"

Jack saw the two of them hiding aside, and Venus stared at him from time to time. She couldn't help laughing bitterly and said, "Looking at Cabello’s master about to win, you can have another skill!"

"Of course we are talking about someone's great achievements!"

Chapter 1683

Daniella gave Jack a look full of amorous feelings, and her hands were behind her back, and she walked over here.

"Boom!"

As Jack expected, Robben couldn't hold on quickly and was directly bombarded by Alejandro. The body fell directly from the air to the ground, and a huge blood hole appeared on his chest.

"It's so cool. This Robben's combat effectiveness is not much worse than mine. It's so enjoyable to fight, haha!"

Alejandro flew down and took Robbentian's Ring off before flying to Jack and others, with a smile on his face.

"Hey, don't mention it. I can't wait to try it. If it weren't for your own business, I would have rushed up!"

Ye Wu said with a wild smile that after the strength in his body increased, his hands had already itched. Under the same combat effectiveness just now, it was just right for practicing.

"Well, I didn't expect that this second elder, when he was in the Cabello family in the past, was so honest and never had any bad-mindedness. After breaking through to Ultimate God Realm, he would actually become like this!"

After all, Alejandro was still a little uncomfortable and couldn't help sighing after following his Cabello family for so many years.

"That's because his combat effectiveness was not as good as you and the elder before, so he didn't expose his nature. Not long after he came in, he had broken through. Naturally, he thought that the

opportunity would come and his nature would be exposed!"

Daniella shook her head helplessly, and then said, "Luckily, we happened to find the second sister and them. Otherwise, the second sister and the others would be in trouble."

"Well, I don't know. How's your elder sister now? I don't know where the others have gone!"

Alejandro nodded, and his heart was full of emotion.

"Don't worry, Dad, elder sister, they will definitely be fine. She has long been the peak cultivation of the real world. Maybe now she is a heavenly first grade, and may even be a heavenly second grade! Are you still worried about her? Maybe you are not her opponent now!"

Daniella came forward and comforted Alejandro with a smile.

At this time, Alejandro took out a skill from Robbentian's acceptance ring. He looked carefully and quickly frowned again: "It's strange that I can only practice to the nine heavenly grades after looking at this skill. There is no practice method of soul state behind it. Moreover, if this skill is not as good as the previous practice of Lord White. It seems that the skill level is indeed not high. No wonder Robbentian is not my opponent at all!"

"How useful is this skill to keep? At least, you can exchange it for some spiritual grass or something!"

After thinking about it, Jack said.

"Let's go, let's continue to look for treasures!"

Finally, Nash waved his hand, and then everyone continued to fly forward.

In the afternoon, Jack and others actually got a four-grade low-grade spiritual grass, which made Jack extremely excited. Such spiritual grass can be regarded as a treasure in the treasure. Moreover, if there are four-grade low-grade spiritual grass, isn't that there may be four-grade intermediate spiritual grass? At that time, let's see if we can get the elixir that treats Fernando's body or Selena's curse.

Chapter 1684

When the sky faded at night, Jack and others were ready to start resting.

After arranging a few people to take turns to watch the night, Nash and others were busy practicing. After all, this forest is really dangerous. There are even monsters with Ultimate God Realm. Everyone dares not take it lightly, and the aura is too strong here. It is the first time I met such aura and new skills. Naturally, they can't wait to break through the cultivation of Tianshi Second Grade as soon as possible, even Tianshi Third Grade.

Jack did not practice, but continued to try the refining of three low-grade elixir.

He found that the skill he practiced was really quite good, because the cyclone in his body was spinning non-stop. Even when eating, sleeping or doing other things, it would absorb the aura little by little and then change his cultivation.

Of course, the speed of practice is definitely not as fast as that when taking the initiative to practice, but the advantage is that it can keep practicing. After a long time, the speed is still considerable.

Seeing Jack refining elixir, no one went to disturb him, and even his heart was full of expectations.

After all, once Jack can refine the three-grade low-grade elixir, it is not a problem for people with Ultimate God Realm, even one, to improve the cultivation of the two products at once.

The second-class advanced elixir is very helpful and effective for people who cultivate in the real divine realm, but for people with Ultimate God Realm, the effect is not very obvious.

At the beginning, Jack failed to refine two furnaces of elixir, which made him, Nash and others a little meaty. After all, every time he failed, the wasted spiritual grass or something was not one or two plants.

However, what was unexpected was that Jack finally succeeded when he finished for the third time!

"Get up!"

Jack waved with one hand, and an elixir pill flew directly, and then floated in front of him. A faint red fragrance emanated like this.

"Successful? Oh, my God, that's great!"

Nash, who had been watching, stood up directly excitedly and was extremely happy.

"Oh, my God, it really succeeded, Jack, your talent is also very good!"

Kenneth’s face was also full of joy, and he was almost crazy. Jack could refine grade three elixirs. What does this mean? It means they can't be clearer, which means that they can break through quickly in Ultimate God Realm.

In the past, when we were outside, everyone practiced very slowly. The first reason was that even in the owner of the White family, the intensity of the aura did not dare to be compared with this place. The intensity of the aura here was simply more than ten times that of the outside.

In addition, it is a cultivation of resources. It is difficult to see even three-grade low-grade spiritual grass outside. Among them, three-grade high-grade or even four-grade low-grade spiritual grass have been obtained today. With cultivation resources and skills, the speed will naturally not be too slow.

If there is Jack's elixir it would help again, it will really be like adding wings to a tiger.

"Ha ha, the rise of my White family is really within reach!"

Ye Wulang also laughed.

"See? Sister Selena, Jack is already a third-grade low-level alchemist. He can refine three-grade low-grade elixir! You must believe in him, believe that he can grow up in a short time, help you lift the curse, and return your beauty to the past!"

Daniella was also extremely excited. She immediately ran over and took Selena's hand and said cordially.

"Well, I saw it. I saw it. He made progress again!"

Selena's eyes turned slightly red. Although it was quite difficult for Jack to become an intermediate alchemist of the fourth grade and refine the elixir she needed, at least Jack was moving towards his goal step by step.

She believes that whether Jack can do it or not at that time, it is also a good thing for Jack. At least, Jack's efforts have made her die without regret.

Chapter 1685

“This is great! You’ve finally succeeded! Even if my current success rate is low, I’d definitely be able to cultivate the second and third pill with the experience of succeeding with this pill. If I continue to cultivate this type of pill, my success rate will increase indefinitely!” Jack clenched his fists as determination flared in his eyes.

It had to be mentioned that the cultivation of thirdgrade pills was much more difficult compared to the cultivation of second-grade pills. Hard work paid off, however, and Jack finally succeeded in cultivating a third-grade elementary pill.

“Let’s store it for now. Everyone had just broken through into the First-grade ultimate god-level recently, and your realms have yet to stabilize. Nobody can use this pill for the time being.” Jack smiled bitterly and carefully put away the pill in his hands.

Instead of resting, Jack continued to cultivate twice instead, but it was to his disappointment that both processes failed.

Sure enough, Jack did not give up after these two failures as he discovered that there was only a slight difference in both failures.

Jack would have continued cultivating the next two groups of ingredients had the sun not risen.

When everyone was prepared to leave, Yolanda, Titus, and about 100 members of the White family spotted them. “What a joyous event, Master Nash! Who knew that we’d bump into you here!”

“This is wonderful! Butler Titus and Elder Yolanda, I never thought that we’d meet you here!” exulted Nash excitedly when he spotted the members of the White family.

Yolanda immediately walked one step forward and said, “Master, Young Master, we have special news we ‘d like to tell you. It’s something that’s worth being extremely happy about!”

“Really? Tell us about it!” Nash and Jack exchanged glances as a hint of curiosity appeared in their eyes

“Haha… There’s more than one happy event. Firstly, I ‘ve broken through into the peak stage of the true god -level. Secondly, Butler Titus had broken through into the First-stage ultimate god-level as he obtained a martial art technique. How about that? Isn’t it exciting?” beamed Yolanda in excitement.

“Titus broke through? That’s great!” The members of the White family were delighted when they heard the news.

However, Yolanda and Titus frowned.

“What’s going on? Butler Titus, why are you unhappy when you’ve broken through and obtained a martial art technique?” asked Nash curiously at the sight of them both frowning.

Titus smiled bitterly as he confessed, “It’s not that I’ m unhappy, Master. I just feel that everyone doesn’t look as excited as we anticipated you’d be after hearing the news. After all, I’ve obtained a martial art technique that helped break through into the ultimate god-level, so shouldn’t you guys be jumping from excitement? Anyway, I feel that the degree of your happiness is slightly different from what I expected.”

Yolanda pouted as she crossed her arms at her chest, saying, “That’s right. It’s also very much different from what I’ve expected!”

Chapter 1686

Kenneth laughed so loudly that his stomach hurt when he saw the facial expressions on their faces.

He then said, “If we haven’t broken through into the ultimate god level, we would definitely jump in excitement when we hear this incredibly good news of yours. However, you guys have no idea that several of our people here have broken through into the First -grade ultimate god level and we have

gotten hold of a martial art technique. That is why we did not react so excitedly!”

“How’s that possible?!” This time, Titus and Yolanda opened their mouths widely as they were the ones who were surprised.

Kenneth was satisfied with the surprised look on their faces and spoke to these two with a smile. “I am the one with a piece of exciting news to tell the both of you. You guys will be extremely excited when you learn about it!”

“Really? There’s even surprising news compared to how several of our people from the White family have broken through into the ultimate god level?” Yolanda and Titus exchanged glances as they suspected they were dreaming.

“Young Master Jack is already a third-grade alchemist and he’s capable of cultivating third-grade elementary pills now!” Under the extremely expectant eyes of those two, Kenneth purposely smiled mysteriously before telling them about the situation.

“Hiss!” After they heard this, Yolanda, Titus, and the others inhaled deeply as the expression on their faces differs.

After some time, Titus pinched himself on his thigh and discovered that it really hurt. Only then did he ask Kenneth, “First Elder, you…you aren’t joking, are you? Young Master Jack can even cultivate third grade elementary pills? If that’s the case, would we be able to use third-grade elementary pills in the future?”

Kenneth coughed twice and said in a pretentious way, “According to usual reasoning, that is the case. However, all of this depends on how happy Young Master Jack is. After all, you would only have the opportunity if he’s willing to give it to you. If he isn’t, how would you have the chance to train with such high-grade precious items like the third-grade elementary pills?”

Titus immediately smiled embarrassingly and said, “ Haha, that is true! After all, it’s not easy to cultivate

a third-grade elementary pill!”

Jack also felt happy when he saw how those two old men were enjoying their conversations. He smiled at Titus. “Butler Titus, you just need to focus on training. Don’t worry, after my success rate has increased in cultivating this pill, it wouldn’t be an issue to give you one or two of them.”

Jack paused here before he continued speaking, “ However, it’s best if you search for the ingredients needed to cultivate such pills!”

“Sure, this is good... This is good! It would work even if it was three groups of ingredients in exchange for a pill!” Titus’s eyes lit up after he heard this. Although it was tiring to search for ingredients, training with spirited grass and third-grade pills were two different things. If this was another alchemist, they might not be willing to exchange pills at all, even if an abundance of ingredients was provided.

“Butler Titus, this doesn’t sound right. Jack cultivated several groups of ingredients last night and only succeeded once. If you want him to give you one pill with every three groups of ingredients, wouldn’t Young Master Jack suffer a huge loss by then?” On the other hand, Kenneth had a darkened expression on his face. He directly stretched out his hand and said to Titus, “You need to prepare five sets of ingredients. In that case, Young Master Jack might be able to earn some ingredients for other pills!”
“Sure, five sets wouldn’t be an issue either!”

Chapter 1687

Titus nodded in succession and agreed to it as he was afraid that Jack would refuse to help him cultivate pills if he was slow in making his promise.

Jack smiled when he saw how the two of them acted. “Don’t worry. Just give me the materials you find in the future. My success rate should also increase over time. Hmmm… Members of the White family only need to provide me with three sets of materials. I will work hard to cultivate a pill for you guys. As for our friendly forces, if they can provide materials, give me five sets of ingredients and I will strive to cultivate a pill!”

“Young Master Jack, you mean to say that you would give us one pill made out of that particular

material as long as we give you five sets of such materials?" Alejandro was originally envious of the White family in his heart. He was so excited that his pupils widened when he heard what Jack said.

After all, it was a third-grade elementary pill.

"Haha, that wouldn't be an issue!" Jack laughed out loudly.

He understood clearly that he would definitely be tired if he did this. However, he would not be out of materials if he needed to cultivate pills in this case. Somebody would help him look for materials to cultivate pills and he could also save more time.

The time he saved could be used to cultivate pills continuously and after increasing his success rate of cultivation, he could start to try cultivating pills of higher level.

This was the only way for him to try cultivating fourth -grade pills within a shorter period of time.

"This is great! Brother Jack, just tell us what materials you need when you plan to cultivate any pills. In this case, our people will pay special attention when they go out searching for spirited grass and other materials!" One of the middle-aged men from the Cabello family also said with a smile.

Not only were those in the intermediate stage of the true god level like him excited, but those in the semi God realm were also excited.

This was because the third-grade elementary pills were important treasures. If they managed to exchange a pill from Jack, they could keep it for the future even if they could not immediately use it. If that did not work, they could still exchange it with others for some second-grade pills that were suitable for them to train with. That was also a good way to use the pill.

"Haha… Alright! I shall write down the materials of the third-grade elementary pill I'm cultivating now and two other types of third-grade intermediate pills for you guys to take a look at. You can help search

for the materials!" Jack laughed happily and everybody there was filled with passion and excitement.

In the afternoon, Jack and others continued to search for precious items. In the evening, he continued to cultivate the third-grade elementary pill as he wanted to increase his success rate.

However, Jack was quite satisfied this time. He cultivated five sets of materials continuously and he. Succeeded twice, obtaining two third-grade elementary pills.

It had to be understood that such a success rate was not achievable by average alchemists. It could only be achieved by repeatedly cultivating one type of pill multiple times. Therefore, Jack was quite satisfied that he was able to have such improvement in such a short period of time.

Not long after Jack and the others set off, they discovered a type of spirited grass. However, there was a monster beast, a two-headed blood-red python, with the fighting prowess comparable to human's second-grade ultimate god level next to this third-class intermediate spirited grass.

Chapter 1688

Jack and the others had never seen the two-headed blood-red pythons in the real world, but these creatures were mentioned in the book before.

If one were to meet a monster like this outside this place, its existence was equivalent to legendary. It was a monster in the ultimate god realm, after all. It frightens one just thinking about it.

Here, the two-headed blood-red python was guarding the area around the third-grade intermediate spirited grass. Its entire body was red in color, and it appeared especially eye-catching when one looked at it.

"That thing has a big body. The slight resonance from its body means that it's definitely a monster in the second-grade ultimate god realm. A monster like that is probably as good as a third-grade ultimate god

level! It’s so frightening!”

Alejandro studied the huge red python from a distance and told Jack in the end, “Young Master Jack, there’s plenty of spirited grass in the forest, so I think we should just give up on this patch. Let’s go look for it somewhere else. It’ll be a lot easier. This monster is too strong and dangerous!”

“I’d probably give up if it were some other spirited grass. But I definitely will not be on this path!”

Jack looked at the patch of spirited grass from afar, passion blazing in his eyes. “That patch of spirited grass is not just any third-grade intermediate spirited grass. It just so happens to be the main ingredient in a type of third-grade intermediate pill that I know. Besides, these spirited grass are hard to come by in the first place. It won’t be easy for us to find another once we miss out on this one. Furthermore, there’s less spirited grass that’s guarded by monsters, and most of them are not high in grade. Spirited grasses like these are more likely to be guarded by a monster!”.

Alejandro could not help but nod when he heard this. “So that’s the case. Then let us of the ultimate god status attack it together. The rest can stay behind. It'd be too dangerous for them if they come along!”

Yet he did not expect Jack to give a wan smile. “It’s fine if I go by myself. It’ll be pretty dangerous for all of you to go too. Ever since I broke into the first grade ultimate god realm, I have yet to put my fighting power to the test. It works out great that I can use this monster to test it out!”

“Then you have to be careful. This thing has two heads, not just one after all. So it’s different from the usual serpentine monsters!”

Nash on the side nodded his head and warned Jack.

“Don’t worry. It won’t be a problem!”

Jack smiled and got ready to rush forward.

Whoosh!

Yet at this moment, a purple silhouette flew out from another side, heading straight toward the monster.

Jack, who had been just about to fly out, could not help but frown. “No way. There’s actually someone who dares to head in?”.

“Who’s that?”

Daniella, who was next to him, also frowned.“ Everybody came to this place at the same time. We weren’t even here for ten days. Don’t tell me that they ‘ve already broken into the second-grade ultimate god realm? Or even the third grade? Why would they dare to fly in otherwise?”

“No way. We were all lucky enough to break into the first-grade ultimate god realm. Even if the people who had come in with us had broken into the first grade ultimate god status, they would only be able to stabilize their power now. There’s no way that they’d be able to break into the second-grade ultimate god realm, right?”

Alejandro nodded his head and spoke as he watched the silhouette. “Besides, judging from their form, it looks like a young lady at the peak of the True God Realm that we’ve never seen before. Is that right?”.

“That person should be a second-grade ultimate god fighter. I’ve already sensed the resonance coming from her body!”

Jack carefully used his mental strength to sense the person's resonance before declaring confidently.

Chapter 1689 WIP

"No way, Master Jack, can you feel that kind of fluctuation so far away? Your spiritual power is too

strong!"

There was a young man from the Cabello family who couldn't help exclaiming.

"Nonsense, he is a third-class alchemist. Can a person like us speculate about his strong spiritual strength?"

Another young man looked at Jack with a worshipful face.

"Heavenly second-class? Jack, don't care. Since this spiritual grass is so important, this is an opportunity. The other party is only a heavenly second-class product, not necessarily the opponent of the monster. You can find the right time and rob the spiritual grass at that time. Anyway, it looks like that. It must not be a White family or a Cabello family!"

After thinking about it, Alejandro suggested it to Jack.

Nash was silent for a while before he said, "It should be from the Supreme Clarity Sect, right? After all, more than 90% of the disciples of Supreme Clarity Sect are women, but I remember that none of the elders of Supreme Clarity Sect wear this purple dress, right?"

Yolanda said, "That's not necessarily true. There are more than a dozen people who practice at the peak of the Qingzong realm, and these days when they come in, I'm afraid some people have also broken through. Not to mention those people, there should be some of those who have broken through to the Ultimate God Realm, but this has broken through to the second level. The cultivation of the product is too fast. As for the purple skirt, it's normal for people to come in for so many days and maybe they have changed a suit?"

"Let's take a look first!"

Jack was not sure who the other party was. First, it was a little far away from this side. Second, the other

party kept his back to this side, and could only see a purple skirt plus a shawl of black hair.

"Roar!"

At this time, the young woman was not far away from the pair of red-blooded pythons. After the python found the other party, it also made a direct roar, and immediately moved the long body the size of a bucket, straightened up, and glared at the purple skirt woman in front of him.

"Beast, if you know interesting things, get out of the way quickly, otherwise, I will kill you!"

The young woman shouted softly and turned her palms over. In her hand, there was a sword which was a heavenly spiritual weapon.

"Roar!"

However, how can those red-blooded pythons leave? It roared again, and a fireball suddenly spewed out of one of its mouths. The fireball fluctuated strongly, but condensed with aura with a hot temperature.

"Humph!"

The woman hummed softly and quickly injected Reiki into the sword in her hand. The sword suddenly trembled and made a soft sound of the sword, which immediately became much larger.

"Whew!"

Seeing that the fireball reached the middle position, the woman cut it out in front with a sword. Suddenly, a terrible sword gas chop flew out like this, with a momentum of indomitation, which was too fast.

"Who the hell is this woman? This attack is not weak!"

After seeing such a scene, Jack couldn't help frowning. He didn't remember that there was such a powerful young woman in the Supreme Clarity Sect. Most of the elders of the Supreme Clarity Sect were old women in their forties and fifties, or even 60s and 70s. There were only two or three young women, but Jack really had never seen this figure.

Chapter 1690 WIP

Just as Jack's voice fell, the attack of the purple skirt woman had been bombarded with the other party.

"Boom!"

A huge roar sounded, and the huge fireball was directly penetrated by the woman's sword spirit. After the fireball exploded, it was completely defeated, and the long sword spirit, with some remaining power, rushed straight ahead and landed on the huge two-headed red-blooded python.

"Roar!"

The python roared, and the violence in it was even more fierce, and the woman's attack was on it, leaving a cut more than 20 centimeters long, where blood flowed out.

Such a wound is actually not small, but for the huge double-headed red-blooded python, it is nothing at all, but completely angers it.

The two huge mouths actually roared again, and at the same time, they spewed out a basketball-sized huge fireball from two different directions against the purple skirt woman in front of them.

In the face of such an attack, the purple-skirt woman obviously did not dare to be careless. She desperately injected the aura into the sword, and then waved out with a sword. In front of her, a fast aura wall appeared. After the wall appeared, it blocked her in front like a barrier.

"Boom!"

After a while, two huge fireballs finally landed on the huge barrier, which kept fluctuating, but finally took over the attack of the two red-blooded pythons, and then the barrier continued to move forward, and the woman followed not far from the barrier, approaching the python little by little.

"This woman is very strong. She is the cultivation of Heavenly Second Grade, and this monster is also the cultivation of Heavenly Second Grade. Generally speaking, it is difficult for human monks to deal with monsters of the same level. Without two or three people working together, it is difficult to be her opponent, but this woman obviously still has the upper hand!"

After looking at it for a while, Nash said to Jack worriedly, "Jack, I think you'd better not take action easily. This woman is very powerful. If you rob the spiritual grass she likes at that time, you will really offend her."

"Dad, don't worry, I know it's acting according to the opportunity!"

Jack smiled, and he knew very well in his heart that Nash was afraid that he would not be an opponent of this woman at that time.

"Boom!"

The woman's barrier fell directly on one of the heads of the red-blooded python, hitting its huge head directly to the ground, and she flashed straight to the direction of the spiritual grass.

However, at this time, the mouth of the red-blooded python with both hands took the opportunity to

shake it like a huge whip, and quickly pulled it over to the purple skirt woman.

"Damn it, this beast is really difficult to deal with!"

Obviously, the woman didn't want to fight with such a powerful monster. She couldn't wait to get the spiritual grass immediately and leave here. Unexpectedly, the python attack came again.

She had to stop again immediately, and then quickly continued to display an aura barrier in front of her. After the huge barrier appeared, she rushed to the monster.

"Boom!"

There was another loud noise. This time, the barrier was blown up by the huge tail, and the python's tail was directly bounced open.

But the two heads of the python, with a huge mouth open, rushed over to this side again.

"Whew!"

When the purple skirt woman looked at it, she had to go back up and temporarily avoid the attack of the Python.

"Roar!"

However, the python took the opportunity to chase, and the speed suddenly accelerated a lot. It rushed up again, and one of the heads hit the girl hard.

"Bang!"

A slightly dull voice sounded, and the purple skirt woman was directly hit and sprayed out with a mouthful of blood.

"Go to hell!"

Chapter 1691 WIP

However, while the purple-skirt woman was hit and flew away, she also cut it out with a sword. A terrible behead flew out directly and landed on the body of the python. This time, there was a huge cut left on it. Blood flowed out of there, which looked a little shocking.

"Roar!"

This time, although the python was only slightly injured, it was completely angered by the woman. After roaring again, it accelerated and rushed to the woman in the purple skirt, opening its mouth to swallow the woman in one bite.

"Damn it!"

As soon as the woman fell to the ground, another mouthful of blood spewed out, and her face turned pale in an instant.

As soon as she stood up, she wanted to immediately run Reiki to fight back, but at this time, she found that she was already seriously injured, and it was suddenly difficult to run Reiki and had to take a break.

However, at this time, it is obvious that this situation is extremely deadly.

"I'm going to die here?"

The woman regretted it. She knew to rob the spiritual grass. She must have taken some risks, but she still wanted to try it. Unexpectedly, this monster, after being provoked, became stronger and more terrible to fight.

"Whew!"

Jack hesitated for a moment, but still rushed out. He estimated that this woman should be an elder of the Supreme Clarity Sect. After all, the Supreme Clarity Sect gave him an extremely good feeling. If he had a good relationship with the other party, everyone would take care of him in this unknown world in the future.

"Roar!"

Seeing that the huge mouth of the huge blood basin was about to swallow the woman, Jack finally rushed over and cut it directly in front with a sword.

"Sword of Wave!"

With Jack's soft shout, Jack suddenly appeared without the python's notice. After a sword was thrown out, a flying sword rushed out like a dragon and rushed into the python's mouth.

"Boom!"

The surface of the python’s body is obviously very hard, with very strong scales, but the flying swords that hit it from its mouth can easily pierce its body and cause the most fatal damage to it.

The flying sword flew in one after another, constantly attacking, and actually pierced the other party's head directly.

"Roar!"

The two-headed red-blooded python roared, and the other head actually went straight to Jack.

"Humph!"

Jack snorted coldly and threw it out with another sword.

"Bang!"

Two huge heads fell from the air and fell under Jack's feet. The huge body looked so shocking.

"Why!"

Seeing that he suddenly appeared, Jack also exhaled a heavy breath of breath when he easily gave a fatal blow to the python

He flew straight over, picked the spirit grass, and put it into the ring before he slowly turned around.

"Are you?"

After he turned around, he looked at the purple skirt woman in front of him, and his heart suddenly trembled. This woman was obviously not from the Supreme Clarity Sect, and he remembered that there was no such a girl among the strong men who came in with them.

Chapter 1692 WIP

Jack was a little confused. He thought that this woman must have come in with himself and others, but

she was lucky and got skills. Maybe she got some treasures, which broke through the cultivation of Heavenly Second Grade. Moreover, this woman is mostly an elder of the Supreme Clarity sect.

Unexpectedly, after seeing the front of the other party, he was a little stunned, because the woman in front of him looked only 17 or 18 years old, and there was no such a young master among the people who came in with everyone.

"This girl, thanks to my son's timely appearance just now, which saved your life. You should not blame my son for robbing your spiritual grass, will you?"

At this time, Nash and others also flew over here, and he immediately said with a smile.

However, when he saw the other party's face clearly, the smile on his face also stiffened in an instant.

Because he also feels that the woman in front of him looks too young, and she has no impression at all.

The girl looked carefully at the people in front of her, and finally opened her mouth in surprise: "You, so many of you, where did you come from? Which village in Jiuzhai?

"It's over, house owner, this woman, it seems to be the indigenous people here!"

Ye Wuma reacted, his face dulled, and immediately said softly to Nash.

The corners of Nash's mouth immediately twitched a few times. Unexpectedly, he met the indigenous people here again. What if the other party also doesn't like them from outside?

"We don't know which village we came from!"

Finally, Nash rubbed the bridge of his nose and said hesitantly.

The girl was not stupid. Soon, a pair of beautiful eyes opened the boss: "You, you can't come from that abandoned world, can you? Oh, my God, it must be. Why are there so many people coming from there?"

Looking at hundreds of people here, the girl's red lips were slightly opened in surprise and couldn't help stretching out her hand to cover her mouth.

Alejandro's face melted , and then said to Jack, "Master Jack, this woman is obviously an indigenous person here. There are no other accomplices here. I think for everyone's safety, I'd better kill this woman. Anyway, she is seriously injured now. Keep it, it's too dangerous for us. It's over!"

"Yes, yes, yes, we have to kill her, otherwise we will be in danger!"

Another elder of the Cabello family also said immediately.

Hearing this, the girl was so scared that she immediately clenched the sword in her hand and stepped back in a hurry: "You, don't go too far. I didn't offend you. I won't tell the guarding league!"

"Guard the League?"

Jack frowned even more about this girl's words. It was a little unclear. Therefore, the woman mentioned something about Jiuzhai before, but now there is another guard alliance, which makes him confused.

But obviously, what this woman said should be the power in this space.

After thinking about it, he said to the girl, "As long as you tell us something about it and let us know what's going on here, we can let you go!"

Chapter 1693 WIP

"What you said is true? Can't you go back on your word?"

The girl looked at Jack and asked suspiciously.

"Don't worry, I will naturally keep my word!"

Jack smiled indifferently, turned his palms, and directly took out a healing pill and threw it to the other party: "This is my healing pill. If you are injured, you can take it first!"

"Well, what kind of poison is this in case you lie to me?"

The girl snorted coldly and looked on guard.

"Ha ha, if I want to kill you, now you are seriously injured, I just need to do it directly. Why waste my so-called poison? Isn't that superfluous?"

Jack smiled and said with a little laughter.

The girl frowned and swallowed the pill doubtfully.

She looked at Jack and others before sneering and said, "Let's talk to you this way. Fortunately, you met me. I belong to Jiuzhai. Outside this forest, there are nine villages and nine punitivators between nine villages. When you have nothing to do, you will come to this forest to look for spiritual grass or something. Used for cultivation! So, at first, I thought you were from Jiuzhai, but it seems that you are not!"

Jack suddenly found that there were still nine villages outside the forest. The girl looked so young and

her cultivation was so high. I don't know how many people and masters there were in the nine villages.

"So what do you mean by Guarding League?"

After thinking about it, Jack asked the girl in front of him again.

"Ha ha, it's just a group of people, just self-proclaimed!"

The girl smiled bitterly, went to the bluestone beside her and sat down. Then she said, "I don't know how many years ago. This space here is actually with your abandoned space. However, for some reason, this aura is getting less and thinner and thinner every day. If it goes on like this, it will be more and more difficult to break through to the Ultimate God Realm, or even enter the soul realm!"

"What about it?"

Hearing these words, Jack and others took a breath of cool air. It seemed that from the girl's mouth, they should be able to ask something about the past.

The girl looked at Jack and said, "Then, there is a powerful man who is almost dead. Before he died, he separated the heavens and earth and isolated such a small world alone. In this small world, the aura is stronger than outside. By the way, you can get in here, which means you have also found those seven stone balls, right? Ha ha, I might as well tell you that the seven stone balls are constantly absorbing aura, and the absorbed aura has reached the world. After so many years, only those in our space can have cultivation resources, and only in this way can there still be three or even four-pin spiritual grass!"

The girl's words made everyone present feel turbulent. Unexpectedly, the aura outside was so thin. It was for this reason that this world was stealing the aura from their side, resulting in fewer and fewer practitioners.

If it goes on like this, there is no way to inherit it.

Everyone's faces were not very good-looking. If they hadn't found seven stone balls and learned something about it, they would have entered here, no one would have broken through the Ultimate God Realm in their lives.

Seeing Jack and others' faces so ugly, the girl smiled bitterly, "I can't help it. People are selfish. Otherwise, how can your world be called the abandoned world by us?"

Chapter 1694 WIP

"It seems that those strong people many years ago really planned to abandon us!"

Nash sighed with his face. If it hadn't been for the spread of the legend of Ultimate God Realm, and everyone had been looking for a way to break through the Ultimate God Realm, I'm afraid that with the passage of time, there would be no matter of Ultimate God Realm in a few more years, and no one could reach this place.

"Well, you guys came in with so many people all of a sudden. If the people who are guarded by the alliance know, it will be troublesome. There are too many people!"

Looking at the hundreds of people in front of her, the girl frowned and looked a little ugly.

However, after thinking about it, she looked at Jack again and said, "That's all right. If you hadn't appeared in time just now and saved my life, I wouldn't have been too lazy to help you!"

"Girl, you, are you deciding to help us?"

Ye Wurao heard this, his eyes lit up, and even his words became polite.

"If there are hundreds of people, I can still help you. It's very simple. Follow me to our village. I beg for mercy for the owner of the village. It's no problem to take you in. At that time, you will say that the

people in our village should not expose your identity, that's all!"

The girl smiled, and then felt her body again. Suddenly, she was surprised and said, "No, boy, you give me this pill. The effect is quite good. My injury is obviously much better. It's really amazing. The people in us, the wound- healing pills refined, don't have such an effect!"

"Ha ha, this is the young master of our family. Naturally, what he refines!"

Ye Wu laughed crazily, and then looked at the girl in front of him. Then he said, "Girl, can you really convince your village owner? It can't lie to us, can it? What's going on with the Guardian Alliance?

"If you guard the alliance, they are the people who came in together in those years, as well as their descendants. Anyway, it's completely against people outside to enter here and form an alliance in the name of guarding this holy place. If I see you, I will definitely kill you without hesitation!"

The girl smiled, and then thought of something again, exclaimed, "Why, no, how did you come in? If you come in, shouldn't you be at the entrance? There should be someone there to guard it. Although your cultivation is not high, if no one breaks through to the Ultimate God Realm before you enter here, you can't kill the other party.

Jack rubbed the bridge of his nose, and then slowly said, "In this way, the blood evil sect should be regarded as the guardian of the alliance!" There were indeed two disciples of the Blood evil Sect before and found us, but I killed them. Of course, when they were killed at that time, there was a sneak attack. I don't know what's going on. When I came in here, it deviated from the position of the entrance, at the foot of the mountain at the top of the entrance!"

"My God, you killed both of them? If you let the people of Xueshazong know it in the future, it will be troublesome."

The girl took a breath of coolness.

"Don't worry about this. There are many monsters here. Some of them are very powerful. The bodies of those two people should also be eaten by monsters. Even if the people of the Blood Shadow Sect know that their disciples are dead, they don't know that we did it. Maybe they thought they were killed by monsters!"

After thinking about it, Nash said aside.

Chapter 1695 WIP

"That's right. There should be no problem! You guys are also lucky, because no one has been able to find this place all the time, so no one comes in! There used to be a lot of people who stayed there, but later there were fewer and fewer people. Moreover, they used to be strong people with soul cultivation, who guarded the entrance!"

The girl smiled and then said again, "However, year after year, I find that no one comes in, no one cares. Those sent to guard are all disciples with low cultivation. Otherwise, most of you will die when you come in. Moreover, it is precisely because no one cares about it that the formation there is estimated to be a little problem, so When you came in, they didn't appear on the top of the mountain, but some deviations in the position!"

"So that's it, tut-tut, thanks to our luck. If there were people who entered the soul to protect the past, we would come in and appear on the top of the mountain. If we appeared at the entrance, wouldn't we be sure to die?"

Everyone took a breath of coolness. The girl's words made everyone afraid for a while.

"So, you are really lucky that you came here, and some people are even luckier to break through to heavenly practice!"

The girl smiled, but soon felt something wrong, and immediately frowned and said, "No, logically, if you are outside, it is at most the peak cultivation of the real divine realm. Among the hundreds of you, there is not much cultivation of the peak of the real divine realm, are there? Those seven stone balls are put in a more dangerous place, just to prevent you from finding seven stone balls if you people, and there are

not many strong ones?"

Jack smiled bitterly before he said to the other party, "This girl, in fact, the only people we have come in, but also hundreds of people have come in. Almost 400,000 people have come in. In addition, I'm afraid there are 500,000 or 600,000 people sneaking in by the sea forces!"

"Hiss!"

As soon as this was said, the girl in front of her immediately took a cold breath, which was really shocked by Jack's words.

She swallowed her saliva and said incredibly, "No way? Are you sure you didn't lie to me? Come in, 500 to 600,000 people? Oh, my God, if there are so many people, I can't help you. Why don't you go back quickly? Otherwise, if found by the people who guard the alliance, it will die!"

"It's impossible. We finally came here. Even if we die here, we can't go back now! When I got back there, there was not so much spiritual grass or something. How could I continue to practice?

There is an old man of the Cabello family, even if he said.

"Yes, there are so many of us. It's not so easy for them to catch us. Just act separately!"

Alejandro obviously has no intention to go back now. Everyone came here with a lot of pain. It was more uncomfortable to let them go back at this time than killing everyone.

"I have to go back. Fernando's body is still waiting for me to go back for treatment. But it's not now!"

Jack also smiled bitterly and then said.

"There are so many people in, so what about the others? It should have been separated, right? This forest is quite big, and there are many monsters, and you rob each other. I don't know how many people can leave this forest alive!"

The girl looked at Jack and others, bit the sexy red lip and said.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1696

“Yeah. Not sure how the others are doing. Sigh! If they run into the people of the Alliance Guard, they’ll be in big trouble!”

Nash frowned as he spoke, his heart heavy. After all, Yule and Lizzie-his beloved daughter and second wife—had followed him here. If something bad happened to them, he would certainly be in extreme pain.

“Hehe, don’t worry about this yet. They should still be safe right now. After all, the people of Alliance Guard don’t always come here and very few of them actually wander around here to find treasure. This is because this area belongs to the Nine Armies!”

At this moment, the purple-clad girl smiled and introduced, “And the Nine Armies are acting under the slogan of ‘Anti-Alliance Guard’, you should know what that means, right?”

“Anti-Alliance Guard?”|

Nash and the others were taken aback by her words, then their spirits lifted again.

jackie felt delighted about the situation as well. “So, you’re also implying that there’s still some part of people here who do not hate the outsiders like us?” He asked carefully.

The young lady bobbed her head and added, “Indeed! The people who favor the concept of anti-alliance guard prefer a natural way. That means if someone finds this place and enters, they’ll think that it’s God’s will! So, certainly, they don’t have the intention to kill outsiders like you, or at least, they don’t intend to pursue after the outsiders. Besides, people who are anti-Alliance Guard are mainly from the Harmonic Clan. It was an old ancestor of the Harmonic Clan who secretly passed down the martial techniques and cultivation skills and resources to his descendants. And, in the past, this made some of his descendants from the outside enter into this place!”

The young girl paused for several seconds before continuing, “It was also because of this matter, the bloodiest battle arose between the Alliance Guard and people who were against the Alliance Guard. In the end, both parties suffered great losses, so they negotiated and signed an armistice agreement. Of course, even after the agreement, there are still frictions and competitions between both parties, especially in scavenging treasures in this place. So, the disciples of the Alliance Guard and Anti-Alliance Guard would often fight each other!”

“I see. Miss, since you belong to the side of the Anti-Alliance Guard, I wonder if you can help us out? It’s God’s heavenly will for us to be able to come in here!”

Kenneth chuckled sheepishly at the young girl and asked politely, “By the way, may I know your name?”

The young girl smiled bitterly before answering, “My name is Ella Lavigne. Just call me Ella!”

However, several lines formed between Ella’s forehead. “I want to help you. If there were only several hundred of you, I can help you and that wouldn’t be a problem. After all, we have a lot of people in the Nine Armies, and it’s not hard to shelter you in my clan. It’s easy to hide a few hundred people, and as long as you don’t expose yourself, nobody will know you came from the outside! But…but…the issue now is you have hundreds of thousands of people! How can I hide all of you?”|

Silence arose in the crowd. It was impossible to take in hundreds of thousands of people, and once the Alliance Guard found out, it would put the people of the Nine Armies in great trouble!

jackie clenched his jaws as he thought. “Miss Ella, let’s just pretend we didn’t meet today; You’ve not seen us today! If the Nine Armies are willing to take us in, we’ll gladly accept the invitation, but if they’re not, we’re fine with it too! We’ll train hard and improve our strength. Now, at least the Alliance Guard is not aware of our existence, so we can try to enhance our combat prowess as much as possible!”

“He’s right. This place is big, and we can hide in some of the remote places. It won’t be easy for the Alliance Guard to detect us and sniff us out. As long as we train hard and improve quickly, we still have hopes of surviving! Besides, how would they know if we are outsiders or people from the Nine Armies, right?”

Alejandro spilled his thoughts after thinking about it.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1697

“Hmm…if that’s the case…”

Ella’s forehead knitted together. After a brief moment of silence, she finally said, “Well, I can pretend that I’ve not seen you guys today. The Nine Armies is made up of nine fortresses and there’s something special about us. Although we belong to the Anti-Alliance Guard, we’re not united in fact. All fortresses are playing their own game and having their own desires. So, I’d advise you not to enter any of the fortresses if the situation permits.”

Ella stared at jackie and the tokens on their waist. “In fact, it’s freaking easy to know if you’re coming from the outside world, your token on your waist for example. In here, let it be the Nine Armies or the Alliance Guard, we all have our clan symbolic tokens on our waist belts. With these tokens, we can immediately identify where they come from!”

The corners of the crowd’s mouths twitched upon hearing Ella’s words. If what she said was true, it would be truly troublesome for jackie and the group. It would be risky and dangerous for them to wander around the place!

“Right. Miss Ella, in this piece of land, Bloodshed Clan and the people of the Alliance Guard for example, to what extent those strong ones can grow in their martial level?”

jackie stopped to think for a moment and asked Ella.

The corners of Ella’s mouth turned up as she heard. “The highest martial level among them is ninth-grade soul-penetrating level. They cannot go any further because something is lacking in the Chi energy here, and nobody knows what is missing!” She answered.

“Alright. Thank you, Miss Ella, for telling us so much. Otherwise, we’d be truly confused, and would even get killed without knowing why!”

jackie smiled dryly before he arched his hand and gave her a fist-to-palm salute. “Well, Miss Ella, I hope you can keep your promise and not tell your master about us. In this way, we can buy ourselves some more time.”

Ella nodded. “I can do that! But, the other people of the Nine Armies will come in here to look for spirited resources occasionally, and you can’t hide hundreds of thousands of people!”

“Yes, I’m aware of it. We’ll see.”|

Helplessness surged through jackie’s heart but there was nothing he could do other than raising his martial level. He understood the importance of training and improving his combat prowess.

Several people on his side had broken through to the ultimate god realm, but to survive, he still had to raise his martial level to a higher level, otherwise, if the enemy sent out some random seventh-grade or eighth-grade ultimate god-level fighters to go after them, he and his men would not be able to defend themselves.

Therefore, whether it was for the sake of fending off the Alliance Guard or lifting the curse off Selena, jackie realized the importance of urgently improving his martial level.

“Okay!”

Ella looked at jackie and returned a fist-to-palm salute before flying into the sky. “I’ll take my leave then!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1698

Looking at Ella's figure as she flew away, Alejandro frowned, and hundreds of emotions flooded his heart.

An old man from the Cabello family, at this time, stepped forward and whispered to jackie, "Young Master jackie, are you really going to let her go? Just like that? What if she returns to her place and tells the others about what happened here? For the sake of our safety, I'd suggest killing her now! She's injured and less of a match for you!"

However, the old man's proposal was met with a cold and vicious stare from jackie. "Since when are we a fan of going back on our word? We promised to spare her!"

jackie ceased talking and a dry smile crawled onto his face. "Besides, she has given us so much useful information! Information that could save our lives. If she hadn't told us all that, we'd have gone out recklessly and entered the territory of the Alliance Guard. And when we enter their territory, do you think we'd have a chance to live?"

" jackie's right. Ella told us a lot of useful information!"

Alejandro bobbed his head approvingly. "Besides, even if she doesn't tell us, the hundreds of thousands of people will soon be discovered by the people here. This is something that will happen sooner or later. jackie's absolutely right about improving our marital arts status. The only thing we can do right now is to strive to raise our martial level. As for our safety, we're temporarily safe. Ella had said that we're near to the Nine Armies and the people of the Nine Armies will not kill us, at least!"

"Alright. Let's continue to look for spirited grasses! But we also have to be careful! After all, the people of the Nine Armies are not united!"

jackie nodded and led everyone to continue flying forward, searching for spirited grasses.

Frankly speaking, there was a generous amount of second-grade and third-grade spirited grasses in this forest, but fourth-grade spirited grasses were rare.

jackie and the group wandered and scavenged through the forest the whole day but could not find any fourth-grade spirited grass. Fortunately, they collected plenty of third-grade spirited grasses!

Something truly worth mentioning was that jackie and the group had finally met Yule, Lizzie, and some other young people of the White family that afternoon!

Their spirits brightened immediately at the sight of each other. Yule, Lizzie, and the young people, whose martial levels were not high, were living in fear for the past few days, fearing that they might run into some monster beast of true god level.

At night, jackie naturally continued to create and refine some third-grade elementary-level pills. On this very night, jackie's success rate of refining third-grade pills had improved a lot, this included the speed of refining. He was refining six sets of pills and three sets of them were successfully created. So, he harvested three sets of third-grade elementary-level pills.

After seeing this amazing alchemy talent of jackie, although the crowd felt heavy in their hearts, they started to see light at the end of the tunnel again.

After all, third-grade alchemists were rare and hard to be found.

"We have six fighters of first-grade ultimate god level and six third-grade pills. Let's take one for each of us. And I think the pills will help us to raise our martial level by at least two grades!"

jackie smiled as he distributed the pills to Nash, Kenneth, Titus, and Alejandro. Each of them got themselves a pill.

"Heh? You will give it to us just like that? I don't have to trade it with anything? I…I haven't gathered the needed materials for this pill yet!"

Kenneth held the precious pill on his palm, hand trembling. He could hardly contain his excitement right now.

“I can’t use six pills alone for now. I can see that we have stabilized our first-grade ultimate god realm. Hmm. Tomorrow! Let’s do it tomorrow! We’ll continue to search for more spirited grasses during the day, and at night, we’ll find a remote cave for the six of us to hide. Let’s attempt to break through to the third-grade ultimate realm. It’s difficult to break into a different and a higher realm, but it should be easier to make a breakthrough to a different grade within the realm.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1699

After jackie thought about it, he told everyone, “After all, if all of us break into the third-grade ultimate god realm, our ability to protect ourselves in this forest will increase a lot.”

“Haha. Then I won’t hold back anymore!”

Alejandro burst into laughter. He suddenly felt that it was the right choice to establish good relations with the White family-a fantastically wise choice. Otherwise, how could he enter this land so easily and break into the ultimate god realm so soon!

Lancelot’s heart was full of admiration. The last time, he had failed to make a breakthrough to the first-grade ultimate god realm. He probably needed to wait a few more days before he could try the second time. After all, although making a breakthrough from the peak of True God Realm to the first-grade ultimate god realm looked like it was just a single step, it was actually a huge breakthrough. Just that one step felt like crossing a gorge. The fighting power of the first-grade ultimate god realm and the peak of True God Realm were two different matters entirely.

The next morning, everybody happily searched for the spirited grass.

However, they never imagined that along the way, they would actually run into disciples from the Pavilion of Soaring fighting with the Pavilion of Skies for spirited grass.

“Young Master jackie, save us!”

As the numbers of the disciples of the Pavilion of Soaring were too few, they were being surrounded by a group that was a few times their number. Many of them had already died, and even though they were preparing to give up their spirited grass, the enemy had no intention of letting them go.

“That’s right, Young Master jackie. We’ll give you the spirited grass as long as you save our lives!”

The disciples of the Pavilion of Soaring all had terrified expressions.

jackie had wanted to kill the people of the Pavilion of Skies for a long time coming. How could he miss such a good opportunity before him?

Besides, if he could kill over two hundred people from the Pavilion of Skies, he would be able to obtain plenty of treasures. After all, these people had been in the area for almost ten days. They would probably have plenty of second-grade and third-grade spirited grass on them.

“Young Master jackie, our Pavilion has never meddled in your affairs. This is something between us and the Pavilion of Soaring. We hope that you won’t interfere in this. Otherwise, you’ll be making an enemy of the Pavilion of Skies!”

The people from the Pavilion of Skies were naturally shocked by jackie and the others’ abrupt appearance. One of the men, who was at the intermediate stage of True God Realm, immediately told jackie.

“Haha. We’ve never been allies with the Pavilion of Skies anyway!”

jackie laughed after he heard this. “Did you really think that you, the Four Ancient Clans, are as strong and mighty as before, instilling fear in us once your names are mentioned? Wake up! The name, “Pavilion of Skies is useless now!”

The people of the Pavilion of Soaring were all delighted when they heard this. They could tell that jackie was going to take action.

“Young Master jackie, ever since our cultivation level has improved, we wanted to put our skills to the test long ago!”

Kenneth, Titus, and others all slammed their fists into their palms, eager to test their strength.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1700

“Haha. I knew that all of you were itching to fight. Go ahead and fight if you want to. I’ll just watch on!”

jackie did not know whether to laugh or cry. He shrugged his shoulders helplessly and replied to them.

“Charge!”

Kenneth, Titus, and the others had all been eager to show off their skills. After listening to jackie’s words, they all shot out like a stampede, killing everyone they saw before them.

Naturally, Titus, Alejandro, and the others were also alert. They all flew out quickly, afraid that they would be slightly slower than the others.

“No way. Ultimate god status?”

“My god. There’s so many of them!”

The people from the Pavilion of Skies completely lost all hope when they saw this.

“My god. They’re too strong!”

“Only a few days have passed and there are already people who suddenly broke into the ultimate god realm?”

The disciples of the Pavilion of Soaring were surprised. The faint golden glow of Chi filled them with admiration.

Bang bang bang!

The sounds of fighting quickly rang out and ended even faster. After a while, the disciples of the Pavilion of Skies ended up as corpses splayed on the floor.

“Why are all of you rushing out as well? We’ve just: warmed up and everyone’s dead already?”

Kenneth looked at Titus and the others, speaking a few helpless words. It was evident that he was not satisfied.

“Our hands are itching too. You think you’re the only one?”

Titus glared at Kenneth and replied angrily.

“Gulp!”

The disciples from the Pavilion of Soaring who had begged for jackie’s help came before him and said,” Thank you all for helping us. We-we’ll give all our spirited grass to you!”

jackie looked at everyone before answering, “Your cultivation levels are not very high. It’ll be useful for you to keep some spirited grass for yourself. How about this? Take out all your spirited grass and I’ll see if there’s any that are suitable for me to create pills. I’ll pick some out if there are, and keep the rest for yourself!”

Here, jackie thought of something else and told the People of the Pavilion of Soaring, “The situation here is really complicated. I’ll tell you what’s going on in a while. If you see your sect master or someone else, tell them about all this. Otherwise, I’m afraid that I wouldn’t even know if you’re dead!”

“Thank you, Young Master jackie! Thank you! We will be forever grateful for your kindness!”

The disciples from the Pavilion of Soaring were all extremely grateful. They took out their spirited grass and levitated it in midair, allowing jackie to take his pick.

After jackie studied the spirited grass for a while, he straightaway chose a few materials he could use to create pills. Only then did he gesture for them to keep the spirited grass. After that, he told them about the Alliance Guard and the Anti-Alliance Guard. Then he waved his hand, indicating that they could leave.

Meanwhile, the other people from the White family retrieved the martial rings from the disciples of the Pavilion of Skies that had been slain, taking their spoils of war.

“There’s quite a bit of treasure on these people from the Pavilion of Skies. Hehe. Take your pick, Young Master jackie. We’ll split the rest between ourselves!”

Titus and the others spoke while chuckling. Everybody knew that only with jackie taking some of the spirited grass, he could create alchemy pills. Then the spirited grass could be used to their greatest potential.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1701

At that point, Jackie was everyone's hope. They could only grow their strength quickly to protect themselves better amidst the recent run-ins with the Alliance Guard.

"Hahaha, I'll help myself then!"

Jackie started picking after a hearty laugh.

In the afternoon, they continued to search for spirited grass. Perhaps due to their breakthrough, Jackie and the others were delayed for a few days so they hardly met others along the way.

That caused Jackie to feel slightly worried. He was worried that quite a number of people may have been killed by the Alliance Guard after exiting the forest.

Of course, he could not be bothered about those from the Cloud Sky Sect or the Hall of Divine Royal as they were his enemies. If he met them, he would have killed them too.

In the night, Jackie and the others finally found a rather secluded cave. They left some people patrolling the perimeter to stand guard while those who needed to train did so within the cave.

Jackie's group of six experts of the first grade ultimate god-level all sat down within the cave and took out the three highly sought-after third-grade elementary-level pills. They started preparing for their breakthrough after swallowing the pills.

The vortex of Chi within Jackie's body had been helping him absorb the natural Chi around him, therefore making his fighting prowess the most stable among the group. Moreover, he had improved significantly.

Add to that, his familiarity with the circulation of Chi around his meridians, his training speed was significantly faster than the last time he broke through to the first grade ultimate god realm by a large margin.

After only one night, Jackie's body vibrated lightly and his fighting prowess had already reached the second-grade ultimate godlevel.

At that moment, only a small portion of the pill within Jackie's body was used up with a big portion of it remaining.

Almost immediately after the vibration emanated from his body, Jackie instantly restrained them. Everything happened incredibly quickly. Without careful examination, it was difficult to tell that Jackie had just broken through.

He rejoiced internally and continued to circulate his Chi. Judging from the remaining strength of the pill in his body, he might be able to achieve the third-grade ultimate god-level in one go, which also gave him the hopes to move forward to the fourth-grade ultimate god-level.

Only then did he realize the impressiveness of his martial art technique which allowed him to train his Chi vortex at all times.

As expected, after spending two full days, Jackie managed to reach the fourth-grade ultimate god realm at the very last moment. Moreover, he absorbed the powers from the pill much faster compared to his five companions, finishing up a few hours earlier.

"How was it? Was it good?"

Seeing Jackie opening his eyes and standing up, Daniello, Selena, and the others quickly gathered around him as they looked at him expectantly.

“Hahaha, it’s a completely different feeling! This is just wonderful!”

Jackie, who broke through three levels in one go, gripped his fists. The explosive growth of strength within his body brought him great joy.

With his powerful martial art technique and his terrifying combat powers, Jackie believed that he could defeat an opponent in the sixth-grade ultimate god-level without much trouble while being at the fourth-grade ultimate god-level himself.

After some time, the five finished absorbing the power from the pills one after another and got up with an expression of great satisfaction.

“This is great. Third-grade ultimate god level at last! This third-grade elementary level pill is really something!”

Nash clenched his fists with an excited look on his face.

“Yeah, we’re finally at the third-grade ultimate god-level!” Alejandro exclaimed excitedly.

It was obvious that nobody knew Jackie had reached the fourth-grade ultimate god realm.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1702

“Hahaha, it’s all thanks to Young Master Jackie. If not for him, we wouldn’t have obtained these treasured third-grade elementary pills. Who knows how much spirited grass and training time we would need to break through slowly?!” Alejandro laughed heartily along.

He took a look outside and frowned. “Too bad it’s already dark outside. Otherwise, I’d love to find a few powerful monster beasts to try my strength!”

“Leave that for tomorrow morning!”

Nash chuckled bitterly while flexing his fists. The increase in strength within him made him feel extremely comfortable.

“Brother Jackie, Big Brother Jackie, I have some good news for you. Sister-in-law and I both had a breakthrough!” Yule announced happily while she rushed giddily toward Jackie.

Hearing that brought a smile to Jackie’s face. “Really? You’re already at the middle stage of the true god level? You have decent talent. Work hard and aim to reach the first-grade ultimate god-level sooner. That way you’ll look even better! Once you reach the ultimate god stage, your aging will slow down even more!”

“Really? Hehehe, then I’ll have to work even harder!”

Yule chuckled, then shot another look at Selena before saying, “Sister-in-law’s talent is even better. She’s already at the late stage of the true god level. By the look of things, she’ll be reaching the ultimate god-level very soon!”

“Yeah. Her talent is truly amazing. When she reaches the peak of the true god-level, I’ll give her a pill to help her achieve the fighting prowess of the ultimate god level!”

Jackie smiled as he nodded. He naturally hoped for Selena's fighting prowess to grow faster. That way, she would be able to protect herself should anything happen while he was not around.

"Since it's already nighttime, you guys should stabilize your fighting prowess first! Meanwhile, I'll start refining some pills. It's about time to try refining some third grade intermediate pills!"

Jackie looked around and then sat down in a lotus position. He only had two recipes for the third-grade intermediate-level pills and they were both from the records of the First Elder from the Cabello family.

At that moment, the only thing that troubled Jackie was the lack of recipes for third-grade premium pills and fourth grade pills. After this, the search for pill recipes was a higher priority. However, in their situation, they could only take things one step at a time.

Fortunately, there was plenty of third grade spirited grass in the forest. That helped Jackie to obtain quite a number of third-grade intermediate-level spirited grass, which allowed him to try refining the two types of pills.

Knowing Jackie was about to start refining third-grade intermediate-level pills, everyone quieted down in fear of disturbing him.

After all, Jackie was their only chance to grow stronger in a short time and survive.

Boom!

Beyond the cave, another intermediate stage true god-level monster beast was killed by Yolanda and Vinu's concerted efforts.

“Yolanda, you’re really amazing. You’re already at the peak of the true god level. Once you get a pill from the young master, you’ll be able to reach the ultimate god level. I’m so envious of you. After all, you’re already the Ninth Elder of the White family despite being so young!”

After killing the monster beast, Yolanda forced a smile and said to vinus, “Asking for a pill from Young Master Jackie? That might not be a good idea. The other elders are all from the White family. Alejandro is the master of the Cabello family and his daughter has some unusual relationship with Jackie. Only then was he given a pill.”

Yolanda frowned, then added, “After all, you and I used to be members of the Lagorio family. Although we have sworn our loyalty to the White family, we still carry the Lagorio family name after all. To reach the first-grade ultimate god-level, we would need at least one second-grade premium pill. Those pills are highly treasured. I really can’t bring myself to ask for one.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1703

“You’re being too reserved. Jackie is a righteous leader. Back when I sent Lily back to the Lagorio family, Jackie and the others did not even care about it. He never once picked on me because of that. Trust me, Jackie will treat everyone equally. Them making you an elder is the best proof of that!”

Xavier maintained his smile. “If you’re too shy to ask him yourself, I’ll ask him for you some other time. I’ll just say you’ve reached the peak stage of the true god level and would like to serve the White family better. Young Master Jackie will surely understand my intention!”

“T-T-That’s not a good idea!”

Even though Yolanda wanted to get her hands on a second-grade premium level pill as it would greatly reduce the difficulty for her to grow her prowess, she was too shy to ask for it, especially with her being a girl.

“What’s so bad about it? I’ll ask him on your behalf in a few days!” Xavier stated nonchalantly.

“Okay. I wonder how’s Young Master Jackie and the others are doing now. Have they broken through? They were using third grade elementary-level pills. Do you think they’ll be able to reach the third-grade ultimate god-level?” Yolanda added with a smile.

“As for that, we’ll know by tomorrow!” Xavier replied after some thoughts.

The next morning, Jackie and company came out from the cave.

Jackie looked at everyone before landing his sights on Yolanda and said, “Ninth Elder, good job. Seems like you’ve reached the peak stage of the true god-level. You and Venus are both at the peak true god stage now.”

Having said that, Jackie opened his palm, revealing two second-grade premium level pills, and stated, “Ninth Elder, take one each for you and Venus. Once you’ve stabilized your level, find a suitable time to try to reach for the first-grade ultimate god-level. After all, you guys have mastered the martial art technique.”

Venus and Yolanda were surprised upon hearing that statement.

That was especially so for Yolanda. Right after discussing with Venus if they should ask Jackie for a pill. They did not expect Jackie to give them one before they even asked.

“I-I-I don’t think this is a good idea?”

Yolanda looked at Jackie who was standing before her. At that moment, he gave her the feeling of a superior ruler. She was glad to have made her choice back then. Jackie and Nash were truly suitable candidates to lead the White family to grow stronger.

“What’s so bad about it? With a few more people at the ultimate god-level, our White family will be stronger. That way, it’ll be easier for us to handle any emergency situations!”

Jackie chuckled, then intentionally asked with a poker face, “Could it be that you’re not willing to reach the ultimate god-level to avoid serving our White family?”

“Of course I want to! It’s my dream to reach the ultimate god-level!” Yolanda replied bashfully while nodding repeatedly.

“Thank you Young Master Jackie. I won’t stand in ceremony with you then!”

Venus walked over to take the pills and passed one to Yolanda. “Yolanda, just take it. You’ll have to raise your fighting prowess to repay the White family!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1704

“Yeah, I’ll definitely work harder. I’ll do anything for the White family!”

Yolanda received the pills gratefully and put them away with the utmost care.

“Let’s go. This forest is a pretty good place with plenty of spirited grass. So long as the Alliance Guard’s forces aren’t eyeing this area, we can stay a little longer and hopefully raise our fighting prowess further,” Jackie said after taking another look at the forest before him.

“Hehehe, let’s go. Although this forest has ultimate god-level monster beasts, their fighting prowess seems to be lacking. We have only met monster beasts of the second-grade ultimate god-level at most. So far there are no signs of any third or fourth-grade ultimate god-level monster beasts. It should be pretty safe!” Nash, who had just reached the third-grade ultimate god-level, started chuckling. He was brimming with energy and eager to try to hit hands on some stronger monster beasts.

“Sigh, I wonder how things are with my sister.”

Meanwhile, Daniella thought of her sister, Helena. She could not help but feel slightly worried.

“Yeah. If we hide for two more days to train, the others might have traveled further or even left the forest. I’m afraid it’ll be even more difficult to find them again!”

Hearing that, Alejandro frowned immediately. After all, many unknown dangers were lurking in the area and nobody could foresee the future. All he wanted was to keep his three daughters safe by his side and to know if Helena was safe.

“There’s plenty of third-grade spirited grass in this forest. I believe they won’t leave this place so fast. They will surely stay within the forest to look for martial art techniques in hopes of reaching the ultimate god-level, especially those at the peak stage of the true god-level. With third-grade spirited grass in

hand, it should be no problem for them to reach the first-grade ultimate god-level if they refine a few stalks!"

After some thoughts, Jackie continued, "Therefore, some of them will surely look for places to stay in to advance their training. This way, we can still catch up with some of them!"

"That's right. Let's go and check out ahead!"

Nash nodded along. Everyone started levitating as they moved forward slowly in search of spirited grass.

Sounds of combat could still be heard from within the forest. However, the forest was too big. Jackie and the others could only follow the sound to check things out.

After all, if the commotion turned out to be their family fighting for resources with others, they should have an easier time rescuing their family with their current fighting prowess.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1705

At that moment, sounds of a terrible battle were coming from the direction that Jackie and the others were headed in. Master Whiteager and his group from the Divine King Sect were being surrounded by Elder Mosley and his group from the Hall of Divine Royal.

Harry Yeager had a terrible expression on. In the past few days, he finally found a martial art technique and managed to help two other elders in the true god-level to break through to the first-grade ultimate god-level.

The others from his group got separated, but they managed to regroup with almost eight hundred people. To their surprise, they ran into the group from the Hall of Divine Royal and were surrounded.

If it was not for the experts at the true god level by his side, their group would have been annihilated by their opponents.

However, their situation was not looking good. Not only were they outnumbered, but Elder Mosley from the Hall of Divine Royal had also reached the second-grade ultimate god-level. Moreover, they have three more experts at the first-grade ultimate god level as well. It was evident that they benefited greatly after entering the forest.

Right then, Harry's group had suffered over 200 casualties. Although their opponents suffered similar casualties, that outcome was more substantial on Harry's side. They attempted to break through the blockade several times, but they all ended in failure.

Quite a number of people in their group had suffered significant injuries. If their opponents were to strike them again, they would be in trouble.

"Master Whiteager, I suggest you surrender and join us. Things are different now. If your group joins our Hall of Divine Royal, I can even give you the seat of an elder!" Elder Mosley smirked condescendingly.

“Oh, I almost forgot. That dumb*ss Matthew keeps making stupid decisions. I heard from my men that his corpse was found in the forest. Hahaha, that idiot appeared to have died in less than two days after entering the forest. By my guess, he hasn’t even reached the ultimate god-level yet. How funny for him to die just like that!”

The other old man made an ingratiating expression as he spoke to Elder Mosley, “Master Moseley, such is destiny. He is destined to die while you acquired a martial art technique right after entering the forest and broke through to the second-grade ultimate god-level. Hahaha, you’re the chosen one. The Hall of Divine Royal will surely soar to the heavens with you as the lead!”

“Hahaha, of course! The position of hall master should’ve been mine a long time ago. That idiot Matthew wouldn’t have been the hall master if not for him being stronger than me back then.”

Angus roared with laughter. “Once I find the others from the Hall of Divine Royal and have them gather their forces from overseas to join us, then those forces on this continent will have to obey me or die!”

Meanwhile, another martial artist at the first-grade ultimate god-level snickered, “However, I must admit that Matthew might be stupid, but his talent was quite good. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have been able to surpass Eld…I mean Master Moseley before he entered this forest!”

Hearing that, Angus’ face darkened as he said, “Nonsense! Do you really think he has great talent? Hmph. Whenever we acquire treasures to raise our prowess, he would take away most of them. Once, I had a chance to surpass him in one go, but guess what? He took my treasure away! Otherwise, how else would he keep us suppressed?”

Angus grew agitated as he ranted, “I’m already old and had little interest in the position of hall master. Unexpectedly, the heavens blessed me with this chance to come here, giving me the opportunity to rise as an expert of the ultimate god-level with a longer lifespan. The only regret I have was to not have killed him with my own hands. Otherwise, I’ll have him suffer great humiliation before killing him!”

Harry’s expression was truly horrible. How could Angus ask them, one of the Four Ancient Clans, to surrender? If news got out, they would die from embarrassment!

However, it was an arduous journey for him to reach the ultimate god-level with an extended lifespan. Could this be the end of the line for him? At that moment, he was stuck in a great dilemma.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1706

“Pavilion master, I-I don’t want to die here. There is so much spirited grass here and the Chi is so rich here. I wouldn’t be able to rest in peace if I die here like this when we’ve just seen hope!” An elder of the Divine King Sect approached Harry and said softly after gritting his teeth.

Harry glanced at the elder standing beside him and was afraid that the others would hear them. He said after gritting his teeth, “Bullsh*t, do you think I want to die? However, there are only several hundred of us here and we have yet to find the other members of the Divine King Sect. It’s shameful for us to just surrender like this. Apart from that, how can we surrender when we’ve already broken through into the first-grade ultimate god-level?”

The elder was speechless and he said helplessly, “But there aren’t any other ways. Why don’t we pretend to surrender and look for an opportunity to escape when there’s a chance to? We don’t know if any of the elders from our sect had already broken through into the second-grade ultimate god-level. It would be great if there were!”

“It’s useless even if they’ve already broken through. Unless they appear now, wouldn’t our death be definite? We need to resolve this imperative issue!” Harry had a darkened expression on his face as he felt that it was embarrassing to surrender but he was unconvinced to die just like this. Dying was a tragic reality for him now as he had just broken through to the first-stage ultimate god-level with many difficulties.

How could he just die like that before he knew about what was going on and what forces were in this area?

“What are the two of you mumbling between yourselves over there? Have you made up your mind after discussing it for such a long time?” Angus Moseley waited for some time and said impatiently when he saw the two secretly discussing something over there.

Harry opened his mouth but he was unable to say the words of surrendering as he felt that it was really shameful.

He was extremely speechless when the old lady from his sect, who had already broken through into the first-stage ultimate god-level, actually walked forward and said loudly while pointing her sword. “Old man, don’t you think that our sect master will surrender. Our sect master is the leader of the Divine King Sect, one of the four ancient clans. He would rather die standing than die kneeling. I understand him well enough and he definitely would not surrender!”

Harry almost vomited blood and he wanted to give this old lady a beating. In the past, he would definitely not be afraid of death as he was already old and had not many years left. On top of that, nobody was capable of killing him so he was confident when he spoke.

However, the situation now was different and he had another 100 more years to live his life. According to the calculation of his longevity, he was considered a middle-aged man right now. If it was not for his appearance, his life would have been perfect.

“That’s right! Our sect master definitely wouldn’t surrender to evil forces!” Another patronum also stood forward and said loudly. He looked like he was not afraid of death but he did not realize the darkened expressions on Harry and another elder’s face.

“That’s right! We shall fight them with all we have and the worst ending is just death! What’s so frightening about that!”

The other disciples also said angrily, “So many of our disciples are dead. Almost one to two hundred of them are dead. F*ck! We shall fight them with all we have and kill as many of them as we can!”

Harry was speechless. It looked like he was being put in a situation where it was impossible for him to stop.

“Haha… Who would have expected these people to be so strong-willed? If that’s the case, fulfill their wishes and kill all of them!” Angus laughed loudly and said with a wave of his hand.

“Pavilion master, look over there. There’s a group of people and it looks like there are a lot of them. There should be around a thousand of them!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1707

Just when Harry was about to give up, the elder who persuaded him to surrender suddenly saw a group of people flying over from far away.

“Yes, we just don’t know which forces these people belong to. There are many people from the forces in the seas and there’s a big possibility that they are one of them. Even if these are people from the mainland, the members of the other sect might not help us. Some of the forces would love to strike us while we are at our weakest!” Harry frowned and still did not carry much hope.

“Haha… They seem to be members of the White family and one of them seems to be Nash White. The White family has an enmity with the forces of the seas. When they went to the Black Windy Island with several other families, they had a battle with the members from the forces of the seas! I’m sure they will be willing to help us!” The elder was delighted when he suddenly saw a familiar figure among the group of people in front of them.

“Really? It seems true. F*ck me, young man Jackie is also there!” Harry rubbed his eyes cautiously. He was extremely happy as Jackie and the others seemed to be coming toward their direction.

“Hall master, what should we do? It looks like others are coming and there are quite a number of them!” An old man from the Hall of Divine Royal was immediately panicked. Although they had the upper hand at that moment, there seemed to be a large number of people coming over from afar. If both parties worked together, they might not be the other party’s opponent.

“Why should we be afraid? Our hall master is now at the second-grade ultimate god level and how many people have already broken through into the second-grade ultimate god-level like him? The other party has a large number of people but they will be so frightened that they would not help the other party when they learn that we have masters in the second-grade ultimate god-level here with us!” A member of the Hall of Divine Royal smiled coldly and did not seem to care as he hugged his arms across his chest.

Another 20 seconds later, Jackie and the others had already arrived at the scene. They formed an arc-shaped formation and had gradually surrounded the members of the Hall of Divine Royal.

“Members of the White family and members of the Cabello family?” Angus slightly narrowed his eyes before speaking to Jackie and the others. “Jackie, our previous hall master, Matthew, went up against you because of his stupidity and I do not plan to. Look into those past grudges. Now, I’m already in the second-grade ultimate god level and I’m the new hall master of the Hall of Divine Royal. Today, we plan to kill these insensible people and I hope that you will not interfere!” Angus was slightly fearful as Jackie was a talented young man and he had no idea which level he had already achieved. This young man had the combat power to kill his enemies of a higher level. If he had broken through again, they would not be his opponent as there were a huge amount of them here.

“Haha… You only said this because you aren’t certain when you see how many of us are here, right?” Unexpectedly, Jackie had already seen through his thoughts and said to Angus with a smile on his face. “It doesn’t matter if Matthew is a dumb person, he used to be the Hall of Divine Royal’s hall master and represents the Hall of Divine Royal. Hence, the grudges between us are the grudges between two forces. If you want me to stop holding what happened in the past against you guys, that would only be possible if you dismiss the Hall of Divine Royal!”

“Dismiss?” The corners of Angus’ lips trembled several times. “Young man, I was kind enough to let you off the hook and you actually want me to dismiss the Hall of Divine Royal? In your dreams!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1708

Jackie's words had completely angered his

opponent. Angus had longed to become the hall master of the Hall of Divine Royal since a long time ago but he did not have the opportunity to. Now that he had finally become the hall master of the Hall of Divine Royal, the other party was actually asking him to dismiss the hall. He was so angry that his face turned blue before it turned pale.

However, he gritted his teeth but dared not take action immediately. After all, it did not matter if Jackie had already broken through. Even if this guy had not broken through, he had the combat power comparable to the masters at the first-grade ultimate god-level. On top of that, the total number of people between Jackie and the Divine King Sect was so much more compared to theirs. The number of people in the ultimate god-level on their side was also much lesser compared to the people on Jackie's side. If they fought under such circumstances, the chances of them winning were minute. Even if they had won, they would suffer substantial losses.

"Hall master, take a look. Those people over there seem to be our people!" However, Angus did not expect one of the elders from the Hall of Divine Royal, who was in the first stage ultimate god-level, to see a group of people flying over to them at this moment.

"That's true. It's Elder Lawrence and the others. This is great! There's at least two thousand of them!" Angus had an instant confidence boost when he saw people from his side and happiness could instantly be seen on his expression.

"How's that possible? Pavilion master, those are people from the Hall of Divine Royal! Aren't we really unlucky? There are at least 2700 to 2800 of them!" The smile on the face of the man beside Harry immediately disappeared when he saw the situation. He really felt like he was sitting on a roller coaster at that instant.

The corners of Harry's mouth twitched a couple of times. He was extremely happy when he saw Jackie and the others' arrival as there was a huge chance of them winning.

However, it was troublesome that there was an increase of more than 2000 people from the opponent's side and they had no idea if any of these people had already broken through into the ultimate god-level.

Elder Lawrence and the other members of the Hall of Divine Royal soon flew over before stopping at a nearby distance.

Elder Lawrence slightly narrowed his eyes when he saw the situation and said, "Elder Mosleysle, why are you here? What's going on now? It looks like you've surrounded those people before being counter-surrounded by members of the White and Cabello families?"

A man beside Angus immediately stepped forward and said, "Elder Lawrence, I wonder if you guys know that the hall master of our Hall of Divine Royal, Master Matthew, had already died. Our people saw his body the second day we entered this area. Right now, we've already agreed for Elder Mosley to be our hall master and everybody should obey him in the future. I'm sure everybody knows about Elder Mosley's combat power and character. It's best for him to be the new hall master!"

"What? The hall master has passed away?!" The members of the Hall of Divine Royal on the other side were immediately surprised when they heard this. They obviously did not expect Matthew to be so miserable and died so quickly.

Elder Lawrence and the others were slightly delighted after being stunned for a short moment. Since Hall Master Matthew of the Hall of Divine Royal had already died, did that mean that he also had the opportunity?

However, he still spoke with a sad expression on his face. "Sigh… The hall master had always been looking forward to breaking through into the ultimate god-level and he had always wanted to know of the ways to break through into the ultimate god-level. Now that there's finally such an opportunity, who would have expected … Who would have expected that he would pass away when we've just entered this area! His death…His death is really so sad!"

"Yes, Hall Master Matthew, you have the heart to achieve grand causes. Who would have expected for you to die at this moment?!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1709

Another man also expressed his grievance and looked as if he was going to cry.

“There’s no need for everybody to be too sad as we have learned to take life and death easily since we are trainers. Although the death of the hall master is slightly unfortunate, this is how life is!” Angus also had a pained expression on his face before he continued seriously, “However, there’s no need for everybody to worry. After I become the new hall master, I will definitely lead our Hall of Divine Royal toward a new glorious future.”

Angus paused here before he continued to speak, “However, there are some issues here that need to be resolved and I hope that everybody will work together and help us out. Let’s help to settle our enemies here first before we continue speaking about other things!”

However, Elder Lawrence had a darkened expression on his face and directly said, “Elder Mosley, it doesn’t seem nice for you to self-proclaim yourself as the leader, right? Yes, you’re considered one of the top elders in the Hall of Divine Royal previously and you were well-liked by the hall master. After all, not only are you courageous and smart, you have a high combat power. All of us here weren’t your opponent!”

Elder Lawrence smiled coldly and continued speaking, “However, several elders here have already broken through into the first stage ultimate god-level and are masters of the ultimate god-level. Not only me, Elder Mitchell, Elder Ladd, and Elder Witherspoon also have the fighting prowess of the ultimate god-level. Haha… I think matters regarding the hall master should wait until we’ve gathered all the members of the Hall of Divine Royal and let everybody vote for their choice!”

Elder Witherspoon walked forward and said, “Why should we vote? I think that voting is the most unfair way in my opinion. After all, Elder Lawrence and Elder Mosley are senior elders in the Hall of Divine Royal who had lots of credit. It would definitely be favorable for the both of you if we really vote for our choice. I suggest that we choose our hall master by having a competition. After all, nobody knows who will be stronger by then!”

The corner of Angus' mouth twitched several times when he heard what these two had said. He finally realized that not only one or two people wanted to be the hall master.

"Haha… Sure, I'm also willing to have a martial art competition to make the decision!" Angus smiled coldly before finally releasing his momentum without holding back. "By then, the others will be convinced about who's much stronger by then!"

"A fighting prowess of second-grade ultimate god-level?" After feeling the momentum, Elder Lawrence, Elder Witherspoon, and the others took in deep breaths as they were really surprised by such horrendous momentum. They had never expected Angus to become a master in the second-grade ultimate god-level after ten days of entering the area.

"Hey guys, are you guys done?" Unexpectedly, Jackie, who was observing by the side, could not help but slowly opened his mouth and said, "You guys should think about how you can continue staying alive above anything else. You guys have not yet succeeded in overcoming this challenge here and you guys are already thinking about fighting for the position of hall master. What a joke!"

Angus laughed loudly when he heard this. "Haha… Jackie, you are really daring when you speak. Why don't you take a look at the situation right now? We have more members in the ultimate god-level compared to you and we also have more people. Do you still feel that you have the certainty of winning?"

"It's good that there are more people here. I shall be able to get rid of you people sooner if more of you are here!" Jackie smiled coldly and directly waved his hand. "Attack them and show them our true strength!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1710

“Haha… Young Master Jackie is right! Attack!” Alejandro had been looking forward to giving it a try. He directly flew forward when he heard what Jackie said and released a strong wave of aura. The horrendous aura continued to increase and soon surpassed Angus, who was at the second-stage ultimate god-level.

“How’s this possible? His momentum is so much higher compared to Elder Mosley?” Elder Lawrence was so frightened that he inhaled deeply when he saw what happened. If the people surrounding him did not also have a surprised expression on their faces, he would really suspect that he was dreaming

“Impossible! This is impossible!”

Angus shook his head continuously as he could not believe the truth. After all, he obtained the martial art technique soon after he entered this area and lots of precious items. He got a lot of the third-grade spirited grass and even obtained a fourth-grade spirited grass.

He was even able to refine the fourth grade spirited grass and that was how he was able to break through into the second-grade ultimate god-level in such a short period of time.

He believed that not many people were as lucky as him so he was confident about himself.

However, Alejandro, who was in front of him, was actually at the third-grade ultimate god-level. This caused him to instantly feel defeated and he was unable to immediately accept this reality.

“Haha… What’s wrong? Are you surprised because of this? Everybody, attack! Attack to your heart’s content!” Alejandro was quite satisfied with the expression on these people from the Hall of Divine Royal. He had never expected himself to cause such a huge surprise among the masters at the second-grade ultimate god-level.

After all, more than a dozen days ago, even the first-grade ultimate god level was a realm they really wanted to break through, let alone the second grade ultimate god-level.

"Attack!" Kenneth and the others did not release their momentum. Instead, he curled his fists and Chi surged over his fists. He directly rushed toward Elder Lawrence from the Hall of Divine Royal in a flash.

"How's this possible? This old man is also a master in the ultimate god level?"

Elder Lawrence originally smiled coldly when he saw Kenneth rushing toward him proactively and he thought that Kenneth was suicidal.

However, he completely panicked when he finally saw the golden color of the Chi on Kenneth's fists. He clearly knew the representation of this color. This represented that the old man rushing over was also at the ultimate god-level. On top of that, the gold color was much richer and Kenneth's fighting prowess seemed to be higher than him.

However, when he finally managed to react, Kenneth had already arrived in front of him and was punching toward him.

As he did not have much time to think about how to react, he could only quickly activate the Chi in his body and tighten his fist before directly meeting his opponent's punch.

Boom!

The minute both punches met one another, an extremely loud humming noise could be heard and caused the space to slightly sway. A horrendous shock wave radiated to the surrounding area.

"This is impossible!" Elder Lawrence felt the difference between the two of them the moment they came into contact. It was not a slight difference as the old man in front of them was in the third-grade ultimate god-level.

Bang!

The moment he finished speaking, Elder Lawrence was sent flying backward like a kite with a broken line. He fell to the ground heavily and vomited blood.

A huge hole had appeared on the ground from the attack and terrible cracks spread around. Elder Lawrence, who was in the First-grade ultimate god level, laid there and was coughing blood without stopping. His face was so pale and he failed to even stand up.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1711

“Dear me, this old man is definitely in the third grade ultimate god level!” As the battle began, one of the onlookers exclaimed in fright and was shocked to his core.

“This is great! There are at least two masters in the third-grade ultimate god-level from the White and Cabello family. We will definitely win this time. As long as these elders in the first-grade ultimate god level and Angus Moseley in the second-grade ultimate god-level from the Hall of Divine Royal are killed, their people would lose all will to fight!” Hope started burning in Harry’s heart again when he saw how Kenneth killed those masters in the first-grade ultimate god-level one by one with his punches. He, who was once filled with despair, had an ecstatic expression on his face.

“Yes, sect master, we have been rescued. Kill, kill all of them! Haha… jackie and the others are really strong and they’ve never disappointed us!” The old lady in the first-grade ultimate god-level from the Divine King Sect was extremely excited at this moment. The feeling of recovering from a seemingly impossible situation was really a lamentable one.

“Yes, kill them! Kill all of them!” Harry, who saw the: opportunity to stay alive, waved his sword and yelled loudly. “These people even wanted us to surrender. Do I, Harry Yeager, look like I will surrender so easily? Even if I die in this battle here today, I would not surrender to these people. Everybody, attack them and avenge our members who died previously!”

“Oh my god, there’s more than one third-grade ultimate god-level master here. The Second Elder of the White family is also a master in the third-grade ultimate god level. Dear me, this is serious!” Soon, somebody else discovered something and exclaimed again.

“Why do they have so many people at the ultimate god-level? On top of that, the butler of the White family is also in the third-grade ultimate god-level. How can we win against them?” The people from the Hall of Divine Royal were soon in desperation. Their masters in the first-grade ultimate god-level were unable to defeat those people at that moment.

“Run!” Angus was so frightened when he saw several people in the first-grade ultimate god-level were killed that his face turned pale. He turned around and: yelled loudly before he was prepared to escape. Only a pale shadow of his figure was left as he ran, ignoring the fate of others.

However, another shadow traveled more speedily and arrived before him within several moves, stopping him from escaping.

“You must be suicidal!” When he saw that it was jackie, Angus tightened his fist and Chi surged over his fist as he punched toward jackie.

“Humph?” jackie humphed coldly and also raised his fist, meeting the attack with a punch.

“You don’t even plan to use your Chi?” Angus’s heart dropped when he saw how jackie did not even use Chi with his attack. However, there was not enough time for him to think about it, and could only meet the attack with his punch.

He was extremely puzzled by what was happening. Could it be that jackie was also in the Third-grade ultimate god level? However, was this not too much for a person in the Third-grade ultimate god level?

Boom!

Just as he was puzzled by what was going on, their fists met with each other’s. The strong power in jackie’ s body directly broke Angus’s arm and sent him flying backward before landing onto the ground with a thud. He died after vomiting several mouthfuls of blood.

“Oh my god! What…what’s the fighting prowess of this guy? His combat power is really strong!” Harry happened to see this scene and he was so frightened that he stuttered when he spoke.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1712

Angus, who was in the second-grade ultimate god level was killed by jackie with just a punch. This scene really shocked everyone at present.

Especially since jackie managed to do this without using Chi. This proved how frightening the guy's combat power was.

"Isn't this guy in the third-grade ultimate god level? It looks like his combat power has become comparable to fifth-grade or sixth-grade ultimate god level!" Alejandro looked over at jackie and glanced at his fist again. jackie's combat power seemed to have exceeded his expectations. He had suspected that the martial art technique jackie was practicing was a much higher level one compared to theirs.

"Run! Even Elder Angus had died!" The members of the Hall of Divine Royal were frightened out of their wits. They panicked and scurried around to escape.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

However, jackie and the others had really strong combat power. One after another, the attacks landed directly on the group of people who were trying to escape. Together with the fact that there were several masters in the third-grade ultimate god level, the number of people escaping continued to reduce. Soon, almost all of them were dead.

Only less than 100 people from the several thousands of people from the Hall of Divine Royal managed to escape while the others were killed. Blood flowed throughout the area and a thick smell of blood filled the air.

"Master White, Master Cabello, Young Master jackie, thank you for your help!" Harry flew over in excitement. He thanked jackie and the others.

“Haha… Master Harry, it’s very simple. If you really plan to thank me, just don’t snatch the trophies with us!” Unexpectedly, jackie only smiled and said to him. “However, we don’t want the martial ring that belonged to those dead members of your sect. Those are your people and you can keep those for yourself!”

The corners of Harry’s mouth immediately twitched a couple of times. jackie did not spare him any face. During the battle, the people from his side had also fought bravely and killed many people. This guy actually said in front of so many people that he was taking all the martial enhancement materials that the members of the Hall of Divine Royal had on them.

However, he could only speak with a smile when he thought about how jackie and the others had saved their lives. “That’s for sure, without the help of you guys, we would have definitely died!” On top of that, jackie and the others had overpowering combat power.

“That’s right, thanks to the help from jackie and the others, we escaped death!” The old lady from the Divine King Sect also nodded and said.

“By the way, there are some situations in this area and I wonder if you guys know about it!” Nash ordered the others to help collect the trophies as he started chatting with Harry and the others.

“What situation? There is quite a lot of third-grade spirited grass here and we have never seen them when we were outside. There is even fourth-grade spirited grass here and this is a really good place to train ourselves!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1713

Harry said happily, “I just wonder why this area is so rich with Chi. On top of that, there are some martial art techniques and I feel that this is a great place to look for precious items. What I worry about most are the people who entered this area in the past. Even if they had died, there must still be quite a number of masters now as they had many descendants, right? Would they take action against us if they bump into us? After all, we’re not from here!”

Nash smiled bitterly and said, “I need to tell you something regarding this area…”

Soon, Nash informed Harry and the others about the situation.

The facial expression on Harry and the others’ faces darkened after they heard what Nash said. They had never expected the area to have a force like the Alliance Guard, who was in charge of guarding the area and were incredibly against people from the outside entering this area.

Unexpectedly, the members of the Alliance Guard had let down their guard as nobody had entered this area throughout the years. That was why two disciples of only the first-grade and second-grade ultimate god level were sent to guard the entrance. If it was in the: past, they would have died not long after entering the area.

“We’re lucky that they have almost forgotten about the entrance. This enabled us to stay alive until now and even had the chance to break through to the ultimate god level. Now that I think about it, we are really lucky!” Harry smiled bitterly as his heart was filled with joy.

“Yes. Our goal right now is to raise our fighting prowess as fast as possible. In that case, when the members of the Alliance Guard realise what is going on, we would have increased our combat power. That would help us to have a better opportunity at staying alive!” Nash nodded. “Hence, forces who have entered this area like us need to work together and help each other!”

“By the way, Master White. How did all of you breakthrough into the third-grade ultimate god level? What’s the fighting prowess of your son? He killed Angus, who’s in the second-grade ultimate god -level,

with a single punch and without using his Chi.: He's so powerful!" Harry soon thought and could not help but ask Nash in surprise.

"Haha… We are all in the third-grade ultimate god level. This is all thanks to the third-grade elementary pills that jackie cultivated. If not, how would it be possible for us to achieve such fighting prowess in such a short time?" Nash laughed as he glanced over to jackie's back, who was nearby, with satisfaction in his eyes. He had never expected his son to become such an excellent person. He no longer can catch up with his son's pace anymore.

"He is also capable of cultivating third-grade elementary pills? Does that mean that Young Master jackie is now a third-grade elementary alchemist? Dear me, this…this young man has a promising future!" Harry exclaimed and continued, "There are several alchemists in our Divine King Sect but the most powerful one is just a second-grade premium alchemist right now. After breaking through into the ultimate god-level, second-grade premium pills don't have much effect on us in the ultimate god-level. Those pills are incomparable to third-grade elementary pills!"

"Young Master jackie is really talented in cultivating pills. After several years, there's hope for him to be a fourth-grade alchemist!" There was an unexpected hint of adoration when the old lady in the first-grade ultimate god-level standing beside Harry, looked at jackie.

It had to be known that these people were placed in higher positions and they had never paid much attention to the eight shadow families. They had never expected that they would quietly start adoring a young master from one of the shadow families at this moment.

Harry thought about it and said to Nash, "Master Nash, what you said is right. We should work together and help each other. What do you think if our people travel together with you? Don't worry. In terms of the martial enhancement material, you just need to give us a little bit of it or don't give us any!"

Once he thought about how this special area had the Alliance Guard, Harry proactively mentioned this after thinking about it. After all, staying alive was more important. jackie and the others' combat power were definitely the strongest among all the forces that entered the area. It was much safer to follow jackie and the others.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1714

Nash did not immediately promise the other party when he heard this. Instead, he said, “I’m sorry, Master Yeager, I need to discuss this with my son. You too, know that he has the strongest combat power right now. Not only the members of the White family are very convinced to follow him, but even the members of the Cabello family obey him!”

“That’s right…that’s right. I will leave it to you, thank you!” Harry immediately gestured with his hands politely as he said.

Nash immediately walked over to have a discussion with jackie before flying back. “Master Yeager, we’ve had a discussion and my son agreed to it!”

Soon, everyone gathered the trophies together.

Just like what happened previously, everyone let jackie make the first pick. After all, he had to choose some spirited grass or ingredients to cultivate pills.

jackie did not act politely as he killed quite a lot of people. They obtained quite a generous amount of spirited grass. Although there was only one fourth grade spirited grass, jackie was still quite satisfied.

jackie let the members of the Cabello family and White family share the other materials between themselves. At least, it was enough for everyone to train for a period of time.

What jackie did not expect was that there was an ancient tome in one of the martial rings.

The ancient tome did not look eye-catching but he was surprised when he opened the tome and took a look at the content.

“Oh my god, this is great!” jackie was incredibly excited after he took a look at the ancient tome.” Unexpectedly, there are many pill remedies for third grade and fourth-grade pills in here. There are more than a dozen pill remedies for fourth-grade elementary, intermediate, and fourth-grade premium pills!”

jackie almost jumped up in excitement. What he needed most at that moment were pill remedies, especially pill remedies of fourth-grade pills.

He quickly flipped through the ancient tome and finally, he discovered the pill remedy to lift the spell off Selena. His eyes even turned red in excitement.

He immediately flew toward Selena and pointed at a spot in the tome before saying to Selena, “Honey, take a look. Look here, the pill remedy for the pill to lift your spell is here on this tome. On top of that, the ingredients needed can be found here. With this pill remedy, we would have a goal when we search for materials in the future!”

Selena felt a warmth in her heart when she saw jackie’s excited expression. She smiled gently and said,” Yes, Honey. At least we’ve made another improvement. I believe that you will definitely succeed!”

“Yes, that’s for sure!” jackie nodded.

“Young Master jackie, should we leave now? So many people have died here and the monster beasts must have sniffed out the blood by now!” Harry and the others immediately walked forward to ask jackie as they were slightly afraid when they heard the roaring sound of monster beasts from afar.

“Yes, it’s almost done. Come on, let’s continue our journey!” jackie nodded and the group continued their journey.

At this moment, Ella had already exited the forest after harvesting quite a lot of spirited grass.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1715

Ella frowned when she heard the fighting sound in the forest behind her. “I promised them to not proactively tell others about how they’ve entered this forest. However, this forest has never been so lively before. If members from the other fortresses of the Nine Armies come here to search for precious items, they would definitely suspect that something is off when they hear the fighting sounds in the forest!”

After all, jackie saved her life and Ella was obviously slightly worried about them at this moment.

“Nevermind…nevermind. I just need to pretend that I don’t know anything and that I have never seen these people!” In the end, Ella shook her head and was prepared to fly toward her fortress.

However, she bumped into seven to eight young people from another fortress after flying for a short moment.

“Oh my, isn’t this our beautiful Ella? Have you been collecting spirited grass in the forest? How is your result?” A young man in white clothes asked with a smile after he saw Ella.

Ella frowned when she saw them. These were not people from her fortress and they were members of the Whittemore Fortress.

The Whittemore Fortress was known as the Whittemore Fortress because there were many members of the Whittemore family in the fortress. The members of the Whittemore family occupied 40 % of the population of the fortress. Hence, the Whittemore family was considered the number one aristocratic family in their fortress.

This young man in white clothes was the grandson of one of the Whittemore family’s elders. Due to this reason, he acts very arrogantly and always has a domineering look when they meet others during normal days.

“Young Master Arthur, what a coincidence. Are you guys prepared to enter the forest?” Although she did not have a good impression of Arthur and did not like him, Ella had to respect him as he had a high position. She tried to force a smile before looking over at him all smiley.

“Yes. Why did you enter the forest by yourself? How dangerous is that! I heard that there are monster beasts in the third-grade ultimate god-level recently. The next time you want to go into the forest, you should gather several people to go together or you can also come with us! Don’t worry, we can share some of the spirited grass with you when we obtain them!” Arthur glanced at Ella with a playful expression on his face. He discovered that after several months of not meeting this young woman, she seemed to have become more mature and prettier. In another two years, she would be considered a rare beauty as matures.

A young woman standing beside was slightly unhappy when they saw how Arthur was staring at Ella. She said angrily, “Young Master Arthur, let’s go. This Ella Lavinge is not a member of our Whittemore Fortress, why do you care so much about her?”

“That’s right, Young Master Arthur. The members from Ella’s fortress even snatched our spirited grass. I’m so angry and my father originally was able to obtain a fourth-grade elementary spirited grass. He found one with much difficulty but it was snatched away by the members of their fortress!” A fat young man, who was beside them, also said angrily.

Arthur was slightly unhappy when he heard this. His facial expression darkened and said, “Isn’t it normal for fortresses to have fights because of spirited grass? As long as it isn’t some great hatred and no lives have been lost, anything is allowed! On top of that, didn’t the First Fortress Master say previously that the members of the nine fortresses should help one another and have a good relationship?!”

After he finished speaking, Arthur said to Ella with a smile, “Am I right? Ella, especially for our fortresses that are very close to one another, we should help one another, right?”

Ella smiled embarrassingly. “Yes, the First Fortress Master did say something like this during the meeting previously!”

“Humph!” The young lady from the Whittemore Fortress humphed coldly in anger. She hugged both her hands in front of her chest and almost rushed forward to start a fight with Ella.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1716

Skye Lanson could not say anything else although displeased with Ella, so she merely said to Arthur with a smile, “Young Master Arthur, should we be on our way? She has already returned from her treasure search, and we’re still empty-handed.”

However, Arthur pretended as if he did not hear what she said. Instead, he smilingly said to Ella, “Come, Miss Ella. Why not join us and go in for a couple more days? After all, you don’t have any other matters after you go back, right? Won’t you be safer if you join us? We’ll equally share the items we obtained!”

The fatty, who stood at the side, was displeased with the idea and quickly reminded Arthur, “That doesn’t seem like a good idea, Young Master Arthur. After all, she’s not a member of our fortress. On top of that, you ‘re in the fourth-grade ultimate god-level. Although: her fighting prowess is somewhat impressive, how can she share the items equally with you when she’s only in the second-grade ultimate god-level?”

Arthur’s expression faltered as he remarked, “Fatty, how can you say something like that? Aren’t you in the second-grade ultimate god-level, too? I didn’t mention that you’re a burden, did I? On top of that, the First Fortress Master said that we need to be on good terms with the other fortresses, especially when we’re so near to each other. Didn’t I always give you precious items?”

The fatty immediately blushed a crimson color. He lowered his head and was at a complete loss for words.

Ella was not dumb, and she understood that Arthur was fawning over her on purpose. She also realized that Skye obviously liked Arthur and was irked at her.

She smiled embarrassingly and said, “Ah, no need. My brother needs a certain type of spirited grass, and I just so happened to have found it. I better bring it back to him soon, and you guys should go your way!”

Skye, who stood at the side, crossed her arms at her chest and oddly commented, “See, Arthur? She may not appreciate your kindness!”

“Haha… It’s alright, it’s alright. We’ll have other chances of searching for precious items in the future, right?” Although Ella did not agree to his suggestion, Arthur felt that this was because Ella was a slightly shy person. This was quite normal as they seldom interacted with one another. Hence, he smiled embarrassingly and said with a wave of his hand, “Let ‘s go and take a look in the forest. Let’s try to stay a couple more days inside and see if we can find some fourth-grade spirited grass. Although the fourth grade spirited grass is quite rare, we’ll definitely find some!”

Ella turned around and was prepared to leave before she overheard what the portly man said.

The fatty was prepared to fly forward when he frowned and said to Arthur, “Young Master Arthur, it seems like something is wrong with the forest. We would barely hear so many roars of monsters and fighting sounds before, am I right? Could it be that quite a number of members from the other fortresses had gone into the forest to search for precious items?”

Arthur listened precariously and frowned as well.” You’re right. It’s quite weird for so many fights to be happening inside, and it’s unlikely for monster beasts to fight one another. Have those creatures had an uprising recently?”

“No matter what it is, you’re already in the Fourthgrade ultimate god-level, and there are only a handful of monster beasts in this forest that can contend against you. We’ll all be very safe in the forest with you!” The fatty was afraid that he had offended Arthur, so he immediately buttered up to Arthur. He feared that Arthur would give him less spirited grass because of what happened.

The Nine Armies was not big in size and was incomparable to the sects or others. Even so, there were still many in the older generation who were in the Eighth-grade or Ninth-grade ultimate god-level.

The fortress master of the biggest fortress was addressed as the First Fortress Master by them. The First Fortress Master was extremely strong and had already achieved the First-grade soul-penetrating level.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1717

“Haha… Let’s go take a look. No matter what the situation is, we’ll know what’s going on when we get there. We are considered masters among the younger generations, and all of us are at the ultimate god level. What do we need to fear?” Arthur chuckled loudly and looked as if he could care less.

After all, they were in the ultimate god-level and were considered outstanding among the youths, capable of defeating many people.

Although they were still slightly behind compared to the true masters of the younger generation, they were still able to defeat 80 to 90% of the younger people.

Worry crept up to Ella as she overheard their conversation. After her deliberation, she turned and caught up to Arthur and his company. “I’ve given it some thought, Young Master Arthur, and I don’t have anything special to do after going back home. I think I ‘ll follow you guys into the forest.”

Her answer delighted Arthur, who was inwardly smug at the assumption of how his charm won over her. That was why she abandoned her shyness and made a bold step

“Not a problem at all. Haha! The more, the merrier. Let’s go!” Arthur laughed loudly, extremely gratified with himself. He then had thoughts of how he would rescue Ella and hold her in his arms in the jaws of danger, encountering extremely powerful monster beasts. By then, Ella might repay him with herself when his gallantness won her over.

Skye, who was by their side, glowered as she could not help but mumble, “Ella Lavinge, didn’t you say that you need to send some spirited grass back to your brother? Why aren’t you in a hurry now?”

Ella was instantly flustered at the reminder. She was not sure if she wanted to follow them to take a look because jackie rescued her previously. She wanted to follow them and see if she could notify them or help buy them time.

Although the members of the Nine Armies were on the territory of the Anti-Alliance Guard and the forces of the Anti-Alliance Guard seldom disturb them, there remained bitterness between the nine fortresses.

It was possible that some of these people wanted to do something bad.

“Hey, isn’t that easily solved?” Before Ella said anything else, Arthur proactively said, “Since it isn’t far from here, Ella, why don’t we go back with you? You can send the treasure you obtained back home first before leaving with us to enter the forest!”

“Sure! Thank you so much for doing this!” Ella smiled as she succeeded to stall time for jackie and the others.

“Young Master Arthur, a to-and-fro trip like that will take up around two to three hours, won’ it? What a waste of time!” grumbled Skye in dissatisfaction and grew increasingly angry the more she thought about

“Isn’t it just a matter of two to three hours? We’re already masters in the ultimate god-level, and it’s easy peasy for us to break through into the soul- penetrating level in the future. We’ll live up to five hundred years old, so won’t two to three hours be nothing to us?” Arthur glanced at Skye speechlessly.” If you can’t wait for us, you can go into the forest by yourself first. We’ll go in and look for you later.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1718

Skye was infuriated. With her high fighting prowess, she wanted to head into the forest on her own out of anger. After all, she was in the Third-grade ultimate god-level, and her fighting prowess was higher than Ella. Since Ella dared to enter the forest alone, she dared to do it, too.

She then recalled how the foxy Ella would seduce Arthur if she were to truly enter the forest. Arthur was head over heels for Ella when Skye was present, what more if she was not?

She tightened her fists and said, “Alright, let’s go back with Ella!”

However, what Arthur and the others did not expect was that Ella asked three young people from her family to follow them into the forest after handing over the items she obtained from the forest, much to Arthur’s chagrin.

It was slightly inconvenient for him to do anything to Ella if other members of the Lavinge family were present. Moreover, Ella’s eldest brother had joined them, and Hendrick Lavinge was in the Fourth-grade ultimate god-level. Although he had just broken through, his combat power was nearly on par with Arthur’s.

Arthur and the others walked in the front while Ella, Hendrick, and the others lagged slightly behind them.

Hendrick looked at the frown on Ella’s face, and he knew his sister had something in her mind. He asked softly out of curiosity, “Ella, what’s going on with you? Why did you ask us to go with you since it’s already in the afternoon? I just thought of raising my fighting prowess and entering the forest a couple of days later. After all, I just came out of the forest several days ago!”

Hendrick paused before he added, “Also, didn’t you just return? Why do you want to go into the forest again?”

Ella glanced at the people in front of her, and after she studied the distance between them and Arthur's company, so that they would not overhear her, she softly spoke, "Hendrick, please don't tell anyone : what I'm going to tell you next. I almost died in the forest when I tried to take a spirited grass. Luckily, somebody rescued me!"

Hendrick inhaled deeply when he heard that, and he felt a wave of fright filled his heart. He thought about it and guessed, "Was Arthur your rescuer?"

Ella had an embarrassed look on her face. "It… It's not him… The people from the abandoned world had entered this area."

"The abandoned world?" Hendrick's mouth hung wide open as his jaw almost fell to the ground. After so many years, the world was like a legend to them.

As for the members of the Alliance Guard, they seemed to have felt that it was difficult for the people over there to find the entrance into this area. Hence, they only symbolically sent two disciples who made mistakes to guard the area for a period of time. Basically, the sects took turns in sending people over, who then would stand guard for a year.

In the beginning, everyone sent disciples with higher fighting prowess as they felt that this was an important task, but they eventually grew to care less.

Not only did the Alliance Guard act in such a way, but they even nearly forgot about that world.

Unexpectedly, Ella suddenly told him that people had come barging in from the abandoned world.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1719

Ella quickly reminded Hendrick as she feared the rest would notice his dumbfounded expression." | Hendrick, speak softly so that others won't hear us. What should we do now? I'm just as lost. I was afraid that Arthur and the others would bump into these people, so I purposely stalled for them. I asked you guys to join us for this… I even promised them that I wouldn't tell others that they've entered this area, but I'm out of options right now!"

After a moment of silence, Hendrick burst into assumptions, "Dear me, are you joking? Have you been duped by others? Why don't you think about it? The people from that world shouldn't have a high fighting prowess, right? I'm sure that nobody has broken through into the ultimate god-level, right? If that's the case, how could they have rescued you, a person in the Second-grade ultimate god-level?"

"How's that possible? I saw that those people didn't have a high fighting prowess!" Ella started frowning. She thought about it and said, "Apart from that, they don't have tokens of other items that we're familiar with. so they must've come over from that side, no? This forest also contains martial art techniques and other items, so they might've broken through after they found the techniques! Then…"|

"Break through? If the person needs to achieve the standard of rescuing you, he'd need to spend a long period even if he's a master, don't you think? Have they stayed in the forest for a longer time, then? Even if they have broken through, wouldn't they only be in the First-stage ultimate god-level? Is it possible for a person in the First-stage ultimate god-level to rescue you?" Hendrick continued to ask.

"That person can't be in the First-stage ultimate god -level. The monster beast is in the Second-stage ultimate god-level, which was why I couldn't defeat the beast. I estimate the person to be at least in the Second-stage ultimate god-level and might have the combat power of the Third-stage ultimate god-level. He seemed too relaxed!" recalled Ella.

"Brother, what should we do now? Our Nine Armies have always had the same standpoint as the Anti Alliance Guard, and we comply with destiny. Even if we don't go over the abandoned world to fetch them here, we'd agree for them to train here if any of them arrive here by mistake. Now that they've entered this area, I'm afraid that Arthur and the others might not think that way. It's hard to fathom a person's mind, and the Nine Armies aren't very united!"

“Did many of their people come through?” Hendrick pointed out with a frown. “It won’t be an issue if only a handful of them entered. After all, the entrance of several people wouldn’t take up too much martial enhancement resources if a couple of people entered this area, and it’ll be no problem if members of the Anti-Alliance Guard learned of their existence. If we take them in, we just need to have a symbolic conversation with the members of the Anti-Alliance Guard, and the issue would be dropped afterward.”

Ella smiled bitterly and said, “You’re right. I remembered that several people barged into this area around six months ago, and some of them were recruited by the Pavilion of Anti-Alliance Guard after that alliance learned about them. They were brought back by these people to train.”

However, Ella had a weird expression on her face as she continued, “However, it seems like there are several hundred thousand of them that entered this time.”

“Several hundred thousand people?!” The corners of Hendrick’s mouth twitched several times. It might not be an issue if only a couple of people, or a dozen, entered, but they would not be able to hide the news if several hundred thousand of them entered!

Hendrick’s expression faltered and, patting his thigh, muttered, “Too many. That’s a big problem already!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1720

Hendrick instantly recognized the weight of the issue. And looked extremely anxious.

Startled at how Hendrick yelled his responses, Ella quickly shushed him, “Talk softer, Brother!”

At that moment, Arthur and the others who walked ahead stopped in their tracks.

Arthur slowly turned his head and frowningly asked,” Hendrick, what did you say just now? What big issue has happened?”

Hendrick immediately touched his head in embarrassment. “No… Nothing!”

“No, from the looks of your expression, you’re obviously lying.” Arthur frowned and slowly walked up to them. “Hendrick, I think it’s best that you tell the truth. We’ll learn about it sooner or later!”

Hendrick glanced at Ella and visibly hesitated.

Ella frowned as well, clueless as to what to do next. As she gritted her teeth, however, she squeezed out an embarrassing smile. “It’s nothing, really. I told my brother that the monster beasts in the forest seemed to be quite irritable recently, and the roars seemed to. Be quite different!”

Only then did Arthur said impatiently, “Oh, I thought something serious had happened, seeing how jumpy you both are. It’s just a group of monster beasts who don’t have high fighting prowess. Some monster beasts are powerful when compared to some of those from the fortresses who have low fighting prowess, but these monster beasts are nothing to us masters or the masters of our fortresses!”

“That’s very true. These monster beasts would occasionally act abnormally, but it’s nothing weird!” added the fatty with a grin. “Come. There are several of us here, so let’s see if we can stay for a couple of days in the forest to find more fourth-grade spirited grass!”

“Let’s… Let’s go!” Hendrick smiled a forceful smile before the group continued to fly toward the direction of the forest.

They finally arrived outside of the forest around four in the afternoon.

‘Sigh… jackie, oh dear jackie… I’ve tried my best to stall time for you, and I’m out of ideas. It’s every man for themselves right now! It’s been more than ten days, and I hope your fighting prowess has increased. I pray that you’ve left this forest,” sighed Ella inwardly as she looked at the forest.

“Something seems different about the forest. Why are there so many sounds of fights?” Fatty looked at the forest and was also puzzled. “Nothing like this had happened before!”

“Why don’t we head to one of those places where there seems to be a fight?” suggested Arthur after thinking about it. “We’d know what’s going on after we investigate the place nearest to us where there are noises of fights!”

Flustered, Ella chimed in, “Why should we look? Aren’t they just fights between monster beasts for precious items? It might even be some casual trainers who are

Searching for treasures in the forest, and that’s all normal!”

However, Arthur shook his head. He was obviously not someone that could be easily bamboozled. “No, this seems more than that to me. There are some fighting noises not far away from here, and it seems to be extremely heated. From the noises, it doesn’t seem to be one or two people. Come on, let’s go take a look before we decide!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1721

"Young Master Arthur, I think we should slowly search for precious items. As the saying goes,' Curiosity kills the cat.' There's nothing worth seeing!" Hendrick piped in on Ella's behalf in an obvious attempt to steer Arthur away from the area.

"Haha! My curiosity and need to see what's happening only grew after what you said, Young Master Hendrick. Everybody, let's go! We'll search for treasures as we fly there. Let's fan out a little; we might obtain some spirited grass on the way by doing so!" Arthur laughed and flew away with a wave of his hand.

The others then flew and spread out. They queued into a straight line and slowly flew forward.

A young man who came with Ella and the others scratched his head as he spoke to Hendrick, "I'm just as curious, Brother Hendrick. The forest seems quite different compared to how it was previously!"

"Sigh… It's different… It's completely different!"

Hendrick did not want to explain too much. He sighed and flew up to catch up with the others.

"Brother, should I sneak past everyone else and disperse those fighting ahead?" said Ella to Hendrick after careful deliberation.

Unexpectedly, Hendrick shook his head with a tightlipped smile. "Sister, that won't help. Arthur is right. Paper can't contain fire. It'll be useless even if you notify them beforehand, and there must be dozens of dead bodies on the ground, too. Could you quickly clean up the dead bodies?"

Ella finally understood that it was a hopeless case after Hendrick reminded her. It was just a matter of time before Arthur and the others discovered what happened.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Sounds of battle were heard up ahead as people died and laid in pools of their own blood.

At that moment, Helena-with over a thousand members of the Cabello family and around three hundred members of the White family-was attacked by a group of people from the Hall of Divine Royals.

Those from the Hall of Divine Royal had no idea that their hall master, Angus and the others were slain. However, as a large number of people had entered this area, there were more than 3,000 of them, and they surrounded Helena and the others.

Of course, there were already around a thousand bodies from both the Cabello family and White family as the battle prolonged. As for the Hall of Divine Royal, they had a large number of members who were in the demi-god level. Hence, there were around 1500 to 1600 bodies on the floor as Helena and the others valiantly fought back.

However, it was obvious that Helena and the others were losing from the overall looks of things.

“Haha… Tom Lent, our hall master and the others would be delighted if they knew that we killed so many members from both the White and Cabello families!” An old man smiled at a middle-aged man with red hair. He had an extremely confident look in his eyes after he waved his sword outward.

“That’s for sure!” Tom smiled coldly. “I do wonder what our hall master is doing right now. Luckily, I’ve already broken through into the First-grade ultimate god-level. Surely, our hall master has broken through, no? I think he might’ve broken through into the Second-grade ultimate god-level, seeing how we’ ve been in this area for around twenty days!”

“Haha… He must’ve broken through. As our hall master, he had to be ashamed of himself if he didn’ t!” The old man started laughing loudly after he heard this. “By the way, Tom, you’re considered to have made some great contribution, now that you’ve led us to kill these people. I’m sure that they have a generous amount of spirited grass with them, and we’ll obtain lots of spirited grass. Tsk, tsk! I think you

can find a place and try to break through into the Second-grade ultimate god-level. After all, your realm is stable enough!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1722

“Haha… It’s still early! Let’s talk more after we kill. These people!” Tom laughed loudly and pointed at Helena as he spoke. “It’d be a waste for that woman to just die like this, though. Hand her over to me. This woman is really difficult!”

“Haha! I do…understand what you mean!” The old man chortled at Tom’s remark. It was a waste for such a beauty to just die like that.

Even he had such thoughts about Helena; it was not just Tom.

Whoosh!

With that, Tom flickered right before Helena as he cut down several people within a few flashes. “Tsk, tsk! Who knew that there would be such beautiful women on the mainland. From your looks, you seem to be in your thirties. Haha… I like mature women like you!”

Helena smiled coldly when she noticed Tom’s fiery expression. “Aren’t you doing this because you have more people? Even if I die today, I’ll pull you to hell with me!”

The grip on her sword, infused with pale gold chi, tightened around her sword as she spoke. She then waved her sword forward.

It just so happened that Arthur and the others had arrived in the forest nearby. They hid inside the woods and looked forward in surprise. “Why are there so many people here?”

“Oh my god… There are so many people here!” Ella inhaled deeply when she saw the bodies on the ground. She initially wanted to sneakily come and warn everyone to scatter, but her brother was right when he said that it was useless even if she notified them. There were too many people, and there were

tons of bodies as well. It was only natural that Arthur and the others would find out that these were not people from this area.

"Young Master Arthur, these aren't people from our Nine Armies. F*ck! This forest is mainly the place where members of our Nine Armies hunt for treasures, and people from the other forces barely step foot here. Apart from this forest being slightly far away, the others know that we need martial enhancement resources to train. It's shocking to see. These people come into the forest, and they might take a large amount of the martial enhancement resources that are meant for us!" hissed the fatty angrily.

Over the years, the other forces seldom went treasure hunting in this area. Hence, members of the Nine Armies thought of this area as their back-garden to obtain martial enhancement resources, even though this area was not legally theirs. Even if others did come over to this area, only a small number of people would be in the forest.

Of course, they were displeased at the sudden presence of so many individuals in their territory.

Skye's eyes lit up at the opportunity that they could take their items for free. "These people don't have a high fighting prowess, and only two of them are in the ultimate god-level. On top of that, they're only in the First-grade ultimate god-level. Haha! Let them fight! We'll go out when they're wrapping up. Although there aren't many of us here, they can't compare to us with our combat power. By then, won't their precious items be ours for the taking?"

Arthur, however, frowned and stretched out his hands to touch his chin before he languidly remarked, "I'm quite curious as to where these people came from, seeing how many of them are here. There are a few thousand of them here! On top of that, those people outside are wearing the same clothing and are carrying the same token. It looks like they're members of the same force!"

Skye also inhaled deeply at the remark. "That's right. It looks like these aren't some casual trainers. However, we've never seen the tokens on these people from both the forces of the Alliance Guard or the forces of the Anti-Alliance Guard!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1723

“These aren’t people from either side?” Fatty frowned, but he then smiled. “Impossible—they’re surely from either side! One side might be members of the Alliance Guard, and the others are members of the Anti-Alliance Guard. It’s expected to have some conflict recently!”

That made sense for Arthur, too. He nodded and said, “That makes sense. After all, there are quite many forces from both the Alliance Guard and the AntiAlliance Guard, and it’s understandable if we can’t recall the looks of their tokens. However, I’m sure that one party is the Alliance Guard while the others are members of the Anti-Alliance Guard. Such a huge conflict under such a situation is as expected.”

“Yes, yes, yes… I think that must be it!” Ella earnestly agreed and instantly nodded like a chick that pecked at rice. She was afraid that Arthur and the others would realize that these people came from the abandoned world.

“Brilliant, Young Master Arthur. I guess that must be it!” Hendrick also wiped his cold sweat, but that seemed to be the case when he thought about it. It was quite difficult for normal people to think about that, and the world everyone abandoned was almost forgotten by others as time slowly passed. Who would suddenly think about that place?

Arthur was rather flustered at Ella and her brother’s praises, and he then said in a pretentious humble way, “It’s all simple, really. You’ll know just by looking at it!”

The moment he finished speaking, he suddenly discovered that there was a beautiful woman among the group of people fighting. This woman was not only beautiful, but she had an astoundingly good figure. Although she looked slightly old, the hint of maturity caused him to gulp.

If Ella was a fresh, immature girl, that woman caught in a fight was a fascinating, mature woman. Moreover, that woman had a haughty expression on her face, and such a woman could fascinate every man effectively.

F*ck! That woman doesn't seem to be able to fight against that man, and they're being attacked, too. If we wait much longer, she might get killed!' Arthur thought to himself and estimated everything as he gazed at Helena, who was some distance away. "If… If not many people are left from both parties or when the woman seems to be in danger, wouldn't I have the opportunity if I go to rescue her? That's the best time for me to be a hero and rescue the beauty!" Arthur had thought of all sorts of scenarios in his brain.

"Attack!" growled Helena through gritted teeth. Big beads of sweat covered her forehead at that moment. She wanted to lead her people to fight their way out and also wanted to see if they could open a gap and allow some people to escape.

However, she had only broken through for two to three days, and her realm was not stabilized. Alas, she was slightly beneath Tom, who already had the possibility of upgrading to the Second-grade ultimate god-level. Hence, she still failed to grab the opportunity after several rounds of attack.

"Haha… You're so desperate! Do you think you can escape?" Tom laughed loudly and attacked Helena with even powerful attacks. He went close up to Helena, and she was slightly overwhelmed.

Finally, he slammed his palm against Helena's chest with all his strength, and it sent her flying.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1724

“Mpfh!” Helena flew backward, and her face turned pale after she vomited blood. Alas, she was no match for Tom in the end; she could not even react when he attacked her up close.

Just as she nearly fell to the ground, two figures rushed toward her nimbly. One of the figures hugged her by the waist and slowly descended to the ground.

The man who held her was a stranger and looked extremely handsome. Unlike the masculine, tough look like jackie ’s, this man had a slightly feminine type of handsome.

It made her rather flustered as he held her to his form.

As she gazed at the man before her with a light blush, Helena then recalled her situation and urgently warned, “T… Thank you for rescuing me, young master, but there are too many of them, and you can’ t fight against them. Run, quickly! What’s happening here has nothing to do with you!”

“It’s… It’s alright. Let me help you!” Hendrick sheepishly smiled and scratched his head shyly. It was the first time he saw such a beautiful lady, and it puzzled him just as much when he felt a pang in his chest when he saw her wounded. It was then that he rushed forward and caught her.

Arthur, who was a second or two slower, was so angry that his face turned pale. He was elated when Helena was sent flying, thinking his chance had come. That was why he rushed out without hesitation.

However, he never expected Hendrick to act faster than him and was a step ahead of him.

Still, Arthur was no fool, despite his displeasure. He quickly took out a healing pull and passed it to Helena. “Young lady, I have pills that’ll heal your wounds. You can try one of them, they’ll help you a lot!”

“Thank you! Thank you!” Helena had never seen those two men, but their kindness moved her to be very thankful. After she took the pill and swallowed it, she smiled at Arthur.

Helena’s smile completely won Arthur over. The way she smiled made her all the more charming.

Hendrick, who was by their side, regretted his action. He was so smitten when he held her against him, catching a whiff of her scent, that he forgot to take out a healing pill for Helena. That gave Arthur the opening, and Hendrick wanted to punch himself.

Arthur smiled indifferently and said confidently,” Don’t worry, pretty lady. With us here, these fellas are no sweat!”

At that moment, Ella and the others also immediately flew over. Around a dozen people stood there and stared down at the men before them in anger.

The sudden appearance of these people caused both sides to be in a standstill.

Tom could not help but frown when he saw the situation. “Which family are you guys from? You guys are awfully presumptuous. Do you guys plan to rush over and help them?”

Obviously, Tom thought that those who came to Helena’s aid were members of some random family. From the mainland. After all, members of the Hall of Divine had always lived in the seas, and they did not know many of the forces from the mainland. They naturally felt that those youths who came to Helena’s rescue were members of some family from the mainland.

“Haha… Why do you want to care so much?” Arthur smiled coldly and pointed at the other party. He condescendingly spoke, “F*ck off if you understand the situation. Otherwise, the amount of people here isn’t enough for us to show how we’ll kill!”

“You’re too full of yourself, young man!” Tom did not want to flee when he was so close to winning. With a wave of his hand, he yelled, “Attack! These nosy people who rushed into the battle have no regard for their lives. Kill them all!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1725

“Attack!” The people Tom led immediately rushed and attacked to his loud order.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Sounds of people fighting could be heard once again.

“Haha… You guys have a death wish, alright!” Hendrick realized that Arthur wanted to act cool in front of Helena, and he did not want to fall behind. He, who had never liked to steal the limelight, flickered toward Tom. The chi surged from his fist, and he swung his fist violently toward Tom.

“This guy…!” Tom almost vomited blood when he saw Arthur act before he did anything. He also realized that Hendrick wanted to show off before the elegant woman. He would not have acted so boldly otherwise.

Stunned, Tom’s expression fàltered as he recalled something. ‘This is bad. His attack is incredibly fast!’

However, he had no time to assess it as his opponent’s fist was right before him. As he tightened his fist, he quickly activated the chi in his body before he swung toward Hendrick’s fist.

Oddly, a strange smile blossomed at Hendrick’s face as though he anticipated it from the start. He slightly slanted his body, and his punch landed squarely against Tom’s chest.

“I….Impossible!” Tom never thought his opponent would shift his direction so quickly in a split second, causing him to miss.

Thomp!

The powerful force caused Tom's chest to collapse, and he flew backward like a cannonball. He perished mid-air.

'Oh my God… That's impossible!' The worried Helena did not expect that Tom, who was in the First-grade ultimate god-level, would be defeated just like that. She was so astonished that she covered her mouth, and her heart was overwhelmed with astonishment.

He managed to kill a First-grade ultimate god-level: Could the opponent's fighting prowess be in the Third -grade ultimate god-level?

However, she knew almost everyone who entered this area and was in the peak stage of the true god-level, and she did not remember such a young master.

Could such a prodigy surpass jackie ?

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

She looked at the others, and she was even more blind. The young man who gave her a healing pill had extremely strong combat power. A single wisp of chi was capable of killing dozens of people, and several hundred were killed in just several strokes. It was terrifying how he assassinated them so quickly.

As for the others, their chi was slightly golden in color. It was the same for all of them.

'What? Are all of them at the ultimate god-level? Some of them are definitely not in the First-stage ultimate god-level; they're at least in the Third-stage ultimate god-level!' After Helena observed for some time, she grew increasingly mortified. She became. More and more certain that these people were

not the people who came into this area with them. After all, it was impossible for such a young group of people to achieve such a high fighting prowess.

It was then that a thought occurred to Helena, and she was so surprised that she did not know what to say.” Could they be natives to this place?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1726

An old man from the Cabello family flew toward Helena and stood by her side; it was clear he realized something was wrong. “First young mistress, something seems a little off with these people. They’re too powerful!”

Helena nodded. “Yes, something does seem a little off. This group of young people is masters in the ultimate god-level, and they’re incredibly strong. I suspect that they’re natives from this area. Only people from this area are capable of achieving the ultimate god-level at such a young age as they’re able to enjoy the abundant resources and everything present in this area!”

The old man was visibly frightened when he heard that. He tried his best to remain calm and said to Helena, “Why are they willing to help us, then? Did they help us because we were bullied by our opponents, seeing how lesser we are than them? Aren’ t the people inside here against us entering this area?”

Helena was just as mystified. She thought about it for some time before she responded, “I’m not sure what’s going on, either. Why would the people from this area be willing to help us?”

The old man took a closer look at Helena, and a weird expression appeared on his face. “I do have a theory, First young mistress. It seems that they’re willing to help because of your beautiful looks. After all, these youths can’t possibly resist your charm!”

Helena was embarrassed, but she had to admit that could be a reason. Why else would they come to her aid when they did not know any of them? Why did they not help the people from the seas instead?

“Run! Even Elder Lent has died!” Tom’s allies panicked as they witnessed his death. They thus hightailed out of the scene.

Unfortunately, the dozen people who came to Helena' s side were extremely strong. Together with the crazy fight back from the members of the Cabello family and White family, their opponents were slain- not one was spared.

"Haha… It's been a long time since I've enjoyed killing with such alacrity!" Arthur laughed triumphantly as he killed the last person before he flew back and said to Helena, "Young lady, we still don't know your name. By the way, I'm Arthur Whittemore, and I'm a member of the Whittemore Fortress from the Nine Armies."

Hendrick, who descended from his flight, also gazed at Helena expectantly as he wanted to know her name just as much, too.

"I…I'm Helena Cabello!" Helena smiled and gestured to the other party politely before she continued, " Thank you very much for your help; we would've died without you. How about this? The trophies will all be yours as our token of thanks. Well, my company and I will be leaving now!"

After she spoke, she waved her hand and said to her companions, not waiting for the other party to respond. "Come on, everyone. Follow me!"

Helena was obviously afraid when she learned that these people were from this area and after she saw how scary they were. She wanted to lead her people. And leave quickly.

After all, these people might not have realized that she and her group had barged in from Daxia. Who knew how they would act had they found out!

"Ms. Cabello, there's no need for you to leave in a hurry. I'm Hendrick Lavigne, and I'm also a member of the Nine Armies. I'm from the Lavigne Fortress!" Hendrick panicked when he saw that Helena and the others were leaving, so he hastily introduced himself.

At that moment, a middle-aged man from the Cabello family could not help but mumble, "Nine Armies? What's that place? Does it mean nine fortresses?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1727

The middle-aged woman beside him chimed in, puzzled, “I’ve never heard of them. The people who came in with us are from some families or are members of the four ancient clans. We don’t even know how members of the Hall of Divine Royal followed us into this area! By the way, how can these people have such high fighting prowess when they’re all young? Do you know which families they’re from? Are they prodigies from the ancient clans?”

Helena fell mum instantly as the thing she feared the most had happened. While the thought did occur to her, she could not shut everyone up. The only thing she could think of was to quickly lead the others and leave.

However, some of them still started to make assumptions.

“Can the two of you stop talking?” Helena was furious as she glared at these two members of the Cabello family. She inwardly rebuked them for their foolishness and for running their mouths. After all, there was a possibility that what they said would cause everybody their lives. •

“What is this Hall of Divine Royal? The four ancient clans and families? You guys entered this area? Where did you guys come from?” Arthur frowned and had a puzzled look on his face.

Skye had been unhappy about how attentive Arthur was from the start. With a frown, she warily asked, ” You guys have no idea about our Nine Armies? How can you guys know nothing about the Nine Armies when you’re searching for precious items here? On top of that, you mentioned entering from some other place?”

As she thought about it, a surprised expression appeared on her face as she muttered, “Are… Are you guys from the abandoned world?”

“The abandoned world? What does that mean?” Some of the members of the Cabello family had stunned expressions on their faces.

Arthur and the others completely understood what happened when they studied their stunned expressions. Those standing before them, and those they had killed, were not from this area. The people would have at least heard of the Nine Armies and the abandoned world otherwise.

However, the people in front of them had no idea what they were talking about.

“The four ancient clans? Hall of Divine Royal and some other families?” Arthur frowned and looked at the glamorous Helena in front of him before he asked, “Don’t worry. Although we have a good relationship with the Anti-Alliance Guard, we’re considered members of the Anti-Alliance Guard, and we won’t kill you guys. Still, you’ll have to come clean: how many of you people have entered?”

Helene bit her S*xy red lips. She knew they would have been exposed sooner or later even if she said nothing as so many of them had entered the area.

On top of that, these natives did not plan to hurt them after they learned they were outsiders. As she deliberated it all, she then confessed, “A total of three hundred to four hundred thousand of us came in, buto we didn’t expect that members of the Hall of Divine Royal and Cloud Sky Sect would follow us here. There are around two hundred thousand of them, so there are a total of around six hundred thousand people who’ve entered.”

“Six hundred thousand people!” Arthur and the others inhaled deeply at her confession. That, after all, was a large crowd.

“Though, there should be fewer of us now. After all, you guys know that everyone would fight one another to take the precious items after we enter the area. On top of that, the Hall of Divine Royal has a mutually antagonistic relationship with many of our forces. Together with the fact that we encountered some really strong monster beasts, I think people have died by the day,” said Helena carefully when she saw how surprised the young people in the ultimate god-level were. “We’ve been here for more than ten days, and I’m afraid… I’m afraid that lots of us have died. Take a look: didn’t two thousand to three thousand people die here? The people who surrounded and attacked us were members of the Hall of Divine Royal!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1728

Arthur frowned, and he had a solemn expression.

This was a difficult matter, and he was not in the position to do anything.

He spoke up after keeping quiet for some time, “That’s A large number of you, and even though many of you have died, be it more than hundreds and thousands, it’s still a lot. If it’s only you guys, we’d be able to inform the upper management and separate you among the nine fortresses. It’d be difficult for the others to notice anything as we’ll then say that you people will be joining us, but this won’t work with so many of you.”

Skye then abruptly pulled Arthur to one side after she weighed it in.

When they were some distance away, Skye said to Arthur, “Young Master Arthur, I think we should kill these thousand people. These people barged in and are occupying our resources. After we kill them, we can then take the resources they obtained from this area. Together with the resources from those we’ve slain, it’ll be a generous amount. Think about it: They must’ve garnered a bountiful amount of items after being here for more than ten days.”

Skye’s lips twisted into a smile before she added,” After killing them, we can just leave the forest and return to our fortress-no one will know we’ve come across these people. We can just act as if we were never here and that we’ve never met any of these people. We don’t need to get involved in this troublesome matter.”

Arthur might have had considered that before he stumbled across the belle Helena.

Her beauty, however, had latched itself onto him from the get-go, and Arthur’s facial expression darkened as he spoke, “What are you talking about? I’ m not that sort of a person, and if I wanted to kill them, I wouldn’t have rescued them just now. You want me to kill them after rescuing them? Do I look like I’m so free that I’m looking for things to do?”

Skye instantly countered, “We rescued them because we didn’t know who they were and their identity. It makes sense to kill them now that we’ve learned about their identity, right?”.

“Haha… Should we just kill them because you said so? We humans, and we can’t just be that flippant. On top of that, we aren’t members of the Alliance Guard. What if the fortress masters are displeased that we killed them? We don’t have the power to act as we like yet!” Arthur laughed and was somewhat irked.

Skye crossed her arms at her chest and coldly chided, “You’re just reluctant to let go of that woman. You’re Young Master Arthur, and your grandfather is the First Elder of the Whittemore Fortress. Putting aside the fact that members of the fortress won’t know about us killing them, they won’t blame you even if they learned about it. On top of that, a total of several hundred thousand people came in, so why should you be afraid of killing several thousand people? Didn’t you kill those people from the so-called Hall of Divine Royal just now?”

Arthur had a guilty conscience when Skye spoke openly about his thoughts. However, he still argued with her, “What do you know? Can’t you see that @ Hendrick is painfully attentive toward that woman? It ‘s very likely that they won’t agree to it!”

Skye was speechless and could not lower her head in silence.

“Let’s go! I still think that we need to inform my grandfather and the others about what has happened. Later on, the higher management can discuss what to do next.” Arthur glanced at Skye before he walked toward Helena and the rest.

Helena smiled and said to Arthur when she saw him returning, “Young Master Arthur, there are only a small number of your people here. I can ask some of my people to help gather the trophies for you!”

“Alright, thank you for your help!” Arthur nodded, and it was not long until they finished gathering their trophies.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1728

“I think you guys should follow us back to our fortress, seeing as we won’t be able to hide this for long. Once we return, we’ll decide what to do next after my grandfather and the other fortress master have their discussion.” Arthur thought about it and continued to speak to Helena, “Fret not, Ms. Helena. We’re not members of the Alliance Guard, so it’ll be in your best interest to follow us back to the Nine Armies. Should anyone oppose our decision, I’ll speak on your behalf, along with Hendrick and the others!”

“Thank… Thank you guys so much!” Helena’s face blossomed with gratitude, though it did not diminish her worry about the whereabouts of her father and the rest. She thought about it before she brought it up to Arthur and the others, “Young Master Arthur, I’d like to suggest something: I have two younger sisters and my father, who have also entered this area. I don’ t know where they are now, however, and we’re also at odds with the people from the seas. It doesn’t help that the White family clashes with the Lagorio family and the Cloud Sky Sect. I’m worried that something will happen to them!”

Helena bit her lustrous red lips before she continued, “Why don’t everyone head back to inform your grandfather and the others about our situation? I’ll search for my father and my sisters!”

“You have younger sisters?” Arthur and Hendrick became giddy when they heard that Helena had two younger sisters. Since Helena was incredibly attractive, both her sisters would not look bad either. Both men had the urge to see both beauties.

They were not the only ones, though, as the eyes of the other youths also lit up.

“Haha… That’s not happening. Who knows if you guys will escape?” Skye, however, grew jealous when she saw how happy Arthur was. She then chided with a mocking expression, “After all, there isn’t a fixed solution as to how the upper management will deal with you people after their meeting. What if they decide to hand you over to the Alliance Guard?”

The fatty also thought of this possibility and immediately said, “That’s right! What if you guys run Away later on?”

Helena's expression faltered as she remained silent for a moment before she reasoned, "We're completely unfamiliar with this area, and we dare not run around! On top of that, there are so many of us, and we would be pinpointed by the Alliance Guard sooner or later. The situation might worsen if that's the case!"

Arthur, on the other hand, glared at the fatty fiercely. "What are you talking about? There's no need for them to escape. Even if we can't shelter them, we can' t possibly send them to the Alliance Guard, right? I know all too well what sort of people the First Fortress Master and the others are!"

Ella immediately stepped forward and said, "That's right. The First Fortress Master and the others are magnanimous people, so how would they do such despicable things?"

Hendrick thought about it and said to Arthur, "How about this, Young Master Hendrick… Since Ms. Helena plans to search for her sisters and father, Ella and I will accompany her on the journey. With our presence, we'll be able to ensure their safety, even if they run into members of the so-called Hall of Divine Royal. As for you and the others, you can return to inform your grandfather and the others to discuss this matter. We'll return to this area soon."

"I think that'll work. Hendrick and Ella can leave with them. The rest of us can go back first!" agreed Skye instantaneously.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1730

Arthur was not dumb. He knew that Hendrick was thinking of an excuse to send them away so he could have more alone time with Helena. He might have thought of impressing Helena's younger sisters, too.

It was only natural that he declined Hendrick's suggestion.

He was only slightly stunned for a short moment before he spoke with an indifferent smile, "It's alright; there's no need to hurry. None of the members from the Alliance Guard entered this area at this moment, so why should we be afraid? They barely come here, and if we need to send a person back to notify the rest that badly, I think Skye can go on her own. We can follow Ms. Helena to search. After all, some monster beasts in this area are quite strong, and it'll be safer if there are more people!"

Helena's expression contorted in apprehension. What the elder of the Cabello family had mentioned to her seemed right, after all. Both Arthur and Hendrick considered things on her behalf. Why else did they act proactively?

The most important thing was that these people came to their aid and saved everyone. It was difficult for her to refuse their kindness, so she could only respond to the rest with a smile.

"I'm not going back, either. Why should I go back when none of you are?" Skye naturally refused to return, and she flew up. "Come on. Where should we go next? The sun is setting, and I think we should find a place to rest for the night. We'll continue our search for precious items tomorrow!"

However, the fatty recalled something and blurted," This is bad! Didn't we forget something? Members of the Bloodshed Clan are in charge of guarding the entrance this year, am I right? Although they're just disciples with low fighting prowess, they'd surely report to their sect when they know that so many people have entered the area. By then, wouldn't all the forces of the entire Alliance Guard learn about this?"

Another member of the Whittemore Fortress also said, "That's right! I think we should go back and inform the fortress master about this. If the forces of the Alliance Guard learned about this and sent one

or two of their larger sects here… Haha… They might just infiltrate and annihilate the entire Nine Armies!"

Everybody inhaled deeply when they heard that.

"That's wrong!" Helena fought back. "We didn't bump into anyone guarding the area when we entered! Also, everybody got separated when we entered, and we had no idea which place was the entrance to this area!"

Only then did Ella smile bitterly and said, "That's because you people are lucky. It so happens that the formation of the entrance hasn't been maintained for a long time and is at the brink of being deposed. That' s why everyone got separated when you entered, and it's no surprise that you didn't bump into those two guards! However, they should be chasing after those who entered after you guys left. There were a lot of you, mind you, and I'm sure that some would have appeared on the mountaintop."

"What should we do? They'll surely notice that a lot of us have entered and are separated if he tracks us extensively. It'll be troublesome when they report this to the members of his sect!" Helena grew incredibly anxious at that. If some from the Cabello family, including her sisters and the others, met those two people who guarded the area, would that not mean a definite death?

"Don't worry. I happened to be searching for precious items in this area, and I saw that those two had been killed by an extremely strong monster beast. I've seen it all, so no need to fear!" Ella added, purposely lying. After all, if members of the Bloodshed Clan knew that those two disciples of theirs were killed by the people who entered this area, they would not rest with the fact.

"Is that so? Oh, that's great! Thank you so much, Ms. Ella. You guys got us startled for a moment there!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1731

Since everyone had introduced themselves to one another, Helena knew the names of Ella and the rest.

Ella had a petite figure and had a pair of bright beautiful eyes. She gave others a very friendly feeling.

“Haha… Why do you need to thank me? I happened to see what went down, so I have to tell you!” Ella laughed and continued, “Let’s go. Sounds like people are fighting up ahead. Let’s go and have a look if they’re your younger sisters!”

“Alright!” Helena nodded. A faint warmth graced her at the thought of how she had met such a group of young people who were so considerate toward her.

Arthur and the others were utterly enthusiastic during their journey. No matter what Helena and the others asked about the situation of this place, they replied in detail. This, in turn, informed them about the area.

At this moment, jackie and the others had obtained a certain amount of spirited grass throughout the day.. Of course, they encountered quite the impressive crowd from the forces of the seas during the day. They did not let any of those people go and killed all of them.

However, they also saw bodies of some members from the mainland forces during their journey. Some of them should have died during fights with the members of the forces from the seas while some of them died in battles with monster beasts.

jackie and the others also found out that there were fights among the second-class aristocratic families from the mainland. Their bodies were strewn all over the ground.

It was obvious that these people had lost their reasoning upon entering the area and spotted the bountiful precious items. They never thought of working together and were clueless to the presence of aboriginal forces in this area. They also did not know that there was an Alliance Guard in this area that hated them and hated that they entered this area.

"Many have died within eighteen days!" In the evening, jackie and the others found a cave to stay in. jackie was slightly worried. "Everyone got so busy taking precious items upon entering that some of them had no idea that an Alliance Guard had been formed here to pinpoint on us. The future journey is a difficult one, and our strength will be weakened if our men are reduced."

Nash smiled bitterly. "What else can we do? This is how the world is, and the strong ones get the say. On top of that, many people have never seen third-grade spirited grass on the outside. This area not only has third-grade spirited grass, but there are even fourth grade ones too.

How can they not take to their heart' s content? How can they not go crazy over it? Look at the elders from the Hall of Divine Royal: They looked forward to Hall Master Matthew's death once they break through into the ultimate god-level so that they can become the next hall master!"

The smiling Alejandro chimed in with a laugh, "Haha … Angus Moseley is a joke and thinks that he's almighty after breaking through into the Second grade ultimate god-level. It never occurred to him to become the hall master of the Hall of Divine Royal – he wants to rule all the forces that entered this area and wants everybody to submit to him!" |

"I think I should continue to try cultivating third grade intermediate pills. Luckily, I have quite a handful of third and fourth-grade pill remedies right now." In the end, jackie smiled bitterly and took out his pill furnace with the flip of his hand. He then took the ingredients out for cultivating third-grade intermediate pills and started cultivating them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1732

Of course, the cultivation of third-grade intermediate pills was far more difficult compared to that of third grade elementary pills.

jackie had attempted numerous times during the previous life, so he knew the taste of failure.

As he cultivated the pills throughout the night, his degree of proficiency had improved compared to what he had yesterday. He nearly succeeded during his first attempt and only failed when he formed the pill. jackie was not the only one disappointed; everyone else felt somewhat of a pity as well.

After all, the ingredients wasted at every failure were enough to make everyone dejected.

“That’s fine! We’re seeing quite a few improvements here, so don’t overexert yourself. You’re at a tender stage, yet you’ve improved greatly!” Selena, who sat at the side, felt her heart tugged when she saw jackie ’s forehead covered with a sheen layer of sweat. She then tried to assure jackie .

“Don’t worry-I can do it. After all, my fighting prowess has improved, and my mental strength has skyrocketed! The speed of the third-grade elementary pill does nothing to my current fighting prowess, since it gives nothing but a slow push to my prowess. On the contrary, if I’m capable of cultivating a third-grade intermediate pill, I’d experience a far better outcome!” jackie then gazed at Selena, who stood at the side. He knew that if he continued cultivating third-grade elementary pills, his fighting prowess would only raise another level as he was already in the Fourth-grade ultimate god-level.

While that was enough to raise the envy of others, he was not satisfied.

He understood well that the future held potential threats. Even though he had achieved the Fourthgrade ultimate god-level, meeting those in the Seventh-grade ultimate god-level would not faze him.

All that, yet he still felt it was not enough.

After his realm stabilized, his fighting prowess would increase two levels seamlessly if he could consumen third-grade intermediate pills in the future. If that happened, he would be in the Sixth-grade ultimate god-level, and it would be a piece of cake to kill those in the Seventh-grade or Eighth-grade ultimate godlevel.

He would not quiver if he was to face those in the Ninth-grade ultimate god-level after that.

On top of that, jackie had decided to help Selena lift her spell. He had to increase his level of cultivation pills hastily for that, and he could only complete his promise if the level of his pill cultivation increased continuously.

After he assured them, jackie took another set of ingredients out with the flip of his hands and repeated what he did. It was another round of cultivation.

It had to be said that jackie 's talents in cultivating pills would cause the First Elder of the Cabello family, Kevin Cabello, to admire him greatly. Even though he failed every time he cultivated pills, they noticed that he began to improve in every attempt of pill cultivation. It was either in his grasp of fire, or in terms of the purification of the pill solution.

"I'm close! I'm close!" The second pill was also a failure, but a glimmer of excitement twinkled in jackie ' s eyes. "I'll definitely succeed if I pay more attention next time!"

"Really? Haha…! Alright! We were nervous for you as we watched you, but I think it'll work now, and you'll surely get it done!" Daniella's lips curved into a grin as she sat a distance away. She had been looking at jackie all this time and observed him as he cultivated pills. It brought her great joy as she did.

"Splendid! Who would've thought that you'd be able to get it in such a short time!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1733

Nash nodded in satisfaction before he said to jackie caringly, “I think you should take a rest for the rest of The night and continue studying the cultivation tomorrow. I know you’ll succeed tomorrow night.”

“Father, you don’t have to worry about me. You guys can go ahead and rest for now, so that everyone can increase their fighting prowess. I just need to rest for half an hour to recuperate before thinking about what went wrong in my cultivation. I know I’ll succeed next time. I refuse to think that I can’t cultivate one pill tonight!” jackie had finally seen a glint of hope and felt rather pleased about cultivating pills that night. How could he choose to rest the night?

After all, cultivating pills relied on a person’s feelings. If they were present, cultivation would become increasingly smooth with a great increase of chance.

None among them continued to persuade jackie when they saw how persistent he was. Thus, everyone else began to train silently nearby.

After resting for some time, jackie took out the third set of ingredients. He then exhaled heavily before he started preheating his pill furnace and continued cultivating the pill.

Time slowly passed, and about an hour later, jackie smiled. He slowly raised his right hand as a perfectly rounded pill with a faint scent that a pill usually had flew upward, floating before him.

“Haha… I did it! I finally did it! The color of this pill suggests that it’s a top-grade pill. Not bad! Not bad!” jackie looked at the pill before him, and excitement was written all over his face. He was finally a step closer to cultivating fourth-grade pills.

As he was capable of cultivating third-grade intermediate pills, Nash and the others would be able to consume third-grade intermediate pills in the future. That greatly benefited everyone in increasing their fighting prowess speedily.

It could be said that jackie ’s success in becoming a third-grade intermediate alchemist and the success of cultivating this pill were incredibly important.

“Incredible! This is incredible! You truly are adept in this, Young Master jackie . You’ve done it at last!” Alejandro almost danced in excitement. “You truly are a master in the pill cultivation world. No, you must be the cream of the crop! I’ve never seen someone with such speed of improvement!”

“Haha… This is great! As long as you’re able to succeed the first time, you’ll be able to succeed the second time. After this, Young Master jackie only needs to search for ingredients needed to cultivate this certain pill and cultivate continuously to increase the odds of succeeding. You’ll only be able to try third -grade premium pills when your probability of success has increased. In the future, you might even be able to try fourth-grade pills and become a fourth grade alchemist!” Kenneth, Titus, and the others were honestly happy for jackie . What stopped the White family from rising up with such a great alchemist like jackie in their ranks?

It looked like the White family would have a special position in this area in the future.

Meanwhile, the middle-aged man who sat at the corner shook a little as a wave of aura was released before he quickly retracted it.

Everyone was so into jackie and his success that none of them noticed the aura ripple.

jackie , however, felt the wave of aura as he turned his head and beamed, “What a great night this is, with two happy occasions. The Third Elder has broken through!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1734

At jackie ’s words, Lancelot stood up slowly with a satisfied smile on his face.

“Third Elder, have you truly broken through?” Nash was just as elated when he heard that Lancelot had broken through. He looked at him anticipatingly and wanted to double-confirm if it was true.

Lancelot nodded as he met their expectant-filled eyes. “It wasn’t easy, seeing as I’ve failed before, but I ‘ve finally succeeded this time. Had I gotten it down the first time, I’d be in the Third-grade ultimate god level like you guys right now!”

“You should be happy! The fighting prowess of First Grade ultimate god-level is good enough! You have no idea how many people want so badly to break through into the ultimate god-level. More importantly, you’ll be able to live for two hundred years once you’ve broken through into the ultimate god-level!” an old man from the Cabello family chimed in with envy. “Sigh… Look at me. I’m only in the elementary level of the true god-level at this age. I don’t know if I’ll ever break through to the ultimate god-level in this lifetime!”

“I’m sure you’ll get there, seeing as training in this area will grant a quicker outcome. The chi here is much richer, after all! I’m not exiting this place no matter what. No wonder all the so-called masters who came here disappeared after entering this place and only left a legend! Who’d want to leave such a place great for training?” said Alejandro giddily. The feeling of becoming stronger took him, and it filled him with anticipation.

“Haha… You’re right. Breaking through into the higher realm is the most crucial action, and it’d be much easier when I break through into the Second Grade ultimate god level in the future.” With balled up fists, Lancelot grew determined when he felt the strength in his body that had increased several times.

“Do you crave to go out and test out your current combat power? Do you want to try it out with two monster beasts?” goaded Kenneth cheekily and happily at Lancelot. “Still, you need to wait for a bit. It looks like there’s still one to two hours away from daybreak. We’ll leave the monster beasts to you when the opportunity arises, once the sun rises.”

“I think I should sit down and start getting comfortable with my power for now. I should try and stabilize my fighting prowess first before anything else!” Lancelot sat down with his legs folded and started training.

jackie also carefully put away the pill he cultivated. It was a good pill, but he had just broken through into the fourth-grade ultimate god-level several days ago, and he could not use this pill to continue his breakthrough. His realm had not completely stabilized, and it was not a good thing to use the pill to increase his fighting prowess. Even if his fighting prowess increased by then, his realm would not be steady, and it was not going to work for a long period.

The sky finally lit up about two hours later, and the group of people walked out.

The people guarding outside were also delighted when they learned about the achievements of jackie and the others.

jackie and his company did not expect to encounter about a dozen youths just several minutes after they started their journey, however. These young people had the same clothes and the same token on their abdomen. They were obviously members of the same force.

“This is weird. I have no idea which force the dozen people we met are from. Haha… They tried to snatch the spirited grass from me when they don’t have a high fighting prowess? Isn’t that a death wish?” One of the young men had a frown on his face. “On top of that, there are noises of people fighting all around the place. Why do I feel that something is wrong?”

A fatty smirked and said to the others, “Just ignore them. Come! Shall we go to the other side of the forest to take a look at those two guarding the entrance?”

Another young woman said, “What’s there to be seen? That place is so far away, and it’ll take us several days even if we fly at a normal speed to that place. All of that just to pay those two disappointing people a visit? If they didn’t make any mistakes, they wouldn’t be sent here to guard the entrance!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1735

“Haha… The problem isn’t that they made mistakes; everyone is susceptible to making them. They can only blame themselves for their stupidity!” remarked a disciple with a smile. “It was our turn, the Bloodshed Clan, to send our members to guard this area. They were selecting who among us would stand guard at the start of the year. Who would’ve expected those two to hit the muzzle of the gun!”

The smile on this young man’s face froze, however, the moment he finished, all because he saw a group of more than a thousand people in front of them.

jackie and the others stopped in their tracks, equally surprised to notice the other party.

“Why are there so many people here?” The fatty opposite them frowned as he studied jackie and his company. Baffled, the fatty blurted, “That’s not right. We’ve never seen the tokens on them before!”

One of the female disciples then thought of something and exclaimed, “This isn’t right… These people aren’t from this area. They might be from the abandoned place!”

Hiss! The disciples from the Bloodshed Clan inhaled deeply and wondered if they had heard wrongly.

“Young… Young Master jackie , we’re done for. It looks like they’re from this area!” Alerted, Alejandro looked at jackie grimly.

Kenneth, on the other hand, said, “Why should we be afraid? There are only around a dozen of them while we’re a lot more in number!”

“If they have a high fighting prowess, it won’t matter if there are many of us. On top of that, we only have less than two thousand people!” Titus frowned as he continued, “The most crucial point is that we don’ t know where these people are from. Are they also members of the Nine Armies like Ella Lavinge?”

jackie eyed the other party straight ahead before he noted, “These people should be members of the Bloodshed Clan. Look at their tokens: they’re the same as those two people we killed before. The tokens are maroon-colored and have the wording ‘blood’ carved onto them.”

jackie paused momentarily before he added,” However, from the looks of their clothing and age, they should be disciples of the Bloodshed Clan, and they might not have a high fighting prowess!”

Words were exchanged softly among one another in fear of letting the opposing group hear their conversation.

The female disciple pointed her sword at jackie and his company as she interrogated, “Young man, how did you guys enter this area? Where are the two disciples from our sect who guarded the entrance?”

The fatty thought about it and immediately said,” Senior Sister Rowan Xander, we noticed something was off with the forest as there were sounds of battle. It looks like the number of people who entered is much more than this.”

Rowan responded, “It’ll be troublesome if that’s the case. There may be more where these came from. They must’ve surrounded and attacked those two junior disciples or escaped from them. I think we should just kill these people and leave several people to guard the external area of the forest to prevent them from escaping. The others should immediately return to inform the elders of our sect about what ‘s going on!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1736

“Stop all of them!” jackie was shocked by what Rowan said. He immediately signaled for everybody to take action with the wave of his hand.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Following the command from jackie , the others immediately flew outward to surround the dozens of disciples of the Bloodshed Clan, including Rowan.

Rowan and the others were slightly surprised when they saw this. “This is great. It looks like you people have just entered from outside recently. If not, all of you would have left this forest. Haha… How dare you people stop us when only several of you have broken through into the first-stage ultimate god-level? Are you guys being whimsical?”

jackie smiled coldly. “You people are just some of the disciples from the Bloodshed Clan. How would you know if we aren’t your opponent if you don’t give it a try? On top of that, it would be troublesome if we allow your people to go back and inform the others to send true masters here!”

The fatty immediately tightened his fists and Chi surged over them. He was actually in the third-stage ultimate god-level. He smiled coldly and said, ” Young man, do you see this? A third-stage ultimate god-level fighting prowess. How long do you think you people will be able to hold out against us? I’m in the third-stage ultimate god-level while my senior Sister Rowan is in the sixth-stage ultimate god-level. Tsk tsk… Isn’t that enough to kill you guys?”

Rowan also started smiling coldly. “However, I have to admit it, these people are really quite smart. If they did not stop us, they were afraid that the elders or patronums of our sect would come over. If they were able to kill us, they would surely be safe for a certain amount of time, am I right? Unfortunately, aren’t they looking down at us, the disciples? We aren ‘t some informal disciples, we are formal disciples of the Bloodshed Clan!”

Another disciple in the second-grade ultimate god level also released his aura. He tightened his fists and said, “Formal disciples are only for those who are in the ultimate god-level. As for the informal disciples, they are at the true god level. As for those in the semi god level. Haha… They can only become normal disciples!”

It was obvious that these people had a high above expression on their faces after they spoke of their position. They were considered rare masters in their sect. Although they were not alike the true masters, disciples like Rowan would still attract lots of disciples fawning over her when they walked into the sect.

“This is troublesome. There’s nothing to be afraid of if they are in the first-stage or second-stage ultimate god-level. Who knew that this young girl is already in the sixth-stage ultimate god-level!” Alejandro’s face slightly darkened when he saw the true strength of these people in front of them. It looked like the strongest person among the other party was the female disciple known as Rowan.

The others should be in the first-stage or second stage ultimate god-level. Even if they were in the third-stage or fourth-stage ultimate god-level, they had nothing to be afraid of based on their fighting! Prowess and jackie ’s combat power.

However, he knew that jackie was also in the third stage ultimate god-level. Would he be able to defeat the young girl in the sixth-stage ultimate god-level?

“We’ve just entered this area recently but you people cannot belittle us. If you bumped into the others who have just entered like us, they might be in trouble. However, you guys are the ones in trouble now that you’ve met us!” jackie tightened his fists without much care. With a thought, a wave of extremely hidden aura was slowly released and a slightly goldish Chi surged over his fists.

“A fighting prowess of the fourth-stage ultimate god -level, how’s that possible? How did his fighting prowess improve so quickly?” Rowan was immediately surprised when she witnessed jackie ’s fighting prowess. She did not expect people who had just entered the area recently, to have such fighting prowess.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1737

“No way, he’s already in the fourth-grade ultimate god-level?” Alejandro and Nash glanced at each other as they were dumbfounded. They have always thought that jackie was still in the third-grade ultimate god level, like them. Unexpectedly, this guy had already achieved the fourth-grade ultimate god level and this was slightly beyond their expectations.

After observing and discovering that jackie was really in the fourth-grade ultimate god-level, Alejandro said, “There might be hopes of killing the opponent if he’s in the third-grade ultimate god-level, right? After all, jackie has a high combat power. In that case, we can still help jackie after we’ve killed the others. This time, it looks like we will be able to win!”

“Yes, that’s great news. jackie must have broken through three levels in one go previously but he didn’ t tell us. Now, my heart is at ease!” Nash was also speechless as he spoke. jackie even deceived him and hid this from him!

“Haha… A fighting prowess of fourth-grade ultimate god-level plans to kill the Bloodshed Clan’s disciple like us who are in the sixth-grade ultimate god-level? Are you daydreaming?” The fatty on the opposite side laughed loudly when he heard this. “Let’s put us, the formal disciples from the sect aside, your fighting prowess must have piled up quickly after you people entered this area. Will such fighting prowess be stable? On top of that, you even plan to kill Senior Sister Rowan, who’s two levels higher? Aren’t you dreaming?”

“That’s right. These people are too naïve. They must be some casual trainers who have never experienced the world!” Another male disciple also said with a sneer.

“Stop talking nonsense with them. Leave this young man for me to deal with and you guys can kill the others for me! Let’s make it a quick battle, understand?” Rowan stared at jackie with a cold expression on her face. “It looks like you guys have been here for some time, maybe days and even months. Humph! However, no matter how talented you are, I will definitely kill all of you today. Why can’t you guys just stay in the abandoned world obediently? Why do you guys have to break into a place where you shouldn’t have come into such as this Sacred Place? That is just suicidal!”

jackie smiled coldly and also stared at her. After breaking through into the fourth-grade ultimate god - level, it was the first time he has met somebody with a higher fighting prowess than him. He could take this opportunity to try the other party's strength and judge how his combat power was. He wanted to know if he could defeat them easily or if he had to work hard to do so.

However, no matter what it was, jackie was still slightly confident about defeating the sixth-grade ultimate god-level female disciple who was standing in front of him.

"You guys stole the Chi and extracted it from our area to this area so that this area becomes rich in Chi for you people to train easily. Now, you still dare to call this area the sacred grounds? You guys are really selfish!" jackie appeared in front of the other party in a flash and punched the female disciple angrily.

"You do know quite a lot of things but you people are intruders. We were originally living a great life here. Humph! Since you guys aren't convinced, let's fight, and shall the fittest survive!" The female disciple did not give in. After she finished speaking, the Chi on her fists surged outward and she directly met jackie 's punch.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1738

Boom!

Both fists met each other and a loud bang could be heard. A huge energy fluctuation also radiated from where the two fists met.

“Im-impossible!” Rowan felt that something was wrong the moment her fist met with jackie s. The power coming from jackie ’s hand was terrifying and it was so powerful to the point where she was unable to resist it.

She really could not believe that the strength of a person in the fourth-stage ultimate god-level was much stronger than her, who was in the sixth-stage ultimate god-level.

Bang!

The moment she finished speaking, Rowan could not hold on anymore. She was sent flying backward and flew almost 100 feet away before she could barely stabilize herself. She could not help but taste a sweet tang in her throat and a mouthful of blood poured out. Her face turned extremely pale.

“This is bad, Senior Sister Rowan. Several of them are in the third-grade ultimate god-level!” At this time, her other junior brothers and sisters also started to yell loudly. They originally thought that it would be quite easy to kill these intruders. However, they discovered after the first contact that there were not only first-grade ultimate god-level masters among them, there were several who were in the third-grade ultimate god-level.

“Haha, you’ve just learned about this now? It’s too late!” Alejandro laughed and directly slammed a guy in the first-stage ultimate god-level into the ground with a punch. Specks of dust flew up from the ground and his opponent was seriously injured.

“This guy is too strong but he can have a taste of my martial skills! His strength is very strong, but the richness of Chi in his body and his martial skills might not be as strong as mine!’ Rowan had an uncertain look in her eyes. They were completely surrounded and her juniors could not hold on for long. However, she did not care much about their lives. All she had to do right then was to kill the guy in front of her. She had hopes of winning as long as she managed to kill jackie .

Rowan took a sword out with a flip of her hand as she thought about it and directly waved it forward.

jackie saw that the other party had started to use martial skills and he did not dare to react carelessly. With the flip of his palm, he took his sword out and injected Chi into it before slashing forward.

Whoosh whoosh!

Two terrible slashes met one another moments later. Then, a horrendous booming sound could be heard.

Boom!

What Rowan did not expect was that her attack only managed to resist jackie ’s attack for a very short amount of time before the attack was completely defeated. Soon, jackie ’s attack continued to travel forward and went straight at her. The attack arrived in front of her in a flash.

“This… This is impossible. How am I unable to defeat someone who just recently came in from the abandoned world?” Rowan had a disbelief expression on her face. The attack landed directly on her, splitting her body into two.

“Selena, look! jackie is really strong!” Daniella and Selena did not join the battle. After all, it was enough that jackie , Nash, and others went up. Instead, they stood outside and watched as the battle uncovered.

“Yes. I really didn’t expect this battle to end so quickly. He still has several powerful martial skills that he hasn’t used!” Selena also smiled slightly and nodded.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1739

It did not take long for the battle to end and the dozen or so disciples from the Bloodshed Clan were killed on the spot.

“It looks like almost all the formal disciples of the Bloodshed Clan are at the ultimate god-level. Fortunately, they don’t have a high fighting prowess, and there aren’t many of them. It would be troublesome if there were several people with a high fighting prowess or if they had more people!” Kenneth wiped the cold sweat from his forehead and looked at the corpses lying on the ground.

jackie also flew down and picked up Rowan’s ring before he said, “I wonder if there are any treasures in this disciple’s ring!”

After observing for a while, he actually found a very nice third-grade intermediate martial skill, Twin Dragons Fist!”

“This is great! I’m taking this martial skill!” jackie placed it away after looking at it for a while. “You guys should take a look at the martial rings of the other disciples and see if there is anything suitable for you. By the way, you should take a look and see if there is any spirited grass suitable for alchemy!”

“Alright! If there are some good martial skills, it can help increase our combat power!” Lancelot and the others flew down happily.

After some time, everyone had divided the things that once belonged to these disciples among themselves. However, there were not many materials to be divided. There were however a couple of second grade premium martial skills and two third-grade elementary martial skills that were quite good.

“The corpses of these disciples from the Bloodshed Clan would be eaten by the monster beasts soon. If we leave this place quickly, people would not know that we were the ones who killed them.” Nash could not help but speak up after thinking about it.

jackie , on the other hand, started frowning. “Why did a dozen disciples from the Bloodshed Clan suddenly come here? Were they here to hunt for treasures? I wonder if there are other disciples of the Bloodshed Clan who are headed here. It will be troublesome if there are more of them and if the other disciples have a higher fighting prowess!”

However, Alejandro said confidently, “Hey, what’s so scary about that? The woman just now was in the sixth-grade ultimate god-level and I saw how relaxed you were when you dealt with her. This means that you might be capable of killing disciples in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. Hence, I’m sure you have the power to fight someone in the eighth stage ultimate god-level. However, such fighters must be patronums or people with a higher ranking in the Bloodshed Clan, am I right?”

Kenneth also said with a smile on his face, “Yes, as long as the people who come here aren’t patronum or elders, there’s nothing to be afraid of about these formal disciples. Unless a large group of them came over. Then, there’s nothing we can do. As for those so -called normal disciples and informal disciples, they would be a piece of cake for us.”

“We are still safe for now but I’m only afraid that the members of the Bloodshed Clan or other powerful members of the Alliance Guard will find out about us. Besides, we have not met Helena and the others. We also do not know how the other members of the White family and Cabello family are doing now. jackie smiled bitterly and continued speaking emotionally.” Sigh… I hope that many of the members of the White family and the Cabello family managed to survive!”

“Yes, I am also quite worried about Helena!” Alejandro sighed as he felt helpless.

“This is great! Young Master jackie ! It’s Young Master jackie and the others!” At this moment, a voice could be heard and a group of people flew over from another direction.

jackie was overjoyed when he heard this and immediately looked over. It turned out to be Liah, Chad, Mason, and the others. There were actually more than 1000 members of the White family with them. Apart from that, William, Joseph, and the others were also traveling with them.

“This is great as we’ve met quite several familiar faces. There are more than a thousand people here! jackie was relieved to see these familiar faces.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1740

“This is great! It’s really jackie and the others!” Ethan and the others were extremely excited when they flew over.

“This is awesome! It’s good that nothing happened to you guys!” jackie looked at the familiar faces in front of him and said with equal excitement.

“Yes. We’ve already broken through into the final stage of the true god level. This place is awesome as not only are there third-stage spirited grass, there’s also fourth-stage spirited grass. We’ve improved quite a lot in less than twenty days of entering this area!” Sam said with a smile on his face. All of them looked as if they were full of beans.

“Is that so? Great! I can see that everybody has improved quite a lot. It’s quite good that Abner and Ethan have already achieved the intermediate stage of the true god level!” jackie nodded in satisfaction. Their fighting prowess had obviously improved greatly compared to previously. If they continued training in this area, they would have the opportunity to break through into the ultimate god-level soon.

“Everybody has made some improvement but we’ve also seen lots of deaths during our journey. Several days ago, we discovered the bodies of some members of the White family. It looks like they were killed by the members of the Lagorio family and Hall of Divine Royal.” Nikini soon thought of something and said to everybody with a frown on her face.

“Humph! I will definitely kill those people from the Hall of Divine Royal and Cloud Sky Sect!” jackie humphed coldly and tightened his fist as he said.

“Who are these people?” Ethan soon discovered the bodies on the floor and he was slightly puzzled. He obviously realized that this was not one of the forces who entered the area from looking at the clothing on the disciples.

“Sigh… It’s a long story. Come on, let’s talk about it on our way!” jackie sighed and continued to lead the group toward the place where noises of people fighting could be heard.

In the woods, Helena saw that a large number of members from the Cabello family and White family had joined her group, expanding the entire team of people.

However, although they have killed quite a number of people from the Hall of Divine Royal, she still did not meet her younger sisters and father.

The Second Elder of the Cabello family seemed to have detected the sadness on Helena’s face. He smiled helplessly and said to Helena. “First Mistress, there’s nothing to be worried about. The family master and the others have quite a high fighting prowess and if they were lucky enough to obtain a martial art technique when they entered the area, they would have achieved the first-stage ultimate god -level by now. Although there are lots of strong monster beasts in this area, nothing will happen as long as the family master and the others stay alert!”

“Yes, Miss Helena. You can relax as I’m sure that nothing will happen!” Angus also followed beside them with a smile on his face. He was extremely happy as he was able to occasionally look at the beauty in front of him.

As for Skye, she had a cold expression on her face all this while and she had been angry the entire way. She wanted to find an opportunity so badly to kill Helena so that this alluring woman would not steal the soul of the person she liked.

In the past, she was still confident when Angus had thoughts toward Ella. After all, although Ella was a pretty woman, she was also quite beautiful. At least her boobs were bigger than Ella’s.

However, she had no confidence when facing Helena’s beauty. Not only was she not as beautiful as Helena, even her figure was also incomparable to Helena. No matter how she compared herself with Helena, she would still fail behind.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1741

Hendrick, who was on the other side, would also look over from time to time. Sometimes, he had a goofy smile on his face and it was obvious that he had been completely submerged in love.

“Haha… Are you sure there will be nothing wrong?” Unexpectedly, several figures flew out from the forest in front of them and blocked their way at this moment.

In front of them, there were actually more than 20 disciples of the Bloodshed Clan.

“This is bad. Why did the disciples of the Blood… Bloodshed Clan come here?” Angus’ face darkened and secretly exclaimed that this was bad when he saw that these were members of the Bloodshed Clan.

“Haha… This is weird. Our Bloodshed Clan is not very far from here and this is also a treasure hunting place, why can’t we be here?” A man in white clothes from the Bloodshed Clan hugged his arms folded in front of his chest and had a lofty appearance on his face. “Do you really think that this is a territory that belonged to the Nine Armies and people from other forces cannot come here to hunt for treasures?”

Angus smiled awkwardly. “This…this is not what I meant! You guys can definitely come here to hunt for treasure but didn’t you guys used to hunt for treasures elsewhere previously? Why…why did you think about coming here this time? I just felt that this is a little unexpected!”

“Haha… This is because one of our elders who’s an alchemist gave us a task that requires two or three materials that happen to be available in this forest. Hence, we came over to complete the task!” The man in white clothes laughed and said. “By the way, there should be quite a number of disciples who want to complete this task. Not only the informal disciples, but our formal disciples have also begun to rush over!

“Is…is that so?” Angus swallowed his saliva and said. “We, the members of the Nine Armies, have always been at peace with your Bloodshed Clan. I hope that you can find the spirited grass you want. We shall make a move first!”

After he finished speaking, Angus gestured to the other party politely with his hand and planned to leave with his people.

However, the white-clothed man sneered and said,” Yes, we from the Bloodshed Clan and you guys from the Nine Armies rarely have any disputes. As long as you don’t provoke us, we naturally would not provoke you people!”

Having said that, he paused and said with a playful expression on his face, “However, I am curious about something. Do you guys always bring so many people with you when you come out to hunt for treasures? Apart from that, you guys even brought people from the abandoned world!”

The facial expression of Angus, Hendrick, and others suddenly darkened.

Hendrick immediately retorted, “What abandoned world? This brother, you cannot speak as you like about this. We have no idea what you are talking about!”

“Haha… You don’t know what we are talking about. Although the legend of the abandoned world has become a legend and who knows how many years have passed since then, I don’t believe you have not heard of it?” The man in white clothes chuckled before he said. “Since you guys said that you don’t know about this, then we can take action!”

Angus gritted his teeth and he knew clearly in his heart that the man wearing white clothes in front of him was considered quite famous among the formal disciples of the Bloodshed Clan. He was considered a master among masters and he had already achieved the seventh-grade ultimate god-level.

Together with those people in the third-stage or fourth-stage ultimate god-level behind him. There were more than two dozen Bloodshed clan disciples and they were capable of killing the 2000 to 3000 of them.

Certainly, some might survive if they were lucky under the circumstances where everybody scattered and fled. However, it was certain that not many of them would be left.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1742

“Hold on, why do you say that they are the people who came in from outside? Do you have any evidence? “Ella quickly thought about something and said. “All of these are people from the Nine Armies. Don’t talk nonsense if you have no basis and discriminate against us!”

“Haha… You’re still pretending?” The man in white clothing started laughing. “We have met a group of people previously and they have the same tokens around their waists. They were members of the Cabello family which we secretly heard from the chat of those fools. However, those hundreds of people were already killed by us!”

“You people…” Helena was extremely angry when she heard this. She did not expect hundreds of members of her Cabello family to be killed by these guys. It caused her to feel a wave of pain in her heart.

“What’s the matter? The beautiful woman has grown angry? Tsk tsk… It looks like these are members of your Cabello family and those who are with you might be your family members!” The man in white clothes continued speaking to Helena when he saw how angry she was. “What’s wrong? By the looks of how angry you are, do you want to avenge your Cabello family? Come on! Haha!”

“You don’t say, Brother Lucian. This woman is really good-looking. Tsk tsk… I never expected that there would be such a beautiful woman from the abandoned world.” Another man licked his lips while looking at Helena with fiery eyes. He wanted to take off Helena’s clothes immediately.

“Haha… She’s beautiful but unfortunately, she’s our enemy. These people have to be killed!” Lucian smiled and said to Angus. “You people from the Nine Armies should leave immediately and I might consider sparing your life. If you don’t, today will also be the date of your death!” Angus and Hendrick glanced at each other. They had darkened expressions on their faces and were obviously hesitant.

They knew clearly in their hearts that if they were to make a move, they were not opponents of these people. It did not matter how much they wanted to. Help Helena.

“Young Master Angus, let’s leave. We should not get into any trouble and we should not worry about anything else. These people broke into this area by themselves and it has nothing to do with us.” Skye was extremely frightened that she hurriedly stepped forward and held Angus’ hands while persuading him.

Helena bit her s*xy red lips before speaking to Angus and Hendrick. “Young Master Angus and Young Master Hendrick, you guys should leave. Thank you for taking care of us along the way but Skye is right, this has nothing to do with you. I also do not want to involve you or let any of you die because of our affairs!”

After thinking for a while, Ella spoke again, “No way! We cannot believe them. What if they are lying to us? What if they turn around and come for us after they kill Helena? What if the other party just wants to separate our strength and defeat us individually?”

“Don’t worry. I, Lucian, will keep my promise. Since I have said that I will let you people leave, I will naturally do so.” Lucian raised his hand. “I can swear by my life. Otherwise, I will die a terrible death!” Lucian knew in his heart that even though Angus and the others did not have high fighting prowess, there were more than a dozen of their people. There were even two in the fourth-stage ultimate god-level.

He was not afraid of these people and it was not difficult to kill these people.

However, once the fight has started, several of his juniors might die if these people from the Nine Armies were also present. There were several of his juniors who were close to him and he did not want them to die.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1743

Besides, Angus was the grandson of an elder of the Whittemore Fortress while Hendrick was the son of another elder from another village. If these two died, they were afraid that the masters of the Nine Armies would be unhappy.

After all, their Bloodshed Clan was powerful, but they were not much stronger compared to the Nine Armies.

Therefore, it would be much better if they did not directly cause a rigid situation.

“Have you heard that? Young Master Angus, he has even sworn!” Skye was delighted when she heard this. At least she had a chance to survive. As for Helena, she had been unhappy about Helena for a long time. It was best if she died.

“Young Master Angus, you guys should leave!” Helena smiled bitterly. She was able to realize that -the man in white clothes was not a simpleton and must be particularly powerful. Otherwise, Angus, Hendrick, and others would not have such a darkened expression on their faces.

Although there were only around 20 people from the Bloodshed Clan, all of these disciples were masters from the Bloodshed Clan.

“All right!” Angus could only nod helplessly after staying quiet for some time. He then took a step forward and said to Helena, “There are so many of you and I hope you guys will be able to escape later!”

Even though Angus felt funny when he said those words, only Helena and the Second Elder of the Cabello family were in the first-grade ultimate godlevel. The others were only in the true god-level or demi-god level. Without the help of these people of the Nine Armies, it was extremely difficult for these people to escape.

Once they left, Helena and others would be dead by then.

Hendrick walked over after thinking for a while and -spoke softly to Helena, “Miss Helena, don’t worry. We will quickly inform the members of the Nine Armies after we return. I will tell my father about this and maybe we will be able to rescue the others in this forest by dispatching all the members of the Nine Armies by then!”

Helena felt grateful when she heard what Hendrick said and nodded. “Thank you, thank you for doing this! You guys should leave now in case the other party regrets it later!”

“Alright, take care!” Hendrick nodded reluctantly. He waved before he flew away from the forest, leading Ella and others with him.

“Tsk tsk… That was really touching!” After Hendrick and the others left, Lucian had a faint smile on his face. “My beauty, you should tell me honestly, how many of your people are in here? What are the forces that have come in? How did you people find this place?! If you answer honestly, I can consider leaving several of you alive!”

Helena smiled bitterly after she heard this. “Haha… Do you need so much information? Unfortunately, I, Helena Cabello, would rather die than tell you. Just kill me if you want to do so, come on!”

After she finished speaking, Helena clenched her fists and Chi began surging over them.

“Brother, if we leave, I am afraid that Miss Helena will be dead, right? Could it be possible for several of them to escape?” Soon after they left, Ella frowned and said in a depressed mood. “Sigh… We previously said that we would protect them and help them find their relatives. I didn’t expect that we would become deserters!”



No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1744

“Ella, what are you talking about? Who are you calling deserters? What are you saying, it’s such a bad word.” Skye was upset when she heard this and said,” Don’t forget, we don’t owe them anything. Besides, you can stay with them if you don’t want to continue staying alive! Why did you leave with us?”

“Skye, what nonsense are you talking about? My younger sister is right. We really don’t have any sense of justice if we leave just like this!” Hendrick had been unhappy since the beginning. He finally met a beauty and he liked her with all his heart. In the end, he was unable to protect the other party. He had been blaming himself, but he was even more unhappy when he heard Skye speak like this.

“Dear me, so you are blaming me instead?” Skye grew increasingly upset and said angrily. Why didn’t you stay back if you are such a righteous person? Don’t you realize? Even if you and your sister stayed back, even if all of us stayed back, our ending would be dead and there’s no way to salvage things!

That so-called Lucian is a famous master of the Bloodshed Clan and is in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level! He broke through into the first-grade ultimate god level at the age of 20 and he is only 40 years old now. Although he looks like he is in his twenties, he’s considered powerful for achieving such fighting prowess at such an age!”

“Stop talking and fly faster. We need to inform the fortress master and others first. Then, we shall have a quick discussion. We have let Miss Helena down, we cannot let her father and both her sisters down. There’s a possibility that her father and sisters are still alive. We need to have a quick discussion and bring people over to rescue them!” Angus increased his speed of flying while secretly praying. He hoped that Helena would be able to escape under the advantage of a large number of people around her. In that case, he might still have a chance to see her again.

“Every sentence is about Helena. It’s so disgusting to listen to!” While looking at Angus’ figure from the -back, Skye was so angry that her face turned pale.

However, she felt a lot more comfortable when she heard the sound of people fighting behind her. At least, the fighting had already started. Helena Cabello. Would definitely die this time.

“Kill them!” Following a wave of Lucian’s hand, more than 20 disciples of the Bloodshed Clan directly rushed into the crowd and started killing.

Lucian thought about it and said, “By the way, let’s not kill this woman first and kill her last. Let her see how her family members, these people of the Cabello family, are killed!”.

“You b*stard!” Helena almost burst out in anger when she heard this. She tightened her fists and appeared in front of Lucian in a flash before she directly punched him.

Slap!

However, Lucian was not interested in meeting Helena’s punch. He easily escaped Helena’s attack in a flash. Instead, he slapped Helena in her face.

A loud slap directly sent Helena flying outward.

Whoosh!

When Helena was flying backward, a figure flew over and stopped her by directly pulling her with his hands.

Helena opened her eyes and was surprised to see the person in front of her. She wondered if she was hallucinating. The person who flew over was actually jackie.

“jackie! It’s you!” Helena wondered if she was dreaming. She rubbed her eyes and discovered that it was really jackie.

Her nose twitched and she almost started crying. She did not expect that she would be able to meet jackie again before she died.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1745

“jackie, you should leave quickly. What are you doing? Lucian is a master disciple of the Bloodshed Chan, a master in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. Apart from that, those junior sisters and brothers of his are in the second-grade or third-grade ultimate god-level. You are not their opponents!” Soon, Helena thought of something. Was jackie not suicidal by rushing out single-handedly at this moment? Even if he was not alone, jackie would definitely die even if he came with hundreds of people. She clearly knew what a master in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level meant.

“I’m here to save you and you are asking me to escape?” jackie was speechless.

After he saw the situation from a distance, he was the first to rush over. The others traveled slower, but they would also rush over soon. Unexpectedly, he saw Helena being slapped in the face the moment he arrived.

However, he was slightly grateful. Fortunately, the other party did not intend to kill Helena first. Instead, he wanted to kill Helena last. Otherwise, if the other party meant to kill Helena just now, he would not be able to rescue her based on his previous speed.

“You’re suicidal!” One of the men, who was a master of the third-grade ultimate god-level from the Bloodshed Clan, was near to jackie. He immediately clenched his fists tightly when he saw that someone dared to come out to save Helena. The golden Chi surged over his fist and his punch came straight toward jackie.

“You are the one who’s suicidal!” jackie had a cold expression on his face as he clenched his fists. The Chi in his body instantly gushed out and his body slightly leaned to one side while his fist directly punched his opponent in his chest.

Bang!

A slightly dull voice could be heard. The next second, the man was sent flying into the air. His chest collapsed, and he landed on the ground heavily. After coughing out several mouthfuls of blood, he kicked his legs and died.

“Dear me, that man is in the third-grade ultimate god-level!” Helena swallowed her saliva and was so surprised that she stuttered as she spoke. This guy, jackie, seems to appear every time she is in danger. On top of that, he was still amazing, and his combat power shocked her again. Everybody came in together, how could this guy’s combat power improve so greatly!

“Haha… He’s in the third-grade ultimate god-level but I’m in the fourth-grade ultimate god-level!” jackie chuckled and he completely released the momentum from his body.

“The fourth-grade ultimate god-level! You’re actually in the fourth-grade ultimate god level!” After Helena heard this, she saw a glimmer of hope. However, when she thought of Lucian’s fighting prowess, she started frowning again. “However, that guy is in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level and there are so many of them. Hundreds of us have died!

“Don’t worry!” jackie smiled coldly and directly pointed in another direction before he spoke. “Take a look over there!”

“Father, Venus and Daniella! They…they are here!” Helena looked in the direction jackie pointed at and covered her mouth in surprise. She could not believe that jackie brought thousands of people over this time.

“So many people? D*mn it, how many people have actually came in!” Lucian’s face turned green when he spotted many people from the abandoned world.

However, he quickly replied, “You guys are here at the right time. Since you are all already here, then I shall kill all of you. That guy is actually in the fourth grade ultimate god-level. It looks like you guys can only leave him to me! I shall leave the others to my junior brothers and sisters, it should not be a difficult thing for them!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1746

“Motherf*cker! Is he trying to die?”.

Alejandro rushed over, cursing as he saw a second grade ultimate god-level disciple killing a guardian of his Cabello family. He immediately followed up with a punch that sent the second-grade ultimate god-level disciple from the Bloodshed Clan flying back a great distance before he could steady himself.

“Third-grade ultimate god-level! My father is in the third-grade ultimate god-level!”

Seeing her own father sending a second-grade ultimate god-level fighter flying with a single punch, she was at a loss for words from the excitement.

“Don’t worry, just leave the others to our fathers. I’ll handle this seventh-grade ultimate god-level guy!”

jackie made a calm smile and opened his palm. He took out his treasured sword and stared straight at Lucian.

“Die!”

At the same time, Kenneth threw a punch at another first-grade ultimate god-level disciple of the Bloodshed Clan, causing his opponent to cough up blood immediately.

“No way! They actually have a few people in the third -grade ultimate god-level! Furthermore, they also have a few first-grade ultimate god-level fighters as well!”

Upon seeing Nash, Kenneth, and the others taking action, Lucian almost lost his temper. He originally thought that only jackie was the only powerful one and the rest were no match for him and his fellow disciples.

However, after they started fighting, he quickly realized that a few of his fellow disciples were killed in a short time while the rest were being surrounded by a big group of people. At that rate, they would most likely be killed.

“Kid, you are pretty talented to be able to kill my junior brother of the third-grade ultimate god-level with only one punch while being in the fourth-grade yourself. It seems that your fighting prowess is not: only limited to the level of a fourth-grade ultimate god-level!”

Finally, Lucian gritted his teeth and stared directly at jackie. “If that’s the case, I’ll kill you first. It’s not good to let an enemy with this kind of talent grow any further!”

Lucian knew deep down that these people had entered the forest for less than two months.

Two months ago, he came to this forest alone in order to complete an assignment given to him by an elder of his clan. Back then, the forest showed no signs of abnormalities, nor these people from the abandoned world!

With that, he surmised that these people must have arrived in the past two months. Within two months, his opponent managed to achieve the fourth-grade ultimate god-level and obtain this level of fighting prowess. Just the thought alone was scary enough.

Moreover, the opposing party had a few people in the third-grade ultimate god-level. That was even more mind-boggling.

After all, there were no martial art techniques within the abandoned world that allowed one to break through to the ultimate god-level. That also meant that those people could not have made any progress after reaching the peak stage of the true god level. They must have started breaking through to the first grade ultimate god-level after arriving in this place and raised their strength slowly.

“You want to kill me? We’ll have to see if you’re capable of doing so!”

That person before him had killed quite a number of people from the White family and Cabello family. If not for jackie and his group arriving promptly, a lot more lives would be lost.

Therefore, jackie resolved to kill that person of the seventh-grade ultimate god-level.

Hearing jackie’s reply, Lucian burst out laughing.

“Did I hear that right? You’re merely at the fourth grade ultimate god-level. Even if you could take on someone stronger, do you think you can cross that boundary and kill me? You’re thinking too highly of yourself!”

“How would you know without trying?”

jackie channeled his Chi into his sword. With a light buzz, the sword let out a terrifying screech and immediately grew significantly in size. Moreover, the terrifying aura around jackie seemed to have grown stronger as well.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1747

Lucian's eyes brightened at the sight. "Not bad! From the looks of it, your sword is an ultimate-grade spiritual tool? Tsk tsk tsk…this sword will be mine soon. By then, you'll be helping me raise my strength significantly!"

Having said that, Lucian similarly channeled his Chi into the sword in his hand and struck out at jackie.

"Howling Wolf Strike!"

Along with the sword strike, a giant wolf formed from condensed Chi appeared before him. After the giant wolf's appearance, it gave off a strong and vicious aura. It let out a bone-chilling howl and then immediately charged straight toward jackie.

"Burning Chop!"

Faced with the ferocious attack, jackie did not dare let his guard down and immediately executed his Burning Chop technique. His fireball-like attack rushed forth along with a long tail dragged behind it like a meteor.

"How can someone at the fourth-grade ultimate god level execute such a powerful attack?"

Lucian was shocked when he saw jackie's attack. That was because vibrations from jackie's attack were able to match that of his own.

Boom!

A thunderous boom exploded forth. In the next instant, jackie's attack managed to completely negate his opponent's attack, much to the surprise of those watching

"No way! He blocked the attack!"

Helena was also worried if jackie would be a match for his opponent in the beginning as their power levels were too far apart.

However, jackie went beyond their expectations and managed to block the opponent's attack. It proved that jackie's fighting prowess was quite equally matched with his foe.

Moreover, she knew the technique jackie executed was not his strongest technique yet.

At that moment, Daniella had also joined Helena's side after killing a few enemies. She smiled at Helena. "Big Sister, you don't know how strong this guy is. Yesterday, he just killed a sixth-grade ultimate god level disciple from the Bloodshed Clan with ease. Even if he can't kill this guy in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level, it would be impossible for the opponent to kill him."

Having said that, she looked toward the battle on the other side and said, "That's right. Father and the rest are also quite powerful. They're basically experts in the third-grade ultimate god-level. The remaining disciples from the Bloodshed Clan will be taken care of very soon!"

Helena looked around and noticed that only a few of the twenty-over disciples from the Bloodshed Clan were left.

“How did you guys train? How did they get to the third-grade ultimate god-level? Moreover, jackie’s strength has skyrocketed to the fourth-grade ultimate god-level. That’s just too fast!” Helena quickly asked Daniella after her sudden realization.

“Hehe, try guessing!”

Daniella tried to remain mysterious and put on a sweet smile on her face.

“Tell me quickly! It’s impossible for me to guess!” Helena could not help but roll her eyes at Daniella.

“jackie is already a third-grade intermediate alchemist!” Daniella said with a huge grin on her face.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1748

“Third-grade intermediate alchemist? Am I hearing things? I-I-Is this for real? That’s too fast!”

After hearing that, Helena’s mouth went agape with shock. She was flabbergasted with jackie’s talent in alchemy.

“Hehe, of course, that’s real. Otherwise, how could their fighting prowess improve so quickly?!”

Daniella chuckled, then said with a frown, “Where could the First Elder be? Did his alchemy skills improve? I wonder if he has achieved the ultimate god realm yet.”

“Yeah. I wonder how he’s doing now. We haven’t seen him all this while!”

Danielle sighed along before looking forward. By then, jackie’s fight with his opponent had grown more intense. The two had been exchanging attacks for several rounds, but jackie seemed to have the upper hand.

“Damn it. This kid appears to have an abundance of Chi!”

Lucian looked forward with a serious expression as beads of sweat fell from his forehead.

Before this, he thought he could easily kill jackie. As the fight continued, he realized that he might not be jackie’s match if things dragged on.

After watching the battle on the other side, he felt even more speechless. The fellow disciples he had brought over were killed one by one and only two were left standing. If the third-grade ultimate god level martial artists managed to spare their efforts to assist jackie in his attacks, then his situation would worsen.

‘I’m going all out!

Lucian gritted his teeth, then bit into his finger and pressed it in between his brows as he started chanting.

As he did that, jackie could feel the opponent’s aura grow significantly stronger.

‘What secret spell is that? He can raise his combat power this way?’ jackie thought to himself as he watched in surprise. It was the first time he saw someone raising his combat power in such a fashion.

However, he believed the secret technique would definitely cause heavy strain on the body for it to raise one’s combat power in such a short amount of time. There would surely be a time limit to it.

“Kid, I’ll kill you right now. The rest of you can forget about holding me here. Once I get back to the clan and report this to the elders, all of you will be dead. I’ll have all of your lives for my fellow dead disciples!”

Lucian glared at jackie with great hatred.

“Is that so? Let’s give it a try!”

jackie pushed his foot down as his lips curled into a sneer. He clenched his fists tightly and lowered his body.

“I-I-Is that the Twin Dragons Fist?”

Lucian was shaken upon seeing that posture.

“Impossible! The Twin Dragons Fist is our clan’s martial art. Moreover, this move is extremely difficult to master. Only internal disciples have the chance to learn them but hardly anyone mastered it! You’ve just arrived in this world recently. How did you obtain our technique? Even if you did, how could you learn it so quickly?”

Lucian was completely in shock. He knew the power of the Twin Dragons Fist. It was a third-grade intermediate martial art technique. Even their elders in the Bloodshed Clan could barely manage to get it to a novice level, much less the disciples.

“Is it that difficult?”

jackie frowned. He did not spend much time researching this martial art technique as he felt that it was rather simple.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1749

However, jackie quickly understood why this martial art technique was abnormally difficult for normal people. Nevertheless, he learned the True Dragon Claw technique in the past and had the ability to transform into a true dragon, giving him a dragon's form.

Perhaps that was the reason why the Twin Dragons Fist was surprisingly suited for him as he could turn his hands into dragon claws.

Seeing jackie's confusion, Lucian almost coughed up blood from his agitation. Just what kind of a monster was the kid standing before him? How could he, someone at the fourth-grade ultimate god-level, be that much stronger? Moreover, jackie managed to learn the Twin Dragons Fist in under two months? How did he comprehend the technique?

"Wind Slash!"

Lucian had no confidence, but with his companions mostly dead, he gritted his teeth and slashed at jackie with his sword.

Whoosh!

Waves of horrifying sword aura flew forward, sweeping through the forest like the winds of Fall. The horrifying and numerous aura swept through a wide area.

"Twin Dragons Fist!"

jackie retaliated by sending his fists forward.

"Roar!"

Following his fists, two gigantic dragon claws appeared before jackie. The dragon claws were a manifestation of Chi but looked very real. They even gave off a terrifying roar of a dragon as they rushed forward.

Boom boom boom!

The sword auras landed on the dragon claws but were immediately destroyed on impact. Meanwhile, the two gigantic dragon claws rushed ever closer to Lucian at an alarming speed.

"I-I-Impossible!"

Seeing his attacks being completely destroyed by jackie 's attack made Lucian turn pale. His eyes were filled with terror. Judging from the speed of the attack, he would not be able to escape.

"No! I don't want to die! Please spare me!"

Lucian immediately begged for mercy once he thought about the wonderful future he had before him. He hoped jackie would halt his attack and give him a chance to live.

Bang!

Nevertheless, how could jackie spare someone who killed the people belonging to the White family and Cabello family? Furthermore, Lucian belonged to the Alliance Guard. jackie would never believe the words from those people.

Two gigantic dragon claws charged straight ahead, tearing Lucian to pieces. Lucian, a seventh-grade ultimate god-level martial artist was reduced to dust, completely annihilated.

Right then, Nash and the others had also finished their battle and turned their attention to jackie.

“He’s too powerful. This kid really killed a seventh grade ultimate god-level expert!” The second elder of the Cabello family lamented.

He never would have thought that jackie would reach such a level. That seventh-grade ultimate god-level expert had forced the forces from the Nine Armies to retreat in despair. He did not expect jackie to be able to kill that guy.

“Hahaha, I didn’t expect my son to be this awesome!” Nash laughed out loud with an extremely smug expression. Back then, Lily almost got jackie killed. Fortunately, he had survived under those circumstances and grew stronger steadily.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1750

jackie managed to kill an expert of the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. The group was overjoyed.

Meanwhile, Helena approached jackie and asked bashfully, “jackie, thank you. If not for your help, I would’ve died earlier. Moreover, you’ve saved so many people from our Cabello family!”

jackie smiled nonchalantly and said, “You’re being too reserved. We’re all one big family. We should unite against our enemies.”

“That’s right. This is exactly the time we should be united!” Harry chuckled as he flew over.

He felt his decision to join jackie and company to be the best decision he has ever made. If he did not follow them and met these disciples of the Bloodshed Clan on his own, then he would have died for sure.

“Oh, I almost forgot. I have something to tell everyone!” Helena announced to the group as she suddenly recalled something.

“What is it?”

Seeing Helena’s serious expression, Alejandro and the others flew over in her direction as well.

“I…I saw the people from the Nine Armies. I’m not sure if you’ve heard, but I’ve seen over a dozen of them!”

Helena thought about it for a moment, then said to jackie’s group with a solemn expression, “Although we have also gathered several thousand people, there are even more people scattered in this forest and we don’t know about their situation…”

“You’ve seen over a dozen of them?”

Hearing that, jackie’s expression turned solemn too. He knew the Nine Armies would eventually find out that they had entered the forest, but he did not expect them to find out so soon.

After some consideration, he finally asked Helena,” Did they not try to attack or kill you after you met them?”

“They didn’t do that. It happened like this…”

Helena then explained everything she had experienced to jackie and the rest.

After listening to her story, Alejandro looked cluelessly at jackie. “Young Master jackie, what should we do now? If we leave this forest quickly and train in a secluded spot, I believe it won’t be easy for the Nine Armies or the Bloodshed Clan to find us, right?”

At that point, Alejandro paused for a moment before continuing, “However, we have more people scattered within the forest. If we leave now, our safety is ensured in the short term, but we can’t be sure if the people from the Nine Armies will help the others, or if the Bloodshed Clan will come after us!”

jackie nodded. “We can’t give up on others. Right now, we can only try our best to find more spirited grass. The Bloodshed Clan sent quite a number of their disciples in here this time. Some of the disciples will surely report back to their clan after realizing the situation! The Nine Armies is our best hope for now. Let’s hope the Nine Armies can help us out! Nevertheless, we need to treasure every second to get stronger!”

“Yeah. We can’t give up on the other Cabello family members!”.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1751

Alejandro nodded. After all, there were too many Cabello family members who were yet to be found. Even if plenty had already died, there should still be at least ten thousand more men left.

“This is great, Master. You’re all truly here. My goodness. My eyes did not deceive me. Haha!”

Unexpectedly, at this moment, Kevin and a few other Elders from the Cabello family flew over, leading over three thousand Cabello family members as well as over two thousand White family members.

“This is great. Just great! Our master and the others are here, and so is Young Master Jackie. This is fantastic. We’ve met up with the larger group!”

The eyes of plenty of White family members reddened when they saw Jackie and the others. For the past few days, they had indeed found plenty of spirited grass and treasure in this new place. There were even a few who were at higher cultivation levels who had already broken into the first-grade ultimate god-level.

However, their days were filled with danger as well. They all traversed the place carefully, and along the way, found many of their men who had been killed.

The White branch family members, especially, kept trying to search for Jackie, Nash, and the others, but they just could not find Jackie and the others. They had no sense of safety, as though they had lost their compass.

Naturally, they would feel deeply moved now that they had found Jackie and the others.

“Seventh Elder, Eighth Elder. Haha. This is great. It’s great that all of you are still alive!”

Nash smiled excitedly when he saw all these familiar faces. With this, they numbered over ten thousand men in total. A mighty force was now gathered.

“Master, it’s fantastic that we’ve met up with all of you. We’ve been standing on the edge for the past few days. A few days ago, the Seventh Elder and I finally broke into the first-grade ultimate god-level with great difficulty. We had been celebrating when we realized that there was a force called the Bloodshed Clan. Some of their disciples have entered this area, but fortunately, the few that we ran into did not have very high cultivation levels. Most were just at the true god-level or first-grade ultimate god-level. Everyone worked together to kill them, but many of our people perished as well!”

The Eighth Elder’s face was full of emotion. After he spoke, he looked at the corpses on the ground and took a sharp intake of breath. “My God. Did you run into the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan as well? And over twenty of them were killed by you? How were their cultivation levels?”

The Seventh Elder and the others were also shocked. They heard fighting noises moments ago and intended to secretly come over to watch. They did not think that the fighting sounds would stop before they even got to the scene.

They had sent a scout to take a look first.

Only then did they know that Jackie and the others had also run into the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan.

“Haha. Let’s gather the spoils of war first while we catch up!”

Nash laughed and ordered a few people to clean up the spoils of war. Only then did he explain the current situation to the Seventh Elder and the others.

The Seventh Elder and the Eighth Elder had also managed to break into the first-grade ultimate god-level. It was fantastic news; at least they had two more fighters at the ultimate god-level here now.

“The sounds of fighting have already stopped. No need to think anymore. Probably not a single one of them escaped!”

At that moment, Arthur and the others had arrived outside the forest. Arthur and Hendrick kept glancing backward. Skye could not help but said impatiently, “You two had just better hurry on. If we manage to hold the discussion earlier, we might have a chance to save Helena Cabello and her two younger sisters, as well as her father. If we delay any longer, hehe, who knows how many of those people who have come in will die!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1752

"What! A few-a few ten thousand people have come in?"

As the Whittemore Fortress was the closest to the forest, everyone went headed over first. Once Arthur's grandfather knew about the situation, he jumped onto his feet from his chair in shock. His eyes nearly popped out of their sockets.

"That's right. Grandfather, let us discuss what we should do with the fortress master first. Ah, never mind that all these people have come in here-more importantly, many people from the Bloodshed clan have entered the forest to search for treasure to carry out the duties of their clan. Now that they've run into each other, Miss Helena and the others are probably dead already!"

Arthur felt a pang of pity when he mentioned Helena. He hated himself for being that much weaker. Otherwise, he would not have chosen to leave forlornly when she was in a life-or-death situation.

The old man could tell what Arthur was thinking and rolled his eyes unsympathetically. "You useless brat, going on about Miss Helena. Don't you forget that you are the grandson of the Elder of Whittemore Fortress, you can't get attached to a woman from that place, understand? How can the positions of those people ever compare to us?"

When he spoke, the old man cast a cursory glance at Skye. Then he added, "If you want to find someone, you should at least find a woman like Skye here. Understand?"

"That's right. Young Master Arthur, don't forget who you are. You have a high social standing. You can't think of the impossible!"

Skye was delighted, but she had no idea that the old man was merely giving an example. She thought that the old man had already intended to match her with his grandson.

Arthur went speechless for a while, then he huffed a reply, "What are you saying, Grandfather? This is not the time to discuss all this. We should seek the fortress master and the others to discuss the situation. Besides, you can't just look down on the outsiders, right? A long time ago, weren't our ancestors from that place too? We descended from the same lineage, so why should we fight each other?"

Standing beside him, Hendrick felt dissatisfied. He could not help but mutter, "Elder Whittemore, I think what Young Master Arthur said is correct. Our ancestors all originated from that place, so why do we look down on them? Rather, I think we're all the same since we all come from that place. Not a single one of us is better or worse than the other in terms of position."

Ella clenched her fists and spoke with a stony expression, "That's right. Grandfather Whittemore, this line of thought is incorrect. We're not even part of the Alliance Guard. How can we think of ourselves above others? I've seen the people who come from that place and their martial talent is pretty good!"

The old man also sensed that he had said something wrong. Although he still maintained that the people who came from that place were at the peak of the true god level at most-that was why he looked Down on them.

He gave an awkward smile. "What about this? All of you have worked hard," he then said, "I'll seek out the fortress master and the other Elders to hold a discussion!"

Arthur could not wait around any longer. “Grandfather, I think we shouldn’t hold the discussion first. What about this? We’ll send out a few of our fighters to help them out first,” he said, panicked. “We cannot allow the people of the Bloodshed Clan to simply hurt the people who came in, at least. As for you, just call for the fortress master, the First Fortress Master, and the others to hold the discussion. How about that?”

Hendrick thought that this was the best course of action after he heard the plan. “That’s right. This plan is great,” he said excitedly. “We’ll take action on both sides. There definitely won’t be a problem!”

Unfortunately, Cooper replied with a dark expression, “What’s the rush? There are too many people who have come in. This is not a small matter. Once our people go over and truly fight the Bloodshed Clan, it’ll be a small matter if only a few of us die. But what if too many of our people die? It would create a ruckus. Once we wage war, do you know how many of our people we’ll sacrifice?”

After he said that, he waved his hand and said, “I’ll report this to the fortress master and get him to discuss this matter with the First Fortress Master and the others. In the end, the First Fortress Master will definitely hold a meeting with everyone. Once the meeting ends and everyone has decided what to do, we’ll take action. We can’t rush this matter, understand?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1753

“Grandfather, this involves human lives! The longer we delay, the more people will die! If we keep going on like this, who knows how many of them will be dead by the time we take action!”

Arthur panicked even more after he heard this, but he was still helpless.

Still, Cooper continued, “So what if some of them die? I can’t just bypass the hierarchy. I have to inform the fortress master about this first and follow the appropriate process to handle the matter. Understand? If I go straight to inform the First Fortress Master without informing the fortress master, what will we do if the latter feels offended? Besides, so many of them have come in. They won’t be wiped out so soon! Besides, the forest is so vast. They’ve all been scattered around. It won’t be easy to find them with so many people. Not many disciples from the Bloodshed Clan went in. How many can they kill!”

Arthur and Hendrick were completely speechless. They did not imagine that Cooper would say something like this. However, they had no way about it now. They did not have enough power, and they had no authority over such a big case. They could only report this to their superiors.

“Then-then quickly go and tell the First Fortress Master about this. Let’s go. We wish to follow as well!”

After Arthur thought about it, he looked at Cooper, extremely panicked.

“Let’s go!”

Soon, Cooper led everyone to the fortress master of the Whittemore Fortress.

“Oh my. Uncle Whittemore. Why are you here? And you brought a group of kids with you!”

Kieran, who was drinking tea, asked while chuckling after he saw Cooper’s arrival.

The few Elders beside him also looked at Cooper in confusion. After all, it was nothing much if Cooper came to seek them out; but judging from his serious expression and the retinue of youths he brought along, he probably came over to discuss a serious matter.

“Something has happened, fortress master!”

Cooper stepped forward and immediately told Kieran, “A serious matter has happened, fortress master. Some people from the abandoned world have entered into our sacred land once more!”

Kieran simply gave a wan smile when he heard this. “Eh, I thought it would be something serious. Didn’t a few people come in here before too? It’s nothing to fuss about!”

“It was different then! That time, the Elder from the Pavilion Billow Cloud here went over there to take a look of his own accord. He happened to see a few people at the entrance and brought them in because he thought it was amusing. This time, they came in on their own after they found a way in. It’s different!”

Cooper gave a bitter smile. “A few ten thousand have come in this time,” he added. “Almost fifty to sixty thousand of them!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1754

“Fif-fifty to sixty thousand?”

Kieran’s tone notched a few octaves up. He suspected that he had heard wrong. If it was just fifty or sixty of them or even five or six hundred of them, he would not think that it was anything to make a fuss about. After all, such a long time had passed since that incident. Even if a few had made their way in, the Alliance Guard would not pursue the matter, and they certainly would not create such a huge ruckus about it.

However, fifty to sixty thousand people was too much. That was way too many people. Furthermore, how much spirited grass would these people claim once they came in? They would have to give up so much of the martial resources!

Furthermore, that entrance was inside the forest near the Nine Armies. That forest could be said to be just like their backyard. Other than the occasional disciple from the Bloodshed Clan who came to find a few materials, the people of the Nine Armies, who were closest to the forest, found it the most convenient to go there.

Now that these few ten thousand people had entered the forest, they would probably use up plenty of the martial resources in a flash. When he thought about how many resources were being taken away, Kieran felt his heart twist in pain.

“Fortress master, what should we do about this? We’re not prepared at all for so many people to come in at once!”

The First Elder took a step forward and looked at Kieran before him. It was evident that he was in a complete panic!”

“What do we do? How should I know what to do? This happened too abruptly. Who knew so many people would come in so suddenly!”

It was evident that Kieran did not know what to do either. After he thought about it, he said, “Let’s go and seek out the First Fortress Master. I am not daring enough to make a decision on my own regarding this matter. All of you, immediately go and inform the other fortress masters about this, and tell them to hurry over to meet at the First Fortress Master’s place!”

“Yes, sir!”

The people who had been drinking tea with him immediately ran out.

When they saw that the fortress master of the Whittemore Fortress did not hesitate long to inform the First Fortress Master and the others about the matter, Hendrick and the others heaved internal sighs of relief.

After Hendrick gave it some thought, he said, “Fortress Master Whittemore, no need to send people to our own fortress. I’ll head back to inform everyone about this!”

“All right. Thank you for your service!”

Kieran lifted his hands into a fist-to-palm salute. At least they did not need to send so many people to spread the message this way.

“Let’s go!”

Hendrick immediately waved his hand toward Ella and the few youths from their fortress and lead the others to fly off.

They all pushed themselves to the limits of their speed. After a while, Hendrick and the others had arrived inside the Lavigne Fortress. At this time, the sky had already begun to darken.

“Father, something has happened. Where’s the fortress master?”

He saw his father once he entered the place. Hendrick immediately spoke in a loud voice.

“What happened? Seems like something urgent has come up, judging from your looks!”

Hendrick’s father smiled without care. From his perspective, the Nine Armies were all not too far away from each other, and everyone looked after each other. If the Nine Armies were to band together, they were quite a strong force. The smaller forces usually did not dare to stir up trouble with them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1755

Therefore, the huge problem that came out of Hendrick's mouth was hardly anything inside his father's eyes.

"Listen. Those people…those people from the abandoned world have entered this place! And more than a hundred thousand of them had sneaked in! We have run into some of them and even talked to them. Besides…"

Hendrick blabbered about what he encountered in a panic tone. He did not know where to start.

"Wait. What? More than a hundred thousand of them?".

Kye-Hendrick's father-was truly taken aback by the number when he was told. If ten thousand of these outsiders entered this place, it would already be a huge mess, let alone a hundred thousand of them!

When Kye regained his senses after hearing the shocking news, he interrupted Hendrick before he could finish his sentence. "Hendrick, this is a serious matter, you better be honest about it. Are you sure what you said is true?"

Ella, who stood beside Hendrick, stepped forward and affirmed the statement. "Dad, it's true! Brother would never lie to you about such a thing! It's all true! Also, among them, there's a talented master called Jackie. He saved my life before! I think he has at least broken through to the second-grade ultimate god-level, even maybe third-grade ultimate god level!"

"No freaking way! They have such a powerful master among them? How long have they been here? They can't have been here for months, right? Have they all reached such high martial levels after acquiring the martial technique?"

Looking at Ella's agitated demeanor, Kye knew that Hendrick was telling the truth. It looked like they had truly come across some serious matter.

"He's truly a talented master! I don't know how he trained himself till this level in the abandoned world! But I think it's normal to have one or two super talented masters like Jackie since hundreds of thousands of them have come here."

A smile hung on Ella's face. "Hmm. I don't know how he's doing now. Jackie is a good man!"

Hendrick, on the other hand, interrupted and said, "Dad, the Whittemore Fortress knew about this. Let's take a couple of elders and go to their fortress and discuss this. This is a huge matter. Not only those outsiders entered, but an elder from the Bloodshed Clan also issued a task to their disciples-they needed to gather some material for alchemy purposes. So, their disciple came to the forest to hunt for treasure! Sigh! I'm worried about Helena."

"Wait a minute. Why are you in such a hurry? Also, who's this Helena?"

Kye had yet to recover from the shock when both his children went on to mention some strangers' names which confused him even further. His mind was in a muddle with the situation right now.

"Dad, Helena…Helena's full name is Helena Cabello. She came in here with the Cabello family. We talked for a bit, and she is really a good person. I've also promised her that I will convince you to help

them. Sigh! It's so tough to explain everything in one shot. Let's gather at the Whittemore Fortress, then Ella and I will tell you the situation from head to toe and then we will decide what to do next!"

Hendrick expressed his thoughts after pausing for a moment.

"Alright, alright! Let's go to the First Fortress Master now!"

Kye was aware that this matter could not be delayed any further. Even though the sky had started to turn dark, they had to meet with the first fortress master and discuss this matter. This meeting could not be delayed.

When everyone arrived at the First Fortress Master's place, they went to the conference room, and at this moment the sky had turned completely dark.

"Quiet! What's going on? Fortress Master Whittemore, mind to fill us in?"

Austin Drago-the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies-sat on the stage, overlooking the other fortress masters from above. He signaled the crowd to quiet down then turned to Fortress Master Whittemore and popped the question.

Master Whittemore smiled awkwardly and said, "Gentlemen, I think it's better to let Cooper Whittemore, our fortress's elder, fill you all in. I don't know much about the situation. I was informed that hundreds of thousands of the people of the abandoned world had come into our place. I came here the moment I heard the news. As for the specific details, Elder Cooper knows more!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1756

At this moment, everyone turned to Elder Cooper

Elder Copper smiled and then explained to the crowd, “Gentlemen, around six hundred thousand people have entered, of which three to four hundred thousand are people from the mainland, while the remaining two hundred thousand are those from the sea territory. I’m not sure how they found the way in but they are here now. Moreover, they have been here for around twenty days now. During these twenty days, some of the talented masters have broken through to the ultimate god realm.”

“My goodness! They’re here for twenty days already? These outsiders, they’ve been here for so many days yet we only found out about it now!”

“Ya, we’re too careless about this! It would be even harder for us to notice their presence if they just entered and left the forest in a short period of time.”

“No. It’s impossible that we won’t be aware of them. After all, hundreds of thousands of them entered, and among them, there are different clans and families, and not all of them are united. There must be some bad blood between these clans and families.

The crowd gasped as soon as Elder Cooper dropped another bomb.

Ella forced an awkward smile and screwed up her face slightly. In fact, she was the first to find out that Jackie and the others had come in. However, she promised Jackie that she would help them hence she did not return to her fortress and report the matter immediately, rather, she continued searching for treasures inside the forest. Sometimes when she ran into those outsiders, she would simply take a detour and leave, pretending not to see them.

And what she did had led to the current situation. She tried to drag the matter to the point that it could no longer be hidden. The people of the Nine Armies were finally informed of the matter.

“And then? Anything else?”

Elder Cooper paused for a few seconds before continuing, “I’ll let my grandson tell everyone. After all, they are the ones who ran into them, and came back to us and reported. They know the best about the situation!”

Arthur then stepped forward, looked at the First Fortress Master, and said, “Alright. The thing is…”

Arthur then carefully narrated the situation from head to toe, sparing no details, to. Everyone in the meeting.

Of course, when he spoke about Helena Cabello, it was about the good things about her and her people-how kind and friendly these outsiders were, how they were concerned about Arthur and Ella’s safety, asking them to leave the scene first, how understanding they were and so on. Arthur praised them thoroughly, praying that the First Fortress Master and others would not hate Helena and her group and would agree to save them

The meeting room once again became lively after listening to Arthur’s words. It was an animated discussion.

“Sigh! What should we do with this bunch of outsiders? If we refuse to save them, it’d go against our values, after all, we are working with the Anti-Alliance Guard. And these years, we have been heavily relying on the Anti-Alliance Guard too. That’s why those Bloodshed Clan and others would not dare to lay a finger on us! But…but Bloodshed Clan is a strong clan, and they’re stronger than us! How are we, these rabbles, able to fight against them? Sigh!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1757

An old man from the fortress had his forehead knitted together as he breathed out a sigh of defeat. He was in a dilemma.

“I agree. There are too many of them! Once we take our stand and defend them, the Bloodshed Clan will definitely come at us. And then once we get into a battle, we may be no match for them!”

Another old man chimed in. He was used to the comfortable and spoon-fed life and did not want to go against the Bloodshed clan.

“Hmm… How about this?”

A middle-aged man gave the matter some thought before interrupting the conversation. “First Fortress Master, I do have an idea. Let’s pretend that we’re not aware of this matter, won’t that be good? After all, Young Master Arthur had only told Helena Cabello and her people that he would come back and discuss it with us, and only Helena and her gang knew about this. Besides, I think they should have been killed by the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan by now. Since they’re already dead, no one is going to testify against us! Let’s pretend we didn’t know that they came here, this way, even if the Anti-Alliance Guard knows about it, they would not blame us!”

“That’s a great idea! It’s truly a marvelous idea! Let’s go with that, pretending not to know about the matter! Haha! Those outsiders can escape to other places, it’s none of our business; they can be killed by the Bloodshed Clan, and we’ll pretend we don’t know anything! Anyway, we’ll stop going to the forest for the next few days. That’s it!”

The old man from before immediately echoed this idea. Obviously, he was not keen to help Jackie and the others.

However, Cooper retorted with a cold face, “Have you forgotten which fortress we belong to? It doesn’t matter if we’re able to defeat the Bloodshed Clan, at least, the difference between our strength and theirs is not too big. Besides, we have been under the shelter of the Anti-Alliance Guard for a long time, and for that, we live a peaceful life until today. If the Anti-Alliance Guard knows that we fold our hands and let those people die, what would the Anti-Alliance Guard think of us?”

The middle-aged man immediately stood up and argued, “Elder Cooper, if everyone keeps their mouth shut, who is going to know what happened? Right? Those people that Arthur ran into would surely be killed by the Bloodshed Clan! Only two of them are at the second-grade ultimate god-level, and the rest of them are either at the true god-level or the demi-god level! In the face of a group of ultimate god-level fighters of Bloodshed Clan, how can they escape? There is even one seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter, none of those outsiders can survive!”

“Hmph! What if several of them managed to escape from the Bloodshed Clan? And when they confront us, where should we hide then? Our image will be ruined! We’re part of the Anti-Alliance Guard! How could we call ourselves one if we don’t even dare to stand out and help the weak?”

Hendrick was extremely furious that he could feel anger flooding his veins. “Aren’t you afraid that the Nine Armies would become a laughing stock in front of others? Not only the Alliance Guard would laugh at us, even the Anti-Alliance Guard would look down on us!” He stepped forward and reprimanded with a huff.

When the middle-aged man heard this, he shot up from his seat and smacked the table, burning with anger. “We, elders and the fortress masters, are here to discuss the matter! What right do you have to speak in such a disrespectful manner in front of us? Elder Kye, is this how you raise your son? How disrespectful!”

Kye’s expression immediately turned cold as he heard this. “Oh, how do I raise and discipline my son is my business. You’re in no place to worry about it. Besides, I don’t think there’s anything wrong with what my son just said. We, the Nine Armies, have always been low profile and tolerant, not causing any problems. But how long should we live like this? Living with tails tucked firmly between our legs? Have we not progressed and improved a lot in terms of power and strengths over the years?”

“Tails tucked between our legs? Kye Lavigne, who is tucking his tail between his legs, you tell me! Don’t make yourself sound so mighty and righteous. I’m doing this for the sake of the lives of the people in the Nine Armies! If we acted recklessly and went into a war with the Bloodshed Clan, do you know how many of us will die?”

The middle-aged man stared fiercely at Kye, with hatred and resentment appearing in his eyes. He seemed like he was about to give Kye a good beating.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1758

“What’s all the bickering about? I asked for all of you to come over to discuss, not to quarrel!”

After listening for a while, the First Fortress Master reprimanded, his tone impatient. He did not expect there would be two opinions over this matter-one of them did not favor helping the outsiders, while another was in favor of helping those outsiders.

Silence immediately took over the meeting room when the crowd saw that the First Fortress Master was furious.

After a few seconds of silence, the master of the Lavigne Fortress expressed his thoughts to the First Fortress Master, “First Fortress Master, I truly think that we have held back for too long, and our current overall strength and power is not any weaker than theirs. If we help those people, they will certainly be on our side! Then, perhaps, it would become a chance for us to grow out of our current position. By that time, don’t you think the Bloodshed Clan will have to pay us some respect?”

“Fortress master Lavigne, you have a point!”

One of the elders who was working under the First Fortress Master nodded in agreement. “Those outsiders, they must be feeling very lost and don’t know what to do now, therefore, if we could lend them our hand at this critical moment, they will certainly be grateful to us and be of use in the future. Besides, if we really have to fight with the Bloodshed Clan, it’s still uncertain which side will win!”

“Indeed they have many people with them, but after wandering in the forest for some time, they must have lost a lot of men by now, right? The most important thing is that these outsiders are made up of different clans and families, so they may not be on the same page. Moreover, their marital level is still at the baby stage.

Some of them are in the true god level, and some of them are even lower than that, only being in the demi-god level. So, I think they would not be of much use to us. Also, don’t forget, the Bloodshed Clan has more elite fighters of the ultimate god-level than we have!”

The middle-aged man from before was insistent, not wanting to help Jackie and his group.

“Both sides have valid points!”

At this moment, the First Fortress Master smiled bitterly before saying, “It’s true that their number of people is too many, and even people of the sea territory have come in. Helping them would definitely be somewhat beneficial to our future development, well, at least it can show our loyalty in the eyes of the Anti-Alliance Guard. Why don’t we do it this way; we send someone to report this matter to the Pavilion of Billow Cloud immediately. They’re the nearest Anti-Alliance Guard to us! Let them send people over to support us quickly!”

“But…But, First Fortress Master, I heard that the Master of the Bloodshed Clan is already halfway into the second-grade soul-penetrating level! And I’m afraid that you are no match for him, and if you couldn’t hold him up until the aid—the Pavilion of Billow Cloud—arrives, you could be killed by him! And this would certainly break our hearts and affect our fighting spirits, then we would suffer great loss!”

A wise old man expressed his concerns after thinking about it.

Austin-the First Fortress Master-paused for a moment, his face sank to the deepest, emitting a gloomy aura.

However, after a brief moment of silence, he asked Ella, “Right, Ella, you mentioned that you’ve met a person called Jackie, right? He is particularly gifted and has saved your life?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1759

“Yes, First Fortress Master, that guy might have already broken through into the second-grade or even third-grade ultimate god-level!”

Ella thought briefly and answered.

Austin went into thinking mode again, and then he finally spoke, “How about this? In my view, the Bloodshed Clan would not start a war against any of us recklessly, after all, if we and those outsiders fight against them, they would suffer a great loss even if they win the battle in the end. I don’t think that they are ready to pay such a heavy price. So, I think this isn’t something we can pretend that we don’t know!”

“First Fortress Master, are you saying that we will help those people?”

When Arthur heard Austin’s words, his spirit lifted and asked excitedly.

Austin nodded his head in confirmation. “Let’s not talk about anything else. We should at least try to get those talented masters among the outsiders over. Moreover, they will definitely fight each other for the treasures and resources in the forest, plus the disciple of the Bloodshed Clan will hunt them as well. So, they will certainly lose quite a few people, and by that time, those remnants will be those strong and talented fighters. After all, it’s about the survival of the fittest! We only need the elites!”

Kieran was as though he was lost in a thick fog as he listened to Austin. “First Fortress Master, what do you mean?”

Austin smiled in return. “Even if we send people to seek help from the Pavilion of Billow Cloud, the round trip will take at least four days. We can’t rush ourselves and act recklessly if we want to help those people, right? We need to be patient so we don’t lose out. Not only will our image and reputation be improved in front of the Anti-Alliance Guard, but we could also take this opportunity to recruit some great elites as well.”

Kieran finally understood what the First Fortress Master meant, he then smiled. “The wisest person is still our First Fortress Master! What he means is that we should pretend that we don’t know anything about this, or perhaps just say that we are still in the middle of the discussion, thinking of what to do about the situation. Wait for another two or three days until the Pavilion Billow Cloud arrives then we will make a move to help those people. Is that right?”

Austin nodded with satisfaction and said, “That’s right! You’re sharp! We have two to three days’ time to stall. We will focus on training, pretending not to know anything. We will wait until when the Pavilion Billow Cloud is about to arrive, then we will save the outsiders. And when the Pavilion Billow Cloud sees that we, the Nine Armies, are fighting for the Anti-Alliance Guard, not letting them down, they will respect us too! We’ll let those outsiders fight with the Bloodshed Clan for a few days first!”

An old man from another fortress, who had refused to help Jackie and his group before, was excited after hearing Austin’s idea. His eyes lit up and said, “First Fortress Master, your idea is truly brilliant! There are a few of those outsiders who have broken through to the first-grade ultimate god-level, and some of them even broke into the second-grade ultimate god-level. Besides, with so many outsiders, they could definitely kill some disciples of the Bloodshed Clan and give them a heavy blow. Then we could weaken them without having to make a move!”

“Haha! That’s amazing! What a good idea! Let those people fight with the Bloodshed Clan for a few days, and this way, we don’t have to suffer high casualties. Furthermore, we can also get appreciation and praise from the Anti-Alliance Guard. Then, those who we will save in the end would be the elite ones, and these people will be grateful to us too! It’s a gain for us!”

That middle-aged man laughed out loud, his eyes beaming happily. “Besides, so many of them came in and took away so much of our training resources. Let those people suffer for a bit more and pay a price! Consider it a punishment for their reckless intrusion into this place!”

Kye opened his mouth and then shut it again, wanting to say something, but in the end, he did not. Because he knew in his heart that Austin’s idea was the most rational and reliable, and it would be the most beneficial for the Nine Armies. Most of the Nine Armies had also agreed to this idea, even if he opposed it, it would be useless and created a more unpleasant aura to the Nine Armies.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1760

“Dad!”

Ella felt unhappy though. When she thought about how Helena and Jackie were pretty good people-especially when they saved her life-naturally, she wanted the people of the Nine Armies to help Jackie and the others as soon as possible.

That was why she could not help but step forward and tug on Kye’s sleeve, trying to give a hint in a soft voice.

Still, Kye shook his head at both her and Hendrick. “This involves our fortress, and it involves the survival or destruction of the Nine Armies. I know that the young man called Jackie saved you, Ella, and you want to help him immediately. But we can’t make decisions on our own toward such a huge matter. We need to have everyone discuss this and have the majority agree to it before anything!”

When he spoke here, Kye paused for a while before continuing, “It’s evident that the First Fortress Master’s decision is the best for now. Everyone has agreed to it, so we need to agree to it too. Understand? If Helena and the others have already died then you’ll say that we only rushed out to help when we heard the fights in the forest had grown fiercer. You have to explain like that if the Pavilion Billow Cloud people ask about it!”

Although Ella felt dissatisfied, she could only nod her head. “I understand, Dad!” she said softly. “We can’t let our feelings decide our actions during this time!”

Kye nodded his head. “That’s right. All of you just stay at home and cultivate yourself for the next three days. If you can improve yourself anyhow, so be it. Even if we fight the Bloodshed Clan in the end, it’ll just be for show. Still, we’ll probably be fighting for around four or six hours. It’ll be difficult to avoid casualties then.”

“Okay!”

Ella nodded her head and agreed to this.

“Alright. This is a huge matter that involves the Nine Armies, after all. It’s not decided based on my word alone. Everyone agreed to the suggestion I gave just now. It doesn’t matter if they’re fortress masters from other fortresses, or Elders or Patronus-all of them can vote via a show of hands. We should just go along with the majority!”

Although everyone knew what the conclusion was, Austin still declared to everyone in a loud voice, putting on a show.

It was clear that naturally, more than ninety percent of the people had raised their hand, expressing their agreement to Austin’s decision.

The meeting finally ended. Everyone returned to their fortresses to rest, and they all agreed that before they set out, the First Fortress Master would launch a signal from here. Then everyone would set out together toward the woods and wait to observe the situation outside the forest.

At this moment, Jackie and the others were cultivating themselves in a cross-legged position.

Jackie was well aware that he and the others had led plenty of people in this time. Since the Anti-Alliance Guard and the Alliance Guard were enemies, which was why the Anti-Alliance Guard would not be able to ignore them. If they did, that meant that they were abandoning the ideals they held onto all this while. This would not do-even if they would throw their faces away, they would still help Jackie and the others.

Furthermore, between the two factions, plenty of conflicts probably broke out while they were searching for treasure or something like that. Because of this, it was highly likely that the Anti-Alliance guard would do something to help them.

However, for the lone Pavilions or forces, such as the Nine Armies, he could not tell if they would wholeheartedly help him and the others.

After all, Jackie had heard from Helena that the overall strength of the Nine Armies seemed to be slightly weaker than the Bloodshed Clan. If this was the case, they would carefully measure the consequences of their involvement.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1761-1765

Apart from that, the Nine Armies looked like one big force on the outside but there was certainly some personal agenda among each fortress. If they were to really start a battle, members of certain fortresses would not give their all as they were afraid that many of their people would die.

Hence, those who wanted to stay alive had to try their best in increasing their fighting prowess and raising everybody's combat power. In that case, they would be able to react to sudden situations.

It had to be mentioned that the martial art technique Jackie obtained this time was an exceptionally good one. Even when he was not training during the daytime, the swirl in his body could continue rotating. This helped him to proactively absorb the Chi from the atmosphere which in turn slowly increased and stabilized his fighting prowess. If he sat down to train at night according to the martial art technique, the effect would definitely be better.

'According to the current situation, my level would completely stabilize after two more days. By then, I can try refining the third-grade intermediate pill and I will not need to be afraid of the usual masters at the ultimate god-level.' Jackie secretly thought about it and was slightly expectant toward it. If he could not increase his strength speedily, he would not be able to fight back when he comes face to face with true masters.

However, two badly wounded disciples from the Bloodshed Clan returned to their sect in an extremely embarrassed manner.

"Elder, elder! Something bad has happened!" Both disciples directly rushed into the room of the Bloodshed Clan's First Elder and started yelling loudly.

The First Elder was getting ready to rest. He asked impatiently when he saw the two disciples. "What's going on with the two of you? Don't you guys possess quite a high fighting prowess? How can you guys get hurt when both of you are in the first-stage ultimate god-level? Did you guys meet some strong monster beasts while searching for treasures in the forest?"

One of them said, "There were too many of them and several of them are in the first stage ultimate god-level and peak stage of the true god-level. Two out of our four people died and we escaped with much difficulty."

The First Elder frowned and said, "Who are they? Could they be members of the Nine Armies? D*mn it! The members of the Nine Armies dare take action against us? This doesn't sound right. Even members of the Nine Armies would not act so shamelessly? How would so many of them surround and attack the four of you guys? How many people were there?!"

"There were several thousands of them and they mentioned that they were members of the Hall of Divine Royal. We realized later on that these people were not members of the Nine Armies, they are people from the abandoned world!" Another man had an excited expression on his face. "During our journey back, we met members from some other families. We secretly listened to their conversation and it turns out, quite a number of forces came in with them. There were a total of 400 to 500 thousand people!"

"Oh my god, are these all true? This is a huge issue and you guys cannot lie. If I find out that any of you are lying to us, the same day next year would be the anniversary of your death!" The First Elder of the Bloodshed Clan stood up from his chair in excitement after he heard this. He could not believe what he had just heard.

“It’s true, First Elder. Look at the embarrassing state we are in, do we look like we need to lie to you? Elder, you should have a discussion with the sect master about this as this is a really important matter!” Both disciples looked at the First Elder anxiously as they were afraid that the First Elder would not believe them.

Chapter 1762

The First Elder did not hesitate for long. Soon, he gathered the other elders and the sect master.

The sect master of the Bloodshed Clan and the elders had puzzled expressions on their faces. Some of them were busy training while some were prepared to go to sleep. They could not understand why the First Elder would gather them so late in the evening.

“First Elder, what’s going on? It’s late at night and everybody is prepared to rest. Why did you wake us up?” The sect master looked at the First Elder and asked puzzlingly.

He understood well that the First Elder was a person who acted extremely cautiously.

Something huge must have happened if he suddenly gathered them so late at night. If not, based on the First Elder’s characteristics, he would not have done

This!

The First Elder smiled bitterly before he explained to the group of people there. “Pavilion master, I would not have gathered everybody here if it wasn’t a serious matter. The issue this time is really shocking. I’m sure that everybody has heard about the legend of the abandoned world, right?”

The Second Elder directly said with a smile, “Definitely! Around six months ago, didn’t several people from the abandoned world enter this area? It all happened because the elder of the Pavilion Billow Cloud from the Anti-Alliance Guard got into the mood and wanted to make a trip outside. He happened to meet those people at the entrance and led those people in. Due to this matter, we, the members of the Alliance Guard, even condemned them for their actions.”

The Second Elder paused here before he said with a lament expression on his face, “However, this matter was silently dismissed as those people who came in were young and did not have a high fighting prowess. Certainly, we agreed because those people agreed that they aren’t returning to the abandoned world!”

The Third Elder frowned and thought about it before he said, “First Elder, why are you bringing this matter forward? Could it be that those people are masters and have improved speedily? However, those people used to train at places without much Chi and it is natural for them to feel like they’ve entered a new world when they suddenly arrive here. It is normal for their fighting prowess to have a sudden increase! There’s no need for you to make a huge fuss over it!”

The Fourth Elder immediately shook his head and guessed. “This is impossible. If it’s only such a minor issue, the First Elder would not make such a huge commotion and gather all of us here. On top of that, it’s late at night. He could have just informed us about it during the meeting tomorrow. I think some other people from the abandoned world must have made their way into this area!”

Everybody inhaled after they heard this as they were obviously shocked by what the Fourth Elder said.

The Third Elder once again shook his head and said in disbelief, “There’s a small possibility for that to be the case, right? Unless the previous incident re-occurred and the members of the Anti-Alliance Guard proactively went over to bring people here. The people from the abandoned world would need

to gather all seven stone balls if they want to enter this area or they wouldn't have such an opportunity!"

"I have no idea how they actually came in!" The First Elder said while smiling bitterly when he saw how the people were making guesses. "What I know is that when our people went to the forest in front of the Nine Armies to search for spirited grass in order to complete the sect's task, they met these people and started a fight with them."

"Which people?" The sect master of the Bloodshed Clan had a deep frown on his face after he heard this. "It looks like a large number of people have entered our place. If it was a small number, isn't it extremely easy for our disciples to kill those who are in the true god-level or demi-god level?"

Chapter 1763

The First Elder nodded. "Not only did a large number of them enter, but they've also already been in this area for more than 20 days. Some of them have already broken through into the first-stage ultimate god level. The most crucial point is that too many of them have entered the area. The situation our disciple learned about them is that apart from the top forces from the mainland, the forces from the seas have also made their way in. There are at least 400 to 500 thousand people in total!"

The First Elder paused here before he continued to speak, "They even saw the bodies of some of those people during their journey back. Some of our people, who are in the second-stage ultimate god-level, have also died. It's obvious that our disciples had a huge battle with the other Party!"

"What?!" The sect master of the Bloodshed Clan was shocked when he heard this. "If a member in the first-stage ultimate god-level was killed, this means that our people were surrounded and attacked by the other party. It's normal for our people who are in the true god-level or demi-god level to die. It's also normal for Level to die. However, it's quite abnormal that even disciples in the second-stage ultimate god-level have died!"

The Second Elder's eyes immediately lit up as he stood up while saying in an agitated manner. "The members of the Nine Armies must have taken action! If not, disciples in the second-grade ultimate god-level would not have died so easily!"

"That's right! The Nine Armies is just a small force under the protection of the Anti-Alliance Guard. F*ck, they've grown to be too much. How dare they take action against our people!" The Third Elder slammed the table and tightened his fist in anger. He wanted to immediately carry out an attack on the Nine Armies' territory.

"Regarding this, we don't have any evidence to prove that they helped those people so we should refrain from saying that. Even though there's a huge possibility that the people from the Nine Armies took action!" The sect master of the Bloodshed Clan was silent momentarily before he continued to say, "How about this, let's send somebody to inform the Sword King Clan about this matter tomorrow morning. On top of that, inform them to guard the external area of the forest to prevent those outsiders from scattering all over the place. Then, we shall send a portion of our people into the forest and kill those people."

"That sounds good. F*ck, I've hated those people from the Nine Armies since a long time ago. They don't have as many members who are in the ultimate god-level as we do. Now that our sect master is entering the second-grade souls penetrating level, we would have hopes of wiping out the entire Nine Armies if you manage to kill the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies, Austin Drago!" The Third Elder was extremely excited after he heard what the Bloodshed Clan's sect master, Edward Gray said. He used to have a female disciple that he was very proud of. That disciple was killed by the members of the Nine Armies because of an altercation with them. He almost vomited blood due to anger when it happened.

He wanted to wipe out the entire Nine Armies during that time but the Bloodshed Clan was not as powerful as they were right now. The sect master persuaded him to endure things and he had been doing so throughout a couple of years.

Unexpectedly, the opportunity had finally arrived today. The opportunity to avenge his beloved female disciple was finally here.

"Alright, let's do this since everybody agreed to it. There's a small possibility that we should be able to completely wipe out the Nine Armies. However, it is possible to wound them badly and make them run away from where they are staying right now. By then, we shall make the Nine Armies' territory one of our bases. Our disciples shall enter the forest to search for martial enhancement materials on purpose and send the materials back to us. This is something that I have been looking forward to!" Edward smiled coldly and an insidious look flashed through his eyes.

Chapter 1764

After one night of training, Jackie's fighting prowess had increased greatly. His realm of fourth-stage ultimate god-level had also further stabilized.

The next morning, Jackie and the others bumped into quite a number of disciples from the Divine King Sect not long after they left the place. The disciples were also delighted after they met Harry and the others. They told Jackie and the rest about their altercation with the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan.

Jackie thought about it before he spoke to Nash and the others. "Father, we need to find the members of the White family, Cabello family, and those from the Pavilion of Kings and Gods as soon as possible within these couple of days. We need to immediately gather those who have a good relationship with us. We cannot afford to be separated as not only would they be killed by monster beasts or hunted by the members of the Hall of Divine Royal, they might even be killed by the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan who enter this forest. We might be divided and conquered by these people!"

Nash also nodded. "You are right. We will be in trouble if the Bloodshed Clan sends some members in the fourth stage ultimate god-level or even higher fighting prowess as they will be able to kill a large number of our people! We've gathered 2000 to 3000 people here but a dozen of their disciples might easily kill our people and that will be a huge loss for us!"

Alejandro, on the other hand, joined the conversation. "It will not be easy to gather all of them as this is a huge forest and everyone has been separated. However, there's one benefit. When we first entered the area, the fights were scattered and happened all over the place. It's different right now as once the sound of a fight was heard, it's obviously between two groups of people, and the places where these fights happened have reduced. In that case, everybody has started to gather together and they have found people from their own forces!"

Jackie spoke with a bitter smile on his face. "There are pros and cons to this matter. If a large group of people is gathered together and there aren't many members who are in the ultimate god level, the entire group of people will be easily killed if they are discovered by the Bloodshed Clan's formal disciples. If they are separated, there's a smaller possibility that the other party is able to kill everybody as the forest is a huge one!"

"Helena had a frown on her face. "We would be stronger if we gathered together but we are still incomparable to the Bloodshed Clan. If they are usual or informal disciples, it will be easy to defeat them. However, we will be easily wiped out if those people are formal disciples or elders. Hence, it will not be beneficial for us if we plan to gather the remaining members of the White family or Cabello family!"

On the other hand, Kenneth said, "It might not be beneficial for others to gather their people but it will be much better for us. After all, there are quite a number of us here who are in the ultimate

god-level and Young Master Jackie is capable of killing those in the seventh-grade ultimate god level. Hence, it will be the safest for the others to find us!"

Helena nodded and responded, "That is "true. Based on Jackie's current combat power, we will be quite safe unless we bump into their elders or sect master. However, we will be a large target and can be easily discovered if there are too many of us. Sigh, I realized right now that both gathering together and traveling separately are both not good choices!"

The others also felt a wave of headache and they had no idea how they should handle the situation.

Harry was silent for some time before he said while looking at Jackie, "Jackie has the highest fighting prowess and the strongest combat power. I don't care about others, I shall listen to him. Whatever he says floats with me as I feel that following Young Master Jackie is the safest choice!"

Jackie was speechless. Everybody there was "looking at him as they were obviously waiting for him to make a decision.

He thought about it and said, "No matter what, let's find our people or the forces who have a good relationship with us and those who are willing to follow our lead. Some of the forces might not be willing to come with us even if we are willing to let them follow us! Let's find them and let them understand the situation we are in. Some people might not know what the situation outside is like and have no idea about the general condition of this area."

"That's right. We should at least let the others know that there's a possibility where we have been pinpointed by the Bloodshed Clan. Everybody might stop killing one another because of this. If not, our forces would be weakened due to mutual killing before the enemies arrive!" Nash thought about it and said.

"Yes. At least the members of the Cabello family look forward to meeting us!"

Chapter 1765

Alejandro said while nodding his head as he was very confident towards the loyalty of "the Cabello family's members.

"Let's go. There are some fighting noises around that area. Let's go over now to take a look!" Jackie flew up to take a look. He pointed to his right and said.

The group of people soon flew towards that area.

Soon, they saw that Kevin was leading around 1000 members of the Cabello family in a fight against 2000 members of the Lagorio family and disciples of the Cloud Sky Sect.

Kevin and two other elders of the Cabello family had already broken through into the First-grade ultimate god-level at this moment. However, the other party had four members in the First-grade ultimate god level and they had the upper hand in terms of their number of people. This caused Kevin and the others to be in a completely passive situation. They were obviously suppressed by the other party in this fight.

"D*mn it! The members of the Lagorio family and Cloud Sky Sect are real b*stars as they always pinpoint against our Cabello family!" Kevin started scolding while he was fighting as he was absolutely unhappy about the situation.

“Haha… You have to blame the members of the Cabello family for constantly assisting the White family! Since you people are great friends with the White family, you are the enemies of our Cloud Sky Sect and Lagorio family!” An old man from the Cloud Sky Sect yelled out loudly. “However, Kevin Cabello, I know that you are the alchemist of the Cabello family. We can spare your life if you choose to surrender. However, you have to cultivate pills for our people in the future. Do you understand?”

Kevin was furious. “A*shole! You people are our enemies and you want me to cultivate pills for my enemies? Are you dreaming?”

“Haha… You should think this true as you’ve just broken through into the ultimate god level with much difficulty and your lifespan has just been increased. How wasteful would it be if you die here? Once you choose to surrender to us, we shall not be enemies and you are one of our members.

Isn’t it quite normal for a person to cultivate pills for their members?” The old man from the Cloud Sky Sect laughed out loudly and he obviously need not look forward to killing Kevin. After all, alchemists were noble professions, especially second-grade alchemists like Kevin. He might have experienced some improvement and keeping him alive would be extremely beneficial for these people!

“Blecch! I would rather die than surrender!” Kevin said hatefully.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1766-1770

Chapter 1766

“What a stubborn old man you are! Since you want to die that badly, don’t blame us for killing you!” The old man standing opposite had lost his patience. His attack was much stronger than before, and he did not hold back when he took action.

“First Elder, look! Over there!” yelled a young man from the Cabello family, pointing in a direction. He exclaimed, “Those look like members of our Cabello family, and it seems that members of the White family are also there. Thank goodness that there are lots of them, and it’s our main group of people! We’ve finally met our main team of people!”

The eyes of other Cabello family members turned red. They thought that they would die, but they saw hope in the situation and in winning

“It’s really the family members and our other members!” Kevin’s eyes also turned “red” in excitement. “Master, we’re here! Come quickly and save us!”

Meanwhile, their opponents turned pale when they realized it was indeed Jackie, and there were a total of 10,000 to 20,000 people with him.

“Run!”

“F*ck! Why are there so many of them?!”

Members of the Lagorio family and Cloud Sky Sect were so frightened to the core that their previous momentum was long gone.

“Kill them!” Jackie would not hold back when he found out that they were his old enemies. Casting his order, he zipped forward-the fastest he had ever been.

“F*ck! You guys have a death wish for wanting to go against my Cabello family’s members!” Alejandro and the others rushed forward just as fast. They had been worried about Kevin and the others all this while, and upon encountering this group of people, they wanted to kill every last opposing fighter.

“How’s this possible? How can they be so speedy?” The people of the Cloud Sky Sect were so frightened that their faces turned ashen, seeing how swiftly they moved. No doubt it would be difficult to evade them with that speed.

“D*mn it! A person in the First-grade ultimate god-level can’t achieve such speed. They must’ve achieved the Third grade or Fourth-grade ultimate god-level!” A person who was in the First-grade ultimate god-level was in complete despair. Within seconds, Jackie and the others were right in front of them, surrounding their opponent at every corner. Their opponents would not be able to escape unscathed.

“Attack!” Jackie took out a sword with a wave of his hand, and after activating his chi, he waved his sword outward.

Whoosh!

A long wave of sword aura immediately rushed forward and instantly killed more than 100 people. The sword aura was incredibly extensive and had a long tail that covered the entire area.

“Dear me! Jackie’s attack instantly killed those people, regardless if they’re in the true god-level or First-grade ultimate god level!” Kevin gaped at the scene. “What’s his current fighting prowess again? It looks like he’s improved a lot after entering this area!”

Boom! Boom! Boom!

He took another look. Whether it was Nash and Kenneth—both in another direction or their family master, Alejandro, all of them were extremely strong and managed to kill a few hundred people within several moves. At this rate, not only would they be victorious, but they would not incur a hefty price for it, too.

Chapter 1767

Third-grade ultimate-level!” Kevin then felt the fluctuation from Alejandro ‘s body and was so startled that he became speechless. He had broken through into the First grade ultimate god-level with much difficulty, yet Alejandro and the others had already broken through into the Third-grade ultimate god-level.

As for Jackie’s combat power, he seemed to be much more powerful compared to Alejandro and the others. His combat power was obviously not what a person in the Third-grade ultimate god-level could achieve.

“What is Jackie’s actual fighting prowess right now?!” Kevin lamented. Jackie was always capable of surprising them and even overthrowing their cognition.

“He’s already in the Fourth-grade ultimate god-level,” said the smiling Helena to Kevin as she flew up, “but he‘s capable of killing a master in the Seventh-grade ultimate god-level. A large gathering of Bloodshed Clan disciples entered the area, and if it wasn’t because of Jackie, we’d all be dead by now!”

“He killed the Bloodshed Clan’s disciple, who’s in the Seventh-grade ultimate god-level with a fighting prowess of Fourth-grade ultimate god level?” Kevin once again inhaled deeply and was stunned for some time.

He then asked, “By the way, what’s the Bloodshed Clan? Why haven’t we heard about them?”

The corners of Helena’s mouth quivered. It appeared that the First Elder and the others were lucky enough to have not met any disciples from the Bloodshed Clan after being in the area for so many days.

With that, Helena detailed to Kevin everything she knew from the past couple of days when she saw that she could not help in the fight in front of her.

Kevin’s expression faltered upon hearing everything from Helena.

“Since the Bloodshed Clan is a member of the Alliance Guard, I’m afraid that the members of the Bloodshed Clan will come attacking this forest soon.”

He thought about it and said, “Didn’t you say that Angus and the others had already returned to the Nine Armies to report about this? Members of the Nine Armies are just nearby, and it stands to reason for them to help us. If they’ll help us, they should rush over sooner than members of the Bloodshed Clan, right?”

“They should be, but Angus, Hendrick, and the others said that the overall strength of the Bloodshed Clan is somewhat stronger than theirs. The Bloodshed Clan has slightly more members in the ultimate god-level compared to them, and they can only try their best to persuade their upper management. Hence, we don’t know how members of the Nine Armies will decide.” Helena frowned before offering a tight-lipped smile. “I’m just afraid that they’ll choose to protect themselves.”

“I don’t think that’s possible. Aren’t they members of the Anti-Alliance Guard? It’s unlikely that they’ll choose to protect themselves!” said Kevin slowly after a moment of silence.

“By the way, First Elder, have you experienced any improvements in terms of pill cultivation?” Helena asked, somewhat curious.

Kevin seemed proud when she brought up pill cultivation and thus smilingly responded, “Haha… I’m quite good. I’ ve improved quite a lot. I’m capable of cultivating second-grade premium pills, and I can try cultivating third grade elementary pills. One could say that I have quite a good achievement!” He looked at Jackie, who was still fighting, before he continued, “Jackie must’ve been busy training to raise his fighting prowess, and he surely didn’t have any time to cultivate pills. I should’ve caught up to him by now!”

He was then replied with Helena’s snicker.

Baffled, he inhaled deeply and spoke with a frown, “No. He must’ve had a huge breakthrough, or their fighting prowess wouldn’t have increased so greatly! This guy is definitely a third grade alchemist, and he’s at least a third-grade elementary alchemist!”

Seeing how surprised Kevin was, Helena smilingly added, “Not only is he a third-grade alchemist, but he’s currently a third-grade intermediate alchemist and researching how to cultivate third-grade premium pills!”

“Oh my god! How’s this possible! This … This is too inhuman! I truly have no hope of catching up!” Kevin was speechless, but he then broke into a smile. “Haha… This is great! Now that this guy is a third-grade intermediate alchemist, I’ll pester him every day and ask him to teach me how to cultivate third-grade pills!”

Chapter 1768

“Don’t worry. He’ll surely teach you, seeing that you share a good bond with him.” Helena smiled and continued,” However, there are several issues right now. We have no idea when the people of the Bloodshed Clan will come attacking this place, and he might not have the time to teach you now. On top of that, he plans to find some time to refine the third-grade intermediate pill he cultivated previously. He might be able to improve another two to three grades in terms of his fighting prowess by doing that!”

“Dear me! He’s able to kill those in the Seventh-grade ultimate god-level, now that he’s in the Fourth-grade ultimate god-level. If he broke through to another two to three more grades, will he be able to kill those in the Ninth -grade ultimate god-level? Even if he’ s unable to defeat those in the Firstgrade soul-penetrating level, he’s almost at that stage!” Kevin once again exclaimed when he heard what Helena said.

“Sigh… All our hopes are on Jackie. We will be much safer if he’s able to break through his fighting prowess.” Helena sighed before she added, “No matter what, we truly don’t have enough members in the ultimate god-level. On top of that, even if more of those who are in the peak stage true god-level break through, they’re only in the First -grade ultimate god-level. As for the formal disciples of the Bloodshed Clan, who knows how many people they have in the Second, Third, Fifth, or even Sixth-grade ultimate god-level!”

“What we can do is to improve our strength as soon as possible and hope that members of the Nine Armies can help us.” Kevin gazed into the distance, outside the forest bounds, and looked forward to the arrival of the Nine Armies’ members.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The scattered fighting sounds had disappeared at that moment, and the battle at this area had ended. Everybody started collecting their trophies.

It was then Jackie flew toward Kevin and the rest, smilingly greeting, “First Elder Cabello, it’s been a long time. Not bad! You’ve already broken through into the First-grade ultimate god-level!

Kevin was speechless and replied,” You dare announce that, young man.

The first mistress had told me everything just now, that you’re already a third-grade intermediate alchemist. Hmph! You have to teach me how to cultivate pills, given the spare time!”

“Don’t worry, I’ll surely teach you when we have time!” Jackie smiled. At this moment, Nash and the others had collected their trophies.

“Let’s go, Jackie. We’ll follow our usual rule and find a place so that you can have your pick. Let’s divide our trophies!” Harry flew over with a smile on his face. Although they could not garner numerous items because they were weaker, being with Jackie and the rest made them feel safe. On top of that, they obtained items like they were picking them up from the floor. Within these few days, they received quite a number of benefits. Such a life was a really enjoyable one.

Then…

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Sounds of people fighting could be heard coming from the outer ring of the forest, and it was happening in several places. They did not persist for long, however, and it soon ceased.

“This is bad. There’s a situation.” Jackie listened to the fighting noises carefully, and his facial expression darkened. He instantly rushed toward the sky and gazed into the distance.

“What’s the situation?” Nash and the others also flew up and looked at the faraway forest.

“The fighting sound over there is quite different compared to previously, and there’s been a huge change. Apart from that, the fighting sound from each place seems to be connected into one single line. D*mn it! If I guessed correctly, members of the Bloodshed Clan have arrived, and they’ve started to enter the forest!”

Chapter 1769

Jackie’s expression turned steely at the thought.

“How’s this possible? Those people came so quickly! What should we do?” Everybody looked at Jackie, blatantly clueless.

Jackie deliberated his thoughts before looking behind him and pointed at one of the mountaintops as he spoke,” This is what we’ll do. The mountain over there is quite far away from this place, and you guys will head there. Should you meet any one of our members on the way, explain everything and have them run. Time is of the essence, seeing as we don’t know if people of the Nine Armies will rush

over, but it's obvious that we're being guarded by the other party from the outside area now. We need to buy more time and let those capable of breaking through into the First-stage ultimate god-level to breakthrough as soon as possible!"

Kevin thought about it and took several pills out before passing them to several members in the peak stage of the true god-level. "I have a couple of second-grade premium pills here with me, and it'll be enough to help everyone breakthrough into the First Grade ultimate god-level. Take these, and share them among yourselves!"

Jackie also took several pills out with the flip of his hand. "There are several second-grade premium and three third -grade elementary pills here. Father, you can share them with the others."

"What are you saying? Aren't you leaving with us?" Nash looked at Jackie.

From the way Jackie spoke, it looked like he did not plan to leave with them.

"I'll stay back with the elders to try and cut down some of their disciples. We'll act according to circumstances and make enough ruckus to delay their actions. We'll see if we can delay them from running around. With this, you guys will be able to gather at that mountain top. We'll buy you some time to gather everyone else; it's best if everybody can raise their fighting prowess together. What we can do is to delay some time."

Jackie looked far away before continuing, "We're lucky as this forest is quite big. It'll take a couple of days for you guys to fly from here to the mountain, and it'll take even more time if they're slowly sweeping the place to look for our people! Remember: don't engage in battles if possible. It'll be difficult for them to find you guys if we hide in the forest as we fly."

"I'll go with you. What you're attempting is very dangerous. If we're going to die, we'll die together!" Nash knew that it would be very dangerous if Jackie stayed back. He thought about it and passed the pills to Titus. "Titus, you'll be in charge of distributing the pills to the others."

"I'll distribute the pills to everybody now as I'm also staying with you. I'm in the Third-grade ultimate god-level, and I can provide lots of help. I'll be able to kill some of the Bloodshed Clan' s members in the First or Second Grade ultimate god-level!" Titus stood forward bravely and quickly distributed the pills to several members of the White family.

"I want to stay with you guys too, Honey!" Selena bit her S*xy red lips, fearing she might never see Jackie after leaving him.

Jackie stepped forward and embraced Selena before gently saying, "Honey, you can't come with us this time since it's too dangerous. Don't worry, though – I have made my plans. I'm not rushing to death, and I'm only going to delay their time while sending them on a goose run. Don't forget that I'm an alchemist who can cultivate third grade intermediate pills, and I have quite a number of materials with me!"

Jackie paused before he continued, "We'll delay them for some time before finding a place to train in increasing our fighting prowess. What we need is time, and once we're able to get more time to break through, it won't be so easy to kill us then!"

"Alright. I'll try my best to improve my fighting prowess!" Selena's eyes reddened. She knew Jackie spoke so calmly, but it would not be so easy to escape when he met true masters.

"Yes. Honey, you're already in the elementary level of the true god-level, and it's already quick enough. Work harder!" Jackie kissed Selena on her forehead in front of everybody, causing her to blush lightly.

Chapter 1770

Helena and the others envied how intimate Jackie and Selena were, being husband and wife.

Helena even pursed her lips in her deep envy.

Daniella walked toward Jackie and reminded him, “Since you decided to stay, you have to be on your guard at all times. Don’t just rush in and fight if your opponents have a high fighting prowess, do you understand?”

“Don’t worry. I’ll remember that.” Jackie smiled indifferently before he turned to hug Daniella, causing her to blush, somewhat embarrassed. It was obvious how flustered she was.

“Haha… Splendid!” Kevin and the others chuckled at the sight.

Alejandro, on the other hand, turned his head to the other side. Jackie embracing Daniella in front of everyone indicated his announcement of their unique relationship.

He also knew that Helena and Jackie were just pretending to be a couple. He was, in fact, dating his youngest daughter.

He was quite satisfied with Jackie.

Helena, on the other hand, was somewhat embarrassed. After all, everyone knew about her and Jackie when she pretended to be his girlfriend, and many young ladies from the Cabello family envied her.

“Alright. Please take care. We’ll be waiting for you at the mountain top.” Daniella was inwardly happy as warmth surged within her-sweet like honey.

Alejandro waved his hand and said to the group of people, “You guys should go… Go… Those who are in the Third-grade ultimate god-level should stay while the others will leave with Helena!”

Helena, Daniella, Selena, and the others could not bear to part with them, anxious about how dangerous it would be when they head to where the enemy was. Nonetheless, they had to fly to where Jackie pointed to, under the protection of the forest with consideration of the greater good.

Only six remained after everyone else had left: Jackie and Titus, who were in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level, and Kenneth, Nash, and the others who were in the Third-grade ultimate god level.

Jackie turned to the remaining five and remarked, “The people here have the highest fighting prowess, but your realms aren’t very stable yet. You guys need at least two more days before you can try breaking through. My fighting prowess is stable enough due to the martial art technique. I plan to secretly attack the members of the Bloodshed Clan during daytime and kill as many of them as possible. After all, they have no idea there are people like us, who have a slightly higher fighting prowess, among these people here.”

Nash nodded. “If that’s the case, we should be able to rescue a large number of people. Just ask those people we rescue to not walk toward the outer ring of the forest or simply fight. They should immediately head for the place we mention.”

Jackie nodded. “We just need to persist for another two to three days. I’ll cultivate pills in the evening, and after your realm has stabilized, you guys should find an opportunity to break through soon. I’ll prepare a third-grade intermediate pill for each of you, and it shouldn’t be an issue for you guys to break through another two more stages. You should be able to break through into the Fifth or Sixth-stage ultimate god-level. Together with my combat power, we should have more strength to deal with them!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1771-1775

Chapter 1771

“Alright, we’ll do it that way, carrying it out like guerrilla warfare. Anyway, let’s see what our opponents are up to. If they have a very high fighting prowess, we’ll keep it low instead of fighting them head-on, but if they have a low fighting prowess, we’ll end them swiftly.” Kenneth was slightly excited. He was overjoyed at the thought of Jackie giving him a third-grade intermediate pill, and there was hope for him to increase his fighting prowess for three grades.

After all, this was a third-grade intermediate pill, and not many people can get it. Staying behind was a very dangerous move for them, but it was also an opportunity.

“Haha… I believe that their disciples won’t have high fighting prowess. After all, their usual disciples and informal disciples merely have regular fighting prowess. Apart from that, Jackie can kill their formal disciples if they don’t have extremely high fighting prowess and if there aren’t many of them.” Titus chuckled, but a thought then occurred to him as he spoke, “Still, we have to fight a war that we have absolute confidence over, and we especially can’t let any of their disciples run away. If any of their people escaped, we’ll be in trouble should they inform the elders or sect master of the Bloodshed Clan about our situation.”

Jackie nodded in agreement. “Our advantage right now is that our opponents have no idea about our existence. They must be thinking that we don’t have a high fighting prowess as we had just entered this area. It’s already good to break through into the First-stage ultimate god-level, and there will be very few of us who are in the Second-stage ultimate god-level. Hence, this is our opportunity!”

Jackie then flew upward and gazed into the distance before saying, “Let’s go and sneak in that direction. Seems like there’s a battle up ahead!”

The six of them traveled speedily, and they soon flew to a place where sounds of battle were heard. They hid in the forest and looked at the situation outside.

“It’s the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan, alright!” Nash tightened his fist in anger when he took a look. There were several thousand members from second-class aristocratic families who were surrounded by about 100 disciples of the Bloodshed Clan.

Although there were many members of the second-class aristocratic families there, there were more than a dozen of the Bloodshed Clan disciples who were in the First or Second-grade ultimate god-level. There were also quite a number of disciples who were in the true god-level. With a handful of Bloodshed Clan disciples in the ultimate god-level, it seemed the battle had tipped to one side.

Members of the second-class aristocratic families were utterly anxious, wanting to escape. However, those men killed more than a dozen people with a wave of their sword, and dead bodies were strewn everywhere on the ground. Blood splattered all over the place, and many of them were so frightened that their faces turned pale.

“Go!” With a wave of Jackie’s hand, everybody rushed outward.

The members of these aristocratic families were families who entered the pact with the White family when they went to Black Windy Island. Although they were not members of the White family, Jackie still chose to help them.

Several old men from the second-class aristocratic families withstood the attack while yelling in despair. They wanted to escape, but it was too difficult.

“Sh*t, we’re done for! We are done for! Why are there so many members in the ultimate god-level?!”

“That’s right! There are several in the Second-grade ultimate god-level! What should we do?”

Then…

Whoosh!

A sword aura flew toward them and killed two Bloodshed Clan disciples in the Second-grade ultimate god-level.

“Such strength!” The old men inhaled deeply, delighted as they looked toward the source of the attack. “Oh, thank goodness! It’s the members of the White family, and Master Cabello is also here! Are we saved?”

Chapter 1772

“D*mn it! Who are these people? Why did several masters in the Third-grade ultimate god-level appear?” The remaining disciples of the Bloodshed Clan were appalled at how sudden everything changed. One second ago, they did not pay much notice toward these men who barged into the sacred grounds, but who would have thought that so many masters of the ultimate god-level would rush out the next second. There were five masters in the Third-grade ultimate god level and one of them was in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level. This caused them to be instantly stunned.

“Could they be members of the Nine armies? D*mn it! They must be! When did the Nine Armies deploy their people here?” One of the men who was in the First-grade ultimate god-level was so frightened that he turned to escape.

Unfortunately, Alejandro flickered right behind him and landed a heavy punch on his face, killing him instantly. “Die!”

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Jackie and the others’ arrival instantly shifted the tides of battle, and less than a minute later, the fight ended. Those that remained felt like they had survived a calamity.

An old man from one of the second-class aristocratic families led the group of people to kneel in front of Jackie and the others. “Young Master Jackie, Master White and Master Cabello, thank you so much!”

Jackie smiled bitterly before he said, “Several of you should fly up with me and take a look.”

Some of them indeed flew with Jackie as he pointed at one of the mountains far away, saying, “Do you guys see that place? You should travel as fast as possible toward that area. You can inform anybody you meet on the way about the current situation, apart from the people of the Cloud Sky Sect and Hall of Divine Royal. We’re currently surrounded by the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan, a member of the Alliance Guard. They’re guarding outside the forest and have sent people into this area to hunt us who have entered the sacred grounds. After you guys arrive at the mountain top, try your best to increase your fighting prowess. Our people are on their way to the mountain, as we speak. Don’t cause any fights on your way, and it won’t be so easy for members of the Bloodshed Clan to find you people.”

Jackie informed everybody about the general situation, and the families nodded with gratitude before flying toward the mountain Jackie had pointed at.

Nash and the others gathered their trophies while Jackie went over the situation with everyone else. After all, these items were extremely important for them to improve their fighting prowess, and it would have been a waste to leave them.

Of course, as they did not have much time, Nash and the others did not check their martial rings one by one; they only took the martial rings of those with higher fighting prowess. They could not let go of the martial rings that once belonged to those Clan disciples as there might be some stronger martial skill or martial art technique in their martial rings.

Flying back to his companions, Nash remarked with a small smile, "We can only take the martial rings of those who have a higher fighting prowess. There's no need to take those that belong to people in the demi-god level or the elementary stage of the true god-level."

Jackie nodded. "Those who have a low fighting prowess don't have many precious items with them. If they come across anything, they would've handed those items to their elders for safe-keeping as that's a much safer way. All they have on them are just things that are suitable for their fighting prowess.

"Let's go. Sounds like a battle is happening nearby!" Jackie led his people and continued to fly toward another area.

Titus thought about it and said to Jackie, who was beside him, "Young Master Jackie, if no monster beasts pass by the area recently, the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan shall discover the bodies of those people soon. If they discovered that even members in the Second-grade ultimate god level have died, they'll definitely report to their upper management about this, right?"

Jackie smiled coldly at that. "That'll be better. By then, the other party would definitely think that the Nine Armies had sent people to assist us. They might cause trouble and question the Nine Armies. In that case, the Nine Armies can't pretend like they knew nothing about what had happened!"

Titus' eyes immediately lit up. "That's right! If the Nine Armies refuse to take action, they'll definitely refuse to acknowledge that they had sent people over. However, the Bloodshed Clan will definitely suspect that they're secretly assisting us. This is a good thing, seeing as it'll only benefit us if the contradiction between both families increases!"

Chapter 1773

It was not long until Jackie and his companions got to where the sounds of people fighting were heard. Before their eyes were several members of the White family and the Supreme Clarity Sect, fighting with Bloodshed Clan disciples.

However, these Bloodshed Clan disciples – about 100 of them-did not have a high fighting prowess. They were instead in the demi-god level, true god-level, and ultimate god-level. There was only one old man who was in the First-stage ultimate god-level.

Even so, the members of the White family and the Divinity of Pavilion obviously could not compete with them as their opponents pulverized them.

"Wonderful! There are members of our White family!" Elated at the sight, Jackie led his companions to rush out.

"Dear me, it's our young master and family master!" The members of the White family were over the moon when they saw who came to their rescue. They knew that Jackie was a very talented master

among masters. They had been at this place for more than 20 days, and Jackie must have broken through into the ultimate god-level already.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The Bloodshed Clan disciples were no match for Jackie and the rest. Upon their arrival, Jackie and the others were slain within several moves.

A young man of the White family immediately walked forward and said to them, “Thank goodness! Young Master Jackie and family master, it’s great that you people are still alive. We have no idea where these people came from. We’ve been searching for you guys these past couple of days, but we couldn’t find you. Our fighting prowess has slightly increased, but we’re still no match for them!”

Jackie swept a glance at everyone before telling them about the situation.

Once he finished, Jackie thoughtfully remarked, “You people have a low fighting prowess, and I’m afraid that the journey will be very dangerous. On top of that, there are quite a number of you here. I think you should follow us to take a look at what’s happening up ahead so we can rescue more people. When there are more people later and you guys have people in the ultimate god-level to lead you, you can travel toward the mountain top over there to wait for us.”

“Alright, Young Master!” The members of the White family and the Supreme Clarity Sect were rather thrilled.

“Let’s go over there!” Jackie listened to the fighting noises around them and led his people to the other side.

This time, Jackie and the others soon discovered that about 2000 people were surrounded, attacked by the Bloodshed Clan disciples. The Supreme Clarity Sect’s sect master, the Melody Lawson , Melody, members of the White family, and Cabello family were among these people.

Several hundred Bloodshed Clan disciples cornered them, and there were more than a dozen who were in the ultimate god-level.

There were even three who were in the Third-grade ultimate god-level.

“Curses! Our opponents aren’t even that many, but there are too many people at the ultimate god-level!” Melody had also broken through into the Second-grade ultimate god-level and could be considered a very talented master. Several of the elders of their Supreme Clarity Sect had also broken through into the First-stage ultimate god level.

However, it was still very difficult for them to defeat those members of the Bloodshed Clan under such circumstances.

Chapter 1774

One of the female disciples could not help but mumble, “Sigh… I wonder if things would’ve been better if we left with Young Master Jackie, seeing how talented he is. If he had also broken through into the Second-grade ultimate god-level, he’d definitely be able to kill disciples in the Third-grade ultimate god-level with his combat power!”

Melody’s expression darkened when she heard that. The man’s image appeared in her head, and she regretted what happened. She wondered how he was doing and if he had broken through. Based on his talents, he would not die so easily once he had broken through into the First-grade ultimate god-level.

“What are you talking about? We’re the Supreme Clarity Sect, and the White family’s young master might have died by now. Apart from that, we obtained the martial art technique to improve our fighting prowess not long after we left their side. Who knows what would’ve happened if we left with the White family!” snapped another female disciple while she fended off their enemies.

“Melody, bring several talented disciples and leave. I’ll stall some time for you and the other disciples and see if we can fight our way out. The both of us can’t die here together. You’re very talented, and the inheritance of our Supreme Clarity Sect will be broken if you die here!” As the sect master of the Supreme Clarity Sect, Aureole felt hurt as she saw how the elders and patronums were killed, all while she was helpless. Although there were not many enemies, there were enough to kill every single person here. It was not easy to defeat masters in the ultimate god-level, especially when their enemies had masters who were in the Third-grade ultimate god level.

“Pavilion master, I…I can’t leave. If we’re to die, then we’ll die together. With our number, we’ll fight them with all we have. Didn’t we manage to kill some of their disciples?” Melody gritted her teeth as she finally killed one of the other party’s disciples, who was in the First-stage ultimate god-level.

“Melody, you’re the sacred lady of our Supreme Clarity Sect. You have to think about our sect and the better good of the situation at this moment. Leave now!” Aureole yelled loudly and rushed forward with all her might.

“Haha… Sacred lady? This place of ours is known as the sacred grounds, and we’ve never heard of any sacred lady. Who would’ve thought that a person from the abandoned world will call herself the sacred lady. I want to see what this sacred lady looks like!” A male disciple laughed loudly, eyeing Melody from head to toe before he added, “Everybody, listen up! This is their sect’s sacred lady, and our goal now is to capture this sacred lady alive!”

Another old man chimed in smilingly, “Haha… I’m just as curious. Let’s have a look at how the sacred lady looks later. She has quite a nice figure and beautiful eyes, and I just wonder what she looks like under the veil. If she’s beautiful and is willing to become a furnace so I can practice my malicious martial art technique, I’ll let her live. If she’s too ugly, we just need to kill her!”

“Haha! Good idea, Junior Brother!” The middle-aged man standing behind him started laughing loudly. This old man was, in fact, his junior brother.

However, he went straight toward Melody after that. “You better pray that she’s not beautiful enough to make me want to keep her, though. If I’m attracted to her…” He chuckled. “You’ll have to give her to me!”

“How can you do this? Senior brother, don’t you have good taste all along? Why are you now attracted to this one?” The old man’s expression darkened, displeased at his decision.

“Haha… This woman is extremely alluring with how she looks. As long as her face hidden under the veil isn’t too ugly, she’s definitely the type of woman that I like!” The middle-aged man was in the Thirdgrade ultimate god-level, and as he spoke, the distance between him and Melody gradually shortened.

“Melody, run, now!” Aureole, who was fighting on the other side, rushed over in a flash after she yelled out loudly to Melody.

“Old lady, are you suicidal?” Seeing how someone stood in his way, the middle-aged man clenched his fists tightly and swung his fist toward Aureole mercilessly, not even using his chi.

Aureole’s expression became steely as she quickly activated her chi and swung her fist toward the man.

Chapter 1775

Bang!

Alas, Aureole was no match for the man despite using her chi. His fist sent her flying away.

“Pavilion master!” Melody turned pale in fright. She flew over speedily and barely caught Aureole, who was flying backward.

“Why… Why didn’t you escape?” Aureole was slightly angry as Melody did not take the opportunity to escape. There was an obvious area where they could try to rush out. It was a hard-earned opportunity, yet Melody wasted it.

Puff!

She vomited another mouthful of blood the moment she finished speaking.

“Haha… Did you think you could escape when I’ve got my eyes on you? Putting other things aside, she won’t have the chance of escaping from me, based on the speed of her flying alone!” The middle aged man laughed and slowly flew over.

Out of the blue, a man rushed out and killed several Bloodshed Clan disciples on the outside with several continuous punches before finally stopping in front of Melody and the others.

“F…Jackie?” Melody was dazed at the sight of this familiar figure. She never expected to meet Jackie at this spot.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The moment Jackie stopped attacking, Nash and the others rushed in and attacked the other Bloodshed Clan disciples ferociously.

“Young Master Jackie, why are you guys here? I’m grateful for what you’ve done, but these people are hauntingly strong. Three of them are in the Third-grade ultimate god-level!” Aureole wiped the trace of blood at the corner of her mouth with her hand and was slightly worried. Although Jackie looked strong from the way he attacked them, she feared and was wary if Jackie could contend against the opponents of those masters in the Thirdgrade ultimate god-level.

“Don’t worry. We came out here because we’re confident about the situation!” Jackie turned around and looked at the two of them, smiling indifferently as he said, “To be honest, we wouldn’t have rushed forward if we hesitated.”

Aureole smiled embarrassingly when she heard this, but she had to admit that Jackie had told the truth. They had no reason to rush out so boldly had they not been confident. After all, they were not members of the White family. On top of that, the larger number of people here were the disciples of their Supreme Clarity Sect, and only a small number of people were members of the White family.

“Pavilion master, look!” Melody pointed forward in an extremely shocked manner. “Pavilion master, look at them! They seem to be in the Third-grade ultimate god level! That’s right, they’re in the Thirdgrade ultimate god-level!”

“This is great! We’re saved at last!” Tears trickled down Aureole’s face as she took a closer look. Since those five were in the Third-grade ultimate god-level, Jackie, who came together with them, would not have a low fighting prowess either.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

chapter 1776-1780

Chapter 1776

“D*mn it! What’s happening? How can people in the Third-grade ultimate god level appear?” The man seemed all haughty before, but his expression distorted into fear at the sudden turn of events. He never imagined that there were those in the Third-grade ultimate god level among those who entered the area.

A man in the Second-grade ultimate god level flew over to the man who was in the Third-stage ultimate god level with a serious look on his face. “This looks bad, Senior brother. The sect felt that there weren’t many masters among these people, so they didn’t send many strong disciples into the area. They said that this is our training and asked us to kill to our heart’s content, but who’d know that there will be people in the Third-grade ultimate god level among them!”

Frowning, the middle-aged man thought about it and theorized, “Could they be members of the Nine Armies? These people couldn’t have broken through so quickly as they have just entered this area recently!”

The man in the Second-grade ultimate god level shook his head. “Impossible! These people obviously know each other, and they’re also from the abandoned grounds!”

“Haha… Stop guessing and just accept your death!” Jackie laughed, and with a wave of his hand, a horrifying wisp of aura went straight toward both men.

Blood drained from the faces of both the Bloodshed Clan disciples when they saw the long wisp of energy.

“A casual attack of his is comparable to certain martial skill. This guy is in the Fourth-stage ultimate god level!” After experiencing Jackie’s terrifying attacks, the man in the Third-stage ultimate god level took a sword out with the flip of his hand before waving it toward Jackie.

With the wave of his sword, a scary wave of sword aura went straight toward Jackie. It was a powerful martial skill, evident with the thick amount of energy it had.

Boom!

Alas, his martial skill could not contend against Jackie’s attack. The sword aura was crushed by the wisp of energy Jackie casually threw forward and turned into dust.

“How can this be? My martial skill can’t even compete with that spontaneous attack of his?” The man in the Third-grade ultimate god level was so frightened that his eyeballs almost popped out of their sockets when he saw the situation. He could not believe that this was happening. After all, he was the formal disciple of the Bloodshed Clan with quite a strong fighting prowess.

Boom!

The next second, both him and the man in the Second-grade ultimate god level were hit by Jackie’s attack, even though an aura shield covered their body. They directly exploded into pieces of meat before falling out of the sky

Jackie rushed over and killed two other disciples in the Second-grade ultimate god level disciples, seeing how they still persisted desperately. Titus, Kenneth, and the others soon defeated the remaining Bloodshed Clan disciples.

“Young Master Jackie, what’s your current fighting prowess? How can you be so powerful? Those in the Third-grade ultimate god level stood no chance against you. I don’t think you’re in the Fourthgrade ultimate god level!”

Chapter 1777

Melody flew over and questioned Jackie curiously after thanking him.

“Haha… Isn’t it obvious? I’m in the Fourthgrade ultimate god level, but my combat power is just slightly stronger than those in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level!” Jackie smiled humbly. At that moment, Nash and the others had gone over to help gather their trophies.

Aureole was at a loss for words at what they said. She was certain that this young man’s combat power was not only slightly stronger than those in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level. His casual wisp of energy caused the Bloodshed Clan’s disciples in the Second and Third-grade ultimate god level to burst into pieces.

“By the way, Young Master Jackie, we heard from these people that they’re members of the Bloodshed Clan and even mentioned the Nine Armies. What’s going on? We don’t really understand the situation of this place, and it looks like the descendants of those who entered this area previously aren’t that welcoming.” Aureole thought about it and looked at Jackie puzzlingly. She hoped to learn some answers from Jackie.

Jackie gave a small smile before relaying the things he knew, adding, “It’d be in your best interest to follow what I’ve said and gather at the mountaintop over there. Don’t engage in battles throughout the journey, and hide under the trees while being quick on your feet. You guys won’t be discovered that easily if you do.”

Aureole felt that Jackie’s plan seemed perfect as she nodded in satisfaction. “Alright, Young Master Jackie, we’ll listen to what you say. We hope that Young Master Jackie can catch them by surprise and kill more of the Bloodshed Clan’s disciples. We’ll make this accursed Bloodshed Clan suffer so they’ll know that we’re not ones to be trampled over!”

Jackie nodded. “We can only try our best to secretly cost some losses among their people and wreak havoc among them, but I won’t help those from the Cloud Sky Sect or those who came from the seas. It’s good for them to be killed by the people of the Bloodshed Clan!”

“Haha… That’s for sure. Who knows how members of these two forces learned of our agreement and followed us into this area.” Aureole smiled and said to her people, “Everybody, come with me!”

Chapter 1777

Unexpectedly, Melody hesitated momentarily before she spoke to Aureole and Jackie, “Pavilion master, I’d like to stay with Jackie and the others. Those from the Bloodshed Clan have killed so many of our disciples, and now that I’m already in the Second-stage ultimate god level and not the First-stage ultimate god level, I believe that I’ll be of great help to them.”

“This…” Aureole was somewhat hesitant. After all, it was incredibly dangerous to stay, and Melody was the Supreme Clarity Sect’s sacred lady. She was the Supreme Clarity Sect’s next sect master, and they would have no successor if Melody died.

Despite having other talented disciples, however, they were very much behind compared to Melody.

She eventually nodded as she gazed at Jackie.

“Alright, you can stay. At least you can be of help and can crush those in the First-stage ultimate god level.”

Jackie thought about it before he finally said, “Alright. It isn’t a problem if Ms. Melody wants to stay with us. I’ll cultivate a pill for you when I’m free, so let’s break through together. You should try your best to increase your fighting prowess so we can teach the members of the Bloodshed Clan a lesson!”

Aureole then led her people away. Nash and the others had also stored the trophies they obtained into several martial rings.

Once Aureole left with the rest, Melody offered Jackie a smile as she apologetically spoke, “So sorry about what happened previously. We were too petty.”

“Haha… Don’t worry, I didn’t pay much attention to what happened. On top of that, what your people said made sense as we really are members of two different forces!” Jackie laughed heartily, looking as if unfazed about what had happened.

Chapter 1778

“Haha… Ms. Melody, leaving with Jackie is the wisest choice. If I didn’t meet Jackie, would I be in the Third-grade ultimate god level now?” declared Alejandro earnestly beside them. “However, your current choice is quite right. Since you aren’t afraid of death, following Young Master Jackie will certainly benefit you. Our Young Master Jackie is already a third-grade intermediate alchemist. I can see that you have a stable realm, and I think everybody’s realm will stabilize after two more days. Let’s find a chance to train together. You’ll surely break through into the Fifth-grade ultimate god level if you manage to refine a third-grade intermediate pill!”

“You… You’re already a third-grade intermediate alchemist?” Melody’s mouth hung widely after hearing all that, wondering if she was mistaken.

“Yes, but this isn’t enough. Recently, I don’t have time to continue trying out the cultivation of third-grade premium pills. We’ll see what to do when I’m free. Now, we need to buy some time to cut down the Bloodshed Clan. Let’s go. I’m afraid that the fighting noises here would attract new Bloodshed Clan disciples or monster beasts. With the current situation, we can only act when we need to rescue others so that we won’t waste time.” With a nod, Jackie turned around and flew to another direction after he spoke.

Nash and the others immediately followed after him.

Melody, flying right behind them, was overwhelmed with shock. A third-stage intermediate alchemist was already extremely strong, and the pills cultivated by such an alchemist was enough to shock the people or masters in the ultimate god level.

Still, Jackie spoke in such a nonchalant manner about it.

Not long after Jackie and the others left, more than a dozen Bloodshed Clan’s disciples arrived at the area, gazing at the corpses on the ground in sheer shock.

“What’s going on? What… What is this? Three who are in the Third-grade ultimate god level and many who are in the Second Grade ultimate god level died? It doesn’t seem like most of their opponents

have died as well!" An old man who was in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level was stunned when he saw the bodies of the Bloodshed Clan's disciples on the ground.

They met a group of trainers who came from the abandoned world, but they easily settled these people who did not have a high fighting prowess. They immediately flew over when they heard fighting noises near them.

They did not expect the fighting noises to stop before they arrived at this area and · met with such a scene instead.

A Bloodshed Clan disciple in the Second Grade ultimate god level thought about it and, with shock still plastered on his face, said, "Three of our people in the Thirdgrade ultimate god level had died. Doesn't this mean that there are people in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level among them? Otherwise, the three of them wouldn't have died here. Even if they failed to win the fight, couldn't one or two of them escape easily?"

"Fourth-grade ultimate god level?" The old man had an extremely darkened expression on his face after he heard this. "Curses! How can people from a foreign land achieve such fighting prowess within one to two months? Logically, those people have just arrived at this place less than two months ago, so how could there be those in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level within such a short period? The members of the Nine Armies must've helped them!"

"Let's go! We'll report this to the elders and sect master immediately!"

Chapter 1779

The old man had forwarded his suggestion upon deliberation when he saw that the sky had darkened.

They left the place afterward, leaving the corpses to be scavenged by prowling monster beasts.

At the same moment, Angus, Ella, and several young people were sitting on boulders located at a junction outside the Nine Armies' base.

"Oh, they've started fighting, alright. Members of the Bloodshed Clan sent people over early in the morning, dispatched into the forest to assassinate Helena and the others." Angus thought of Helena's beautiful appearance and was worried.

Skye, who was by their side, smiled coldly and remarked, "You guys are still talking about Helena. Haha! Helena is probably a goner now, and it's probably a horrible death, too. Her body might've been eaten by monster beasts already!"

Angus clenched his fists in anger at Skye's words and shot her a livid glare. "Impossible! I know she'll survive. After all, she's in the First-stage ultimate god level, and seeing how many they were in numbers, they might be able to escape!"

"Haha… Young Master Angus, weren't you quite smart all this while? Why has your intelligence regressed just because of a woman? It's true that she's in the First Stage ultimate god level, but did you forget that there's a Seventh-grade ultimate god level master among those who are hunting them? How can such a master fail to kill a person who's in the First-grade ultimate god level? Would she be able to escape from such a master?" Skye met his glare with her own heated stare at the thought of how Angus cared for Helena.

Unexpectedly, Hendrick chimed in, "No matter what, I refuse to believe she's dead until I see her corpse. I hope that she'll survive, even though there's only one out of ten thousand possibilities."

Ella frowned, face riddled with hesitance. “Sigh… There’s no other way. If the members of our Nine Armies arrived at the forest earlier to help them, I’m sure Helena’s father and sisters could survive, whether or not Helena lives. However, since the Nine Armies plan to stay put right now, I’m afraid that both her sisters and her father could be slain by members of the Bloodshed Clan along with the others.”

“This is quite a large forest, but the Bloodshed Clan has lots of disciples. If they did a sweep of the entire forest, eighty to ninety percent of the people who entered this area might die. I’m afraid that not many people would be able to escape.” The fatty smiled bitterly before he continued, “If they comb the entire ground two to three times or spend more time in this area, more of those people who came to this sacred ground would die!”

Ella thought about it and said, “Don’t worry. The Nine Armies would only allow them to attack this place for around three days, and they won’t pretend that they know nothing later on. Otherwise, the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud would be unhappy when they arrive and see that the Nine Armies did nothing about the matter.”

Skye also nodded and said, “That’s right. We’re the nearest ones to this forest, and we normally seek precious items in this forest. If we allow the people from the Bloodshed Clan to stay inside for a long time, the people from the sects would be displeased for sure—those disciples might sneakily collect the precious items in the forest, too!”

“This won’t work; we can’t stay here like sitting ducks. How about this: Let’s gather some people and secretly enter the forest to give them a helping hand,” suggested Angus boldly as he grew increasingly frightened the more he thought of what was happening.

Chapter 1780

Angus’ suggestion infuriated Skye, who shot him a fiery glare. “Angus, have you gone crazy? Do you know how dangerous that is? And you want to go in, too? Haha! Can you, with so many people guarding outside the forest?”

Hendrick interceded, saying to Angus, “Young Master Angus, you can’t act impulsively. We can’t go in like that; their men might kill us. After all, the Nine Armies won’t immediately make a huge scene because they killed several people. Let’s wait and see.”

Ella was also surprised and immediately helped to persuade Angus, “Angus, this is too impulsive of you. Do you think that the people from the Bloodshed Clan will allow us to go in? Allowing us to go in is allowing us to help kill their disciples. How would they allow that? They might cut us down the moment we get to the entrance!”

Angus sighed and went back to sitting on the boulder he was sitting on previously. “Sigh… I can only worry for them as I listen to the ongoing fights in the area before us and how the Bloodshed Clan disciples are guarding outside the forest.”

His eyes lit up at this moment, and he spoke naively, “By the way, those people won’t be that vigilant at night, right? At least they won’t think that somebody would want to go in by then, no? They’ll only be guarding against those inside who will rush out. If we fly right in at night, would they mistake us as Bloodshed Clan disciples where we’re going in to help hunt Helena and the others down?”

“No way, no way! This is too dangerous! We’ll all be done for if they capture us!” Skye was tongue-tied. It looked like Angus was head over heels for Helena, willing to take such a great risk for that woman.

Angus thought about it and said, “If they catch us, we’ll just say that we don’t know what’s going on in the area. It shouldn’t be a problem if we’re only entering the forest to search for treasures and spirited grass, right?”

However, Hendrick smiled bitterly. “Young Master Angus, do you truly think that they’re fools? If we’re there to search for spirited grass, we’ll go over during the day and in the morning. Who’d run into the forest at night in search of spirited grass? Everyone knows that even a trainer with high fighting prowess can’t go against the monster beasts at night. The monster beasts are so used to moving around during nighttime, and some of them have exceptional eyesight that allows them to look a far distance. It’s illogical for us to go in at night if we’re really going over to search for precious items!”

“Sigh… If we wait for another two to three days to do something, who knows how many of those from the abandoned world will die!” Angus looked in the direction of the forest and sighed helplessly.

“There’s nothing we can do. The decision the First Fortress Master and the others had made is the most beneficial one for our Nine Armies. The Bloodshed Clan had always been somewhat stronger than our Nine Armies, and the First Fortress Master can’t compare to the Bloodshed Clan Master. We might not be able to defeat them if we go straight into a battle against them. Allowing the people who entered this area to fight off some of the Bloodshed Clan disciples is really a good thing for us.”

The fatty smiled bitterly before he said, “Young Master Angus, I think you should stop thinking about Ms. Helena. She seems to have bewitched you and Young Master Hendrick’s. This won’t work, and the two of you need to brace yourselves that she has already died. On top of that, we should focus on training as men and not get caught up in relationship issues.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

chapter 1781-1785

Chapter 1781

Skye immediately said, “Look at that. Look! Even the fatty understands things better than you people! Let’s go. The sky has turned dark, and we better go back to training. We might really get into a fight two days after this.”

Angus smiled bitterly and said, “We might get into a fight, huh? Haha… Judging by the First Fortress Master’s attitude, there’s only a slim chance that we’ll battle, and not long after that, the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud will arrive. By then, it’ll only be a negotiation between both parties!”

Hendrick also said, “That’s right. On top of that, we can’t break through within a couple of days, so training is useless.”

Meanwhile, a man arrived before the First Fortress Master.

The First Fortress Master looked at the middle-aged man in front of him and slowly said, “How is it? What’s the situation in the forest?”

The middle-aged man gestured politely with his hands and said, “They’ve started fighting. The people from the Bloodshed Clan arrived in the morning and they sent a sizable group of disciples into the area, but I’m not sure what’s going on in the forest right now. Regardless, it sounded as though battles occurred everywhere, and the noises ceased not long after they began. It looks like those people who entered this area don’t have a high fighting prowess.”

The First Fortress Master’s expression seemed unpleasant at the report. “Sigh… These people truly have disappointed me. If more of them had broken through into the ultimate god level, they’d cause more damage to the Bloodshed Clan disciples, and we’d greatly benefit from that!”

The middle-aged man smilingly said, “Haha… First Fortress Master, there’s no need to worry. Those people don’t have a high fighting prowess, but many of the Bloodshed Clan disciples are in the true god level or demi-god level. On top of that, a large number of people barged into this area. Although the Bloodshed Clan announced that they have a hundred thousand disciples, there must be about three hundred to four hundred people who entered the area, even if they fought one another and were killed by monster beasts, right? That many should inflict great damage to the Bloodshed Clan.”

However, the middle-aged man paused here before he said, frowning, “First Fortress Master, I, however, feel that we can’t wait for too long before we take action. Although we benefit from doing that, there are drawbacks to it. I also thought about it last night, and this is what I have come up with.”

“How’s that possible? What’s the harm to us if we do something a little later? In my opinion, it benefits us no matter what it is. We’ll be able to report to the Pavilion Billow Cloud, and the Bloodshed Clan will be weakened. What’s so bad about that?” Austin frowned, evidently not understanding the middle-aged man’s train of thoughts.

Only then did the middle-aged man say, “Think about it. These people must have entered the forest around one month ago, no? If that’s the case, they must’ve obtained quite a number of spirited grass from the area. Although they’ve used quite a number of these items, they’ll still have the martial skills, spirited grass, or martial art technique they obtained. How much martial enhancement material is there when there are so many of them?”

As Austin listened to what the man said, he understood the meaning behind the conversation before the man continued speaking. Austin then said, his expression dark, “I understand what you’re trying to say. Those martial enhancement materials will belong to the members of the Bloodshed Clans after the outsiders are killed by their disciples, and they won’t hand them to us.”

Chapter 1782

What the man in front of him said caused Austin’s heart to quiver. It was true that there were lots of martial enhancement materials in that place, and once the Bloodshed Clan disciples had them, they would never get it back.

However, he thought about it and said, “There’s no need to worry. I’m sure many of the disciples from the Bloodshed Clan would die, and the disciples’ belongings would land in the hands of those who entered the sacred grounds. On top of that, it’s alright if this can kill quite a number of Bloodshed Clan disciples and allow those people to benefit from it.”

The middle-aged man in front of him also nodded after he heard this and said, “What you’ve said is right. How many days shall

We wait?”

“At least another two or three days, perhaps? After all, if we go in too early, I’m afraid that the people of Pavilion Billow Cloud would leave late, too. If the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud came later than that, we’d suffer a huge loss if we fight for a long period!” Austin thought about it before he finally said, “You people should continue observing what’s happening in the forest. Report to me as soon as there is any news, do you understand?”

“Don’t worry, First Fortress Master. We’ll definitely report to you on time!” The middle-aged man gestured politely with his hands and quickly left.

At this moment, multiple bonfires were burning outside the forest. The elders and sect master of the Bloodshed Clan guarding outside the forest feasted on a delicious barbeque of monster beasts while drinking nice wine. It was evident that they enjoyed themselves.

“Daytime passed, just like that, and I’m sure they’ve had quite a handful of rewards. Haha! Those people have just entered this area recently, and there aren’t many who are in the ultimate god level. This can be considered an experience for our disciples, and we, more importantly, can garner an impressive amount of precious items!” The First Elder of the Bloodshed Clan took a large sip of his wine and laughed loudly.

“Haha… The First Elder is right! The highlight of the day is that we made such a big commotion, and so many of us are guarding outside the forest. Surely, the Nine Armies must’ve heard something, yet they’re hiding in their fortresses like tortoises. None of them dared come forward. Haha!” The Second Elder of the Bloodshed Clan chomped off a mouthful of monster beast meat he had in his hands, expression proud and haughty.

The Third Elder replied, “Haha! This means that the people of the Nine Armies understand themselves well. After all, their First Fortress Master is no match for our sect master. How can they fight against us when they don’t have as many people in the ultimate god level as us? In the past, didn’t they always swallow the insult when a few small altercations happened between us?”

The sect master of the Bloodshed Clan, Edward, had a smile on his face when he spoke in a serious manner, “You guys shouldn’t look down on the Nine Armies. We are much stronger than them, but no more than that. It’s possible that they’ve not come forward to confront us because they don’t know what we’re doing to the people in the forest, don’t you think?”

The Fourth Elder nodded and said, “What the sect master said is correct-they probably haven’t found out what’s happening here. After all, the people of the Nine Armies don’t always come and search for precious items here. They might have already searched for precious items and have been busy training recently, so they have no idea what’s happening in the forest.”

“That’s impossible. With such a big commotion, they’ll definitely find out what happened the next day, even if they didn’t realize it during the first day. We’re some distance away, but the weather today is nice and the skies are clear. I’m sure their people will be able to discover that something is wrong over here when they stand on top of the high walls of their fortress, right? They must’ve seen something!” The First Elder shook his head and said, “I think the Nine Armies don’t dare come out because they’re afraid of us or they’re pretending that they didn’t see anything, seeing as playing the clueless card will save them the hassle.”

Chapter 1783

All of a sudden, several members of the sect ran out of the forest, searching for the sect master and elders right after.

The Second Elder smiled indifferently and casually asked the disciples,” What happened? Did you guys come out to take a rest?”

They might have been tired due to slaying the outlanders from the abandoned world the whole day, coming to rest after all that.

Unexpectedly, one of the disciples, an old man in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level, struggled to catch his breath before replying, “No, sect master and elders. I have something to report. We noticed something was off, so we ran out!”

“And what’s that?” The First Elder frowned, sweeping his gaze across the disciples.

Only then did the old man say, “We… We discovered that many of our people died after fighting them. It’s beyond our expectations to see three disciples in the Third-grade ultimate god level dead in one of our battlegrounds. There were also several disciples in the First and Second-grade ultimate god level who died. Several hundreds of our other disciples have also died, but only around a hundred of these outlanders had perished. However, none of their ceased disciples were in the ultimate god level!”

“What?!” Edward and the others were frightened to the core when they heard this. Based on their estimation, no nightmarish monster beast in this forest could kill a Bloodshed Clan disciple in the Third-grade ultimate god level

It was even impossible that those from the abandoned world who entered the forest had such capabilities. Logically, a disciple with such fighting prowess should be able to do anything they want inside this forest.

However, three disciples with such fighting prowess had died, and this was just what their disciples saw. They still had no idea what happened in other fighting grounds.

“Curses! Why would something like this happen?” The Fourth Elder’s expression seemed grim as he balled his fists. After all, disciples in the ultimate god level could be considered masters and important pillars to their sect. The number of people in the ultimate god level was an important factor as to how strong a sect was.

The old man in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level continued,” Pavilion master, if our estimations are correct, the people from the Nine Armies must be secretly helping them to kill our people. How else would such a master be in the opponent’s ranks?”

The First Elder's facial expression immediately darkened as he spoke, "It seems as though the Nine Armies wore a façade in supposedly not doing anything, but they already have from the start. They secretly sent people into the forest to help these people. These people from the Nine Armies truly are cunning and calculative!"

The corners of Edward's mouth slightly twitched before he growled, "F*ck! The people of the Nine Armies are really cunning. They pretend like nothing is happening on the surface but secretly dispatch people to help the intruders. How utterly treacherous!"

Chapter 1784

The First Elder looked at Edward grimley. "Pavilion master, what should we do now? We have no idea how many people the Nine Armies sent in and what their fighting prowess is. It looks like we can also send our disciples who are in the Fifth, Seventh, and Eighth Grade ultimate god level into the forest."

Edward thought about it before he said, "Don't worry. I understand that guy, Austin Drago's peculiar character. He won't send many powerful masters into the forest; the most he'd do is dispatch a few in the Fifth or Sixth Grade ultimate god level inside to help those people. He'd be suicidal if he dared to go against us completely!"

The Second Elder nodded and said in agreement, "What the sect master said is correct. If they send masters here, they would've led these people to fight us. They must've sent some people with middle-range fighting prowess and assisted the others in killing some of our people, that's all. In that case, they can consider themselves as helping these people. By then, they'd be able to explain things to the Anti-Alliance Guard. If they did nothing, they're afraid that they can't explain themselves and that the upper management will blame them!"

Hearing that, Edward confidently remarked, "If that's the case, I don't think they even send people in the Eighth-grade ultimate god level. On top of that, they must've sent just about a dozen people to secretly help these intruders. In the end, they'll say that they entered the forest to search for precious items and only killed our people because of altercations. Nonetheless, there won't be a large number of them!"

"Pavilion master, what should we do then?" the First Elder immediately asked.

Edward thought about it before he looked over at the Fourth Elder and said, "Fourth Elder, I think we need to ask you to make a trip-you'll enter the forest tomorrow morning. Apart from that, I'll ask some disciples in the Sixth or Seventh-grade ultimate god level to also join the hunt in killing the intruders. If you meet anybody from the Nine Armies, don't hesitate and just kill all of them!"

"Haha… Alright! I've already broken through into the Ninth-grade ultimate god level one or two years ago and my hands are itching for action-haven't done anything for a while now, too. If I do encounter those from the Nine Armies, I'll show them what true regret is!" The Fourth Elder smirked, seemingly biding his time.

"Haha… Fourth Elder, you'll go in and give it a try first. If something comes up, just call on me, and I'll enter the forest and help you out. Haha!" The Third Elder started laughing loudly, obviously joking with the Fourth Elder.

The Fourth Elder rolled his eyes at the Third Elder and said, "Would I need your help? Won't I just be plain embarrassed then? Both of us are in the Ninth-grade ultimate god level, and I'd only need your help if the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies is in the forest. I'm not afraid of the other fortress masters and other members of the Nine Armies!"

“That’s right, Third Elder. Don’t look down on the Fourth Elder; he did just break through a year or two ago. He has a strong combat power, and even I may not be his opponent!” said the First Elder smilingly.

At this moment, Jackie and the others had killed quite a number of the Bloodshed Clan disciples. They rescued many of their own and asked them to travel toward the direction they agreed on.

When night came, they hid inside a considerably deserted cave, stationing someone to stand guard while the rest continued to train to stabilize their fighting prowess.

Chapter 1785

Jackie, of course, did not train, opting instead to cultivate third-grade intermediate pills during nighttime as he took out the ingredients and pill furnace.

As the rate of success was extremely important, Jackie did not have thoughts of experiencing other third-grade intermediate pills. He was cultivating the pill he successfully cultivated previously

Their group of people required a total of seven pills, including Melody. It was a hefty pressure for Jackie.

Jackie successively cultivated eight sets of ingredients throughout the night, and he succeeded three times, resulting in three third-grade intermediate pills.

It had to be understood that such a success rate was considered impressive already.

“Huff!” As daylight broke, Jackie stood up and exhaled heavily. “I’m more proficient during this round of cultivation than last time, it seems. I’ll cultivate four more pills tonight, and we’ll have one pill each. Our combat power will definitely increase greatly if we work hard to break through together!”

“Haha… This means we’ll be able to end those people easily, then!” Alejandro laughed and said, “Among the Bloodshed Clan disciples that we killed yesterday, the one with the highest fighting prowess seems to be in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level, no? We didn’t see anybody in the Fifth or Sixth-grade ultimate god level. It looks like those from the Bloodshed Clan didn’t send many master-ranked disciples into the forest.”

To that, Jackie smiled bitterly. “That was yesterday, and it happened because they underestimated us. Today, disciples in the Fifth or Sixth Grade ultimate god level might just come. We might even meet disciples in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level, though I believe they won’t be sending too many disciples of such fighting prowess. After all, they must be thinking that their main opponent is the people from the Nine Armies, and they wouldn’t make a big scene when handling people like us.”

It was then Kenneth spoke with a frown on his face, “Young Master Jackie, didn’t you say yesterday that they’d suspect that the Nine Armies had secretly sent people here to help us after seeing the corpses of disciples in Third-grade ultimate god level? Would they still not dispatch more disciples in the Seventh or Eighth-grade ultimate god level?”

Jackie did not hesitate and replied with a smile, “They won’t send too many because they’ll think that the Nine Armies won’t send too many people, even if they did send people to help us. Why didn’t all the people from the Nine Armies act together, as it’s an extra move to send many masters?”

“Argh! This Nine Armies group is just as accursed. We saw nothing from them the whole day yesterday. First Mistress Cabello even said that those young people of the Nine Armies promised that they’d inform the members of the Nine Armies and ask them to come and help us. I’m now questioning if they’re members of the Anti-Alliance Guard instead!” Kenneth felt anger rising within him as he thought of how the people of the Nine Armies were taciturn.

“There’s nothing we can do. What they want right now is to watch the fires burning from across the river. Our only option right now is to raise our fighting prowess, and that’s how we’ll be able to stay alive. We can’t keep thinking about how to rely on others. They’ll surely act, but not right now. Those people are some cunning old foxes!”

Jackie smiled helplessly and flew up into the sky. He listened to the fighting noises nearby and said with a smile on his face, “Not bad. It sounded like lesser battles are happening today compared to yesterday. Without the fighting noises, it wouldn’t be so easy for those people from the Bloodshed Clan to find us. Still, many of our people who entered this area must’ve died yesterday.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

chapter 1786-1790

Chapter 1786

“F*ck, there are several people here and there’s a hole over there. Haha… It looks like these people must have hidden in the cave last night!” Unexpectedly, around a dozen of Bloodshed Clan disciples discovered Jackie and the others at this moment. They immediately flew over with smiles on their faces.

“Tsk, tsk… Not bad. We discovered seven of them and there’s actually a beautiful lady among them. Although her face is covered, I’m sure she’s a beautiful lady!” Another disciple of the Bloodshed Clan also said with a smile on his face.

“Haha… Junior Brother, look at you! You fail to control yourself every time you see a beautiful woman. If this continues, you might die in the hands of a woman in the future!” One of the old men started laughing loudly.

Jackie looked at these people and a soft smile appeared at the corners of his mouth. “The one with the highest fighting prowess is in the third-grade ultimate god-level and many of the others are in the true god level. Tsk, tsk… There are too few of you as only five are in the ultimate god-level. It would be better if there were more of you!”

The corners of the old man’s mouth twitched uncontrollably when he heard this. He was one of them who was in the third-grade ultimate god-level.

He took a step forward and glared at Jackie angrily. “Young man, not bad. Unexpectedly, you can assess our fighting prowess from far away when the fluctuation of power on our body isn’t so strong. Haha… What do you mean by there are only two of us who are in the third grade ultimate god-level? I think I alone will be enough to kill you people!”

After speaking, the old man did not waste more time talking. He tightened his fist and Chi came surging out. The overwhelming imposing manner also slowly raised.

When his fists were completely covered in Chi, the old man rushed toward Jackie in a flash and directly punched toward him.

“You?” A hint of contempt appeared in Jackie’s eyes when he faced the other party’s attack. He killed quite a lot of people in the third-grade ultimate god-level yesterday, and he had to admit that the Bloodshed Clan disciples in the third-grade ultimate god-level had really high combat power. Their combat power was comparable to those in the fourth-grade ultimate godlevel.

However, this old man before him was obviously not such a master. From the looks of his speed, he must be a slightly poor trainer among those in the third-grade ultimate god-level fighters. From the looks of the Chi covering his fists, it was fluctuating between strong or weak. He evidently did not have strong control over his power.

Hence, Jackie concluded that this old man had just broken through a couple of days ago into the third-grade ultimate god-level and has yet to even stabilize in his current level.

Boom!

When facing the old man, Jackie did not even use his Chi and directly bumped fists with the other party.

“How can this be? This young man did not even use his Chi?” A Bloodshed Clan disciple who was in the first-grade ultimate god-level was so surprised that he widened his eyes when he saw how Jackie did not use his Chi. They were caught by surprise.

“This guy is definitely suicidal. Haha!” Another female disciple laughed in disdain.

Boom!

However, following a horrendous booming noise, the old man was sent flying backward while he vomited a mouthful of blood.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Several trees not far behind the old man continuously broke after the old man knocked into them with his body.

Puff!

Finally, the old man stopped. He laid on the ground and vomited another mouthful of blood before he finally stopped moving. He was no longer breathing.

“Oh my god, how is this possible? He killed the Senior Brother with one punch and without even using his Chi?”

Chapter 1787

The female disciple who looked down on Jackie was shocked that her jaw almost dropped to the ground after she saw this scene. She could not believe what just happened before her eyes.

“Run! That guy’s fighting prowess is comparable to a fifth or sixth-grade ultimate god-level fighter. D*mn it! Why is there a person with such high fighting prowess in this forest!” The other man in the third-grade ultimate god-level immediately yelled in shock and turned around to escape.

However, Jackie moved toward him so speedily that only his shadow was left at the spot he originally was. Jackie appeared in front of that man and directly attacked him.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

At the same time, Nash and the others also started to charge forward. They rushed forward one after another. Those dozen over disciples were not their opponents and were completely killed within several seconds.

“We traveled quite some distance deep into the forest last night before we hid away to train. Unexpectedly, these people had already arrived this far in the forest.” Jackie said as he was checking the other party’s martial rings after he killed those people.

“Yes. Hence, these people are probably not clear about the situation in this forest.” Nash nodded.

After putting away the things they obtained, Jackie and the others continued their journey. They soon traveled toward another place where noises could be heard.

Not long after Jackie and the others left, 20 more disciples of the Bloodshed Clan once again appeared at the scene that they just left.

“How could this be? Two people in the third-grade ultimate god-level have died?” A woman in the fifth-grade ultimate god level had a darkened expression on her face as she looked at the bodies on the ground. She knew one of the men in the third-grade ultimate god-level as they went on a mission together previously. She had never expected him to die in this forest.

“Senior Sister, it looks like the people of the Nine Armies secretly sent people to help them. If not, it’s impossible for these dozens of people to be killed by them!” One of the men thought about it and walked forward to speak to the woman wearing a red dress.

“Yes, if that’s the case, everybody needs to be careful. This time, our opponent isn’t just those people who entered from the abandoned world, members of the Nine Armies have also entered the forest.” The female disciple nodded and soon waved her hand to gesture for her people to leave together.

“Jackie, there’s no need for us to rescue this group of people!” When Jackie and the others once again arrived near to where the fighting noises were, a playful smile appeared at the corners of Nash’s mouth after he took a look.

There were a large number of people in front of them and there were at least 7000 to 8000 people. These 7000 to 8000 people were being hunted by more than 100 Bloodshed Clan disciples.

“Haha… We can just ignore these people from the Hall of Divine Royal. This Hall of Divine Royal has quite a large number of people and the families or forces from the seas basically listen to them. Unfortunately, they are fated to not gain any benefits by following us into the area. Instead, all of them are going to die here!” Jackie was emotionless as looked at the Hall of Divine Royal’s members being killed, one after another. With a wave of his hand, he led his people toward another direction where fighting noises were coming from.

“This is great! It’s Randall, Shelby, and the others!” Jackie was delighted when he took a look from far away as these were people from the Tudor Family. They did not run into any members of the Tudor Family these couple of days and Jackie was worried that almost all of them had died. Unexpectedly, they met around 3000 members of the Tudor Family that were being hunted by the Bloodshed Clan’s members.

The Tudor Family had always had a good relationship with the White family and spoke on behalf of them. Randall even treated Jackie as his older brother.

Jackie never thought that they would finally bump into these people here.

Chapter 1788

The current Randall had actually broken through to the peak stage of the true god level, and he was only one step away from the first-grade ultimate god-level.

Jackie remembered that when he first entered the place, Randall was only at the late stage of the true god-level, and it had not taken him long to break through to the peak stage of the true god-level.

Nonetheless, what surprised Jackie the most was that the head of the Tudor Family, as well as several other elders, were still at the peak of the true god-level; none of them had broken through to the ultimate god realm yet.

Fortunately, the people who were chasing them were not of high fighting prowess; they had fewer people and among them, only two were first-grade ultimate god level fighters. Therefore, Randall and his people were able to hold on for a while.

“Dang it! If this goes on, we will be in huge trouble! Those two first-grade ultimate god-level fighters, we can’t win against them at all! We are only capable of killing some of the true god and demi-god level fighters at most!”

One of the elders, after casting out another martial technique, turned his head and looked at Shelby, his face solemn. “Master Tudor, we should split up and escape. We’ve lost another two to three hundred men in such a short time! If this continues, we’ll be completely eliminated by them!”

“They’ve lost dozens of men as well, and only around three hundred men are left. I’m so furious! They killed so many of us! Should we just stay on and fight them to death?”

Randall clenched his fists tightly; rage glowed in his bloodshot eyes. His heart felt as though it was cut open when he saw his fellow Tudors being brutally killed by the other party.

“Randall, we can’t act impulsively. Let’s listen to the First Elder. We’ll split up and escape. This way, we have chances of survival! Where there is life, there is hope, right? It took us so many days of hard work to get in here, and there is a way for us to break into the ultimate god-level here!”

Shelby persuaded Randall while she was fighting the enemies. She hated these Bloodshed Clan b*stards as well, but she and her people had no other choice. If this situation continued, the entire Tudor Family would be annihilated. Perhaps, at most, only a few of them would be able to survive.

“Mom, look! It’s Big Brother!”

Randall’s heart was filled with despair, but just as he raised his head, he saw Jackie flew over with several people.

“Huh? Big Brother? What Big Brother?”

Shelby stood frozen for seconds before she immediately wheeled around and looked. “It’s Young Master Jackie! Oh my god! Master White and the others are here, and even The Saintess Melody is here! I hope a few of them have broken into the ultimate god-level! If they really did, they’ll be able to hold up these b*stards for us to escape!”

She exclaimed, her tone trembling.

Randall, on the other hand, was confident. “Brother Jackie is naturally talented in martial arts. If everything went smoothly, he must have already broken into the ultimate god-level! Moreover, his combat prowess has always been very powerful, even if he did not break into the first-grade ultimate god-level, he would still be able to stall those two b*stards! Then we will join forces, find the right timing and attack the other party! We may be able to kill them instead!”

After listening to Randall’s analysis, Shelby and several elders were filled with hope once more; their eyes lit up and their spirits were lifted. Randall was right! As long as there was someone who could hold those two b*stards back, it would be so much easier for them to win this battle!

“Haha! Thank God, Master Tudor, we’ve finally found you!”

Nash and Jackie flew over and stopped in front of Shelby, whereas Kenneth, Titus, and some other Whites flew over to help the Tudors in the battle.

“Master White, it’s so great to see you! I wonder if any of you have broken into the first-grade ultimate god-level yet? The other party has two first-grade ultimate god-level fighters; it’s too hard for us to deal with! None of us here have broken through to the ultimate god realm! Sigh!

We couldn’t find the martial technique, and the one time we finally found it, it was being guarded by those ultimate god-level fighters. We don’t dare to fight them to snatch the martial technique!”

Shelby asked. She was helpless and anxious at the same time, fearing that even if Jackie and the others had come over, they would still not be able to help with the situation.

Chapter 1789

“Haha! Just wait and see!”

However, Nash looked completely at ease, unconcerned. Instead, he laughed and pointed over the battlefield and said casually.

Shelby immediately turned her head and looked over. What happened before her eyes shocked her, as well as the rest of the Tudor Family members. Those two first-grade ultimate god-level fighters were killed by Kenneth and Titus within minutes; they could not even defend against Kenneth and Titus.

“Holly-molly! Which level are they at now? It’s not even first-grade, right? Their Chi energy is gold in color! And it’s denser and richer than the other party’s Chi energy!”

Shelby gasped at the scene, and she looked at Jackie with an expectant look.

Moreover, Titus, Alejandro and others were overwhelmingly strong and powerful as well! They were obviously ultimate god level fighters!

Only then did Jackie smile warmly and answered, “They’re all at the third-grade ultimate god-level. Melody is a second grader and I’m a fourth-grade ultimate god level fighter.

“What? You’re in the fourth-grade ultimate god-level already?”

Shelby’s voice immediately raised to the soprano vocal range; in total shock and excitement rose in her like a tide. They had been desperately looking for a way to break through to the ultimate god-level these days but to no avail. Yet, Jackie had already broken into the fourth-grade ultimate godlevel! The gap between them grew even wider now.

“How is it possible? How long has it been since you entered this place? Have you been cultivating all this time? But it’s impossible, right? Even if you’ve been cultivating, it’s impossible for you to reach the fourth-grade in such a short time!”

Randall’s forehead knitted together. After thinking about it again, he then said in a surprised tone, “Could it be that you guys have picked up some kind of treasure or martial technique that allows you to improve your martial level quickly? A. treasure like, perhaps, what thousand year-old miracle water?”

“Haha! It’s nothing like that! And there’s no such powerful treasure!”

Nash did not know whether to cry or to laugh at Randall’s guess. “We were able to break through so quickly because Jackie became a third-grade intermediate alchemist! He’s really talented in terms of alchemy! A master I would say!” He explained.

“Really? How powerful is that! If you take in a third-grade intermediate-level pill, you must be able to improve your martial level by quite a bit too, right? As long as there is time, you’ll definitely improve your martial level in a short time again!”

Envy flooded Shelby’s eyes after hearing Nash’s explanation.

At this time, Jackie flipped his palm and took out two books containing martial techniques, and then he handed them to Shelby and Randall. “We managed to get these martial techniques after we killed some disciples of the Bloodshed Clan. Heh! There are many techniques inside, and these techniques helped a lot. Take it and acquire it. Try to break into the ultimate god-level as soon as possible!”

“I… Young Master Jackie, this is too precious! We can’t take it!”

Tears shimmered in her eyes as Shelby spoke in a trembling voice.

“Nah! It’s totally fine! We’re friends! Just take it!”

Jackie chuckled warmly in return. He then told the Tudors the current situation they were in from head to toe. “You guys just follow what I said, go straight to the top of that mountain, our big group will be waiting for you there. The people of the Supreme Clarity Sect and the Divine King Sect have also gone over. After you guys have arrived, please seize the opportunity to break through to the first grade ultimate god-level. If we can increase the number of ultimate god-level fighters, it would be beneficial for us. After all, we might have to go into a tough war soon!”

Chapter 1790

“Then-then I thank you, Young Master Jackie!”

Shelby nodded her head. She knew the gravity of the situation; the gap between the first-grade ultimate god-level and the peak of the true god-level was too big.

The two looked like there was just that much difference between their cultivation levels, but there was a gigantic gap in terms of fighting prowess. After all, one’s Chi who was at the first-grade ultimate god-level was not the same as before, as it was extremely pure and contained a tinge of gold. The explosive power of that sort of Chi could not be matched by the explosive power of Chi at the peak of the true god level.

“There are so many people here! My goodness. The battle has ended. I didn’t think that our people would die!”

Yet at this moment, a group of disciples from the Bloodshed Clan came over. Four or five hundred of them, and ten of them who were at the ultimate god-level. There were also those who were at second-grade or third-grade, and the leader was actually a fifth-grade ultimate god-level fighter.

Kenneth and the others, who had already finished gathering the spoils of war, immediately came by Jackie and the others’ side. All of them looked forward with serious expressions.

“There’s a lot of them. Seems like there are definitely a few who have broken into the ultimate god-level. Otherwise, two of our first-grade ultimate god-level disciples wouldn’t have died!”

A girl who was at the second-grade ultimate god-level huffed when she saw the situation.

They had rushed over when they had heard the sounds of battle coming from the site.

However, the battle noises ended too soon. They had even thought that it must have been the Bloodshed Clan disciples who had quickly ended the battle, securing victory.

They did not imagine that the ones who emerged victorious were the ones who came from the abandoned world. These people had actually killed plenty of disciples from the Bloodshed Clan.

“Hehe. No need to think too much about it. Kill all of them and take revenge for our fellow brothers and sisters!”

The disciple who was a fifth-grade ultimate god-level fighter was a middle-aged woman. After she saw the corpses on the ground, she just flashed a cold smile and pointed her sword.

Jackie’s expression was still calm when he saw the newcomers. He did not even consider them a threat.

Instead, he turned around toward Randall and Shelby. “Master Tudor, bring the Tudor Family members and leave first. There are too many of you left here, it’ll be detrimental instead. If we fight, there will be meaningless sacrifices. The seven of us will suffice. Just wait there for us like what we’ve said!”

“Alright. Thank you so much. You must all be careful. The Bloodshed Clan won’t be easy to take on. Who knows how many fighters they have!”

Shelby knew that her people would not be much help if they stayed behind. For them, they needed to allow those who were at the peak of the true god-level to break into the first-grade ultimate god-level. They also needed those who were at the advanced stage of the true god-level to break into the first-grade ultimate god-level as soon as possible. That way, if they truly got into another battle, the gap between them and their enemies would not be so obvious.

“Careful, Big Brother. We’ll take our leave first! Don’t worry. We’ll remember your words and get there as soon as possible. And make a breakthrough as soon as possible!”

Randall looked at Jackie and led the people away.

“Leaving so soon?”

A man who was a second-grade ultimate god-level fighter was furious when he saw so many people turning around to fly off. He slashed a wisp of Chi forward.

Jackie gave a wan smile when he saw this. He waved his hand and sent a wisp of Chi flying out as well, easily taking on the other party’s attack.

“Sh*t. They actually have such a powerful person among them?”

The man who was a second-grade ultimate god-level fighter immediately turned serious when he saw this, his expression darkened.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior – Chapter 1791

“The seven of them wish to stop us? Aren’t they too naïve?”

The middle-aged woman who was a fifth grade ultimate god-level fighter gave a cold smile when she saw that only seven people were left behind. In a flash, she rushed toward Jack. “Looks like your cultivation level is pretty high, brat. Let me test you out a bit today!”

“Charge!”

Jack waved his hand and rushed forward without an ounce of fear toward the middle-aged woman.

“You dare to counter me yourself?”

The middle-aged woman’s eyes were filled with appraisal when she saw that Jack had such a good fighting spirit. From her perspective, Jack was a third-grade ultimate god-level fighter at most. It was so easy that he did not pose any worries for her.

“No, wait. His speed-it’s so fast!”

However, the next second, Jack was already right before her. His speed shocked the woman so much that her face immediately darkened.

When she saw that the Chi on Jack’s fist rippled in thick gold color, the middle-aged woman was slightly taken aback. “You’re actually a fourth-grade ultimate god-level fighter? How can this be? Unless you’re from the Nine Armies?”

The middle-aged woman heaved an internal sigh of relief after she discerned Jack’s cultivation level. Although the brat’s speed was extremely fast, as though she was going against a fighter who was at the eighth-grade ultimate god-level, she realized that the brat’s cultivation level did not match hers after a closer look.

Bang!

The two's fists immediately clashed after the middle-aged woman's voice rang out.

"No way. How is he stronger than me?"

The middle-aged woman did not even see him as an opponent, but he changed her mind and her eyes went wide. Jack's strength allowed her to suddenly sense the shocking difference in strength between them.

The fighting power of the brat before her was indeed about the same level as an eighth-grade ultimate god-level fighter.

She found it hard to believe that someone who was a fourth-grade ultimate god-level fighter could demonstrate such power.

Just as the woman's eyes grew in shock, the sound of a cracking bone suddenly came from her arm. The next second, she flew out as though she were a kite with a broken string. She spat a mouthful of blood and landed heavily on the ground. She kept coughing up blood and could not even pull herself up.

A single punch from Jack caused such heavy injuries to a fighter at the fifth-grade ultimate god-level that she even lost her fighting power.

The woman looked at the other disciples from her clan. Each of them was being killed by their enemies and was falling from the sky, one by one. They were absolutely no match for their opponents.

"No way. How can they have so many people who are at the third-grade ultimate god-level? No way! It must be the Nine Armies. That damned Nine Armies—how dare they send people to help them secretly!"

The middle-aged woman did not dare to believe in this reality. In the end, she could only witness the disciples that came over with her being killed by the seven people before her.

“Please-please spare my life!”

Jack flew before the middle-aged woman. She was looking at him with a pleading expression as she lay weakly on the ground.

“Hehe. Spare you? You’ve killed so many of our people. I don’t have any reason to persuade myself to spare you! If we didn’t beat you just now, I don’t think you would have spared us!”

Jack gave a cold smile, as though he was listening to a joke. He flipped his palm and a black sword appeared in his hand. He threw his sword out and killed the woman.

“From now on, when we gather spoils of war, we only need to find the martial rings of those who are in the ultimate god-level. If you don’t want any other, no need to take them. Usually, there’ll be more stuff in an ultimate god-level fighter’s ring. We need to save more time to save more people!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior – Chapter 1792

After Jack thought about it, he told everyone, “Furthermore, it’s evident now that the Bloodshed Clan has sent more disciples into this forest. If we slow ourselves down, there’ll be more disciples from the Bloodshed Clan coming to find us in a while!”

Kenneth spoke with a grin, “What are we afraid of? We’ll just kill them if they dare to come. Hehe!”

“That won’t do. We can’t be careless. It’ll be troublesome if their fighters find us,” Alejandro said. “Besides, even though Jack has great fighting power, the rest of us won’t have a way to fight off those who are at higher cultivation levels!”

Nash also nodded his head. “Master Cabello is right. Our cultivation levels are not very high. We need to be aware of our opponents before we make a move, and we can’t be found by those who are at higher cultivation levels. Besides, we don’t have much time, and our numbers are getting smaller. That’s why if we get into a fight, it’d be best if it’s because we are saving someone. Our goal is to not just kill the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan, but to kill them because we’re trying to save others!”

Kenneth replied with an awkward smile, “That’s right. I’ve been on a killing spree today. I keep thinking of showing them who’s boss, so I didn’t give it much thought!”

“Let’s go!”

Jack waved his hand and quickly led everyone away.

A while after they had left, an old man with white hair quickly appeared in the same spot.

The old man’s expression was dark as he looked at the corpses of the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan on the ground. “Seems like the people of the Nine Armies are truly helping the people who are here to kill our clan. Such wicked people. Even someone at the fifth-grade ultimate god-level was killed, and so many disciples have died!”

The old man was no ordinary person. He was the Bloodshed Clan's Fourth Elder who had come into the forest in the morning. He was so furious that he clenched his fists, and only then did he flew off.

"Jack, there are the people of the Pavilion of Soaring before us, as well as a few disciples from the Supreme Clarity Sect. What should we do? It seems like the disciples from the Bloodshed Clan are at high cultivation levels!"

Jack and the others came to another area filled with low shrubs. They watched the fight before them between the gaps in the leaves and branches.

After Jack studied the situation, he shook his head in the end. "Let's go. Let's hurry up and leave. Among those disciples from the Bloodshed Clan, there's one who's an eighth-grade ultimate god-level fighter, and another who's at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. We won't be able to get anything if we join the fight. In fact, we might lead ourselves to death if we do!"

After he said that, Jack did not linger any longer and led everyone to retreat. They flew straight toward fighting noises that came from another side.

"Sh*t. We didn't even see any seventh grade or eighth-grade ultimate god-level fighters yesterday, and today there are so many of them. Seems like the Bloodshed Clan has truly sent their strongest fighters this time!"

Kenneth was extremely furious. He felt helpless, watching those disciples from the Supreme Clarity Sect and the Pavilion of Soaring being killed, yet not being able to do anything to help them.

"There's no way around it. The only thing we can do now is the things that we have the strength for. We need to minimize our losses!"

Jack gave a bitter smile and quickly led the others to fly toward another place that had fighting noises.

After watching the situation carefully, Jack gave a wan smile. "We can join this fight. There are two fifth-grade ultimate god level fighters, and the rest are in the first or second-grade ultimate god-level. There

are about ten who are at the ultimate god-level, and the rest are disciples who are at the true god-level or the demi-god level."

"That's great. It's good that we can fight. There are the Cabello family members inside there!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior – Chapter 1793

Alejandro was delighted when he heard this.

"Yep. And there are quite a few from the Hemperly family. Darcy Hemperly, Paul Hemperly, and the others are all in there. I didn't think that they would still be alive!"

Jack led everyone to rush in when he saw this.

Although the Hemperly family was only a second-class aristocratic family, Darcy, Paul, and the others were pretty good people, but their cultivation levels were not very high. Jack had not seen them for so many days, and after seeing so many bodies of the Hemperly family members along the way, he had thought that Darcy and the others were probably dead already. He did not think that Darcy and Paul were still alive.

"Father, we're dead meat. We have plenty of people, but our enemies are too strong!"

As he escaped, Paul spoke toward his father.

"That's right. We finally broke into the peak of the true god-level, and we have even mastered the martial arts techniques. It's a pity that we're going to die before we get to break into the first-grade ultimate god-level. Ah! I am filled with regrets because of this!"

Darcy heaved a sigh, his heart not resigned to his fate.

"Master, Master. It's Young Master Jack!"

Just at this moment, an old man's eyes brightened as he noticed something.

"How are Jack and the others here?"

Darcy's heart leaped when he heard this.

However, he quickly thought of the many fighters from the Bloodshed Clan who were chasing after them. He immediately yelled toward Jack and the others, "Young Master Jack, don't come over here. Run away quickly! There are too many powerful fighters among them. You'll be digging your grave if you come here!"

Paul, who had been rejoicing, recollected himself after he was slightly stunned. Darcy was right. When they were in the abandoned world, Jack, Nash, and the others were indeed the strongest fighters. However, it was different here. There were too many powerful fighters here. It was evident that those who were chasing after them had extremely high cultivation levels.

He immediately yelled too, "Young Master Jack, let's escape. We have many people here. Perhaps some can manage to get away. Hurry!"

Yet Jack and the others had no intention of stopping even after hearing what they had said. They still flew over.

"Don't worry. We can take those people on!"

Jack threw out a few words and rushed straight before a man who was at the first grade ultimate god-level. He killed the man with a single fist, then he flashed again and rushed straight toward the disciple who was at the fifth-grade ultimate god-level.

"Don't worry. We wouldn't dare to come over to save all of you if we couldn't take them on!"

Nash laughed and rushed forward as well.

"No way. Don't-don't tell me that their cultivation levels are even higher than the disciples from the Bloodshed Clan?"

Darcy stopped, so exhausted that he kept puffing and panting. His expression, stunned.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior – Chapter 1794

The attacks coming from Jack's side stunned Darcy and the others. They never imagined that Jack and the others could kill so many powerful fighters from the Bloodshed Clan just like that. Furthermore, not a single one of their enemies had escaped.

"This is great, Master. This is great. I didn't think that we would have a chance of surviving. We all thought that we would never see you again, Master!"

The Cabello family members flew over and spoke to Alejandro with excited expressions on.

"That's right, Master. It's great that we can see you. From how you looked just now, you must have broken into the ultimate god level, right? Oh, right. Why are there so few of you here, Master? Where are the others? Where's the First Young Mistress and the others? Have you seen them?"

The other Cabello family members each bombarded Alejandro with questions. After all, there were only over a hundred Cabello family members here, and they had not seen the other Cabello family members.

"They're all fine. Let me tell you this now; fly into that direction later and gather at the peak of the mountain!"

Alejandro led a few people to fly upward, then he pointed in the designated direction. He quickly explained the situation to them.

"You're amazing, Young Master Jack. I didn't think that you would actually break into the fourth-grade ultimate god-level fifth-grade ultimate god-level!"

After Paul learned of the general situation, he looked at Jack with respect. Passion filled his eyes.

At this moment, Jack was practically his idol in his eyes.

“Take care. Just go to the place we pointed to as fast as you can. Remember, don’t stop along the way. Once you get there, quickly find time to break into the first-grade ultimate god-level!”

Jack patted Paul’s shoulder and reminded the other man.

Soon, the Hemperly family members took the Cabello family members and left the place.

Time passed by quickly. When they saw that the sky was getting darker, Jack and the others ventured a little deeper into the woods before stumbling upon a hidden cave.

“We need to create four pills tonight. This way, there will be one pill for each of us. If we manage to get by tomorrow, we’ll only be able to create pills at night and increase our cultivation levels!”

Jack thought to himself and flipped his palm. He took out the alchemy ingredients and started to create pills.

“What happened in the forest today?”

At this moment, outside the woods, the master of the Bloodshed Clan asked the disciples before him.

One of the disciples answered him, “We killed many people, Master, but many of our people have died as well. Furthermore, our fifth-grade ultimate god-level disciple was killed today too.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior – Chapter 1795

Another disciple added, “More importantly, judging from today’s events, it’s evident that the fighting sounds have lessened, Master. Furthermore, our disciples reported that they didn’t see many people from the abandoned world. It seemed like less than ten thousand of them came in. Perhaps the monsters have killed many of them, or maybe many have died as they were fighting for the spirited grass!”

“It’s evident that the fighting sounds are much less than before. This means that we have killed plenty of them and that few of them are left behind. However, it must be someone from the Nine Armies who was able to kill the fifth-grade ultimate god level disciple. I hope that the Fourth Elder will be able to wipe those people out!”

In the end, Austin clenched his fists and glared in the direction of the Nine Armies. “Hmph! They actually dared to send people to secretly help those people. All right then. We’ll make sure the people you sent will not make it out alive!”

“Hehe. It’s been two days already, Master. Not a single one of the Nine Armies’ people has yet to come out. This means that they fear us, at least, and do not dare to directly confront us. Actually, this is pretty good. After our people kill those that have entered the forest, we can even get the spirited grass and other stuff from them. It’s not a loss for us!”

The Second Elder said, chuckling,

Yet Austin’s face darkened, and he shot the man a glare, “It’s not a loss? Didn’t you hear them? Not only have we lost disciples at the first and second-grade ultimate god level, we even lost a few who were at the fifth-grade ultimate god-level. Do you actually think that it’s not a loss for us in this situation? Did you ever think how much resources we have spent to cultivate someone to reach the fifth-grade ultimate god-level?”

The First Elder who sat at the side also had a glum expression. He remained silent for a long while before speaking, “Someone who is able to kill our disciple at the fifth-grade ultimate god-level… Must be a sixth or seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter. Who knows how many people that the Nine Armies have sent to aid those trash. Sh*t. We must kill those people. This way, we’ll teach the Nine Armies a lesson. Not a single one of them can be left alive!”

“Haha. You’re right. After we kill those people from the Nine Armies, we’ll transport their bodies to the entrance of the Nine Armies for them to explain everything. I want to see how interesting Austin’s face will look!”

Edward also burst into laughter when he heard this.

“Phew!”

The sky gradually brightened, and here Jack slowly stood up. “Thank goodness. By using eight sets of ingredients in this alchemy process, I successfully created four third-grade intermediate pills! Now we have seven pills!”

Jack smiled and took out the pills. “Come over here,” he told everyone. “One pill each!”

“Young Master Jack, your success rate is pretty good. You used eight sets of ingredients yesterday night and successfully crafted three pills. Tonight, you used eight sets of ingredients as well and managed to successfully craft four. Now your success rate is at fifty percent. If you practice creating pills a few more times, your success rate will definitely increase!”

Lancelot’s face was full of smiles as he saw the pill that Jack had given him. With this pill, everyone could find a place to make a breakthrough tonight.

However, they did not dare to attempt breakthroughs during the day. After all, they were afraid of being found by fighters from the Bloodshed Clan. If they were, it would be troublesome.

“The fighting noises have decreased. This is good news for us!”

As he flew forward, Jack spoke, “Now we’ve saved quite a number of people. They’re all going to the place that we designated, and if they don’t clash with monsters or fight with each other for treasures along the way, the Bloodshed Clan’s people won’t be able to keep up with them as they slowly search the area in the forest!”

“That’s right. The Bloodshed Clan people can only slowly search within the forest to find them. It just so happens that we can take advantage of the time lag!”

Nash nodded his head and said, “Ah. The only thing we can do is to kill more people from the Bloodshed Clan. Furthermore, this forest is huge, so we must buy as much time as possible. It definitely won’t do if this drags on for long. We still need the help of the Nine Armies!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1796

Chapter 1796
Whoosh!

Just as Nash's voice rang out, a sword aura flew toward them from the other side at an extremely fast speed.

Jackie immediately sensed the attack and flipped his palm. He held the sword in his hand, then he swung his arm and slashed a sword aura out.

Bang!

Jackie's sword aura did not fly far when the two frightening sword auras clashed and released a terrible explosion.

"You're pretty good, brat. Such quick reflexes. Seems like your mental strength is extraordinary!"

Not too far away, seven or eight disciples from the Bloodshed Clan were looking at Jackie and the others with amused expressions. The man who spoke just now was wearing a red shirt, and he was carrying a green sword in his hand.

"Brother, that brat must be from the Nine Armies. We finally found him after searching for so long. If he wasn't someone from the Nine Armies, he wouldn't have defended against your attack so easily just now, and he wouldn't have such quick reflexes!"

A female disciple in green clothing stood beside the man in the red. She looked at Jackie with grave eyes.

However, the man in the red shirt smiled without care. "What's there to be afraid of? I'm a seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter. Other than some Patronums that I can't defeat, I am considered the strongest disciple among those of the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. Should I be afraid of this youngster from the Nine Armies? From the looks of him, he's pretty good already if he's a sixth-grade ultimate god-level fighter. Even if he's a seventh-grader, he's no match for me!"

"But of course!"

An old man began to flatter him from the side. "Brother Simon is the First Elder's own disciple, and he's the master disciple that the First Elder is most pleased with among all the other disciples. He's unmatched among those of the seventh grade ultimate god-level, and of the seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighters from the Nine Armies, it's possible that not even two of them can match Brother Simon here! The Nine Armies are just rabble."

Jackie also looked at his opponent with a serious expression. He carefully sensed the subtle resonance that the man was radiating, and he could tell that this person who was at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level was far stronger than the Bloodshed Clan disciples at the seventh grade ultimate god-level that he had killed before.

However, it had been pretty easy for him to kill the seventh-grade ultimate god-level disciples hence it should not be a problem to kill this man in red too.

Meanwhile, Jackie also carefully sensed the other disciples. He heaved an internal sigh of relief when he realized that their cultivation levels were not very high. There were four of them who were

third-grade ultimate god-level fighters, while the rest were at the peak of the true god-level. Nash and the others should be able to take them on.

“How is it, Jackie? Can you tell their cultivation levels?”

Alejandro, whose mental strength was not very high, could also sense that the people before them were not weaklings. He asked Jackie with worry.

Jackie nodded his head. “Fortunately, we can take these people on. Just leave the guy in the red shirt who’s at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level to me. As for the rest, you’ll be able to take them. Luckily, they don’t have two or three disciples at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. Otherwise, we’ll probably be finished here!”

“Thank goodness. We can take them on!”

Alejandro heaved a long internal sigh when he heard that.

“You’ve got quite the mouth, brat. Just leave me to you? So you’re a seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter? Alright then. Let me test you!”

After the man said that, he flew over and poured his Chi into his sword, slashing it toward Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1797

His opponent had evidently not held back this time. He straightaway used a second grade martial skill, and a Chi image that looked like a falcon appeared before him. It flashed forward with a frightening aura.

“Careful, Jackie. The man’s resonance is too strong!”

When Nash sensed the man’s powerful aura as he flew forward to fight the disciples from the Bloodshed Clan, he could not help but warn Jackie.

“Don’t worry, Dad. I won’t let him kill me so easily!”

Jackie tightened his grip around his sword hilt and immediately allowed his internal Chi to flow, pouring it into his sword.

Hum!

As the chi entered the sword, a sharp humming sound rang out. Meanwhile, Jackie’s aura also greatly increased.

“That’s a pretty nice sword, and it helps you to increase your fighting power. Looks like an ultimate-grade spiritual tool.”

Simon’s eyes brightened slightly when he saw the sword in Jackie’s hand.

However, he quickly noticed something else and cried out, “No, wait. You’re only at the fourth-grade ultimate god-level. You’re not a seventh-grader!”

Simon’s eyes nearly popped out of their sockets. His attack earlier had been an ambush, so the most important thing was speed. That was why he just slashed his sword without even using his Chi.

Although a causal attack like that could not compare to one that used Chi, the benefit of an attack like that was that it was extremely fast, and one could use it quickly. Furthermore, without the resonance of Chi, it would be difficult for anyone to detect it unless their cultivation levels were high or they had extremely high mental strength. Only then could it be sensed and reacted to. Otherwise, using an attack like that to make an ambush was pretty effective too.

However, Simon believed that one needed to at least be at the sixth-grade ultimate god-level to even sense a callous attack like that, much less react to it.

That was why Jackie reacted to it even as the others did not, he surmised that Jackie was at least at the sixth-grade ultimate god level, or at the seventh-grade.

Yet he only found out in surprise that the fellow before him was only at the fourth grade ultimate god-level when he used his Chi to activate a martial skill attack.

He truly could not believe that someone at the fourth-grade ultimate god-level could go toe-to-toe with him.

“Burning Chop!”

Just as Simon was stunned, Jackie launched an attack on him. A frightening chop rushed out as though it were a frightening fireball, burning like a fierce flame as it rushed forward.

Bang!

The attacks suddenly clashed with one another. A powerful force ripped the area in between them, and a frightening wave of air made all the surrounding trees ripple. The fallen leaves on the ground danced in the air.

“We can’t hold on for long, Brother. Sh*t. These remaining people are at the second grade ultimate god-level, at least. And only one is a second-grade—the others are all third-grade!”

Just as Simon was going speechless, cries for help rang out from the disciples behind him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1798
“Worthless scum! We’ve only just begun, and you can’t hold on already?”

Simon was furious. He had thought that killing Jackie would be a walk in the park.

Yet he now realized that Jackie’s attack could actually counter his attack, as though they were almost on par with one another.

“No way. This is a second-grade martial skill. Yet-yet his martial skill could take it. More importantly, his cultivation level is so much lower than mine!”

Here and now, Simon felt his pride being severely battered. He was the disciple of the First Elder, and many people admired and respected him in the clan. There were even plenty of female disciples who actively clamored after him.

This made him feel that he was truly a gifted master. Furthermore, he was not very old. He believed that in a few years’ time, he would be able to break into the soul-penetrating realm. By then, when electing the next clan master, no one would have to think twice—it would be him, Simon Greene.

He never imagined that one day, a youngster at the fourth-grade ultimate god-level would be able to take his martial skill attack. It felt as though someone had slapped him in the face.

Bang bang bang!

The fighting noises continued to ring out. The two powerful forces eventually managed to take the other after struggling for a while.

“You’re truly an oddity, brat!”

Simon looked at Jackie with a serious expression. “I’ve never seen someone with such great martial talent. And you could even kill those who are at a higher cultivation level. From how I see it, only people from large sects can do it. Even then, those who are absolute masters will only be able to accomplish this. I never imagined that you, a fourth-grade ultimate god-level fighter, would be able to match me in combat. Seems like I have to get rid of you today. I can’t allow you to continue to grow. The consequences will be unthinkable!”

“Hehe. It won’t be that easy to kill me!”

Jackie chuckled, then he spoke again after thinking for a while, “If your Elders or Patronum or whatnot don’t come in to fight, there’s probably no way to kill me!”

Simon’s brows furrowed a little, and terror quickly seized his heart. “No, no. Who on earth are you, brat? There’s no way you’re someone from the Nine Armies. There’s no such master among them. We would have heard long ago if there was such a terrifying master among the Nine Armies! Tell me honestly, which forces are you from!”

“Hehe. Would you believe me if I told you that I’m from the abandoned world?”

Jackie coughed gently. Here, Nash and the others had already finished off the other disciples from the Bloodshed Clan. It was evident that they were waiting for Jackie and Simon now.

“No way. What a stupid lie!”

Simon shook his head. “I think you must be a disciple sent by some powerful force among the Anti-Alliance Guard. I really never imagined that the Anti-Alliance Guard would know that all of you would come in long ago and send people to help.”

Jackie was internally speechless. He shrugged his shoulders helplessly; there was nothing else he could say or do. “I knew that you wouldn’t believe me if I told you the truth. But it doesn’t matter whether you believe it or not. I’m going to kill you now! I’m not going to waste my time on you here!”

After he said that, Jackie kept his sword in his martial ring

“You’re not using your weapon?”

Simon grew even more confused when he saw Jackie keeping his sword at this moment.

However, the next second, he was shocked again when he saw Jackie’s stance. “No way. You-you learned the third-grade martial skill of our sect, the Twin Dragons Fist! How could this be! The Twin Dragons Fist can’t be easily picked up by others!”

“If you can’t do it, it just means you’re dumb!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1799
Jackie's words infuriated Simon so much he nearly spat out blood.

"Twin Dragons Fist!"

Jackie huffed lightly, and two huge Chi fists rushed out. Before they were actually translucent dragon heads, and they released a terrifying roar and rushed forward with the frightening aura of dragons.

"Like I'd give in!"

Simon's face paled as it was the first time that he was sensing death. He clenched his teeth after he saw Jackie's terrifying attack, using the martial skill he was most proud of.

Bang!

A huge explosion rang out. The martial skill that Simon took the most pride in was just so weak at that very moment. Just as it clashed against Jackie's attack, it was quickly suppressed and ground into powder.

"No!"

Just as he cried out in despair, Simon, who was at the seventh-grade ultimate god level, had a huge hole through his chest. Then he flew out and landed on the ground, deader than a doornail.

"This fellow has pretty amazing fighting skills!"

Jackie flew to his side and took his martial ring. Then he told Alejandro and the others, "Let's go. We didn't fight for long just now, but the noise was too much. It'll definitely attract other fighters from the Bloodshed Clan over!"

After he said that, they did not linger long and left the place soon after.

True enough, Jackie's deductions were correct. Moments after they left, an old man appeared at the site.

He had immediately rushed over when he heard such frightening fighting noises coming from that particular site. He did not think that he would be one step too late. By the time he arrived here, Jackie and the others had already left.

"How could this be? A disciple personally trained by the First Elder, and the one he took the most pride in, at that. And he was at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. Yet he's also been killed?"

The Fourth Elder's heart ached the second he saw the body on the ground. Simon's martial talent was immense, and the Elders had the intention of electing him as the next clan master once he broke into the soul-penetrating realm. They had high hopes for this disciple.

Only, he had been killed too.

"We must find this person. Sh*t! We'll catch him alive and take him back to confront him. He must be at least at the eighth-grade ultimate god-level if he was able to kill Simon. In the fortresses of the Nine Armies, someone with that cultivation level is probably an Elder. Let's see if the Nine Armies dare to

say that they never sent anyone to help those people that had entered the sacred grounds if we catch one of their Elders!”

After the Fourth Elder thought about it, he went straight into the direction of fighting noises from another place.

However, there were still plenty of fighting noises, and the forest was huge. It was evidently no easy task to track Jackie and the others down.

“Why are you here, Fourth Elder?”

The other Elders and the clan master of the Bloodshed Clan immediately asked him when they saw the Fourth Elder coming at night.

The Fourth Elder looked at the First Elder, hesitating for a few seconds before stuttering, “First Elder, I have something to tell you. But I hope that you won’t be too disappointed!”



No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1800
Jackie's words infuriated Simon so much he nearly spat out blood.

"Twin Dragons Fist!"

Jackie huffed lightly, and two huge Chi fists rushed out. Before they were actually translucent dragon heads, and they released a terrifying roar and rushed forward with the frightening aura of dragons.

"Like I'd give in!"

Simon's face paled as it was the first time that he was sensing death. He clenched his teeth after he saw Jackie's terrifying attack, using the martial skill he was most proud of.

Bang!

A huge explosion rang out. The martial skill that Simon took the most pride in was just so weak at that very moment. Just as it clashed against Jackie's attack, it was quickly suppressed and ground into powder.

"No!"

Just as he cried out in despair, Simon, who was at the seventh-grade ultimate god level, had a huge hole through his chest. Then he flew out and landed on the ground, deader than a doornail.

"This fellow has pretty amazing fighting skills!"

Jackie flew to his side and took his martial ring. Then he told Alejandro and the others, "Let's go. We didn't fight for long just now, but the noise was too much. It'll definitely attract other fighters from the Bloodshed Clan over!"

After he said that, they did not linger long and left the place soon after.

True enough, Jackie's deductions were correct. Moments after they left, an old man appeared at the site.

He had immediately rushed over when he heard such frightening fighting noises coming from that particular site. He did not think that he would be one step too late. By the time he arrived here, Jackie and the others had already left.

"How could this be? A disciple personally trained by the First Elder, and the one he took the most pride in, at that. And he was at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. Yet he's also been killed?"

The Fourth Elder's heart ached the second he saw the body on the ground. Simon's martial talent was immense, and the Elders had the intention of electing him as the next clan master once he broke into the soul-penetrating realm. They had high hopes for this disciple.

Only, he had been killed too.

"We must find this person. Sh*t! We'll catch him alive and take him back to confront him. He must be at least at the eighth-grade ultimate god-level if he was able to kill Simon. In the fortresses of the Nine Armies, someone with that cultivation level is probably an Elder. Let's see if the Nine Armies dare to

say that they never sent anyone to help those people that had entered the sacred grounds if we catch one of their Elders!”

After the Fourth Elder thought about it, he went straight into the direction of fighting noises from another place.

However, there were still plenty of fighting noises, and the forest was huge. It was evidently no easy task to track Jackie and the others down.

“Why are you here, Fourth Elder?”

The other Elders and the clan master of the Bloodshed Clan immediately asked him when they saw the Fourth Elder coming at night.

The Fourth Elder looked at the First Elder, hesitating for a few seconds before stuttering, “First Elder, I have something to tell you. But I hope that you won’t be too disappointed!”

Chapter 1800
The Fourth Elder’s words shocked the First Elder. He suddenly thought of something after all, quite a few of his disciples had gone to kill the people who had barged into the sacred grounds. If the Fourth Elder said something like this, something had probably happened to one of his disciples.

He immediately stood out. “Has one of my disciples died there, Fourth Elder?” he asked.

The Fourth Elder nodded his head. “It’s Simon. I didn’t think that I would see his body today!”

“What! Why him?”

The First Elder took a sharp intake of breath, nearly fainting from anger. The news felt like lightning flashing out of a clear blue sky. This was way out of his imagination.

“No way.”

The Sixth Elder also shot to his feet when he heard this. “Simon is the First Elder’s best disciple, and he broke into the seventh-grade ultimate god-level long ago. Why would he die? Are you sure you didn’t mix anyone up? Perhaps you saw it wrongly.”

“That’s right. Fourth Elder, this, this isn’t

A joke!”

The Third Elder also quickly chimed in. It was evident that everyone did not dare to believe that this was true.

“If Simon is truly dead, that means that our opponent is at least at the eighth-grade ultimate god-level. Seems like the Nine Armies have sent a truly powerful fighter. Perhaps even a fortress master of some fortress has made a move!”

At that moment, Edward’s face had gone grey. Never mind that he was in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level, Simon was still young, and he was considered a unique master in their clan. He had an extremely bright future.

With such a master dead, it was naturally a huge loss for their clan.

“Those b*stards from the Nine Armies. Sh*t. Playing around in the shadows like that. If they’re so tough, they should just come straight for us!”

The First Elder spoke in a venomous tone as he looked in the direction of the Nine Armies.

“How terrible of them. How about this? We’ll confront them tomorrow!”

Edward said at last after giving it some thought.

“All right. Then I’ll continue my search in the forest. Who knows how many people that the Nine Armies have sent? I’ve killed plenty of people today, but their cultivation levels were not very high. They were definitely not from the Nine Armies. Ah. Once I find the person who killed Simon, I’ll make sure he knows the true taste of regret!”

The Fourth Elder clenched his fists. After he said that, he flew into the forest again.

“Huff!”

At this moment, in a mountain cave, Jackie released a long huff. “We saved plenty of people these past two days. There were a few times where we didn’t dare to take action because our enemies’ cultivation levels were too high, but I’m satisfied with the results anyway. Furthermore, we killed plenty of disciples from the Bloodshed Clan while we were saving the others. Now the Bloodshed Clan must be furious.”

Nash also nodded his head. “Now we can cultivate ourselves. Let’s work hard, everyone. Let’s use this night to make a breakthrough. After all, we’re now completely familiar with this new martial art technique. Our cultivation speed is a lot faster compared to before. Once we use the pills to cultivate ourselves, we’ll be completely refreshed and stronger tomorrow!”

Kenneth also spoke with a grin, “Never mind feeling stronger tomorrow. At least it! Won’t be so easy for them to kill us. Besides, if Young Master Jackie makes the tiniest breakthrough, hehe, even those at the ninth-grade ultimate god-level probably won’t stand a chance against him!”

Chapter 1801

“That’s right. Jack is now already at the fourth-grade ultimate god-level. If he breaks into another three more grades, he’ll be at seventh-grade ultimate godlevel. I think it shouldn’t be a problem for him to kill a ninth-grade ultimate godlevel fighter according to his insane fighting skill. It’ll be great if he can even kill the master of the Bloodshed Clan!”

Weston was also extremely excited.

“All right. Everyone, seize the chance to cultivate yourself. Make a breakthrough tonight!”

Jack nodded his head. They used the entire afternoon to fly deeper into the forest, afraid that the Bloodshed Clan people would find them. After they managed to put more distance between them and the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan, Jack chose a well-hidden cave for the night.

After he said that, everyone took out the third-grade intermediate pills, popped them into their mouths, and swallowed them.

The third-grade intermediate pills here evidently contained more power than the third-grade elementary pills previously. This filled Jack’s heart with anticipation.

The following few days, the flow of his internal body helped the Chi to be absorbed more efficiently. Although he had not broken into the fifth-grade ultimate godlevel, his cultivation level was not too far away from it.

That was why Jack managed to make a breakthrough in a single attempt after cultivating himself for not more than an hour.

“This is great. Although my cultivation level isn’t that much higher than theirs, the speed of my cultivation has always been faster than theirs. From the looks of it, it shouldn’t be a problem to break into the seventh-grade ultimate god-level!”

When Jack thought about the plenty of energy left within the pill that has not been used, he was even more excited.

Time trickled past. Soon, the sky began to brighten once more.

In the end, Jack was the first to finish using an entire pill. Furthermore, he did not just break into the seventh-grade ultimate godlevel, he had also completely stabilized in this cultivation level. He had probably reached the intermediate stage of the seventh-grade ultimate god-level, at least.

“This is great!”

Jack clenched his fists, sensing the immense strength that suddenly increased in his body. He released an internal sigh of relief. Now he truly had the strength to protect himself before the fighters of the Bloodshed Clan.

“Bloodshed Clan, from today onward, I, Jack White, am longer afraid of your disciples who have high cultivation levels. Even if it’s a few seventh-grade ultimate god-level disciples, we will dare to fight them head-on!”

Jack looked at the remaining few people. They were still cultivating themselves, so he simply sat to the side and kept watch for them.

Fortunately, nobody had invaded the area the entire night, and no one had noticed this place. Now that he had made the breakthrough, there was not much to be afraid of.

However, Jack did not remain idle when he sat down. Instead, he carefully studied the pill remedy of

third-grade premium pills.

After all, it would be even harder to successfully create third-grade premium pills. Jack prepared to create some of the easier pills. This way, relatively speaking, he would become a third-grade premium alchemist faster.

“This is great. I’m in the fifth-grade ultimate god-level!”

Not long after Jack began his research, Melody stood up happily. It was evident that she had successfully broken into the fifth-grade ultimate god-level after using Jack’s pill. The increase in strength made her very excited.

Chapter 1802

“Haha. This is great. I’m at the sixth-grade ultimate god-level now!”

After a while, Alejandro stood up, excitement filled his expression. It had to be said that the third-grade intermediate pills were treasures to those at the ultimate god-level. It was possible that even the Bloodshed Clan could not produce something like this.

Otherwise, there was no way that only one person was in the soul-penetrating level in the Bloodshed Clan.

Jack and the others continued to wait for around an hour. Only then did Nash, Kenneth and the others slowly begin to make their breakthroughs. Like Alejandro, they broke into the sixth-grade ultimate god-level.

“This is great. We have five sixth-grade ultimate god-level fighters and one fifthgrade. Besides, Jack is already in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level now. Haha. We don’t have many people, but our fighting power is pretty good! So long as their Elders don’t come in together and we don’t run into a huge troop of theirs, it shouldn’t be a problem!”

Kenneth spoke with an excited expression. They all quickly exited the cave.

“Father. It’s already the third day. Shouldn’t we do something now?”

At that moment, in the Lavigne family estate, Hendrick came before his father and looked at Kye with an earnest expression. “Father, please go and ask our fortress master to get everyone to discuss this. Two days and two nights have already passed. It’s evident that the fighting sounds from the forest have greatly decreased. Shouldn’t we make a move already? There’s probably not many left of the people who came in here. Besides, the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan must have suffered great losses!”

“What are you panicking about? The First Fortress Master did say that we would only move out after waiting for three or four days and he emphasized that we needed to wait for his signal. I’m only an Elder of one of the Nine Armies. I don’t want to be aggrieved like that either, but I have no choice!”

Kye smiled helplessly. “Let’s wait a bit more. If we don’t move out today, we’ll probably do so tomorrow. After all, the people from Pavilion Billow Cloud would probably have arrived already if we don’t move out by tomorrow!”

“We can’t wait any longer. If we do, Helena and her sister will probably be dead…”

Hendrick was in a state of panic yet he could not do anything.

“Sh*t. Why do you keep talking about Helena? How good-looking can the woman be to make you keep pining after her the whole day?”

Kye was furious and glared at his son. “You better cultivate yourself properly. Don’t you know that cultivators cannot be trapped by their feelings?”

Hendrick opened his mouth, but in the end, he just walked out, at a loss of what to say.

When he arrived at a pavilion outside the fortress, Arthur and the others were already waiting there.

“How did it go, Young Master Hendrick?”

Arthur immediately stepped forward and asked when he saw Hendrick coming.

Hendrick shook his head. “No good. My father told me to wait for the First Fortress Master’s signal. Oh, right. What about your grandfather? From your expression, it looks like it didn’t work either!”

Arthur nodded his head. “That’s right. No way about it though. My grandpa’s a stubborn goat and said that we should wait. Ah. Seriously. It’s already been three days. It’s obvious that the fighting noises in there are dying down. Why aren’t we making a move yet? Are they trying to stress us to death!”

“Then just wait. Why are you all so anxious? We’ve just waited for three days, and the sky has only just brightened. It’s possible that the First Fortress Master hasn’t even gotten up yet. Don’t worry. Maybe we can move out after waiting another two hours!”

Skye spoke in a dark tone, evidently displeased. “Besides, we’re only doing it for show even if the Nine Armies move out now. Did you really think that the First Fortress Master and the others would actually give their all? Even if we gave our all, Helena and the others would have been dead long ago. Such a long time has passed. Hehe. Their corpses have probably been eaten by the monsters already!”

Chapter 1803

“What nonsense are you spewing, Skye? I’ll punch you if another word like that comes out of your mouth!”

Arthur, who was already in a bad mood, was so furious that he clenched his fists when he heard Sky’s

words.

“Seriously. Why don’t you go and punch the fighters from the Bloodshed Clan? What kind of a man are you, thinking of punching a woman like me even when you didn’t kill your enemies? You’ve got the nerve!”

Skye also did not expect Arthur to say something like that to her. As she spoke, her eyes reddened, and she felt so aggrieved that she nearly cried.

“Ah. Stop fighting. What about this? Let’s go see the First Fortress Master right now and speak to him and see if it’ll work out?”

Hendrick suggested after thinking about it.

“That’s right. My grandfather and your father don’t dare to stand up on their own because they’re afraid of offending the First Fortress Master.”

Arthur’s eyes immediately brightened. “But we’re not afraid. We’re insignificant shrimps, so we’re not afraid of offending the First Fortress Master. Let’s go and ask him straight away. If he agrees, that’d be great!”

“Big Brother, Young Master Arthur, don’t be so rash!”

Ella could not watch on any longer. “You might as well be slapping the First Fortress Master in the face if you go and see him like this,” she tried to advise them. “Skye is right. It’s possible that the First Fortress Master has not even woken up yet. If all of you go and see him at this hour, he might not even take action today because he’s unhappy that all of you created a ruckus, even if he had intentions to save them. It would be an even greater loss if the First Fortress Master is displeased!”

Arthur and Hendrick exchanged a glance and shut their mouths up. They both knew that what Ella said,

made sense.

“Quick, look there! Lots of people have come! Looks like they’re from the Bloodshed Clan!”

Yet at this moment, a little fatty stood up and spoke, pointing to the front.

Everyone immediately looked over, and they all took a sharp intake of breath. Before them was indeed a group of people who were flying over. There were probably about ten thousand people.

“They’re really from the Bloodshed Clan. My God, we haven’t even created trouble for them, and they’ve come here on their own?”

Hendrick was stunned, and he huffed.

“Let’s go, let’s go! We need to quickly report this to everyone. Don’t tell me that the Bloodshed Clan is initiating a battle?”

Skye was frightened. If the Bloodshed Clan was intending to create trouble for them, then the Nine Armies would truly be defeated, as they were caught off guard.

“They came at the right time. Since they’re here, the First Fortress Master and the others have no way to play dumb. They can only grit their teeth and take action. Otherwise, how would they explain everything to the Pavilion Billow Cloud and the other forces from the Anti-Alliance Guard?”

Arthur was delighted and took off into the air. He flew to a bell tower before the fortress master and hit the ancient bell with all his strength.

“What’s going on? I didn’t give the orders to move out? Who dares to hit the bell!”

Just as the First Fortress Master was drinking tea languidly in his room, he immediately stood up when he heard the bell, speaking with a confused expression.

Chapter 1804

“First Fortress Master, First Fortress Master! Are we getting ready to head out?”

Just as Austin’s words rang out, a few Elders rushed in and looked at him.

His face darkened. “I did not give the orders. I don’t know who rang the gathering bell either! Let’s go and take a look!”

After he said that, Austin led everyone, flying toward a square.

The people from the other fortresses also took into the sky after they heard the bell, heading toward the largest square in front of the largest fortress.

“Looks like people are coming. It’s the Bloodshed Clan!”

Everyone saw what was going on after the First Fortress Master and the others arrived at the square

The First Fortress’s expression darkened after he saw this. He had intended to move out a little later and lead people to save others. This way, they would not have to make huge sacrifices, and the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud would arrive soon enough.

Yet before he could move out, he did not expect that the people from the Bloodshed Clan actually led people over on their own.

“First Fortress Master, why-why are they here? This Bloodshed Clan is seriously underestimating us. We didn’t even head into their territory, and yet they came to ours!”

An old man immediately told Austin.

“That’s right. They’re underestimating us!”

Austin flew upward in a flash, quickly standing in the air right before the other party.

“Haha. Long time no see, First Fortress Master Drago!”

Edward laughed and glared at Austin.

“What is the meaning of this, Edward? Why did you bring your people here? Don’t tell me you intend to invade the Nine Armies? I don’t think we’ve offended you lately!”

Austin also glared at the other man; his aura was just as fierce as the others.

“Why am I here?”

Edward was stunned. “First Fortress Master, you really know how to play dumb. You don’t know why I’m here? Hmph. You shielded those people who came from the abandoned world, helping them to kill disciples from our clan. And you dare ask me why I’m here?”

Austin frowned. “What are you saying? What people from the abandoned world? I have no idea of what you’re talking about. The people from the Nine Armies have been keeping to their territories lately. What do you mean they’re helping to kill disciples from your clan? I have no idea what you’re talking about!”

“I think we should just battle them, First Fortress Master. They’ve already arrived at our doorstep and aren’t giving us face at all. We shouldn’t wait around any longer!”

Arthur immediately yelled as he squeezed between the crowd.

Yet Austin shot him a fierce glare. “Shut up,” he said. “A youth like you has no place in this conversation!”

Chapter 1805

Arthur was speechless, but he could only shut his mouth.

“Hehe. Austin. You really know how to act in front of me. You’ve killed so many disciples from our clan, and you still have the guts to deny it?”

Edward chuckled. “If you’re a man, battle us upfront,” he said. “The Bloodshed Clan is not afraid to fight all of you. But you attacking us from the shadows is too much!”

Austin was speechless. “Master of the Bloodshed Clan, you’re seriously baselessly accusing me,” he explained hastily. “I really don’t know about the people from the abandoned world you’re talking about Unless people have invaded us again? How many have entered? If you didn’t say anything, we wouldn’t have known about this at all. Have any of your disciples died? No way. Were there many who have come in?”

Edward frowned when he heard this. He did not think that Austin would still play dumb around him at this moment.

The First Elder from the Bloodshed Clan could not hold it in any longer. He took a step forward and spoke in a vicious tone, “Austin, will you stop bl**dy pretending already? If not for your people, would our second-grade and third-grade ultimate god-level disciples die? Even the fifthgrades have died!”

Here, he paused and clenched his teeth before continuing, “If your people were not involved, would my own disciple, Simon, have died? Simon was a true genius among the geniuses in the clan, and he was at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level. From what I see, a fortress master has even entered the forest.”

“No, no. No way!”

Austin hurriedly spoke, “Take a look. All nine fortress masters of the Nine Armies are here. Even our Elders are here. We truly did not send any fighters out!”

“That’s right. We wouldn’t have known anything if you did not come here today, Master of the Bloodshed Clan. Oh, right. Are there many people who have come in? Why are there so many of you here? If it weren’t a lot of people, it wouldn’t be necessary for you to muster such an army!”

One of the fortress masters of the Nine Armies spoke after he thought about it, “But never mind that we did know about this matter. Since you said that people have come in from the abandoned world, we can’t just ignore it anymore!”

“That’s right. How many of them have entered, Master of the Bloodshed Clan? Although the Nine Armies have had no conflict with you before, we’re still the forces of the Anti-Alliance Guard, after all. Since we know about this, we must interfere in the matter!”

Although Austin did not want to say something like this right now, the situation had escalated too far. He could only steel himself and take action earlier.

Edward just wanted to lead a group of people to confront them. He even thought that Austin would not dare to fight them, but he did not think that the other man’s words would be so sharp.

He thought for a while, his contemplations rapidly spinning in his head. After a while, he actually smiled. “Haha. Seems like it was a misunderstanding! The people who invaded are from the abandoned world, but there aren’t many of them. Just a few dozen. We’ve almost killed them all here, but we lost many

fighters in the process. We even thought that you had sent people to help them kill us. Seems like it was a misunderstanding!”

“You-you’ve almost killed them all?”

Austin’s heart leaped in delight. It looked like Edward had the intention of giving him a way out to save his face. It was great since something this good was happening.

“Of course. The people from your Anti-Alliance Guard took away those few that came in last time, and as we were guarding the Alliance Guard, we did not look too hard into it. Since we found the few dozen people who came in this time, we’ve almost killed them all. I hope that you won’t interfere anymore!”

Edward smiled. After all, they would suffer great losses if they truly fought the Nine Armies. Furthermore, he did not bring many people over.

He intended to kill off everyone in the woods before coming over to face the people from the Nine Armies.

“Since there are only a few dozen people and you’ve already killed them, then-then forget about it. They were just unlucky then!”

Austin released a helpless sigh. Then he asked on purpose, “Oh, right. Just now you mentioned that the disciple of your First Elder has been killed too? And he was at the seventh-grade ultimate god-level? Is this true?”

Chapter 1806

“Of course it’s true. If there’s a slightest lie in my words, may the heavens strike me down with lightning!”

The First Elder folded his arms before his chest, huffing. “You just wait, Austin. Since you won’t admit to it, fine. We’ll go into the forest in a while and our people will capture the people you sent in there to help those outsiders. Then we’ll be bringing their heads back to confront all of you. If your people killed my disciple, hmph! The Bloodshed Clan will wipe you out!”

“Fine. Since you said so, I’ll be waiting!” Austin clenched his fist and said.

“Let’s go! Just wait on and regret everything. The people you sent in there will definitely die a miserable death. Not a single one of them will escape!”

In the end, Edward waved his hand and led everyone to leave.

“First Fortress Master, why didn’t we fight them just now? They already came right to our doorstep. They didn’t bring that many people with them, and most of their fighting force was in the forest. They would still take a few minutes even if they were to hurry over. We have so many people, and we have the advantage in numbers. This was a good opportunity!”

After they left, an old man could not help but step forward and spoke to the First Fortress Master, “We’re bound to fight them sooner or later. Otherwise, if the people from the Pavilion of Billow Cloud were to arrive, we have no way to explain ourselves!”

“What do you know? Sure, we’ll fight them sooner or later, but I must choose a later period to fight them. I’d be seeking death if we fight them now. I sensed the resonance coming from Edward just now. He seems to be even stronger than before. I might be killed if I fight him for an extended period. Then you’ll be left without a leader, and we might suffer even greater losses!”

Austin glared at the old man, then he sighed and said, “Ah. It’s fine if I die. I’m not afraid of dying. I’m just worried that the Nine Armies will suffer great losses if I die. I don’t want to see all of you dying as well!”

Arthur and Hendrick exchanged a glance, internally speechless. It was obvious that the First Fortress

Master was afraid of dying, yet he gave himself such an excuse, as though he were completely righteous. He was so shameless.

However, his words did make sense after thinking about it. Austin had cultivated himself for seventy or eighty years before breaking into the first-grade soulpenetrating level with great difficulty. The old man would naturally value his life. It would be a serious loss for him.

“So you’re saying that we’ll still be fighting them, but just not now?”

After thinking about it, Kye asked as he took a step forward.

“Of course we’re going to fight them. Let’s just wait for a little longer, until the afternoon at least. When the people from the Pavilion of Billow Cloud are about to arrive, we’ll stir a ruckus with them. Hmph. We’ll just use some excuse. Say that they overstepped their boundaries and lied to us—that there were than a dozen of those people who came from the abandoned world. That’ll work!”

Austin gave a cold smile, then he quickly frowned. “Besides, what they said about their seventh-grade and fifth-grade ultimate god-level disciples being killed is really strange. I wonder if they’re lying to us.”

Chapter 1807

After the fortress master of the Whittemore Fortress thought about it, he spoke, “Judging from how they were angry while confronting us, I don’t think it’s a lie. But if it isn’t a lie, which force is helping them? Unless other forces from the Anti-Alliance Guard have already arrived here? If that’s the case, it’ll be bad if we just stay here, right?”

Austin’s expression turned serious when he heard this. He remained silent for a while before shaking his head. “No way. I think it’s some powerful casual trainers who just so happened to be looking for treasure inside there. Then they also clashed with the people from the Bloodshed Clan and killed some of their most powerful fighters. It’s just that the people from the Bloodshed Clan misunderstood us, thinking that we secretly sent people. That’s why they came to us!”

“First Fortress Master, the fighting noises coming from the forest have indeed decreased. Only two days have passed. There were a lot of fighting noises before, but they’ve died down considerably. A lot of people from the abandoned world have probably died already, and only a few are left. If we don’t do anything, the Pavilion Billow Cloud will punish us if too many of them die!”

After Hendrick thought about it, he could not help but took a step forward. “I think it’s best if we had used the opportunity to attack the people from the Bloodshed Clan just now, who numbered over 10000 people. After all, we have many people. They still require time even if they get their troops to give backup!”

Austin’s face darkened. “We are well aware when we should launch an attack. No need for everyone to talk about it anymore,” he said coldly. “Let’s go back inside. However, to prevent anything from going wrong, let’s get some people to keep watch on this site. Then we can react appropriately. Also, let’s send a few people to keep watch on the mountains by the paths that the people of the Pavilion Billow Cloud would pass by to get here. After you see their people coming, immediately report it to me. Then it won’t be too late if we move out then!”

“After arranging everything, everyone quickly scattered

“Seriously. It’s so obvious that the First Fortress Master is afraid of dying!”

After everyone left, Arthur and the youths came to a pavilion outside the fortress again. Arthur was so furious that his face had turned red.

“That’s right. The only thing we can do now is to pray that the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud will come sooner. Otherwise, the people in the forest will soon be wiped out if this is dragged on!”

Ella felt helpless too. As the people of the Anti-Alliance Guard, she did not think that they would be so cowardly and weak.

“Oh, right. Say, which force would be so powerful to kill a fighter at the seventhgrade ultimate god-level

from the Bloodshed Clan. They could even kill disciples at the fifth-grade and other grades of the ultimate god-level. They really helped us to take a bit of revenge!”

After the little fatty thought about it, he could not help but murmur.

“Don’t tell me it’s really casual trainers? But that doesn’t sound right. If it’s just casual trainers from around here, they probably won’t dare to offend the Bloodshed Clan. After all, the casual trainers nearby know how powerful the Bloodshed Clan is. Why would they offend them?”

Hendrick also frowned. “But it’s definitely not people from the Nine Armies. We seriously did not send a single person out!”

“That’s weird. If it isn’t casual trainers or people from the Nine Armies, I don’t know who it is anymore. But regardless of who it was, it’s good that they helped us kill some people from the Bloodshed Clan!”

Arthur also looked toward the forest with a confused expression. In the end, he released a long exhale. “Ah. We couldn’t save Miss Helena, and her two sisters have probably died in there too. We’re so useless!”

Chapter 1808

Bang bang bang!

At this moment, the battling sound inside the forest was still piercing through the space. The only difference was that the sound was not as loud as before, and each battlefield had certainly scattered around and was quite far apart from each other.

“Young Master Jack, they look like they possess high martial level! Hehe! This time we can finally fight our heart to content!”

On top of a small hill, as Alejandro looked at the crowd that was engaging in the fights below, excitement washed over his face.

There, a group of disciples of the Bloodshed Clan was chasing after some men from the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles and small potatoes from some small and unknown

Clans.

There were several hundred of the disciples of Bloodshed Clan and among them, there were actually two fighters who had reached the seventh-grade ultimate god-level!

“Leave those two seventh-grade b*stards to me and you guys will wipe off the others!”

Jack’s mouth curved into a smile, a cunning one. Then with a flash, he flew into the battlefield together with his men.

“F*ck! We’re dead! We’re so dead!”

An old man screamed and shouted while trying to fend off his opponent; his eyes were full of despair.

“Damn it! It’s so f*cking hard to finally break through to the ultimate god-level, and what now? I can’t even enjoy it for a few days!”

An elder of the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles cursed aloud, feeling extremely depressed and distressed.

Swoosh!

However, just at this time, a terrifying sword aura flew from in front of him and brushed against him.

Boom!

A loud explosive sound rang out and in the next moment, a Bloodshed Clan disciple of the third-grade ultimate god-level, who was behind the old man, was blasted and killed.

The old man wheeled around and took in a sharp intake of breath. If that sword aura had been a little slower, the Bloodshed Clan disciple would have killed him already. He did not even notice when and how this Bloodshed Clan disciple came behind him. Now that he thought about it, chill was sent down his spine.

He immediately turned around and looked in the direction of the sword aura. Only then did he realized that Nash White had arrived. The sword aura was his doing.

Moreover, not only Nash was here, the young master and several elders of the White family, as well as Alejandro Cabello and the Saintess Melody of the Pavilion of Divinity were all here! They came to help!

“Wait, what? No way! Master White actually killed a third-grade ultimate godlevel fighter with just one blow?”

The old man swallowed his saliva hard and immediately noticed the Chi energy on Nash’s body.

It was fine if he did not pay attention to it, but after he noticed the chi energy on Nash, he was so scared that his eyes widened as large as saucers and his eyeballs almost fell off of the eye sockets!

Swoosh!

However, what he least expected was that Jack actually flew past him and went straight to the old man

who possessed the strength of the seventh-grade ultimate god-level.

“Brat, how dare you charge at me like that? Haha! You’re certainly looking for death!”

That old man did not expect somebody to rush out and charge at him at this time. When he saw Jack headed straight for him, he burst out in laughter.

However, his smile soon froze, and his eyes revealed a hint of a solemn look. “Something’s wrong! This brat’s martial level is definitely not low. And his speed? Why do I feel like he’s faster than I am?”

The old man did not dwell in the laughter for too long before he noticed something was off. He reacted quickly however Jack had already clenched his fist and wrapped it with a thick layer of Chi energy then blasting it toward the old man.

A sense of concern surged within the old man, he wanted to mobilize his Chi energy to counter Jack’s attack, but everything was too late. Jack was extremely fast. In the end, the old man could only quickly clench his fist and smash his against Jack’s, praying in his heart that Jack’s cultivation level must not be too high. Otherwise, his carelessness this time would probably cost him, his life.

Boom!

Chapter 1809

The two powerful fists collided with each other, and a loud explosive boom rang out. In the next second, the old man has blasted a few meters away and plopped hard onto the ground, spewing fresh blood before he inhaled his final breath.

“What the heck? No way! One punch and the seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter is dead? Just like that?”

The old man from the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles was shocked down to the soles of his shoes; his voice was trembling uncontrollably and his eyes refused to believe what he saw.

“No f*cking way! How is that possible at all?”

Another female disciple with seventhgrade ultimate god-level power was so scared that her face turned white instantly. She knew that inside this deep forest, there were a few powerful men who were killing their men. After all, they encountered the corpses of Bloodshed Clan disciples who were at the third-grade ultimate god-level but they took it lightly. Well, they were seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighters after all, why should they be afraid? They were considered as one of the top fighters among the Bloodshed Clan disciples.

However, to her surprise, this group of unknown people who came over actually had a few fighters with sixth-grade ultimate god-level power, and that brat could even finish off a seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter with only one punch!

“Run!”

At the thought of her senior-who was killed by Jack-having about the same combat prowess as she was, and yet he was no match for the other party at all, she shouted and yelled at those disciples of the Bloodshed Clan.

“Boom bang boom!

Unfortunately, Nash and the others—who possessed high martial level-killed the remaining disciples of the Bloodshed Clan in a few blows, while the other people from the Pavilion of Soaring Eagles and some small clans immediately counterattack when they realize that the tables had turned, not giving the Bloodshed Clan any chance to survive at all.

“Hahaha! Who makes you think that you still have the chance to escape now? It’s too late!”

When Jack saw the woman trying to escape, he smiled emotionlessly and transformed into a shadow and flickered, running straight after the female disciple.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The woman stretched her speed to the limit. In order to seek help from the other powerhouses of the Bloodshed Clan, she flew above the forest while shouting, “Help, help me!”

The woman was indeed fast, but Jack was faster! The distance between the two shortened and in no time, Jack could certainly catch up with her.

“Help!”

The woman turned her head around and looked; her heart was full of despair. Jack was extremely fast, and he was about to catch up with her.

Jack then flipped his palm, and his precious black longsword appeared in his grip. He injected his Chi energy into it and chopped out the sword aura with it.

“No! No!”

The woman cried out in fear; she felt a threat of death from Jack’s attack.

“Hey, b*stard! Stop it!”

An old man immediately rushed over after hearing the woman’s cry for help. He instantly shouted at Jack the moment he saw that Jack was chasing after the woman.

“Hahahaha! Oops, it’s too late!”

Jack laughed. In the next second, that attack of his had landed on the woman’s body, causing an explosion.

“You f*cking b*stard! You’re from the Nine Armies, aren’t you? I’ve been looking for you for a long time! You’re the one who killed Simon Greene, the disciple of the First Elder, right?”

The Fourth Elder looked at Jack furiously. This punk had the strength and power to behead a seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter, therefore, it was highly likely that Simon was killed by him as well.

At this time, Nash and the others had killed all the remaining Bloodshed Clan disciples and collected all the loot. Seeing that Jack had not returned to the group, they flew over to see what had happened.

“Tsk tsk! You guys are quite strong, aren’t you? There are quite a few sixth-grade fighters here, huh? What a surprise!

The Fourth Elder eyed Nash and the others, a cold smile crept onto his face. “If I have guessed it correctly, you all must be from the Nine Armies! Right?”

Chapter 1810

“Jack, it’s bad! This wrinkly old man is a ninth-grade ultimate god-level fighter!”

Nash studied the old man across him carefully, and worries immediately surged through his veins once he noticed the martial level of the old man. It looked like they had finally run into a real powerhouse of the Bloodshed Clan.

“Master White, it’ll be alright. Although Jack’s martial level is not as high as the old man’s, we all know that his combat prowess is at another level. Don’t worry, this wrinkly old man might not be his opponent

at all!”

Alejandro, on the other hand, laughed nonchalantly. “After all, Jack has broken into multiple grades in the ultimate god level in one shot!” He added.

Nash then thought of Jack’s ability to kill a seventh-grade ultimate god-level fighter by himself when he was merely a fourthgrade ultimate god-level fighter. He released a huge sigh of relief; the heavy boulder in his heart was lifted away. “You’re right. It’s my first time encountering such a high martial level, thus I was slightly taken aback.”

“You don’t have to worry for me and please leave everything to me. Dad, please inform others of our plans and arrangements as well as the situation here. Ask the crowd to leave this place quickly, and wait for me in the woods down below. I have to kill this old man to let the Bloodshed Clan know that we’re not weak nor a scaredy-cat! I’ll let them know that coming after us will be the worst decision they’ve ever made!”

Jack snorted coldly. His deadly and emotionless eyes were fixated on the old man before him.

Although the old man’s martial level was so much higher than his, Jack was still confident in ending this wrinkly old man’s life!

“Brat, you’re a big talker, aren’t you?”

The corners of the Fourth Elder’s mouth twitched slightly for seconds before saying, “Do you think I can’t see through which martial level you’re at right now? I knew the moment you made your move just now! You’re merely a seventh-grade inutile punk! And yet you talked big, wanting to kill me? A ninth-grade god? Dream on!”

“Wait!” The old man thought of something and his forehead immediately knitted together. “No…hold on. I remember there’s no such young elite fighter in the Nine Armies! And what did you say just now? Going after you is the stupidest move ever? Brat, who the hell are you?”

Jack shrugged his shoulders and answered unconcernedly, “It doesn’t matter who I am. What matters the most is that I’m about to send you to hell. Oh right. If your master, the Master of Bloodsh*t Clan knows that one of his elite elders was also killed by me, I’m sure that his facial expression would be fun to watch!”

Jack stood above the woods and he could be easily spotted by the enemy, however, Jack was not afraid at all! Because this spot was far from the periphery of the forest, and this implied that the distance between where he was and the location he asked Selena and the others to gather was shorter!

Nash and the others flew into the woods quickly.

“Hahaha! Brat, what an arrogant attitude you have!”

The Fourth Elder laughed sinisterly. With his fist clenched, a thick layer of Chi energy emerged out of his fist; within a second, he appeared in front of Jack and blasted a fist at him!

“Humph!”

Facing such a swift attack from the old man, Jack also tightened his fist and quickly mobilized Chi toward it. Less than half a second, a thick layer of Chi energy wrapped his fist, and he blasted head-on with the old man’s fist.

Boom!

A huge explosion sounded, and to the shock of the Fourth Elder, the overwhelmingly powerful force from Jack’s fist blew him a few meters away! He only managed to hold Jack’s fist for merely two seconds!

“What the heck? Impossible!”

Chapter 1811

The Fourth Elder repeatedly shook his head; his eyes were flooded with shocks and disbeliefs. How could he have imagined that a seventh-grade ultimate god level fighter could actually blast a ninth-grade fighter away with merely one punch? This brat before him was freaking two grades lower than he was! Two f*cking grades of cultivation! How could that brat actually blast him away, just like that?

“Not bad!”

Jack looked at his fist indifferently. He seemed to be quite satisfied with his current strength. When he was at the fourth-grade ultimate god level, he was able to kill a seventh-grade fighter, and at that time, his combat prowess was comparable to an eighthgrade ultimate god level fighter! Now he had increased his martial level by three threes at once, and he was able to overpower a ninth-grade fighter. This made Jack felt that perhaps, he might be able to fight against a first-grade soul-penetrating level fighter as well.

“You this nasty brat! You think you can win against me just because you have more strength? Don’t forget, my cultivation level is higher and better than yours! My chi energy is thicker and richer than yours, and I’m an elder of the Bloodshed Clan! My martial arts training would be more powerful and robust than yours!”

Molten anger rolled through the Fourth Elder as he saw the smug look on Jack’s face. He was so furious that his face turned blue in a second. He then mobilized his chi energy and formed a gigantic aura tiger.

The huge aura tiger was dozens feet tall and it looked powerful and almighty

Such a large aura tiger was hardly unnoticeable. Hence, some disciples of the Bloodshed Clan witnessed this huge tiger from a distance far outside the forest.

“Look! Over there! That aura tiger looks like our Fourth Elder’s martial technique!”

One of the disciples flew upwards and exclaimed in excitement. They all knew that this martial skill of the Fourth Elder was extremely powerful, and they could hardly see him casting it. They were truly fortunate to witness such a scene from afar today, although it was far far away; it was very eye opening for them.

“Wow! Who’s the other party that could actually force our Fourth Elder to perform this technique?”

After hearing the disciple’s exclamation, the First Elder as well as Edward Gray immediately flew upwards to affirm the saying.

However, because the distance was too far away, they could not see who the Fourth Elder was fighting with. It was also because of the distance, that gigantic aura tiger looked like the size of a human thumb.

“Hmmm… It looks like the Fourth Elder has run into some elite fighter of the Nine Armies today, and that elite fighter should be at least at the seventh -grade of ultimate god realm. Otherwise, the Fourth Elder would not have used this technique. This technique is a third-grade elementary level martial skill!”

The First Elder spoked gently and a calm smile hung over his face.

The Second Elder, however, disagreed. “I don’t think so. If the opponent is only a seventh-grade ultimate god level fighter, is it necessary for the Fourth Elder to perform such a strong martial skill? Wouldn’t it be like breaking a fly upon a wheel? Using such a martial skill would simply be a waste of chi energy!”

“Hahaha! You’re right, Second Elder. But, no matter who the opponent is, he or she would certainly be a dead meat now that the Fourth Elder is using this skill!”

Edward laughed aloud along with the First Elder.

However, his laughter soon faded. From where he was at right now, he could see two colossal dragon-

like fists appear in the air over the forest. Those fists were gigantic and not the slightest bit smaller than the huge aura tiger! They were so huge that even those who were far away from the scene could clearly see the two dragonshaped fists.

“What the hell? Isn’t this a thirdgrade intermediate level martial technique, the Twin Dragons Fist?”

The Second Elder gasped the moment he saw the fists. “What the f*ck happened? There aren’t any people who can perform this skill! And who is this person who can perform this martial skill to such an extent? Is the Fourth Elder fighting with a strong person from our clan?”

The First Elder and others were dumbfounded at the newly witnessed scene; they were so confused. Such a strong fighter would not present in the forest—they were always outside the forest. So who was fighting with the Fourth Elder right here right now?

“The Twin Dragons Fist! You acquired this skill? How is that possible?”

While the First Elder and the Head of the Bloodshed Clan were confused about the situation, the Fourth Elder was equally astonished at this very moment. He could not have possibly expected that this brat before him actually knew and acquired the Bloodshed Clan’s martial skill! Moreover, this freaking Twin Dragon Fist was one of the most difficult techniques that most of them desired to acquire!

“Heh! It’s simple. I killed your people and retrieved martial tome from the martial ring, and naturally, I’d be able to learn and acquire this martial skill!”

Jack chuckled nonchalantly. His unperturbed tone and expression had shocked the Fourth Elder to the extreme.

According to what Jack had said, would that not mean that he only learned and practiced this technique not long ago? This brat was definitely a genius among the geniuses!

“Brat, who the hell are you? There is absolutely no way that there is such a genius in the Nine Armies!”

The Fourth Elder gritted his teeth and stared at Jack with his eyes full of malice and hatred. If this brat continued to grow, none of them would be able to defeat him!

“You wouldn’t believe me even if I told you that I’m from the abandoned world!”

Jack smiled bitterly, and then with a tingle in his mind, the two huge dragon -shaped fists were cast out.

Sensing the terrifying fluctuations of Chi energy in Jack’s attack, the Fourth Elder was in a complete state of shock. He then turned serious and somewhat determined, gritting his teeth and injecting more Chi energy into his huge aura tiger. Only then did he make the giant tiger charge out toward Jack.

Roar!

The giant tiger let out a terrifying tiger roar as it charged. The startling roar pierced through the forest resounded into the sky

Roar!

On the other hand, Jack’s Twin Dragons Fist also emitted the sound of a dragon’s roar. The battle scene resembled an epic fight between a dragon and a tiger!

Boom!

The two huge fists aura instantly crashed onto the gigantic aura tiger. A white ray of light flashed the moment the two Chi attacks collided, blinding the witnesses.

“No way! Our Fourth Elder is no match for the other party? Who the heck is he? That person is definitely not from my clan. The strong fighters in my clan are all here and we definitely will not strike at the Fourth Elder!”

Noticing that the huge fists had gradually gained the upper hand in the battle, the First Elder started sweating in fear.

The Second Elder, on the other hand, expressed his concerns, “First Elder, ‘ m afraid that the one who is currently in the battle with the Fourth Elder is also the one who killed your disciple, Simon. Is that person from the Nine Armies? But, that’s not possible either! We know all the strong people in the Nine Armies and they were in their fortresses just now!”

“Motherf*cker! I must go over and take a good look!”

Rage flowed through the First Elder like lava. In a flash, he flew straight to the battlefield.

“They’re too far from us, First Elder! It ‘s too late to go there now!”

The Second Elder, Edward, and the others flew into the sky as well, and when they saw that the First Elder headed straight to the battlefield without looking back, they could not do anything else but chase after him.

Boom!

The huge ferocious tiger was soon blown into pieces, however, the two colossal dragon fists had only become slightly transparent and dull. Although its Chi energy was reduced by a lot, it was still very solid and powerful, carrying a lot of Chi energy. The dragon fists went straight to the Fourth Elder without mercy.

“F*ck! No way! It can’t be…”

Watching the two huge fists coming at him ceaselessly, the Fourth Elder screamed in despair, his legs were wobbly with fear and his hands were cold and clammy. Finally, in his horrified eyes, the two huge dragon fists landed on his body, blowing him away and he crashed onto the ground, hard. The scene was a bloody mess and one could hardly recognize the Fourth Elder anymore.

Jack flickered, flew down, and took off his martial ring, then quickly gilded toward Nash and the others. “Go! We ve to leave this place now! The commotion is too big, and I’m afraid that some other strong fighters would come here, including the Master of the Bloodshed Clan! I’m afraid that all of those powerhouses will come!”

Chapter 1813

“Young Master Jack, you really killed that old man in the ninth-grade ultimate god-level?” Melody looked at Jack with expectations written all over her face.

Nash and the others also looked at Jack as they really wanted to know the ending

After all, that was one of the Bloodshed Clan’s elders and could be considered one of the Bloodshed Clan’s top powers.

Jack nodded. “Yes, I killed him. I’m not afraid now even if I have to fight the Bloodshed Clan’s pavilion master as I might be able to kill him. However, it would not work if too many of their people come over. I won’t be able to protect you guys. Come on, let’s leave now!”

Jack quickly led those people away from the place after he finished speaking

Around ten minutes after they left, around a dozen people appeared at the place. These people were either the elders of the patronums of the Bloodshed Clan. All of them were looking at the body on the ground with a sad and indignant look on their faces.

“Number four!” The First Elder flew down and directly knelt in front of the Fourth Elder. “Number four! Why… Why did you die such a horrible death?! Number four, who was the one that killed you? I will definitely avenge you! We shall definitely avenge you!” The Fourth Elder had a good relationship with the First Elder but no matter how the First Elder called out to him, the Fourth Elder was dead and was no longer breathing.

“Who was that? Could it really be somebody from the Nine Armies who’s at the ninth-grade ultimate godlevel?” Edward had a cold expression on his face and he felt extremely bad.

“Pavilion master, take a look over here. There are two other disciples in the seventh-grade ultimate god-level here and many other disciples in the ultimate god-level have died here!” Finally, one of their patronums discovered a lot of Bloodshed Clan disciples’ bodies on the other side.

Edward and the others immediately flew over to take a look. They were so angry that their mouths were trembling.

“I finally understand! I finally recall that there’s a person and he’s definitely the one who did this!” At this moment, the Second Elder yelled loudly as he seemed to have remembered something.

“Who?” Edward and the others immediately looked over to Second Elder with a puzzling look on their faces.

“The First Fortress Master’s brother. Have you guys forgotten that he returned not long ago? He said that he was wounded when he went to a place to search for treasures. He has been bedridden throughout this period of time because he was suffering from some weird poison. We haven’t seen this person until today and I think it must be him. As for what he said about being wounded and poisoned by some weird poison, it must be fake or he has recovered since a long time ago!” The Second Elder said with an expression on his face like he understood everything.

“F*ck! It must be him. Let’s go, pavilion master. Shall we attack the Nine Armies together?” The First Elder tightened his fists and said fiercely.

“However, there are still some fighting noises inside this forest. It looks like quite a number of people who came from the abandoned world haven’t been completely killed yet.” Edward started frowning at this moment. Although he was also very sad about the Fourth Elder’s death, he felt that it was too reckless to directly attack the Nine Armies now.

The most crucial point was that the Nine Armies were not weak. They were not afraid of those people in the past but quite a number of their masters have died. If they started a fight with the Nine Armies now, they would suffer huge losses even if they won.

“Pavilion master, those are people with low fighting prowess. On top of that, lesser fighting noises can be heard after we’ve killed them these two to three days. What does that represent? It means that almost all the people who entered this area have died. They do not threaten us as much as the Nine Armies do! Besides that, our disciples will be unconvinced if we do not avenge the Fourth Elder!” The First elder said angrily. He felt extremely bad that his disciple and best friend had died.

Chapter 1814

Edward was placed in a difficult situation when the First Elder said this. He had to admit that the Nine Armies was definitely a thorn in their flesh and they had wanted to uproot this force for a long time.

Previously, they planned to directly kill these people who entered from the abandoned world and the Nine Armies would definitely join the fight as they were members of the Anti-Alliance Guard. They would definitely do it even if it was just for show.

They had already secretly notified another force that was a member of the Alliance Guard to come over and assist them. This would ensure that they would be able to get rid of the Nine Armies easily.

By looking at the time, he estimated that the people of the Sword King Clan were arriving soon and he wanted to wait for them. However, the First Elder and other members were furious because of the Fourth Elder’s death. It looked like he did not have a choice apart from attacking the Nine Armies.

“That can work but we need to at least find an excuse? It definitely will not work if we don’t have any reason to do that!” Edward thought about it and said with a frown on his face. “After all, we had just

visited them and they did not acknowledge that they sent people over to help those who entered the area. I even gave them an ultimatum saying that I will kill those people they sent over and bring the skulls over to them. It would make sense if we go to them after we manage to capture or kill their people. It doesn't make sense if we directly go over now to cause them trouble!"

The First Elder immediately replied, "What sort of proof do we need? Us, the Alliance Guard, and the Anti-Alliance Guard have always been opposing forces. On top of that, we don't come to this treasure-filled forest often and search for precious items here because the Nine Armies is here. All of this is just so that we don't get into fights with them. This is a great opportunity to get rid of them!"

The Second Elder also said, "That's right, pavilion master. Don't their refusal to admit to things show that they are afraid of us? Haha… You are so much stronger than their First Fortress Master now. If we go over now and kill their First Fortress Master, we would have defeated them, in terms of power. Why would we need any excuses? We can just say that we saw their people kill quite a number of our people but we failed to capture them!"

Edward remained silent for a couple of seconds before he finally nodded. "Alright, let's just do that!"

After he finished speaking, the group of them quickly flew out of the forest and sent a flare to the sky.

"What's happening? Why are they suddenly gathering us?" Many of the Bloodshed Clan disciples were puzzled when they saw the flare as they were still fighting. However, they still flew up to the sky before directly heading out of the forest.

"Are they retreating?" Many people who were almost killed were slightly relaxed when they saw that the Bloodshed Clan disciples had retreated.

"I wonder how Jack and the others are?" At this moment, many people had gathered on one of the mountain tops and all of them were training in a sitting position.

Many people had broken through after spending several days in training. Some of them who were in the

peak stage of the true god-level previously had also successfully broken through into the first-grade ultimate god-level after they obtained the martial art technique.

“Everything should be fine if there aren’t any accidents, they should have broken through again by now!” Helena thought about it and said while smiling.

“They must have refined the third-grade intermediate pills if they managed to break through again and their fighting prowess must have increased greatly, especially Jack. Based on his combat power… Tsk, tsk… It’s hard to imagine how he will be!” Daniella’s heart was jubilant when she mentioned Jack. She was in a great mood for the past two days because Jack hugged her when they said their goodbyes.

Chapter 1815

“That’s right! We’ve never seen such a talented genius!” Many people started laughing

“That’s for sure as this is my eldest brother!” Randall also had a proud expression on his face as he said happily. “I’ve finally broken through into the firstgrade ultimate god-level. Unfortunately, it’s really too difficult to catch up with my brother. I think it’s impossible during this lifetime!”

“That’s right! If Young Master Jack hadn’t given us the martial art technique, how would we be able to break through into the first-grade ultimate god-level!” Another elder of the Lancaster family said happily. His lifespan after breaking through into the first-grade ultimate god-level has increased by 200 years. Such an increase in lifespan was definitely exciting for an old man like him, who was already in his seventies.

Apart from that, he looked so much younger after he broke through.

“If you guys want to repay their kindness, fight with your life in the battle later on. Jack and the others are buying us more time in order for us to break through faster with the martial enhancement resources we obtained. When the time comes, I’m sure that we can’t escape from a great battle and we have no idea how many members of the Bloodshed Clan are there. Sigh… There are only around 100 thousand of us here. More than half of the 400 thousand people have died!”

One of the old men started smiling bitterly. “There should be some of our people in the forest below but there isn’t many.”

“I believe more people from the seas and the Skies Pavilion have died. Young Master Jack and the others did not extend their help to these people. On our way here, we saw many bodies of the Hall of Divine Royal’s disciples. The Hall of Divine Royal and the Skies Pavilion can be considered destroyed!” Pavilion Master Harry of the Pavilion of Gods and Kings said after he smiled bitterly. “However, this forest is quite big. I’m sure there are around ten thousand of their people who are still alive.”

“Those who can stay alive are those who are lucky or extremely talented. This is how the world is. There should be around 600 thousand of our people and those from the seas that entered this area. Now, there must be less than 200 thousand people alive with both forces combined!” One of the secondclass aristocratic family masters also sighed. He took a look at his family and only two thousand people were left out of the ten thousand people who came in. Many of their family members’ bodies lay in this forest.

“We have to thank Young Master Jack for that. Without them, more of us would be dead by now. Previously, everybody was killing one another in order to obtain precious treasures. If Young Master Jack did not notify us, we would still be clueless that there’s a force known as the Alliance Guard in this area. And by now, they would have wanted to kill us, the people who entered this area!” The pavilion master of the Pavilion of Divinity, Aureole, also sighed with extreme lament.

“Hey, the fighting noises seemed to have stopped. The Bloodshed Clan disciples seemed to have flown out of the forest!” Venus looked towards the direction of the outside of the forest and said with a surprised expression on her face.

Those condensed figures were obviously the Bloodshed Clan disciples.

“Could it be that they don’t plan to continue hunting us because they think that not many of us are left?” Harry was delighted. “This is great. What a wise choice Jack made by asking us to wait here. They heard that there weren’t any fighting noises and after they searched for a while, they let us go as they thought that not many of us were left!”

Chapter 1816

“This is great! Are they really letting us go?” A third-class aristocratic family master was so excited that his eyes were filled with tears. They were no longer hunted by the Bloodshed Clan.

Although Jack and the others broke through very quickly, so many of them had died and not many people were left. They were still no match for the Bloodshed Clan’s opponent despite having an increase of members in the First-grade ultimate god level.

Apart from that, no matter how high Jack and the others’ fighting prowess was, they would never rival the Bloodshed Clan Masters.

It was why they felt like they would die if the battle continued, and surviving was no easy feat.

However, they never expected that the Bloodshed Clan members would retreat at this moment.

“This is weird. Why did all of them retreat?” Ethan also frowned, puzzled at what had happened.

Sam thought about it and said, “No matter what it is, it’s a good thing now that they’ve retreated. It’ll be afternoon soon, and they won’t resume their assault at night if we manage to get through the afternoon. Anyway, everybody should quickly increase their fighting prowess if possible. Who knows if they’ll give up or resume their attack after their pause?”

Those who were initially relieved faltered at the thought. It was true that they would be in quite the predicament if the Bloodshed Clan members merely retreated for a rest.

“Sigh… Angus and the others truly are vexing. Didn’t they promise that they’ll go back to plead on our behalf to their people and bring the Nine Armies here to help us? Are they still members of the Alliance Guard? Why aren’t there any movements until now?!” growled a middle-aged man from the Cabello family, utterly displeased.

Helena seemed to be dismal, too. “Maybe the Bloodshed Clan is too strong. I think we can’t place all our hopes on others.”

“However, if the people of the Nine Armies don’t help us, we won’t have hopes of surviving!” An old man from one of the second-class aristocratic families had a helpless expression on his face. “The Bloodshed Clan don’t have as many people as us, and many of them must’ve died during the battle in the forest, but they have more masters in the ultimate god level. By then, we’re no match for them. Without the help of the Nine Armies, how can we fight them? It’s like we’re bound to be defeated!”

All of a sudden, one of the White family’s members exclaimed, “Look! Look! Those people from the Bloodshed Clan seem to be flying toward the direction of the Nine Armies!

“This is great! Are they going to attack the Nine Armies? Everyone, let’s sneak out of the forest from the side and leave this accursed place. By then, only the boundless sky will be our limit. If everybody leaves separately, I believe that some of us will survive!” suggested a bald man excitedly.

However, another man said, “No way. We’re not very familiar with the situation in this area, and wouldn’t it be more difficult for us to stay alive if we break into the territory of the Alliance Guard?”

One of the Wood family’s elders said, “We can’t leave now no matter what; we need to stay and wait for Young Master Jack and the others. Without them, we would’ve died a long time ago. How can we leave just like that? On top of that, Young Master Jack is a third-grade alchemist, and we’ll only survive if we follow him. We may even grow stronger!”

Chapter 1817

“That’s right. You guys can leave now if you plan to do so, and we welcome those who want to stay, but if you choose to leave now, don’t blame our White family if we don’t help you out when you run into the Bloodshed Clan later on,” Yolanda chimed in. “Young Master Jack has his own plans for asking us to wait here. If you guys want to leave now, we won’t stop you!”

“That’s right!” joined another elder of the White family. “Elder Yolanda is correct. If any of you plan to leave now, feel free to do so. Frankly speaking, having too many of us isn’t a great thing, and some people might burden us. It’ll be much easier for us to act with lesser people!”

Everybody lowered their heads, no one daring to leave after what they had said.

They were no fools. Without the help of Jack and the others, it would be difficult for them to survive, even if they left the area. On top of that, no one knew if members of the Bloodshed Clan dispatched a few disciples to guard the forest’s perimeters.

Noticing how no one was insisting anymore, Helena walked forward and smilingly said, “We, the Cabello family are definitely staying. There has to be a reason as to why the people of the Bloodshed Clan suddenly retreated. What if they stationed a few of them guarding the forest’s perimeters while waiting for us to go out? They’re no fools, after all.”

At this moment, Jack and the others finally came into view and returned at last.

“Oh, how wonderful! Jack and the others have returned!” Venus was rather elated to see them returning. They had been worried about Jack and his companions, seeing as her father was traveling with him. It was, of course, a treacherous journey as they had to battle with masters of the Bloodshed Clan to buy the others some time.

“This is great! Everybody is safe!” Daniella smiled delightfully as well.

Selena approached them and asked caringly, “Honey, how are you? How’s your fighting prowess now? You aren’t wounded, are you?”

“Don’t worry! I’m not wounded, and everything is well. I’m already in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level now, and I can cultivate third-grade intermediate pills!” Jack smiled and held Selena’s hand.

Selena blushed when he held her hand in public. She rolled her eyes at Jack shyly before she pulled back her hand. “It’s good that nothing happened to you. We’ve been so worried for these past couple of days, worried that you’d run into masters of the Bloodshed clan.”

“Oh my god, a Seventh-grade ultimate god level!”

“He even knows how to cultivate thirdgrade intermediate pills?! How amazing!”

“That’s right, Young Master Jack truly is a genius among geniuses! Not only is he strong in terms of fighting prowess, but he’s also incredibly capable in terms of cultivating pills. It looks like it won’t trouble him in cultivating a fourth-grade pill and lifting the young madam’s spell!”

Everyone else was shocked at Jack’s claim. His breakthrough truly was horrifying.

“Haha… Young Master Jack truly is strong. What do you mean, we didn’t bump into any masters from the Bloodshed Clan? We met an elder from the Bloodshed Clan who was in the Ninth-grade ultimate god level, but Young Master Jack ended him then and there!” Kenneth started laughing loudly. “On top of that, all of us had broken through into the Sixth-grade ultimate god level because of Jack. Also, the Pavilion of Divinity’s sacred lady is in the Fifth-grade ultimate god level!”

Chapter 1818

“How’s this possible? Young Master Jack slew one of the Bloodshed Clan’s elders? Does that mean that Young Master Jack is capable of fighting their pavilion master?” Some of the members of the reclusive families were extremely shocked when they heard of this battle record.

“This is great! We have several masters with us now. Together with the people who have broken through into the First-grade and Second-grade ultimate god level here, we’re a pretty solid team members of the Bloodshed Clan won’t get to torment us so easily!” Helena grinned happily. Everyone was relieved and assured, knowing some of them had greater fighting prowess and that Jack managed to kill one of the Bloodshed Clan’s elders.

“Goodness. Our family master… Our family master is also in the Sixth-grade ultimate god level?” The entire Cabello family was elated with the knowledge, and several old men even trembled as they spoke. They never expected their family master, Alejandro Cabello, to have broken through into the Sixth-grade ultimate god level.

“Yes, and it’s thanks to Jack. If he didn’t give me pills, I wouldn’t have broken through so quickly! If we place any of such pills outside, it’ll stir a battle among masters for sure!” Alejandro nodded, and from the way he looked at Jack, he had obviously grown fond of him. If they were not caught in such an intricate situation and everyone had settled, seeing as they just entered the forest, he wanted Jack to immediately marry his daughter.

Meanwhile, one of the Pavilion of Divinity’s elders walked toward Melody excitedly and took her hand, asking, “Sacred lady, have… Have you truly broken through into the Fifth-grade ultimate god level?”

The Pavilion of Divinity’s disciples looked at her with high hopes, to which Melody smiled faintly and nodded. “Yes, and this is all because of Young Master Jack. Not only did he rescue us, but he even gave me a pill,

Wa and it increased my fighting prowess significantly. I don’t know how to repay his kindness.”

Unexpectedly, Aureole walked forward at this moment and yelled loudly, “Disciples and elders of the Pavilion of Divinity, gather and hear me!”

Everybody looked at Aureole, puzzled at what was happening.

Aureole smiled indifferently as she successfully had everyone’s attention. “Everybody, listen carefully. From today onward, I shall no longer be the Pavilion of Divinity’s pavilion master, and I’ll now appoint Melody Lawson, our sacred lady, as the pavilion master. She’ll be your pavilion master from this moment onward!”

“Pavilion master, I… I won’t accept this!” Melody hastily refuted as she came forward. “Pavilion master,

you've already broken through into the ultimate god level, and you have another hundred years ahead of you. If you breakthrough into the soul-penetrating level in the future, you'll have even more years ahead of you, so there's no need for you to pass the position of pavilion master to me right now!"

Of course, Aureole was already at an old age, and everybody had expected she would pass the position of pavilion master to Melody within a couple of years.

However, things have changed as she had already broken through into the ultimate god level and had more years ahead of her. Aureole could surely continue to be the pavilion master, but nobody expected she would step down at that moment.

Aureole shook her head, a small smile on her face as she insisted, "The pavilion master should be someone capable. You are young, talented, and in the Fifth-grade ultimate god level now. I've wanted to pass the position of pavilion master to you for a long time, but I didn't do so because your fighting prowess wasn't high enough and you weren't strong enough. The time has come, Melody, and you cannot refuse me this time. Do you understand?"

Chapter 1819

Aureole then called on the members of the Pavilion of Divinity, "Bow down to your new pavilion master!"

Led by an elder, the entire Pavilion of Divinity saluted thunderously, "Best wishes, new pavilion master, for ascending to the position!"

Aureole, meanwhile, took out her pavilion master token and passed it to Melody.

"Alright. If that's the case, I'll take up the mantle of pavilion master." Melody finally nodded and took the token. "Please rise, everyone. We just need to train well together in the future. Although this area is a good place to train, everyone is well aware that there are forces in the Alliance Guard who are purposely pinpointing toward us, and we might come face-to-face with more dangers in the future. Regardless, no matter how many people are left in our pavilion, I hope that everyone will stay united and work together!"

Aureole smiled in satisfaction when everyone stood up. “Pavilion Master Melody, you are now the pavilion master, no longer the sacred lady of our pavilion. You can take off your veil now.”

Melody’s face was tinted in pink in embarrassment, though she nodded before gently taking off the veil she had worn for many years.

Many from other families had been looking forward to seeing the sacred lady’s true appearance, hence all of them had their eyes fixated on that beauty standing up ahead.

The veil was slowly lifted, and an almost perfect face came into view. She was so beautiful that many people were floored in awe.

The beauty’s shy smile was utterly mesmerizing, but she only gave others a feeling of holiness and purity. Others could barely have blasphemous thoughts of her.

“What a beauty!” Even Daniella could not help but smile. This beauty was comparable to the three of them sisters. More importantly, her smile was such a pure one, one they could never have.

Growing shy as everyone gawked at her, Melody immediately changed the subject, “Young Master Jack, what should we do next? The Bloodshed Clan people seemed to have left, no? When we were standing on this mountaintop just now, we noticed that those people were flying out of the forest toward the direction of the Nine Armies. We don’t know if they’ve left gatherings of men outside the forest. Would they be conning us?”

Jack smiled indifferently and looked at the forest underneath them before he said, “It looks like most of them had exited the forest. Even though there might be people left outside the forest, I don’t think there are a lot of them. We’ll be able to handle those people, at least.”

One of the family masters from a secondclass aristocratic family thought about it before asking Jack, “If that’s the case, Young Master Jack, shall we lead our people and rush out of the forest? Apart from the

people who came from the seas, there shouldn't be a large number of people who came in with us in the forest underneath, right? We can just ignore those people as almost all of them are dead. There are a couple hundred thousand of us here, and if we fly out from the forest speedily, we'll get to leave this place!"

Jack frowned as he silently deliberated everything before then responding, "We won't do anything right now. Let's take a look and see what they plan to do after heading toward the Nine Armies. This forest is a place full of treasures, and I think the Bloodshed Clan had been longing to take over this place for a very long time."

Chapter 1820

"They've been planning this for a long time?" Nash had a small frown when he heard this. "Do you mean that the Bloodshed Clan are now prepared to attack the Nine Armies?"

Jack nodded. "I think that's highly likely to happen. They must've killed many of our people throughout these past couple of days as it doesn't sound like battles are happening often now. However, they have no idea that we've rescued people ahead of them and have been informing people along the way to hide at this place."

The elder from the second-class aristocratic family who spoke previously was even happier when he heard this. He excitedly spoke, "How wonderful! This is good, Young Master Jack. If they attack the Nine Armies, we'll use this opportunity to escape!"

A few others nodded excitedly at the possible opportunity.

Unexpectedly, Jack's expression turned rigid as he began to question the man, "If that's the case, where should we run off to? Based on my understanding, the Alliance Guard's forces would surely send their pavilions or others to hunt us down if they knew that so many of us had entered this area. On top of that, Ella Lavigne, whom I met earlier, told me that this area isn't as big as our Cathysia."

"It's not as big as Cathysia?" The old man's facial expression faltered when he heard this. He initially thought that this was an independent space, relatively large enough. They only needed to find a

secluded space and hide after escaping from the forest, and things would slowly come to pass afterward.

From the looks of things, however, it did not seem to be that easy.

“Then, what should we do if we’re not going to leave with such a great opportunity? Are we going to start a fight with them?” Alejandro thought about it and looked at Jack, visibly puzzled.

Jack actually nodded. “Yes, we can fight them if a battle is initiated. Don’t any of you hate the Bloodshed Clan, seeing as they killed so many of our people? Don’t you guys think of having revenge? They dare attack the Nine Armies, and this means that they’re quite confident. Based on what I know, they only have one master who is in the First-grade soul-penetrating level. The Bloodshed Clan is stronger than the Nine Armies, but not that far of a reach.”

Jack paused momentarily before he added, “Although they killed lots of our people, we also killed lots of theirs, so they also suffered a huge loss. Going into a fight with the Nine Armies at this moment… Haha… In fact, both sides will suffer losses. They never expected that so many of us are left inside the forest here. If we go over and help the Nine Armies by then, we’ ll surely win!”

Nash also nodded in satisfaction after he heard that. “The Nine Armies must’ve known of what’s happening in the forest-they can’t possibly not know. Helena had mentioned that several of their younger people said that they’d go back and inform their First Fortress Master. This means that they know about the situation but did nothing. This means that they’re also afraid of the Bloodshed Clan.”

Jack smiled bitterly. “Yes. Not only are they afraid, but they’re quite selfish as well. We thought that they’d say something to the other party or do something, but who knew that they hadn’t done anything.”

“Are we still heading over to help them? I want to kill them so badly!” snarled Venus angrily upon hearing everything.

“Haha… The reason as to why they did this is no longer important. The most important thing is that we

have to do this if we want their support in the future."

Chapter 1821

"Firstly, we'll be able to kill members of the Bloodshed Clan if we work together with the Nine Armies, and it' ll be considered as us avenging ourselves. Secondly, they'll be indebted to us for helping them eliminate those from the Bloodshed Clan, which will gain for us some support from the Anti-Alliance Guard, am I right? Isn't this much better than running around aimlessly?" explained Jack to the crowd, informing them of his intentions. "We don't need to act now even if we want to help them, though-let them wear each other out in the battle. After all, the Nine Armies took their sweet time in delaying their actions previously, didn't they?"

"That's right! We can't just jump in and attack. We need to take our sweet time, too." Venus was much happier when she heard this.

"Haha… Let's go then. Everyone can leave the forest and see if we can meet any of our people on the way. We'll gather our people together, and if we meet any of the Bloodshed Clan disciples, we'll kill them. Of course, we' ll also kill any of the people from the seas if we run into them. The people from the seas had always been our enemy, so it's best if we don't let any of them off the hook," declared Jack before leading everyone, and they all flew down the mountain.

Just like what Jack anticipated, the Bloodshed Clan left around 1,000 of their disciples outside the forest to stand guard and prevent them from escaping.

"Haha! It's good that we're stationed here!" A disciple in the Fourth-grade ultimate god level chuckled. "Only a few of those from the abandoned world are still alive in this forest, and they won't rush out so easily as they understand the strength of our Bloodshed Clan. They're hiding in the forest, that's for sure. On the other hand, our men who went to the Nine Armies would be facing a huge battle."

"That's right. The Nine Armies aren't weak, and we've lost around twenty thousand people during our hunt of those who came from the abandoned world. The losses are much greater than what we anticipated. On top of that, even those in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level and our Fourth Elder have died. F*ck! Masters from the Nine Armies must've helped them," remarked a woman as she tightened her fist. "The Fourth Elder is quite a nice person. If they hadn't requested for me to stay back,

I would’ ve joined them in killing those from the Nine Armies. I’d feel so much better if I could kill several of them.”

At that moment…

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The sound of the bell once again rang at the Nine Armies.

“Ugh, curses! Why did the bell ring again? Who rang it?!” The First Fortress Master was extremely furious. He planned on acting only two hours from then, but the bell rang unexpectedly, requesting for everybody to gather.

An elder beside him seemingly glowered as well. “First Fortress Master, these people truly do not honor you. We’ll have to find out who rang it, and we’ll have to reprimand them, too. Are they in that much of a hurry to rescue those from the abandoned world? No one had those people barging into the area. We’re obviously not as strong as the Bloodshed Clan, yet we still had to deal with it!”

Nonetheless, they still walked out of the building and flew toward the huge square at the heart of the fortresses, despite their chagrin.

It was only when they arrived did they realize the Bloodshed Clan spearheaded their men into their base.

Chapter 1822

“Why did they come back? What do the Bloodshed Clan want this time?” One of the fortress masters was puzzled, not understanding why the Bloodshed Clan returned after leaving not long ago.

Moreover, a lot of them came this time, and there seemed to be about 70, 000 of them. It looked like the Bloodshed Clan brought their entire team here.

The First Fortress Master initially wanted to reprimand whoever it was that rang the bell, but when he saw the Bloodshed Clan, his expression faltered as he ignored whoever rang the bell.

Austin carefully thought things through before questioning Edward loudly, “Clan Master Edward, what’s the meaning of this? Why did you bring your people here? Didn’t you guys say that there aren’t many people from the abandoned world who entered the forest? Weren’t you guys hunting them? Why are you causing us trouble again?”

Edward smiled coldly and said, “ Hmph! Stop pretending. Your people killed our Fourth Elder and many of our masters, and we’re here to avenge them!”

Edward did not bother explaining everything else, thus he waved his hand and ordered, “Everyone, wipe out the Nine Armies. Let them understand that our Bloodshed Clan isn ‘t so easily bullied!”

Austin was surprised when he heard this and quickly stopped them. “Hold on! Hold on! What? Your Fourth Elder died? Why don’t I know about this? What’s going on? All our masters are here, so who’d be strong enough to kill your fourth elder? Edward Gray, you can’t just blame it on us baselessly!”

After all, he had no idea when the people of the Pavilion Billow Cloud would arrive. Under such circumstances, they would be at a disadvantage if they were to engage in a battle.

Alas, the people of the Bloodshed Clan ignored his explanation and rushed toward the men of the Nine Armies. “ Attack!”

Kye, unable to wait, came up to Austin and snapped, “First Fortress Master, they’re coming at us intolerably and blame us baselessly for their Fourth Elder’s death. F*ck! Let’s give everything we have to defeat them! What are we still waiting for? The Pavilion Billow Cloud will surely come soon!” With that, he rushed and clashed with the Bloodshed Clan.

“First Fortress Master, there’s nothing to be afraid about. The Bloodshed Clan mentioned that they have

more than a hundred thousand disciples, but there are only seventy thousand of them now. On top of that, their Fourth Elder has also died. Heh! They even lost many disciples in the ultimate god level! We won't know who 's going to be wiped out by today!" yelled another fortress master before rushing toward the Bloodshed Clan's Sixth Elder.

Austin sighed. This was an undeniably good opportunity, but it still puzzled him as to why the Bloodshed Clan still dared take action against their Nine Armies when they had suffered such losses and their overall strength had greatly reduced. If this continued, was the Bloodshed Clan not worried that they would suffer great losses?

Of course, he had no idea that the Bloodshed Clan sent people to notify another force of the Alliance Guard before they headed to the Nine Alliance. They only dared take action against the Nine Armies as they estimated that this force was arriving soon.

"Attack!" Just like that, the Bloodshed Clan and the Nine Armies clashed in a battle.

"You'll be breathing your last today, Austin!" roared Edward and rushed toward Austin in a flash.

'He's so speedy. Has this guy broken through into the Second-grade soulpenetrating level?' Austin's heart dropped when he saw how Edward appeared right in front of him so swiftly.

Chapter 1822

"Why did they come back? What do the Bloodshed Clan want this time?" One of the fortress masters was puzzled, not understanding why the Bloodshed Clan returned after leaving not long ago.

Moreover, a lot of them came this time, and there seemed to be about 70,000 of them. It looked like the Bloodshed Clan brought their entire team here.

The First Fortress Master initially wanted to reprimand whoever it was that rang the bell, but when he saw the Bloodshed Clan, his expression faltered as he ignored whoever rang the bell.

Austin carefully thought things through before questioning Edward loudly, “Clan Master Edward, what’s the meaning of this? Why did you bring your people here? Didn’t you guys say that there aren’t many people from the abandoned world who entered the forest? Weren’t you guys hunting them? Why are you causing us trouble again?”

Edward smiled coldly and said, “Hmph! Stop pretending. Your people killed our Fourth Elder and many of our masters, and we’re here to avenge them!”

Edward did not bother explaining everything else, thus he waved his hand and ordered, “Everyone, wipe out the Nine Armies. Let them understand that our Bloodshed Clan isn’t so easily bullied!”

Austin was surprised when he heard this and quickly stopped them. “Hold on! Hold on! What? Your Fourth Elder died? Why don’t I know about this? What’s going on? All our masters are here, so who’d be strong enough to kill your fourth elder? Edward Gray, you can’t just blame it on us baselessly!”

After all, he had no idea when the people of the Pavilion Billow Cloud would arrive. Under such circumstances, they would be at a disadvantage if they were to engage in a battle.

Alas, the people of the Bloodshed Clan ignored his explanation and rushed toward the men of the Nine Armies. “Attack!”

Kye, unable to wait, came up to Austin and snapped, “First Fortress Master, they’re coming at us intolerably and blame us baselessly for their Fourth Elder’s death. F*ck! Let’s give everything we have to defeat them! What are we still waiting for? The Pavilion Billow Cloud will surely come soon!” With that, he rushed and clashed with the Bloodshed Clan.

“First Fortress Master, there’s nothing to be afraid about. The Bloodshed Clan mentioned that they have more than a hundred thousand disciples, but there are only seventy-thousand of them now. On top of that, their Fourth Elder has also died. Heh! They even lost many disciples in the ultimate god level! We won’t know who’s going to be wiped out by today!” yelled another fortress master before rushing toward the Bloodshed Clan’s Sixth Elder.

Austin sighed. This was an undeniably good opportunity, but it still puzzled him as to why the Bloodshed Clan still dared take action against their Nine Armies when they had suffered such losses and their overall strength had greatly reduced. If this continued, was the Bloodshed Clan not worried that they would suffer great losses?

Of course, he had no idea that the Bloodshed Clan sent people to notify another force of the Alliance Guard before they headed to the Nine Alliance. They only dared take action against the Nine Armies as they estimated that this force was arriving soon.

“Attack!” Just like that, the Bloodshed Clan and the Nine Armies clashed in a battle.

“You’ll be breathing your last today, Austin!” roared Edward and rushed toward Austin in a flash.

‘He’s so speedy. Has this guy broken through into the Second-grade soulpenetrating level?’ Austin’s heart dropped when he saw how Edward appeared right in front of him so swiftly.

Chapter 1823

Alas, Austin had no time to assess everything as he, seeing how Edward swung his fist toward him, threw one right back to intercept it.

Boom!

A deafening sound was heard as the two masters in the First-grade soulpenetrating level finally had their first altercation.

The strong power dispersed from where their fists met and caused a strong shock wave. This sent several disciples who had a low fighting prowess flying a distance away before they managed to regain their footing

“Ah!” Austin yelled loudly and persisted for several seconds with his opponent. Beads of sweat dripped from his forehead. His opponent was much stronger than him.

“Ah!” exclaimed Edward, his expression contorting into malice. He increased the power in his punch and finally gained the upper hand, forcing Austin about a dozen meters backward. Austin stepped in midair before he could barely stabilize himself.

“Haha! You’re no match for me, Austin. After I kill you, we’ll definitely win if I kill another two or three other fortress masters in the Ninth-grade ultimate god level later, even though it looks like you guys have more people compared to us at this moment!” The haughty Edward chuckled arrogantly after sending Austin flying.

“You want to kill me? You won’t get to do that easily!” The corners of Austin’s mouth twitched a couple of times, but he gritted his teeth and said, “I only need to persist and buy more time. The overall strength of our people in the ultimate god level isn’t that weak compared to yours, let alone with your Fourth Elder dead. Hmph! I only need to persist for a while, and a couple of my fortress masters will come to our aid by then. You may just find yourself dying instead when we attack you altogether!”

“Hmph! Let’s see how long you can persist, then!” Edward scoffed and tightened his fist. His aura surged and enveloped his fist before he zipped toward Austin again.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

People started falling from the sky as explosions were heard, one after another. The faint smell of blood began to waft around, too.

Meanwhile, a large gathering of people sneakily flew past the trees and moved toward the forest’s exit. “They’ve started fighting, Young Master Jack, just as you said. They really are fighting!”

“Haha… That is great! Let’s fly slowly and kill the Bloodshed Clan disciples guarding outside the forest.

It'll almost be the time by then." Jack heard the sounds of battle nearby as well, and it was so intense that it was obviously between two large forces. They truly had begun to battle.

Nash soon noticed something and giddily rushed forward with about a dozen people. "There's a group of members of the Hall of Divine Royal over there. Let me bring some of our men to kill them."

Time slowly passed, and Jack and the others soon arrived at the exterior of the forest, not once stopping to search for treasures. Their journey did not consume much of their time.

Jack looked at the Bloodshed Clan disciples in front of them and smirked. With a wave of his hand, he declared, "Kill them. Seeing as there are only about a thousand or two thousand Bloodshed Clan disciples, it won't be much of a fight."

Chapter 1824

"Dear me! How is this possible? Why are there so many people here?"

The Bloodshed Clan disciples guarded the forest perimeters in fear that the remaining survivors of the abandoned world would escape. They also expected that it was unlikely, however, and believed the survivors would stay hidden after they experienced the last fight.

What these disciples did not expect was that several hundred thousand of them would rush out of the forest, with a large percentage of them being in the ultimate god level.

"Attack!" roared Nash as he led his companions to attack. Fury overtook him as he thought of how thousands of the White family's members had died.

Members of other families fearlessly joined the fray, seeing as they had the chance to exact vengeance. Previously, they managed to escape, though aggrieved and seeing their family members dying before them.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

The fighting noises outside the forest were soon heard.

Nobody realized, however, that a group of people from the seas and the Skies Pavilion had gathered on another mountaintop in the forest.

“Why are we hearing fights happening outside the forest again?” Not many were here, and only about 3,000 to 4,000 people at that, but those who stayed had quite a high fighting prowess. They hesitated in what they should do when they spotted members of the Bloodshed Clan heading toward the Nine Armies. No one expected to hear people fighting one another outside the forest again.

“Those who entered this place previously included the people from the White family, Hall of Divine Royal, and the Pavilion of Divinity. I’m sure that not all of them had died. After all, so many of them entered the area. Throughout these past couple of days, they had been fighting among themselves to rob each other of their belongings. Together with the Bloodshed Clan’s pursuit, I’m sure that there are a lot of them left.” A wise look appeared in Lily’s eyes as she stood by the side. “I guess that they must be rushing outward. Nonetheless, the Bloodshed Clan had left some disciples guarding the forest’s outskirts, which means they’re fighting those disciples standing guard outside.”

Although Lily had suffered a lot at this point, she had broken through in terms of her fighting prowess and had finally recovered to be in the initial stage of the semi-god level.

However, such a level of fighting prowess was painfully low. After they learned of Joel’s death, she did not have a right to speak in the Skies Pavilion.

Some Skies Pavilion elders even ignored her after they broke through into the Firstgrade ultimate god level.

Lily would have died a long time ago had it not been for a few members who joined the Skies Pavilion together with her, protecting her.

Of course, tens of thousand people gathered here because Lily finally came up with solutions. Everyone tried their best to inform each other, staying united as they evaded conflicts. This made it difficult for the people of the Bloodshed Clan to find them. Due to this, the members of the Skies Pavilion began seeing her in a different light.

After all, although this woman had a low fighting prowess, she was still considerably intelligent. At least, everyone survived up to this point after listening to her.

“Well, Madam Pavilion Master, what do you think we should do now?”

Chapter 1825

One of the old men finally looked at Lily, evidently at a loss of what to do.

Lily deliberated their options and suggested, “I see that we have quite a number of people here, and many of them are in the First-grade ultimate god level. If we want to stay alive, why don’t we rush down now as well? I think that by the time we arrive there, their family masters or members of the ancient clans would’ve rushed out as well. The Bloodshed Clan disciples would chase after Jack and the rest once they escape, which will give us the chance to escape the forest.”

“Where will we go after that? We don’t know anything about this area!” lamented the baffled old man. “Apart from that, some of our people heard the Bloodshed Clan disciples mention something known as the Alliance Guard. It seems like members of this Alliance Guard are appointed to kill us, the foreigners to this land!”

“It is true that there aren’t many places that we can go. We have no idea how this alliance is and how many people they have.” Lily remained silent for some time before her eyes finally lit up. “Here’s an idea. Since the Bloodshed Clan has attacked the Nine Armies, I heard some of the Bloodshed Clan disciples say that both parties have the same overall strength. Why don’t we help out the Nine Armies? They’ll be indebted to us if we do that. There aren’t many of us here, so perhaps they’ll take us under their wing?”

The eyes of an old man from the Hall of Divine Royal lit up when he heard this.

“This sounds like a good plan. After all, there are thirty thousand of us here, and we’re a formidable force in our own right if we rush in together. The Nine Armies might win if we help them right now, and they’ll let us stay with them if they win!”

Another old man chimed in, “That’s right! More importantly, the Nine Armies isn’t that far from this forest. There’s hope of breaking through into the soul-penetrating level if we’re able to search for treasures in this forest. Since they’re attacking the Nine Armies, it means that they’re opposing forces. The Nine Armies might truly take us in!”

“Let’s go down, then.” Lily glanced at her clansmen, hearing as everyone agreed to the same thing. In the end, the group flew down the mountain and swiftly traveled out of the forest, their tracks shielded by their surroundings.

Not long after they started flying, Jack and the others had killed the Bloodshed Clan disciples who stood guard outside the forest. They managed to kill more than 2,000 of those disciples without suffering a huge loss, and only a few hundred of their people had perished.

Of course, the people who did the most work were Jack, Nash, and the others.

“You’re incredibly strong, Young Master Jack. Those Bloodshed Clan disciples in the Second-stage ultimate god level are nothing compared to you. You killed them like you were cutting vegetables!” Several second-class aristocratic family masters flocked around Jack, flattering him upon knowing what he was capable of.

They knew very well that not only did Jack have a high fighting prowess and combat power, but he was also a third-grade intermediate alchemist.

Several second-class aristocratic family masters had already broken through to the First-grade ultimate god level. If they could improve their relationship with Jack and obtain a third-grade elementary pill,

they could scale up two to three grades at one go.

They were no fools—they wanted to get into Jack's good books instantly.

How could Jack not understand their intentions just by looking at their grinning faces?

He only smiled indifferently and pointed forward. "Right now, many of our men have died over there. After we slowly fly over, we'll wait and do nothing. We'll only act if the Nine Armies are losing and they beg us for our help."

Chapter 1826

"Splendid! This plan of yours is wonderful, Young Master Jack. Absolutely wonderful!" A third-class aristocratic family master gave Jack a thumbs-up.

"That's right. The people of the Nine Armies did nothing, and they refused to do something even when they knew what we're facing. We don't know if they never thought of helping us or if they're too scared of the Bloodshed Clan," ranted an angry second-class aristocratic family master. "This time, we have to teach them a lesson!"

Daniella stepped forward and said, "If we didn't need to rely on the Anti-Alliance Clan and maintain a good relationship with the Nine Armies to ease our training in the future, we don't really want to work with these people!"

"Alright, let's go. We don't have that many options right now. Your eldest sister has mentioned this before, too. The group of people, including Angus and the others, seem to be nice people, but they might be able to speak their mind since they have a low fighting prowess." Jack smiled and waved his hand as he led the people toward the direction of the Nine Armies.

"What? Why are there fighting noises outside the forest?" While Jack and the others engaged in a battle with the disciples, members of the Nine Armies and Bloodshed Clan inhaled sharply in surprise.

In just a short time, almost 20,000 people from the Nine Armies had died while more than 10,000 people from the Bloodshed Clan perished. Still, things did not look favorable for the Nine Armies.

Many of the Nine Armies' members in the ultimate god level died within a short period into the battle.

It was mainly because the Nine Armies' members were from nine different fortresses, and they would not usually fight together. They were like scattered sand as they lacked cohesiveness.

On top of that, the martial skill or martial art technique the Bloodshed Clan disciples used was far stronger compared to the members of the Nine Armies, allowing them to kill individuals that had a higher fighting prowess.

Hence, the Bloodshed Clan disciples evidently had the upper hand within several hours into the battle.

"Curses! We have forty thousand to fifty thousand more people than them, but things look awfully bad for us!" One of the fortress masters was visibly discouraged at the battle's outcome. On top of that, their First Fortress Master was slightly wounded. If this continued, they would be in greater trouble if the First Fortress Master was killed.

All this while, the Nine Armies dared not offend the Bloodshed Clan although they nursed vengeance against them. Hence, both parties never truly went to war against each other.

At that moment, they finally realized just how strong their opponent's disciples' combat power was-it was much stronger than theirs.

Although there were more people on their side, they had lesser ultimate god level individuals than the Bloodshed Clan from how the situation looked.

The fortress master glanced at the First Fortress Master and finally understood why the First Fortress Master refused to let everybody take action previously. Had they did, they would be no match for the Bloodshed Clan. By then, they would not have been able to persist like they were doing, and they would have lost to them.

“Why aren’t the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud here yet?!” An old man looked toward the direction of the Pavilion Billow Cloud in slight worry. If the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud would not come to their aid within these few hours, they would lose many of the Nine Armies’ people.

Unexpectedly, they heard fighting noises coming from outside the forest sometime after their battle happened, startling both the Bloodshed Clan and the Nine Armies.

“The fighting noises ceased so quickly! What’s happening over there?” Edward turned to look toward the forest, frowning in bewilderment as he heard how a battle in that direction ended just as it began.

Chapter 1827

“Clan master, could something have happened to the disciples we left behind?” said an old man the moment he recalled it.

“How’s that possible?” Edward frowned, but there was a hint of uncertainty in his voice.

“Attack! Just kill them!” He gritted his teeth, and the intensity of his attack toward Austin increased.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the balance of victory slanted toward the Bloodshed Clan, more and more people of the Nine Armies died.

All of a sudden, Hendrick called out to Angus while he was fighting, “Young Master Angus, look over

there. We have company coming in, flying very slowly!”

Angus turned around to look after killing a man of the peak stage true god level with a punch. True enough, a gathering of people were flying to this side from far away.

“Dear me. There must be at least tens of thousands of them! Why are there so many of them? Are they from the Pavilion Billow Cloud?” blurted Angus.

A thought came to Hendrick as he flew toward Angus, saying, “That’s impossible. The Pavilion Billow Cloud wouldn’t come from that direction. Could the Bloodshed Clan’s members not have killed many of those from the abandoned world, and they’ve gathered before coming here?”

Angus inhaled deeply. “How is that possible? Have many of them survived after all?”

His heart sank the moment he said those words. “That’s…highly likely, seeing that the Bloodshed Clan has no idea how many of them have entered the area. On top of that, they couldn’t have calculated how many people they killed these past couple of days and how many were killed by monster beasts instead. The forest is vast, after all, so it’s possible that many of them survived.”

It was then Ella flew toward them, visibly happy despite being covered in blood. “Are they here to help us? They are large in number, and a helping hand is very welcomed right now. They definitely have many people who have broken through into the First and Second-grade ultimate god level. Most importantly, they’re a large group!”

“Drats! Are those people from the abandoned world? Why are there still so many of them?” The Bloodshed Clan’s First Elder glowered at the sight. If they were indeed from the abandoned world, it was obvious who these people would help when they arrived. After all, his men had killed many of theirs before.

The Nine Armies initially had the upper hand, and the Bloodshed Clan might have crumbled before their might. On top of that, they were dumbfounded that the pavilion they had alerted had not arrived up to

this point. Such scarification caused a wave of heartache in the members of the Bloodshed Clan

Austin was taken aback for a moment before he chuckled loudly. “Haha… That must be it, that must be it! Who would’ve thought that so many of these people had survived after persisting for so many days? It looks like they’re very united, too, what with them coming together.”

The corners of Edward’s mouth twitched. “Is that so? Them coming here might not change the tides of battle as I’ll kill you first. The worst-case scenario is that our Bloodshed Clan suffers mere losses, nowhere hefty. So what if there are a lot of them? They don’t have high fighting prowess!”

Chapter 1828

Despite Edward’s insistence, he was, in truth, wary of it all deep down. After all, there were close to 200,000 people over there, and they must have had strong fighting prowess as they survived the hunt of the Bloodshed Clan disciples. At the very least, there should be a large number of them in the true god level while not many of them are in the semi-god level.

On top of that, many of these people must have broken through into the First or Second-stage ultimate god level. This was a force to be reckoned with.

The only thing he wanted to do was to kill Austin-who stood before him-so he could kill the other Nine Armies’ masters in the Ninth-grade ultimate god level. In that case, they would have the upper hand against these masters.

Thoom!

Wounded by Edward’s frantic attacks, Austin began to falter. He looked toward the forest as he fought, hoping that those people would arrive sooner to help him.

It then dawned on him as he waited, noticing that the army-though plenty in number—flew painfully slow toward them.

“For goodness’ sake! First Fortress Master, why are they coming so slowly?” One of the fortress masters could not bear it anymore. Already injured, he felt a pang as he watched the Bloodshed Clan disciples kill members of his fortress, one after another.

“How would I know? I’m not one of them. Are they not helping us?” replied Austin.

Bang!

The moment he said that, Edward quickly threw a fist at him, sending him flying backward.

“Urfh!” Austin vomited a mouthful of blood at the attack, and his complexion immediately paled.

“First Fortress Master!” Several elders grew visibly horrified at the sight of everything that happened.

“Ella, why are those people coming so slowly toward us? Several tens of thousands of our people have already died, and right now, there are only eighty thousand of us left. The Bloodshed Clan still has sixty thousand people!” Hendrick, who was fighting with all his strength, felt deeply anxious at the sight of more of his comrades dead.

The people from Pavilion Billow Cloud had not arrived, and if this continued, people of the Nine Armies would truly be doomed.

On top of that, it looked like the First Fortress Master could no longer tank any more attacks.

“I don’t know. They’re probably hesitant but want to know what’s happening here, what with all the battles that’s happening right now.” With a bitter smile, Ella said to Hendrick, “On top of that, we didn’t send any people to help them, so they might not help us.”

A darkened look appeared on the faces of the Nine Armies' members when they heard what Ella said.

All this time, members of the Nine Armies thought that the Bloodshed Clan dared not take any action against them as they had more people. At that very moment, they finally learned that their overall combat power truly was inferior to the Bloodshed Clan.

Chapter 1829

If the Bloodshed Clan disciples did not lose a certain amount of disciples when they hunted the people who came from the abandoned world, it would be far easier for the Bloodshed Clan to wipe them out.

As Austin could no longer sustain himself from more attacks, he flew further away before he yelled to Edward of the Bloodshed Clan, "Are you crazy, Edward? At this rate, both of us will suffer immensely. I'm telling you: don't you see that group of people over there? They're here to hurt you, that's definite. You won't be able to win if this continues!"

"Haha! True, they're larger in numbers, but they don't have a high combat power!" came Edward's unexpected response with a laugh. "If I'm noting the time correctly, the people from the Sword King Clan are arriving soon, too!"

With that, Edward continued attacking

Austin.

Austin was mystified when he heard this. He had asked for help from others, and he never expected his opponent to have done the same. It truly was difficult to see who would be the victor at this point.

Jack and the rest finally flew over, but they stopped somewhere near where the battle took place.

"Jack? Brother, it's Jack-the Jack I told you about!" Ella was overjoyed to have spotted Jack among the

people.

“I don’t know who you’re talking about; there are lots of them there. Have them join and help us!” Hendrick had never met Jack, so it was natural that he could not recognize Jack.

Still, he swept a glance at the newcomers and spotted Helena among them. He was elated at the sight of her.

He quickly flew toward Angus and announced, “What great news, Young Master Angus. Ms. Helena is still alive! Goodness. There are several beauties standing beside her, and they’re incredibly beautiful!”

Angus was just as delighted when he took a glance. “Those two belles standing beside her look like her, so they must be her sisters. It’s a surprise that all three of them have survived, but that’s great!”

Although they did not know how Helena survived, it did not change how happy they were to see her.

“Ms. Helena, it’s great to see you alive!” Angus yelled in excitement as he continued fighting

His grandfather caught onto this and immediately yelled loudly, “Ms. Helena, please come and help us. We can’t put up much of a fight anymore!”

The First Fortress Master also could not withstand the attack and yelled toward the people, “Everyone, we’re members of the Nine Armies, and we’re on the same side. We’re helping you eliminate these members of the Alliance Guard, too. Hurry and help us so we can kill them together!”

“That’s right! Why are you guys still standing there as onlookers? Why don’t you come and help?” another fortress master yelled loudly, extremely anxious as he did.

Only then did Jack flew slightly forward and smilingly spoke, “Haha… Now you guys know what it’s like

to be anxious? You people must've known how the Bloodshed Clan were chasing after us, right? That's right. Didn't Angus, Hendrick, and the others return early to notify you people? Why didn't you guys do anything then? Why should we be in a hurry if you aren't? We've lost so many people, so we'll now see how long you can hold out, too."

An old man from the Nine Armies was so angry that he almost vomited blood. "Don't take this too far, young man!" he yelled at Jack. "If you help us, we'll speak nicely to the people from the Anti-Alliance Guard for you. Everyone will be able to protect or take you guys in. However, if you refuse to do so… Haha… You guys might just struggle to survive after this!"

Another old man added, "Let me tell you this, young man: your people will also be killed if we're defeated!"

The First Fortress Master thought about it before he swallowed his pride and said to Jack, "Young man, we were wrong, but you can see that we had our consideration because we truly are no match for the Bloodshed Clan. I apologize to you guys on behalf of the Nine Armies, and I hope that you'll be willing to help us!"

Chapter 1830

Seeing how the First Fortress Master was a smart, seemingly earnest enough of a person, Jack finally pointed forward and declared, "Everyone, listen to me. The Bloodshed Clan standing before us have killed so many of our brothers and sisters, and this is our chance to avenge them. Attack, and wipe them all out together!"

"Attack!" Nash and the rest immediately rushed forward as though given a boost of energy.

"There are so many of them, Clan master! What should we do? Quite a number of them are in the First-grade ultimate god level, too!" an old man immediately questioned the Bloodshed Clan Master, somewhat panicked when he noticed the gathering of people who joined the battle.

"Why should we be afraid? Persist no matter what-they're no match for us. We have more people who are in the Sixth or Seventh-grade ultimate god level compared to them, and this will be quick!" ordered

Edward resoundingly. “We’ll have an easier win once I kill their First Fortress Master!”

Whoosh!

Jack rushed toward a Bloodshed Clan man in the Eighth-grade ultimate god level in a flash.

“Haha! You truly do have a death wish, young man! Seems like that group of yours obeys you. You coming up to me like this only makes me want to know just how good you are!” The man from the Bloodshed Clan laughed loudly, underestimating Jack. He tightened his fists and instantly disappeared from where he stood.

The man then flickered right before Jack. His aura engulfed his fist as he swung toward Jack.

“Oh, he has a death wish, alright.” Unfazed, Jack met the opponent’s fist with his own.

Thoom!

A deafening eruption was heard, and the Eighth-grade ultimate god level Bloodshed Clan disciple was sent flying by Jack. Blood spurted through his lips.

“Urfh!” The middle-aged man looked visibly horrified as he vomited blood. He never expected that this young-looking man would have such horrifying strength.

“He’s so strong! This guy is in the Seventhgrade ultimate god level, but how can somebody in that level send me flying?” The middle-aged man scowled.

Jack, on the other hand, took out his black sword with a flip of his hand.

“Burning Chop!” Jack called out, and a horrendous slash was sent straight toward his opponent. An attack that looked like a hot, blazing fireball went straight for the middle-aged man like a meteoroid.

“D*mn it. This attack is so horrifying!” The man in Eighth-grade ultimate god level was so shocked that his eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets. His heart nearly jumped out of his mouth when he felt how strong the fluctuation of power from Jack’s attack was.

He immediately activated the martial skill he was all too confident in. However, his martial skill was so brittle under Jack’s attack and saw it being destroyed like a broken twig.

“Im… Impossible!” The middle-aged man yelled in fright when he saw a large chunk of Jack’s attack left coming his way. He dared not face the fact as a strong aura of death came straight toward him.

Thoom!

The attack blasted off the man’s body. With that, Jack had easily slaughtered a master in the Eighth-grade ultimate god level.

Chapter 1831

“Goodness, he’s so strong!” exclaimed several masters of the Nine Armies in the Ninth-grade ultimate god level upon seeing Jack’s power, shocked to the core.

After all, that was a Bloodshed Clan disciple in the Eighth-grade ultimate god level, and it was difficult for a master in the Ninthgrade ultimate god level like them to kill such a person. Nonetheless, he fell defenseless before Jack, who ended him swiftly.

“Why does it feel like this young man has a stronger combat power than me?” The First Fortress Elder felt exhilarated when he saw what had happened.

Jack was not the only one with a high combat power. There were several masters in the Sixth-grade ultimate god level and a master in the Fifth-grade ultimate god level within Jack's group. With these people abruptly joining them, they had overcome the strength difference against their opponents.

Jack had also brought so many people with him, and under the circumstances where they had the same realm, they were able to gather into teams of twos or threes and attack the Bloodshed Clan disciples who were in the same realm.

They thus had the complete upper hand, and the number of Bloodshed Clan members dwindled horrifyingly fast.

"This… This is impossible!" Edward's face turned pale from fright upon seeing how the battle shifted. He initially shrugged off Jack's presence, but he never thought that Jack and the rest would have combat power that surpassed his expectations.

At this moment, the First Elder of the Bloodshed Clan rushed in angrily as though remembering something, and he glared at Jack. "Young man, are you the one who killed our Fourth Elder?"

"So what if it was me? I can't do anything since you people want to follow in his footsteps." Jack shrugged and looked like he could care less.

"What an arrogant young man! Elder brother, let's kill him together!" hissed the Second Elder of the Bloodshed Clan as he flew toward him as well. He had just killed an elder from the Nine Armies in the Eighth-grade ultimate god level, able to finally jump into another fight. He believed that both of them could kill Jack quickly if they attacked together.

Jack was startled for a brief moment and, seeing as two men were rushing his way, put away the sword he was holding.

"That weapon of yours could help increase your combat power at least, young man, yet you dare put it away? Are you looking down on both of us?" The First Elder was furious when he saw Jack putting away

his weapon.

It felt like ridicule in his point of view. No harm was done, but the humiliation was absolutely strong.

“Haha…. It’s because this martial skill of mine doesn’t require my sword!” Jack laughed. He paid no attention to both men, and after fixing his stance and squatted down slightly, he tightened his fists and his aura began to envelop his fists.

The First Elder was stunned at this, frowning as he asked, “Why does this martial skill look so familiar?”

The Second Elder was just as baffled. After some time, he finally exclaimed, “Big Brother, how can this be? Am… Am I wrong? Why does this martial skill look so much like our clan’s third-grade intermediate martial skill, Twin Dragon Fist?”

“Twin Dragon Fist!” A scowl appeared on the First Elder. He inhaled sharply as the Second Elder had jogged his memory.

How did this young man learn this martial skill? Both of them were able to use this martial skill, but they barely mastered the skill after learning it for many years. They only managed to achieve a low level of success, too.

“Young man, who are you?” yelled the Second Elder. They had always thought that it was the First Fortress Master’s brother who killed the Fourth Elder, but it seemed that was not the case at this point. This young man was too young, and this was the first time they came across such a genius.

Chapter 1832

“I don’t need to tell you both who I am. All you need to know is that your death is at hand!” Jack decided against telling them who he was in the end. After all, the Bloodshed Clan had many members, and some might just escape if they managed to fight their way out.

If they knew somebody as talented as he was from the abandoned world and had such achievement within a short period, the Alliance Guard would surely focus on him later on. They would want nothing more than to kill him.

“Young man, do you think you’re the only one who knows how to use the Twin Dragon Fist?” The First and Second Elder exchanged glances before they parted their legs to squat, preparing to unleash the Twin Dragon Fist move.

“Twin Dragon Fist!” they both called out, and two fists shaped like dragon heads soon emerged. These humongous fists seemed to be several feet tall and looked extremely overpowered.

Jack, however, chuckled before swinging both his fists forward, blasting an energy force their way.

The attack then coagulated to be 60 meters tall before him.

“Oh my god! This… This young man has perfected the Twin Dragon Fist!” The First Elder and Second Elder almost vomited blood at the sight.

Their attack collided against Jack’s two fist-auras.

Although both of them attacked Jack together, Jack’s gigantic dragon-shaped punches obliterated all four of their dragon-shaped fists. Their attacks managed to only withstand Jack’s for a few seconds before they burst into nothing.

“No!” The First Elder and Second Elder looked at one another before hastily forming an energy field that coated their beings.

Despite activating their force fields, they knew they would not be able to withstand Jack’s attack

The First Elder immediately took out a shield with the flip of his hand. He infused his energy into the shield, causing it to enlarge and shield him and his companion.

Only then were the First and Second Elder relieved. After all, this shield of theirs was a good one and could be considered an upper-grade spiritual tool.

Thoom!

Jack's attack rammed against the shield the moment the shield was put up. The strong impact continued to push them backward.

"Hold on! We have to hold on!" Both of them held onto both handles at the back of the shield, teeth gritted as they tried to persist.

However…

Crack!

The shield started to crack under Jack's power, and it only grew bigger while the space gradually increased.

"D*mn it! How can this happen? Impossible!" The First Elder's shield had saved him countless times in other battles, and he had always been confident in this shield.

Alas, it seemed to have failed him at that moment.

Boom!

The shield was destroyed, and the attack finally ravaged both Elders.

Chapter 1833

Thoom! Thoom!

Both Elders zipped through the skies like kites with broken strings before smashing against a stone pavilion heavily, destroying the structure in the process.

“Urfh!”

Blood spurted through their mouths. With one last jerk of their legs, they both perished.

Members from both the Bloodshed Clan and Nine Armies were mystified at the sight, and some even stopped battling because of it.

“How can this have happened? He killed both the First and Second Elder? He killed two people in the Ninth-grade ultimate god level simultaneously?” The Third Elder of the Bloodshed Clan turned pale as he witnessed what had happened. Jack had killed three of their masters within moments after entering the battlefield, and he stunned the Bloodshed Clan members.

They were done for if this continued.

After all, many of the Nine Armies’ members in the Eighth and Ninth-grade ultimate god level would not be occupied with fighting the opponent’s masters because of this.

“Is… Is this the Jack I knew?” Ella was dumbfounded. She remembered that Jack seemed to be in the Second-grade ultimate god level when he rescued her. That was not long ago, but not only had this guy broken through into the Seventh-grade ultimate god level, he had a high fighting prowess as well. He managed to learn a strong martial skill from the Bloodshed Clan and even killed two of their elders with

this martial skill.

“Oh, my stars… Sister, is this the Jack that you’ve mentioned? Are you lying to me? Is he really from that place? How’s that possible? How does he train?” Hendrick gulped and was completely convinced this time. He never thought that there would be such a genius in this world.

“Yes. This is so strange… They’ve just entered the forest for less than one month, yet they’ve grown so strong? Apart from him, several others are in the Sixth-grade ultimate god level, and one is in the Fifthgrade ultimate god level. I have no idea how they trained.” Ella frowned, and a hundred thousand questions ran through her mind.

Meanwhile, The Bloodshed Clan Master, Edward Gray, was at a complete loss for words, unable to process everything as he shook his head. “That’s…impossible. How can that be? Young man, who… Who are you? You’re not a member of the Nine Armies, and you can’t be someone from the abandoned world. Are you a genius from one of the Anti-Alliance Guard’s forces?”

“Attack!” Stunned momentarily, people of the Nine Armies were then overjoyed with newfound hope of winning. They once more rushed forward, yelling their battle cries.

Since Jack had killed three masters of their opponents, their ascendancy had increased. Coupled with the fact that they outnumbered the Bloodshed Clan, the latter party could not easily escape as they were surrounded

“Clan master, we can’t let this prolong-we can’t fight back. Shall we escape?” implored the Third Elder of the Bloodshed Clan to Edward. The people from the Sword King Clan had not arrived, and their disciples had decreased significantly. It was obvious they could not put up much of a fight.

Gritting his teeth, Edward reluctantly gave the order, “Everyone, run! Run, now!”

His disciples were relieved to have heard the order, and they scrambled to fight their way out.

Unfortunately… Jack flickered right before Edward.

Whoosh!

“Haha! I don’t think many of your people would be able to run away, even if they wanted to. Try as you might, I won’t allow you to escape!”

Edward’s anger flared as Jack stopped him, evident in the way he glared at Jack hatefully. “Young man, I’m a master in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, and even the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies is no match for me. How dare you stop me? Do you think you can stop me just because you’re talented and managed to kill two of our elders? Are you that naïve?”

Chapter 1834

There were traces of blood at the corners of Austin’s lips as he hatefully spoke, eyes flaring as he did, “That’s right! It doesn’t matter if the others escape, but we can’t let this old one run away. Brother Jack, let’s kill him together!”

Edward’s expression faltered at this.

He had always thought his combat power was much stronger than Austin, and he would have been able to kill Austin minutes later had Jack and the rest not come. The Bloodshed Clan would have won.

The combat power Jack showed was comparable to those in the First-grade soul-penetrating level. Jack alone had brought him enough trouble, what more with both of them attacking him together.

Thinking of what could happen, Edward began to beg Austin, “Austin, you have to think this through. Didn’t you say that continuing this battle would result in big losses for both of us? Why don’t we just forget about what happened here today and return to our respective homes?”

Austin, however, laughed. “Haha! And how did you respond to me when I pleaded to stop the battle, Edward Gray? You turned me down, so why should we agree to your request now that I have the upper hand?”

Austin then tightened his fists, his energy surging through them as he did.

Jack squatted down slightly, his own aura enveloping his fists as he was about to execute the Twin Dragons Fist skill once more.

“Don’t… Don’t do it! Let’s discuss this nicely!” Edward paled in fright when he realized that these two were seriously about

To attack him.

Unfortunately, Jack and Austin ignored him, unleashing their respective moves.

Resignedly, Edward could only bite the bullet and execute his own.

Thoom!

The attack of these three masters crashed against one another. How could Edward have survived from Jack and Austin’s united attack? Edward perished that instant.

“Clan master!” cried out several Bloodshed Clan elders. Hatred filled their hearts at the sight of their clan master being killed.

“Run! Everybody, run!” Many of the Bloodshed Clan members fought with their lives as they wanted to escape, seeing as their clan master, First Elder, Second Elder, and Fourth Elder had died. They were no longer able to defeat their opponents.

The Bloodshed Clan originally had several tens of thousand people, but only 30,000 of them remained in the end.

Just as the Nine Armies relished in ending their enemies, a fortress master spotted something from afar and yelled to Austin, “This is bad! Look over there, First Fortress Master! A group of people is coming from that side!”

Austin and the rest savored their conquest, moments away from wiping out the Bloodshed Clan when they saw a group of people flying their way.

Chapter 1835

The number of people in that incoming party was estimated to be several hundreds of thousands, and they were coming in fast. They also seemed to have come from where the Bloodshed Clan was located.

“This is bad! That’s the Sword King Clan! F*ck! I’ve sent people to notify the Pavilion Billow Cloud, but why aren’t they here yet? What should we do now, that people from the Sword King Clan are here?” Austin’s expression faltered. The battle had paused as members of the Nine Armies and from Jack’s side surrounded the remaining Bloodshed Clan members.

Jack’s expression turned serious, albeit slightly. “First Fortress Master, what can you tell me about the Sword King Clan? Are they very powerful? How are they compared to the Bloodshed Clan?”

Only then did Austin say to Jack, “Both the Bloodshed Clan and Sword King Clan can only be considered third-rated pavilions. They aren’t those big pavilions.”.

Jack eased off a little at that. Since the Sword King Clan came to help the Bloodshed Clan, they had to be a member of the Alliance Guard and obviously would not be friendly.

Nonetheless, they were lucky that this clan was not a larger pavilion. They could have a chance in

battling them.

Austin then looked at Jack gravely, and it was what he said next that made Jack tense, “The Sword King Clan has many more people in the ultimate god level compared to the Bloodshed Clan. Although they’re only a third-rated small pavilion, they’re very much stronger than the Bloodshed Clan. Among their members, there is one who is in the First-grade soulpenetrating level and another in the Second-grade soul-penetrating level.”

“Second-grade?” Jack’s expression darkened when he heard that there were masters in the Second-grade soulpenetrating level. He was confident that he could kill Edward, but he was not too sure of himself when facing masters in the Second-grade soul-penetrating level.

After all, the combat power of a master in the Second-grade soul-penetrating level was that of several in the First-grade ultimate god level.

What Jack and the rest did not know was that a group of 30,000 people, including Lily, had exited the forest, arriving at the forest’s outskirts.

An old man looked visibly startled as he gazed at the corpses of the Bloodshed Clan disciples. “Tsk, tsk! It’s true that there were two thousand Bloodshed Clan disciples guarding here, but why were all of them killed?”

Lily took a closer look, and her expression grew tense. “This is bad. Look, there are also bodies of the Cabello family members and the White family members here. What does that mean? Those two families have killed these disciples. On top of that, the Bloodshed Clan disciples who are in the Third and fourth-grade ultimate god level were also killed. It looks like Jack and the rest had joined forces with the Nine Armies.”

Feeling lost, an old man from the Skies Pavilion turned to Lily. “What should we do now, then? Should we still help members of the Bloodshed Clan? Otherwise, we have nowhere to go!”

“All of us came over from that side, and the people from the Nine Armies aren’t familiar with Jack’s group. Helping them would mean helping members of the Nine Armies, so the Nine Armies won’t hurt us, would they? They should be able to take us in too, right?” a member of the Hall of Divine Royal questioned Lily.

Unexpectedly, Lily laughed bitterly and said, “Yes. Based on what you said, the members of the Nine Armies would take us in and won’t hurt us. However, what if the people from the White family, Gods and Kings Pavilion, and Pavilion of Divinity take action against us? A lot of them had entered this area, and Jack is a very smart guy. They have more people than we do, and they might have higher fighting prowess!”

Lily paused before she continued, “What if they take action against us? I don’t think the Nine Armies would meddle in this affair; merely standing neutral. Do you understand?”

“What do you mean by that? We can’t go to the Nine Armies and ask for their help?” The members of the Hall of Divine Royal glanced toward the direction of the Nine Armies. As the place was further away, they could not see what was happening.

Lily nodded. “Let’s go. Members of the Bloodshed Clan came from that direction previously. Let’s head this way and quickly leave this place.”

Chapter 1836

“Let’s go, let’s go. We have no idea why the fighting noises over there stopped so soon so I think it’s best if we leave quickly. We will be in trouble if we meet those people from the so-called Alliance Guard again!” An old man from the Hall of Divine Royal signaled for the group of people to fly toward the opposite direction of where the Bloodshed Clan was.

However, they never expected to bump into a group of several hundreds of thousands of people flying toward them not long after they left.

“D*mn it! What should we do now that we’ve bumped into them? Both sides are big forces and they’ve discovered us as this is a valley!” A man from the Skies Pavilion had a darkened look on his face when he

saw the group of people in front of them.

The corners of Lily's mouth twitched several times before she said, "We are really unlucky! Hopefully, they aren't members of the Alliance Guard!"

A member who once belonged to the Lagorio family was standing next to her said, "Pavilion Master, why don't we turn around and escape right now? Since they are still some distance away from us, some of us would be able to survive if we turn around to escape now, right?"

Cold sweat had already covered the forehead of some people. After all, there were several hundreds of thousand people and they had no idea which forces they were from. If these people were coming toward them and were members of the Alliance Guard, that would be very troublesome.

Lily was also slightly unsettled. However, she thought about it before she said softly to the others, "Hold on and don't panic! They might not know that we are people from the abandoned world. When they've arrived, we can just stand aside and allow them to walk past us. There aren't many of us and the other party might just be passing by. They might not know that we are people from the abandoned world."

Lily paused here before she continued speaking, "On the contrary, if we turn around and escape now, they would definitely hunt us down when they see us escaping. By then, only a very small number of us would be able to stay alive. Who knows how many strong masters are among this group of people! They might not even ask us if we stay and just give way to them!"

"That's right. Let's do that then. The news about us coming from the abandoned world hasn't spread yet. Hence, apart from the Bloodshed Clan, only the Nine Armies know about this. This group of people has no idea where we are from! Later on, we can just say that we are members of a small pavilion!" A man from the Hall of Divine Royal thought about it and nodded. He could not help but glance at Lily. "Who would have expected that you, the Skies Pavilion Mistress, don't have a high fighting prowess but have a smart mind!"

Soon, that group of people had flown over. Lily and the rest immediately retreated to both sides. They proactively allowed the other party to walk past them. On top of that, they lowered their heads and dared not make eye contact with those people.

“Who’s this group of people? They are quite understanding to make way for us to pass by first!” An old woman said happily when flying past them.

“Haha… Who knows? They might be some families or small pavilions. They don’t have many people who are at the ultimate god level!” Another old man spoke after taking a look at this group of people. “We are almost there. Who would have expected so many people to enter this time? What a surprise!”

Chapter 1837

Lily and the rest felt their hearts sink when they heard what the old man said. Cold sweat started dripping from the forehead of some people as they were extremely frightened. Unexpectedly, these people actually knew that a large number of people had entered from the abandoned world.

Could it be possible that these were also members of the Alliance Guard? They must have rushed over to take action against those who came in from the abandoned world after they learned about the news!

Luckily, this group of people seemed to not pay much attention to them and was not even suspicious of them. They flew past Lily and the rest one after another. Soon, almost all of those who were in front had flown past them.

Everyone immediately relaxed at this moment. Unexpectedly, a man in white clothes frowned and stopped by Lily at this moment.

After the man took a closer look, he said to Lily, “You, look up!”

Lily’s heart dropped and she slowly raised her head up. “Lance? Lance, it really is you!”

After she finished speaking, Lily’s tears trickled down her face as she hugged the man in white clothes tightly.

The man in white clothes was none other than Lance White, who entered the Misty Forest with others seven to eight months ago.

“Lance, you guys know one another?” With the wave of her hand, the old woman leading them signaled for everybody to stop.

Only then did Lance said with slightly red eyes, “M-Master, she’s my mother. It’s my mother. I was thinking previously if my parents would be among the people who entered from the abandoned world as there are so many of them. I’ve never expected to see my mother and some of the Lagorio family members here. This is great!”

The old woman frowned and looked at these people in front of her as she spoke, “Are you guys from the abandoned world? Why did you come over? Didn’t they say that 500 to 600 thousand people had entered the area? Why are there only 30 thousand of you here? Even if there are many monster beasts in that forest, it wouldn’t result in such a small number of you left because you guys were fighting over treasures.”

An old man from the Hall of Divine Royal frowned as he glanced at Lance. He was thinking that since Lance was still alive, these shouldn’t be members of the Alliance Guard. Instead, they must be members of the Anti-Alliance Guard.

He took a step forward after he made up his mind. He gestured politely with his hands and said, “Honourable senior, we are people who entered from the abandoned world. However, what should we say? Some of our people here had some hatred toward the other forces when we were outside. As we were hunted by the Bloodshed Clan disciples when we were in the forest, we don’t have many people left. Many of our people had died!”

That old lady nodded after she heard this. “I see. However, there are really too few of you left!”

Only then did the old man say, “No, there are still some people who are our enemies and they have gone over to help the Nine Armies. The Bloodshed Clan members attacked the Nine Armies after

hunting us down for three days and we have no idea why. That is why we finally had an opportunity to leave this place…"

Unexpectedly, the old lady had a slightly darkened expression on her face after she heard what the old man said. She glanced at the old man coldly and said, "Since those people know how to help the Nine Armies, why didn't you guys go over? The people of the Nine Armies are members of the Anti-Alliance Group. They must have offended the Bloodshed Clan because of you guys. If not, the members of the Bloodshed Clan wouldn't attack them without any reason!"

Chapter 1838

The old man was so frightened that he did not know what to say when he saw the angry expression on the old lady's face.

He could only speak with a trembling voice. "This…. This is mainly because…".

Lily saw that the situation was unfavorable so she immediately said, "Honourable senior, it's not that we don't want to lend a helping hand. Not only do we have a low fighting prowess, but the other group also had so many more people than us and we aren't their opponent. We were enemies in the past and they would definitely kill us if we went over!"

Only then did Lance walked forward to gesture at the old lady politely and said, "Master, this is my mother and I'm sure that she would not lie to us. She must've been forced to do something like this!"

Only then did the old lady nod. "Alright, follow us over there if that's the case. Since the Bloodshed Clan is attacking the Nine Armies, we need to travel at a faster speed!!?

An old man with red hair, who was standing beside, smiled indifferently and said, "Let's go. Since you guys came from that side, we, the members of the Anti-Alliance Guard, will think of ways to protect all of you. At the very least, we will not allow them to kill you in front of us. Don't worry!"

"Thank you, senior!" Lily and the rest exchanged glances as they were delighted.

Lance also made an introduction between both parties. “Mother, this is our clan master and he’s very strong. He’s in the second-grade soul-penetrating level and will break through into the third-grade

Soon.”

He then looked at the old lady and continued, “This is my master, the First Elder of our pavilion. She’s a master in the First-grade soul-penetrating level!”

“Alright. This is great. It’s great that you aren’t dead. Mother knows that you are still alive. It’s good that you’re alive!” Lily nodded before following everyone else as they flew toward the direction of the Nine Armies.

After flying for some time, Lance could not help but ask the question that was hidden in his heart. “Mother, this is weird. Why didn’t we see father and the members of the White family? Could it be that they did not enter this area with you?”

Lily was furious when she heard this. She said with gritted teeth, “Don’t mention that b*stard Nash White. That guy is a heartless person and he’s already abandoned the two of us.”

Lance inhaled deeply. He and several friends arrived at the entrance not long after they entered the forest. They never expected that the First Elder of Pavilion Billow Cloud would pay a visit to the entrance because she was free. Since they bumped into one another, the First Elder forcefully brought them into this world.

Certainly, the First Elder focused more on Lance’s wonderful training talents. After entering this area, she groomed Lance well and after six months, he was already a master in the Eighth-grade ultimate god level. He was even addressed as the No. 1 genius by the members of the Pavilion Billow Cloud.

Although he had very good achievements, Lance kept thinking about his parents. However, there was nothing he could do as it was impossible for him to leave the place. He could only stay and train at the

Pavilion Billow Cloud.

He thought that he would not meet his parents again in this lifetime. He could never imagine that he would meet Lily and some members of the Lagorio family then. He was extremely delighted by this coincidence.

“Mother, what really happened? Isn’t Dad a nice person? He had been treating you nicely previously…”

Chapter 1839

Lance had a confused look on. He never imagined that everything would change even though he was gone for only seven or eight months.

“You didn’t know about this before but Nash had an illegitimate son with that woman called Joan Xavier, son,” Lily said in a furious tone. “Ever since you went missing, Nash did send people to search for you, but he started to consider taking his illegitimate son back. Of course, I did not agree to that, so I tried to stop him…”

Lily told the entire story to Lance, adding embellishments along the way. However, she skipped telling Lance about her affair with the Third Elder as well as the poisoning incident. After all, she had no way to say these things out loud.

“That Nash White! So this means my grandpa and grandma are all dead? And this is all that is left of the Lagorio family?”

Lance was so furious that he clenched his fists after he heard this. “I never thought that they would treat you like this, Mom. Don’t worry. From today onward, I will protect and avenge you!”

“Don’t act rashly, Lance,” Lily said hastily. “Jack’s martial talent is pretty good. He has returned for a period now, and I think that he might have already broken into the first or second-grade ultimate god-level. More importantly, that brat’s fighting power is shockingly powerful. He even has the strength to go beyond his cultivation level. Since your master is an Elder, you’d better cultivate yourself properly.

We'll kill him when we have the opportunity in the future!"

Lance gave a wan smile. "So what if he's at the second-grade ultimate god level? Mom, did you know that ever since I came here, cultivating myself has been a lot easier? Furthermore, the master values me a lot. He gave me plenty of treasures to help me cultivate myself, and now I'm at the eighth-grade ultimate god level!"

Lance looked around his surroundings before whispering to Lily, "Don't worry, Mom. So long as I cultivate myself properly and break into the soul-penetrating realm, I might become the next clan master. Now the clan master and the others have their eyes on me!"

Lily was extremely excited when she heard this. This clan was very powerful, with hundreds of thousands of people and two fighters of the soul-penetrating realm. If her son becomes the clan master in the future, it would be so easy to kill the White family and avenge her parents and her family.

"All right. Let's not rush this. It's never too late for a gentleman to take revenge. We're in no rush. Sooner or later, we'll kill them and avenge your grandpa and grandma and the others!"

Lily nodded her head. Originally, she had not much hope of taking revenge, but it had been rekindled in her heart once more.

As the two talked, the Nine Armies finally appeared before them.

Jack and the others and the Nine Armies were already standing together. There were still twenty or thirty thousand people from the Bloodshed Clan who were left, and they flew to the Sword King Clan's side, standing alongside them.

"You have to take revenge for us, Master Wallman. These people killed our clan master, the First Elder, the Second Elder, and the others!"

The Fifth Elder of the Bloodshed Clan immediately came before the master of the Sword King Clan, Josh Wallman, complaining.

Josh frowned when he saw the situation. “How did your clan lose so terribly? And why are there so many people left from the Nine Armies?”

The Fifth Elder raised his hands into a fistto-palm salute and said, “It’s not just people from the Nine Armies, Master Wallman. There are also hundreds of thousands of people from that abandoned world. We’ve killed so many of their people already, but there are still many left. Some of their cultivation levels have even greatly increased! We are not sure if they’ve already been here for two or three months!”

The Sixth Elder also took a step forward and said, “Master Wallman, we are people who protect the Alliance Guard. You have to decide for us!”

Chapter 1840

“But no way that several Elders of yours are dead even your clan master? I know the strength of your clan!”

Josh could still not believe the sight before him. It was way out of expectations. According to his prediction, it should be the Nine Armies who were suffering a great defeat.

Even if the Nine Armies had obtained the help of many people from the abandoned world, it was already good enough if some of the people of the abandoned world could break into the first or second-grade ultimate god level. Furthermore, there would not be many people who managed to break into the ultimate god realm. It would be considered extraordinary if there were dozens—or at most, a hundred of them. Even under these circumstances, the Bloodshed Clan should not lose so terribly.

Edward would not have been killed, at least.

“It’s that brat, Master Wallman. It’s that d*mned brat. He’s only at the seventhgrade ultimate god level,

but his fighting skills are extremely powerful. He killed our Elders, and his fighting power is probably stronger than the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies!”

The Fifth Elder pointed at Jack angrily, speaking through clenched teeth. He looked like he wanted to immediately shred Jack into pieces.

“No way. He’s stronger than their First Fortress Master?”

Josh was shocked when he heard this. He already had that sort of fighting power even at the seventh-grade ultimate god realm. Then how strong would he be once he broke into the soul-penetrating realm?

After he thought about it, he furrowed his brows. He knew that if he did not get rid of this brat, the entire Alliance Guard would suffer in the future.

“That’s right. That brat is a genius from God knows where, and his fighting skills are extremely strong. Master Wallman, you must kill him and avenge our clan!”

The people of the Bloodshed Clan all looked at Josh.

Josh looked at Jack and asked, “You’re not from the Nine Armies, brat. Which force did. You come from?”

Jack grimaced. The man would definitely not believe him if he said he was from the abandoned world. However, with his martial power now, never mind that he did not know what huge forces there were now

—even if he said anything, no one would believe him.

As for a casual trainer? If he was only a casual trainer, he would not have led people to help the Nine

Armies.

After thinking about it, he could only shrug his shoulders helplessly and said frankly, “Where am I from? Hehe. I’m someone who came from the abandoned world. I was only lucky enough to break into my current cultivation level!”

“Someone from the abandoned world?”

The people from the Sword King Clan were completely stupefied when they heard this.

Even if this brat has been here for two months, there was no way he could break into the seventh-grade ultimate god realm.

In the abandoned world, there was no martial technique to cultivate oneself into the ultimate god realm. Furthermore, they did not have high grade spirited grass to cultivate themselves.

That was why the brat must have only had the chance to break into the first-grade ultimate god realm after coming in here. However, the fact that he could break into the seventh grade so quickly was truly astounding

“I’ll just give it to you straight, brat. We’re from the Alliance Guard, which is why we did not allow all of you in. That’s because the martial resources and the Chi energy here are limited too. Although we had plenty of people coming in here over the years, the most they could reach was the ninth-grade soul-penetrating realm. No one has yet to surpass that level and enter the nirvana realm!”

Chapter 1841

Josh did not immediately give orders to go into battle. Instead, he smiled at Jack. “A genius like you is rare indeed. According to logic, we have already killed you, but now the Bloodshed Clan has lost many people, and so has the Nine Armies. You originally had hundreds of thousands of people, but you’re almost wiped out, and only over a hundred thousand of you are left. That’s why I hope that we can have a discussion to settle this matter!”

“Master Wallman, they’re from the abandoned world. How could you say something like that?”

The people from the Bloodshed Clan were furious. They just could not understand what Josh was thinking.

Although everyone had gradually forgotten about the people from the abandoned world as they were not here for long, with so many people coming in at one go, were they not supposed to investigate further as one of the forces of the Alliance Guard?

If that was the case, would not their master and the people of the Bloodshed Clan who had died have sacrificed themselves in vain?

Josh glared at the other man and told Jack, “Your martial talent is pretty good, punk. I can give you an option. Bring your people who are of the ultimate god realm and the true god realm to our clan and become our people. As for those who have not even achieved the true god realm, I hope that you can kill them off. This way, we can explain ourselves properly when we go back!”

It was indeed the first time that Josh had seen such a genius, so he wanted to immediately recruit Jack into his clan. Then the Sword King Clan would definitely grow stronger.

However, as he was afraid that the superiors would punish him, he thought of this method. They only had over a hundred thousand people left, and those who were in the semi-god realm made up half of their numbers. So long as Jack and the others were willing to kill the other half, they would still be left with a few ten thousand people. Then he could explain everything to the Alliance Guard.

“No way!”

Before Jack could say anything, Nash was already huffing, “Why should we trust you? Besides, the remaining of our people have fought to survive till now. It’s difficult enough for them to live. Why on earth would we fight them?”

Alejandro also took a step forward and said, “That’s right. We’ll fight you even if we die today. Anyway, we have plenty of people if we team up with the Nine Armies. Even if we lose, you’ll also suffer great losses.”

“That’s right, Young Master Jack. Don’t believe their nonsense. What if they turn their back on us if we kill those of lower cultivation levels? He just wants us to have a civil war!”

A few people from the third-class aristocratic families immediately stepped forward and spoke. There were not many people of the true god realm in the thirdclass aristocratic families in the first place. Now the remaining people of the semi-god realm made up the majority. If Jack agreed to that proposal, they would be left with even fewer people.

“I can make an oath if you don’t believe me!”

Afraid that Jack was going to reject the proposal, Josh immediately raised his hand and spoke in a solemn tone.

“No need to make an oath. If you promise us that we can join your clan, we might consider your offer. But there’s no way that we’ll kill our own people!”

A master from a second-class aristocratic family said after thinking for a while.

“I don’t think that will do. There are just far too many of you. Furthermore, you killed so many people from the Bloodshed Clan. If I take all of you in, my superiors will definitely lecture me. Never mind that we can’t protect you-even our clan would be in danger then!”

Chapter 1842

“Haha. Then there’s no way around it. We’ll never join you. Even if all of us were to join you, I wouldn’t dare to bet everyone’s lives on it!”

Jack laughed. “After all, your Alliance Guard has always been against us in the first place. If we follow you and get ambushed by a few big clans, we would have no way to fight back!”

“You’re right, Brother Jack. We must not believe their words!”

Austin also clenched his fists, glaring at the people before him. “I’m advising all of you to leave, Clan Master Wallman. Otherwise, if we fight you, your clan members will suffer greatly! We have the numbers, after all!”

“Ah. If this is the case, I don’t have a choice. Seems like I can only kill you today!”

Josh released a sigh and said, “Don’t scare me, First Fortress Master. You have many people, but your people have fought the Bloodshed Clan for so long just now. Plenty of them probably don’t have much Chi left in their bodies. So what if you have a lot of people on your side? We have plenty of fighters in the ultimate god realm here. And we have three in the soulpenetrating realm! More importantly, there are many people on your side who have suffered serious injuries. Haha. I don’t think you can hurt us all that much!”

“Three at the soul-penetrating realm? Not two?”

When Austin heard this, he was so shocked that his face darkened. Originally he thought that they had one first-grade and one second-grade soul-penetrating realm fighter, and they were already extremely hard to fight. He did not have a lick of confidence in him.

The words he spewed just now were intended to scare them off and see if they would leave.

However, now it looked like there was no way that they could be scared off!

Josh was very satisfied when he saw everyone's frightened expressions.“ Haha. Two soul-penetrating realm fighters? That's news from months ago,” he said, smiling. “The Second Elder of our clan has already broken into the first-grade soul-penetrating realm, and now we have another fighter in the soul-penetrating realm.”

“This is bad. Brother Jack, not only are we no match for them if we were to fight-we won't even be able to inflict great damage upon them!”

Austin dragged Jack to the side, frowning as he spoke, “Besides, I'm injured now. There are many among my people and yours who are injured. Our enemies are full of vigor. How are we supposed to fight them?”.

Unexpectedly, Jack spoke with a bitter smile, “We have no choice but to fight them. Still, I believe that many of their disciples will also die if we fight them!”

Jack was confident on this point.

“First Fortress Master, First Fortress Master! Look, look!”

Just at this moment, Kye pointed toward a direction in excitement. In that direction, there were hundreds of thousands of people flying over rapidly.

“Haha. It looks like the heavens can't bear to watch the Nine Armies die off!”

Austin suddenly smiled excitedly after taking a closer look. “My apologies, Master Wallman, but the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud have arrived. Oh dear, do you think that since the Bloodshed Clan informed you, we won' t inform our own people of this? They indeed arrived a little late but now that they are here, there's no way for you to wipe us out!”

“You…”

The people of the Bloodshed Clan were completely speechless. With this, it was practically impossible to wipe out the remnants of the Nine Armies and the people who came from the abandoned world.

The corners of Josh's mouth twitched viciously, and his expression turned dark. He was well aware that the Nine Armies were actually not that fearsome. What was fearsome was the punk named Jack White.

The brat's martial talent was just too frightening. He was only a seventhgrade ultimate god level fighter, yet he had the power to kill a fighter at the first-grade soul-penetrating level. This would definitely be a concern for the Alliance Guard in the future.

Chapter 1843

Soon, the group of people came closer to Jack and the others.

"That's not right. Why are there people from the Hall of Divine Royal? And it-it looks like there are people from the Pavilion of Skies!"

A man from the White family took a closer look, and in the end, he spoke in shock, "My God. Master, look. That Lily is actually with them, and the woman beside her looks like Lily!"

"Lily!"

Nash's expression soured when he heard this. The woman was venomous. They had been husband and wife before, but he had long seen her as an enemy now, wishing for her to die.

In the beginning, when he saw Joel after entering this space, he was thinking that Lily had probably entered as well.

However, he had never seen her. Furthermore, as her cultivation level had been destroyed before, her

cultivation level now could not be that high. He surmised that even if she had come in, she would have likely died in the forest, so he did not think about this at all.

He did not imagine that the woman had such good fortune to stay alive for so long.

“Lance?”

Jack also frowned. Lance had been gone for seven or eight months. Everyone thought that he was dead. Jack also did not think much about his so-called older brother, assuming that he had died long ago.

Yet this fellow had actually been in here for God knows how long. Before, in the abandoned world, he was the ultimate genius of the White family. He had entered this world seven or eight months ago, and he had even gone to the Pavilion Billow Cloud. His cultivation level was probably pretty high now.

“It’s really the First Young Master. How is he still alive?”

“That’s right. How did he end up here? Unless he came here when he disappeared? Doesn’t that mean he’s already been here for more than half a year?”

“But why is Lily with the people of the Pavilion Billow Cloud?”

The White family people were all shocked and began murmuring in a discussion.

“Lance is still alive?”

Randall from the Lancaster family carefully observed the group, and in the end, he told his mother, Shelby,“ Mom, look. The two high-ranked youths from the Lancaster family who disappeared along with Lance are also there. It looks like they’re still alive!”

“That’s right. The two youths from the Ximenes family are there too! Who knows what cultivation level they’re at now? They’re probably pretty goodat least at the true god realm, right? They were only in the semi-god realm when they disappeared!”

Another old man from the Ximenes family spoke excitedly.

In the end, the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud stopped in the distance, looking at everything before them.

“I didn’t think that Edward Gray would actually die!”

When they saw Edward’s body on the ground, the master of the Pavilion Billow Cloud, Tomas Lopez, had shock flashing in his eyes.

Chapter 1844

“Master, Brother Randall, this is great. We finally found you!”

The youths from the Lancaster family immediately flew over happily when they saw Shelby and the others.

“This is great, Master. Thank goodness!”

The two youths from the Ximenes family also flew over, extremely excited.

Only Lance from the White family stood coldly without moving a muscle after he saw Nash and the other White family members. He had no intention of flying over.

“This is great, Lance. You’re still alive! Thank goodness you’re alive!”

Nash was a little excited when he saw that Lance was still alive. After all, Lance had always excelled in everything, and he was his son. Otherwise, he would not have sent people to find him for so long in the first place.

He had to accept the reality that Lance was dead after finding no news about Lance for so long. Yet he still hoped that Lance was still alive.

“That’s right. I’m still alive. Of course, I’m alive. No way that I’d die so easily!”

Lance’s heart was filled with hatred. He wanted to immediately kill Nash, Jack, and the others.

However, there were too many people here. Furthermore, even if he wanted to take action in this situation, the master of the Pavilion Billow Cloud and the others would not allow him to do anything

After thinking about it, he tamped down on the hatred in his side. Then he flew over with a small smile on his face. “This is great, Father. I didn’t think that I would see all of you here. I thought I would never see you and Mother again! This is great. Butler

Titus and the First Elder, you’re all here. This is great!”

Here, he looked at Jack, who was beside Nash. “This must be my little brother, Jack. Right, Father?” he said. “Mother told me earlier that you had a woman outside and had a son with her. His martial talent was tremendous, so you gave him the position of house heir, right?”

When he heard this, Nash smiled awkwardly. “Actually, you can’t say that I gave the position of house heir to him. We could not find you even after such a long time and we all thought that you were dead- that you had been eaten by monsters. Furthermore, your mother poisoned me in secret, and I thought that I was doomed to die. So I got people to get Jack back. Jack is your little brother, but I did not give him the position of house heir of my own volition. He inherited the position after winning a martial competition among the heirs of the family!”

“Mother poisoned you?”

Lance’s heart thumped suddenly. Lily had never mentioned this before.

It looked like the situation was not as simple as he thought it was.

Nash was stunned for a moment, then he quickly gave a cold smile. “Hehe. I knew that your mother would not tell you a lot of things. The list probably includes her collusion with the Third Elder to take the martial resources from the branch families for themselves, secretly sending people to assassinate Jack, as well as her plot with the Third Elder to kill me and take the position of housemaster!”

Lily’s face darkened. Still, she took a step forward and spoke forcefully,“ Don’t listen to that b*stard Nash’s words, Lance. I did everything for you. If he didn’t ignore you, I wouldn’t have done something like that!”

Chapter 1845

“Not another word, Mother!”

Lance turned his head around to glare at Lily. “Let’s just put everything that has happened behind us. I have no interest in becoming the master of the White family now. It’s good enough that I can see you, and I hope that you and Father can put your differences aside. Don’t hold grudges against each other, even if you have to treat each other like strangers!”

“You…”

Lily was extremely furious, but she quickly nodded her head. “I don’t mind all that anymore. I’m satisfied enough if you’re alive and I can see you!”

Nash did not think that Lance would be so understanding. He had been worried that Lance would hate him. When he heard Lance's words, he spoke with a relieved expression, "That's right. Let bygones be bygones. It's all right so long as you don't hate me, Lance. Even if I'm a stranger to your mother from now on, you're still my son!"

"Mmhmm!"

Lance nodded his head, then he smiled at Jack and extended his hands. "You're my brother, eh? I heard that your martial talent is pretty good. I hope that you'll be able to lead the White family to glory in the future. As for me, I'll definitely stay in the Pavilion Billow Cloud from now on."

Jack was still a little confused. When Lance had seen him and Nash just now, he had given off such a frosty aura, as though he still hated them. He did not think that his attitude would completely change after Nash said a few words.

Did Lance truly understand everything and did not care about the position of the White family house heir? Did he hate Lily's behavior so much that he did not care that they killed his grandparents?

Although he was still confused, Jack still flashed a smile at him, taking his hand and shaking it. "Hello, Big Brother!"

"Haha. Let's work hard together from now on and cultivate ourselves properly!"

Lance burst into laughter. He looked like he did not harbor an inch of hatred for Jack.

Just as Jack and the others were talking, the master of the Pavilion Billow Cloud raised his hands into a fist-to-palm salute to Josh. "Haha. We've not seen each other in years, Master Wallman. You still look as lively as ever!"

Josh gave a cold harrumph. "Hmph, cut the crap, Tomas. I'm not that familiar with you. Let me be

straightforward. Too many people came from the abandoned world this time. This matter will probably incite a huge battle between the Alliance Guard and the Anti-Alliance Guard. You'd better consider the matter carefully. For all this while, there have been plenty of battles between the two sides. I suggest that you hand the people who came in over to us!"

Here, Josh stopped before continuing, "As for the Nine Armies' interference in the matter, as well as the deaths of so many people from the Bloodshed Clan, even the master of the Bloodshed Clan and their Elders, I can plead for leniency with my superiors. They might be willing to let this go. What do you think?".

"Haha. That's funny!"

Tomas laughed after he heard this. "Do you really think we'd hand them over to you, Josh? Did I rush over here from a great distance just to hand them over to you? If this were the case, how am I supposed to explain everything to the ruling clans once I go back?"

The First Elder of the Pavilion Billow Cloud also stepped forward and said, "That's right. Master Wallman, in these circumstances, our power is about the same as yours. Furthermore, we have plenty of people from the Nine Armies and the abandoned world on our side. We outnumber you by two or three times, and we're a lot stronger than you overall. If we hand them over to you in this situation, our clan will not be able to show our faces properly!"

Chapter 1846

These words made the corners of Josh's mouth twitch slightly.

He was not an idiot. He knew that they would not hand those people over so easily. However, as someone from the Alliance Guard, he had to say such words too. Otherwise, he would not be able to explain everything properly once he went back. That was why he wanted to show his power.

After thinking about it, he said, "All right, Tomas. You're sure that you won't hand them over? You're seriously not afraid that a huge war will break out between the two sides? You'd be the number one sinner then!"

Tomas just smiled as usual. “Haha. We’ll worry about the future once we’re there. Anyway, I won’t hand them over to you now. If you’ve got the guts, you can come over to snatch them away. See if you can kill them right under my nose.”

After saying that, Tomas thought for a while before saying to the other man, “Master Wallman, I suggest that we leave this matter as it is for today. About six hundred thousand of them had come in, but now only about two hundred thousand of them are left. Furthermore, the Bloodshed Clan and the Nine Armies have lost so many people. Let’s just stop for today. Otherwise, neither side will get anything good out of this!”

“Hmph. I can’t decide anything on today’s matter, so I’ll take my leave first. As for what we will do later, I think the bigger clans in the Alliance Guard will only decide after having a discussion!”

Josh gave a cold harrumph and quickly waved his hand, leading everyone away.

“We’re leaving just like that, Master Wallman?”

After flying for a while, an Elder from the Bloodshed Clan asked Josh, dissatisfied.

Josh stopped and glared at him. “Of course. Why would we stay there and not leave? If we truly fight against them, we won’t be their match. If Tomas wasn’t afraid that their clan would suffer great losses if we truly fought while he also did not want his clan to suffer, he probably wouldn’t have let us go either!”

“Then-then what should the Bloodshed Clan do? We’re only left with thirty thousand people!”

The old man heaved a sigh, at a loss.

Josh was stunned for a while, then he quickly told the Bloodshed Clan while smiling, “Your Bloodshed Clan is no longer considered a proper clan. Never mind your remaining numbers—even if you returned to the Clan Association, the forces that you offended before might even give you trouble. Are you really that willing to allow your clan to die off or be dispersed just like that?”

Here, Josh paused for a while before continuing, “That’s why I think the remaining thirty thousand of you should join our clan. This way, the Sword King Clan will grow a little stronger, and all of your disciples will be able to survive. Of course, those of you who are at the ninth-grade ultimate god level will still be treated like Elders once you join our clan as if you were our own!”

“We wish to join! We’re willing to!”.

The Fifth Elder and the others all cried out. After all, the Sword King Clan was a lot stronger than the Bloodshed Clan. Furthermore, their Elders would still be treated like Elders once they joined their clan. This was a good thing. Why would they not rejoice?

“All right, all right. Let’s go. Let’s return to the Clan Association first. We’ll get all of you registered once we get back, arrange accommodation and give each of you a token!”

Josh was delighted. This was not a pointless trip after all. Although the Bloodshed Clan was no more, the Sword King Clan had suddenly grown a lot stronger. This way, the clans that were once almost as powerful as them would probably admire them now.

Chapter 1847

“Phew! They’re finally gone! It’s fortunate that you and your men came in time, Master Tomas!”

After Josh and the others left the place, the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies — Austin Drago-heaved a long sigh of relief. Before the Pavilion of Billow Cloud arrived, he was truly in a complete state of panic, fearing that if they really needed to be in a battle with the Sword King Clan, they would not be able to defeat them.

“Hahaha! I didn’t expect that you could make that Bloodsh*t Clan suffered such a great loss! Bloodshed Clan is now at its end. Yup. No more Bloodshed Clan! Hmmm… Bloodshed Clan is the nearest Alliance Guard to you and they often come to this forest to hunt for treasures. Now that they are gone, there won’t be any people coming over to fight for training resources with you

Guys!”

Tomas laughed aloud, and then added, “And it’d be so much easier for the Nine Armies to develop and expand!”

Nonetheless, a few lines formed between Austin’s brows as he heard it. “It’s true that the Bloodshed Clan has suffered great loss. But, there are too many people from the abandoned world who have entered this place! I don’t think the Alliance Guard will turn a blind eye to this matter. Sigh! What should we do next?” Austin spilled out all his concerns.

Tomas, too, furrowed upon hearing. “Don’t worry for now. When the people of the Sword King Clan return to their place, they would definitely tell the higher superiors about the situation, and they would definitely hold a meeting to discuss this matter. After all, it’s a serious matter! Hmmm… This time, the Nine Armies suffered severe losses as well. I actually have two ideas!”

“You have ideas? What are those?”

Austin looked at the other party with an expectant expression.

Tomas then explained, “First option, to prevent the people of the Alliance Guard from launching sudden attacks on all of you, I’d suggest that those who came from the abandoned world seek shelter under the Pavilion of Billow Cloud, or even be part of us! The second option, they could stay in this place with the people of the Nine Armies, after all, the Nine Armies have suffered great loss, and in case the Sword King Clan attacks any of you after we left, you have these people.”

Austin thought carefully about the suggestions before saying, “If I were to propose, it’d be better for

Jack and his group to stay on this side of the Nine Armies. The cultivation and training resources inside this forest are good for them too. Furthermore, it's highly likely that the Alliance Guard thinks that these people will go with the Pavilion of Billow Cloud and will not stay with the Nine Armies. In that way, we'll be safer too!"

"Hmmm. Why not ask them? They'll decide for themselves!"

Tomas thought for a while then proposed, "I think the Alliance Guard will not want to wage war against the Nine Armies, but they will not let the matter of the Bloodshed Clan go as well. The higher management in Alliance Guard will not ignore it. So, I think they will send some clans whose overall combat power is above average to find trouble with you!"

Tomas then informed Jack, Lily, and the others about the situation, and let them decide for themselves.

After giving the matter some thought, Jack finally decided to stay with the Nine Armies, while Lily and those thirty thousand people from the Hall of Divine Royal decided to follow the Pavilion of Billow Cloud. They even want to be part of them!

The people of the Pavilion of Billow Cloud were naturally happy to have thirty thousand people join their sect, and among these people, some of them had broken through to the first-grade ultimate god level! Soon, the Pavilion of Billow Cloud brought the new joiners and left the place.

"Let's collect our spoils of war!"

Looking at those corpses on the ground, Austin ordered.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1846-1850

Chapter 1846
These words made the corners of Josh's mouth twitch slightly.

He was not an idiot. He knew that they would not hand those people over so easily. However, as someone from the Alliance Guard, he had to say such words too. Otherwise, he would not be able to explain everything properly once he went back. That was why he wanted to show his power.

After thinking about it, he said, "All right, Tomas. You're sure that you won't hand them over? You're seriously not afraid that a huge war will break out between the two sides? You'd be the number one sinner then!"

Tomas just smiled as usual. "Haha. We'll worry about the future once we're there. Anyway, I won't hand them over to you now. If you've got the guts, you can come over to snatch them away. See if you can kill them right under my nose."

After saying that, Tomas thought for a while before saying to the other man, "Master Wallman, I suggest that we leave this matter as it is for today. About six hundred thousand of them had come in, but now only about two hundred thousand of them are left. Furthermore, the Bloodshed Clan and the Nine Armies have lost so many people. Let's just stop for today. Otherwise, neither side will get anything good out of this!"

"Hmph. I can't decide anything on today's matter, so I'll take my leave first. As for what we will do later, I think the bigger clans in the Alliance Guard will only decide after having a discussion!"

Josh gave a cold harrumph and quickly waved his hand, leading everyone away.

"We're leaving just like that, Master Wallman?"

After flying for a while, an Elder from the Bloodshed Clan asked Josh, dissatisfied.

Josh stopped and glared at him. "Of course. Why would we stay there and not leave? If we truly fight against them, we won't be their match. If Tomas wasn't afraid that their clan would suffer great losses if we truly fought while he also did not want his clan to suffer, he probably wouldn't have let us go either!"

"Then-then what should the Bloodshed Clan do? We're only left with thirty thousand people!"

The old man heaved a sigh, at a loss.

Josh was stunned for a while, then he quickly told the Bloodshed Clan while smiling, “Your Bloodshed Clan is no longer considered a proper clan. Never mind your remaining numbers—even if you returned to the Clan Association, the forces that you offended before might even give you trouble. Are you really that willing to allow your clan to die off or be dispersed just like that?”

Here, Josh paused for a while before continuing, “That’s why I think the remaining thirty thousand of you should join our clan. This way, the Sword King Clan will grow a little stronger, and all of your disciples will be able to survive. Of course, those of you who are at the ninth-grade ultimate god level will still be treated like Elders once you join our clan as if you were our own!”

“We wish to join! We’re willing to!”.

The Fifth Elder and the others all cried out. After all, the Sword King Clan was a lot stronger than the Bloodshed Clan. Furthermore, their Elders would still be treated like Elders once they joined their clan. This was a good thing. Why would they not rejoice?

“All right, all right. Let’s go. Let’s return to the Clan Association first. We’ll get all of you registered once we get back, arrange accommodation and give each of you a token!”

Josh was delighted. This was not a pointless trip after all. Although the Bloodshed Clan was no more, the Sword King Clan had suddenly grown a lot stronger. This way, the clans that were once almost as powerful as them would probably admire them now.

Chapter 1847
“Phew! They’re finally gone! It’s fortunate that you and your men came in time, Master Tomas!”

After Josh and the others left the place, the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies — Austin Drago-heaved a long sigh of relief. Before the Pavilion of Billow Cloud arrived, he was truly in a complete state of panic, fearing that if they really needed to be in a battle with the Sword King Clan, they would not be able to defeat them.

“Hahaha! I didn’t expect that you could make that Bloodsh*t Clan suffered such a great loss! Bloodshed Clan is now at its end. Yup. No more Bloodshed Clan! Hmmm… Bloodshed Clan is the nearest Alliance Guard to you and they often come to this forest to hunt for treasures. Now that they are gone, there won’t be any people coming over to fight for training resources with you Guys!”

Tomas laughed aloud, and then added, “And it’d be so much easier for the Nine Armies to develop and expand!”

Nonetheless, a few lines formed between Austin’s brows as he heard it. “It’s true that the Bloodshed Clan has suffered great loss. But, there are too many people from the abandoned world who have entered this place! I don’t think the Alliance

Guard will turn a blind eye to this matter. Sigh! What should we do next?" Austin spilled out all his concerns.

Tomas, too, furrowed upon hearing. "Don't worry for now. When the people of the Sword King Clan return to their place, they would definitely tell the higher superiors about the situation, and they would definitely hold a meeting to discuss this matter. After all, it's a serious matter! Hmmm… This time, the Nine Armies suffered severe losses as well. I actually have two ideas!"

"You have ideas? What are those?"

Austin looked at the other party with an expectant expression.

Tomas then explained, "First option, to prevent the people of the Alliance Guard from launching sudden attacks on all of you, I'd suggest that those who came from the abandoned world seek shelter under the Pavilion of Billow Cloud, or even be part of us! The second option, they could stay in this place with the people of the Nine Armies, after all, the Nine Armies have suffered great loss, and in case the Sword King Clan attacks any of you after we left, you have these people."

Austin thought carefully about the suggestions before saying, "If I were to propose, it'd be better for Jackie and his group to stay on this side of the Nine Armies. The cultivation and training resources inside this forest are good for them too. Furthermore, it's highly likely that the Alliance Guard thinks that these people will go with the Pavilion of Billow Cloud and will not stay with the Nine Armies. In that way, we'll be safer too!"

"Hmmm. Why not ask them? They'll decide for themselves!"

Tomas thought for a while then proposed, "I think the Alliance Guard will not want to wage war against the Nine Armies, but they will not let the matter of the Bloodshed Clan go as well. The higher management in Alliance Guard will not ignore it. So, I think they will send some clans whose overall combat power is above average to find trouble with you!"

Tomas then informed Jackie, Lily, and the others about the situation, and let them decide for themselves.

After giving the matter some thought, Jackie finally decided to stay with the Nine Armies, while Lily and those thirty thousand people from the Hall of Divine Royal decided to follow the Pavilion of Billow Cloud. They even want to be part of them!

The people of the Pavilion of Billow Cloud were naturally happy to have thirty thousand people join their sect, and among these people, some of them had broken through to the first-grade ultimate god level! Soon, the Pavilion of Billow Cloud brought the new joiners and left the place.

"Let's collect our spoils of war!"

Looking at those corpses on the ground, Austin ordered.

Chapter 1848
“Brother Jackie, thank you for choosing to stay. I thought you would choose to go with the Pavilion of Billow Cloud. After all, they’re more powerful than us, not to mention that they have slightly more soul penetrating level fighters than we do. The Master of the Pavilion of Billow Cloud is even at the second-grade soul-penetrating level!”

After the big crowd left the scene, Austin looked at Jackie and his group with a grateful face. The Nine Armies lost a lot this time, so he was really afraid that Jackie and his men would decide to go with the Pavilion of Billow Cloud, and the Nine Armies would be in huge trouble if the Alliance Guard sent their underlings to seek trouble.

Nonetheless, Jackie smiled lightly and said, “I don’t think that my elder brother, Lance will forgive me that easily. He’s now the disciple of the First Elder of the Pavilion of Billow Cloud. So that’s no way I’d go with them. Besides, we suddenly barged into this place and put you guys in danger, and I truly feel sorry about that. So, I think it’s better and wiser for us to stay with you guys, going through thick and thin together!”

Jackie’s words made Austin feel guilty and ashamed of himself because they knew that they were no match for the Bloodshed Clan and decided to wait, at the same time, somewhat reluctant to help Jackie and the group. However, Jackie and his group in the end still decided to go through thick and thin with them, when they could have secretly left the forest when the Nine Armies were fighting with the Bloodshed clan.

“Young Master Jackie, no matter what, we’re stuck with you! We don’t want to follow those people at all! After all, those who are from the Hall of Divine Royal decided to join the Pavilion of Billow Cloud, and we despised being under the same clan with them!”

The head of a second-class family said to Jackie after thinking for a brief moment.

“He’s right, Young Master Jackie! Although the Pavilion of Billow Cloud is strong and powerful, we have faith in you! We believe that once you break through to the soul penetrating realm, the Pavilion of Billow Cloud is nothing to you!”

Another head of a third-class family immediately chimed in and looked at Jackie with a smile.

They all knew very well in their hearts that Jackie was a third-grade alchemist, and although the Pavilion of Billow Cloud might appear to be strong and powerful right now, as long as Jackie had time to refine pills and distribute them to the others, they all would be able to improve their martial status in no time. Moreover, Jackie was a master among the masters; it would be the wisest and the most promising choice to follow Jackie.

Jackie did not know whether to cry or laugh after hearing all these boot-licking compliments from these family heads.

He then looked at Austin and handed him a healing pill. “First Fortress Master, I made this healing pill and it’s quite effective. Take it and you shall recover from your injuries in no time.”

“Thank you!”

Austin had healing pills as well, but since Jackie had offered him his, he did not want to reject his kindness. So, he accepted Jackie’s healing pill with a smile on his face and swallowed the pills. “Fortress Master Whittemore will arrange places for all of you to stay! On top of that, we’ll send several men to keep an eye on the peaks of the hills, and once we find anomalies or people from the Alliance Guard approaching this place, we can be notified immediately and prepare in advance!”

Fané nodded his head in agreement. “The Sword King Clan will definitely report to their superiors and they will hold discussion over it. And this back and forth effort will take some time, at least a month I guess. So, we’re relatively safe for at least a month, and within this one month, we shall improve our martial status! It’s the golden opportunity for us to train and improve ourselves!”

“Heh? But how much can we improve in Just a month’s time?”.

Austin smiled bitterly upon hearing Jackie’s words. “Raising the martial level in one month? Right, even if some demi-god level fighters are able to break into the early stage of True God Realm, it’s not much use for us. What we need are fighters with ultimate god level or soul-penetrating level! Only if we could have more people with soul-penetrating level!”

“Haha! Don’t worry about that. I’m certain that someone among us will break into the soul-penetrating realm within a month!”

Jackie chuckled and responded.

Chapter 1849
Austin thought that Jackie was bragging, but he did not bother to deny the other party. Austin then continued, “Right, Brother Jackie, you have more than a hundred thousand people with you, but they’re all from different clans and families, and the situation is similar to the Nine Armies back then-the Nine Armies came from different forces. Hmmm… I have a suggestion, but I’m not sure if it’s appropriate for me to propose it.”

“Is that so? Please go ahead, First Fortress Master!”

Jackie bowed to Austin politely and said, “Since we have decided to stay, we’re all in the same boat moving forward, and don’t worry about our loyalty toward you. We’ll definitely not have second thoughts nor will we have plans against you!”

“That’s for sure! We’re in this together and we fight together! Our people will not have second thoughts or evil plans against you too! You have my word!”

Austin bobbed his head and then gave his idea, “Brother Jackie, the idea is simple. You have many men of different clans and families, and the Nine Armies are the same too! Why…why don’t we build a clan together? We can all become one clan! What do you think?”

“Build a clan? Hmmm… It would be easier to manage and we can gather all the power and strength together then everyone won’t be suspicious nor jealous of one another. Right?”

Jackie frowned; he immediately understood the underlying intention of this proposal.

Right now, Austin possessed the strongest and highest martial level, and although Jackie had the numbers on his side, there were not many fighters with high martial levels. So, if both sides agreed to form a clan, Austin naturally wanted to be the clan master.

If he became the clan master, did not it mean that Jackie and his men would have to listen to him in the future? If this was the case, it was highly likely that Jackie and his group would not receive the same treatment and benefits as those people who were originally from the Nine Armies. Even worse, they might have to hand over the training materials and resources that they had scavenged in the forest!

That also includes Jackie’s refined pills! He would have to hand those pills to the clan as a contribution. It was for sure that Austin would not treat Jackie badly after knowing that Jackie was an excellent alchemist, but Jackie was unable to take special care of Nash nor Alejandro anymore if he wanted to help them raise their martial level.

“What do you think? The idea is good, right?”

Austin noticed the frown on Jackie’s forehead; he immediately probed further.

Before Jackie could reply, a fortress master next to him interrupted, “That’s a great idea! We have around 260 thousand people in total and coupled with Brother Jackie’s amazing talent that is comparable to a fighter of the first-grade soul-penetrating level, we now have two soul-penetrating level fighters and it’s time for us to set up a new clan!”

“Yes, they’re right! It’s indeed an excellent idea! But we had just experienced a tough battle, so it’s better for us to rest and recover for the time being. And after some time had passed, we could then hold the election for master and vice-master of the clan, how about that?”

The First Elder—who was beside the First Fortress Master-stood up and spilled his opinion. He believed that if Austin became the master of the clan, the chances of him becoming the vice-master would be high.

Jackie's combat power was strong, but his martial level was not that high. Furthermore, only people at the eighth grade and ninth-grade ultimate god level were eligible to be voters in the election.

"Hmmm… It's possible to do that. But many of us here are injured and need time to recuperate. Let's do it this way, we will elect the clan master and the vice-clan master after half a month, what do you think?"

Chapter 1850
"Sure! Not a problem! We just went through a tough battle, we should really rest and recuperate for the time being. Take your time to rest and recover, even if it takes twenty days!"

Austin's heart leaped up for joy; this was a great opportunity to take these people into his clan and have control over them.

Jackie and his group had the number, and the best thing was that in addition to Jackie, there were several sixth-grade ultimate god level fighters and a fifth-grade ultimate god level fighter in the group. They were not weak at all and their combat prowess was also strong!

Furthermore, they had quite a few people of first-grade ultimate god level.

Once he took in Jackie and his men, the overall combat power of his men would eventually increase.

"Good! Then let's do as you said! Let's rest for twenty days and we will hold an election after twenty days!"

Jackie replied with a smile hanging on his face.

Austin was rendered speechless; he did not expect this outcome at all—Jackie earned another five days!

However, he believed that even if he generously gave Jackie thirty days, the position of clan master would definitely still be his.

Therefore, Austin did not pester the matter further. He then flew into the sky and announced loudly, "Ladies and gentlemen, I have had a discussion with Brother Jackie and the Nine Armies are willing to take everyone in. We will all get along like real brothers and sisters. Even though we all come from different clans and families, prominent ones and smaller ones, we have decided to build a new clan for unity! From now on, we are all from the same clan, one big clan, and there's no distinction between the Nine Armies or the other clans!"

The people of the Nine Armies naturally applauded and cheered upon cheering the great news, while Jackie and the others naturally followed the crowd, applauding and cheering for the new arrangement.

However, inside their hearts, they all knew very well that once they merged and formed a new clan, Jackie and the others like Nash or Alejandro would no longer have a say in the new clan.

Nonetheless, overall, it was still an advantage. To be taken in by the AntiAlliance Guard was at least better than having no clans to take care of them at all. It was better than being hunted down by the Alliance Guard.

Austin nodded in satisfaction when he saw everyone cheering and applauding for this new formation. He then signaled everyone to quiet down and said, “However, since we’ve just gone through a very tough battle, we should rest and recover for twenty days! Then we will hold an election in twenty days! But, because there are too many people, we’ll do it this way; only people with combat powers of the fifth-grade ultimate god level and above are eligible to vote in this election, and every eligible voter has only one ballot. We will elect our master and vice-master in this election.

The newly elected master will decide the future direction of the clan; the newly elected master also has absolute power and everyone must respect and obey the master!”

The crowd applauded again at Austin’s speech. After a while, the battlefield was cleared up. The head of the Whittemore Fortress then led Jackie and the others away and arranged a place for them to stay.

The evening came by quickly. Nash, Alejandro, and those men with higher martial levels gathered at Jackie’s residence.

“Young Master Jackie, Austin is sneaky. His idea was basically in his favor; he wanted to absorb us, and he even had the other fortress masters completely grasped in his hands!”

Alejandro felt a flicker of irritation when he thought about what happened this afternoon.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1851-1855

Chapter 1851
Nash also nodded his head. “Originally, establishing a new clan was indeed a piece of good news for us. However, when he said that the future and any decisions relating to the clan are to be decided by the clan master —it just doesn’t sound right. If that’s the case, we won’t stand a chance to speak up in the future if he becomes the clan master!”

“That’s right. If there’s any dangerous task in the future, he will definitely get our people to be in charge of it. After all, he’s the First Fortress Master of the Nine Armies. He’ll definitely be biased toward his original subordinates!”

Kenneth was also extremely furious. “If we knew that this fellow wanted to just absorb all of us in the first place, we should have just gone with the people from the Pavilion Billow Cloud!”

Titus gave a bitter smile. “Your thinking is way too simple. It would have been the same even if we went with the Pavilion Billow Cloud. Didn’t the Pavilion Billow Cloud absorb the remaining people from the Hall of Divine Royal and Cloud Sky Sect into their ranks? I’m thinking that the people of the Pavilion Billow Cloud are still not too happy because Young Master Jackie didn’t choose to allow us to join their clan!”

“Sigh. The weak truly have no say in anything. If we’re not absorbed into the Pavilion Billow Cloud, then it’s the Nine Armies. Never mind, never mind. Fortunately, the Chi energy here is a lot thicker than before, and there are plenty of cultivation martial art techniques that will enable us to break into the ultimate god realm and increase our lifespan. Next time, let’s just cultivate ourselves here!”

Kenneth could only speak while heaving a helpless sigh.

“Don’t worry. Isn’t there twenty days still to the clan elections? Hehe. So long as we work hard, there’s still hope for me to be chosen as the clan master!”

Yet, everybody did not expect Jackie to smile and speak so confidently.

Nash’s eyes brightened after he heard this. “Really? It would be fantastic if you become a clan master. Never mind if you’ll take care of us, but you’ll definitely be fair. We’d be a lot more reassured compared to Austin becoming the clan master!”

“You’re not joking, right, Young Master Jackie? This-isn’t this too difficult? Austin said that only those whose cultivation levels are fifth-grade ultimate god realm and above will have the authority to vote. We have a lot of people, but only a few are at that cultivation level. How can we match them?”

Titus gave a bitter smile, unable to believe the young man's words.

"Hehe. No need to rush. I already have a sense of how to create third-grade premium pills. I estimate that I'll need five days at most to create third-grade premium pills. Once I succeed, I still have fifteen days to create pills!"

Jackie chuckled and said, "Don't forget that the Nine Armies are not that united. They'll definitely take the First Fortress Master's side to get benefits for the Nine Armies, but if we give the other eight fortress masters a third-grade premium pill? A pill like that would help them break into the first-grade soul-penetrating realm."

"That's right. Those who reap benefits from others dare not act against them. It isn't easy for those people at the ninth grade ultimate god realm to break into the soul-penetrating realm. There is a big gap between these two cultivation levels. If you give them a third-grade premium pill, it's a huge opportunity for them! Even an idiot wouldn't reject a chance like that!"

Titus suddenly understood what Jackie meant after listening to his reasoning. His expression became excited.

"It'll definitely work out. No need to give it to anyone else- just the fortress masters of the other eight fortresses. We'll give them one pill each, and the fortress master will definitely know what to get their subordinates to do. They'll definitely have a discussion!"

Kenneth also spoke with a grin. They all understood that a pill that would enable the fortress masters to quickly break into the first-grade soul-penetrating realm was extremely important to them.

"Only, this will definitely offend the First Fortress Master, right?"

Nash frowned after thinking about it.

Chapter 1852
"Haha. Whether we offend the First Fortress Master or not, I don't dare to give the pill to him anyway!"

Jackie laughed and said, "After the elections are over then I'll give him a pill, and naturally he won't hate me anymore. Besides, if he finds out that I'm a third grade premium alchemist, he'll be extremely happy!"

"That's true. He'll be able to quickly make a breakthrough with the pill. So long as his cultivation level is high, perhaps he wouldn't place so much importance on being the clan master or not!"

Titus and the others nodded, extremely happy.

"All right. No need to worry anymore, everyone. We've got plenty of martial resources from the forest this time too. Never mind this month-it'll also be

enough for everyone to cultivate for the next two or three months. Everyone should calm down first to increase cultivation levels!”

Jackie gave a bitter smile and told everyone.

Everyone nodded their heads. They were not so worried anymore, and they quickly went off to cultivate themselves.

At this moment, in the First Fortress Master, Austin’s place, plenty of people were gathered too.

“First Fortress Master, your decision is absolutely fantastic!”

An old man flashed a thumbs up at Austin. “With this, the Nine Armies will grow even stronger! Jackie’s martial talent is too good. Although we don’t know what cultivation level he’s at, this group of people has great potential to be able to survive the Bloodshed Clan. The people who survived will definitely work hard to cultivate themselves in the future and make even better progress!”

“That’s right. Congratulations, First Fortress Master. You’ll be the clan master of the sect in the future. Haha. Jackie is quite aware of the situation. They actually did not protest against allowing only those of fifth grade cadaaultimate god realm and above to have a chance to vote!”

Another old man was also smiling. All of them thought that their future was bright.

“Don’t speak too soon, everyone. It’s still too early to tell. We still need to wait for twenty days. After twenty days, you can address me as the clan master!”

The First Fortress Master was elated. He raised his glass of alcohol and said, “Cheers, cheers. All of you have worked hard today. Come on. Let’s drink and feast!”

At this moment, in a huge hall in the Pavilion Billow Cloud, the clan master, Tomas, was a little angry. “That brat named Jackie is truly so disrespectful. I gave him a chance to join the Pavilion Billow Cloud, but I didn’t think that the brat would actually choose to go with the Nine Armies. I’m so angry. Is the Pavilion Billow Cloud any lesser than the Nine Armies?”.

The First Elder took a step forward and spoke with a helpless smile, “Perhaps it is because the people from the Hall of Divine Royal and Cloud Sky Sect have come into our ranks. I heard from my disciples that those thirty thousand people don’t go along well with Jackie’s people. Although the two have set their enmities aside now, they still don’t quite want to see the other party!”

Tomas nodded his head then he added, “Forget it. If they want to join us, join us. If they don’t, it’s fine. The Pavilion Billow Cloud isn’t missing out on them anyway.”

Chapter 1853
It was evident that it was a little late when Tomas and the others had gone over. They have missed out on the battle of the Nine Armies, Jackie, and the others against the Bloodshed Clan. That was why no one knew how strong Jackie was and they did not care about him at all.

On another cliffside, Lily looked at Lance angrily. “No matter what, Lance, I was doing everything for your sake. Besides, Nash and the others killed your grandparents, and many people from the Lagorio family were killed by the White family members. Do you truly not hate Nash and the others?”

Lance gave a cold smile. “Don’t worry, Mom. I’ll kill Jackie and Nash sooner or later. I was just putting on a show for them today. You did do a few things too, Mom, but Nash went overboard. He actually destroyed your cultivation level before. Hmph. I think he doesn’t even think of me as his son anymore. He only sees Jackie as his son in his eyes!”

Lily was delighted when she heard this. She spoke with a small smile, “I was thinking how could you forgive them just because of a few words so you were just pretending before them. That’s great but there are so many people there. It probably won’t do if you plan to take any action. Let’s kill them when we have the chance later!”

Lance gave it some thought before asking Lily in a serious tone, “Oh, right. Mom, do you know what cultivation levels Nash and Jackie are at now? They weren’t fighting when we went there, so they were not using their chi. They even concealed the resonance from their bodies, and I couldn’t tell what cultivation levels they were at. I can only estimate that they’ve broken into the ultimate god realm at least!”

“What cultivation levels are they at?”

Lily frowned and bit her lip. Then she guessed, “I’m not very sure of their cultivation levels, but Jackie’s martial talent is truly pretty good. By my estimations, he’s probably broken into the second or third-grade ultimate god realm already. You can’t be careless, especially with his stupid fighting power.”

“Haha. Don’t worry. I came in half a year earlier than him. I’m already in the eighth grade ultimate god realm now. Can that brat surpass my current cultivation level even if he is so strong? Is he a match for me? Hmph. One day, I’ll find some time to pretend to visit them and bring them out, then I’ll kill both of them in one shot!”

Lance gave a cold smile, his eyes filled with vengeance.

“All right. You’re a good son. You’d better cultivate yourself properly and quickly break into the first-grade soul-penetrating realm. If you break into the first-grade soul-penetrating realm, your position will truly be stabilized if you become the next clan master. Otherwise, it’d be a great loss if some other master appears and snatches your position away!”

Lily was reassured, seeing that her son was already at the eighth-grade ultimate god realm and had a bright future.

Jackie rested for a night. After all, he had been straining for the past few days and had no time to rest. He could finally put his worries aside and rest for the night.

However, he did not expect that Ella, Arthur, and the others would come to see him just as the sky broke into daylight the next day.

“Brother Jackie, you-how on earth do you cultivate yourself? Isn’t your cultivation speed a little too fast? Did you get some super rare treasure in the forest? If not, there’s no way you can make breakthroughs so quickly!”

Arthur looked at Jackie with a grin, anticipation etched onto his expression. He really wanted to know if Jackie had some treasure or method to quickly increase his cultivation level.

“Hehe. Well, I won’t tell you this now, but I believe that you’ll find out soon enough!”

Jackie chuckled and said, “Your Nine Armies isn’t very polite. You knew that we were being killed by the disciples of the Bloodshed Clan in the beginning, but you still did not send anybody to help us. Fortunately, luck was on our side. If not, even these 170 or 180 thousand people would not have survived!”

Chapter 1854
“Aren’t you just trying to pique our interest now, Jackie?”

Ella glared at him, but she quickly added while smiling, “That being said, I’m truly glad that you’re still alive. It’s not that we didn’t try to help. We did inform the First Fortress Master and the others about this, but we considered that the Nine Armies are no match for the Bloodshed Clan, which is why the First Fortress Master did not dare to do anything!”

Here, Ella raised her hand and swore. “I, Ella Lavigne, swear upon the heavens that the First Fortress Master did not have the intention to ignore all of you. They just wanted to wait for the Pavilion Billow Cloud to arrive before doing anything. After all, you’ve seen for yourself. Our First Fortress Master is no match for that Edward Gray!”

“All right. It’s all in the past. I have no intention of blaming you for anything!”

Jackie gave a bitter smile. Although there were plenty of people in the Nine Armies, their overall strength was indeed a lot weaker than the Bloodshed Clan. If not for his people rushing over and him helping to kill a few Bloodshed Clan Elders at higher cultivation levels, as well as working with Austin to kill Edward, there would have been no chance to destroy the Bloodshed Clan!

Hendrick looked at Jackie and asked with some embarrassment, “Oh, right. Brother Jackie, Miss Helena, and the Cabello family -where are they staying?”

Jackie was internally speechless. He pointed at a courtyard that was not too far away. “They’re all staying there. Just go over and see them if you have anything to say!”

“Thank you!”

Hendrick, Arthur, and the others smiled and walked over happily.

Soon, they found the place where Daniella and the others were staying and knocked on the door.

“Young Master Arthur, is there anything I can help you with?”

Helena saw that it was Arthur, Hendrick, and the others. She smiled at them and asked.

“Well. Miss Helena, we especially came over to apologize. We had no way about the whole Bloodshed Clan fiasco. We wanted to help you all, but we had no say in the matter!”

Arthur lowered his head, expression apologetic.

Hendrick also said, “That’s right, Miss Helena. More importantly, the First Fortress Master and the others kept on disapproving of our plans… It was our fault that you had to sacrifice so many people. We are truly regretful!”

Helena gave a bitter smile. “It’s fine. Everything’s in the past anyway. The Nine Armies was indeed in a difficult position. We didn’t know that the Alliance Guard and the bigger forces would make that decision after finding out that we had come in. It’ll probably be just like what Jackie predicted: they won’t straightaway declare war on us, but they’ll definitely send even stronger clans to attack us!”

Here, Helena paused before continuing, “Perhaps we might need to trouble you then!”

Hendrick then said, “Miss Helena, don’t say that. We’re practically sailing in the same ship now. Besides, we did not help you, but you didn’t blame the Nine Armies. You even came over to help us when we were in danger. Everyone is grateful to you. It’s true!”

“That’s right. Miss Helena, the people of the Nine Armies are all talking about how we would all be in trouble if not for your help. Furthermore, the Bloodshed Clan has been eyeing the forest before us for a long time now. They’ve been wanting to attack us for a long time but just didn’t have the excuse to do so. This time, they managed to find an excuse so that they could fight Us!”

Ella gave a wan smile. “That’s why even if all of you didn’t enter this place, they would have attacked us sooner or later,” she said. “I just didn’t think that although our numbers are about the same as the Bloodshed Clan’s, there would be such a huge gap in fighting power!”

After Daniella heard this, she said, “That’s because they have far stronger martial skills, martial arts techniques, and even weapons than you do. Furthermore, they’re a clan. And you? You’re nine fortresses combined. You probably won’t be as united when in battle. I think it’s a pretty good thing that we’re building a new clan and have only one clan master to lead us from now on!”

Chapter 1855
“That’s right, that’s right. You’re absolutely right, Miss!”

Arthur could not help but gulp when he saw Daniella’s beautiful face. He asked Helena, “Oh, right. These two are your younger sisters but who’s the second sister? And who’s the third?”

Helena introduced them while smiling, “This is my third sister, Daniella. Beside her is my second sister, Venus.”

“You three truly look like angels and your martial talent is pretty good. I really didn’t think that there would be such pretty girls in the abandoned world!”

Hendrick spoke while grinning. He felt a little awkward as it was his first time seeing three beautiful girls. He suddenly did not know what to say.

The three sisters exchanged a glance when they saw Hendrick’s straightforward nature, and they could not help but chuckle.

After a while, Venus began to tease them, “Right. You two keep talking about Miss Helena as soon as you open your mouths. Don’t tell me that you’ve got eyes for my sister, judging from your behavior? I’ll tell you that my big sister doesn’t have a boyfriend now. You’ll have to work hard if you’re interested in her!”

“What are you talking about, Second Sis?”

Helena immediately rolled her eyes at Venus, her cheeks blushed.

Hendrick and Arthur’s faces also turned red after they heard this. It felt as though someone had seen right through them.

“See, Big Sis. Didn’t I say so? They came looking for you once they were here. Of course, they’re interested in you. See, both of their faces have turned red after I said that. Hehe!”

Venus saw this, and she spoke with a wider grin.

Helena glared at Venus, then she spoke, not backing down, “You don’t have a boyfriend either. The two of you-no, the master youths of the Nine Armies should all work hard. My second sister has no boyfriend either but my third sister’s heart is already taken, so don’t even think about it!”

“What nonsense are you saying, Sis? They didn’t come to see me!”

Venus's face also suddenly reddened. She was truly embarrassed.

"I didn't say that they came to see you. You're not that young anymore, so I'm helping to promote you!"

Helena was delighted when she saw her second sister's bashful expression.

Arthur and Hendrick exchanged a glance. Their hearts leaped in delight.

"Oh, right. I'm sure that you're not very familiar with the Nine Armies' territory, misses. Why don't we bring you to tour the surroundings?"

After Arthur thought about it, he looked at them with anticipation.

Beside them, Skye was so furious that she was clenching her teeth. She had thought that Helena and the others would have died in the woods long ago. She did not think that the three women would have survived.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1856-1860

Chapter 1856
In the morning, Jackie was afraid that the people of the Nine Armies would find out that he was creating pills, so he just cultivated himself in the room, sitting cross-legged, trying to stabilize his cultivation level.

The chi pool in his body was far larger than before and it has been helping Jackie to slowly increase his cultivation level. He managed to stabilize himself at his cultivation level. He had probably reached the intermediate stage of the seventh grade ultimate god realm and was very close to reaching the advanced stage.

After cultivating for a while, Jackie opened his eyes and realized that it was already in the afternoon. A small smile played on his lips. “Judging from my cultivation speed, I just need to cultivate during the day for five or six days at most, and I’ll break into the eighth-grade ultimate god realm without even using a pill. Then I should probably be able to create third-grade premium pills. Once I have third-grade premium pills, I’ll stabilize my cultivation level and break into the first-grade soul-penetrating realm before the elections.”

Jackie was well aware that if he managed to create third-grade premium pills as a third-grade premium alchemist, he would be able to bribe the other fortress masters to garner votes, and he should be able to become the clan master.

However, he could not be at the seventh grade ultimate god realm. He needed to break into the first-grade soul-penetrating realm in order to make everyone else truly submit to him.

Furthermore, once he broke into the first grade soul-penetrating realm, he believed that it would be easier to kill those third grade soul-penetrating realm fighters.

Jackie quickly thought of something else and hurriedly took out his martial arts techniques book.

He had only roughly gone through the martial arts techniques at the beginning of the book. Once he learned the methods to break into the ultimate god realm and the soul-penetrating realm, he had started to quickly cultivate himself without reading the rest of the book.

After all, Nash and the others had also obtained the same martial arts techniques. Some only managed to get cultivation techniques of the ultimate god realm, and those who were better knew the techniques of the soul-penetrating realm.

That was why Jackie had always thought that the soul-penetrating realm was the highest cultivation level and did not think too much about it.

Now he only knew that there was actually a stronger cultivation level after that—the nirvana realm.

He immediately flipped to the middle of the martial arts techniques notes and studied the words carefully. He suddenly took a sharp intake of breath. It turned out that after the ninth-grade ultimate god realm, there was truly a method written toward the end of the notes that showed methods to break into the first-grade nirvana realm.

“My God. This martial arts technique book is truly something else. It looks like I’ve really hit the Jackiepot!”

As Jackie spoke, he gulped and continued to flip through the notes.

He did not think that he would be even more surprised the more he continued reading. Until the very end, he had no way to calm himself to cultivate.

He rested for one or two hours, and the sky darkened. Only then did Jackie calm down and prepare to research the method to create third-grade premium pills.

This time, Jackie was researching a third grade premium pill. Naturally, it would be more difficult to create than a third-grade intermediate pill.

However, he chose one of the easier techniques given. Besides, he had been reading about it lately, so he had some sense of it already

At first, when Selena had been hit by the curse, he had been truly worried. He lacked alchemy methods and ingredients, after all.

He did not think that there would be plenty of third-grade and even fourth-grade elementary spirited grass in the forest. Furthermore, he had obtained plenty of alchemy formulas. This gave him the chance to continuously practice alchemy and improve himself.

No matter if it was people from the White family, the Cabello family, or even the families that had good relations with him, they would all automatically pass any ingredients that were suitable for alchemy to Jackie. This enabled Jackie to practice alchemy, and also provide him with a good supply of alchemy ingredients.

Chapter 1857
Furthermore, only with sufficient alchemy ingredients and going through many failures in performing alchemy, one could only improve oneself and become an even higher-grade alchemist, creating even higher-grade pills.

Jackie flipped his palm and took out an assortment of alchemy ingredients. Then he took out his alchemy stove and began to create pills.

Time passed by very fast. Throughout the night, Jackie tried to create the pills five times.

Unfortunately, not a single attempt was successful.

However, Jackie had predicted this.

Successfully creating pills was a very difficult matter but it was fortunate that Jackie had improved a lot during the night. He was very satisfied with his progress.

The days trickled past, and Jackie went out for a walk during the day before returning to his room to cultivate. During the night, he would calm himself down to create pills.

On the sixth night, Jackie finally succeeded when he was creating the second pill.

“I’ve got it. I’ve finally got it. This is great!”

Jackie’s features were etched with excitement as he looked at the pill in his hand, a herbal fragrance emanating from it. He was one day late compared to his predictions, but he succeeded.

The pill could even be considered effective for someone in the first-grade souls penetrating realm. There was at least a chance for them to break into the second grade soul-penetrating realm.

However, if one wanted to make better breakthroughs and obtain better results, then one needed the fourth-grade pill, which would drive people mad as they clamored after it.

“I’m already a third-grade premium alchemist after not more than two months. The highest cultivation level is the ninth grade soul-penetrating realm. So long as I become a fourth-grade alchemist and have a high cultivation level, I don’t believe that I can’t dispel the curse on Selena’s body!”

Jackie was extremely excited when he thought about how he was one step closer to dispelling the curse on Selena.

“Phew. It’s still early. Let’s try a bit more. Once I succeed the first time, it’ll be a lot easier to create pills the next few times. I’ll just create these pills for these two days then. Thank goodness there are enough ingredients. Otherwise, I’ll probably have to get someone to help me find them!”

Jackie released a long sigh and carefully kept the pill, then he continued to create more pills.

As he was a lot more familiar with the process, Jackie attempted to create four more pills next. Then dawn broke over the sky..

Meanwhile, Jackie had only successfully created one pill out of the four. In addition to the previous pill, he had two pills now.

“I need to prepare at least ten pills. At least one pill should be given to the eight fortress masters, and I need to keep one each for myself and the First Fortress Master. I lack another eight pills. In another three days, I should be able to create them!”

Jackie made mental calculations and was very confident.

Chapter 1858
“This is great. This is great. I’ve finally made a breakthrough!”

Just as Jackie was preparing to go out and take a walk, Selena ran over happily.

“Really? That’s wonderful. Then are you at the intermediate stage of True God Realm now, Dear?”

Jackie was also delighted when he saw Selena’s excitement.

It was evident that Selena had been smiling a lot less after a curse was put on her, and there was always a melancholic air around her.

However, Jackie’s alchemy skills and cultivation level were rapidly improving. It seemed that Selena was a lot more confident, and she had been smiling a lot more lately now.

“How has your alchemy practice been, Dear? Have you improved? I saw that you’ve been practicing alchemy every night lately. You must be tired. You should take some time to rest and strike a proper balance between work and rest, okay?”

Selena looked at Jackie, worried.

“See, Dear!”

Jackie flipped his palm and took out a pill, thrusting it before Selena.

Her eyes suddenly brightened. “My goodness. This has such a thick fragrance. Looks like you’ve been successful. Are you a third-grade premium alchemist now?”

Selena was even more excited when she saw that Jackie had succeeded. This meant that Jackie was getting closer to becoming a fourth-grade intermediate alchemist. As long as he collected sufficient ingredients, he would only lack that one treasure of the Crystal Cloud Clan. If he obtained that treasure, her curse could truly be dispelled.

“Yes. Don’t worry, Dear. I’ll become a fourth-grade alchemist as soon as possible so I’ll be able to create the pill for you!”

Jackie took Selena’s hands and added, smiling, “Then I’ll quickly break into the ninth-grade soul-penetrating realm, and everyone will fear my fighting skills. I

believe that the people of the Crystal Cloud will definitely give me their clan treasure under these circumstances!”

“You!”

Selena’s heart was filled with warmth. After she thought about it, she told Jackie, “Oh, right. Recently, I noticed that Arthur and Hendrick seem to be going after Helena and Venus. They frequently come over to visit them when they’re free. If that’s the case, young Daniella will be bored as she can only cultivate on her own. She’s also too embarrassed to follow them out in fear of becoming a third wheel!”

“You’re saying?”

Jackie frowned, asking lightly.

Selena rolled her eyes at him. “You’re already a couple with her, and she’ll be my little sister in the future. You’ve not been slowing down all this while. I think that your fake relationship with Helena has happened such a long time ago, and everyone knows about it. If you’re free, you should go over and accompany Daniella, okay?”

Jackie did not think that Selena would be so discerning and mature. He gave a bitter smile and said, “If that’s the case, I won’t have time to spend with you either. How about this? I’ll rest for a while, and I won’t practice alchemy tonight. In the afternoon, I’ll accompany you and Daniella to go out. Who knows if there are good places to see around the Nine Armies!”

“Okay. Hehe. You’d better rest for a while. I’ll go and visit Daniella and tell her about this. She’ll definitely be happy once she knows!”

Selena was extremely delighted. She turned around and ran toward the outside.

Yet just as she turned around, Jackie tugged on her hand and dragged her back, holding her in place.

“What are you doing?”

Selena’s face reddened as she felt embarrassed.

Chapter 1859
Jackie lowered his head and planted a kiss deep onto Selena’s rosy-pink lips. “It’s been a long time since I’ve kissed you!” He said.

After a brief moment, Selena pushed Jackie away. “I have a big black spot on my face. It’s ugly! Don’t you mind it?” Her voice sounded embarrassed.

Jackie chuckled at Selena’s words. “In my heart, you’re the prettiest woman. You’ve also given me such a wonderful daughter! I couldn’t be happier right now!”

“Really? I… Actually, I thought of having another son with you in the future!”

Selena pursed her red lips and her face was full of happiness.

“Hahaha! I like that idea!”

Jackie laughed aloud.

At this moment, Josh Wallman-the master of the Sword King Clan-brought the elders of the clan over to visit the master of the Crystal Cloud Clan.

“I, Josh Wallman, as the head of the Sword King Clan, together with the Elders of the Sword King Clan, have come here to meet the head of the Crystal Cloud Clan!”

Josh and his men arrived in front of a group of disciples, who were patrolling around the Crystal Cloud Clan, and bowed to the disciples respectfully, and spilled his intention of visiting the place.

“Oh. You’re the head of the Sword King Clan!”

A female disciple of the Crystal Cloud Clan looked at the other party before laughing, “I’m really sorry. You came at the wrong time. Our Master is having an important discussion with another Master of a prominent clan, so I think it’s better not to disturb them at this moment. Why don’t I take you to the square over there to rest for a while? I’ll bring you to meet our Master when their meeting is over.”

Although the Sword King Clan was not considered a prominent and famous clan, it was considered an influential clan among those smaller clans. Therefore the female disciple was still pretty polite while speaking to Josh, after all, he was a clan master.

Josh paused for a moment before saying, “To be honest, if it was nothing important, I would not have come all the way here! Since there is another clan master of a prominent clan, I should go and meet both of them! The matter is huge and problematic, naturally, it would be better if more influential clan masters knew about it!”

An elder of the Sword King Clan stepped forward and spoke, “Yes, little girl. Master Wallman is right about the matter! The world here is going to undergo a drastic change because of this matter! And I’m afraid that our lives will no longer be as peaceful and harmonious as before!”

Hearing how serious the matter was, the female disciple then replied, “My bad. I did not know it would be such an important matter. Well then, I’ll take you to our master but I hope that the matter you have in hand is indeed urgent and crucial. Otherwise, my master will punish me!”

“Haha! Don’t worry. Your master will not punish you! I can assure you of that!”

Josh chuckled aloud. Then they followed the female disciple and flew toward a palace.

Soon, the group arrived at the palace. The palace was tall, grand, and carried a majestic aura.

“My Master, the Master of the Sword King Clan and his elders have come to visit you, saying that there’s something urgent and crucial!”

The female disciple took a few steps forward and reported loudly.

One of the old men, with a frown, stood up and looked at Josh and his elders, before turning to the female disciple and ordering, “Alright. Leave now!”

“Master Loador, Master Mackenzie! It’s so great to know that both of you are here! I have something urgent to report and I hope we can discuss it!”

Josh stepped forward and greeted them with á fist-to-palm salute.

Chapter 1860
“Hmmm. Spill it! I’m curious to know what urgent matter brought you and your elders all the way here from your clan. It must be something important!”

Master Loador was none other than the Master of the Crystal Cloud Clan. He looked at Josh with a smile on his face.

Josh, with a solemn face, answered his question, “Something big has happened! The Bloodshed Clan found out that a number of people who are from the abandoned world have entered this place about two months ago. It’s not just one or two, but around six hundred thousand people!”

“Around six hundred thousand people?”

When the two great clan masters heard this, they gasped aloud. How could they have imagined that so many people would have entered from the abandoned world?

“You’re not serious, right? So many of them have actually come in?”

Master Loader asked Josh after giving the matter some thoughts. “By the way, since the Bloodshed Clan discovered their existence, didn’t they do something about them? There are too many of them! We can’t just let these people come in and take our resources! It’s not easy to break through to the next level now, and there isn’t a lot of fourth-grade spirited grass, to begin with, so how can we allow so many people in here!”

Josh responded immediately, “The Bloodshed Clan did do something. In fact, they immediately sent people to surround the forest and besiege the outsiders!”

Master Loador and Master Mackenzie immediately breathed out a huge sigh of relief upon listening to Josh's words. Since the Bloodshed Clan had already sent people to besiege the outsiders, they should not worry that much. After all, it should be very easy for the Bloodshed Clan to wipe out those outsiders, not to mention those outsiders are scattered around the forest and were not powerful in small groups.

However, what the two clan masters did not expect was when Josh continued his unfinished sentence. "However, before Bloodshed Clan found them out and could actually do something, those outsiders were already in here for almost two months, so many of them have made breakthroughs. The Bloodshed Clan had actually suffered a great loss from the battle with them!"

"Oh, the Bloodshed Clan is a small clan and there are not many disciples with ultimate god level. Most of them are still in the demi-god realm and true god realm. So, it's normal to suffer some losses!"

Master Loador laughed and thought that Josh had come to intercede for the Bloodshed Clan in order to claim the credit.

He then immediately added, "Don't worry! They have made a great contribution to the Alliance Guard and they should be rewarded, though they have lost many disciples. We will definitely reward the Bloodshed Clan! We'll grant them some cultivation resources and help their disciples to improve their martial level!"

"Sigh!" Nonetheless, Josh replied Master Loador with a sigh. "No reward is needed for the Bloodshed Clan right now. There are a few talented masters among the six hundred thousand outsiders, and they broke through quite fast. Although the Bloodshed Clan did their best to kill these people, they lost many strong disciples as well. Some disciples at the seventh-grade ultimate god realm were even killed!"

"What the f*ck? Disciples at the seventh grade ultimate god realm were killed?"

Master Mackenzie took a sharp intake of breath upon hearing the news. Soon, he thought of something else and immediately said with certainty on his face, "Then it must be the people of the Nine Armies who have killed them, right? The Bloodshed Clan may have offended the Nine Armies because of this."

However, Josh shook his head. "No. The Nine Armies did not send out aid to those outsiders at first. Among those talented outsiders, there was a crazily talented master and he had broken through to the seventh-grade ultimate god realm! At that time, the Bloodshed Clan also thought that the Nine Armies had sent aid to them. So, in a fit of anger, the Bloodshed Clan struck at the Nine Armies…"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1861-1865

Chapter 1861
Soon after, Josh narrated the whole situation to both clan masters from head to toe.

“I truly did not see that coming! How could someone break through so fast in such a short time? That brat must have picked up some kind of treasure, some really rare and precious treasure!”

Master Loador’s face was full of emotions. After thinking about it for a brief moment, he then said, “We must get rid of that brat! If we allow him to live, he’ll definitely bring trouble to the Alliance Guard one day!”

“Yes! You’re right! If this brat is not killed, there will be endless problems coming to us!”

Master Loador nodded along with great affirmation

“Sirs, I…”

“Josh’s face turned odd as he listened to the two clan masters. “I came today to inform you of the situation so that you can go to the remaining big clans to hold a meeting to discuss this matter! Also, I would like to propose something!”

“Oh? What is it?”

Master Loador and Master Mazkenzie looked at Josh with interest after hearing his words.

A bitter smile hung on Josh’s face. “Since so many people from the abandoned world came in this time, it’s truly abominable! But on the whole, they suffered great casualties and the number was reduced from six hundred thousand to around two hundred thousand people. Besides, the Bloodshed Clan has sacrificed eighty to ninety thousand disciples, plus those casualties from the Nine Armies, there were around 130 thousand people who have died!”

Josh paused for a short moment then boldly spelled out his thoughts. “I think there is no drastic increase in the overall population of this place, perhaps the increase is only around 70 to 80 thousand people, and most of them are not strong fighters. Hence, why don’t we just forget about it?”

“Forget it?”

Master Loador’s face instantly turned unsightly and huffed angrily, “Josh Wallman, my dear Josh! Are you dumb? They intruded into our territory and struck at us! How can we forget about it just like that? Besides, we, the Alliance

Guard, are never afraid of the Anti-Alliance Guard! Don't you forget that we are always the ones who are far stronger and powerful than them!"

Josh was startled at Master Loador's anger; he immediately explained, "Master Loador, that's not what I mean! What I want to propose is that since the population did not increase much, maybe we could negotiate with the Anti-Alliance Guard and request them to compensate us for some losses. In this way, we won't lose our face and superiority. After all, we can't just pretend things didn't happen!"

Josh halted again and then continued, "Besides, if we go into war, the loss will be too great, even if we win the battle!"

This time, Master Mackenzie interrupted, his tone cold, "Master Josh, your way of thinking is not feasible at all! Even though we don't ask for a full-scale battle, some small-scale battles are unavoidable! After all, the Bloodshed Clan sacrificed a lot for the honor of the Alliance Guard! So, no matter what, we have to at least ask for compensation from them! And the compensation can't be only some cheap cultivation resources!"

Master Loador chimed in, "All right, all right! We'll need to bring this matter to other clan masters as the two of us have no absolute right to decide on our own. We need a meeting with the other four great clans to decide the next step! But I believe that the other clan masters will not compromise as well. Your task today is completed. You may leave now!"

Chapter 1862
Josh soon left the hall with his people and flew back to his clan.

When they had flown some distance away, the First Elder of the Sword King Clan came forward and asked, "Master, what were you thinking back there? Why did you try to persuade them to let the outsiders go? You knew clearly that these six clans of the Alliance Guard care about their image and reputation more than anything else! What more now that the small clan-Bloodshed Clan-under their wings was eliminated just like that. How could they let it go?"

The second elder also approached Josh and said, "That's right, Master. They may feel upset about it and may not respect you anymore in the future. Our task is only to inform them of the situation and not suggest an idea, because, in the end, they will hold a meeting to decide what is next, right?"

Josh then smiled helplessly. "You don't understand, do you? That brat, Jackie, is too powerful. It's fine if they manage to get rid of him this time, but what if they don't? They will anger the other party and problems will arise!"

"Is that possible? These big clans have a lot of fighters with the ninth-grade strength of the soul-penetrating realm! Could they still be afraid of him?"

The First Elder showed an expression of disbelief; he even felt that Josh was a coward! How could Josh be afraid of a brat who was only in the seventh-grade ultimate god realm?

“Hmm. It’s true that they have a lot of ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighters in their clans, but their combat ability is more or less the same.

Josh chuckled again. “Jackie, however, is different. If he does not die, he will be able to break through very quickly within one or two years. By that time, if he becomes a sixth- or seventh-grade soul-penetrating level fighter, I don’t think anyone can defeat him anymore. If he then breaks through to the ninth grade of the soul penetrating realm, his power would be even more unimaginable!” He added.

The Second Elder laughed unconcernedly. “Master, in my opinion, you overthink the situation; you believe too much in that brat’s talent! That brat is able to improve so fast because he had gotten some kind of magic pill in the forest or maybe some miraculous holy water or fruit that he found somewhere in the forest! Besides, they were stuck in their martial cultivation in the abandoned world for too long, when they suddenly found this place, naturally, they would be able to improve quickly!”

The First Elder, too, nodded his head in agreement. “Yes, the Second Elder is right! That brat must have found some precious treasure, and that’s why he was able to improve so quickly and achieve what he has right now. But then, if he wants to break through to the next level in the future, I don’t think it will be easy for them! And Master Josh has already informed Master Loador and Master Mackenzie of the situation. Two Masters will definitely bring it to other clan masters, and they will certainly find ways to destroy that brat! He then will have no chance to grow!”

Josh sighed again, “I hope I’m only overthinking it. Anyway, our clan should keep a low profile, and try not to offend that brat in any way in the future. We would rather offend the Anti-Alliance Guard than that brat, got it?”

“Got it!”

Although the First Elder and the Second Elder of the Sword King Clan had some reluctance harbored in their hearts, they could only nod their heads in agreement.

Daniella could not express how happy she was in her heart after knowing that Jackie and Selena were going to accompany her on a shopping trip in the evening.

The afternoon came quickly. Daniella took a nice and warm bath and changed into a beautiful dress.

Currently, Helena, Venus, and Daniella had trained hard and had broken through to the first-grade ultimate god realm these few days. The Cabello family and the Nine ·Armies were bursting with joy upon hearing the news.

Especially the First Fortress Master, Austin, he was extremely elated when he saw that all these people who came from the abandoned world were cultivating and training incredibly hard after they experienced a tough battle. One after

another broke through from the peak stage of True God Realm into the first-grade ultimate god realm. He could hardly contain his happiness that he constantly had a smile on him now.

After all, if there are more people with ultimate god-level strength, the overall combat power would be increased tremendously.

“There is a lot of good and delicious food on this street! This street was already quite lively before, and after our people came in, it is even more lively! Moreover, a lot of people are trading here, opening their stalls on the street and trading materials!”

While the trio was shopping, Daniella smilingly introduced the street to Jackie.

“Really? Haha! Then we should stroll for a while, then find a restaurant and have a good feast!”

Jackie laughed after hearing this.

Chapter 1863
Many people had an envious look in their eyes when they looked at Jackie, Selena, and Daniella.

After all, how could they not envy him when two beautiful women were accompanying him on this shopping trip.

After the three of them finished their meal, Daniella went back reluctantly.

“Didn’t you see the reluctant look on Daniella’s face? I think you should spend the night in her room!” After they returned to their room, Selena rolled her eyes at Jackie and said helplessly.

Selena, “Honey, I keep feeling that there’s something wrong with Daniella but I can’t pinpoint what it is!”

“What’s wrong?” Selena was puzzled.

“I can’t make it out. Anyways, when I held her hand during the shopping trip today, she would blush so badly. She is as shy as a virgin maiden and I feel that something is wrong!” Jackie thought about it before saying his suspicion out loud.

“You are overthinking it. Isn’t it normal for a girl to be shy? On top of that, you don’t hold her hands frequently in the past so it’s natural for her to be shy!” Selena was speechless and continued speaking. “You really think that she wouldn’t be shy after sleeping with you once?”

Jackie smiled bitterly as he spoke. “Maybe I’m overthinking it. I only feel that she gives me a vibe that she’s still a young girl. It’s normal for girls to be shy but she’s overly shy. The most crucial point was both of us were drunk that night and

although we woke up on the same bed, I could not remember if anything happened that night. I'm growing suspicious right now that nothing actually happened between the both of us!"

"That isn't possible. Women pay a lot of importance to their virtual. How would she lie to you about something like this? On top of that, isn't Miss Daniella a nice girl? I feel that she's quite a nice person! She's beautiful and is considerate toward you. When we were in the forest waiting for you on the mountain top, she was genuinely worried about you!" Selena rolled her eyes at Jackie. "All right, rest earlier and don't overthink things!"

"Alright!" Jackie nodded and looked at Selena who was beside him. He picked her up in a princess hug before striding toward the side of the bed.

"What are you doing?" Selena was surprised as it was unexpected.

"Let's have a second child!" Jackie said happily.

Chapter 1864
Jackie continued cultivating pills after resting for a day.

Just as he expected, he finally had ten third-grade premium pills with him after three days.

As for his fighting prowess, he was only one step away from achieving the eighth-grade ultimate god realm.

He trained for one whole day and broke through into the eighth-grade ultimate god realm first. After stabilizing his realm, he directly used the third-grade premium pill and trained in retreat.

After retreating for three to four days, the time for the election of a sect master had grown closer and closer.

Austin did not waste his time. He also planned to have a chat with Jackie and pretended to ask for some suggestions for this new sect.

"This is weird. Miss Selena, why do we seldom see Jackie leaving the house? Isn't he too hardworking?" When he arrived at the yard, Austin smiled bitterly and asked when he did not see Jackie.

"First Fortress Master, Jackie realized the importance of increasing his fighting prowess after the fight with the Bloodshed Clan. He's not the only one as I see that almost everybody is busy training recently, looking forward to having some breakthrough in their fighting prowess. After all, isn't it possible that the Alliance Guard would cause us trouble after a period of time? It's definitely best for everybody to increase their fighting prowess!" Selena smiled bitterly and explained.

Austin looked at Selena's near-perfect body before glancing at the black spot on her face. He could not help but say, "Miss Selena, you are such a beauty. It's a pity that you've been cursed with this spell from the Bloodshed Clan. It is extremely difficult to lift spells and I'm afraid that you don't have much time left!"

Selena smiled and said, "It's true that I don't have much time left with only eight to nine months left. However, I believe that my husband will work hard and he will definitely think of a way to help me!"

"All right, then I shall leave first!" Although Austin felt that Selena was imagining things, he still left with a smile on his face.

After he walked some distance away, Austin smiled coldly and said, "Haha… He's training hard at this moment. Does he plan to fight with me for the position of sect master? A person who's in the seventh grade ultimate god realm… So what even if you worked hard and breakthrough into the eighth-grade ultimate god level? It wouldn't be good to have low fighting prowess no matter how high your combat power is. After all, this is greatly related to the honor of a sect. On top of that, how is it possible that the Nine Armies' fortress masters, members with a fighting prowess of fifth-grade ultimate god level and above, would choose you, an outsider?"

After he finished speaking, Austin left confidently.

However, he had no idea that Jackie had started breaking through into the first grade soul-penetrating level not long after he left.

Jackie did not expect to experience a wave of dizziness when he was breaking through. His fighting prowess and his entire soul seemed to have entered a pitch-black void.

In this void area, light balls of different colors flew past him one after another.

'What are these light balls? Why do they seem like they are waiting for me to capture them?! Jackie frowned. He had never imagined entering this mysterious space once again.

After he thought about it, he immediately stretched out his hand and grabbed onto one of the red-color light balls.

That red-color light ball seemed to have a stronger vibration and gave him a different feeling compared to the other balls.

Jackie instantly caught the light ball and he immediately felt a burning sensation on his hand.

However, Jackie did not let go and continued grabbing the light ball tightly.

Chapter 1865
After the light ball struggled for two to three seconds, it stopped struggling and rushed into Jackie's palm.

At this moment, the space started vibrating and seemed to be leaving.

Jackie took a look before stretching out his hand speedily and instantly caught a blue color light ball.

The light ball also struggled twice before it stopped. It then directly entered Jackie's body and the scene completely collapsed. Jackie discovered this and left the space.

Jackie opened his eyes and immediately checked his body. He discovered two different energy fluctuations in the center of his body.

Certainly, his fighting prowess also broke through into the first-stage souls penetrating level at this moment.

Jackie immediately activated one of the powers and displayed it through his veins. He discovered that a small spark appeared in his palm and as he continued to maneuver his power, the spark grew bigger before turning into a fireball.

'Oh my god, this is not formed by the concentration of chi and this is like a real item! On top of that, the fluctuation of power is so strong. I can control it as I wish and it would be extremely powerful to attack with this!' Jackie felt the fireball in his hand carefully and was slightly excited. It seems like he obtained some special abilities after he entered the soul penetrating level.

However, he was suspicious as to why Austin from the Nine Armies did not use this power when he was fighting with Edward and the others? After all, they were also in the soul-penetrating level, and all of them in this level should have such powers?

Jackie could not understand this after thinking about it for some time. With a thought, the power dispersed and the fireball in his palm disappeared.

At this moment, a thin layer of sweat appeared on his forehead.

He was slightly stunned as the consumption of mental power to control this level of power was so much stronger, incomparable to controlling chi.

"Tsk, tsk… It seems extremely difficult to control this thing!" Jackie sighed while maneuvering the power of the other light ball.

Soon, layers of ice crystals appeared on his palm and they increased as he maneuvered the power.

'One of them is fire and the other is ice?' Jackie frowned and was slightly excited. He never expected that the light balls in that space represented different powers

and that he caught two light balls at the same time, giving him two different powers.

'No way, it might be that I've just broken through, my mental power can't stand such depletion!' Jackie soon felt dizzy and was surprised. He felt slightly relaxed with the change of his thoughts and stopped the formation of the ice.

After he thought about it carefully, he discovered that they were five days away from choosing a sect master and Jackie was not in a hurry. He took a bath and rested for the afternoon.

It was evening when he arrived at the yard.

Selena was delighted when she saw Jackie walking out and said to him, "You spend so many days training once you start training. How was it? Have you broken through into the eighth-grade ultimate god realm?"

"Eighth-grade ultimate god realm?" Jackie smiled indifferently before replying to Selena. "I'm already in the First-grade soul-penetrating realm!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1866-1870

Chapter 1866
“Hiss!” Selena inhaled deeply upon hearing that, wondering if she was mistaken. Unexpectedly, Jackie had already broken through into the First-grade souls penetrating level in such a short period.

“That’s incredible! It looks like you’ve refined a third-grade premium pill, too. Now that you’re in the First-grade souls penetrating level, it must be a piece of cake for you to kill someone in the Second-grade soul-penetrating level!” Selena was absolutely excited. After all, it was not easy to break through into the soul-penetrating level as it was an important realm.

Jackie was capable of killing masters in the First-grade soul-penetrating level when he was in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level. After breaking through into the Firstgrade soul-penetrating level, it would be easier to kill masters in the Second or Third-grade soul-penetrating level.

Jackie chuckled and was hopeful of the future. “Haha… I’ll surely be the sect master. When I’m the sect master, I’ll give time to the fortress masters to train so that they can break through into the Firstgrade soul-penetrating level. If they’re able to break through, our new sect will be so much stronger than the so-called Pavilion Billow Cloud!”

To protect the remaining members of the White and Cabello family, whom he was familiar with, he had to make himself the sect master and then hastily strengthen the sect. By then, they had no need to fear, even if the people of the Alliance Guard came causing trouble to them if enough time was given to them.

“That’s for sure. You’re so much stronger than the others!” Selena smiled happily. “You’ve broken through into the Firstgrade soul-penetrating level, and it’ll be so much easier to break through into the Second or Third-grade soul-penetrating level after you enter this huge realm. As for me, I think I won’t be able to catch up to you in this lifetime.”

“Haha… Honey, you’re also very talented!” Jackie laughed and took two pills out with the flip of his hand. “I prepared this just for you, and it’s good for you. Your realm is quite stabilized right now, and you’ve been training with martial art techniques to break through recently. These two pills will be enough for you to break through into the First-grade ultimate god level. You’ll have a longer lifespan once you become a master with that fighting prowess.”

“That’s true. Putting other things aside, I am still very confident about my capabilities!” Selena smiled sweetly as she took the pills from Jackie’s hand. “It really is nice to have a husband who knows how to cultivate pills. Haha… With pills to help me train, how easy is it to break through into the ultimate god level?”

As she spoke, Selena recalled something and immediately said to Jackie, “By the way, Jackie, many of our people broke through into the First-grade ultimate god level when you were in retreat. Everyone had gotten quite a number of precious items from the forest before.”

“Haha… That’s great!” Jackie laughed loudly. He thought about it and said, “Alright, I’ll be paying a visit to some of the fortress masters. Do you want to come with me?”

Selena rolled her eyes at him. “No thanks, I won’t go with you. You can go ahead on your own. I’ll prepare several of your favourite dishes. Let’s have a couple of drinks when you return, okay?”

“Haha… That’s great!” Jackie laughed happily when he heard this.

Not long after, Jackie arrived at where the Whittemores’ fortress was located.

“Jackie? Why are you here?” An elder frowned when they saw Jackie. As the day to choose a sect master grew closer, Jackie suddenly visited them.

Chapter 1867
“Haha…!” Jackie chuckled and explained, “I’m here to talk with your fortress master.”

“Alright, then. I’ll have someone to lead you.” As Jackie had a horrifying combat power, the people of the Nine Armies respected him. The elder immediately ordered a young person to lead Jackie to their fortress master.

As Jackie left them, the elder could not help but mumble, “That’s very strange. That guy has been busy training in retreat every day. Why is he suddenly visiting our fortress master? We’re building a new sect and choosing a new sect master. I s this young man here to convince our fortress master and our members to vote for him?”

However, the old man soon shook his head and smiled coldly. “This young man truly is naïve to have such thoughts. How could we choose him to be sect master instead of our fortress master when we’re members of the Nine Armies?”

Jackie soon arrived before Fortress Master Whittemore and asked him to have everyone else leave them both in the yard.

“Brother Jackie, please just speak straightforwardly with me. I know why you came here even if you hadn’t said anything, just by looking at how cautious you’re acting.” Fortress Master Whittemore smiled softly.

Jackie raised his eyebrows and smiled playfully.” Really? Enlighten me, and see if you made a correct assumption.”

“Haha… That’s very simple. You came to me with hopes that I and the members of my fortress, who’ve already achieved Fifth-grade ultimate god level, would

choose you during the voting process so that you can become our sect master, right?" Fortress Master Whittemore smiled coldly before he added, "T o be honest, Brother Jackie, you have an impressive high combat power, and you're a strong fighter. Our First Fortress Master might not even be able to defeat you

"Everybody knows that this election is to choose one person between the two of you, but you should understand that you're not at the soul-penetrating level. On top of that, the First Fortress Mas a member of our Nine Armies, and we've known him for so many years."

Fortress Master Whittemore glanced at Jackie before h e continued, "Of course, this doesn't mean that we have to choose him. The main issue is that we won't be able to explain ourselves should we not choose him, and I fear he'd take it to heart as well."

"Haha!" Jackie suddenly chuckled. "What's there to b e unhappy about? I think there's another reason that you don't want to choose me, and it's because you don't know my other identity."

"Another identity? What identity?" Fortress Master Whittemore frowned when he heard what Jackie said and looked at him, bewildered.

"Alchemist," enunciated Jackie.

"Alchemist?" The other party was surprised and quickly said, "No wonder… That explains how your fighting prowess increased so quickly. It looks like you're not only an alchemist, but you must be at least a third-grade elementary alchemist, no? Such pills are extremely suitable to be used by people in the ultimate god level. That's really rare—so rare!"

"What if I told you that I'm a third-grade premium alchemist instead of a third-grade elementary alchemist?" Jackie's voice was once again heard.

Chapter 1868
"Third… Third-grade premium?" Fortress Master Whittemore's voice sounded shaky, albeit slightly.

He understood well that third-grade elementa alchemists were extremely rare. Such alchemists were capable of increasing the training speed for those in the ultimate god level. This was extremely useful, especially for those who were in the First and Second-grade ultimate god level.

However, such pills had not much use for people like him, who had achieved the Ninth-grade ultimate god level and failed twice to break through into the First-grade soul-penetrating level.

After all, the power of a mere third-grade elementary pill was still not enough to allow them to break through into the First-grade soul-penetrating level. The energy might not be sufficient at the most important moment, affecting the process of breaking through before causing them to fail in the end.

However, third-grade premium pills are completely different. The energy in such pills was several times more compared to third-grade elementary pills and was sufficient for him, who was in the Ninth-grade ultimate god level, to break through within one go. The success rate was also greatly increased.

That went especially when he had failed twice in a row to break through before, and this affected his confidence. It was possible that his confidence to break through would increase with such third-grade premium pills.

“Brother Jackie, are…are you joking? Are you truly a third-grade premium alchemist?” Fortress Master Whittemore was no fool. Was Jackie not hinting at him when he said such words? After all, Jackie longed for something from him. Would Jackie give him if he and his people voted for Jackie?

If so, then it was an easy choice for him. After all, the voting rules did not state that they could not choose Jackie.

Met with Fortress Master Whittemore’s expectant gaze, Jackie nodded, and a third-grade premium pill appeared in his palm with the flip of his hand.” Look: this is the third-grade premium pill I cultivated. This pill isn’t only a third-grade premium pill, but it has exceptional fineness. The pill is round. Can you smell the scent of this pill? How is it? Doesn’t it smell good?”

Fortress Master Whittemore swallowed a mouthful o f saliva and widened his eyes, his sight never wavering from the pill.

Looking at the pill in Jackie’s hand, Fortress Master Whittemore nodded. “It smells good-really good. Brother Jackie, then this pill…”

“Cough, cough… This pill is a true treasure!” replied Jackie as he coughed lightly. “In my opinion, those who have broken through into the soul-penetrating level in the future would surely be the elders of the new sect. I’d treat the elders nicely if I become the sect master. I might just break through and become a fourth-grade alchemist in the future, and b y then, those who are in the soul-penetrating level would need my pills terribly. Those who are in the Seventh or Eighth-grade ultimate god level would look at me in a new light.”

Fortress Master Whittemore was filled with hope when he heard this. How much strenuous train time would he be able to shorten if Jackie gave him fourth-grade pill in the future?

He swallowed his saliva and said, “Young Master Jackie, voting for you isn’t an issue as I’ve always been optimistic for you. After all, you’re the true, destined son. I’ve already decided that I’ll choose you in the voting ceremony for sect master in the coming days.”

“Cough, cough!” Jackie purposely coughed, and he then hinted once more, “Ah, but it won’t work if you’re the only one like that. I’ve thought about it, and I’ll give this to anyone who chooses me and is capable of making members with a fighting prowess of Fifth-grade ultimate god level and above to choose me.”

“Me, Young Master Jackie. L… I’ll ask them over privately and have a meeting with them. I’ll make them vote for you. This pill is extremely suitable for me.” Fortress Master Whittemore was no fool as he immediately expressed his loyalty. He knew, at that point, how to get this pill as he realized the path Jackie had taken him in their conversation.

Jackie laughed and remarked, “You said it yourself, Fortress Master Whittemore-I didn’t threaten you. As for this pill, I’m giving it to you as a sign of friendship. Did I bribe you with anything?”

Chapter 1869
“How is that possible? I’ve long had my eyes on Young Master Jackie’s talents. You were capable of killing a person in the First-grade soul-penetrating level when you were in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level. Who can be our sect master if it isn’t a master like you?” Fortress Master Whittemore immediately laughed and flattered Jackie, all while staring at the pill in Jackie’s hands. “Still, I’m afraid that the First Fortress Master would be unhappy. How about this: I alone will vote for him, but all my subordinates shall vote for you. By then, I’ll be able t o deny any knowledge when the First Fortress Master asked me what happened. I’ll say that you’ve won over my subordinates. How does that sound?”

“Haha… That’ll work. As long as I’m able to win! Jackie laughed and placed the pill into Fortress Master Whittemore’s palm. “Alright, then, I’ll be taking my leave now.”

“Take care, Young Master Jackie. I won’t be able to show you out as I’m afraid that people will see us!” Fortress Master Whittemore immediately walked forward and opened the door for Jackie.

Once Jackie left, Fortress Master Whittemore immediately looked at the pill in his palm excitedly.” Oh my god-a third-grade premium pill. It’s no surprise that Jackie was able to break through so quickly. He’s actually an alchemist. Tsk, tsk! Even big sects don’t have such alchemists. I know that it’s considered nice for several big sects that have a maximum of several third-grade elementary alchemists!

“Let’s start training. After all, there are several days. Let’s try and break through into the First-grade soul -penetrating level for now!” Having obtained th pill, Fortress Master Whittemore giddily returned his room to train.

After Jackie left, he went straight toward the Lavigne Fortress and soon arrived before Fortress Master Lavigne.

“Haha! Why are you here to meet me so late at night, Brother Jackie? Did something happen?” Fortress Master Lavigne laughed before he commented, “You even asked the others to leave. Seems like you want me to elect you as the sect master.”

Jackie smiled indifferently before saying, “Fortress Master Lavigne, you truly are smarter than others. You got it right, though, but I’m sure you won’t agree to that unless something’s in it for you.”

“Is that? Can you give me something good, then? Haha! Not many things interest me right now.”

Fortress Master Lavigne smiled funnily at this, sure o f himself that Jackie could not come up with something beneficial that would change his mind.

Unexpectedly, Jackie took a pill out with a flip of his hand and showed it to Fortress Master Lavigne.

“Third-grade premium pill!” Fortress Master Lavigne was shocked to the core to see this. “Oh my god… You actually have such a treasure?”

“I’m a third-grade premium alchemist, so I surely can take out such a treasure.” Jackie smiled and continued, “On top of that, I’m capable of cultivating third-grade premium pills at such a young age. Cultivating fourth-grade pills won’t be too difficult for me in the future!”

“Deal!” Fortress Master Lavigne caved in and snatched the pill in Jackie’s hand. “I’ll obey whate you say!”

Chapter 1870
“Haha! Great! What I need is very simple: just have your fortress members vote for me.” Jackie laughed out loudly. Unexpectedly, the Fortress Lavigne’s fortress master was in such a hurry and took the pill without much objection, even agreeing to his condition without much protest.

“Sure, that won’t be a problem at all! Everything is fine as long as I’m able to break through to the soulpenetrating level,” remarked Fortress Master Lavigne elatedly. He soon thought about something and immediately added, “By the way, Brother Jackie, don’t forget about us when you become a Fourthgrade alchemist later on!”

“Don’t worry. I’ll surely reward those who are hardworking in training and contribute to the sect. After all, it’s not difficult for an alchemist o obtain such items, as long as there are materials to cultivate the pills.” At that point, Jackie was secretly making plans of his own. If he formed a sect in the future, would it not be easy for him to obtain martial enhancement materials? More importantly, h e would be able to ask the sect’s disciples or elders to help search for materials required to lift Selena’s curse.

The thought of it eased Jackie. If everything went smoothly, he would have more time to cultivate pills, and he would then try to lift Selena’s spell as soon as possible.

Soon, Jackie left Fortress Lavigne and went to meet the other six fortress masters. Apart from the First Fortress Master’s fortress, Jackie visited all the other fortresses.

He only returned to his residence after handing them the pills.

By the time he arrived, Selena had already prepared a table full of delicious dishes and was waiting for him.

“How was it? Did everything go smoothly?” asked Selena impatiently upon seeing Jackie returning,

Jackie smilingly replied, “Everything went incredibly smoothly! We just need to wait until the day they elect the sect master.”

“That’s great! To be frank, I know that you aren’t very interested in being this sect master. It’s not as relaxing as being an elder,” continued Selena as she sat down. “The main reason you wish to become the sect master is that you fear that Austin would treat our White family and everyone else who entered the area with us differently once Austin becomes the sect master, am I right?”

Jackie nodded. “It looks like my wife knows me really well. Apart from this, there’s still one benefit of me becoming the sect master. I’ll be needing materials to cultivate pills in the future, especially when I need to cultivate fourth-grade elementary pills to lift your spell, and it’s difficult to search for these materials. If I become the sect master, I’ll only need to appoint disciples with some missions and give them some reward. It’ll be much easier to d o that.”

Selena was genuinely moved upon hearing Jackie’s conviction, and she gazed at him earnestly. “Honey, you treat me so nicely. I never expect you to consider me no matter what happens, yet you’re working hard to help lift my spell every second of every day.”

Jackie held onto Selena’s hands. “Of course, my dear. You don’t know this, but when I learned that it’ll be a challenge to lift the spell cast on you, I was awfully afraid. I was afraid that my incompetence would cost me to lose you, but I’m confident in myself as I’ve already had such achievements in less than three months.

Chapter 1871

Selena nodded and advised Jack, “Alright. Please don’t overwork yourself, do you understand? You have to relax when it’s time to take it easy.”

“I understand. I’ve just broken through into the first -grade soul-penetrating level, and I only need to train in the morning these couple of days. I’ll stop researching the cultivation of pills at night and have a breather then,” conceded Jack with a helpless smile. “I can’t help it-members of the Alliance Guard won’t let us off the hook so easily. I’m sure that they’ll do something. To prevent a terrible battle between both parties, I think the main sects won’t interfere with the matter straight away. They’ll send some forces under their control to cause us trouble.”

“What should we do, then? Won’t we be in trouble? We might be in a dangerous situation within a couple of days.” Selena started to worry once again when she heard this.

“Don’t worry, my dear. They might think that we aren’t at the Nine Armies, and they might cause trouble to the Sword King Clan, but I heard that there’s a main sect near to where the Sword King Clan is, so they can’t possibly wipe out the Sword King Clan! By the time they finally come to our Nine Armies, we’d have more than one or two masters who are at the soul-penetrating level.”

Jack was quite confident about things. “After several days, when the other fortress masters had broken through into the First-grade soul-penetrating level …” He chuckled. “Together with my fighting prowess and combat power, our new sect won’t b e so easily trampled over, even though we’re known as a new sect.”

“Yes! We won’t be afraid, as long as they don’t send masters in the Seventh or Eighth-grade souls penetrating level. On top of that, my husband is a third-grade premium alchemist. We’ve got nothing to fear when you’ve rested enough and break through again in the future.” Selena nodded and poured Jack a glass of red wine before she smilingly said, “ Honey, try the dishes!”

Jack ate some of the dishes before finishing the glass of wine in a gulp. He then lamented, “We’ve left for almost three months. I wonder how Kylie is right now. I really miss that little girl.”

“Yeah… I miss her, too.” Selena also poured herself a glass of red wine and took a sip before she said,” Nonetheless, our daughter has her own journey of life. Right now, there aren’t many people with high fighting prowess over there. Our White family still kept some people with high fighting prowess over there, so Kylie only needs to train seriously. She’s very talented, and I hope that her fighting prowess improves quite a lot the next time we see her.”

The two of them drank and talked over their meal, and it was a homely, cozy atmosphere.

Meanwhile…

There was a huge city on a gigantic mountain, where 50 to sixty people sat in the main hall of the city.

The 50 to 60 people gave people a solemn and serious feeling. These people were top masters in this world from the six main sects of the Alliance Guard.

One of the old men was Master Loador of the Crystal Cloud Clan. He took a look at the people there before he addressed, “The situation is as per what we’ve described. We’ve also informed everybody about the situation we know. We gathered everybody here to discuss what to do about it. Everybody, please tell us your opinion.”

He just finished speaking when Master Mackenzie stood up and said to others, “I have the same opinion as Master Loador. We can’t just let this go. After all, so many people entered our area in one go, and the Bloodshed Clan was completely wiped out. There won’t be any Bloodshed Clan in the future and We, one of the six main sects, don’t do anything. Will the Anti-Alliance Guard mock us in the future? The forces that follow us will be bitterly disappointed.”

Chapter 1872

“Yes, yes, yes… Master Mackenzie is right. We can’t disappoint the forces who follow our footsteps.” An elder from another sect shot up. “Of course, we need to take action. After all, our Alliance Guard has six sects, while the Anti-Alliance Guard only has five main sects. Their overall strength isn’t as grand as ours,

and the forces that follow their lead aren't as many as ours. We can't swallow this bitter pill in silence!

"That's right, we can't suffer in silence. F*ck… We have to teach them a lesson!" said another sect master, standing up as well. "Since they're daring enough to wipe out one of our sects, we'll wipe out two of theirs! About two hundred thousand of those f*ckers who entered this area are still alive. If we wipe out two of their smaller sects, their number would dwindle to about two hundred thousand, right? Haha! That'll work, won't it?"

An elder with white hair thought about it and commented, "About six hundred thousand of them entered, and many of them died. I don't think that the cycle of vengeance will ever end. Since Josh Wallman suggested for us to let things go, I think that we can ask the Anti-Alliance Guard for some benefits and just drop it altogether."

Master Loador's expression darkened at that suggestion. The Bloodshed Clan was originally a force that depended on their Crystal Cloud Clan, but since the Bloodshed Clan had been wiped out, he was distressed even though the other bigger sects did not.

He stood up and spoke, glowering, "Master Hackford, you've grown cowardly as you age. You'd rather tuck your tail between your legs, being so at ease with your comfortable life? Everyone can see that we've grown stronger, but you've chosen to not avenge our losses? Haha! Growing more timid as you age, are you?"

Several old men laughed along at that remark.

As for another man, he said to Master Hackford, Everybody, please quiet down. I know Master Hackford very well, and he's not a person who's afraid of confrontation. He must have his own ideas when he says what he says. Why don't we listen to his opinion since everyone is here for a discussion?"

"Alright, then. Since we're here for a discussion, we need to listen to everyone's opinions. If not, I'm afraid that others will say that I'm arbitrary when doing something," muttered Master Loador, somewhat displeased as he sat back down coldly.

Everyone looked at Master Hackford, and he smiled bitterly before saying, “Actually, I’m not afraid. I’m barely daunted, seeing as I’m already at this age but we’ll suffer a large number of casualties if we have a battle. On top of that, I understand Josh of the Sword King Clan quite well. Since he said that the opponent has a master and talented young man, it’s proven that he’s a wonder. I’m afraid that we’d be in trouble if he grows exponentially.”

“Haha! Trouble? What’s so troublesome about that? I heard that the young man is only in the Seventhgrade ultimate god level. Alright, he’s extremely talented as he was capable of battling somebody in the First-grade soul-penetrating level. After all, our sects don’t have people who are so talented!” scoffed Master Loador. “However, he has a low fighting prowess. What’s there to be afraid of when we can easily kill him if we send somebody who’s in the Third or Fourth-grade ultimate god level?

Master Mackenzie then chimed in, speaking on Master Loador’s behalf, “Master Hackford, have you thought about it? We should battle this young man because he’s so extremely talented. We need to kill him, at least.”

Another old man also nodded. “That’s right. No matter what, that young man is a member of the Anti - Alliance Guard, and it’s best if we kill him if we can’t utilize such a person. We’d only be able to eradicate future troubles if we kill him, or we’d find ourselves in great trouble if we let him grow. The Anti-Alliance Guard might obtain another large sect by then!”

Chapter 1873

“Alright, alright, I’ll go with whatever you decide. Anyway, I was just voicing out my opinion, and I hope that everybody doesn’t regret it later on.” Master Hackford smiled bitterly. He knew it was useless no matter what he said. Most of the people present were superior people, and that was why they paid a high importance to their honor. This time, they wanted to take action because they felt that they had lost their honor.

Since most of them agreed to the idea, it did not matter what he said.

“In order to be fair, it’s best if we raise our hands and vote,” decided Master Loador as he stood up once more. “How about this: those who agree that we’ll take action and send our subordinate forces to

attack them will raise their hand. Those that don't agree don't need to."

Soon, about 80-percent of the people present raised their hand.

A satisfied smile soon appeared on Master Loador's face at the sight of numerous raised hands. "It looks like everyone dislikes cowardly people. Since Master Hackford is afraid of the opponent growing up, I think that the young man and those people should be at the Pavilion Billow Cloud. Anyway, if they aren't at the Pavilion Billow Cloud, they'll be at the Nine Armies. Let's agree that we'll send two sects to attack these two places separately. What do you guys think?"

"Pavilion Billow Cloud has a sect master who's In the Second-grade soul-penetrating level and an elder who's in the First-grade soul-penetrating level. They only have two members who are in the soul-penetrating level, so I think we just need to send a sect who has people in the Second-grade soul-penetrating level." Master Mackenzie paused before he continued, "Of course, since you guys said that this young man is too talented and are afraid that he'd escape, we'll send two members in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level over, just to be safe. That's foolproof, no?"

"A sect with two members who are in the Thirdgrade soul penetrating level? That'll be the Blood Stalwart Pavilion. This sect has two members in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level and three First-grade soul-penetrating levels. Five masters would be sufficient to wipe out the Nine Armies. If that young man is at that sect, he's fated to die." Master Loador nodded in satisfaction when he heard this before asking everybody, "Does anybody have anything to add? If not, we'll agree to this arrangement. Of course, the trophies obtained after wiping out these two sects will belong to the sects who take part."

"We don't have other opinions."

"Let's decide as such."

Many people looked at one another before they finally nodded and agreed to the suggestion.

Chapter 1874

The six main sects of the Alliance Guard sent people to notify the other sects after a night of meeting. These sects were asked to prepare themselves in carrying out an ambush on two forces In the notification.

Members of the Alliance Guard were extremely confident in this ambush. They decided to show the Anti -Alliance Guard their might and have them suffer some losses.

They had no idea, however, that the Pavilion Billow Cloud's sect master, Tomas Lopez, also had a thought the next day after he returned. He immediately notified members of the Anti-Alliance Guard about what happened.

At this moment, in a huge hall on another mountain, members of the five main sects of the AntiAlliance Guard sat together for a discussion.

"What a surprise this is," lamented one of the old men after learning of the situation. "It'll be easy to settle this if more than a dozen or several hundred people enter. We just need to inform the Alliance Guard, and this wouldn't result in a large battle. However, what is it like to have six hundred thousand people entering the area at once?"

An old woman replied, "It is rather troublesome. Putting aside the six hundred thousand people, the Alliance Guard won't allow for such a thing to happen, even if ten thousand people entered the area, would they now?"

"It's a good thing that about four hundred thousand of the people who entered from the abandoned world have died-maybe the Alliance Guard will be less angry because of this, somewhat. However, there are two hundred thousand people left, and they surely won't sit around and do nothing."

The old man took a huge inhale of his cigarette before he spoke again, "What should we do now? Why don't we have a discussion with them and reward him a few things? There's no other way as we have to

give them an out. If not, they would lose their honor!”

The old woman nodded. “That seems to be our only choice. It’s preferable if we can try our best to prevent the fight. Once the battle starts, we’d lose a hundred to two hundred thousand people if any two or four sects are wiped out. It’d be even worse if both parties really started fighting!” The group of people had their discussion for some time before they finally prepared their treasures and were prepared to talk things through with members of the Alliance Guard

Another four days passed by, and it was finally time to form the new sect.

“Oh my, brother Jack… We need to consider the name of the new sect seriously. Although you have low fighting prowess, you have amazing combat power! Don’t worry. You’ll be the assistant sect master when I become sect master, and that is definite. Of course, I have to remind you that the main decisions will be made by the sect master at the end of the day.” After everybody arrived at a public square, Austin looked at Jack happily as they stood on a tall platform. He once again highlighted the status of a sect master, fearing Jack might not have a good grasp of the notion.

Jack smiled embarrassingly at Austin’s words.” That’s for sure. The assistant sect master has the word assistant’ to his title, so it’s natural for him to listen to the sect master about everything. Everybody understands this.”

“Haha! Good! It’s good that this is clear.” Austin once again laughed out loudly and seemed to be extremely confident.

Meanwhile, the eight other fortress masters beside them donned weird expressions on their faces. Austin would be furious if he lost the position later.

Elated and confident about everything, Austin then asked after a thought, “Brother Jack, what should we name the new sect? I feel that we should choose a domineering and resounding name!”

Chapter 1875

“About this…” Pane frowned and went deep in thought

Before Jack spoke, Austin said, “I have a suggestion, Brother Jack, Our place is Nine Armies, and I think that it’s best to have the word ‘nine’ in the name of our sect. What do you think?”

Jack thought about it and said slowly, “My people and I entered this area to search for ways to break through into the ultimate god level. If you choose the word ‘nine’, we’ll choose the word ‘god’. How about this? Why don’t we call ourselves the Nine Gods Clan? What do you think?”

Austin’s eyes lit up at Jack’s words, visibly satisfied.

“Great! This is a great name!” Several fortress masters were incredibly proud of the suggested name.

Austin took a step forward and announced,“ Everybody, after discussing it, we’ve decided to call our sect, Nine Gods Clan. We hope that members of the Nine Armies can get along in harmony with the members who came from the abandoned world, just like a family, becoming a collective group in the future. Stop mentioning that you’re from another family or fortress, is that understood?”

“Yes!” The people standing below yelled in unison, and they were able to see that everyone was confident with the establishment of the new sect.

“Alright. Let’s not waste time, then. Let’s start electing our sect master now, who will then appoint the assistant sect master and the remaining elders!” announced Austin giddily. He obviously wanted to take control of all the power and feared Jack might take it from him.

Jack was speechless; he was lucky to have prepared earlier. If this old man truly became the sect master, he would have to withstand his opinions whenever he had a few of them.

“Cough, cough! How about this: our fortresses will vote first. That box over there is for young brother Jack, and those who support him should vote for him there. This box here is for me. Our fortress should take the initiative to vote first!” Austin coughed twice before he added, “By the way, I’m the First Fortress Master, and I’m in the First-grade soul -penetrating level, so I have a vote, too. I’ll vote for my younger brother Jack!”

To show his magnanimity, Austin was ready to walk toward Jack’s box to vote, and he even continued, “To be honest, I truly hope that brother Jack can become the sect master. After all, you are the master among masters, and you have an unlimited future ahead of you!”

Many who came from the abandoned world were able to identify the duplicity in this old man’s words, and they looked at him disdainfully.

However, Jack quickly stopped Austin. “First Fortress Master, there’s no need for you to vote. I planned to cast my vote for you. Since you plan to vote for me and vice versa, why don’t the two of us not cast our votes?”

“Haha! Sure, sure!” Austin laughed before he said, “ Goodness, brother Jack, you truly are such a modest person and think so highly of me!”

Chapter 1876

“Haha! First Fortress Master, it doesn’t seem appropriate if I don’t vote for you as you’ve voted for me, even though you have magnificent fighting prowess.” Jack chuckled. This old man Austin was too hypocritical, and Jack’s mind was boggled at that.

Nonetheless, it was a good thing that he kept stressing the power of a sect master. This old man would not see it coming when Jack got elected a s sect master.

Just as Jack predicted, the First Fortress Master’s members voted for him, and none of them voted for Jack.

Austin coughed a little before saying, “Jack, I believe that some of your people are also qualified to vote. Why don’t you ask them to vote now?” The First Fortress Master felt somewhat sympathetic. After all, none of them voted for Jack.

“Alright, then!” Jack nodded before gesturing to Alejandro and the others with his gaze.

Soon, Alejandro and the others walked forward to vote. Naturally, there was no exemption, and all of them voted for Jack.

After this round of votes was cast, Austin pretended to be embarrassed and awkward, muttering, “Haha… Brother Jack, I just…” He sighed before adding, “I truly am at a loss for words right now about our Nine Armies. Is it because they’ve always been under my lead? Look at them! Can’t they see that you’re exceptional? I feel all too guilty to be leading in so many votes-all of them had voted for me!”

He even pretentiously walked forward and spoke loudly to the crowd, “Brothers of the Nine Armies, how can you guys behave like this? The votes have to be cast according to your heart’s wishes. You can’t all vote for me just because I’m your First Fortress Master. Brother Jack is quite an excellent person, and you guys should cast some votes for him, too!”

Jack was bewildered. This guy conceitedly came forward and tried to campaign votes for him?

“Alright, everybody, please continue voting and just follow your heart’s desires,” said Jack smilingly.

Soon, it was time for the members of the Whittemore Fortress to cast their votes.

Fortress Master Whittemore smiled indifferently and walked forward to cast his vote for Austin.

Austin was even pleased when he saw that Fortress Master Whittemore had voted for himself. Since the

fortress master of their fortress had voted for him, there should not be any reason that the others did not vote for him, right?

He did not expect what happened next.

Following Fortress Master Whittemore, elders of the Whittemore Fortress slowly walked forward and cast their votes for Jack. The remaining members who were in the Fifth-grade ultimate god level and above also voted for Jack.

In the beginning, Austin thought that the Whittemore family cast their votes for Jack to protect Jack's honor. However, Austin's expression faltered when all members of the Whittemore fortress, apart from their fortress master, voted for Jack.

F*ck! Is this happening because I campaigned for Jack just now, and everyone's voting for Jack after listening to what I said? F*ck me! These imbeciles! Can't they see that I was just pretending to campaign votes for him? I didn't imply for them to vote for Jack!' Austin inwardly hissed to himself. He should not have pretended to campaign for Jack and said such words out of pretense. Things were in Jack's favor as what he said had helped garner so many votes for Jack.

Chapter 1877

After the members of the Whittemore Fortress voted, the fortress master of the Lavigne Fortress also walked forward and voted for Austin.

Austin's lips quirked into a small smirk at this. He believed that members of the Lavigne Fortress would follow their fortress master and cast their votes to him as long as they were smart enough.

That was why it flabbergasted him when members of the Lavigne Fortress voted for Jack instead. Just like that, Jack's vote had surpassed him instantly and was obviously more than his.

Austin had a darkened expression on his face and did not know what to say.

He thought it through and walked forward to remind everyone present, “Everyone, please look carefully and vote based on your wishes. The voting box for brother Jack is over this side, and this one is mine. Please line up nicely. The queue for the Lanson Fortress behind…”

However, such a reminder was useless until the end. The members of the fortresses, apart from the fortress masters, voted for Jack. Not only did Jack have more votes than him, but the number of votes he obtained was several times more than Austin.

Austin’s expression contorted darkly. Without a shadow of a doubt, Jack would obviously become the sect master.

Jack came toward Austin and reminded him, coughing awkwardly as he did, “Ahem, ahem! First Fortress Master, the voting has been completed. Shall we ask somebody to count the votes?”

The corners of Austin’s mouth slightly twitched before he said, “Is there still a need to count the votes? The results are so obvious, and even a dummy knows who won. By the looks of it, everybody knows that you have more votes compared to me!”

After he finished speaking, he soon remembered something. If Jack was the sect master, was Jack not given the power of appointing the assistant sect master based on what he said?

He immediately smiled at Jack. “Haha… About that, Pavilion Master Jack, now that you’re the sect master of our Nine Gods Clan, who do you think is more suitable to be the assistant sect master?”

Jack thought about it and frowned. “It truly is a worrisome thing about who’s going to be the assistant sect master. I think that the most obedient person shall be appointed. What do you think?”

Austin almost vomited blood in anger. This guy was obviously trying to subdue him.

Still, he was helpless and could only reply to Jack happily, “Obedient? I’m definitely obedient. On top o f that, I used to be the First Fortress Master. I’m the one with the highest coherence and charismatic power. In the future, I’ll definitely assist you to manage the Nine Gods Clan well!”

Only then did Jack laugh and exclaimed, “Glad to hear that. I announce that you are the assistant sect master of the Nine Gods Clan!”

“Thank you, sect master, for your acknowledgement!” cajoled Austin despite his dissatisfaction. There was nothing else he could have done.

He was extremely speechless and could not make out why the people by his side would not vote for him. It was obvious that the eight fortress masters voted for him to give him face. The people under them who did not vote for him were obviously notified by their fortress masters, or such a situation would not have happened.

In truth, the people from the eight other fortress masters were just as baffled. Their fortress masters asked them to vote for Jack during the meeting last night but did not say much about the reason. They only said that these people would learn about the reason soon.

Until that particular moment, many people were still kept in the dark and were clueless.

Chapter 1878

“Everyone, I now pronounce that Jack is the master of our new sect, Nine Gods Clan, and he has appointed me the assistant sect master! I hope that everyone will obey him and work hard together to strengthen our sect!” announced Austin as he walked forward. “Let us now invite the Nine Gods Clan’s sect master, Pavilion Master Jack White, to speak!”

Everybody applauded thunderously, especially those who followed Jack from the abandoned world. They were overjoyed, despite not knowing how Jack managed to have become the new sect master and

how he won the votes of the other fortresses.

Jack walked two steps forward and said loudly, “The assistant sect master is right: we’re a family from now on. As the new sect has just been established, we’ll make unitary tokens and disciple clothes for everybody. Of course, I think that everyone can choose if they want to don these clothes, but I hope that everyone can bring their tokens along whenever they leave the clan.”

Jack thought about it before adding, “At this moment, those who are in the First-stage souls penetrating level, apart from the assistant sect master, shall become the elders of our sect. Those who achieve such fighting prowess in the future shall become our patronus!”

The eight other fortress masters were delighted when they heard this. They had already broken through to the First-stage soul-penetrating level, and they had already become elders of the clan at that moment.

Austin immediately frowned when he heard this and said to Jack, “Pavilion master, apart from me, nobody else is in the First-stage soul-penetrating level! The other fortress masters are in the Ninthgrade ultimate god level. Does this mean that there won’t be any elders now? Will we only have elders when they’ve broken through? How long would we have to wait until then? It’s not so easy to break through into the First-grade soul-penetrating level.”

Jack smiled and did not reply to what Austin said. Instead, he took a paper he prepared earlier on and read the contents, “All elders shall have the same power, and their names aren’t listed in order!

“The First Elder is the fortress master of the Whittemore Fortress, Kieran Whittemore!”

Everybody immediately cheered and clapped.

Austin had an increasingly darkened look on his face when he saw Jack take out that piece of paper. By how Jack acted, this guy knew long ago that he was going to be the sect master. He even wrote the list down after considering who was going to be the first and second elder!

“The Second Elder is the fortress master of the Lavigne Fortress, Dominic Lavigne!” Jack continued his announcement. Just like that, the fortress masters from the remaining eight fortresses were appointed as elders of the new sect.

“This is wrong! Didn’t Jack say that only those who are in the First-stage soul-penetrating level are qualified to become elders? Did the eight of them not break through yet? Why are they appointed as elders just like that?’ The frown on Austin’s face deepened, and he was extremely puzzled. Why did he feel that everybody was hiding something from him and only him?

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

However, a member of the Nine Armies they sent, who was guarding at the mountain top not far away, came flying over speedily at this moment,

“This is bad! This is bad! Members of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion are flying over, and fast. What should we do?” blurted the frantic man the moment he arrived.

Although they knew that the members of the Alliance Guard would not let go of this so easily, they had never imagined that they would send people over so quickly. “Trouble! We’re in trouble!”

Chapter 1879

Austin’s expression contorted in terror at this news, The sect had just been formed, but before he could enjoy his new position as the assistant sect master, men from the Blood Stalwart Pavilion were coming their way.

“We’re done for!” An elder who had just been appointed was just as frightened, and it showed visibly through his darkened expression.

The overall combat power of the Nine Gods Clan had greatly increased and they had more people who were in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, but the Blood Stalwart Pavilion had two masters who were in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level and three who were in the First-grade soul-penetrating

level. This sect had 170 to 180 thousand people, and many of them were in the ultimate god level.

How could they defeat this army?

“Everybody, don’t panic!” Jack was the only one who remained calm and quickly asked Austin,“ Assistant Pavilion Master, do you know the specific situation of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion? We might b e able to handle them.”

Austin, still flabbergasted, instantly replied, “We can’t handle them. They have two masters in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level and three who are in the First-grade soul-penetrating level. Throughout the years, we couldn’t handle those three in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, let alone those two who are in the Third-grade souls penetrating level!”

Just as Austin finished, they spotted a group of people flying over from far away and took up a large area.

“Pavilion Master, shall we…escape? We’d still lose quite a large number of people even if we do, though, seeing as the two masters from their side will be able to catch up to us, but our newly formed sect will be wiped out if we don’t run for it!” Austin persuaded Jack after thinking about it.

Jack smiled after hearing about the Blood Stalwart Pavilion. “Haha! Assistant sect master, you don’t have to worry. We still haven’t come to a situation where we need to escape.”

He then flew up into the sky and said loudly,” Everybody, today is a blessed day as the members of the Alliance Guard came bearing a wonderful gift the moment our sect was formed. Recently, everybody has been training hard, and I see that many have already had some breakthroughs in their fighting prowess. Let’s enjoy the bloodshed once they arrive!”

Mystified, Austin hastily flew up to persuade Jack,” Are you sure, Pavilion Master?! We can’t do that! The opponent has two masters in the Third-grade souls penetrating level!”

Even the First Elder flew upward and said to Jack, " Pavilion Master, are we really getting into a fight? Although we don't have many people who are in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, they have people who are in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level, and there are two of them!"

Unexpectedly, Jack replied nonchalantly, "Listen carefully, everyone: Leave those two in the Thirdgrade souls penetrating level to me, and I'll leave the others to you guys. That should be fairly simple, right?

Austin's face was covered in cold sweat, and he insisted with a tight smile, "Pavilion Master, it won't be easy for us to handle the others! They have three people who are in the First-grade soul-penetrating level!"

"Haha… What's there to be afraid of? Aren't our elders in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, too?" Jack laughed, and a strong wave of aura exploded from his body. The horrifying fluctuation caused many people's facial expressions to change out of fright. "I'm also in the First-grade souls penetrating level, too!"

Chapter 1880

'He's really in the First-grade soul-penetrating level! 'Austin took a deep breath at the sight of Jack. Jack was only in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level previously, and Austin estimated that it was exceptional for this guy to breakthrough into the Eighth-grade ultimate god level even if he trained hard recently. Nonetheless, he was no match for the masters in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level.

However, Jack, who was in front of him, was definitely in the First-grade soul-penetrating level.

He was certain that if Jack wanted to kill him, it would be as easy as cutting vegetables.

First Elder Kieran was exhilarated by this fact." This is great! If our sect master can handle those two in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level. Leave the rest to us!"

“Haha! If that’s the case, we’ll be able to fight this battle with them. F*ck! We’ll get lots of treasures after killing them for sure!” The second elder also flew up, and excitement was written all over his face. He wanted to test his combat power badly as he had just broken through, never expecting that a chance to test his capabilities so soon.

Utterly dumbfounded, Austin gulped and asked, albeit rather shakily, “Have… Have you guys broken through into the First-grade soul-penetrating level,

Too?”

“Of course! There’s no need to worry. If the sect master can handle those two in the Third-grade soul - penetrating level, not only will we win, but we’ll have an overwhelming victory, too!” The second elder smiled happily.

Jack thought about it and said, “By the way, there’s no need for all of you in the First-grade souls penetrating level to join the battle together-four of you will be sufficient. Of course, some might be able to make it out alive, seeing how many there are. On top of that, there’s a forest over there, and I’m sure some of them will be capable of escaping. It wouldn’t be a good thing for the Alliance Guard to learn about our situation right now.”

The first elder’s eyes lit up when he heard this.“ That’s right! Pavilion Master, your thoughts are so correct! Apart from our sect master, there are nine of us who are in the First-grade souls penetrating level now. Haha… If the Alliance Guard learned about this, they’ll definitely send stronger sects to attack us next time! We have to conceal our true strength so that they’ll have the wrong impression. This shall give us a chance to grab an opportunity for ourselves!”

“All… All of you have really broken through?” Austin was still in disbelief and bewildered.

“Yes, we’ve all broken through!” Only then did Kieran explain things to him. “Do you know why our sect master can break through so quickly? Not only is he extremely talented, but he’s also a third grade premium alchemist! In this entire world, he should be the only third-grade premium alchemist. Assistant Pavilion Master, let me tell you: it wouldn’t be an issue for our sect to expand if we’re given time!”

“My stars… Am I hearing right? A third-grade premium alchemist?!” Austin was once again shocked. No wonder the members of all eight fortresses voted for Jack. Turns out, Jack was a third-grade premium alchemist. It looks like Jack secretly gave them pills. How else could they have all broken through?

He had to admit that third-grade premium pills were precious items from heaven to people in the Ninthgrade ultimate god level who wanted to break through into the First-grade soul-penetrating level.

“Pavilion master, I’m so loyal to you…” Austin was devastated at how unfair it was that he did not receive these benefits.

Chapter 1881

“Don’t worry; just go all out when you end them. I’ll give you a pill after the battle is over. I’ve reserved one for you here,” replied Jack with a bitter smile. “I won’t keep these benefits from you, my assistant sect master.”

“Alright, alright! Thank you, Pavilion Master!” Austin was incredibly happy. He was very close to entering the Second-grade soul-penetrating level, so if Jack gave him a third-grade premium pill, not only would he break through into the Second-grade soul-penetrating level, but he might be able to break through into the Third-grade soul-penetrating level at once!

He would be so much more comfortable being the assistant sect master by then.

As he watched the members of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion coming their way, Jack then instructed,“ Listen carefully: Me, the assistant sect master, First Elder, Second Elder, and Third Elder will be the one joining the battle later. The remaining five elders shall rest here. Take a look at the external area, and don’t let any of the members from the Blood Stalwart Pavilion run away. The five of you can’t expose your fighting prowess, understand?”

“Understood!” The other elders immediately nodded, though they still envied the first elder and the

others. After all, those four would definitely win since Jack asked them to fight one person. They were definitely envious of those four as they had such a good opportunity to fight with people that had almost the same fighting prowess.

Members of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion stopped not far away from Jack and the rest, and their sect master smirked at them. “Oh my! Are they out here on purpose to welcome us when they know that we’re coming? Haha! What a surprise! All of them are actually gathered here!”

They were extremely happy that they were given the instruction to ‘handle the Nine Armies this time.

This was because the Nine Armies was not far away from the forest that was filled with many treasures. Hence, they would be able to get lots of treasures from them once they wiped out the Nine Armies.

In a way, the Blood Stalwart Pavilion scored a bargain this time.

As for Jack and the others, the main sects overlooking things could not tell if Jack and the others were here. The Blood Stalwart Pavilion felt that these people were not threats to them, no matter where they were.

“Haha… You can say that!” Jack laughed and looked at the other party coldly. “You people must’ve been sent by the Alliance Guard, right? Attempting to wipe out our Nine Gods Clan won’t be as easy as you think.”

“Nine Gods Clan?” The opponents were stunned.

The assistant sect master from the opponent side thought about it and said to their sect master, “Pavilion master, I think these people are mystifying things. Haha! They actually said that they’re some Nine Gods Clan. I think they’re people of the Nine Armies and those who came over from the abandoned world!”

The Blood Stalwart Pavilion Master immediately understood the situation and laughed, harrumphing, “Haha! You’re quite the smart one, young man. You plan to lie to us in hopes that we’ll leave, thinking that we’ve come to the wrong place, right? You’ll all then scamper off to escape once we leave, huh?”

The assistant sect master also said with a smile,“ This is quite the idea you got here, young man, but we’re no fools. We recognize the First Fortress Master from the Nine Armies. How do you plan to lie to us now?”

Chapter 1882

“Both of you, our sect master isn’t lying to you—we are the Nine Gods Clan. He’s the sect master, and I’m now the assistant sect master of the Nine Gods Clan!” Austin grew increasingly arrogant when he thought about how the Nine Gods Clan would become one of the best main sects. He looked at the other party coldly as he spoke, “You guys should remember the name of our Nine Gods Clan. Our clan will take the world by storm!”

“Pfft!” The people standing opposite them instantly broke out into laughter.

One of the elders from the Blood Stalwart Pavilion even clutched his stomach as he smilingly mocked, Haha! Are you trying to kill me with laughter? You plan to awe the world? You think that we don’t know about your situation right now? You’re the only one in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, and that guy is only in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level. On top of that, his combat power is only comparable to a master in the First-grade soul-penetrating level.”

The elder paused here before he continued,” Nonetheless, what I’m slightly curious about is shouldn’t Austin be the sect master if you plan to trick us? Why did you let a young man with a lower fighting prowess compared to you become the sect master?”

“Hmph! Young man? Our sect master can kill a useless person like you with a single finger!” Austin

harrumphed indignantly, his loyalty for Jack surging at the thought of how Jack was a third grade premium alchemist and had a pill for him.

“Alright, young man. Since you say that you guys are the Nine Gods Clan, where are your tokens? You guys! Seems to be wearing your own clothes. In what way do you look like a sect?” The Blood Stalwart Pavilion Master once again said with a disdainful smile on his face. “It’s best to play the part if you want to complete the act. Otherwise, we’d instantly realize that you’re lying to us!”

“That’s right. You even said that you are some Nine Gods Clan, no? We’ve never even heard about it!” added the opposing assistant sect master.

“It’s a new sect we formed today. It doesn’t matter if you guys heard it. The most important thing is that none of you can leave after coming here today!” Jack smiled coldly and tightened his fist. A strong wave of power caused a loud sound.

“None of us can leave, huh? Haha! We’ve never planned to leave. How can we leave without killing everybody here?” After the Blood Stalwart Pavilion’s assistant sect master spoke, he instantly rushed toward Jack.

Light on his feet, he appeared right before Jack, his tightened fists surging with his energy. The vibration was of an extremely concentrated golden color as he swung toward Jack.

“Young man, I heard that you were able to fight masters in the First-grade soul penetrating level when you were in the Seventh grade ultimate god level. Allow me, a person in the Third-grade soul penetrating level, to test you. You’re a person the main sects highlighted that they’d like us to kill. Today, I’ll kill you first!” The opponent shot Jack a meaningful, cold smile. His attack was incredibly surprising, and there was no chance for Jack to prepare himself. He thought Jack could not avoid it.

Hence, Jack would be badly hurt if not dead by his punch. By then, this guy would die if he went forward to give him a follow-up attack. He would have gotten rid of a hidden threat on behalf of the Alliance Guard once this guy was dead.

Not only the main sects, but this was the first time members of their Blood Stalwart Pavilion saw such a talented person.

Jack, however, did not even plan on dodging.” Hmph!” he scoffed coldly and balled his fists, swinging one forward as his fist gleamed with his energy in concentrated gold.

“Assistant sect master, kill that young man!”

“Yes! The assistant sect master is impressive, and he’s so fast!” Many of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion’s disciples yelled in excitement to support their assistant sect master when they saw this scene.

Thoom!

The punches from both masters contained a huge amount of power, and when their punches met, a loud explosion was heard, one utterly deafening and horrendous

Chapter 1883

“What?!” The Blood Stalwart Pavilion’s assistant sect master felt that something was wrong the moment their fists collided. This young man in front of him was undeniably strong and did not seem to have a combat power comparable to those in the First Grade soul-penetrating level. His opponent seemed to be stronger than him.

Thoom!

The next moment, the assistant sect master of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion was sent flying backward, blood spurting through his lips once he regained his standing.

“Mrpf! Pfft!”

The assistant sect master of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion had a surprised look in his eyes, and he was so startled that he could not recover from the feeling.

The Blood Stalwart Pavilion Master, Scott Davis, soon discovered something and exclaimed, “This is wrong! He’s not in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level. This young man is actually… He’s in the Firstgrade soul-penetrating level!”

“Impossible! How could he have broken through so quickly?” Several elders of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion were visibly surprised as they could not believe what was happening.

“That’s right, he’s broken through too quickly. I never thought this guy would be in the First-grade soul-penetrating level. No wonder he didn’t hide away; he’s got such strong combat power! The assistant sect master, Noah Sage, had a grim expression on his face before he spoke to Scott, Pavilion Master, it seems like we had to attack together!”

“Yes, we’ll attack together. We need to kill this young man no matter what it costs. He’s got a daunting combat power. If we gave him some more time, it’d be out of our control if he continues to break through!” Scott nodded and a horrendous wave of power rushed out of his body following a thought

On the other side, a young man from the White family exclaimed excitedly, “This is great! Even masters in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level are no match for Young Master Jack after he had broken through!”

Another young man from the White family reminded the first young man, “He’s the sect master now! Pavilion Master; the Nine Gods Clan’s sect master. Stop calling him Young Master Jack, understand?”

“Yes, yes, yes… He’s the sect master!” The young man from the White family nodded continuously with a hopeful expression.

“Attack!” commanded Austin with a wave of his hand. Their clan was filled with confidence at the sight of Jack battling the opposing assistant sect master. This time, they were definitely winning.

“Attack!” The others immediately rushed forward, one after another.

“Hmph! Do you think we’re afraid of you guys?” Several masters from the Blood Stalwart Pavilion, who were in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, disregarded Austin and everyone else in his clan as they rushed over with their people.

However, they discovered that something was wrong when they started fighting

“This is wrong. How could they have four masters who are in the First-grade soul-penetrating level?” Not only was the sect master of the Nine Gods Clan in the First-grade soul-penetrating level and had a stronger combat power than someone who was in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level, it so happened that apart from their sect master, four others were in the First-grade soul-penetrating level, which was one person more than theirs.

Chapter 1884

“Haha! You guys never saw this coming, huh? There are still a lot of things that you guys never expected!” Austin laughed loudly and members of the Nine Gods Clan soon cornered their opponents.

“I’ll give you guys a taste of my power when I use the Twin Dragons Fist!” Not planning to let things drag on, Jack-as a thought occurred to him squatted down slightly and soon performed the Twin Dragons Fist. Two gargantuan aura-fists appeared in front of him.

Both aura-fists seemed to be hundreds of meters high and seemed more harrowing compared to what he did previously

Both members of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion also formed a huge giant that was golden in color and came charging forward.

However, the giant was no match to Jack's huge golden fists and was about half the size of the fists.

"This is bad. Our attack won't be able to beat the opponent's. We're doomed!" Scott's face turned pale as he looked at the golden fists that came closer and closer toward them.

"Pavilion Master, why does this martial skill look so familiar? It looks like a martial skill from the Bloodshed Clan. This is quite a powerful skill, but how did this young man manage to learn this?" The assistant sect master was just as scared witless. Both him and Scott turned around to escape when they saw that their giant was easily blasted by Jack's fists.

Thoom!

Unfortunately, the golden fists soon caught up with them both and sent those two flying, and what was left in their wake were pieces of meat that rained from the sky.

Two masters in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level failed to withstand blows from Jack, who killed them both

"That's impossible!" The people from the Blood Stalwart Pavilion seemed to be winning at first, but they were petrified when they saw how quickly Jack killed their sect master and assistant sect master. Their confidence instantly evaporated.

"Haha..! Attack!" Members of the Nine Gods Clan were more electrified than ever when they saw how quickly Jack won. They carried out an even more unhinged assault on the people of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion before them.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The moment Jack killed both the masters from the Blood Stalwart Pavilion who were in the Third-grade soul-penetrating level, Austin and the others had already killed two of the opponent's people. At that

moment, four of them surrounded another member who was in the First-grade ultimate god level and was attacking him. It was obvious that this person could not hold out for much longer.

“Escaping?” The Fifth Elder moved over in a flash and killed a person in the Seventh-grade ultimate god level when he saw that this person was going to break out of the containment from his side. “How can this be?!”

Chapter 1885

Another guy who was in the Ninth grade ultimate god level wanted to escape the containment from this direction, too. He turned pale out of fright when he saw this scene and immediately turned toward another direction to escape.

The horrendous sounds of battle continued until the afternoon before it ended.

Although Jack and the rest helped kill the opponent’s people, the several hundred thousands of Blood Stalwart Pavilion members were too overwhelming. In the end, about 1,000 to 2,000 people were lucky enough to escape.

“Haha! We nearly wiped out the entire sect, but some of them were lucky and rushed toward the forest. We failed to contain those people, but I think that there are only one to two thousand of them. Haha!” Austin laughed out loudly after the battle ended. They killed so many of their opponents' people, but the entire Nine Gods Clan only suffered the death of 2,000 to 3,000 people. Several thousand of them were wounded. Overall speaking, this victory was quite an alarming one.

“Yes. I’ve never expected that we’d wipe out a sect that we used to fear in the past. Haha…! The Blood Stalwart Pavilion is close to extinction from now on!” another elder exclaimed. “From today onward, our Nine Gods Clan can be considered as slightly famous, right?”

“Let’s clean up the battlegrounds quickly as it’s getting late.” Alejandro and the rest had already arranged for people to start cleaning up the battlegrounds.

They would definitely get lots of treasures after wiping out such a big sect this time, especially the masters who were in the soul-penetrating level. They definitely had some nice martial skills and powerful martial art techniques in their martial rings that could help in everybody's future training.

At least, some people only obtained martial art techniques for the ultimate god level. Now, they could also use the martial art techniques from the Blood Stalwart Pavilion to achieve the soul penetrating fighting prowess.

As they nearly finished cleaning the battlefield, Austin, unable to hold back his joy, walked up to Jack and asked happily, "Pavilion master, did what you say about the pill previously still count?"

Jack knew what this old man was thinking about for a long time. He had wanted to ask but was embarrassed about it. Jack purposely refrained from mentioning it before the old man asked. Jack could not help but want to laugh when he saw the slightly frightened expression on this guy's face.

With a flip of his palm, he took out the pill he prepared previously. "Assistant Pavilion Master, I saw how good your performance was just now. You went all out when you were killing those enemies."

"Haha! That's for sure. As the Nine Gods Clan's assistant sect master, I have to set an example for the others!" Austin laughed and immediately took the pill before storing it away carefully. "Thank you for the pill, Pavilion Master. I've been stuck in the peak stage of the First-grade soul-penetrating! Level for a very long time. With this pill, I might be able to breakthrough into the Third-grade souls penetrating level. I've decided to go into retreat from tomorrow onward and try my best to break through into the Third-grade soul-penetrating level in a couple of days in order to serve the sect better."

Jack purposely frowned and said after he heard this, "In that case, won't your fighting prowess be much higher than mine?"

Fearing that he would upset Jack, Austin frantically explained, "Pavilion master, you must be joking. I'm no match for you, even if I break through into the Third-grade soul-penetrating level. You killed two people who were in the Third-grade souls penetrating level just now, so you must have a combat power

comparable to masters in the Fourthgrade soul-penetrating level."

At this moment, Kieran flew over and passed an ancient book to Jack. "Pavilion master! Pavilion Master! We found a fourth-grade elementary martial skill in their martial skill. However, I estimate that it's very difficult to practice this martial skill. Hence, members of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion didn't perform the skill."

Jack took a closer look and was extremely excited. "It truly is a fourth-grade elementary martial skill, the Emperor's Seal. This is quite an impressive martial skill, and only those with strong mental strength can practice this skill. That is why the Blood Stalwart Pavilion Master didn't practice this martial skill."

Chapter 1886

"This is great. Pavilion master, you are a third-grade premium alchemist and you have always had strong mental strength. Haha… As long as the sect master is willing to research this martial skill, you might be able to master this skill. By then, your combat power would definitely increase greatly!" Kieran had a smile on his face when he heard this. Everybody was hopeful toward the Nine Gods Clan.

Jack nodded and took a look at the book in detail before he said, "It's complicated to practice this martial skill and I need time to slowly go through it. However, my combat power would greatly increase once I manage to practice the martial skill. The skill Is separated into three seals and each of them is stronger than the previous one!"

"Really? That is great! We've made a great gain this time and we've obtained quite a significant amount of ultimate-grade spiritual tools from those people. On top of that, there were also many martial skills and martial art techniques!" Kieran said happily." Pavilion master, you need lots of ingredients to cultivate pills. We shall bring the ingredients to you after we've arranged them and you can choose them yourself!

"Yes, I can't just do nothing, I need to cultivate more! Pills when I have time. Apart from that, I plan to select a few among the younger generations within these couple of days to see if any of them have a

stronger mental strength. I shall be able to teach Them how to cultivate pills by then. If we have more people who are alchemists, our sect would progress better."

Jack nodded in satisfaction and lamented. "If we solely depended on me, the pills would only be enough for those of us who have higher fighting prowess. However, I won't be able to supply pills for those disciples with lower fighting prowess."

"That is great. We shall have a couple more alchemists upcoming and it would be good even if we have some in the first or second grade!" The First Elder said in extreme excitement.

Jack frowned and quickly remembered something. He immediately gestured at Kevin, who was nearby." Kevin Cabello, please come over here!

Jack originally wanted to address him as First Elder Cabello when he realized that they were already members of the Nine Gods and it would not be suitable to still address him as First Elder Cabello. Hence, he had no choice but to call him by name.

First Elder Cabello immediately came flying over and gestured to Jack politely. "Pavilion Master, is there anything I can help you with?"

Jack smiled and asked, "By the way, has the degree of your alchemy increased? I remember that you are a second-grade premium alchemist, right?"

Kevin nodded and said embarrassedly, "Recently, I have been trying to cultivate third-grade elementary pills every day. There's been some improvement but! I still have not successfully cultivated anything. There seems to be something wrong!"

"Then I shall come to you tomorrow morning. I will help you to take a look and try to help you become a third-grade elementary alchemist soon!" Jack nodded and said, "Although you don't have a high fighting prowess, you are the alchemist of our sect and you shall enjoy the treatment of an elder. You shall be the Ninth Elder of our Nine Gods Clan! On top of that, both of us will be selecting young people together

to see if they have the talent for cultivating pills. You shall be in charge of grooming them and we shall try to increase the number of our alchemists!"

"Thank-Thank you, sect master. I shall not let you down!" Kevin was delighted and slightly bowed to Jack.

Although he was an alchemist, he had never thought about becoming an elder as he did not have a high fighting prowess and had only managed to break through into the first-grade ultimate god level.

Chapter 1887

He never expected that Jack would directly appoint him as the sect's ninth elder and even planned to let him groom the clan's future alchemists. It could be said that he was given an important task in the sect.

"Don't worry. You can directly ask the sect for any ingredients you need in the future. We will cooperate with you regarding matters of cultivating pills. Certainly, you have to quickly raise your fighting prowess as your mental strength will greatly increase with it. This will greatly benefit your pill cultivation skills!" Jack thought about it and added.

"Don't worry. I will try my best to groom alchemists! For the sect." Kevin said seriously.

"Who would have known that we have such a powerful alchemist in our sect? Haha… I always thought that there was only one! Turns out, there's another alchemist who's about to break through into the third-grade elementary level here!" Austin and the others were thrilled when they heard this. They originally thought that there was only one alchemist in their sect and were afraid that Jack would be extremely busy.

Although they had a big win today, the Alliance Guard would definitely send stronger sects to take action against them when they learn about this. Hence, not only did Jack have to attend to the matters of the sect, he had to work hard to raise his fighting prowess.

From then on, Jack would have more time to manage things with Kevin's help.

Soon, the sky darkened and everybody was in a delightful mood. Jack soon chose the martial enhancement material he required and let the others distribute the remaining items between themselves.

However, what these people did not know was that the masters of the Anti-Alliance Guard's five main sects were already standing on a high, snowy mountain top with the masters from the Alliance Guard.

Master Loador of the Crystal Cloud Clan smiled coldly before speaking with a smirk on his face," Everybody, is there something that you would like to discuss by asking us to come all the way here?"

The old lady from the Anti-Alliance Guard frowned and glanced at the people beside her before she stepped forward and said, "I'm sure that everybody knows about the 600 thousand people who came over from the abandoned world. We've never expected them to be able to find this place after so many years and it's something that surprises us!"

The old lady took a brief pause before she continued speaking, "It might be fated that they manage to come over from the other side. I think we need to discuss this among ourselves. At this moment, they have suffered many deaths and the Bloodshed Clan had also been wiped out because of some unusual situation. Certainly, the Nine Armies had also suffered many deaths. We wish to resolve this issue peacefully!"

"Resolve this peacefully?" Master Loador once again smiled coldly. "Oh my, we are really sorry but things might have been different if you guys came slightly earlier. Unfortunately, you are one step behind and we've already sent two sects to take action. One of them went to Pavilion Billow Cloud while the Blood Stalwart Pavilion was sent to the Nine Armies. I think they are already in the middle of a fight now!"

"You… You people have already taken action?" The corners of the old lady's mouth twitched a couple of times and a darkened expression appeared on her face

Chapter 1888

“How could this have happened? They have already traveled all the way there? There’s even a possibility that the battle has already started?” The old man standing beside them also took a deep breath after he heard this. He too had a darkened expression on his face.

However, Master Loador said while smiling, “Haha… Not only have they started fighting, I think the battle should be over by now! By the way, I’m quite curious. Those people that came over from the abandoned world are now hiding in Pavilion Billow Cloud or Nine Armies? No matter where they are hiding, they would have been killed by now but I’m still curious!”

Master Loador paused before he continued speaking, “Certainly, you guys have the right to keep quiet Even if none of you tell me where they are, my people will still inform me of the situation when they return!”

The old lady had an extremely darkened expression on her face. She continued speaking after keeping quiet for a couple of seconds, “Around 30 thousand of them went to Pavilion Billow Cloud and the rest are at the Nine Armies. Unexpectedly, you guys have sent the Blood Stalwart Pavilion to the Nine Armies. In that case, not many of them would be able to survive. Even if they did, there won’t be many of them left!

“You are right. I am aware of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion’s power. Do you know why I sent the Blood Stalwart Pavilion over? Apart from the fact that they are near to the Nine armies, the other reason is due to their close relationship with the Bloodshed Clan all this while. In that case, the members of the Blood Stalwart Pavilion would do their best to kill their enemies to avenge the Bloodshed Clan!” Master Loador had a vicious smile on his face. He shrugged his shoulders before he said, “By the way, there’s no need for you guys to be angry as this is quite normal, right? It shouldn’t be an issue for us to send our people to help avenge the loss of one of our sects, right?”

Master Mackenzie also said with a smile, “Consider us as merciful as our main sects did not take action and we only sent two smaller sects to fight your people. I think we shall just let this be. Certainly, we can’t do anything if you guys aren’t convinced!”

A middle-aged woman from the Anti-Alliance Guard thought about it and said, “Among those two sects that you appointed, one of them have masters in the fourth-grade soul penetrating level while the other one sent to the Nine Armies has two members who are in the third-grade souls penetrating level and three who are in the first grade soul-penetrating level. Under such circumstances, there will only be a handful of people who will be able to escape from these two sects!”

Master Loador immediately said with a smile, “oh dear me, how pessimistic are you? You have to believe in the strength of those people from your side. What if those people are lucky and more than half of them manage to escape? What if your people were able to obtain complete victory? Haha… Am I right?”

Master Mackenzie purposely said in a gloating minner. “Don’t worry. We will not continue to look into this even if both of your forces win. After all, there would be many deaths and that is enough for us. However, if both of your forces lose, the martial enhancement materials that once belonged to those people shall be our compensation!”

The middle-aged woman tightened her fist in anger but had nothing to say. In the end, she could only say, “Then we shall make our move first. We hope that you will keep to your word. No matter what, we hope that you do not look into this matter in the future!

The group was in a bad mood and could only leave with a dejected heart.

“Haha… I’m so happy when I see the expressions on their faces right now. If we don’t teach them a lesson, they would think that they can simply bully us, the members of the Alliance Guard!” Once the other party walked away, an old man from the Alliance Guard laughed loudly and the rest were also in a delighted mood.

After they flew some distance away, the old man from the Anti-Alliance Guard said to the old lady, Should we separate into two teams to take a look at the situation at the Nine Armies and Pavilion Billow Cloud?

The old woman thought about it before shaking her head helplessly. “The Pavilion Billow Cloud is overly strong. Although the sect they sent is stronger than Pavilion Billow Cloud, Pavilion Billow Cloud has a

profound base and is a sect. Their overall combat power is quite strong. Although they might be defeated, I believe that many people will manage to stay alive."

The old lady took a pause before she continued speaking, "After all, the Pavilion Billow Cloud is not very far away from our sect. If they escape toward our direction, the people from the Alliance Guard would not dare to continue their pursuit once they are near our sect."

Chapter 1889

The old man nodded his head and said, "The Nine Armies will probably be in trouble right now. There's quite a number of people among their ranks, and they have the people from the abandoned world who number a few hundred thousand. Although their numbers are big, their overall fighting power is not even worth more than one out of five stars. They're not capable of taking on the Blood Stalwart Pavilion, so I predict that it would be hard for the people of the Nine Armies to escape!

"Ah, it's a pity for the master, Jack White. I heard from the people of Pavilion Billow Cloud that the kid's martial talent is amazing. Such a shame!

The old woman sighed helplessly again. "I'll survey the remaining numbers of the Pavilion Billow Cloud once I get back. I believe that if there are people who managed to escape, they would go to the Pavilion Billow Cloud to seek refuge."

"Mmhmm. Then let's go back!"

After they talked for a while, they all returned to their own sects.

At that moment, Jack and the others were all very happy. At night, they prepared to get some proper rest.

"This is great. We won splendidly!"

Selena and Jack sat in the courtyard, looking at the moon in the sky. However, she quickly frowned and said, “Although we were victorious, the people from the Alliance Guard will probably send even stronger sects after us next time.”

Jack nodded his head. “That’s true. Next time, predict that they will send people who are at least in the fifth or sixth-grade soul-penetrating realm. Perhaps they would even send those of the seventh grade. That’s why we must seize every moment we have!”

“Do we have enough time?”

Selena spoke in a serious tone after thinking for a while.

“I think it’s enough!”

Jack deduced, “There were not many who escaped, and many of them did not have high cultivation levels. Some were at the ultimate god realm, some only at True God Realm, and their flying speed was not very fast. Many of them were even injured, so it would take them a few days if they want to report everything to the bigger sects.”

Here, Jack paused before continuing, “Besides, the bigger sects certainly won’t make any move carelessly once they know the situation. They’ll definitely call for a meeting together with the other sects then they’ll decide on which sects to send, to trouble us. It’ll take a few more days if that’s the case!

Selena nodded her head and continued her deduction, “After they’ve made their decision, they’ll send people to inform that sect, and that will take another few days. Then before the sect goes into battle, they’ll definitely get those who are able to make breakthroughs to do it so that they can fight. It’ll probably take time for them to prepare too, right?”

Jack nodded his head. “That’s why I estimate that we have another month. During this month, we need

to rapidly increase our sect's fighting power! At least we now have ten people in the soul-penetrating realm, but they only know that we have five! This is an advantage! They'll underestimate us!"

Chapter 1890

"Then you must work hard during this month. If they truly send fighters of the seventh-grade ultimate god realm, you probably won't be a match for them at your current cultivation level and fighting power!"

After Selena thought about it, she said, "Or you must at least break into the third or fourth-grade souls penetrating realm, right?"

Jack also said while smiling helplessly, "That's right. If I only use a third-grade premium pill to cultivate myself, even if I can stabilize my cultivation level, I will be able to break into the second-grade soul-penetrating realm at most if I use this pill. It's a lot harder to make breakthroughs once we're in the soul -penetrating realm. That's why unless I…"

Jack did not continue his sentence, but Selena had already guessed Jack's thoughts. "Unless you are able to successfully create a fourth-grade elementary pill during this month, and only after creating a fourth-grade elementary pill will your cultivation level be able to increase significantly, right?"

"That's right!"

Jack nodded his head and took Selena's hand." That's why I probably won't have time to accompany you tonight," he said. "I need to sit down and cultivate myself to try and stabilize my current first grade soul-penetrating realm level! After I've stabilized myself, I'll start to research the alchemy methods of a fourth-grade elementary pill once I'm free!"

"I don't intend to sleep either. I'm going to work hard to cultivate myself. I haven't used the pill you gave me yet so I'm going to use it this month and break into the first-grade ultimate god realm!"

Selena said, grinning.

At night, the two began to cultivate themselves. Jack continued to practice his martial arts technique, rapidly absorbing the chi emerging from the space between the sky and the earth, strengthening his cultivation level. If he could not stabilize his cultivation level and had to use a pill to increase it in the future, it would not be good for him. His level would be unstable then, and it would probably be difficult for him to kill those of higher levels.

Meanwhile, Selena took out the pill that Jack had given and began to cultivate herself.

The next morning, Jack and Kevin went to select youths with a talent for alchemy.

There were plenty who wanted to become alchemists, but there were few who fulfilled the criteria. The two were busy throughout the day, and the selection only ended at night.

“There’s only five of them who are talented in alchemy. That’s too few. Even if we train all of them, we’re going to use a lot of time. More importantly, they don’t possess strong martial talent yet. It’ll probably be a miracle if they can become a second grade elementary alchemist in this lifetime!”

In the end, Kevin looked at Jack helplessly, flashing a bitter smile.

He did not think that Kieran would actually step forward at this moment. “Master, why don’t we go to Sky Dull City to take a look?” he asked.

“Sky Dull City? Where’s that?”

Jack furrowed his brows. He was not very familiar with the circumstances in this world.

Yesterday, Austin had given Jack a map, which had markings of the territories of the forces, especially those of bigger ones.

However, Jack did not know where this Sky Dull City was. He only remembered that there was a small lake not too far away from them.

Chapter 1891

Kieran then explained, “Sky Dull City is not a very big city, but it’s a pretty famous one.”

“You’re saying that there are alchemists there?”

Jack was taken aback. He quickly thought of something and immediately asked Kieran.

“Sky Dull City is famous because the people in that lake city all advocate alchemy,” Kieran said, smiling. “Furthermore, that’s a place where alchemists frequently go to trade. There’ll be people going there to sell or buy materials used in alchemy, including alchemy stoves and even alchemy formulae. People sell those there!”

“There’s actually a place like that? Why didn’t you say so earlier?”

Jack was excited after he heard that.

Kieran quickly explained, “Master, I only found out that you were an alchemist yesterday. Besides, we were so busy yesterday as we had just finished battling the enemy and I was busy cleaning up the spoils of war. I didn’t have the time to tell you about this either. However, most of the people in Sky Dull City are first-grade elementary alchemists or those who wish to learn alchemy. It’s very rare to have second-grade alchemists!”

Jack pondered for a moment before asking, “Oh, right. What about the bigger sects? Do they have alchemists too?”

“Of course they do,” Kieran immediately replied.” But there’s not many of them. Usually, it’s considered good if they have a third-grade elementary alchemist. There are very few third grade intermediate alchemists, and I don’t think there is a single third-grade premium alchemist. This is because even in bigger sects, there aren’t many in the soul-penetrating realm who are interested in alchemy. Of course, even fewer people from the ultimate god realm are interested!”

Kevin nodded his head. “If there are third-grade premium alchemists in the sect, then there’ll be many people who are in the first or second-grade soul-penetrating realm. If many people wish to break into the fifth or sixth-grade soul-penetrating realm, they need a fourth-grade alchemist. Otherwise, they can only slowly cultivate themselves over time!

Kieran nodded his head and told Jack, “It’s extremely rare to find an alchemical master like you, Master. If you’re able to make a breakthrough and become a fourth-grade elementary alchemist, Master, I guarantee that you’ll be the very first fourth -grade alchemist in the world, and there’ll be no one stronger than you. Of course, you’re very strong now too. That’s why the Vice-master has completely submitted to you!”

“All right. Then let’s visit Sky Dull City. At any rate, we’ll probably be able to arrive there by noon if we go now, and we’ll see if we can select people to come to our sect in the afternoon. We’ll have to hurry back the next morning. We don’t have much time. If we were to spend one day, let’s make it a fruitful day. We need to seize the moment!”

After Jack made the decision, he flipped his palm and threw his sword into the sky. The flying sword then turned bigger and the three hopped onto it.

The flying sword was already fast, to begin with, and now that Jack’s cultivation level had increased, it was even faster now.

At first, Jack had estimated that they would only get there by noon. He did not expect to arrive at the entrance of Sky Dull City in two hours.

“Your weapon’s flying speed is amazing, Master. I didn’t think we would arrive so quickly!”

The three jumped down from the flying sword, and Kieran said excitedly, “I’ve also wanted to come here long ago, but I had no purpose to do so, that’s why I didn’t. I really didn’t think that I would actually come here with you today, Master, as the First Elder of the Nine Gods clan!”

Chapter 1892

“I never thought that there would actually be a place like this! This is practically a paradise for us, alchemists!

Kevin looked at the modest-sized fortress, excitement was etched onto his expression.

When the three walked to the entrance of the city, they saw many people selling their wares at the gates.

“Second-grade elementary sky dragon grass-no need to use spirited grass to exchange for it. You only need a hundred premium spirited stones!”

A fatty began to hawk his wares as he sat cross legged on the ground.

“Seriously? Using a hundred premium-grade spirited stones to buy a single stalk of sky dragon grass? Aren’t you just ripping people off? You’re being a little too greedy, Brother.”

Here, a few people also walked over, and one of them began to nag and scold the fatty.

The fatty just gave a wan smile. “You have no idea that this is a thousand years old, Brother,” he said. “It

may be of a lower grade, but it's not easy to find such spirited grass either. I think something a thousand years old would be worth that price, no?"

"A thousand years? That sounds about right if it's truly a thousand years. It's easy to find sky dragon grass that's over a hundred years old, but it's not easy to find one that is a thousand years old!

The people nodded their heads and said.

Of course, there were people selling weapons, and they also were promoting their wares. The area grew busy.

After Jack thought about it, he asked Kieran, "First Elder, let's go and recruit people to learn alchemy. How should we go about it?"

"There are not many people here, Master, and it's a little more chaotic as anyone sells anything," Kieran said, smiling. "If you want to recruit alchemists, there's a designated plaza in the middle of the city. We just need to place a plate there and explain which sect we're from and that we're recruiting disciples who have talent in alchemy."

Here, Kieran spoke confidently, "Don't worry. Some casual trainers who wish to learn alchemy, naturally wish to join a sect, all so that there'll be someone to teach them alchemy and that they'll improve their alchemy. That's why since we're here, we'll definitely be able to recruit many people!"

Jack released an internal sigh of relief after he heard this. They all walked toward the plaza in the middle of the city.

After a while, they came to the plaza in the middle of the city and found a plate, writing their overall circumstances onto it. Then they sat down beneath a willow tree.

After they sat down, Jack carefully observed his surroundings. Only then did he realize that there were

truly plenty of people who were recruiting others to learn alchemy.

Soon, a young woman walked over and stopped before Jack and the others.

“The Nine Gods clan? When recruiting people to learn alchemy, it’s best if you have some experience In alchemy yourself. It’ll be best if you’re a first grade or second-grade alchemist!”

Chapter 1893

The girl looked at the words on the plate and could not help but frown. “Why haven’t I heard of this sect? The Nine Gods clan? Don’t tell me that it’s not even a third-class sect?”

Kevin quickly stood up when he saw that a person had finally come by. “Our sect was established not too long ago, young lady,” he introduced. “We just established ourselves yesterday, but don’t you think that such a sect is more attractive, with its potential to grow?”

The girl’s expression twisted into disdain when she heard this. “I may be a casual trainer, but I’m already a first-grade premium alchemist. I have good talent in alchemy, so forget about a new clan like you. I intend to find someone who’s at least a third-grade elementary alchemist to teach me. Only an alchemist like that would be able to nurture me!”

Kevin’s eyes brightened when he heard this. “Our sect would be perfect for you then, young lady,” he said, chuckling, “I may not be a third-grade alchemist, but I’m getting there soon. I’m just a few steps away…”

Before Kevin could finish his sentence, the girl cut in impatiently, “Don’t you know of the saying, ‘a millimeter missed is a kilometer gone? If you aren’t a third grade elementary alchemist yet, then you’re far from it. There are plenty of people who are second -grade premium alchemists, but there aren’t many who are third-grade. I can even become a master like this!

Kevin saw that she was about to leave and immediately stepped forward to stop her. “I haven’t finished yet, young lady. No need to be in a rush,” he said. “I may not be a third-grade alchemist, but our master is. He’s not just a third-grade alchemist—he’s a third-grade premium alchemist!”

“Your master is an alchemist? Who? Why haven’t I heard of this? Which sect’s master would also be an alchemist?

The girl seemed to be interested after she heard this, and she stopped to ask him.

Kevin then looked at Jack and gave a warm smile.“ This is our master. He’s young and handsome, and he has a high cultivation level. Furthermore, he has excellent talent in alchemy. He’s going to become a fourth-grade alchemist sooner or later!”

Suddenly, the girl’s words attracted a few people,

“No way. There are scammer sects like this? That’s terrible. Are they pretending to be third-grade premium alchemists to trick us into joining before getting us to make pills for them? It’ll be too late by the time we realize. We might not even be able to escape then!”

A man began to make speculations.

“It’s not trustworthy information. I’ve never heard of the Nine Gods clan either. Who would dare to join such an insignificant sect? Who knows how terrible it’ll be there!

Another middle-aged woman also shook her head.” You should seek out reputable clans to join. Otherwise, if you join and can’t learn a single thing, or if you fight them once there’s animosity, you would be in danger!”

“Uh…”

It was evident that Kevin was in a difficult position. He furrowed his brows, not knowing what to do.

Jack saw that more and more people had gathered, he then gave a cold smile and said, “Why don’t we try this? I’ll give a demonstration and create a third grade premium pill. After watching me, you can consider if you wish to join our can. Of course, it’s best if you know some of the basics. Those who can create first-grade or second-grade elementary pills are best!

After saying that, Jack flipped his palm and took out his alchemy stove and materials.

Chapter 1894

Once Jack’s words rang out, many eyes wandered toward his direction immediately. Sky Dull City was a haven for alchemists, and there were plenty of alchemists gathered here.

Even if the people who came here were not alchemists, they still knew plenty about the trade. Now that someone was calling himself a third-grade premium alchemist, everyone was practically sneering upon him.

Did he take them as uneducated idiots? Who were the third-grade premium alchemists? Not even two of them could be found in the entire Sky Dull City. Even if they were complete bullies, one must always treat third-grade premium alchemists with courtesy.

After all, third-grade premium alchemists could create pills that would help those in the soul penetrating realm. Alchemy was a respected profession in the cultivation world, and a third grade premium alchemist was the crème of the crop.

The people surrounded Jack tightly in a flash, all their eyes pinned onto him.

There were even some who began discussing in a loud voice. A middle-aged man with a little goatee spoke to Jack, “Did you eat some kind of crack, boy? Do you think that we don’t know anything? You say you’re a third-grade premium alchemist, and you think that we’ll believe you after putting up a little sign to recruit disciples? Which third grade premium alchemist doesn’t go through years of practice? They wouldn’t be as young as you.”

These words incited the surrounding people to agree, and a few added on, “Don’t shoot yourself in the foot and become a laughing stock. Don’t think that you can just create a pill, call it a third-grade premium pill and we’ll believe you!”

“That’s right! More than half of us here are alchemists. Maybe we’re not that well-versed in other matters, but we can definitely tell the grade of a pill.”

It was evident that not a single person believed that the young, handsome man before them was a third grade premium alchemist.

Jack turned a deaf ear to all their questions. He took out all his alchemy materials and began to create pills as everyone watched.

The first step to alchemy was to control the concoction’s temperature; this was a skill that every alchemist must master first. Jack’s technique was smooth, and he controlled the flame to a fine point after pouring the ingredients into the stove. Every single stalk of spirited grass melted into the concoction under the perfect temperature,

Most people could not perform this so smoothly. After all, upon a careful look, every spirited grass that Jack was using was third grade!

Someone could not help but cry out when he saw the spirited grass that Jack was using, “My God! Look! Amplified spirited grass! Thousand year corpse king flowers! Seven-color snow lotuses! This… Don’t tell me he’s creating a third-grade premium pill, the god -transfiguring pill!”

The people had plenty of knowledge, and Jack purposely chose one type of pill, so long as it was a third-grade premium pill that all alchemists would know about

The formula for the god-transfiguring pill was not a secret. Everybody immediately understood which type of pill he was going to create after they saw the spirited grass and spirited flowers he was using.

“Is he serious!” The middle-aged man with a goatee spoke with a frown.

Everyone knew the formula to the god-transfiguring pill, however, knowledge was just knowledge. After all, it was a third-grade premium pill. Other than alchemists who were third-grade premium and above, no one else could create it.

“Don’t tell me he’s just doing it for show. After all, which self-respecting third-grade premium alchemist would go on the streets to recruit disciples? If he was a true third-grade premium alchemist, he wouldn’t be recruiting disciples on the streets-even if he just spread the word of intending to recruit disciples, people would be flooding his house!

Chapter 1895

“It must be for show. The brat’s method of creating the concoction is real enough and he should be an alchemist of a pretty high grade, but he’s definitely not a third-grade premium alchemist. If he were, he would not be out on the streets. The man with the goatee straightened his neck out, sneering as he spoke.

The discussions went on endlessly, and they all entered Kevin and Kieran’s ears. They held themselves back for the sake of the future.

However, the last sentence coming from the middle aged man with a goatee was spoken with a condescending and mocking expression. It was not simply a discussion.

Kevin gave a cold harrumph and glared at the middle -aged man with a goatee. “Just because you can’t do it doesn’t mean that others can’t. Just wait for the results to see if he succeeds or not. You keep rattling off non-stop. Do you want a beating?”

He had been irritated by the man with the goatee long ago. He had been rambling on from the start, and the more he spoke, the darker his tone was.

Goatee’s cultivation level was not as high as Kevin’s, as he was naturally not interested in cultivation when he specialized in alchemy. However, he was still unafraid of Kevin. After all, this was Sky Dull City, there were explicit rules where one could not resort to violence in the city. Otherwise, they would be caught and punished by the law enforcers, banned from Sky Dull City forever.

The more Kevin tried to go against him, the more Goatee wanted to suppress him. He stroked his long eyebrows and said, “Then let’s see what your so called master will be able to create!”

Jack was not the least bit affected by whatever ruckus going around him. He had familiarized himself with the formula to create the god-transfiguring pill long ago, and his movements did not contain an ounce of hesitation as he created the concoction.

“He’s actually already at the third step; solidifying the pill! He did everything so easily to this step. Could he truly be a third-grade premium alchemist?” the girl cried out in surprise.

As her words rang out, the surroundings suddenly quieted down. Everyone had been continuously arguing among themselves, but they did not take notice of Jack’s alchemy process. They did not think that he would reach the third step so quickly and easily, and this was the most important step, to solidify the pill.

The third step was to coagulate the herbal concoction so that it became a pill. No matter if he succeeded or not, the young man’s abilities were not to be questioned to be able to reach this step in creating the gods-transfiguring pill. He was a third grade elementary alchemist, at least.

Goatee tried to suppress the anxiety plucking his chest. After all, it was no small matter to offend a third -grade premium alchemist. After all, he would still be in Sky Dull City in the future.

The word of a third-grade premium alchemist in Sky Dull City was practically law; getting rid of him would be like stepping on an ant.

“It won’t happen! No way! No way! A third-grade premium alchemist would be worshipped in Sky Dull City. Why would they be unknown? This person must be cheating us!” Goatee could not help but mumble.

“Jeez! He’s already created half the pill. From his technique, he should be able to create a whole pill without using much time! He’s truly a third-grade premium alchemist!” The girl’s eyes sparkled as she spoke with delight.

She had originally been looking for a third-grade elementary alchemist as a master. She had not even dared to dream of getting a third-grade premium alchemist to become her master. After all, third grade premium alchemists were rare even in Sky Dull City.

She did not think that she would run into a third grade premium alchemist who wanted to take her in just by wandering the streets! She had truly hit the jackpot!

Chapter 1896

The gods-transfiguring pill was not complicated to create for Jack. He had tried doing it many times before, and he was so familiar with the process that It was almost habitual. Even if he was surrounded by people watching him, his progress was not affected at all.

Before an incense stick’s worth of time had passed, half of the pill’s shape slowly solidified. A herbal scent wafted from the stove and suddenly spread to its surroundings, and everyone’s eyes went big.

Even if they could not personally verify if this was truly a third-grade premium pill, they could tell that it was no ordinary pill from the scent alone. It was a third-grade intermediate pill at least!

“It’s done! It’s truly done! Oh my God! I thought he was just boasting! I didn’t think he was truly a third grade premium alchemist!”

“That’s right! I didn’t think he would be so skilled at such a young age! We can’t even easily find third grade premium alchemists during this day and age!”

The crowd burst into chatter, and Jack extended his hand to summon the gods-transfiguring pill from the stove into his palm without batting a lash. It was as though the pill had a spirit of its own. It spun around when Jack took it, making everyone release a cry of surprise.

On that day, they were introduced to new horizons. After all, although most of the crowd were alchemists themselves, many of them had never seen higher-grade pills. Everyone knew the formula for the gods-transfiguring pill, but as their skills were limited, they had no way to create it, much less see it.

A youth whose face was full of pimples inhaled rabidly, as though he were a wild dog that had spotted a bone. He practically sucked in all the medicinal scents he could to increase his cultivation level.

Although the people who saw this felt a little disgusted, they did not think that this was strange. After all, that was a third-grade premium pill. Taking a whiff of it would strengthen one’s body and increase one’s lifespan.

Goatee, who had been ridiculing him, felt as though someone had whacked him across the head. He stared at the pill in Jack’s hand, and he did not dare to question anything anymore.

After all, the reality was right before him. If he tried to run away, Jack would probably not even need to teach him a lesson—everyone around him would give him a few slaps.

Kevin could not help but laugh when he saw that Goatee was stunned into silence. His rough features were scrunched together so tightly, and he pointed at Goatee and said, “Go on! You go on. You just couldn’t shut up just now, why aren’t you saying anything now?”

How could he dare to speak? The goatee was extremely embarrassed. He had dared to question Jack before so many people. However, he had simply thought that Jack was boasting; what third-grade premium alchemist during this age would put up signs on the streets to recruit disciples.

He did not think that he would actually see one! He was truly unlucky.

Goatee sucked in air through his nostrils. “I… You… you’re truly a third-grade premium alchemist?” His question was something so obvious that everyone stared at him with contempt.

After all, the young man had already created the pill. Was he being dumb, still asking an obvious question?

Goatee gave a small cough and tried to avoid the glares pinned upon him. “You’re truly recruiting disciples?”

Goatee’s question finally hit the nail, and everyone suddenly fell silent once more. Before, everyone had come over to see what was going on, and they had not considered this question at all.

After all, from their perspective, a third-grade premium alchemist was practically someone who walked on the clouds. They would never meet one on a usual basis, much less one who was recruiting disciples.

As Goatee asked this question, everyone’s eyes suddenly grew wide as they waited for Jack’s answer.

Chapter 1897

Jack chuckled softly. This was exactly what he was looking for. After all, he had spent so much time crafting pills and presenting them, naturally, his purpose was to recruit alchemists in a more effective way. If a clan would want to grow and expand, this alchemical expertise and pills were crucial.

He took a deep breath and rose from his chair after putting away the pills. He then straightened his back and gazed at the crowd, his eyes released a stoic and indifferent sense. “That’s right! I’m here to recruit disciples!” The crowd looked at him with an expectant gaze.

“Wow…” Surprise looks were written on everyone’s faces in the room.

Did he want to get a disciple? A third-grade alchemist was looking for a disciple! There had not been a third-grade advanced-level alchemist recruiting disciples in the Sky Dull City for the past ten years! Having a famous and talented alchemist as a mentor was always better than working alone behind those closed doors.

Jack had already proven his skills and abilities, so he did not even have to promote himself anymore. The next second after Jack announced his intention, the crowd was extremely excited and some of them even tried to get close to Jack.

“I’m a second-grade intermediate alchemist! Take me please! I’ll do whatever you want me to do!”

Several people in the crowd shouted at Jack.

“Me! Pick me! I’m a second-grade advanced-level alchemist! Take me as your apprentice and I can do anything too!”

The young girl from before had her cheeks kissed pink after seeing the situation. Kevin wanted to take her as his apprentice a moment ago, yet she was suspicious of him and did not agree to the proposal. Look at the situation now! The crowd swarmed out like hungry dogs going for their food. Her chance of getting picked has now become slimmer and slimmer.

The young girl did not care anymore, after all, no one would be this fortunate to find such an excellent opportunity in a lifetime! Hence, she desperately pushed forward, trying to move to the front of the crowd. Unfortunately, the people around her were more aggressive than she was! If such a situation continued, a stampede might happen and cause casualties.

“Calm down, guys, calm down! Everyone has a fair chance to be picked! We’ll recruit a group of disciples and not only one! As long as your alchemist rank reaches the first-grade advanced level, you’ll be qualified to join our Nine Gods Clan!”

Only a few of them traveled to the Sky Dull City, but when they returned to the Nine Gods Clan, there were ample people following them! These trips were indeed fruitful, and Jack had recruited nearly a hundred new alchemists.

Although the ability of these alchemists varied, the good thing was that they were large in number. Moreover, each of them was extremely passionate about the art of alchemy! If the Nine Gods Clan wants to develop further in a short time, they would be the key components in the development.

Jack was a third-grade advanced level alchemist, but even the best alchemist could not support the pill consumption of the entire clan. He knew very well that the Alliance Guard would never be on a good term with them anymore.

That battle would not dispel the Alliance Guard’s desire to destroy the Nine Gods Clan. Hence, Jack had to raise and improve the overall combat prowess of the Nine Gods Clan within a short period of time.

When Austin and the others saw that Jack had brought back so many alchemists to refine pills for them, they were all so shocked that their jaws nearly dropped to the ground. After all, they had never encountered that many alchemists before.

“Jesus Christ! I’ve never seen so many alchemists before! Our Nine Gods Clan is finally starting to become stronger!” Austin, initially, was upset that his votes were less than Jacks.

However, all the discontentment and dissatisfaction dispersed the moment he recognized that Jack was far stronger than he was! Firstly, Jack's combat prowess was extraordinarily talented and superb—he was no match for Jack! Secondly, Jack was a third grade advanced-level alchemist! He had never seen any third-grade advanced-level alchemist before and only heard it from others.

Kieran noticed the awe-inspiring expressions hanging on Austin and the others' faces; he said proudly, "Why are you still here? Hurry up and go train yourself! We will send pills to you once the pills are created and refined!"

If these words were said in the past, not to mention Austin, even those fortress masters would have been furious and unconvinced after hearing such a statement. How dare a follower of Jack like Kieran to talk back and command them but the table had been turned now! Jack brought so many alchemists back to the Nine Gods Clan, the clan would definitely grow and develop rapidly. It might even become the number one clan here!

Chapter 1898

The number one clan! How glorious was that! If they became the number one clan, everyone would bow to them whenever they met someone out there.

When they thought of this, they happily hurried back to their own residence to train hard.

After Jack returned to his residence, he greeted Selena for a brief moment and then started to put his plan into action-guiding the alchemists to make pills.

These alchemists had different levels of ability, so to raise their alchemical level as soon as possible, Jack first taught the Ninth Elder and the others how to raise their level and then sent them to instruct the alchemists that Jack had brought back from the Sky Dull City.

In the next few days, Jack had been immersed in alchemy, and his alchemy level had improved by leaps

and bounds. He had actually broken through the shackles of the third-grade alchemy level and finally entered the rank of a fourth-grade alchemist.

Jack was merely a fourth-grade elementary level alchemist, but even if he was only at the elementary level, he was still the rare one out there. Moreover, he cultivated and trained harder than before for the past few days that he had also broken through into the second-grade soul-penetrating realm.

Kevin was bursting with joy after hearing that Jack could already make fourth-grade pills, after all, a fourth-grade alchemist was a legendary existence, and now a fourth-grade was right in front of him.

“Master Jack! You have become a fourth-grade elementary alchemist, do you want to try to create a pill? What kind of pills are you going to make?” Kevin casually asked, not expecting that Jack already had a plan about it.

“I want to make soul-penetrating pills!” Jack’s voice was firm and resounding. This was what he had thought of long ago. For such a long time, he had been waiting for himself to be able to break through to the fourth grade and make these pills.

The purpose of Jack wanting to create the soul penetrating pill was simple—he wanted to break through to the next level within a short period of time. He knew clearly that the Alliance Guard would not let them off the hook easily, so he had to make himself stronger.

The quickest way for him to do that was none other than the soul-penetrating pill.

From the name of the soul-penetrating pill, one could understand that this pill could help to raise the martial level of a strong person in the soul penetrating realm. Nonetheless, it did not indicate how many martial levels could be raised by consuming a soul-penetrating pill.

After all, for such a long time, no one could craft a fourth-grade elementary pill, let alone become a fourth-grade elementary-level alchemist.

After thinking about this, Jack could not help but get excited; his heart and mind were fully focused on alchemy right now. After handing over everything, he put his mind and soul into the fourth-grade alchemy.

A hundred miles away from the Nine Gods Clan, the old crone who was the leader of the Anti-Alliance Guard and had once negotiated with Master Loador breathed out a heavy sigh of defeat. Her face turned unsightly and solemn.

“It’s too tragic! It’s simply a tragedy! Those guys are cruel and heartless! How dare they eliminate the Pavilion of Billow Cloud! Master Zeller, what do you think we should do next?”

The one who was called Master Zeller was the old man who had followed the old crone to the Alliance Guard earlier

His face blanched. No one from the Pavilion of Billow Cloud survived, including those prominent fighters. After they arrived at the Pavilion Billow Cloud’s residence, the only thing they saw were corpses; the scene before them was bloody and horrifying.

“Master Yarbrough, we should’ve known from the beginning! That bunch of old sags of the Alliance Guard was never kind! They are always cruel and inhuman!”

Those people of Alliance Guard only wanted to guard what they thought was right, and protect what they thought was theirs. They killed people as if these people were nothing to them!

Master Yarbrough was so angry that his face turned red, and a few vicissitudes appeared on his already pale face. “This group of heartless b*stard! Look at the ending of the Pavilion Billow Cloud! I don’t think the Nine Armies would survive the Alliance Guard’s attack either. They are probably not much different from the Pavilion Billow Cloud, after all, they were not as strong as the Pavilion Billow Cloud!”

After they learned that the Alliance Guard had struck at the Pavilion Billow Cloud and the Nine Armies, their first thought was to go to the Pavilion Billow Cloud to find out what happened.

They hoped to rescue some remnants of the battle too. The reason that they did not speed up in action was that they knew clearly in their hearts the Pavilion Billow Cloud was so much stronger than the Nine Armies.

Chapter 1899

Master Zeller stared at the devastating scene before him; the once prosperous and powerful Pavilion Billow Cloud had fallen just like that. “Do you think we should go to the Nine Armies and take a look at the situation? I want to go, what if there are some survivors?” he sighed aloud.

At this point, Master Zeller ran out of ideas; he simply did not know what to do anymore. He was one of the important figures of the Anti-Alliance Guard, but he was helpless this time.

Master Yarbrough’s eyebrows snapped together, then he slapped his thighs and announced, his voice determined, “Let’s go! We must go and have a look! If there are survivors, we must rescue them! Perhaps some of them were not killed, who knows?”

Master Zeller bobbed his head in agreement. Master Yarbrough’s point of view was reasonable and logical. Although the Pavilion Billow Cloud had become nothing, the spirit of unity and saving the others shall not die. Hence, they should at least go and take a look at the situation.

After the two made the decision, they traveled together toward the Nine Armies. They were mentally prepared for what they were going to see in the Nine Armies.

They had even formed an image of the current Nine Armies in their heads- the bloody scene of corpses, shattered fleshes, and so on. Perhaps, they would find Jack’s body as well.

The imagination was what neither of them would like to happen. After they entered the gates of the Nine Armies, both of them almost had their jaws drop to the ground. Although there were traces of battle left behind, they could still see crowds moving around within the Nine Armies wall.

They looked like they were happy and in good spirits as if they were full of hope and confidence about the future. Master Yarbrough frowned and hurriedly stopped a disciple of the Nine Armies for questioning.

After asking a series of questions, they learned that the place had changed its name; it was no longer the Nine Armies but the Nine Gods Clan, and their clan master was none other than Jack-whom they had been worried about all this time.

Master Yarbrough pulled over a short-bearded disciple and asked with a surprised expression, “Did the Alliance Guard not send anyone to attack here? Or did they not find the right place?”

The tragic situation that none had survived in the Pavilion Billow Cloud left a deep impression on Master Zeller and Master Yarbrough but the Nine Gods Clan was safe and peaceful to the point that they started to doubt what they witnessed at the Pavilion Billow Cloud.

With disbelief in their eyes, they asked the disciple questions. Although the short-bearded disciple did not know the name of these two men in front of him, he knew that they were not ordinary men from the strong aura that they were emanating.

So, he naturally did not dare to hide the truth. After all, none can hide the truth from an obvious situation

He responded immediately, “Those b*stard of the Alliance Guard, of course, they did come and attack us. But our clan master is way more superb and stronger than them! So, those attackers were all gone, none of them were left alive!”

After hearing these words, Master Yarbrough’s eyes widened. “What…what did you just say? Those people that Alliance Guard sent were all killed by all o f you? Please don’t make a joke about this thing!

Master Yarbrough could not believe what he had heard. Not only Master Yarbrough who was in shock,

Master Zeller who stood beside him was shaken by the truth as well.

Master Zeller stepped forward abruptly and stared at the short-bearded disciples with a pair of stern eyes. The disciple trembled and his breath turned nervous under Master Zeller's intense stare.

"I'm telling the truth! Otherwise, how could we be standing and walking around here alive?"

Master Yarbrough furrowed. "As far as I know, the people who came to attack your Nine Gods Clan have two experts of the third-grade soul-penetrating level! There are also three strong ones of the first grade soul-penetrating level! They sent so many strong fighters! How did you all manage to survive and even win the battle!"

The situation was beyond common apprehension. The Nine Gods Clan was the Nine Armies, and the two masters knew the strength of the Nine Armies very well. There was no way there could be so many strong fighters among them to fight against the Alliance Guard.

Even the superbly gifted Jack was only at the ultimate god realm. Ultimate god realm was nothing In the eyes of those soul-penetrating level powerhouses!

After noticing that Master Yarbrough's expression turned confused, the disciple straightened his back and answered them with pride on his face, "Those b* tches from the Alliance Guard are indeed very strong, but our master is not weak either!"

Chapter 1900

"Our Master was at the first-grade soul-penetrating realm at that time, and he fought against those two elite fighters of the third-grade soul-penetrating level and managed to defeat them! He killed them both! Then the rest of the unimportant men of the Alliance Guard were finished off by the elite fighters of our

clan! So, naturally, we won the battle!”

Master’s Yarbrough’s jaw almost dropped to the ground upon hearing the disciple’s words; his expression was as though he had heard something strange. “Your Master broke into the soul penetrating realm? How long has it been?”

After hearing the news, Master Yarbrough was so shocked that he did not know how to react anymore, and so did Master Zeller.

Both of them exchanged glances and felt that instead of asking the disciple here, they should meet Jack in person.

After much deliberation, the two of them did not waste any seconds and immediately went toward the Nine Gods Clan’s residence. At this time, Jack had finished crafting the soul-penetrating pill and had consumed it.

A vast amount of energy was born inside Jack’s body and it wandered through his veins. The soul penetrating pill was so effective and potent that in just two hours after taking it, Jack had broken through to the third-grade soul penetrating realm.

The energy of the soul penetrating pill was still abundant. After two more days, the medicinal effect of the soul-penetrating pill was completely absorbed by Jack, and therefore, he broke through to the seventh-grade soul-penetrating realm!

Jack initially thought that even if the soul penetrating pill was a fourth-grade pill, it would be considered excellent if he could break into the sixth grade soul-penetrating level. Nonetheless, he never thought that it would be this potent that he would enter the seventh-grade soul-penetrating realm in such a short time.

The strength of the seventh-grade soul-penetrating realm was enough to fight those strong fighters of the Alliance Guard. Those who were stronger and more superior than him in the past, Jack did not have

to fear them anymore.

Just when he was excited about his martial level being raised to the seventh-grade soul-penetrating realm, a disciple passed on the two important people who were seeking to meet him.

Jack frowned and wondered in his heart who wanted to meet him at such a time. He went out to greet them.

After Jack went out to meet them, Master Yarbrough and Master Zeller immediately studied Jack from head to toe several times, and after they both confirmed that Jack had broken through to the seventh-grade soul-penetrating realm, they were even more surprised and happy.

Master Zeller spoke first. He explained the purpose of their visit and then proposed an idea that he had never envisioned before.

“Now that you have broken through to the seventh grade soul-penetrating realm, with your talent, even if a ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighter attacks the Nine Gods Clan, you’ll be able to handle it. So, how about we initiate the fight this time, avenge our brothers and sisters and get back what we have lost? Those b*stards of the Alliance Guard are inhumane! How could they just slaughter everyone In the Pavilion Billow Cloud!”

Perhaps it was because of the tragic incident of the Pavilion Billow Cloud that the two Masters could not suppress their inner rage anymore. After knowing that Jack broke through again, they had this confidence to take on those Alliance Guard b*stards! They had to avenge!

Master Yarbrough gave a firm look at Jack. When he went to the Pavilion Billow Cloud, he saw that Lance White and Lily Lagorio were killed by the heartless Alliance Guard.

Master Zeller informed Jack about their death, and Jack only nodded slightly to acknowledge it. He did not care at all about their death.

That was because he knew in his heart that Lance had been plotting against him in his mind.

As for Master Zeller's proposal, Jack naturally agreed to that. He had long wanted to avenge the dead, but he was not able to do so because of his low martial level. Now that he had the strength and the power, he had nothing to fear anymore.

Even if it was not for revenge, he had to fight the Alliance Guard too-to get the sacred spring water,

Although there was still some time left to remove the curse on Selena, he was not willing to waste any time. The sacred spring water of the Crystal Cloud Clan coupled with the alchemical pill that he would make later could help remove the curse on Selena!

"Let's do it! And I think, with my understanding about those old folks of the Alliance Guard, even if we don't initiate the fight, they will gather men and strike at us too!"

After saying this, Master Yarbrough thought of the smug expression on Master Loador's face when he told Master Yarbrough and Master Zeller that he had attacked the Nine Armies and the Pavilion Billow Cloud.

Although the Alliance Guard managed to wipe out the Pavilion Billow Cloud completely, the Nine Armies survived! Now it was their turn to feel hopelessness and desperation!

Chapter 1901

The fighters who attacked the Nine Armies were all eliminated. Those who managed to escape were nothing but lowly minions. What would be Master Loador's and Master Mackenzie's expressions once they heard the news?

At that moment, Master Loador and Master Mackenzie were having drinks together in the Alliance Guard's base camp. They had received news of the victory and how Pavilion Billow Cloud was left with

no survivors. It was good news for the Alliance Guard as if a clan stronger than the Nine Armies were eliminated, it was logical for them to think that they were able to eliminate the Nine Armies too.

After picturing Jack White dying at their hands, Master Loador could not help but laugh gleefully. He raised his glass and clinked against Master Mackenzie's.

"What did I say? That brat would surely die at our hands. There was no need to worry after all. He's only at the ultimate god level. No matter how strong he is, he will never win against someone from the soul-penetrating level," said Master Loador in a breezy manner.

Master Mackenzie nodded his head in agreement. "I couldn't agree more! They were truly making a fuss out of nothing. I don't care how much of a talented master he is. He is a useless junk in my eyes as long as he doesn't advance."

The two of them laughed at what they had just said. After a while, Master Mackenzie suddenly asked, Why is there still no news about the Nine Armies? What's taking them so long? Do you think they've run into some kind of problem?"

Master Loador shook his head at Master Mackenzie." You should have more faith. They have probably met with some obstruction hence the delay in the news. But even so, I'm sure the obstruction is nothing they couldn't handle so don't worry.``

Master Mackenzie gently put down his glass and said with resignation in his voice, "It's not that I want to worry but I cannot get rid of this sudden anxious feeling."

Master Loador knitted his brows together, disapproving of how Master Mackenzie was making a big deal out of a small matter. "Enough! There's no need to get your knickers in a twist. I've already specially instructed the men from Blood Stalwart Pavilion to make sure Jack White is eliminated from the face of this earth!"

He then drank two big gulps from his glass and his cheeks started to flush red. "The Nine Armies are

small fries compared to the Pavilion Billow Cloud and need I remind you that we've managed to eliminate the latter? So don't worry!"

Master Mackenzie nodded his head and chastised himself for needlessly worrying even though his heart was anxiously beating against his chest.

Suddenly, the sound of footsteps could be heard and a small-eyed disciple crashed in. It was evident something big had happened based on his panicked look. Master Loador furiously slammed down his glass on the octagonal table. "How dare you behave like this? What happened?!" he shouted angrily.

The small-eyed disciple dared not raise his head. His eyes were filled with panic and he gulped before answering, "We have received news that most of the men who were sent to take out the Nine Armies didn't make it back. Only one or two thousand of them managed to escape the slaughter."

Upon hearing the news, both Master Loador and Master Mackenzie's expressions turned ugly. Especially Master Loador's, the shock caused his eyes to widen greatly. He slammed his hand on the table and roared furiously, "What did you just say?!"

Chapter 1902

The news struck them down like lightning. Mere moments ago, they were still in a pre-celebratory mood and now it felt like they were being drenched with a bucket of ice-cold water. This must be a joke!

Master Loador stared at the trembling disciple kneeling on the ground. "Tell me again what exactly happened? How could the Nine Armies be so strong?" His voice, shaky and cold.

The disciple was so frightened that his words started to run over each other. He was clearly aware that he would not be able to leave this secret room alive if he angered the two men in front of him. He managed to get his words out, confirming to both Master Loader and Master Mackenzie that what they had heard the first time was right. That they were not hallucinating after all

It was only normal for them to be livid with rage to discover that all their strongest men had been killed and they were only left with lowly minions. “Get out!” Although the order was said in a raging tone, it was like heavenly music to the frightened disciple’s ear. He felt liberated and left the room without looking back.

Master Loador’s face turned black with rage and if one looked closely, one could see he was trembling all over. Master Mackenzie knitted his brow together and felt vindicated of the anxiety he felt before. “It’s just as I feared. How could we not receive any news about the Nine Armies when it had been a while since we heard about the Pavilion Billow Cloud? And yet you told me not to worry. What do you have to say for yourself now?”

Master Loador took a deep breath as his eyelids kept twitching. He still could not believe what was happening. “There must be some mysteriously strong person helping them. How else could our men be slaughtered so easily? It is simply illogical. Think about it, out of the men we’ve sent, there were two third-grade soul-penetrating level fighters and three first-grade soul-penetrating level fighters!”

His confidence was not without basis as the fighters he sent were enough to eliminate the Nine Armies many times over and yet these five fighters were all dead. He was unwilling to accept that fact.

Master Mackenzie knitted his brow again as confusion clouded him, but he was slightly calmer than Master Loador. He then said, “No matter what, we have to accept that all our most powerful men had died at the hands of that brat. I’ve already told you that brat is no ordinary person.”

Upon hearing that, Master Loador raised his head and gave out a snort of disagreement. “Why do you keep on praising him? Don’t you realize that he is only of the ultimate god level? No matter how talented he is, it’s impossible for him to win against someone from the soul-penetrating level.”

Though what Master Loador said was not without its merit, Master Mackenzie’s correctly intuit that the reason for their heavy losses in battle had to do with Jack White. “Don’t be so quick to refute me. Much time had passed since he was of the ultimate god level perhaps he had already reached the soul penetrating level.”

Upon hearing this, Master Loador went back to sit down on the table again. “So what if he did reach the

soul-penetrating level? I bet he would still be at the bottom rung of the level." Master Mackenzie had given up explaining as he realized nothing he said could turn around Master Loador's biases against Jack White. He was well aware that Jack White would not be able to overturn the battle with his talents alone.

The seriousness of the problem dawned on him and there was no use arguing further with Master Loador. He walked to the table and took up his glass again.

Chapter 1903

Master Mackenzie stared coldly at the empty glass." I don't care what you think about Jack White. I've already made up my mind to do everything in my power to stop him from advancing further."

Master Loador knitted his brow and glanced sideways at Master Mackenzie. "Are you saying that you'll personally handle him?"

Master Mackenzie nodded his head without any hesitation. "You should save your breath trying to talk me out of it with your baseless logic. That brat is not the same puny insect that we can easily squash under our feet. He's more like a tiger now, though still nothing we can't handle."

Master Loador turned around and stared at Master Mackenzie with a grave expression. Master Mackenzie did not bother looking back at him and continued on saying, "If we don't do something about him, it'll be our heads rolling on the ground next. Thus, he should be prevented from advancing further at all costs. We would need to gather all the Alliance Guard's power to take down the Nine Armies even if others might think we're making something out of nothing."

The high death toll of so many skilled fighters had sounded an alarm bell in Master Mackenzie's mind. He took a deep breath and shouted at the guards outside of the door, "Send the message to all of the higher-level-ups of the Alliance Guard to gather in the meeting room!"

The tension in the meeting room was palpable and it was so quiet that one could hear a pin drop. The

higher-level-ups had already received reports from their disciples about the Nine Armies' situation before they gathered. Their expressions all tuned grave when they received the news. Alathic Hackford of the Wind Cloud Pavilion, one of the six great clans, was so incensed that his beard curled up unto itself. He could not believe that the Nine Armies were able to eliminate all their skilled fighters.

Master Mackenzie went straight to the point and told them all about his thinking. Master Hackford frowned upon hearing his plan for he did not fully agree with it. "So your plan is for us to leave our base camp and head toward the Nine Armies? Isn't this a bit too much?" Though he was similarly furious about all the dead fighters, he did not think they needed to leave where they were and fight to the death at the enemy's location.

Upon hearing the question, Master Mackenzie rested his cold gaze on Master Hackford. "Too much? How could you ask this under these dire circumstances? The fighters we sent out were the best of the best, yet look at how they've ended up! Even if we send out stronger fighters now they would no doubt be slaughtered too!"

Master Hackford's lips twitched at the reply but did not say anything in the end. Throughout this, Master Loador sat quietly at the head of the table with knitted brows. Nobody had any idea what was going on in his mind for he did not refute or agree to anything Master Mackenzie said, choosing to remain neutral. However, everyone present could sense the anger seething beneath his skin.

While the Alliance Guard was busy discussing how to mount an attack on the Nine Armies, the atmosphere at the Nine Gods Clan was the total opposite. The large group of alchemists brought back by Jack White had created a seemingly-infinite number of pills in just a few days. Thanks to the pills, the combined power of the Nine Gods Clan had drastically increased. Many of the ultimate god level fighters had leveled up to the soul-penetrating status. It seemed like Lady Luck was smiling down on them as things got better and better.

In the end, Master Zeller and Master Yarbrough decided to stay with the Nine Gods Clan.

Chapter 1904

All the elders of Alliance Guard decided to join the battle against the Nine Gods Clan for the Clan

association had already become a pain in the *ss to them. Never in history had a Clan association progressed as fast as the Nine Gods Clan had.

Jack White had been working tirelessly without rest ever since he broke through and successfully leveled up to a fourth-grade elementary alchemist. He continuously created pills which he consumed to increase his cultivation level.

In the short span of seven days, he had advanced to the ninth-grade soul-penetrating level from the seventh-grade soul-penetrating level. The ninth grade soul-penetrating level was this world's glass ceiling in power rankings and most of the great Clan association's masters held the same status.

After reaching the ninth-grade soul-penetrating level, Jack White subconsciously clenched his fist and felt an overbearing power flowing from the tips of his fingers. The current Jack White was confident to go head-to-head against a second or third-grade nirvana level fighter. It was a shame that no fighter held the nirvana status which meant he was the strongest in the world of Daxia.

He looked forward to the battle against the Alliance Guard and just when he was daydreaming about it, a panic-stricken Kevin Cabello rushed in with big steps. Once he saw Jack White, his eyes lit up as if he had found his savior. "We have received reports that a large group of fighters had gathered outside of Nine Gods Clan. They did not even bother to control their aura which judging by the feel of it, they plan to wipe all of us out!

Kevin Cabello's expression blanched even more after delivering the news but he was shocked when he saw the playful smile creeping up on Jack's face.' How could he still smile at times like this? Shouldn't the master be worried about the impending ambush? 'he wondered to himself.

"There's no cause for worry. It's not the first time they have done this kind of thing. They'll surely go back with their tails between their legs again. Just like the last time," said Jack White serenely. Each word of his dripped with confidence.

Kevin Cabello took a deep breath but was still not comforted by his master's words. "I understand that there's a lot of things that can be solved with the master's current power but this is not one of them for the disciple who came back with the news and recognized some of the attackers."

“And who may they be?” asked Jack with a raised eyebrow.

Kevin Cabello took another deep breath as if fearing what he was going to say next would be enough to send Jack White into shock. “The disciple spotted the leaders of the Alliance Guard-Master Loador, Master Mackenzie, and even Master Hackford! All of them had left their base camp for ours!

He collapsed to the ground like a deflated balloon as He had taken his all to report the dire news. The combined combat power of the enemies, not to mention the few ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighters, could raze any armies to the ground. Though he was confident at Jack’s ability, he still felt despair at the impending massacre by the Alliance Guard

He thought that Jack would realize the direness of the situation when he explained everything to him but he was surprised when he saw the playful smile still lingering on Jack’s face. It was as if he had never said anything at all.

Chapter 1905

Kevin was rendered speechless by Jack. All he could do was stare at his master.

“Go and report what you’ve just told me to Master Yarbrough, Master Zeller, and the rest of the Clan associations. Tell them to get ready for the last battle,” ordered Jack calmly.

Upon hearing that, Kevin felt suffocating as If he had swallowed three live flies as this last battle would determine the survival of the Nine Gods Clan. The calmer Jack White was the more anxious Kevin felt.

He did not waste any time in spreading the news. Jack White looked up at the sky above him and though it seemed calm, he could smell a thunderstorm approaching.

“What? The Alliance Guard left their base camp? It looks like they’re betting everything on this last battle.”

“Oh my God. What should we do? Can we win this battle?”

All the disciples of the Nine Gods Clan started to panic once they had received the news. Kevin realized that only Jack was able to stay calm throughout the whole ordeal. Though everyone was aware that they had leveled up, they knew that they were still no match against the Alliance Guard. However, they knew that they did not have a choice but to do their best in the upcoming battle.

As the right-hand man of Jack Wood, Kevin had to do something to motivate everyone. Thus, he found himself standing on a high platform, giving a rousing speech to the disciples standing below.” Heed my every word! Our clan master has advanced to the ninth-grade soul-penetrating level and though the enemies have the same level fighters within them, they are still no match for our master!”

He only said that to assuage the fear in the disciples’ hearts. In actual fact, he was uncertain whether Jack White would be able to take on many ninth-grade soul-penetrating status fighters by himself. No matter what, it was obvious his speech had achieved its intended effect. During the last ambush, Jack easily eliminated two third-grade souls penetrating level fighters so it was no wonder to the disciples, he was an unassailable divine God!

The Alliance Guard had reached the gates of the Nine Gods Clan as soon as Kevin had finished his speech. Leading the troops were three ninth-grade soul-penetrating level skilled fighters-Master Loador, Master Mackenzie, and Master Hackford Their force was like a tsunami blanketing a small island, suffocating those around them.

As soon as Jack noticed them approaching, he flew up into the air and stood eye to eye with them, eager to begin the battle. All the First Elders of the Nine Gods Clan, Master Zeller, and Master Yarbrough had finished their preparation for the battle that would end all the battles with the Alliance Guard.

When Master Mackenzie laid his eyes on Jack, he realized that the latter had already reached the same ninth-grade soul-penetrating level as him and his face immediately darkened. As for Master Loador, he finally realized how naïve he had been to see Jack as nothing more than an insect that he could easily

squash. The insect had truly become a sea monster!

Master Loador took a deep breath and rested his majestic gaze on Jack White. If this gaze had rested on any other ordinary person, they would have no doubt shrank and slinked away but the current Jack was no ordinary person. The gaze did not even cause a ripple in his heart. In fact, it pleased him that he could calmly stare back at Master Loador and the rest of the men.

Chapter 1906

Master Mackenzie's face appeared ashen, not much better than Master Loadors. The former felt a foreboding premonition that the battle might not turn out in their favor. Before setting out, he swore that he would do anything in his power to claim their victory but he did not expect Jack would be able to advance to the ninth grade soul-penetrating level in such a short time.

To him, it was impossible to advance so fast in such a short time. However, he was not aware of Jack's master talent in making pills. After all, Jack was the only person in all of Daxia who held the status of a fourth-grade elementary alchemist. When Master Mackenzie saw that Master Loador kept staring icily at Jack White, he could not help but say, "Even if you use all your aura to suppress him, he would still not feel a thing. I've already told you that he is much more powerful than you thought and yet you didn't listen to me!" Master Mackenzie rejoiced at his insistence to mobilize all the force in Alliance Guard for it was obvious they would have lost if they only sent out their minions like last time.

That would give Jack more time to advance further which would be disastrous to them. Master Loador's expression became uglier by the second at the thought of how naïve he had been before. "Who would've expected that brat to be able to advance to the same status as us in such a short period of time?"

Master Mackenzie took a deep breath and said in a trembling voice, "I've already told you that this brat is no ordinary fighter!" Even Master Hackford felt ashamed at what he had said before—about how Master Mackenzie was making nothing out of something by mobilizing the entire Alliance Guard. Now, all he could do was keep silent.

Jack gave out a cold laugh as their words had traveled to his ear. "Are you all done? If yes, come to me!

But let me give you some advice—if you wish to prolong your death, I suggest you fight me one by one."

Upon hearing that, the ninth-grade souls penetrating level fighters on the Alliance Guard side became even more irritated. Not to mention Master Hackford had become red with fury. How dare this little brat speak to them like that? How dare he act so insolently when their large troops were just outside his gate?

"You insolent fool! Don't think you can take us all down just because you've reached ninth-grade soul penetrating status! We can snuff you out just like that!" Master Hackford was not acting out of bravado, he truly believed that Jack White would taste inevitable defeat if the three of them attacked him at the same time.

"Yeah! You won't be bragging for much longer! You and the rest of the people in there would never live to see tomorrow!" added Master Loador coldly. Then, he rushed toward Jack and unleashed his power. A fire dragon emitting eye-piercing red light appeared on his left hand, displaying the true power of a ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighter.

The disciples of the lesser realm were forcibly pushed back by the over-domineering force although the attack was aimed straight at Jack who only gave a cold laugh as he clenched his fist tightly. Golden coloured light flowed out of the cracks between his fingers and a loud ear-piercing screech could be heard by everyone in the vicinity. It seemed as if two raging dragons had intertwined themselves along the length of Jack arms and fists.

With a kick from both legs, he sprang forward like a torpedo, aiming straight at Master Loader. They collided at that very moment as the red light and the golden light made a crashing sound. The red light shattered and was swallowed up by the golden light and the next sound that could be heard was the painful scream of Master Loador. He was hit squarely in the chest by Jack which sent him flying across the air like a kite whose string had been cut.

Chapter 1907

Fresh blood gushed out of Master Loador's mouth as he arched through the sky. This scene would forever be burned in everyone's minds as they found it hard to believe a person as strong as him was so

easily defeated by Jack. However, the stark reality was playing out in front of them as the ragged Master Loador fell onto the ground, creating a large crater upon his impact.

The Master Loador had now lost his oppressive aura and like a drowning dog, struggled to heave himself out of the deep crater. Jack had hit him with all that he got and that punch had broken Master Loador's ribcage. The sharp edges and splinters drove themselves into his organs and his death was inevitable if no immediate medical treatment was administered. It had been years since Master Loador had felt pain like this. He never expected to be so easily defeated by a junior. Yes, a junior. That was what Jack had always been to Master Loador.

Master Mackenzie and the rest of the group, blanched at the sight of Master Loador's condition Initially, they only felt anger toward Jack's insolent behaviors though they admitted that he possessed talent never seen before. Yet now, they sensed doom at the thought that maybe Jack's words were backed up by his power.

In all of the years, Master Mackenzie was renowned for his ability to keep calm under all sorts of situations and it was no difference this time. "We can't let him win. We all need to attack him at the same time with our combined power!" Then, he rushed toward Jack, building momentum for his attack

Jack raised his eyebrow and changed his opinion about Master Mackenzie. Nevertheless, it would be foolish of them to assume that he would just stand there and wait to be attacked. He took a deep breath and made an emergency turn in the air. Suddenly, he rushed past the incoming Master Mackenzie and aimed straight for Master Hackford.

Though Master Hackford was the loudest heckler, in the beginning, he was already harboring the thought of running away from the battle after witnessing what Jack did to Master Loador. He never expected Jack White would bypass Master Mackenzie and turned his attention to him instead His face turned green with fear and hatred gripped his heart

He was still a ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighter nonetheless and he must be skilled enough to reach that status. Unbeknownst to other people, he was holding a dagger in his hand of which he used to slash at the closing Jack.

Jack only laughed coldly at his attempt as he dodged the attack. Speedwise, no one in the battle was able to surpass him. Master Hackford's heart turned cold when Jack dodged his attack so easily. All the energy was drained out of his body and he became incredibly demotivated. He was banking on this chance to create an escape route for himself but never expected Jack to not be obstructed at all. His expression turned uglier." You're a true pain in the *ss!"

With a shout, Jack landed a punch on Master Hackford's face.

Chapter 1908

Master Hackford felt as if the right side of his face was slammed against an iron mountain. The force shattered his aura shield also known as 'attached spirit' to the people of the sacred grounds. Once this attached spirit was broken through, Jack's punch landed squarely on his face. All of Master Hackford's teeth were knocked out and his jaw was dislocated causing him to not be able to scream before he was sent flying through the air and finally landed on the ground with a heavy thud.

It was a coincidence he landed not far from where Master Loador was. The rest of the Alliance Guard watched as the scene unfolded before their eyes, their mouths agape. They did not even have time to react—that was just how fast Jack was. The realization that they had heavily underestimated Jack dawned on them and they finally understood how he could be so confident before them.

It seemed to Master Mackenzie that Jack had no intention of giving them time to gather power and his face darkened at this. Master Hackford was the backbone of the Alliance Guard and yet he had been so easily crippled by Jack White. Though Master Mackenzie could not imagine the pain Master Hackford was going through, he knew from his motionless body that he would forever be bed-bound if no high-grade pills were given to him. The same could be said for Master Loador.

Master Mackenzie's expression turned darker than before as he knew Jack would be targeting him next. He took a deep breath and assessed the young man before him, well aware of the terrifying power he possessed. He was proud to fight against Jack but the desire to do so had left him a while ago. His only wish was to escape as far as he could. He would go to the ends of the earth if it meant he did not have to face this abomination. Forget about the Alliance Guard! Forget about honor! All these meant nothing to him anymore.

What was the point in going head-to-head with an opponent stronger than one when death was the inevitable result? Under the surprised gaze of everyone, Master Mackenzie turned 180 degrees and escaped into the distance just when Jack turned his eyes toward him. It was absurd that they thought it was a joke! All the Clan associations' masters swaggered in with their oppressive aura, talking about how they would eliminate their sworn enemies, and yet the result could not be further than the truth.

Two of them were heavily injured and the other escaped with his tail between his legs! The Alliance Guard's elders were livid that Master Mackenzie did not once turn his head back. "Master Mackenzie, how could you abandon us? What kind of leader are you!?" shouted them.

Alas, their beseech did not bring Master Mackenzie back as he was no fool. He was well aware that death was the only choice if he did not escape now that Jack had grown so much! He had already decided to live out his life in a hidden place. To him, It was better to live cowardly than to die valiantly. All shreds of honor had drained out of his body.

Jack knitted his brows together. He had no intention of letting Master Mackenzie escape because he was worried that the latter would seek revenge upon his close friends and families in the future. It was better to take him out now than to dwell in regret if that really happens. He narrowed his eyes and turned to face the Nine Gods Clan' elders. "I'll leave the rest to you all."

Chapter 1909

Jack White had already eliminated the strongest of their opponents. He was confident that the newly leveled-up Nine Gods Clan would be able to handle the rest of the Alliance Guard's minions. Not to mention, both Master Zeller and Master Yarbrough would be there as well.

He gave out a cold scoff, activated his Chi, and shot through the sky like an arrow. He was heading toward Master Mackenzie's direction and would be able to catch up to him in no time at his current unparalleled speed. To the rest of the spectators, it seemed as if Jack had disappeared in a blink of an eye.

Master Mackenzie could sense a powerful force coming from behind him. What a leech! Can't he just let me go?' he cursed. He was quaking in his boots. He did not want to die there and then. There were still

years left in him and as long as he was careful, he would be able to live out those years.

The desire to stay alive dominated his heart. “Jack , we hold no personal grudges against each other. Let me go and I promise I’ll pretend nothing ever happened between us!” he shouted toward Jack while maintaining his speed of escape. “I’ll even throw in some treasures for you! I’ll give you anything you want as long as you spare my life. I can even be your servant if that’s what you want!”

He had given up the last shred of his dignity by offering to be his servant to save himself, but all these only made Jack laugh at the absurdity of it all. The Alliance Guard became dumbfounded. Never did they think they would see the day when the high and mighty Master Mackenzie would be begging for his life.

Jack gave out a cold laugh and decided to drag this out as long as he could. “Master Mackenzie, here I thought you were all high and mighty. An indomitable fighter, strongest of them all! And now, you’re nothing but a rat caught in a sewer, willing to do anything for your life to be spared!”

On hearing this, a fury of fire was ignited in Master Mackenzie’s heart but he was careful not to show it on his face. He knew that it would be all over for him as soon as he displayed any signs of hostility toward Jack White. “I meant what I said! We hold on to deep hatred toward each other. Killing me won’t assuage the anger in you!”

No deep hatred? Once again, Jack laughed at the absurdity of it all. How dare he even say such a thing like that. “Don’t you find it funny to say we hold no deep hatred toward each other? If that was the truth then why did you mobilize all your force against my people? If it wasn’t for the fact that I’m strong, our roles would be reversed! So don’t try to fool me with your deceptive words! Even a three-year -old would not believe what you’ve said!”

The deep grievances between Jack and Master Mackenzie were not created in one day. The latter had mounted an attack on Jack numerous times. It was all due to Jack’s extraordinary prowess that he managed to keep him and his family safe. Master Mackenzie could not be called a human being if he did not think of that.

Master Mackenzie became even more horrified when he realized it would not be easy to sway Jack. No matter what, he had to try every trick up his sleeve if he wanted nothing more than to stay alive.

Jack narrowed his eyes, unwilling to waste more time on the cat and mouse game. He put his hands together in a hand seal to increase his speed and in a blink of an eye appeared beside Master Mackenzie. Master Mackenzie felt a chill air beside him and the muscle memory honed from years of experience in the battleground caused his body to turn sideways to dodge Jack White' attack.

Chapter 1901

The fighters who attacked the Nine Armies were all eliminated. Those who managed to escape were nothing but lowly minions. What would be Master Loador's and Master Mackenzie's expressions once they heard the news?

At that moment, Master Loador and Master Mackenzie were having drinks together in the Alliance Guard's base camp. They had received news of the victory and how Pavilion Billow Cloud was left with no survivors. It was good news for the Alliance Guard as if a clan stronger than the Nine Armies were eliminated, it was logical for them to think that they were able to eliminate the Nine Armies too.

After picturing Jack White dying at their hands, Master Loador could not help but laugh gleefully. He raised his glass and clinked against Master Mackenzie's.

"What did I say? That brat would surely die at our hands. There was no need to worry after all. He's only at the ultimate god level. No matter how strong he is, he will never win against someone from the soul-penetrating level," said Master Loador in a breezy manner.

Master Mackenzie nodded his head in agreement. "I couldn't agree more! They were truly making a fuss out of nothing. I don't care how much of a talented master he is. He is a useless junk in my eyes as long as he doesn't advance."

The two of them laughed at what they had just said. After a while, Master Mackenzie suddenly asked, Why is there still no news about the Nine Armies? What's taking them so long? Do you think they've run into some kind of problem?"

Master Loador shook his head at Master Mackenzie." You should have more faith. They have probably met with some obstruction hence the delay in the news. But even so, I'm sure the obstruction is nothing they couldn't handle so don't worry.``

Master Mackenzie gently put down his glass and said with resignation in his voice, "It's not that I want to

worry but I cannot get rid of this sudden anxious feeling."

Master Loador knitted his brows together, disapproving of how Master Mackenzie was making a big deal out of a small matter. "Enough! There's no need to get your knickers in a twist. I've already specially instructed the men from Blood Stalwart Pavilion to make sure Jack White is eliminated from the face of this earth!"

He then drank two big gulps from his glass and his cheeks started to flush red. "The Nine Armies are small fries compared to the Pavilion Billow Cloud and need I remind you that we've managed to eliminate the latter? So don't worry!"

Master Mackenzie nodded his head and chastised himself for needlessly worrying even though his heart was anxiously beating against his chest.

Suddenly, the sound of footsteps could be heard and a small-eyed disciple crashed in. It was evident something big had happened based on his panicked look. Master Loador furiously slammed down his glass on the octagonal table. "How dare you behave like this? What happened?!" he shouted angrily.

The small-eyed disciple dared not raise his head. His eyes were filled with panic and he gulped before answering, "We have received news that most of the men who were sent to take out the Nine Armies didn't make it back. Only one or two thousand of them managed to escape the slaughter."

Upon hearing the news, both Master Loador and Master Mackenzie's expressions turned ugly. Especially Master Loador's, the shock caused his eyes to widen greatly. He slammed his hand on the table and roared furiously, "What did you just say?!"

Chapter 1902

The news struck them down like lightning. Mere moments ago, they were still in a pre-celebratory mood and now it felt like they were being drenched with a bucket of ice-cold water. This must be a joke!

Master Loador stared at the trembling disciple kneeling on the ground. “Tell me again what exactly happened? How could the Nine Armies be so strong?” His voice, shaky and cold.

The disciple was so frightened that his words started to run over each other. He was clearly aware that he would not be able to leave this secret room alive if he angered the two men in front of him. He managed to get his words out, confirming to both Master Loader and Master Mackenzie that what they had heard the first time was right. That they were not hallucinating after all

It was only normal for them to be livid with rage to discover that all their strongest men had been killed and they were only left with lowly minions. “Get out!” Although the order was said in a raging tone, it was like heavenly music to the frightened disciple’s ear. He felt liberated and left the room without looking back.

Master Loador’s face turned black with rage and if one looked closely, one could see he was trembling all over. Master Mackenzie knitted his brow together and felt vindicated of the anxiety he felt before. “It’s just as I feared. How could we not receive any news about the Nine Armies when it had been a while since we heard about the Pavilion Billow Cloud? And yet you told me not to worry. What do you have to say for yourself now?”

Master Loador took a deep breath as his eyelids kept twitching. He still could not believe what was happening. “There must be some mysteriously strong person helping them. How else could our men be slaughtered so easily? It is simply illogical. Think about it, out of the men we’ve sent, there were two third-grade soul-penetrating level fighters and three first-grade soul-penetrating level fighters!”

His confidence was not without basis as the fighters he sent were enough to eliminate the Nine Armies many times over and yet these five fighters were all dead. He was unwilling to accept that fact.

Master Mackenzie knitted his brow again as confusion clouded him, but he was slightly calmer than Master Loador. He then said, “No matter what, we have to accept that all our most powerful men had died at the hands of that brat. I’ve already told you that brat is no ordinary person.”

Upon hearing that, Master Loador raised his head and gave out a snort of disagreement. “Why do you keep on praising him? Don’t you realize that he is only of the ultimate god level? No matter how

talented he is, it's impossible for him to win against someone from the soul-penetrating level."

Though what Master Loador said was not without its merit, Master Mackenzie's correctly intuit that the reason for their heavy losses in battle had to do with Jack White. "Don't be so quick to refute me. Much time had passed since he was of the ultimate god level perhaps he had already reached the soul penetrating level."

Upon hearing this, Master Loador went back to sit down on the table again. "So what if he did reach the soul-penetrating level? I bet he would still be at the bottom rung of the level." Master Mackenzie had given up explaining as he realized nothing he said could turn around Master Loador's biases against Jack White. He was well aware that Jack White would not be able to overturn the battle with his talents alone.

The seriousness of the problem dawned on him and there was no use arguing further with Master Loador. He walked to the table and took up his glass again.

Chapter 1903

Master Mackenzie stared coldly at the empty glass." I don't care what you think about Jack White. I've already made up my mind to do everything in my power to stop him from advancing further."

Master Loador knitted his brow and glanced sideways at Master Mackenzie. "Are you saying that you'll personally handle him?"

Master Mackenzie nodded his head without any hesitation. "You should save your breath trying to talk me out of it with your baseless logic. That brat is not the same puny insect that we can easily squash under our feet. He's more like a tiger now, though still nothing we can't handle."

Master Loador turned around and stared at Master Mackenzie with a grave expression. Master Mackenzie did not bother looking back at him and continued on saying, "If we don't do something about him, it'll be our heads rolling on the ground next. Thus, he should be prevented from advancing further

at all costs. We would need to gather all the Alliance Guard's power to take down the Nine Armies even if others might think we're making something out of nothing."

The high death toll of so many skilled fighters had sounded an alarm bell in Master Mackenzie's mind. He took a deep breath and shouted at the guards outside of the door, "Send the message to all of the higher-level-ups of the Alliance Guard to gather in the meeting room!"

The tension in the meeting room was palpable and it was so quiet that one could hear a pin drop. The higher-level-ups had already received reports from their disciples about the Nine Armies' situation before they gathered. Their expressions all tuned grave when they received the news. Alathic Hackford of the Wind Cloud Pavilion, one of the six great clans, was so incensed that his beard curled up unto itself. He could not believe that the Nine Armies were able to eliminate all their skilled fighters.

Master Mackenzie went straight to the point and told them all about his thinking. Master Hackford frowned upon hearing his plan for he did not fully agree with it. "So your plan is for us to leave our base camp and head toward the Nine Armies? Isn't this a bit too much?" Though he was similarly furious about all the dead fighters, he did not think they needed to leave where they were and fight to the death at the enemy's location.

Upon hearing the question, Master Mackenzie rested his cold gaze on Master Hackford. "Too much? How could you ask this under these dire circumstances? The fighters we sent out were the best of the best, yet look at how they've ended up! Even if we send out stronger fighters now they would no doubt be slaughtered too!"

Master Hackford's lips twitched at the reply but did not say anything in the end. Throughout this, Master Loador sat quietly at the head of the table with knitted brows. Nobody had any idea what was going on in his mind for he did not refute or agree to anything Master Mackenzie said, choosing to remain neutral. However, everyone present could sense the anger seething beneath his skin.

While the Alliance Guard was busy discussing how to mount an attack on the Nine Armies, the atmosphere at the Nine Gods Clan was the total opposite. The large group of alchemists brought back by Jack White had created a seemingly-infinite number of pills in just a few days. Thanks to the pills, the combined power of the Nine Gods Clan had drastically increased. Many of the ultimate god level fighters had leveled up to the soul-penetrating status. It seemed like Lady Luck was smiling down on them as

things got better and better.

In the end, Master Zeller and Master Yarbrough decided to stay with the Nine Gods Clan.

Chapter 1904

All the elders of Alliance Guard decided to join the battle against the Nine Gods Clan for the Clan association had already become a pain in the *ss to them. Never in history had a Clan association progressed as fast as the Nine Gods Clan had.

Jack White had been working tirelessly without rest ever since he broke through and successfully leveled up to a fourth-grade elementary alchemist. He continuously created pills which he consumed to increase his cultivation level.

In the short span of seven days, he had advanced to the ninth-grade soul-penetrating level from the seventh-grade soul-penetrating level. The ninth grade soul-penetrating level was this world's glass ceiling in power rankings and most of the great Clan association's masters held the same status.

After reaching the ninth-grade soul-penetrating level, Jack White subconsciously clenched his fist and felt an overbearing power flowing from the tips of his fingers. The current Jack White was confident to go head-to-head against a second or third-grade nirvana level fighter. It was a shame that no fighter held the nirvana status which meant he was the strongest in the world of Daxia.

He looked forward to the battle against the Alliance Guard and just when he was daydreaming about it, a panic-stricken Kevin Cabello rushed in with big steps. Once he saw Jack White, his eyes lit up as if he had found his savior. "We have received reports that a large group of fighters had gathered outside of Nine Gods Clan. They did not even bother to control their aura which judging by the feel of it, they plan to wipe all of us out!

Kevin Cabello's expression blanched even more after delivering the news but he was shocked when he saw the playful smile creeping up on Jack's face.' How could he still smile at times like this? Shouldn't

the master be worried about the impending ambush? ‘he wondered to himself.

“There’s no cause for worry. It’s not the first time they have done this kind of thing. They’ll surely go back with their tails between their legs again. Just like the last time,” said Jack White serenely. Each word of his dripped with confidence.

Kevin Cabello took a deep breath but was still not comforted by his master’s words. “I understand that there’s a lot of things that can be solved with the master’s current power but this is not one of them for the disciple who came back with the news and recognized some of the attackers.”

“And who may they be?” asked Jack with a raised eyebrow.

Kevin Cabello took another deep breath as if fearing what he was going to say next would be enough to send Jack White into shock. “The disciple spotted the leaders of the Alliance Guard-Master Loador, Master Mackenzie, and even Master Hackford! All of them had left their base camp for ours!

He collapsed to the ground like a deflated balloon as He had taken his all to report the dire news. The combined combat power of the enemies, not to mention the few ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighters, could raze any armies to the ground. Though he was confident at Jack’s ability, he still felt despair at the impending massacre by the Alliance Guard

He thought that Jack would realize the direness of the situation when he explained everything to him but he was surprised when he saw the playful smile still lingering on Jack’s face. It was as if he had never said anything at all.

Chapter 1905

Kevin was rendered speechless by Jack. All he could do was stare at his master.

“Go and report what you’ve just told me to Master Yarbrough, Master Zeller, and the rest of the Clan

associations. Tell them to get ready for the last battle," ordered Jack calmly.

Upon hearing that, Kevin felt suffocating as If he had swallowed three live flies as this last battle would determine the survival of the Nine Gods Clan. The calmer Jack White was the more anxious Kevin felt.

He did not waste any time in spreading the news. Jack White looked up at the sky above him and though it seemed calm, he could smell a thunderstorm approaching.

"What? The Alliance Guard left their base camp? It looks like they're betting everything on this last battle."

"Oh my God. What should we do? Can we win this battle?"

All the disciples of the Nine Gods Clan started to panic once they had received the news. Kevin realized that only Jack was able to stay calm throughout the whole ordeal. Though everyone was aware that they had leveled up, they knew that they were still no match against the Alliance Guard. However, they knew that they did not have a choice but to do their best in the upcoming battle.

As the right-hand man of Jack, Kevin had to do something to motivate everyone. Thus, he found himself standing on a high platform, giving a rousing speech to the disciples standing below." Heed my every word! Our clan master has advanced to the ninth-grade soul-penetrating level and though the enemies have the same level fighters within them, they are still no match for our master!"

He only said that to assuage the fear in the disciples' hearts. In actual fact, he was uncertain whether Jack would be able to take on many ninth-grade soul-penetrating status fighters by himself. No matter what, it was obvious his speech had achieved its intended effect. During the last ambush, Jack easily eliminated two third-grade souls penetrating level fighters so it was no wonder to the disciples, he was an unassailable divine God!

The Alliance Guard had reached the gates of the Nine Gods Clan as soon as Kevin had finished his speech. Leading the troops were three ninth-grade soul-penetrating level skilled fighters-Master Loador, Master

Mackenzie, and Master Hackford Their force was like a tsunami blanketing a small island, suffocating those around them.

As soon as Jack noticed them approaching, he flew up into the air and stood eye to eye with them, eager to begin the battle. All the First Elders of the Nine Gods Clan, Master Zeller, and Master Yarbrough had finished their preparation for the battle that would end all the battles with the Alliance Guard.

When Master Mackenzie laid his eyes on Jack, he realized that the latter had already reached the same ninth-grade soul-penetrating level as him and his face immediately darkened. As for Master Loador, he finally realized how naïve he had been to see Jack as nothing more than an insect that he could easily squash. The insect had truly become a sea monster!

Master Loador took a deep breath and rested his majestic gaze on Jack White. If this gaze had rested on any other ordinary person, they would have no doubt shrank and slinked away but the current Jack was no ordinary person. The gaze did not even cause a ripple in his heart. In fact, it pleased him that he could calmly stare back at Master Loador and the rest of the men.

Chapter 1906

Master Mackenzie's face appeared ashen, not much better than Master Loadors. The former felt a foreboding premonition that the battle might not turn out in their favor. Before setting out, he swore that he would do anything in his power to claim their victory but he did not expect Jack would be able to advance to the ninth grade soul-penetrating level in such a short time.

To him, it was impossible to advance so fast in such a short time. However, he was not aware of Jack's master talent in making pills. After all, Jack was the only person in all of Daxia who held the status of a fourth-grade elementary alchemist. When Master Mackenzie saw that Master Loador kept staring icily at Jack White, he could not help but say, "Even if you use all your aura to suppress him, he would still not feel a thing. I've already told you that he is much more powerful than you thought and yet you didn't listen to me!" Master Mackenzie rejoiced at his insistence to mobilize all the force in Alliance Guard for it was obvious they would have lost if they only sent out their minions like last time.

That would give Jack more time to advance further which would be disastrous to them. Master Loador's

expression became uglier by the second at the thought of how naïve he had been before. “Who would’ve expected that brat to be able to advance to the same status as us in such a short period of time?”

Master Mackenzie took a deep breath and said in a trembling voice, “I’ve already told you that this brat is no ordinary fighter!” Even Master Hackford felt ashamed at what he had said before—about how Master Mackenzie was making nothing out of something by mobilizing the entire Alliance Guard. Now, all he could do was keep silent.

Jack gave out a cold laugh as their words had traveled to his ear. “Are you all done? If yes, come to me! But let me give you some advice—if you wish to prolong your death, I suggest you fight me one by one.”

Upon hearing that, the ninth-grade souls penetrating level fighters on the Alliance Guard side became even more irritated. Not to mention Master Hackford had become red with fury. How dare this little brat speak to them like that? How dare he act so insolently when their large troops were just outside his gate?

“You insolent fool! Don’t think you can take us all down just because you’ve reached ninth-grade soul penetrating status! We can snuff you out just like that!” Master Hackford was not acting out of bravado, he truly believed that Jack would taste inevitable defeat if the three of them attacked him at the same time.

“Yeah! You won’t be bragging for much longer! You and the rest of the people in there would never live to see tomorrow!” added Master Loador coldly. Then, he rushed toward Jack and unleashed his power. A fire dragon emitting eye-piercing red light appeared on his left hand, displaying the true power of a ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighter.

The disciples of the lesser realm were forcibly pushed back by the over-domineering force although the attack was aimed straight at Jack who only gave a cold laugh as he clenched his fist tightly. Golden coloured light flowed out of the cracks between his fingers and a loud ear-piercing screech could be heard by everyone in the vicinity. It seemed as if two raging dragons had intertwined themselves along the length of Jack arms and fists.

With a kick from both legs, he sprang forward like a torpedo, aiming straight at Master Loader. They collided at that very moment as the red light and the golden light made a crashing sound. The red light shattered and was swallowed up by the golden light and the next sound that could be heard was the painful scream of Master Loador. He was hit squarely in the chest by Jack which sent him flying across the air like a kite whose string had been cut.

Chapter 1907

Fresh blood gushed out of Master Loador's mouth as he arched through the sky. This scene would forever be burned in everyone's minds as they found it hard to believe a person as strong as him was so easily defeated by Jack. However, the stark reality was playing out in front of them as the ragged Master Loador fell onto the ground, creating a large crater upon his impact.

The Master Loador had now lost his oppressive aura and like a drowning dog, struggled to heave himself out of the deep crater. Jack had hit him with all that he got and that punch had broken Master Loador's ribcage. The sharp edges and splinters drove themselves into his organs and his death was inevitable if no immediate medical treatment was administered. It had been years since Master Loador had felt pain like this. He never expected to be so easily defeated by a junior. Yes, a junior. That was what Jack had always been to Master Loador.

Master Mackenzie and the rest of the group, blanched at the sight of Master Loador's condition Initially, they only felt anger toward Jack's insolent behaviors though they admitted that he possessed talent never seen before. Yet now, they sensed doom at the thought that maybe Jack's words were backed up by his power.

In all of the years, Master Mackenzie was renowned for his ability to keep calm under all sorts of situations and it was no difference this time. "We can't let him win. We all need to attack him at the same time with our combined power!" Then, he rushed toward Jack, building momentum for his attack

Jack raised his eyebrow and changed his opinion about Master Mackenzie. Nevertheless, it would be foolish of them to assume that he would just stand there and wait to be attacked. He took a deep breath and made an emergency turn in the air. Suddenly, he rushed past the incoming Master Mackenzie and aimed straight for Master Hackford.

Though Master Hackford was the loudest heckler, in the beginning, he was already harboring the thought of running away from the battle after witnessing what Jack did to Master Loador. He never expected Jack White would bypass Master Mackenzie and turned his attention to him instead His face turned green with fear and hatred gripped his heart

He was still a ninth-grade soul-penetrating level fighter nonetheless and he must be skilled enough to reach that status. Unbeknownst to other people, he was holding a dagger in his hand of which he used to slash at the closing Jack.

Jack only laughed coldly at his attempt as he dodged the attack. Speedwise, no one in the battle was able to surpass him. Master Hackford's heart turned cold when Jack dodged his attack so easily. All the energy was drained out of his body and he became incredibly demotivated. He was banking on this chance to create an escape route for himself but never expected Jack to not be obstructed at all. His expression turned uglier." You're a true pain in the *ss!"

With a shout, Jack landed a punch on Master Hackford's face.

Chapter 1908

Master Hackford felt as if the right side of his face was slammed against an iron mountain. The force shattered his aura shield also known as 'attached spirit' to the people of the sacred grounds. Once this attached spirit was broken through, Jack's punch landed squarely on his face. All of Master Hackford's teeth were knocked out and his jaw was dislocated causing him to not be able to scream before he was sent flying through the air and finally landed on the ground with a heavy thud.

It was a coincidence he landed not far from where Master Loador was. The rest of the Alliance Guard watched as the scene unfolded before their eyes, their mouths agape. They did not even have time to react—that was just how fast Jack was. The realization that they had heavily underestimated Jack dawned on them and they finally understood how he could be so confident before them.

It seemed to Master Mackenzie that Jack had no intention of giving them time to gather power and his face darkened at this. Master Hackford was the backbone of the Alliance Guard and yet he had been so easily crippled by Jack. Though Master Mackenzie could not imagine the pain Master Hackford was

going through, he knew from his motionless body that he would forever be bed-bound if no high-grade pills were given to him. The same could be said for Master Loador.

Master Mackenzie's expression turned darker than before as he knew Jack would be targeting him next. He took a deep breath and assessed the young man before him, well aware of the terrifying power he possessed. He was proud to fight against Jack but the desire to do so had left him a while ago. His only wish was to escape as far as he could. He would go to the ends of the earth if it meant he did not have to face this abomination. Forget about the Alliance Guard! Forget about honor! All these meant nothing to him anymore.

What was the point in going head-to-head with an opponent stronger than one when death was the inevitable result? Under the surprised gaze of everyone, Master Mackenzie turned 180 degrees and escaped into the distance just when Jack turned his eyes toward him. It was absurd that they thought it was a joke! All the Clan associations' masters swaggered in with their oppressive aura, talking about how they would eliminate their sworn enemies, and yet the result could not be further than the truth.

Two of them were heavily injured and the other escaped with his tail between his legs! The Alliance Guard's elders were livid that Master Mackenzie did not once turn his head back. "Master Mackenzie, how could you abandon us? What kind of leader are you!?" shouted them.

Alas, their beseech did not bring Master Mackenzie back as he was no fool. He was well aware that death was the only choice if he did not escape now that Jack had grown so much! He had already decided to live out his life in a hidden place. To him, It was better to live cowardly than to die valiantly. All shreds of honor had drained out of his body.

Jack knitted his brows together. He had no intention of letting Master Mackenzie escape because he was worried that the latter would seek revenge upon his close friends and families in the future. It was better to take him out now than to dwell in regret if that really happens. He narrowed his eyes and turned to face the Nine Gods Clan' elders. "I'll leave the rest to you all."

Chapter 1909

Jack had already eliminated the strongest of their opponents. He was confident that the newly leveled-

up Nine Gods Clan would be able to handle the rest of the Alliance Guard's minions. Not to mention, both Master Zeller and Master Yarbrough would be there as well.

He gave out a cold scoff, activated his Chi, and shot through the sky like an arrow. He was heading toward Master Mackenzie's direction and would be able to catch up to him in no time at his current unparalleled speed. To the rest of the spectators, it seemed as if Jack had disappeared in a blink of an eye.

Master Mackenzie could sense a powerful force coming from behind him. What a leech! Can't he just let me go?' he cursed. He was quaking in his boots. He did not want to die there and then. There were still years left in him and as long as he was careful, he would be able to live out those years.

The desire to stay alive dominated his heart. "Jack , we hold no personal grudges against each other. Let me go and I promise I'll pretend nothing ever happened between us!" he shouted toward Jack while maintaining his speed of escape. "I'll even throw in some treasures for you! I'll give you anything you want as long as you spare my life. I can even be your servant if that's what you want!"

He had given up the last shred of his dignity by offering to be his servant to save himself, but all these only made Jack laugh at the absurdity of it all. The Alliance Guard became dumbfounded. Never did they think they would see the day when the high and mighty Master Mackenzie would be begging for his life.

Jack gave out a cold laugh and decided to drag this out as long as he could. "Master Mackenzie, here I thought you were all high and mighty. An indomitable fighter, strongest of them all! And now, you're nothing but a rat caught in a sewer, willing to do anything for your life to be spared!"On hearing this, a fury of fire was ignited in Master Mackenzie's heart but he was careful not to show it on his face. He knew that it would be all over for him as soon as he displayed any signs of hostility toward Jackk. "I meant what I said! We hold on to deep hatred toward each other. Killing me won't assuage the anger in you!"

No deep hatred? Once again, Jack laughed at the absurdity of it all. How dare he even say such a thing like that. "Don't you find it funny to say we hold no deep hatred toward each other? If that was the truth then why did you mobilize all your force against my people? If it wasn't for the fact that I'm strong, our roles would be reversed! So don't try to fool me with your deceptive words! Even a three-year -old would not believe what you've said!"

The deep grievances between Jack and Master Mackenzie were not created in one day. The latter had mounted an attack on Jack numerous times. It was all due to Jack's extraordinary prowess that he managed to keep him and his family safe. Master Mackenzie could not be called a human being if he did not think of that.

Master Mackenzie became even more horrified when he realized it would not be easy to sway Jack. No matter what, he had to try every trick up his sleeve if he wanted nothing more than to stay alive.

Jack narrowed his eyes, unwilling to waste more time on the cat and mouse game. He put his hands together in a hand seal to increase his speed and in a blink of an eye appeared beside Master Mackenzie. Master Mackenzie felt a chill air beside him and the muscle memory honed from years of experience in the battleground caused his body to turn sideways to dodge Jack's attack.

Chapter 1910

However, Master Mackenzie's speed was incomparable to Jack White. He suddenly saw a gold light at the same time Jack slammed his fist onto his shoulders causing his joints to shatter with a violent crack. He let out one curdling scream after another as the feeling of pain shot through his whole body. The punch had crippled his shoulder.

Jack White laughed coldly as he raised his left fist again-not giving time for Master Mackenzie to defend himself at all. Gold light flashed on his fist as he slammed it against Master Mackenzie's right chest with a force enough to end anyone's life. The sound of bones breaking sounded again. The punch not only shattered Master Mackenzie's bones but made him unable to activate his Chi so he fell to the ground like a deflated balloon.

Jack was not done with him yet. He followed him down and grabbed hold of Master Mackenzie's collar. The next punch would be on Master Mackenzie's meridian points as he planned to completely destroy his cultivation to ensure he would never have a chance to avenge himself.

Master Mackenzie's fearful eyes were wide open as he knew what Jack had in mind. Infinite despair

filled his heart, he would be left with nothing if his cultivation was completely destroyed. With the last of his energy, he stared at Jack pleadingly and said, “Don’t destroy my cultivation. I beg of you. Don’t destroy me. I can be your slave! I can do anything!

Be my slave?’ Jack’s cold smile became even more sinister at those words. In his eyes, Master Mackenzie was nothing but a worthless trash. “Do you know how many people are lining up to wait on my hand and foot? You’re not even worthy to do so!”

As soon as those words were said, Master Mackenzie felt a fierce force rush through his meridians. The extreme pain of the meridian being cut caused his body to convulse and nearly cut off his air supply. The next second, he was in so much pain that his eyes rolled back and he fainted. Jack did not plan a quick death for Master Mackenzie. How could he when his opponents had tried to ambush him so many times? Master Mackenzie was carried like a dead dog back to Nine Gods Clan.

By the time Jack was back, the battle had already been won. Without their leaders and Jack’s prowess, the Alliance Guard’s disciples would have lost their fighting spirit and had given in to their fate. The Nine Gods Clan’s disciples slaughtered most of their opponents but did not kill those who had thrown their weapons down. Instead, they confiscated the weapons, tied them up, and left them outside the gate. Their fate would be determined by Jack.

Jack smiled coldly at the tied-up Alliance Guard disciples who were kneeling in front of the Nine Gods Clan’s gate with their heads drooping. Though he usually did not treat his enemies with mercy, he also did not wish to kill indiscriminately.

Besides, there were more important things he would need to attend to. Kevin Cabello walked unsteadily toward Jack White and greeted him with praises before pointing to the Alliance Guard’s disciples. “Master, what should we do with them? I think we should kill them all but their numbers are great. We might anger the gods if we do that.”

Jack swept his eyes across the captives who broke out in cold sweat under his icy gaze. They dared not breathe at all. Though Jack was well aware of Pavilion Billow Cloud’s dire situation, he would prefer to avoid a genocide if possible. If not, he would not be any different from those Alliance Guard people. He let out a gentle sigh and said, “Let them go. They are no threat to us anymore. They would do well to keep their distance from us if they know what’s good for them.”

He then tossed Master Mackenzie on the ground as if he was a dead dog. The latter did not even make a sound. Emptiness filled his eyes as he had no future to look forward to now that his cultivation had been completely destroyed.

“Let the minions go. As for these three, they don’t deserve a quick death. I entrust Master Loador, Master Hackford, and Master Mackenzie to you. Master Mackenzie’s cultivation had been completely destroyed and you should do the same for the other two. I’ll leave it up to you to do whatever you want to them after that.” Jack did not wait for anyone’s reply and strode back into his room.

Once in his room, he called for Kevin Cabello. He estimated that it would not take him long to advance to the rank of fourth-grade intermediate alchemist now that he was a fourth-grade elementary alchemist.

Chapter 1911

He would be able to make the king pill once he become a fourth-grade intermediate alchemist. His current priority was to break Selena’s curse. He would not rest until then as this matter was like a heavy stone pressing on his heart, suffocating him. The other problems were being solved one by one. The Alliance Guard was of no threat to them now that they had been disbanded. Jack White stood at the world’s peak and no one would be foolish enough to challenge him unless they had a death wish.

As time went on, he finally created a fourth-grade intermediate level pill which meant that he had become a fourth-grade intermediate alchemist. After leveling up, he did not waste any time in creating a king pill. Naturally, he had brought back the Crystal Cloud Clan’s sacred spring water after eliminating the Alliance Guard.

Moreover, after the dissolution of the Alliance Guard, the Nine Gods Clans obtained many treasures after going over their abandoned base camp with a fine tooth comb. One of the treasures was called a Soul Solidifying Spirit Staff. Though it was not useful when it came to one’s cultivation, it could be used to remove any control on a body from the root. Using the Soul Solidifying Spirit Staff, Fernando could be saved. But first, he would still need to consume the resurrection pill. It would not take long for Jack to create such a pill with his current capability.

After five days, Jack White was not only successfully in making a resurrection pill but also a king pill. With all the preparation done, he did not waste time removing the curse on Selena. He quickly instructed someone to bring the Soul Solidifying Spirit Staff and resurrection pill back to the White family to save Fernando Campbell.

Once he had done all that, he took his family to the sacred grounds. The reason he wanted to go back to the sacred grounds was to enter the Sky Gate. According to the sacred grounds' legend, the Sky Gate was a light portal and no one knew where it would lead to. It was completely shrouded in mystery and for that reason, no one dared enter the Sky Gate.

Jack was looking forward to entering the Sky Gate as he believed that with his martial art technique cultivated with the nirvana realm and the moreness realm, he would be able to find a place more suitable for training through the light portal. It was only natural for someone powerful to be curious of what is on the other side of the portal.

However, he wanted to strengthen his cultivation by advancing to the nirvana realm before entering the Sky Gate. His preparation took him three months. After three months, he successfully became the one and only nirvana realm fighter in this world making him more confident to enter the Sky Gate.

Selena and the others wanted to go with him but were dissuaded by him. He was worried that it would endanger his family. He stood under the Sky Gate and felt a mysterious aura blowing into his face.

Chapter 1912

In order to enter the Sky Gate, Jack White made sure he had fully prepared himself. The cultivation level of the nirvana realm would allow him to protect himself in any changing circumstances. After standing under the Sky Gate for four hours, he finally took a few big steps and went in.

The moment he stepped inside, he felt the surrounding space had distorted and that the scenery had changed drastically. After giving it a closer look, he was shocked-even with his years of experience. It turned out there was another world on the other side of the Sky Gate.

It was a place like an abandoned continent. Looking up at the densely packed stars, the barren land was

pulsating with an ancient and majestic aura. There was no grass on the ground instead it was blanketed with fragments of weapons. Upon a closer look, one could even see the dried blood on the weapons, as if the world had experienced a great war.

It seemed that no one had set foot here for tens of thousands of years. Right in front of Jack, something was emitting a bright white light, but he could not make out what it was. He took a deep breath and strode toward it. As he advanced, he felt a strange aura grow stronger.

The aura here was different from the outside world. The Chi in this world carried with it a sense of tyrannical violence. Although the Chi in Daxia was thin, it was not violent. One could certainly damage one's meridians by inhaling the unpurified Chi from here.

"What kind of world is this? Why is the Chi here so violent? What happened here? Why are there so many shattered weapons?" muttered Jack to himself. With a heart full of questions, he slowly approached the object emitting bright white light. He could not suppress his shock once he stood in front of it.

Jack originally thought that this object was a piece of a broken treasure or a huge crystal, but after he saw what was in front of him, he realized he could not be more wrong. The object turned out to be a spirit ship that was more than a hundred feet long. It was a truly majestic spirit ship with many engraved rune seals emitting bright light. The closer he was, the more he could sense the thick aura coming from it.

He had no way of knowing who had left this spirit ship here in this violent world. He closed his eyes and used his divine sense to probe the entire spirit ship. The spirit ship was empty apart from a crystal that was also emitting a faint light. The spirit ship was probably abandoned or its owner had died.

Jack took his time to make sure there were no traps in the spirit ship before stepping in. As soon as he entered the spirit ship, he could feel a thick aura permeating the air. This aura was very different from the aura outside. The aura outside was filled with a sense of tyranny, while the aura in the spirit ship was relatively more gentle and pure. Trying to get to the bottom of everything, Jack entered the spirit ship's bridge. After he entered, he involuntarily gasped because in front of him was definitely not something one could find in Daxia.

The entire spirit ship was engraved with complex rune seals making its extraordinariness easily detectable. Only a person with profound cultivation could build a spirit ship like this. Even the current Jack would not be comparable to the ship's builder. All kinds of mysterious runes seals in the inside and outside twinkled brightly on the spirit ship

Jack felt a headache coming after staring at the rune seals for too long. He could not decipher them at all. Although he did not possess the knowledge when it came to the art of refining vessels, he should at least be able to understand some of the rune seals with his current knowledge and cultivation.

Chapter 1913

Even after studying the spirit ship for a long time, he still could not figure out the meaning of the rune seals. This indeed proved the spirit ship's great power! After making rounds, he went back to the place where he found the six-sided crystal. Inside the spirit ship, it was empty except for the six-sided crystal that seemed to be carelessly tossed aside.

This six-sided crystal was the size of a human head and it was exuding a faintish red light. Jack White scanned it again with his divine sense and did not detect anything dangerous about it so he bent down and picked it up. He brought the crystal closer to his face and examined it carefully. He discovered that there were crystals of various sizes and colors floating within the crystal. These small crystals also happened to be six-sided.

Although the six-sided crystals all had the same shape, their aura could not be more different. The tiny six-sided crystals inside seemed to possess even more mysterious auras. As he was taking a closer look, he felt stabbing pain in the fingers holding the six-sided crystal. Unbeknownst to him, his fingers had been cut open and blood was flowing out.

The six-sided crystal exuded a dazzling light after being stained by his blood. Suddenly, Jack felt his entire body stiffen as a mysterious aura enveloped him.

Before he could react, he had been brought to a mysterious space. Large and small six-sided crystals floated around him and he heard a thought being transmitted into his mind. "These are the soul gathering crystals that took me ten thousand years to refine. It is the treasure of our clan! They now

belong to you and you must avenge us once you have reached the peak!" The message entered Jack's mind with a wave of indomitability and anger.

'So this is called the soul-gathering crystal? That's a strange name. Don't tell me the souls of others are inside?!' He felt a splitting headache as soon as the questions flashed through his mind. More information was forced into his mind. After all that was done, he finally knew what he was holding in his hand. It also explained many mysteries to him! It turned out that the name of this spirit ship was Mustard Seed. It was made by the head of the Divine Void Clan, making it the clan's treasure.

The Divine Void Clan was not from Daxia. The clan belonged to a higher-level world's strongest race! According to the head of the Divine Void Clan, Daxia belongs to the fifth-grade world while the Divine Void Clan lived in a first-grade world which was the best place for martial art enhancement.

The Divine Void World was simply named after the Divine Void Clan which showed just how powerful the clan was while they were still alive. Even so, they ended up being exterminated. What really rendered Jack speechless, was the fact that though the head of the clan promised to make him stronger if he would help them return to their world, he never once told him exactly who he would be fighting against.

The head of the clan kept telling Jack that he would find out who his opponents were once he had gained enough power which made him even more speechless. To him, one should plan properly for a vengeance so deep.

Jack was not the kind of person who would go back on his promise of lending a helping hand after the other party had already given him something valuable. Since he had already been given the soul gathering crystal and Mustard Seed, it was natural for him to fulfill his promise. However, the message left by the head of the clan and the fact that he still had no idea who the enemy was, frustrated him even more.

However, he could not deny the fact that the two treasures he had received were indeed powerful. Especially the soul-gathering crystal which was a hundred times more powerful than Mustard Seed because as he previously guessed, inside the crystal were indeed soul fragments!

Chapter 1914

These soul fragments could not be viewed as common soul fragments. Instead, their original owner voluntarily gave up their self-consciousness, leaving only soul fragments with memories of their origin.

Jack stared at the uncountable hexagon crystals floating around him and could not help but sigh in shock. The memory transmitted to him moments ago described the function of the soul fragments and the process of how these fragments were formed.

Putting the functions aside, the formation process of these soul fragments was not bearable by ordinary people. Several tens of thousand years ago, the Divine Void Clan went through a battle that wiped out the entire clan. To extend the last fire of their clan, Divine Void Clan Master combined the strongest members of their clan and quietly practiced the Soul Secret Skill.

The Soul Secret Skill was unable to raise their fighting prowess and only had a single effect. After the Soul Secret Skill had been trained to the level of completion, the soul would gather even though the body was destroyed. However, the soul lost the possibility of reincarnation even though it would not disperse.

He only kept the refined memories and did not contain any instinct reactions! Such soul fragments could be absorbed by anybody and had no side effects.

Under normal circumstances, a person's soul would be destroyed if that person was killed. All the memories would turn into ashes and disappear from this world. However, after practicing the Soul Secret Skill, the powerful members of the Divine Void Clan became soul fragments after their death and gathered to become hexagon crystals. They were summoned by the soul-gathering crystals and became soul fragments stored in the soul-gathering crystals that could be absorbed by anybody!

Practicing this Soul Secret Skill meant that they were destroying their soul every minute of every day. The pain that went deep into their bodies would penetrate throughout their entire body. They would not have tried to train the Soul Secret Skill if it was not an emergency situation and they wanted to save the last fire of the Divine Void Clan.

The biggest benefit of these hexagonal crystals in the soul-gathering crystal was that they could be absorbed by Jack. These soul fragments would fuse with Jack's soul and the memories stored in these soul fragments would become Jack's memories.

As these soul fragments were voluntarily sacrificed by their owners years ago, they would not affect Jack's body and he would only have an extra memory! This was extremely useful to Jack.

The masters of the first-grade world practiced so many martial art techniques and martial skills throughout the years. All of these would transform into memories and merge into one with Jack!

Jack was extremely excited when he thought of this. However, he noticed that something was wrong after calming down. Accordingly, the self-scarification of so many great masters was to save the fire for the Divine Void Clan. Hence, these things should be kept for the descendants of the Divine Void Clan However, Jack was not a descendant of the Divine Void Clan

On top of that, from the way the old voice spoke when he conversed with Jack, he knew that Jack was not related to the Divine Void Clan. Jack was a true Daxia World person.

Then why would they leave such precious items for him? Could it be that these powerful people were extremely sure that Jack would have extraordinary achievements in the future and he would keep his promise to help the Divine Void Clan to return to the Divine Void World?

Jack thought about this from another perspective. If he was the Divine Void Clan Master, he would not simply put his trust in a person who was completely unrelated and was in the lower realm.

However, it was obvious that nobody was able to answer Jack and he would not ask these questions out loud like a dummy. He only secretly paid some attention to this. At that moment, Jack was able to absorb these soul fragments to form hexagonal crystals at will. However, he did not plan to absorb these memories at that moment.

Although the message transmitted into his brain kept telling Jack that these soul fragments were

extremely safe and would not harm his body, Jack was still worried.

Right now, both the soul gathering crystals and Mustard Seed saw Jack as their master. He was able to control these two items at will. With a thought, he was once again covered in energy and he left the soul -gathering crystal's world the next second, returning to the space he was in just now.

Chapter 1915

He was still in the Mustard Seed right now and understood how strong the Mustard Seed was. After knowing that the Daxia was just a fifth-grade world, Jack made plans to leave the place.

He wanted to see the martial art civilization that was truly flourishing and continue to climb the peaks of the martial art world. This world had a lack of Chi and the number of inheritance was also lacking. Apart from wasting his time, there was nothing that he could obtain by staying here.

Right now, the crucial part of him leaving was this Mustard Seed the Divine Void Clan had left him with. Not only could this Mustard Seed contain lots of people and carry out long-distance delivery, but it can also travel through space barriers to enter worlds of other grades.

The interior area of this Mustard Seed was adjustable and could be used as a storage space apart from being a means of transport. It could be considered a huge storage space!

Jack was extremely satisfied with this. After leaving the Daxia World, he had no idea when he would return to this place. He could not bear leaving all his family members here. Hence, he planned to bring his friends and family if he was leaving.

He was unable to bring everybody with him but he would definitely bring those important to him. In that way, he would be at ease when he leaves the place. After all, he had no idea what changes would happen if he were left alone.

The absorption of the soul fragments was delayed as the most important thing right now was to make arrangements for the remaining issues before they left the Daxia World.

He waved his hand as he walked out of the Mustard Seed. The Mustard Seed turned into a bundle of light before being as small as a ring and entered Jack's body. The Mustard Seed had accepted Jack as its master and Jack was able to control it at will in the future.

He once again stood in this deserted space and looked at his surroundings. The dim stars in the sky and the broken weapons on the ground gave a mysterious and ancient aura to this entire world.

The Sky Gate must be something the Divine Void Clan brought over back then. Jack felt that the world behind the Sky Gate must have experienced a life and death battle years ago.

The Sky Gate must be a precious item too. However, the Divine Void Clan Master did not inform Jack what kind of precious item this Sky Gate was? Could Jack use it? He discovered that it was the following day when he exited the Sky Gate.

When he returned to the sacred lands, Selena stood outside the main entrance with a nervous expression on her face. From the look on her face, Jack knew that she had been waiting for him for a long time. The nervousness immediately disappeared when she saw that Jack had returned.

She hurried over and spoke in a slightly pouty manner when she arrived in front of Jack. "Why are you gone for such a long period of time? I was really afraid that something bad happened to you behind the Sky Gate."

Jack chuckled and petted Selena on her shoulder to comfort her. "It's alright. Who would be able to hurt me with my current fighting prowess?"

After he spoke, Jack gazed at Selena's face, which was once covered by a spell. Now that Selena had taken the king pill and sacred spring water, the spell had slowly dispersed.

They could not look down on the power of the spell as the consumption of the king pill and sacred spring water was unable to immediately eliminate the power of the spell. They still needed time to

slowly lift the spell. However, Selena was already satisfied with this result.

Chapter 1916

Jack stretched out his hand and touched Selena's face, which glowed once again. "It'll recover soon."

The corners of Selena's mouth curled up, and a beautiful smile appeared on her face. However, before she managed to say anything, a familiar voice could be heard coming from behind them. The voice was so familiar that it caused a ripple through Jack's usually calm heart.

"Master! I'm back!" Fernando rushed toward Jack, visibly exhilarated.

Fernando had already recovered and returned to normal. As Jack was immersed in training previously, he only asked Kieran and the rest to go back with the Soul Solidifying Spirit Staff and the resurrection pill to rescue Fernando. Although he did not go over personally, he had been secretly worried.

Jack was completely relieved when he saw that Fernando had completely recovered. "It's great that you've recovered!"

Fernando initially thought that he would suffer some after-effects even if he had regained his mobility. Unexpectedly, the Soul Solidifying Spirit Staff and resurrection pill had such powerful effects that no harm was done even though he had been frozen for such a long period.

After Jack decided that he was leaving soon, he did not hesitate and gathered the group for a small meeting. The people who joined the meeting were those closest to him. All of them had different reactions when Jack informed them about this matter.

However, what they worried about was the danger they would meet after leaving this world. None of them mentioned that they wanted to stay. After all, they understood that Daxia World was a fifth grade world after Jack made the introduction.

They also longed to see what the outside world was like. Jack did not ask Daniella to join this meeting as she was in retreat with hopes to break through her fighting prowess.

In the evening, Selena had a chat with Jack over some tea. Recently, Jack had spent most of his time training or in the pill cultivation room.

This caused a great reduction in the time that they spent together, and Selena was delighted with the precious free time they had at that moment. “To be honest, I feel heavy-hearted to leave this place just like this.”

Jack raised his eyebrows and said caringly, “It’s not like we’re never coming back to this place. With the Mustard Seed in our hands, we can come back any time.”

Selena nodded and she suddenly realized something. “Daniella is still training right now. I’ll inform her of such good news later.”

Jack’s expression faltered a little at the mention of Daniella’s name. “Are we bringing her with us this time?”

Selena was the one stunned when she heard this.” Are we not bringing her with us and leaving her here alone?”

Jack sighed lightly. He had been questioning what happened previously and managed to observe several doubts in their interactions later.

Of course, these were only his suspicions, and he did not have real evidence. However, there was an underlying suspicion in his heart, and he could not resolve this within a short period.

Jack finally realized what happened after Selena asked this rhetorical question. He could not be considered a man if he left with these people and left Daniella here.

Although he was not sure if anything happened between him and Daniella during that evening, he could not separate from Daniella now.

Chapter 1917

Time passed, one day after another. Two months later, Jack led his relatives and friends into the Sky Gate. The Divine Void Clan Master once said that the space barriers within the Sky Gate were the weakest.

If they wanted to leave this place soon, they had to take the Mustard Seed from this place and travel to other spaces. Everybody entered the Mustard Seed with extreme joy and excitement. Jack placed all the spirited stones into the part where the Mustard Seed absorbed energy. Following a loud explosion, the Mustard Seed was driven by the spirited stone and started to exude a bright white light throughout the entire ship.

As they started to move forward, Jack quietly stood In the control room as he watched the surrounding space gradually distort under the drive of the Mustard Seed

Three months later, in a remote inn located in Zenith Sun City, located in West Cercie State of the Hestia Continent, a worker of the inn frowned and looked at the ten premium spirited stones in his hands with disgust.

These 100 pieces of premium spirited stones were the most valuable common currency in the Daxia world, yet they were looked down upon by a worker of an inn in the Hestia Continent.

“Don’t tell me that they’re premium spirited stones. Who in Zenith Sun City still trades with spirited stones? Everybody uses spirited crystals.”

Jack stood in front of this guy from the inn and sighed helplessly. He knew that there were great differences between worlds of different levels, but he never expected such extreme differences.

As the most valuable currency in the Daxia world, It was impossible to use these premium spirited stones to pay for a room here. The worker did not continue to make things difficult for Jack when he saw that Jack was slightly helpless.

“Alright, alright. I’ll take it that you’re from the countryside and have never seen the world. The exchange rate in the market is one elementary spirited crystal for one hundred premium spirited stones, and one elementary spirited crystal can only be used for a ten-day stay in a normal guest room. Don’t look at me like that; I’m not conning you.”

Jack nodded and did not continue to dawdle with this guy. After taking his room key, he went straight to the second floor of the inn. This was Jack’s second day in the Hestia Continent, and everything was new to him during his first day here. After randomly asking a passerby some questions, he learned about what sort of a world the Hestia Continent was.

The Hestia Continent was a third-grade world and was one of the stronger worlds among all the third grade worlds. They had countless masters and were much stronger than the Daxia world in terms of martial enhancement resources and the inheritance o f martial skills.

By taking the common currency between worlds as an example, the spirited stones could be used with ease in the Daxia World but were considered something that belonged to the poor in this world.

The common currency of this world was spirited crystals that contained more aura compared to the spirited stone. For some unknown reason, the martial training system of the Daxia world was fundamentally different from that of this world.

In the Daxia world, the nirvana realm was the highest level of fighting prowess. However, that was the beginning of the fighting prowess in this world. What gave Jack a headache was that from the first step into the road of martial arts until the final soul penetrating realm, this series of fighting prowess all belonged to the same realm in the Hestia Continent, known as the acquired level.

The so-called acquired level was to cleanse one’s body and be reborn. The nirvana realm that Jack had entered was the initial stage of the innate level in this world and was just slightly stronger than the average martial artist.

Jack was not discouraged nor shocked when he learned that there were much more powerful realms after this. Instead, he longed for his future with an emotional heart.

Jack had left Selena and others in the Mustard Seed. He turned the Mustard Seed into a ring and wore it, acting like a storage ring.

It was impossible to store living objects in normal storage rings, but the Mustard Seed was a premium spiritual tool. Not only could it allow people to live in it, but they could also even train and meditate while they were in the Mustard Seed!

After all, Selena and the others did not have a high fighting prowess. Jack feared for their safety should they follow him so openly, thus he asked them to train inside until their fighting prowess had improved

In fact, there was no need for Jack to rent a room. After all, he had the Mustard Seed, and he could have entered the Mustard Seed if he needed to rest. That being said, he was a newcomer to this world, and he had to deal with the people here if he wanted to understand this world quickly.

Chapter 1918

Since bygone times, inns and restaurants had been the best places to obtain news. This was why Jack had to get a room in the inn. Apart from some similarities, there were also differences between this world and the Daxia world.

The similarities were that apart from the developed martial art culture, the other parts of the world were incomparable to the Daxia world. The difference was that their martial art culture was much more developed compared to the Daxia world. Even their level of martial skills and martial art techniques were fundamentally different from the Daxia world.

The inn, from both the exterior appearance and interior design, was just a run-off-the-mill inn.

Of course, Jack did not care about this. After all, he was not here to enjoy life. The Hestia Continent was filled with all sorts of clans, and the fights between these powers had never stopped. This place was far more dangerous compared to the Daxia world.

The thought of it conjured uncertainty within Jack, thinking that his journey would not be a smooth one. He had to develop his power within a short period so he could respond to the changes that would happen at any time in this world.

Just as he planned to enter the Mustard Seed and discuss things with his family, noises broke out from outside his room. It sounded like someone had shattered their teacups.

Jack was no busybody, but his refusal to listen to anything when he had just arrived at this place might hinder his path in the future. Thinking things through, he pushed open his door and walked downstairs, toward the hall where the customers ate.

Groups of people gathered at the originally quiet hall, and a man wearing a red robe was glaring at a man with a huge beard. The atmosphere between them was so tense that it looked as if a fight would break out the next second.

The man in the red robe had bulging cheeks as he said to the bearded man angrily, “What do you know?! Don’t think that you can show off in front of me with your mere ability! How can a commoner from the countryside like you be worthy enough to snatch a treasure with me?!”

The bearded man was so angry that his mustache started to tremble.

His eyes almost popped out of his sockets. “Farley Haller! You’re bullying us, commoner martial artists who rely on your Haller family! I was the one who discovered the spirited herb! I’ve already collected the items, and you brought a group of people to take the spirited herb from me! I’ve already told you that this isn’t over!”

Farley looked at the bearded man in contempt after he heard this. “So what if I took this from you? Are

you capable of retribution against me? Our Haller family has produced many masters during the recent hundred years, and we're thriving now. A commoner like you that has nobody to depend on is only good at arguing, and there's nothing you can do. Just wait till your next life if you plan on getting revenge!"

Such words were undeniably exasperating, and the bearded man's eyebrows almost turned into a straight line. "Just wait and see, then! I'll make you pay for this when I join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and become their disciple!"

Farley raised his eyebrows and chuckled after he heard this. Everybody there was able to hear the mockery hidden in his laughter.

"Oh my god! You're making my stomach hurt. You're even thinking about becoming a Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciple?! Why don't you take a piss and look at yourself? With your current strength, they won't want you even if you want to do odd jobs for them, let alone become the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciple!"

What the man said caused the bearded man to be extremely furious. The muscles on his face trembled In anger, face tightening as he glared at Farley.

"I'll definitely become a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Just you wait! The bearded man looked like he did not want to prolong his exchange with Farley. Thus, he took out two spirited crystals from his pocket and slammed them on the table with a thud before he left without looking back.

Farley's mocking smirk never left his face as he watched the bearded man leave.

Chapter 1919

Even after the bearded man left, Farley sneered, "I don't know if this guy is brainless or crazy. The Dual Sovereign Pavilion is an outstanding sect among the third-grade sects. Every time they recruit disciples, the chosen ones must be at least in the initial stage of innate level. As a person who's in the final stage of acquired level, how dare he declare that he's going to become a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion? I'm going to laugh my front teeth off."

Initially, the people around them said nothing as they watched the excitement unfold, choosing to stay back and whisper among themselves. However, what Farley said caused some good people to speak up.

One of the men, who was handsome-looking and was about 20 years old, said, “You’re wrong, Young Master Farley. That burly man wasn’t making things up. Did you forget that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is having an ongoing fight with the Muddled Origin Clan now? Both sects have reached the point where they’re incompatible, just like fire and water. They might get into a battle at any time. To be on the safe side, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion has started to recruit a large number of disciples. They even lowered their condition that people in the final stage of the acquired level can join assessment!”

It had been more than a year or two since the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddled Origin Clan did not see eye-to-eye. The Zenith Sun City was under the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s control and belonged under their influence. Naturally, the people in the city were most concerned about the Dual Sovereign Pavilion

Naturally, they also knew a lot about the long-time enemy of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, the Muddled Origin Clan. On top of that, they discovered a secretive site for resources near the Dual Sovereign Pavilion some time ago.

The Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddled Origin Clan were located next to each other. The secretive site for resources should be close to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and was not that far away from the Muddled Origin Clan, too. Upon learning about this, the Muddled Origin Clan immediately started competing with the Dual Sovereign Pavilion over this site for resources.

There had been innumerable grievances between both sects, and this incident became the fuse. Although the battle between both sects had not begun, everyone knew that the battle between both sects would occur at any time if things developed according to this momentum.

The Dual Sovereign Pavilion lowered their conditions of accepting disciples to get sufficient reserved personnel or cannon fodder.

Farley was not surprised after he heard this. After all, he knew a lot about what happened between the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddled Origin Clan. He remarked with a sneer, “Even if they lowered their conditions in accepting disciples, they only did that to get more cannon fodder. With the level that he’s at right now, he’d be killed by the enemy as soon as he enters the battlefield!”

Nobody reacted at that, but most of them secretly agreed to Farley’s statement.

Farley’s family was considered a well-developed one in the Zenith Sun City, and some snobs wanted to take this opportunity to butter up Farley.

“Even if that burly man becomes a Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciple, he’ll definitely be the cannon fodder among cannon fodders, just like what Young Master Farley said. I heard that Young Master Farley had planned to participate in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciple test this year! Although there will be lots of casualties during this battle, it’ll also bring sufficient opportunities. With Young Master Farley’s fighting prowess and talents, he’ll surely achieve dazzling results!”

Farley’s eyes narrowed in satisfaction at those words. He loved to listen to such flattery, regardless If they were truthful or not.

Jack stood at the top of the stairs as he listened to what these people said. A thought suddenly appeared in his mind. He had also heard of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion when he arrived, but he had not much information nor understanding about them.

Chapter 1920

He knew that Zenith Sun City belonged to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and every sect had its own jurisdiction. If Jack wanted to enter a sect to practice, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was a good choice.

The only thing he was unsure of was what sort of issues he would face after entering the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. In fact, this farce came to an end following the departure of the bearded man.

Jack turned to return to his room when he noticed the fun was over. What he did not realize was the

moment he turned around, Farley suddenly turned to look in his direction for a long period as if he had discovered something.

After Jack returned to his room, he immediately entered the Mustard Seed. His relatives and friends in the Mustard Seed were actively practicing as none of them wanted to hold Jack back. They hoped to be of help when Jack had gained a foothold in this world. Nash was already at the soul-penetrating level at that moment. Judging by the standard of Hestia Continent's fighting prowess, he was already in the final stage of acquired level.

He saw the torn expression on Jack's face the moment Jack came in and immediately stopped his training. He pulled Jack to an empty living room in the Mustard Seed and set up a table of wine to chat with Jack.

Jack had nothing to hide from his father and immediately mentioned the doubts he had. Nash let out a deep sigh after he heard what Jack said. "This Is nothing to feel torn about. I know that you're afraid of the troubles that you'll face after joining a sect, but you also need to know that you shouldn't hide behind closed doors when you're training. Although you have the memories of great masters from the past, you lack combat and experience. You can only improve your combat skills and gain experience by entering a sect."

Jack was suddenly enlightened after hearing Nash's words. He had become narrow-minded before. Just like what his father said, although he had the memories of those previous great masters, it did not mean that he did not need to do anything and could train by only relying on those memories.

No matter which world he was in, battles and experiences were indispensable! On top of that, this was a brand-new world. If he joined a sect, he would have some support, and that was better than knowing nothing

"You're right. It happens that this time, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddled Origin Clan battle lack disciples. I can also take this opportunity to gain some experiences."

Jack did not hide the matter regarding the soul gathering crystals from Nash. After learning about everything that happened, Nash was slightly worried.

“Although these soul fragments gathered by the soul -gathering crystal can provide you with the best martial art techniques and martial skills, does it really affect you after you absorb them?”

When the Mustard Seed broke through the space barrier and shuttled through the world, Jack took this opportunity to enter the soul-gathering crystals to absorb the soul fragments left there by the previous great masters.

In fact, Jack was equally as worried as Nash. After all, these were fragments of the souls, and things related to the souls could not be taken easily. If he was not careful, he might lose his own personality.

However, Jack understood something after he thought about it. There was nothing he could do, no matter how he worried about things. His current fighting prowess could not ensure if any negative effects would be brought onto himself.

To be sure about this, they could only figure things out after Nash personally absorbed the soul fragment. Hence, Jack had already absorbed a soul fragment when he was in the spirit ship.

Fortunately, he did not experience any discomfort apart from an additional memory in his mind after he absorbed this soul fragment. Nonetheless, Nash being Jack’s father-was understandably concerned.

Jack knew his father’s thoughts. “There’s no need for you to worry. I don’t feel any discomfort after I absorb this soul fragment, nor did I feel affected. These soul fragments are indeed just leftover memories.”

The soul fragment absorbed by Nash was the memory of an elder from the Divine Void Clan from the Divine Void World. This elder’s fighting prowess had achieved the Void Breaking level!

Chapter 1921

Even the strongest masters of the Hestia Continent were no match for this elder. The martial skills and

martial art techniques that this elder practiced had far exceeded the level found in this world.

However, Jack was unable to practice many of the martial art skills with his current fighting prowess. He searched the memories to pick and choose. It took him quite a while to choose the martial skills and martial art techniques he could practice!

Nash also knew these things. He glanced at Jack and said, “What level do you think the martial art technique Divine Void Heavenly Path and martial art technique Destroying the Void belong to in the Hestia Continent?”

There was a different way of naming and setting the levels for martial art techniques and martial skill in the Hestia Continent. Both the martial art techniques and martial skills were divided into eight levels.

They were named after the eight characters: Universe’, ‘World’, ‘Chaos’, ‘Ignorance’, ‘Heaven’, Earth’, ‘Red’ and ‘Yellow’. According to their sequence, the ‘Universe’ level was the strongest while the ‘Yellow’ was the weakest. Each level was also divided into elementary, intermediate, and premium grades.

For example, the bearded man Jack had just seen in the inn could only master martial skills of the Yellow level as he was a commoner.

The martial art techniques and martial skills mastered by each sect or other martial enhancement resources were what these martial artists longed for.

The most important aspect of every sect was their Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall. They thought of the inheritance of these techniques and martial skills as the sect’s livelihood, and everyone was strictly forbidden to leak them.

This was also why all martial artists desperately wanted to join the sects. Jack sighed lightly and warily spoke, “The Divine Void World and the Hestia Continent are inherently different. Their definitions of martial art techniques and martial skills are also different. Right now, the only martial skill I can practice at this moment, Destroying the Void, has no ranking at all! I can only make a preliminary judgement

based on the content. In this world, this I s at least a martial skill in the Heaven level."

Nash was secretly stunned after he heard what Jack said. "The great masters before us are really strong. The simplest martial skill from them is actually at the 'Heaven' level in this world."

Jack nodded and continued, "I can still identify the ranking of Destroying the Void for the time being, but I really can't guess which ranking the Divine Void Heavenly Path belongs to."

This time, Nash spoke with certainty, "This martial skill won't be too low of a level, since it was named the Divine Void Heavenly Path! No matter what, you should start practicing them first. I don't think you should go out for the time being, you can practice here in the Mustard Seed. You should have a certain degree of self-protection ability before you leave for the outside world, seeing how chaotic it had been lately."

Jack nodded; he had in his mind too. The Dual Sovereign Pavilion and Muddle Origin Clan were about to go to war. Who knew which areas would be affected by this great battle between sects?

Zenith Sun City might be caught up in the midst of the battle. Hence, Jack planned to practice Destroying the Void first and continue to make plans after he had achieved the initial stage of the Destroying the Void skill.

Fortunately, the memories left by the great master not only gave Jack the martial art technique and martial skill. The training experiences were also left behind and were merged with Jack!

Such a fusion of memory was incomparable to others. Even hand-in-hand teaching of famous teachers could not compare to the fusion of memories and experiences Jack experienced.

At this moment, Nash suddenly chuckled and said," You've been practicing recently and haven't been able to spend quality time with Kylie. After you have completely stabilized, you should take her out for a stroll. She's a child, and it's natural for her to be curious about a completely new world. She can be happy for several days if you take her out for a quick stroll."

Jack nodded, and guilt bloomed in his heart. After all, he did not have the time to accompany his daughter recently. Since they arrived in this new world, he would definitely bring her for a stroll with the money they have. He wanted to broaden her knowledge while making her happy.

Chapter 1922

To have the power of protecting himself soon, Jack once again devoted himself to training. This time, he placed his entire focus on training the martial skill, Destroying the Void. Nonetheless, practicing a martial skill of this level was a difficult feat.

Some martial skills just were not meant to be trained. They required comparable fighting prowess t o practice martial skills of the highest level, such as how those who were in the innate level can only practice martial skill of the 'Yellow level and 'Red' level.

The martial skill that was a level higher-the 'Earth' level-was not something someone in the innate level could get involved in. However, it so happened that Jack was able to ignore this rule.

He fused the soul fragments of this great master, his predecessor. Since this great master was able to succeed in practicing this martial skill, Jack only needed to integrate the memories, and he would be able to completely learn this martial skill.

On top of that, the level of Destroying the Void was unknown, and Jack was only making assumptions. The martial skill was at least in the 'Heaven' level, and there were four levels for it. For the time being, Jack tried to practice the first stage where he formed a Soul Sword and had it attached to his hands.

The token of success for the first stage was to form ten Soul Swords and control them to fuse together or separate them at ease. Jack originally thought that it would not be too troublesome for him to form the Soul Swords, seeing as he had the memories of that predecessor fused with his.

However, he had underestimated how difficult it was in training the Destroying the Void skill. Forming the first Soul Sword alone used up two months of Jack's time. Within these two months, Jack had been

training his soul restlessly to form the seal so that his soul could form the Soul Sword.

This was the most difficult martial skill Jack had to practice in this lifetime. If he did not have a strong willpower and the memories of the great masters, he would never be able to form the Soul Sword within two months.

Forming the first Soul Sword only meant that Jack had entered the training of the Destroying the Void and had not even achieved the first grade. He could only be considered as entering the first grade after h e managed to form ten Soul Swords and can control them with ease.

However, such progress had already used up most of Jack's mental strength. Nash, Selena, and the rest persuaded Jack to not rush through things. Speed, after all, was the enemy of training.

Nash gave words of warm-hearted advice and encouragement. "I know you want to have a firm foothold in this world, but you also need to know that the martial art culture in this world is so much more developed compared to that of the Daxia world. You know deep down that it'll take an unknown amount of years for you to stabilize your position in this world based on your current fighting prowess. If you continue to rush things, you might g

Jack gave a small nod of response. He knew that what his father said was for his benefit, and he naturally knew how to listen when somebody spoke t o him with good intentions. "You're right. No one can grow fat after just having a mouthful of food. What I had been doing was rather dangerous."

Nash stretched out his hand and patted Jack on his shoulder. "How about this: You should rest for these couple of days or bring Kylie out for a walk. Zenith Sun City isn't a big city under the control of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Although there are many masters there, you won't be in trouble if you're careful."

In fact, Nash also constantly left for strolls during this period. Of course, the area of his movement was restricted to the inn's surroundings. Jack was also

Father should he have walked too far away.

After all, there were many extremely powerful people in this world, and with his current power, it was impossible for him to do everything as he liked. During this time, Nash managed to obtain lots of news. As Jack had been in retreat for training during the past couple of months, Nash told Jack about everything to prevent any unnecessary trouble.

Chapter 1923

“All the power of this world is in the hands of the sects. I think the strongest martial artist of Zenith Sun City is only in the innate level, and that it’s the city master of the Zenith Sun City, who’s in the intermediate stage of the innate level. The masters who are in the premium stage of the innate level or stronger than this level have remained in the sect. After all, only the sect has a large amount of resources to support their training. To be frank, Zenith Sun City is only a city of commoners.” Jack slowly nodded.

If the strongest people in this city were only in the intermediate stage of the innate level, that was fine for him. With this in mind, he decided to bring Kylie out for fun. As long as he was fully aware of his surroundings, trouble would not come to them.

Kylie was overjoyed when she heard that her father was bringing her out to play. After all, she was just a seven-year-old child. She still grew bored over time, even though she was surrounded by her relatives in the Mustard Seed.

Jack led Kylie out of the inn. The two of them did not go to the busiest stress. After all, that place was filled with people, and accidents were prone to happen. Jack merely led Kylie to a street nearby the inn.

Although this was not as busy as the main street, there were still many people who sold nice toys and delicious food. Kylie looked around happily as soon a s she got to the street. Although Kylie was young, she knew that her father was not rich after entering this world.

She did not ask for everything. Instead, she only picked a couple of toys and food that had a midrange price. Jack touched Kylie’s head and said, You don’t need to be frugal because of me; they’re just a few toys and food. I’d be doing a poor job if I can’t even pay for you.”

Kylie knew that her father was joking with her and happily chirped, “I’m not saving money for you. I like these small toys more! Those expensive ones might not be fun nor delicious.”

The father-daughter pair happily chatted away when a wave of disturbance suddenly happened in front of them. Jack frowned as he pulled Kylie behind him. H e looked up and saw a person in tattered clothes and spells on his face stumbling out of an alleyway.

This person looked really pitiful. Their clothes were I n stripes as if they had gone through some whipping punishment, turning him into how they were. That person also had black curses carved on their face. These curses looked like earthworms that were alive and crawled all over their face. It looked bizarre and horrifying at the same time.

This person’s face was covered by the black curses, making it difficult to distinguish if this individual was a man or woman. Everyone else scattered at the sight of this person as though they had seen the plague

Kylie stood behind Jack and stretched out her small hand to pull on his sleeve. “That person looks so pitiful, Father. What happened to him? Why does he have that thing all over his face?”

Jack slightly frowned. He would have had the intention to investigate this matter any other day, but Kylie was with him at that moment. He would not look into what was happening if he had such thoughts.

He stretched out his hand and pulled Kylie. It did not matter why that person appeared here. In Jack’s opinion, this place had become a place of gossip, and he did not want to remain any longer. However, just a s he wanted to pull Kylie away, the person with spells all over their face suddenly raised their head. A hint of hopefulness suddenly appeared in their grey eyes when they saw Kylie.

They staggered toward Jack as they whimpered, “I beg you, please, save me. I’ve been pitiful all this while, being their captive for many years! They keep starving me! Can I have a bite of the food in your hands?”

Chapter 1924

Jack had bought two sweet buns for Kylie, and she still had them in her hands as she did not have the chance to eat them. Jack subconsciously frowned, but Kylie, with a sincere heart, tossed the sweet buns to the person that had a face full of curses.

That person stuffed the buns into their mouth the moment they got their hands on it. It seemed that this person had not eaten for a long time. “Thank you, both of you,” he profusely spoke as he ate,” thank you very much. Can you guys rescue me?”

Kylie was not defensive of them, but Jack was not stupid. This person obviously heard the conversation between them, and that was why he suddenly asked Kylie for help. Did this person have such efficacious ears? Kylie had lowered her voice when she spoke, and they were so far away from this place. However, before he had the chance to think about this clearly, a scoff was heard from afar. “How dare you feed my

Slave!

Daughter duo in a helpless way. A middle-aged woman said to Jack exasperatedly, “Young man, are you new in town? Why don’t you know the rules?”

Jack realized that something was wrong after he heard this and subconsciously asked, “What rule?”

The middle-aged woman looked at Jack helplessly.” This person is a slave of the city master’s mansion. The curses on his face is the sign of them being a slave, the city master’s personal property. Giving them even a glance is a mistake, let alone feeding them!”

Jack glanced at the person once more. They seemed t o be mentally challenged and spoke at a childish manner, as if he had turned dumb from being hit by others.

They looked really pitiful…but Jack did not want to offend the city master. He had just arrived at this place, after all

“You truly are daring. Didn’t you hear what I said?! A man in expensive clothing and an unhappy expression on his face hurried toward Jack with two armor-clad guards in tow.

The middle-aged woman immediately retreated to the side after taking a look. She reminded Jack out of kindness before she left. “This person is the first young master of the city master’s mansion, Warren Alexander. You can’t offend him, or you’ll suffer!”

The first young master of the city master mansion? Jack was stumped speechless. Still, he was not a person who would get trampled on. Although this person was the first young master of the city master mansion, what he did was unintentional. With a frown on his face, he said, “I’m sorry. I had no idea that this was your slave, and I also didn’t know the rules of the city master mansion.”

However, such words brought out a negative reaction when Warren heard them. “You don’t know that this is my slave, and you don’t know the rules of the city master mansion? Hmph! Do you think that I’m stupid? Stop making excuses for yourself. I won’t accept any excuses you make!”

Warren glared at Jack after he said this. When he saw Kylie, who was behind Jack, a disgusting smile appeared on his face. “Of course, you can easily make up for your mistake. That young girl behind you seems great. Give her to me so that she can be my maid.”

Kylie was so frightened that her delicate face turned pale. She never expected that her action of throwing a sweet bun would cause her father such terrible trouble. She raised her head to apologize to her father, but Jack was not looking at Kylie.

Jack not wanting to get into an argument with Warren was just to avoid trouble. Jack did not feel that Kylie’s action of giving food to this pitiful person was a mistake.

However, what Warren said had completely angered him.

A cold look appeared in his eyes. To avoid trouble, he had been hiding his aura the entire time. People

that did not have a very much higher fighting prowess compared to him could not correctly identify his fighting prowess.

When Warren saw how Jack stared at him with a cold look in his eyes, he spoke in a manner as if he could care less, “Why? You don’t want to? Alright, then! Since you aren’t willing to give this young girl to me t o be my maid, I’ll chop off your hands to make you understand the meaning of rules!”

Chapter 1925

Jack was slightly stunned when he heard what Warren said. He never expected the city master’s first young master to have such random powers. He could just chop off the hands of any person he wanted! Warren obviously did not want to waste his time speaking to Jack.

He raised his arms, and a strong aura was exuded from his body.

This person had already reached the initial stage of innate level, and not many people in Zenith Sun City were his match. Noises of people discussing the situation could also be heard at this moment. “The city master’s first young master had just been accepted as the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s informal disciple last year. I heard that he caught the eyes of a n elder from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and had been practicing high-level martial skills!”

“This young man has terrible luck, sadly. The city master’s first young master has been in a bad mood recently, and this is him wanting to vent his anger o n somebody.”

All sorts of discussion wafted into Jack’s ears and fueled his anger. In fact, Warren was just looking for an excuse to cause trouble, and Jack happened to have made a mistake at the wrong time. Warren took out a silver sword from his storage ring and pointed I tat Jack’s face.

“I might consider letting you go if you cut off both your hands now and kneel to praise me!”

Jack smirked when he heard this. “You’re allowed to act as you please just because you are the city master’s first young master? It seems true that there aren’t any rules in this world!”

Warren narrowed his eyes, and a dangerous look flashed through his eyes. “How am I not following the rules? You’re the one who secretly fed my slave. Who in the entire Zenith Sun City doesn’t know about the rules of our city master’s mansion?!”

What Warren said made Jack understand that not only masters or those with a higher status could act a s they like in this world. The hidden meaning behind Warren’s words was to search for an excuse to push the mistake onto Jack!

Jack did not want to waste time speaking to him. The aura exploded from Jack’s body, and a black ball of light slowly appeared in Jack’s palm. After Jack’s aura exploded, he did not hide his fighting prowess, and Warren raised his eyebrows in surprise. “No wonder you dare act in such a presumptuous manner. Turns out you’re of the same fighting prowess as I am! Still, that doesn’t mean anything! I’m the informal disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and I’ve practiced their martial skill! You’re no match for me, even if you’ve broken through into the innate level!”

Jack looked at Warren as if he was looking at a dummy. “Everybody knows how to boast. Get to it if you’re that talented. However, I don’t hold back when I get into action. You can only blame your own stupidity if you die!”

This sentence had obviously struck Warren’s sensitive nerve. His facial expression darkened out of anger. He never thought this guy would speak so crudely, and he refused to chop his hands, too!

It seemed like he had to teach this unscrupulous guy a lesson! With a disdainful sneer, a silver light traveled through his silver sword. Following that, a new moon appeared behind Warren’s back. The cold light of the new moon was reflected on the silver sword.

Warren stepped on the floor with the tip of his toes and went attacking toward Jack like a cannonball. Beware, my Silver Moon Strike!”

The power was really daunting. If he had not absorbed the soul fragments from the great masters, Jack might have been shocked by this wave of power. This strength was something the masters of the Daxia

world could never display!

Many people could not hold back their sound of exclamation when they saw this scene.

“This is a ‘Yellow’ level premium martial skill! This I s the first time I’ve seen somebody perform a martial skill of that level. The power released by this martial skill is really strong!”

“Sh*t! This young man is done for this time! If he had just admitted defeat, he might be able to stay alive. Now that he has completely angered Warren, h e won’t be able to survive this!”

Chapter 1926

Everybody started to silently mourn for Jack at this point. After all, Warren was a powerful martial artist even if his identity was ignored. He was the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s informal disciple and practiced Premium yellow level martial skills. Usual commoner martial artists were no match for him.

However, the onlookers were no fools. When they saw how Jack seemed to ignore the powerful martial skill Warren performed, they were curious while they pitied Jack at the same time. Was this young man also a powerful martial artist?

However, such thought only passed through the minds of the people before they silently denied it. After all, Jack was not from Zenith Sun City, and he might not understand the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Jack’s lack of expression caused Warren, who was already furious, to seem even more livid. He scoffed coldly and silently delivered Jack his death verdict.

The silver sword in his hands emitted a chilly silver light as it came slashing toward Jack. When the sword light was inspected carefully, there were some ripples flowing in it. This represented the gathering o f strong power. The people standing around Jack had proactively distanced themselves. If they were affected by this wave of energy, they might die on the spot!

“Accept your death, you b*stard!” Warren roared angrily, and the silver-colored sword aura swiftly raced toward Jack’s head.

The onlookers saw that Jack stretched out his right hand expressionlessly. A black-colored light the size of a finger floated on top of his right palm. This light looked ordinary and did not carry a hint of power ripples. Jack raised his palm and gathered this black energy on his fingers.

As he pointed forward, the black energy went flying forward and rushed toward the silver sword aura. The silver sword aura was so majestic that it looked like it could split rocks into two. On the contrary, the black colored light Jack flicked out with his fingers seemed to have no power ripples if they did not look a tit carefully.

Naturally, Warren also noticed the black-colored light Jack sent out with his fingers. He only swept through the light with contempt in his eyes. Just by looking at the power ripples on the black light was sufficient for him to decide that it was harmless.

Boom!

The silver sword aura and the black-colored light collided with one another. Everybody thought that the silver sword light would destroy the black light and reach Jack easily.

What shocked them was how Jack’s light instantly broke the silver sword aura. The vast silver sword aura failed to withstand the attack for a breath under the collision of the black light!

Jack smiled coldly. The Destroying the Void was a martial skill great masters in the first-grade world, Divine Void World, trained. This martial skill was at least at the heaven level.

Although Jack had just started training the skill and had not achieved the first stage, a single soul sword was capable of breaking Warren’s sword light easily. Warren’s eyes almost popped out of their sockets when he saw this. The black light was actually capable of destroying his sword aura with such ease.

On top of that, when he was still immersed in his own fear, the black color sword aura had already arrived in front of him within seconds. “I’ll cut you into pieces!” roared Warren before he waved his sword for another attack.

His previous attack had been disbursed, yet his new power had not been generated yet. This second sword wave was formed in a hurry, and he could not extinguish the soul swords, even when he attacked with all his power, let alone one that was rushed.

Crack!

With a loud crack, his silver sword started to slightly shatter after it crashed into the black light. The sword could not withstand the black light, resulting I n the black light rushing into Warren’s arm.

The only thing everyone else heard was Warren’s roar of pain. “Arghh! It hurts!”

This heartbreaking cry caused everybody’s scalp to tingle.

Chapter 1927

After the black light sliced into Warren’s arm, it instantly tore his clothes. The flesh under his clothes was also torn into pieces by this light. In an instant, pieces of flesh and blood flew everywhere, and Warren knelt on the floor in pain.

The pain he experienced was not only physical; it even made him feel like his soul was being torn apart. When everyone saw Warren’s tragic situation, their eyes widened and stared at those two in disbelief, especially Jack.

All of them had regarded him as a monster. He was obviously in the initial stage of innate level, but why was there such a big difference between them? Jack had only emitted a black light from the beginning to the end, but not only did he defeat Warren’s attack, but Jack also shattered his arm.

Judging how Warren's injuries looked, he could not heal from this in a short time. Jack was not surprised by Warren's tragic situation. Instead, Jack secretly sighed. "My control over this skill is still not good enough, and I didn't control the energy of this attack well. I was aiming for the chest but hit his arm instead.

After all, Jack had just started training. Although he managed to form the soul sword, he had not mastered the skill yet. Hence, he was unable to succeed at such simple controls. Of course, he could only lament this to himself, lest others would be shocked to hear this aloud.

Jack had unleashed the skill albeit not flawlessly. Had he did, he could have killed Warren.

Warren was in so much pain that he broke out in cold sweat. The warriors in silver armor, who had been standing behind him, immediately rushed forward to protect Warren when they saw their young master badly wounded.

Both warriors in silver armor drew their swords at Jack, but the looks at their faces obviously looked slightly guilty. After all, they were only in the final stage of acquired level. How could they challenge Jack when someone in the initial stage of innate level could not defeat Jack?

Kylie stood behind Jack and could not help but whisper, "Father, you're amazing. You beat them in just one move!"

Jack chuckled and glanced at his daughter without answering her. By this moment, the people's murmurs immediately filled the air. After all, it was surprising how Jack, who they thought would have died, destroyed Warren's arm within one attack.

"Who is this person? Where is he from if he's not from Zenith Sun City? He must be from some pavilion with such a powerful strength. The martial skill he used is so powerful. Could it be a red level martial skill? Only a red level martial skill can defeat a yellow level martial skill without fighting back!"

“Who knows? This young man is no simple man. I initially thought that he was so strong against the young city master because he was new and insensible. Now, it seems like it’s just because he’s capable of doing so!”

At this moment, everybody looked at Jack in a different light, and there was a faint hint of worship I n their eyes. The Hestia Continent had been a world where the powerful people were respected, and the law of the jungle was deeply ingrained in their mind.

Some of those who originally mocked Jack immediately changed their tone and started praising him. “This is amazing. It’s the first time I’ve seen somebody using the red level martial skill. Who would’ve expected for it to be so powerful? What is that black light? Why couldn’t I feel the fluctuation o fpower? It has such a powerful lethality!”

After this person aired his comment, the middleaged man standing beside him snorted coldly. “It’s normal that you can’t feel the lethality. What’s your strength, and what’s his?”

Jack was not in the mood to fight the two warriors in silver armor and just stood there quietly. Originally, Jack wanted to kill Warren, but he knew, after weighing the pros and cons of the situation, that he would be in big trouble with the city master mansion if he killed Warren.

Chapter 1928

The warriors in silver armor were relieved when they noticed Jack standing still, not making a move on them and staring at them silently. The main reason was that Jack had displayed how powerful it was and the two of them were frightened of him.

At this moment, Warren yelled angrily at the two warriors, “Hurry up and find me some pills! Are you two blind?!”

Warren squeezed these words through his teeth. Warren was already in so much pain and was about t o faint. His roar caused both warriors in silver armort o tremble before they finally realized that their young city master could not take out the pills he needed.

Only then did those two help Warren up from the ground in a hurry. They then took the holy healing medication out from their storage ring, both for internal and external application, Warren's facial complexion slightly improved after they spent some time tending to the wounds.

Still, his complexion remained pale, and an increased number of people had gathered around to observe what happened. Nonetheless, all of them knew that Warren was in a very bad mood and nobody dared to offend him, so they merely observed from a distance.

Warren let out a deep breath and stared at Jack viciously through his bloodshot eyes. "Who are you, and which pavilion do you belong to?! You're not from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, 'cause I would've recognized you. Are you a spy from the Muddled Origin Clan?!"

Truth be told, Warren, at this point, was already a little intimidated. After all, he had used all his strength, and he still could not defeat the young man standing in front of him. This person seemed to be a n extremely talented person.

Jack raised his eyebrows and scoffed softly before he spoke, "Are you trying to slander me? On what grounds do you think that I'm from the Muddled Origin Clan?"

Warren knew that he was not Jack's opponent, so he wanted to smear Jack's reputation. Since the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and Muddled Origin Clan were at odds, a battle might break out at any time. If he made others think that Jack was a spy from the Muddle Origin Clan, this would get the attention of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

It was even possible that the masters would kill Jack. Warren snorted coldly as the hatred in his heart was about to drown him. After all, he was in an extremely shameful situation.

He was originally the Zenith Sun City's young city master. It was extremely shameful that he simply faced someone in the city and was pummeled to the ground by the opponent. He wanted to save his honor and cause Jack trouble.

Sneering, he stubbornly spoke, “I’m sure that you’re a spy from the Muddled Origin Clan. Otherwise, why did you come to the Zenith Sun City at this time? Don’t tell me that you aren’t from any pavilions; I’ll never believe that you aren’t from any of them. The martial skill you displayed just now is at least in the red level. You must be a genius trained by the Muddled Origin Clan, and you’re here in our Zenith Sun City to find news about the Dual Sovereign Pavilion!”

These words were used to slander Jack, but they carried a certain hint of incitement. After listening to what he said, many people around them started to change the way they look at Jack again, and this time, with a hint of doubt.

If this person was a spy from the Muddled Origin Clan, being a spy was also disgusted by others, even though this was a world where they respected the strong and honored martial arts.

Jack sneered. “I didn’t come to live in Zenith Sun City. I was just passing by. Stop slandering my name. Why would spies from the Muddled Origin Clan come to such a small Zenith Sun City? What’s the point of coming to this place? Do you have masters from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion stationed here? Stop lying without using your brain. I’m telling you now that I passed by Zenith Sun City just to get to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.”

As soon as he spoke, the voices of discussion could be heard again. However, Jack did not care what the people around him thought of him as he only wanted to clear his suspicion.

After all, he was about to join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s entry assessment. Just like what Jack said, there was nothing to spy on in the Zenith Sun City. After all, this was just a normal city under the ruling of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. What could a spy do b y coming here?

Chapter 1929

The corners of Warren’s mouth trembled, and the look in his eyes were like those that belonged to hungry wild wolves. Jack simply ignored how darkened Warren’s facial expression was.

Jack smiled coldly and said, “My patience is limited. You better leave now, or I’ll kill you and both your subordinates.”

What Warren said about making Kylie his maid had angered Jack beyond relief. If Jack was not new to this place and wanted to avoid causing problems, he would have killed Warren on the spot.

Warren’s face flushed by such impolite remarks. However, as he looked at how Jack behaved, Warren realized that he might die here if he did not leave. His eyes widened as he stared at Jack’s face. He looked as if he wanted to engrave Jack’s face in his memory.

“Let’s go!” After that, he ordered the warriors in silver armor, and the three of them left in a dejected manner. He was so fast that it seemed like a wild hound was chasing after him.

“Father, you’re amazing! You scared that guy witless! “shouted Kylie behind Jack with an excited look on her face.

Jack chuckled and stretched out his hand to brush Kylie’s hair. “Alright, let’s go back.”

In fact, it was not a good thing to let Warren leave. Thinking about it, he was sure that Warren could not quell his anger and would cause Jack some trouble. However, the thing Jack worried the least was trouble.

After all, Warren was not a particularly important figure and was only an informal disciple. He could not do much, even if somebody from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion appreciated him.

Jack was completely unafraid.

After all the chaos and fun, Kylie no longer wished to stay outside. She felt that the outside was not as fun, and it was too dangerous as a minor move could cause a catastrophe.

When Warren left, he did not bring the city master mansion's slave with him as he might have been too embarrassed about what happened. The slave was still squatting on the ground with a pitiful look on their face.

Kylie could not bear to look at their pitiful way and stretched out her delicate hand to tug Jack's sleeves. "Father, shall we help him? He looks very pitiful."

Jack raised his eyebrows; the person was indeed quite pitiful. However, Jack was unwilling to bring them back. After all, it would cause him trouble to bring the slave back with him. He simply took out ten lower -grade spirited crystals and placed them in front of the slave.

"Take these ten lower-grade spirited crystals and leave. You can go to the countryside or wherever you want. You'll only end up dead if you continue to stay here."

The slave's eyes widened as they then glanced at Jack gratefully. They did not continue to pester him and only bowed deeply at Jack before they stumbled away with the ten lower-grade spirited crystals.

After Jack returned with Kylie, he checked out of the inn with the inn worker as he could no longer stay in Zenith Sun City. Although he was not afraid that Warren would cause him trouble, it was better to distance himself away from such matters. After all, Zenith Sun City was not far away from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. He had already decided that he would be attending the entrance examination at the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and no longer wished to further delay his trip.

The Dual Sovereign Pavilion was located in the Dual Sovereign City. The Dual Sovereign City was the largest city within a diameter of hundreds of miles, and the reason was naturally because of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's control. After Jack arrived at the Dual Sovereign City, Warren also entered the city with his people.

Chapter 1930

The Dual Sovereign City was bustling because of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. According to their usual

rules, those who entered the Dual Sovereign City had to fulfill certain terms. They had to be either extremely talented or powerful.

Either that, or they were locals of the Dual Sovereign City. However, because of their fights with the Muddled Origin Clan, the Dual Sovereign City eased off on the terms to enter the Dual Sovereign City.

However, the existence of these terms could not stop the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion from entering the city. Warren had become a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for some time, and he naturally would not be stopped by anybody when he wanted to enter the city.

Although he was just an informal disciple, he was a master at flattery, and riding on other people's coattails was a usual thing for him. Hence, he was doing considerably well in the pavilion.

After he entered the Dual Sovereign City, he went straight to a medium-sized house. The owner of a medium-sized house in the Dual Sovereign City was definitely a person with an extraordinary identity.

After he was invited into the hall, he saw Zeph Griffin, who was sitting by the octagonal table as he drank tea. Zeph did not look up when he saw Warren's arrival and only greeted Warren with a nod.

Warren had a flattering smile on his face and looked like a different person compared to the arrogant manner he had previously. "How have you been, brother Zeph? There must be quite a number of worrisome issues recently."

Zeph replied with a frown on his face, "Don't you know what's happening recently? Deacons like us have been running around busily."

Zeph was not a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion but a deacon of the pavilion. He was a management personnel of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and was a level lower than the elders. His main responsibility was to manage the chores of the pavilion.

Zeph was considered a personnel in the mid-range management, and that led to some informal or formal disciples naturally fawning over him.

However, Zeph could not offend the elder disciples or chosen disciples. Instead, he had to fawn over these people. The position of deacons was an embarrassing existence in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Warren purposely bought a number of nice items before he came. There were excellent Epiphany Tea and some snacks made out of precious items collected from nature. Zeph's facial expression slightly improved and finally looked straight at Warren when he saw Warren placing these items onto the table.

He glanced at Warren and said indifferently, "You wouldn't have visited me if you didn't have anything to ask from me. I'm sure you aren't here to observe while I drink tea, am I right? I've been very busy recently, and I don't have time to waste on you. Just tell me what you need."

It was true that Warren came to Zeph with a hidden agenda. A smile blossomed on Warren's face, like a sunflower under the sun. "Brother Zeph, you truly are a straightforward person. It's true that I'm here for a small matter. As we're quite close with each other, I don't feel comfortable going to others for this matter."

Polite words meant nothing to Zeph, but he said nothing. He only raised his eyebrows and looked at Warren as he waited for him to continue.

In fact, Warren did not know Zeph well and only knew that Zeph was not somebody who was easily fooled.

"Brother Zeph, I've been extremely unlucky recently. I've been bullied by a young man of unknown origin. That person is slightly stronger than me and actually took action against me at the perimeters of my house! You have to help me."

Zeph slightly narrowed his eyes after he heard this." Somebody bullied you? How strong is that person? You purposely came to me with hopes that I'll avenge you? Don't you have quite a large number of

friends and elders who like you? Wouldn't the issue b e resolved if you had asked the elder to send a powerful disciple? Is there a need for you to come to me?"

Warren's lips curved slightly into a smile and lamented about how smart Zeph was. He was able to guess what Warren wanted without Warren telling him anything

He took a deep breath and continued, "It's true that I want to regain my honor, but that would give others a chance to talk about us behind our backs. After all, we're disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. If many people knew what happened, wouldn't they say that we are taking advantage of others?"

Chapter 1931

"I intentionally came to you because I heard the young man say that he's here to join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's formal disciple assessment? Aren't you the one in charge of this? I made this trip with hopes that you wouldn't admit him after you see him!"

Zeph humphed softly and raised his eyebrows as he glanced at Warren. He knew that this young man had always been a naughty one, how could he come to Zeph with hopes that Zeph would help him out?

Zeph took a look at the nice things placed on the table. Although these were nice gifts, they were not enough to make him hinder the results of the assessment. "This is quite a difficult task. The disciple assessment is an important matter and I'm not the only deacon in charge of this matter. It isn't easy for me to do anything secretly as I might get into trouble if I'm not careful enough!"

A hint of anxiety immediately flashed past Warren's face after he heard this. However, he soon suppressed the emotion. "Brother Zeph, how can I not know who you are and what you are capable of? I wouldn't have come to you if you weren't capable of this! Since I'm here, it means that you are definitely capable of doing this. He's just a person without a clear identity, It's even possible that he's a spy sent over by the Muddled Origin Clan."

Zeph did not pay much attention to what Warren said. When Warren saw how Zeph persisted, he quickly took 500 lower-grade spirited crystals out from his storage ring and placed them on the table

tidily, “Brother Zeph, if you can help me get this matter done, these lower-grade spirited crystals shall be yours!”

The 500 pieces of lower-grade spirited crystals shone a light purple color and Zeph’s eyes shone an interesting color when he saw them. At this moment, a smile finally appeared on his face and he looked at Warren with some emotions on his face. Zeph originally planned to extort more from Warren. However, after he thought about it, Warren might turn to another Deacon if he kept refusing the request and he would be left with nothing. Hence, he stopped when he knew he was far ahead.

“I know that you are good at such things! Just hand this matter to me and I will definitely not allow that young man to pass the test!”

Warren was finally relieved when he heard what Zeph said. At this moment, Jack had already entered the Dual Sovereign City and had no idea of the obstructions Warren had set up for him.

However, Jack would not have cared much about such things even if he knew. He had been through so many obstacles and people going against him throughout the years that he had gotten used to such matters.

If he was strong enough, the tricks used by those monsters were nothing. When he arrived at the Zenith Sun City, Fabe had already changed all his premium-level spirited rocks into spirited crystals.

After all, the spirited crystal was the common currency in this world. However, the exchange rate was really high. He did obtain many spirited crystals after he exchanged all the premium-level spirited rocks he had. He only got his hands on around 1000 pieces of the spirited crystals!

They finally understood the meaning of bustling and overcrowding after they entered the Dual Sovereign City. The city was filled with all sorts of people due to the relaxed terms to enter the city.

However, they had just entered the main street when they were unable to continue walking forward as the entire place was congested! Nash did not stay in the Mustard Seed the entire time. His training had

reached a bottleneck and it seemed better to take a walk outside. Nash came out of the Mustard Seed after Jack entered the Dual Sovereign City.

He could not help but exclaim when he saw the streets were filled with people. “I’ve really gained some knowledge. The people here generally have such high power and most of them have already achieved the acquired level! If they were in the Cathysia, they would be at the ultimate god level.”

Chapter 1932

Nash turned around to look at Jack as he asked, “ Where are we going next? Are we heading straight for the Dual Sovereign Pavilion?”

Jack chuckled and shook his head. “We are new here and we will be a joke if we barge into the Dual Sovereign Pavilion when we know nothing. Although we heard the news about how the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is accepting new disciples, we have yet to find out when the admission is and what the conditions are.”

Nash thought about it and agreed. “Then shall we ask around about this?” To prevent unnecessary trouble, Nash returned to the Mustard Seed.

Jack had already made up his mind about where to g 0. It was quite difficult for them to ask any random person about matters in this world. To prevent unnecessary trouble, Jack found an average inn.

However, the inn’s server said that their inn was full when he entered the place. Jack was slightly speechless as several inns that he entered were full o fpeople.

He had never expected for the inns of the Dual Sovereign City to have such great business that every single one of them was full! This continued until Jack arrived at an extremely secluded road. The road was an extremely narrow alley and there were not many people when he was walking on the narrow alleyway.

Jack had been asking around when somebody pointed the direction of an inn to him. The inn was

definitely located in a remote area.

The inn's server saw Jack the moment he entered. H e looked down and did not look happy as he seemed extremely uninterested.

"Welcome. Are you here for a rest or to stay? We only have one guest room and if you plan to stay, the price is three lower-grade spirited crystals per day. W e don't do bargains or give discounts."

Three lower-grade spirited crystals for each day? The price caused Jack to be secretly flabbergasted. However, he did not hesitate for long. He had found this inn with an empty room with much difficulty. If he left because of the price, he had no idea if he would be able to find another inn any time soon.

Jack paid the lower-grade spirited crystals without much hesitation. He had no idea how long he would stay in the Dual Sovereign City hence he decided to pay for ten days. After he paid the spirited crystals, h e took another five out and placed them in front of the inn server.

The server immediately understood that this was Jack's reward to him. He finally looked up and spoke politely. From the looks of it, he planned to say something humorous to get into Jack's good books.

However, what Jack disliked the most was useless small talks. Hence, he went straight to the point. "I have a couple of questions that I would like to ask you."

The server immediately stood up straight and a formal fake smile appeared on his face. "Honorable guest, what do you want to know? I'm originally from the Dual Sovereign City and I know quite a lot of things that happen here. However, I might not know some of the unknown secrets if you want to ask me about them."

Jack continued speaking calmly, "It isn't some unknown secret. I only want to ask when will the Dual Sovereign Pavilion accept new disciples?"

The server immediately understood the reason Jack was here. In fact, he had lost track of the number of people who wanted to become a Dual Sovereign Pavilion disciple he served during this period of time.

“You’ve asked the correct person. Something huge happened in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion recently and they changed their rules of accepting disciples once every two years to once every three months. They’ve already carried out the first admission previously and the second admission is in ten days. You definitely have to grab this opportunity. However, I think that the competition is quite intense this time.”

Chapter 1933

Jack raised his eyebrows, indicating the server to continue speaking after he heard this. The server became a chatterbox and started to speak without stopping. “You must have visited many other inns before coming to ours. Recently, almost all of the inns are full because the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is recruiting disciples! Everybody heard that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is lacking in disciples so they are trying their best to join the admission test at the Dual Sovereign City! More than ten thousand people have come here recently!”

Jack finally understood why every inn was filled with people after what the server said. Turns out, it was not because the inns of the Dual Sovereign City were doing well, it was because the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was recruiting disciples and this attracted a large number of people to visit the city.

Since so many people wanted to become the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciple, the pavilion’s examination system had naturally become stricter.

Even though he heard from others that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had loosened the terms because they were in a hurry to get disciples. However, it would still not be easy.

The server continued speaking when Jack was deep I n his thoughts. “However, not many people can truly become the Dual Sovereign Pavilion disciples no matter how many of them come over. Although the Dual Sovereign Pavilion loosened the terms of recruitment, not just anyone can join the pavilion! You seem to be extremely strong, I’m sure you can become the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciple!”

The flattery in this last sentence was so obvious that Jack only smiled softly without saying anything. The server stopped fawning over him when he felt that his flattery was falling on deaf ears.

It was the admission test for chosen disciples ten days later and it was such a coincidence that he booked the room for ten days. However, he had no idea what the admission test was about and if he was able to pass the test with his current conditions.

Jack actually did not question his ability as he had received the great master's memories and trained in martial skills that was at least at the heaven level. However, absolute strength did not mean that Jack fulfilled the admission conditions of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

If there was an age restriction, Jack might not be able to join the pavilion. "I wonder what's the admission requirement of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion? Do you know this?"

The worker nodded heavily as he was extremely familiar with such things. A large number of people had come over to ask for such news during this period of time.

"In the past, the rules of admission were very strict. They did not want those in the acquired level and had to test if the new disciples had a firm belief in martial arts. However, the admission test only had one requirement right now and that is to make the obsidian light up three lights."

Jack subconsciously raised his eyebrows after he heard this. "Make the obsidian light up three lights? What is the obsidian?"

The server continued to speak, "To be honest, I have no idea what obsidian is but I understand its effect well. No matter what a person's fighting prowess is, the obsidian will light up several lights according to the power you used when you hit it. There are five lights on the obsidian and lighting up three lights will be a pass."

After the server explained things to Jack, he had successfully instigated Jack's curiosity. He really wanted to see what the obsidian was. However, Jack felt that something did not make sense after he thought

about it.

Hence, he brought up his suspicion. “It seems fair for them to hit the obsidian with absolute power so that the obsidian will light up the corresponding number of lights. However, this doesn’t seem to be the case if we think about it clearly. They do not care about one’s fighting prowess when they admit new disciples. Won’t those in the initial stage of the acquired level have the upper hand? Is it possible that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is really admitting people to serve as their cannon fodder?”

The server shook his head after he heard this. “No, m y honorable guest. Although the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is recruiting disciples because of the battle, they aren’t just looking to get cannon fodders.”

Chapter 1934

“That would be too overboard. The recruitment has its own conditions too and the new disciples fighting prowess can’t be higher than the initial stage of innate level as this is the best level to train a person. Once a person achieves the intermediate stage of innate level, the value of grooming somebody like that would be far lesser compared to those in the initial stage!”

Jack was stunned after he heard this. He understood that the higher a person’s fighting prowess was without the guidance of a teacher, the lower the value was when the pavilion groomed such a person.

Hence, usual pavilions would choose disciples that were still not so strong. However, what Jack did not understand was the big difference between the initial and intermediate stages of innate level. Based on what the server described, the difference was huge and Jack was unable to understand this.

It might be due to his shallow understanding of this world that he was unable to understand. However, Jack did not continue asking to prevent the server from being suspicious of him. After he received news about these things, Jack turned around and went up as he was not curious about the other matters.

He immediately entered the Mustard Seed once he returned to his room. At that moment, he had managed to form the first Soul Sword and he wanted t o form the second one within the next ten days.

Although he had no idea if he would succeed in doing so, he had to give it a try. The ten days passed by in a flash and Jack had been consistently training his soul with hopes that he would form another Soul Sword.

However, no matter how hard Jack tried, he was unable to form another Soul Sword for unknown reasons. Although he had the memories the great masters left him, he did not know why he was unable to form the second Soul Sword!

This made Jack question if he had made a mistake. H e started to look through the great master's memories and searched for the reason for his mistake.

However, after he spent time looking through the memories and combining them with his training process, he was still unable to find where things went wrong. As the final ten days have passed, Jack could only end his training in retreat helplessly.

Jack suffered a slight blow because of what happened. How could he not as his training was still filled with challenges and he was unable to identify his mistake even though he owned the memories.

After he left the inn, Jack went toward the area where the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's admission test was being carried out following the guidance of the server. The admission test was being carried out at the back door of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Even though this was only the back door of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, it was a six feet high door with marvelous decorations. The door was filled with the engravings of many runes and these runes gathered t o form a magic circle.

With Jack's current fighting prowess, he was unable to identify the function of this magic circle. When he arrived at the place, Jack discovered that at least 2000 people were standing in front of the door.

A large number of people were flabbergasted and just like what the server said, many people were attracted to join the admission test as the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had loosened the terms of the test.

Jack walked over and chose a corner as he stood there in silence while waiting for the test to begin. H e was quiet the entire time but the noises of discussion could be heard as if somebody stabbed a hornet's nest.

Standing not far away from Jack, a man who looked younger than Jack said, "My second uncle told me that he's giving me 200 pieces of lower-grade spirited crystals as long as I pass the exam so that I can buy anything I want!"

Another guy standing beside him chuckled and said with a hint of disdain in his tonation, "Can you stop being so naïve? Did you see the large number of people standing here? Do you think that you can pass the test when so many people are fighting for the position with you?"

The young man was unconvinced after he heard this and said stubbornly, "I'm sure you know the rules of the test too. It doesn't matter how many people there are. I'm sure I can become an informal disciple as long as I'm able to make the obsidian light up three lights!"

The guy rolled his eyes at the young man. "Do you think that it's easy to make the obsidian light up three lights? Why don't you consider what sort of a place the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is?! This is a famous third-grade pavilion! How can the disciples recruited by the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, which is one of the top pavilions among the third-grade pavilions, be simpletons?"

The young man seemed to be angered by what this guy said. "So what if it's a third-grade pavilion? Isn't the current situation, a special one? Even a third -grade pavilion had to loosen their terms as the battle with the Muddled Origin Clan is on the verge o f happening!"

Chapter 1935

That guy shook his head in disagreement. "You are too young. Why don't you think it through carefully? Do you know the concept of third-grade pavilions? I n the West Cercie State that we live in, there are only a handful of third-grade pavilions in such a big piece of land! Do you know how many people there are in the West Cercie State? The amount of people has to b e in trillions! How many people among these trillions of people can join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion?"

The young man turned his head away and refused to listen to that person's explanation. "I don't care about all of this. I'm sure that I will definitely get into the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and I might even become an informal disciple of the pavilion. Although I'm only in the final stage of the acquired level, I'm still young. Given some time, I'm sure that I will improve greatly!"

That person instantly rolled his eyes when he heard what the young man said. He looked like he did not want to continue the debate with this young man so h e turned his head to look in the other direction.

Jack stood beside them in silence. He gained some new insights about the Dual Sovereign Pavilion after listening to the conversation between those two.

The entire West Cercie State only had a total of five third-grade pavilions. Although he had no idea how big the West Cercie State was, it seemed to be bigger than he imagined from the conversation between those two.

It seemed like he had to read through all the common knowledge of this world after he joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion or he would seem ignorant.

At this moment, a wave of noise could be heard coming from far away and it seemed to be the arrival of some important people. Jack originally thought that the recruiting team was here. However, when he looked toward the center of the chaos, he realized that it was two rich young masters clad in expensive clothing instead.

The two of them were quite good-looking. Those surrounding them looked at these two people with fear and envy in their eyes. Jack knew that these two definitely had an important identity but he had no idea who they were since he was new to this world.

Just when Jack was puzzled by what was happening, the young man's voice rang out. "Isn't that Morton Ford? He's really here! We are really unlucky to be joining the assessment with him."

The person beside him sighed helplessly. “What was meant to happen will definitely happen. Didn’t you say that previously? The number of people has no effect on the assessment.”

The young man acted very arrogantly previously but since the appearance of this man called Morton Ford, he wilted like a grasshopper by the end of autumn. “I feel nothing if everybody is at the same level. Morton is obviously so much stronger compared to us and I feel like the mud under his feet when we compare ourselves to him.”

Jack grew increasingly curious toward Morton after h e heard how these two people described Morton. It seemed like Morton had the absolute strength to be crowned the winner of the crowd, causing everybody else to lose their will to compete.

The sounds of people discussing what happened grew louder after Morton’s arrival. Many people lamented while even more of them were envious of them. However, what these people did was unable to affect Morton.

“Look at who it is following behind Morton! Isn’t that Gerald Thorton? Who would have expected the two of them to come over together? Are they planning to have a competition in front of the obsidian and see which one of them shall get the reward?”

“We seemed to be blessed with a lively scene this time. Morton is the extremely talented genius of the Ford family while Gerald is also quite a strong martial artist. The two of them once ended in a tie when they got into a fight during a tea party! A person in the final stage of the acquired level was capable of fighting one who was in the initial stage of the innate level. The two of them have entered the initial stage of the innate level at the same time. I wonder what level of combat power they have achieved right now!”

Chapter 1936

What was a tea party? It was another term Jack had never heard before. However, from its literal meaning, it seemed to be a martial art exchange gathering

It turns out that these two people had demonstrated extraordinary talents during the tea party causing

those present to learn their names and admire them from the bottom of their hearts.

Those two stood out among the crowd like cranes standing among a herd of chickens. The people surrounding them proactively made room for these people but those two seemed to dislike them.

Especially Morton as he kept glancing at Gerald from the corners of his eyes. Gerald seemed to be more muscular compared to Morton and the protruding muscles on his arms seemed to be extremely powerful. Hence Morton had always thought of Gerald as an all brawn and no brain person.

The discussion around them started to enter their ears. Gerald did not care about what these people said yet Morton was filled with contempt as he felt that he was much more talented and stronger than Gerald.

They achieved a tie in their previous fight as he was much younger than Gerald. If the two of them were o f the same age, Gerald would definitely not be his opponent in the fight.

Morton grew increasingly furious when he heard that the people surrounding them mentioned that they were at the same level and it was difficult to make out who was stronger. He humphed coldly and spoke loudly, “Nobody can snatch the sengen pill from me! The qualification to get a private accommodation shall also be my 50 contribution points and it shall be mine too!”

Gerald humphed coldly after he heard this. He turned around and looked at Morton as if he was looking at a dummy. “Hey, Morton, aren’t you afraid that your tongue would suffer a stroke? Do you really think that those things will be yours after you say so?! Do you think that you are more talented than I am? Let me tell you something. I will definitely be number one in this assessment! I will be the only one who can successfully make the obsidian light up five lights!”

Both of them were quite confident about their abilities. They refused to admit defeat to the other in terms of their expression or the way they spoke. The fight between these two caused the surrounding atmosphere to grow increasingly lively.

It was a fight between two masters. Although they were unable to involve themselves in the fight, they were still happy to watch the story unfold on the sidelines!

The young man standing in front of Jack could not help but start to speak in a sourish manner when he heard the conversation between those two. “Things are looking terrific for those who are strong. The two of them are actually competing for first place! They even want to make the obsidian light up five lights! However, what our ancestors said was right as everybody should not speak as if things are absolute!”

The jealousy behind his words was so obvious that the person standing beside him could not help but smile coldly. He stared at this young man in disdain. “Why can’t they speak in such a manner? They have the power to say so and you should stop speaking in jealousy!”

The young man slightly humphed and looked like he still wanted to say something. However, he seemed t o realize the jealousy in his words and nothing he said meant anything. After all, they were capable people and he could only speak in a sourish manner even though he was unconvinced.

If he continued speaking, he would only capture the despising looks from the others and nothing else. However, he still felt sad when he thought about those rewards.

“That is the sengen pill! It’s a premium fifth-grade pill and consuming one could raise a person’s fighting prowess apart from washing away the acquired foul air. This can be sold in the market for 2000 lower-grade spirited crystals! Unfortunately, I’m not capable enough and I can only look on as such a precious item lands in somebody else’s hands!”

Jack had been standing at one side in silence. His interest was immediately piqued when he heard that the reward was a fifth-grade pill, the sengen pill. It seemed as if getting the first place not only resulted I n receiving the glory of being admired by others, they could also obtain some actual benefits.

At this moment, Jack did not want to continue his silent streak. He walked forward and asked the young man politely, “Nice to meet you brother. I would like to ask if the sengen pill you mentioned just now is a price for the person who obtained the first place? On top of that, I heard Morton mention that apart from the sengen pill, they can also get private accommodation?”

Chapter 1937

That person looked at Jack in surprise after hearing his question. He measured Jack up and down before answering with a rude tone, “You don’t know this? You don’t even know the reward when you want to b e a Dual Sovereign Pavilion disciple. You are really free from desire!”

There was an obvious ironic hint in this sentence and Jack chose to ignore him. Then he started explaining things to Jack. “The person will not be rewarded with the sengen pill even though they obtained first place in the assessment. That is a premium firstgrade spirited pill that everybody wants! It’s almost impossible to buy the pill with 2000 lower-grade spirited crystals. There were only two rewards for the person who finishes first, 50 contribution points and individual accommodation.”

“Even though this is the famous Dual Sovereign Pavilion in the West Cercei State, there aren’t enough accommodations as there are too many disciples. Those who are new to the pavilion can only stay in the same room with several others. However, you are allowed to choose an individual room if you manage to get first place. Living alone can resolve lots of problems. It’s even difficult to obtain the sengen pill as you have to make the obsidian light up five lights.”

Jack memorized everything the person explained as these were attractive things to Jack. The sengen pill was a fifth-grade pill and was worth more than 2000 lower-grade spirited crystals.

This meant that Jack was unable to buy one of such pills even if he sold everything he had. He was sure that the sengen pill would bring him great benefits after he consumed it. The pill might even help him form the second Soul Sword successfully.

The individual room was also extremely important for Jack as he had many secrets and did not like to be disturbed when he was training. He was unwilling to waste time on unnecessary entanglements with other people. Jack was willing to stay in a room of his own even if the room was an incredibly small one.

As he was thinking, he raised his head and took a deep look at the closed doors. It looked like he had to give everything he had this time. He just did not know what his final results would be like!

As time slowly passed by, the number of people gathered at the assessment area gradually increased and there were already around 3000 of them. Even though the place was a big piece of land, it seemed congested as there were many people gathered in that area. However, Jack did not pay much attention to such things and continued to wait in a corner, silently.

After some time, the eighth feet tall back door opened from the inside following a creaking sound.

The noisy crowd slowly quiets down following the creaking of the door. Jack stood on his toes as he looked in that direction. Three people could be seen standing behind the huge door.

The person standing in front had a head full of white hair although his facial complexion looked young. He had a kind expression on his face. He seemed to be a person of high position and might be an elder.

The other two standing behind him were two middleaged men with stern expressions on their faces. They looked at those participating in the assessment with a sharp look in their eyes. Zeph, whom Warren begged him for help, was one of these two middleaged men.

The other deacon standing together with Zeph was Ambrose Adams. Although both of them were deacons, they did not have a good relationship. They wanted to seize each other's shortcomings to relieve the other party from their respective positions.

The person standing in front of them was an elder but he was an informal elder with a slightly lower position. However, it did not matter how low his position was among the elders as those who were capable of becoming an elder were not weaklings.

Elder Lee glanced at those who were about to attend the assessment with a gentle gaze in his eyes as he secretly nodded. "They seem to be quite capable."

Chapter 1938

Zeph and Ambrose both knew that was as high of a compliment as they would get. This spurred them to take their organizer's duties seriously. It was not the first time Zeph was put in charge of announcing the

rules and keeping everything under control. This time around, however, he had the help of Ambrose.

Zeph requested someone to bring over a chair for Elder Lee. The group stood in a line in the middle of the door and started to list the rules to the crowd below. The rules were exactly the same as before that Jack White heard from the others.

Zeph took his time reading out the rules and although the people already knew the rules by heart, they did not show signs of impatience at his agonizingly slow speed. After all, the man before them was the manager of Dual Sovereign Pavilion. H e could easily take them out with a single punch. Even the cocky Morton and Gerald listened quietly which pleased Zeph very much.

After he finished reading out the rules, he paused before continuing in a louder voice, “I’m aware that all of you know the rules by heart but what I’m saying next is a new rule passed down from the Clan association so listen closely. Normally, the first place winner will receive rewards, but the Clan association had decided to reward the second to tenth place winners as well. But of course, the rewards will differ vastly from the first place winner. The second to tenth place winners will each get ten contribution points.”

The crowd looked at one another. They wanted to discuss the new development but were afraid it would be deemed inappropriate by the elders and organizers. Although the rewards were vastly different from what a first place winner would get, they understood in their heart that it was better than getting nothing at all.

“We will be recording your test result to calculate your ranking and your accommodation will be based on your ranking,” continued Zeph.

“Our accommodation will be based on our ranking? Does that mean those at the top of the ranking will get better accommodation?”

“I wonder what ranking I’ll get. Oh well, I’ll just do what I can and hope for the best.”

The crowd found a problem through their discussion and someone piped up, “Excuse me, Sir, what happens if two people managed to light up the obsidian’s three lights at the same time?”

The question got to the crux of the matter. Someone would always need to be last when it came to rankings. So who would get the short end of the stick if the three lights of the obsidians were lit up at the same time by two people?

Zeph squinted his eyes at the person who asked the question. He was a bit peeved at him but as an organizer, he must give a thorough explanation. He increased his voice, “Do you think we haven’t thought of that? We are well prepared for something like that to happen. The obsidian’s lights will only stay lit for ten seconds. So that’ll be the deciding factor for the result.”

Chapter 1939

“For example, the stronger of the two might be able t o light up the third light for six seconds while the weaker of the two can only do it for four seconds. Do you all understand now?” The crowd grasped the simple explanation at once-the obsidian has the ability to measure energy! After knowing of its ability, Jack White became more curious about the obsidian. He wondered how it was created for it to have the ability to accurately measure energy to such a degree.

Zeph did not immediately announce the start of the test but purposely gave the participants some time t o discuss amongst themselves. All the crowd’s attention was focused on the two strongest men amongst them.

Naturally, Morton chose this very moment to stroke his ego. He glanced sideways at Gerald and said in a haughty voice, “Seems like they specially created this standard so the crowd can find out exactly how much stronger I am compared to you.”

Gerald gave out a loud snort, having a view that Morton was nothing but a clown. He did not even turn to look at Morton when he said, “Do you know how many times you’ve praised yourself since coming here? Who the heck does that? Why don’t you prove how strong you really are with your actions instead of your words?

Morton's face turned purple with rage. He was grinding his teeth as if he wanted to chomp down on Gerald's flesh. "All I'm saying is, I'm much stronger than you. Don't even for a second believe you're my equal after our previous battle ended in a draw. You'll never surpass me in this lifetime and will forever be underneath me!"

Morton hated when somebody compares his power with Gerald's, saying they were of equal ability. Words could not describe how much he despise that feeling. From beginning to end, he felt that he was a lot stronger than Gerald and that the fight between them came to a draw because Gerald had the advantage of being younger.

Gerald rolled his eyes at Morton. "As I've said, prove I t with your actions and stop with your womanly nagging."

The crowd tried to stifle their laughter when they heard this. Due to Morton's status, they dared not laugh loudly but the sound of snickering could be heard coming from the people there. This caused the veins on Morton's forehead to burst. The fan that he was holding as a sign of his refinement started to suffer under his tightening grip.

"Just you wait. I'll not let this matter slide easily. Don't forget the second place winner will only get ten contribution points while I still have the sengen pill and other tricks up my sleeves. Once I take the sengen pill, my power will increase tremendously and you will never be able to beat me then!" said Morton.

Gerald rolled his eyes once again. "You make it sound as if you'll definitely get first place while I second. Well, don't you forget that the first place belongs to me! Besides, you might not even get the second place if a dark horse appears."

The two men stared daggers at each other and wished they could start a battle there and then. However, they clearly knew none of them would be the first to deal out the first strike but it did not stop them from peppering each other with derisive insults.

Chapter 1940

Finally, Zeph announced the start of the test, “We will begin the test now. Please line up. Everyone will have their turns. You will be disqualified if you jump the queue!”

Their discussion died down. Jack could not help but wonder why Zeph purposely gave them time to talk amongst themselves. What benefits could the Clan association possibly reap from this? Just as he was mulling over this, a young man wearing a green shirt started to walk toward the obsidian. It was only natural for him to take the first spot as he arrived the earliest amongst them.

The others were cowed by him and hesitated to be the first for they knew they could not compete against him. After all, the young man was already in the initial state of innate level. Before the young man found his place in front of the obsidian, Ambrose said to him, “You pass the test when the three lights are all lit up. Please stand behind me when you’ve passed the test.”

The young man nodded and took a deep breath to stabilize his emotions. Then, he put his hands together-palm to palm-and a green light started t o swirl around his hand as a vine with a neon green glow appeared from his hand.

The vine looked surreal and was imbued with a mysterious energy. The young man shot out his right hand with a cry and the vine rushed toward the obsidian like a poisonous snake. The green vine struck the obsidian violently with an extraordinary force and yet the obsidian did not move an inch. The young man had used all his energy for the attack causing his body to destabilize as droplets of hot sweat trickled down from his forehead. He was gasping for breath and looked exhausted.

The crowd heard some sort of crackling sound as the obsidian started to light up which made the crowd’s eyes widen in awe. “One light! Two lights!” The lights paused for nine seconds before turning off. The first light dimmed one second before the third light would light up meaning that the young man’s result was two lights at nine seconds. One second more and he would have qualified for the test,

The young man went into a state of shock at the result. His face became as green as the shirt he was wearing. “Impossible! How could I not pass? I should have at least been placed in the first few rankings!” N o wonder he volunteered to be the first go. He was supremely confident he would have gotten into the top ten ranking out of the three thousand fighters.

Ambrose ignored the young man's outburst and said, "Two lights at nine seconds. You've failed the test and can leave now." Some of the people pitied the young man. One second more and he would have passed. However, most of the people were rubbing their hands with glee at the young man's result, for they were peeved by his display of cockiness at the start of the test. "Serves you right for being so cocky! You must be delusional to think you can easily pass the Clan association's test!" heckled someone.

Chapter 1941

"He must have come from a backwater town. He wouldn't have been so confident if he was from the city. How ignorant can one be?"

The young man's expression became more twisted after continuous insults floated into his ear. His body began to shake with rage and both of his eyes turned red as he stared daggers at the crowd. However, his effort was futile because no one paid any mind to his anger. He then took a deep breath and felt as if he had been slapped hard by everyone there. The worst thing was he could do nothing about it.

Jack sighed gently at everyone's realistic mentality. Those who are strong will forever be exalted while the weak can do nothing but lick the strong's boots. Then again, the crowd might be right as the young man obviously had not gone through any hardships before so how could he not be ashamed at his outbursts?

After that, everyone did not want to go second. Although everyone laughed at the young man's result, they were also chastened by it, after all, the young man's cultivation level was at the initial stage of innate level. Many fighters were at the final stage o f the acquired level wanting to try their luck.

Ambrose scanned the crowd with a frown on his face. "No one wants to go second? No one at all? I'll treat I tas voluntary giving up if no one comes up. I don't even know what you all are waiting for. Will waiting give you a better result? Will waiting help you pass the test?"

Although what he said was a tad mean but it had its intended effect. The crowd realized what he said was right-waiting would not help them pass the test. A few seconds later, Beardie walked up to the obsidian a s the crowd followed him with their eyes.

Although he was sporting his beard, they could tell that he was not that old. “Since you young ones would not come up, I have no choice but to go second. I don’t even know what you all are scared o f,” he said once he was standing in front of the obsidian

The crowd started to jeer at him. “You big mustached hooligan! What are you talking about! You’re the scaredy-cat here.”

Beardie did not even look back at the crowd when he said, “Who are you calling a scaredy-cat? Why don’t you come up here now? You cowardly mouse! Do you think you can get a good result with such weak determination?”

The crowd was silenced by his retort. Beardie ignored them and focused his gaze on the obsidian as if it was a gift from the gods. His eyes were bright and shiny when he said, “Behold and witness my strength for I will definitely pass the test!”

He was yet another fighter who was confident of his own strength. Only time would tell whether he had the right to be this confident. He gave out a loud shot and clenched his fists. A golden light started to flow above them. There were two big golden snakes faintly rotating above them, enveloping the Beardie’s fists with thick energy.

Beardie squinted his eyes, gritted his teeth, and roared. Under the gaze of everyone’s attention, he punched the obsidian in front of him. The obsidian made the pinging sound again as the lamp above the obsidian lit up.

Chapter 1942

The third light lit up for a second but no matter what that was enough for him to pass the test. Ambrose’s voice rang across the crowd once more, “Third light one second. Please stand behind me so I can put down your registration later.”

“Thank you organizer!” said Beardie, grinning from ear to ear as he went to stand behind Ambrose. The crowd was looking at him with envy and all the doubts they had about him disappeared completely. However, the cocky expression on the big man’s face made them wish they could slap the smirk out of

his face with their own hands.

Power was everything in this world and the big man had used his strength to prove that he could pass the test. That alone made him stronger than most of the people present. However, a young man who was standing in front of Jack was still unconvinced of the big man's power. "Why are you acting so proud? The third light lit up for only one second. You've barely passed the test! You're acting as if you lit up the fourth light!"

Beardie turned his gaze toward the young man. The young man did not bother to hide his cultivation and Beardie could easily sense that he was at the final stage of the acquired level. He stroked his beard and laughed. "And here I thought it was some strong man making a fuss down there. But it was merely a fighter of the final stage of the acquired level. What rights do you have to doubt me, a fighter at the initial stage of innate level and the person who had passed the test."

"I'm at this level because I'm still young. I'm sure by the time I'm at your level, I'll definitely be stronger than you," said the young man roughly.

Beardie laughed again and his eyes filled with derision. "You can say whatever you want, but then again, I can also say I'll become invincible once I progress to another level!"

The young man turned purple with rage and green veins were popping out from his forehead. He gritted his teeth and started to walk toward Beardie but was stopped by those around him. The organizers turned a blind eye to all that was happening before them. They chalked it down to the young man's immaturity.

The organizers' behavior was different from what Jack expected. He had always thought the organizers would not allow anyone to cause trouble during the test. It was already weird enough the three organizers did not stop the fight but it seemed as if they were wishing for this kind of incident to happen. Jack started to wonder if they were harboring any ulterior motives.

The fight only started to die down when the third person took the stage. The test went smoothly from there on and nothing of interest happened. Out of five hundred participants, only one managed to light up the fourth light. Jack was not in a rush to take the test and he had been patiently doing maths in his

head.

Out of five hundred participants, about forty to fifty people passed the test meaning to say out of the total three thousand participants, there would only b e around three hundred of them left in the end. Although the percentage of ten percent seemed low, I n the end, there really were only three hundred of them who would be recruited into the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Chapter 1943

It was no wonder the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was facing a shortage of rooms. This test would bring in three hundred or more new disciples and coupled that with the existing disciples, there would be a total of a thousand disciples.

However, Jack knew that these three hundred new disciples might be sent to battle and who knew by then how many of them would come back alive. The higher-ups in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion were not stupid. They of course had their own plans.

Initially, Morton planned to be the second to last assessee but he could not wait anymore as time ticked by. Many of the people present were overly ambitious and thought they would be able to perform well in the test and forever have their heroic act imprinted in others' minds. However, the truth could not be further than that.

Even those that managed to pass the test never lit up beyond the three lights. Those who managed to light up the fourth light were in the minority. Even so, the latter group was regarded as a genius amongst all geniuses, and the crowd could not help but sigh with admiration.

"I thought I would pass the test for sure but I've only managed to light up two lights with the second one being lit up for only five seconds. I'm even worse than the first young man. I've highly underestimated the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's test"

The man standing next to him was shaking his head because he did not pass the test as well. "I wonder if there's anyone amongst us who could light up the fifth light. It must be very difficult to do that. If not they would not have given out the sengen pill as a reward for doing that. I fear amongst the three

thousand people present here, no one would be able t o do it."

"No one? Are you sure? What about Morton and Gerald?"

The discussion became even more lively as everyone started to guess whether Morton or Gerald could light up five lights. At the beginning of the test when they still had no idea how the obsidian worked, they were confident both Morton and Gerald could easily light up five lights and be rewarded a sengen pill each, but now they were not so sure.

After all, they had first-hand experience of the test." The two of them must be under a lot of pressure. Out of three thousand of us, only four or five managed to light up the fourth light for two seconds. That's still a long way from lighting up five lights," said someone in a low voice.

The crowd immediately nodded in agreement. "It's not that I don't think they're strong. It's just that the obsidian requires so much power! I still think they will get a better result than all of us here but it's impossible for them to light up five lights."

"I think so too! It's too difficult. I bet they never plan to give out the sengen pill and only want to whet our appetite with it."

Although the discussion was conducted in nearly a whisper, Morton and Gerald could still hear what they were saying with their extremely good hearing. Morton had always hated it when other people doubted him. He had set the goal of lighting up five lights. Even after all this while, he still believed he could do it.

Chapter 1944

Morton's clan was naturally inferior in comparisont o the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Nonetheless, his clan was one of the few great clans in his city and he had been brought up with the belief that he was chosen one, carrying the burden of making his clan proud.

Then there was the fact that he had never faced failure before so it was no wonder he was extremely

confident in himself. He felt he was unique and was not nurtured by the Dual Sovereign Pavilion only because of his age. However, he believed that once there, he would surely advance quickly in a short time. He would climb the metaphorical ladder and use the position of the internal disciple as a stepping stone. In good time, he would be promoted to an elder disciple, and then there's no stopping him to become a chosen disciple.

He might even hold important positions within the pavilion. His clan would surely be proud of him then. That was why he was unwilling to be deemed equal t o Gerald-partly because of his confidence and partly because of his inferiority complex.

This little test was akin to an entrance exam so how dared they think he would not be able to light up the five lights. He had never been so humiliated before. Morton gave out a loud snort and turned his gaze to scan the crowd. "You all listen closely now. Don't you dare use your level to judge me! I've already said that the sengen pill was specially prepared for me so don't blame me for hurting you if you all continue to talk like that."

Immediately, the crowd went dead silent. However, h e could not stop them from what they were thinking. There was no denying Morton was very powerful and most of the people present there would not be able t o win in a fight against him but this did not mean that he would be able to light up five lights.

Everyone had seen for themselves just how difficult I t was to light up five lights. It was truly beyond anyone's level. Initially, Gerald did not want to bother Morton with his illusory grandeur and annoying talk. Gerald was the complete opposite of him, he liked to get straight to the point so there was no fun in talking to Morton.

However, Morton had gone overboard this time to the extent that even Gerald could not keep his mouth shut. He turned to face Morton and said with a mocking smile, "Why don't you give it a rest? You're making it sound as if the sengen pill is already in your possession. Am I invisible to you?"

Morton laughed coldly and raised an eyebrow as he looked at Gerald. "Of course not but I would say you're close. In my eyes, you're only a tad bigger than a grasshopper."

Gerald was itching to give Morton an *ss-whooping. “I would have whooped your *ss if it wasn’t for the rules imposed on us. Don’t you feel any shame at all? Why don’t you show us what you’re really made of? Who knows you might be able to change my mind,” said he in a louder voice.

Their bickering had turned white-hot and they might even really end up in a fight if the situation continued on the way it was. Ambrose had no choice but to step in though he must admit he was enjoying the show. “No fighting during the test. If the two of you want to give it a go, you should go to the pavilion’s battle arena after passing the test.”

It was only natural they would listen to Ambrose as the consequences of not doing so were not something they could afford. Both of them gave out a scoff at the same time and turned to look away.

It seemed like Morton had really gotten under Gerald’s skin and the latter thought he should get this over with. “Who’s next? I’ll go if no one wants t o go next!”

It was better to prove to Morton that he was indeed much stronger than him than to stand there and listen to him yap away. He planned to shut Morton up for good-that good for nothing brat.

Chapter 1945

He strode forward in big steps and his sturdy appearance made him seem full of energy as if a single punch from him would be enough to kill two fighters at the final stage of the acquired level. The crowd parted to make way for him and watched him take the stage.

Once there, Gerald took him time to size up the obsidian, as if he wanted to burn the image in his memory. He touched the obsidian lightly and said casually, “I’ll show you all the real meaning of genius and power.” The previously silent crowd roared at this. Even Jack found the corners of his lips started to creep up into a smirk.

At first, Jack felt that Gerald was much better than Morton. At least Gerald did not boast about himself. Unlike Morton who always talked about how strong he was, making him seem frivolous. Even if Morton

was actually that powerful, it was still a disdainful thing to do. Now, what Gerald did was like the pot calling the kettle black.

The fact that Gerald did not boast about himself did not mean he was not confident about himself. He was also boastful, even more, boastful than Morton. He wanted to show what a true genius was- nothing could be more boastful than that.

However, no one present refuted him. After all, Gerald's strength was indeed extraordinary. Jack raised an eyebrow and stared at Gerald with wide open eyes as he took a deep breath and made a seal with his hands. Everyone heard a low hum as if a beast was inhabiting Gerald's body, and a mustard yellow rune started circling between his fingers as a layer of apparition appeared behind him.

This layer of apparition did not look solid at all and judging from its shape, it seemed to be a big tortoise. However, it was no ordinary tortoise, for it was looking at everyone as if they were beneath him. Not to mention there were scales and dragon horns on his head.

Jack stared at the apparition curiously and tried to guess what exactly it was. Before he could make heads out of tails, someone beside him said, "This must be the Thorton family's elementary red level martial art technique, the Dragon Tortoise Fist that was passed down from their ancestors."

"Yes, that must be it. The Thorton family is famous for their elementary red level martial art technique. Even the Dual Sovereign Pavilion finds this Dragon Tortoise fist valuable. I wonder how Thorton's ancestors managed to get their hands on it. The fact that he could summon the apparition alone is enough to qualify him to join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion."

'So that is an apparition of a Dragon Tortoise,' thought Jack. The only thing he knew about Dragon Tortoise was that it came from one of the dragon's bloodlines though its pureness was debatable. Nonetheless, it possessed huge power and was a guardian of the earth element's fighters.

Other than that, Jack knew nothing else about it. Anyone with a bit of status here came from well known families though compared to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, there was still a big difference Naturally, having an elementary red level martial art technique put Gerald far ahead of anyone else.

Most of the people there only possessed elementary yellow level martial art technique which was another world away from Gerald's elementary red level martial art technique. The crowd's discussion was cut short by Gerald's roar as he slammed down his fist on the obsidian.

The punch carried mind-numbing power and even caused a windstorm. It did not take much to know that ninety percent of the people there would die from that single punch.

Chapter 1946

Four lights immediately lit up which caused the crowd to gasp. However, it was impossible for Gerald to be satisfied with only four lights. His eye nearly popped out from their sockets as he willed the fifth light to light up. However, he was destined to be disappointed as eight seconds passed and the fourth light turned off.

His result was the best so far. Anyone would be happy to get this kind of result but Gerald found himself unable to smile at all. His face looked as if someone had smeared ash all over it.

"Fourth light eight seconds. Please come and stand behind me," said Ambrose. There was a hint of pity I n his voice. Although Gerald's result was really impressive, it was obvious it was not up to his expectations.

"Four lights only? I'm a disappointment," said Gerald angrily. His entire face had become red and both of his hands were shaking. "This is impossible! There's no way my power is only this much." He was preparing to have another turn when Ambrose stopped him. "Everyone only gets one turn. You're n o exception. Your result is already quite exceptional and the second time won't be any different. Come and stand behind me now!!

Gerald felt as if he had eaten something disagreeable. A burst of mocking laughter escaped from Morton's mouth and after that, he could not stand straight from all the laughing he was doing. It was obvious to the crowd Morton was enjoying Gerald's humiliation.

“Oh wow, I can’t believe you would be so shameless enough to boast about yourself with this kind of result. You can say bye-bye to the sengen pill now. You can’t even light up the fifth light. If I were you now, I would find some hole to hide myself in,” said Morton with his face red from laughing.

Gerald turned back his head quickly and stared at Morton with gritted teeth as if he was a bloodthirsty beast. He would have shredded Morton to pieces if it was not for the rules. Morton was not afraid of him at all as he nonchalantly fanned himself. Everyone there possessed the ability to control their body temperature so there was no need for a fan at all. However, that was the kind of image Morton liked to project to the world-an image of the son of a wealthy family.

Morton laughed even more as he looked Gerald up and down. “What? Am I wrong? Are you still going to boast about how strong you are? For a moment there, I really thought you were as powerful as you said from the way you were boasting about yourself. It’s laughable you’ve only managed up to the fourth light. I really wonder where you get your confidence from.”

Gerald, of course, would not take this lying down. He felt as if he was being stomped on by Morton. He tried to calm himself down. “Yes, you’re right in the sense that my result is not up to my expectations. However, there’s no denying two seconds more and the fifth light would have lit up. Didn’t you say just now you’ll definitely get the sengen pill and take the first place? You haven’t even done your test yet so what gives you the right to laugh at me?”

Chapter 1947

Morton’s fan snapped to a close. “What gives me the right to laugh at you? It’s because I’m stronger than you, of course. That gives me the right to laugh at you!”

Gerald laughed coldly. “As if. Why don’t you go next? That’ll settle this once and for all.”

Morton scoffed and strode steadily toward the obsidian as if victory was already in his hands. When one looked at him, it brought to mind a peacock strutting around looking for a mate.

The crowd watched them bicker quietly. “I wonder if Morton can really light up five lights,” whispered someone.

“I think so. He’s not a fool. He won’t say all that if he wasn’t confident about himself. His ego is the most important for him.”

Many people nodded in agreement with the second speaker’s analysis. Yes, Morton might be boastful but he would not do anything that would hurt his own reputation. If he said he could do it, then he could do it.

By then, Morton was already standing in front of the obsidian at the exact same place as Gerald previously did. He gave the obsidian a good look before depositing his fan in the storage ring. There was a rule saying no weapons were allowed—the assessees could only attack the obsidian with their energy. Although it might not look like it, Morton’s jade folding fan was actually a weapon belonging to the hidden weapon first class category.

Morton gently exhaled and slowly closed his eyes to stabilize his emotions. Although he was acting all crazy and boastful below the stage, he turned strangely calm when faced with the obsidian. This changed the crowd’s perspective of him- they did not think he was a senseless second-rater anymore.

With a flick of his wrists, a blinding gold light appeared above his right hand. The golden light radiated purely but there was no energy fluctuation t o it. Jack stared at the light unblinkingly and wondered what Morton would do next.

The golden light became more and more dazzling. Suddenly, with a cracking sound, it began to dim.

“Look at his hand!” cried someone.

Morton’s hand was completely covered in a layer of golden armor with a flashing rune on it. It halflooked like a weapon.

“What is that? How did he do it? The golden scales o n his hand look like some beast’s claw,” said someone.

“Oh, don’t you know? They’re real scales of some beast but I’m not sure which one. Haven’t you heard of the Ford family’s most powerful skill that is passed down through generations from one ancestor to another? Both the Ford family and Thorton family came from a long line of ancient ancestors with deep backgrounds. Morton’s skill is definitely the famous Golden Armor Hand.” Another elementary red level martial art technique.

Chapter 1948

Jack quietly listened to the crowd’s discussion.

At that moment, Morton was ready to give out the punch but then he went and did something stupid. H e turned around and looked at Gerald with eyes full o f provocation which caused Gerald to roll his eyes at him. Then, in a cold tone, he said, “Feast your eyes o n my supreme power!”

Upon saying that, he then slammed his fist covered I n golden scales violently against the obsidian. The force was so strong that everyone could hear the rattling sounds coming from his bones. The obsidian pinged and the light immediately lit up. The strength of Morton’s attack was similar to Gerald with his being more fanciful.

Everyone was staring at the lights with eyes wide open. They had been witness to their constant bickering and could not wait to see Morton’s result. I f Morton was really more powerful than Gerald, then Gerald might have to eat his own words.

Morton was in no rush to see his result. However, the crowd could clearly see only four lights were lit up. H e had used all the energy in his body and though the fifth light showed signs of lightning up, in the end, it remained dimmed.

Jack counted the seconds. The fourth light stayed lit for nine seconds-one second more and the fifth light would have lit up. What a pity. The sound of the crowd talking floated into his ear and he quickly raised his head to look at his result.

His eyes were full of disbelief. Never in his life would he expect that the fifth light would stay unlit. The shock became unbearable to him and he was trembling all over. “Impossible! Impossible, I say! There must be something wrong with this obsidian.” He refused to believe it but there was no changing the fact.

Ambrose’s expression changed when he heard Morton’s accusation. He raised his eyebrow and said coldly, “There is nothing wrong with the obsidian. The fact that the fifth light didn’t light up just means you don’t possess enough power to do so. It’s illogical to simply blame the obsidian for your limited power.”

Morton’s face flashed green and purple. All the words he said before surged back in his mind and reality slapped him in the face. He had bested Gerald’s result by one second. It was true. However, that did not change the fact the fifth light did not light up. The sengen pill was out of both their reach.

“Haha, I bet you regret what you said now,” said Gerald with a cold smile on his face. “You’re full of hot air! I thought you would at least light up the fifth light for two or three seconds but it seems like you boast better than you fight!”

Chapter 1949

Morton’s face turned beet red and he was breathing heavily. He pointed toward Gerald and said, “Even though I didn’t light up the fifth light, I’m still stronger than you. My fourth light stayed one second longer than yours!”

Gerald did not take what he said to heart. “A mere second longer. Don’t make it sound like you can take me out in one punch. Even if you’re a little stronger than me, you’re still no match when it comes to a real battle. You will not last if we really go head to head.”

Gerald had the utmost confidence in his battle experience. Since young, he had followed his elders for training and had sparred with many others. He had won some and he had lost some. All these experiences had made him who he was today.

Morton’s childhood was completely different from Gerald’s. Although he had some sparring experience,

it paled in comparison to Gerald's. He knew that fact himself. "Don't try to twist the fact that I'm still stronger than you. I've earned the right to stomp you to the ground!"

Gerald glanced at him. "Since we both passed the assessment, why don't we find out who's really stronger in the battle arena?"

Ambrose frowned. He was not willing to listen to their bickering anymore. He put up his hand to stop them. "I don't care what happens to the two of you but don't waste other people's time now. Those who haven't taken the test, please come up!"

The test had been going on for quite a few hours by now. There were only ten or so people left including Jack, who still had not taken the test. He was not being coy or anything. He simply wanted to see what skills the fighters of the Hestia Continent had to offer.

Jack looked to his left then to his right and discovered everyone around him had already taken the test. He did not dally anymore and walked straight up to the obsidian. To the crowd's eyes, he was neither outstanding nor conspicuous. No one knew who he was since he had just arrived in Hestia and it was only natural no one paid any attention to him after the thousands that went before him.

However, he heard a crisp voice calling his name once he took to the stage.

"You must be Jack White." It was a statement, not a question. Jack raised his head and saw Zeph staring a t him with a stern expression. An eyebrow shot up and he neither refuted nor confirmed Zeph's words. Zeph took a step toward him and sized him up as if trying to peer into his very soul.

"You're not allowed to take the test nor join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion," said Zeph.

His words shocked the crowd. Until now, no one had ever been barred from taking the test. Even Elder Lee and Ambrose were looking at Zeph with odd expressions on their faces.

Jack narrowed his eyes. Things quickly became clear in his mind. “Why can’t I take the test? Have I broken any rules? No. According to the rules, my age I s within the range and I’m in the initial stage of innate level so I fit all the requirements. Or are you implying that your ruling is more important than the rules?

Zeph was puzzled at Jack’s calm demeanor. He seriously thought that Jack would have panicked at the turn of the events.

Chapter 1950

Jack’s calmness made Zeph change his perspective o n him for the better. Nonetheless, he had already accepted the money on the promise of taking Jack out. Therefore, there was no way in hell he would let Jack participate in the test nor let him leave this place alive.

Zeph laughed coldly and turned to face the crowd. “Of course not! The reason I’m not allowing you to participate in the test is that you’re a spy sent by the Muddled Origin Clan.”

A collective gasp escaped from the crowd’s lips as they turned to look at Jack with suspicions in their eyes. The fact that the accuser was Zeph made the accusation extremely believable. After all, why would someone of his status in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion lie about such a thing? What benefit could he possibly gain from doing so?

Ambrose had no idea whether what Zeph said was true but he had always been the kind to play devil’s advocate to whatever position he held. He sneaked a glance at Jack and was similarly impressed by his calmness. ‘If he’s really a spy, he’s definitely not your average run-of-the-mill spy,’ he thought with a faint smile.

He was originally standing next to Elder Lee but moved to be closer to Jack. Then he turned to Zeph and said, “You say he’s a spy from the Muddled Origin Clan? I wonder where you get your intel from. Surely the Muddled Origin Clan would have done everything in their power to keep the identities of their spy a secret.”

Although Zeph was not surprised that Ambrose would choose to go against him, his face still darkened

nonetheless. “I wouldn’t have accused him without showing any proof. As a person who pledged their loyalty to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, I would not allow any harm to come to it. Therefore, we must not allow him to participate in the test,” he said while still facing the crowd. Ambrose smiled nonchalantly at what he said while still keeping his eyes focused on Jack whose expression never changed.

Jack stared icily at Zeph. Before coming, it had crossed his mind that Warren might send someone t o come after him but he never expected that person t o be someone from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.” And what is this proof you speak of? You said that someone reported me to you. How do we know for sure that person is a reliable source? Besides, why would the Muddled Origin Clan send an initial stage o finnate level spy? What is their motive? It’s not as if I can influence the outcome of the battle or uncover the pavilion’s confidential information.”

Accusing Jack of being a spy was the perfect solution to Zeph’s problem. This way he not only prevented him from ever joining the Dual Sovereign Pavilion but also turned the crowd against him. No one would have come to his rescue as they would be punished too if they were found to be associated with a spy.

Once someone has been accused of being a spy, the onus falls on them to prove their innocence. Jack clearly understood that it would be difficult for him t o prove his innocence and this was exactly what Zeph was banking on. Unless he possessed some extraordinary abilities, there was no way in hell Jack would be able to disassociate the word spy from his name.

However, his calmness made everyone think twice. After some careful consideration, they discovered Jack’s word to be logical as to why would the Muddled Origin Clan send an initial stage of innate level to spy on the Dual Sovereign Pavilion? It would take a long while for a fighter this level to rise up to the ranks of an internal disciple even if he successfully join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and only those of the ranks of internal discipline would have access to slightly more useful information or be of help to the higher-ups.

Chapter 1951

After all, they had a great number of informal disciples to act as cannons in the war between Clan associations. Something flashed in Zeph’s eyes as he raised an eyebrow. He did not expect Jack to come u p with a plausible explanation so quickly. However, n o matter how quick-witted he was, he would still not be able to stop Zeph. He chuckled softly and turned t o face the crowd.

“I’ve received a report from one of my runner disciples. He saw you having a meal with a disciple from the Muddled Origin Clan. Besides that, Warren can also testify that he had seen you in the Muddled Origin Clan before. Your argument is useless when there are testimonies from two witness.” Zeph’s words sounded logical and those who did not know better began to believe him.

The crowd looked at Jack with derision in their eyes. “You despicable spy! Two-faced people are the worst! The secret place filled with resources was discovered by Dual Sovereign Pavilion and stolen by the Muddled Origin Clan! You should be ashamed of yourself!” shouted someone.

“Yes! The Muddled Origin Clan is truly despicable and shameless!”

“What do you expect from them? Take this guy, for example, he looks decent but hides an evil heart in him. Don’t even think you can get out of here safely, you Muddled Origin Clan dog! We might not be disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion but we grew u p under their protection. We’ll make sure you won’t get away so easily!”

The clamor coming from the crowd was endless and people were shouting indignantly. They were itching to rush up to the stage to punish Jack. However, Jack remained calm in the face of all this. He remained quietly standing in front of the obsidian as I f all the ruckus had nothing to do with him. Zeph narrowed his eyes at him and his evaluation of Jack went up a level more. He knew he would not be able t o stay as calm as Jack if their roles were reversed.

“You kept on saying that your disciple saw me having a meal with people from the Muddled Origin Clan or that Warren saw me hanging out with them and yet you’ve never mentioned where they had seen me or other specific details. Why don’t you ask him t o come up here to tell us the whole story? After all, I have done nothing wrong and is innocent,” said Jack calmly with a hint of coldness in his tone.

Zeph laughed coldly. Zeph was impressed by Jack’s calmness but thought that he was naïve enough to think he could escape this accusation that Zeph planted on him. His goal had been achieved— Jack would not be allowed to take the test. He would arrange for somebody to take him out when all of this was over.

“Ask the disciple to confront you? What wishful thinking. Why would I accuse you of something that you

didn’t do when my duty is to ensure the safety of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion? It’s only fair for me to forbid you from taking the test when there’s something fishy about you. You’re not really as important as you think you are. I suggest you leave this place immediately and give up your useless argument” said Zeph.

Chapter 1952

Ambrose raised his eyebrow, he felt pity for Jack for what Zeph said was true. With or without Jack, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion would still go on as ever. There was also the matter of Zeph having most of the decision making power in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Jack was only a candidate for the assessment and he did not have the power to veto Zeph’s decisions. Ambrose wanted to put in a few good words for Jack but he did not want to take the risk as what Zeph said about Jack being a spy could turn out to be true after all and he would be branded as a traitor for helping Jack. Thus, he kept quiet and quietly observe the unfolding of the events.

Jack’s expression became chillier by the moment. It had finally dawned on him that this matter would not be easily solved. Zeph walked toward him with a n eyebrow raised and whispered into Jack’s ear,” Give it up, you little brat. As a Dual Sovereign Pavilion officer, if I say you can’t take the test then you can’t take the test. This is what you get for messing with the wrong people.”

Even if Zeph did not tell him that, Jack had already guessed what was going on. He laughed coldly and looked sideways at Zeph, who was looking at him as I fhe was nothing but an ant underneath his booths. N o matter how strong Jack was, there was no way he would let him take the test.

Jack laughed coldly and put some distance between the two of them. He turned his head to look at the angry mob, then he looked at Ambrose who had been standing quietly all this while, and finally at the silent Elder Lee. He made sure everyone’s gaze was o n him and spoke, “I knew you would cause trouble for me today. Don’t think I don’t know what you’re doing. I knew all about the deal you’ve made with Warren. You must have known I would get my hands on the sengen pill so you wanted to stop me. After all, you’ve been lusting over the sengen pill for the longest time.”

His words shook everyone and they could not process the new information. What did Jack mean? What was the deal Zeph made with Warren? Was it true that Zeph was specifically targeting Jack? Zeph was

staring at Jack thinking he must be the most foolish person in the world. He knew Jack would not give up that easily but he did not expect him to take I t this far- when did he ever think that Jack had a chance to get his hands on the sengen pill?

He did not even know Jack that well. He knew as much as what Warren had told him albeit very ineloquently. He had never ever stopped and thought about Jack's cultivation level at all. All he needed to know was he was definitely much stronger than Jack. After all he was an officer of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and him, merely just a boy.

"One shouldn't lie even if one is trying to get out of a situation. Where did you even get the confidence to say that you'll definitely get your hands on the sengen pill?" asked Zeph with a cold laugh.

Chapter 1953

"What a joke. Who do you think you are? You're a measly fighter at the initial stage of the innate level. Do you really think you can surpass the two geniuses before you and light up the obsidian's fifth light?

Ambrose and Elder Lee exchanged glances with each other. They were thinking the same thing—that things were about to get even more unpredictable, Beneath the stage, the crowds had picked up their discussion again. The majority of them had the sentiment that Jack was missing some brain cells. How dare he so cockily declare that he was going to win first place?

"You must be delusional to think you can light up five lights and get the sengen pill. Do you really think you're a genius? If you are, how come I've never heard of you before?"

"Yeah! You should come up with something a little more believable than this! You don't strike me as someone who can light up five lights. You should count yourself lucky if you can even light up the third light for five seconds."

"I know it doesn't take much to lie but this is just too much. He's the biggest idiot I've met in my life, Even Morton and Gerald could not light up the fifth light. I will run around the square naked if you get your hands on the sengen pill."

Morton was laughing too. He was enjoying the whole drama. “You’re either naïve or blind! I’ve used up all my power and only managed to light up the fourth light for nine seconds. Do you really think you’re stronger than me?”

“He’s a total second-rate piece of sh*t.” Even Gerald, who usually kept to himself in situations like this, had joined in the fun.

Jack ignored all the noises from the peanut gallery. His gaze remained on Zeph. “I know my own strength. I just want you to know that I know you want the sengen pill for yourself. I overheard Warren mentioning that you will sneak the sengen pill into your pocket at the end of the test. The sengen pill is useless to you of course but it’s not really for you, is I t? It’s for that lover of yours.”

His words caused another ruckus in the crowd. “What is this guy talking about? What lover? Sneak it into m y pocket? What nonsense is this?’ thought Zeph.

Ambrose was rendered speechless by Jack’s words as well. What he said might sound far-fetched but it could very well be the truth. After all, truth is sometimes stranger than fiction. He would not put it past Zeph to come up with a plan like this.

Zeph did not know whether to get angry or laugh at the accusation. “Nonsense! Utter nonsense! I have n o lover and have no intention to take the sengen pill a s my own. Besides, this sengen pill is already registered in the records. It’s impossible for me to take it,” said Zeph with a smirk.

“Impossible or not, that’s really up to you to say, isn’t it? All I know is Warren said that you can pull some strings to make the sengen pill yours without any fear of retribution from the Dual Sovereign Pavillion.” The way Jack spoke made it seem believable. It was as if he was seeing the situation playing out right in front of him. This planted a seed of doubt against Zeph in the crowd’s mind. To them, Zeph was like a celebrity and their favorite entertainment had always been to listen to celebrity gossip. They were secretly wishing for things to get worse but of course, they dared not say it out loud.

Chapter 1954

However, Jack was altogether of a different pedigree. He did not come from a prestigious family nor possess a high level of cultivation so of course he was ripped for their insults. Zeph clenched his fists tightly. He would have shut Jack up with a punch on the face if it was not for the last shred of reasons controlling him.

He had become a laughing stock and he would do anything to stop Jack from creating more malicious gossip. “Do you think you can turn things around by slandering me? Where’s your proof?”

Jack smiled lightly and straightened himself up.” Ditto. Where’s your proof? You say you received the reports of me being a spy from your disciples. Then summon them here for an interrogation! I would like to know just where I met up with the people of the Muddled Origin Clan too.”

Zeph took a deep breath and there seemed to be electricity flashing in his eyes. He had a lightbulb moment- the malicious gossip was just a means to the end. He was impressed by Jack’s quick-witted thinking. It was a classic case of ‘if you can’t beat them, join them.

Zeph scoffed coldly and turned his head away. “Of course I can summon them here but why should I? I have the final say in this matter and I say you’re a spy and thus, forbidden to take the test. There’s no need to waste any more time on you who is merely just a test-taker. Everything I do is for the good of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.” He was banking on his status to prevent Jack from taking the test and had decided that he would personally end his life after all the dust had settled.

“Just admit that you don’t want me to win the sengen pill,” said Jack, without even bothering to look at him.

Zeph roared with laughter at his words. He turned around and stared at Jack with hawk eyes. “You kept on saying you can win the sengen pill. Is this your humble way of calling yourself a genius?”

“I’ve never said that. I just say I can get the sengen pill. Why don’t you let me take the test if you don’t believe me,” he said, not backing down one bit. “If I don’t have the ability then it means I was lying, and I fi do, it means that I was telling the truth all along. How about it?”

All along, he aimed to find a way for Zeph to let him take the test. There was no way Zeph would disregard his question now that he had forced him into a corner and judging from the cold beads of sweat rolling down his forehead, the words had achieved their intended effect. He was going to refuse Jack's request but what was the worst that could happen if he let him take the test? The chances are, Jack would fail so horribly and be branded as a spy forever.

"Fine, you can take the test but remember what you said," Zeph said finally. He and the rest of the crowd did not doubt that Jack would not be able to light up the fifth light. After all, three thousand people had already tried and not one of them succeeded. Thus, what could an initial stage of the innate level fighter possibly do?

Chapter 1955

Morton had remained standing next to Zeph all this while. At Jack's words, the corners of his lips began t o creep up into a mocking smile. "I can't believe this guy is trying to save himself by digging his own grave. He must not be right in the head if he really believes he can light up five lights and get the sengen pill. What a joke!"

"Yeah, he must have knocked his head when he was a baby. Couldn't he use a more normal way to prove his innocence? Does he think he can be the firstplace winner? Ptooey! What an idiot!" echoed the crowds.

Even till now, Jack ignored their remarks and remained calm as both Ambrose and Elder Lee stared at him with an odd expression on their faces. Although Elder Lee held the highest position, he was also the one who spoke the least. He chose to quietly observe all that was happening as if he was an outsider in this matter. Jack found his behavior odd but he had more important matters in his hand than t o figure out what was going through Elder Lee's mind. He should make a move since he had been given the green light to take the test.

Once again, he found himself standing in front of the obsidian. He took a deep breath, a bit unsure whether he could light up the fifth light. He did not know the extent of his own power. However, he was sure he would have no problem lighting up four lights and that alone would be enough to give him grounds to go another round with Zeph.

Jack's martial art skills were no ordinary skills for they were at least at the ultimate god status, putting him far above those present. Those elementary red level or yellow premium level martial art skills were nothing compared to his ultimate god status skills. I t was a shame he only managed to condense one Soul Sword as a newbie. He closed his eyes, stabilized his mind, and performed a hand seal which immediately caused a black light to shoot out from the middle of his palm.

Even if one were to use their divine senses on the blacklight, they would come away with its unremarkableness. It was near impossible to perceive the energy fluctuations of it. Zeph, who was standing by his side and watching all this quietly, stared at this black light and sneered. Although he agreed to let Jack take the test, he could not help but worry about the outcome. It would be the end of the road for him if Jack really lights up the fifth light. However, his worries were washed away after seeing the black light.

In all his experience of being an officer of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, he had seen all kinds of martial art skills, and Jack's skill would not strike fear in anyone's heart. The more powerful a martial art skill is, the higher the energy fluctuation would be. He had never seen a martial art skill with energy fluctuation as weak as the one before his very eyes.

Jack raised his right hand, squinted his eyes, and pushed the Soul Sword forward with all his strength. Immediately, the Soul Sword hit the obsidian like a feather gently floating in the wind. His way of displaying his martial art techniques was for sure different from others. The way he was hitting the obsidian was like tickling it with a feather as if the obsidian was a fragile thing one needed to be careful of. The crowd felt their suspicions had been confirmed there was really something not quite right with Jack's mind. Even Ambrose was shaking his head with pity at the poor soul.

The crowd then roared with laughter. "What is this? Can you even call that a martial art skill? Is he performing some kind of magic trick? I would be surprised if he even managed to light up one light."

Chapter 1956

The sound of their insults echoed through the air. All of them were looking at Zeph with derision in their eyes. Suddenly, a shout could be heard amongst the din of the crowd. Instantly, they all went silent for they all knew there was only one thing that could elicit a response like this.

“My god, my eyesight must be getting bad. Did the the fifth light just light up? This can’t be right!”

“Beats me! It could be a trick of the eye. There’s no way something as outrageous as this can happen.”

The area began to echo with the sound of shock and most of them had their jaws dropped to the ground. Jack really did it-he really lit up the fifth light by a far margin. They were quietly counting the seconds I n their mind. “One second, two seconds… eight seconds. It’s still lit up! Nine seconds!”

Finally, the fifth light extinguished itself at the ninesecond mark. The result shocked everyone present. Jack not only lit up the fifth light but it managed to stay lit for nine seconds, making it the highest score amongst them all. The crowd had to pinch themselves to check if they were dreaming. How was it possible for a nobody to achieve something that even Morton and Gerald could not do? Even the informal disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion could not achieve such a result. Where did Jack White come from? How did he get so strong? Was this really happening?

The young man, who was previously standing in front of Jack, was manually pushing his jaws close with his hand. “Someone pinch me quick! I must be dreaming. Is he really that strong?” His sentiment was exactly the same as the rest of the people there.

Zeph’s eyes nearly popped out from their sockets and his mouth was wide open as he stared at the obsidian with disbelief. It was a long while before he recovered himself. He had a rousing suspicion that the obsidian had gone haywire if not, how was it possible for the fifth light to light up? He wished vehemently for his suspicion to be true. After all, this would not bode well for him.

Finally, Elder Lee deigned to rise up from his chair. H e walked slowly toward Jack while keeping a steady gaze on him. “Your result is certainly impressive. Even amongst the informal disciples, you will be in the top three hundred rankings.” His evaluation shocked Jack for there were a total of three thousand informal disciples in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and each of the three thousand was a handpicked elite from all of West Cercie State.

Elder Lee’s evaluation of him was high praise indeed. It would not take him long to advance to the rank of a formal disciple and in a few years’ time, to a rank o felder or chosen disciple. By then, Jack’s status would be so high even he had to fawn over himself from time to time. Jack certainly had an immensely

bright future to look forward to.

Chapter 1957

Ambrose was left speechless by Elder Lee's evaluation of Jack. However, it was not the same for Zeph. He did not for a second believe Jack would forgive him for what he had done to him today. He took a deep breath but his expression remained darkened. It was general knowledge that most of the fighters have some blood on their hands.

Ambrose's speechlessness turned into happiness when he saw the darkened expression on Zeph's face. They were always at odds with each other and Ambrose wished every day that Zeph would one day b e gone from his sight. Seeing him like this made him smile with glee.

He walked up to Jack and patted him congratulatory on the shoulder. "Elder Lee doesn't give out praises easily. You're called Jack White, right? You might even surpass me in the future," joked Ambrose. The din of the crowd started again once the words were out of Ambrose's lips. Every one of the test-takers was filled with unquenchable jealousy.

"I heard the Dual Sovereign Pavilion has around three thousand informal disciples. This Jack White I s not even a real informal disciple yet and he already ranked in the top three hundred, meaning to say that he is stronger than the other ninety percent! I bet under the nurture of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, he would surely become a mainstay of theirs in no time at all."

"It's so frustrating how strong he is! Joining the Dual Sovereign Pavilion as an average informal disciple is already hard enough as it is and yet this guy passed the test with flying colors. They would surely pile on the pills and martial art technique on him once he officially becomes an informal disciple."

Envy and amazement flooded the hearts of everyone I n the crowd. Both Morton and Gerald, who had planned to laugh at Jack once he failed the test, were standing stock silent with a twisted expression on their faces. Morton's face, especially, had turned purple with rage. Compounding on the humiliation brought on by Gerald, he felt Jack had humiliated him even more. He was trembling all over and the fan he was holding in his right hand began to shake a s well. The shock in his eyes slowly turned into hatred.

He thought that today would be his day of glory. He would be the one to subdue Gerald with his aweinspiring result and at the same time, catch the attention of Elder Lee. Now, all that had been stolen b y Jack. He gnashed his teeth and said, “Where did this brat come from? How come I’ve never ever heard of him before?”

Everyone was actually thinking of the same question as he was. This was the first time anyone had heard o f the name Jack White. They thought that he was a nobody. In the end, he might turn out to be the firstever initial stage of innate level fighter who could light up the obsidian’s five lights.

Today’s disciple recruitment was born out of desperate times as a desperate measure but even in the normal recruitment disciples test, Jack’s result would still put him in the top three rankings. Even Gerald’s face had turned purple with rage. He was so confident of his own ability but compared to Jack’s, I t was like heaven and earth—that was to say, incomparable.

“It’s just as he said…the sengen pill belongs to him now,” said Gerald. At this, Morton realized that no one would be able to surpass Jack now.

Chapter 1958

Not only would Jack receive a sengen pill, but also a single residence, and fifty contribution points. “D*m n him! He’s dead meat for stealing what should have been mine!” shouted Morton. He was raging with jealousy and wanted to take him down there and then but alas he did not have the power to do so.

Jack was unaffected by Morton’s outburst. He was too relieved at having his own question—of whether he could light up the fifth light-answered to be bothered about others’ opinions. He was also happy a t the fact that his ‘Destroying the Void’ skill was much, much stronger than those who have taken the test, even if he managed to condense one Sword Soul only. However, now was not the time for celebrating, he had more important things to take care of.

Jack turned to look at Zeph coldly and a smile began to creep upon his face. “Officer Griffin, I have proven my ability which means I was telling the truth all along. You should admit to your own wrongdoings as well.”

Jack's words brought Zeph back to the present. He suddenly remembered that a few moments ago, they were engaged in a battle of the tongue. Jack's words floated back into his mind-"If I don't have the ability then it means I was lying, and if I do, it means that I was telling the truth all along". His result had made it clear that he was telling the truth.

Instantly, Zeph's face darkened for there was no way he was going to plead guilty to Jack's accusations. All those slandering words-going after the sengen pill to give to his lover-were utter bullsh*t. He would lose his position if he admitted to all that. At this, he started to panic.

"Winning first place only proves that you have a strong ability. It doesn't prove that you're not a spy. Your accusation of me was meant to be used as a distraction for your own wrongdoing. I would have never agreed to let you take the test if I knew about your power."

Jack laughed at Zeph's desperate attempt to dig himself out of the hole he had dug for himself. In his eyes, he was as good as trash. "You reluctantly agree to let me take the test because you're not sure of my power. You won't dare to do the same thing to Morton and Gerald because they had the backing of the clan and some influential people. However, I'm a nobody and you wanted to get rid of me once you knew about my power. You knew that I would not be able to fight you if you accused me of being a spy."

Zeph gritted his teeth and glared at Jack. He so badly wanted to tear into Jack's flesh with his teeth. "Your power proves that you're a spy from the Muddled Origin Clan! In order to win the battle, they spared n o effort to send a talent like you to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion! You're a spy through and through!"

Chapter 1959

Jack could not hold in his laughter anymore. "If what you said is true, then Muddled Origin Clan must have really thought this through because, to be honest, it's better to keep their best talent back at the headquarter. Why would they single-handedly deliver me to you? I swear I'm innocent. If you don't believe me, you can go check it out. I'll be here waiting for you."

What he was doing was the best way to prove his innocence. No one would be magnanimous if they were really a spy. It would have been difficult for him to turn this around if he had not captured the attention of the higher-ups of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion through his display of power then Zeph would

be able to do anything to him without anyone knowing better.

However, it was different now. He had proven his worth so the Dual Sovereign Pavilion higher-ups would definitely intervene in the matter. Besides, he was sure of his innocence. There was no way any evidence against him would turn up.

Jack turned to face the crowd and said, “I do have an enemy. I’ve mentioned him before and his name is Warren Alexander. He’s the one behind all this. I’m sure you’ll find evidence of their collusion once an investigation is underway. The truth must be sought no matter what.”

Elder Lee looked at Jack with an unfathomable expression and said, “I will send someone to conduct an investigation right away. If what you say is true, w e will be sure to clear your name. As for you, Officer Griffin, you’re to stay in the Clan association with no contact with the outside world.”

At this, Zeph’s face darkened as if he had eaten something disagreeable while Ambrose was smiling like the first flower to blossom in spring. “I agree that an investigation should be conducted but the test must go on too. Those who still haven’t taken the test please step up to the stage. If there’s no one else, we will wrap up the test now.”

One by one, the nervous test-takers went up the stage to take their place in front of the obsidian. As for Jack, it was only natural for him to stand behind Ambrose for no matter what was said, he passed the test and is officially an informal disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

After this, they would need to give him the reward and arrange for his accommodation. Jack was standing not far from Morton and Gerald. Their expressions were bitter as they felt themselves to be the laughing stock of everyone. All that bragging and only four lights light up. What was worse was they were upstaged by an unknown nobody. Their anger flared up again when they thought about this.

Morton glowered at Jack. He had transferred all his hatred for Gerald to Jack-who he had deemed as his number one public enemy. “Don’t even think for a second everything will be smooth sailing for you now that you’ve been recruited into the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Accidents can happen anytime, anywhere.”

His tone and eyes filled with hatred left Jack with no room for doubt as to what he meant. However, he had never paid him any mind and he was not going t o start now. It was true Morton was a strong fighter but his narrow-mindedness was a huge turn off for anyone. Jack would never give in to him for he knew I f he gave an inch, he would take a mile. Besides, why should he give in when he really should kick him to the ground?

Chapter 1960

Jack laughed coldly, not backing down from the provocation. “Who can really predict what’s going to happen in the future? I know I can’t. However, I can say with certainty that everyone has seen how you failed to light up the fifth light after all your bragging. It sounds like you’re jealous of me. But what’s the use of being jealous? You have no right to speak to me like that after failing to light up the fifth light. The sengen pill, the contribution points, and the single residence-I’ve earned all that with my own power.”

Morton’s face darkened even more as if someone had forced him to eat sh*t. No one had spoken to him like that before. Ever. Each of Jack’s words was like a knife stabbing through his heart. He was trembling all over and the corners of his lips began to twitch uncontrollably. He glared even more fiercely at Jack.

However, Jack remained unbothered no matter how much Morton glared at him. Throughout his experience, he had met countless insignificant people like Morton. He would not take what they said to heart no matter how much they tried to provoke a reaction out of him.

On the contrary, Gerald was silent throughout Jack’s and Morton’s whole exchange. From time to time, he would throw an unfriendly look in Jack’s direction but other than that Jack had no idea what he was thinking. He was better at keeping his emotions under control than Morton. He was not going to be like that foolish Morton-an open book.

After the test, Ambrose led the newly recruited informal disciples to their accommodation and to get their jade identification cards. The jade identification cards were used to identify themselves and for the collection of the contribution points. They would only need to show their jade identification cards if they wanted to exchange something from their contribution points. It was handy and practical, a must for any Clan association.

As an informal disciple, Jack finally got to experience the majesty of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. There

were innumerable buildings inside, countless luxurious rooms, and a double corridor packed with Clan associations. There were disciples going to and fro everywhere and each of them was wearing the same uniform and accessories which enhanced their gentlemanly and extraordinary refinement.

After thirty minutes of walking, the newly recruited informal disciples finally arrived at the more remote parts of the area. In front of them were some low, uniform buildings. They needed no introduction to know that the buildings would be their new accommodation from now on. Although the buildings were not as luxurious as the ones they saw on their way, they were at least very clean.

Most of the newly recruited informal disciples came from prestigious families meaning they were used to staying at a much better accommodation than the buildings in front of them. They started to complain internally to themselves at how they had to downgrade their living standards after being an informal disciple.

It did not matter to Ambrose what they were thinking. He laughed coldly and turned around to look at the newly recruited informal disciples. “As the newly recruited informal disciples, you all rank the lowest of the lowest in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. If you want to live in a big house or even a palace, you have to prove that you deserve it, otherwise you can only live in this kind of place. There are many detached houses and even palaces here, but only the most powerful disciples can stay there.”

Chapter 1961

Ambrose paused for effect before continuing on,“ Actually, you all are just a little stronger than the runner disciples. If within a period of time, you don’t level up or achieve a certain quota for the contribution points, you will immediately be deemed worthless and be relegated to the position of a runner disciple. Do you know what it means to be a runner disciple? Why? They’re nothing but servants o f the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. By then, even this place will be too fancy for you!”

As soon as Ambrose had finished saying that, apart from the few disciples who were very confident of their own ability, most of the other disciples had already started panicking. They were well aware that they would be competing against each other. Their ego would suffer a heavy blow if they were ever relegated to the position of a runner disciple.

“Only Jack will get a room to himself. The rest of you will be sharing a room. According to the order of

your ranking, the top hundred disciples will stay in a two-person room and the rest will stay in a threeperson room,”continued Ambrose.

Instantly, everyone turned their envious gaze toward Jack. Even though they were all staying in the same type of buildings, they would give an arm and leg for a space that were theirs alone. Squeezing two or three people into a room would make the already tiny space even tighter not mentioning the lack of privacy. It was natural for every one of them to want t o keep something of theirs, a secret. Sharing a room with others would take a mental and physical toll on them.

“There are a lot of rules in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and you can find the rules recorded in your jade identification card. You only need to use your divine senses to read them. That’s all there is for now. We’ll begin the room assignment now,” said Ambrose with a raised eyebrow.

Jack’s room assignment was the easiest. He would b e staying in the first building in the first row. When h e was walking to his room, he could feel their hot gaze on him. He did not even need to turn around to sense the hatred in their hearts.

Just when he was about to enter his room, Morton could not help but say, “Don’t get carried away, Jack. You’re not the only informal disciple to get his own room. The other informal disciples who have been here longer than us also have their own room. I’m sure the others are vying for your room so you better make sure you don’t lose this privilege.”

There was, of course, a hidden meaning in the message. Morton knew more about the inner workings of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion than Jack. H e subconsciously furrowed his brow and realized that taking first place in the test might bring him more trouble than it was worth. However, he decided not t o take it to heart. Ambrose had already passed him the sengen pill and the fifty contribution points meaning to say he had safely received all the rewards promised to the first place winner.

Jack had some free time after that. He went into his room and swept his eyes over it. The room was not big, maybe around five hundred square feet or so. However, it was well furnished. There was even a kettle and mugs on top of the table. It was definitely fancier than the inns he was staying in before. He did not have the mood to admire the room. He quickly pulled out the straight-backed chair, sat on it, and took out his jade identification card. Although he was officially an informal disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, the next challenge would be even more difficult for him so it was imperative for him

to memorize all the rules of the pavilion to prevent any unnecessary troubles.

Chapter 1962

The jade identification card listed out all the rules in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion with a detailed explanation. It even pointed out the important things to remember. Everything Jack needed to know could be found inside. For example, he wanted t o know how to advance to the position of a formal disciple from the position of an informal disciple and found out that he only needed to level up to the initial stage of the acquired level. He had always thought that he would need to go through a series of tough tests to become a formal disciple.

“I only need to level up to the initial stage of acquired level to become a formal disciple? Isn’t this a bit too simplistic?” muttered Jack to himself. After all, the initial stage of the acquired level was only two small levels away from the initial stage of innate level. Two small levels within a bigger level, was that what really separated an informal disciple from a formal disciple? Jack could not help but feel that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion must be pulling his leg.

He could not understand the reasoning behind it so h e decided to enter Mustard Seed and invited Nash to have a discussion about this. He figured that two heads would be better than one. Since he had just arrived, he wanted to take some time to observe his fellow recruits before deciding who to befriend. Therefore, he only had his family to turn to when he wanted to discuss problems like this.

Nash did not think there was a problem at all after Jack had told him about it. “You can’t judge the workings of the Hestia Continent using the perspectives of the Cathysia World. You’re operating I na completely different world now. Do you remember how we divided up all the levels in Cathysia and only found out that the Hestina Continent had lumped all the smaller levels into one big level when we first reached here? It may seem like the initial stage of the acquired level is only two levels away from the initial stage of the innate level but when seen from the perspective of Cathysia, they are oceans apart.”

Jack understood Nash’s explanation instantly. He chastised himself for his own stupidity and narrow-mindedness. The Hestia Continent had combined all the little levels into the acquired level which meant that the gap in between was much bigger than he thought. He feared that even breaking through the initial stage of intermediate level from the initial stage of innate level would be a difficult feat for him.

Jack nodded his head and said, “No wonder the person working in the café said it would require great cultivation to advance to the initial stage of intermediate level from the initial stage of innate level. I understand now that there’s a huge difference between the two after all.” He initially thought that it would not take him long to move up two levels but it was obvious he had underestimated the division of levels in this world. Going by the new division, it would at least take him a few years to move up now.

Nash sighed with admiration after he was done reading the content in the jade identification card with his divine senses. “I wouldn’t expect any less from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Their knowledge o f the resources secret palace, martial art techniques, and pills put ours to shame. Not to mention the many, many rules of theirs. However, it’s true what they said-nothing can be accomplished without norms or standards. I have no doubt that was how they managed to nurture all the genius to carry on the torch for them.”

Jack nodded, and too, sighed with admiration at the all-powerful Hestia Continent. Any one of the people from the Hestia Continent could easily become the strongest person in the Cathysia World.

Chapter 1963

It looked like he was right to leave Cathysia World for he would have remained a country bumpkin if he did not come here. Nash glanced at Jack and said, “ Here it says that there are quite a number of informal disciples of the initial stage of intermediate level who have been promoted to the position of formal disciples. Also, you can exchange your position with a formal disciple of the initial stage of acquired level if you defeat him in a fight. The loser will take on the position of an informal disciple and the winner the position of a formal disciple. Ah, that explains all the fights happening in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.”

Jack had first-hand experience when he had discovered that Officer Brigsgs, Elder Lee, and the others implicitly gave their acquiescence when it came to the bickerings and almost-fights that occurred during the talent test. When it came to fights, the higher-ups would always give them a wide berth, which proved that they highly encouraged fights to break out between the Clan associations. It was as if the fiercer the fights, the more prosperous the Clan association would be.

“This is akin to the voodoo practice of keeping bugs whereby all the bugs are thrown into a vessel to fight to the death amongst each other with the lone survivor being the king of all bugs,” said Jack after giving it some serious thought.

Nash smiled lightly. He nodded his head and then shook his head. “Your metaphor is only half right. It’s true the Dual Sovereign Pavilion encourages fights amongst the Clan associations but the fighters are not allowed to take each other’s lives. The fights are meant to motivate them to level up but killing each other is a big no-no for them.”

Jack nodded his head. If a Clan association disciple continued to scheme against each other after leaving the Clan association, wishing the other party to die before them, then the days of the imminent collapse of the Clan association would not be too far off too. Each of the Clan associations was well aware of this unspoken rule.

Nash took out the paper, calligraphy brush and ink from the desk’s drawer and began to write something. Jack glanced at what he was writing and saw three words-wager battle arena. He was immediately filled with awe.

“The Dual Sovereign Pavilion had taken the pains to set up a battle arena to encourage fights amongst the Clan associations. However, the battle rules are numerous. This is to prevent the disciples from getting out of control. As long as you’re a disciple-b e that an informal, formal or even an elder discipleyou will need to participate in a fight in the wager battle arena once a month.

“The wager must be decided before the fight and could be anything such as treating the winner to a meal or handing over contribution points with the maximum limit of one hundred. Anything more than that would run the risk of the disciples being addicted to fighting in the wager battle arena.

“During the fights, there are two important things to keep in mind-you cannot cause permanent damage to the other party or take the other party’s life. I’m sure you’ll discover just how handy the wager battle arena would be. You can decide when and who the opponent is going to be but it must be consensual.

“You won’t gain any combat experience if you keep o n training by yourself. This will cause you to have many shortcomings. I’m sure the Dual Sovereign People set up the wager battle arena specially to prevent this from happening. It’s really ingenious of them.”

Jack nodded at his father, agreeing wholeheartedly with his words. In a nutshell, the wager battle arena's main purpose was to foster the competitive spirits amongst the Clan associations' disciples and for them to gain actual combat experience.

Nash then took up the calligraphy brush to write something again-Wooden Spirit Hall and Golden Spirit Hall.

Chapter 1964

He spoke as he wrote, "This world is different from the previous world we were in. They even provide a special place to increase a person's training speed in order for them to complete a martial skill speedily. Those who practiced martial skills that belong in the wood attribute can experience the wooden conception in the Wooden Spirit Hall. Those who practiced martial skills that belong in the gold attribute can feel the golden conception in the Golden Spirit Hall! By the way, the martial skill you are practicing belongs to the soul attribute. I wonder I f the pavilion has a place specially set up for the soul attribute?"

Jack curled the corners of his mouth in excitement when he heard this. This was the place he needed the most right now. After all, he was unable to improve after he managed to form the first Soul Sword.

This caused Jack to question his abilities and also wonder if he made a mistake somewhere. However, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had such a place.

"Isn't there a Soul Hall written on the jade strips? That place is where a person can focus on improving martial skills of the soul attribute. I really want to take a look at the Soul Hall now and see how they train." Jack was about to turn into a curious baby. Although he did not join the top pavilion in West Cercie State, the pavilion was reckoned as an outstanding one. The various equipment inside were naturally of medium to high-end condition.

He wanted to see what was actually in the Soul Hall, How did they improve the speed of a person training the martial skill of the soul attribute?

Nash confidently knew what his son was curious about. He stretched out his hand and petted Jack on his shoulder while saying helplessly, "Don't you forget that entering this place requires a lot of contribution

points. Although you have been rewarded with 50 pavilion's contribution points, I don't think these contribution points are enough for you."

Jack could not help but to start feeling an indefinable sadness when the contribution points were mentioned. The most important thing for the disciples in the pavilion might not be the martial art techniques or martial skills they owned. Instead, it was the pavilion contribution points.

Almost every pavilion has set its own contribution points. In order to exchange relevant items in the pavilions, spirited crystals or stones were not required but only pavilion contribution points.

They had to pay a certain amount of pavilion contribution points when they wished to attend classes by the elders. Every pavilion had elders in charge of teaching classes that answered some of the questions the disciples had when they were practicing the martial art techniques or martial skills.

However, the disciples had to pay a certain amount o f pavilion contribution points for every visit. On top o f that, they also needed a large amount of pavilion contribution points when they visited the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall.

There were also some martial art techniques and martial skills that were unretrievable with the pavilion contribution points. A relevant position was required for those.

On top of that, the disciples could use their pavilion contribution points to exchange for spirited pills and spirited herbs that could be used to increase their fighting prowess. The pavilion contribution points were used in everything. This meant that Jack had to spare a lot of time to earn pavilion contribution points during his training life later.

Nash raised his eyebrows and said, "In actual fact, there isn't much use for you to earn the pavilion contribution points. After all, you don't need a famous teacher to teach you because the experience I n the soul fragments is sufficient for you to comprehend them. You don't have a shortage of martial art techniques and martial skills either. On top of that, the martial art techniques and martial skills you own are several times better than those in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall. You only need to spend the pavilion contribution points at those places that can increase your speed of training in martial skills. If not, you can use those points in exchange for some spirited pills and

herbs.”

Jack nodded. This was a comfort for Jack as the others had to attend the elder’s classes and ask the elders about their inquiries on the martial skill or martial art techniques they were practicing.

However, there was no need for Jack to do this. After he integrated the memories of the great master, the experience appeared in front of him without any holdbacks.

This was several times better compared to being taught by those elders. However, Jack was still stuck without any improvement under such conditions!

Chapter 1965

Nash picked up the identity jade strips placed on the wooden table. He took a look at the entire thing and could not contain his surprise as he spoke. “Even the collection of spirited herbs can earn you pavilion contribution points. Aren’t these the jobs of workers or servants?”

There were many ways to earn the pavilion contribution points. They could hunt for monster beasts in the ancient forests and obtain the spirited cores from the beasts. They could exchange these spirited cores and other parts of the monster beasts that could be sold for money for contribution points o f the same amount.

They could also help the elders of the pavilion to do things average people were unable to do. For example, they could help cultivate liquid medication or tempered weapons with their aura. These were also activities that could be use in exchange for pavilion contribution points.

Even the collection of spirited grass and flowers in the mountain could be used to exchange for contribution points. However, the activity that resulted in the highest amount of pavilion contribution points was to complete the secret missions the pavilion announces.

The identity jade strips did not clearly mention what these secret missions were. However, he could sense how difficult it was to complete these secret missions from the descriptions about them.

Nash said in a slightly worried manner, “You will definitely accept missions in the future. You need to b e even more careful then. After all, who knows how many times more dangerous this world is compared t o ours.”

Jack nodded as he knew clearly in his heart about these things. “I think there will be a chance to earn a large number of assignment points soon.”

Nash looked up at Jack in a surprised manner after h e heard this. Jack chuckled and continued speaking, “I mean the battle with the Muddled Origin Clan. When the battle starts, there will definitely be a large number of casualties. According to the survival of the fittest attitude this world has, it’s estimated that they will use the number of people killed in exchange for the assignment points.”

Nash nodded in agreement. He had forgotten about this. Previously, Jack was accused of no reason when Zeph said that Jack was a spy from the Muddled Origin Clan with no supporting facts. By looking at this, they were able to determine that both pavilions had reached the breaking point and the battle would happen at any time.

Nash shook his head and said with a heavy heart when he thought of this, “If both pavilions start a battle, I hope that you don’t join the battle. If we put other things aside, you might become one of the cannon fodders in the battle just by considering your fighting prowess.”

In the West Cercei State, the people were commonly I n the acquired level and only geniuses were capable o f achieving the innate level. However, there were so many geniuses in every pavilion.

Jack was only in the initial stage of innate level at the moment. Even if he practiced a strong martial art technique and an extremely powerful martial skill, h e might not be able to stay alive in such battles. This was what Nash was worried about.

Jack nodded as he knew how much his father worries about him. “Don’t you worry. I will act according to circumstances and I will not let myself get caught in the dangerous swamp.”

Nash had always been confident in Jack. He knew that Jack had his own plans when he heard what Jack said. Nash chuckled and continued speaking,” Let’s stop talking about this. Why don’t you tell me what you plan to do next? Warren will definitely cause you trouble in the future. How do you plan to handle that later on?”

Jack raised his eyebrows and said without much care, “Warren was unable to defeat me previously and he wouldn’t be my opponent in the future. He’s just a nobody and he wouldn’t be an issue to us. On top of that, I will deal with him even if he does not cause me any trouble. This time, if I did not act smart and did things the other way, I won’t be able to join the admission assessment or join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion!”

Chapter 1966

Jack was not a person who muddled along. If he let things go when Warren spent so much effort to go against him, what was the difference between him and a useless person?

He had to make Warren pay dearly since Warren dared to take action against him in such an unscrupulous manner. Just as Jack was thinking of how he could get back at Warren, there was an abrupt knock on his door.

Jack quickly asked Nash to enter the Mustard Seed before tidying his clothes and opening the door. Standing outside was, in fact, Ambrose.

As the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s deacon, Ambrose was normally burdened by odd errands. He would not come to Jack if nothing had happened. On top of that, Ambrose had a smile on his face and seemed to be in quite a good mood.

Before Jack was able to ask about it, Ambrose started, “You don’t need to invite me in; I’m just here to inform you about some things. Just now, Elder Lee personally investigated the grudge between you and Zeph. Zeph is currently detained in the elder council, awaiting his sentencing.”

Jack relaxed when he heard this. Although Ambrose did not tell him the findings of their investigation, h e knew that they had a thorough investigation regarding what happened between them and did not wrong him.

Ambrose then continued, “I had never imagined that Zeph would be such a shallow person. He was bought over with just five hundred spirited crystals. This matter had touched the bottom line of the pavilion. It’s a big issue for a person to misuse their position t o fulfill their personal desire. Elder Lee had personally ordered for him to be relieved of his position today.”

In fact, there were one or two similar cases in every pavilion with regards to what Zeph did. If Jack was just a usual participant in the assessment, it was not a big issue for somebody to misuse their position and power. Most of the time, the pavilion would turn a blind eye from this. However, this was not a simple matter. Jack could be considered a genius with his talents. If Zeph managed to pull off what he did, it would mean that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had lost a genius.

If they considered the matter from this point of view, this was no small matter, and it was enough to get the attention of those with a higher position. Ambrose was naturally happy that Zeph could not cause any more issues.

After all, the two of them did not like one another and had caused trouble for each other. Ambrose wished for Zeph to be hung tomorrow. That was why Ambrose had gotten happier when he looked at Jack, wanting to call him his brother so badly.

On top of that, Jack would definitely get an important position in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion with his talents.

“This issue happened because of a problem that happened with the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s management team. I’m sorry that you have to suffer such grievance. Hence, Elder Lee purposely gave you those five hundred spirited crystals to compensate for the inconvenience.” Ambrose took out a box that contained 500 lower-grade spirited crystals after he reached into the space ring.

“I have something else to attend to now. I’m just here to tell you this, apart from sending you the spirited crystals. Well, that is all. I’ll be leaving now.” It seems like Ambrose truly had taken some time off to do this. In fact, he could have ordered his subordinate to do this errand of telling Jack some news and delivering the spirited crystals. However, Ambrose was delighted to share this news with Jack, which was why he personally delivered the crystals.

Jack nodded and thanked Ambrose before he placed the spirited crystals into his Mustard Seed. The Mustard Seed was not only a means of transportation, but it was also a large storage unit. It was several times bigger than usual space rings.

At this moment, many of the informal disciples who joined the pavilion were standing outside. These disciples had just joined the pavilion, and they, of course, did not want to remain in the pavilion all the time. They came out to enjoy some fresh air and conversations about how they should train later.

The Dual Sovereign Pavilion had a free range policy when it came to training their disciples. They were allowed to do anything they wanted as long as they had sufficient contribution points. It did not matter I f they visited the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall to choose martial art techniques or martial skills. They could also visit the Wooden Spirit Hall or other places!

With this, they overheard Ambrose and Jack’s conversation. Many of these people looked at Jack enviously, but Jack merely ignored them, not wanting to entertain them.

Chapter 1967

Just as Jack turned and was about to close the door, h e heard someone calling out, albeit rather meanspiritedly, “You’re Jack?”

Although this was a question, it seemed to be more like a jeer. Jack slowly turned around and saw a man with a short beard and a scary look in his eyes, standing not too far away.

While Jack did not recognize this man, he wore clothes that indicated that he was an informal disciple. This man must be an informal disciple who joined the pavilion via the usual recruitment process. According to seniority, they should call him their senior brother.

Nonetheless, Jack could not address the man as such, seeing as he obviously did not come bearing kind intentions. In fact, Jack would have ignored him based on his temperament. Jack was new here and did not want to seem impolite.

He only nodded as he responded. Wesley Sayer gave Jack a glance-over before he looked at the individual house behind Jack, his eyes gleaming with envy when he did.

“I don’t know how the pavilion decides things. There are only thirty private accommodations, and they actually gave it to cannon fodder like you!”

Not only Jack, but even the disciples who just joined the pavilion surrounding them also realized that something was wrong with Wesley’s words. What did he mean, cannon fodder like him?

Frowning, Jack asked, “What do you mean? We’re both informal disciples. What do you mean by cannon fodder?”

Wesley sneered and a disdainful look appeared in his eyes. He took a glance at all the newly joined disciples and crassly spoke, “I’m saying that you’re cannon fodder. Don’t you know how you were recruited? How is it possible for them to only put an obsidian as the assessment tool during usual recruitment? You guys are recruited to make up the numbers. Are you guys really thinking of yourself as informal disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion? Let me tell you: none of you are qualified to think so.

“When we accepted the assessment back then, we had to go through the assessment alone three times, and we’d be eliminated if we failed any one of those assessments. It isn’t as easy as the assessment you guys had. If the fight between pavilions weren’t happening soon, do you think you’ll be able to join the pavilion?”

Frankly, Wesley was correct. The Dual Sovereign Pavilion recruited disciples once every two years, but due to the possibility of a battle with the Muddled Origin Clan happening anytime soon and they wanted to expand their reserve army, they altered the period from two years to three months.

However, all the new disciples present were especially confident with their strength. What Wesley said was no different from slapping everybody in their faces several times. Many of them were so angry that their faces turned purple as they glared at him angrily.

Wesley sneered disdainfully and looked at the new disciples like they were bedbugs. “Are you guys unconvinced? If you’re that unsure, let’s go have a fight at the wager battle arena. All this crap talk isn’t as simple as a real battle. I’m sure all of you don’t really think that your strength is the best among all the informal disciples, do you?”

Wesley truly was too far up in his head. Although he was an informal disciple recruited under normal circumstances, this did not mean that he was superior over everyone else in that place.

Some of them could not help but speak loudly, “We had just become informal disciples, and it’s natural for us to be not as strong as you who had trained in the pavilion for a long period. However, there are also geniuses among us! Jack is the strongest among us. Elder Lee once said that his strength places him a t the top three hundred among the informal disciples!”

Wesley glanced at Jack and spoke loudly after he heard this, “That’s just a general assumption by Elder Lee. However, my strength has been verified, and I’m in the top two-hundred!”

Chapter 1968

Everybody quieted down after they heard what Wesley said. Although there were around 3000 informal disciples, the top 300 were a large number o f people. Compared to the 3000 disciples, the top 300 was just one-tenth of the total number of people, but it was still a large number of people.

Sure, Elder Lee ascertained that Jack should be in the top 300 among the informal disciples, but Wesley had a point-that was just Elder Lee’s deduction. As for Wesley, he had proven that he was top 200 among the informal disciples through his strength.

It was not surprising for Wesley to be so pompous as he could, in fact, walk the talk. Of course, he was

able to defeat the newly recruited informal disciples with his strength. Many people had been unable to voice out their objections by the fact that he was among the top 200.

However, there were still people who were not afraid of power and yelled at Wesley loudly, “You can’t say that. You’ve been an informal disciple for a period of time. After such a long time of training and grooming, it’s normal for you to be stronger than us. If we trained for the same period of time as you, it’ll b e difficult to say who’s strong and who’s weak.”

Wesley glared at the people disdainfully, listening as they spoke. He looked at the person as if he was looking at a dung shell beetle who had just climbed out of a manure tank.

“You’re very boastful. How dare you say something like this. You dare say that you’d be as strong as I am if you trained the same time span as I had? Why don’t you take a look and see how many people are able to become one of the top 200 when there are a total of 3000 informal disciples? Your ignorance truly shocked me. On top of that, I didn’t train any much longer than you as I’ve just joined the pavilion six months before you.”

In fact, without the battle between pavilions, the pavilion would not have recruited this new batch of informal disciples. Without them, Wesley and his batch of newcomers would be the newly recruited informal disciples.

No wonder Wesley did not like them, that the disdain came from the bottom of his heart. At this moment, a wave of footsteps could be heard as they walked over from some distance away. Several informal disciples who were dressed the same way came rushing over from some distance away with a smile o n their face.

Although they seemed to be at ease, they had a sarcastic look in their eyes in the way they glanced at the newly recruited disciples. The place they were at was where the newly recruited disciples stayed.

These senior informal disciples would not have come for no reason. Jack glanced at the trio. The person standing in the middle had the fiercest look on his face as he had a pair of triangular eyes. Judging by his facial expression, he did not look like a nice person.

The person with triangular eyes immediately smiled flatteringly when he saw Wesley. “It seems that you’re here, Senior brother Wesley. We were looking for you. Didn’t you go to the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall to choose a martial skill?”

Jack could not help but sneered when he heard what the person said. He did not believe that this guy with triangular eyes had no idea that Wesley was here. They obviously knew that Wesley was near where they stayed; they purposely came here looking for him or for trouble. All that, yet they pretended as if they knew nothing.

Wesley turned around to glance at the guy with triangular eyes and nodded. This guy was the leader among those three informal disciples who had just arrived, and the remaining two seemed to be his subordinates.

However, from the way this guy spoke to Wesley, they knew that the guy with triangular eyes did not have a higher position than Wesley. Everybody could hear the flattery in his voice when he spoke to Wesley.

The guy with triangular eyes glanced at the newly recruited disciples after he arrived beside Wesley. “I heard how you lot spoke so arrogantly from a distance away. You guys are so shameless that you say you’d be able to surpass senior brother Wesley if you’re given enough time. How dare you people say such things?”

Chapter 1969

“Even us who joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion the usual way dare not claim that we can become one of the top two-hundred informal disciples within six months.”

After the man with triangular eyes spoke, the two followers immediately chimed in, “That’s right! You’re just ignorant people who know only to talk boastfully. You’re even being unrealistic in what you’re proclaiming. How dare you dubious cannon fodder compare yourselves to senior brother Wesley? Let me tell you: The battle between the pavilions is about to happen, and we’re not even sure if we can manage to stay alive. I do wonder who gave you the guts to act in such a boastful manner?”

The guy with triangular eyes sneered coldly and looked at the newly recruited informal disciple with a disgusted look in his eyes. “Young man, let’s not even talk about competing with senior brother Wesley. I’ll give you six months before you fight my junior brother in the wager battle arena. You might not even be able to withstand five moves from him, even if we give you a chance to have three attack moves before him.”

The newly recruited informal disciples flushed in anger when they heard what he said, but none of them dared say anything. Even the informal disciple who gathered the courage to refute also kept quiet and flushed a purple color.

After all, he did not dare to do anything. If he continued, he would have to compete with the informal disciple standing beside the guy with triangular eyes. Gallant as he was, he just was not capable of doing that.

With this, the momentum of the newly recruited informal disciples had completely disappeared. They felt uncomfortable but did not have the courage to have a duel with these people.

Wesley did not pay much attention to these people around him from the start as all his focus was on Jack. Jack, on the other hand, eyed the four of them coldly.

Although these four exuded a stronger momentum compared to usual informal disciples, Jack did not pay much attention to them. Wesley raised his eyebrows in surprise when he saw how calm Jack was.

He initially thought that Jack would be surprised and would look away after he told Jack about his power. Unexpectedly, Jack did not respond.

Wesley sneered coldly as he remarked, “It is true that the ignorant ones aren’t afraid of anything. You’re getting so arrogant just because Elder Lee slightly praised you. How brave are you for looking directly at me!”

Jack was able to identify the enigmatical words Wesley said but he did not get furious. Instead, he wondered why Wesley came to say such words.

Jack was not somebody that allowed others to insult him, thus he sharply bit back, “You were the one who never stopped running your mouth from the start, while I said nothing. You came looking for trouble as if you have nothing better to do. Just tell m e what you want.”

Wesley’s facial expression immediately changed when he heard what Jack said. He originally had an overbearing aura that seemed to be suppressing everybody present. However, Jack’s words were like the needle that popped the balloon. Wesley’s indifferent, suppressing aura immediately disappeared.

He roared loudly, “What did you say? How dare you chide me?!”

The man with triangular eyes also flipped out as if what Jack said was offending him. “Where did this dumb*ss come from? How dare you disrespect Senior brother Wesley? Are you suicidal?!”

Jack did not even look at the two of them. He looked away. “I think that you two are silly. Why did you come here to show off yourselves? We’re newly recruited informal disciples, and we’ve only joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for one day. If you people really want to show off, why don’t you go to where the other informal disciples are?”

Chapter 1970

What Jack said immediately caused a ripple effect among the newly recruited informal disciples. Those who were originally quiet immediately acted as if they were full of beans.

“That’s right! Do you guys feel proud for humiliating us without any reason? Although you’re a strong person and are one of the top two hundred among the informal disciples, we’ve just joined the pavilion. Did those senior brothers who’ve joined the pavilion for a long time humiliate you when you were a new member of the pavilion?”

“That’s right! All you people know is bullying us!”

Wesley was furious when he heard these words. He scoffed and haughtily raised his head, saying, “Don’t compare me with you people. Do you think you are worth it? You people are just special products of a special period. If a huge battle isn’t happening between the Muddled Origin Clan and the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, do you think people like you would be given a chance to join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion?!”

Wesley then spun his head toward Jack, and the hatred in his eyes pierced through Jack like poisonous swords. However, Jack did not seem affected at how Wesley looked at him and remained calm.

Wesley suddenly stretched out his finger and pointed at the room behind Jack. “You’re unworthy of owning an independent room. There are only thirty independent rooms for informal disciples in the entire Dual Sovereign Pavilion. What virtues or capabilities do you have to own a room?”

Jack immediately understood what was going on after he heard this. He had been wondering why a person like Wesley would purposely come here to humiliate them without any reason. After all, it was extremely shameful for him if others learned about what happened here.

That was, of course, unless Wesley was an extremely conceited person and needed to fulfill his vanity and satisfaction. Jack had the right guess as Wesley was not here because he did not have anything better to d o. Instead, he wanted this individual room that Jack owned.

There were only 30 independent rooms among the informal disciples, and Jack owned one of them. The other 29 rooms were definitely inhibited by other extremely excellent informal disciples.

Just like what Morton said previously, the fact that Jack owned a private room was provocative to other informal disciples. Unexpectedly, somebody had come to instigate a fight in less than a day.

Wesley held his head high and continued to speak,” Fifty lower-grade spirited crystals, and I’ll have a duel with you at the wager battle arena this month. We’ll wager on this independent room.”

A fox would definitely show their true colors sooner o r later. He had such a good plan in mind. It was

definitely against the rules if he forced Jack to give u p the room. However, if this room was used as a wager in the wager battle arena, it would be perfectly justifiable if he managed to win the room.

He only planned to pay Jack 50 lower-grade spirited crystals for this, and this was more insulting than dismissing a beggar. After all, which of those people standing here did not have 50 lower-grade spirited crystals?

There were finally some changes on Jack's originally calm face. A chilly smile appeared at the corner of his mouth, and chills ran down everyone's spines. Jack also glared at Wesley coldly.

"Do you think that I'm dumb? You want me to go to the wager battle arena with only fifty lower-grade spirited crystals?"

Wesley nodded. "Aren't you a proud person? Don't you feel that you can compete with me based on your identity? No matter how proud you are or what thoughts you have in your mind, why don't you join me on the wager battle area to prove yourself?"

The man with triangular eyes chimed in, "In our opinion, you people are just a group of cannon fodder, and you're just a slightly bigger cannon fodder among these people. Of course, that's what we're thinking. If you want to refute our claims, why don't you prove yourself with actual actions? Joining Senior brother Wesley on the wager battle arena will prove your strength."

Chapter 1971

Such an obvious dare used in such a despicable way. Jack could not help but laugh coldly after he heard this. Such a challenge was useful to others, but just not against Jack.

The other newly recruited informal disciples were spirited after they heard this and looked at Jack excitedly, wanting him to accept the challenge. To these people, Jack was capable of fighting Wesley.

Thinking Jack would not agree to the wager with the way how silent Jack was save for his sneer, Wesley frettingly added, "You're the number one disciple among those who are newly recruited. If you're

terrified now, what do you think others will think about you in the future?”

Jack spoke in a low-voice, “I do not care about how others think about me. Don’t you wish to fight me in the wager battle arena? I’ll grant you your wish, but I’m not doing this because of what you’ve said. I just feel that you deserve to be taught a lesson.”

A smile immediately appeared on Wesley’s face when Jack agreed to it. However, the last sentence Jack said was like pouring a bucket of dogs’ blood on his face, and the delighted expression immediately disappeared.

Wesley stared at Jack with gritted teeth, wanting nothing more than to rebuke him loudly. If the pavilion did not have rules that prevented them from fighting in private, he wanted to fold his sleeves and teach this gallant man a lesson.

This guy dared say that he needed to be taught a lesson. Nobody dared humiliate him in such a way throughout the years!

“Listen carefully, you b*stard. I’ll make you pay dearly.”

Jack raised his eyebrows and looked at Wesley calmly. “You can keep those fifty pieces of lowergrade spirited crystals as gifts for this faithful dog you have beside you. I’m not taking them. Let’s set the wager battle at the end of this month.”

It was the beginning of the month, and Jack kept enough time for himself by setting the wager battle a t the end of the month. However, the time period that Jack thought to be sufficient was just a blink of a neye in other people’s opinion.

After all, the time period of a month was still quite short, and it would not increase Jack’s fighting prowess much. What Jack had said not only slapped Wesley, but he also included the man with triangular eyes.

The man with triangular eyes was so furious that he pointed at Jack and trembled, almost lambasting him right then and there. However, Wesley stopped him.

Wesley turned around and spoke with narrowed eyes, “Alright! We’ll go according to the timing you set. You’ll have to remember it well, though. Don’t b e so terrified that you don’t show up by then.”

Jack returned to his room without looking back after he finished speaking. He closed the room door with a slam without replying to Wesley.

In Wesley’s opinion, such actions were no different from slapping him on the face. He was so angry that his entire body trembled. The man with triangular eyes started yelling, “Does this guy even know how t o follow the rules?! What a b*stard; he doesn’t understand the immensity of heaven and earth. Senior brother, you can’t let this guy off the hook easily when you guys meet in the wager battle arena!”

The corners of Wesley’s mouth curled into a ruthless sneer. “Don’t you worry. I’ll teach this guy a lesson within the margins allowed by the rules. I’ll show him who he can offend, and those that he can’t afford to.”

He waved his sleeves with a cold scoff before he left. The man with triangular eyes and the others also followed after Wesley like they were his henchmen.

The newly recruited informal disciples who originally came outside for a chat were in no mood to continue staying outside. What Wesley and the others said caused them to be quite upset. Some of them were so angry that their entire body quaked, but there was nothing they could do.

Chapter 1972

As they did not have the strength to defeat Wesley, they could only look forward to Jack avenging them. The news of Jack and Wesley meeting in the wager battle arena traveled as if they had wings on them. All the informal disciples learned of the news within a n hour.

Hence, everybody waited for time to pass, anticipating the lively battle. Jack once again asked Nash to

come out after he entered his own room and gave him a brief explanation about what had happened.

“I know that you’ve always been confident about your own strength, but it won’t be easy to go against Wesley,” fretted Nash. “Although Elder Lee praised that you should be one of the top three hundred informal disciples, Wesley is one of the top two hundred. Are you that confident in this duel with him?”

Jack shook his head, “I’m not a hundred percent confident right now.”

Nash naturally got nervous when he heard this, and h e instinctively sat up straight. “Then why did you agree to it?”

Jack pulled the teapot on the table over to pour two cups of tea for himself and his father. “I mean that I’m not a hundred percent confident now, but that doesn’t mean that I won’t be confident one month later. On top of that, I’ll have to face more trouble in the future if I don’t agree to it today. Just like what Wesley said, there are only thirty individual rooms like the one I’m staying in among the informal disciples. It’s possible that these people think that I’m not worthy of the room. If I don’t prove myself with my strength, there will be endless trouble in the future. It’s best to just solve the issue once and for all.”

Nash naturally knew about the helplessness Jack was feeling. This world had always followed the survival-of-the-fittest concept, and only those with sufficient power could take more resources. Jack understood this concept, and that was why he forcefully accepted this challenge from Wesley.

Jack drank a mouthful of tea and continued,” Nonetheless, I’ll investigate him before the fight. I need to at least understand why he’s the one who came instead of the others. Does he have any people supporting him, or was he ordered to do so by somebody else?”

Nash nodded and focused his eyes on Jack. “Then, how do you plan to train during the coming month?”

Jack drank his tea and exhaled before he said, “How can I train? I definitely have to enter the Soul Hall. I still have fifty pavilion contribution points with me, although I have no idea how long I can train in the

Soul Hall with fifty contribution points. However, I'm sure it's enough for me to give it a try. I need to a t least know how the Soul Hall helps raise the speed o f training for soul attribute martial skills."

The Soul Hall was located at the west side of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and was not very far away from where Jack stayed. After all, he was new here and only knew the general direction of the Soul Hall but had never visited the place. Hence, he simply pulled a runner disciple to lead the way for him.

This runner disciple was Brook Davis. A runner disciple was someone whose strength was not at the level of an informal disciple but still wanted to join the pavilion to train.

These people normally lacked the support from their families, and their lives were not enjoyable even if they did not join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. It was better if they joined the pavilion as a runner disciple. Although they had a slightly exhausting life, they were given the resources to support their training.

Brook naturally knew about Jack. Although Jack was not well-known among the higher level disciples as they might not know who he was, he was quite famous among the informal and runner disciples.

After all, he was about to challenge a person who was in the top 200 among the informal disciples by the end of the month. Brook dared not look down at Jack as there were some differences between their positions.

After a simple inquiry, Jack learned that Brook had been in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for four years, and he knew a lot about the things that happened in the pavilion.

Jack took this opportunity to ask about Wesley. Brook had a flattering smile on his face. "Not only is Senior brother Wesley stronger than usual informal disciples, but he has a strong background. Senior brother Wesley will break through into the initial stage of acquired level soon and become a formal disciple. He'll then become Elder Sayer's elder disciple."

Chapter 1973

Jack looked at Brook in surprise when he heard this. He could sense that Brook meant something else

from the way he spoke, and with a small frown, Jack asked, “He’ll become an elder disciple after just becoming a formal disciple?”

The steps in becoming a formal disciple had been noted in the jade identification card, but nothing was written in the jade strips about how to become an elder disciple or chosen disciple. Jack knew that the elder disciples were one level higher to usual formal disciples, but they were not much higher.

The most important disciples in the entire pavilion were the chosen disciples as they were the cream of the crop. Only those who were promoted to the chosen disciples level could train the martial art technique and martial skills of the highest level.

However, Jack had no idea how to become a chosen disciple.

Brook smiled politely; he must have realized that Jack did not know much about this stuff. Hence, he explained patiently, “Actually, the so-called elder disciples are when those informal and formal elders choose a disciple among the formal disciples as his chosen disciple, Senior brother Wesley is from the Sayer family, which is very famous in the Dual Sovereign City. The strongest master in the Sayer family happens to be the informal elder of our pavilion.

“Elders from usual pavilions will get members from their family to be their chosen disciples. In fact, the elder disciples might not be any stronger than other formal disciples. The only distinction is just their identity.”

Jack finally understood what the elder disciples meant after he heard what Brook said. The action of Elder Sayer taking in Wesley as his chosen disciple was, in fact, just taking the younger generation of his family under his wing. After all, this was the only way Wesley would get better grooming.

This would strengthen their family’s power, and it made sense why Wesley did not care if Jack would have a high achievement in the future. After all, he had Elder Sayer as support. He felt that even if Jack was able to go one step higher and take up an important position in the pavilion, Jack would not make things difficult for him because of Elder Sayer.

Jack sneered at the thought of this. If this was what h e had in mind, Jack could only say that he was too self-righteous.

Jack was not the kind of person who would muddle around. Those who dared go against him had to be prepared that he would retaliate against them. He walked with Brook as they conversed.

Jack asked one last question as they approached the Soul Hall. “Do you know how to become a chosen disciple?”

This was the million-dollar question Jack, one that Jack was focused on all this while. The pavilion would only focus on grooming a person after a person became a chosen disciple. Others would not dare trouble him because of his identity too.

Although Jack was not afraid about others causing him trouble, he wanted to focus more time on training

Brook replied, “There aren’t many obstacles to overcome if you want to become a chosen disciple. There’s no need to go through different layers of screening, but there’s only one word that you need t o obey.”

Jack raised his eyebrows in surprise after he heard this. “Which word?”

“Fight! There are a total of ten chosen disciples, and they’re the strongest disciples among all disciples. If you think that you have the strength to challenge the chosen disciples, you only need to challenge one of them. If you manage to defeat them, you become a chosen disciple.”

This did not scare Jack. Instead, a burning spark was ignited in his heart.

Chapter 1974

After absorbing the soul fragments of the great master, Jack experienced an even more vast world. Although the Hestia Continent was much stronger in terms of training when compared to the Cathysia world, they were still incomparable to the Divine Void World.

It was just the position of a chosen disciple in a small pavilion located at West Cercei Island of the Hestia Continent. Jack did not pay much attention to it. Brook raised his head and glanced at Jack before he secretly shook his head helplessly.

He was able to see how determined Jack was in wanting to be a chosen disciple. Throughout the years, he had interacted with an uncountable number of disciples, and he saw the same expression on their faces.

However, the determination to win would wear off within a year or two. It was really difficult to get to that position as the chosen disciples were the ten strongest people in the entire pavilion.

Although the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was nothing in the Hestia Continent, it was one of the top pavilions I n West Cercei Island. The pavilion recruited many of the geniuses from the West Cercei Island, and this was a concentration camp for prodigies.

To step on the shoulders of these geniuses to become one of the top ten among them would require a high amount of talent and strong willpower. Too many disciples had failed as they tried to climb into the position of chosen disciples, accepting their fate when they realized the lack of talents.

Jack was definitely different from the others; he was several times more talented than Brook. However, Brook felt that he was still not qualified to become a chosen disciple. Jack might be able to shine brightly among the formal disciples, but he would not be able to become one of the chosen disciples.

Nonetheless, he had a great impression on Jack. Some of the informal or formal disciples would look down on his identity as a runner disciple during their interaction. They would even yell at him and speak t o him condescendingly.

That never happened with Jack, and he looked at Brook as his junior brother. He could not help but remind Jack, “All our disciples can’t have a fighting prowess higher than the innate level. The stronger a person is doesn’t mean that he’ll get a higher position.”

Jack nodded. He also noticed this from the jade identification card. After all, when a pavilion groomed disciples, they would want to groom them during the time when they were worthy of grooming. The innate level was a level separation in West Cercei State.

All the disciples could not have a fighting prowess higher than the innate level. Once they break through the innate level and achieve the spirit assemblage level, they would leave the identity of disciple and take an important position in the pavilion.

Zeph and the rest were also in such a situation. They used to be disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and they started taking important positions in the pavilion after they broke through into the spirit assemblage level. They broke away from their identity as disciples and became administrative members of the pavilion.

This meant that even the chosen disciple with the highest fighting prowess would only be in the initial stage of acquired level, not breaking through into a higher level. Jack slightly nodded. He was able to identify the hidden meaning behind Brook’s words. H e was secretly reminding Jack that he could decide o n the strength and talents of those chosen disciples I n the way he usually thought.

“Thank you. I have one last question: Who’s in charge of the Soul Hall?”

Brook replied with a smile, “The Soul Hall doesn’t have any person in charge. They only have disciples who accepted missions. This is an opportunity to earn contribution points in a more laid-back manner.”

Jack immediately understood what was happening after he heard what Brook said. The masters who had broken through into the spirit assemblage level definitely could not be in charge of gathering the contribution points in the Soul Hall. That would be like making a fuss over a trifling matter.

Instead, the disciples who wanted to earn contribution points could help do the job. They could collect the contribution points and turn on the equipment in the Soul Hall.

The door of the Soul Hall seemed to be painted with black ink. Jack could feel his soul trembling from afar.

Chapter 1975

When Jack opened the door to enter the hall, he could not tell if his mind played tricks on him, or if h e truly felt it: He felt a wave of wind blowing toward him and went straight into his soul through his body. It unnerved him

The hall had very simple decorations, and there were several small doors at the back of the hall, the height of a man. All sorts of charms and markings were drawn on these doors, and with just a glance at these things, Jack felt his eye hurting so badly that he could not look at them.

A table was placed in front of these doors, and a disciple was dozing off behind the table. Jack knew that he was also an informal disciple from the way he was dressed, but Jack did not recognize him. He also knew that such assignments would not be given to newly recruited informal disciples. This must be an informal disciple who was his senior. That person supported his face with his hand and was so drowsy that his eyelids drooped.

Compared to other training grounds, not many people frequented the Soul Hall. After all, not many people practiced martial art techniques or martial skills of the soul attribute.

Noel Karl barely raised his head as he might have heard the footsteps or felt that somebody had entered the hall. He had a cold expression on his face, lazy as he was, though that did not upset Jack.

He raised his head and spoke in a clear voice," Greetings, Senior brother Noel."

Before entering this place, he had asked Brook who it was on duty at the Soul Hall. Noel had the same identity as Jack, but he had joined the pavilion for two years.

Two years was enough time for many informal disciples to become formal disciples, but Noel's talents were limited. Noel seemed to be extremely tired. He raised his eyebrows, frowning as he sized u p Jack.

"You must be the newly recruited informal disciple, are you?"

Jack nodded. There was no need to hide this fact, and he could not hide it even if he wanted to. Noel scoffed, seemingly derisive.

"What a rare sight for newcomers like you to visit the Soul Hall. The Soul Hall seldom receives visitors. Who would've expected for a newly recruited informal disciple to come here when I'm on duty today."

Noel emphasised the last sentence, and Jack understood what he meant. In the minds of these disciples who joined the pavilion via the usual assessment, those who came in due to 'special conditions were a joke. Putting all of them on the same pedestal was insulting to these informal disciples.

Noel's words might sound bad, but they were not as sharp as those spoken by Wesley.

Jack raised his eyebrows and said calmly, "Does our identity matter when it comes to practicing martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute? Are newly recruited informal disciples not allowed to enter the Soul Hall?"

These questions might have been asked with a calm tone, but there was also a hint of Jack's temper in the way he uttered them. Noel realized that this disciple was not a simpleton, and he did not have such an important background as Wesley did.

He was just a very common informal disciple. He did not have outstanding talents nor a bright future. Noel had not even broken through into the final stage of innate level at this moment.

Even if he managed to break through into the final stage of the innate level, he would have to accept the challenges from the disciples who have not broken through into the final stage of the innate level the moment he became a formal disciple. By then, he would only be forced to give up his position and return to the embarrassing identity of an informal disciple.

Chapter 1976

“You don’t have to speak to me like that; I have a reason for saying what I said. Martial art techniques o r martial skills with the soul attribute can be considered one of the more difficult to practice. I wouldn’t have any questions if you’ve practiced martial art techniques or martial skills of the five elements attributes. Think of this as me persuading you. Even the geniuses in the pavilion don’t simply train for the martial art techniques or martial skills with the soul attribute, let alone those like you, a newly recruited informal disciple.”

Noel did not exaggerate in his words. Among all the martial art techniques and martial skills, those that belonged to the five elements were the easiest to be practiced.

Even though the power unleashed after they achieved the level of completion was not as strong as the martial art techniques and martial skills of other attributes, it was easy to practice those, and the possibility of success was also much higher.

Noel rubbed his slightly red eyes and leaned back in his chair, unhurriedly continuing, “Throughout the years, those who were able to achieve the level of completion when practicing the martial art techniques or martial skills with the soul attribute are those extremely talented formal disciples. Even the chosen disciples wouldn’t simply try this unless your soul is very special, or you’re just extremely talented. I don’t think you’re any of those, though. Why else did you not join the proper informal disciple assessment and join the pavilion in such a way?”

For disciples like Noel, assessment for the informal disciples previously could not be considered as a usual way of assessing disciples. They could only describe this as an unusual way to do things at an unusual time.

Jack did not want to continue an entanglement on this issue with Noel, thus he calmly interjected, “I just chanced upon this opportunity. You don’t have t o teach me these things, Senior brother Noel. I came t

o the Soul Hall to increase my speed in training the martial skill, and I've already made up my mind. These words won't affect my decision."

Noel raised his eyebrows and chuckled in contempt. He was not that involved with Jack; he just wanted t o remind him out of goodwill. He would not waste time talking to Jack, then, since Jack was not appreciative.

He raised his chin toward Jack. "As per our usual rules, training for a day costs you ten pavilion contribution points. It doesn't matter how long you stay inside throughout the day-it'll still be counted as one day."

Ten contribution points each day?! This meant that the reward Jack obtained could only pay for five days in the hall!

Jack could not help but secretly exclaim at the thought.

This was quite expensive, more so than what he imagined it to be. He initially thought that the 50 pavilion contribution points he had were enough to support him to train for one month, but it seemed like wishful thinking at this point.

Noel seemed to have realized the slight surprise on Jack's face. With a cold smile, he commented, "Ten pavilion contribution points a day isn't expensive. You need to think about it: The Soul Hall requires the support of power while you're training, and this uses up a lot of spirited crystals. As payment for the power consumption, you only need to pay ten contribution points a day. Even I feel that this is quite a small amount that we need to pay."

Before he arrived, Jack had already heard that the Soul Hall was actually a large formation, and its function was to raise the speed of somebody practicing the martial art technique or martial skill that belonged to the soul attribute. Since it was a large formation, it required power to run itself, and this meant that a lot of spirited crystals were required. Considering this, ten contribution points a day could not be considered a huge amount.

Noel looked up and continued speaking, “I need to inform you something beforehand. I don’t care if you stay inside for as long as a joystick burns or as long a s somebody drinks a cup of tea, but you have to pay m e ten contribution points. Although ten contribution points isn’t a large amount, it’s great fortune enough for newly recruited informal disciples like yourself. Let me give you another piece of warning: People that are untalented like yourself shouldn’t waste time on martial art technique or martial skill with the soul attribute. The soul is something illusory and hard to understand.”

Chapter 1977

“Stop thinking that you’re stronger than any other person. Many had the same train of thoughts like you do, but they were examples to those who came after them that this is wishful thinking.” Noel was not reminding Jack; he was taunting Jack for overestimating himself. Just like what he said, there were so many disciples in the pavilion, but only a very small number of people practiced the martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute.

After all, the soul was an illusory thing, and it was untouchable like the five elements. Numerous seniors had trained the gold, wood, water, fire, and earth elements, and they could be used as references.

Jack merely gave a small nod wordlessly, to which Noel chuckled without a care and continued, “Since you insist on going in and wasting those ten contribution points, there’s nothing else I can say.”

Noel did not believe that Jack would be capable of hastening his mastery over his martial art techniques or martial skills after he entered the hall. To Noel, that was impossible. It might be possible if Jack had broken through into the intermediate stage of innate level, but judging Jack’s fighting prowess, he knew Jack had just achieved the initial stage of the innate level. He did not have the strength to have a soul enlightenment.

“I won’t waste my time talking nonsense with you. Pick a difficulty level-there are seven of them. The easiest one is level one, and difficulty level seven is exceptional. In fact, I don’t even have to ask you this. The most you can do is stay in difficulty level one, probably lasting as long as somebody finishing their tea or a joystick burning.” He lazily stood up from his chair and picked up the formation jade strips in front of him, adding a couple of runes that Jack did not understand on the jade strips.

Just as Noel was about to inject energy, however, Jack interrupted him.

“I’d like to train in difficulty level two.”

“What? You want to go for difficulty level two? Young man, can you not rush in when you know nothing? Even chosen disciples won’t be able to stay inside for longer than the time taken to finish tea if I start difficulty level two, let alone you!” Noel was borderline yelling at this point, looking at Jack as though he had gone crazy.

Exasperatedly, Noel added, “You shouldn’t think that there isn’t a big difference in the levels when there are only seven difficulty levels. I’m telling you that there’s a big difference, and opening the difficulty level two has a stronger effect on the soul that’s several times more than difficulty level one. People like you won’t be able to take it once you enter the formation. You’ll be forced out by the strong souls inside, and you might change the level later. You have to be joking with me right now.”

Even after Noel finished his rant, Jack’s expression did not change much. “I want difficulty level two.”

Noel was rendered speechless instantly, and the corners of his mouth twitched. He felt that not only was this guy’s brain filled with water, he probably had been kicked by a donkey, too. He spent his energy explaining things, only for it to be wasted as this guy ignored everything.

He chuckled and felt that Jack was absurd. “Young man, do you think that I’m joking with you? If you can’t take it, your soul might be wounded. A soul wound isn’t funny, and I need to be responsible for that. It doesn’t matter if you end up dead or disabled for life, but you might cause me to be punished by the upper management. Who did I offend to end up with this?”

Chapter 1978

Noel grew increasingly angry as he spoke. He could not help but rush forward to slap Jack harshly on his naïve-etched face so that he would wake up from his daydream. He would not have said so much to Jack if he would not be severely involved if Jack’s soul was hurt.

“Do you know what you’re talking about? Adjusting the difficulty level to level two, and I’m sure that

you won't last longer than a person drinking their tea. You'll come running out with your tail between your legs after I take several breaths." Noel looked at Jack like he was looking at a stubborn fool. Jack sighed lightly, knowing very well that his actions must translate to him being an idiot in the eyes of people like Noel.

However, he did this because he did not want to waste time. After all, the usual difficulty would not b e a huge improvement to a martial skill at the level o f the Destroying the Void. In fact, he asked Noel to adjust the difficulty to level two because he did not understand if this was useful to him under such difficulty.

Jack said helplessly, "You don't need to worry. If anything happens to me when I'm inside, I'll inform the elders or deacons that I did this on my own will, that it had nothing to do with you. I'll make sure that this won't implicate you."

Noel lightly curled the corners of his mouth, no longer knowing what to say. He rolled his eyes and said, "Nevermind. Since you insist on ignoring my persuasion and ignore the possibility of wounding yourself, there's nothing much that I can say. I need t o tell you, though, that the wounds to the soul can't b e stopped by common pills, and it'll directly affect your training in the future. You shouldn't lose your future because of your temporary curiosity or because you want to act tough to me."

Jack raised his eyebrows and said calmly, "You don't have to worry; I'm in no mood to act tough in fronto fanyone. You can just adjust the difficulty level to level two."

Noel scoffed, thinking to himself that Jack would not give up unless he faced the consequences. From the insufferably arrogant expression on Jack's face when he spoke, he seemed to think that he could stay in the difficulty level two area for one to two days.

He wanted to see the expression on this guy's face when he could not stand it anymore and came out himself. Noel stretched out his hand, harrumphing a s he declared, "Hand over your identification card. I'll deduct the contribution points to pay for one day."

Jack nodded and handed Noel his identification card obediently. Noel proficiently deducted ten of Jack's contribution points. Although it was merely ten points, Jack still felt unhappy about it.

There were only 40 pavilion contribution points left o n his identification card, and he would finish the remaining 40 points soon. If he wanted to continue training, he had to make time and earn himself some contribution points.

“Alright, I’ve arranged the difficulty and set the time. You can go in now. Let me just make something clear: If anything happened to you inside, it has nothing to do with me. I’ve already persuaded you and all, and you should stop acting tough. Just get out if you can’t handle it. Don’t force yourself to withstand things as it isn’t worth it when your soul gets wounded, turning you into a dummy.”

Jack nodded as he put his identification card away. H e walked toward one of the small doors that was onemantall behind him. However, Noel spoke up again behind him as he was about to cross the threshold,” You need to understand that even chosen disciples have a record of staying inside for a maximum of three days and three nights. If you turn into a dummy because of your impulsive moves, I’ll be affected by your actions.”

Noel felt his head hurt when he thought of this possibility. This newly recruited informal disciple is like an idiot who could not be stopped even if ten bulls were pulling him back.

If something bad happened to Jack inside, Noel would be implicated if he could not explain that he had already persuaded Jack but Jack insisted on entering the room. He could be punished if it was something minor, or he could be imprisoned if it was something serious.

He felt his stomach hurt when he thought about this.

Jack nodded without turning back. He understood that Noel was telling him all this crap because Noel was worried for his personal gain, but that was understandable.

Chapter 1979

This was a pitch-black world, and it made a person’s heart tingle. Everything around him was enveloped I n darkness. Jack stretched out his hand and subconsciously groped around him, but there was nothing

around him. It did, however, make him feel a s if it was difficult to walk.

The space he was in was very different from the space outside, and the darkness in this place was also very much different compared to the darkness outside. If he compared the space outside like a clear spring in a stone pond, this area was like a pot of cooked porridge as it had an unspeakable stickiness t o it.

He balled both his hands into fists, and it seemed like he had caught the space around him in his hands. This was the true center area of the Soul Hall, and it was also the place that could help him improve his training of martial skill.

In fact, he was able to recognize from what Noel said that it was not easy to train here. However, he did not back away and continued to walk two steps ahead. As he was about to walk forward again, the abrupt sound of gusts blowing over treetops subconsciously startled him.

Following that, another wave of wind came blowing toward him. This gust was different from the usual wind outside. It blew straight toward Jack, ignoring the skin and bones, blasting straight against his soul. The wind felt like sharp knives, and it was an unspeakable pain. It was so painful that Jack could not stand, causing him to kneel.

“Why is it so painful?” Jack subconsciously wailed. The strong wind continued to blow toward him, blasting right against his soul. It felt like a large ax was dealt against his soul.

This hurt several times more compared to the attack against Jack’s body. Jack had a higher pain endurance compared to common folk, but he still wailed out in pain. His breathing also slowed down. Was this what it meant by the second level of difficulty?

No wonder Noel repeatedly said that this level of difficulty was not something usual people could withstand, and what he said seemed to be true. Jack dared not delay and started activating Destroying the Void. He allowed the activation tactics of Destroying the Void to continuously course in his body.

After three turns, Jack managed to slightly subdue the soul-stabbing pain. Jack had to thank the fact that he did not practice a common martial skill, but a martial skill that was at least at the heaven level.

Activating usual martial skill would also make it difficult to withstand such impacts on the soul. Following the suppression of such pain, Jack also started to understand the waves of soul power lashing out on his body.

It turned out that the wind blowing toward his body was not wind. In fact, they were soul-shockwaves formed by the coagulation of souls. These soulshockwaves were not aggressive and seemed to be formed by the gathering of actual souls. He could even feel the last wails of these souls to the world before they physically perished.

“Let go of me! I don’t want to die!”

“You b*stard! You filthy, worthless *sshole! I’ve groomed you with so much care throughout the years, and you repay me by betraying me! You even killed me!”

“I’m sorry… Can you please let go of my child? You only hate me, but this has nothing to do with my child. My death would’ve paid for all my debts.”

The last words of the dead had been integrated into the souls. These words rang incessantly in Jack’s ears as the souls transformed into soul-shockwaves that flurried toward Jack. The desire to stay alive and the fear of death continuously challenged Jack’s determination.

Chapter 1980

The shockwaves formed by the concentration of souls kept rushing into Jack’s soul. Although the activation of the Destroying the Void by Jack withstood the pain brought on by these soulshockwaves, he was not entirely immune to them. The soul-shockwaves came rushing toward him continuously and caused Jack’s soul to feel waves of stabbing pain.

This, however, did not trouble Jack-he was, in fact, delighted. After all, he had finally found the crucial

reason as to why he could not form the second soul sword. In the past, Jack's soul had been extremely stable, and he would not feel anything extraordinary I f he was not stimulated.

Just like what Noel had said, the soul was an illusory item. Without special stimulants, Jack was able to feel the soul but was unable to feel many other things. However, these soul-shockwaves kept charging against Jack's soul, inflicting impact after impact. Jack also used this opportunity to master the motion of his soul.

Forming a soul sword happened to require the soul motion and everybody's soul motion was different. This was why the great master's perceptions and experiences were unable to help Jack in forming the soul sword.

The great master had a different soul motion compared to Jack, and when he practiced Destroying the Void, he was extremely powerful. Hence, it was a simple thing for him to feel his soul motion, which was completely different for Jack. Jack was not so strong at the moment, and he was unable to feel or master his soul motion as easily as the great master,

However, Jack was able to slowly do it under the attack of the soul-shockwaves. He held his breath and gathered his attention, allowing the soulshockwaves to continuously attack his soul. He then activated the Destroying the Void and continued in his attempt to form the second soul sword!

In the Soul Hall, different disciples were in charge of the matters there at different time periods. Noel would be the Soul Hall's minor steward for 20 days, and unless something unexpected happened, he would be the highest person in charge of the Soul Hall.

Of course, Noel was not the only one guarding the Soul Hall during this period. Two other runner disciples were in charge of the hall's cleanliness, and the person in charge of cleaning this day was somebody Noel was very familiar with, Zayn Allen.

The two of them were relatives, and even though they were not as close, they shared a much better relationship than the others.

Zayn made his way into the Soul Hall in a familiar manner with the cleaning tools in his hands. He immediately saw Noel standing in front of the Array Eye Door in an upright manner, which puzzled him.

Normally, Noel would be sleeping on the table when he had some free time. Zayn seldom saw Noel standing in front of the Array Eye Door with his eyes fixated on the door as if he was studying something.

Zayn raised his eyebrows and subconsciously asked," Senior Brother Noel, what are you looking at?!"

Noel was obviously startled by Zayn's voice as his entire body trembled, his expression contorted darkly. "What are you yelling for? Is there something wrong with you?! You frightened me!"

Zayn, meanwhile, seemed to have had his fair share o f teachings from Noel during normal days, and he seemed unfazed by these horrible words. He continued to look at Noel in curiosity.

There was nothing different with the Array Eye Door. There were still runes and seals that he did not understand on the door. Was Noel investigating the formation on the Array Eye Door?

Chapter 1981

Was Noel studying the possibility of a second career after he failed to have impressive breakthroughs in his training?

Zayn pointed at Array Eye Door and asked, "Senior Brother Noel, do you plan to learn about formations?"

This was the only explanation Zayn could think of. After all, a person who could practice the martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute was no common person. Only extremely powerful formal or chosen disciples would try to practice it.

There was only one possibility for Noel to stand in front of the Array Eye Door like this: The person

training inside was a top chosen disciple from the pavilion. Noel wanted to fawn over this disciple, which was why he waited politely in front of the door. However, Zayn felt that there was a small possibility of this happening as he could not make out the expression on Noel's face.

There was a hint of surprise among the confusion, and there also seemed to be slight helplessness shown on his face. After hearing what Zayn said, Noel replied to him, even though he was reluctant to speak, "It isn't a chosen disciple. How can they be inside when none of the ten chosen disciples practiced the martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute recently? It's a recruit who's inside. A very, very new recruit."

Noel emphasized the last sentence, which Zayn noticed. An exceptionally new recruit? Was there not only one type of extremely new recruit in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion? They were the newly recruited informal disciples.

Was it possible that the person training inside the Array Eye Door was one of the newly recruited informal disciples? If that was the case, Zayn was even more confused.

After all, Zayn had been staying in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for several years and had a great understanding of their rules. These newly recruited informal disciples were cannon fodder recruited due t o the battle that was about to happen, and there were not many of them who were talented in training. If not, they would have joined the pavilion through the usual recruitment. Zayn was slightly surprised that somebody among these newly recruited disciples was practicing martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute.

What surprised him even more was that a complete newbie caused Noel to stand in front of the Array Eye Door.

Zayn was so curious that he asked, "Is there something weird about this guy? You seemed to be very interested in him."

Noel subconsciously narrowed his eyes and took a deep breath in before he said, "I can't blame you for thinking that I'm acting weird, but do you know something? This guy had already been there for a day!"

Even Noel felt something was wrong after he said this. A normal person could never persist for an entire day. He had also entered the formation, and he knew the pain the soul-shockwaves could cause the soul. It was difficult for disciples to persist after they felt the pain.

Before Jack entered the formation, Noel told him that he was quite strong if he managed to stay inside as long as a joystick burned or as long as somebody drank a cup of tea. This was not to intimidate Jack, though-this was a fact.

Chapter 1982

Noel had seen people that had just started practicing martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute enter the Array Eye Door to train in the past. However, none of those people managed to stay inside for more than an hour.

Persisting for more than one hour meant that this person had extremely strong fighting prowess…but that Jack guy had gone in for one whole day. If the formation was not running normally, Noel would have suspected that this guy had died inside.

After all, that guy acted so stubbornly. If Jack had only persisted for a couple of hours in the formation, Noel would have suspected that this guy insisted on staying, acting all tough for him to see.

However, he denied his previous thoughts when an entire day had passed, and there was no sign of that person coming out. If he insisted on staying inside without concerns of his soul being hurt, Noel would not be able to persist for such a long time. Zayn gaped upon hearing this.

He also knew that somebody once broke a record in the Array Eye Door by staying inside for three days and three nights. However, this person was one of the top chosen disciples.

Although it was surprising that Jack was able to persist for such a long time in the Array Eye Door, it was not something incredibly astonishing. However, when Noel said that the person training in the Array Eye Door was a newly recruited informal disciple, Zayn was so surprised that his jaw dropped.

“What?! A newly recruited informal disciple stayed inside for one whole day?! Oh my god, this guy is really strong! It looks like he’s extremely talented in training for martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute. Sure, he’s not at the level of the chosen disciples, but this is a great feat already!”

No wonder Noel stood before the Array Eye Door in a silent daze. He seemed to have been surprised by this young man’s talents.

Zayn did not expect the soft sigh from Noel, who seemed surprised and somewhat confused altogether.

After some time, Noel slowly opened his mouth and muttered, “You’re wrong.”

Zayn’s eyes widened when he heard this. He made a mistake? What did he say wrongly? Was there something else to this young man?

“Senior Brother Noel, what was I wrong about?”

Noel exhaled deeply and said, relatively reluctant,“ This young man is already much more talented than the chosen disciple with the highest record.”

Zayn almost bit his own tongue when he heard this. This guy was even more talented than the chosen disciple? How? Had he not just stayed inside for a day? How could he be more talented than the extremely talented chosen disciple?

Noel continued to speak word by word when he saw that Zayn could not wrap his mind about what was going on, “That guy activated the difficulty level two.”

The previous chosen disciple stayed in the Array Eye Door for a total of three days and three nights. Although it was astonishing, he only activated the level one difficulty…while Jack activated the difficulty

level two.

Level two was several times more difficult compared t o level one. How could a normal person stay inside for one whole day? This was what Noel had to acknowledge, even though he was reluctant to do so. Zayn was so surprised when he heard this that his eyebrows almost flew out of his face.

What?! This guy activated the level two difficulty?! Regular disciples would never activate the level two difficulty unless they were about to break through into the spring solidifying realm. No matter how strong a newly recruited informal disciple was, he should be in the initial stage of innate level.

A disciple in the initial stage of innate level had gone into the level two Array Eye Door of difficulty level two?!

Zayn felt that his mind could not process what was happening

Chapter 1983

Noel glanced at Zayn and scoffed lightly, though he understood why Zayn's face seemed to have frozen. Zayn's disbelief was also the representation of his inability to believe in what was happening. Noel took a deep breath and slowly said, "No wonder that guy could talk to me in such a way. It turns out that I've bumped into an exceptional genius, after all."

Zayn was unable to contain his surprise. "Who's this person? Which newly recruited informal disciple is he?"

Noel frowned as he spoke, "You might not know who it is if it was just some random person, but I'm sure you've heard of him. He's Jack, the person who agreed to fight Wesley on the wager battle arena."

The fight between Wesley and a newly recruited informal disciple spread like wildfire among the informal disciples, and this was treated like gossip. After all, nobody thought that Jack would be able to defeat Wesley-it was impossible. What Wesley did was despicable, but he did not seem to be fazed, seeing as he had a strong background.

On top of that, the fact that Jack had an individual room was a cause for jealousy. Even if Wesley did not come forward to do this, there would be other disciples fighting against Jack for the room.

Noel also had the same thoughts in the past, but he had already denied these ideas. “It looks like Wesley I s going to suffer this time. This young man is no regular man.”

Zayn slightly nodded before he quickly shook his head after he heard this. He thought about it carefully and said, “We can’t say that for sure. After all, Wesley had been training in the pavilion for some time, and he’s one step ahead in both talent and strength. Although Jack is quite talented in the soul attribute, we’re not sure how long he’s been training the martial art techniques and martial skills for. If he’s new at this, Jack would never be Wesley’s opponent.”

Noel subconsciously raised his eyebrows after he heard this, but he eventually nodded after carefully thinking about it. What Zayn said made sense; there were some differences between their capabilities.

It was true that Jack was quite talented in the soul attribute, but they had no idea how long he had been practicing the martial art techniques and martial skill of this attribute. If he had just started, he was n o match for Wesley. Noel sighed softly in understanding when he thought of this.

“No wonder that guy agreed to the fight without any hesitation. It seems that he’s absolutely confident about his talents. However, he had underestimated the strength of our disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Even though he’s talented, the difference in realm is there, and it isn’t so easy for that guy to cross over so easily.”

Zayn nodded in agreement and commented, “That’s true. Shall we inform Wesley about this and ask him t o be careful? After all, the martial art techniques and martial skills of the soul attribute are mysterious and unpredictable. Normal people will get hurt easily if they aren’t prepared.”

Noel frowned. He knew that if he informed Wesley about this news, he was doing Wesley a favor. Unfortunately, that would also mean offending Jack at the same time. Offending a newly recruited informal disciple was nothing in the past but Jack was not a normal new recruit. The others might not

know this, but he was able to see this.

Thinking things through, Noel shook his head decisively. “We can’t allow this news to spread. Even I fothers learn about Jack’s talents, it can’t be coming from the both of us.”

Chapter 1984

“Wesley is such an arrogant person, and he never pays attention to others. Even if we did this favor for him, he might not remember us. We’ll probably offend Jack in the process, though, which isn’t worth it.” Noel decided to keep his mouth shut after he thought about it. Although this would be huge news if people learned about this, it meant nothing t o the others who did not benefit from this, and Noel was not willing to take this risk. Zayn kept quiet, but his gaze darted around as he entertained the idea.

Noticing Zayn’s silence, Noel turned to look at him, only to see from Zayn’s expression that he knew he was up to no good.

Noel instantly grew angry for his stupidity, snapping, “What are you thinking about? I know you want to get acquainted with Wesley, seeing how well -known he is as compared to you, and you might have a great future if you manage to get into his good books. However, you need to understand that Wesley isn’t someone you can fawn over just because you wish to do so. Apart from that, he’s not the brightest bulb out there. He’s all pompous and haughty because he has somebody to rely on. Even if you tell him about this, he’ll repay you with some benefits, but nothing exciting. On the contrary, you might offend Jack because of this.”

Zayn frowned as he felt that what Noel said made sense. However, this did not dismiss Zayn’s desire to climb the social ladder.

Noel exhaled deeply. He would not have spent the time to say such things if this was somebody else, but this was Zayn, his relative. If news of this spread, Jack would suspect that he was the one who did it. H e did not want to offend Jack because of this.

He turned around and said righteously, “If you tell anybody about this, I’ll be the first one to teach you a lesson. Have you forgotten how Wesley treats runner disciples like you? Do you think that he’ll look at

you differently just because you informed him about this? If I was you, I'd pray for less trouble. Even if you plan to be somebody's follower, you need to see who that person is."

These words reminded Zayn about how hard it was to get along with Wesley. He also recalled how Wesley used to order around runner disciples like him. In fact, he would also hit them as it was not a big deal to the pavilion if informal disciples hit runner disciples, so long as the person was not badly wounded. Recalling these, Zayn shook his head and decided that it was best to keep this news hidden.

In the Array Eye Door, Jack could feel his soul motion under the stimulation of the soulshockwaves. The second soul sword that he struggled with, one that he could not form before, was slowly taking form.

After a day and a half, Jack finally managed to form the second soul ṣword. He had great improvements o n his training of Destroying the Void. Raising his hand, two streaks of black light slowly appeared in Jack's hands, though one of them was still lighter in color.

This was the second soul sword that Jack had just succeeded in forming. He continuously drew runes with his fingers, and these two soul swords moved continuously by following the runes.

The swords were not moving speedily, but his control was much stronger compared to when he first mastered the soul sword. If Jack was asked to fight Warren with a single soul sword at this point, Jack might not miss his target again.

Jack exhaled deeply. These two soul swords existed independently, and if Jack was able to merge them together, the power would be several times stronger. Unfortunately, Jack could not achieve that just yet.

Jack raised his head and took a look at the pitchblack surrounding when he thought of this. The area still had a stickiness to it, and this seemed to be an independent space. Soul-shockwaves filled the entire area.

Jack did not feel much under the soul-shockwaves. After all, the success in forming the second soul sword meant that Jack had improved greatly. His control over his soul and the stability of his soul had

also become much stronger.

Chapter 1985

The effect of the soul motion at this level did not have much effect on Jack. He slowly stood up from the ground and walked toward the direction where h e came from, where he entered, before he felt blocked off after a few steps.

He stretched out his hand and pushed, feeling the surrounding space becoming sticky again, one that instantly enveloped around Jack. However, Jack had returned to the Soul Hall within a breath.

He saw Noel, who was standing in front of the Array Eye Door deep in his own thoughts. Noel was shocked by Jack's sudden appearance and subconsciously took a step back. As a day and a half had passed, Noel's initial surprise had gradually dissipated. He was still standing in front of the Array Eye Door to observe when Jack would come out.

He initially thought that Jack would be in a flustered, tired state after he came out from the Array Eye Door. However, Jack looked very energetic at that moment, as if he had a good night's sleep. The corners of Noel's mouth twitched as he inwardly sighed about how crazy this young man was. The contemptuous expression he originally had on his face disappeared with a twitch of his mouth.

"You're finally out! I wondered if something was wrong with the formation if you continued to stay inside." Many people would be astonished by the news of him spending a day and a half in the Array Eye Door with the level-two difficulty.

This guy finally could not stand it anymore. If he continued to train in the formation, Noel would have really doubted if something was wrong with the formation. He would wonder if the powerful soulshockwaves inside had disappeared.

Jack nodded. He took a deep look at Noel and suddenly said, "You didn't spread news about this, did you?"

After understanding the Soul Hall's level of difficulty, an idea formed in Jack's heart. He absolutely could not allow this news to leak out. After all, Wesley would be prepared if that happened. Wesley had people supporting him, and if he asked Elder Sayer to provide him with some defensive weapons, Jack would lose the upper hand.

The corners of Noel's mouth twitched. Fortunately, h e did not leak the news. Jack was much more vigilant and had a scheming heart compared to what he had expected. Sure enough, talented people with great fighting prowess were very smart.

He coughed softly and deliberately suppressed the emotions in his eyes as he spoke calmly, "Don't worry. I won't leak news about this, and nobody will know as long as you don't let others learn of what happened by accident. I've already ordered the runner disciples working here to not say a word."

Jack felt better about Noel upon hearing his response. This guy was smarter than he had anticipated. Jack nodded. "Thank you for that." Jack did not have any friends in the pavilion. From what he observed about Noel, he seemed to be a person suitable to be his friend.

Noel took a step back, turned, and walked toward the table.

Since Jack came out from the Array Eye Gate, he had to shut down the formation. After all, activating the formation meant a constant consumption of spirited crystals. Although the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was a large pavilion in the Wet Cercei Island, it could not afford such a high consumption rate.

After all, there were so many disciples in the entire pavilion, and the combined consumption of all these disciples was definitely no small amount.

"You were there for a day and a half, so I need to deduct 20 contribution points from you. I've already deducted ten points previously, so you need to pay another ten." He raised his hand to activate the formation, but Jack raised his hand to stop Noel's actions. 1

Noel looked up in surprise as Jack spoke calmly, "I didn't come out to stop practicing. On the contrary,

difficulty level two was too weak, and I need you to adjust the difficulty level. You can adjust it to level four straight away."

Chapter 1986

Noel almost thought there was something wrong with his ears when he heard what Jack said. He subconsciously asked, 'What did you say? What do you want to adjust?'

Jack subconsciously touched his nose when he saw Noel's shocked expression. He had thought about whether Noel could accept it if he acted overly exaggerated before he came out. If the incident with Wesley did not happen, he might stop to think about the consequences. However, Jack was obviously not I n the mood to think about this.

He softly exhaled before repeating himself, "I said that I want to adjust the difficulty to level four. Please do the adjustments for me."

This time, Noel heard what he was saying very clearly. At the same time, his expression turned rigid as he opened his mouth widely while his eyes almost popped out of their sockets.

The corners of his mouth slightly trembled. "Have you gone crazy? Are you crazy or am I crazy? You want to adjust it to difficulty level four? Do you understand what the concept of level four is? Even the deacons of the pavilion dare not simply challenge this difficulty. You might become a dummy from the soul-shockwaves after you go in."

Jack raised his eyebrows and slightly nodded. "I know and I have my own plans. You just need to help me make the adjustments."

Noel felt that his entire body was about to turn rigid. He realized that everything he said did not work on Jack. If he had not seen Jack's talents with his own eyes, he would definitely suspect if Jack had gone crazy. If not, why would he say such crazy things? He softly inhaled as he looked at Jack up and down several times with a tangled expression on his face.

“I know that you are very talented and you’ve surpassed all of us. Even the chosen disciples might b e incomparable to you in terms of the soul attribute. However, this doesn’t mean that you can simply challenge the difficulty of the Soul Hall. If I really adjust the difficulty to level four, you might just die inside. Do you understand?”

Jack nodded and said truthfully, “I’ve considered these things, don’t worry about it as I’m confident in myself.”

The corners of Noel’s mouth twitched and he finally understood. Jack would ignore him even if he tore those words apart and placed them in front of Jack.

He slightly swallowed his saliva and it had been years since he was appointed this errand. Throughout the years, he had seen many talented disciples training I n the Soul Hall. However, he had never seen anyone adjusting the difficulty to level four. Even masters who had achieved the spring solidifying level would not simply try it. After all, the soul-shockwaves at level four would directly tear the soul.

There were no changes in Jack’s expression when he said those words just now. Until this moment, Noel finally realized that Jack would never listen to anything he said no matter how much he persuaded Jack.

He sighed while shaking his head. He stretched out his hand to pick up the array board. The runes on the array board kept changing and were showing different colors. Adjusting the formation only required changes of several runes and it was a simple task for an informal disciple. He stretched out his slender fingers and plucked the array board on the formation that caused clicking sounds.

After several breaths, Noel suddenly raised his head t o look toward Jack as if he had completed something important in his life. “I’ve made the adjustments. To be honest, this is the first time I’ve adjusted the difficulty to level four and you’ve done something unprecedented. Anyways, I’ve already done all the persuasion I can and there’s nothing I can do if something really happens to you inside.”

Jack slightly nodded and only said, “I have my own considerations.”

Chapter 1987

He turned around and walked toward the Array Eye Door after he finished speaking. His steady steps and indifferent facial expression caused Noel to be stunned on spot once again. In Noel's eyes, Jack's image had completely changed. He was like a rock that never changed, regardless of wind and rain. Maybe this person could really create miracles. However, he subconsciously shook his head when he thought about how crazy the soul-shockwaves of difficulty level four were.

It was still an area of sticky darkness and it was even more viscous compared to the difficulty level two previously. This time, the space even blocked Jack from walking forward. He felt the space surrounding him seemed to be filled with two buckets of glue and they were sticking to every single corner of his body, preventing him from moving forward.

However, the resistance was not extremely strong. After he exerted twice the strength he exerted previously, he was still able to walk three steps forward. This was where he stood the last time.

At that moment, the familiar creaking sound could b e heard again. A strong soul motion came blowing over with a swooshing sound and it was so strong that it made it difficult to breathe. This soul shockwave was obviously several times stronger than the previous soul-shockwaves. It ignored Jack's body and directly hit on his soul.

This time, the attack not only caused a tingling sensation on the soul but also blurred his spirit. It felt like a thousand ants were biting his soul and they were dragging him into the abyss while eating him.

Jack once again screamed in agony. He thought that after his first experience, he would be able to persist during his second time of facing the soulshockwaves, even though the intensity was several times stronger. However, it seemed like he had underestimated how terrifying the level four soulshockwaves were! With a muffled bang, Jack's legs turned into jelly and he directly fell to the ground.

He was still capable of supporting himself the first time he fell. However, the impact this time took away all his strength and he fell straight to the ground. What scared Jack the most was the fact that the soul-shockwave was invading his soul and changing his soul motions. This caused Jack to be on alert.

Under the attack of such strong soul-shockwaves, Jack became mentally ambiguous. However, he was extremely sure of one thing. If he did not quickly make the adjustments, he might end up like what Noel said.

He would die in this place!

He forcefully inhaled and bit his own lower lips with his last bit of energy. The pain allowed him to keep his consciousness. He used all his strength to support his body as he continuously wrote out the runes to activate the Destroying the Void with his hands!

Two black lights gradually gathered in his palms and they were the soul swords he successfully performed previously. Both soul swords were held by Jack in his palms. He lightly gripped onto them and both soul swords turned into a layer of thin mist, covering Jack's body. They withstood the strong soulshockwaves on behalf of Jack!

This was truly a Heaven-level martial skill as it was still able to withstand the attack while facing such strong soul-shockwaves. Although it was just a barrier formed by two soul swords, it was strong and persistent, just like crested dogs' tails under strong wind!

With this layer of protection, Jack was finally able to relax. What he had to do right now was to form the third soul sword. If he could only form two soul swords, Jack was not certain that he could completely defeat Wesley. After all, Wesley could be considered a genius disciple and could not be looked down upon.

However, forming the third soul sword was not an easy task. Under the continuous impact from the souls, Jack felt his soul motion with much difficulty and used it to successfully form the soul sword.

Chapter 1988

Jack was gritting his teeth, not wanting to give up. A t the same time, Wesley had entered the Seven Stars Hall and was greeting the other disciples. He was becoming quite the celebrity there. Although he provoked a newly promoted informal disciple, and it was not good to talk about it, Wesley did not feel disgraceful in doing so, because he did it under the pretense of so-called uprightness. He told anyone

within earshot that an incompetent person like Jack did not deserve to have his own room and he did so under the name of justice.

“Brother Chaz, are you here to get an assignment too? Did you come across any new and interesting assignments? I just spent the last of my three hundred assignment points. I plan to go to the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall to redeem an elementary red level martial art technique once I have enough points,” said Wesley.

Chaz turned around, glanced at Wesley, and said, “N o, I didn’t. I don’t think there will be any good assignments since the Clan association is getting ready to go into battle with the Muddled Origin Clan. We’ll have to wait for that to end before any good assignments will come our way.”

Wesley sighed gently and in a resigned tone said, “I really need to get a good assignment since I’m so broke. I originally planned to level up as much as possible before the battle but now it seems like I have to fill my hunger first.” Of course, by ‘hunger’, Wesley did not mean hunger for food but hunger for martial art techniques and martial skills.

Chaz raised an eyebrow. “I would have believed those words if it came out of anyone else’s lips but definitely not from yours. I trust that Elder Sayer ensures you’ll get a constant supply of martial art techniques and skills.

Wesley chuckled and said in a dignified tone,” Although he’s an elder of my clan, he’ll never break the rules of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for a junior like me.” Every Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciples had to redeem the martial art techniques and skills with their own assignment points; if Elder Sayer broke the rules for Wesley, it would surely bring dishonor to Sayer’s family name.

Chaz’s eyebrow shot up again but he remained quiet out. He cupped his hand in salute and made his way t o the exit. The Seven Stars Hall was situated in the middle of the Clan association and was only one road away from Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall. From this alone, one could tell just how important the Hall was in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. There were always disciples going to and fro in the Seven Stars Hall to get assignments so they could earn some points to redeem martial art techniques and skills. Unless one became the chosen disciple, then no disciple would survive long without assignment points.

Wesley glanced at Chaz's retreating figure and scoffed, "What gives him the right to be so cocky! He's only in the top thirty ranking for informal disciples. There are more disciples who are stronger than me. Gah! He's so infuriating!"

Chaz would feel wrong if he had heard what Wesley said because he had done his best not to cause any offense to him already. Wesley did not say it to his face because he wanted to be on Chaz's good side as h e was stronger than him. Although it was true that Wesley had the backing of his clan, he should still tread carefully as his ranking was in the top two hundred, a far cry from Chaz's.

However, Wesley never thought that the difference I n power between them was due to talent but time. H e strongly believed that given more time, he would surely surpass Chaz and would not need to act all polite in front of him anymore. Suddenly, he heard his name being called and he did not even need to turn his back to find out who it was. If Jack was there, he would surely have recognized that person too as he was the man with triangular eyes who caused trouble for him and the person who sucks up t o Wesley the most.

Chapter 1989

The man with triangular eyes smiled and said, " Brother Wesley, I've been looking all over for you! The young servant said that you've gone to the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall. It took me a while to ask around before the people there told me you've come to the Seven Stars Hall."

Wesley raised his eyebrow and did not even turn around to look at him. "What do you want? Let me put this out first, I'm very busy so you better not bother me with trifling matters!" he said in a low voice.

The man with triangular eyes did not take Wesley's tone to heart as if it did not diminish his desire to please him one bit. "You've asked me to keep an eye on Jack White and now I'm here to report that he had gone to the Soul Hall!"

Wesley snapped his neck to look him up and down when he heard that. "Did you say Jack went to the Soul Hall? Isn't he at the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall to redeem some martial art techniques or skills with his fifty points? What is he doing in the Soul Hall anyways? Is he planning to cultivate his soul?"

Wesley found this funny and the man with triangular eyes nodded his head. “He definitely went to the Soul Hall and from what I’ve heard, he entered the Array Eye Door so there’s a high chance he went there to cultivate a soul attribute martial art techniques or skills.”

Wesley could not hold back his laughter anymore as I f he had heard the funniest joke in the universe. He laughed so hard that he was clutching his stomach while bent over and his laughter made the other disciples look over. “Oh my god! There must be a screw loose in his head. Did he go mad from my tauntings? I would be more scared if he had gone to the Wooden Spirit Hall or the Golden Spirit Hall, but the Soul Hall? Pure madness! Doesn’t he know how hard it is to attain a soul attribute skill? I admit the attack power of a soul attribute skill is powerful and not many people can neutralize it but this also means not everyone can attain the skill. He has definitely gone mad.”

The man with triangular eyes smiled and said, “I totally agree with you but I’m curious where he got the soul attribute skill from.” By logic, Jack’s soul attribute skill could never be a match to all the skills I n the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall. Most new disciples would accept as many assignments as they could to earn points to redeem the skill and not many would be like Jack, who had chosen to focus on his training as the skills attained outside the Hall were incomparable to those attained within the Hall.

Wesley recalled that Jack was awarded fifty contribution points for getting first place and he felt that it was a waste. He had asked himself what would he do if he was Jack after he had agreed to a fight in the wager battle arena and the answer was he would have come to the Seven Stars Hall to get as many assignments as he could and use the points to redeem some powerful skills. Only then would he have the chance to defeat his opponent but contrary t o his belief, Jack did not do so.

Chapter 1990

Instead, Jack went to the place where he could level u p his skills faster! Only the disciples who had been in the Dual Sovereign Pavillion long enough would do such a thing. Wesley scoffed and said, “Oh well, he might be putting on a show. He should be honored about the fact that he’ll be standing in the same arena as me…”

Meanwhile, Jack was close to reaching the climax. Condensing three Soul Swords was not a walk in the park at all. On one hand, he had to endure the soulshockwave, and on the other hand, he had to cast the Void Cutting spell to condense the three Soul Swords. However, he finally understood one thing-why

the Soul Hall could speed up the leveling of soul attribute skills. The logic was simple, one could be likened leveling up a weapon or skill to the carving of a jade.

At the beginning of cultivation, it was equivalent to a n unpolished piece of raw jade, and continuous cultivation was equivalent to constant polishing and carving of the raw jade. The soul-shockwave was equivalent to an ax that could help the cultivator carve the raw jade faster, but the process could be quite cruel. One could easily die in the process if a mistake was made.

As time passed, Jack was oblivious to the time he had been there, he just felt a large amount of his true energy and spirit energy had been consumed as he continued to resist the soul-shockwave. The soulshockwave disappeared on the fifth day of training and the thick darkness around him seemed to have melted away. He was dazed when he noticed this and slowly stood up from the ground. He only managed t o condense a prototype of the third Soul Sword. It would take a few more days of training for the third Soul Sword to be completely condensed.

When Jack stepped out of the Array Eye Door, he saw Noel, who was pointing at the array board in his hand. “Sorry, your time is up.” Jack simply nodded. At this time, Jack was looking a little more haggard compared to when he entered. It was not surprising because after all, a soul-shockwave of difficulty level four was no laughing matter. Coupled with the need for him to condense the third Soul Sword, it consumed his spirit energy even more. Jack would have surely not been able to withstand all that if he had not absorbed the powerful soul fragments of the senior.

Noel raised his eyebrows and was actually relieved when he saw Jack’s haggard look. If Jack’s appearance remained unchanged, it was as if he went in and just took a nap. Noel would not be able to accept that as it would have meant Jack was not human at all.

Noel coughed slightly. “To earn more points and come again.” What else could he say? After all, Jack only had fifty contribution points which allowed him to stay inside for five days.

Jack nodded with resignation. He was back to being a pauper again. After taking back his jade identity card, he glanced at it and saw that the number of points had returned back to zero. He rubbed his forehead helplessly. It seemed as if the rest of his time there would not be easy on him. He stayed and talked for a little while with Noel before leaving the Soul Hall.

Chapter 1991

However, Noel called out to him before he walked out of the door. “I heard you’ll be going against Wesley in the wager battle arena soon?”

Jack raised his eyebrow and turned back to glance at Noel. He was sure Noel did not mean it as a question a s almost all the disciples there knew about this. He also knew that the other disciples treated this piece o f news as something to talk and laugh about after dinner. Therefore, he did not answer him but waited for him to continue.

Noel pressed his lips and said, “You must be lacking I n contribution points right now and it seems like you’re willing to have another go in the Soul Hall.”

Jack nodded. There was no doubt about it. If conditions allowed, he was even willing to stay there for a month, soul-shockwave be damned. He could feel his power growing stronger little by little and though he did not see Wesley as his rival, he needed t o be cautious as he was still not strong enough to defeat him.

Noel coughed lightly and seemed to be embarrassed about what he was going to say next but still, he straightened him up and said, “Do you know that new informal disciples can enjoy certain benefits?”

No, Jack did not know. He had kept to himself all this while so did not hear anything about that. Now that he had thought about it, Noel was the only person he had spoken the most with and Noel knew that. He sighed and said, “It’s been less than a month since you’ve joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion so you’re still eligible for the benefit. You’re entitled to exchange fifty contribution points for five hundred low-grade spirited crystals. Your deacon should have told you about this so I’m not sure why

Jack raised his eyebrow at the implication Noel was making. There must be a hidden reason as to why Deacon Ambrose did not share this benefit with the new informal disciples. He turned around to fully face Noel with a grateful look. “Thank you, Brother Noel, for telling me all this. Where should I go to do the exchange?”

Noel smiled faintly. “You don’t have to go there yourself. Although there’s still a slight difference in status between the new and old informal disciples, you could still ask the runner disciples to help you do the exchange. You’ll only need to pass him the five hundred low-grade spirited crystals and your jade identity card and he’ll do the exchange for you. After that, you can come back here to enjoy another five days of training.”

Jack became very excited at that. It was important for Jack to train as much as possible before the fight with Wesley and earning points through assignments would take up too much of his time. He would have preferred to avoid taking that course if possible.

Noel coughed lightly and in a nonchalant voice said,“ Wesley has reached high attainment in his gold attribute martial art skills so it’s better if you don’t fight him head-on. Keep in mind that gold attribute techniques or skills possess much higher attack power than other attribute skills.”

Although this kind of information could be gotten easily, Jack was still very grateful for Noel’s favor.

Jack nodded his head vigorously. “Thank you, Brother Noel. I’ll keep all of this in mind. I’ll surely repay you one day.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1991-1995

Chapter 1991
However, Noel called out to him before he walked out of the door. “I heard you’ll be going against Wesley in the wager battle arena soon?”

jackie raised his eyebrow and turned back to glance at Noel. He was sure Noel did not mean it as a question as almost all the disciples there knew about this. He also knew that the other disciples treated this piece of news as something to talk and laugh about after dinner. Therefore, he did not answer him but waited for him to continue.

Noel pressed his lips and said, “You must be lacking In contribution points right now and it seems like you’re willing to have another go in the Soul Hall.”

jackie nodded. There was no doubt about it. If conditions allowed, he was even willing to stay there for a month, soul-shockwave be damned. He could feel his power growing stronger little by little and though he did not see Wesley as his rival, he needed to be cautious as he was still not strong enough to defeat him.

Noel coughed lightly and seemed to be embarrassed about what he was going to say next but still, he straightened him up and said, “Do you know that new informal disciples can enjoy certain benefits?”

No, jackie did not know. He had kept to himself all this while so did not hear anything about that. Now that he had thought about it, Noel was the only person he had spoken the most with and Noel knew that. He sighed and said, “It’s been less than a month since you’ve joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion so you’re still eligible for the benefit. You’re entitled to exchange fifty contribution points for five hundred low-grade spirited crystals. Your deacon should have told you about this so I’m not sure why

jackie raised his eyebrow at the implication Noel was making. There must be a hidden reason as to why Deacon Ambrose did not share this benefit with the new informal disciples. He turned around to fully face Noel with a grateful look. “Thank you, Brother Noel, for telling me all this. Where should I go to do the exchange?”

Noel smiled faintly. “You don’t have to go there yourself. Although there’s still a slight difference in status between the new and old informal disciples, you could still ask the runner disciples to help you do the exchange. You’ll only need to pass him the five hundred low-grade spirited crystals and your jade identity card and he’ll do the exchange for you. After that, you can come back here to enjoy another five days of training.”

jackie became very excited at that. It was important for jackie to train as much as possible before the fight with Wesley and earning points through assignments

would take up too much of his time. He would have preferred to avoid taking that course if possible.

Noel coughed lightly and in a nonchalant voice said," Wesley has reached high attainment in his gold attribute martial art skills so it's better if you don't fight him head-on. Keep in mind that gold attribute techniques or skills possess much higher attack power than other attribute skills."

Although this kind of information could be gotten easily, jackie was still very grateful for Noel's favor.

jackie nodded his head vigorously. "Thank you, Brother Noel. I'll keep all of this in mind. I'll surely repay you one day."

Chapter 1992
When jackie got back to his room, he immediately sent for Brook to do the exchange at the Seven Stars Hall. A runner disciple's duty was to run errands for the formal and informal disciples and Brook was considered a veteran in these matters. He quickly made his way to the Seven Stars Hall with jackie's jade identity card and spirited crystals, leaving jackie to wait for him to be back.

jackie could have gone to do the exchange himself but he did not like crowds. Besides, he was quite the celebrity amongst the informal disciples and it would be best to avoid getting into an argument with Wesley. He knew that Wesley would never let an opportunity of talking smack to him go and he did not want to waste his breath on such a person.

Brook came back an hour later and gave jackie back his jade identity card which had been successfully updated with fifty contribution points. He looked at jackie with an expression hinting that he had something to tell him but did not know whether he should

jackie raised his eyebrow. He invited Brook into his room and poured him some tea. "Spit it out, why don't you? Did you run into some trouble during the errand? Or did somebody bully you?"

Brook shook his head and accepted the tea from jackie. "I wasn't bullied. I've been in the Clan association for many years, and though the formal and informal disciples look down on us runner disciples, they wouldn't dare to bully a veteran like me. It's just that I felt something was off when I was doing the exchange."

A hint of curiosity flashed across jackie's eyes and he waved for Brook to continue on. Brooke breathed in lightly and furrowed his brow. "I've done this kind of exchange many times before as all the new informal disciples would exchange their five hundred low grade spirited crystals for the fifty contribution points the very next day after joining the Dual Sovereign Pavilion because it's not as if they lack the spirited crystals to do it. The place to do the exchange is at the Seven Stars Hall assignment submission area and I'm very familiar with the person-in-charge."

“The person-in-charge? I thought all the assignment submissions were handled by the disciples?” asked jackie. To ensure that the disciples could earn contribution points, Dual Sovereign had set up different posts for the disciples to take up. Jobs like this were normally handled by a formal or informal disciple but judging by what Brook had said, the person in charge of the assignment submission did not seem to be a disciple.

One look at jackie’s expression and Brooke knew what he was confused about. He chuckled softly and said,” It’s true the Seven Stars Hall belongs to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and its importance is only second to the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall. Therefore, the posts there are not normally given to the disciples for fear they would embezzle the points. After all, contribution points could make or break a disciple’s career here. These positions are generally administered by the deacons personally. Each deacon has his own minor steward. These minor stewards are also former disciples, but their cultivation level has not yet reached the level of a deacon so they could only be minor stewards.”

jackie nodded in understanding. He was not very familiar with the administrators of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. He knew that there were elders besides the heads. The elders were then divided into the formal elders and informal elders with the formal elder’s qualifications and power much stronger than those of the informal elders. He also knew that the deacons held many important positions and some trivial matters were all placed under their jurisdiction. However the deacons could not handle everything without the help of the minor stewards and though the minor stewards’ status was a little lower than the disciples, they were still the management nonetheless.

Chapter 1993
“The minor steward in charge of the assignment submission is Steward Fleming and he works under Deacon Ambrose. He immediately shook his head when he heard that I’ve gone there to exchange the five hundred low-grade spirited crystals for the contribution points. He said that the benefits did not apply for the new informal disciples this time and his expression was a little off when he said that,” said Brook.

jackie furrowed his eyebrows. He recalled what Noel had said to him previously and still could not figure out what was going on. Maybe Noel was trying to tell him that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was treating this batch of new informal disciples differently than all the previous batches. Coupled that with what happened with the contribution points, jackie told himself he should be more cautious from now on.

Could it be that even the administrators deliberately looked down on their new batch of informal disciples? If that was the case, no wonder the older disciples looked down on this new batch of informal disciples so much. However, jackie did not really think that was the case. After all, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was also ranked as the number one Clan association in West Cercie State. This kind of behavior would be frowned upon and create resentment in the new informal disciples.

jackie pointed to the fifty contribution points added to his jade identity card and asked, “How did you get these points if this year’s benefit has been canceled?”

“We can thank Deacon Ambrose for that. I was about to give up because Steward Fleming was really insistent that the benefit had been canceled. However, Deacon saw your jade identity card in my hand just when I was about to leave and excitedly asked me what I was doing there. I explained everything to him and he instantly reprimanded Steward Fleming for speaking nonsense and that’s how I’ve managed to get the points.”

The lines on jackie’s forehead became even deeper. Ambrose Adams left a good impression on him. The reason Ambrose had helped jackie grease the wheels a little must be because jackie had helped him out with Zeph and it was public knowledge that they were mortal enemies. Even so, if the benefit was really canceled, then what Ambrose did was break the rule and anything to do with the contribution points was a serious matter.

Ambrose would never openly violate the rules just to help jackie out. Besides, he said that Steward Fleming was speaking nonsense meaning to say that the benefit was not canceled at all. There must be a reason as to why Steward Fleming had said that. Trying to make heads or tails out of the whole situation was giving jackie a headache. He was feeling as if there was a thick pool of glue sloshing in his brain.

The whole thing was getting more and more complicated. No wonder Noel told him to put the whole matter aside if he could not figure it out, after all, his priority should be leveling up. Thus, with the newly gotten fifty contribution points in his card, he rushed to the Soul Hall again whereas, as usual, Noel was found sitting behind his long desk with a dead look on his face. He managed to come alive a little when he saw jackie entering the place.

Also, as usual, he asked jackie how many days he would like to stay there to which jackie answered by holding up five fingers. Then, he placed his jade identity card on the table. Noel heaved a sigh and with a face filled with admiration said, “I don’t know what advice I can give to a master like you. Your talent is truly enviable. You could not imagine how shocked the others would be if they knew that you’ve entered a difficulty level four Array Eye Door.”

jackie chuckled softly and said in a gentle tone, “I don’t think I’m a master. I guess I’m just a little lucky when it comes to spirit attribute skill cultivation.”

Noel shook his head and there was a little melancholy on his face as if he had suffered a huge blow from jackie’s words. He gestured to the Array Eye door with his chin, leaving him with no doubt that he did not wish to speak to jackie anymore.

jackie chuckled softly again and entered the door. Before he came, he wondered whether he should increase the difficulty level but after carefully thinking about it, he decided not to. There was still some way to go before he could fully adapt to difficulty level four and if he rashly raised the difficulty level, it would surely increase his burden. The excessive impact from the soul-shockwave would not do him well.

After the array was activated, the soul-shockwave filled the room again. jackie closed his eyes and performed several hand seals with both hands. Two black Soul Swords immediately floated up and down In his hands.

This time his goal was to condense the third Soul Sword within five days and also keep track of the time inside his heart instead of wholly immersing himself in training. The last time, he had no experience, and the soul-shockwave rushed away without any warning. Fortunately, at that time, his true energy and spirit energy were all used up and now he had recuperated. It would definitely deal a huge blow to jackie if the array was suddenly closed during the most critical breakthrough moment. After all, the opportunity for breakthroughs does not come by every time. If it was rashly interrupted, it would throw a spanner into his training and he would have to wait for a long time for such an opportunity.

Minutes and seconds ticked by and the third Soul Sword slowly solidified and on the dawn on the fifth day, he finally condensed the third Soul Sword. He was panting heavily while excitedly staring at the third Soul Sword floating in his palm. With the previous two successful experiences, jackie found it easier to condense the third Soul Sword this time.

However, to his dismay, he discovered that it would be more and more difficult from this point onward to cultivate Void Slaying. It did not take him long to condense the first Soul Sword but it would surely take him a long time to condense more swords further down the line. Not to mention the amount of spirit energy and true energy he would need to expand

jackie was experiencing splitting headaches, bloodshot eyes, and trembles after he had exhausted his true energy and spirit energy. The soul-shockwave was still impacting his soul and the stabbing pain became even more intensified as the barrier made by his spirit energy slowly diminished.

“I would waste ten contribution points if I go out now,” muttered jackie. He started to do calculations In his head-he had been here for four days and one hour. According to the Soul Hall’s rule, even an hour would be charged at a full day’s rate so if he were to go out now, he would have wasted ten contribution points. The emotional pain of that was more horrible than the physical pain he was feeling right now.

However, if he continued to train, his spirit origin might be damaged and that was something he could not let happen. Thus, he had no choice but to leave. He heaved a sigh, slowly got up from the ground, and walked out of the door in one breath. Noel, who was sitting with one leg up and eating sunflower seeds, immediately stood up when he saw jackie’s pale face and bloodshot eyes as if he was terminally ill.

“Oh my god, are you okay? How did you end up like this? Isn’t the difficulty level the same?”

Chapter 1995
Noel had no doubts about jackie’s skills after witnessing his first five days in the Array Eye Door difficulty level four but this time it seemed to have taken an emotional and physical toll on him. Noel quickly walk up to catch him before he

fell. jackie exhaled gently and in a tired tone said, “Don’t worry about me. I’m not hurt. It’s just that I’ve exhausted my spirit energy and true energy.”

Noel raised an eyebrow and lightly pressed jackie’s meridian point with his finger and just as he expected, the true energy inside jackie’s meridian points had all been used up, and there was only a little spirit energy left. This made him become even more speechless.

“What could you possibly be doing inside to have used up all your true energy and spirit energy?”. Asked Noel.

jackie chuckled softly and told him the truth. “I’ve broken through a bottleneck. That’s all.”

At this, Noel immediately raised his eyebrow. “I must say you’re both high in talent and courage. The soul-shockwave for difficulty level four in the Array Eye Door was enough to kill anybody and yet you’ve come out of it alive after breaking through a bottleneck. Anyone would have tread carefully but you didn’t seem to be afraid that the soul-shockwave would damage your soul origins.”

It did cross jackie’s mind but he was so intent on condensing the third Soul Sword that he threw it to the back of his mind. It was only when he was out, that he felt afraid of what he had done. He made a note to himself that he should not do that anymore.

Noel shook his head. His understanding of jackie told him that some advice would just bounce off jackie.” Forget it. I’m just wasting my breath here. By the way, I’ve just received some news you might be interested in. Wesley is going to the wager battle arena tomorrow and his opponent is Dale Woodward who ranked 143rd place. I thought you might want to observe the battle so don’t forget to go.”

Hearing this made jackie straighten his body and laugh coldly. It seemed Wesley did not view him as a worthy opponent at all. If not he would not have gotten into another battle just before his battle with jackie.

“Thank you, Brother Noel, you’ve been such a great help to me these past few days,” said jackie.

Noel shook his head humbly and said, “It’s no skin off my back. I’m only passing on what I know.”

They talked for a bit more before jackie went back to his room. Ah, the beauty of having an abode to oneself—nobody could disturb you and there was no need to fear of one’s secret being exposed. The ten days of training had consumed all his energy, both spirit and truth, and not to mention the emotional toll on him.

He fell asleep as soon as his head hit the pillow. Ever since embarking on the road to cultivation, he had not had opportunities to sleep on a real bed and had to resort to meditation to rest his body. Therefore, it was no surprise that he slept a total of one day and one night and when he woke up, it was already noon the next day.

His true energy and spirit energy was fully charged but he did not continue on with his training as he knew that there was no overnight success in this field and that he would only enter a dead-end if he immersed himself too much in training. Nash Wood had been a bundle of nerves ever since he knew of jackie's battle with Wesley so it was only natural that he would come out of Mustard Seed now that jackie had a little bit of free time on his hands.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 1996-2000

Chapter 1996
Nash patted jackie on the shoulder and in a slightly pained tone said, "You should take more rest and take things slower. There are still two more weeks to go. You'll snap if you wound yourself up too tightly."

jackie nodded and knew that his father was just worried about him. "Don't worry, Father. I know what I'm doing. It's true Wesley is a formidable opponent but not one that is worth me breaking my back over. He accounts for only a tiny part of my motivation for training this hard. My biggest motivator is that I might be sent to the frontline when the war breaks out. I can only sleep in peace if I keep on leveling up. Besides, I don't know why but I can't shake the feeling that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is planning something fishy for us, new informal disciples."

jackie had very good reasons to feel that way, one being Noel's implications, and two was what had happened with the contribution points exchange. Moreover, jackie was well aware of his position of not being able to change anything in the Pavilion and should focus more on finding ways to protect himself by leveling up so he would be worthy to them.

Nash nodded. He clearly knew that things were not the same as when they were in the Daxia World. He might have been able to support jackie then but now that jackie had surpassed him in terms of ability, he could only let jackie do things his own way. "That Wesley is an intermediate stage of innate level which is one level above yours. I've been researching the difference in cultivation levels and one thing I'm sure of is although the intermediate stage of innate level is only one level higher than yours, the potency and reserve of true energy is more than double of yours!"

Nash became even more worried and shook his head lightly. His eyes were filled with concern for jackie, I know you have the soul-gathering crystals, have absorbed a vast amount of the seniors' soul fragments, and don't lack any martial art techniques or skill but there still possesses an ocean-wide gap difference in power between Wesley and you. Please don't underestimate him. I have been worried sick about you ever since I found out just how strong fighters in the intermediate stage of innate level are."

jackie nodded slightly. He had given some thought to all these before but found nothing to be worried about. "Apart from increasing one's cultivation level, what else do you think can increase the potency and reserve of one's true energy?"

This question did not stump Nash. He laughed and in a buoyant voice said, “Did you really think your old father would not know the answer to a basic question like this? Why the answer has to be the skills you’re cultivating. The higher the level of skills you’re cultivating, the more potent and more reserve you’ll have of true energy.”

jackie nodded and smiled. “That’s right. Wesley might be one level higher than me but we’re cultivating different techniques. If I go by that vein, I might even come out stronger than him!”

Nash, of course, had thought about this but still could not shake off his worries. “I know you’re cultivating Divine Void Heavenly Path and that this is the ultimate technique in the Divine Void World, stronger than any of the techniques in this third world but you still lack the experience to wield this technique. Even if you have the experience of the seniors, it still doesn’t absolve the fact that you’re starting from square one. Tell me honestly now, can you say you’re confident about your own cultivation on this Divine Void Heavenly Path?”

The corners of jackie’s lips went rigid. He had been focusing on Void Slaying and had put the Divine Void Heavenly Path on the backburner. Therefore, there was no way he could answer his father’s question with confidence. “No, I can’t say that with confidence but nonetheless, I have grasped some of the Divine Void Heavenly Path and I’m sure that the potency of my true energy is stronger than an average fighter of the intermediate level of innate stage.”

Chapter 1997
“That, I’m confident about. Besides, the Divine Void Heavenly Path comes with a handy function. As long as I have that card to play, I believe I can beat Wesley.”

Nash raised his eyebrow. His curiosity had been stroked. “What kind of function?”

“Cultivating the Divine Void Heavenly Path not only increases the potency and reserve of my true energy but it also gives me a preliminary grasp of the laws of space because the Path itself contains the laws of space,” explained jackie patiently.

“Laws of space! This was the first time Nash had heard of this term. He could understand the meaning based on the words themselves but did not have a physical experience of it.

jackie sipped his tea and said, “As I’ve mentioned, 1 only have a preliminary grasp of it. I’ll show you what I mean once I’ve got a complete grasp of it.”

Nash nodded his head, still not convinced jackie would be all right in the battle with Wesley. He sighed lightly and said, “I know you know your own strengths the best but I must say this, sometimes the difference in cultivation level could not be crossed at all. If Wesley is one level higher than you, then he is one level higher than you. Even if your technique is higher than his, it doesn’t make you stronger than him.”

jackie nodded. He knew this more clearly than anyone else: “I know, I know. Having a high cultivation level is like having a high-end engine. The better and bigger the engine is, the more fuel it can hold and thus the more energy it can give out. No one is denying Wesley is at a higher cultivation level than mine, but you’ll soon find out which of us is the stronger one and which of us is the weaker one.”

Nash raised his brow and in a confused tone asked, ” Isn’t the fight two weeks away? Why do you say I’ll soon find out?”

jackie lowered his eyes and wiped out all the emotions from his face. He gently put the teacup back on the table and in a calmed tone said, “Two weeks is too long for me. Wesley will be going against Dale Woodward tomorrow and I’ll be there to observe the fight. Besides…”

The next morning, a throng of disciples had already gathered around the wager battle arena. The news of the fight had spread all around the Pavilion and the fact that the two fighters were both in the top two hundred rankings made it a fight not to be missed. Moreover, the two of them had a short cultivation time. In the future, they were likely to become the top ten informal disciples and then be promoted to become formal disciples and their career will skyrocket from there.

The wager battle arena was located on the easternmost side of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. This was a huge open space specially designated for the wager battle arena. There were no buildings there apart from the seven huge battle platforms which were specially built with formations.

The wager battle arena was divided into two parts, one was the seven battle platforms located in the center, and the other was the viewing platform surrounding the battle platforms. The viewing platform was filled with countless seats and at this time, half of the seats were already occupied.

Except for the chosen disciples, the other disciples must come to the wager battle arena every month to fight. If circumstances disallowed them to attend or if they were in a retreat practice then the fights would be postponed until such time they were ready to fight. It was a guarantee that the seats would be full If there were any fighters from the top three hundred rankings or if someone of celebrity status was fighting in the wager battle arena.

Chapter 1998
Observing a fight could let one understand the other disciples’ strength and also increase one’s fight experience. Although Wesley’s current ranking was only 187, the fact that he had only been there for a short time and also had the backing of Elder Sayer made him a celebrity. He would surely rise up to the top ten ranking in no time.

Even the informal disciples in the top fifty ranking did not have as much fame as Wesley because most of them got to where they were through long training hours and increased their strength little by little. What they did had was more perseverance than talent and Wesley had both in abundance. Therefore, it was not surprising his fight with Dale had attracted the attention of many informal disciples.

Wesley, being the main character of today's story, was sitting at the viewing platform with a bunch of suck-ups around him. These suck-ups wanted to win over Wesley's hearts, and their words seemed to be smeared with honey, as they piled on praises upon praises on him. Wesley, of course, was enjoying it. He was sitting with his eyes closed and a faint curl of his lips as they heaped on the praises upon him.

The man with triangular eyes was one of the suckups. "Although Brother Dale's is strong, his talent is nothing compared to yours. Your talent if placed in Dual Sovereign Pavilion, nay, even in all of the other third-graded Clan associations, would come out the top amongst all of the other informal disciples. I'm sure Elder Sayer will definitely recruit you as his chosen disciple and that you'll surely rise up the levels like a rocket by then."

"Yeah! Even the top ten informal disciples here nodded their heads in recognition of your talents. You'll surely come out the victor in today's fight and in no time at all, you might even be able to fight against the top fifty informal disciples. Then, it's a one-way street for you to become a formal disciple."

Wesley raised his eyebrow. On the surface, he declined to give a comment to all of the praises but in his heart, he accepted their words wholly. He never once thought his talent was inferior to anyone else. The chosen disciples, maybe, but definitely not the other informal disciples, even those in the top ten. He felt that his cultivation time was still short, and if it was the same as their cultivation time, they would definitely be trampled under his feet. Just when the flattery was about to reach its climax, they suddenly heard one low exclamation after another which made Wesley and the others look toward the direction of the cause, only to see a few wide-eyed informal disciples chatting with each other in an excited voice.

"Oh my god, I can't believe Brother Duncan is here! He has actually come out of his meditation retreat! I seem to recall he had been there for three months as he had been in the retreat ever since he had beaten the third-ranked informal disciple and thus becoming the third rank himself! He might even be stronger than the first ranked informal disciple now that he had completed his three-months long retreat!"

"Yeah! He'll surely challenge the formal disciples after becoming the number one informal disciple. His talent is truly abominable. I remember he joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion at the same time as Brother Wesley and it didn't take him long to break through to the intermediate level of the innate stage. I can't believe he's even stronger now. Comparing myself to him makes me a sad potato.!

These words drifted into Wesley's ear and he felt as if he had received a slap to the face which shattered all of his previous enjoyment of flattery. If he had to choose who was his biggest rival in this lifetime, then it would no doubt be Duncan Pierpoint. He joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion at the same time a s Duncan Pierpoint and yet had always been suppressed by him. He could only watch with vehemence as Duncan surpassed him time after time. The thought of Duncan becoming third-ranked and coming out stronger after his meditation retreat made his heart twist with rage.

Chapter 1999
That was not the hardest to accept. The hardest thing to accept would have to be the way other people kept on comparing him to Duncan and with him always coming out the worst of the two. Just a moment ago, he felt his talent to be only a little inferior to the chosen disciples but now that illusion had been shattered with the arrival of Duncan. No matter how great he thought he was, there was no way he could possibly convince himself that he was better than Duncan as Duncan's existence was like a sun that made all the other stars disappear with his powerful light.

The man with triangular eyes was the best at sucking up. He could tell with one glance, what and how Wesley was feeling, so he quickly said, "Brother Duncan is strong, no doubt about that. After all, he has the support of the Pier points. The Big Elder of the Dual Sovereign Sect came from the same clan as him and if I were him, I would have done everything in my power to support him as well. Anyone, even those with the worst talent, would have quickly leveled up under those conditions. What's more to say about Brother Duncan?"

These words seemed to have achieved their intended effect and Wesley felt slightly better. The man with triangular eyes was right, Duncan must have gotten to where he was with the support of the Big Elder. The Big Elder, being second-in-command of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, must have an arsenal of resources in his hand which he had spent on Duncan. So it was only natural Duncan had surpassed him. If Wesley had the same resources as he did, he would have left Duncan in the dust too.

At that thought, Wesley felt even better. It was then he saw a familiar figure amongst the crowd. Seeing him there, made him startled but that soon changed to derision. He scoffed and said, "He dares to come here? Could it be that he's here to observe the fight between Dale and me?"

His question made all the other suck-ups around him turn to look at jackie. They were well aware of all the animosity the two had between them. When it came to Duncan, they dared not say too much about him but it was a totally different story when it came to jackie. After all, to them, he was the disciple that got to where he was by luck. They did not even feel he had the qualifications to become an informal disciple and thus should not enjoy the same status as them.

jackie was dressed in an informal disciple uniform and he had brought Brook along with him. After all, he was not familiar with many things in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and feared that he would get lost on his way here so he might as well bring him along and for him to act as a commentator for the fight. The viewing platform was already half full and the two of them quickly found a secluded spot to sit down. jackie never once looked toward Wesley, as if he was only there by chance to observe the fight.

"This punk surely knows how to put up an act. He must have not understood the true strength of the top two hundred ranking of the informal disciples for him to accept Brother Wesley's challenge without any hesitation. He must have thought he could beat you because he just so happens to be stronger than the average people outside. What a joke he is! He should have taken a good look at himself in the mirror!"

Chapter 2000
The man with triangular eyes was looking at Pane with a disdainful expression on his face. He laughed coldly and said, “Look at him acting all cool and as if he doesn’t care about anything at all. If he didn’t care, he wouldn’t have come here at all. He must be scared sh*tless about the upcoming fight with Brother Wesley to come here to check you out.”

This time, he did not say all this to flatter Wesley but meant it as it annoyed him to no end when he saw jackie looking as if there was not a care in the world. How could there possibly be a person like him? Hle thought that even the strongest hero in the whole of Hestia Continent would not act like he was some hotsh*t, undefeatable by anyone, What gave jackie the right to act like that? He was nothing but a new informal disciple!

Then, there was the fact he did not get in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion through the usual means. He would not have gotten in if it was not for the war that was about to break out. Yes, it was true that jackie had received praises for his strength by Elder Lee, but how much weight did that hold anyway? In fact, he was only a little better than all the trash out there, not worthy of being called an informal disciple,

It was obvious that Wesley felt the same way as the man with triangular eyes. He chuckled and said,” Yeah, who does he think he’s impressing by acting all cool. He should just admit that he’s here to check me out instead of pretending he’s not scared of the upcoming fight with me.”

After saying that, he suddenly thought of the day when jackie humiliated him in front of all the other disciples. At that thought, he narrowed his eyes on jackie. Although there was a rule that said fighters could not cause permanent damage or death to their opponents, that did not mean he could not beat jackie until he could not get out of bed for a few months.” I’ve warned him before that I’ll one day make him pay!”

The man with triangular eyes nodded. He was looking forward to the day Wesley beat jackie into a pulp that his own mother would not even recognize him. He deserved that for comparing him to a worthless, uncultured animal. Actually, he would not mind if jackie dropped dead right now.

“He was so cocky that day! We were all there and saw how he acted! He should not be forgiven so easily. We need to teach him a lesson that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion is not a place for him to act so cocky!” said the man with triangular eyes. The others immediately joined in the demeaning of jackie.

“Yeah! He needs to be shown his place! Does he really think he can act all cool in front of us just because he’s a little better than all the newly recruited informal disciples!”

“What a joke! Everyone knows the newly recruited informal disciples are all a bunch of trash! They’re only here to become cannon fodders. I can’t believe h e thinks he’s as good as the rest of us.”

“It was only a few days ago, I saw some of the newly recruited informal disciples challenging the older disciples to a fight in the wager battle arena, and lo and behold, it did not take them long to go down on their knees to beg for their lives once the fight started. They should stay in the trash bin where they belong instead of running around here.”

The man with triangular eyes exhaled deeply and in a regretful tone said, “It’s a shame we can’t tear his limbs apart. If we do that, we’ll surely get punished for causing permanent damage.”

Wesley smiled enigmatically at that. “It’s true we can’t do that but that doesn’t mean we can’t break every bone in his body. Imagine the pain he would have to suffer through then.”

They excitedly kept up the conversation for quite a long time and all the while sneaking glances at jackie. jackie, of course, knew what they were saying about him but decided they were not worth twisting his knickers over.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2001-2005

Chapter 2001
After all, jackie had mentally prepared himself for all the gossip that would inevitably happen once his presence was made known in the wager battle arena. However, the same could not be said for Brook as Wesley and his group kept looking over in their direction.

Brook sighed and whispered to jackie, “Be careful, Brother jackie. Those people over there don’t seem to be looking at us too kindly. I bet that Wesley has some tricks up his sleeve when it’s your turn to fight against him.”

He did not doubt that Wesley would do everything short of killing jackie and to his words, jackie only nodded. He, too, had expected that Brooke found jackie’s composure a bit odd. Although he knew that jackie possessed extraordinary power, that did not mean that he could win in a fight against Wesley, who was in the running to be a chosen disciple after only joining for half a year. Wesley’s power and talent were something Brook had wished for himself for the longest time.

“You don’t seem to be worried?” asked Brook when he realized jackie was still staring impassively at the arena, waiting for the fight to start, which would take another thirty minutes.

“Why should I worry? Did you think that I agreed to the fight because I want to protect my pride?” jackie retorted.

‘Isn’t it?’ thought Brook. He had always thought that was the reason or else why would jackie agree to fight a person who was way stronger than him? He did not think there was even a chance for the fight to come to a draw, and winning over Wesley would be even more impossible.

jackie did not have to look at Brook to know what he was thinking as his silence said it all. He smiled and said, “There’s no use explaining it to you now. You would definitely not believe me. You’ll soon understand everything.”

This made Brook even more confused. Was jackie hinting at something that was going to happen later? What could it be? He thought about it and came up with the conclusion that the only way to make him change his perspective was if jackie got into a huge fight with Wesley

At that thought, he abruptly straightened his back and his eyes nearly popped out of their sockets. jackie must be mad if he was really planning to do that. Just when he was about to ask jackie this, a sudden commotion caught his attention. He turned to the source and saw a delicate man making his way from afar.

jackie instantly knew who he was from the whisperings of the crowd.

“Brother Dale is actually on time. I thought he would come at the last minute.”

“Yeah. He is known for his last-minute arrival. He must be well-acquainted with Brother Wesley’s temper. Who knows what Brother Wesley would say If he came late.”

Chapter 2002
“I’ve been looking forward to this fight for the longest time. They have always been at odds with each other with both of them wanting to step on each other’s heads. It’s only natural that Brother Dale doesn’t want to give Brother Wesley a chance to find faults with him.”

“To be honest, I don’t think Brother Wesley is on good terms with a lot of other brothers here.”

“There’s no doubt about that. He has always looked down on those whose power is beneath him. Why, just a few days ago, he totally ignored me when I greeted him! It was then that I found the rumors about his personality to be true.”

All their comments drifted into jackie’s ears. Apart from his posse of suck-ups, Wesley seemed to have garnered a reputation of being difficult to get along with, no doubt due to his arrogance.

As soon as Dale arrived at the viewing platform, he glanced at Wesley for a second and immediately went to sit down at an area furthest from Wesley. It looked like the rumor of them being at odds with each other was true.

“I feel like Brother Dale seems to be lacking in confidence,” said Brook with a slightly raised brow.

jackie nodded. Dale’s expression was a little grim and on the contrary, Wesley seemed very carefree. Even their confidence level was at odds with each other. jackie hoped that Dale would be able to come out as the winner of this fight.

The host of today’s fight was none other than jackie’s old friend-Ambrose Adams. jackie knew from his time there that there were around ten or so deacons In the Dual Sovereign Pavilion but apart from Zeph and Ambrose, he had not come across the others.

Today, there was something sorrowful about Deacon Ambrose’s expression as if he had not been getting enough sleep. After stepping into the arena, he took out a piece of paper from his pocket and impatiently tried to smooth it out. Then, he read from the paper. At first, jackie thought it was something important but realized it was only the rules for the fight.

The rules were simple, the fighters had to join the fight out of their own volition, the fighters could not cause permanent damage nor death to each other, and the wager could not be too high with the maximum contribution points capped at a

hundred and fifty. This was to prevent the fighters from getting addicted to fighting in the wager battle arena.

After reading out all the rules, Deacon Ambrose announced the start of the fight with a wave of his hand and invited all the disciples who wanted to join the fight, up to the arena with their wagers. There were a total of seven battle platforms and it was impossible for Deacon Ambrose to preside over them all therefore he had brought along with him a few minor stewards.

Brook pulled on jackie's sleeves and pointed at the chubby minor steward. "That's Steward Fleming. He's Deacon Ambrose's best assistant. Don't be fooled by his smiley face. He's the stingiest person I've ever known and the others call him Iron Rooster."

Steward Fleming was so chubby that his facial features were all squished together, and it was true that he was always sporting a smile. However, after that little introduction by Brook, jackie made a mental note to himself to be wary of Steward Fleming.

There were many contestants in other battle platforms since every disciple must join a fight once a month, though the most popular fight today had got to be the fight between Dale and Wesley.

Wesley seemed to be impatient to get the fight started. He shot up from his seat as soon as the announcement to begin was made. He shook away the non-existent dust on his body and made his way purposefully to the centermost battle platform.

Chapter 2003
Wesley bowed slightly to Deacon Ambrose and whispered something in his ear while pointing at Dale. Deacon Ambrose then nodded and gestured for Dale to come down with his eyes. It seemed that both Wesley and Dale had already greeted Deacon Ambrose as they stood at the opposite end of each other.

"Informal disciple, Wesley Sayer of ranking 187 and informal disciple, Dale Woodward of ranking 143 have agreed to a wager of a hundred and fifty contribution points. If Wesley Sayer wins this round, then they will swap their rankings, and if Dale Woodward wins this round, their rankings will remain unchanged," boomed Deacon Ambrose and immediately left the battle platform.

He then activated the protective formation with the spirited crystals. Each battle platform had been set up with their individual protective formation to prevent the stray energy from affecting the spectators.

Wesley and Dale remained facing each other. Dale was frowning and seemed reluctant to talk smack while Wesley did not even bother to look at him but instead, was looking at jackie which caused the other spectators to do the same. jackie was a little rendered speechless by this.

"Someone better not try to escape or beg for mercy when this fight starts. There's no use begging for mercy. One must keep one's promises. If not, be

prepared to be the laughing stock of everyone," said Wesley with his chin held high.

Everyone who heard this knew that Wesley was directing his words at jackie, and not Dale. They started to laugh and looked at jackie mockingly. They were waiting eagerly to see the expression on jackie's face once Wesley displayed his true power and was wondering if jackie would still be able to remain as calm.

The corner of jackie's lips began to twitch. He was so fed up with Wesley's cockiness and turned his eyes away from him. However, Brook became even more agitated at Wesley's words as he moved around as if he was sitting on coals.

Just then, a familiar voice drifted to jackie's ears. Noel had come to the arena too. "Just ignore him. If not, there won't be an end to it."

jackie nodded. Arguing with Wesley was exactly what the other spectators wanted and besides, there was no point, so it was better for him to keep his mouth shut.

However, Wesley misinterpreted this kind of behavior as cowardice. He laughed and in a pompous tone said, "There's no use acting like a coward now. I'll never forgive you for what you have said to me. I've promised you that you'll pay for behaving disrespectfully toward me!"

It took jackie's every effort to not roll his eyes at Wesley.

"Hey, Wesley! I'm the person you're fighting now. Quit your yapping and don't waste my time. Let's begin the fight now!" shouted Dale impatiently with a frown.

Wesley smirked. He was not angered by Dale's words at all. He calmly wiped his hand against the thin air and instantly a sword measuring three feet appeared In his palm.

Chapter 2004
The sword was twinkling like the stars in the Milky Way and from the looks of it, seemed to be very heavy. Dale, too, took out his weapon from his Loot ring and his weapon of choice was a pair of daggers etched with mysterious red patterns.

Looking at both their weapons caused jackie to frown subconsciously. Ever since coming to this world, he had wondered whether he should equip himself with a weapon that would be more suitable for him because after all, one's weapon could drastically increase one's battle power. However, the Destroying the Void skill he was cultivating right now was a soul attribute skill and a soul attribute weapon was one of the hardest weapons to come across.

Dale was clenching his daggers tightly in both hands and with lightning-fast speed shot across the platform so fast that no one could see where he went. All they could see was the mysterious red glow of his dagger.

Wesley scoffed. This was like child's play to him. He swung his sword when Dale was a few feet away from him and the sword came down on Dale like a flashing meteorite. The force of the attack alone was enough for them to sense the extraordinary power. Dale blocked Wesley's sword with his daggers and a silver light immediately wiped out his daggers' red light.

While still suspended in mid-air, he twisted himself away from the silver sword light which crashed against the battle platform with a loud bang. Fortunately, the battle platform was made with a special material that made it near impossible for fighters to destroy. However, Wesley's sword attack was so powerful that it left a faint mark on it.

Most of the spectators' jaws dropped to the ground after seeing that and once again, began to give their two cents worth.

"That skill must be the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud! I heard it's an intermediate red level skill and Wesley has been cultivating it beyond a certain level."

jackie raised his eyebrow when he heard this. He initially thought that Wesley's skill to be at least premium red level. After all, it made sense for him to have a premium red level skill with this strong support system and exceptional talent so it came as a shock to jackie that he only possessed an intermediate red level skill.

He tried to think of the reason for this but since he only came to this world not long ago, he could not think of the reasons at all. Thus, he turned to enlist the help of Noel. "I admit that Wesley has a good grasp on the basics of intermediate red level skill but I really thought he will at least possess a premium red level skill. I mean Elder Sayer should be able to get that kind of skill for him quite easily, right?"

Noel's eyes flashed with confusion but then started to look at jackie like he was a monster. "Dude, do you even know what you're talking about? Yes, Wesley's talent is truly exceptional but do you seriously think that anyone would be able to attain a premium red level skill just like that? Attaining a premium red level skill is so much more difficult than attaining an intermediate red level skill. The difficulty of a level is disproportionately higher than the next. You don't think Wesley knows about all this?"

jackie raised his eyebrow as he listened to Noel's explanation. "You've mentioned that he had attained a certain level and which level might that be?" asked Noel.

Both Dale and Wesley were testing each other out on the battle platform with none of them unleashing their full power yet. However, based on this alone, one could tell that Dale was no match for Wesley.

Chapter 2005
"He must be in the first stage," answered jackie just as the two on the battle platform were getting into the heat of the fight.

jackie's reply caused Noel, who was facing the battle platform, to turn around and look him straight in the eyes with an expression that left no room for doubt that he was crazy.

"What is this first stage thing you're talking about? Don't tell me you don't know that we don't use first or second or third to ascertain the level of a martial art skill or technique?"

The corners of jackie's lips twitched. It was only natural he did not know how the rules in this part of the world worked, after all, the soul fragment he had obtained was not someone from the Hestia Continent.

Looking at jackie's expression, Noel had already gotten his answer. "I'm beginning to suspect that you have been living under a rock all this while. How could you not know all these?" said Noel with an air of resignation.

jackie coughed gently while trying to think how to answer Noel. "Yes, you're right. I've been living under a rock all this while. I hope you don't mind me asking all these. They say anyone could be your teacher and you just so happen to be mine right now."

jackie's words obviously did the trick for Noel as he started explaining happily to him about all the inner workings of the Hestia Continent. "No matter the technique or skill, there are three levels to cultivation – preliminary, proficient, and perfection. For example, Wesley's Seven Stars Meteor Cloud seems to be at the level between preliminary and proficient meaning to say he had attained the preliminary level and was close to the proficient level. Once he reaches the proficient level, he would surely be able to strike Dale down with one swing of his sword."

jackie nodded and guessed that he had not even touched the preliminary level on his cultivation of Destroying the Void skill. According to the skill's introduction, one would have to be able to condense and master the control of at least ten Soul Swords to reach the preliminary level.

Not only would jackie need to be able to combine the ten Soul Swords but also control them individually to surround his enemies. At that thought, he started to panic as he had no idea what kind of martial skill would be most suitable for this kind of attack. Should he follow Dale's footsteps and choose the daggers?

Just when he was contemplating all these, the battle between Wesley and Dale had reached its climax. Wesley was acting like a male peacock as he confidently bombard Dale with his sword attacks and from the frown on Dale's face, he was trying to suppress his anger at the helplessness of it all.

Finally, Dale was not willing to continue on. With a push from his pointed foot, he managed to put some distance between the two of them. He quickly performed a hand seal and rays of red light began to envelop the whole area as they transformed into flames which danced with the same rhythm as if they were synchronized swimmers.

“Divine Sky Crows!” shouted Dale ferociously. The flames started burning more vigorously and, to the astonishment of all the spectators, transformed into flaming birds.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2006-2010

Chapter 2006
The flaming birds flew all around the area and left a trail of flame whenever they went. Each of the birds was made up of flames, and even the feathers were swirling with the pattern of fire.

“This has to be the most powerful skill Dale has ever used. If I remember correctly, Divine Sky Crows is also an intermediate red level skill. However, it’s hard to tell at first blush which cultivation level he is at. He could be at the same level as Wesley though.”

The color of fire-engine-red filled the whole battle platform which reflected in all of the spectators’ eyes. Dale had pulled out his big guns—the fire attribute skill he was best at. He knew that it would be a disadvantage for him to continue as he realized that he was no match for Wesley.

With a shout, he flung both of his fire-engine-red daggers up to the sky. He could control the daggers with his thoughts. Instantly, the daggers blended with the flaming birds, and everyone there knew this would be his most powerful attack.

“You’re going down, you loser!” shouted Dale angrily. Immediately, all the flaming birds shot down crazily at Wesley, staining his surroundings red. In contrast, his pale, calm face seemed to be glowing as the sword in his hand was humming with a low sound

He pointed his sword at Dale and calmly performed a hand seal just when the flaming birds were about to crash into him. Immediately, countless silver lights appeared mid-air. Although the silver lights seemed to be unnoticeable under the red glow of the flaming birds, they started to become brighter and brighter when the flaming bird appeared closer and closer.

With a wave of his left hand, the silver lights gathered and spun madly around his sword which he was holding in his right hand. In a blink of an eye, the silver lights condensed into two small stars; so small were the two stars that they were at least a billion times smaller than the real ones up above the sky.

Even so, the spectators could sense tyrannical energy from the pair of spinning stars. Wesley’s speed and power suddenly increased drastically and with no warning at all, he jumped up to the sky and brought his sword down on the flaming birds. All that could be heard was the air being ripped apart and the flaming birds started dropping one by one under his attack. They never stood a chance against Wesley’s sword at all.

Wesley continued slashing his way through the flaming birds and under the buff of his two mini stars, the speed of his attack increased even more. Some of the weaker informal disciples could not even keep up his sword and would only know where he had been when the flaming birds fell from the sky.

On the other side, Dale was sweating profusely. He performed a hand seal again to make the flames burn stronger and to summon more flaming birds. However, this did not deter Wesley at all. He smirked and in an instant, the swarm of flaming birds was wiped out once again.

Chapter 2007
The flaming birds were the condensation of Dale's energy and transformed back to its original red-light state, diffusing into the surroundings when they were struck by Wesley's sword. Wesley's speed of casting out the attacks was lightning fast and even though Dale kept on replenishing the flaming birds with his true energy, there was still a big hole in the swarm.

Wesley shot through the hole when it was big enough for him to go through and instantly appeared in front of Dale. The corners of Dale's lips went rigid, he did not expect that Wesley would be able to break through the swarm.

The flaming birds were no match for Wesley at all. Wesley scoffed and the three-foot sword in his hand cast out a dazzling silver light. The two mini stars orbiting around his sword, cracked and their light infused into the sword, making it as bright as the galaxy.

At this sight, the back of Dale's neck went cold. He madly performed another round of hand seals to summon the scattered flaming birds to create a barrier in front of him.

That did not even make Wesley bat his eyelid. He raised his sword again and said, "Behold my Seven Stars Meteor Cloud!"

The dazzling galaxy light became one with the sword and cut down on the flaming bird's barrier just when everyone was widening their eyes. They heard a crisp cracking sound and the flaming bird barrier split in half.

Even though the flaming bird barrier absorbed most of the attack, the remaining force landed on Dale. He suddenly felt a tearing pain in his shoulders and chest as the blood dyed his clothes red. He screamed painfully and was sent flying before landing on the ground with a heavy thud. All the spectators had their jaws already dropped to the ground by then.

Wesley raised his cold brow and cast out another sword attack. The attack was not aimed at Dale's vital organs but was still imbued with a powerful force. Everyone heard a slashing sound and another deep sword wound appeared on Dale's chest.

The first sword slash was from Dale's left shoulder, cutting diagonally across his right torso and the second was from his right shoulder, cutting diagonally across

his left torso and the combined effect was a bloody X. His shirt was completely stained red and he looked extremely pitiful. However, it was not the pain that he could not handle but the humiliation brought by Wesley.

After that second slash, Wesley stored his sword back in the storage space and alighted gently near Dale, who was lying on the ground. He looked down at Dale with a mocking and condescending expression, making Dale flush even redder in the face. Dale tried to stand up, wanting to fight to the death with Wesley.

However, before he could do that, they all heard the results being announced. "The winner is Wesley Sayer. The two contestants will swap their ranking and the wager of one hundred and fifty contribution points goes to Wesley Sayer."

Once the announcement sounded, no matter how frustrated Dale was, there was nothing he could do. The rules must be obeyed.

Chapter 2008
A runner disciple swiftly entered the battle platform to carry Dale after Deacon Ambrose deactivated the protective formation. Dale's face was pale with pain and he was staring daggers at Wesley, who on the contrary, was expressionless. He immediately left the battle platform without even once looking back at Dale, after Deacon Ambrose had announced the result.

A pandemonium akin to five hundred ducks quacking at the same time rose up after the battle ended.

"Brother Dale is no match for Brother Wesley. That was evident from the start so it's no surprise Brother Wesley came out as the winner."

"Actually, I think Brother Wesley should be ranked higher than his previous ranking. The only reason Brother Dale was able to rank 143rd was that he has been in the Academy longer. Talent-wise, it's definitely Brother Wesley who's stronger. I have no doubt that if given more time, Brother Wesley will surpass more disciples!"

Although Dale ranked higher than Wesley, many people still felt that his talent was lacking.

"Do you think Wesley unleashed all his power then?" asked someone and more opinions ensued.

"I don't think so. He looked at ease when he retracted his sword. I can guarantee you that he has more energy left. Dale being stronger than us doesn't mean that Wesley will need all his power to defeat him."

"Yeah, I'm so jealous of Wesley's talent. Amongst us, he's the second most talented disciple after Brother Duncan. There's a slight probability he will become a chosen disciple."

“What do you mean by a slight probability? I think his probability is higher than that! He might even become a future elder with the help of Elder Sayer. He definitely has a bright future ahead of him.”

These comments brought up a feeling of envy in many of the disciples’ hearts. However, the feeling of jealousy was mixed with admiration, therefore, they would not do anything to Wesley behind his back. How could they when he was way more talented than them?

Noel sighed and glanced sideways at jackie. He was expecting jackie to be in a bad mood after seeing how Wesley had easily defeated the 143rd ranked Dale. He would definitely feel the immense pressure as if being pressed under a hundred boulders if he was the one who needed to go against Wesley in the next battle.

However, to his surprise, he realized jackie did not even bat an eyelid. His expression remained carefree and impassive in the face of Wesley’s power. The corners of Noel’s lips twitched. He did not know whether he should praise jackie’s composure or his acting skill.

Chapter 2009
Even he could not tell whether jackie’s confidence was because he had a good plan or he was faking it until he made it. Most of the people there thought jackie was doing the latter and hated him for it.

Wesley had been staring at him ever since he got down from the battle platform. He was expecting jackie to be scared shitless and became extremely furious when he was not. “He must be pretending not to be scared! There’s no way he’s not scared. His acting is definitely better than his fighting.”

He did not bother to keep his voice low but instead, said it really loud and made the others who heard it look at jackie with curiosity. jackie’s overly calm behavior gave them no doubt that he was definitely pretending not to be scared. Not bothering what he would think of them, they started to give their two cents’ worth.

“Ugh, I can’t stand him looking so calm! I can understand him staying so calm if he hadn’t seen what Brother Wesley can do. I don’t even know why he bothers to put up a pretense when everyone knows Brother Wesley’s power can be ranked in the top one hundred amongst us, informal disciples.”

“He must be doing it to protect his own ego. No matter how scared he’s feeling, he definitely would not let outsiders see but this just makes him more of a laughingstock.”

“Yeah, he’s a joke! There must be a loose screw in his brain.”

“I think he might be in a state of shock. I would be scared shitless right now if I was him.”

“You’re right. Forget about the grudges between the two of them, Wesley didn’t actually have to humiliate Dale with that last strike. Although that last strike didn’t cause permanent damage to Dale thus Wesley didn’t break any rules but there’s no doubt it caused permanent emotional scarring to him. I’m sure jackie will suffer a far worse humiliation than that.”

“I think so too. Brother Wesley and Brother Dale didn’t really hold any deep hatred toward each other and yet look at what Brother Wesley did to him. He must have been planning something even worse for jackie.”

They did not bother to lower their voices so it was only natural that jackie would have heard what they said. However, his expression remained impassive and he did not even look toward Wesley.

The corners of Noel’s lips twitched again. He lowered his voice and said to jackie, “Are you really not afraid? Wesley had the intention to humiliate Dale from the very start. The ‘X’ mark on Dale’s chest is like a slap to his face. If he can do that to Dale, imagine what he will do to you.”

“So what?” asked jackie with an equally low voice and with a smile on his face.

Chapter 2010
Those two words rendered Noel speechless. He and Brook stared wide-eyed at jackie, not knowing what to say. Judging from jackie’s reply, it seemed as if he was really not afraid but they could not be! They were adamant he was pretending to be calm.

The corners of Brook’s lips started to twitch too. Wesley was already immeasurably powerful to a runner disciple like him. There was no way he could win in a fight against him in a million years and he was really worried for jackie.

Many of the spectators there started to imagine what would happen during the battle between Wesley and jackie. Would jackie be sent flying with a single strike of the sword? Maybe Wesley will do his utmost to humiliate him by carving a few X on jackie’s face. Not only would that humiliate jackie but it would also assure the fact that he would never have a chance to do anything great in his life.

According to their understanding of Wesley’s personality, they knew there was a high possibility for that to happen. After all, Wesley had the backing of many influential figures and the most he would get for humiliating other people was a slight slap on the wrist. Therefore, why would he care about hurting other people’s egos?

The man with triangular eyes patted himself on the back for having the foresight to suck up to Wesley. Not only was Wesley more powerful than the average disciple but also had the backing of Elder Sayer. No doubt that following Wesley would benefit him in the future.

Even though Wesley had won the battle, there was no sign of happiness on his face. On the contrary, his eyes were filled with anger and the man with the triangular eyes instantly guessed what he was mad about.

He shot up from his seat and turned to look angrily at jackie. Then, he scoffed and in a loud voice said, “Oh wow, jackie. We should give you an Oscar for your acting skill but then did you really think all of us were fooled by your pretense? Why don’t you just admit you’re actually scared shitless right now?”

The man with triangular eyes was Wesley’s number one fanboy and he would do anything for him. Besides, humiliating a nobody like jackie would not bring him any consequences.

jackie knitted his brow. The reason his face was expressionless was because he really did not care about Wesley’s power and knew that they would not believe him even if he told them the truth. However, the man with the triangular eyes had crossed his line, and not to mention he had always seen him as a thorn in his side.

He stared at him, scoffed, and in a chilly tone said, “I was right when I called you Wesley’s loyal dog. You would do anything for your master with no thoughts of the consequences.”

His words shocked everyone there. Nobody expected him to say something like that. His words were more hurtful than if he had slapped the man with the triangular eyes. The man with the triangular eyes nearly punched jackie in the face but stopped himself just in time as there was a rule saying no fighting on the viewing platform.

Brook was pale in the face from fright and he quickly pulled on jackie’s sleeves. “Brother jackie, why did you say that? He would for sure seek revenge on you now.”

jackie laughed softly and in a calm voice said, “Do you really think he would stop taunting me if I didn’t say anything? Besides, I was only telling the truth. The only reason he keeps causing me problems is because he wants to please his master. Therefore, he should be prepared to reap the consequences.”

Although Brook wished jackie would shut his mouth, he had to admit what he said was right. Wesley and his gang would not stop causing trouble for jackie even if he laid down and rolled over. He understood all this but lacked the courage to do it.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2011-2015

Chapter 2011
“How dare you humiliate me again and again when I’ve shown you nothing but kindness?!” shouted Wesley.

Jackie stared coldly at the man with triangular eyes and Wesley. “You’re the one who keeps on humiliating me! And there’s one thing you should get right, it’s that I want to humiliate but you served yourself up on a platter to be humiliated by me! Things wouldn’t have to be this way if you didn’t force me to give you the room I won that day!”

Jackie was on a roll. He was telling the truth but as the saying goes, the truth hurts. The others around them started to voice their opinions again.

“Is Jackie crazy? Or does he think he has nothing to lose since he had already offended Wesley many times before?”

“Yeah, I think that is. Might as well humiliate Wesley more since he knows he’s going to lose in the battle.”

Some of them could not help but sigh and shake their heads. “Yup, he’s definitely gone cray-cray. What he said would only spur Wesley on. No doubt Wesley would do his utmost to torture Jackie in their upcoming battle. He might even break the rules and cripple Jackie!”

Noel became even more resigned after listening to all their comments. He knew Jackie was really talented but that did not mean he would be able to defeat Wesley. He knitted his brows and in a low voice tried to warn Jackie, “Shut up, Brother Jackie. Are you crazy? You’ll anger Wesley even more if you continue on like this. He might even cripple you in the upcoming battle and then it’ll be too late for regrets.”

It was logical for Noel to be worried. However, Jackie did not care. He smiled and under everyone’s watchful gaze, stood up from his seat and slowly made his way over to Wesley. Wesley raised an eyebrow and looked curiously at Jackie. He wondered what he was doing when Jackie suddenly stopped five feet away from him.

“My wager is the individual room that I’m staying in right now. What’s your wager?” asked Jackie. Every contestant would bet on something before going up to the battle platform just like how Wesley and Dale both betted on a hundred and fifty contribution points for their battle.

Jackie asked about Wesley’s bet because Wesley did not have an individual room of his own and it made sense for him to ask but to the others, it sounded like he

had totally gone insane. It was enough that he remained impassive after observing Wesley's power and yet he still had the mood to ask Wesley for his wager? Yup, he had definitely gone insane.

Did Jackie really think he could beat Wesley in a battle? If he really did think so then there was really something wrong with his brain. Even Noel and Brook could not believe what they heard as they stared wide-eyed at Jackie.

Wesley was first dazed but then erupted in laughter as if he had just heard the funniest joke in the universe. "What did you say? Are you really asking me for my wager? Oh, Brother Jackie, you don't seriously think you can win in a battle against me right? Where do you even get that confidence of yours? Or should I ask whether you were dropped as a child?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, "Where did I get my confidence? That's not something you should worry about. The only thing you need to do is answer me about your wager. Don't think that I'll fight against you if you don't offer up a wager."

The man with triangular eyes nearly exploded with rage. He did not say anything previously since Wesley had already jumped into the conversation but now he could not control himself anymore.

Chapter 2012
The man with triangular eyes strode rapidly toward Jackie and narrowed his eyes at him as if Jackie was the prey and he the predator. "I know what you're trying to do!"

'What am I trying to do?' thought Jackie with confusion.

The man with triangular eyes scoffed and with an exaggerated gasp pointed at Jackie. "You're trying to get out of the battle with Wesley!"

Jackie's lips immediately set in a hard line. He was looking at the man with triangular eyes as if he had just escaped from a mental asylum. "Please tell me what have I said to make you think that way? Why would I ask him for his wager if I don't want to have a battle with him?"

The man with triangular eyes shook his shoulder, scoffed, and with a wave of his hand, said loudly," You said you won't fight against Brother Wesley if he didn't offer up a wager. That's proof you don't want to get into a battle against him because you know that Brother Wesley is a proud person and if he offers up a wager then it means you have a chance of winning. He hates you so much so there's no way he would do that!)

'What kind of sh*t logic is this?' thought Jackie. He found the whole thing so absurd that he nearly burst out in laughter. However, he could tell the man with triangular eyes thought he had guessed correctly to Jackie's motive.

‘Huh! So he does know the meaning of the word ‘fear ?. There’s no doubt he was acting all along,’ thought the man with triangular eyes, happy that he had managed to grab hold of his weakness.

He then turned to face the crowd and said, “You all heard what he said right? He must be scared to fight against Wesley to say all that. Does he seriously think he’s worthy enough for Brother Wesley to put up his wager?”

Wesley raised his eyebrow menacingly and looked at Jackie with a pair of eyes filled with derision as if he was asking him whether he really lacked the guts to go against him in a battle. Jackie was rendered speechless by their words and looks. What he hated the most was wasting his breath on other people who were sure of their own viewpoints. However, he knew things would not settle down so easily if he did not explain himself. He wished he did not have to waste any more time with the man with triangular eyes and Wesley.

The crowd seemed to agree with the man with triangular eyes. After all, Wesley was so strong that even Dale, who ranked 143rd, was no match for him. It was even more impossible for the newly recruited informal disciples to win against him. All of them held the same sentiment that Jackie had previously agreed to fight Wesley in the wager battle arena because he did not know just how strong Wesley was.

“He must have gone insane with shock and quickly thought up a plan like this to get himself out of the fight with Wesley. However, I don’t think his plan will work. If Wesley let the matter slide after all that he had said, then no one will ever take him seriously anymore.”

“Yeah! We all know about Wesley’s fiery temper and how he would do anything to take out those that he hates. Wesley wouldn’t be the Wesley we know if let Jackie go just like that.”

“That Jackie must be panicking to come up with a useless plan like this. Wesley would definitely offer up a wager just so he could torture him during the battle.”

Deacon Ambrose, who was standing under the battle platform, glanced at Jackie with eyes filled with resignation. To him, Jackie possessed unlimited potential but he should really do something about his impulsive nature.

Chapter 2013

There was no way Wesley, with his fiery temper, would let Jackie off the hook so easily. Even beating him up would not assuage his anger. However, Deacon Ambrose and Jackie were not really that close with each other so he chose not to speak up for Jackie and continued to observe from the sidelines.

The crowd’s comments continuously streamed into his ear and their unfounded speculations made him speechless. No matter how unwilling he was to defend himself, he was left with no choice but to speak up for himself in order to stop things from progressing the way they were.

“Can you just shut up for a bit? You’re getting hysterical,” he said to the man with triangular eyes. Then, he focused his attention on Wesley, who was looking at him with an eyebrow raised a provoking smile.

Jackie did not really care about what Wesley was thinking. “Let me ask you again-what’s your wager?”

Wesley narrowed his eyes. He agreed with what the man with triangular eyes said; offering up a wager meant that he thought Jackie had a winning chance against him. He really looked down on the trash disciples who got into the Dual Sovereign Pavilion through unusual means. Jackie would never even have the chance to step into the Dual Sovereign Pavilion if it were not for the impending war between the Clan associations. Therefore, he did not deserve to hold the same position as him!

However, since Jackie already asked, it would be unbecoming of him to not answer. He smiled mockingly and said, “Although you’re not worthy enough for me to offer a wager, I’ll still do it because crippling you is the most important thing right now.”

Deacon Ambrose coughed lightly and said, “The rules of the battle are clear-no permanent damage o r crippling during the battle.”

Wesley simply nodded at him but it was obvious he did not take what Deacon Ambrose said to heart by the way he was raising his eyebrow. Wesley’s words had spurred the crowd to be more spirited. They wondered if he was really going to cripple Jackie but if he really did that, he would be punished! However, maybe he was willing to risk it all to teach Jackie a lesson. They all knew he would be fine as long as he did not cause permanent damage to Jackie. After all, he could always turn to Elder Sayer for help.

Everyone turned to look at Jackie with slight pity in their eyes. They were all imagining how Jackie would end up crippled by Wesley. Some of them were even shaking their heads and the comments got louder.

Jackie was completely speechless. “Would it kill you to just answer my question? What does all this have to do with ego? I’m only asking you about your wager!” He did not care what Wesley was feeling. He only wished to settle the wager as soon as possible.

Wesley’s anger flared up again and his expression became rigid upon hearing what Jackie said. His hawklike eyes stared fixedly at Jackie. “You really sound like you can’t wait to die! Fine, let’s have it your way and to make it worth your while-I’ll let you decide what my wager is going to be.”

Jackie raised his eyebrow and in a calm and slow manner said, “Since you don’t have an individual room, how about you offer up a wager of one hundred and fifty contribution points and two soulpenetrating pills?”

Chapter 2014
Everybody’s eyes were wide open when they heard this. Putting the results of

the battle aside, just the wager from Wesley as requested by Jackie was enough to shock many people.

No matter who made the bet, they could not wager more than 150 sect contribution points and this meant that Jackie had requested Wesley to bet the highest contribution points. Together with two soul penetrating pills, the bet soared again as the soul penetrating pills were one of the more precious pills among the fifth-grade pills.

In fact, the cultivation of soul-penetrating pills required several exceptionally precious ingredients. Due to the value of these ingredients, the pricing of the soul-penetrating pill was comparable to sixth grade pills.

In the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, the pricing of every soul-penetrating pill was 150 sect contribution points and two soul-penetrating pills would be 300 sect contribution points. Together with the 150 sect contribution points, they wagered previously, they had a total of 450 sect contribution points!

This price had far exceeded the pricing of the room Jackie owned right now. Common informal disciples cannot easily come up with so many sect contribution points. Even if any of them accumulated so many sect contribution points, they were used to redeem high-grade martial art techniques or martial skills.

The corners of Wesley's mouth twitched. Before he was able to speak, the man with triangular eyes wailed and stared at Jackie with his ugly triangular eyes. "Are you crazy? You are asking Senior Brother Wesley to wager items that are worth more than 400 to 500 sect contribution points when your wager is only a room. How dare you say so!"

Even though everybody knew that Jackie was never going to win, they are also aware that those who went into the wager battle arena would wager items that are equal in value. The value of the items Jackie was requesting Wesley to bet on was so much more compared to what he could afford. What Jackie said had caused Wesley's darkened expression to slowly turn purple.

He felt that Jackie said this to humiliate him with hopes that he would refuse to wager these items to take care of his honor. In that case, Jackie would not need to join him in the wager battle arena.

The people surrounding them also had the same thoughts and many of them secretly shook their heads. "Jackie is quite smart and he knows that Wesley would be unconsciously shaming himself if Wesley agreed to what Jackie said. Based on Wesley's characteristics, he might refuse this wager to protect his honor. By then, Jackie will have an excuse to refuse to join Wesley in the wager battle arena."

"In the beginning, I thought that this guy wasn't smart enough. Now, it seems like I've looked down upon him as this way might just work. If I'm Wesley, I might refuse the bet just to protect my honor."

Wesley humphed coldly after he heard the discussion of the onlookers around them. He had an angry yet mocking look in his eyes. He raised his voice and said, “Alright! I shall bet all of the items! Although the wager is in your favor, I will never let things go your way!”

Everybody once again opened their eyes widely and gasped after they heard what Wesley said. Wesley had gone all out and ignored everything about honor as long as he was able to give Jackie a serious beating.

Wesley did this so that Jackie could not find any excuses to not join him in the wager battle arena. At this moment, everybody once again looked toward Jackie. However, Jackie seemed to have relaxed after he heard what Wesley said. The horrified and helpless expression that everybody was anticipating did not appear on his face.

Wesley tightened his fists and was gritting his teeth In anger toward Jackie. “You b*stard, remember what I’m saying now. The end of this month shall be the day of your death!”

Chapter 2015
Jackie chuckled lightly after he heard this and said, ” There’s no need to wait till the end of the month as we can battle now. Since you’ve agreed to my demands, there’s no point in waiting.”

What Jackie said was the same as dropping a 3000 kilograms boulder into a calm lake. Many people immediately wondered if they were hallucinating. What did Jackie just say? Was he in a hurry to die when he said that he wanted to go into the battle arena right then and there with Wesley? Or had he given up and gone completely crazy?

Even Noel and Brook looked at each other in blank dismay after they heard what Jackie said. Their mouths were wide open for a long time and they were unable to say a word apart from the surprise in their hearts as they looked at Jackie’s straight back.

Jackie completely ignored what the onlookers thought about him or their opinions toward him. He walked steadily and arrived in front of Ambrose. Ambrose was also slightly stunned as he looked at Jackie. He could not comprehend what Jackie wanted to do. He felt that Jackie was not the kind of lunatic who did not care about anything else.

Only around a dozen days had passed and he was in such a hurry to die? If he was given a month of training time, he might be able to increase his strength and would not lose in such an ugly way. However, Jackie was impatient for it to happen. The corners of his mouth twitched as he spoke dryly.” Are you sure that you want to have a fight with him In the battle arena now?”

Jackie nodded solemnly. “Unless Wesley is unwilling to fight with me.”

Wesley’s eyes almost jumped out of his sockets when he heard this. He really could not understand what Jackie had in mind. In the beginning, he thought that

Jackie did so many things to prevent himself from joining Wesley in the battle arena. However, Jackie was in so much anticipation to have a fight with him!

Wesley swallowed his saliva and the corners of his mouth twitched as he spoke. “Sure! We definitely have to fight!”

Jackie nodded. Was this not over? What was worth feeling tangled about? Jackie’s lack of dilemma did not mean that Ambrose was not in a dilemma. He softly sighed and felt that this was such an intriguing day. However, he could not say anything as the judge since both Jackie and Wesley had agreed to the terms. He asked Steward Fleming to pass him the wager record book as he slowly wrote down all the wagers set by both of them. When he finally finished writing the last item, he could not help but ask again, “Are you sure that you would like to have a battle with him now?”

Jackie nodded calmly. Ambrose exhaled deeply and decided to say nothing else. He pointed at the battle arena in the middle that was newly emptied. “This is your battle arena. The two of you can go up now if you’re ready.”

Jackie turned around and looked at Wesley as he spoke. “Do you need to take a rest to restore your peak state as you’ve just finished a battle?”

After Wesley heard what Jackie said, his facial expression changed like there were fireworks happening. His facial expression alternated between a greenish color and being pale. He humpped coldly as his shoulders trembled. Wesley felt that he did not know how to respond as he was exasperated. He even wondered if there was something wrong with this guy. The other onlookers were also speechless. Jackie was actually worried that Wesley was not at his peak state? Was he worried that Wesley would be unable to wound him badly later?

At this moment, everybody was certain that there was something wrong with Jackie’s mentality or he would not have spoken in such a manner. Wesley inhaled deeply and refused to say anything as he directly walked toward the battle arena he had just come down from.

The shoulders of the man with triangular eyes trembled as a speechless expression appeared on his face. “I’ve never seen anybody like you, who wishes to die so much. There really are various kinds of strange things in this great world.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2016-2020

Chapter 2016
In fact, Jackie could not contain himself for long with the triangular-eyed man pestering him, right next to him. To everyone’s surprise, Jackie abruptly turned around and stared at the man with triangular eyes coldly. Sneering, he said, “I’ve always been a vengeful person, and you’d do well to remember my words.”

After he finished speaking, Jackie turned around and walked toward the battle arena in the middle. At this moment, Wesley was already standing at the east side of the battle area, and Jackie stood opposite him. The two of them looked at each other, one of them expressionless while the other looked contemptuous. Wesley looked at Jackie as if he was an idiot or a dummy, but Jackie's expression remained passive for the most part.

It looked like no matter what expressions Wesley had on his face, it would not affect Jackie. The sound of people discussing what was happening beneath the stage was noisy enough to hurt people's ears. After all, none of them expected things to develop until such a situation. A lot of busybodies started to send transmission runes to their friends who were not there to watch the battle so that they would not miss the great battle.

Both Brook and Noel stared at those two, staring at each other from a distance as they stood on the battle stage, with frowns on their faces. They had no idea what to say at that moment. After some time, Brook lowered his voice as he spoke to Noel, "Senior Brother Noel, do you think that Senior Brother Jackie has given up?"

Brook was incredibly wary at this point, and he did not feel that there was something wrong with what he said. Instead, he was hesitant as he felt that Wesley would surely defeat Jackie, and that particular scene was unimaginable to him.

Noel frowned and sighed softly before he spoke with a hint of uncertainty, "I have no idea, but I don't think Jackie's brain had malfunctioned or something." In fact, he had no idea what he should say. Although he knew that Jackie was very talented in terms of the soul attribute, he had no idea which level was Jackie's true strength at.

Jackie was only at the initial stage of innate level, but Wesley had already achieved the intermediate stage of innate level. From the fighting prowess alone, Wesley was one level ahead of Jackie. On top of that, Jackie had only joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for a dozen days and had yet to be trained and groomed by the sect. How could he be Wesley's opponent when he had his talents but not the resources?

He might not be able to defeat Wesley even if he was In the same realm as Wesley, let alone challenging Wesley at a lower level!

As they stood on the battle arena, Wesley could not help but sneered at Jackie's seemingly expressionless face, commenting. "You're a good actor, I'll hand that to you. You still can be passive at a time like this. You have no idea what'll happen to you, do you?"

Jackie raised his eyebrows. "Can you just get on with It? What's the point of making these useless remarks?"

The informal disciples sitting at the audience seats were baffled upon hearing Jackie's remark. His brain must have been filled with water, and the damage must have been detrimental. Why else would he say such a thing?

"Do you have any idea what you are talking about, young man?" jeered Wesley. "You're challenging me from a lower level, and you've only joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion recently. Do you truly think that you can defeat me?!" Wesley laughed as he spoke.

Jackie nodded and actually replied level-headedly, "I wouldn't be standing here if I wasn't sure I can defeat you."

Right after that, a suffocating silence appeared first before somebody snickered, and laughter filled the entire area. A large group of people broke out into laughter because of what Jackie said, looking at Jackie as though he was the biggest clown for thinking he could defeat Wesley. Did he not understand that he was only in the initial stage of innate level and did not have the support of powerful resources?

On what grounds did he think that he could defeat Wesley? Was it just because of the fact that he ranked first place during the admission assessment? That admission assessment was nothing to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion disciples who joined the sect through the usual admission tests, and many of them there could have done what Jackie did!

Wesley scoffed indignantly. "You truly are entertaining. The fact that I'm fighting with someone like you in the battle arena is an insult to me!"

Chapter 2017
After his warning, Wesley did not bother saying anything else as he pulled his three-feet-long sword from his storage ring, gripping it tightly by the hilt. He raised his right hand, and the sword was once again illuminated with a silver-like light. Everybody looked on as the specks of starlight gathered that became a small yet bright star within the sword's silver-like light.

Fighting with Jackie did not require Wesley to use much strength. He formed two silver stars when he fought Dale, but he would only need one to blast Jackie away completely.

Jackie raised his eyebrows. When he was at the audience seats back then, he noticed Wesley using the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud, but standing right across Wesley, he could clearly feel the overwhelming strength of the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud. If he was a usual martial artist in the initial stage of the innate level, he would have lost his imposing momentum under such a strong suppression. It was possible that some with weaker fighting prowess would not be able to stand straight.

The Seven Stars Meteor Cloud was truly a Red-level intermediate martial skill. Jackie raised his eyebrow as he slowly took out a black dagger from the Mustard Seed. There was nothing special about this black dagger. It was only the length of his fingers and was not much different from Dale's weapon apart from the color.

Jackie had been thinking about what weapon he should use before he went up the battle arena. Even after thinking it through, he still felt that the dagger was more suitable for him. Although daggers were more suitable for assassins, Destroying the Void was a soul attribute martial skill, and it seemed suitable for him to be an assassin.

It might have been because of how ordinary the dagger Jackie had looked without any formation or runes carved into it, but the gossip and murmurs below the stage amplified.

“This young man can’t even come up with a decent weapon. This is looking really shabby.”

“He’s just a guy without any background, and he had just joined the sect recently. How could he own weapons that could rival or be on par as ours?”

Wesley harrumphed indignantly as he stared at the black dagger Jackie had at hand. With a move of his sword, he went straight toward Jackie, planning to defeat him with a single move. He wanted to injure Jackie to the point Jackie would not be able to counter him, all so Wesley could regain his honor. Jackie had to pay dearly!

Wesley moved extremely speedily, like an arrow released from the bow. He came rushing toward Jackie with the sound of wind whistling. His sword looked ominous as it contained his will to kill. A regular person in the initial stage of the innate level would not be able to withstand the strength of his attack.

Frowning, Jackie performed the seal with his hands. Soon, a streak of black light appeared from his palm.

Until that moment, Jackie was unable to estimate Wesley’s true strength. However, Wesley realized at that moment that Jackie did not pay much importance to him. Hence, he decided to not use all his strength, and this sword attack only used a portion of his strength.

If that was the case, he had to remain calm.

After the black soul sword appeared in Jackie’s palm, It immediately covered the entire black dagger. The dagger trembled before it seemingly hummed, looking as though the dagger could barely contain the power inserted into it.

Jackie frowned as he once again performed the seal with his hands. This time, the black dagger immediately floated into mid-air.

Unfortunately, Wesley’s attack was right before Jackie in the blink of an eye.

Jackie pushed his hands forward calmly, and the black dagger moved forward toward Wesley’s sword attack.

Wesley scoffed haughtily and snapped, “You’re biting off more than you can chew!”

Many started to feel sorry for Jackie when they saw this scene. In the beginning, everybody was anticipating the martial skills that Jackie was going to perform. When they realized that Jackie had only infused his black dagger with a streak of black light, almost everybody shook their heads at the same time.

Chapter 2018
Any powerful martial skill would be accompanied by a ferocious power motion when it was released, However, no one among the audience sitting could feel any power movement from the dark-colored light when Jackie activated the martial skill.

The spectators’ reactions were similar to those who observed the fight between Jackie and Warren. Everybody heard a clear clanging sound of weapons knocking into each other. The black dagger and the silver sword in Wesley’s hands collided with one another.

The silver sword shone glaringly, and a confident smirk appeared on Wesley’s face. To him, Jackie’s black dagger was like a piece of trash he could easily knock off into the air…but the smile on his face soon fell after a few seconds as he felt a blunt force coming toward his right hand, the hand that held the sword.

This particular force stunned Wesley for a moment before he took a step back.

The next moment, Wesley’s eyes almost popped out of their sockets as he discovered that his Seven Stars Meteor Cloud was equally matched to the martial skill Jackie had performed.

Jackie took a step back, in sync with him!

The silver light from the stars and the dark-colored light disappeared after their intense collision midair. However, the black light contained dark energy that nobody understood. The energy traveled up his sword and impacted his arm instantly!

Wesley’s facial expression darkened as he realized that a piercing pain came from his soul after exchanging a single martial skill attack with Jackie. What was that?! Wesley was in disbelief. All this time, he thought Jackie was no match for him, that he would be able to get rid of him with the power of a single star.

It seemed, however, that they were of equal power, and Wesley even suffered an unexpected blow.

He activated his true energy to suppress the pain in his soul. His right hand trembled slightly as his entire face turned chalky white. This was mainly due to his shock and fury.

Both of them took a step back after exchanging a single attack. Every informal disciple in the audience seats inhaled in surprise when they saw this, and they even thought they were hallucinating.

“Oh my god! Have I lost my mind? How and why did that happen? Jackie is actually strong enough to exchange blows with Wesley where both of them took a step back, and none of them managed to suppress the other?! What was that martial skill he used? It’s capable of competing with the martial skill of the Red proficient level!” The corners of that person’s mouth twitched uncontrollably after he spoke, and the people around him could not hold their surprise, too.

“Don’t forget that Jackie is one realm lower than Wesley, and this means that he’s challenging Wesley from a different level. Even so, the fight between them still ended with a tie!”

Even though they understood that Wesley did not use all his strength, it was enough to shock everyone present. After all, Jackie was only in the initial stage of the innate level and had only joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion around ten days ago. He was already so much stronger than many informal disciples present as he was capable of performing with such strength, despite the huge difference between him and Wesley.

Brook’s eyes widened as he started to ramble, “No wonder Elder Lee said that Senior Brother Jackie has the strength to be among the top three hundred informal disciples. I thought he was just saying that to please Jackie, but from the looks of things, Elder Lee was telling the truth!”

Meanwhile, Noel exhaled deeply as amazement filled his gaze. He knew earlier on that Jackie’s talents were much stronger than many disciples in the front positions of the sect.

From what had happened, it seemed like he had still underestimated Jackie’s strength.

Chapter 2019
Wesley’s followers gaped at the scene so much that they nearly dislocated their lower jaw, especially the man with triangular eyes, who was stunned on the spot. His mouth was wide open as sheer disbelief overwhelmed his face.

He had never expected Jackie to be so strong. The corners of his mouth slightly twitched as he growled, “Impossible! This can’t be real! How could this guy have such strength?!”

The person that suffered the greatest shock among everyone present would be Wesley, who stood opposite Jackie. Wesley gripped his sword tightly with his right hand. If they looked carefully, they would be able to see the blue veins popping out on his right hand because he was overusing his strength.

Although Wesley tried his best to suppress the surprise and disbelief in his eyes, he failed to do so. He exhaled deeply, looking like he had lost himself with his craze evident in his eyes.

“No wonder you could act so ferociously before all this. It turns out you do have some tricks up your sleeves. Still, don’t you dare think that you can show off in front of me with that!” Although he was surprised that Jackie truly had some strength, Wesley still did not think that Jackie could defeat him. After all, he did not use all his strength but only a portion of it.

Jackie looked at Wesley emotionlessly, seemingly unperturbed even with Wesley’s comments, which Wesley hated.

He hated this overly confident, fearless expression Jackie had. He glared fiercely at Jackie and gritted his teeth. “I won’t hold back this time! Prepare to face your death, young man!”

With that, he once again performed the silver seals with both his hands, and they grew stronger in his palms before those silver beams transformed into twisted runes midair. These twisted runes gathered to form a second silver star within a single breath. The star floated and rotated speedily on top of Wesley’s sword.

The operation energy in the sword also grew increasingly strong. At this moment, Wesley’s strength once again increased to a new level. When the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud achieved the perfection level, seven stars would appear on the sword. Wesley had not achieved the perfection level at that level and was only in the preliminary level. Even so, commonfolk were no match for him.

In the previous fight, Dale was defeated when he unleashed two stars on the sword. The speed that these two stars were rotating started to increase, and soon, a small swirl of energy formed around them.

“Wesley’s getting serious now, and that guy’s going to lose this time. Even though he’s stronger than regular people, Wesley is one whole realm higher than him!”

“That’s right! Not only is Wesley one whole realm higher than him, but the level of the martial skill that Wesley practices is much stronger than usual informal disciples. At the very least, he’s much stronger than me. He must’ve achieved the preliminary level for his Seven Stars Meteor Cloud and is going to achieve the proficient level soon. I haven’t even achieved the preliminary level yet!”

“It truly is quite odious to carry out comparisons between people. Nonetheless, that guy is quite strong, and he must’ve achieved the preliminary level with the martial skill he practiced, even though he can’t compare to Senior Brother Wesley. Otherwise, how could he be so strong and achieve a comparable result as the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud?”

“Still, what was the martial skill that guy used just now? There weren’t any obvious overpowering energy motions, and I even wondered if that guy pulled a prank or something.”

Murmurs and gossip rumbled throughout the audience seated. Among everybody there, only Noel guessed correctly that the martial skill Jackie had used belonged

to the soul attribute, and that was why there was no overpowering power fluctuation.

Chapter 2020
Jackie glanced at the small stars that spun wildly on Wesley's three-feet-long sword. Jackie seemed to be unfazed, even though the stars spun rapidly and formed a whirlpool-like funnel. Once the stars exploded and released their power, ordinary people would not be able to withstand the overwhelming power.

He once again performed the seal with his hands and formed the second soul sword, one much darker than the first soul sword. At that moment, Jackie had solid control over the soul sword that he could control both soul swords to attack freely or merge into one.

Jackie narrowed his eyes as he once again infused the soul sword into the black dagger. The black dagger once again released a striking dark-colored light. When they took a closer look, the black dagger floating midair was releasing a wave of greyishblack mist. It looked weirdly seductive and seemed capable of enchanting anyone.

Wesley, of course, noticed what had happened, remaining silent as he frowned. He stepped forward as he once again waved his sword outward. This time, both his speed and strength achieved the extreme level.

Regular folks could not even make out what was happening with such speed. In the blink of an eye, the sword lunged right toward Jackie's face.

Everyone gaped at the sight in utter shock. They originally thought that Jackie would be cut into two halves by the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud. However, Jackie managed to evade the attack from a weird angle!

The martial art technique that Jackie practiced was the strongest in the Divine Void World, Divine Void Heavenly Path. Practicing this martial art technique allowed him to control the laws of space. Although Jackie only understood a slight portion of the laws, it was sufficient for him to use it during this battle.

The laws of space were much more accurate compared to pure speed. If Jackie was just 'fast, he would be wounded by the overpowering energy, even if he managed to avoid the attack. However, he activated the laws of space which granted him the power to ignore the limitation of distance. Although it looked like Wesley was attacking this space, Jackie had already used the power of space to transfer himself to another space and evaded Wesley's attack.

However, Jackie felt his true energy trembling in his body, and he had used up a large amount of his energy after he performed this martial art technique. Beads of sweat trickled down his forehead as he panted heavily, and he silently warned himself that he should not execute this technique so carelessly in the future. After all, he had not succeeded in practicing this technique. Even though he evaded the attack by utilizing the space, he had used up a large amount of his true energy, which was not worth much.

Everyone's eyes widened at the sight.

"How did he evade the attack? He's actually unharmed! Wesley's sword was right at his face, but he managed to evade the attack by turning around. Something's weird with that."

"That's right! Seems to me that something doesn't add up, too. It felt like Jackie wasn't within the range of attack at that moment. What's going on here?!"

How could these informal disciples understand the laws of space when it was such a peculiar matter? Moreover, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was only a sect in the West Cercei State, and all they could think of at that moment was how difficult it was to understand what Jackie did.

Even though Wesley was shocked by Jackie's capability of avoiding his sword attack, he did not stop. There was a saying that went 'it's impossible to evade the unavoidable,' and there would be a time when Jackie would fail to evade.

Wesley turned around in the air and waved his sword, evoking a silver light to appear midair. He raised the sword with his right hand and once again pointed it toward Jackie. He was much faster than before, and the attack aimed straight toward Jackie's head.

With a slight frown, Jackie raised his hands. One after another, the black runes merged with the black dagger in front of him.

The moment the sword brandished toward him, the black dagger released a black light and once again collided with the three-feet-long silver sword. Another audible crack was heard, and almost half of the silver light dispersed after its collision with the greyish-black light.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2021-2025

Chapter 2021
Everyone was stupefied at what happened.

Jackie once again released the spell, and the black dagger shone brightly. He pushed the dagger forward with all his strength, and the black dagger instantly broke through the silver light, aiming straight for Wesley.

Wesley's eyes snapped open widely, and despite his hesitance, he habitually stepped back. The black dagger was only three feet away from Wesley's body as he hastily raised his sword to intercept the attack.

A sharp, resounding clang between metals was heard.

The black dagger clashed against the three-feet sword once more. However, the black light did not dismantle the silvery sword light this time. Instead, the black light enveloped it like a maggot latching onto a bone!

Wesley's expression contorted uglily at the sight, and he immediately activated his true strength to shatter the black light that spiraled upward the sword like vines. Unlucky for him, Wesley still underestimated Jackie's attack.

Although he used his true strength to shatter most of the black light, a fraction of the dark-colored light conquered the sword and crawled onto his arm.

Wesley felt a sharp pain coming from his hands, and It felt like 10,000 ants gnawed at his soul. The sharp pain caused him to wail out in pain.

Wesley was a person who greatly prioritized his image, and he would not have wailed like he did-or anything else of that nature-even if someone wounded him terribly. However, the pain of the soul being invaded was not usual pain. Even those who acted high and mighty could never hold back their scream when they were invaded by the soul sword.

"What the hell is this?!" Wesley was in so much pain that he yelled out loudly. He realized, at that moment, that his dark-colored light was like a kind of poison, one that aimed to hurt the soul instead of the body.

Destroying the Void was a soul attack, and just a fraction of it was enough to submit the victim through sheer pain.

Wesley stepped back, distancing himself greatly from Jackie. Meanwhile, the black dagger flew back toward Jackie, though this did not mean that two soul swords were defeated by Wesley's Seven Stars Meteor Clouds. Instead, Jackie was forced to retrieve the black dagger because the energy had been exhausted.

At this moment, Wesley's face was chalky-white, and his eyes were bloodshot. His hands seemed to quiver as he attempted to activate his true strength to suppress the sharp pain that assaulted his soul.

Everyone was speechless at the outcome, and the entire area fell into complete silence for a good while, save the sound of the breeze blowing past the tree leaves, proving that time was still ticking. Even Ambrose looked toward the battle stage as if he had seen a ghost.

Finally, somebody blurted, "This guy actually hurt Wesley. How can he be so strong? What is the martial skill that he performed? Why does the black light have such a strong power?!"

"Are you asking me? How would I know? Regardless, we can't underestimate that young man. I just can't fathom how Wesley failed to defeat Jackie when he didn't even hold back!"

"The martial skill Jackie used must've carried the laws of poison. Why else did Wesley wail so painfully? On top of that, that dark-colored skill is incredibly ominous. Even though it was shattered, remnants of it still climbed onto a person's body…like maggots on bones!"

Chapter 2022
This time, even Ambrose chimed in, "That's right! Our hearts shuddered at the fright. What is that thing? It rendered Wesley, a person who cares so much about his pride, to wail in pain!"

Dale, despite having been wounded by Wesley and having shameful sword cuts left on his body, could not help but sneak to the audience seats when he learned that Jackie and Wesley were at the battle arena. He ignored his wounds, even though he was supposed to be tending to them, and happened to chance at the sight of their battle-one that looked like both men were even. Dale was rooted on the spot at the sight, unable to assess if what he saw was real.

He ignored the pain that stemmed from the slashes on his body, one that even plagued his mind.

If this fight continued at this rate, Wesley might truly lose to Jackie. If Jackie was capable of that, this would no doubt shake the entire Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

After all, Jackie took up the challenge despite being on a different level, and he had just joined the sect as well. On top of that, Wesley was a talented person, and he might even become a chosen disciple in the future. If Jackie managed to defeat Wesley, he would certainly become a chosen disciple in the future.

The man with triangular eyes almost bit his own tongue, while the subordinates that flattered Wesley just moments ago flushed a crimson color. None of them dared say anything as the reality came as a slap to their faces.

They degraded Jackie so badly, and it even sounded like Wesley only had to move his hand for Jackie to be beaten into a dead dog. At this rate, however, no one knew who would be done for.

The man with triangular eyes trembled as he looked a t Jackie with a hint of fear in his eyes, instantly understanding something. Even if Jackie failed to defeat Wesley in the arena, his future would nonetheless be prosperous.

Eventually, he would successfully become an informal disciple and even a chosen disciple. Of course, until the day Jackie became a chosen disciple, the man with triangular eyes would not be able to survive in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. After all, was It not all too easy for an informal disciple to pick on an informal disciple without any background like the triangular-eyed guy?

The triangular-eyed guy's flushed face instantly turned incomparably pale. His hands that were hidden in his sleeves shivered unnoticeably. At this moment, gossip and debates were heard across the entire audience seats.

"Seems like we won't get to guess who's going to champion this. Who would've thought Jackie to be so strong? It's surprising, really. After all, he had just joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for a dozen days and had never been trained and groomed by the sect. Looking at the way things are now, though, he must've gone through something before he joined the sect. The martial skill this young man practiced is comparable to the Seven Stars Meteor Clouds Wesley performed. It's even possible that the level of his martial skill is higher than the Seven Stars Meteor Clouds!"

The people around the person who said this agreed, but many were still amazed with everything that had happened.

"If the martial skill that Jackie practiced is at a higher level than the Seven Stars Meteor Clouds, it should be Red level premium martial skill. If that's true, this young man is very talented!"

Martial skills were not something a person could practice just because they wished to do so. Practicing the Red level martial skill not only required a person to be extremely talented, but they had to achieve a certain fighting prowess as well. Taking Warren as an example, he was at the initial stage of the innate level like Jackie, but the martial skill he practiced was at a much lower grade compared to the Seven Stars Meteor Clouds.

This did not mean that Warren was unable to get Red level intermediate martial skills. On the contrary, Warren would not be able to practice the skill, even if he managed to attain a Red level intermediate martial skill.

Chapter 2023
"Who would've thought that there are talented disciples among the newly recruited ones that they simply took in? Jackie's talents are comparable to Senior Brother Duncan!"

Duncan, for many, was like an untouchable ceiling. Not only did he have a strong background, but his talents were so impressive that others just could not breathe when facing him. Many people worshiped Duncan as their idol.

It was an extremely high note of approval for them to compare Jackie to Duncan.

Every debate and comment from the audience traveled to Wesley's ears; his sense of hearing was sharp after all. The more these informal disciples talked, the darker Wesley's expression became. At this moment, it was as if he had swallowed a couple of flies as his expression gradually turned into a ghastly pale color.

His right hand gripped the three-foot-long sword, albeit with a shaky hand. He stared at Jackie like a hawk, and his expression showed just how much he wanted to bite Jackie to relieve his hatred. If looks could kill, Jackie would have died several tens of thousands times.

"You must be very proud of yourself, huh? You're probably all fired up just listening to these comments about you, aren't you? I'll admit that I've underestimated you. I never expected that you'd be so strong!" spoke Wesley, though harshly and forcefully through gritted teeth. His eyes were bloodshot when he said these words as his envy and hate nearly spilled from his chest. He even grew envious of Jackie, who was extremely talented. Duncan alone was not enough, and all of a sudden, another talented individual appeared, suppressing him at the bottom!

Jackie raised his eyebrows. "Why do you always talk so much nonsense? I have a tight schedule, and I don't have much time to waste on you. You shouldn't think that I'm purposely going against you. To be honest with you, I don't care about you that much."

Jackie's response came as a challenge to Wesley's sensitive feelings, and these words were like harsh slaps on Wesley's face. Moreover, Jackie's expression barely shifted as he said those words. Wesley knew that Jackie really had such thoughts and was not doing this on purpose to provoke him. Compared to being provoked and abused, it was even more difficult for Wesley to accept such disregard.

Wesley scoffed indignantly and gritted his teeth to the point that the veins on his forehead protruded." Don't think of defeating me. I, Wesley Sayer, have achieved what I have, and I'm not someone you can defeat just by saying so!"

A second later, Wesley raised his right hand and threw the three-foot sword into the air. The threefoot sword buzzed and trembled as it floated in front of Wesley. Once again, Wesley continuously performed the formation with both his hands.

The silver light circulated between Wesley's fingers, and the twisted runes poured into the three-feet sword were like mud being poured into the sea. Everyone noticed that the light emitted by the silver sword only grew stronger.

Soon enough, a loud cracking noise could be heard coming from the sword. To everyone's surprise, the third star appeared, and this silenced the audience once more.

None of them expected that Wesley was capable of forming the third star. No wonder some informal disciples that had a better insight mentioned that Wesley was already halfway into the proficient level of the Seven Stars Meteor Clouds.

Forming the first and second stars only proved that Wesley had achieved the preliminary level of the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud. However, if he was capable of forming the third star, it proved that he was halfway into the proficient level! When he successfully formed the fourth star, it meant that he had already achieved the proficient level. There were a total of three levels when it came to practicing martial skills. These martial skills would only exert their overwhelming power when the martial artist achieved the second level.

Wesley took in a deep breath and said solemnly, "I didn't want to show my true strength before the sect's ranking battle, but I can no longer hide it, even if I wanted to. Consider it your honor, Jackie, to have forced me into such a situation!"

Chapter 2024
Jackie's lips twitched upon hearing Wesley's bold claim. It seemed like Wesley loved to boast about his strength pridefully no matter what he was doing. To Wesley, it was not Jackie's strong powers that forced him into doing this. Instead, Jackie should be honored that he was doing so.

Jackie was stunned for a moment, however, and he even felt like laughing at Wesley's words. Nonetheless, he did not want to waste time on nonsense with Wesley at such a crucial moment. After the third star was formed, all three stars attracted and controlled one another. They continued to spin briskly on top of the three-feet sword and stirred the surrounding energy into a small-sized tornado.

Everyone's eyes widened at the sight. Many of them were already mentally debating if Wesley could compete with the top 100 or even the top 80 informal disciples when he performed his strongest hit!

"It seems like my trip here today isn't in vain; I get to see such an interesting fight. I never thought Wesley had hidden his last resort during his fight with Dale before. This is his true power!"

"That's right! I came here today because of the duel between Wesley and Dale. Surprisingly, the battle between Wesley and a newly recruited informal disciple was what amazed me the most. If I tell anyone else who has no idea what's happening here, they'd probably laugh at me, thinking I made it all up!"

"Let's not discuss this right now. Who do you think is the stronger person, now that Wesley has shown his true strength?"

This question once again haunted the surrounding spectators, and many of them frowned as they looked at one another. None of them could come up with a conclusion, though. After all, the battle depicted change after change in the tides of battle, which confused everyone of their judgment.

However, there were still people who spoke plausibly, “It’s Wesley, no doubt. Although Wesley isn’t as talented as Jackie, he’s already in the intermediate stage of the innate level. On top of that, his Seven Stars Meteor Clouds has already achieved such a high level of proficiency. I believe that he’s even capable of fighting somebody who’s in the top 50 of our pavilión!” said one individual.

Many agreed to this person’s statement, nodding in agreement as they did.

Dale was stunned when he saw this scene. He originally thought that Wesley had used his complete strength, which was why he lost his battle In the end, but what Wesley was showing in his fight with Jackie proved him wrong. Wesley did not use his strongest power to defeat him, and it finally made sense why Wesley was all proud and confident before. It turned out that he did not even regard Dale to an extent.

Realizing this, Dale could not even mask the defeat visible in his eyes. His self-esteem had suffered a powerful blow.

The discussion grew increasingly heated in the audience seats. The person with the most solemn expression among the audience was definitely Ambrose, who was seated in the middle among them, his eyes fixed on the battle arena.

Ambrose was not a disciple, and as the only deacon In charge of things present, if anything happened to the important people on the battle arena, he would be the first to face the wrath of upper management.

The upper management would not pay much attention if the people involved were regular informal disciples, even if one of them ended up badly wounded or disabled, so long as it was not a permanent disability. However, the situation was different at that moment. Wesley was supported by Elder Sayer and was a rather talented disciple. He had been one of the key disciples being focused on by the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. If something bad happened to him, Ambrose would also suffer.

On the other hand, even though Jackie did not have any support or background, his talents were spectacular. If he was seriously injured or ended up disabled due to Wesley under Ambrose’s supervision, Ambrose would pay dearly, too.

Ambrose’s expression continued to darken as he silently prayed for nothing to happen to these two people. His gaze never wavered from both Jackie and Wesley. If one of them looked to be seriously defeated, he had to immediately stop their fight.

At this moment on the battle stage, Wesley was completely unnerved by Jackie’s provocation, and nothing else mattered to him at that point. He held the

three-feet sword in his right hand, and the silver light was so strong that it could envelop his entire body.

He let out a deep breath, and a silver light burst out of his eyes. “Young man, I, Wesley Sayer, will show you my might, one that can render you incapacitated!”

Instantly, he rushed toward Jackie like a ferocious lion. The three stars spun sprightly on the sword Wesley had in his hand. The moment he rushed over, he suddenly grabbed the sharp blade of the three foot sword with his left hand and the sword cut his hand. Blood instantly soaked the blade, and the bright-red blood looked increasingly ominous under the silver light.

Chapter 2025
The next moment, the three-feet sword spongily absorbed Wesley’s blood. The three stars rotating crazily around the three-feet sword, meanwhile, increased in speed.

Jackie was sure this was Wesley’s desperate tactic. At this moment, a solemn look appeared on Jackie’s face, and he even felt slightly uneasy. Despite that, he could not retreat even if he was hesitant.

With that, he performed the seal continuously with his hands, and the black light was once again injected into the dagger.

The dagger, like before, released a streak of black light, and the third soul sword was fused into the black dagger. To be safe, Jackie made up his mind and increased his true energy. Even though he could easily fuse two soul swords with his current abilities, it was still difficult for Jackie to merge all three soul swords in one attempt.

He could not focus on that drawback, however.

He had to force himself to fuse the swords, even if he typically could not. His hands turned continuously and became faster. One after another, the seals appeared in his hands like a running streak of light. Jackie felt waves of piercing pain on his soul, signifying that he had reached his limit, but he pushed that to the back of his mind. He had to merge all three soul swords, even if it hurt his soul!

Whoosh!

Following a strong gust of wind, Wesley got right up to Jackie. The silver light covered his entire being, and the sword shone brightly as it went straight toward Jackie’s face!

Jackie narrowed his eyes and stepped on the ground to quickly retreat. He was so close to succeeding!

Wesley was breakneck-fast, one that disabled commonfolk from defeating him. Luckily, the martial art technique Jackie practiced was very special and contained

the laws of space. Although he only mastered a small portion of the technique, it successfully increased Jackie's speed greatly.

A fierce look appeared in Wesley's eyes as he roared angrily, "You wish to hide from me? Not happening!"

Wesley's roar delivered his rawest feelings of hatred and envy, and it was evident how he roared with all his strength.

Ambrose almost stopped breathing as he stood up from the audience seat, standing in a way that he was ready to rush up the battle stage. As long as there was something wrong, he would not pause for another second.

Jackie retreated speedily. At this moment, he was still performing the seal continuously with his soul. The sharp pain in his soul reminded him that it was too much.

Wesley naturally knew that Jackie was forcing himself to withstand his attack, and he, of course, did not want to give Jackie the time and opportunity to. If he lost to Jackie, his self-confidence would suffer a huge blow, and this would have a deep effect on his future. He could not allow himself to lose to Jackie.

He roared furiously and once again increased his speed. This time, Jackie was unable to evade the attack, even with the help of the laws of space. A smirk gradually appeared on Wesley's face. "Accept your death, young man! You can't hide away from this!"

The decisive voice filled the entire arena, and everyone stared at the stage. At this moment, Jackie suddenly stopped retreating backward.

He suddenly raised his head and pushed his hands forward. The black dagger once again met the silver sword, and everyone heard it-a loud explosion. The center where both energies collided sent out waves of energy that impacted the formation surrounding the battle stage.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2026-2030

Chapter 2026

The audience heard that familiar dull explosion as a figure came hurtling out of the center of the energy surge. The figure slammed against the activated energy barrier of the battle platform with an audible whump.

The figure was, in fact, Wesley, and the protective barrier managed to stop him from flying out of the arena.

Wesley, who was once insufferably arrogant, was rendered to such a pathetic state-he looked like he had just struggled out of the quagmire. He slid down the

energy barrier and fell onto the ground with a loud thud. Dust flew all over the place as Wesley slumped to the ground with his four limbs up in the air. His clothes were torn into rags.

The dark-colored light covered Wesley like a layer of mist. Blood leaked from the corners of his mouth as his face contorted in sheer pain. In the previous attack, Wesley's Seven Stars Meteor Cloud was no match for the Destroying the Void. After the Destroying the Void, which formed three soul swords, defeated the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud, the remnants of the skill struck Wesley.

After all, the Destroying the Void was a soul attack.

As if it was not enough that he suffered an unexpected attack, Wesley did not even know how to defend himself against a soul-attribute attack. He could not endure the attack, even though he knew that it was highly likely that the remaining power from Jackie's attack would damage his soul if it struck him.

The audience once again fell into silence. The remaining energy quickly dispersed without the support of the relevant parties. After the light disappeared, Jackie emerged before the crowd, albeit In a pitiable state as well.

The silver sword beams left multiple slices on Jackie's clothes in their wake. His face was pale as paper as cold sweat slowly trickled down his forehead. He had a deep frown on his face as the corners of his mouth slightly trembled. Despite standing upright, everyone could see that he had his fair share of struggles, though he seemed to fare better than Wesley, who fell straight to the ground with a distorted expression due to the pain he faced.

"Oh my god! He really won! He really did it! Wesley couldn't defeat Jackie, even when they both executed their strongest attack at the same time? What sort of martial skill is this guy practicing? He's so strong!"

"His martial skill isn't the only thing that's strong. I'm sure the martial art technique he practices is a high-level one as he's able to achieve such results. Where did this guy come from? I heard that he doesn't have any background. If no one's backing him up, where did this strong martial skill of his come from?!"

The prattles instantly overwhelmed the perimeter.

Jackie, meanwhile, ignored everything onlookers were saying. At this moment, it was true that he was not feeling well. Although his clothes had several cuts on them, his pale expression was not due to the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud. Instead, it was because his spirit energy had been dried out-hurt, even-as he forcefully merged the three soul swords. However, a wound on his soul of such degree was nothing to Jackie. He was not badly wounded, and he only needed to rest for a couple of days.

He inhaled deeply as his gaze shifted. He saw that Ambrose was about to open his mouth, to announce the end of this wager battle. Before he had the chance to speak, however, Jackie moved as a small amount of true energy agitated in his

body. Even though he forcefully merged the three soul swords and this caused his spirit energy to dry up, he had not used much of the true energy in his body. He had already put the black dagger away as he rushed forward like a cannon.

Jackie got right up to Wesley, having not been too far from him, within a breath. Ambrose immediately realized what Jackie wanted to do when he saw Jackie's action

Ambrose's face turned pale and he shouted loudly to stop Jackie, but Jackie was one step faster than Ambrose's words. The moment he got right before Wesley, Jackie silently swung his fist sharply at his chest.

Wesley's rib broke with an audible crack, one that the audience could hear. The impact from the attack rendered Wesley somewhat unconscious from the severe pain as he had already suffered from a damaged soul. He failed to see Jackie flying toward him, and when he realized what had happened, Jackie had broken his rib with a punch.

The physical agony he felt, along with the torment his soul was haunted with, made Wesley feel like he was in hell.

Chapter 2027
No matter how willful Wesley was, he could not hold back his scream.

After seeing what happened, Ambrose instantly turned pale. "Stop! I declare that the battle is over! You've won now, Jackie, so stop what you're doing!"

Ambrose could not just watch as Jackie's attack crushed Wesley entirely. Although Jackie's previous punch broke Wesley's ribs, it did not cause more fatal injuries. Cold sweat dripped down Ambrose's forehead as he feared Jackie would continue his assault, even if Jackie listened to him. After all, the animosity between Jackie and Wesley ran deep, and Wesley even insisted on crippling Jackie before the battle.

Jackie was not someone who would just forgive and forget. He was also impressively talented and did not place much importance on the fact that Wesley came from an important family.

Surprisingly, Jackie stopped attacking after hearing Ambrose's declaration and slowly stood up from the floor. He did not turn around to look toward the audience seats and instead glanced at Wesley, much to the audience's surprise. He chuckled softly and said calmly, "Now, do you understand why I asked you to make those bets?"

Although Wesley was in so much pain that he was losing his sensibility, he heard what Jackie had said. His words triggered Wesley so badly, more so than the pain on his body. He struggled to open his eyes and glared at Jackie murderously. He coughed violently as blood and some of his internal organs spewed from the corners of his mouth. Despite better judgment, he growled, "I will kill you!"

Wesley's anger nearly demented him. It felt like he was utterly humiliated without Jackie saying anything, let alone since Jackie decided to tell him why he agreed to the bet so calmly. Wesley finally understood why Jackie behaved in such a way in front of everyone, even though they previously looked down on him.

After all, no one believed that Jackie could defeat Wesley and thought that Jackie had given up.

Even the only deacon there also thought so, but the tables have turned against them, making them look like a joke instead. What Jackie said had acted as a reminder to the others, and they finally realized why Jackie insisted for Wesley to make the bet from the beginning

Everyone, during the time they were deciding on the final bet, looked at Jackie as though he was a jumping clown, but with everything that had happened, the audience felt their face burning in pain. Even Brook and Noel, who sided with Jackie, were also speechless.

"You wish to kill me? Sure, just tell me when. With your current strength, however, I'll be so far ahead of you after another ten years of training."

Everyone would have laughed at Jackie had he said this at the beginning of the match, but not at this moment. They were all exceptionally quiet as what Jackie said was the truth. Jackie had the ability to challenge Wesley from a lower level. If he was given more time to train, he would be very far ahead of Wesley without a doubt.

Wesley could not just simply accept such things, but it was the truth, even if he did not want to accept it. Wesley's face turned purple from anger and looked like an old man on the verge of death.

Jackie raised his brows, disinterested in talking to Wesley. How he wished Wesley would have died on the spot in his anger, but that would not happen. At that moment, Ambrose had closed the protective shield as runner disciples waiting down the arena rushed toward Jackie and Wesley.

Chapter 2028
The runner disciples quickly transferred Wesley onto the stretcher. Every battle platform came with five or six runner disciples, and their main task was to bring any wounded disciple after their battles for emergency treatment.

Jackie raised his eyebrows when Wesley was about to be brought down the platform by the runner disciples and said, "Don't forget our wager. According to the rules of the wager battle arena, you need to send the items you owe within three days. If you fail to do that within three days, not only will you be detained, but you might be deported from the sect, too."

Wesley was so angry that he coughed up blood hearing Jackie's words. The chest area of his clothes had already been dyed with blood. His hands quaked as he wanted to clap back at Jackie with something snarky. Alas, he had already lost,

and it was useless no matter how much a loser spoke. He would only be ridiculed by others.

After Wesley was brought away for treatment, Jackie slowly walked down the battle platform. At this moment, everybody had looked at Jackie in a different light.

As Jackie demonstrated his prowess, their view had shifted from disdain into one of admiration, taking him more seriously and enviously. Some people could not help themselves but started to discuss quietly among themselves. “This guy’s talent is out of this world. I’m sure that he’ll become a chosen disciple in the future. No wonder he was so relaxed previously. I almost thought he got brain worms!”

“You should shut up. Since when have our sect recruited idiots? People had never given up. Instead, he never placed much importance on Wesley. During the final attack, both of them used their full power and caused Wesley to be beaten into such a state. This means that Jackie’s strength had already achieved the top-hundred positions or even the top fifty positions!”

The surrounding onlookers immediately nodded when they heard this. There were a total of 3000 informal disciples, and being able to be in the top 100 or top-50 among these 3000 people proved how incredibly strong this person was. Of course, many of these informal disciples were able to be in the top100 positions because of their extensive practice time. Some of them were even in the final stage of innate level! The positioning of these informal disciples had nothing to do with their talents.

However, Jackie was only in the initial stage of innate level, and he was capable of being in the top-100 because of his exceptional talents. This evoked the envy of many, but all they could do was nothing but stare.

Ambrose looked at Jackie as if he was looking at a monster. Zeph had been relieved of his position and incarcerated because of what Jackie revealed. Ambrose was so interested in seeing Zeph’s pitiful ending that he purposely went to the dungeon where they held Zeph.

At that point, Zeph rambled crazily, “You people just wait and see. I won’t let any of you off the hook once I leave this place. I failed in the hands of that stinky b *stard because I was unprepared. You should tell him that joining the sect doesn’t mean that he has nothing to worry about. He’s just an informal disciple after he joins the sect. I’ll be coming for him once I leave this place. Me being a deacon doesn’t diminish the fact that I can easily kill an informal disciple like him!”

Ambrose only laughed coldly when he heard this. The mistake Zeph made was neither a large nor a small matter. No matter how things were, he had been dismissed and detained. Ambrose was not worried about himself as Zeph would be incarcerated for at least two to three years.

Before Zeph was detained, he did not take any actions against Ambrose, and Ambrose knew that he would be unable to cause any big trouble when he left the

dungeon. Zeph might do something against Jackie, but Ambrose was not that well-acquainted with Jackie. He only felt good about Jackie because of what happened to Zeph.

He had no idea how things would be by then, though Zeph would nonetheless be in for a surprise by the time he left the dungeon, seeing how things had developed at this moment. Ambrose estimated that Jackie would be able to become a chosen disciple within two to three years.

Zeph was still capable of taking action against an informal disciple, but a chosen disciple was in a much higher position compared to Zeph. No one would know who would hurt who by then.

Chapter 2029
At the thought of this, Ambrose started to look forward to that surprised expression on Zeph's face once he was to be released.

Jackie, meanwhile, ignored the murmurs and gossip from the people around him, talking about him, and returned to his seat among the audience. He decided It would be in his interest to sit and watch the others battle as he did not have anything important to do today, more so having no more contribution points left at this moment.

When he heard that formal disciples would have a battle on the wager battle arena afterward, Brook looked at Jackie with admiration as he sat, his eyes almost glued on Jackie.

The corners of Jackie's mouth twitched helplessly." What are you looking at?"

Brook coughed softly with an excited look on his face. "You're very strong, Senior Brother Jackie! I've really missed it when I thought that you weren't Wesley's opponent. Who would've expected for you to hit him so badly!"

Jackie raised his eyebrows helplessly and said calmly, "Didn't I tell you how I wouldn't have agreed to the battle if I wasn't confident?"

Brook was still extremely excited. "I thought that you were bragging."

Jackie was so speechless that the corners of his mouth twitched. Brook was such an honest person, and even Joel laughed so hard at Brook that his eyes narrowed into crescent moons in his laughter. "Oh, dear me! Young man, you're so excited that you can't even control what you said. You're that bold to say whatever crosses your mind!"

Due to the fact that Jackie did not immediately leave the area, the informal disciples who purposely came over to observe the fight did not leave the scene either. They were still having lively discussions and only lowered their voice because Jackie was still there. Many people started looking at Jackie earnestly. If Jackie did not have a stern expression that kept strangers away, they would have come over to greet him. After all, Jackie had a bright future.

After a period of time long enough for half a stick to burn, the remaining excitement from the previous battle began to disperse slowly. The others who participated in a wager battle today once again entered the battle platform. Brook sat at the audience seat and spoke non-stop by Jackie's ears like a machine gun, and though this irked Jackie, he did not stop him.

He purposely looked at where the man with triangular-eyes was at. When he looked over, the man and his companion had already disappeared.

They must have booked it because they were scared.

Jackie intended to shake up the man with triangular eyes a little; that man irked Jackie to no end. Jackie did not have any conflict of interests with him, and he only caused trouble for Jackie because he wanted to flatter Wesley.

Compared to Brook's constant chatter, Noel seemed to be far more level-headed. It was only after some time did he speak, "You held back, but I still feel that Wesley was badly wounded." Jackie slightly nodded." Aren't the rules clear? I can't cause any permanent damage, which I didn't do. I only broke his ribs and didn't heal his wounds. He'll be alive and kicking after several months of treatment."

Chapter 2030
In truth, Jackie had only told half the tale. After all, the worst attack was not breaking Wesley's ribs. Instead, it was how the remaining power from the Destroying the Void attacked his body and caused the wound on his soul. Others did not know what attribute Jackie was training in, but Noel knew it very well.

Lagarioring his voice, Noel commented, "Did Wesley suffer from a wound on his soul due to how much pain he's in? If that's the case, it doesn't seem good."

Jackie raised his eyebrows and took a meaningful look at Wesley after he heard this. He saw how serious Noel's expression was and responded with an equally serious tone, "I don't think that he's seriously wounded. Although the martial skill I performed was strong enough, the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud isn't so weak. It canceled most of the attack, and only a small amount of the attack rushed onto Wesley's body."

Noel felt that Jackie did not understand what he was trying to get at. He could not help but sit up straight and leaned toward Jackie. "The wounds suffered by the soul are different from those the body suffered. If his soul is gravely wounded, it's difficult to rule if it's permanent damage. However, it takes more pills and time to recover."

Jackie gave a light nod. He could feel that Noel was dancing around with his words, thus he waved his hand. "Just tell me what you want to say; there's no need to beat around the bush."

Coughing lightly, Noel then replied, albeit a little exasperated, "What I mean to say is that you took it a little too far this time. Even though I know that you dislike Wesley that much, you shouldn't have given him an additional punch in

the end. Yes, he acted all high and mighty before, but he has the support of Elder Sayer. If you only wounded his soul, it can temporarily be explained away by saying that it was unavoidable. However, your last punch was obviously aimed to humiliate Wesley— "

"I know what you mean, but I'll still do it again if this repeats," interjected Jackie, not allowing Noel to finish. "Although he has a great background supporting him, I'm not somebody he can bully at his will. Consider me a nice person that I only punched him once, no matter how much he did before."

Noel merely nodded at Jackie before he shook his head silently. He felt that what Jackie said made sense. After all, it would only be hellish if Jackie continued to put up with all of that.

Nonetheless, Jackie's action had completely dishonored Wesley by what he did. He was only afraid that Elder Sayer would be a petty person and take revenge on Jackie. However, Noel also knew that Jackie was somebody with his own ideas, and he was certain that Jackie knew what might happen.

Jackie stared at the battle platform for a good while before he began to feel rather tired.

The main reason was due to the low reference quality toward the battles between these people. After all, not many of those 3000 informal disciples were stronger than him. Just as he was about to get up and leave, he heard a familiar voice from far away.

Jackie chose a slightly secluded place to sit, which was near to the exit, after he entered the place. His main concern was so that he would not get into a fight with the others. After all, he knew that he would definitely attract criticism from everybody as he joined the wager battle arena hastily, especially when Wesley was also there. Hence, he chose a place that was near the exit and secluded.

The familiar voice came from the exit, and Jackie spotted a familiar face when he looked over.

What surprised him was two people who used to hate one another were having a genial conversation as they walked together. These two were Morton and Gerald, who caused trouble for Jackie. The two of them had also joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion from the previous assessment. After the accommodation was arranged, Jackie never saw the two of them in the sect. A dozen days had passed, and he almost forgot these two people…that was until these two showed up.

What surprised Jackie the most was how they were all smiles and good talk as if they were friends for a very long time. Noel raised his eyebrows and also took a glance at the exit. "Isn't that Morton and Gerald? What a rare sight…!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2031

Chapter 2031
Noel's remark caught Jackie's attention, and Jackie turned to look at him in surprise, not expecting Noel to know these two newly recruited informal disciples. Noel knew the cause of Jackie's surprise when he noticed the look in his eyes. "I come from a n aristocratic family. Although it isn't a big family, it is so rare for me to know two outstanding young disciples?"

To this, Jackie chuckled and gave a slight nod, saying, "Are you sure that those two can be considered outstanding?" Jackie did not say this out of vanity of himself and his skills, nor was he belittling them; he was merely telling the truth. Jackie was speaking from the overall looks of things. After all, they only made four of the lights lit up during the assessment.

Such results were not very outstanding among all the informal disciples, but Noel seemed to feel good about the two of them. Raising his brows, Noel answered, albeit a little wound up, "They are relatively outstanding. I know about your assessment results. Even though they were unable to get full marks, they'd also have great results during usual assessments as they managed to light up four of the obsidian lights."

Jackie raised his eyebrows, obviously disagreeing with Noel's opinion, but he said nothing else on the matter and instead shifted the topic. "You seem to be quite familiar with the two of them. You even kept track of such results," he asked.

"I realize that you don't even understand some basic common knowledge. The younger members of aristocratic families know about each other's strengths and talents. On top of that, our Karl family also interacts with the families behind those two. That's how I got to know them and learn about them. I also paid attention to their results in the recruitment exam because of this."

As they were having their discussion, Morton and Gerald had walked up to their side. These two had no real purpose in being here; they just happened to pass by.

Morton saw Jackie and Noel having small talk as he inadvertently glanced at them. Morton subconsciously raised his eyebrows and scoffed before he spoke to Gerald, "Who would've expected Jackie to be acquainted with Noel. From the looks of It, they seem to know each other well."

There was a hint of indelible jealousy in the way Morton spoke. Jackie was ahead of him since the recruitment assessment, and he had always disliked and envied Jackie. The better Jackie's life was, the worse Morton felt. With raised brows, he turned to speak to greet Noel, "Greetings, Senior Brother Noel. Are you here to watch the battles, or do you have a wager battle with others today?"

Noel raised his eyebrows at this. Morton would not usually speak to him in such a familiar manner. Although he was also quite talented, Morton liked to look down upon people, and there was a hint of contempt in the way he spoke. "I'm here today to watch the wager battle of other people."

Morton nodded and turned to look at Jackie. He raised the volume of his voice as if he had just met Jackie, saying, “Are you Jackie? I almost forgot about you. Why are you here?”

Jackie sneered, not wanting to entertain the guy. This guy just had to pull something whenever he was in front of Jackie. Morton revolted and upset Jackie; he was like a blind housefly who just would not leave.

Somewhat helpless at the situation, Noel changed the subject when he noticed just how impatient Jackie was. “Where have the two of you gone during this time? We didn’t see you guys in the sect.”

Gerald seemed quite polite. He gave a small bow as he responded, “The two of us went to Mount Beasts.”

Noel immediately replied with a cold expression on his face, “You both are quite daring people. How can you guys go to Mount Beasts before you start training?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2032

Chapter 2032
Gerald replied calmly, “We needed sect contribution points no matter what we wanted to do. If the two of us stayed in the sect, how many contribution points would we be able to collect, even if we slaved ourselves away? Instead, we’d be able to obtain more by going to a safer place outside like Mount Beasts.”

Pavilion contribution points were something every disciple needed. No matter what they did in the sect, it required a large amount of sect contribution points. Although Jackie had just obtained 150 sect contribution points from the battle against Wesley, the points were a mere drop in a bucket and were insufficient for Jackie.

There were many ways to obtain sect contribution points. Usually, newly recruited informal disciples would stay in the sect to do some chores that were safe and could earn them contribution points, such as completing various chores for elders, assisting smelters in producing weapons, or helping alchemists to cultivate pills. Disciples would ultimately earn these points.

However, such contribution points were a waste of time-they were too few for Gerald and Morton.

Instead, it was far better to leave the sect and hunt monster beasts in Mount Beasts for their spirited cores. They could return to the sect and exchange the spirited cores or other exchangeable parts of the monster beasts for sect contribution points. From the happy smiles on both Gerald and Morton’s faces, they seemed to have had a fruitful trip.

Noel raised his eyebrows and asked, “It looks like both of you have had a fruitful trip. How many contribution points did you guys manage to get?”

Morton responded, though unable to hide the grin that crept to his face, “We’ve obtained a total of two hundred-and-eighty points within these two days, but each of us only got an average of a-hundred and -forty contribution points.”

Noel’s facial expression changed when he heard the number. Although 280 contribution points was not a large amount to Noel at that moment, it was a lot for newly recruited informal disciples who had just joined the sect to come up with. Their capabilities of obtaining 280 contribution points within a dozen days proved that both Morton and Gerald were much stronger than most of the newly recruited informal disciples.

“You both seem well-versed,” Noel did not hold back his praises. “Based on what I know, the total amount of contribution points earned by ten of the newly recruited informal disciples isn’t as much as the two of you.”

Morton raised his chin arrogantly. “How can we be the same as those opportunistic people?” To Morton and Gerald, they did not place themselves in the same position as the other newly recruited informal disciples, even though they joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion through this recruitment assessment. After all, they were more than capable of passing the usual recruitment assessment for informal disciples.

This was why Morton labeled the other newly recruited informal disciples as opportunistic people, He and the other disciples unanimously agreed that these people would never have had the chance to join the Dual Sovereign Pavilion if there were no friction between two sects with the possibility of a terrible war

From Morton’s reaction, it was not difficult to see how arrogant he was.

Jackie subconsciously raised his brows when he heard what Morton said, but his face remained stoic and he spared no glances at both Morton and Gerald.

What Noel wanted to ask at that moment was how did Morton and Gerald join forces? After all, almost everyone who knew these two knew about their strained relationship. These two had always been like water and fire where none of them looked happy whenever they met. It was an astonishing fact to others, knowing that they went on a hunting trip to kill monster beasts together.

However, Noel was smart enough to hold his tongue. After all, all three of them would be in for an awkward time if he asked Morton and Gerald about this.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2033

Chapter 2033
This was why Noel ultimately decided not to ask anything. In fact, Morton and

Gerald should be on their way, seeing as their conversation had ended, and they were not that well-acquainted with one another, too.

All of a sudden, Morton suddenly acted as if he knew Noel well and struck another conversation, “Mount Beasts truly is the vastest mountain in the West Cercei Island. Although we were only capable of going into the outer ring of the peripheral area, we still met a lot of dangers. Luckily, we were strong enough and turned the tides to our favor, however dangerous it was.”

Noel nodded and simply commended him. To be frank, he wanted to be upfront to Morton, wanting to say he was not interested in listening to his crap. Morton and Gerald did not have to tell him how dangerous Mount Beasts was; Noel had already visited that place several times.

Jackie listened with high interest as he made arrangements for his next steps. However, Morton suddenly changed the topic of the conversation as Jackie was listening to their conversation. “Junior Brother Jackie, what are you doing here?”

Jackie could not help but frown at how Morton lowered his seniority by addressing him as ‘junior brother’. Jackie did not know about the rules of other sects, but the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s rules were that the stronger party would be addressed as the senior brother, and the weaker party would be the junior brother. They did not decide their seniority based on their ages.

His strength was undoubtedly stronger than Morton, but Morton purposely addressed him as his junior brother. Nonetheless, Jackie was not a member of the Hestia Continent, thus this did not concern him. He did, however, offer Morton a cold glance. “I’m here to watch the others battle.”

The corners of Morton’s mouth curled upward as he walked closer to Jackie. “I heard that you’ve made a wager battle with Senior Brother Wesley. I have to admit that you’re really brave. We, members of the aristocratic families, understand the strength of Senior Brother Wesley. Are you here to see how strong Senior Brother Wesley is by observing others battling it out?”

Jackie chuckled and was somewhat mind-boggled. He knew Morton meant something else as he, instead of leaving, continued to linger around and conversed with them. Jackie had no idea where Morton had heard about the battle between him and Wesley. Morton was obviously looking forward to Jackie making a fool out of himself.

Jackie turned around and said, “I know what his strength is like, so there’s no need for you to remind me.” Jackie spoke in such a straightforward manner, and it was mainly because he did not wish to continue listening to Morton’s continuous speech.

Morton cared too greatly of his dignity, yet Jackie spoke in such a straightforward manner when there were so many informal disciples around them. How could he maintain his reputation like that?

Morton was so angry that his face became slightly pale. His right hand instinctively balled into a tight fist. He purposely raised his voice as he spoke, “Are you sure you understand Senior Brother Wesley’s strength? What do you know? Stop pretending to be a master in front of us. Although you were ahead of me during the entrance assessment, don’t think that you can always be ahead of me. Let me tell you” I’ll be able to go ahead of you with my talents and sufficient sect contribution points.

“I do wonder where you get your guts from to challenge Senior Brother Wesley. He’s capable of defeating you with a single finger of his! Let’s see how cocky you’ll be after that!”

What Morton said immediately attracted the attention of many around them. In fact, Morton was curious as to why so many people were gathered in the wager battle arena today. Were there important individuals who would be having a wager battle?

No matter what it was, he wanted to regain his reputation. Although Jackie sat at a slightly secluded place, Morton had purposely raised his voice, and the surrounding people heard what he said clearly. Almost 50 to 60 people turned their heads around and looked at Morton as if he was an idiot.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2034

Chapter 2034
A few among the audience started to mumble softly among themselves.

“Who’s this person? Where did he come from? Is he crazy?”

“Who knows? Seems like they have a problem or two with Jackie. They do seem to be in the initial stage of the innate level. They must be crazy.”

Morton had no idea what was going on when he saw how these people stared at him. Was there something wrong with what he said? Why was everyone looking at him like he was some clown?

He carefully thought about what he said but could not find the error in his remarks, no matter how he tried. If that was the case, why were the people looking at him in such a way?

Gerald was just as stunned, and he, too, felt the odd glances these people shot at them.

Noel was also speechless as he glanced at Morton. In fact, he wanted to tell Morton that what he said was no different from slapping himself hard on his face. Nonetheless, he could hear that there was a rivalry with Jackie from what they said. If that was the case, I t was best for him to keep his mouth shut.

Jackie chuckled softly and looked at Morton coldly. Although he seldom wasted time speaking to others, he was utterly disgusted by how Morton constantly

caused him trouble. He was like the triangular-eyed guy who annoyed Jackie into silent bewilderment." You said that Wesley can kill me with a single finger?"

The corners of Morton's mouth froze, yet he still nodded stubbornly. "Of course! Senior Brother Wesley is extremely talented, and he's one of the top informal disciples. From the way you're talking, you seem to be confident in defeating Senior Brother Wesley!"

Jackie nodded, not bothering to hide reaction. "I can defeat him, no doubt."

Both Morton and Gerald were stunned on the spot when they heard this. How could this guy be so crazy? He was daring enough to say anything, and he even said that he could defeat Wesley.

The others had no idea about it, but the two of them knew how talented and strong Wesley was. Even though Morton said that he himself was extremely talented, he could not compare to Wesley. Not only was Wesley extremely talented, but he came from an extremely strong family. How could this young man be so brave?

Morton scoffed indignantly-twice, at that-before he spoke, shoulders trembling as he did, "You truly are arrogant! Who do you think you are? How dare you compare yourself to Senior Brother Wesley? Senior Brother Wesley ranks at the hundred-and eighty-seventh spot among the informal disciples. Although Elder Lee praised you the other day, it was only to give you face. Do you really think that you're extremely talented?"

The people around them were stunned when they heard this, much to Morton and Gerald's bewilderment as they noticed the gazes sent their way grew more…peculiar. The mocking look in the audience's eyes amplified, yet they had no clue what they did to have earned this.

Jackie chuckled softly and looked at the two of them as if they were dummies. "Morton, I think it's best if you stop speaking right now. Do you know what the two of you look like right now?"

Morton smiled awkwardly, subconsciously lowering his voice as the people around them were looking at the two of them in a weird way. "What… What do we look like? Why are they looking at me in such a weird way?" he asked, purely baffled.

Brook coughed softly. He did not want to say anything, but he was acquainted with Gerald, and he had treated him nicely. They would only be further embarrassed if this continued, thus Brook cleared his throat and explained, though awkwardly so, "Just moments ago… Senior Brother Jackie had already fought with Senior Brother Wesley, and Senior Brother Wesley had lost the fight. Senior Brother Wesley has been carried away in a stretcher."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2035

Chapter 2035
Such a simple statement stunned both Morton and Gerald, their faces slammed with disbelief, and their mouths hung wide open.

Morton laughed dryly, even musing to himself that Brook might have lost his mind. Why else would Brook have said such impractical things? Jackie and Wesley had already finished their wager battle, and Jackie…defeated Wesley? What nonsense these were!

Despite that, the weird glances they were receiving subconsciously stopped Morton just as he was about to refute.

Gerald blurted, “What are you talking about? How can Jackie defeat Wesley?” His expression darkened as he got a hint of something from what he said, subconsciously stepping back.

Every informal disciple around them could hear very well, and all of them heard what Brook had said. None of them refuted his claim, however, and none of them gave him odd stares. This meant that Brook was not pulling things out of thin air; he was telling the truth.

Even a dummy would have realized that something was wrong

Morton and Gerald subconsciously gulped as they looked at Jackie in a different light. They finally understood why the people surrounding them were looking at them as if they were dummies. They finally understood the error in their words. Morton breathed heavily as he was obviously stimulated by what happened. “Impossible! How can you be so strong? This is impossible—no way did this happen!

“Senior Brother Wesley has been carried away? Where is he taken to?”

In fact, Jackie had no idea where Wesley had been carried off to, either. However, the others knew that Wesley would be brought to the elder council where Elder Sayer lived.

At this moment, Wesley was lying in the guest room of Elder Sayer’s elder council with his eyes closed and his face pale. Elder Sayer stretched out his hand to smooth out the blanket on Wesley.

The man with triangular eyes knelt on the wooden floor beside the bed, visibly distraught. “Elder Sayer, you need to get justice for Senior Brother Wesley! That guy has taken it too far. Senior Brother Wesley has already fallen to the ground, badly wounded, and that guy still followed up with a punch, not holding back! He subjected Senior Brother Wesley to suffer from four broken ribs, which worsened Senior Brother Wesley’s already grave wounds! That guy is too much!”

After he heard this, the expression on Elder Sayer's face remained the same. He slowly stretched out his right hand, and if they looked carefully, they would discover that a layer of grayish-black mist floated above Elder Sayer's right hand. If Jackie was in the room, he would recognize right off the bat that the grayish-black mist was the residue of his martial skill.

After Jackie and Wesley performed the last attack, Wesley's Seven Stars Meteor Cloud was incomparable to Destroying the Void. After it destroyed the Seven Stars Meteor Cloud, the remaining power from the Destroying the Void festered Wesley like maggots on bones, feasting on Wesley's soul. If Elder Sayer did not use tyrannically strong methods, he would not have been able to expel the remaining energy.

Elder Sayer raised his eyebrows, and his grayishwhite beard seemingly quivered. There was a hint of seriousness in his voice as he spoke, "That guy is practicing the martial skill of the soul-attribute. No wonder he's able to stay for such a long time in the soul hall. You should stop inverting right and wrong with me. Although I'm old, I'm not blind or deaf. I know the reason behind this altercation of yours."

The man with triangular eyes immediately bowed and knocked his head heavily on the ground. Others would have trembled badly in fright and dared not say a thing when they heard this, but the man with triangular eyes had given in everything.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2036-2040

"Elder Sawyer, I believe that you are fair and unprejudiced. Although we had an altercation with him in the beginning, we did not overdo things. Even if that guy was resentful, he should've considered your support toward Senior Brother Wesley and refrained himself from carrying out such a violent attack. The martial skills of the soul attribute cause people to be wounded terribly. That guy did not care about anything and directly wounded Senior Brother Wesley badly. His body wounds can be easily healed but not the wounds on his soul within a short period of time!"

A hint of anger flashed through Elder Sawyer's old eyes as he slightly narrowed them. However, the anger disappeared soon. "Not only is this guy strong, but he also has a bad temper. As an elder of the sect, I cannot simply take action against disciples. However, if I allow this guy to develop at will, he will soon step over me someday in the future."

The man with triangular eyes quickly went along with the conversation when he heard this. "That's right! Elder Sayer, this guy is really arrogant. Not only that, I think that he's also haughty and inflexible. He seems to be a vengeful person. Although he has wounded Senior Brother Wesley severely, I feel that he would still settle accounts in the future. Elder, what do you think we should do in the future…"

Elder Sayer's originally calm face darkened increasingly. He humphed coldly. "There's no need for you to prod me into action as I know what to do. Treat this as a lesson for Wesley. He always does things according to his will and bullied others just because he thinks he's extremely talented. What you said about that guy seeking revenge in the future makes sense. However, you need to understand that the young man is considered one of the top disciples in the sect considering his talents and strength. We will definitely suffer a terrible loss if we simply go against him. We need to find an opportunity to take him down for good."

The man with triangular eyes grew excited when he heard this. "I shall obey your orders!" Elder Sayer raised his eyebrows. "Alright. I know what you're thinking and you're worried about Jackie taking it out on you. There's no need to worry about that. With my presence, he would not dare do anything to you. However, there's a time limit on this. If we allow Jackie to grow, he would definitely threaten you and even myself. We cannot allow somebody with a grudge toward the Sayer family to continue to develop."

The man with triangular eyes nodded with all his might. He was about to continue speaking when they suddenly heard the rapid sound of bells ringing.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The bells were so loud that they could be heard in every corner of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. The rapid sound of the bells caused the two of them, who were in the room, to be stunned.

Elder Sayer raised his eyebrows and looked outside the window. His eyes, filled with experiences, were slightly stunned. "I thought that this would happen after some time. Who would have expected them to start the battle now? Those people from the Muddled Origin Clan are really impatient."

The man with triangular eyes did not know what was going on. Elder Sayer looked at him and explained everything like a responsible teacher even though he seldom spoke to such informal disciples that were not talented. "This is the only bell in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and it will not be rung unless something important has happened. Now that the bell rang, It means that the great battle between sects is happening."

A great battle at this moment was naturally the conflict they had with the Muddled Origin Clan. The corners of Elder Sayer's mouth curled upward. "This is a great opportunity and you should cherish it."

Jackie naturally heard the rapid sound of the bells. He was not in the wager battle arena at that moment. Instead, he had gone to the soul hall with Noel and the others. Jackie was considered one of Noel's friends at that moment. The others might not understand what the rapid clanking of the bells meant but Noel did.

Jackie's expression darkened after he listened to the short explanation by Noel. At that very moment, he had already made new plans. Brook followed behind the two of them like a puppy and he was also in the soul hall. Noel was on duty that afternoon. The soul hall was quiet and empty as nobody visited the place during normal times. They sat around the long table and the runner disciple of the soul hall, Zayn, prepared a pot of tea for them.

Chapter 2037
The smell of the fragrant tea overflowed into the space but they obviously did not pay any attention to how good the tea smelled. Noel spoke helplessly, "In the end, we are still going to war. How did this happen so quickly? Senior Brother Jackie, do you plan to join the war? You can get quite a large number of contribution points if you manage to kill some people during the battle."

Many of those present looked over to Jackie at the same time when they heard what Noel said. Jackie shook his head decisively. "It is true that I can receive quite a significant amount of contribution points if I accept this task and leave the sect to kill the enemies. However, my strength at this moment cannot ensure my safety. It is true that the members of the Muddled Origin Clan want the people from our sect dead, but the people from our sect are also wishing for my death."

The people around him immediately quieted down when they heard what Jackie said. They were able to identify the hidden meaning behind what Jackie said, Although Jackie was more talented than many others, he had also made quite a significant amount of enemies. Many people would take action against Jackie out of jealousy. Wesley and the others would definitely not allow him to continue to grow stronger.

Noel nodded and said, "In that case, do you plan to remain in the sect and train for some time before you leave to kill the enemies?" Jackie sighed helplessly. "That's the plan for the time being. However, I have no idea when Wesley will send over the bets he owes me. I have no idea how badly wounded he is and I don't know if he will wake up within these three days."

Jackie had won 150 sect contribution points from Wesley and that was sufficient to support his training for ten days. On top of that, he had also won two soul-penetrating pills from Wesley and they were worth a fortune. At that moment, Jackie was worried about whether Wesley would send the bets over. He thought about it and said, "If there aren't other choices, I shall go over and ask for the items. After all, I am in a rush to practice…"

Noel and the others chuckled when they heard what Jackie said. They could imagine how angry Wesley would be when Jackie could no longer wait and personally visit him to ask for them.

However, footsteps could be heard after Jackie finished speaking. Everybody was stunned and wondered who would visit the Soul Hall at this moment. Noel turned around and happened to see Steward Chapman walking in with a smile on his face. He had several items in his hands. Noel narrowed his eyes and quickly stood up from behind the long table. Steward Chapman had a kind smile on his

face but he did not look like an easy-going person as he had an eagle-like nose and foxy eyes.

Steward Chapman nodded to Noel and turned around to look at Jackie without saying anything. He arrived at the long table and gently placed the tray on the long table. “Elder Sayer asked me to send over the bets.”

Jackie raised his eyebrows as he sized up Steward Chapman. There were two boxes on the tray. He casually took one of the boxes and as he opened the box, it revealed the black pill in front of everybody there. The pill had many complicated runes carved on it that looking at it once was enough to shock one’s soul. The pill also had a weird scent that taking a whiff of it made them feel instantly refreshed and relaxed.

“This is the soul-penetrating pill?” Jackie asked.

Steward Chapman nodded and stretched out his hand. He spoke calmly, “Please hand me your identity token. There are 150 sect contribution points for you.” Jackie nodded and took his identity token out of his storage space before passing it to Steward Chapman.

Chapter 2038
Steward Chapman brought out a glowing red identity token. Both the size and materials were obviously better than the disciple’s identity token. The name’ Maynard Sayer’ was written on the identity card and though Jackie did not know Maynard, he could guess that it was the identity token of Elder Sayer.

Steward Chapman then took out a yellow paper with many runes written on it and placed it in front of Jackie. “I’ll need you to sign this transfer of ownership paper.”

Jackie glanced sideways at Noel but did not detect anything peculiar in his expression so he signed the paper which immediately burst into flames after he lifted his pen. This stunned him a little.

“There are rules in the clan associations. Contribution points cannot be transferred to one another willy-nilly. If you need to transfer the contribution points, you need to sign the transfer paper. Only after signing the transfer paper, the points can be transferred to your identity token,” explained Steward Chapman impassively.

After the explanation, Jackie’s identity token began to glow slightly. Jackie lightly washed his divine senses across it and as expected, his previously zero contribution points had increased to a hundred and fifty points. Steward Chapman then bowed slightly, turned around, and left with the tray without saying anything

“He did all that to keep you in your place and as a warning. It seems like Elder Sayer is really protective of Wesley,” said Noel when he was sure that Steward Chapman was out of earshot.

Jackie raised his eyebrow nonchalantly. “I’m afraid it’s more than that.”

Noel’s expression changed. “What do you mean? What else is he trying to say?”

Jackie shook his head and in a calm voice said, “Only time would tell. One thing is for sure, he wants to teach me a lesson.”

Jackie did not want to get too entangled in this topic. He took the soul-penetrating pill out of the wooden box, sniffed it lightly, and immediately felt his soul tremble. It was definitely good stuff. He was confident that he would advance quickly in his training now that he had two of the pills.

Noel’s face was a little dazed. It was obvious he had something to say but Jackie was not in the mood to hear it. “I can finally train in the Array Eye Door again,” said Jackie.

Noel’s lips twitched uncontrollably. He thought something was definitely wrong with Jackie’s head. Jackie seemed unmoved by all the crises and he did not know what else to say to him.

“One hundred and fifty points gets you fifteen days. I’m sure you’ll reach a new height after coming out from the Array Eye Door.”

Jackie shook his head and swept his eyes over the location of the Array Eye Door. “You can deactivate the array at the end of the fourteenth day.”

“You’re planning to train for only fourteen days?” Noel was a little stunned. This was a deviation from Jackie’s usual behavior. Normally, he would spend everything on the Array Eye Door and nothing on the lessons or techniques.

Chapter 2039
Jackie nodded and said, “Yes, fourteen days. I plan to use the remaining ten contribution points on other things.”

Jackie had gotten used to the sticky darkness and as usual, he did not let Noel turn up to level five difficulty.

He was confident he would be able to train under level five difficulty but truth to be told, it would be somewhat hard on him.

After the previous training, Jackie had come to understand one thing: stronger stimulation does not guarantee faster progression in his training.

He should maintain a balance by making sure the shock wave was not too strong nor too weak and level four difficulty hit the sweet spot.

After the array had been activated, Jackie immediately felt the familiar stimulation as the soul-shockwave washed over him. Thus, his training had begun.

This time, he intended to condense the Fourth Soul Sword. The seconds ticked by and the more he trained, the more difficult the training was. After four days, he only managed to condense two-thirds of the fourth Soul Sword. Under normal circumstances, two-thirds meant that success was not far off but now he discovered that he had already reached his limit. His spirit energy was all dried up and he could not continue on anymore.

He started to panic. Condensing a Soul Sword must be done in one go and if he stopped halfway, all his previous hard work would have been wasted. Not to mention the contribution points he had already spent.

Beads of cold sweat began to form on his forehead. He pressed his lips into a thin line.

Although he had the experience left by his senior, and there was no doubt that this was better than being personally taught by an elder, there existed a huge gap between his and the senior's spirit energy.

In the process of condensing the Soul Sword, he would not encounter too many bottlenecks but because of his insufficient cultivation level now, his spirit energy was not strong enough.

This made it unsustainable for him to continue on.

Jackie's expression turned ugly when he thought about all the wasted effort and contribution points.

He was taking big gulps of breath and he was completely drenched in sweat.

On the fifth day, the Soul Sword remained condensed at two-thirds.

He knew that he would definitely cause harm to his spirit if he preserved like this.

It hurts him even more knowing that even after hurting his spirit, he would still not be able to fully condense the fourth Soul Sword.

He could and would not accept that fact. He adjusted his spirit energy resignedly and took out a pill from the Mustard Seed.

The pill emitted an abundance of aura and without hesitating, he popped it into his mouth.

As soon as the pill reached his gut, strong spirit energy immediately melted into his body, and the dried-up spirit was instantly moisturized, like a beached starfish being thrown back to the sea.

With the spirit soothed, the feeling of unsustainability disappeared without a trace. What Jackie took was naturally the soul-penetrating pill he had just won.

The soul-penetrating pill, being a soul- attributed pill, not only could repair the spirit but also increase the spirit energy.

After Jackie took the soul-penetrating pill, his spirit energy increased drastically, Jackie seized the time to take the soul-penetrating pill.

He only took it when his spirit had completely dried up.

This had the best effect, and it could also temper his own spirit energy.

He then performed a hand seal again, and the fourth Soul Sword, which had been stagnant, finally condensed quickly with the help of the soul-penetrating pill.

On the sixth day, Jackie successfully condensed the fourth Soul Sword with some spirit energy leftover.

He exhaled deeply, and there were four Soul Swords floating in the palm of his hand.

These Soul Swords were each darker than the previous, which meant that the strength was stronger than the previous.

If Jackie were to go against Wesley now, he was certain that he could easily defeat him without even hurting his spirit.

Jackie closed his eyes, quickly recovering the consumed spirit energy. There was still a lot of time left.

He intended to take advantage of the remaining time to condense the fifth Soul Sword!

Chapter 2040
The seconds ticked by and the only constant was the pitch-black darkness.

It was not hard to imagine what would happen when the war between Dual Sovereign Pavilion and Muddled Origin Clan finally began.

Although he did not plan to join the frontline, sooner or later he would have to for the sake of contribution points.

What kind of trials would he have to face at that time, he was not sure himself, the only thing he could do was to continuously improve his cultivation.

Only when he was strong enough then he would be able to protect himself in the war.

Even if he were to encounter dangerous situations, with enough power, he would survive.

That was why, through gritted teeth, Jackie persevered on with training even though he was both mentally and physically exhausted.

After condensing the fourth Soul Sword on the sixth day, he immediately began to condense the fifth Soul Sword.

He planned to use the remaining time to complete the condensation of the fifth Soul Sword.

He kept performing hand seals and the surrounding soul-shockwave continued to crash over him like a tidal wave.

Days passed and on the twelfth day, two- thirds of the fifth Soul Sword was already condensed but the same problem resurfaced as his spirit energy became unsustainable again.

His spirit energy was so dried up that his true energy was running dangerously low too.

After several days of training, he constantly invoked the true energy in his body.

Destroying the Void was a weapon of the soul attribute but when it came down to it, he would need to invoke his true energy too.

Similarly, condensing the Soul Sword required his spirit energy to be supported by his true energy.

Over time, there was not much true energy left.

Taking another soul-penetrating pill would solve the insufficient spirit energy but not the depleting true energy.

Without the support of the true energy, he would not be able to condense the fifth Soul Sword with the remaining time.

After realizing this problem, Jackie slowly opened his eyes, his hands never stopped performing the hand seals, but the helplessness in his heart became more and more apparent.

He knew that he would run into many obstacles in the future if he did not condense the fifth Soul Sword.

Not to mention the contribution points that he would have wasted. He had made a lot of enemies for himself in the Clan associations.

Although Elder Sayer sent someone over to transfer the contribution points to him, it was obvious to any outsiders that Elder Sayer held a grudge against him for what he did to Wesley.

He must improve his strength to deal with the troubles that may arise next.

“I can’t give up now!” Jackie gritted his teeth and said to himself, but doing so would not solve his problem.

He only had one-twentieth of his true energy left and he estimated that it would be completely depleted within a few hours.

Then he would have no choice but to stop his training because even if he still had some spirit energy left, it would quickly dissipate without the support of true energy.

He breathed out helplessly, secretly regretting that he had not thought this through beforehand.

He predicted that his spirit energy would run out but he did not expect his true energy would as well.

The spirit energy could be replenished by taking the soul-penetrating pill but the true energy had no such pills.

The pills he had brought over from the Daxia World were of no use to him now.

After all, his current cultivation base had already surpassed the limitation of the highest cultivation base in the Daxia World.

The only pills that were of help to him now were the soul -penetrating pill and sengen pill.

Suddenly he sat upright and his eyes widened.

“That’s right! I still have the sengen pill I won from the talent test.

It’s a tier-five pill and considered the best amongst that tier.”

At that time, he did not listen attentively to the effects of the sengen pill.

He guessed that it would probably improve the cultivation base which was more useful to the disciples at the innate level.

He took a gulp and thought to himself,’oh well,better than nothing!’

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2041

Chapter 2041
He took out the two pills from the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

The two pills floated above his palm. One of the pills was slightly reddish, and he felt his strength soared after sniffing it. The other pill exuded a dark glow. Just by placing this pill under the tip of his nose, he felt refreshed and full of energy. These two pills were the sengen pill and the soul-penetrating pill.

After thinking about it, Jackie popped both of these pills into his mouth. Immediately, he felt a surge of energy spreading all over his body.

Outside the Array Eye Door, Noel was sitting on a chair with one leg on top of another, shaking his head and humming a little song.

The staff on duty in the Soul Hall changed every five days.

Today, it was Noel on duty again.

Generally speaking, the more motivated a disciple was, the more time he would spend on training, even if his environment did not allow him to do so.

However, Noel was obviously not motivated.

He wanted to enjoy his free time and had no desire for training.

He was shaking his head vigorously and was in the moment when he heard a click coming from the Array Eye Door.

He suddenly stopped shaking, placed his foot down, and sat up straight.

“He should be coming out now. What day is it today?” Noel had lost count of the days Jackie had been inside.

He got up and walked quickly toward the Array Eye Door.

There, he saw a man with a pale face and beard on his chin, as if he had been beaten by someone, walking slowly out from the door. It seemed as if walking out of the door had taken all the man’s effort and Noel did not recognize him at first.

He quickly got a hold of him when he saw that the man was about to collapse.

“Brother Jackie,what happened? Did you hurt your spirit?Why does it seem like this time was worse than the last time?’

Previously, when Jackie came out of the Array Eye Door, he still had enough energy to walk out of the door though he did look a little worse for wear.

This time,however, seems as though Jackie had been through hell and came back. Not only did he lose weight, he was also unshaven and haggard.

The look on his face was so miserable that those who did not know would think he had been living in a slum for a few years.

Jackie shook his hand with his last remaining strength.

He could not even utter a word.

It just so happened that Zayn was walking in with a broom in his hand and he, too, was shocked when he saw Jackie's state.

The two of them helped Jackie to the bench and Noel poured him a cup of tea. Then he took out a pill from his own storage space and placed it in front of him. The pill was not high in grade, but it was extremely effective in restoring energy. It was a pill that could strengthen one's essence and cultivate one's spirit.

Jackie shook his head subconsciously. The price of this pill was not expensive but it still required contribution points to redeem it. Although Noel had been in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for a long time, he was not rich.

Despite Jackie's decline, Noel forcefully stuffed the pill into Jackie's hand.

"Don't worry. Just take it. I didn't use my contribution points to get this pill. It was given to me by my elders and there's more where that came from. You need it more than I do now. You can repay me later"

Jackie had no choice but to accept the pill since Noel had already said so. Besides, he was right about Jackie needing the energy restoring pill. After hesitating for a second, he finally popped the pill into his mouth.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2042

Chapter 2042
The medicinal properties of the pill were mild.

Compared with the two pills previously he had taken, the difference in medicinal properties was almost like heaven and earth.

The medicinal properties of the sengen pill and the soul-penetrating pill were like cooking oil on fire, and this energy restoring pill was like spring water, gurgling.

The mild medicinal properties slowly flowed through Jackie's meridians, repairing his wounds and gradually making him feel more energetic.

Fifteen minutes later, he gradually recovered from his lack of physical strength.

Thank you so much, Brother Noel," said Jackie after taking a sip of the tea.

Although according to the rules, Jackie needed to address Noel as his junior, he chose not to do so, and instead addressed him as his senior.

He felt it was more respectful to do so.

After hearing Jackie addressing him as so, Noel let out a chuckle and did not think too much about it.

He patted Jackie on the shoulder and solemnly said, "You seem to like to torture yourself to death whenever you're training in the Array Eye Door. This time was your worst yet. I checked your vitals just then and discovered there is some damage to your meridians. What were you doing inside?"

After hearing this, Jackie just smiled bitterly. In order to condense the fifth Soul Sword, he had willingly taken the sengen pill and the soul-penetrating pill. The two pills were very domineering as their effect rushed across his body. Although they brought great effects, they also made him uncomfortable. Especially the sengen pill which was more domineering than the soul-penetrating pill. The sengen pill contained a huge amount of true energy. Its effect would not be that uncomfortable if it was taken under normal circumstances and given time to digest slowly.

However, every minute in the Array Eye Door was precious to Jackie and thus, he made a crazy decision Putting aside the domineering nature of the sengen pill, he forcefully absorbed the medicinal properties and quickly restored the true energy in his body.

He also injured the meridians as a result of the dominating medicinal properties hence when he came out, he was so weak that he had to almost crawl out of the door. However, he was greatly rewarded and though he accidentally injured his meridians, he successfully condensed the fifth Soul Sword. After all, it would only take him a few days to repair his meridians.

He let out a deep breath. It was not good to tell them all these so he simply said," No pain, no gain."

Noel was rendered completely speechless. Compared to Jackie's desperate effort, he was much more carefree and relaxed.

He had already decided he would slowly rise through the ranks of deacon and work in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for the rest of his life

At this time, what Jackie was most concerned about was the battle between the Clan association.

“What is the battle status now? Did the Dual Sovereign Pavilion suffer any losses?”

After asking this, he recalled the attitude of the newly promoted informal disciples of the Team Cando as if they were purely using these informal disciples as cannon fodder.

Thus, he quickly added, “What about those new informal disciples who joined at the same time as me? Did they all go to the battlefield?”

He stared at Noel and Zayn, waiting for their answers.

Their expressions changed when they heard his questions.

Noel chuckled softly. “We can’t blame him for not knowing what’s happening in the outside world. He has been inside for so long.”

Jackie was stunned by his words. What did he mean? Did something big happen while I was inside?

“The war has already ended,” answered Noel without waiting for him to ask.

“No more fighting…?” asked Jackie with a frown.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2043

Chapter 2043
Noel nodded, leaving Jackie speechless. Since arriving in the Hestia Continent, he has heard about the imbroglio between the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and Muddled Origin Clan.

The two factions had held deep grudges against each other for a long time and with the resources secret place acting like a fuse, the two factions could break out in a fight at any moment.

For this reason, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion specially recruited many new disciples and lowered the entry specifications, but after all that, they decided to end the war just like that? Jackie’s speechless expressions were all written on his face.

Noel and Alan looked at each other and naturally understood what Jackie was thinking.

That’s totally absurd, right? We were rendered speechless as well.

They called a stop on the war on the fifth day since it started which was around the third or fourth day you were inside the Array Eye Door.

All the disciples, deacons, and others who participated in the war were all called back.

Fortunately, the casualties were not serious, and only five or six people died.

After all, everyone was only in the probing stage at the beginning of the war," said Alan with a smile.

Jackie leaned forward again, his right eye winced and his face was filled with confusion. "What's the point of going through all that trouble to end the war in five days?"

Noel chuckled lightly and sipped a drink of tea. "Yes, why go through all that trouble? But you know, something else happened today that will make you even more speechless."

Jackie immediately turned his head and looked at Noel who continued on, "Today, the Dual Sovereign issued another announcement saying they want to recruit another batch of informal disciples within five days."

Jackie's eyes were instantly covered with doubt.

Why do they still want to recruit more informal disciples? The war has stopped, and there is no shortage of disciples in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

What's the use of recruiting so many disciples? Every Clan association wants to choose the best of the best to be nurtured.but what's the point of choosing from the rejected lot? Alan obviously could not figure it out either.

He asked curiously, "Why are they doing this? I really don't understand. Could it be that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion has a shortage of disciples?"

The three of them knew clearly in their hearts that there was no shortage of disciples.

Moreover, the resources of the Clan associations are limited.

They would need more resources if they planned to recruit more disciples.

Even Jackie's batch was already a little over the limit. Therefore it was natural for them to be suspicious.

"I didn't understand it at first, but after thinking about it, I kinda understand what they're doing. Do you know how the war stopped?" said Noel steadily "1 heard it was the Thousand Leaves Pavilion who stopped it," said Alan without skipping a beat. "Thousand Leaves Pavilion?" asked Jackie with an eyebrow raised.

Although Jackie only said three words, Alan and Noel were stunned at the same time.

Noel glanced at Jackie speechlessly.

He placed the teacup he was holding on the long table, turned his body, and with Complicated expression on his face said, “Have you really been living under a rock all this while? How could you not know about the Thousand Leaves Pavilion?”

Jackie really did not know. Before entering the Clan association, he had planned to slowly find out more about the West Cercie State but once he entered, it was one thing after another and thus he did not know much about this world.

He had subconsciously uttered out the three words.

He had let his guard down since he regarded Noel as his friend.

Jackie rubbed his nose and said, “Yes, I have mentioned that I’ve been living under a rock and know little about West Cercie State.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2044

Chapter 2044
Noel and Alan looked at Jackie as if he was kidding.

However, this was not the first time this has happened and so Noel quickly brought him up to date.

The Thousand Leaves Pavilion is the second fourth-grade Clan association and also one of the two most powerful Clan associations within the West Cercie States.

Our Dual Sovereign Pavilion is also strong but compared to the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, it is still found wanting.

“In fact, both the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddle Origin Clan are within the jurisdiction of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. There must be a reason why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion suddenly stopped the battle between the two Clan associations. Moreover, I heard that it was the sect master of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion who personally handled the matter. Since the sect master came forward himself, our Dual Sovereign Pavilion and Muddled Origin Clan, which are both third-grade Clan associations, dare not defy his orders. But the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had never meddled in this kind of matters before and normally turned a blind eye even if many skilled fighters died in the war between two Clan associations.”

After explaining, Noel looked into the distance with a contemplative expression on his face.

Jackie nodded and with a hint of uncertainty said, “So what you’re saying is something huge is about to happen and the sect master of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had no choice but to come forward to stop the war between the two Clan associations? And we’re kept in the dark because of our lower status?”

Noel nodded his head.

It was exactly what he meant.

“We will find out in the future, but the cessation of the war is also a good thing for us. Although the war will sharpen our combat effectiveness and is good for the improvement of our cultivation base, it is nonetheless very dangerous. I will ever want to participate in a war like that.”

Jackie nodded nonchalantly. Noel suddenly seemed to have thought of something. He retracted his gaze from a distance and focused it on Jackie.

From the storage space, he took out two sets of palm-sized array boards and put them in front of Jackie.

Take these two small defense array boards.

It will come useful to you in these critical times.

“These two small defense arrays were engraved with rune curse seals and were exuding a faint cyan light. These rune curse seals constantly exchanged positions which changed the shape of the rune curse seals. Although they were small, they were nonetheless lovingly and exquisitely crafted by a master.”

Jackie felt that the gift was too dear, and immediately shook his head, but before he could say anything, Noel said, “As I said, where you’re going, you’ll need it more than I do and if you feel that this is too costly, you can always pay me back in contribution points. I know you don’t like to owe people favors so treat it as I’m lending it to you.”

Noel’s words had the effect of lifting Jackie’s burden but then he suddenly thought of something and immediately shook his head again. “How do you know I’m going to Mount Beasts next?”

Noel chuckled and glanced at him. “Of course you’re going to Mount Beasts. Even though you tried to suppress your emotions, I could tell you were really interested in that place when Morton and Gerald were discussing it in front of us. You can indeed earn a lot of points in that place. What you lack most currently is points. The only logical option after the battlefield is Mount Beasts.”

Jackie nodded. “I do plan to go in the near future, but I haven’t decided when to go. I keep on having this feeling that this time, things are a little weird. It’s better to stay here for a few days.”

The three of them chatted for a while more and Jackie left after receiving the small defense array boards.

On the way back, Jackie wanted to stop by the Seven Stars Hall but decided against it.

He planned to exchange his last remaining ten points for a map of the Mount Beasts that shows the danger rating of each area.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2045

Chapter 2045
The map was cheap and useful. With it, one could find the details of beasts whereabouts and their difficulty level.

Monster beasts have a very strong concept of territories, and the weaker ones will never invade the territories of powerful beasts.

The fighters who wanted to survive the journey through Mount Beasts would get their hands on a map like this.

With this map, they would be able to stay close to the area where the low-level monsters are.

Under these circumstances, as long as they are not too unlucky or accidentally step into the nest of the high-level monsters, they will come out unscathed.

Jackie, being cautious, did not go to the Seven Stars Hall himself but instead, asked Brook to go in his stead so that no one would know he had the map in his hands. It was better to be safe than sorry.

No one would dare to do anything too overt to him while he was still within the confines of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion but it would be a different story if he was outside.

Jackie was not afraid of the other disciples but he knew where his limit was. There was no guarantee he would make it out alive if his enemies sent a group of skilled fighters to go after him.

Two days later, in the outskirts of Mount Beasts, Jackie held the rating map in one hand while trying to distinguish the surrounding geographical indicators.

Outside of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, he naturally did not have so many scruples so he called Nash out of the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

During this period of time, Nash was bored out of his mind and though the space in the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship was large enough, he still wanted to come out to see the Hestia Continent for himself.

Nash pointed to the map and said, “Starting from Dual Sovereign City, walk sixty miles to the south, you will reach the outskirts of Mount Beasts. According to the location we are on the map, we should walk ten miles forward, and then change direction. If you walk for forty miles in the east, you will come to the gathering place of the monsters of the acquired level.”

Every time the two of them walked a certain distance, they would compare the map to the surroundings.

This was to avoid going the wrong way, even though they were in a location nowhere near the lair of powerful monster beasts.

However, it would be prudent for them to tread carefully as Mount Beast was rampant with beast and demon.

Jackie put away the map after memorizing the approximate location and continued on with his father.

Nash glanced at Jackie, chuckled, and said, “I thought you would specifically look for the gathering place of innate level monsters.”

Jackie shook his head and without breaking stride, said, “Although the purpose of this trip is to get more contribution points, I should still proceed carefully since this is my first time here. Besides, I’m worried about you so I have no choice but to take my time. By first exploring the safest place, we’ll know where to retreat to if you do come across danger.”

Nash nodded. He understood his son’s concerns now. “It never crossed my mind that Mount Beasts would be so vast. To be precise, it should not be called Mount Beasts but Mountain Range Beasts.”

In order to prevent other people from doubting his identity, Jackie had been hard at work learning the most basic geographical knowledge of West Cercie State.

The West Cercie State is divided into three parts by the Mount Beasts. Mount Beasts was located in the center of West Cercie State and occupies a huge area.

The southernmost part of West Cercie State was the domain of the fourth -grade Clan association, Corpse Pavilion.

There area total of two fourth-grade Clan associations in West Cercie State, and one fourth-grade Clan association ruled an area.

Corpse Pavilion occupies the south of Mount Beasts, and Thousand Leaves Pavilion occupies the north.

The two Clan associations are separated by Mount Beasts. Being so far apart, they had each stayed in their own domain for many years.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2046

Chapter 2046
After all, the two clans are separated by Mount Beasts wedge in between, and monster beasts are rampant in the mountain.

Even the strongest in the fourth grade Clan association dared not cross Mount Beasts for their death would be guaranteed if they were to do that.

The area of Mount Beasts accounts for more than twice that of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's sphere of influence.

That was how vast the mountain was and Jackie's current location was only at the outer periphery of the mountain.

Although there were many monsters there, they were all weak and useless.

A spirited core of an innate monster beast could be exchanged for seventy contribution points, but an acquired monster's spirited core could only be exchanged for ten contribution points, and some weak monsters did not even have spiritual cores, making it pointless to kill them.

At present, the gathering place of the low- level monster beast that Jackie was going to, did not have innate level monster beasts. They were all acquired level monster beasts.

It was not that Jackie dared not try to attack the innate level monster beasts, but he thought he should first familiarize himself with the surrounding environment and have an escape route mapped out first.

The scope of the monster beast's activity has a strong territorial nature.

As one goes deeper into the mountain, the stronger the monster beasts were.

Therefore, it was good to have an escape route mapped out in case they ran into any danger.

After Nash knew of Jackie's plan, he patted him on the shoulder and said, "You are more careful than I thought. That's why I never need to worry about you."

Jackie chuckled and touched his nose.

"This can minimize the danger. It's true that the acquired level monsters are worth more points but they're also much more dangerous. I'm currently only at the initial stage of innate level and can only fall back if I'm surrounded by them."

After all, Mount Beasts was full of monsters. While the humans were hunting monsters, the monsters were also hunting humans.

The place was a natural colosseum and Jackie must stay vigilant at all times.

Another four, five hours later, Jackie finally arrived at his destination.

What really surprised him was that he had not seen any low-level monster after walking for so long.

Only the surrounding towering trees and the singing of birds, animals, and insects proved that he was indeed on Mount Beasts.

Even Nash thought that it was a little strange.

“Isn’t this place supposed to be full of monsters? How come we have not seen one ever since coming here?”

Jackie nodded, his eyes were scanning the surroundings like falcons.

“Could it be that the monster beasts in this area have been hunted clean?” That was the only logical deduction he could come up with.

Nash frowned.

Seeing that Jackie had taken out the rating map for the dangerous area of Mount Beast, he hesitantly said, “I don’t think we should believe this map anymore. It’s obviously not accurate. After all, we don’t know when this map was drawn. The monsters might have moved their lair…”

Suddenly, Jackie’s ears twitched, and he turned his head abruptly.

He lowered his voice and asked, “Did you feel the wind blowing just now?”

As soon as Nash saw Jackie’s cautious expression, he increased his vigilance as well.

He started to scan around the towering trees too. However, it was already midday, and the sun had risen to the very center.

Even though the trees were towering, they still leaked sunlight through the gaps in the leaves, illuminating the surroundings.

The grass on the ground revealed a puff of moisture, and it was soft when they stepped on it.

They could smell a bloody scent on it.

However, this did not make Nash wary, because since stepping into Mount Beasts, this smell had been filling their noses.

“I’m sure there was no wind blowing just now. If there is wind blowing, the leaves on the treetops will shake, but why do you ask?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2047

Chapter 2047
Jackie frowned.

By then, he had already stored the rating map into the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.
“I just heard a rustling noise, like something coming through the bushes.

Nash was not concerned.

“That should be the monster coming over. It’s about time we run into one.”

As soon as he said that, something in blue gradually approached from a distance.

After the thing entered the sight of Nash and his son, the two of them were stunned at the same time.

It was a wolf- like monster that was as tall as a human.

It was surrounded by ice-blue icicles.

The eyes of the monster beast were also ice blue, and it was emitting a chilly aura. The fur on his body was like icicles.

After touching the surrounding grass, the weeds were instantly covered with a layer of frost.

Jackie frowned and blurted out, “It’s a Frost Wolf?! But what is a Frost Wolf doing here?”

Before coming to Mount Beasts, Jackie had also taken the time to learn about the kinds of monster beasts that appeared most frequently in the mountain, and with one glance, he recognized the Frost Wolf, a monster beast that frequently haunts the periphery of Mount Beast.

The Frost Wolf is a monster beast of the intermediate stage of the innate level.

It is as big as a cow and releases an ice sword attack with it being very fast.

The average initiate stage of innate level fighter was not its match at all.

Nash cast a puzzled look at Jackie when he heard his tone. Jackie took a deep breath and grabbed his father’s arm.

“Go into the Mustard Spirit Ship first. This monster beast is an intermediate stage of the innate level.”

Upon hearing this, Jackie’s expression changed.

An innate level monster should not have appeared where they were.

It was another hundred miles to go to reach the place where they were most active. However, it was not the time to wonder about all this.

Nash nodded and the space around him distorted as he turned into a ray of light and plunged into the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

Although Nash also had a cultivation base, his cultivation was at best only a martial artist in the acquired level.

He could not help Jackie and would only burden him. It was safest for him to return to the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

The Frost Wolf stared at Jackie with a sinister look as if he was a delicious meal.

The monster beasts of the innate level had extraordinary intelligence and could think like a human.

Jackie instinctively took a step back.

The Frost Wolf clearly saw his cultivation level, and did not take him seriously at all.

He bared his sharp fangs at him, like a cat toying with a mouse, as if telling Jackie that there was no way he could escape.

Jackie frowned deeply and took out the black dagger from the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

Jackie was very comfortable with this black dagger which was emitting a dark light.

The Frost Wolf scanned him up and down with a disdained and annoyed expression. He took a few steps forward but Jackie stood his ground.

The Frost Wolf seemed unwilling to continue wasting time with Jackie and it began to bend his limbs slightly.

Jackie suddenly realized that it was planning to attack and he should not take it lightly.

He performed some hand seals and a series of pitch-black runes flowed from his fingertips and was quickly injected into the black dagger.

The black dagger burst out with jet black light, and the four Soul Swords merged with it.

In the next second, Jackie felt a strong wind and a skull-numbing chill. He narrowed his eyes and he adjusted his position.

He heard a swishing sound and three or four icy blue rays of light shot toward where he just stood.

Immediately afterward, there was a cracking sound, and several six-sided ice crystals shot out from the position where he was just standing.

These six-sided ice crystals carried a strong cold air, instantly freezing the surrounding grass and earth.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2048

Chapter 2048
Jackie's eyes went cold when he saw what happened. He really should not underestimate this monster.

One blow from it was comparable to Wesley's attack. This made Jackie even more puzzled.

After all, the area he was in belonged to the outer, outer periphery. It should be extremely safe.

Even Wesley would find it difficult to win against the Frost Wolf, what more to say about the other weaker informal disciples? Was it just a coincidence that Jackie bumped into a Frost Wolf here? He narrowed his eyes and reminded himself that he had no time to think about all these.

The Frost Wolf quickly attacked again when it saw that it had missed.

It charged toward Jackie by pushing off on his powerful hind legs.

"Oh shit!" The speed of the Frost Wolf was so fast that he could only catch a glimpse of an ice-blue blur.

His heart was trembling and his hands kept on dealing out hand seals.

He kept on retreating while activating the laws of space to dodge the Frost Wolf's bite.

That was how strong Jackie was. A fighter in the initial stage of innate level would definitely not be able to dodge the attack but with his speed, Jackie was able to quickly open up the distance between him and the Frost Wolf.

No matter what, the Frost Wolf had an advantage when it comes to close or melee combat.

Therefore, making it the strongest type of Frost Wolf amongst the intermediate stage of innate level monsters.

The ice-blue eyes swept away in the direction that Jackie ran off to.

Its eyes narrowed slightly, and it seemed to be surprised that the human in front of it was stronger than it had imagined.

He was able to dodge his attack with the support of the law of space and within two or three breaths, Jackie had already put a vast distance between him and the Frost Wolf.

He narrowed his eyes, and a thought flashed in his mind that he would need to defeat the Frost Wolf in the shortest amount of time possible.

Dragging the fight longer would only make it worse.

He performed some hand seals again and took out three black daggers from the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

Now he had four uniform black daggers in his hand which he had prepared beforehand.

He took a deep breath, and a gray-black light flashed in his hands.

The Frost Wolf seemed to sense that Jackie would be trouble and did not want to drag on the fight too.

It threw his icy blue head and howled toward the silent sky as if calling for its pack.

This made Jackie chuckle on the inside.

Then the Frost Wolf charged toward him again.

A dazzling icy blue light burst out from the center of the wolf's eyebrows, and four six-sided ice crystals shot toward Jackie at an extremely fast speed.

The speed of the Frost Wolf's attack seemed to have increased tenfold.

Jackie took a deep breath.

When the six sided ice crystals shot over, he knew in his heart that it was impossible to dodge, so it was a good thing he had never planned to do that.

He frowned and the gray-black light in his hands flourished.

He pushed both of his hands forward, the gray-black light instantly wrapped around the four black daggers like a vine.

With a light exclamation, the black daggers rushed toward the Frost Wolf.

A trace of contempt flashed in the Frost Wolf's icy blue eyes when he saw the attack.

It seemed like it was very disdainful of Jackie's attack. The next second, the four black daggers collided with the four six-sided ice crystals.

The icy blue light and the gray-black light met in mid-air, and the sound of impact erupted out with the violent energy fluctuations!

After the two beams of light collided, they released a dazzling spark again, the Frost Wolf and Jackie narrowed their eyes at the same time.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2049

Chapter 2049
Blinded by this light, the two opponents could not see each other clearly, but this state lasted for only half a breath. The next second, pieces of fingernail sized ice flakes drifted down all around them.

These icy blue fragments were the product of the six sided ice arrow being crushed. When the Frost Wolf saw the fragments in the sky, before it could react, the four gray-black daggers rushed out from the dazzling light and were aiming straight at its neck.

This made the Frost Wolf tremble in terror. After fighting for so many years, it had formed an instinctive reaction and began to retreat swiftly to avoid the attack. However, the four daggers suddenly shook violently in the air. The middle three daggers were especially shaking violently.

The Frost Wolf heard a "click", and the three daggers exploded midair with the shattered pieces shooting toward the surrounding like a steel needle. The Frost Wolf saw with its own eyes that even after the three daggers had exploded, there were still three black rays of energy in their original position. They were still rushing toward him with the only dagger that did not explode.

The Frost Wolf found this strange and instinctively backed away. It sped away very fast but how could Jackie let go of such a good opportunity to kill it once and for all? He whispered, "Now!"

He performed the hand seals again, and the three Soul Swords, under his control, merged with the only dagger that had not exploded with a swishing sound. After the fusion, the attack power of the Soul Sword increased sharply and the speed of that black dagger skyrocketed.

He did not even hesitate to use the law of space here. Although Jackie could control the law of space, he still had not perfected the technique and thus, was a little burdensome to use.

However, now that a rare opportunity had been presented to him, he could not let this Frost Wolf go no matter what! Seeing the black dagger chasing after it, the Frost Wolf once again relied on his speed and retreated with a whooshing sound.

The Frost Wolf turned its head back to look at the incoming dagger while it was running and it seemed as if its worst fear was being realized. Originally, the black dagger was still tens of yards away from it, but for some reason, the space suddenly distorted and in the next second, the black dagger was inches away from it!

This was so unexpected to the Frost Wolf that it was caught off guard and the next instant with a stabbing sound, blood began to spray out of its body. There was another explosion as violent energy crushed against the Frost Wolf and it fell to the ground instantly with a whimper. In fact, the physical damage it received was only secondary to the soul damage it received. After all, Destroying the Void was a soul-attributed technique.

The soul of the monster beast was their weak point. The instant the black dagger imbued with the four Soul Swords pierced the Frost Wolf body, it was then that its soul became minced meat. It could not be any more dead than it was. Before the Frost Wolf took its last breath, it still did not understand how a human being in the initial stage of innate level could be so strong

Seeing the Frost Wolf motionless on the ground, Jackie breathed a sigh of relief and Nash came out of the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2050

Chapter 2050
Nash frowned and glanced at Jackie. He only walked over to the Frost Wolf's corpse when he saw Jackie nod and place his hand under the wolf's nose. "It's dead alright and it seems like it didn't go gently into the dark night."

Jackie nodded again, wiped the cold sweat from his forehead, and walked over slowly. "It seems like I still lack actual combat experience. It shouldn't take me this much effort since the Frost Wolf had underestimated me. He would have been dead sooner if I had attacked with full power from the very beginning."

Nash nodded. He did not see the fight unfold but even so, he could tell by the cold sweat on Jackie's forehead and his expression that the battle must have been fierce.

At this time, the shattered pieces of the six-sided ice crystals were still drifting down from above, making the temperature drop a few degrees lower. However, being people with cultivation, they were not bothered by the cold.

Nash frowned, and then said, “Let’s pack up the Frost Wolf and leave right away. Somehow, I don’t think this is a very safe place.”

Jackie nodded and immediately got to work. He took out a large box from the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship, plus a large skinning knife, and together with Nash, started removing parts of the beast that could be sold such as its spirited core and its skin.

They completed the work rapidly and after putting everything away, Jackie and Nash left quickly. Within five minutes after they left, several other monsters rushed out. If Jackie was there, he would be even more surprised, because the monsters were all in the innate level.

To be on the safe side, Jackie and Nash walked east for more than a dozen miles which put them a few more yards away from leaving Mount Beasts. The beasts there were ordinary animals, making it a very safe place to be.

Jackie sighed with relief and Nash urged him, “You should rest first.” Both of their expressions were not very relaxed. Jackie nodded and found a cave that could accommodate five or six people. Outside the cave, he took out the small defense arrays that Noel gave him.

These small defense arrays would alert Jackie if a strong fighter or monster was in the vicinity and they could also project all that was happening around the surrounding areas. Although they were very ordinary defense arrays and could not withstand any attacks at all, their usefulness proved to be evident in these times.

After making his preparations, Jackie and Nash went into the cave to rest for a while. Nash’s face was dark as he said, “Do you think the map is wrong?”

Jackie exhaled lightly and took out the map. The map divided out every dangerous area, and even the places of some powerful monsters were highlighted and marked. The type and strength of the monster beast were written on the side. He stared at the map and shook his head slightly, “I don’t know, but I always think that maybe some accident happened.”

Nash looked at Jackie solemnly and said, “Maybe we should leave the mountain and come back another time.”

Jackie frowned, obviously unwilling to do so. He thought about it and said, “Although things didn’t go as expected, we should stick with our plan of staying on the outskirts of the mountain. We should be safe as long as nothing untoward happens.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2051

Chapter 2051
“I plan to earn two hundred points this round. If not, it’s not worthwhile to come on this trip.”

Nash suddenly felt he was making a big fuss out of nothing. After all, it was Jackie’s first time here so it was no surprise if things happened unexpectedly.” Maybe you should have brought a local with you. It was not a good idea for you to come here alone,” he said grudgingly.

Jackie put away the map and said, “I’ll do that next time. In any case, let’s stay here a few more days and kill as many monsters as we can. We can always head back when it gets too tough for us.”

Jackie had always been firm in his decisions so Nash gave up trying to persuade him.

Four days passed. One mile away from the cave where they were staying, Jackie was staring at a red eyed white lion’s corpse, lost in thought and as always, Nash was standing beside him.

The red-eyed white lion was not strong; it was only In the initial stage of the innate level, but their location was even more remote than Jackie’s previous location where he killed the Frost Wolf. It was so remote that they were nearly out of the Mount Beasts.

Jackie furrowed his brow and said, “This is the fifth initial stage of the innate level monster I’ve killed.” His face gradually became frightening to look at. Since it was his first time entering Mount Beasts, he had no reference to what was or was not normal. He did not know if the situation there was as it is or if a sudden change caused the initial stage of the innate level monsters to begin to wander more outskirt.

For the past few days, to be on the safe side, he had only been wandering near the cave, hoping to kill a few more acquired level monsters. Instead, he came across four innate level monsters, two in the intermediate stage and two in the initial stage. Fortunately, they were all alone. There was no doubt Jackie would have run away if they were in groups.

Nash shook his head and said, “This is very weird indeed. According to the map, there should not be any innate level monsters here at all. There should not even be any acquired level monsters! The Chi here is too weak and there aren’t any spirited plants at all. There should only be normal beasts here.”

Jackie nodded his head in agreement. The red-eyed white lion had taken its last breath and could not be any more dead than it was. Its fresh blood flowed to the ground and the metallic scent of death drifted into their noses.

Then, Jackie shook his head in resignation. “Oh well, let’s clean this place up before leaving. We can discuss whether we should leave Mount Beasts when we’re back at the cave.”

Even Jackie was a little shaken. Within these four days, he had killed a total of five innate level monsters and each of the spirited core from them could get him at least seventy contribution points. Even the other parts of the monsters would get him at least another three hundred or so contribution points.

Nash glanced pointedly at Jackie and with a voice full o f concern said, “How about we go back now? I don’t think we need to discuss this anymore. I feel it’s getting more and more dangerous around here. I’m not sure whether I’m being paranoid but don’t you think the innate level monsters are getting more active around here?”

Jackie raised his head and smiled bitterly. “Maybe it’s just our rotten luck to have bumped into something weird here.”

Nash did not know what to say to that. Jackie sighed and cut the conversation short. He squat down and took out the tools he frequently used from his storage ring

Suddenly, hurried footsteps sounded from somewhere far away. It was so sudden that it made both Nash and Jackie spontaneously look over in the direction of the sound. Jackie instinctively took out his black daggers from the storage ring and clenched it tightly in his hand.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2052

Chapter 2052
Jackie possessed a pair of eyes and could see a few figures rushing toward their direction. There were a total of three people with two of them supporting one person in the middle, who seemed to be hurt. Their speed was not too fast or too slow. It was as if they were being chased by someone.

Jackie quickly stored the monster corpse into the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship. Harvesting its spirited core and other parts could wait. He then pulled his father back. By right, he should have left that place quickly and discreetly but he was curious to find out if something out of the ordinary really had happened.

Within a few seconds, the three of them arrived at where Jackie and Nash were standing. The person on the right quickly pulled out a sword from his storage space and pointed at Jackie’s glabella when he saw them. The man’s eyes were like knives and were looking at Jackie vigilantly. The three men were dressed similarly, like disciples of a certain Clan association.

Jackie swept his eyes across the three of them and secretly prayed that they were not disciples of the Muddled Origin Clan. If they really were, then a fight would be unavoidable. The reason he did not move away after seeing the three people just now was one, he was curious, and two, the three of them looked

injured and were acting as if they were being chased after so they most probably would not start any unnecessary fights.

The three men were dressed in white with a few bamboo leaves embroidered on their chests. Their white shirts were stained with blood and their faces showed immense exhaustion.

Dwight Warner glanced at Jed McDanial and said," This guy is the informal disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion."

After hearing this, Jed put away his sword. Jackie did not change his clothes when he went out. He still wore the uniform of the informal disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Therefore, it was not hard to identify him.

Jed looked closely at Jackie, who was not hiding his cultivation level so it was easy to know with a glance what cultivation level he was at. "Leave here quickly!" warned Jed.

Jackie nodded. He could feel something dangerous was going on. It would be difficult for them to handle the situation if there were really someone chasing after the three men. He quickly pulled his father's arm and disappeared from that place.

Although the place they were at belonged to the outer, outer periphery of Mount Beasts, it was still not safe for them to dally. It was best they leave the place even though he really wanted to get to the bottom of what was happening. However, before they even took three steps, the person in the middle started coughing violently.

Dwight's face turned pale when he saw fresh blood being coughed up. He pressed his two fingers on the wrist of the middle person to check on his pulse. " Things are not looking good for Brother Albion. We should find a place to treat his wounds before running again."

Jed knitted his brows together and nodded gravely. He, too, felt that Albion might die if they continued running like this. The only reason the two of them were able to escape was because of Brother Albion so there was no way they were going to let him die alone, out there.

"There's a cave nearby. I've set up some simple small defense array formations around it. The three of you can hide there if you don't mind," said Jackie immediately.

Jackie knows that he should beware of strangers however, one of them warned him about the place so they must not be bad people. Besides, there was no reason for them to do anything to him since he had nothing of value and not to mention his cultivation level was not that high.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2053

Chapter 2053
Jed narrowed his eyes and sized Jackie up again. It was a pure coincidence they ran into each other and besides, what happened to them had nothing to do with the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, but in the end, they still accepted his offer.

In the cave, they started a fire to keep Albion warm. Those with cultivation normally were not affected by heat or coldness but Albion was seriously injured and the surrounding temperature was decreasing inexplicably, thus they had to start a fire.

The three introduced themselves briefly when they arrived in the cave. They were all informal disciples o f the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. Jackie was puzzled by this. In the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, a final stage of innate level disciple would already be promoted to a formal disciple but in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, they would have to remain as an informal disciple. It must be due to the latter sect being a fourth grade sect.

Albion was in an unconscious state because of his injuries, Jed and Dwight tended to his wound simply and wiped away the bloodstain on his face. With furrowed brows, they took out all the spirited herbs from their storage ring to give Albion.

Jed was a little agitated. “Those *ssholes! I will avenge Brother Albion no matter what!”

Dwight nodded gravely. “I’ll make a report about this once we’re back in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. They’ll surely take this matter seriously.”

Jackie and Nash glanced at each other then Jackie coughed lightly and asked, “If you don’t mind me asking, what happened?”

He realized that they would not tell him anything if it concerned the grudge between two Clan associations or something confidential, but he was just too curious.

Jed took one look at him and said, “It’s nothing to hide about. We had a run-in with the people from Corpse Pavilion.”

Jackie’s expression changed when he heard this. He unknowingly raised his voice when he asked,” Corpse Pavilion? Disciples from the fourth-grade Corpse Pavilion?”

Jed nodded, undisguised anger all over his face as if he could not wait to annihilate the entire Corpse Pavilion. “Yes, them, alright. What’s more, I don’t think they’re your average disciples because the leader of the group is already at the spring solidifying level.”

Jackie's expression changed again. It was no wonder they were so badly injured. It was a pure miracle that they had survived under the attack of a spring solidifying level fighter.

However, Jackie had another question in his mind." The Corpse Pavilion is in the south of the West Cercie State and their sphere of influence is not here. How was it possible for them to come over when there is Mount Beasts with its overbearing monsters situated in between?"

Dwight exhaled heavily. "We were surprised to see them here too. After all, in so many years, they would not have come here unless the Thousand Leaves Pavilion invited them. Mount Beasts acts as a natural regional barrier that perfectly separates the Corpse Pavilion from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. We never thought that they would suddenly appear since the forces on both sides are too far apart and there is no border between them."

Jackie had read about the Corpse Pavilion when flipping through the classics. In the classics, the Corpse Pavilion was described as an ambitious and ruthless Clan association. Although this Clan association was extremely dangerous, due to the existence of the Mount Beasts, there was no direct conflict of interest between the two sects.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2054

Chapter 2054
Therefore, for many years, peace reigned. Sometimes, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would even invite outstanding disciples of the Corpse Sect to come over.

"What are they doing here? Are they here to hunt monsters as well? How did they even come over?" asked Jackie with furrowed brows.

From a geographical point of view, West Cercie State Is independent of other continents. It is surrounded by the sea. If one wants to leave West Cercie State, one must use a teleportation array. It was because West Cercie State is surrounded by the sea that the Corpse Pavilion must pass through Mount Beasts to come here.

However, Mount Beasts covers an extremely wide area, and the central area of the mountain is full of powerful monsters. These powerful monsters are very territorial. If anyone dares to set foot into their territory, they will definitely be attacked by these tyrannical monsters.

Even if their cultivation had reached the spring solidifying level, it was still impossible to pass through Mount Beasts unscathed. Therefore, it was only natural for all of them to be surprised by their appearance there.

Jed's expression was frightening to look at." Fortunately, I could recognize their uniform after seeing their disciples in a banquet once. Actually, now that I've thought about it, they definitely did not cross Mount Beasts. No way do they have the guts to do that."

Jackie became even more puzzled after hearing that. He blinked and asked, “Then how did they come here? Did they use a teleportation array? Wouldn’t the Thousand Leaves Pavilion know if someone came to their territory if they used a teleportation array?”

Conjuring a teleportation array requires a lot of spirited crystals. Every teleportation array is under the control of the sect. If they came to the north from the south without authorization, they would definitely be discovered by the people of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. The fact that the sect did not receive news about this meant that they came without authorization.

“Anyone who takes the teleportation array from the south to the north will be subjected to strict investigation so there is only one way for them to come undetected. They will not be subjected to strict investigation if they first use the teleportation array to go to other continents, and then from there use the teleportation array to come here. They would only need to change their clothes and we would be none the wiser,” said Dwight with a frown on his head.

No matter how they came, the fact that they did it sneakily meant they were definitely up to something no good.

Jackie’s deep frown lines never left his face. “How did you all get hurt? Did they attack you as soon as they saw you?”

Dwight’s and Jed’s expressions darkened and Jed glanced at the unconscious Albion. “The three of us came to Mount Beasts to hunt some monsters and things passed uneventfully for the first few days. It was yesterday that I discovered the Corpse Pavilion’s disciples doing something sneakily with the array flags in their hand while out scouting around the area after we have entered a hundred miles into the mountain” he said with a face full of guilt.

Jed’s chest rose and fell dramatically when he reached the next part of his story and his eyes were filled with hatred. “It never crossed my mind that I would see the Corpse Pavilion’s disciples here and was so shocked that I forgot to hide my presence. It’s all my fault that they discovered us and then without saying anything, they charged toward us with their weapons. Needless to say, the spring solidifying fighter came at us too.”

Jed’s expression was frightening to look at. His eyes were bloodshot and all they could hear was the thick guilt in his voice. Jackie felt that he should feel guilty for not staying calm in the face of unexpected events. Things would not have ended up this way if he had hidden his presence in time.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2055

Chapter 2055
Jed took a deep breath and continued speaking, “At that time, I knew that I was in trouble and didn’t want to drag anyone else, so I turned and ran away. But, Brother Albion began to worry about me when I didn’t go back at the appointed time so he came to look for me, and that was how he got dragged into it.

Brother Albion did everything to protect me; Brother Dwight did too. Fortunately, Brother Albion had a defense instrument that could block against the spring solidifying level fighter's attack. But even then, we were still gravely injured and could only escape after throwing out the instrument to stall them…"

Suddenly, as if he sensed something, Albion started coughing violently and blood trickled out of the corner of his lips. His tightly closed eyes were twitching and both led and Dwight rushed to his side to calm his wounds with their own true energy. Albion coughed a few more times and slowly opened his eyes. He was still very weak.

"Brother Albion, how are you feeling? Do you feel better?" asked Jed anxiously,

Albion nodded his head with difficulty. Even in times like this, he tried to put on a smile-a smile that was more heart-breaking than if he were to cry. "Don't worry, I'm okay. Where are we now…?"

Jed quickly told him everything from top to bottom. Albion's face darkened when he realized they were still in Mount Beasts. With his last energy, he grabbed Jed's collar and in a weak voice said, "Leave me and get out of here fast! They won't stop chasing after us until we're all dead." He coughed violently again

"I know, Brother Albion, but you're badly hurt. We would get into trouble if we go on like this. Don't you worry, we'll definitely bring you out of Mount Beasts," said Jed tearily.

Those few words just now seemed to have exhausted Albion's last strength. He became unconscious again whereas Jed and Dwight started to panic again. Jackie's face darkened because he finally realized he had encountered something tricky. He did not have to turn his head to know that Nash's expression was probably the same as his.

"I told you so. We should have left this mountain a few days ago. We would have been safe then…" said Nash with a low voice.

Be that as it may, things had not progressed to a truly dangerous level so Jackie was not that worried after all, they were already at the outskirts of the mountain. They would only have to walk two or three miles to be completely out of the mountain and it would not take them long to reach the city then the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

It would only push him to dangerous grounds if he panicked right now. He suddenly stood up and this caused Jed and Dwight to do the same while looking at him with a quizzical expression.

"We need to get out of here now. It'll be harder if we put it off," said Jackie with furrowed brows.

Jed's face darkened. He glanced at the unconscious Albion and knew that Jackie was right. No matter how much he could not bear to drag Albion to run in his state, he had to, if they wanted to avoid bigger trouble.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2056-2060

Chapter 2056
"We can't leave like this," said Nash seriously. All of them turned to look at him with confusion in their eyes.

Nash coughed and continued to explain, "What I meant was, we need to make sure the surrounding area is clear before leaving. Didn't you all say that they would do anything to kill you all to make sure you won't be able to report on them? Although we're at the outskirts of the mountain, there's no guarantee they might not view this place as a key observation zone."

What Nash said was logical. They exchanged glances with each other and all of their expressions were solemn. They could not drag on any longer but they could not just leave like that either.

Jackie knitted his brows and made a decision. "How about this? I'll go scout the surrounding area to plot out a path of escape and we'll leave within two hours." Without waiting for their replies, he turned to leave the cave but was stopped by Dwight.

"I will go instead. I have cultivated a special technique and have a keen sense of perception. If there are enemies around, I'll find out immediately and will be able to retreat safely. After all, your cultivation is only in the initial stage of the innate level. Besides, I'm all better now," he said as he stood up. He patted away the grass from his bottom.

Jackie nodded. There was no need to fight about this since he had a special technique to scout the surroundings.

Jed nodded at Dwight too. "Leave Brother Albion to me. Please be careful out there and come back as soon as you can."

Dwight nodded and left the cave while the four of them waited patiently in the cave. Jackie meditated to rest his body while Nash assisted Jed in taking care of Albion.

The seconds ticked by and Nash became more and more worried. After ten minutes, he could not hold it in any longer and said, "He should be back by now. Do you think he ran into some trouble out there?"

Jed was worried too but compared to Nash, he had more understanding of Dwight's capabilities. He sighed faintly and in a grave tone said, "Under normal

circumstances, Brother Dwight can escape extremely fast. He's smarter than most of us and would be able to detect anything out of the ordinary very quickly so there's no chance for us to escape if he really ran into any troubles now."

Another ten minutes passed and even Jed's face was darkening by the seconds. He stood up and stared worriedly at the entrance of the cave. Jackie knew exactly how he was feeling but they could not do anything apart from waiting.

Finally, after an hour, they heard noises coming from the outside. Jackie's eyes narrowed, and he instinctively looked at the small defense array in his hand. For the defense array to be effective, two defense arrays must be used together. One defense array board was placed outside and the other would b e kept by the user's side.

The defense array board in his hand not only served as an alarm but could also transmit the scene outside. A figure swiftly traversed the location with the array's monitor area. Even though he could not see the person's features, he was relieved to recognize the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's uniform.

Jed quickly went to the entrance to welcome Dwight back. He looked more helter-skelter than before and was covered in leaves and grass. His hair was dirty and he was so pale that he gave off a chilling aura.

Chapter 2057
Jed grabbed Dwight's shoulder and anxiously asked, " What happened? Did you run into any danger? Have you plotted out our escape path?"

These series of questions made Dwight's face even more frightening to look at. His pupils were slightly shaking and the corners of his lips were twitching as If trying to decide how to answer him. All the others started to panic when they saw him acting like this. Jackie walked over too and stared at him with furrowed brows.

Dwight signed softly and waved his hand. "Let's go inside first and I'll tell you all about it."

They nodded and though they were anxious for the answer, they had no choice but to go deeper into the cave.

"I found out what they were doing with the array flags and there's no way we can get out now," said Dwight gravely after taking one look at the still unconscious Albion.

Everyone's expression changed and Jed grabbed Dwight's arms impulsively. He raised his voice and asked, "What happened? Why can't we get out? Tell me what happened! Did you run into them again?"

Dwight nodded and closed his eyes in a bid to try to calm himself down. "Yes, I ran into them again. They were definitely up to something big. I kept on trying to find the best escape route but there were at least twenty or so disciples from the Corpse Pavilion and after taking a close look, the disciples who chased after us

were not amongst them. In other words, the Corpse Pavilion's disciples have taken over this mountain. But thanks to my techniques, I was able to escape from their detection before they discovered me."

He paused here. Jed urged him to go on by asking, " Why can't we get out of here? Is it because there are too many of them?"

Dwight shook his head and his lips were trembling." No, it's because of something much worse than that. While it's true I've managed to escape their detection and successfully arrived at the border between Mount Beasts and the outside world but from there I discovered they had set up a trap array with us in it. This trap array would alert them should anyone step out of it and the only way to get out of the array is to attack it."

Everyone froze when they heard this. It was the worst situation ever. They never expected the disciples of Corpse Pavilion to set up a trap array at the borders of Mount Beasts. As the name implies, the trap array is used to trap people in a particular area. Although they would be able to break out of it by attacking it with powerful energy, they would still be discovered as long as they were within the warning range. Then, the surrounding Corpse Pavilion disciples would come and attack in groups, and no one would be able to survive then.

Jed suddenly deflated like a balloon on the ground and was trembling all over. Both Nash and Jackie's faces were darkened, they thought they would be safe once they reached the outskirts of the mountain but now it seemed as if they were too naïve.

Nash glanced at Jackie and asked, "What should we do now?"

Chapter 2058
Jackie shook his head. He had no ideas either. There was no way they could get out safely unless news of their entrapment reached the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. They had no idea what the Corpse Pavilion disciples would do next. Would they rigorously scout through the area they were in? If they did, Jackie and the others would no doubt be effortlessly eliminated.

Seeing everybody's expression, Dwight started to contemplate whether he should continue speaking and decided, in the end, to do so because some words could not be left unspoken.

He took a deep breath and in a sorrowful voice said, " On the way, I saw a lot of corpses. Most of them were the bodies of the disciples within the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's sphere of influence and a few of them were unaffiliated cultivators. Judging by the wounds of their bodies, they must have perished under weapons and not monsters."

This news made an already bad situation worse.. It confirmed Jackie's guess that anyone would have been eliminated once discovered by the Corpse Pavilion disciples. Both Dual Sovereign Pavilion and Muddled Origin Clan were within the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's sphere of influence which was not surprising since the former two Clan associations were only third-grade while the latter Clan

association was the only fourth-grade Clan association in the entire north area of West Cercie State.

Therefore, according to the rules, the lower-grade Clan associations would need to heed the orders of the higher-grade Clan association so that was why the two Clan associations would help out the Thousand Leaves Pavilion even though they did not belong to the same Clan associations.

What the Corpse Pavilion disciples were doing was indiscriminate killing. Death was inevitable as long as one did not belong to their own Clan association. Knowing this, it finally dawns on Jackie and the others just how bad their situation was.

Jackie's face was black as thunder. "What should we do next? We can't just wait for death to come to us!"

Dwight glanced at Nash helplessly and said, "You're right. We can't just wait to die here but our ideas have run dried. We're not even sure how many Corpse Pavilion disciples are out there. From my initial observation, there are at least a hundred of them. One of them is still manageable but they usually move in groups. Besides, we don't even know what their motives are and how long they would stay here."

Dwight had listed out all the questions in everyone's minds and still, no answers were to be found. It would be their worst nightmare if the Corpse Pavilion disciples planned to stay there for half a year or even a year.

Jackie furrowed his brows and raised his head. "How long do you think it will take the Thousand Leaves Pavilion to discover what the Corpse Pavilion is doing?"

That was the million-dollar question. It was given that the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would notice something was amiss even though the Corpse Pavilion disciples had set up the trap array but the question was, when?

Their only hope, for now, was for the Thousand Leaves Pavilion to come to their rescue but they were not sure what the higher-ups of the sect would do once they got wind of what the Corpse Pavilion was doing

Jackie got up and looked outside the entrance. "We can't stay here and be sitting ducks. We should still find a way to get out no matter what the Corpse Pavilion plans to do or how long they'll stay here."

He took out the map from his storage ring, laid it flat on the ground, and marked their location. Jackie was a decisive person and chose not to wrack his brain over what he could not figure out. Instead, he would find a way out of this himself. Dwight, too, came over to his side.

Chapter 2059

"We all know the best thing we can do now is to look for a way out but how can we when there are so many of those Corpse Pavilion disciples?" asked Dwight helplessly after looking at the map.

Then he gestured at the circled location which was where they were. “There are no other hiding places In this vicinity apart from this cave. The only place we can go is this cliff over here but chances are we’ll die If we scale the walls there so we might just as well wait here.”

He became despaired after saying that. Dwight was not the type to easily give up when things got tough but this time, he obviously realized they had been backed into a corner. Although they were still safe for now, he was not exactly sure for how long more.

Suddenly, Jackie’s small defense array board let out a red glow. He quickly put down the map and went over to the board to perform some hand seals. The glow changed to white and a moving image floated above the board.

They instantly recognized the place they were looking at. The place was about a hundred yards away from the cave and the moving image showed twenty or so people in a horizontal line walking toward where they were. The man in the middle of the line was wearing a strange mask. The mask was made of bone fragments and blood-red runes were written all over it.

Ted shot up from the ground when he saw that person, “He’s the spring solidifying level fighter!”

Their enemies were getting closer and this made Jackie’s heart clench while his expression darkened. The man with the mask was holding a blood-red rope in his hand and a monster, measuring about half of an average human’s height, was tied to the end of the rope

The monster looked like a dog but was much more ferocious than a normal dog. It had only one eye but the eye was the size of a palm and its pupil was giving off a red glow.

“It’s a cyclops canine!” said Jackie with a knit of his brow.

The cyclops canine is the final stage of the innate level monster. However, this monster is weaker than the average final stage of innate level monster and is very popular with humans. A lot of martial artists like to keep one or two of them as pets. The Clan associations, as well, like to keep a group of them, for they would come in very useful especially in times like this.

Jed’s lips twitched. His expression was extremely frightening to look at and his breath became very haggard. “They must be looking for someone! Who could it be?”

Although a cyclops canine would not win in a fight with other monsters, he can find a person based on the fluctuations of his true energy. With his palm sized eye, he can find the traces of that person within a certain range by relying on the remaining true energy fluctuations of a person. This was also the reason why many Clan associations favored having a group of canine cyclops as pets.

Their blood ran cold the moment they saw the cyclops canine. Then they saw the masked man take out a piece of cloth and hold it in front of the cyclops canine's eye. The huge eye released dark red runes, and the runes flickered in the air as if they were attracted by the cloth, and began to hover and float o n the small piece of cloth.

Dwight's face turned dark, and he quickly turned to look at the still-unconscious Albion. "That's from Brother Albion's undershirt! He accidentally ripped It during the fight with them. I'm one hundred percent sure about this!"

Chapter 2060
Everybody's hearts clenched again when they heard this and their hands started to tremble. The cyclops dog locates a person by following the remaining true energy fluctuations of that person. When anyone uses martial arts skills or techniques, there will be residual true energy fluctuations on the things they used. This kind of true energy fluctuations cannot be detected by humans, but the cyclops canine can. Even if that person's clothes have extremely weak true energy fluctuations. In the huge eye of the cyclops canine, the true energy can be magnified countless times.

At this moment, Albion woke up and a little bit of color came back to his face. It was obvious that the spirited herbs Dwight and Jed had piled on him previously had worked. However, even so, none of them were in any mood for celebration.

"sH*T!" Jackie gritted his teeth as the anxiety in his heart intensified, for he had noticed the cyclops canine seemed to have zeroed in on its targets and was wagging his tail and looking over in their direction. This was as good as them receiving a death sentence. His breath became haggard and he regretted letting Nash come out of the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship. He never thought that things would end up this way.

"We have to leave this place! The cyclops canine has already found us," said Jackie decisively.

Dwight's face was as black as thunder. "But where can we go? They're all over the place. We'll die if we go out like this!" he said in a panicky tone.

It might seem like the three of them had dragged Jackie into their problem but to Jackie, he was grateful to bump into them. If not, he might not have known about the Corpse Pavilion disciples and might have run into them and was probably dead by now. He closed his eyes and forced himself to calm down. Then, he made up his mind.

"There is one way to escape the Corpse Pavilion's detection."

"Which way?" asked Dwight and Jed with wide eyes.

At that moment, the small array defense board glowed red again and they all turned to look at the newly transmitted moving images. The masked man was performing hand seals and the cyclops canine had already locked on its target. It was jumping around excitedly, trying to rush to the cave, but was pulled back by

the masked man. The next second, the masked man walked over to a particular area.

“Oh sH*T!” cried Jackie in a low voice when he saw where he was going. Immediately, the small array defense board he was holding shattered with a crisp cracking sound and everyone knew what had happened without any need for explanation.

The small defense array boards were linked to each other so it was not surprising the array board in Jackie’s hand would break if the masked man had broken the other one outside the cave. Fortunately, they had already seen all that they needed to see. Jackie turned his head and glanced at Albion.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2061-2065

Chapter 2061
“They’re about a hundred yards away from us. It won’t take them long to reach us. We need to go now but we can’t dash around madly. If we do that, we’ll b e dead for sure so there’s only one way we can take. Follow me!” said Jackie icily and determinedly.

He quickly pulled Nash and headed for the cave entrance. Both Dwight and Jed hesitated for a second, but only a second. They were all out of ideas and though Jackie did not explain himself, he was still their best bet. They exchanged one glance and quickly supported Albion up and followed Jackie out.

The cave entrance faces south and by right, if they wanted to escape, they should head north or east, but no, Jackie chose to go south instead. Moreover, the path they were on was extremely remote. Judging by the dense weeds around, even the beasts and monsters did not frequent there. Their path became more and more remote until an unknowing layer of fine mists appeared around them.

By then, both Dwight’s and Jed’s faces had already darkened but Jackie showed no signs of stopping. Finally, Jed could not hold it in any longer and asked him, “Where are we going? Why are there mists here?

A mile away, the masked man and his group were following them at a tempered speed. He was not afraid of losing them, not when he had the cyclops canine with him. The Corpse Pavilion had spared no expenses for what they were about to do and the masked man would not let anyone interrupt their plans. Especially the Thousand Leaves Disciples who had gotten away from him before. Besides, he would be the laughing stock of the town if word got around that he, a spring solidifying level fighter, could not even take out a few final stages of innate level fighters. Therefore, he must kill them no matter what.

A pointy-chin Corpse Pavilion disciple looked left and right then suddenly moved closer to the masked man and said, “I think something’s not right. They seemed to be going in the direction of…”

“Cliff of Sorrow,” said the masked-man icily, finishing the pointy-chin disciple’s sentence.

The point-chin disciple nodded vigorously. “Yes, the Cliff of Sorrow. They must have thought that it would be better for them to jump off a cliff than to suffer in our hands.”

The masked man scoffed and shook his head. “They won’t die so easily. Master has told me a long time ago that below the Cliff of Sorrow is not the ten thousand precipes.

Meanwhile, Jackie and the others had already arrived at an extremely narrow path. The vegetation around them had disappeared and was replaced by ugly black rocks which threatened to trip them anytime.

Jackie did not answer Jed's previous question and just walked on quietly. After ten minutes or so, the mist around them was so thick that they could only see five yards ahead of them.

Jackie stopped walking and Jed and the other two quickly caught up to him.

"Another ten yards or so and we'll arrive at the Cliff of Sorrow," said Jackie.

Everyone's expression changed drastically when they heard that. "What?! Why did you bring us here? You're not going to ask us to jump, right? How is that different from getting killed by them?"

Chapter 2062
Dwight's face turned ugly but he did not say a word; he just stared at Jackie.

Jackie heaved a sigh and turned around to look at the mist-covered surroundings. According to the map, another ten yards and they would reach the Cliff of Sorrow. No one knew just how deep the cliff was and it was named so because no one had ever made it out alive once they jumped down the cliff, filling their loved ones with deep sorrow.

"I've brushed up on all the dangerous areas before coming to Mount Beasts so I am very familiar with the Cliff of Sorrow. One thing all the classics and the other disciples agreed on was that you won't die from the Cliff of Sorrow," explained Jackie slowly.

Dwight's lips twitched, he could not help but say, "We don't need you to tell us that. Everybody knows that a cultivator can use his true energy to support his body while falling down the cliff and this will ensure his safety. The reason people die in the Cliff of Sorrow is because of the ancient array!"

Jackie nodded. That was what he came to understand too. "I think the ancient array is a kind of trap array too and because it's so old, it has lost its effectiveness. Look at the mist around you… these are all the energy that was released after the ancient array fell into disrepair."

Jed became more and more confused, not understanding exactly what Jackie was trying to get to so his tone became a little aggressive, "What are you trying to say exactly? Just get straight to the point and stop confusing me! Are you saying we should jump down the cliff to save ourselves?".

Jackie shook his head and turned around to look at everyone with a grave expression on his face. "I know of a senior who has been to Cliff of Sorrow before, and he has personally experienced the mist that pervades the surrounding area. He said that these mists are made from the energy that escaped from the trap array and that they can confuse people's hearts and even shield perception. The reason why I brought you here is for the shield perception. It's easy to get lost

here but with enough time we can still make our way back so there's no need for us to jump down the cliff."

Finally, it dawned on Dwight why Jackie had brought them there. "In other words, you brought us here to shield us from the cyclops canine's perception so that it won't be able to find us?"

Jackie nodded. They were lucky enough to not have bumped into any of the Corpse Pavilion disciples here, it was because even the Corpse Pavilion disciples knew no one in their right mind would go there. One being no monsters or spirited beasts could be found there and the second reason was there were no spirited plants either. Only those fed up with the world would come here since it would take them a lot of effort to get out of there.

That was why Jackie did not hesitate to bring them there. The white mist that pervades the surroundings formed a natural barrier. It would be difficult for the cyclops canine to find them now. Jackie would have come here, even if Jed and the others did not want to. After all, it was definitely the safest place on the mountain.

Jed's face softened a little after this. Jackie quickly gestured for them to put Albion down so he could tend to his wound himself. It was best not to exhaust him further since their little journey here had taken a lot out of him.

After putting Albion down, they began to meditate. Their faces were still filled with anxiety even though they were safe for now, they did not know for sure whether the natural barrier would work.

Chapter 2063
Would they make it out alive?

Dwight's voice drifted into Jackie's ears just when he was thinking about that. "How can you be so sure that the ancient array below the Cliff of Sorrow is a trap array and not a kill array? It's not as if you can tell from the mist around us."

Jackie opened his eyes and looked around everywhere but him. "Actually I'm only seventy to eighty percent sure about it."

"Then what do you base that seventy, eighty percent on?" Dwight was prepared to ask as many questions as she needed to get to the bottom of this and it annoyed Jackie a little.

In truth, Jackie was a hundred percent sure that the ancient array below the cliff was a trap array and not a kill array because he had come across this type of trap array before, albeit not with his own eyes. However, in the memory left by the predecessor, there was this kind of trap array. This kind of trap array has a characteristic where as time goes by, the energy inside will slowly escape and turn into a white mist clouding the surrounding area. These diffuse mists have the function of shielding perception and disorienting people and the white mist here basically has the same function too. For this reason alone, Jackie was sure that the ancient array below the cliff was a trap array.

“If I’m not mistaken, this array is called the Ten Absolutes trap array. This array can trap a person’s mind, body, and spirit. Even our divine senses would be useless against it. But what I really wanted to know is why would this array appear here…” said Jackie breezily.

Dwight was struck dumb when he heard Jackie mention the Ten Absolutes trap array. He had never heard of it. This would not be surprising but the fact that he spent a lot of time reading about ancient ruins in his spare time and had never come across the Ten Absolutes trap array; It was as if this trap array was not of this world.

Jackie looked around him again and ‘By right, the Ten Absolutes trap array should not appear in a small place like West Cercie State. After all, the most powerful Clan association is only of the fourth grade. While it’s true they’re powerful beasts in the mountains, they don’t use arrays like us humans.’

Dwight gave it some thought and said, “So you’re saying the martial artists who were accidentally trapped here, died because they could not break the array or find the eye of the array?”

Jackie nodded. Although the array’s name sounded impressive, it did not possess the ability to kill. Those who accidentally entered into the array could only wait for death if they did not have enough power to break through the array.

Dwight’s hair stood up when he thought about spending his last moments here. It was definitely a fate worse than death. He would rather be killed by somebody than wait day after day for death to claim him. Even just thinking about the despair terrified them.

“I can’t believe the two of you still have the mood to talk about all this under the circumstances we’re in. Aren’t you worried that the mist would not be able to shield us from them? That they’re on their way here as we speak?” asked Jed anxiously.

Chapter 2064
Dwight glanced at Jed speechlessly. “Even if we wait here obediently, can this stop them from finding us?” Jed was trying every possible way at a time of crisis and was not thinking straight. He wanted to cause trouble when he saw people chit-chatting. What Dwight said immediately stopped Jed from speaking. Jed was so embarrassed that his face and neck flushed a crimson color but he was unable to refute Dwight.

Just like what Dwight said, were they able to prevent themselves from being captured by those people if they kept quiet and sat there meditating to restore their breathing? In fact, their current situation was akin to leaving their life in the hands of the gods. They did everything they could and if they were still unable to escape the fact of being captured, this proved that they were fated to die.

Dwight turned around and looked at Jackie, who had been calm the entire time. “I’ve never expected you to be so calm when you’re only in the initial stage of innate level. Aren’t you afraid of being implicated by us?” This was what Dwight really wanted to ask after they came out of the cave. The cyclops canines had

strong hunting powers but no matter how strong they were, they required items left behind by their targets to search for these people.

The masked man had their senior brother's torn up clothes and this meant that they were being pinpointed. The two of them could never leave their senior and escape on their own and they would have to die together no matter what happened. However, there was no need for Jackie to run for his life with them. If they went on different ways, Jackie would have a better chance at survival. However, from Jackie's calm expression, it looked like he did not think about leaving them to save himself. Dwight was extremely puzzled by his actions.

After all, if he was in Jackie's shoes, he would definitely distance himself from these people to prevent himself from being involved. Jackie glanced at Dwight and remained calm as he spoke. "From how the Corpse Pavilion is acting, I would not have a high possibility of surviving even if I leave you guys and run toward the opposite direction. The Corpse Pavilion plans to kill everybody and I don't think that I'm lucky enough…"

Jackie was not telling the truth as he was full of secrets himself. If he told the truth, he would naturally raise Dwight's suspicion. Dwight subconsciously raised his eyebrows and did not continue the conversation after he heard Jackie's reply. However, Jackie knew clearly that Dwight did not believe in what he said.

At this moment, footsteps could be heard coming toward them from far away. All five of them were stunned and they immediately stood up. Jackie stepped forward with a frown on his face and shielded Nash behind him. Dwight and Jed did the same thing as they completely blocked Albion behind them. They should have turned around to run at this moment but what Jackie said flashed through their minds. They would arrive at the Cliff of Sorrow if they ran another 10 more yards.

They could only run toward the sides if they wanted to but there was a huge boulder and below this huge boulder was the Ten Absolutes trap array. Even if they moved toward the side, they would arrive at the border soon. This forced them into a desperate situation where there was no place to hide.

The figure slowly became clearer through the white mist. Their hearts dropped the moment they saw the person clearly as the worst situation had occurred. The masked man was holding onto the cyclops canine's leash as the animal breathed heavily with his long tongue hanging out of his mouth.

He seemed to be extremely excited now that he had found his target. He wagged his tail hard as he focused his huge eyes on Jackie and the rest.

Chapter 2065

The masked man sneered as he took a piece of meat out and threw it toward the sky. The cyclops canine rushed forward in excitement as he opened his mouth to swallow that piece of meat, letting out a crunch! "I thought you guys were smart enough to escape to some special place. Who would have expected you guys to still be here? Do you think that the mist around this place can prevent you from being detected by the cyclops canine? This is hilarious and childish. You people really look down on the cyclops canine's capabilities."

The masked man stretched out his hand and caressed the cyclops canine's huge head. The pointy-chin man from the Corpse Pavilion chuckled as he looked at Jackie and the rest. He had a smirk on his face as he spoke with his sharp voice, "Do you think that the cyclops canine my eldest senior brother has with him is a normal cyclops canine? Today, we shall give you some insight. This cyclops canine was groomed with our sect's secret method and an unknown amount of spirited crystals were spent on him. Although he isn't strong in fighting, his senses are three to four times stronger than usual cyclops canines. Although the surrounding mist has a certain barrier effect, it isn't sufficient to block this cyclops canine's senses!

Jed and Dwight closed their eyes at the same time as despair filled their hearts. Their last hope was gone and they were unable to evade the attack. The masked man sneered and he looked relaxed like a cat who had successfully captured a mouse. He was not In any hurry and he wanted to toy with the captured mouse around before he killed it. "To be honest, I could have captured you people the moment you step into the mist area. However, I didn't because I want to see what you guys were planning to do. I thought that maybe you guys ran over here to meet the others. It looks like I've been overthinking it…"

Jackie lowered his eyes and secretly thought to himself, 'No wonder these people were moving so slowly.' However, he was able to see how cruel this masked man was. He slowly forced them into a desperate situation and gave them some hope before instantly crushing them. The masked man must love this feeling that brought him a hint of satisfaction when he saw the despair on the faces of these people. How could normal people remain calm when they encounter somebody like this, Jackie took a glance to his side and sure enough, Jed was trembling badly.

Although he was a brave man, he could not help but feel a wave of chilliness when facing a person like this. Dwight was still able to remain calm and Albion was extremely calm as he seemed to have accepted his miserable fate.

The masked man took a four-feet scimitar out of his storage space. The weapon was red as blood and had a hint of eccentricity to it, causing others to feel a wave of chilliness after they looked at it. "You guys were able to escape from me previously and I wasted so much time tracking you down. It would be a blessing for all of you and a waste of my time if I let you die easily."

What he said caused the group of five, who was frightened, to be extremely stressed out. This was the worst ending for them as they were not even allowed to die in peace. They could be tortured until they begged for their deaths before they were allowed to die. The members of the Corpse Pavilion had always been well known for their cruel ways and were extremely proficient in torturing others.

Jed's hands started trembling so badly that the weapon he held tightly, started to tremble too. However, he was not a coward who would just give up and accept his fate. "It's just death! I will make sure that I pull them into hell with me if I am going to die. Guys, listen to me! We can't just allow them to kill us without fighting back!"

The masked man started laughing coldly until his shoulders started trembling when he heard what Jed said. To him, Jed's inspirational speech at this moment was a joke. With his presence, how could he allow them to kill the disciples of his sect!

Nash frowned as he lowered his voice to speak to Jackie, "What should we do? Shall we just stand here and wait for our deaths?" Nash was also filled with despair at that moment. Although he knew that Jackie had some hidden means, he did not know what Jackie had up his sleeves. He wondered if they were able to escape the place if they took the Mustard Seed out at this moment.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2066-2070

Chapter 2066
Unexpectedly, Jackie reached out and grabbed Nash's elbow. He turned around to speak to Jed and the others, who were standing beside him, "Follow me, we're only left with one choice right now. Don't worry, I'll find a way even if we're in a desperate situation!"

Jackie turned around and started running toward their back with Nash. Jed and Dwight were stunned. They knew what Jackie planned to do at this moment. Did they have no other choice but to jump off the cliff? Regardless, this guy knew that the Ten Absolutes trap array was ancient, and even great masters could not escape from them. Would he not end up dead if he jumped down the cliff?

It might be how Jackie was the first person to rush over or what the masked man said about torturing them, but there was no time for them to hesitate. Dwight took in a deep breath before he reached out and grabbed Jed and Albion by their arms. They followed after Jackie and rushed toward Cliff of Sorrow.

The masked man cocked his brows upon the sight. He raised his hand and stopped the Corpse Pavilion's disciples behind him, who tried to hurry over and stop the group of five from jumping down the cliff. Let them jump, They'll die over time, and such pain will torture them until they go crazy. What an interesting ending."

The group of five was only a dozen meters away from the cliff, and they soon arrived by the cliff. Jackie took a look down and saw nothing but the white mist that shrouded the air. They stood at the edge of the cliff, and death would be their only ending if they did not jump.

Jackie inhaled deeply and, not turning back to the three behind him, jumped forward with everything he had while still grabbing onto his father's arm.

The speed of their plunge disoriented Jackie for a short period. To prevent any sudden incidents, he immediately opened the Mustard Seed and sent Nash back into the spirited ship. After five to six breaths later, Jackie could faintly see the ground below amid the mist. The surrounding mist had become thinner, allowing him to see clearer. Although he had jumped down the cliff, he had the support of his true energy and was able to control the speed of his landing.

Everything felt so surreal to Jackie until his feet touched the ground. At this moment, the surrounding mist had become so thin that it was almost invisible. He turned around and observed his surroundings

It was an empty valley, but though it was surrounded by high mountains, there was an exit right in front of him.

The area where he stood was barren, but the exit was covered in weed and looked like it was a rejuvenated place. He took another careful observation of his surroundings and discovered that there were several exits. He was definitely at the bottom of the cliff, but this seemed to be flat terrain.

The valley was as big as a football field. If one listened carefully, they would be able to hear the noise of water flowing in the stream. This was like a different world below the mist.

Sounds of something cracking were heard from his surroundings, but Jackie knew that it was the sound of Jed, Dwight, and Albion jumping down from the cliff without turning around. The trio was stunned for a moment, and their worried hearts eased slightly upon noticing Jackie standing before them.

They were nonetheless shocked by what they saw.

This was different from what they had expected. This place was not covered with traps, and there was no thick mist that obstructed their view. They were able to see clearly, and the exit was right in front of them. There was even more than one exit, too, and it seemed like escaping would be easy for them.

Chapter 2067
They just had to continue forward!

Jed took one step forward and felt a slight resistance under his feet. A crack could be heard once more, and they altogether turned toward the source of the sound…only to see several sets of skeletons where they were standing. It was obvious that these skeletons had been there for several years, seeing how dusty the bones were. Even the clothes these skeletons donned crumbled like confetti over time. The remnants of their clothes turned into pieces and scattered around the skeletons with the slightest touch.

A chill shot through their bodies, and their hopeful gazes faltered.

Jackie had been busy looking around and did not look beneath his legs. It was only at this moment did his gaze shift downward to the ground, where more than one skeleton emerged around them. The ground was slightly cleaner around the place where they stood, and they were surrounded by skeletons of both humans and monster beasts. These bones were scattered everywhere as they silently told their story of despair when they lived.

Jed could not help but shivered and subconsciously tightened his grasp on his senior brother's hand. Their expressions shifted darkly, and Albion was the one who interrupted the silence, "Where's your father?"

Jackie had feared something would happen to his father as they dropped down from the cliff, which was why he kept Nash in the Mustard Seed for his own safety. Letting out a short cough, Jackie gave only a vague reply, "I have a small storage space that can accommodate one person; living beings can also enter that space. I was afraid we'd be in for something dangerous as we descended the cliff. My father's power is limited, so I placed him in the storage space."

He dared not mention that he had a huge storage space with him. Something like the Mustard Seed was precious, even in places like the Divine Void World. Although he trusted Jed and the others, he would not parade his wealth in front of them.

Albion nodded slightly at Jackie's response and did not press on the matter, while Jed and the others did not even look toward Jackie. Their minds were focused on the skeletons that littered the ground.

Jed trembled as he helped Albion to a clean place where he could meditate and recover. He then stood up straight as he stared at the exit. That was a gap between two mountains. Although the gap looked small and narrow from a distance, they would discover that it was sufficient for two horse carriages to pass through when they took a closer look. "I'd like to go and take a look! We should be able to leave this place!

It was obvious that he himself was not sure of his words. If they could leave this place, why would there be so many skeletons scattered around here?

Jackie and Dwight said nothing at the moment, while Jed stood up straight and stretched his fingers before exercising his waist. Those who did not understand the situation would have thought that he was preparing for some sports activity. He inhaled deeply and strode toward the gap between the two mountains.

Every step he took was filled with all his strength as if this would provide him with the courage he needed. He walked quickly and soon arrived at the gap between the two mountains. He subconsciously slowed down, too, and every step he took was to check if anything would obstruct him. However, there was no obstruction until he walked into the gap between those mountains and stepped on the dense weeds.

Jed's guard lowered when he noticed nothing obstructing them. This had to be an exit, and they could finally leave this place!

Jed turned around excitedly, eyes widening as he waved at the three standing from the other end." There's nothing here! We can get out of this place! Wait here for me. I'll pass through and scout for possible dangers. I'll be back shortly!" He strode forward afterward.

The gap between both mountains was only around ten meters, and after he walked out of the gap, there should be something else once he took a left turn.

Chapter 2068
Jackie and Dwight looked on as Jed turned left after he walked past the gap. No sounds were made until his figure faded from view, and Dwight was delighted by this. Of course, he was not that relaxed, seeing as there were innumerable skeletons on the ground,

Jackie, on the other hand, only looked quietly to where Jed left, his expression passive.

Dwight turned around to face his senior, who was sitting behind him, and spoke excitedly, “Senior Brother Albion, look! Junior Brother Jed has gone out, and nothing happened. It looks like we can still leave this place. I only wonder what we’ll find when we go out—”

Just then, a familiar voice laced with a hint of despair came from behind them, “W—Why am I back here?!” They immediately turned around, and Jed was right behind them, standing in the gap between two mountains

This valley had a total of four gaps that allowed them to leave the place. The largest gap was right in front o f them, and there was one more behind them. They saw Jed going out of the gap in front of them with their own eyes, yet all of a sudden, he was right behind them.

Dwight’s breaths grew labored. “Why are you here? Why did you end up behind us?”

Jed desperately explained, “The gap in front of us isn’t a straight line, and I had to turn left. The gap then shifted right, so I turned right, and here I am now.”

Dwight’s face turned pale as if someone had plastered cement on him when he heard this. He seemed to be in disbelief as he strode forward. Sure enough, he reappeared from the gap behind them a couple of breaths after he disappeared in front of the rest. This meant that the gaps at the front and back were connected

They were walking in a circle and were still at the same place. Both Jed and Dwight looked utterly defeated at this disappointing revelation.

Although skeletons were practically everywhere here and they ignored the fact that there was a trap array here, they insisted on trying when they saw hope. In the end, everything was in vain and they still could not leave this place. If there was an exit, why would there be so many bodies on the ground? These skeletons basically conveyed their story of how they, too, attempted to escape years ago.

Jackie stretched out his hand and stopped Jed, who wanted to try again, “This is how the Ten Absolutes trap array is. Although you see an exit in front of you, it’s another ingenious array. Even though you’ve walked forward, there are movements of runes at the turning corner, and you’re transferred to another entrance by the space. You won’t be able to get out of this place no matter how many times you walk around this place.”

Jackie’s words were utterly discouraging. Jed and Dwight exchanged glances, and they both slumped to the ground like deflated balloons. They could hear the water of the river flowing with their own ears, and the exit was just in front of them…yet they just could not leave!

Jackie seemed to have thought as though they were not that desperate in leaving as he added, “The Ten Absolutes trap array prevents us from flying. It’s even impossible for us to exit this place from where we came in.”

What Jackie said immediately caused the surrounding atmosphere to reach a freezing point. Jed and Dwight were lost in a daze as they sat on the ground, completely at a loss for words. Although Albion did not say anything, they could still feel his despair from his expression

Jed looked up and glanced at Jackie. “It didn’t matter If we jumped down or not; we would’ve died anyway. You, however, seemed to be very decisive when you decided to jump down here.”

Chapter 2069
Jackie could hear the resentment in Jed’s words.

Nonetheless, Jed knew in his heart that he could not blame Jackie for anything-he did not force them to jump down the Cliff of Sorrow. Although they would have died regardless, they would be tortured to their death had they not jumped off. Jumping off the Cliff of Sorrow and waiting for their deaths here was much better than being tortured by the masked man up there. They would not die in disgrace, at least, despite how tormenting this would be to die.

Jackie ignored them and found a clean place to meditate and recover. He kept performing seals with his hands as strands of true energy traveled between the tip of his fingers. Then, he pointed forward, and a strand of his true energy hit the air.

Jackie suddenly opened his eyes and stared forward, frowning. It was the position where his true energy had gone toward, but nothing had happened.

If anything, Jackie just made himself look odd.

Dwight and Jed looked at each other helplessly. They raised their brows and had no idea what Jackie planned to do.

Jackie ignored them both and once again sent a strand of true energy forward. Just like before, however, nothing happened. Jackie then stood up from the ground, his eyes wide open as he took a few steps forward and punched into the air with his true energy. He continued to land punches into the air as he walked.

This time, Jackie looked like he was a lunatic, much to Jed and the rest’s bewilderment. Jed cupped a hand over his mouth slightly and turned toward Dwight, whispering into his ear, “Has that guy gone crazy? What is he doing? He keeps punching the air; is he planning on exploding the air? Does he think we can go out if he does that?”

Dwight shook his head and said helplessly, “Who are those questions for, exactly? Whatever it is, I don’t think this young man is a loony. He seemed to be far calmer than we were when we faced so many dangerous incidents before. How can he go crazy so quickly?”

Jed shrugged. “It’s probably his façade. He acts like he doesn’t care about anything, but he might’ve gone crazy inside.

Jackie, meanwhile, solely focused on his punches and ignored everyone else's remarks and stares. He paid no heed to their thoughts, even if he looked deranged at the moment. He stared ahead where he aimed his punches.

His punches were imbued with his true energy, and logically speaking, true energy would cause no effect when it hit the air, only disappearing afterward. Only the strongest masters could break the space with a punch. Jackie, however, was so weak that his punches had no effect when they landed in the air.

However, Jackie did not plan to break the space with his true energy.

Instead, he wanted to see how the true energy dispersed in the space. Under normal circumstances, as long as his true energy was not strong enough to break the space, the true energy in his punches would disappear into nothingness like a water droplet in the sea. However, every time true energy landed in the space following his punches, they would be like drops of water hanging in the air before dropping down speedily, causing tiny ripples to sway continuously.

Jackie's eyes widened as he noticed tiny ripples when the true energy assimilated into space.

The reason Jackie did this was simple: this was how the ancient great master resolved the ancient array I in the memories he left behind. Nash might have been too worried about Jackie, so he exited the Mustard Seed after Jackie ensured the safety of his surroundings. Jackie did not stop Nash as Jed and the others knew about Nash's existence.

Chapter 2070
Jed and the others only felt waves of fluctuations surrounding Jackie. All of a sudden, Nash-who had disappeared-appeared for them, startling Jed and his company.

Upon his appearance, Nash stared straight at Jackie seriously, not sparing a glance at everyone else in the area. Jackie's actions might have made him look like he had lost his mind, but Nash knew that his son must have learned how to resolve the ancient array. He lowered his voice and spoke by Jackie's ear, "Have you found a way to resolve the issue?"

Jackie turned around and glanced at his father; he had nothing to hide from Nash. "Yes, I have. The great master was once trapped in the Ten Absolutes trap array, too." Nash finally relaxed when he heard Jackie's sure answer. He could not help but pat Jackie heavily on his shoulders. "Son, couldn't you have told your father your plans before doing something? My heart nearly leaped out of my throat when you jumped down from the cliff just now, do you know that?"

Jackie's lips curved into a helpless smile.

He was not afraid of being tortured to death, and he did not jump because of that. Based on the situation, he would have been found by the Corpse Pavilion even if Jed and the others were not there to involve him if he stayed outside. He chose to jump into the Ten Absolutes trap array because there was an important

memory regarding this ancient array among the memories from the great master. Years ago, the great master was also trapped in the Ten Absolutes trap array when he explored the secret place.

Although this great master was several times stronger than Jackie, he could not break the ancient array by force and could only resolve the ancient array in another way. Jackie's method of punching the air was akin to how the great master resolved the ancient array before.

Nash lowered his voice and asked Jackie, "Are you capable of resolving the ancient array by jabbing the air? Do you think that you can break the Ten Absolutes trap array like this?"

Jackie shook his head and explained, "I didn't do this to break the ancient array by force. With my current strength, I can't do that. I did that to observe how the true energy disperses in space. Father, look at this!"

With that, Jackie swung his fist forward, and Nash widened his eyes to study what happened.

Much to his shock, Nash saw how the true energy sent ripples across the space like a stone thrown into water before it dissipated. He turned around in surprise as he pointed at where Jackie punched into the air. "It's like ripples in the water when a stone is thrown in."

Jackie nodded. "That's right. This means that the space here is very stable, and the array eye isn't here!"

Nash turned around excitedly at Jackie's words. "So you're actually searching for the array eye?"

Every large array would come with an array eye, which was the core of the arrays. Due to the difference in how the arrays were formed, the usage and strength of the array eyes were different.

Some of The array eyes were the strongest place of an array, but some of them were the weakest spot of a large array. It could even be described as the softest spot of an array. Of course, the Ten Absolutes trap array belonged to the latter.

Jackie frowned as he spoke, albeit confidently so," Normally, the array eyes of trap arrays would be the easiest spot to attack. If I'm able to find the correct place, I'll be able to resolve this huge array despite being weaker compared to the great master."

Nash nodded. "Then how can we be certain that we've found the array eye?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2071-2080

Chapter 2071
Jackie exhaled softly and simply replied, “Fish-scale pattern.”

Despite the simplicity in Jackie’s response, Nash instantly knew what Jackie meant. Jackie was observing how true energy dispersed to search for the array eye. In a stable space, true energy would disperse like rippling water. However, the true energy would disappear with a fish-scale pattern where the array eye was. There was a large difference between both, and they would be able to identify the array eye if they were able to observe carefully.

Nash could not help but lament when he thought of this. “We have the great master for being captured in the Ten Absolutes trap array to thank.”

Jackie also nodded, similarly lamenting as well.” Nonetheless, this Ten Absolutes trap array is considered one of the ancient arrays, and it’s a puzzle as to how this appeared in a third-grade world. I wonder what had transpired that made someone plan a Ten Absolutes trap array here.”

As he spoke, Jackie continuously swung his fists in the air, though the sight of him looked downright ridiculous from a distance. The father-and-son duo spoke softly between themselves for some time.

Jed and the others heard nothing, however. They initially thought that Nash would persuade his son to cease his ridiculous antics, but it surprised them that Nash would only nod at Jackie in their conversation instead. Jed found it hilarious the more he looked at them, having no idea what they were up to.

In fact, he had already given up. After all, they should just wait for their deaths in silence as they would never be able to leave this place alive.

“I’m lucky that I’m still sane. Junior Brother Dwight, if I turn like Jackie and start punching the air, please kill me swiftly. I don’t want to turn into an idiot like him.” Dwight sighed softly. He ignored Jed and stood up from the ground as he walked toward where Jackie was, calling out loudly to him, “What are you doing? Are you planning to find a way to resolve this array by punching the air?”

As he spoke, however, he found himself stepping onto broken bones, and the sound of bones cracking caused Dwight’s heart to sink lower. He subconsciously looked down and was stunned by what he saw. “Senior Brother Jed, come over quickly!” he called out loudly. “Take a look at the clothes he has on him!”

Jed immediately struggled up from the ground as he was called. He looked toward the direction Dwight pointed at and spotted a skeleton with clothes that looked much like theirs. However, the clothes this skeleton had on seemed much more delicate and high -quality compared to theirs.

A few bamboo leaves were sewn on the clothes Jed had on him, and he had nothing else apart from a jade ring pinned on his belt. However, this skeleton had on clothes where bamboo leaves were sewn on most of the areas. On top of that, he also had five bamboo leaves sewn on his belt.

Dwight's eyes widened as his hand raised to cover his mouth slightly. He could barely register the sight." Could this be Elder Gardner?!"

Elder Gardner was a formal elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and was once an all-powerful person in the sect. However, Elder Gardner disappeared for unknown reasons after he arrived at Mount Beasts 100 years ago. At that time, the upper management of the sect sent people to search for him, but Elder Gardner seemed to have disappeared into thin air without leaving a trace.

This event fizzled out eventually. Who would have expected that Elder Gardner had fallen down the Cliff of Sorrow and met his demise in this area.

The two of them inhaled simultaneously, and their expressions mellowed down at the sight. Elder Gardner was an impressively strong person, and it was possible that he was the strongest elder among all the other formal elders. Even he ended his life here, let alone small fries like them.

Chapter 2072
Dwight initially posed his question to Jackie with a mindsight that Jackie had the method to resolve the trap array, but all hopes had left him at this point. What did it matter that Jackie had studied many books when a formidable individual like Elder Gardner had perished in this place? Did Elder Gardner study fewer books and had lesser knowledge compared to Jackie?

Although Jed was a simple-minded person, he realized that Dwight asked the question because he felt that Jackie was searching for ways to resolve the trap array.

Jed smiled bitterly, apathetically, "Are you still placing your hopes on him? You think too highly of him, you know. No matter what, he's only in the initial stage of innate level. How can he find the method to resolve this array when his fighting prowess is lower than ours? Let's just silently wait here for our deaths."

Dwight exhaled deeply. "Don't be so discouraged. Although what you said makes sense, I still think we should give everything a try."

Jed, however, felt like Dwight's pep talk was hilarious. "Try everything, you say? How should we try everything? Should we also punch into the air like a crazy man?!"

Just then, they heard Jackie exclaim, "I found it!"

The two of them immediately raised their heads and looked over. Jackie looked as if he discovered something incredibly priceless in the way his eyes shone brightly, and he even turned to look at his father and pointed excitedly to a

direction in the air. Jed and Dwight had no idea what he was so excited about, but Nash seemed to have understood why Jackie was so excited.

“It’s the fish-scale pattern; no doubt about it!”

As Jackie punched into the air, his true energy appeared in the form of a fish-scale pattern before slowly disappearing into the surrounding space, much to his delight. He threw one more punch, despite his hands trembling, and did not hold back this time. His true energy instantly filled the space like a large bucket of cold water pouring from the sky.

Jackie and Nash’s eyes widened instantly. The true energy collided into the air, and waves after waves of fish-scale patterns were formed before they slowly dispersed into the surrounding space.

“It’s real! We’ve found it! We’ve really found it!” Nash cheered, unable to suppress his surprise laced with disbelief. The entire thing felt so surreal to him from the moment he received the news until this moment when the fish-scale pattern appeared with Jackie’s punches. Nash could barely believe it, even though Jackie mentioned that he had found a solution and declared it to him.

After all, the Ten Absolutes trap array was an ancient trap array and none of those previous great masters were able to escape from this ancient array.

Jackie narrowed his eyes and focused all his attention to the space, which had stabilized, in front of him.” Who would’ve expected for it to be here?” Jackie had assumed it would take a while for him to resolve the Ten Absolutes trap array, even though he knew the method. He had mentally prepared himself that he would be stuck here for a month or two. Luckily, he had sufficient food and some spirited crystals in his storage space. He only had to persist and he would manage to find the location of the array eye.

Those were his thoughts before. Unexpectedly, he found the spot impressively fast!

“What did you guys find?” Jed hurried over to Jackie’s side and looked at the father-son duo in puzzlement. These two just looked peculiar to him, no matter what they said or did.

Jackie lightly exhaled before he turned around to look at Jed and Dwight. “I’ve found a way to resolve this trap array!”

Chapter 2073
Jed slightly raised his brows as irritation visibly flashed past his eyes. He subconsciously scoffed as his initial bewilderment vanished. He turned his head and glanced at Dwight, who was by his side. He saw that Dwight was just as stunned but said nothing as he was well-mannered.

Jed stretched his arm out and pointed behind him, where bones laid scattered across the ground, proving to be an unnerving sight. “Do you know what we discovered just now?”

Jackie shook his head. He had focused all his attention in searching for the array eye and did not pay attention to what the two of them had discovered.

Jed crossed his arms at his chest and shook his head lightly. “We’ve found a formal elder from our Thousand Leaves Pavilion who disappeared for more than a hundred years. Back then, he was strong enough to fight for the position of sect master, but he had disappeared without a trace. Who would’ve expected him to have fallen here.”

Jackie nodded and suddenly frowned. He had no idea why Jed would suddenly shift their topic to talking about their formal elder.

Jed noticed Jackie’s cluelessness, scoffing lightly at his expression as helplessness was plastered on his face. He even had a hint of sympathy in the tone of his voice as he spoke, “I’m just saying, how could you have found a way to resolve the array when our formal elder had died from being trapped here?”

Jackie was only in the initial stage of innate level and was a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. There was a huge difference between third and fourth grade sects. So what if Jackie had more knowledge about things compared to them? Could he be comparable to Elder Gardner from their sect? Such a strong person with a bright future had met his demise in this place.

Dwight shook his head and stretched out his hand to pinch Jed’s shoulder, indicating him to not speak so harshly. After all, they still had to live the rest of their days peacefully. Although they might die here, he did not want to make it difficult to alleviate their relationship.

Of course, Jed was a straightforward person and felt that Jackie’s actions were hilarious and outlandish.

Dwight said, “I know that you’re very confident and you really want to escape from this place, but I’ll have to remind you… Sometimes, our disappointments will be greater as our hopes grow. You shouldn’t overthink it until you experience a mental breakdown.” Dwight was honest in persuading and comforting Jackie.

Jackie’s excited expression was naturally evident in his gaze, and it genuinely looked like he had found the method to resolve the trap array. This was, unfortunately, impossible, and Jackie would soon be disappointed. Such an impact was grave for a person, and Jackie might just lose his mind due to this.

Jed then asked, not thinking twice, “What did you plan to do by punching the air? Are you punching whichever space that you observed to be weak and thin?” In fact, what Jed explained made sense.

Jackie merely nodded slightly at his question, not explaining himself. After all, it was difficult to stop once he started explaining such things as this involved his secret. Some secrets were meant to be kept under lock and key. If others noticed something, he might land himself in a dangerous situation.

Jed did not hide his smile when he saw Jackie nodding rather confidently.

Jed had already accepted his destiny. He could just sit here and wait for the inevitable death-it was not like he could leave anyway. He buried his internal conflict, which was why Jackie's behavior amused him.

Chapter 2074
"I've never seen such a naïve person like you for so many years."

Jackie was still emotionless. He knew what Jed meant, but he had no plans to explain himself. Jed stretched his body before reaching out to grope the air where Jackie threw his punches. There were no changes, and it looked the same as his surroundings-a normal area in this space.

"Stop being so stubborn," said Jed, albeit sympathetically, "there's nothing you can do. I may not know how strong Elder Gardner was years ago, but I'm sure that he's thousands of times stronger than you. He couldn't leave this place, let alone you!"

Jackie merely raised his brows and kept silent.

It seemed to Jed that Jackie had no intention of giving up with the way he reacted. He even suspected that Jackie had gone crazy. He turned around and shrugged at Dwight. "Nevermind, it doesn't matter what we say. This guy has gone nuts!"

Jackie turned around and ignored what both men thought of him. He took a deep breath and continuously performed grayish-black runes with his hands. Strands of flowing light traveled through his fingers, and five soul swords floated in front of him the next second. With a small frown on his face, he clapped, and all five soul swords instantly combined into a bright strand of dark-colored light. The combined soul sword was several times stronger than their previous separated form. This dark colored light rotated crazily mid-air, stirring the surrounding true energy to form a small swirl.

The two others were slightly shocked by Jackie's action. What did he plan to do? Would this guy only quit when he died?

Jackie roared loudly and unleashed his attacks on the area where the fish-scales pattern appeared. A dull yet audible explosion was heard as the Destroying the Void hit the weak array eye harshly.

Crack!

Like clay fresh out of the kiln, dropped onto the floor.

Everyone felt their nerves tighten with a click, and everybody looked to where the sound came over. They were surprised to discover a crack in the air where Jackie hit with his martial skill, much to their surprise.

Jackie did not respond when he saw what happened. He only mumbled to himself while frowning. "The power isn't enough!" He then concentrated his soul sword again and carried out another attack.

Crack! Crack!

The sound akin to vases breaking were heard from the point where Jackie attacked. Three breaths later, the gap gradually grew bigger and broke into pieces with another crack as though unable to withstand the attack.

All jaws hung wide open at the sight, and Jed blurted, “You’ve actually broken the space!” This was all that came to his mind. After all, what he saw was no different from the space broken into pieces.

Jackie inhaled deeply as he focused his bright eyes on the broken space.

The gap he broke was about the size of two fists. The insides of the gap seemed to be darkness—and oddly sticky at that—where nothing would happen even if a breeze blew past it. Jackie inhaled deeply and kept recalling in his mind what the great master did after he broke the space.

Jed and Dwight’s exclaims of sheer surprise kept ringing in his ears.

“How did you do that? You’ve broken the space. Impossible! Anyone who’s capable of breaking the space is an absolute master! Even our sect master is incapable of doing this, let alone you!”

“That’s right! What’s going on?!” Jed was so surprised that he almost bit his tongue, unable to formulate words. This was such a stunning scene.

Even Albion, who had been resting aside with his eyes closed, opened his eyes and looked over in surprise.

Chapter 2075
Jackie rubbed his ear irritably, looking as though he wanted to block off the noise. “Stop speaking-I’ll still test this!” He then stretched out his right hand and looked at the array eye that he had just broken.

Jed and Dwight assumed that Jackie was breaking the surrounding space, but Jackie knew he was not capable of that. Something like that happened because this was the weakest point of the entire array. It was the array eye of the Ten Absolutes trap array!

He held his breath and focused his mind. He stretched his hand out to grab the darkness behind the shattered space while ignoring the yells coming his way.

“Have you gone crazy?!”blurted Jed, nearly yelling.” You don’t even know what’s behind that, and you just stretch out your hand to grab it! Aren’t you afraid that something terrible would happen?!”

Fwoosh!

After Jackie stretched his hand into space, a strong wind blew past them. A second later, a demon from the deepness seemed to have pulled at Jackie's arm, causing him to lurch forward into space, much to everyone's horror.

Everyone was stunned when they saw how Jackie was swept into the darkness, unable to react in time. When they tried to grab him, they only managed to grab the hems of his clothes.

It did not matter how strong they were. The ripping of cloth was heard in Jed's attempt to pull Jackie back, but Jackie had completely disappeared in the darkness behind the shattered space. After what seemed like a gurgling vibration in the dark, the broken space reverted to normalcy alarmingly fast to the naked eye.

Nash's heart dropped when he saw this, but he was petrified where he stood, staring off into the darkness worriedly as he did.

It only took five breaths and the space Jackie shattered had already recovered to how it originally looked. Jed was so frightened that his hands were shaking. "What's going on? Jackie had been pulled inside. Is he dead just like that? What's actually happening?" Jed was stunned and the corners of his mouth trembled continuously as if he were on a jitter machine.

Albion struggled to stand up. His body was weak at this moment, and he swayed as he walked. However, he still braved through it and walked to their side. He saw everything that went down and was just as surprised.

Dwight was stunned as he muttered to himself, "The space was scattered, and Jackie was swallowed in!"

Albion turned around and glanced at Nash, feeling that he had to be feeling conflicted at the moment. As Jackie's father, he should be more worried than them. Despite how worried his gaze seemed, however, Nash remained calm. This meant that he knew what was going on.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Sounds akin to piles of garbage thrown in rang in Jackie's ears, and all the garbage collided with each other, making bursts of noises. Jackie's breathing hastened as he felt the darkness around him intensify. A second later, he felt his feet lighten, as if he had been thrown from mid-air and landing with a thud. Soon, the darkness around him disappeared as he fell to the ground.

Jackie had, in fact, been pulled into the darkness. Despite his wariness, he kept his composure in check, having expected these things. He was bold enough to have done what he did and unscrupulously reached out into the darkness because this was what the previous great master experienced.

He slowly raised his head and noticed that the sun had set. He looked up and saw the afterglow of the setting sun staining the entire sky a crimson color. Was it already this hour of the day?

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2076-2080

Chapter 2076
Despite having been in the dark for some time, it was, in fact, no longer than what was needed to finish a cup of tea. Before Jackie was consumed by the darkness, the sun had hung high in the center of the sky, and the valley was bright as day. He estimated that it should be noon.

However, it was already sunset when he got into this dimension.

It seemed like a few hours had passed in the blink of an eye. Jackie rubbed his sore shoulders and struggled to get up from the ground, only then able to study his surroundings. There were majestic mountains behind him and a flat stony land before him. Mountain ranges laid before his sight.

He should be at the mountain's heel. There was even a gurgling stream in front of him, flowing from west to east.

"Where is this place?"

Jackie stood on his toes as he gazed at the mountain behind him, but all he could see at that moment was a layer of mist that covered the peak of the mountain.

"Is this the Cliff of Sorrow?"

Jackie was unsure of this himself. He knew he had fallen into the Ten Absolute Trap Array after jumping off the Cliff of Sorrow. Eventually, he managed to escape from the array eye of this very trap array.

He had no idea where he was at this moment, however.

Jackie curiously walked a few steps back before a loud thud was heard, and Jackie was knocked a few steps back. The space in front of him was transparent, but there seemed to be a force field in place. He knew right away that although the transparent space behind him looked like nothing, it was within the scope of the Ten Great Array. Nonetheless, the space was concealed by an illusion and looked like there was nothing in that space. None would be able to cross through this barrier nor rescue the people beyond it.

Regardless, Jackie had left the trap array, and his surroundings were very safe. There was a tinge of regret in him that he had left his father behind. Still, he did not regret that entirely, knowing that this was a dangerous place.

Nonetheless, Jackie would be a cold blooded person if he truly ignored the remaining three-Jed, Dwight, and Albion-who were still in the trap array,

Jackie had no idea if he could leave this dimension.

He took a few steps forward before hearing something crunching beneath his feet; it sounded like he had stepped on fallen branches or leaves. Jackie subconsciously lowered his head and realized he had stepped on another skeleton.

Jackie frowned at the sight and stepped back before squatting to have a better look at the bones. The skeleton was dressed in green clothes, and based on the looks of it, this person had died many years ago.

Moreover, this area was right outside the Ten Absolute Trap Array, indirectly proving that this place was an airtight area. Strangely, the green clothes on this skeleton seemed different from the clothes worn by the others deceased in the Ten Absolute Trap Array. The green clothes should have withered in time, seeing as it was exposed for a long period, but the clothes on this specific skeleton showed otherwise.

The clothes looked bright as though they were only worn yesterday.

Stretching out a hand and touching the hem of the clothes, Jackie rubbed on the fabric and noticed that the clothes were made of good quality. Moreover, the outer shirt was not made of ordinary materials at all, seeing as numerous rune spells Jackie could not understand were engraved into the shirt. It might just be a great magic of sorts that shielded the clothes from being ruined by fire and water, however. The clothes might even help resist certain attacks.

The reason Jackie squatted to study the bones carefully was not for the clothes the deceased had, but for their bones instead. The bones seemed to be different from what he had seen in the past covered magic seals engraved with red charms. On top of that, Jackie determined that these were not purposely engraved on the deceased after they had passed. Instead, they just automatically appeared on the bones!

Ordinary people could not have achieved this, no doubt. Something similar had been described in the memories the great master left for Jackie. Some experts who practiced special methods would automatically have rune seals engraved on their bones, ones that could enhance the attack power of a person’s martial skills and even enhance their understanding toward martial arts.

Chapter 2077
This meant that the deceased must have been a powerful expert before his death. He was at least at the level of a great master from a first-grade world powerhouse, much to Jackie’s bewilderment.

There was a serious division based on grading between the worlds. Such great masters could not have appeared in a third-grade world as such power would only be born in first-grade worlds. Together with the Ten Absolute Trap Array behind him, Jackie could not help but wonder what had happened at this place in the past.

“What is this?” Crystals glowing a purplish-red fluorescence color were scattered next to the skeleton. Jackie White looked intently and noticed that the corpse’s right hand was tightly clenched as if holding something tightly. Next to the body’s right hand, two purplish-red fluorescent crystals were scattered on the ground.

Jackie White picked up the smallest crystal and placed it in his palm to observe it up-close. His brows raised as he subconsciously blurted, unaware that his voice was raised, “Is this the Shattered Soul Crystal?!”

Perhaps he was too surprised that he nearly yelled. The Shattered Soul Crystals were one of the best crystal stones as they contained a huge amount of potent soul power. This was one of the rarest and most exotic treasures even in the Divine Void World.

This item was formed under harsh conditions and was considered invaluable even in first-grade worlds! They should not have appeared in third grade worlds. There were two Shattered Soul Crystal where one of them was the size of a palm while the other was only the size of a nail.

Others might sell these Shattered Soul Crystals if they were placed in front of others for large amounts of spirited crystals. After all, the Shattered Soul Crystals contained extremely strong soul power, but martial artists that did not practice martial art technique and martial skills of the soul attribute did not have such a huge demand for this crystal.

To Jackie, however, he felt like a traveler who, on the verge of dying, discovered an oasis when chancing upon these Shattered Soul Crystals. Jackie could not help trembling as he held the Shattered Soul Crystals in his hand, and his eyes gleamed with desire.

All of a sudden, crackling sounds were heard behind him.

Jackie immediately composed himself. He knew that the people on the inside had finally acted. He took a glance and dared not dally, placing the corpse and both pieces of Shattered Soul Crystals into the Mustard Seed.

Swoosh!

Within two breaths, the space in front of him shattered as four figures broke free from the space, landing heavily onto the ground.

Jackie White frowned and immediately came to Nash’s side. He reached out his hand and helped Nash up from the ground while dusting his clothes. Nash nodded and assured him, saying, “I’m fine, don’t worry.”

The reason why Jackie left Nash in the Ten Absolute Trap Array was for Nash to break those inside out into the open. After all, Jackie managed to break through the space not because he was far stronger than the others. Instead, it was because Jackie found the right place to break through.

With Jackie's instruction, Nash knew what to do and where to attack. Jackie was first to leave to scout for possible dangers outside the valley.

Jed fell in an embarrassing manner, his face ramming into a stone and left a cut on his forehead. He coughed as he patted the dust on his body.

Dwight stretched out his hand to help Jed up when h e saw the state Jed was in.

Chapter 2078
Albion was in a better situation compared to the others, having landed steadily on the ground. Although he was still seriously injured and had not healed, he was 30 to 40 percent better than before.

Dwight's eyes were fixated on Jackie as if he had discovered a whole new world.

"How did you find the trap array eye? Your father said that you were able to get out because you found the trap array eye!" Dwight could not suppress his surprise when he spoke. To him, Jackie seemed more capable than ever.

Jed patted the dust off his clothes and exclaimed," You truly have found a way to break the trap array. Prior to that, I thought that you had lost your mind when you said that you could find it!"

Jed was flustered as he recalled how he thought Jackie had lost his mind. He was obviously the one who had no idea what was going on.

Jackie ignored what Jed said and turned to look at Dwight instead.

"Didn't I tell you that I've seen and studied ancient scrolls that contain information about the Ten Absolute Trap Array? They happened to describe the method on how to break through the Ten Absolute Trap Array. All we had to do was just find the trap array eye…"

A calculative gleam flashed through Dwight's eyes, and he wanted to continue asking questions. However, Jackie turned his head away and walked a few steps forward before looking into the distance.

Jed reacted and immediately followed up with a question, "Shouldn't we leave this place as soon as possible?"

In fact, he could not think of anything. Although they got out of the cocoon, it was still a question of whether they could travel far or otherwise. Jackie did not turn back and frowned as he thought about it for a while.

"Let's meditate, adjust our breathing, and recharge our energy. We need to make sure that we recover to our best condition. I think that we might run into those men if we go out now." Jackie was naturally referring to the Corpse Pavilion's disciples. They have seen how Jackie and his company jumped off the cliff and would naturally think they have died. From how empty their surroundings were,

they could guess that nobody would come here under normal circumstances. It was safe to stay in this place for some time.

Jackie raised his head to look at the setting sun and the darkness creeping up the treetops. He reached out and pointed at the remaining red color over the horizon. “Look!”

The others looked in the direction Jackie pointed and watched as the sun began to set. “What? What’s wrong?” asked Jed, puzzled.

Jackie sighed with a trace of hesitation and puzzlement. “Time flies so quickly. It’s two different worlds out here and in there.”

This was a reminder to everybody. They were in the Ten Absolute Trap Array just moments ago and saw how the sun hung high that noon. However, it was already sunset, a time to take out their lamps, when they got out of the valley.

Dwight stood beside Jackie, and his eyes brightened from the red sunset in the sky. “You mean that we’re wrapped in illusions? That whatever we see right now in the visual illusions are all made up?”

Jackie merely looked up ahead. “No. I just feel that the flow of time inside is different from that outside. Look at the bones on the ground. You said that your Elder Gardner had already disappeared for more than a hundred years. Unless he went crazy and killed himself, he would’ve been able to stay inside for a few hundred years with his storage space and high fighting prowess.”

Dwight’s eyes lit up, visibly inspired by what Jackie said. He suddenly turned around and his breath quickened in excitement. “You mean to say that the time inside is flowing several times faster than that on the outside?”

Jackie nodded before he shook his head. “We can’t seem to differentiate anything just by looking at the sun in the sky. However, we know how long we’ve stayed inside. It had only been an hour since we jumped down from the cliff, and it should be around noon time right now. The time inside seems to be right, but the time out here seems to be different.”

Chapter 2079
Dwight gradually realized what was happening after he heard the explanation. Jed, on the other hand, obviously did not understand it. “What does this mean? Does this mean that time flows slower or faster on the inside? If the flow of time is slower, Elder Gardner should still be alive unless he had been driven mad and had chosen to end himself. However, his body had already decayed, and only his bones remained. This indicates that he had died a long time ago, not recently. Doesn’t this prove that the time flowing inside is much faster than outside? The setting sun on the outside proves that the flow of time inside is faster!”

The more Jed spoke, the more confused he became.

Jackie glanced at Jed and said, “Don’t worry about this problem. Let’s meditate and adjust your breathing. It’s easy to get out of this place, but it’ll be difficult to

get out of Mount Beasts. We have no idea what happened to the outside world as we speak."

With that, Jackie ignored the three men and went straight to a patch of fairly flat ground. He then sat down, cross-legged, and began to meditate.

Nash sat right next to Jackie and muttered, "This isn't like you… How many days do you plan to meditate here?

Jackie had mentioned that they had to adjust themselves to be in the best condition. If one did not understand Jackie, what he said would be considered a reasonable move. However, based on Nash's understanding toward Jackie, Jackie was already in his best condition. According to his usual temperament, Jackie was not one to dilly nor dally. At the very least, he should be exploring the outside world.

The corners of Jackie's mouth curled upward as he smiled helplessly. "My father knows me best."

Suddenly, he lowered his voice and spoke, barely audible, "Please cover for me and notify me if something's wrong. I'd like to…absorb something."

The Shattered Soul Crystal contained a large amount of pure soul power and was a great treasure for a person who practiced the soul attribute. It was not rational to break through and absorb the crystals under such circumstances, but Jackie had run out of choices and was willing to take the risks.

Who knew what they would face after they left this place? At this moment, improving his strength was the most advantageous move!

Jackie gave Nash a summary of information on the Shattered Soul Crystal, to which Nash spoke his concerns, saying, "This is a bad idea. Based on what you said, you can't simply absorb a treasure like the Shattered Soul Crystal. Aren't you afraid that the power will make you burst?"

There were tens of thousands of precious treasures across the land, but this did not mean that everyone could break through their realm and become the most powerful master after obtaining such items. Every martial artist had a limit in their tolerance for such breakthroughs.

Exceeding this tolerance limit might burst individuals physically. The Shattered Soul Crystals were considered treasures even in the Divine Void World. Jackie was only in the initial stage of innate level, and absorbing such a treasure might not be a good thing. The more he thought about it, the more Nash grew worried about what Jackie was going to do. He was so worried that he grabbed Jackie's arm.

"Since the precious item is with you and the others have no idea about it, let's wait until we go back before you absorb their power after studying them. We need to at least study through the ancient scripts to see if there's a way to reduce the danger while absorbing the power."

Jackie lightly sighed. “I know what you’re worried about. Please know that I won’t put myself in a dangerous position. I know that it’s impossible to eat a whole cow in a bite. Isn’t there a small piece of Shattered Soul Crystal? It’s only the size of a fingernail, and it’s much easier to absorb that one.”

Nash exhaled deeply as he knew he could not persuade Jackie. This was indeed a helpless move as their future was unknown.

Chapter 2080
The shattered Soul Crystal was an extremely special precious crystal One of its characteristics was that it could not be absorbed slowly. With just a crack, all the energy would gush out of the crystal and would be wasted if it was not immediately absorbed into one’s body. A person might only come into possession with one or two of the Shattered Soul Crystals in their entire life. Wasting such a precious enemy was worse than wasting heavenly objects.

Jackie had gotten rid of his other thoughts at this point. He took the Shattered Soul Crystal out of the Mustard seed and placed it on his palm. The last glow from the sun shone over this purplish-red crystal, exuding an incredibly beautiful gleam. Although the crystals were unable to release brilliant colors, the crystal was soul-absorbingly beautiful.

Jackie exhaled a long sigh of relief and was fully prepared. If other martial artists in the initial stage of the innate level absorbed this Shattered Soul Crystal, they would definitely explode and die without a doubt. After all, the martial art techniques and martial skills they practiced were too low in level, causing them to be unable to withstand such a powerful energy impact.

However, Jackie was different as he practiced the most powerful martial art technique from the Divine Void World. Although the martial skill was incomparable to the martial art technique, they were still in the Heaven level.

Martial skills were different from martial art techniques as there were limits to a person’s fighting prowess when practicing martial skills. However, the martial art techniques were different as there were no limitations to a martial artist’s realm. Together with the fact that Jackie had the support from the great master’s memory and experience, he obtained twice the result with half the effort.

He tightened his right fist and the Shattered Soul Crystal, which was the size of his fingernail, suddenly broke with a loud crack. It sounded like a large hailstone plummeted to the ground. Following the sound was a burst of purplish-golden energy that boiled in Jackie’s palm.

This energy was vast, mysterious, and powerful. Jackie trembled slightly as he clenched his teeth and guided the energy into his body. He started activating the Destroying the Void at the same time.

“What’s wrong with him? It looks like someone’s beaten him badly, and his forehead is covered in sweat. Why does he look so tormented while he’s meditating to recover?” Jed looked at Jackie with a puzzled expression on his face.

At this time, not only did Jackie tremble and shake, but his skin was flushed as if boiling water had been poured over him. The blood circulated rapidly under his skin, driving his heart to beat speedily and thumping like a piling machine.

Everybody was stunned. They could hear his heartbeat, even though they were a few meters away from Jackie. Dwight frowned and looked at Nash. He asked with trembling lips, “Is brother Jackie alright? What’s wrong with him? Has he gone into a bad situation while training?”

It was normal for these two to speak up about their worries. After all, Jackie looked like he had gone terribly crazy. He could not control the energy fluctuations in his body, causing his blood to boil in his body. His heart raced crazily fast, too.

Nash was clearly worried too, but he still had to deal with the rest of them. He slightly cleared his throat and said, “He’s training and wants to improve his strength before we leave this place.”

Jed raised his eyebrows and turned to look at Dwight, who was standing beside him, after they heard what Nash said. When he saw that Dwight also did not believe in the excuse by Nash, he smiled helplessly.” How much of his fighting prowess can he improve within a few days? He shouldn’t forcefully do it if he can’t handle it.”

There were obviously some hidden meanings behind what he said, but Nash just pretended he did not understand any of them and turned to look away. Jed wanted to continue the conversation, but Dwight reached out and stopped him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2081-2090

Chapter 2081

Dwight signaled at Jed with a frown and shook his head softly to stop him from asking questions. To this, Jed shrugged and kept his curiosity aside. At this time, Jackie was in no capacity to care about what the people around him were talking about. He focused all his concentration on the energy that he had just absorbed. The powerful soul power washed through his meridians, and immense pain spread throughout his entire body.

Although the Shattered Soul Crystal was a precious treasure, it contained a great amount of energy. The energy was so strong that it felt like a road roller constantly compressed his meridians. Jackie's meridians were relatively strong, but he gradually grew weaker after enduring the continuous impart and was unable to take it anymore. He sighed deeply and continuously performed the seal with his hands, wanting to form the sixth soul sword by utilizing this energy.

He ignored the thoughts of everyone around him. One by one, strands of dark-colored light appeared In his palms. These strands of light condensed into black runes in mid-air, and they twisted and rotated as if they were about to form a painting.

With the support of such powerful soul power, it was much simpler to form the soul swords. The great master was able to form the soul swords several hundred times faster than Jackie because he had the support of strong soul power and was able to use that power to form the sword as he wished.

Everyone watched as Jackie continuously flipped his palms. His hands moved faster and faster until only shadows of his hands were left. Within several breaths, the sixth soul sword was completed. Jackie ignored the condition of his body and continued. He immediately plunged into forming the seventh soul sword.

Everybody stared at him, especially Jed and the rest. Jed looked left and right in puzzlement as he tried to make sense of what was going on by looking at the others' reactions. Alas, everyone else was just as clueless, with doubt painting their expressions, and they could not even hide it.

They had no idea what Jackie was doing. What was he practicing? Why were his hands so grandiose in the way they moved?

Dwight's frown never left his face. He lowered his voice and said, "What is he doing? Is he practicing powerful martial skills?"

Jed initially nodded before he shook his head. "What martial skills can he practice when he's only in the initial stage of the innate level? He's probably bluffing, who knows."

Dwight leaned back, but his eyes never left Jackie." Ordinary people might be restrained by their realms when practicing martial skills, but Jackie seems to be extraordinary. Look at what happened just now. The two of us thought that he wouldn't be able to break through the trap array, but he still managed it."

Jed glanced at Dwight. "This is different from finding a way to get out of the trap array. If he's so talented, he would've been accepted as one of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciples. Why did he go to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion instead? Let's not stretch it out too much."

Dwight stopped speaking, and one after another, the possibilities flashed through his mind just like what Jed said, practicing martial skills was different from thinking of a way to break out of the trap array. Practicing martial skills was an extremely difficult task.

It was extremely difficult for a person in the initial stage of the innate level to practice martial skills of the Earth level! Even disciples in the fifth-grade sects could not achieve this, let alone this young man who was from a third grade sect. However, the things happening to him were too grand to ignore.

As Jackie continued absorbing the surrounding energy into his body, Dwight truly wondered to himself if Jackie was truly practicing an Earth-level martial skill.

Chapter 2082
In fact, Dwight did not know that the limitation on the realms had no effect on Jackie because Jackie had absorbed the memories of the great master. Not only did he know what the great master knew, but he also inherited the great master's various experiences with these things aiding him. Jackie had no limitation when he practiced martial skills.

As time passed, Albion, Dwight, and the others only saw hot sweat trickling down Jackie's forehead like a waterfall that burst through its bank. They could not help but brown when they saw this just like that, a day and a night had gone by when Jackie finally succeeded in forming the tenth soulsword. Jackie had finally entered the level of proficiency.

No matter what martial skill a martial artist was practicing, they were separated into three stages: preliminary, proficient, and perfection. Jackie's success in forming ten soul swords meant that he had completely entered the level of proficiency.

Jackie wanted to achieve perfection, he had to form so many more soul swords. At that moment, he required a lot of time to settle down to achieve that. When Jackie opened his eyes again, it was already sunrise on the third day. This meant that he had been practicing for one and a half days. He was slightly more relaxed when he saw how the sunlight shone over the land.

Jackie had successfully absorbed most of the energy from the Shattered Soul Crystal, and the remaining 30 to 40 percent of the power had been stored in his body. Although the crystal was only the size of a fingernail, the power could not be underestimated. if he did not use all the soul power in forming the soul swords, Jackie would have burst and died from the high amount of power.

Nash stretched out his hand and placed a white towel in Jackie's hands. "Go and wipe yourself dry." Nash's voice was slightly hoarse in sheer worry for his son. After all, Jackie was in so much pain from his meridians being crushed by the soul power that his entire body quaked Seeing Jackie in such a state worried Nash immensely.

Jackie quickly nodded. He was so dirty as he had been covered in dust blown by the wind and had been sweating. His biggest wish right now was to find a clean stream to take a bath. He exhaled a relaxing breath and finally stood up from the ground. As he had been meditating for a long period and his body was in a stiff position, his joints audibly popped the moment he stood up.

At this moment, Jed could not help but say, "Brother Jackie, what were you doing just now? Were you practicing some extremely powerful martial skill or martial art technique? You've caused quite a huge accommodation…"

Jackie glanced at Jed and simply replied, "I just wanted to use my time to quickly improve my strength." This was such an obvious and stiff prevarication, but Jed also understood that this was Jackie's private matter. He would seem impolite if he continued to pester Jackie for answers when Jackie was obviously unwilling to speak more about it. Hence, Jed ceased his questioning.

Jackie turned around to look at the gravel road in front of him. The gravel traveled from west to east, and he wondered if they were able to walk out of this valley following this road.

"Let's go. We've stayed here for a long time already." The others were speechless when they heard what Jackie said. The corners of Jed's mouth twitched, not knowing what to say to that. He felt that this person was not strong, but he was secretly thinking about himself as the leader of the team. He started training or leaving after mentioning it and did not take their opinions seriously.

Jed coughed softly. "My Senior Brother Albion hasn't healed from his injuries. What should we do if we go out abruptly and face any danger?"

Chapter 2083
Jackie turned around and walked toward Albion without any hesitation. He stretched out his hand and placed it on Albion's wrist.

Jackie did not know much, but he was capable of judging Albion's injuries through his meridians. Albion had recovered 40 to 50 percent already, but he would need a couple of months if he wanted to be completely healed.

Jackie did not want to waste those couple of months In this place. Jackie glanced past Jed and stared straight at Dwight, who stood behind Jed. "Your Senior Brother Albion's wounds have stabilized, and he's forty to fifty percent recovered. However, apart from time, he needs a peaceful environment if he wishes to be seventy to eighty percent recovered. Even if we continue to stay here for another month or two, nothing will change, and your senior brother will only have a fifty to sixty percent recovery. What we should do is think of a way to leave this place and cure your senior brother after that."

Dwight exhaled softly and felt that what Jackie said made sense when he thought about it. Senior Brother Albion needed the help of other pills and herbs to have a recovery rate of 70 to 80 percent. However, they had already used all the pills and herbs they have on Albion, and none remained. If they stayed here, it would hinder Senior Brother Albion's recovery.

Dwight stretched his legs and stood up from the ground when he had made up his mind. He patted the dust off of his body and picked the broken leaves off his arm before speaking without looking up." You're right. It's a waste of time to continue lurking here. Let's think of a way to leave this place."

Jed's expression faltered upon hearing this, but all he could do was hide his anger, unable to directly refute Dwight.

They did not delay their actions after they decided what to do next. For everybody's safety, Dwight led the pack to check the path for everybody else while the others followed behind him. There was a stream flowing beside the gravel path. They just walked outward following the direction of the stream flowing. In fact, none of them were able to tell where they were or which way they should go; they could only march on.

Albion, on the other hand, could walk on his own without the support of others. Although it was slightly tiring, it did not affect his wounds. Jed walked beside Albion. As Dwight had gone checking the path for everybody, Jed could only mention his worries to Albion. "Do you think that we'll bump into the Corpse Pavilion's disciples? What do we do if we do? What shall we do if the trap array hasn't been resolved?"

He did not forget that those lunatics from the Corpse Pavilion had secluded Mount Beasts and set up a trap array. Even if they did not run into any of the Corpse Pavilion's disciples, they would also face the issue of the trap array. He had no idea if Jackie would be able to find the array eye this time.

Albion sighed helplessly and glanced at Jackie, who was walking right in front of him. "I have no idea; guess we'll only have to wait and see. To be honest, I feel that we're taking a risk by going out at this moment. Nonetheless, it's a waste of time if we stay here for a long time. We can only try our luck and circle back if it doesn't work."

The grass under their feet was soft. The situation seemed to be extremely peaceful as the birds' chirping and sounds made by other small animals traveled to their ears. However, none of them let their guard down, knowing very well that none of them knew what they would face the next second.

Right at this moment, Dwight, who had been checking the path for everybody ahead of them, suddenly turned around and came running back. His darkened expression obviously meant that he had encountered something bad.

Jackie immediately stretched out his hand to shield Nash behind him as his eyes stared at the space behind Dwight.

Sure enough, a familiar voice entered their ears within two breaths. “It’s you! How are you guys still alive? Was the trap array at the bottom undeserving of its reputation?!”

Chapter 2084
The man with a pointy chin showed up in front of Jackie with three Corpse Pavillion’s disciples behind him. Luckily, the masked man was nowhere to be seen. The man with a pointy chin had been the one following the masked man previously, providing the masked man with ideas as he bad mouthed about them.

Who would have expected to bump into them not long after they left the valley?

Senior Brother Robin Mullins, are these the people our eldest senior brother is hunting.

Jackie raised his brows. So, this man’s name was Robin Mullins. Under normal circumstances, nobody would address their clan brothers with their full name unless this person’s surname was everywhere, Their name might be easily confused with other clan brothers unless they addressed him with his full name.

Robin had a sharp chin and looked like a treacherous court official, good at flattering others. Robin narrowed his eyes as he sized up Jackie and the others, seemingly trying to spot some great secrets from them.

Robin laughed coldly, shrugging as he said, “We can’t let them escape. I’ve never heard about anybody coming out of the legend under the Cliff of Sorrow, but these people had actually made it out. They probably know something very important.”

Robin suddenly turned around and looked to those three people behind him. Those three looked alike and were obviously brothers. “Derek Roffe, you’ll go to the left, and Dudley Roffe to the right. Damian Roffe, you’ll remain in the center with me.”

With that said, the four of them manage to surround Jackie and the rest in the middle. It looked like they planned to make Jackie and the others stay, not allowing any of them to escape.

Jed and the others turned pale. He immediately turned toward Dwight and barked, “What’s going on with you? How could you lead them here? How did they discover you?”

Dwight’s complexion darkened when he heard what Jed said. He turned around and glared at Jed angrily.” What’s this about? You speak as if I purposely led them here. I have no idea how they discovered me. That Derek guy discovered me when I was checking the path ahead of us.”

Dwight was slightly flushed, whether it be out of shame or frustration. He did not even lower his voice, causing the four men standing opposite them to hear his words, too.

Derek sneered and stared at Dwight with a mocking expression on his face. “Stop embarrassing yourself in front of us. You’re a Jackie of all trades but a master of none. You must’ve practiced a martial skill to hide your figure. Unfortunately, the martial skill you practice means nothing to me. In the entire Corpse Pavilion, nobody from the formal and informal disciples have better hiding and exploration abilities than me. You’ll only make a joke out of yourself by showing yourself up to me.”

Dwight flushed a crimson color, but he was unable to come up with any refutable words. From the looks of It, Derek was definitely stronger than him, or he would not have easily discovered how he hid himself.

However, Derek suggested to Robin, “Senior Brother Robin Mullins, should we send a signal to our eldest senior brother—”

Unexpectedly, Robin’s once prideful expression turned cold upon hearing this, like a wave of cold wind in December. He stared daggers, and Derek was startled by Robin’s reaction.

Robin sneered. “Hey, why aren’t you this foolish any other day? Did you not hear what I said just now? The five of them have great secrets! What can we get If we report to the eldest senior brother about this? We wouldn’t even get the scraps, let alone the main dish.”

Chapter 2085
Derek had an immediate realization when he heard this. He stretched out his hand and slapped himself instantly. Of course, his slap was nowhere harsh; it was out of realization, too. A smile crawled to his face. “Agh, what a fool I am! You’re right. If news about this gets out, it won’t benefit us at all. These people aren’t strong, and we alone will be sufficient in handling them.”

Dudley and Damian jumped on the bandwagon and said flattering words, much to Robin’s pleasure. His cold expression was nowhere to be seen after that. You guys are thinking of notifying the eldest senior brother when these are just a couple of losers. The eldest senior brother will say we’re losers if we trouble him with this. Three of them are in the final stage of the innate level while the other one is in the initial stage, and another useless one who’s in the acquired level. On top of that, one of them in the final stage of the innate level was badly wounded previously. Even if there were only three of us, they’re no match for us!”

All four of them were in the final stage of innate level, especially Robin, who was about to break through into the spring solidifying realm. These people laid out their plan without even making it discreet, thinking as though Jackie and his company were like slabs of meat on a chopping board.

Although Jed was extremely furious when he heard what they said, he could not refute it, anyway. These men had a point: they were no match for Robin and his team. They were considered weak soldiers, too.

Jed inhaled deeply and could not help but take a couple of steps back. He stretched out his hand to grab Albion’s arm. Senior Brother Albion, we need to retreat. I don’t know if we can get rid of them, though.”

A bitter smile appeared on Albion's face. "How's that possible? On top of that do you think that they'd allow us to escape? We've escaped the tiger's den just to enter the wolves' territory. It looks like we're fated to die." Albion would never say such discouraging words under normal circumstances. However, the continuous problems had caused him to slowly lose his will to fight. Together with the fact that he had not recovered from his wounds, he became disheartened.

Despite keeping their voices hushed, Robin saw through their thoughts and laughed maniacally at them. "Are you guys thinking of escaping? Do you think you guys can do that? The combat power of your team combined is only two people in the final stage of the innate level. You guys are fated to die if you plan to fight the four of us!" Robin grew increasingly excited as he spoke, and his smile grew wider.

Jed's expression faltered. "We're done for, this time. I'll never leave Senior Brother Albion and escape on my own!"

Dwight rolled his eyes at Jed. "What do you mean when you say this? You sound like I'd leave our senior brother here and escape alone! I won't escape on my own; we'll die together if that's our fate. It's just quite unfortunate… After all, we've just escaped from the Ten Absolutes Trap Array, and we even thought that peace was at hand. Who would have expected…"

Jed tightened his fists and raised his head to look at Jackie. "We shouldn't have left the place as this place Is filled with danger. We should've waited inside for a couple of months until the masters of our sect broke the trap array and got rid of these asses. We would've been safe by then!" He was obviously complaining about Jackie's idea, and Jackie could tell what he really meant. He was not a fool.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2086-2090

Chapter 2086

Jackie replied without turning around to look at them, "So, do you think that we should have chosen to stay inside instead? That way, we would not have suffered any losses, right?" There was no change in Jackie's expression when he spoke but anybody smart enough could hear the anger in Jackie's words. Jed was quick to judge. He was full of praises when things were going smoothly but he was not one to hold back judgment whenever something bad was happening.

Jed dared not raise his head to look at Jackie. However, there was a hint of not being convinced in his lowered eyes. "I did not say so. I just feel that we came out in a hurry. If we were able to stay inside for a couple more days, such issues would not have happened."

Jackie humphed lightly and he continued to stare forward with his eagle-like eyes. "Then why didn't you say this earlier on? You kept quiet previously but you speak more than anybody else when something has happened." Jackie had never

been somebody who liked to talk. However, this did not mean that he would allow others to accuse him as they wished to.

Jed's facial expression mellowed and he wanted to refute Jackie. However, Dwight could not endure this anymore and said, "You should shut up. What's the use of saying such things when we're already in this situation."

Jed was so angry that his lips were trembling. He glared at Dwight's stressed expression with an accusatory look in his eyes. He was angry at Dwight for scolding him on behalf of an outsider. Dwight was in no mood to acknowledge what Jed was thinking about. Right now, they might be facing the most dangerous situation of their lifetime.

They did not lower their voices as they fought and Robin heard every word they said. The smile on his face grew and he thought how fun the situation before his eyes was. Robin narrowed his eyes as he sized Jackie up and said, "Young man, you don't seem to be worried. Aren't you afraid that we will cut you people into pieces later? You might not know what sort of a sect our Corpse Pavilion is. Shall I explain our sect to you?"

What Robin said was filled with ridicule yet Jackie did not even look up when he heard this. There was no need for any explanation as to what sort of a sect the Corpse Pavilion was, the name was self-explanatory. They were definitely a bunch of vicious and merciless people who practiced black martial arts. In fact, Robin said this to inform Jackie that they would not kill Jackie and the rest easily. They plan to torture these people until they get their hands on everything Jackie and the rest knew.

It was known when the wind started blowing and the breeze swept past Jackie's sideburns. Strands of Jackie's hair were sticking on his cheek. There were no changes in Jackie's expression even though Robin said some threatening words. He turned around and glanced at the four people beside him. He did some calculations and said in a serious tone, "Brother Dwight and Jed, can the two of you help to pin those three down with the help of Brother Albion? There won't be any need for my father as his strength is incomparable to a single blow from these people."

The others were stunned when they heard what Jackie said. Everybody looked at Jackie with puzzled expressions on their faces. Robin sneered and stared at Jackie as if he was a fool. "You asked them to pin those down… Do you think you can get rid of one of me fast enough to free up your hands to fight the others?"

The more Robin thought about it, the funnier he felt Jackie was. Who did he think he was? He was just a martial artist in the initial stage of the innate level yet he dared to say such raving words. Did he hit his head somewhere or had he just woken up and was not in his right mind. Although Dwight thought of Jackie differently, the corners of his mouth also twitched when he heard this. He did not know how to respond at that moment.

Chapter 2087
In the end, Albion was the one who spoke. He lowered his voice and spoke as he narrowed his eyes. “Brother Jackie, what do you mean by saying that?

Jackie raised his eyebrows and did not plan to continue wasting time talking to them. He replied confidently, “Leave that guy in the middle to me and you guys can focus on holding the others off.” Jackie pointed at Robin, who stood in the middle. His lengthy finger shone under the remaining light from the sun and looked powerful instead of showing off its delicateness.

Robin almost wondered if he had been experiencing hallucinations. If not, how did this guy dare say such absurd words? He was actually daring enough to challenge Robin for a duel. A person in the initial stage of innate level with clothes that obviously indicated his position as a disciple in a third-grade sect was actually daring enough to challenge him, someone, who was in the final stage of the innate level. On top of that, he was already in the completion stage of his innate level and was about to break through into the spring-solidifying realm after some time!

Derek laughed so loudly that he was unable to stand up straight. He pointed at Jackie and said, “Young man, have you gone crazy? How dare you challenge our senior brother in a one-on-one duel! Who gave you the courage to do that? Open your eyes and take a closer look! My Senior Brother Robin is in the final stage of the innate level. He’s capable of defeating you single-handedly. Do you even think that you can defeat him within a short period of time before coming at us? I’ve seen some idiots throughout the years but this is the first time I’ve seen someone as bad as you!”

Dwight subconsciously exchanged glances with Albion. In Dwight’s opinion, what Jackie said sounded ridiculous and he felt that Jackie had gone crazy. Dwight had unexplainable confidence toward Jackie because of how they managed to get out of the Ten Absolutes Trap Array depending on Jackie. However, there was not any basis for him to place his confidence in Jackie under such circumstances.

Albion exhaled deeply as a darkened expression appeared on his face. He was thinking that their best bet right now was to let everybody get a chance at escaping. Staying back to fight those four seemed like a suicidal move.

Chapter 2088
He did not want all his clan brothers to die here, but when Jackie said those words, both his expression and tone were calm. An unspeakable self-confidence filled his heart, and Albion could not help but wonder if Jackie really possessed this kind of power.

After thinking for a long time, he finally decided to open his mouth. His voice was a little low but had an unquestionable tone to it. “We can do it but can you?”

Jed’s hair stood on end when he heard the question, He turned to Albion and said, “Brother Albion, don’t tell me you’re seriously considering it? What is there except for death if we go head-on against those four who are in the final stage of innate level? Didn’t you hear Robin when he said he will torture us? Everyone will eventually die but I want to die with dignity, not this way!”

Albion stopped his nagging with a wave of his hand. He took a deep breath and then said, “I don’t actually know what to do. The best thing to do now is of course to retreat but do you think we can? We might end up dead anyways…”

Robin and the rest of them patiently waited for their unending conversation to finish. They did not mind watching them struggle since they were like fishes in a barrel right now. This would only make what was going to happen next more enjoyable for them. They all loved to watch their prey put up a final resistance.

Jed threw up his hands in frustration. “You’re all mad! One mad person is enough and yet all of you chose to follow this mad person!”

Dwight frowned, stretched out his hand to grab Jed’s arm, and pull him behind. “Keep your mouth shut from now on. Can you do something other than nagging?” He really wanted to warn Jed that previously, they had treated Jackie with the same attitude, and yet he was the one who saved them in the end. Although Dwight did not believe that Jackie could create another miracle as it was not possible, it was still better than nothing.

Jackie nodded and turned toward Robin again. “Don’t let any of them escape. Spare no one.” The words came out steadily from his lips.

Robin laughed wildly when he heard those words. He thought that Jackie was an interesting soul. Those lines should be uttered by Robin. Did Jackie think that by saying that, he would let them go?

Derek looked at Jackie as if he was stupid. “To be honest, I have seen a lot of fools over the years, but I must say that you take the cake!”

Jackie scoffed and winked at Nash, who then nodded and quickly hid behind a thick tree. Robin and the other three would be suspicious if anyone other than Nash did that but they ignored him since he was the weakest of them all. To them, those in the final stage of acquired level were like ants that could easily be killed with a stomp.

Jackie took a step forward and stretched out his hand to take out ten gray-black daggers from the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship. These ten gray-black daggers floated in front of him and were radiating a grayblack glow.

Seeing this, Robin and the others widened their eyes. Robin sneered and said, “Looks like you’re really going to take us on! Your courage is commendable, boy!”

Jackie said nothing. With a flick of his wrists, rays of gray-black light flowed from his palms. Under these circumstances, actions speak louder than words.

Chapter 2089
Robin smiled so much that the corners of his lips touched his ears. He winked at the people behind him, and the three brothers stepped forward to face Jed and the others. It looked as if they were there to prevent them from escaping,

Robin cracked his neck and shook his wrist; the joints made a crackling sound. “Okay! Since you want to fight with me so much, I will show you the true meaning of power!

After saying this, he felt that he was making a fuss out of nothing. He turned to the three brothers behind him and said, “You guys make sure those three don’t run away. I’ll take down this kid single handedly. I’m not taking this seriously of course, but this kid must be taught a lesson!”

Immediately, a golden light flashed in Robin’s hand, and a five-feet-long staff appeared in his palm out of thin air. The five-feet-long staff exuded bright golden light and there were mysterious and antiquated runes carved all over it.

His choice of weapon surprised Jackie. After all, he did not look like a power type of cultivator. Generally, cultivators who use staff win by strength, and their cultivation techniques and martial skills are also power-oriented.

Robin swept the long staff forward, and the ground was marked with an arc. “The martial skill He practice is the intermediate red level earth mountain staff technique. It’s been a long time since I have come across an opponent like you so I will use this technique to teach you the right way to live!”

Another intermediate red level technique?’ Jackie thought that Robin’s technique would at least be in the premium range. After all, Wesley was only an intermediate stage of innate level and his attainment was already an intermediate red level technique.

Robin, who was hellbent on torturing Jackie, did not say anything further and pointed his long staff at Jackie. The golden light undulated around the long staff like waves. With a low shout, he charged toward Jackie.

He lifted his long staff with golden light and smashed it toward Jackie. The stick carried the force of the mountains and rivers. Even from some distance away, Jed and others could feel the force of the earth mountain.

Jed gulped and said, “The force is so powerful that even I would not be able to withstand it.”

In an instant, the long staff appeared in front of Jackie, who was steadily moving his hands through the gray light then distorted runes began to float out of his palm. In an instant, the ten Soul Swords were injected by him into the gray-black daggers suspended in the air. With the Soul Swords attached to the daggers, it was as if the daggers had been infused with a soul and they immediately converged together.

Five gray-black daggers met against the long staff head-on as soon as it came smashing down and the gray-black light and the golden dazzling long staff slammed together. The energy from the two weapons collided together and the gray-black daggers did not retreat in the slightest, nor was it smashed into pieces by the staff.

Seeing this, Robin stiffened. His eyes widened with disbelief. While it was true he did not exert his full power just now, he did, however, used quite a lot of it to make it a speedy battle. It never crossed his mind that Jackie would be able to neutralize his attack and it destabilized him a little. He gritted his teeth and raised his staff for another attack.

Chapter 2090
Jackie arched his eyebrow He quickly put some distance between Robin and himself his opponent was a melee fighter while Jackie was better at long range fighting so he would be safe as long as he did not get too close to Robin

He quickly performed some hand seals again and the ten black daggers who were still suspended mid air parried with Robin's long staff. The golden light and gray-black light collided with each other once again. This time Jackie used six gray black daggers, putting him on even ground with Robin

Robin was breathing heavily and his face was flushed. He was feeling angrier than ever. His hands trembled as he looked at Jackie with gritted teeth. He swung his staff to attack again, but all of his attacks were neutralized within a few seconds by the grayblack daggers

He became more and more shocked whenever his attack was blocked by the gray-black daggers. He was not the only one as the others were also watching with eyes wide open as if they had seen a ghost.

The corners of Jed's lips began to twitch. "Pinch me, Brother Dwight. Am I dreaming? How is it possible that Jackie is on par with Robin? They had been going at it for quite some time. Is this really happening? I'm not dreaming, right?" His pupils were unsteady a she said this

Dwight puffed out some air and said, "It just showed that there's a lot of things we don't know in the world."

All this while, Jackie maintained some distance away from Robin, who was trying desperately to break through the barrier made of the ten gray-black daggers. However, he discovered that the barrier was like a sticky spider web and the long staff in his hand was like a tiny bug. The ten gray-black daggers worked with each other and the stronger the staff became, the more daggers would come out. In the beginning, there were only five daggers, then seven, and now there were eight daggers blocking his path.

It seemed like no matter how powerful he was, he would not be able to break away from the web made up of the gray-black daggers. Robin's hands trembled slightly as he stared at Jackie vehemently and thought to himself, 'So this is why he was so confident. He still had a few tricks up his sleeves.

Robin narrowed his eyes and said, "You surprised me but do you really think you can suppress me with your little tricks? Though my technique is only of the intermediate red level, I've already cultivated it to perfection!

Hearing this, the eyes of everyone present snapped wide open. The fact that Robin cultivated his technique to perfection alone proved that he possessed immense talent. Jed and Dwight glanced at each other, and both saw a hint of helplessness in each other's eyes. Although their level had broken through to the final stage of innate level, their martial art techniques remained at the proficient level.

Derek and his two brothers were looking at Jackie fearfully which was a huge contrast to how they were looking at him before. They were sure that the power he had conjured up so far could defeat them three easily.

Robin scoffed and said, "I admit that you're quite talented but it's still not enough to defeat me! Let's end this now!" The way he uttered those words was as if he had not used his full power in the fight before but judging from everyone's looks, they did not believe him one bit.

Robin then exhaled deeply and forced himself to calm down.



No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2091-2100

Chapter 2091
He clenched his staff tighter and began to infuse his true energy into it. The runes, from one end to the other, began to glow brightly. He then performed hand seals with his right hand.

A non-human roar erupted out of his mouth as he unleashed balls of golden light, similar to those of fireflies, which then condensed behind his back. In a second, the golden lights took on the form of a gorilla with sharp fangs. Its lightbulb-like eyes shone brightly on everyone, making them dizzy. The light-gorilla stared vehemently at Jackie as if wanting to swallow him whole.

In the end, Robin had been forced into using his most powerful technique. “This technique could only be used after I have cultivated the earth mountain staff technique to the perfection level. Many people have died from this technique and soon you’ll be one of them!”

His face then contorted savagely as he charged toward Jackie. The light-gorilla behind him roared as he charged toward Jackie too. Along the way, the light -gorilla slowly merged with the staff on Robin’s hand, and there was no doubt that this was his most powerful condition.

Everyone gasped when they saw this. The force alone was enough to suppress everyone present. They started to wonder what would happen to them if they were in Jackie’s shoes. After thinking about it, they shook their heads internally-they were sure that Jackie would lose and end up severely injured.

Which meant that Jed and the others would also die then. Thinking of this, Jed’s face became pale as a ghost and he subconsciously held onto Dwight’s elbow. Dwight’s face was similar to Jed’s and they were both praying for Jackie’s safety. At least, that way, they could come up with another plan.

Derek and his two brothers were so excited that they nearly drooled. Dudley was even waving his arms up In the air as he shouted, “Kill him, Brother Robin! Or at least make him a cripple!”

Jackie took a deep breath. He had expected this. He put his palms together and the ten gray-black daggers flew back to where he was. He summoned nine Soul Swords back and they immediately unattached themselves from the floating daggers.

Another round of hand seals and the tenth Soul Swords attached themselves to the remaining black dagger and countless runes started to circulate around it. Infused with the power of ten Soul Swords, it unleashed a dazzling black light with the power to devour everything in its path.

Jackie had cultivated Destroying the Void to the level of preliminary and could freely manipulate the Soul Sword to merge or unmerge as he pleased. The merging of all ten Soul Swords into one dagger was his most powerful attack.

A strong wind blew by, and golden light filled Jackie's pupils. The staff had already come smashing down and Jackie quickly performed another hand seal to manipulate the gray-black dagger to block it.

The two tyrannical energies collided together again, and instantly wave after wave of energy shock waves swept around, kicking up dust all over the ground.

Chapter 2092
Dwight and the others immediately retreated and at the same time used their true energy to block the shock waves. Jed wrinkled his eyebrows and his face became pale when he heard the clicking sound coming from his attached spirit. He could not believe that the shock wave from a technique alone could shatter his attached spirit. Fortunately, the shock waves did not last long and soon dissipated.

A scream broke the silence. A figure was retreating from the center of the energy impact, followed by a gray-black dagger. The gray-black dagger was moving extremely fast. It was so fast that it seemed to have teleported to where Robin was in a blink of an eye.

All the colors drained out of Robin's face. He tried to block it with his staff but the gray-black dagger dodged it effortlessly and immediately sank itself into Robin's stomach. The pain that followed felt like his flesh was being eaten by the poison.

"How could this be!" shouted Robin. He was both shocked and furious. Never in a million years would he think that his most powerful attack would be defeated by a dagger. The dagger was less than a palm's length while his staff was five-feet-long for crying out loud. He had no idea why all his techniques were useless against the dagger.

What was worse was the dagger not only damaged his physical body but his soul as well! He could feel his soul hurting and this made him tremble nonstop. It was as if a million ants were biting on his soul.

Pull it out! Pull it out now!" screamed Robin as he collapsed heavily to the ground. He tried to pull out the dagger but he discovered that the pain in his soul became even more intensified as soon as he tried to do that. The pain ate away all his courage and the only thing he could do now was to beg Jackie for mercy.

Everyone gasped and their jaws nearly dropped to the ground. They could not believe what was happening. There was no way that Robin's most powerful attack was no match for Jackie's. They thought that Jackie's fate was sealed before the fight even began but in the end, the person who should have won was lying on the ground, heavily injured. They were so shocked that they forgot to breathe.

Jed's lips turned white. He was shocked to the extent that he forgot how to blink. He stared fixedly at the scene before him and saw that Robin was rolling on the ground with pain as if he was a stray dog nobody wanted.

Jed took a deep breath and in a shaky voice said, "Is this really happening? But he's only at an initial stage of innate level while Robin is at the final stage of innate level. Not to mention, his intermediate red level is at the perfection level. Not to mention, we are no match for him, and yet this kid. He could not go on because his throat had gone dry."

Albion felt that he had seen one miracle after another ever since he met Jackie, who had surely opened up a whole new world for them. He used his divine senses to check Jackie's cultivation again and came to the same result. Jackie was indeed an initial stage of innate level but then how did he manage to conjure up such a powerful attack? Could it be that he had attained an earth-level technique and cultivated it to the perfection level? Even so, that would still not explain it…unless he had a heaven level technique!

Chapter 2093
Albion nearly bit his own tongue when the thought flashed across his mind. 'No way! How can a kid who is at the initial stage of innate level be capable of using a heaven level technique!'

Even the immensely talented clan brothers he knew of could not cultivate heaven level techniques as they had not broken through their main levels. What Jackie did was akin to being accepted to a university with his elementary school's result!

Jackie was capable of that because of the memories and experience left by Senior. What he had gotten from the Senior was a thousand times better than being trained by an elder personally.

"How did he do it? Can anyone tell me how he did It?" muttered Albion to himself. The more he thought about it, the more unbelievable he found the whole thing to be and this made his brain hurt.

Dwight could not even find the words to describe his feelings. He had thought Jackie to be exceptional but judging by the looks of it, that word was truly an understatement of the day. Jackie must be a monster! Only a monster could cultivate an earth level technique at the initial stage of innate level.

The three Roffe brothers were breathing haggardly while chills ran up their spine. They were looking at Jackie as if he was the devil himself. Although their combined power would be able to take down Robin, individually, they were no match for him so how was it possible for him to lose at the hand of Jackie?

Now, even with their combined power, they were not so sure whether they could take Jackie down. The more they thought about it, the more terrifying they found Jackie to be. They thought this was a simple cat and mouse game but it turned out that the mouse was actually a lion!

Both Derek and Dudley took a step back instinctively and when Damian saw his two brothers were scared shitless, he, too, quickly stepped back.

Jackie arched his eyebrow and stared at the three brothers with cold eyes. “Don’t think I have forgotten about you three!”

Everyone snapped out of their trance after he said that. They thought he was being arrogant and delusional to utter those words but it was only then that they realized he had the power to back up his words.

Derek shuddered and his words ran over each other as he said, “You’re a monster! A devil! I have never come across an initial stage or innate level as powerful as you! Even Brother Robin was not as strong as you when he was at that stage…”

He was not trying to compliment him but rather stating the fact.

Jackie chuckled and said breezily, “There’s a high chance I’ll be dead meat if you four attacked me at the same time but instead Robin decided to fight me on his own. I’m sorry but I can’t let the three of you go just like this. Who knows what will happen to us if I do that.”

Jackie’s words were like a curse to them. With trembling hands, Derek took out a long sword from his storage space and pointed it at Jackie, letting him know that he would not be going down without a fight.

“Let us go and we won’t tell anyone about this. If you don’t, we’ll make sure to fight you to the death.” The three brothers had no spare thought to give to the severely injured Robin. All they could think about was how to get away from this devil.

Jackie laughed coldly. He never expected them to threaten him again. Did they not see what would happen to those who threatened him? With a wave of his hand, the dagger that was in Robin’s stomach instantly flew back to him, dripping with blood.

Chapter 2094
Derek’s face turned pale when he saw the dagger returning back to Jackie’s hand. He took a step back and the sword in his hand quivered, not from the infusion of true energy, but from fright. His two brothers, who were less powerful than him, were even more frightened than him that they hid behind him, treating him as a shield.

Their previous cockiness was now replaced by fear and caution. They were looking at Jackie as if he was a devil who had climbed out from the deepest depth of hell and could rip off all their heads in an instant.

Derek swallowed and the sword in his hand quivered even more violently that the tip gave off a low hum.” I warn you, it’s true individually we’re not as strong a s you, but you won’t be our match if the three of us work together!”

Jackie's lips curled up. With a flick of his wrist, the black dagger floated mid-air again. Its blacklight transformed into a swirling light gray mist akin to the venomous gas given out by a swamp. He stared coldly at Derek and said, "I hate it the most when others try to threaten me so you leave me with no choice but to kill you."

He then turned to Jed and Dwight and said, "I'll take on Derek and leave his two brothers to you two." The black dagger floating in the air released a black light once again. The black light was like a beast opening its mouth, wanting to devour everything in its path. It was a death sentence for the three brothers.

Perhaps it was being pushed to the extreme, or perhaps it was because of the contempt in Jackie's words, but Derek pulled out the last of his courage and shouted between gritted teeth, "I'll make sure to skin you alive first before I die!"

With a wave of Derek's right hand, runes flowed between his fingers. His long sword began making clicking noises like a skeleton that had suddenly come back to life and was struggling to move.

He gave out a low grunt, and thumb-sized skulls appeared on the long sword. These skulls released a bright white light, and their big mouths gave out a rattling sound that made everyone's scalp crawl.

By Jackie's rough estimate, the skulls amounted to more than fifty. These fifty or so tiny skulls revolved around Derek's longsword and a closer look made him realize that the skulls were ignited with tiny white flames.

"Be prepared to fight to your death!" shouted Derek.

The next second, Derek's entire body was covered with a cold flame. Each of these tiny skulls encased a resentful spirit struggling in hell. These resentful spirits filled everyone's eardrums with their shrill screams.

Jackie arched his eyebrow. "He's using resentful spirits as the lead?

The skill that Derek had conjured up obviously contained a lot of power from the resentful spirits. It seemed that to cultivate this skill required killing the cultivator and absorbing his resentment and spirit energy. This kind of insidious skill was in line with the Corpse Pavilion disciple.

Jackie flicked his wrist and the ten Soul Swords unattached themselves from the gray-black dagger and converged together, transforming into a long sword. The long sword was black, with gray-black fog swirling around it. Those are not the real fog of course but the spirit energy.

"Take this!" shouted Derek as he charged toward Jackie with the sword pointed at him.

The long sword was aimed at Jackie's head, with floating skulls opening their mouths wide, releasing the fire of spirit! Jackie scoffed, stretched out his hand,

and pushed forward, and the long sword condensed from the spirit energy rushed out.

Chapter 2095
In an instant, the two long swords collided mid-air, and everyone heard a bang. When the gray-black long sword collided with Derek's long sword, the fifty -odd skeletons that originally floated on the long sword instantly ignited like confetti, burning crazily in the air.

However, within one breath's time, more than fifty skeletons were burned out, and the light on Derek's long sword was instantly dimmed. He looked at it incredulously. "How is it possible? Why is my skill so weak?"

He did not think that he could compete with Jackie, he just wanted to buy some time, and then abandon his sword and flee. It never crossed his mind that his skill would be so weak and be disarmed in an instant.

Jackie scoffed. The move he cultivated, Destroying the Void, was at least a heaven level skill. It was a soul attribute which meant it had natural restraint on the soul and it just so happened Derek's skill used spirit energy as an attack point. Derek was no match for Jackie in the first place and coupled with being restrained, it was only natural that his attack would be disarmed.

After the long sword broke through Derek's moves, it straight away rushed toward his chest. Derek's expression changed as he backed away but it was already too late. The black longsword pierced his chest in the blink of an eye. Under the impact, his attached spirit became as weak as a piece of paper, and there was no form of any obstacle at all.

The black longsword pierced through Derek's heart. His physical body remained unharmed because the black long sword was made of energy but the same could not be said for his spirit. He felt the stabbing pain in his spirit, making his whole body tremble. He opened his mouth wide and wanted to shout, but realized that he did not even have the strength to make a sound.

He fell heavily to the ground, his eyes widened as if he could not believe he was dead. He looked to his chest and discovered there was not the usual falling and rising, meaning he could not be any deader than he was then.

The fight lasted less than five seconds, Derek was killed with just one move. Jed and the others had not even fully processed the shock of Jackie winning against Robin and now they had to digest what just happened before their eyes.

They knew in their hearts that Derek was not Jackie's match, but they did not expect him to be killed with just one move. Originally, Dudley and Damian were still waiting for the best opportunity to escape but all this happened so quickly that the two of them stood on the same spot with widened eyes, speechlessly looking at their eldest brother's body.

Jackie arched his brow and looked sharply at Dudley and Damian. His gaze was cold, like a razor, cutting out their flesh strip by strip. Immediately, the two of them fell to their knees with fright.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2096-2100

Chapter 2096

Two pairs of eyes stared beggingly at Jackie. They were too shocked by what just happened before their eyes. The eldest brother, who was stronger than both of them, stood no chance against Jackie at all. Was Jackie even human? How could he be so monstrously strong when he was only at the initial stage of innate level?

This kind of blow made all their resistance disappear. They were not shy to kneel before Jackie. After all, what's the use of dignity when one is so close to death? Dudley vigorously knocked his head against the ground three times. It was as if Jackie was the ancestor of his eighteenth generation. Instantly, his forehead was swollen and red.

"My Lord, please be the bigger person and spare our lives. We really had no intention of killing you and were just following orders," said Dudley who was begging in tears.

Damian knocked his head against the ground too while begging, "I don't want to die yet! I beg of you to chalk all this down to our youthful ignorance and let us go. We will definitely tell anyone what happened here. We will not stay here. We will immediately return to the Corpse Pavilion and never come out again!"

The two of them desperately knocked their heads a few more times. Jed curled his lips in disdain and said provocatively, "Are you sure the two of you are the disciples of a fourth-grade Clan association? How can you be so spineless? A man should only kneel down to heaven, earth, his parents, and his master. You're not a man at all to kneel down at this moment."

After hearing this, Dudley suddenly raised his head and stared at Jed with an angry look. "You shut your trap. My life is more important than my pride. I bet you'll be kneeling too if you're in my place!"

The words struck Jed's nerves. Just moments before, he did not really care whether they live or die but now, he was a cock that had been defeated in a fight and was blowing up his feather.

"What did you say? Did you hear what he said, Brother Jackie? We should torture them before we end their lives!" He was shouting so loudly that Dwight had to cover his ears.

Dwight glanced sideways at Jed. He wanted to remind Jed how he treated Jackie before all this. It seemed as if he had made a hundred and eighty degree change of attitude after Jackie showed them what he could do.

Jackie ignored Jed. In fact, he did not even look at him. Instead, he walked two steps forward, looked at Dudley, and said, “Whether you can get out of here alive or dead depends on what you can do for us.”

He killed Derek because he was the strongest of the three brothers and also to use his death to frighten his two brothers. After all, he still had a lot of questions that needed answers from them.

Derek’s eyes lit up when he heard the underlying meaning of Jackie’s words. The corners of his mouth inched up to a placating smile. “Don’t worry, I will gladly answer all your questions. I will tell you whatever I know, as long as you let us go…”

Jackie looked at them with a half-smile and he retracted back his awe-inspiring murderous aura. Without it, he looked just like the friendly boy-next-door.

“Then tell me, why did the Corpse Pavilion take so much effort to come to the Mount Beasts and how can we deactivate the trap array you guys have set up?”

These two issues were the most important thing they had to figure out right now.

Chapter 2097
“You two bastards better not say anything! I’ll haunt you to the ends of the world if you do!” shouted Robin suddenly.

Both Dudley and Damian trembled when they heard his threat. After all, they were of an inferior position to him and had to bow to him every time they saw him. Their faces were already pale, to begin with, but all remaining blood drained out of them, making them even paler.

Jackie frowned and then raised his right hand, and a gray-black light instantly stabbed Robin again.

“Ahh!” screamed Robin in pain. This time his screams were even more violent than before. His soul was already riddled with holes after being hit by Jackie’s Destroying the Void move and now his soul was rendered even more precarious with the latest attack.

This time he felt that his soul had been completely torn apart, and his consciousness gradually blurred. An injury of this degree could not be saved. He had at most another two to four hours to live.

His shrill screams reverberated in Dudley’s and Damian’s eardrums. Beads of cold sweat soaked their temples and neck. Both of them were breathing fast, and they seemed as if they would faint any time.

Jackie arched his eyebrow and said in a calm tone, “If you don’t tell me everything you know, I will make sure that you won’t enjoy a quick death like your dear brother. Robin is the best example. Do you know why he is suffering so

much? It's because I am destroying and stripping his soul with the Soul Sword. The most unbearable pain in the world is having your soul slain."

Hearing this, the two brothers fell into despair. Both of their breathing had become stagnant because of the immense fear they were feeling. Dudley felt that his scalp was numb and his face was stiff. Only the trembling corners of his mouth showed that he was still alive.

He nodded heavily and said, "Rest assured that we will tell you everything we know. Just please don't strip our souls!"

Jackie arched his brow and said, "Then you will do well to answer my questions now!"

With some difficulty, Dudley took a deep breath and said, "We are really just minions. We know little of the Corpse Pavilion's plans but what I can tell you is that we came from other states to Mount Beasts using the transporter. We arrived a month ago. After entering the mountain, we set up the trap array and began building many transporters. I think they were hoping to bridge the gap between the north and the south so that the disciples of the Corpse Pavilion can come to the north without any hindrance…"

Jackie narrowed his eyes, pressed his chest forward, and looked down at the trembling Dudley who was kneeling on the ground. "You swear you're telling the truth?"

Dudley nodded vigorously and even put up his hand. "I swear to heaven everything I said is true. I will die a thousand deaths if any of it is untrue."

Jackie nodded, his expression still frightening. After hearing these words, Jed and others frowned, and the atmosphere became a lot more serious.

Chapter 2098
"I knew they were definitely up to no good! I can't believe they're building transporters.. Could it be that they plan to launch a war against the Thousand Leaves Pavilion? But as far as I know, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and Corpse Pavilion are on par with each other. There's no doubt that it could end up with both sides suffering heavy losses and even if they win, the benefits would far outweigh the cost," muttered Dwight.

Albion nodded in agreement. "You are right, even if the two Clan associations really fight, the final result will not be a one-sided victory. Unless…the Corpse Pavilion has some tricks up their sleeves…"

Generally speaking, two Clan associations of equal strength would not engage in a large-scale battle unless they have deep grievances or it involves significant interests. After all, doing so would result in a lose-lose situation. In the end, even if one side won, it was very likely that the gain will not be worth the loss, so there would be no war between the two Clan associations without a last resort, but it seemed like a war was what the Corpse Pavilion was aiming for. Otherwise, why

would they go to such length to set up so many transporters to bring their disciples over?

Albion took a step forward, looked down at Dudley, and asked, “Is the Corpse Pavilion planning to launch a war against the Thousand Leaves Pavilion?”

Dudley shook his head. “Didn’t I just say I’m a minion that doesn’t know anything? Why would the higher-ups tell us what they’re planning to an ordinary informal disciple like me?”

Albion thought about it then nodded grudgingly. Dudley was indeed a minion and there was no way he would know any confidential information. He blamed himself for being impatient to ask something like that.

“And the second question?” asked Jackie.

Dudley frowned slightly as if he did not want to tell, but he knew that if he did not answer Jackie, he would be dead in a second. “You’ll need an entry token to get out.”

Jackie straightened up and asked, “Do you have it?”

Dudley shook his head. “Not everyone has an entry token to prevent this exact kind of situation from happening. You will be able to get out of the trap array once you get your hands on the array token but then you will also be found out…”

Jackie sighed lightly and stared regretfully at them. Seeing this did not make Dudley feel the slightest relief at all. Instead, his neck tightened, for he had immediately understood what Jackie was thinking.

In other words, he did not prove to be useful enough, for he did not have the entry token. In the end, death still found its way to him. He shuddered and quickly said, “But I know Robin has it. Not everyone has the entry token. It will only be placed with important people for emergencies. Robin is close to our elder clan brother since Robin had always fawned over him. He gave Robin an entry token which you can find on him. An opening will appear as long as this entry token is integrated into the trap array with a special method and then you’ll be able to get out of here through that opening.”

Jackie arched his brow. ‘Which means I still need to keep you alive.’ Time would tell whether Dudley was telling the truth. Lying still on the ground, Dudley took two steps forward with his knees and reached out to grab Jackie’s pants but his hand was smoothly evaded by him.

Chapter 2099
“There’s no need for that. Just say whatever you need to say.”

Dudley’s face turned a little purple. He did not care about anything anymore. “I beg you. Please spare me. I will definitely take you out and keep our mouths shut as long as you let us go.”

Jackie nodded. They were his best shot. Jackie and the others should be safe as long as they kept watch over the two brothers to ensure that they could not send any message to the other disciples of the Corpse Pavilion.

However, Jackie keenly perceived the different meanings of what Dudley had just said. He turned around and stared at him with cold eyes. “How many days has it been since the trap array was set up?”

After calculating in his mind, Jackie realized that it had been more than ten days since he stepped foot into the mountain. He did not feel any obstruction coming in here, that was to say, the trap array had not been set up at that time.

“Around nine or ten days,” said Dudley after mentally calculating it.

“And not one Thousand Leaves Pavilion people came here during that time?” asked Jackie.

Dudley shook his head and replied very sincerely, “Not that I’ve heard of. The trap array we set up has never been attacked. Several cultivators who escaped our line of sight attacked the trap array from within the trap array.”

Hearing this made Jackie even more surprised. According to his statement, the trap array had been set up for at least nine days and yet the Thousand Leaves Pavilion never noticed anything strange during that period?

After all, would it not be strange if none of the disciples returned to the sect in those nine days? Under normal circumstances, they would definitely find something off about this so how was it possible that they did not send out men to annihilate the Corpse Pavilion disciples in the mountain?

If Jackie were a senior member of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, he would immediately send people to investigate after he noticed something amiss, and then launch an attack to rescue the disciples trapped In the array and destroy the plan of the Corpse Pavilion. However, nine days had passed and there was still no movement from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion.

Neither did they send anyone to rescue the disciples trapped inside, nor launched an attack. It was as if they were blissfully unaware of what was happening. Jackie’s expression became more solemn at the thought of this.

He glanced sideways at Dwight and the others and saw that their expressions were also very strange. This was definitely not a normal situation. Maybe the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was under attack right now or ran into some other accident. However, they had no way of finding out since they were still trapped there.

“Jed, bury the bodies and tidy up the surroundings. We will set off to the mountain border once all that is done,” said Jackie.

Hearing this, Jed became baffled. He pointed at the bodies on the ground and asked, “Why do I have to be the only one to do the cleaning up?”

Jackie chuckled and gazed at him softly, “Because I find you displeasing. You don’t have to do what I say. I just won’t bring you out with me.”

They were strangers, to begin with, and though Jackie found Jed to be friendly at first, he soon proved him otherwise. Besides, Jackie not only provided them with a place to heal their wounds but also took them out of their predicament. Without him, they would have been long dead.

Chapter 2100
Jed kept talking nonsense along the way. As long as Jackie said something wrong, he would ridicule him with harsh words. Jackie was not the type of person who allowed others to bully him. The fact that he had endured Jed for so long was mercy enough.

Jed looked at Jackie’s cold face. Although his tone was calm and there was not a hint of anger on his face, he also knew that if he defied Jackie’s orders, he would leave him there without hesitation.

Albion wanted to say something to ease the atmosphere but was held back by Dwight. Dwight was obviously smarter than Jed. He knew that if Jackie did not get his revenge on Jed now, there would be more hell to pay later, down the road.

“Why do you find me displeasing?” asked Jed, flushed with humiliation.

“Think about all that you have said to me before. As I said, it’s up to you whether you want to do what I say or be left alone here,” said Jackie with a smirk.

He then called Nash over as if getting ready to leave the place. Seeing this made Jed panic. “I’ll do it! I’ll bury the bodies!”

He immediately began to deal with the dead body on the ground and restored the place to its original appearance, leaving no trace of the previous fierce battles. After doing all this, he wiped the sweat from his forehead and though his face was a little stiff, he still did not dare to say anything.

Jackie nodded in satisfaction. He tied up Dudley’s and Damian’s hands firmly and sealed their meridians with true energy. Finally, the group of people left the place. Through Dudley’s guidance, they found the shortest way to leave the mountain.

They remained alert even though they had tasted victory. Dwight walked in the forefront, his perception on high alert. They walked cautiously, for fear that they would meet one or two disciples of the Corpse Pavilion, though, with Jackie there, they were not particularly afraid.

Still, Dudley had told them that there were not only powerful clan brothers in the mountain but also several elders and deacons stationed in the mountain. They were afraid of attracting the attention of these people, so they moved very slowly, taking every step carefully, and after four hours they finally came to the border of the mountain.

Standing on tiptoes and looking out, they could still see the spring smoke from the town outside. The trap array was like an invisible barrier, and the entire mountain was trapped inside.

They sighed with relief at finally having reached the border. The past few days had passed by in a nervous haze; it was as if a shackle had been locked around their throats, making it difficult for them to breathe.

“We can finally leave this place!” said Jed, overcome with emotions.

Just when he wanted to say a few more words, there was a sudden movement from the field in the distance, as if something was rubbing against the grass, and the nerves that had just loosened tightened again.

Several people glanced at each other and suddenly looked in the direction of the sound. It was a thick eucalyptus tree, its trunk spanned ten arms width. Jackie frowned and shouted, “Who’s there?”

One could not blame him for behaving like a frightened bird. After all, they were all so close to getting out of the mountain and desperately wished for things to go smoothly.

Albion stretched out his hand and patted Jackie on the shoulder. “Calm down. Maybe it’s just a small animal. The mountain is known for its abundance of beasts after all. It’s probably just a small animal wandering on the edge.”

Jackie glanced at Albion, hoping what he said was true. It was then that an old voice came from behind the big tree. “Are you all disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and the Dual Sovereign Pavilion?

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2101-2110

Chapter 2101

The question froze everyone. It was really not a small animal but a real person instead, who deliberately made the rustling sound to gain their attention. Judging from the voice, it was obvious that it came from an elderly person. If he was a lone cultivator, he might not be strong but if he was a cultivator from the Corpse Pavilion, then he must be of extraordinary power.

None of them would have survived except Jackie. In other words, the enemy would not bother to ask them a question like this unless…he had too much time in his hands. All kinds of thoughts flashed through his mind, as he remained on high alert. He exchanged glances with the others and made his way to the other side of the tree. It only took him a dozen steps or so to finally see the person behind the tree.

To Jackie's surprise, this person's age did not match his voice at all. He looked like he was in his thirties, his abdomen was stained red with blood, his face paler than normal, and breathing heavily. He was seriously injured.

"Are you a formal elder of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion?" asked Jackie.

He asked that question because the person in front of him was wearing a dark blue shirt with a few dazzling begonias embroidered on his belt, and anyone who had begonia on his waist was an elder. Moreover, he was dressed in dark blue, and only the elders of the formal elder in the entire sect were qualified to wear a dark blue outer shirt.

After hearing Jackie's words, the others rushed over. Albion saw the man leaning on the tree, and a hint of surprise flashed in his eyes. "You wouldn't happen to be Elder Godfrey from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, right?"

Elder Godfrey was a little surprised that Albion had recognized him. He turned to look at him and saw him in the disciple uniform of the Thousand Leaves Sect. Seeing this surprised him even more. "Do we know each other?"

Albion cupped his fist in salute excitedly. "One year ago, at the tea party held by the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, I had the honor of meeting you, Elder Godfrey."

Elder Godfrey nodded slightly. He did go to the tea party held by the Thousand Leave Pavilion a year ago. There were many disciples at the tea party. Any disciple, even those with little strength could show up at the tea party. There were many deacon disciples and their faces all blurred into one so naturally, he would have no impression of meeting Albion at all.

Jackie coughed softly. He was a little embarrassed that he, as the informal disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, could not recognize a formal elder. It was

unreasonable, but the fact was thus. After all, he had just entered the Dual Sovereign Pavilion not long ago.

Now that the identity has been determined, the danger was of course resolved. Jackie crouched down and took a look at Elder Godfrey's injury; a hole was punched into his abdomen by a sharp weapon.

He was now meditating, adjusting his breath, and recovering from his injury, but even so, it would take him at least three or four months to fully recover from an injury of this degree.

"Elder Godfrey, I might as well take you out of here. Don't worry, I am indeed a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. The reason why I don't recognize you is that I've just joined not too long ago," said Jackie decisively.

Edler Godfrey suddenly raised his head and stared intently at Jackie. There was a trace of vigilance and helplessness in his eyes. Finally, he was completely relieved. This complicated look made Jackie a little startled.

'Why would he be wary of me? It seems like he's reluctant to come with me. Logically speaking, he shouldn't have such a look on his face. After all, I'm indeed a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and besides, my cultivation is only at the initial stage of innate level. I bet he's still stronger than me, his injuries are not withstanding.'

Before he could figure it out, Elder Godfrey nodded slowly. "I am now seriously injured and unable to break through the trap array. If you have a way to break through the array, then take me with you. I will reward you accordingly when we are back at the sect."

Chapter 2102
Jackie arched his brow. He did not care about the rewards, instead he was curious as to why Elder Godfrey had looked at him with such complicated expressions. Although he tried to hide it, it still did not escape Jackie's notice

Jackie nodded calmly, and exchanged a few more polite remarks, saying that he did not care whether there were rewards and that as a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, he naturally had the duty to protect the elders of the respected sect,

Elder Godfrey just nodded, and the complex look on his face never appeared again. He turned his head to look in the direction of the trap array, "Let's drop the formalities and get out of here. I was injured by an elder of the Corpse Pavilion. If it hadn't been for my life-saving means, I would have died in his hands long ago. He must be anxious to catch me now and I'm afraid things will not end well for us if we delay any longer."

The group started to panic when they heard this, but then quickly composed themselves. Jackie looked at Dudley with cold eyes and he knew what Jackie wanted without even having him say it. He trembled and took out the entry token.

The entry token was found on Robin's corpse, and Jackie deliberately asked Dudley to do the dirty deed to remind him of his possible ending if he dared to disobey Jackie. Therefore, no matter how unwilling Dudley was to do anything he asked, Jackie would only need to give him the look for him to change his mind.

Jackie reached out and helped Elder Godfrey up. Elder Godfrey's face turned paler as getting up made his injuries even more painful. However, being able to achieve the position of an elder naturally meant he had his fair share of injuries along the way so although his injuries were severe, he could still bear it. He never once cried out in pain even though they could see that his sideburns were soaked in cold sweat.

Dudley's hands kept trembling and in order to prevent him from playing tricks, Jackie stood behind him. Dudley performed a series of hand movements and injected these seals into the entry token. A dazzling white light was released in an instant as it floated slowly into the air.

The next second, it integrated into the trap array. The trap array was transparent. One would not notice it unless one had touched the barrier. However, after the entry token was integrated into the trap array, the transparent space in front rippled like the tide.

Everyone's eyes widened, and the ripples became bigger and bigger and more frequent. Gradually, an empty brilliance was released from the trap array. Everyone understood that a space had opened up for them to exit.

Jackie arched his brow, and stared at Dudley with calm eyes, "You go out first and your brother stays. He will exit with us."

Dudley was impressed with Jackie's deep thinking. He smiled bitterly, and sighed inwardly, thinking that Jackie did not need to resort to doing this, for there was no way he would dare to play tricks at this time. Jackie was not that kind of soft-hearted person. Dudley would be the first to die should anything untoward happen.

Dudley closed his eyes and strode out of the open space. After he stepped over, there was only a breeze blowing over his temples, making his fine hair stuck to his face. Nothing else happened.

Jackie and others waited for a few seconds just to be sure Dudley did not do anything funny. Once confirmed, they nodded to each other and then walked out of the trap array one after another.

The outer space was actually no different from the space inside, but the feeling it gave was quite different. Jackie looked back and thought that the trap array was like a cage with invisible shackles.

Chapter 2103
To prevent the unexpected from happening, they did not release Dudley on the spot, but took him and his brother toward the city, away from the border of Mount Beasts.

After traveling for five or six miles, Jackie turned around and looked at Dudley, who was sporting a frightening expression on his face. His heart was throbbing wildly, for fear that Jackie would kill him. After all, the two of them were now useless. If they let them go, it was very likely that they would report back to the Corpse Pavilion. In fact, he would not have let himself go if he was in Jackie's position.

Dudley took a deep breath and said with a trembling mouth, "Don't worry, my lord, I will definitely not rat you out. After all, those people are still in the trap array. You just need to leave us here and we'll stay here for a while before going back."

What he said was a bit incoherent, because he was too scared, which caused him to speak too quickly.

Jackie chuckled. "I'm not the kind of person who breaks their promises. I will hold up my part of the deal even though killing you now is the better option for us. However, I will leave a restriction on your bodies which will be automatically lifted in about two days. I'll advise you both to stay here and not run around because death is guaranteed if you encounter any fierce beast. Whether the two of you will come out of this alive depends on your luck now."

With the restriction on them, even if they return to the Mount Beasts, they would not be able to enter the Mount Beasts through the trap array. Even if they could enter, they would not be able to use their true energy to fend for themselves should they come across any fierce beast or monsters.

The best solution for them was to stay where they were, wait for the restriction to be lifted from their bodies, and then return to Mount Beasts. By then, Jackie and the others would have arrived safely in their own Clan associations and need not be wary of them anymore.

Relief washed over Dudley. He nodded vigorously, wishing to pat his chest and promise, "You can rest assured that we'll stay here for two days and not cause you any trouble."

Jackie chuckled. He did not take his words seriously at all. He turned his head and glanced at the other people. After all, they were not in the same Clan associations, they would have to part ways here.

Albion cupped his hands in a salute toward Jackie and said from the bottom of his heart, "Thank you, Brother Jackie, for your care all this time. If it weren't for you, we wouldn't be able to get out of Mount Beasts safely."

Jackie was not humble either. After all, what Albion said was true. He just nodded and said nothing.

Dwight glanced at Jackie and said, "You are the most talented person I have ever seen. You will definitely shine in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion in the future. I will treat you to a meal if you ever come to the Thousand Leaves Pavilion."

Jackie nodded, and they exchanged a few more words before parting ways. The Thousand Leave Pavilion was toward the west, and the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was a little more toward the east. When saying their goodbyes, Albion-and others tried to exchange formalities with Elder Godfrey for a long time, but perhaps because of his serious injury, or perhaps because of other reasons, Elder Godfrey did not return their sentiments.

After saying goodbye to each other, Jackie, Nash, and Elder Godfrey made their way back to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Chapter 2104
Taking into account the injuries of Elder Godfrey, they did not rush toward the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Jackie rented a horse-drawn carriage in a nearby town and used the most common way to go to the Dual Sovereign City.

Inside the carriage, Elder Godfrey rested with closed eyes while both Jackie and his father remained quiet, for there were some things that could not be discussed in front of a third party.

Nash did not mind but Jackie was feeling a little uneasy. Elder Godfrey was injured very badly and could barely remain conscious. As an elder, he had no shortage of pills, but even after taking the best pill, his injury still did not show any signs of recovering. This just proved how seriously injured he was.

Jackie had a lot of questions to ask him but stopped himself, after all, this was their first meeting. All the recent events did not sit right with him; it was as if Jackie had been unknowingly dragged into a conspiracy ever since stepping foot in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Suddenly, Elder Godfrey, with his eyes still closed, asked, “Did the Thousand Leaves Pavilion do anything about it?”

The question caught Jackie off guard, but without hesitation, he shook his head. Although Elder Godfrey did not ask clearly, Jackie knew he wanted to ask if Thousand Leaves Pavilion tried to attack the trap array.

The corner of Elder Godfrey’s lips curled up into an ironic smile, but he quickly returned to his former expressionless face.

This made Jackie even more puzzled. Now that Elder Godfrey had opened up a conversation, it would not be too rude for him to ask some questions. He cleared his throat and asked, “Elder, when did you enter Mount Beasts?”

Elder Godfrey sighed lightly, and a trace of anger flashed through his tired eyes. “Nine days ago.”

Jackie still remembered that Dudley once said that they had set up the trap array nine or ten days ago. That was to say, Elder Godfrey had entered the mountain about the same time as the trap array was set up.

Jackie sighed and said, “What do you think the people of Corpse Pavilion are planning to do?”

Elder Godfrey kept quiet after hearing the question. The carriage was still swaying in the intended direction, and the sound of ‘clop, clop’ came from the horse’s hooves. From time to time, they could hear the horseman whistling and shouting.

Finally, Elder Godfrey spoke, “My guess is it has something to do with the secret resource place.”

Jackie frowned. He had heard of this secret resource place before. It was what sparked the war between the Muddled Origin Clan and the Dual Sovereign Pavilion but if it was really because of this, then they have a big problem in their hands.

The fact that the Corpse Pavilion had spared no expenses to get their hands on the secret resource place meant that whatever was inside was very valuable. There was no way the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, as the true ruler of the north, would let two three-grade Clan associations get their hands on it.

Jackie was quite puzzled by all this, Elder Godfrey laughed and said in a low tone, “This is just a guess that I pulled out from thin air.”

He closed his eyes again as if this issue triggered him. Jackie thought it was best to stop questioning him, but there were just too many questions in his mind. He would die overthinking if he did not get some concrete answers now.

Besides, this concerned his future as well. After all, a member of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, a huge war between Clan associations would no doubt affect him as well. He took a deep breath and his voice was a little low.

Chapter 2105
“Elder, can you think of a reason why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion did not make a move? There’s no way they wouldn’t have known what the Corpse Pavilion was doing when they had caused such a huge commotion.”

Elder Godfrey gave a cold snort. This snort took a lot of his strength and his shoulders were shaking. He took a deep breath, in a bid to suppress the anger in his heart. “Of course, they know about it, and they probably knew about it a long time ago.”

Upon hearing this, Jackie was shocked. He could see the irrepressible anger on Elder Godfrey’s face. What happened to him? Why is he so angry?’ The fact that the anger seemed to be directed at the Thousand Leaves Pavilion instead of the Corpse Pavilion made him even more confused.

Of course, Jackie did not voice his questions out loud. After all, he and Elder Godfrey were still not so familiar with each other. Although he had saved his life, it was not as if he went out of his way to do it. Therefore, it was not surprising

that Elder Godfrey was wary of an informal disciple who moments ago was just a stranger.

Silence fell over inside of the carriage once more. No one spoke but their thoughts were surging, and various thoughts burst into their minds. Nash was also curious but since Elder Godfrey was there, he did not think it would be suitable for him to discuss all the questions in his heart with Jackie.

About ten to twelve hours later, the carriage finally entered the Dual Sovereign City. Only then did Elder Godfrey break the silence. “When you’re back at the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, if someone asks, tell them that you actually stayed at Mount Beasts for only a day because you discovered that the monsters that are usually found in the deepest part of the mountain had come out to the periphery. Thus, you came out to get away from harm’s way. As for what happened between me and you, it’s best not to divulge this information. If not, you’ll be dragged into it.”

As for what ‘it’ was, Elder Godfrey did not say, and Jackie did not ask. He could tell that Elder Godfrey was telling him all that for his own good and that the elder was not the kind of selfish person who only cared for himself.

Jackie nodded vigorously. “Do you not plan to go back to Dual Sovereign Pavilion now?”

Elder Godfrey raised his eyes and looked forward. The carriage curtain blocked his vision, but his eyes seemed to be able to see the outside world through the curtain. “You don’t need to worry about this. I will go back in a few days. As long as you behave normally, others will not be suspicious of your relationship with me.”

Jackie nodded and did not continue to ask. It was just as Elder Godfrey said, they were strangers after all. Jackie was just an informal disciple with no background and would never have had a chance to meet Elder Godfrey if it was not for the recent incident. No one would ever associate them together.

In order to prevent people from discovering that, instead of pulling the carriage to the gate of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, they found an inn for Elder Godfrey, before Jackie returned to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion alone.

This time, Nash has stayed out long enough so it was best to return to the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship. Doing this would prevent his identity from being exposed.

To enter the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, Jackie only needed to take out his identity card. After he entered Dual Sovereign City, he kept observing people’s faces for signs that some huge changes had occurred and was surprised to find that people were still peacefully going about their daily lives, as if nothing had happened.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2106-2110

Chapter 2106
However, when he stepped into the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, he felt the obvious difference. The place where they, the informal disciples lived, was just west of the entire sect. If they wanted to go from the main gate to the informal disciple's residence, they had to make a few turns and walk through a few outdoor corridors.

These outdoor corridors extended in all directions, and the disciples could go back to their residence through the outdoor corridors or to the most central Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall and the Seven Stars Hall.

Under normal circumstances, there will be many disciples passing by the outdoor corridors, sometimes it would even be bustling with disciples. However, on that day, he was the lone person walking through them. He raised his head to look at the sun and estimated the time to be around noontime. There was nothing special about this time and yet why was he there alone?

He started making wild guesses in his heart. However, he became even more shocked when he discovered that there was no one in the residences of the informal disciples as well. After thinking for a while, he went back to his room, changed his clothes, and then walked in the direction of the Soul Hall. He did not know if Noel was on duty today but hoped that he was so that he could ask him all the questions in his mind.

On the way to the Soul Hall, he happened to meet Brook, the runner disciple. They had a good relationship with each other and when Brook sported Jackie, he greeted him from afar.

At this time, Brook was holding two brick-sized boxes in his hand. "Brother Jackie, you're finally back! Let's see if they still dare to say anything this time."

After hearing this, Jackie arched his brow in surprise." What are you talking about?"

Brook snorted and said disdainfully, "Remember when you beat Wesley into a pulp before? Well, he and his lickspittles had been spreading around the rumor that you've died on Mount Beasts."

Jackie was taken aback, not because of the rumors but because of the timing of the rumors. He started to think there was a deeper meaning as to why Wesley would choose this time, of all time, to spread a rumor about this death.

Coupled with the things he experienced during this time, he started to boldly link everything together. He stretched out his hand and patted Brook on the shoulder,

and said mildly, “To prove that I’m not dead, can you please help me spread the news?”

Brook looked curiously at Jackie and felt that this was out of his usual behavior. Although he had not known Jackie for a long time, he knew that Jackie had never cared about what the others thought of him. However, he said nothing.

Jackie knitted his brows together and said, “Help me spread the news, and remember not to spread it too deliberately, that is, when you are chatting with others, you pass it on in a casual tone.”

When he said this, Jackie’s tone turned solemn, making Brook straightened up a little as he quietly listened to Jackie’s instructions. “You said that I came out after staying in Mount Beasts for only one day because the innate monsters suddenly appeared in the acquired monsters’ frequently active areas for some reason. It was too dangerous inside, so I came out early. And why didn’t I return here until today? You tell them that my family came to see me in the Dual Sovereign City and so I stayed in the city for a few days.”

Brook nodded, not really understanding the point of all this. After giving it some thought, he finally asked, “Are these all true?”

Chapter 2107
Jackie arched his eyebrow and said in a heavy tone,” What is true?”

Brook shook his head quickly, knowing that Jackiehad misunderstood his question. “I’m not asking whether the words you’re asking me to spread are true. What I meant was, is it really true that something weird is going on in Mount Beasts?”

Jackie nodded. Of course, it’s true. The changes there are enough to turn the world that we know upside down!’ He wanted to say these out loud but knew that he should not. Besides, he presumed that the high-ups in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had already known about it.

“I can’t tell you much right now. Please do as I say and after that, go tell Brother Noel to come to my place when he’s free. You can come too. I need to discuss something with the two of you,” said Jackie.

Brook nodded seriously, and the two exchanged two or three polite remarks before Brook took the boxes and walked toward the Seven Stars Hall. Since Brook would spread the news, Jackie did not need to go to the Soul Hall anymore. He had a stomach full of questions and wanted to figure out these problems before planning his next practice.

Less than an hour later, Noel and Brook were already knocking on his room door; he invited the two people into the room and poured tea for both of them. On the way, Noel had already caught up with Brook.

He took a sip of his tea and asked, “How many days did you stay in Mount Beasts?”.

Jackie arched his eyebrow and said, “Give or take ten days.”

Noel raised his eyebrows in surprise. “Then why did you say that you’ve only stayed there for a day? Did something happen?”

Actually, Jackie did not intend to keep it a secret, because he felt that everyone would eventually hear about what was going on there. However, he did not directly answer Noel’s question. Instead, he turned to ask, “Why is the outdoor corridor so empty? Did something happen in the Clan association?”

Noel leaned toward him with excitement showing on his face. “It seems that the affairs with the Muddled Origin Clan have not yet been settled. I don’t think the elders plan to let it go at that, even though the Thousand Leaves Pavilion gave a temporary truce between the two Clan associations.

“Didn’t I tell you before that our Clan association is planning to recruit another batch of disciples? I’m surprised at this. Obviously, your batch is already more than enough. Why do they want to recruit more disciples? Didn’t they say that there will be no more wars in the foreseeable future? The two just don’t make sense. What’s more, do you know when they started the recruitment?”

Jackie shook his head. Noel widened his eyes and held up three fingers. “On the third day after you went to Mount Beasts. They’ve been at it non-stop. Every disciple found this really odd and we had been talking about it since.

“However, there’s been no conclusion since the elders did not give a proper explanation. Anyway, the new disciples were recruited, and after recruiting new disciples, we started to practice the combined battle formation. That’s the reason why there’s no one walking around in the outdoor corridor.

The combined battle formation is formed by the cooperation between disciples. Once this kind of formation is deployed, not only does it increase the attack power of the disciple’s skills but also enhances their defense.”

Chapter 2108
Jackie arched his brow and gently placed the teacup in his hand on the table. “So you’re saying that the Clan associations still plan to continue with the war?”

That was the most plausible explanation. If not, why would they be so anxious for the disciples to learn the combined battle formations? All these are signs that a large-scale war would soon break out since it was only at this time that the combined battle formations would have the greatest effect.

There were many practical reasons for practicing the combined battle formations. For example, if a group of disciples went out for training, deploying the combined battle formation would increase their chances of surviving should they encounter any danger. However, the combined battle formation would be most effective when it is used in a war between Clan associations.

Jackie took a deep breath. He did not associate the impending war with Muddled Origins Clan but instead asked, in a rushed tone, “Did any other disciples go to

Mount Beasts during the days I was there? Especially the disciples who are relatives of the formal or informal elders?"

There were many elders in a faction and unless they were pure-hearted, they would definitely accept some of his own disciples into the Clan association. Brook and Noel looked at each other and shook their heads in unison.

"After you left, the Clan association suddenly issued an urgent order for the disciples to practice the combined battle formations and put aside other things at hand for the time being," said Brook.

Jackie frowned and asked, "Are you sure not one of the relatives from an informal or formal elder went or had the intention to go to Mount Beasts?" Jackie's insistence on getting to the bottom of this question puzzled Noel and Brook.

Brook frowned and he suddenly remembered something. "By the way, Elder Tony, who is a formal elder, has accepted his nephew as an elder disciple. Four days ago, his nephew asked me to help him exchange his contribution points for healing points at the Seven Stars Hall. He was planning to go to Mount Beasts, but two days later, I saw him again and asked him why he didn't go. He said that Elder Tony would not let him go. I didn't pursue further since I was in a hurry to do something."

Jackie's eyelids began to twitch. The elder disciple was stopped from going and not one elder or relatives of the elders went to Mount Beasts during this period. This is a huge problem.

He suddenly recalled the strange expression on Elder Godfrey's face. It seemed to be a combination of mockery, anger, and resignation. What could have possibly happened to him to make such an expression? Not to mention, Elder Godfrey's enigmatic tone he was speaking in.

At that time, Jackie had a few guesses as to why Elder Godfrey was acting that way. Now, he was even more sure of his guesses after confirming that the Thousand Leaves Pavilion did not make a move against the Corpse Pavilion and came back to discover that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had recruited disciples, and even ordered them to practice the combined battle formation.

He scoffed and said, "Even a formal elder cannot escape the scheming of an organization."

What he said stunned both Brook and Noel, and they glanced at each other to see if the other knew just what the heck Jackie was talking about. Jackie did not really want to explain himself but who else but the two of them could he discuss this matter with? "What do you guys know about Elder Godfrey?"

Chapter 2109

Noel looked at Jackie in surprise, not understanding why he suddenly asked about Elder Godfrey, but he still answered his question, "We have a total of eleven formal elders. Based on ranking, Elder Godfrey is the eleventh formal

elder. However, he is quite talented. The ranking of the formal elders is ranked according to their strength. It is estimated that it will not take long before Elder Godfrey becomes one of the top three formal elders."

Jackie nodded, and after a light sigh, he continued to ask, "Then, have any of the formal elders had a conflict with each other?"

Noel picked his teacup and took a sip. "Why do you ask? How do you know Elder Godfrey anyways?"

Jackie cleared his throat, touched his nose, and said, " I saw Elder Godfrey while I was in Dual Sovereign City. It's funny now that I think about it. I knew him to be a formal elder by the way he was dressed but didn't know which formal elder he was. I only found out his name when the person next to him told me."

Noel seemed to be satisfied with the explanation and did not press any further. Instead, he answered Jackie's previous questions. "If you're looking for the reason for conflicts within the formal elders, my guess is the fight over who gets to be the head of the Clan association."

Jackie's eyes widened. Seeing this, Noel laughed. He was sure Jackie knew nothing about this and proceeded to tell him the whole story. It turned out that the head of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was already advancing in age and intended to abdicate. He would then be promoted to a supreme elder allowing him to focus on his cultivation, so the position of the head has become the goal of the formal elders.

The head has always been the strongest elder among the formal elders and by logic, should go to the top ranking formal elder. However, the relationship between these eleven formal elders was complicated, especially in the past few years, the second formal elder's reputation was in a roll, making his strength and prestige comparable to that of the first formal elder.

There were even people who said that the second formal elder was stronger than the first formal elder and that the second formal elder should be the first formal elder. Therefore, the news that the head wanted to abdicate had become the fuse that blew apart what was already a fragile relationship between the formal elders.

The first and second formal elder was vying to become the new head once the old head abdicated, Out of the remaining nine formal elders, four of them supported the first formal elder while the other four of them supported the second formal elder, leaving Elder Godfrey, a newly promoted formal elder, holding the vote that would tip the scale. Unsurprisingly, both the first and second formal elders had been courting him to their respective teams.

Jackie finally knew what was at stake for the formal elders. He laughed ironically and said, "In other words, Elder Godfrey holds the winning vote to who gets to be the next head?"

Noel nodded but then shook his head. “Yes and no. While his vote is important, it’s still too early to say that whoever he chooses will for sure be the next head but as long as Elder Godfrey makes a choice, the scale will be favorable toward the side he had chosen.”

Even Brook could tell what was at stake for everyone.

Realization suddenly dawned on Jackie, when he recalled Elder Godfrey’s strange expression and the way he was asking whether Thousand Leaves Pavilion did anything about the Corpse Pavilion.

He was sure that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had long known about what was going on in Mount Beasts and that was why they did not do anything about it.

Chapter 2110
It would explain why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion broke their usual rule to order the Muddled Origin Clan and the Dual Sovereign Pavilion to stop the war between them. At a critical time like this, it was best to conserve their resources to be used against a greater enemy like the Corpse Pavilion.

Jackie remembered that he had heard the news about the Dual Sovereign Pavilion wanting to recruit new disciples before he left for Mount Beasts. From this alone, he could guess that the higher-ups of Dual Sovereign Pavilion already knew what was going on in Mount Beasts.

It would also explain Elder Godfrey’s strange expressions and the odd tone in his voice. Nobody had told him what was going on in Mount Beasts and that was why he was ambushed there. He was wary of Jackie, for he was a disciple from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and some higher-ups from the sect obviously wanted him dead! Ever since then, Elder Godfrey held a grudge toward the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Finally, Jackie was getting somewhere with these mysteries. What was left to figure out was which of the party wanted Elder Godfrey dead. Was it the first formal elder’s party, or the second? Maybe it was both of them! After all, he alone possessed the power to tip the scale.

Jackie was frowning while all the thoughts surged around in his mind. He did not know what he should say. Seeing this, Noel chuckled and said, “Why are you being so mysterious? Did something happen to you while you were in Mount Beasts?”

Jackie sighed. He might as well tell them all about it since he had already revealed so much. He sat down and told a brief version of what happened to him in Mount Beasts. He left out the part about his true power and that he was the one who defeated Robin. No one would ever believe him if he told them he defeated a final stage innate level fighter.

Noel’s eyes nearly popped out while Brook’s jaw had dropped to the ground when Jackie was done. It was a long while before they snapped out of shock.

“It all makes sense now. That’s why the elders wanted to recruit more disciples and have been conducting training day and night. It’s because something more troublesome than the Muddled Origin Clan is hovering over our heads!” said Noel in a hoarse voice. His face darkened and the teacup in his hand was trembling, sending waves of tiny ripple across the surface of the tea.

Jackie sighed and said matter-of-factly, “Don’t worry. It’ll take the Corpse Pavilion a lot more effort and time to reach here. The two of you will be safe as long as you stay away from the battlefield.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2111-2120

Chapter 2111

Noel stared speechlessly at Jackie before rolling his eyes at him. “Do you hear yourself? Going to war against the Muddled Origin Clan and going to war against the Corpse Pavilion is totally different, okay? One is on par with us and the other is a fourth-grade Clan association! By then, it’s not up to us to say whether we want to go to the battlefield because they will force us to go for sure!”

Jackie arched his eyebrow and said defensively, “It’s not as if the Corpse Pavilion is specifically targeting us! There’ll be other Clan associations fighting against them too. Besides, their target is to get rid of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion first, meaning they would be the main force in this matter while we’ll only act as supporters.”

Noel shrugged his shoulders helplessly but his lips were pressed in a tight line. “You’re more naïve than I thought. Yes, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would be the main force but do you think they would sacrifice their disciples to protect us? Don’t be surprised if they treat us like pawns. Whatever happens, we’ll be the unlucky ones. As an informal disciple, I might not be of great help in the war but it doesn’t mean I can defy orders if I was sent as cannon fodder.”

A dry, bitter feeling spread from Noel’s mouth to his entire body, making him feel deathly uncomfortable. Jackie arched his eyebrow and patted him on the shoulder. It was not as if he did not understand Noel’s feelings.

“The war hasn’t started yet. I told you all these so that you can mentally prepare yourself. When the time comes, you alone can choose the path that is best for you,” said Jackie.

Noel did not know whether to laugh or cry when he heard this. He shrugged his shoulders and said, “You’re right. But what can I do? How can I turn my back on my own Clan association in times of need? I might as well give up my identity as an informal disciple and be branded as a coward.”

Brook sighed. As a runner disciple, his presence was usually not needed on the battlefield but even so, there was a high chance he would be sent there if the Clan association became desperate. Then, he would be nothing but cannon fodder. Thinking about this made him feel like he had been thrown into quicksand, the more he struggled, the quicker his death would be.

Noel slammed down his teacup angrily on the table. His eyes were filled with outrage. “What the hell are those bastards from the Corpse Pavilion thinking? Why break the peace now? Isn’t it enough for them to rule the south? Why do they have to come here to make trouble?”

“There’s no need to be confused and there’s no need to question their intelligence. There must be a reason for them to go through all this effort and my

guess is, it has something to do with the secret resource place," said Jackie, a little down.

Then, he suddenly jerked his head up and solemnly asked, "What do the two of you know about the secret resource place? We need to exchange all the information we have so that we can figure out why the Corpse Pavilion is going through all this length and why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion isn't doing anything about them."

Noel furrowed his brow and gave it some thought before answering, "Actually, I have no idea what. I've only heard that the secret resource place has a lot of treasures and resources and both the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddled Origin Clan want to claim the place for themselves. Hence, the war. But presumably, those things should not be very precious, otherwise, why would the Thousand Leaves Pavilion not claim it for themselves?"

As the ruler of the north of West Cercei State, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion not only had a strong influence but also occupied most of the resources, so that they could continue to grow and prosper.

Chapter 2112
As Noel mentioned, if this secret resource place was quite precious, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would definitely not allow two third-grade Clan associations to compete for it; they would definitely take it for its own!

Brook cut in at this moment, "Maybe they discovered something very valuable in the secret resource place and the news reached the ears of the Corpse Pavilion. That's why they've spared no expense to come here to get it for themselves."

Noel nodded. It was logical, what Brook said, but then he asked, "Then why would the Thousand Leaves Pavilion not do anything about them? According to Brother Jackie, the trap array around Mount Beasts had been there for more than ten days!

"No one, apart from Brother Jackie, came out in those ten days. Anyone with a little bit of a brain would have figured out something was not right and sent someone to investigate the matter. They're bound to discover something if they do that.

It's not something that could be easily missed so how is it that the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and our Dual Sovereign Pavilion did not do anything? Don't you find this weird? What are they planning exactly?"

Both Jackie and Brooke were struck dumb by his questions. It looked like they would not be able to figure out what was going on unless they had more information. This and all the other questions knocked against their skulls repeatedly.

Jackie's brain began to hurt and he threw his hands up in surrender. "We shouldn't torture ourselves, trying to figure things out with little information we

have. Things will become crystal clear if we give it a little more time. Besides, the truth will always prevail. In the meantime, we just need to pay more attention to our surroundings."

They chatted for a bit longer. Noel was on duty that day so he left first. Brook was about to leave when Jackie requested him to go to the Seven Stars Hall on his behalf to exchange the loot he got from Mount Beasts for some contribution points.

Jackie placed the corpse and spirited core of the Frost Wolf, as well as the corpses and spirited cores of the other monsters he had hunted, on the table with a bang. The scent of metallic blood instantly filled the room.

Brook's eyes widened and he pointed a trembling finger at the corpses. "Oh my god, these are all innate level monsters! You're really amazing to have single-handedly killed so many."

Jackie furrowed with confusion. 'Why is he so shocked? He had seen what I can do in the wager battle arena, right? Therefore, isn't it normal that I would be able to kill a few innate level monsters?'

Jackie's confusion must be really obvious as Brook immediately knew what he was thinking about. The corner of his lips lifted and he said, "The disciples usually go in groups when hunting in Mount Beasts. It's not because they want to but it's because they have to since it's so dangerous there, especially if you come face-to-face with a herd of monsters.

"At that time, you not only have to fight against the monster in front of you but you also have to keep an eye out for the other monsters. That's where having a teammate would come in handy. Not to mention, only those who are extremely strong would dare to step into the areas where the innate level monsters are active."

Jackie finally understood why Brook was shocked by the corpses but Jackie really did not think this much when he was hunting the monsters. The only thought he had was to kill the monsters and get the hell out of there as soon as possible.

Chapter 2113
Then there was also the fact that he accidentally stumbled upon these monsters in the acquire level monster area, where they were not known to be active. He now knew that the innate level monsters had no choice but to escape to the periphery of the mountain because their usual area had been occupied by the Corpse Pavilion.

Jackie laughed dryly and said, "I guess I'm just lucky… or maybe I'm really that strong. Haha."

Brook became a little speechless at him. "Gah! It frustrates me to compare myself to you. I will definitely not go to the mountain alone! That would be akin to looking for death! I still can't believe you single-handedly killed all these

monsters. By my rough estimation, you'll get at least four hundred contribution points for these!"

Brook's estimation was right. In total, Jackie received four hundred and thirty contribution points, more than what he imagined. The points should last him quite a while if he used them wisely. After all, he did not have to use it in the Martial Art Techniques and Martial Skills Hall or consultation with the elders, so to him, these contribution points were ample enough.

In the evening, Jackie went to the Soul Hall. It just so happened that Noel was also on duty tonight. After seeing Jackie walking in, Noel raised his eyebrows in surprise, poured some tea for him, and said a little unhappily, "Aren't you working a little too hard? It hasn't even been a day since you came back from Mount Beasts. You're making me look really bad, you know."

Jackie chuckled and said, "It's not that I want to be this hard working. It's just that I'm afraid I won't be strong enough to handle whatever may come in the future."

After thinking about it carefully, Noel felt that what Jackie said was right. After all, in critical times like these, training to become more powerful was like putting insurance on one's own life.

Noel took out the array board matter-of-factly. "The same difficulty as last time?"

Jackie shook his head and said, "Increase the difficulty to level five this time."

Upon hearing this, Noel was not even surprised. He simply nodded, in his heart, he had already assigned Jackie to the ranks of monsters. He would not even be surprised if Jackie asked him for the maximum difficulty level.

"For the sake of my mental wellbeing, I'm going to stop comparing myself to you…" muttered Noel to himself. His hands never stopped adjusting the runes on the array board and immediately a white light flashed, signaling that the difficulty level had been increased. Without even lifting his head, Noel pointed at the Array Eye Door and said, "You can go in now."

Jackie nodded and entered the Array Eye Door. Once he was in, he felt the familiar feeling as the darkness enveloped him. It was as if everything was being swallowed and even time and life had lost their meaning there.

Chapter 2114

The array opened with a 'cracking' sound and waves of soul-shockwave rushed toward Jackie without holding back. Jackie inhaled deeply and started meditating. He kept performing the seals with his hands and the remaining power from the Shattered Soul Crystal sealed in his body was activated.

It was much easier to form soul swords under the support of the remaining power from the Shattered Soul Crystal. Ten days passed within the blink of an eye and Jackie successfully formed five more soul swords after using the last bit of remaining power from the Shattered Soul Crystal. This meant that Jackie was

capable of forming 15 soul swords to carry out attacks during fights. There was no need for them to fight for such a long period of time and Robin would be killed by Jackie with a single attack if he bumped into Robin right now.

Jackie exhaled deeply and decided to stop training. After all, an actual fight was the only criterion for a person's combat power and he planned to carry out two wager battles after he left the array. The Array Eye Door opened and Jackie walked out of it, step by step.

He had just returned to the real world when he heard Noel hump up coldly and spoke in a mindless manner. "What does this have to do with me? I'm not going. Even Wesley is just following his brother's lead. What can I do?"

Zayn, who was sitting beside Noel, seemed to be very excited. "I feel like we cannot say everything for sure. What if he really likes you…"

Noel rolled his eyes at Zayn and grabbed Zayn's clothes to put some distance between them as a disgusting look appeared on his face. "Hey, have you been eating a lot of spirited herbs recently and have forgotten your common knowledge? Which chosen disciple isn't hand-picked from the formal disciples?"

The heated discussion grew between those two that none of them realized the Array Eye Door had opened and Jackie had exited the array. Jackie walked toward them curiously when he heard what they were discussing. "Who really likes who? Wesley has a brother?"

The sudden interruption shocked the duo in discussion and Zayn almost jumped up from his seat. Noel frowned and spoke with a twisted expression on his face. "Jackie, are you a cat? You don't even make a sound when you walk out. Are you trying to scare us to our deaths?"

Jackie shrugged his shoulders helplessly. "You guys did not hear the loud sound when the Array Eye Door opened and you blame me for not making a sound when the two of you were so focused on your discussion. Alright, let's not hover over these useless matters. Please let me know first, what were you talking about? Does Wesley have a brother?"

Noel pulled a chair next to him and asked Jackie to sit. Jackie did not reject the gesture and poured himself a cup of tea after sitting down. As of then, Noel had already assumed Jackie as his close friend and started telling everything he knew. After Jackie heard the entire story, he spoke with a stiff expression on his face. "You mean that Elder Godfrey is getting a disciple and this will be his only chosen disciple?"

Noel nodded and glanced at Jackie with a meaningful look in his eyes. As runner disciple Zayn was still by their side, he could not point things out frankly." That's right, I was also surprised by this. I remembered Elder Godfrey once said that he would not take any disciples. I wonder why the sudden change of mind right now."

Jackie took a deep inhale but said nothing as all sorts o f thoughts were running in his mind.

Chapter 2115
Zayn did not know about the issue between Jackie and Elder Godfrey. Hence, he spoke in a slightly curious manner, “I feel that Elder Godfrey has let things go. In the past, he had been focused on training. Now, he feels that his life will be too boring if he only focuses on training. It’s surely not as rewarding as getting a disciple and teaching that person everything he knows.”

Noel rolled his eyes at Zayn. “Hey, can you stop guessing what the elder has on their mind with your own thoughts? After all, they might have their own agendas.”

Zayn laughed dryly. “You are right. Right now, Elder Godfrey has become one of the formal elders, and based on our rules, we should address him as Elder Eleven.”

They normally would not address their formal elders with their surnames. Instead, they address them based on their ranking. Right now, Elder Godfrey was in eleventh place so they should address him as Elder Eleven.

Jackie was lost in a daze for some time before he suddenly asked. “What about Wesley’s support, Elder Sayer? What’s his ranking? Why do you guys address him as Elder Sayer instead of following his ranking?”

Zayn obviously liked showing his knowledge so he rushed to convey the information to Jackie at this moment. “Elder Sayer is in the eighth place and according to the rules, we should address him as Elder Eight. However, Elder Sayer disliked this name for unknown reasons and he really hated when others addressed him as Elder Eight. Hence, everybody addresses him as Elder Sayer in order to not offend him.”

Jackie could not help but raise his eyebrows when he heard this. He never expected Elder Sayer to be in the eighth place and that meant that he was quite strong. No wonder Wesley was so arrogant. With Elder Sayer as his support, he had the capital to be confident. Jackie sighed and continued to ask, “Who’s Wesley’s brother? Why haven’t I heard about him before this?”

Zayn quickly answered the question. “The Sayer family has a flourishing population and it’s only natural for their family to have more than one Wesley Sayer. Wesley’s full elder brother, Oliver Sayer, is one of our formal disciples. Based on common practice, Oliver should have become Elder Sayer’s chosen disciple. However, he had become a formal disciple for six months but he hadn’t become a chosen disciple for unknown reasons. You do not know about him because he was not in the sect during these few months as he had gone out to complete his mission.”

Since Oliver was Wesley’s full brother, their relationship should be quite close. Based on Wesley’s temperament, he would definitely complain without holding back and describe Jackie as a heinous person. It was possible that Oliver would

take this opportunity to cause Jackie some trouble. Jackie could not help but rub his temple. “How strong is Oliver?”

Noel replied, “He’s in the final stage of innate level and is quite strong. I heard that there’s a huge possibility that he will fight for the position of the chosen disciple.”

A question appeared in Jackie’s head. “Is it possible that he never became Elder Sayer’s disciple because he wants to fight for the position of the chosen disciple?”

Noel was stunned after he heard this. “It looks like you don’t even have common knowledge about this. Even if a disciple is accepted to be an elder disciple, he or she can still become a chosen disciple as long as they have the capability to be in the top ten among all disciples. There isn’t any conflict between these two.”

Jackie had some realization after he heard this. If that was the case, Oliver’s actions were unexplainable. Was it possible that Elder Sayer did not accept Oliver as his elder disciple because he did not value Oliver?

Noel spoke as he immediately knew what Jackie was thinking about when he saw Jackie’s expression. “It’s not what you think. Elder Sayer values Oliver and he personally trained Oliver for a period of time previously. We also wonder why he did not accept Oliver as his disciple. In the beginning, we even discussed this matter for several days. However, nobody could figure out Elder Sayer’s thoughts and the matter was dropped.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2116-2120

Chapter 2116

As this matter caused such a big sensation, many formal disciples were eager to give it a try. Noel’s lips twisted into a helpless, envious smile. “We informal disciples can only observe the scene; chances like these won’t ever happen to us. Still, I feel that everybody can be Elder Eleven’s final disciple, apart from Oliver.”

After having said this, Noel stared at Jackie for a considerable time, and Jackie understood what he meant. As Wesley’s full brother, Oliver would definitely hate Jackie, seeing as deep grievances ran between him and Wesley. Jackie might be the first person he would go after the moment he achieved great feats.

Jackie chuckled and said, “I believe that Elder Godfrey is a wise person. He won’t be somebody else’s pawn for unknown reasons and hand over all his belongings to outsiders.”

Zayn frowned as he obviously did not understand what Jackie meant by what he said. However, Noel’s eyes lit up as he sipped his tea, pretending that he did not care. “You have a point there, but there aren’t any guarantees that something won’t go wrong. It’s best to be prepared so that we won’t be overwhelmed by then.”

Jackie nodded. He knew that Noel was reminding him that they should be prepared for trouble, seeing as he had a massive conflict with Wesley before. However, Jackie was not afraid. After all, he was not useless, and this pressure would become his motivation

Noel was stunned when noticed how Jackie's expression did not falter, even after he had mentioned the concerns. "You have quite an impressive mentality."

Jackie raised his brows. "This has nothing to do with my mentality. Even if I worry about such matters every day, I can't stop whatever that's going to happen. If so, why don't I focus my attention on training and work hard to increase my fighting prowess so that I can deal with anything thrown at me next?"

Jackie enunciated every word when he spoke and with a clear mind. The more he acted like this, the more Noel felt envious of people like Jackie. Jackie's confidence did not appear out of nowhere. Instead, it came from his talents, which would support him constantly. Compared to Jackie, he was a common person.

Still, he understood that it was unfair to compare two people, so he changed the subject of the conversation back to how Elder Eleven was recruiting an elder disciple

He sighed softly and said in a relaxed manner, "Elder Eleven mentioned that his disciple has to be able to satisfy all his requirements."

Zayn was slightly puzzled and asked, "What does he mean, satisfying all his requirements? I remembered that Elder Eleven didn't mention the conditions of his satisfaction."

Noel sneered; he was obviously mocking Zayn's intellect. "Can't you understand what he's trying to say? Which of our formal elders don't try their hardest to have an unpredictable image? They'd never voice out their intentions straightforwardly. Instead, the disciples would need to guess the hidden agenda behind their words. The intention behind what he said is quite clear. Doesn't satisfying all his requirements mean that this person has to be excellent in everything? Elder Godfrey has to be satisfied with this person's talents, temperament, and looks!

Zayn's expression visibly shifted, showing his realization. His frown slowly disappeared as he smacked his thigh. "So that's what it is. I thought that Elder Eleven's requirement is for his disciple to flatter him. If that's all he needs, I can do it, too!"

Noel could not help but roll his eyes when he heard what Zayn said. In the end, he refused to even look at Zayn.

Chapter 2117
"Which of the elders do you think will accept disciples who are good at flattery? There are tons of disciples who like to flatter the elders, so is there a need to

accept them as elder disciples? If he likes to listen to flattering words that much, I can instantly give up my position here and wait for him at his door every day to tell him a hundred flattering sentences, different every time."

Zayn guffawed at this, and even Jackie could not fight the faint smile that crept onto his face. However, Noel was indifferent toward their reactions.

On the way back to his room, Jackie was still thinking of what they had discussed. He was certain that Elder Godfrey had his own plans for suddenly announcing his intention of getting his last disciple at this moment. He did not believe that Elder Godfrey was able to forget his near-death experience at Mount Beasts.

People at Elder Godfrey's position were extremely hateful of injustice and they would not repay grievances with virtue. It was possible that he had other intentions, too. As Jackie's thoughts migrated to this issue, he started to speculate about the person who framed Elder Godfrey before. However, he did not know much at this moment and could only review the suspect list before shaking his head.

The matter was placed aside for the time being.

It did not matter who planned to get a last disciple; it had nothing to do with him. What he needed to focus on was his fighting prowess. After Jackie returned to his room, he let Nash out for some fresh air after he closed the door. At that moment, Jackie had not yet stabilized his position in the Hestia Continent. Hence, he did not let all his family out of the Mustard Seed. They could only hide inside and focus on training.

He planned on spending six months to handle these intricate relationships and find a safe place so that the others can come out of the Mustard Seed's confined space to explore this area.

Nash pulled a chair over and started to ask about what happened before he managed to sit down. To prevent his father from getting overly worried, Jackie gave him a brief summary of everything he knew. Nash sighed softly after he heard what Jackie said." This is definitely a world that follows the law of the jungle, and fights can be seen everywhere. Public morality isn't what it used to be, so you have to be extremely careful."

Jackie nodded. He was about to say something to comfort his father when Nash continued, "I don't agree with you sharing this with Noel and that runner disciple, Brook. Although they're your acquaintances, we can't be sure that others won't inquire about your news through them. If they sell news about you to others, won't others plot against you?"

Jackie had already thought this through. He also pulled a chair over and sat down before speaking in a hushed tone, "To be honest, I didn't tell them everything, and I only informed them about things they need to know. They'd only grow suspicious of me if I don't say anything. After all, I can only obtain information from the two of them. If I didn't say anything and only asked for information, they'd grow even more suspicious of my relationship with Elder Godfrey. It's

better to make up an excuse and let them have that. Apart from that, I don't think that they're capable of investigating my relationship with Elder Godfrey."

After all, the two of them met at the edges of Mount Beasts. Apart from Jed and the others from Thousand Leaves Pavilion, nobody else knew what they experienced there.

Chapter 2118
Jackie paused before he continued, "Apart from that, I don't think we'd be able to hide such things, and it's not a big deal even if I tell anyone about it. Would Elder Godfrey help me when I'm in trouble? Would I support him and influence the situation in the sect? As an informal disciple, I'm unimportant to these high-status people. Naturally, they won't involve me because of their grudges with Elder Godfrey."

Nash nodded slightly at that; Jackie did make sense. Despite his ever-present worry-one that had dwindled, at least—he changed the topic, not wanting to stick around with the previous topic. " Didn't you tell me that you saw a corpse after you came out of the Ten Absolutes Trap Array?"

This instantly reminded Jackie of the corpse he saw. Since they were back in the sect, they were considered in a safe area. He had closed the door, and nobody would know what was going on if he took the body out at this moment. Jackie performed several runes with his hands, and the Mustard Seed was once again opened. He then took the body out of the Mustard Seed and placed it on the table in front of him.

This body was the same height as Jackie, but it was different from the usual corpses they saw. There were many hideous, weird-looking runes carved on the white bones. Jackie wondered what these runes were for, and who this person was.

Nash gasped softly, obviously surprised by this body covered in runes. He fell into deep thought before he asked, "There aren't any space rings on this body?"

The space ring was the most common storage item In the Hestia Continent, and great masters usually would have one for themselves. However, the space ring would also fall apart due to the instability of its internal structure as time went on, and there was not any support from a person's true energy.

However, this body did not look like a commoner, and he might even be a master from outside the Hestia Continent. If that was the case, his space ring should be at a much higher level compared to normal masters, and the internal space should not have fallen apart, even though many years have passed.

Jackie shook his head. From the moment he saw this body, he had been subconsciously looking for the space ring on the body. However, only the Scattered Soul Crystals on the floor were seen apart from the green clothes this person had on,

Nash could not help but lament, “There isn’t any space ring? That’s weird. There might be one, but somebody might’ve taken it away.”

After all, every master would have a space ring with them unless the space ring had fallen apart as time passed by. However, there would still be a hint of its existence, such as fragments of the broken ring, even though the space had fallen apart and it could no longer be used. However, Nash was even more puzzled when he heard from Jackie that not a hint of its existence could be seen.

Jackie slightly waved his hand. “Let’s not dwell in this; let’s move on. On top of that, the appearance of this body outside the Ten Absolutes Trap Array is a questionable matter. Since we don’t know what happened, we shouldn’t think about it right now.”

Nash nodded and said helplessly, “The value of this body is only the runes carved on the bones. Still, do you understand it?”

Jackie shook his head instantly. “Although the great master left me many precious memories, I’m still unable to understand these runes.”

Nash smiled bitterly and remarked, “Then, this body is useless to us right now. We might be able to unlock this secret in the future, but right now.”

Jackie waved his hand and interrupted his father before Nash managed to finish. He then stretched out his hand to point at the right hand of this corpse.

The corpse’s right hand was curled into a tight fist. Surprisingly, the knuckles on this corpse’s right hand were thick and huge for unknown reasons two to three times thicker than the bones of a normal person’s fingers. They were so thick that Jackie could not see what this person held so tightly in his hands, despite zoning in.

Chapter 2119
Nash frowned and also focused on the corpse’s right hand. He even raised the corpse’s right skeletal hand, and he could only see from the side that the right hand was holding onto a transparent crystal.

However, they had no idea what this transparent crystal was.

The father-son duo exchanged glances and reached out toward the deceased’s right hand, trying to pry off the fingers. They initially thought they would have to struggle in opening the fist, seeing how tightly balled it was, but both Jackie and Nash heard something cracking. It sounded like a mechanism had been activated when they gave it a try.

Startled, both men released the right skeletal hand. The hand fell on the table with a thud, and the tightly closed knuckles opened up, laying flat on the table. The crystal the hand was holding onto so tightly also appeared in front of Jackie and Nash.

This was a transparent crystal the size of a palm, and it encased a sort of glowing red liquid inside. The red liquid immediately attracted Jackie's attention. He focused on the red liquid and noticed that the liquid seemed to be somewhat alive. The liquid was rushing around in the crystal and seemed to vehemently try and break free from the crystal's restrictions. On top of that, there were several words carved on the crystal.

Jackie frowned and subconsciously caressed his chin a s he said, "It's some runes or spells again."

Unexpectedly, Jackie perked up and said, "These aren't runes nor spells; this is a kind of text."

Nash immediately looked at Jackie in surprise. "How do you know that this is a kind of text? Do you recognize it?"

Jackie nodded, and all sorts of emotions flashed through his eyes. He sighed softly before pointing at the words and said, "This is a text only found in the Divine Void World. As a first-grade world, the Divine Void World has its own civilization. Hence, the language and texts they use are different from ours. The words carved on the crystal are from the Divine Void World, and it roughly means that the red liquid in the crystal is a drop of blood from the Ancient Eclipse Dragon!"

Nash's eyes widened in surprise. "This is dragon's blood?"

Jackie nodded with a serious expression on his face." This is dragon's blood, no doubt. However, it isn't The blood of a pure-breed dragon, but a branch of the dragon clan, the Ancient Eclipse Dragon. Regardless, this is the blood of a mythical beast!" declared Jackie, his voice seemingly quivering when he spoke.

Among the memories that the great master left him, there was an introduction of the dragon clan. The dragon clan was a huge race, and only pure-breeds were extremely strong. Some of the pure breeds even had strength comparable to the Divine Void World's head of clans. The Ancient Eclipse Dragon could not be considered as pure breeds, but they inherited 90percent of the dragon clan's blood. They were considered a stronger branch among the dragon clan and could be addressed as mythical beasts.

The blood of monster beasts with a high fighting prowess was considered valuable as they could increase a person's strength and potential after absorption, let alone the blood of mythical beasts. A mythical beast's blood not only contained a huge amount of true energy, but it also contained the beast's talents and skills. Every mythical beast had their exclusive talents and skills. He remembered that the Ancient Eclipse Dragon's talents and skills were its control in the laws of space.

Chapter 2120
Thinking of this, Jackie remarked, "If I'm able to absorb this drop of heavenly blood, I'll be able to improve my Divine Void Heavenly Path!"

The martial art technique that Jackie practiced was the Divine Void Heavenly Path, and it was all about control over the laws of space. This drop of blood from the Ancient Eclipse Dragon contained the talents and skills of the beast's control over the laws of space. If he could absorb this drop of blood, his control over the laws of space would be improved!

Amid Jackie's excitement, Nash suddenly chimed in," Don't you think that this is rather strange?"

Jackie raised his brows and looked at Nash, confused. Nash sighed softly before he explained, "The first item was the Scattered Soul Crystals, and now it's the blood of the Ancient Eclipse Dragon that contained the laws of space. It feels like these two items were purposely prepared for you, and you just so happened to need them. Don't you think that this is too coincidental?"

A look flashed past Jackie's eyes, and he slightly nodded. It did seem coincidental, but this was not the coincidence Nash was talking about. He pointed to the words on the crystal. "I don't think that this is what you think it is. Since the texts carved on this crystal are words only used in the Divine Void World, then this person might've come from that world. The martial art technique and martial skill I practice come from the Divine Void World. If that's the case, I'm from the same clan as this person. It doesn't seem like a coincidence that he has things that I need."

Nash smiled bitterly and said, "How could I have forgotten about this? Since the words carved on the crystal are only used in the Divine Void World, this person must be somehow connected to that place. If that's the case, this isn't a coincidence, then. Does this also mean that the Ten Absolutes Trap Array under the Cliff of Sorrow also has some sort of connection with the Divine Void World?"

Jackie thought about it for some time and replied," I'm not sure about that. However, I think that there must be a reason why this body appeared outside the Ten Absolutes Trap Array. If they're connected after all, it's definitely a huge mystery. I just wonder if this has anything to do with the great disaster that landed the Divine Void World…"

Nash stretched out his hand and placed the crystal containing the blood of the Ancient Eclipse Dragon into Jackie's hands. "You can look into these things later, when you've grown stronger. Right now, you should focus on increasing your abilities."

Jackie frowned as he tightened his grasp on the crystal in his palm and nodded. At this moment, a sudden knock appeared outside the door, accompanied by urgent-sounding voices.

"Senior Brother Jackie, are you there?" It was Brook.

Following that, Noel's voice could also be heard coming from outside the door, "Where else can he be? Nowadays, he either stays in this small room of his or visits the Soul Hall. Since we didn't see him at other places, he's definitely inside. What's he doing, though?"

Jackie chuckled as he stored the body and Nash back into the Mustard Seed. After he did that, he tidied the slightly scattered table before he opened the door.” What happened?”

Noel gestured with his chin. “Let’s talk inside.”

Jackie also understood that it was not convenient for them to talk in the open. He stepped aside and let both of them into his room. They had obviously familiarize themselves with Jackie’s room as they poured themselves some tea and sat down on the chairs in the room.

It was only after he sipped his tea that Noel began,” The situation is getting messed up outside, and you’re still relaxing in your room.”

His words caught Jackie’s attention. “What’s going on outside? Did somebody expose the matter regarding the Corpse Pavilion, and we’re asked to join the battlefield?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2121-2130

Chapter 2121
Noel guffawed in disbelief. “If it’s something that important, do you think that I’d still be able to sit here, enjoying tea while chit-chatting with you?”

That eventually clicked for Jackie; Noel made sense. However, what else could mess things up apart from this?

Noel did not wait for Jackie to ask as he instantly continued, “Didn’t I tell you before, that Elder Eleven is getting his one and only last disciple? The formal disciples are fighting among themselves because of this. Oliver even joined the wager battle arena with other formal disciples because of this. The wager battle arena is so lively that there’s no place to stand, seeing how jam-packed it is there. Do you want to go and take a look?”.

Jackie sighed hopelessly; he did not think that this was such an important matter. It was just a matter of gaining the final disciple, so what was so special? Although this final disciple would only affect where Elder Godfrey sided in the future, it would only affect the greatest issue the sect was facing. Was that not the problem the Corpse Pavilion caused?

Jackie shook his head without thinking twice. “To be honest, I’m not in the mood to take a look now, even if they’re fighting to the death. It’s all just fights among a handful of formal disciples.”

Brook’s and Noel’s mouths twitched at this. They exchanged looks and could not help but smiled bitterly before they looked at Jackie in a slightly helpless manner. Jackie was surprised when the two of them were looking at him in such a way.

Did he say something wrong?

Noel gave Jackie a thumbs-up and shook it in front of Jackie. “I have to admit that masters like you don’t have the same thoughts as useless morons like me. Mind you, everyone can barely focus on training

Cause we’re all too focused on these fights. You, on the other hand, don’t even care about the mess outside and only focus on your training. I admire your mentality.”

There was not even a hint of ridicule in Noel’s sincere last sentence. He was unable to achieve Jackie’s mentality of only focusing on what was important while ignoring the outside world. He was not the only one, however, as the clan brothers were also attracted by what was going on. Some of their junior brothers even came out of their retreat just to take a look at this matter.

Brook's eyes widened, and he stretched his head forward as he said, "But this is related to who our future sect master will be. Are you not curious at All?

Jackie also poured himself a cup of tea and spoke as he drank the tea. "Can I control who the future sect master will be? I won't join such events; it's just a waste of my time."

Noel laughed at this, so much so that his shoulders trembled. "You have such a good mentality, but you'll be forced to join the event after a couple of days, even if you don't wish to do so."

Jackie looked up in a puzzling manner. "Why?"

Noel immediately informed Jackie about the latest order that came from the sect. Ten days later, Elder Godfrey would be announcing in front of the entire sect which disciple he would accept as his last disciple. Apart from the disciples who were in retreat, away for training, or the deacons, everyone else had to be at the gathering spot for roll call by seven in the morning.

Jackie spoke reluctantly, "Is it such a grand event? Everyone has to be there, apart from those in retreat and in training? It's just one last disciple. What does this have to do with informal disciples like us? Isn't It enough for us to know that there is such a person?"

Chapter 2122
Jackie did not want to participate in the event. Noel pursed his lips and said, "Elder Eleven is one of the formal elders, and this is his only disciple. This isn't considered a big deal for our Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Our disciples understand what has happened among the formal elders, which is why everyone pays special attention to this matter. On top of that, all the other formal elders also pay high importance to this matter. Ten days from now, all the formal elders of the inner gate will also be at the gathering spot for roll call."

Jackie's lips twitched at this. Since all the formal elders would be there, he could not act like he was above the rules and excuse himself from the event. He raised his brows, and the dignified face of Elder Godfrey flashed through his mind. He was incredibly curious as to who Elder Godfrey would choose as his last disciple.

Although this had little to do with him, he did not wish for Elder Godfrey to accept Oliver as his last disciple. No matter what, Oliver was his enemy, and it was, of course, not a good thing for his enemy to become stronger.

Noel took another sip of his tea and said, "I'll knock on your door in ten days' time, and we can go together."

Jackie nodded.

When Brook saw that Jackie was indeed not interested in the battles, he tugged at Noel's sleeve and said," Senior Brother Noel, since Senior Brother Jackie isn't going to the wager battle arena, let's go and have a look. Even runner disciples like us have put aside our work to observe the lively scene."

Brook's eyes shone brightly as he spoke, his excitement all too obvious.

Noel nodded as he, too, wanted to observe Oliver's capabilities with his own eyes. The two of them came to an agreement and left for the wager battle arena after exchanging some words with Jackie.

After closing the door, Jackie calculated the time he had. Ten days was neither short nor long, and it should be enough for him to absorb the blood of the Ancient Eclipse Dragon.

He did not wish to waste any time. He was not in the mood to participate in the exciting event that had attracted the interest of all the sect's members. To prevent others from disturbing him, Jackie asked

Nash to come out and keep an eye out for him.

After learning about Jackie's plan, Nash patted Jackie's shoulder. "Don't worry, no one will disturb you on my watch. Still, this is the blood of a mythical beast. Are you confident that you can absorb it without possibly harming yourself?"

Nash had limited understanding of the mythical beast's blood. He had heard about it, but he did not know how to absorb it. On the contrary, Jackie had a deeper understanding of the mythical beast's blood. After all, the great master was from a first-class world, and only first-class worlds contained information about these mythical beasts. Hence, he knew a lot about them.

Jackie raised his head and shot Nash a comforting smile. "Don't worry about me. Although this drop of mythical beast's blood seems to be roaring with life now, it's only acting out of instinct and won't put me in much danger."

Nash raised his brows and said worriedly, "Is that so? Why do I feel that this drop of blood from the mythical beast seems quite difficult to be dealt with? Will it gain control over you instead?"

Jackie shook his head. "No, that won't happen. I may suffer while absorbing this, but there is no danger of a backlash."

No longer in the mood to entertain questions, Jackie placed the crystal on the table. This crystal was made of a special material, and if Jackie did not have the memories of the great master, he might be hovering over the crystal at that moment.

Although the crystal contained the Ancient Eclipse Dragon's blood, nothing could be done if the crystal could not be broken. Fortunately, Jackie had inherited the skills from the great master, and he knew how to break the crystal to retrieve the Ancient Eclipse Dragon's blood. With a flip of his hand, a strand of pure true energy fell out of his body and flew into the crystal along his fingers. Then, the sound of mineral cracking was heard as cracks instantly appeared on the originally iron-like crystal.

Chapter 2123

The mythical beast's blood that darted left and right like a beast that broke out of the cage seemed incredibly invigorated. It looked like it wanted to rush out and escape into mid-air. How could Jackie allow that to happen? He took a black dagger out of the Mustard Seed and cut his right palm.

Blood immediately flowed out of the wound, and just as the drop of mythical beast's blood was about to escape, he raised his wounded hand to grab the blood and imprisoned it in his palm. Jackie then quickly pressed the drop of blood at the position where his wound was opened. The mythical beast's blood was instantly diluted after it came into contact with Jackie's blood.

Hiss!

It sounded like red-hot soldering iron placed into cold water. Nash frowned, and the worried look in his eyes deepened.

However, Jackie did not say a word. He instantly pressed onto the newly cut wound after his blood had merged with the mythical beast's blood. The mythical beast's blood flowed into Jackie's body in such a way. Jackie could only hear his heart beating heavily as if his heart had been filled with lead.

Jackie's skin quickly turned red and hot. He did not hesitate and immediately sat down with his legs crossed. He started to perform seals as he activated the Divine Void Heavenly Path. He used the power of the martial art technique to suppress and absorb the mythical beast's blood.

"What is that?" Jackie suddenly spoke in surprise.

Nash was stunned. He saw Jackie looking ahead and was reacting as if he had seen something shocking. Meanwhile, nothing changed inside Jackie's room. What, then, had shocked Jackie that he reacted like that?

Nash frantically blurted, "What's happening to you? What did you see? Are you having hallucinations? Have you gone crazy?"

Nash's persistent questioning made Jackie realize his father had not seen what he had. Jackie exhaled softly and remarked, "I saw a translucent divine dragon!"

"What divine dragon? Why don't I see it?" Nash's expression was a little stiff. Upon thinking things through, however, he realized that this was the effect of the mythical beast's blood.

This was an endless starry sky, and the vast galaxy shone dazzlingly beside Jackie. Among this starry sky, a several hundred-feet long dragon rose circled the sky. This gargantuan dragon did not look exactly the same as the divine dragon's in Jackie's impression. Although it also had the body of a snake and four legs, its scales were shining. The dragon seemed to be translucent, and there were times where its body dimmed down. It looked as if it would disappear at any time.

At this moment, a man in black clothes suddenly appeared some distance away. The man was also hidden among the starry sky. For some unknown reason, the black-clothed man suddenly roared toward the Ancient Eclipse Dragon. “All you can think of is escaping at times as crucial as this? Aren’t you ashamed when you claim that you’re from a purebred mythical beast’s bloodline?”

The Ancient Eclipse Dragon did not answer this person’s question and continued to hover in the starry sky. The lack of response from the Ancient Eclipse Dragon seemed to have angered the man in black, and he suddenly punched into the void, sneering as he did.

Chapter 2124
Jackie felt a blast of destructive energy hammering toward him as the mysterious individual threw his punch. That power even caused the surrounding starry sky to tremble. It was a strong wave of power that Jackie had never experienced in the past.

With an audible bang, Jackie fell backward and tumbled onto the ground, having lost his balance.

When Jackie opened his eyes again, he had already returned to the real world and saw his father staring at him worriedly. Nash stretched out his hand and gently patted Jackie’s cheek. “Are you alright? What did you see? Why are you sweating so much?”

Jackie’s breaths were quick, and his heart raced vigorously. It even felt like his heart was thumping at 190 beats per minute. He knew it was all an illusion, but that punch was truly terrifying. Had he truly stood before the black-clothed man back there, there was no need for the man to punch him: Jackie would have turned to ashes and disappeared from this world with just that man’s exhale.

Jackie waved his hand weakly and allowed Nash to help him sit upright. “I’m fine, it’s just an illusion. A horrible one, that is.”

The moment Jackie spoke, Nash suddenly blurted, rather surprised, “You’ve broken through into the intermediate stage of innate level!”

Only then did Jackie realize that he had broken through into the intermediate stage of innate level upon hearing Nash’s words. On top of that, his mastery of the Divine Void Heavenly Path had also improved. He stretched out his arm, and with a grasp of his palm, he felt that his entire body was filled with inexhaustible power.

Jackie did not know if this was an expected or unexpected result. He had been in the initial stage of the innate level for some time. If he followed his speed of training when he was in Daxia, he would have broken through several realms a long ago. However, the Hestia Continent was a high-level world, and their training system was different. If it was not for the Ancient Eclipse Dragon’s blood, it would have taken Jackie some time to enter the intermediate stage of the innate level.

After realizing this, he commented, “It’s so troublesome to break through a small realm. No wonder warriors in the spring solidifying realms are already considered masters in the West Cercie State.”

Nash nodded. During this period, he had been busy training while studying the ancient scripts Jackie found to better understand the Hestia Continent. As a result, he had a better understanding of the continent.

He helped Jackie up from the ground with his right hand and guided Jackie to sit on the bed next to them before patting the dust off of Jackie’s clothes.

“There are so many realms in Daxia, and we only realized that those realms belong to the acquired state after we arrived at the Hestia Continent. From this point alone, we can see how big the difference between both lands are. Right now, a small breakthrough of the realm in this world is equal to several realms in Daxia. You should probably drop this, then. You don’t face a shortage of teachers, martial skills, or martial art techniques. You’re in a much better state compared to other martial artists. As long as you focus on your practice, I’m sure you’ll be able to achieve higher realms, let alone the spring solidifying realm.”

Jackie had a small smile on his face, surprised by his father’s words. Nash seldom praised him with so many words, but this had lightened Jackie’s mood. In fact, Nash was right when he thought about it. The worlds are of different levels, and the difficulty to break through was naturally different.

Nash did not wish for his son to be constantly struggling with how difficult the future was. Hence, he changed the subject of the conversation and said, ” What did you see just now? You look visibly terrified, and it’s like you’ve seen something worse than a ghost.”

Jackie could not help but gulp upon recalling what he saw. “You are right about one thing: it’s scarier than a ghost. I saw an extremely powerful martial artist, and I also saw a mythical beast, the owner to this drop of blood. I saw the exchange between those two. Unexpectedly, the mythical beast’s blood also contains the memory of the beast.”

Chapter 2125
Jackie was certain that the illusion he had seen was the memory of the mythical beast, and it was something that left the deepest impression on the beast. Nash frowned in surprise.

Just as Nash was about to question Jackie further, somebody knocked on the door. Jackie frowned and asked subconsciously, “Who’d interrupt me at this hour?

Unexpectedly, Nash looked at Jackie in surprise and said, “It must be Noel and Brook. Didn’t Noel tell you? He said that he’d bring you to the gathering spot for the roll call in ten days.”

Jackie was visibly stunned, evident in the way his eyes widened at Nash's words. The corners of his mouth slightly trembled. "Are you saying that I've trained for ten days?"

Nash saw Jackie's expression and instantly understood why he was so surprised. Nash nodded and said, "Ten days have indeed passed."

Jackie exhaled a long sigh of relief as a trace of disbelief flashed across his eyes. He had just fallen into the illusion, and it felt like he had only been meditating for less than an hour. He only saw the Ancient Eclipse Dragon flying in the sky and the man in black clothing. Who would have expected that Jackie's short experience in the illusion meant that ten days have passed in reality?

Nash patted Jackie's shoulder. "Alright, put aside the things that you can't figure out at this moment. If you don't open the door for them, they'll break down the door sooner or later."

"Jackie! Are you inside? I did say I'd come get you in ten days. Did you run off to train at some other place?" There was a hint of helplessness in Noel's voice. Jackie reacted sighed softly and immediately got up from the bed. After returning Nash to the Mustard Seed, he opened the door.

Noel studied Jackie's form the moment the door opened before he stretched his neck to take a look at the room behind Jackie. When he saw that nobody was there, he asked curiously, "I knocked on the door so much that my hands hurt. What were you doing inside? Don't tell me that you didn't hear me knocking on the door?"

Jackie chuckled helplessly as he quickly moved away from the door, allowing Noel and Brook, who followed behind, to enter his room. Brook was about to go in for a cup of tea when Noel stopped him. "Why are you still going in at this hour? We need to report ourselves at the gathering spot in fifteen minutes. Do you want to be the last one to arrive there?"

By then, Brook snapped out of it. He had been so used to entering Jackie's room that it had become a habit. He quickly nodded. "You're right; this isn't time for tea. The reception for accepting a new disciple will begin soon, and almost all our disciples will be there."

Noel glanced at Jackie and pointed at his clothes. "Do you want to have a change of clothes before we go?"

Jackie looked down at his clothes. He had been so focused in his training that his blood circulation was too fast. His clothes were soaked in sweat and looked extremely dirty.

He smiled awkwardly. "Please wait for a moment. I'll clean up, and we can be on our way shortly."

After Jackie changed, the three of them walked toward the gathering spot. It was a place where the Dual Sovereign Pavilion held important meetings, and so spacious that it could accommodate 5000 to 6000 people

“How did the battle go the other day?” Jackie asked Noel on their way to the spot. “Did Oliver win?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2126-2130

Chapter 2126
Noel exhaled deeply, and there was a slight hint of envy in his tone as he spoke, “As expected, he won, and he won without contest. The guy who instigated Oliver only managed to endure three attacks from Oliver before Oliver managed to stab him in the chest, and blood literally splattered all over the floor. Fortunately, Oliver knew the boundaries and stopped in the end. That person wasn’t badly wounded, but his wounds were serious enough to make him bedridden for a month or two.”

Brook, who was beside them, nodded vehemently. A calculative look flashed past his eyes when he thought of what happened on that particular day.” That day, the two of us found seats, though not without struggling to, seeing how cramped the place was at that time. The observers cheered so loudly when Oliver stabbed that guy’s chest, and they yelled how invincible Oliver was.”

Noel glanced at Brook hopelessly. “If I hadn’t stopped you at that moment, you would’ve yelled the same thing.” Although Brook was rather inconsiderate, he also knew about the grudges between Jackie and Wesley. “I wouldn’t have shouted like that, no. Oliver’s brother, Wesley, kept causing troubles to Senior Brother Jackie previously. How can I cheer for the enemy?”

Of course, Brook looked sheepish as he responded, to which Jackie chuckled and paid no mind to it. He did not think that it was a big deal, even if Brook yelled once or twice at that moment.

The closer they were to the gathering spot, the more disciples were gathered around the area. They then noticed just how relatively crowded the road was. When they arrived at the gathering spot, the place was full of people, and it was a boiling cauldron of voices. Jackie estimated that there were about 3000 to 4000 people present. Nonetheless, there had to be more than that

Noel patted Jackie on his shoulder and reminded him, “Today, the informal disciples, formal disciples, and all other disciples are supposed to gather at different places. Let’s find the informal disciples’ team and stand there.”

The informal disciples were arranged to stand at the far west side. The arrangement from their positions to the east side were the formal disciples, elder disciples, and a team that consisted of less than ten people. Without the

need for any introduction, Jackie knew that those ten are the legendary chosen disciples.

The chosen disciples were the hopes of the entire sect. These disciples might become the sect's elders or even the sect master in the future. As they were too far apart, Jackie could only see the faint outline of these people's faces. They were rather good-looking and donned a light green outer shirt with several begonias sewn onto their waist area. The position of the chosen disciples were even slightly higher than the deacons as their future was immeasurable.

The ten of them stood out at the far east corner, and other disciples looked at the chosen disciples, green with envy.

Noel pressed his hand on Brook's shoulder and spoke while gesturing with his chin, "You should stop looking at them. After all, this isn't the first time we're seeing them. We're never going to achieve that position, but Jackie can give it a try. Jackie, if you succeed at becoming a chosen disciple in the future, don't forget about us both."

Jackie smiled but said nothing. The three of them occupied a position at the edge of the informal disciples. No matter where they were, Jackie liked places where he could hide from other people's eyes as he disliked the attention. Noel knew about Jackie's habit so they purposely found a slightly remote corner when they were looking for a place to stand.

The gathering spot was a huge fan-shape, and there were two round platforms more than ten meters high at the front. The platform in front of them was surrounded by array flags, and it looked just like the battle platform in the wager battle arena. The function of both platforms should be similar and were places for disciples to have their battles. The area on the back was where the elders sat.

Chapter 2127
The further south area was where the disciples stood. This place was like a huge square. Although it was the size of two or three football fields and could hold thousands of people, the disciples stood apart. Disciples of the same level stood in the same area. It seemed slightly crowded as the outer disciples, the group with the largest number of people, were gathered at the south area even though it was a spacious area.

Jackie could hear very well what everyone around him was talking about. It was then that a man with a mustache standing in front of him pointed at the battle platform as he exclaimed, "I think that Mateo Bailey should be selected by the Eleventh Elder. After all, he's in the fifth position among the formal disciples, and he doesn't have any family supporting him. On top of that, I heard that he is aloof and very temperamental, similar to the Eleventh Elder. It must be him!"

A long-faced man standing next to the guy with a mustache snorted and said disdainfully, "Can you stop guessing what the formal elders are thinking of with your limited brain power? Don't you know that they've already predetermined the disciples to be chosen?"

This sentence stirred up reactions among the disciples, just like how a tossed stone could cause thousands of ripples. Several people around the long faced man turned around to look at him while the man with a mustache also looked at the long-faced man in surprise. Jackie and the others were also attracted by what the guy said as they turned to look at him.

When the man saw how the people around him stared at him curiously, he suddenly felt important. After all, he seemed to be the only one who knew about this among everyone else around him. Tipping his chin upward slightly, he explained, though with a tinge of arrogance in his tone, “This news has been spread among the elder disciples, and the formal disciples more or less know about it. Only us, the informal disciples, don’t know the news clearly or have very little knowledge about it.”

He deliberately paused as he reached this point as if he was trying to catch everybody’s attention. The people around him could not accept this, however, and many pressed on the matter.

“Get on it quickly. You’ve explained it ‘till this point, so get on with it. Is it really fun to keep us hanging?”

“That’s right. Since you started talking about it, finish it. Why do you have to stop halfway?”

The people grew more impatient, evident in their insistence. The long-faced man dared not offend everyone around him and quickly retracted the proud expression he had on. “Actually, there are only three people who are the predetermined candidates. After all, the Eleventh Elder is choosing his only last disciple, so the requirements are naturally more demanding. This person not only has to be talented, but they need to have a clean background and be free from unsavory interests. On top of that, it’s best if this disciple is in the final stage of innate level. Among all the formal disciples, there are only three people who are most suitable in that case. The Eleventh Elder will surely choose one among these three: Calvert Atkins, ranked 58th among the formal disciples, Gresham Potter, ranked 63rd, and, finally, Oliver Sayer, ranked eighth.”

All eyes widened at this, and a solemn look flashed through Jackie’s eyes. It seemed that Oliver was ranked in the eighth position among the formal disciples; it made sense why Wesley was so arrogant before. With such a powerful support and a powerful brother, it was true that he could have everything he wanted in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Unfortunately, Jackie had been refusing to accept his power from the start.

After hearing this, the man with a mustache twitched his mouth and said with a trace of doubt in his voice, “We all know that the formal disciples who are in the intermediate stage of innate level are more worth grooming compared to the formal disciples in the final stage of innate level. In that case, why is Oliver among the predetermined disciples when he’s already in the final stage of innate level?”

Chapter 2128
The long-faced man chuckled. “You have no idea about this, do you? Although

Oliver has broken through into the final stage of innate level, he's much more talented compared to average formal disciples. It shouldn't be long before he's on par with chosen disciples. With his talents, he's eligible to be among the predetermined disciples, even though he has already broken through to the final stage of innate level!"

Jackie raised his brows while Noel eyed him nervously. Noel opened his mouth to say something but swallowed his words when he saw Jackie shaking his head at him. Everybody had started to have discussions among themselves because of what the long-faced man said.

"Calvert is in the intermediate stage of innate level and is fifty-eighth in their ranks. His ranking isn't very conspicuous among the formal disciples. Why is he able to overpower other disciples and be selected as one of the predetermined disciples?"

"On top of that, I heard that he doesn't come from a clean background and seems to be related to the Fourth Elder. In that case, will the Eleventh Elder be willing to accept him?"

"That's right. As for Gresham, his ranking is lower than Calvert, and he's in the sixty-third place."

The long-faced man waved his hand to interrupt the discussion when he saw how the discussion had become further away from the main issue. "You guys are steering this discussion in the wrong direction!"

His words immediately suppressed the discussions around him, and everybody looked toward the long faced man. The man scoffed softly and continued, Although the two of them are only among the top hundred among the formal disciples, there are more than three hundred formal disciples, and this means that their rankings are just relatively fine.

"You people are short-sighted if you're only looking at the rankings, though. After all, most of the formal disciples are in the final stage of innate level, and only a small portion of the formal disciples are in the intermediate stage. On top of that, it's rare for a disciple in the intermediate stage to fight their way into the top-hundred. When you think about it carefully, the higher the ranking, the higher the realm of the disciples. This means that all these people have been challenging their opponents who are at a higher level!"

The people around the long-faced man had a sudden realization when they heard what he said. The informal disciples surrounding them only had concerns about their own matters. When it came to the fights among the formal disciples, they only

Everything to them, they immediately understood the importance of the matter.

The guy with a mustache also nodded. "In that case, Calvert is indeed talented for being in the fifty eighth position among the formal disciples, and he's already

close to being in the top-fifty. This proves that he has been challenging somebody of a higher level in every battle!”

The people surrounding them also agreed. “True! All the top ten formal disciples are in the final stage of innate level, and none of the top fifty disciples are in the intermediate stage. This proves how hard it is to challenge somebody of a higher level among the formal disciples. Calvert is indeed a rare master!”

The long-faced man continued on the topic,” Furthermore, it’s not true when you say that Calvert has a complicated background. After all, most of our disciples in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion are related to others in one way or another. There isn’t a way to avoid this, and I believe the Eleventh Elder won’t care too much about such things. As long as this person hasn’t been accepted as an elder disciple and isn’t a direct relative of another elder disciple, the Eleventh Elder will be able to accept it!”

Many people nodded when they heard this guy, seeing how his words made sense. According to what the man said, the predetermined people definitely had enough capital and talents. Others just could not compare to these three.

Noel sighed softly and lowered his voice to speak by Jackie’s ear, “It doesn’t matter if they choose Calvert o r Gresham. Any of them is fine, as long as it isn’t Oliver.”

Chapter 2129
Of course, Jackie knew that Noel was worried about him, so he nodded slightly. “It doesn’t matter even if Oliver is accepted as the last disciple. After all, he wouldn’t let me off the hook, even if he isn’t accepted as the last disciple.”

As Jackie and Noel were muttering among themselves, a sudden commotion erupted in front of them. Following that, a path in front of Jackie was cleared by several people, and several familiar faces squeezed their way toward them. Jackie took a look and could not stop his lips from twitching, unable to hold back from rolling his eyes. He could not be bothered to pay attention to these people, but they loved coming to him like cats who smelled fish from afar.

Wesley had a jade fan-which nobody knew where he obtained-in his hand. Although they were immune to changes in the temperature as they were martial artists, he acted like a handsome young master as he walked toward Jackie, swaying his fan lightly as he did. Behind him was another familiar face; the man with triangular eyes. When the man with triangular eyes saw Jackie, his eyes instantly narrowed into dangerous arcs like a poisonous snake that was dormant in the dark.

Everybody among the informal disciples knew about Wesley, and so did many formal disciples. As Oliver had become the center of discussion among all the disciples as he was about to become the Eleventh Elder’s last disciple, Wesley felt that he was greatly honored as he walked jubilantly everywhere he went. A meaningful smile appeared on his face when he saw Jackie. “Isn’t this Junior Brother Jackie? It’s been a long time since we last met! You seem to be doing well.”

What Wesley said immediately attracted the attention of those around him. Although Jackie was not as well-known as Wesley among the informal disciples, his fame was not something to be ignored. After all, he had once openly beaten Wesley on the wager battle arena, and it was a challenge where the two of them were on different levels to boot!

Everybody knew that Jackie would become a formal disciple soon, and he would have a prosperous time when he became one. Everybody also knew the grievances between these two. Everybody was excited to observe the interaction between them when they saw Wesley coming over to greet Jackie.

Wesley was not the kind of person who would be pliant after being trampled on. They all knew in their hearts that after Jackie had severely injured him, Wesley would fight back since he had recovered. Noel and Brook, who stood behind Jackie, had darkened expressions on their faces. Jackie stepped forward and blocked both of them behind him. He sneered and ignored Wesley.

Wesley seemed to have had a good understanding of Jackie's temper from a long time ago. He was not irritated when he saw how Jackie sneered and said nothing on it. "I heard that you went to Mount Beast a few days ago, and I thought that you were killed by the monster beasts there. Who would've expected that you would return safely."

Jackie snorted softly. In his eyes, Wesley was no different from talkative ladies who loved to gossip. He replied, "And you're still as talkative as ever, even though I haven't seen you for a couple of days. I thought that our previous battle would completely shut you up. It looks like I've still underestimated your mouth."

Jackie's words were intently straightforward, ones that hit Wesley badly, evident on Wesley's reddening face. A gossiping look flashed through the eyes of most of those around them, and they were dying to see both men duke it out right then and there.

The man with triangular eyes roared angrily, "Jackie White! How dare you say such things to Brother Wesley? Do you wish to die?! Don't you know that Brother Wesley's elder brother has returned?!"

Chapter 2130
The man with triangular eyes was naturally referring to Oliver, who was extremely famous.

Jackie, on the other hand, smilingly responded, "Hey, as his follower, can you say something new the next time you speak? Or are these the only words your brain is capable of remembering? You call me a daring person every time, but why can't I be? I've beaten Senior Brother Wesley, who's standing next to you, until he was close to dying, and I'd beat him again!"

The face of the triangular-eyed man darkened as he glanced at Wesley who was beside him, sheepishly. Wesley felt that he had lost face as he stretched out his hand to pull the triangular-eyed man aside. He took a step forward. "Jackie, don't act so arrogantly. Although you defeated me in the past, it was only due to my lack of preparation. Right now, I'm much stronger than I used to be as Elder Sayer

has spared no effort to groom me. You'll find yourself unable to contend against me should we have another round on the battle stage again!"

Wesley's decisive statement proved how confident he was in himself to the people around him.

Jackie raised his brows, unable to even muster the strength to entertain Wesley. However, he knew how Wesley would chatter on and humiliate him with all kinds of vulgarities, even if he did not say a word.

Jackie looked at Wesley as if he was a fool. "Who do you think you are? Do you think that I'd go to the battle platform with you just because you asked me to? I've incapacitated you before, and I've succeeded In defeating you. I don't wish to waste my time with a man that I've once defeated. I naturally know about your brother, Oliver, and you mentioned him in hopes of frightening me. Sadly, I don't pay much attention to the both of you."

Jackie did not speak loudly, but everyone heard his every word. Wesley's face immediately darkened as he had really expected Jackie to have such a sharp tongue. Originally, he came here in hopes of frightening this fearless guy who dared go against him with his elder brother's fame.

Unexpectedly, he did not expect Jackie to catch every sentence he said and fought back. What Jackie said even caused his anger to surge in his stomach. He closed the jade fan in his hands with a swoosh and almost broke the handle with his tight grasp. "Don't Be so pompous! I'm telling you: your leisure days are over! My brother won't let you go!" Wesley roared these words through gritted teeth, and he looked as though he would rush forward and bite a piece of meat off of Jackie's body.

As Wesley's anger and hatred toward him grew, Jackie grew calmer as if he was appreciating the beauty of springtime. His facial expression even looked like he was comfortable and enjoying himself. Wesley's eyes seemed to be filled with poison as he glared at Jackie angrily. He looked like he was about to leap forward to bite Jackie, just to vent his anger.

He grew up as the role model for the children in his family, and the elders placed high importance on him. Wesley had achieved his current status smoothly and without much of a challenge

Although he had an aloof temper and had always spoken in an overbearing way, he had never been looked down on or attacked by others with words. All of a sudden, he felt like meeting Jackie had struck him with nasty luck. His talents and background seem to be nothing in Jackie's eyes as Jackie kept going against him.

Wesley was so angry that his teeth would shatter in sheer force of him gritting them together. "B*stard! I won't let you off the hook so easily, and the Sayer family won't let go of you either. Don't think that you can ride on top of our heads and piss on us just because you're slightly talented right now!"

Jackie sneered; all Wesley could do to him was attempt to frighten him. He smiled in disdain. “I’ve never thought about it in such a way. You’re the one with that much free time, seeing as you keep provoking me. If you didn’t run over here to say such nonsense, do you think that I’d be willing to speak to you?”

The words between both men became rather muffled the more they spoke. The people surrounding them secretly mumbled as they wondered if the two would ignore the rules and start fighting. If that was the case, they would definitely be punished.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2131-2140

Chapter 2131
Noel also felt that the atmosphere was too stagnant, and both Jackie and Wesley were on the brink of a fight. He glanced at Jackie with a slightly worried look in his eyes before he sneakily stretched out his hand a tan area, unseen by the others, to pull Jackie's clothes, all in an attempt to remind Jackie not get too agitated from Wesley's provocation

The corners of Jackie's mouth curled upward. He knew what Noel meant by pulling on his clothes…but he ignored it. Wesley was trembling with anger as he stared at Jackie resentfully. Compared to Wesley's furious expression, Jackie was extremely calm. Although he was arguing with Wesley when he said those words, his expression remained stoic.

Wesley gritted his teeth as he spoke, "My brother will never let you off the hook; he'll kill you!"

"What else can you do besides making threats?" responded Jackie calmly.

These words were like a big rock stuffed into Wesley's throat, and Wesley felt that his interaction with Jackie would only make his blood boil. His sensible nerves were at the brink of disappearing, too. His eyes had reddened like red-colored glass beads, and they almost popped out of his sockets. At this moment, their surroundings suddenly quieted down.

Everybody looked forward subconsciously and saw a dozen or so men in their fifties or sixties, in dark blue robes, walking steadily toward the big round platform behind them. Such a scene caused everybody to instantly hold their breath. Jackie immediately saw his old acquaintance. Elder Godfrey was at the last position, but Jackie felt that he had the most overpowering aura.

However, he had a slightly cold expression on his face and did not look like he was the one getting a last disciple today. These people were naturally the formal elders of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Although they had different appearances, they had similar auras. They had the demeanor as men without losing their majestic temperament as elders.

After all 11 of them went on top of the last platform, they sat down from east to west according to the order of their strengths. At this moment, Wesley did not dare act so irate, even though his anger flared still.

With that, he turned around and glared at Jackie fiercely. Wesley lowered his voice and hissed, "You just wait and see!"

Wesley then walked a couple of steps forward to keep some distance between himself and Jackie. Jackie sighed lightly, finally no longer having to be

interacting with this disgusting fly. Noel and Brook let out a long sigh of relief when they saw how Wesley turned around to leave. Brook slowly spoke as he placed his hands on his chest and a tangled expression appeared on his face, “You both were talking so sharply at one another that I thought you’d break out into another fight.”

Noel also chimed in, “You two met squarely in the argument, and it felt like you’ve reached the point where only death would stop the argument.”

Jackie raised his brows and said disapprovingly,” Naturally, the argument will only end when one of us dies. People like Wesley will never stop once somebody offends him. He’ll only cease to do anything when I manage to trample him under my feet.”

Brook sighed helplessly. “Actually, I wish to persuade you now as it’s better to take a step back. However, I feel that masters like you have your own persistence and arrogance. It’ll be useless no matter what I say.”

Jackie raised his brows. “This has nothing to do with my inner persistence and arrogance. I’m not the one who caused him trouble. My principle has always been that I won’t offend anybody if they leave me alone. Why should I spoil him?”

Chapter 2132
Jackie’s tone was extremely calm when he said this. It sounded like he was simply telling Brook what he wanted to eat and drink. However, every word he said showed his temperament. Brook could not help but look at Jackie deeply, not knowing how to respond.

Jackie was in no mood to think of their opinion toward him at this moment. Instead, he placed all his attention at the platform behind.

All 11 elders had been seated, and Jackie silently observed the core power of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. No matter how many disciples there were in the sect, the people who truly supported the Dual Sovereign Pavilion were still these people, who were the strongest among all.

The person seated at the first position was, of course, the First Elder. He looked at the disciples below the platform with a kind look in his eyes and a smile on his young-looking face. Compared to the First Elder, the Second Elder had a strict expression on his face as there was a calculative look in his eyes. He looked at the disciples under the platform indifferently.

All the other elders had their own specialties, but all of them seemed to have an overbearing temperament. In the end, Jackie focused his line of sight at the Eleventh Elder, Elder Godfrey. He looked the same, but his eyes lacked anger and suspicions. Only indifference and calmness remained in his eyes as he seemed to be uninterested in anything.

At this moment, almost all the disciples were observing the formal elders on the platform, like what Jackie did. Although other disciples knew more about the

formal disciples compared to Jackie, they still could not help but observe the elders as if they wanted to observe something from these people.

Jackie raised his brows and asked in a low voice, “Why is the sect master nowhere to be seen?”

Although the elders were the core power of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, the sect master was the person in power and the decision-maker who issued the orders. Why did the sect master not show himself when all eleven elders were gathered here?

Noel slightly shook his head. “We have no idea about this. In fact, the process of getting a disciple today means nothing much to the sect master. After all, the Eleventh Elder is in the eleventh place, and he hasn’t grown strong. The sect master may not pay much attention to this. On top of that, our sect master has always been extremely mysterious. I’ve only seen him once after joining the sect for such a long period.”

To this, Jackie no longer questioned it. Nonetheless, his curiosity toward the Dual Sovereign Pavilion Master grew.

The First Elder stood up as he felt that the timing was correct when he saw that the disciples had quieted down. Although the First and Second Elders kept fighting among themselves, the First Elder was still in the first position. He was the leader of all the elders, and he was the one to make any announcements at such moments.

He stood up straight and walked three steps forward at a steady pace. He still had a gentle look in his eyes, but the expression on his face had turned into a dignified one. He slightly cleared his throat before he spoke, “Originally, there’s no need to alert so many people when an elder is just taking disciples. However, there’s something else we need to announce to all you disciples, so we gathered everybody here.”

The First Elder’s words puzzled everyone. The disciples only thought that they were gathered for one reason, and that was to witness who would be the Eleventh Elder’s last disciple. Unexpectedly, there was something else they wished to announce.

Jackie also raised his brows. When Noel informed him of this matter, Jackie was surprised about the reason to involve so many people when it was just the acceptance of a last disciple. It looked like he had been making silly assumptions about the elders’ thoughts as they had their own plans.

The First Elder waved his hands to stop the disciples from their discussion, and the disciples continued to listen to the Elder’s announcement.

Chapter 2133

The Elder spoke loudly, “Several days ago, the elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion visited us and told us something extremely important. I’m sure everybody knows that our West Cercei State only has two fourth -grade sects.

One of us is located in the North while the other is in the South, and we do not interfere with one another. Recently, the upper management of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion received news that the Corpse Pavilion in the South had secretly transported a large number of disciples over to the North. We're sure that this isn't good news. Hence, everybody needs to get themselves ready during this period."

The news was like a stone that caused a thousand ripples. This was the first time everybody heard about this, and their eyes were widened. Originally, no one dared to discuss anything as the elders were present. However, none of them could suppress themselves when they heard the news, and chatters erupted in the area.

"What? The Corpse Pavilion is coming to the North to cause us trouble again? We've been in a peaceful state all these years. What do they wish to do here?"

"They must've gone crazy. Although the Corpse Pavilion is also a fourth-grade sect, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion at our northern side is also a fourth-grade sect. Both sects have equal strengths, and we're separated by the Mount Beasts. Isn't it good for us to continue developing without interfering with one another?"

"Do they have other plans in mind?"

"No matter what, this news must be true as the First Elder announced it in front of so many of us here. We might go to war next. I've been too optimistic to think that we won't be going to war soon after the matters regarding the Muddled Origin Clan have been placed aside."

Some of the slightly smarter people immediately recalled the unexplainable actions by the sect. Some of them slapped their thighs and said, "No wonder our sect still recruited a new batch of informal disciples after the Thousand Leaves Pavilion stopped the war. This is the reason, it seems

All sorts of discussion noises hummed continuously by their ears like a hundred flies. Among all the disciples, Jackie was the only one who had the most information about the matter. After all, he had personally traveled to Mount Beasts, and he also knew what the Corpse Pavilion's disciples wanted to do. On top of that, he also had information about the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and Thousand Leaves Pavilion's plans as he heard Elder Godfrey's speculations.

The sounds of discussion under the stage grew louder, but the First Elder had no intention of stopping the disciples. He only looked at the disciples with a kind look in his eyes and a smile on his face.

Jackie slightly raised his brows. The more the First Elder acted in such a way, the more Jackie felt that this old man was a cunning character with unknown plans. After a little while later, the First Elder interrupted the crowd's discussion by speaking again, "I know that everyone will come up with their own plans after receiving this news. However, I will remind everybody now that it doesn't matter what your plans are, as the most important thing is what the sect wants you to do. The situation isn't so bad yet, and everybody can continue to carry out your tasks in peace. I'll immediately notify everybody if there are any arrangements."

Such words did not comfort everyone. Instead, it only agitated them more. Nonetheless, nobody dared step forward to say anything. After all, they had to step forward and service the sect after enjoying so many years of grooming by the Dual Sovereign Pavilion as the sect's disciples.

The First Elder glanced at the Eleventh Elder, who was seated at the fat west corner. He mentally scoffed when he saw how calm and unwavering the Eleventh Elder was. However, nothing was seen on his face.

"Alright! The discussion about this shall end here as there's something else that we need to announce tonight."

Chapter 2134
The First Elder slightly moved his body to the side after he said this and looked toward Elder Godfrey.

Elder Godfrey, of course, could feel the First Elder's line of gaze that seemed kind. There still was not much of an expression on his face as he stood up stiffly from his seat and walked toward the central part. He did not stand in front of the First Elder when he arrived behind the First Elder. Instead, he stopped about three steps away from the First Elder.

He then signaled for the First Elder to continue speaking of this matter. Everybody knew that the main agenda had started when they saw the Eleventh Elder stepping forward. Although the previous news caused everybody to be uneasy, no one forgot about the reason they had gathered on this spot.

The First Elder slightly nodded. "I'm sure everyone knows that the Eleventh Elder wishes to recruit a last disciple, and today is the day he'll announce his choice. However, I've also communicated with the Eleventh Elder before this, and the Eleventh Elder doesn't know much about our outstanding disciples as he's so focused on training during normal days. Hence, we've gathered all the disciples here today with hopes of choosing the most excellent disciple among you as the last disciple."

The First Elder spoke of how they would choose the most excellent disciples among them, but in truth, he only meant the formal disciples. The informal disciples were there just to make up the number.

After the First Elder finished speaking, he looked toward where the formal disciples were at, focusing on looking at Oliver and Calvert. He was about to continue speaking when the Second Elder, who had been silently sitting on the second chair, suddenly stood up, much to everyone's surprise.

The First Elder's expression stiffened as he looked at the Second Elder with a slightly unhappy look in his eyes. However, he did not say a word because of his manners. In fact, the First Elder had anticipated that the Second Elder would step forward at this moment.

The Second Elder also took two steps forward, and rather expressionless at that. However, he did not stand three steps behind the First Elder like what the

Eleventh Elder did. Instead, he stepped forward and stood by the First Elder's side.

He did not look at the First Elder's expression and instead turned his gaze toward the disciples present. Everybody thought that the Second Elder would say something as he stood forward at this moment. However, the Second Elder remained silent. He acted as if his sudden movement was just a random act.

The First Elder secretly rolled his eyes. The others might not understand what the Second Elder meant, but he understood what the Second Elder wanted. His eyes landed on Gresham unwillingly and exhaled deeply. "Although the Eleventh Elder has no idea how many excellent disciples there are, we've been paying attention to the outstanding disciples in the sect while we're training. Right now, we happen to have three outstanding disciples."

He looked toward the direction of the formal disciples before he continued to speak. "Oliver Sayer, Calvert Atkins, and Gresham Potter, please come forward."

After that, three people among the formal disciples came walking out of their teams. The three of them were tall, handsome, and were definitely people of outstanding talent.

The first person walking in front of everybody else looked slightly similar to Wesley, and there was no doubt that he was Wesley's elder brother, Oliver. However, Oliver seemed to have better manners than Wesley.

The three of them strode forward and stood in front of everyone, and everyone stared at the three.

Even though thousands of pairs of eyes stared at them, however, the three of them kept their composure, and nothing else happened.

The man with a mustache standing in front of Jackie could not help but scoff coldly. "Just like what you said, they've already predetermined their choices. If so, why did they make it sound like all the disciples of our sect are given the choice when they initially mentioned the matter? I'm sure that many people had been looking forward to this for a couple of days, and none of them realized that the group of people had been predetermined. This is really…"

The long-faced man standing beside him chimed aloofly, "Although they've already predetermined their choices, they still have to go through the process."

Chapter 2135
The informal disciples surrounding Jackie had unnatural expressions when they heard this. They must be thinking of how hypocritical these formal elders were. Jackie was not surprised by this as no matter how he interpreted these three people, they were the most suitable choice.

The First Elder looked at those three under the platform with an extremely genial look in his eyes as if these were his grandsons.

The First Elder spoke in a gentle tone, “The three of you are extremely talented and are extremely suitable to be the Eleventh Elder’s last disciples, seeing as none of you are elder disciples of other elders. However, it doesn’t matter how suitable the three of you are, as there’s only one availability. This is why you three need to completely show your talents and strength today to catch the Eleventh Elder’s attention.”

What the First Elder had said immediately caused the disciples gathered under the platform to have another heated discussion.

Noel said softly, “Regardless, they still have to go through a fight in the end, and the results will be decided with their strength.”

Just like what the First Elder said, the three of them were suitable in every aspect, but there was only one position. Hence, they still had to battle to fight for the position, and the most excellent disciple would become the Eleventh Elder’s last disciple.

The Eleventh Elder raised his brows after he heard this, and it looked like he wanted to say something, but the First Elder paid no mind to the Eleventh Elder. At this moment, his attention was focused on those three formal disciples standing under the platform.

He still had a gentle expression on his face as he said, “The battle platform in front will be where you three shall show your talents and strength. The three of you shall take turns in joining the battle, and those with the most wins will be the most talented disciple.”

The disciples gathered below started getting excited after the First Elder finished speaking. It was a meaningful thing for the disciples to witness a great battle. They would be able to learn battle techniques on top of increasing their experience just by witnessing a battle between disciples with great talents.

However, Gresham, who had been extremely quiet, suddenly knelt on one knee. “First Elder! I think that it’s unfair if only the three of us are fighting in a single battle!”

Gresham had spoken clearly and loudly, thus everyone could hear him. His words had effectively stunned them, and they stared at Gresham with widened eyes. They secretly admired Gresham for being so daring as what he said was equal to refuting the First Elder’s face on the spot. He was saying that the First Elder was unfair for arranging these battles.

Of course, the First Elder’s expression darkened, and he looked at Gresham sharply. “Unfair? How is this unfair?”

Gresham had been kneeling on the floor with his head down all the time. However, there was not much respect in the tone as he spoke, “Although Oliver is also a formal disciple, he’s much stronger than the two of us. On top of that, he’s already in the final stage of the innate level while myself and Calvert are

only in the intermediate stage of the innate level. It's unfair that we have to fight him from a lower realm."

What Gresham had said darkened the First Elder's expression. He was about to reprimand Gresham when the Second Elder, who had been standing aside without saying a word, suddenly spoke up," Gresham is right. It's unfair for them to fight like this."

There was instantly a tit-for-tat momentum at the gathering spot.

Although Brook had joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion for several years, he had always been a runner disciple and had never seen such big scenes. At this moment, however, he was amazed by what he saw as the First Elder and Second Elder seemed to be getting into a fight in front of all the disciples. He looked toward Gresham and could not help but lamented, "Gresham is so daring. How could he say something like this? Isn't he afraid that the First Elder will cause him trouble later on?"

Noel smiled when he heard what Brook said. "I would've said the same thing if I'm Gresham."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2136-2140

Chapter 2136

What Noel said immediately attracted the attention of those around him. Jackie looked at Noel with a curious look on his face. Noel's face started blushing when he felt the gazes of others. He coughed softly and tried to calm himself down. "Why are you guys looking at me? Don't you know the relationship between them?"

A hint of confusion appeared in the eyes of many people when he said this. Obviously, they had no idea of the relationship between these people, and they had only heard of the ranking of these formal disciples from the long-faced man. What Noel said was obviously hinting that the predetermined disciples had complicated relationships with the elders.

Jackie glanced at Noel. "Why don't you stop dropping hints and just get to the point. I really want to know where Gresham gets his courage to go against the First Elder." Jackie had already made guesses in his heart when he said this and he was just waiting for Noel to personally confirm his assumption.

Noel nodded and said seriously, "In fact, Gresham is going against two people by himself."

The people around him were even more surprised when they heard what Noel said. Noel did not tantalize everyone on purpose and continued explaining, "I'm sure everybody knows about the relationship between Oliver and Elder Sayer. Elder Sayer is an unwavering supporter of the First Elder. On the other hand, Calvert has a great relationship with Oliver and I heard from others that Calvert

has a close relationship with the Sixth Elder. Calvert's mother is from the family that supported the Sixth Elder. In the beginning, I thought that the Sixth Elder would accept Calvert as his elder disciple."

Everybody immediately understood what was going on after they heard Noel's explanation. Noel continued to speak and did not care if the people around him understood what he said. "The Seventh Elder recognizes Gresham's talents. There was once when Gresham returned from his training outside with an injury and the Seventh Elder personally gave him pills to cure his wounds."

Noel stopped speaking at this point. On the other hand, Jackie continued, "The Sixth Elder and Elder Sayer support the First Elder while the Seventh Elder supports the Second Elder. This is why you mentioned previously that Gresham is going against two people by himself."

He heard from Noel previously that half of the formal elders supported the First Elder while the other half supported the Second Elder. That was why Gresham spoke insolently as he was fighting for the best chance for himself. Although Jackie disliked Oliver, he had to admit that Oliver's strength was undeniably strong as he was capable of being in the eighth place among the formal disciples.

Although Gresham might be as talented as Oliver, there was a difference between their realms. Gresham was in the 63rd position and he definitely would not be the opponent of somebody in the 8th position. The two of them had a great difference between them

Noel's words successfully helped Brook in understanding the complicated relationship between these people. He mumbled as he widened his eyes, "In this case, it doesn't matter if Oliver or Calvert becomes the Eleventh Elder's last disciple as they would represent that the First Elder had won. On the other hand, the Second Elder would only win if Gresham becomes the Eleventh Elder's last disciple."

Chapter 2137
Noel looked at Brook in a satisfied manner before he stretched out his hand to pat Brook on his shoulder to instigate that Brook had answered correctly. What Brook said had completely broken the doubts in the hearts of those people around them.

Special thoughts flashed through the eyes of almost everybody present. This battle for the position of the last disciple looked like it was just a matter of the Eleventh Elder getting his one and only last disciple. However, it actually involves the battle between two elders, and the position of the sect master is at stake. That was why all the elders were mobilized and all the disciples were so excited.

At this moment, Jackie finally understood what Noel meant by saying he would have said the same thing If he was Gresham. Gresham did this with hopes to get rid of Oliver. After all, the chances of him being the last disciple would be 30% less with Oliver's present here.

On top of that, Oliver was slightly stronger than him and he did not have such a good relationship with Oliver. Oliver might kill Gresham after they go onto the battle platform, but he would stop at the correct moment when it came to facing Calvert. After all, the two of them were on the same team. No matter who became the Eleventh Elder's last disciple, it would be a win for the First Elder.

The First Elder stood on the large round platform and looked at Gresham, who was standing under the platform. The First Elder was not a dummy. The reason the Second Elder stood next to him was to support Gresham. The Second Elder naturally did not wish for the First Elder's choice to be the last disciple. The First Elder sneered as he would not give the Second Elder what he wanted. "Gresham Potter! Do you know what you are doing is treacherous to your elders!"

Everybody was surprised when they heard what the First Elder said. None of the disciples could withstand such a terrible accusation. The lethality of being accused as treacherous to his elders was so powerful that Gresham's face turned slightly pale. However, he still knelt down with his body. "First Elder, these are such heavy words. I just feel that this is slightly unfair as I'm the one fighting with two senior brothers."

Gresham said this to tell the crowd that he was not refuting the First Elder and was just fighting for his rights. On top of that, he was also mocking the First Elder as he should not be accused of treacherous because of this. The First Elder sneered. "As the First Elder of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, I work hard to preside over the sect's matters. As a mere formal disciple, have you honored me by questioning the fairness the moment you open your mouth? If this isn't a treacherous act, what is?"

There were finally some changes in the Second Elder's cold expression. He curled his mouth and smiled mockingly. He did not turn to look at the First Elder but instead looked straight ahead at the disciples gathered underneath. "First Elder, don't you feel that you've spoken too seriously? He was just fighting for some fairness for himself, how can his actions be considered treacherous?"

The First Elder humphed coldly and suddenly raised his head. He wanted to have a debate with the Second Elder for 300 rounds but the Second Elder did not wish to continue exchanging nonsense with him. The Second Elder continued, "Oliver has already broken through into the final stage of innate level and the value of grooming him isn't high no matter from which aspect of things."

Oliver's face darkened as he heard this. Standing among the informal disciples, Wesley's heart beat fiercely and he was unable to close his mouth in panic. He was afraid that his brother's predetermined quota would be canceled by them with just a few words. If his brother successfully becomes the Eleventh Elder's last disciple, his status would also rise accordingly. By then, not only would Elder Sayer be his support, the Eleventh Elder would become his support too. In that case, he would be able to act as he wished in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion in the future.

The First Elder narrowed his eyes and glanced at the Second Elder angrily when he heard this. "What do you mean by the value of grooming him is low? There are so many disciples in the final stage of innate level in our sect. Do you mean that

all disciples in the final stage of innate level aren't worthy of being groomed by us?"

Chapter 2138
The First Elder's misdirection of blame did not cause the Second Elder to panic.

"I don't mean that. You are taking my words out of context. Who in the room hasn't gone through the final stage of innate level. If I meant that, wouldn't I be talking about myself too?" said the Second Elder evenly. If the Eleventh Elder must accept the last disciple then he must be excellent in all aspects. The cultivation value is also a point that must be considered. The adaptability of the final stage of innate level is not as high as that of the intermediate stage of innate level. You should know about this."

The higher the cultivation level is, the lower the chance of new talents to be tapped. This is something everyone knows.

The First Elder waved his long sleeves and said dismissively, "Oliver is at the innate level and his talent is very high. It shouldn't take long before he is in the running for the position of the chosen disciple. With these facts in place, do you think his cultivation value is low?"

They did not see eye-to-eye in this matter, and they would quarrel endlessly because of this problem. The Second Elder was unwilling to continue on like this, but the First Elder was adamant to get his way.

At this time, there was no need for Gresham to say anything. The firepower of the war was concentrated on the Elders, but the three people in the audience waited quietly. The only way anyone could tell what they were feeling was by the emotions in their eyes.

The First Elder wanted Oliver to fight. Whether the Eleventh Elder will choose Oliver or not, he would play a big role in this last disciple dispute, just as Gresham was worried about before. The First Elder wanted the three of them to let Oliver attack Gresham with improper means. At least let Gresham be bed-bound for a month or two so that the quota would fall smoothly to Calvert. The person backing Calvert was the Sixth Elder. Both he and Elder Sayer were Calvert's unwavering supporters.

The Second Elder resolutely refused to let Oliver participate in the dispute of the last disciples. He was not a fool so naturally, he knew what the First Elder was planning. If he succeeds, Gresham would have a miserable end. The two people continued to quarrel for another fifteen minutes or so while all the other disciples stared at each other with wide eyes. They did not expect to see two Elders quarreling so ferociously today.

"I'm telling you! By doing this, you are depriving the disciples of the opportunity. As the Second Elder, you should consider every disciple and be impartial, but look at what you are doing now, taking away the opportunities for the other formal disciples…"

The Second Elder sneered and rolled his eyes. “I’m doing this for the sake of my disciples. It’s unfair for Oliver to participate in the competition of the last disciple. Everyone knows that he’s ranked eighth amongst the formal disciples! Calvert stands no chance against him at all..”

“Alright! That’s enough!” said Elder Godfrey, tired of their bickering. He let out a long sigh. The argument between the First Elder and the Second Elder was about to make his eardrums explode.

If it was before, he would not accept any last disciples at all. It was all because of the recent events that made him change his mind. He scoffed, and cast a cold glance at the First Elder and the Second Elder. Why are they getting so heated up when it was him who was the one recruiting the last disciple? He of course knew the answer to this question.

He turned to face the disciples in the audience. “I am grateful for your input, but at the end of the day, it is me who gets to decide who becomes my last disciple.

Chapter 2139
The First Elder and the Second Elder shut up in an instant. Elder Godfrey was right. They could quarrel with each other until their mouths ran dry and still had no say in who the last disciple would be.

Elder Godfrey’s eyes remained facing the audience.” As to who my last disciple will be, I already have someone in mind. I have said before that my last disciple has to be excellent in all the ways I find important.”

Jackie arched his brow. Noel had analyzed and explained this sentence to him before. He thought that Elder Godfrey meant to say that his closed disciples must be excellent in all aspects. With this in mind, his gaze fell on Oliver and the other two, who were handsome, talented, and came from prominent backgrounds. Faultless, in every way.

Just as he was thinking about it, Elder Godfrey’s voice rang loudly in everyone’s ears. “There’s no need for the three of them to battle each other. I already have a candidate in mind.”

Everyone’s body stiffened. One by one, they turned their scorching gaze on Elder Godfrey. The most anxious people there were the First Elder and the Second Elder because both of them knew very well in their hearts that whichever disciple he chose, the power behind that disciple would break the delicate balance between them.

The First Elder’s lips were pulled into a thin line, and his eyes were fixed firmly on the Elder Godfrey. Even the Second Elder, who had been calm and relaxed, looked at the Elder Godfrey with a solemn expression.

Elder Godfrey exhaled deeply, and said, “I choose…” These two words made everyone hold their breath and perked up their ears. “Jackie as my last disciple!”

As soon as the words came out, everyone fell silent; only the sounds of heavy breathing and heartbeats could be heard. Everyone started to wonder if there was a problem with their hearing.

“What did the Eleventh Elder say? Who did he say he has chosen as his last disciple? Jackie? Who is that?”

“I must have heard it wrong. Is there a Jackie amongst those three up there?”

Jackie was well-known among the informal disciples, but most of the formal disciples, let alone the chosen disciples, did not know who he was. Everyone was looking at each other skeptically. Did they have auditory hallucinations?

Elder Godfrey thought that he was being clear enough, so he repeated it again in a loud voice, “I choose Jackie as my last disciple!”

This time, there was an explosion of uproar, as if the ice was poured into boiling oil. Everyone was at a loss for words. Even Jackie himself found his mouth to be slightly ajar. He had to clean out his ears to make sure he did not hear wrong.

Chapter 2140
He even wondered if there was also a Jackie amongst the formal disciples, but he dismissed this thought as soon as it popped into his mind. After all, he knew Elder Godfrey’s secret. Even so, he did not expect that he would be put in the spotlight when he had come as a spectator.

Noel and Brook were struck dumb. The two stood on the spot in a daze and there was disbelief written all over their faces as if they had just been told that they had won the lottery.

Noel turned his head and saw Jackie with the same expression as he did. “The Eleventh Elder just chose you as the last disciple…”

Noel’s voice was a little hoarse, while Brook was so shocked that he could not utter a single word at all.

Wesley started glitching. He thought that it was all a mistake when the Eleventh Elder announced Jackie’s name the first time but when he repeated it the second time, emphasizing on Jackie’s name no less, Wesley’s mind started to experience a tidal wave of emotions.

“No, it can’t be him! What gives him the right to be the Eleventh Elder’s last disciple? He didn’t even come here by formal means in the first place. He is not qualified to be the last disciple of the Eleventh Elder!”

Wesley insisted on sticking to the narrative he knows well about Jackie. If it was before, everyone might have believed him. After all, the informal disciples were all rubbish, but Jackie had proven himself to be a cut above the rest when he defeated Wesley.

“It’s definitely not him. He is just an informal disciple. Which elder in his right mind would choose an informal disciple to be his last disciple. He doesn’t have the qualifications, nor the network to know the Eleventh Elder at all!” said the man with the triangular eyes firmly.

Wesley was greatly relieved to hear those words and could not agree more with the man with the triangular eyes. There must be a person with the exact same name as Jackie amongst the formal disciples. There was no way in a billion years that it was the Jackie he knew.

However, Elder Godfrey suddenly took a step forward and fixed his gaze on the group of informal disciples. His eyes were full of calmness. He pointed at Jackie and said, “What are you still standing there for?!”

Now there was no way Jackie could deceive himself or others because Elder Godfrey had pointed directly at him. The corners of his mouth twitched, and his complexion turned pale whereas both Wesley and the man with the triangular eyes’ turned dark.

It was really the Jackie that they despise so much!

Wesley immediately felt that he could not breathe, and his eyes turned bloodshot; he gritted his teeth angrily, wishing to die on the spot. He would accept anyone but him! He still remembered that he had bragged to anyone within earshot that his brother would be Elder Godfrey’s last disciple. Then his brother would go further than anyone under the elder’s grooming

What happened was totally out of his expectation. It was like a slap to his face that Jackie was chosen to be Elder Godfrey’s last disciple.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2141-2150

Chapter 2141
Wesley took a deep breath. The corner of his mouth never stopped twitching.

“This can’t be real. Absolutely not! Why would Elder Godfrey choose him?” he said hoarsely. He took another deep breath, and without warning, slapped the man with the triangular eyes violently on the face.

The crisp sound attracted the attention of the people around them. Holding his face, the man with the triangular eyes was taken aback, but he dared not utter a word of anger. . He knew that he was punished for what he had said just now.

At this moment, Jackie was not in the mood to deal with Wesley. He understood the benefits that would come with being the last disciple; after all, that was the reason why so many disciples covet the spot, but those benefits did not hold much attraction to him.

He held the memory of his predecessor’s great ability, therefore, he did not need any elder to teach him anything. Moreover, he was full of secrets, and being in close contact with Elder Godfrey would put him at risk of his secrets being found out. The loss would outweigh the gains if that were to really happen. Besides, he did not really want to be pushed t o the cusp of a social struggle.

However, judging by Elder Godfrey’s steadfast eyes and naked finger pointing at him, he did not have a choice in this matter. It would not do him well to make Elder Godfrey lose face in front of so many people.

The informal disciples near him were staring at him with shocked eyes and had unconsciously parted to make a path for him. He took a deep breath and began taking one heavy step after another. He glanced back at Noel and Brook, who was still staring at him with disbelief. He did not say anything to them but continued making his way to the second round platform.

The gathering spot for roll call was divided into three areas-three round platforms and the square underneath them. The first round platform was used only for the elders to announce important matters. The second round platform was a large battle platform surrounded by flags and a venue for a duel between disciples. This platform was where Oliver and the other two were standing. Elder Godfrey waved at him, signaling him to stand with the three formal disciples. No matter how unwilling Jackie was, he could only bite the bullet and get on with it.

Only then did the First Elder and the Second Elder react. They had gone through extra lengths to make sure that the disciple they had in mind would get chosen to be Elder Godfrey’s last disciple. Hell, they even argued in front of the spectators. This fact alone had caused no end to their embarrassment, and for what? For an informal disciple whose existence they did not even know of to be chosen as his last disciple?

The First Elder's face was black as thunder. "What is the meaning of this, Eleventh Elder? Who is this kid? Why did you choose him to be your last disciple?"

Elder Godfrey arched his brow and calmly said," Because he is excellent in every aspect. Have you forgotten the requirements to be my last disciple? And Jackie just so happens to fit that profile so, of course, I would choose him."

Chapter 2142
The First Elder's chest tightened and his fingers trembled. He snorted with a hint of unkindness, and said, "I thought you wanted to choose the best formal disciple!"

He emphasized the words 'formal disciple' to remind Elder Godfrey that in the history of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, all the last disciples had been selected from formal disciples.

"I'll choose whoever I find the most pleasing as my last disciple," said Elder Godfrey evenly with a smile.

At this time, even the Second Elder felt a little uncomfortable. He glanced sideways at Elder Godfrey, and said, "Alright, haha very funny. You got us. It's time to stop joking around and get down to business."

It was obvious the Second Elder did not agree with Elder Godfrey's choice as well from the way he was putting all this down as a joke. Elder Godfrey scoffed internally when he heard that. Normally, he would not bother to reply as he was certain that the Second Elder knew that he was not joking from all the time he had spent with the Elders.

In fact, he had no doubt that the Second Elder wanted him to rescind his choice so that his own disciples would still have a chance to be in the running for the last disciple. Well, that was not going to happen. He had always taken a neutral stance in the fight between the First and Second Elder, and he planned to keep it that way even though he knew that they would not let him go that easily.

Elder Godfrey sighed and ignored them. He turned to the disciples in the spectator platform, and in a clear voice said, "Jackie will be my only last disciple. That is my limit."

The muscles of the Second Elder's face twitched slightly, as he tried to suppress the annoyance in his heart. "Eleventh Elder, instead of immersing yourself in training, you should have schooled yourself on the rules of Dual Sovereign Pavilion, but regardless, I will tell you how it works today. Everyone knows that the elder's last disciple is actually an elder disciple. Since it is an elder disciple, it must be chosen from the group of formal disciples. If I am not mistaken, Jackie seems to be an informal disciple."

Elder Godfrey's expression darkened.

Wesley was relieved to hear what the Second Elder said. Suddenly, he pushed the disciple in front of him away and dashed madly to the forefront of the line of informal disciples. Under normal circumstances, he would not dare to behave like this, but he had no time for such concerns now.

He knelt down with a plop, and said loudly, "Jackie is indeed an informal disciple, and he has not entered the Dual Sovereign through formal screening methods! In fact, he had not even joined for that long!"

Upon hearing this, the spectators started to whisper amongst themselves. Those formal disciples and chosen disciples who did not know the whole story looked at Jackie with haughty eyes, as everyone knows that the last two batches of informal disciples were only meant to be cannon fodder. These two batches of informal disciples only had to light up three obsidian lights to be accepted whereas they had to undergo so many different tests just to get their foot across the door. Hence, the holier-than thou attitude.

Chapter 2143
For this reason, many disciples were unwilling to treat the cannon fodders as 'brothers and sisters'. It was not hard to imagine their anger when they found out that Jackie was not only an informal disciple but an informal disciple from the batch of cannon fodders!

Internal criticisms about the Eleventh Elder's rash behavior abounded. Was he joking? How could he choose trash like Jackie as his last disciple? What does that say about the rest of them?

Many people could not suppress the anger in their hearts and began to mumble wildly.

"What was the Eleventh Elder thinking? Why would he choose trash like that when he could have his pick at any of those excellent formal disciples in front of him?"

"I bet he never wanted a last disciple at all so he is using this to get away with it!"

"Choosing a last disciple is no small matter. Even if the Eleventh Elder didn't come in contact with us much doesn't mean he should joke about something like this. Maybe he has his reasons, but I can't for the life of me think of what they could be!"

The formal disciples were looking at Jackie like he was a pile of shit, and he could clearly hear all the comments from their mouths. He arched his brow and said nothing. In fact, he never once looked at the Third Elder on the round platform and was acting like this whole thing had nothing to do with him.

Wesley was overjoyed. His plan had worked! He had turned everyone against Jackie. Just a little more push and Elder Godfrey would definitely rescind his choice, and choose his brother to be his last disciple. Some of the spectators did not bother to keep their voice low so some of the comments drifted into the First Elder and the Second Elders' ear.

The Second Elder was looking meaningfully at Elder Godfrey with his eyebrow arched. He chuckled, and said, “You heard it yourself, Eleventh Elder, Jackie is a newly recruited informal disciple and you as an elder, should know what that means. Why I’m willing to bet that he’s not even all that strong. I advise you to reconsider your choice. After all, in one way or another, your last disciple represents you, so wouldn’t you want someone that can make you Proud?”

The First Elder looked like he was about to burst with all the words he wanted to say, but his pride stopped him. He just kept his mouth shut tight, and looked meaningfully at Elder Godfrey.

Elder Godfrey scoffed lightly and was not affected by the Second Elder’s words. “Thank you for your concern. I’ll keep what you said in mind, but I remain firm with my choice. I get to choose who gets to be my last disciple.”

The Second Elder narrowed his eyes sinisterly. So the good cop act doesn’t work on him eh? Maybe I need to use the bad cop act. But, why is he so persistent in making this trash, his last disciple? Is he trying to resist our efforts and go against me and the First Elder?’

Chapter 2144
The Second Elder scoffed lightly and turned his attention to Jackie. He scoffed again when he saw Jackie’s uninterested look.

“Jackie, right?”

The corners of Jackie’s lips twitched. What he had feared was happening. He really did not want to be caught in the middle of their power struggles. He was still a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion after all and these elders could make his life very hard if he was made a pawn.

He nodded robotically, and said, “Yes, Second Elder, that is indeed my name.”

“You don’t seem to be very happy being chosen as the last disciple of the Eleventh Elder,” commented the Second Elder evenly.

Jackie arched his eyebrow. Judging from what the Second Elder said, he knew for sure that it would not be easy to handle him. In fact, he might be setting him up to fall at this very moment. Fortunately, he had handled situations far worse than this.

Jackie bowed a little, and said calmly, “I was taught by my father to be calm under all circumstances.”

Oliver, who was standing next to him, felt that this was a jibe at him. He glared at him and shouted,” How dare you speak so disrespectfully toward the elders?!”

Jackie was a little taken aback by this. ‘What was wrong with what I just said?’

The corners of the Second Elder's lips curled up. The fact that he remained silent meant that he agreed with Wesley that Jackie had indeed behaved disrespectfully.

Jackie was irked by this. Whatever I do or say will be wrong in their eyes now that I've become the enemy. If that's the case, I might as well do whatever I want!'

He cleared his throat lightly, and calmly said," Brother Oliver, it won't do you well to keep a grudge against me. Please tell me, what is so wrong with what I said? Maybe you can enlighten me on the correct way to reply to the Second Elder."

Wesley narrowed his eyes and scoffed. How dare a low-life like him, throw him the hot potato? While it was true he was the one who started the whole thing, in his world, he alone reserved the right to cause troubles for others.

"You said I hold a grudge against you? What a joke! Why would I hold a grudge against you? I'm just worried that the Eleventh Elder had been misled by you, for how else could you explain why a mere informal disciple like you would be chosen to be the last disciple?"

At this moment, even Calvert and Gresham were glancing sideways at them. They had remained silent all this while but it was obvious they did not hold a favorable view toward Jackie too. How could they when this guy from out-of-nowhere had snatched their chances of being the last disciple from right under their noses?

Jackie regarded the three of them coldly while cursing Elder Godfrey in his heart. This was a disaster. He never thought that Elder Godfrey would choose him to be his last disciple. He could not help but look at the elders on the round platform and found that Elder Godfrey was staring at him with encouragement in his eyes.

Chapter 2145
Seeing the encouragement in Elder Godfrey's eyes made Jackie even more nonplussed. "What the heck are you encouraging me for? I never wanted to be your last disciple or get anything out of you!' The more he thought about this, the more gloomy he became.

If he backed down, he would no doubt be looked down even more by others. Thus, he stood up a little straighter, looked evenly at Oliver, and said, "You wouldn't have said all that if he didn't hold a grudge against me! Stop trying to slander me. Besides, Elder Godfrey is the one who's choosing the last disciple now, not you! So you should just keep your mouth shut!"

Everyone gasped when they heard this, but quickly their eyes began to sparkle in anticipation of what was going to happen next. Never in a million years would they think that a nobody would dare to speak to Oliver in this manner.

This was the first time Oliver was ever humiliated by an informal disciple. His mouth twitched and his eyes filled with anger. Wesley, who was still standing at the front of the line of informal disciples, was so angry that he almost rushed up to beat Jackie senselessly, for humiliating his big brother.

“How dare an informal disciple speak so blatantly toward a formal disciple? Don’t you know what it means to have respect for your seniors?” shouted the First Elder.

Anyone would have already gotten down on their knees to beg for forgiveness by now, but Jackie was not just anyone. He remained impassive and did not even bother to turn to face the First Elder while answering, “Of course, I do but I was just saying it like it is. Was I wrong in thinking that it is Elder Godfrey who’s doing the choosing today?”

Oliver nearly exploded with anger. ‘Who the hell does he think he is? Does he think that he can say and do whatever he wants just because he has been chosen to be the last disciple? Trash will forever be trash!’

His hand was trembling, but he managed to control himself. “Why should I listen to you? You’re nothing but an informal disciple…”

Jackie cut in before he could finish. “You’re right! I am an informal disciple! But so what? You were once an informal disciple too! What makes you so certain that I don’t have what it takes to be Elder Godfrey’s last disciple?”

Oliver was so angered by his words that he started to laugh. He pointed at Jackie’s face, and said, “It doesn’t take a master to figure it out! All of the last disciples were chosen from the formal disciples. And you’re right, we formal disciples were once informal disciples too but we got to where we are right now through our talent and hard work! Not to mention you didn’t even get accepted through our standard procedures. You, of all people, have no right to tell m me to shut up!”

His words were exactly what many of the spectators were thinking, and the disdain in their eyes intensified

Some of them even began to shout out their displeasure at Jackie.

“Did you hear that, you punk? Do you really think you’re a match for us formal disciples? You don’t even deserve to breathe the same air as Brother Oliver!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2146-2150

Chapter 2146
“Did you forget to take your medicine today? You’re digging your own grave here! How dare you spout all this nonsense? There should be a limit to how ignorant one can be!”

The other disciples kept the worst insults to themselves as the elders were present, but there was no guarantee that they could keep it that way if Jackie continued on like that. Jackie was being too outrageous! How could he look

down on the formal disciples? On Oliver, who was ranked eighth amongst them all?!

Even them, the formal disciples did not dare to look down on Oliver, for ninety percent of the formal disciples there had lost to Oliver before! Why that cocky little Jackie! They gritted their teeth, imagining his flesh between them right now.

Oliver laughed coldly. The way he was looking at Jackie now was as if he was nothing but a clown who would not amount to anything. “I’ve gotta say you’re the most arrogant person I’ve ever had the displeasure of coming across.”

Jackie pretended he did not hear his scathing remark, and instead asked, “You said that I didn’t have the qualifications to become Elder Godfrey’s last disciple. Then, may I ask, what qualifications does one need to have?”

Oliver narrowed his eyes, and said coldly,” Excellence in all aspects!”

“Then do you think you are qualified? More than me?” asked Jackie.

Oliver was confused by this. His smile froze, and it took him five seconds to snap out of it. The corners of his mouth were slightly twitching and he was looking at Jackie like he was a fool.

“What do you mean? Of course, I’m more qualified than you! I’m stronger than you in all aspects! Are you saying that I’m not?” If it was anyone else, Oliver might not be so confident or be so direct, but I in front of him was a measly newly recruited informal disciple who had no right to even be standing on the same platform as him. There was no need for him to ‘hold back. He was at least a hundred times stronger than Jackie.

Jackie smiled enigmatically at Oliver’s answer. One look and all the disciples present knew that Jackie did not agree with Oliver’s evaluation of him. This caused another round of uproar.

“He must be a few screws short to think that he’s stronger than Brother Oliver!”

“He must have been dropped on the head when he was young! We should not try to brain him. It was outrageous enough for him to say all that he had and now this?!”

The formal disciples did not bother to keep their voices low; both Noel and Brook’s expressions changed when they heard all these. They knew Jackie was not the type to bluff so if he said he could do it, then he could do it. The two of them glanced at each other and they could tell that each of them was feeling fifty percent certainty and fifty percent doubt.

Chapter 2147
The comers of Brook's lip were trembling. "What do you think Brother Jackie is doing? Does he really think that he's stronger than Oliver?"

Noel shook his head, not knowing how to answer him. He stared at Jackie's back and took a deep breath. "Who knows what he's thinking. He's always confident in everything, but somehow I feel like he's bluffing this time. Oliver is ranked eighth amongst all the formal disciples who were in the running to be the chosen disciple after all. He's not someone we can take on. I do not doubt Jackie's talent, but he hasn't been training for long and he's only…"

He suddenly paused. Then, a lightbulb went on in his head. "He has broken through!" he shouted hoarsely. He was going to end his previous sentence with the words 'initial stage of innate level but discovered that Jackie had broken through to the intermediate stage of innate level after reading his cultivation level.

Brook quickly looked at Jackie, and then said," Brother Jackie has really broken through! But how is this possible? He was still at an initial stage of innate level ten days ago!"

Noel shook his head in amazement. "Don't ask me. I don't know anything. But even so, he had only just broken through. Therefore, being at an intermediate stage of innate level won't help him that much. He's still no match for Oliver."

Jackie was unaffected by whatever the disciples were throwing at him. He only smiled at Oliver, and after a while, said, "That's exactly what I'm saying. I am, in fact, better than you, in all aspects."

His words had the effect of an island being blown to bits by a nuclear bomb. Everyone's eyes nearly popped out of their sockets, while thinking that mental asylum was one patient short.

Even the informal disciples were stunned into silence. Only Wesley laughed. He pointed at the back of Jackie's head, and shouted, "That has to be the funniest thing I've heard all day! You should be a comedian instead! Or even better, a clown!"

The others started to laugh with him. The image of Jackie being a clown was cemented in their minds.

Oliver scoffed, looked disdainfully at Jackie, and said," For a moment there, I really thought you held some kind of trump card of your sleeves, but I see that now you're just an ignorant fool who doesn't know the way of the world!"

Gresham and Calvert were also looking at Jackie like he was a clown. Only those who did not know their own limits would be this cocky.

Jackie was unaffected by the derisive laughter aimed at him. He laughed coldly, and said, "Well, why don't we settle this once and for all on the battle platform?"

Chapter 2148
This made the sound of laughter even louder.

“Did you forget to pay your brain bill? Careful, you don’t want to be crippled by Brother Oliver in a battle! Haha!”

“Hello, Earth to Jackie! It’s time to wake up now. Don’t you know that the person standing next to you is Brother Oliver, who’s ranked eighth amongst all the formal disciples? even we’re no match for him, what makes you think you can defeat him? I really do wonder where you get your guts from!”

The elders on the round platform were silent as they watched everything unfold below them. The way the Second Elder was looking at Jackie had changed. He was now more sure than ever that Elder Godfrey was not right in the head for choosing Jackie.

“Your choice for the last disciple is certainly very interesting, Eleventh Elder. It seems like he’s really adamant that he’s stronger than Oliver. I wonder where he gets his courage to issue a challenge with a disciple who’s ranked eighth amongst all his peers,” said the Second Elder with a smile.

Elder Godfrey ignored him and continued to observe Jackie. What Jackie said was truly outrageous in the ears of others, and many people felt that he should get his brain checked out, otherwise how could he spout such conceited nonsense? An informal disciple against a top ten formal disciple? Ha! Anyone would have assumed that Jackie was bluffing. Anyone, except for Elder Godfrey.

Jackie must have felt his gaze as he lifted his head slightly to look at him. Jackie gave him a curt nod and said nothing

Elder Godfrey let out a deep exhale, and said, “I think we should let them battle it out. Oliver’s talent Is undeniable but that doesn’t mean that Jackie cannot beat him.”

The Second Elder thought he had heard wrong. “You really trust him that much huh? I’m starting to wonder if you guys are best friends.”

He glanced meaningfully at Elder Godfrey before putting his attention back on Jackie. All sorts of thoughts began to course through his mind as to how Elder Godfrey and Jackie knew each other.

The men he had sent to spy on Elder Godfrey had never mentioned any disciple who was close to him, and yet, he was sure that Elder Godfrey would never pick a name out of thin air just like that. Jackie must have been someone special to him for him to choose

Him as his last disciple.

The Second Elder did not know anything about Jackie at all. Why would he when there were three thousand informal disciples in the sect? Besides, a measly cannon fodder was not worth his time.

Elder Godfrey chuckled softly, and said dismissively, “To be honest, we’re just acquaintances and it was pure chance that I met him, but I’ve always been a good judge of people.”

Chapter 2149
No one believed him at all. There was no way they were just acquaintances. Their relationship must be deeper than that. Still, they could not say for sure how they came to know each other.

“Well, that’s a very unique way of choosing your last disciple. I guess that would explain why the candidate you have chosen is a little…unique too. In any case, you might think that you’ve made the right choice, but don’t you think he’s a little too confident for his own good?”

Elder Godfrey just blinked innocently at him and said nothing. The First Elder laughed coldly. He would have used a few choices of words to him if it were not for the fact that they had an audience before them.

Instead, he turned around, and said to Jackie, “You say you’re stronger than Oliver eh? Well, why don’t you prove yourself? The battle platform is right in front of you! One fight and we’ll know who’s stronger!”

A dangerous glint flashed through Oliver’s eyes.” First Elder is right! You and me, the battle platform now!”

Oliver’s smile became more presumptuous. His eyes were fixed on Jackie as if telling him that he would soon be dead meat.

“Yes, First Elder is right! Step on the battle platform and prove that you’re stronger than Oliver!” said the Second Elder. It was a rare instance that he was on the same wavelength with the First Elder.

To him, Jackie’s arrogance came from inexperience. He guessed that Jackie had not even seen a battle between formal disciples before so he did not know how strong they could be, thinking that the gap between formal and informal disciples was minuscule. Even Calvert, who was ranked 58th, and Gresham, who was ranked 63rd, amongst the formal disciples would not dare to challenge Oliver.

At this thought, the Second Elder started cackling in his heart. The more he thought about it, the more certain he was that Jackie was just a fool who did not know where his own limits were.

Jackie nodded his head earnestly, agreeing to the battle. Seeing this, the clamor of the crowd began to die down until it was completely silent. However, that silence was short-lived.

“Yup, he’s cuckoo alright. He must have thought that the First Elder and Second Elder believed his words!”

“I’m willing to bet that he won’t last even a minute! Let’s see if he can still be this cocky when he’s half dead!”

Wesley was clutching his stomach so hard, trying to keep his laughter in. He assumed wrongly-that Jackie must have got his confidence from the fact that he had beaten him before so now Jackie thought that he could beat Oliver too. He could not wait to see how his brother would beat the crap out of Jackie.

“I can’t believe this rascal agreed to a battle! Knowing Brother Oliver, he would make sure that Jackie is carried off in a stretcher after the battle for how he had humiliated him! Why even his own mother would not recognize him after Brother Oliver is done with him!” said the man with the triangular eyes excitedly.

Chapter 2150
Wesley guffawed with laughter. He then puffed up his chest, and said, “That would teach him not to mess with my brother! He not only looked down on us but every one of the formal disciples as well!”

Brook pulled on Noel’s sleeves, and whispered into his ear, “Why would Brother Jackie ever agree to a battle? I thought…”

Noel did not wait for him to finish. “Didn’t you hear what Jackie said just now? He was the one who brought up the idea. He would not have done that if he wasn’t sure of himself,” said Noel impatiently.

Brook was speechless. He scrunched up his face and glanced at Noel. “I thought he was only trying to rile up Oliver. Maybe he didn’t expect that the First Elder and Second Elder would give him the green light.”

Noel sighed with resignation, and muttered to himself, “Seems like you really don’t know Jackie that well. I should just save my breath and stop here. It’s not as if I know for sure what’s going through his mind. The only thing to do now is to wait for the result.”

Fortunately, the second round platform in the gathering spot for roll call was a designated battle platform for the disciples. The flags placed there acted as a barrier, preventing the errant attacks from leaving the area. The battle platform there was bigger than the battle platform in the wager battle arena, so there was plenty of space for them to fight It out to their hearts’ content.

Jackie glanced at the battle platform, and suddenly asked the elders, “I haven’t completed my wager battle for this month so may I count this as a wager battle?”

Many of them were taken aback. ‘Really? That’s his priority right now?’ It looked like Jackie would not shed a tear until he had seen a coffin.

“Yes, you may. This battle would go toward your monthly wager battle!” said the First Elder. He would agree to any of his requests just so that Oliver could teach this cocky kid a lesson.

Jackie nodded, and sincerely looked up at all the elders on the first round platform. “If that’s the case, we should each put up our wager beforehand. Also, it would be best if there’s a referee.”

Everyone snorted in laughter, amused to no end at his naivety; as if he had any chance of winning at all.

The First Elder’s lips began to twitch. Now Jackie was really pushing it. Under normal circumstances, he would not even bother with him. In fact, he might even secretly arrange for someone to beat him up in hopes that he would wake up from whatever la-la land he was in. He glanced coldly at Elder Godfrey. This was all his fault! Why did he have to choose this oddball to be his last disciple?

Oliver was red in the face with anger. The way Jackie was acting was as if he was sure he would win. This was adding one humiliation after another on top of him! His mouth twitched as he said, “You piece of shit! Don’t you think that asking for a wager and a referee is really pushing it?”

Jackie was puzzled by his reaction. He turned to face Oliver, and in all seriousness said, “On the contrary, I think it’s a perfectly reasonable request. It only makes sense to put up a wager for a wager battle. If not, it’s not a wager battle at all! It’s not like I have too much time on my hand to simply pick a fight with anyone.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2151-2160

Chapter 2151
Oliver's face turned beet red; his hand started to tremble on their own as if wanting to strangle Jackie.

Wesley was so angry that he was at the risk of having a seizure. "You asshole! You're just wasting everyone's time with all this talk of wager! As if you're ever going to win against my brother!"

Jackie arched his brow. How annoying could Wesley get? Jackie had endured his nonsense for long enough! He turned to face him and said, "This has nothing to do with you, so can you just shut up? The sound of your voice really irks me!"

After saying this, Jackie raised his head and looked at Elder Godfrey; he motioned to Elder Godfrey with his eyes. Elder Godfrey raised his eyebrows. He naturally understood what Jackie meant; the threat in his eyes was obvious enough. It seemed that if he did not speak out soon enough, Jackie would quit, so he sighed with resignation.

He stepped forward and said to Wesley, "Jackie is right. This matter has nothing to do with you. You should stay in your lane and not meddle in this matter. I'm starting to wonder if your parents taught you any manners."

Elder Sayer's face darkened instantly. Although he was not Wesley's parent, they were still related to each other. Elder Godfrey's remark was undoubtedly the face of the Sayer family. He was about to say something when the look on First Elder's face stopped him. He had always obeyed his order, and this time would not be any different. Lips twitching, he had no choice but to swallow back his anger.

Wesley's face was flushed red, but he dared not say anything after being reprimanded so fiercely by Elder Godfrey. Oliver stared coldly at Jackie, his hatred for him bore deep into his bones; their relationship had successfully proceeded to the point of arch nemesis.

Oliver laughed icily, and then said, "Fine, we'll have It your way. There's no excuse for you to back out of the battle now that I've agreed to put up a wager."

Since Oliver had agreed to it himself, the First Elder and Second Elder also readily agreed. "In that case, let me be the referee," said the Second Elder. He was actually looking forward to seeing what tricks Jackie had up his sleeves.

Jackie nodded. The position of a referee was originally held by the top brass, and the Second Elder naturally qualified to hold this position.

Oliver did not want to delay any longer, and said with a cold face, “What kind of wager do you want to bet on?”

Jackie thought about this for a while before saying, “Do you have seven hundred contribution points on you?”

Chapter 2152
Seven hundred contribution points?! Many were dumbfounded when they heard this. No one knew where this question would lead to.

Oliver’s lips twitched. Of course, he had seven hundred contribution points. He was a formal disciple after all. Coupled with the fact that he was strong, earning contributions points was not difficult for him. He had built up quite a sizable stash during his period there.

Oliver nodded coolly. “Of course, I do. Are you asking me to bet seven hundred contribution points? Do you even have that much? From what I know, you’ve only joined recently so you can’t possibly have that much.”

He deliberately raised his voice when he said all that. Everyone heard him loud and clear, and some of them were even nodding their heads in agreement. Generally speaking, both sides would need to put up a wager of equal value, and there was no way Jackie could come up with so many contribution points.

Therefore, it was to their shock that he said, “I never once said that my wager will be contribution points.”

Oliver scoffed, and asked, “What else can you put up except for contribution points? Don’t tell me you have some item of equal value!”

The mockery in his eyes was evident. However, Jackie did not take the bait and remained calm. “Of course, I have something of equal value. It’s worth even more than the seven hundred contribution points.”

Everyone looked curiously at Jackie, wondering what it could be.

“I’ll put the last disciple position as my wager!” said Jackie.

Everyone’s eyes widened in an instant. What did he mean he would put his last disciple position as his wager?

Oliver frowned, and said, “What do you mean? How can you put up your last disciple position as a wager?”

Elder Godfrey’s expression changed as soon as he heard Jackie’s wager. If it was not for the occasion they were in right now, he would have rushed down and scolded Jackie to a puddle.

Jackie did not really care about other people's opinions. "If I lose, I will give up my position as Elder Godfrey's last disciple. The fact that I lost means that I'm not qualified to be his last disciple."

Oliver's expression altered slightly. He did not even have the time to say anything before the First Elder cut in, "That settles it then! Oliver's wager will be seven hundred contribution points! I can even throw In another three hundred contribution points if you don't think that's enough!"

The First Elder was worried that Jackie would regret his decision so he wanted to set everything in stone as soon as possible. A hint of joy flashed across Jackie's face when he heard that the First Elder was willing to bump up the wager to a total of one thousand contribution points.

"First Elder, do I have your word on that?" asked Jackie seriously.

The First Elder nodded solemnly, and said casually, Of course. You have my word as the First Elder of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Oliver will put up seven hundred contribution points and I will put up three hundred contribution points, making it a total of one thousand contribution points. This amount of points should get you quite a lot of things."

According to the rules, no one could put up a wager o f more than one hundred and fifty contribution points, but it was obvious that this was a special circumstance and that rule did not apply.

Chapter 2153
Upon hearing this, the spectators grew even more excited. No one in the audience thought that Jackie would win, but the amount was enough to make it worthwhile for them to watch the battle.

The one thousand contribution points were peanuts to the First Elder. What he really cared about most was Jackie giving up his last disciple position. This way, Elder Godfrey would have no choice but to choose another last disciple since it was Jackie who willingly gave up the position. Thinking of this instantly made the First Elder and Second Elder feel better.

They glanced meaningfully at Elder Godfrey as if to remind him that Jackie was the one who spoiled his own plan. Elder Godfrey's expression was to look at but he remained silent while gazing sternly at Jackie.

His heart was beating wildly against his chest. He had not seen Jackie in battle before, but judging from the way the Thousand Leaves Pavilion informal disciples treated him at the Mount Beasts, and from the conversation they had, he could vaguely guess that Jackie was the one who got them out of trouble. Therefore, it would not be far-fetched to say that Jackie was someone of extraordinary caliber.

However, whether Jackie could win against Oliver was a whole other matter. He started praying in his heart, 'You punk! You better not lose or else it would be bad news for the two of us!'

Jackie, of course, knew what the elders were plotting. Now that everything was finalized, he had nothing to worry about and immediately walked up to the battle platform.

Oliver was made a little speechless at what he thought was Jackie's bravado. At first, he thought that Jackie was only bluffing, but looking at what he was doing now, Jackie clearly believed that he was stronger than him!

Oliver chuckled to himself. His eyes were full of irony. It would only make him look bad if he did not get up to the battle platform right now. He swished his robe and strode toward the battle platform at twice the speed of Jackie so that he would be the first one there.

It was all a little immature, but Jackie did not take it to heart. He did not care who got there first. In fact, nothing could ruffle his feathers, to be honest. Oliver chose the westernmost area of the battle platform, so Jackie chose the easternmost.

They stood facing each other, and even before the fight had begun, sparks were already flying around In the air. All the spectators' eyes were wide with anticipation, not daring to blink in case they would miss something.

"I don't know why but I'm really excited for the battle even though I know that Jackie is definitely no match for Brother Oliver. I'm so glad I took the time to come here! I'd hate to think of the regret I would feel if I missed this battle."

"Yeah! Actually, I think he might have a little something to him. If not, he wouldn't have acted so cockily. He might just really surprise us!"

"Even so, there's no way he can win against someone who is ranked eighth amongst the formal disciples. Didn't you see how Gresham was so against Oliver joining the battle for the last disciple?"

Chapter 2154
"Why do you think Gresham was so against Oliver joining? It's all because he knew that Oliver was stronger than him."

"You're right. Even he doesn't want to fight head-on with Oliver, where does Jackie get the idea that he can win against him?"

"All I can say is ignorance is bliss."

The surrounding discussion was endless. The louder the conversation, the darker the faces of Noel and Brook became. The two of them were really worried about Jackie, but they dared not say anything at this time.

Jackie had a close relationship with the two of them, and everyone knew that they were friends. If the two of them said something at this time, they would immediately become the target of everyone's attack.

The informal disciple was much quieter than those of the formal disciple because Jackie's reputation was famous among his own peers, and they knew Jackie to be very talented.

After all, Jackie defeated Wesley as a newly recruited informal disciple. This was something most of them could not do. Even so, they did not think Jackie could beat Oliver. However, they did not wish to dwell on the matter.

Oliver stood on the westernmost side of the battle platform. The spring breeze blew on his robe. With his hands folded behind his back, Oliver looked like a prince. The only thing he lacked now was a folding fan.

Compared to his appearance of strolling leisurely in a courtyard, Jackie looked ordinary and plain. He just stood there quietly, without any movement or expression, as if the battle that was about to take place was just as normal as sitting down for lunch.

The more indifferent Jackie was, the more irritated Oliver became. "Boy, I am not someone who does things half-heartedly. Your previous behaviors have completely offended me. Although there are rules in place, I will make sure to find a way to make you feel the greatest pain in your life without breaking the rules!"

Everyone knew very well what he meant. Jackie would not be beaten to death, nor would he be disabled for life, but his limbs would be mercilessly broken. A broken leg would heal anyway, so it was not a permanent disability.

If this kind of threat fell on someone else, it would be able to scare that person to the point where their legs would turn into jelly, but Jackie's expression remained impassive. "Are you done? Can we begin the battle now?"

Oliver's face flushed with anger. "You *sshole! Looks like you're in a hurry to die! Fine, I will fulfill your wish then!"

Immediately, he made several seals with both hands, and dazzling rays of light flowed between his fingers. In the next second, his whole person was dazzling like a sun, releasing light that could burn people's eyes. Many people there had to squint their eyes.

"This is Oliver's strongest martial art technique, Light Blade Lore. I remember the Light Blade Lore is a premium red level martial art technique!" shouted someone.

"It's indeed a premium red level martial art technique. There are not many people here who can attain it. The main reason is that the martial arts of this level are too difficult to practice. Judging from the cultivation, he should be proficient, right?"

"I'm not sure about that. Oliver hasn't been in a battle since the last ranking battle. I don't know what cultivation level is his skill right now."

The formal disciple's discussions drifted into the ears of the informal disciples. Their mouths opened in surprise when they heard that Oliver was cultivating a premium red level martial art technique.

They were naturally aware of the difficulty of the cultivation of premium red-level martial art techniques. Some people had cultivated for several years and still could not reach a proficient cultivation level. No wonder he could be ranked eighth among the formal disciples!

A violent wind blew past as if there was a windstorm. Oliver was plunged into dazzling light, and people could not distinguish his figure.

Chapter 2155
One light blade after another suddenly flew out from the dazzling light. The speed of these light blades was extremely fast, like a meteor hitting the earth; their tails long as they rushed toward Jackie.

Jackie furrowed his brows and began to move speedily to avoid Light Blade Lore. However, he was not fast enough, and a light blade cut through his sleeves. This shocked him. The speed at which he was dodging was definitely not slow, but his sleeve was still ripped open by the light blade.

He looked down and saw that the location where it was cut off, there was a flame that went out every now and then. The light blade was not only extremely fast and powerful but flaming hot as well!

He successfully dodged the remaining light blades, and those fell to the ground. Even though the battle platform was made of special materials, several potholes still appeared where the light blades landed, which made the eyes of many, widen.

"I've gotta hand it to him! The premium red level martial art technique is so much stronger than an intermediate red level martial art technique," said the formal disciples with awe.

"Yeah, I definitely would not be able to dodge the attack. That kid is really fast!"

"This kid wasn't bluffing after all! He does have extraordinary speed. The Light Blade Lore has the advantage of attack speed, and most people wouldn't be able to dodge it but that kid got away with just a ripped sleeve!"

A cold snort came from the dazzling light. "You're fast, I'll give you that."

Oliver's disdainful voice sounded in Jackie's ears. He frowned and stared at his cut-off sleeves. He had underestimated Oliver's power. Jackie knew that his speed was fast even without using the laws of space, and yet he could not avoid the attack. He was sure that he would have lost his arm if he was still at his initial stage of innate level.

“I have cultivated the Light Blade Lore to be faster than the ordinary premium red level martial art technique, and the move just now was just a test!” said Oliver.

He once again made a magic seal, and six light blades flew out from the dazzling strong light. The speed of these six light blades was faster than before, and the dazzling light made the spectator’s eyes hurt.

Three light blades attacked Jackie’s left side, and the other three attacked his right, flanking him from both sides, cutting off his escape path. Jackie furrowed his brow and exhaled lightly before moving back quickly.

The disciples were all surging with excitement.” Surely this kid can’t escape with three light blades on both sides.”

The light blade swished through the air at an incredibly fast speed, as it aimed for Jackie’s face. Although he retreated quickly, he was still too slow. Everyone’s eyes widened when they saw the blades closing in on his arms, and even some of them were imagining what his arms would look like after, all mangled and bloody.

Chapter 2156
Brook covered his mouth, so scared that tears were about to fall. “Look out, Brother Jackie!” he shouted.

Suddenly, everyone saw Jackie’s footsteps shrank as if the space in front of him had been slightly distorted, and the light blades all collided to the ground.

Many people were stunned. They looked blankly at Oliver and Jackie, thinking ‘What just happened?’ One moment Jackie was about to lose his arms, but the next he was yards away from the blade.

“He just used the laws of space!” growled the Second Elder in a creepy, deep voice.

Not many disciples knew about it, but it was easy for the elders to recognize it when they saw it. Right then, all the elders had a surprised look on their faces.

Jackie did take a step back just now, but with the laws of space, this step was equal to more than ten yards. The few light blades thought that they had found their target, so they cut straight down, not expecting Jackie to be able to dodge them, and all their power slammed toward the ground.

At this moment, even Oliver was a little stunned. He stared at Jackie from behind the dazzling light, and blurted out, “How did you do it?”

Jackie was obviously unwilling to answer this question. Wesley had a sense of déjà vu. The same thing happened when he launched his strongest attack at Jackie. He was hundred percent positive his attack had closed in on Jackie, but then it seemed like a warp bubble occurred, allowing Jackie to pull the distance from the attack.

“Not this again!” roared Wesley furiously.

The informal disciples who had watched the battle between Jackie and Wesley knew what was happening. After all, Jackie had used this trick before, but compared to before, it seemed that he had more control over it this time.

Before, he was gasping for breath after using the same technique, but now he seemed relaxed as if it had not taken him much effort to use the technique. This was due to the Ancient Eclipse Dragon’s blood he absorbed. The Ancient Eclipse Dragon possessed an innate ability to control space.

With the light flowing in his palms, Oliver punched out another series of hand seals. Immediately, the light enveloping him converged, leaving only the dazzling ball of light on his hands. Now Oliver’s figure was once again revealed.

His eyebrows furrowed tightly, and he was looking daggers at Jackie, his hatred for him written clearly on his face.

The disciples started whispering amongst themselves again.

“Why do I get the feeling that Brother Oliver hates Jackie? It’s true that Jackie’s words can be scathing, but there’s no need to hate him to this extent right? Don’t you find all this a bit odd?”

The person standing next to him chuckled and said,” I would hate Jackie too if I were him. Think about it; Jackie is just an informal disciple, and what are informal disciples to us? Something worse than trash. In fact, we have always treated them as runner disciples instead of informal disciples.”

Chapter 2157
“I’m willing to bet that Oliver accepted the challenge with the expectation that he would be able to squash Jackie within a few moves. However, lo and behold, Jackie managed to dodge both of his attacks, so it is no wonder that he would hate him so much.”

This man’s explanation sounded reasonable, and everyone around him nodded. He was indeed right. Oliver’s hatred for Jackie was totally out of this world. He really thought that he would be able to end the battle with just one move; he did not expect Jackie to be this slippery.

Oliver sneered, and said, “Is that all you can do? You can dodge all you want but it will not change a thing! I was holding back just now so don’t even think that my speed is limited to this!”

Immediately, he shot out like a cannonball toward Jackie. The ball of light shone brilliantly in his hand, and with a few swishes, five-light blades flew out again, rushing toward Jackie with a murderous aura.

Jackie arched his brow then raised it. He knew that Oliver did not unleash his full power in the first two moves. Why would he when in his eyes, Jackie was no

better than trash at the side of the road? As the saying goes-take not a musket to kill a butterfly.

“Oliver’s attack speed has doubled!” shouted someone.

Everyone’s eyes widened, trying to keep up with the light blades’ movement. The speed was indeed twice as fast as before. There was no way Jackie could dodge it this time!

Jackie blocked out all of the noise around him and fixed his eyes on the light blades. Then he exhaled gently, tipped his toe, and used the laws of space again.

With a loud bang, the light blades crashed against the ground, carving several deep pits on the platform. Jackie stood only a yard away from the deep pits, which was shorter than the distance he had pulled before. However, the most important thing was that he escaped again! He heaved a sigh of relief and gathered up all his focus.

Oliver’s face looked like he had eaten shit when he saw the same thing happening again. He had doubled his attack speed so how was it possible for Jackie to dodge it?! “You slippery piece of shit!” he said between gritted teeth. “Take this!”

He roared and punched out another series of hand seals, and countless dazzling light blades flew out from his hands. The overwhelming light shrouded the space between him and Jackie.

These light blades rushed toward Jackie like meteors. He took a deep breath, and his feet kept moving back with the laws of space, pulling him away from the light blades.

However, he did not use the laws of space perfectly every time. Once he wrongly took half, and a light blade instantly slashed against his cheeks. Fortunately, he managed to avoid most of the damage with his fast reaction.

Even so, his sideburns did not fare so well. His fallen hair was blown into the air by the strong wind brought by the light blade. With another swish, the fallen hair was chopped by another light blade and instantly burned to ashes by the hot energy mixed with the light blade.

Chapter 2158
The spectators erupted in a cheer every time Jackie escaped the light blades. At first, everyone looked at him like he was crazy, but now they were actually impressed by him.

Although he had not used his martial skills, they could tell by the way he dodged Oliver’s attacks that he was indeed extraordinary. They had the self-awareness to know that they would not have fared as well if they were in his position.

“It’s really weird! He seems to be able to manipulate space. Could it be that the technique he’s cultivating has something to do with space or is it an attribute of the technique itself?”

“Who knows? I only know that he’s faster than me! Brother Oliver had already doubled his attack speed but still, he managed to dodge it by at least half a yard.”

“It’s no wonder that this kid was so rampant before. He really is quite capable, but even so, a battle could not be won by dodging. After all, there is a difference of one realm between them, making the amount of the true energy different too. This kid can dodge all he wants, but it’ll be over for him the moment his true energy runs out.”

Many people nodded silently at that. It was just as the person said, the difference between an intermediate stage of innate level and a final stage of innate level could not be overlooked. The depth of Oliver’s true energy was much stronger than that of Jackie. There would definitely come a time when Jackie ran out of true energy before Oliver.

The fight was getting boring, and some of the formal disciples started to complain, “It would take at least one to two hours for either of them to run out of true energy! Are they going to do anything else apart from attacking and dodging?”

They thought that they would be able to see Jackie suffer a crushing defeat. If not that, at least a fight from both sides. Anything would be better than a one-sided attack.

Some of the spectators stood on tiptoes and yelled toward the battle platform, “Hey you, Jackie right? Is that all you got? What happened to all that bravado you had? Stop dodging and fight, dammit!”

“Yeah! It’s boring to watch you scurry around like a mouse!”

All those heckling did not make Jackie angry at all. In fact, he could empathize with them. After all, what they said was true. The reason he kept on dodging was not that he was afraid of Oliver, but because he wanted to use this as an opportunity to have a better grasp on the laws of space. After absorbing the blood of the Ancient Eclipse Dragon, he had better control of space, but he lacked experience.

This battle was a good chance for him to practice. Oliver’s moves were much faster than any other formal disciples’, making this a rare opportunity indeed; he turned a deaf ear to all the spectators’ clamoring and focused on avoiding Oliver’s attacks.

Oliver was gritting his teeth. He was full of anger and had nowhere to vent. Thus far, Jackie had eluded all his attacks. What was worse was that, as time passed, Jackie seemed to be more and more adept at dodging his attacks.

Chapter 2159
“Dammit! Is that all you can do?” roared Oliver.

Jackie ignored him completely and put all his attention into avoiding all the incoming light blades. With every step he took, he became more and more proficient in the laws of space.

Oliver gritted his teeth with anger. Noel blinked, at a loss for words, and Brook, who was standing next to him, had his mouth and eyes wide open.

After a long while, Noel finally said, “Jackie must have thought that he could rely on this weird skill, but sooner or later, he would need to cast an attack for there to be a victory.”

Brook might not be strong, but he had gained a lot of knowledge and observed a lot of battles between formal disciples in his years there, so knew that Noel was right. “Brother Jackie would need to cast an immensely powerful attack to be able to defeat Oliver. If not, he wouldn’t be able to win just by dodging all the way.”

Elder Godfrey clenched his fists tightly under the robe. Although his face seemed calm, his heart was uneasy. His understanding of Jackie was limited to their encounter at Mount Beasts. He did not actually know the limit to Jackie’s power.

Seeing that Jackie had only been dodging the attacks, he started to doubt whether he had judged him wrongly, and this made him a little nonplussed. He would have yelled at Jackie to fight back if it were not inappropriate for him to do so.

The First Elder and Second Elder looked very happy. The two squinted their eyes and observed the battle with joy on their faces. Jackie was like a mouse scurrying around on the battle platform.

Oliver’s attacks were flamboyant. The dizzying light blades were shining brilliantly and attacking Jackie from all directions.

The Second Elder chuckled and said, “Oliver has grown a lot during this period but I bet he’s feeling frustrated at the moment. After all, Jackie just refuses to fight him head-on.”

The First Elder snorted coldly and shrugged. “It seems like Jackie only knows how to dodge. What’s the use of such a disciple? Doesn’t he know that offense is the best defense?”

The two elders were dripping with disdain. Everyone on the scene knew that they were secretly labeling Jackie as a deserter. Although the ability to escape was also important to a martial artist, it was not glorious after all.

“Hey look, Jackie is almost at the edge of the battle platform!” shouted bearded formal disciples with surprise.

Due to the airtight attack, Jackie could only gradually retreat toward the corner.

“Brother Oliver must have wanted to force him into the corner so that he would have nowhere to escape.”

Chapter 2160
The person’s voice was trembling with excitement. Everyone suddenly realized that Oliver had been changing the light blade’s attack angle ever so subtly so that Jackie would be pushed toward the edge of the battle platform

The battle platform was circular in shape, surrounded by array flags. After the array flag was activated, an energy shield was raised. This protective array method was known as the guardian array.

The guardian array was transparent, like a big bowl buckled upside down on the battle platform, protecting the entire platform. Nobody could get in or out once the guardian array was up.

In other words, Jackie’s back would be pressed against the guardian array once he was forced to the edge. All the disciples let out a long exhale after seeing this; finally, they would see some real action.

“I’ve gotta hand it to Brother Oliver. He managed to find a way to handle that slippery kid. I guess he has his battle experience to thank for that,” said a formal disciple in awe.

There was no way Jackie would be able to evade Oliver’s attack anymore once his back was pressed to the energy shield; not even if he could shrink himself. Then, he would have no choice but to face Oliver straight on.

“Haha, let’s see where he can hide this time!” Many of the disciples were so excited that their voices went hoarse with cheering, and their eyes were gleaming.

On the battle platform, Oliver smirked cruelly. ‘His footwork is good, I grant him that but I’m no fool! This ends now!’ With his wealth of battle experience, he had already come up with a countermeasure. It was just that it was better to take Jackie by surprise. Electricity crackled from his eyes, never once letting Jackie out of his sight as he kept on punching out hand seals.

Ten yards, five yards. In his heart, Oliver kept counting the distance between Jackie and the guardian array. “Three yards! Now!” he shouted suddenly.

A whooshing noise sounded as if a strong wind was blowing across the valley, Oliver’s hands once again made a series of magic seals, and streams of light bloomed with dazzling brilliance between his fingers.

“Die!” he roared. In an instant, the light became even more radiant as he kept ten light blades suspended in the air. These ten light blades were more dazzling than the ones before, and it was his strongest attack yet. Everyone had to avert their eyes to stop the stabbing pain in their eyes.

Oliver laughed coldly, and said, “There’s no way you can evade it this time! Die, you punk!” He was determined to punch out a few holes on Jackie’s body; this was the next best thing to breaking his limbs.

That way, he would be at least bed-bound for years, and his foundation might even be destroyed! A wide grin split on Oliver’s face at the thought of Jackie being bed-bound. His excitement was obvious from the shine in his eyes.

He pushed both of his hands forward, and the ten light blades slew toward Jackie, who had his back pressed against the guardian array. Jackie let out a sigh and knew that it was now or never. He flipped his hands and black rays of light flowed between his fingers. In an instant, ten Soul Swords floated on the palm of his hand.

In fact, the martial arts of the two belonged to long range attacks. They would have the upper hand as long as they kept a distance from their opponents. At this time, the distance between the two of them was just right, giving Jackie time to summon his skill. There was horrifying dark smoke swirling around the Soul Swords as if they had come up from the very depths of hell.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2161-2170

Chapter 2161

Everyone was stunned by Jackie’s martial art technique. No matter how they used their divine senses to probe, they could not feel any energy fluctuations from the martial arts technique conjured up by Jackie.

After all, the more powerful martial arts technique, the greater the fluctuation of energy, but the grayblack daggers in Jackie’s hand were like black holes with no energy fluctuations.

At this time, the ten light blades were already within ten yards of Jackie. Emotionlessly, he pushed his hands forward, and the ten Soul Swords instantly collided with the ten light blades.

All everyone heard was a burst of bang, bang, bang, like cannonballs crashing against each other. An eye-piercing light briefly shrouded the two of them, and the next second Jackie already had his palms together.

After the light subsided, a three-foot-long giant Soul Sword shot out in the air toward Oliver. The others might not know it, but he knew that his ten light blades all instantly exploded into a light ball, and were extinguished after coming in contact with the gray-black energy.

What surprised him, even more, was that the ten Soul Swords remained unscathed. The ten Soul Swords converged into a giant Soul Sword after Jackie put his palms together, and in a blink of an eye, appeared in front of Oliver.

“Shit!’ thought Oliver. It would be the end of him if he was slashed by the giant Soul Sword. He desperately backed away. Fortunately, his Light Blade Lore not only increased his attack speed but also his own speed.

Unfortunately, his opponent was Jackie, who had no intention of letting him escape so easily. Jackie snorted, narrowed his eyes, and once again used the laws of space.

The giant Soul Sword, which was originally five yards away from Oliver, broke through the shackles of space and appeared instantly in front of him after Jackie used the law of space.

All the spectators’ eyes widened, and jaws dropped when they saw that. Jackie gritted his teeth; he knew that things would not end well for him if he killed Oliver. Originally, the giant Soul Sword was aimed at Oliver’s throat, but with a flick of his wrist, it changed its target to Oliver’s right shoulder. Immediately the sound of metal scraping against bones could be heard.

“Ahh!” Oliver’s scream broke through the clouds, making everyone gasp. He quickly staggered back, but lost his balance mid-way, and fell from the air to the ground with a heavy thud.

Tears began to flow out of the corner of Oliver’s eyes. He had always prided himself on having never cried from pain, but this time there was no forcing back his tears. He had never felt pain like this; it was as if his soul had been torn apart! His entire body was convulsing. He could not even breathe properly, let alone stand up.

Seeing this stunned everyone into silence, and for a long time, the only sound that could be heard was the screams of Oliver.

“Is this really happening? Did my eyes deceive me? Did Jackie just neutralize Oliver’s strongest attack with one move? What are those gray-black swords? How is it so powerful?”

“Brother Oliver actually lost! And to a newly recruited informal disciple at that! This kid…” The person could not continue on anymore.

Chapter 2162
The winner of the battle was obvious, but this result was unacceptable to everyone present. No one thought that Oliver would be defeated by Jackie. From the very beginning, everyone thought Oliver would be able to take down Jackie in one move or three at the most.

However, it turned out to be a long drawn-out battle. Oliver was still no match for Jackie even after casting his strongest attack. He had lost completely and was seriously injured.

He was still screaming and crying on the ground. It did not take much to imagine just how much pain he was in, for which martial artists would be willing to shed tears in front of others? One's pride would never allow them to do such a thing.

"Jackie is just too strong! Can someone please enlighten me how he got this strong?" said someone in shock.

"I would like to know too! He would have no problem being ranked in the top five amongst the formal disciples!"

"No wonder he was so cocky before! Brother Oliver never stood a chance at all!"

Everyone's evaluation of Jackie completely changed. Now it seemed like they were the clowns, not him!

Even till now, Jackie ignored them.

Wesley felt his legs turn into jelly and collapse to the ground. He stared helplessly at his big brother who was still rolling around in pain on the battle platform.

Out of everyone there, Wesley was the one who was most worked up. How could he remain calm when his own big brother was defeated by Jackie, who he had a grudge on since the day they knew each other's existence.

His back was ramrod straight, but his expression was lost. Suddenly, he shook his head vigorously, as if wanting to wake himself up from this nightmare. "No, this is impossible! Absolutely impossible! How can Oliver lose to Jackie? I must be hallucinating! Yes, this must be a hallucination!"

His expression was frightening to look at. His face was ashen and pale at the same time as if he had just recovered from a serious illness. The man with the triangular eyes standing next to him was stunned speechless. He, too, nursed a grudge against Jackie. He thought by allying himself with Wesley, one day he would surely see Jackie meet a tragic end, but again and again, it was Jackie's opponent who had tragic endings.

The man with the triangular eyes took a deep breath. At this time, he was not in the mood to comfort Wesley. His mouth twitched and said, "How is he so powerful? He wasn't this powerful before!"

The rest of the informal disciples were shocked and did not know what to say as well. However, they were not as shocked as the formal disciples because they had prior knowledge of Jackie's talent.

Still, it was a long time before they could compose themselves. It was impossible for Jackie to be this much stronger than he was previously. Could it be that he has been concealing his power all this time?

Chapter 2163
A month ago, it took Jackie all that he had to defeat Wesley, but now, he effortlessly defeated Oliver. Although Wesley and Oliver were brothers, there was a world of difference between their powers. After all, Oliver joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion a few years earlier than Wesley.

Then there was also the fact that Oliver was ranked eighth amongst the formal disciples while Wesley was not even in the top fifty of the informal disciples. It would take years before Wesley could even catch up to his big brother. That was why it was so shocking that Jackie was able to bridge the great gulf of power within a month!

"Jackie definitely hid his real power from us! There's no way that he could have leveled up so much within a month!" said an informal disciple firmly.

"It must be so! After all, the gap in power between Oliver and Wesley is really too big. It's like comparing apples and oranges. It was only a month ago that Jackie barely defeated Wesley, and now he defeated Oliver without even sweating much! This is not something that can be done within a month!" said the person next to him.

"In any case, Jackie is too strong! He's so strong that I don't even dare to dream about catching up to him! And he's only at the intermediate stage of innate level whereas Oliver's at the final stage of innate level!"

This sentence reminded them that Jackie had actually defeated someone who was one level higher than him. Gradually, they began to realize that there was definitely something extraordinary going on.

Not only were all the disciples shocked, but the elders on the round platform were also in disbelief. They could not believe what they had just witnessed.

The First Elder's lips were trembling, and he glanced at the Second Elder. He immediately felt a little better when he saw that the usually impassive Second Elder was also trembling with shock.

The Second Elder exhaled deeply, turned to face Elder Godfrey, and scoffed. "I now know why you're so insistent on having Jackie as your last disciple. His talent and strength indeed qualify him to be your last disciple. However, I do wonder why you never bother to tell us all in the first place."

On the surface, the Second Elder's words sounded like praises, but he was actually blaming Elder Godfrey for making a joke out of them.

Elder Godfrey arched his brow, the only change in his face. He was a little irked by the Second Elder's words and wanted to brag a little to blow off some steam, but this was the first time he saw Jackie in battle too.

He was not much different from others; he went slack -jawed the moment he saw Jackie neutralize Oliver's Light Blade Lore, and wound him with a single move.

Although he knew Jackie was extraordinary, he did not expect him to be THIS extraordinary.

Elder Godfrey sighed. He knew that he could not let the others in on just how shocked he was. “Didn’t I tell you before that my last disciple has to be excellent in all aspects? Why would I choose Jackie if he did not meet the criteria?”

Chapter 2164
The First and Second Elder’s faces turned dark after they heard this. The Second Elder was so angry that the corners of his mouth twitched continuously as he narrowed his eyes. The First Elder did not hide his anger and glared at Elder Godfrey maliciously. He looked like he was about to rush forth and give Elder Godfrey a scolding. Elder Sayer, who sat behind the whole time, also looked terrible. He had a twisted expression on his face as he tightened his fists. Jackie was the Sayer family’s enemy. The stronger Jackie was, the more unfavorable the situation was for him.

At this moment, Oliver once again yelled out in pain. This time, his cries were much more intense as the pain seemed to have invaded his spine. “Ah! It hurts! Help me!”

Elder Sayer snapped out of his daze when he heard the cries. He immediately stood up from his seat and rushed toward the battle platform. He performed seals after seals with his hands and the seals rushed onto the guardian array like a meteor shower before merging with the guardian array.

Everybody only heard the clicking sound of the mechanism being activated and the guardian array was instantly removed. Elder Sayer’s feet had landed on the battle platform and he hurried toward Oliver. He stretched out his hand to help Oliver up before taking several pills from his storage space and feeding them to Oliver. He then checked Oliver’s pulse and his face instantly darkened after he checked Oliver’s wounds.

He instantly looked up and glared at Jackie hatefully. “You b*stard, how dare you do such a terrible thing. How can you do something like this by tearing up his soul?!” Elder Sayer was furious. The wounds on his body were fine but the wound that his soul suffered were much more difficult to recover compared to the wounds on his body. Apart from that, those wounds required the help of exceptionally expensive pills. From the looks of things, Oliver’s wound would require at least six months to recover.

Six months might be nothing to the elders but it was extremely precious to the disciples that were in their growth period. How could Elder Sayer not get angry when this could affect Oliver’s future.

There were no changes on Jackie’s face when he heard this. It did not matter to Jackie even if Elder Sayer died on the spot due to anger. He chuckled lightly and said calmly, “I don’t understand what Elder Sayer means by this. In a battle between two people, I will definitely do my best unless I really understand Senior Brother Oliver’s true strength! There’s always a possibility of getting wounded during a battle and it’s even more difficult to control one’s strength when the person is trying their best. Everybody saw that if I didn’t hold back when the two

of us were performing our last attack, Senior Brother Oliver won't be able to cry out in pain right now."

Elder Sayer was so angry that his face blushed a crimson color. He stretched out his hand and pointed at Jackie as he spoke, "What a young man with a glib tongue. Since you can control your last attack, can't you just directly disperse the attack! In that way, Oliver won't get hurt."

Jackie laughed out loud when he heard what Elder Sayer said. However, his laughter sounded cold as he glared coldly at Elder Sayer who was standing in front of him. How dare he say such a thing? Was he asking Jackie to disperse his attack so that Oliver could bounce back and they would end up in another life or death battle?

Jackie glared at Elder Sayer coldly. "Didn't you see how Oliver attacked me? He was trying to kill me. Why can't I attack him when he's allowed to do that to me? I know that Oliver is a member of your Sayer family and you will definitely be on his side. However, you cannot support him blindly and forbid me from attacking him while allowing him to kill me!"

Chapter 2165
What Jackie said immediately caused his surroundings to quiet down. Jackie's words were sharp and devastating. However, that was exactly what Elder Sayer meant. He only allowed Oliver to attack Jackie but forbade Jackie to do the same!

All the disciples standing there looked at Elder Sayer angrily. Elder Sayer humphed softly and understood that he had been caught in the trap by Jackie. If he continued the conversation, it would hurt his prestige. He might even lose his position as an elder because of this. He humphed coldly and said, "B*stard, don't you quote what I said out of context. That is not what I meant."

"If so, what do you mean? Why are you questioning me so angrily for what I did? I didn't break any rules and I didn't kill Oliver. I also did not cause him to be disabled for life. Since I didn't break any rules, why are you questioning me?"

What Jackie said successfully choked Elder Sayer and he felt like he had swallowed a huge piece of stone. The stone was stuck at his throat and he was unable to swallow or spit it out. As an elder of the sect, he was forced by Jackie to a point where he was speechless.

Jackie smiled coldly and said loudly, "I know what Elder Sayer means. If I'm the one who's badly wounded and on the ground, you will be sitting on the round platform, looking at Oliver happily. However, you've rushed over to question me because Oliver is the one who's on the ground right now. I can understand that you're just protecting your family. However, you should treat every disciple the same as you're an elder. I've never expected for you to be so biased!"

"You!" Elder Sayer was so angry that his eyes were almost popping out of his sockets.

“All of you, shut up! Elder Sayer, why are you wasting time speaking to him on the battle platform instead of helping Oliver to receive his treatment?!” The First Elder’s voice traveled far and exploded loudly by everyone’s ears.

At this moment, the First Elder was so exasperated that his entire body hurt. Oliver could be considered a disciple siding with him and Elder Sayer was an unwavering supporter of his. One of them was defeated by Jackie while the other ignored his position and started a fight with Jackie. The most embarrassing part was how Elder Sayer was suppressed by Jackie and was unable to win the argument. The First Elder was in an extremely embarrassing situation.

The corners of Elder Sayer’s mouth twitched and he knew that things would not end well for him and the First Elder might teach him a lesson if he insisted on fighting with Jackie. He exhaled deeply and forcefully suppressed his anger. He asked others to help Oliver down the battle platform and sent him away for treatment. Jackie also walked down from the battle platform slowly and steadily.

Everybody was looking at Jackie. They still remembered their feelings when they initially looked at Jackie walking up the battle platform. Right now, everything had changed and the strength that Jackie demonstrated was really shocking! Just as Jackie walked down the battle platform, he suddenly raised his head and looked toward the First Elder, who was on the round platform.

The First Elder had no idea why but he felt uncomfortable when he saw Jackie looking at him. He saw the corners of Jackie’s mouth curling upward and a standard smile appeared on Jackie’s face. “First Elder, please don’t forget about the bet between us. You can directly ask somebody to send the sect contribution points over or I can personally pick them up.”

All the audience was in an uproar once again when they heard what Jackie said. The First Elder’s face had already turned into a crimson color and he recalled at this moment about his personal promise to Jackie that he would top up 300 contribution points on top of Oliver’s wager of 700 contribution points if Jackie won.

Chapter 2166
The First Elder scoffed indignantly and spoke, obviously flustered, “Don’t you worry. As the First Elder, I’ll keep my promise and send the sect contribution points to you later!”

He then flicked his sleeve and turned around to leave. He might feel that his presence had no other meaning apart from embarrassing himself. Since the First Elder had left, the other elders did not need to stay, too.

Jackie’s room still looked the same. It was a standard single-bed room with a wardrobe, a table, a chair, and a shelf. After he returned from the noisy gathering spot, Jackie had been tidying his belongings. In fact, he did not leave many things in this house. Apart from his bedding, there were only several ancient books that he borrowed.

Brook and Noel had also followed Jackie to his room, they had been talking throughout their journey. Their conversation did not stop after they entered the house and sat by the table.

The excitement on Noel's face was overflowing. "You have no idea what those people thought of you when you walked out from the crowd. Some were jealous, some hated you, and some admired you, surely. Anyway, you have the respect of them all. You defeated one of the top ten formal disciples as a newly recruited informal disciple. I don't think there are many people in the sect with such a record!"

Brook nodded vehemently, and he was much more excited than Noel. After all, he was just a runner disciple, and it was his great honor to be acquainted with Jackie, who would definitely become a chosen disciple in the future. "Elder Sayer looked at you like he'd eat you. When you ask the First Elder to remember the three hundred sect contribution points he promised, Elder Sayer glowered so badly. Not only have you defeated Oliver, but he has to give you seven hundred contribution points obediently. This time, he has suffered a terrible loss!"

Brook could not stop smiling when he thought of this. When Jackie mentioned that he was going to have a fight with Oliver, no one around Jackie thought of him highly. Everybody belittled Jackie terribly, wanting to trample all over him. However, their view of him changed so quickly, faster than skimming through books, and soon changed the direction of their conversation. They started to mock Oliver and said that he was outwardly strong but inwardly weak.

Noel poured himself a cup of tea. "This time, no one in the sect dares question you. Those who looked down at you dare not say anything right now. I've never expected you to be so strong that even Oliver can't contend against you. No wonder you could survive the dangerous Mount Beasts."

Brook could not stop running his mouth when it came to matters regarding Jackie's strength. He inhaled deeply and said, "How can you be so strong? What martial skill are you practicing? How did you still manage to crush Oliver when you're challenging him from a lower level? The question of what martial skill you're training is in everyone's minds right now. Some people are even guessing that you're practicing an Earth level martial skill!"

Brook and Noel's expression changed when they heard the words, 'Earth level martial skill'. The two of them were so excited that they forgot the most crucial point. However, Jackie obviously had no plans of telling them about this. He only chuckled and packed everything. He pointed toward the outside of the door. "Elder Godfrey sent somebody to inform me that I'll head directly to the Mysterious Green Hall after I pack my things."

In the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, every formal elder owned their personal hall, and the one belonging to Elder Godfrey was known as the Mysterious Green Hall. Noel and Brook were not insensible, and they stopped asking when they noticed Jackie not wanting to continue with the topic.

Brook mentioned that he wanted to send Jackie to the Mysterious Green Hall, and Jackie agreed to it. The three of them left the individual house and walked towards the Mysterious Green Hall.

The Mysterious Green Hall was located at the east side of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion where disciples did not dare venture to, apart from the elder disciples. Jackie had already become Elder Godfrey's last disciple and was naturally a member of the elder disciples. Hence, his living quarters had changed from the secluded room to the Mysterious Green Hall.

Noel and Brook had never visited where the formal elders stayed. The two of them wanted to accompany Jackie there with hopes of getting a peak. The informal disciples stayed at the west side of the entire sect, and they had to walk across the entire sect to reach the Mysterious Green Hall.

Chapter 2167
They talked as they walked, meeting many other disciples along the way as they did.

The battle at the gathering spot made Jackie relatively well-known, and a lot of people viewed him in a different light from then on. Most of them looked at him with admiration, but some envied Jackie immensely. Despite this, Jackie's expression remained stoic and unperturbed, no matter what the people's opinions were of him.

The closer they were to the east side, the fewer the disciples they ran into. After all, the people active in the east side were mostly the management members with high positions, or even elder disciples. Jackie and the rest did not know their way as this was their first time here. They struggled to find their way here and had to ask for directions from several disciples.

The only road to the Mysterious Green Hall was one turn away. They quieted down a little as they got closer as their surroundings were utterly quiet. Apart from the sound of the wind blowing past the bamboo trees, the only thing that could be heard were their voices. At this moment, Noel suddenly frowned as he lowered his voice and said, "Who's that guy up ahead? Why is he looking at us like that?"

Jackie followed his voice and looked over. A man was standing behind a clumper of bamboo, and he seemed to be doing that on purpose so that they could not see him clearly. However, all three of them could see the hostility in his eyes. Jackie frowned as this was the only route to the Mysterious Green Hall.

Was this a member of the Mysterious Green Hall?

Jackie continued walking, even though doubts riddled his heart. Jackie could only see the person a little better as they approached. This person was quite good-looking, and Jackie was surprised when he saw that the person was wearing clothes that indicated he was a chosen disciple. There was an obvious division between the sect's disciples. The disciples had different clothes according to their ranking of being informal disciples, elder disciples, and chosen disciples.

This person had three begonias sewn on his waist, and he was obviously a chosen disciple as well.

All three of them raised their guards mentally upon seeing him.

Brook had the lowest position, so he decided to hide behind the two others. Only his eyes were seen peeking out behind them as he looked at the chosen disciple in fear.

Griffin Olsen looked at Jackie coldly. “Why are you looking at me so alertly? I won’t do anything to you right now.”

What he said sounded like he wanted Jackie to be at ease, yet it was a complete power show. Jackie frowned; this person did not come bearing good intentions. He had no idea who this person was as he had only joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion recently. He could not have offended a chosen disciple, either.

Jackie could only gesture politely with his hands out of his mannerism. “May I know who you are?”

Griffin raised his eyebrows. “I’m a chosen disciple, Griffin Olsen. Remember this name; you’ll be hearing it often in the future.”

Jackie frowned at Griffin’s intonation. He was even more concerned about why Griffin was purposely blocking his way here to meet him.

Griffin stared at Jackie coldly. He seemed to have read Jackie’s thoughts as he sneered and said, “I had to meet you. You so effortlessly won a spot while my brother lost his.”

Jackie was puzzled when he heard this. He had no idea who Griffin was, let alone his brother. As for the spot Griffin mentioned, could it be the spot as the last disciple? However, Jackie’s guts told him that what Griffin meant was not the recently obtained spot as the last disciple.

Chapter 2168
Griffin’s words and him waiting for Jackie at this location had confused Jackie greatly. Although Griffin was a chosen disciple and every disciple would automatically feel inferior to them as they were the future hope of the entire sect, the chosen disciples did not have such treatment when it came to Jackie.

Before Jackie could understand the meaning behind Griffin’s words and tone, Griffin was already so arrogant toward him. Jackie, unable to tolerate such behavior and not wanting to dilly nor dally, chuckled softly and said in a slightly cold manner, “I really don’t understand what you mean, Senior Brother Griffin. I don’t know anything about this spot you’re talking about.”

Griffin raised his eyebrows, obviously not believing In what Jackie said. Griffin scoffed indignantly and looked at Jackie as if he had chosen the hard way to deal with things. “You really think I don’t dare do anything to you? Although you’re already the Eleventh Elder’s last disciple, you’re just an elder disciple, but you’re

nothing to us chosen disciples. Oliver Sayer is definitely a top disciple among the formal disciples, but he's just a newbie in my opinion. I can easily achieve what you were able to do. Don't think that you can show off in front of me just because you've got some little achievements."

Noel and Brook had slightly darkened expressions on their faces. Although Griffin's questions were not aimed at them, the look in his eyes was undeniably cold when he occasionally glanced at them. The two of them proactively took a step back.

Jackie smiled coldly and said in a baffled manner, "I don't know if there's something wrong with your eyes or your mind. When was I arrogant and showed off in front of you? This is the first time I've met you, and I've never heard of you before today."

Griffin was, to Jackie, a hilarious character.

Griffin's face flushed a purple color when he heard what Jackie said. As a chosen disciple, he had never expected for Jackie to have replied with such a sharp tongue. Since he became a chosen disciple, all regular disciples were extremely respectful when they interacted with him. None of them dare act like what Jackie did as he dared mock Griffin's intelligence.

Griffin's fingers slightly trembled as he spoke, " Amazing! I've heard about how unruly you are, and now, I've finally experienced it myself. I originally planned to forgive you if you're sensible enough. However, it looks like… You'll be stepping all over us chosen disciples if I don't teach you a lesson!"

Jackie closed his eyes, utterly bewildered. He abhorred those who, as being in a higher position, spoke to him in such an interrogative manner. They always treated him with such a condescending attitude, and they would feel insulted once he said something they disliked. As a result, they would go against him.

Jackie exhaled deeply, not wanting to waste a single second of his time. "What do you actually want?"

Griffin raised his eyebrows and took a step forward. His aura slowly increased as he wanted to suppress Jackie with his aura. However, Jackie was not made out of paper. Although Griffin had completely released his momentum, Jackie stood his ground, expression stoic as ever as though he was undaunted by Griffin.

"I think it's best if you cease such useless actions. Just say what's on your mind, not beating around the bush. I don't understand anything you said previously," remarked Jackie coldly.

Chapter 2169
Griffin's expression faltered and darkened, utterly embarrassed for not overpowering Jackie. However, he felt that Jackie might say something worse if he wasted time here. He knew that this was the only road to the Mysterious Green Hall, and if anything happened here, members of the Mysterious Green Hall would definitely support Jackie, while he might be in trouble due to this.

Griffin suppressed his anger after deliberating the situation. “I’m not here today to question you. Instead, I hope that you’ll be smart enough to give up he spot to visit the Secret Place for Resources. You’re just in the intermediate stage of innate level, and you’ll be in danger if you visit that place. It’ll be better if you stay in the sect and focus on your training. You can visit the secret places in the future when another opportunity comes along.”

While it might have looked as though he was advising Jackie, Jackie was no fool and knew Griffin would not be so considerate toward him. It turned out that the reason Griffin came looking for him was because of the Secret Place for Resources. However, Jackie had never heard anything about himself gaining a spot to the Secret Place for Resources.

Elder Godfrey’s figure flashed through his head when he thought of this. It looked like the spot had something to do with Elder Godfrey. Elder Godfrey might have even strived for this spot for him. If that was the case, he definitely could not yield the spot to Griffin.

That man spoke so impolitely and mocked him in such an enigmatic manner. On top of that, Griffin even wanted to suppress him with his momentum. If he honored such a person, he would really be ashamed of himself.

Jackie chuckled. “I still don’t know what this spot to enter the Secret Place for Resources is, but it doesn’t matter if I know about it or not. Since I have a spot for that, I won’t give it up. You’re right that I’m only in the intermediate stage of the innate level, but carrying challenges ahead of my level is nothing to me.”

Griffin’s expression darkened and he once again looked at Jackie fiercely, but Jackie ignored how Griffin looked at him.

Jackie’s expression remained neutral as Griffin sized him up with a sharp look in his eyes. Griffin scoffed indignantly coldly and flicked his sleeve furiously. “You truly are an utterly arrogant person. I’ve already given your respect, and you blatantly refuse it. In that case, pinpointing you in the future!

Jackie tilted his head to one side as a sarcastic smile appeared on his face. “Don’t you find your own words funny? What do you mean, respecting me? You were the one who came up with such pompous excuses when you’re actually pushing me for such minor benefits. Why should I listen to you? If you wish to pinpoint me, feel free to do so. After all, I don’t mind adding you to my enemy list!”

Jackie then took a detour from Griffin, who stood before him, and strode toward the direction of the Mysterious Green Hall. Noel and Brook dared not look up as they ran after Jackie, heading toward the same direction.

Griffin flushed a crimson color out of anger as he tightened his fists and glared at Jackie’s figure hatefully. He looked like his anger could only be resolved if he could pounce and bite Jackie.

He inhaled deeply and hissed through gritted teeth,” You’re too pompous, young man! Don’t think that you’re free to do as you like just because you have the

support of the Eleventh Elder. Just wait and see! I'll make you kneel and make you take back what you said in tears, sooner or later!"

With that, Griffin immediately turned around and walked in the opposite direction of where Jackie was headed to while Noel and Brook followed after Jackie. The two of them had to walk in large strides to catch up with Jackie as he was walking speedily.

Chapter 2170
Noel slowly turned around to look at Griffin carefully while walking forward, and only when he saw Griffin turning at a corner and leaving did he call out to Jackie, "Wait for me!"

Jackie stopped walking and turned to look at Noel, who looked visibly pale and with trembling fingers. Jackie chuckled and knew this was the first time Noel faced the chosen disciples. It was normal for him to be afraid under the coercion of a chosen disciple's aura.

Noel inhaled deeply. "You truly are courageous, and I genuinely admire you. I don't think I'd be that brave to stand up against him if I were you!"

Jackie nodded wordlessly.

Brook raised his chin and said confidently, "Senior Brother Jackie is different from you. He's a disciple elder and has the support of the Eleventh Elder. What does it matter if that guy is a chosen disciple? Apart from that, he's obviously causing trouble. Even though we have no idea what the spot to enter the Secret Place for Resources is, it's definitely something good as even Griffin is fighting for it. If so, it's only natural that we can't simply yield this to others!

Noel glanced at Brook speechlessly. "You don't have to remind us of this. I know that Jackie is different from how he used to be, but chosen disciples are still chosen disciples. You won't have a nice life if he plans to pick on you. I'm just thinking that we should reduce the number of enemies we have in the future."

Jackie nodded as he understood that Noel was considerate toward him, but he did not agree to what Noel said. He turned around and looked at Noel with a serious expression on his face.

Jackie's clothes fluttered as the breeze blew at his clothes. However, Jackie stood straight as if the strong wind could not bend his spine. "I understand what you mean, but you have to think about it carefully. Even if I yield this time, he'll still force me again if something similar occurs again in the future. Should I yield to him every single time? If so, why should I become a martial artist? I won't be able to improve if I lose so many great chances."

He paused here and exhaled softly before he continued, "I've always been somebody with my own principles. I won't offend anybody if they did nothing to me, but I'll double the reprisal if they dare offend me. If they've already come picking on me, I'd rather die than be a coward and yield my opportunity."

Noel's expression darkened upon hearing this. He mocked himself by chuckling softly and stretched out his hand to tap Jackie on the shoulder. "You're right. If a martial artist wishes to go against nature, they have to be equipped with the mentality you have to achieve the peak of martial arts. However, I'm different from you, being the extremely careful person I am. I'm not as talented as you, so I don't have the confidence and strength."

Jackie did not say anything and only looked at Noel in silence.

Noel chuckled and pointed at the Mysterious Green Hall in front of them as he changed the topic of the conversation. "Let's go inside so that we both can learn something new!"

The Mysterious Green Hall was a huge palace, and if it was reduced in size, it could be seen as a house with one main entrance. There were two side halls beside the main hall, and there was a small garden with green plants planted in front of the main hall. There was a gazebo in the middle of the garden. As trees covered most of the gazebo, Jackie could only see the outline of the gazebo.

The runner disciples invited all three of them to the side hall the moment they entered the hall.

The runner disciple did not make any self-introduction. He only introduced all the facilities in the side hall and Jackie's future accommodation to them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2151-2160

Chapter 2151
Oliver's face turned beet red; his hand started to tremble on their own as if wanting to strangle Jackie.

Wesley was so angry that he was at the risk of having a seizure. "You asshole! You're just wasting everyone's time with all this talk of wager! As if you're ever going to win against my brother!"

Jackie arched his brow. How annoying could Wesley get? Jackie had endured his nonsense for long enough! He turned to face him and said, "This has nothing to do with you, so can you just shut up? The sound of your voice really irks me!"

After saying this, Jackie raised his head and looked at Elder Godfrey; he motioned to Elder Godfrey with his eyes. Elder Godfrey raised his eyebrows. He naturally understood what Jackie meant; the threat in his eyes was obvious enough. It seemed that if he did not speak out soon enough, Jackie would quit, so he sighed with resignation.

He stepped forward and said to Wesley, "Jackie is right. This matter has nothing to do with you. You should stay in your lane and not meddle in this matter. I'm starting to wonder if your parents taught you any manners."

Elder Sayer's face darkened instantly. Although he was not Wesley's parent, they were still related to each other. Elder Godfrey's remark was undoubtedly the face of the Sayer family. He was about to say something when the look on First Elder's face stopped him. He had always obeyed his order, and this time would not be any different. Lips twitching, he had no choice but to swallow back his anger.

Wesley's face was flushed red, but he dared not say anything after being reprimanded so fiercely by Elder Godfrey. Oliver stared coldly at Jackie, his hatred for him bore deep into his bones; their relationship had successfully proceeded to the point of arch nemesis.

Oliver laughed icily, and then said, "Fine, we'll have It your way. There's no excuse for you to back out of the battle now that I've agreed to put up a wager."

Since Oliver had agreed to it himself, the First Elder and Second Elder also readily agreed. "In that case, let me be the referee," said the Second Elder. He was actually looking forward to seeing what tricks Jackie had up his sleeves.

Jackie nodded. The position of a referee was originally held by the top brass, and the Second Elder naturally qualified to hold this position.

Oliver did not want to delay any longer, and said with a cold face, “What kind of wager do you want to bet on?”

Jackie thought about this for a while before saying, “Do you have seven hundred contribution points on you?”

Chapter 2152
Seven hundred contribution points?! Many were dumbfounded when they heard this. No one knew where this question would lead to.

Oliver’s lips twitched. Of course, he had seven hundred contribution points. He was a formal disciple after all. Coupled with the fact that he was strong, earning contributions points was not difficult for him. He had built up quite a sizable stash during his period there.

Oliver nodded coolly. “Of course, I do. Are you asking me to bet seven hundred contribution points? Do you even have that much? From what I know, you’ve only joined recently so you can’t possibly have that much.”

He deliberately raised his voice when he said all that. Everyone heard him loud and clear, and some of them were even nodding their heads in agreement. Generally speaking, both sides would need to put up a wager of equal value, and there was no way Jackie could come up with so many contribution points.

Therefore, it was to their shock that he said, “I never once said that my wager will be contribution points.”

Oliver scoffed, and asked, “What else can you put up except for contribution points? Don’t tell me you have some item of equal value!”

The mockery in his eyes was evident. However, Jackie did not take the bait and remained calm. “Of course, I have something of equal value. It’s worth even more than the seven hundred contribution points.”

Everyone looked curiously at Jackie, wondering what it could be.

“I’ll put the last disciple position as my wager!” said Jackie.

Everyone’s eyes widened in an instant. What did he mean he would put his last disciple position as his wager?

Oliver frowned, and said, “What do you mean? How can you put up your last disciple position as a wager?”

Elder Godfrey’s expression changed as soon as he heard Jackie’s wager. If it was not for the occasion they were in right now, he would have rushed down and scolded Jackie to a puddle.

Jackie did not really care about other people's opinions. "If I lose, I will give up my position as Elder Godfrey's last disciple. The fact that I lost means that I'm not qualified to be his last disciple."

Oliver's expression altered slightly. He did not even have the time to say anything before the First Elder cut in, "That settles it then! Oliver's wager will be seven hundred contribution points! I can even throw In another three hundred contribution points if you don't think that's enough!"

The First Elder was worried that Jackie would regret his decision so he wanted to set everything in stone as soon as possible. A hint of joy flashed across Jackie's face when he heard that the First Elder was willing to bump up the wager to a total of one thousand contribution points.

"First Elder, do I have your word on that?" asked Jackie seriously.

The First Elder nodded solemnly, and said casually, Of course. You have my word as the First Elder of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Oliver will put up seven hundred contribution points and I will put up three hundred contribution points, making it a total of one thousand contribution points. This amount of points should get you quite a lot of things."

According to the rules, no one could put up a wager o f more than one hundred and fifty contribution points, but it was obvious that this was a special circumstance and that rule did not apply.

Chapter 2153
Upon hearing this, the spectators grew even more excited. No one in the audience thought that Jackie would win, but the amount was enough to make it worthwhile for them to watch the battle.

The one thousand contribution points were peanuts to the First Elder. What he really cared about most was Jackie giving up his last disciple position. This way, Elder Godfrey would have no choice but to choose another last disciple since it was Jackie who willingly gave up the position. Thinking of this instantly made the First Elder and Second Elder feel better.

They glanced meaningfully at Elder Godfrey as if to remind him that Jackie was the one who spoiled his own plan. Elder Godfrey's expression was to look at but he remained silent while gazing sternly at Jackie.

His heart was beating wildly against his chest. He had not seen Jackie in battle before, but judging from the way the Thousand Leaves Pavilion informal disciples treated him at the Mount Beasts, and from the conversation they had, he could vaguely guess that Jackie was the one who got them out of trouble. Therefore, it would not be far-fetched to say that Jackie was someone of extraordinary caliber.

However, whether Jackie could win against Oliver was a whole other matter. He started praying in his heart, 'You punk! You better not lose or else it would be bad news for the two of us!'

Jackie, of course, knew what the elders were plotting. Now that everything was finalized, he had nothing to worry about and immediately walked up to the battle platform.

Oliver was made a little speechless at what he thought was Jackie's bravado. At first, he thought that Jackie was only bluffing, but looking at what he was doing now, Jackie clearly believed that he was stronger than him!

Oliver chuckled to himself. His eyes were full of irony. It would only make him look bad if he did not get up to the battle platform right now. He swished his robe and strode toward the battle platform at twice the speed of Jackie so that he would be the first one there.

It was all a little immature, but Jackie did not take it to heart. He did not care who got there first. In fact, nothing could ruffle his feathers, to be honest. Oliver chose the westernmost area of the battle platform, so Jackie chose the easternmost.

They stood facing each other, and even before the fight had begun, sparks were already flying around In the air. All the spectators' eyes were wide with anticipation, not daring to blink in case they would miss something.

"I don't know why but I'm really excited for the battle even though I know that Jackie is definitely no match for Brother Oliver. I'm so glad I took the time to come here! I'd hate to think of the regret I would feel if I missed this battle."

"Yeah! Actually, I think he might have a little something to him. If not, he wouldn't have acted so cockily. He might just really surprise us!"

"Even so, there's no way he can win against someone who is ranked eighth amongst the formal disciples. Didn't you see how Gresham was so against Oliver joining the battle for the last disciple?"

Chapter 2154
"Why do you think Gresham was so against Oliver joining? It's all because he knew that Oliver was stronger than him."

"You're right. Even he doesn't want to fight head-on with Oliver, where does Jackie get the idea that he can win against him?"

"All I can say is ignorance is bliss."

The surrounding discussion was endless. The louder the conversation, the darker the faces of Noel and Brook became. The two of them were really worried about Jackie, but they dared not say anything at this time.

Jackie had a close relationship with the two of them, and everyone knew that they were friends. If the two of them said something at this time, they would immediately become the target of everyone's attack.

The informal disciple was much quieter than those of the formal disciple because Jackie's reputation was famous among his own peers, and they knew Jackie to be very talented.

After all, Jackie defeated Wesley as a newly recruited informal disciple. This was something most of them could not do. Even so, they did not think Jackie could beat Oliver. However, they did not wish to dwell on the matter.

Oliver stood on the westernmost side of the battle platform. The spring breeze blew on his robe. With his hands folded behind his back, Oliver looked like a prince. The only thing he lacked now was a folding fan.

Compared to his appearance of strolling leisurely in a courtyard, Jackie looked ordinary and plain. He just stood there quietly, without any movement or expression, as if the battle that was about to take place was just as normal as sitting down for lunch.

The more indifferent Jackie was, the more irritated Oliver became. "Boy, I am not someone who does things half-heartedly. Your previous behaviors have completely offended me. Although there are rules in place, I will make sure to find a way to make you feel the greatest pain in your life without breaking the rules!"

Everyone knew very well what he meant. Jackie would not be beaten to death, nor would he be disabled for life, but his limbs would be mercilessly broken. A broken leg would heal anyway, so it was not a permanent disability.

If this kind of threat fell on someone else, it would be able to scare that person to the point where their legs would turn into jelly, but Jackie's expression remained impassive. "Are you done? Can we begin the battle now?"

Oliver's face flushed with anger. "You *sshole! Looks like you're in a hurry to die! Fine, I will fulfill your wish then!"

Immediately, he made several seals with both hands, and dazzling rays of light flowed between his fingers. In the next second, his whole person was dazzling like a sun, releasing light that could burn people's eyes. Many people there had to squint their eyes.

"This is Oliver's strongest martial art technique, Light Blade Lore. I remember the Light Blade Lore is a premium red level martial art technique!" shouted someone.

"It's indeed a premium red level martial art technique. There are not many people here who can attain it. The main reason is that the martial arts of this level are too difficult to practice. Judging from the cultivation, he should be proficient, right?"

"I'm not sure about that. Oliver hasn't been in a battle since the last ranking battle. I don't know what cultivation level is his skill right now."

The formal disciple's discussions drifted into the ears of the informal disciples. Their mouths opened in surprise when they heard that Oliver was cultivating a premium red level martial art technique.

They were naturally aware of the difficulty of the cultivation of premium red-level martial art techniques. Some people had cultivated for several years and still could not reach a proficient cultivation level. No wonder he could be ranked eighth among the formal disciples!

A violent wind blew past as if there was a windstorm. Oliver was plunged into dazzling light, and people could not distinguish his figure.

Chapter 2155
One light blade after another suddenly flew out from the dazzling light. The speed of these light blades was extremely fast, like a meteor hitting the earth; their tails long as they rushed toward Jackie.

Jackie furrowed his brows and began to move speedily to avoid Light Blade Lore. However, he was not fast enough, and a light blade cut through his sleeves. This shocked him. The speed at which he was dodging was definitely not slow, but his sleeve was still ripped open by the light blade.

He looked down and saw that the location where it was cut off, there was a flame that went out every now and then. The light blade was not only extremely fast and powerful but flaming hot as well!

He successfully dodged the remaining light blades, and those fell to the ground. Even though the battle platform was made of special materials, several potholes still appeared where the light blades landed, which made the eyes of many, widen.

"I've gotta hand it to him! The premium red level martial art technique is so much stronger than an intermediate red level martial art technique," said the formal disciples with awe.

"Yeah, I definitely would not be able to dodge the attack. That kid is really fast!"

"This kid wasn't bluffing after all! He does have extraordinary speed. The Light Blade Lore has the advantage of attack speed, and most people wouldn't be able to dodge it but that kid got away with just a ripped sleeve!"

A cold snort came from the dazzling light. "You're fast, I'll give you that."

Oliver's disdainful voice sounded in Jackie's ears. He frowned and stared at his cut-off sleeves. He had underestimated Oliver's power. Jackie knew that his speed was fast even without using the laws of space, and yet he could not avoid the attack. He was sure that he would have lost his arm if he was still at his initial stage of innate level.

“I have cultivated the Light Blade Lore to be faster than the ordinary premium red level martial art technique, and the move just now was just a test!” said Oliver.

He once again made a magic seal, and six light blades flew out from the dazzling strong light. The speed of these six light blades was faster than before, and the dazzling light made the spectator’s eyes hurt.

Three light blades attacked Jackie’s left side, and the other three attacked his right, flanking him from both sides, cutting off his escape path. Jackie furrowed his brow and exhaled lightly before moving back quickly.

The disciples were all surging with excitement.” Surely this kid can’t escape with three light blades on both sides.”

The light blade swished through the air at an incredibly fast speed, as it aimed for Jackie’s face. Although he retreated quickly, he was still too slow. Everyone’s eyes widened when they saw the blades closing in on his arms, and even some of them were imagining what his arms would look like after, all mangled and bloody.

Chapter 2156
Brook covered his mouth, so scared that tears were about to fall. “Look out, Brother Jackie!” he shouted.

Suddenly, everyone saw Jackie’s footsteps shrank as if the space in front of him had been slightly distorted, and the light blades all collided to the ground.

Many people were stunned. They looked blankly at Oliver and Jackie, thinking ‘What just happened?’ One moment Jackie was about to lose his arms, but the next he was yards away from the blade.

“He just used the laws of space!” growled the Second Elder in a creepy, deep voice.

Not many disciples knew about it, but it was easy for the elders to recognize it when they saw it. Right then, all the elders had a surprised look on their faces.

Jackie did take a step back just now, but with the laws of space, this step was equal to more than ten yards. The few light blades thought that they had found their target, so they cut straight down, not expecting Jackie to be able to dodge them, and all their power slammed toward the ground.

At this moment, even Oliver was a little stunned. He stared at Jackie from behind the dazzling light, and blurted out, “How did you do it?”

Jackie was obviously unwilling to answer this question. Wesley had a sense of déjà vu. The same thing happened when he launched his strongest attack at Jackie. He was hundred percent positive his attack had closed in on Jackie, but then it seemed like a warp bubble occurred, allowing Jackie to pull the distance from the attack.

“Not this again!” roared Wesley furiously.

The informal disciples who had watched the battle between Jackie and Wesley knew what was happening. After all, Jackie had used this trick before, but compared to before, it seemed that he had more control over it this time.

Before, he was gasping for breath after using the same technique, but now he seemed relaxed as if it had not taken him much effort to use the technique. This was due to the Ancient Eclipse Dragon’s blood he absorbed. The Ancient Eclipse Dragon possessed an innate ability to control space.

With the light flowing in his palms, Oliver punched out another series of hand seals. Immediately, the light enveloping him converged, leaving only the dazzling ball of light on his hands. Now Oliver’s figure was once again revealed.

His eyebrows furrowed tightly, and he was looking daggers at Jackie, his hatred for him written clearly on his face.

The disciples started whispering amongst themselves again.

“Why do I get the feeling that Brother Oliver hates Jackie? It’s true that Jackie’s words can be scathing, but there’s no need to hate him to this extent right? Don’t you find all this a bit odd?”

The person standing next to him chuckled and said,” I would hate Jackie too if I were him. Think about it; Jackie is just an informal disciple, and what are informal disciples to us? Something worse than trash. In fact, we have always treated them as runner disciples instead of informal disciples.”

Chapter 2157
“I’m willing to bet that Oliver accepted the challenge with the expectation that he would be able to squash Jackie within a few moves. However, lo and behold, Jackie managed to dodge both of his attacks, so it is no wonder that he would hate him so much.”

This man’s explanation sounded reasonable, and everyone around him nodded. He was indeed right. Oliver’s hatred for Jackie was totally out of this world. He really thought that he would be able to end the battle with just one move; he did not expect Jackie to be this slippery.

Oliver sneered, and said, “Is that all you can do? You can dodge all you want but it will not change a thing! I was holding back just now so don’t even think that my speed is limited to this!”

Immediately, he shot out like a cannonball toward Jackie. The ball of light shone brilliantly in his hand, and with a few swishes, five-light blades flew out again, rushing toward Jackie with a murderous aura.

Jackie arched his brow then raised it. He knew that Oliver did not unleash his full power in the first two moves. Why would he when in his eyes, Jackie was no

better than trash at the side of the road? As the saying goes-take not a musket to kill a butterfly.

“Oliver’s attack speed has doubled!” shouted someone.

Everyone’s eyes widened, trying to keep up with the light blades’ movement. The speed was indeed twice as fast as before. There was no way Jackie could dodge it this time!

Jackie blocked out all of the noise around him and fixed his eyes on the light blades. Then he exhaled gently, tipped his toe, and used the laws of space again.

With a loud bang, the light blades crashed against the ground, carving several deep pits on the platform. Jackie stood only a yard away from the deep pits, which was shorter than the distance he had pulled before. However, the most important thing was that he escaped again! He heaved a sigh of relief and gathered up all his focus.

Oliver’s face looked like he had eaten shit when he saw the same thing happening again. He had doubled his attack speed so how was it possible for Jackie to dodge it?! “You slippery piece of shit!” he said between gritted teeth. “Take this!”

He roared and punched out another series of hand seals, and countless dazzling light blades flew out from his hands. The overwhelming light shrouded the space between him and Jackie.

These light blades rushed toward Jackie like meteors. He took a deep breath, and his feet kept moving back with the laws of space, pulling him away from the light blades.

However, he did not use the laws of space perfectly every time. Once he wrongly took half, and a light blade instantly slashed against his cheeks. Fortunately, he managed to avoid most of the damage with his fast reaction.

Even so, his sideburns did not fare so well. His fallen hair was blown into the air by the strong wind brought by the light blade. With another swish, the fallen hair was chopped by another light blade and instantly burned to ashes by the hot energy mixed with the light blade.

Chapter 2158
The spectators erupted in a cheer every time Jackie escaped the light blades. At first, everyone looked at him like he was crazy, but now they were actually impressed by him.

Although he had not used his martial skills, they could tell by the way he dodged Oliver’s attacks that he was indeed extraordinary. They had the self-awareness to know that they would not have fared as well if they were in his position.

“It’s really weird! He seems to be able to manipulate space. Could it be that the technique he’s cultivating has something to do with space or is it an attribute of the technique itself?”

“Who knows? I only know that he’s faster than me! Brother Oliver had already doubled his attack speed but still, he managed to dodge it by at least half a yard.”

“It’s no wonder that this kid was so rampant before. He really is quite capable, but even so, a battle could not be won by dodging. After all, there is a difference of one realm between them, making the amount of the true energy different too. This kid can dodge all he wants, but it’ll be over for him the moment his true energy runs out.”

Many people nodded silently at that. It was just as the person said, the difference between an intermediate stage of innate level and a final stage of innate level could not be overlooked. The depth of Oliver’s true energy was much stronger than that of Jackie. There would definitely come a time when Jackie ran out of true energy before Oliver.

The fight was getting boring, and some of the formal disciples started to complain, “It would take at least one to two hours for either of them to run out of true energy! Are they going to do anything else apart from attacking and dodging?”

They thought that they would be able to see Jackie suffer a crushing defeat. If not that, at least a fight from both sides. Anything would be better than a one-sided attack.

Some of the spectators stood on tiptoes and yelled toward the battle platform, “Hey you, Jackie right? Is that all you got? What happened to all that bravado you had? Stop dodging and fight, dammit!”

“Yeah! It’s boring to watch you scurry around like a mouse!”

All those heckling did not make Jackie angry at all. In fact, he could empathize with them. After all, what they said was true. The reason he kept on dodging was not that he was afraid of Oliver, but because he wanted to use this as an opportunity to have a better grasp on the laws of space. After absorbing the blood of the Ancient Eclipse Dragon, he had better control of space, but he lacked experience.

This battle was a good chance for him to practice. Oliver’s moves were much faster than any other formal disciples’, making this a rare opportunity indeed; he turned a deaf ear to all the spectators’ clamoring and focused on avoiding Oliver’s attacks.

Oliver was gritting his teeth. He was full of anger and had nowhere to vent. Thus far, Jackie had eluded all his attacks. What was worse was that, as time passed, Jackie seemed to be more and more adept at dodging his attacks.

Chapter 2159
“Dammit! Is that all you can do?” roared Oliver.

Jackie ignored him completely and put all his attention into avoiding all the incoming light blades. With every step he took, he became more and more proficient in the laws of space.

Oliver gritted his teeth with anger. Noel blinked, at a loss for words, and Brook, who was standing next to him, had his mouth and eyes wide open.

After a long while, Noel finally said, “Jackie must have thought that he could rely on this weird skill, but sooner or later, he would need to cast an attack for there to be a victory.”

Brook might not be strong, but he had gained a lot of knowledge and observed a lot of battles between formal disciples in his years there, so knew that Noel was right. “Brother Jackie would need to cast an immensely powerful attack to be able to defeat Oliver. If not, he wouldn’t be able to win just by dodging all the way.”

Elder Godfrey clenched his fists tightly under the robe. Although his face seemed calm, his heart was uneasy. His understanding of Jackie was limited to their encounter at Mount Beasts. He did not actually know the limit to Jackie’s power.

Seeing that Jackie had only been dodging the attacks, he started to doubt whether he had judged him wrongly, and this made him a little nonplussed. He would have yelled at Jackie to fight back if it were not inappropriate for him to do so.

The First Elder and Second Elder looked very happy. The two squinted their eyes and observed the battle with joy on their faces. Jackie was like a mouse scurrying around on the battle platform.

Oliver’s attacks were flamboyant. The dizzying light blades were shining brilliantly and attacking Jackie from all directions.

The Second Elder chuckled and said, “Oliver has grown a lot during this period but I bet he’s feeling frustrated at the moment. After all, Jackie just refuses to fight him head-on.”

The First Elder snorted coldly and shrugged. “It seems like Jackie only knows how to dodge. What’s the use of such a disciple? Doesn’t he know that offense is the best defense?”

The two elders were dripping with disdain. Everyone on the scene knew that they were secretly labeling Jackie as a deserter. Although the ability to escape was also important to a martial artist, it was not glorious after all.

“Hey look, Jackie is almost at the edge of the battle platform!” shouted bearded formal disciples with surprise.

Due to the airtight attack, Jackie could only gradually retreat toward the corner.

“Brother Oliver must have wanted to force him into the corner so that he would have nowhere to escape.”

Chapter 2160
The person’s voice was trembling with excitement. Everyone suddenly realized that Oliver had been changing the light blade’s attack angle ever so subtly so that Jackie would be pushed toward the edge of the battle platform

The battle platform was circular in shape, surrounded by array flags. After the array flag was activated, an energy shield was raised. This protective array method was known as the guardian array.

The guardian array was transparent, like a big bowl buckled upside down on the battle platform, protecting the entire platform. Nobody could get in or out once the guardian array was up.

In other words, Jackie’s back would be pressed against the guardian array once he was forced to the edge. All the disciples let out a long exhale after seeing this; finally, they would see some real action.

“I’ve gotta hand it to Brother Oliver. He managed to find a way to handle that slippery kid. I guess he has his battle experience to thank for that,” said a formal disciple in awe.

There was no way Jackie would be able to evade Oliver’s attack anymore once his back was pressed to the energy shield; not even if he could shrink himself. Then, he would have no choice but to face Oliver straight on.

“Haha, let’s see where he can hide this time!” Many of the disciples were so excited that their voices went hoarse with cheering, and their eyes were gleaming.

On the battle platform, Oliver smirked cruelly. ‘His footwork is good, I grant him that but I’m no fool! This ends now!’ With his wealth of battle experience, he had already come up with a countermeasure. It was just that it was better to take Jackie by surprise. Electricity crackled from his eyes, never once letting Jackie out of his sight as he kept on punching out hand seals.

Ten yards, five yards. In his heart, Oliver kept counting the distance between Jackie and the guardian array. “Three yards! Now!” he shouted suddenly.

A whooshing noise sounded as if a strong wind was blowing across the valley, Oliver’s hands once again made a series of magic seals, and streams of light bloomed with dazzling brilliance between his fingers.

“Die!” he roared. In an instant, the light became even more radiant as he kept ten light blades suspended in the air. These ten light blades were more dazzling than the ones before, and it was his strongest attack yet. Everyone had to avert their eyes to stop the stabbing pain in their eyes.

Oliver laughed coldly, and said, “There’s no way you can evade it this time! Die, you punk!” He was determined to punch out a few holes on Jackie’s body; this was the next best thing to breaking his limbs.

That way, he would be at least bed-bound for years, and his foundation might even be destroyed! A wide grin split on Oliver’s face at the thought of Jackie being bed-bound. His excitement was obvious from the shine in his eyes.

He pushed both of his hands forward, and the ten light blades slew toward Jackie, who had his back pressed against the guardian array. Jackie let out a sigh and knew that it was now or never. He flipped his hands and black rays of light flowed between his fingers. In an instant, ten Soul Swords floated on the palm of his hand.

In fact, the martial arts of the two belonged to long range attacks. They would have the upper hand as long as they kept a distance from their opponents. At this time, the distance between the two of them was just right, giving Jackie time to summon his skill. There was horrifying dark smoke swirling around the Soul Swords as if they had come up from the very depths of hell.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2161-2170

Chapter 2161

Everyone was stunned by Jackie’s martial art technique. No matter how they used their divine senses to probe, they could not feel any energy fluctuations from the martial arts technique conjured up by Jackie.

After all, the more powerful martial arts technique, the greater the fluctuation of energy, but the grayblack daggers in Jackie’s hand were like black holes with no energy fluctuations.

At this time, the ten light blades were already within ten yards of Jackie. Emotionlessly, he pushed his hands forward, and the ten Soul Swords instantly collided with the ten light blades.

All everyone heard was a burst of bang, bang, bang, like cannonballs crashing against each other. An eye-piercing light briefly shrouded the two of them, and the next second Jackie already had his palms together.

After the light subsided, a three-foot-long giant Soul Sword shot out in the air toward Oliver. The others might not know it, but he knew that his ten light blades all instantly exploded into a light ball, and were extinguished after coming in contact with the gray-black energy.

What surprised him, even more, was that the ten Soul Swords remained unscathed. The ten Soul Swords converged into a giant Soul Sword after Jackie put his palms together, and in a blink of an eye, appeared in front of Oliver.

“Shit!’ thought Oliver. It would be the end of him if he was slashed by the giant Soul Sword. He desperately backed away. Fortunately, his Light Blade Lore not only increased his attack speed but also his own speed.

Unfortunately, his opponent was Jackie, who had no intention of letting him escape so easily. Jackie snorted, narrowed his eyes, and once again used the laws of space.

The giant Soul Sword, which was originally five yards away from Oliver, broke through the shackles of space and appeared instantly in front of him after Jackie used the law of space.

All the spectators’ eyes widened, and jaws dropped when they saw that. Jackie gritted his teeth; he knew that things would not end well for him if he killed Oliver. Originally, the giant Soul Sword was aimed at Oliver’s throat, but with a flick of his wrist, it changed its target to Oliver’s right shoulder. Immediately the sound of metal scraping against bones could be heard.

“Ahh!” Oliver’s scream broke through the clouds, making everyone gasp. He quickly staggered back, but lost his balance mid-way, and fell from the air to the ground with a heavy thud.

Tears began to flow out of the corner of Oliver’s eyes. He had always prided himself on having never cried from pain, but this time there was no forcing back his tears. He had never felt pain like this; it was as if his soul had been torn apart! His entire body was convulsing. He could not even breathe properly, let alone stand up.

Seeing this stunned everyone into silence, and for a long time, the only sound that could be heard was the screams of Oliver.

“Is this really happening? Did my eyes deceive me? Did Jackie just neutralize Oliver’s strongest attack with one move? What are those gray-black swords? How is it so powerful?”

“Brother Oliver actually lost! And to a newly recruited informal disciple at that! This kid…” The person could not continue on anymore.

Chapter 2162
The winner of the battle was obvious, but this result was unacceptable to everyone present. No one thought that Oliver would be defeated by Jackie. From the very beginning, everyone thought Oliver would be able to take down Jackie in one move or three at the most.

However, it turned out to be a long drawn-out battle. Oliver was still no match for Jackie even after casting his strongest attack. He had lost completely and was seriously injured.

He was still screaming and crying on the ground. It did not take much to imagine just how much pain he was in, for which martial artists would be willing to shed tears in front of others? One's pride would never allow them to do such a thing.

"Jackie is just too strong! Can someone please enlighten me how he got this strong?" said someone in shock.

"I would like to know too! He would have no problem being ranked in the top five amongst the formal disciples!"

"No wonder he was so cocky before! Brother Oliver never stood a chance at all!"

Everyone's evaluation of Jackie completely changed. Now it seemed like they were the clowns, not him!

Even till now, Jackie ignored them.

Wesley felt his legs turn into jelly and collapse to the ground. He stared helplessly at his big brother who was still rolling around in pain on the battle platform.

Out of everyone there, Wesley was the one who was most worked up. How could he remain calm when his own big brother was defeated by Jackie, who he had a grudge on since the day they knew each other's existence.

His back was ramrod straight, but his expression was lost. Suddenly, he shook his head vigorously, as if wanting to wake himself up from this nightmare. "No, this is impossible! Absolutely impossible! How can Oliver lose to Jackie? I must be hallucinating! Yes, this must be a hallucination!"

His expression was frightening to look at. His face was ashen and pale at the same time as if he had just recovered from a serious illness. The man with the triangular eyes standing next to him was stunned speechless. He, too, nursed a grudge against Jackie. He thought by allying himself with Wesley, one day he would surely see Jackie meet a tragic end, but again and again, it was Jackie's opponent who had tragic endings.

The man with the triangular eyes took a deep breath. At this time, he was not in the mood to comfort Wesley. His mouth twitched and said, "How is he so powerful? He wasn't this powerful before!"

The rest of the informal disciples were shocked and did not know what to say as well. However, they were not as shocked as the formal disciples because they had prior knowledge of Jackie's talent.

Still, it was a long time before they could compose themselves. It was impossible for Jackie to be this much stronger than he was previously. Could it be that he has been concealing his power all this time?

Chapter 2163
A month ago, it took Jackie all that he had to defeat Wesley, but now, he effortlessly defeated Oliver. Although Wesley and Oliver were brothers, there was a world of difference between their powers. After all, Oliver joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion a few years earlier than Wesley.

Then there was also the fact that Oliver was ranked eighth amongst the formal disciples while Wesley was not even in the top fifty of the informal disciples. It would take years before Wesley could even catch up to his big brother. That was why it was so shocking that Jackie was able to bridge the great gulf of power within a month!

"Jackie definitely hid his real power from us! There's no way that he could have leveled up so much within a month!" said an informal disciple firmly.

"It must be so! After all, the gap in power between Oliver and Wesley is really too big. It's like comparing apples and oranges. It was only a month ago that Jackie barely defeated Wesley, and now he defeated Oliver without even sweating much! This is not something that can be done within a month!" said the person next to him.

"In any case, Jackie is too strong! He's so strong that I don't even dare to dream about catching up to him! And he's only at the intermediate stage of innate level whereas Oliver's at the final stage of innate level!"

This sentence reminded them that Jackie had actually defeated someone who was one level higher than him. Gradually, they began to realize that there was definitely something extraordinary going on.

Not only were all the disciples shocked, but the elders on the round platform were also in disbelief. They could not believe what they had just witnessed.

The First Elder's lips were trembling, and he glanced at the Second Elder. He immediately felt a little better when he saw that the usually impassive Second Elder was also trembling with shock.

The Second Elder exhaled deeply, turned to face Elder Godfrey, and scoffed. "I now know why you're so insistent on having Jackie as your last disciple. His talent and strength indeed qualify him to be your last disciple. However, I do wonder why you never bother to tell us all in the first place."

On the surface, the Second Elder's words sounded like praises, but he was actually blaming Elder Godfrey for making a joke out of them.

Elder Godfrey arched his brow, the only change in his face. He was a little irked by the Second Elder's words and wanted to brag a little to blow off some steam, but this was the first time he saw Jackie in battle too.

He was not much different from others; he went slack -jawed the moment he saw Jackie neutralize Oliver's Light Blade Lore, and wound him with a single move.

Although he knew Jackie was extraordinary, he did not expect him to be THIS extraordinary.

Elder Godfrey sighed. He knew that he could not let the others in on just how shocked he was. “Didn’t I tell you before that my last disciple has to be excellent in all aspects? Why would I choose Jackie if he did not meet the criteria?”

Chapter 2164
The First and Second Elder’s faces turned dark after they heard this. The Second Elder was so angry that the corners of his mouth twitched continuously as he narrowed his eyes. The First Elder did not hide his anger and glared at Elder Godfrey maliciously. He looked like he was about to rush forth and give Elder Godfrey a scolding. Elder Sayer, who sat behind the whole time, also looked terrible. He had a twisted expression on his face as he tightened his fists. Jackie was the Sayer family’s enemy. The stronger Jackie was, the more unfavorable the situation was for him.

At this moment, Oliver once again yelled out in pain. This time, his cries were much more intense as the pain seemed to have invaded his spine. “Ah! It hurts! Help me!”

Elder Sayer snapped out of his daze when he heard the cries. He immediately stood up from his seat and rushed toward the battle platform. He performed seals after seals with his hands and the seals rushed onto the guardian array like a meteor shower before merging with the guardian array.

Everybody only heard the clicking sound of the mechanism being activated and the guardian array was instantly removed. Elder Sayer’s feet had landed on the battle platform and he hurried toward Oliver. He stretched out his hand to help Oliver up before taking several pills from his storage space and feeding them to Oliver. He then checked Oliver’s pulse and his face instantly darkened after he checked Oliver’s wounds.

He instantly looked up and glared at Jackie hatefully. “You b*stard, how dare you do such a terrible thing. How can you do something like this by tearing up his soul?!” Elder Sayer was furious. The wounds on his body were fine but the wound that his soul suffered were much more difficult to recover compared to the wounds on his body. Apart from that, those wounds required the help of exceptionally expensive pills. From the looks of things, Oliver’s wound would require at least six months to recover.

Six months might be nothing to the elders but it was extremely precious to the disciples that were in their growth period. How could Elder Sayer not get angry when this could affect Oliver’s future.

There were no changes on Jackie’s face when he heard this. It did not matter to Jackie even if Elder Sayer died on the spot due to anger. He chuckled lightly and said calmly, “I don’t understand what Elder Sayer means by this. In a battle between two people, I will definitely do my best unless I really understand Senior Brother Oliver’s true strength! There’s always a possibility of getting wounded during a battle and it’s even more difficult to control one’s strength when the person is trying their best. Everybody saw that if I didn’t hold back when the two

of us were performing our last attack, Senior Brother Oliver won't be able to cry out in pain right now."

Elder Sayer was so angry that his face blushed a crimson color. He stretched out his hand and pointed at Jackie as he spoke, "What a young man with a glib tongue. Since you can control your last attack, can't you just directly disperse the attack! In that way, Oliver won't get hurt."

Jackie laughed out loud when he heard what Elder Sayer said. However, his laughter sounded cold as he glared coldly at Elder Sayer who was standing in front of him. How dare he say such a thing? Was he asking Jackie to disperse his attack so that Oliver could bounce back and they would end up in another life or death battle?

Jackie glared at Elder Sayer coldly. "Didn't you see how Oliver attacked me? He was trying to kill me. Why can't I attack him when he's allowed to do that to me? I know that Oliver is a member of your Sayer family and you will definitely be on his side. However, you cannot support him blindly and forbid me from attacking him while allowing him to kill me!"

Chapter 2165
What Jackie said immediately caused his surroundings to quiet down. Jackie's words were sharp and devastating. However, that was exactly what Elder Sayer meant. He only allowed Oliver to attack Jackie but forbade Jackie to do the same!

All the disciples standing there looked at Elder Sayer angrily. Elder Sayer humphed softly and understood that he had been caught in the trap by Jackie. If he continued the conversation, it would hurt his prestige. He might even lose his position as an elder because of this. He humphed coldly and said, "B*stard, don't you quote what I said out of context. That is not what I meant."

"If so, what do you mean? Why are you questioning me so angrily for what I did? I didn't break any rules and I didn't kill Oliver. I also did not cause him to be disabled for life. Since I didn't break any rules, why are you questioning me?"

What Jackie said successfully choked Elder Sayer and he felt like he had swallowed a huge piece of stone. The stone was stuck at his throat and he was unable to swallow or spit it out. As an elder of the sect, he was forced by Jackie to a point where he was speechless.

Jackie smiled coldly and said loudly, "I know what Elder Sayer means. If I'm the one who's badly wounded and on the ground, you will be sitting on the round platform, looking at Oliver happily. However, you've rushed over to question me because Oliver is the one who's on the ground right now. I can understand that you're just protecting your family. However, you should treat every disciple the same as you're an elder. I've never expected for you to be so biased!"

"You!" Elder Sayer was so angry that his eyes were almost popping out of his sockets.

“All of you, shut up! Elder Sayer, why are you wasting time speaking to him on the battle platform instead of helping Oliver to receive his treatment?!” The First Elder’s voice traveled far and exploded loudly by everyone’s ears.

At this moment, the First Elder was so exasperated that his entire body hurt. Oliver could be considered a disciple siding with him and Elder Sayer was an unwavering supporter of his. One of them was defeated by Jackie while the other ignored his position and started a fight with Jackie. The most embarrassing part was how Elder Sayer was suppressed by Jackie and was unable to win the argument. The First Elder was in an extremely embarrassing situation.

The corners of Elder Sayer’s mouth twitched and he knew that things would not end well for him and the First Elder might teach him a lesson if he insisted on fighting with Jackie. He exhaled deeply and forcefully suppressed his anger. He asked others to help Oliver down the battle platform and sent him away for treatment. Jackie also walked down from the battle platform slowly and steadily.

Everybody was looking at Jackie. They still remembered their feelings when they initially looked at Jackie walking up the battle platform. Right now, everything had changed and the strength that Jackie demonstrated was really shocking! Just as Jackie walked down the battle platform, he suddenly raised his head and looked toward the First Elder, who was on the round platform.

The First Elder had no idea why but he felt uncomfortable when he saw Jackie looking at him. He saw the corners of Jackie’s mouth curling upward and a standard smile appeared on Jackie’s face. “First Elder, please don’t forget about the bet between us. You can directly ask somebody to send the sect contribution points over or I can personally pick them up.”

All the audience was in an uproar once again when they heard what Jackie said. The First Elder’s face had already turned into a crimson color and he recalled at this moment about his personal promise to Jackie that he would top up 300 contribution points on top of Oliver’s wager of 700 contribution points if Jackie won.

Chapter 2166
The First Elder scoffed indignantly and spoke, obviously flustered, “Don’t you worry. As the First Elder, I’ll keep my promise and send the sect contribution points to you later!”

He then flicked his sleeve and turned around to leave. He might feel that his presence had no other meaning apart from embarrassing himself. Since the First Elder had left, the other elders did not need to stay, too.

Jackie’s room still looked the same. It was a standard single-bed room with a wardrobe, a table, a chair, and a shelf. After he returned from the noisy gathering spot, Jackie had been tidying his belongings. In fact, he did not leave many things in this house. Apart from his bedding, there were only several ancient books that he borrowed.

Brook and Noel had also followed Jackie to his room, they had been talking throughout their journey. Their conversation did not stop after they entered the house and sat by the table.

The excitement on Noel's face was overflowing. "You have no idea what those people thought of you when you walked out from the crowd. Some were jealous, some hated you, and some admired you, surely. Anyway, you have the respect of them all. You defeated one of the top ten formal disciples as a newly recruited informal disciple. I don't think there are many people in the sect with such a record!"

Brook nodded vehemently, and he was much more excited than Noel. After all, he was just a runner disciple, and it was his great honor to be acquainted with Jackie, who would definitely become a chosen disciple in the future. "Elder Sayer looked at you like he'd eat you. When you ask the First Elder to remember the three hundred sect contribution points he promised, Elder Sayer glowered so badly. Not only have you defeated Oliver, but he has to give you seven hundred contribution points obediently. This time, he has suffered a terrible loss!"

Brook could not stop smiling when he thought of this. When Jackie mentioned that he was going to have a fight with Oliver, no one around Jackie thought of him highly. Everybody belittled Jackie terribly, wanting to trample all over him. However, their view of him changed so quickly, faster than skimming through books, and soon changed the direction of their conversation. They started to mock Oliver and said that he was outwardly strong but inwardly weak.

Noel poured himself a cup of tea. "This time, no one in the sect dares question you. Those who looked down at you dare not say anything right now. I've never expected you to be so strong that even Oliver can't contend against you. No wonder you could survive the dangerous Mount Beasts."

Brook could not stop running his mouth when it came to matters regarding Jackie's strength. He inhaled deeply and said, "How can you be so strong? What martial skill are you practicing? How did you still manage to crush Oliver when you're challenging him from a lower level? The question of what martial skill you're training is in everyone's minds right now. Some people are even guessing that you're practicing an Earth level martial skill!"

Brook and Noel's expression changed when they heard the words, 'Earth level martial skill'. The two of them were so excited that they forgot the most crucial point. However, Jackie obviously had no plans of telling them about this. He only chuckled and packed everything. He pointed toward the outside of the door. "Elder Godfrey sent somebody to inform me that I'll head directly to the Mysterious Green Hall after I pack my things."

In the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, every formal elder owned their personal hall, and the one belonging to Elder Godfrey was known as the Mysterious Green Hall. Noel and Brook were not insensible, and they stopped asking when they noticed Jackie not wanting to continue with the topic.

Brook mentioned that he wanted to send Jackie to the Mysterious Green Hall, and Jackie agreed to it. The three of them left the individual house and walked towards the Mysterious Green Hall.

The Mysterious Green Hall was located at the east side of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion where disciples did not dare venture to, apart from the elder disciples. Jackie had already become Elder Godfrey's last disciple and was naturally a member of the elder disciples. Hence, his living quarters had changed from the secluded room to the Mysterious Green Hall.

Noel and Brook had never visited where the formal elders stayed. The two of them wanted to accompany Jackie there with hopes of getting a peak. The informal disciples stayed at the west side of the entire sect, and they had to walk across the entire sect to reach the Mysterious Green Hall.

Chapter 2167
They talked as they walked, meeting many other disciples along the way as they did.

The battle at the gathering spot made Jackie relatively well-known, and a lot of people viewed him in a different light from then on. Most of them looked at him with admiration, but some envied Jackie immensely. Despite this, Jackie's expression remained stoic and unperturbed, no matter what the people's opinions were of him.

The closer they were to the east side, the fewer the disciples they ran into. After all, the people active in the east side were mostly the management members with high positions, or even elder disciples. Jackie and the rest did not know their way as this was their first time here. They struggled to find their way here and had to ask for directions from several disciples.

The only road to the Mysterious Green Hall was one turn away. They quieted down a little as they got closer as their surroundings were utterly quiet. Apart from the sound of the wind blowing past the bamboo trees, the only thing that could be heard were their voices. At this moment, Noel suddenly frowned as he lowered his voice and said, "Who's that guy up ahead? Why is he looking at us like that?"

Jackie followed his voice and looked over. A man was standing behind a clumper of bamboo, and he seemed to be doing that on purpose so that they could not see him clearly. However, all three of them could see the hostility in his eyes. Jackie frowned as this was the only route to the Mysterious Green Hall.

Was this a member of the Mysterious Green Hall?

Jackie continued walking, even though doubts riddled his heart. Jackie could only see the person a little better as they approached. This person was quite good-looking, and Jackie was surprised when he saw that the person was wearing clothes that indicated he was a chosen disciple. There was an obvious division between the sect's disciples. The disciples had different clothes according to their ranking of being informal disciples, elder disciples, and chosen disciples.

This person had three begonias sewn on his waist, and he was obviously a chosen disciple as well.

All three of them raised their guards mentally upon seeing him.

Brook had the lowest position, so he decided to hide behind the two others. Only his eyes were seen peeking out behind them as he looked at the chosen disciple in fear.

Griffin Olsen looked at Jackie coldly. “Why are you looking at me so alertly? I won’t do anything to you right now.”

What he said sounded like he wanted Jackie to be at ease, yet it was a complete power show. Jackie frowned; this person did not come bearing good intentions. He had no idea who this person was as he had only joined the Dual Sovereign Pavilion recently. He could not have offended a chosen disciple, either.

Jackie could only gesture politely with his hands out of his mannerism. “May I know who you are?”

Griffin raised his eyebrows. “I’m a chosen disciple, Griffin Olsen. Remember this name; you’ll be hearing it often in the future.”

Jackie frowned at Griffin’s intonation. He was even more concerned about why Griffin was purposely blocking his way here to meet him.

Griffin stared at Jackie coldly. He seemed to have read Jackie’s thoughts as he sneered and said, “I had to meet you. You so effortlessly won a spot while my brother lost his.”

Jackie was puzzled when he heard this. He had no idea who Griffin was, let alone his brother. As for the spot Griffin mentioned, could it be the spot as the last disciple? However, Jackie’s guts told him that what Griffin meant was not the recently obtained spot as the last disciple.

Chapter 2168
Griffin’s words and him waiting for Jackie at this location had confused Jackie greatly. Although Griffin was a chosen disciple and every disciple would automatically feel inferior to them as they were the future hope of the entire sect, the chosen disciples did not have such treatment when it came to Jackie.

Before Jackie could understand the meaning behind Griffin’s words and tone, Griffin was already so arrogant toward him. Jackie, unable to tolerate such behavior and not wanting to dilly nor dally, chuckled softly and said in a slightly cold manner, “I really don’t understand what you mean, Senior Brother Griffin. I don’t know anything about this spot you’re talking about.”

Griffin raised his eyebrows, obviously not believing In what Jackie said. Griffin scoffed indignantly and looked at Jackie as if he had chosen the hard way to deal with things. “You really think I don’t dare do anything to you? Although you’re already the Eleventh Elder’s last disciple, you’re just an elder disciple, but you’re

nothing to us chosen disciples. Oliver Sayer is definitely a top disciple among the formal disciples, but he's just a newbie in my opinion. I can easily achieve what you were able to do. Don't think that you can show off in front of me just because you've got some little achievements."

Noel and Brook had slightly darkened expressions on their faces. Although Griffin's questions were not aimed at them, the look in his eyes was undeniably cold when he occasionally glanced at them. The two of them proactively took a step back.

Jackie smiled coldly and said in a baffled manner, "I don't know if there's something wrong with your eyes or your mind. When was I arrogant and showed off in front of you? This is the first time I've met you, and I've never heard of you before today."

Griffin was, to Jackie, a hilarious character.

Griffin's face flushed a purple color when he heard what Jackie said. As a chosen disciple, he had never expected for Jackie to have replied with such a sharp tongue. Since he became a chosen disciple, all regular disciples were extremely respectful when they interacted with him. None of them dare act like what Jackie did as he dared mock Griffin's intelligence.

Griffin's fingers slightly trembled as he spoke, " Amazing! I've heard about how unruly you are, and now, I've finally experienced it myself. I originally planned to forgive you if you're sensible enough. However, it looks like… You'll be stepping all over us chosen disciples if I don't teach you a lesson!"

Jackie closed his eyes, utterly bewildered. He abhorred those who, as being in a higher position, spoke to him in such an interrogative manner. They always treated him with such a condescending attitude, and they would feel insulted once he said something they disliked. As a result, they would go against him.

Jackie exhaled deeply, not wanting to waste a single second of his time. "What do you actually want?"

Griffin raised his eyebrows and took a step forward. His aura slowly increased as he wanted to suppress Jackie with his aura. However, Jackie was not made out of paper. Although Griffin had completely released his momentum, Jackie stood his ground, expression stoic as ever as though he was undaunted by Griffin.

"I think it's best if you cease such useless actions. Just say what's on your mind, not beating around the bush. I don't understand anything you said previously," remarked Jackie coldly.

Chapter 2169
Griffin's expression faltered and darkened, utterly embarrassed for not overpowering Jackie. However, he felt that Jackie might say something worse if he wasted time here. He knew that this was the only road to the Mysterious Green Hall, and if anything happened here, members of the Mysterious Green Hall would definitely support Jackie, while he might be in trouble due to this.

Griffin suppressed his anger after deliberating the situation. “I’m not here today to question you. Instead, I hope that you’ll be smart enough to give up he spot to visit the Secret Place for Resources. You’re just in the intermediate stage of innate level, and you’ll be in danger if you visit that place. It’ll be better if you stay in the sect and focus on your training. You can visit the secret places in the future when another opportunity comes along.”

While it might have looked as though he was advising Jackie, Jackie was no fool and knew Griffin would not be so considerate toward him. It turned out that the reason Griffin came looking for him was because of the Secret Place for Resources. However, Jackie had never heard anything about himself gaining a spot to the Secret Place for Resources.

Elder Godfrey’s figure flashed through his head when he thought of this. It looked like the spot had something to do with Elder Godfrey. Elder Godfrey might have even strived for this spot for him. If that was the case, he definitely could not yield the spot to Griffin.

That man spoke so impolitely and mocked him in such an enigmatic manner. On top of that, Griffin even wanted to suppress him with his momentum. If he honored such a person, he would really be ashamed of himself.

Jackie chuckled. “I still don’t know what this spot to enter the Secret Place for Resources is, but it doesn’t matter if I know about it or not. Since I have a spot for that, I won’t give it up. You’re right that I’m only in the intermediate stage of the innate level, but carrying challenges ahead of my level is nothing to me.”

Griffin’s expression darkened and he once again looked at Jackie fiercely, but Jackie ignored how Griffin looked at him.

Jackie’s expression remained neutral as Griffin sized him up with a sharp look in his eyes. Griffin scoffed indignantly coldly and flicked his sleeve furiously. “You truly are an utterly arrogant person. I’ve already given your respect, and you blatantly refuse it. In that case, pinpointing you in the future!

Jackie tilted his head to one side as a sarcastic smile appeared on his face. “Don’t you find your own words funny? What do you mean, respecting me? You were the one who came up with such pompous excuses when you’re actually pushing me for such minor benefits. Why should I listen to you? If you wish to pinpoint me, feel free to do so. After all, I don’t mind adding you to my enemy list!”

Jackie then took a detour from Griffin, who stood before him, and strode toward the direction of the Mysterious Green Hall. Noel and Brook dared not look up as they ran after Jackie, heading toward the same direction.

Griffin flushed a crimson color out of anger as he tightened his fists and glared at Jackie’s figure hatefully. He looked like his anger could only be resolved if he could pounce and bite Jackie.

He inhaled deeply and hissed through gritted teeth,” You’re too pompous, young man! Don’t think that you’re free to do as you like just because you have the

support of the Eleventh Elder. Just wait and see! I'll make you kneel and make you take back what you said in tears, sooner or later!"

With that, Griffin immediately turned around and walked in the opposite direction of where Jackie was headed to while Noel and Brook followed after Jackie. The two of them had to walk in large strides to catch up with Jackie as he was walking speedily.

Chapter 2170
Noel slowly turned around to look at Griffin carefully while walking forward, and only when he saw Griffin turning at a corner and leaving did he call out to Jackie, "Wait for me!"

Jackie stopped walking and turned to look at Noel, who looked visibly pale and with trembling fingers. Jackie chuckled and knew this was the first time Noel faced the chosen disciples. It was normal for him to be afraid under the coercion of a chosen disciple's aura.

Noel inhaled deeply. "You truly are courageous, and I genuinely admire you. I don't think I'd be that brave to stand up against him if I were you!"

Jackie nodded wordlessly.

Brook raised his chin and said confidently, "Senior Brother Jackie is different from you. He's a disciple elder and has the support of the Eleventh Elder. What does it matter if that guy is a chosen disciple? Apart from that, he's obviously causing trouble. Even though we have no idea what the spot to enter the Secret Place for Resources is, it's definitely something good as even Griffin is fighting for it. If so, it's only natural that we can't simply yield this to others!

Noel glanced at Brook speechlessly. "You don't have to remind us of this. I know that Jackie is different from how he used to be, but chosen disciples are still chosen disciples. You won't have a nice life if he plans to pick on you. I'm just thinking that we should reduce the number of enemies we have in the future."

Jackie nodded as he understood that Noel was considerate toward him, but he did not agree to what Noel said. He turned around and looked at Noel with a serious expression on his face.

Jackie's clothes fluttered as the breeze blew at his clothes. However, Jackie stood straight as if the strong wind could not bend his spine. "I understand what you mean, but you have to think about it carefully. Even if I yield this time, he'll still force me again if something similar occurs again in the future. Should I yield to him every single time? If so, why should I become a martial artist? I won't be able to improve if I lose so many great chances."

He paused here and exhaled softly before he continued, "I've always been somebody with my own principles. I won't offend anybody if they did nothing to me, but I'll double the reprisal if they dare offend me. If they've already come picking on me, I'd rather die than be a coward and yield my opportunity."

Noel's expression darkened upon hearing this. He mocked himself by chuckling softly and stretched out his hand to tap Jackie on the shoulder. "You're right. If a martial artist wishes to go against nature, they have to be equipped with the mentality you have to achieve the peak of martial arts. However, I'm different from you, being the extremely careful person I am. I'm not as talented as you, so I don't have the confidence and strength."

Jackie did not say anything and only looked at Noel in silence.

Noel chuckled and pointed at the Mysterious Green Hall in front of them as he changed the topic of the conversation. "Let's go inside so that we both can learn something new!"

The Mysterious Green Hall was a huge palace, and if it was reduced in size, it could be seen as a house with one main entrance. There were two side halls beside the main hall, and there was a small garden with green plants planted in front of the main hall. There was a gazebo in the middle of the garden. As trees covered most of the gazebo, Jackie could only see the outline of the gazebo.

The runner disciples invited all three of them to the side hall the moment they entered the hall.

The runner disciple did not make any self-introduction. He only introduced all the facilities in the side hall and Jackie's future accommodation to them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2171-2180

Chapter 2171

Jackie's room was on the west side hall. This used to be a storage space for miscellaneous items, but everything had been cleaned out and the space was nicely tidied.

After the runner disciple left, Jackie poured a pot of tea for Noel and Brook, who bade him goodbye after spending half a day talking to them.

With that, Jackie was the only one left in the west side hall after sending Brook and Noel away. Jackie sighed helplessly as he stood alone in the empty side hall. He thought that Elder Godfrey would ask him to come after he had arrived. Unexpectedly, he had been ignored.

After sitting in the side hall for another hour, he became utterly bored and could not reign his thoughts. He then opened the side hall's door and walked out of the west side hall. Jackie had just stepped on the green stone path when he saw a man In formal elder clothing sitting in the gazebo. The man had his back facing Jackie and seemed to be enjoying his tea.

Jackie's tension ebbed away when he saw that person's back figure. He walked steadily toward the gazebo that was situated in the middle. The surrounding plants were incredibly lush, which would obstruct one's view densely. He moved the leaves away as he slowly walked inside.

Elder Godfrey slowly looked up and glanced at Jackie who arrived in the gazebo.

Jackie's expression seemed a little bitter. Although he had become Elder Godfrey's last disciple, Jackie's mood was still slightly terrible. He sat down opposite Elder Godfrey impolitely before he took another jade teacup from the table to pour himself a cup of tea. The delicate fragrance of the tea leaves assailed his nostrils. He had never drunk such tea, but he knew that this was a type of spirited tea that could clear one's mind with its fragrance.

Elder Godrey's mouth curled upward as a significant smile appeared on his face. He did not waste time on other irrelevant things as he said straightforwardly," You can ask anything you wish to know, and I'll tell you everything I know without reservation."

Jackie scoffed lightly. He initially held respect for this formal elder, but what he did previously had stripped off all the respect Jackie had for him.

Jackie replied in a slightly low voice, "I feel that the Eleventh Elder should give me an explanation. You didn't give me any hint before suddenly announcing me as your last disciple in front of everyone, causing everyone to target me. I had no

idea that the Eleventh Elder was so confident in me and knew that I was capable of settling this dispute without seeing me in action."

Elder Godfrey chuckled when he heard this. He did not get angry because of Jackie's angry tone. The elder picked up his cup and took a sip. "I know that you're not a commoner, and this can be considered my test to you. If you pass the challenge, it proves that you're capable of becoming my last disciple. The news I've declared is true as my last disciple has to be excellent in every aspect."

Jackie was furious when he heard this. This meant that Elder Godfrey only had a brief understanding about Jackie, and he did not consider things on his behalf when he decided to do so. If Jackie was capable of suppressing the matter, it meant that Jackie was qualified to be his last disciple. If Jackie failed, he would follow the First and Second Elders' opinion and choose a last disciple among those three disciples.

Chapter 2172
Regardless, the Eleventh Elder was not at a loss and Jackie was the only one who would suffer.

Jackie glowered at the elder, though not as intensely, but his response was curt as he spoke, "You truly are amazing at calculating such matters, Elder Godfrey. Compared to you, my schemes seem to be nothing important."

Elder Godfrey naturally understood Jackie's hidden sarcasm. He put down the teacup in his hand and looked up at Jackie. "You don't need to be so angry. We're fated, and I have to thank you for rescuing me out of Mount Beasts. I owe you for your kindness, and I naturally won't ignore you when you're in trouble. It was indeed rash of me to suddenly announce this back then, but I won't abandon you even if you're unable to defeat any of those three disciples."

The elder's words might have seemed pleasant, but Jackie was not a three-year-old child. He chuckled and spoke softly, "You have to understand that I'll face the danger of failing once I get onto the battle stage. You announced me as your last disciple previously, and they'll naturally target me. If they attack me fatally, I may lose my hands or legs by then."

Elder Godfrey said, "I know that you aren't an ordinary person, and you won't put yourself in such danger. If you truly feel that your strength is incomparable to them, you won't join them on the battle platform. I know this clearly."

Jackie snorted and did not respond. He only turned to one side and looked at the dense trees surrounding them.

Elder Godfrey was not displeased because of Jackie's attitude. He ignored Jackie and continued speaking," Right now, you are already my last disciple. To put things simply, we are on the same boat. Don't let these grievances affect our relationship."

Jackie's mouth twitched as he itched to say something terrible. However, he also understood that what Elder Godfrey said was true, and the two of them were in

the same boat. It was best for them to not speak so harshly and cause their relationship to be in a deadlock as he would also suffer because of that. He had no choice but to nod. “You’re right. However, you’ve refuted the First and Second Elder by doing this. Aren’t you afraid that the two of them will cause you trouble in the future? Even a newly recruited informal disciple who doesn’t care about the world also knows that the biggest issue in the sect right now is the battle for the position of sect master. No matter who will become the sect master in the future, it’ll be a battle between the First and Second Elder. It’s unwise of you to offend the two of them at once.”

Jackie did not purposely say this to disgust Elder Godfrey. Instead, he felt that Elder Godfrey had completely offended those two elders by doing what he did. Both the elders were not people that could be easily dealt with, especially the Second Elder. He was a gloomy, extremely shrewd person. Once he had his eyes fixated on a person, that person’s life would not be easy in the future.

Elder Godfrey chuckled and replied nonchalantly, “We have many days ahead, and even if the sect master wishes to abdicate his position, it’ll take him two to three years to do so. Who will know how the situation is in two or three years? On top of that, will they let go of me easily even if I didn’t offend them? The others might not know this, but you know what I went through before. I was framed by others, and I found out that those two elders made a pact together to lure me into Mount Beasts after I did my investigation.”

Jackie’s expression stiffened when he heard this. He had never imagined that this was the case. He naturally understood that Elder Godfrey was framed by others to appear at Mount Beasts at that time.

Chapter 2173
However, Jackie did not expect that the people who framed Elder Godfrey were the First and Second Elders. The two of them were incompatible during any other day, and Jackie was rather surprised by the fact that they would temporarily join forces to frame Elder Godfrey

Elder Godfrey exhaled deeply. “I’ve already figured a way out for myself, and I’ve also thought about the way out for you. Some things are unavoidable even if I wish to avoid them. As the results will be the same, it’s better to live happily than living a vexed life.”

Jackie nodded deeply as he agreed with what Elder Godfrey said. Elder Godfrey chuckled, shook his head, and said solemnly, “Let’s not talk about these miscellaneous matters. I have something important to tell you right now.”

“The spot to enter the Secret Place for Resources, yes?” Jackie blurted out without waiting for Elder Godfrey to continue speaking.

Elder Godfrey raised his brows and glanced at Jackie in surprise. “How did you learn about that? I’ve just learned about this recently, and according to those people’s virtue, they would’ve asked their subordinates to keep it a secret. Surprisingly, news of this has been spread, it seems.”

Jackie's lips twitched reluctantly before he simply described what he experienced before he entered the Mysterious Green Hall to Elder Godfrey.

Elder Godfrey sneered coldly after he heard what happened. "So it was Griffin Olsen. He's always been like that; acting domineeringly due to the fact that he was a chosen disciple. His characteristics and your temperament would definitely end badly sooner or later. Since he said that he won't let you off the hook, you should do the same."

Jackie smiled helplessly when he heard this. Usually, would the support not stand forth and protect those under their care from harm? It looked like Elder Godfrey did not plan to do so.

Elder Godfrey seemed to be oblivious about Jackie's struggle as he continued, "I've finally understood the stories behind some of the things that happened, and I've made my guesses as to why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would act as if they didn't see the members of the Corpse Pavilion. The Thousand Leaves Pavilion is carrying out a chest game, and every step they take is a gamble with much to lose."

Jackie shot up upon hearing Elder Godfrey's meaningful words.

The elder continued, "The reason they allowed the Corpse Pavilion to come to the North is due to their inability to take over the entire resources by themselves. Hence, they needed more people to share the Secret Place for Resources."

Jackie was slightly confused by this and could not help but ask, "Since they can't take over the entire area, they can just do it slowly. After all, the Secret Place for Resources is located on our North side. As long as we don't disclose the news and keep our guards up, we can slowly harvest the secret place. That would've solved the problem, wouldn't it?"

Elder Godfrey sighed and said helplessly, "It'd be great if matters were as simple as you've mentioned. The upper management of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion definitely have thought about this as even you were able to come up with this idea. After I dug deep into things, I discovered that the news regarding the Secret Place for Resources had been spread by the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. They personally informed the Corpse Pavilion about it."

Jackie's expression turned into a solemn one when he heard this. At this moment, he had gradually understood some things that made no sense in the past. If the Thousand Leaves Pavilion personally informed the Corpse Pavilion about this, they must have done it to gain the Corpse Pavilion's corporation or they wished to achieve some goals by using the Corpse Pavilion. In that case, the upper management of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would ignore the Corpse Pavilion's petty actions in Mount Beasts.

Chapter 2174
"Why would the Thousand Leaves Pavilion do so? What difficulties are they facing that require the cooperation of the Corpse Pavilion? Are they hoping that the Corpse Pavilion will spearhead the matter? Those in the Corpse Pavilion aren't fools, though, and they'll also notice issues if they investigate the matter. Once

they discover the issues, the Corpse Pavilion won't cooperate obediently with the Thousand Leaves Pavilion," spoke Jackie rather excitedly

Elder Godfrey nodded. "You've gotten to the most important point. In fact, I can't make out the reasons for these questions right now. I only know that the news was spread by the Thousand Leaves Pavilion themselves, but I'm not sure why they did it."

Elder Godfrey paused before he continued, "Look, even you have thought of these questions. I believe the old fellows definitely have thought about them, too. Nonetheless, I'm sure they have their own reasons to insist on doing this. The Secret Place for Resources isn't a place we can enter as we like. Every sect has its corresponding quota, and that's why Griffin would snatch the position from you for his brother."

Jackie thought about it for some time and did not immediately continue the conversation. He finally spoke after some time, "What's inside the Secret Place for Resources? In the beginning, our sect is fighting with the Muddled Origin Clan for the secret place. After that, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion discovered something, so we stopped the battle between us and the Muddled Origin Clan to take over the secret place."

Elder Godfrey was slightly stunned after he heard |Jackie's inquiries. He raised his hand to pour himself another cup of tea. "According to the situation I inquired about, the Secret Place for Resources was passed down by an ancient master. On top of that, it's highly likely that this ancient master isn't from our Hestia Continent. I think the Secret Place for Resources has been passed down by a master from a world that is far more developed in terms of their martial art culture compared to our Hestia Continent."

Elder Godfrey looked up toward Jackie after he finished speaking. He originally thought that Jackie would be greatly shocked by what he said. After all, even he was shocked and could not control his expression upon learning how the secret place was passed down by an ancient master. However, Elder Godfrey was stunned when he saw Jackie's facial expression; he was not even shocked in the slightest. Instead, Jackie's face was filled with curiosity.

What was he curious about? Was he wondering about the ancient master's name? Should he not have been shocked when he heard the news?

Elder Godfrey coughed softly and interrupted Jackie's rampantly running, causing Jackie to snap out of it and looking rather sheepish. "You mean that this Secret Place for Resources was passed on by an ancient master who's much stronger than the masters of our Hestia Continent?"

Elder Godfrey nodded.

Jackie's eyes glanced around as what he encountered at Mount Beasts flashed past his thoughts. He was forced to jump down from the Cliff of Sorrows, was trapped in the Ten Absolutes Trap Array, and encountered the skeleton covered in robes after he escaped the Ten Absolutes Trap Array.

At that time, Jackie inferred that the skeleton did not belong to the West Cercei State or even the Hestia Continent, especially when the person had the Ancient Eclipse Dragon's blood in his hand and the Shattered Soul Crystals scattered around his right hand. These items did not belong to the Hestia Continent, and they were incredibly precious even in first-grade worlds.

Oh top of that, the Ten Absolutes Trap Array that contained them also did not belong to this world. These questions had long been raised in his heart, but all this while, he temporarily suppressed these doubts as he did not receive further information.

However, he knew in his heart that something huge must have happened in the West Cercei State a long time ago, causing things that should not have appeared in this place to constantly appear.

Chapter 2175
The corners of Elder Godfrey's mouth slightly twitched as he tapped on the table with his fingers." What are you thinking of? What is that weird expression for?"

Jackie snapped out of his thoughts when he heard Elder Godfrey sid. He coughed softly and touched his nose to hide his slightly embarrassed expression again. "It's nothing. I'm just wondering why something like this was left behind by ancient masters in the West Cercei State."

Elder Godfrey raised his brows. "You're not the only one troubled by this as everybody who knew about this matter wondered about it. Something huge must've happened at the West Cercei State a long time ago and caused the master to pass down his inheritance here."

Jackie nodded and asked with a hint of surprise in his voice, "Since this is an inherited place, why is it addressed as the Secret Place for Resources? Does the upper management of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion plan to confuse others with the name?"

Elder Godfrey glanced at Jackie and simply shook his head. "That's not the case. In fact, both the upper management of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and the elders of our Dual Sovereign Pavilion have no idea why the Secret Place for Resources was left behind. Some people said that this used to be the residence of the ancient master, while others said that the ancient master did this to search for a suitable inheritor to take over his powers. There are all sorts of interpretations, but I think that this is the inheritance left behind by the ancient masters."

Jackie nodded and did not press on with his questions regarding this matter, to which Elder Godfrey looked at Jackie in surprise.

Others would have continued asking questions until they got to the bottom of things, but Jackie seemed like he was not interested in the matter. "Aren't you curious as to why I fought for a spot on your behalf?"

Jackie nodded. He was certainly curious, but there were so many questions running in his mind that he did not have time to think about this issue. He was focused on other issues, too. Since Elder Godfrey had brought up the matter, he naturally went with the flow and asked, “I am, actually, and I am waiting for you to continue talking about it.”

Elder Godfrey could not help but roll his eyes at Jackie, not believing in his response. However, he did not wish to make a fuss over this with Jackie. When he was about to continue speaking, Jackie suddenly looked up as if he had a sudden realization. “Since this Secret Place for Resources is left behind by ancient masters, there must be lots of precious items inside. No matter how much the upper management cares about the sect’s disciples, none of them would be able to consider their disciples when facing such precious items.”

Jackie spoke tactfully, but he actually wanted to ask why they were allowed to enter the Secret Place for Resources. After all, this was something left behind by ancient masters, and they were considered precious items to the masters of the West Cercei State. Should the elders not take over the area by themselves?

Elder Godfrey raised his brows and glanced at Jackie praisingly. Jackie was a smart young man, indeed.” You are right. If the old men were able to obtain the items by themselves, there wouldn’t be anything left for you people. The reason they are in such a hurry to arrange for disciples to enter the Secret Place for Resources was that it isn’t a place everybody could enter. There are many limitations in that place, and we’re not allowed to enter the secret place.”

Jackie was even more puzzled when he heard this. Elder Godfrey was not someone who would withhold information. He would naturally explain things to Jackie, since they were already at this point of the conversation.

Chapter 2176
“There’s a limitation of realms for those who wish to enter the Secret Place for Resources. Those with a fighting prowess higher than the final stage of innate level will be blocked outside the secret place. Only martial artists in the final stage of innate level or lower are allowed into the Secret Place for Resources. On top of that, those who wish to enter the secret place need to have the entry token. Nobody can enter the secret place without the entry token, and that’s why there’s a restriction on the quota. I fought a spot for you, and I hope you won’t let it go to waste.”

This excited Jackie, and a radiant look flashed past his eyes after he heard Elder Godfrey’s description. If there was a limitation on their fighting prowess, he would not be in such great danger after he entered the secret place. The only problems he might face might be from the secret place itself.

He could not help but sit up straight when he thought of this. His eyes were fixated on the camphor behind Elder Godfrey, and Elder Godfrey could not help but chuckle when he saw Jackie’s expression. He pushed the cup of tea toward Jackie and wanted him to drink the tea. “Drink some tea and calm down. I know that you’re thinking about how you’ll be able to have great achievements in the Secret Place for Resources after you hear about this limitation. However, I have to advise you to remain calm no matter where you’re heading next.”

Jackie lifted the teacup and took a huge sip. He exhaled deeply before he suddenly said, “I believe that the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had sent someone, at least, to check the danger inside.”

Elder Godfrey’s eyes lit up. “You are quite smart. Since they’re sending their excellent disciples into the secret place, they’ll definitely check the area to ensure the safety of these disciples. In total, the Muddled Origin Clan, Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and the Thousand Leaves Pavilion sent a hundred puppets in the intermediate stage of innate level into the Secret Place for Resources. Out of the hundred puppets, more than seventy of them came back, which means that the depreciation rate is around thirty percent. The disciples we send are naturally excellent disciples of our sect. They’re much stronger than the puppets in the intermediate stage o finnate level. Your depreciation rate will also be about ten to twenty percent lower. This means that most of you will return. I’ve arranged for you to go in because it’s extremely safe.”

Jackie blinked as he relished what the Elder Godfrey had said. A depreciation rate of 10 to 20 percent was impressively low. So long as he kept himself disciplined and avoid being cannon fodder after he went in, he should be able to leave the place safely. The Secret Place for Resources was truly a great place for Jackie.

Elder Godfrey frowned. “Don’t think that the Secret Place for Resources is paradise and you can run around because of the low depreciation rate, still. More than seventy of the puppets were able to return because their mission was to investigate what’s inside the secret place. After you and the other disciples go in, you may just end up in an extremely dangerous spot because of the precious treasures inside. You mustn’t act compulsively and end up dying.”

Jackie nodded. He knew that Elder Godfrey was saying this for his own good. The elder was afraid that Jackie would act impulsively and put himself in danger. However, Jackie was not the kind of person who would endanger himself for some small benefits.

Jackie frowned and asked, “How many quotas did our sect obtain? Who’s going?”

Elder Godfrey replied, “Third-grade sects were given twenty spots. The Thousand Leaves Pavilion was given fifty spots, and the Corpse Pavilion also has fifty spots.”

Jackie was slightly stunned when he heard this. “The Corpse Pavilion also has fifty spots? You mentioned that the entry tokens are required to enter the Secret Place for Resources. Was the Corpse Pavilion also given entry tokens?”

Chapter 2177
“If these entry tokens were given to the Corpse Pavilion by the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, does this mean that both sects have already come to some sort of agreement?”

Elder Godfrey nodded, and there was a weird expression on his face. He seemed to be lamenting and, at the same time, tongue-tied. “You thought right. The Thousand Leaves Pavilion was the one who gave the entry token to the Corpse

Pavilion. The hilarious part is that not only was the Corpse Pavilion given 50 spots…, but those two third-grade sects in the south under the Corpse Pavilion's control also have 20 spots like us. This means that the sects from the north and south have the same number of spots."

Jackie's expression morphed into one that could not be read upon hearing this. He obviously did not understand what the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had In mind based on their actions. Didn't they know that doing this was lauding the enemy's spirit and belittling their own? They distributed the resources so averagely, and nobody was at an advantage.

Elder Godfrey chuckled softly. "Are you unable to understand what's going on? I was just as puzzled when I first received the news. I couldn't understand what the old men from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion were thinking. Didn't they know that they'll lose the restriction once they enter the Secret Place for Resources, that they'll be killing disciples recklessly? Disciples from the south won't hold back when going against our disciples from the north. A large number of our people might just die in that secret place."

Jackie nodded. "You're right. Not only will we lose the restrictions once we enter the Secret Place for Resources, but we'll get into bigger battles when fighting for precious items because we belong to different sects, too. There aren't any benefits of allowing them into the secret place. However, I don't think there's anything wrong with the upper management of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, and I'm sure they have their reason for doing so."

Elder Godfrey sighed softly, picked up his cup, and took a sip of his tea. Jackie glanced at Elder Godfrey and asked, "You still haven't told me who from our sect is going."

Elder Godfrey chuckled before replying to Jackie's question, "We're sending three chosen disciples, eleven elder disciples, and six formal disciples in the top six positions."

Jackie blinked in surprise when he heard this. "We're only sending three chosen disciples into the place?" Jackie was surprised by what he heard. After all, the Secret Place for Resources was a place with a low level of danger, and there would definitely be great items inside. It was possible that this place was left behind by the ancient master in search of people to inherit the things he left behind.

In that case, they should have reserved ten spots and sent all the chosen disciples into the secret place. Why did they only send three chosen disciples?

Elder Godfrey glanced at Jackie. "The chosen disciples are extremely important to a sect, and there might be several future formal or informal elders among those ten chosen disciples. Although this place looks promising, we can't send so many chosen disciples into the area as nobody knows how the place is. Only you will be the judge of that place after you enter."

Jackie's expression darkened when he heard this. In fact, the consideration of the sect's upper management was correct. Although they proved how dangerous the

place was with puppets, they could not draw conclusions just from this. Although the Secret Place for Resources seemed to be a safe place, chosen disciples were the lifeline of a sect, and the upper management naturally could not use them as subjects in the experience.

Losing too many chosen disciples in the secret place would absolutely be irreparable bad news to a sect

Chapter 2178
Jackie raised his brows and suddenly felt like he had been subjected to an experiment like a lab rat. The 20 people chosen were quite strong, and they were not chosen disciples, so they could be chosen as the guinea pigs for this experiment. The remaining seven chosen disciples might enter the Secret Place for Resources sooner or later. However, these people might enter the secret place after they had left the place.

At this moment, Jackie suddenly remembered diffin, who came to Jackie because of the quota. He wanted Jackie to give up entering the Secret Place for Resources and gave the spot to his younger brother.

Jackie suddenly asked, “Is Griffin’s brother in seventh place among the formal disciples?

Elder Godfrey chuckled and nodded, “You’re quite sharp. Griffin’s brother, Howard Olsen, is in seventh place among the formal disciples. Without you, there will be seven quotas for the formal disciples to enter the Secret Place for Resources. However, since you became my last disciples, I’d fight for a position for you. After all, you’re an elder disciple now, and all the other elders fought for a spot for their disciples. Since you obtained a position, the number of formal disciples would be one less.”

Jackie nodded. He finally understood what was happening.

Elder Godfrey chuckled and added, “Every formal elder will send one of their elder disciples into the Secret Place for Resources. I’m sure you know that the formal elders have more than one elder disciple. However, I only recruited you, so I can only send you.”

Jackie nodded and did not continue arguing on the matter. Instead, he asked something else, “In that case, will Griffin enter the secret place?”

Elder Godfrey focused his gaze on Jackie. “He’ll be there, yes. Although I don’t know much about the disciples in our sect, I have some impressions about Griffin as he’s a competitive person who bullies the weak. He’d surely fight for such a great opportunity.”

Jackie nodded. Griffin was a blunt person, and his character was apparent in just a short conversation. If he did not have the support of his own talents, he would have died a long time ago. Sometimes, there was no need to pay too much attention to people like him. The more troublesome people were the Second Elder and Elder Sayer.

Jackie had only met the Second Elder once. The First and Second Elders had lengthy conversations on the round platform the other day. They completely ignored the people present and laundred their interaction in front of all the disciples. Although the First Elder had his prestige as the First Elder, Jackie felt that the Second Elder was the most troublesome among them.

The First Elder said such insulting words, but the Second Elder was completely unfazed by what he heard. The Second Elder seemed like a crafty person as he was able to control his emotions, speak justifiably, and act tactically.

If the First Elder was a fierce tiger in the mountains, the Second Elder was a venomous snake hidden in the darkness. One only needed to be smart and have the correct weapons when facing a fierce tiger, but one would never know when the venomous snake would lunge and bite. Its poison would kill a person at any time.

Jackie frowned as he slightly turned pale.

Elder Godfrey looked at Jackie in a slightly surprised manner. “Don’t tell me that you’re actually afraid of Griffin.”

Chapter 2179
Jackie chuckled as he slightly raised his chin. “What’s so frightening about a person who only knows how to parade his power and fight without converging his thoughts?”

Elder Godfrey nodded at Jackie’s comments about Griffin; they were no doubt accurate. “In that case, why do you look rather troubled? Is something occupying you?”

Jackie did not hide his thoughts and nodded. “My thoughts went to the Second Elder because of Griffin. What the Second Elder said on the round platform has left a deep impression, and I feel that it’d be difficult to handle him. I didn’t say this in hopes of causing you trouble. I just think that it’s rather unwise for you to offend both elders at the same time. The First Elder is fine, but the Second Elder is difficult to handle.”

Jackie spoke with such sincerity that Elder Godfrey nodded. He naturally took what Jackie said into his heart. He moved over and looked at Jackie before stretching out his hand to slightly pat Jackie on his shoulder. “I know you mean well with what you said. In fact, I’ve already made the necessary considerations and you’re right. Compared to the First Elder, it’s much more difficult to handle the Second Elder. However, I’m really unlucky. As the Eleventh Elder, I’m a person who’s capable of disturbing the peace. The Second Elder will still do something against me if he isn’t completely certain that he can gain my support. If so, then I have nothing to worry about. Since the two of them will do something to me sooner or later, why should I bend to their will?”

Jackie nodded softly. His eyes flickered as a hesitant expression appeared on his face.

Elder Godfrey glanced at him and said softly, “I know what you’re thinking, but I don’t wish to be a lackey. I didn’t practice martial arts to listen to others. If I choose a side now and become a lackey to one of those two, that’d be going against my way of practicing martial arts. This is something I can never do.”

A slightly imposing look appeared in Jackie’s eyes. He admired how Elder Godfrey handled things. He would rather become their enemy or hide far away instead of becoming their lackey and do things for them.

Elder Godfrey sighed softly. “I’ve involved you in this matter by accepting you as my last disciple, but I have no choice but to do this as our relationships might be discovered sooner or later. Instead of waiting for them to take action against you by then, I’d rather take you in earlier. This can be considered as providing you with protection, and I can help you gain lots of benefits.”

Elder Godfrey smiled bitterly and continued, “I know that my actions might bring disaster, but I no longer care about that right now. Once I think that I’m unable to stay here, I will leave the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. I investigated you as a person, and I know you’re rather like my character.”

Jackie nodded at that. “I’ll follow you if you truly leave the Dual Sovereign Pavilion,” he declared, and Elder Godfrey nodded gratifyingly.

The two of them picked up their respective cups and took a sip. Jackie laughed bitterly and shook his head as if he had remembered something.

Elder Godfrey glanced at Jackie in surprise and asked, “What are you laughing at?”

Jackie answered, “I’m thinking of how the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and Corpse Pavilion’s upper management will react when they meet each other on the day we enter the Secret Place for Resources. That’d be very memorable, I’ll say. The enemies meet one another, but they can’t do anything about it. They can only hold all their anger in their hearts…”

Elder Godfrey arched his brow and slightly thought about it. He placed the teacup down and said seriously, “You’re wrong; we won’t be meeting one another.”

Chapter 2180
Jackie arched his brow in surprise when he heard this. Since they were entering the Secret Place for Resources together, they had to wait together at the location where the secret place was to be activated. By then, elders or sect heads would inevitably be visiting the place together with them.

Elder Godfrey knew that Jackie had the wrong idea in mind just by looking at his expression. He chuckled and explained, “The method of us entering the Secret Place for Resources is different from what you think it is. We don’t need to gather on one spot to activate the Secret Place for Resources. Instead, we can enter at will as long as we own the entry token.”

This was out of Jackie's understanding, Jackie had assumed that the activation of all secret places required a large number of spirited stones or spirited crystals. The space cave required the support of sufficient energy to allow entry for those who wished to enter.

Elder Godfrey started explaining to Jackie in a good tempered manner, "This Secret Place for Resources Is quite special as it's located at the northwest corner of the West Cercei State. This secret place is separated from our space, and one has to go through the space cave if they wish to enter the area. There are a couple hundred space caves within a ten-meter radius of a specific location. You only need to have the entry token to enter the space cave. Of course, those who wish to enter have to fulfill the restriction of fighting prowess. If not, one can never enter the secret place, even if he owned an entry token."

This gave Jackie a general understanding of what was happening. This meant that the Secret Place for Resources was invisible to the human eye unless one entered the area. As the secret place was an individual space, they had to search for space caves at the specific location and enter the space cave with the entry token.

Still, questions rose within Jackie. "Those who own the entry token are able to enter the Secret Place for Resources through the space cave. If so, who made these entry tokens? Could it be a powerful master from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion of sorts? If they're able to create these entry tokens, why don't they make more, and they wouldn't need to restrict the number of people entering the area."

Elder Godfrey spoke helplessly, "You're considering It too simply. If it's really just like what you said, there won't be anything worth worrying about as all the sects can create the entry tokens. In that way, we can send as many people into the secret place and spend as much time inside. There won't be any limitation on time and number of people."

Jackie could not help but frown when he heard this." Then who created the entry tokens? Is it the Corpse Pavilion?!"

Upon saying that, Jackie felt like laughing at himself and immediately shook his head to reject the idea." It's not the Corpse Pavilion, for sure, or the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would've lost their position a long time ago if that's the case. Are you trying to say that the masters of the fourth-grade sects are incapable of creating the entry tokens?"

Elder Godfrey nodded and did not continue wasting time on nonsense with Jackie. He straightforwardly answered, "The entry tokens aren't created by anybody; it's proactively released by the Secret Place for Resources."

Jackie was stunned when he heard what the elder said. The Secret Place for Resources was capable of releasing items? The more he listened to it, the more bizarre things seemed to be.

Elder Godfrey knew what Jackie was thinking about when he saw the look in Jackie's eyes.

Elder Godfrey chuckled and picked up his teacup to sip at his tea. “I was just as surprised when I heard the news, but this is the truth. Our elders personally saw these entry tokens being released from the nearby space caves when we discovered the Secret Place for Resources. It rushed outward so abruptly, as if somebody was throwing them out.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2181-2190

Chapter 2181

Jackie's expression darkened when he heard Elder Godfrey's explanation. "Does this mean that this Secret place for Resources welcomes the entry of us outsiders? Is it possible that the place was left behind by some ancient master, and he did this in search of his inheritor?"

Elder Godfrey nodded. "I highly recommend that you go into the place because my deduction is that the Secret Place for Resources is an inheritance left behind by an ancient master."

Jackie exhaled deeply. Elder Godfrey raised his hand and patted him on the shoulder. "Don't give yourself too much pressure. If you run into danger, remember that your safety is more important, and you shouldn't act impulsively."

After he said this, Elder Godfrey touched the Tortoise Ring on his left hand with his right hand. Jackie only saw a flash of black light before a token the size of his palm appeared in Elder Godfrey's hand. The token was of a weird shape, and it was filled with engravings of all kinds of incomprehensible runes and spells. There was even a faint flash of red colored light in it.

Elder Godfrey looked at the entry token for some time before placing it in Jackie's hands after sighing softly. "You can enter the Secret Place for Resources through the space caves at any time with this token."

Jackie nodded and tightened his grasp on the entry token.

Elder Godfrey glanced at Jackie and added, "I don't recommend others traveling with you, and you have to turn down anyone searching for you. I think that you should enter the secret place on your own. Even If you entered the space cave with company, you'd be separated by the chaotic space and be sent to different areas in the secret place. Hence, it's useless to travel with others. The companionship will only be helpful if you meet other people in the secret place and form them there."

They would be separated and be sent to other places when traveling into the Secret Place for Resources through the space caves. If that was the case, it really did not make much sense to travel with others. Only the people he met in the secret place could be regarded as his companions.

Elder Godfrey picked up the teapot and poured tea for them both. "The human heart has been unpredictable since ancient times. We can't simply trust anyone, even if they're our sect brothers. When you encounter something valuable, your relationship will become as brittle as window paper, and a mere breeze will tear it apart. He'll instantly turn into your enemy."

Jackie nodded and said, “I understand what you mean. Don’t worry- I didn’t plan to travel with others.”

Two days later, Jackie finally arrived at his destination after being transported several times by the transporter. It was a plot of desert land in the north west direction of the West Cercei State, which was the only desert in the entire state. Unexpectedly, the Secret Place for Resources was hidden in this piece of desert, and the sun high in the sky scorched the land.

Jackie walked across the desert with Nash by his side. After all, they were outside the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and there were not that many scruples.

Nash knew that after what happened these couple of days, the remaining journey was still worrisome. He sighed helplessly. “Forgive my nags, but I think that this journey to the Secret Place for Resources might be challenging, and you need to be incredibly careful.”

Jackie chuckled and said, “I’m sure that a lot will happen, and I’m not taking this trip like a walk in the park. I’m going on a treasure hunt, and since we’re on a treasure hunt, we’ll definitely be fighting with others over precious treasures.”

Chapter 2182
“A terrible battle might happen by then, and the people from the Corpse Pavilion will also be involved. The environment will be extremely terrible when we go in.”

Nash grew increasingly worried when he heard this. He stopped walking and stretched out his hand to tug at Jackie’s arm. “If that’s the case, why do you want to go in? You might run into all sorts of danger after you go in. Aren’t you afraid? You’re not the strongest…”

“I’m definitely afraid, but I can’t stop here just because of my fear. Martial arts is a journey of going against nature to change our lives. If we don’t go against nature and move forward, we’ll only be mediocre.”

Nash could only sigh helplessly when he heard this. He said nothing and continued following behind Jackie as they headed toward the Secret Place for Resources. Jackie took the map out for reference for every 50 meters they traveled. Elder Godfrey personally drew this map for Jackie, and it was to provide guidance to Jackie on the position of the Secret Place for Resources.

Jackie looked at the map in detail, and after some time, he remarked, “We’re correct; this should be the place…but why does it seem so lacking? All I see here is sand.”

Nash also moved closer and looked on the map, even though he did not understand the map. At this moment, an obvious mocking sneer could be heard from behind them.

Jackie was startled at this and turned to look back…to see a familiar face.

“Griffin?”

Jackie had never imagined that he would bump into Griffin in this place. After all, nobody apart from Elder Godfrey knew that he had come out from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and he should not have run into Griffin. There was another man beside Griffin, and they had similar facial features.

The name 'Howard Olsen' subconsciously appeared in Jackie's thoughts after he saw this person. Was this Howard? However, Elder Godfrey had informed him previously that there are only 20 tokens, and after he took up one of the spots, only the top six formal disciples would be chosen. It had nothing to do with Howard.

Griffin scoffed indignantly and walked two steps forward. He sized Jackie up with a mocking look in his eyes. "Who would've expected for us to have such a great fate? I never expected to meet you here."

Jackie frowned as shock overwhelmed him. Truth be told, the surprise did not come just because he bumped into Griffin and his brother here; it was because he failed to notice anybody around him and did not even pick up the sound of footsteps. It seemed like the Olsen brothers suddenly appeared behind his back, which creeped out Jackie.

However, Griffin failed to realize what Jackie was thinking of.

He glanced at Nash, who stood behind Jackie. "Who's this? He's only in the final stage of the acquired level. Is he your errand man? If that's the case, this will be even mode hilarious. Are you unable to take care of yourself? Why do you need to bring an errand man with you to such a place?"

Jackie's anger exploded when he heard this. Jackie could still hold himself back if they were just jabbing at himself, but what Griffin said was aimed at Nash.

Jackie narrowed his eyes and pulled Nash behind him. "You better watch what you're saying; stop saying everything that comes to mind like that. What does what I do have to do with you? Keep your nose out of my business. If you have that much time in your hands, help someone walk their dog, and don't come barking by my ears."

Although Jackie's words were nowhere vulgar, they were bluntly rebuking Griffin.

Griffin's face blushed a crimson color as he had never experienced such treatment. He stretched out his right hand, and his sword was unleashed from its sheath audibly. The silver sword shone brightly under the sun. Griffin held the sword with his right hand and pointed it at Jackie's face.

Chapter 2183
Jackie, however, merely smirked, nowhere scared or intimidated

"B*stard!" roared Griffin. "How dare you disrespect me! I'm going to kill you!"

With that, Griffin activated his true energy and was about to attack Jackie when Howard, who stood behind Griffin, grabbed his brother's shoulder when he noticed Griffin was about to attack. "Brother, this isn't the time to fight! No matter what, we're disciples from the same sect, and we're surrounded by space caves. If the space around us is disrupted, a person might suddenly appear out of nowhere. By then, news of what happened to this guy might spread. I'm sure you know the rules of our sect: you'll be punished if he dies or is badly wounded by your hand."

The Dual Sovereign Pavilion forbade their disciples from killing one another at places outside of their sect

Griffin's face was slightly pale as he stared at Jackie. The muscles on his face slightly trembled. "Don't get too cocky, b*stard. I may not be able to kill you now, but this doesn't mean that your luck will stay up after leaving the secret place! On top of that, I'm not the only one who wants to kill you. You've offended so many people, and you may just perish before I can do anything to you!"

The sword in Griffin's hands once again returned to the sheath with a wave of his sleeve. He sneered and looked around before moving his hands, activating his true energy and punching the space before him.

Ripples appeared in the space in front of him. A flash of happiness flashed past Griffin's eyes as he walked toward the area where the ripples were most apparent. Griffin took out his entry token and pushed it forward.

The entry token looked like it had been dropped into water as it was swallowed by the space in front of him.

The next moment, a bright light shone over Griffin and he disappeared in front of them. Howard seemed unsurprised by what happened.

He turned to look at Jackie. "Are you wondering why I'm here, even though there aren't any spots left for me?"

Jackie pursed his lips speechlessly. He was definitely curious, but the thought had just flashed past his mind and he did not wish to get to the bottom of it. However, Howard spoke as if Jackie was extremely eager to find out what was going on.

Jackie scoffed and did not even spare a glance at Howard, yet Howard could tell Jackie was all too curious of the reason. He thus smirked and turned to face Jackie. "Our family has certain power in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and it isn't difficult for me to obtain a spot as long as I want it. My brother tried to preserve your prestige by asking you to give up the spot, yet you turned us down… You truly can't differentiate good from bad."

With that, Howard took his entry token before Jackie managed to say anything. He let the entry token combine with the space caves before the light also covered his entire body. He, just like Griffin, disappeared into the space cave and entered the Secret Place for Resources.

The corners of Jackie's mouth twitched speechlessly. Both the brothers of the Olsen family had the same temperament. They were eccentric and unreasonable.

Chapter 2184
What Howard had said implied that they had shown him some respect by asking him to give up the spot, yet Jackie failed to recognize their kindness by refusing

Jackie could not help but sneer. Some of these people were painfully peculiar, and they were always capable of coming up with some presumptuous reasons. Jackie only felt that they were ridiculous.

Nash's expression darkened. "Why are these two people so despicable? What on earth are they talking about? Why should you give the spot to him? And you're being unreasonable for not doing so? Who does he think he is?"

"He thinks that he's a god and can step on anybody, but his plans are useless to me," remarked Jackie with a cold expression on his face. Nash sighed helplessly and felt that nothing in this place was going smoothly. Things were so much simpler when they were in Daxia.

However, Jackie was so focused on pursuing the pinnacle of martial arts, and he definitely could not say anything discouraging.

Nash turned and looked at Jackie with a serious expression on his face. "You have to be careful after you enter the secret place. Be on your best guard as those two brothers will surely trouble you there."

Jackie nodded and looked around him. He sighed helplessly, unable to form his thoughts with what Elder Godfrey did. The elder reminded him of so many things but had forgotten about the most important part…

Jackie had no idea on how to enter the space caves, more so had Griffin not display how to do so just moments ago.

It turned out that the space around him was filled with space caves. However, one had to stimulate the surrounding space with his true energy to find the middle point of the space caves.

Just moments ago, the Olsen brothers appeared so soundlessly because Jackie was surrounded by space caves that could block a person's sight and sound. This was a place with mountains of uneven height. The land was covered with weed, and he raised his head to see a huge tree. However, the mountains blocked a large area, and he could see no further.

Jackie looked up and was unable to see the sun, but his surroundings were bright like it was noon. Jackie turned around in place and got familiar with his surroundings, exhaling deeply upon not sensing any form of danger.

This was the legendary Secret Place for Resources. With the Mustard Seed as his tool, Jackie was able to bring everybody in the Mustard Seed into the area, even though he only had one entry token.

Nash continued to stand by Jackie's side. He looked at the uneven mountains surrounding them and said, We're lucky that we weren't transported to some extremely dangerous area. We'd be terribly unlucky if so."

Jackie knelt and simply picked a small piece of weed up efore placing it under his nose to give it a sniff. He then rubbed the weed in his hands.

Nash chuckled and said helplessly, "Why are you acting like a child when you're already at this age?"

Jackie chuckled and replied, "I just wanted to check if this world is real."

Nash could not help but frown when he heard this." What do you think?"

Jackie flicked the weed away before taking out a piece of tissue to wipe the dirt and green leaves on his hand. "It should be real. However, I question the authenticity of the area. The feeling is too realistic."

Nash felt that he was at a loss when he heard what Jackie said. The corners of his mouth twitched helplessly. He was about to say something when Jackie suddenly grabbed his arm.

Chapter 2185
Nash looked at Jackie with widened eyes.

Jackie frowned as he lowered his voice. "Hurry back into the Mustard Seed. I can feel something approaching."

Nash paled when he heard this. He dared not delay and immediately entered the Mustard Seed, leaving Jackie the only one left standing there.

Jackie frowned as he widened his eyes while scanning his surroundings. It was still the same uneven mountains and vast skies. After three breaths, the soft footsteps became clear ahead of him.

Jackie looked up and subconsciously inhaled. There was a slightly taller mountain 40 to 50 meters away from him, and a three-headed wolf stood on the mountain

This three-headed wolf was one-feet-tall and stood on the highest peak of the mountain, casting a shadow. The three wolf heads appeared to share the same body, and its six eyes stared straight at Jackie. The corners of Jackie's mouth twitched as he subconsciously assessed the three-headed wolf's fighting prowess…only to fail to determine its fighting prowess in the end.

Jackie was even more at a loss when he realized this.

He had gone through all the ancient scrolls to understand the Hestia Continent, but none of them described the three-headed wolf. This resulted in Jackie's bewilderment, and doubt of actually defeating this beast rose within him.

Jackie inhaled deeply and took ten black daggers out from the Mustard Seed. The black daggers floated in mid-air as Jackie raised his hands. The black fog covered the ten black daggers, and they were like venomous fangs of a viper. 1

The three-headed wolf understood that Jackie was about to attack itself and glanced at Jackie from high above with its six eyes. A hint of disdain flashed through the wolf's eyes, and the corners of Jackie's mouth twitched helplessly. Had the three-headed wolf possibly broken through into the spring solidifying realm?

Why else would the wolf act in such a high and mighty manner? The three-headed wolf slowly prowled toward Jackie with steady steps. Jackie inhaled deeply as he wanted to test the three-headed wolf's fighting prowess. If he was unable to defeat the wolf, he could turn around and escape without turning back!

Just when he was about to activate Destroying the Void, the sound of something traveling through the sky suddenly came from far away. A long arrow came shooting from far away with extreme speed. The arrow was surrounded by a circle of ghostly pale blue flames.

The three-headed wolf looked fierce and disdainful, even as the arrow came flying. All three wolf-heads opened their mouths at the same time and looked like they were about to perform their strongest attack. However, the long arrow was too fast, and before the three-headed wolf was capable of releasing its attack, the arrow covered in blue flames plunged into the middle-head audibly.

The three-headed wolf instantly let out a piercing scream and fell to the ground as it lost its balance. The wolf kept rolling around on the floor as if it wanted to try pulling the long arrow stuck in his head out.

"Are you alright, young brother?!" a comforting voice came from far away.

Jackie turned around to take a look and saw a man in the costume of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's formal disciples rushing toward him from afar. Jackie raised his eyebrows and did not put his weapon away.

Although this person was from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, Jackie could not guarantee if this individual had ulterior motives. As he came closer, Jackie discovered that he was not alone; there were three more people following behind him. However, not all three of these men were disciples of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. Two of them had on the costume of the Muddled Origin Clan's formal disciples.

Jackie raised his brows in surprise and nodded to the person standing in front.

Chapter 2186
Heath Vay chuckled. "You don't need to be afraid. This three-headed wolf is only at the initial stage of innate level and he's extremely dumb. The wolf thinks that it's invincible on this hill."

Jackie relaxed when he heard what this person said. In the beginning, he suspected that the three-headed wolf was in the spring solidifying realm. After all, he was unable to assess the other party's fighting prowess if they had a higher fighting prowess compared to him. However, it did not make sense for him to fail in identifying this three-headed wolf's fighting prowess if the wolf was only in the initial stage of innate level.

Heath knew what Jackie was thinking from the expression on his face. A smile appeared as he explained, "The rules of this world's heaven and earth are different from that of the outside world. You can't use the old way to learn about the monster beast's fighting prowess, but instead, you need to judge it by the aura they release."

Jackie nodded as he was unable to completely understand what the man was talking about. In fact, both the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciples treated him affectionately but the disciples from the Muddled Origin Clan looked at him in a slightly different manner. There was a hint of mockery in their eyes as they examined him. Jackie was not surprised when the disciples from the Muddled Origin Clan looked at him in such a way. After all, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddled Origin Clan had a long history. It was natural for them to not have a good attitude toward him when they spotted the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's costume on him.

After a brief introduction, everybody got to know each other. Among the two disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, the one who spoke to him was Heath Vay while the one standing behind was Byron Reid. As for the disciples from the Muddled Origin Clan, one of them was Frank Wack and Edric Law. Those two had an indifferent attitude toward Jackie. Jackie did not respond to their attitude and was indifferent toward them as well.

Heath chuckled and said while saluting with his hands, "Destiny gathered us here. We are still wandering among these hills after walking around for more than half a day. However, I received news from the elders that these mountains aren't the only thing in the Secret Place for Resources. There are also continuous mountains and an endless piece of wasteland. If there aren't any companions when traveling in this big piece of land, the dangers we face in the secret place might be life-threatening. Hence, I propose that we travel together. We shall treat each other sincerely and we will help one another when danger arises, am I right?"

When they took action to kill the three-headed wolf, Jackie had already guessed that they were here to form an alliance with him. Jackie frowned but did not immediately reply to Heath. He was used to traveling alone and he would be restricted if he traveled with others due to the number of secrets he was keeping.

However, this was an unfamiliar and dangerous place for Jackie. If he continued traveling alone, he might run into a dangerous situation that he was unable to resolve. If the five of them traveled together, their chances of survival would be higher. Jackie nodded earnestly when he thought of this.

However, the Muddled Origin Clan's disciple, Frank, had already humphed coldly and started speaking before Jackie was able to speak. "Young man, what are you

hesitating about? We are at the final stage of innate level and we're at a disadvantage for bringing you, one who's at the intermediate stage of innate level. How dare you hesitate? Do you think that we will cause you trouble?"

In fact, Jackie had only paused for around three breaths and he did not expect Frank to proactively find fault with him. Jackie glanced at Frank and he could see the frown on Frank's face as he stared at Jackie in disdain. The expression on his face was accusing how ungrateful Jackie was.

Jackie sneered. "Everybody has their own concerns and there is nothing between us that can bring us down."

Chapter 2187
Frank's face was slightly darkened when he heard how straightforward Jackie was. "You're such a shameless boast. Who did you say will be bringing the other down? How dare you! Why don't you open your eyes and take a good look! Look at your fighting prowess and our fighting prowess. Just now, we only took action because we thought that we would have another member who's in the final stage of the innate level. However, we realized that you're just a young man in the intermediate stage after we came closer."

Jackie arched his brow when Frank turned aggressive; he kept making a scene out of Jackie's fighting prowess to suppress him. Jackie did not wish to have a dispute with them if these two people had not provoked him. However, he was unable to withstand It any longer as Frank kept causing him trouble." What's the issue about the intermediate stage and final stage of the innate level? Do you think that you can walk around and do anything you want because you're in the final stage of the innate level? To be honest, your fighting prowess means nothing to me. If you are unconvinced, just have a duel with me right now."

Frank, who stood in front of Jackie, was at the same level as Oliver and Jackie really did not pay much attention to him. However, Frank was furious after he heard what Jackie said. He suddenly rushed forward and pointed at Jackie's face. "What an arrogant young man! How dare you challenge me?! Alright! I shall show you the meaning of suppression from a higher realm!"

He touched his storage ring with his right hand and a three-foot-long sword appeared in his hand. The sword was red in color and looked like it was burning with endless flames.

Heath immediately rushed forward with a frown on his face and grabbed Frank's right hand. "Let's discuss this nicely and not fight among ourselves. Do you know what time it is right now?! If we really get into a fight, not only will it hurt our relationship, we would be suffering losses. Why don't you guys think about it? This isn't our respective sects and this place is filled with all sorts of danger. We have no idea when the enemies or strong monster beasts will appear. Hence, we definitely can't start a fight among ourselves!"

Frank was so angry that the muscles on his face were slightly trembling. Heath held his right arm so tightly that he was unable to release his arm. He could only give up his plans of fighting with the young man in front of him. However, the

look in his eyes grew increasingly fierce as he looked at Jackie. He looked like he was going to chop Jackie into pieces if Heath did not stop him.

Jackie sighed helplessly. He had no idea that he would be provoked by others when he had done nothing wrong. In fact, there was nothing wrong with how Jackie reacted. Frank took this opportunity to find fault with him because he had a lower fighting prowess and he was a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Jackie sneered when he thought of this. “Senior Brother Heath is correct. This place is extremely dangerous and we won’t gain anything if we fight here. However, I’m not frightened if you wish to fight with me forcefully.”

Frank laughed coldly and a mocking look appeared in his eyes. He put away the sword he had in his hand and pulled his right hand out from Heath’s grip. He waved his sleeves and raised his chin arrogantly as he said to Jackie, “You have to thank Senior Brother Heath for coming forward to speak on your behalf. If not, what happened today will not end here.”

Jackie did not wish to argue with somebody like him. If he wanted to take action, Jackie would naturally show him what it meant to carry out challenges from a lower level.

Chapter 2188
Heath turned to Jackie. He laughed dryly to ease the tension. “Don’t mind him, Brother Jackie. He’s a quick talker, but he means no harm.”

Frank looked unhappy after hearing that, and wanted to say a few more words, but was stopped by Edric who was standing beside him. Edric frowned and shook his head discreetly at Frank, indicating to him to not start a dispute at this time. Frank breathed out deeply, trying to restrain his anger. He averted his eyes away from Jackie.

Jackie nodded noncommittally.

Heath took two steps forward and said again, “You’re one of us now that you’ve agreed to join us.”

His words were both hypocritical and highfalutin. Jackie would not take these words into his heart.

Heath then pointed at the dead three-headed wolf on the ground and said, “Since we’re all team members now, you’ll need to know some ground rules. Everyone is here to get their hands on some good items. Although we came here not long ago, we have already discovered some spirited grass and spirited herb and killed some monster beasts.

“All of these are good stuff. It was hard to equally divide the goods when there were four of us, so I made a small rule. When it comes to spirited grass and spirited herb, whoever saw it first has the claim to it. When it comes to monster beasts, the most valuable item will go to the one who made the most attack or

gave the fatal blow. As for other things, we'll cross the bridge when we come to it."

Jackie just nodded and said nothing. However, in his heart, he started to analyze Heath. All the things he had mentioned sounded fair, but all those spirited grass, spirited herb, and the things on the monster beasts were only common items in the Secret Place for Resources. Naturally, they were there to find an uncommon master treasure.

According to legend, that place was an inheritance left by the ancient masters. Maybe they would find the inheritance of the ancient masters. When it came to that, how would it be distributed? Jackie was sure Heath would not be a pushover when it came to the more uncommon items.

Jackie was no fool; he would not be worthy of being called a human if he did not catch the hidden meaning behind Heath's words. The fact that he said that they would all cross the bridge when it came to the other things meant that he was leaving a way out for himself.

Heath remained smiling amicably, like a fresh breath of air. "This three-headed wolf was slain by Brother Byron. We didn't do anything so the spirited core and all the other valuable items on the wolf belong to him."

After he said that, Byron did not even bother to see what the others were feeling before walking over to the three-headed wolf corpse. He took out a short blade from the storage ring, cut open the wolf's abdomen very skillfully, and pulled out a light gray spirited core.

He took a piece of white rag, wiped off the blood on It, and stored the three-headed wolf's spirited core into his storage ring in front of everyone. Nobody said a word throughout the whole process. The amicable smile never left Heath's face as he swept his eyes across everyone.

Jackie arched his brow and looked at the three-headed wolf's corpse silently. 'This wolf would have died under my hand if these people didn't show up just now.' At this thought, he laughed bitterly to himself. "They knew that this wolf is an initial stage of innate level, which is something I can easily slay, and yet they still decided to snatch it from right under my nose. What ground rules? Those are just something they pulled out to make it so they could claim the wolf for themselves!"

Chapter 2189
The way Heath made it sound was as if there was nothing suspicious about what he said, but it did not take a rocket scientist to figure out something was off with the whole arrangement. It was obvious that Heath only cared about his sect brothers and not the so-called 'brother' like Jackie.

"Hey, why are you looking at the three-headed wolf like that? Are the ground rules not to your liking? Don't tell me you think everything rightfully belongs to you!" said Frank provocatively when he saw Jackie being all silent.

Jackie frowned, and he turned his darkened face toward Frank, who was arching his brow and looking at him contemptuously. Jackie scoffed, thinking that they must have thought he was a pushover. He was about to say something when Heath cut in," Nonsense. Why would you say that when Brother Jackie didn't even say anything? Besides, from the very first impression, I can tell that he's the type that considers the overall situation. I'm sure he doesn't have any ill-will toward us. Am I right, Brother Jackie?"

'Considers the overall situation? Does that mean that I'll be deemed unrighteous if my opinion differs from theirs? Wow, this Heath is quite the manipulator,' thought Jackie. Then, he chuckled, and said, "I'm not really one to take the overall situation into consideration. The overall situation is quite reasonable so I don't mind going along with it. However, I do wonder why you thought that I was unhappy with the ground rules when I didn't say anything or showed any unhappiness on my face."

The last sentence was, of course, directed at Frank. He narrowed his eyes and stuck out his neck like a cock ready for a fight. "Did you think that I didn't see the look on your face just now? What do you take me for? A fool? You should be grateful that we're willing to let an innate stage level kid like you join our team! I can't believe after all that, you dare to look at the wolf like that."

"Like what?" The lines on Jackie's forehead got deeper and deeper. He had decided then and there that he would teach Frank a lesson if he did not give I tup.

"It was obvious from the look in your eyes that you want to claim the three-headed wolf for yourself. I'm really curious to know what the elders in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion are thinking. Why would they let an intermediate stage of an innate level kid like you enter when the quota is limited to twenty people? Could it be that the Dual Sovereign Pavilion has fallen so far that they lack a strong final stage of innate level disciples, so they had to use a kid like you to make up the numbers?"

Frank roared with laughter with unconcealed disdain after saying all that. This was the straw that broke the camel's back. Jackie stepped forward and took out the black daggers from the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship.

Heath frowned and looked at Frank unhappily. He quickly walked up to him and pulled his shoulder." Are you done? Brother Jackie didn't say anything at all, so just shut up, okay? And you shouldn't judge others by their cultivation level. You should know that masters could challenge those above their level."

Chapter 2190
Frank arched his brow, and said nonchalantly, "Each one of us here in the Secret Place for Resources is a master."

Heath furrowed his brow, and was about to say something else but was stopped by Edric. He turned around and said, "Brother Frank, please just stop there. Don't forget we're all a team and should have each other's backs. I strongly suggest that you watch what you say from now on or else…I won't help you with the thing that you want."

Edric's last sentence was filled with hidden implications. Frank pursed his lips, and unwillingly dropped down his head, and said, "Okay, Brother Edric."

Edric heaved a sigh of relief when he saw Frank's acquiescence. "I know you hold a very deep grudge against the Dual Sovereign Pavilion but you shouldn't take it out on every Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples that you meet."

'Ah, the grudge between him and the Dual Sovereign Pavilion explains why he was acting so offensively toward me. But he should take it out on the sect, not me or the other disciples.' Thought Jackie. He made a mental note to himself to make Frank pay for all the things he said some other days.

They soon set eastward after Heath said a few more perfunctory things. It was their first time in the Secret Place for Resources so they were not familiar with the environment. The only thing they could do was to choose a direction and continue on that path with perseverance.

The hill was bigger than they imagined. After walking for two or three hours, they still could not see the edge. The rolling hills blocked most of their sight. Just to be on the safe side, they decided to go by foot instead of air and became exhausted after walking for so long

Jackie thought that it was nothing, but Frank started to complain. "Going on foot takes too long, and it doesn't look like we're going to reach the edge anytime soon. We should just go by air!"

Heath glanced sideways at Frank, and said, "No. Have you forgotten what happened when we tried to go by air? Yes, I admit it's tiring to go by foot, but it's also safer this way."

Frank curled his lips in disapproval, and said in a low voice, "We were caught off guard before. We'll just need to be more vigilant this time. Besides, it's not like there will be so many dangers for us to run into."

Heath frowned unhappily when he heard that. He was already a little annoyed by his non-stop talking, but still managed to squash down his frustration after reminding himself they were all in this together, and that they would need to work together In the face of danger.

Edric glanced at Frank and patted him on the shoulder. "You promised me you'll keep your mouth shu… Huh? What is that over there?"

The surprise in his voice caught everyone's attention. He took two quick steps forward, climbed to a nearby plateau, and pointed to a distance. "What Is that? It… it…it looks like a giant monster beast!"

Everyone climbed to the highest point of the hill, Looking in the direction of Edric's finger, they saw a huge monster beast lying curled up on the ground at a distance of about 400 yards from them. However, they were too far away to identify what kind of monster beast it was. "Let's go check it out!" said Byron excitedly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2191-2200

Chapter 2191
Heath kept staring at the huge monster beast. “Yes, we should, but looking at the size of it, it’s definitely not an ordinary monster. It may be dangerous if we approach it rashly so let’s all be extra careful.”

Everyone nodded. In order to ensure their own safety, they came up with a plan. Well, not really a plan but simply an agreement for those with the strongest cultivation to take the lead, and for the weakest to follow behind. They would slowly approach the monster beast so that they could make their escape at the first sign of danger. They would run as far as possible while making sure they stuck together in a group.

Out of the five people, four of them were in the final stage of innate level. Heath was the strongest, and not to mention he was from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, so he would take the lead. Then, it would be Byron and Edric in the second row, and then Frank and Jackie in the third row. Actually, with this formation, it did not matter who was in the front, as long as they were stuck close to each other, if anything should happen, they would all suffer the same fate.

Furrowing his brow and the two swords in his hands, Heath gradually moved closer to the giant monster beast in a stance that would allow him to attack at a drop of the hat. His eyes never left the monster beast once. The closer they got to the monster beast, the more clearly they could see the shape of it. It looked something like a snake but not a snake. It had scales on its body and only one eye on its head, which was tightly shut. What surprised them, even more, was that this monster had nine claws, which were laid flat on the ground, making the monster beast seem a sif it was asleep.

“I remember it now! I’ve read about this monster beast in one of the ancient books before,” said Edric suddenly

They all turned to look at him in unison.

He did not keep them hanging as he continued to say, “This monster is a nine-clawed python! Judging from its size, it should have grown to adulthood, meaning to say that it should be at the final stage of spring solidifying!”

Hearing this, they all stopped in their tracks at almost the same time. They looked at each other with hesitation written all over their faces. The nine-clawed python was not something they could handle even with their combined power. Their faces immediately darkened at the thought of them being wiped out by the nine-clawed python.

This nine-clawed python was around 200 yards long and was as tall as a small hill. The five of them would surely die instantaneously with one hit from its claw should it go berserk. At that thought, they started to make plans for retreat.

Heath coughed lightly, and said, “Not so fast. Don’t you all think that there’s something off about this nine-clawed python?”

“What do you mean? You can’t leave us hanging like that? If you have something to say, just say it,” said Frank with a frown.

“Brother Heath, are you referring to the fact that we can’t sense any oppressive aura from the nine clawed python even though we’re only forty yards away from it? And the fact that it hasn’t moved at all ever since we laid eyes on it? As if it’s dead…?” asked Jackie.

Heath nodded heavily, with a trace of admiration in his eyes. “It’s just as Brother Jackie said. All the powerful monster beasts would exude a powerful aura. Even at rest or slumber, the aura should be noticeable. The only time the aura is not noticeable is when it deliberately hides it in order to stay hidden. However, this is not the case as it chose to be out in the open for everyone to see.”

The powerful aura could also be called an imposing force. A strong cultivator would have an imposing force around him, and a weak cultivator would invariably lose his presence if he was standing next to the strong cultivator.

Chapter 2192
They were very close to the nine-clawed python, around a hundred yards or so, but they still did not feel any powerful aura emanating from the nine clawed python. That actually made them even more nervous. Coupled with the fact that the nine-clawed python was motionless-it did not even seem like it was breathing, so everyone agreed with Jackie’s guess.

Heath thought Jackie’s knowledge was extraordinary, even though his cultivation was not high. As soon as he opened his mouth, Jackie knew what he wanted to say. “You’re very smart, Brother Jackie. That’s exactly what I mean. This nine-clawed python has not moved at all. Don’t you all find this very strange? It’s as if…it’s not alive but…dead.”

Jackie nodded and looked at the nine-clawed python In front of him. The nine-clawed python did not move from its position at all. He could not feel any aura, not even its breathing. Jackie frowned and said with certainty, “I think this nine-clawed python is dead.”

Bryan nodded too and said, “Brother Jackie is right, I also think so, but how did this nine-clawed python die here?”

Frank instantly felt uncomfortable when he heard both Heath and Byron’s generous praise of Jackie, and the way they were looking at him with eyes filled with unconcealed admiration. After all, he did not make the same conclusion as Jackie, and so was robbed of his limelight.

He scoffed and said, “Aren’t you all jumping to conclusions a little too fast? I don’t think this nine clawed python is dead. How could such a big monster beast

die here? Why aren't the other monster beasts eating it if it's really dead? How can the body still be intact?"

Jackie ignored Frank's words; he did not even look at him. Instead, he looked at Heath and said, "Let's speed up our pace. No matter what, there is definitely something wrong with this nine-clawed python."

Heath nodded, also ignoring Frank's words. He accelerated his pace and rushed to the front, quickly approaching the nine-clawed python. Frank's face flushed with anger, and he stomped his feet hard, not knowing what to say when he saw all of them ignoring him.

After speeding up, it took them only five minutes to reach the nine-clawed python. Its scales were shining under the sunlight, and Jackie could even see mud mixed in with the scales. The five of them were so close that nothing about the nine-clawed python could escape their eyes.

Heath circled the giant nine-clawed python and came to a definite conclusion. "It's not breathing so It should be dead. If it's alive, it is impossible for it to not react to our presence here at all. Besides, there's a rotting smell coming out from it."

The others frowned in unison as soon as Heath said that, Byron approached the largest claw, and stared at it for a long time. Then he sighed and said, "I wonder how this big guy died, and why didn't the other monster beasts eat its corpse? Isn't powerful monster beasts considered a kind of supplement for the other monster beasts?"

Heath nodded. "You're right. The rotting smell proves that this nine-clawed python has been dead for a while, and it is really strange that it is still intact here."

Chapter 2193
Edric chuckled and said, "Actually, it's not really that strange. After all, we are not outside. The world in this Secret Place for Resources is very different from the outside world. Maybe the monster beasts here don't like to eat the corpses of other monster beasts."

Heath and the others nodded, this explanation was barely passable. Jackie did not listen to their discussion, but instead, he stood on tiptoe and looked at the nine-clawed python from top to bottom.

He pushed the tip of his toes against the ground, activated his true energy, and took a flight to the air. From above, he looked down at the nine-clawed python. He was around a dozen yards in the air when he saw a faint light flashing under the head of the nine-clawed python.

The light was so weak that it could be easily overlooked. He would have definitely missed it if it were not for the fact that he was looking down from above. The corners of Jackie's mouth curled up into a smile, and he rushed toward where the light was emitting

The huge nine-clawed python was coiled up like a mosquito coil, and the bottom of the python's head was where the light was emanating. He still clearly remembered that Heath once said the spirited grass and spirited flower would go to whoever first discovered it. Therefore, there was no need to alert them to it since he was the first who discovered the light.

Thinking of this, the corners of his mouth inched even higher as he rushed toward the light. However, as soon as he was five or six yards away from the python's head, he was knocked backward with a bang as if he had hit a sheet of transparent glass.

His eyes widened in surprise. There was clearly nothing there, but it seemed like there was a layer of tempered glass that could not be broken. He could not go past it at all! The commotion caused by him attracted the attention of the other four.

They all stared at Jackie with surprise. Heath frowned and asked, "Brother Jackie, what just happened? Was that an array you just ran into?"

Jackie's eyes flickered slightly, and he sighed helplessly in his heart. He did not know what he had run into but he knew for sure that his plan had been foiled. He coughed lightly and pointed in the direction of the python's head. "There is light emitting from under the python's head. I was on my way to checking it out when I ran into something transparent."

As soon as Jackie said that, the other four took flight into the air, and looked down on the nine-clawed python. Under the guidance of Jackie, they found the target. There was fluorescent light emitting from the position of the python head, but because of the distance and the obstruction of the python head, they could not see what was giving off the light.

However, being smart, they knew that it must definitely be something good even if it was not spirited grass or spirited herb. In fact, it could be a master treasure since it emitted white light and was being guarded by the nine-clawed python.

Everyone's eyes instantly lit up, and a surge went through their hearts. They had traveled across the hills for so long, slew a few monster beasts, and collected a few spirited grass and spirited flowers, but all these were nothing to crow about. At one glance, they knew the fluorescent light-emitting item must be extraordinary,

Heath chuckled, turned his head, and looked at the other four with kind eyes. "I'm guessing the item to be spirited grass. The grade of this spirited grass must be absolutely extraordinary if it's guarded by such a powerful monster beast. We can surely fetch a high price for it once we get our hands on it."

Chapter 2194
Jackie saw a flash of greed in Heath's eyes. He was the one who kept saying that the spirited herb and spirited grass would belong to whoever first discovered it, but from the way he did not mention it at all, it was clear he had forgotten about this ground rule.

Jackie was no fool. He was not about to let others take advantage of him. It was just that it would be difficult for him to investigate the item with the transparent barrier in the way.

Frank laughed mockingly and looked at Jackie with contempt. “I was wondering why you were rushing here suddenly and now the cat’s out of the bag! You plan to take everything for yourself!”

Jackie turned to face him abruptly. ‘Oh my god, he’s so annoying! Why does he keep on picking on me?’

“Did you knock yourself in the head? Have you forgotten the ground rules? That the spirited grass and spirited flower belongs to whoever finds it? It’s only fair for me to harvest it since I was the one who found it!” said Jackie unceremoniously.

Frank’s face darkened at his words. He did not expect Jackie to talk back to him. He was about to make a comeback at him when they all heard the sound of footsteps coming from their surroundings. The five of them were stunned for a moment, and they quickly descended from the air. After all, being in the air was too conspicuous.

After landing, Byron frowned. “It seems like someone discovered the nine-clawed python too. Did you just see where the people are coming from?” he asked in a hasty tone.

They all shook their heads. They were all in a hurry to get out of the air space, and only took a glance before doing that, but they found nothing. After landing, they formed a nervous group and did not see anything at all.

“We should have taken out the spirited core immediately after confirming the nine-clawed python was no threat!” said Heath nervously. His words were filled with regret. He blamed himself for not thinking of that sooner. The nine-clawed python was a spring-solidifying level monster beast; its spirited core could definitely fetch a high price!

“Senior brother! It’s really dead!” said a sharp voice suddenly from a distance.

They all looked in the direction in unison, only to see that seven people had arrived, and they were less than fifty yards away from them. They appeared so abruptly that Heath and the others were all stunned.

“Why are they so close to us all of a sudden? I didn’t see them coming just now!” said Frank with trembling lips.

The five of them were standing in front of the nine clawed python before. They heard the footsteps but saw no one, so they thought that the people were coming from the side or the back of the nine-clawed python. They never expected them to appear right in front of them.

However, when the five of them formed a circle, they did not find anyone coming from that direction at all. If that sharp-voiced person had not suddenly spoken, they would not have realized anyone was in that direction at all.

Jackie's pupils trembled slightly. Their sudden appearances gave him a déjà vu feeling, just like the way the two Olsen brothers appeared in front of them before they entered the Secret Place for Resources-one second there was no one there, but the next they suddenly appeared in front of him.

There were seven people in total, all dressed in black robes with skulls embroidered on their chests. From this alone, they could tell the newcomers were from the Corpse Pavilion. Jackie knew more about the Corpse Pavilion than the people around him because he had faced several groups of Corpse Pavilion disciples in Mount Beasts.

Chapter 2915
"Master was right. There are really good things in this place. The man standing at the front said coldly.

As soon as this statement came out, the others were surprised but did not reveal it on their faces. Jackie, however, quickly lowered down his head and hid behind Heath, as if he had been stabbed by a needle. He did it all so discreetly that, all apart from Frank, did not notice him doing so. The only reason Frank saw him was that he was standing behind Jackie all this while.

Frank sneered and gave Jackie a contemptuous look." Well, well, it seems like someone had lost all of his pluck. Why are you hiding behind Brother Heath? Don't tell me you're afraid of the Corpse Pavilion disciples."

The corners of Jackie's lips twitched. He could not be bothered with Frank then; his priority was to make sure his face stayed hidden because the person who was referred to as 'Senior Brother' was the masked man he saw at Mount Beasts.

The masked man was still wearing a mask on his face, which was exactly the same as the one he saw that day; even his voice was the same, so it must be the same person. What really surprised Jackie was how could the masked man enter the Secret Place of Resources when he was clearly at the spring solidifying level. It was against the rule for those beyond the final stage of innate level to enter.

He exhaled softly, threw away these distracting thoughts to the back of his mind for the time being, and quickly took out a common-looking mask from the Mustard Seed Spirit Ship. Then, he hurriedly put It over his face. Frank, who had been observing Jackie all this while, frowned thoughtfully.

Heath and the others did not care about the quarrel between the two of them. The three of them stood at the forefront and were solemnly observing the seven Corpse Pavilion disciples who were directly opposite of them. It would be five against seven if a fight was unavoidable, and all seven of their opponents were at the final stage of innate level. As for the five of them, one of them was only an intermediate stage of innate level, so they definitely would not be a match for them.

The Corpse Pavilion disciples could speak without a care in the world because they knew they had the advantage of number and strength on their side, so there was no need to fear Heath and the others at all. The corner of Heath's lips twitched; he had a bad feeling about this.

The masked-man stepped forward and eyed Heath coldly. He did not notice Jackie at all. "Get lost or die!" spat the masked man, the words slamming down on Heath and the others, who all gasped at the same time. The expressions on their faces were as if their fathers had died. This masked man was too arrogant. He did not give them any face at all. It was either get lost or die!

Although Heath might seem gentle and talkative on the surface, he was also quite arrogant. He would never take this kind of humiliation lying down. He clenched his right hand tightly and said, "I don't have any conflict with you and yet you disregard all the etiquettes. At any rate, the Corpse Pavilion is a fourth-grade Clan association…"

The masked man cut in before Heath finished his sentence, "Stop spouting your bullsH*t nonsense to me!

Chapter 2196
"You hypocrites only talk about etiquette and shame. Don't tell me you're just trying to save your face by not getting lost. You obviously want to fight with us to get a piece of the pie!"

As soon as the masked man finished speaking, the bearded-man standing beside him burst out laughing. "Every one of you cowards, is a hypocrite. It's obvious you don't want to give up the treasure and just want to find some 'righteous' reason to justify yourselves! We are not hypocrites like you, and you dare to fight us for treasure? Maybe you should take a good look at yourself in the mirror before that!"

Heath's face darkened. In all of his years of being alive, no one had ever humiliated him like this. He angrily pointed at the bearded man and shouted, "We are not hypocrites. You're the one who was obviously in the wrong here and yet you accuse us of being hypocrites?"

Jackie curled the corners of his mouth helplessly. He could already tell from Heath's tone that he was in actual fact scared and was forcing himself to talk back to save his own face.

The bearded man roared with laughter and swung his sky-opening ax to point at Heath's face. "You hypocrites like to play tricks, and we, the Corpse Pavilion, have always hated you, hypocrites, the most. Hurry up and get lost if you know what's good for you! Immediately disappear from my eyes. If not, we will tear you into pieces and feed them to the dogs!"

These words were not polite at all. It was no different from scolding and pointing at a dog. Heath's hands trembled slightly, and a myriad of colors flashed through his face like fireworks. The others' expressions were similar to his while Jackie's expression was very calm from beginning to end. His eyes were fixed on the masked man and he discovered that the cultivation of the masked man was in the

final stage of innate level. In other words, he had dropped a level compared to before.

Then, he clearly saw that this masked-man was at the spring-solidifying level, and it was because of that they had no choice but to escape, and even jumped off the broken heart cliff in desperation. However, at this moment, the masked man was at the final stage of innate level. Jackie rolled his eyes and thought to himself, Could it be that the masked man knocked down his cultivation in order to enter the Secret Place of Resources? But if this is the case, the sacrifice is a bit too big. Or maybe there's some kind of pill that can temporarily suppress the cultivation base?

No matter what, this masked man must have gone through extra pains to enter the Secret Place of Resources. It's better to avoid an all-out conflict with them. Although this masked man has fallen a level, he was once at the spring-solidifying level. Surely the martial art skills and techniques he practiced were not what the four others could handle.

Jackie frowned, thinking how he should tell them what he knows and bring them to safety. It would be too sudden if he left by himself. Worst, they might think that he wanted a spot in the limelight.

Byron's face turned black with anger. "You've overstepped the line!"

The masked man sneered and took a step or two forward. "Overstepped the line? Don't you know that this is a world where the strong eat the weak? Weaklings like you all deserve all the bullying you Get!"

This humiliated them even more. Heath's face was about to explode in fury. He clenched his fists tightly. If it were not for what little reason he had left, he would have brought out his weapon and engaged in an all-out war with the seven Corpse Pavilion disciples.

The masked man suddenly flew into the air. Looking down from the air, he quickly found the thing that they had discovered before that was suspected of being a precious spirited herb.

Chapter 2197
The masked man's imposing aura was a little more restrained after he landed on the ground again. "Do I need to say it again? Either get lost or die. None of you five will survive if you stay any longer!"

As soon as he finished speaking, he took another ten steps forward, and the imposing aura erupted from his body. They could still feel the aura clearly even though they were dozens of yards away from him. Heath involuntarily took a half-step back, but then he forced himself to gain back that half-step as if he did not want to give the masked man the upper hand.

Edric's brows creased tightly, and he swept his eyes across the Corpse Pavilion disciples. Then, he looked at the members of his group and finally said," Brother Heath, don't be impulsive. You very well know that none of the people in the

Corpse Pavilion are easy to deal with. They don't care about etiquette and morality. By the looks of it, they're hellbent on getting their hands on the spirited grass and nine clawed python spirited core. Let's not fight with them and just leave…"

Heath's face became even more frightening to look at when he heard that. Frank turned his head and shouted like a cat whose tail had just been stepped on, "I say, Edric, why are you being such a coward? We might not have the advantage of numbers but that doesn't mean we have no chance of winning at all! In any case, our ranks in the Clan association are quite high as well! Although the Corpse Pavilion is also a fourth-grade Clan association, there is still a gap in power between the disciples. Who knows, these guys might be the weakest among the fourth-grade Clan association!"

After being questioned, Edric's expression became so scrunched up that water might drip from it. Jackie arched his brow; he could imagine how badly Edric must have wanted to curse. It was obvious the masked man and others heard Frank since he did not bother to lower his volume at all.

The masked man sneered and said nothing, but the two disciples flanking him were not as calm as him. Judging by their stance, they should be the masked man's two most loyal and powerful junior brothers. One of them was the bearded man who just spoke, and the other had not spoken from the beginning to the end.

Jackie recognized him even though he did not say anything. His facial features, for the most part, were average-looking. His eyes were as small as a mung bean. If going by the eyes alone, one would be forgiven to think they belonged to a wild rat on the roadside.

The small-eyed man who had been silent before suddenly opened his mouth after hearing what Frank said. "I have met a lot of people who like to brag in my years of being alive but you, my friend, take the cake. Judging by what you are wearing, you should be a disciple of the Muddled Origin Clan of the third grade Clan Association. I do wonder where did a third -grade Clan Association get so much courage to speak such big words in front of a fourth-grade Clan Association?"

True to his personality, Frank did not back down but instead said, "It's none of your business where I get my courage from! What's the use of coming from the fourth-grade Clan Association when the people from there act so cowardly! I bet you've committed all the sins under heaven! If we are hypocrites, then you're worse than us!"

Chapter 2198

The seven Corpse Pavilion disciples' faces were as black as coal. Jackie stared speechlessly at Frank and wondered if there was a screw loose in his head. It seemed as if he was willing to offend anyone as long as he could show off his bravado.

Edric immediately put his hand on Frank's shoulder and whispered, "Have you gone insane? There are seven of them and look at what they're wearing! All of them are from the Corpse Pavilion! While on our site, all five of us are from

different Clan associations, and not to mention Jackie is only an intermediate stage of innate level! Don't think we're getting out of this alive if they're hell-bent on killing us!"

"Can you not be such a coward? How can you ever earn anyone's respect like this? Didn't you hear how they humiliated us just now? Are you just going to let them get away with it? You're afraid of them, but I am not, for I know I'm strong! Although the disciples of the fourth-grade Clan associations are powerful, us Muddled Clan Origins disciples are not bad as well," said Frank nonchalantly.

Everyone except Frank turned green after hearing that while Jackie nearly burst out laughing. Wow, he sure is confident. I wonder where he got it from…? Thought Jackie.

The masked man stared at Frank sinisterly. "It seems like you really want to die!"

The temperature in that area suddenly dropped to a freezing point, and no one said anything else for a while. Heath's face was as black as charcoal, and his hands were still trembling slightly. The nine-clawed python was likely to have broken through to the divine-solidifying level and a spirited core of a monster beast at that level could definitely be exchanged for a lot of wealth. He could then exchange all that wealth for the pills and martial art skills. In addition, he suspected there was precious spirited grass under the nine-clawed python's head. He was unwilling to let go of all this, but if he did not, the five of them would surely fall at the hand of the masked man.

In fact, he also knew in his heart that although the five of them temporarily formed an alliance, it did not mean that they would abide by the 'fall for one, and one for all' slogan. There was no way they could win against the united Corpse Pavilion disciples, not to mention the tyrannical masked man. After thinking of all that, he exhaled slowly.

Then, he looked sideways at Frank, who was still seething with anger, as if he had just experienced the worst humiliation in his life. Heath felt that if they dawdled further, they would run the risk of Frank saying something even more offensive. By then, it would be too late for them to escape.

Heath made up his mind. He turned around and said to the people behind him, "Let's go, we are no match for them."

As soon as these words came out, Frank's indignant face suddenly froze. He widened his eyes and stared at Heath with disbelief as if he was questioning why they had to flee. "Brother Heath, are you really afraid of them?! Even if we are no match for them, we can't let them insult you like that. Listen to what they said before. What will others say about us if we escape with our tails between our legs?!"

The more Frank said, the more agitated he became. He felt that his ego had been trampled to the ground, and was red in the face. Seeing this made Jackie roll his eyes.

Chapter 2199

Heath's face turned beet red. "So what if it spreads out, can it be compared to our safety? We are not escaping with our tails between our legs, but knowing when to pull the plug. The five of us are no match for the seven of them, so why should we risk our lives like that!"

Frank felt that Heath had misinterpreted his intention, and jumped around in frustration. "I never thought that you would be such a coward! Of course, I know that we're no match for them but it's not like we wouldn't be able to knock out a few of them! Why should we let them humiliate us like this? I'm all for leaving but we should leave in a way that we can be proud of!"

Heath's expression became frightening to look at after being lectured by Frank. He never expected those words to come out of Frank's mouth. 'What the hell does he mean by leaving in a way that we can be proud of? Is he saying we should strut away after scolding them?

Jackie chuckled. It was his intention to not say anything, but he had greatly underestimated Frank's idiocy and had no choice but to break his silence. « Brother Frank, what does it mean to leave in a way we can be proud of? Do you mean that we should let the other party murder us after you've angered them?"

Frank had never liked Jackie. At his words, his face turned red with anger while his eyes become bloodshot. He whipped around and stared at Jackie vehemently. "Are you deaf? Didn't you hear what I said just now? Even if they want to fight us, they have to weigh their losses! Yes, there might be seven of them and only five of us but it's not like we can't knock out a few of their teeth! Do you think everyone is the same as you? That they would not weigh the pros and cons? It's because of that they still hadn't made a move against us! And that's why I'm confident we'll be fine!"

Upon hearing that, everyone pursed their lips speechlessly.

"It seems that your brain is really muddled. Who do you think are those people standing across from us? Do you think the Corpse Pavilion disciples are benevolent people who would not do anything just because of some stupid pros and cons?" said Jackie icily.

At this, Frank became so angry that he pointed at Jackie, and shouted, "You're just doing this to rile me up, aren't you?"

"Do you think we have time to listen to your quarrel here? I'll say it for the last time, either get lost or die!" said the masked man sinisterly before Jackie could answer Frank. The masked man eyed the five of them icily while the bearded man was bent over laughing

"The masked boy behind you is absolutely right! You're really muddled in the brain. Do you really think we won't take action toward you just because we're afraid of getting our teeth knocked out?! Who do you think you are? You might be someone in a third -grade Clan association, but in our eyes, you're not even a piece of sH*t!" said the bearded man.

Those words were like a torpedo blasting away Frank's self-esteem. His hands trembled slightly, and he turned his head sharply to look at the masked man and the others. Heath frowned, knowing very well in his heart that Frank was about to say something that would push them to the edge of no return.

Chapter 2200

The atmosphere was so tense that an all-out battle was on the verge of breaking out. Heath wanted more than to get out of this in one piece; it would be a heavy loss on their side if the battle really broke out. At this thought, he quickly reached out his hand and grabbed Frank's arm, in a bid to stop him from saying anything, so that they could hurriedly leave the place.

However, Frank seemed to not notice him at all as he shouted at the Corpse Pavilion Disciples, "Don't you dare look down on a third-grade Clan association! Even a disciple from a third-grade Clan association can play a bigger role than you can imagine! Just you wait! After I leave, I will make sure to spread the news of a treasure here so that all the powerhouses would come scrambling for it!"

Heath and the others could not help but tremble in their hearts as soon as the words were out of Frank's mouth, while the masked man's eyes darkened in a second. What Frank said reminded him that there was the chance that they would spread the news about the treasure after they left, and someone else might just be brave enough to fight over the master treasures with them. In other words, letting them go was as good as courting danger.

Heath's face was no different than a blackened pot. He pointed one shaky finger at him and said, "Are…are you crazy! Do you really want to die that much?!"

What Frank did undoubtedly sentenced the five of them to death. If Heath were the masked man, he would never let the five of them leave! Both Edric and Byron's expressions were as if their own mother had died. Byron wanted more than nothing to slap Frank there and then. He had come across stupid people, but never someone as stupid as Frank.

"You bastard! Just stick out your own neck if you want to die that much! Why do you have to drag us down with you?" shouted Byron at Frank.

Frank felt aggrieved by all their scoldings because he still did not think that he did anything wrong. Edric rolled his eyes angrily as if he was unwilling to believe that he and Frank came from the same Clan association.

Jackie was a little jittery too. He originally thought that Heath was a sensible person even though he was a little greedy. Even so, he must have realized that they had no chance of winning, so it would be meaningless to stay. In this case, it would be best if they all leave.

What they had all underestimated was how brainless Frank could be. Frank scoffed and said nonchalantly, "I have a backbone, unlike you guys! Who wants to be as spineless as all of you!"

Jackie took a deep breath and asked him a question he had been keeping in his heart, “I’m really curious to know how you are alive today? You should have been beaten to death with that stupid brain of yours!”

Frank’s face darkened, he was about to shoot down Jackie’s verbal attack, but at that moment, the masked man suddenly brought down his hand in the direction of them. The six Corpse Pavilion disciples standing behind him rushed out, positioned themselves in a semi-circle, and approached the five of them at an extremely fast speed.

Originally, the distance between the two groups was only a hundred yards, but in a blink of an eye, the Corpse Pavilion disciples already had the five of them surrounded, blocking all of their escape paths.

Heath took a deep breath, in no mood to quarrel with Frank. The five of them quickly adjusted their positions to be back-to-back against each other as they faced the six Corpse Pavilion disciples.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2201-2210

Chapter 2201

The masked man rushed to the front swiftly. He stood in the center with three people on the left and right, facing Heath. The masked man arched his brow, and before Heath and the others could react, he suddenly waved his right hand, and a powerful air current rushed toward five of them.

Although Heath and the others were not as strong as the other party, they were after all battle-hardened. They immediately propped up their attached spirit to protect themselves when the masked man made a move.

Jackie took a deep breath, and within half a second, the powerful air current had already hit them. He thought that this energy would tyrannically smash their attached spirits into pieces, but unexpectedly, the air current did not have violent destructive power despite its looks. They were, however, pushed back by the wind.

The five of them were swept up and down by the air current. Fortunately, they were not hurt in any way but were separated from the others. Jackie's heart skipped a beat, and he immediately understood the masked man's plan which was to deal with them separately and finish them off fast!

Just now, Jackie only wanted to use the attached spirit to resist the impact of the air current. He did not expect that the air current was not to hurt them but to separate them, so it was only natural that he was caught off guard. By the time he realized that he had already been blown five or six yards away!

Just then, he heard a loud bang. Turning his head toward the direction of the sound, he saw that Frank had fallen to the ground a yard away from him. He glanced at him and immediately stood up from the ground

Although stupid most of the time, Frank also knew that he should not let the enemy have any opening, so he quickly stood up while struggling. However, it was too late for them to converge at that time. They were surrounded by three people as soon as they stood up and among them was the bearded man!

Jackie quickly glanced around and saw that both Byron and Edric were also surrounded by three people at a distance of twenty yards away from him while Heath faced the masked man alone. Seeing this, his heart began to beat like a drum in his chest. Their small number had already put them at a disadvantage, and what made it even worse was that their opponents had higher cultivation than them. The odds of winning were not favorable to them at all.

This masked man is not an ordinary person! He separated us as soon as possible so that we couldn't work together!' thought Jackie. He then turned his attention to Heath who was facing the masked man and saw that his original pitch-black face had turned pale.

Heath naturally understood the masked man's intention to separate them, and he was under immense pressure to take down the masked man alone. The others might not know this, but Jackie knew that the masked man used to be at the spring solidifying level. Although he did not know the extent of Heath's power, he was sure that Heath would not be able to win at all. After analyzing all that, he turned his attention to the three Corpse Pavilions disciples surrounding him.

Chapter 2202
The three Corpse Pavilions disciples looked at the two of them as if they were lambs waiting to be slaughtered. The joy on their faces was apparent, especially the bearded man who looked at Jackie and Frank as if they were delicious food. It was only then that Frank realized he had brought the trouble upon them.

The bearded man did not attack them immediately but stared at Frank mockingly. "Hey kid, why aren't you talking big anymore? Where's your righteous indignation now? Who was the one who said that we wouldn't dare kill you because of the cost involved?"

Frank gulped and was trembling all over. The bearded man roared with laughter when he saw how Frank behaved; his eyes never left Frank even for a second. "Saying that makes me want to kill you even more! Soon you'll experience a fate worse than death!

Frank shivered at the thought of the bearded man torturing him to death. He was almost jealous of Jackie, who he was sure would be granted a quick death. In a panic, Frank suddenly pointed at the mask on Jackie's face and said, "He wasn't wearing this mask before you guys came. He only put it on after! You probably know who he is. He has a grudge against you. If you want to torture someone, torture him!"

The bearded man and the two Corpse Pavilion disciples behind him were momentarily taken aback, and the three of them looked at Jackie who was wearing a mask at the same time.

The corners of Jackie's mouth twitched, and he turned his head sharply to look at Frank. It dawned on him that Frank's mind worked very fast as long as it was aimed at bringing other people down. If it was not for the situation they were in, Jackie would have been impressed with how he could divert the attention toward him while Frank was under duress.

Jackie took a deep breath, and said, "Don't lie, Frank! I have my reasons for wearing a mask, but it has nothing to do with them!"

Of course, Jackie would not admit that he was wearing a mask because he was afraid that the masked man would recognize him. Frank got excited at Jackie's words. He turned his head and said loudly, "I didn't lie. He's the one who's lying! If you don't believe me, ask him to take off his mask, and you'll see! I swear on my mother's life that he only put on the mask after you guys came."

The masked man was about to launch an attack on Heath, but Frank's words piqued his curiosity, making him turn to look at them. How Jackie wished he could stab Frank to death there and then. He frowned while thinking that he must not get tangled with Frank anymore. If things continued like that, the masked man might abandon Heath first to deal with him.

He exhaled a puff of air, turned to face Heath, and said, "Brother Heath! There is something wrong with Frank. It seems like he's hellbent on making sure we don't get out of here alive. We shouldn't give him this chance so let's end this fight as soon as possible. Either that or we'll try to find an opening for escape!"

They were all in that situation because of what that bastard Frank had said. Heath had always hated Frank and wished that he could cut him up into a million pieces. After listening to Jackie's words, he felt that he was right, even though he too wondered why Jackie only put on the mask after the masked man came. However, he would not press the matter further since Jackie had not done anything to him, unlike that bastard, Frank.

Chapter 2203
Heath breathed out deeply. Mask or no mask, he did not care. He then took out two three-feet-long swords of the same length from his storage ring and held one in each hand. The swordsmanship he cultivated was the double-sword style, and he stood In a way that allowed him to launch an attack at the drop of a hat. The masked man set his eyes on Heath again. Seeing this, Jackie heaved a sigh of relief, and once again set his eyes on the three Corpse Pavilion disciples in front of him.

The bearded man looked him up and down, trying to read him. He suddenly burst out laughing, and said," You're smart to change the subject, but even this will not help! I will take off the mask on your face with my own hands to see who you are!"

Jackie snorted lightly and ignored him, turning his face away from him. In fact, the position he and Frank were in was considered safe compared to the other three. The masked man might have thought of the two of them as garbage hence, pushed them to the edge. That would make it easier for Jackie to escape. However, even if he wanted to escape, he had to solve the problem at hand first.

The bearded man was done talking. Suddenly, he charged toward Jackie and Frank with a swinging ax. Frank's face turned pale immediately. He stepped back, and shouted, "Kill him first! He must be your enemy, if not, why would he wear a mask?!"

Even till then, Frank had not given up on directing the attention back to Jackie. In Jackie's heart, Frank was as good as dead. He stepped back, activated the laws of space, and immediately pulled a distance of five to six yards between them.

The bearded man was impressed by his technique. He chuckled coldly, and changed his direction toward Jackie, leaving the remaining two Corpse Pavilion disciples to deal with Frank. The sound of chaos could be heard when Frank's three-feet-long sword collided with the two Corpse Pavilion disciples' weapons.

The bearded man swung his ax and a scorching flame erupted like lava from the ax. When the mountain breaking ax slashed over, it carried scorching energy that distorted the surrounding air. Jackie's brows furrowed, his attention a hundred percent on putting some distance between him and the ax. Although he was not weak, he also knew that he was no match for the bearded man, who was probably ranked top of the Corpse Pavilion.

He needed to proceed cautiously. The gap between him and the bearded man was half a small realm, meaning to say he was challenging someone half a level higher than him. He flipped his hands and punched out hand seals to summon the ten Soul Swords, which instantly appeared floating above his palm.

He then put his hands together, combining the ten Soul Swords into a giant Soul Sword. Gray-black smoke swirled around the giant Soul Sword while the runes on the sword flashed. As he retreated frantically, he pushed the Soul Sword forward to meet the mountain-breaking ax.

Bang!

The giant Soul Sword collided with the mountain breaking ax, and a violent shock wave rippled across the air. The mountain-breaking ax's flames were extinguished by the giant Soul Sword, and the residual energy on the giant Soul Sword wrapped itself around the mountain-breaking ax like the vine.

Chapter 2204
There was a hint of shock in the bearded man's eyes. He looked toward Jackie disbelievingly, and said, "You bastard! What kind of martial arts are you cultivating that can actually compete with the flames that I cultivated?!"

Jackie scoffed and said nothing. The Destroying the Void technique he cultivated was at least a heaven level skill. If it were not for the memory left by the ancient predecessors, he would not be able to immediately tell what kind of martial skill the flame on the mountain-breaking ax was, but with the help of the memory, he could see at a glance that the flames must be a premium red level martial arts technique, making it the same level as the one Wesley had.

However, Wesley's martial arts technique was not as powerful as the flames. This meant that the bearded man's mastery of the flames was definitely higher than Wesley's which led to a certain gap in the martial arts technique displayed by the two.

The bearded man might appear calm on the surface, but a storm was brewing in his heart. He knew that the masked man wanted them to kill Jackie and the others as quickly as possible to avoid attracting attention hence he used more than half of his strength to do the flames technique. Therefore, it was only natural for him to lose his composure when he saw Jackie dispel his attack with just one move.

"You bastard! Don't even think you can beat me just because you got away with the previous attack!" said the bearded man, putting on his bravado. He charged toward Jackie with his ax again. Without slowing down its ground-shattering momentum, the flames ignited on the ax with a whoosh.

Jackie punched out another series of hand seals, and this time, summoned twelve Soul Swords which he pushed forward. The gray-black Soul Swords twisted, shattered, and merged into a giant Soul Sword infused with a vast amount of his own soul power. The giant Soul Sword hummed and trembled as if it had infinite energy.

Blue veins popped out of Jackie's forehead. Although the giant Soul Sword was still not his strongest combat power, it was already making him a little tired due to the huge amount of soul power poured into it. The moment the ax came over, Jackie urged the Soul Sword to meet it head-on. In an instant, the flame and the soul power raged over each other, like a fire dragon thrashing around in a sea of Soul Sword while the aftershock of the collision swept across the area with a loud whooshing sound.

Jackie heard a dragon's roar and realized that the mountain-breaking ax had really transformed into a fire dragon. However, the giant Soul Sword had pierced through its heart, and it was thrashing and roaring madly, unable to break itself free. In the next second, the fire dragon dissipated and the giant Soul Sword collided with the ax.

"No!" shouted the bearded man, and he began to frantically retreat, but the Soul Sword was like a leech attached to skin. After hitting the mountain ax, it instantly turned into a cloud of black energy and wrapped itself around the bearded man's right hand. The pain was like being stabbed with a thousand needles causing the bearded man to scream miserably

He let go of the mountain-breaking ax, and it fell to the ground with a thud. The bearded man's eyes widened in disbelief. The constant tingling from his right hand reminded him that he was no match for Jackie at all which he found unacceptable!

Chapter 2205
"Who the hell are you?! You must be concealing your cultivation!" No way an intermediate stage of an innate level disciple could beat him up like this. Not only did he sustain heavy injuries, but he also dropped his weapon. He would be a laughing stock if words get out about this!

Those who could enter the Secret Place for Resources were all highly-ranked among the Clan associations. He had naturally met those who challenged those above their levels. In fact, he possessed the ability to do so, but that was only relatively speaking.

Every one of them in the Secret Place for Resources was all masters in their own right, and in the bearded man's mind, a battle between two masters where one was fighting above his level was unheard of. Unless that master was someone like the masked man, who by talent alone was already enough to overwhelm him, and who had deliberately downgraded his own cultivation to enter the Secret Place of Resources.

At that time, everyone had their hands full with their own battle, so the only people who saw what happened between the bearded man and Jackie's battle were only Frank and others who were closest to him.

‘Jackie actually made the bearded man drop his weapon?’ Frank widened his eyes and stared at Jackie and the bearded man incredulously. He was still fighting the two Corpse Pavilion disciples who seemed to have an upper hand. Although his talent put him at the top of the ranking in the Muddled Origin Clan, he was still no match for the Corpse Pavilion disciples whose talent was above average.

He was losing ground, and almost beaten to the point of coughing up blood, while one of his arms was bleeding profusely from a sword wound. The pain caused his forehead to wrinkle, and cold sweat to run down his face. He never expected that the cocky bearded man would ever lose to Jackie.

“How is this possible? Was the bearded man bluffing about his own powers?” asked the shocked Frank.

Judging by the astonishing look on their faces, the two Corpse Pavilion disciples opposite him also saw what happened. The others might not know, but the two of them knew that the bearded man was among the top thirty formal disciples in the Corpse Pavilion. Even the combined power of two of them was not enough to suppress the bearded man, what was more to say Jackie did it single-handedly.

“That kid is stronger than Brother Zamian!” shouted the Corpse Pavilion disciple on the left. It was only then Jackie realized the bearded man’s name was Zamian.

Zamian gritted his teeth and raised his head. He heard what his junior brother had just said, and suddenly felt that he had been humiliated as if he was slapped on the face several times. ‘It’s all this bastard’s fault! I wouldn’t be humiliated if it wasn’t for him!’

He went ballistic. He squatted down suddenly and picked up the mountain-breaking ax from the ground. With a roar, he activated the internal energy In his body, and a ferocious flame surged from the ax once more. This time, his power was fully activated, and the flame formed a real dragon phantom mid air!

“Die, you bastard! There’s no way you will survive now that I’ve unleashed my full power!”

Jackie scoffed and said, “What makes you think I’ve unleashed my full power just now? It seems that you are quite confident in yourself!”

His words were like adding insult to injury and it made Zamian’s already pale face even paler. He might not have believed it if it came out of anyone else’s lips.

Chapter 2206
However, those words came out from Jackie’s lips. In addition, Jackie had stayed calm throughout the whole ordeal, so Zamian was convinced that Jackie had not unleashed his full power yet, and if that was the case, it was highly likely that Zamian would lose the next round as well.

He gulped at the thought and looked at Jackie with a hint of fear. It was at that moment a figure suddenly sailed past them. All of them looked toward the figure

at the same time. It was a man dressed in green, who had been blasted by the air current.

The man was sent flying dozens of yards away before finally landing heavily on the ground with a heavy thud. Jackie's heart skipped a beat; he immediately took a step forward, and shouted, "Brother Heath, are you okay?!"

Heath coughed violently twice, and spat out blood as If he had an infinite amount of it; he was so seriously injured that his face was blue and purple. With the blood staining the corners of his lips, he propped himself up on one shoulder and tried to stand up. However, he only managed to rise halfway before losing his balance and falling to the ground again.

Jackie turned his head abruptly to face the masked man, who looked no different than before. Even the corners of his clothes were clean and not stained with dust, as if he was not in the battle at all. Before the battle, Jackie already knew in his heart that Heath was no match for the masked man, but he did not expect the gap between the two to be so large.

He was too focused on his own battle with the bearded man and had no time to worry about the others, but even so, he could tell how much stronger the masked man was from the tragic state that Heath was in. Heath coughed up two mouthfuls of blood again. The open space was dyed red from his blood which frightened everyone present. They did not need to perform a check on Heath's injuries to know that he was seriously injured.

"Hold on, Brother Heath!" shouted Byron loudly.

Edric and his situation were quite perilous too, but compared to Frank, they were much stronger. Although they were still no match for the three Corpse Pavilion disciples in front of them, they could, however, get by. Jackie could tell that in terms of the battle situation over there, it would not be long until the two of them were defeated.

The masked man seemed to have lost interest in the fight after he took down Heath, for his eyes were fixed on the dead nine-clawed python. Seeing this, Darryl heaved a sigh of relief-that was a fortune among misfortunes! The masked man probably thought that the other disciples would be able to handle the rest of them, so there was no need for him to help them out. Zamian frowned. He wanted to ask the masked man for help, but looking at the situation, the masked man obviously had no intention of doing that as he had faith in their power.

Chapter 2207
Zamian sighed internally. The masked man would definitely label him as weak if he asked for his help now. He did not want to leave a bad impression, so he bit the bullet instead.

Jackie narrowed his eyes and suddenly thought of a plan. This was his chance to escape since the masked man's attention was elsewhere. If he did not leave then, he would have died with the others. Thinking of this, he activated his internal energy and unleashed his strongest skill.

Fifteen Soul Swords appeared on his palm. He had successfully condensed fifteen Soul Swords in the Soul Hall after absorbing the Shattered Soul Crystals. Those fifteen Soul Swords which were exuding a gray -black brilliance were Jackie's trump card; they were filled with unfathomable power as they spun on Jackie's palm.

Zamian felt his heart skip a beat when he saw the Soul Swords. He had a bad feeling about them. However, it was not like he had any other choice other than to fight Jackie head-on, so he gritted his teeth and prepared for the battle of his life.

However, before that, he turned his head sharply to look at the two Corpse Pavilion disciples who were fighting Frank, and said, "What are you two dawdling about! Finish him off now!"

In fact, what he really meant was come and help me once you've finished Frank off! The two Corpse Pavilion disciples had not unleashed their full power previously but did so after getting chewed out by Zamian.

Immediately, they activated their internal energy and charged toward Frank with the intention to kill him there and then. The Corpse Pavilion disciple on the left punched out a series of hand seals, and countless flaming skulls started to circulate wildly on his spear.

With a roar, he stabbed Frank's chest with the spear. Frank's face turned pale with fright, and he quickly activated his internal energy to escape. Just as he was doing so, he caught a glimpse of Jackie out of the corner of his eye, and suddenly thought of a plan. Without missing a beat, he headed toward Jackie's direction.

'He's the cause of all the misfortunes!' He would be open to escape once the two Corpse Pavilion disciples changed their target to Jackie. He was impressed at how smart he was to come up with such a plan. Fortunately, he had learned a martial arts skill that was used especially for escaping called Seven Steps Gone. It was just that he had yet to master the skill. Not to mention the skill would consume a lot of his internal energy to unleash its full potential, so he could only use it once at most. That was his one-shot at saving himself, so he normally would not use it until necessary.

He kicked against the ground and shot toward Jackie like an arrow. Under the impetus of his internal energy, he managed to careen forward at full speed. The spear that was aimed at his heart stabbed the ground with a loud bang instead, and the revolving flaming skulls exploded the moment the spear hit the ground, kicking up a cloud of smoke and dust which instantly blocked everyone's vision.

After the series of explosions, Jackie heard the annoying voice again. "I say, Brother Jackie, you are so strong, so won't you please help me take those two down!"

Jackie turned his head sharply and looked at Frank with contempt. He really did not expect him to be that thick-faced. He was the one who dragged everyone into this, and he was also the one who constantly tried to frame him. It was hilarious how he still dared to ask Jackie for help after all that.

Chapter 2208
With a whoosh, Zamian's mountain-breaking ax swung toward Jackie again. He was ready to fling out the Soul Swords but changed his plan at the last minute after what Frank did. The moment the ax came flying at him, he rushed toward Frank who was flying in the same direction as him. It was not long before the two of them bumped into each other, and it was not just the two of them. The attacks of the bearded man and the two Corpse Pavilion disciples were also hot on their tails, especially the fire dragon of the mountain-breaking ax.

Frank felt his heart drop to his stomach. "Are you crazy?! Why didn't you dispel Zamian's attack first?"

Jackie sneered. Would that not be what Frank intended if he did just that. Frank immediately understood what Jackie had in mind when he saw the sneer on his face.

"In this case, you and I will die together!" he roared just when the attack was about to hit them both.

Jackie arched his brow. He did not pay any attention to him at all. He pushed the power of the laws of space to its limit and retreated to a distance of twenty yards with only one step. This was the first time that Jackie had pushed the laws of space to such a level, and it had cost him a lot of internal energy. At the same time, it also affected his meridians; he could feel them throbbing faintly after using the skill.

His breath became ragged, and when he raised his head, he saw Frank's incredulous eyes. How could Jackie be standing next to him in one second, and then dodged to a distance of twenty yards the next? This time, all the attacks fell on Frank, who roared maniacally, "Help!"

However, it was all too late. No one would come to save him even if he shouted until his voice turned hoarse. With a loud bang, the fire dragon and the skulls swallowed him up. Violent energy fluctuated, blood and flesh spattered out, and a big hole was blown out where Jackie was standing just moments ago. Frank was so battered that there was not one intact part on his entire body.

In another blink of an eye, he stopped breathing. He was so dead that even a ghost would seem more alive than him. Jackie sneered, and thought that it was a shame that Frank died so fast; he did not even get to torture him yet. His anger would only be assuaged if he managed to torture him before sending him to hell.

"Brother Frank!" yelled Edric hysterically, the moment Frank took his last breath. However, no matter how he yelled, it would not bring Frank back from the dead. Jackie arched his eyebrow subconsciously as he did not expect the brotherly bond between Frank and Edric to be so deep. Edric had obviously forgotten that it was because of Frank that they found themselves knee-deep in trouble.

Jackie breathed a sigh of relief. He swept his gaze across the surroundings and confirmed that his position was outside of the battle range. He would be able to escape completely as long as he continued forward. He had no feelings for the

people he had just met, and even though they were a team for a brief moment in time, it was also a fact that they each had an ulterior motive for doing so.

Chapter 2209
If the opportunity to escape was presented to others, they would definitely seize it without hesitation, so It was only natural for Jackie to do the same. He exhaled deeply and immediately decided in his heart. He turned around, pointed his toes, and rushed out in the opposite direction!

Suddenly, the sound of raging wind sounded in his ears, as if a wild beast was hot in his pursuit. He turned his head, and his heart skipped a beat when he saw the masked man behind him. The speed of the masked man was several times faster than Jackie. Within a few seconds, he had already shortened the distance between Jackie and him. At this speed, it would not take long before he completely catches up with Jackie.

A chill rose in Jackie's heart as if he had been deluged with ice-cold water. 'Why did the masked man suddenly come after me when he was clearly focused on the nine-clawed python?'

Just as he was thinking, and running for his life frantically, a sinister voice rang in his ear, "I remember who you are now. It seems like that idiot wasn't lying. You put on the mask because you recognized me! Didn't you die in the Cliff of Sorrows? How did you get into the Secret Place for Resources?"

The masked man's words chilled Jackie's heart even more. He really did recognize him, which was the worst situation ever! He was sure that the masked man would not let him go so easily now that he had recognized him. After all, for so many years, no one had been able to walk out of the Cliff of Sorrows, and those who could must be hiding some sort of secret.

Jackie breathed out deeply and said nothing. He activated his internal energy again and frantically used the laws of space to escape in the opposite direction. Unfortunately, he had only cultivated for a short period of time and had no special escape martial arts skills, so could only rely on the laws of space to pull some distance between the two of them.

Although the masked man did not know how to use the laws of space, his speed had not fallen behind Jackie's and was continuously shortening the distance between the two. It did not take a rocket scientist to figure out that the masked man had cultivated some kind of speed-increasing martial arts skill.

The masked man chuckled coldly when he saw that Jackie was so focused on running away that he had no energy to say anything to him. "Hey kid, do you seriously think you can escape from me? I might leave your corpse intact if you surrender now."

This had to be the most dangerous situation Jackie had encountered. Although the masked man's current cultivation was only in the final stage of innate level, Jackie was sure that he was stronger than the average person with the same level. The reason why Jackie was able to challenge those above his level was that he had very strong martial art skills, and the martial arts techniques he cultivated

was also the best of the best; combined they could close the gap between levels, but the masked man also had this advantage.

His previous level was the spring solidifying level meaning he most probably had an Earth-level martial arts technique. In addition, his extraordinary talents would surely allow him to cultivate martial arts techniques to the level of perfection. All these and the difference in level gave Jackie no confidence that he could win against the masked man.

Not to mention, Jackie had a feeling that the masked man had more than one martial arts technique up his sleeves. Of course, to be a senior brother to the others, he must have plenty of combat experience, and Jackie estimated that he had less than twenty percent of a chance to win against him. Therefore, Jackie would definitely not engage in a fight with the masked man.

Chapter 2210
Jackie could only hope that he would come across people who could save him while escaping. However, the whirring sound in his ears became even more frantic just when the thought flashed across his mind. He glanced sideways and was shocked to find that the masked man's speed had increased even more. He was less than twenty yards away from him!

His face darkened. The masked man would be able to attack him soon, and by then Jackie would have no choice but to engage in a battle with him, which would drastically reduce his speed. The masked man sneered, and said, "It seems that you won't give up until I've beaten you into a pulp, or is the secret you possessed really worth dying for?".

Jackie wanted to clap back at him, but he managed to hold back his anger. The masked man just scoffed at him, and purple-black energy started to gather on his right claw. The purple-black energy made a crackling sound as if it was created by condensing countless lightning bolts! Jackie did not have to turn to look at the energy to feel its immense power.

He was sweating buckets and his heartbeat became erratic. He knew that even a brush of the masked man's attack would slow him down, and by that time, it would be game over for him. He quickly used the laws of space again, pushing it to the limit. Whether he could escape from that moment depended on this last chance.

The masked man must have got an inkling of Jackie's plan, for he said coldly from behind, "Give it up! You don't stand a chance!"

Jackie felt that the energy behind him was getting more and more violent. He did not need to look to know that this was a precursor to the masked man's upcoming move. However, the two of them suddenly heard a clicking sound from the distance, as if a mechanism had been activated.

Both of them were taken aback by the sound, and looked back at the same time only to see that the area a few hundred yards behind them was enveloped by some gray energy. Their eyes widened In horror when the gray energy swept quickly toward them at a speed invisible to the naked eye.

Their shock only lasted for a moment because in the next second, the gray energy instantly enveloped them before they could even react. Jackie felt as if he was thrown into the quagmire, and his limbs were unable to break free. His ears seemed to be blocked by an invisible earplug, for he could only hear faint voices which sounded like someone screaming or begging for mercy.

Jackie held his breath. He felt like he was about to go crazy, and thought that he should just resign to his fate. The situation was beyond his control, and he would need to play by ear. It was at that moment that he heard a gurgling sound as if water was pouring down somewhere.

The next second, he fell from mid-air and landed on the ground with a loud bang. Fortunately, the sticky feeling gradually disappeared. When he opened his eyes again, he found that he had come to a completely unfamiliar place. The endless hill from before had disappeared without a trace while the ground he was standing on seemed to be paved with some kind of special material. He looked up and was greeted by a huge and towering slope of around a thousand feet, while the slope was at a sixty degree incline. The top of the slope was covered with a layer of white mist making it hard to see what the huge slope was made of.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2211-2220

Chapter 2211
Jackie could vaguely see something flashing on top of the slope.

“Another one came!” said someone.

Jackie turned his head and saw a group of people standing around. Fortunately, the place was wide enough. It was wider than the square in front of the gathering spot for roll call in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. He estimated the place could fit at least ten thousand people.

His hands were trembling slightly. Everything happened so suddenly that Jackie could not process it. One second ago, he was in a life-or-death situation and was prepared to die, but the next second, he found himself in an unfamiliar place with unfamiliar faces standing all around him.

Although the people there were dressed differently, Jackie could guess from his general understanding of West Cercie State that some of the people were from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, Muddled Origin Clan, and Dual Sovereign Pavilion. There was a group of people who he could not put his finger on at first glance, but after careful study, he recognized them to be a Clan association under the Corpse Pavilion.

Jackie did a rough calculation in his mind and estimated that there were more than a hundred people present which was about the total number of people who had entered the Secret Place for Resources. In other words, the people who entered the Secret Place for Resources were gathered there.

A series of muffled noises sounded again causing Jackie to look in the direction it was coming from. There, he saw several people had fallen from mid-air into the open ground just like him. Their faces were dazed, not knowing how they got there.

“What is this place? Why are there so many people here! Brother Calum, why are you here?”

“Where else should I be? Can’t you see that all the people who had entered the Secret Place for Resources are gathered here?!”

The newcomers were brought up to date about their situation after a brief chat with someone they knew. Jackie breathed out deeply and instinctively went to find a remote place to avoid being in contact with anyone there. However, before he could do that, he heard the sound of sobbing.

“Third Brother, what happened to you? How did you get all those injuries?”

Thirteenth Brother, wake up! We're safe now! Please wake up…"

Jackie turned in the direction of the noise and saw two seriously injured people lying unconscious on the ground. The one who was addressed as Thirteenth Brother was pale and lifeless; he was most likely dead since his chest was still.

So even corpses get moved here,' thought Jackie. He frowned, and subconsciously looked for the masked man.

The masked man who was standing fifty, sixty yards away from Jackie was staring daggers at him with a pair of gloomy eyes. The corners of Jackie's mouth twitched; he was secretly glad that the gray energy came in time. Otherwise, he might be the one lying dead on the ground. Fortunately for him, it would be difficult for the masked man to make any move toward him when there were so many people there.

Chapter 2212
'What should I do now? Why is everyone here? The only person who possessed the ability to bring us all here should be the master of the Secret Places for Resources. Just exactly what is he planning to do?' Suddenly, Elder Godfrey's words flashed through Jackie's mind.

The Secret Places for Resources was very likely to be a place of inheritance left by a powerful predecessor. The reason why he left the place was to find the person he could pass his mantle to. Could it be that Elder Godfrey had guessed correctly?

Suddenly, an old voice with unrivaled force exploded In everyone's ears. "All teleportation caves are closed! If you want to go back, you must find the exit yourself. I would give you all a hint- the place where you enter the Divine Void Slope is where you can leave!"

The hint confused them though they could somewhat guess the general meaning. All the teleportation caves had been closed? What exactly are those anyways? Are they similar to the space cave they used to enter the Secret Places for Resources? If all the space caves were closed then it would mean that they could not go back, and if they wanted to go back, they had to find the Divine Void Slope? What the heck was the Divine Void Slope?

The announcement was like a bomb, kicking up an explosion of uproar that filled Jackie's ears.

"The teleportation cave is probably the space cave that we used to enter the Secret Places for Resources. We won't be able to go out if it's really closed."

"Didn't you hear what the voice said? That we can go back by other means even when the teleportation portal is closed. The place where we enter Divine Void Slopes is the place where we can go back!"

"Where is the Divine Void Slope? Why have I never heard of it? Is it a secret place in the Secret Places for Resources?"

“I don’t know! All I know is it’s impossible for us to get out through the space cave!”

“Do you think we’ll be locked up here till the day we die?!”

“I hope not…”

The discussions were endless. Everyone was worried. Would they be trapped there forever? Why was the teleportation cave closed? What was the main purpose of closing the teleportation cave? All those questions took hold of Jackie’s attention. He was also very curious as to the reason why the space cave must be closed. Could it be that there was a sinister plot going on that they did not know of?

The old voice did not give everyone much time to discuss before it continued calmly, “In front of you is the Divine Void Slope which measures three thousand feet, and your current position puts you at the foot of the Divine Void Slope! The Divine Void Slope will open after two hours, and all of you must climb up the slope. You will come across a Divine Void Warrior every three hundred feet, of which you must defeat to be able to continue your journey. You will have to defeat a total of nine Divine Void Warriors, and only the one who has reached the top will receive the rich reward the Divine Void Slope has prepared for you.”

Chapter 2213
The old voice suddenly paused.

Everyone became immensely excited at the mention of a reward. The way they were staring at the peak of the Divine Void Slope was as if the reward would come flying down at them if they stared hard enough. The glowing items that Jackie saw before must be the reward the old voice mentioned. Undoubtedly, the items must be of astronomical value since they were left behind by the master of the Secret Place for Resources.

The old voice seemed to like to whet the appetite of everyone as he continued slowly, “There are too many rewards, I won’t explain them one by one, but I will mention a few of the more common ones. There are Ten Thousand Soul Pill, an eighth-rank spirited pill, Heaven Aroma Fruit, and Hundred Soul Grass, both of them seventh-grade spirited grass, and five spirited cores of the monsters in the divine solidifying level!”

There was an uproar as soon as the final word came out. Everyone’s eyes widened with excitement, and they had to wipe the drool off their mouth, while their greedy eyes were fixed at the top of Divine Void Slope. They would be swimming in contribution points if they sell off all the rewards.

Even an elder would be fighting over an eighth grade pill; that was just how precious it was. The eyes of the people there became bloodshot, while some of the others’ breathing became haggard. Most of the people there were very confident in their own power, and felt that they could be the first to get to the top!

Jackie, however, was much calmer, because he had other things on his mind. 'Is it a coincidence that this slope in front of me is named the Divine Void Slope?' After coming to the West Cersie State, he discovered a lot of things were actually related to the Divine Void World, and now he would have to climb the Divine Void Slop and fight the phantom of the Divine Void Warriors.

Everything was too coincidental for his liking, and if it was not a coincidence, then it would mean that the Secret Place for Resources was inextricably linked with the Divine Void World. He suddenly recalled the scene at the Cliff of Sorrows-the Ten Absolutes trap array that should not have appeared in this world, and the corpse engraved with runes outside the trap array. All these various signs pointed to the fact that the West Cercie State was definitely related to the Divine Void World during ancient times.

"Don't get too happy too soon! After climbing the Divine Void Slope, the martial arts skills that you use your internal energy to activate will be suppressed to a certain extent," said the old voice.

Everyone felt like that was a hidden meaning behind the words, and they began to mull it over. Jackie's eyes widened instantly, and a thought flashed in his mind, but he was not sure whether it was true.

The old voice continued, "I'll give you two hours to rest. The Divine Void Slop will open after two hours! Remember, everyone will fight against nine Divine Void Warriors every three hundred feet you climb!"

After saying this, the old voice fell silent, as if it had never appeared. Everyone would have two hours of rest. Most of them did not need the time to rest since they had not consumed any energy in the time they were there. Instead, they spent their time discussing topics such as climbing the Divine Void Slope, who the old voice belonged to, what was the purpose of setting up the Divine Void Slope, and what would be the best reward at the top.

Jackie furrowed his brows. He walked over to the Divine Void Slope and looked to the top.

Chapter 2214
As the Divine Void Slope was covered by a thin layer of mist, he was unable to identify what the slope was made out of. As his thoughts were focused on this, he heard a clear voice suddenly coming up by his ears." You must be Junior Brother Jackie?"

Jackie suddenly turned his head around and saw a handsome man dressed in Dual Sovereign Pavilion clothes standing behind him. The man was looking at Jackie with kind eyes. After some self-introduction, Jackie learned that this person was a chosen disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, Nelson Lester. Nelson looked much stronger than Griffin.

He pointed to a place 100 yards behind him. "All the Dual Sovereign Pavilion disciples are gathering over there. Why don't you join us there?"

Jackie nodded. As a disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, he might be bullied by others if he did not join the team. In order to prevent himself from getting into these troubles, he followed Nelson to the gathering spot of the disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Nelson was in fourth place among the chosen disciples and was the strongest disciple in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion sent into the Secret Place for Resources. Jackie also asked around for Griffin's information and learned that Griffin was in ninth place. This meant that he was in the last place among the chosen disciples.

When all the people were brought to the Divine Void Slope by the grayish power, many of them had already entered the Secret Place for Resources for many days. They had already encountered many dangerous situations. The danger included monster beasts and other people. Apart from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, all the other sects had suffered some losses. However, the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion were completely intact and none of them were wounded.

After Jackie was led to the gathering spot of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, everybody looked at him with a weird look in their eyes. After all, they were not familiar with Jackie as he had just joined the sect recently. Before he became Elder Godfrey's last disciple, he was just an informal disciple. Compared to Jackie, they had a closer relationship with one another. After all, they had been by each other's side since the beginning

The people Jackie was most familiar with were the Olsen brothers. However, the two of them had a strained relationship with Jackie.

"I thought that I won't see you here but it looks like you're really lucky. You weren't killed by anybody or swallowed by monster beasts with your intermediate stage innate level fighting prowess." Griffin said enigmatically.

When he started speaking, the other Dual Sovereign Pavilion disciples looked over at them and their eyes were flickering between Jackie and Griffin. Many of them were wondering how the two of them, who had nothing to do with one another, became enemies.

The corners of Jackie's mouth twitched. He knew that Griffin would not let him off easy and would definitely say something nasty when they bump into one another. However, Jackie was not somebody who would allow others to step over him. Griffin had been continuously causing him trouble and the situation would only intensify if Jackie did not fight back.

Jackie chuckled and said calmly, "Same to you."

Griffin was stunned and it looked like he had suffered several slaps to his face when he heard what they said.

Griffin was so angry that his face darkened. "B* stard! How dare you!"

Jackie looked at Griffin coldly. "What did I say that deserves such comments from you? I only said that I feel the same. Am I not allowed to fight back when you're allowed to insult me?"

Chapter 2215
Griffin waved his sleeves. If nobody was standing in front of him, he would have rushed forward to grab Jackie's collar and slap him twice. "Do you think that I will not take action against you when you've gone against me several times?! Even if you're under Elder Godfrey's protection, you're nothing to us, the chosen disciples. I can easily kill you if I wish to do so!"

Griffin spoke while gritting his teeth and it sounded like he was about to swallow Jackie. Jackie chuckled coldly. Griffin was really dumb. How could he say something like that? Killing clan brothers was a serious crime and the offender would be severely punished no matter where this happened. However, Griffin brought this matter up without holding back.

Certainly, Nelson's facial expression darkened when he heard what Griffin said. He suddenly turned around and spoke fiercely, "Junior Brother Griffin, please pay attention to what you say! How can you mention killing your clan brothers without any restrain!

If there are any disagreements between you and Junior Brother Jackie, you can just talk it out! How can you fight or kill your clan brothers when we're in the Secret Place for Resources?!"

The upper management of sects encouraged fights between their disciples as the intense fight can improve the disciples' fighting prowess. However, killing one another outside of the sect was unforgivable!

Griffin seemed to be incredibly afraid of Nelson. The corners of his mouth twitched and he rolled his eyes at Nelson before looking over at Jackie. "Senior Brother Nelson is right but I'm furious with him. This guy has been causing me trouble so I said this in a hurry."

Jackie raised his eyebrows. This guy was really good at Misrepresenting the facts. He was the one that caused Jackie trouble but he made it sound like Jackie was the one who constantly caused him trouble. If this happened to somebody else, they might not say anything to defend themselves as the matter could b e forgotten soon. However, Jackie was unwilling to put up with it.

He turned around and looked straight at Griffin." Senior Brother Griffin, you're wrong as you were the one who constantly caused me trouble. Why do you sound like I was the one causing you trouble? I said nothing when I walked over but you insulted me sarcastically. Is that me causing you trouble? Did I pinch your mouth and make you say what you said? I only refuted you by saying that I feel the same about you and you exploded like a cat whose tail was stepped on!"

All the disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion looked at Jackie in surprise. They had never expected that Jackie would speak so straightforwardly. The people surrounding them immediately looked over a s they were interested in what was happening. It looked like things were not going to end well today. Griffin was so angry that his facial expression darkened while his hands were slightly trembling." You must be suicidal!"

Jackie sneered. “Senior Brother Griffin, you’re overreacting. I’m never suicidal but I won’t stop anybody if they wish to kill themselves by coming to me!

Nelson frowned and glanced at Jackie helplessly. Unexpectedly, Jackie was not somebody who would let this go easily. He raised his hand to stop Jackie. “The two of you should stop fighting. You’re clan brothers and we’re in a public place. If the two of you refuse to stop, I will report your actions to the head of the sect. By then, you will be the ones to suffer the consequences.”

Griffin stopped speaking when he heard what Nelson said. However, he was so furious by what Jackie had said. Although he had stopped speaking, he glared at Jackie so fiercely as if he wanted to bite a piece of meat off Jackie’s body.

Chapter 2216
Jackie flat-out ignored Griffin’s gaze, turning and refusing to look at him before walking two steps forward to be at the edge of where the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciples were gathered. He had zero desire to meddle with these people and only wanted to peacefully wait for the Divine Void Slope To be activated. The interlude had cast a gloomy mood among the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciples.

Brook, the best among the formal disciples, glanced at Jackie before he turned and smiled at the others.” What does the sound we hear mean when it says that any of our martial skills that involve true energy will be suppressed?”

The crowd naturally joined the conversation when Brook changed the topic. Griffin’s brother, Howard, remarked, “I think that it’s quite simple. The voice is telling us that once we step on the Divine Void Slope, the martial skill we perform will be suppressed! This means that we’ll face certain resistance when fighting the Divine Void Warrior.”

Nelson chuckled and shook his head. “If that’s the case, he could’ve mentioned that we’ll be suppressed once we climb up the Divine Void Slope. Why did he mention that the martial skills that require the activation of our true energy will be suppressed? It’s plain to see that there’s some hidden agenda in what they’ve said.”

Jackie raised his brows when he heard their discussion. He was even more confident with the idea that appeared in his head. If he was right, the Divine Void Slope was no doubt related to the Divine Void World. Since it was related to the Divine Void World, then he…

As he was thinking about it, Jackie heard footsteps approaching him. He turned around and saw five to six people approaching the gathering spots of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciples. From the attire of these people, he knew that these people were from the Muddled Origin Clan. All the disciples from the north knew about the issues between the Muddled Origin Clan and Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Even disciples from the south had heard of the bad relationship between both sects.

The surrounding people glared at the disciples from the Muddled Origin Clan when they approached the gathering spot of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s

disciples. The person standing in front seemed to be one of the leaders. He looked like a handsome young master as he was tall and good-looking. However, he had an extremely serious expression on his face.

Jackie was very familiar with the person standing behind the leader. It was the Muddled Origin Clan's disciple who allied with him, Edric Law!

Edric seemed to be in bad shape. His right hand was completely bandaged, and he was limping. The left side of his face was swollen, and he was obviously wounded

After Frank died, Jackie had turned to escape. He ran as the masked man chased after him and was unable to pay attention to the others.

Jackie had no idea what Edric and the others faced after he left. However, from the looks of the wounds on Edric's body, Jackie knew that they were unable to resist the attack and were wounded by the disciples from the Corpse Pavilion.

Edric took a glance at the people from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion before finally looking at Jackie." There's Jackie White!" said Edric as he pointed at Jackie.

Jackie frowned and wondered what he meant when he said this. Theo Garfield narrowed his eyes as he sized Jackie up. He then glanced at Nelson and greeted Nelson.

Nelson responded by nodding with a smile on his face. He knew that this person was here with unkind intentions.

After all, it was impossible that the other party was here to greet him as their sect and the Muddled Origin Clan had many issues. On top of that, they did not know each other well. However, he still had to make the necessary introductions.

Nelson chuckled and pointed at the man leading the Muddled Origin Clan's disciples. "This is the chosen disciple of the Muddled Origin Clan, Theo Garfield."

Chapter 2217
Nelson glanced at Jackie in confusion before he spoke, "I wonder what business you have by visiting us here.

Theo sneered coldly, knowing he had said nothing offensive at all. Instead, he looked at Jackie and said," Junior Brother Jackie, do you know that our Junior Brother Frank has perished?"

Jackie mentally smirked. He initially assumed that they were here for something else, but it seemed that it was only regarding Frank's death. Jackie thus nodded without hesitation. "I know, and I saw him die with my own eyes, but what does this have to do with me? It wasn't me who killed him."

Edric looked like he wanted to say something but immediately stopped himself.

Theo scoffed at this. “You’re wrong. Nobody saw how Junior Brother Frank died, and you were the one nearest to him when it happened. On top of that, you two had bad blood with one another, and no one will believe you if you say that his death had nothing to do with you.”

Jackie’s expression turned cold when he heard what Theo said. What did he mean by that? They were trying to blame this on him! Jackie knew how Frank died as Frank was the one who put himself into all that trouble. Why was Jackie blamed when all he did was make sure Frank got what he wanted?

Jackie sneered and slightly raised his voice in response, “Senior Brother Theo, your remark is quite absurd. What are you trying to say? Are you trying to say that I was the one who killed Frank? Didn’t your clan brothers tell you that I was also surrounded by enemies when Frank died? We were caught in a battle, and you’re saying that I turned around to kill Frank instead of fighting against the Corpse Pavilion’s disciples?”

Theo narrowed his eyes. “My junior brother saw that you ran away and left Frank behind with his own eyes! All the attacks landed on my junior brother, and you survived!”

Jackie was speechless from anger. How could Theo say something like that? Should he have stayed behind and died together with Frank? Everybody wanted to survive! On top of that, he did not know Frank well, and they had grudges. Why should he die together with Frank?

Theo’s words were downright absurd!

He could clearly feel that Theo was here to cause trouble.

Nelson frowned and glanced at Jackie before lowering his voice as he asked, “What’s going on? Are you involved in Frank’s death?”

Jackie exhaled deeply and gave a brief explanation about what happened, and Nelson then turned around to look at Theo with a scowl. Everybody there could see that Theo was here to cause trouble. Based on what happened, Jackie did not make any mistakes.

Frank died because he was too slow in his escape attempt, and this had nothing to do with Jackie!

Although Nelson did not know Jackie well, they were disciples from the same sect. Theo was causing them problems on purpose, and it happened without any reason. “Senior Brother Theo, you’re going too far,” spoke Nelson, his voice audibly stern. “My Junior Brother Jackie is unrelated to Frank; they just happened to be allies for a brief moment.”

Chapter 2218
“We’d understandably run for our lives. From what you say, do you mean that my junior brother shouldn’t have escaped? Should he have died with Frank? Don’t you think that what you’ve said is vexatious?”

Nelson addressing Theo's vexatious actions straightforwardly made Theo's expression sour.

He scoffed and spoke while raising his chin, "Do you think that nobody saw what happened? I purposely asked the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciple, Heath Vay, about what happened. He saw that you had the opportunity to resolve the opponent's attack before you escaped, but you didn't. You left my Junior Brother Frank there to endure the attacks that caused his death, all while you escaped!"

The corner of Jackie's mouth slightly twitched when he heard this. Jackie was so angry that he could not muster words. What he did, after all, was definitely justified

Jackie was about to refute when Griffin spoke up mockingly, "Junior Brother Jackie, what you did is wrong. How could you frame others when you wish to escape?"

Jackie immediately turned his head around and looked at Griffin coldly. Griffin looked back at Jackie indifferently; it was plain to see he was trying to make Jackie furious. He then added, "Based on what you say, the five of you had formed an alliance at that time, and you shouldn't have done that even though he isn't your clan brother."

What Griffin said was morally blackmailing Jackie, and he was completely unfazed by the burning fire he had just added fuel into. Griffin purposely raised his voice when he spoke so that the people around them could hear him clearly.

What Griffin said had attracted the attention of many, and everyone started to come closer to them. Many of them crossed their arms at their chests, pointing at Jackie accusingly as they gossiped among themselves. Although they spoke in a soft voice, they did not hide the mockery in their eyes as they looked at Jackie.

Nelson frowned and looked at Griffin angrily. Griffin still acted as if he saw nothing and looked like he was unfazed by what he had just done. He stretched out his hand and touched his storage ring. A jade folding fan appeared in his palm, and he opened the fan with a flap. Griffin waved the fan in his hand. Although martial artists were not afraid of the changes in temperature, he still shook the fan happily.

Jackie only gazed at Griffin coldly before a smirk appeared on his face. Half of the smirk was a smile, while the other half made the others feel a tingling chill traveling down their spine.

Griffin did not care about Jackie's gaze as the grudges between them were unresolvable. On top of that, he looked down at those who relied on others to improve their status.

Griffin chuckled and spoke in a manner that made Jackie want to kick his teeth in. "Junior Brother Jackie, why are you looking at me like that? Did I say something wrong? You can point it out if you think that there's something wrong with what I said."

Jackie replied coldly, “I’m impressed, Senior Brother Griffin. You’re capable of doing anything just to fulfill your despicable wishes.”

Griffin raised his eyebrows. “Junior Brother Jackie, what do you mean? What did I do to deserve such comments from you? Although you’ve always liked to slander others, please refrain from doing so now! I can let go of what happened in the past, but it’s bad for you to slander me now when there are so many people around us!”

Griffin threw all caution in the wind and made up things just to defame Jackie. Everybody could see that there were grudges between the two of them, but they had no idea how and what had happened between them.

Chapter 2219
Griffin’s sudden mention that Jackie once slandered him immediately caused the others to misunderstand that Jackie did this in the past.

Jackie raised his brows. “Senior Brother Griffin, I’m impressed that you can simply make things up. Since you mentioned that I slandered you, can you tell everyone what lies I’ve said and my slanders toward you?”

Nelson exhaled helplessly. He knew that if he allowed the matter to continue developing, it would not be beneficial for both Jackie and the Dual Sovereign Pavilion

Thus, he stretched out his hand and stopped Jackie from speaking before he hurried toward Griffin. He then warned Griffin with a cold expression, “Junior Brother Griffin, please pay attention to your words. Since the matter has nothing to do with you, leave it to me and Junior Brother Jackie.”

Griffin said nothing previously because he was afraid of Nelson and the punishment from the sect. However, it meant nothing for him to make some comments at this point as Jackie offended outsiders and were here to cause Jackie trouble. Even if the upper management of the sect learned about what he did, he would also defend himself by saying that Jackie caused the trouble, and he only spoke up because it was morally inappropriate.

Griffin chuckled when he thought of this explanation and nonchalantly spoke, “You’re wrong, Senior Brother Nelson. I feel that it’s inappropriate of us to take Jackie’s side all the time. What Jackie did was wrong!”

Theo followed suit as he said, “That’s right! Jackie has crossed the line, and if he made another move, my junior brother would’ve survived the attack. He purposely avoided the attack and let my junior brother die! Even though you aren’t related to my junior brother, you were allies at that point and were teammates. You’re backstabbing my junior brother by what you did! An immoral person like you should pay for what you did!”

Jackie was placed on a pedestal, and it looked like they were criticizing Jackie into a despicable, immoral villain with no virtue. What Theo said added fuel to

the fire, and many people eyed Jackie hatefully-the disgust in their eyes was apparent.

Some people even said straightforwardly, “Such a despicable person doesn’t deserve to stand together with us or fight for the precious treasure on the Divine Void Slope with us!”

“That’s right! And he even tried to spew twisted explanations! I thought that he was an understanding person, but it seems that he’s a despicable, shameless person instead!”

The sharp comments wafted into Jackie’s ears, but Jackie remained unfazed as if he heard nothing. In fact, Jackie had heard many of such comments since a long time ago. However, the reactions of the crowd caused Theo to be extremely excited. It was his intention to frame Jackie into a despicable person with no virtue so that everybody would gather to attack Jackie.

Jackie said nothing and only focused on Edric, who stood behind Theo. He saw how Edric lowered his eyes to stare at the ground while frowning. Edric slowly looked up as if he felt that Jackie was looking at him. He immediately turned to look away when he saw that Jackie was staring at him.

Jackie frowned when he saw Edric’s reaction. Something was wrong with him.

Chapter 2220
There was something wrong with the entire matter.

Jackie suddenly looked up and said to Theo, “You mentioned that Senior Brother Heath saw the entire thing, yes? He was indignant about what happened and had told you everything, am I right?”

Theo’s gaze darted around, but he soon calmed down and nodded. “That’s true. Junior Brother Heath felt that you had gone too far. Nobody can accept such despicable actions, which was why he told me everything out of righteousness! Don’t try and argue that Junior Brother Heath didn’t see anything. Although he was already badly pounded at that time, he wasn’t that troubled at all. The others were focused on their respective fights, but he had time to observe everybody while you were fighting. That was how he had witnessed how despicable you were!”

Theo raised his head and chest as he spoke so righteously, as though he was a messenger of justice who was rebuking Jackie, the despicable and shameless villain.

Jackie chuckled and started laughing when he heard what Theo said, and the ridicule Jackie held in his laughter was unmistakable. He suddenly looked over at where the Thousand Leaves Pavilion’s disciples were gathered.

Compared to their side, the other gathering spot was much quieter. Several of them were meditating with their legs crossed. It was true that Heath was badly

wounded in the battle with the masked man. He was also meditating at that moment, and he was extremely pale while his breathing was shallow.

Jackie still remembered how much blood Heath vomited when he was wounded and fell to the ground, yet he still found it in him to relay what had happened to Theo, even after he spewed blood enough to coat the entire ground?

Heath must have been genuinely free to have done that!

Griffin immediately mocked Jackie's ear-piercing laughter. "Why are you laughing? Do you think that the righteous words of others are hilarious?! Still. It's understandable for despicable people like you to think of other people's actions for justice to be hilarious!"

Griffin was so used to slandering others. He mocked Jackie to his heart's content and was completely guilt free with doing that, too.

Nelson was so angry that he, with his face turning purplish, stretched out his head. "Junior Brother Griffin, can you stop talking? You have nothing to do with this matter, and you should stay out of it. Don't forget that no matter what Junior Brother Jackie did, he's still your junior brother!"

Griffin immediately stood up straight when he heard what Nelson said. "You're right. Senior Brother Nelson-Jackie is my junior brother no matter what he did. However, I cannot put up with such a disloyal and unrighteous person!"

Nelson scoffed at this and ceased his attempt. He knew that Griffin just could not stop himself, no matter what he said. He could only allow Griffin to continue showing off.

Jackie barely reacted when facing the accusations and mocking looks from the people around him. Jackie did not feel like it was nothing, but he realized the crucial point of the issue.

Jackie felt that there was something weird going on when Theo rushed over to question him. Was Theo close to Frank? Why did Theo question him? Why did Edric refuse to face him? Why did Heath, who was terribly wounded and was on the ground vomiting blood, tell Theo about what happened? Apart from himself, Heath was the other person who hated Frank.

If Frank had not ignored his words and did not say so much to anger the masked man, they would have withdrawn themselves safely. They would not have experienced the annoying matter later on. Heath would not be badly wounded either!

The Divine Void Slope was about to be activated, and everybody would be fighting over precious items by then. Heath was so badly wounded that he did not have the courage to climb up the Divine Void Slope.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2221-2230

Chapter 2221

Heath could not have spoken righteously on Frank's behalf just like what Theo said, as Heath abhorred Frank. This all merely seemed hilarious to Jackie. On top of that, he remembered that Heath was unable to stay awake after being wounded by the masked man. How could he be in the mood to look at other things at that moment?

Although Jackie was in a battle at that time, he still paid attention to the changes around him. It seemed untrue that Heath saw everything that happened! It was true that the others were deeply immersed in their battles, but Theo managed to describe their battle accurately. This meant that somebody described what happened to Theo, but that person was neither Heath nor Edric!

Jackie suddenly raised his head to look at Theo and smiled coldly. He opened his mouth and said, "I'm impressed! How can you do this when Frank was your clan brother from the same sect..."

Theo was stunned when he heard this and the people around them were also stunned. All of them stared at Jackie in disbelief.

Griffin said with a frown on his face. "Are you so intimidated that you've gone crazy? What are you talking about?"

Jackie suddenly turned around to look at Griffin. "If this happened to Senior Brother Griffin, what would you do? It was an emergency situation, and my opponent was in the final stage of innate level. If I wasn't thinking about escaping, should I have stayed to die with Frank? I'm sure that you would've escaped faster than anybody if this happened to you! You only asked me these questions because we've got bad blood. We're clan brothers, so it doesn't matter if there are some issues between us, but you ignored the fact that we're clan brothers and, instead, joined some random outsider to blame me! You agreed to what the outsider said without looking at what happened with your own eyes! What sort of a good person do you think you are?!"

Griffin slightly stuttered when Jackie's questions hit, and his expression mellowed out. "I was just standing on the side of,"

"You said that I'm a disloyal and unrighteous person, but have you thought about my situation?" interjected Jackie. "This person is a disciple of the Muddled Origin Clan, and you agree to everything that he said. You're helping an outsider against me! Is this the loyalty and righteousness that you're talking about?"

Nelson immediately followed behind Jackie and said," Junior Brother Jackie is right! We're all disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, and if we are of no help, we shouldn't have spoken before we know what's going on. Where's your loyalty and righteousness as you disregarded the sect's morality for your personal grudges?"

Jackie and Nelson's alternating words caused Griffin To blush a crimson color as he looked at the two of them with gritted teeth. He tried to find his tongue so that he could talk back to them.

However, Jackie did not provide the opportunity for him to do so. He suddenly turned around to look at Theo. "Do you think that I'm dumb?! Everyone was too caught up in their own battle that no one would've bothered to look at somebody else. You said that…Senior Brother Heath told you everything. However, I saw him badly wounded and lying on the ground vomiting blood in the end. He's still trying to recover right now, so do you think that he would be In the mood to tell you all that?!"

Chapter 2222
Jackie paused after he finished saying this. "Another person saw the entire process!"

Theo's expression changed, and he was about to interrupt Jackie when Jackie beat him to it. "It's the person who tried to kill us at that moment!" He pointed at the direction of the masked man when he finished speaking. "That eldest senior brother from the Corpse Pavilion who has on a mask had been standing by the side and observing the entire battle after he wounded Senior Brother Heath! He must be the one who told you about everything!"

What Jackie said was like a wake-up call to everyone present. Although Jackie was disloyal and unrighteous, he was on the weaker side. Jackie sneered and continued, "The Corpse Pavilion was the one who wanted to kill us, and Frank died in the hands of the Corpse Pavilion's disciples. You're causing us trouble instead of accusing the Corpse Pavilion! Is this your loyalty and righteousness?"

Everyone there had a sudden realization when they heard what Jackie said. Jackie was right: The Corpse Pavilion was the one who did the murder, and Frank died in the hands of their people. However, Theo acted as if he had completely forgotten this and only came to question Jackie. He was obviously bullying the weak!

At this moment, everybody turned to accuse Theo, and the looks in their eyes changed when they looked at him.

Jackie sneered and added, "It doesn't matter that you're bullying the weak and purposely causing me trouble, but you're working together with the person who killed Frank! Senior Brother Heath was so badly wounded at that moment that he was on the ground, continuously vomiting blood. How could he even have the thought to focus on me? Right now, Senior Brother Heath is still healing, and he's unable to even open his eyes right now. How would he be in the mood to go to you and purposely tell you everything?!"

Theo was so angry that his hands were trembling. Still, he stubbornly insisted, "Your actions were too overboard, so—"

“Stop lying to everybody with these made-up facts. What did I do that was so overboard? We could’ve left in peace, but Frank was all pompous. He completely angered the opponent, and this caused the opponent to attack us. If everyone won’t believe what I said, you can ask another person who was involved in the fight, the formal disciple of Thousand Leaves Pavilion, Byron Reid!”

Theo blushed a crimson color as he said, “Don’t try to smooth-talk your way out of this!”

“I’m not trying to smoothly talk my way out of things; you’re the one who was in exasperation. I’m sure you’re cooperating with the masked man because he promised you a sweet deal or two. After all, the masked man failed to capture me, and he hated me. You don’t actually care about Frank’s fate, and you only care if you’ll receive your promised benefits. You could’ve thrown anyone under the bus for these small boons!”

“It is true, and I can testify!” At this moment, a clear voice could be heard from behind the crowd, and a Thousand Leaves Pavilion’s disciple in a white robe walked over to them steadily.

The person who made his way toward the scene was Byron, and he seemed to be calm at this moment. However, waves of anger were flashing across his eyes.

He announced loudly when he arrived in front of everybody, “I can testify for Junior Brother Jackie, and everything he says is true! On top of that, my Senior Brother Heath had been tending to his wounds since he was transferred here. He was in no mood to tell anybody about what happened since then.”

With this witness testifying on Jackie’s behalf, the judgment of things naturally leaned toward his side. Theo, who was arrogant before, immediately shrank as though a bowl of cold water had been poured over his head

However, he still tried to defend himself.

“Junior Brother Byron, why are you siding with Jackie? He killed my junior brother!”

Chapter 2223
Byron glanced at Theo in disdain. He loathed people who cooperated with their enemies for measly gains. He smiled coldly and commented, “A person who stresses about getting justice for his junior brother is actually cooperating with the true murderer who killed his junior brother. You’re a truly unjust, wicked person! How dare you mention that I’m helping somebody else? Ask your own conscience about your actions!”

Almost everybody looked at Theo in disgust after Byron’s remark. With Byron’s testimony and Theo’s guilty expression, everybody knew the truth.

“I thought that he was genuinely infuriated about his junior brother’s death. Turns out, he’s here to frame others because of some benefits!”

“He dared not say anything when facing the true murderer who killed his junior brother, and he even cooperated with that person! He’s here to frame Jackie because he thinks that it’s easy to frame somebody in the intermediate stage of the innate level. He’s such a despicable person for framing someone!”

“I almost fell for his words just now and thought that Jackie was a vile person!”

At this moment, all the doubtful voices and contemptuous gazes landed on Theo. Theo was not as insensitive as Jackie was, and he felt that the gazes from the crowd burned holes in his body. News about this incident would surely travel back to his clan, and everybody would be mocking him by then. Everybody would think of him as a despicable person.

Theo was so angry that his hands were trembling, and his eyes were bloodshot, too. He suddenly raised his head and looked over at Jackie. “B*stard! I’ll remember everything that happened here today! I won’t let you off the hook, and there’s still a long way ahead of us. Just wait and see what I’ll do to you!

With that, Theo turned and left. After all, he would only provoke ridicule if he stayed behind. Jackie, meanwhile, felt that Theo was ridiculous and disgusting when he saw how he escaped with his tail between his legs. However, Jackie remembered what Theo said in the end. He believed that Theo would no doubt cause him trouble if he had the chance, and the beef between them was unavoidable.

This, however, did not overly concern Jackie as he did not go against his principle as a person. Theo, in fact, was the one who caused him trouble.

As the main person in this incident had escaped in embarrassment, onlookers naturally left with a lack of interest. Once again, only the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion were left.

Griffin’s glower intensified as what he did was definitely despicable. He stood on the side of outsiders against his clan brothers, and many people despised him for what he did. However, Griffin did not feel that he made a mistake. He had never thought of Jackie as his clan brother.

Jackie turned around and looked at Griffin before speaking up in front of all the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciples, “I’ll remember what you did today, Senior Brother Griffin!”

Griffin reacted like a cat whose tail had been stepped on when he heard what Jackie said. “Why? Do you plan to retaliate? You wish to do that by yourself? Stop thinking that you can show off in front of me because you’re under the Eleventh Elder’s protection! You’re just a formal disciple right now, frankly speaking, but I’m a chosen disciple! Who do you think you are to bring up revenge in front of me?

Jackie smiled coldly and replied indifferently, “Let’s wait and see.”

Jackie turned around and refused to look at Griffin again, all the while thinking of how to thank Byron as he had come to his aid. After all, Jackie was not an ungrateful person.

Chapter 2224
Jackie thanked Byron solemnly, but Byron waved his hand in dismissal. “This is nothing. I did this because I can’t stand Theo’s behavior.”

The two of them exchanged some words before Jackie sent Byron away.

Time passed by slowly, and after an hour, the aged voice could be heard again, “Time’s up! Everybody can board the Divine Void Slope now! You’ll fight the Divine Void Warrior when you’re on the Divine Void Slope. The criteria to judge your failure is when you lose your capabilities to fight or when you admit defeat. Once you lose to the Divine Void Warrior, you won’t be able to continue climbing up the Divine Void Slope.”

The evaluation standard was quite fair as everybody could proactively admit defeat if they felt that they would be badly wounded should they resume their battle.

“Alright! Those who wish to climb up the Divine Void Slope, you can start now. Those who do not wish to do so can just stay at the bottom.” After the announcement, the crowd started to burn with excitement. Apart from those who were badly wounded or dead, the others started rushing toward the Divine Void Slope. Jackie walked slowly and looked like he was taking a stroll in the garden. He had no intention of fighting with the people in front of him.

At this moment, those closer to the Divine Void Slope climbed up the slope faster. The first person who stepped on the Divine Void Slope was stunned, and his originally high spirits disappeared. He felt like he had been imprisoned by the surrounding space and was unable to move. The next second, he heard something cracking..

This scene immediately extinguished everyone’s enthusiasm. Everybody looked over at the first person who rushed up the slope but was stuck there and unable to move.

Crack! Crack!

Sounds of chains being pulled could be heard again, and the ground beneath that person suddenly shifted. The person was unable to move his body, but he moved together with the ground. After an inhale, that person was moved 300 meters away from where he originally was.

“Oh my god!” he blurted in fear. His sideburns were wet from his cold sweat, proving just how frightened he was when his body was controlled.

The voice of the old man could be heard at this moment. “Everybody is given their own spot! What are you waiting for? Why haven’t you moved up the slope?

If you don’t move, the Divine Void Slope will decide that you don’t wish to fight for the precious items.”

The words of the announcer acted like a stimulant. Everybody’s enthusiasm was rekindled when they saw that the first person to rush up the slope was safe. Like bees flying out of their hives, everyone rushed up the Divine Void Slope.

The Divine Void Slope was not crowded, even though more than 100 people had moved up the slope. The body of every person who stepped on the slope was instantly controlled, and the ground they stepped on moved accordingly.

In the beginning, Jackie was curious as to why the Divine Void Slope would function in such a way. However, Jackie had an instant realization when he saw that more than 100 people had been arranged nicely. The Divine Void Slope controlled the distance between them and led all of them to their respective places. At that moment, everyone stood at the lowest point of the Divine Void Slope in one straight line.

Jackie did everything slowly, but it was not because he wanted to make a grand entrance. Instead, he did not wish to spend time with these people. He had only arrived in front of the Divine Void Slope at this moment.

He was about to step onto the Divine Void Slope at this moment when he heard a gloomy voice saying, ” You’re so much more interesting than I originally thought. You’ve been quite lucky until this point. However, you should remember that good luck won’t come your way every single time. Young man… You‘ll suffer in my hands, sooner or later!”

Chapter 2225
The masked man stood three meters behind Jackie and eyed him sharply.

However, Jackie replied indifferently. “Many people wish to kill me, but those people usually end up dead.”

“Hmph! Such arrogance! The masked man scoffed, one that sounded as though it boomed from his chest.

Jackie ignored the situation behind him and stepped onto the Divine Void Slope. The moment both his legs stepped on the ground, he felt an unseen wave of energy covering his entire body. He was unable to move as the energy was like hardened cement. Seconds later, he moved speedily and appeared at the northern side of the slope.

After his body was able to move freely, Jackie still felt a vague blocking force around him. Although he stood in the same space as everybody else, they were in individual spaces. Of course, Jackie was not the only one who felt this.

Bang! Bang!

Sounds of something smashed were heard from far away, and Jackie saw a disciple from the Corpse Pavilion raise his mace and continuously waved it at the space surrounding him.

The intense true energy collision caused waves of true energy in his surroundings. However, the collision was within a range. With the Corpse Pavilion's disciple as the center point, the aftershocks of the energy collision could be felt within a radius of several meters. However, none of them could feel anything once they were out of the radius!

The disciple's actions immediately made everyone else nearby follow suit. Moments later, everybody came up with the same conclusion. Even though they looked like they were in the same space, they were isolated. This meant that no matter how intense the fight in their individual space was, they would not affect the people around them. It was absolutely fair yet marvelous altogether!

Jackie exhaled deeply and looked up the Divine Void Slope with his bright eyes. To be frank, this was not an amazing place, but it was absolutely powerful. There were more than 100 people there, and the slope was capable of instantly forming more than 100 individual spaces! The attainments toward the laws of space were unimaginable when one was capable of doing so!

"The climb has begun! Remember: the Divine Void Slope is over nine thousand meters tall, and a Divine Void Warrior will appear in front of you every nine hundred meters! Defeat the Divine Void Warrior, and you'll be qualified to continue climbing up the slope. On the contrary, the other party shall be eliminated! You'll face nine Divine Void Warriors, but there shall be ten battles. The last person who wins the battle shall win it all! Good luck…warriors of the West Cercei State!" The voice, evidently coming from an aged individual, quieted down after he finished saying this.

However, the people who joined this battle for precious items were unable to calm down. They were required to join ten battles, but there would only be nine Divine Void Warriors. The information contained in this statement was apparent!

Everybody caught the crucial point of the battle after giving it some thought. The last fight was a melee, and only one person would win!

Once they thought of this, the intention to fight around the people grew more intense. Jackie saw a Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciple staring at the peak of the slope as his intention to kill overflowed.

"Go!" roared an individual, striding toward the peak of the Divine Void Slope filled with burning determination.

Compared to the enthusiasm of those around him, Jackie was like an old man who moved slowly. Moments later, a handful of participants arrived at the 30-meters point. That person had just stepped within the 30-meter-range when their surroundings suddenly released a strand of reddish-orange light.

Chapter 2226
The person was startled and subconsciously stopped walking. The orangish-red light only appeared for a short instant before disappearing a second later. A translucent phantom then appeared in front of him. The phantom had a strict face and eyes filled with vigor. He had an object in his hand that looked like a crystal sphere. The crystal sphere floated in mid-air due to the phantom's true energy. He stood upright like a soldier in front of the person.

This immediately attracted everyone's attention; no doubt was this translucent phantom the Divine Void Warrior the old voice mentioned. After the appearance of the Divine Void Warrior, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciple immediately got ready for a great battle. He had a serious expression on his face as he stared at the Divine Void Warrior while holding the sword in his hands tightly.

Surprisingly, the Divine Void Warrior did not instantly make his move after appearing, and it felt like his appearance was to stop the people standing In front of him from advancing. As the Divine Void Slope was a precious item left behind by the ancient master, the person could not simply take action before the enemy did, and no one dared to act without caution.

Since the enemy did not do anything, that person could only be prepared with the sword in his hands and a serious expression on his face.

Not long after, Divine Void Warriors appeared in front of every person that arrived at the 900 meter point. Each of these Divine Void Warriors looked different, but all of them held a crystal sphere in their hands.

Jackie was not the very last to arrive at the 900 meter point, but he was among the last few. After he stepped into the 900 meter range, an orangish-red beam appeared in front of him, followed by a tall figure. The Divine Void Warrior in front of him was tall and thin with gentle facial features, but there was no mistaking that heroic look on his face. He had a slight frown on his face that completed his solemn expression. He stood up straight with the crystal sphere in his hands.

After he saw the phantom figure of this Divine Void Warrior, a thought flashed past Jackie's mind.' Warrior! A fearless warrior!

Since the word 'Divine Void' was in the name of the Divine Void Warrior, the warrior was no doubt related to the Divine Void World. Still, how were they connected?

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Jackie's mind, but he had no idea what was going on. He was lost in confusion and deep in his thoughts when he heard a sharp yell.

"F*ck! It moves!"

The noise broke the rather eerie silence.

Jackie quickly looked up, and the Divine Void Warrior suddenly moved its eyes. The warrior was like a mannequin whose switch had been turned on. The Divine Void Warrior's eyeballs moved and seemed to be getting used to this strange world.

The next moment, his eyes landed on Jackie. His eyes were icy-cold, and it looked like he was looking down at the world. It made Jackie feel like he was a piece of floating duckweed in the eyes of the warrior, or, to be more exact, a piece of trash. The warrior seemed to be emotionless as his eyes were focused on Jackie. To put it in better words, he was not emotionless, but he was really ignoring Jackie, who stood in front of him. It felt as if Jackie's fighting prowess was not worth his attention.

Jackie cleared his throat and pinched his nose helplessly. He probed the Divine Void Warrior's fighting prowess and, sure enough, noticed that it was in the initial stage of innate level. His ascertainment should be correct…so why did a Divine Void Warrior in the initial stage of innate level look at him in such a way? The warrior looked at him in contempt as though he was nothing but garbage.

"D*mnit. What's that look in his eyes for? I've never been looked down upon by a person in the initial stage of innate level!" A depressed rant could be heard from a distance away. Jackie turned around to look and noticed that many people around him were looking at the Divine Void Warrior in front of them with depressed looks on their faces. Every Divine Void Warrior was staring at the challengers in front of them with contempt and ignorance.

Chapter 2227
These disciples were privileged people in their sects and had spent their lives showered in compliments. They had never suffered such contempt, and the look in the Divine Void Warriors' eyes was extremely depressing for them.

"Do we look like trash? Why are you looking at us like that? You're only at the initial level of innate level!" A few of them complained. Some of their worries dissipated as they had nothing to fear when the other party had the same fighting prowess as they did.

The Divine Void Warriors standing in front of these disciples did not respond. The warrior had the same look in his eyes and there was silence, as if the warrior heard nothing.

Jackie crossed his arms at his chest and observed the ongoings around him with great interest. The others were speechless with his actions. As he was immersed in his own observation, he suddenly felt something around him moving. The Divine Void Warrior standing opposite him suddenly raised the crystal sphere in his hands high in the air. A bright light of seven colors immediately covered his surroundings.

Before Jackie realized what had happened, he found himself on a great prairie. He inhaled deeply, realizing he was the only one there across the empty grassland. Why was he here? Where is this place? He was…

Where was he just moments ago? Jackie suddenly could not recall where he was before. It felt like he had been on this great prairie from the start, yet he knew not how he got here and why.

“Jackie! I told you that I’d get my revenge, and I’ll finally have it today!” Theo smiled arbitrarily as he glared at Jackie. He was a meter away from Jackie, cackling in glee. It felt like he was about to achieve all his goals in life, that he could enjoy his life soon.

Jackie frowned and subconsciously took a step back. Since he practiced Destroying the Void, he subconsciously kept some distance between himself and his enemies. Destroying the Void was a long distance martial skill, and close-range fights were unbeneficial for him.

However, he noticed that he seemed to be rooted on the spot just as he was about to back away.

“What do you want?” sneered Jackie.

“Hahaha! What do you think I plan to do?! You discredited me in front of everyone, and I was punished by my sect when I returned! Have you forgotten that? I’ll make you suffer so badly that you wish you were dead!”

“Jackie!” A dark voice could be heard coming from Jackie’s left side. He turned around, only to find that the masked man was already at his left side. The man was looking at Jackie fiercely, as though he could slice Jackie into pieces.

Jackie inhaled deeply. No matter how strong his mentality was, he just could not get a grip of his calmness.

As he was shaken up, another voice appeared on his right side. “Who would’ve thought you’d end up like this today, Junior Brother Jackie! How does it feel? Is it painful? Does it hurt? Your skin will be peeled off soon! This isn’t something a normal person can withstand! Hahahaha!”

Griffin’s voice was like a lingering fly that hummed incessantly in Jackie’s ears.

Chapter 2228

Three enemies surrounded Jackie, their gazes burning with resentment yet were happy enough at the thought of mincing Jackie into pieces. Jackie did have bad blood with all three men, and he knew they were capable of cutting every piece of meat off of him with their daggers.

Jackie was in a muddled state at this moment. He knew that he was in extreme danger, that the enemies were about to torture him until he died. He wanted to break free, but his body felt like it had been infused with cement, and he just could not move.

A cold wind swept through his sideburns, and his heart skipped a beat. He immediately turned around and saw that the masked man had a dagger in his hand as he approached Jackie. The remaining two people were also on the move.

All three of them had a sharp weapon in their hands respectively, and he knew what they were about to do.

Sure enough, what he feared the most was happening.

Suddenly, a thought flashed past Jackie's head. At the same time, Jackie seemed to have a sudden realization, and his expression turned stiff.

No… Why would the thing that he feared the most happen to him? It was just seconds ago that he assumed the three men would cut him clean from his bones, and they suddenly advanced toward him with such intention. Each of them had a sharp weapon in their hands, too.

Such a coincidence meant that this was not a coincidental matter. Moreover, why was he here? He seemed to have landed on this great prairie out of the blue. Was he so careless to have stepped into a trap?

No. This was a fantasy. This was not real!

Jackie immediately bit on his tongue when he realized this, and the pain cleared his mind! The words Divine Void Illusion' flashed through his head.

The feeling of being caught in an illusion was familiar, but there was also a hint of unfamiliarity. The familiar feeling did not come from Jackie, but from the memories in his head, those that belonged to the ancient master. The Divine Void Illusion was a common illusion attack in the Divine Void World that could invade a person's mind and attack the victim based on the person's worst fears. Once they plunged into inextricable fear, they would be unable to regain consciousness.

The Divine Void Illusion was a premium Red Level martial skill. On top of that, it was one of the greatest skills among those in the premium Red Level, and it was close to being an Earth Level martial skill! Jackie dared not waste time when he realized this. Those three were still terrorizing him by making threats, and they had already waved the sharp knives toward Jackie's skin!

"Stop!" Jackie roared angrily and started activating the Destroying the Void. All 15 soul swords were formed and were like sharp swords sent flying at the same time. The swords traveled in Jackie's body and broke all those delusional thoughts in his consciousness.

"Clatter!" After the power that belonged to the Divine Void Illusion was perforated by Jackie's Destroying the Void, the power disappeared from Jackie's consciousness and the surrounding illusion gradually disappeared. The great prairie dissolved in front of his eyes, and all three enemies dissipated like flying ashes.

When Jackie could see his surroundings clearly once, he realized that he was still standing on his original spot, and the crystal sphere in front of him was glowing in an orangish-red color. The Divine Void Warrior stood right before Jackie, but the crystal sphere had somehow floated toward Jackie.

It was so dangerous.

Jackie exhaled deeply in relief. Fortunately, he regained consciousness at a crucial moment and realized that what he had seen moments ago was not reality. He was also lucky to have found out what martial skill this weird illusion was from his memories. The ancient master practiced the Divine Void Illusion years ago and had deep knowledge about this martial skill. Jackie was able to resolve the illusion smoothly because the ancient master had a deep understanding of the method of resolvement!

Whizz! The crystal sphere sounded like it had been leaking electricity. After the sphere let out such a noise, the orangish-red light gradually disappeared and returned to how it used to look. Jackie immediately looked up and discovered that the Divine Void Warrior was looking at him with a different look in his eyes. From the original ignorance and contempt, the look in his eyes had turned into a gradually serious one. Did the Divine Void Warrior really have his own intellect?

From the beginning, Jackie felt that the Divine Void Warrior was just a phantom that could attack but did not have his own intellect. Although the warriors looked at them as if they were trash, Jackie felt that their gaze was unifiedly set.

Chapter 2229
However, Jackie gave up such thoughts when he saw the change in the Divine Void Warrior's eyes. This phantom had his own intellect, after all!

This…was too…

Jackie felt unnerved as he could not make out what he felt. What were these things?

"Let go of me! I'm sorry! It was my mistake! I won't do it again!" A heart-wrenching cry came from his left, and Jackie turned around to look. He noticed that almost everybody stood still in their places, but their faces were extremely expressive. The cry came from a Muddled Origin Clan disciple.

The disciple's body tensed while a frightened expression was written all over his face. He seemed to be pleading as tears trickled down his cheek, wetting his shirt in the process. It was apparent that he had been crying for some time. He was not the only one to react in such a way, however, as most of the disciples were in the same situation when Jackie took a look around.

It was not hard for Jackie to imagine what sort of an illusion these people were in when he thought about his previous expression. The illusion slowly unfolded every piece of fear buried in the disciples' hearts, turning them into reality. Experiencing such pain was not something a normal person could endure.

"Ufh!" The disciple's face blushed a crimson color before he suddenly vomited a mouthful of blood.

The Muddled Origin Clan disciple vomited a mouthful of blood, he looked like a cooked prawn and was unusually red. Moments later, he, unable to keep himself composed, fell to the ground with a thud.

An orangish-red light enveloped the person, and the Divine Void Warrior standing in front of him declared, “You lost your combat effectiveness, and you’ve failed the challenge! I’ll allow you to heal your wounds here, but you’ll go no further from here. When the winner appears, everyone will be moved out of the Divine Void Slope.”

The appearance of this voice completely woke the Muddled Origin Clan disciple. When he realized that he had been eliminated, he blushed and said, “No! I”He was about to say something when he felt a surge of blood overflowing from within him. He had definitely lost but he had never imagined that he would fail so badly and so quickly. The old voice once said that they had to experience nine Divine Void Warriors as they climbed up the slope. This was the first one, and he had already lost!

Jackie sighed softly when he saw that the Muddled Origin Clan disciple had been eliminated. He knew that this was a difficult challenge, but he did not expect the elimination to happen so quickly. He thought that all the disciples here were masters sent by their respective sects, and eliminations should only happen when they meet the third or fourth Divine Void Warrior.

As he was deep in his own thoughts, he could hear something cranking, like gears being activated. He looked up warily and the Divine Void Warrior blocking his way had somehow disappeared without his notice. Did this mean that he was allowed to pass? He inhaled and tried to walk forward. Jackie instantly understood when he no longer faced any obstruction or was stopped. He wasted no more time as he advanced

Murmurs and cries of pain echoed around him, but this did not affect Jackie’s mentality as he was only thinking about moving forward.

The Muddled Origin Clan disciple who was the first one to be eliminated had already accepted his fate and was observing his surroundings as he tended to his wounds. When he saw a figure slowly moving up the slope, his eyeballs almost popped out of his sockets as he blurted, “He’s passed the first test already? He managed to escape the illusion by himself?”

Was deep in their illusions apart from Jackie and himself.

“Who is this? He’s wearing the Dual Sovereign Pavilion disciple’s attire, but… Why haven’t I seen him in the past? No! I saw him just now! Isn’t this Jackie, the person who got into a fight with Senior Brother Theo just now?!”

Chapter 2230
Jackie and Theo had caused a huge ruckus at that time, and the Muddled Origin Clan disciples dared not follow Theo to cause trouble at the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Those that did not go over also focused all their attention at that side. Hence, this disciple was extremely surprised when he realized who that person was.

This guy was the first one to break through the illusion? Was he lucky, or was he really capable? The Muddled Origin Clan disciple had a darkened look on his face. He was one realm higher than Jackie and was In the final stage of innate level.

All of them paid attention to the chaos when Theo was causing Jackie trouble. As this guy was only in the intermediate stage of innate level, they did not pay much attention to him. They had heard that he was only an elder disciple and not even a chosen disciple.

The Muddled Origin Clan disciple could not accept the fact that a person he looked down upon was stronger than him. He was not even in the mood to heal his wounds.

“Ah!” The masked man yelled loudly, and consciousness gradually returned to his eyes. He panted heavily, having finally broken free from the illusion at last.

Crack!

The Divine Void Warrior that stood before him disappeared after being in a semi-transparent situation. With nothing obstructing him, this meant the masked man was qualified to advance.

He could not help but lament, “Such a great illusion! I was also caught up in it, but… It couldn’t keep for long.” On top of that, the masked man felt that a huge reason he was trapped here was that he lowered his fighting prowess. He also felt that the Divine Void Slope had a certain degree of suppression on him. If he had his full energy, an illusion of such level would be unable to trap him!

He laughed coldly at the thought. He glanced around him and discovered that everybody else, apart from himself, was still caught in their respective illusions. All of them were frowning and looked like they were suffering badly.

He was the first one to break free! Of course, there were a few of these nobodies, but they did not deserve the precious items on the Divine Void Slope. They were prepared for him, not these lame disciples that could not even put up a fight!

Inadvertently, he caught a glimpse of the Muddled Origin Clan disciple surrounded by the orangish-red light. However, this person had a weird expression on his face and a clear look in his eyes. He was not trapped in the illusion, but the Divine Void Warrior blocking in front of him had not disappeared.

The masked man knew that this man must have been eliminated and sneered. He was only a disciple from a third-grade sect, and it was normal that he was eliminated the moment he stepped on the slope. However, this guy had a slightly weird expression on his face. Why was he looking at the Divine Void Slope with a frightened, yet jealous look on his face?

As he followed the Muddled Origin Clan disciple’s line of gaze, he saw a familiar figure who had already arrived at the 18-meter-range point. He stood up straight, and the Divine Void Warrior once again appeared in front of him. The masked

man had already understood the rules of the Divine Void Slope. The Divine Void Warriors would only be activated when everyone was at their designated point, and the next round of elimination would only begin.

“Jackie…” He subconsciously called out this name that gave him a headache. Apart from being surprised, there was a great deal of disbelief in his voice. Jackie managed to pass the challenge before he did? He had just woken up from the illusion, but this guy had already arrived at the 18-meter-range point and was awaiting the next round of elimination.

The masked man’s expression immediately darkened as he stared at Jackie’s figure, unable to believe the sight.

Why? How could that guy be faster than him? He had already broken through into the spring-solidifying realm, and he would not have taken the pill to suppress his fighting prowess if he did not need to come to this place. However, the martial art techniques, martial skills, and combat experience he had would not reduce no matter how he suppressed his fighting prowess.

He was absolutely confident about coming to the Secret Place for Resources, and he had never paid attention to these young people. “Impossible! How could this be? Why?!” he growled through gritted teeth.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2231-2240

Chapter 2231
At this moment, many of the people around him slowly broke free from their mental prison. Many of them seemed to be stunned and in a bad condition when they got out of the illusion. After all, the Divine Void Illusion used the weaknesses of the human heart and made them see things they never wish to face.

The disciples were frightened and thankful once they escaped the illusion.

“Oh my god! W-What sort of illusionary skill is that? It’s so…domineering that I thought everything was real! I was almost defeated!”

“Yes! Second Senior Brother, you’re awake too? You’re so much faster than the other clan brothers!”

Just as there were those who won, there were also those who lost the fight. Many of them failed and vomited blood as they had weak mental strength. These people were naturally covered by the orangish -red light and could no longer move as they had failed the challenge. However, most of them succeeded, and the success rate was as high as 70 percent. This percentage of people had succeeded in the challenge, and the Divine Void Warrior in front of them disappeared.

Soon, somebody realized that there was a person at the second challenge, facing the second Divine Void Warrior. “Who’s that?! D*mnit! He’s already arrived at the second challenge!”

At this moment, Griffin managed to escape the illusion, huffing and puffing as his vision slowly came to. He immediately looked around him and was pleased with himself when he saw that there were still some people who had not escaped the illusion. However, the noises of discussion around him stunned him before he had enough time to enjoy his victory.

“That’s Jack from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, isn’t It? Isn’t he in the intermediate stage of innate level? Why is he so strong?! How determined is he?!”

“Do you know that the illusion we were in just now is also a type of martial skill? A determined mind can help us break free from the illusion, but it requires the support of our fighting prowess. We need to use a strong martial skill to cut off the improper thoughts! This isn’t something achievable only by a determined mind!”

“You’re right… We’ve certainly looked down at him!”

When these comments wafted into Griffin's ears, he immediately looked up and saw Jack's upright figure as he faced the second Divine Void Warrior, unmoving

"How could this…" Griffin felt like he had just swallowed dung. At this moment, the people who passed the first challenge were slowly climbing up the slope, and none of them wanted to be left behind. However, Jack was still much faster than everybody there!

Nelson looked at Jack with an unrecognizable expression in his eyes. He was relieved, envious, and jealous at the same time. He had also looked down at Jack, who had just become an elder disciple.

Although Jack also showed his extraordinary strength at the gathering spot for roll call and defeated Oliver, who was at the eighth position among formal disciples, this was nothing to the chosen disciples when he was just an informal disciple. After all, Jack was only in the intermediate stage of innate level.

However, it looked like he had underestimated Jack. Jack might not have even used all his strength during his fight with Oliver.

The masked man arrived at the 18-meter-range point with a darkened look on his face. A strand of purple light that appeared before the second Divine Void Warrior also appeared in front of him. He was the second person to arrive at the 18-meter-range point, but this felt more like an insult to him instead.

He might not be in such a foul mood if it was another person who was ahead of him. However, it was Jack, the young man he failed to kill and escaped from his hands twice. How could he stay calm when Jack surpassed him with a fighting prowess of intermediate stage of innate level?!

Chapter 2232
The masked man let out a long sigh as he narrowed his eyes at Jack. His gaze might have been so intense that it caused Jack, even though he was quite a distance away, to turn toward his direction. Despite the mask covering his face, Jack could still tell what expression laid beneath the mask just by looking at his eyes.

Was it defiance? Jealousy? Perhaps bitterness?

Jack let out a cold laugh. What did it matter if the masked man felt this way? A loss was a loss. Jack's cold smirk evoked the masked man's anger.

"Are you very pleased with yourself? Do you think you've surpassed me? You're faster than me, which I can only attribute to your firm resolve. If you were really stronger than me, then why did you always retreat whenever we fought in the past?"

The masked man's voice was clear and loud, despite the distance between him and Jack.

Jack raised an eyebrow, not angered by his words. “I know what the differences in our skills are, but don’t forget the fact that your cultivation has always been higher than mine by a whole realm. If the both of us were at the same level, you’d be the one running!”

“Nonsense!”

The masked man’s face rapidly reddened.

Jack could not be bothered to play along with the masked man and turned his head around. The minutes and seconds slowly ticked away as Jack quietly waited for the second battle. Once everyone who passed arrived at the 18-meter-point range, the second stage would formally begin.

Each of the Divine Warriors at the spot all exuded a vibrant purple, lavender glow, and all of them looked at each other with serious expressions.

Click!

All of them pulled out their swords, and the swords exuded a purple glow. Purple runes were etched on the swords, filled with a mysterious power.

The pulling of the swords symbolized the start of the battle. Shockingly, none of them made a move to attack, seemingly waiting for the challengers to attack

Jack looked at the Divine Warriors in front of them with no intention of making a move. The warriors at the 18-meter-point range looked the same as the ones they met at the first point, but the weapons the warriors had in hand were different, as well as their fighting prowess.

The warriors at the previous challenge had all been at the initial stage of the innate realm, while those facing them at that moment were already at the middle stage. However, they seemed to have only just broken through to the middle stage and did not seem to have a very steady foundation.

Looking at the way the warriors looked at him, it was the exact same from before. Their disdain-filled gaze gleamed with arrogance, not considering him to be a threat at all.

The first time Jack encountered those looks, Jack mentally cursed in his mind. They were no stronger than he was, so why were they looking at him like that?

Of course, Jack finally understood the reason.

Those restrained warriors might actually be great masters in the Divine Void World, with abilities that far exceeded everyone present. They were probably restricting their powers for the sake of the Divine Void Slope, which is why they looked at everyone present like ants.

“I’m not going to wait anymore! Let’s see what kind of tricks you have up your sleeve this time!” shouted a disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion impatiently.

He then pulled out his one-meter-long sword and rushed right at the Divine Warriors in front of him. A blood-red glow radiated from the sword as he shouted loudly, “Blood Wave!”

A bloody aura covered his body as the sword in his hand looked like it had been pulled out of hell. It contained a wave of killing intent and thirst for blood as he slashed right at the Divine warrior in front of him.

“You’re just at the middle-stage of the Innate Realm! Show me what you’ve got!” the man shouted out as he attacked.

Chapter 2233
Practically everyone’s attention was focused on that man. The Divine warrior standing in front of him started to move the moment the disciple used that skill.

The purple blade in the warrior’s hand let out a vibrant glow as the warrior took the Blood Wave head -on, rushing forward.

At that moment, however, a clink was heard as the purple aura that was on the Divine warrior shone so vibrant that everyone shut their eyes. The Divine warrior was submerged in the purple light.

The purple light dissipated in the next second, but a shocking scene greeted everyone. The Divine warrior had split into two identical Divine warriors. Both of them held their purple swords and faced the attack of the disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion.

“Another illusory art! It’s a phantom this time!” a number of disciples exclaimed in shock.

The disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion thought the same as well. The disciple furrowed his eyebrows and stared at the Divine warrior that had been split into two before coldly snorting, “You can’t fool me!”

His one-meter-long blade changed directions, slashing right at the Divine warrior in the left.

A massive explosion reverberated throughout the venue, and purple light clashed against the bloody aura, emitting a painfully sharp crackling sound. The purple light was incredibly radiant, but it still did not manage to hold the torrent of blood for too long.

Under a torrent of noise, the blood aura swallowed the purple light, and the blade had slashed right toward the Divine warrior.

“Good stuff! He managed to see through it immediately!” The onlookers all cheered for the disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion.

When facing illusory techniques, finding the true body was the key to victory. As long as one managed to find the user of the techniques, the attack would be countered and the enemy would be at their wit’s end.

The reason he could find out the true body so quickly was down to his incredibly amazing eyesight, and he could immediately see the big energy fluctuations on the bodies. The one on the left had double the energy than the one on the right.

The Thousand Leaves Pavillion disciple laughed out loud. He had won! The second stage was no sweat for him, after all! Even in his own sect, he was just someone who could show off a little among the inner disciples. When it came to all the masters at the Secret Place for Resources, he was nothing impressive.

He felt like he became the center of attention that day. Despite the fact that he had used all his strength, he still managed to defeat his opponent in one blow! If the fact spread into his sect, he would receive the attention of the elders, and his growth would be prioritized!

Thinking about that, he laughed as he circulated the true energy in his entire body and stabbed right at his opponent.

At that moment, the Divine warrior had yet to recover his strength and had no way to fight back at all

The sound of a blade piercing through flesh could be heard as the divine warrior was pierced right in the heart, and he suddenly lost all his ability to fight.

The Thousand Leaves Pavillion’s disciple was elated. He had won! It was, oddly enough, this easy! He did not expend much strength at all. The first stage had been so torturous, so he thought the second stage would have been incredibly hard. He never expected It would be so easy!

The crowd started to prepare themselves to attack as well when they noticed that the challenge was a mere breeze. If it was going to be so simple, braving It right away sounded like the perfect thing!

However, at that moment, Nelson’s confused voice reached their ears, “Why has the illusion not disappeared yet?” His eyebrows were furrowed.

At that moment, the crowd noticed something wrong. Based on normal situations, after dealing with the true body, the illusions would follow suit and disappear. Illusions were meant for confusing opponents and never possessed any combat abilities themselves.

However, it did not seem to be the case at that moment

The true body on the left had already lost all ability to fight, but the body on the right was still active as always. It did not seem to have been affected at all, let alone looking like it would disappear any soon.

Chapter 2234
Before the disciples' confusion was settled, the crowd noticed that the Divine warrior that had been pierced suddenly turned into spots of purple light, quickly being absorbed by the Divine warrior on the right.

The scene caused everyone to take a sharp breath. The one that had been pierced earlier was not the real body!

There was only one Divine warrior left in front of the Thousand Leaves Pavillion disciple. The disciple widened his eyes as he stared at the Divine warrior in disbelief.

It was then he realized that he had made the wrong guess…but it was too late. The Divine warrior's sword was already right in front of the disciple.

Everyone heard something being pierced.

Unable to shield himself, the disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion was dealt a large wound by the Divine warrior's blade. It was a deep wound that extended from the left shoulder to the right waist.

The disciple of the Thousand Leaves Pavillion spat out a mouthful of blood and collapsed on the ground immediately. The injury he got from that slash had rendered him with no strength left to fight back. His blood stained his shirt, and the disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion that were on friendlier terms to him all shouted loudly, "Hughes! Are you alright?!"

At that moment, Hughes no longer had the strength to even reply to the frantic shouts of his fellow disciples. After the Divine warrior did all of that, he walked back to his original position. A purple glow surged out of his body and covered up that disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion.

Being surrounded by that purple light meant that he was already eliminated, with no hopes of advancing. Many shivered as they watched the scene unfold, not expecting the tables to be turned so quickly.

They had thought that the disciple's victory had been assured, but no one expected that the body he pierced would not be the Divine warrior's true body. Those present, whose skills were at the level of the person who had failed, became visibly worried.

Everyone saw what happened, as bright as day. Thinking things through, they stood with not much of an advantage if they were to face the Divine warriors.

However, there were some who said, "That guy was too hot-headed; he just rushed ahead before anyone else did anything. He wanted the spotlight all to

himself. The reason he lost so badly was that he didn't know what skills the opponent had at all!"

"Now that we know, that move is nothing! As long as we manage to find his true body, we won't end up like that!"

"You're right! If that guy earlier pierced the Divine warrior on the right, none of this would've happened!

"How do you think he judged which body was the real one from those two Divine warriors earlier?"

"That's simple! Of course, it's through energy fluctuations. That's the most basic way to tell. However, using such a common technique against the Divine warriors won't work. All we need to do is do the opposite thing! With him as an example to us, we won't end up like him!"

Jack merely stood by the side, silently listening to everyone. With their exchanges, the atmosphere was quite peaceful. At that moment, he suddenly felt like he was being glared at, and not just by one person.

Jack turned around to look somewhat helplessly. He noticed the masked man staring at him with a provocative expression and narrowed eyes.

Jack knew exactly what that man's expression meant.

The masked man wanted to show off his skills to make up for his loss to Jack. It was not just the masked man, however, as even Griffin and Theo eyed him with the same expression.

He had triumphed over everyone else and was the first to reach the 18-meter-point range. The rest of them would definitely not be willing to admit defeat easily. They would probably think that they should have had that result, and that Jack was merely lucky instead of having plausible skills.

They were bitter that Jack seemed undeserving of the position.

Chapter 2235
This was an incredible chance for the disciples to prove how much stronger they were than Jack.

Jack, on the other hand, was not bothered by their petty thoughts at all, turning his head away and ignoring them.

However, Griffin mistook it as a show of nervousness from Jack, thus Griffin coldly sneered. "Surely you don't believe that the results you obtained earlier meant that your skills dominated everyone else here, do you?"

Jack furrowed his eyebrows, genuinely not wanting to engage with this insignificant fly. On the other hand, if he did not answer, others would think that he truly was afraid, not even daring to answer.

He turned rather exasperatedly. “I never wanted to dominate anyone. Can you just zip your mouth? If you really want to prove your skills, then come at me. Why are you wasting so much time with nonsense?!”

Griffin’s face reddened with anger as he pointed right at Jack. “Very well! I’ll let you taste how great the gap in our skills is!”

The moment he said that, a bang could be heard around them. A disciple from the Muddled Origin Clan had been beaten down and spat blood on the floor! The disciple was the second person to make a move.

After the first disciple had given them an example, he was unable to hold himself back from being the second test subject. This time, he did the opposite of what the Thousand Leaves Pavillion disciple did and attacked the body with weaker energy fluctuations.

Alas, he had chosen wrongly.

After destroying the weaker Divine warrior on the right, the same thing happened as before. The Divine warrior on the right turned into spots of purple light and was absorbed by the warrior on the left.

After absorbing the purple light, the warrior’s strength increased dramatically, and his speed had increased by several times as well. He dealt a heavy injury to the disciple from the Muddled Origin Clan In just one blow, the damage close to what was dealt to the person before.

That had shocked everyone present. Even Griffin, who had been boasting earlier, furrowed his brows, not knowing what to say. Attacking the Divine warrior with the stronger energy fluctuations was the wrong choice, but attacking the one with the weaker energy fluctuations was the wrong choice as well!

Was the Divine warrior’s true body determined at random, then?

Everyone present was stunned on the spot at that moment. However, even after being taken aback, there were still those who wanted to jump in and fight. Some people were just naturally impatient, and they ended up attacking one at a time.

The results caused everyone to frown. No matter which body was attacked, it never seemed to be the true body of the Divine warrior. It felt like both the Divine warriors were phantoms!

Of course, there were those who defeated the Divine warriors in the end. After all, there were quite a few talented individuals present.

As the masked man looked at those who attacked, he let out a cold snort of disdain. The masked man turned around and faced the Divine warrior in front o f him. Out of the space ring on his left hand, a machete appeared.

Jack raised an eyebrow. So, the masked man used a machete.

With a step forward, he swung the machete in his hand at the Divine warrior. His attack was so quick that he left behind an afterimage.

The Divine warrior also pulled his sword out the moment the masked man started to attack. Just like the other Divine warriors before, after a purple glow, two clones emerged. The bodies on the left and right started to attack the masked man.

The masked man's lips curled up, revealing a disdainful smile. The machete in his hand glinted coldly as it slashed at the Divine warrior's throat. As weapons clashed, the purple sword in the Divine warrior's sword was sent flying. A second later, the left Divine warrior's neck was slashed.

The Divine warrior on the left suddenly turned into spots of purple light, but the masked man did not give the Divine warrior a chance to gather up the light at all. He made a 180-degree turn in the air.

Opening up his right hand, he threw the machete in his hand. The machete was launched with an incredible force as it suddenly sliced off the Divine warrior's head under everyone's widened gazes!

Chapter 2236
The masked man's movements were all incredibly slick. Even the sheathing of his sword had been done flawlessly. His string of movements practically looked like an artful masterpiece.

Clink.

The machete was placed back into its sheathe. He did not store his weapon back into the space ring and instead held it gently in his palm.

"My god! That…that was too amazing. The Divine warrior was just like a pile of mud in front of him. It makes me feel like the Divine warrior I just fought isn't even at the same level as the one he did!"

A lot of them could not hold back from mumbling softly.

Quite a few people started to discuss among themselves. The main topic had been the masked man's attack making it seem far too easy. Compared to the rest of them who had used their full strengths, it was an astounding difference. It left some of them feeling a deep sense of worship and admiration.

"I know him! He's a disciple of the Corpse Pavillion. All the other disciples there all treat him with respect. He definitely holds a high position within the Corpse

Pavillion for the other disciples to treat him that way. His talent should be top-notch as well…!"

"I feel infuriated just comparing myself to him. This guy is far too strong. I feel like the treasures on the Divine Void Slope will all end up in his hands."

Even though the other disciples from the Corpse Pavillion knew that their fellow disciple was exceptionally talented, witnessing it with their own eyes still left them unable to hold back their excitement. All of the disciples from the Corpse Pavillion started to cheer loudly, "You are our champion! You'll definitely be able to get the treasures!"

"This competition is practically designed for our senior, the rest of you can't even compete with him!"

Those sharp words naturally incited a lot of anger in the other disciples. Yet, facing those disciples from the Corpse Pavillion, there was nothing they could counter with. After witnessing that person's skills, they knew they could not compare.

Furthermore, the Corpse Pavillion was a fourth grade clan that followed demonic ways. They killed without any regard for honor or morality. The disciples from the north were all very wary of the Corpse Pavillion.

The masked man disregarded the praise showered on him as well as the cheers from his fellow disciples. Instead, his gaze was once again fixed on Jack.

Jack naturally saw everything that happened earlier. However, his expression remained calm as if everything had been within his expectations, leaving no need for any hint of surprise.

The Corpse Pavillion had just made a big splash, and the Thousand Leaves Pavillion was obviously not willing to be left behind. The leader of the disciples from the Thousand Leaves, Graham Eliot, let out a light snort before attacking a Divine warrior as well.

He held a green-colored sword in hand. His white robes fluttered even with the lack of any wind. He stepped in a gust of wind, his sword aimed right at the Divine warrior.

The Divine warrior split into two bodies after a radiant glow from his blade as usual. The Divine warrior was incredibly quick and charged forward at Graham like a bullet.

Yet, it shocked everyone to find that the Divine warrior's speed could still not match up to Graham. All everyone could see was a figure that carried a faint green glow. In the blink of an eye, Graham appeared right in front of the Divine warrior, the purple blade suddenly clashed with the green blade.

The glow that Graham's sword had been emitting suddenly condensed into wave after wave of green leaves. The leaves were no ordinary leaves. Jack could clearly feel an explosive power condensed into each leaf.

After the leaves were condensed, they started to quickly revolve around the green blade. It was so fast that all they could see was a rotating green light. Everyone could only see Graham waving his sword, and the leaves formed a rapid vortex suddenly rushing toward the Divine warrior!

Everything happened so quickly that it was faster than taking a breath. In just a moment, the Divine warrior on the left had turned into purple energy.

Chapter 2237
Graham's expression remained the same after the attack and rotated strangely in arc mid-air. The leaves that had attacked the Divine warrior on the left earlier had yet to disappear. Instead, gathered around Graham's blade with his movements.

Graham was just as fast as before, and everything happened just like with the masked man earlier. Graham had been too quick, and before the Divine warrior on the right had the chance to absorb the power from the killed warrior on the left, Graham attacked again, killing the warrior in one blow.

It was done just as cleanly. However, compared to how casually the masked man had dealt with the Divine warrior, it seemed like Graham had expended a bit more energy. However, everyone present knew that the two of them had yet to show their true strength!

That was the horrifying part! To be able to enter the Secret Place for Resources meant that they were definitely below the late stage of the innate level. Other than Jack, everyone else present was at that level.

The competition should have been relatively fair since everyone was on the same level. The only advantage anyone would have was talent! The strong would be able to easily defeat the weak.

The Divine warriors were impossible to defeat for the weak, but for the strong, killing the Divine warriors was just a casual endeavor, nothing to worry about.

"You…seem to not feel anything at all." Brook suddenly said to Jack.

Jack was taken aback. Only then did he notice that the top disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavillion, Brook, was actually quite close to him. There was only one person between them. Brook had been observing Jack the whole time and felt that Jack had been far too calm that it seemed like he was just putting on a show.

Jack let out a soft chuckled, "Why should I feel anything? If they're strong, then they're strong.'

Brook's lips curled up into a smirk. "You really do surprise me."

Jack did not know how to answer that, so he merely kept his mouth shut. He did not plan on being friends with anyone. After all, in Jack's eyes, other than his family, other relationships were not reliable. So, he was not willing to get too friendly with anyone.

"It's my time to shine!" Griffin declared loudly.

'It's as if he's worried that no one will watch him!' Jack snorted lightly but anticipated to witness Griffin's skills as a chosen disciple.

Griffin was eager to show off in front of Jack. After seeing Jack's dismissive gaze, he narrowed his eyes at Jack with a vexed expression.

He swiped at his space ring, and a bone that had been specially refined appeared in his hand. His weapon surprised Jack since it was the first time Jack had ever seen someone wield such a weapon.

With an angry roar, he leaped forward at the Divine warrior like a leopard. His bone made cracking noises in his hand.

"Ha!"

The bone shot at the Divine warrior like a whip. With a bang, the purple aura was shattered by the bone. However, it did not manage to injure the Divine warrior. Clenching his teeth, Griffin let out another attack. The attack managed to pierce through the Divine warrior's body, but did not manage to kill him!

Chapter 2238
At that moment, the Divine warrior on the right rushed over with the purple blade as well. Being attacked from the right and the left, Griffin's face suddenly paled.

Many disciples fell for that attack. Unable to instantly kill one of the Divine warriors, the other one would quickly follow up with an attack. Being attacked from both sides meant that it was incredibly easy to get injured!

However, Griffin was still a chosen disciple after all. He had his own skills, so he shouted, "Misty Steps!" He avoided the attack from the Divine warrior on the right as if he was a catfish, and did not hesitate to attack the warrior on the left.

This time, he spared no mercy. The bone in his hand emitted a dark red glow as Griffin shouted furiously, "Die!"

The bone then pierced and stabbed the Divine warrior's body viciously. After a bang sounded, the Divine warrior turned into speckles of purple light.

That was the most intense moment. He could not allow the Divine warrior on the right to absorb the purple lights. Otherwise, the Divine warrior's power would increase dramatically. In the end, he would be faced with double the pressure, which was something he could not allow.

Bang bang bang!

Griffin continued to attack. Each wave of his bones crashed viciously on the Divine warrior on the right. The Divine warrior's body was beginning to look more and more transparent from the attacks. Just as the purple light from the left was about to merge with the Divine warrior on the right, the warrior could no longer hold on and exploded with a boom.

After seeing the Divine warrior on the right turn into purple spots of light as well, Griffin could not stop himself from panting loudly.

He had won! However, it was not that easy. For the sake of the challenges that would follow, Griffin did not unleash all his power, preserving his true energy. Yet, he had used about eighty to ninety percent of his powers to secure this victory.

It was something Griffin did not expect. Thinking about that, he could not help but look further into the Divine Void Slope. Looking upward, the slope was obscured by a thin layer of mist. The slope was not very steep, but due to the three hundred feet distance, it gave everyone the impression that it was piercing through the clouds.

Griffin gulped down a mouthful of saliva with a sour look on his face. He had thought that he would be able to gain many rewards initially, that he would have been able to show off his skills and go back to his clan with his head held up high.

Yet, it seemed like even the Divine warriors at the second stage were already so tough to defeat. Thinking about the challenges that awaited him, he subconsciously bit his lips, and an unwilling look appeared in his eyes.

At that moment, he seemed to have thought of something. He raised his head to look at Jack who was standing in the distance. All he saw was Jack looking to the front with the same calm look as if his battle earlier did not interest Jack at all.

That caused Griffin to be even more furious. The brat really knew how to piss him off. Jack had an uncaring expression as if the Divine warriors were easy to be dealt with.

Griffin panted as he slowly straightened his body. Focusing on Jack, his eyes were full of hatred.

At that moment, the others were already starting their attacks on the Divine warriors. Those who passed had started climbing up to the next thirty feet distance. Even Theo had completed his battle.

Chapter 2239
Brook, who was only one person away from Jack, managed to barely defeat the Divine warrior in front of him, completing the battle. Practically everyone who knew Jack shot Jack a curious gaze. Why was Jack not making a move? Was he waiting for lunch?

Griffin lightly snorted, “Could it be that you’re afraid, Jack? Or are you worried you’ll show your weakness in front of us? If that’s the case then stop pretending to be so calm. You were acting as if you could easily defeat the Divine warrior in front of you!

Jack narrowed his eyes, not even bothering to turn his head to look at Griffin. He could no longer be bothered to respond to all these challenges. Yet, he did not make his move merely because he was watching the other battles as well as making guesses in his mind.

His eyes twinkled as he looked at the Divine warrior In front of him. Since he did not attack, the Divine warrior assumed that Jack was still not prepared, so the Divine warrior did not make a move at Jack either.

In truth, the Divine warrior’s skills were merely at the level of someone who had just stepped into the middle stage of the innate level. Compared to most of the people there, they were not that strong. Furthermore, the Divine warriors were all using the same skills.

It was merely a red-level technique. It would not even be anything of interest in third-grade clans. Almost everyone present was the elites within their clans, so the Divine warriors should not be that hard to defeat.

Yet, forty percent of them had been eliminated! The only point of explanation was what that old voice had said before. Within the Divine Void Slope, martial skills that used true energy would be suppressed. With that in mind, Jack let out a sigh.

“What are you mulling over? I can’t believe you care so much about how you look.” The masked man’s sinister voice could once again be heard in Jack’s ears.

Jack furrowed his eyebrows. He glanced over at the masked man. He noticed that all of those who bore a grudge against him did not continue climbing the mountain. They all stopped for the moment, looking at him with mocking gazes.

They were all waiting for Jack to embarrass himself. How could Jack be oblivious to what they were thinking? He let out a small laugh and started to form seals with his hands. Dense aura began to gather in his palm.

Suddenly, fourteen Soul Swords formed. Jack divided those swords into two, splitting them into the right and left sides. The Divine warrior judged how prepared the person in front of him was by the energy fluctuations.

Jack’s Soul Swords naturally involved intense energy. Jack could hear a sword unsheathe. He did not need to look to know that the Divine warrior in front of him was finally attacking.

After a radiant purple glow, the Divine warrior split into two as usual, and rushed right at Jack! Jack did not rush and raised his Soul Swords up in the air.

As the Divine warrior rushed over, he pushed forward, forming eleven seals with his hands. The seals formed on the Soul Swords, and on his right and left hands were seven Soul Swords each, merging into two large swords.

Those two swords radiated gray energy as if it was an unclean smog. Jack pushed off, twisting the laws of space to the fullest, pulling away from his foe.

He retreated as he activated his Soul Sword, meeting the Divine warrior's attack. The crowd merely heard a crackling noise as the two Soul Swords clashed against the Divine warrior.

The purple glow was shattered, and in the blink of an eye, the giant Soul Sword pierced deeply into the Divine warrior. With two clicks, both the Divine warriors dispersed into thin air.

Chapter 2240
Everything happened in the blink of an eye. It was not any slower than Graham and the masked man. Those who saw Jack's battle all widened their eyes.

Jack had killed the Divine warriors far too quickly. It was far greater than the average disciple. To be able to compete against the two strongest people caused quite a few of them to widen their mouths in shock.

"This brat is the first one who arrived at the second stage! I recall that he had the fastest speed. He was the first one to escape the illusions. I can't believe that his skills actually match up to the determination in his heart!"

"That's not even the most important point. Look at his fighting prowess. He's merely at the middle stage of the innate level. He's actually stronger than all the late-stage innate level disciples here, and not just by a little bit!"

"Of everyone present, the masked disciple from the Corpse Pavillion and Graham, the leader of the Thousand Leaves Pavillion's students are the only ones who can really compete with him! Look at what this guy is wearing, he should be from the Dual Sovereign Pavillion. I can't believe that a disciple from a third-grade clan would possess such good skills!"

Griffin looked like he had swallowed a fly as he stared at Jack. His mouth was slightly agape, not willing to believe what he saw. Compared to how much difficulty he went through to win, Jack had an incredibly relaxed time.

Just a step back and one attack was all it took for Jack to defeat the Divine warrior that was definitely not weak in his eyes! He had witnessed Jack's battle against Oliver before.

During that time, Jack definitely did not show this level of skill which meant Jack had concealed his abilities! The more he thought about it, the more frustrated he got. He refused to admit that Jack was stronger than he was.

Yet, the reality was cruel. Comparing their two battles, he understood the difference between the two of them without anyone needing to tell him anything

“Why?! Why is this guy so strong? He’s only at the middle stage of the innate level!”

Nelson looked at Jack with interest and delight. He really wanted to give Jack a few words of praise, but he felt like he would be sabotaging Jack if he opened his mouth at that moment, so Nelson kept his mouth shut.

The person with the worst look on his face present was the masked man. However, the masked man was different from regular disciples. His eyes were incredibly vicious and could immediately tell that Jack’s battle was quite different from his.

The only thing the masked man could not pinpoint was the exact reason for that difference right at that moment. It had definitely ruined the masked man’s plans of ridiculing Jack after his battle to vent his frustrations.

He would then find a chance to deal with Jack in the future and dig out the secret behind how Jack escaped the Cliff of Sorrows, but now it seems like he may have to abort his plan.

Jack was not bothered with how the others looked at him. Jack even ignored the praise that Brook was showering him and merely walked toward the third stage.

As he made his way to the ninety feet area, he could not help but turn back to look at where he had climbed. Looking down, he saw that at least half of them had been left behind at the first and second stages.

He had thought that the eliminations would only truly begin at the third stage. Yet, over half of them had already been eliminated before the third stage. It was obvious how difficult the challenges were. Once everyone arrived at the area, the third challenge formally started

This time, they faced Divine warriors as well. However, the Divine warriors in front of them were already at the middle stage of the innate level! This time, no one dared to rush forward.

After all, from the two past experiences, they could see that whoever made the first move would end up suffering misfortune. No one knew what the third Divine warriors would end up doing.

Just as everyone’s imaginations ran wild, they suddenly heard the ringing of bells in their ears. The sound of the bells seemed to press directly at their souls, constantly assaulting their hearts.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2241-2250

Chapter 2241
“No! There’s something wrong with this sound. Why do I feel like it’s trying to kill me?”

“What is happening? Why can I still hear it even though I’ve covered my ears?!”

Every ring would cause their blood circulation to go erratic. Quite a few of them felt their blood surging with the sound of the bells, and some of them even started to vomit blood.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, circulating his true energy to block the attacks brought forward by the sound. The Divine warriors in front of him had yet to move and were merely looking at him with disdain.

Just as Jackie wondered what else there would be other than the bells, his vision flashed as he arrived at a special place.

The scene had changed too quickly for him to formulate any guesses. He wondered if he was in an illusion again, but discounted that possibility after some thought. If it were an illusion, the scene would not have changed so clearly.

Everything happened too abruptly while illusions were supposed to blur the lines between reality and illusion. Yet, Jackie could clearly feel that his mind was still in a clear state.

They were in a bloodied landscape. The entire space was covered in the color red. Even the crescent moon in the sky was red. The whole area was filled with the aura of death as if an apocalyptic battle had happened not too long ago.

An unknown number of people had died, which was why the place felt grim. Jackie could not help but take a deep breath, putting himself on full alert.

Since it was the third challenge, the sudden change In scenery was definitely not meant for sightseeing. Even though he could still not be completely certain I fit was reality or fantasy, what happened still needed to be dealt with.

Just as his thoughts began to wander, he heard a familiar wizened voice. It was the same voice that read out the rules at the Divine Void Slope.

“Find the Divine warriors in this world! Those who manage to will continue climbing the Divine Void Slope. If you fail, then you fail to pass!”

After those words, the surroundings once again entered a strange silence, and the wizened voice spoke no more. Jackie frowned. The key to passing was not to eliminate the Divine warrior but to find one in this strange and foreign world.

At that moment, Jackie was still confused. He did not know if he had truly arrived at that world, or if everything was merely happening in his mind. However, he was no longer interested in thinking about that.

Since the wizened voice had announced the rules, then he could no longer waste any more time. He sighed as he forced himself to calm down, walking forward step by step.

The blood-red world was a massive plain. Looking up, he could not see the end with just his eyes. The ground was completely barren. Other than a few withered trees, he could see nothing else.

The place seemed abandoned, a place that no longer saw the light of day. Jackie carefully advanced, staying on constant alert for any sudden threat.

In truth, he did not know where he needed to go either, because the world was truly far too large. Looking around, there was nothing other than withered trees, so where was he supposed to find the Divine warrior?

Time slowly ticked away. He completely lost track of time. His surroundings never seemed to change causing Jackie to get nervous, and his breath started to get anxious.

Right at that moment, a noise could be heard in the distance. Jackie suddenly stood up straight, forming seals in his hands, and fifteen Soul Swords formed in his palms!

Chapter 2242
At that intense anxious moment, the sound of howling winds filled his ears. Anyone would be able to figure out that something was going to happen.

Jackie gathered his spirits, focusing all his attention around him. The moment anything strange happened, he would react immediately.

The wind grew stronger, carrying the dust on the ground, obscuring Jackie’s sight. Jackie’s clothes were rustling in the wind.

The wind did not only obscure his sight, it also covered up any sounds around him. Jackie had suddenly plunged into a realm devoid of his senses. He let out a long breath, it would not do for that to continue!

Another gust of wind blew past, causing Jackie to lose his balance and his body nearly be blown away by the howling wind.

What was happening?! He did not know how long the wind would last, or how much danger it would bring. At that moment, his mind was in disarray.

Just as he was about to panic, the wind suddenly. Stopped. The sudden stop caused Jackie to lose his bearings for a moment.

Without the wind, the dust slowly settled, and everything returned to the quietness from before. Yet, once his vision cleared, Jackie could not stop his heart from pounding

Less than fifty meters away from him, stood a group of people lined up with their heads down. All of them were wearing armor and had messy hair. Their hands held onto their weapons tightly.

Jackie took a rough glance. There were roughly over a hundred people there.

With a crack that sounded like brittle bone, the group raised their lowered heads together. At that moment, Jackie completely saw what they looked like.

All of them had green skin, and their faces had bloodred runes etched on them. The red eyes were full of violence. After they raised their heads, they stared firmly at Jackie.

Killing intent and violence gathered, they were like a group of killing machines. They were actually zombies with no sentience!

A familiar figure stood fifty feet behind the zombies. There were spots of white light around the man as the man stood still, expressionless.

He was the Divine Warrior that Jackie was supposed to find. Jackie let out a long sigh, finally understanding how he needed to pass this stage. He needed to kill the group of zombies in front of him that numbered over a hundred to get close to the Divine warrior.

Before, Jackie's heart had been pounding, wondering how he could pass the stage. Now that it was clear, Jackie did not relax one bit. The pressure in his heart felt heavier and heavier as if a few large stones had been thrown on it.

It was too difficult!

Over a hundred zombies. Each of them was at the initial stage of the innate level. If they rushed over, he was not certain if he could get past. After all, the numbers were too great, it was practically a swarm of zombies!

When Jackie stood on the Divine Void Slope, he was never certain if he could obtain any reward. He told himself he would do his best. Even if he came back with no rewards, he would not give up halfway. If he was going to lose, he would lose in the end!

Yet, it was already so difficult facing the third Divine warrior. He could not imagine how difficult the challenges would end up being when he faced the fourth and fifth Divine warriors.

Chapter 2243
It was impossible to even think about. This was an impossible task to complete!

Those thoughts were not just in Jackie's mind. The same scene appeared in front of everyone who was challenging the third Divine warrior.

Each and everyone in the third stage was transported into their own isolated spaces. Each isolated space had the exact same scene. Over a hundred zombies stood in front of them, emitting the same vicious aura from their bodies!

Griffin looked at the zombies in front of him and subconsciously gulped. The sword he held tightly in his hand shook as he trembled slightly.

"How could this… Am I supposed to kill all these zombies? How…is this even possible?" Griffin was almost rendered speechless. Facing such a challenge, he could not hold back from voicing out his fears.

Griffin's brother, Howard, had only barely passed the second stage after using all his power and had even gotten injured because of it. Facing so many zombies, he had lost all the courage in his heart!

If they start to fight, he did not even know if he could hold the first wave back. It was too terrifying!

The zombies were all at the initial stage of the innate level. He ranked eighth among the disciples from the Twin Sovereign Pavillion. He was at the tail end of the masters gathered there, so just being able to reach the third stage was already quite a feat for him.

"I surrender!" Howard shouted loudly. He did not know if it would work or not, but he really did not have the courage to face so many zombies, it was too terrifying!

With a whoosh, a ray of light covered Howard's whole body after Howard admitted defeat. The next second, a familiar place appeared in front of him. He was back at his original spot in the Divine Void Slope.

An orange light hit his body, representing the fact that Howard was already eliminated. He had a sense of helplessness in his heart but felt quite relieved.

Thankfully, it was still possible to surrender. If it had not been possible even if he shouted his throat coarse, then he would have been faced with horrifying attacks. If his cries had been ignored, he might even suffer from heavy injuries or lost his life.

Howard was the first to be eliminated in the third stage. After that, a few figures were sent back as well. Those who were eliminated all had practically the same sentiments as Howard. All of them had some regret but also felt quite relieved.

Those who were eliminated in the first and second stages were all filled with curiosity when they saw the people from the third stage disappear before being sent back. All of them asked what they saw, and what the third stage involved. They also asked why those participants have suddenly been transported away and transported back.

After the information was spread, everyone knew that over a hundred zombies appeared on the third stage. Even though the ones sent back were all those without the courage to fight, no one dared to laugh at them. That was because no one knew if the hundred over zombies would have attacked all at once.

If that was the case, unless they were incredibly strong, it would be incredibly difficult to hold off the horde, and their lives would even be at stake.

One of the disciples from the Twin Sovereign Pavilion who had been eliminated in the second stage could not help but curse, “That… that’s far too difficult. It’s only the third stage. Getting to the peak requires us to face nine Divine warriors! It’s just the third stage, and it’s already so difficult!”

Someone immediately said, “That’s right! This is absolutely…unreasonable.”

Chapter 2244
“Surely they won’t eliminate everyone by the fourth stage, right? If that’s the case, wouldn’t all this have been for nothing?”

“Who knows… However, I think your thoughts are reasonable!”

The more they discussed, the more questions they had. Whether or not there would be anyone who can complete this challenge, whether or not anyone would be able to obtain the rewards at the top of the Divine Void Slope. Everyone felt that it was impossible with the difficulty that had been shown.

If that was the case, then it would have all been for naught.

Just as everyone was talking about it, the wizened voice could be heard again, “There are a total of a hundred and twenty zombies. Killing thirty means clearing one obstacle, which is equal to defeating one Divine warrior. Killing a hundred and twenty zombies is equal to defeating four Divine warriors.”

Saying that countless Divine warriors suddenly appeared on the Divine Void Slope. Those Divine warriors lined up on the Divine Void Slope in order. A Divine warrior appeared every thirty feet, in total there were seven Divine warriors in front of every person.

Four of the Divine warriors in front of every one were surrounded by a red light. Everyone was shocked to see the sight.

A rumble of discussions started.

“So that means if they kill a hundred and twenty zombies, it would be equal to defeating four Divine warriors. If that’s the case, it’s quite reasonable, there’s still a chance for someone to get the reward!”

“Why are the four Divine warriors covered in a red glow? What does it mean?” Someone asked in confusion

Some of the smarter folks began to explain, “Didn’t that voice say that killing thirty zombies is equal to clearing an obstacle? The obstacles refer to the Divine warriors in front of them. Every thirty zombies those challengers kill will probably cause one of the Divine warriors with a red glow to disappear. It’s the same as when we got past the Divine warriors and them disappearing afterward.”

With an explanation like that, everyone started to understand. It was already the third stage. Looking forward from the third stage, there were naturally seven more Divine warriors.

There were a hundred and eighty people who entered the Secret Place for Resources. There were less than ninety people who advanced to the third stage. The first two stages had gotten rid of over half of the participants, so it was obvious how difficult the challenges were

The third stage was another large obstacle. Only a few would be able to pass.

There were still some who did not understand the rules, and started to ask, “If that’s the case, wouldn’t killing thirty zombies mean you’ve passed? After all, killing thirty zombies represents killing a Divine warrior.”

“Of course not!” Howard loudly denied the man’s question.

Possibly because he was embarrassed for surrendering, Howard would not allow anyone to claim that it was so easy to pass after understanding the rules.

Howard explained somewhat emotionally, “The old voice said earlier, the key to passing the challenge lies in finding the Divine warrior in the world. Finding it means they would need to clear all obstacles in front of them and arrive in front of the Divine warrior. That means that passing this stage requires killing a hundred and twenty zombies.”

Howard’s words were incredibly firm, adamant in making sure that everyone understood.

When he said those words, quite a few people fell silent. Everyone seemed to mumble in their hearts that this stage was far too hard. Killing a hundred and twenty zombies in one go. Just surviving them would have been an incredible feat, let alone killing them.

After all, each of those zombies was already at the initial stage of the innate level. One of those was still fine, but a hundred and twenty of them caused them to shiver just thinking about it.

Those who had been transported into the blood-red world had heard the old voice as well. They were all smart people. Just thinking about it for a moment led them all to understand the key to passing.

Chapter 2245
Jackie narrowed his eyes. If he killed the hundred and twenty zombies in front of him, it would be the same as clearing four Divine warriors in one go. Finishing this challenge would lead him straight past the sixth Divine warrior!

It was a simple enough thought, but it felt like the difficulty had just increased greatly!

The hundred and twenty zombies had started to pull out their own weapons. They seemed to have been awakened by a system, and all of them had their own expressions and goals. They clenched their teeth as if they wanted to rip Jackie apart.

“A hundred and twenty of them attacking together?” Jackie’s heart pounded.

He had thought that they would have at least gotten a chance to rest in between even if they were supposed to kill a hundred and twenty zombies. He had thought that they would have at least advanced In waves. Yet, with how unified their actions were, it seemed like they would charge at him together.

Even Jackie would have some trouble facing the attacks from so many zombies. However, he no longer had the will to think too much about it.

“Die!”

A hundred and twenty zombies all said at the same time.

The next second, all of the zombies charged right at Jackie, looking like they were hungry for a taste of flesh.

Jackie had a cold look on his face as he pulled out a jetblack sword from Mustard Seed.

With a stab, the blade pierced into the chest of a zombie. With the power to pierce through the void, it easily destroyed the weak soul energy within the zombie after piercing through its skin.

With another slash, another zombie’s arm was slashed apart by Jackie. The spiritual power surged into the zombie’s inner body and killed it off.

Destroying the Void had always been a spiritual attack, so it naturally had an advantage against spirits.

Zombies might be corpses, but zombies still required a certain amount of aura to be controlled.

A zombie's specialty was its strong defense. However, once their outer defenses were pierced through, just a slight gap was enough to completely destroy the aura within the zombie!

Without the control of aura, the zombies were just like toys without any batteries!

Jackie was incredibly cute. He did not bother completely destroying the zombies. As long as he pierced through their defenses, Destroying the Void would invade the inner body of the zombies, destroying the aura which was equal to killing off a zombie!

Bang bang bang!

Another three zombies had been dealt with by Destroying the Void after piercing through their defenses!

It was actually much easier than Jackie had thought. In just a moment, Jackie had killed off ten zombies. That was even after he deliberately held back his speed.

Despite letting out a sigh of relief, Jackie was still full of suspicions. Why did Jackie always feel like the challenges were all practically designed for him to pass with ease?

Practically all of the challenges were tailored for cultivators that focused on aura. Facing the first Divine warrior, spiritual cultivators naturally held the advantage. After all, spiritual martial arts naturally needed a strong aura.

Chapter 2246
Anyone who used long-ranged attacks would have an absolute advantage during the second stage, and soul attribute martial arts had the most long-ranged attacks.

Facing the hundred and twenty zombies, in the same way, those who trained in soul attribute techniques would only need minimal effort to deal with those zombies.

The more Jackie fought, the more he felt climbing the Divine Void Slope was practically a piece of cake for those who used the soul attribute.

However, for those who trained in other ways, it was full of difficulty. Each advancement was filled with burdens. Thinking about that, Jackie could not help but narrow his eyes.

The sword in his hand constantly danced. Those red eyed zombies constantly charged at Jackie. One by one, they fell in front of Jackie, even though they had charged together and had the absolute advantage in numbers.

The zombies did not use any techniques and merely used their true energy to attack at close distances, Unless their attacks fell on Jackie, there would not be that much damage

Jackie twisted the laws of space, attacking the zombies as he avoided their attacks. He would then use Destroying the Void to render the zombies useless!

Killing the zombies was quite easy! Compared to how relaxed Jackie was, the others were having trouble killing off the zombies.

“Haha, come, I’ll kill all of you!” Jackie’s laugh carried a hint of craziness.

“What, what’s up with that guy? Why is it so easy for him?”

The others were filled with admiration in their hearts. They were already at their wit’s end trying to handle the zombies.

With so many zombies rushing toward them, killing a zombie relied on completely incapacitating the zombies. They did not have any soul attribute martial arts or skills.

Unable to destroy the aura in the zombies, they were forced to destroy the zombie’s bodies. However, the zombies had incredibly strong defenses, so destroying a body required a lot of power!

Griffin spat out a mouthful of blood. He held back the attacks from the zombies as he put his life on the line, stabbing the bone in his hand into the bodies!

Griffin felt a sense of hopelessness. Even though his bone managed to pierce into the zombies, it did not incapacitate the zombies.

Those zombies did not feel pain! Only by destroying their hands or slicing their bodies in half would the zombies lose all ability to fight.

Killing one or two was fine, but facing so many of them, Griffin had an incredibly difficult time. About five minutes had passed, but Griffin had only dealt with two zombies!

With a crack, he snapped a handoff a zombie. However, Griffin had been focused on attacking, neglecting his defense. He ended up suffering a claw to the back from another zombie. After a wail of agony from Griffin, the zombie left a claw mark on Griffin’s back! Red blood stained Griffin’s clothes.

Griffin’s face reddened in pain as he spat out a mouthful of blood!

Bang!

Another zombie attacked Griffin’s stomach. Griffin was sent flying.

Like a kite that had lost its string, Griffin flew in mid -air before he slammed onto the ground. At that moment, his vision flashed as the space around him changed. When he reopened his eyes, he had already been sent back to the Divine Void Slope. “Griffin! Are you alright?”

Chapter 2247
Griffin could hear Howard’s concerned voice.

Griffin’s internal organs were a mess at that moment, having suffered internal injuries. There was a burning pain in his back. His brother’s voice had pulled him back from his muddled thoughts, and he barely managed to force himself to sit up.

He saw Howard a few dozen feet away from him, looking at him with concern and widened eyes. The people around him were also shooting him with uncertain looks.

Just as he was about to say something, a red glow landed on his body, indicating that Griffin had failed.

He had actually lost and failed miserably at the third stage. He had only managed to kill two zombies before ending up in this state! His heart refused to accept it!

Everyone on the Divine Void Slope was actually in their own isolated spaces. Even though they could see where each other was and could converse, they were still unable to interact or jump out of their own spaces.

All Howard could do despite Griffin collapsing from internal injuries was to ask about him. Howard was unable to run over to help his brother up.

Griffin let out a long sigh, “This stage was far too difficult. A hundred and twenty zombies rushing at us! There’s no way to win!”

Even though Griffin was very confident with his own skills, the difficulty of that stage had far exceeded Griffin’s imagination. All he could do was complain about it!

Griffin was not the first to fail. Other than those who had surrendered before the battle even started, there were also quite a few who had fallen to the hordes of zombies in the battle. After being determined to have failed, they were all sent back to the Divine Void Slope.

Every single one of them had suffered varying degrees of injuries. Some of them were the strongest chosen disciples of their clan. Even the chosen disciple of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had failed.

They started to discuss among themselves. “Will a single person even pass this stage? A hundred and twenty zombies are all at the initial stage of the innate level. Killing those zombies requires them to destroy their bodies. The zombies specialize in defense in the first place, it’s insanely difficult!

“Other than the strongest disciples from a clan, there’s no way to pass!”

“That’s right! Even though passing this stage eliminates four Divine warriors, there will still be one to follow! This stage is far too hard, so what about the stages in the future?”

“I really don’t know if anyone will be able to obtain the treasures at the peak of the Divine Void Slope!”

Thinking about that, they could not stop themselves from feeling defeated. Griffin slowly stood up, looking over at where Jackie was supposed to be. Jackie was not there, which meant that Jackie was still fighting in that world.

The masked man frowned. The machete in his hand was like a scythe wielded by the grim reaper as it constantly slashed at the zombies. The power of lightning condensed on the machete, exploding inside the bodies of the zombies.

After a few explosions, several zombies were blown apart, their organs littered on the ground. The masked man was incredibly quick.

His martial arts were already at the Earth level, which proved more than enough to eliminate those zombies.

However, the zombies were incredibly resilient. Killing them needed him to exert his powers, injecting lightning into the bodies before detonating It inside the zombies.

Even though the true energy in his body was constantly being depleted, it was still all under his control! His attacks were incredibly quick, and the lightning condensed on his machete, constantly injecting itself into the zombies.

After exploding inside the zombie’s bodies, the lightning blew the corpses into pieces!

Even in the blood-red world where Graham was at, he still showed off his impressive skills, cutting down the zombies in front of him one by one.

He was quick as always! His sword constantly pierced the zombies! The battle in the blood-red world continued, but the Divine Void Slope was very noisy as well.

Chapter 2248
“Wow! Amazing! That masked guy from the Corpse Pavilion is really something else. It’s not even been that long, and he’s already killed thirty zombies. The fourth Divine warrior in front of him has already disappeared.”

“It’s really impossible to compare ourselves with him. Before the battle started, some of us had already surrendered. In such a short time, so many people have been defeated and sent back. He thought no one would be able to pass, but now it looks like he underestimated those masters.”

The masked man's original spot was similar to everyone else. Every thirty feet, there was a Divine warrior standing there with a weapon in hand. They were now facing the third Divine warrior and looking up, there were seven warriors. Of the seven, four were shrouded in a red glow.

The reason why everyone exclaimed in surprise was that the closest Divine warrior to him had suddenly disappeared. That meant that he had eliminated an obstacle, and killed thirty zombies.

Theo had been eliminated at around the same time as Griffin. Yet, the masked man actually managed to kill thirty zombies in such a short time while Theo had to surrender to his heavy injuries. The gap between them was immense.

His reddened eyes stared at the spot where the Divine warrior had disappeared. He pursed his lips tightly as his heart filled with jealousy and acceptance. He felt extremely horrible at that moment.

He knew that, as the best disciple from the Corpse Pavillion, the masked man would definitely have immense potential and skill. Yet, he never thought that he was not that far off from the masked man. Even though he could not defeat the masked man, he had assumed that their skills were close.

However, the reality that was displayed in front of him at that moment had proven otherwise. It showed him how naïve his thoughts were before, and showed him the gulf in their skills.

Griffin did not have a pretty look on his face either. Almost everyone present had a certain amount of confidence and pride in their skills, but that confidence and pride had been dealt a heavy blow.

As a chosen disciple, Griffin had thought that he had immense talent. Even though he was not as strong as the best-chosen disciple, it was not that big a difference. However, it was obvious that he was merely too ignorant.

Everyone who used to be confident in their abilities had suddenly suffered varying degrees of trauma.

"Look at Graham's side! The Divine warrior in front of him has disappeared as well. Graham has also killed thirty zombies!" One of the disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion started cheering loudly as well.

As fourth-grade clans, both the Corpse Pavilion and the Thousand Leaves Pavilion were about equal in power. With the masked man performing so well, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was naturally not willing to fall behind

After the person's realization, the other disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion cheered as well.

"Graham is so strong. He's not even in the first place among the chosen disciples of our clan, but he's only a little slower than that masked man!"

When the disciples of the Corpse Pavilion heard that, their expressions changed. Why were those Thousand Leaves Pavilion disciples not content to just praise their own fellow disciple, but tried to mock the Corpse Pavilion as well?

It was obvious that the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was claiming that, despite the fact that Graham was not the strongest among them, he had only narrowly lost out in time to the strongest disciple from the Corpse Pavilion

Chapter 2249
The most loyal follower of the masked man, Zamian, was sent into a rage after hearing those words. His head snapped over, glaring furiously at the disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavillion.

“What does Graham even amount to? How could you even talk about him in the same sentence as our senior? The only reason the timing was close is just that he isn’t in a hurry to kill those zombies. No matter what, he enjoys observing the situation! He wasted some time on that, which is how Graham managed to catch up!”

Those words felt a bit like an incredibly forced explanation. Yet, Zamian seemed incredibly earnest as he said them. It was as if he would kill anyone who dared to retort.

The disciples from the third grade clans were naturally too afraid to get involved at that moment, However, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was a fourth -grade clan, equal to the Corpse Pavilion in every way. Naturally, they refused to acknowledge Zamian’s insults.

“Can you just listen to your own words?! Don’t you think it’s a joke? The disciples of the Corpse Pavilion aren’t all that strong, but their ability to spout nonsense is on another level! You haven’t even seen how your senior is fighting, but you talk as if you’re looking at him!

“You dared to blindly claim that your senior likes to waste time observing the situation? Is this the proper occasion to waste time? Observing the situation needs the proper place for it. Being surrounded by so many zombies, is he waiting for his true energy to deplete and for himself to be injured by not clearing them up quickly?”

Those words were reasonable. The other disciples from the Thousands Leaves Pavilion immediately voiced their support. The two clans that did not have any conflict with one another were suddenly stuck in a tense relationship. If they were not restricted by their isolated spaces, they might have started a fight. Bloodshed would have been unavoidable.

Griffin and the others did not pay too much attention to the quarrel between the two sects. Instead, he was fixated on Jackie’s spot.

The spot was completely quiet. No one had been sent out. Griffin could not help but say, “How is this guy not thrown out yet?”

With a slash, a zombie's claws reached out for Jackie's arm. The sharp claws ripped his shirt, almost penetrating Jackie's skin.

"Strange, how strange! I can clearly feel…the flow of energy! I just need a little bit of time to figure this out!" Jackie had a black sword in hand as he constantly slashed at the horde of zombies.

There were already twenty-five zombies on the ground. That was the result Jackie had gotten while deliberately slowing down his attacks.

Jackie did not do it for no reason, nor was he planning on slowly getting rid of those zombies. It was just that he could clearly feel the energy flowing out of the corpses before they were absorbed by something, heading somewhere else.

Before, on the Divine Void Slope, they had fought the second Divine warrior. The Divine warrior had split into two, and after killing the first one, the dead Divine warrior would form into purple energy that would flow into the other Divine warrior.

The transferring of energy in that manner was a natural phenomenon, and Jackie would normally not care about it.

However, Jackie could clearly feel something amiss about the movements of the energies from the zombies. That was because Jackie's soul thirsted for power after feeling it.

It was as if the energy that flowed out of the zombies was not energy, but food for Jackie's soul, and eating It would be very nutritious! That feeling was far too deep, so much so that Jackie could not dismiss it.

Chapter 2250
It was a deep thirst as if his soul had smelled an alluring fragrance. This caused Jackie to be curious with a deep desire to figure it out!

He let out a deep breath as seals formed on his left hand. As he held back the zombie onslaught, he condensed a Soul Sword on his left hand!

Even though he had killed off twenty-five zombies, it was still an incredibly small amount from the hundred and twenty of them. It had only alleviated the pressure mildly. Before, Jackie retreated as he fought, and his skills were able to handle it.

Yet, now that he was gathering a Soul Sword as he fought, it got a bit more difficult. Seemingly sensing Jackie's state at the moment, the waves of zombies suddenly rushed at him in a fervor.

Roar!

They let out an animalistic roar as those red eyes stared right at Jackie's throat. They bared those sharp teeth as if planning on biting Jackie with them.

In just a moment of distraction, fifty to sixty zombies had surrounded Jackie. A group of them lunged over with their claws. The nails that were the length of half a finger were incredibly sharp, and they were coming at Jackie from all directions!

Jackie frowned. The aura of blood and decay had captured him! The claws and teeth were already right in front of him. The surrounding zombies did not allow him any avenue of escape.

Even if Jackie blocked with all his might, there was no way for him to completely retreat. The sharp sword In his hand had a limited range of attack, and there was no way for him to cover every angle.

The situation he was in was something one would be able to deal with easily. Even the masked man would not be able to, but the masked man would not have allowed himself to be surrounded.

Being trapped like that was down to Jackie's inexperience. His mind was racing as he condensed the Soul Sword, planning on a large-scale attack. The distraction was what caused him to be surrounded by the zombies!

Roar!

The angry roars never stopped. The zombies seemed to have expected that Jackie would be ripped apart by them, and started to cry out as they lunged over without a care.

His clothes were ripped apart by the claws, and his skin was already bare. He could even feel the cold aura on those claws.

Jackie clenched his teeth, not using his sword to defend himself. Instead, he kept the sword and started to summon his true energy, moving the laws of space that he could.

With a woosh, Jackie disappeared from the spot. He appeared thirty feet away. His face was incredibly red at the moment like a cooked lobster. His forehead was full of sweat as he gulped subconsciously.

A piercing pain could be felt on his meridians, a sure sign of overusing his true energy. For him to use the laws of space to this degree, it would have needed a lot of true energy. Half his true energy had been used in one go.

However, it had still dealt with the immediate danger. If it had been anyone else in his situation, they would have been injured and eliminated!

Their speed and skill would not have mattered. The laws of space were different from speed martial arts. Transferring space meant directly shifting from one space to the other, rendering the enemy's attack useless.

However, if one only had speed, they would still be injured if they were too slow!

The horde of zombies frantically charged toward where Jackie was, but due to Jackie dodging through the laws of space, the attacks were all useless!

For a moment, the zombies did not react at all. Jackie shouted loudly, “This is a good chance!”

With a step forward, he launched himself forward like an arrow, rushing over with sword in hand. At that moment, fifteen Soul Swords had already merged into the long black sword in Jackie’s hand. The black sword radiated a black glow and looked like a black hole that could swallow everything.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2251-2260

Chapter 2251
Slashing away with his sword, performing the Destroying the Void to its full extent, hitting the group of corpse puppets with no reservation,

Five or six corpse puppets were slashed with multiple wounds one after another. These wounds were not deep but covered a wide area, this was the effect Jackie wanted.

The corpse puppets have a strong defense, and if anyone else was standing there, the wound would not cause any substantial damage or render them incapacitated

However, Jackie was different, he did not rely on destroying their bodies to kill the corpse puppets.

“Roar!”

The wounded corpse puppets, like a leopard that had been completely enraged, turned their heads violently and looked at Jackie who had suddenly appeared behind them.

They bared their razor-sharp teeth at Jackie then turned their bodies and rushed toward him, but at that moment, the corpse puppets suddenly seemed to be struck in the brain by a thunderbolt and could not move at all.

Their body swayed twice, as if it had lost all energy, and fell to the ground with a thud, losing its life.

The wounds on their bodies emitted gray-black smoke and made a sound like raw meat was being roasted, but there was nothing unusual about the wounds. It was not the body that burned and corroded, but the soul that controlled all their movements.

The moment these corpse puppets fell to the ground, Jackie’s eyes looked straight at them, as if his eyes were on the body of these corpse puppets.

As expected, there was a special energy in the corpse puppets, and when they died, a pale grey, smoke-like energy broke free from them. As if controlled by something, this energy was drawn away from the body of the corpse puppets in a flash and suddenly surged toward the west.

Jackie turned his head abruptly to see a familiar figure, still standing straight, directly west of his location. It was the Divine warrior!

The center where the gray energy converged was the body of the Divine Warrior. So, was it absorbed by him?

To verify if he was wrong, Jackie pointed his toes and once again rushed toward the group of corpse puppets, the black longsword in his hand would not swing, a sword light slashed at the group of corpse puppets, instantly at least ten corpse puppets were pierced through their bodies.

Fifteen soul swords converged to form a force that instantly broke through their outer skin and went straight into their inner souls, like a meat grinder, the only trace of soul left in the corpse puppet's body was instantly churned to pieces by the Destroying the Void.

Ten more corpse puppets fell to the ground, and the gray energy was once again drawn from the bodies of the corpse puppets. The straightened body of the Divine Warrior absorbed all these energies into its body like an ocean that could not be filled.

Jackie narrowed his eyes, he craved for that power, but it was being absorbed cleanly by the Divine Warrior, which made him a little reluctant.

While the fights in the blood world were almost endless, outside, apart from the chatter, there was nothing but conflict between the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and Corpse Pavilion.

"How long has it been?" Griffin Olsen rushed to Howard Olsen and said anxiously.

Howard Olsen calculated the time in his mind. "I guess it takes time for a cup of tea, what's wrong?"

Griffin Olsen felt a stone weighing down on his heart and took several deep breaths but instead made him feel even more uncomfortable.

'That guy is still not coming out? How long was he going to stay there?' When he thought of this, his eyes turned a little red.

Riv Jones glanced at Griffin Olsen and said with a light laugh, "What's wrong? What else could your brother do? Probably seeing that Jackie hadn't come out yet, he feels disconcerted."

Riv and Griffin did not get along well with each other. Although Riv is the number one internal disciple, Griffin as a chosen disciple, still belittled him, but this was not a problem for Riv.

Griffin likes to talk nonsense, and every time he meets Riv, he says something sarcastic in a sinister way.

Chapter 2252
Riv did not have the opportunity before, but now that Griffin looked like this, Riv

was relieved and could not help but to say sarcastic things back as Griffin did previously.

In turn, Griffin was so angry that his face turned red, and he fiercely turned his head to glare at Riv. His eyes were about to pop out of his eye socket, “What do you mean, Riv Jones! What is convincing or not! How do you know what my thoughts are?”

Riv snorted lightly, “Who doesn’t know what’s in your mind, those eyes of yours haven’t left the spot where Jackie was since you were transferred back from the blood world, you must especially want to see Jackie after he was severely injured and gets transferred back to the Divine Void Slope.”

Griffin raised his chin and said, “What does it matter to you whether I want to see it or not, this is not what anyone wants, and it will definitely happen. This guy has not come out because he is very fast and good at escaping.”

Jackie had an extraordinary performance on the gathering spot for roll call. In the beginning, Jackie did not fight Oliver Sayer directly but kept using his speed to avoid Oliver’s attack. The scene was clearly remembered by all present.

After Riv heard this, he had yet to open his mouth when Theo Garfield jumped ahead and said, “You mean Jackie’s escape speed was extremely fast?”

When he said that, there was suppressed excitement In his tone as if he had found the answer he had been looking for. Griffin nodded, he was not making this up as a reason to discredit Jackie.

Jackie was indeed exceptional in his escape skills, although he had never been moved to the Divine Void Slope, leaving Griffin more than a little unconvinced and resigned in his heart. However, he felt that Jackie was able to stay inside for a teatime, all thanks to his faster-than-average escape speed.

Theo let out a long breath of relief after seeing Griffin nod his head. He suddenly sneered, “I thought the guy was so outstanding in terms of strength and talent, but it turns out he’s just a guy who only knows how to run away.”

How could Riv not understand Theo’s state of mind today? Of course, he did not want to see Jackie show his extraordinary strength and talent. After all, the relationship between the two was already like water and fire. Seeing the enemy strong was like putting his heart on a blazing fire and steaming it.

Riv scorned Theo and said, “Theo, you feel relieved, but don’t you forget that at the second stage, Jackie didn’t use much strength at all to solve the second Divine warrior.”

These words were like a pot of cold water splashed on Theo’s head, and his face instantly turned ugly.

Griffin gazed coldly at Riv. “Just now when you shut up, I thought you were a man who suited the actions to the situation, but now it seems that you are equally

over your head, what does Jackie's strong strength have to do with you? You keep speaking up for him like that, is he going to think well of you?"

Riv cocked his head and replied indifferently, "It's true that it doesn't matter much to me, but I'm happy seeing you suffer."

The moment he said this, the grudge between them became obvious. Griffin was so angry that his face turned purple, if there was not a space restriction, he would have rushed over and fought Riv.

When the other disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion saw the situation, they hurriedly spoke up to calm the two of them down while Nelson Lester was still fighting within the blood world.

In his absence as the leader, he could only let others step in to calm these disputes. Theo was most reluctant to have anyone praise Jackie, and the scene he would love to see was Jackie being spat out and stepped on by a thousand people fiercely.

Chapter 2253
Theo already saw Riv as his enemy. "Jackie did kill the Divine warrior before, but what does that prove? That move might have been the energy that Jackie had gained by overdrawing his own life energy to show off!

"It is well known that in this world, there are secret methods to gaining great energy by overdrawing one's life!"

After hearing this, Griffin nodded strongly and deliberately raised his voice so that all those around him could hear it clearly.

"Theo Brother is right, that guy is only in the intermediate stage of innate level. Among all the people here, he is the only one in the intermediate stage of innate level, yet the strength he had displayed exceeds more than fifty percent of the people here! What gave him such talent, he's just an elder disciple! He must have used a life-draining secret method, to be recognized and praised by others!

This kind of slanderous words can be casually said by Griffin, and he said it with justification as if they were true. After listening to that, the people around him also felt what he said was very reasonable.

Jackie was just in the intermediate stage of innate level. Among the more than 180 people here, only Jackie was in that stage, and all the others, without exception, had the cultivation of the final stage of innate level.

However, when facing the second divine warrior, he had displayed a strength that surprised everyone, overpowered fifty percent of the people here, which had people wondering if Jackie had used some secret technique?

Otherwise, Jackie possessed superb talent. Griffin said that Jackie was only an elder disciple among the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, not even a chosen disciple, and

that was enough proof that Jackie did not have the talent to become a Chosen disciple!

“It seems that this man really doesn’t care about anything for the sake of his own reputation, he even used a secret technique that drains his life energy to boost his attack energy, I think he got his head caught in a big iron gate!”

“Brother is right, people would not normally do this self-destructive thing. Things like extending one’s life energy or overdrawing one’s body are secret techniques that can’t be used easily at the cost of draining the future. The guy has no qualms about being able to gain a reputation in front of everyone! This really opened my eyes.”

After these words, the crowd already saw Jackie as a guy who was in over his head. Riv narrowed his eyes, although he did not get to know Jackie well before, he did not want to hear the disciples of other sects, vilifying the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

He is not the type of person like Griffin who for the sake of his own interests, has no regard for the face o f the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

He coughed softly and said loudly, “If he really used the secret technique of overdrawing his life energy and future, then there is no way he could have stayed in the blood world for so long.”

“Once you have used this secret technique, you must finish the battle in a short time, and everyone knows that this secret technique has a time effect, it simply cannot sustain him until now!”

The explanation from Riv had just made the crowd rethink when a few words from Griffin brought them back to their initial thoughts.

“Didn’t I say it all before? This man is best at escaping, and since he is so prideful, he must have gone all out to stall for time to get attention from the public!”

Chapter 2254
Griffin now had decided that the reason why Jackie could last so long in the blood world was that he was good at escaping and dodging attacks, rather than because of how strong he was.

This explanation was acceptable to the crowd mainly because it was influenced by Jackie’s cultivation and status.

Many people who were far above Jackie in both cultivation and status were very reluctant to believe that someone like Jackie would be stronger than them and could stay within the blood world for longer than they had!

The words from Griffin seemed to have resonated with the crowd.

“This brother is right. If a person is good at running away, they indeed can stay in that world for a long time, but this kind of behavior, apart from being able to hang around in that world for a longer period of time, does not have any other effect.”

“Right, it’s just an act of appearing to be better than others, a completely futile act, others are in the blood world, wholeheartedly dealing with corpse puppets, but he’s in the world, full of himself trying to make a reputation in front of everyone.”

Many people were not impressed with Jackie and had no grudges against him, so they did not speak as bluntly as Jackie’s enemies.

However, the meaning of these words had politely expressed that they greatly despised what Jackie had done in the blood world, but it was just to fight for that reputation that he had done such a meaningless act.

What was the point of staying in that world for a long time? None of the divine warriors in front of us had disappeared, so what was the point of running even fast enough?

“Look, you guys! The second divine warrior in front of the disciple of the Corpse Pavilion has also disappeared!”

One hundred and twenty corpse puppets, each thirty representing a divine warrior, the disappearance of two divine warriors proves that the masked man in the blood world had killed at least sixty corpse puppets!

The crowd was very surprised after seeing this scene. Many people looked with envious admiration at the position where the masked man had been before.

He used his own strength to prove that the disciple of the Corpse Pavilion was indeed overpoweringly talented! The more prominent the masked man’s performance was, the more the others’ shortcomings were set off.

Some people said a few more sarcastic words, it’s the same as staying in the blood world for such a long time, but some people were able to kill 60 corpse puppets, others who gained an advantage by trickery did not even kill 30 corpse puppets. How long do you think that guy, Jackie, is going to run around in the blood world?” After saying this, he could not hold back a snort of laughter, his laughter filled with sarcasm and mockery.

After hearing this, Theo Garfield could not help but laugh and hurriedly said aloud, “Perhaps in order to prove his strength, even the disciple of the Corpse Pavilion ran out after completing the mission, he didn’t even bother to come out of it.”

“It’s the only way to prove that he’s been able to stay in the blood world long enough to be stronger and more talented than us.”

That last word was full of insincerity, clearly a rhetorical statement, but it also aroused indignation within the crowd.

Although Theo's words were full of animosity, one had to say that this matter was very likely to happen. If that man was good at escaping, he was certainly doing everything he could to stay in that world for a longer period.

Chapter 2255
After Theo said that, many people whispered, and some deliberately not lowering their voices, as if to be heard by the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

"A disciple at the intermediate stage of innate level, even if he is strong, how strong can he be? Using such tactics to prove his talent, he thinks everyone else is stupid! Does the Dual Sovereign Pavilion have no one else? How dare they let a disciple who is at the intermediate stage of innate level come into the Secret Place for Resources to die?"

After hearing these sarcastic words, the faces of the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, except for Griffin, reddened, as if someone had slapped them hard in their face twice.

Some of the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion then began to resent Jackie. It was all because this brat loved to show off and dragged them along with him to be mocked.

Griffin, however, was smiling and was in two very different states from the other disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. He was so happy to hear others humiliate Jackie that he could not applaud those people and make them say more.

Anyway, in Griffin's mind, the reputation of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was nothing, and when he saw that the crowd did not go on, Griffin wanted to add a few more words to the story.

Just then, someone from the surroundings suddenly said, "You guys, look at where Jackie was before! The divine warrior in front of him has also disappeared!"

These words were like a bolt from the blue, exploding in Griffin's ears as he jerked his head up to look at the spot where Jackie had been standing before.

Just as the man had said, the divine warrior, who should have been standing straight with the weapons in hand, had disappeared at some point.

This scene was quickly seen by everyone. Those who had just mocked Jackie and only knew how to run away, instantly felt like a hundred big flies were stuffed in their mouths, unable to say a word.

Theo looked like someone had choked his throat, his face swelling red with breathlessness, unable to believe what he was seeing.

Riv laughed and said, “It seems that it was brother Jackie who killed thirty corpse puppets, and I don’t know who just said that brother Jackie only knew how to escape in the blood world. Those who said that brother Jackie only knew how to pretend, did they kill thirty corpse puppets just like brother Jackie?!”

These few words were like a sounding slap in the faces of those who had just mocked Jackie, many of them had never even entered the blood world.

Although the others had entered the blood world, it was impossible to kill the thirty corpse puppets. Even though the cultivation level of those corpse puppets was only at the initial stage of innate level and did not know how to use martial arts.

However, the number of one hundred and twenty Corpse puppets was too many, and such a large number was completely beyond the tolerance of these people.

During the battle, not only did they have to kill the corpse puppets in front of them, but they also had to prevent the rest of the corpse puppets from striking at them, and very few of them lasted under the swarm attack.

In their eyes, to kill thirty corpse puppets was not something ordinary people could do. If someone of extraordinary strength had killed thirty corpse puppets, they could accept it.

However, a disciple at the intermediate stage of innate level, who was not even a chosen disciple, had done it. He was obviously stronger than all of them there, which undoubtedly hit their self-confidence.

Riv’s voice was like a pervasive sharp sword, viciously piercing the hearts of Theo and Griffin.

Chapter 2256
“Brother Griffin is right, Brother Jackie is good at escaping, but I just have a question in my mind, can brother Griffin answer it for me? Is killing the corpse puppet something that can be done if you can only run fast?”

The question was asked sharply, or maybe it was not a question at all, and everyone here knew the answer to how it could be possible to kill corpse puppets by just running away.

Everyone knows that the corpse puppet’s defense is amazing. To break the corpse puppet’s defense and to make the corpse puppet lose its fighting ability, one must have superb attacking energy, which most of the people there cannot do.

Even if someone managed to do it, it would be impossible to do so under the swarm attack of the corpse puppets! Griffin’s expression was no different from eating shit, these words from Riv were to accuse him.

After all, just now Griffin had rambled on, describing Jackie badly and thinking that the only reason he had not come out was that he was good at escaping.

Griffin was breathing heavily, obviously, he could not answer this question from Riv, no matter what he said it would be self-defeating, Griffin hated Jackie even more in his heart.

He found that as long as he was against Jackie, no matter what, he would be the one to lose out. Théo was also expressionless and did not say anything.

The masked man in the blood world, holding a machete, kept slashing at the corpse puppets that stretched out their sharp claws toward him. Lightning flashed above the machete as if the machete had been soaked in thunder clouds for thousands of years.

The lightning on the blade flashed purple-black, and every corpse puppet that lunged at him would be cut open by the lightning's defense.

"Pang!"

Like lightning striking the ground, every time the masked-man swung his machete, a purple-black thunderbolt struck on these corpse puppets.

The skins of corpse puppets were struck, turned black and rotted. The thunder energy restrained evil spirits, and these corpse puppets belonged to evil creatures, so under the strong attack of the thunder energy, the corpse puppets' bodies were blown apart with black blood marks everywhere.

Two more corpse puppets, under the constant slashing of the machete, fell at the feet of the masked man, who spat out coldly, "Eighty-five!"

This was already the eighty-fifth corpse puppet he had killed, and by now the ground was already covered with the dead bodies of corpse puppets, some of which were blown to pieces, while others only had an arm, or a leg left.

The masked man was breathing heavily, the true energy flowing in his vessel was already getting thinner and thinner, although the masked man's strength was much stronger than a normal person, and his talent was even more powerful than the others but no matter what, he was only at the final stage of innate level.

Even if his cultivation once reached the spring solidifying level, he had after all suppressed his cultivation because he had to enter the Secret Place for Resources. So now he could not exert the energy he had when he was a complete victory.

The result of constantly making moves was that the true energy was frantically flowing away, and he noticed that the more corpse puppets he killed, the more ferocious the remaining corpse puppets attacked!

At this moment, the corpse puppets in front of him had gone completely mad, and the blood color between their eyes was becoming more and more intense. Now the masked man was standing in front of these corpse puppets, just like a fresh and delicious piece of fat meat shown in front of the hungry beasts.

They pounced madly, regardless of life or death! The masked man's brow furrowed as he pointed his toes and frantically retreated, now that he had less than sixty percent of his true energy in his body, he could not waste any bit of it.

Chapter 2257
Kill the most corpse puppets with the least amount of power! By reducing the flow of true energy, the attack power also becomes weaker and the speed of killing the enemy naturally slows down. The same scenes are presented together during different character worlds.

Not only was the masked-man facing a dramatic depletion of his true energy, but Graham Eliot also had the same worry, as his internal true energy was also quite depleted, but there were still eighty or ninety corpse puppets in front of him, staring at him intently.

Graham took a long breath and made the same choice as the masked man, lowering the consumption of true energy in his body. Their goal was to complete the pass, not to frantically kill the corpse puppets in front of them!

As time passed, more and more people, from the blood world, were seriously injured and then transferred back to the Divine Void Slope, and gradually only ten people remained in the blood world.

Each of these ten people, apart from Jackie, was the best within the Clan association. Both their talent and strength were the best! At this time, at Nelson Lester's location, one of the divine warriors in front of him had also finally disappeared.

This meant that Nelson had successfully killed thirty corpse puppets. His performance could be considered both expected and unexpected.

Nelson was originally thought to be the strongest of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, but now, it seems that although he is indeed quite strong, he is not the strongest one in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Jackie had killed thirty long ago, and now he still hadn't been transferred out, which proved that he was persisting, or he was still killing!

Griffin muttered, "Why hasn't he come out yet? It's not fair!"

When saying these words, Griffin was in a bit of a trance, he was really struck nowadays, Howard Olsen spoke worriedly as soon as he saw this look of his brother "Are you alright brother? Don't think too much, maybe that guy…"

Howard suddenly paused, in fact, he did not know what words he should use to comfort Griffin at this time, after all, he knew it better than anyone else in his heart.

The grudge between his brother and Jackie could never be resolved, the two of them did not like each other, and they both wanted each other to suffer a

miserable death, and with their opponents getting stronger and stronger, no one would be in a good mood.

Even if others said the most comforting words, he wouldn't feel better, "Look guys! The disciples of the Corpse Pavilion have already killed ninety corpse puppets, and he only has one last obstacle left!"

The last obstacle represented the last divine warrior enveloped by the crimson glow. There were four divine warriors in total, and he had already cleared three of them.

There was only one left, still insisting on standing far away! Since so many had already been defeated, that last was no longer considered an obstacle.

The remaining thirty corpse puppets were too simple for the masked man to kill! The masked man was about to complete this seemingly impossible mission.

At this moment, a Thousand Leaves Pavilion disciple shouted, "My brother Graham has also killed ninety corpse puppets!"

At this point, the eyes of the crowd looked back to where Graham had been before, and indeed as he had said, the divine warrior in front of him also left one!

Chapter 2258
Sure enough, the masters from fourth-grade sects are obviously stronger than those who were from third-grade sects.

"Look! That guy named Jackie had actually killed 60 corpse puppets! Two Divine Void Warriors had disappeared from in front of him!" Somebody yelled out in surprise.

Everybody was surprised by what that person said and almost everybody looked towards where Jackie was. Sure enough, two of the Divine Void Warriors had disappeared! Many of them opened their mouths in surprise. "I remember that he's only in the intermediate stage of the innate level! How can he manage this when he's only in the intermediate stage of innate level! Has he been using his secret skills continuously?"

Another person humphed coldly and spoke with an indifferent expression on his face. "Can't you think twice before you speak? How will Jackie be able to continue for such a long time even if he used the secret skills?" This person was right. Even if Jackie used the secret skill and sacrificed his life, he would only be able to obtain a very small amount of time in return. Once the effect of the secret skill wears off, he would enter the decline stage. By then, he would lose more than 70% of his strength.

Normally, one would only use a secret skill in desperation as the last resort. If not, the losses were greater than the gains. In the beginning, everybody thought that Jackie would act just like what Griffin mentioned. They thought that he would exhaust his life and hidden potential in order to look good in front of everybody

else. However, that did not seem to be the case. How would a person capable of killing 30 corpse puppets do something so stupid?!

“It looks like the third-grade sects also have many hidden talents.” The disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion exhaled and lamented. After he spoke, the people around him immediately went silent, Nobody refuted as he was telling the truth and none of them were unable to come up with reasons to refute what he said.

“I wonder how much time they need to complete the mission? Who do you think will be the first one to complete the mission? How many of them will be able to complete the mission?” A series of questions gradually attracted their thoughts away from Jackie. Everybody’s attention immediately focused on the questions

“The first one to complete the mission will undoubtedly be the eldest disciple of the Corpse Pavilion. Although Graham from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion is also quite powerful, he’s still not as strong as the eldest disciple.” One of the disciples from the Muddled Origin Clan spoke straightforwardly as if he was not afraid of offending others.

The Corpse Pavilion’s disciples were proud when they heard what this person said. However, the disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion felt that this guy did not know how to speak. He was from one of the Northern sects but he was speaking on behalf of the Corpse Pavilion. However, none of the disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion raised any objections. After all, they knew in their hearts that this person was right and their analysis made sense. Their Senior Brother Graham was strong but he was slightly weaker than the masked man.

The masked man turned to one side and stopped his attack. He pulled the machete out of the corpse puppet’s body and the black-colored blood trickled down along the blade. There seemed to be lightning flashing above the blade with a crackling sound. The black blood was burned as the lightning was released and crackled with the released heat.

With a loud bang, the 109th corpse puppet directly fell on the ground and dust flew all over the place.

Chapter 2259
A cold look flashed past the masked man’s eyes. He raised his head and looked towards the last 11 corpse puppets. At this moment, the number of corpse puppets left was no threat to him. However, the masked man was not relieved. After all, the more corpse puppets he slaughtered, the crazier the remaining corpse puppets became. He tried his best to control the consumption of his true energy, but his true energy was almost exhausted as the corpse puppets grew increasingly crazy.

“This is so f*cking difficult!” The masked man could not help but have an outburst of profanity!

The dozen of people still fighting independently in the blood world were facing their challenges respectively and none of them had a relaxing time. There were too many enemies and it fulfilled the saying, they would exhaust the enemy even

if they couldn't kill these challengers! These corpse puppets used up the challenger's true energy!

"Huff..." Jackie exhaled deeply. With a step of his feet, he retreated 10meters away. The group of corpse puppets had already pounced towards where he originally stood while waving their claws and fangs.

"I'm not in the mood to waste time with you guys!" Jackie mumbled. He had already learned everything he needed to know. As time passed, he had also wasted a lot of his true energy. However, the difference between him and the others was that his true energy was used on the law of space. The use of Destroying the Void did not exhaust much of Jackie's true energy.

A layer of grayish-black mist covered the black sword. It felt like there was some sort of accelerant slowly burning on the sword. Jackie frowned and stepped forward before slashing his sword towards five corpse puppets nearest to him. The sharp sword aura tore through the corpse puppets' skin before the power of Destroying the Void wiggled into their body via the wound.

"Bang! Bang! Bang!" Another five corpse puppets fell to the ground. Jackie did not look towards the bodies and once again raised his sword to continue attacking! It was another wave of noises before six more corpse puppets dropped down. The power of Destroying the Void was performing to its greatest extent in the blood world. A martial skill focusing on the souls made the fight against corpse puppets incredibly easy.

The strong defensive power was a nightmare to the martial artists. However, this was nothing to Jackie. After all, the soul was incredibly weak and like a piece of paper that he could tear at any time.

On the Divine Void Slope, the remaining 160 people were looking at the places where those who hadn't been transported back originally stood in silence. They had a complicated look in their eyes when they looked at those empty spots. It seemed to be a mixture of regrets, laments, enviousness and jealousy. These people had yet to be transported out until now. This meant that they were still capable of fighting. Even the weakest person killed at least 60 corpse puppets. By now, nobody dared question the talents and capabilities of those who remained.

"Ah! A loud cry could be heard followed by a silent thud, Nelson dropped heavily to the ground. At this moment, Nelson was extremely embarrassed and no longer looked like a handsome young man. If his face wasn't quite clean, the others would have thought that he was some random beggar. His white shirt had been torn into strips by the puppet's claws and the others could see the bloody claw prints on his body behind the strips. There were also marks left behind by the puppet's fangs. His hair that was originally tied up was now scattered around his shoulder. He looked extremely pitiful as his face was flushed and swollen.

The disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion immediately asked when they saw Nelson's embarrassing state. "Senior Brother Nelson, are you alright? Have you been terribly wounded?" Nelson smiled bitterly and his wounds started hurting as he tugged the corners of his mouth.

Chapter 2260
Nelson felt that he was in such an embarrassing state right now. His true energy had been completely exhausted and there were so many wounds on his body. If the blood world hadn't detected that he was no longer capable of fighting, he might die on the spot the next second. He was unable to fight after trying his best to kill 60 corpse puppets. After exhausting his true energy, he cut off the arm of a corpse puppet.

He still remembered the last thing he saw in the blood world. The corpse puppet's arm was sent flying into the sky and he also fell into despair Nobody understood his situation more than himself at that moment. He did not have the support of true energy and was badly wounded. He was prepared for the worse. Fortunately, he was transported back to the Divine Void Slope at the crucial moment. These thoughts flashed through his mind and he exhaled deeply. Although he was safe now, he was still terrified by what happened.

The Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples looked towards Nelson worryingly. Nelson was the leader of their team on this trip into the Secret Place for Resources. The other disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion admired him for his strength, sense of responsibility and great talents. They also respected him greatly after this trip.

"Senior Brother Nelson, have some pills to recover your wounds." Riv reminded Nelson when he saw that Nelson was only sitting there in silence, deep in his own thoughts. He knew that Nelson was definitely wounded in the blood world from how he looked. After all, they were in a completely unfamiliar environment and nobody knew what they would encounter the next moment. The best way to deal with such emergencies was to keep themselves in an optimal state.

Nelson was stunned for a short while before he finally reacted. He looked up and smiled at Riv before retrieving a pill from his storage ring and swallowing it. The medicinal power instantly started working in his body, assisting him in healing his damaged meridians and other internal wounds. He slowly closed his eyes and performed seals with his hands. After 15 minutes, he opened his eyes after he successfully suppressed his internal wounds. He subconsciously looked around as what he cared the most about right now was the safety of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples.

A total of 20 Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples entered the Secret Place for Resources but there were only 19 of them there at that moment. Nelson was surprised and worried at the same time. Was it possible that one of them was wounded and had been transported out of the Divine Void Slope? Could it be that something else happened?

He stood up and asked Riv. "Junior Brother Riv, how Is everybody?" Riv slightly nodded. "Everybody is fine. Apart from you, nobody else is wounded." Nelson was slightly relaxed after he heard what Riv said. Was it possible that he had calculated wrongly? He must have calculated wrongly and there were 20 people, including himself.

He once again raised his head at this moment and looked towards all the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples. After another calculation, he confirmed that there

were 19 of them, including himself. Who was the person that had not appeared on the Divine Void Slope? Was that person in danger? As his imagination was running wild, the other Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples had started speaking with Nelson. They asked him about his wounds and if he needed the help of pills.

Nelson replied with a smile on his face. "I'm fine now. Although I'm wounded, it isn't anything serious. I only need to rest for a couple of hours and I will be able to suppress my wounds."

Griffin glanced at Nelson. Although he was extremely reluctant, Nelson was the leader of this trip to the Secret Place for Resources and he was quite prestigious. If he kept quiet when everybody else complemented and greeted him, he would stand out among the crowd. This would also cause outsiders to suspect that he was doing badly in the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2261-2270

Chapter 2261
After secretly thinking about it, he spoke unwillingly. “Since Senior Brother Nelson isn’t badly wounded, you should take the time to meditate and recover. Why are you standing right now? If you need our help with anything, we will not refuse you.”

What he said did not sound enigmatic. Nelson chuckled softly and nodded at Griffin. Since he meant well, Nelson could not refute what he said. “There’s one small thing that I’m unable to make out. We sent 20 disciples here and why is there only 19 of us out here?” Everybody went silent after they heard Nelson’s question. They looked at one another and a weird look appeared in their eyes.

Griffin’s originally peaceful expression immediately turned gloomy as if he had swallowed a couple of dead flies. Nelson was extremely surprised when he saw the weird expressions on everybody’s faces. He turned around and looked at the crowd. At this moment, he suddenly realized who was the one that had disappeared.

“Where’s Jackie? I saw him stepping onto the Divine Void Slope with my own eyes. Why don’t I see him now? Did something happen to him?” Nelson asked with a slight nervousness.

The others had an even weirder expression on their faces when they heard his questions. After five to six breaths later, Riv interrupted the silence and pointed to the spot beside him. “Look at this empty spot beside me, do you still remember who stood here previously?”

Nelson looked towards where Riv was pointing at and thought about it. He immediately realized. “This is Jackie’s position! Where is he?!”

Nelson had a sudden realization after he spoke. He immediately asked. “He’s still in the blood world?!” He did not notice how hoarse and the tremble in his voice as he spoke.

Riv sighed softly and nodded. “He’s still inside and I’m sure he’s still fighting!” Nelson’s expression instantly changed when he heard this. Even his breathing became uneven. He looked forward following where Jackie originally stood and saw that two out of the four Divine Void Warriors covered in the red light had disappeared!

Compared to the others, Nelson clearly knew what this meant. Jackie had killed at least 60 corpse puppets and this was comparable to his results. Jackie had even killed more corpse puppets compared to himself! Jackie was so strong that even he was not Jackie’s opponent? However, wasn’t Jackie only in the intermediate stage of the innate level? Nelson grew increasingly surprised the

more he thought about it. The corners of his mouth slightly trembled. “Is it really Jackie? How many more people are still in the blood world?”

Riv had been paying attention to the people in the blood world. Together with the discussion everybody had just now, he was capable of repeating who was still killing in the blood world right now. “There are still five people inside the blood world. Among the five of them, two of them are disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion while the other two are disciples from the Corpse Pavilion. The last one is Jackie from our Dual Sovereign Pavilion. The disciples from the other sects had already gotten rid of three obstacles. This meant that they have killed at least 90 corpse puppets. They will be able to pass the challenge if they kill 30 more corpse sects.”

Chapter 2262
Apart from Jackie, it was just a matter of time for the four others to kill the final 30 corpse puppets. However, Jackie was much stronger than 90% of the people there even though he had only gotten rid of two Divine Void Warriors.

The surprising look on Nelson’s face was so apparent that the unconvinced feeling filled Griffin’s heart after he saw it. He could not help but speak sulkily.” That guy is just lucky. Who knew what he did?”

Nobody resonated with anything he said. Everybody knew well that he was just envious and jealous of Jackie. The stronger Jackie was, the more terrible he felt as they had a bad relationship. Everybody understood his mentality and did not say anything because of this.

However, Riv spoke with a slight tremble in his voice at this moment.”90! Jackie had killed 90 corpse sects! Look at him! The third Divine Void Warrior in front of him has disappeared!”

What he said successfully attracted everybody’s attention. Not only the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciples, the disciples of the other sects also turned around to look at where Jackie was. It was true that three Divine Void Warriors had disappeared from where Jackie was and only one Divine Void Warriors covered by the red light remained. The disciples of their sect were speechless while the disciples from the other sects started discussing what happened in surprise.

“I thought that Jackie would be the one who was unable to persist among those five in the blood world. After all, he only killed 60 corpse puppets. From the looks of things, there’s a possibility that he might be able to complete the challenge! Sure enough, we cannot look down on anybody!”

After this person finished speaking, a Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciple standing beside him could not help but speak loudly. “What do you mean by he might be unable to complete the challenge? Remove the word ‘might’! I’m sure that my Junior Brother Jackie is capable of doing it! I’m sure he would be able to get rid of the fourth one as he successfully got rid of three of them!”

At this moment, none of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples, apart from Griffin, resented Jackie. Previously, they felt ashamed because of Jackie, but the strength Jackie presented right now made them proud of him. After all, four out of those five who stayed in the blood world were from fourth grade sects. Among them, Jackie was the only one from the third-grade sect.

Although all of them were qualified to enter the Secret Place for Resources, they were disciples from third-grade sects and disciples from fourth grade sects were much stronger than them. They always had a feeling of being belittled by the fourth grade disciples! Right now, Jackie had finally made the third-grade sects proud. Griffin inhaled deeply. "How's that possible?! How can he be capable of such achievements?!"

Griffin was slightly trembling when he was speaking as if he was unable to believe that this was happening. After he took in several deep breaths, his facial expression had been incredibly darkened. Zamian also frowned deeply while Theo looked like a family member of his had just died. They had never imagined that Jackie had already achieved such strength and was comparable to the strongest disciples from the fourth-grade sects. This was beyond their imagination!

At this moment, somebody yelled loudly. "Look! The fourth Divine Void Warrior in front of Jackie had also disappeared!"

This noise was no different from tossing a time bomb onto the calm surface. Everybody widened their eyes in surprise and looked towards where Jackie was previously in disbelief. The fourth Divine Void Warrior had disappeared and everything happened so quickly. They were still discussing if Jackie would be able to complete this challenge just now, but Jackie had immediately proved them wrong.

Chapter 2263
Just like what the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciple said, he should remove the words 'maybe as Jackie would definitely complete the challenge. On top of that, he would complete the challenge much faster than everybody else! The disappearance of the fourth Divine Void Warrior meant that Jackie had successfully killed 120 corpse puppets! What a great achievement this was! Even the eldest disciple of the Corpse Pavilion was unable to complete the mission as the fourth Divine Void Warrior did not disappear.

"Goodness me! The most important thing is that this guy is only in the intermediate stage of the innate level. Since when is somebody in the intermediate stage of the innate level so strong? There are so many of us, who are in the final stage of the innate level, who have failed! On top of that, we're forced into the corner and are unable to fight back!" His lips were slightly trembling as he spoke. He was unable to believe that everything was true. This was such a great blow for them!

Nobody could imagine that the first person to complete the mission was an unknown disciple from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. Although Jackie caused a commotion previously, it was within a small radius. Everybody only slightly looked up at Jackie but none of them imagined that he would have such strength

and talents. Even the eldest disciple of the Corpse Pavilion paled into insignificance in front of him! The reason for the fight between the Corpse Pavilion and Thousand Leaves Pavilion seemed to be nothing after what happened!

In the blood world where Jackie was in, he had a black sword in his hand and looked like an undefeatable pine tree standing in this world filled with blood. One another another, the corpse puppets dropped dead around him. Their black blood pooled into a small river and circulated around Jackie with a swooshing sound. There was still some black blood on his sword and the blood dripped down drop by drop following the edge of the sword.

Jackie exhaled deeply and finally relaxed when the final corpse puppet died. Compared to the situation Inthe other worlds, his surroundings were much cleaner as most of the corpse puppets died from a single attack! Jackie's means of killing wasn't to destroy the corpse puppet's defense. Instead, he used Destroying the Void to kill their souls. He only needed a small cut and the corpse puppet would definitely die. The corpse puppets, who were originally threatening him with their claws and fangs, had slowly fallen to the ground one after the other. The corpse puppets no longer blocked his line of sight and Jackie slightly raised his chin to look far away with burning eyes.

About 100 meters from where he was, a man in armor stood straight there with a sword in his hand. The two of them looked at each other from afar. The Divine Void Warrior was still the same and even his expression remained the same. Jackie put the black sword away and slowly walked past the corpse puppets' bodies on the ground. He slowly approached the Divine Void Warrior. The old announcer made it clear previously that they had won the challenge after they successfully killed 120 corpse puppets. If so, the last Divine Void Warrior he saw was no danger to him.

He did not float in midair or rushed forward. He slowly approached the Divine Void Warrior one step after the other. He spent around 10 minutes before arriving in front of the Divine Void Warrior. There wasn't any difference between this Divine Void Warrior and the others he saw previously. Every person that stepped onto the Divine Void Slope would face Divine Void Warriors with different appearances. However, the Divine Void Warriors each individual face would remain the same.

Jackie subconsciously took a step backwards when he heard the cracking sound as if a mechanism was activated. He was afraid of something uncontrollable happening. However, the Divine Void Warrior's arm moved at this moment!

Chapter 2264

Jackie glared alertly at the Divine Void Warrior in front of him. The Divine Void Warrior was expressionless as he stretched out his palm. A wave of grayish-black energy that looked like mist slowly gathered in his palm. Jackie was familiar with this wave of energy. He experienced it several times in the past and realized that this was the energy the corpse puppet released after they were killed.

He remembered clearly that his body experienced extreme hunger after he felt the wave of energy and It felt like that energy was the best food in the world.

Right now, waves of the energy gathered in the palms of the Divine Void Warrior and there were a total of 120 waves of energy. Jackie's heart raced as he wondered what the warrior was thinking.

The energy continued to gather like streams flowing into the river in the Divine Void Warrior's palm. After five breaths, a maroon-colored crystal appeared in front of Jackie. Jackie could not help but exclaim when he finally saw what the crystal looked like. "Shattered Soul Crystal?"

This was a Shattered Soul Crystal the size of two thumbs. The entire crystal was red in color and looked like a piece of blood jade that had been buried for hundreds of thousand years. When observed closer, there were sparkles of red dots inside, and there was a soul-capturing beauty to the crystal.

Jackie obtained two Shattered Soul Crystals in the past, and they came from the corpse covered in red runes outside the Ten Absolutes Trap Array. One of them was the size of a thumb while the other was the size of his palm. One of the crystals had been completely absorbed by Jackie while the other was still intact and stored in the Mustard Seed.

"How can it be a Shattered Soul Crystal? Why is it a Shattered Soul Crystal?" Jackie was extremely surprised. Why did the Shattered Soul Crystal appear here? Did the Divine Void Warrior coagulate the Shattered Soul Crystal as a reward for him?

In Jackie's memories, the Scattered Soul Crystals were precious treasures even in the Divine Void World. Only great sects would have one or two crystals. However, why does he continuously see so many crystals in this third-grade world? This did not make any sense. He was certain that there was something wrong with the West Cercei State. A long time ago, something huge definitely happened in the West Cercei State and it was definitely related to the Divine Void World.

Jackie exhaled deeply as all sorts of assumptions appeared in his head. No matter what he assumed, he was unable to make the correct decision as he did not have enough information. The same scene appeared in all five independent blood worlds. The other five people also completed their challenge within the required time and arrived in front of their respective Divine Void Warriors. However, they did not have the same perspective as Jackie and were only glaring at the crystals. They knew that this was definitely a precious treasure but they had no idea what it actually was and its function.

Although the masked man was already in the spring solidifying realm, his knowledge was still limited. After all, the world they were in was only a third grade world and was incomparable to the Divine Void World. On top of that, Jackie's memories came from the strongest masters of the Divine Void World while the masked man was only the eldest disciple of a fourth-grade sect in West Cercei State located in the Hestia Continent.

All of them looked at the Divine Void Warriors stretching out their hands in front of them puzzlingly. The Corpse Pavilion disciple, Lennon Wachs, even stretched out his finger to touch the weird crystal.

Chapter 2265
At this moment, a cracking sound was suddenly heard coming from the Scattered Soul Crystal, and cracks started to appear on the crystals. The cracks grew with an unprecedented speed and soon covered the entire crystal. The crystals looked like they would break at any time and the precious energy stored inside would once again be released. Both the masked man and Lennon's response was to put their guards up mentally. They took two steps backward and once again tightened their grip on their weapons in order to react to any sudden changes. To them, the crystals seemed to be rewarded to those who managed to pass the Divine Void Slope. However, this was their assumption and none of them were sure.

Compared to the frightened disciples from the Corpse Pavilion, Graham and Benjamin's reactions were slightly composed. Although they were also glaring at the Scattered Soul Crystals while they gradually cracked, vigilantly, they did not hide from It. Jackie was the only one who looked at the Scattered Soul Crystal in a regretful and anxious manner. After the scattered Soul Crystals crack, the energy will be immediately released. If he failed to absorb the power, the precious and pure spirit energy would be completely wasted. This was definitely a great loss for Jackie and he dared not waste any time. Before the Scattered Soul Crystal completely broke into pieces, he sat down with his knees crossed to calm himself Down and to be prepared to absorb the energy at any time

Following the last cracking sound, the Scattered Soul Crystal was completely broken. A great sea of spirit energy came pouring toward Jackie with no restriction. Jackie frowned as he immediately absorbed the energy into his own body. He performed spells with his hands and waves of black light flowed around his fingers. He quickly activated Destroying the Void and started forming the soul swords without holding them back. In order to form the soul swords, he required the support of a strong aura. It was a waste to not form the soul swords after absorbing such a large amount of pure spirit energy!

Jackie did not require any teaching from teachers or spend any time to slowly understand how to practice the martial skills. Due to the selfless sacrifice from the previous great master, Jackie's understanding and training toward Destroying the Void had already achieved an incomparable level. What he required was the support of strong spirit energy in order to form more soul swords. Now that he had absorbed such a huge amount of pure spirit energy from the Scattered Soul Crystals, he was forming the soul swords with an astonishing speed.

"31! 32!" Jackie slowly counted with every soul sword he formed. This Scattered Soul Crystal was double the size of the one that he absorbed previously. He felt like his veins were about to pop as he was absorbing such a huge amount of spirit power. However, Jackie was much stronger than he used to be.

During this period of time, not only did he replay how to activate Destroying the Void in his heart a few hundred times, but he had also managed to form 15 soul swords. With so much experience, he faced no obstacles and was several times faster when forming the soul swords.

Time slowly passed by and during the lengthy period of forming the soul swords, Jackie had no sense of how much time had already gone by.

“Cough, cough…” After absorbing the last trace of the pure spirit energy, Jackie could not help but cough out a mouthful of blood. The red blood stained his clothes as his complexion turned pale. However, he was unable to suppress his happiness. After he absorbed the pure spirit power from the Scattered Soul Crystal, he managed to form another 20 soul swords. Together with the 15 soul swords previously, he was capable of forming 35 soul swords at once!

Chapter 2266
Jackie had never imagined that this would happen. He initially thought that this was just a normal way of increasing his fighting prowess and had never imagined that he would obtain such benefits.

However, his body was overwhelmed as he absorbed a hefty amount of pure spirit power. As a result, he turned pale and vomited blood as he suffered from some internal injuries. To Jackie, however, this was nothing as it was incomparable to what he had obtained

A disciple of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion stared straight at the Divine Void Slope and feebly commented, “Why haven’t they come out? Were they transferred to another world after they passed the test? As we’ve been eliminated, are we unable to observe how they go through the upcoming tests?”

All five disciples in the blood world had completed their mission, and all four Divine Void Warriors in front of them had disappeared. This meant that all of them had passed the test. Still, there were no movements at where they originally stood on the Divine Void Slope, much to everyone’s bewilderment.

After all, everyone that was eliminated would be transferred back to the Divine Void Slope from the blood world, but everyone was confused and began making assumptions when those who completed the tasks had not returned. After the remaining five passed the test, the Divine Void Slope also changed. All the Divine Void Warriors placed in front of the challengers had disappeared, and the scene had regained its unobstructed view.

After some time, the people there heard something swishing, as though a strong wind had blown past the trees, followed by several muffled banging noises. All five challengers that passed through the test finally returned to their original places. They were not transported back but were tossed in midair, and the challengers could not react in time due to how abrupt they were thrown out. Thus, all five of them fell to the ground in an extremely embarrassing state. Fortunately, they were martial artists, and minor wounds were nothing to them.

The masked man placed both hands on the ground and managed to stand up. He patted the dust off his body in a speechless manner and could not help but look up toward where he fell down from.

“Our eldest senior brother is so strong! He passed the challenge without any difficulties. The group of masters are incomparable to our senior brother!”

“The treasures on this Divine Void Slope are for our eldest senior brother to take. He’s the only one with the strength to get them!”

The loud compliments drowned the voices of the rest. The disciples of the Corpse Pavilion were extremely excited when they saw that the masked man was finally returned. They did not stop talking and sang praises of the masked man continuously.

The masked man was used to this after so many years. He had always been the top disciple in his sect, and none could match up to him. As such praises had always been surrounding him, they had no effect on him.

He exhaled softly and ignored the compliments as he asked coldly. “How many people won the challenge?”

He remembered what the announcer, old-sounding as it was, had said. They would face nine Divine Void Warriors in total, and there were four waiting for him as he managed to eliminate four in this challenge. He wanted to know who else was competing for the treasures with him at this moment.

Zamian immediately replied in a flattery manner,” Five of you managed to pass the challenge.” He paused and had no intention of continuing the conversation.

The masked man exhaled softly after he heard this. There were five of them, but the others might not be able to hold out for much longer. After all, the current challenge was extremely difficult, let alone those they had to face later. He estimated that less than ten percent of those who remained would be able to continue when he heard the rules in the blood world.

True enough, his assumption was correct, and the number of people that succeeded was less than his expectation. “Is Graham Eliot one of them?”

Chapter 2267
The masked man had asked in a barely audible voice, and Zamian quickly nodded. “Benjamin Gale and Graham Eliot from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had passed the challenge. Graham is much stronger and took a shorter time compared to Benjamin.”

The masked man turned toward where Benjamin was and noticed that he was slightly pale. Benjamin had swallowed some pills as he focused on recovering and restoring his true energy. It was obvious that everybody had used a lot of their true energy when they were in the blood world.

“Who else?” asked the masked man again.

Zamian coughed lightly as his expression turned rigid. He did not wish to mention this, but he did not have a choice. “There’s… Senior Brother Lennon from our sect and…yourself,” Zamian stuttered as he spoke, and the masked man turned around to look at him in surprise.

Zamian forced a smile, and the masked man frowned when he saw Zamian’s expression. He was extremely puzzled. “Why do you look like you’re about to cry? Just be honest and tell me what happened. Why are you stuttering?”

Something then clicked in the masked man's mind, and he asked, "You've only mentioned four of us. Who's the fifth?"

The masked man had finally asked a question Zamian had to answer directly. He gritted his teeth as he made up his mind. "It's Jackie."

"What!?" The masked man thought that he had made a mistake. What was he talking about? The fifth person was Jackie?

Impossible! This was impossible!

"What are you talking aboutI'm asking you who the fifth person is not how Jackie is doing hissed the masked man

Zamian exhaled deeply as he forced himself to calm down. "I'm talking about Jackie, he's the fifth person who completed the mission. Also.. He isn't just the fifth person to complete the challenge, he's the first one to do so." Zamian was immediately relieved, as if he had completed a huge mission in life, when he finally let the words out of his chest. No matter what he did, he could never escape this question

"What? What did you say?" The masked man squeezed the words through gritted teeth. At this moment, Graham and the others had opened their eyes to look at the masked man. After all, they all knew who the masked man was, and he managed to capture their attention with his heart wrenching roar.

Graham heard everything they had said, seeing as both Zamian and the masked man's voices were very audible to the rest of them. His emotionless expression started to crumble like cracks appearing on thick ice, and he was unable to remain calm.

If he was not tending to his wounds, he would have jumped up from the Divine Void Slope or rushed over to ask if this was true!

"Is it true that he was the first?" Graham's voice slightly trembled as he spoke.

The other disciples standing beside Graham nodded, and it looked like Zamian was telling the truth. Regardless, Graham felt that everything that happened was absurd. He remembered that Jackie was only in the intermediate stage of the innate level, and there was a limit to his strength.

He fought hard in the blood world, and only those who experienced killing 120 corpse puppets knew how difficult it was to kill all of them at once!

Chapter 2268
He fought hard at that moment and nearly finished his last true energy to kill all the corpse puppets. Everybody else faced the same issue.

Benjamin was from the same sect as Graham, and Graham had also asked him how he managed to spend the last moments after they were transferred back to the

Divine Void slope. After all, fighting so many corpse puppets had exhausted their true energy and rendered them helpless.

After enquiring Benjamin for the details of the process, Graham came to a conclusion that no matter how strong they were, as long as they were in the innate level, their true energy would still be used up. After all, the speed of their killing was in direct proportion to their strength. The faster they killed, the crazier the corpse puppets grew, resulting in more energy being drained in the process. The weaker competitors would kill the enemies with a slower speed, and the corpse puppets' attack would be weakened.

The Corpse Pavilion's eldest disciple and himself were unquestionably the strongest among everyone there. They were the fastest in killing enemies, and the corpse puppets in their area were the craziest. This caused a large amount of their true energy to be exhausted, although they were the strongest. In the end, they were unable to continue.

As for Jackie…

How did he manage to surpass their speed and become the first person to kill 120 corpse puppets when he was only at the intermediate stage of innate level? Was Jackie possibly stronger than them? However, this could cause the corpse puppets to go crazy and consume a huge amount of Jackie's true energy!

The differences in their realms not only caused the differences in their lethality, but there was also a difference in the storage of their true energy. Those In the final stage of the innate level had one quarter more storage of true energy compared to those in the intermediate stage. Of course, the precondition was that both were practicing martial skills of the same level. Graham assumed that Jackie had not practiced any high-level martial skill as that required talents and a good understanding of the realms.

Only those who achieved a certain fighting prowess can practice high-level martial skills. This was a common sense that everyone had the same understanding, and that young man could not have practiced high-level martial skills. Since he had a quarter less of true energy storage compared to Graham, how did Jackie manage to finish the mission first when Graham suffered in the end, nearly failing to complete the challenge?

Graham just could not figure it out. He looked toward Jackie, who was nearby.

Jackie stood at his position calmly as he ignored all the discussions around him.

"He wasn't hurt?" Graham's voice was slightly hoarse when he spoke.

The Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciples beside him quickly replied, "I've been looking at Jackie since just now, and he didn't suffer from any wounds at all. He didn't replenish his true energy since he returned and had ignored anyone that wanted to talk to him, standing still and looking forward in silence this whole time."

“Impossible,” insisted Graham, unable to believe what had happened.

There was something wrong, for sure. He killed 120 corpse puppets and had struggled when he did, and he was also wounded after completely exhausting his true energy. On the other hand, Graham could not help but suspect that something was wrong with Jackie as Jackie was the complete opposite of himself. Graham knew deep in his heart that something was wrong with this guy as Jackie did not suffer from any wounds or exhaustion of true energy.

“What’s impossible?” the Thousand Leaves Pavilion’s disciple standing beside Graham asked curiously when they heard what he said.

Graham did not answer his question and only observed Jackie quietly as all sorts of ideas appeared In his head. “I think it’s impossible, too.”

Chapter 2269
Benjamin suddenly chimed into the conversation.

Graham looked over and saw that Benjamin was also deep in his thoughts as he looked at Jackie. He knew that Benjamin was thinking what he was thinking. He had also experienced the fight with 120 corpse puppets and almost failed in the end. Benjamin’s wounds were more severe than himself, so he was even puzzled by Jackie’s current condition.

“I get it now!” At this moment, the masked man, who was some distance away, suddenly spoke up. A calculative look flashed past his eyes, and he looked like he had solved the most difficult problem in his life. He spoke loudly, and as his position was apparent, he immediately attracted everyone’s attention with his boisterous exclamation. Even Jackie looked over, and the masked man sneered before narrowing his eyes. “You are practicing the soul attribute, aren’t you?!” challenged the masked man, sounding very certain with himself.

Many people, at that moment, realized that Jackie indeed practiced martial skills of soul attribute as they saw Jackie’s attack. The masked man and the others were also looking at Jackie, so they also saw everything. Jackie, however, chuckled and said nothing. He ignored the masked man and wanted to see what the masked man was about to say.

The masked man exhaled deeply. “No wonder you were so calm when you came out. You looked like you’ve just had a meal in the blood and suffered no losses when we almost exhausted our true energy! On top of that, you’re only in the intermediate stage of innate level, and you should have one quarter less true energy storage compared to us. Why are you all fine and dandy when our energy has been completely exhausted?!”

The others immediately agreed with what the masked man said. After the five of them came out, they naturally became the focus of everybody there. Compared to how tired, exhausted, and wounded the other four were, Jackie seemed to be in the pink of health, and they could not feel any changes from him. It felt like these five people did not move to the same place and were doing different things. Everybody even gossiped and theorized why they were in two different states.

The masked man turned around and faced Jackie as he spoke, “The corpse puppets had an incredible level of defense, and we had to spend a huge amount of energy to kill or incapacitate them. We had to execute strong martial skills to destroy the corpse puppets’ defense, yet you didn’t need to do that.”

The masked man paused here as a darkened look crept to his face. A hint of jealousy flashed through his eyes, no doubt envious of Jackie’s good luck. He then added, “You are practicing martial skills of the soul attribute! The corpse puppets’ weakness happens to be their soul, and you need only destroy the corpse puppet’s exterior and let your attack penetrate them. You’d be able to kill the corpse puppets’ souls easily!”

The masked man was a master that was once in the solidifying soul level and the strongest among the Corpse Pavilion’s disciples. Before anyone else realized what was going on, he had already found the crucial point of the issue and knew why Jackie was so relaxed.

Jackie could not help but think better of the masked man as the situation was just like what the masked man said. He was completely unbothered because the martial skill he practiced happened to suppress the corpse puppets. Hence, he was able to kill all 120 corpse puppets without exerting too much strength.

The masked man’s explanation could be understood easily, and everyone quickly understood what he said. This time, their surroundings were filled with chatters of discussion again. “No wonder this guy was unhinged when he came out. Turns out, he’s been cutting corners! He’s so lucky. The others killed a hundred and twenty corpse puppets with much difficulty, while he only had to break their skin to kill them easily!”

Chapter 2270
“That’s right; he got lucky! If Jackie didn’t practice martial skills of the soul attribute, I’m sure that he would’ve failed the mission and gotten eliminated!”

“He’s not qualified to advance forward with the other four!”

“That’s right! This guy is just lucky. How can he manage to advance if his skill didn’t happen to suppress the corpse puppets?!”

Many people were unconvinced, viewing Jackie like he was just a guy who hit the Jackiepot. They admired the other masters who succeeded with their true power, yet they despised and were unconvinced with Jackie. Why did he advance forward with the four other masters? Most importantly, this guy was only in the intermediate stage of the innate level. Why did he succeed when they, a group of people in the final stage of innate level, failed to advance further?

Griffin felt terrible as though he had eaten kilograms of dung. Before the masked man explained things, the thought that Jackie was stronger than him tormented him. However, he felt even worse after he heard the explanation. After all, Jackie managed to advance forward because he was lucky, and not because he was stronger than Griffin.

No matter what, Jackie would be treated as an important talent the sect would train with his current results. Who knew how much resources they were going to throw at him? Griffin felt even worse when he thought of this.

“Don’t pay attention to what they say. They’re just… jealous,” commented Riv as he eyed Jackie.

Jackie chuckled. To be frank, he had never paid attention to what the people around him discussed. It did not matter if they complimented him, envied, admonished him, or said anything bad about him. After all, the soul attribute was not something everyone could practice, let alone achieve his current achievement.

He turned around and glanced at Riv. “It’s alright.”

Riv sighed softly. Since they entered the Secret Place for Resources, the various topics surrounding Jackie had never stopped. He always managed to become the center of every conversation.

“In that case… Don’t feel too good about yourself, then!” The masked man’s voice once again suppressed the discussion surrounding them that drifted into Jackie’s ears. Jackie turned and noticed how the masked man eyed him with a strange expression In his eyes. The more the others slandered Jackie, the happier the masked man was. He was even happier when he knew that he was the one causing all this.

Jackie sneered and said, “I’d say the same thing for you, too.”

The masked man was stunned. Jackie had always managed to surprise people, and all of a sudden, Jackie was repeating the same thing to him?

“Hahahaha!” The masked man sneered and felt that Jackie was growing even more outrageous than before. “B*stard! You better hope that you’ll be eliminated in the next challenge. Otherwise, I’ll make sure that you wish you were dead when you face me!”

Jackie knew what he was talking about. The old voice said that they had to face ten challenges, but there would only be nine Divine Void Warriors. This meant that the people they had to face in the tenth challenge would be the others who also passed the other challenges and arrived at the last challenge.

The masked man raised his eyebrows and commented disdainfully, “You might not make it to the last challenge. With your current capabilities, you’ll surely be eliminated when facing the sixth Divine Void Warrior.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2271-2280

Chapter 2271
Jackie turned around and did not respond. No matter what the masked man said, he acted as if he heard nothing. It did not matter how much he said.

On top of that, Jackie looked forward to the last challenge. If this was before the absorption of that Scattered Soul Crystal in the blood world, he might not be a match against the masked man. However, the current situation was different. The Scattered Soul Crystal allowed Jackie to form 20 soul swords. Coupled with the 15 soul swords he formed before, he had a total of 35 soul swords, which reassured him from being intimidated.

The mark that he had mastered Destroying the Void was when he managed to form 50 soul swords. As of late, he was only 15 soul swords away from his aim of 50 soul swords. Once he managed to form 50 soul swords, nobody in the innate level would be his opponent. After all, Destroying the Void was at least I in the ultimate god level, and nobody in the innate level, apart from Jackie, could practice martial skills of the ultimate god level. This was Jackie's greatest advantage.

"A total of five people have passed the challenge!" The old voice spoke again and instantly silenced those who were still embroiled in chatters and gossip. "Those who've succeeded shall continue to climb up the Divine Void Slope! This time, you'll be allowed to climb a hundred and eighty meters and arrive before the sixth Divine Void Warrior!"

Everyone looked at the five challengers once the announcement was over. At this moment, Graham and the others had almost recovered. All five of them wasted no time and immediately climbed forward. Out of the 180 people there, only five of them were qualified at this moment. Everyone else looked at the final five continuing their ascension as sadness, envy, and jealousy flashed past their eyes.

Riv could not help but lament, "This is really cruel. I thought that I'd be able to face the eighth Divine Void Warrior no matter what, but I never thought I'd fail to even defeat the third warrior."

Riv had never realized such a difference between his talents and the others. They were in the final stage of the innate level, but the difference was vast. He could even imagine how the eldest disciple of the Corpse Pavilion could kill him with a single attack. Riv was not the only one who felt this way as many of those there also felt the same. They felt terrible, but there was nothing they could do.

Jackie walked calmly as he climbed toward the 180meter-point, one step after another. An extremely tall Divine Void Warrior was already standing there, staring at him indifferently as if Jackie was the tiniest ant in the world. It felt like he would disappear with a wave of the warrior's hand.

It felt terrible to be stared at in such a way, but Jackie had already gotten used to it.

The Divine Void Slope was still covered by a layer of thin mist, and no one could even see clearly what the slope was made of. The five of them were placed at five different positions and were a certain distance from each other. Apart from Jackie, they were looking at each other. Finally, they arrived at the 180-meterposition 15 minutes later. Those who turned around to look backward from this position finally felt like they were able to see everything in a single glance. The clan brothers that were eliminated looked upward at them like little mice.

With the mechanism being activated, the sounds of cranks audible, the Divine Void Warrior started moving. The warrior was still holding his weapon, but he raised his leg and was prepared to move to one side, much to the five's confusion. After all, the Divine Void Warriors they faced in the past would not start attacking before they got ready. The five of them could not help but walk several steps backward.

The Divine Void Warriors ignored all five people and moved to the left in unison to move away from their previous positions. As all five of them were wondering what the warriors wanted to do, they saw a red light flashing past them the next second. Another Divine Void Warrior appeared at the position the first Divine Void Warrior moved away from.

Chapter 2272
Not only did a Divine Void Warrior appear right in front of them, but the same Divine Void Warrior appeared on their left after the same red light flashed past them. "Goodness… Three Divine Void Warriors? What's happening?" Before the five of them said anything, those standing underneath the slope had already started to go crazy.

True enough, the challenges grew increasingly difficult, and now that three Divine Void Warriors appeared at once, were each of them supposed to fight three warriors by themselves?

As they began to feel unsettled, the old voice once again appeared beside their ears. Each of you will fight three Divine Void Warriors, all slightly stronger than the warriors you defeated during the second challenge. However, these warriors also use the same martial skill, Dream Soul Swordsmanship. Defeating all three Divine Void Warriors is equivalent to passing the sixth, seventh, and eighth challenges!"

Once the announcement was over, the people standing at the bottom of the slope once again started rambling

50 percent of them failed to carry out the third challenge, while 99 percent of them failed to pass the third challenge. However, most of those standing at the bottom of the slope experienced the second challenge, and the lingering fear toward the second challenge loomed in their hearts. Many of them were

defeated during the second challenge, and none of them could imagine that their sixth challenge was four times more difficult than the second challenge.

Four times the difficulty was inaccurate, however, as the Divine Void Warriors standing in front of them were stronger than those they faced during the second challenge. More importantly, they had to defeat three at once! On top of that, the martial skill they used was the Dream Soul Swordsmanship! When they attacked, they would be divided into two, and if they failed to defeat the second one soon after they defeated the first one, the warriors would absorb the remaining power left behind by the first warrior.

The second warrior would replenish itself, and its power would double in an instant. This meant that once they started fighting, each of them had to handle six Divine Void Warriors—all powerful beings, too!

"How are they supposed to defeat the warriors?" asked Riv, his mouth hanging open widely. Nelson also smiled bitterly and shook his head. "Even if I pass the third challenge by force, I'd fail this challenge for sure! It's too difficult!" Nelson meant this from the bottom of his heart. Although he won easily during the second challenge, he was facing a limited number of enemies. He did not have the certainty of winning if he was asked to face six warriors at once!

The people standing at the bottom of the slope could not help but start mumbling.

"Do they even want them to let these people win the challenge? I feel that the difficulty set by this Divine Void Slope is meant to make us stuck here so that nobody wins the challenge!"

"That's right! Even if this fight represents the sixth, seventh, and eighth challenges, there's still a ninth challenge awaiting them. I wonder how difficult the ninth challenge is, seeing how difficult the previous challenges were already. I'm scared to even think of the ninth challenge; I think that it's almost impossible to complete!"

The people standing at the bottom were extremely noisy while those five standing on the slope were in peace. After some time, Benjamin was the first one to speak. "It's quite challenging. Senior Brother Graham, are… Are you confident?"

Graham glanced at Benjamin. The two of them were chosen disciples directly trained by the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. They were stronger and much more talented than usual disciples, and they also understood each other's strength well.

Benjamin was slightly uncertain as he faced the challenge that had doubled in difficulty. However, he felt that Graham should be capable of passing the challenge. Graham exhaled and said. "Don't go into the fight thinking you'll lose; this will weaken your momentum. You won't win with that attitude!"

Benjamin nodded and kept quiet. The masked man glanced at Lennon, the junior brother standing beside him, without saying a word. Lennon was slightly nervous, but he understood his senior brother's temperament well. The masked man would not have blinked even if he died in front of the masked man.

"You look like you can always remain calm no matter what happens," remarked the masked man as he turned around to look at Jackie.

Jackie could not help but roll his eyes. This guy had always tried to cause him trouble, no matter where he was. He seemed to revel whenever Jackie was in any form of issue.

Chapter 2273
"Can you stop talking?" grumbled Jackie. No matter what, their relationship was especially acrimonious, and nothing good would happen even if he spoke nicely. This was why Jackie decided to not let this guy get used to doing this.

The masked man's face darkened as Jackie spoke against him. He was so angry that he almost choked. "B*stard! Just wait and see! Don't think that you're safe just because I can't do anything to you right now!

Jackie chuckled and replied nonchalantly, "Then I'll be waiting for whatever you'll do. I just hope that you don't beg me to forgive you in tears when we get to that point."

The masked man was so angry that his hands trembled when he heard this. Graham and the others even looked toward Jackie in surprise; even he dared not speak to the masked man with such an attitude. After all, there were certain things he had to do in order to maintain their superficial relationship. Was Jackie not afraid that the masked man would try everything in his power to kill him after he spoke so definitively? Graham grew increasingly curious when he saw how calm Jackie was, but the argument did not continue.

"Whoosh!"

The sound of sharp knives being unsheathed could be heard by all five of them, and they turned to look toward where the sound came from at the same time. All five Divine Void Warriors standing in front of them released a bright red light from their eyes at the same time, bright like the sun. All three Divine Void Warriors standing in front of each person pulled their weapons out at the same time. It was still a sword that was three meters long, but this time, the sword was not covered in a purple light. Instead, the sword was surrounded by a layer of intense red color, and it looked like the sun was burning.

"It's coming!" Nelson looked upward and lowered his voice as he spoke. The people standing at the bottom of the slope started to get nervous. This was going to be a very intense battle, and they had no idea if any of them would be able to pass the challenge.

"Senior Brother Graham will pass the challenge, for sure!" exclaimed one of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciples. The Corpse Pavilion's disciples did not wish

to be outdone and started shouting that their eldest senior brother would win when they saw that the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's disciples were working so hard. They even shouted that Senior Brother Lennon would also win. The sounds of people cheering could be heard coming from the bottom of the slope, and it shook the earth. However, this did not affect the mentality of those five people standing on the slope.

Jackie restrained all his thoughts as he stared at the three Divine Void Warriors in front of him. The warrior in the middle moved, and he swung the red knife in his hands, rushing forward like a cannonball. The two other Divine Void Warriors followed after the first warrior as they rushed to attack Jackie.

The same happened to all five of them, and those standing at the bottom of the slope saw everything that happened. The crowd inhaled deeply as things were happening just as they imagined. The three warriors attacked in a semi-surrounding manner so that the five of them did not have a chance of avoiding the attack!

Jackie frowned and continuously performed seals with his hands. The grayish-black seals formed in his palms, and within the blink of an eye, all 35 soul swords appeared in his palms. The 35 soul swords exuded energy that looked like mist.

At this moment, the Divine Void Warriors that came rushing toward him were covered in a red light in mid -air. The next second, the three warriors separated into six warriors. Six identical Divine Void Warriors held onto the same red sword as they aimed for the center of Jackie's head!

Chapter 2274
Jackie put his hands together, and the 35 soul swords floating in his palms immediately combined into three. Three huge soul swords floated three meters In front of Jackie, and a sharp look flashed past his eyes.

The old announcer mentioned that the Divine Void Warriors were stronger than the warriors he faced during the second challenge. Although they were not very much stronger, it was no longer realistic to handle all six of them with the previous strategy he used. He had to defeat half of them first!

Once again, he performed the seals with his hands, and the grayish-black seals instantly merged with the huge soul sword in front of him. The soul sword was like a cannon ready to be launched. With a swing, the huge soul sword rushed toward the Divine Void Warrior. Both parties moved speedily and rammed into each other before Jackie managed to take his second breath.

With a loud bang, the red light and the grayish-black soul sword collided with each other heavily. At that moment, the black and red colors blended together.

All of a sudden, with the sound of something creaking, the red beam seemed to falter.

Jackie only focused on attacking those three Divine Void Warriors, and the remaining three were still rushing toward Jackie without hesitation. Jackie's energy had been exhausted, and his new energy had not been replenished.

The remaining three Divine Void Warriors were right before him, and a gust of strong wind landed on Jackie's face. This was the energy wind aroused by a martial skill before the skill came attacking at him. Jackie could have very well suffered tremendously had the attack hit him squarely.

At this moment, Jackie's eyes were bloodshot, and those three Divine Void Warriors had already turned into three bundles of red light. They arrived within three meters of Jackie's surroundings at a speed invisible to the naked eye. He could even see the sharp edges of the knives illuminated by the red light. All three Divine Void Warriors acted simultaneously, using a semi-encirclement attack and blocking all possible escape routes Jackie had.

The people standing at the bottom of the slope were In an instant uproar when they saw this scene; Jackie was sure to lose if he failed to prevent this attack. After all, his strength was limited, and he was completely defeated during the first attack. He was fortunate to arrive at this challenge and fought with the four other masters. If the martial skill he practiced did not happen to suppress the corpse puppets, he would have been eliminated a long time ago.

On top of that, he was not the most careful when he attacked the warriors. The Divine Void Warriors had increased from three to six, but he managed to only combat three. Did he think that the remaining three would not attack him after he defeated the first three of them? Such a method of confrontation proved his lack of experience in combat. Anybody who experienced several serious battles would not make such a decision and allow themselves to land in this unresolvable dilemma.

Griffin harrumphed coldly. "He's done for this time!"

Griffin, however, discovered that Jackie was no longer where he stood at that very second. A second later, he heard a loud explosion, and the attacks from the three Divine Void Warriors slammed to the vacant spot where Jackie had stood.

He had disappeared into thin air.

Griffin could clearly hear the deep inhales coming from around him and his own pounding heartbeat." Impossible! How did he disappear?!" growled Griffin's hoarsely, his disappointment and anger evident.

Chapter 2275
Griffin was disappointed that Jackie managed to evade the attack and was enraged that Jackie was able to continue fighting

Jackie once again appeared right after his remark, though he did not stand in his initial position. Instead, he moved ten meters away in a flash and appeared behind the attacking three Divine Void Warriors.

Whoosh!

The huge soul sword that was fighting against the three Divine Void Warriors completely swallowed the red light. The grayish-black sharp sword acted as if it came from an abyss as it broke through the attack and defense of the first three Divine Void Warriors. The sword pierced through the bodies of the three Divine Void Warriors within the blink of an eye. As the three huge soul swords pierced through their bodies, the first three Divine Void Warriors instantly turned into red specks of light and floated in midair.

Jackie exhaled deeply as he stared at the red specks present after he defeated the first three Divine Void Warriors. He knew that if he did not wipe out the remaining three warriors, these red specks would be absorbed by the warriors to strengthen themselves. Jackie dared not waste any time. He roared lowly and once again performed the grayish-black seals with his hands. The seals integrated themselves with those three huge soul swords used to kill the first three Divine Void Warriors speedily.

All three huge soul swords released a bright blackish ray of light. Jackie took a black sword out of the Mustard Seed at this moment. This sword achieved great things when they were in the blood world, and Jackie felt extremely confident now that he had the sword in his hands.

All three huge soul swords immediately rushed toward Jackie as if their souls had been summoned after Jackie took out the black sword. Within the blink of an eye, all three huge soul swords melted on the black sword like snow melting under the hot sun. The black sword immediately looked like it was covered in a layer of grayish-black halo, and mist of the same color surrounded the sharp edge of the knife. It was as if a black-colored fire was surging from it.

At this moment, those red sparks rushed toward the remaining three Divine Void Warriors speedily as if they had been summoned. Jackie grew taut like a tight rope as he activated the laws of space and once again disappeared from where he was.

He had to kill the remaining three Divine Void Warrior before those red sparks arrived!

At this moment, a loud cry of distress could be heard by his ear. A person flew across the air like a kite with a broken string before landing heavily far away, Jackie was in no mood to see who had been sent flying away, however, as his eyes were trained solely on the three Divine Void Warriors like an eagle.

He waved his sword, and the combined power of those 35 swords was swung forward by the black sword. A suffocating wave of spirit energy immediately landed on the Divine Void Warrior nearest to Jackie. Originally, 11 soul swords were sufficient to kill one Divine Void Warrior, what more the power of 35 soul swords combined into one.

Swoosh!

The black sword's momentum did not weaken after It cut through the red sword. In the blink of an eye, the black sword had sliced the Divine Void Warrior into two. The warrior instantly exploded into specks of red lights!

After killing one, Jackie gritted his teeth as he attacked the second Divine Void Warrior, who sped toward him at the same time. The sound of weapons clashing against one another could be heard as the red and black swords collided with one another. An unstoppable wave of energy immediately exploded, and Jackie broke the red knife into pieces.

The Divine Void Warrior quickly moved backward, but Jackie did not plan to provide him with any chances to retreat and attack again. He pounced forward again like a famished eagle who had not feasted on meat for ten days.

Chapter 2276
With another slash of the sword, the second Divine Warrior completely disintegrated into spots of red light. In a flash, only one Divine Warrior was left next to Jackie.

This time, Jackie was not fast enough. That Divine Warrior had already absorbed the red spots from the Divine Warriors that died earlier. The Divine Warrior's strength suddenly increased dramatically.

Jackie swept his divine senses around as he began to make estimations. The Divine Warrior before him had strengthened by roughly a third. After his attacks, the third Divine Warrior once again put Jackie on the defensive.

This time, Jackie was calm as usual. The space under his feet started to distort again as he retreated 5 meters back, and this gave him enough time to catch his breath. As he took a deep breath, he started to use Destroying the Void again.

When the third Divine Warrior rushed at him, he raised his sword to attack once more.

After five breaths, a sound reverberated throughout, and the final Divine Warrior disappeared under Jackie's black blade.

The others were not done with their battles yet, and the energy fluctuations from their own battles turned into gentle breezes after being weakened by the spatial wall. The wind brushed against Jackie's body, and his hair fluttered with the gust.

His right hand held the blade as he stood still like a tree that would never fall for ten thousand years. He stood right in front, and all the Divine Warriors were already dead. He had no more obstacles in front of him, and he could continue going upward. This time, he would arrive right at the 823-meter-range, where the last Divine Warrior was.

After going through the obstacles planned by the last Divine Warrior, he would reach the peak of the Divine Void Slope and face the final battle.

Of course, that was contingent on others being able to reach the final stage like he did!

“He won! He actually… won! He killed three Divine Warriors.” Those at the 274-meter mark gaped at the sight. Shock was no longer enough to describe what they felt at the moment.

Only Jackie’s immense strength allowed him to continue climbing.

They had thought that Jackie was not qualified and that his luck would not last, yet every judgment they lay on seemed to come back at them like a vicious slap on their faces.

Skilless? Luck? Did he really pass the third stage by sheer luck?

What about the other four who had yet to win? What about them?

Those people no longer knew what to say. They were already sure in their hearts that Jackie absolutely did not have that skill, that he was not worthy of standing alongside the other four.

Everything that happened earlier was right before their eyes. Jackie fought quickly and decisively, and he had a strange movement technique that helped him escape danger numerous times.

He broke through the attacks and defenses of the three Divine Warriors in one move, and after he avoided their attacks, he easily killed the three warriors.

They had thought that Jackie’s inexperience in battle had caused him to fall into a disadvantage, yet Jackie seemed to have already known what to do, and had quickly dealt with the battle without delay.

Those Divine Warriors that feel so unbeatable to them went down like paper before him!

Chapter 2277
“Jackie seems far too strong. Compared to him, I’m nothing! Even facing just one Divine Warrior, I had to use my true energy to kill it, yet he fought three at once and didn’t seem to use too much of his strength! Comparing myself to others will really be the death of me.”

“That’s right. I thought that this brat was only lucky to be able to get to this point, and he’s only at the intermediate stage of the innate level!”

The fact that Jackie was only at the intermediate stage of the innate level turned into their biggest point of confusion in understanding Jackie’s true strength. After all, all of them were already at the late stage, thus those in the intermediate stage should have been weaker than them.

Shockingly, Jackie completely changed everyone's view. They no longer dared to look down upon anyone at that level.

Griffin and Theo glowered at this. Everything they had dismissed as luck earlier had turned into sore spots. Jackie was strong-stronger than any of them.

If they had been in Jackie's position, they would probably only have been able to last a few breaths before being surrounded and killed by the Divine Warriors. There was no second option!

"How could this be? He's so strong!" Griffin's lips quivered, his voice raspy with exhaustion.

Jackie shocked him far too much. Griffin's confidence had been shattered again and again by Jackie, leaving him nothing but an empty vessel, unable to do anything.

Theo's face looked even worse than Griffin's. He was someone who always sought benefits. For the sake of the masked man, he had hid the true reason for his fellow disciple's death and insulted Jackie with the masked man.

Of course, he did so also because he was afraid of the strength of the masked man. At this point, however, he realized that Jackie, who he kept on targeting, was just as powerful as the masked man. He was no match for Jackie, and going up against Jackie was his greatest miscalculation.

Remembering the way Jackie looked at him, Theo felt a chill in his heart. Jackie would not let him off, and Jackie would surely kill him when given the chance!

Nelson looked at Jackie with a glint in his eyes, his lamenting already enough to fill up a whole bucket. He had thought that Jackie was a junior he needed to protect, yet Jackie was just as strong as direct disciples from fourth-grade clans.

No wonder Jackie had ignored Griffin from the start and had been so rude. He had the skills and could walk the talk!

Those from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had the most complicated feelings about it. Other than Jackie himself, not one of the 20 disciples from the sect thought that Jackie would be able to reach that stage and be so strong.

Riv muttered to himself, "If I recall… Didn't he just start studying under the elder? He was even an outer disciple before."

Others did not know of Jackie's growth, but the Dual Sovereign Pavilion's disciples did. Jackie had just been an insignificant outer disciple before that, even if he was ranked decently among them.

They clearly remembered the Eleventh Elder picking out a disciple back then, and how intense the reaction had been when the Eleventh Elder picked Jackie. All of

them said that Jackie was not worthy of being under an elder and that the elder should have chosen an internal disciple.

At this point, it looked like their opinions back then were a joke. Even the first place among the chosen disciples would probably not be able to stand up against Jackie. Furthermore, Jackie was only at the intermediate stage of the innate level.

“Fiend!” Nelson spat out what he felt in his heart.

At the 549-meter-mark, Jackie turned back and looked at the heavily injured Lennon. The figure that was sent flying earlier was precisely Lennon, who had already been eliminated, and was sitting cross legged.

Lennon being the first to be eliminated was within Jackie’s expectations, because he was the weakest among the five of them. Even Benjamin was slightly stronger.

Chapter 2278
Lennon seemed to have felt Jackie’s gaze. Lennon abruptly looked up, and when he saw Jackie calmly looking at him, Lennon felt like he had been slapped on the face a few times.

He wanted to say something to protect his dignity, but no words came out of his mouth. All he could do was hold back the burning feeling in his stomach, suffering without anything to retort with.

Before he saw everything for himself, Lennon would still have had the guts to shout back at Jackie’s gaze, That was no longer the case since Jackie’s skills were on full display.

The sound of close quarter combat could be heard, and Jackie did not even need to turn around to know that the battles of the other three were already reaching a conclusion.

“Ack, ack!” Benjamin spat out a mouthful of blood, his eyes reddening as he reached his limits. He had used up all the strength he had but only managed to kill three Divine Warriors.

If he tried to force it, he would only injure himself more. There were no miracles to be seen, so he shouted out with a heart full of reluctance, “I surrender!

His reluctance was pointless. The truth was right in front of him, and there was nothing he could do to change it. When Benjamin shouted out those words, the red sword that was aimed at Benjamin stopped, and a vibrant red light fell on Benjamin’s body. The battle was over, and Benjamin was eliminated.

Jackie let out a sigh, not even looking at what was happening around him. He increased his speed as he set his eyes on the 823-meter-area, walking up step by step.

Jackie walked with a carefree stride, not thinking about what was happening around him at all. His actions rendered many speechless. Everyone had thought that Jackie would wait for everyone else's battles to end before returning the insults they had hurled at him several fold.

Regardless of what had been said, Jackie should still have returned the favor…yet it seemed like Jackie did not care at all.

The 823-meter area appeared in front of Jackie. A Divine Warrior appeared in front of him just like before. He used the same gaze to look at Jackie, as if it did not matter what level of skill Jackie was at when standing in front of a Divine Warrior.

Even though he did not look back, he could still feel the gazes on him. He raised his head and looked forward. The peak of the Divine Void Slope was captured in his eyes. A white glow encompassed the peak of the Divine Void Slope, which was probably the reward for the victor.

Eighth-grade pills and Seventh-grade spirited grasses were just the least of the treasures. There were still countless valuable things there. Thinking of this, Jackie could not help but recall the sneaking question that had been in his mind the whole way.

The Secret Place for Resources undoubtedly had close ties with the Divine Void Slope. The series of tests seemed to be aimed at picking an inheritor, and their conditions seemed very clear: they wanted someone with strong spiritual or martial arts training.

Even though those people from before kept running their mouths and ended up being caught by surprise by his skill, he still had to say that he was very lucky. Those tests so far seemed tailor-made for him.

If it had not been for that, it would have been much more difficult for him to reach where he was.

Just as his thoughts wandered, a faint shout came from below him.

Jackie subconsciously turned around to look. The masked man had just taken down the last Divine Warrior with a slash!

The red lights were swallowed by dark purplish lightning, and the last Divine Warrior turned into spots of red light, dispersing into the air.

The masked man's right hand was slightly trembling, his breath erratic after using a lot of his true energy. The masked man struggled to stand up straight, and his eyes were like a crescent moon, exuding a cold and arrogant glow.

Chapter 2279
He won! The masked man had passed this stage, too! His lips curled up slightly, feeling rather pleased with himself

The masked man had put his full focus on the battle earlier, so he did not know what was happening around him at all. He had no clue who was eliminated and who had succeeded.

However, all of that was not important to the masked man at all. He refused to believe that there was anyone else who could possibly complete the task before he did.

He let out a cold laugh, thinking to himself that Jackie was just a piece of trash who happened to be lucky Graham was a little skilled but was still not at his level. The other two were not worth mentioning, since they barely passed the third stage.

Thinking about that, he smiled as he turned his head around. He saw Lennon and Benjamin both surrounded by red glows, and he immediately knew that they had been eliminated just as he expected.

The two of them had a strange look on their faces. Why were they looking at the peak of the slope with a look of anger and helplessness, but also with a trace of acceptance?

Were they reluctant to accept the fact that they were already eliminated from getting the rewards?

However, those thoughts did not last long, because he noticed that Jackie had disappeared. The masked man was someone incredibly self-centered and had a big ego. He did not care much even for his fellow disciples.

However, he cared particularly for that brat under whom he had suffered from multiple times. He wanted nothing more than to have Jackie at the bottom of his feet, begging for his life.

When he saw that Jackie was not around, the masked man immediately looked around. Jackie was nowhere behind or below…so where did he go?

Those thoughts did not dwell in his mind for too long when he felt something wrong. He followed Benjamin's and Lennon's gazes up 91 meters further on the slope. Jackie was standing there, unmovingly.

He… was already at the next spot!

How could Jackie already be at the 823-meter mark? What was he? Did he pass? How could he have passed? He had actually reached the next stage first!

Those thoughts played in the masked man's head, causing him to lose control of his expressions. He looked like an angered lion and his breath became erratic, looking like he wanted to kill someone.

"How could this be! How did he do that?!"

Those words came out of clenched teeth, and his voice was incredibly hoarse.

When Lennon heard the masked man's roar, his expression froze. He naturally knew of the grudge his senior had with Jackie. With Jackie beating the masked man at every corner, it was no surprise that he was angered.

Lennon gulped subconsciously, carefully saying, "He … He ran very quickly and avoided many attacks. After that…"

After that, he killed the six warriors and passed.

Of course, he did not dare to utter the last words. He was worried that the masked man would tear him apart if he did. To calm the masked man, he was forced to stammer out that Jackie had run away very quickly.

However, those words did nothing to console the masked man. The masked man was already thoroughly crazed at that moment. He had been pushed back by Jackie at every angle. Ever since he was born, he had been a master among masters and was never behind everyone.

How could he not explode being beaten again and again by Jackie like that?

Chapter 2280
For a moment, all the masked man could feel was his anger boiling. It seemed like there was a volcano erupting in his heart, and the lava had completely drowned all sense of reasoning he had. Lennon was scared pale.

There were constant struggles within the Corpse Pavilion itself, and their schemes were much more intense than regular clans. For the masked man to have been able to stand at the top like that, how could he not be ruthless? There must have been countless Corpse Pavilion disciples that have died in his hands.

Lennon might have a certain amount of talent as well, but he was nothing compared to the masked man. He very clearly remembered that the masked man had already entered the spring solidifying realm. However, to head into the Hidden Place for Resources, he had to suppress his level.

Even after going through so many hoops, he did not gain any advantages. It was definitely a huge blow to the masked man's mental state.

"You… Just you wait!"

Those words were uttered by the masked man through clenched teeth. His eyes reddened as he viciously glared at Jackie's straightened back.

"Ugh…" Graham spat out a mouthful of blood. He knelt on the floor with one leg as the final Divine Warrior was finally defeated. He let out a long breath as he pushed down the true energy that was activated in his body.

He passed!

After spitting out that mouthful of blood, he felt much better despite his depleted strength. Ever since started walking up the Divine Void Slope, he had been fighting the whole way. Even though he did sit and rest occasionally, he was still in a fatigued state.

It had been an intense battle, and Graham could feel his blood curdling. He had some internal injuries but could still keep them under wraps. After he stood up, he heard a congratulatory voice, “Congratulations for passing, Graham.”

He did not even need to turn around to know that Benjamin was the one who said that. He took a deep breath as he nodded. He then stood up and looked right over to the masked man. The masked man seemed like he was in a state of rage and was panting in anger.

Graham frowned, not understanding why he acted in such a way. When Benjamin saw Graham’s confusion, he stammered, “Graham, look up.”

Graham looked up, just as Benjamin told him to, and noticed the green-robed man standing quietly at the 823-meter mark like an immovable rock.

Graham was stunned, and he suddenly turned his head. He looked at Benjamin, who was still shrouded In a red glow, and when Benjamin nodded reluctantly, Graham immediately understood.

He did not think too much of Jackie since he bore no grudges against the guy. Even though Jackie had been neck-to-neck with him the whole way, he had never really bothered with Jackie.

Before the sixth stage started, he had agreed with the others that Jackie was just lucky to reach that state. Even though luck was important, skill was still what determined victory in the end.

Without skill, he would not have gone far and would have been eliminated at this stage. However, Jackie was already at the 823 meter mark faster than they were. That was definitely a blow to those who looked down on Jackie.

“How did he do it… How!!” Graham’s tone was low as he blurted that incredulously. His entire body trembled when he recalled that the guy was only at the intermediate level of the innate stage.

Even though he had no grudges against Jackie, he was still filled with dissatisfaction and anger, feeling like he had been beaten by someone beneath him.

The masked man heard Graham’s mutters, and his light tone was full of unrestrained anger, “This brat is very durable and much stronger than you, so how could that not be possible?”

He planned on igniting Graham and Jackie’s relationship.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2281-2290

Chapter 2281
Even after this remark, however, the masked man did not stop. He started to walk over to the 823 meter mark. Each step he took felt incredibly resolved and heavy, and it was also filled with the intense flames of anger.

Graham lightly snorted. He was no idiot and knew what the masked man was trying to do. Despite that, he still felt uncomfortable in his heart. Since the masked man had made his move, Graham did not dwell on it and started to head to the 823-meter range as well.

After a while, the two of them arrived at the same spot where Jackie was. At that moment, only three were left with the right to continue forward. Graham and the masked man were within everyone's expectations, but Jackie was definitely an unexpected factor.

The spectators all looked at Jackie with surprise. Jackie raised his eyebrows when he saw the other two finally arrive but did not say anything else.

That time, the masked man said nothing for once. Before, he would always shoot a few words whenever he saw Jackie, and each time, his words would be filled with cold mockery.

He chose to keep his mouth shut this time.

Jackie looked over with some curiosity, and he saw a pair of bloodshot eyes. The masked man looked at him as if he had killed the masked man's whole family, rendering Jackie speechless.

In the silence, the hoarse was heard again, causing the atmosphere to become tense.

"This is the ninth Divine Warrior. After passing this stage, you can climb to the top!"

With those words, everyone on the Divine Void Slope felt their body stiffen. A formless energy started to wrap around their whole bodies.

The next moment, the space around them started to distort. When they studied their surroundings again, there was a massive change in the scenery. The tall Divine Void Slope had disappeared, and they had arrived at a foreign blood-colored world.

When the energy that surrounded his body disappeared, Jackie looked. It was another world that had been stained red with the color of blood. Compared to the previous world, however, this one contained a little more life.

Looking forward, there were hills and also some withered trees scattered around.

In front of them was a massive mountain, taller than the clouds. It was massive, and Jackie estimated that it was about a hundred miles away from him. It was large, but Jackie could still clearly see the naked mountain, and there was even lava flowing at the peak.

There was the clear plow of fire at the peak, and even dark gray rolls of smoke coming out. Looking at that scene, Jackie immediately thought, 'Volcano!' It was definitely a massive volcano.

Jackie walked around the spot and found that there was nothing else around him other than himself Could it be that he would have to kill zombies to pass again?

As he thought about it, the old voice could be heard again, "That active volcano is called Netherworld Mountain. As long as you arrive at the foot of the mountain, you'll earn the right to continue climbing."

All they had to do was arrive at the foot of the mountain? Jackie blinked suspiciously. It was quite different from what he had thought.

The old voice continued saying, "All those who climbed the Divine Void Slope have the right to participate in this stage."

Those words shocked Jackie. Anyone could participate?

Chapter 2282
"There is a myriad of fiends in the blood world. If you kill them, they'll turn into spirited grass and herbs, even valuable martial arts and skills. This is the Divine Void Slope giving you a chance," the hoarse voice continued saying before Jackie could recover from his initial shock.

Upon hearing that, everyone who had come to the blood world perked up in an instant. They were wondering earlier why they were sent to this level, and what was the point of going to the foot of Netherworld Mountain with those three men.

Their doubts were answered.

The hoarse voice announced again, "You're now standing at a hundred and twenty miles away from Netherworld Mountain. The closer you are to the mountain, the more powerful the fiends are, and the number of fiends who were able to turn into treasures will become rarer."

The words from the mysterious being were like a dose of stimulant that roused the crowd with motivation and high spirits. Ever since they stepped into Divine Void Slope, they encountered and witnessed nothing but failure after failure; they had not been able to achieve anything for themselves.

The countless treasures were only gifted to the champions, and there was nothing for them but to drool in envy. The fact that there was finally a chance for them to gain something had naturally thrilled them.

Plenty of them were eager to dive right in, fantasizing the possibilities of killing tens of thousands of fiends and attaining limitless treasures and precious martial skills.

Jackie, on the other hand, was not thinking of the treasures he might get from killing fiends. The owner of the hoarse voice had clearly stated that the closer they got to Netherworld Mountain, the levels and powers of the fiends would become greater.

Their mission was to get to the foot of Netherworld Mountain, and by the time they arrived, they would be facing fiends of unimaginable power. As expected, the difficulties of each level escalated quickly.

Jackie let out a gentle sigh as his mind wandered back to the time when he had first arrived at the Secret Place for Resources and faced the three-headed wolf shortly after arriving. He had zero knowledge of the three-headed wolf's level of cultivation at the time. It was Heath who told Jackie that the three-headed wolf was only at its preliminary level of cultivation.

He wondered if he would have the same problem of not being able to identify the fiends' cultivation level in the blood world. If that was the case, the difficulty of this definitely went up by a notch.

"Your lives don't matter in this world. If you were to be killed by the fiends here, you'd be dead for good. It won't be like before where they'd teleport you out if they sensed that you're in danger."

The news rained on them like a cold pail of water during the harshest of winter. Everyone was frozen In terror upon hearing that, fearing that they might be killed off by the fiends.

They did not expect that their lives would be in danger here. Even though their passions were not as vigorous as before, the majority of them were still in high spirits, tempted by the innumerable treasures.

Cultivators were meant to go against the heavenly principles anyway; death was just part and parcel for them. Those who made it to the Secret Place for Resources were all elites from different fractions, and death was not going to stop them from advancing

Those elites had been through hell and back. They had been to treacherous places to obtain points for their clans and to train their combat skills.

Danger was bound to follow them whenever they go, anyway. Sure, they were slightly shaken and their spirits were not as high as before, but they were still fervent.

The hoarse voice continued, “If you don’t wish to participate at this level, you’re free to stay where you’re at right now. You’ll be sent back to Divine Void Slope in two days.”

This meant that this level would last for two days.

‘Does this mean that if in two days we don’t reach the foot of Netherworld Mountain, we’ll fail the mission?’ Jackie thought as he raised his brows knowingly.

Chapter 2283
The hoarse voice resounded again while Jackie was still deep in thoughts, “This level will take two days to solve. You’ll be eliminated if you’re unable to reach the foot of Netherland Mountain in two days. The level will begin-now!”

The hoarse voice went completely silent soon after. Jackie stood still as he exhaled a long, heavy breath. He had to calm his nerves and braced himself before he proceeded. He thought thoroughly about everything the hoarse voice had said.

The mysterious owner of the hoarse voice used’ fiends’ to describe all the obstacles they might face, and Jackie knew it was just a collective term.

No one knew what sort of monster they would face at this level. After contemplating for a while, Jackie took out a brand new mask from the Mustard Seed and put it over his face.

Even though he would not be able to see anyone, he knew for sure that he would run into people on this journey. He did not want others to recognize him as Jackie White as it would only cause him more trouble. If the masked man were to figure out his whereabouts, he would no doubt come looking for trouble.

With his current cultivation level, he would probably be able to take the masked man on squarely. However, his objective was to break through the level, not to have a battle with the masked man. Concealing his identity would save him plenty of unnecessary troubles.

After switching to a new mask, he changed into some new clothes as well. He did his best to stay lowkey so that when he did run into others they would not be able to recognize him as Jackie White.

The aura inside the blood world was bleak, and there were no visible corpses or carcasses of any wild beasts. However, the place felt like it was once flourishing and that a harrowing catastrophe had rained and wiped out every single being.

Jackie proceeded cautiously and observed the surroundings that were fogged by absolute desolation. He gasped silently as an air of familiarity washed over him,

as if he had been here and witnessed everything before. He dug deep into his memories but could not seem to locate the exact time that it had happened.

“It’s keel grass! The spirited grass that’s ranked top six! What a lucky day for you, junior Hayden!” Samson Hill exclaimed enviously to Hayden Wales.

Moments ago, Hayden successfully killed a fiend that had the appearance of a big rat. Following the fiend’s death was a beam of crimson light, turning the carcass into a keel grass. The keel grass looked ancient, and they could definitely trade it for a good amount of contribution points.

“It’s just luck,” answered Hayden with a wide grin o n his face.

Isaiah Riley shook his head and exclaimed genuinely, “It’s not just luck, junior Hayden. Your abilities are very impressive as well, and I heard that you’re one o f the elites from Thousand Leaves Pavillion.”

The reason they referred to Hayden as ‘junior’ was because he was younger than them; they had no idea who was stronger amongst themselves as they had never fought hands in hands before. It was just easier to refer to him that way for the time being.

Jackie stood about ten meters away from them, concealed behind a skeletal tree. Those three had no idea there was anyone around.

It was the first time Jackie had encountered other people in the blood world. Alas, those were disciples of the North faction, and it would be troublesome if he were to run into people from the Corpse Pavillion. He would have to summon all of his power and attack mercilessly, since the Corpse Pavilion and him had sworn to fight each other to death.

However, he was not sure if he was allowed to kill wantonly in the blood world without being punished. It was certainly not worth the shot.

Chapter 2284
Jackie had not encountered a single soul, not even a fiend throughout the whole journey. That was the first time he had seen a living human. Among the three of them, he only recognized Isaiah.

Upon eavesdropping on their conversation, Jackie found out that Hayden was from Thousand Leaves Pavilion while Samson was from Muddled Origin Clan. The reason Jackie knew of Isaiah was because they were both from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

Dual Sovereign Pavilion appointed three of their chosen disciples to the Secret Place for Resources. Aside from Nelson and Griffin, the third chosen disciple was Isaiah. The chosen disciples of Dual Sovereign Pavilion were of honorable positions, and they could do whatever they want without facing consequences.

Ever since arriving at the Secret Place for Resources, disciples of higher positions were everywhere, and the chosen disciples had no chance to show off their honorable positions. Jackie had only a faint impression of Isaiah as a person.

Earlier when he had a conflict with Griffin, Isaiah stood aside without saying a word. He was not aggressive like Griffin, nor was he self-righteous and defending himself like Nelson did.

It was as if nothing mattered to him, and he showed no emotions. He also flunked the previous level in the blood world as he failed to kill 120 corpse puppets.

Jackie sighed silently. It was better if he did not show himself, even though he had a new mask and clothing. It was not guaranteed that they would not be able to recognize him after some interactions.

He had decided to wait for the three men to leave before he switched to another direction to head toward Netherland Mountain.

“Who’s there?!” Hayden shot a glare toward the dead tree.

Jackie was taken aback as he did not expect Hayden to have such a sharp perception. Jackie made no major movement, yet Hayden was able to sense him just by his sigh.

Hayden fetched his weapon in a swift movement, his eyes locked on the skeletal tree Jackie was leaning onto. The other two men became aware in an instance as they glared toward the same tree.

Jackie picked on the corner of his lips in annoyance; he did not anticipate to be found out by others. Hayden’s sharp perception was completely unforeseeable. If he refused to show himself, they would eventually start attacking.

He decided to step out from the shadow of the dead tree to avoid unnecessary trouble. He looked slimmer in his new white linen robe, but his vicious aura was unconcealable.

The three men stared in perplexity at the man before them in a white robe and an unfamiliar mask.

“Which clan are you from? Why were you listening to our conversation?” Isaiah’s brows knitted together as he interrogated Jackie.

All clan associations had their own regulations when It came to clothing. Disciples who joined a clan had to follow a dress code. Each title and position had different styles of clothing, but they were similar to each other.

Disciples of other clan associations were usually able to identify which clan a person was from according to the clothing that they were wearing. The robe Jackie had changed into was not of any other clan belonging to the West Cercie State.

Jackie let out a few coughs and altered his voice to a lower pitch. “I-I’ve been chased by the Corpse Pavilion’s disciples.”

Jackie paused briefly after saying that, refusing to further explain himself. However, the three men were able to tell from just one single sentence. If what the man before them was telling the truth, it would make sense that he changed his clothes and put on a mask to disguise his identity and cover his tracks.

“None of us are from the Corpse Pavilion and we’re also not from any of the South clan associations. You’re free to take off your mask, or at least tell us which clan you’re from,” Hayden responded coldly as he raised his brows in doubt.

Jackie knitted his brows upon hearing Hayden’s insistent tone.

“It’s fine, it’s not like we were exchanging any secrets anyway. It won’t matter if he eavesdropped on us. He’s probably just a passerby.” Samson took charge and tried to smooth things over.

Chapter 2285
Jackie nodded faintly; he had no intention to argue with them. As he turned around to leave the discord, an air of fragrance wafted into his nose.

The honey-sweet scent washed over him like a bed of blossoming flowers, and Jackie paused dumbfoundedly. Ever since he stepped into the blood world, everything within his peripheral vision was traumatic and desolate.

He had not smelled the scent of grass and wood, let alone the sweet aroma of flowers. The skeleton-bare trees and decaying stalks he encountered had been dead for God knew how many years. Its rotten and dreadful smell was always present.

Where did the sweet scent come from? Jackie turned his head around once again, facing the three men. The men seemed to have smelled the aroma as well, their faces scrunched up together, sensing how odd the sudden shift of air was.

The aroma became increasingly strong, and a sudden gust of wind blew their wispy long sideburns as it danced in the air.

“Did you guys smell that?” stuttered Samson with a stiff expression.

Isaiah and Hayden nodded.

“We shouldn’t be smelling any flowers in this world, but this aroma is as if we’re being showered in blossoms. What exactly is going on?” Isaiah asked calmly.

Upon saying that, a single petal drifted in front of them from above. The four men were stunned. As they looked up at the sky, flower petals were raining down like a blossom shower.

The scent grew stronger as the petals rained continuously. Jackie took a few steps back as his eyes were glued onto the sky. A sudden 'swoosh' was heard from below, and he looked down to find that his pocket had been slashed open. He knew there was something wrong with the petals.

Following that was a shrieking cry from Samson, "F*ck!"

Jackie followed the source of sound to find that Samson's cheek was slit open, fresh lava of blood flowed from his wound.

Jackie brought his brows together as he focused on the cut on Samson's face. The cut was forming blisters and decaying in mere seconds! It was obvious that the thing that slashed his skin open was poisonous.

"There's something wrong with the petals, be careful!" Jackie looked at Isaiah and urged kindly for the sake that they were both from the same clan.

The three men perked up, fully alert at this second. All four of them started forming a protective spirit, summoning their true energy to wholly protect themselves.

The petals that fell onto the ground still exuded sweet scents. A whiff of wind swept the petals off the ground. The petals surrounded them and flew in their direction as if they could see them.

The petals looked fragile and harmless, and at first it seemed to just blindly follow the wind. However, Jackie noticed that the petals had strong motivation to attack the four of them.

'Swoosh!'

Jackie snapped his head back to find that the protective spirit he had cast had been attacked by the razor-sharp petals.

Fortunately, Jackie's protective spirit and true energy were dense enough that the petals were unable to perforate through it. Jackie knitted his brows once again, glaring at the petals falling incessantly from the sky. He staggered a few steps back using the laws of space, attempting to dodge the petals' attacks.

Jackie looked up at the rest of them to find that they were still staring at the sky in bewilderment. "Run! What are you guys waiting for? If the petals penetrate your protective spirits, you'd lose your limbs-or worse, dead!" he spat in desperation.

Chapter 2286
Jackie's words snapped everyone out of confusion, and the three of them rushed outside immediately.

Petals were raining all around, and they did not know which way to head out. The three of them lost their sense of direction at that moment and just ran around blindly.

It was as if the wind could sense their desire to escape, the little breeze blowing on them suddenly became stronger, and eventually turned into a powerful gust of wind.

Jackie could only hear the sound of air current crashing and splashing like a hurricane. There were so many petals falling around that his surrounding vision was obstructed, and he could smell the floral fragrance all over the place.

Jackie and the others did not bother to stop and appreciate such beautiful scenery. He just ran the laws of space and instantly moved ten meters away In a blink of an eye, dodging the attack of the densest petals.

The petals were not giving up that easily. As Jackie shouted to the three people moments ago, the petals scattered around and quickly gathered toward him again.

Jackie frowned, and immediately activated the Spirit Shield. He made a series of seals with both hands, and a gray-black energy substance began swirling on his fingertips!

In an instant, thirty-five soul swords were wrapped I n front of Jackie's body. A muffled bang sound was heard as another petal, sharp as a blade, vigorously attacked Jackie on his Spirit Shield.

The impact force of this petal was not very strong, but there was more than just one around him trying to attack. Jackie looked around and noticed there were hundreds of petals surrounding him, like ghosts in the wind. Not every petal was aggressive, but Jackie could not tell them apart. His eyes flashed coldly, staring at the petal that had just hit him. He flipped his hand, and instantly a soul sword appeared and sliced the petal, shattering it to bits.

Jackie gritted his teeth, he did not know what he was going to do next. He could continue holding on for the moment. After all, void slaying was a long ranged attack. With all the soul swords in front of him, he could still resist the attack temporarily. However, he did not know when the petals would cease, and whether the fiend who was hiding in the dark would be depleted of true energy and stop attacking them.

Jackie's spirit was tense as he kept making seals with his hands. Several continuous bang sounds were heard as more petals that attacked Jackie were quickly obliterated by the Soul Sword. The surrounding petals were still too much as if it was never-ending. Jackie felt a little overwhelmed by just looking at them.

At this moment, Isaiah's voice came from a distance, "I can't get out!" he shouted loudly, "There are petals everywhere, I can't see clearly. Their attack power may not be strong, but there are just too many of them. We can't hold much longer!"

Indeed, they could not hold much longer. By then, their true energy would be completely exhausted, and only death awaits them. The old voice had said clearly, this level would not only bring great opportunities for everyone but also extreme danger. The sudden appearance of the petals had caught them all off guard, and now they got themselves in a helpless situation, unable to escape.

“I’m going to die, there are too many petals! Guys, do something!” Samson shouted with all his strength. He was injured by a petal attack moments ago, the wound festered and turned black in an instant. Although these petals have a strong fragrance, they contain toxins within, and any person that gets into contact with them will be poisoned.

Chapter 2287
The situation was bad as Samson struggled to hold on. He discovered the fiends had minds of their own. The petals attacked him more violently as they sensed him getting weaker.

Hayden let out a sigh, cold sweat breaking out on his forehead. He stayed silent as he listened to the screams of his other two companions. Now that they have fallen into a quagmire, death was the only way out if nothing was done.

Hayden still had a bright future ahead, and the last thing he wanted was to die in the Secret Place of Resources.

“Find the fiends! We know it’s hiding in the dark!” shouted Hayden loudly, “Only by killing the fiends can we be safe!”

He was right. With petals surrounding them everywhere, they did not even know which direction to flee in. If they failed to escape, the petals would eventually consume all their true energy and leave them to die.

The only way for them to get out was to slay the attacking fiend that was hiding in the dark. However, the problem was that they never discovered any fiend in the first place, and if it was not for the fiend’s attack, they would still be chatting around ignorantly!

They had activated their Aesthesis Sense previously to survey the area, but nothing was found. They could not feel any large energy movement nearby, as if there was nothing else around except the four of them.

“I can’t find anything!” Isaiah exclaimed in exasperation, “I’ve used my Aesthesis Sense to investigate around, but there’s nothing! What should we do next!”

“Why are we seeing such terrifying fiends here? I thought they would only appear around Netherworld Mountain?” Samson asked with a desperate tone of voice.

This question puzzled the three of them. They entered the blood world a few hundred kilometers away from Netherworld Mountain and encountered many small fiends at the beginning of their journey.

These little creatures did not pose any threat to them at all. They expected to face challenging fiends as they approached Netherworld Mountain, but they did not imagine themselves already fighting such formidable monsters just within the first ten kilometers of their journey.

The four of them were not the top among the crowd when it comes to strength, but they were not weak. For a fiend to trap and deal with all four of them at the same time, it was indeed one powerful creature.

Now that they were already facing such a formidable foe within the range of just ten kilometers, they could not imagine what sort of monsters they would meet if they proceeded further. This was an impossible task, even the oldest disciple of the Corpse Pavilion would not be able to advance much.

The four of them were feeling doubtful and apprehensive. Samson did not expect an answer to his question, but it got Jackie to realize something.

Samson was right, their location was indeed too far out, it was impossible for fiends of this level to appear. Jackie was a little puzzled by the weak attacks of the petals. Although he was trapped by the petals, he clearly felt their attacks were not strong.

Jackie may not be able to resist if the petals were to all strike him together, but he had never met with a swarmed assault. Even if it was a dense attack, it would only come in two petals at most…

Chapter 2288
Jackie had a sudden recollection in his mind. Something felt very familiar as if he had seen this kind of attack somewhere before!

The more he thought about it, the more familiar it felt. He took a breath, and a memory suddenly flashed In his mind. This memory was a little vague, but he could still remember it clearly.

“This kind of Illusory Wind Demon is the most troublesome. We can find it quickly if it’s on dry land. But it would be troublesome if it’s in a closed jungle.”

“But I remember that the Illusory Wind Demon is just a tiny fiend that has just entered the early stage o f the innate level…”

“Its attack power may not be strong, but it can draw true energy from Heaven and Earth anytime to make up for its lack of strength. As long as you are entangled with it, you need to have good strength and vision to overcome it. Otherwise, it would be trouble!”

The conversation flashed in Jackie’s mind. This memory did not belong to Jackie, but it was inherited from his predecessor back when he was still weak in his cultivation level. This particular conversation happened to his predecessor during a chatter with his friends in the third-world where he was there to fight a war with the goal of training and gaining experience for himself.

Moments after the conversation, Jackie's predecessor and his friends really did meet the Illusory Wind Demon. However, that one, in particular, did not rain petals all over the sky, but maple leaves instead! Countless maple leaves formed a small circle, trapping them in it, but after a series of tossing around, they managed to escape.

Back in the present, it was a different scenario. Jackie would not have remembered if it was not for the reminder of Samson's words.

They were very close to the periphery of the blood world and had only advanced within a range of ten kilometers. Logically speaking, it was impossible to encounter any powerful fiends. How could such a weak creature be able to pull off something so strong!

However, the Illusory Wind Demon is capable of doing this. When it matured into an adult, the Illusory Wind Demon was only at the initial stage of innate cultivation and considered weak amongst the fiends. But after encountering it, one would realize that it was actually troublesome to the core. It was more problematic than facing two fiends from the late innate stage, the Illusory Wind Demon may be weak in attack power, but it can trap its victims!

The Illusory Wind Demon could absorb the true energy around while attacking to make up for its own deficiencies. The attacks are continuous, making the Illusory Wind Demon a very difficult opponent to deal with, encountering one would just feel like falling into a quagmire!

If it goes on like this, it would not take long for the Illusory Wind Demon to completely deplete them of their true energy. After that, it will start attacking them. In addition to the creature's poisonous features, the situation would become critical.

"I didn't expect it to be an Illusory Wind Demon," Jackie thought to himself as he let out a long sigh. These fiends did actually exist in reality, but they all inhabited different continents.

Nowadays, there were not many exchanges between continents. Such monsters may only exist on one continent, and news about them could not be passed on. Naturally, people on the Hestia Continent had never seen this kind of attack, nor can they identify what exactly it was. Jackie, however, was different. With the help of the memory which he inherited from his predecessor, he instantly recognized the creature!

The Illusory Wind Demon was not undefeatable. As long as its weakness was pinpointed, it could be taken down easily!

Jackie could still remember the words of the friend of his predecessor from his memory.

"The Illusory Wind Demon was named in such a way because of its ability to conjure up illusions. It could disguise its attacks behind a façade of an everyday object, such as a leaf. They are excellent hunters, consuming the true energy

from your body while they can. As you succumb to exhaustion, they would then strike you with their strongest killing blow, and absorb the nutrients in your body after you are dead. Human beings are a delicacy to the Illusory Wind Demon! These creatures could be troublesome, but a s long as you find their physical bodies, you could easily diffuse their attacks."

Chapter 2289
"Where are their physical bodies?" Jackie's predecessor asked, being less knowledgeable during that period of time.

"It's right next to you! They will morph themselves into plants," his friend raised his chin as he replied to him, "Once they turn into plants, they can't move on their own. This is their biggest weakness. Also, their defense is very weak. Once you find their physical bodies, attack them! Even if they are in their early stages of the innate level, they can be easily taken care of!"

These words kept flashing in Jackie's mind. The Illusory Wind Demon would transform into a plant, and their range of attack was limited. Their physical bodies would just be around nearby as they conduct the attack.

Jackie clearly remembers not seeing any plants the moment he first set foot in the area. All around him were just barren, blood-red land. The closest to him was only a dead tree, and not even a single weed was found

Jackie froze all of a sudden. He realized he had overlooked something.

"Help! I can't hold on much longer!" Samson's gnashing voice came from a distance.

His hands trembled slightly as he struggled to hold up the Spirit Shield. At the same time, he used martial arts to attack the aggressive petals around him.

The petals' attack increased as if knowing that Samson could not hold on any longer, and seized the opportunity and struck him viciously.

"Hang in there!" shouted Jackie loudly from afar.

The three of them were stunned as they heard Jackie. What is this kid going to do? Does he have a plan? Now that they are trapped helplessly in this quagmire of petals, nobody seemed to have figured a way out. What could that kid do? It's ridiculous. Perhaps he was just trying to comfort Samson, who was struggling to hold on at the moment.

Samson had the same depressing thought. Even if he held on longer, it would be futile. They did not have a n escape plan. As he thought about his impending demise, he could not help but let out a bitter laugh, his entire self sunk into sadness.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Three more petals slammed into Samson's Spirit Shield, simultaneously consuming his true energy. In addition to himself being poisoned previously, Samson finally could not withstand it any longer.

A part of his Spirit Shield shattered and left a fistsized hole wide open. The petals scattered around Samson seemed to be waiting for this perfect opportunity, they quickly gathered and drilled themselves into the shield hole.

Samson could not stop them from coming in. The sound of slicing air could be heard as the first petal flew toward Samson, cutting his knife-wielding arm. Samson screamed as he felt severe pain.

Isaiah and Hayden both heard Samson's scream. Their hearts tightened immediately, "Brother, are you alright!" Isaiah shouted.

They did not hear any reply from Samson, it seemed that he had reached a critical point. As the petal pierced his arms, it also released its toxin into his wounds. A second petal was already aiming for Samson's neck. Now that he was seriously injured, he could no longer defend himself from the attack of the second petal!

Samson's mind was clear as ever in this very dire moment. He knew if this petal got to his throat, it would be his end.

Chapter 2290
Samson could feel the aura of death wrapping itself around his throat. His eyes were already shut as he slowly waited to die.

Sometimes, when a person knew they were at the brink of death, they would instead calm down. Samson was precisely in that state, although he really wanted to live on. He had a bright future ahead of him, after all.

He was an internal disciple in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. As long as he did not give up, he would be able to be a deacon in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion or even an informal elder. He had many possibilities.

Yet, that was all about to go up in smoke. The smell was so dense it stunned him, and he suddenly heard, "Found him!"

The next second, many wails filled Samson's ears. Samson suddenly opened his eyes, and the flowers in front of him seemed to have had their lives drawn out in front of him, wilting suddenly

As if decades had passed for them, the flowers turned to dust after they wilted, and a gentle breeze blew on Samson's eyes.

Samson's breathing became erratic, not believing what had just happened. He had clearly felt the scythe of the grim reaper right on his neck earlier! The next moment, the thing that had threatened his life had turned to dust.

‘What happened!’ That was the first thing that flashed in Samson’s mind when he woke up. The shouts he had heard earlier did not seem like they were made by a human, it sounded like the devil!

“Samson, are you alright?!” Isaiah’s voice could be heard in front of him.

Without the flower petals blocking them, Samson could finally see his surroundings. Isaiah seemed to be in a bad state as well. His clothes had been ripped In several places, but thankfully he was not injured.

As he looked at himself in worry, Hayden’s voice was heard, “You’re injured! The poison’s pretty bad as well, your lips are already turning purple. Hurry up and take the antidote!”

Hayden’s warning caused Samson to wake up completely. He did not dare think of anything else as he hurriedly retrieved a poison-curing pill from his ring, swallowing it. The pill entered his body, the medicinal powers poured out, and temporarily stopped the poison from spreading out in his body!

When his body felt a little better, he said loudly,” What happened? How did those flower petals disappear?” The moment he said that he noticed Isaiah and Hayden with shocked gazes looking behind him. Samson looked back.

What he saw was the masked brat earlier next to a large withered tree, hacking away at the withered tree’s truck with his blade.

The tree that was an unknown number of years old was oozing out a pinkish-red, blood-like liquid after being pierced through by the blade.

Looking at it in detail, they could actually see the tree seemingly shaking. It seemed to be having a final struggle before its death. The three of them were incredibly shocked at the scene, not knowing what to do.

Jackie stood upright, looking right at the tree! That was the true body of the Illusory Wind Demon. Due to the memories left behind by that person, he knew that the demon’s weakness was that it was unable to move its true body.

The Illusory Wind Demon had a limited range where it could use its skill. If it wanted to trap them, then its true body could not be far away. The demon would turn into a plant, hiding around them.

Yet, Jackie clearly remembered that there were no other plants around them other than that tree. The reason why Jackie did not think about the demon immediately was because of that tree. The reason was simple, the tree did not have any signs of life at all, it seemed like a tree that had been dead for many years.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2291-3000

Chapter 2291
Jackie stared at the demon trembling for a good long while, and the Illusory Wind Demon finally died! Under the surprised looks of the others, the demon suddenly exploded, turning into a pink light.

The light got more and more intense, so radiant it started to hurt their eyes. After a breath of time, the pink light disappeared. A round pill appeared in front of the three of them! The pill had a strong medicinal smell, and was obviously no common pill!

Jackie raised his eyebrow, sending his divine senses out. After that, he determined that the pill should be a seventh-grade pill. The only trying was that he did not know what the name or effect of the pill was.

However, no matter what, he was the one who killed the demon, and the pill should belong to him. He did not think much about it as he pulled out a box from Mustard Seed, placing the pill inside and keeping the box right in front of the three of them.

All of that was done very casually. The other three might be glaring, but they knew very well that they were not Able to fight over the treasure with Jackie!

After all of that, Jackie did not speak, and Samson was the person who broke the silence, “That was so scary! I thought I wouldn’t be able to see another day. The two of you don’t know, but the flowers almost slit my throat!”

Samson’s face was very emotional as he said that. He did not say that to break the tense atmosphere, it really was true that he was terrified. That moment, he had already accepted death, and his eyes were already dark.

If Jackie had not made a move then, he would really have died. The moment Samson said that he walked forward and saluted Jackie.

“Thank you so much for saving my life. If it wasn’t Exchanging looks before they walked forward and saluted Jackie as well.

Even though Jackie’s identity was suspicious, Jackie had given them so many reminders earlier. After Jackie had killed the demon and saved their lives, they felt that they should at least show some respect.

Jackie nodded, not thinking much about it. He wanted to turn around and continue by himself, but Samson suggested that moving in a group would be safer.

The blood-colored world had danger hidden everywhere. No one knew what would happen the next step of the way, so why not move together! Jackie frowned slightly, not feeling like he would benefit much from moving with them.

However, after thinking for a moment, he agreed to Samson's suggestion. Even though Hayden was still suspicious of Jackie, he decided not to pursue it since Jackie was not willing to say anything.

Isaiah smiled slightly and said, "We can understand you not wanting to reveal your identity, but can you give us something to call you?"

Jackie nodded, thinking for a moment before saying," You can call me White."

Hayden and Samson nodded, both of them calling him that at the same time. Isaiah's expression changed slightly when he heard that name.

Jackie's expression seemed to have something behind it, so Isaiah had his suspicions, but after measuring Jackie, he shook his head, feeling like it could not be so coincidental.

Chapter 2292
There were more than a hundred and eighty people who came into the Secret Place for Resources. Among those, who knew how many of them had the word White in their names. Furthermore, that guy was so mysterious, White must just be a meaningless moniker.

Thinking about that, he sighed, pushing away those thoughts from his head. Samson's attitude had changed after Jackie saved him, treating Jackie incredibly attentively.

Jackie had planned on advancing himself. After all, he had a special identity, and it would save a lot of trouble. However, sometimes traveling alone could greatly increase the danger.

The few of them could still help each other if anything happened. Furthermore, with how attentive Samson was, Jackie could not leave easily. The four of them formed a small alliance.

The alliance between the four of them was actually more honest than the alliance Jackie had with the five before he entered the Divine Void Slope.

The four of them continued walking toward the volcano as they talked. Samson's mouth never stopped, and completely revealed everything about the three of them.

"Honestly, the three of us shouldn't be this familiar with each other, but fate works in strange ways. Last year, I went to Mount Beasts to hunt monsters and was unlucky enough to meet a monster that was at the spring solidifying level.

“At that moment, my only idea was to frantically run. I did not care where I would end up, and I ended up bumping into Isaiah and Hayden.

“That beast was so bloodthirsty, it went straight for the three of us. The three of us were backed into a corner and used everything we had. Using some geographical advantages, we finally managed to kill that beast.”

Jackie raised his eyebrow and asked curiously, “The three of you killed a spring solidifying realm beast together?”

It was not that Jackie was looking down on their skills, but that spring solidifying realm beasts were not something innate stage combatants could deal with. The three of them were strong together, but it would still not have been enough.

Samson sighed helplessly, “The three of us together was somewhat enough. Even if we can’t really beat it, we can still hold on for some time.

“At that moment, the beast was already injured, and we had the geographical advantage, which was how we killed it.”

At that moment, his eyes glinted in a strange light. After falling into nostalgia, he found it hard to pull out.

Jackie nodded slightly, not asking any deeper. After all, the matter was already in the past, he did not really care if it was real or not.

Hayden did not feel like talking about the past. He raised his head and looked at the distant volcano. His dark eyes glinted as he excitedly interrupted the topic, “Who do you all think will pass?”

His question was enough to gain the attention of the other two, and the topic changed to what was on the minds of practically everyone in the blood-red world.

Chapter 2293
In their hearts, everyone was wondering who would pass. They wondered who would arrive at the foot of Netherworld Mountain, being the person who passed the ninth stage. Only that person would stand atop the peak of the Divine Void Slope. All they could do was look on in admiration.

Samson had a clouded look in his eyes, “I don’t know. Maybe it’s that guy from the Corpse Pavilion. It could even be Graham, or our other senior, Jackie.”

Samson calling Jackie a senior caused Jackie’s heart to move a little. He had entered the Dual Sovereign Pavilion late, and he had only become the disciple of an Elder. Everyone else usually addresses him as a junior.

Yet, with the skills that he had displayed in the Divine Void Slope, everyone acknowledged that Jackie’s skills were stronger than almost everyone there, so he was now a senior.

When Samson finished, he suddenly turned around and looked at Isaiah with curiosity, “Jackie’s from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, what do you know about him?”

“I heard he was an elder disciple, if that’s the case, you two must be very close”

Isaiah felt a sense of awkwardness at those words, not knowing what to say at that moment. In truth, Samson’s words were definitely logical.

Normally, disciples with insane talent like Graham would not interact much with the normal disciples. He was an untouchable existence, and one would be looked down on by others for trying to suck up to someone stronger if they tried to talk to him.

However, Jackie was different. He was an elder’s disciple. His status meant that he could be approached easily. With Isaiah’s status as a chosen disciple, he could definitely talk to Jackie easily.

Isaiah was not one of those people who liked to put on pretenses, so he shook his head bluntly, “Jackie’s situation is a little special.”

His mouth trembled slightly when he mentioned Jackie. After all, Jackie was still only an elder’s disciple, he was a level higher than Jackie.

Yet, he was not so naïve to think that he was better than Jackie. Jackie was clearly much stronger than he was. When Samson heard that, he was suddenly interested, and even slowed down his pace.

He widened his eyes, saying, “What’s so special about him? Is he actually the illegitimate child of some elder? Or is he someone sent by a high-ranking clan to train in secret?”

It had to be said that Samson had a very rich imagination. His thoughts even caused Jackie’s lips to twitch.

Isaiah smiled, somewhat speechless as he said, ” What are you even saying. I say he’s special because he only became an elder’s disciple not too long ago. I wouldn’t have had much time to interact with him at all, even if I wanted to.

“Furthermore, he doesn’t really enjoy interacting much with us. I thought he just liked moving alone and did not enjoy mingling. Now it seems like it’s just because he’s on a different level from us.”

Hayden caught on to the key point, and said in surprise, “He just became an elder’s disciple? Then surely he was one of the top internal disciples before this?”

Isaiah did not know how to answer that question even more. He somewhat awkwardly pursed his lips, looking around. He was very conflicted, not knowing how to answer for them to believe that he was not spouting nonsense.

Chapter 2294

Jackie sighed somewhat helplessly. No one knew better than him how he got to where he was. He knew what Isaiah was conflicted about, and he merely smiled plainly, wanting to see Isaiah's explanation.

After a long time, Hayden and Samson's faces were getting impatient before Isaiah finally said slowly," Jackie used to be an informal disciple, an incredibly ordinary one at that. He improved very quickly."

Hayden and Samson were stunned in place as if they had just heard something blasphemous. They looked at Isaiah with suspicious looks.

Those looks seemed to be accusing Isaiah. The looks seemed to imply that he should not have said something so dumb even if he did not want to reveal the truth

Isaiah sighed when he saw their expressions, "I'm really not lying. If you don't believe me, you can ask any other disciple from my clan. You'll know after that, it's not really a secret within our clan."

Isaiah's explanation caused them to believe it. Samson reached out and rubbed his face, "Is that true? He really was an informal disciple?"

Isaiah's nodded earnestly. Isaiah could not really believe it either. How did they never notice Jackie before? If Jackie had not been at the Divine Void Slope and had such a stellar performance, he would not even know who the guy was.

Hayden let out a long breath, "Jackie is already on the level of the best disciple from the Corpse Pavilion, and the third best-chosen disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion! He's just an elder disciple from a third-grade clan. Something like that has never happened before…"

Hayden knew Graham's skill and potential very well. After all, Graham was in the same clan as him. Thinking about that, he let out a sigh.

"I feel so useless comparing myself to them, but you two still haven't said who you think can pass."

Samson frowned before thinking about it in earnest. "Logically, the disciple from the Corpse Pavilion should pass, but I feel like Jackie has a greater chance of passing than he does."

"Yes, Jackie's level is lower than the Corpse Pavilion disciple's, but he's been able to overcome everything thrown at him so far…"

Even though Samson looked a little silly, he was serious when it came to important matters. He did not mention Graham and only the Corpse Pavilion's disciple. After all, Hayden was from the same place as Graham, it was a little impolite for him to evaluate Graham so honestly.

Hayden nodded, admitting it bluntly, “Jackie really is strong, and I feel like he’s full of secrets. He should be able to pass!”

The conviction behind his words made it seem like he was more confident in Jackie than Jackie himself. The other three did not know the subject of their discussions was right beside them, quietly listening to them.

After their evaluations, the three of them slowly went quiet. Jackie did not participate in the discussions from start to finish and merely listened on.

Chapter 2295
Samson felt like the three of them had spoken too much nonsense. Jackie never participated throughout, cutting himself out to be a lonely figure. He said, ” White, what do you think?”

Jackie raised his eyebrow, earnestly thinking for a moment, “I think the masked man will pass, and Jackie should as well.”

He merely said it to that point, which revealed Jackie’s thoughts. He did not think that Graham would pass. In through, the other three did not have that much confidence in Graham as well.

Yet, the other three never said it out so firmly. Hayden was a little unhappy, “White, you seem confident in your judgment as if it will happen for sure.”

The words obviously bore meaning behind them. Jackie was no idiot, he could tell that Hayden was a little angry as well. However, he did not care about that and did not reply to Hayden’s words.

Even though Jackie had saved the three of them, Hayden still harbored some feelings against Jackie. He felt that Jackie hiding his status like that was very cowardly.

Jackie not answering caused Hayden to be even more angered. Hayden’s eyebrows were raised as he prepared to shoot a few mocking words at Jackie. Yet, at that moment, something happened, and he abruptly looked over.

There’s someone there! Let’s go take a look!”

Jackie glanced at Hayden somewhat curiously. He did not expect Hayden’s senses to be so sharp. Jackie had not even felt anything when Hayden was immediately certain that someone was there. The few of them nodded at the same time, carefully walking toward the direction Hayden talked about.

There was a hill there, and the nearer they got, the louder the sounds of battle they could hear. Listening carefully, Jackie suddenly heard a familiar voice.

Byron’s whole body was trembling slightly. His right hand was clutching his left arm as blood flowed through the cracks in his fingers. It was obvious that he was injured. His face was pale as he looked over somewhere in anger.

“Let me say it again! We were the ones who discovered and killed this beast. The corpse flower it turned into after it died has nothing to do with you! Don’t even think about it!”

A cold laugh answered him, “That’s just wrong. We discovered the beast a long time ago, he just never made a move. It’s not that we couldn’t defeat it, we just didn’t want to get injured because of it.

“So we were waiting for more people to gather before we attacked, but you guys ended up making the first move! The Corpse Pavilion’s rules have always been finders keepers, it has nothing to do with who killed the beast!”

Byron’s face darkened, it was clearly daylight robbery. Everything they said was just a forced argument.

Jackie frowned, surprised that it was Byron. Jackie was only one hill away from them. No one noticed that they were there after they suppressed their auras.

Hayden angrily said, “They’re such bullies! Do they think the Thousand Leaves Pavilion is easy to bully?!

Isaiah said seriously, “It seems like there are three of them on both sides. If the numbers had not been equal, the Corpse Pavilion would probably have attacked!”

Chapter 2296
Over at the hill, two parties were preparing for battle. There were six of them in total, three from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, and another three from the Corpse Pavilion. Byron was leading the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, he remembered that Byron was a decent disciple of Thousand Leaved Pavilion, his ranking in the clan was pretty high.

Jackie’s only impression of Zamian was from their previous quarrel. From what he knew, he was just a lickspittle, always lingering around masked man, kissing and wiping his a*s.

You would probably need to have a decent amount of power in order to be the masked man’s bootlicker. The disciples of Corpse Pavilion who were under the reign of the masked man at the time were pretty respectful toward Zamian. Even though Zamian was not one of the chosen disciples, his position within the internal disciple was still reasonably high.

Jackie thought to himself and turned his head toward Hayden, “Do you guys know Zamian Ness?”

Upon hearing that, the three men paused in sync. Hayden looked at Jackie with a knowing eye, “Can’t believe junior Jackie knows of Zamian too.”

Jackie nodded, “As I mentioned earlier, both the Corpse Pavilion and I have grudges against each other. I know some of them who were of higher ranks. You know what they said about knowing yourself and your enemy.”

That was just an excuse given by Jackie. Whether or not Hayden believed him was not of importance. His only objective was finding out the identity of Zamian Ness.

Hayden chuckled lightly, his eyes glued onto Jackie." Zamian is one of the internal disciples of Corpse Pavilion. I heard he ranked first amongst the internal disciples, he had some impressive skills as well."

Jackie frowned upon hearing that. It was within his expectation, he thought Zamian was at the very least a chosen disciple, but he apparently had not reached the standards of a chosen disciple yet-he was just a mere internal disciple.

No wonder their conflicts were mostly just harmless quarrels. If one party were to overpower another, it would have been an actual battle instead of arguments.

Fury thrummed through Byron's veins as if he was going to tear Zamian. "Despicable rat, you exceeded my expectations of you. I knew you're a piece of sh* t, but I didn't know you'd stood as low as a maggot!"

Zamian snickered nonchalantly, he was completely unaffected by Byron's words. It was as if nothing Byron said would ever have an effect on him.

Byron was huffed and puffed, his whole being, shook in raw anger. "There's no way I'm giving you the corpse flower!"

Zamian's brows furrowed, his eyes were ablaze with flames. "Are you saying you want to duke it out?"

Byron hummed coldly, "If you say so. We'll settle everything at once!"

The reason he said that was because he remembered—if it was not for the sudden shift of space, the five men would have died under the men that the masked man led.

Zamian chuckled nonchalantly, "As I said, this corpse flower is mine! If you wish to die under me, I'll grant it. Don't forget, my men are on a winning strike, you three on the other hand- either injured physically or drained of true energy. You'll never beat us!"

Byron bit the inside of his cheeks in anger, his face paled. Zamian was not wrong, the three of them were spent after the previous battle.

They were indeed no match for him, but they refused to give up on the corpse flower they attained with their sweat and blood. It was humiliating, to say the least.

Chapter 2297
Hayden exhaled a long, deep breath. He shot up from where he was and dashed from the back of the hill to the front. "Follow me!" He turned his head and ordered as he galloped.

He appeared in front of Byron within a blink of an eye, Zamian and his men were taken aback by the sudden appearance and took a few steps back.

Hayden had quite a bond with the other two men. Sure, the two men hesitated but they eventually followed closely behind him. Since both Isaiah and Hayden were gone, it would be embarrassing if they stayed behind by themselves.

They sighed resignedly and followed closely behind. Upon seeing Hayden, Byron exclaimed as if he had found his savior, “Junior Hayden!”

Hayden nodded and strode next to Byron without saying a word. He straightened his back and stood closely beside Byron, it was obvious that he was here as his backup.

Zamian frowned as Hayden’s appearance was completely unforeseeable. It would have been fine if it was just Hayden, but he had three men with him. They were definitely at a disadvantage now that Byron had four extra helping hands.

Even if the four of them were not as powerful as him, they could still win by sheer quantity. Zamian thought as his face darkened into an ugly shade.

Ever since Hayden heard their quarrel, he had despised Zamian’s guts.

Hayden sneered, his tone cold as the Antarctic, “Is everyone in the Corpse Pavilion as despicable as you? Shamelessly claiming something that others had attained with their sweats and blood as your own. Even using some pathetic, baseless excuse! Such an abhorrent act, I can’t even stand to look at your revolting face!”

Zamian’s face scrunched as if he had just swallowed a bee.

“You-” He pointed his finger at Hayden as fury smoldered him, rendering him speechless.

Samson disliked every single disciple from the Corpse Pavilion, especially Zamian now that he knew of the treacherous things he had done.

He spat aggressively, “You better f*ck off now before we f*ck you up! We’ll make sure you either crawl out of here without all four of your limbs or die!”

The terrorizing words rained on him, he felt embarrassed knowing what they said was probably true. If they really were to get into a fight, he would definitely be at a disadvantage.

Seeing as Hayden seemed to have decent skills, Zamion was considering fleeing the scene before trouble fell on him. As he was still torn between wanting to leave and stay, a gust of wind whiffed aggressively.

He turned around to find a familiar shadow approaching them from a distance, leading three men in long, gray robes.

“Brother Rufus!” Zamian yelled excitedly.

Jackie turned his head around to look at the man. Rufus Bate was charming looking, his white robe varied from the others. He looked at Zamian and frowned in displeasure, and then moved his eyes toward Jackie and the others.

Rufus nodded faintly, he had not spoken a word since arriving. Zamian briefly greeted the men behind Rufus.

It was easy to tell that they were all from the Corpse Pavilion from their clothing, they were of higher ups positions, too. Jackie raised his brows as he found the scene before him to be amusing.

Chapter 2298
Jackie inched closer toward Hayden and said in a suppressed voice, “Who’s this Rufus? What’s his position within the Corpse Pavilion?”

Jackie knew very little about the Corpse Pavilion. He knew only a few people who were from Corpse Pavilion, and that was the limit of his knowledge. As for what went on within the Corpse Pavilion, he knew nothing compared to others.

Other than the few people in front, he only recognized the masked man and that man called Lennon. Lennon’s skills lost out to the masked man, and Rufus’ skills must be decent as well.

Otherwise, Zamian would not treat Rufus with such a respectful attitude, practically wagging his tail at the man. Hayden shot a look at Jackie as if he was especially irritated by Jackie’s continuous questioning.

Yet, they were still a small team, and in the end, he calmed himself down as he answered, “Rufus is a Chosen Disciple from the Corpse Pavilion, and is only just behind Lennon in skills.”

Hayden’s tone was quite serious. He looked at Rufus as if the man were a ticking time bomb. Jackie raised an eyebrow, somewhat understanding what Hayden was feeling

If Rufus was really only second to Lennon, then Rufus is probably a huge threat. Thinking about that, Jackie shot his gaze at the others.

All those who knew who Rufus was could only look at Rufus with a serious and helpless expression. Even those who did not know of his identity could basically guess a thing or two from Zamian’s respectful tone.

On their side, they did not have a single chosen disciple. Even though Isaiah was the chosen disciple of a third-grade clan, compared to one from the fourth -grade Corpse Pavilion, he was not worth anything.

At most, he would just be a relatively stronger internal disciple there.

Rufus did not seem to care about any of them at all. He frowned as he looked around, saying in a cold tone, “Are you so weak that you can’t even deal with a few minnows like them?”

The words were full of arrogance, dumping Jackie in with the rest of them. It was as if they were useless goods that could be destroyed at any time. Zamian had a bitter look on his face when he heard that.

In truth, he wanted to curse and swear, but he did not have the guts to. He hurriedly bowed, adopting a sincere tone, “How could I compare to you. With the tiny bit of skills that I have, there’s no way I can deal with that many people.”

Rufus’ words naturally infuriated Byron and the others. The Thousand Corpse Pavilion’s disciples were all red with anger as they stared at Rufus with hateful looks.

Possibly because he had been too emotional earlier, but Byron could not hold back anymore. He could not help but walk forward as he coldly glared at Rufus,” Rufus! The Corpse Pavilion is just a bunch of bullies!”

Rufus looked over at Byron as if he was looking at an ant, his gaze greatly angering Byron. Byron wanted nothing more than to rush over and speak his mind, but he was stopped by Hayden’s arms.

Rufus plainly said, “Bullies? Why are we bullies? My fellow disciple said earlier that the Corpse Pavilion already had our eyes on this corpse flower a long time ago.

“You’re the ones who rushed in and stole what’s ours. You should be thankful we’re not asking for anything back.”

Chapter 2299
His tone had been incredibly rude. Even Jackie felt angered listening to him, let alone the others.

Byron’s hands were already shaking with anger. His right hand was clenched tightly, and his left hand had already retrieved his weapon from his storage ring. The atmosphere was once again tense with the chance of battle at any moment.

Samson helplessly sighed, he was forced to whisper, “Rufus won’t be easy to deal with. He’s right behind Lennon in terms of skills in the Corpse Pavilion, and Lennon was in the top five earlier.”

Lennon might have been eliminated advancing from the sixth stage to the ninth, but he had definitely proven his skills. No one would question how strong Lennon was. So, for someone to be right behind Lennon, he was definitely strong as well.

They were obviously at the disadvantageous side, and Byron was already wounded. If they started to fight, It would be hard for their side to gain anything, and they might even lose a few lives. Samson’s skills were probably the weakest

among the seven of them, so if someone were to die, he would probably be one of the first.

That was why he chose to speak up at that moment. Byron glanced at Samson indignantly, “So we’re supposed to just hand over the corpse flower we so painstakingly obtained just because we’re scared?”

Earlier, the few of them had put in so much effort to kill the beast and obtain the corpse flower. With just a few nonsensical words, the Corpse Pavilion wanted to take it for themselves. How could he just accept that?!

Zamian let out a cold snort. He had been quietly observing the discontent among the disciples of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. All they could do was accept their anger in silence.

After all, with Rufus’ skills, fighting one against two would be something incredibly easy. Even the two strongest among the seven would not be able to stand up against Rufus, which meant their even numbers were useless.

In that situation, Zamian felt fearless, “How haven’t you left yet?! Are you really planning on fighting over the corpse flower with us? Why don’t you look at yourselves in the mirror first? With Rufus here, there’s no way you can obtain the corpse flower!”

That was adding oil to the fire, causing even more discontent among Jackie’s side. They were so angered that their faces were all red. All they wanted to do was rush forward and fight to the death against Zamian.

However, they knew very well that Zamian would only hide behind Rufus in a battle. Rufus was an incredibly strong backer.

When Rufus heard Zamian’s words, his face remained emotionless as he said coldly, “Either you get lost, or you die!”

Those words seemed to trigger something in Jackie’s heart. Before they entered the Divine Void Slope, the masked man had used a similar threat against them. He still deeply remembered how much he suffered.

With Rufus saying the same thing with the same tone, Jackie’s anger had been thoroughly ignited.

Samson’s face darkened as he forced himself to lower his voice, saying to the other six, “Rufus isn’t someone we can deal with easily. Let’s just bear with this for the moment. After all, this isn’t the only fiend around. After this, we might be able to kill even more fiends and gain more treasures.”

Samson received no reply. Everyone knew it was the right thing. Samson’s words might have sounded awful to listen to, it was still the truth. Rufus was not someone they could deal with easily.

Chapter 2300
For them, trying to face the seven of them head on would not bear any good results,

Yet, ever since they came to this place, they had been humiliated immensely. How can they just swallow their anger and leave so easily?

Byron's face was incredibly dark with anger. In order to kill the fiend earlier, he had used up a lot of his strength. No one could stand being humiliated like that with an injury on them.

Just as Byron wanted to resist again, a clear voice could be heard next to him, "I didn't want to do anything, but I really can't stand it anymore. You're Rufus? You're the hardest one to deal with?".

Those words successfully attracted the attention of everyone present. Both the Corpse Pavilion and the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's sides were all focused on Jackie.

Jackie walked a few steps forward, and his eyes were fixed on Rufus, Rufus smiled coldly, clearly not seeing through Jackie.

In order to properly cover up his identity, Jackie had even used his true energy to suppress his power. Of course, the suppression was temporary. The moment he fought, everyone would notice,

Rufus narrowed his eyes, measuring the masked man in front of him, "How ignorant! Do you know the consequences of mocking me?!"

Jackie laughed coldly, saying casually, "I'm not really mocking you. I just really can't stand the sight of you. Do you think you're very strong? Prove your strength to me then."

After saying that, everyone heard a swish as Jackie raised his hand. In a flash, a long black blade appeared in his hand.

The sword was full of densely packed seals as usual. The sword itself was actually not that special. It was something he found on Derek after killing the man.

Jackie felt like the sword felt very comfortable to wield, so he kept it in Mustard Seed. Looking at Jackie, everyone was stunned. Was he challenging Rufus?

Was he insane? Did he not know who Rufus was? Did he really think he could face a chosen disciple from the fourth-grade Corpse Pavilion?

If Jackie had been a chosen disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, with skills close to Rufus, they could be hopeful. However, they had never seen a chosen disciple like Jackie from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion at all.

Furthermore, the chosen disciples of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would never mask their looks and power. Since he was not one, he was purely looking for death.

Isaiah's mouth twitched as he berated in a low voice, "White? What are you doing? Are you trying to die?"

Hayden frowned, saying unhappily, "A duel against Rufus, how bold of you. Did you not hear my introduction of him earlier?"

Jackie let out a sigh, not caring what everyone around him was saying. His eyes were fixed on Rufus, Rufus let out a cold laugh as he looked at Jackie like he was looking at an idiot.

He stepped forward and pulled out his weapon from his storage space as well. Just like Jackie, he used a sword. Only, his sword was silver, and it glowed lightly with the light of the stars, like the milky way.

"It's been so many years, I've never seen someone look for death quite like you. If you want to die so badly, I'll fulfill your wish!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2301-2310

Chapter 2301
Looking at the situation, it did not seem like there was a way to stop it anymore. Samson looked at Jackie with a panicked expression, “White, are you crazy? If you fight him on your own, you’ll be killed!”

Jackie shook his head slightly, ignoring everything that was said. Zamian laughed loudly as he pointed at Jackie, “You’re crazy! You really don’t know your place. Rufus, this brat is challenging you, so you’d better not spare him any mercy. You have to show him what it means to challenge you!”

Rufus acted like he was ignoring Zamian’s words, but those words successfully made Rufus’ anger toward Jackie, peaked. To be challenged by an insignificant brat like that, if Rufus did not properly teach Jackie a lesson, it would mean that his skills were not good enough.

With that in mind, he ignored everything else as he launched himself forward, sword in hand. He rushed at Jackie, and Jackie smiled lightly, not even turning around as he said, “The rest of you retreat far away!”

Everyone else reacted immediately when they heard Jackie. Even though everyone was dubious of Jackie, the battle would definitely be intense. It would not do for them to be caught up within it.

So, when Jackie shouted out, they scattered. In a flash, the center was left with only Jackie and Rufus, who was rushing toward him.

The meter-long blade in Rufus’ hand radiated with coldness. Wherever he went turned cold to the limits. Even the blood-red soil on the ground was covered with a layer of white.

Despite the rest of them distancing themselves, they still managed to feel the intense coldness that radiated from Rufus’ body. That chill was even cold enough to stop the flow of true energy.

Jackie raised his eyebrow, not expecting Rufus to have that up his sleeves. Jackie retreated a few steps, maintaining a certain amount of distance from Rufus.

The Corpse Pavilion’s disciples were all shouting Rufus’ name, cheering for him. Naturally, Rufus did not need that at all.

Zamian loudly declared, “Rufus is amazing. He’s already elementary Earth level skills, and is already proficient!

“Even Benjamin from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion can only fight to a draw against Rufus!”

Benjamin was the second place disciple from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion in the Secret Place for Resources, and was one of the five who arrived at the sixth stage!

Of course, Zamian’s actions were all just boasting, but Byron and the others had a sour look on their faces. They did not expect Rufus to have trained in Earth level skills.

The rest of them were not even close to that level. After all, skills of that level needed an extremely high level of comprehension, as well as a certain level of strength.

After all, without being at a certain level, it would be impossible to even comprehend the intricacies of an Earth level martial skill. Only those talented masters who were at the level of defeating practically every other disciple could learn them.

Byron let out a long breath, being forced to admit that his talent was lower than Rufus. He was only at the level of red martial skills, they were far too different!

Furthermore, the fact that Rufus was not only training but was already proficient was what caused Byron and the others to be in disbelief.

This was something regular disciples could never hope to do. Hayden and the others had a bitter smile on their faces as they shook their heads silently, already mourning Jackie in their hearts.

Chapter 2302
Jackie was absolutely no match for Rufus! Earlier, Zamian’s boasts had naturally been heard by Jackie as well. Jackie slightly smiled, Earth level elementary skills?

It might be something unattainable for those present, but it was nothing to Jackie!

Thirty-five Soul Swords gathered inside the black sword. A radiant black glow came from the blade! As Rufus’ sword was swinging down thunderously, Jackie launched his attack too!

Everyone heard an incredibly loud bang, Soul Frost and Destroying the Void clashed together viciously. The dark light suddenly enveloped the cold blue light.

The two of them clashed mid-air, and in just a moment, cracking sounds could be heard.

The cold blue light had been shattered into pieces of snow. They were blown away by the wind as they fell to the ground. Jackie’s Destroying the Void did not lose a beat. After destroying the Soul Frost, it slashed right at Rufus.

From the start, Rufus had never even thought that he would lose to the masked brat in front of him. He had thought that there was no way his Soul Frost could have been blocked.

The brat would have been turned to ice, and Rufus would only have to send out a kick to shatter the brat's body into pieces.

Yet, what he had expected did not happen. Soul Frost was actually broken by the brat's technique. Not only that, the technique was still hurling toward him.

At that moment, Rufus was spent and did not have the strength anymore to block Destroying the Void. Nonetheless, he was still a chosen disciple of the Corpse Pavilion, so he had plenty of experience in combat.

Since he knew he could not block that technique, he would do his best to ensure that his injuries were kept to a minimum. He activated his true energy and quickly fled to the side.

However, Destroying the Void had been less than a meter away from Rufus, so there had been no way for Rufus to completely avoid it. With a piercing sound, the technique found its way through Rufus' left shoulder.

Everyone widened their eyes as they looked over. They did not see a drop of blood, but Rufus' face looked like he had lost all his blood. It was completely pale as he shouted, "Ah! What the hell is this!"

The pain coming from the soul was not something a regular person could withstand. Rufus felt like tens of thousands of ants were biting at the spot that was pierced, and the pain continued to intensify.

The technique Jackie had used not only pierced his shoulder but was also destroying his soul. Rufus used the true energy of his whole body in an attempt to stop Destroying the Void from rotting his soul.

However, that power was incredibly strange. Even with Rufus trying to suppress it with all his might, it merely slowed it down. He was still in so much pain that his entire body trembled!

With a stumble, he started to fall from the air, landing violently on the ground. Everyone looked at the sight in disbelief.

Rufus' Soul Frost had looked so incredibly strong. Everyone had felt its power, but White' technique seemed to have a mysterious power. None of them felt any intense energy fluctuations at all.

However, it actually had such a big impact. It destroyed an elementary Earth level skill, and even injured Rufus!

Rufus had basically lost in just one move.

“How is this possible!” Hayden’s voice was trembling slightly.

He did not dare to believe what he witnessed before him. There was no one there who did not know of Rufus’ skill as a disciple who was second only to Lennon.

Chapter 2303
Someone like that had still proven to be no match for White! Who was White? Why have they never heard of him before?

Samson let out a sigh of relief, “No wonder he was able to save us. I thought it was just a coincidence, but he really is that skilled!”

At that moment, Isaiah slowly reacted. His lips trembled slightly, not knowing what to say. Byron’s eyes were wide, looking at Jackie floating in the air with a look of disbelief.

Zamian looked like he had just stepped on a needle, his mouth was widened, but not a single word came out! All of the disciples from the Corpse Pavilion were gaping similarly, not able to utter a single word!

The shock of what they had witnessed had been far too much for them. They would never in a thousand years have expected Rufus, who had never been defeated, to have lost at the hands of an anonymous brat.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he set his cold gaze on Zamian. Zamian shuddered at the gaze, and he felt a chill on his back. It was as if he would be killed by Jackie at the next moment.

He could not help but take two steps back, and at that precise moment, Rufus’ trembling voice could be heard, “Why haven’t you helped me up!”

Hearing that, the Corpse Pavilion disciples broke out of their stupor and rushed out, chaotically helping Rufus up.

Rufus’ entire body was trembling from the pain. His left hand clutched where he was pierced. Even his breath was erratic. The whole scene felt strange.

Rufus did not have any external injury at all, but he seemed to be in so much pain that he was practically dying. At that moment, everyone realized that Rufus did not suffer a physical injury, but one to the soul.

The pain of the soul was something incomparable to any physical pain. It was much more painful and much harder to cure. That was something everyone knew. Thinking about that, everyone started to look at Jackie with a different eye.

Byron looked over to Hayden and uttered, “Who is he?!”

That was the biggest question in his heart. Who was that man? Why was that man so strong? How did that man use soul attacks?

Hayden shook his head, wanting the answer even more than Byron. Yet, he was devoid of any. Samson and Isaiah were staring at Jackie with widened eyes as if he was a monster.

Rufus used some time to suppress the pain in his soul. At that moment, his face was incredibly pale, akin to a vampire. “I wondered who it was! So it’s… As Rufus said that, he glared venomously at Jackie.

“What? This person is Jackie?!”

Samson’s voice increased by several decibels. His mouth trembled like crazy as his eyes brimmed with excitement and disbelief.

Isaiah widened his eyes even more. His guess had been right, this man really was Jackie. He had thought he was assuming too much, that there were no such coincidences in the world. It seemed like coincidences happened for a reason!

He let out a long sigh as he said with a strange expression, “We seemed to have been making a lot of commentary about Jackie earlier.”

Chapter 2304
He was suddenly filled with immense regret for everything he had said earlier. He had no idea that the main character had been beside him all along, so his evaluations had held nothing back.

Isaiah’s words had reminded Hayden and Samson as well. Their faces burned red as they felt intense regret. They should have kept their mouths shut!

Byron looked at Jackie with a complicated look. After all, he had interacted with Jackie before, but he did not care much for Jackie at all at that moment.

He had thought that Jackie was merely someone at the intermediate stage of the innate level who was very well-connected. However, Jackie had proven how much of a joke his thoughts had been.

Jackie helplessly sighed. Since his identity had been exposed, there was no reason for him to keep up with the disguise. He tossed away the mask on his face and revealed himself to the other thirteen people present

Zamian retreated further back in fear. He had a very personal history with Jackie. Back then, he had followed the masked man in attacking Jackie and the others. At the time, he had been incredibly rude, always targeting Jackie.

Later on, Jackie had shown that his skills were on par with the masked man, but Zamian felt that it made no sense. Jackie had clearly only been slightly above him when they had a duel before. Jackie was definitely not at that level where he was capable of killing him.

It was as if Jackie had taken some crazy medicine during the recent period of time, dramatically increasing Jackie's skills. Even though Zamian was doubtful, they still had to be careful facing all the skills he had displayed.

Rufus coldly snorted, his face full of hatred. "Let's go!"

He spat out those words, but it had no room for disobedience. When Zamian heard that, he shot an unwilling look at Rufus. However, Rufus did not care what Zamian thought at all, spitting as he headed toward the North-East direction.

The other Corpse Pavilion disciples were reluctant, but they knew they were no match for Jackie when Rufus had already lost. With Rufus retreating, there was no point for them to stay on any longer.

They would instead be killed by Jackie. As they looked at each other, they pushed down their reluctance and left with Rufus.

Even the girl was full of anger, following the rest of them.

"Are you leaving just like that?" Samson's voice was suddenly heard. He felt like everything was advancing too quickly, and he could not really process it. Rufus, who had been so imperious before, was actually retreating so quickly. There did not seem to be any signs of them slowing down too, leaving without a word.

It did not seem like something the Corpse Pavilion would do, and Hayden was a bit speechless as he whispered to Samson, "What else can he do but leave? If we really fought, he wouldn't be able to last long with his injury. When that happens, they would all die. If they don't leave quickly, they would not be able to later on if Jackie decides to kill them."

Samson finally accepted it after hearing that explanation. He thought for a moment before nodding earnestly, "You're right, if Jackie is their opponent, then the situation is completely different. If they did not leave, Jackie would definitely not let them off considering how close we are."

Looking at Rufus and the others slowly disappearing In the distance, there was a sudden silence among those who remained.

They looked at Jackie with a complicated and respectful look. Samson lightly coughed, "Hello Jackie, I can't believe it's really you!"

Isaiah's lips froze. In truth, he should have been the one to say that, but he had never been one to suck up to another. He had complicated feelings and said nothing.

Chapter 2305
Jackie glanced at everyone before he sighed lightly," The corpse flower is yours, keep it quick."

Byron's face stiffened, finally resolving his worries. He had thought that Jackie would seize the corpse flower. After all, the corpse flower was an eighth grade spirited grass. It was very valuable.

However, Jackie did not seem to care about the corpse flower at all. Byron immediately kept the flower in the jade box they had prepared, keeping it in his storage ring.

Jackie did not want to say too much to them and be delayed. "Since my identity has been exposed, we should each go our own ways. My identity will end up putting you guys in danger."

After Jackie finished saying that, he turned around to leave. However, Samson did not seem willing to part with Jackie. Jackie said that his presence would put them in danger, but Samson did not think so at all.

He felt that having Jackie around was actually much safer. Jackie was someone who stood at the top three among them all in skill. Jackie was definitely someone incredibly strong to have around. Samson resolved to hold on tightly to Jackie.

"Jackie, I disagree with you! You won't bring us danger but would actually keep us safe. However, if you think we're a burden, we naturally wouldn't dare to bother you!"

After saying that, he hurriedly turned to look at Isaiah and said, "Isaiah, don't you think so?" After all, Isaiah was from the same clan as Jackie.

After saying that, he frantically shot Isaiah a look. Isaiah helplessly pursed his lips, knowing what Samson wanted

He knew what Jackie meant to them as well. No matter how reluctant he was to suck up, he still had to lower his head, "That's right. If Jackie doesn't think we'd be a burden…"

Jackie suddenly interrupted him, "Since you want to follow me so much, then let's go. However, let me make things clear, any of the treasures from the fiends I kill will be mine."

Isaiah and the others nodded obediently. However, Byron mentioned that he would not follow the rest since he knew that what he could do was limited and that Jackie would definitely continue advancing deeper.

The closer to the volcano they got, the stronger the fiends were. With his strength, he would not be able to deal with them, so staying outside to kill a few fiends was far better.

He was not that ambitious, knowing the limits of his Kills. After the two sides split up, Jackie was still very silent, but Samson was even rowdier than before.

“Jackie, you’re so amazing! If you were in my clan, you’d definitely rank first! Even if you were in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, you’d probably be in the first place amongst the chosen disciples too!”

If those words fell on anyone else, they would be pure flattery, but Jackie was a worthy recipient. He did have those skills. After all, he was someone equal in skills to the top disciple of the Corpse Pavilion. Yet, Jackie did not feel like the praise was accurate,

“I should still be a bit behind the top disciple of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion.”

Chapter 2306
It was obvious that Jackie was not the only one who smelled blood. The others had a concerned look on their face as they started to look all around. The smell of blood was too obvious, there had been a slaughter nearby

It was definitely not just one or two people who had died because the smell would not have been so strong

Samson’s expression was dark as he said, “There are no corpses nearby, but the smell of blood is still so dense. We should prepare for the worst.”

Samson’s judgment was the same as the others. When everyone smelled blood, their expressions had collectively darkened. Isaiah looked over at Jackie, wanting to say something, but swallowed back his words after some thought.

Hayden looked at Isaiah’s conflicted expression and sighed in exasperation. Since Isaiah was not willing to say it, he would

Hayden walked toward the left of Jackie, “Jackie, you make the decision. Are we going to look for the source of the smell?”.

Jackie nodded, saying just one word, “Search!”

The few of them split up, using their senses to check their surroundings. They split into the four cardinal directions, and after a while, there was some movement toward the East, where Isaiah had gone.

“Everyone, come quickly, something big happened!”

Hearing Isaiah’s summons, the others stopped in their tracks and rushed toward the East. The further they went in that direction, the thicker the scent of blood was.

After moving past a hill, Jackie immediately saw a row of corpses behind it. Quickly counting them, there were seven of them.

From their attire, they could tell that the seven corpses belonged to various clans from the north.

When they saw the scene, Jackie and the others hurried up their pace, quickly arriving next to Isaiah. Jackie let out a low cry, “Riv!”

He hurried over to Riv’s corpse. Riv at that moment had no trace of his usual carefree demeanor. His face was pale, and his chest was no longer breathing.

Jackie touched Riv’s arm. It was cold as ice. Riv had already died for several hours. Jackie had an incredibly ugly expression on his face.

He had a very good impression of Riv. Riv had spoken up for him many times in the past. As fellow disciples from the same clan, Riv was much closer to him than most.

He had thought that he would be able to see Riv’s carefree smile again. Never did he expect that the next time they meet, Riv would have turned into a corpse devoid of warmth.

Riv’s eyes were shut tightly, and his face was devoid of emotion. The blood on his lips had already dried. For some reason, even though Riv was already a corpse, Jackie could sense a sliver of unwillingness and hate in his expressionlessness.

Jackie took a deep breath, his right arm slightly trembling. Isaiah’s expression was just as bad as he knelt next to Riv.

Just like Jackie, Isaiah had a good relationship with Riv. Now that Riv had died, his mood was just as heavy as Jackie.

At that moment, another shout was heard, “Jackieson Jones!”

Haydon rushed over to another corpse as he shouted out a name, sobbing. He knelt next to Jackieson’s corpse, reaching out as he shook it, trying to wake Jackieson up.

Chapter 2307
Unfortunately, Jackieson would never be able to respond to Hayden again. Of the seven corpses haphazardly thrown around, two of them were from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, another two were from the Muddled Origin Clan, and the remaining three were from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion.

Samson found a disciple from the Muddled Origin Clan that he was close to and knelt down looking at him in pain. Isaiah’s voice was slightly hoarse as he said, “What is this? Who killed them? Was it a fiend or a person?!”

Jackie let out a sigh, his gaze shifting to Riv’s chest. There was a hole the size of a fist. There was no blood around the wound, but it was all black.

It seemed like a burnt wound. Using his senses, he could feel that it carried a sliver of electricity.

Jackie shot his gaze over at the other corpses. As he checked on the others, he noticed that they had injuries that had been caused by weapons. It was obvious that fiends had definitely not been the culprits, they were killed by humans.

Arriving next to Riv's corpse again, Jackie's expression was already extremely dark. His eyes had a very strange look to them.

Isaiah's mouth trembled, "Why did they have to kill all of them? Is it like last time, is it all for the sake of treasures that fiends turned into?"

Jackie said resolutely, "No!"

Those three words had been firm, suddenly drawing the attention of the other three onto Jackie. Samson inhaled as he asked doubtfully, "Jackie, why are you so sure?"

Jackie took a deep breath, not answering Samson's question. Instead, he checked Riv's body, flipping Riv's corpse over.

After doing all that, he turned around to look at the others, "Other than a piercing wound, there are no other injuries on Riv's body. Go look at the other corpses, see if they're like that as well."

The other three nodded, not really understanding. Even though they were curious as to what Jackie was doing, they did not question it and did everything as Jackie instructed.

After a moment, they had completely checked on all seven of the corpses. Hayden said, "There doesn't seem to be any extra wounds on Jackieson's body. Just like Riv, there's only a piercing wound on the chest."

Jackie nodded, "Then my guess should be right."

Saying that made the others even more curious. Before they could ask anything, Jackie asked again," You should know those from your own sect the best. Tell me about their skills, let's see who's the strongest."

All of them nodded and gave a simple brief on the respective strengths of the seven before they arranged them.

They were surprised to notice that Jackieson was the strongest, and the second was Riv. Based on what Isaiah said, Riv definitely had the skill to be a chosen disciple.

It was just that he had been secluded for a while and never had the chance to challenge any chosen disciples.

The two strongest had the exact same wounds, while the other five were littered with differing wounds as if they had suffered many different attacks.

Jackie said in a heavy tone, “It has to be those Southern clans who did this. After all, it’s not just one clan from the North that died.

The seven of them must have formed an alliance between northern clans as they advanced, killing fiends together.”

Chapter 2308
The rest of them nodded, very much agreeing with what Jackie said. Jackie slowly stood up from the ground before continuing, “There’s seven of them in total. Even if they aren’t the strongest, the seven of them together won’t be weak. Yet, they still ended up like this, and the opponents killed them just the same.

“Just look at Jackieson and Riv’s wounds, they were definitely killed in one swift strike, leaving no room for them to counterattack.

“Someone who could do something like that is an expert! Since he’s an expert, he won’t be unknown. Just like you guessed earlier, the reason the conflict started was possibly over a treasure left behind by a fiend.

“Since it’s an expert that’s probably well known, the seven of them would have known this person who killed them. If they did, knowing the difference in skill, they would probably not have acted rashly.”

With Jackie’s explanation, the other three started to understand as well. To be able to kill them in one strike, the opponent would not have been any regular disciple. He would definitely be a chosen disciple that was highly rated.

Someone at that level would have been recognized by at least one of the seven. If they managed to recognize the person, they would have known how strong he was as well, just like Rufus from before.

If they had not appeared, and if Jackie had not lent a hand at the last moment, Byron would have been forced to retreat, no matter how much he did not want to.

The corpse flower could be given, their lives were more important in the end. The seven who died were no idiots. If they knew their opponents were strong, what would have been the point of fighting head-on?

However, they did not retreat and were instead killed. The opponent had even picked out the two strongest among them, killing them in one blow, leaving them with no room to fight back!

Jackie had a furious look on his face, killing intent showing through. “This is definitely some scheme! They did not care for some treasure, nor did they want anything else!

“They just wanted to kill. It was all to kill this group. That’s why the kills were so clean, there were no other possible results!”

Jackie's tone was incredibly heavy as he said all that.

"That's too far!" Samson stood up angrily, his hands trembling slightly.

"It has to be those pieces of trash from the Corpse Pavilion. Are they crazy? Why are they setting out to kill?! What do they stand to gain from killing those people? Nothing had been done to provoke them, why did they do that!"

Hayden and Isaiah looked over at Jackie again, hoping to get an answer from Jackie. Jackie sighed, his eyes sweeping over the corpses on the ground before he said, "They were not just killing people for the sake of it. They definitely had a goal. As for what the goal is? There's nothing to be gained from killing them. I'm not very sure myself, I only have a vague guess…"

Jackie did not continue after that, and Hayden said hatefully, "Maybe the treasure these seven obtained after killing the fiend was something incredibly valuable. Those people found out and decided to do something."

Jackie shook his head, disagreeing with Hayden, "I doubt it. In truth, we've only walked about 10 kilometers even after walking for so long. Compared to the two hundred kilometers we have to walk, we're still on the outskirts.

"The fiends killed here can't possibly be all that valuable. At the most, they're some spiritual medicines or glasses. Only when you get closer to Netherworld Mountain will killing fiends get you treasures that are that valuable.

"Those people can't kill these seven because of them. Even if they did, the kills would not have been so coordinated."

Chapter 2309
Then why did it happen!" Samson said tearfully.

Other than Jackieson and Riv's bodies that were not bleeding, the others were practically soaked in blood.

It was because of the dense smell of blood that they found this bloody scene. Hayden looked up and said seriously, "Since it's not for treasure, and it can't be because they were just itching for a fight for no reason, then why did they do this? They definitely had a goal, but I really can't fathom what the goal could be?!"

Jackie turned around, looking at Netherworld Mountain, "No matter what it is, we probably won't be able to figure it out from these seven corpses alone. We have to continue looking, and see if there are any clues elsewhere."

The three of them nodded, feeling like Jackie was right. Jackie turned around and looked at Riv's body with a lot of emotion. Jackie really wanted to know who did it.

Could the reason have been him? No matter what, he would find the killer for Riv, and help Riv have his revenge.

Jackie let out a sigh, “Alright, let’s tidy up their corpses for a bit and put them into our storage rings.

“We can’t just leave them in the wilderness. They’ve died in this blood-colored world, and it’s our responsibility to bring them out.”

The others nodded in unison. Everyone kept the bodies from their respective clans. After the bodies were stored, all that was left on the ground was endless blood. Looking at it was utterly disgusting, and it was enough to send a chill across anyone’s heart.

The group said nothing as Jackie turned and continued to walk toward the volcano. The rest of them followed behind Jackie. After taking two steps forward, Jackie said without turning his head around, “The four of us will take turns sending our senses out to check our surroundings. The moment you notice anything strange, voice out immediately.”

Sending their senses out referred to expanding the spiritual power to observe the surroundings. It was not out of arrogance, or the belief that they could handle anything that they did not do before.

No, it was because it consumed aura very quickly, and what sustained aura was their true energy.

Expending true energy to sustain their aura was something that would put one at an incredible disadvantage if they ended up getting into a fight. It was very easy to fall into danger.

That’s why they would never do that normally if there was nothing big happening. However, with how special the situation was, they needed to check If there were any more corpses around them.

Jackie suggested that they took turns. One person would do it while the others rested. When one’s turn ended, they could rest and replenish the true energy they had just expended while they continued to advance.

It was still filled with the unending color of blood everywhere. There was a blood-colored crescent moon in the sky. The aura of death filled the whole world. Due to how cruel the scene was before, they were all in heavy moods.

Comparatively, Jackie’s aura was the strongest. After all, Destroying the Void was a spiritual skill, and one that was very high ranked.

Hence, each time it was Jackie’s turn, the area would be incredibly large. His senses would clearly cover everything in hundreds of meters.

Chapter 2310
Right at that moment, Hayden, who had been silent throughout, suddenly said, “I remember now!”

The three of them turned around and saw Hayden with a look of realization on his face. He looked up at Jackie earnestly and he hurried forward, arriving next to Jackie.

“It’s Evil Blood Thunder!” Hayden said firmly.

Jackie paused for a moment before asking, “What is Evil Blood Thunder?”

Hayden quickly answered, “Evil Blood Thunder is what caused us to feel that sliver of electricity around Jackieson and Riv’s wounds!”

The electricity remained around their wounds, and there was no blood around them at all. It looked so strange. I felt like it seemed familiar at the time as if I’d seen it somewhere.

“I kept on trying to remember as we walked, and I suddenly did. I once saw a martial skill called Evil Blood Thunder in ancient records. It leaves behind this effect after killing someone!”

After saying that, his face turned serious. He took a few deep breaths, composing himself before he continued, “It’s an incredibly cruel technique, but it’s highly ranked. It has the abilities of an intermediate stage Earth level technique. Those who train in it need to constantly kill other people to absorb the blood of others!

“Those hit by the technique will have all the blood around their wounds absorbed and digested by Evil Blood Thunder instantly. Due to the lightning properties of the technique, each strike is incredibly explosive.

“Now that I think about it. Their wounds were not the result of being punched, but of an explosion! The control of the technique seems incredibly good. It’s obvious that whoever is using this technique has at least entered a proficient level!”

Hearing that, Hayden’s expression was incredibly furious as he concluded, “I think that the people who killed our fellow disciples should be the masked man from the Corpse Pavilion!

“Only he has the skills and the talent to practice an intermediate Earth level technique, and even practice it to a proficient level!”

With Hayden’s introduction, Jackie and the others were clear now. It was just as Jackie guessed. Jackie narrowed his eyes and said in a low voice, “It looks like my guess was right. If the masked man was the one behind the attack, then it’s definitely not for the sake of any treasures, but purely for the sake of killing. He naturally has his goals in doing that, and I have a very ominous guess!”

Hayden said anxiously, “Jackie, are you trying to say that he absolutely won’t stop at just killing seven? He’ll even kill the rest until every one of us from the northern clans is dead?!”

Jackie nodded, suddenly remembering his past experience. Jackie felt like ever since he stepped onto Mount Beasts, he had stepped into a plot that was full of mystery, and the plot was still in place until now.

Or perhaps the plot was just all culminating for this moment? He said, "Everything the Corpse Pavilion did back then, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion should have some knowledge, right?

"Allowing the disciples of the Corpse Pavilion to enter the Hidden Place for Resources is definitely something the higher-ups from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion planned. However, I don't think the Thousand Leaves Pavilion is the only one with plans, the Corpse Pavilion has its own as well.

"What happened now is very possibly connected to their plans! Or maybe, the masked man is just doing all this out of spite!"

After saying all that, Jackie's face completely darkened. Isaiah and the others were very worried about the situation, but there was nothing much they could do. After all, no matter in terms of skill or numbers, they were nothing to speak of.

Since the Corpse Pavilion might be relentlessly killing those from the northern clans, then they might be in danger too!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2311-2320

Chapter 2311
Samson said with a look of fear, “Then what do we do? We can’t just stand there and wait for death! We can’t just let them kill us, we have to work together!

“We need to get all the disciples from the northern clans to work together to fight against them! Fiends or treasures are not important at all, our lives are the most important!”

Samson was right, with how the situation was, all those treasures were no longer that attractive to them. Their lives were the most important thing, and ensuring their clans were able to profit as well.

With the Corpse Pavilion crazily attempting to slaughter everyone, if they did not react immediately, all of them would be placed in a lot of danger. They would be at an absolute disadvantage with no way of turning the tables around.

Jackie turned to look at the three of them, “Do you three have any way to notify the other disciples from your clans?”

Hayden nodded, “I have an idea! I have a sound transfer array with Graham!”

As he said that, he retrieved a sealing array that was about the size of a palm out of his storage ring. Jackie knew what that was.

Arrays like that were incredibly expensive, regular folk would not be able to afford them at all. However, it had its uses at crucial times.

As long as spirit crystals were placed outside of the formation, they could transmit sound through space. They could no longer even afford to think about the cost at that point, and Hayden retrieved a few more spirit crystals, placing them there.

Various seals started to appear, and in two breaths, Hayden said into the array, “Graham! Something bad’s happened! We’re now at…”

Hayden suddenly paused at that. He did not know how he could convey the position he was to Graham. After all, they were not familiar with the area.

Jackie frowned before saying, “We’ve advanced about thirty kilometers. With Netherworld Mountain as the landmark, we’re to the west. You can light a signal when you’re here.”

That was the only way they could describe their position. After the voice was sent over, Graham's voice was sent back after about five breaths time, "I understand, I'll head there immediately!"

After that, Hayden was a bit more relaxed. He slumped on the floor in exhaustion. As a warrior, he was actually not afraid of death.

He'd seen his fellow disciples being killed by man or beast alike. However, this was different from before, this was manslaughter!

None of them would have survived! Thinking about that, Hayden suddenly felt like someone had their hands around his throat, that he could die at any Moment.

Just as they were feeling incredibly nervous, Jackie suddenly raised his head, looking over a withered tree before he suddenly reacted. The three of them were shocked and immediately ran behind Jackie.

Samson trembled as he said, "Jackie, did you see something? Is there any danger?"

Jackie frowned, "I can feel…something on the branch of that tree!"

Jackie walked forward toward the tree. Jackie's movement had been too quick. The three of them were still incredibly anxious. Even though they were reluctant, they still followed behind.

Chapter 2312
It was a withered tree with no signs of life left in it. It was about the height of two humans. The tree was so withered that, just by touching the trunk, layers of dried bark would fall off.

Jackie ignored the people behind him. He slowly knelt down, staring right at the tree's roots. The three of them looked toward where Jackie did and did not notice anything strange.

The roots seemed to be just like any other part of the tree. It was unknown how long it had died. The white skin spoke of the ages past. With Jackie not having said anything yet, the other three did not dare to Make any careless moves.

The three of them merely stared at where Jackie was looking. However, no matter how they looked, they could not find anything strange about it. After kneeling down for a long time, Jackie slowly stood up.

His eyes had an unusual look to them, "What's the point of doing all this? Is there anything special in this place?"

After saying that, he looked up to look at his surroundings. It was still the same endless, blood colored world. There did not seem to be anything special there, nothing that would attract Jackie's attention.

Isaiah frowned and asked, “What’s the point in what? Jackie, what did you find?”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, saying in a plain tone,” Evil Blood Thunder, I felt a sliver of it on the roots of this tree. It’s the same electricity I felt on Riv’s body.

Jackie had carefully investigated Riv’s corpse, especially the electricity around his chest. Without that as a reference, Jackie would not have so accurately noticed the odd circumstance.

The masked man had merely left a sliver of electricity around that tree, probably only as a mark. That was why Jackie expanded his attention, trying to see if there was anything special around them.

However, after looking for a long time, he did not notice anything. It was possible that it really was just a mark. With Jackie’s words, the three of them sent out their senses at the roots of the tree, and sure enough, they noticed the remnants of Evil Blood Thunder.

Hayden’s expression was incredibly dark, “What is it that this piece of trash wants?! He definitely has a goal in mind!”

With their fellow disciples dying in such a cruel manner, Hayden and others were naturally incredibly upset. On top of them, the group of madmen could very possibly attack them as well, causing the group to harbor even more hatred.

They did not have the confidence to beat the masked man. Even though Jackie was there, their opponents were working together. With only the four of them, they would definitely not end up in a good state.

Samson paced around nervously. His skills were the weakest, and he was the one most worried about his own future.

“What do we do? I feel like that group isn’t just crazy, they are madmen with a plan in their heads. Facing them, we have to be incredibly careful. Otherwise, if we meet them, we’re gone!”

Finishing that statement, Samson’s face was incredibly terrified. His lips trembled slightly as he looked at Jackie with anticipation. Jackie knew what Samson was worried about.

There was nothing much Jackie could do at that moment either. “Just take it easy for now. We already know that this group will definitely attack if they meet us.

“Then, we just have to retreat immediately the moment we spot traces of them. If we’re far enough from them, they definitely won’t be a threat to us.”

Jackie’s words were mostly to comfort Samson’s anxiety, but Samson still looked incredibly panicked.

Chapter 2313
“Then we can never switch off our senses. As long as he notices anything wrong, we should flee immediately, don’t even think about anything else!”

Death was terrifying. It was something all of them did not want, nor were willing to face. Their group was not that prominent among the masters gathered in the Hidden Place for Resources, but back within their own clans, they were among the elites.

They were either internal or chosen disciples within their clans. Normal informal disciples or runners, and most of the other internal disciples would never dare to look down on them.

They were always greeted respectfully, and they had their own bright futures to look forward to. Hence, none of them were willing to lose their lives in a place like this.

Isaiah’s whole body was trembling slightly because he was constantly being flooded with the pale face of Riv in his head.

Just half a day ago, Riv had been joking around with the rest of them. He never expected that the next time they met, that carefree and playful top internal disciple would end up as a corpse.

He had died so quickly, in just one hit. He did not even have the chance to fight back. It had been far too cruel.

Isaiah took a few deep breaths to calm himself down. However, his heart was still beating erratically. After a moment, he told Jackie, “Jackie, there’s definitely a reason he left a mark behind here. There might be something special around here that we haven’t noticed

“It’s because our investigation is just on the surface. Why don’t we investigate in detail so we can try and see what he’s up to.”

Jackie nodded, “You’re right, but I feel like the masked man probably did not leave only a single mark behind. We might be able to see similar marks around here.”

Right after he said that an explosive sound was heard. It was as if someone was heading toward them at a fast speed. The four of them jumped back in surprise, and their eyes all moved to the origin of the sound

A handsome man in green robes was rushing toward them, with three others behind him. The man was already less than a hundred and fifty meters away from them. Looking at that, Hayden was incredibly emotional

“Graham is here, he’s finally here. With the two of you, I probably won’t have to die anymore…”

Seeing Graham had put Hayden thoroughly at ease. Jackie raised his eyebrow, his mind thinking back to the sound transfer array that Hayden had taken out earlier

The array was something incredibly expensive. Normally, regular disciples could not possibly own them. Even if Hayden was one of the top internal disciples in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, he still did not have the money to buy such a thing.

That meant that the array must have been given by someone else. The uniqueness of the array meant that just buying one was useless, they would have needed two for it to be used.

Thinking about that, Jackie turned and looked at Hayden meaningfully. Before, Jackie thought that Hayden had a bit of a rotten mouth, but was just one of the stronger disciples in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion.

There had been nothing particularly noteworthy about Hayden, but now it seemed like he had underestimated the guy.

As he thought about it, Graham and Benjamin landed in front of them. When Graham saw Jackie, his eyes narrowed a little, obviously surprised.

Chapter 2314
However, he had never been a particularly expressive person, so he resisted his surprise. The people behind him obviously did not have Graham's level of control.

The moment they saw Jackie, they all widened their eyes. Their faces were full of questions. Graham first nodded slightly at Hayden before he walked forward to them, saluting Jackie.

"Jackie, I can't believe I'm meeting you here. I'd have thought that you'd already have been at least twice as far inside, killing countless fiends."

The words sounded respectful, but Jackie paid no mind to it at all. He felt amused that Graham was definitely not as upright and straight as he wanted to seem. It would seem like Graham was a schemer as well, and he would need to be careful interacting with Graham.

Jackie merely nodded slightly, shooting Hayden a look. Hayden immediately understood what Jackie wanted, and did not hesitate to reveal everything they had discovered.

Graham had a dark look on his face. Once Hayden finished, Graham said seriously, "Actually, I noticed a few corpses on the way here as well. All of those corpses belonged to the northern clans. I had wondered if it had been the work of fiends or maybe fighting over the treasure.

"Now, it doesn't seem to be the case. It looks like someone has already decided that all of us need to die here."

The last words had been practically forced out of Graham's mouth through clenched teeth. Benjamin did not look to be in a good state as well.

He stepped forward and said, "What should we do?! I never expected that the Corpse Pavilion would be so ruthless to want to kill us all off! None of us expected something like this from the start, and we gave them a chance to seize the initiative. Who knows how many have died."

Benjamin was right. Even though they've only noticed a dozen or so corpses thus far, no one could guarantee that was the extent of it. It was possible that, with the masked man at the helm, the Corpse Pavilion had already started slaughtering all of the northern clan disciples.

The eight that were present all had ugly looks on their faces. If the Corpse Pavilion really gained the upper hand, then the masked man would definitely surround all those who remained at the end.

Even though Graham, Benjamin, and Jackie were all extraordinary, there was still no way for them to fight against those sorts of numbers. If it turned into a numbers game, then they would be helpless.

If that happened, they would be forced to run, leaving behind the weaker disciples. Even if they survived, they would not know what to say when they returned to their clans.

They were already at the brink of despair when they suddenly heard frantic footsteps in the distance. The eight of them looked toward the noise.

They saw a man in ragged clothing limping toward them, staggering as he moved. When the man noticed Jackie and the others, he was incredibly emotional

Even though his leg was injured, he still quickened up the pace. Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, feeling like the silhouette looked incredibly familiar. He could not stop himself from walking forward for a better look.

When he saw who he was, his heart stopped, and he hurriedly ran forward.

When the man saw Jackie and the others, it was like he had found his last hope! He ran quickly and urgently, and his left foot ended up tripping over his right, sending him tumbling to the ground.

Right before he fell on the ground, someone reached out their hands, holding him securely and pulling him up slowly.

Chapter 2315
Jackie had a trace of uncertainty in his voice, "Nelson!"

At that moment, Nelson was in an incredibly bad state. His clothes had all been stained with blood, his body ripped all over by some unknown weapon. He looked

to be in a worse state than some beggar by the side of the road. He had lost all trace of his usual noble demeanor.

Nelson tightly clenched Jackie's arm, his lips trembled slightly, "Jackie! I finally found you!"

At that moment, the rest of them had caught up. When Isaiah saw that it was the chosen disciple, Nelson, he widened his mouth in surprise, not daring to believe what he was seeing.

He immediately knelt down, holding Nelson with both hands, "What happened?! How are you so injured?!"

Jackie did a simple check of Nelson's injuries. A third of his Vessels were already broken, and he had countless wounds, big and small. There were even two broken bones. The fact that Nelson had managed to reach this place was already a testament to his will.

Nelson no longer had the energy to respond to Isaiah's questions. Jackie knew very well how much Nelson was suffering at that moment.

He looked up at Isaiah, "Do you have recovery medication, I…"

Jackie had a very troubled expression on his face hearing Nelson. Isaiah immediately knew what Jackie was thinking when he saw the expression and did not dwell on the problem.

Reaching into his storage ring, he took out two recovery pills, stuffing them into Nelson's mouth. Jackie was already an elder disciple and was in a much higher position than a regular disciple.

However, Isaiah knew that Jackie had only been an elder disciple for a few days, there was no way for him to have accumulated any wealth. Hence, he could not have had any recovery pills, which was why Jackie was forced to look at him.

After taking the pills, Nelson's expression calmed down a bit. Jackie and Isaiah helped Nelson take a seat, and Nelson started to shut his eyes to meditate and recover. After two hours, Nelson's injuries started to stabilize.

Even though he was still heavily injured, he had cleared his mind enough to start answering questions. Graham and the others moved over, asking a few questions about Nelson's injuries before anxiously asking him what happened.

Nelson frowned. "Ever since I left the starting spot, I had planned on killing a few fiends and possibly obtaining some good treasures. On the way, I met a few fellow disciples and formed a small alliance.

"The small alliance consisted of five of us, three from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and two from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion."

For some reason, Nelson had a strange look on his face when he mentioned the alliance. Even if most of them had noticed, none of them interrupted him.

Nelson continued, “The five of us advanced together, killing fiends. The journey had been filled with surprises but had not been particularly dangerous. Yet, two hours ago, we suddenly encountered a large group of disciples from the Corpse Pavilion!”

Nelson’s hands trembled as he recall the scene. He could not hold back his fear and anger. It looked like he had witnessed slaughter before his own eyes.

“I had no idea how many disciples the masked man had with him. However, I knew that there would be no way for the five of us to stand up to so many of them.

“Furthermore, with the masked man at the helm, they could probably easily accomplish anything they wanted to! So, the five of us avoided looking for any trouble with them.

“He did not know what the masked man was bringing so many fellow disciples around for. So, we got curious…”

Chapter 2316
Nelson’s lips curved into a bitter smile as he spoke. It was as if he was mocking himself as well as the people who had discussed it back then.

“I had thought that as long as he didn’t provoke them, and as long as he tried to stay out of their way, we wouldn’t be in any danger. No one would’ve ever expected that they’d suddenly stop advancing when they noticed us, and rush right at us instead.

“The five of us fled the moment we realized something was wrong. However, we were too slow, and they eventually caught onto us. Not even bothering to listen to us, about our identity or where we’re from, the first thing they did was attack us with their weapons!”

Nelson’s whole body trembled, his eyes growing bloodshot as flashbacks of what had happened ran through his mind. He felt completely broken.

He gulped and continued, “How could we have stood up against them? I looked on as my fellow disciple fell right before me. At that moment, all I could think of was fleeing!

“Thankfully, the elder gave me an offensive talisman before we left. The attack from the item was incredibly strong after it was activated, and it blew a hole in the group. I…took that opportunity to escape.

The tears that pooled in Nelson’s eyes finally fell at that moment, and they dripped onto his clothes. Everyone exchanged looks, noticing how grave the issue was.

It was just like they had anticipated, but it also meant that the situation was already at its worst.

Isaiah painfully said, “So you’re the only one who survived?”

In truth, Isaiah had merely been lamenting the situation. With what had happened, Nelson would have been the only survivor, yet…

Nelson’s expression suddenly changed when Isaiah questioned him, as if there was another twist.

His demeanor had garnered everyone’s attention. Those who were not familiar with Nelson could not formulate words at that moment, but Isaiah had known Nelson for many years. With how strange Nelson’s expression was, he asked, “Did something else happen? Has someone else survived?”

Nelson had not planned on speaking about that. After all, it was not just those from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion that were gathered there. However, if he did not say it, it could very well bring them all harm.

With that, Nelson brought himself to confess,” Someone else had survived, yes. Not only did he survive, but he’s not injured at all. He’s in a very good state.”

Nelson’s anger was evident in the way he spoke, and the individuals around him looked on in curiosity. Nelson let out a long sigh as he rubbed his temples.

“There were three of us from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion,” added Nelson, nearly growling. “Other than me and the disciple who died, there was also Griffin Olsen!”

Normally, even though Nelson did not truly approve of how Griffin acted, he regarded Griffin as a junior. However, the situation was completely different this time.

Nelson’s wrath was unbridled at this point when he spat out his response, and it was too obvious to ignore.

Jackie suddenly smirked. “Did Griffin submit himself to Corpse Pavilion before you even started fighting?”

“He sucked up to the masked man and constantly bad -mouthed me. Not only did he manage to survive, but he’s now a part of the Corpse Pavilion.”

Nelson’s face stiffened as he gazed at Jackie regretfully. Even though he did not want to admit it, the truth was still the truth, and there was no way for him to change it. He forced himself to nod.

“It’s as you said. Back then, we were incredibly furious, but that didn’t help at all. He had already made up his mind and will probably never return to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.”

Jackie snorted, not thinking much about it. “I think he’d still be able to return. As long as all of us die here, no one will be able to prove what he did. He’d naturally be able to go back safely and might even receive a bountiful reward.”

The others visibly soured at this. Even though it was hard for them to criticize the situation, with Griffin’s status as well as the others from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion present, they still abhorred Griffin’s actions silently.

Even scumbags would detest those who only knew how to suck up to others when challenges arose.

Isaiah gritted his teeth as he said, “He’s gone too far. What he’s done before is one thing, but with what he did this time-“

“That’s enough,” interjected Jackie as he raised his hand, “it’s not worth us wasting time talking about him at this point.”

Jackie then slowly stood up and turned to look at Graham. “Do you have any way of communicating with the rest?

“With them gathering up their forces against us, our best course of action is to gather every last one of our manpower.”

Graham nodded grimly, hurriedly taking out the sound-transfer array and contacting everyone else. The Dual Sovereign Pavilion also had a way of sharing its location, but compared to the sound transfer array, it was far simpler.

Nonetheless, it was still quite useful. After quickly contacting everyone in 15 minutes, they had notified everyone they could.

After about two hours, all the surviving northern clan disciples had been gathered. There were even those who had forced themselves to come over, despite varying injuries.

After they did a headcount, they noticed that there were only 25 of them left. When they entered the Hidden Place for Resources, the northern clan had brought in a total of 90 disciples. The losses were already more than two-thirds.

It was a massive loss. Furthermore, it was not guaranteed that all 25 of them would make it out alive. The situation was already in an incredibly serious state.

After everyone had gathered, the unsettling feeling had been somewhat quelled. Graham was busy consoling the other disciples, while Jackie had picked a secluded spot and brought Nelson over as well.

He sat down next to Nelson and tended to Nelson’s wounds, not saying a single word.

Nelson looked at Jackie helplessly. “Tell me: will we survive?”

As he said that, he had an aura of despair and hopelessness about him. Jackie could understand how he felt after stabilizing the injuries, Jackie told Nelson about Riv's death. Nelson and Riv had been quite close, and when Nelson finally registered the news of his demise, his morale plunged into an all-new low.

Jackie shook his head. "There's no point thinking about all this now; you better focus on recovering."

At that moment, Graham's voice could be heard from a distance, "Come, Jackie. Let's discuss our next course of action."

Jackie sighed in exasperation. In truth, he did not want to discuss anything with Graham. He kept feeling like even though the guy seemed like a perfect gentleman on the surface, he was, in truth, not that righteous.

Unfortunately, at that moment, they were forced to work together, and staying as a group was the most sound choice. With that in mind, he was forced to walk toward Graham.

Graham anxiously said, "Jackie, what do you think his goal is?

Jackie let out a small chuckle. "That's not hard to guess."

Chapter 2318
Graham frowned as he looked at Jackie earnestly. Jackie gazed into the distance, looking at the endless color of blood on the horizon. He fell deep in thought, and after a good while, he finally opened his mouth and continued, "He wants to kill us. There are, after all, benefits to achieving just that. After all, we're his competitors, and only by killing us will he easily obtain those rewards.

"If we successfully arrive at the foot of Netherworld Mountain and get sent back to the Divine Void Slope, there will be another battle after that. If it had been before, he would probably have been incredibly confident in beating the both of us. However, right now… He probably doesn't have that confidence anymore."

Graham nodded in agreement; Jackie was right. Killing them would save him a lot of trouble.

Jackie smiled coldly before he added, "He's got a grudge against me from the start, too. Furthermore, he definitely has another goal in entering the Hidden Place for Resources. In clearing us, his obstacles, it'll be much easier for him to do anything."

Graham's face was sullen as he said, "So that's why he wants to kill us all- not wanting anyone to survive?

Jackie nodded, and Graham was close to losing control of his composure. Just thinking about the masked man, who always acted high and mighty, and thinking about the incredibly disadvantageous position they were in made him incredibly anxious.

He looked up at Jackie. “I think something’s wrong,”

Jackie raised a brow, motioning for Graham to continue, Graham lowered his voice as he said,” You’re right. His greatest wish at the moment is to clear obstacles, and that’s us, so he can arrive at Netherworld Mountain alone, making him the only one who passed

“He doesn’t have the confidence that he can kill the two of us in one blow, so he needed to plot and scheme, clearing everyone around us and leaving us alone. Then, he’d use numbers to eliminate us.”

Saying that, he paused, and Jackie nodded. “That’s probably what he’s planning, so which part of it do you think is wrong?”

Jackie seemed to have thought of something after his own question, and he smirked. “You’re saying that since he’s trying to eliminate everyone who can help the two of us, then no traces would be left, but we found the corpses.”

Graham nodded. That was indeed what he was thinking, and it was far too much of a strange point.

If the masked man truly did plan on eliminating everyone else, leaving only both him and Jackie for last, then he would not have let them realize something was strange.

However, after he killed the northern clan disciples, h e allowed the others to run amok, not bothering to clear any traces and displayed too blatantly. It was clear he did not care if Graham and the others could see it.

“That’s a hefty question. Before we can clear up this point, I feel like your earlier guess has no ground to stand on.”

Graham was right, and Jackie agreed with what he said as well. Jackie smiled, not answering Graham’s question and, instead, mentioned the hidden traces of electricity on the withered tree.

Graham said in confusion, “He left traces of the Evil Blood Thunder as a mark, and you think that there’s definitely more than just one? What does this have to do with your earlier suspicions?”

Jackie looked up and said earnestly, “The two definitely have something to do with each other. You were definitely right before. Since he wanted to kill off everyone around us and finish us off in the end, then he wouldn’t have let us notice it.

“However, the fact of the matter is that he seems to be deliberately letting us notice it. He wanted to display everything in front of us, so there’s definitely something behind it. Whatever they are, his goals are all for us to see.”

Chapter 2319
“There are so many amazing things on the Divine Void Slope, so who wouldn’t want them? Of course he wants them all for himself, and if that’s the case, then he first needs to get rid of all of us!”

Graham could still not fully accept everything that was said, and doubt clouded his eyes.

Jackie smiled lightly as he walked forward, placing a hand on Graham’s shoulder. “Since his goal is obvious, then everything he’s done is to contribute toward that goal. Him leaving the mark behind is also for that goal.

“Even though he still doesn’t know the full details, as long as we obtain even more evidence, the answer will naturally reveal itself.”

Graham nodded, not understanding it fully. The two of them suddenly fell silent, and neither of them said anything. They were both deep in their own thoughts, but Jackie seemed to have a calmer expression, while Graham’s was much darker.

He was incredibly worried about what would happen next. After a long time, Graham finally urged, “Then, what should we do after this?”

Jackie walked two steps forward. “Search.”

“Search for what?”

“Search for the other marks the masked man left behind. Once we find enough of them, we’ll be able to find out. Furthermore, you have to remember that our goal this time isn’t revenge but passing the stage instead.”

Graham nodded, feeling that Jackie’s words were reasonable.

Jackie continued, “Let’s stop getting tangled up here, then. If we want to find answers, we have to first find the other marks. After that, we continue advancing; we can’t just hand a free pass to the masked man.”

“Even though he’ll threaten our safety, we’ve already prepared ourselves, and we have enough skills as well. All these problems can be solved.”

Jackie’s last few words were said in a very firm manner, causing Graham to be taken aback. This disciple from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion named Jackie never failed to surprise Graham, time after time.

He never expected that a disciple from a regular third -grade clan could advance to where Jackie was. The fact was that his skill was on par with Graham’s. He was also strategic, and he was incredibly mature in how he spoke and acted.

Jackie looked at Graham and noticed that the latter was already looking at him differently. He could not help but snort mentally, but he did not dwell on the matter.

He decided to change the topic instead, saying, “We don’t have any time to waste. Since we’re sure of what we have to do next, we should hurry up and make our arrangements.”

Those words served as a reminder to Graham, and Graham immediately jumped into action, hurriedly walking toward the others. He had just taken two steps when Jackie’s voice was heard behind him,” Remember: we can’t afford to split up. No matter where we go, we have to go together. Otherwise, we’d just be giving them a chance.”

Graham nodded without turning his head around. He arrived at where everyone was gathered before he loudly arranged everything. He had everyone stand apart, taking turns sending their senses out, and rotating every two hours.

Chapter 2320
Four of them would send out their senses every time. Each in charge of one direction. That way, they preserved their aura and true energy while they also increased their accuracy. After arranging everything, they decided on a direction to advance.

When everyone advanced, Jackie, Graham, and the other stranger combatants were all arranged to stand at the front. They truly felt the power of moving as a group then, and everyone felt a sense of security.

After all, they had lost over two-thirds of their people, and they were already at the stage where everyone was in danger. While the group advanced at a steady pace, Jackie once again talked to Graham and Benjamin.

It was not really much of a conversation, however, because Jackie’s tone had a hint of accusation to it. His dark eyes were focused on Graham to his left.

“Graham, as a top-five chosen disciple in the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, you must have the favor of the elders and leaders. There’s something in my heart that I’ve been mulling over for several days, and I wonder if you can help me clear my doubts.”

Even though the words sounded polite, there was an accusatory undertone to it that slightly stunned Graham and Benjamin.

Graham raised an eyebrow. “If it’s something I know, I’ll tell you. However, if it involves secrets of the clan, then I really can’t help you.”

The words sounded ambiguous, but Jackie did not mind. He smiled lightly as he said, “What is the Thousand Leaves Pavilion planning? Why did they allow the Corpse Pavilion to enter this place? Did the Thousand Leaves Pavilion’s internal and external elders feel like the Corpse Pavilion’s disciples would be kind enough to not harm us?

“A Big part of what’s happening right now is because the Corpse Pavilion was allowed entry. If it was just us northern clans, things wouldn’t have escalated to this point regardless of whatever conflict would’ve taken place.”

Jackie's words were very meaningful, and it caused Graham and Benjamin to have a change of expression. It truly was a question that could not be overlooked, and Jackie was right. If the Corpse Pavilion had not been allowed entry, this catastrophe would not have happened.

They would not have lost so many disciples.

Just thinking about Riv's bloodless face caused Jackie To boil in anger. He truly did not understand what the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was trying to do.

At Mount Beasts, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had noticed the Corpse Pavilion sealing the place up, yet they acted like nothing had happened, ignoring the disciples on Mount Beasts.

It was as if those lives were insignificant to them. Entering the Hidden Place for Resources needed permits, and there were only 180 of them. They did not even have enough to distribute among themselves, but they took out half for the southern clans.

Jackie could not understand their actions at all.

Graham let out a long sigh as he answered, albeit rather exasperatedly, "The Pavilion doing this naturally has its own reasons as well as their plans. After all, the elders and disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion aren't idiots. There's no way they're doing all of this for no good reason; they must have a very special goal."

Hearing all that, Jackie could not hold back the mockery in his words as his face darkened. "Do you think such an explanation is enough for everyone? Even though we've deliberately toned down our voices and no one else can hear what we're saying, do you truly think they aren't mulling the same things internally?

"So many people have died, and most of them were the elites from the various clans. What sort of plan is worth sacrificing all their lives?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2321-2330

Chapter 2321
Graham frowned and turned his head away from Jackie's accusatory gaze.

"To be frank, I've thought of the same thing, too. Even though I'm a highly ranked chosen disciple, it doesn't mean I know everything. This is a clan secret, and even with a high position, I'm still just a disciple in the end."

Jackie nodded, admitting that Graham was right.

Benjamin tried to pick up the mood by the side as he said, "Don't be angry, Jackie, and let's not hold grudges, either. I think that Graham is right. Since the clan did all this, they naturally have their own plans.

"The clan doesn't want this to happen, either, for so many disciples dying is out of their expectations."

The way Benjamin had tried to soothe things over was rather tactless, however. Jackie was not a simple mind that would allow someone's few words to change his thoughts.

He smiled lightly as he said, "You two don't have to use those words to try and fend me off; I'm not someone so carefree. If this matter hadn't advanced to this stage, I would never have even asked those questions."

After that, Jackie's cold smile deepened. "You say they didn't expect so many to have died. I don't believe that one bit.

"The higher-ups of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion know better than any of us what type of people come from the Corpse Pavilion. They're ruthless and venomous in their methods, and they'd stop at nothing so long as they have something in their sights!

"Honor and morality are nothing for those people. As long as there's a chance to get rid of us, they'd definitely take it. This is no accident; it's all within their expectations!"

Jackie got angrier as he spoke, and his face reddened." You're right, Graham. You're just a disciple in the end, and there are things you don't know.

"However, I refuse to believe you know nothing at all. Otherwise, with your personality, you wouldn't have entered this place for sure."

The moment he said that, Graham's face stiffened, yet Jackie continued, "You can't possibly know everything, but it's also impossible that you know nothing at all. Those elders that are closer to you would've revealed a thing or two.

"I know these are all secrets to you, but with the way things are right now, I'm not even sure if we can survive this place if you still keep your secrets."

Jackie's words were not just to increase the sense of danger; he genuinely felt that way. If Graham and the others did not reveal the truth, it was very possible they would be swimming around in the dark, and even more people would die because of those higher-ups.

That was something Jackie did not want to see or have happened. Thinking about that, he looked back to Isaiah and Nelson behind him.

Isaiah was helping Nelson walk with one arm, and both of them looked to be in bad shape as well. After all, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion had greatly suffered this time. Other than the traitor, only the three of them were left.

Furthermore, the two of them were not even sure if they themselves could survive, fearing the future to come, resulting in their very-obvious anxious expressions. Jackie could understand how they felt, and he did not want anything to happen to these two.

Putting aside everything else, Nelson was quite a good person. Jackie really did not want to see a tragedy happen, so he had to pursue the matter to the fullest and dig out the truth.

Chapter 2322
When Jackie looked at Graham again, his gaze was stern and fierce.

Graham let out a sigh, feeling incredibly helpless, while Benjamin looked at Jackie before looking at Graham.

Unlike Graham, Benjamin was completely in the dark. Even though he wanted to defend Graham and say something, he was, in fact, all too curious as well, so he chose to remain silent.

Graham dwelled in his helplessness for a long time before finally opening his mouth unwillingly. "It's because they want to find something, and that thing is both evil and righteous. It's not something that can be opened with just the power of the northern clans, so that's why they ended up giving the southern clans half of the passes for free."

Jackie had guessed correctly after all, and his expression did not lose much of its initial intensity. Graham let out another sigh and knew that Jackie did not believe what he had just said at all.

"I know you don't believe what I'm saying right now, but I can assure you that I'm not lying. If you don't believe me, there's nothing I can do anyway."

At that moment, Jackie suddenly said, “What’s this thing? Where is it? Is it some divine treasure on the Divine Void Slope, or is it somewhere else on the Hidden Place for Resources?”

Graham shook his head. “That, I do not know. I possess the strongest skills, which is why the elders had arranged for me to go retrieve it. When I received all this information, I had thought that way.

“However, no one summoned me even as I waited. I received no arrangements even as I was being sent into the Hidden Place for Resources.”

After saying that, Graham glanced at Benjamin by his side, and Benjamin frantically shook his head. “I don’t know anything. I would’ve never heard of this righteous-yet-evil thing had you not brought it up.”

Graham composed himself, turning his head back.” Truthfully, I don’t know what the elders are planning. I’m just as much in the dark as the rest of you.”

Jackie ignored Graham’s explanation and mumbled to himself, “Righteous and evil?”

Graham shot a look at Benjamin. Both of them could see the helplessness in each other’s eyes. Their explanations were all a bit barren, but the truth was that neither of them knew anything.

Even if they had a bit of news, it was all shallow. They never got the most important parts.

At that moment, one of the senses suddenly shouted out, “We’re picking up traces of a battle up ahead!”

When they heard that, they put aside their thoughts and went toward the direction the person was pointing. Holes were everywhere on the ground, and there were also traces of energy from martial skills.

Jackie and Graham knelt to investigate the ground, and they could clearly feel traces of fiendish energy. There were also remnants of human weaponry, as well as a few drops of blood on the eastern side.

An intense battle must have taken place at this spot, and they had advanced about 15 kilometers. All 25 of them had not seen or sensed anything other than this battlefield-not even fiends.

Chapter 2323
Samson stood behind Jackie and mumbled, “This is so strange. Before, we’d find a fiend every one to three kilometers, and we’d even encounter two or three of them. Yet, ever since that withered tree, we haven’t met a single fiend… All we saw were remnants of that battle.”

Jackie stood up and looked around him. Just from the traces of that battle, he was unable to determine if the ones who fought were disciples from their side or those from the south.

With that in mind, he could not resist unleashing his senses, expanding it to 300 meters. At that moment, he felt a familiar feeling coming from a withered tree root about 250 meters away.

His breaths grew short in anxiousness. “It’s the electric mark from Evil Blood Thunder again!”

The moment he said that, the other 24 participants paused and gazed at Jackie expectantly. Jackie did not bother waiting for them to say anything, however, and started to rush toward where he sensed the mark.

The other participants followed closely behind Jackie. In that blood-red world, other than the most common hills and slopes, all they saw were various withered trees.

Those fragile-looking withered trees had already been dead for an unknown number of years. They stood there as if they would fall at any moment, and yet also looked like they would stand there, unchanging for eternity. Every few minutes, they would see two or three of those withered trees.

Jackie arrived next to the withered tree and knelt, expanding his senses again. At that moment, he felt the senses of the others unleashed as well. 25 senses conversed in the same area as they investigated the foot of the tree.

“It really is there!” blurted Graham somewhat emotionally.

The others started to discuss among themselves,” Why did the Corpse Pavilion disciple leave behind these marks? This is no doubt the electric remnant of the Evil Blood Thunder. It means that he came here personally.”

“Who knows what he’s trying to do? It’s nothing good, that’s for sure. He might’ve left behind these things to deal with us, to kill us all!”

“I feel so suffocated. If those people weren’t so petty and shameless, we wouldn’t be left with just only twenty-five of us. Once we get out of here, I’ll report this for sure. I’ll have the clan take revenge for our fallen brothers!”

From the initial questions to the later indignation, everyone grew more and more emotional, and Jackie looked behind helplessly.

Even though those people were among the top talent -wise and skill-wise within their own clans, their brains did not seem to work very well. They spoke without regard for anything.

They did not think deeply at all.

Even putting aside whether they would be able to escape safely, the higher-ups would only suppress their reports if they were to get out.

After all, the target was a fourth-grade clan as well. However, he had to push down those words at that moment.

Graham earnestly looked at Jackie. “Jackie, why do you think they left these marks? I did a little calculation, and the two marks are fifteen kilometers apart. Might we find another one another fifteen kilometers deeper?”

Jackie did not even need to think before nodding.” Absolutely. I’ve already more or less guessed the use of these marks. I have to say, there’s nothing that guy won’t do. In order to pass, he’s used everything he can.”

Chapter 2324
Graham and the others were puzzled, and some of the more curious folk could not hold back from asking immediately, “What did you guess?”

“That’s right! What does that guy want?”

Jackie let out a deep sigh as he looked at the direction behind the tree. Netherworld Mountain was still shrouded in red, incredibly far away. It looked like it would never be touched.

His pupils moved slightly as he somberly spoke, “His biggest goal at the moment is to pass as fast as possible, and his second goal is to not let the two of us pass. He’s not someone who doesn’t know where he stands; he knows which of those he can’t do.

“This is why he’s using another way to constantly delay us. He wants us to not be able to make it in time to pass at all! He’s already arranged things long ago: he’d clear all the obstacles here, and then leave behind marks so he can advance, unhindered.”

Everyone else was confused to have heard Jackie’s explanation, but Graham understood.

His expression changed, his teeth gritting harshly as he growled, “That dog of a man has gone too far. There’s really nothing he won’t do!”

The masked man brought all his fellow disciples around, slaughtering all the northern clan disciples and not forgetting to kill off the fiends they saw. They cleared a path of obstacles and left behind marks, all to save time.

It was so he could arrive at Netherworld Mountain in the stipulated time!

Graham became even more furious as he thought about it. He wanted nothing more than to rush right at the masked man and challenge him to a duel. If he defeated the masked man, even ripping the man apart would not alleviate his anger.

“That despicable, shameless man! He’s quite smart!”

Jackie raised a brow. That was something he was hypothesizing. If they switched positions, he would have felt that the plan was quite solid, if not extremely cruel. However, to the masked man, that was not cruel at all.

After all, the ones to die were not his fellow disciples. Killing off the northern disciples had been one of his goals, anyway.

Graham anxiously paced around on the spot. “What should we do? We can’t just leave things as they are! We can’t just hand the pass to him, either-we have to make him pay!”

Jackie did not say anything as he gazed into the distance. No matter what Graham said at that moment, it would not affect Jackie’s mood nor would It affect his decision.

In truth, Jackie could feel that what Graham cared the most was whether or not he could pass. However, the masked man had succeeded a step before him.

Noticing Jackie’s silence, Graham said anxiously, “We have to figure out a way. Why don’t we do what they did? Let’s track them down and exact what they’ve done!

“I refuse to believe that the masked man will constantly be with the other disciples. Even though there are only twenty-five of us left, we have you and my skills.

“With the two of us at the helm, we don’t need to care about their numbers at all! We’d still be able to kill them all!”

Graham’s last words were uttered through clenched teeth, his eyes filled with palpable murderous intent. He could have made the resolve to kill every single one of the disciples from Corpse Pavilion, too.

Jackie, however, shook his head. He could not afford to let his thoughts get as muddled as Graham at that moment.

“I’ll say the same thing as I’ve said before: don’t rush into things. The two of us should focus on passing right now. Revenge can wait for the moment.

Chapter 2325
“Since we already know why he’s left the Evil Blood Thunder marks to ensure that he passes, why don’t we use it for ourselves?”

Graham paused, his eyes suddenly widening as he gleefully exclaimed, “You’re right! Since he’s cleared the fiends along this path, we might as well follow the way! We can think about the rest after we pass!”

After making his decision, Graham did not waste any more time. He turned around and started to loudly order everyone behind him.

“This is the special mark that the masked man from the Corpse Pavilion left behind. Now, we have to follow these marks as we advance to make sure it’s safe. I know all of you entered the blood world in hopes of killing fiends and obtaining treasures, but this is a special circumstance.

“If we don’t move together, you might very well end up being killed by the Corpse Pavilion.

“I won’t force all of you to follow us forward. If you’re not willing and would rather hunt fiends and obtain treasures, I won’t stop you.”

After he finished those words, the other remaining disciples all voiced their loyalty.

“We’re going to keep following Graham. We wouldn’t dare go out alone. Treasures are nice, but our lives are more important!”

“He’s right. Don’t worry; we’re all already mentally prepared, and we’ll follow all of you. As for those treasures, we’ve given up on them!”

Receiving everyone’s pledge, Graham’s expression cleared up a little. “Alright, then we won’t waste any more time. Let’s hurry up and advance. We’ll take turns sending out our senses like last time and look for the remnants that the masked man left behind.”

Jackie looked at Graham meaningfully. That guy did not mention the truth at all; he had hidden the most important part. Nonetheless, Jackie could not rock the boat at this moment, so he merely went along with Graham.

The group started to advance, following the marks the masked man left behind, advancing toward Netherworld Mountain.

Even from a distance, Netherworld Mountain looked impressively massive. Even with over 150 kilometers between them, they could still see its full glory. The closer they got, the more they could feel how impressive it was.

Anyone standing beneath the mountain would seem unbelievably miniscule. It would make one feel as small as a newborn ant.

The masked man clenched his chest, and blood oozed from the corner of his mouth.

He was in no way as strong as he was before and, instead, even felt a bit weak. Standing next to him, Zamian helped the masked man with a concerned look

“Are you alright?!”

The masked man raised his hand shakingly, using all his might to shake his head. At that moment, even his voice was unsteady as he responded, “I’m fine! Help me sit down, I need to meditate!”

Zamian hurriedly helped the masked man. He placed a blanket underneath the masked man’s buttocks and took out expensive medicinal pills for the masked man.

At that moment, not only did the masked man look like he was in a bad state, but he seemed very aggrieved by pain as well. Just moving a little would aggravate the injuries on his whole body. The bone piercing pain he felt was not something an ordinary person would be able to stand.

He lost count of how many bones were broken on his body. Just his ribcage alone, there were four, and that was even the result of him doing his best to defend his chest. If he had not protected the most important part at the last moment, he would probably not even have been able to stand up.

“Why is that eight-tailed snake so strong?!” blurted Zamian concernedly. “It actually did this to you…”

Chapter 2326
Zamian trailed off in his sentence, not daring to continue. After all, the masked man never had the best of tempers. If he had finished his words, he might be seen as questioning the masked man’s skills.

The masked man coldly smiled, looking up at where the eight-tailed snake had fallen, his hands trembling slightly. “This is the last fiend and the last test for me before I pass. It’d be weirder if the fiend was not this strong.”

The masked man gulped as he remembered the bitter battle he had just gone through. If it were not for the fact that he was much stronger than the average person and had reached the spring solidifying realm before, he might not have been able to kill that eight-tailed snake.

Zamian frowned, snorting lightly before saying,” The structure of this blood-colored world is so strange. They allowed us all to enter, but at the final battle, they erected a barrier, not allowing us in to help you at all.”

The masked man coldly smiled, glancing at Zamian disdainfully before saying, “Do you think that the old man who designed this stage has your brain? If he let everyone in, how could he not have thought of this?

“The eight-tailed snake wouldn’t have amounted to much if we attacked it in a group, then the last test would hold no meaning to it. The whole reason the eight-tailed snake existed was to see if I have the qualifications to pass.”

After saying that, the masked man squinted as he added, his words carrying the sliver of ridicule he had, “Even if those guys risked their lives on the line and arrived here, they wouldn’t be able to pass anyway!”

Zamian hurriedly nodded. “Even you’ve been injured to this degree, so how could the other two have any hope? They were never at your level, and if you hadn’t suppressed your powers, the two of them wouldn’t even be able to face you together.”

The masked man smiled at this; Zamian’s flattery was quite decent

Reveling in Zamian’s praise, he nodded. “I’m definitely at a disadvantage here. If it was outside, even if the two of them challenged me at the same time, I’d make them regret living in this world!”

After finishing those words, his breathing turned erratic. He felt waves after waves of pain as he started to tremble. He hurriedly formed some seals with his hands, trying to stabilize his injuries.

The Corpse Pavilion’s chosen disciple, Rufus, eyed the two other eight-tailed snakes. When they all arrived at the foot of the mountain, they noticed three eight-tailed snakes.

The three snakes did not attack on their own, and they were all sealed within their own barriers. When the masked man got closer, a wave of energy enveloped him, sending him to one of the eight tailed snakes.

The battle started immediately. The eight-tailed snake was like an angered beast and fervently started to attack!

All of the disciples there had witnessed that incredibly dangerous battle.

Rufus let out a small sigh, his tone carrying a sliver of doubt as he spoke, “Even with a barrier between us, I could still feel a very dense demonic energy coming from the snake. We can’t just call it a common eight tailed snake-it’s probably an eight-tailed demonic snake.”

The others nodded after hearing those words, thinking Rufus could be right. The eight-tailed demonic snake’s demonic energy could not be suppressed, so much so that even with the barrier in the way, they could still clearly feel it.

The demonic snake was not like the fiends they had encountered before. Even though the fiends had power coming out of their bodies as well, none of them had such dense demonic energies.

Yet, that eight-tailed snake felt like it had been soaked in demonic energy: raw and unbridled energy.

The masked man said as he recuperated, “It truly is a demonic snake. To be precise, this monster is probably incredibly close to the spring solidifying realm. It only needs just the slightest push to level up. With that level of strength, even I can’t defeat it easily, let alone the other two.”

Chapter 2327
Rufus nodded.

Lennon, meanwhile, stood by the side and spoke, albeit rather anxiously, “They won’t reach this place. You’ve made such good arrangements, and they’ve definitely fallen for your schemes.”

The masked man nodded, thinking that Jackie and Graham would not be able to reach where they were at, too. He had planned the scheme himself; there was no way they would not fall for it.

Plus, he had planned to kill two birds with one stone. He would both kill off those people and carve a clear path forward for himself, devoid of obstacles.

When it was about time, he brought the disciples who subjected themselves unto him and walked along the path free from obstacles, arriving at the foot of Netherworld Mountain. Just thinking about it made him feel incredibly pleased with himself.

Zamian smiled. “They can’t possibly be able to figure out that you did not plan on killing Jackie and Graham at all! Killing so many troublesome people was just to attract their attention.

“It was to delay them! Once enough time is delayed, they won’t have the focus to kill fiends and advance. The time limit is only two days, and if they don’t find this place by then, you’ll be the only one who passes.

The masked man nodded, slowly opening his eyes, incredibly pleased with himself as evident with his expression. His strategy was flawless…and those disciples from the northern clans were all too hung up with their honor and virtue.

They were different from evil practitioners. Looking at their fellow disciples being killed like that, they would definitely try to fight back. They would gather all the other remaining disciples and attempt to battle.

However, what they did not know was that the masked man would have already brought his own disciples to the foot of Netherworld Mountain. All he did was just to pass, and there would naturally not be any disruptions.

Just thinking about this amused the masked man greatly. He could not stop himself from smiling, and everyone around him was heaping praises on him.

“You are talented beyond belief. Those guys definitely won’t guess your true plan!”

“That’s right! Even though Jackie and Graham don’t amount to much, they still have some skill. If we really plan on killing them, it might end up delaying ourselves, and we’d have suffered great losses if they ended up escaping!”

“Right now, they’re probably only a hundred kilometers in, while our great senior has already passed!”

The masked man wanted so badly to see their expressions after the task ended and they all returned to the Divine Void Slope. At that moment, he would reveal all his plans.

He wanted nothing more than to see for himself Jackie and Graham’s remorseful expressions. He wanted to return all the humiliation he had suffered dealt by Jackie, right back at him. That was not all, though.

He would have Jackie pay the price and have Jackie wish he was dead!

The masked man could barely contain himself just thinking of all this.

All of a sudden, at that moment, a familiar voice was heard in the distance, “You really are here. You’re quite fast.”

That voice…

That voice was all too familiar to the masked man.

It was so familiar that the voice was practically engraved into the masked man’s bones. It was not just him, too. There was not a single one of the other disciples from the Corpse Pavilion that was not familiar with it.

They widened their eyes in shock, looking toward the source of the voice. Around 200 meters away…stood 20 twenty disciples.

Chapter 2328
The masked man and his lackeys were all incredibly familiar with the ones at the helm.

There they were: Jackie, Graham and Benjamin, all standing upright in front of them.

Jackie seemed rather laid-back as he gazed at them nonchalantly, unperturbed.

On the other hand, Graham and Benjamin’s eyes were filled with rage, and the scene stunned the masked man. It was not just him, though-the others were all stunned as well.

They were just on a ridicule-train, bashing on these men, so sure that they would still be in the outer areas. All that, and they suddenly popped right into the scene!

Zamian’s lips froze as he exclaimed, his voice trembling, “How is that possible? How could they be here?! Shouldn’t they be at the outskirts?”

They must have known that many people have perished, and they should have wasted a very long time gathering everyone up. Furthermore, the large number of fiends they would have had to exterminate would have delayed them by a great deal.

Alarmingly, they still made it!

They had arrived no more later than themselves. The masked man had just defeated the eight-tailed snake and did not even have the chance to rest before Jackie and the others arrived!

Jackie chuckled coldly, ignoring the conflict felt by the masked men and his lackeys. He merely turned his head and set his gaze on the eight-tailed snake.

Jackie recognized the eight-tailed snake from the past memories.

The eight-tailed demonic snake had never appeared on the Hestia Continent before; it existed in a second -ranked world. A mature eight-tailed demonic state could reach up to the spring solidifying realm in power. Those they were looking at were not truly in the spring solidifying realm yet, but they were close.

Thinking of this, Jackie frowned, his expression a little dark. Just as he was thinking of how he would deal with the eight-tailed demonic snake…

Graham shouted loudly, “Don’t think those little tricks of yours are enough to help you pass. I didn’t fall for them!”

Jackie could not resist looking at Graham when he heard that. Feeling Jackie’s gaze, Graham’s face stiffened as he added, “Jackie noticed the marks you’ve left a long time ago, and he didn’t even take too long to understand what you were doing! Who do you think you’re fooling with that flimsy trick of yours?!”

Graham even went to the extent of enhancing his voice with his true energy, not wanting the opposing group to not hear him.

The masked man became visibly livid; he had never felt so pathetic in his life. There he was, pleased with himself just moments ago, yet his pride had been shattered so quickly.

The plan he had felt was perfect had been decoded with ease!

At that moment, the masked man felt nothing but rage whirling in his mind, so much so that he even forgot the wounds that tormented him. He wanted nothing more than to rip Jackie apart. It was Jackie yet again-it was always him! Jackie was the sole cause of every moment of humiliation he had gone through!

The masked man became so enraged as thoughts consumed him, and he even spat a mouthful of blood.

Zamian hurriedly knelt and helped the masked man up. “Don’t get angry! Who cares about these commoners? They can’t possibly pass; they don’t have the skill to!”

The masked man flung away Zamian’s hand, still livid, sending Zamian to the ground. At that moment, the masked man could no longer maintain his composure.

He pointed at Jackie with his trembling hand. “Just you wait! I won’t let you off, I promise you that. I’ll have you begging for death, and I will send you to hell!”

Despite the masked man’s hate-filled declaration, Jackie was still…undisturbed. He was already used to words like that and was already practically immune to them. Even though it was the masked man saying such words, Jackie did not care at all.

Chapter 2329
Graham snorted. “You killed so many of our fellow disciples, so we won’t let you off either! Even if we can’t kill you right now, we’ll make you pay in the future!”

Jackie did not care much about the masked man’s curses, but Graham’s words had caused him to raise his eyebrow.

Graham was rather interesting. This man had basically tied himself to Jackie in that one sentence, as if the two of them were tied together by the same clan.

Jackie did not think that Graham really meant it. He understood very well that the two of them were only standing on the same side purely because they were temporarily in a mutually beneficial relationship.

Since they were both from northern clans, they had to work together against the Corpse Pavilion However, the moment they left the Divine Void Slope, Graham would not show any mercy whatsoever.

Jackie was not even willing to guarantee that Graham would not work with the masked man against him.

The masked man cackled at Graham’s words, However, he was heavily injured, and on top of that, his heart was steaming with anger. His body’s condition was getting worse, and he could no longer even sit properly.

The disciples that were near to him immediately reached out to help the masked man. Graham seemed to only just notice that the masked man was heavily injured to the degree that he could not even sit properly.

He immediately turned around in shock. “What’s wrong with him? Why is he so heavily injured? Did something happen to him?”

Jackie frowned as he looked at Graham exasperatedly. Jackie could not believe that Graham only just noticed the eight-tailed demonic snake that was hundreds of meters tall.

With such a large snake right there, he was still asking Jackie why the masked man was so badly injured?

Was that guy mentally deficient?

Jackie smiled lightly and said with a slightly cold tone, “Do you not see that eight-tailed demonic snake?”

Graham furrowed his eyebrows. “Eight-tailed demonic snake? That’s called an eight-tailed demonic snake? You’re incredibly knowledgeable, Jackie, and you know everything! Compared to you, I feel like I’m lacking.”

Jackie completely ignored those false words of flattery. He was too lazy to dwell on these things with Graham.

“The two of us will be facing an eight-tailed demonic snake each as well. Looking at how injured the masked man is, he probably didn’t get to receive help. Passing will depend on our own individual skills.”

Graham hurriedly nodded. “Be wary, Jackie. Looking at how injured the guy is, the eight-tailed demonic snake is definitely not easy to handle.”

Jackie pursed his lips and looked at Graham.

Benjamin then advised Graham nervously, “Graham, you have to act according to your strength… You shouldn’t allow yourself to suffer any incurable injuries just to pass; that would be pointless. After all, there will still be another battle waiting for you after you pass.”

Graham let out a sigh. He knew that Benjamin never thought that he could defeat the masked man. Those words were basically telling him that even the masked man had suffered such heavy injuries to win. If he could not win, he should try and retreat.

It would possibly allow him to preserve his life.

Jackie glanced at Graham. Even though Graham was composing himself, Jackie could still see a sliver of rage in Graham’s eyes. Graham believed he had been underestimated.

Chapter 2330
Graham snorted at the thought.

Meanwhile, a familiar voice was suddenly heard.

“Jackie, please don’t overdo it. After all, as long as you’re still alive, there’s nothing you can’t do. Don’t put yourself in danger just for the sake of victory,” appealed Nelson with a sincere look on his face.

Nelson had yet to recover from his injuries at that moment. Jackie nodded, knowing that Nelson meant what he said. From the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, other than the traitor, Griffin, only the three of them were left.

Isaiah hurriedly added, “Nelson is right. The eight tailed demonic snake is not easy to defeat, so if you have to fight it, please do so with a plan!”

Jackie reached out and placed his hand on Nelson’s shoulder. “Don’t worry. The three of us are the only ones left from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. No matter what, I’ll make sure I send the two of you back safely.”

Even though he did not harbor that much positive intention for the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, he had to admit that the clan had spent time and effort in training him. To repay that debt of gratitude, he would take care of them.

Nelson and Isaiah nodded, visibly moved by Jackie’s words. They had been full of fear for the future due to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s massive losses and had been very depressed. Hearing Jackie’s words managed to lift their spirits at that moment, albeit only slightly. It had imbued them with the will to survive once more.

Samson looked at the eight-tailed demonic snake curiously. The snake was a few hundred meters tall, and its name suited its looks perfectly.

From the waist downward, its abdomen was split into eight tails. Its whole body was covered by scales, and it had a massive tongue. Its red eyes looked threatening and could send chills into anyone’s heart.

It would occasionally stick its tongue out but seemed to completely ignore the people in front of it. It was as if it did not see anyone. The eight-tailed snake did not attack, which sparked the curiosity of Jackie and the others.

Samson could not help but say, “What’s wrong with this eight-tailed snake? Is something wrong with its eyes? Why isn’t it attacking us?!”

Jackie looked at Samson. “It’s because we are not within their area of attack.”

Samson was confused and asked, “Area of attack?”

Jackie was in no mood to entertain Samson as he looked over at Graham. “Are you ready? If you’re ready, then let’s not waste time.”

Graham had a sunken expression on his face. He glanced over at Jackie and noticed that Jackie did not seem pressured at all. It was as if Jackie did not care about the battle that would soon follow.

He himself was forced to wonder if he could defeat the eight-tailed demonic snake, or if he would be heavily injured just like the masked man was.

Graham was speechless, even thinking that Jackie was just pretending to be calm. After all, the eight-tailed demonic snake's skills were no ordinary matter, and it was already incredibly close to the spring solidifying realm.

Even the masked man could not gain an advantage against it. No matter how strong Jackie was, there was no way Jackie could break past the restrictions of his level!

Since that was the case, Jackie's calmness had to be a façade.

Graham's lips twitched. "I'm ready, but you seem to be in a much better mood than me, Jackie. Facing such a strong eight-tailed snake, your expression hasn't changed at all."

The words sounded like a question, but they had a strange tone to them. Jackie smiled lightly, and it was obvious what that man was thinking in his mind.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2331-2335

Chapter 2331
Jackie raised his brow slightly as he said, “Even though the eight-tailed snake is incredibly strong, it’s not like it can’t be beaten. Since you’re ready, let’s go.”

Hearing Jackie’s words, Graham had a sour look on his face. He felt like Jackie was too pretentious and that Jackie’s words were too monotonous. It was as if Jackie implied he was a powerful individual. Graham’s face darkened a bit, and he wanted nothing more than to say some foul words to incite Jackie.

He wanted Jackie to stop showing off like he was the best of the best. However, he knew as well that Jackie would not just take it lying down, and he might end up retaliating

If that awkward situation happened, they could just forget about working together. With that, Graham held back his exasperation as he walked toward the eight-tailed demonic snake with Jackie.

The masked man and the others saw that Jackie had made his move and could only look on with widened eyes. The masked man’s anger started to boil over.

Moments ago, he had felt incredibly uncomfortable being laughed at by Jackie and the others, and he wanted nothing more than to find somewhere to hide.

Zamian, on the other hand, knew what was making the masked man uncomfortable and hurriedly started with his flattery.

“Don’t worry! With their skills, they won’t be able to stand against the eight-tailed demonic snake. The beast will bulldoze them completely, and the two of them won’t ever be able to pass. Only you will be able to climb the Divine Void Slope!”

His words sounded incredibly certain, as if he wanted nothing more than to shout it out to the world. The masked man’s expression mellowed out, and his mood slowly improved, too.

The earlier awkwardness had sent his anger to its limits, and he felt like a few vicious slaps had been delivered to his face.

The masked man smiled coldly as he said loudly,” You two should know your place. It’d be disastrous if you’re just swallowed up by the snake!”

The words were full of mockery, meant specifically for Jackie and Graham. The northern clans’ disciples reddened in anger the moment they heard those words.

If it had been before, they might have kept quiet due to who the masked man was, but the masked man's earlier actions had been too evil.

If Jackie had not come out, the masked man might have slaughtered the rest of them. They were still filled with frustration and anger, and they could no longer hold it back after the masked man's words.

Benjamin stepped forward. "Hey, disciple of the Corpse Pavilion, even though I still don't know your name, you've left a deep impression on us.

"Why does it seem like all you know is mockery? Have you forgotten that your words were always met with a slap in the face every time?"

"When you saw us, you had such a shocked look on your face. Is it because you thought we'd never guess your plan?! It looks like you've really overestimated yourself!"

"Who wouldn't be able to see through that little trick of yours? Honestly, we have to thank you for our easy trip here!"

To this, the other disciples of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion joined in, jeering.

"That's right! Of course we have to thank that disciple with the mask on. If he hadn't cleared so many obstacles for us, we'd never have arrived here so easily. We didn't encounter any dangers on the way here at all!"

They chimed in one after another and all those words were like stabs after stabs onto the masked man's heart. His anger that had just been suppressed boiled up again and exploded.

Chapter 2332
The masked man was so enraged that he scrambled to stand up, albeit struggling when he did, wanting to fight with the northern disciples, even daring to bet his life on the line.

Alas, he had yet to recover from his injuries and could not even stand up.

The disciples next to him hurriedly helped the masked man up, and Zamian even tried to console him, saying, "Don't get angry; these are just petty remarks made by insignificant people. If you weren't injured, they wouldn't have even dared to say all that. You'll surely recover eventually, and you can show them who's boss after that!"

The masked man was so angry his entire body was trembling. His anger boiled within his heart, and he spat out another mouthful of blood.

Jackie's lips twitched at the sight.

Even though the masked man was incredibly strong and talented, he was rather frail in his mentality. Just a few words were enough to have him spitting out blood in anger. He was far too weak on that front.

Just as Jackie's thoughts wandered, a sticky energy suddenly enveloped his body. He immediately turned his head to look at Graham next to him, and Graham's expression changed as well.

Before they could even figure what was happening, their vision blurred as they were suddenly pulled into an isolated space.

When their surroundings cleared up, Jackie was shocked to notice that he was only less than a hundred meters away from the eight-tailed snake that was in the middle.

When he stepped inside the barrier, the snake seemed to have come alive, and its beady red eyes stared right at Jackie.

Its breath reeked of blood, and the whole place stank of the same ominous stench of blood, too.

Jackie let out a sigh, not able to entirely suppress the surprise he felt. After all, he never expected that he would suddenly be teleported.

He was not the only one caught unaware, as Graham seemed visibly shocked, too. The masked man had naturally not been kind enough to tell them that they would be teleported inside.

Furthermore, the two eight-tailed snakes they were facing launched their attacks before the two of them could even recover from their surprise.

The eight-tailed snake adopted an attacking stance, and Jackie's eyes stared right into the snake's red eyes.

Before Jackie made a move, the eight-tailed snake bared its fangs and rushed right at Jackie.

In his shock, he immediately twisted space, suddenly teleporting 30 meters away and heard a crash.

The eight-tailed snake's head viciously crashed into where Jackie was earlier.

Looking at the massive crater on the ground, Jackie started to have a nervous look on his face. The eight tailed snake's attack had been far too quick. No wonder it raised its head earlier—it was charging up!

If not for Jackie mastering the laws of space, he might not have been able to avoid that speed. Jackie was even more shocked that such a large crater had formed just from the demonic snake's head!

The snake, on the other hand, was not injured whatsoever. Its scales seemed to be the strongest scales in the world. It did not seem like any amount of force would be able to break through!

Looking at that scene, Jackie helplessly thought that If he did not know the eight-tailed demonic snake's weakness, he would never be able to break through those scales on the snake's body no matter how he attacked

When the outsiders saw that scene, they widened their eyes. Samson lost his voice slightly when he exclaimed, "That's way too fast; it only took a blink of an eye! If I was there, I would've died from that blow!"

His words were not exaggerated at all. If Samson had faced the eight-tailed demonic snake, he would not have been able to avoid it!

Chapter 2333
Jackie successfully avoided the eight-tailed demon snake's attack and seemed to trigger the eight-tailed snake's competitive spirit. The snake got faster and faster, and anger glossed over its eyes.

It was the first time Jackie had seen anger in the eyes of a beast. At the same time, he had no idea why the snake would be so… infuriated.

Of course, the eight-tailed snake could not give Jackie an answer. A piercing sound met his ears as the eight -tailed demonic snake raised its tail and attacked Jackie with a speed that could not be seen by some of the people.

Those constant, unending attacks gave Jackie a huge headache. It was at that moment did he realize why the masked man was so badly wounded.

The eight-tailed snake's tail attacks were not something a normal person could withstand. Furthermore, the eight-tailed snake seemed incredibly versed in combat; each attack was aiming at a fatal blow.

Not even a god could withstand the constant attacks!

Jackie took a deep breath as he mentally lamented. If he did not have the memories left behind for him, he might not have been able to pass this stage.

After all, the eight-tailed demonic snake was far too strong. It did not have any martial skills or special abilities, and it relied on pure physical strength!

Its whole body was covered with a layer of scales, and slaying it would be an incredibly difficult feat, especially if one knew not its weakness and if an individual had not the strength greater than the eight -tailed snake!

Thinking about that, Jackie could not help but mumble to himself, "I can't delay it anymore! If I keep delaying, my true energy will be exhausted!"

Thinking about that, he once again used the laws of space. This time, he did not avoid the attack by heading outward and instead teleported straight to the snake's back.

He floated behind the snake and clearly felt that aura that could not be ignored coming from the eight tailed demon snake. A dense layer of demonic energy surrounded its body.

The scales on its back were as hard as steel, so much so that even steel might not be able to compare. The black scales looked incredibly strong under the blood -colored glow of the moon.

The masked man could not help but laugh coldly at the scene.

"What is Jackie trying to do? Is he planning on attacking the snake's back? Is something wrong with his brain? Doesn't he know that fiends usually had the hardest defense around their backs?!

"Even I wouldn't dare to attack its back; that'd just be a waste of time. It seems like this brat lacks experience in battle after all!"

The moment he said that, Griffin, who had just been quietly standing in the corner, finally found a chance to speak up. Griffin hurriedly said, "You're right! This guy has no battle experience. Based on what I know, he had only fought within the clan a few times. Even though he won every battle, it's still a very small number of battles!

"Someone like him can't possibly have the most basic of knowledge!"

Griffin's words made the masked man incredibly happy. He nodded at Griffin, feeling like not killing the brat, Jackie, at the start had been a brilliant decision. At the very least, it made him feel a little better.

Chapter 2334
"I knew there was something wrong with Jackie's brain!"

At that moment, Jackie raised the black sword and unleashed an attack toward the back of the eight tailed demon snake, and everyone else watched on, their expressions changing as they spectated with a complicated expression.

A few of them felt like Jackie was lacking in knowledge. Did he not know that beasts like the eight -tailed demonic snake, who were strong defensively and physically reliant, had their strongest defenses at their backs?

Did he think that his attack had already exceeded the restrictions of his level and would be able to pierce through the eight-tailed demonic snake's defenses?

This time, even those from the northern clans who had faith in Jackie did not know what to say.

“What’s Jackie doing? Why is he risking his life on the line to attack the eight-tailed snake’s back?! Is he trying to waste his true energy?”

Their confusion was evident in their questions.

Jackie’s actions were no doubt difficult to understand.

Isaiah clutched Nelson’s hand incredibly tightly. He then spoke to Nelson, his voice lowered, “What do you think Jackie is doing? I know he’s always had his own opinion of things, and I feel like he’s not someone who would do things frivolously…”

In truth, Isaiah did not know any better way to describe it. Nelson knew what Isaiah wanted to say; Jackie was not an idiot. However, everything Jackie was doing seemed to be proving that Jackie lacked some brain cells!

The masked man started to laugh out loud. “I can’t believe he’s genuinely attacking the hardest part. Graham would indefinitely not do something like that.

“Everyone knows that no matter what manner of fiend they are, their stomachs are the softest section of their body. The stomachs are always the best place to attack! Yet, this guy seemed to not understand anything. I want to laugh just looking at him putting his life on the line that!”

Griffin stood behind the masked man with an elated look on his face. Just like the masked man, he would be over the moon as long as something unfortunate happened to Jackie.

Jackie looked like a fool, doing something that completely lacked common sense. Griffin was so happy that his mouth was about to fall off from smiling!

He had never cared if he would be punished when he returned to the clan or not. After all, he had already been certain of the fact that Jackie would not leave this place alive. Isaiah and Nelson would absolutely not make it back, either!

The Dual Sovereign Pavilion had sent 20 of them here. Other than him, no one would be allowed to go back!

Howard had already died in the hands of the masked man. Even though that stained Griffin’s impression of the masked man, he still suppressed all his hatred for the sake of survival.

He ignored everything else that happened.

Who cared about what those people outside were talking about? Whatever they were talking about, Jackie did not care at all. His mind was purely on the eight-tailed demonic snake at that moment.

The eight-tailed demonic snake was intelligent, no doubt, different from any regular beasts. At that moment, it should have already noticed something wrong with that brat it could not handle.

The brat insisted on tickling the beast's body. It definitely felt like something was wrong with Jackie's mind, attacking the scales that could definitely not be pierced through. The eight-tailed snake had actually started to relax against Jackie.

It was like a mouse being toyed by a cat after being caught. It happily wanted to torture Jackie.

With a clap, Jackie once again avoided the eight-tailed demonic snake's attack. He had already used up quite a lot of true energy.

After all, bending the laws of space required a lot of true energy.

Instead, Jackie did not seem to be too focused on attacking the eight-tailed snake's back and seemed to be sending in a few symbolic attacks.

Chapter 2335
Just as everyone genuinely thought Jackie was a brainless individual, Jackie took another deep breath as he formed a few seals on his hand. He activated the laws of space again, using it to its limits.

He went from floating around the eight-tailed snake's back to suddenly appearing in front of it, catching the eight-tailed demonic snake by complete surprise.

The eight-tailed demonic snake took its time attacking Jackie all this while, thinking Jackie was dull-witted. It definitely did not expect that Jackie would suddenly appear in front of it.

Jackie narrowed his eyes, his mind quickly churning as his eyes settled on the area beneath the snake's forehead.

Jackie shouted out in a low voice, "Two meters below the snake's head! The scale should be there!"

The moment he said that, he launched forward like a bullet and headed to the position he determined. At that moment, he had nothing else in his mind, not even wondering if the eight-tailed demonic snake had noticed his plans.

His hands constantly formed some seals as a grayish-black light glowed from his fingers. After that, he quickly formed 35 Soul Swords on the black blade!

"Destroying the Void!" exclaimed Jackie. "Die!"

The moment he said that, the black blade surged forward, piercing into the snake.

Everything had happened far too quickly. The eight tailed demon snake never thought for a second that Jackie was, all this while, a wolf in sheep's clothing. Attacking the scales on its back were merely to attract its attention.

In truth, he had long known the eight-tailed demonic snake's weakness. Its body was fully covered in scales, and the only weak point was two meters below its forehead where a gray scale was positioned.

That gray scale was where it absorbed true energy, and it was the weakest point on its body!

Everyone heard a crack at the scale shattered. The black blade pierced right into the eight-tailed demonic snake's body, and a gray energy surged out of the blade in Jackie's hand.

It was a massive Soul Sword formed by 35 Soul Swords merging together. It was the strongest attack Jackie could use.

The massive Soul Sword pierced its body. In a flash, it penetrated the snake's body and killed its soul!

The fiend's soul was never that strong in the first place. Being attacked by Destroying the Void caused immense pain on its soul, sending the snake into a ballistic frenzy.

It opened its mouth and let out a roar as its whole body started to twist and turn.

Jackie was already completely depleted of energy at that moment. The snake's wild thrashing had caused its eight tails to constantly assault its surroundings!

Alas, Jackie was hit with one of the beast's tails with an audible thud. Jackie felt like his internal organs had been shattered as he flew across the air.

Thankfully, the snake's soul had already been attacked. All of its actions were merely a reaction to pain and not targeted attacks in any direction.

Despite being sent zipping across the air, Jackie was miraculously safe, not suffering any serious injuries.

With a bang, Jackie fell to the ground. He coughed intensely as he grabbed one of his arms, sitting up from the ground

His hands trembled slightly, and the black blade had already flown out of his hand from the earlier attack.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2336-2340

Chapter 2336
He could still hear the eight-tailed snake's painful roars in his ear. Jackie's hands were trembling, momentarily forgetting the pain inflicted by his injuries from the tail strike. Instead, he looked up at the eight-tailed demonic snake that was struggling.

At that moment, Destroying the Void had destroyed most of the eight-tailed demonic snake's soul. It could no longer think and could only struggle with its instincts.

Struggling against its own life slipping away, its roars shook Jackie's ears. However, Jackie did not cover his ears and merely stared with widened eyes at the eight-tailed demonic snake.

After struggling for a while, the eight-tailed demonic snake's soul was finally completely extinguished. Its roars stopped abruptly as the spectators looked on, stunned.

Under everyone's gazes, the gigantic eight-tailed demonic snake collapsed on the ground.

With a loud bang, the massive body caused the ground to shake. Dust blew as it temporarily obscured everyone's vision. At that moment, everyone's mouths were slightly wide open, not knowing what to say.

In truth, that battle had not lasted that long. The spectators had yet to understand what was happening even though Jackie's last attack at the eight -tailed demonic snake was not obvious but it was deadly!

"It died just like that?" Samson's lips trembled slightly, his eyes widened so much that they threatened to jump out of their sockets.

The others were incredibly anxious. "It should be dead! However, can anyone tell me how it died?

"It looked like Jackie merely shifted his attacking point, and that eight-tailed snake's impenetrable defense suddenly crumbled like paper. Jackie defeated it in one blow! After that, the snake struggled and roared for a few seconds before it died!"

That person's words left the others and himself in disbelief. The others looked up at the eight-tailed demonic snake's corpse, slightly stunned.

Isaiah looked over at Nelson and said, “How did Jackie do that? How did the eight-tailed demonic snake’s defense crumble so quickly…”

Nelson was a chosen disciple who was close to the top of the rankings. Even though he was from a third -grade clan, he was still quite experienced.

He took a deep breath and said in a serious tone,” Just now when Jackie attacked its back, it was not due to any miscalculations on his part. He attacked it knowing that it was the most defended part.

“He did so to attract the snake’s attention. He wanted the snake to think that Jackie was doing so out of stupidity, just like everyone else did! That Jackie lacked experience!”

After listening to Nelson’s explanation, Isaiah finally understood. He turned around and clutched Nelson’s arm anxiously.

“You mean that Jackie knew where the eight-tailed snake’s weakness was from the start! The eight-tailed demonic snake’s defense did not suddenly crumble. It was just that Jackie attacked directly at the eight-tailed demonic snake’s weak point?”

Nelson nodded. He had faith in his eyes. He could see that Jackie attacked at a very special spot earlier. The scale that Jackie attacked had been slightly different In color from the other scales. If he did not look at it I n detail, he would not have noticed!

Benjamin’s hands trembled slightly. Since Nelson had noticed, he would have as well. He could not help but shake his head.

“Sure enough, we can’t underestimate masters like this. Even though masters are sometimes hard to understand, it’s just because we don’t understand them, and not because they’re dumb!”

Chapter 2337
After finishing his words, he shook his head, sighing. He felt the gap between him and Jackie growing wider and wider. At the start, Benjamin had thought that Jackie’s actions were amusing and that he was inexperienced

No matter how strong he was, he might still have moments of failure. Instead, it seemed like what he thought was Jackie’s inexperience was actually just him not knowing Jackie well enough.

The northern clan disciples were all full of deep admiration for Jackie despite their surprise. They were still composed, after all, they were in the same camp as Jackie. However, the Corpse Pavilion was different.

The Corpse Pavilion’s disciples had a depressed look on their faces. The masked man’s hands were clenched tightly. Due to how much force he was using, his muscles were bulging tightly as well. At that moment, he had been dealt a huge blow.

Even Nelson had seen through what had happened, let alone the masked man. The masked man had naturally managed to see through that Jackie's actions were merely to trick the eight-tailed demonic snake, concealing his final attack.

If that meant Jackie lacked experience, then the rest of them amounted to nothing!

Jackie had attacked in an incredibly unique way! If the masked man was not Jackie's enemy, the masked man would probably have praised him!

"That brat! I definitely can't allow him to live. He can't be allowed to leave this place alive!" The masked man's raspy voice was incredibly resolved.

At that moment, he completely understood what he had to do. If he let Jackie leave the Hidden Place for Resources, he would be facing an incredibly large threat in the future.

Jackie's relationship with him was already bad to begin with, and he had killed so many of Jackie's fellow disciples. Jackie would definitely be a threat to the Corpse Pavilion when he grows stronger. The first person Jackie would look to kill would be him!

He could absolutely not let something like that happen. Before, the masked man merely hated Jackie but did not feel as threatened as he did at that moment. However, after witnessing this scene, he felt like Jackie was a ticking time bomb!

When Lennon heard the masked man's words, he had a moment of realization. He had been like the others, stuck in their surprise. After all, he had witnessed the masked man's fight against the eight tailed demon snake for himself.

The masked man had used everything he had, and still ended up heavily injured when he dealt with the eight-tailed demonic snake. Furthermore, he had taken much longer than Jackie to defeat the snake!

Compared to the masked man's battle, Jackie seemed to have ended it faster and easier. That was even despite the fact that Jackie had been incredibly unlucky to get hit by the eight-tailed demonic snake at the last moment.

However, compared to the heavily injured masked man, Jackie's plan seemed perfect. The gap between the two of them had been displayed for everyone to see right there!

To the masked man, Jackie was already a gigantic threat that could not be ignored. He could understand the masked man's worry and fear!

He could not help but frown, he had to say what he was afraid of saying before, "You have to quickly recover. When you get back to the Divine Void Slope, you have to do everything you can't. We can't let him leave the top.

“It’s not just because he can obtain those treasures. If he grows stronger, he’ll definitely be a huge threat to the Corpse Pavilion, he might even be able to unite the West Cercie State!”

Chapter 2338

Lennon’s last words were like a massive stone being thrown into calm waters. Everyone was stunned when they heard those words and had a look on their faces that looked like they wanted to die.

Zamian’s face was pale, and veins even appeared on his eyes, “Lennon… Aren’t you exaggerating things a little? This guy can unite West Cercie State?

“Is he really capable of doing that? It’s been so many years, and the northern clans have definitely had their masters. However, none of the masters have ever been so powerful! Something no one has been able to do for so many years, are you sure this guy can?”

Lennon glanced at Zamian. Normally, he would not have bothered to explain something like this to Zamian. However, it was a special time, and if he did not make things clear, those people would not understand the severity of the situation.

Lennon’s voice was very deep, as if he was announcing something incredibly painful, “Use your brains a little, please just think about it. Even though the northern clans have had their masters all these years. In so many years, not a single one of them had really been able to threaten the Corpse Pavilion.

“Think about it, can those so-called masters compare to Jackie? Don’t forget, Jackie is currently only at the intermediate stage of the innate level.

“I paid special attention to Jackie before this, and I’ve asked Griffin about Jackie as well. That guy had only been at the initial stage of the innate level and it didn’t take him long to reach the intermediate stage!

“Which master can defeat another master at the late stage of the innate level when they’re only in the intermediate stage? The gap between one master and another is usually not that much different.

“However, this guy can battle across stages! He’s even so much stronger than those of us who thought we were masters.”

At that moment, Lennon’s tone was a little depressed. The others fell silent after hearing that. Lennon was right. There were differences between masters, but it was rarely so large of a gap.

Fighting across stages was something that would not happen between absolute masters, but Jackie had managed to do it. Jackie had done something no one had been able to do so in many years.

Then when he grows stronger, he would naturally threaten the Corpse Pavilion. Not even the masked man could retort at that moment, because the masked man knew that Lennon was right!

The masked man took a deep breath, and after shutting his eyes momentarily, he said in a somber tone, “Everyone shut up! You’re not allowed to praise others to diminish yourself!

“He’s definitely a master, but masters who have yet to mature can only live by the mercy of others. He’s not a threat yet!”

After that, the Corpse Pavilion was once again in a strange silence. They were no idiots. They naturally knew what the masked man meant, and that he would kill Jackie at all costs!

After another boom, the eight-tailed demonic snake’s corpse suddenly glowed in colorful light. Under Jackie’s surprised look, the colorful lights slowly disappeared, and the eight-tailed snake’s corpse disappeared in the light.

In the end, the light all gathered into a pill the size of a grape! When the pill appeared, the smell of blood around him had suddenly disappeared, and the deep smell of medicine assaulted his nose.

Jackie widened his eyes abruptly, unable to stop himself from saying, “Ninth-grade soul refining pill!

Chapter 2339
It was the first time Jackie had seen a pill that was of such a high grade. If he took it back to the clan in exchange for points, he would absolutely be able to get over ten thousand points.

After all, refining a pill like that would not only need ninth-grade spirited grass and other valuable natural treasures, it would also need an incredibly high-ranked alchemist. The alchemist would have to refine it for several days, that was how valuable it was!

Jackie’s excited eyes started to glow. He withstood the pain in his bones as he stumbled to stand up. He hobbled over to the pill that was floating in the air.

The pill was more valuable to Jackie than anyone else. A spirit refining pill meant that it could help train his soul. It would enhance the level and quality of his soul, and increase the control a person had over souls!

Thinking about that, Jackie’s hands started to shake. He took a deep breath as he forced himself to calm down. He retrieved a jade box from Mustard Seed and placed the pill gently inside, making sure not to harm the pill’s effects.

In front of everyone, he placed the soul refining pill into his storage space. When Benjamin and the others witnessed the scene, their eyes watered, and could not help but say in exasperation, “It’s a ninth grade pill! A ninth-grade pill is even more valuable than an Earth Ranked martial skill. Ninth-grade pills have been

known to double a person's potential! It's a pity, but I've only seen such a thing, and have never obtained one!"

After listening to that, the others added, "No wonder masters improve exponentially. We'll never be able to stand up against these masters.

"Failing against them only means they'll continue soaring up, while we continue to be stuck in one place! Only masters can gain even more resources for themselves… We can't compete at all!"

Those words were exactly what everyone else had been thinking. They could not help but nod in agreement, and everyone shot looks of envy at Jackie. Jackie did not hear those words at all.

At that moment, he was already planning how he would deal with the masked man when he went back to the Divine Void Slope. Thinking about the masked man's cold and arrogant face, Jackie's anger could not help but surge.

Even though he always had a calm and uncaring expression when he dealt with the masked man, Jackie definitely wanted the masked man to die!

Thinking about Riv's cold face, as well as the other disciples that died in the hands of the masked man, he wanted to skin that man alive. Jackie knew very well that the masked man probably thought the same about him as well.

Both sides definitely wanted the other side to die. At that moment, a wail of agony was heard.

Jackie looked over and could see a completely bloodied figure soar across the air. The figure landed heavily on the ground not far from Jackie with a boom!

That person's clothes were stained with blood, if not for the fact that his chest was still moving, Jackie would have thought that the person was dead!

Jackie frowned slightly as he shouted, "Graham, you should admit defeat, or you'll die."

Those words sounded cold, but it was out of sincere concern. When Graham heard Jackie's words, he coughed viciously, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 2340
At that moment, he was more injured than the masked man was. He tried using his arm to force his body to sit up, but after trying a few times, he fell back on the floor with a thud.

He could hear the roar of the snake on the other side. He knew that the eight-tailed demonic snake was about to attack him again!

He was seriously injured, but his mind was incredibly clear. Even though Jackie had finished speaking, Jackie's words kept on repeating over and over in his head.

Just as the eight-tailed snake was about to use another tail to strike, Graham used the last of his strength to shout, "I surrender!"

In truth, he did not know if the eight-tailed demonic snake would stop its attack after he surrendered. After all, that old voice said that death existed in the blood world.

However, he still had to gamble no matter what! At that moment, the hearts of all the northern clan disciples stopped, about to jump out of their throats. They did not want to see Graham's bloodied form.

After all, if Graham died, it would leave only Jackie behind. They were not willing to gamble on Jackie being able to carry them through.

Some of them loudly shouted, "What do we do? Should we rush inside to save Graham?! We can't let that snake continue attacking, or Graham will definitely die!"

"Didn't we tell Graham not to force things earlier?! If he had just stopped when he felt like he could no longer take it, he would at least have been able to save himself, but now…"

However, those words were merely helpless ramblings. Jackie furrowed his eyebrows. Even though he was not that fond of Graham, they were still in the same camp at that moment.

If Graham really died, he would have to withstand the pressure from the Corpse Pavilion himself. Just as he tightened his fists and planned on trying to break through the barrier to save Graham, the snake's tail suddenly stopped.

It was as if a button had been pushed, and it stopped two meters in front of Graham. At that moment, Graham had already broken out in cold sweat, the salty sweat reminding him that he had almost died!

Under everyone's bated breaths, the eight-tailed demonic snake slowly retracted its tail, reverting back into its arrogant state, ignoring all. It had stopped attacking Graham.

Graham felt his body get lighter, and familiar energy once again stuck to his body. His vision blurred, and when he opened his eyes again, he was already outside the barrier.

Standing next to him was Jackie. Jackie frowned, leaning down to help Graham up, helping him adopt a sitting posture.

He then turned around to look at Benjamin and the others, “Why aren’t you coming over?!”

When Benjamin and the others heard that, they hurriedly ran over. The other twenty-odd people had very serious looks on their faces. Benjamin took out a pill from his storage ring and fed it to Graham.

Graham forced himself to swallow it, and the warmth of the medicine slowly entered his body. It went through his broken veins, and slowly repaired his internal injuries.

However, Graham’s injuries had been far too severe. Even though his condition was stabilized for the moment, he still needed more time to recover.

Graham seemed to be in an incredibly bad state like he would run out of breath at any moment. Benjamin pursed his lips helplessly. Even though he knew he should not utter those words, he could not hold back.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2341-2345

Chapter 2341
“Graham, are you crazy? You clearly know you weren’t a match for it, so why did you continue fighting? You ended up being so heavily injured, it’ll definitely affect your future…

“Don’t forget, we’re not within the clan at the moment. We still don’t know how much danger we’ll face in this place. For you to get yourself so heavily injured is incredibly irresponsible!”

As he said that, Benjamin’s lips were trembling slightly. He had clearly told Graham earlier to not push himself if he could not win. Surrendering would have been the way to go.

However, Graham seemed to have completely forgotten that promise. When Graham fought against the eight-tailed demonic snake, he seemed to drop everything else, seemingly wanting to battle the snake to death!

Graham took a deep breath, not saying anything. He knew that Benjamin’s words were reasonable, and that he had lost his composure.

At that moment, Jackie said in a low voice, “You’re the chosen disciple from the fourth-grade clan, you’ll be bearing a lot of responsibilities in the future. For you to put your life on the line for this trivial thing isn’t worth it at all.”

When everyone heard Jackie’s words, they had confused looks in their eyes. They obviously did not understand what Jackie had meant. No one else understood, but Graham definitely did.

Graham felt like his sore point had been pressed, and his face turned from pale to red.

He opened his eyes to look at Jackie, but Jackie still had that nonchalant expression on. Jackie was looking at Graham with a very plain expression. After letting out a long sigh, Jackie looked away.

Graham really did not want to admit defeat. Even though he had been focused on his own battle, he still saw Jackie’s victory over the eight-tailed demonic snake.

He never expected that Jackie would win, and Jackie looked like he was not even injured.

His skills were clearly not on the level of the eight tailed demon snake. It was impossible for him to beat the snake. There was actually such a huge gap in skills between Jackie and him, how could he just swallow that.

Why was there such a big gap between the two of them when they were both masters!

He clearly remembered that Jackie was merely at the intermediate stage of the innate level as well. He admitted that he was no match for the masked man, but he felt like the gap between the masked man and him was not that large. It did not make Graham feel that bad.

Instead, he noticed that there was such a huge gap between Jackie and him. There was no way for Graham to calmly accept that, and the thought filled his mind at that moment.

He wanted to do everything he could to prove that the gap between Jackie and him was not that big. He could defeat the eight-tailed demonic snake as well. He could also stand at the peak of the Divine Void Slope, looking down on everyone!

Benjamin's eyes lit up, looking at Jackie before looking at Graham, seemingly understanding Jackie's words. He reached out and lightly patted Graham, not continuing to scold the man. Instead, knelt down and took out a few more pills for Graham.

At that moment, the sound of a clock could be heard In their ears. The sound seemed very close to them as I fit came from within Netherworld Mountain.

Everyone widened their eyes. In their state of confusion, all of them started to be enveloped in familiar energy. When they started to react, they had already left the blood-colored world, and was back on the Divine Void Slope!

Chapter 2342
However, this time, there were only less than a hundred disciples left from the initial hundred and eighty! Most of those who died were from the northern clans!

When they were transferred back to their original position, Jackie turned to look. There was suddenly a lot of space within the densely packed crowd.

The northern clan disciples were no longer as confident within their own backyard as they were before. They were anxious, and looked at the disciples from the other clans with hatred!

If they did not know of the difference in numbers, the two sides would have started to fight! Jackie let out a long sigh and looked over at Graham next to him.

Graham was not in a good state and seemed to want to avoid everything by shutting his eyes. Graham sat down cross-legged as he started to tend to his own wounds.

The masked man was not in a much better state. The masked man's injuries were only slightly better than Graham's. Jackie was actually injured as well, but compared to the two of them, his injuries were nothing.

He had also taken a recovery pill before that, so Jackie already felt much better! The masked man's cold gaze fell on Jackie. The masked man did nothing to hide his killing intent as if he wanted to skin Jackie alive.

Jackie let out a cold smile and stared right back.

The masked man snorted, "Prick! Don't be so pleased with yourself. There's still plenty of time, we'll see what happens later!"

Jackie raised his eyebrow slightly as he said, "You're right, there's still plenty of time…"

The moment he said that the old voice was heard once again, "Three days! You have three days to recover from your injuries! After three days, the peak of the Divine Void Slope will witness your battle!"

After that, the old voice was no longer heard, and the crowd started to talk amongst themselves.

All the battles and risks they took before were for this very moment. From the moment when everyone entered with confidence to them all losing their confidence when faced with difficulty of each challenge. At that moment, everyone had thought that no one would be able to pass.

Defeating the ninth Divine warrior seemed like something impossible. Yet, someone had done it. It was not just one person, but two!

They had to admit that the old man's arrangements were quite humane. After all, Jackie and the masked man had suffered varying degrees of injuries. If they had fought right away, it would be unfair to the masked man.

After all, the last battle would be the final battle between Jackie and the masked man! When the masked man heard those words, he took a deep breath.

He suddenly looked up at Jackie, "Excellent! Three days is enough for me to recover. Then, I'll let you know that luck will not always be on your side!"

"The others can't see, but I clearly did.

"You killed that eight-tailed snake so easily, not because you were strong enough to easily pierce through its defenses. It was just because you knew its weakness!"

Jackie smiled, not denying it. He did not really care what the masked man thought about him. Even if the masked man insulted him, Jackie was not bothered to retort. After all, strength had never been determined with words.

Chapter 2343
The masked man loudly declared, "Don't even think that I'll lose to you just because your results were better! Let me tell you… If I'm at my peak, or if I really decide to put my life on the line, you'll never defeat me!"

The others might not know what the masked man's hidden message was, but Jackie got the message loud and clear. After all, he had seen the masked man's true power before.

As someone who had already entered the spring solidifying realm, the masked man had definitely taken pills to suppress his power to enter this place! The masked man was right, if his powers were not suppressed, Jackie would stand no chance.

However, Jackie was merely at the intermediate stage of the innate level. If Jackie managed to break through and reach the spring solidifying realm, he would not be bothered with the masked man then!

Jackie took a deep breath, his eyes glinting as he went deep in thought. He suddenly had a worry in his heart. If the guy was forced to the level where he did not care about anything else and reverted to the spring solidifying realm, Jackie might really die!

Thinking about that, Jackie frowned. He suddenly made a vow in his heart that he would not let that happen. Even if it did happen, he would make sure he had a way to protect himself.

After making that point clear, he did not even look at the masked man and sat down immediately. He had no time to waste.

The others did not react to what Jackie was doing. Jackie suddenly took out that jade box and retrieved the spirit refining pill. He stuffed the pill into his mouth right in front of everyone.

That scene caused everyone to be stunned, Jackie had swallowed the spirit refining pill! Even though they've never had such a pill before, everyone had heard of its power and effectiveness.

The key lies in the word 'refining'. Refining one's soul was not something to be played around with. Before swallowing the pill, most people would have various preparations. It was so that they would be able to stave off the effects if they could not hold on!

Otherwise, they would damage their souls, and turn into a madman. However, Jackie ignored all of that and swallowed the pill directly!

Isaiah said nervously, "What do we do? Has Jackie gone crazy?! Does he not know how intense the spirit refining pill is? It doesn't just level up the soul.

"It can damage his soul if he's not careful! Damaging his soul at a time like this will affect the results of the battle!"

Nelson had a worrisome look on as well. However, it was already too late to worry, because they had not even had the chance to stop Jackie before he swallowed the pill.

Nelson shook his head slightly, saying helplessly," It's already too late to say anything. All we can do is pray that he'll be fine.

"Otherwise, the two of us will be in danger. If anything happens to Jackie, the masked man won't let the two of us from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion off!"

Isaiah cursed in his heart as if he had taken some poison. His eyes were full of despair. Nelson was right, if anything happened to Jackie, the two of them would suffer.

There were only the three of them left from the clan. Jackie was their pillar of support. If that pillar fell, the two of them would be eaten alive.

Graham looked over at Jackie in shock, "He's really gone crazy…"

Graham spat out those words in exasperation. As a chosen disciple at the peak of a fourth-grade clan, he naturally had a lot more knowledge than the rest.

Chapter 2344
It would be incredibly difficult for anyone to swallow the spirit refining pill before making preparations beforehand, that was what everyone else knew. However, they did not know that the soul refining pill's medicinal effects were incredibly dominating.

It refines the soul by using the dominating medicinal effects to break down the soul and reassemble it again, training the soul!

Each time a soul was broken down and reassembled, It would be even more refined, losing unneeded filth! I t would slowly be molded into a sharp blade!

The pain when souls were ripped apart was not something a regular person could withstand. Some would even go mad from being tortured like that. It needed a very strong soul as well as will to be able to hold on!

The masked man laughed lightly, mocking, "Brat! It looks like the both of us won't even need to fight, you'll be the death of yourself!"

Jackie was unable to respond to the masked man at that moment. Even if he could, Jackie would not have replied anyway. At that moment, Jackie's full focus was within his own body.

Ever since the spirit refining pill entered his body, Jackie felt like his entire body was being engulfed by a strange energy. His soul was screaming out in pain.

Jackie had read in an old book that the body's pain would never reach the limits because the bodies had their limits. Once the pain reaches a certain level, the pain would go numb.

However, pain in the soul was different. There was no limit to the pain he could suffer. It was able to torture a person to death. The pain in the soul was far worse than any physical pain.

Someone had said before that no matter how firm one's resolve was, the limitless torture that could be inflicted on the soul would still be able to subdue them.

At that moment, Jackie's face was still the picture of calm, but he was already in so much pain that he could not even utter a single word. The spirit refining pill was extremely imperious, and it had completely penetrated Jackie's soul after being absorbed.

The power was like a chisel that never stopped hitting Jackie's soul. Jackie's soul was like a wooden block that had been shattered by the chisel. After a while, Jackie's whole body was twitching, and cold sweat started to form on his forehead.

Without any context, one would think that he had just been pulled out of water. His skin looked like a prawn that had been cooked. It was incredibly red. Those further away were unable to see anything, but the two next to him could clearly see what was happening to him.

Graham did not even have the mood to continue recovering. He raised his eyebrow as he sighed helplessly. Even though he had never had a spirit refining pill before, he had heard from others how much torture the pill inflicted.

Having one's soul being shattered before being reassembled! All that increases the strength and quality of the soul.

Just thinking about it had Graham's head go numb. He could only helplessly look at Jackie, who was experiencing all of that. "Even after taking so much pain, he isn't crying out at all. He's a real man."

It was high praise from Graham. There were not even three people who he thought were real men, so it was obvious how high Jackie's tolerance was. Even the masked man next to Jackie did not have words to rebuke it.

However, he was still unwilling to admit anything, and said plainly, "So what if his tolerance is high? The spirit refining pill isn't something to be played around with. Swallowing it without any preparation, even if he can withstand the pain, his soul won't be able to recover from the damage.

"It might even destroy him mentally. The spirit refining pill might be a ninth-grade pill, no one dares to easily consume it. The medicinal properties are far too strong, and Jackie's just at the intermediate level of the innate stage.

Chapter 2345
"Even someone at the spring solidifying or even divine solidifying realm would not dare to try it so easily. Does he think that he can? He's looking for death!"

Graham glanced at the masked man, Graham was already at the level where he hated the masked man with a fierce passion. After all, that guy had caused Graham so much trouble and had even killed so many disciples from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion.

He had originally wanted to ignore the masked man, but hearing the masked man's arrogant words, Graham could not help but say coldly, "You always evaluate Jackie like this, but aren't you the one who's constantly on the losing end? Don't casually give out criticisms like this!"

The masked man's face was suddenly red with anger, and wanted nothing more than to start a fight against Graham immediately! Just as the masked man was about to retort, Jackie could finally not resist letting out a cry in agony, "Ahhh…"

However, that cry was forcibly held back by Jackie midway. He shut his mouth tightly, not wanting his cry to be heard by anyone else.

However, because of the pain he was suffering, his body was trembling even more intensely. He was shaking so intensely that every muscle on his body was trembling. His temples thumped as if he would explode at any moment.

Even though they could not feel the pain Jackie was going through, they could still somewhat tell what the pain was like from Jackie's reactions, and to what degree the spirit refining pill had advanced to.

At that moment, Jackie had no strength to notice the reactions of those around him were to his cry of agony because he was already in so much pain that he felt like dying

The spirit refining pill really was intense! Jackie felt like his entire soul was being assaulted by intense attacks. His soul was being ripped apart in every area before being reassembled!

The pain from his soul being constantly torn, left him unable to stand the pain! Reassembling his soul still required him to use his aura which needed his true energy. So, not only did Jackie need to withstand the pain, he needed to use his true energy as well.

The assault on two fronts left him in a dire situation! Jackie was incredibly concerned, he did not know how much his soul would be reconstructed.

How much aura and true energy would he need to expand? If all his true energy ended up being expended, would he not be completely exhausted?

Jackie was starting to regret his recklessness at that moment. He had swallowed the pill without first making sure the price he would have to pay. He was incredibly concerned at that moment.

However, it was already too late for any regrets. He had to hold on! Everyone on the Divine Void Slope was staring at everything Jackie was doing with widened eyes.

In the beginning, Jackie was not trembling so intensely, so those further away were not able to see It clearly. However, at that moment, everyone could see it very clearly because of how badly he was trembling!

On top of that, the earlier cry of agony had immediately signaled Jackie's condition to everyone else. Hayden frowned and said, "Jackie's in trouble. The spirit refining pill isn't something to be fooled around with, will he be able to withstand it?"

Benjamin sighed, "For his spirit to be destroyed and reassembled, he won't just need to tolerate the pain, he'll also need to expend a lot of aura. Even if Jackie's incredibly strong mentally, he would need the aura to hold up."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2346-2350

Chapter 2346
“The moment Jackie runs out of aura to support the reconstruction of his soul, then his soul would only be ripped apart! If something like that happened, it wouldn’t just be a heavy injury, Jackie might even end up dying.”

Benjamin’s words served as a reminder to everyone. After all, most of them did not know much about the spirit refining pill. Benjamin was not just a talented fighter, he was also a future alchemist.

He understood more about pills than a normal person would, so his words were naturally trustworthy. Isaiah looked like his entire family was about to die. “What do we do?!”

At that moment, he did not know what else he could do other than say that. Nelson’s face was just as concerned. Ever since Jackie swallowed the spirit refining pill, Nelson did not stop being worried.

He shook his head slightly, unable to give Isaiah an answer. Other than Benjamin, no one else had anything to say. Benjamin shot Isaiah a deep look. H e knew that Isaiah belonged to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion just like Jackie.

If anything happened to Jackie, it would be an immense blow to Nelson and Isaiah. On top of that, with Jackie and the Corpse Pavilion’s grudges, it would only be the two of them left from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

The masked man would absolutely kill them while Jackie was weak!

Thinking about that, Benjamin said sympathetically, “Jackie might be able to tide it over.”

Those words were empty, and Nelson and Isaiah had no changes in their expression at all. Isaiah’s worry even intensified

He said impatiently, “Jackie’s too reckless!”

Due to how anxious Isaiah was, Nelson turned around and looked at him. “Don’t be so agitated. There’s no point in feeling this way. I trust that Jackie will be able to get past this.”

Nelson’s mouth trembled a bit. Ever since what had happened before, he was in an unstable mental state. He had been dealt a lot of blows and was slowly losing his rationality.

He said, “How would he solve it? Without true energy, he won’t be able to use his aura! When that happens, all we can do is look at Jackie dying!

Nelson frowned and admonished, “Shut up!”

Isaiah shut his mouth somewhat reluctantly. At that moment, he slowly realized that, if he did not stop, he would be regarded as a joke by those around him.

After a while, Jackie finally exhausted all of his true energy. He looked as his true energy was slowly drying up, and his aura was also at its limits. Jackie could only bitterly smile in helplessness.

He would never have expected that reconstructing his soul would use up so much true energy! It had completely exceeded Jackie’s expectations.

At that moment, an annoying voice was heard,” Jackie, is your aura finishing up, and your true energy already exhausted?”

The person’s eyes were very sharp and immediately saw through Jackie’s helplessness. The one who spoke was the person Jackie hated the most. Even if that man had only said one word, Jackie knew it was precisely the masked man from the Corpse Pavilion!

Even though Jackie did not know what the masked man’s name was, it still did not stop Jackie’s hatred.

Jackie slowly opened his eyes, and with a glance, he looked at the masked man who was smiling at him. Next to the masked man was Graham, who was looking at him with a calm expression.

Chapter 2347
After that, he looked at all the other spectators. Other than the disciples from the northern clans, there were the southern clan disciples as well, who were looking at him in amusement like the masked man.

They were all waiting for Jackie to fail in reconstructing his soul at the last moment and die!

Jackie let out a cold snort and nodded, agreeing with the masked man. The others suddenly erupted when they saw Jackie agreeing.

The southern clan disciples who did not like Jackie started to discuss among themselves happily.

“My god! It’s only been such a short time, and his true energy has already depleted. Look at Jackie, his whole body is shuddering. It’s obvious that his soul is still constantly being ripped apart and reconstructed.”

“Without his true energy as support, Jackie will no longer be able to reconstruct his soul! He’ll only be able to watch as his soul is ripped apart. How could he withstand it? He’ll die!”

“That’s right! So what if he’s strong or talented? Being dumb is just being dumb, isn’t he just trying to kill himself?! It looks like no one will even need to do anything, and Jackie will kill himself off!”

“Senior’s eyes are so sharp. He knew immediately that this brat was just an idiot. We don’t even need to do anything, and he’s killing himself.”

“This is too hilarious. He got so far with his power, but so what? He’s just going to die by his own hand in the end!”

Quite a few of them were mocking Jackie with great amusement. Everyone felt like Jackie’s actions were too hilarious by how he was going to kill himself.

In so many years, Jackie was the first! The northern clan disciples all had difficult looks on their faces. Most of them were incredibly concerned about Jackie’s situation.

After all, Jackie was one of their main fighters. No one knew what would happen after this. They did not know if the southern clan disciples would suddenly start attacking.

At that moment, they were no longer like before. After all, so many people had died. With their numbers at just over twenty, they were no match for the southern clans.

If they lose Jackie, it would be a tremendous blow to them!

The northern clan disciples said anxiously, “Quick! Think of something. See if we can help Jackie!”

“What’s there to do? At this moment, all he can do is rely on himself. Normally, people would make incredible amounts of preparations before taking a spirit refining pill. Now, we have no preparations at all, how can we help him?

“With how fast his true energy is being consumed, even a replenishing pill will be useless! After all, true energy recovering pills all need to be absorbed and digested! I don’t think he can even do that anymore!”

Benjamin was incredibly pessimistic about Jackie’s situation, he felt like Jackie could only hold on for just a moment longer before he failed to reconstruct his soul!

The masked man started to laugh uproariously,” Looks like I was right, you’re about to end your own life!”

Graham frowned, saying with exasperation, “I really want to help you right now, but I can’t. We’re in separate spaces, I can’t go there at all.”

Jackie was in an incredibly awkward position. The ones below could not rush up, and even Graham, who was next to him, could not give Jackie any pills. After all, they were in separate spaces even though they could see each other.

Chapter 2348
The isolated spaces were created to prevent them from fighting each other. However, at that moment, Graham did not know what to do. Even though everyone thought that Jackie would die for sure, Jackie did not have that many emotions on his face.

He slowly retrieved a blackish-purple crystal from Mustard seed. The crystal looked like a normal, colorful crystal. It seemed incredibly ordinary, and there was energy surging inside. Everyone saw Jackie reach out, and black energy started to gather on his fingertips. He sent a surge of energy toward the crystal, and with a crack, it shattered.

The energy within started to flow out, and Jackie took a deep breath. His palm aimed right at the source and started to absorb the energy into his body! That Shattered Soul Crystal was even bigger than the one he obtained before. The Shattered Soul Crystal was special in that, as long as there was one crack, the flow of energy would not be able to be stopped.

He needed to absorb all of that energy within himself. Jackie had planned on waiting to reach the Divine Solidifying realm before using that crystal.

After all, that Shattered Soul Crystal had a lot of energy stored within, and he could use it at an important time.

However, he was forced to use it. Even if he wasted some energy, he could no longer care! After all, his aura was already exhausted, and what was stored in the Shattered Soul Crystal was the purest form of aura!

At that moment, a sea of spirit energy surged into his body, immediately filling up the emptiness before. The destroyed soul was rapidly recovering and the intense pain had reduced in half.

Jackie felt his entire body relieving from the pain, and the intense trembling from before had subsided. When everyone saw that scene, they started to gape.

That was especially true for the southern clan disciples. They were all hoping that they would have an amusing show on display.

They had thought that Jackie was trapped, and was waiting to see Jackie perish in pain.

However, Jackie had viciously shatter all of their hopes in a flash. He seemed perfectly fine, and the trembling had even stopped. The southern clan disciples shouted out in surprise, “What did he absorb? Why does it look like he’s

completely fine now after absorbing it? Was there a miraculous pill like that in the world?

“It actually replenished his true energy. If it replenished true energy, why don’tI feel any energy fluctuations?”

Even though they were in isolated spaces, and could not reach where Jackie was, they were still able to extend their divine senses out. After Jackie shattered the crystal, all of them tried to observe the energy that flowed out.

It was the purest form of aura, so there were naturally no energy fluctuations. They were deeply confused by the fact. In everyone’s eyes, Jackie should have been absorbing a treasure that replenished true energy.

However, since it was a treasure, there should naturally be energy fluctuations. Yet, none of them even felt a sliver. That was what rendered them confused and shocked.

“Why is he fine again? Is he immortal?” “He probably is…” A regretful voice said.

Jackie not dying meant that he would still have a final battle against the masked man. If it was before, they would definitely think that the masked man would defeat that unassuming elder disciple from a third-grade clan.

That had been something they would have been assured of. Yet, at that moment, none of them dared to say that the masked man would absolutely defeat Jackie. After going through so many battles, Jackie had yet to lose!

Chapter 2349
That was the strongest proof of Jackie’s skills. They felt that Jackie battling against the masked man would be a fifty-fifty battle.

The northern clan disciples were all smiling happily. Some of them even started to cheer Jackie on loudly, but they were immediately stopped by Benjamin. After all, Jackie was still absorbing the soul refining pill. If he was disturbed by those cheers, he might be affected. However, he could still not stop everyone’s passion.

“Jackie is so amazing. I’m really so clueless. I underestimated Jackie. I thought Jackie was in trouble, but he was actually prepared all along!”

“He’s too amazing, after absorbing the spirit refining pill, he’ll definitely take a step forward in skill. Only, I don’t know who’s stronger between him and the masked man!”

“I think that Jackie will win. He’s never disappointed us. This time, the treasures on the Divine Void Slope will all belong to Jackie!”

The northern clan disciples were all naturally supportive of Jackie, believing that Jackie would be able to beat the masked man. Meanwhile, the southern clan disciples were not happy.

Even though Jackie was strong, they supported the masked man more. Zamian shouted, “What do you know? Even if Jackie absorbs the ninth-grade pill, all he will increase is his potential. It won’t increase his skill immediately!

The soul refining pill is something meant to increase potential! It won’t improve his powers!”

Benjamin raised an eyebrow at Zamian, raising his voice, “If you don’t know anything, then shut your mouth. What do you know about the spirit refining pill? You said it all so confidently.

“Even though the spirit refining spills can one’s increase potential, it also improves aura. Don’t forget, Jackie specializes in spiritual techniques.

Increasing his aura will definitely improve his power!”

Zamian’s face reddened. He had not wanted to be accused like that, but he did not want people saying that Jackie would beat the masked man. If it was before, he might have been more careful with his actions, but he no longer had much sense of rationality.

“Let me tell you all. No matter how strong Jackie is, he can’t beat our senior. His original levels were at the spring sole defying realm!”

The moment he said that everyone was stunned. The Corpse Pavilion disciples frowned at him, feeling like Zamian had gone too far by saying that.

That was the masked man’s secret. To enter this place, he had taken pills to suppress his power. That was actually not something that should be revealed, but Zamian had shouted it out loud.

Lennon furrowed his eyebrows, “Zamian, don’t say anything!”

Zamian gulped, even though he knew that he had gone overboard, he no longer cared.

They will find out eventually anyway, so what if they know? Can they even do anything to him?”

After saying that, Zamian looked at Benjamin and said, “He was originally already at the spring solidifying realm, but he suppressed his level back to the late stage of the innate level.”

Chapter 2350
“He’s still much stronger than any regular person in the late stage of the innate

level. He might have been injured before, but that does not mean his skills were weaker than Jackies.

“You aren’t blind. You should have been able to tell that Jackie being able to easily defeat the eight-tailed demonic snake with minimal injuries was just because Jackie saw through the eight-tailed snake’s weakness.

“If the masked man knew the eight-tailed snake’s weakness as well, he definitely would not be injured at all. Jackie’s just lucky, you shouldn’t doubt the masked man’s skills, he’ll definitely beat Jackie!”

Those last words had practically been yelled out by Zamian with all his might. He wanted to use those words to prove that the masked man would not lose!

The northern clan disciples all had changes in their expressions. If what Zamian said was right, then Jackie would not be able to beat the masked man.

After all, the masked man was once at the spring solidifying realm. The skills he trained in were much less limited than theirs.

The realm was the greatest restriction to the martial skills one could learn. Only those at high realms could train in high- level techniques as well as improve their skills to even higher levels. That was something everyone knew.

It was just that no one knew what techniques and skills the masked man had already knew, and to what level they had been trained to.

If it was strong, then Jackie would be in trouble! However, the northern clan disciples chose to quiet down and wait patiently.

Jackie opened his eyes after a day, but he did not stop refining. He formed seals on his hands as the black light circulated on his fingertips. Not only did he purify his aura, but he had also greatly improved the amount as well.

He wanted to use that chance to train Destroying the Void to the second level! At that moment, he pushed away all stray thoughts, and focused everything on forming Soul Swords!

Time flowed just like that, and right as the third day was about to pass, Jackie finally finished his training.

He took a deep breath as he clenched his right fist tightly and said, “Sixty Soul Swords! Not bad!”

Jackie had not only mastered the skill, but he had also managed to condense ten more Soul Swords. Jackie was already able to condense sixty.

Destroying the Void was split into three levels. Condensing ten Soul Swords would put him at the elementary level. Fifty Soul Swords had him at the

proficient level. Once he reached a hundred, it would mean that Jackie had completely mastered Destroying the void,

That was the perfect state of Destroying the void!

Even though Jackie was still a bit far from completely mastering it, Jackie felt like it would not take much longer! Thinking about that, he stood up.

He dusted off the non-existent dirt from his body as he looked around. The masked man had a complicated look in his eyes as he looked at Jackie with envy, hatred, and killing intent.

However, Jackie did not mind, he was already mortal enemies with the masked man. The masked man coldly said, “I won’t let you leave this place alive!”

Jackie raised his eyebrow, not even turning around to say, “What a coincidence, I was thinking the same thing about you.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2351 - 2352

Chapter 2351
Everyone was stunned at those words.

The masked man saying he wanted to kill Jackie might not have elicited much of a reaction, but Jackie saying that he wanted to kill the masked man as well had definitely shocked everyone.

After all, Jackie seemed to be behind the masked man in every way, but when he said those words, his tone was incredibly calm, and there were no emotions on his face.

The fact that he behaved like that meant the words he said was not for the sake of honor, but really because he did want to kill the masked man!

Graham took a deep breath and said, “It’s time the two of you stop bickering.”

He no longer wanted to listen to the two of them talk.

After all, it felt like he was not on their level when they did so.

Just as Graham finished his sentence, the old voice was heard again, “Will the two who have passed please ascend to the peak!”

The moment he said that, everyone took a deep breath.

It was finally time! They would see who was stronger among the two masters at the peak.

Whether or not Jackie could create a miracle again, and whether or not the masked man could deal with Jackie.

Jackie did not bother seeing how shocked everyone was, nor did he bother looking at how furious the masked man was.

He calmly walked toward the peak of the Divine Void Slope.

There were countless rays of light on the Divine Void Slope.

The glows had treasure after treasure within them.

If he had won the battle, then all of it would be his.

Possibly intentional, the glow had obscured everyone’s visions.

They did not know what kind of treasures were hidden behind the lights.

However, that had actually arouse their interest even more.

They might covet those treasures, but they had already lost. All they could do was look at Jackie and the masked man's backs with jealous gazes.

The two of them finally reached the peak of the Divine Void slope.

They looked around.

Those treasures shrouded in the lights dispersed far away, giving them more than enough space to fight it out.

The masked man narrowed his eyes, retrieving a purple ring from his storage space.

Looking at it closely, there were flashes of lightning within the ring.

That was the masked man's main weapon, the Purple Thunder Rings.

The masked man was so skillful in using the Purple Thunder Rings that it was not just the southern disciples, even the northern disciples knew that the Corpse Pavilion's strongest disciple's main weapon was called the Purple Thunder Rings.

Of course, Jackie was not included among them. After all, Jackie had only arrived in Hestia Continent not too long ago, not even one year in total.

He had just started to understand the rules and common sense of the world. Hence, he did not know much about things like that. However, despite the fact that he did not know, Jackie could still tell that the Purple Thunder Rings was very compatible with the masked man.

With the Purple Thunder Rings, the masked man was much stronger. However, Jackie had already expected that the masked man would absolutely fight him at his strongest state!

At that moment, the masked man suddenly asked, "I'm very curious. Before you came to the Divine Void Slope, why did you run?"

Those words had Jackie stumped. In his mind, the masked man's pursuit of him before he encountered the nine-clawed python flashed.

If he was the masked man, he would have been curious as well. After all, if he was so strong, he would have fought the masked man back then. Why did he constantly flee? It looked like he had no confidence in beating the man.

He probably would never have dared to fight the masked man! That impression had been too strong, which was why the masked man had never bothered with Jackie before.

Chapter 2352
It was not until Jackie revealed his true skills for the masked man to realize that Jackie was almost at his level!

However, the more he thought about it, the more confused and frustrated he felt That was why the masked man had to ask.

It was not just the masked man who was confused, all those who were present then also looked at Jackie with curious looks.

Jackie's lips twitched as he touched his nose helplessly. Back then he had only been able to condense fifteen Soul Swords! He was truly running for his life because it was impossible for him to fight the masked man then.

Yet, it was something he was not able to explain, so he was forced to make up something

"It wasn't the right place to fight!"

Those words caused everyone to pause. A thoughtful look flashed in the masked man's eyes. What did he meant by it was not the right place Did the location really matter?

"What do you mean?"

Jackie let out a slight cough. A single lie would set off many more lies to cover it up.

He continued with some exasperation," There's no other meaning to that. It means exactly what I said. I don't want to waste any more time, are we fighting?"

Those words successfully ignited the anger within the masked man. He let out a cold laugh as he raised his hands. The Purple Thunder Rings were suddenly covered in purple light.

After that, the crackle of lightning could be heard. The Purple Thunder Rings were like a monster that had been stirred awake as they radiated the lightning into the skies!

The masked man let out a small shout. Blood red flashes of lightning started to form between his fingers. Everyone's eyes widened as they looked at the masked man with incredibly heavy expressions.

The person with the most complicated feelings in his heart was the traitor, Griffin.

Griffin took in a deep breath, praying in his heart that the masked man would kill the person he hated the most. As long as Jackie died, nothing would happen to him in the future.

All he needed to do was deal with Nelson and Isaiah in secret, and he would be able to return to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion in peace.

Griffin was no idiot. He knew very well that he had betrayed his clan. However, it would definitely end up badly for him if he followed the masked man back to the Corpse Pavilion.

After all, the skills and techniques he was trained in were far too different from those from the Corpse Pavilion. Even if the other clans went back and spread the news, he would be able to cover it up with some lies.

After all, he had the elders behind him. As long as no one from his own clan did anything to him, he would not be in danger!

Thinking about that, he could not help but shout, “He has to die! He absolutely has to diel”

Even though he shouted very loudly, it did not attract any attention from those around him.

It was not that no one heard him, but rather that everyone’s thoughts were all on the Divine Void Slope at that moment.

Jackie took a deep breath, putting all his focus on the Purple Thunder Rings. The purple lightning seemed to be mingling with the colored lightning.

The Purple Thunder Ring seemed to be a pure source of lightning birthed by nature at that moment! The crackling sound filled his ears, and the light from the Purple Thunder Rings illuminated the whole Divine Void Slope.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2353 - 2354

Chapter 2353
Even Jackie was being enveloped by the purple and red glows. The masked man was already at full force at that moment.”

I don’t want to spend too much time on you! I’ll kill you with this one strike!”

As he said that, he constantly formed seals. Lightning constantly poured into the Purple Thunder Ring!

“I won’t hide anything from you. I’ll let you die with a clear understanding! The Evil Blood Thunder that I’m training on is a middle-tier Earth rank technique!

Furthermore, I’m already at the proficient level! I’m just barely short of perfection!” Jackie raised an eyebrow after hearing that.

He did not have much of a reaction to it, since it was more or less what he had expected. He had already speculated on the masked man’s level before.

After hypothesizing, he had ascertained that the masked man was definitely incredibly strong since he had already been in the spring solidifying realm. The masked man definitely stood at the top among everyone there.

Yet, no matter what, his skills and abilities were still restricted. There was no way the masked man could not possibly have cultivated any upper-level Earth rank skills.

However, there was still something that Jackie was surprised by, Jackie had thought that the masked man’s technique was at the middle-tier Earth rank, but the masked man should have already reached the second level of perfection.

The masked man would absolutely not lie or hide his true skills at a time like that, so it seemed like the masked man really did stop at the first stage.

Even though the second stage was not to far away from the first, after absorbing those memories, Jackie knew very well that it was no easy feat to reach the second stage from the first.

The only reason Jackie did not have any barriers in doing that was that he had absorbed the memories of the great master. To Jackie, there were no bottlenecks in Destroying the Void. He already understood everything, and merely lacked the time and spiritual never lacked energy.

He was different from the rest! Jackie estimated in his heart that if the masked man managed to survive, it would take him at least one or two years to pass that stage!

Thinking about that, Jackie could not help but let out a cold laugh. The masked man had a deathly stare on Jackie.

The masked man had thought that his words would shake Jackie. At the very least, he wanted to let Jackie know that he was no ordinary person that could be casually dealt with.

Yet, Jackie actually managed to laugh. To the masked man, it was a slap to the face. He felt humiliated.

The masked man was so angry his entire body was shaking. He looked like a balloon on the brink of exploding.

"You're looking for death!" The masked man shouted angrily.

He surged forward, and he flew up in the air. His hands constantly danced around as lines of red lightning surged around him. At that moment, the Purple Thunder Ring had already gathered enough energy. It was so bright that no one could even look at it!

All they heard was crackling, and countless strands of electricity formed into attacks, heading straight for Jackie. Jackie let out a small laugh, having already been prepared. He clutched the black sword tightly on his right hand. Sixty Soul Swords formed into a huge spiritual blade and merged with the black sword!

Jackie had already entered the second stage of Destroying the Void! Before, he was not able to determine what level of skill Destroying the Void was due to lack of information.

Based on the various skills and powers in this world, he was already able to estimate what rank Destroying the Void was at!

Chapter 2354
Before, Jackie thought that it was at least an ultimate god realm skill.

After mulling over it further, he determined it was at the upper-tier ultimate god level! An upper-tier ultimate god level skill against an earth rank skill. And Jackie was already at the perfection stage of the skill!

His skill was already one whole realm higher, and it was a stage higher too! Even though Jackie's strength was not equal to the masked man, the skill Jackie used was so much stronger than the one the masked man was using! Comparing it in those ways, Jackie was not afraid of the masked man at all!

He coldly snorted as he raised his sword with both his hands. Aiming at the incoming lightning, he slashed out! Everyone heard the attacks clashing as the space was covered with the light from the blood-red lightning!

The lightning split up, and constantly danced on the peak of the Divine Void Slope! It actually looked incredibly beautiful however, even with the colorful dancing lightning, no one bothered to look at it.

All of them were focused on whether or not Jackie could block the attack! Benjamin could not help but say, “A middle-tier earth skil.. and it’s already at the proficient level! It’s only one stage away from perfection! He would absolutely be the strongest, no matter what clan he’s in!

“Even the strongest disciple from our clan would not be able to compete with the masked man. I wonder if Jackie would be able to stand this…”

At that moment, all that could be seen in the Divine Void Slope was blood-red lightning. The two of them were enveloped within, and the glow was so bright that nothing could be seen. All they could do was listen to the sound of crackings!

Everyone was incredibly anxious. After Zamian heard Benjamin’s words, he loudly shouted, “He’ll definitely beat that brat! Have you not heard him say that he has a middle-tier earth technique That was the level of skill that he longed for.

If he managed to master such a technique, he would stand at the top of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s disciples! Nelson shrugged helplessly. At that moment, he had already lost all hope. However, he still said with a resolved tone, “I have faith in Jackie.”

Graham stopped at where he was. Just like everyone below him, he had complicated feelings in his heart as he looked up at the Divine Void Slope.

On one hand, he hoped that Jackie would win. At least that would relieve his burdens. On the other hand, he did not want Jackie to have that level of talent and skill. If Jackie won, it would prove that Jackie was the strongest.

Even the top disciple of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would not be able to compete against Jackie, let alone himself. If Jackie really won, it meant that Jackie could truly stand at the top.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2355 - 2356

Chapter 2355
Thinking about that caused Graham to feel like he was being weighed down by many large rocks! At that moment, a cry came out from within the lightning!

Due to the loudness of the clash, no one could tell who that cry was from. Just ass everyone got incredibly anxious, the lightning that had dispersed throughout the battlefield had slowly began to weaken.

Two people stood in the middle of the peak of the Divine Void Slope. One stood to the west and one stood to the east. The one on the west had a sword in hand, which had pierced through the eastern one's chest! The one standing in the east was still holding the Purple Thunder Rings.

Everyone's jaws dropped at the scene. Even the masked man looked at Jackie who was in front of him with an expression of disbelief!

Blood flowed down from the corner of his mouth. The face behind the mask had long since been covered with shock. '

Why? I actually couldn't beat you! Who are you? Impossible! Absolutely impossible!

"The Evil Blood Thunder is a middle-tier earth-level technique! What kind of skill are you training? It actually broke Evil Blood Thunder and pierce into my chest!" After the battle started, Jackie actually used two strikes. The first strike had broken through Evil Blood Thunder, while the second strike was right into the masked man's chest!

After all, it was an ultimate god level technique. What was Evil Blood Thunder in front of Destroying the Void?

However, the masked man did not know any of that. At that moment, the masked man's whole body was twitching in pain. After all, Destroying the Void had destroyed his soul, that pain was not something a regular person would be able to withstand.

He was also filled with shock at the result. He could not imagine what kind of technique Jackie had used, and what kind of power it had! Even Evil Blood Thunder and what kind of person was not able to stand against it!

Jackie laughed coldly, and sighed somewhat helplessly. At that moment, his whole body was trembling slightly. Wave after wave of numbness wrecked his nerves.

Even though he had slashed past Evil Blood Thunder, he was still hit with the aftermath. Countless tiny bolts of electricity had penetrated his defense, seeping into his body.

Thankfully, the electricity was merely the ripples of a skill. It would not cause any real harm to Jackie.

“Why should I tell you?” Jackie said with a cold smile.

The masked man’s whole body was shaking. In truth, he knew that he was definitely dead. Jackie’s technique was incredibly sinister, and it was destroying and strangling his soul. He was already in too much pain to fight back.

He just wanted to know the truth. After meeting Jackie, he had never been able to pull one up on Jackie. It was as if Jackie was filled with secrets, no matter on Mount Beasts or where they were at at that moment.

“Who are you? Why are you so strong?! Do you have an ultimate god level technique?” The masked man widened his eyes.

He did not wait for Jackie to answer. He coughed intensely before saying, “That’s it! It has to be that. Otherwise, it would not beat my Evil Blood Thunder so badly.

“I didn’t even have the chance to fight back! However, you’re just at the middle-stage of the innate level, how could you have such a skill? You have to be the top master in the whole continent!” After He no longer had much strength left.

Chapter 2356
After intensely coughing, his face was pale as paper. The blood on his mouth was already flowing uncontrollably. “I’m already almost dead. Can you tell me who you are before I die? How are you able to use an ultimate god level technique?” The the masked man used the last of his strength to say.

Jackie took a deep breath.

There had been some things that he had planned on keeping to himself until death, not saying it is forever.

However, the masked man was right. He was already about to die, there there was nothing he could do.

Jackie let out a small laugh, whispering so only the two of them could hear, “You’re right. I did use an ultimate god level technique. It’s not any normal one either, it’s a top-tier one!”

The moment he said that the masked man widened his eyes as if he had just been slapped. He looked at Jackie in disbelief. He was right! Jackie was really using an ultimate god level technique.

Why? Why was he able to learn something like that? Jackie was only someone at the middle level of the innate stage. When he was at his peak, he would never have even spared a glance at someone like that.

“Who are you?!” The masked man said as he shuddered.

Jackie laughed lightly as he pulled back his right hand. With a squish, the sword that was stuck on the masked man’s chest was pulled out easily.

As the masked man’s whole body convulsed in pain, Jackie pushed forward again. The black sword pierced into the masked man’s body again. This time, The masked man was in so much agony that he could not even shout!

“Sorry, you’re not worthy of knowing who I am.” That was the last thing the a masked man heard.

The next second, the masked man felt an intense pain in his chest again, and he shut his eyes for the last time! With a plop, the masked man’s body fell to the ground. Jackie’s grudge against him was settled there and then!

The scene had been far too shocking. No one had even been able to react to the death of the top disciple from the Corpse Pavilion! He had been killed by that nameless Jackie.

He died in the hands of an elder disciple from a third-grade clan.

If the news spread out, anyone would probably treat it as a joke, and not believe it!

This time, both the northern clan and southern clan disciples let out a breath of cold air. Their eyes widened as they looked at the peak of the Divine Void Slope in disbelief.

It had been far out of their expectations. How could it have happened so quickly? When the battle started, they had been blocked by the blood-red lightning. When they could see clearly again, the masked man’s chest had already been pierced by Jackie!

After a few breaths, the prodigy was thoroughly dead.

“He died just like that? The top disciple of Corpse Pavilion died just like that?!” Hayden widened his eyes, practically shouting those words.

It was far too unbelievable. After all, everything had happened far too quickly.

He did not have the chance to process it at all If it had been a drawn out fight, and the masked man slowly fell into more and more of a disadvantage before dying, they might have been able to accept it.

However, the masked man had died far too quickly. The time between him losing and dying had been far too short, leaving then no time to react!

Everyone had the same reaction. Samson frowned as he looked around in disbelief. “Am I imagining things?! He’s the top disciple of the Corpse Pavilion, someone who’s mastered a middle stage earth level technique! How did he lose so quickly, and even lose to”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2357 - 2358

Chapter 2357
He did not finish the sentence, but Everyone knew what he wanted to say. Benjamin took a deep breath, his eyes were filled with shock.

“I can’t believe he is so strong. It looks like Jackie’s technique was at a higher level than the top disciple from the Corpse Pavilion! It might even be a whole realm higher”

Yet, Jackie was clearly just at the intermediate stage of the innate realm.

With such little power, how was he able to use an ultimate god technique? That was far too absurd!

Everyone understood that, if that was not the case, there was no way to explain everything they had seen. After all, the masked man had definitely not underestimated his opponent.

He had used his strongest technique, but still failed in the end. That proved that the technique Jackie had used was far above the masked man’s Evil Blood Thunder.

At that moment, Jackie did not even need to turn back to feel everyone’s gaze on him.

Other than shock, they were filled with confusion. He looked away from the masked man’s body.

With the man already dead, there was no need to dwell on their past. He looked to the Divine Void Slope, and the glowing treasures within!

Just as he was considering how he would obtain those glowing treasures, they started to rapidly move toward the center! The glowing objects were all absorbed into a purple-colored storage ring! That the dark purple ring had a very old design.

The patterns on it were all of the things that Jackie did not understand.

After a short moment, the ring floated in front of Jackie!

Jackie reached out, and the ring slowly fell into his palm. Everyone had seen that sight, and they were quickly pulled out of their disbelief.

Even though they clearly knew that those things did not belong to them, they could not hold back their jealousy. After all, those things that were stored within could compete with the most valuable treasures within their clans.

“It’s yours.” The old voice was heard again.

Jackie widened his eyes, trying to find out where that old voice came from. Yet, he still could not after looking for so long. The old voice continued, “Those treasured are all not as important as what’s stored in a Jade box. The box is locked. In order to find the key, you’ll have to go somewhere else…

Hearing that, Jackie was stunned. Before he could ask where that place was, a gust of wind blew on his back, and everything around him changed the next second.

It turned into a limitless sea of stars. Everything floating around him was stars of varying sizes. He heard the voices of soldiers as if they were fighting a massive battle.

Jackie could not help and turned around to look, but could not see anything. He was shocked. To fight among the stars, with a whole group at that. Who had that kind of power?

Just as he was filled with curiosity, he saw a man in a white shirt in the distance pulling out a sword, rushing rapidly toward him! A gust blew from behind him and Jackie turned back to look.

He noticed that someone was rushing at him from that direction as well. However, The one behind him had black armor on. The man’s entire body was covered, even his hands were covered in what looked like leather gloves.

Chapter 2358
Where was he? Was this a fantasy? Does this place have anything to do with the Hidden Place For Resources? The questions in his mind popped up one after another, but no one was there to answer them!

The two of them stopped about a hundred meters apart. Jackie could not see what the black-armored man looked like due to how much armor he had on, but the white -clothed man was not entirely covered up. Yet, the man’s face was still blurred, as if a layer of mist was around him. Obscuring his face completely.

Who were those two people? Why were are they there? Why was he looking at all of that?

At that moment, the white-clothed man said, “You’re not only cruel, but you’re also despicable as well! All the success you have today is all because of your mentor”

The black-armored man let out a cold smile them uttered, “I hate false and pretentious people like you the most. If you were in my shoes, you would

probably be worse! Quit talking as if you're the most righteous person in the world." The man in the white clothes snorted, "

Indeed, it's a waste of time to even talk to you!"

The black-clothed man let out a cold smile as he looked at the white- clothed man with disdain and said, "You're still the same. You always regard others with so much disdain.

"You act as if you stand on the peak of morality, as if you're the most righteous person, and everyone else is beneath you!" The white-clothed man looked furious and refuted, "Quit with your nonsense. I don't know what you're thinking to say all of that about me. Are you saying I've framed you?

"Why don't you think about all of the things that you've done? Which one of them isn't shameless and despicable act? This is what everyone thinks of you!"

The black clothed man snorted, holding his head up high. "Why do I care what you all think of me? What does the kind of person I am, have to do with all of you?

The white clothed man waved his right hand, and a golden sword appeared in his hand. "You're so stubborn. I'd thought that you would have some regrets after going through that incident. I can't believe you actually got worse. You're now completely a dark person!"

The black-clothed man spat at him. " Let's quit with all that fake righteousness? Regret? Getting worse?

"All that I've done is so I can live a proper life. If you were me, you would have done far worse!"

The black-clothed man narrowed his eyes. "Don't think I don't know what you're trying to do. For you to suddenly ask me here, it must be for that Zechs person!'"

The moment those words were uttered, the white -clothed man's cold face was suddenly frozen. It was as if something important had been touched upon.

However, he quickly composed himself and said, "What do you mean I don't understand you?"

The black clothed man rolled his eyes, "do you think I still don't understand you? I've long since seen through all your plans! You won't succeed as I've already made preparations!"

At that moment, the white-clothed man could no longer remain calm as he shouted, "What did you do?!"

The black-clothed man laughed as if it was the happiest thing to ever happen to him, "There's no point in panicking now. It's already too late, everything's over!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2359-2360

Chapter 2359
After saying that, the sound of explosions were suddenly heard from a distance. It was as if something had exploded. Jackie looked toward the direction of the sound and saw a bright glow! He could even vaguely hear cries of agony.

The white-clothed man was completely panicked. He turned around and shouted loudly, “How could you do this?” The black-clothed man’s smile disappeared and said with a cold and dark tone, “Why can’t I do this? Are you the only one who can plot and scheme against me?

Jackie was a little anxious, but mostly confused. He did not understand what had happened. Why was the black and white pair fighting? However, he could hear from their words that the black-clothed man was very ruthless, and had done various despicable things.

However, the white-clothed man was probably not a saint as well. Yet, without knowing the details of everything, he could not just pass judgment on the two of them. He merely 1looked on as the white- clothed man seemed like he had been fooled.

His entire face was full of anxiety as if he wanted to leave the place immediately.

Yet, he seemed to be worried about what would happen.

His eyes were full of uncertainty. After a while, the white-clothed man seemed to use all the strength in the body to say, “You’ll pay for this. You’ll absolutely pay for this!”

After that, the entire scene started to blur. Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he widened his eyes.

He wanted to see what happened after, but everything had become blurry. The stars around him had all turned black.

Just as Jackie was wondering what to do, a sigh could be heard next to him. The sigh had appeared far too suddenly, causing Jackie to turn his body abruptly.

He saw an old man wearing a traditional black shirt. He had a pair of wizened eyes, and was quietly looking forward. When Jackie saw him, he wondered if he was still in an illusion.

At that moment, the old man suddenly said, “Do you have a lot of questions?”

After the old man said that, Jackie was stunned. It was not because of the question, but because Jackie was incredibly familiar with the old man's voice.

He had heard the same voice countless times before.

That old man was the wizened old voice that he had constantly been looking for.

He never expected the man to appear in front of him like that.

The old man did not look at Jackie, but instead merely continued looking forward.

Yet, when Jackie followed his gaze, there was nothing other than pitch-black darkness.

The old man sighed again. "There were far too many regrets left behind back then. If not for those regrets, this hidden realm would never have appeared."

Hearing that, Jackie's heart skipped a few beats. He was unable to determine if the old man was some lingering spirit of a great warrior or something else.

However, he knew very well that, no matter what the old man was, the old man was definitely closely related to the Hidden Place for Resources. Ever since he stepped into the realm, he had been wondering who the owner of the realm was.

Why did that person leave this place in West Cercie State? What did the Ten Absolutes Trap Array in Mount Beast have to do with this place? Were they both tied to the Divine Void Slop as well?

Those questions constantly appeared in Jackie's mind. However, due to his special status, as well as the fact that those from West Cercie State did not know about the Divine Void World at all, he could only keep all those questions at the back of his heart.

The old man's words had caused Jackie to be filled with hope despite his nervousness. He hoped that he could find out what had happened back then from the old man.

Chapter 2360
Jackie bowed to the old man, full of respect. He said sincerely, "Old man, could you tell me why this place was left behind? What was going on in that scene I had just witnessed?"

The old man did not turn around to look at Jackie, nor did he answer Jackie's question directly. He merely replied plainly, "You'll know in the future."

Jackie's lips twitched. At that moment, he really wanted to ask all the questions in his heart. However, he was worried that the old man would find it strange if he poured out everything just like that.

Then if the old man would suspect him, it might even cause him to lose everything. So, all he could do was temporarily hold back his curiosity.

The old man did not know what Jackie was thinking about. He merely continued to say, “The box in your hands still requires a key. The key is at the Wild Gorge Pass.

If you want to open the box, you have to head there. Then, I’ll send you off.”

Jackie raised his eyebrows. His heart was filled with even more confusion. What was the Scarlet Case? Where was the Wild Gorge Pass? There was still a key?

Those questions muddled in Jackie’s mind before he suddenly remembered something.

He recalled what the old voice had said when he was on the Divine Void Slope.

The old man said that the most valuable thing he had obtained was still locked in a box.

The box could not be opened at the moment, it still required a key. Was the Scarlet Case the most valuable box in the storage ring?

Just as he was about to ask if his thoughts were correct, the old man continued, “

Whether you can obtain the ring or not, you’ll still have to go. Don’t think or care about anything else. With your current abilities, knowing is useless. Once you open the Scarlet Case, you’ll know everything!”

Jackie was incredibly confused. Even though the old man had told him that he would know all the secrets after opening the box, Jackie still felt like something was wrong. How could he know if he would bring calamity onto himself by opening the Scarlet Case?

Would something else happen? Though the old man did not seem like an ordinary person, he could not be sure that the old man would not harm him, even though Jackie was probably insignificant to the man.

The old man continued, “Everything you saw earlier really did happen. As for what the two of them were talking about, you’ll find out the truth after you open the Scarlet Case.

“You don’t have to investigate at all. All those questions in your heart will be answered eventually.”

Jackie frowned. At that moment, he really wanted to say something. However, the old man’s words had completely stifled anything he could say.

He had been very clear. There was no point in knowing anything at that moment.

Even if he asked, the old man would probably not answer. All the questions at the back of his mind had been pushed back to after he opened the Scarlet Case.

Then, there would be no more secrets. He would get all the answers he wanted. Another sigh was heard. The old man finally turned around, and his eyes fell on Jackie.

He appraised Jackie, “You’re the most suitable one after so many years. You already have the thing, the restrictions of the realm will be opened!” Jackie was still just as confused as he was before. Yet, the old man’s last words made his heart jump.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2361 - 2362

Chapter 2361
Before he could even ask, the old man said his last sentence, “Transporter, start.” Right after that, Jackie’s vision started to blur. When he could see again, he was back on the peak of the Divine Void Slope.

At that moment, the Divine Void Slope looked the same as when he left. The masked man’s corpse was on the ground, and everyone was looking at Jackie with widened eyes!

Just as Jackie was mulling over the old man’s words, familiar energy surrounded his body. His whole body started to rapidly move under the energy’s control.

In just a flash, he arrived at the plaza they were on before he first climbed the Divine Void Slope.

The plaza was incredibly large. Even when there were over a hundred and eighty participants, it was not cramped at all, let alone after half of them had already died.

There were only about a hundred of them left, so their surroundings seemed incredibly vast. Everyone had returned to the plaza, except for those who had died.

Those that were left did not seem much different from before. Only that their mental state was far different from when they had first arrived.

The northern clan disciples were all full of despair and sorrow.

The southern clan disciples were not much better as well, especially when they saw that Jackie had been transferred down just like them.

They looked at Jackie with horrified expressions, and they slowly grouped together, staring at Jackie with alarm.

Jackie glanced at everyone. He naturally knew why they were looking at him like that. After all, they had worked together to kill at least sixty or seventy of the northern clan disciples before.

Those lives belonged to fellow disciples, and now the southern clan disciples were lacking an incredibly important person.

With the skills Jackie had, it was hard to tell who would win if they started fighting.

Their only advantage was in numbers, but the northern clan disciples still numbered over twenty. If they really fought, and Jackie decided to slaughter them, it was possible he would take away half their forces in one go.

In truth, it was normal for them to be scared. If not for the old man's words constantly playing on Jackie's mind, Jackie could very well have decided to finish up the enemy while they were weak and make them pay!

Nelson and Isaiah rushed to Jackie's side with emotional looks on their faces. They had been incredibly close to rushing over and hugging Jackie tightly.

"Jackie, you're so amazing. Even the masked man could not rival you! I'd thought that it would be a long drawn-up battle, but he was actually just a fraud! He couldn't even stand up to one strike from you!"

Jackie looked at Isaiah and helplessly pursed his lips. Even though his skills were now proven to be at the top, Isaiah was not quite right. The masked man really was strong.

The masked man had been suppressing his powers. If the masked man had been at the peak of his power, Jackie might not have been able to win. Even if Jackie won, it would have been a hard-fought battle.

After all, the masked man would have been a whole realm higher than Jackie at the spring solidifying realm. It was not something that could be overcome easily!

At that moment, a familiar silhouette flashed in Jackie's mind.

He looked up and saw that Griffin was looking at him with a terrified expression as if Jackie was some ghost.

Chapter 2362
Jackie let out a cold laugh. Even if he was not going to fight those southern clan disciples, he still had a problem to deal with first.

Griffin had constantly given him trouble. Jackie had tolerated it before, not because he was afraid of Griffin, but just because it did not feel like it was the right time. Yet, he no longer cared about that.

If he did not get rid of the masked man, Griffin might actually survive!

On the Divine Void Slope, he could not do anything because of the barriers. Without that restriction, Jackie naturally did not need to hold back.

He waved his right hand, and a black sword appeared. His left hand started to condense sixty Soul Swords.

Griffin seemed to have realized something was wrong, and he widened his eyes as he started to retreat rapidly.

Even though Jackie's sword was not pointed at him, Griffin knew that Jackie's target was definitely him.

"What are you doing? Don't attack. I'm your senior. I'm your fellow disciple. If you harm your fellow disciple outside of the clan, it's punishable!"

It would have been better if he had not said that. The moment he did, Isaiah let out a cold laugh, "You dare say something like that after you hurt so many of our fellow disciples. Don't forget what you did before. You were the one who betrayed the clan! You even helped the enemies against us!

Griffin furiously shook his head as he backpedaled. Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, not wanting to waste his time speaking to that person.

Under everyone's shocked looks, he surged forward. He activated the laws of space as he appeared in front of Griffin in a flash. Griffin trembled in fear, constantly retreating.

He would never have thought that he would end up in a situation like that. He still remembered how he looked at Jackie before they entered the Hidden Place for Resources.

Jackie had just been a slightly lucky elder disciple. There was no need to feel threatened by Jackie at all. However, he could not believe that the elder disciple had managed to climb all over him in just a few days!

Before, Jackie was merely just an ant in his eyes, and yet, he, himself had turned into an ant instead!

"Go ahead and die.." Jackie said coldly. At that moment, no one was willing to interfere. Everyone immediately gave the two the space to fight. When Griffin saw that everyone had dispersed, he was so furious that he almost shouted.

Just as Griffin thought that he was going to die in just one strike, cracks could suddenly be heard around them. Rays of bright lights were seen in the skies, and everyone looked up.

Ten figures suddenly appeared in the skies! All of them had different clothes on, and because the light around them was too dim, they could not tell who those people were.

"The restrictions are finally lifted! I thought I'd need to wait for a few more days, I can't believe these new bunnies are actually quite good!"

"That's right, I just wonder who managed to get their hands on the treasures."

As they discussed, the light slowly dissipated. When everyone saw who they were, they widened their eyes as if they had seen something unbelievable.

Jackie immediately saw Elder Godfrey standing behind the First and Second Elder. When he saw that scene, Jackie finally relaxed.

No one else knew, but he had heard the old man say that anyone could enter the Hidden Place for Resources after the restrictions were lifted.

Coupled with what that group was saying, Jackie could more or less understand what was happening.

As long as someone ascended to the peak and obtained the treasures, the restrictions would naturally go away, and anyone would be able to enter the realm.

That was something the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had already planned, and the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was already waiting for that moment! Jackie did not recognize the few that stood in the front at all.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2363 - 2364

Chapter 2363
From their attire, Jackie could tell that they were from the Thousand Leaves Pavilion.

They were definitely not anyone on the bottom of the totem pole either. He saw that Elder Godfrey was behind them, along with the First and Second Elder.

He more or less understood that they were probably the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's elders, and the ones standing behind them were probably from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion and the Muddled Origin Clan

The elders of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had excited looks on their faces, not even able to contain their excitement. They excitedly looked at everyone there.

It was as if they wanted to read everyone's minds! The northern clan disciples that were present all paid their respects to the elders, and the elders all nodded slightly.

The Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First Elder excitedly smiled. "You've all done well. You did not disappoint, and managed to get the treasures.

After saying that, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First Elder looked up at the divine Void Slope's peak. The location was completely empty. All the glowing lights had disappeared.

He raised an eyebrow as he looked at all the disciples present. In the remaining hundred or so disciples, the most anxious among them were the southern clan disciples, as well as Jackie.

At that moment, Jackie finally understood what they were here for! The 'Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First elder looked over at Graham. Graham looked quite pale at that moment, his body not being in a good state.

After all, he had suffered heavy injuries while battling the eight-tailed demonic snake. Even after recovering for a few days, he had not gotten much better

"You're injured?" the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First Elder asked Graham.

Graham had a bad expression on his face However, it was not all caused by the heavy injuries he had sustained. There were other complicated reasons as well.

Yet, he could not voice them out at that moment, and could only nod.

"I was injured by a demon during one of the stages."

The Thousand Leaves Pavilion's elder consoled, "That's something you could not have avoided."

After saying that, he looked over at the southern clan disciples. He was about to say something when the space cracked again.

Everyone's expressions changed at the same time. Was there someone else coming? The elders from the northern clans had a bad look on their faces, as if they had felt something, but were unable to stop it!

Once the radiant light dispersed, Jackie once again saw ten unfamiliar faces. Only, even though he did not know those people, each of them was shrouded in sinister energy.

Jackie concluded that those were the elders from the southern clans. The one at the helm was definitely the Corpse Pavilion

The Corpse Pavilion's First Elder laughed.

"I saw you mid-way, and I wanted to greet all of you. I can't believe you ran so quickly."

Those nonchalant words caused the First Elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion to have an incredibly sour look on like he had been angered. His face turned red as he coldly looked at the First Elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion.

The Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First Elder said, "I knew it would be difficult to get rid of you flees!"

When he said that, he sounded incredibly defeated. He had probably never expected to be followed into this realm by that group.

That had been the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's secret, but it had been discovered by the other group. Jackie sighed. Could the Corpse Pavilion's higher -ups be any more foolish?

The Thousand Leaves Pavilion had done so many things for others at the expense of themselves, how could they not have some goal in mind? They were not there to do charity! The Corpse Pavilion's First Elder did not seem to want to continue talking and cast his gaze elsewhere.

Chapter 2364
He seemed to be looking for someone. He stared as he looked at everyone present.

Yet, after looking everywhere, he did not find what he was looking for, and he suddenly got suspicious.

He frowned before he looked at Graham. Graham's condition was not that great, it was obvious that Graham was recovering from a heavy injury.

The Corpse Pavilion's First Elder's frown deepened. "Where is he?"

The elder cast his gaze at Lennon. When Lennon heard that, he quickly paled as his hands trembled. At that moment, he was in an incredibly difficult spot.

If he told the First Elder that the masked man was dead, the First Elder might put the blame on him. If he did not speak, there was no way they could get past this.

He took a few deep breaths, his face already white as paper. His actions had made the elders all even more confused.

Naturally, those elders had no idea what had happened.

Both the northern and southern clan disciples all clearly knew who was the strongest person who had entered the Hidden Place for Resources. They knew who was potentially in danger, but it was absolutely not the masked man!

Yet, the way Lennon looked seemed like he had something to say, but did not dare to do so. It was obvious something had happened.

The Corpse Pavilion's First Elder's face was red, fuming with anger. '"What's there to hide?! I'm asking you where he is?Why are you all here, but not him?!"

Those words from the First Elder were very obviously anxious, despite the fact that he told himself in his mind that the masked man would be the last person to have anything happen to him.

Yet, there seemed to be no trace of the masked man. On top of that, Lennon's strange expression had the Corpse Pavilion's First Elder's heart in an incredibly frantic state!

Lennon had an even more sour look on his face after hearing those words. He looked like he had just ingested some poison. His face alternated between turning red and going pale, and he was shuddering even more fiercely.

The Corpse Pavilion's First Elder raised his eyebrow. He looked at Graham but saw that Graham had a strange look on his face as well. To be more precise, everyone present had strange looks on their faces. It was as if what happened was impossible for them to talk about.

The Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First Elder was quite intelligent. Even though he did not know what had happened, it was easy to deduce that it was not a good thing for Corpse Pavilion.

He let out a cold laugh and said, "Royce Charlton was the future pillar of your clan. Skylar, don't panic, he will be fine, don't you all think so?"

The tone had been incredibly condescending. Everyone had naturally managed to tell that the First Elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was trying to imply that something had definitely happened to Royce.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, unable to stop himself from looking at the First Elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. Only then did he find out that the masked man was called Royce and that the First Elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion was called Skylar.

Skylar had a dark look on his face as he turned around abruptly and uttered, Stop being so condescending. Even though Royce isn't here, just look at your own disciples. Other than those who are somewhat stronger, it doesn't look like many are left.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2365 - 2366

Chapter 2365
The moment Skylar said that the First Elder of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had a sour look on his face. He had already noticed before that only six or seven were left from the fifty they had sent.

Even though Graham was still alive, the ones who were not present were among the elites as well. If anything had really happened to them, it would still be a big blow to the clan.

Skylar looked at the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First Elder coldly. "It looks like something must have happened. You're right, Royce is incredibly strong. Even if something happened to everyone else, nothing would have happened to him.

"However, he might be strong while the others are not close. The fact that they're not here might mean that something did happen to them. Don't you think so, Elder Zayne?"

Zayne was the name of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's First Elder. The only reason why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion and the Corpse Pavilion had been at peace for so long was that Mount Beasts was between the two clans.

If not for Mount Beasts, the two clans would definitely have been at incredible odds with each other.

With what the Corpse Pavilion had done, it was obvious that the two clans did not hold any good feelings toward one another.

As the First Elders of the two clans, they might look like they were on good terms on the surface, but they were naturally at odds with each other.

The way Zayne looked at Skylar, it was as though he wanted to eat the man alive.

Skylar felt like there was no reason to continue quarreling. After all, they had yet to determine who had died and who had not, as well as where the Scarlet Case was!

In the eyes of those elders, the Scarlet Case would naturally be in the hands of the strongest disciple. Skylar naturally thought that the strongest one was definitely Royce, but there was no sight of him.

"What exactly happened? Lennon, give me a clear explanation. Stop fidgeting around like this. Are you some girl who had never seen the world?"

Lennon shook even more after being scolded like that. He was naturally not weak and was just slightly behind Royce.

However, the Corpse Pavilion was different from other clans. Their clan was incredibly cutthroat, and there were a lot more deaths.

Lennon was incredibly terrified.

If he voiced out what had happened, Skylar would definitely pull him out! Yet, he knew that he would be punished if he did not tell them what had happened.

Thinking about that, he took a deep breath, and stood up straight as he said, “Royce is dead!”

The moment he said that all of the elders were stunned. In truth, they had already speculated on that result, but hearing it was still hard to accept.

Skylar’s body froze. The next second, he shot forward in front of Lennon. He grabbed Lennon’s collar with his hands. Skylar’s face was green. “He died? How Did he die? Who killed him? What exactly happened? Tell me everything, now!”

Lennon gulped. He turned and looked at Jackie. The moment Jackie saw his expression, Jackie knew that something was up. He knew that, if he did not do anything quickly, that crazed elder might just kill him the next second.

Hence, he looked up at Elder Godfrey. Ever since Elder Godfrey had entered the realm, his gaze had been on Jackie.

Jackie let out a sigh of relief and hurried over to Elder Godfrey. The First and Second Elder shot Jackie a cold look. They felt that Jackie was like a cat trying to hide and looked absolutely embarrassing!

Chapter 2366
Nonetheless, they could not say anything at that moment. After all, no one was focused on Jackie.

Elder Godfrey was taken aback when he realized Jackie had sneaked up behind him. Did something happen?

“Did something happen?” whispered Elder Godfrey.

Jackie, knowing he could not evade this, nodded at the elder. “No need to ask for now. You’ll find out in a moment.”

When he heard Jackie say that, Elder Godfrey was even more confused, but he did not persist on the matter. Lennon’s breath was slowly getting more erratic with his collar being grabbed in such a manner.

He felt like Skylar might actually kill him on the spot if he did not make things clear, so he pointed at the peak of the Divine Void Slope.

“The final battle was one between the two strongest among us. Royce couldn’t stand up to Jackie, and Jackie killed him in one blow.” Lennon used the most abbreviated version of everything that had happened.

However, the others were confused when they heard this. Royce had been killed in one blow, and it was nowhere random, either, the place being the peak of the Divine Void Slope. All the elders had already ascertained the rules before they got there.

Naturally, they knew that climbing to the top of the Divine Void Slope was an incredibly perilous road. There were countless obstacles, and only the two strongest could stand at the top for a final battle.

It was nothing peculiar to hear Royce having reached the peak. It was only natural, seeing as he was definitely at the helm of all the disciples there. All that and even with his impressive skills, however.. he had lost and, what more, killed in one strike!

Losing and being killed were two different matters. Being able to kill the other party required one to be much stronger! “Who is Jackie?” Skylar shouted.

Why had he never heard of that name before? Skylar swept a glance across the northern clans’ disciples and assessed them.

The strongest among them, other than Graham, would be Benjamin. He had never heard of the name Jackie. Other than the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s elders, the other elders were confused as well.

The First Elder widened his eyes as he turned back to look at Jackie, who, at that moment, hung his head low and kept mum.

The Second Elder was just as shocked. The two elders would never have expected that Jackie was actually the one who faced off against Royce and killed his opponent.

Even though they felt like Jackie was capable and talented, it was nowhere earth -shaking. No matter how strong he was, they would never have expected him to defeat a chosen disciple from a fourth- grade clan!The elder pointed at Jackie. “It’s you?”

Nonetheless, he had deliberately whispered those words.

Jackie let out a sigh; there was no point in keeping it a secret anymore. No matter how long Jackie wanted to hide it, he would not have such a chance.

With that, Jackie nodded. “I was the one who killed Royce.”

The people were shocked to have heard this, never once expecting that Jackie would be this formidable. If they had not heard it for themselves, the First and Second Elders would not have believed him.

In truth, they still had their doubts. After all, no matter how strong Jackie was, he was still just at the intermediate stage of the innate level. They were certain that much, despite not knowing other details.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2367 - 2368

Chapter 2367
Royce was able to enter the Hidden Place for Resources thanks to consuming pills to suppress his power. Royce was no regular person on the innate stage.

Even a chosen disciple from another fourth-grade clan like Graham would not stand a chance against Royce. A large reason why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had so many issues was that Royce was in the Corpse Pavilion.

Furthermore, they knew that Corpse Pavilion had a pill that was able to suppress one's strength. Thus, obtaining the Scarlet Case would require someone incredibly strong to enter the Hidden Place for Resources.

That was why the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had been in such a bind. Not only did they reveal the information, but they had even given participation badges out.

"Impossible! Absolutely impossible! Are you really that strong? You killed Royce?!" Elder Sayer almost bit his tongue. He did not believe that Jackie was that strong; they had seen Jackie fight before Even though Jackie had won a few battles, he was still a far cry from someone like Royce. If Royce wanted to defeat Wesley, it would probably take less than a single strike!

Elder Godfrey inhaled deeply. "What exactly happened?!"

As Elder Godfrey was saying that, Skylar shouted the same thing to the disciples from his clan, making them recount everything that had happened the past few days.

Even though those disciples had all been scared witless by Skylar, they still stammered out everything that had happened in the past few days in detail.

When Skylar listened to everything, fury overtook his expression. "That Jackie is so talented? He's able to defeat someone at the late stage of the innate level when he's just at the intermediate? Seems like there's more to him than meets the eye, then!

"That means the Scarlet Case must already be in his hands! Where is Jackie?! Come out right now!"

When Skylar said that, everyone pointed at Jackie's location. Skylar turned to look at Jackie, who was behind Elder Godfrey.

Even though Elder Godfrey was blocking half of Jackie's body, he still saw Jackie's face. "What are you hiding for?! Don't think I'll let you off just because

you have talent and skill. Hand over the Scarlet Case immediately, or I'll rip you apart!"

Jackie helplessly sighed; it seemed like things still reached this stage at this point. Zayne slowly turned around, looking at Jackie with disbelief.

He had thought that the Scarlet Case would at least fall into Graham's hands if Royce did not get it. They would never have thought that the Scarlet Case would fall into an elder disciple from a third- grade clan in the end. It was unbelievable.

They had never even heard of that name before!

Zayne let out a small laugh as he narrowed his eyes, walking toward Jackie's location.

He warmly greeted, "Jackie, is it? Don't worry, with the Thousand Leaves Pavilion's Elders here, the Corpse Pavilion won't be able to do anything to you."

His words seemed to be telling Jackie that the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would protect him. However, Jackie was not an ignorant child; they were merely protecting the Scarlet Case.

Once they brought him out of this place, they would still ask him to hand over the Scarlet Case. If he did not, he would die anyway!

Alas, it was still not the best time for him to retaliate. All he could do was nod. Isaiah whispered to Nelson, "What's the Scarlet Case? Could Jackie be…"

Chapter 2368
Nelson shook his head slightly as he looked at Jackie helplessly. Jackie was already pushed to a precarious situation.

Jackie would have to hand over the Scarlet Case if he wanted to live. It seemed like the Scarlet Case was incredibly valuable.

"I don't know what'll happen to Jackie, but since he killed Royce, the Corpse Pavilion won't want to let him off. Still, as long as Jackie is smart, he should be fine!"

The moment he said that, Skylar was already heading toward Jackie. However, as he rushed over, Zayne and the others did as well, standing before him.

They were, of course, not willing to have the Scarlet Case fall into the hands of those people.

Skylar let out a cold laugh. "Quit pretending to be some righteous person, Zayne. With the Scarlet Case in this brat's hands, you're just protecting the case, not him."

Zayne let out a small laugh, brushing those words aside. “The Scarlet Case is Jackie’s, and he can give it to whoever he wants. Your disciples weren’t able to get the Scarlet Case, so there’s already no reason to cry about it.”

Skylar squinted at this, already ripping Zayne to a thousand pieces in his mind. He took a deep breath as he looked right at Jackie. The brat truly did have some skill. Furthermore, he had beaten a late- stage innate level while being at the intermediate stage, and no regular late stage either.

Jackie would definitely grow to be a dreadful opponent against the Corpse Pavilion if he was to be spared. On top of that, Jackie had killed their very best disciple, so how could he not hate Jackie?

“Setting the Scarlet Case aside, this brat has to die. Don’t thinkI don’t know. Even if this brat doesn’t give you the Scarlet Case, you’ll think of all sorts of ways to get it back. Since that’s the case, why are you standing on his side? Just kill the child and be done with it!” boomed Skylar.

It was obvious that Skylar hated Jackie to the core.

Zayne raised an eyebrow-he had to admit that Skylar was right.

However, there were some things where he could not be too ruthless. After all, Jackie was not a disciple of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion, but the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. With that child’s skill and potential, he would definitely be greatly favored after returning to the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

If he made a move against Jackie at that moment, the Dual Sovereign Pavilion’s Elders would interfere. It would greatly damage their reputation, since they were still in the same camp no matter what.

Skylar coughed lightly, raising an eyebrow as he said, “Stop trying to stir things up. What happens in the future is the Thousand Leaves Pavilion’s problem.”

Meanwhile, Jackie inwardly chuckled. Both Zayne and Skylar were two peculiar individuals, no doubt. Zayne might look like he was on Jackie’s side, but his words were shameless. Saying that Jackie should give the Scarlet Case to whoever he wanted seemed to imply that Jackie would be at fault if he did not give it to someone!

“Hand this brat to me!” snapped Skylar, his eyes blown wide open. “Other than the Scarlet Case, we don’t want anything else! You know that this trip isn’t just for the Scarlet Case, too. If you hand that brat to me, then other than fairly fighting over the Case, we don’t want anything else.”

Those words caused Zayne’s face to stiffen with sudden indecision. Skylar was right; they were not just after the Scarlet Case. There was still the medicinal garden within the Hidden Place for Resources, and that place would definitely have many treasures.

If those disgusting people did not interfere, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would greatly benefit.

Thinking about that, he let out a forced Smile as he looked at the elders from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion.

The First Elder and the others immediately knew what Zayne wanted to do when they saw Zayne's face.

The First Elder was incredibly frustrated. He did not like Jackie, but with Jackie's potential and skill, Jackie would definitely be a pillar to the Dual Sovereign Clan in the future if they put the proper resources into him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2369 - 2370

Chapter 2369
Jackie might even be able to lead the Dual Sovereign Pavilion into being a fourth-grade clan.

Regardless, his relationship with Jackie was not the best. Jackie might just target him if he grew stronger in the future. That would really be a loss.

It was obvious the Second Elder shared the same thought as well. After all, there was bad blood between Jackie and himself. If Jackie grew in power, his position would surely be affected in the future.

Furthermore, Jackie definitely had some secrets to show such skill and potential. If he wanted to protect Jackie, the pressure hE would need to withstand was one thing but the other problem was whether or not Jackie would be an issue in the future When the Second Elder thought of that, he shut his mouth, deciding to leave the decision on the First Elder. If the First Elder wanted to protect Jackie, then he would do so as well.

If the First Elder wanted to throw Jackie away, then he would not argue.

When Elder Godfrey looked at their faces, he had an inkling of what would ensue.

Those two sly men actually considered surrendering Jackie! Putting everything else aside, Jackie was a disciple from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. If his own First and Second Elder were not going to protect him, then who would?!

Elder Godfrey trembled in anger, wanting to scold them at that moment. Jackie reached out a hand to stop him, and Elder Godfrey looked at Jackie helplessly.

He did not know what to say at that moment. He felt like Jackie was in a very pitiful and helpless situation.

Jackie shook his head at Elder Godfrey, not wanting Elder Godfrey to say anything at that moment.

Skylar laughed coldly. “This kid’s talent and skills aren’t bad. He’s someone worth cultivating. However, Elder Zayne, don’t forget that he’s not a disciple of the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. If this brat grows up, he’ll definitely lead the Dual Sovereign Pavilion into becoming a fourth-grade clan. When the time comes, there will be two fourth grade clans in the north,”

Those words had another meaning behind them, and Zayne suddenly had a sour look on his face. He had managed to maintain his calm before, but it had completely disappeared at that moment

Skylar was right. If Jackie was allowed to grow, it would not be a good thing for the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. There were very limited resources in West Cercie State, and the Thousand Leaves Pavilion had taken up most of it as a fourth-grade clan.

If the Dual Sovereign Pavilion also became a fourth-grade clan, they would definitely fight against the Thousand Leaves Pavilion to gain those resources. With Jackie at the helm at that time, the Thousand Leaves Pavilion would not have an easy time.

Thinking about that, Zayne's gaze at Jackie turned cold. He had even started to view Jackie as an enemy The First Elder let out a long sigh, turning to look at Jackie.

"Jackie, it's not that I don't want to help you. You killed their best disciple. No matter how you look at it, it's the wrong thing to do. Since you killed someone, you have to pay the price. Skylar is still the First Elder of the Corpse Pavilion, however, and he won't make you suffer too much."

Chapter 2370
Elder Godfrey had a dark look on his face.

"First Elder, are you not ashamed to say that? Do you think we're all children? If Jackie's taken away by Skylar, he'll die! He might even have to suffer through unspeakable torture. As the First Elder of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, you're helping someone else instead of standing on your own disciple's side…"

The First Elder's expression turned grim. "Eleventh Elder, you shouldn't say that. Do you think I don't want to help Jackie? Since he's already in the wrong, it won't be right for me to protect him."

Those words were complete nonsense, and Elder Godfrey was furious to just hear them. He turned his head over and mentally decided for himself.

If these people wanted to hand Jackie over to Skylar, he would carve out a path for Jackie to escape, even if he had to die for it.

He was not willing to look at his disciple die just like that for others' sake! Skylar cackled loudly at the situation.

At that moment, he knew that Jackie's death was certain. He walked forward and said, "Since you've already made your decision, hand over that brat to me."

At that moment, the looks thrown Jackie's way grew lighter with joy. The fear that Jackie had brought them from before had completely disappeared.

After all, they all knew that Jackie would not be able to live after being brought away by Skylar. Jackie would even be tortured first!

At that moment, Jackie suddenly let out a laugh as he then coldly looked at Skylar. ” Remember this, though, Skylar: I will make you pay for what happened today many times over.”

Those words shocked everyone present, and a few of them even eyed Jackie with a strange expression. Was he out of his mind? Was he actually adding fuel to the flame instead of trying to say something that could alleviate the situation for himself?

It looked like Jackie was resigned to his fate!

Nelson shook his head helplessly. He knew that it would be useless if he tried to stand up at that moment to say a few good words for Jackie.

He did not have any power. He was merely a disciple at that moment, and he could not interfere with the First and Second Elder’s decision at all.

Skylar let out a cold laugh. “You’re quite bold, brat. Are you not worried that you’ll suffer after I bring you away?”

Jackie laughed coldly. “Bring me away? Are you even capable of doing that?”

Skylar squinted at this and reached out his right hand, preparing an attacking stand.

Elder Godfrey pulled back, wanting to shield Jackie behind him.

At that moment, everyone felt a gentle breeze blow over. Before everyone could react, the breeze enveloped Jackie’s body, and he felt his whole body freeze. It was like he had fallen into quicksand, unable to move at all.

In the next moment, the space around him started to twist. Jackie knew that it was the early signs of being warped out. Skylar loudly shouted. “Teleportation? This brat is being warped out! Who’s doing it?!”

Those words were met with no answer, but Jackie already knew who it was. In the illusion, the old man had told him a lot.

Those last few words had echoed in Jackie’s heart. The old man had said that the restrictions of the realm would be lifted.

At that moment, Jackie had wondered if those restrictions meant the restrictions in power, and that everyone could enter the Hidden Place for Resources.

The old man even started the transporter in the end.

Jackie had wondered what that meant ever since he returned to the Divine Void Slope. It was only when those elders arrived at the Hidden Place for Resources did he understand what it meant.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2371-2372

Chapter 2371
Even though the transporter had been activated, it still needed a certain period. Jackie calmly waited, and just as he expected, he was warped out right before Skylar attacked.

He could hear gusts of wind blowing past his ears, and the scene in front of him constantly rotated. It was something that was only seen in long-distance transporters.

Jackie's frozen body could not move at all, which was not a great feeling.

Just as he was wondering where he would be sent to, he heard a familiar elderly voice once more that said, "You're the most suitable one, so let me give you a final gift."

Jackie's breath hitched at the words. A strong wave of energy pierced through Jackie's skin, seeping into his body. The energy was incredibly overwhelming.

The moment it entered Jackie's body, Jackie immediately knew what that gift was. The power that was in Jackie's body was called Formational True Energy.

Formational True Energy was a real treasure even in the Divine Void World that could increase a person's strength without any side effects.

Jackie had been lacking an increase in level the most. However, Formational True Energy was too overwhelming, so he might just end up injuring himself if he was not careful in absorbing it.

Jackie sighed somewhat helplessly, wanting to complain to the old man. Being transported naturally made him feel restless, anxious.

Having him absorb the energy at that moment would no doubt injure him! Alas, he was too preoccupied to shout at that moment.

Two days later, in a small winding path within Middle Provine, a ragged-looking man was talking to a girl who had a helpless look on her face.

"Are you better now? spoke Selena rather exasperatedly,

Jackie nodded. "I'm already much better, but my injury isn't something that can be handled in just a day or two. This place seems quite barren, so I shouldn't be in much danger. Don't worry."

Selena sighed but seemed to be more relaxed. Nonetheless, she was still worried about Jackie's situation. "We don't even know where you've been transported to? Do you have any plans?"

Jackie shook his head. After half a day, the transporting had finally stopped. He was flung in mid-air, but he was already prepared, thankfully, so it did not add to his injuries.

Regardless, he was already injured internally, and rather badly at that, due to absorbing the Formational True energy. He would need some time to recover. As for where he was transported to, he did not have the time to even think about it.

He looked up at his surroundings, realizing that it was a valley in the middle of a sea of mountains. What he also noticed was that it looked especially barren.

The ground was completely empty. Other than a few trees, there were not even any plants or flowers around.

Jackie smiled plainly as he asked Selena, "I don't know where this is, but we should be fine for the moment. You don't have to worry. Have you already given out the things I asked you to?"

Selena nodded. Jackie had obtained a lot of amazing things in the Divine Void Slope, and most of them were seventh and eighth-grade pills.

Some of them were completely useless to Jackie, so he decided to just give them away. It would increase everyone's strength.

Selena, on the other hand, was already at the innate level. Even if it was still just the early stage, it still gave her some way to defend herself.

Chapter 2372
"Don't worry, I've already distributed all the pills. Everyone's very thankful. I won't be returning to Mustard Seed in the next few days. Let me take care of you here, or I won't be able to relax."

Jackie let out a small sigh. Truth be told, he did not want to let Selena accompany him in this foreign place. After all, he was heavily injured, and he had no idea about this place they were in.

If any dangers appeared, he was not even sure if he could keep himself safe, let alone Selena.

Selena furrowed her eyebrows as she looked at the energy within Jackie. "Isn't the Formational True Energy meant to increase your level? Why does it look like you're at the initial stage of the innate level right now, like me?"

Jackie sighed as he explained, "Formational 'True Energy does increase my realm. I'm actually already at the late stage of the innate level, and I'm just one foot away from the spring solidifying realm. It's just that Formational True energy was

far too overwhelming. The internal injuries I suffered are what's making me look like i'm in this state."

Selena nodded and was just about to say something when they suddenly heard the sound of a carriage in the distance.

Jackie hurriedly said, "Hurry up and go back to Mustard Seed. Someone's coming."

Selena nodded and immediately entered the Mustard Seed.

Jackie took a deep breath as he looked toward where the noise was from. The other party did not seem to have any intentions to hide, and the wheels on the carriage made a lot of noise as it passed through.

There were four servants in front of the carriage. The servants were actually dressed very well, so it was probably no ordinary carriage.

Jackie frowned, mumbling to himself in his heart, wondering who they were. However, they should not be too highly ranked if they were just on a horse carriage.

Even though fiends had their pride and would not easily submit to humans, it was not impossible to subdue them. Subduing one or two fiends to serve oneself was very possible.

Normally, those of higher statuses would purchase fiends as transportation instead of carriages. Those beasts were fast and were able to fight.

However, the incoming group was only on a simple horse carriage. They were probably notable among common folk but not much compared to practitioners.

Jackie looked at the four servants. They were all at the acquired level, nowhere formidable, and he would be able to deal with them alone. Since the servants were that easy to take out, the one inside the carriage should not be that strong either.

Jackie slowly eased up with the thought. He felt like sitting on the floor like he was doing would definitely attract attention.

He did not want to be involved with anything, so he tried to stand up to give way to them.

The moment he stood up, he saw someone behind the carriage. Seemingly in his forties or fifties, the person looked a little frail but was at the intermediate stage of the innate level.

Jackie paused as he looked into the carriage again. It was a pity that the carriage was covered by a thick blue cloth, and he could not even look inside.

With someone at the intermediate stage of the innate level as a bodyguard, the person inside must be someone important.

Steward Maynard frowned as he looked forward. There was a man who seemed to be injured in the middle of the road and was struggling to even stand up.

Looking at him, the man seemed to be trying to give way. The driver immediately relayed the information to Chandler South inside.

Chandler immediately looked out when he heard the driver's words. "Stop when you get to him."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2373-2374

Chapter 2373
Hearing this, Maynard answered somewhat anxiously, "Sir, it's best if we just keep to ourselves. We don't know where this person is from. If we're to genuinely meet anything later, he might end up harming us."

Chandler sighed, nodding slightly as he suddenly had a resolved look in his eyes.

You're right. Sunset Valley hasn't been safe lately, and we're only going this way because we were tight on time.

"If anything happens, we'd at least have another helping hand. Even though it's hard to guess what's in the hearts of men, he's still a human. Most of the dangers on Sunset Valley are fiends. He probably won't harm us."

Chandler's explanation did not really gave Maynard any peace, but Maynard could see that Chandler wanted to help the man, nonetheless.

"Sir, please think about this," Maynard insisted, still wary in his speech. "Even though he's a human just like us and might not attack us, he might stab us in the back to steal what we have when we're in a difficult spot."

Chandler held his hand up. "Even though there are a lot of petty people in the world, this person is obviously hurt. He's not deliberately waiting there to meet us.

"Then, the chances of him being a bad person are low. Let's talk to him later and just be a bit more careful."

Maynard's expression stiffened. "It's still think not"

Before he could finish, Chandler interrupted him again, “I saw that the person is only at the early stage of the innate level; he wouldn’t even be able to beat you. Furthermore, there are so many of us here. Don’t worry, bringing him with us is just an added layer of protection.

Maynard looked over at Jackie. Even though Jackie had yet to show any unusual movements and was even voluntarily giving way, not even bothering to greet them, he was still concerned.

This kid is injured. Bringing him would be dangerous Chandler sighed. He had to admit that Maynard was right. Nonetheless, he was incredibly worried that the journey would not be a safe one. If anything happened, it would not be a small matter.

That was why Chandler wanted to bring an outsider with them. It would at least be of some help if anything dangerous happened.

“You’re right, but let’s look at the situation first. If we feel like something’s wrong with this person, then let’s drop it.

As the two of them talked, the carriage arrived next to Jackie. Jackie retrieved a wooden staff from Mustard Seed.

In truth, he was incredibly tense as well, Even though the carriage had appeared suddenly and would probably not just randomly attack, it was difficult to guarantee that they would not attack him when they saw his injured state.

Furthermore, in such a barren place, killing would be easy.

When the carriage suddenly stopped, Jackie became serious and readied himself to attack.

Sure, he was heavily injured, but it was due to absorbing Formational True Energy.

His body was rapidly recovering, so he still had some ability to fight.

Jackie frowned as he took a step back.

A blue-clothed servant reached out and opened the carriage.

A man the same age as Jackie came out.

Sporting a deep blue robe, he had long hair and looked like the scion of a noble family.

Chapter 2374
The man offered a kind smile. “Sir, why are you at Sunset Valley? Are you being hunted by your enemies?

In that situation, Chandler would not have normally asked a stranger something so sensitive, but he was a bit anxious, so he did not hold back on his questions.

Jackie frowned, a hint of unhappiness flashed on his face. He nodded to Chandler.

“There are no enemies after me, I just injured myself while training.”

Jackie was not lying. The moment he said that, Jackie clutched the staff in his hand and prepared to distance himself from the carriage.

He had seen the level of the man in the carriage. At just this age, he was already at the late stage of the innate level. He should be a disciple of a clan. Even though he did not know if the man was friend or foe, Jackie was not planning on making any friends.

Looking at Jackie about to leave, Chandler hurriedly said, “Please, wait. You’re already injured. Inside Sunset Valley, whilst you’re already injured there’s a good chance you’ll die.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, suddenly realizing where he was. After being sent by that old man so far away, he had no idea where he had been transported to.

Based on what that person said, Sunset Valley was a dangerous place to be. If he walked away alone, he might actually end up dying .

He let out a sigh. It seemed like he would be forced to make a friend.

He turned around to look at Chandler earnestly. “Thank you for telling me that. In truth, I was transported from far away.

I entered a secret realm a while ago and accidentally fell into a wormhole. After that, I was transported here. I was clueless about my whereabouts before.”

Jackie’s explanation was partially honest, but it was not the full story. He admitted that he had been transported over before everything around him was unknown.

If he said anything, it would have been easy to reveal any lies, so he decided to tell a partial truth.

When he heard Hack’s explanation, Chandler’s eyes widened as he looked at Jackie strangely.

He was stunned for a moment before he continued, “So you mean you’re not from around here? You were sent here by a long range transporter?”

Jackie nodded. “I had entered a hidden realm to explore with some fellow disciples and accidentally ended up here. Where is this place?”

Chandler nodded, not looking like he completely believed Jackie. Nonetheless, he still explained, “This is the southern part of Middle Province. It’s part of Rosefinch Pavilion’s territory.”

Rosefinch Pavilion? Jackie was stumped. He had never heard of that name before.

Nonetheless, he truly was in Middle Province.

The old man had told Jackie that the key was in Wild Gorge Pass, and Wild Gorge Pass was in the Middle Province. Since that old man wanted to send him off, he had naturally been sent to the Middle Province.

However, Jackie had never heard of Rosefinch Pavilion before nor did he know how close Rosefinch Pavilion was to Wild Gorge Pass.

Chandler very sharply caught the confusion in Jackie’s eyes. He immediately understood that the young man before him had probably never heard of Rosefinch Pavilion before.

The curiosity in his heart stirred. “You don’t know Rosefinch Pavilion?”

Jackie stopped. He wanted to say he knew Rosefinch Pavilion, but he knew far too little about the Middle Province. If he said he did, it would be easily seen through, and would be meaningless.

Thus, Jackie nodded. “This is my first time in the Middle Province.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2375

Chapter 2375
Jackie’s words caused even Maynard to widen his eyes. The others looked at Jackie with curious expressions, and Jackie pursed his lips helplessly.

Normally, he would have kept this to himself. However, the people in front of him were nowhere intimidatingly powerful.

Even if they wanted to do something to him, they would not be able to stop Jackie from escaping.

That was why Jackie was much more honest than usual. Maynard took a step forward and sized Jackie up, as if wanting to notice something from Jackie’s clothes. It was obvious that he did not know anything about West Cercie State and could not tell.

After a long time, he finally said, “Where were you from before?”

Jackie composed himself, having no intention of even explaining himself.

“It’s my first time in the Middle Province.”

Maynard frowned at this and said, and somewhat sourly at that, “Don’t worry, we’re not planning on doing anything to you.

Our master just wants to invite you to come with us. He just wants one more person around. It’s very dangerous here.

If you stay alone, you might not be able to survive for even two days.

“However, if you come with us, it’s actually quite dangerous for us not knowing your background.”

Maynard’s words were quite polite. Even though there was a hint of a threat within his response, the tone was quite measured.

Jackie looked at Maynard. “I don’t want to say anything because I don’t know your background as well. If you want me to be honest, you’d have to at least show some sincerity.”

Maynard could not help but let out a cold laugh as he heard that. “You truly are bold.

You’re just a brat in the initial stage of the innate level, and you’re demanding us? Let me tell you, you should be begging us right now.

If we don’t bring you along, you’ll never survive!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking like he Was unfazed. “You’re right. If you don’t bring me with you, I might be putting my life on the line here.

“However, if I don’t know more about you and just follow you forward, would I not be in danger as well?

Maynard was red with anger. He wanted to shout but merely turned to Chandler and said, “Let’s go. This”

Before he could finish, Chandler stopped him, saying, “I’m an informal disciple of the fifth-grade clan, Rosefinch Pavilion. I’m heading home because something happened back there.

“However, before I embarked, I heard that Sunset Valley isn’t that safe lately; there have been a lot of fiend-related incidents. I’m worried that I’d run into high-level fiends on the way home, so I planned on inviting you to come with me.”

Maynard’s lips twitched. He really wanted to ask why Chandler was so polite to that brat Why was that brat so brazen?

Since Chandler had already spoken up, it would be insulting to Maynard if he started to utter some disparaging words, so he was forced to swallow his words.

He turned around as he looked at Jackie angrily. Jackie raised an eyebrow, not expecting the man in front of him to be so sincere.

Since they were honest toward him, Jackie would not continue being difficult. He let out sigh. “I come from West Cercie State. Don’t worry, I’m not a bad person. I won’t stab you in the back.”

Maynard’s face darkened, almost slapping Jackie in the face. “Why are you like this? Mister Chandler has even told you which clan he’s from, but all you said was that you’re from West Cercie State?!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2376-2377

Chapter 2376
Maynard did not get the chance to finish his rant, however, as Chandler interrupted him, saying, “It’s fine, there’s no real reason for him to tell us anyway.

We’re just companions going in the same direction. Sir, you’re already injured.

Come sit in the carriage with me, you’ll have a smoother time to recuperate.”

Maynard was so frustrated that his whole body quaked.

He shook his head helplessly, unable to stop Jackie.

After getting into the carriage, Jackie chatted with Chandler for a while, finally figuring out where he was.

Middle Province was very big, and it was the biggest landmass on the Hestia Continent.

The Middle Kingdom’s territories were divided in a very casual manner.

It was divided based on the area of influence of various clans.

For instance, there were three clans in the south of Middle Province, so it was split into three territories.

Jackie’s current position was closer to the Rosefinch Pavilion, so it was called the Rosefinch Pavilion’s territory.

Chandler seemed visibly excited as he explained it all to Jackie as if gladdened that he could share that information with others.

It was a good way for him to show off how knowledgeable he was.

“Middle Province is also split into the inner and outer region, and the Rosefinch Pavilion is in the outer region. The outer region is relatively poorer in resources.

The clans around the region are grade- five clans at most.

“The truly strong clans are all in the inner region, and the inner region is where most of the resources in Middle Province are. Even the lowest-ranked clans are sixth-grade clans. There are even many grade seven and eight clans.” Jackie’s eyes brightened when he heard the introductions, seemingly elated.

Jackie was not happy because of the strength of Middle Province, but rather, he was incredibly relieved that he had not been sent to the inner region where all the strong warriors were.

After all, anywhere the strong gathered meant it would be a more dangerous place. Jackie was still at the innate stage, and he needed to step into the spring solidifying realm before he would be able to truly protect himself.

“You said that Sunset Gorge was especially dangerous, didn’t you? How dangerous is it? Will we encounter any fiends in the spring solidifying realm?” questioned Jackie.

Of course, Jackie did not truly know much about this place, and if their luck was nasty enough that they encounter a fiend In the spring solidifying realm, he would probably be the only survivor, considering the strength of everyone here.

Thinking about everything that had happened the past few days, Chandler let out a deep sigh and had a helpless look in his eyes. “”It’s dangerous because a few strong fighters suddenly decided to slaughter the fiends in Sunset Gorge for some unknown reason”The smell of blood hung heavily in the air for the past few days, and anyone who went past Sunset Gorge would be able to smell it.

That’s exactly why the fiends smell it. That’s exactly why the fiends on Sunset Gorge started to attack humans without any regard.

“We’ll be moving along the outer boundaries of Sunset Gorge, but it’s still no guarantee. Any fiend we meet will end up attacking us.”

Jackie frowned. “You don’t know why they’re killing the fiends?”

Chandler nodded. “I don’t know, but even if we don’t know the details, we can guess. There must be treasure; that’s the only reason those strong fighters would have moved.

“Yet, they should not have slaughtered the fiends so much, leading to the fiends completely hating humans. As long as they see any humans, the fiends will attack relentlessly. We’re no longer living alongside each other in peace like before.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, thinking about everything he had encountered on Mount Beasts.

There was a very basic rule no matter where one went.

Humans and fiends might constantly fight each other, but they would never go overboard, slaughtering the other party with reckless abandon.

Chapter 2377
A one-sided slaughter would only serve to thoroughly anger the other party, and it would end up triggering a bloodbath. Even if they did not meet, they would actively seek out the other party to kill.

Chandler could not help but be angered at the thought of this. “Those fighters can just turn around and leave, gloating after the slaughter, but those of us who are still growing and warriors end up suffering”They angered the fiends, and the ones who ended up being attacked are people like us. This path on Sunset Gorge used to be the safest way, and it usually only has a few beasts without any training.

“Even if we met any strong fiends, there wouldn’t be any conflicts. Now, with the earlier slaughter, those fiends have all gone crazy. They’ve rushed outside from within and attacked any humans in sight!” Chandler let out a helpless sigh, frustration etched deeply into his face.

Jackie frowned. He could understand how Chandler felt.

The carriage continued forward, and the two of them were lost in their own thoughts in the car. Nonetheless, Jackie focused on recovering and would occasionally chat with Chandler.

He wanted to understand the common knowledge within Rosefinch Pavilion’s territory as soon as possible. He did not have any plans on where he would go after leaving Sunset Gorge.

“Chandler, do you know of Wild Gorge Pass?” Jackie finally asked the question after mulling over it.

His goal for coming to Middle Province had been to get to Wild Gorge Pass, and he was meant to retrieve the key from Wild Gorge Pass to open the Scarlet Case, and he would then learn all the secrets.

Chandler was stunned when he heard those words.

After that, he suddenly turned around and stared at Jackie. “Why are you asking about Wild Gorge Pass? You don’t even know about Rosefinch Pavilion, so how could you know about Wild Gorge Pass?”

Chandler’s words took Jackie aback. It seemed like Wild Gorge Pass was an incredibly special place.

It was just a casual question, but Chandler had such a big reaction to his question.

Jackie let out a slight cough, rubbing his nose as he said, “I heard of it from some people. I heard that Wild Gorge Pass is in Middle Province. Do you know where it is? I heard the place is quite magical. I want to go and take a look..”

Jackie’s explanation sounded forced, even to himself, but he never expected Chandler to have such an intense reaction. He was forced to quickly find a plausible excuse.

Chandler frowned, shaking his head at Jackie. “That place has nothing to do with uS. It’s best if you don’t try to find out anything about it, even though it’s quite mystical. Definitely so!”

Saying that, a look of confusion was on Chandler’s face. However, it quickly disappeared as he sincerely added, “That place isn’t somewhere regular people can walk into. Even disciples from eighth-grade clans might not have a chance to enter”Jackie frowned as a serious look appeared on his face. “I was just curious as to where the Wild Gorge Pass was. Why is it so hard to enter? Are there conditions you need to meet?”

Chandler sighed helplessly. “There are some conditions, yes, but your information was wrong. Wild Gorge Pass isn’t in Middle Province The reason it’s related to Wild Gorge Pass is that there’s a transporter that heads to Wild Gorge Pass in Middle Province. Wild Gorge Pass is actually in a different world from Hestia Continent.”

Chandler’s words filled Jackie with surprise. Wild Gorge Pass was not in Middle Province? It was not even in the same world as Hestia Continent? Absurd!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2378-2379

Chapter 2378
Jackie had to suppress the internal shock he had.

“What world is Wild Gorge Pass from? Why would Middle Province have a passage into Wild Gorge Pass? If someone wanted to enter Wild Gorge Pass, how would they do it?”

Chandler raised an eyebrow at how eager Jackie seemed to want to know more. ” Surely you’re not planning on entering Wild Gorge Pass, do you now? I would advise against such a thought. Even if you had nine ninth-grade crystals, you’d just die inside.”

Jackie visibly soured at Chandler’s words; it seemed like he had trivialized the matter too much. He had thought that it would have been somewhere like the Hidden Place for Resources at most.

Even though he had encountered many dangers there, he had managed to turn danger into opportunity thanks to his talent and skill. However, after listening to Chandler’s simple explanation, Jackie found out what was different about Wild Gorge Pass. If the Hidden Place for Resources’ fiends had been in the late stage of the innate level, then the fiends on Wild Gorge Pass were at least at the divine-solidifying level. The two of them could not even be at the same level.

Thinking about that, Jackie gulped.

It would seem that his future path suddenly became bleaker.

He did not know if he could enter Wild Gorge Pass at all.

“What is a ninth-grade crystal? Where can I buy them?” asked Jackie, sounding rather despondent at the same time.

Chandler raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie. “The ninth-grade pill is something everyone wants to buy but can’t find. It’s not something you can buy just because you want to. It might be something similar to spirit crystals, but it’s hundreds of thousands of times more expensive”

After that, Chandler raised one finger.” This is the most recent price.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow at his gesture, “A hundred thousand spirit crystals?”

To Jackie, a hundred thousand spirit crystals was already an incredibly high price. After all, the most he would ever have was over a thousand.

Chandler let out a laugh as he shook his head. “What can a hundred thousand spirit crystals get you? It’s a hundred million! Even with that price, you might not be able to buy it if you had the money!

Jackie jumped when he heard the price. “A hundred million?!”

Chandler nodded. “That’s the price, alright. This is even a lower-end estimate, too, and this thing is impossible to find. If you want to buy it, you’d probably need to offer a higher price. Furthermore, a hundred million only gets you one of them!

“You’d need nine of them to get to Wild Gorge Pass from Middle Province. That’s why I said you should just give up on going”

Jackie’s face sank at this news. What an exorbitant price, that was! Unless he sold his Mustard Seed, he would never be able to afford it. Mustard Seed itself was something independent, and it absolutely Could not be sold.

That meant Jackie had to make all that money. He wondered how many years he would have to work to make enough.

Even if he had 900 million spirit crystals and earned the right to go to Wild Gorge Pass, how would he cope with the dangers within?

Would he be able to level up constantly in a short time? All those problems stared at Jackie in the face. Jackie felt like a massive rock was pressing down on his heart, and it felt incredibly bad.

Alas…he could not retreat at that point. There was no room for him to retreat, anyway.

Meanwhile, Chandler noted Jackie's dispirited expression and was riddled with curiosity, Was this guy really planning on entering Wild Gorge Pass?

Chapter 2379
Chandler felt amused just thinking about it.

Even the chosen disciples in his clan would not be able to enter at all.

Not only did they lack the money, but they also lacked the ability.

A little innate level guy from West Cercie State like Jackie would never be able to.

Chandler pursed his lips in slight exasperation as he advised sincerely," Since you're already in Middle Province, you should find a place to stay if you don't plan on going back anytime soon. Middle Province is vast, and its resources are much better than what you had in West Cercie State."

Jackie nodded, looking at Chandler meaningfully. Even though he had just known Chandler for a short time, Jackie could see that Chandler was not someone interested in petty schemes or trickery.

Chandler was someone worth befriending. Jackie slowly lowered the walls he had put up "Middle Province really is quite rich in resources. Can you tell me what's the best way to earn spirit crystals? The best is if I can earn a lot at once."

After saying that, Jackie let out a laugh as he lowered his head somewhat helplessly. He knew that his question was quite absurd. It looked like he wanted to get on the fast track forward.

Regardless, he had to ask. After all, 900 million spirit crystals were not something that could be easily earned. He had to start planning right away.

Even though many obstacles were hindering him from going to Wild Gorge Pass, he still had to cut his way through them.

Jackie knew very well what the elders of the various clans were like before he was transported; they were there to fight over the Scarlet Case.

Those elders knew more than he did, of course, and they even understood the rules surrounding the Hidden Place for Resources Even they were fighting over the Scarlet Case, so it was obvious how important it was.

There were still many obstacles Jackie would face in the future, and he even needed to get into a first-grade world.

He needed all the resources he could get. Opening the Scarlet Case was something Jackie had to do.

Chandler looked at Jackie like something was wrong with Jackie's head. He pursed his lips before, a long while later, shaking his head.

Chandler sighed. "Don't you know that the higher you climb, the harder you fall? There are many ways to suddenly get rich, but there are so many warriors around.

Who could possibly accomplish it? "If you want to live a peaceful life in the Middle Province, you should stop thinking about reaching the peak instantly. Find a normal plan and slowly make some spirit crystals. You should stabilize your life first."

Jackie raised his eyebrow slightly as he nodded, not able to retort. "You're right. Honestly, I was just curious. I know I couldn't possibly make so many spirit crystals so quickly. I just want to know what kind of jobs would allow it."Chandler frowned, not able to say anything about Jackie's explanation.

Even though he felt like Jackie was getting stranger by the minute, he still composed himself and spoke, "There are basically three different kinds of jobs that can make you spirit crystals quickly. The first is to be a mercenary for Lyndon Pavilion and help them accomplish various tasks. However, it's not something anyone can do.

"First, you'll need to be in the divine-solidifying realm. You're just at the innate realm, so it's still a long way to go.

The second kind isn't much different from the first"You'll need to have immense strength and enter mountains or domains of strong fiends. Then, you'd have to kill high-leveled fiends.

The beasts' cores and other parts can be exchanged for spirit crystals. However, you'd just be food for the fiends if you aren't strong enough."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2380-2381

apter 2380
Chandler glanced at Jackie when he spoke, and sure enough, there was that dejected expression on Jackie's face once more.

Chandler let out a slight laugh as he continued, "The third one has no restrictions when it comes to strength, but it's not something you can do."

Jackie frowned, taking a deep breath as he asked, "What's the job?" Chandler slowly said, "An alchemist."

The moment those words were heard,, Jackie immediately straightened, and there was a strange expression on his face.

The hopelessness written on his face earlier seemed to disappear suddenly, and it even looked like he had newfound hope.

Chandler looked at Jackie and asked, "Are you an alchemist?"

After saying that, he could not help but move his head backward, pulling away as he looked at Jackie properly. He seemed to see something from Jackie's body. "What grade are you as an alchemist?"

Jackie did not hide the fact as he sincerely nodded. "I'm an alchemist, but I'm only a tan entry level. I'ma fifth-grade alchemist."

Chandler nodded slightly. A fifth-grade alchemist would indeed be at the entry level. The pills he refined would only help those at the acquired level. For stronger warriors, fifth-grade alchemists were useless.

The jump from the fifth to the sixth grade was a great divide. Many alchemists were not able to pass that hurdle. If Jackie was a sixth-grade alchemist, then Chandler would have been interested in talking about it in further detail.

He shook his head somewhat helplessly. " Alchemists can make money very quickly, but don't forget the difference between alchemists.

"As an alchemist, you should know the tremendous distance between fifth and sixth-grade alchemists. Sixth-grade alchemists can make pills for innate level warriors.

The final step of creating sixth-grade pills require you to integrate the medicinal properties with the powers of nature.

It greatly improves the qualities of the pills.

Fifth-grade alchemists can't do it at all, which is why their pills are only good for warriors of the acquired level." Jackie nodded. Back when he was in the dual Sovereign Pavilion, he had looked into alchemy.

After all, Jackie had been a famous alchemist back in Daxia.

He had gained a lot from making pills and had even increased his own levels.

There were many similarities and differences when it came to alchemy in Hestia Continent and Daxia.

Jackie estimated that he was around the level of a fifth-grade alchemist in Hestia Continent.

Fifth-grade alchemists could not inject medicinal energies into their pills, and that was why only acquired level warriors could use them.

Only with those properties would pills be useful to those at the innate level and above.

That was why there was a huge gulf between sixth and fifth-grade alchemists, and alchemists would end up being stuck at the fifth.

The difference between the two grades was like night and day.

Chandler said somewhat helplessly, "If you want to become a sixth-grade alchemist, you'll need to learn the Way of the Pill. Only after you understand it will you be able to increase the quality of your pills.

"If you plan on learning the Way of the Pill, you will need to get a master. Only through a master will you really be able to inherit the knowledge. However, any masters capable of creating incredibly high-level pills won't easily accept students,"

Chapter 2381
"You might be a fifth-grade alchemist, but you need to become a sixth-grade one to really earn a lot of spirit crystals. There's still a long way to go."

Chandler's words were all out of kindness. He wanted to help Jackie plan a clear path forward for himself, not wanting Jackie to be blinded by the need to make spirit crystals.

Jackie might end up achieving nothing in the end if that was the case.

Even though Chandler was just an informal disciple in Rosefinch Pavilion, he had been within Rosefinch Pavilion's territories for a long time.

He had a lot of basic knowledge.

Back then, he had wanted to be an alchemist. After all, he would be looked at with admiration if he managed to become a sixth-grade alchemist, and he would even make a lot of money as well.

However, after he understood how difficult it was to be an alchemist, he abandoned the thought. Becoming a sixth grade alchemist did not just require large amounts of effort and time-it also needed incredibly high talent.

The Way of the Pill was not something that could be understood just because someone wanted to.

The Way of the Pill was not a singular way of making pills.

Based on what he knew, there were five of six different Ways of the Pill just within Rosefinch Pavilion's territories.

Some were easy, and some were simple.

There were those that made better pills and those that made worse.

However, no matter what kinds of pills they were, they were still incredibly hard to understand.

There were those who still could not understand it even after 20 years. Eight out of ten alchemists failed to achieve enlightenment.

It was obvious how difficult the Way of the Pill was. The youth before him might already be a fifth-grade alchemist, but he felt like Jackie would not be able to pass that hurdle. After all, it was far too difficult.

Chandler reached out and poured some tea for Jackie. After that, he said earnestly "If you really want to try, why don't you head to Heavenly Pills? That place is recruiting new students"If you're recruited by them, you'll have the chance to learn the Way of the Pill the moment you become a sixth-grade alchemist, Heavenly Pills will write you a recommendation.

"You'll then be able to take a test with the Middle Province Alchemists Alliance. Then, you'll truly have a bright future."

Jackie listened intently to Chandler's explanations. His eyes widened as he asked, "Heavenly Pills? Middle Province Alchemists Alliance? There's even a test?"

Jackie knew nothing of that common information at all. After all, he had not been in Hestia Continent for that long.

He had just learned about West Cercie State when he was transported to Middle Province.

He was scratching his head at everything.

Chandler let out a small laugh as he calmly explained, “Heavenly Pills is the largest pill store in Rosefinch Pavilion’s territories. They don’t just sell materials there; they also sell refined pills.

“It’s somewhere alchemists love to go. Ofcourse, they recruit students as well. The Middle Province Alchemists Alliance is as the name suggests. It’s an alliance of all the alchemists in Middle Province.

“They regularly hold tests. As long as you pass the test, you’ll be awarded the corresponding status. They’ll also provide you with the appropriate benefits. You can also take up assignments from them in exchange for spirit crystals or valuable materials.”

After Chandler’s explanation, Jackie completely understood why he needed to earn the approval of the Middle Province Alchemists Alliance. After passing the test, he would have more opportunities to earn spirit crystals.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2382-2383

Chapter 2382
Looking at Jackie's serious expression, Chandler felt a little exasperated.

He turned around, facing Jackie directly.

"Look at how excited you are.I guess you have a lot of confidence in yourself.Regardless, I'm just giving some advice out of kindness here. If you want to become a sixth-grade alchemist, you need to overcome a very big hurdle, one that eight out of ten alchemists couldn't make it through. You should be prepared."Jackie nodded.

He was actually already prepared for it.

The memory of the great master he absorbed had a lot of memories about alchemists.

The Divine Void World's alchemists were not that much different from those in the Hestia Continent.

However, the Divine Void World's alchemists were at a higher level, and the alchemists needed to master the Way of the Pill as well. Thinking about that, he smirked.

Thankfully, he had a cheating tool.

The soul-gathering crystal had been in Mustard Seed for far too long.

After leaving Sunset Valley, he would have to use the soul-gathering crystal again.

Time slowly passed, and Jackie noticed, to his surprise, that his injuries were recovering faster than he had expected.

Jackie had thought that he would need to recuperate for at least five to six days.

He never expected that his injuries would already be mostly recovered in just about an hour after getting into the carriage.

This lessened a fraction of Jackie's worries.

It seemed like Formational True Energy truly was something amazing.

Even though it overwhelmed and injured him internally, it was nourishing his body and increased his recovery.

After interacting with Chandler, Jackie was sure that he held no ill-will.

It was possibly like Chandler had said, and he just wanted an additional helping hand.

However, Jackie never fully trusted Chandler from the start, always wary for something unexpected to happen. With his strength mostly recovered, however, Jackie was not worried even if Chandler Suddenly attacked him.

Chandler's strength was at the same level as his, but Jackie was certain that Chandler would not be able to defeat him.

Even though Rosefinch Pavilion was a fifth- grade clan, Chandler was just an informal disciple.

If Chandler had been talented, he would already be an inner disciple.

Thinking of that, Jackie let out a sigh as he visibly relaxed and leaned back against the chair.

"Chandler, do you know how I can enter Heavenly Pills?"

The moment he said that, the carriage suddenly stopped.

A surprised shout was suddenly heard outside, suddenly attracting Jackie and Chandler's full attention.

The two of them looked out at the same time.

Chandler pushed open the curtains, and Jackie looked out.

The sight of three monstrous cows the size of cars greeted them.

Jackie frowned, searching for a memory of the strange cows in his mind, and he immediately determined that the cow was the Blazing One-eyed Bull that was at the late stage of the innate level.

With eyes in ruby red, the bulls were covered by a strange flame.

Their defenses were stifling to behold, and there were practically no weak points on them.

Thankfully, they were not very strong at attacking

However, they were beasts at the late stage of the innate level, and any regular warrior would not be able to beat them.

Jackie remembered that the bulls normally lived in solitude.

The bulls were no herd animals, yet there were three of them in front of them.

They constantly moved their heads around, crying out at the carriage. It was as if they had been challenged and would charge at any time.

Chandler's face sank, and his breaths grew erratic, "They're Blazing One-eyed Bulls! How could they be here? Did the monsters from the inner parts all rush Out?! Three Blazing One-eyed Bulls! Oh, we're done for this time!"

Chapter 2383
Chandler looked like he had swallowed two bottles of poison after he said what he had said.

Maynard frantically ran over to the carriage.

"What do we do? Three fiends at the late-stage of the innate level! Are we any match for them? Do we still have time to flee?

"Even though these bulls seem to have been provoked, we've done nothing to provoke them. Do you think they'll chase after us if we run right now?!" Maynard was already incredibly panicked at that point.

Jackie glanced at Maynard before he said, "If we even take a step back now, the bulls will instantly attack. Don't even think that they'll show us mercy."

Even though the bulls had yet to attack, Jackie could clearly feel that the bulls were already at the limits of their anger.

It was like they had been thrown in a pile of fire.

Then, what do we do?!" Maynard was frantic, losing all sense of reasoning Jackie let out a sigh as he retrieved a gray Sword from Mustard Seed. "We fight!"

Maynard's eyes immediately widened at Jackie as he looked at Jackie, dumbfounded.

Jackie, do you even know what you're saying? Fight, you say?! What do you mean, fight?! Do you not know what these bulls' powers are? They're fiends of the late stage of the innate level!

"We only have one person at that level with us. He'll be able to fight one of the bulls, but what of the remaining two?

"You're only at the early stage of the innate level. I might already be at the middle stage, but the two of us will only be able to hold one back. Even with two down, there's still the last one!"

After that, he looked back in pain.

Those acquired level servants were all staring at them, wide-eyed with hope.

They, of course, knew how difficult of a situation they were in. No one was willing to lose their lives there.

“The third bull will attack the rest! We might be able to take it, but they absolutely won’t! They’1l be slaughtered in seconds!”

“Please, save me! After I leave, I’ll serve you loyally for the rest of my life!”

Hearing the servants sincerely begging Chandler naturally would not leave his men behind.

However, the situation left him in a bad state to make any decisions.

“What are you still waiting for?! Chandler, go take on one of the bulls. Leave the other two to me!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2384-2386

Ch

Chapter 2384
Even though the Blazing One-Eyed Bulls were at the late-stage of the innate level, to Jackie, they were nowhere daunting.

On the other hand, Chandler and Maynard’s eyes nearly popped out of their sockets when they heard those words, thinking they had misheard Jackie.

How was he so brazen? Did he think the bulls were only in the acquired realm that he wanted to handle two bulls on his own?

He would handle two of them, even when he was at the initial stage of the innate level?

Maynard grabbed Jackie’s arm. “Are you crazy?!

Alas, the bulls did not dally for Jackie.

Lagarioring their heads, they adapted a forward-rushing stance, and a second later, they ran full speed ahead.

Chandler’s face darkened. Even though he was only an informal disciple at the Rosefinch Pavilion, he was still incredibly rich in combat experience.

He knew that the servants around him would not be able to survive if the Blazing One-eyed Bull managed to charge toward them. He shot forward like an arrow.

Producing his sword, the silver blade glinted coldly as it reflected the sunlight.

He let out a roar as he brought down his blade toward the beasts.

It could have been Jackie's words influencing Chandler, or it could have been that Chandler knew he had a limited pool of abilities.

Even though he rushed forward, Chandler's full focus was on the bull toward the south.

Jackie ignored all the shouts and cries of those around him and Maynard's words as well.

Right behind Chandler, he shot forward like a cannonball.

Jackie held nothing back as he quickly condensed 60 Soul Swords into a large soul sword, which fused with the blade in his hand.

He activated Destroying the Void and pushed the skill to its limit.

The gray sword in his hand burned and emitted a dense black mist, surrounded by dense aura.

The black mist danced around the sword.

At that moment, Jackie had set his eyes on the middle Blazing One-Eyed Bull.

He looked up and let out an animalistic roar.

The bull only had one eye on its head.

At that moment, the eye glowed a vibrant red as waves of fire condensed behind its eyes.

As Jackie was less than two meters away from it, a bright light shot out of that eye.

It was so bright that it forced everyone to shut their eyes.

Jackie narrowed his eyes, not being affected at all. He raised his gray swordvand slashed at the red glow.

Everyone heard a loud bang, and the light was suddenly cut into two, disappearing suddenly.

The bright light disappeared, and blood flowed from the bull's sole eye.

After that, the bull fell on the ground with a plop.

The pain of its soul being torn apart caused it to writhe on the floor.

Jackie did not once stop after he took down the bull.

Surging forward, he disappeared on the spot.

When he appeared again, Jackie was already next to the last bull.

Jackie did not once stop after he took down the bull.

Surging forward, he disappeared on the spot.

When he appeared again, Jackie was already next to the last bull.

The last bull had targeted the acquired- level servants, but they were no fools.

They knew they would not be able to beat it, so they dispersed, giving Jackie the perfect chance to kill the last bull.

The bull had not noticed that Jackie had appeared next to him.

However, it reacted quite quickly and started to activate its skill.

Chapter 2385
However, it was already too late. No matter how strong the Blazing One-eyed Bull was, it was just at the initial stage of the innate realm.

Jackie was using an ultimate god-level skill. Even the strongest disciple of a fourth-grade clan was no match for him, let alone a fiend at the late stage of the innate realm.

Jackie let out a cry as he pierced out, and the tip of his sword pierced right into the fiend's eye once more.

The sword destroyed the fiend's eye, and blood splattered everywhere.

Cries of anguish followed after Destroying the Void did not target the physical aspect but rather the soul.

Fiends were already weaker than humans in the first place.

Even humans at the same level as those bulls would not have been able to withstand Jackie's attack.

The bull could no longer stand properly.

Just like the other bull, it fell to the ground, looking deranged as it rolled continuously on the ground, constantly crying out in pain.

Jackie had been incredibly quick and decisive in his attacks to reduce the possibility of anyone dying. In just a few breaths, he had killed off two late-stage innate realm fiends that had terrified the whole group before.

Maynard had already accepted his death at that point. He knew that he would never be able to defeat a late stage innate realm fiend and had already been thinking about his funeral affairs.

However, before he even needed to do anything, the two fiends had already fallen before Jackie.

He even made it look incredibly easy, as if he did not waste any energy at all.

The scene was deeply etched into Maynard's eyes. He refused to believe it was real.

"Is that really a warrior at the early stage of the innate realm?" blurted the servant behind Maynard, wide-eyed.

Another servant immediately said, "I don't believe it! Since when did warriors at that level kill fiends at the late stage of the innate realm so casually?! Those two bulls were no match for him at all!"

Maynard gulped, looking at Jackie with a different expression.

Only then did he realize who their companion had been all along.

He took a deep breath as he tried to observe Jackie's level again, noticing hevwas no longer certain of Jackie's abilities.

Jackie looked to be in the intermediate stage and in the late stage as well, much to Maynard's confusion as he scrutinized him.

In his years, he had seen quite a few late stage innate level warriors and was naturally able to recognize what they looked like.

However, this man, Jackie, was different from the rest.

After a long time, Maynard finally said," Even if he's at the late stage of the innate level, he's definitely not an ordinary one. It's not like I haven't seen them before.

"Look at Mr. South. He's still struggling against the blazing One-eyed Bull and Was even at a disadvantage. How did this person kill off two of them so easily?!"

Upon Maynard's words, everyone once again shifted their focus onto Chandler.

At that moment, Chandler was in no state to notice what was happening around him at all. He only had one thing in mind, which was to quickly defeat the bull.

Otherwise, no one would be able to survive. He only noticed after the battle started that the bull's entire body was as hard as armor.

Despite his best efforts, he could not break through its defenses at all!

Chapter 2386
Even though the Blazing One-Eyed Bull's attacks were not that strong, he was not strong enough to seize the advantage.

If they continued fighting like that, it would be disadvantageous to him.

If either of the other two bulls came over, he would definitely die.

The more he fought, the more nervous Chandler got.

Beads of sweat kept forming on his head, and his face was as pale as paper.

Even his breathing was beginning to get erratic!

As his anxiety peaked, a grey glint suddenly flashed next to him.

All Chandler heard was the sound of something being pierced, and the Blazing One-Eyed Bull let out a cry of pain.

When he looked back over, he saw that the bull's eye had been pierced by a grey sword.

The eye shattered like glass! The next second, the bull that had been undefeatable in Chandler's eyes fell on the ground.

It writhes as if it was going through hellish torture. It rolled on the floor in pain.

At that moment, Chandler thought that the person who had attacked must have been a spring-solidifying realm warrior.

Otherwise, it would have been impossible to pierce the bull's eye just like that!

Putting it simply, that one attack had effortlessly killed the Blazing One-Eyed Bull.

After he took a few deep breaths, he turned around to see the warrior that had saved him.

He was stunned to see who it was!

He saw a white-robed man standing calmly behind him. At that moment, the two bulls behind the man had already stopped struggling and were dead.

The servants all had their mouths open in shock.

Their eyes widened as they looked at the man as if he was a monster.

He stammered out, “Jackie?” When he said the name, he was filled with disbelief.

He even felt like the Jackie in front of him was not the real Jackie that he had met earlier.

Jackie ignored the shock on Chandler’s face as he retrieved a dagger from the Mustard Seed.

He walked to the side of the bull and slashed open its abdomen.

It took Jackie quite a lot of effort before he managed to retrieve the bull’s spirit core.

At that moment, Jackie was incredibly poor.

He needed to take advantage of anything he could use to exchange for spirit crystals.

Everyone there merely looked on in stupor as Jackie calmly dug out the spirit core of all three of the bulls.

He took out a bottle of water and washed the blood-cOvered spirit cores clean.

After sighing lightly, he put the three spirit cores into his storage space in front of everyone.

It was not until Jackie looked up to notice that the shock in all of their eyes had yet to disappear.

They stood on the same spot as if they had turned into statues. Jackie sighed in exasperation. “Let’s hurry up and leave.

The smell of the blood from the three bulls will attract other fiends.”

Those words gave everyone a big shock.

They snapped out of their stupor.

Even though they still had confused looks on their faces, no one dared to delay.

Jackie sat back in the carriage.

Chandler's mind was racing, wanting to ask Jackie a few questions.

However, he thought about the corpse of the bulls and decided to put aside his questions for the moment.

It was more important for them to leave Sunset Valley as soon as possible.

Possibly because of the danger from before that made everyone on full alert.

The journey that followed was incredibly quick as if they were putting in everything they had to leave the place as soon as possible.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2387

Chapter 2387
The sun was setting and it shone on the narrow road through the valley. It illuminated everything in a reddish hue.

Jacke admired the view from the window. The scenery outside of the carriage was quite special.

Middle Province was rich with resources, and the scenery was much better than West Cercie State.

If not for the threat of the fiends, Jacke might have spent a few days there to admire the view.

It would have helped to calm him down and plan out his next steps.

“Jacke…” Chandler’s expression looked like he was struggling.

Jacke raised an eyebrow, not expecting the sudden respectful tone. Before, Chandler had regarded him rather casually.

The respectful tone almost caused Jacke to laugh. However, he did nothing to address it.

Chandler could do what he wanted.

Jacke closed the curtains and turned to face Chandler. Chandler took a deep breath.

His eyes were incredibly conflicted. “Are you really…an early stage innate realm warrior?

Jacke shook his head, saying honestly, ” I’ve never said I was foe, I was injured before, which is why you misjudged my power ,I was actually already in the late stage of the innate level.Those Blazing One-Eyed Bulls were off no threat to me at all”

Jacke gave them a reasonable explanation, but the explanation caused Chandler to be even more shocked.

His eyeball threatened to pop out of their sockets.

He could not help but sit up, straightening his back as he said, “Even if you’re at the late stage of the innate level, you would be one of the strongest. A master among masters…”

His words had no hint of false flattery at all. They were his true sentiments. Even a warrior at the late stage of the innate level would not have possibly killed those three bulls so easily.

He was a warrior of the same level. It had been incredibly difficult for him just to face one bull. It had exhausted all of his energy to come to a tie with the bull, He had even been at a disadvantage.

Compared to Jacke, he was nothing.

“Even if you were in a fifth-grade clan, you would probably be the strongest disciple among the chosen disciples. I’m even wondering if our eldest disciple would be a match for you when he was at the late stage of the innate level.” He said earnestly.

Jacke raised an eyebrow, not denying anything. There were some things that he only had to understand himself. There was no point in voicing it.

Chandler took a deep breath and said, “I thought you were just a disciple from a small clan before. Now it seems like I was mistaken. I can’t believe I met a master like you.”

Jacke did not respond to those words. He merely sat there quietly. After a moment,

Chandler mustered up his resolve, “Are you really planning on learning alchemy? Are you planning on learning the Way of the Pill and advancing to a sixth-grade alchemist?”

Jacke nodded. That was his current plan.

Even if he entered a clan, it would be impossible to earn so many spirit crystals in such a short amount of time. It was something he was acutely aware of.

If he wanted to quickly earn more spirit crystals, his only choice was to improve his alchemy. Refining a large number of pills would help him earn enough spirit crystals.

Only then would he be able to gather nine ninth-grade crystals and enter Wild Gorge Pass to obtain the key.

Chapter 2388
Chandler pursed his lips. “It you put your focus into alchemy, you won’t have any time to train. You’re so talented. If you Waste so much time on alchemy, it would be such a waste of your potential. You’ll end up regretting it!”

Chandler was incredibly firm with his words, especially the last part.

Even if Jacke was about to earn a lot of spirit crystals, it would mean nothing.

Increasing his power was the most important.

If he got stronger, he would naturally be able to win over more riches.

Furthermore, increasing the quality of one’s pills would require a lot of time and effort! It was incredibly slow as well.

Having great potential for fighting did not mean having great potential for alchemy.

Jacke raised an eyebrow. He naturally knew all of that. If he did not have the soul gathering crystal, he would not have chosen a more distant and difficult path either.

Yet, with the soul-gathering crystal, it was no longer a problem. All he needed was a bit more time. Jacke nodded. He was still grateful for Chandler’s advice. At the very least, it meant that Chandler was not a bad person.

“I’m quite confident in my alchemy. I’ve already decided to be an alchemist. I won’t change my decision.”

At that moment, Chandler felt like Jacke must definitely be crazy.

Jacke was abandoning such a bright future to waste his time on alchemy.

Earlier, Jacke’s skills and talent would have been a great attraction no matter what clan he was in.

People like Jacke should focus on their advantages.

Jacke should look to climb to the top of all warriors, turning into an unrivaled existence.

Yet, Jacke seemed to be insistent on sabotaging himself.

He seemed to be ignoring all his talent and potential, wasting all his time on alchemy for no reason.

Chandler had some understanding of alchemy.

After all, he had wanted to become an alchemist initially.

In order to become a sixth-grade alchemist, not only would he need to waste a tremendous amount of spirit grass and medicines for practice, but he would also need to constantly study up on different things.

He would need to be able to determine the authenticity and age of various materials.

Just those alone were enough to fill up one's head completely.

How would Jacke have any time to train? Many alchemists were incredibly specialized and were not particularly strong.

Most high-ranking alchemists reached their level because they were not good at combat.

That was why they poured all of their focus on alchemy.

Think about that, Chandler could not help but shake his head. "Whatever, since you want to become a sixth-grade alchemist, I'll help you."

The next morning, Heavenly Pills had yet to open.

Clerks and students frantically ran frantically around cleaning everything up.

The furniture was all wiped down.

Heavenly Pill's most senior staff was brushing his teeth as he pointed all around the store.

This won't do! Are all of you blind? Can't you see that cobweb over there? Don't ignore any of the corners.

If any of the customers see it, what would they think of Heavenly Pills? We're not a normal pill store.

We're a direct store of Heavenly Pills! If we embarrass ourselves, we can kiss our Heavenly Pills name goodbye!

It was incredibly frantic as they hurried over with a piece of cloth to clear away the cobweb that was just the size of a finger.

After that, they looked around for other potentially dirty spots with their eyes wide.

Heavenly Pills had ten students and those students were not that old. Even though they were regarded more highly than the clerks, they still needed to perform hard labor.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2389

Chapter 2389
After all, Heavenly Pills used quite a lot of resources in bringing them up. Alchemy was something that innately required a lot of spiritual grass and medicines. When those resources piled up, they cost a pretty penny.

Gilbert Hughes let out a soft cough as he poured a cup of tea that was at the perfect temperature. “Mr. Simmons, you must be tired. Have some tea to soothe your throat. You’ve been so busy today. “Let me help you with these small matters. This entire shop will be absolutely spotless.”

Mr. Simmons raised an eyebrow, nodding happily, “You know me so well, Gilbert. I wouldn’t be able to hand this over to just anyone, but you’ve always done things really well. I can relax by handing over this matter to you.”

As he said that, Mr. Simmon’s smile got wider and wider. Gilbert nodded, revealing a very appropriate smile.

It was a sif he was incredibly grateful for those words.

However, Gilbert did not mean any of those words at all. Instead, he found it very amusing.

The only reason Mr. Simmons flattered him so much was just that Mr. Simmons felt like he had a lot of potential.

Of the ten students, Gilbert was the one with the most hope to become a sixth-grade alchemist, because of that, Mr.Simmons would always face him with a smile.

Mr. Simmons had always been someone who would suck up to the powerful and trample all over the weak. If not for that, Mr. Simmons would not even have raised an eyebrow no matter what Gilbert said.

When he becomes a sixth-grade alchemist, the first person he wanted to deal with would be Mr. Simmons. Mr. Simmons enjoyed looking for trouble where there was none far too much.

As he thought about everything, the door to the hall suddenly opened.

Gilbert frowned.

He was about to apologize when he saw someone storming in through the door.

That persOn did not even spare him a glance. He walked right up to Mr. Simmons and said, Uncle, have you been well?"

Simmons' hand that he had raised in anger immediately gave Chandler a gentle pat on the shoulder, "Oh, Chandler? Why are you here? How's your training been? Have you been promoted to an inner disciple yet?

Chandler pursed his lips as he glanced outside. He quickly averted his gaze, "Not bad, I actually have something I wanted your help with."

After that, he waved outside. Jacke entered Heavenly Pills' hall with Maynard behind him.

Even though Maynmard was technically at the same level as Mr. Simmons, they were incredibly different. Maynard served Chandler's family and was just a servant In that family.

However, Mr. Simmons was someone who worked for Heavenly Pills. He was definitely regarded much more highly than Maynard.

Hence, Maynard's proud demeanor earlier had completely deflated in front of Mr. Simmons.

It was like he had turned into a dog who did not even dare to wag its tail.

Mr. Simmons looked at the two who had entered curiously.

His focus was especially on Jacke.

When Jacke walked in, he did not have any expression on his face.

Jacke did not even spare Mr.Simmons a glance It was as if Jacke did not care that he was the caretaker of Heavenly Pills at all

When Chandler mentioned his intentions, Mr. Simmons immediately raised an eyebrow. He appraised Jacke when he heard that Jacke wanted to become a student

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2390

Chapter 2390
After a long time, Mr. Simmons nodded and replied, “Since you’ve come here to be a student, you should be mentally prepared to be one.

“My nephew asked me for this favor, so I’ll naturally agree to it. Gilbert, go find a room for him. In the future, you’ll be his senior. Remember to bring him along wherever you go.”

Gilbert tried his best to control his expression that was about to sour. He let out a stiff smile and uttered, “Don’t worry, I’ll take good care of him.”

Even though he did his best to control his tone, Jacke could still feel something amiss despite the plain nature of his words. He glanced at Gilbert.

Gilbert looked quite friendly, but Jacke could feel a coldness behind that warm exterior.

Gilbert was incredibly unhappy at Jacke’s arrival. It was as if Gilbert was afraid that Jacke would steal his position.

That surprised Jacke. Gilbert did not even give Jacke a chance to speak before he raised his right hand and stood aside,

“Come with me, I’ll arrange somewhere for you to stay. From today on, you’ll| be one of my fellow students in Heavenly Pills.”Jacke nodded.

After that, he turned to look at Chandler. Chandler let out a sigh before he nodded earnestly.

“I’ll be leaving at noon tomorrow. Before I leave, I want to treat you to a meal. You mustn’t refuse.”

Chandler emphasized his words very heavily. Jacke was still quite thankful to Chandler. Since Chandler was willing to treat him to a meal he would naturally not refuse it.

After nodding, he followed Gilbert.

They went toward the back door of the hall. When Jacke disappeared, Mr. Simmons turned around to look at Chandler.

“You seem to have a lot of respect for this brat. Is he someone special?

Gilbert pursed his lips helplessly, shaking his head.”He’s no one special. I just think he’s a good person. It’s worth being good Mr. Simmons could not help but raise an eyebrow. Even though he did not agree with Chandler’s words, he could not be bothered to give any advice. After a sigh, he pulled Chandler aside.

He had the servants prepare some tea, As the two of them drank, they chatted.

This time, Chandler wanted to talk about what had happened in his journey. However, he would definitely end up involving Jacke if he went into detail.

Jacke had already told Chandler to not tell anyone else about him.

Chandler could understand from Jacke’s point of view, so he temporarily ignored what had happened.

“I remember Heavenly Pills accepted twenty students two years ago,” Chandler said after taking a sip of tea.

He had been asking for Jacke’s sake, but he was curious himself as well.

Mr. Simmons nodded, “You remember quite well. That year, we did accept twenty students,”

He let out a dry laugh while saying, “Yet there was only one who was able to become a sixth-grade alchemist. There are so few people who can understand the Way of the Pill and condense pill auras.”

It’s so hard to produce even one sixth-grade alchemist, let alone seventh or eighth-grade ones… There is only one eighth-grade alchemist in Heavenly Pills.

The eighth-grade alchemist is basically the living ancestor. He doesn’t trouble himself with general affairs.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2391 - 2395

Chapter 2391
Chandler could not help but shake his head when he heard all of that.

The alchemist's path was definitely not easy.

It was even several times harder than martial arts, and it required a lot more talent.

"Is it really that hard to condense a pill aura?" Chandler put down the cup of tea in his hand as he asked seriously.

Even though he had some understanding of alchemy, he had never tried to understand the Way of the Pill before.

He did not understand how difficult it was to

understand the Way of the Pill and condense a pill aura.

Mr. Simmons had many years of experience in Heavenly Pills, so he naturally had some authority on the matter.

"Of course it's hard! Let me give you an example that you can understand. For a fifth-grade alchemist to understand the Way of the Pill and condense pill aura is like having an innate realm warrior learn a having an upper earth rank skill. Isn't that hard?"

With Mr. Simmons' example, Chandler had a better idea of it. Of course, it was hard! It was incredibly hard. It was basically something he was unable to do at all.

It was considered quite good if he managed to learn an upper red level skill.

Earth rank skills were something he would not even dare to think about in the innate realm.

Those who were able to learn those skills were all excellent disciples within the clans.

If he could do something like that, he would have already been an inner disciple a long time ago.

For there to only be one person capable of doing it out of twenty, he suddenly understood why.

Thinking about that, he pursed his lips helplessly as Jackie's image flashed in his mind.

After a creaking sound, a broken-down wooden door was pushed open by someone.

Sunlight shone in, and a whole floor of dust jumped into vision.

It seemed like it had been a long time since anyone had cleaned the room up.

There were enough cobwebs on the window to use as a tablecloth.

The room was incredibly small. Other than a table, there was only a bed.

The bed did not even have any sheets on it.

The room was completely dilapidated.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he turned his head around, looking at Gilbert who had a warm smile on his face.

Gilbert licked his lips, saying a little helplessly, "I'm sorry. The other rooms are all already taken.

This is the only room that's still empty. You can make do with it."

Jackie let out a small laugh as his lips curled up. He looked at Gilbert coldly, " Are there no other rooms? Is this the only room left?"

Gilbert nodded, not saying anything.

All Gilbert did was signal with his eyes that Jackie should enter so he could leave.

Jackie turned around and faced Gilbert, "I'll take the room, but that doesn't mean I've already admitted defeat. It doesn't mean you can just bully me around either.It's just that I can't be bothered to waste my time on you right now."

After that, Jackie turned around and entered the dust-filled room that was in a bad state.

He shut the door behind him with a bang, and Gilbert's nose was almost hit by the door.

At that moment, Gilbert's heart was filled

with anger.

He wanted nothing more than to rush inside and kill that guy who did not know his place.

In the end, his rationality won over his anger.

He snorted and stared viciously at the door before he turned around and left.

After he left, Jackie summoned Nash out of

Mustard Seed.

Jackie did not ask Nash to do anything.

Instead, Jackie took out the cleaning tools and cleaned up the room before he had Nash sit by the bed.

Jackie told Nash everything that had happened recently.

After Nash heard everything, he frowned; and said, “Why do you meet disgusting flies everywhere you go? You’ve done nothing against this Gilbert person. Why is he trying to make things difficult for you?

Chapter 2392
Jackie kept the rag and replied, “He probably feels like I am threatening his status. Otherwise, he couldn’t possibly hold so much animosity against me. It’s as if he thinks I’ll steal his things if I become his fellow student.”

I don’t know about anything else, but even though the students might seem to be working hard at learning alchemy to become a sixth-grade alchemist, they’re actually more like glorified servants.

They are normally forced to labor away at Heavenly Pills. They have to deal with customers and clean up the store.

They need to determine the age of the materials. Only after they finish all these chores are they able to continue their training

“It’s such a difficult life. Any good chances or good things would naturally have many fighting over them. I’m a new student and might be fighting over the same things with him. He’d naturally not be happy with me.”

When Nash heard Jackie’s explanation, he felt like Jackie was right. Yet, he still felt very exasperated.

Jackie had clearly done nothing wrong, but he was still being hated.

Nash looked up at Jackie. “What do we do next then? Alchemy is a very time-consuming thing. You must make sure you don’t sacrifice too much for it.

“If you waste all your time here and neglect your training, it’d be hard for you to make up for it in the future.”

Jackie nodded. He was not that naive.

The two of them talked for a long time.

When noon came, Jackie followed Chandler to a nearby tavern. The two of them ordered some alcohol and some dishes. After that, they went into a separate room to eat and chat.

Chandler told Jackie everything he had heard from his uncle.

When Chandler saw Jackie’s calm expression, he could not help but let out a deep sigh.

“I knew you wouldn’t be worried about this. However, some things will still happen even if you don’t worry about them. Do you know what the students usually do inside?”

As Chandler spoke, he was incredibly anxious.

Jackie nodded Before Gilbert led him to the room, Gilbert had been holding a piece of cloth.

It was obvious with just a bit of thought that the students were definitely not living easy lives there.

Otherwise, Mr. Simmons would not have agreed so easily. After all, another student meant another free servant.

Even though they were regarded more highly than common riff-raff, what they did was still labor.

Chandler felt even more anxious when he saw Jackie nod so calmly. “I really can’t tell what you’re thinking. With your talent, you would receive special attention no matter which clan you go to.

“As long as you focused on training, your future would be incredibly bright. Why would you make yourself suffer as a student doing petty chores? You’d have to do all those things daily, how would you have time to train?”

Why don’t you listen to my advice? Stoop wasting your time on this useless matter.

Just focus on your training. Even if you’re able to become a sixth-grade alchemist, it would take you quite a lot of time.”

After saying that, Chandler paused, not willing to be too direct. After thinking about it, he felt like Jackie was not that sensitive either, so he decided to continue.

He took a deep breath as he said earnestly, “If you become a student, your time would be split between working and studying. Truthfully, Heavenly Pills doesn’t want to provide that many materials for their students to practice.”

After all, these materials aren’t cheap.

If the students aren’t careful, they would destroy those valuable materials.

The higher-ups at Heavenly Pills naturally don’t want to waste any resources.

“However, they’re still forced to train all of you. That’s only because raising proper alchemists is the best way to bring them even more profits.”

After he said that, Chandler took another deep breath. He placed the glass in his hand back on the table.

Chapter 2393
“Due to that, they’ll do their best to make sure you get as little valuables as possible to reduce the losses. You will be suffering.”

Chandler said many heartfelt words mostly because he felt like it was a big pity that Jackie was wasting his talent just like that.

Another reason was that he wanted to repay Jackie for saving his life.

If he had not advanced with Jackie, he would definitely have died against the three Blazing One-Eyed Bulls.

Jackie could feel the good intentions in Chandler’s words and nod at them.

There were some things that Chandler would not be able to understand. After all,

Jackie had too many secrets, there was no way to explain it all.

He was not willing to reveal all his secrets to Chandler either, so he was forced to find an excuse that did not sound too ridiculous.

“Once I’ve set a goal for myself, I won’t change it easily. Plus, I’m incredibly confident in my talent. I’ll definitely be able to become a sixth-grade alchemist. Being a sixth-grade alchemist isn’t even my end goal. I’ll even become a seventh or eighth-grade one.”

Chandler’s lips twitched when he heard that, not knowing what to say suddenly.

He felt like Jackie had way too much confidence.

However, he understood that there were Some people who would never let go of their goals unless they were forced to.

Unless Jackie realizes for himself how absurd his thoughts were, Jackie would not listen to any advice.

Chandler sighed, shaking his head as he stopped making more advances. He poured a drink for himself, thinking of a lighter topic.

At that moment, Jackie suddenly said, “Do you know Gilbert?”

Chandler raised an eyebrow and nodded,” I know he’s quite a good sprout. I heard that he’s about to accumulate two hundred merit points. With those merit points, he would be able to earn the right to learn the Way of the Pill.”

“My uncle even said that it should not take too long for him to shed his status as a student and become a sixth-grade alchemist.”

Jackie frowned when he heard that. “Merit points?”

Chandler was stunned.

He immediately slapped his forehead, wondering how he could have been so careless to forget something so important.

He hurriedly explained, “After you become students, it doesn’t mean you can just casually learn the Way of the Pill with that label. If you want to learn the Way of the Pill, you have to exchange merit points for it.”

“Only by accumulating two hundred merit points would you be able to obtain the rights to even look at the Way of the Pill”.

After all, the Way of the Pill is an incredibly important inheritance.

“It’s comparatively even more valuable than martial skills and techniques. Any place that has a Way of the Pill would place incredible importance on it.”

Jackie nodded.

After such an explanation, he more or less understood. However, he still could not understand why Gilbert would suddenly target him like that.

He was a new student. ‘There was no way He could gather two hundred merit points in a short time. Naturally, there was no way Jackie could fight Gilbert for the right to learn the Way of the Pill.

Chapter 2394
Why was Gilbert treating him so badly? To even arrange for Jackie to sleep in such a shabby room. Thinking about that, he looked at Chandler.

He had clearly been recommended by Chandler. Chandler's uncle was Mr. Simmons. Was Gilbert not worried that Jackie would reveal everything to Mr. Simmons?

He was basically defying Mr. Simmons by doing so. Was he not worried that Mr. Simmons would do something about it?

Jackie could not figure it out.

Jackie decided to just push those thoughts aside. He sipped his drink and said," Thank you for all your guidance. When you're back in your clan, you can come to find me at any time if you have any troubles."

Chandler let out a small smile. He knew that Jackie was someone who would keep his promises.

He nodded and replied, "I will."

The two of them continued to chat for a while longer before Chandler excused himself.

After all, Chandler could not remain there for too long. He still needed to return to his clan to participate in the ranking battles to earn more resources for himself.

After Jackie returned to Heavenly Pills, he changed into a students' uniform. The clothes were tighter around the collar, it was obvious they were prepared specially for all the chores the students would do.

Looking at the clothes, Jackie sighed helplessly. If it were not to earn a recommendation, he would never have worked at Heavenly Pills.

After all, he still needed to be recommended into the Middle Province Alchemists Alliance's test.

The moment he changed his clothes and left the room, he planned on looking for Mr. Simmons to ask about his duties.

However, he encountered Gilbert the moment he opened the door. Gilbert let out a sly smile as if Gilbert had been waiting there deliberately.

Gilbert let out a small laugh and said, " Where are you headed to, Jackie?"

Jackie coldly glanced at him, not wanting to bother bickering with Gilbert.

He walked forward, planning on looking for Mr. Simmons. Yet, Gilbert quickly stood in front of Jackie, blocking his way and not allowing him to move.

Looking at Gilbert, Jackie frowned. If he was not holding back, Jackie would have easily killed an initial stage innate level brat like Gilbert.

“What’s the meaning of this?” Jackie coldly said.

Gilbert let out a small laugh as he said calmly, “Are you planning on looking for Mr. Simmons? How unfortunate, Mr. Simmons works here on a rotational basis.”

He goes somewhere else every month.

Today is precisely when he’s changing offices.

“Today, the person-in-charge is not Mr. Simmons, but Mr. Winston.” Jackie raised an eyebrow, suddenly realizing why Gilbert did not seem worried that he would complain about him at all.

Turns out, Mr. Simmons was going to manage somewhere else. After the change in personnel, Jackie would have no one to turn to.

Considering Gilbert had been there for so long,

if he ever does anything to trouble Jackie, Jackie’s complaints would only fall on deaf ears.

Thinking about that, Jackie let out a cold smile and said, “What do you want?

Gilbert smiled sinisterly, “It doesn’t matter what I want to do. More importantly, I want to tell you this. No matter what you want to do, you’d better just stay out of my way.”

Chapter 2395
“Don’t think you can do whatever you want just because you had someone backing you, understand?”

Jackie frowned.

He was really tempted to send a punch over at that moment.

He wanted to let that brat know that some things should not be said. However, he remembered the reason he was there, so he swallowed those words.

Jackie paused and said, “I haven’t even done anything, and you say I’m doing whatever I want?’

Gilbert raised an eyebrow. “Were you planning on getting some tasks? How unfortunate, all the tasks have been claimed. There won’t be any merit points for you. Just go back and wait for next month. There might be tasks for you then.”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, finally understanding why Gilbert was challenging him.

Gilbert was trying to tell him that there would be no trouble as long as Jackie did not claim any tasks.

Gilbert did not want Jackie to earn any merit points.

Jackie felt like it was such a joke.

Did Gilbert deal with all the other students like that as well? He stopped the others from earning merit points so he could earn them all by himself.

Then, he would use the points to earn the right to learn the Way of the Pill.

Was that not too absurd?

Jackie did not think too much about the matter.

Gilbert standing in front of him clearly meant Gilbert was not going to let him head over.

Thinking about that, he let out a small laugh, turned around right away and returned to his room.

That caught Gilbert by surprise as he had not expected Jackie to be so obedient. Jackie had left so abruptly, not even spending any time talking smack.

Gilbert raised his eyebrows, he wondered if Jackie had left to figure out a way to deal with Gilbert.

Would Jackie just turn around to go claim the tasks the moment Gilbert left?

Thinking about that, Gilbert could not help but let out a cold laugh. He would not give Jackie the chance. Gilbert had already said that he would not allow Jackie to claim any tasks, so he would absolutely not give Jackie any leeway.

With a wave, he called one of the servants over, “John, keep an eye on this brat for me. As long as he goes out to claim any tasks, stop him immediately. After that, find a chance to report it to me.”

After John heard that, he nodded his head obediently. “Don’t worry, I’ll definitely keep an eye on him all day. As long as he does anything, I’ll report it to you immediately.”

Gilbert nodded before he turned around to leave.

Jackie might have entered his room, but he had been observing the movements outside.

He saw everything that Gilbert did earlier.

It seemed like Gilbert really did think that Jackie went back because he was scare of Gilbert. In truth, Jackie's goal for claiming tasks were not for the sake of merit points.

After all, he did not need to look at Heavenly Pills' Way of the Pill at all. He only did so because he did not want to attract too much attention.

He was there completely for the recommendation to the tests.

If it had not been for that, he would not have been willing to waste his time there. Gilbert's actions were precisely what he wanted.

Jackie would not need to waste his time doing chores, and could spend all his time training!

Jackie closed the door properly, and immediately retrieved the soul-gathering crystal from Mustard Seed.

The soul-gathering crystal was the same as always.

There were many soul fragments scattered within the crystal. All those soul fragments were voluntary contributions from the strongest warriors of the Divine Void World.

After absorbing that great warrior's memories, Jackie was able to determine who these soul fragments belonged to.

Jackie found the soul fragment of someone who had been at the pinnacle of alchemy.

He muttered, "You're the one!"

Then, he reached out and absorbed the soul fragment.

The moment the soul fragment touched Jackie's body, it suddenly turned into dazzling light and fused with Jackie's body.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2396-2400

Chapter 2396
Jackie felt a bang in his head as if something had exploded. A surge of foreign memories started to fill Jackie's head.

After returning to his room, Gilbert noticed that Damien Leeds was waiting in front of his room. Gilbert frowned, handing the pot of tea in his hand to Damien.

Damien accepted the pot of tea respectfully.

"Why are you waiting here? Didn't I tell you before? We can talk about anything later, that guy won't be able to cause any trouble."

Damien immediately knew that Gilbert had settled the matter when he saw Gilbert's expression, and let out a sigh of relief.

"I don't know what Mr. Simmons is thinking. Taking in that brat at such an important moment. If it ruins our plan..." Hearing that, Gilbert immediately interrupted him, "Our plan won't be disrupted by anyone! Stop with the negative thoughts!"

Damien shuddered in fright. He had always been afraid of Gilbert.

With a light cough, he immediately changed the topic,"I wonder if he'll succeed this time."

The moment that person was mentioned, Gilbert's face stiffened.

However, Gilbert had always been able to control his composure very well.

He furrowed his eyebrows and looked over, "He should be able to succeed. After all, he's prepared for so long. If he still can't condense a fifty percent mixed pill aura, he'd probably have to kill himself."

Damien froze, suddenly thinking about something.

Gilbert had never had to deal with the senior brother, so he hurriedly said, "Condensing pill auras is all about talent. Normal people can't do it at all. However, I feel like it's not a problem for you."

"You've always been very talented in alchemy. Didn't those elders say that your talent is even higher than the senior brother? The only reason he's ahead of you is just because of age. He entered Heavenly Pills earlier. If not for that, you'd have already become a sixth-grade alchemist before him."

That flattery had been very well put.

Gilbert felt really good after hearing it, and the smile on his face brightened.

“As long as you give me enough time, even becoming a seventh-grade alchemist won’t be a problem, let alone a sixth- grade one!”

He was very assured by those words.

He did not have any talent when it came to martial skills. .

There were obstacles all the way, and he was only able to reach the innate level despite his age.

However, he had a talent for alchemy.

Regular folks were no challenge to him at all.

As long as he had enough time, he would definitely become a pillar for Heavenly Pills.

He would be one of the higher-ups in Heavenly Pills.

When that happened, everyone would have to regard him highly. Everyone who did not treat him well initially would be trampled under his feet.

Just thinking about the fact that he would definitely succeed, filled his whole body with energy.

Damien said, “I saw Jackie from afar. I feel like he’s not a simple person. What did you say to him? Will he ignore us and insist on getting tasks?”

Gilbert let out a cold smile as he said, ” Don’t worry, that guy is useless. I won’t let him ruin our plan.”

Chapter 2397
“He wants to claim tasks and get merit points? Dream on! As long as I’m around, he’ll never get any merit points!”

When Damien heard that, he let out a huge smile and said, “If you say that, then I won’t have to worry anymore! I was just worried that the sudden appearance of this guy would ruin our plans!”

Gilbert raised an eyebrow as he let out a cold laugh, “Didn’t I tell you? No one will ruin our plans. This brat’s appearance was a surprise, but this surprise won’t disrupt our plans at all.

“I’ve already gotten someone to keep an eye on him. He absolutely won’t escape from my sight! We’ll keep an eye on him for a month. After a month, we’ll get the chance to get rid of him. After that, we will rule this place.”

After his plan succeeded, everyone would have to treat him respectfully. Gilbert was absolutely elated.

As they were discussing and feeling happy about themselves, Jackie was in a difficult situation. He had just absorbed the large number of memories that were in the soul fragment.

Thankfully, Jackie was no longer the same as he used to be.

His soul was already much stronger.

Absorbing the soul fragment might cause him a lot of pain, but it did not threaten his life.

At that moment, Jackie was completely red.

He was sweating everywhere.

His sweat constantly flowed down from his forehead.

At that moment, his eyes were completely red, and his body was in incredibly pain.

Yet, his mood was strangely excited.

Many memories were attacking his soul. It caused Jackie to feel like mountains were stacking on top of his body. He needed to slowly dig through and destroy those mountains.

Most of the great warriors’ memories were about the Way of the Pill. That Way of the Pill was called the Divine Void Pill.

With the Divine Void name, it was absolutely no ordinary thing!

Integrating memories was incredibly painful, but it brought a lot of benefits.

No matter how talented a person was, understanding the Way of the Pill would still need a lot of effort to slowly digest and overcome.

Yet, after integrating the great warrior’s memories, Jackie did not need to attempt it at all. He already understood everything.

There were no longer any problems in front of him.

The only thing that caused Jackie problems was completely integrating his body with the memories.

He would need to constantly practice before he could completely merge the mind and body.

However, the practice should not use up to0 much time, nor should it consume too many resources.

Thinking about that, Jackie let out a cold laugh.

Heavenly Pills' Way of the Pill was called the Vermillion Flame.

The Vermillion Flame could not compare to the Divine Void Pill at all.

The difference between them was staggering. He recalled Gilbert frantically stopping him from claiming tasks, worried that he would be able to learn the Vermillion Flame.

Thinking about that, he could not help but let out a cold laugh.

He did not care about the Vermillion Flame at all, why would he bother learning it? It took two days and two nights before Jackie completely integrated the great warrior's memories.

After he opened his eyes, Jackie felt a wave of exhaustion Surging through his body.

It was a horrible feeling. He wanted nothing more than to collapse and sleep for three days. However, before he slept, he needed to take a bath to clean up all the filth.

As he stood up and tidied up his clothes, the door suddenly opened with a bang. The loud noise was so sudden that Jackie's face immediately turned cold as ice.

Chapter 2398
He did not know who it was, but they should not have opened his door so rudely anyway. If he had been absorbing the memories midway, the disturbance might have caused him to lose control!

"Is it you?! It must be you!" Gilbert pointed at Jackie, his eyes were bloodshot. Jackie looked at Gilbert strangely, not knowing what that guy was on about.

Gilbert let out a cold laugh, "Don't think I don't know what you're doing!"

Jackie felt like Gilbert had gone crazy.

He had never even left his room, so what could he do? That strange accusation, on top of Gilbert rudely barging in, caused Jackie's face to completely darken.

Soul Swords condensed in his hand.

Jackie had already decided to properly teach Gilbert a lesson, even if it went against the rules!

Gilbert seemed to be in an inescapable rage.

His whole body was shaking, “Say it! Are you feeling guilty? Were you the one who leaked the information?!”

Jackie was rendered speechless.

He said angrily, “Is something wrong with your brain? What are you talking about? What guilt? What information?”

Gilbert’s whole body was trembling. ” Don’t try to deny it! It has to be you!” Gilbert had already gone mad. He had lost all sense of reasoning.

The way he looked at Jackie, there was even a hint of bloodlust i n the madness.

Jackie looked at the guy speechlessly.

He still did not know what the guy was talking about. He took a deep breath, Gilbert’s accusations had yet to stop “Just you wait! I won’t let you off! You want to use Mr. Simmons to earn the right! That’s impossible! I’ll make sure disaster falls on you!” He shouted out,

looking like he wanted to tear Jackie apart.

The grey seals on Jackie’s hands were dancing wildly.

A miniature Soul Sword appeared in Jackie’s palm.

The coldness in Jackie’s eyes was practically at freezing points. “I don’t know what you’re going on about, but you’ll pay for what you’ve done.”

“Pay? Ha! Are you trying to fight me? The two of us are at the initial stage of the innate realm, surely you don’t think you can beat me?!” Gilbert said.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Gilbert had quite a lot of self-confidence.

He did not even try looking at his strength before determining that he was at the initial stage of the innate level.

Thinking about that, Jackie let out a cold smile. Before, he had deliberately left his injuries so he would appear to be at the initial stage.

However, after absorbing all of the Formational True Energy, he was already completely recovered.

He was just a sliver away from the spring- solidifying realm. In fact, he would be able to break through as long as he wanted to.

Gilbert seemed to have gone crazy in anger.

Gilbert retrieved his weapon from his storage.

It was a red curved sword.

Before Jackie attacked, Gilbert rushed at Jackie, unable to hold back his anger.

There were flames on Gilbert's sword, and he slashed right at Jackie's head.

Jackie's expression did not even change at all.

He raised his right hand, and grey energy slammed into Gilbert like a violent wind!

There was a bang, and Gilbert was sent flying.

He started to spin midair before he collided with a tree outside.

The sword in his hand was sent flying, falling onto the ground with a clank.

Gilbert had been completely defeated in one blow.

The wind that the Soul Sword formed into pierced Gilbert's soul, causing him to lose control of his thoughts.

Chapter 2399
"It hurts!" Gilbert cried out in agony,curling up his body in pain.

Jackie let out a cold laugh as he walked out the door.

At that moment, Gilbert was already curled up into a ball.

This was even after Jackie had held back.

If Jackie had even used forty percent of his power earlier, Gilbert would have been dead.

After all, Gilbert might have some talent in alchemy, but he probably would not even be able to beat Nash in a fight.

Gilbert cried out in pain. He stumbled as he tried to stand up.

When John heard the commotion, he hurriedly ran over.

John was shocked to see Gilbert rolling on the floor in pain.

After that, he hurried over to help Gilbert up.

John glanced at Jackie, who was standing upright.

Gilbert had arranged for Jackie to be in an incredibly secluded area back then.

It was actually just a rundown shed which Jackie had expected.

Thanks to that, only John had witnessed Gilbert being beaten up to such a state.

Jackie let out a snort, “You’re quite daring, or maybe you’re just blind. You tried to attack me before you even find out what my level is. You really don’t know your place”.

Jackie had definitely held back earlier.

He merely wanted Gilbert to feel some pain, and not really hurt him.

That’s because Jackie knew very well that he was living under someone else’s roof at that moment.

If he had been too ruthless, he would not have been able to remain there.

After the pain Jackie had inflicted on Gilbert started to fade, he slowly calmed down.

He leaned against John and barely managed to sit up.

Even though he had completely lost to Jackie earlier, Gilbert remained obstinate, ” Just you wait! I won’t let you off! I might not be as strong as you, but it’s not like there is no one at your level in Heavenly Pills! There are experts everywhere!

Jackie let out a cold laugh, “Is something wrong with your head? You rushed into my room like a madman, speaking a bunch of nonsense. Then you attacked me without regard for anything. Now, you’re threatening to find someone else to deal with me…”

“Don’t think everyone’s as dumb as you are. You might have some talent in alchemy, but you’re still a student in the end. Which of those experts would listen to you?!'”

After being called out for his lie, Gilbert was incredibly furious. He struggled and even wanted to pick a fight with Jackie.

At that moment, frantic footsteps could be heard.

Damien ran over and immediately noticed Gilbert struggling on the floor as he glared at Jackie.

Damien was taken aback, unclear of the situation.

However, he was not in that state for that long.

He knelt down and whispered into Gilbert's ear.

When Gilbert heard everything, he suddenly had a strange expression on his face. He let out a cough as he tried to compose himself, "You're speaking the truth?"

Damien nodded, "I'm certain. I've already asked someone to check it out, it really was him.."

After he said that, Damien shot a look at Jackie before turning back to Gilbert,continuing softly, "It really isn't him. We found the wrong person, but this guy really crossed the line attacking you!"

Gilbert had an even stranger expression then.

Possibly because of the sudden change, he suddenly started to have a coughing fit.

Damien reached out to help Gilbert up, but Gilbert pushed his hand aside.

At that moment, Gilbert was really stuck in a hard place.

After thinking about it for a long time, he finally stood up shakily from the ground.

It was as if he would fall down at any moment.

He let out a laugh, "Brat! I have something else to do today, so I'll let you off for now! Don't even think we're done with this just yet! I'll make you pay eventually."

Chapter 2400
Jackie looked at Gilbert speechlessly as Gilbert glared at him with hatred.

Even after everything that had happened, Jackie still did not understand what Gilbert was doing or saying Why did Gilbert come barging in shouting at him? Why was Gilbert so accusatory? At that moment, Jackie could only laugh at Gilbert's threats.

Gilbert took a deep breath before he turned around to look at Damien angrily.

"Don't bother with me here, go handle what's happening over there first!"Damien paled.

His awkwardness from being pushed away earlier had already dissipated quite a bit.

He turned and looked at Jackie before looking back at Gilbert.

Damien nodded, “I’ll get it done immediately, but… I’ve already checked on it before. It’s definitely right.”

Gilbert’s expression stiffened.

He still wanted to add a sentence or two, but he swallowed back his words.

He merely nodded coldly, “”I know, but we can’t just ignore the matter!”

As he said that, Gilbert did not even look at Damien.

Gilbert stared at Jackie the whole time, but Jackie was already quite used to that hateful look.

Practically everyone who tried to cause Jackie trouble looked at him with that expression.

It was as though they wanted to carve out a piece of his body.

Damien sighed helplessly before he left in a hurry.

John wisely helped the wobbling Gilbert up.

Gilbert’s words had all merely been impulsive ones.

After all, he had injured his soul.

Even though Jackie had already held back, the two of them were just far too far apart in strength.

Jackie was no ordinary late-stage innate level warrior either.

If Jackie had just used a bit more power, Gilbert would not even have the strength to speak.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, he had heard everything from Damien’s earlier conversation with Gilbert.

From those words, as well as the way Damien looked at him, Jackie could more or less guess what had happened.

However, he was still uncertain.

Thinking about it, Jackie decided against saying anything.

Gilbert could think whatever he wanted.

Jackie would not let anyone who caused him trouble off so easily.

He did not really do anything against Gilbert just yet.

It was not because he was afraid of Gilbert, but because he did not want to invite any trouble onto himself.

He knew very well why he was here.

As long as he achieved his goal and qualified, he would deal with Gilbert then.

Gilbert's hands were trembling.

His face was white as paper.

Blood was starting to drip out of the corner of his lips.

Jackie sighed helplessly.

Even at this state, Gilbert was not in a hurry to get treated.

Gilbert was still standing there with widened eyes.

There was already nothing else to say. Looking at him, Jackie did not know what to say.

Jackie took a deep breath before he said, "You're still not leaving? Do you still want to fight me?"

Gilbert laughed, "Just you wait! I'll have you begging for death. Even though what happened before had nothing to do with you, you still attacked me and injured me"... Before he could finish,

Jackie interrupted him, "Don't you think your words are incredibly funny? Do you not remember why I attacked you?

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2401 - 2402

Chapter 2401
“You barged into my room without making things clear. You tried to attack me, but you were unbelievably weak. Now, you can’t beat me, but you still dare to accuse me like this. I really don’t know how the skin on your face is so thick.”

The corner of John’s mouth twitched at Jackie’s straight forwardness.

He glanced at Gilbert beside him timidly. Gilbert was so furious his entire body was shaking.

He looked like he wanted nothing more than to rush over and bite Jackie.

if(()) {}

Jackie let out a cold laugh as he continued,”I don’t know why you’re still standing here. What do you want to say? Do you think you can beat me in a debate? Can You even beat me in a fight?”

Gilbert’s face rapidly changed colors.

He was so infuriated by Jackie that he felt like he was about to explode the next second.

In truth, Jackie’s words were completely right.

if(()) {}

He could not beat Jackie, and could not even win against Jackie verbally.

Staying there would do nothing other than making a joke out of himself. He took off himself.

After making a joke a few deep breaths before he got John to help him out.

After taking two steps, he did not turn his head around as he shouted, “I’ll become a sixth-grade alchemist in just a short time. When that time comes… I ‘ll make sure you know how stupid your actions were today.”

After he finished, he no longer spoke as he limped out with the support of John’s shoulder.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Gilbert’s words had meant nothing to Jackie.

A sixth-grade alchemist was nothing in Jackie's eyes.

For people like Gilbert, it might be the ceiling of their lives. Gilbert probably thought that sixth-grade alchemists were incredible people.

However, Jackie looked down on them.

Thinking about that, the look of mockery on his face intensified.

It was still not even the evening yet.

if(()) {}

Jackie tidied up the room again before he looked up at the sunlight that came through the window.

He quickly composed his erratic thoughts.

He had only one goal being here which was to become a sixth-grade alchemist and get the qualification to take the test.

He was not interested in those merit points at all.

After pouring himself a cup of tea, he gulped it down.

He placed the teacup back on the table before turning around to exit his room.

He continued moving forward while carefully observing his surroundings.

Heavenly Pills' backyard was huge.

There were not just students there, even servants and stewards were around.

There were practically all sorts of people.

The place Jackie stayed at was a little corner toward the west. Other than his room, there were only random warehouses.

His room had probably been a warehouse for random goods or firewood as well.

Gilbert had deliberately arranged for Jackie to stay there as a show of power.

It was a way to trouble Jackie as well.

The further east he went, the more elaborate the designs of the rooms were.

There were quite a few flowers along the stone road.

Only, he did not see a single servant along the way.

It took him quite a long time before he saw one carrying a bucket of water, walking toward the main hall.

Jackie immediately rushed over when he saw that person.

The servant had been focused on the water he was carrying, and jumped up in fright when he saw someone suddenly appear in front of him.

He Almost tossed away the bucket of water in his hands.

“You are?” The servant was a bit taken aback by the unknown face.

After all, Jackie was basically brand new there.

After becoming a student, he had not been anywhere other than his own room.

There were not many people in Heavenly Pills who knew him.

Chapter 2402
However, it was fine if he was not recognized.

All the servant needed to do was to recognize Jackie’s clothes to tell who Jackie was.

The servant scanned Jackie for a moment before saying, “You are.. the eleventh student?

Jackie was a little startled by the new title.

The eleventh student? After those words floated in Jackie’s head for a while, he suddenly understood.

Chandler had told Jackie before that he was the eleventh student that Heavenly Pills accepted.

Those servants that did not have any standing would naturally call him by that title.

Jackie nodded. After the servant had a clear sense of Jackie’s identity, he was less alarmed by the stranger in front of him.

He pursed his lips, having heard before that the new student did not have a good relationship with the second student, but Jackie was still a student after all.

They were merely regular servants.

If they offended Jackie because of their inappropriate words, they could be sent off at any time should Jackie complain about them.

With that in mind, the servant forced out a smile and uttered, “Do you have anything you need, eleventh student?”

Jackie nodded.

He was not in the mood to dally around with the servant, so he said very directly, “I’ve just arrived here, so there are some rules that I don’t really understand. I just have a few questions to ask you.””

Jackie had a very humble tone which pleasantly surprised the servant.

The servant immediately put the water bucket in his hands on the floor as he stood up upright, “Please ask away, I’ll tell you everything.”

Jackie nodded before composing himself and asked, “Where do the students practice refining pills here? Surely Heavenly Pills provides us somewhere to practice and improve?”

The servant paused for a long time before he answered, “Are you asking me where you can go to practice alchemy?”

Jackie nodded.

He did not have any intentions of getting the Way of the Pill.

All he wanted to do was hurry up and see if he could refine sixth-grade pills.

Alchemy was different from combat.

He needed a lot of ingredients, as well as a furnace to refine them.

Even though Jackie had a lot of materials on him, they were either too low in quality or too complicated.

There was no way to form a complete pill from them.

Since Heavenly pills had ten students, it would definitely provide a place for them to practice alchemy.

They would have prepared enough spiritual ingredients for him to practice with.

The servant pointed toward the east and explained, “Just continue walking ahead. You’ll see an independent palace. On the palace, you’ll see a plaque hanging there that says ‘Selena Cloud Room’. That’s where the students are meant to practice their alchemy.”

It was quite an elegant name.

When Jackie arrived at the Selena Cloud Palace, a flash of interest appeared in his eyes.

The Selena Cloud Room was about as big as the main hall in front.

There were some plants planted outside that would rustle whenever the wind blew.

Jackie took a deep breath as he stepped forward into the Selena Cloud Room.

The moment he entered, he saw a student that was dressed the exact same way as he was.

The student had a cloth in hand and was wiping one of the tables inside.

The Selena Cloud Room's layout was very simple.

There were multiple small rooms inside separated by walls.

That should be where they practiced their alchemy.

However, the room that was facing the main table seemed at least three times larger than the other rooms.

It was as if that room was very special.

Raphael Westwood was stunned as he looked at Jackie observing the various facilities.

He thought that Jackie would have walked up to greet him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2403 - 2404

Chapter 2403
Unexpectedly, Jackie's eyes were only interested in all the alchemy rooms.

Jackie did not seem to notice Raphael at all as if he was invisible to Jackie.

Raphael had a bit of a sour expression on his face as he tossed the cloth on the table.

He moved forward with a slight frown as he said, “You must be the eleventh student.”

if(()) {}

Raphael’s words pulled Jackie out of his thoughts.

Jackie let out a slight cough and nodded.

Raphael stared at Jackie with obvious unhappiness.

“I’m your senior, your fifth senior to be exact. My name is Raphael. Even though it’s the first time we’ve met, I have to remind you. There has to be some basic respect among students here. Even though you’re a fellow student, I’m still your senior.”

if(()) {}

Raphael had wanted to let Jackie know that he had been far too impolite.

Jackie should have at least greeted him before he entered and initiated a conversation.

Jackie did not care about any of that at all.

It was as if Raphael amounted to nothing in Jackie’s eyes.

It angered Raphael a bit, and Jackie naturally could understand the meaning behind those words.

He sighed somewhat helplessly. With Jackie’s status, someone like Raphael was indeed not really worth noticing.

However, he was living under someone’s roof and due to the circumstance, he had to lower his head.

He nodded very sincerely and greeted,” Hello Raphael, I was just very curious because it is my first time here.”

Raphael raised an eyebrow before nodding slightly, accepting Jackie’s apology.

Yet, it somehow felt like Jackie was not apologizing at all.

Raphael let out a slight cough as he frowned. “Did you come here to practice alchemy?”

if(()) {}

Jackie looks at Raphael, puzzled.

What else would the Selena Cloud Room be used for?

Was there something else here?

Looking at Jackie's expression, Raphael immediately knew what Jackie was and what he was thinking.

Raphael explained with a stern expression, "What's your level as an alchemist? If you're not a fifth-grade alchemist, then you'd better not come here. You should first look for a few ingredients yourself. Come here after you've made fifth-grade pills."

Jackie suddenly understood what Raphael meant after he heard that. It was not Daxia anymore.

In Hestia Continent, fourth-grade pills were nothing.

In Heavenly Pills' eyes, fourth -grade pills were no different from trash.

Pills that had any value were all at least fifth grade.

The pills that come from the Selena Cloud Room would at least need to be at the fifth grade.

Otherwise, it would be a waste of resources.

Jackie nodded after understanding what Raphael meant.

"I'm a fifth-grade alchemist. I wanted to try refining a sixth-grade pill here. Do you happen to know where I can find the ingredients I need for a sixth-grade pill?"

Jackie was incredibly straightforward.

Jackie was really eager to see if he could refine a sixth-grade pill at that moment. Even though he had already absorbed the Way of the Divine Void Pill into his mind, he had never tried it out. He needed to merge both body and mind.

"What did you say?" Raphael widened his eyes as if he had heard something unbelievable.

Chapter 2404
His lips twitched as he stared at Jackie. Jackie let out a helpless sigh, already expecting that something like that would happen.

Jackie was not in the mood to play around with Raphael at the moment. “Would you happen to know where I can get the materials for a sixth-grade pill? I want to try refining one,” Jackie repeated.

This time, Jackie was very clear with his words, as if each word was incredibly important. It was to make sure Raphael understands his request. Raphael had naturally understood, and the surprise in his eyes intensified.

His lips twitched for a long time before he said in exasperation, “Tell me, are you drunk?

Raphael was completely speechless. He did not know what that brat in front of him was talking about. A fifth-grade alchemist was trying to refine a sixth- grade pill before learning the Way of the pill?

The brat said those words so casually too. Raphael wondered if there was something wrong with Jackie’s brain.

Jackie sighed helplessly. He already knew that the only thing he would get from those words were questions about his sanity. Yet, Jackie no longer cared about all that.

After all, Gilbert would definitely cause him trouble. One or two more troublemakers would make no difference.

Jackie nodded before saying, “I’m not crazy. I really do want to refine a sixth-grade pill.”

Raphael let out a cold laugh.

He laughed so hard even his shoulders were shaking. ” You really are something else to say something like this on our first encounter. I really don’t know how you become a fifth -grade alchemist.”

“Don’t you know basic knowledge? You haven’t learned the Way of the Pill, so you won’t be able to condense pill energy.

Without the pill energy runes on the pills, you can’t refine sixth-grade pills!”

Jackie nodded at the basic knowledge.

It had already been ingrained in him with the senior’s memories.

Raphael saw that Jackie did not express any shock upon his words and merely nodded plainly. It served to render Raphael even more speechless.

He could not help but take a few steps forward, measuring Jackie as he did so. He looked at Jackie as if he was looking at a mad man.

Jackie merely stood there and allowed Raphael to examine him. Raphael looked out.

Almost everyone was busy dealing with customers or earning merit points at that moment.

Other than himself, only Jackie had come to the Selena Cloud room.

He had wanted to take the time to properly clean up the room during the two to four hours that no one would be here.

Yet, he somehow managed to stumble upon the miracle that was Jackie.

Not only did Jackie interrupt his cleaning, but Jackie had also even caused Raphael to want nothing more than to chase him out with a stick. He took a deep breath, suppressing his urge to mock Jackie.

“Since you already know, why are you so confident that you can refine a sixth-grade pill? I feel like you probably don’t even know how many pill aura runes there are.”

The benchmark of a sixth-grade pill was the pill aura that the pill aura runes formed as well as the refining of the pill itself.

The pills had to be fifty percent refined to be considered successful.

Without the fifty percent refinement, it would be a failed pill. Many people were stuck at that stage.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2405 - 2406

Chapter 2405
However, that guy called Jackie in front of him would probably not even know how many pill aura runes there were, or how to even draw them, let alone be able to achieve fifty percent refinement.

After all, Jackie had never had the chance to learn the Way of the Pill before Jackie glanced at Raphael.

“There are a total of one million pill aura runes. Each rune can be overlapped with other runes to achieve special effects.”

It was all common knowledge in Jackie’s mind.

if(()) {}

They were all things that he could pull out of his mind casually.

Yet, Raphael seemed to take his words as a joke and started to laugh out loudly.

That laughing fit was incredibly exaggerated as if he had heard an incredibly funny joke.

Jackie frowned, not saying anything Raphael pointed at Jackie.

if(()) {}

“Jackie, you’re such a funny guy. Surely you don’t think I’ll believe you if you just spout some somebullshit?”

“Even though I’ve never learned the Way of the Pill, I understand this basic knowledge very well. A million pill runes? You actually dared to say that?! Are you not afraid people will laugh at you?!”

Jackie frowned and did not say a word.

He looked at Raphael calmly as he continued laughing.

After a while, Raphael noticed Jackie looking at him calmly and felt a little awkward.

He immediately composed himself, coughing slightly as he said seriously, ” There are a total of twelve thousand pill runes in the Vermillion Fire Pill! Even that is quite a lot.”

“I’m sure you’ve heard of the Vermillion Fire Pill before.

Even among Middle Province’s various Ways of the Pill, it’s considered one of the better ones.

Even Vermillion Fire Pill only has twelve thousand pill runes, but you claim there are a million! You really are a true braggart!

Jackie frowned when he heard that, suddenly understanding.

The Way of the Pill from a first-grade world really was not just a little different from one from the third-grade one.

if(()) {}

In the Divine Void Pill of the Divine Void Realm, there were at least a million pill runes.

Yet, a Way of the Pill in the Hestia Continent was already considered one at the peak with just twelve thousand runes.

Thinking about that, Jackie let out a small laugh as he shook his head slightly.

If he wanted to refine a sixth-grade pill, he would need to perfectly execute the last step.

After the pill takes shape, pills that were the sixth-grade and above would produce pill aura.

Alchemists needed to use that pill aura to draw runes, condensing the pill aura into pill runes.

They would then need to arrange the runes. Within four hours, the pill aura runes would fuse with the pill itself.

Only with a fifty percent refinement would the pill be considered successful.

The inheritances in the Way of the Pills were the countless runes that could be condensed as well as the arrangements of those pills.

There were only twelve thousand of them in the Vermillion Fire Pill, but the Divine Void Pill already had over a million.

It was obvious that the Divine Void Pill was at a much higher level than the Vermillion Fire Pill.

However, Jackie would never explain all of that to Raphael.

Raphael could laugh all he wanted, the ignorant were allowed their happiness.

Raphael thought that Jackie was incredibly funny.

He was laughing until his stomach hurt.

The brat thought that his random lies would be able to fool Raphael.

Did Jackie think everyone else was as dumb as him?

However, Raphael did not continue laughing.

It was mainly because Jackie's expression was far too calm.

Jackie merely looked at him coolly as he laughed as if the one being laughed at was not Jackie.

Chapter 2406
It stopped Raphael from laughing more.

He coughed lightly and rubbed his nose.

"Whatever, I'll ignore everything you said today. You'd best take care of yourself better. If you have the time to be mucking about here, why don't you go claim some tasks to get more merit points? When you have two hundred merit points, you'll be able to start learning the Way of the Pill."Jackie sighed helplessly, feeling like he was done with all the nonsense that day.

After a long time, he said, "Raphael, did you not understand what I said earlier? Should I repeat myself?"

Those words caused Raphael's face to completely sink.

Raphael frowned as he stared at that obstinate guy with a hateful expression.

"How about you? Did you not understand what I said earlier? Or are you pretending to be dumb?"

After that, he had a glint in his eyes, as if he thought of something.

His expression became even more stern.

"Did you come here to steal some medicinal ingredients? You can't refine sixth-grade pills anyway. Did you think you could obtain free ingredients? You claim that you want to refine pills, but you want to take them out to sell them, don't you?"

The more Raphael thought, the more he felt his guess was right.

He looked at Jackie with an even more hateful expression.

Jackie helplessly shrugged.

If he was not completely clueless about the Selena Cloud Room's rules, he would not be wasting his time on Raphael.

"I have no intention of selling anything, you don't have to blindly speculate. If you know, tell me. If you don't know, then just say you don't," Jackie said with furrowed eyebrows.

Raphael replied unhappily, "Of course, I know. Fine, since you're being so stubborn. I'll tell you. Sixth-grade materials aren't something you can easily obtain.

"If you want to obtain sixth-grade materials, you first need to get a gold plate. One gold plate can be exchanged for the materials of three sixth-grade pills."

Jackie frowned before he continued, "How do I get those gold plates?"

Raphael raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie with disdain. "Getting a gold plate is very simple. There's only one way. Do you see the pill room behind me? The pill aura room has a limitless pill aura. As long as you manage to form two hundred pill runes using the pill auras after you enter, the room will give you one gold plate. You can use that gold plate in exchange for three portions of materials."

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he walked past Raphael and turned back to look at him.

The pill aura room was precisely the largest room Jackie had seen earlier.

The room was at least three times bigger than the other rooms.

It turns out that there was a dense pill aura in that room.

No wonder it was right in the middle. Raphael took a step forward and looked at Jackie with a cold gaze.

"You're quite daring. You're actually claiming you can refine sixth-grade pills just a few days after entering Heavenly Pills. Two years ago, only one of twenty students successfully became a sixth-grade alchemist.

"You seem very confident of yourself. You seem to think that you're better than everyone else. That you can suddenly turn into a sixth-grade alchemist in just a few days."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2407 - 2408

Chapter 2407
Jackie did not really feel anything after being mocked like that.

After all, Raphael did not know what he was capable of after all.

Raphael seemed to be getting addicted to mocking Jackie.

Jackie was about to ask if he could enter already, but Raphael did not give Jackie much of a chance to say anything.

if(()) {}
He continued mocking, “You probably never even seen a pill rune before.

Ever since I’ve entered Heavenly Pills, I’ve never seen anyone else obtaining a gold plate other than our eldest student.

“It looks like you think that you’ll be the second person to obtain the gold plate.”

If the situation had allowed it, Jackie would have slapped that guy twice on the face.

if(()) {}
The guy spoke so much as if he knew everything. Jackie turned around and looked at Raphael with a serious face.

“I definitely can get a gold plate, so I’ll just head inside right now. As long as I can condense two hundred pill runes, the pill aura room will automatically grant me a gold plate, is that right?”

Raphael was momentarily stunned again when he heard that.

He felt like he had underestimated how stubborn Jackie was.

Things were already in this situation, but the brat remained stubborn and obstinate.

Could he not tell that Raphael’s words were sarcasm? He actually dared claim that he would be able to get a gold plate!

The gold plate was not something that could be picked up just anywhere.

Did he really think he could get it so easily? Raphael had been in Heavenly Pills for quite some time already.

He had only seen the eldest student obtain a gold plate before.

It was not like the others had never tried, but they could not get any at all! Raphael was speechless for a few seconds before he burst out saying, “Do you know what you’re doing?”

Jackie nodded, saying calmly, “Of course, I know what I’m doing. I also know that refining a sixth-grade pill would at least need eight hundred pill runes. Being able to form two hundred pill runes means that one is already on its way to becoming a sixth-grade alchemist. As long as one doesn’t encounter any bottlenecks, later on, one should be able to easily become a sixth-grade alchemist.”

if(()) {}

Raphael let out a snort as he looked at Jackie in exasperation.

This time, Jackie was not lying.

The situation really was so.

Refining a sixth-grade pill required one to condense eight hundred pill aura runes.

Jackie could not be bothered to waste his time on Raphael anymore.

His time was valuable.

He did not want to get stuck in conversation with Raphael for too long. After shooting a glance at Raphael, he walked around the guy.

He arrived at the front of the pill aura room.

He reached out at the door as he turned his head slightly.

He said to Raphael, “Can I just enter like this? Are there any time restrictions?”

Raphael fixed a glare at Jackie’s hand that was on the handle. “Are you serious? You really are confident. Either that or something’s wrong with your head! Let me tell you, you can only be in the pill aura room for six hours at most. If you don ‘t come out after six hours, I’ll drag you out!”

Raphael had a hint of exasperation in his tone.

The brat did not seem to be willing to give up at all.

Raphael did not seem to be able to convince the guy otherwise while Jackie seemed to have a lot of confidence in himself.

Raphael would let Jackie see for himself how much the difference between Jackie and a sixth-grade alchemist was. Jackie nodded earnestly after those words, reaching out to push open the door.

The dense fragrance of pills assaulted Jackie's nostrils. Just as Jackie was about to step inside, Raphael's voice was heard again.

Chapter 2408
"Have you really gone crazy? You've never even learned the Way of the Pill before. How are you going to condense pill aura runes? Do you even know how they look?

Jackie ignored him as usual.

Jackie did not even turn his head around as he slammed the door behind him shut.

Everything around him suddenly turned dark. There was not a shred of light around him. Other than the scent of the pills, there was nothing else to show him where he was.

Facing the darkness, Jackie was not nervous at all.

There was no danger around him anyway, so he naturally would not need to worry about anything.

As he walked forward to where the smell of the pills was the densest, he said, "This should take four hours!"

Jackie gave himself four hours to acclimatize himself.

He needed to fuse his mind and body in those four hours.

His hands constantly moved as rays of golden light started to circulate on his fingertips.

The golden lights were as thin as hair. As fane constantly moved his fingers, their glow moved around in the air, forming a rune.

There was a bang, but the rune exploded in the air at the last stroke. Jackie frowned, he really had been too confident in himself.

The rune he had drawn was the most common and simple kind. It had felt quite simple drawing it, but at the last stroke, he did not manage to control the pill aura properly due to his mind and body not being synchronized.

Hence, they exploded.

Even though Jackie's memories already had every detail of the runes memorized carefully, and there were no bottlenecks to stop him, his body could not keep up with his mind.

What he needed to do was to slowly allow his body to form its own muscle memory. So, he suppressed the disappointment caused by his failure and started to draw again.

Jackie's hands were like comets in the night sky, illuminating the darkness with slivers of golden light.

A few more explosions followed after. Quite a few runes had exploded again because of Jackie's inadequacy, turning back into pill auras.

Jackie frowned.

The explosions were so constant that Jackie had lost count of how many pill aura runes he had exploded.

Even though it was frustrating, it did not truly affect him.

Jackie's hands constantly danced as he did all he could to synchronize his body with his memories.

Time ticked away.

He did not know how much time had passed when he suddenly heard frantic knocking.

The knocking on the door had broken him out of his stupor.

Six hours had passed, and Raphael was asking Jackie to get out.

Jackie did not expect that time would pass in the blink of an eye.

He looked at those runes he had formed that were floating around.

Those runes had a faint golden glow on them as they floated in the air.

There were at least a hundred runes in the air.

Even though Jackie had constantly failed, he had succeeded quite a lot as well.

It had only been his first try.

Being able to form a hundred pill runes was already quite the achievement.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2409 - 2410

Chapter 2409
After all, his body was still struggling to keep up with his memories.

He still needed constant practice to completely acclimatize himself.

He took a deep breath as he reached out and erased all the pill runes he formed.

Suddenly, Raphael's anxious voice could be heard from outside, "Jackie! Have you spent enough time inside? The time has already passed. Do you finally know what level you are at now?"

"Can you come out now? The most time anyone has spent inside the pill aura room is four hours. If you continue staying inside, you'll take up everyone else's time."

Jackie raised his eyebrow excitedly.

The rule was quite a pleasant surprise for him.

Everyone could spend four hours training in the pill aura room each day.

As long as he kept on practicing every day, he should be able to improve drastically in just a few days!

With that in mind, he laughed softly as he turned around and opened the door to the pill room.

He immediately saw Raphael, who was looking at him with a raised eyebrow and a meaningful stare.

What surprised Jackie was the fact that his old friend, Gilbert was behind Raphael.

Gilbert looked at Jackie as if he was a stupid madman.

Jackie frowned, wondering why Gilbert was so much like a fly.

He saw Gilbert wherever he went.

In truth, Gilbert was no threat to Jackie at all, but his mouth disgusted Jackie.

Jackie did not want to waste his time on Gilbert, so he exited the pill aura room without saying anything, preparing to return to his room to train.

Yet, Gilbert shouted at him before he even took three steps, “Jackie, you really surprise me. You actually dare to step into the pill room, and spend such a long time in there too!”

“What were you doing inside? Are you trying to breathe in the pill aura to improve your training?”

After he said that, Raphael could not stop himself from laughing out loud. .

The Laughter was filled with mockery.

Jackie could not be bothered by Gilbert’s words.

He merely paused for a moment before continuing to walk forward.

Jackie completely ignored Gilbert which suddenly ignited Gilbert’s anger.

He raised his voice viciously, “I’m your senior, but you didn’t even greet me when you saw me. You’re so impossibly rude. Are you not afraid that I’ll bring you to Mr. Winston and have you kicked out?”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as a look of annoyance slowly appeared on his face.

He really did not like that guy. Each time, he felt the urge to attack and beat that guy up.

Jackie suddenly turned around and said, “Gilbert, are you really that free? Do you Not have anything else to do? Why do you keep finding trouble with me?”

“I ignore you because I don’t want any trouble, so can you just shut your mouth? Every time, whatever comes out of your mouth is a pain to listen to. Your actions really put you at the same level as those flies that eat trash at the side of the road.”

Raphael had just wanted to enjoy the show initially, but he widened his eyes when he heard Jackie’s words.

He looked at Jackie with an expression that seemed to be questioning Jackie if he had gone crazy.

Raphael coughed nervously. “Jackie, did you inhale too much pill aura earlier? You must have damaged your head to say all of that.

Don’t you know Gilbert is the second oldest student?

Jackie laughed before he slowly said, “Who cares about seniority? Aren’t we all students here? No one is higher than anyone else.”

Chapter 2410
“Let me tell you one last time, quit annoying me if there’s nothing you need. Otherwise, that beating I gave you earlier will just be an appetizer.”

Jackie’s words had basically lit the ignition. It caused Gilbert to explode.

He suddenly walked forward and shouted angrily, “Jackie! Don’t be so pleased with yourself. Even though I can’t beat you in a fight, I can still deal with you!”

Jackie pursed his lips and said in a nonchalant manner, “Go ahead if you can but let me warn you. This isn’t the first time I’ve heard something like that from my enemies. Yet, they were the ones with the tragic ending.”

After saying that, Jackie decided to stop wasting time.

He turned around and left quickly, leaving the two of them behind.

Gilbert was completely infuriated by Jackie.

His whole body was shaking.

His eyes stared at Jackie’s back, wanting nothing more than to rush over and bite Jackie.

Raphael saw that the situation was not a good one and hurriedly reached out to stop Gilbert.

“Gilbert, calm down. This guy is just a bit dumb. If you keep fighting with him, you’ll just drag yourself into trouble.”

After all, in just a few more hours, you will have access to the Way of the Pill just like the eldest student does.

After that, you ll have your own opportunities to deal with that brat who doesn’t know his place!

Even though Gilbert was still shaking from anger, Raphael’s words had successfully consoled him.

Raphael was right.

The most important thing for Gilbert was to become a sixth-grade alchemist.

Once Gilbert was a sixth-grade alchemist,he would definitely make Jackie regret ever being born.

He took a deep breath.

His face was still pale.

After a good while, he turned around to look at Raphael and asked, “Did he really come here to condense pill runes?”

Those words were something even Gilbert found unbelievable.

Raphael could not hold himself back from laughing again.

He covered his mouth as he said, “He really did come here to condense pill runes. He even told me there were a total of a million pill runes initially. He didn’t seem happy when I laughed at him and insisted on going inside.”

He doesn’t even know what pill runes look like, but he stubbornly sat inside for so long.”

After hearing those words, Gilbert started to calm down. “He really is an idiot. He doesn’t even know what the Way of the Pill looks like. He dared to enter the pill room to condense pill runes.”

He thinks everyone will look at him more highly if he did that. He’s really so dumb!

Raphael started to laugh again.

He had thoroughly categorized Jackie as a complete idiot at that point, or Jackie would not have been able to do that.

After Jackie returned to his room,he immediately had Nash come out of Mustard Seed.

He then discussed his next move with Nash again.

After all, Jackie had never been born lucky.

He always had to rely on his own hard work to get anything

The sum he needed to make was not small.

Even if he managed to become a high-rank alchemist, it would take a lot of time before he could earn ninety million spirit stones.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2411 - 2412

Chapter 2411
That was even the lowest possible standard.

No one knew what the final price of the ninth-grade spirit crystals would be, whether or not it would be worth ninety million.

Jackie had to be as prepared as possible.

Nash knew that everything Jackie was doing was in preparation for getting into Wild Gorge Pass.

He frowned and said, “It’s not just hard to enter that place, it’s dangerous as well. Do we really need to get the key?”

Jackie nodded without any hesitation. “We have to. The Scarlet Case is something even all those elders were fighting over. Even though I’m considered pretty decent on Hestia Continent, this isn’t my final destination. It’s just a relatively low starting point. We need to constantly look upward, and not settle for less. We can’t give up on any opportunity to keep climbing upward. The Scarlet Case and what’s inside the Scarlet Case. I want it all. There’s even that secret that has been bothering me.”

Since Jackie had said that much, Nash would not stop him.

All he could do was sigh quietly as he walked over and pat Jackie on the shoulder.

“I know you have a heroic heart, but I feel like the path forward will be very hard. You’ll definitely meet many obstacles in the future. You have to take care of yourself.'”

Jackie nodded, changing the topic to his future plans, he said, “I’ve already thought about it. I have to quickly level myself up and leave Heavenly Pills. There are too many flies here, it’s so annoying.”

The next afternoon, Jackie went to the Selena Cloud Room like the day before.

Raphael was the one standing guard that day as well. When Jackie entered, Raphael had been leaning against a table as he whistled a little tune.

When Jackie entered, he turned around with an irritated look.

When he saw that it was Jackie, the irritation deepened.

“What?! Why is it you again? What did you come here for today? Don’t tell me you still want to enter the pill aura room?”Jackie nodded.

That was obviously the reason he was there. He needed to synchronize his body and mind. Seeing Jackie, Raphael was rendered completely speechless.

He jumped up and put his hands on the table and said, “You’re really amazing.You went in there and did nothing for four hours, and you’re trying to do the same again today.Do you think that doing this will prove that you’re condensing pill runes?”

Jackie said helplessly, “You can think whatever you want.”

After that, he did not hesitate to enter the pill aura room. After all, everyone was either busy or resting at that time. There was only one other student in Heavenly Pills who had already learned the Way of the Pill, which was that eldest student that he had never seen before.

The others had never learned the Way of the Pill before, so the pill aura room was usually empty. Therefore, Jackie never needed to queue.

Raphael looked at Jackie with a conflicted look and said, “Are you really as crazy as I think you are? Even if you waste a few days there, no one will think that you’re condensing pill runes.

‘You’ve never even looked at the Way of the Pill before. You don’t even know what the pill runes look like. How could you condense any pill runes? Do you think everyone else is stupid?” Raphael really did not know what to say anymore.

He had seen crazy people before, and he had met idiots.

However, it was the first time he had met someone with Jackie’s particular combination.

He felt like Jackie’s actions had already exceeded the level of being dumb.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything in response.

Raphael could think whatever he wanted to.

After all, Jackie was the only one who understood the situation.

No one else would be able to understand, so he might as well not bother explaining.

Chapter 2412
Jackie did not answer him, and instead calmly pushed open the door to the pill aura room.

Raphael could not remain calm anymore after looking at his actions.

He could not help but rush forward to Jackie.

He reached out, pulled Jackie back, and said, “Jackie, I heard that you haven’t earned a single merit point since you came into Heavenly Pills. Is that correct?”

Jackie took a deep breath.

He really wanted to slap Raphael away at that moment, but if he did so, it would really cause a scene.

Instead, he held in his frustration and anger as he nodded earnestly.

Of course, he did not care about any of those merit points.

To Jackie, those points meant absolutely nothing.

The Vermillion Fire Pill was a priceless treasure to all these people here, but Jackie already had the Divine Void Pill.

The Vermillion Fire Pill was something incredibly useless to Jackie.

It was something Jackie would not want even if they handed it to him.

“No one is using the pill aura room right now anyway. I won’t be affecting anyone by going in. Just ignore it, alright? After all, I have the right to use it as well.” Jackie said.

Raphael looked at Jackie, his lips twitching. Jackie was looking more and more like a crazy person. He took a deep breath, “You really are insane!”

Jackie ignored Raphael as he pulled away Raphael’s hand that was on him.

He calmly walked into the room and closed the door shut behind him.

Raphael continued twitching as he looked at the shut door. After a long time, he said, “I give up. I’ve completely given up. I Really want to see what you’re going to pull off!”

The next few days, Jackie practically arrived at the same time at noon every day.

Raphael had been speechless initially, but he slowly became ignorant after that.

Raphael no longer had a change of expression when he saw Jackie in the afternoon.

He was already used to that crazy guy spending four hours every day staring at nothing inside.

He did not know if Jackie really was trying to absorb the pill aura or just staring into space. Did he really think that the pill aura room would help him in his training?

One day, after Jackie entered the Selena Cloud room, he greeted Raphael.

He then headed for the pill aura room as usual. He did not waste any time.

Jackie was stopped by Raphael before he could enter the pill aura room. “Where are you going in such a hurry? No one enters this place other than you and the eldest student anyway. Come drink some tea with me, I have something to ask you.”

Jackie frowned, not turning his head around.

He did not feel like wasting any time on Raphael, nor did he feel like chatting.

In Raphael’s eyes, Jackie might be in Heavenly Pills for his whole life.

Yet, Jackie was incredibly clear that Heavenly Pills was somewhere he was stopping by temporarily.

Jackie was already prepared.

The pill runes he condensed no longer produced any explosions.

Even the hardest pill runes were formed by Jackie effortlessly.

He was only one step away, and as long as he made one sixth-grade pill, he would be able to leave Heavenly Pills to do what he wanted to.

Jackie calmly said, “I’m very busy lately,Let’s talk another time.” Hearing Jackie’s words, Raphael was furious.

He stood up with his tea in hand and replied, “Busy? What are you busy with? Are you busy staring into space in the pill aura room?”

“I’ve really given up on you. You waste so much time in the pill room every day. Those who don’t know might actually think that you’re forming pill runes in the room. I’ve never seen anyone who’s able to pretend as well as you.”

Jackie took a deep breath as he walked into the pill aura room.

Seeing Jackie’s reaction, Raphael panicked a little. “I actually have something to ask you, that’s why I wanted to have some tea with you.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2413 - 2414

Chapter 2413
Jackie did not turn his head around, and merely replied, “You can just ask right now.”

Looking at Jackie’s attitude, Raphael was abit unhappy. However, he knew that this guy was someone who did not even bother with Gilbert, let alone himself.

So, he held back the anger in his heart, and asked, “Have you heard about what happened with Gilbert? It’s been a huge commotion for the past few days. They all say this has something to do with you…”

Before Raphael could finish, he was interrupted by Jackie, “I don’t know anything about Gilbert. Ever since I entered Heavenly Pills, I haven’t done anything.

“Other than when Gilbert tried to cause some trouble with me a few days ago, I’ve never done anything. No matter who says it has something to do with me, don’t believe them. I really haven’t done anything,”

After saying that, Jackie closed the door immediately. With the tea still in his hand, Raphael could no longer hold back his anger.

“That brat…” He was about to curse but did not dare to.

After all, Jackie was not someone to be played around with.

Jackie did not even respect Gilbert.

If Raphael said anything that Jackie did not like, Raphael might actually get beaten up on the spot.

Jackie really did not care how Raphael was feeling At that moment, he had put all his heart into condensing pill runes.

The past few days of practice were already enough to slowly synchronize his mind and body.

After three hours, Raphael stood in front of the door with widened eyes. He seemed to be trying to see or hear something.

With a creak, the pill aura room’s door was opened from inside.

Raphael looked at the time as he raised an eyebrow. “Have you finally gotten sick of it today? You weren’t even in there for three hours. I thought you still have another hour to go.”

Jackie ignored him as he walked in front of Raphael,'”Go get it.”

Raphael was stunned as he turned his head around reluctantly. He looked at Jackie with a strange expression, “Get what?”

Jackie calmly said, “Materials for a sixth- grade pill. You said I could get three portions.”

Those words completely dumbfounded Raphael. His lips twitched as his eyes completely widened.

There was a big question mark on his head. “What are you talking about? What three portions? You’re asking me for materials?”

After thinking for a while, Raphael then said as he laughed, “Are you telling me that you managed to condense two hundred pill runes in the pill aura room? The pill aura room gave you a gold plate, so you’re asking me to give you three portions of materials for a sixth-grade pill?”Jackie nodded.

Raphael laughed even louder after seeing Jackie’s nod.

He laughed so hard that he had to put a hand against the door for support.

Chapter 2414
He looked like he had heard a joke.

Jackie looked at him very calmly as if the laughter would go away quickly.

After a moment, Raphael finally stammered out as he laughed, “Have you really gone crazy? Do you really think that I’d actually think you managed to condense two hundred pill runes just by coming here on time for the past few days? Now you want me to help you get the materials for sixth-grade pills?

“Aren’t you too naive? You’re so naive it’s almost tragic. I don’t know what to say to you anymore!

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he produced a gold plate from the Mustard Seed, waving it in front of Raphael.

Raphael looked like his brain had completely stopped working the moment he saw the gold plate.

Even his smile froze on his face.

It took him a long time before he finally reacted.

His eyes bulged widely, almost popping out from their sockets, “What is this?” He shouted loudly.

Jackie pursed his lips in exasperation.

If it were not for the fact that he had to wait for Raphael to help him get the materials to make sixth-grade pills, he would not have bothered with that guy.

Jackie said, “What’s this? Can’t you tell? It’s what the pill aura room gave me after I condensed two hundred pill runes!”

In truth, Jackie had already successfully condensed two hundred pill runes and obtained the gold plate the second day he went there.

However, he still felt like he was not completely in sync with his memories at that moment, so he continued to try for a few more days.

Jackie then finally felt like he was more or less ready, so he planned On trying to refine a sixth-grade pill.

Raphael paled as his heart seemed to stop at that moment.

His fingers shuddered as he reached out to touch the gold plate.

He then pinched his right hand with his left.

The pain told him that he was not hallucinating, that he was not dreaming, and everything was real.

“You managed to condense two hundred pill aura runes?”

His mouth was so wide it could fit a whole duck egg inside.

Jackie nodded with an impatient look on his face.

“Weren’t you the one who told me the rules? As long as I managed to form two hundred pill runes, the pill aura room would give me this reward.”

Raphael took in a breath of cold air.

Then muscles on his body were all frozen stiff.

He did not dare to believe everything was real at all.

It was far too absurd that Jackie managed to do it! Absolutely absurd! If he had not seen it for himself, he would not believe that it was all real.

“You’ve Never even learned the Way of the Pill. Aren’t you someone who doesn’t even know what a pill rune looks like? How did you form two hundred pill runes?”

He could not understand at all.

The questions in Raphael’s head threatened to swallow him alive.

Jackie helplessly rolled his eyes and replied, “Who said I’ve never learned the Way of the Pill? Who told you I don’t know what a pill rune looks like? All of that was in your own mind.”

Raphael’s lips stiffened.

Jackie was right.

Jackie had not said anything from the start, everything had been assumed by him.

Yet, he never felt like he had said anything Wrong, was it all, not the truth?

Raphael’s eyes were wide as he continued, “But…”

Jackie reached a hand out to stop Raphael. “There are no buts. This is the truth. I’ve learned the Way of the Pill and also condensed two hundred pill runes.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2415 - 2416

Chapter 2415
“Now, I’ve already gotten the reward. You can take the gold plate and exchange it for three portions of sixth-grade pill materials.”

Raphael’s hands trembled. He still had a mountain of questions he wanted to ask,but still accepted the gold plate.

It took him a long time before he said, “Wait here, I’ll go get it for you.”

After he said that, he turned around with the gold plate in hand. He was about to go exchangeit, but the moment he took a step forward, Jackie reached a hand out to stop himn.

He heard Jackie’s cold voice, “I hope you won’t tell anyone about me. No matter how you put it, I can kill you with a blow.

“I don’t want you to do anything else. All you need to do is keep your mouth shut. You should understand what I mean.”

Raphael’s whole body stiffened. He had wanted to leak out the information, but Jackie’s words had completely killed off that possibility.

He understood very well that Jackie was not someone he could offend easily. If he really did leak that news out, Jackie would probably not let him off.

Raphael hurriedly nodded as he assured Jackie, “Don’t worry! I absolutely won’t let anyone know about it. Even if someone spread the information, it won’t be from me!”

Jackie coldly laughed as he said in a dark tone, “I don’t really care who spreads the information. As long as it spreads at all, it means that you’ve told someone, and I’ll come looking for you!”

Raphael’s face darkened.

He turned around and wanted to defend himself, but when he saw the cold expression on Jackie, he swallowed his words back. Even though he was incredibly unwilling, he really did not dare to offend Jackie anymore.

It did not matter where Jackie learned the Way of the Pill, but his talent was obvious.

Raphael could not offend him! After a moment, Raphael was back in the Selena Cloud Room with the materials in hand.

The three portions of materials were placed into Jackie's hands "Everything has been done. Don't worry, this news will absolutely not be leaked out, I.."

However, a sudden commotion happened before he could finish.

It sounded like people quarreling. The bickering seemed very intense as if they were about to come to blows.

Raphael and Jackie exchanged a look, both of them able to see the confusion in each other's eyes.

The two of them headed out of the Selena Cloud Room at the same time.

The further they headed toward the left, the louder the sound was.

From far away, Jackie could see Gilbert bearing his claws.

At that moment, he seemed incredibly furious, and was shouting at the top of his lungs, "It's not fair if you don't give me the right?! Why are you fighting against me? In what way are you my equal?!"

A man with clear beautiful eyes looked at him with a cold look, "What do you mean by unfair? We call you the second student not because you're ranked second in terms of talent."

"It's just that you entered Heavenly Pills before we did. In terms of talent and ability, I don't think I'm weaker than you at all! Why wouldn't I compete against you?!"

Gilbert clenched his hands tightly and refuted, "It's precisely because you don't have the talent and ability to compete against me! You're not my equal in any way!"

The man coldly snorted as he said nonchalantly, "You're just being stubborn now. We've never really competed before, how would you know you're stronger than me?

Chapter 2416
"Furthermore, you know what sort of place the Middle Provine Alchemist Alliance is. Even if you have a bit of talent, your character isn't up to par. If you go, you'll probably embarrass Heavenly Pills!"

Those words effectively triggered Gilbert.

Earlier, Gilbert had just been a rooster baring its claws, but at those words, he had turned into a tiger, about to strike.

He reached out and wanted to grab the other person's neck, but the other students quickly sprung into action,rushing forward to pull the two of them apart.

The scene was complete chaos, and no one could tell who was who.

Looking at the scene, Jackie's lips twitched speechlessly. He turned around to look at Raphael, who had a frown on his face.

"Are they really going to start fighting.?"

Jackie raised a brow at Raphael after he heard that. It seemed like those two had long harbored vengeance against one another.

At that moment, the two of them were already red in the eyes while the students around them were frantically pulling them apart.

Looking at the hatred in Gilbert's eyes, Jackie suddenly thought of what happened a few days ago.

Gilbert had rushed into his room and accused him of numerous things.

Gilbert had said that he leaked Gilbert's secrets and ruined his plans, and he even said that he would never let Jackie off the hook.

At that moment, Jackie might have been angered by Gilbert's actions, but he was still incredibly confused.

What was that guy talking about? What plans were ruined?

At that moment, it seemed like the plans definitely had something to do with that man called Andrew White.

The atmosphere was incredibly heated between them, and the two of them seemed to want to rip the other apart.

"I already knew that you never liked me," sneered Andrew.

"Even though no one said anything, I knew it all too well. You're just a petty person who only understands jealousy.

"As long as you didn't like anyone, you'd think of any way possible to target that person. It's been so long, and you've targeted so many students. Don't think you can do whatever you want just because you have a bit of talent?"

"I might not have been here for as long as you have, but I'm no weaker than you in talent! Everyone's just being respectful to you because you're a senior around here, but yoú genuinely thought you were better than you are. You kept on showing off in front of us every day!"

Gilbert's face darkened at those words, and his whole body trembled in wrath.

Jackie, on the other hand, raised an eyebrow, feeling like Gilbert would faint at any moment from being provoked by Andrew.

Gilbert took a deep breath as he pointed at Andrew. "You disrespectful, vile thing! Do you think you're helping everyone with those words?"

"Don't think that everyone is dumb. You' re merely saying those words to benefit yourself."

The two of them quarreled away, much to Jackie's entertainment. Even though the two of them were intensely fighting, Jackie had to say that both of them had their own reasonings.

Andrew's words sounded like he was trying to fight for justice for everyone, but Andrew had said so because he wanted to kick Andrew out and win some honor for himself.

Thinking of that, he looked over at Raphael, who was watching the show with him.

Raphael's expression was much more serious than Jackie's.

It was as if something massive had happened.

He frowned and seemed like he wanted to say something.

Jackie lowered his voice and whispered to Raphael, "What are they fighting over? Are they fighting over the right to study at the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2417

Chapter 2417
Raphael visibly jolted upon hearing Jackie's abrupt whisper into his ear. After he took a deep breath, he turned around and said seriously, "That's true. I heard that it hasn't been very peaceful internally. Something seems to have happened. As for what, I have no clue."

However, the major incident seems to have caused a lack of alchemists. Hence, the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance is trying to get a new batch of students as soon as possible to bolster their numbers. Hearing that explanation, Jackie froze,

suddenly very interested in the matter.

Everything he had been doing was all to earn a recommendation to be able to take the test at the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, after all.

Heavenly Pills might have been an amazing place for regular students, but it was far too small for someone like Jackie.

With that in mind, Jackie immediately decided.

Even his expression changed.

Raphael, who had been paying attention to Jackie the whole time, was stunned when he noticed Jackie's sudden change in expression.

He seemed to think of something and, after refraining himself for a while, eventually blurted, "It looks like you're interested as well."

Jackie did not hide his intention and nodded, but he did not go into detail about it.

Raphael turned around, looking at the two who were still deep in their fight.

He kept his mouth completely shut after thinking about it.

He was not that skilled, anyway.

He would just be a complete spectator. It was better if he did not take part in anything.

Andrew and Gilbert's fight was getting more intense.

The two of them were attacking each other's weaknesses.

They knew a thing or two about one another, despite not getting along, even when they were fellow students at Heavenly Pills.

The two of them kept on bringing out the other party's weaknesses, and they practically threw out every insult in the book.

Initially, everyone had been trying to pull them apart, but eventually, everyone decided to just watch the whole commotion transpire.

"Everyone, quiet!" a shout put their quarrel to a stop.

Everyone turned to look at the source of the noise.

It was someone with a deep, gray suit on, and he even had a crown on his head.

His anger-filled gaze swept through the crowd, and his entire get-up made it clear that he was not a common person.

His sharp eyes glanced at Andrew and Gilbert.

“Aren’t you embarrassed? Even if you voice out each of your weaknesses, do you think it’ll win you the rights? Since when did Heavenly Pills operate like this?! I’ve already told all of you before, what he wants is skill!”

Everyone stiffened at the man’s beratement.

Jackie did not know that person, but it was apparent from everyone’s expressions that that person should be the Heavenly Pills branch’s leader.

When the person finally stood still, everyone bowed at him respectfully.did

Jackie hurriedly followed suit.

“Vice-Treasurer!”

It seemed that this person was the vice-treasurer of Heavenly Pills.

Heavenly Pills was a shop in the end, and the vice-treasurer must be an important position.

Jackie studied the man. The man really did have the air of authority, yet he looked very impressive.

Even though he was not that strong, there was a certain flair of influence that came from him.

Andrew and Gilbert who, moments ago, were fighting, suddenly quieted down like mice before the man.

They became mute in an instant and suppressed the anger that rose from their argument.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2418 - 2419

Chapter 2418
The vice-treasurer let out a cold laugh. “How embarrassing. You had such an ugly fight in front of all your fellow students. Do you think this looks good on you? Can’t you just let your skills do the talking? What is the point of all these schemes?!”

Those words seemed to have a clear target. After the treasurer finished speaking, he shot a sharp look at Gilbert.

Gilbert could feel that burning gaze of his and his throat tightened.

Jackie felt like laughing when he saw Gilbert’s state. Before, Gilbert seemed utterly dauntless, and he acted like he was the strongest person in Heavenly Pills.

However, when someone who was actually important appeared, he shrank into nothing.

Gilbert truly was not worth mentioning.

Jackie had beaten Gilbert up before and was already kind enough to show mercy. Jackie should have just shown Gilbert who he could not afford to offend back then.

Gilbert must have felt a pair of eyes sharply staring at him for too long that he looked up, meeting Jackie’s condescending stare in the process.

At that moment, Gilbert felt like he had been slapped a few times. His face suddenly reddened as he looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

Jackie, however, raised an eyebrow, unbothered. His relationship with Gilbert was impossible to fix, anyway. If they had the chance, they would definitely kill one another, so there was no need to maintain any sense of peace.

The treasurer said, “The Middle Kingdom Alchemist Alliance is the holy land of all alchemists, despite the fact that the one in Rosefinch City is only an off-branch.”

“Nonetheless, we can’t rush things. Being able to become a student of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance is an honor.!”

When everyone heard that, looks of admiration appeared in their eyes.

However, Jackie felt like something was strange. Doubt loomed over him.

The treasurer's words were hard to understand. The Middle Provin Alchemist Alliance truly was where all alchemists wanted to go, yet what they were doing was raising their own disciples to be sent there.

That was like spending money on someone else's baby. It was not worth it at all, yet why did the way the treasurer speak seem to imply that honor was the main thing behind everything?

Jackie became even more confused at this point. However, he could not voice that question out at that moment, so he swallowed it back.

The treasurer continued, "I know what you're thinking about; don't think you've kept your thoughts that well. All your thoughts are written on your faces, and I can practically see that."

"I don't even have to put too much thought in it to see things clearly. Each of you wants to take the chance to fly, but that depends on your own skill."

The Middle Province Alchemist Alliance's branch is one of the better branches around. It's not somewhere you can easily go to.

At that moment, the vice-treasurer paused as he sharply swept his gaze across everyone present, and that caught everyone's expression.

Jackie looked very calm. That might have been what caused the vice-treasurer to look at Jackie longer than the others.

Of course, Jackie felt the difference as well, but he maintained his ignorant look.

The vice-treasurer took a deep breath and continued, "Since a selection has to be made, the most excellent one will naturally be chosen. Since you're bickering away like this, why don't I give you all a fair chance to compete?"

Chapter 2419
"All of you here can take part. The first person to condense three hundred pill runes will be sent to the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance."

All the students were stupefied at what the vice- treasurer had said, eyeing the man with dubious expressions. A short student took a deep breath before summoning up the most courage he had ever done in his life. "Vice-treasurer, we don't even know what the Way of the Pill looks like. How can we condense three hundred pill runes? Of the eleven students, only the eldest has seen the Way of the Vermillion Fire"

However, he was interrupted before he could finish.

"You truly are brainless. Do you think everything you see is real?"

Those words stunned the short student. He stared forward with a look of confusion, looking at the vice-treasurer before he looked at the other students.

Jackie sighed helplessly, immediately understanding what the vice-treasurer meant. He suddenly remembered how he met Gilbert the first time he entered the pill aura room.

Gilbert's lips curled up into a prideful smirk. Gilbert did not say anything, but the look on his face had given everyone their answer.

The disciple was stumped for a long time before he said shakily, "Have Gilbert and Andrew already read the Way of the Pill?"

The vice-treasurer nodded. He had already known that long ago. The two of them had done quite a lot because of that matter in secret, while he merely turned a blind eye to everything.

He had been forced to reveal everything at that moment, or he would have kept on turning a blind eye. The short student said, "But…isn't the Way of the Vermillion Fire Pill exchanged with merit points?"

Andrew let out a sigh as he looked at that student pitifully. "You poor thing. Someone has lied to you." Did someone tell you that the best thing to do when taking tasks was to pick the ones that were worth fewer points? The lower merit points meant that the difficulty was lower. Truth be told, he didn't say that for your benefit.

"He said all of that so he could claim all the high merit point tasks for himself. I already got two hundred merit points long ago, but I never announced it."

"Nonetheless, I never relied on petty schemes to get my points. I don't know about the guy next to me, though." Once those words were spoken, Gilbert was once again on the complete defensive.

"What do you mean by that? Say it to my face! What schemes?!"

"He's only been in Heavenly Pills for a short time. Are you asking someone not that good at fighting, who hasn't been learning alchemy for that long, to claim the harder tasks? Aren't you just harming him?"

Andrew slowly turned his head when he heard that and icily retorted, "Harm him? Don't you feel guilty saying that? The others don't know this, but you should know that there are some easy tasks with high merit points. There aren't many of them, and the stewards would usually assign those tasks to the new students.

"If the students rejected it, then the task would be left without anyone to do it. After that, you'd just take it away and complete it yourself. Tell me, am I right? Am I, Gilbert?"

Those words caused Gilbert to choke and slowly turn purple. His hands shook, wanting to fight back with all his might.

At that moment, a look of realization crossed the ninth student.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2420 - 2421

Chapter 2420
The student suddenly turned his head and looked at Gilbert stiffly.

“Gilbert, is Andrew telling the truth? Those words you said earlier had never been for my sake! They were all so you’d get the good tasks to yourself!”

Gilbert’s face darkened at the accusations. He hurriedly turned away, trying to save the situation, but Andrew seized the initiative. “That’s why I said that your talents might be decent enough to turn into a student at the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, but you’d still be representing Heavenly Pills.”

“You have such a scheming, shameless mind. If you pull anything in the Middle Province Alchemists Alliance, won’t you embarrass Heavenly Pills entirely?!”

At those last words, Andrew shot his gaze at the vice-treasurer. The vice treasurer was taken aback, and abruptly looked over at Gilbert.

Gilbert was scared stiff. He thought for a moment before he shook his head vehemently. “Vice-treasurer, listen to me. You can’t believe this guy and his words. I You can’t believe you’ve never done anything so selfish!”

“Even though there are some tasks that are easy but yield high rewards meant for new students, the difficulty is relative.

“If they fumbled in their tasks, it’d be a loss for Heavenly Pills as well!”

Gilbert became louder as he spoke, and even his confidence started to peak the more he talked. He felt as though everything he did was for the sake of Heavenly Pills. After all, most of the good tasks meant dealing with clients and helping Heavenly Pills refine pills.

They might be small matters, but handling them badly would lead to disastrous results. Gilbert forced out some tears as he spoke, as if he had been greatly insulted and slandered.

The ninth student’s whole body trembled. He no longer believed in Gilbert and wanted justice for himself. He was meant to be able to get a lot of merit points, but it had been stolen away by a shameless man. The ninth student became more irate the more he thought about it, feeling like he had been schemed against.

If the vice-treasurer had not been there, he might have rushed at Gilbert to fight him.

The situation was looking like it was getting too chaotic to control, so the vice-treasurer shouted loudly, “Everyone, shut up! I didn’t say all of that to have you fighting all over again! I’m just telling you obtaining the recommendation will need your own skills. Any schemes will be useless!”

After the shout, the vice-treasurer immediately raised his hand and pointed at the Selena Cloud Room. “Everyone, come with me to the Selena Cloud Room right now. Let your results speak for themselves!”

The vice-treasurer’s words immediately silenced the chaotic area. Even though Gilbert was still at odds with Andrew, they did not continue fighting.

Jackie merely followed behind them. He slowly walked toward the Selena Cloud Room, knowing the place like the back of his palm after being there so many times.

After everyone entered, the vice-treasurer did not stop at all. He reached out and opened the door to the pill aura room. It was completely pitch black inside. They looked on as the vice-treasurer raised his hands, shooting out waves of power. The pitch black pill aura room suddenly lit up, and light illuminated every corner of the room.

Chapter 2421
Jackie’s eyes widened. What surprised him was the fact that there was nothing in the

pill aura room at all; it was just a completely empty room.

Before, the darkness had always covered everything, but this time, the darkness

dispersed and left nothing behind.

Thankfully, the space was large enough.Even after the vice-treasurer asked all of them inside, it did not feel crowded at all.

All of them stood in the pill aura room, and the dense smell of the pill aura assaulted their noses, encompassing them all.

Jackie raised an eyebrow curiously. He wondered why the place was covered in darkness if it was so empty. It felt like they were hiding something.

At the start, Jackie never felt anything about it because he did not understand enough to notice anything strange. After looking at it, Jackie started to have doubts. Alas, he was unable to investigate anything even if he wanted to. All he could do was stand quietly by the side, making sure to not suppress all of his questions.

He would solve them one by one eventually.

The vice-treasurer turned toward everyone. “The same conditions apply. Whoever manages to condense three hundred pill runes will gain the right to be a disciple in the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance.”

Everyone got a little excited when they heard the vice-treasurer’s words. They all started to look at Gilbert and Andrew. They had already heard from the vice-treasurer that Gilbert and Andrew had already learned the Way of the Pill, and a long time ago at that.

Condensing a few hundred pill aura runes should be doable for them. The biggest hope for the students around was to learn the Way of the Vermillion Fire Pill and become a sixth-grade alchemist.

Upon that achievement, they would soar high up in the skies and be looked up upon by everyone.

However, they had never seen anyone condensing any pill runes, so they did not even know what pill runes looked like.

Even Raphael clenched his fists emotionally, taking a deep breath as he looked at the two.

The vice-treasurer raised an eyebrow as he pointed toward the east. “Whoever wants to condense pill runes can stand there. The rest of us will stand at the west to not interrupt you.”

The moment he said that, Gilbert immediately walked forward toward where the vice-treasurer pointed to. Each step he took looked like he was about to take the final step onto the peak of the mountain, attempting to look impressive.

Jackie pursed his lips speechlessly. The more Gilbert acted like that, the more Gilbert looked like he was just blowing out hot air. It was as if Gilbert thought that everyone would look down on him if he did not act the part.

Hilarious, those kinds of people were. They insisted on using such empty methods to make themselves look better, but it was completely useless.

Looking at Gilbert walking up front toward the east, Andrew smirked, unable to water down the disdain in his eyes. To Andrew, Gilbert looked like a clown walking toward the stage.

Gilbert stopped, and Andrew walked to the east as well, standing about a meter away from him. After the two of them stopped, everyone held their breath, except for Jackie.

The competition would determine who the strongest was outside of thé eldest disciple. In the Hestia Continent, there was competition everywhere. Even the smallest circles had people fighting to stand on top.

Every fight would cause immense excitement. Even though the others were doing their best to hide the excitement in their hearts, it was still obvious from their shining eyes that they looked forward to the fight.



No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2422-2423

Chapter 2422
Had the vice-treasurer not been there, the other students would have burst into yells and cheers in support of the one they were rooting for.

Jackie speechlessly looked to the side. The vice-treasure took a deep breath before he

said in a low voice, “Start!”

With that cue, footsteps were suddenly heard next to him, and an unknown face had started walking toward the east.

Each step he took had been very steady, but he was not like Gilbert from earlier, who walked with a sense of emptiness. He did not seem to care about the baffled looks he received.

Gilbert’s mouth hung wide open. “What are you doing here?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and calmly answered, “What about you? What are you

doing here?”

He shot the words right back at Gilbert, angering Gilbert in the process. “I’m here to show this guy who’s stronger and to obtain the right to enter the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance as a student!

“snapped Gilbert. Gilbert’s words were filled with a clear arrogance as if he was just born naturally better than everyone else.

Jackie nodded as he said very calmly, “I’m doing the same.”

Everyone was stunned by Jackie’s words, and his response even rendered the vice- treasurer frozen on the spot. Everyone looked at Jackie as if he was crazy. There were so many people present, but most of them had only seen Jackie for the first time.

After all, he never actually appeared in front of everyone else as the eleventh student.He had spent most of his time in his room or the Selena Cloud Room, and he had rarely interacted with anyone else.

Jackie just suddenly came out and suddenly stood next to Gilbert, claiming he would compete as well. He said he wanted the right to head to the Middle Province Alchemist Union, which completely puzzled everyone.

Everyone assumed Jackie had gone bonkers, that he probably did not even know what the Way of the Pill was. He was probably thinking that he could condense pill runes just because others could.

Gilbert almost laughed from how angry he was. “Are you crazy? Do you even know what we’re doing?”

Jackie actually could not be bothered with Gilbert, but if he did not respond, the vice- treasurer might just kick him out and call him crazy.

That was something Jackie was not willing to let happen, so he was forced to be patient. “What does whether or not I’m crazy have to do with you? I came here to compete, not to waste time with you. Didn’t you hear the vice-treasurer’s words earlier?”

“Let’s prove whether or not we’re right through our results. I came here to do just that. I won’t affect you condensing pill runes by standing here, anyway.”

Jackie’s words were quite reasonable, causing the vice-treasurer to not have any reason to question him. After all, Jackie was a student as well, even though the vice-treasurer seriously suspected that the kid did not even know what pill runes looked like.

However, after Jackie’s explanation, he would be incredibly unfair if he did not give Jackie a chance.

Moreover, Jackie being there would not affect anything. It would just look like one more person was attempting to condense the pill runes.

Gilbert’s lips twitched. He was starting to hate Jackie to the core.

Every time Jackie spoke, Gilbert felt like he could say nothing in response. This was just like last time, with Jackie practically stuffing a sock in his mouth.

Gilbert’s hands started to tremble. If the vice-treasurer had not been looking at him, he would have rushed over and tried to choke Jackie.

Even though he knew he was no match for Jackie, he was far too angry. Despite his anger, however, Jackie did not even spare him a second glance.

Chapter 2423
Jackie remained unbothered by Gilbert’s actions as he said, “You’ve wasted so much time with pointless words, and there’s no point getting yourself worked up over something that won’t affect you anyway. Isn’t that right, Gilbert?”

Andrew burst into cackles at Jackie’s words. He might think that Jackie was a nutcase, but the enemy of his enemy was still his friend. Since Jackie was at odds with Gilbert, then he would side with Jackie.

Moreover, Andrevw did not think Jackie had a chance to win. That would be all too bizarre if Jackie won.

After a short silence, the students that were standing behind the vice-treasurer suddenly started to discuss among themselves.

Damien knew who Jackie was. “This guy’s name is Jackie. There’s got to be something wrong with his brain, I know it. He’s only been a student for a short time, but he’s actually trying to compete with Gilbert and Andrew. Where did he get that courage from?”

“I think he’s crazy, too. I don’t even think he knows what pill runes look like. Maybe he needs Andrew and Gilbert to show him? After that person said that, an uproar of laughter was suddenly heard all around. Some of them were even clutching their stomachs as they laughed at Jackie as if they had seen a complete idiot.”

The calmest person present was Raphael. Raphael let out a sigh of exasperation as

he looked at the gold plate in his hand. He then focused his attention on the other students that were giggling and sneering. He helplessly held the gold plate in his palm, not saying anything.

Despite their constant laughter, Jackie was not bothered by it at all. Jackie remained standing upright as he said, “Aren’t we starting yet?’

Gilbert felt like Jackie’s words were basically a challenge to the rest of them. Gilbert wanted to use his skills to prove that Jackie was just a complete idiot.

Hearing those words, he averted his gaze as his hands constantly moved. A red glow was on his fingertips.

The pill aura around him was absorbed wave by wave as he slowly condensed pill runes one at a time. Staring at runes that were forming in Gilbert’s hands, Andrew Was not going to allow himself to fall behind.

He adopted the same stance as he slowly started to form runes as well.

Jackie glanced at the two of them as he sighed in exasperation.

He had not wanted everything to advance so quickly, but he had to win this no matter what. Thinking about that, he got serious as he fixed his gaze on his fingers. He separated himself from his surroundings.

He started to wave his hands as well, but it was a golden light that suddenly appeared in his hands instead. He rapidly absorbed the surrounding pill aura, and faint golden runes started to condense in the air one by one.

Jackie's progress was incredibly natural to him, since he had already condensed them in the pill aura room numerous times. On the other hand, the others paled as if they had seen a ghost.

The vice-treasurer was especially shocked when he saw Jackie's incredibly fluent motions. After Jackie condensed a pill rune, his jaw dropped in shock, refusing to believe it was all real.

Jackie's rate of condensation was far too quick, so much so that Gilbert ánd Andrew could not compare at all. For every ten pill runes Jackie formed, Gilbert and Andrew could only form one.

Furthermore, from the glow and aura of the pill runes, Jackie's pill runes were far better in quality than the other two.

Damien's face stiffened as he pointed at Jackie. "What...?"

He was stunned for a long time, not able to say anything. If he had not pinched himself, he would have thought he was dreaming, that none of this was real!

The vice-treasurer was rendered just as speechless by the shock. Everyone had been submerged in a strange silence.

Not one student spoke as everyone quietly watched on.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2424

Chapter 2424
There was no need to compete anymore. Gilbert and Andrew were no match for Jackie as well.

The most essential thing to become a sixth-grade alchemist was the final refinement of the pill and pill runes.

Only a 50-percent and above refinement would be successful. The refinement depended on the quality of one's pill runes.

The quality of Gilbert and Andrew's pill runes could not compare to Jackie's at all.

The pill runes that Jackie condensed were not just glowing with energy, but each sliver of pill aura was distributed very evenly. There was no need to even look at it in detail. Just with their eyes, it was easy to tell that Jackie's pill runes were of very high quality.

If he used them in refinement, it would absolutely reach 50 percent or above refinement. Even though the vice-treasurer was the only one there who had ever learned the Way of the Pill, it was still something visible to the naked eye.

Everyone was speechless at that moment.

The vice-treasurer stared at the scene with widened eyes. His lips constantly twitched, not daring to believe that what he was seeing was real.

Jackie's hands constantly moved, and he controlled every sliver of pill aura perfectly. Those movements were not something any regular student could do.

Even the eldest student among them would not be able to compare to Jackie. If

the vice-treasurer did not knów of Jackie, he would have thought that a true sixth-grade alchemist was standing in front of him.

Only sixth-grade alchemists were able to control pill aura with such familiarity and condense pill runes with such ease.

"Is he really a student?" said the vice treasurer after being silent for a long time Raphael could no longer stand by the side silently. He nodded. "He is. He's the youngest among us, the eleventh student."

After he said that, Raphael took out the gold plate that Jackie had obtained. He showed everyone the gold plate in his palm.

"This is the gold plate that Jackie had gotten."

There was no one around that did not know the rules of the pill aura room. As long as anyone could condense 200 pill runes in the room, they would get a gold plate as a reward. The gold plate could be used in exchange for three portions of materials for sixth-grade pills.

The vice-treasurer did not know what to say at that point. His lips twitched. "No wonder you barely had a reaction earlier. You already knew everything.."

After that, the vice-treasurer frowned as he looked at Jackie, saying with some suspicion, "If he's new, he hasn't learned the Way of the Vermillion Fire Pill yet. What sort of Way of the Pill did he learn? After that, the vice-treasurer turned around to face that short student from earlier. "

"Go and look into who Jackie is. I want every single detail of what happened since he stepped into Heavenly Pills. want every single detail of what happened since he stepped into Heavenly Pills.Leave no detail out in your findings!"

The vice-treasurer's tone was incredibly serious. The ninth student nodded

earnestly after hearing that. Even though the ninth student was a bit naive, he was

no idiot. He heard how serious the vice-treasurer was.

He would no doubt properly perform his task and leave a good impression with the vice-treasurer. It might gain him bigger benefits in the future.

The three of them who were condensing the pill runes did not even notice the ninth student leaving. They were lost in their own world.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2425 - 2426

Chapter 2425
The only thing in their eyes was the ever- changing runes.

Jackie, Gilbert, and Andrew saw nothing else and cared for nothing.

Jackie let out a small sigh, not looking up to see the reactions of everyone else.

However, Jackie did not need to even look. He could easily imagine the shock on everyone's faces as he showcased his talent.

Thinking about that, Jackie could not help but mumble in his heart, 'I wonder if this is considered slow...

To keep a lower profile, Jackie deliberately slowed down the speed at which he was forming the pills. If he had kept his regular pace, he would already have formed 800 runes.

Advertisement

However, he knew very well that it would only invite greater suspicions from the vice-treasurer if he did that.

He might even be kept behind as a lab rat to be experimented on.

He was not willing to remain in Heavenly Pills.

He only had one goal, which was to enter the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance and climb the ranks there.

Advertisement

With the status of an alchemist, he would be able to get more spirit crystals to buy the ninth- grade spirit crystals.

After a moment, Jackie finally put his hands down.

300 runes that glowed in a faint gold color floated before Jackie.

There was no need for anyone else's as everyone took the scene in.

Jackie had succeeded in an incredibly clean and beautiful manner.

At that moment, Jackie looked up at everyone in front of him thoughtfully.

After a short moment of silence, they no longer looked at Jackie with the same shocked look as before.

However, some of them still looked at Jackie as if he was a monster.

The vice-treasurer did not say anything.

Advertisement

If it were not for his slowly widening eyes, Jackie would have thought the vice-treasurer was able to keep his composure, that the vice-treasurer was able to calm himself despite the excellence Jackie had shown.

"Vice-treasurer, what do you think about this result? Do I have the right to become a student of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance? Jackie said calmly.

His question was a pointless one.

If Jackie did not have the right to be a student of the Middle Province Alchemist alliance after that showing, then no one did.

Looking at Jackie's abnormally calm expression from the start, the vice-treasurer narrowed his eyes slightly.

He said in a slightly hoarse voice, "You've learned the Way of the Pill before?"

It was a question that did not need answering.

If Jackie had not learned the Way of the pill before, he would never have been able to form those pill runes.

Jackie nodded slightly as an answer.

Seeing the nod, the vice-treasurer immediately asked, "What Way of the Pill did you learn? Since you've learned the Way of the Pill, why did you enter Heavenly Pills?

“Don’t tell me you came in because you love and admire this place. That’s a very foolish reason, I won’t believe it..”

The vice-treasurer stared right at Jackie as he spoke.

It looked like he wanted to seee into Jackie’s inner thoughts through Jackie’s face.

Jackie raised an eyebrow.

The moment he decided to show off his skills, Jackie already had a plan.

“Heavenly Pils is the largest pill store in Rosefinch City. I came here to start a new life, so it’s only natural that I need to pick the best place. My friend happened to know Mr. Simmons, so I managed to become a student here.”

Chapter 2426
Jackie’s explanation, however, did not wholly satisfy the vice-treasurer.

After all, Jackie’s response had not been what the vice-treasurer wanted to know. The vice- treasurer frowned and opened his mouth, wanting to question Jackie even further.

Jackie gave him no such opportunity and, instead, answered the most pressing questions.

“I learned the Way of the Pill from my master. Everything I know was passed to me by my master.”

As for why I came here despite having a master, well, it’s very simple.

My master garnered jealousy wherever he went because he knew the Way of the Pill.

He was killed a few months ago.

I came here to look for the person and seek revenge for my master.'”

Jackie’s eyes darkened with pain and hatred as he spoke.

It was as if someone truly had killed his whole family.

Jackie had met various kinds of people in recent times.

He was actually incredibly impressed with those who were incredibly good at acting.

Ever since he had been sent to Middle Province, Jackie had been working hard on his acting skills.

After all, he felt like he would need it eventually.

After all, there were many hidden talents in Middle Province, and he could not casually reveal his true identity to everyone, either.

Only great acting skills would help him hide his status.

The vice-treasurer did not answer immediately after those words.

Instead, he looked at Jackie with a searching look in his eyes.

Jackie did not meet the vice-treasurer's gaze and instead lowered his head, simmering in his anger.

The vice-treasurer looked at him like that for a good while before averting his gaze, After that, the vice-treasurer seemed to have made a decision.

He gave a small nod. "You're quite a good sprout. I know you're in a rush to become a sixth-grade alchemist right now.

You're probably looking to climb up step by step until you have enough power to take revenge for your master.

"Middle Province Alchemist Alliance is indeed a good place, but it has a fatal flaw. Good places naturally attract more masters.

"If you go there, your intelligence might not genuinely show through. Why don't you stay at Heavenly Pills instead? I'll let the head treasurer know about you. You 'll be given a lot of resources to cultivate your talents."

The vice-treasurer had been very earnest when he said that, with no inkling of deceit in his words.

Jackie, on the other hand, frowned, not saying anything immediately.

Jackie had no doubts of the vice-treasurer's intentions.

Jackie was a prodigy, definitely far better than the other students there. The vice- treasurer felt like he was worthy of being brought up, so the vice-treasurer would naturally want him to stay.

If he stayed, it would be a tremendous boom for Heavenly Pills.

However, Jackie did not want to remain.

The vice-treasurer might be right; Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was definitely somewhere masters gathered.

With so many masters within, any ordinary prodigy would not be in such a great position.

They might not be given too many resources and might have to rely on themselves, yet those were for regular masters. Jackie was not one of them.

Jackie's biggest advantage was his complete self-awareness.

After absorbing the great warrior's memories, he was no longer the same as he was before.

To Jackie, alchemy was far easier than it was even to all the masters present.

He just needed some time.

As long as Jackie had enough time, he would be able to shine brightly even in the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2427 - 2428

Chapter 2427
Jackie had the confidence, so it was natural that he did not want to remain with Heavenly Pills. “I know you’re sincere in your words, but I’ve already set a goal for myself long ago. I won’t sway in my vision so easily.

“I have to go to the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. There might be a lot of masters that’ll try to suppress me, but I believe that the added pressure will only give me more motivation and spur me forward”

Jackie’s determined words had taken the vice-treasurer aback, baffling the man. He did not want to see Jackie leave. The ability and talent that Jackie had shown earlier made it evident to him that Jackie was a prodigy that must not be released.

If Jackie stayed with Heavenly Pills, Jackie would no doubt bring them tremendous benefits.

Then, his own stock would rise greatly, and he might even become an elder in the clan.

Jackie immediately understood after he glanced at the vice-treasurer that the man would not give up easily. After taking a deep breath, Jackie continued, “Heavenly Pills has helped me a lot, and I surely won’t forget what they’ve done for me. If I make a name for myself in the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, I’ll definitely come to Heavenly Pills’ aid should they encounter any trouble. Please, allow me to fulfill my goal!”

Advertisement

Jackie hurriedly bowed at the vice-treasurer before he added, “”I’ll always remember your recommendation.”

When the vice-treasurer heard that, he could not help but frown. He swallowed the words that had already been at the tip of his tongue, It was obvious that Jackie was already determined. If he remained obstinate, he might completely screw things up. If Jackie hated him, then it would be a great loss.

The vice-treasurer mulled over it for a long time before he nodded helplessly. All he could do was pray that Jackie’s words had not been lies.

“Since you’re already so determined, I won’t stop you. I hope you’ll remember your words today.'”

Advertisement

Jackie nodded earnestly, showing that he would not forget his words. Jackie did say those words to escape Heavenly Pills, but he was always a man of his word.

If Heavenly Pills truly did encounter any problems in the future, he would help where he could.

The vice-treasurer let out a sigh, his face full of regret.

If Jackie had chosen to stay in Heavenly Pills, there were much more benefits to he gained. However, Jackie did not think Heavenly Pills was enough. Jackie’s heart was already set on the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, so he had no choice.

The surroundings were once again plunged into silence. All the students exchanged looks among themselves. In all their eyes were envy and jealousy. Various emotions mixed together, and they all looked at Jackie with complicated expressions.

They were no fools, of course. They could tell that the vice-treasurer had been very eager to have Jackie stay. As long as Jackie stayed, it would bring tremendous benefits to Heavenly Pills in the future.

It was frustrating to compare themselves to Jackie.

Raphael could not help but clench his fists.

The admiration and jealousy in his face threatened to seep out. He wanted so badly to prove himself to the vice- treasurer, all for the sake of obtaining more resources in the future.

Advertisement

However, the things he would risk his life to achieve were met by Jackie’s disdain. Jackie wanted nothing more than to climb even higher.

Just as everyone wallowed in their bitterness, Gilbert’s voice was suddenly heard.

“I’ve done it! I’ve succeeded! Look, vice- treasurer! Three hundred pill runes! I’ve done it!

Chapter 2428
Gilbert practically shrieked when he proclaimed his success, and it was obvious how excited he was, so much so that he was almost tongue-tied, too.

The vice-treasurer, however, frowned, his expression rather stiff.

Gilbert looked at the vice-treasurer with an uncanny expression, wondering why the vice-treasurer gave him such a peculiar stare. It was as if his results were not even Worth the vice treasurer’s gaze.

The whole situation weirded Gilbert out.

His performance had been incredibly exceptional, so why was he receiving the strange look? He had just learned the Way of the Pill not too long ago and achieved quite the feat. Someone like him would only appear once every five or six years in Heavenly Pills!

Why, then, was the vice-treasurer not happy at all looking at him? Gilbert’s lips twitched as he immediately shot a look at his good friend, Damien.

Gilbert then noticed that Damien was looking at him just as oddly. He could even see a hint of regret and pity in Damien’s eyes.

Gilbert’s expression abruptly soured. He anxiously looked at everyone around him as his hands shook. “Hey… Why isn’t anyone saying anything? I passed the vice-treasurer’s benchmark.”

After saying that, he suddenly turned around to look at Andrew.

Andrew was still immersed in condensing his runes.

From his pace, Andrew probably did not need that much more time to complete the vice treasurer’s task.

Alas, Andrew could not compare to Gilbert After all, Gilbert was faster to complete the challenge.

The vice-treasurer coughed slightly as he helplessly muttered, “You did complete the task I asked you to, but…”

The vice-treasurer then paused, unsure of how to explain the situation. He glanced at Jackie before he noticed that the pill runes Jackie had condensed earlier had been dispersed by Jackie with a wave of his hand.

The area was empty.

This aggravated the vice-treasurer even more. He pursed his lips and suddenly found himself in a difficult spot. Just as the vice-treasurer was mulling over how he would explain it to Gilbert, Andrew finally completed his last stroke.

Andrew let out a long sigh as he looked around excitedly. When he saw Gilbert standing in front of him, Andrew's heart jumped a little

He turned to look at where Gilbert had been before; it was a sea of red in his spot. 300 pill runes were laid out tidily. Looking at the Scene, the look of excitement on Andrew's face vanished instantly.

He lost! He still lost!

Nonetheless…he knew that he merely lost because he was younger than Gilbert. He had not lost to Gilbert in talent. He would be no match for Andrew had Andrew been the same age as him.

However, the vice-treasurer had stated everything clearly. The prize for the competition had been a nomination, and that had fallen into Gilbert's hands.

Thinking of that, Andrew could not suppress his indignance.

He rushed forward and sneered, "Alright, you won, but know that I'm not happy about this. If we entered Heavenly Pills at the same time, you wouldn't beat me at all!"

Gilbert's mind, mean while, was racing When he heard those words, he turned around angrily. He clenched his teeth as he looked at Andrew as if he was about to pounce at any moment.

The vice-treasurer immediately interjected when the situation began to worsen as he said, "What are you two even fighting for?! I here by announce…the nomination belongs to Jackie!

No one around them reacted oddly exceptt for Gilbert and Andrew. Everyone looked at the two of them with pitiful expressions.

Gilbert and Andrew were stunned when they heard the vice treasurer's words, wondering if their ears had tricked them.

The nomination was Jackie 's Why was it his? Was this not a battle between the two of them? Had Jackie not been a completed It?

Those questions floated about their heads. The two of them could not voice any questions for a moment as they looked at the vice-treasurer with a stunned expression.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2429

Chapter 2429
The vice-treasurer's lips twitched.

There were things he did not want to bother to say, but he was forced to.

The vice-treasurer pointed at where Jackie had been before.

'Jackie had already completed the condensing of three hundred pill runes a while ago, and the quality of the runes he condensed was far better than what the two of you formed.

The runes he formed will surely merge with the pill and have a refinement of over fifty percent."

Only after he said that did Gilbert and Andrew snapped out of their stupor. Jackie had already completed the task a while ago, and the quality of his pill runes was higher than theirs.

Advertisement

After hearing that explanation, Andrew and Gilbert lost their composure.

"Vice-treasurer, are you taking me for a fool? scoffed Gilbert. "Can this brat really condense pill runes? How long has he been in Heavenly Pills ?

"He's never even seen the Vermillion Fire Pill, so how could he have condensed pill runes?! Did he trick you somehow?

The vice-treasurer raised an eyebrow at this and said, "I Know it's difficult for you both to accept what I said, but the truth is the truth. Everyone here bore witness.

Advertisement

"Jackie had indeed condensed three hundred pill runes in a very short time, The two of you have lost. You can't compare to Jackie for now,"

Those words were incredibly agitating to hear. Gilbert froze on the spot, his face looking like he had swallowed several flies.

He could not even shut his mouth.

Damien could understand how Gilbert felt, so he consoled Gilbert, “That brat had a good master. He would’ve never been able to accomplish this had it not been for that master!

‘So you’re telling me everything the vice- treasurer said was true?!” snapped Gilbert.

Damien’s expression changed as he had no idea what to reply with. In the end, Gilbert was still his friend, and if Damien did not tell Gilbert the truth, Gilbert would only make himself look bigger of a fool.

Damien nodded.”Don’t get angry. This brat isn’t anyone ordinary. We just lost to luck”

Damien’s words did not seem like they meant much, but on a second thought, there seemed to be a deeper meaning behind it.

Jackie became even more curious at this. What had their secret plan been? Did it involve anything else?

Advertisement

Andrew shook his head with a crazed expression. “He… He won! Why? Why can he do it but we can’t?!”

Andrew became more furious as he thought about it, his sharp gaze focused on Jackie. Jackie, on the other hand, could not be bothered with what these lunatics would do.

After all, they were no match for Jackie, even if they worked together. It did not affect him at all.

“I refuse to believe it! I refuse to believe you can do it. I want to see you do it again!” demanded Gilbert thunderously.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2430

Chapter 2430
Gilbert had already lost his bearings at that point.

Only then did he realize why everyone looked at him so strangely.

The stares he received, and the students' expression, had been of sympathy.

Gilbert had formed 300 pill runes, and obviously so.

He remembered how excited he had been after he completed the vice-treasurer's task.

All that excitement was only met with disappointment like a bucket of cold water thrown over him.

Advertisement

Gilbert trembled slightly. "I refuse to believe it!I didn't even see it! It's all fake-everything is fake! How could Jackie from three hundred pill runes? He's never even looked at the Way of the Pill.

This is all an illusion, and you're all lying to me!" roared Gilbert.

His hands flailed around him as he clawed at his surroundings while he shouted. It was

like he truly believed it was an illusion, and he was trying to struggle out of it.

Advertisement

He refused to believe it was all real nor was he willing to.

He had clearly proven with his skill that he was the one most qualified to be a student at the Middle Province

Alchemist Alliance..

Jackie stole that from him!

The vice-treasurer frowned. Gilbert's reaction had both been expected and unexpected.

After all, Jackie's results had shocked even himself. If he had not witnessed it personally, he would not have believed it either .

However, Gilbert's behavior was a little too erratic.

The vice-treasurer took a deep breath as he sternly added, "There are things that happen even if you refuse to believe it. There are many talentS in Heavenly Pills. You might have a lot of potential, but you're not the strongest."

Gilbert's face paled as he shook his head with vigor.

Advertisement

"This isn't real! If his results were better than mine, then why don't I see a single rune around?"

The vice-treasurer frowned at this. "Jackie formed his three hundred runes much earlier before this, and we've all seen what he did.

Pill runes aren't something that lingers.

"Jackie was waiting for you and Andrew, and he's not in the spring solidifying realm yet. There's no way for him to constantly use his true energy, which was why he dispersed it before you even finished."

Gilbert's expression contorted even more at this, his expression becoming deranged.

He turned up to look at Andrew as he shouted even louder, "Do you believe that?! Andrew had an ugly, bitter expression on his face."

Even as Gilbert spiraled into insanity fueled by disbelief, his eyes never left Jackie.

He stared at Jackie sharply, keenly, as if he could stare right into Jackie's soul.

After hearing Gilbert's words, he reacted.

Andrew's lips trembled as he said, "I haven't seen it for myself, so I can't believe it, either. If Jackie can form the pill runes in front of us again, we'll accept our defeat willingly."

Andrew was not willing to admit defeat.

He would not be so unwilling if the winner had been Gilbert.

After all, Andrew knew that Gilbert had a leg up as compared to himself.

As expected, Gilbert had managed to Condense the runes even faster than he did, but he never would have expected a sudden dark horse to appear in their competition.

Jackie had robbed them of the nomination so blatantly.

Further more, the guy seemed better than them both.

According to what the vice-treasurer said, Jackie's pill runes were far better than theirs in both speed and quality.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2431

Chapter 2431
Gilbert and Andrew had no chance of outdoing Jackie, which aggravated Andrew into utter defiance.

He took a deep breath as he turned around. He looked right at Jackie's eyes, his gaze piercing right at the man.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he coldly looked at Andrew and Gilbert.

Gilbert pointed at him and said through gritted teeth, "Form them again!

Otherwise, I won't believe you!"

It was obvious how heavy and complicated Gilbert's feelings were at that moment, but Jackie merely laughed as he then stared at Gilbert condescendingly, coldly.

Advertisement

“Who do you think you are? Must I do it just because you asked me to?

“Why do I care if you believe it or not? The vice-treasurer saw what I did. Why do I care what the two of you saw?!”

Those words slammed Gilbert like meteors from the sky, and Gilbert’s expression became darker by the minute.

He felt like he would never defeat Jackie when it came to a duel of words.

Advertisement

Jackie-even down to his response-was right.

“I don’t care! If you don’t prove yourself to me, I won’t accept your result. The nomination is still mine!” Gilbert had already gone mad from anger at that point.

If he did not see Jackie form another 300 runes again, he refused to believe all of that was real in the first place.

Jackie was just a student that had just entered Heavenly Pills.

He was the eleventh disciple who was at the bottom.

Gilbert always thought that Jackie was far inferior to him in every way other than combat.

So, even if Jackie beat him to death, he would not admit defeat!

Jackie coldly looked at Gilbert, not wanting to bother talking. He looked up at the vice-treasurer, whose lips were twitching helplessly.

Jackie was so powerful and talented, so Jackie naturally had his own pride.

Advertisement

Gilbert asking Jackie to condense pill runes again was a blow to his dignity, and Jackie would absolutely not agree.

Thinking about that, the vice-treasurer waved his hand. “Alright! I wasn’t the only one who saw the three hundred runes earlier. The other students around me witnessed it as well, so there’s no need for further proof.

“I can understand why you’re in disbelief. After all, you both had always thought that you were the only ones who had learned the Way of the Pill other than the eldest disciple.

Yet, reality has shown that there’s always a mountain higher. Jackie has also learned the Way of the Pill before. His Way of the Pill had been taught by his master.”

After that, the vice-treasurer sucked in a deep breath and explained what Jackie had said earlier in a simple manner. Gilbert and Andrew looked like they had just eaten a mouthful of poop.

The two of them still could not believe it. It was far too absurd!

Jackie chuckled, his laughter sounding carefree when he did. “Vice-treasurer, when will we be able to head to the Rosefinch branch of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance?

It was pointless and troublesome to stay in Heavenly Pills. He had already broken Gilbert and Andrew mentally, and they would definitely cause trouble if he gave them a chance.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2432

Chapter 2432
They were still in Heavenly Pills, after all. Even if Jackie was irked, he could not kill Gilbert and Andrew. Thus, he should leave the place as soon as possible. It would save him a lot of trouble.

Once he made a name for himself and had nothing else to do, he would find these two once more, proving to them then that he was never a character to be thought of lightly.

As if he could see why Jackie wanted to leave quickly, the vice-treasurer hurriedly nodded. “We can leave in four hours. This has always been an urgent matter, anyway.”

Hearing the vice-treasurer’s words, Jackie offered an honest smile. It was best if he left as soon as he could; he did not want to stay for another second.

Jackie wanted to tell the vice-treasurer that he did not need to tidy up anything and could leave immediately.

The pill aura room’s door was suddenly knocked, and the vice-treasurer frowned.

Advertisement

“Enter!”

It was the ninth student who entered. When Jackie saw his face, he raised an eyebrow. He could still clearly remember how the ninth student had stood behind the vice-treasurer the whole time earlier.

When he came to look at Jackie’s pill runes, the vice-treasurer had sent the ninth student on his way, and the student finally returned at that point to the vice-treasurer’s side, albeit with an anxious expression.

He quickly glanced at everyone present before he whispered into the vice-treasurer’s ear, mumbling a few words that somehow earned a raised eyebrow and a smile from the vice-treasurer.

Advertisement

He looked up at Gilbert and Andrew. “Well, this is good. The two of you don’t have to be so angered anymore. This time, I’m allowed to bring all three of you. Don’t embarrass me there,”

The moment he said that, a smile appeared on Gilbert and Andrew’s faces, However, what happened earlier had still left a bíg impact on them. Their gríns did not last that long before they regained their Composure.

The vice-treasurer was not that happy, in truth, after hearing the ninth student’s report. Instead, he seemed to have a look of worry on his face, It was as if he was considering something

Jackie frowned. It looked like bringing all three of them was not that good a piece of news to the vice-treasurer. It might end up being a hostile place

Thinking about that, Jackie sighed. It seemed like he would never have an easy path.

They ended up on a massive, luxurious floating vessel. It was floating in the southem part of the Rosefinch City’s skies, and it was as big as 20 football fields.

Normally, such a big vessel would have covered the skies, yet the vessel seemed to be made of a special material that did not cover the sunlight at all despite it being in the air.

The light would be reflected by the spiritual vessel when it hit, much like a distorted mirror. It reflected all the light that should have hit the earth.

At that moment, the vessel was incredibly bustling. At least 70 people were standing on the deck. The long deck was like a miniature plaza, and even a few hundred people could fit inside without a problem, let alone 70 or 80.

Advertisement

Jackie and the others followed closely behind the vice-treasurer. They arrived on top of the deck, and the vice-treasurer gave them a briefing. It was then did Jackie find out that the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance's branch was on the vessel.

It was probably because there were too many people, or that the vice-treasurer did not like crowds, but the vice-treasurer pulled everyone to a secluded corner the moment they arrived.

"I didn't expect the alliance to go all-out this time. They leaked all the news and released the restrictions. So many people are here so abruptly."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2433

Chapter 2433
The vice-treasurer had his eyes on the people up ahead when he made his remark. From the way everyone dressed, there were different clusters of similarly dressed people.

It meant that various groups, clans, or merchant groups like Heavenly Pills were looking to be students in the alliance.

After all, the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was a massive group; it was the holy land for all alchemists.

Becoming a member of the alliance meant that a person's status would skyrocket, and they would not even need a nomination to be tested.

They would be able to buy cheaper materials from the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, too.

Basically, there were tremendous benefits to entering the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, which was why so many people were gathered for it.

Advertisement

Of course, the more benefits there were, the tougher the competition. There were to00 many masters there, and it was difficult to earn any favor. The entrance examination was far too difficult as well, and regular folks would never pass.

That was why anyone with an influential group behind them flocked over like bees to honey the moment they heard of the chance.

'Look at those in blue," remarked the vice- treasurer with a sour look on his face as he rubbed his chin.

Gilbert frowned. "Is he a Silent Moon Pills student? I can't believe they found out about this, too,"

Advertisement

The vice-treasurer was visibly displeased. "I thought that the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance had deliberately leaked the news to us. I had thought that we were something special to them."

"After all, our Heavenly Auction House might not be much in the inner regions, but we're still quite reputable in the outer regions..."

The vice-treasurer could not hide the bitterness in his tone when he spoke. Jackie, Andrew, and Gilbert naturally understood how the vice-treasurer felt at that.

The vice -treasurer sighed helplessly. "It looks like you won't be able to enter with just a word; you might even need to go through a selection later. You'll have to make sure you perform well.

"I refuse to believe the alliance will accept everyone in one go. Even if they wanted to do that, they don't have the resources for all of you."

Jackie nodded.

He felt like the vice-treasurer was right.

If the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance recruited so many people in one sitting, it would be a massive waste of resources.

The students present had not been brought up in the alliance's systems from the start.

Advertisement

They came from various groups and forces so they would have different understandings and upbringings.

This, in turn, needed a large amount of resources for the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance to nurture them.

It would cause quite a large amount to add so many disciples in one go.

Unless the alliance desperately needed a large number of disciples, they would not do so.

"Don't worry. Even if there's a selection, I won't fail it." Gilbert's words were filled with confidence.

He did not even spare a second glance at all the students around them.

His talents had been at the top of Heavenly Pills, and Heavenly Pills was incredibly well-known in Rosefinch City.

He refused to believe that his talent and ability could not grant him entrance into the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2434 - 2440

Chapter 2434
The vice-treasurer raised an eyebrow as he sighed in exasperation.

“Don’t be too overconfident. I know you’re confident in your talents, but know that Some of them here are incredibly gifted people. Your overconfidence will result in you being unsatisfied, and you’ll be locked behind a bunch of doors. When that happens..you’ll fall.”

The vice-treasurer’s words were vague, but all three of them understood. The vice- treasurer knew the tricks and schemes that Gilbert had pulled before, and he wanted to remind Gilbert of that.

If he truly became a student of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, Gilbert would have to throw away those petty thoughts of his. Otherwise, these thoughts could pull him down and incur great losses for him.

The vice-treasurer’s words came from a position of kindness, but Gilbert saw it in an entirely different angle. To Gilbert, he felt like the vice-treasurer had belittled hirm after witnessing Jackie’s talent and skills. He felt like the vice-treasurer was looking at him in disdain.

Gilbert’s lips twitched as a ferocious glint flashed in his eyes. He told himself that he would someday prove himself to those who thought too little of him, once he made a name for himself.

Advertisement

He would let them pay the price of trampling him.

Of course, he did not dare voice out his thoughts at that moment.

He took a deep breath and suppressed the rage in his heart. “I understand, Vice-treasurer. It’s just that I’m still very confident in my own skills.

After all, I successfully formed three hundred pill runes. Eight hundred pill runes is the threshold to becoming a sixth-grade alchemist, and I’m already so close to it. I should be able to become a sixth-grade alchemist in just a year. “Gilbert’s chin rose as he spoke.

Advertisement

In his eyes was a determined expression, as if his words left no room for doubt.

The vice-treasurer frowned at this, clearly feeling that Gilbert had taken his words out of context.

The vice-treasurer's lips twitched. "You definitely are able to form three hundred pill runes, but the runes you formed can't be refined at all. The benchmark for a sixth-grade pill is a fifty-percent refinement. I've seen the pill runes you've formed, and you won't even be able to refine them at ten percent, let alone fifty."

Gilbert's face darkened.

He felt like the vice-treasurer was targeting him, so he decided to just shut his mouth and straighten his back.

He wanted to use his skills to prove that everything the vice-treasurer had said was wrong.

Jackie definitely had talent, but no one knew how long talent would hold out. He would surely catch up to Jackie and exceed him tremendously.

Jackie quietly looked at Gilbert, who refused to accept advice, and his expression.

Jackie smiled helplessly. He had seen many people like Gilbert, and all of them claimed to be extraordinary, feeling like they would be able to stand out.

Advertisement

Nonetheless, it was often those who praised themselves so much that ended up with the worst failures.

Just as Jackie was thinking about everything,

Andrew suddenly broke the silence, saying, "Vice-treasurer, aren't they from Golden Pills?"

The vice-treasurer's expression soured even more at that. He frowned as he looked toward where Gilbert was pointing.

He saw a purplish-gold glow surrounding a few figures that were approaching from a distance.

In a flash, the figures landed on the deck.

The glow dissipated, and the persons hidden were revealed to everyone. After getting a clear look, the vice-treasurer looked like he had swallowed a fly.

Chapter 2435
The vice-treasurer's lips twitched. "Those b*stards. Why are they all the way here?".

Jackie raised an eyebrow at this as he stared at the vice-treasurer curiously. Gilbert and Andrew had sour looks on their faces as well.

It looked like Golden Pills and Heavenly Pills had a very strange relationship.

There seemed to be animosity between them, even.

There were three of them from Golden Pills, and leading the group of three was a middle-aged man in purple gold robes. He looked around as he smoothed his beard, seemingly looking for someone.

The moment his gaze fell on them, his eyes immediately shifted to the vice-treasurer.

The vice-treasurer's expression soured even more. It darkened so badly that it started to look like charcoal.

The middle-aged man suddenly had an incredibly meaningful smile on his face.

He led the two youths behind him as they walked toward them. "Hello, Vice-treasurer!"

The vice-treasurer forced out a smile as he politely greeted, "Hello, Mr. Constance."

Andrew whispered that the man was an owner, but Jackie felt like it was a little strange after thinking of the vice-treasurer's status.

Since Golden Pills was a pill merchant as well,and they should be similar to Heavenly Pills, why was that man called an owner? Could Golden Pills be some sort of franchise Mr. Constance seemed very happy.

It was as if he had picked up a million spirit stones, and even his smile threatened to stretch his mouth open.

"Vice-treasurer, have you been well?I heard that your son was recently accepted into a sixth-grade clan as an outer disciple I still haven't congratulated you."

A fake smile was plastered on the vice- treasurer's face. "Thank you for remembering."

Jackie could tell that the vice-treasurer did not want to talk to that guy anymore. It was as if another extra word would cause the vice-treasurer to suffer.

However, Golden Pills and Heavenly Pills were not completely at odds with each other, so he still needed to maintain some basic manners. That was why the vice-treasurer worked hard to maintain a neutral expression.

Mr. Constance seemed to have just noticed Jackie and the others behind the vice treasurer, It was as if he had discovered Something new, and something shocking at that.

"Are these the new students you had just raised? I heard that the last batch was incredibly bad, so you abandoned them quickly.

"After that, you had to hurry to pick up a new batch. It looks like you must've been working really hard."

Those words were so sly that it rendered them speechless; it was practically provoking Heavenly Pills.

Jackie knew the man was telling them that Heavenly Pills would be tossed aside the moment they lacked the talent.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, deciding to ignore Mr. Constance.

The vice-treasurer smiled coldly. "It wasn't that tough. You must've suffered even more than us, We just got rid of one batch, but I heard Golden Pills has failed to nurture any amazing alchemists in the last two batches. Isn't your head very busy troubling over this?"

Mr. Constance stiffened at his response, and his face darkened immediately. He wanted to say something more spiteful to provoke the vice-treasurer, but the vice treasurer had beaten him to it.

Chapter 2436
"Elder Horst is the one in charge today. You're from the inner regions, so you probably don't know him that well. Instead of chatting around with me here, why don't you try to learn more about Elder Horst."

Those words successfully stopped Mr. Constance from saying more. He shot a deep look at the vice treasurer before he dismissed himself, bringing the two students away.

However, the student that stood in front suddenly shot Jackie and the others a cold and dark look before they left.

The student's eyes lingered on Jackie the longest. Jackie had naturally felt it, so he raised his head and looked back with a calm gaze.

The student let out a cold snort before he turned away, ignoring everyone.

Once the three of them had left, the vice started to look like charcoal.

Look at how pleased that guy was.

If he weren't confident, he would not have acted that way. He's clearly waiting to stomp on me."

Gilbert had on a sour expression and wanted to say something, but was stopped by Andrew. "What is the alliance planning? Are they trying to pick out the most Outstanding student among everyone here?Vice treasurer, how many do you think the alliance will want?"

The vice treasurer sighed and thought for a bit before saying, "I can't say. They will at least want twenty, or they wouldn't be doing everything in such a grand manner. It's just some students. Recruiting twenty in one go shouldn't be that hard."

Jackie frowned before he suddenly said, "You actually thought that the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance only notified Heavenly Pills. It must be because the news hasn't been spread out."

Chapter 2437
"However, for there to be so many people here, even from the inner region, means that the news has actually spread long ago but was probably kept secret by the alliance instead.

What do you think the alliance wants?

That was the question Jackie had been thinking about, but he knew far too little, so there was no way for him to guess anything.

The vice treasurer looked at Jackie with praise.

Jackie was still the one who was able to grasp the key of the problem and ask some meaningful questions.

The vice treasurer thought for a long time before he slowly shook his head.

"I can't figure it out either. I feel like something strange is hidden behind everything, but I haven't received any special news lately…"

Jackie sighed. Even the vice treasurer did not know, so there was no way for him to know at all.

He turned to look at everyone on the deck.

The excitement on their faces was obviousS.

After all, becoming a student of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was a much better position than their current ones.

They would receive a lot more resources and their future journeys would be a bit smoother.

Those who were there had naturally gone through a selection process. Many of them were like Gilbert, filled with confidence.

They felt like their talents would make them shine among the others.

Jackie shook his head as he pursed his lips, pushing those thoughts aside for the moment.

He turned around and looked at the vice treasurer earnestly before saying,"Did you have some past conflicts with Mr.Constance?"

Just now, M Constance and the vice treasurer had a very tense atmosphere between them.

Their words were polite, but looking at their expressions and the atmosphere, anyone would tell that a fight would erupt at any moment. Mr Constance coldly snorted as his expression suddenly darkened and uttered, "That dog keeps causing trouble for me.I feel so disgusted every time I see him."Jackie raised an eyebrow.

It was just as he thought, both of them were like tire and Water.

The vice treasurer let out a soft cough before he continued, "I actually don't have any conflicts with him. The biggest problem isn't between him and me, but between our two pill merchants.

"Heavenly Pills is the best within Rosefinch Pavilion. With Heavenly Auction House behind us, the usual powers would not dare to touch us. However, Golden Pills is different. They are a force from the inner regions, so they aren't afraid of Heavenly Auction House!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow curiously and replied, "Since Golden Pills is an inner force, then they shouldn't have too much to do with us..."

The vice treasurer nodded as he thought of the conflicts in the past. He let out a soft sigh.

He said helplessly, "As the Heavenly Auction House got bigger and bigger, it's started to expand out of Rosefinch Pavilion's territories."

Hearing that, Jackie immediately understood.

He said, “Did Heavenly auction House try to do business in the inner regions? It was probably stopped by Golden Pills since it would affect their profits.”

The vice treasurer nodded, “Your guess is right. We really were planning on moving our businesses to the inner regions, but we weren’t too worried. We merely planned on allying with some forces in the inner regions and opening a few stores.”

“After all, the outer regions are different from the inner regions. The forces and clans in the inner regions look down on us as we are from the outer regions. The head treasurer felt that moving our businesses into the inner regions means we’ve become an inner region force.”

Chapter 2438
“In the future, Heavenly Auction House could take pride in that. However, us trying to open a few stores unexpectedly got us involved with Golden Pills.They deliberately hatched a plot. We weren’t that familiar with the local situations and ended up falling for it. Not only did we fail to open up any stores, it even affected our reputation.”

“During that period, even our businesses in Rosefinch City were affected. We were basically a laughing stock. It was so humiliating. It was only after that we found The culprit was Golden Pills.”

Jackie frowned. It looked like a lot of things had happened back then. Even though the vice treasurer did not go into the details, Jackie could more or less tell what had happened back then.

The biggest impact for a business was naturally a product defect or going against a deal.

No matter which problem happened, it would be a massive blow to both the store and the powers behind the store.

Looking at the vice treasurer clenching his teeth as he spoke, it was obvious how difficult things had been for Heavenly Pills after what had happened back then. Jackie let out a sigh, not continuing his questions.

However, Gilbert said at that moment, “Those guys are so shameless. They were the ones who plotted against us yet they’re still so arrogant in front of us. It’s as if we were the ones who wronged them!”

The vice treasurer looked at Gilbert with narrowed eyes. He felt like the brat only seemed smart, but was acting more and more like an idiot. He even said something like that.

He could not help but purse his lips, “We quickly managed to uncover the truth back then. It means that Golden Pills had no intentions of hiding it at all. They had clearly wanted us to know they were behind all of it.”

“We were always in the same line of business which made us rivals. Since we were already rivals, that added onto it and made us enemies.”

“Since that’s the case, they would naturally not be polite to us. They just don’t have the chance to reach out so far for now. If they managed to expand their forces to the outer regions, they would definitely deal with Heavenly Auction House with all they have!”

The moment Andrew heard that he started to shake in anger, “They’re so petty and shameless! They’ve really gone too far!”

Jackie felt like all of that was actually quite normal. The vice treasurer was right.

Their relationship was already at that stage.

It’s obvious what both sides want, so they would naturally be at odds with each other.

At that moment, the volume in the surroundings started to increase.

Someone said loudly, “Isn’t that the Rosefinch Pavilion..”

“Even the Rosefinch Pavilion is here. It seems like the recruitment this time must be different.”

There was suddenly a loud clamor of discussion. It caused the four who were in the corner to pause. The sounds of footsteps could be heard on the deck as two people in red robes stood on the easternmost side.

The two of them did not look so different in age.

Their robes looked like burning flames.

Jackie whispered, “They’re from Rosefinch Pavilion?”

No one answered Jackie’s question, but the vice treasurer’s next words served to give Jackie his answer. “Why is it them? Grayson Jones is here as a student? Is the Rosefinch Pavilion willing to let him go just like that? This is absurd! What’s happening..” The vice treasurer felt like his mind was about to stop working.

Chapter 2439
Even Gilbert and Andrew were stunned. Their eyes were filled with contusion.

Jackie frowned as he looked at them, not understanding what was happening.

He did not understand why their reactions were so big. As the two people stood on the deck, the discussion around them got louder.

Even with the distance, Jackie could hear what those people were talking about.

“Isn’t Grayson already an inner disciple?! Why is he trying to steal our student positions ? Or do they have other plans?”

“Who knows? They probably have some plans that we don’t know about, Haven’t we heard Grayson’s name being mentioned a few times before?”

“That guy is a master. He’s not that strong in combat and was merely a runner disciple for many years. However, ever since he started to show some amazing potential in alchemy, his value started to rise, It only took him a year to rise into an inner disciple from a runner disciple! Everyone’s so envious of him”Jackie blinked.

No wonder they reacted the way they did.

Grayson had relied on his talent in alchemy to change his fate .

Jackie knew very well what a runner disciple was.

Ever since arriving in Hestia Continent, he could feel the difference between various disciples very clearly.

Runner disciples might be called ‘disciples’, but they were mostly just in charge of dirty work. They were merely just a step above a servant.

Even outer disciples did not do any of them.

They might be able to obtain some resources for training, but they needed to spend a lot of time on laborious jobs. Runner disciples were no different from students.

Compared to inner disciples, it was a humongous difference. For that person to rely on his skill in alchemy to turn into an inner disciple from a runner disciple shows how superior his talent was.

No wonder everyone was talking about him.

He had turned into the center of attention, gaining many looks of admiration.

Grayson’s looks were average, and so was his stature.

However, his back was incredibly stiff, as if everyone could only look at his back forever, and never catch up to him!

Jackie could see the arrogance that exuded out of him.

He might be talented, but his personality was probably not that great. “Hello, vice treasurer!” The person next to Grayson waved and said.

The vice treasurer furrowed his eyebrows slightly, but he still buried his earlier feelings and waved back, “Hello Mr.Zyne!”

The two of them exchanged greetings before they turned their heads away.

Jackie could not help but laugh in his heart. It looked like the two of them did not have a great relationship.

The vice treasurer’s face was incredibly dark from the moment he found out who they were.

His expression was incredibly worried.

He had still been able to compose himself before, but he had completely forgotten about it after that.

“What happened? Why is Grayson here as well? He’s the treasured child of the Rosefinch Pavilion. He managed to form eight hundred pill runes less than a year after learning the Way of the Pill!x

“It’s just that the quality of his pills isn’t good enough to be at fifty percent refinement yet. It’s only a matter of time until he becomes a sixth-grade alchemist.”Rosefinch Pavilion would usually hold on to such a treasure tightly.

They might tell everyone how much potential he has, but they would absolutely not allow him to go and contribute blindly to the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance!”

Chapter 2440
Jackie heard the vice treasurer’s words and went deep into thought. With the way the vice treasurer was speaking, the situation did seem like it was getting stranger and stranger.

With how talented Grayson was, there was no way Rosefinch Pavilion would let him go just like that, no matter how you looked at it.

There had to be something behind it.

He was only going to become a student, someone who could not possibly compare to an inner disciple at all. Furthermore, Rosefinch Pavilion was a fifth-grade clan.

Grayson would not need to worry about getting any resources to nurture his potential.

Rosefinch Pavilion’s higher-ups would definitely do everything they could to nurture him.

As long as Grayson could grow, he could even become a seventh-grade alchemist in the future.

It would greatly benefit Rosefinch Pavilion. Practically every clan wanted their own alchemists.

Once the alchemist matured, he would be able to help refine pills for the clan's own disciples and even nurture another generation of alchemists.

Yet, alchemy was a profession that requires a lot of talent.

Not everyone could do it.

"He can't come here to be a student!'" Gilbert said obstinately.

The vice treasurer helplessly pursed his lips as he looked at Gilbert.

He really felt like Gilbert's brain was becoming more useless.

He turned around, looked at Gilbert seriously, and uttered, "No matter what /ou say, you shouldn't be so obstinate in the future.

"Even though there's no way this guy will be handed to the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance to become a student no matter how you look at it, the circumstances are unique today. Everyone is here because they want to become a student.

"On top of that, with the alliance's actions prior to this, there might be some secret hidden behind everything, so you shouldn't voice out in such a pigheaded manner."

Gilbert's expression soured immensely when he was spoken to like that. He turned his head to the other side, and his mood was incredibly bad at that point. He felt like the vice treasurer kept on targeting him.

With Jackie around, the vice treasurer was completely ignoring Gilbert. Gilbert felt angrier and angrier the more he thought about it.

He started to clench his fists.

He had to prove his talent and ability. No one was allowed to look down at him!

As the four of them talked, Mr. Zayne had already headed toward Mr. Constance Zayne's face was all smiles as he waved at Winston. The two of them chatted for a while before they brought along the others to a quiet place.

Jackie had seen everything, and could not help but feel curious. He glanced over and saw that the vice treasurer had a look of anger and suspicion in his eyes.

Rosefinch Pavilion should have been in a better relationship with Heavenly Pills since Heavenly Pills were in their territory, but it seemed like the two of them were much closer than they were with the vice treasurer.

As the two of them talked, they had incredibly friendly smiles on their faces. The surrounding discussions slowly died down. After a while passed, the sound of slow footsteps could be heard from within the vessel.

They looked over and saw someone in a white robe walking out toward them. The man had a smile on his face and was slightly chubby.

When the vice leader saw the person, he immediately straightened himself. He walked forward as well. Jackie immediately knew that the person must be someone important in the alliance from the vice treasurer’s reaction.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2441 - 2442

Chapter 2441
A few of the leaders paid their respects as well, they all cried out, “Greetings, Elder Turner .

That person was an elder within the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. No matter where it was, the status of an elder was still well respected. Jackie could not help but take a second look at Elder Turner.

He looked very friendly. His face was round and smiling. Only, there was a sharp ruthlessness that could not be hidden within his eyes. It proved that he was absolutely not as friendly as he would seem.

Elder Turner waved at all of them and said, “Everyone, thank you so much for coming.I never expected so many people to be here today, but with the orders from above, we have to obey.”

After elder Turner finished those words, he looked at everyone meaningfully. After then, he put up five fingers and said, “Five! Today, we’ll only be recruiting five disciples!”

Jackie was not the only person stunned at those words. Everyone stiffened on the spot, noticeably caught off guard. Only five students? There were at least eighty of them on the deck.

Advertisement

Eighty of them were considered talented individuals in their own ways. To only pick five from eighty proved how strict the selection was this time!

They only wanted to choose the best of the best, but was it not too strict when they were only recruiting students? Was there something else hidden behind all this? Elder Turner’s words suddenly pulled everyone into a discussion again.

There are eighty here, but they only want five! Isn’t that too strict? They’re just recruiting students. Before this, the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance only wanted some students with slightly better talents.

“After all, there’s no need to be so strict when it’s just students! We’re all prodigies from where we came from, Only choosing five of us! It’s no different

from when some major clans choose their disciples! The Middle Province Alchemist Alliance is being far too strict!”

Advertisement

That’s right. What are they planning Today is getting stranger and stranger. Grayson is a treasured disciple of the Rosefinch Pavilion.

They would never let him even see anyone else normally, so what’s with today? They’re actually giving him away today! This is far too strange!

Grayson’s talent was undoubtedly at the peak among everyone there. After all, he was already able to form eight hundred pill runes. No matter how confident Gilbert was in himself, all he could do was barely form three hundred pill runes.

Most of them present were not even at Gilbert’s level, let alone Grayson’s.

Furthermore, Grayson had only learned the Way of the Pill for a very short time. He had done all of that in just a year.

His talent for alchemy would be incredibly favored even in a sixth-grade clan.

Rosefinch Pavilion might have a good relationship with the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, but it was still not to the degree where they would just give away their treasured disciple.

No one standing there was an idiot.

They had naturally found the happenings of that day incredibly strange. Elder Turner could naturally see what they were talking about, but nothing could be read from his expression.

Advertisement

When the discussions below started to die down, Elder Turner said, “The students we are recruiting today are different from those before. The students we recruit today will be heavily nurtured by the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, and you won’t have to leave your current positions.

The moment those words were spoken, Everyone present gaped. Even the leaders of the students all had widened eyes and expressions of disbelief.

Chapter 2442
Jackie raised an eyebrow. It was obvious from the vice treasurer's expression that he had not known about it at all.

Other than Zayne and Constance, everyone had looks of shock on their faces.

To not have to discard their current positions and still receive the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance's resources.

It was both good news for the student and the forces behind the student.

It was the same as the alliance basically raising someone else's child for them.

No one would have believed such a good deal existed if they had not heard it themselves.

Jackie frowned as he looked at the elder suspiciously. Even though it sounded like a good thing, Jackie knew very well that no one ever willingly gave up their own benefits for the sake of others, let alone a group like that.

The Middle Province Alchemist Alliance must have its own reasons for doing so.

Elder Horst let out a small cough to quiet everyone down. Everyone's discussions died down as Elder Horst raised his hand.

Elder Horst smiled and said, "I know what you' re all trying to guess. In truth, there's no need to guess anything at all. The alliance is in a bit of trouble, and we need the help of some masters. That's why we asked everyone to gather here!"

Elder Horst's words were vague. It did nothing to reduce the suspicious looks on everyone's faces.

Elder Horst continued to say, "You don't have to worry, This matter won't involve all of you too much. It's an alliance secret."

"When the time comes, you'll find out naturally. All you need to know is that this matter won't affect you negatively."

After that, Elder Horst turned around.

The servants behind him pulled over a chair for him to sit in.

After Elder Horst sat on the chair, he looked at everyone present with a sharp look.

He could tell that his words had done nothing to reduce the suspicion and confusion.

He looked up and said again, “The way we’ll be choosing the disciples will be very simple. All you need to do is prove your talent and skill. It doesn’t matter how you prove it. We just want to choose the best five.”

Even the testing was not uniform? Jackie felt like it was even more strange after he heard that.

Normally, tests should always be universal. Only with uniformed tests could the truly strong and weak be determined.

He turned to look at everyone else. Even though everyone had varying expressions, no one was as suspicious as Jackie. It seemed like nobody felt that Elder Horst’s words were that strange.

It seemed like he understood far too little of the alchemist profession. After all, he might have been an alchemist in Daxia, but he had never picked up that status ever since He came to the Hestia Continent.

His understanding of the Hestia Continent’s alchemists was only at the surface level.

Elder Horst coughed softly and said, “I’ll give you fifteen minutes to think about how you’re going to prove your skills and talents. After that, the test will begin.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2443 - 2444

Chapter 2443
“I’ll remind you again. The selection this time is different from usual. Once you are chosen, you’ll be nurtured heavily. Becoming a sixth-grade alchemist would just be the start.”

Those Words caused everyone present to widen their eyes. It had spurred everyone’s thirst for victory. It was such a golden treasure. All of the students present felt their mouths are watering.

Nurturing from the alliance that had never been seen before. It would absolutely not be an empty promise.

Even though it sounded like sweet words to lure them in, the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was not a small group.

They naturally had to keep to their Own words.

The moment they thought about the nurturing they would receive, their hands started to tremble excitedly.

Advertisement

An impulse seized their bodies.

Yet, Jackie did not care about the last few words that Elder Horst said.

Fifteen minutes for everyone to think about how they could prove their potential and abilities. Jackie wondered how an alchemist could prove their abilities other than by forming pill runes.

Jackie could not think about it for that moment.

Advertisement

Even though there were so many people present, none of them were sixth grade alchemists.

The only way to prove their skills was through forming pill runes.

The number and quality of pill runes could be used to gauge someone's talent. Just as he was thinking about it, Gilbert could not help but laugh next to him.

"Look at all of them… They're coveting something they won't have. It's as if they'd already Won. Did they not hear that there would only be five out of everyone here?

"Do they think their talent is enough to beat everyone here? They should look at themselves in the mirror first!"

Thankfully, Gilbert was still self-aware enough to know that he would definitely be attacked by the crowd if he had said that loudly. So, he had deliberately whispered those words, causing Jackie and Andrew to be the only ones able to hear those words clearly.

Andrew could not help but roll his eyes at those words. Jackie had a cold laugh in his heart. Gilbert was clearly an idiot. Was he talking about everyone else or himself?

"You really don't know your place!"

Grayson's words were suddenly heard by everyone. Jackie frowned as he looked up at Grayson.

Advertisement

Grayson had his eyes narrowed as he looked at everyone in disdain.

He seemed to be mocking them for not knowing their place.

When Grayson saw everyone looking up at him, he snorted in contempt.

There are over eighty people present, and the alliance only needs five. If you want to become a student of the alliance with your petty skills, you should first look at yourselves in the mirror first! You're all acting so excited.

It's so laughable!

Those words were no longer just words of snide mockery. He was practically scolding everyone present for not knowing their own strength.

Even though everyone present admired and acknowledged Grayson's talent, it did not mean they would just stand around and be insulted like that.

It did not mean they would just wag their tails and listen to whatever he said.

Someone could not help but shout out, "What do you mean by this, Grayson! We never said anything, so why are you trying to mock us ? We're already here, so we naturally want to fight for it or why are we here otherwise?"

Chapter 2444
Grayson let out a cold laugh and replied, "All of you are here just to make up the numbers. Please think about who you are. At least you're brave enough to talk to me like this I suppose.

If you can form five hundred pill runes,,I could acknowledge you. However, looking at your face, being able to form a hundred pill runes would already need a lot of talent!

The person that had been berated by Grayson turned red. He suddenly looked like a deflated ball, unable to say anything else. Grayson had been right. He could not even form a hundred pill runes, let alone five hundred.

After all, the Way of the Pill had always been something deep and profound.

Without outstanding talent, there was no way to learn how to form five hundred pill runes in a short amount of time.

The difference between his talents and Grayson's was right there for all to see. Even if he was stubborn, it would quickly be useless, since they would have to take the test soon.

"Grayson seems very confident in himself.."The person behind Constance suddenly said.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows and looked over.

He noticed that it was the same guy who had looked at them with a disdainful gaze when they greeted Constance earlier.

The vice treasurer had reminded the rest of them that the person was probably incredibly talented looking at them like that, on top of Constance's earlier giddy attitude.

Jackie had deduced that the person's talent Would only be slightly inferior to Grayson's or he would not have made an expression like that. Grayson frowned and turned around to look at that person.

"It looks like you're not acknowledging my talents, Rudy."

Rudy Glasc let out a small laugh as he shook his head and voiced out, “Grayson, your talents are obvious. There’s nothing for me to not acknowledge. It’s just that you’re incredibly confident. It’s something I should learn from you.”

Rudy’s words sounded a little strange.

Grayson’s face stiffened when he heard it.

His gaze slowly turned cold as he looked at Rudy.

A tense atmosphere was slowly forming between them.

However, it was not the kind of tension that would lead to a battle.

They wanted to compete in alchemy.

Rudy’s words had sounded incredibly nice as if he really admired Grayson’s talents.

However, Jackie was no idiot. He could tell from the tone that Rudy did not regard Grayson highly at all.

He probably felt like he was better than Grayson as well.

Jackie could not help but raise an eyebrow. It seemed like there would be an entertaining show to watch.

At that moment, the vice treasurer was already next to them and had an incredibly bitter look on his face. His eyes seemed to be dancing around. Various thoughts were flying about in his mind.

“What are you thinking about, vice treasurer? “Jackie asked curiously.

The vice treasurer let out a sigh, “Whatever that has happened today feels more and more off. Those two guys clearly knew that there would be something different about the selection beforehand.

“Otherwise, they would not have sent out their two most talented disciples. This news never reached Heavenly Pills. I feel like Something’s off. Elder Horst seems to be treating them a little… “

The vice treasurer shut his mouth after that. His expression turned even more sour when Jackie knew that he was referring to Constance and Zayne. The two of them had obviously come prepared.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2445

Chapter 2445
Earlier, the two of them did not have much of a change in expression when Elder Horst had talked about the special selection.

It seemed like everything had been within their plans.

That had obviously made the vice treasurer nervous.

The strongest among all the leaders there were the two of them as well as the vice treasurer. Yet, the vice treasurer was the only one who had not gotten any news as well.

It was obvious he would be anxious.

Jackie raised an eyebrow.

Advertisement

After A deep breath, he said, “What will come will come. If it’s a blessing, then it will be one. If it will end up badly, we wouldn’t have been able to avoid it anyway. It’s just a selection test. Even if the news had been leaked early on, you probably wouldn’t have wanted to send the eldest student here anyway.”

The vice treasurer turned to look at Jackie and said, “That’s not necessarily the case You have to be willing to give up something to get something bigger. The Rosefinch Pavilion is even willing to bring Grayson over. There’s no reason for us to hold back.”

Jackie nodded, unable to argue against that. If the positions were switched, he might not have done like the vice treasurer had said and give up. After all, Elder Horst did not seem like someone ordinary. Scheming against someone who was already used to it was not something he i would like to do it.

“I know you’ re planning on refining a sixth-grade pill in front of everyone this time. Isn’t that right?” Rudy suddenly said loudly.

Advertisement

Grayson’s face darkened.

Rudy had said precisely what was on his mind.

Grayson had planned on announcing that at the start of the test.

It would cause everyone to admire him even more, as well as surprise them.

However, Rudy mentioning it would greatly reduce the impact. Grayson had enough of a life of being looked down and trampled on.

The moment he had talent and ability, he wanted everyone else to see it.

Grayson laughed coldly, “”You’re right. I was planning on refining a sixth-grade pill. Rudy, are you planning on doing the same as me? Saying that made Grayson let out a pleased smile.

He had dug a hole for Rudy since he firmly believed that he would be the only one who would be able to refine a sixth-grade pill among everyone present.

Rudy might be talented, but Rudy was definitely no match for him. Yet, Rudy put on an incredibly pleased smile when he heard Grayson say that.

Advertisement

“What a coincidence! You’re right, I really was planning on refining a sixth-grade pill just like you were!”

The moment he said that gasps could be heard throughout.

The shock on everyone’s faces could no longer be held back.

Grayson saying he wants to refine a sixth-grade pill that had already shocked them, but they were still able to keep their calm.

After all, Grayson’s talent was clear for all to see.

It was still acceptable that he would want to try refining a sixth-grade pill.

Yet, Rudy did not have Grayson’s reputation.

Rudy wanting to refine a sixth-grade pill shocked everyone incredibly.

Their expressions had thoroughly changed. The discussions exploded among everyone.

Oh my god, two masters in one go! lt looks like the recruitment this time really is extraordinary. I wonder what kind of trouble the alliance is in. Why are they nurturing someone else’s masters?

The alliance definitely has its own plans.

I'm guessing that the alliance is doing so to smooth over the problem they're facing. Even though they're nurturing the masters on behalf of others, the masters would be able to help the alliance with tasks in the short term after they've grown."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2446 - 2450

Chapter 2446
“You might be onto something, but I still feel like there’s another reason…”

“Why are you guys going further and further away from the main topic? Didn’t you hear what Rudy just said? He wants to refine a sixth-grade pill! What does this mean?! It means that Rudy’s talents are on par with Grayson’s!”

“We really can’t compete with people like them. We’re still frustrated over forming pill runes, but they’ve already started to refine sixth-grade pills. Even if they refine the most basic sixth-grade pill, it would still be enough to prove themselves as sixth-grade alchemists,

“Don’t forget where we all are right now. We’re all on the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance’s vessel.

“As long as they can successfully refine a sixth-grade pill, the alliance would approve

of their status and give them the badge of a sixth-grade alchemist! With that badge, everything they want to do will be much easier!”

Advertisement

The discussions broke out everywhere, and Jackie’s ears started to hurt. Jackie sighed helplessly as he momentarily ignored the clamor.

He looked over at the vice treasurer with a serious expression and said, “How many ways are there to prove my talent and skill? I can only think of one at the moment…”

The vice treasurer looked at Jackie strangely as if he was surprised at Jackie’s ignorance. However, it was not the time to look for any explanations at that moment. He had a good impression of Jackie, and he needed Jackie to save his reputation, so the vice treasurer patiently answered Jackie, “There are three types. It’s actually common knowledge, so I can’t believe you don’t know. It looks like your master never taught you. The first is the most basic, which is forming pill runes and using them to judge your talent.

“The second type is to refine a pill.

Advertisement

“The third way is a bit more complicated. You’d have to prove your talent by determining the age and authenticity of various spiritual grasses and materials.”

When Jackieheard all that, he got even more curious and replied, “You can even verify grasses and medicines to prove your talent?”

The vice leader nodded, immediately knowing what Jackie was thinking, just looking at Jackie’s expression. “No matter pill merchants or the alliance, we need masters. Being able to verify materials at large volumes is also an exceptional talent.”

“The alliance really needs talents like that. Whether it be gathering materials outside or purchasing them, they would need those people to support them. Most of the Heavenly Pills’ stewards rely on that to climb to their positions.”

Hearing the vice treasurer’s explanation, Jackiefinally realized something. The vice treasurer was right. He had forgotten something important. No matter Heavenly Pills or the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, they were all directly related to pill refining!

Refining a pill did not just need an alchemist. It also needed various spiritual grasses and materials. Being able to tell materials apart was naturally a special talent. Thinking about that, Jackie could not help but look at everyone present.

Before, he had felt like some of those people could never become a student. Yet, a question appeared in his heart. After all, the ability to discern materials was not something that was easy!

Jackie had been deep in his thoughts when the discussion between Rudy and Grayson started to get more and more heated. The two of them were bickering like roosters about to fight.

Chapter 2447
In the beginning, Constance and Zayne merely stood by the side, not caring about the matter. They wanted to let the situation develop by itself. Yet, as Grayson and Rudy’s fight got more and more intense, the two of them were forced to stand out.

Advertisement

They were forced to separate Rudy and Grayson. After all, the quarrels between the younger generation needed to have their limits. If it exceeded the limits, it would affect their relationship. It was something Rudy and Grayson did not want to see.

It was almost fifteen minutes already. Elder Horst sat on his chair as he idly looked on at all the bickering and discussions. Once the time was up, he stood up from the chair.

He clapped loudly and said, “Alright, time’s up. You must have already decided how

you’d prove your talents.

“I suppose I don’t have to tell you about the different methods. Split up into groups right now. The ones who want to condense pill runes stand in the east.

“Those who want to discern materials can stand in the middle. If you want to prove yourself by refining a pill, stand in the west.

“However, I have to first remind you. If you want to prove yourself by refining a pill, you’ll have to refine sixth-grade pills if you want to prove yourself that way. Fifth grade pills are all trash here.”

After saying that, Elder Horst waved. Everyone hurriedly stood into their groups. Most of them were in the eastern most group. There were about ten who stood in the middle.

In truth, everyone knew very well that those who became a student through discerning materials would not get the best resources. After all, their talents were not in alchemy, but in discerning ingredients.

They would be welcome as stewards, but it would be incredibly difficult for them to become sixth-grade and above alchemists. It was practically impossible. Grayson looked on snidely at everyone else as they split up in the groups. He immediately walked toward the west side.

He had come here for the sake of receiving the best of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance’s resources. The other reason was to show off his talents to everyone else. He wanted everyone to know that he had a talent that surpassed everyone in alchemy, that no one could compete with him.

As Grayson walked over, Rudy hurried over to the west side as well. There were only the two of them on the west side at that moment.

Everyone was filled with admiration and jealousy when they looked at the small group in the west.

Sixth-grade alchemists were the target for most of the people present. Yet, for the two of them, it was merely a shortstop. They might even have already achieved it, so how could everyone not be jealous.

Jackie and the others stood behind the vice treasurer, not moving. Gilbert’s sharp eyes fell on Jackie. Andrew had his eyes on Jackieas well.

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly at their looks. Even though they did not say anything, Jackie knew very well that the two of them would not move if he did not.

The vice treasurer looked over at Jackie when he saw that the groups were almost formed. He said, "Go ahead and queue up. There's quite a bit of pressure today, but I feel like your performance in the pill aura room was not your limit.

"It's a rare chance today, so you have to seize it. Even if you can't compare to those two, you still have to become one of the five disciples."

As he said those words, the vice treasurer had an incredibly serious look on his face. It was as if all the vice treasurer's hopes were on Jackie. Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, wanting to say something. Yet, he swallowed the words back after thinking about it.

Chapter 2448
Gilbert looked like he had swallowed a few flies. He had been incredibly hopeful that the vice treasurer would have said those words to him, but the vice treasurer did not even spare him a second glance.

The vice treasurer had placed all his hopes on Jackie. It was as if Gilbert and Andrew were merely there to make up the numbers.

Andrew had a bitter look on his face as well. He has had a lot of conflicts with Gilbert in the past, and their relationship was not something that could ever be fixed.

Yet, thanks to Jackie, he had put those grudges at the back of his mind.

Andrew said with a dark look on his face, "Vice treasurer, you seem to have placed all your hope on Jackie.

"However, you should still remind Jackie that even though his talents are pretty good, he should still not get too arrogant."

Those were incredibly condescending words. Andrew was incredibly furious at that moment and did not really hold back.

Gilbert added hurriedly after that, "Andrew is right. Even though Jackie's talents are quite good, he shouldn't be too arrogant. Those words won't do you any good."

Jackie was speechless at their jabs. Jackie had not said anything the whole time, so where was that arrogance they were speaking off?

It was obvious the two of them could not find anything else to mock him about, and casually decided to place the flaw of arrogance on him. They were also trying to tell the vice treasurer to not treat him too well.

Jackie could not be bothered to fight with the two of them, but he knew very well that they would just take things for granted if he kept on retreating.

He coldly smiled and turned around to look at them, “Don’t be jealous. If you have the skills, then the vice treasurer will place just as much importance on the two of you.

“You keep saying I’m arrogant, but how have I ever acted so?”

Those words completely stuffed their mouths. They could not even think of anything to reply with. Their plan had been to forcibly stick the label of arrogance onto Jackie.

“Stop trying to cause more trouble at this point. If no one managed to enter the top five and become a student of the alliance this time, Heavenly Pills’ reputation would be ruined!”

Jackie took a deep breath as he turned around. Looking at the groups that were slowly taking shape, he no longer wanted to delay things.

Either because he was too angry or because he could not figure out how to fight back. Gilbert stomped over to the east group. Andrew’s lips twitched as he followed behind Gilbert.

Both of them were not talented in discerning materials. They could only rely on forming pill runes to prove themselves. Jackie looked at them standing at the back of the group and sighed helplessly.

Sometimes, he did not want to show off too much, but he was usually forced to. The vice treasurer frowned when he saw that Jackie did not move and said, “Why aren’t you going over? If you go any later, Elder Horst will ask questions.”

Chapter 2449
Jackie was the only one who remained standing at that point. He seemed to be hesitating and seemed to be waiting as well. The moment the vice treasurer finished saying that, Elder Horst’s curious gaze moved over.

Even though his eyes reveal too much, Jackie could still feel a hint of sharpness within. It was as if he would be disqualified if he did not move.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. He could no longer wait, so he walked toward the area that he had already planned to

In the beginning, Jackie did not attract much attention. After all, he might have been the last one, but no one recognized him. Even though he was from Heavenly Pills, other than those who had already met him, no one knew who he was.

As he continued moving toward the west, everyone’s gazes started to shift onto him. The vice treasurer’s face was also gradually turning sour when he noticed which direction Jackie was slowly heading toward.

“Is that guy trying to go behind Rudy? Is he also trying to prove himself by refining a sixth-grade pill?

“He must be. Unless he’s an idiot or he didn’t hear the rules carefully, he would not be heading to that end. Who is he? Why have I never heard of him?”

“I saw him standing behind the vice treasurer of Heavenly Pills earlier, so that must be where he’s from. I know Heavenly Pills quite well, but I’ve never seen this person. What’s his name? Does anyone know?”

The discussions started to erupt among the crowd. Everyone started to look at Jackie with curious and confused expressions.

Jackie took a deep breath, ignoring the gazes and discussions of those around him. Rudy’s puzzled look threatened to see through Jackie’s body.

Grayson frowned as well. He gave a measuring look at Jackie, seemingly wondering who Jackie was. He had never seen Jackie before.

The vice treasurer looked at Jackie, not knowing what to do. He stood on the spot in panic.

Jackie stood behind Rudy resolutely. The puzzled expressions shifted between Jackie and the vice treasurer.

No one knew who Jackie was, but as the leader of Heavenly Pills’ team, the vice treasurer definitely did. The vice treasurer definitely knew of Jackie’s skills and talents as well.

Constance and Zayne exchanged a look. Both of them could see the confusion in each other’s eyes. They knew more about Heavenly Pills than any regular disciple.

After all, they had to deal with much more matters as one of the people in power. They both knew the value of information. Yet, they had never heard of a master in Heavenly Pills nor had they ever seen that person.

Could Heavenly Pills have also received the news before hand and decided to hide a master in their midsts?

Various speculations started to run in their heads. They looked at the vice treasurer with inquisitive expressions. The vice treasurer was struggling to keep his speechless demeanor.

If the situation had been appropriate for it, he would have rushed right in front of Jackie and asked if Jackie’s brain was working properly.

Chapter 2450
No one knew better than the vice treasurer what a sixth-grade pill meant. In so many years, Heavenly Pills had accepted an uncountable amount of students, but there were not many who actually became sixth-grade alchemists.

Constance let out a meaningful smile as he asked," Vice treasurer, you really have so much up your sleeves. I can't believe Heavenly Pills has a master as well. I'd never heard of it before."

The vice treasurer's lips twitched. He wanted to explain himself, but if he said that Jackie could not refine sixth-grade pills, and only had some talent in forming pill runes, it would be a massive joke. Everyone would laugh at Heavenly Pills.

Yet, if he remained stubborn, Jackie would end up revealing everything when it was time to refine the pills. Then, the humiliation would be worse.

His hands trembled. He had never felt like he was in such a troubled position before in all his years. He felt like he was trapped between two hard spots. Everyone thought that the vice treasurer was actually planning on using silence to answer the question when they saw that the vice treasurer said nothing.

However, Constance seemed unwilling to let him off, and wanted to pursue the matter to the end. He asked, "What's this student's name? Which family or what background did he come from? To be able to refine a sixth-grade pill at that age must mean he's incredibly talented…"

The vice treasurer could no longer hold on. He turned around and used a low voice to say, "He's just trying out. Mr. Constance, you'd better focus on your own disciples. You don't have to care about Heavenly Pills.

Constance could immediately catch the guilt in the vice treasurer's words. Suddenly, Constance was even more interested. He could not help but place his gaze on Jackie again.

Zayne looked over as well. Even Elder Horst had his gaze fixed on Jackie. Everyone was trying to see if they could figure something out.

Jackie felt a little exasperated. He composed himself as he looked slightly downward. He ignored everything around him.

Gilbert was getting a little impatient. Possibly because of the vice treasurer's earlier attitude toward him, Gilbert's hatred for Jackie had already boiled over.

He had already hated Jackie when they were back in Heavenly Pills. Jackie's actions at that moment were perfect for him to throw in some insults.

Gilbert impulsively said, "Jackie, have you gone crazy? Do you know what you're doing? You really are bold. Can you even refine a sixth-grade pill? Why are you standing there?!

"Do you think you can refine a sixth-grade pill just because you managed to form three hundred pill runes before? Don't forget, forming a sixth-grade pill needs at least eight hundred pill runes. Can you do that?"

Those words were incredibly accusatory, but they had served to reveal more about Jackie. It was then that everyone understood. Jackie was not that exceptional. Jackie could only form three hundred pill runes at most.

He was probably standing behind Rudy because he was shameless and incredibly daring!

Gilbert's words had answered the question in everyone's minds, and laughter erupted.

"Is there something wrong with that guy's head? Does he think that making a sixth-grade pill is easy? No wonder the vice treasurer had such a strange expression. It looks like the vice treasurer never expected Jackie to stand at the west side!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2451 - 2455

Chapter 2451
“There really must be something wrong with this guy’s head. Does he really think that he’s on par with the other two in front of him just by standing in the same group? That’s a little too much of a joke…”

“I thought that the test was going to be strict and serious. I can’t believe I got to witness such a show. My stomach hurts from laughing…”

Andrew frowned, feeling embarrassed. The vice treasurer was furious to the point that he started to tremble after hearing Gilbert’s words. He wanted nothing more than to rush over and slap Gilbert a few times.

For the sake of himself, Gilbert had ignored Heavenly Pills’ reputation. They were about to be thoroughly embarrassed. No matter what, it would be a humiliation that Heavenly Pills would not be able to wipe away.

The vice treasurer shouted out, “Shut up right now! What nonsense are you talking about? If you don’t want to take part in this examination then get lost!”

The vice treasurer was in absolute rage. When he spoke, his expression was incredibly vicious. He even had thoughts of killing Gilbert on the spot. Being berated like that caused Gilbert to realize that he had misspoken.

Advertisement

Yet, there was no way for him to take back those words he had said. He coughed softly before hurriedly turning his head around, not daring to utter another word.

There was no meaning to keeping silent anymore. Everyone already knew Jackie’s background and skills. Constance could not hold himself back from laughing out loud

“Vice treasurer, don’t be angry. You might hurt yourself from the anger. I actually really admire the fact that Heavenly Pills managed to get such a fearless student.”

Those words were full of mockery. The vice treasurer’s face soured even more. At that moment, he did not just want to kill Gilbert, he wanted to beat Jackie up as well. He felt like he was incredibly unlucky that day for him to be so thoroughly humiliated by the action of those two students.

Advertisement

He took a deep breath, holding himself back from trying to argue with Constance. He knew that he would just be even more embarrassed later on if he tried to rebuke anything.

He had known that Jackie had not revealed his full strength during the test before. Yet, no matter how talented Jackie was, there was no way Jackie could refine a sixth-grade pill!

Rudy let out a light snort as he glanced at Jackie. At the same time, Grayson and Rudy were actually in sync as they both looked at Jackie with thinly veiled disgust.

At that point, Jackie seemed like someone who was trying to reach above his station. It completely disgusted the two of them. They even felt like it was a n insult to them for Jackie to be standing behind them.

Grayson frowned as he said coldly, “If you don’t have the skills, then don’t try to show off so much. Who do you think you are to stand behind me?!

“You’re only able to form three hundred pill runes, and you dare to try to refine a sixth-grade pill? Time can really tell what kind of a person they really are!”

Rudy let out a laugh as he followed Grayson, “Is there something wrong with your head? Do you know that your actions have no meaning to them other than you being laughed at?

“It’s not like your talents can compare to ours just because you’re standing behind us. Do you not know your place?”

Jackie helplessly sighed. Jackie hated those meaningless conflicts. He usually preferred to ignore all the nonsense.

Advertisement

Chapter 2452
There were too many accusations being thrown out and too many insults. Even if he did not want to argue with those people, he was still forced to slowly raise his head.

He looked into Rudy’s eyes which were filled with mockery. It was as if he was merely a dog in Rudy’s eyes.

Jackie let out a cold laugh, “So are you just going to listen to the dog that is barking the loudest?”

Those words had managed to successfully mock everyone there. He had compared Gilbert to a dog and mocked everyone for listening to that dog. It had caused a change in expression on everyone's faces.

Gilbert almost lost himself to his anger. He could not believe that Jackie still managed to throw out such an insult even with things as they were. Gilbert was red in anger as he turned around to glare at Jackie.

He had wanted to shout back but was stopped by the vice treasurer. "It looks like you really don't want to take part in the test anymore!

That one sentence had completely stopped Gilbert from saving anything, Gilbert realized that he had heavily offended the vice treasurer.

If he still insisted on fighting against Jackie, the vice treasurer might really pull him out. Then, he would not even be able to take part in the tests.

Hence, he was forced to hold in all the anger in his heart as he protest against Jackie's words with a glare.

Grayson and Rude were infuriated by those words earlier. They were already looking down on Jackie, thinking that Jackie was just a brainless, low-class person

Yet, the two of them could not believe that such a person actually dared to rebuke them with such Vicious words

Rudy pointed at Jackie and said, "You're really daring!

Jackie let out a cold laugh. He did not care how dark Rudy's face looked or how angry Rudy was. He continued saying, "You're a student, and I'm a student too. What's the difference between us? Why are you saying all this? If you hadn't been insulting me like that, I wouldn't even have bothered with all of you!"

Jackie's words were heard by everyone present. Everyone felt like there was not just something wrong with Jackie's head, he was probably crazy as well.

Did he not know the consequences of his words? Even though Rudy was a student as well, Rudy's worth was several times more than Jackie's.

Rudy was someone who could refine a sixth-grade pill whereas Jackie could only form three hundred pill runes. The two of them were far too different. Rudy was someone who would definitely become a sixth grade alchemist, an existence that everyone respected.

Jackie's future was unknown. Jackie had actually offended someone so wantonly. Rudy would definitely not let him off. Once Rudy becomes a sixth – or even seventh-grade alchemist, Rudy would definitely deal with Jackie.

Rudy's face was red when he said, "Good! Very good! Brat, you're the most daring person I've ever met. Remember the words you've said today. In the future, you'll definitely pay for your words. Don't cry when that happens!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he answered nonchalantly, "Of course, I'll remember what I said today. I'll remember what you said today as well."

Rudy saw that Jackie was not going to give way no matter what he said. If it continued, Rudy would definitely lose his composure. No one expected Jackie to have such a stubborn mouth.

Rudy was forced to swallow his anger and avert his gaze. Rudy even started to plan how he would deal with Jackie later on.

Chapter 2453
Grayson narrowed his eyes as he looked at Jackie in anger as well. He said in a cold tone, "It seems like you've come here today just to embarrass yourself."

After saying that, Grayson turned away and remained silent. The sounds of the conflict had stopped, and everyone around was whispering in a discussion

Elder Horst looked at Jackie meaningfully, as if he was looking at Jackie in a different light. Elder Horst was suddenly incredibly curious about Jackie, but he could naturally not say anything about it at that moment.

When he say that everyone had already formed their groups, Elder Horst waved and said, "Come with me!

Everyone followed Elder Horst in their respective groups. Elder Horst entered the spirit vessel. The interior of the vessel was filled with people hurrying around.

They followed closely behind Elder Horst, twisting and turning before they finally arrived in a spacious room. The room was so spacious that it could already be considered a hall.

The moment they stepped into the room, everyone could feel a dense pill aura around the atmosphere. The room was more than large enough for the eighty of them.

Jackie did a bit of estimation. The room was large enough to accommodate another hundred more people on top of them.

The west end of the room had alchemical equipment. There were not just furnaces, there were even special flames lit up there.

Elder Horst turned around and said in his jovial tone,

Those who want to prove your talent and skills through refining a sixth-grade pill, head to the west end

“Those who want to form pill runes to prove yourselves, stand on the east side and start forming the pill runes. The rest, wait for further instructions!

After Elder Horst said that, Jackie walked over to the west. He ignored everything else as he put his focus on the pill furnace and the ingredients in front of the furnace.

Jackie could tell what the ingredients were. They were the ingredients for an Energy Breaking Pill. Energy Breaking Pills were the most common and easiest to refine sixth-grade pills. Normally, test takers who wanted to refine a sixth-grade pill would choose that to prove their worth.

Jackie had not planned on refining an Energy Breaking Pill. Even though the Energy Breaking Pill was easier and had a higher chance of success, it is also worth less than other sixth-grade pills.

He had wanted to refine an even more expensive pill. After he refined it, he would be able to sell the pill for spirit crystals.

Jackie’s mind was filled with spirit crystals at that time. As long as he could get even more spirit crystals, he could ignore everything else. After all, he was pursuing the path of an alchemist completely for the sake of gaining even more spirit crystals.

Otherwise, he would never have come to this place.

Elder Horst arranged for three of them to stand before the first three furnaces. Grayson stood at the front while Rudy stood between Jackie and Grayson.

Next to the furnace were a few small bowls that contained the materials for an Energy Breaking Pill.

Elder Horst explained the rules simply, “You can try three times. If you fail all three times, it means you don’t have the right to become a sixth-grade alchemist.”

When he said that, Elder Horst’s gaze had been on Jackie. It was as if those words were targeted at Jackie. Jackie raised an eyebrow, not caring about what Elder Horst had to say.

Chapter 2454
Elder Horst let out a slight cough as he continued,” After you successfully refine the pills, bring them to me for verification. You will have eight hours for the test. If you can’t refine the pill within eight hours, you will fail the test, so don’t be too slow.”

The three of them nodded at practically the same time. After Elder Horst gave them their instructions, he arranged for a few workers to be their judges. The workers stood behind the three of them to make sure they did not do anything sketchy.

After that, Elder Horst turned around and went to the other test-takers. Rudy narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Jackie and said, “The most important step to refining a sixth-grade pill is the final step. However, the initial steps aren’t easy either. If you think you can’t do it, then don’t waste the materials. These ingredients aren’t cheap. You wouldn’t be able to afford it even if you sold yourself!”

Jackie let out a light breath after hearing those words. He suddenly realized that he had lost the motivation to even open his mouth. He decided to ignore the guy and anything the guy would say.

There was no point in replying anyway. Rudy looked down at him and thought that he could not refine a sixth-grade pill. Rudy also thought he was a low class individual.

No matter what he said, Rudy would not stop his insults anyway.

Jackie let out a cold smile, not answering Rudy. He did not even bother looking at Rudy as he reached out his right hand to grab the materials to refine the Energy Breaking Pill. He slowly put the materials into the furnace one by one.

The first step to refining a sixth-grade pill was to turn all those materials into liquid form. That step was a challenge for any alchemist. The higher the level of the pill, the harder the process was.

However, anyone who dared to attempt refining a sixth-grade pill would have already been incredibly familiar with that step. The hardest was the last step, condensing the pill runes and fusing them with the pill.

Only with a fifty percent refinement would the pill be considered complete. That information flashed through his mind as Jackie’s expression hardened. He immediately shut off everything around him.

He put his full focus on the pill furnace. Jackie was incredibly focused, but the others around him were not. Grayson and Rudy were incredibly confident in themselves.

Even delaying it a little would not affect the end results, so they stopped their movements when Jackie was refining the pill. They stared at Jackie’s confident movements.

“Why don’t we make a bet!” Just as Jackie threw himself into refining the pill, Rudy suddenly spoke to Grayson.

Grayson raised an eyebrow. He did not have a good impression of Rudy, but he knew that Rudy was talented. Grayson could tell that Rudy might be able to pose a challenge to him.

Even though he looked down on Rudy, Rudy was still much closer to his level than Jackie. He let out a smile as he nodded at Rudy’s words, “What do you want to bet on?”

Rudy let out a meaningful smile and said, “Let’s bet on how far this brat can go.” Grayson was interested upon hearing that.

He moved out of his position as he stood next to Rudy, looking at Jackie’s actions together.

At that moment, Jackie was not aware of anything that was happening at all. Even though the two of them were staring right at him, Jackie did not realize It at all.

Chapter 2455
As long as it did not affect him refining the pill, the two of them could do whatever they wanted. It had nothing to do with him at all.

“Even though I look down on this guy, he still dared to brag around so much. I think he should have some amount of talent. He shouldn’t have any problems going through the first two steps.” Grayson said plainly.

Rudy looked over at Grayson with a cold smile on his face and replied, “You seem very confident in this guy. I think what he said earlier was just all nonsense.

“I think he’ll only get to the second step before he fails completely! I really want to see how this brat will face us after that.”

Grayson took a deep breath. He could feel that Rudy’s anger at Jackie was much deeper than his own.

Rudy’s eyes were practically on fire when he said those words. It was obvious how much he hated Jackie.

Grayson let out a cold laugh, “Then let’s see what happens. I feel like he should be able to get to the last step. It would be decent enough if he manages to get to a hundred pill runes.”

After the two of them said all that, they shut their mouths at the same time as they quietly looked at Jackie.

They looked on as Jackie took out the last spiritual grass. That spiritual grass was called dragon bone grass. It got its name because it looked like a dragon’s bone. It was the last and most important ingredient to refining an Energy Breaking Pill.

As long as he successfully refined it into liquid and mix it with the others, the first step would be completely done.

Even though the first step was not too difficult for most people, it needed a lot of practice. A lot of effort and resources have to be put inside.

The reason why most people were not willing to become alchemists was that alchemy used up a lot of time and spirit crystals. It was why most students were forced to rely on backers.

That was because it was incredibly difficult to improve alone. With a light sound, all the heat that Jackie controlled was forced onto the dragon bone grass.

The dragon bone grass suddenly started to smoke. It was quickly turning into a faint green liquid, mixing into the other liquids that Jackie had refined earlier. His movements looked incredibly practiced.

Those movements looked like they had been done tens of thousands of times. There was no hesitation and not a single mistake. Looking at that, Rudy raised an eyebrow

Grayson whispered, “It looks like this guy has practiced liquifying materials a lot. Even I would only be on par with him. It’s quite surprising.”

After hearing that, Rudy let out a snort, “You really are confident in him. We were just talking about our bet just now, but we never put anything on the line. Why don’t we…”

After that, Rudy turned around to face Grayson. At that moment, Rudy’s expression turned serious, as if a grand decision was about to be made.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2456 - 2460

Chapter 2456
He thought for a long time before he said, “I’ll bet a middle-priced sixth-grade pill. As for what pill it is, you can decide. Of course, that’s if you win.”

Rudy’s words ignited Grayson’s competitive spirit. He never expected that Rudy would talk about it so seriously. It was as if Rudy had mustered up his resolve.

Grayson was quite rich at that moment. A single sixth -grade pill was not much to him. He nodded casually, “Sure! I’ll bet that he fails at the last step.”

Rudy nodded, “I’ll bet that he fails at the second step. He won’t even be able to form a pill!”

Those words were incredibly resolute. It was as if he would start fighting if Grayson said anything against it.

Grayson raised an eyebrow as he let out a laugh,” Then I’ll bet a sixth-grade pill as well. You’re allowed to choose the type.”

Advertisement

The two of them had a deal, and they once again shifted their focus onto Jackie.

Those words that were being spoken near Jackie did not disturb Jackie at all. After completing the first step, he reached the second. The first two steps were actually not difficult for Jackie at all.

After all, he had absorbed the great warrior’s memories. The great warrior had done the first two steps countless times. He could easily make seventh, eighth, and ninth-grade pills, let alone sixth-grade ones.

After all, the great warriors had come from the first grade world, the Divine Void World. In the Divine Void World, even ninth-grade pills were incredibly common.

Advertisement

Jackie was still not completely merged with the memories at that moment. Otherwise, Jackie would have easily been able to refine ninth-grade pills.

Constance looked over to the vice treasurer. He saw that a curious and disdainful glint was in the vice treasurer's eyes.

He only stopped on the treasurer for a moment before he looked over at Jackie. His eyes constantly moved between the vice treasurer and Jackie, as if he was thinking about something and trying to make a decision.

After a good while, Constance suddenly said, "Your student over there really is someone special…"

The vice treasurer's face soured more when he heard that. He had already been incredibly miserable standing there.

Jackie, who he had thought was incredibly reliable, had suddenly thrown such a curveball. Then there was Gilbert who decided to ignore the Heavenly Pills' reputation to tell everyone about Jackie.

Those matters really troubled the vice treasurer. Constance's words almost caused the vice treasurer to leap into combat.

The vice treasurer suppressed his rage as he turned to look at Constance and replied, "Mr. Constance, you should focus on your own matters. There's no need for you to worry about me.

"I know how my student is. I know what he can or cannot do. I didn't really want any of them to become a formal student for the alliance anyway."

Advertisement

If Jackie had not wanted to refine a sixth-grade pill, Jackie would still have had the chance to become a formal student of the alliance. With Jackie's actions, it was already completely hopeless.

Chapter 2457
Jackie could not possibly refine a sixth-grade pill and had also lost the chance to prove himself through forming pill runes. Jackie had dug his own grave.

The vice treasurer could not help but prepare himself for future failure. Otherwise, he would be viciously mocked later on, and Constance's mockery would get worse.

The vice treasurer had experienced many things in his years, but he could not take that kind of mockery.

Constance let out a cold smile and said, “It looks like you don’t think Jackie can do anything at all. I really don’t know what Heavenly Pills are thinking to accept riff-raff like that.

“An idiot like him who insists on proving how stupid he is would be a burden even if he became a sixthgrade alchemist.”

Constance seemed to be giving out advice, but the tone was notably wrong. Anyone could have sensed that. The vice treasurer’s lips twitched as he turned to look away, no longer facing Constance.

“I know what you’re trying to say, but I can’t hear anything when my mood is bad. I’d advise you to shut your mouth and look at your favored disciple.”

After that, the vice treasurer deliberately moved away from Constance. The vice treasurer would probably end up spitting out blood if he continued talking to the guy. He decided to just shut his mouth and pretend to not see anything.

“The pill has taken shape!” Grayson suddenly said.

Grayson did not even have to mention that. Rudy had seen everything. At that moment, Rudy looked like he had swallowed a fly.

Rudy had thought that Jackie was just full of hot air. Yet, a dark pill body was in the furnace in front of Jackie, floating in the middle.

Jackie’s hands were constantly forming seals as the pill’s movement constantly sped up. At the peak of the speed, the pill suddenly stopped.

Under Jackie’s serious eyes, the pill started to emit a dense smell. Jackie let out a sigh of relief as he once again started to form seals. The dense fragrance filled Jackie’s nose as he quickly gathered all that pill aura together.

One by one, golden pill runes started to form. The faint golden runes started to illuminate the air around him.

When Rudy saw that scene, there was not much he could say. Rudy had lost completely. Jackie did not just complete the second step, he had even started on the third

Even though he knew that Jackie could not finish the third step, he was still unable to contain his anger.

Grayson let out a light laugh as he looked at Rudy and said, “It looks like I’ve won. Thank you…”

Rudy took a deep breath, unable to say anything back at Grayson. He was forced to nod sincerely and replied, “Don’t worry, I’ll let you pick a sixth-grade pill later.”

Either because of Rudy keeping to his words or because they both had Jackie as a common enemy, they had seemed to set aside their earlier differences.

Chapter 2458
Time slowly ticked away. Jackie was forming the pill runes at an even pace. One by one, the golden runes floated in the air, slowly accumulating.

Rudy and Grayson had yet to start on their own pills. They had put their full focus on Jackie. They witnessed for themselves as Jackie slowly condenses pill rune after pill rune.

The faint golden glow flashed in front of their eyes. The more they watched, the more apprehensive they were. Grayson had felt like Jackie would already be quite talented to even be able to form a hundred pill runes.

After all, forming pill runes by themselves was different from forming pill runes while refining a pill.

While refining, one would need to make sure the pill maintained its shape. Then, one would need to use the pill aura emitted from the pill to form pill runes. It needed the support of true and aura.

Most importantly, one needed to go through constant training to stabilize oneself. That needed incredible skills as well as a very long time.

Normal students would not be able to do that at all. Yet, Jackie seemed to be able to do it comfortably. Jackie was not panicking at all as he calmly formed his pill runes.

The number of pill runes slowly increased. From three hundred to five hundred, and he even managed to form eight hundred.

It was then that Jackie was once again the focus of everyone's attention, not only being focused by a select few.

Initially, everyone felt like Jackie had been an incredible idiot to stand behind Rudy.

A completely unknown brat had actually dared to challenge the third test to prove his skills. Everyone knew very well how difficult a sixth-grade pill was to form.

Only those with incredible talent could become sixth grade alchemists at their age. Back then, no one thought Jackie could do it.

After following Elder Horst into the hall, everyone's focus had been on the test. They no longer cared about the troublemaking Jackie. Yet, even if they wanted to ignore him, they could no longer do so.

Eight hundred pill runes floated in front of Jackie. The golden glow was absolutely radiant. Everyone was looking at Jackie in a completely different expression!

Even if Jackie's pill runes could not merge well enough with the pill, his performance would still have set him apart from the group.

It was way better than most of them! After all, being able to form one to two hundred pill runes among those students was already considered an incredible feat.

Jackie was able to control the pill body as he condensed eight hundred pill runes. That was something those students could only dream of. Rudy was already looking at Jackie with an incredibly dark look.

His hands trembled and he uttered, "How is this possible?! How could this guy actually form eight hundred pill runes?! How did he do it? Why can he do it?! I've never heard of him before!"

Rudy was already in a completely crazed state. Jackie had given Rudy a slap to the face with the demonstration of his skills.

All the mockery Rudy had thrown had been reflected right back at him. Rudy felt like a joke at that moment. It was no wonder Jackie's words had been so sharp before.

Jackie really did have the skill! Grayson's frown had not disappeared since Jackie had formed five hundred pill runes.

Grayson's mood was not much better than Rudy's. After all, it was too much of a shock. "Where did he come from? Why have I never heard of him before?! Is he actually able to form a sixth-grade pill?"

Chapter 2459
Grayson's voice was a little raspy. At that moment, Rudy was no longer in the mood to answer Grayson. Rudy looked at Jackie with an anxious look, praying that Jackie would fail! Only then would he be able to save himself from embarrassment.

The vice treasurer's eyes were about to pop out of their sockets. He gaped slightly as he looked at Jackie In disbelief.

He never expected that Jackie would actually be able to form eight hundred pill runes. He knew that Jackie had been hiding his skills, but he did not expect him to be so skillful.

The vice treasurer had thought that Jackie had gone crazy, but it seemed like he was the one who had been blind to Jackie's master!

Thinking about that, he took a deep breath, concealing his expression. He did not want anyone to notice anything strange.

Constance said in an incredibly cold voice, “Vice treasurer, your acting skills are getting better and better!”

When he said that, he was filled with rage. Thankfully, the vice treasurer had hidden his strange expression and returned to normal. Constance had not noticed anything at all and only felt like he had been playing around.

The vice treasurer let out a cold laugh, “What do you mean by my acting skills? I’m Heavenly Pills’ vice treasurer. I’m not some circus show.”

Constance slammed his hand down as he violently exclaimed, “Stop trying to pull one over me! I actually really thought that the brat was an idiot.

“It looks like you were just too good at acting. You managed to fool all of us!”

The vice treasurer did his best to control himself, not revealing any strange expressions. The vice treasurer struggled a little at Constance’s accusations. He had not been acting earlier and had really felt that way.

He had never known of Jackie’s true abilities. His shock was no less than anyone present. It was just that he could not voice out his surprise.

Zayne had been eagerly waiting to be entertained. Even though he was not in that great of a relationship with the vice treasurer, he could not really offend the vice treasurer too much.

After all, Zayne was part of the Rosefinch Pavilion. Heavenly Pills had Heavenly Auction House behind them, which had incredibly close ties with Rosefinch Pavilion. He could not make the situation too bad for the vice treasurer, but now he was a little anxious.

Zayne’s lips twitched, “Vice treasurer, did you need to do all that? They had to show their skills eventually anyway. What was the point of hiding everything from us? You caused us to think that you were just recruiting riff-raff.”

The vice treasurer let out a helpless sigh as he said, ” I’ve never seen Jackie refine a sixth-grade pill, so I can’t be sure if he can actually do it.

“I was more or less a little anxious. Naturally, I showed anxiety in my expression. It was you who jumped to conclusions, so this has nothing to do with me.”

The vice treasurer’s reasoning was a little forced, but it was still able to temporarily set the situation aside.

He did not want to go too deep into the topic. His eyes remained fixed on Jackie.

Gilbert and Andrew had already formed quite a few pill runes, but when they witnessed what Jackie was doing, they could no longer maintain their composure.

The runes they were forming suddenly disappeared, turning into pill auras. Gilbert looked at Jackie with a frown.

He pinched himself harshly to prove that he was not dreaming. “How is this possible?! How could he form eight hundred pill runes?!”

Chapter 2460
Gilbert felt like he was about to go crazy from anger. He had already been stamped on by Jackie before, but now he felt like he was about to be completely trampled over.

He had thought that Jackie had some talent, but would not be that much stronger than him. After witnessing all this for himself, he finally realized how much of a joke his thoughts were.

No wonder Jackie had always looked at him as if he was nothing. Jackie had never taken him seriously before at all. In Jackie’s eyes, Gilbert was merely a clown. Gilbert could not take it after realizing that point.

Earlier, he might have offended the vice treasurer, but he had turned Jackie into a joke. Once Jackie returned to Heavenly Pills, Jackie would be punished severely. After all, Heavenly Pills really held a lot of importance in their reputation.

Jackie’s actions had clearly smeared a black spot on Heavenly Pills’ reputation before. Yet, his thoughts had been completely shattered by Jackie.

Gilbert’s hands trembled. He could not even breathe properly at that point. “I refuse to believe it! Why can he do all this? Why does he have so much talent? I’ve never seen…”

He could not finish his sentence. He had never seen anyone as talented as Jackie. Jackie looked to be about the same age as him, but Jackie was so much more talented than he was.

It was one thing for Jackie to be better at fighting than him, but they had such a huge gap even in alchemy. How could he possibly stand it? Gilbert’s mild trembling had turned into full-on shaking as if he was having a fit.

His complexion kept on changing as if he had suffered some disease. Andrew’s expression was not much better than Gilbert’s, but he was at least a little calmer than Gilbert.

Andrew was also dealt a heavy blow. He gulped as he sighed, “So there’s such a big gap between us. It’s such a joke that I had wanted to use my skills to prove myself. Such a huge joke…”

Andrew was just like Gilbert. He felt like all his actions in front of Jackie before were all just a massive joke. The more he thought about it, the more it seemed that way.

The discussions around the place at that moment shot up in waves.

“Why have I never heard of Heavenly Pills having such a master before?! His talents are equal to Grayson’s! Looking at him, he should be around our age. No wonder he dared to stand behind Rudy. He was no idiot, he really did have the skills!”

“I was saying that he didn’t look like an idiot. Heavenly Pills really hid this very well. I’m so surprised.

“If Jackie grows up, Heavenly Pills will definitely be much stronger. When I go back, I have to tell the elders…”

The discussions flew everywhere, but it did not disturb Jackie at all. Jackie had a challenge in front of him at that moment, which was the last step. He needed to merge the pill runes with the pill body.

Only with a fifty percent refinement would the Energy Breaking Pill be considered successful. With Jackie’s skills, it would not be hard for him to do so, but he did not want to expose too much of his talents.

His goal was to become a sixth-grade alchemist and enter the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. He did not want too many eyes on him, or he might risk being targeted by others.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2461 - 2465

Chapter 2461
After all, he was still not that skilled. In the martial world, the strong were always the winners. He did not want to cause any unnecessary trouble at that moment. With that question in mind, Jackie made a clear decision.

He formed seals after seals with his hands as the pill body started to spin slowly again. With a wave of his right hand, the golden pill runes that were in the air started to rapidly spin around the pill body.

The moment they fused with the pill body, the golden pill runes let out a vibrant, golden glow. After that, they fused with the pill body.

There were a total of eight hundred and thirty pill runes. Jackie controlled those runes and fused them into the pill body one by one. As the pill runes fused with the pill body, Jackie's hand shook a bit, doing something to the pill body.

It caused the pill that would have been at an eighty percent refinement to turn into a fifty percent one! Jackie deliberately slowed down the process before he fused the pill runes with the pill body.

An Energy Breaking Pill that was glowing in a faint golden light spun in the air. Jackie reached out and grabbed the pill. He let out a breath as the somewhat uncertain feeling in his heart died down.

Advertisement

"Success." He plainly said.

At that moment, his focus shifted to his surroundings. He once again felt gazes on his body. He immediately turned around and saw Rudy and Grayson staring at him with wide eyes.

The two of them were looking at him as if he had killed their fathers. Rudy was in an especially bad state. His mouth was twitching as if he had been poisoned

Rudy's breath was erratic and his face was pale. It was obvious how much of a blow his mental state had been dealt with. Grayson was in a slightly better state, but not much better.

Advertisement

He could even see jealousy and hatred in Grayson's eyes! Facing that expression, Jackie was incredibly calm. He had seen that look on so many people before.

Whenever he performed just a little better, it could invite the hatred of others. Grayson had been claiming that his talents were superior, and had been showing off in front of everyone.

Yet, even if he successfully refined a sixth-grade pill at that moment, it would not cause that much excitement. Grayson really hated Jackie for stealing his thunder.

After Jackie successfully refined a sixth-grade pill, the others would no longer hold Grayson in that high of regard. Grayson sighed as he coldly stared at Jackie.

"You're really something else. I thought there was something wrong with your head before, but you really do have the skills. However, there's something wrong with your character for sure. Since you're so talented, why didn't you just voice it out earlier?

"You insisted on playing around with us and shocking us? I won't respect your disgusting behavior!"

Jackie was a little speechless at Grayson's words. Even if he had said he was talented earlier, it would merely have invited more mockery. Why would he have done that?

Only by proving his skills would he be able to shut everyone up.

Chapter 2462
Grayson said that merely because he did not want people to look at him differently after he showed off his talents. He wanted Elder Horst to have a better view of him than Jackie.

Advertisement

Jackie let out a soft laugh and said, "Even if you want to try to bring me down, you should at least use your brain. If I had said that I was talented just now, what would all of you have thought?

"You're just saying all of this because I stole your thunder. I hate people like you who think so much of your meager talents the most. All you do is try and push everyone down from your high seats!"

Those words almost caused Grayson to spit out blood. That brat's mouth was just as amazing as his talents.

Grayson shouted out with clenched fists, "Don't think that you can beat me just because you managed to refine a sixth-grade pill!

“Let me tell you, I’m only at this level now because I’ve only learned the Way of the Pill for a short time. If you give me a bit more time, I’ll definitely be better than you. I’ll be so much better than you, you won’t even have room to breathe!”

Jackie coldly laughed as he averted his gaze, not even bothering to talk to Grayson anymore. Rudy looked like his bones had been snapped by someone. He looked like he was about to collapse on the floor. He was furious, his stomach was filled with inexhaustible rage, but there was nothing he could do.

He wanted to voice out all his anger just like Grayson had done. He wanted to shout and scream, but Rudy knew very well that Jackie would not allow himself to be trampled all over.

No matter what he said, it would just be seen as a joke. Suddenly, everyone had strange looks on their faces. There was conflict and shock on their faces, as well as reluctance.

Elder Horst coughed lightly, breaking the strange atmosphere. He walked a few steps forward as he reached out to Jackie and said, “Hand over the Energy Breaking Pill. Let me check if the refinement is at fifty percent.”

Elder Horst’s words successfully plunged everyone into a strange silence again. Everyone widened their eyes as they waited for Elder Horst’s final result.

If Jackie did not manage a fifty percent refinement with the Energy Breaking Pill, it would prove that he did not truly have the skill to become a sixth-grade alchemist. It would mean that his talents were not as high as they expected.

Hearing Elder Horst’s words, Grayson and Rudy looked up at the elder with an expectant gaze.

Elder Horst ignored all the attention. He placed Jackie’s Energy Breaking Pill in his palm before he furrowed his eyebrows as he observed the pill in earnest. Elder Horst was a true eighth-grade alchemist

There was no way he would make any mistakes when verifying pills. After all, the Energy Breaking Pill was just a sixth-grade pill.

The vice treasurer clenched his fists tightly. He looked much more nervous than everyone else there. His breath started to get erratic. If Jackie really did succeed in becoming a sixth-grade alchemist, it would be something that would have the whole of Heavenly Pills celebrating. After all, a student as talented as Jackie would definitely be able to accomplish a lot if he was brought up properly.

Even a seventh-grade alchemist would not be within his limits. Heavenly Pills would greatly benefit from him in the future. Jackie was a student under him, so he would definitely be able to benefit greatly from Jackie in the future as well!

Elder Horst looked at the Energy Breaking Pill with great scrutiny. In the end, there was a glint in his eyes as his lips curled up into a smile.

Chapter 2463
Looking at that smile, the vice treasurer's breath almost stopped. Elder Horst said confidently, "Over fifty percent refinement! Even though it's not at sixty percent, it's still almost there. Very good! As of right now, you're a sixth-grade alchemist."

When he said that, Elder Horst had a slight smile on his face as he looked at Jackie with a relieved expression. Elder Horst's words were basically a confirmation

At that moment, differing feelings went through everyone's hearts. Most of them felt shocked. Jackie had only been slightly off from being at sixty percent refinement. It meant that Jackie was slightly better than regular sixth-grade alchemists.

They were all so far away from being a sixth-grade alchemist, but Jackie was already making his steps toward being a seventh-grade alchemist. There was such a huge difference in their talents that they were forced to admit defeat!

Rudy took a deep breath. His body swayed and he was about to lose it. No matter what he did at that moment, it would be useless.

He turned around abruptly as he walked toward the materials that Elder Horst had prepared for him. He stared at Jackie the whole way. He had yet to even start refining his pill. Jackie dealt a huge blow to his mood, but the test needed to continue.

Just as he turned around, a familiar voice was heard behind him. Constance berated, "Throw those dumb thoughts out of your head. Don't let this affect you at all! No matter how strong anyone else is, it's not you. What did you come here for? Surely you don't need me to remind you.

"If you're affected by something like this, and fail to become a student of the alliance, I'll tell the elders everything when we're back. You know how the elders are. You know what kind of punishment you'll get!"

Rudy was so scared that he shivered. He did not even dare to turn his head around. Constance's words were no joke. There was not a single elder in Golden Pills that was not ruthless.

If anything happened at that moment, he did not even dare to imagine what he would face when he went back. He hurriedly composed himself and took a few deep breaths. He cast his gaze on the furnace.

He mumbled to himself, "Only success! No failure is allowed!"

He had been dealt a heavy blow. The person he had thought he would be able to trample beneath his feet had actually turned out so talented. There was nowhere for him to vent his anger, so he was naturally suffering at that moment.

Grayson saw that Rudy had already started refining his pills and did not dare to delay any longer. At that moment, he started to move as well. It was not the time for him to wonder how talented Jackie was.

He needed to hurry up and refine an Energy Breaking Pill to prove his talent and skill!

Elder Horst held his protruded belly as walked toward Jackie. He reached out his large hand as he pats Jackie on the shoulder.

“Not bad! You are quite the rare sprout! I haven’t seen anyone with such potential in two or three years.

“Don’t worry, the recruitment this time is different from before. The alliance will give you everything you need to grow. All you need to do is listen to our arrangements.

Jackie looked up at the smiling elder. He merely gave a slight nod, not saying anything.

Chapter 2464
Elder Horst was painting a very nice picture, but Jackie was not a naïve child. He would not believe someone else so easily.

Even though Elder Horst had said that something had happened in the alliance which caused the recruitment to be different, Jackie was still waiting to find out how it would affect him.

The vice treasurer excitedly walked to Jackie. He could not hold back the smile on his face. “You did very well!” He praised loudly.

Jackie merely nodded slightly again. He did not have too much of a reaction. He had always known his skill and potential, so he would naturally not be as excited as everyone else.

“Don’t worry, Heavenly Pills will absolutely not let your talents go to waste. We’ll definitely raise you up properly, as long as you remain loyal to us!” There was another meaning to the vice treasurer’s words, but his face remained incredibly excited.

Jackie could not help but let out a silent laugh. The vice treasurer was actually more interested in the last few words. He wanted Jackie to remain loyal. Only with enough loyalty would Jackie get enough resources.

After all, Heavenly Pills would not waste its resources and gain nothing. Jackie nodded, still not saying anything. Jackie was not someone who forgot those who helped him.

As long as Heavenly Pills did not do anything against him or harm him, he would repay them in the future.

At some point, Constance and Zayne had arrived next to them. The two of them measured Jackie properly. This time, they were looking at him with a different expression.

The first time, they looked at him as if he was a clown. This time, they seemed deep in thought, as if they wanted to find out everything about Jackie.

Constance let out a slight smile as he said plainly," You really are a master. Good talent shouldn't be hidden. The outer regions are still the outer regions. If someone of your talent was in the inner regions, you'd definitely cause many waves!"

Constance was trying to overstep his boundaries at that moment. When the vice treasurer heard that, he replied angrily, "Mr. Constance, stop right there! Don't think I don't know how the inner region acts!

"There are so many resources, but you all scheme among each other so much. If a master went inside, who knows what would happen to them!"

Jackie glanced at the vice treasurer. Just as the vice treasurer was going to continue fighting, Jackie raised a hand to stop him. He turned to look at Constance.

Jackie acted as if he had forgotten everything Constance had said to him before. Jackie said calmly," Of course, I'd want to go to Golden Pills…"

Those words caused a chill to go through the vice treasurer. The vice treasurer hurriedly turned around with widened eyes. He looked at Jackie in disbelief and was about to say something when Jackie continued.

"But alas, I have an incredibly bad relationship with Rudy from Golden Pills. You've seen what he was doing just now.

"If I join Golden Pills, Rudy would definitely plot something against me. I just want to focus on alchemy. I obviously wouldn't want these petty matters affecting me.

"You should understand! As long as Rudy is in Golden Pills, I'll never join you!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2466 - 2470

Chapter 2465
Jackie's words had been incredibly venomous. He had pinned the blame on Rudy for not joining Golden Pills.

If Jackie got more and more talented, Golden Pills might actually consider kicking Rudy out to make Jackie a formal student!

Sure enough, the moment Jackie finished, Constance was deep in thought. It was as if he was seriously considering the possibility. Before the vice treasurer exploded, Jackie hurriedly turned over and winked at the vice treasurer.

The vice treasurer immediately understood what Jackie was doing. He suppressed the anger in his heart as he said nothing.

At that moment, a bang was suddenly heard behind them. A few of them turned around to look and saw that Rudy's furnace had a small explosion. The medicinal liquids splattered everywhere.

Rudy's first try had been a total failure! Jackie smirked coldly. Logically, the first step should have been the easiest. Mistakes should never be made at that step.

Advertisement

Rudy's medicinal liquids had exploded because of his errant thoughts. He had heard everything Jackie had said earlier.

Jackie had managed to shut off everything else when he was refining earlier, but Rudy had been unable to completely focus on everything with his thoughts all over the place.

When he heard those words that Jackie had deliberately targeted at him, Rudy naturally lost his composure. With Jackie's talents already causing Rudy's whole body to tremble, he lost control of the balance for a moment and caused the furnace to explode.

Looking at that sight, Constance frowned as he walked forward and said, "Rudy! Did you not hear what I said earlier? If you mess this up, you'll definitely be punished when you get back! Throw those dumb thoughts away right now!

Advertisement

“You can’t make any more mistakes. Don’t forget, you only have three chances. You’ve already ruined one right at the first step, so what if you make another mistake?! You know the consequences!”

Constance had forced out the last few words through clenched teeth. It was obvious how angry Constance was at that moment.

Jackie let out a cold laugh. That was exactly what he had wanted. Elder Horst glanced over at Jackie and had naturally caught Jackie’s smile. He suddenly laughed as he told the servant behind him, “Bring Jackie to the back hall. After that, give him the sixth grade alchemist badge and make a record for him. I’ll make more arrangements after the test.”

The servant behind elder Horst hurriedly nodded. The servant hurried over and motioned to Jackie. Jackie let out an exasperated sigh, he was still not that good at controlling his own expressions.

He should not have let out that laugh earlier. Otherwise, he would have been able to pull off more tricks. He wanted to at least ruin that guy’s test.

After all, that guy kept on causing him trouble. If Jackie let Rudy off like that, Rudy might think that Jackie was an easy target.

Yet, it seemed like Elder Horst was not going to give him any chance to do that. Jackie let out a sigh, not saying anything else as he followed the servant to the back hall

Chapter 2466
Jackie was led to a solitary room, one adorned with furnishings and an elegantly decorated layout. There were even various refreshments on the table, and a faint floral fragrance permeated the room.

The servant invited Jackie to sit down before he said, ” Please wait here. After the test, Elder Horst will make his arrangements. Call me should you need anything; I’ll be right outside the door.”

Advertisement

The servant bowed at Jackie before he turned and left the room, leaving only Jackie inside.

Jackie sighed in helplessness as he muttered to himself, “I must have better control over my expressions next time…”

If Elder Horst had not noticed it, Jackie could have stayed and got his scheme to work, making things difficult for the other two. It was only Rudy who had been affected at that moment, while Grayson did not suffer too much.

That was what Jackie regretted, but such laments were pointless for the moment. With that, Jackie placed these thoughts aside before he sat down to train.

Ever since he came to Middle Province, he had not! Had the chance to calm down and train. He had even focused solely on alchemy, which no doubt affected his martial advancements.

Jackie had formally become a student of the alliance and a sixth-grade alchemist, much to his relief.

He needed to catch up on his training, however. He had only managed to get Destroying the Void to the second stage. He was still a bit far from the third stage, and he had to hurry.

After absorbing the Formational True Energy, his strength was already close to a breakthrough. He was close to achieving the spring solidifying realm, but he was still too weak at that moment. Only by stepping into the spring solidifying realm would he be able to have the most basic ability to protect himself.

Jackie would be able to enter a few hidden ancient realms. To Jackie, eight hours passed by in a flash. When the door opened again, Jackie was a little surprised.

In walked Elder Horst, smiling as he did, and following after him were Rudy and Grayson, both seemingly at peace. It was obvious from their expressions that the two of them had passed.

They were already sixth-grade alchemists just like he was, or they would not have looked so pleased.

When Jackie stood up, Elder Horst motioned for Jackie to come forward

From his storage ring, Elder Horst produced a golden badge. On the badge was the word 'Six', and there were countless small symbols around it. Elder Horst gave the badge to Jackie once Jackie walked up to him." This is your badge."

All of a sudden, Elder Horst then ordered, seemingly directed to whoever was outside, "There's not much more time, hurry on inside!"

Jackie frowned when he saw two other people hurrying in from outside. They looked to be in their forties or fifties, with beards and seemingly fierce expressions to boot.

Jackie could not tell how strong the two of them were at that moment.

Elder Horst introduced Jackie and the others, "The one on the left is Aston Cain, and on the left is Martin Lemming. They're both deacons who'll be bringing you to Phoenix Valley."

This stunned Jackie. Where was Phoenix Valley? Why were they ushered to this location so quickly? What awaited them there?

Jackie did not want to depart before knowing the whole situation fully, but he was not in the position to decide that. If he rejected even that order, the alliance would not trust him in the future and would not give him the resources he needed.

Even if he was unwilling, Jackie did not voice his objection immediately. Jackie merely kept silent and looked on quietly.

Elder Horst continued, “I said we needed to recruit five students this time. The other two aren’t able to match you three in potential, so they’ll remain here for now.”

Chapter 2467
“The three of you are special, and sending you to Phoenix Valley is what the higher-ups desire. Phoenix Valley is a very special place for the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. A lot of things are happening today, so it’s not good for you to remain here.”

Elder Horst then took a deep breath. It was as if there was something he could not say, a secret buried deep in his mind.

Jackie frowned at that. Phoenix Valley did not seem to be anywhere too dangerous, and nothing treacherous should be lurking there. It was just that he did not know if Phoenix Valley was in the inner or outer region.

As Jackie mulled over the matter, Elder Horst once more spoke, “Alright, let us not dilly-dally. I’ve already prepared the spirit vessel. There’s no need to say your goodbyes either; I’ll let them know.

“Phoenix Valley is a good place. Make sure you properly practice alchemy when you’re there. Your future will be very bright.”

Elder Horst did not dawdle any longer. He shot a look at Martin and Aston, and the two of them nodded. They then brought Jackie and the other two to a spirit vessel.

They were still reeling in disbelief at that point, even as they got into the small vessel. Everything had happened too quickly, and they barely had time to digest it all.

The small vessel was a lot smaller than the vessel they had just come from. The spirit vessel could only fit five to six people. Aston and Martin were the ones controlling the vessel.

One of them steered the vessel from the inside while the other looked out for danger outside. Jackie and the others merely rested inside quietly.

The three of them had quite the complicated relationship

Grayson might have had a temporary truce with Rudy before, but they still did not see eye-to-eye. After both of them completed the test and became sixth-grade alchemists, they were at odds once again.

The three of them were at a corner each, distancing themselves from each other as much as they could. It was as if none of them wanted to have anything to do with one another at all.

Jackie was actually quite happy with this.

He did not like exchanging empty pleasantries, especially when the interactions were meaningless. What Jackie was the most worried about at that point was what sort of place Phoenix Valley was and what he would encounter when he arrived.

It had already been ten hours since they left. Earlier, he had asked Martin when they would arrive at Phoenix Valley, Martin showed him three fingers. “At least three days.”

The answer stunned Jackie. The small vessel might not be able to carry a lot of people, but it was no slow vessel at all. Three days would mean they would be traversing a lot of space. Jackie wondered where in Middle Province they were headed to.

He had wanted to ask even more questions, but Martin seemed so distant and apathetic, as if he did not want to bother with Jackie and the others.

Jackie was forced to put his questions aside for the moment.

Out of the blue…

“So it’s you!” an exclamation was heard.

Jackie jumped, thinking that something had happened. Martin immediately stood up as he ordered, “None of you are allowed to come out. No matter what happens, pretend you didn’t hear anything!”

Martin seemed incredibly stern at that point. Jackie had stood up as well, but he still looked relatively calm. Meanwhile, Grayson and Rudy seemed terrified.

Martin gave out those instructions before rushing out. He shut the door behind him before noises were heard outside. A battle had taken place.

Chapter 2468
It did not sound like the battle had ceased at all from the moment Martin got out. Jackie, Grayson, and Rudy were rooted, stone-faced even. None of them were all that calm.

Something had happened outside, and it was not something to joke about.

They were no masters nor venerable fighters. If anything happened outside, their lives could very well be lost there.

Jackie, at least, seemed to be in control over himself. Even though a lot was going on in his mind at that moment, he could still manage himself as he assessed the situation, planning what he would do if anything went awry.

The other two could not even remain calm, especially Grayson who looked incredibly aghast. His hands were trembling, and his mouth was twitching.

It was obvious that Grayson was close to losing his mind. The sounds from the clash that took place outside intermingled with shouts and yells, and it grew louder by the moment, too. Martin and Aston were both talking, but it was hard to tell what they were talking about.

“What’s happening? Why is there a sudden ambush? Did we pass a dangerous path or something? Is it a rival?!” blurted Grayson, his voice evidently unstable as he babbled.

Rudy glanced at Grayson before saying, “Don’t forget that we’re currently in a ship provided by the alliance. Don’t we all know what the alliance is? Which group would start a conflict with the alliance? It’s just an alliance that helps out alchemists. Normally, there shouldn’t be any conflict with anyone that powerful…”

Saying that, Rudy felt like there was no weight to his words. If it was not someone with a grudge, what was that yell from earlier about, before Martin stepped outside? That was impossible to explain.

Still, Rudy could not imagine who would have such a grudge against the alliance to start such a conflict, even trying to kill them on the journey.

Grayson then argued, his eyes red-rimmed and breaths erratic, “The question is, what’s the point of killing us? We might be a little talented, but we’ve only just turned into sixth-grade alchemists. We can’t really affect anyone! Why would they try to kill us?”

Rudy nodded meaningfully at those words.

Even if the enemy wanted to kill them, there should have been a meaning to the assault. The three of them had just turned into sixth-grade alchemists, and the news about it should not have been leaked yet.

Even if talent was valuable, it meant nothing in the eyes of those truly powerful. After all, talent could sometimes be exhausted, and no one could truly know if it would blossom.

Sixth-grade alchemists might be respected, but the truly respectable figures are all seventh or eighth grade alchemists. Sixth-grade alchemists were still too low ranked in that regard!

Thinking about that, Rudy stood up, his emotions whirling within him. “Do any of you have some sort of special identity? Are you enemies trying to pursue you?”

Saying that, Rudy’s eyes widened. He viciously stared at the two in front of him, not able to think of who would want to kill them.

Since he could not figure it out, there might be another reason for it. For instance, the one they wanted to kill might have nothing to do with the alliance. They might want to kill just one person.

If that was the case, he would just have been dragged into this mess!

Chapter 2469
The more Rudy thought about it, the angrier he became, believing his assumption to be true after all.

He could not help but raise his voice as his hands trembled, “I’m telling you two: No matter who attracted the assassins, you’d better suffer the consequences! Don’t pull me into your mess!

“I’ve always been very careful with what I do, never misstepping.” Rudy’s breathing started to quicken as he spoke. “I’ve never provoked any powerful figures before, so I don’t want any of you to drag me down with you!”

Grayson’s face reddened in fury upon hearing Rudy’s words. If the situation had allowed it, he would have rushed over to Rudy and screamed.

“Stop assuming things so rashly about us! You’ve never offended anyone, so does that mean we have? Don’t talk about yourself as if you’re some saint, alright?

“With how your character is, could you have not offended anyone? Who knows; you might be the culprit here. Why are you so insistent that these enemies are targeting one person?”

Rudy’s nostrils flared as he pointed a finger at Grayson. “What do you mean by that?! Quit insulting me-I’ve never offended anyone important in my life!

“I know how you normally act. You keep wagging your tail. If you haven’t offended anyone, I’ll take up your name in the future.

“Perhaps your usual abrasiveness actually ended up offending someone? Maybe it ended up causing a whole lot of trouble, and now, someone is trying to kill us.

“Back then, you were in Rosefinch Pavilion, and it wasn’t easy to make any moves on you. Now that you’re out, they found the perfect opportunity to attack!”

Both Grayson and Rudy were screaming at each, neither one of them wanting to give in. They felt like the situation they were in was caused by the other person, that all the fault laid on the other person, and this got the two of them more riled up by the minute.

Jackie silently stood by the side and watched as they both screamed it out like a death match. He sighed helplessly.

He really admired the two of them, being able to quarrel to that degree even with the situation as it Was.

Could the result of their quarrel solve the dangers they were facing? Hilarious.

Jackie tried to listen in on the constant fighting that was outside. There were even a few explosions. Both sides seemed to be using powerful weapons. The skills clashed against each other, causing the explosions.

At that moment, the small vessel suddenly swayed violently. The two who were quarreling panicked at the sudden movement, falling on the floor after losing their footing.

The quarrel died down temporarily. Grayson fell down right on his back, and his expression soured even more.

“That’s a powerful technique, alright. How strong must that person be to cause such an intense explosion? Even the spirit vessel was affected!” At that moment, Grayson’s eyes reddened, and his pupils wavered in fear.

Rudy did not feel any better. Even though he did not fall as harshly as Grayson did, he still fell to his knees. His hands were on the ground, stopping his face from slamming flat against the floor.

He frowned as he said, “What do we do?! Are we supposed to just stay here and wait to die?! I don’t want to die! I’ll become a seventh-grade alchemist In the future! I absolutely can’t die!”

Chapter 2470
Jackie could care less about Rudy and Grayson; he himself was in a state of panic. He wanted to know what was happening outside the vessel, yet these two were at it so noisily that he could not hear anything

Jackie then sharply turned to both Grayson and Rudy. “Can both of you shut up?! What’s the point of fighting over all this? Tell me, what can you do? The two of you will no doubt die if you go out there. You can’t even change what’s happening now! All you can do is wait here!”

Rudy paled at Jackie’s explosive remark. “And what gives you the right to try and educate me, Jackie? What gives you the right to shout at me?! Quit pretending like you’re so calm. Are you not afraid at all?!”

“Can you just shut your mouth?!” Jackie could not be bothered to argue with these two.

A livid Rudy then staggered to get back up on his feet when another explosion occurred the moment he stood up

A shockwave erupted in the aftermath. It came from the outside, and the entire vessel shook violently due to the force.

Rudy, having just stood up, fell once more. This time, however, his fall was even worse than the last, his face planted straight to the surface in his fall.

Grayson, on the other hand, fared better as he did not try to stand up before the explosion happened. Jackie stood at the furthest corner of the vessel as he leaned against the wall. He leaned in very closely, so he was naturally not sent to the ground.

Looking at how pathetic the two of them were, Jackie could not help but let out a cold laugh. “What’s the point of all that bickering? If you don’t shut your mouths, I won’t be so polite anymore!”

Grayson was merely a runner disciple before he discovered his talent in alchemy, so it was obvious how bad his skills were. He was older than Jackie, but he was merely at the early stage of the innate level.

He was even among the weaker ones of that level. Jackie could easily kill him if he wanted to. Rudy was a little better, but he was still at the early stage of the innate level as well.

To Jackie, Grayson and Rudy were mere dispensable individuals. They were not from some acquired stage beasts, and killing them would be like a walk in the park for Jackie.

Jackie wanted nothing more than for them to shut up.

Grayson’s face reddened in anger as he pointed at Jackie. “Just you wait! Don’t be so arrogant! So what if you have some talent? We’re basically on the same level.

“There’s still a lot of time. In the future, my talents will exceed yours. I’ll become a seventh-grade alchemist before you and make you pay!”

Jackie rolled his eyes. “Can you save those arrogant words for when you actually do it?”

The moment Jackie said that, a shout was heard from the outside.

It was Martin’s voice.

“How shameless! I knew you’d use such despicable tricks! So what, though? I won’t let you get what you want. The alliance isn’t that weak!”

Martin’s words were more than audible to everyone inside the vessel. It seemed like Martin was right outside the vessel when he spoke, too.

The battle had been far away from the vessel earlier, probably to avoid harming it.

Thinking about that, Jackie's heart stopped.

Since the sounds had gotten so close that they could hear them so clearly, it meant the battlefield had moved closer to the vessel.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2471

Chapter 2471

It could mean that Aston and Martin were already at a disadvantage. Since it was an ambush, the enemies were well prepared.

Even if the enemy could not kill the two of them for the moment, it was only a matter of time if the enemy had made enough preparations.

A muffled reply could be heard, seemingly like a response to Martin. However, the trio in the vessel could not hear it.

Martin's words had caused their hearts to plummet. They were so worried that they could not even speak.

They were in a grave situation. They could also see that the ambush had nothing to do with the three of them.

It was coming right for the alliance.

Advertisement

Grayson looked like he had swallowed a fly. "If I knew this would happen, I wouldn't have insisted on joining the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. If I hadn't said I wanted to come, this wouldn't have happened!

"Who did the alliance offend? Why is this ambush happening? They're even targeting a small vessel like this!"

The multitude of questions haunted Grayson and tormented him greatly. He might be incredibly distraught at that moment, but his words had given Jackie an idea.

Jackie frowned, feeling like the situation was incredibly strange as well. Just like Grayson had said, the alliance was there just to provide services and help out alchemists.

Advertisement

Normally, it would always maintain good relationships with the various clans, since they were not directly in competition. Furthermore, the various clans would require help from the alliance.

After all, that was where more of the alchemists in Middle Province gathered. Every warrior needed the support of pills. Groups like this would normally not have enemies intent on killing them unless the group had done something incredibly terrible.

What shocked Jackie even more was the fact that the three of them seemed to be the targets.

He admitted that the three of them had much more potential in alchemy than any ordinary person, but that did not usually mean they would be targets to be killed. It would not have invited such an attack unless there was something else tied to it!

Grayson's face was slowly turning green. He had thought that he would be treated incredibly well after joining the alchemist alliance, that he would receive respect from everyone.

This disaster happened right before he could even achieve any of that! His future was suddenly thrown into disarray!

He was even starting to hate the alliance at that point.

Rudy was more or less in the same spot as Grayson. Rudy was considered incredibly talented even in Golden Pills, but at that moment, Rudy's life was in grave danger.

Just as the three pondered and lamented, the door to the vessel suddenly opened. Someone had activated the door from the outside.

Advertisement

A radiant light shone into the door from the outside, and the three could not help but look over at the door.

Jackie stared at the door and then at the situation that unraveled past it. Everything felt like it was stagnant.

There were various figures constantly flashing about outside, and bursts of color from energy fluctuations constantly clashed with each other. The battle was very intense, and they could not even tell which one was Martin or which one was Aston.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2472

Chapter 2472
Jackie frowned as he started to retreat, trying his best to shrink into his corner. He had no idea who had even opened the vessel's door, nor did he know what the goal had been in opening the door either.

He decided hiding would be the best course of action for the time being, all for the sake of avoiding anything unsavory.

"Perfect, it's open. Remember: leave no one alive!" came a voice from outside, evidently an order of the sort.

Those words seemed like a death sentence for all of them in the vessel. Grayson and Rudy were so scared that they nearly pissed themselves.

“Don’t kill me!” shrieked Rudy. “I don’t know anything; I’m just a student! Don’t kill me!”

They had not even seen the person meant to kill them when Rudy burst out into pleas. Jackie felt like Rudy might end up fainting in the process. He, a true coward in the end, dared to act like he was something, like he was majestic.

Advertisement

What a joke Rudy was.

Rudy, having lowered himself into such a pathetic state, was followed by Grayson who began to plead for his life, wailing and begging. They discarded everything else and rushed up to the door, whimpering for mercy.

It was as if the arrogance and pride they had shown before had all disappeared. Jackie sighed helplessly. Their will to live had obviously overridden all the pride they had before.

True, anyone would want to preserve their life and live, but it was pointless for them to do that anyway. Their assassins would not change their minds just because they were begging for mercy. If Jackie had been them, he would not have shown Grayson and Rudy any mercy, even if they did everything they could.

Advertisement

Rudy's mental state had been completely destroyed from the moment the enemy stepped inside the vessel. At that moment, Rudy's tears wetted his entire face as he sobbed profusely.

In just a few breaths, Rudy was already covered in tears. He would probably be able to beat any woman in that front.

The sounds of battle from outside did not stop, however. "I won't let you do as you please!" came a yell.

The moment that was said, an object with a red glow was thrown in from outside. With a crash, something the size of half a fist crashed into the inner wall of the vessel, and it rebounded five feet away from Jackie.

A sound was then heard, and it sounded like someone's body being ripped apart.

Martin's wail could be heard right after that. Jackie could not help but take a deep breath as he looked outside, but other than the intense light, he could not see anything.

Aston shouted, "All of you, leave! Go, and don't look back!"

The moment that was said, another ray light shot forward toward the vessel. The light fell on the control array of the vessel. After that, a click was heard, and with that, the door to the vessel closed once more.

The vessel started to reactivate and increase in speed.

Advertisement

At that moment, Jackie's words felt lodged in his throat. Even though he did not see what happened, Jackie could more or less guess what had happened.

The two deacons were in a terrible position. Aston had sent all three of them away with his final breath, and he had not a clue whether they would be pursued after their escape.

Jackie felt the vessel hurtling away, and even the commotion grew fainter by the minute. Thanks to the vessel that shielded them, he could not see what took place outside, but it was obvious that the situation was a terribly dire one.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2473

Chapter 2473
The questions on Jackie's mind surfaced again. What happened? Why was there an ambush? Jackie's eyes glinted as he looked at what had been thrown inside.

It was a red crystal, one with an uneven, bumpy surface. Upon closer inspection, energy was flowing within it.

The fact that this was thrown into the vessel right in the nick of time meant that this item was no ordinary crystal, but...what was this thing? What did it have to do with the ambush? There was not enough information, so Jackie could not make any guesses.

"Don't just stand there! Where are you going?! There were two people controlling the vessel before, and they knew where to go. Where... What do we do now?!" whimpered Rudy between sobs.

Jackie frowned as he turned.

Aston had used the last of his strength to issue a command, activating the vessel again. However, the three of them did not know how long the command would last, or where the vessel was heading.

Advertisement

“Each spirit vessel requires lots of spirit crystals as an energy source,” explained Grayson, albeit anxiously. “It also needs a professional to maneuver it for it to move normally.”

Rudy nodded. “Right then, what do we do? Do the two of you know how to use the array on the vessel? We need to know where we should go, at least!”

Jackie and Grayson shook their heads. Of course, Jackie had Mustard Seed, but Mustard Seed had an amazing self-piloting ability. After Jackie was recognized as the owner, all he needed to do was issue a command, and it would head toward the place itself.

However, a small vessel like that was different. It needed to be controlled by someone at every second. No one knew where the vessel would end up if it merely flew around without any directions.

Advertisement

Jackie let out a sigh. He knew that he could not rely on anyone else at that moment. He took a few steps forward as he headed toward where the array was.

He might have the memories of two great warriors, but the great warriors came from a first-class realm. The Divine Void World did not have any small vessels like that.

As for the small vessel's control methods, they had no clue about it. With the way things were, Jackie was helpless as well.

The array that controlled the vessel was about a meter wide, and various glowing lights lit up the array. On it were countless runes, jumping around.

Jackie could see every rune there was, but he could not understand a single one of them nor did he know how to control it.

The other two were right behind Jackie, unable to understand a single thing as well. This sent them into a moment of absolute panic.

At that moment, the three of them were practically blind, having no idea on what they could do to salvage the situation.

After a long time, Rudy said, "Don't be so sad. Even though we don't know how to control it, we've at least avoided danger. As long as our lives are not threatened, we can go back!"

Grayson snorted. "I won't return to Phoenix Valley! I want to go back to Rosefinch Pavilion. Once this vessel stops, I'll return to Rosefinch Pavilion immediately!"

Advertisement

What had happened during the ambush left a lasting trauma for Grayson, and it left him utterly shaken like a vulnerable duckling. He wanted nothing more than to hide back into his nest, far from the dangers in the world.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2474

Chapter 2474

Rudy felt the same way as Grayson did. Phoenix Valley was no longer somewhere he wanted to go. He did not even want to be a disciple of the alliance anymore. He would rather live than 'strive and improve himself'!

Jackie pursed his lips, speechless at the sight.

Rudy looked like he had been injected with false bravado as he continued, "As long as we can find someone or a place with a hint of civilization, we'll be able to find a transport array. Once we determine where we need to go, we'll be able to go back. We can't panic at a time like this!"

Rudy's words seemed to calm Grayson as he felt like Rudy's words made sense. As long as they could find civilization, they would be able to determine where they were and how they should proceed.

He had decided to never go anywhere else upon returning safely. He would obediently stay in Rosefinch Pavilion, the safest haven there was. He would live a good life.

He did not want to go through any of those scary dangers again.

Advertisement

At that moment, something-or somewhere-within the vessel snapped.

Something had to be damaged or faulty in the vessel, an aftermath of the attack they had suffered from earlier.

The three of them stiffened, their expressions changing. The runes on the board started to light up haphazardly. The next moment, the vessel lost its balance and started to fall from the sky!

Jackie, Grayson, and Rudy panicked.

Advertisement

Thankfully, the vessel had not been completely wrecked. Even though they were falling, it was not at an alarming breakneck speed at all.

After a while, a loud bang was heard, sending all three of them into the air due to the impact of the crash.

The speed of the drop was something they could still control. Still, even though it was shocking, they were not injured.

After the vessel hit the ground, it stopped all operations, and even the control array was destroyed. That could have been the reason why the door to the vessel opened automatically

A rotten smell came from outside. The three of them exchanged glances, none of them saying anything in the process. The rotten stench carried a lingering moisture to it, too.

All three of them were unsettled by the new setting. It was obvious from the gasses that came into the vessel that they were not in a good environment.

Jackie looked up and, ignoring the other two, started to walk out of the vessel. The moment he walked out of the vessel, he was greeted with a sea of green.

He was surrounded with massive trees that reached the sky, though Jackie did not recognize any of the trees. The roots were incredibly thick and large.

The rotten stench they had smelled was caused by decaying leaves on the ground. The surroundings were incredibly humid, discomforting Jackie in the process.

Advertisement

It was an ancient forest. Even a cursory investigation made it obvious that no one had come here before.

Jackie started to feel a sense of urgency and anxiety that he could not suppress.

“Where is this place? What are those trees? They’re so tall and thick! Do the two of you know anything? I’ve never seen these trees before! I’ve never seen them in ancient records either! Are we still in Middle Province?” spoke Rudy, his voice unstable as he rambled.

Grayson shook his head, his face rather pale. “I don’t know! I’ve never seen it before either. I don’t really read many ancient records, but it’s the first time I’ve seen trees like this.

“They even cover up the sky, and there’s barely any sunlight getting through. What kind of trees are they? What is this place?” Grayson seemed to be choking up as he spoke,

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2475

Chapter 2475
Jackie, Grayson, and Rudy were so agitated during the fall of the vessel that they had not had the time to wonder where they were.

At this moment, they finally had a good look, and a hopeless feeling filled their bodies.

Looking at their surroundings, they were definitely deep in those mountains that no one ever got out of. Danger lurked in every corner too, no doubt.

The lack of any hint of civilization meant that the place was not suited for martial artists. The three of them were not that strong. It would be incredibly difficult for them to return peacefully.

Rudy looked over at a massive root toward the east. “What’s that?” He quickly rushed toward the direction he had stared at.

Jackie and Grayson turned their heads and saw Rudy kneeling next to the root as he picked up a strand of white hair.

Advertisement

Jackie and Grayson immediately walked over and stared at the strand of white hair. Rudy blew at the hair.

An icy aura strangely permeated on the hair strand, and all of a sudden, Rudy’s hand that held it began to tremble.

“This is a strand of hair from a one-eyed frost wolf!” After saying that, Rudy’s expression rapidly fell into despair.

Jackie frowned. He did not know what kind of beast the one-eyed frost wolf was, but the expressions of the other two told him it was no ordinary fiend.

Advertisement

Rudy sat down as he went on, “Just a simple sweep revealed a strand of hair from a one-eyed frost wolf! That means that…there are countless high-leveled beasts here!”

Saying that, Rudy started to cry again. This time, he was destroyed by hopelessness.

Jackie could no longer hold himself back. “What level is the one-eyed frost wolf?”

Jackie’s words effectively stunned both Rudy and Grayson. The two of them turned around and looked at Jackie dubiously.

Rudy snorted. “Do you not even know what a one-eyed frost wolf is? You might be talented, but you don’t even know basic knowledge…”

Jackie rolled his eyes, ignoring Rudy’s words. They could think whatever they wanted to. Rudy was not as obstinate as before.

In that difficult place, Rudy’s thoughts were in disarray. After moving Jackie, he started to explain.

“The one-eyed wolf is a common beast in the Middle Province. They’re at the innate stage in their youth. Once they mature, they’ll break through, becoming spring solidifying realm beasts.”

Hearing that, Jackie could not help but frown. The situation did not seem to tip in their favor. The beast would actually reach the spring solidifying realm upon maturity.

Advertisement

It seemed like most of the beast around the area would be around that stage.

To Grayson and Rudy, they could probably deal with acquired stage beasts. Innate stage beasts would be incredibly difficult, however, as were spring solidifying realm ones.

If they encounter a spring solidifying realm beast in the end, the other two would probably not even need to struggle. They would be killed in one swipe of a claw.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2476 - 2477

Chapter 2476

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he suddenly asked Rudy, “Can you tell what realm my strength is at?”

Rudy was taken aback for a moment before he looked up.

He used his senses to assess Jackie’s strength for a good while before, eventually, his lips twitched somewhat awkwardly.

“I can’t! So what, though?” scoffed Rudy haughtily.

“No matter how strong you are, you’re probably at the middle-stage of the innate level at most!”

Jackie smiled wryly, not saying anything.

Advertisement

Grayson frowned and asked, “Did you learn some skill that lets you hide your strength? Why can’t I tell what realm you are either?”

Jackie shook his head; he did not learn anything of such sorts.

The internal damage he had suffered back then was what caused his strength to seem like it was concealed

Jackie decided to make use of his situation the moment he noticed this. He deliberately did not heal some of the injuries, wanting to prevent others from studying him.

Advertisement

Rudy and Grayson, on the other hand, were not that strong.

They were two whole levels below him.

On top of the fact that he had deliberately hid his strength, there was no way for these two to know how strong he was. That was precisely the effect Jackie had wanted.

Rudy choked as he threw away the white fur on his hand. “Alright, you two tell me: what are we supposed to do? How do we get out of here?

“We can’t even control the spiritual vessel, let alone repair it. If we want to get out, we’ll have to walk out on foot. Yet, we don’t even know where this place is…”

At that moment, the tears on Rudy’s face started to fall again. The fear of the unknown future made him lose his composure.

Two out of the three of them had plunged into hopelessness.

The tears gathered in their eyes for a long time before they finally started falling. What started out as soft sniffs turned into full-blown sobs.

Rudy felt like he was in a state of complete forlornness.

Advertisement

Jackie watched on as the two of them crie pathetically, his lips twitching in exasperation in the process.

Those who did not know what was happening would think they had lost their parents.

These two, prior to this whole mess, pompously paraded themselves before him, and their arrogance even shot through the roof.

They had so much pride in themselves that it did not seem like it could be shaken! Jackie understood that they had merely been putting on a show. The moment they faltered, their hearts shattered.

"I really don't want to die," whimpered Rudy. "I've just started on my path, and I still have such bright days in front of me! Life truly is cruel to me if I die here!"

Grayson was deeply affected by Rudy's words.

Grayson's talents were even better than Rudy's. Grayson had been able to receive all the benefits he wanted to in the Rosefinch Pavilion, yet he himself had fallen into such a despairing pit.

He was about to die in a deserted forest. Not even his body would be left behind.

Grayson sobbed as he said, "What do we do next?! I don't want to die here! If we keep waiting here, we'll probably end up having lunch for those beasts soon!"

The moment he thought that he might be ripped apart and swallowed by the beasts that lurked in the area, Grayson's eyes darkened with despair.

He almost fell to the ground at that moment.

Jackie looked on as Grayson and Rudy wailed and lamented about their fates. He sighed helplessly before he turned to look deeper into the forest.

It was pointless to weep; what mattered most at that moment was finding a way to survive.

Chapter 2477

Alas, massive trees lined his sight wherever Jackie looked, and he could not even make out the cardinal directions, let alone walk out of the forest. He exhaled a long sigh.

Just as he was planning the next course of action, Jackie suddenly heard a rustle. With a frown on his face, he snapped at Grayson and Rudy, "Shut up right now! Something's coming!"

Both Grayson and Rudy shuddered at Jackie's warning,and their sobs ceased instantaneously.

The way the two of them were acting earlier, they had completely ignored the fact that their wails could attract any nearby beasts,

They both did not even dare release the breath they held after Jackie's warning.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as his ears perked to detect the sounds around them. He tried to observe his surroundings as he sent out his senses to feel everything around him.

They were in a foreign place at that moment, where danger could happen at any moment. If they were not careful, the three of them truly could end up being beastfood.

After all, everything alive around them were high-level fiends, and even Jackie was just in the innate stage. If a divine solidifying realm fiend appeared, the three of them would die in a single blow.

The rustles from earlier were heard again. Jackie took a deep breath as his sharp eyes shifted to the source of the noise. What he saw was a golden three-headed snake ślithering toward them.

That three-headed snake was, thankfully, an ordinary beast that posed no danger at all.

When the trio realized that it was the snake all along, Grayson and Rudy finally loosened up and regained their breathing. Nonetheless, the two of them no longer dared to sob so loudly.

Rudy wiped away his tears with his sleeve. “This truly is a wretched place! I can’t even cry loudly… I don’t even know when I’ll die!”

Grayson sighed, not saying anything. Jackie, meanwhile, merely stood there quietly. His eyes continued to observe their surroundings.

After a moment, Jackie suddenly remarked, his tone low and calm, “We still don’t know if we can leave this place or not, but the first thing we need to do is make sure we’re safe for now.

“We’ll die instantly if any high-level beasts appear, especially without good preparations.”

Jackie was nowhere near as erratic as Rudy and Grayson.

Rudy raised his eyebrows and looked at Jackie strangely. Rudy noticed that Jackie had become exceptionally serious and cold ever since they got to that forsaken place.

It was as if Jackie would not be scared at all no matter what they encountered, a stark contrast to himself and Grayson.

Rudy lightly snorted. “Don’t tell me you’re not afraid at all. Aren’t you worried you’ll die here? What’s the point of acting so level-headed for? Are you trying to make me and Grayson look like fools?”

Jackie was reaching his limit with him, wanting so badly to smack him squarely across the face at that moment.

This brat, Rudy seemed to be so competitive no matter when it was. No matter in what way, Rudy seemed to want to be better than Jackie.

Jackie could not be bothered to answer that question. Instead, Jackie earnestly said, “The question we need to think about now is what we’ll do if any danger happens later.”In truth, you two are just slowing me down, and I’m just saying all of this to give you a chance to live. If the two of you want to continue moping around and venting instead of hurrying up and finding a way out, then that’s your problem.”

Jackie’s words were rather harsh to the ear, but they managed to snap both Rudy and Grayson out of their mini-episode.

Grayson frowned.

Even though Jackie’s words were rather insensitive, they were no doubt useful words to heed at a moment where lives were at stake.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2478 - 2479

Chapter 2478

Crying was pointless, and they needed to find a way out. Thinking of this, an idea crossed Grayson's mind.

He abruptly turned around and said, "There is something we can do right now, though!"

This stunned Jackie and Rudy for a moment.

They then turned to see Grayson facing the spiritual vessel, pointing at the door as he said, sounding all too sure of himself, "The door isn't broken yet! We can still use the door!"

Jackie hurriedly asked, "Is it not broken? Can it still be closed?"

Grayson took a deep breath as Grayson wiped his face with his hand.

Advertisement

After calming himself down thoroughly, Grayson said, "I actually forgot about that. My master once had a small spirit vessel like this, but he sold it for a middle-sized one eventually.

"Even though there are a lot of problems with spiritual vessels like this and it's low priced, there are still some practical functions. There's more than one way to open and close the door. This is to prevent the occupants from being unable to get out if the array is ruined.

"There's a button to open and close the door on the side of the vessel. The button is also a small array itself. As long as spirit crystals are placed inside, the door can be activated!"

Grayson did not wait for any reaction from Jackie and Rudy as he hurried over and entered the vessel.

Advertisement

He felt around the sides of the door and quickly exclaimed happily, “I found it! It’s right here! Oh, thank goodness-we’d still be able to hide if there’s any danger. I just don’t know how powerful of an attack the spirit vessel can handle, though…”

Grayson’s words not only sparked hope within Rudy, but it relieved Jackie as well.

Jackie’s tense self relaxed a little as he quickly walked into the small vessel.

He followed where Grayson was pointing and saw a small array that glowed faintly. That was the button to activate the door of the vessel. There were still various runes lit up around the array. Compared to the runes that controlled the vessel, the runes there did not seem affected at all. They could still operate normally!

Rudy exclaimed happily, “Oh, thank goodness! The heavens are on our side! I thought that we’re sure to be beast-food back there, and I can’t believe we’ve been given a lifeline like that. It’ll let us survive a little longer, at least.”

Grayson frowned as he looked at Rudy. “Can you stop with the depressing words? As long as we can figure out a good plan, we might even be able to leave.

“Even though we noticed the hair of a one eyed frost wolf earlier, it doesn’t mean every beast around here is on the same level. The one-eyed frost wolf might not even have mattered yet.

“That’d mean the beasts living around here would all be at the innate stage, which is good news for us!”

Grayson’s eyes glimmered with hope all while he spoke.

Advertisement

He coughed lightly before he added, “We all know that beasts have their own territories they are active in. Low-level beasts will never enter the territories of high-level beasts.

“As long as we can make sure that the beasts around here aren’t that highly leveled, then we’ll be able to escape as long as we’re careful. We can also try to figure out how far out we are by seeing how the beasts are distributed!”

Chapter 2479

Grayson’s mind truly did digest the situation they were in. Jackie had just thought about all of that when Grayson spoke of it.

Grayson was right. They could use the distribution of the weak and the strong to determine where they should flee toward. The stronger beasts would usually always be in the inner areas of any forest.

The weaker the beasts, the longer they would stay around the outskirts. With this tactic, they would be able to leave this place. However, they first needed to find somewhere they could be safe in before that.

The spiritual vessel might have been wrecked, but its hard outer shell could still withstand a certain level of attacks. As long as it was not a dangerously strong fiend, they would be able to hide inside for temporary shelter should any danger present itself to them.

With the spiritual vessel as a temporary shelter, they could slowly start to explore outward.

Grayson took a deep breath. “I guess there’s always a way-“

The moment he said that, the sound of frantic footsteps could be heard. It did not sound like a fiend’s claws pacing on the ground. The three of them could immediately tell the difference.

The moment they heard the footsteps, they immediately turned to look toward the direction but dared not move. They did not leave the spirit vessel.

They did not know whether the footsteps belonged to friend or foe. A human’s heart was often more complicated than a beast’s, so the trio had to be prepared for everything.

After a moment, they saw a white figure heading toward them from the most northern direction. He seemed to be stumbling as he ran.

It looked like someone running for his life.

This individual was clad in a white robe, one that had tears in them seemingly done by tree branches. At that point, it looked like he merely had a ragged cloth that covered his body. The person seemed to have sustained numerous wounds all over him, too.

The person's lips were stained with blood, as was the poor white robe he had on. He was not running that quickly and even grabbed the branches around him for support as he ran. He looked incredibly pathetic.

The scene immediately conjured complicated thoughts in their heads. That person should already be injured, so he would not be a big threat to them.

However, he was obviously running away, so they wondered what was behind him.

At that moment, the white-robed man suddenly noticed something different. He first saw the vessel before he noticed the three next to it. He reached out his hand toward them as he said with the last of his strength, "Save me...!"

Right after he said those words, he collapsed on the ground after using the last of his strength.

The corner of Rudy's lips twitched as he looked toward Grayson and Jackie in a panic.

"What should we do? Should we save him?"

Grayson shook his head. "No. His enemies might be hot on his trails right now. If we save him, then his enemies would think we're allies. Would it not drag us into his problems? It's best if we mind our own business!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2480 - 2481

Chapter 2480

Jackie's lips twitched as he looked at Grayson helplessly.

He had just praised Grayson for being somewhat smart when Grayson decided to show his stupidity again.

“Do you think there would be any enemies. pursuing him deep in a forest like this?” countered Jackie rather impatiently. “Before that, why don’t you look at the wounds on his body? Those aren’t weapon-inflicted. They must be wounds from the claws and teeth of beasts.”

Grayson was taken aback by Jackie’s words.

He immediately turned to look at the white-robed man’s wounds. Sure enough, the man’s wounds did look like they had been caused by the teeth of a beast.

Before Grayson could contest the idea, Jackie added, “This man must’ve been chased by beasts. Normally, it’s best to mind our own business, but this situation is different. The Fact that he’s in here should mean that he knows how to get out. Don’t we need a guide right now?”

Advertisement

Jackie’s words had hit them right where they needed to, reminding them of their situation. After all, how were they supposed to get out before they knew where they were?

Even though the man in front of them had fainted, he might know a way out since he managed to get in. With that in mind, Grayson did not hesitate to rush over immediately with Rudy close behind.

The two of them hurriedly picked the man up. Just as Rudy’s feet had just stepped into the spirit vessel, a roar was heard behind them.

Jackie shifted his gaze instantly and spotted a massive wolf the size of two humans. Its whole body radiated a chilling frost, and it was running right at them ruthlessly. He could also spot bloodstains on the wolf's mouth, and bits of cloth were stuck in its claws as well. It was obvious at a glance that they were from that white robed man.

Advertisement

Sure enough, that unlucky man had encountered that hungry wolf, which caused him to be in his state. The evil wolf had an uncannily sharp sight. As it rushed over, it could already spot Rudy and Grayson carrying the man into the spirit vessel

The hungry wolf, suddenly angered, looked up to the skies and let out a long howl, and Rudy turned to look back at it. That one glance caused Rudy to almost kneel on the floor in fear.

"A one-eyed frost wolf! It's a mature one eyed frost wolf!"

Jackie inhaled sharply at this; it was just as he had thought. The fur they had encountered before this belonged to the very wolf right ahead of them!

This wolf had already matured, and a matured one-eyed frost wolf was already at the spring-solidifying realm. It was a being that could kill Rudy with one swipe of its claw!

Still seething with rage, the one-eyed frost wolf suddenly sprinted toward them, its pace quickening in the process. Its speed doubled, not planning on giving them a chance to escape.'

It wanted to kill them all.

“We’re done for! It’s coming right for us!” Grayson let out a hopeless cry.

Jackie frowned.

Advertisement

He reached his hand out and pulled Rudy inside. He took out a spirit crystal from Mustard Seed as he placed it on the array next to the door as fast as possible.

The array activated immediately, and the door started to close. The hungry wolf’s eyes suddenly widened when it saw the door was closingThe wolf seemed to possess a degree of intelligence, knowing that killing them would be much harder with the door shut.

The one-eyed wolf started to increase its speed again. Jackie even started to feel that. fatal murderous enveloping him.

The wolf opened its bloody jaws and lunged straight at them!

Rudy and Grayson gaped at the wolf that was only meters away from the vessel with wide eyes. Their breaths stopped as they froze on the spot, so petrified that they could not even tremble.

With a bang, the one-eyed wolf slammed against the closed door.

Chapter 2481

The wolf rammed right into the vessel, causing the men in the vessel to jolt. Thankfully, the vessel’s door closed right in the nick of time, saving them from their doom.

Rudy was so terror-stricken that he was speechless, petrified as merely stood still. Grayson, on the other hand, did not feel any better, clutching his chest as his heart pounded against his ribcage. If his heart had raced any faster, it might have jumped out of his throat.

Jackie took a deep breath.

He was the calmest among the three of them, but what had happened still shook him. They were mere breaths away from disaster, after all.

Jackie was quite confident in his own skills, but even he was not sure if he would be able to escape a spring solidifying realm beast.

"That was horrendous! That was way too close. If we continue on like this, I'd probably die of a heart attack if I'm not swallowed by a beast!" bleated Rudy as he collapsed on the floor.

Grayson took a deep breath to calm himself down. "That was an actual mature frost wolf…and that didn't look like any ordinary frost wolf either!

"It's already at the peak of the early stage of the spring solidifying realm. It's only a sliver away from the middle stage!"

Rudy patted his chest. "Thankfully, we were right on time. We had the vessel to shield us, or we'd be dead by now."

Right after Rudy's remark, however, a bang was heard from outside the vessel, causing it to violently shake.

They did not need to look outside to know that the one-eyed frost wolf was throwing itself against the vessel so ruthlessly. What followed was a

few more bangs, and the trio had no time to put themselves at complete ease before they were thrown into panic once more.

Rudy's eyes were wide as he suddenly stood from the floor. He turned to look at Jackie. "What do we do? What should we do next? That thing will rip us apart if it destroys this vessel and gets to us!"

Grayson shuddered. "I now regret saving this guy! If it weren't for him, the one-eyed wolf wouldn't be ramming against the vessel right now so derangedly!

"This wolf is no fool. The fact that it's so angry definitely means that this guy angered it. Now it hates us, too!"

Grayson glared viciously at the white-robed man, who was still unconscious. If the man woke up, Grayson would surely give him an earful.

Jackie frowned as he coldly looked at Grayson. "I've made my assessment outside. This vessel is well-made, and as long as the wolf doesn't attack it for days on end, it should be able to hold on for now."

The other two pursed their lips at the same time when they heard that, not saying anything, but the assault against the vessel did not relent.

Each time the one-eyed wolf struck, it would cause the people inside to shake as well. It was hard to even stand properly.

Their moods were erratic, much like how the vessel trembled against the wolf's might. Rudy and Grayson's faces were dark the whole time.

After attacking for an entire hour, however, the one-eyed wolf suddenly stopped.

The few of them in the ship let out sighs of relief. Rudy looked up at the door. “Do you think the wolf left?”

Jackie shook his head before sitting on the floor. “It might be my first time seeing a one-eyed wolf, but a wolf is still a wolf. They’re one of the best hunters in the wild.

“For it to attack the vessel for a whole hour, it’s obvious how much it hates that man. Since that’s the case, it won’t leave easily. Even though he can’t see into the vessel, I’m very sure it’s quietly waiting for us outside.”

With those words, Grayson and Rudy started to get anxious again.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2482 - 2483

Chapter 2482

It was definitely not good news for them if that unhinged one-eyed frost wolf stayed outside and did not leave.

It meant that they would not be able to head out for the time being

The longer they stayed, the worse it would be for them.

They had just been planning a way to escape before the whole mess occurred but were already faced with such an obstacle.

A fiend that was already at the spring solidifying realm was an existence they could not defeat.

They were in for a total nightmare if that fiend continued to wait for them right outside the vessel.

Advertisement

Rudy turned to look at Jackie. “Then what should we do next? Even if the beast can wait outside like a hunter, it still needs food. It can’t possibly stay outside the whole time…”

Jackie knew what Rudy wanted to say and merely nodded with a smile. “It won’t stay outside the whole time, but even if it goes hunting, it won’t take that long. Most importantly, we don’t know when it’ll leave and when it’ll return”

“It’ll probably keep track of our every move whenever it’s back. As long as we leave the vessel, it’ll come right at us, vengeful as it had always been.”

Rudy was mortified to hear this, so much so that he even stopped breathing.

Advertisement

Grayson was green on the face as well as he then stared at the white-robed man, regretting saving the man.

After frowning in thought for a long time, Grayson hesitantly spoke, “If we throw him out right now, would the wolf continue attacking us?”

Jackie frowned as he pursed his lips helplessly. He truly did underestimate both Rudy and Grayson.

After Grayson said that, Rudy nodded in deep agreement. It seemed like the two of them shared the same brain cell of wanting to throw out the man to the wolf.

Jackie let out a snort as he sternly spoke, “We can’t do that. The whole reason we saved him was so he could be our guide. Furthermore, we don’t understand how the one-eyed wolf would think.”

“If we threw that guy out, we don’t know if it’ll let us go. Keep those thoughts to yourselves. Let’s not do anything rash when we don’t know the situation.”

Grayson pursed his lips as he looked aside.

“Don’t act like you’re so noble. Think about what kind of situation we’re in. We shouldn’t be talking about honor or integrity; surviving is the most important. If it weren’t for this burden, we wouldn’t be in so much trouble.”

Rudy nodded at that, but he did not say anything. Jackie could not be bothered to

Advertisement

fight over this decision. He furrowed his eyebrows and started to think about what they were going to do next.

Since the person was heavily injured, there was no true energy flowing within him. Jackie could not tell what realm that person was in, but to be beaten up so badly by a spring solidifying realm creature meant he was weaker than the wolf

Nonetheless, this man was much stronger than Rudy and Grayson.

These two, on the other hand, would not even last had they been the ones to face off against the wolf.

This white-robed man was a complete enigma at the moment, so Jackie could not put his hopes on that person.

Even if he woke up, the injuries meant that he would probably need a long time to recuperate.

The most important thing for that moment was to improve his own skills.

Thinking about the power that spring solidifying realm beast was exuding, Jackie could not help but feel excited. He might not be a match for the one-eyed wolf at that moment, but he might be able to battle it if he made a breakthrough.

Chapter 2483

As long as he could manage a few exchanges with the one-eyed frost wolf, then Jackie would have a chance to escape.

The idea flashed in his head when he suddenly remembered something. He could not help but look over at the unconscious man on the floor.

Just a meter away from the man was a red colored crystal, lying quietly.

That crystal was precisely the one that had been thrown into the vessel during the first assault against the vessel in an ambush.

Considering the situation at that moment, the small red-colored crystal was no ordinary rock. Jackie could not help but hurry over to the red crystal, taking it into his palm.

The crystal seemed to have energy flowing within it, but he did not know what it was used for. "Why are you holding that crystal?" said Rudy carefully.

Even a fool could tell that the crystal might be something of immense value, and Jackie seemed like he would claim it for himself, which Rudy did not want to happen.

After all, the crystal had been thrown at the three of them, so he had a right to the crystal as well.

Jackie immediately understood what Rudy's thoughts were.

He snorted at the thought, not even glancing at Rudy and instead focusing on the crystal.

He used his hand to rub the red crystal before zeroing his entire senses into analyzing the crystal.

After a few detailed searches, he did not notice anything at all and was still clueless as to what it was for.

This crystal must be something amazing and valuable, but he didn't know what it could be used for.

"Jackie, what are you thinking of doing?!" Grayson suddenly said.

Rudy followed closely, "The crystal should belong to the three of us. Don't even think about claiming it for yourself."

Jackie coldly snorted, ignoring both Rudy and Grayson.

If the two of them thought that they could take him on, Jackie would wipe them out with one hand.

He looked up at Grayson. "Come get it if you have the skills to."

Jackie's comment successfully struck a nerve for Grayson, and Grayson's face reddened as he stormed toward Jackie, who merely chuckled.

"What's wrong? Are you trying to fight me? Just with your skills?"

Jackie's words were filled with the aura of a powerful individual, and it made Grayson step back a few.

Jackie's strength was two realms higher than Grayson's; Grayson just could not truly assess Jackie's strength at the moment.

With just his aura, however, Grayson could feel that Jackie was much stronger than he was. This, in turn, made Grayson realize that they were not in Rosefinch Pavilion nor the Alchemist Alliance.

They were in the wilderness.

Fists ruled everything here, and he did not have a special status. To Jackie, Grayson was merely a weakling. If he truly took arms against Jackie, things would not end well for him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2484 - 2485

Chapter 2484

After all, in terms of his martial prowess in Rosefinch Pavilion, he was just a runner disciple.

Thinking of this, Grayson suddenly looked like a deflated ball. His face soured and no longer dared to argue.

Rudy, despite not facing Jackie's domineering aura, could still feel its might.

At that moment, he realized that he no longer had his status to fall back on either. He could only rely on his skills to go against Jackie, but he seemed to be no match for Jackie.

If a fight truly broke out among them, Rudy might ally himself with Grayson, but Grayson might turn against him.

It was hard to know what anyone was thinking, so Rudy suddenly did not dare to do anything.

Advertisement

With just a look at the two, Jackie knew he had rendered them frightened.

He then ignored them both and resumed his focus on the red crystal.

He planned on experimenting with it to see if he could use the crystal to increase his strength.

Without any help from the outside, he was blindly training, so he did not know when he could break into the spring solidifying realm.

Advertisement

At that moment, a string of coughs was heard from beside him.

Jackie hurriedly turned his head to see that white-robed man having a coughing fit as his body shook. The pupils under his eyelids started to move, looking like he was about to wake up.

The three of them went straight next to him. They stood in a direction each, surrounding him. After taking about five or six breaths, the man slowly started to open his tired eyes.

After a few intense breaths, Jackie frowned and asked, “Do you want some water?”

Even though Jackie worked hard to speak in a calm tone, his voice still shocked the whiterobed man. The man stiffened as he looked up. “You are… ?”

It was obvious that this man had yet to regain his bearings. After a while, he finally remembered what had happened before he passed out. Rudy helped him up the floor.

His injuries were quite severe. The three of them had been arguing earlier about what they would do next. Other than complaining that the white-robed man was a burden, they had not done anything for him.

At that moment, the man's wounds had yet to recover. Blood flowed out of his wounds, staining his clothes red. Jackie helplessly sighed, taking out some medicine from his storage ring.

"Let's get you patched up. You'll have to brace yourself for the pain, though."

Advertisement

Before the man woke up, Rudy and Grayson looked at him as if he had killed their parents. All of a sudden, the two of them seemed incredibly obedient after he regained consciousness, not saying a word.

Jackie wanted to patch up the man's wounds, and the two of them even helped.

They looked strangely together. It caused Jackie to be rendered speechless, but he said nothing of it.

After a long time, the three of them finally handled the man's injuries. The whiterobed man took out a few internal pills from his own storage space to suppress his wounds.

After a long time, he could finally converse with the three of them.

Rudy hurriedly asked, "Who are you? Where are we right now? How did you provoke that one-eyed frost wolf?"

Rudy's words rendered Jackie speechless.

Under this situation, they should have tried their best to reveal as little as possible. Rudy must have had something clogging his brain for him to ask where this place was right off the bat.

Chapter 2485

Rudy had just inadvertently spilled to the white-robed that they were lost. They did not even know where they were!

The white-robed man looked at them in surprise.

He let out a few coughs before introducing himself, "My name is Hansel Brown, and I'm a disciple of Seven Absolutes Pavilion."

Right after Hansel Brown introduced himself, Rudy straightened his body abruptly. "Seven Absolutes Pavilion, you say? Are you saying we're in the Seven Absolutes Pavilion's territory right now? Where is this place? Why have I never heard of such a large forest in Seven Absolutes Pavilion?"

Hansel looked over at Rudy even more meaningfully.

Jackie, on the other hand, was speechless, truly wondering if Rudy had suffered from an irreparable damage to the brain. Otherwise, Rudy would not have exposed so much about himself.

Hansel seemed to be quite smart. Even though he had a curious look in his eyes, it did not show in his expression. He was even holding himself back a little, which raised Jackie's red flags against Hansel.

Hansel seemed to be someone who would not be easy to deal with. Jackie wondered what level his strength was at.

Hansel answered, "This is Grand Yorn Mountain."

Those words answered everyone's question. Even though Jackie had been in West Cercie State before, he had still taken the time to understand some things about Middle Province.

He did not have a deep impression of some of the places, but Grand Yorn Mountaindefinitely rang a bell. Grand Yorn Mountain was very famous in Middle Province because it was the largest mountain range in all of Middle Province.

It was called a mountain, but it actually took up an incredibly large area. Grand Yorn Mountain included the large forests around it, as well as the unending mountain range. It took up a fifth of Middle Province's land area.

It stood on the western side of Middle Province. A little east of it was a fifth-grade clan called Seven Absolutes Pavilion. With Hansel's explanation, Jackie and the others immediately understood.

They were actually not too far away from Rosefinch Pavilion.

The Rosefinch Pavilion was closer toward the south.

There was another clan between it and Seven Absolutes Pavilion. It would not take that much time to get back to the Rosefinch Pavilion.

After being sure of their location, the three of them let out a sigh of relief

Grayson then said, albeit somewhat excitedly, "I've seen Grand Yorn Mountain in books so many times. Grand Yorn Mountain is a famous gathering spot for fiends! Rumor has it there are many top tier fiends in Grand Yorn Mountain, and some of them have even attained a human form!"

Hearing that, Rudy started to get excited as well. His eyes glinted as he said, “I’ve also heard about it a lot. There are numerous fiends that have already attained a human form living within Grand Yorn Mountain!”

Grayson nodded earnestly. “Me too. I thought that I’d never come to this famous mountain in my lifetime. I can’t believe this accident allowed me to see what it looks like…”

Jackie, meanwhile, said nothing.

All he could do was stand by speechlessly at their unreserved words. However, it was quite reasonable for the two of them to be so excited. After all, Grand Yorn Mountain was an extraordinary place.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2486 - 2490

Chapter 2486

It was the most famous gathering spot for fiends in the whole of Hestia Continent. It was also a battlefield between humans and fiends. Humans regularly come to Grand Yorn Canyon to slaughter fiends.

Fiends would also hunt for humans there, and death was a regular occurrence.

Jackie helplessly reminded them, “Grand Yorn Mountain isn’t a place for us to go sightseeing. It’s not famous for its scenery.

“It’s famous for being a gathering spot for many high-level fiends. We can’t even beat a one-eyed frost wolf, so how could you be so excited…”

Hansel let out a slight cough as he nodded in agreement, “Jackie’s right. Grand Yorn Mountain isn’t somewhere we can stay idle in. There’s danger everywhere. I was forced to, or I wouldn’t have rushed in here.”

His words successfully stunned Jackie. Jackie hurriedly asked, “What do you mean by that? Is this the inner region of Grand Yorn Mountain?”

Advertisement

As Jackie asked, he grew so anxious that his heart almost jumped out of his throat. If they really were in the inner regions of Grand Yorn Mountain, then it would be incredibly difficult for them to get out.

Hansel immediately shook his head and said, “It’s not the inner area. If we were in the inner area, we would not even be alive anymore. This is somewhere between the border and the outer regions. Most of the fiends here are at the spring solidifying realm.”

With his explanation, Jackie immediately understood where they were. He also understood how terrifying Grand Yorn Mountain was. Even the area between the border and the outer region was filled with spring solidifying realm beasts, so how horrifying would the ones living in the inner areas be?

Even an elder of a fifth-grade clan would probably not dare to venture into the inner regions casually.

Advertisement

Rudy asked, "If it's so dangerous here, why are you here?"

The question caused Hansel to let out a long sigh. It seemed like it was something he did not want to bring up. Yet, there was nothing to hide, so he helplessly said, "I was forced here by someone. If I hadn't been forced in here, I would never have come."

Jackie frowned as he asked, "Could I know how strong you are?"

Hansel answered incredibly earnestly, "I'm at the initial stage of the spring solidifying realm."

That answer successfully stunned Grayson and Rudy. The spring solidifying realm was already the final goal for the two of them. After all, the two of them were far too weak.Without the help of pills, they would never be able to step into the spring solidifying realm.

Only by getting to that level would they be able to have enough power for alchemy. Before, they had planned on reaching the spring solidifying realm as well, but had thought that they would need a very long time.

Yet, such a young person was already at that level. He was obviously a master within his clan which filled the two of them with admiration and respect.

Rudy excitedly said, “Since you’re already at the spring solidifying realm, does that mean you’ll be able to bring us out after you’ve recovered?

“Don’t forget, the three of us saved you. If we weren’t here, you would have been swallowed alive by that wolf.”

Advertisement

Hearing that, Hansel nodded earnestly, indicating that he would repay them. Yet, Jackie pursed his lips helplessly.

Rudy really did not think things through before speaking .

Chapter 2487

Even if he wanted to be repaid, he should not have made it sound so obvious. However, even if Jackie wanted to save the situation, it was already too late. He could not believe Hansel was already in the spring solidifying realm.

Furthermore, he was also the disciple of a fifth-grade clan. That meant he could probably be a chosen disciple in the Seven Absolutes Pavilion, so Jackie wondered how he had been forced into Grand Yorn a Mountain.

Hansel said earnestly, “I know how to get out. As long as I’ve recovered, I’ll bring you out.

“This area isn’t as dangerous as other places, but it’s not that safe as well. As long as we’re careful, it shouldn’t be too hard to get out.”

Hansel's words gave Grayson and Rudy a lot of hope. Their pale faces suddenly regained some color. Their earlier hopelessness had disappeared as they once again found the confidence to survive,

However, Grayson found something puzzling that made him suspicious. "If you're already at the initial stage of the spring solidifying realm, how were you beaten to such a state by the one-eyed frost wolf? Even if you can't beat it, you should have been able to run away."

Hansel seemed to have thought of something. His gusto suddenly disappeared as his eyes reddened with a wry smile.

"I only met that one-eyed frost wolf after being heavily injured. My injuries were mostly caused by the wolf, but it's also because someone else had injure me before I met the wolf

"If you hadn't saved me, I would already be in the stomach of that wolf. Thank you all so much."

With that, Hansel saluted them in thanks again. Rudy was even more curious when he heard those words. Hansel had only fallen to this fate after being injured by someone, so who was the one who had injured him?

No matter how dumb Rudy was, he could guess that Hansel was someone quite high up in the Seven Absolutes Pavilion. If he had that status, he should be a respected individual. He should not have that many enemies.

Rudy hurriedly asked, "Who was the one who injured you to this degree?"

Hansel answered with a dark look on his face, “It’s my junior. He set up a trap for me. I had seen him as a close friend, so I didn’t doubt him that much. That’s how I ended up in this state.”

After saying that, he slowly shut his eyes, not willing to continue on the topic. Just those few words managed to explain everything. The internal affairs of clans were often that intense.

Rudy continued, “How did your junior end up holding a grudge against you? What sort of trap did he set for you?”

Hansel frowned and said, “I think we should focus on how we should leave this place.”

Hansel’s words clearly conveyed the fact that he did not want to dwell on the topic any longer, but Rudy seemed to not understand at all and continued with his questions.

He seemed insistent on getting to the root of everything. His actions caused Hansel to frown, and Jackie was forced to pull Rudy back in exasperation.

“Can you please shut up? Why do you keep insisting on prying into his problems? What’s the point of knowing?”

Chapter 2488

Those words sent Rudy’s temper boiling. He said angrily, “What do you mean by that, Jackie?! Don’t think that you can do whatever you want just because I let you off earlier!”

Jackie let out a cold laugh. What did he mean by letting Jackie off? Rudy had obviously just cowered under Jackie’s strength. Jackie could not be bothered to answer and turned to look at Hansel.

He asked, “How did you end up in conflict with that one-eyed frost wolf?”

Jackie’s question was straight to the point. He could also find out how honest Hansel was from the answer. It depended on what Hansel would hide for them.

After all, even though the three of them had saved Hansel, it was impossible to know if that person would repay his debts. Jackie was nowhere near as gullible and naive as Rudy

and Grayson, easily believing someone.

Jackie’s question caused Hansel to fall silent for a few breaths. The color on his face had recovered quite a bit, and he was no longer bleeding from his wounds.

He took a deep breath before saying, “I stole the Crimson Blood Fruit that it had been guarding. The wolf had been out hunting and I happened to pass by its cave.

“I was already injured then, and the Crimson Blood Fruit is a rare recovery medicine, so I plucked it and ate it.

“I didn’t expect the wolf to return so quickly. It saw me putting the fruit into my mouth which angered it. Thankfully, I have some skills myself, or I would have been ripped apart on the spot.”

Thinking about the scene back then, Hansel felt a wave of fear. If he had not frantically used all his skills to run away, he might already be inside the mouth of that wolf.

When he noticed the fruit, he already expected that there would be a fiend guarding it.

However, in order to speed up his recovery, he threw those thoughts away as he stuffed the Crimson Blood Fruit into his mouth.

The Crimson Blood Fruit was very good for recovery. After eating it, he immediately felt a lot better. Yet, it brought him an even greater disaster. When the wolf saw him eating the fruit with its own eyes, it immediately went crazy.

Hansel pursed his lips helplessly, "That Crimson Blood Fruit looks like it's already quite mature. That wolf must have guarded it for many years and was probably planning on eating it to break through to a new level. Yet, I ate it before the wolf could..."

Hearing his explanation, Jackie calmed down. If Hansel had tried to avoid the topic and made up something like him meeting the wolf by coincidence, Jackie would have definitely questioned Hansel's character.

After all, he had personally seen how crazed the one-eyed wolf looked when it was pursuing Hansel.

Even if fiends were the natural enemy of humans, they would not be so crazed.

"No wonder that one-eyed frost wolf looked so angered when it saw us bringing you in. You actually ate the fruit it had been guarding for such a long time..." Rudy said with a raised eyebrow.

Hansel shook his head helplessly, "I don't know what else to say. Spiritual objects belong to no one. The Crimson Blood Fruit had no owner in the first place, whoever has it first owns it.

“Even though the wolf protected it for so many years, it did not mean it owned the Crimson Blood Fruit. There’s nothing wrong with me eating it.”

Chapter 2489

Hansel did not feel that he had done anything wrong. Fiends and humans were natural enemies anyway.

Grayson frowned, “Do you think the one-eyed wolf has left already?”

The question caused the thrilling atmosphere earlier to temporarily calm down. No one could answer Grayson’s question. Even after a long time, no one spoke.

Grayson was forced to say himself, “I feel like he’s already left. We should be able to go out now. Even though the wolf is vengeful of Hansel for eating its Crimson Blood Fruit, doesn’t mean it will stay waiting outside. We’ve been in here so long without any movements, so surely it’s already left...”

The moment he finished saying that, he glanced at Jackie. Jackie’s lips twitched in

exasperation, not knowing what to say.

Jackie had clearly said earlier that the one-eyed wolf was still a wolf at the end of the day.

Wolves were naturally patient hunters. As long as a wolf had its eyes on something, it would stop at nothing to get it.

Grayson had clearly heard what he had said earlier, but still asked that question. He was just incredibly curious if the wolf had left or not.

Jackie frowned and said, “We can’t see what’s happening outside at all. If you want to open the vessel right now, then you’ll be putting all of us in danger. If you want to die, then go ahead. I don’t want to throw myself into danger because of you.”

Rudy nodded slightly, agreeing with what Jackie said, but not adding to it.

Grayson’s face reddened in anger at those words. He frantically struggled to stand up.

“I know you have always had your own opinion, but I don’t believe that everything will happen just as you said. I’ll go out right now to see if that wolf is gone or not!”

Jackie looked up strangely at Grayson abruptly. He felt like Grayson was like a wild cow that could not be held back. Jackie refused to believe that Grayson really was as much an unreasonable idiot as he seemed.

Yet, Grayson insisted on checking the situation outside. Jackie took a deep breath and said, “What exactly do you want? Are you really not afraid that the wolf will bite onto your neck and drag you out the moment you open the door?”

Grayson seemed a little emotional, but he waved around and said, “Then are we supposed to just wait around? Both of us know how dangerous this place is. If we continued to wait, no one knows what would happen. I don’t want to think about anything at this moment. I just want to leave as soon as possible!”

After saying that, Grayson slumped to the ground like he had used up all his strength. His mood was very complicated. The more terrified he was of the place, the more he wanted to leave.

Before, he had complicated feelings about Grand Yorn Mountain. After all, Grand Yorn Mountain contained the most fiends in all of Hestia Continent. It was also a famous place. Yet, the moment they arrived there, he realized how small he was.

His future was incredibly bright, so he did not want to die there. He did not want to end up being lunch to a certain beast. That was far too cruel for him. It was too much for him to accept.

Chapter 2490

"What's in your hand?" At that moment, Hansel suddenly said as he looked at Jackie's left hand.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at the red-colored crystal in his left hand. He opened up his palm and showed the crystal to Hansel. Before he knew what exactly the crystal did, he did not plan on hiding it.

After all, the other two had also seen the crystal. They even wanted it for themselves. When Jackie revealed the crystal, Hansel frowned as he looked at the crystal in Jackie's palm in earnest.

After looking at it for a while, he suddenly looked up at Jackie and exclaimed, "You actually have a Scarlet Blood Crystal!"

The words echoed in Jackie's mind. It shocked Jackie a little, but he was mostly just confused. What was a Scarlet Blood Crystal? Why had he never heard of it?

What could the Scarlet Blood Crystal be used for? After noticing that Hansel knew what that thing was, Jackie could not help but feel excited. Yet, the alarm in his heart did not disappear.

He was worried that Hansel would not tell him the truth despite knowing what it was. He was worried that Hansel would try to steal the crystal from him, but the next few words caused Jackie to relax.

Hansel frowned as he spat out, “This thing is incredibly valuable. Normally, people would never be able to see one. I’ve only seen one in ancient texts before.

“I can’t believe I get to see one for myself. However, the crystal is mighty amazing, it’s not something a normal person could use. Even I have no way of absorbing it.”

Those words were incredibly informative, causing Jackie to straighten his body. The Scarlet Blood Crystal still looked the same,but Jackie seemed to feel sudden warm energy within the crystal.

Hansel’s explanation seemed like a bucket of cold water to Grayson and Rudy. They had wanted the Scarlet Blood Crystal as well, especially after Hansel said it was valuable.

The next words caused the two of them to stop again. Rudy said, “Tell us clearly. Why can’t a normal person use it? Why can’t you use it? Does a natural treasure require the rights to absorb it?”

Rudy’s words caused Hansel to laugh. He helplessly pursed his lips as he looked at Rudy earnestly. He frowned and thought about it, and felt Rudy’s question was absurd.

After all, Rudy was only in the early innate stage. That amount of talent would only be able to barely qualify him to be a runner disciple in the Seven Absolutes Pavillion. He would never get to become an outer disciple.

People like that would naturally know very little, but Rudy was still his savior, so he had to treat him politely.

He took a deep breath as he explained sincerely, “Absorbing natural treasures obviously require qualifications. Those without the skill or the talent might end up exploding if they absorb too much energy.

“Clueless folk would just absorb any treasures they got without regard for anything to increase their powers. It would merely end up in disaster.”

The words caused Rudy to turn red in embarrassment.

Even though Hansel was not mocking Rudy at all, it still caused Rudy to feel like he was too clueless.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2491 - 2492

Chapter 2491

Hansel did not care about how Rudy was feeling. He continued to ask, "To absorb this Scarlet Blood Crystal will require an incredibly strong technique to go with it. The technique I'm currently using is not enough to help me absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal at all."

After Hansel said that, his face was full of regret. After all, the Scarlet Blood Crystal was a treasure that he had only seen in ancient records before.

Absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal would cleanse one's marrows, improving their strength. It could even help break through any bottlenecks, helping one leap into the next realm. For regular martial artists, it was something incredibly valuable.

After Grayson heard Hansel's words, he could not help but be full of disbelief. He frowned as he said earnestly, "You're a disciple from a fifth-grade clan. With your skills, you're definitely at least a chosen disciple within the clan. It should be incredibly easy for you to learn any high level techniques.

"If the high-level techniques you have can't help you absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal, who could possibly be able to do it?"

Grayson earnestly asked the question that was on his mind. He could not understand why a high-level technique was needed to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal. Did that crystal have anything to do with techniques?

Advertisement

He wondered if the guy in front of him had ill intentions, and was using some nonsense to lie to him. Grayson felt like that was incredibly possible. Even though the guy looked like an honest person, it was hard to read the human heart.

He might have developed sinister

intentions after seeing how valuable the Scarlet Blood Crystal was. He might be trying to trick them so he could get the crystal for himself.

Probably because Grayson's expressions were far too obvious, Hansel could immediately tell what Grayson was thinking. He helplessly pursed his lips.

Advertisement

"I'm not lying to you. I really can't absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal. The technique I'm learning is a middle-stage Earth technique. Only ultimate god-level techniques can manage to absorb these crystals. Furthermore, the requirements are incredibly strict.

"Only masters among masters have the ability to absorb the power in the Scarlet Blood Crystals. The Scarlet Blood Crystal can increase a person's power, but that's the secondary purpose. Its main function is to cleanse a person's marrows, increasing the quality of their training."Even though Hansel's explanation was very detailed, Grayson did not believe it. Hansel was beginning to feel exasperated, so he decided to shut his mouth and stop talking.

After all, he did not have any intentions to get his hands on the Scarlet Blood Crystal as he knew he did not have the ability to absorb it.

Even if he had any way to get it, he would not be able to handle the Scarlet Blood Crystal and it would merely attract the attention of others and bring him even more trouble.

After hearing Hansel's explanation, Jackie's eyes shone brightly. He started to measure the crystal in his hand earnestly as he looked at the crystal again and again.

The others merely felt like Jackie was feeling conflicted after the explanation. It was such a valuable and amazing treasure, but no one could absorb it.

Chapter 2492

Rudy waved it off and said, "It looks like I'm just unlucky, but we should be able to make a lot of money if we sell this."

At those words, Jackie let out a cold smile, "Do you think this belongs to you?"

Rudy got goosebumps at those words. Even though Jackie did not do anything to him, Jackie once again sent out his aura to push Rudy down.

Advertisement

Rudy's face reddened in anger and replied, "You're going over the line! The Scarlet Blood Crystal was thrown inside by the two deacons before they died. It should belong to the three of us. Are you planning on taking it for yourself?"

Jackie let out a smile after hearing such a laughable statement, "If you don't give this to me, we'll never be able to leave this place. We'll only be able to leave this place alive if I absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal..."

Jackie's words were successfully stunned. everyone present. Grayson and Rudy widened their eyes, looking at Jackie with a strange expression. They did not understand what Jackie meant.

Hansel pursed his lips, " Jackie, are you planning on absorbing the Scarlet Blood. Crystal ?"

Hansel had given such a detailed explanation to tell that group that they did not have the talent to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal. He had wanted them to discard that crazy thought.

Rudy looked at Jackie speechlessly. The words that Hansel had said were not incredibly clear, but Rudy still understood what Hansel wanted to convey to them.

Rudy felt like Hansel's words had already been clear enough. Unless there was something wrong with their heads, they would definitely be able to understand.

Rudy had glanced at Grayson earlier. Looking at Grayson's expression, Rudy knew that Grayson had got it too.

Since the two of them understood, Jackie should have no trouble understanding. Yet, he still said something so absurd. Even if he was confident in himself, it was far too dumb.

Rudy coldly snorted as he said, " Jackie, are you purposely acting like you didn't hear or didn't understand what we said earlier ? Maybe you think that we'd look at you in a better light if you do that ?

"Even Hansel isn't able to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal, so how could you ? Are you trying to say the technique you have is even higher ranked than Hansel's ?"

Rudy could not hide the mockery in his tone as he said that. He looked at Jackie as if he was looking at a complete idiot.

Grayson laughed, “You should stop trying to explain it to him. He probably doesn’t even know what kind of a disciple Hansel is in the Seven Absolutes Pavilion. It’s fine that you can’t tell, let me tell you.

“Hansel is a chosen disciple in the Seven Absolutes Pavilion. Anyone who can become one is definitely no ordinary person. The techniques they have are all Earth rank techniques.

“Hansel said earlier that only an ultimate god rank technique would be able to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal. Are you trying to say you have such a skill?!”

After saying that, Grayson could no longer hold back as he started to laugh uproariously. The sound was incredibly sharp, and everyone felt uncomfortable just listening to it. Jackie merely looked at the two of them quietly. He did not say anything about the laughter and mockery from the two of them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2493 - 2494

Chapter 2493

After Grayson had his fill of laughter, he cleared his throat and said, “If you really know an ultimate god rank technique, then this Scarlet Blood Crystal is yours. The two of us won’t fight over it with you!”

As he said those words, Grayson had a look of disdain on his face. In his heart, even if Jackie was going to be beaten to death, Jackie would not be able to learn an ultimate god rank technique.

Jackie let out a sigh as he shook his head slowly, “What I’m learning shouldn’t be an ultimate god rank technique.”

Jackie was sure of the fact. The technique he learned was at the top of the Divine Void World. He did not know what rank the Divine Void Heavenly Path could possibly be.

After all, a first-grade world was incredibly different from a third-grade world. He

could not determine what rank the Divine Void Heavenly Path was. However, he was sure that the Divine Void Heavenly Path was several times better than ultimate god rank techniques.

Advertisement

Looking at Jackie shaking his head earnestly, Grayson and Rudy could no longer hold back from laughing loudly. They looked at Jackie as if he was an idiot as they laughed clutching their stomachs.

“You’re not able to pretend anymore? You were bragging so much earlier. If you don’t have an ultimate god rank technique, then why are you still holding onto the Scarlet Blood Crystal? Are you planning on swallowing it? Do you think that swallowing it will help you absorb it?”

Jackie looked on as the two of them laughed and mocked him. He sighed helplessly. Jackie had encountered quite a few of those types of people. They would find an excuse to laugh at him.

Jackie said seriously, “The technique I have isn’t an ultimate god rank technique, but I can still absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal.”

Advertisement

As Jackie spoke, he once again brought the crystal up in front of his eyes and carefully observed it. He did not bother looking at Grayson and Rudy laughing, nor did he care about what the other three would think after his words.

He once again put all his focus on the Scarlet Blood Crystal. He never expected the crystal to actually be so valuable. There were so many benefits to be gained after absorbing it. No wonder that earlier group seemed so strong.

The higher the strength of a person, the easier it would be for someone to learn a high-level technique. That was a firm truth. It was because a stronger person would naturally understand the ways of the world, and it would be easier to master the techniques.

The group of people was trying to steal the Scarlet Blood Crystal probably because among them there were people with ultimate god rank techniques who are able to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal.

For those of them who were younger,absorbing a Scarlet Blood Crystal was something they could not even hope for.

When Hansel saw that Jackie was ignoring the others and focusing on the Scarlet Blood Crystal, he could not help but be curious. He felt like Jackie was getting more and more mysterious.

He took a deep breath as he said seriously, " Jackie, are you confident you can absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow before nodding slowly, "I will absorb it."

After saying that, he did not wait for the others to react. He stood up before he found a corner. He sat down cross-legged as he placed the crystal on his palm, starting to absorb it.

Advertisement

Chapter 2494

Grayson and Rudy were both looking at the scene. It stunned the two of them. They had thought that Jackie had just been trying to show off with those hilarious words, but Jackie had actually been serious.

He really was starting to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal.

Rudy could no longer just sit and watch. He immediately stood up and shouted at Jackie with widened eyes, "Are you really crazy?! We've already said it. Unless it's an ultimate god rank technique, you won't be able to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal. You will just explode and die if you absorb it now, you'll also ruin the crystal and the crystal's value will be lost. You won't just be dragging yourself down, you'll drag us down too!"

Jackie frowned, feeling incredibly disgusted by that person. Rudy was only trying to stop him because he wanted to sell the crystal eventually.

Grayson stood up as well. Since they were on the same boat, the two of them started to target Jackie.

Hansel frowned, wanting to help Jackie say something. After all, he did like Jackie a little, but he decided to shut his mouth after some thought. He was still in a weakened state, if he decided to pick a side, he might end up offending all of them.

Grayson rushed over to Jackie as he said seriously, "I know you're stronger than both of us, but you can't just do anything you want because of that. The Scarlet Blood Crystal belongs to the three of us, you can't just use it up yourself!"

Rudy stood behind Grayson like a bodyguard.

He looked down at Jackie with righteous fury, "You won't just be going against your integrity by doing so, you'll go against morals as well! Why are you allowed to just absorb it alone?! If you do so, all the consequences, good or bad, would be yours alone.

"The value of the crystal will be gone. Are you just going to throw the spirit crystals we could exchange with this crystal?! We can't let you do that!"

Jackie looked up at the two of them coldly. He had already held back for a very long time. If he did not teach them a lesson, it would end up getting to their heads.

Time was incredibly valuable at that moment. He could not afford to waste it on the two of them. Jackie raised his hands as grey energy

condensed in his palm. His full focus had been on alchemy in the most recent times, but it did not mean that his skills had slipped. Jackie was still a late stage innate realm fighter. He was only a sliver away from the spring solidifying realm.

Destroying the Void, an upper-ultimate god rank technique, was already at the second stage. No matter how you looked at it, he was far stronger.

Rudy frowned and said, "Why are you looking at me with that expression? Are you trying to attack us?"

The moment he said that, Rudy saw Jackie pushing his right hand in that direction. After that, the grey energy shot out from Jackie's palm.

The two of them never expected that Jackie would actually attack them. Yet, it was already too late for them to react. After all, Rudy and Grayson were not fighters. They only managed to get to their positions all thanks to alchemy.

Without alchemy, they would only be runner disciples in their respective clans. Their battle skills were a mess. By the time they realized something was wrong, they were already sent flying by Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2495

Chapter 2495

Waves of pain were felt on their chests. It was after Jackie had shown them mercy by not using that much of his power. If Jackie was ruthless, the two of them would already be dead!

The two of them flew toward the east of the vessel after being hit by Jackie. They slammed right onto the eastern side of the vessel with a bang.

Right after that, they fell to the ground. The two of them lay on the ground after being beaten up, feeling dizzy in their heads.

When Hansel looked at that scene, he suddenly turned around to look at Jackie curiously. Due to Jackie's internal damage, Hansel had been unable to see what level Jackie was actually at.

He had thought that Jackie would be at around the same level as the other two, but Jackie had actually proven to be stronger.

With just a casual wave, Jackie had managed to completely defeat Rudy and Grayson, sending them flying so pathetically.

Advertisement

Rudy clutched his chest as he wailed, "What is this?! Why is this so painful?! Jackie, what kind of attack did you use just now? Why do I feel like hundreds of ants are biting my chest?!"

Rudy's whole body was trembling in pain. He was rolling around on the floor frantically. Ever since he started to show exceptional talent in alchemy, he had never suffered any pain.

Even though he had never felt that kind of pain before, the pain caused his nerves to tense profoundly. The pain he felt was so strong that he was on the brink of collapsing.

Grayson's state was just the same, if not worse, than Rudy's. He was panting in pain. His whole body shook and his face was pale. It was as if he would stop breathing at any moment.

Advertisement

Jackie raised an eyebrow. It seemed like Grayson's tolerance for pain was a little weaker than Rudy's. He had used Destroying the Void to attack the both of them and Destroying the Void had always been a spiritual attack.

Even though it had been drastically weakened, it still managed to hurt their souls. Damage to the soul was the hardest thing to withstand. It was not like physical pain that would go numb after a certain level.

Spiritual pain was different, the more pain was felt, the more awake the person would be.

Facing those two insignificant guys, Jackie did not use that much strength at all. He merely attacked to shut the two of them up. They had been far too annoying.

Jackie let out a cold laugh as he looked at the two of them rolling on the floor, "I have already told the two of you, shut your mouth and nothing will happen.

"You both insisted on causing me trouble. Let me warn you guys, if you interrupt me again, it won't have the same ending as today."

After finishing those words, Jackie no longer bothered with the two of them. He shut his eyes and started to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal.

When Jackie felt the power of the Scarlet Blood Crystal seeping into him, Jackie could finally understand why Hansel had said that the power within the crystal could not be absorbed without the help of a strong technique.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2496

Chapter 2496

The power contained within the Scarlet Blood Crystal was far too violent. The power could only be suppressed by a strong enough technique. Otherwise, one would explode after absorbing it into their bodies.

The power was both domineering and filling. Even though Jackie was helped with the Divine Void Heavenly Path, he did not dare to be too careless. Slowly, he absorbed the energy from the Scarlet Blood Crystal into his body.

Time slowly ticked away. At noon on the second day, Jackie had completely absorbed the energy of the Scarlet Blood Crystal. At that moment, his face was pale as sweat slowly dripped down from his forehead.

The day before, Grayson and Rudy had been injured by Jackie. The two of them became completely obedient after knowing that Jackie was not to be messed with.

As time passed, the two of them noticed that Jackie's condition was worsening more and more. Beads after beads of sweat dripped down from Jackie's forehead. At that moment, he looked like he was in an incredibly difficult position. The worse Jackie's condition was, the happier the two of them were.

After all, they had just been taught a harsh lesson by Jackie. The lesson did prove its worth. Even though they were happy at Jackie's suffering, they no longer tried to cause Jackie any trouble.

Advertisement

That was precisely what Jackie had wanted. He just wanted to quietly absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal without any interruptions. Time ticked away second by second. Another day had passed with Jackie submerged in his own world, constantly absorbing the power of the Scarlet Blood Crystal.

Rudy constantly fanned the flames next to him, "We told him not to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal without an ultimate god level technique. He refused to listen. Just look at him, he'll probably explode in just a few more hours.

"So what if he's strong? He's just gonna die in the end. We should go further away from him. What if his blood splatters all over us when he explodes? That would be so disgusting."

When Grayson heard that, he nodded as he sat further away, shooting a hateful glance at Jackie.

Advertisement

He snorted as he said, "Jackie is very talented, but there's really something wrong with his head. Everything was so clearly explained, but he refused to listen. He insisted on using his life to prove that what he said was real.

"Let him die if he wants to. He even wasted the Scarlet Blood Crystal. The Scarlet BloodCrystal would probably have been worth a few eighth-grade medicines if we sold it outside!"

Hearing that, Rudy felt a pain in his heart. He said with a conflicted look, "We really were dragged down by this guy. I hate this, but he's so strong, there's no way for us to..."

The more the two of them thought about it, the more aggrieved they felt, and the worse their mood became. Yet, they had no solution to it. If they forced Jackie to stop absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal, Jackie might just kill the both of them in the frenzy. That was something they could do nothing about.

After another half a day, Grayson lost his patience. He stood up abruptly as he faced the vessel's door.

"We can't just keep waiting anymore! It's already been two days. I refuse to believe that the one-eyed frost wolf is still waiting outside!"

He did not want to spend another second in Grand Yorn Mountain. There are so many dangers around here. Each second represented another chance at danger. He just wanted to hurry up and leave that forsaken place. He wanted to find somewhere with a lot of humans to get to a transporter. He wanted to return to the Rosefinch Pavilion and never leave again.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2497

Chapter 2497

This trip had brought him so many dangers that had filled his heart with fear. He would probably not recover from it even for an entire year. Rudy frowned, he knew what Grayson was planning on doing.

He said in exasperation, "Don't be in such a hurry. Even though there's something wrong with Jackie's head, what he said earlier is not wrong.

"No matter what, a one-eyed frost wolf is still a wolf. Wolves are one of the best hunters in the wild. If it wants to kill someone, it will

do everything it can to kill the person. It might still be waiting outside, waiting for us to leave this vessel.

"The moment we open the door, it will rush right at us. With our skills at the moment, we won't be able to survive if the one-eyed frost wolf rushed at us."

Grayson panted somewhat anxiously as his

face reddened, "I know that! What you're saying is right! I just don't have the patience to wait anymore!"

Advertisement

He took a deep breath, forcing himself to calm down, and said, "The one-eyed frost wolf might be waiting outside for us, but what if it's not? Then wouldn't we have just wasted all this time for no reason?"

Rudy frowned as he looked at Hansel. He pointed at Hansel and said, "Hansel is a chosen disciple from the Seven Absolutes Pavilion. Once he's recovered, he'll be able to bring us out.

Grayson shook his head anxiously, "You're right! He'll be able to bring us away after he recovers, but do you know how long that will take?

"Just look at all his injuries. Without the help of high-level spiritual medicine, he won't be able to recover for a long time. Are we supposed to just stay here?

Advertisement

“Don’t forget, we’re in Grand Yorn Mountain at the moment. The active fiends around this place are all at the spring solidifying stage. What if they start to get interested in our vessel and attack it together?

“The vessel would not be able to withstand that no matter how strong its defenses are. Then we’d just die right here!”

Grayson felt like it was more and more possible the more he thought about it. His face darkened. He was getting more and more nervous. The more nervous he got, the more he wanted to leave the place.

He took a deep breath as he stared right at Rudy and said, “No matter what, I want to try! I want to see if that one-eyed frost wolf is outside or not!”

After he said that, he turned around and headed toward the door. Hansel and Rudy did not expect Grayson to actually do it.

Rudy hurriedly stood up and tried to grab Grayson’s arm, but failed. He shouted out,

“Grayson, are you crazy?! Do you know what you’re doing right now?

“If you open the door and see the wolf waiting there, what will you do? Will you be able to protect yourself? It’s one thing if you can’t, but we’ll be dragged down to die with you as well!”

Grayson ignored everything as he walked forward. At that moment, Grayson was already thoroughly deaf to the world around him.

Chapter 2498

He retrieved a spirit crystal from his spatial storage and placed it on the door. After that, he started to open the door while saying, "Don't worry, I'll immediately close the door the moment I notice anything wrong. I won't let that wolf inside!"

Rudy was about to go crazy with anger. He never expected Grayson to be so stubborn. Hansel could only look on, unable to move due to his heavy injuries. Looking at the scene, he did not know what to do other than pant heavily.

With a click, the door opened again. A ray of light shot in from outside. Grayson stood on his tiptoes, anxiously looking around and everything outside.

It looked like it did before. Only birds and bugs could be heard in the quiet surroundings. The one-eyed frost wolf was gone! Did it really leave after waiting for too long? That was incredibly good news for them.

Then they would not need to waste any more time inside! Grayson could not hold back his smile after seeing all of that. He suddenly turned around to look at the three of them and shouted gleefully, "See! Are you finally going to listen to me? There's nothing outside. We were just scaring ourselves. It's so funny!"

Just as Grayson said that Hansel paled...

Advertisement

Hansel shouted out immediately, “Hurry up and shut the door!” The moment he said that a chill wind shot in. The chill was enough to freeze one’s soul.

Grayson was the first to get hit by the cold air, and his entire body froze. Rudy could even see the cold air Grayson was breathing out.

Right after that, the three of them saw a huge wolf jump out. Those blue eyes stared right at the three of them.

All three of them, including Hansel, were scared stiff at that moment. It was exactly like Jackie had said, the one-eyed frost wolf had been waiting outside to attack them the moment they opened the door.

Advertisement

After Grayson was attacked by the wind, he was frozen solid. He looked like an ice sculpture, not even his eyes could move.

Rudy was completely pale in fear. He shuddered by the side. And that moment, the one-eyed wolf leaped forward, shooting at the vessel like a cannonball.

As long as it got into the vessel, they were all basically dead. Hansel was a chosen disciple of the Seven Absolutes Pavilion, he had much more experience in combat than the other two.

At that moment, Hansel’s mind might be blank, but his body was still able to react. He struggled up the floor as fast as possible.

After that frost wind had hit Grayson, he rushed to Grayson’s side.

He had still not recovered at that moment, and the actions had opened up his wounds again. The pain caused his face to pale, but he clenched his teeth and bore with it.

He looked over to the array next to the door, using the last of his strength to retrieve a spirit crystal and place it on the array.

Thankfully, he knew how to use arrays like that. The runes lit up again and the door started to shut!

With a loud bang, the wolf's body slammed onto the vessel. The one-eyed frost wolf was incredibly quick. Before the door could completely close, it had managed to reach the vessel.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2499

Chapter 2499

However, the door closed very quickly, and there was only a small gap left! The wolf did not get what it wanted.

The wolf huffed and growled. Its anger caused its speed to increase by several times, but it still did not manage to reach it before the door closed.

The vessel shook as the one-eyed frost wolf slammed into the vessel. The few of them inside the vessel swayed along with the vessel. The wolf had slammed onto the vessel very strongly that time, and the door even deformed as it rammed onto the door.

Thankfully, the vessel was of good quality. Even though the door was deformed, it still managed to shut! The moment the door shut, the three of them let out a sigh of relief.

No one expected that things would happen so quickly. The one-eyed frost wolf had been hiding in the area all along. It had been waiting for them to open the door before it started its attack.

First, it had unleashed its frost attack. It caused the person closest to the door to freeze, unable to react. After that, it rushed over and tried to enter the vessel.

Advertisement

Rudy slumped down on the ground. Hansel did not look happy either. He had been way too agitated earlier. He did not even blink as he used the wall as support to head toward Grayson.

His actions had reopened all his wounds. After calming himself down, he slumped on the ground in pain as he shuddered.

Rudy said after a long time, "That was so close! Any longer and the wolf would have managed to get in!"

It had to be said that combat experience proved useful when it mattered. If Hansel had not reacted the moment the frost shot in, the one-eyed frost wolf might have actually entered.

Advertisement

In the end, Grayson was far too useless. His strength was too weak, only being at the early stage of the innate level. When the frost shot in, he had no defense against it as he froze.

Rudy was also standing not too far away from him. The frost got to him and Rudy was rooted on the spot, not even able to move a finger.

If Hansel had not been far away and was unaffected by the frost, the three of them would have died!

Grayson circulated the true energy within his body, slowly pushing out the chill inside his body. His strength was too weak, and the frost had been shot out by the one-eyed frost wolf. Thankfully, the wolf had chosen speed to overpower for the attack.

That was why Grayson was still alive. If the wolf's attack had been any stronger,

Grayson would have turned to ice and died on the spot.

Hansel frowned and said, "I told you not to be reckless earlier! If I hadn't reacted fast enough, the three of us would have died!

"Do you think a spring solidifying realm beast would be stupid? Didn't we say before that the wolf would not let us off so easily? He would continue staying nearby, are you really trying to die?"

Hansel was furious. If Grayson had not tried to act on his own, opening the door before the two of them reacted, they would not have gone through such a dangerous situation. It had even aggravated his injuries.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2500

Chapter 2500

Grayson used his true energy to attack the frost within his body as he shuddered. He did not know what to say. At that moment, he was in a terrified state.

Hansel pursed his lips in exasperation, "Whatever... you're alchemists. You don't have enough combat experience. You wouldn't know when danger can happen at any time.

Grayson frowned after he heard that, saying obstinately, "We might be alchemists, but we're fighters too. It's not like we've never fought before.

"I just didn't expect the wolf to be so patient. I did not expect it to keep hiding around and suddenly attack us like that..."

Hansel struggled to sit up straight and replied, "The one-eyed frost wolf is incredibly patient. Anyone it has its eyes on would have a

hard time escaping. Wasn't it all already explained to you? You don't have to be so stubborn.

"We wanted to stop you earlier, but we just failed! You better remember this! If I hadn't reacted so quickly, the consequences would have been dire. Don't be so impulsive in the future, or you'll definitely die. You'll also drag others down with you!"

Advertisement

Hansel was quite angered. He had seen stubborn idiots in his own clan before, but it was the first time he had seen anyone like Grayson. Grayson was stubborn to think that his thoughts were right, and only followed his own ways.

Rudy coldly snorted, "Grayson, listen up. If you want to die, I won't stop you, but don't try to drag us along with you.

"Are you so eager to leave this place? Are you not planning to leave this place alive? You look like you're looking for death!"

Rudy had slowly managed to compose himself and calm down. He glared at Grayson angrily. Rudy wanted nothing more than to rip Grayson to shreds at that moment.

Advertisement

"Are you really trying to drag us down with you?" At that moment, Jackie, who had quietly been absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal, suddenly opened his eyes and said coldly.

Jackie's sudden words caused the other three presents to pause. They all looked over at Jackie. At that moment, Jackie's eyes were open. There was still sweat on his forehead, but he seemed quite awake.

Grayson frowned as he said, "You're not dead yet?"

Those words had been vicious. Jackie smiled coldly as he took out new clothes from the Mustard Seed and wiped away the sweat.

"How could I die before you?" After tidying himself up, Jackie kept the Scarlet BloodCrystal and slowly stood up.

Grayson had not retorted against Hansel and Rudy's scoldings. After all, it was indeed his fault. However, Jackie actually started to lecture him after the two of them, which Grayson could not take.

At that moment, he had slowly started to chase away the cold in his body, and he felt a bit better.

He frowned and said, "Quit talking. You were just on the side not doing anything just now. This doesn't affect you at all. You were even scared, so why are you lecturing me?!"

Jackie smiled coldly, "Don't you think your words are very funny? You asked me why I'm lecturing you? Is it only the three of you in this vessel?

Advertisement

"If you really allowed that wolf in, would it only eat the three of you and spare me?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2501

Chapter 2501

Those words were shoved right into Grayson's face. Suddenly, he did not know what to say. Jackie no longer bothered sparing Grayson another glance as he walked toward the door of the vessel.

The other three were stunned, not knowing what Jackie was doing. They frowned as they stared at Jackie.

Rudy asked, "Jackie, what are you trying to do?"

Jackie did not answer Rudy. Instead, he took out a spirit crystal from the Mustard Seed very calmly before placing it into the array. When the three of them saw that scene, they had a flash of panic on their faces.

They suddenly understood what Jackie was trying to do.

Hansel looked up and shouted, "Are you trying to open the door? Have you gone mad"

Advertisement

Rudy shouted even louder, "Are you trying to die?! Is there something wrong with your head?!"

There was nothing wrong with Jackie's mind.

He indeed wanted to open the door.

Hansel struggled to stand up from the ground as he bore with the pain of the wounds on his body opening up and grabbed Jackie's arm.

Advertisement

He continued, “Why are you opening the door? Do you really want to die now?! Could it be that you didn’t manage to absorb the Scarlet Blood Crystal and you’re now at risk of exploding? Is that why you don’t even want to live anymore?”

From the moment Jackie insisted on absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal, Hansel had already assumed that Jackie would die.

The Scarlet Blood Crystal was no ordinary treasure. Absorbing it would definitely technique as support to explode.

That was why Hansel felt no greed at all after he saw the Scarlet Blood Crystal. Yet, he did not expect that Jackie would be ignorant and insist on absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal after he had made things so clear.

He had been waiting all along for Jackie’s body to explode, but it had not happened. Everything had happened too fast earlier, and he had not reacted to anything after Jackie suddenly started speaking again.

It was only when Jackie wanted to open the door that Hansel remembered that Jackie should have been injured after absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal!

Without the support of an incredibly strong technique, Jackie would absolutely be injured after absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal!

At Hansel’s words, Rudy and Grayson felt like Hansel was right. Jackie just wanted to kill everyone with him after suffering fatal injuries!

Rudy jumped up furiously and said, “Jackie! If you want to die, I can help you right now! I’ve always known you weren’t a good person, and now it looks like I’m right! Not only are you a bad person, but you’re

also a madman as well. If you don't want to live anymore, then go die yourself. Don't drag me with you!"

Advertisement

Grayson emotionally shouted, "If you've been injured, then it's your problem. We'd already given you advice, but you were the one who refused to listen. You insisted on absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal! Now you're heavily injured, but you're trying to drag us down with you! You're too despicable!"

Jackie looked at those three helplessly. He glanced at Hansel's hand which was on his arm. At that moment, Hansel looked pathetic. That guy was probably cursing all three of them in his heart.

After all, Grayson had just caused trouble, and Jackie was about to open the door. No one would be able to stand it. Jackie let out a slight laugh as he reached out and grabbed Hansel's arm, pushing it aside before he placed his hand back on the array.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2502

Chapter 2502
He quickly formed a few seals, and with a click, the door opened again. At that moment, the other three were almost unable to grasp what was happening.

To stop Hansel from interfering, Jackie had his other hand stopping Hansel's arm. Hansel was unable to get close to the array. He then took a step forward and stood in front of the array, causing the three of them to not be able to close the door.

The three of them were suddenly in a massive panic then. None of them expected Jackie to be so crazy, insisting on having them die with him.

Rudy was so anxious that he was about to cry. He shouted, “Jackie, you’re crazy! If you want to die, then just go ahead and die yourself. Why are you trying to drag the three of us with you?!”

He cried as he frantically rushed toward Jackie. Grayson clenched his teeth as he thought about rushing past Jackie to close the door.

However, Jackie was like a steel wall. He stood in front of the array, not allowing the three of them to shut the door!

Advertisement

After a few clicks sounded, the door finally opened. A familiar chill rushed in from the outside.

Jackie let out a cold smile as he turned to look outside the ship. Jackie saw a blue colored chill as Rudy and the other two’s shouts could still be heard. Hansel grabbed his arm, a bit crazed.

Jackie did not care what everyone around him was saying or shouting at him. He left the vessel in a flash.

A roar came from that bundle of frost. After a howl, the icy chill slowly dissipated. A strong figure appeared in front of Jackie. The one-eyed frost wolf’s sole eye looked at Jackie in suspicion.

Advertisement

It was not stupid and was quite curious.

The door had clearly just closed, so why was it suddenly opened again so quickly? Why did that guy in front of it rush out? Was the guy looking to die?

Jackie took a deep breath as he took out the gray sword from Mustard Seed and held it tightly in his hand. He looked right up at the one-eyed frost wolf that was as tall as three people.

"You're the strongest being I've faced since I was born." Jackie's tone was light as if he was talking about something very simple.

The one-eyed frost wolf's suspicion intensified. It walked two steps forward as a mocking smile suddenly appeared on its face.

Even though the one-eyed frost wolf was already in the spring-solidifying realm, it had not attained a human form yet. It could not comm micate in human language, and could only answer Jackie with its expressions.

Jackie knew that the one-eyed frost wolf had already regarded him as a little mouse to toy around with. It could kill Jackie with one claw, yet Jackie still took out a weapon. It amused the one-eyed frost wolf a lot.

"Do you think I'm not on your level?" Jackie's tone was calm as always.

The one-eyed frost wolf's mocking smile deepened.

Advertisement

The disdain in its eyes was incredibly obvious.

Jackie let out a slight laugh before nodding and said, "Then let's try it out."

“Is Jackie crazy? Is something wrong with his head? Why is he talking to the one-eyed frost wolf with this tone? It’s as if he’s the spring solidifying realm expert!” Rudy said with widened eyes.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2503

Chapter 2503
Jackie’s actions earlier had completely stumped the three of them.

They saw that the wolf had not attacked the three of them, so they had held back the fear in their hearts, not shutting the door immediately.

The three of them stood inside the vessel, looking at Jackie standing in front of the wolf with widened eyes. They were shocked at Jackie’s challenging tone toward the wolf.

Hansel’s mouth twitched, feeling like he no longer knew what to think, and said, “I really admire Jackie’s mental strength. If I was about to explode, I would never be able to speak in such a calm tone to a beast that could kill me at any time. Even if I wanted to die, I would not be so calm!”

Hansel’s words did not have a hint of mockery at all. He really did admire Jackie. Jackie was doing something he would never be able to do.

Jackie seemed way too calm.

Advertisement

The calmness was as if Jackie was not facing a spring solidifying realm beast, but an innate stage one.

The wolf let out a breath of frost air as it looked at Jackie as if he was an idiot. Even though he felt like Jackie was an idiot that did not know his place, those words still hurt the wolf's pride.

It would not allow an ant of a human to speak to it like that! Since he wanted to try, then it would bite off his throat in a flash and put Jackie in his place.

Thinking about that, it raised its hind leg a little. The next second, it leaped forward like a cannonball, heading straight for Jackie.

Advertisement

It opened its jaws, revealing its teeth as chills came out of its mouth.

Jackie had already been prepared. He clenched the gray sword in his hand tightly as sixty Soul Swords fused into one, heading into the gray sword!

He raised his hand and slashed it at the wolf! Destroying the Void turned into a flash of light as he clashed with the wolf in the air.

The one-eyed frost wolf did not even turn its head as it looked at the ray of light. Its sole eye suddenly let out a radiant blue glow. An ice arrow the size of an arm shot out. It was a natural skill of the wolf!

The ice arrow contained a coldness that would stop any human from breathing. It clashed with Destroying the Void! When Rudy and the others saw that, they thought about how Jackie would die instantly after being struck by that arrow!

After that, a huge boom was heard as the two attacks clashed followed by a cracking sound as the blue ice arrow suddenly shattered!

It had turned to dust in a flash.

The wolf had been incredibly confident in its technique. It had never expected its skill to fail.

After the arrow was destroyed by Destroying the Void, it was stunned for a second.

Advertisement

Right at that second, Jackie bent the laws of space and disappeared from his spot! The next second, he appeared in front of the wolf.

After attacking the ice arrow, there was nothing stopping Destroying the Void anymore. With a speed that could not be seen with the naked eye, it appeared in front of the wolf with Jackie in a flash.

The wolf only reacted after Jackie appeared in front of it!

It prepared to jump away, but it was already too late! Destroying the Void sliced right into the wolf's chest, causing the wolf to let out a sharp wail.

At that moment, the one-eyed frost wolf lost all its strength. It could not stop Jackie atall. Jackie emotionlessly stabbed it with his sword, which still contained the power of Destroying the Void.

The gray blade viciously stabbed into the one-eyed frost wolf's chest, causing blood to splash onto Jackie's body.

The pain of its soul being destroyed not only caused the wolf to wail in agony, but also caused it to lose all rational thought.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2504

Chapter 2504

After a bang sounded, the one-eyed frost wolf fell from the sky to the ground. It squashed a patch of grass.

Jackie fell from the sky. As a precaution, he pulled out the sword from the wolf's body before stabbing it a few more times.

Stab after stab, he aimed right at the one-eyed frost wolf's fatal spots. After two or three times, the wolf could not even call out in agony anymore. Its legs curled up as it died!

Everything had happened far too swiftly. The three people within the vessel had not even had a chance to react before the one eyed frost wolf that had been so impressive to them, died.

It was a spring solidifying realm beast. To Rudy and Grayson, a beast-like that was probably something they would never be able to defeat in their lifetime. Yet, Jackie had dealt with it in just a flash!

If they had not personally witnessed how powerful the one-eyed frost wolf's attack had been, they would have been doubting if the one-eyed frost wolf was really in the spring solidifying realm.

Advertisement

It had died far too easily!

"Is this all real? Could I be hallucinating?!" Grayson said as he trembled.

At that moment, his eyes had never left the one-eyed frost wolf's corpse. He could not believe that he had actually witnessed a spring solidifying realm beast being defeated so easily by Jackie.

It was far too strange! It was so absurd that he would never have believed it if he had not witnessed it for himself. Rudy pinched himself.

Advertisement

The pain told him that everything was true. "How did he kill a spring solidifying realm beast? Isn't he at the early stage of the innate level? Am I crazy, or has the world gone crazy? How could something so absurd like this happen?"

Rudy felt like the whole world had gone mad. Jackie might be stronger than the two of them, but he could not be that strong! At the most, Jackie should have been at the middle stage of the innate level.

Yet, how was it possible for a spring solidifying realm beast to fall in just one strike?!

Hansel put a hand against the door as he forced himself to stand up. He listened to the constant comments from the other two.

After a while, he said in disbelief, "Who said he's at the innate level? He's clearly a spring solidifying realm fighter..."

Those words stunned Grayson and Rudy.

Jackie was a spring solidifying realm fighter? How could that be?! The two of them hurriedly sent out their divine senses to check Jackie's level.As they checked, they were surprised to notice that they were not

able to determine Jackie's level. It was as if Jackie was different internally than other people.

Rudy said anxiously, "I can't tell how strong his strength is!"

Grayson nodded right after, "I can't see it either! Can you?"

Advertisement

The two of them were forced to suspect if Jackie's level was too high for them to check his strength.

Hansel took a deep breath, his voice was a bit raspy, "I can't tell how powerful he is either. He must have been injured earlier.

"However, it's not just your senses that can determine a person's realm. You can also see it from the strength of his attacks! The strength behind his attacks was not something that can be done merely being at the early stage of the spring solidifying the realm."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2505

Chapter 2505

After saying that, Hansel felt his breathing get heavier.

Hansel might be injured, but he was still a spring solidifying realm expert. He was a chosen disciple of a fifth-grade clan.

His words naturally had some authority behind them.

Hansel had seen many spring solidifying realm experts. He could naturally tell what Jackie's approximate level was based on the skills Jackie had used. After hearing Hansel's words, Rudy and Grayson felt their breathing stop.

Jackie was a spring solidifying realm expert? He was not some normal early spring solidifying realm expert either? He was actually that strong? He did not look that old.

He was a year or two younger than them at most. However, his strength was so much higher than theirs! It had completely proven how talented Jackie was in martial arts! Rudy took a deep breath, not knowing what to say. He felt like he had experienced more in the past few days than he had in his twenty-odd years of life!

Advertisement

Grayson was not willing to believe the truth. He shook his head as he said, "Impossible! He's not that talented! He could not possibly be so strong!"

Hansel could not help but let out a cold laugh, "Then can you please explain to me how did that spring solidifying realm beast die in Jackie's hands?"

Grayson was rendered silent by Hansel's words.

Hansel took a deep breath and continued, "Did you see the wolf's expression before it died? I saw it clearly…".

Advertisement

Hansel's words caused Rudy and Grayson to go quiet again. The two of them had seen the wolf collapse on the ground as well.

The Wolf had looked up and stared viciously at Jackie.

That wolf's eyes were filled with fear and shock. It was obvious that it had not been able to react to that attack earlier. It had never expected that its skill would lose to Jackies.

It had also never expected that the brat would be that strong. Before it died, shock filled its eyes.

The three of them could see how confused the one-eyed frost wolf was. Jackie took a deep breath as he raised his left hand, pulling out the gray sword from the wolf's body. He had expected the battle to go that way, The wolf had underestimated him.

If the wolf had known his strength, the battle would probably have lasted longer. Yet, that one-eyed frost wolf had obviously treated him like a little rat that did not fear death.

Hansel was right, Jackie had already entered the spring solidifying realm.

After being transferred to Middle Provine, he was only a sliver away from the spring solidifying realm. Absorbing so much power from the Scarlet Blood Crystal had allowed him to easily level up.

Jackie was already firmly in the early stage of the spring solidifying realm. He had the most basic ability to protect himself in Middle Province.

Advertisement

The innate stage could only be considered the lowest rank of fighters. In third and fourth-grade clans, they would only be able to be disciples. Meanwhile, spring solidifying realm experts could become caretakers.

Many fighters were stuck in the innate level, never able to get into the spring solidifying realm. Jackie clutched his hands, feeling like he had an abundance of energy.

That was the confidence that strength gave him.

He did not even bother turning back to see how the other two were looking at him. Before absorbing the Scarlet Blood Crystal, he had already been planning his next steps after breaking through.

He would first solve his big headache before leaving this place. Even though he would be able to protect himself if he stayed around the area, he could not guarantee there would be no other dangers around.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2506

Chapter 2506
Before he broke through to the divine solidifying realm, he could not afford to cause trouble within Grand Yorn Mountain. He knelt down before retrieving a dagger from his storage space. He aimed it at the wolf's eye and easily dug it out.

The eye was the most valuable thing other than the wolf's spirited core. If he sold it at the market, it would fetch a good price.

What he needed the most at that moment were spirit crystals. Even the most minuscule amount could not be given up. After taking out the wolf's eye, he pierced out the wolf's spirit core and gave it a simple wash. Then, he kept all those valuable things.

After doing that, he turned around to look at the other three who were still stunned. At the moment, the three of them looked at Jackie with a complicated and speechless expression.

“The one-eyed frost wolf is dead. Are you still going to stay here?” Jackie said in a calm tone.

Jackie’s sudden words broke the strange silence. At that moment, Rudy and Grayson no longer dared to even raise their heads to look at Jackie. Jackie was too strong.

Advertisement

They had dared to speak to Jackie as they did before because they had thought Jackie would be at around their level, not that much different in talent.

Yet, they found out that Jackie was actually in the spring solidifying realm. He was not much different from them when it came to alchemy as well. The arrogance in their hearts was no longer applicable to Jackie.

Hansel let out a slight cough as he said, “Since the one-eyed wolf is already dead. then we’re out of danger for now. We can leave now.”

Jackie nodded, glancing at Rudy and Grayson. When the two of them felt Jackie’s. gaze, they stiffened. Even their breathing became erratic.

Advertisement

They could feel that Jackie did not want to bring the two of them along. After all, the two of them were burdens to the two spring solidifying realm experts.

At that moment, the arrogance they had earlier had completely disappeared. They were scared that Jackie would leave the two of them behind and leave with Hansel.

Jackie sighed. He had not wanted to bring the two of them along, but if he did not, there would be some problems later on.

His next step had already been determined the moment he broke into the spring solidifying realm. The other two were still useful, so he was forced to bring the two of them along.

“Let’s hurry up and leave, Hansel, you lead the way,” Jackie said coldly.

Hansel hurriedly nodded. At that moment, Grayson and Rudy were incredibly quick to rush forward and grab one of Hansel’s arms. each, helping him move in front.

That way, they would at least be able to show that they were somewhat useful. The four of them moved forward carefully, worried they would encounter any dangers. After all, they were not in a safe spot.

Probably because they had been around the one-eyed frost wolf’s territory before, it had taken them three or four kilometers before noticing another beast.

The beasts were incredibly sensitive. When Jackie unleashed his strength, the weaker beasts immediately avoided the group.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2507

Chapter 2507

After walking for half a day, they finally left the area where spring solidifying realm beasts dwelled. They arrived at the outskirts, where the beasts around were weaker. They would all flee the moment Jackie unleashed his aura.

Probably because the danger had greatly reduced after arriving at the outskirts, the tension between the four of them had disappeared. Initially,

none of them spoke to each other, but Rudy had wanted to start a conversation.

He still did not dare to look at Jackie. He let out a slight cough as he looked forward and asked, “Do you all have any plans after leaving Grand Yorn Mountain?”

That question was actually targeted at Jackie and Grayson. Grayson furrowed his eyebrows before saying, “Once we’re out, I want to go look for a transfer array. I don’t want to spend another moment outside. I want to go back to Rosefinch Pavilion immediately.” He did not plan on leaving again in his whole lifetime.

Rudy sighed, “I want to return to Golden Pills as well. I feel like the outside is too dangerous. I’d rather stay at Golden Pills as a student. Even though there aren’t that many resources there, I’d still be able to live a peaceful life.”

The journey had dealt them too big of a blow. Students of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance could definitely receive a lot of benefits, but they might face even greater dangers. It caused the two of them to be unsettled.

Advertisement

Jackie frowned, saying in a low voice, “I know you really want to go back, but there’s something you haven’t made clear yet. You’re current students of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance.

“Even though you still have your old identities, you’re already part of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. It’s incredibly inappropriate for the

two of you to just head back like that. No matter what, you need to give the alliance an explanation."

Rudy and Grayson looked at Jackie with a stunned expression after hearing that.

Jackie sighed and continued, "If the two of you quietly head back to your original places just like that, what would happen once the higher-ups in the alliance find out?

Advertisement

"After all, the sudden incident probably means the two deacons are unlikely to be alive. The alliance is probably still trying to figure things out. If the two of you go back quietly, do you think the alliance will just let you be? What would they think of you?"

Jackie's explanation forced the two of them to wake up. Jackie was right! If they went back to their original places without saying anything, the alliance would definitely think there was something wrong with them.

After all, the vessel had gotten into an accident. They had been attacked after all. If nothing wrong happened to them, they would not return quietly at all!

If they ever gave the alliance that sort of impression, it would be incredibly hard for them to explain their way out of it in the future. It would burden the forces backing them. Grayson slapped his head and said, "How could I forget that?! If I return just like that, I'd definitely invite suspicion. They would definitely end up linking everything to us!"

Rudy nodded, “Then what do we do? Why don’t we delay our return to our clans and head to the branch to make a report?”

Jackie frowned and said earnestly, “Just a few miles away will be the Seven Absolutes Pavilions territory. The Seven Absolutes Pavilion is like Rosefinch Pavilion, you’re both fifth-rank clans.

“They both have branches from the alliance as well. If we want to prove ourselves, why don’t we just head to the Seven Absolutes Pavilion’s branch to explain everything?”

Rudy and Grayson nodded, agreeing with Jackie’s idea. When Jackie saw that the two of them had agreed, he was relieved. The incident definitely required witnesses for others to not be suspicious of them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2508

Chapter 2508

Grayson and Rudy had already been completely frightened by what had happened before. They wanted nothing more than to retreat. However, Jackie could only move forward.

Yet, there were some things he could not help but care about. If he went to Phoenix Valley alone, he would definitely be suspected of what had happened before.

If there were witnesses present, the matter could still be explained.

Phoenix Valley was already somewhere Rudy and Grayson no longer cared about, but it was still where Jackie absolutely had to go.

Only by going to Phoenix Valley would Jackie be able to receive the nurturing necessary to become a seventh-grade alchemist. Only by

becoming a seventh-grade alchemist would Jackie be able to earn a lot of spirit crystals.

He would then be able to obtain the ninth grade spirit crystals and make his preparations to enter Wild Gorge Path.

With that amount of spirit crystals, anyone would end up being unable to cope, but Jackie did not feel that much pressure.

Advertisement

Even though it was an incredibly large amount, Jackie felt like he would be able to earn it as long as he put his mind to it. Rudy walked forward with a frown, thinking about something.

After a while, he suddenly said, “I feel like it’s a bit of a pity if I just give up like that, but I also feel like Wild Gorge Path really isn’t that great a place to me.

“That place will definitely be filled with talented people. I might not be able to receive much attention even if I do go there. It’s probably better to go back to Golden Pills. Even though I’d be berated, I would still be given a lot of attention.”

Rudy could not help but look a little guilty as he said that. In the end, he was still a little hesitant about his decision. Before he had come here, he had felt like he would definitely be able to excel in Phoenix Valley.

Advertisement

He would be able to become a subject of admiration even among the older students. Yet, what had happened completely changed Rudy's thoughts.

In the end, he was still reluctant. Grayson was more or less in the same mood as Rudy. After nodding, he continued Rudy's words.

"Our life is the most important. Even though we might receive a lot of attention. After going to Phoenix Valley, Phoenix Valley will definitely have a lot of talented people around since it's so important to the alliance. We might just be buried in the crowd."

After saying that, Grayson looked over at Jackie. Jackie's expression was calm as if what.they were talking about did not affect Jackie at all.

Feeling Grayson's look, Jackie let out a slight laugh as he calmly said, "Don't you know that there are some things you can't control?"

Those words were meant for Rudy and Grayson. They were stunned when they heard that, not knowing what to say.

Jackie let out a sigh, "It's fine if you don't understand. You'll know after a while. There are a lot of things that won't go the way you want them to. Things have their own courses and movements."

Jackie's words were incredibly vague, causing Grayson and Rudy to be even more puzzled.

They did not know why Jackie said that even though Jackie had his reasons.

Advertisement

The two of them could not help but sulk.

Rudy gulped as he walked forward to Jackie's side. He looked up and wanted to ask in detail, but as he was about to do so, he heard a series of footsteps in front.

The four of them looked toward where the sound was coming from. They saw a man in a green robe walking toward them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2509

Chapter 2509

After seeing the face of the man in green robe, Jackie and the others furrowed their eyebrows. They did not have any other particular reactions, but Hansel looked like a cat that just had its tail stepped on. He was suddenly incredibly nervous.

He suddenly retrieved his sword from his spatial ring and placed it in his palm.

The calm look on his face had turned into a hateful one.

The change in Hansel's attitude had been too obvious.

The other three next to him could feel it completely.

They knew the moment they saw such a large change that the green-robed man was definitely not friendly.

Advertisement

Hansel shouted in a heavy tone, "I really can't get rid of you! Malcolm Granger, I never knew you would be so despicable! You're not giving up on trying to kill me!"

The person called Malcolm let out a snide smile after he heard Hansel. He looked at Hansel as if he was looking at an idiot.

“Hansel, you’ve never disappointed me. You always act like an idiot. If I don’t kill you off completely, wouldn’t you just run back to the clan to reveal everything I’ve done?”

Hansel was so furious that his whole body was shaking. He was about to shout when someone slowly walked over from afar. That person was dressed up similarly to Malcolm. It was just that he looked a few years younger than Malcolm.

Advertisement

He slowly walked next to Malcolm. He was like a resolved bodyguard as he stood behind Malcolm.

When Hansel saw the other person, his face soured even more, and shouted, “Jordan! I can’t believe you’re one of Malcolm’s accomplices!”

Jordan shook his head and said, “Hansel, you’re wrong about that. I’m not Malcolm’s accomplice. I’m just a warrior who’s here to get rid of a traitor.”

After those words were spoken, Hansel suddenly laughed out loud. Only, the laugh was full of helplessness and hatred. Jackie and the others could clearly hear that Hansel was not in a good state at that moment.

However, his wounds were still not recovered. The laughing and his mental state aggravated his wounds. It caused his face which had already regained its color to turn pale once again.

Jackie frowned, looking at Malcolm and Jordan who had very relaxed expressions on their faces. When he checked out their strength, Jackie understood why they were acting so casually.

Malcolm's strength was about equal to Hansel's. He had already entered the spring.

solidifying the realm and was at the early stage.

Even though Jordan had yet to break into the spring solidifying realm, he was still at the peak of the innate stage.

Advertisement

On their side, Jackie had deliberately left scars internally, so they could not see how strong he was. Grayson and Rudy were not even worth mentioning. The two of them were practically ants.

The two of them were at the early stage of the innate level. In front of Malcolm and Jordan, they did not amount to everything. Even though Hansel was around the same level as Malcolm, Hansel should be stronger than Malcolm.

Yet, Hansel was heavily injured. It was impossible for him to use all his strength. Even being able to fight at half his level was already quite good.

That was why their group was no threat at all to Malcolm and Jordan. That was why the two of them were so relaxed as they talked.

It was as if everything was already in their hands, and that there would not be any changes.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2510

Chapter 2510

Ever since Malcolm appeared, Jackie and the others were ignored. He did not see Jackie and the others as humans at all.

Hansel was incredibly emotional when he said, “Getting rid of a traitor! I can’t believe you could actually say something like that. The others don’t know, but don’t you know how the eighth elder died?!

“The two of you had plotted against me and I actually fell for it so stupidly!” After saying that, Hansel’s eyes reddened.

He felt like he had been incredibly lied to and framed. He was in a bad state.

Malcolm let out a cold smile as he said, “Stop trying to act like a good person. Every time, you act like a righteous and noble person. Only I know how fake you are.

“We never set a trap for you at all. You were the one who did it all to yourself because of your actions! Don’t think we don’t know anything just because you’ve hidden it. I’ve long since sent someone to check your plot with the alliance!”

Advertisement

Jackie was stunned at those words. Plot with the alliance? Even though Malcolm only mentioned the alliance, Jackie’s mind. immediately jumped to the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance.

Only the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance would be able to be referred to so simply. Could Hansel have some dealings with the alliance?

Hearing Malcolm's words, it seemed like there were a lot of hidden secrets. Thinking about that, Jackie could not help but purse his lips as he quietly stood by the side, looking at the fellow disciples.

Hansel waved his hands around and said, "The ones who are dirty think of everyone else as dirty. How could I have a deal with the alliance? In their eyes, I'm just a little minnow.

Advertisement

"The elders were the ones who allowed me to help the alliance out with something. As the eldest disciple of the Seven Absolutes Pavilion, I have my responsibilities. It's nothing like what you think!"

Malcolm let out a cold laugh as he said, "Stop with your dumb excuses. You're just trying to push all the responsibilities away. The alliance has been through so much lately, everyone knows it has something to do with that group.

"Don't think that we'll believe you just because you're randomly spouting out some nonsense excuse! You've already been the eldest disciple for so many years.

"No matter what, the eighth elder's death is related to you! We did not scheme against you at all. You were the one who decided to go right into it! It's time for you to die now. Allowing you to live for so long is our gift for you."Hansel felt like those words were incredibly hard to listen to. It was as if someone had delivered several slaps to his face. Hansel was so angry his whole body was shaking.

“I knew you left a tracker on me. Otherwise, you would never have been able to appear right after I walked out! I really underestimated you!” Hansel said a little hopelessly.

He started to tear up as Malcolm snorted, not saying anything. His attitude made it clear that he did leave a tracker on Hansel.

At that moment, Malcolm seemed to have just noticed that Hansel had others next to him. He turned his gaze to Jackie.

“Who are these minnows? I can’t believe you actually managed to bring out a few minnows from the Grand Yorn Mountain? However, those minnows don’t even seem like they can compare to the beasts nearby. They’re not even firmly at the early stage of the innate level… they’re such rubbish!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2511

Chapter 2511

Those words had unmasked mockery within them. Rudy had always been an arrogant person. Being looked at like that made it feel like a boulder was pressing against his heart.

However, he could not say anything at all. That was because the other person was right. In the eyes of a spring solidifying realm expert, their strength was of no significance. They were people who could just be killed with a pinch.

However, he did not expect Malcolm to insult them in such a pleased manner. He abruptly turned to look at Jackie as a surprised expression flashed on his face. The two of them might be minnows, but Jackie was a true expert.

Even a spring solidifying realm beast was nothing to Jackie, let alone these two. Thinking about that, he wanted to show off

with Jackie, but Jackie grabbed his arm.

Jackie hatefully glared at Rudy. Rudy was really very dumb. Jackie whispered into Rudy's ears, "Shut up right now!"

Advertisement

Rudy was so scared he shuddered at Jackie's gaze. He did not dare to speak anymore. Grayson ended up being warned as well.

Earlier, he was just as emotional, wanting to tell the others that Jackie was very strong! Hansel glanced at Jackie. He calmed down from his emotional state.

He suddenly laughed coldly, “You came to kill me? So you’re planning on killing my friends over here?”

Malcolm frowned, feeling like Hansel seemed to mean something behind those words. He could not help but look at Jackie and the others, but he could not see anything. The few of them were incredibly mediocre.

Advertisement

Only one of their strengths could not be

seen, but it was clear that the person was already injured internally. Furthermore, Jackie was standing with Rudy and Grayson, so he should only be at the early stage of the innate level as well.

If that was the case, they should not be much of a threat.

“Do you think we’re running a charity that doesn’t kill innocents?” Malcolm mocked.

There were not many fighters who showed mercy. In order to achieve their goals, killing a few people was not something they mind.

Hansel took a deep breath as he clutched his sword tightly, “Then come!”

As he said that, Hansel raised his head. slightly as if he was already prepared to die. However, thinking about it, there was something off about Hansel's actions.

Jackie frowned. He knew Hansel's plans. With him standing by Hansel's side, Hansel did have a trump card. Malcolm felt like Hansel's actions were strange, but he could not tell what was strange about them.

He sighed as he shot a look at Jordan, "Since Hansel wants to die so much, we should fulfill his wish as his juniors."

Advertisement

After saying that, Malcolm pulled out his own green sword. The sword had countless runes on it. When he clutched the sword tightly, a breeze started spinning around him.

It was obvious that Malcolm was a wind oriented fighter. Jackie frowned, turning to shoot Hansel a look. Even though the two of them did not say anything, they immediately understood what the other was thinking after that short exchange.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2512

Chapter 2512
At that moment, there was nothing else to say. Jackie took out the gray sword from Mustard Seed before he launched himself right at Malcolm.

Hansel's body twisted, facing Jordan with all his injuries!

Malcolm saw Jackie charging at him, and could not help but frown. He could still not see how strong Jackie was, but the two of them had clearly delegated their tasks. Jackie was going to fight him while Hansel fought Jordan.

It was easy to see from that, that Jackie was stronger than Jordan! With that in mind, Malcolm could not help but be nervous.

However, there was no time for him to think about anything then. Malcolm's sword glinted as he disappeared on the spot. That was an advantage wind-oriented fighters had.

Jackie was already prepared the moment he knew that Malcolm was a wind practitioner. The moment Malcolm disappeared, he distorted space. The next second, a gust of wind attacked him.

Advertisement

Malcolm had been fifty meters apart from Jackie initially. In the blink of an eye, Malcolm was right in front of Jackie.

At that moment, Rudy and Grayson were stunned next to Jackie. The two of them had never seen spring solidifying realm experts fighting before, nor had they ever seen such a fast fighter.

It only took a moment for the weapons to clash close to each other. If they were in Jackie's position, they would have been scared out of their wits. They would not even have the time to cry out, let alone retaliate.

Malcolm's lips curled up as he let out a pleased smile. The sword in his hand sent out slash after slash, heading right for Jackie's forehead.

Advertisement

"Die!" Malcolm shouted in rage.

Even though he still did not know what Jackie's strength was, he was still very confident in his speed. Those who did not understand him would often fall after he launched his attacks and closed the distance rapidly.

Even if they could avoid his frontal attacks it would be impossible to avoid everything. They would be damaged by the shockwaves, which was what he wanted!

When Malcolm slashed again, he stared at Jackie. He wanted to witness his slashes piercing through him.

Yet, before he could even be happy, Jackie's image disappeared from the spot.

"An afterimage?" Malcolm said suspiciously.

As the second disciple of the Seven

Absolutes Pavilion, he was not just strong.

He was full of combat experience as well. The moment he found that Jackie had disappeared, he reacted immediately, shifting his position.

Advertisement

What followed was a bang. There was a black-colored slash that appeared where he had disappeared. He turned to look at Jackie, who had somehow appeared four meters behind him.

Malcolm frowned as he shouted in shock, “You know how to use the laws of space?”

A place like a third-grade clan would naturally not understand the laws of space much at all. However, Malcolm was from a fifth-grade clan, and a wind attribute user at that. He naturally knew about the laws of space.

The laws of space had always been something incredibly hard to grasp. In so many years, he’d only seen some seniors trying to understand the laws of space. Even then, they only managed to understand a small fraction. It was the first time he had seen someone so young using it.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2513

Chapter 2513
Jackie raised an eyebrow. He was not too surprised that Malcolm recognized he was using the laws of space so quickly. After all, they were in Middle Province, not some backwater place like West Cercie State.

He let out a sigh, suddenly having a different plan. Malcolm did not seem like a very good person, but he was still from a fifth-grade clan. He was an excellent chosen disciple, only ranking behind Hansel.

He had plotted against Hansel probably because he wanted to take Hansel's place. He had ambition and skill, he was definitely a good whetstone.

Ever since he broke through to the spring solidifying realm, he had only been through a single battle! Thinking about that, he let out a cold laugh. He held the gray sword in his hand tightly. Malcolm felt that Jackie's expression was a bit strange. Jackie looked like a cat that was toying around with a mouse.

Just as he was feeling confused, Jackie leaped forward again, heading right for him. The gray sword in Jackie's hand sent out a few attacks.

Malcolm did not dare to underestimate his opponent. The green sword in his hand started to dance around. With the sound of a few explosions, the green sword and the gray sword's attacks violently clashed together.

Advertisement

Two waves of energies clashed, but Malcolm could only feel pain. The sword in his right hand started to shake. At that moment, he was certain that Jackie was like him, a spring solidifying realm fighter as well.

Jackie was really hard to handle! No wonder Hansel had looked so confident even if he was letting out an incredibly painful and betrayed expression. He really did have a trump card!

“Who are you？Which clan are you from？Why have I never seen you before, and how did you end up with Hansel？What benefits is he giving you？” Malcolm asked loudly.

As the chosen disciple of the Seven Absolutes Pavilion, he had a bit of fame both in his clan and out of it. He had basically met most of the people who were on even footing with him.

Advertisement

The person in front of him was unknown. It was his first time meeting the guy, and he was called Jackie by his companions! Malcolm was certain that it was his first time hearing such a name. It proved that Jackie was probably not a chosen disciple from any of the neighboring clans.

He could be from the inner regions, but based on what Malcolm knew, the inner

region’s disciples would absolutely not be out here at this moment.

Any of those guys with just a bit of skill were all incredibly arrogant. There was no way they would know and help Hansel here.

Jackie knew he would ask those questions. Jackie let out a cold smile and said, “If you want to kill me, then I naturally would want to kill you back. This is common sense, SO why are you asking questions？”

Malcolm's face turned dark. Only then did he remember that he had said he would kill everyone there, saying he was not merciful.

He had not known that Jackie was so skilled back then. If he had known that Jackie was already at the spring solidifying realm, he would not have moved so easily.

Malcolm narrowed his hands and said, "Those with skill are naturally treated differently. This is a world where the strongest up the weak. If you had shown your skill earlier, I would not have made a move against you!"

Jackie let out a cold smile, he had to say that it did make sense. However, Jackie was absolutely not someone who would let things go just with a few words.

Advertisement

The situation was already like that. He would absolutely not help Malcolm get Hansel. From their conversation earlier, he could tell that Malcolm was an incredibly ruthless person.

Hansel was in the state he was in because of a plot by Malcolm and Jordan. Jackie would absolutely not work together with someone like that.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2514

Chapter 2514
"Hansel, can you believe that you'll actually lose to me today?!" Jordan loudly said.

Jackie turned around to look and saw that Jordan was in an incredibly close fight with Hansel. At that moment, Hansel might still be able to fight back, but he was already beginning to be at a disadvantage. His injuries were starting to burden him.

It would not take too long for Jordan to defeat Hansel!

Jackie took a deep breath. If Hansel lost completely and died in Jordan's hand, then he would end up having to fight against two by himself. He did not want himself to be in such a sticky situation, nor did he want Hansel to die just like that.

With that in mind, he suddenly turned around as he started to form seals in his hands. Sixty Soul Swords floated in the air. With a clap, all of the Soul Swords instantly fused into one, turning into a massive sword.

The massive Soul Sword immediately merged with the gray sword in Jackie's hand. After absorbing so much energy, the gray sword started to glow radiantly as it hummed.

Advertisement

At that moment, Jackie was already in a must-win mode. He was using Destroying the Void, which was an upper ultimate god technique that he had already trained to the second stage.

When Malcolm looked at Jackie, he knew that Jackie was already pulling out his full power. Malcolm took a deep breath, no longer wanting to prolong things. He grabbed his sword with both hands, and the green light turned into a tornado of wind circling his sword.

Malcolm roared as he leaped forward, turning into a formless wind as he charged straight at Jackie. At that moment, he was

completely surrounded by a green light. As the speed constantly rose, he turned into a ray of light.

Advertisement

He charged at Jackie at an imperceptible speed, “Killing Wind!”

Jackie could not determine what level of technique that was, but he felt that there was no way it was above a middle-earth rank technique. Jackie let out a cold laugh, not avoiding it as he slashed Destroying the Void right at Killing Wind.

The gray sword clashed with the green light. With the two of them at the center, shockwave after shockwave shot out.

An intense wind circled everywhere. Rudy and Grayson had already found a safe spot to hide from the moment the battle started.

However, the moment the skills clashed, the winds it caused sent the two of them flying into the air!

There were trees all around them. The two of them flew a few meters before ramming right into a tree.

They fell from the tree in a pathetic state. Their clothes were all torn up by the branches. When they fell on the floor they even ended up planting their faces on rotten leaves.

Rudy struggled as he sat up from the ground. After getting the leaves out of his mouth, he started to cough violently. He was not just in a pathetic state at that moment, he was filled with shock as well.

Just from the shockwaves alone, he had been sent flying into the air. If the tree had not been there, he did not know how far he would have flown.

Advertisement

Grayson was planted on the floor not far away from him. He was in a pathetic state. When the two of them looked up, they noticed Jackie was still standing there with his sword in hand.

The winds had already stopped by then. Other than his disheveled hair, there did not seem to be anything wrong with Jackie. It was as if he had not been at the center of those shockwaves.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2515

Chapter 2515
Malcolm had already disappeared. When Rudy saw that Malcolm had disappeared, he sat up abruptly, “Where is he? Where is Malcolm?”

His loud cry had been heard not only by Grayson next to him but by Jordan and Hansel who were still fighting as well.

The two of them seemed to stop fighting at the same time. They both looked over at Jackie. Only Jackie stood fixed to the spot as if nothing had happened.

Yet, Malcolm was gone. Jordan panicked, “Malcolm? Where are you?”

He did not get a response. Other than the sounds of birds and bugs around them, there were no other noises. After a long time, the shrubs not too far in front of Jackie started to rustle.

Jordan frowned. He no longer cared about

Advertisement

Hansel at that moment as he hurried over to where the rustling was. He pulled something out to reveal Malcolm, who was bleeding everywhere.

No wonder Malcolm had disappeared earlier. After falling to the ground, the leaves around him had all been sent flying up. Once the leaves fell again, Malcolm was buried by it.

Malcolm’s breathing was incredibly shallow at that moment. There was a lot of blood on his body. He looked to be in an incredibly bad state. Jordan helped Malcolm up, and Malcolm spat out some blood before he looked up at Jackie.

At the moment, he had lost all his earlier arrogance as he looked at Jackie. All that was left was shock. The power from Jackie’s attack earlier had been much stronger than his own. When he was

fighting against Jackie earlier, it was obvious that Jackie had shown mercy. Otherwise, he would not still be standing.

Advertisement

“Who are you?! How are you so strong?! You’re definitely not at the early stage of the spring solidifying realm!” If Jackie was at the early stage, he would not have lost so badly.

He had been beaten up completely. His Killing Wind was a middle stage earth technique. Even if he had not mastered it yet, he was still already at the first stage.

With that skill, he was firmly in second place among the disciples in his clan. Yet, the skill he had been so proud of had been so thoroughly beaten by Jackie.

At that moment, Malcolm felt wave after wave of pain deep in his soul. It was like ten thousand ants constantly eating away at his soul. Jordan’s eyes were completely fixed on Jackie at that moment.

In the past years, he had been completely surprised by Hansel. If he was able to defeat Hansel earlier, it would have greatly

boosted his standing. That was why he had not been paying attention to the other battle at all.

The moment he felt like something was wrong, Malcolm had already been heavily injured by Jackie. To be able to defeat Malcolm so thoroughly in just a few moves was something not even Hansel could do at his peak.

It was obvious how strong that guy in front of him was!

Grayson's mouth was wide open and he commented, "Oh my god! Jackie's way too strong! Malcolm is a spring solidifying realm expert who's at his peak condition, but he still could not beat Jackie!"

Advertisement

"He's too strong! This is the strongest person I've ever seen in my generation! Even the eldest disciple of Rosefinch Pavilion wouldn't be able to beat Jackie! Why is someone as strong as him putting his attention on alchemy..."

Everyone knew that those who studied alchemy were usually those who did not have any talent for fighting. After all, no matter how many spirit crystals one could get, being strong was much better.

Hansel stabbed his sword on the ground, using it to support himself to remain standing and said, "Thank you, Jackie!"

Hansel was not afraid at all earlier. With Jackie around, he did not believe he would fail.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2516

Chapter 2516

“Who are you?!” bellowed Malcolm, already heavily injured by Jackie’s hand. The pain coming from his soul had him on the brink of collapse.

Despite his injuries, however, the burning question that haunted him could no longer be held back, and he screamed at Jackie for the answer.

Jackie turned to look at Malcolm. At that moment, Malcolm was already hanging at his last thread, and at any moment, he could shut his eyes and pass away.

“And what’ll happen after you know who I am, hmm? Would it change the results?” Jackie’s tone was light as if he was talking about something very simple.

Malcolm’s body became taut as his bloodshot eyes widened.

“Don’t get too riled up, Malcolm!” hissed

Advertisement

Jordan.

Malcolm was already on the verge of death. If he died, things would look incredibly grim for Jordan. The consequences needed no further explanation.

Even Malcolm had not been able to defeat the guy, let alone Jordan, who had not even entered the spring solidifying realm.

Alas, Malcolm completely ignored Jordan's words as he stared at Jackie in a deranged manner.

Advertisement

"I'll never leave you, even when I'm a ghost!" vowed Malcolm, blood spurting out of his mouth as he did.

Hansel frowned, feeling conflicted about Malcolm.

Malcolm had once been his right-hand man…but never did he think that Malcolm would plot against him, forcing him to his current predicament.

He somewhat pitied Malcolm in his pathetic

state, but that feeling was quickly discarded. He would have been the one who would suffer a terrible fate had Jackie not been around. Malcolm would absolutely not.

"You have to hold on, Malcolm! We'll leave this place alive! If you die, what'll happen to me?!" Jordan anxiously clutched Malcolm's hand At that moment, Malcolm was far too emotional. His state was deteriorating, his hands trembling due to the tear that plagued his heart.

"I won't let you go unscathed, m-mark my word….! I won't…let you off even if I die… I'll curse you!" screamed Malcolm with the last ounce of strength he had left.

After his last words, his entire body suddenly straightened. His chest stopped heaving, and Jordan went crazy after seeing that.

He used all his strength to shake Malcolm,trying to bring Malcolm back from the dead. Alas, Malcolm's soul had been shattered by Jackie. It could no longer condense again.

Advertisement

Malcolm had breathed his last.

At that moment, Jordan was no longer as arrogant as before, his whole body trembling in the aftermath.

Rudy retreated a few steps, no longer daring to even look at Jackie.

He regretted challenging Jackie and mocking Jackie so incessantly before. He recalled how he tried to suppress and oppress Jackie back when they were at the alliance branch. It was only at this moment did he realize how crazy that notion was.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2517

Chapter 2517

If Rudy knew how strong Jackie was from the start, he would never have dared to pull those stunts on him. Jackie had entered the spring solidifying realm at his current age and even defeated even a fifth-grade clan's chosen disciple.

Rudy was no match against him at all.

Grayson, too, thought the same. At that moment, they were basically in the same boat, full of regret for what they had done.

Jackie's expression did not change even as he stared at Jordan, who was crying out to the skies, merely raising his sword slowly.

The sunlight glinted against the sword, coldly reflecting onto Jordan's face. He could feel Jackie's murderous intent, and he could not help but shudder.

He suddenly looked up to face Jackie and

Advertisement

noticed how he stared at him so emotionlessly. Jordan paled in fright, shuddering. He gulped as he pushed away Malcolm's body.

He adjusted himself before kneeling in front of Jackie. "Let me go; I was just following him! I didn't do anything… It's just that he gave me a lot of benefits, but I'm just an accomplice at most! P-Please, let me go…

"I don't stand a fighting chance against you whatsoever nor do I want to kill you. I don't really have much of a grudge against Hansel; I was just blinded by greed! I never expected…"

He cried as he spoke, but no matter what he said, Jackie's expression remained cold, fueling Jordan's panic even more. He started to crawl on the ground, attempting to grab Jackie's pants.

Advertisement

However, Jackie did not give him that change. With a wave of Jackie's sword, the tip pointed right at Jordan's throat. Jordan no longer dared to move around, but he still refused to let go of any chance to survive.

"Please let me go! If you're willing to let me go, I can do anything you want me to do, and I'll even help Hansel reveal the truth! I'll have all the people who've misunderstood Hansel realize that it had nothing to do with him! We were the ones who trapped him-"

Jackie's sword stabbed into Jordan's throat before he could finish, and the last glimmer of hope in Jordan's eyes was the only thing left of him.

Jackie chuckled coldly; he never planned on letting someone like that get away scot free.

Hansel's face soured a little. Jordan's last few words sounded very promising for him, but it was already too late for anything. Jordan's throat was already stabbed by Jackie's sword, effectively ending his life once and for all.

With a thud, Jordan's corpse collapsed into a pile of leaves, no longer showing any signs of life. Jackie then sheathed his sword and turned to look at Hansel. "Let's go," he spoke, saying nothing else.

Jackie did not care about what would happen to Hansel after this. Jordan leaving the place alive would, in fact, be the biggest problem. No one knew if he would do anything to affect Jackie in the future.

Killing Jordan was the best preventive measure.

Hansel let out a small sigh, not saying anything. The rest of them followed after Jackie obediently, heading out of Grand Yorn Mountain

Advertisement

No one dared to doubt Jackie anymore. No matter what Jackie did, they would obediently follow.

The next afternoon, they finally arrived at the city where the Seven Absolutes Pavilion governed.

The Middle Province Alchemist Alliance's branch was in the skies of the city. Jackie had only just learned that all of the alliance's branches were vessels floating above a city.

It gave out a feeling that the alliance was above all conflicts.

When they entered the city, Hansel's expression was a little stiff. Jackie and the others were headed toward the vessel, so it was time to say goodbye.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2518

Chapter 2518
Jackie wasted no time as he saluted Hansel. "Go and head back to your clan, Hansel. We'll be heading to the airborne vessel."

Rudy glanced at Hansel. "Do you not want to head back?"

On the way, Jackie had not asked what happened to Hansel nor did he ask how Malcom had plotted against Hansel. Hansel did not open his mouth to explain either. They completed the journey quietly.

Hansel took a deep breath as he smiled bitterly. “There will be some trouble after I go back, but it’s fine, I have confidence. As long as I tell the truth in its entirety, I’d most likely receive only a punishment or two. There shouldn’t be anything too major.”

Jackie looked at Hansel before saying calmly, “I killed Jordan for my own reasons. It

probably wouldn’t have been a good thing for him to go back with you alive.

Advertisement

“Someone like him could backstab you at any given moment. Furthermore, I feel like you’re a merciful person.

“You might not be ruthless enough against him due to your past relationship. To prevent anything messy from happening, I decided to just get rid of him.”

Hansel nodded and said, “You’re right, Jackie, I was too soft on my juniors. I’d probably have smoother days ahead with them gone now.”

Jackie nodded. Hansel shot a meaningful look at Jackie, still having something to say but swallowing the words.

Advertisement

He turned to look toward Seven Absolutes Pavilion.

The sect was the most important building in the whole city. It had all the flair a fifth-grade clan should have, and it was

the reason why the city was so prosperous.

As a disciple of the Seven Absolutes Pavilion, he was one of the most important people in the city. However, after everything that had happened, he had turned into a traitor.

Hansel was no fool; he had to fight for his innocence. The thought circled his mind for a while before Hansel took a deep breath and turned around, saluting Jackie.

He had been about exchanging pleasantries when Jackie immediately interrupted him, "There's something I want to ask you. I wonder if you could help me."

Hansel looked at Jackie curiously before answering, "Please do raise your concern, Jackie. You've saved my life, so naturally, I'll answer anything you want to know."

Jackie nodded; that was the answer he wanted.

"Malcolm said earlier that you had ties to the alliance. Is this alliance the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance? What kind of ties do you have?

Advertisement

“What did you do for them, and what did that eighth elder have to do with the alliance? There’ve been many things happening with the alliance lately. I wonder if you know of them.”

The slew of questions had all hit their marks. Each question that came from Jackie caused Hansel’s expression to sour a little.

Rudy and Grayson looked at Jackie respectfully, wanting to shoot Jackie a thumbs up.

Jackie was too amazing. They had almost forgotten all these, yet Jackie still had it in mind. The things he asked were all incredibly important.

The three of them straightened their bodies as they looked at Hansel, waiting for his

answer.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2519

Chapter 2519

Hansel, unable to formulate a response to Jackie’s question, stiffened as his gaze flitted around everywhere.

He mulled over the situation for a good while before he finally said, “I’m sorry, but I’ve been sworn to secrecy on this matter, and I’ve even signed a soul contract. If I talked about it, my soul would be punished.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything.

Rudy anxiously said, “You just said you’d tell us everything, and now you’re saying you’ve signed a soul contract? How could we know what kind of soul contract it is? Don’t try to deter us like this!”

Hansel hurriedly shook his head. “I’m not lying! I did sign a soul contract, I promise. It’s the kind that ties itself to heaven and earth. If I say anything, I probably won’t be able to survive for a minute before my soul explodes!”

Hansel’s words made it incredibly difficult for them to persist, but at the same time, Rudy and Grayson did not think Hansel was speaking the truth.

Advertisement

They just felt like Hansel made up a random reason to shut them up because he did not want to reveal the truth. Hansel saying he had sworn into secrecy would, of course, prevent them from interrogating him further.

Jackie sighed as he said calmly, “Since you’re not willing to answer, I won’t force you. However, you have to answer this question.

“Has the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance encountered many problems lately? Are these problems so severe that they’d threaten the existence of the alliance?”

Hansel looked at Jackie with a surprised expression. After thinking about it, he

Advertisement

nodded. “I don’t know if this matter would actually endanger the alliance. After all, the alliance has been in Middle Province for who knows how many years. They have very deep roots.

“Small matters wouldn’t be able to threaten them, but it’s true that they’ve had quite a handful of problems. That’s all I can tell you.”

Jackie nodded, rather satisfied with the answer. Knowing that, he would need to be more careful when doing a lot of things.

After they parted with Hansel, the three of them made their way to the airborne vessel. They showed their sixth-grade alchemist badges to the guard before declaring their reason for being there and who they were. The guard brought Jackie and the others to see Elder Simon.

Elder Simon was the head elder of the branch. When he heard about what happened to Jackie and the others, he hurriedly met them.

There were a total of five people in the spacious hall. Elder Simon sat in the main seat, while the steward, Xander, stood next to him. sitting in front were Jackie and the others.

Jackie and the others had been standing, but the elder had allowed them to sit on the account of their perilous journey.

Before they arrived, Jackie had already discussed with Rudy and Grayson not to reveal their battle with the one-eyed frost wolf

and the three from the Seven Absolutes Pavilion. They could only say that they safely arrived in the Seven Absolutes Pavilion's territory after the vessel crashed.

That way, Jackie could hide his martial talent and save a lot of unnecessary trouble.

Advertisement

Elder Simon's face soured after hearing their story."Heh, so it's those hooligans, are they! I knew they wouldn't let things rest so easily. How did the news leak out? Is there already a spy in the Rosefinch Pavilion's branch?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2520

Chapter 2520

Xander, standing next to the elder, had a frown as well. "It's very likely that a spy has indeed infiltrated them. Otherwise, they wouldn't have gotten our route so easily and set up an ambush on the way. They must've been aiming for that thing..."

Elder Simon was furious, slamming his hand on the table. It caused the tea on the table to fall.

"I'll root out those spies for sure this time! Martin hadn't been smart enough to use the last of his strength to send away these three men, they would've died, and no one would've known about what had happened."

Xander nodded before he suddenly thought of something. He said in a low voice, "That Scarlet Blood Crystal-"

The moment he said that, Elder Simon immediately turned his head to shoot

Xander an expression to stop. Xander gulped, coughing as he swallowed back those words.

Advertisement

The question was obviously not meant for the three of them to hear. The Scarlet Blood Crystal was in Jackie's hands at that moment; both Rudy and Grayson knew. However, Jackie had already warned them into secrecy, and they would not dare to reveal the fact that Jackie had already absorbed the Scarlet Blood Crystal. Furthermore, Elder Simon and Xander did not seem to think that the Scarlet Blood Crystal was with them all this time.

They had hidden the fact that Martin had sent the stone into the vessel with the last of his strength. They made it seem like it had fallen into enemy hands.

The two of them had dark looks on their faces. The situation had been explained thoroughly and all hints of suspicion were cleared. To begin with, they were not even heavily involved in this matter; they just happened to be dragged into this mess.

Elder Simon and Xander knew very well that Rudy and Grayson would want to head back to their own factions because of what had happened.

Advertisement

Rudy and Grayson stood up together, and the two of them bowed to Elder Simon.

“Elder, what we’ve experienced… really placed our lives at stake, and it took a terrible toll on us. We no longer want to head to Phoenix Valley and merely want to return to where we-“

Before Rudy could finish, the elder interrupted him, “You can’t go back. You’ve already decided to become students of the alliance, so you should stick to your vow. We’ve already talked to your factions.

“You’ve gone through the tests, and everything is already set. You can’t quit now!”

Rudy and Grayson’s eyes widened at those words as anxiety washed over them like tidal waves. They had not expected that their request would be rejected so quickly and without consideration.

Elder Simon was telling them that they could abandon the thought, that it would not be possible for them to head back.

Rudy looked incredibly anxious at that moment as he hurriedly pleaded, “Elder, please! We’re genuinely mortified by everything we’ve been through! The two of us are only at the early stage of the innate level, like mere ants on the side of the road in a fight. We’d die if anyone just blew in our direction. Our lives are incredibly important to us, and we really don’t want to go to Phoenix Valley!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2521

Chapter 2521

Elder Simon laughed coldly as he turned to look at Rudy. “If you’re so cowardly, how will you ever achieve anything great? Regardless of whatever you’re thinking, you’re going to Phoenix Valley!

“What happened before is an alliance secret, and it must never be leaked. If the two of you really want to leave, your memories will have to be removed.”

Rudy and Grayson looked like they had just been viciously slapped, unable to formulate any plea nor resistance. Removing memories sounded simple, but it involved direct damage to the soul.

The two of them were not that powerful, to begin with. If their memories were forcefully cleared, they might be reduced to mere brainless fools!

That was when Rudy and Grayson truly understood that they could not worm their

way out of this situation anymore. Elder Simon would not let the two of them leave to protect the secret.

Advertisement

With that in mind, they had no reason to struggle anymore, and hopelessness haunted them dauntingly.

Elder Simon let out a cold smile as he continued, “Stop acting like you’ll die if you go to Phoenix Valley. Phoenix Valley is an important existence for the alliance, and no one would dare to enter Phoenix Valley. You’ll never be hurt.”

All three of them heard Elder Simon’s words and agreed; Phoenix Valley would naturally be safe, seeing its importance to the alliance. Danger would not find them so easily.

They would be incredibly safe if they were in Phoenix Valley, but it was a different question during the journey there itself.

Advertisement

Regardless, Rudy and Grayson were already prepared to retreat and not go to Phoenix

Valley before.

Even if that place was the safest place in the world, they would not want to go there. They felt like Phoenix Valley was the center of all their troubles, that even though it looked safe on the surface, there was no telling what could happen in the future.

Jackie let out a light cough as he stood up, saluting Elder Simon. “Since the two of them have been convinced, when will we be heading to Phoenix Valley?”

That was what Jackie cared about the most. Before, two strong deacons had been arranged to protect them, yet they were still intercepted by an ambush.

They did not know if the journey to Phoenix Valley would be the same as the last one, riddled with problem after problem.

Elder Simon could see Jackie's concerns. He raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie in appreciation. He felt like that kid was much stronger than the other two. At the very least, he was not a coward.

He answered, "Don't worry; there are no spies here. This time, I'll arrange for Xander to go with the two of you.

"Xander isn't a steward from this branch. He's from Phoenix Valley, so he's the best person to accompany you."

Advertisement

Jackie raised an eyebrow as Xander nodded to him. No other words were said. Jackie was still worried, but it would do nothing other than cause annoyance if he voiced out his questions then.

Elder Simon arranged for Xander to bring them to Phoenix Valley immediately after everything was settled, probably because getting them sent as soon as possible was the best idea.

The journey was quite peaceful, and nothing terribly uneventful happened.

After two days, they arrived at a maple tree grove. The red leaves made the place look

like it was burning brightly. Jackie, Rudy, and Grayson looked up, attracted by the scenery.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2522

Chapter 2522

“Phoenix Valley is right ahead. With your status, you’ll be temporarily restricted to being in the outer valley. Wait for a moment once we get there. I’ll go get your identity badges and set up your living spaces before bringing you in.”

All three men nodded obediently at Xander’s words. After the small vessel arrived at its destination, it started to descend from the air. Phoenix Valley might be called a valley, but it was, in fact, not located within the mountains.

It was in a wide flat plain, surrounded by countless maple trees. Red was the primary color in Phoenix Valley.

They arrived at the main entrance, and Xander casually showed his identity badge to the guards before bringing the three of them into Phoenix Valley.

It was not too luxurious inside, but it looked

more impressive than a palace. Xander brought the three of them behind a grand hall. After they arranged everything, he helped the three of them to get their identity badges.

Advertisement

Next, he brought them to the back of Phoenix Valley. They went to two of the cleaner courtyards while Xander arranged for two runners to come over. Jackie shared a courtyard with Rudy.

Grayson was arranged to be at another courtyard, sharing it with another sixth grade alchemist. Since each courtyard had two rooms, Rudy stayed in the eastern room while Jackie stayed in the one to the west.

After Xander arranged everything, he left after a few words, leaving behind the two runners. The conditions of the lodgings were better than where he had stayed before.

Being able to have a room to himself saved

Advertisement

a lot of trouble, and Rudy was relatively quiet the entire time as well. The runner disciple assigned to them was called Lou Grouse.

He had been a runner disciple at Phoenix Valley for two years. He was in the same realm as Rudy in terms of fighting ability, but he was not as lucky as Rudy to be talented in alchemy.

Before he left, Xander had told them that they could ask the runner anything they did not know. After all, the runner disciples knew all the rules in Phoenix Valley.

Grayson did not seem willing to separate from Jackie and Rudy. After all, he was not familiar with the area. However, his relationship with Jackie and Rudy was not the best, anyway. Even if he did not want to leave, he could not strike any feasible conversations.

After arranging everything, he headed to his courtyard. Jackie did not waste time

getting to his courtyard. Notably, there was a small sect in the middle of the courtyard.

All Jackie could think of at that moment were making spirit crystals, and also training.

However, Rudy had other thoughts in mind. After all, he had not planned on going to Phoenix Valley and was forced to be there. After all the arrangements were made, his more calculative thoughts started to surface.

"Go over there and wait for now. Come over if we ask for you!" Rudy said to Lou as he frowned.

Advertisement

Lou nodded obediently before he found an empty corner to wait quietly.

Jackie immediately knew that Rudy had something to say the moment he saw how Rudy was acting, but Jackie could not be bothered to listen to Rudy's nonsense. The moment he thought about interrupting Rudy's words, Rudy spoke up first.

"Jackie! You're very smart. Why don't you try figuring out what happened to the alliance?" came Rudy's remark, which sounded oddly genial at that, one that made Jackie shudder.

This guy was incredibly shameless. A long while ago, Rudy was pompous and ridiculed Jackie without relief. At this moment, however, he was trying his best to suck up to Jackie.

Jackie was not the type of person that would ignore the past, but he was still stuck in the same yard as that guy. He was still in an unknown place, so he was not willing to make their relationship too tense.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2523

Chapter 2523

“You know everything I know, and there’s nothing much to figure out with so little information. Even if the sky falls, you have a roof above you to hold it back. There’s no need to be so worried.”

Contrary to his own words, however, Jackie was in more internal conflict than Rudy was. There were some things that he needed some peace and quiet to think about before understanding the inner mechanisms.

Jackie waved at Lou. “Come. Tell us the most basic rules of Phoenix Valley, as well as things we should never do.”

After being called by Jackie, Lou immediately walked over from the corner. He respectfully arrived next to Jackie, and Jackie called him into the sect. As he drank some tea, he listened to Lou talk about the rules in Phoenix Valley.

Lou was incredibly quick with his words, and in just a short moment, he had finished telling Jackie everything. Jackie memorized the various rules within Phoenix Valley and could not help but lament after that.

Phoenix Valley truly was the center of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance.

Advertisement

Just the outer valley alone had 200 alchemists. Any alchemist that could enter Phoenix Valley was at least a sixth-grade alchemist.

After listening to Lou's explanation, Jackie frowned and said, "So Phoenix Valley is basically an incredibly large clan?"

Lou nodded, saying respectfully, "That is one way to look at it, but Phoenix Valley is different from a regular clan.

"Phoenix Valley raises two factions, one for alchemists and the other for warriors. The alchemists and the warriors are separated from each other, and they, for the majority of the time, will not cross paths."

Advertisement

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Phoenix Valley was incredibly ambitious. Not only did they have their own alchemists, but they had warriors as well. They had the protection of warriors and the resources of alchemists.

Jackie just did not know how many warriors were in Phoenix Valley.

Jackie looked up and asked, "What grade would you think Phoenix Valley would be if it was a clan?"

This was the most important question. Phoenix Valley would no doubt be higher than a clan like Rosefinch Pavilion, but it was

still a question if it would be a sixth, seventh, or even an eighth-grade clan.

Lou thought about it for a moment before he shook his head. “We’re not the same as other places. I only know about the outer valley, and I don’t know anything about the inner valley.

“The outer valley is separated from the

inner valley. You’ll only be able to enter the inner valley if you have a certain level of talent and skill.”

Before coming to Phoenix Valley, Xander had mentioned the inner and outer valleys before. Jackie had merely listened and not paid it much attention before, but with Lou’s words, Jackie understood that there was a big difference between the two.

Jackie continued asking, “Why can’t you enter the inner valley? Is it because those in the inner valley are all core members of the alliance that receive special benefits?”

Advertisement

Lou nodded, answering sternly, “Precisely. Only those in the inner valley can be considered core members. As for how you can enter the inner valley, I don’t know.

“You must possess a certain amount of talent before you’re notified. As for what the level of talent needed is, I haven’t a clue.”

Chapter 2524

Rudy frowned, saying unhappily, “How could you not even know this?”

Jackie looked at Rudy wordlessly.

Lou fell into an awkward situation, not knowing what to say. Rudy did not mind how nasty he sounded at all.

He frowned and continued, “Are all of the ‘Way of the Pill’ manuals in Phoenix Valley open to everyone? Can you study any of them whenever you want to?”

Lou nodded.

Rudy straightened himself. “Phoenix Valley is too dangerous. A Way of the Pill is the basis to establish a clan. It’s not something clans would normally allow anyone to see.

Advertisement

“I can’t believe they let just anyone who wants to look at them. It looks like I’m not here for nothing. At the very least, I’ll be able to learn an even better Way of the Pill.”

Jackie had not wanted to pour cold water on Rudy’s thoughts, but he could not help but say, “Don’t get ahead of yourself. Even though there are no restrictions, everyone can learn a Way of the Pill. Don’t forget that it’s not something so easy to learn.

“The difficulty is there. No matter how good of a manual you end up reading, will it matter if your talent is not up to par?”

Jackie felt like Rudy was too optimistic. He knew why Phoenix Valley would be so generous. Everyone who was in Phoenix Valley was a disciple of the valley and would eventually contribute to the valley.

Advertisement

It was especially true for alchemists. Phoenix Valley allowed everyone to access everything because everything at Phoenix Valley was not something an ordinary person would be able to understand.

The more talented a person was, the more

room they had to improve. Phoenix Valley would stand to gain even greater benefits.

Even if Rudy learned the best Way of the Pill, his talent would not amount to much.

Jackie sipped some tea. “I’m going to the Hall of Wishes. Take me there.”

Lou bowed and obeyed. However, Rudy could not remain calm.

Baffled, he widened his eyes as he blurted, “Why are you so anxious? Can’t you just go after we’ve rested?”

Jackie’s only thought was to earn more spirit crystals at that moment, so he naturally did not want to waste any time.

After figuring out Phoenix Valley's rules, he would want to do everything he could to improve himself and make even more spirit crystals.

Advertisement

He did not bother with Rudy. After placing the teacup on the table, he then stood up and shot a look at Lou. Lou obediently turned around and left.

Rudy had lost his calm completely, feeling like Jackie was in far too much of a rush. He had just asked about the rules when he decided to rush to the Hall of Wishes, and Rudy was divided on whether he should tag along.

He had planned on resting for a day or two to familiarize himself with his surroundings. It would not be too late to start then. However, when he saw that Jackie was going further and further and further away, he got impatient.

He ran after Jackie and shouted, "Wait for me! I want to go too!"

The Hall of Wishes was at the easternmost end of Phoenix Valley. Jackie could not help but lament that Phoenix Valley truly was different from everywhere else when they arrived at the Hall of Wishes.

Even though the outside did not look that

majestic, it was still an incredibly big place. Compared to the other halls that Jackie had been to before, Hall of Wishes was massive.

There were 12 floors, and alchemists. flocked to every floor.

“Do I need to queue up after I enter?” Jackie turned to ask Lou.

Lou nodded. “Hall of Wishes is incredibly vast, and there are two hundred alchemists in the outer valley. Even if all two hundred were here, it’ll fit everyone comfortably.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2525

Chapter 2525
Jackie nodded before and walked into the hall. Rudy, with furrowed brows, followed Jackie.

“I don’t know why you’re in such a rush. Condensing pill runes is something that requires a long time to improve on, and there’s no reason to be in such a hurry.”

The Hall of Wishes was a place built to allow the alchemists to condense pill runes. Filled with pill aura, the hall was split into many small, isolated rooms. After entering a room, an alchemist could use the dense pill aura to form pill runes.

It served a similar function to the pill aura room that Jackie had used before. Anyone could enter the place without any need for permission or spirit crystals. It was a place that was free for all alchemists to use.

Jackie was not in a rush to start completing tasks and earning spirit crystals. He was

more anxious to know what his limits were.

Advertisement

Even though he absorbed the memories of that senior, he still did not know how much his body had caught up with the memories. He wanted to know how many pill runes he could condense.

Jackie saw innumerable rooms the moment he walked into the Hall of Wishes. There were at least 300 small rooms there that could fit every alchemist in the outer valley.

No one would ever need to wait to be able to use a room here.

After having Lou head back, he and Rudy picked out a room each. When Jackie shut the door, the pill aura in the room got even denser.

Advertisement

Jackie took a deep breath and cleared his thoughts as his hands started to form seal after seal. The tiny runes looked like fairies in the night, dancing around Jackie's hands.

One by one, the pill runes formed and danced in front of Jackie as the gold-colored runes illuminated the area before him. Seconds passed, and Jackie's attention was completely on forming the pill runes.

Jackie had lost all sense of time. He was slowly chanting in his head, "One thousand four hundred and ninety-seven, one thousand four hundred and ninety eight..."

The moment he condensed 1500 pill runes, Jackie felt a sharp pain that assaulted his soul. In turn, his right hand slipped as he made a mistake.

A crack was heard next to him. Jackie looked up to see all the runes in front of him collapse due to his mistake as they then turned into dots of golden light. After that, they turned back into pure pill aura and merged into the surroundings.

"I failed!" remarked Jackie despondently.

Jackie had thought he would be able to get himself to condense 3000 pill runes; he never expected that he would lose control after condensing just the first 1500 ones. His memories clashed with his body, and the pill runes he had formed collapsed.

"Three thousand pill runes are the most basic standard of seventh-grade pills…so I'm actually very far from that standard…" Jackie said helplessly.

In the end, he had overestimated himself.

Advertisement

He had thought that he would at least be able to refine a seventh-grade pill.

Alas, it looked like he still needed to train longer before he could have his body move in line to his memories enough for 3000 pill runes.

He had at least accomplished his goal of being there.

After Jackie understood his own strength, he no longer wished to linger in the room. He

pushed open the door and saw Rudy standing outside.

When Rudy saw Jackie head out, he immediately walked up to him. “I thought that you’d be in there for a few more hours at least. I was planning on leaving if you didn’t leave in two hours!”

Jackie pursed his lips in exasperation. He had not expected Rudy to be waiting for him outside.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2526

Chapter 2526

“I thought you’d gone back. Why are you waiting for me?” asked Jackie, genuinely puzzled.

After all, he and Rudy did not have the best of comradeship, and every conflict they had before never truly left their minds.

All that, and Rudy acted like nothing had happened between them and waited for Jackie outside.

Rudy let out a slight cough as he said with an obstinate tone, “We just moved in here, you know. We’ll be bullied if we walk on our own, don’t you think?”

Jackie let out a light grunt. He could not help but feel the urge to roll his eyes, but he stopped himself in the end.

He already grasped Rudy’s temperament a while ago, so it was nothing too surprising.

Advertisement

He would just be wasting his time if he continued to be calculative with him.

Jackie thus nodded and decided to just play along. He could do whatever he wanted to.

“I’m going to the task hall, are you coming?”

Rudy's eyes widened in exasperation when he heard that. "Jackie, you've just arrived in Phoenix Valley for a few hours. Why are you in such a hurry to go everywhere?

Advertisement

"You've only been in that room for six hours! How much could you have learned? Now, you're going to the task hall. Don't forget: Lou had mentioned that all tasks that have been claimed need to be finished."

Jackie nodded. He had not rested ever since he entered Phoenix Valley, and to Rudy and everyone else, it would look like he was in a hurry. However, Jackie knew all too well that he would be wasting his life if he did not value his time.

With not a second to lose, he turned and

looked at Rudy seriously. "I'll say it again: I'm going to the task hall. Do you want to follow me? You can come along if you want to, but otherwise, head back on your own."

He could not be bothered wasting time exchanging words with Rudy nor did he want to reveal his plans to Rudy. With that, he turned around and left the Hall of Wishes.

Rudy frowned as he watched Jackie walk away. He did not understand why Jackie seemed to be in such a hurry. He had only rested for barely a moment before he resumed whatever he was thinking of!

After hesitating for a while, Rudy decided to follow Jackie in the end; he refused to be left alone in a place he barely knew.

The two of them walked forward, and Jackie even asked around for directions to the task hall. After a few twists and turns, they finally arrived at the task hall.

The task hall was the most majestic building in the whole outer valley of Phoenix Valley, and it took up even more space than the Hall of Wishes.

Advertisement

There were 99 flights of steps, and just a glance would show how magnificent that palace built on the side of the hill was.

Jackie took a deep breath. Just from the design alone, the task hall looked like the most important place in Phoenix Valley, with all the people moving out and about in the task hall.

Compared to the places Jackie had been before, there were much fewer people there. After all, there were only about 200 alchemists in the outer valley, and all of them were split up into various places in the outer valley.

Even if the task hall had the most people in Phoenix Valley, it was still not that crowded.

Jackie did not pause for much longer before

The task hall was the most majestic building in the whole outer valley of Phoenix Valley, and it took up even more space than the Hall of Wishes.

Jackie did not pause for much longer before

he started to walk right into the task hall.

Rudy followed closely behind Jackie, somewhat speechless as he looked at Jackie's back.

There were some things he had not wanted to say, but looking at how Jackie walked so confidently and calmly, he could not help but say, "You look very dead-set, Jackie."

Rudy's meaningless remark baffled Jackie.

He had never been someone who enjoyed talking a lot, but Rudy seemed like a curious child whose questions-ones he did not even wish to entertain-never ceased.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2527

Chapter 2527
Jackie glanced at Rudy. "Why are you talking so much? Have you only found out now that I can make my decisions? You don't have to keep rephrasing these things so often."

Rudy coughed slightly as he scratched his nose, saying awkwardly, "To be honest, I just wanted to know why someone as talented in combat as you would choose to be an alchemist. Even though alchemists are regarded very highly, strength is still the most important thing.

"If you decide to put all your focus on martial arts, you'll no doubt have many great accomplishments. All that, and you

decided to put so much time on alchemy. Aren't you afraid you'll regret it in the future?"

Jackie cleared his throat in his bewilderment.

He knew that Rudy would not have had anything good to say in the first place.

He turned around on the steps and looked

Advertisement

down at Rudy.

"When did I tell you that I gave up on martial arts to pursue alchemy?"

Rudy shook his head somewhat stiffly.

Jackie coldly snorted and said, "I've never said it before, so don't jump to conclusions. Just focus on your issues and don't waste your thoughts on this."

Advertisement

Jackie then turned to face forward once more, not giving Rudy another chance to speak.

The task hall was so vast that the ends could not be seen.

Compared to the vast space, there were not many people around.

There were no doubt more people there compared to everywhere else in Phoenix Valley.

The task hall's walls were filled with various boards-all of them half a meter wide, and a meter long-with jobs listed on them.

Tasks were shown on these boards, and to each were its details.

To claim those tasks, alchemists only needed to place their badges on the bottom right area, and a contract would then be formed with the task board's runes.

After the two reacted, the task would belong to the owner of the badge.

Every task in the hall, from easier tasks to the most difficult ones, was meant for alchemists.

Advertisement

There were tasks like identifying spiritual medicines and assisting in looking for spirit grasses. Of course, there were also tasks for refining pills.

Most of the tasks on the boards were meant for sixth-grade pills. Seventh-grade pills were needed as well, but they were fewer in number than sixth-grade pills.

The tasks meant for eighth-grade pills were hung up on the higher parts.

The ones able to claim the eighth-grade

pills were rare, even in Phoenix Valley.

Just as Jackie studied the task boards looking for the suitable tasks, he suddenly heard. some discussion from behind him which piqued his interest.

“Sure enough, there are way more tasks than before; this matter is no small affair. Only, we don’t know how long this will last. After the matter has passed, we won’t be able to benefit so much from it anymore.”

Rudy was standing beside Jackie, and he too could not help but turn around to look. The white-robed people talking about the tasks had sixth-grade alchemist badges on them, just like Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2528

Chapter 2528
He and the green-robed man were looking up tasks just like Jackie was. Only, they were conversing as they did.

The green-robed man let out a slight grunt before he said, “How could that thing be settled quickly? I heard it shocked the whole inner valley, and they’re already preparing for war. Otherwise, why would so many tasks suddenly pop up?

“Before this, half of the task boards would be empty, but now the whole thing is full. This means that this matter won’t be resolved so easily. The alliance has already made preparations for a long-term war!”

After the green-robed man said that, the white-robed man nodded in agreement. “I just don’t know if we’ll be sucked into things or not.”

The green-robed man let out a deep sigh.

After thinking about it a long time, he answered, “I don’t know, either. With the way things seem now, it looks like it shouldn’t involve lesser-significant figures like us too much, but I don’t know if that’ll remain the same in the future. All we can do is pray.”

Advertisement

Jackie more and more like something was wrong as he listened in. He could not help but turn to look at Rudy next to him, who also looked at the other two with a confused expression.

What the two of them were talking about should have something to do with the recent incident. Something had indeed happened to the alliance, and it was no small matter. It could even end up involving insignificant people like them.

Thinking about it, Rudy took a deep breath.

He walked nearer to Jackie as he whispered, “Could it have something to do with the ambush on us？What happened, exactly？Why don’t we know anything despite how major the incident seems？Do you think we should try and find things out？”

Advertisement

Jackie shook his head decisively. “Don’t overreact for now. If you run around asking about it now, you might not get any answers. You should let things fizzle out for the time being.

“Since people are talking about this thing everywhere, then it’s not some secret that can’t be revealed. We should be able to find out about it in not too long.”

Rudy listened to Jackie’s words and frowned. “Why are you so much calmer when you’re facing such an urgent matter?”

Jackie turned to him. “There are some things you can’t find out if you’re anxious. This doesn’t seem so simple, so we shouldn’t treat it so casually.”

After saying that, Jackie turned his gaze to the task boards again, and Rudy only had a vague sense of what Jackie meant in the end.

The more Jackie acted like that, the more Rudy panicked. It was as if the whole world. knew about what was happening except him.

“Jackie, if you know about it, can’t you tell me? I don’t know anything at all! What did what happened to us before have to do with this? More importantly, I don’t know what’s happening at all!” Rudy started to sweat.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy. “I only have a guess, but there’s no proof for now. My guess seems quite accurate, so let’s wait to talk about it.”

Jackie lowered his volume for a while.

Advertisement

The discussions on the other end got louder as the green-robed man said, “I refuse to believe that all the good tasks have been claimed by those guys! It’s not like we’re worse than them, so why do they get all the good stuff?!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2529

Chapter 2529
The white-robed man hurriedly placed his finger to his lips as he heard that, motioning for the other man to keep quiet.

“Could you please keep your volume down? Don’t you know those guys are very good at listening in?

“If your words reach them, you won’t be able to get away easily. Why are you trying to offend them for no reason?”

The green-robed man let out a cold snort as he reluctantly reasoned, “We’re all sixth grade alchemists, anyway, and no one is better than anyone else. He’s just a bit more talented. What’s the point of talent? Are we supposed to just let them do what they want?”

The white-robed man shook his head helplessly. “He really is talented. I heard that he managed to get a high rank during the last test. He managed to get three sets of materials to refine golden pills!

“I also heard that he got a thousand and five hundred spirit crystals. Even though those spirit crystals aren’t much to us, it’s still something he managed to get with his talent and skill. He’s already much better than us in that regard.”

Advertisement

The green-robed man grunted coldly but was unable to retort. The white-robed man, on the other hand, did not seem willing to dwell on the topic. He walked around before pointing at a task board.

“This task has been here for at least five days. No one has claimed it so far, which means no one thinks much of it. Why haven’t they taken it down? Even if they don’t want to, they should put it in a corner. What’s the point of them leaving it in the middle?”

Jackie looked at where the white-robed man was pointing and spotted a special task displayed on the centermost task boards of the hall.

Advertisement

The task seemed very simple: one just had to refine a sixth-grade pill. The pill was called the Thousand Flower Antidote, and after refining it, one could get eight hundred spirit crystals.

Rudy had also been paying attention to the white-robed man earlier. He glanced at where the man was pointing and saw the task.

“It’s only eight hundred spirit crystals,” whispered Rudy with a frown. “I recall that the materials needed to refine a Thousand Flower Antidote will cost at least five hundred spirit crystals.

“All that hard work to refine the pill will only reward you with three hundred spirit crystals. That’s way too cheap! No wonder no one wanted the task.”

Refining a sixth-grade pill needed both time and effort, and to add to the mix, a certain amount of risk would be involved as

well.

To prevent wastage, as well as to stop Phoenix Valley from spending more than they needed to, the alchemists in the valley all needed to prepare their own materials after claiming a task.

If Jackie took the task to refine the Thousand Flower Antidote, he would need to use his own spirit crystals to buy the materials needed to refine the pill. After refinement, he would then use the pill to exchange for spirit crystals.

Most alchemists were not too good in combat but were very good at planning. Expensing so much effort to earn 300 spirit crystals was not something anyone wanted to do. That was why the task had stayed there for five days without being claimed.

Advertisement

Rudy took a deep sigh as he said with a conflicted expression, “Do you think I should claim this task? After all, I had just

become a sixth-grade alchemist. Refining the Thousand Flower Antidote only needs nine hundred pill runes. I can do it right now, though I'd probably struggle a little. Even though I can only earn three hundred spirit crystals, it's still some income for me."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2530

Chapter 2530

Jackie let out an exasperated laugh as he turned to look at Rudy. "You seem quite confident in yourself."

To Rudy, Jackie's words were like a slap to his face, and the old Rudy would have snapped back at Jackie. However, he no longer had that courage when facing Jackie.

No matter if it was alchemy or combat, Jackie was much better than him.

Rudy's lips twitched as he reluctantly reasoned, "I do have the confidence. I'm quite sure I can condense nine hundred pill runes. After refining it, three hundred spirit crystals isn't too bad for me."

Jackie let out a slight laugh as he said calmly, "How many alchemists like you, do you think they are in the whole outer valley?"

Rudy looked at Jackie warily. When he noticed how serious Jackie was, he thought about it for a moment before answering, "There should be about ten or twenty of them."

Advertisement

Jackie nodded; Rudy's estimate was about the same as his.

Jackie then said to Rudy, "If there are ten or twenty of them, why is the task still put up there? Aren't you curious?"

Jackie's question made Rudy assess the situation in a different light, and he then thought it was rather peculiar as well. The task hall was bustling with activity, and alchemists in the valley would walk around the place at any given time.

After all, they needed to accumulate wealth and accumulate experience in alchemy. It meant that the task hall was necessary.

Advertisement

The task had been there for five days already, and those who were at around the same level of talent and skill as them should have taken up the task already if they thought it was suitable.

Oddly, no one took up the task for the whole five days.

There had to be a reason, but Rudy was too stumped, unable to find a plausible reason for it. After thinking about it for a long time, he felt like his brain had turned to mush.

He decided to just look up at Jackie sincerely. "My mind is a mess right now, Jackie. I don't understand. Stop beating around the bush and just tell me what it is."

Jackie let out a sigh. "The reason is simple: those who are stronger than you won't care about three hundred spirit crystals. Those who are at around the same level as you won't easily accept the task.

“Don’t forget, the materials needed for the Thousand Flower Antidote cost five hundred spirit crystals. Five hundred spirit crystals can only get you one portion, which means you can’t fail.

“The moment you fail and have to buy another batch of materials, you’d be making a loss. Those around your level can’t guarantee success, which is why they won’t easily accept this task. That’s why the task has been here for so long.”

Jackie’s explanation was so detailed that even a wild boar by the side of the road would be able to understand him.

Rudy slapped his forehead at that.

Advertisement

“That explains why the task has been here for so long. I thought that I’d finally snagged an easy profit, but I stood corrected in the end… I’m actually not that confident that I’ll be able to successfully refine it in one go.”

Jackie nodded. He felt like Rudy was only barely a sixth-grade alchemist. After all, all he could do was refine an Energy Breaking Pill and condense 800 pill runes.

He might be able to try and potentially succeed with 900 pill runes, but there was no guarantee that the pill would have a 50 percent refinement after he condensed the runes.

A pill without a 50-percent refinement was a failure.

With that in mind, Rudy let out a bitter laugh.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2531

Chapter 2531

Rudy reached up and grabbed his hair. “I’m still too naive. If you hadn’t reminded me, I would’ve claimed this task. I’d only be a fool if I ended up claiming it and losing my money on this task.”

Rudy was different from Grayson. He might have an excellent standing within Golden Pills, but Golden Pills was not fully dedicated to raising him. Most of the spirit crystals he had accumulated had all been earned by himself.

Rudy would be hit with a devastating loss if he ended up losing them.

With that in mind, he shook his head. “This task isn’t good for me. I should look for something simpler.”

After Rudy said that, the green-robed man’s surprised voice was heard again, “There’s still Purple Pills! I was looking for them. I can’t believe I found them.”

After saying that, the green-robed man calmly took out his identification badge and tossed it forward, which flew right to the task badge. In a flash, the identification badge landed on the bottom right corner of the task board. The two of them merged and emitted a faint golden glow.

Advertisement

The green-robed man's action attracted the attention of a few people around them. Everyone looked at the pleased-looking green-robed man.

The white-robed man furrowed his eyebrows unhappily as he reached out to grab the other man's hand.

"Are you still asleep? How could you even claim that task? Don't you know how hard a Purple Pill is to refine?"

To emphasize his point, the white-robed man pointed forward. "Two thousand pill runes! You have to refine two thousand pill runes!

Advertisement

"You also have to guarantee that those two

thousand pill runes have a fifty percent refinement with your pill! Anyone who can do that is only a step away from becoming a seventh-grade alchemist."

The green-robed man took a deep breath. He nodded slightly before he said, "Of course I know how hard it is. If it wasn't difficult, I wouldn't even dare claim it.

"Difficulty is what drives me forward. After all, the materials to refine a Purple Pill are quite cheap-more or less one or two hundred spirit crystals. As long as I can refine a Purple Pill, I can get a thousand and two hundred spirit crystals! Just look at how many times there is a profit!"

After that, the green-robed man seemed even more emotional. The white-robed man, on the other hand, frowned, not knowing what to say.

Jackie and Rudy, both standing behind them, understood why the green-robed man wanted to excite himself. Rudy whispered into Jackie's ear, "Two thousand Pill runes? Refining the Purple Pill is more than two times harder than refining a Thousand Flower Pill. Is he that confident? He dares to refine a Purple Pill!"

Jackie knew that Rudy's words seemed so snide because he was just unwilling to admit that someone was stronger than him. Jackie turned to look at Rudy.

"He must have already condensed two thousand pill runes before. It looks like this guy is quite talented. It shouldn't be too long before he manages to become a seventh-grade alchemist."

Jackie's evaluation was quite accurate. Even though the green-robed man looked like he was trying to show off, Jackie could tell that there was a sense of confidence behind it.

Advertisement

The green-robed man was not someone who loved to brag for no reason.

"Just you wait! It won't take too long before

I'll be able to refine that pill, too, and when that day comes, I'll have everyone see just how capable I am!" proclaimed Rudy loudly, so much so that everyone heard his deliberate vow.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2532

Chapter 2532

Sure enough, the people around Jackie and Rudy had heard Rudy's bold words, to which they shot him stares of disdain. Someone had the guts to say something so foolish before they even had the skills to back it up!

All it did was make everyone belittle Rudy.

Jackie sighed in exasperation; Rudy rendered him speechless every time. He did not want to stand next to Rudy at that moment with how Rudy embarrassed him terribly.

Jackie felt rather glum after feeling the gazes of everyone around him. He felt like no one around him understood how talented he actually was.

Rudy, however, coldly snorted and said, "What are you looking at me for? I said all that because I have the confidence to. Just you wait. In less than a few months, I'll be

able to refine a Purple Pill!"

Advertisement

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly.

Everyone around them was a capable alchemist. To Jackie, Rudy might have a bit of talent, but compared to so many talented alchemists, he did not amount to much.

Jackie could not help but frown as he reached out to grab Rudy's shoulder and whispered, "Be careful of embarrassing yourself in a few months. Purple Pills aren't something you can refine just because you say you want to. You need to condense two thousand pill runes.

"Even I can't do that right now, let alone you. If you have the skills to do this, you wouldn't even need to brag. Others will naturally flatter you."

Advertisement

Jackie could still not condense two thousand pill runes at that moment. Before, he had been confident in himself, but after going to the Hall of Wishes, he tested out his

skills. He knew his place and had shed a bit of his pride in turn.

He needed to calm down and allow his memories to get in tune with his body. He had everything in his head but was unable to properly execute things with his body. He knew what he needed to do but did not have the muscle memory to do so. He was forced to constantly practice to merge his mind and body.

The existence of the soul-gathering crystals was absolutely a massive cheat for Jackie. There were many things that others needed tremendous amounts of time to research, learn, and practice. However, Jackie only needed to make sure his body could catch up with his memories.

Even so, Jackie did not have the confidence to become a seventh-grade alchemist so quickly. What, then, of Rudy, who stood behind him with not that much talent?

Rudy pursed his lips reluctantly but did not say anything else.

Meanwhile, the green-robed man felt amused at Rudy's words. He looked at Rudy as if he was looking at a fool.

His gaze must have been provocatively sharp, so much so that Rudy cracked. "Why are you looking at me like that? Are other people not allowed to be skilled just because you are?"

Rudy's words felt incredibly haughty, and Jackie could tell that the green-robed man merely felt like Rudy was making a ruckus. The green-robed man let out a cold snort and turned around, no longer looking at Rudy.

Advertisement

That seemed to tell everyone that just looking at Rudy was more than what he deserved. The man's tone was cold as he sneered, "I've seen clowns, but no one so into his role as you, is rare. You're not that skilled, yet you're still trying so hard to stand out. Hilarious."

The moment the green-robed man said that, everyone burst into laughter and pointed at Rudy as they jeered. Some of them even deliberately talked louder so Rudy could hear them.

"Look at this new guy! I wonder where he jumped out from? Looking at him, he's probably been a sixth-grade alchemist for

less than a few days. Being able to condense a thousand pill runes is an impressive feat, yet he's saying he'll be able to condense two thousand in a few months? He doesn't know his place at all!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2533

Chapter 2533

"He's probably just a fool who's never experienced the world. Aren't cretins who don't know their place always the ones praising themselves?"

Words of ridicule were flung around so much that Rudy's face reddened. It felt like he was a sitting duck as everyone slapped him. It was then he started to regret raising his voice so much and claiming such a big promise.

After being mocked to that degree, he no longer dared say anything. After all, he was not at Golden Pills, and everyone around them was talented. A random person there was probably better than he was.

Just as everyone jeered and cackled at Rudy, Jackie suddenly pulled out his identification badge, activated his true energy, and threw his badge forward.

Following the sound of a gentle breeze, the

an identification badge appeared on the task board in front of Jackie. The task board had been empty before with nothing on it, but a new task had appeared.

Advertisement

Jackie had thrown out his identification badge while everyone had been focused on Rudy. By the time everyone looked over, the identification badge had already merged with the task board, meaning that the task had been claimed by Jackie.

"Hold it right there!" shouted the whiterobed man angrily. Alas, it was too late, and he had no room to regret it.

After all, Jackie's badge had already completely merged with the task board.

He should not have placed his attention elsewhere. Otherwise, he would have stood the chance of claiming the task. After everyone saw what task Jackie had claimed, they became livid.

Advertisement

"What? This guy took advantage of the situation! Such a high-paying task is always hard to come by, yet this man took it right under our noses when we weren't paying attention!"

"A Green Sun Pill with a payout of a thousand and three hundred spirit crystals? Refining a Green Sun Pill only needs a thousand pill runes!

"Even the materials are only worth three hundred spirit crystals! This is the best task I've seen the whole week. They're asking for three pills, too!"

The person had a pained look on his face as he said all that.

“Three thousand and nine hundred spirit crystals! This brat managed to take it! He really took advantage of us!”

The task Jackie had claimed truly was the most valuable one there. Not much effort was needed to earn three thousand and nine hundred spirit crystals. To a normal alchemist, it was a fortune.

**

As long as Jackie could complete the task, it would be the biggest Jackie had earned in that period of time!

Jackie let out a small smile as he looked at Rudy.

Advertisement

He really should thank him.

If Rudy had not been bragging and attracting everyone’s attention, he would not have been able to get that task so easily. After all, everyone else had sharp eyes as well.

Feeling Jackie’s gaze, Rudy’s lips twitched, feeling rather bitter about himself.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2534

Chapter 2534

Rudy knew why Jackie was looking at him. He had been so ridiculed that he helped Jackie divert everyone’s attention and allowed Jackie to benefit from it. Just thinking about it made him feel sad.

However, he could not say anything at that moment nor did he dare speak up like he did before. After all, he knew of Jackie's skills. No matter if it was martial arts or alchemy, Jackie was far better than him.

The green-robed man's lips twitched as he glared at Jackie, but in the end, none of the others said anything about it. After all, having the eyes to quickly claim the task was a skill as well, and it was his fault for focusing too much on that clown.

The green-robed man felt worse thinking about it, and he started to look at Rudy with an even harsher expression.

"Continue walking. There's a back door at

the corner. After you push open the door, you'll enter a side hall. There's a steward there. Come with me," a cold voice was suddenly heard next to Jackie's ear.

Advertisement

Jackie frowned as he turned around in confusion before he was met with a man in scarlet red robes looking at him with a calm expression.

Jackie's frown deepened. Was that man talking to him?

When the scarlet-robed man noticed that Jackie was not saying anything, he gave Jackie a once-over before a cold smile made its way to his face.

“You must be new. It’s reasonable for you to not know who I am.”

Advertisement

After those words, Jackie was finally sure that the man was talking to him, but what did he mean by his previous words? He wanted him to go through the back door to look for a steward? Why did he need to do that?

Various questions popped up in his head, and in the end, Jackie turned to fully face the man.

“Remember my name: I am Harold Mann!” Harold looked down at Jackie arrogantly, looking like he was trying to suppress Jackie.

Jackie’s eyebrows furrowed, able to tell that the person was looking to cause Jackie trouble.

He let out a slight cough before he coldly answered, “Why do I need to look for the steward?”

Everyone started to whisper among themselves again. They fixed their gazes on Jackie and Harold, looking back and forth a few times. Jackie could clearly feel a sense of anger, fear, and helplessness when everyone looked at Jackie.

When they looked at him, all he could feel was pity and sympathy,

Harold raised his chin. “Hand over this task. This task is mine!”

The moment those words were said, Jackie felt momentarily speechless.

Advertisement

This man was a tad bit too pushy. It was not like he had never met anyone who insisted on pulling off some petty tricks to make sure they got what they wanted. Still, it was the first time he had seen someone doing it as brazenly as Harold.

Jackie's lips twitched as he was rendered speechless. He felt like it was just his luck that he kept meeting strange people like him.

He turned to look at Harold. "Is there a problem with your eyes? Can't you tell I've already claimed this task? Why do I have to hand this task over to you?

"Do you have some special permission here that lets you say whatever you want? If you do, why don't you just go to the back door and just claim all the good tasks beforehand!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2535

Chapter 2535

The atmosphere felt like it became more stifling after Jackie made his remark...and everyone else did not expect the newcomer to be so stubborn.

Harold had been stunned by Jackie's words as well. After all, he never expected someone to butt heads with him so straightforwardly.

Harold started to laugh angrily. His laughter got louder and louder, but everyone knew that his smile never reached his eyes. It was obvious that he was furious. “You truly are ignorant. Newcomers like you always insist on looking for trouble!”

Jackie could not help but roll his eyes. At that moment, he no longer wanted to waste his time on Harold. He could tell that no one dared to offend Harold, which meant that it was not the first time he had ever done so.

After someone else got a task, he would force that person to head to the steward to cancel the task, and he would claim the task for himself.

Jackie shifted his gaze toward the whiterobed man, and he recalled hearing the white-robed man’s discussion with the green-robed man earlier.

Advertisement

They had said that someone would take away all the good tasks, and the white-robed man even warned the green-robed man against speaking too loudly in case they were overheard.

It seemed like Harold was among those the white-robed man was talking about.

If anyone else was in his position at that moment, they might not have dared fight back that much and listened to Harold, handing the task over.

However, Jackie was the one facing Harold at that moment. Jackie had never given in to anything like that before, no matter who came before him.

Advertisement

Rudy anxiously grabbed Jackie's collar as he whispered, "Jackie, you just got here. It's better to not cause any trouble. There are plenty of tasks here, so let's look for something else."

Even though Rudy was confident in himself, he knew that there were some things that he could not be stubborn about. Offending someone with strong-enough inside help would constantly invite trouble.

Jackie nodded slightly but still did not move. In truth, after some thought, Jackie understood that nothing could be done to him if he did that.

If Harold truly was that capable, then he should have had special rights to pick his tasks first instead of fighting over tasks with everyone here.

Even if Harold had a backer, it should not be someone with that special of an identity. Since it was no one special, he would not be targeted too obviously.

Harold could not hold back his anger anymore when he saw how Jackie still kept his cool. "It looks like you're insisting on looking for trouble. Just you wait!"

Jackie let out a light laugh. “What can you do to me? You’re publicly disobeying the rules, so why should I listen to you?

“I’ll say it again: If you’re that capable, you would’ve taken the task away beforehand, and we won’t even have had the chance to take it from you. You don’t have the skills or the background, but you’re still trying to do something so shameless!”

The moment he said that, everyone inhaled sharply. Jackie’s words were hard to listen to. It was basically berating Harold, and it effectively stunned Harold for a good few seconds.

Advertisement

Johnson Jones, standing behind Harold,

was a loyal follower of Harold. After listening to Jackie’s words, he could no longer hold back and rushed forward. “How dare you insult Harold like that!”

Jackie let out a cold laugh. “I’m not trying to insult anyone. Harold was the one insisting on sticking to my face, looking to be humiliated!”

Rudy was scared stiff. He knew how Jackie was. If he wanted to fight back, he would kill the other guy. Rudy just never expected that Jackie would not care who was on the other end.

As long as anyone offended Jackie, Jackie would be ruthless.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2536

Chapter 2536

Johnson widened his eyes and said, “Do you know who Harold is?!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and replied, “Who cares about who Harold is?”

Johnson said, “Harold is someone who’s training in the Way of the Phoenix Pill! Surely you know of that! In the whole outer valley, only ten alchemists have managed to learn it! Harold is one of them!”

Johnson could not help but straighten his back when he said that. He looked like he was incredibly proud. Jackie had naturally heard of the Way of the Phoenix Pill before. In the courtyard, Lou had told them about it.

The Way of the Phoenix Pill was the most valuable thing in Phoenix Valley. It was the hardest and most valuable of any Ways of the Pill.

Anyone who was able to successfully learn it would have unlimited potential. They would definitely be accomplished in the field of alchemy. That was because the Way of the Phoenix Pill was way too tough.

Advertisement

The runes condensed by the Way of the Phoenix Pill were much better and more stable than others.

After hearing Johnson’s words, Jackie understood why that guy was so arrogant. Turns out that he had learned the Way of the Phoenix Pill.

It seemed like that guy was somewhat talented. However, that talent meant absolutely nothing to Jackie. Jackie remained calm, not reacting to those words at all.

He nodded before he said, “What does being able to learn the Way of the Phoenix Pill have anything to do with me? What does it have to do with snatching the tasks of others?”

Advertisement

That question stumped Johnson. It did not seem that related at all. However, it was actually related. Harold was talented, so Harold would be accomplished in the future.

No one wanted to offend someone who would definitely be successful in the future. Harold used that point to steal the tasks of others. Everyone else was forced to swallow their words and obediently hand over the tasks.

That was why all the good tasks were taken away by people like Harold. Everyone else was not willing to concede but had to when taking his future into account.

Harold’s face was incredibly dark at that moment. He looked at Jackie with an expression that got fiercer and fiercer. He wanted nothing more than to just kill Jackie on the spot. “So you’re really insisting on looking for trouble! Just you wait!”

Jackie looked right at him and replied, “Sure, I’ll wait for you. Are you planning to fight

me? If you are, I’m willing to at any time!”

In terms of alchemy, Harold was definitely talented. However, Harold was not that talented when it came to martial arts. Harold had only just broken through to the middle stage of the innate level. In Jackie’s eyes, he was an ant that could be killed at any time.

Jackie had already broken through to the spring solidifying realm, and he was no ordinary one either. Harold was so angry that his whole body shuddered, but he could not make a move there.

Threats or aggressive words were useless against Jackie. Instead, he had ended up being infuriated by Jackie.

Advertisement

Veins started to pop out in Harold's eyes as he said, "Just you wait! You'll pay for what you said!"

After that, he pulled Johnson away and left in a huff. Looking at Harold's retreating back, Jackie still did not have much of an expression.

However, the discussions around them got louder and louder. "This guy really isn't afraid of anything. Harold is favored by elders thanks to his talent."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2537

Chapter 2537

"He'll absolutely be targeted! Once Harold realizes his true potential, it would be easy to deal with him!"

"Can't he tell that none of us want to provoke Harold? Does he think that he can really stand up against Harold till the end?"

"Doesn't he know how powerful someone as talented as Harold will be when he achieves his potential? Back then, there were plenty of idiots who offended talented alchemists...

“After that, the alchemists would all torture and take revenge on all those who had offended them before. The future is plain for all to see.”

“Just you wait. In just a few years, this kid will probably regret what he did!”

No one bothered to hide their discussions

Advertisement

from Jackie. He had heard everything that was said but did not have too much of a reaction. Meanwhile, Rudy was pale with fear.

Normally, anyone would be more apprehensive when they were in an unknown environment, not wanting to provoke anyone.

However, none of that seemed to matter when it came to Jackie.

Rudy was thoroughly convinced by Jackie at that point.

Advertisement

He took a deep breath as he pulled at Jackie, “Jackie, what do you plan on doing after this? He’ll definitely target you in the future! You might not be able to take it when that happens.”

Jackie had a nonchalant look on his face, “By the time he can do anything, many years would have passed. Who cares about that right now?”

After saying that, Jackie headed out. Rudy frowned, not knowing what to say about

Jackie's reaction. He admired Jackie's courage but was speechless at his idiocy.

After the two of them headed back to the courtyard, Jackie entered his room toward the west. After closing the door, Jackie had Nash come out of Mustard Seed.

After Nash was out, he could not help but lament how odd the world was. Jackie had been doing well in West Cersei State when he was suddenly flung to Middle Province. Nash had thought that Jackie would be at Heavenly Pills for a while, but Jackie ended up in Phoenix Valley in just a few days.

They did not know how long they would be in Phoenix Valley either. Nash sighed, "I know you usually have a plan, but I have to ask you this. What do you plan on doing next? How long are you planning on being in Phoenix Valley?"

Jackie poured Nash a cup of tea before he said earnestly, "No matter what, I have to become a seventh-grade alchemist before I

make my next plans. This place might be complicated, but as long as I am talented. enough, there shouldn't be any great dangers."

Advertisement

"That Harold guy will definitely cause you trouble," Nash said with some concern.

Jackie let out an uncaring laugh, "Was I supposed to just hand over the task that I had claimed?"

Nash frowned somewhat helplessly. After thinking about Jackie's personality, he shook his head decisively. Jackie was not someone who would do that. The two of them would definitely have some conflicts.

However, Jackie was never afraid of that. As long as Harold dared to cause trouble, Jackie would teach him a lesson.

Jackie pulled out a chair and sat down, "Don't worry, I'll deal with this."

Nash could only nod. He was of no help with this matter anyway. Early the next day,

Jackie pushed open the door and walked out

with a cheerful look on his face.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2538

Chapter 2538
The moment he reached the sect, he was called by Rudy. That guy seemed to be hiding while waiting for him. "Jackie, where are you going?"

Jackie turned around with annoyance and replied, "Do you have nothing better to do? Why did you come out the moment I did?"

Rudy pursed his lips awkwardly. He was not familiar with the place and was afraid of getting himself into trouble. Rudy was already beginning to admire Jackie, so whatever Jackie did, he would always follow behind.

When Jackie saw that he was not saying anything, Jackie said in exasperation, "I fought with Harold yesterday, you should be avoiding me to avoid any trouble. If he decides to target you after failing to get me, you'll be in trouble."

Rudy's slightly awkward smile froze on his face at Jackie's words. Jackie was right. If Harold did not want to or could not get to Jackie, then would he not end up being the whipping boy?

Thinking about that, Rudy was suddenly hesitant. He did not want to end up in that position. If that happened and Jackie decided not to save him, then he was dead.

Advertisement

He did not have Jackie's skills or courage. The thought of retreating away started to take root in Rudy's heart. Jackie immediately knew what was on Rudy's mind when he saw Rudy's expression.

He let out a cold smile.

That had been the result he wanted.

He did not want a dog constantly following him around.

Advertisement

He averted his gaze and headed out. However, he had just taken two steps when Rudy started following him again.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, as he turned around in annoyance, "Do you really want

right?"

Jackie no longer knew what to say. Rudy was an idiot. If Jackie really wanted to target Rudy, Rudy would not survive for more than a few days.

Rudy should have buried those thoughts in his own head, but he actually said it to Jackie. That was not something any regular idiot would do. It was something only someone incredibly idiotic would do.

Jackie spat out, “Can you please shut up?”

Hearing the impatience in Jackie’s tone, Rudy was forced to shut his mouth. When the two of them arrived at the Elder Hall, Rudy could not help but say, “Are you planning on going to the class in the Elder Hall? Which Elder is giving a lecture today? You’re really taking on too much. I thought that you would definitely try to complete your task after claiming it.

“After all, there’s a time limit to completing

tasks. If you can’t complete it in a week,

Advertisement

you’ll be fined.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2539

Chapter 2539
Jackie nodded. He naturally knew that. It was because he knew that he came on the second day.

He turned to look at Rudy as he said calmly, “Didn’t Lou mention it yesterday? There are no classes today.”

Rudy was even more confused when he heard that. He could not help but raise his head and look at Jackie earnestly, “You’re not here to attend any

classes? Then what are you here for? Did Lou really say that? How did I forget it?"

Jackie was speechless as his lips twitched. That guy was not only brainless, but he was also forgetful too. If it had been before, Jackie would not have even been bothered to explain. However, he felt like Rudy was too dumb, so he did not want to be too petty.

He then patiently explained, "Today is test

day. The main proctor today is Elder

Advertisement

Rudy's eyes widened, feeling like he could not understand what Jackie was planning on doing. Ever since entering Phoenix Valley, he noticed that Jackie seemed to be in a hurry to rush everything. It felt like Jackie was all over the place as well, he was clueless about what Jackie was planning on doing.

He said doubtfully, "You came here to take the test? Did you come to be tested? Why are you planning on joining the test? You've never even taken part in any of Elder Eliot's classes before, and you dare to take part in his test?

"It's not like Lou has never mentioned it before. Elder Eliot is famous for being strict. If you take part in his test and your results aren't good, you'll be pulled out individually to be berated. Aren't you afraid of embarrassing yourself?"

Jackie glanced at Rudy and replied, "Since I've dared to come and take the test, how could I be afraid of not doing well. Could you just think

with your head? You are fixated on the consequences of me not doing well, but why don't you think about the rewards I would get if I did do well?"

Advertisement

Rudy furrowed his eyebrows, thinking for a moment before he answered, "I remember now. Lou mentioned it yesterday. If you pass the test, the first fifty places will be able to get two batches of materials for any sixth-grade pill! The first thirty will get an additional batch!"

After Rudy said that, he suddenly realized why Jackie wanted to participate in the test. He widened his eyes as he looked at Jackie in disbelief, not able to say anything for a while.

He noticed that he did not understand Jackie even more. "How could you be so bold?! Do you think you'll definitely be in the top fifty?

"You want to take part in the test so you can get the materials needed to refine the Green Sun Pill for free?"

Jackie nodded, looking at Rudy with praise. That had indeed been his plan. After Lou told him about it the day before, he had already planned on taking the test.

If he bought it himself, he would need quite a few spirit crystals to buy the materials. Since there was a chance to get it for free, he would naturally take part in the test.

When Jackie admitted it, Rudy widened his eyes in surprise and said, "I really don't know what to say! Are you really that capable or are you just that brave?

“You don’t even know what kind of questions Elder Eliot will ask. Are you so sure you’ll be able to place in the top fifty? There are at least a hundred participants in this test. It’s even possible everyone will be a part of it. To be in the top fifty out of two hundred…”

Jackie was not surprised at how shocked Rudy was. He merely nodded and did not say anything else. Rudy took a deep breath as he gave Jackie a thumbs up.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2540

Chapter 2540

“The top fifty… If it were me, I wouldn’t even dare to think about it. You actually have that kind of courage… The ones who are able to get into the top fifty might not be the most skilled, but are probably the most talented!”

Jackie nodded, not saying anything as usual. When Rudy looked at Jackie, he did not know what else to say.

Strength and talent can sometimes be tied together, and sometimes they must be separated. For example, in this assessment, the two should be separated.

Someone who had already learned the Way of the Pill for a long time would naturally be more skilled, and be able to condense even more pill runes. Those who were talented might be unable to condense as many pill runes due to their lack of experience.

However, since they were talented, the pill

runes they condensed were better in quality. That was the difference between skill and talent.

Advertisement

Elder Eliot's test was not a test to see how skilled a person was. It was not to see how many pill runes one could condense. Instead, it was a test to measure the talent of that person.

What was the quality of the pill runes a person could condense? Would they manage to achieve fifty percent refinement?

"You really are confident..." Rudy could not help but lament.

Jackie frowned. That brat had been trying to say that Jackie did not have that much talent, but was going to try anyway. From the start, Jackie had not been bothered by Rudy, but he could no longer stand it.

Advertisement

Rudy had been mocking him from the start. He turned to look at Rudy and said, "Why don't you participate in this test with me. Then you'll know whether or not I'm confident."

When Rudy heard that, his expression changed. Jackie had that courage, but he did not. He had heard about what kind of temper certain elders had before.

Lou had earnestly answered the question. Elder Eliot is the elder who has the worst temper. When he saw any disciples with lackluster talents, he would berate them on the spot.

If he decided to participate in Elder Eliot's test before even attending a single class, Elder Eliot would definitely berate him viciously if he failed.

Then, he would just be humiliated in front of everyone. Yet, if he did not follow Jackie in, Rudy would feel a little unhappy.

He knew that he was no match for Jackie and that Jackie was more talented, but he was not willing to admit to that fact.

Jackie saw that brat's hesitant look and decided against saying anything more. He merely raised an eyebrow at Rudy before turning around and heading into the Elder Hall.

Rudy was incredibly conflicted. After a long time, he finally stomped his feet and followed Jackie into the Elder Hall.

The Elder Hall was already full of people. After scanning the surroundings, Rudy was sure that there were at least a hundred and fifty people present. That meant that there were at least that many participants in the test.

Advertisement

Only the top fifty had the right to earn the materials.

After seeing so many people, Rudy felt himself going a little numb. He looked up at Jackie in front of him, but Jackie merely continued moving forward until he found a clean mat.

Other than the large stone pillars in the

hall, the hall was also filled with old mats everywhere. Most of the mats had people sitting on them. Only in the outer rims were there empty spots.

The mat Jackie sat on was at the edge. There was still an empty mat beside him. Rudy thought about it for a moment before sitting on it as well.

He did not know what was wrong with him. He kept insisting on following Jackie to see how strong Jackie was. Even though he might be humiliated in front of everyone, he felt like it was no longer a problem.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2541 - 2545

Chapter 2541

Jackie preferred more secluded areas where he would not be disturbed. He would also be able to see what everyone else was doing.

He had thought that nothing would happen since he found such a secluded area, but he never expected to be called out just a moment after sitting down.

Johnson angrily shouted from the front, "You're here as well? How brave of you!

"You've never even attended a single one of Elder Eliot's classes, and you dare to attend his test? Who gave you all that courage?"

Jackie looked up and saw Johnson. At that moment, he felt incredibly exasperated. Jackie no longer knew what to say. He had picked such a secluded place because he did not want any conflicts. Those annoying flies seemed to be able to smell fruits or vegetables on him. They insisted on causing him trouble.

Jackie let out a cold laugh, "Why do you care if I'm taking the test? Just pay attention to yourself!"

Advertisement

Jackie's tone had been incredibly cold. It was frosty to the limits. Their conversation had successfully attracted the attention of most.

Quite a few of them recognized Jackie as the one who had a fight with Johnson and Harold in the task hall. The quiet atmosphere had suddenly been shattered.

Everyone looked on amusedly. It caused Jackie to be rendered speechless. He really wanted to ask Johnson to shut his mouth and use his skills to do talking.

However, Jackie knew that Johnson would not shut his annoying mouth even if he said that. Johnson would insist on using words

Advertisement

to prove himself. He would insist on having everyone else insult Jackie.

Behind Johnson was Harold. Harold had seen Jackie as well, and his eyes were full of rage.

Jackie's words had been so incredibly hard to hear. When he went back, he was even laughed at. The fire in his heart had burned for a long time, causing Jackie to be on Harold's must kill list.

At that moment, he saw Jackie in front of him again. Harold wanted nothing more than to slice Jackie in half. He had been sitting at the frontmost mat, but he stood up and walked toward Jackie.

Jackie frowned as he looked at Harold without saying anything. Harold should have already known that he would not be able to beat Jackie in a war of words after the conflict from the day before, but he still walked over.

Harold let out a cold laugh as he looked

down at Jackie, "I thought you were ignorant yesterday, but I guess I was wrong. You're just a complete idiot. Did your runner not tell you how strict Elder Eliot is?

“He expects a lot. No one knows what Elder Eliot will be testing us on at all. Are you trying to prove how dumb you are by coming here?”

Jackie could not help but rolled his eyes. He averted his gaze, not wanting to look at Harold. However, he knew that Harold would only cause him more trouble if he did not react to the insults.

Advertisement

Jackie smiled as he said, “Everyone here knows how strict Elder Eliot’s tests are. I didn’t need you to tell me. How would you know what my results will be?”

When Harold heard Jackie’s words, he suddenly let out a laugh. His laugh got louder and louder until he could barely stand up. Even though his laugh was very exaggerated, no one dared to mock him.

Harold took a deep breath and replied, “If you get good results in the test, I’ll write my name backward!”

Chapter 2542

Jackie looked at Harold with an annoyed expression, feeling like he was more irritating than a fly. Before he came, he had wondered if he would bump into Harold.

However, Jackie would not let anyone disrupt his plans. After entering the hall, he had quickly found himself in a secluded spot but was still spotted by Johnson.

Jackie took a deep breath as he looked up at Harold and said, “Do you not have anything else to do other than causing trouble? Whether I take part in this test or not, does it have anything to do with you?”

Harold grunted as he said, “Of course, it has nothing to do with me, but you were the one who stole my task before this. Did you forget what I said before?”

Jackie could not imagine what was going through Harold’s mind to accuse him of stealing Harold’s task. The way he managed to twist reality like that rendered Jackie speechless.

It was as if he was a bandit, and Harold was the victim. Even Rudy could not help but frown as he looked at Harold speechlessly.

The way Harold spoke made him seem like he was on the righteous side. It was as if Jackie had wronged him, which led him to retaliate. Jackie had wanted to control himself and not cause a scene, but after hearing that, he could no longer hold back. They let out a laugh, but the laugh was incredibly cold.

“You claim that I stole your task? Are you not ashamed of yourself? Everyone clearly saw in the task hall that I had claimed the task before you suddenly appeared and asked me to cancel it.

“After that, you wanted me to give the task to you. You’re the one who’s acting so

unreasonable, so why are you saying I stole what was yours? Is something wrong with your brain? You’re so petty and shameless!”

Jackie had never expected that he would be able to throw such harsh insults before. He had never regarded Harold as great anyway. Harold was so angry his fists shook.

The anger he had put aside the day before boiled again. He clenched his teeth as he looked at Jackie, “You dare…”

Those words seemed to come out from the gaps in Harold's teeth. At that moment, Harold was already at the limits of his anger. He had never felt so humiliated ever since he entered Phoenix Valley.

Everything Jackie said seemed like a slap on his face. Harold felt like he had been greatly insulted. Even Johnson was furious.

"Jackie! Do you know what you're doing now? I know you have no filter but just think about what the consequences of your words will be!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, "Consequences? Why would I need to care? Can the two of you stop annoying me? I really don't want to waste any more time with you.

"Didn't you understand what I said earlier? Me participating in the test has nothing to do with either of you. The two of you were the ones who came over and a fight!"

The two parties were already at the peak of anger. If they continued talking, they might actually start fighting. Everyone had already turned to look at Jackie and Harold.

Everyone knew of Harold, but Jackie was a fresh face. Jackie had the look of a naive lamb who was not afraid of any tigers. It caused a lot of discussions.

"Harold is really banging his head into the wall this time. It's the first time anyone has dared to speak like that to him."

Chapter 2543

"Does this guy not know how talented Harold is?"

“He knows. Johnson even told him about Harold yesterday. Do you know what he said? He said that Harold knowing the Way of the Phoenix Pill had nothing to do with him…”

“Really?! That kid is so aggressive…’

“I feel like there are two possibilities. First, there’s something wrong with this guy’s brain. He’s not scared of being slaughtered at all. Ignorance is bliss. He probably doesn’t care who he’s facing. He will set his mouth on anyone who provokes him.

“The second possibility is that this kid is actually very skilled. He doesn’t think Harold is worth anything at all which is why he can act like this.”

“Is he skilled? I’ve never heard of him

before. He’s probably a newcomer to Phoenix Valley. Everyone who enters Phoenix Valley is somewhat talented.

“I think that he was probably at the peak of where he came from before this. That’s why he’s so arrogant that even coming to Phoenix Valley couldn’t shave off some of his pride. He probably thinks he can stand over everyone. He’s clearly an idiot!”

Most of them did not regard Jackie highly. After all, Jackie was a stranger and they did not know much about him. On top of that, Jackie’s words caused everyone to think that he was just a stubborn fool.

Various words were heard by Jackie, but Jackie did not care at all. People could say what they wanted to, it had nothing to do with him.

All he needed to do was to do well in the test at that moment. There was no need to say anything else. Harold was already panting in anger thanks to Jackie at that point. His whole body was shaking slightly.

He had already been furious the day before, and it somehow got worse. As far as words went, he did not seem to be able to beat Jackie. On top of that, Jackie's disdainful tone made it seem like Jackie did not think much about him at all. It made Harold feel even more humiliated.

"You will pay the price! I'll absolutely make you pay! You'll wish you were dead!"

When Harold shouted those words, he did not bother controlling his volume at all. Harold was already completely irrational at that point.

In the past, although he was domineering and reckless, he still knew how to hold back. He would be somewhat careful with his words. Yet, at that point Harold had said words like making Jackie wish he was dead. It was obvious how furious Harold was.

Jackie had already heard words like that too many times that he had grown numb to it. It did not work on Jackie at all.

He looked up at Harold and mocked, "I've heard those words from I don't know how many people at this point. It's a pity that all of them are already dead..."

After that, a shout could be heard from the distance, "What's with all the noise?! This is the Elder Hall, not some market for you to bicker in!"

The shout instantly silenced the whole hall. Everyone looked over toward the source of the noise and saw a white-robed old man with an angry look on his face.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows and immediately straightened his body. There was no need to introduce that person. Jackie could tell that it was Elder Eliot.

Chapter 2544

It was said that Elder Eliot was incredibly strict. He never smiled at anyone and would berate anyone he was not happy with.

Harold's face darkened slightly. Elder Eliot did not mention any names, but he knew very well that Elder Eliot had been referring to him.

After all, he had lost control back then. Harold tried his best to compose himself before he rushed to Elder Eliot and apologize sincerely, "Elder Eliot, please forgive me. I was just too angered by that kid just now and lost control. I will definitely make sure it won't happen again."

Elder Eliot frowned before he looked at Harold meaningfully. After that, he looked at Jackie. Jackie was incredibly quiet at that moment, and his face was calm as usual.

It was as if those words Harold had said earlier had nothing to do with him at all. Elder Eliot let out a cold laugh as he narrowed his eyes and said, "Why did the two of you fight?"

Those words meant that Elder Eliot wanted to look further into the matter to see who was right. It caused Jackie to be a little speechless.

Elder Eliot really was eccentric. He even wanted to interfere in the squabbles between students. Normally, elders would just ignore the situation if it did not go too far.

Harold happily replied, "You should be able to see that this kid is a newcomer. He's been looking for trouble ever since he came here. He's also very arrogant. I only asked him a few questions when he started to insult me."

Jackie pursed his lips, speechless. Harold really knew how to stir things up. He had

not even wanted to bother with Harold. Harold was the one who came looking for a fight. Yet, he made it seem like Jackie was the one who wanted a fight with him.

Elder Eliot frowned as he looked at Jackie somewhat unhappily. Graham took the opportunity to explain even more.

“He’s a newcomer. He’s never even attended a single one of your classes. He doesn’t know a thing about the test today, so he’s clearly here to look for a scolding. I tried to warn him out of kindness, but he…”

He stopped after saying that, but he had an expression on his face like he had been wronged. Jackie had to praise Harold’s acting skills.

Harold had been the one who was picking a fight, everyone present had seen that, but the guy made it seem like it was not the case at all. He only cared about his own act and ignored what everyone else thought. Elder Eliot walked forward and said to Jackie, “It really is the first time I’ve seen you, do you admit to Harold’s words?”

Even though Elder Eliot did not say what was on his mind, Jackie could see that Elder Eliot was already somewhat on Harold’s side, and thought what Harold said was true.

Jackie said in exasperation, “Harold is full of lies and can’t be trusted. He’s trying to look for trouble with me because I refused to give him a task he insisted I give up to him in the task hall yesterday. That was where the conflict came from, and he’s refusing to let it go.”

Elder Eliot frowned when he heard that, not expecting the situation to get so complicated.

He had thought that he would be able to solve it with a few words.

Harold looked at Jackie furiously.

He had been about to speak when Jackie interrupted him.

Chapter 2545
“It’s true that I’ve never attended any of your classes, but that’s because I just arrived at Phoenix Valley. I’d naturally never had the time to attend your classes. I came because I heard there would be a reward after the test.”

Jackie was quick with his words. He did not want Elder Eliot to be fixated on the other matter anymore. After all, if they ended up arguing again, there would be no purpose. other than to waste time.

Harold’s actions had all been clearly remembered by Jackie. If he got the chance, he would make sure Harold knew the price of messing with him.

Elder Eliot raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie with interest, “So you came to the test for the reward?”

Jackie nodded fearlessly. When Rudy saw that, his lips started to twitch, not knowing

what to say.

With those words, everyone would definitely laugh at Jackie if Jackie failed. Yet, Jackie was incredibly confident, as if it would never happen.

Harold let out a cold laugh, “You really are confident. You’re just a newcomer. It’s the first time you’ve met Elder Eliot. You don’t even know what the test will be about. You dare say you can get the reward? Who gave you the courage to brag like that?”

Jackie looked at Harold calmly and said, “I gave myself that courage. If you’re not convinced, how about we make a five thousand spirit crystal bet?”

Jackie’s words suddenly caused the hall to erupt in discussions. They felt like Jackie was giving them more and more excitement.

They had all thought that the kid was just incredibly rude and brash, but now it looked like Jackie was overconfident as well. Jackie

was so overconfident it rendered them speechless. He actually wanted to make a bet against Harold.

Harold’s lips twitched, “Do you know what you’re saying? You want to make a bet against me for five thousand spirit crystals?”

Jackie nodded seriously. He needed spirit crystals so badly that he would take whatever he could get. If Harold was so adamant about making things difficult for him, he would take full advantage of it.

Jackie had wanted to bet ten thousand spirit crystals, but he felt like Harold might have fallen back if he set the price too high, so he settled on five thousand spirit crystals.

Five thousand spirit crystals were already no small number to Jackie. The task he had earlier would give him three thousand and nine hundred. Five thousand would be the equivalent of four Green Sun Pills.

Harold laughed as he looked at Jackie,

“You’re the most confident person I’ve ever met. Since you want to bet, I’ll do it!”

“There’s no point just talking about it. If you really want to make a bet against me, let’s sign a contract. If one side loses and doesn’t pay up, their souls will be ripped apart!”

There was no way to change the contract after signing it. Normally, fighters rarely signed contracts like that. After all, it involved their own lives.

The reason Harold had mentioned it was because he thought that Jackie could not possibly win. Elder Eliot frowned before slamming his palm into the desk.

“Shut up right now! Where do you think you are? You dare to talk about signing a soul contract? It involves your very souls. I won’t let you do whatever you want to!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2546

Chapter 2546
Even though Elder Eliot had a fiery temper, he knew very well that if he did not stop the two of them from signing the contract, he would definitely be blamed by the other elders.

After all, it had to do with life and death. The death of one of them would be a loss to the Phoenix Valley.

However, Elder Eliot was no ordinary elder. Even though he would not let the two of them sign a contract, it did not mean he would just let it slide.

“Since the two of you are so hotblooded and insistent on a bet, then I’ll grant your wish. How about this? I’ll be your witness. You won’t have to sign any soul contracts.

“As long as someone loses and refuses to pay, I’ll make that person regret it,” Elder Eliot said.

Jackie forcefully pursed his lips to stop his happiness from showing on his face. Elder Elliot seemed to be willing to participate in this. However, Elder Eliot’s actions were precisely what he wanted.

Advertisement

A soul contract needed a lot of time, so having Elder Eliot be the witness was much more efficient. If anyone wanted to run away from the bet, Elder Eliot would not let them off.

With that in mind, Jackie nodded, “Thank you, Elder Eliot.”

The moment he said that the hall erupted in commotion again. They had thought that Elder Eliot’s arrival would have caused everyone to suppress all their excitement. Yet, with Elder Eliot’s actions, they could no longer hold back.

“The brat looks really confident. Do you think he has the skills?”

Advertisement

“The two of them actually bet five thousand spirit crystals, but they still haven’t talked

about how the loser is determined.”

“Are you dreaming? Didn’t that guy say earlier? He would definitely be in the top fifty and get two portions of sixth-grade pill materials.”

Possibly reminded by those around him, Harold realized that they had not actually discussed the terms of the bet.

Harold turned around and said seriously, “Let’s talk about the terms of the bet.”

Jackie nodded as he said calmly, “The bet is simple. I will be in the top fifty on the test and get two portions of sixth-grade pill materials.

“If I manage to do that, you have to give me five thousand spirit crystals. If I fail to do it, then I have to give you the spirit crystals.”

Jackie defined the bet word by word so that no one would mishear it. The more Jackie acted like that, the more disdain Harold felt in his heart. He felt like Jackie was a complete idiot.

Jackie dared to set a bet like that against Harold purely because Jackie was ignorant. He did not know the depth of Phoenix Valley.

Advertisement

Everyone there was a master. Being in the top fifty among masters was not an easy matter. Even he had gotten to where he was step by step.

With that in mind, Harold’s smile deepened, “You’d better prepare your spirit crystals. You have to give them to me on the spot or I won’t let you leave!”

Jackie nodded in a calm tone, “You’re right. If the results are out, then the loser has to pay up. You should prepare five thousand spirit crystals too.”

Harold had been in a much better mood after the bet was set. After all, he did not think he could lose at all. Yet, Jackie’s words made him feel like Jackie was not willing to give an inch, and was adamant about beating him.

It soured Harold’s mood again. He looked at Jackie hatefully. He had never hated a person as much as Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2547

Chapter 2547
He had never hated any opponent he had gone up against so much before either. At that moment, Harold wanted to stomp Jackie beneath his feet and make sure that Jackie would never make a comeback. Only then would he be happy.

Elder Eliot looked at Jackie with much interest, as if he was awaiting a reaction from Jackie's expression. Unfortunately, Jackie did not seem to be showing any emotion at all.

The more Jackie acted like that, the more curious Elder Eliot was. Elder Eliot waved to the rest of the crowd.

"Alright, the best have already been placed. You have a little more time to prepare. After that, the test will start.

"The test will be four hours long. If you haven't completed the test in four hours, you still have to hand over the condensing

card that will be passed to you."

Advertisement

The moment Elder Eliot spoke, everyone respectfully answered him. They used the time they had to compose themselves.

From what happened, it was obvious that Elder Eliot was not stern for no reason. He had his own rules and regulations. With that in mind, Jackie let out a sigh.

He wondered if he should try to get closer to Elder Eliot. From the earlier conversation, Jackie could tell that Elder Eliot's relationship with Harold was not as good as he thought.

The two of them were closer compared to a normal student, but it was not that great. If he could get a bit closer to Elder Eliot, he would probably not have to worry about Harold.

Advertisement

After the thoughts played around in his mind, he suddenly heard footsteps in front of him. When he looked up, he saw that Harold had turned around and started walking back to his spot.

“Hold on.” Jackie suddenly said.

Harold frowned as he said without turning his head around, “What do you want? Are you trying to argue with me again? Are you regretting things now?”

Jackie frowned, feeling like Harold’s brain was a bit different from his, but there were some things he felt like he should ask.

He took a deep breath and suppressed the urge to insult Harold as he asked the question he wanted to, “You should have participated in these tests before. What’s the best result you’ve gotten?”

Jackie wanted to use Harold as a benchmark to see what he needed to do. When Herald heard that, he had a surprised expression on his face.

It was obvious what Jackie wanted to know. Harold had not wanted to answer Jackie, but he would seem nervous if he did not. He did

not want to lose face in front of Jackie.

He turned to look at Jackie and said in a sinister tone, “I’ve never been below the top ten list here.

Advertisement

“If you want to beat me, you need to at least be in the top five places. However, you can forget about that. You should be celebrating if you’re able to even get into the top thirty!”

After getting that answer, Jackie nodded without any delay. He sat back onto his own mat. Harold felt even angrier looking at Jackie’s actions.

He did not know why he was so unlucky every time he saw Jackie. The moment Jackie sat back down on the mat, he had already discarded all those useless thoughts.

Rudy whispered to Jackie from behind, “Jackie, no matter what, I’ve been completely convinced by you. Even though I don’t know where your courage comes from, I’ll still support you!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow before nodding, but he did not say anything else. After Harold sat on his own mat, he started to pant heavily. It was obvious that Jackie’s words. had managed to unsettle him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2548

Chapter 2548
The test had still not started, but the atmosphere was already incredibly tense. After the two of them set the bet, everyone started to get incredibly excited. There were discussions everywhere. Where did Jackie get his courage from?

They even started to question where Jackie was from. Yet, there were no answers to be found anywhere. After all, Jackie had not been in Middle Province for that long, the only person who knew Jackie there was Rudy.

Yet, Rudy’s thoughts were completely on Jackie. He really wanted to know why Jackie was so confident. Jackie knew of Harold’s talent and skill but still dared to take the risk and even make a bet.

If he had been in Jackie’s place, he would not have dared to do anything. Rudy whispered, “What happens if you lose later? I’m not saying you will lose, I’m just curious. Don’t you think that you’ll lose at all?”

He could imagine what would happen if Jackie lost. Not only would Jackie have to pay five thousand spirit crystals, but Jackie would also be mocked by everyone. He would definitely be publicly humiliated.

There was also Jackie’s conflict with Harold. If Jackie lost, Harold’s insults at Jackie would definitely get worse. Harold would also end up doing even worse things, so Rudy could not really calm down.

Advertisement

Jackie looked up at Rudy. He still remained calm, as if nothing was happening.

“I’ve never felt like I would lose.” He said that incredibly casually.

When Rudy heard that, his lips twitched. He did not know if he should admire Jackie's confidence or suspect that there was something wrong with Jackie's head.

After a moment, Rudy finally said seriously,

Advertisement

"I feel like you should be prepared for anything. If you're overconfident, you might fall down heavily."

Jackie could not help but let out a slight smile when he heard that. He did not answer Rudy. There were some things that he understood best himself.

If he did not know about his own abilities and had just done all of those crazy-looking things, he would end up with misfortune. Jackie knew of his abilities well enough.

Others thought he was crazy, but Jackie was merely trying to get the most out of his own skills. If Rudy heard what Jackie was thinking, he would probably not understand and think there was something wrong with Jackie's head.

That was why Jackie remained silent, not saying anything. After a while passed, Elder Eliot rasped his hand lightly on the table, gaining everyone's attention.

Elder Eliot passed out the condensing card

in his hand. "These condensing cards have pill runes that I left behind. However, these pill runes aren't complete. What you need to do is fill out these incomplete pill runes.

"You need to complete the runes, and also make sure that the refinement rate is at least sixty percent."

Other than Jackie and Rudy, everyone else the had taken part in Elder Eliot's tests before. They were already familiar with how the tests were going to be. However, Jackie did not panic at all when he got the condensing card.

Advertisement

Lou had already told them about condensing cards in detail. Condensing cards were a special little array. There was only one use for them, which was to store pill runes temporarily.

After condensing pill runes, attaching them to condensing cards required no true energy. They would be able to store the pill runes for two days.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2549

Chapter 2549
It could not only store completed pill runes, but it could also completely preserve incomplete ones. Jackie looked at the condensing card. It was about half a meter long.

There were nine hundred and twenty pill runes on it, but all of the pill runes were incomplete. Those incomplete pill runes looked like a fill-in-the-blank exercise.

Elder Eliot had filled in the upper part, and they needed to fill in the bottom part.

Nine hundred pill runes were nothing much to Jackie and the others. After all, each sixthgrade alchemist needed to condense eight hundred pill runes at least to be able to advance. Even Rudy was able to condense nine hundred of them.

When Rudy got the pill card, he was still quite calm. The moment he pulled it up, he widened his eyes as his face paled. Jackie

glanced at Rudy and knew that Rudy was completely out of his depth.

Advertisement

Even though they only needed to fill in nine hundred pill runes, those pill runes were no ordinary runes. Those pill runes were all incredibly complicated.

Sixth-grade pills would never use those complicated pill runes. The test was throwing them incredibly hard questions. Without enough knowledge, even for fresh sixth-grade alchemists, it was impossible to recognize the runes on the condensing card.

No wonder everyone thought Elder Eliot’s tests were not to be messed around with. The contents of the test were quite twisted. Jackie even saw some pill runes that were needed for eighth-rank pills.

Those pill runes were at least twice as complicated than the pill runes sixth-grade alchemists usually needed. Jackie looked up at everyone and saw that no one had a relaxed expression.

Advertisement

There were even some who were pulling their ears bitterly. Elder Eliot stood in front with a warm smile on his face, looking at everyone kindly.

It was the first time Elder Eliot had such a warm smile after he entered the Elder Hall, but it only gave everyone goosebumps.

Jackie felt his lips twitching. The test this time was far more difficult than any test he had gone through before. There were some who even started to curse.

Even if they cursed softly, the quiet atmosphere meant that Jackie heard it very clearly.

“Ah! I don’t recognize almost half of it, how am I supposed to fill them up? Is Elder Eliot doing this on purpose to us?”

“This test seems several times more difficult than usual. Look at these pill runes.

Most of them are runes needed for seventh grade pills. Simple pill runes take up less than a fifth of it!”

“What do I do? I don’t know any?!”

“Just because you don’t know, it doesn’t mean everyone else doesn’t. We’re all at different levels. If you don’t then too bad, you’ll probably be scolded!”

Advertisement

“I don’t want to be scolded. Elder Eliot’s mouth is not something I ever want to face. It’s one thing to just be scolded, doing too badly will even end up with us being punished!”

Jackie was not the only one who heard that, Rudy had as well. When he heard that there would be scoldings or punishments for doing badly in the test, Rudy completely panicked.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2550

Chapter 2550
He bitterly looked up at his surroundings and his gaze landed on Jackie. He stared at Jackie with a pleading expression and said “I’m really done for now! I’ll definitely be punished. Do you think I can cheat?”

Rudy had started to panic and started to blurt everything out. Jackie’s lips twitched as he frowned and replied, “If you want to cheat, you’ll have to be able to cheat in the first place. Who’s going to help you cheat, and how will you cheat?”

Jackie's words seemed to cool down the panic in Rudy's mind a little. Jackie was right, there was no way to cheat on a test like that.

Even if he wanted to draw the runes following pictures, he would first need to know which book the runes came from. He could not copy them even if he wanted to!

Thinking about that, Rudy's lips twitched as he almost cried. Just as Jackie wanted to give him a word of advice, a sharp gaze suddenly shot over from the front.

Jackie looked up to see Harold looking at him with a competitive expression. Even if Harold did not say anything, Jackie knew what the guy wanted to say.

Advertisement

The topic this time was far harder than before. Harold felt like Jackie would immediately know he would lose the moment he saw the pill runes. That was why Harold shot a challenging look over.

Jackie smiled softly, not wanting to bother Harold at that moment. Even if Harold decided to bark like a dog, he would have ignored it then as well. After all, he had not entered the Elder Hall to argue with Harold.

He averted his gaze and put his focus on the condensing card in front of him. The card

was a problem that would normally baffle anyone else.

Advertisement

However, it was not difficult for Jackie at all. With the great master's memories, the Way of the Divine Void Pill was already carved into his mind. What he lacked was just refinement.

For his body to fully catch up with his mind would require a lot of training. However, condensing one or two pill runes was something incredibly easy for Jackie.

Even if he made a mistake or two, it would not be too big of a problem. After all, the condensing card was not an alchemic pill. They were allowed to make mistakes. As long as the pill aura around him was dense enough, he could do it a second time.

After pulling his focus away from everything else, Jackie's hands started to constantly move as pill aura danced around his fingertips.

He moved the pill aura around to draw on

the incomplete pill runes. The test this time was actually simple. Elder Elite would give the upper part, and all the test takers needed to complete the bottom part.

However, actually doing it was several times harder. That was because over eighty percent of the pill runes Elder Eliot had given them were things they never used or even never seen before.

When the test was ongoing, everyone had their full focus. No one dared to treat it lightly at all. With the added difficulty, they had already lost a lot of confidence in themselves.

They knew that the last few places in the test would be singled out to be lectured by Elder Eliot. They would be punished as well and it was incredibly humiliating.

Advertisement

No one wanted to end up like that, so they put their full effort into the test. Harold had spat out some air after Jackie averted his gaze, and his expression mellowed out a little.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2551

Chapter 2551
In his mind, Jackie would definitely lose. He had glanced at the condensing card earlier. There were some pill runes that even he might not be able to fill up.

Elder Eliot had mentioned before as well that the pill runes that were filled up needed to be at sixty percent refinement.

A refinement rate of fifty percent was required for the pill runes to be considered successful. That was because only fifty percent refinement would be able to bring out the medicinal properties of the pills.

Without fifty percent refinement, a pill rune would be considered a failure.

Sixty percent refinement would mean that the quality of the pill would be a level higher,

A pill of sixty percent refinement rate

Advertisement

would fetch a higher price than a pill of fifty percent refinement rate. That was because a higher refinement rate meant a higher quality pill. That was something everyone knew.

With that in mind, Harold shook his head helplessly. Elder Eliot was getting crazier and crazier. There were a total of nine hundred and twenty runes on the condensing card. Of those present, it was probably that the number of them who would be able to fill up more than half of the pill runes could be counted with one hand.

Even he did not know if he would be able to do it. Thinking of that, he could not help but glance over at Jackie. Jackie was already putting all his focus into condensing the pill runes with a furrowed eyebrow.

Jackie still looked confident as ever, which frustrated Harold even more. He felt like that guy was really good at acting. It was impossible to tell what was on Jackie's mind.

Advertisement

Johnson was sitting right behind Harold. When he saw Harold looking back at Jackie, he could not help but whisper, "Harold, what are you looking at him for? He'll definitely lose. I think he won't even be able to condense ten of the runes. After all, Elder Eliot said that we needed to have a sixty percent refinement rate.

"Haven't we looked into this guy before? He came from a small place, so what can he possibly do? You don't have to worry about him at all."

When Harold heard that, he felt like it was quite reasonable. Jackie came from Heavenly Pills. Heavenly Pills was part of the Rosefinch Pavilion's territory. To them, it really was a small place.

Harold came from the inner region. That was where the strong fighters came from. Many masters spawned in the inner region, and the outer region was basically I the countryside to them.

Harold narrowed his eyes and said, "I just feel like this guy is way too good at acting. Even now, he still manages to look like everything is within his control. It's so funny and annoying at the same time."

Johnson snorted, "He's just afraid of embarrassing himself. After all, he's probably never even seen half of the runes before, let alone be able to patch them up to a sixty percent refinement!"

Harold nodded. Johnson continued with a smile, "There isn't much talent where this guy came from at all. The fact that he's able to become a sixth-grade alchemist naturally means he must have some talent.

"However, that talent means nothing to us. He must have loved to show off among all those talentless bumpkins before this.

"He was probably praised so much that he doesn't know his place. Even here, he still

Advertisement

thinks he can beat everyone. That's probably why he acted so arrogantly."

Harold nodded, feeling like Johnson's words were very reasonable. He thought that way as well. Jackie acted the way he did because the place he came from had been far too impoverished.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2552

Chapter 2552
There were no proper masters there at all. Jackie had probably been the best among them and was naturally respected. Even after going to Phoenix Valley, he still felt like he was better than everyone else. That was why Jackie dared to say all of that to Harold and even dared to make the bet.

With those thoughts in mind, Harold's lips twitched as he felt even more sure about things. Harold clearly knew Jackie was that kind of person, so it was pointless for Harold to keep focusing on Jackie.

Jackie would definitely lose! Knowing that fact, Harold looked away and started to answer in earnest.

Time slowly ticked away. All that could be heard were people breathing. As they neared the end of the test, Rudy had already thoroughly given up all hope.

He had only been able to answer twenty

percent of the condensing card, and he could not even guarantee that the ones he did answer were at sixty percent refinement. Rudy felt like he was in an incredibly hopeless situation.

Advertisement

He deeply regretted following Jackie into the Elder Hall. He was already imagining what it would be like being called up alone to be berated by Elder Eliot after the results were out. He would be humiliated in front of everyone.

However, it was already too late for regrets.. There was no way for him to withdraw anymore.

After being stunned for a long time, he could not help but look up at Jackie. All he saw was Jackie with his chest puffed up and head held high. Jackie held the condensing card in his hand as if he had completed all of the pill runes on the card.

At that moment, Rudy wondered how confident Jackie was in his results. He did not have Jackie's courage, nor did he have Jackie's talent and ability, but he could not believe that Jackie could actually get into the top fifty.

Advertisement

If he managed to get into the top fifty without even attending a single class, Rudy would definitely be dealt a heavy blow. Rudy had planned on talking to Jackie after the test was over, but he could not hold back when he looked at Jackie's calm expression.

Rudy whispered, "Jackie, are you done?"

Jackie nodded without turning around. Rudy felt odd when he saw Jackie's calm nod, so he continued asking, "How do you think your results are? Can you get into the top fifty?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow. He knew that Rudy asked that because Rudy did not believe he was capable of it. He turned and glanced at Rudy,

He whispered back, "I told you before, if I really wasn't confident, then I wouldn't have made the bet."

Rudy could not help but take a deep breath after hearing that. At that moment, Rudy had a lot he wanted to say, but he did not know how to voice out any of his words.

Time slowly ticked away, and the test finally ended in silence. Elder Eliot calmly walked out from behind, gathering the condensing cards one by one.

The condensing cards would only need a short time to determine everyone's results. After gathering everything, Elder Eliot did not waste a second before leaving the Elder Hall to determine the results.

Without the elder around, the hall became much livelier. However, everyone had incredibly serious expressions at that moment. Complaints and moans filled the room.

Advertisement

"I don't know what Elder Eliot is thinking. Why is this test so many times harder?! Does he just want to see all of us fail?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2553

Chapter 2553
"Who knows what Elder Eliot is thinking. We all know how he is. Just think about those pill runes on the card earlier. Eighty percent of them were pill runes that we normally wouldn't use at all.

"They were complicated runes that only seventh-grade alchemists use. I've never even seen them before, let alone be able to fill it up."

"My results will be horrible this time, I don't even have to think about it. I just don't know if there's anyone who'll do worse than me. It would be humiliating if I end up being called out alone to be scolded!"

"Being scolded would be letting you off easy. Don't forget how Elder Eliot is. If the results are especially bad, he'll just pull you out and berate and punish you publicly. You won't just need to be fined spirit crystals,you'll even be forced to stand in a corner facing the wall!"

All those words were naturally heard by Rudy. After hearing what everyone had to say, Rudy felt incredibly bad. He was going green with regret. He should not have participated in the test.

He had never attended a single class and had only just become a sixth-grade alchemist. He did not have the chance to practice condensing nine hundred pill runes for that long, but his limits were already being tested.

Advertisement

Even though the condensing card had nine hundred pill runes as well, only a fifth of those pill runes was the easier sort. He was not able to do anything about the rest of them.

The more Rudy thought about it, the more frustrated he got. He scratched his ears, wanting nothing more than to just leave right then. Yet, he was worried that the situation would get a lot worse if Elder Eliot came back and realized that he was no longer there.

What could have been just a scolding might turn into a punishment several times worse. That was what he did not want to happen. He really wanted to talk to Jackie, but looking at Jackie's calm expression, his mood soured. He no longer wanted to say anything.

"You really surprised me." Harold's voice was heard in the front. Jackie frowned, he had been resting and not wanting to say anything, but Harold still insisted on being an annoying fly, constantly circling around him and not leaving.

Advertisement

Jackie did not feel like talking to him at all. He merely opened his eyes and said, "Can you stop being so annoying? We've already set our bet. You'll know everything when the results are out. Would it kill you to shut your mouth?"

At Jackie's abrasive tone, Harold was stunned. He had thought that Jackie would have realized his shortcomings after how hard the condensing cards were and stopped showing off in front of him.

Yet, he never expected that Jackie would not be affected by it and remain as obstinate as ever. Each word Jackie spoke seemed to be intent on stuffing his mouth.

Johnson suddenly stood up from the mat and shouted, "Jackie! I can't stand the sight of you anymore! Do you insist on carrying on this farce?! Don't think we don't know who you actually are.

"You're just a useless brat from the countryside. What have you seen before? Do you think your talent is good enough to brag in front of all of us? Let me tell you, you're completely wrong!"

Jackie's lips started to twitch hopelessly. Sure enough, these flies kept on rendering him speechless and helpless.

Jackie raised his eyebrow and replied, "Could you and Harold just shut up? Will you die if you just wait for a short while?"

Johnson was shaking in anger. He quickly walked in front of Jackie. “Do you really think you can win? Don’t you know how hard the condensing card is? If you can even answer a fifth of it, you’d be quite good!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2554

Chapter 2554
Jackie took a deep breath and looked at Johnson as if he was looking at an idiot. “You don’t know me at all, so how are you so sure that I could only answer one-fifth of the questions?”

Johnson snorted coldly as he said in an arrogant tone, “You come from Heavenly Pills. How could that small place cultivate any masters? Phoenix Valley gathered so many alchemic masters together, where could you possibly place among us?

“I was looking at you favorably by saying you can condense one-fifth of the runes. After all, only one-fifth of the runes on the card were more commonly seen runes. The rest of the runes were all incredibly rare. Only a seventh-grade alchemist would be able to fill in ninety percent of them!”

Jackie let out a laugh before he said, “If I really felt that I would lose, I would never have placed the bet with Harold. It’s better if you just shut up…

Before Jackie could finish, he was interrupted by Johnson again, “It looks like you’re still stuck being clueless. Do you think you can really get into the top fifty with those skills you have? How funny!”

Harold said from behind Johnson, “There are a hundred and eighty people in the test this time. There are only over two hundred alchemists in the whole of Phoenix Valley.

Advertisement

“Almost everyone is present here today. Do you really think you can outshine all these masters and become someone in the top fifty?”

Jackie took a deep breath, really wanting to stuff his ears. That way, he would not need to talk to the two of them, but the two of them seemed unwilling to give up.

He knew that if he did not say anything

back to them, they would only get worse.

Advertisement

Jackie sighed as he stood up, faced Johnson, and said, “Can you stop making judgments on others with that pea brain of yours?”

His attitude made Harold and Johnson feel like Jackie was just trying to be stubborn. Others also felt like Jackie was only saying all that because the words he had said earlier had forced him to.

Some people could not help but say loudly, “I refuse to believe that you didn’t think the test was hard. Why are you still pretending?”

“You’d better just prepare five thousand spirit crystals right now. If you can’t produce them later, Elder Eliot won’t let you off,”

“That’s right Jackie. Can’t you just admit that you were being reckless? If you weren’t so impulsive, you wouldn’t need to pay such a heavy price…”

Just as everyone was talking among themselves, Elder Eliot walked back into the hall with the results in hand. As he walked, he looked toward them.

At that moment, Elder Eliot had a strange expression on his face. His gaze lingered on Jackie for a long time, but after that, he averted it.

The fact that Elder Eliot was already back meant that they could no longer continue pestering Jackie. Johnson frowned as he shot a meaningful look at Jackie. After that, he turned around and went back to his original spot.

Elder Eliot stood at the center with a piece of parchment in hand. On it was everyone’s results. Elder Eliot started to read the scroll in front of everyone.

Advertisement

He stared at every single name. He opened his mouth and tried to read it out, but started to hesitate. Everyone looked at Elder Eliot anxiously, wanting nothing more than

to be able to look at the scroll to see the results.

Harold suddenly felt a bit nervous when he saw Elder Eliot’s conflicted demeanor. After all, Jackie remained standing tall as ever. Whenever he talked to Jackie, it felt like Jackie did not regard him as anyone important at all, which caused Harold to be incredibly frustrated.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2555

Chapter 2555
All he wanted to do was for both of their results to be announced. Then he would throw his results at Jackie so Jackie would stop being so arrogant. That way, he would be able to vent out his frustrations.

Yet, Elder Eliot seemed so hesitant, which caused Harold to lose his patience. He could not help but say, “Elder Eliot, how are my results?”

After thinking about it, Harold felt like asking about Jackie’s results would seem a little forceful.

It was better to ask about his results first before trying to prod at Jackie’s results. That way, Jackie would be able to feel the difference between the two of them.

Elder Eliot raised an eyebrow, picking up the parchment before he said, “There’s nothing too special about your results this time, but you still remain in the top ten.

You’re in tenth place.

Advertisement

“You managed to finish sixty percent of the pill runes, but out of the sixty percent, eight out of ten of them were not at the sixty percent refinement mark. Honestly, I’m not happy with your results!”

As he said that, Elder Eliot looked at Harold unhappily. Harold’s lips froze as his body could not help but sway. He knew that his results this time were not the best.

It was mainly because he had not been in the best mood.

The moment he calmed down, he would immediately think about how disrespectful Jackie was.

Advertisement

Those harsh words kept attacking him, causing him to find himself unable to calm down.

It was natural that he could not get good results with a frustrated mindset. Harold’s face was a little pale. Even though he did not have results that were as good as he wanted, it should still be much better than Jackie.

Thinking about that, he immediately turned around and looked at Jackie with a challenging expression again. When Jackie felt Harold’s gaze, Jackie’s lips twitched slightly.

He really wanted to rush in front of Harold and tell Harold to stop with those petty actions.

He wanted nothing more than to just quietly wait for the results.

Harold's sudden turn of the head had been seen by Elder Eliot as well. Naturally, Elder Eliot was not thrilled.

"You have no right to try and show off in front of Jackie because his results were better than yours. He got the fifth place!"

The moment Elder Eliot said that the entire field was shocked.

Everyone widened their eyes, thinking that they had misheard. Jackie had gotten fifth place? Was that true?

Advertisement

Surely they were hallucinating, right? Otherwise, how could they have heard such an absurd result?! The one who questioned it immediately was none other than Harold.

He shouted out, "Elder Eliot, what did you say? Jackie is in fifth place?"

Elder Eliot had already expected that to happen. He did not hesitate to nod and replied, "Jackie managed to finish eighty percent of the pill runes. All of those runes were at sixty percent refinement."

Elder Eliot announced all that with a serious expression, so there was naturally no room for doubt. However, despite that, everyone could not help but be filled with disbelief.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2556 - 2560

Chapter 2555
All he wanted to do was for both of their results to be announced. Then he would throw his results at Jackie so Jackie would stop being so arrogant. That way, he would be able to vent out his frustrations.

Yet, Elder Eliot seemed so hesitant, which caused Harold to lose his patience. He could not help but say, “Elder Eliot, how are my results?”

After thinking about it, Harold felt like asking about Jackie’s results would seem a little forceful.

It was better to ask about his results first before trying to prod at Jackie’s results. That way, Jackie would be able to feel the difference between the two of them.

Elder Eliot raised an eyebrow, picking up the parchment before he said, “There’s nothing too special about your results this time, but you still remain in the top ten.

You’re in tenth place.

Advertisement

“You managed to finish sixty percent of the pill runes, but out of the sixty percent, eight out of ten of them were not at the sixty percent refinement mark. Honestly, I’m not happy with your results!”

As he said that, Elder Eliot looked at Harold unhappily. Harold’s lips froze as his body could not help but sway. He knew that his results this time were not the best.

It was mainly because he had not been in the best mood.

The moment he calmed down, he would immediately think about how disrespectful Jackie was.

Advertisement

Those harsh words kept attacking him, causing him to find himself unable to calm down.

It was natural that he could not get good results with a frustrated mindset. Harold’s face was a little pale. Even though he did not have results that were as good as he wanted, it should still be much better than Jackie.

Thinking about that, he immediately turned around and looked at Jackie with a challenging expression again. When Jackie felt Harold’s gaze, Jackie’s lips twitched slightly.

He really wanted to rush in front of Harold and tell Harold to stop with those petty actions.

He wanted nothing more than to just quietly wait for the results.

Harold's sudden turn of the head had been seen by Elder Eliot as well. Naturally, Elder Eliot was not thrilled.

"You have no right to try and show off in front of Jackie because his results were better than yours. He got the fifth place!"

The moment Elder Eliot said that the entire field was shocked.

Everyone widened their eyes, thinking that they had misheard. Jackie had gotten fifth place? Was that true?

Advertisement

Surely they were hallucinating, right? Otherwise, how could they have heard such an absurd result?! The one who questioned it immediately was none other than Harold.

He shouted out, "Elder Eliot, what did you say? Jackie is in fifth place?"

Elder Eliot had already expected that to happen. He did not hesitate to nod and replied, "Jackie managed to finish eighty percent of the pill runes. All of those runes were at sixty percent refinement."

Elder Eliot announced all that with a serious expression, so there was naturally no room for doubt. However, despite that, everyone could not help but be filled with disbelief.

Chapter 2556
How could Jackie be so talented? He had never even attended a single class and still managed to achieve such results. That kid really was something else.

No wonder he managed to keep his head up high no matter what Harold said. He actually had the skills to back it up!

Harold's breathing started to get erratic at that. His whole face reddened and his hands started to shake as he said, "Impossible! How could he manage to finish eighty percent?! He doesn't have that ability! He absolutely doesn't have that ability. I guarantee that he doesn't!"

Those words were all practically shouted by Harold. At that moment, Harold could no longer keep his composure, and everything he said seemed crazed.

Elder Eliot frowned and said, "Keep your composure. If you keep on acting this way,

I'll throw you straight to the disciplinary elder. Then you'll learn what behaving yourself means!"

Those words successfully woke Harold up. He knew that he was too emotional, but he could not stand it. He could not believe that Jackie was actually talented enough to beat him!

Elder Eliot coldly laughed, "Why wouldn't he be able to do this? Why would he not have the talent? How much do you know about him to dare make that judgment?"

At that moment, Harold's face was absolutely red. His face had a crazed expression on it. He could not accept Jackie's results. He could not accept that Jackie was better than him. Before that, he had been certain that his talents and abilities were far better than Jackies.

Jackie was only able to be so arrogant because Jackie was ignorant. That ignorance caused him to not know his limits. Yet, reality proved that his thoughts had all been false.

He was not as good as Jackie. Jackie had been so arrogant because Jackie had known what he was capable of. That large change could not be accepted by Harold.

He had always been the one who was put on the pedestal. He had always been praised by everyone. Johnson knew that Harold could not accept the fact at that moment, but Johnson had no idea what to say to Harold.

Even Johnson could not accept the reality.

Harold's hands were shaking when he said, "He must have cheated! This must be from cheating. If he hadn't cheated, there's no way he would have gotten this result. He's clearly a newcomer.

"He had never even attended a single one of your classes. Those new pill runes had

probably never even been seen by him before. If that's the case, how could he finish eighty percent of them? Everything is fake. He's absolutely cheating!"

Harold sounded incredibly crazy. He wanted to tell everyone present that Jackie had absolutely gotten those results from some form of cheating. Jackie was not as talented as himself!

Elder Eliot sighed in exasperation. As he returned to the hall earlier, he had also anticipated the fact that the results would not be accepted so easily. However, he had not expected Harold to act so crazily.

Harold was trying to say anything to prove that Jackie was not any better than him. If that had happened to any other elder, they might have consoled Harold. After all, Harold was a rare master, but Elder Eliot did not have that in mind at all.

He frowned as he said, “Stop trying to lie to yourself. Everyone here knows that it’s

impossible to cheat on that test earlier. The test is about condensing pill runes. Every single thing you do in that test is down to your own abilities.”

Chapter 2557
“You keep saying that Jackie cheated, so tell me how he cheated? How is he supposed to cheat to end up with eighty percent of the pill runes?”

Those words successfully caused Harold to pale. Elder Eliot’s questions made sense. Since Harold felt like Jackie was cheating, then he should tell everyone how he cheated.

Those tests were focused on testing actual skills. There was no way to cheat unless Jackie gave his condensing card to someone else.

However, everyone could clearly see that Jackie had not handed his condensing card to anyone else. Everyone could be a witness to that.

Harold looked like a tomato at that moment. He could not refute Elder Eliot’s words at all, nor did he know what to say.

However, he still refused to believe what had happened. He was not even willing to look at Jackie, afraid that Jackie would mock him. That would be too heavy of a blow to take.

Johnson reached out to grab Harold’s arm. “Harold… His results must be right. It’s fine, there’s no reason to continue talking about it.”

Johnson’s words caused Harold to slowly calm down. However, his face was still pale. Elder Eliot sighed helplessly as he handed the parchment to Harold so Harold could take a look.

Harold shakily reached his hand out and accepted the scroll. Jackie’s results suddenly appeared in front of him. Jackie was in fifth place with his results written there.

Each of the pill runes had achieved a sixty percent refinement. It was exactly like Elder Eliot had said, Jackie had completed eighty percent of them. Not one more or one less.

Thankfully, Harold still had his wits about him. Otherwise, he would have let it slip that he wanted to look at the condensing card that Jackie had just used. If he had done that, he would probably have invited Elder Eliot’s anger.

He spat out in resignation as he looked down at his own results. His results were not the greatest this time. He was placed tenth and not many of his pill runes had qualified.

The other pill runes were not at sixty percent refinement at all. The two of them were clearly on different levels. When he saw that, Harold suddenly let out a laugh. His laughter stunned everyone present.

Everyone shot him a strange look. Harold was actually able to laugh at that time. What was he laughing about?

When they looked at Harold laughing, they immediately saw that Harold's laugh did

not reach his eyes at all. He was not actually laughing. He had just lost control of himself.

"This is too funny! It's way too funny!" Harold could not help but mumble to himself.

From the moment Elder Eliot had entered the hall, he had thought of asking about his results before asking for Jackies. That way, he would let Jackie know the difference between them.

Yet, the end result was that there really was a difference between the two of them, but it was the complete opposite! Elder Eliot knew that Harold's emotions were incredibly complicated at that moment.

Yet, time was still ticking. They could not delay things just because of Harold. Elder Eliot reached out and grabbed the parchment from Harold's hand.

Chapter 2558
He calmly started reading out the results to everyone present. Those with better results rejoiced in their heads. Those whose results were not good looked just like Harold earlier and were reminiscent of tomatoes.

The results were read from top to bottom.

At the start, Elder Eliot's tone was still calm. The more he read, the more sour the look on his face became. When he read the last five people, he already had a frown on his face.

When it came to the last name, Elder Eliot reached out and put the parchment into his pocket. His tone was cold, "Who is Rudy Glasc?!"

When he asked that, Rudy was so scared his whole body shivered. He looked like a terrified rabbit. Jackie helplessly looked at Rudy next to him.

At that moment, Rudy felt like dying. If he were able to, he'd have dug a hole in the ground.

"Let me say this again! Who is Rudy Glasc?!" That should cause Rudy to be unable to hide. All he could do was retract his earlier thoughts.

He reluctantly raised his hand. When Rudy raised it, Elder Eliot let out a cold laugh.

"In all my years of invigilating tests, it's the first time I've seen an alchemist scoring a zero. I see you have a six rank alchemist badge. You might have been tested before you came here.

"I don't know who actually allowed you to pass the test to be a sixth-grade alchemist. If I find out who it is, I have to ask him how someone as clueless as you managed to become a sixth-grade alchemist!"

Those words deeply embarrassed Rudy. He really wanted to say something for himself at that moment, because he definitely did

not cheat on the test.

However, his results were plain for all to see. Anything he said would be useless. Elder Eliot did not care about all that.

"He scored a zero! Even I'm impressed." With Elder Eliot's words, everyone started to mock Rudy.

The first time, they had covered their mouths. When they saw that Elder Eliot did not stop them, they did not hold back.

"I remember he came with Jackie. I can't believe their results are so different. I thought birds of the same feather flock together."

"I heard that the two of them are newcomers. Newcomers normally don't do very well but I have not seen anyone do this badly, he actually got a zero!"

"Of the pill runes he condensed, he did not even get a single one right. That's hilarious. He actually dared to participate in a test

with his level. Isn't he afraid of getting laughed at?"

Rudy's head lowered more and more at those words. The fire of anger started to roar in his head. His fists were clenched tightly as he swore to regain his dignity. He would make sure that everyone present would no longer dare to underestimate him.

Jackie looked at Elder Eliot and saw that Elder Eliot did not plan on saying anything, so he said, “Elder Eliot, you’re right. It’s not good to have such horrible results. However, he came with me. He just became a sixth-grade alchemist. Being able to condense a pill rune of fifty percent refinement is already the best he can do.”

After saying that, Jackie said, “That’s right since the results are out, can you pay up for the bet, Harold?”

Chapter 2559
Those words served as a reminder to everyone present, and also managed to quiet down everyone that was there. Then did they remember the bet Harold had with Jackie.

If Jackie managed to get into the top fifty, Harold would have to give Jackie five thousand spirit crystals. When the two of them placed that bet, no one believed in Jackie.

They had thought that Jackie was a mindless idiot.

Now it looked like Jackie was merely confident in his own skills.

Since he had those skills, it was natural for him to place that bet. Harold’s face suddenly paled, and his expression started to sink.

He looked at Jackie with a complicated expression.

When Jackie saw that Harold was not reacting, he raised his voice, “Are you planning on not paying up? Are you trying to void the bet? It looks like we really should have made a soul contract just now, then you wouldn’t be able to regret things.”

Jackie’s words were a slap to Harold’s face.

Harold’s body shook in anger as he straightened his back, “Who said I wasn’t going to pay up? It’s only five thousand spirit crystals. It’s nothing to me!”

After he said that, he furiously retrieved five thousand spirit crystals from his storage and gave them to Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he calmly stored those spirit crystals into Mustard Seed.

Elder Eliot nodded as he said, “If you’re willing to place the bet, then you should be willing to accept your loss. That’s the way of a true man.”

Harold felt incredibly embarrassed and wanted nothing more than to smash his head into a pillar. Johnson hurriedly grabbed Harold’s arm as he whispered,

“Let’s go. Since the results are already out, there’s no reason to stay here. We still have to attend classes tomorrow.”

Harold sighed as he rubbed his chin, trying his best to suppress his complicated feelings.

After that, he bowed to Elder Eliot and said he was not feeling well and wanted to be excused to head back to rest.

Elder Eliot did not make things too difficult for him and merely waved Harold off. After Harold left, everyone else started to leave as well.

Jackie did not want to stay in the crowd either. After making sure that the reward would be sent to their courtyard, Jackie immediately left the Elder Hall.

The moment he returned, he arranged for Lou to collect his rewards. On the way back, Rudy had been quite depressed, Rudy merely followed behind Jackie with his head hung low.

Jackie did not say anything. He had merely

helped Rudy a little earlier as a casual gesture. After all, Jackie was not all that close to Rudy.

When he was about to enter his own room, Rudy suddenly shouted at Jackie, “Thank you for your help today, Jackie.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow. He had thought that Rudy would not express any gratitude to him. After all, Rudy was usually so prideful, but he suddenly turned humble. Jackie nodded without turning around, it was not a big gesture to him.

The only thing he wanted to do at that moment was to hurry back into his room. Once Lou came back with the rewards, he would start refining the Green Sun Pill.

Just as Jackie opened his door, Rudy once again shouted out, “Jackie, I didn’t plan on telling you this before, but after thinking about it, I feel like I have to.”

Rudy’s tone was very strange. There was a hint of anxiety in his sombreness. Jackie frowned as he turned to look at Rudy who still looked as depressed as he was before.

Jackie then furrowed his eyebrows and asked, “What is it?”

Chapter 2560
Rudy took a deep breath and said, “Ever since Grayson bid us farewell and headed to his courtyard, I haven’t seen him at all.

“I don’t know anyone here other than you and him, so I felt like looking for him when I was free. However, he did not seem to be there every time I went over. I asked the person who is staying in the same courtyard as him, but the guy claims to have never met Grayson.”

Jackie said curiously, “He never met Grayson? Do you mean Grayson is missing? He went missing in Phoenix Valley?”

Rudy nodded seriously, “I felt like something was wrong, so I found the time to look for Mr. Zayne. However, what made it stranger was that Mr. Zayne told me to mind my own business.

“He told me that you and I were safe. He said to not ask about anything else and to not think about it either. After that, he sent me back.”

Saying that Rudy had a sour look on his face. It was evident how scared he was from his expression. Jackie’s eyebrows furrowed even further.

The two of them knew that Grayson’s disappearance is not something as simple as that.

Otherwise, Mr. Zayne would not have said what he did. Jackie took a deep breath as he pushed open the door to his room. After that, he waved at Rudy to come in and talk.

When the two of them went inside, Jackie poured Rudy a cup of tea. Sipping the tea, Rudy managed to regain some of his composure.

“That’s one of the reasons I insisted on following you around. I’m not an idiot, I know you don’t want me around you. I’m just afraid. I’m worried that something might happen to me at any time if I don’t follow you.

“Mr. Zayne was very direct when he said everything. When he talked to me, he had a strange expression. Those words seemed to have been meant to threaten me. He doesn’t want me meddling.”

Jackie nodded as he drank a mouthful of tea. Ever since they entered Phoenix Valley, Jackie had forgotten all about Grayson. After all, Jackie was someone with big ambitions.

He had never been someone to hold petty grudges. Even though Grayson had infuriated Jackie before, Jackie lost the urge to do anything to Grayson as time passed.

He never expected such a sinister plot to be involved when he next heard that name. Jackie took a deep breath as he started to have a worried expression as well.

Jackie had always been someone who held back from showing his emotions, but after hearing Rudy’s words, it was hard for him

to control his expressions.

“So you’re telling me that he’s never been. seen after he left for his own courtyard. Either he’s completely lost, or he was captured by someone.”

Rudy nodded seriously. It really did happen that way. Ever since Grayson bid them farewell, Grayson seemed to completely disappear from Phoenix Valley.

“This has to have been done by Phoenix Valley, but why would they kidnap Grayson and even threaten me…”

Jackie took a deep breath as his mind raced. After thinking about it for a while, he said, “He was kidnapped in broad daylight. We don’t know what his situation is like right now. What he really needs to know isn’t where he is, but why he was taken.

“Even though Mr. Zayne sounded nice when he said the two of us were safe, it did not mean that things were as safe as Mr. Zayne claimed. He probably just said that to placate us. “

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2561 2565

Chapter 2561

Rudy nodded seriously, that was what he was worried about. “What do we do? Are we supposed to just keep on waiting here? I don’t want to stay here for a moment longer, I just want to go back to Golden Pills.”

Rudy was incredibly afraid. Back when Elder Simon did not allow them to head back, he felt troubled but was helpless about it. At that moment, Rudy did not think Phoenix Valley was such a good place, but it was not incredibly dangerous either.

Yet, Phoenix Valley had turned into a place filled with uncertainty in Rudy’s mind. He did not know when he would get sucked into a whirlpool of danger and never be able to leave.

He was afraid that he would die without even knowing what happened to him. Rudy really wanted to leave that place. Even if he

would never get resources as good as he would there for the rest of his life, that was fine as well. He just wanted to stay alive instead of feeling terrified and worrisome every day.

“I’m so lucky. If I had been the one sent to the courtyard alone that day, I’d be the one who’s missing!”

Advertisement

Saying that made Rudy’s tears threaten to fall. The fear in his heart had already completely consumed him. He felt absolutely miserable.

If Jackie was not next to him, Rudy would already be sobbing uncontrollably. Jackie frowned as he looked at Rudy meaningfully.

He said, “Our living arrangements were not a matter of luck. It was already arranged to be so.

“Grayson was arranged to stay alone in the other courtyard because he would disappear. He did not disappear because he was arranged to stay in the other courtyard.”

Advertisement

Jackie’s words were like a splash of water on Rudy’s face. Jackie was right, their living arrangements had been dealt with by Mr. Zayne.

The three of them did not pay much attention to it back then, but thinking back, Rudy understood that Mr. Zayne had specifically arranged for it to be so because Grayson would disappear.

For all they knew, Grayson might have gone missing right after bidding them farewell. Rudy shuddered upon that thought as if he had just been blown by a gust of cold wind.

“Jackie! What do we do? Will we…”

Jackie reached out and stopped Rudy’s words

as he interjected, “There shouldn’t be anything happening for the moment. Since he arranged for Grayson to stay alone, it means that he did not want anyone to notice. Other than the two of us, no one else has ever seen Grayson.”

This means that Phoenix Valley intends to completely conceal this incident. We’ve already shown ourselves to everyone. If we suddenly disappeared, it might attract attention, so we should still be safe.”

Rudy nodded, but he was still fearful as he said, “But… I think this won’t be settled so easily. It’s not like we’re safe just because he said we’re safe. It’s just like you’ve said, we’re only safe for the time being. We have to find a way to leave this place!”

Jackie glanced at Rudy and realized how desperate Rudy was. He was nowhere near as brave and secure as Jackie was.

Advertisement

After what had happened earlier, Rudy knew that he could not stand out in the midst of so many masters. The place was dangerous to boot, so how could he be willing to stay on?

Jackie nodded, “The safest option may be to

leave this place, but we saw it for ourselves. Phoenix Valley is far away from other territories, and it’s surrounded by many mountains.

“There are guards everywhere. Even if we want to escape, we wouldn’t be able to. You are so weak as well. If you see a beast outside, wouldn’t you just die?”

Chapter 2562
Rudy started to thoroughly panic when he heard that. Jackie was right. It was not possible for him to escape or even just leave either.

“Are we supposed to just stay on and be worried and scared every day?” Rudy’s tears started to fall from his eyes as he finished his words.

He was truly afraid. He felt like he was right next to the gaping maw of a wild beast. If he was not careful, he would fall right in.

Jackie frowned as he reached out and patted Rudy on the shoulder, “I know you’re afraid, but it’s pointless to be scared right now. In the short term, we should both be fine.

“Even if you want to leave, we have to look for the right moment. Without the right chance, we shouldn’t do anything.”

Rudy nodded reluctantly. Jackie was afraid that Rudy would be too scared and end up acting rashly, so he immediately added, “If you do anything and those people notice, they might think we’re trying to leave this place. That could cause them to make a move on us. You should know what I mean…”

Rudy nodded, “I understand!”

Even though Jackie did not spell things out for him directly, Rudy still knew how serious the problem was.

Since Mr. Zayne said everything he did without any reservations, it meant that Zayne was not afraid of anything Rudy could do at all. He probably even felt like Rudy being too afraid and wanting to run away would be in his scope of control.

That was because they would not be able to run at all. The moment anyone noticed that they had any intentions of running away, those intentions would probably be ripped out at their roots.

Rudy smiled bitterly as he said, “If I knew this would happen, I would never have asked to take part in the alliance’s test. Then none of this nonsense would have happened to me.”

Jackie sighed and said, “It’s already too late to say that. What we need to do now is to keep to ourselves and do what we should. As for everything else, we would wait for the right opportunity to present itself before we do anything.”

The moment he said that a knock was heard on the door. Lou’s voice could be heard, “Jackie, the stuff is here. Can I come in?”

Jackie glanced at Rudy. Rudy nodded before standing up and leaving. The Green Sun Pill was not a big matter to Jackie. After two days, Jackie handed in the task and got three thousand and nine hundred spirit crystals.

On top of the five thousand he had won,

Jackie had managed to get eight thousand and nine hundred spirit crystals in just a few short days. It was quite an impressive sum for a sixth-grade alchemist.

However, that amount was nothing compared to Jackie's goal. That was why Jackie put his full focus on the task hall for the next half a month.

He would walk around the task hall every day to see if there were any suitable tasks. As long as Jackie liked the task, he would accept it without hesitation.

He was also frequently seen in the Hall of Wishes. He needed his body to catch up with his memories, so he needed constant training. Time seemed to pass by very quickly for Jackie.

Ever since the Elder Hall, Jackie had never seen Harold. Jackie had initially thought that Harold would not relent after being dealt such a huge impact, and would constantly harass Jackie.

Chapter 2563
Unexpectedly, Harold seemed to have completely disappeared. Harold no longer caused him any trouble, which saved Jackie a lot of frustration.

In half a month, Jackie had managed to earn fifty thousand spirit crystals. He was already able to condense three thousand pill runes. Jackie was ready to undergo the test to be a seventh-grade alchemist, but he did not do so.

Even though he really needed spirit crystals, he could not afford to drop his training. After all, he was a warrior first and foremost. He did not only need ninth-grade spirit crystals to enter Wild Gorge Pass, he also needed to possess certain skills.

Thankfully, Phoenix Valley does not only raise alchemists, they raised warriors as well. At noon, Jackie called Lou to the sect. The two of them sipped on tea as they spoke.

As they talked, Jackie tried asking how he could get to where the warriors were. When Lou heard that, he immediately knew what Jackie was planning on doing. Lou respectfully answered, "The warriors in Phoenix Pavilion are raised like any other clan. They are separated into outer, inner, and chosen disciples."

"However, there's a barrier between where we are and where they are. Even though we're both parts of Phoenix Valley, it's impossible to get there without a transfer array."

Jackie frowned strangely when he heard that. In order to stop the two sides from meeting, a barrier was set up. That aroused suspicion in Jackie.

Since they were both in the outer valley and a part of Phoenix Valley, Jackie did not think it would cause any trouble for the two of them to interact. After all, they were in different systems.

There were no conflicts of interest, so why would a barrier be needed? The two sides were completely separated and even needed a transfer array.

Jackie's expression had been obvious, so Lou immediately saw through what Jackie was thinking. He let out a small laugh before he said, "Jackie, you don't know this, but it's actually a big problem if you look at it closer even though it seems like alchemists and warriors do not have a conflict of interest. Warriors need the support of pills.

"If we don't separate the two, the warriors would constantly interact with the alchemists. Then, if they start to buy pills in private, Phoenix Valley would be in chaos.

"Those problems are why a barrier was erected to separate the two.

"If an alchemist wants to train in combat, they need to use the transfer array to head

to where the warriors are. They need to report it as well to prevent any unnecessary deals."

With Lou's explanation, Jackie immediately understood the purpose of the barrier. Warriors need a large number of pills to help with their training. The reason alchemists were regarded so highly was because of how much warriors needed them.

If the two sides interacted too much, their relationships would be unclear, and there would be conflicts.

"Do you know if there's a place to train soul-focused martial arts here?" Jackie asked intently.

After all, Jackie's skills were something incredibly rare.

Lou widened his eyes as he looked at Jackie in admiration. Jackie's question meant that Jackie had to be a spirit technique user.

They were incredibly rare in the world, and all of them were incredibly talented.

Chapter 2564
He never expected that Jackie would be as talented in martial arts as he was in alchemy which made Lou feel envious.

He took a deep breath as he nodded before saying, "Yes, that place is called the Soul Grotto."

The Soul Grotto was at the eastern end of where the warriors were. After Jackie used the transfer array to arrive at the warriors' area, he asked a few questions before arriving at the Soul Grotto.

Jackie had thought that the place would still be a grand hall despite being named the Soul Grotto, but he was proven wrong the moment he arrived. It really was a grotto.

To put it in another way, it was more like a broken-down cave. There were guards in front of the Soul Grotto as well. Jackie had already asked about all the rules for entering the day before, so he did not panic when he arrived.

After he showed his identification badge to the guards, the guard waved him in. Only, the guard had a curious look on his face when he saw that Jackie was an alchemist. It was probably the first time he had ever seen an alchemist entering Soul Grotto.

The interior of the grotto was quite clean. There was enough space for eighty to ninety people. Moving forward was a cliff that hung in the cave. The place looked like a cliff wrapped within the cave.

The cliff dropped into an incredibly dark hole. There were countless orbs of yellowish light floating in the air. They were like stars in the night sky. The lights were basically soul crystals.

The soul crystals emitted a yellow glow as they constantly moved around in the air. They danced around like comets in the sky.

Everyone who came into the Soul Grotto came for the soul crystals. The soul crystals were very useful to soul attribute warriors.

Absorbing those crystals could raise the power of their souls and even improve their understanding of various techniques. Jackie had gone there precisely for those crystals.

Those crystals were constantly dancing around in the empty darkness. Their shapes were uneven and so were their speeds. Getting them would require one to stand at the end of the cliff and utilize various soul techniques to break the outer shell.

Only by breaking the outer shell would the spirit crystals be obtained. That was a test for everyone. Furthermore, the Soul Grotto was not somewhere anyone could enter.

Each person was only allowed in once a month. If they missed the chance, they could only wait until the next opportunity arises. That was why everyone who entered the Soul Grotto would do their best to shatter the outer shells.

After obtaining the soul crystal, they would absorb it in the empty space in front. Breaking the shells was not something easy. Everyone would expend a lot of power just to break the shell of one soul crystal.

Jackie entered and saw that there were two queueing up in front of him. There were about twenty odd mats on the ground. Five people sat on them, and those five had inner disciple uniforms on.

They were all seated while absorbing the soul crystals. Some of them looked like they had expended all their power to break the soul crystals. Of the five there, there was one who stood out because he had a head full of white hair,

Even though the man had a head full of white hair, he did not look old.

It seemed like the white hair was just a special characteristic of his.

The white-haired man frowned and said, “Francis Lloyd, haven’t you had enough? It’s been an hour, and you haven’t even broken a single outer shell. The ones waiting behind you are about to go crazy.”

Chapter 2565
Francis turned around angrily as he stared at the white-haired man, “Can you shut up? Do you think I want to take so long? The outer shell is way too hard! What can I do?!”

The white-haired man snorted as he raised an eyebrow and replied, “Don’t even try that with me. If you’d just picked a smaller one, wouldn’t it be much easier? You’re just greedy. You insisted on picking a big one. Obviously, it would be harder!”

Francis grunted coldly and ignored the white-haired man. Jackie raised an eyebrow, remembering the rules that Lou had said.

The size of the soul crystals was not even. The larger the soul crystal, the larger the outer shell. Just a slight increase in the size of the soul crystal would result in a much harder outer shell.

Jackie could see that Francis was working hard, trying to attack the Soul Crystal. In truth, the soul crystal was not even that big considering all the others. It could only be considered medium-sized. However, it seemed like a shell of that size was already incredibly difficult for Francis.

He had spent so long without even breaking the outer shell. However, it was not like his efforts had been a complete waste. The outer shell of that soul crystal was already beginning to crack.

As long as Francis worked a bit more at it, he would be able to destroy the shell in a short time and obtain the soul crystal.

The white-haired man shrugged, “Greed isn’t enough to get you what you want. Just look at Buck Tooth behind you. He’s so angry he’s about to bite you. He’s already been waiting for you for over an hour, can’t you hurry up?!”

The man called Buck Tooth really did have

two incredibly large buck teeth. The man looked quite burly and was glaring impatiently at Francis with his arms crossed.

Jackie felt like Buck Tooth was about to lose his patience.

“Don’t make him shout at you! He’s right, you’re just too greedy! Can’t you find a smaller one? You insist on hitting a big one. Are you so confident that you can get that soul crystal?” Buck Tooth said coldly.

Francis froze. He could ignore the whitehaired man’s words, but Buck Tooth had waited for a whole hour behind him, so those words had been reasonable.

However, he could not stop his attacks. If he took back his soul energy, that soul crystal would start to move again. Then it would be incredibly hard to look for it again.

All he could do was answer as he attacked, “I’m so sorry, I have no other choice. It should not take much longer. Just look, there’s already a crack there. It should be mine soon!”

Buck Tooth replied unhappily, ” You just keep mumbling about. If you hadn’t made any progress, I would have already tossed you aside.

“If we weren’t both inner disciples, I wouldn’t have bothered to argue with you. I’d have just attacked. Stop talking and hurry up!”

Francis knew he was in the wrong, so he did not say anything. Jackie walked over and stood behind Buck Tooth. The sudden newcomer caused everyone to look over.

Jackie was wearing his alchemist attire. He stood out in the group of inner disciples like a sore thumb.

The white-haired man looked at Jackie curiously and asked,”You’re an alchemist?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2566 2570

Chapter 2566
Jackie calmly nodded.

Buck Tooth turned to look at Jackie as well. A glint of ridicule flashed across his eyes for a brief moment before he quickly composed himself, not wanting to have any form of conflict with Jackie.

At the end of the day, alchemists were revered among warriors, and every warrior had a certain degree of respect for alchemists. They needed alchemists to refine pills, after all.

The white-haired man let out a laugh as he remarked with a teasing lilt in his voice, “You truly do see everything at every given moment. There are soul attribute fighters even among alchemists. I’ve never seen you before, so it must be your first time here. Do you know the rules of Soul Grotto?”

Jackie looked at the white-haired man before he nodded calmly. To this, the white-haired man’s lips curled into a meaningful smile.

“You must continue to work hard. Don’t be like this guy; he’s been doing it for so long but still hasn’t gotten a single soul crystal.”

Advertisement

The white-haired man had a very natural expression when he said that, but Jackie could tell that the white-haired man was trying to test himself. At times, Jackie felt really helpless. He did not want to interact with such people, but they could somehow worm their way into his life.

Jackie sighed as he said in exasperation, “Since I’m here, I naturally have the confidence to break the soul crystal. Thank you for your reminder.”

Those words were clear enough. The whitehaired man could not help but raise an eyebrow. He had not expected that Jackie would be smart enough to immediately understand what he was trying to ask.

However, Jackie’s words failed to repress the white-haired man’s curiosity, and he then gave Jackie a once-over.

Advertisement

“In so many years, it’s the first time I’ve seen an alchemist here. Those who train in soul attribute techniques are usually all warriors who usually have a bright future being warriors. Seeing as you’re so confident, you must have some talent in combat as well.”

Despite his words, the white-haired man's words conveyed his curiosity, one that showed how he was searching for something. He clearly did not believe that Jackie had that talent.

Anyone talented at combat would pursue the path of becoming a warrior instead of wasting their time in alchemy. Even though alchemists received respect from warriors, one could only truly be confident if they had genuine power to support them.

Jackie frowned as he glanced at the white

haired man helplessly. To him, this whitehaired man was far too curious.

He could see from the earlier conversation with Francis that the man had a strong taste for gossiping.

Jackie took a deep breath as he refrained from sneering at the white-haired man. "There are some things I really don't want to repeat. Let me ask you something: why are you here?"

The white-haired man was taken aback by Jackie's question. After all, he never expected such a sudden one. "That's obvious," he answered. "I just want to absorb soul crystals to increase my power."

Jackie nodded seriously before he spoke again, albeit bluntly, "Why aren't you absorbing your soul crystal, then? What's the point of standing here? Will understanding my affairs increase your own power?"

Advertisement

The white-haired man's face flushed at

that.

All of a sudden, giggles could be heard. around them, and the white-haired man let out an awkward cough. He tried to say something to defend himself but could not find the words.

Chapter 2567
The white-haired man's lips stiffened as he shot Jackie a stiff glare, but in the end, he no longer pestered Jackie with questions. After all, Jackie was still a sixth-grade alchemist.

Even though he did not know how talented Jackie was at alchemy, it was quite likely that Jackie would become a seventh-grade alchemist if he was already in the sixth grade at this age. The white-haired man did not want to offend someone who might be a high-ranked alchemist in the future.

With that, the white-haired man suppressed the fire in his heart as he turned and returned to sit on his mat.

On the other hand, Buck Tooth turned and looked at Jackie earnestly as if trying to read Jackie's mind from his face.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows. He hated being looked at so inquisitively, but ever since he arrived at Hestia Continent, he never ceased to stop attracting such curious gazes.

At this point, Jackie was content with himself. They could look at whatever they wanted to.

"Alright! Just a little more! Break!" Everyone could suddenly hear Francis' voice, and it broke the awkward atmosphere from earlier.

Everyone looked up and glanced at Francis, whose face was already beaded with sweat. His hands constantly moved as he formed seal after seal, sending a torrent of attacks at the soul crystal.

With multiple pangs, a large crack was finally seen on the outer shell of the soul crystal. Soon after, the crack quickly shattered the whole outer shell.

With a crack, the whole thing shattered, and the yellow glow radiated even more vibrantly.

After the last of the outer shell fell off, the soul crystal's radiant glow flew right toward Francis' palm. The moment Francis grabbed the soul crystal, a teardrop fell from his eye.

Jackie was speechless at how emotional Francis seemed. True, the soul crystal was something good, but it was just one crystal. Did he need to get so excited?

The others, coincidentally, shared the same thought Jackie had. They could not help but tease Francis for being so emotional.

One of the inner disciples said, "You truly are something else, Francis. And here I am, thinking you must've gone through a lot in your life before. Yes, that soul crystal is quite nicely sized, but do you have to be so emotional?"

Hearing this, Francis turned to look at the person and snapped, waving the soul crystal in his hand, "Stop trying to rain on my parade. If you were the one with this soul crystal, you'd be just as emotional. Just look at the size of this thing!"

To Francis' credit, it was relatively large; about the size of a fist. Francis could not completely cover it with his hand.

The white-haired man snorted. “The soul crystal is quite big, but if I got it, I wouldn’t be so emotional that I’d end up crying.

“After all, I have great ambitions. In one year, I’ll get an even bigger soul crystal than the one in your hand!”

The white-haired man sounded incredibly sure of himself as though certain his goal was within reach.

Francis let out a grunt as he rolled his eyes. “I knew that you guys wouldn’t be capable of saying a single good thing.”

Chapter 2568
Buck Tooth had long lost his patience before this exchange. When he noticed that Francis was not giving way, he shouted, “Get lost right now, Francis! You already have the soul crystal, but you’re still taking up the spot. Can’t you see that there are still two people waiting behind you?”

To this, Francis bashfully turned and saluted Buck Tooth before he ran over to a vacant spot nearby and found a clean mat. He sat and started to toy with the soul crystal in his hand happily.

Seeing the soul crystal in Francis’ hand up close made everyone envious, and it showed in the expressions they had. Despite their ridicule and haughty words, it was impossible for them to not be enticed by such a large soul crystal in front of them.

They even struggled to keep their behavior

in check. After all, none of the five individuals had the ability to get that soul crystal.

Feeling their gazes, Francis’ lips curled into a smirk as a prideful expression was etched onto his face. “What’s wrong? Do you want it? Too bad, because I’m not giving this to any of you!”

Everyone wanted nothing more than to run up to Francis and give him a smack.

Buck Tooth paid no attention to their quarreling. Francis’ victory might have even excited him as he furrowed his eyebrows and started to look at the innumerable dancing soul crystals in the cave.

The soul crystals might be moving and dancing around quickly, but they were like headless flies. As long as one could find a target, they could use their power to lock onto them.

Any person could break the outer shell and

obtain the soul crystal, provided they have the capability of doing so.

Buck Tooth let out a sharp cry as his hands moved. Soon after, runes appeared in front of him as they turned into a black ax, one that gave everyone the goosebumps.

Very quickly, Buck Tooth headed right at the soul crystal he had locked into.

“Shatter!” Buck Tooth cried out in anger. The ax fell down immediately upon the soul crystal.

Jackie raised his eyebrow and shook his head in exasperation. The ax should be Buck Tooth’s strongest attack, but he overestimated himself. Even though the attack was strong, the soul crystal he chose was not small.

It was just a little bit smaller than the soul crystal Francis had gotten earlier. The difficulty of shattering it would probably be not much different from the soul crystal Francis got earlier.

Jackie sighed helplessly at the thought.

Buck Tooth was not as strong as Francis. To get that soul crystal, Francis even used up a lot of his strength and only barely secured it.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he observed Buck Tooth’s expression. After the attack, Buck Tooth seemed a bit disappointed, yet the fire in his eyes remained as he showed no signs of slowing down. It was obvious that Buck Tooth had the same plan as Francis.

Both of them planned on stubbornly using all their might to attack the outer shell of the soul crystal. It looked like he would need to waste quite a lot of time again.

“Shatter! Shatter quickly!” Buck Tooth shouted out as he attacked, his muscles bulging as he did.

Buck Tooth seemed tempted to just rush over and bite the soul crystal out with his teeth, much to Jackie’s chagrin. He could not help but take a step back as he wondered how long it would take for Buck Tooth to give up.

He did not feel like Buck Tooth would be able to get the soul crystal like Francis did. After all, they were not on the same level. Buck Tooth was not as strong as Francis, and the soul crystal should not be weaker than the one earlier, too.

Chapter 2569
Francis had only managed to shatter the outer shell of the soul crystal right when he was about to run out of strength. If he had expended all his true energy without being able to shatter the outer shell, Francis would have no other option but to give up.

That would mean that Francis would get nothing out of visiting the Soul Grotto.

After all, they were only allowed to enter the grotto once a month, and they were not allowed to stay for more than a day each time. Under all those restrictions, failure would mean giving up until the next chance.

Obviously, Buck Tooth knew he would gain nothing if he failed, and that was why he would use everything he could. He made the preparations for a long battle.

“You’re all terribly stubborn, really,”

sighed the white-haired man. “Can’t you just choose a smaller soul crystal? Even though the effects of absorbing a large soul crystal are much better than a small one, don’t forget to work within what you’re capable of. If you try to take on too much, you might end up with nothing!”

Even though Jackie did not like that whitehaired man that much, he had to admit that the man still had a point. Even if they wanted to fight for it, they needed to have the skills.

Retreating and choosing something they were capable of would be the right choice. However, Buck Tooth was too riled up by Francis’ achievement and was brimming with confidence, which led him to choose a soul crystal much like the one Francis had chosen.

After the white-haired man spoke, there was a clamor of discussion among

“I think he’s an elder disciple. Does anyone remember his name?”

“I don’t, but he looks familiar. He must’ve been brought under the wing of an elder, but even if he’s an elder’s own disciple, he doesn’t look like he has that much talent. He doesn’t seem that smart either, so I doubt he’ll amount to much in the future.”

After hearing that, Jackie had a strange look on his face. Normally, an elder disciple was ranked higher than an inner disciple. After all, being accepted by an elder to be a personal disciple was proof of a certain amount of skill.

However, listening to the people around him, it seemed like being an elder disciple was nothing noteworthy. They seemed to look down on that elder disciple.

As his thoughts wandered, Jackie heard a set of urgent footsteps from nearby.

Turning around, he saw someone rushing in from outside. He looked over and heard someone softly calling out, “Alex.”

Alex Sharp nodded as he wiped away the sweat on his forehead. It seemed like he had run over.

Alex's eyes fell on Buck Tooth. When he saw Buck Tooth battling away, he frowned somewhat unhappily.

After that, he looked at Jackie. When he saw the badge on Jackie's chest as well as his alchemist attire, he immediately knew Jackie's status.

He could not help but say, "Why is an alchemist here?"

The mild displeasure was evident in Alex's words. It was as if Jackie, despite just standing nearby, was wrong.

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation, not saying anything.

Alex did not hold back as he continued, "Mr. Alchemist, this isn't somewhere for the likes of you. Other than wasting time, it's pointless for you to stand there. I have an urgent matter I need to attend to. Give me your spot."

Chapter 2570
Jackie was irked to hear Alex's words. He had thought that his clothes and the badge on his chest would have brought him a lot of conveniences. At the very least, he would not invite that much trouble.

After all, alchemists were held with high regard by warriors. He could give the fighters various benefits, after all, so regular warriors would not offend alchemists.

Jackie had queued up according to the rules and never intended on troubling anyone else at all. He should have been able to peacefully obtain his soul stone, but he never expected another troublesome matter to pop up so quickly.

He did not know Alex, but judging Alex's temperament as well as the slightly respectful tone others seemed to refer to Alex with, Alex must not be a small figure.

However, Jackie did not care who Alex was at all. He was already impatient from all the waiting. How could he just give up his spot?

His expression was somewhat frosty. "No," he replied, and even calmly at that. There was no explanation to his words, and he merely conveyed his intentions.

When Alex heard Jackie's clear rejection, his face suddenly froze. He did not seem to believe that someone would dare say that to him and deny him so easily.

Alex stood a few meters away from Jackie. "Do you think you're that great just because you're an alchemist? Do you know who I am? You dare deny me like that?"

No one expected that Alex would be infuriated by Jackie so quickly after entering.

Jackie seemed to have quite the temper. No matter who it was, Jackie did not seem to hold back on his words when he was unhappy.

The white-haired man had thought that Jackie dared talk that way earlier because the white-haired man was not talented enough, but it seemed like Jackie did not care who he was talking to or how strong they were.

As long as he was offended, he would stand his ground and retaliate!

After Jackie heard Alex's words, he smirked and said bluntly, "I don't care who you are."

Even if it was the emperor, anyone who caused Jackie trouble would be met with the same treatment. Alex became so enraged that he glared at Jackie venomously.

Jackie was used to that expression, however. Everyone who wanted to get rid of him or cause him trouble would always look at him like that.

Jackie had long since gotten immune to those stares. Even if they fought right at that moment, Jackie would not be scared at all.

"Don't think that you can show off in front of us just because you're an alchemist. Alchemists are valuable, but Phoenix Valley has alchemists everywhere. One or two dead alchemists won't make a difference!"

Alex's tone was incredibly threatening, but it did not even make Jackie raise an eyebrow. It seemed like Alex must have been a bully for a long time. Otherwise, he would not have been able to say something like that.

Jackie merely sported a small smile as he fearlessly responded, "Don't talk as if something heinous has been done. You're the shameless one who wanted to take my spot. You're unhappy that you were rejected, but you make yourself seem so noble."

"You…!" Alex was so furious both his hands started to shake. It seemed like he wanted to rush forward and choke Jackie at that moment.

Jackie pursed his lips nonchalantly; he had no plans of entertaining Alex.

However, Alex did not relent as he demanded, "I'll give you one last chance. Give me your spot, or I'll put you through hell!"

It was the same words and the same threatening tone as usual. Jackie seemed to hear something like that once every month. Jackie raised an eyebrow as he nodded very solemnly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2571 - 2575

Chapter 2570

Jackie was irked to hear Alex's words. He had thought that his clothes and the badge on his chest would have brought him a lot of conveniences. At the very least, he would not invite that much trouble.

After all, alchemists were held with high regard by warriors. He could give the fighters various benefits, after all, so regular warriors would not offend alchemists.

Jackie had queued up according to the rules and never intended on troubling anyone else at all. He should have been able to peacefully obtain his soul stone, but he never expected another troublesome matter to pop up so quickly.

He did not know Alex, but judging Alex's temperament as well as the slightly respectful tone others seemed to refer to Alex with, Alex must not be a small figure.

However, Jackie did not care who Alex was at all. He was already impatient from all the waiting. How could he just give up his spot?

Advertisement

His expression was somewhat frosty. "No," he replied, and even calmly at that. There was no explanation to his words, and he merely conveyed his intentions.

When Alex heard Jackie's clear rejection, his face suddenly froze. He did not seem to believe that someone would dare say that to him and deny him so easily.

Alex stood a few meters away from Jackie. "Do you think you're that great just because you're an alchemist? Do you know who I am? You dare deny me like that?"

No one expected that Alex would be infuriated by Jackie so quickly after entering.

Advertisement

Jackie seemed to have quite the temper. No matter who it was, Jackie did not seem to hold back on his words when he was unhappy.

The white-haired man had thought that Jackie dared talk that way earlier because the white-haired man was not talented enough, but it seemed like Jackie did not care who he was talking to or how strong they were.

As long as he was offended, he would stand his ground and retaliate!

After Jackie heard Alex's words, he smirked and said bluntly, "I don't care who you are."

Even if it was the emperor, anyone who caused Jackie trouble would be met with the same treatment. Alex became so enraged that he glared at Jackie venomously.

Jackie was used to that expression, however. Everyone who wanted to get rid of him or cause him trouble would always look at him like that.

Jackie had long since gotten immune to those stares. Even if they fought right at that moment, Jackie would not be scared at all.

“Don’t think that you can show off in front of us just because you’re an alchemist. Alchemists are valuable, but Phoenix Valley has alchemists everywhere. One or two dead alchemists won’t make a difference!”

Alex’s tone was incredibly threatening, but it did not even make Jackie raise an eyebrow. It seemed like Alex must have been a bully for a long time. Otherwise, he would not have been able to say something like that.

Advertisement

Jackie merely sported a small smile as he fearlessly responded, “Don’t talk as if something heinous has been done. You’re the shameless one who wanted to take my spot. You’re unhappy that you were rejected, but you make yourself seem so noble.”

“You…!” Alex was so furious both his hands started to shake. It seemed like he wanted to rush forward and choke Jackie at that moment.

Jackie pursed his lips nonchalantly; he had no plans of entertaining Alex.

However, Alex did not relent as he demanded, “I’ll give you one last chance. Give me your spot, or I’ll put you through hell!”

It was the same words and the same threatening tone as usual. Jackie seemed to hear something like that once every month. Jackie raised an eyebrow as he nodded very solemnly.

Chapter 2571
“If you have the skills, then by all means show me your hell.”

Lou had explained the rules of Soul Grotto in great detail. The whole place was meant solely for soul attribute warriors to train, not a place for people to duke it out.

Guards stood on patrol outside at every moment, and the moment anything happened that involved two parties, they would immediately be punished and get dragged to the elders to be dealt with. By then, nothing would clear their name no matter what they said.

Alex, of course, knew this, hence why he refrained himself, and Jackie could tell. Alex stared at him so spitefully yet wordlessly. He turned to look at Buck Tooth, wondering when Buck Tooth would give up.

Alas, Alex had already snapped at that point. In just a moment, Alex's voice could be heard again, remarking determinedly, "You're an alchemist. How talented can you possibly be in martial arts? You probably can't even get the smallest soul crystal!"

It was as if he knew everything there was to know about Jackie.

Jackie sighed helplessly, not even bothering to turn his head around as he said, "And how would you know about my skills? You don't even know what realm I'm in, but you so casually cast your judgment upon me. Aren't you being too presumptuous?"

Jackie intentionally left a scar untreated to hide his power. Those who tried to evaluate his strength would not be able to find anything out, and no one present could tell what level he was at. Only he knew that he had already broken through to the spring solidifying realm.

There was no one present who was at the innate stage; they were all already at the

spring solidifying realm. Some of them were at the initial stage while some were at the middle stage.

What puzzled Jackie was the fact that the man behind him was only at the middlestage of the spring solidifying realm. Based on his strength, he should not be so respected by everyone around him.

Pushing that thought aside, Jackie was sure that Alex must have immense talent despite not having astounding power. Alex was likely a warrior that could challenge those at a higher realm. This was why everyone seemed to hold Alex with high regard when talking to him.

"I can't tell what level you're at, but it doesn't stop me from seeing what realm you're at. If you're even above the innate level, I'll take up your family name!" snapped Alex, the vicious determination in his voice not wavering.

It was as if he would push for it even if Jackie

did not want it.

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly as he looked at Alex in disdain. After thinking about it, he felt like Alex's obstinate stance was not entirely unreasonable.

After all, alchemy required a lot of time, and they were normally talentless in martial arts. On top of that, they focused on alchemy and would not have time to spare on martial arts. Their strength, naturally, would not be that high.

All of them were masters sent in from their respective clans, and being able to become an inner disciple was proof of their power.

“This buck-toothed man will fail in no time at all, and by then, you’ll find out how strong you are then. You’d do well to reevaluate the trash you’ve been spouting.”

Alex was incredibly confident in his own skills and talents. He felt that Jackie was no

different from a degenerate.

The Soul Grotto was different from anywhere else. Benefitting from the place first required immense skill, and that was something everyone present knew.

Chapter 2572
Buck Tooth’s eyes narrowed at those words. There he was, exerting all he could to obtain a soul crystal, yet someone had cursed him to fail. Buck Tooth gritted his teeth as he said, “Alex, what do you mean by that? You might be incredibly talented, but does that give you the right to curse people?”

Alex snorted as he casually replied, “Am I not allowed to speak the truth? If you have the skills, prove it to me. From the moment I’ve entered, you haven’t even made a crack, so how could you even have the gall to say that?”

Buck Tooth’s face reddened at this, his neck straining as his chest started to heave. If he had not managed to maintain his composure, he would have wasted all his past efforts by trying to attack Alex. He wanted nothing more than to face Alex and make him eat his words.

Sure, he might not be able to defeat Alex, but it would release him from his anger, at least.

Alex might not have said such harsh words had it not been for Jackie’s words. Even though he was talented and strong, he could not afford to offend everyone. Jackie’s words voided Alex from any other emotion apart from anger.

With that, Alex narrowed his eyes as he pointed at Buck Tooth.

“This guy is already at the spring solidifying realm, and his technique is a lower stage Earth technique. Even then, he can’t shatter the outer shell of the soul crystal. Do you think you’re stronger than him?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not answering immediately. Buck Tooth was in the same realm as him, but the techniques they trained in were worlds apart. Jackie had an upper ultimate god level technique, while Buck Tooth was far lower in the spectrum.

An ultimate god level technique was more than just a little better than an earth rank one. Some people were unable to use ultimate god rank techniques even at the divine solidifying realm, let alone an upper rank one.

After all, training in high level techniques required one to be compatible with the techniques in the first place. Even with the relevant strength, they would need to encounter problems before they can understand it.

However, that did not apply to Jackie.

After all, he had absorbed the memories of the ancient warrior, and that warrior had already understood all there was to understand. There were no bottlenecks to speak of, so all Jackie needed to do was to advance, and he would complete his training.

Alex's tone was even more arrogant when Jackie said nothing. "Do you have nothing else to say? Stop being so stubborn, why don't you. You're only at the innate level. You can't do anything in this grotto.

"I don't even think that you're even at the late stage of the innate level. You're probably only at the early stage. After all, you're still young, and alchemists roughly in your level are all only at the innate stage of the innate level," rambled Alex, not holding back his assumptions on Jackie. He truly believed in his guesses, too.

Even though he could not see through Jackie's strength for some reason, his past experience told him that this rascal could not be over the late stage of the innate realm. He was probably only at the early stage.

A person at the early stage innate level was merely an ant in Alex's eyes. Even a beast on Yorn Mountain was far stronger.

Even though the guy knew some soul attribute technique or skill, it could still not change Alex's impression.

Furthermore, he was incredibly furious at Jackie. Jackie blatantly disregarded him and his words, and it made him hate Jackie with a burning passion.

How could he possibly think that Jackie was stronger than he thought?

Jackie shrugged as he looked at Alex helplessly. "Don't cast judgment upon others with your meager knowledge. Are alchemists not allowed to be at the spring solidifying realm?"

“Of course they can, but the alchemists at the spring solidifying realm all managed to get there thanks to pills and medicines,” retorted Alex arrogantly. “They wouldn’t be able to stand up against any actual attacks!”

Chapter 2573
Alex did not stop as he continued, his anger breaching its threshold, “They need decades before they can reach the spring solidifying realm. I can’t see through your strength, but I can tell how old you are. At your age, it’s already impressive if you’re at the early stage of the innate level!”

Everything Jackie had said felt like a direct slap to the face, thus fueling his rage.

Alex was so talented that he had always been showered with praise, and even those who did not praise him for his talent would still treat him respectfully. They would never speak to him like Jackie did.

Alex took a deep breath. “You rascal! This is the first time I’ve ever seen someone who dared talk to me like this. You genuinely don’t know your place! Don’t think you can stand up to me just because you’re an alchemist?

“Alchemists are just a group of useful people. Since you insist on being obstinate, I’ll show you hell!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, his expression as passive as ever. “I’ve never felt like being an alchemist was a particularly noble profession.

“You were the one who started the challenge, and I countered it. If you feel like I bullied you because of that, then I don’t know how you even comprehend things!”

The highly regarded or talented people Jackie had met always had one thing in common: arrogance. They always believed everything should be handed to them on a silver platter.

If others did not give in to them, they would think that others were bullying them because they looked down on them. Those warriors who were average in talent would always try to avoid any trouble and not fight against them.

However, Jackie was not someone like that. As long as someone caused him trouble, he would retaliate with a force much stronger. After all, he knew that the other party would keep pushing his buttons if he remained passive.

Jackie’s words completely stumped Alex.

Despite everything that happened, Jackie was right. It was Alex who insisted on cutting the queue after entering the grotto. Jackie just did not want to give it to him.

That was how simple everything was.

The white-haired man merely sat on the mat and looked on at the scene. Earlier, Jackie had said some harsh words that had angered him, but that anger had dissipated at this point when Jackie lambasted Alex and said the things he had been holding to himself for many years. Alex had always stood above them because of his talent, and he would always ignore others with

everything he did.

He had experienced this before, much like how Alex aggressively approached Jackie. Even after obtaining something noteworthy, Alex mercilessly snatched it, and this had frustrated him for a long time.

With how Alex was suffering at that moment, he could no longer hold back his smile.

The men next to the white-haired man all opened their eyes as well. They stopped trying to absorb the soul crystals as they looked on at the commotion caused by the two of them.

“Break! Break for me!” Buck Tooth’s sudden shout attracted everyone’s attention.

At that moment, Buck Tooth was already at the brink of exhaustion. He constantly formed seal after seal as the black ax in the air constantly slashed at the soul crystal.

Chapter 2574
Nonetheless, the soul crystal’s outer shell was tough beyond comparison, so much so that it showed no signs of breaking even after Buck Tooth assailed it with his ax. Even Francis had put in so much work to obtain his soul crystal, but at least he showed progress.

Buck Tooth’s skills were no match for Francis, alas. Even after toiling for so long, nothing happened at all!

After frantically doing all he could, Buck Tooth’s true energy was completely exhausted.

He had no way of continuing. All he could do was stop before he collapsed on the ground and panted heavily. His head was completely wet in sweat.

Buck Tooth’s eyes were bloodshot; he seemed to have suffered a tremendous impact. He could not say anything for a long time, but everyone around him did not seem to pay much attention. All of them merely shook their heads silently and lamented Buck Tooth’s stubbornness.

He had made an empty trip this time and everyone had advised him to not aim too greatly in case he ended up with nothing, yet Buck Tooth had thought that he would be able to compete with Francis and chose a crystal about the size of Francis'.

Other than Alex, everyone sympathized with Buck Tooth. No one tried to mock him or agitate him, seeing how devastated he was. It was as if he had completely failed at everything in life.

Alex, however, was not so kind.

Alex had no way to vent his anger at that moment and merely grunted when he saw Buck Tooth. After that, he amusedly remarked, "I told you that you wouldn't be able to shatter the soul crystal, but you refused to believe me. Now, it slaps you right in the face. If you don't have the skill, then you don't have the skill. Aren't you too fragile if you can't even accept that?"

Buck Tooth's face soured at those words. Jackie even felt like Buck Tooth could even die at that moment.

Jackie frowned as he glanced at Alex, who seemed incredibly pleased with himself.

Jackie felt like Alex's mockery of Buck Tooth would not be limited to just that. Alex would definitely thoroughly embarrass Buck Tooth before he could feel good about himself.

The moment Alex tried to continue, Jackie suddenly turned to tell Buck Tooth, "It's alright, just take this as a lesson. Head back in to rest for now. You might be able to get this soul crystal next time."

Buck Tooth looked up at Jackie strangely. He never expected Jackie's consolation would even cure him of the awkwardness.

Buck Tooth nodded before he struggled to get up. He sat on a mat behind as he started to rest.

Alex's face darkened. "You're really not going to give in?"

Jackie could not be bothered to continue with Alex. "If you want to use force to solve the matter, then let's fight right now. Otherwise, just shut your mouth. Why would I give you my spot?"

Not wasting any more time, Jackie walked toward the edge of the cliff.

Alex wanted to say something to defend himself at that moment. Even though he did have an urgent matter to attend to, it was not something as pressing as he made it.

He had held onto his earlier position and still wanted Jackie to give his spot; it was merely to save some face. However, Jackie did not seem to care about him at all as Jackie remained unmoved, not giving way.

He raised his head and looked at the soul crystals that danced in the air, earnestly looking for his gold. The other two before him had already given him a great indication.

He estimated that he could handle most of the soul crystals.

Chapter 2575
Alex crossed his arms as he coldly stared at Jackie's back. "Since you're so stubborn, let's see if you can get even the smallest of all the soul crystals there.

"I've never seen an early innate level trash get a soul crystal my whole time here!"

Alex's words were incredibly harsh to the ear, but Jackie no longer cared about him. He focused all his attention on those soul crystals that floated in the air.

Jackie's actions from before attracted the attention of everyone present. Even Francis had temporarily stopped absorbing the soul crystal in his hand to look at Jackie in earnest.

They were curious to see if Jackie's gallantness was backed with actual strength. Even though no one there thought that Jackie was already at the spring solidifying realm, they still wanted to see

what level Jackie was at.

Jackie took a deep breath as gray seals started to condense between his constantly moving hands. Soul Swords the size of a palm started to form before him as they slowly moved into a formation that not many present could understand.

In a flash, 60 Soul Swords were condensed. Everyone stared in bewilderment as Jackie merged the 60 swords into one large one.

The moment the Soul Sword formed, Jackie widened his eyes abruptly. He immediately found his target as he pointed forward to a large soul crystal he had seized mid-air, and the soul crystal was even bigger than the one Francis had earlier.

After Jackie determined his target and stabilized the position of that soul crystal, everyone was stunned.

That soul crystal was even bigger than the one Francis had before. Jackie had determined his target. After he locked onto that soul crystal, everyone was stunned. They did not understand what Jackie was thinking. Was the guy just crazy, or was there

something wrong with his head? That soul crystal he aimed for was notably large! How could an alchemist like Jackie break it so easily?

Francis froze as he looked at the soul crystal he had in hand. Compared to the one Jackie had locked on to, he was sure that Jackie's was larger than the one he had!

It was about 20 percent larger!

"Are you that confident in yourself? Are you just showing off? Do you think that we'd think you're at the spring solidifying realm just by picking such a large soul crystal and launching a few fake attacks?" scoffed Alex, who still stood behind Jackie.

At that moment, Alex no longer took Jackie seriously. Earlier, he had thought that Jackie was just overly proud and unwilling to fight

too much with him, but it seemed like he had overestimated Jackie.

Picking out such a large soul crystal must be for the purpose of putting on a mere show!

The more Alex thought about it, the more amused he became. Even the white-haired man and the others all looked at Jackie with helpless and strange expressions.

"Are you trying to compete against me?" blurted Francis. "Why did you pick one bigger than mine?"

Francis had a point, the white-haired man thought to himself. Jackie must have chosen such a large one for the sake of crystal all for the sake of wanting to leave an impression.

On the other hand, Buck Tooth looked at Jackie sympathetically. He wanted to tell Jackie to not exert so much effort to show off. It was more important to reap genuine benefits.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2576

Chapter 2576
Regardless of the annoyance, Jackie closed himself off from what the others behind him were saying. He concentrated solely on his hands and pressed onward.

The soul sword swung forth and, following the sound of a gust, aimed straight for the soul crystal!

An upper ultimate god rank technique was not something an earth rank technique could ever compete with. On top of that, Jackie was already at the second stage of Destroying the Void and was not far away from the third.

A massive Soul Sword composed of 60 Soul Swords rammed into the outer shell of the soul crystal with an unrivaled force. Soon after, the unmistakable sound of something cracking could be heard as everyone witnessed the soul crystal's shell starting to shatter.

The cracks spread across the soul crystal's surface, and not a minute later, the outer shell fell apart, and a golden bright light revealed itself, to everyone's obvious surprise.

Everyone gaped at Jackie as they inhaled sharply, while Alex was rendered utterly speechless.

Advertisement

His jaw hung low as he stared dumbfoundedly at the soul crystal which already had its shell shattered. With a wave of Jackie's hand, the soul crystal was summoned onto his hand, and a cold sensation greeted his palm.

The soul crystal had a vibrant golden yellow glow after it shed its outer shell. It looked like a gold piece that glinted under the sun, and Jackie could not even fully hold it in one hand. Thus, he reached out his other hand and held it with both.

He tried lifting the crystal that pulsed with energy a little and found it was rather

heavier than he thought it would be.

Advertisement

The crystal was nothing short of wonder.

Jackie did not know how much his skills would increase after absorbing it. He furrowed his eyebrows as he looked up at the other soul crystals-about 300 of them -still afloat in the air.

“This is too small,” lamented Jackie as he sighed.

The dark aura behind him intensified soon after, but Jackie was not tooting his horn whatsoever; he was just truthfully speaking his mind.

He never expected the outer shell of the soul crystal to be so easily shattered after he used his full strength. The shell was something that could withstand a lot of punishment. It meant that he could actually have challenged an even larger soul crystal.

In the end, Jackie had been too careful. He knew that he was stronger than everyone present, but he did not know how greater in strength that meant.

To prevent something like what had happened to Buck Tooth from happening, he had chosen one which he was more sure of. However, he never expected to manage to get the soul crystal so easily, and while it surprised Jackie, he could not help the regret that bothered him.

“Who are you?!” demanded Alex, who stood behind Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not even bothering to turn his head around as he responded, “Does it matter who I am? I’ve told you before to not judge others with your narrow eyes. You can’t tell how strong I am because you are not strong enough to!”

Advertisement

If Alex was at the divine solidifying realm, he would have been able to see through Jackie’s strength even if Jackie had deliberately left behind some injuries. In the eyes of the strong, there were no lies.

His words had not been meant to deliberately insult Alex, but Alex’s expression changed the moment he heard Jackie’s remark.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2577

Chapter 2577
“You deliberately toyed with me!” snarled Alex. “You’re already at least at the middle stage of the spring solidifying realm, yet you hid your power to toy with me!”

Alex grew more infuriated as he recalled everything. Whatever he had said to Jackie came back to bite him, and there was no way Alex could accept that.

He had never been so humiliated before.

Both his hands trembled slightly as he pointed at Jackie. “You’re despicable! You held back for so long just to make a joke out of me!”

Jackie's lips twitched at Alex's words, and he could not help but wonder what went through his head. He did not think that way at all, yet this vermin managed to twist it. around to fit his narrative.

It was as if he had deliberately hid his strength just to make a joke out of that guy!

Advertisement

Everyone around them started to look over at them.

Even though they did not say anything, it was obvious from their expressions that they agreed with what Alex said. They felt like Jackie had deliberately hid his strength just to make a joke of Alex.

Jackie took a deep breath as his lips curled up into a smirk. "Can you stop making such a big deal out of yourself? The reason I hadn't revealed my strength is that I've sustained a few internal injuries; you just don't have the skills to see through it.

"Do you think I would've even bothered talking to you if you hadn't run your mouth like that? You were the one making assumptions, saying that I was only at the early stage of the innate realm. I've never said that my strength is already at the spring solidifying realm. I never spoke about it before merely because I couldn't be bothered talking to you!"

Advertisement

Not bothering to spare Alex another glance, Jackie immediately made his way to the mats ahead, planning on absorbing the soul crystal on the spot. Nonetheless, he was not sure if he could finish absorbing it that day.

Alex was rooted on the spot. The expression on his face was quite interesting as it constantly changed. Meanwhile, the whitehaired man and the others who sneered and threw jokes stared curiously at Jackie in a new light.

The white-haired man was a huge gossiper. The others were able to hold back, but he was not able to stop himself for that long.

He coughed lightly before he said in an earnest tone,"Are you really an alchemist?"

Jackie frowned. "Isn't that obvious? Do you think I stole these alchemist robes?"

Those words stumped the white-haired man for a good moment. The white-haired man's face froze as his lips twitched helplessly, rather irked by Jackie's straightforwardness, but he no longer dared to test Jackie's patience.

After all, Jackie was someone who seemed to have talent in martial arts and was proficient at alchemy. He could not offend someone like that.

Jackie was a true prodigy. The white-haired man had also been a prodigy where he came from, but Phoenix Valley was a place where masters gathered. He was no longer that special after he arrived here, and he had learned to reign his pompous self.

“I’ve just never seen an alchemist who is talented in martial arts as well. After all, we all know that people who were good at martial arts would typically never choose to be an alchemist.

Advertisement

“Having the skills to fight is the most important thing. Alchemists are respected, but it’s not an easy path to walk. They need to spend a lot of time on alchemy and might not even be rewarded for their efforts.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2578

Chapter 2578
The white-haired man’s words reflected how inquisitive and solemn he was. He truly wondered why Jackie would choose to be an alchemist if he was talented enough to break through to the spring solidifying realm at his age. After all, the white-haired man felt like it was not an easy path to take.

Alchemists were no doubt respected, but the path was fraught with various difficulties. It was much more difficult to tread than the path of martial arts.

Some alchemists were never able to even become seventh-grade alchemists for their entire lives, thus practicing martial arts were worth it all as compared to alchemy. That was one of the reasons why high-level alchemists were so rare.

Jackie stared at the white-haired man. There had been some things he had not been planning to say, but the white-haired man did not seem willing to relent at all, so he felt like he had to explain.

“I never gave up on either side. Otherwise, I would never have come to Soul Grotto.”

The white-haired man’s lips froze before he asked again, “I still don’t understand. The path of being an alchemist seems really hard to me.

Advertisement

“If you want to become a high-level alchemist, expect to be spending loads of time and resources. You won’t just need to be incredibly familiar with knowledge of the various materials; you’ll also need to constantly refine pills.”

The white-haired man knew quite a few alchemists, which was why he knew how much effort and resources were needed to become a successful alchemist. After all, refining a pill was not something easy.

One needed to go through hundreds of failures before being able to succeed, and increasing one's proficiency as an alchemist was even harder. He had many friends that were stuck at the sixth-grade level, even after over ten years of practice. Becoming a seventh-grade alchemist seemed like an impossible goal to them.

Even in Phoenix Valley, seventh-grade alchemists were incredibly well-respected. After all, seventh-grade alchemists were not easy to find.

Advertisement

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation. Thinking deeper into this, he knew why the white-haired man was so shocked.

After all, the fact that he had arrived at this stage was not because of any amazing talents; it was because he had fused with memories from past warriors. Things that many people needed tremendous amounts of time to understand came easy to Jackie.

He never needed to spend hours working on this.

Jackie turned toward the white-haired man and, with formalcy, replied, "With enough talent, you'll never need to give up one for the sake of the other."

Even though there was a hint of self-praise there, it was the only way to explain what Jackie was going through. When the whitehaired man heard this, however, his face soured.

The white-haired man felt like he was trash compared to Jackie. Not only was Jackie already accomplished as an alchemist, but he was no worse as a warrior as well. Compared to that, he was not even that spectacular when it came to being a warrior.

It was incredibly infuriating comparing himself to others.

Francis looked at Jackie in envy. "Geniuses exist just to infuriate us commoners. I have nothing to say about the fact that you can be both altogether."

Everyone nodded at Francis' words. They had never heard of someone who could get everything like Jackie.

Advertisement

"Who are you?! Answer my question!" Alex's shout was heard once again.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he looked at Alex unpleasantly. He had not wanted to get into a conflict with that guy. True, they had an argument, but it was nothing major.

As long as Alex could shut his mouth, he could not be bothered about the guy. It was just his luck that Alex would hound after him in such a bitter manner.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2579

Chapter 2579
Jackie raised an eyebrow at Alex. “Are you deaf? Did you not hear what I said to you? What does who I am have to do with you?”

Alex’s eyes reddened as Jackie’s words assailed his ears. With that, he marched toward Jackie and walked right up to him.

That stance made the white-haired man step back in fright. He was afraid that Alex would not be able to hold back from attacking Jackie right then and there, and he did not want to be involved whatsoever.

Thankfully, Alex’s last shred of reason managed to stop him from doing that. He merely looked at Jackie with a look that showed just how unhinged he was, like he nearly broke mentally. He looked like he wanted nothing more than to see past Jackie’s skin and into his inner thoughts.

Jackie, on the other hand, stood perfectly still with a frown on his face. He watched as Alex stormed right before him and quietly anticipated his next move.

What shocked Jackie was the fact that Alex actually turned and headed out of the cave after a while. Jackie stared as Alex’s figure faded from view.

Advertisement

Alex seemed like he had gone crazy. Alex looked like he had made up his mind right before he turned and walked away.

“That terrified me,” spoke the whitehaired man, sounding evidently nervous. “I thought Alex would just come up and beat you without regard to the punishment!”

Jackie frowned. His mind paused at the image of how resolved Alex had looked right before he stopped. That guy had clearly made up his mind about something, and Jackie just did not know what it was.

He let out a sigh before he said, “Things would be much easier if he had just attacked me. It would’ve proven that he’s just a mindless idiot. The fact that he managed to hold back means he’s still somewhat intelligent.”

Advertisement

The ones on the mats exchanged looks with each other. They had witnessed everything that happened, and from their expressions, everyone had also realized that Alex turning around like that was not because Alex had no answer to everything and left in defeat.

Alex must have had a plan.

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he wiped away all these irrelevant thoughts. All he wanted to do was to absorb the soul crystal and increase his strength, and only by becoming stronger would things be easier for him.

He would not have to worry about being stopped by others.

Jackie shut his eyes before he placed his

hand on the soul crystal. A suction power came from his hand as the power of the soul crystal started to surge into Jackie's body.

A surge of pure soul energy spread across Jackie's entire being after he absorbed it. His hands constantly moved as they formed seal after seal. The powers of Destroying the Void revolved around Jackie for a few times before he started to condense Soul Swords once.

He did not know how many Soul Swords he could form in a day or how long he needed to completely absorb the soul crystal. Nonetheless, Jackie did not bother thinking about any of that at that moment.

The dense aura constantly moved within Jackie's body. It was as if Jackie had seen a bottomless barrel as he constantly absorbed the soul crystal.

Advertisement

After ten hours, 70 Soul Swords were neatly placed in front of Jackie. A crack was heard before the radiant golden light of the soul crystal started to disappear.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2580

Chapter 2580
After all its powers had been absorbed, the soul crystal lost all its support and fell apart like a rock by the road, crumbling into dust in Jackie's palm.

Jackie let out a deep sigh before he opened his eyes and looked down at the powdered soul crystal. An elated expression overtook his expression as he noted the 70 Soul Swords he had successfully condensed.

So long as he toiled, condensing 100 Soul Swords was only a matter of time. As long as he managed that, he would have officially mastered Destroying the Void.

Only then would Destroying the Void show its true power, and he truly wanted to see what an upper ultimate god rank technique could actually do!

“Congratulations, you’ve improved,” came the white-haired man’s voice.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. He had thought. that the man would have left as he was absorbing the soul crystal. He was shocked to notice that, when he looked up, not a single person had left other than Alex.

Advertisement

Everyone had been observing him and wide-eyed at that, as though they were staring at a rare creature.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. Did they have to stare at him so oddly like that?

The white-haired man took a deep breath before he summoned his courage. “What level is that technique of yours? Why can’t I see through it at all? I feel like the energy fluctuations aren’t that big.

“You used this technique to shatter the outer shell of the soul crystal earlier. It was incredibly strong, but why are the energy fluctuations so mellowed? I really don’t understand.”

Advertisement

Ultimate god level techniques all shared that unique trait. The calmer their energy

fluctuation, the more powerful they were. Of course, Jackie was not about to explain all of that; no one would believe it if he did.

Ultimate god level techniques were not something just anyone could learn. Unless Jackie was already at the divine solidifying realm, no one would believe him at all. Since that was the case, he could not be bothered explaining.

He sighed. “The technique I have is unique in this way. You can stop speculating about it.”

Jackie then stood up from the mat and looked over at the soul crystals that were still dancing around in the Grotto. He promised himself that he would get the biggest one in a month’s time.

When the white-haired man noticed that Jackie was about to leave, he immediately stood up. He could have left Soul Grotto long ago, but he intentionally waited longer due to the questions that plagued him greatly. He wanted to wait for Jackie to finish his training before asking about everything.

He never expected that Jackie would not be bothered to explain at all.

The white-haired man chased after Jackie. “Surely your technique isn’t an upper earth rank technique?”

Jackie sported a small smile when he heard that but did not answer the white-haired man, merely continuing to walk forward. The moment he walked out of the transfer array to where the alchemists were, he immediately noticed Rudy right beside the array.

Advertisement

Jackie frowned. Whenever he saw Rudy, he would think of Grayson, and those chaotic thoughts would immediately surface in his mind. He did not know what Grayson’s situation was at that moment nor did he know why they took Grayson.

When Rudy saw the transfer array lighting

up, he widened his eyes. He excitedly looked at the transfer array, and when Jackie’s figure appeared, he rushed right over.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2581

Chapter 2581
“You’re finally back! If Lou hadn’t told me, I wouldn’t have known where you went!” exclaimed Rudy emotionally.

Jackie helplessly pursed his lips. Ever since what happened to Grayson, Rudy had basically become a lost puppy that always seemed to want to go wherever Jackie went.

Jackie did not want that at all.

Jackie frowned and said, “I have my own plans on where I want to go. Why are you here? Did something happen?”

Rudy nodded. After taking a few deep breaths, he composed himself before he said, “If you weren’t back now, I would’ve gone to look for you. We’ll be going to Holy Cloud Mountain this evening.”

Jackie was stunned for a moment after hearing that. He did not know how to react

Advertisement

for a moment. Where was this Holy Cloud Mountain?

Just by glancing at Jackie, he knew that Jackie had definitely forgotten about it.

He pursed his lips in exasperation. “How could you forget? Elder Eliot announced three days ago that all the alchemists would be transferred to the Holy Cloud Mountain to pick up medicinal materials, didn’t he?”

With Rudy’s words, Jackie finally recalled what had happened three days ago. Elder Eliot had summoned all the alchemists to the Elder Hall for a meeting, announcing that they would head to the Holy Cloud Mountain in three days.

Advertisement

The Holy Cloud Mountain was an incredibly important place to Phoenix Valley. There were no violent fiends there, and medicinal materials were plentiful. Every once in a while, Phoenix Valley would gather all the alchemists there to collect materials.

It was something of an added benefit to alchemists because the materials gathered there would all belong to the alchemists themselves.

Nonetheless, Holy Cloud Mountain was incredibly large. It was up to themselves if they could find anything valuable.

He still remembered how excited all the alchemists were when Elder Eliot announced this. Everyone felt like they would surely be able to get something incredibly valuable on Holy Cloud Mountain.

Jackie nodded as he gratefully responded, “Thankfully, I came in time. I really forgot about it.”

Rudy pursed his lips in exasperation as he pointed at the Elder Hall. “Let’s hurry up. We’ll probably have to gather soon.”

Jackie nodded as he headed toward the Elder Hall.

Rudy had a dark look on his face, and it was obvious how worried he was. Noticing this expression, Jackie asked Rudy, “Why are you so worried? Didn’t we talk about it before? Even though we don’t know how Grayson is right now, we should be safe for the time being. Don’t think too much about it. As long as we don’t do anything too overboard, they shouldn’t cause us any trouble.”

Rudy could only muster a wane smile at Jackie’s words as he then turned to look at Jackie in admiration. “I’m a narrow-minded person, unlike you. This has always been bugging me. I can’t even breathe, what with the thought weighing me down like a massive rock. It’s even been keeping me up at night.

Advertisement

“I can’t figure out why Grayson is the only one who disappeared after what all the three of us experienced. What did he do that we don’t know about? What made him get taken away?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2582

Chapter 2582
Jackie irritatedly raised an eyebrow at Rudy’s questions, the same ones that had floated in his mind for a long time. He concluded that he would not be able to get a clear answer to Grayson’s situation, so he threw the thought to the back of his mind for the moment.

There was no evidence, and they had no way of getting any evidence. There was no way to figure out the truth, so anything they tried to figure things out would only be speculation.

Since there was no way to gain anything, it was better to not let it disrupt his mood. With that thought in mind, Jackie decided to stop thinking about it.

True to his word, Rudy remained internally frantic, a great contrast to Jackie. Grayson’s disappearance had loomed over him like a ghost, and the more he tried to figure out

what had happened to him, the less he understood. He did everything he could to find the answers, but what greeted him were more and more riddles.

Jackie stopped in his tracks and turned to look at Rudy seriously. “You won’t be able to figure this out, so it’ll be in your best interest to just stop troubling yourself over it now. All you need to know is that you won’t be in danger for the moment.”

Advertisement

Rudy’s lips twitched, wanting to say something else but swallowing his words after some thought.

The two of them continued on their walk before eventually, they reached the square in front of the Elder Hall where about 80 to 90 people were already there, either chatting among their own groups about the trip or resting.

They talked about what sort of materials they would be able to obtain on the Holy Cloud Mountain, and how many spirit

crystals they would be able to get from it.

Advertisement

To keep the alchemists happy, Phoenix Valley would occasionally give them some benefits. Sometimes, they would allow all the alchemists in the outer valley of Phoenix Valley to head to Holy Soul Mountain to pick medicines, and anything the alchemists picked up would be for the alchemists themselves to take.

Other than that, they would also invite high-level alchemists to answer any questions from the alchemists in Phoenix Valley. They could also use their results to redeem free materials for practice.

Jackie felt like all the benefits Phoenix Valley gave were very deliberate. Anything that was free or not were all given after very careful consideration.

They would not provide free materials for all the alchemists because they would not be able to make ends meet if they did.

After all, there were too many alchemists. They needed a lot of practice, and they would use up a lot of materials if the materials were just given for free. Their spirit crystals would rapidly plummet.

People often did not appreciate things that were free as well. If they used their own money for materials, they would be more careful when they were practicing and try to waste as little as possible. They would probably appreciate less if Phoenix Valley provided everything for free.

Rudy started to get excited while Jackie was thinking about everything. He looked around before he said, “I thought that Phoenix Valley would keep on pushing us, though. I never expected benefits like this. I might be able to get something amazing in Holy Cloud Mountain!”

The thought of finally showing up and showing off on Holy Cloud Mountain. inspirited Rudy, and he could barely contain his excitement. Jackie, on the other hand,nodded with a smile, not saying anything. He could already tell the Holy Cloud Mountain was a place to be.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2583

Chapter 2583
Rudy finally had a better impression of Phoenix Valley because of that.

“I’ve already made some marks the last time I went to Holy Cloud Mountain, and I won’t go anywhere else this time. I’ll first find my mark and pick up some Wind Spirit Grass.”

“Why didn’t you pick it up last time? Why did you have to wait for this time? It hasn’t been that long, do you think it would really get better in just a few months?”

“Do you have a brain? I made a mark and didn’t pick it last time because those guys were around. I noticed it at that time, but they didn’t. Don’t you think they would’ve snatched it from me had I taken it at that time?”

“That’s true… With how they are, the moment they find something good, they’ll try to take it for themselves. The Wind Spirit Grass is a seventh-grade medicine, and an upper-rank one at that. If they noticed it, they’d take it, whatever it may cost.”

The flurry of discussions had caught Jackie’s attention. He turned to look around to notice a few familiar faces. He had seen them in the Elder Hall before but did not know what they were called.

Advertisement

Rudy had naturally heard their exchanges as well. He frowned as he thought about it for a while before he whispered, “The conflicts happening here aren’t hidden at all. Those who think they are talented will just take things from others without bothering to hide it, and that’s a bother. Why do you think the elders just allow them to do anything they want to?”

Rudy got more frustrated the more he thought about it. No matter how he looked at it, he was at the end of the line in Phoenix Valley. In that case, if he picked up anything that was at a high level, it would be forcibly taken away by those who were talented if they noticed him.

They might not be that much stronger than Rudy in terms of martial arts, but they would no doubt try to push Rudy down with their power. Anyone who learned the Way of the Phoenix Pill thought they were better than all the others.

Furthermore, the whole Phoenix Valley supported that idea. After all, the Way of the Phoenix Pill was incredibly hard to understand and learn. Regular alchemists never even dared to try.

Advertisement

The Way of the Phoenix Pill was open to all in Phoenix Valley. Any alchemist was allowed to try to learn it, yet not many managed to learn it even though it was in the Elder Hall for all to see.

The harder a Way of the Pill was, the more potential a person had in alchemy if they mastered it; this was common knowledge.

Anyone who mastered the Way of the Phoenix Pill would at least become a seventh-grade alchemist. The power of ranks between alchemists was incredibly huge, and a seventh-grade alchemist could easily deal with a sixth-grade alchemist without any issues.

That was why alchemists who were not as talented would never dare cause trouble to those who were. Even if the talented ones looked for trouble, the non-talented ones would just have to tolerate it and suck it up. As long as the talented ones got what they wanted and were satisfied, they would leave.

Frustrated, Rudy looked up at Jackie. “If I had your talent and courage, I wouldn’t be so afraid or conflicted right now.”

Jackie glanced at Rudy and saw the frown on Rudy’s face. When he thought back to what the others were saying, he immediately knew why Rudy was so frustrated.

Jackie merely sighed; there were some problems that he just could not be solved.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2584

Chapter 2584
Rudy started to get frustrated as his face reddened. “What do you think the higher-ups are thinking? I refuse to believe they don’t know anything about these thieves operating right under them. We’re being bullied here! Can’t they stand up and say a thing or two or even take care of matters for us?”

Jackie looked at Rudy helplessly. Not wanting to have his ears filled with his complaints, he answered, “Can you just think about it? You’re asking why they aren’t caring about

anything, but don't you realize that the more they allow the infighting to continue, the more people would try to fight for themselves?

"Phoenix Valley gives every alchemist their own chances, but the reason they do that is to find more talented and stronger alchemists.

"They let the alchemists do what they want because they want to stir up the competitive spirits of regular alchemists. They want the alchemists to be frustrated so they'll put all their focus into alchemy. They want the alchemists to constantly want to improve so they'll get more higher-level alchemists. This will benefit Phoenix Valley even more, hence why they let such rivalries and conflicts persist."

Hearing Jackie's explanation, Rudy could only nod. Jackie made sense when he said that Phoenix Valley allowed those habits to cultivate even more alchemists.

They would not care if it was fair or not, because the world practiced the survival of the fittest only. There was no such thing as fairness.

Advertisement

The two that were standing in front of Jackie and Rudy got more and more excited as they discussed. They talked about various pills to the materials that they needed, and all the while, Jackie listened to the important points.

"It's been raining constantly the past few months, so the Flame Roots must've already matured. As long as we look around at the wetter areas, we should be able to pick up quite a few Flame Roots."

"Flame Roots are amazing things, and a mature Flame Root is incredibly valuable. There was a five-hundred-year Flame Root a few days ago sold for two thousand spirit crystals!"

The moment he heard that, the other guy's eyes widened. "Two thousand? Why has the price soared by so much? I saw someone selling Flame Roots before. A five a hundred-year-old flame root is already one of the best, but it was only worth a thousand and five hundred. How could it go up by so much?!"

Advertisement

"How could you ask that question? Haven't you heard about what happened before?" The moment the person finished, it was not

just the guy next to him to widen his eyes. Jackie and Rudy could not help but perk up their ears to listen to the explanation.

Unfortunately, the person suddenly pushed his voice down to a whisper, unwilling to let anyone else hear it. Jackie concentrated to listen in though only able to catch only a few words.

The other person said, “They’re already fighting outside. I don’t know when they’ll stop.”

That was massive news. Even though he could not get the details, Jackie could see how important the problem was. Ever since they entered Phoenix Valley, they had been completely separated from the outside world.

Jackie did not know what was happening in Middle Province. Even though Jackie was not tied that closely to the place, he felt like he would be in danger if he did not figure it out, especially after the ambush and Grayson’s disappearance,

Jackie took a deep breath, wondering if he should go to the individuals and inquire more about the situation. After all, the situation was already at that level, so it should not be a big issue for him to ask about it.

Just as he was preparing to ask the questions, Rudy suddenly whispered something to Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2585

Chapter 2585
“Those two guys have been looking at you the whole time, and I felt something was off from the start. When we first came over, he was only stealing glances at you, but now he’s staring at you really obviously.”

Surprised by this, Jackie turned to look at Rudy, who lightly coughed as he tilted his head to the side. Jackie thus averted his gaze and saw two familiar faces staring at him.

Harold and Johnson were staring at Jackie with widened eyes. Various emotions could be seen on their faces as they looked over at Jackie and Rudy. When Jackie looked over, the two of them averted their gazes at the same time, turning around as if nothing was happening.

Jackie frowned. He had been busy with other things as of late, while Harold and Johnson had both kept quiet and not caused him any trouble, so he had almost forgotten about what had happened between the two of them.

However, it seemed like he had thought too kindly of these two; Harold and Johnson probably did not have the right opportunity to cause him trouble. The hatred that practically burned in their eyes toward him was unmistakable, and Jackie could see it.

Rudy furrowed his eyebrows. “It looks like they’re going to cause you trouble, but I just don’t know how and what. I had thought that things would be peaceful after you slapped the two of them in the face with your skills.”

Advertisement

Jackie sighed lightly, “I did, too.”

After that, Jackie continued with a cold smile, “I thought of them too lightly. I thought that my display of skills had zipped them up entirely, but that seemed to be in vain after all.”

Rudy looked at Jackie with slight worry. “Will they pull a low blow? Should we prepare something? Maybe we should counterattack first?”

Jackie shook his head as he said calmly, “It’s pointless to do all of that; we just need to respond to anything that happens. Even if they want to cause me trouble, it’ll depend on if they have the skills to do so.”

Advertisement

Rudy nodded. He was quite confident in Jackie, but the moment he thought about Harold and Johnson’s gaze from earlier, Rudy felt incredibly uncomfortable.

Grayson’s riddle had already frustrated him enough, and with Harold and Johnson added into the mix, Rudy felt like Phoenix Valley was a vortex of trouble. He wanted nothing more than to leave.

“I think you can’t let them do as they please. I say you give them a lifelong lesson they won’t soon forget, and only then will they know you’re no pushover,” persisted Rudy as he rubbed his chin.

Jackie nodded. Jackie might think that Rudy was incredibly foolish when it came to other matters, but Rudy was spot on on this one. He could not show too much leniency to people like Harold or Johnson.

Only by showing them true fear would he be saved from trouble in the future.

With that in mind, Jackie started to think about how he would deal with both Harold and Johnson.

After Johnson and Harold averted their gazes, the two of them started to whisper to each other.

“Harold, do you think that person is reliable?” fretted Johnson. “An inner disciple might be strong, but he’s still an inner disciple in the end.

“Why don’t we spend a bit more money for a chosen disciple? That would guarantee

Advertisement

our success!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2586

Chapter 2586
Harold's eyebrow twitched as he looked at Johnson unhappily, and said, "Who do you think that guy is? Don't you know how strong an inner disciple is?

"We're just dealing with Jackie. Using a chosen disciple would be going way overboard. If we really did that, it would just be us regarding him too highly!"

Johnson's lips twitched helplessly as he nodded at Harold's words. However, Johnson was a hundred percent certain with everything.

He took a deep breath as he explained, "I know what you're thinking. Getting an inner disciple would normally be more than enough to deal with Jackie.

"After all, Jackie's just an alchemist, so there's no way he'll be stronger than an inner disciple. However, no matter what, we're taking a great risk this time. If this matter leaked out, we both know how heavily we would be punished.

"We would be doomed if that happened. We should be more careful just in case anything happens. Even if we have to spend a bit more money to get a chosen disciple, it would assure us that nothing would happen to us. It's not because we're overestimating him."

Advertisement

Harold frowned and said as he looked even unhappier, "Why are you always so soft with whatever you do? That brat is at the middle stage of the innate level at most.

"An inner disciple will at least already be at the spring solidifying realm. Do you know how big the difference between the innate realm and the spring solidifying realm is? Spring solidifying realm experts can kill an innate realm fighter with a mere pinch.

" Jackie's only at the early stage of the innate realm, or maybe the middle stage at most. With that level, he wouldn't be able to do

anything in front of a spring solidifying realm expert. He would be able to kill Jackie easily. Why would we need a chosen disciple that's even stronger? I really feel like you're getting dumber and dumber lately."

Advertisement

Johnson helplessly sighed again. He did not mean it that way, but there were some things that people would not understand even if he explained them. However, Johnson had always been incredibly careful. If they failed, it would not end well for both of them.

It was something that would tie into their future. Johnson could not help but reach out and grab Harold's arm as he said in an incredibly earnest tone, "I feel like we should get two, or at least one chosen disciple. We would be more secure then."

Harold rolled his eyes as he slapped Johnson's arm and replied, "Is there really something wrong with your head? Things are already at this stage, why would you want me to change my mind?

"Why didn't you tell me this a few days ago? We've already confirmed the person and he's already been sent over…"

Johnson's face darkened as he said, "He's already been sent over? How did this happen so fast? I thought that he would only go after we've already gone over… I mentioned it too late, but that's because you just told me everything just now." Harold's mouth stiffened as he realized it. He had been fervently arranging the matter the past few days, and Johnson had been busy refining pills. The two of them had not had any time to meet.

He had only told Johnson about the matter in the morning. He had forgotten to mention it as he was in a hurry.

Harold explained helplessly, "Of course, we should send him in first. Elder Eliot will definitely be waiting next to the transfer array after we head over. If he tried to

transfer over after that, wouldn't we be exposed? Do you think I'd be so dumb?"

Johnson slapped his forehead and replied, "That's true. It's my fault for not thinking it through. It seems like I really did speak up too late.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2587

apter 2587
After he said that, Johnson sighed helplessly. He had an incredibly worried expression on his face. Harold frowned as he looked at Johnson's expression. He got even angrier as he turned around and stared at Johnson coldly.

"Seriously, is there something wrong with your brain? What kind of amazing enemy do you think Jackie is? Do you think an inner disciple wouldn't be able to handle him?"

Johnson hurriedly shook his head as he said, "I don't mean it that way! It's just that the two of us are done for if this is exposed.

"That's why I wanted to look for someone who can take care of Jackie properly. I want him to die before he can even react!"

Harold rolled his eyes and replied, "Michael is in the top fifty of the inner disciples. An

innate stage alchemist couldn’t possibly cause him any trouble.

Advertisement

“Don’t worry, there won’t be any problems, and he won’t betray us. After all, if this matter is exposed, he would meet the same end like us.”

Johnson took a deep breath and replied, “I hope there won’t be any accidents.”

The two of them discussed between one another as Elder Eliot finally walked over from the Elder Hall. Elder Eliot’s face was red as he slowly walked down the steps.

He had an incredibly pleased expression as if something good had happened. When everyone saw how happy Elder Eliot was, they could not help but look at him with a curious gaze.

Advertisement

After Elder Eliot got off the stairs, he cleared his throat, “The time I set for everyone is now. Those who aren’t here will be disqualified. There’s no need to say anything else, come with me!”

After that, Elder Eliot turned around decisively. No one dared to utter another word at that moment as they all followed behind Elder Eliot. In just a moment, he arrived in front of a large seal array.

The array was the largest teleportation array Jackie had ever seen before. It was the size of half a basketball court back in Daxia. Even over a dozen people would not feel crowded standing there.

The array was filled with various seals that were glowing in different colors. There were many spirit crystals of various sizes on it. Elder Eliot pointed his finger at it and said, “This array can send twenty people in one go. All of you line up and don’t crowd around. You’ll all be sent to Holy Cloud Mountain. Let me explain some things in advance. The identification badges in your hands will be navigation badges in Holy Cloud Mountain.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he took out his identification badge. Elder Eliot paused for

a moment before saying, “After you are sent to Holy Cloud Mountain, you will have three days. You’re allowed to do anything you want in Holy Cloud Mountain for three days. No matter what you get, it will belong to you, but don’t try any petty movements.

As he said that, Elder Eliot had a very stern tone. After that, his sharp gaze swept over everyone present before he said, “In order to stop you from losing your way, your identification badges have been specially modified. The moment the time is up, the

identification badge will glow red. You just need to follow its instructions to return to the array.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2588

Chapter 2588
“Let me say this again. Don’t try to attempt any petty schemes. If I find out, you won’t be let off so easily.”

Jackie could hear what Elder Eliot meant by those words. It seemed like he was worried that some people would act wantonly in the absence of supervision.

His next words proved Jackie’s thoughts as he continued, “If anyone dies, the identification badge will notify me. I’ll be able to immediately determine where everyone is.

“Anyone who appears close to the dead person will be immediately investigated by me. No one will be able to escape! All of you are no stranger to my temper. I’d rather kill the wrong person than let that person go, so don’t you dare do anything of the psort!”

Even though alchemists were not as intense as martial artists since everyone had their focus on refining pills, their relationships with one another were not so harmonious.

Everyone had their own little thoughts. Some grudges between them were already at irreconcilable levels. Holy Cloud Mountain was massive and far away. The moment they enter, they would all be essentially unsupervised.

Advertisement

They could do whatever they wanted there. Phoenix Valley’s higher-ups must have figured out such a method to prevent any loss of an alchemist’s life due to grudges. The identification badges would be able to determine their positions and whether or not they were alive.

Rudy whispered into Jackie’s ear, “That’s a good method, but I’m still worried that those two will cause us trouble after going in there.”

That made Jackie frown speechlessly before

he asked, “Shouldn’t we be happy if the two of them come over to try and cause us trouble?”

Advertisement

Rudy immediately reacted when Jackie said that. Probably because of how long had passed, he had forgotten how strong the person next to him was.

Rudy could not hold himself back with that thought in mind as he let out a laugh. It immediately attracted the attention of everyone around them. Harold and Johnson looked over as well, which immediately caused Rudy to shut his mouth in fear. He no longer dared to be so excited.

After Elder Eliot read out all the rules, he started to arrange for everyone to get on the array. Jackie and Rudy were the third batch to get onto the array. Based on how long the transfer took, Jackie determined that Holy Cloud Mountain was definitely quite far away from Phoenix Valley.

It was a long-range transfer. If anything

unexpected happened and he needed to leave Phoenix Valley immediately, Holy Cloud Mountain would be a very good place to retreat to.

It was an incredibly wet forest. When they arrived at the place, a wave of humidity hit everyone. The humidity had an amount of heat to it and it assaulted their bodies. It made Jackie feel incredibly uncomfortable.

After getting off the array, everyone had sour looks on their faces. It was not the first time some of them were there, but they still felt incredibly uncomfortable.

Rudy frowned and cursed, “This place is so humid and wet. It feels like I just got thrown into a muddy river.”

Jackie nodded before he turned to look at the Holy Cloud Mountain, not saying anything.

Advertisement

“Let me follow you!” Rudy said from

behind.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and nodded. With Jackie’s personality, he would have preferred to be on his own, but Rudy would definitely not allow him to do so as he was incredibly afraid of dying at that moment.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2589

Chapter 2589
Once everyone had arrived at the Holy Cloud Mountain, Elder Eliot announced that they were free to do anything they wanted for the next three days. They would not be disturbed by anyone during that period.

After three days, they would all have to gather there. Everyone would be sent back to Phoenix Valley. Elder Eliot seemed to be worried that any accidents would happen, so he repeated it a few times.

After everyone promised that they would not do anything they should not, he let everyone leave.

Jackie did not delay things for a single moment before heading in a direction that not many have taken. Rudy followed closely behind him like an unshakeable tail.

The two of them walked deeper into Holy Cloud Mountain as they talked. Rudy was still hung up on Harold and Johnson, and whether or not they would try to pull any tricks.

“I’m still a bit worried. I feel like the two of them were looking at both of us really strangely earlier. It was as if they were about to get what they wanted. I’m getting goosebumps just thinking about it.”

Advertisement

Jackie nodded, “They’re allowed to think what they want to. As long as they dare to pull anything, they’ll be the ones to suffer.

“Holy Cloud Mountain must be really amazing if everyone reveres it so much. What we need to do right now is focus on collecting materials. We’ll definitely be able to profit a lot.”

Jackie’s thoughts were fully on spirit crystals at that moment. After gathering high leveled materials, he would definitely be able to get a lot of spirit crystals.

When Jackie advanced, he ascertained his own direction. He did not actually have a

Advertisement

goal at that moment. He merely did not want to go in the same direction as any last group. He felt like trouble always started when he met other alchemists.

It was better for him to travel where there were fewer people. Even though the place seemed more isolated, at least he would not get involved in any conflicts.

Rudy could not stop talking. Most of his focus was on Phoenix Valley and Grayson. What those two people were talking about earlier caused Rudy to wonder what was happening outside.

“I feel like something must definitely have happened, but I can’t seem to figure out what exactly it is. We all know what kind of a group the Middle Provine Alchemist Alliance is.

It’s been in the Middle Kingdom for so many years, what kind of group would dare to go against it?

“I really can’t figure out what happened outside. I’m really eager to leave this place right now. I feel like I’ve been in prison ever since I came to Phoenix Valley. It feels so uncomfortable.”

Jackie nodded. It was a problem that had been on his mind for a while. He did not have enough evidence, so he did not know if his speculations were accurate.

Rudy walked a few steps forward and said, “There’s been way too many weird things happening lately. Could Grayson’s incident have something to do with it as well? How did he go missing? Could it really be because he did something with us, or is it because there’s something different about him…”

Jackie helplessly stopped walking and replied, “Even if you completely wreck your brains, you won’t be able to figure it out. There’s no reason to waste your time on it.

“Why are you here? Isn’t it to get materials? Why are you wasting your precious time thinking about something you can’t get any answers to? Are you dumb?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2590

Ch
Chapter 2590
Rudy’s face stiffened at Jackie’s words. Thinking about it, he felt like Jackie was right. He really was doing all of that at the wrong time and place. If he wasted all his precious time on that matter, it would be incredibly stupid.

He took a deep breath, feeling like something was wrong with him at that moment. He shook his head vigorously, tossing those errant thoughts aside before he walked forward and arrived next to Jackie.

At that moment, he cast his gaze throughout his surroundings to see if he could find anything that was hidden among the grass. However, in a short moment, he found himself frozen.

Rudy grabbed Jackie’s arm, causing Jackie to frown. Jackie could clearly feel the hand that Rudy had on his arm was trembling slightly.

It was as if Rudy had discovered something incredible.

He immediately turned to look at Rudy who had his eyes widened. Rudy had one hand on his arm and another hand pointing in a certain direction.

Advertisement

Jackie followed where his finger was pointing and noticed a black-clothed man standing quietly about a dozen or so meters away from them, looking at the two of them coldly.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, lamenting that his senses were far too dull. Someone was standing there, but he had actually not felt it. However, Jackie could not be blamed for it.

None of them who came to Holy Cloud Mountain was at the spring solidifying realm, so Jackie did not think that anyone would be able to hide from him and thus lowered his guard.

“Who is this…” Rudy’s voice was a little

Advertisement

shaky.

Even though Rudy was not that strong, he could still tell that the black-clothed man was already in the spring solidifying realm. On top of that, he was staring at them with an incredibly cold gaze. It was obvious that he was not friendly.

A spring solidifying realm expert was a mountain that Rudy could not overcome. If he fought against someone from the spring solidifying realm, he would die in a flash.

There was too large of a gulf between the two of them. No matter physically or mentally, Rudy was feeling a lot of pressure. Jackie raised an eyebrow as he reached out and pushed Rudy behind him.

At that moment, Rudy could do nothing other than relying on Jackie to protect him. Jackie felt like anyone who would cause them trouble and wanted to kill them would definitely be aiming for him and not Rudy.

However, Rudy was already incredibly fearful. He looked up and said emotionally, “Didn’t you say that we should be safe for the time being? They’re still here! Are we going to disappear like how Grayson did…”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Rudy helplessly. He reached out and pat Rudy on the arm.

He said in a calm tone, “I can’t be sure about anything else, but this person who suddenly appeared in front of us is absolutely not with those people.”

Michael let out a cold laugh as he stepped out of the trees after hearing what Jackie had said. His eyes were like hooks as they were fixated on Jackie.

Advertisement

“You’re one of the most composed people I’ve seen. I thought that you would immediately start crying and begging for mercy the moment you saw me.”

Jackie let out a cold smile as he measured the man in front of him. The man had black clothes on and did not cover his face at all. The fact he stood right in front of Jackie led Jackie to conclude that the man was there to silence him forever.

After thinking about it, two faces flashed in Jackie’s mind. He let out a soft laugh as he said incredibly calmly, “Was it Harold who invited you here?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2591

Chapter 2591
Jackie's words had stunned Michael. He never expected Jackie to manage to guess who had sent him so easily.

However, it was fine even if Jackie had managed to guess it. Jackie was already dead meat in Michael's eyes. All he needed was one hand to kill Jackie. There was no way Jackie would be able to survive.

It would be fine even if he revealed the full truth to Jackie.

Michael nodded, "You're not just composed, you're quite smart as well. I heard you're quite talented in alchemy. It's just a pity that you offended someone you shouldn't have.

"Some people really don't treasure their lives, offending everyone around. The two of you deserve this consequence."

Jackie let out a cold grunt. He had been right,the two of them had refused to relent. However, they were not that dumb for managing to craft this plan to kill him.

Advertisement

If he was the person they thought he was, the plan would have been a success. After all, Holy Cloud Mountain was an incredibly big place. It was an amazing place to kill someone.

The person who was taking action would not be Harold or Johnson either. The two of them would be far away, which would be shown on their identification badges. They would not be at the same place with Jackie at all, so even if Jackie died, it would have nothing to do with them.

Thinking about that, Jackie suddenly smiled, "The first time we met, I actually thought that Harold's mind was empty. Now it seems like he's not that stupid. The plan is actually quite good…"

Michael could not help but frown at those words. He felt like Jackie seemed to have a very strange expression. Jackie seems to be too calm as if Michael was not a threat at all.

Advertisement

Michael found that very strange. Could he be looking down on his strength? The person behind Jackie was clearly so scared. that his whole body was shaking, completely frozen by him.

Yet, how was Jackie so calm? Jackie was so calm that Michael frowned at how strange it was.

“Don’t think that I’ll be afraid of you just because you seem so calm. You might be alchemists that are respected among warriors, but in terms of combat, you’re all useless. I can kill you with one hand.”

Jackie merely smiled as he said nothing. If it was anyone else, those words would be true. Michael’s frown deepened. After all, Jackie was acting very strange. Could that guy be crazy?

He walked forward and pointed to himself,

“Can you not see how strong I am?”

Jackie nodded as he answered calmly, “Of course, I can. You’re at the early stage of the spring solidifying realm. I estimate that you should be at least among the top one hundred among the inner disciples.”

Michael felt even weirder at Jackie’s words. Jackie’s eyes were really sharp as his judgment had been right. Michael was not just in the first hundred, he was among the top fifty disciples.

Even though he was not among the strongest, he definitely was no weakling. As long as he worked hard, he would be a chosen disciple eventually.

Advertisement

Since Jackie could tell what his strength was, Jackie should also be able to tell that he was also skilled. How was Jackie still able to maintain that expression? Jackie let out a sigh as he took out a black sword from his storage space.

He aimed the sword right at Michael’s

forehead and said, “If you want to kill me,

then come.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2592

Chapter 2592
Jackie spoke in a clear and resolved tone. It stunned Michael, who was standing in front of him. Even his eyes threatened to pop out of their sockets. After a long time, he answered, “Are you crazy?”

Jackie lightly snorted, “I won’t harm those who don’t harm me first. You brought this onto yourself today.”

Jackie’s words caused Michael to laugh. He laughed as he took out his weapon, “There are strange things every year. There are especially many this year. Have you really gone crazy? Do you think you can deal with me at your level?

“Even though I can’t tell how strong you are now, do you really think I’d be afraid of an alchemist trying to pretend to be strong in front of me?”

After saying that, Michael’s cold smile intensified. Jackie’s calm demeanor was just smoke and mirrors. He was just an alchemist, how could Jackie possibly hope to defeat Michael?

Jackie was just trying to fool Michael with all those words. Michael assumed that Jackie wanted him to think that Jackie was strong so he would hesitate to make a move against Jackie. Jackie would then try to leave the place…

Advertisement

With that in mind, Michael looked at Jackie in disdain. He had thought that Jackie really was brave, but it had just been a petty scheme. He had been distracted by Jackie’s expression and thought that Jackie was actually skilled.

Michael let out a laugh, “Don’t think you can fool me by acting like this. I’ve seen so many people on this journey to becoming a warrior. Which type of people have I not met before?”

“There are plenty who only know how to use petty ploys like you. I’ll never let you leave this place alive!”

Michael practically shouted out those words. His face was incredibly resolved as if he was a god that was determining the life and death of others. It greatly amused Jackie.

Advertisement

Jackie coldly laughed, not wanting to talk to Michael anymore. He lightly raised the sword in his hand as runes started to dance around his fingers. Seventy Soul Swords condensed in front of him in the flash of an eye.

Jackie reached out to the Soul Swords like a general summoning his troops, they flew and merged into Jackie’s blade incredibly quickly, enveloping Jackie’s sword in a dark black glow.

At that moment, Jackie showed no emotion on his face. His aura felt like he could suppress everything in the world. Looking at Jackie, Michael could not help but frown, suddenly having an unsettling feeling in his heart.

He had clearly not felt any large energy fluctuations from Jackie, and the martial skill Jackie had just displayed was nothing particularly eye-catching, yet Michael could not help but panic.

It was as if the person in front of him was not an early innate realm little ant, but an unrivaled warrior. Michael shook his head vigorously, throwing aside the fear he had felt in his heart.

As a warrior, he could not afford to feel fear. The moment he had that feeling in his heart, he would lose the determination to fight and might even lose the battle because of it.

Even though he did not think that he would lose to an alchemist, the habits of a warrior forced him to calm down. Michael took a few deep breaths as he clenched the sword in his hand tightly. After making the mental preparations, he looked up, “Don’t think that I’ll be afraid of you just because of your empty actions!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2593

Chapter 2593
Michael stepped forward and shot at Jackie like a bullet. He seemed like a fire god in the air as his whole body started to be enveloped in flame. The sword in his hand seemed to be covered in lava as an intense heat suddenly filled the air.

Rudy, who was standing behind Jackie, was already suffering from so much heat that he could not open his eyes. His skin felt like it was being burnt as he wailed, “It’s so hot! I’m dying from the heat!”

Jackie sighed helplessly as he grabbed Rudy’s arm. He activated his true energy as he pushed Rudy away. Before Rudy could even finish crying out, he was already pushed away by Jackie.

In a fight at that level, Rudy was basically cannon fodder. There was no way Rudy would survive the battle.

Jackie faced the flames that covered every

inch of space with a cold expression and sword in his hand, his whole body was completely covered by a gray glow.

Advertisement

Michael was surrounded by an intense light as he brought his flames forward. Even with how bright it was, there was no way for him to pierce through the darkness around Jackie. At that moment, Jackie was like a vortex of darkness that did not allow a shred of light in.

After Michael displayed his martial skill, Jackie had immediately seen through his rank. It was a middle earth rank technique. The guy should only have mastered the first stage and was still far from mastery.

Jackie let out a cold laugh. When the flames surged forward, he launched himself forward as well. He headed right to the flames as Jackie held his sword with both hands, slashing right at the light.

The power of Destroying the Void turned into a pitch-black slash. It clashed with the

Advertisement

sea of flames. Compared to the overwhelming sea of flames, the black glow seemed minuscule.

Yet, when the two of them clashed together, the black glow suddenly seemed to gain a power it did not have before and cut a hole in the sea of flames.

Jackie had always known how to use the laws of space. When he used Destroying the Void, he applied the laws of space to it as well. The slash that was condensed from Destroying the Void arrived in front of Michael in a flash thanks to the help of the laws of space.

It had arrived in front of Michael in less than a blink of an eye. Everything had happened far too quickly. He had thought that a small slash would definitely not match up to his sea of flames.

Yet, Jackie’s skill which did not seem to have many energy fluctuations had easily pierced through his flames. It arrived in front of him incredibly quickly!

“How is it so fast?!” Michael cried out.

It was already too late to say anything by then. Michael had yet to recover from using his power, and the sword he held was unable to shield him from everything. With a slash, the black aura pierced into Michael’s chest.

Jackie had controlled the slash incredibly precisely. It had hit Michael’s chest but had not hit his heart. Michael’s wails of pain could be heard in the air as he collapsed and struggled on the ground.

He had fallen to the ground with a crash. Thankfully, he had already trained for many years, and his body had already been refined. Even if he fell from a high place, he had not sustained any heavy injuries.

Advertisement

The slash on his chest instead caused him to lose all his strength. “Ah… it’s so painful!” Michael wailed hoarsely.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2594

Chapter 2594
The pain felt from a soul being torn apart could even destroy a man with incredible willpower. Many warriors who thought they were of strong will had all been unable to withstand the test of having their souls damaged.

Michael, who had been so arrogant before, was rolling on the floor like a wet dog. At that moment, Michael could not be bothered with his reputation and honor. The pain from his soul being torn caused him to feel pain even when he panted.

Rudy hurriedly scurried over. Thankfully, Jackie had held back when he threw him away, so he was not injured. After crawling back and seeing that scene, he did not know what else to say.

Michael did not look like a warrior at all at that point. He merely looked like a crazed man who had not showered in years. Rudy’s lips stiffened as he looked up at Jackie.

Jackie merely stared coldly at Michael as expressionless as usual. His expression did not seem to change at all, causing Rudy to start to feel confident.

“Is it really that painful?” Rudy mumbled to himself.

Advertisement

Jackie grunted, “Why don’t you try it out yourself? As long as you try it, you’ll realize how painful having your soul torn apart can be.”

Rudy frantically shook his head when he heard that. Even though he had asked that question, it was obvious how painful and torturous having one soul torn apart like that was from how much Michael was struggling on the ground.

Michael had seemed so prideful when he showed off in front of them earlier, but he was already reduced to that state. Rudy could not help but sighed.

“Save me! I don’t dare anymore! You’re amazing! I went against the wrong person! I’m begging you, let me go!” Michael started to shout out.

Advertisement

At that moment, he was already mentally drained from the torture and had lost his sense of reasoning. He could no longer hold on.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and remained unmoving. His face was emotionless as well. Jackie was like a spectator, quietly watching Michael suffer.

Michael's face was full of sweat thanks to the pain. He tried to move toward Jackie, and grab Jackie's clothes. It was as if that was the only way he would have any hope.

"Let me go! I have no grudges against you. The one who wants to kill you is Harold. He was the one who wanted to use me to kill you. It has nothing to do with me, I'm just a hired hand!"

Those words caused Jackie to laugh. Even his shoulders started to move as he laughed. He kept the sword in his hand as he said, "Don't you think it's hilarious? It has nothing to do with you? Are you telling me you came here to befriend me instead of killing me?!"

That was one of the funniest things Jackie had heard in his many years alive. In order to clear himself, Michael seemed willing to say anything. He even tried to convince Jackie that this matter had nothing to do with him. He was merely just helping someone eliminate a person for money.

Michael looked up and said, "I'm just a killer that's being used. I have no grudges against you. You don't have to kill me. It will be useful to you to keep me alive. Once we go back, I'll be your witness and help locate the person who wanted to kill you. He will definitely suffer a heavy punishment then!"

Michael tried to beg Jackie, looking at Jackie like Jackie was his savior.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2595

Chapter 2595

Jackie smirked as he said, "You're quite smart, aren't' you? You're throwing away all responsibility and acting like you're the victim. Do you think I'm dumb?

"You talk as if this has nothing to do with you at all. If my skills were weaker than yours and I was the one on the ground, would you let me off if I begged for mercy like you did?"

That word rendered Michael speechless. The truth was just that simple. If Jackie was the one on the ground begging Michael for mercy, Michael would probably have never even blinked an eye before killing Jackie.

Jackie would have been killed on the spot. Since that was the case, why would Jackie let Michael off? Rudy coldly snorted as he said to Michael, “If you hadn’t treated us like idiots, or if Jackie wasn’t strong enough, the two of us would be trapped still trying to speak about justice right now? You’re absolutely shameless!”

Michael frantically struggled as he pursed his lips and said, “You still can’t kill me! I’m useful to you. If you let me go, I assure you that I’ll help you deal with Harold!”

Jackie let out a laugh as he looked on at Michael swearing that he would definitely help Jackie. The oath had zero trustworthiness in Jackie’s eyes, which made Jackie’s disdain more apparent.

Advertisement

Michael continued to frantically try to save himself, “I definitely held back just now! I was worried that Harold would kill me off to shut me up about the murder after I kill you. As long as you let me off, I’ll definitely make Harold pay!”

Jackie narrowed his eyebrows as he nodded at Michael. Seeing Jackie’s nod, Michael excitedly struggled a few times. Even though his soul was still in constant pain, Jackie still nodded. It meant he still had a second chance, Michael felt a chill on his neck. Red blood started to flow out, staining his whole face. At that moment, Michael did not even have the chance to react. All he could do was reach out his hand to cover his neck.

He looked at Jackie in confusion. When he saw the dagger in Jackie’s hand, Michael started to panic. The panic did not last that long before he completely stopped breathing. He lay on the floor, motionless.

Jackie sheathed his weapon and stood up straight as he said calmly, “If I had let you off, you’d be a dog that could come back to bite me at any moment. How could I let you live?”

Advertisement

Rudy was stunned at how decisive Jackie was. He immediately asked, “This guy is still someone valuable, why did you just kill him?”

Jackie lightly grunted, “Where do you think his value lies?”

“He can help us be a witness against Harold. Without his words, we won’t have any direct evidence to prove that Harold had sent someone to kill us. Without proof, we can’t possibly accuse Harold of anything.”

Jackie nodded slowly, “You might be right, but that guy was not someone we could afford to not be worried about. If we let him go it would be like releasing a ticking time bomb. He could come back and bite us at any moment.

“He swore away to us that he would definitely help us accuse Harold. However, don’t forget that accusing Harold of anything would directly mean confirming his own crime. Do you think he would be able to escape that?

“Being used by someone to kill an alchemist that Phoenix Valley was painstakingly cultivating. If his crime was established, he would definitely be kicked out of Phoenix Valley. Do you think he would be willing to pay such a big price?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2596

Chapter 2596

Jackie's words stunned Rudy once again. After a long time, Rudy nodded and said, "You're right, if he accuses Harold of anything, he would be implicating himself. He would definitely be punished. If we let him go, we've lost any control over him. He can do whatever he wants, so why would he pay such a large price to accuse Harold…"

Jackie nodded as he looked at Rudy as if Rudy had finally learned something, "It's good that you understand that. That's why it was pointless to listen to those dumb claims from the guy. He had to die today. I won't relax unless a rabid dog like that dies by my own hands."

Rudy nodded with a frown, "I'm still not happy about it. Are we just going to ignore what happened today? Are we just going to let go of the fact that Harold hired an assassin to kill us?"

Rudy said all of that through clenched teeth. If Jackie had not been strong enough, the two of them would not be able to walk out of Holy Cloud Mountain alive. Rudy was furious just thinking about it, unwilling to let go of such an incident.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, "Don't worry. Since he dared to do something like that, he'll naturally have to bear the consequences. It's not like you didn't hear what that person said earlier.

"He'd done something to stop himself from being killed off and silenced after the fact. We don't know what he did, but something will happen later on."

Advertisement

Rudy frowned, shaking his head and not really agreeing to it, "Who knows what he did? What if he was lying? After all, he didn't really say anything. You should probably have killed him later so we can ask what exactly it was that he did. We'd at least be prepared for it."

Jackie let out a light smile as he looked over at the dense forest. In front of them was a winding road, and other than the leaves and grass, they could not see anything else.

Everything around him was green. Jackie paused for a long time before he said, "There are some things that we don't have to do anything about for the results to end up the way we want them to. Don't panic."

Before the third evening, Harold was frowning intensely. It was only four hours away from when they needed to go back to the transfer array. He was plucking some White Phoenix fruits while he thought about something.

Advertisement

Johnson had been with him the whole time. The moment he saw Harold's expression, he knew what Harold was worried about. Johnson hurriedly walked up to Harold and grabbed the White Phoenix Fruit away.

"Stop squeezing it, it will be useless if you

squeeze it any longer. Didn't you tell me not to let my thoughts wander? So why are you being so worried now?"

Harold sighed as he looked into the distance and said, "Michael agreed to meet me hereafter everything was done. We'd then give him the final sum.

"We've already waited for three days, but he's still not here yet. If nothing happened, then he probably changed his mind."

Johnson sighed helplessly. He did not want to vent at that moment, because if he did, their mood would absolutely plummet. They might even start panicking and end up unable to react to anything.

They had been taking a huge risk the whole time anyway. If anyone knew what they did, they would definitely be dragged to the Elder Hall and be investigated by all the higher-ups.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2597

Chapter 2597
The crime of trying to kill another alchemist was something the two of them could not bear. Even if they had someone to back them up, there was no way they could be protected. After all, that act was far too evil.

Johnson reached out and patted Harold on the arm before saying, "There's no reason to doubt Michael's skills, so he must have changed his mind. I just wonder why he suddenly changed his mind. Could he think that killing Jackie would be incredibly troublesome?"

Harold shook his head, looked at Johnson seriously, and replied, "It's not the first time Michael has done a deal like this. I looked for him precisely because he's experienced with these things.

"The person who recommended him has used him before. Michael is very trustworthy, and he's intelligent as well. He does things cleanly and has never leaked out any information."

Johnson raised an eyebrow, “If that’s the case, we don’t have to be too worried. At the very least, Michael is someone who knows what to do. Even though he isn’t here for some reason, he was probably held up by something. He probably found some incredibly valuable material…”

Harold shook his head and replied, “I’d be even more worried if that was the case. Michael is quite poor. The fact that he does all of this means he lacks resources and spirit crystals.

Advertisement

“That’s more reason for him to be here on time. The fact that he is not here just means that something must have happened. I wonder if that guy is dead or not!”

As he said that, Harold clenched his fists tightly. He was most worried about whether Jackie was still alive. He would be even more frustrated if that was the case.

Just thinking about Jackie’s face made him want to send a few slaps at Jackie. He still vividly remembered how he was humiliated in the Elder Hall. In the task hall, Jackie had not given way to him and had even embarrassed him in front of everyone.

In the Elder Hall, Jackie had deliberately humiliated him again. He had never been so embarrassed in his life. Jackie was basically his arch-nemesis. He would absolutely not allow Jackie to remain alive.

Advertisement

Johnson frowned. It was obvious how much Harold hated Jackie from his expression. If Jackie did not die, Harold might end up spitting blood in frustration.

He took a deep breath, thinking about it for a while before saying, “He must be dead. If Michael is really that trustworthy, then he must have had his eyes on Jackie the moment we stepped into this place.

I feel like he must have encountered something

else that would delay him from coming here after killing Jackie. It’s not that he did not kill Jackie.”

Harold nodded after a long while, “You’re right. Michael is an incredibly trustworthy assassin. Could he have encountered some other danger or been spotted by someone?”

Johnson shook his head, not daring to say his thoughts. Even if he told them, they would have no way to solve the problems anyway. He opened up Harold’s hand and placed the White Phoenix Fruit back in Harold’s palm.

“We’re quite lucky this time. Not only did we get eighth-grade White Phoenix Fruits, but we also picked up Eighth-Grade Turtle Blood Grasses. If we redeem them at the task hall, they’d be worth quite a few spirit crystals. We profited quite a lot this time, so we should relax a bit.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2598

Chapter 2598
Hearing that, Harold’s tense face eased up. The two of them did profit quite a bit this time. Eighth-grade materials might not be incredibly large fortunes to them, but it was still an unexpected windfall.

Eighth-grade materials were all incredibly expensive. They had even managed to pick two up. They were definitely much luckier than they had been in the past.

Johnson let out a cold laugh as he raised an eyebrow, “That group of guys must be incredibly happy. The two of us haven’t looked for them because we have something on our minds. If it was before, everything good they got would be ours.”

Harold nodded proudly, “They won’t be so lucky next time.”

As he said that, the identification badge suddenly glowed in red light. The red light was like a thin line, leading the way to a specific location. The two of them exchanged a look and nodded to each other at the sight.

When the red light started to glow, it meant the three days were already up. They needed to head back to the transfer array. Elder Eliot was incredibly strict. If they were late, they might very well be punished.

Advertisement

They did not dare to delay as they headed straight for the transfer array following the red light. After approximately four hours, they started to see the large transfer array.

There were around seventy to eighty people there when they arrived. Everyone had happy looks on their faces as they discussed. their earnings.

When the two of them arrived near the transfer array, those more familiar with them greeted them while the unfamiliar ones looked at them warily, making some space for them.

Harold and Johnson calmly stood at the empty spot. Since they were more talented than others, the two of them regularly received special treatment, so they did not think anything was odd.

Advertisement

Elder Eliot leaned against a large tree. In his mouth was a small wooden stick that had appeared out of nowhere. He had an impatient look on his face.

Harold swept his gaze across everyone present. When he saw that Jackie was not there, he let out a breath of relief as he relaxed slightly.

Even though it was still early, most of the alchemists were already gathered there. The fact that Jackie was still not around meant that Jackie must already be dead. The thought played around in his head, but Johnson looked at him with a concerned expression, “Harold… something’s wrong.”

Those words shook Harold’s heart as he looked up abruptly and replied, “What’s wrong? Can you please speak clearly? Are you trying to scare me by finishing your sentence?”

Johnson took a deep breath as he tried his best to calm himself down, “If Jackie died, would Elder Eliot be so calm? Don’t forget that the identification badge will alert him if anyone dies.

“Elder Eliot is leaning against the tree so casually, it’s obvious that nothing happened. If something really bad happened, he would absolutely be on high alert!”

Those words shocked Harold as his eyes widened. Only then did he recall the key use of the identification badge. Johnson frowned, wanting to continue, but a familiar figure caught his eye.

He swallowed his words before he could speak as he turned around suddenly. He saw that Jackie was slowly walking toward them, and behind Jackie was his little follower.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2599

Chapter 2599
The two of them walked over slowly and seemed incredibly carefree. Jackie’s follower had somehow found himself a fan. The weather was not even that hot, but he still fanned himself as he walked, looking incredibly pleased.

It was not just Johnson who was speechless, even Harold looked like he had swallowed a few flies. He had an incredibly sour look on his face. Rudy almost let out a laugh when he saw their widened eyes.

He whispered to Jackie, “It’s just as we expected. Just look at their expressions, it’s like their own fathers just died. This is hilarious.”

Jackie grunted lightly and nodded before whispering, “Control your emotions. We have to act like we don’t know anything, and nothing has happened.”

Rudy nodded seriously. The two of them had discussed things for a long time. The fact that Harold and Johnson dared to do that means that the two of them still had things up their sleeves.

Harold’s face turned purple as he looked like he had seen a ghost. He looked on at Jackie who was walking toward them and found himself struggling to even breathe.

Advertisement

Jackie was not dead?! How could he not be dead? What was Michael doing? Did Michael really end up regretting things as they thought? Was that why he did not attack Jackie?

However, Michael had never done something like that before. Michael had even killed people who were more talented than Jackie before, so why did he not kill Jackie? What happened?

Those thoughts floated around Harold’s mind like huge waves. No matter how well Harold could control his emotions, he could no longer calm himself down. He really wanted to pull Michael over and properly ask him what had happened!

He had spent a lot of money to hire Michael. He had even bribed a steward so the steward would send Michael here ahead of time. Just setting up the proper connections had used up more than half a month of Harold’s time.

Advertisement

Yet, Jackie still stood there as if nothing had happened. It meant that all the hard work and money he had spent were all wasted. Looking at Jackie’s calm expression that seemed like nothing had happened, Harold was infuriated.

It was like a massive rock pressing down on his body. He could spit out a mouthful of blood and die at any moment! Johnson immediately knew that Harold was about to lose control of his expression.

He hurriedly grabbed Harold’s arm and whispered, “Calm down. This is actually

good news for us.”

Harold turned around angrily when he heard that. His eyes widened as he replied, “Good news? How is it good news? Don’t you see Jackie standing right there, perfectly fine? He’s standing there alive, but you say it’s good news? Is something wrong with your head? Have you gone crazy?!”

Harold felt like he was about to be angered to death. His entire body was filled with anger. If he did not have a shred of reason left, he would have rushed right at Jackie.

Johnson said helplessly, “It means that Michael did not attack him at all. Even though we don’t know why he broke off the agreement, at least we’re safe for the moment.

“Michael has a deal with us. If we sell him out, he won’t be in a good position either. So even though he didn’t complete the task, at least the information wasn’t leaked out. We’ve definitely wasted our effort and resources, but at least we’re safe.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2600

Chapter 2600
Harold knew that Johnson was right, but he could not control his composure at that moment. When he saw Jackie standing there upright, Harold felt like his anger was about to boil over. He was struggling to even hold on.

He had no way to vent, so he was forced to target Johnson, “It’s been so many years, but you haven’t grown at all. All you know is to scheme and play it safe, but you’ve never learned that you need to move forward to accomplish great things. All you know is to be careful, but that means you won’t have much of a future!”

Johnson’s face stiffened when he heard that. He knew that Harold was just using him to vent and that he should swallow it, but those words really did frustrate Johnson.

Elder Eliot yawned a few times before he left the tree he was leaning against. He glanced at everyone present.

“You’re all more or less here. There should still be three or four people lagging behind. I told you before that I don’t have a good temper. The ones who are late won’t just be scolded by me…”

The moment he said that a sharp cry could be heard from the forest. Everyone was shocked by the cry and looked toward where it came from.

Advertisement

Elder Eliot frowned as he took out his weapon from his spatial storage. Everyone was already incredibly anxious thanks to the cry, and Elder Eliot shouted out angrily, “Everyone gathers at the transfer array. Prepare to leave!”

After he shouted that, a green figure ran out of the forest. Elder Eliot looked at the person and immediately shouted, “White, what happened? Were you the one shouting earlier?!”

White nodded as he answered, running toward them, “There’s a dead body! Half of the corpse was torn apart! It looks horrifying! The body is just right there, hurry up and take a look!”

“A dead body?” Elder Eliot frowned as he shouted out with a strange expression. The words had immediately triggered Elder Eliot to move.

Advertisement

He immediately pulled out a scroll and observed every name on it. The identification badges are connected directly to that scroll. As long as someone died, there would be an indication on the scroll.

The scroll was calm at that moment, there were no notifications. That meant that no one was dead, so White was just blindly shouting for no reason.

Elder Eliot looked up angrily and replied, “What are you shouting about? Who died? No one died!”

White pointed at where he had come from with an upset look and said, “There really is a corpse. You’ll know if you just go and take a look!”

Elder Eliot frowned anxiously. It did not seem like White was lying. He sighed. Since White had said it that way, there was no reason not to bring everyone over.

Elder Eliot waved, and all of the alchemists present followed behind him and headed toward where White was pointing. It was about four hundred meters away from the transfer array, a mutilated corpse was lying among the grass.

There was a dense smell of blood around the area, and fresh blood stained the grass. It looks incredibly bloody and ghastly. White no longer needed to say anything, the scene had proven it.

Elder Eliot was stunned as the frown froze on his face. He reached out and pointed at that body with a trembling hand.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2601

Chapter 2601

“How could there be one more person?! Who is that? Does anyone know him? I don’t think I’ve ever seen him before, so he shouldn’t be part of Phoenix Valley. How did he appear here?!”

Elder Eliot could not help but ask a string of questions. No one present answered him. Other than the four present, who had strange expressions on their faces, all of them looked at the corpse with shocking expressions.

Harold felt like he was about to go crazy. The rest of them did not recognize the corpse, but he could tell that it was Michael’s corpse. Michael was dead while Jackie was not. He was actually dead! What happened? How did things end up like that?!

Everything seemed to be getting derailed, right in front of him. At that moment, Harold did not even dare to wonder if anything else had happened. Johnson looked toward Harold, while Harold exchanged eye contact with Johnson as well.

The two of them had incredibly complicated emotions at that moment. Harold gulped and said, “Something really did happen to him, and the incident cost him his life. Who killed him? Who has the skills to kill Michael? Could there have been another expert who sneaked into Holy Cloud Mountain? Isn’t Holy Cloud Mountain supposed to be sealed?!”

Harold had whispered those words that he uttered earlier. Jackie’s voice was suddenly heard from the crowd, “He must have snuck inside from somewhere else. Only, I don’t know who he offended to end up looking like this and to be thrown here.”

Advertisement

Jackie’s words served as a reminder to everyone. Since he had not been transferred here with everyone, then he must have gotten in from elsewhere. However, Elder Eliot suddenly straightened his body and said, “He absolutely could not have snuck in from elsewhere. Holy Cloud Mountain is a key part of Phoenix Valley. There are formations and arrays all over the place.

“Unless someone is incredibly strong, it’s impossible for anyone to get inside through the barriers. Even if they did force their way inside, there would be alerts. There’s no way I wouldn’t know anything!”

The moment he said that there were curious feelings in everyone’s hearts. However, Harold’s heart felt like it was about to jump up to his throat. If they continued investigating the matter, Harold and Johnson would probably be discovered.

It was not just Harold who thought of that, Johnson next to him was suddenly incredibly anxious as well. The two of them froze as their hearts beat incredibly quickly, they were terrified.

Advertisement

Harold had found Michael through various connections and a ton of spirit crystals. Only then did Harold manage to sneak inside. If they decided to look into the matter without any concern for the consequences, they would definitely find out about everything. If everything ended up being revealed, then Harold and Johnson would have nowhere to run.

With Elder Eliot's personality, he would investigate everything thoroughly after he returned to Phoenix Valley. After all, Holy Cloud Mountain was incredibly important to Phoenix Valley.

If anything happened to Holy Cloud Mountain, it would directly impact Phoenix Valley at a time when things had not been peaceful either.

The Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was being targeted, and even got into conflict with someone. At a key time like this, no one would be able to stomach if there was a leak in Holy Cloud Mountain!

"I remember now!" White suddenly shouted out with widened eyes.

Everyone immediately got quiet at his words. White pointed at Michael's corpse and said, "He's Michael, an inner disciple. I've seen him on the other side before."

The 'other side' that Michael was referring to was where the martial artists gathered. When Elder Eliot heard that he immediately said, "He's an inner disciple of Phoenix Valley?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2602

Chapter 2602
White nodded, "Back when I helped an elder to send something to the martial artist's section, I met him. I knew his name was Michael because he had been helping the stewards manage the martial arts manuals that day. I handed it to him and remembered his name then."

Elder Eliot frowned before he asked, "Are you sure that person is Michael?"

White nodded as he answered seriously, "I'm sure he's Michael! The first time I saw the corpse, I didn't take a good look because the face looked too horrendous. That's why I couldn't tell at first, but now that I've had the chance to take a good look, I'm sure it's him!"

After that, White swore on his name, and Elder Eliot hurriedly waved at him, “Since you’re sure who he is, then it’ll be much easier to investigate in the future.”

The sudden incident really surprised everyone. No one expected that an inner disciple would suddenly pop out in Holy Cloud Mountain. After all, inner disciples did not have the right to enter Holy Cloud Mountain.

Elder Eliot’s face was incredibly dark at that moment. He stared at the corpse on the floor, not uttering a word for a long time. It was hard to tell what was on his mind. The ones standing behind him were quiet initially, but slowly lost control of themselves.

Advertisement

“Why is there an inner disciple in Holy Cloud Mountain? Holy Cloud Mountain belongs solely to us alchemists, so why is he here? Could he be here to steal materials? It’s absolutely impossible for him to get through the barrier, just look at his strength…”

After saying that, everyone paused. Even though Michael was already dead, his internal structures were still intact.

Everyone could still see that Michael was in the spring solidifying realm.

In truth, the moment they found out that Michael was an inner disciple, they were more or less certain that he would be around the spring solidifying realm.

Advertisement

“Even though he’s at the spring solidifying realm and considered quite good among the inner disciples, there’s no way he is skillful enough to break through the formations. How did he enter the Holy Cloud Mountain?”

“That’s right! How did he enter the Holy Cloud Mountain?”

“I think there’s no need to speculate about this. He must have used the transfer array just like we did, but the transfer array is being guarded all the time. Unless one of the guards did something and helped him get transferred here, there’s no way he could get here on his own.

“Even stranger is the fact that Michael is

already dead. That person who could kill Michael must not be weak. He might be hidden around us at this very moment…” Those words served as a reminder for everyone.

No matter how Michael entered Holy Cloud Mountain, he was only a corpse at that moment. For someone to be able to kill Michael was definitely stronger than Michael

was. That person was definitely at least at the middle or late stage of the spring solidifying realm.

They might even be a warrior that was already in the divine solidifying realm. To those alchemists, that was an existence that could not be touched at all. If that person had anything against them, no one present would be able to stand up to the person.

Even Elder Eliot was only at the middle stage of the spring solidifying realm and since he put all his focus on alchemy, his combat abilities were only barely at the initial stage of the spring solidifying realm.

“What do we do?! Should we bring the corpse with us and leave right now? I keep feeling like someone is staring at us…”

Advertisement

Everyone started to feel like there was possibly another incredibly strong martial artist nearby. They started to get unsettled, and some of them were even already starting to try and squeeze into the center.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2603

Chapter 2603
No one knew what the person who killed Michael had in mind. Could the person just be a crazed killer? Could the person decide to make a move against the alchemists?

Elder Eliot might be stronger than the rest of them, but he was not all that strong. Elder Eliot would probably only be able to fight on an even footing against Michael. Even Michael died in such a pitiful manner. Elder Eliot would definitely not be able to gain much of an advantage against the person who killed Michael.

That meant that the rest of them were definitely in incredible danger. With that in mind, someone immediately rushed. forward and saluted Elder Eliot.

“Elder Eliot, let’s not remain here any longer. The three-day period is already at its end, and we were supposed to be transferred back anyway. Let’s ensure our own safety before we look into this matter further.”

Elder Eliot took a deep breath. He had realized the severity of the matter as well. Even though he managed to compose himself and not show too much emotion on his face, his inner heart was in great turmoil.

They could not afford to waste any more time. He furrowed his eyebrows and turned around to face everyone, “You’re all right. Everyone is still in danger at the moment. Bring the corpse, we’ll all leave this place immediately.”

Advertisement

Everyone let out a sigh of relief at those words except for a select few. The select few were Jackie, Harold, and the others.

Jackie and Rudy stood behind everyone with very curious expressions. They were more familiar with the details of the incident than anyone else. The so-called hidden expert was Jackie himself.

The two of them were naturally not afraid of some hidden killer that might pop out and kill everyone. At that moment, Jackie was looking right at Harold.

Harold's mental state was already on the brink of collapse at that moment. His whole body shuddered as cold sweat broke out on his forehead. Jackie could easily guess what he was feeling at that moment.

Advertisement

Rudy stopped himself from laughing as he stood quietly behind Jackie, not saying anything. Harold turned around to look at Johnson next to him.

Johnson had a look of hopelessness at that moment as he had already realized how severe the issue was at that moment. Harold reached out to grab Johnson's arm.

"Before the matter reaches its end, we can't afford to lose hope. There are so many questions surrounding this issue. As long as we can remain calm and bide our time, we might be able to clear ourselves of any suspicions and rid ourselves of this matter."

Johnson abruptly turned around to look at Harold. At that moment, he no longer knew what to say. He finally spoke after a long time, "How would we do that? As long as they investigate things, they'll definitely find out about the two of us!"

Harold took a deep breath as he looked at Johnson with a resolved expression. He might be incredibly emotional at that moment, but he still managed to keep his voice down and hide his words from everyone else.

"We're still not sure who killed Michael yet. The only thing we know is that Jackie wasn't the one who killed Michael, and it definitely wasn't us.

"There has to be someone else hiding here. We can use that to craft a story. We'll then be able to paint ourselves as the victims as well. Then, we'd be able to shed any responsibilities on this matter."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2604

Chapter 2604
Harold's plan really did feel very feasible. In Harold's eyes, the person who killed Michael was no simple man. There was no way to find out why the person had killed Michael as well.

The two of them could use that point to craft a story that would frame themselves as victims. Even if they would not be able to escape punishment, it would at least allow them to shred the harshest punishments.

After all, if the higher-ups knew what they had done, being sentenced to death on the spot was a possibility.

Johnson nodded his head vigorously and replied, "You're right, we have to act accordingly in such a time. The person who killed Michael must be our lifeline to escape punishment. We have to hold on to him. tightly."

As the two mumbled to each other, Elder Eliot had already brought everyone back. The two of them acted like nothing had happened as they followed behind Elder Eliot, heading into the transfer array with the group.

Their expressions might be calm on the surface, but their emotions were completely twisted inside. They were on the verge of breaking down at any moment.

Advertisement

Elder Eliot seemed to be worried that something else would happen. When everyone was being transferred back from Holy Cloud Mountain, his expression was strangely nervous. When the last person was moved out of Holy Cloud Mountain, Elder Eliot was finally able to breathe a sigh of relief.

Jackie and Rudy were the final batches to be sent back to Phoenix Valley coincidentally in the same batch as Harold and Johnson. When everyone was sent back to Phoenix Valley, they had concerned looks on their faces.

Many of them immediately wanted to find out what exactly had happened, but Elder Eliot had thoughtfully said to everyone before they transferred away, "Alright, hurry up and go back. All of you must be tired after these three days. Those who want to get spirit crystals, head to the task hall. Those who want to rest head back to their own places.

"Before the matter is thoroughly investigated, watch your mouths. I don't want this news to spread everywhere, understand?"

Advertisement

Everyone respectfully answered that they understood, and earned a slight nod from Elder Eliot in return. After leaving, he headed deeper into Phoenix Valley. Everyone knew that Elder Eliot was going to report the piece of news.

Everyone had the urge to gossip, but they also knew that standing around would not

get anything accomplished, so all of them ended up dispersing.

In just a short moment, the only ones left at the transfer array were Jackie, Rudy, Harold, and Johnson. With Jackie's temperament, he would normally leave immediately and head back to his own courtyard after such a large-scale event.

However, he was in no hurry to leave at that moment. Instead, he stood behind Harold and quietly looked at Harold, forcing himself to maintain a calm expression.

After everyone had left, Harold abruptly turned over as he looked at Jackie with widened eyes and an accusing expression. Jackie had a cold smirk on his face.

He merely stood on the spot, not revealing anything as he matched Harold's gaze. Jackie's actions caused Harold's temper to flare even more, but Harold could do nothing at that moment. He could not fight Jackie there, nor did he want any other conflicts.

"Do you have something you want to say to me?" Harold said in a cold tone.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he shook his head lightly, "I stayed behind for my own reasons, but I don't really have anything I want to say to you."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2605

Chapter 2605

Those words caused Johnson and Harold's bodies to freeze. Harold could not hold back as he raised his voice, "You know everything!"

Harold was incredibly sure when he said that. If Jackie did not know anything, he would not suddenly decide to stay back, nor would he say those things. It was clear that Jackie knew about everything which explained why Jackie was looking at them with such a cold expression.

Jackie did not hide anything as he nodded, "I do know everything."

Those words caused Harold and Johnson to freeze on the spot again. The two of them had incredibly sour looks on their faces. They looked like someone had just thrown a bucket of cold water at them before throwing them into a freezer.

Jackie knew how Michael died? How could Jackie know? Jackie let out a smile, not saying anything else. After that, he nodded at Rudy behind him before the two of them left the place together.

After all, he had already seen what he wanted to. Jackie had clearly seen how the two of them froze up, but before Jackie could take a few steps away, Johnson's voice was suddenly heard behind him.

Advertisement

At that moment, Johnson was already on the verge of breaking down. He rushed in front of Jackie as he said, "Don't be so pleased with yourself! Michael's death must have something to do with you. Did you bring someone inside as well?

"Did you already figure out our plan much earlier? If that's the case, you shouldn't be so pleased. You might end up with worse consequences than us!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he turned around, looking at Johnson who was acting crazily. At that moment, Johnson's eyes were filled with veins, he had the look of an absolute madman.

If he did not lack confidence in his own skills, he would have started a fight with Jackie on the spot. Jackie did not seem to react to Johnson's words at all. The less Jackie reacted, the more Johnson lost control of himself.

Advertisement

He started to shout, "You brought someone in as well. You had that person kill Michael. There's no way things will end up well for you. We might have used our connections to get Michael in, but Michael was the one who died. Our punishment will definitely be lighter than yours!"

Jackie could not stop himself from laughing. Johnson looked like he had definitely been impacted quite a bit by this. Otherwise, he would not have said all of that so dumbly. Johnson's face paled in anger when he saw Jackie laughing at him.

He pointed right at Jackie's face with a finger

that was visibly trembling. Jackie let out a light grunt, not wanting to bother over petty details with the two of them. He did not waste time saying anything else as he brought Rudy away.

The two of them did not speak much after what Jackie did. When they arrived at the courtyard, Jackie pulled Rudy over and gave Rudy a small task.

Rudy nodded earnestly at Jackie's instructions and said, "Don't worry, if I can't even handle something as small as this, then I'd be completely useless!"

Jackie nodded with a small smile. After Rudy left, Jackie returned to his room and made himself some tea as he quietly waited for Rudy's return.

After about four hours, Rudy finally pushed open the door. When he saw Jackie waiting for him, he immediately pulled out a chair and sat down.

"I've already found out everything I should. After all, this matter isn't some big secret anymore."

Advertisement

Jackie nodded before motioning for Rudy to speak. Jackie had asked Rudy to find out what had happened in the outside world recently.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2606 - 2610

Chapter 2606
After the two of them entered Phoenix Valley, they had been cut off from any information about the outside world. They were new and different from those other alchemists who already had connections to get information about the outside world.

That was why Jackie had arranged for Rudy to look into the information. Rudy shook his head before he said, “I wouldn’t have known if I hadn’t looked into things, but I really got a shock after I did. Everything in the outside world is already so chaotic. I always thought that the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was the pillar of Middle Province. I’d thought that any force here would try to curry up favor with the alliance and that there would not be any large conflicts.”

Hearing that, Jackie nodded in agreement. Before this, Jackie had also thought that the

Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was the largest group of alchemists in Middle Province, which meant that martial artists desperately needed them.

Furthermore, the alliance gathered alchemists, which meant that their goals were different from normal clans. There should not have been any major fights, but Rudy’s expression showed that it was not the case.

Rudy took a deep breath before he continued, “The alliance has already started a public war with the Unbreaking Pavilion. It happened around half a month ago. Basically, the alliance has been at war with the Unbreaking Pavilion in the inner region not too long after we entered. Phoenix Valley.

Advertisement

“The battle is incredibly intense. The reason why there have been so many tasks in the task hall recently is precisely because of that. In truth, there aren’t many truly strong warriors under the alliance.

“However, there are many strong fighters who owe the alliance favors over the years. The alliance has been picking up on those favors, so they’re not lacking in fighters. The two forces are in a deadlock at the moment, with neither side giving way.”

Jackie frowned as he asked an important question, “Why did this conflict start? I’ve never heard of the Unbreaking Pavilion before. To dare to fight against the alliance means they’re not a small clan. Since they aren’t a small clan, they would never fight against the alliance over a small matter.”

Rudy nodded and replied, “The Unbreaking Pavilion is an eighth-grade clan in the inner region. There are only a handful of eighth-grade clans in the whole Hestia Continent, so it’s one of the strongest clans on the continent.

Advertisement

“They naturally have the ability to start a fight against the alliance. As for the reason for the conflict, I managed to find out why,

but I still have my doubts.”

Jackie looked up and said earnestly, “Whether you’re doubtful or not, tell me the reason first.”

Rudy nodded before he slowly started to explain the reason for the conflict, “In the end, it’s a fight over resources. There’s a place called the Valley of Enlightenment in the inner region. It’s said to be a hidden realm left behind from ancient times.

“There are quite a few valuable things inside, but the Valley of Enlightenment isn’t somewhere that can be entered so easily. It seems to have been locked somehow, and there are two keys. One of the keys is in the hands of the alliance, while the other is in the hands of the Unbreaking Pavilion.

“Only by merging the two keys would the Valley of Enlightenment be opened. The two massive forces are essentially fighting over the resources in the Valley of Enlightenment.”

At that moment, Rudy paused and frowned as he voiced his doubts, “I feel like there’s something hidden behind all this. Even though there are two keys, if they’d just sat down and negotiated, there would be no need to mobilize so many forces over this matter. After all, this can be solved with some peaceful negotiation.”

Jackie nodded. Even though the two forces had many experts, it did not mean they were not afraid of wasting resources. If a war started, many lives would be lost.

They would need to use up many experts and resources, and might even harm the foundations of their respective organizations and allow other clans the opportunity to take advantage of things. Unless it was absolutely necessary, two forces that were so close in strength would not go to war.

Advertisement

Chapter 2607
For a war to break out meant that the two forces already had irreconcilable differences, and were already at a stage where they no longer cared for the consequences.

Jackie took a sip of his tea as he frowned, “This should have been a situation where both sides would mutually benefit from it. Even if the Valley of Enlightenment really had so many valuable things that they had to fight for it, there are definitely ways to solve the problem.

“For instance, it could be a fight between the juniors to see which side had more talented disciples. They would be able to get everything from just that. What they’re doing is quite puzzling. Have the other forces not reacted at all?”

Rudy drank some tea before thinking for a moment and replied, “There have been no

movements. Everyone seems to be adopting a wait-and-see approach. They’re merely looking on as the two forces lock horns.

“In the past, whenever two forces ended up in conflict with one another, there would always be a clan that steps forward to be a mediator. Yet for some reason, no one is willing to assume the role this time.

“Everyone just quietly looks on as the situation develops. I don’t know what sort of attitude they have toward the matter. Maybe it’s because this isn’t something that can easily be interfered with?”

At that moment, Rudy’s head was filled. with questions. When Jackie heard that, he felt like it was an incredibly strange circumstance as well. Even though some things would break out into fights when a certain point was reached, it usually only applied to personal things.

A conflict between a clan and an alliance involved two major forces. There were

many things to consider if they ended up going to war. After all, the war would use up a lot of resources. After all those resources were used, they might not even be able to gain any advantages.

The other clans would be eager to jump at the chance to take advantage of the situation unless one clan was powerful and incredibly sure that they would win. Yet, based on what Jackie could tell, the two sides were on an even level.

Even though the alliance does not seem to have so many experts, they definitely have many experts that they cultivated in secret. On top of that, the alliance had the advantage of its unique connections in the Middle Province.

They had sold countless pills in Middle Province, and gotten themselves many friends. In a pivotal moment like this, there would naturally be those who would step up to help them.

Rudy raised an eyebrow and said, “The Middle Province has been in chaos. It hasn’t been peaceful at all. I come from the inner region and know a lot about the inner region. In truth, compared to the outer region, the inner region is a complete mess. It’s incredibly chaotic.

“All of the stronger clans are in the inner region simply because the inner region is rich in resources. They’re hence able to better raise their resources and grow their clans.”

The two of them were silent for a long time trying to think about the intricacies within. Just when Jackie felt like Rudy would not speak, he suddenly said something, “Do you think this has something to do with Grayson? I keep thinking back to what happened with Grayson that night.

“I can’t think of anything that would separate him from us. We reacted incredibly normal. The only strange point was you, but you were not taken away!”

Rudy had a sour look on his face. Every time he thought about Grayson, he would get goosebumps. They had no way of being sure if Grayson was dead or alive.

However, from Mr. Zayne’s attitude, it was quite unlikely that Grayson was still alive. The two of them were really eager to figure out why Grayson had been captured.

Jackie took a deep breath and said, “He must have been taken away because he knew something. If that’s the reason, then he should still be alive. If that’s not the reason, then he’s probably already dead.”

Chapter 2608
Rudy had a dark look on his face as he said, “No matter what, I feel like this matter is filled with suspicion everywhere. Even the conflict between the Unbreaking Pavilion and the alliance is bizarre.”

Jackie nodded as he gulped down the rest of the tea in his hand. After organizing his thoughts, he said, “The Unbreaking Pavilion’s conflict with the alliance is absolutely not as simple as it looks. The two forces fighting each other definitely involves a lot more things.

“If it’s already at the stage of the war, then it was definitely not sparked by a small matter that can be solved just with discussions. If it’s just a matter of benefits, then it definitely involves something precious.”

After saying that, Jackie let out a smile as he shook his head, “Whatever, before he gets even more information, this is all just speculation from us. We’d better use the time more wisely on other matters.”

Rudy pursed his lips helplessly as he looked at Jackie with a face of worry, “I’m just worried that we’ll eventually be dragged into this. After all, Grayson has already disappeared. No one knows if we’ll eventually disappear like he did.”

Jackie took a deep breath in exasperation. Rudy was like a scared rabbit at that moment. Even the slightest breeze would startle him.

Jackie frowned and said, “Didn’t I already tell you this before? Why do you always fail to remember it? Phoenix Valley is somewhere we’ll leave eventually, and it doesn’t seem like they’ll pull anything against us in the near future.

“We’ll be safe for now. With our capabilities at the moment, there’s no way we can’t find out what exactly is happening inside.

So let’s just discard all these thoughts for the moment and live our lives properly. We should focus on raising our own strength for now.”

Rudy sighed, the worry not being wiped from his face at all, “I know what you’re saying is right, but I can’t do it. Grayson’s face appears in my thoughts every night.

“I’m really scared that I’ll end up like Grayson. You have the skills and the talent. You’re better than me at everything. Even if a storm comes your way, you have the capabilities to stand up to it. I’m different. In front of you, I’m like an ant that can be killed at any time, let alone in front of anyone major…”

Jackie did not want to dwell on the matter anymore, so he changed the topic, “Is there any news about Harold? Elder Eliot will definitely investigate the matter thoroughly. If Michael’s death wasn’t exposed, no one would know what Harold did.

“Michael’s corpse is already with Elder Eliot. Elder Eliot will definitely thoroughly investigate the matter. Harold’s plots and schemes will all be revealed in front of the elders.”

Rudy frowned and shook his head, there’s no news about Harold at the moment. Everyone’s looking in curiously, but there hasn’t been a single shred of information. I didn’t dare to ask any of Harold’s friends, so I haven’t been able to get any information on Harold.”

Jackie nodded. Elder Eliot and the others should have already found out about what Harold did, it’s just that he did not know how Elder Eliot would handle it. Jackie did not actually know much about Harold and if Harold had anyone powerful backing him.

If Harold did, that person would definitely help Harold avoid the worst possible punishment. They have a good time after this. Even so, Harold would not

After all, he bought over a deacon and sent Michael into the Holy Cloud Mountain. After that, he had arranged for Michael to kill Jackie. Even if the elders did not know that Michael was sent into the mountain to kill someone, Harold would still be punished for bribing a deacon!

The Holy Cloud Mountain was the holy land for all the alchemists in the outer valley. That place was not somewhere any outer, inner, or even chosen disciple could enter. It

was a forbidden area, so Harold would definitely be punished for doing what he did regardless of the reason!

Chapter 2609
Just as Jackie's thoughts were all over the palace, he suddenly heard a knock on the door. The two of them stopped their conversation at the same time as they turned over to look.

Lou's voice was heard immediately, "I just received news earlier that the two of you are to go to the Elder Hall for something.

"Understood, we'll head there right now," Jackie immediately answered.

Rudy was so scared that his face paled. His entire body started to shake as he reached out and grabbed Jackie's arm, "Could they be planning on doing something to us? Could it turn out exactly like what I have guessed? They don't want to wait anymore. They're summoning us to the Elder Hall and arranging for someone to capture the two of us?"

Jackie sighed helplessly as he looked at

Rudy's reddened eyes. He reached out and patted Ruddy on the arm, "If they really want to do anything to us or make us disappear, they would not have sent someone to pass the message. They control the whole Phoenix Valley, it's not that hard for them to get rid of anyone they want to."

Jackie's words served to console Rudy, but he was still worried as he replied, "Then why do they want us there? They even asked the two of us to go together. Could something else have happened? Or maybe they want to interrogate us? What if they kill us if they don't get the right answer?"

Rudy could no longer control his own composure at that point. He kept on thinking that the higher-ups were trying to kill the two of them, which filled him with anxiety.

Jackie pursed his lips. Rudy's thoughts were actually not entirely impossible, but they were still incredibly unlikely. Jackie decided to just stand up while saying, "There's no reason for us to just sit around at any rate. We don't know anything, so making a decision here is stupid. Since they want us to go, then we should just go."

Rudy followed Jackie to the Elder Hall incredibly apprehensive. They passed the familiar plaza into the familiar steps. The two of them had different thoughts as they walked into the Elder Hall.

None of the usual clerks were around the Elder Hall at that moment. The moment the two of them entered the hall, someone closed the two large doors behind them. With the sounds of the doors closing, Rudy's emotions plummeted.

If it had been the right place for that, he would have just pulled Jackie and ran away. Jackie did not really care about the shut door as he looked up in front of him.

There were three chairs in the middle of the hall. The chairs were already occupied at

that moment. Looking at their attire, it was obvious that they were elders.

There were three people kneeling in front of the elders. Two of them were familiar, while the third was someone unknown. When he saw Harold and Johnson's faces, Jackie relaxed.

Chapter 2610
In truth, on their way there, Jackie had been trying to figure out why they were being called over to the Elder Hall. Various thoughts surfaced in his head, but Jackie could not be sure about the exact reason they were being summoned.

However, he no longer needed to think about it then, because the answer was right in front of him. When Harold heard the footsteps, he immediately turned his head around with Johnson to look at Jackie and Rudy.

When Harold saw Jackie's face, his miserable look suddenly became incredibly cold and sinister. He stared at Jackie with a venomous look in his eyes.

He wanted nothing more than to rush over and beat Jackie up. Jackie was already immune to how Harold was looking at him. No matter how the guy looked at him, he ignored it.

Jackie and Rudy arrived in front of the Third Elder. After they bowed, Elder Eliot introduced Jackie to those he did not know. The one who sat in the middle was Elder Baggin, who held the highest position. The one on the left was Elder Rick while the one on the right was Elder Eliot.

The unknown person kneeling below was Langston Abbot, an inner disciple of Phoenix Valley. He was a close friend of Michael. After the introductions, Jackie started to have even more doubts in his heart.

Elder Rick coughed slightly as he slowly stood up from his seat. He looked at Jackie with a warm expression before saying, "There's something I need to ask you.'

Jackie nodded as he quietly stood on the spot, not saying anything else. Elder Rick raised an eyebrow, unable to stop himself from regarding Jackie better at Jackie's calm and composed demeanor. However, the more Jackie acted that way, the harder it would be for them to handle the matter.

He took a deep breath as he said, "Harold was being threatened. He did something like that because he had no other choice. I will have him apologize to you in a moment.

“Thankfully, you’re fine, and you suffered no losses. Even though Michael is dead, he did not go in peace. That clan actually did something so despicable to him!”

Elder Rick was filled with righteous indignation as he uttered his words. It was as if he was on Jackie’s side. However, Jackie was no idiot. Even Rudy could tell that something was wrong as the two of them abruptly looked up at Elder Rick.

Elder Rick looked at them with kind eyes. Rudy was infuriated at those words. What did he mean by having no other choice? Was he being threatened? Elder Rick even said that they were fine?

The assassin was already dead, so everything was to be glossed over and Harold was a victim instead?

If Jackie had not been so strong, they would not have lived to see another day. If something so big were just brushed over by Elder Rick so easily, even painting the instigator as the victim, then Rudy would not know how to swallow that anger!

Rudy was trembling in rage as he stepped forward to say something. However, he felt someone grab his arm as he turned to look. Jackie looked at him with a calm expression as he grabbed his arm.

It was obvious from Jackie’s expression that Jackie did not want Rudy to do anything. Jackie had his own plan, so Rudy helplessly swallowed his words.

Jackie turned to look as he looked at Harold who was kneeling on the ground.

He suddenly said with a smirk, “I have a few questions I want to ask you, Elder Rick.”

Elder Rick nodded as he said plainly, “Go ahead.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2611 - 2620

Chapter 2611

There was a smile on Jackie's lips before he said, "You said he was forced, so who was it who forced him? Why would they force him when everyone knows he has a grudge against me? Harold using Michael to try to kill me is something we all know, so why are you trying to say that he was forced?"

After saying all of that, Jackie looked up at Elder Rick with a serious expression. Elder Rick must be Harold's backer, that was something incredibly obvious. Otherwise, he would not be protecting Harold and Johnson.

He had so calmly twisted the truth, helping Harold shed any responsibility.

When Elder Baggin heard all of that, he nodded as he ran his hand through his beard, "You bring up some good questions, but before he answers you, let me ask you something first. We've not even explained the details of the matter yet, but you seem to know what happened?"

Jackie turned to look at Elder Baggin. Elder Baggin had a sharp look in his eyes, but Jackie could tell that Elder Baggin was different. He was not helping Harold. Elder Baggin looked old, but there was an air of sternness to him.

He was obviously someone with a fierce sense of justice. Jackie was incredibly confident with someone like that in front of him.

Advertisement

If the three out of the two of them were on Harold's side, then it would be useless even if Jackie told the truth to everyone present.

Jackie nodded as he answered earnestly, "After we left the transfer array, we met Harold. He asked me why I wasn't dead. The moment I heard him say that I was very curious. After mulling it over for a long time, I finally understood why he asked me that."

Harold could not stop himself from looking at Jackie before he voiced out, "That's a load of crap! When did I ever ask why you weren't dead?"

However, he was shot down by a sharp look from Elder Rick the moment he said that. Harold's whole body shook, obviously afraid of Elder Rick. At that moment, even if he had the guts to try and defend himself, he was still forced to swallow his words.

Advertisement

Jackie turned to look at Elder Rick and continued, "I've answered the question, so could Elder Rick answer me now?"

Elder Rick raised an eyebrow, maintaining his warm smile on his face. However, Jackie felt like his warm and gentle face hid a sense of viciousness in it.

Elder Rick smiled and answered, “In truth, this matter is actually your problem in the end.”

After he said that, Jackie was incredibly confused. Was it Jackie’s own fault that someone was trying to kill him? Elder Rick’s words were quite amazing!

Elder Rick continued to say, “You don’t have to be so excited, and you don’t have to question me. I’m speaking the truth. You offended someone outside. Harold says that it was a man in black clothes.

“That man suddenly captured Harold when Harold headed out. Harold was fed poison and forced to arrange for someone to kill you. That’s because you haven’t gone out ever since you entered Phoenix Valley, and the man did not know when you would leave.

“He was forced to try to kill you, which was why everything happened. Harold was helpless to do anything. If he had not been fed poison, he would definitely not have done any of that.”

After Elder Rick said all that, Rudy was so furious his whole body was trembling. Even his face was pale. Jackie had his eyebrows furrowed as he felt a deep rage in his heart.

Chapter 2612
Elder Rick really was incredibly silver tongued. With just a few words, he had basically dismissed all of Harold’s wrongdoings. He was so shameless it rendered Jackie speechless. Elder Zhou did not care how the two of them reacted and instead pointed right at Langston who was kneeling on the ground.

Advertisement

“Langston is a close brother of Michael’s. Before Michael went to Holy Soul Mountain, he handed the contract with Harold to Langston for safekeeping. If any accidents happened, Langston would bring the contract out.”

Jackie raised a hand to interrupt Elder Rick as he earnestly asked, “I don’t have anyone with a grudge against me outside. I’ve never heard of some black-clothed man before. This was obviously all fabricated by Harold to clear his name.

“Why do you trust his words so much? If I’ve done something and just casually made up some black-clothed man, would I be able to clear my own name as well?”

Elder Rick let out a slight laugh as he said casually, “This black-clothed man isn’t someone who was just casually made up. If the black-clothed man did not exist, then how did Michael die?

“The deacons who helped send Michael to Holy Soul Mountain have all been interrogated by us. After they were interrogated, they only offered one answer.

“They did do all of it for the sake of Harold’s money, but they only helped send Michael in. They did not send a second ; person through the array. After our investigations, the deacons were definitely telling the truth. So other than all of you at Holy Soul Mountain, there should be someone else there!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and almost laughed out loud. Elder Rick actually managed to say those words. Even the black-clothed man who did not exist sounded so realistic.

Elder Rick continued after seeing that Jackie was silent, “We sent our people to investigate Holy Soul Mountain. After a series of investigations, there was no one there at all.

“All of this proves that Harold was right. The black-clothed man had actually broken through the barrier and entered Holy Soul Mountain to find you.”

Jackie smiled as he asked, “Then why am I fine right now, and the one who died was Michael?”

Elder Rick said in an incredibly calm tone, “That’s because their negotiations broke down. Harold agreed to give Michael a portion of his resources, and the blackclothed man had agreed to give Michael something as well.

“However, the man clearly regretted it and ended up killing Michael himself. All of this makes sense.”

Jackie could no longer hold himself back from laughing after hearing all that crap. Elder Eliot frowned and said sternly, “What are you laughing at? Do you know where you are right now? You can’t just laugh when you feel like it…”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly, unable to stop himself from laughing, “You’re really not holding back at all to clear his name. You’re even willing to say such nonsensical things.

“That black-clothed man risked his life in order to kill me, but he somehow regretted it? This makes no sense!”

Elder Rick did not look angered at all by Jackie’s laughter, and instead said calmly, “Why doesn’t it make sense? It’s not like something like this has never happened before. On top of that, Michael’s temper is quite bad. The two of them ended up in a conflict and the black-clothed man accidentally killed Michael. It’s entirely possible.”

Chapter 2613
Jackie nodded, “Even if you insist that it’s all true, you still can’t explain the most important thing. If the black-clothed man is so capable, why isn’t he moving alone?

“Can’t he just kill me himself? Why would he need to work together with Michael? This makes no sense!”

Elder Baggin nodded at Jackie’s words as he stood up from his chair, “Jackie is right. If this black-clothed man is so capable, he wouldn’t need to waste so much of his effort, even risking being found out. Why would he leave the corpse on a trail that alchemists would definitely pass? It’s as if he wanted someone to find it!”

Elder Rick frowned after he heard that, turning around to look for everyone, “This is a problem I still haven’t figured out to this day, but from the leads, Harold seems to be speaking the truth.

“He was being threatened. He might be in the wrong here as well, but his crimes aren’t so bad that he needs to die. He should just be punished a little…”

Jackie laughed coldly, “None of these clues can prove that he was forced. The blackclothed man doesn’t exist at all. He’s just claiming all of this to clear his name. It’s all fabricated!

“You can’t back him so blindly just because he has a good relationship with you! So many people saw the corpse then, and they all deserve an explanation. If you brush it off just like that, you’ll just be making a joke of yourself!”

As he said that, Elder Rick’s warm face had completely cooled. Harold loudly shouted, “How dare you speak to Elder Rick like this?!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said in a nonchalant manner, “If Elder Rick is fair

and just acts as an elder, I’d naturally respect him. However, Elder Rick has been trying to defend you from the very start to clear your name. Why would I need to be polite?”

Elder Rick narrowed his eyes as his tone became incredibly cold, “Your words aren’t merely casual remarks. You’ll have to take responsibility for them.

“What do you mean by me defending him? You’re saying that I favor him? Everything I’m doing is to stop an innocent person from being falsely accused.”

Jackie smiled as he matched Elder Rick’s gaze fearlessly, “Elder Rick’s words sound so noble. Don’t you think they’re hilarious?”

Elder Rick said in a righteous manner, “The truth is right in front of you. Without that black-clothed man, how did Michael die? Could he have killed himself?

“He had already signed a contract with

Harold to kill you, but you're not dead. Yet, Michael is dead, which can only prove the existence of that person. Furthermore, it's just like Harold had said, Harold is also a victim.

"We managed to find poison in his body. He really was poisoned by something incredibly strong. If it went on for a month without an antidote, Harold would be dead!"

Jackie took a deep breath, feeling more and more amused by everything. Harold really did use all sorts of ways to try to clear his name. He even fed poison to himself.

However, the poison must be timed. As long as the antidote was talent, everything would be fine. Jackie had to admit that Harold was quite smart. Since Michael had died in unknown circumstances, he had taken a hold of that point to fabricate someone who did not exist.

Chapter 2614
He used that fabricated person to clear his own name and prove to everyone that he was a victim as well. He had done all of that out of desperation. Jackie could not help but turn to look at Harold.

At that moment, Harold seemed much calmer as he matched Jackie's gaze in an uncaring manner. It was as if he wanted to say that, no matter what Jackie said that day, they would be spared punishment.

It was because they had the support of Elder Rick. Rudy looked at Jackie nervously. At that moment, Rudy felt like he was going to be angered to death.

The two of them were too despicable. They had twisted the truth so much that it was not believable anymore. It caused Rudy to feel like spitting blood.

That feeling tormented Rudy. It was as if someone was accusing him of something he

did not do, but he was unable to defend himself.

Rudy looked up at Jackie. He had even made the determination that even if the situation was being turned around like that by Elder Rick, he would absolutely stand up and expose everything. He was not willing to just suffer like that.

Jackie did not bother with Rudy's anxious expression. He turned to look at Elder Eliot and Elder Baggin. Elder Baggin stared at everyone present with a stern expression while Elder Eliot was staring right at him.

It seemed both questioning and doubtful. From their expressions, Jackie understood what the two of them were thinking about.

Elder Baggin was the one in the highest position, so he naturally wanted to get to the bottom of it and determine right from wrong. He wanted to deliver justice to everyone present. Meanwhile, Elder Eliot did not believe any of Elder Rick's words.

Elder Eliot looked at Jackie that way because Elder Eliot wanted Jackie to say something. Looking at their expressions, Jackie's thoroughly relaxed.

He turned to face Elder Rick and said, "So the key question remains on the existence of the black-clothed man?"

Elder Rick nodded as he furrowed his eyebrows. He said with a curious voice, "I know there are still many questions about this matter. If we want to clear everything up, then we need to find that person. However, we already put in a lot of effort but to no avail.

"That person could not be found, so all we can do is to trust what Harold said was true. I know you still have your doubts, and you're not willing to believe all of this because of your grudges against Harold, but there's no other way.

"That's because all of the evidence points toward what Harold says being true. He did all of that because he was threatened. If he had not been forced to ingest the poison, nothing would have happened. In the end, the problem lies in the enemies you've made for yourself. Don't you think I'm right, Jackie?"

Rudy's face was absolutely red in anger. He attempted to rush forward, but he was stopped by Jackie. Elder Rick's words had gone too far. It was one thing to twist the truth, but he was even pinning everything on Jackie.

It was absolutely petty. Even Elder Eliot's eyes were raised as he looked at Elder Rick in disdain. Even though Elder Eliot did not say anything, he still knew that Elder Rick was trying to defend Harold and Johnson.

Elder Baggin understood that as well, but

Elder Baggin did not say anything because there was nothing he could do. Elder Eliot did not have enough evidence to make any judgments.

Jackie suddenly let out a laugh as he looked at Elder Rick with an incredibly mocking expression.

Chapter 2615
"Elder Rick, you really are the most silver tongued person I've ever met. You're really capable of twisting the truth as well. Since you all want to know the truth, then let me tell you the truth. The so-called blackclothed man doesn't exist at all, I was the one who killed Michael!"

The moment he said that everyone présent was stunned. Even the three who were kneeling down on the floor looked up at Jackie at the same time. Everyone had looks of shock and doubt in their eyes.

They were shocked that Jackie said he had killed Michael while they doubted the truth of Jackie's words. Jackie did not care how they were looking at him.

He walked forward and stopped in front of Harold before he suddenly laughed coldly, "Did you think that these lies you made up would be able to clear your name even though they had some holes in them?"

Harold frowned as he shouted, "What kind of nonsense are you spouting? I've never planned on clearing my name! Everything I did was because I was forced.

"If the black-clothed man wasn't there, why would I have ever done something so absurd? Do you think I don't know how horrible the consequences would be for me if anyone found out about it?"

Looking at Harold's righteous indignation, Jackie felt even more amused. He suddenly reached out and grabbed Harold's collar before allowing the power in his body to explode outward.

The power of a spring solidifying realm expert filled the place. In a flash, everyone widened their eyes, refusing to believe what they were feeling was real.

Jackie had just tugged Harold's collar, but Harold ended up being picked up by Jackie like a little chicken.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said, "Your plan was honestly flawless. You bribed the deacons to send Michael to Holy Cloud Mountain. Once everyone was transferred over, he would quickly follow me and kill me.

"You hate me so much, but never tried to do anything to me yourself, because you knew you were no match for me. The second reason was the fact that our identification badges are all being observed by the scroll. If I die, your identification badge will expose your location! You didn't want to take the risk, so you plotted out this plan."

As he said that, Jackie grabbed onto Harold's collar tightly as he flashed a cold smile, "However, you would never have believed that Michael would amount to nothing in front of me! He's only at the initial stage of the spring solidifying realm, he was no match for me!"

Those words stunned everyone there, be it

Harold who was being grabbed by Jackie, or Johnson who was still kneeling on the ground. Everyone stared at Jackie with widened eyes and a gaping mouth as they stared at the two of them with looks of disbelief.

However, the power that Jackie was exuding was definitely not fake. Jackie had absolutely broken into the spring solidifying realm and was even an expert within that realm. Other than Rudy, everyone else present was stunned.

After all, Jackie's strength had shattered all of their common knowledge. Those who walked the path of alchemy would always end up using a lot of their time on alchemy.

They would have far too little time for martial arts, and would naturally not be able to go far in the martial arts path. Yet, Jackie was a sixth-grade alchemist who was already in the spring solidifying realm. For someone at such an age to achieve that made him an absolute master.

Harold trembled as he shouted, "Impossible! This is absolutely impossible! You're an alchemist, how could you have any time to train? You can't be in the spring solidifying realm. You can't be, Jackie!"

Chapter 2616
Harold, already crumbling in chaos at that moment, frantically tried to find an excuse for himself, but Elder Baggin had interjected him with a deep frown and a sharp stare. "Shut up right now! Since Jackie is this strong, then all questions have been answered. There's no black-clothed man, and you were not threatened at all. If Jackie hadn't surprised us with his strength, your plan would've gone perfectly.

"Jackie would've died on Holy Cloud Mountain, and you'd rid yourself of a source of hatred. Since you weren't by Jackie's side at the time, the higher-ups wouldn't be suspicious of you at all!

"It's just your poor luck that the assassin you sent was no match for Jackie, and your plan failed horrendously. Jackie, did you deliberately place the corpse where people would pass by?"

Jackie nodded. "If I had just spoken the truth, no one would have believed me. It was better if I put the corpse in front of everyone and had Elder Eliot investigate.

"I was sure that Harold thought his plan was flawless, that it wouldn't be traced back to him at all."

Johnson collapsed on the floor as he mumbled, "So there really wasn't anyone else…"

That question had plagued Johnson for a long time. Michael's death had been far too strange. Even after so much trouble, no one else was found at Holy Cloud Mountain at all, so who had harmed Michael?

Who placed that corpse there?

Even though they had crafted a lie, Johnson had been bogged down with fear, swallowed with his worry that the killer behind the scenes would pop up and overturn all of their lies.

Jackie let go of his right hand, and the pale faced Harold fell to the floor. Even if he tried to give himself any excuses, Harold had no way of saving his skin anymore.

Jackie turned to look at Elder Rick before he let out a laugh. “Elder Rick, do you have anything else to say? Do you want to find more evidence to defend them?”

The calm smile had disappeared from Elder Rick’s face. He narrowed his eyes slightly as he shot Jackie a cold glare as though warning him.

Jackie, however, could care less. Elder Rick might be an elder, but it was precisely because of that that Elder Rick would not be able to act against Jackie easily. As long as Jackie managed to get to a high-enough position, Elder Rick would not be able to cause him too much trouble.

Elder Rick suddenly chuckled. “So that’s how things were. I can’t believe I was actually fooled by the two of them. They seemed so sincere, so I had thought that everything was true. Alas, I was too naive; I believed them too easily.”

In just a few words, Elder Rick had wiped his hands clean of any dirt and responsibility. It was as if all those insulting words were only said by him because someone else had fooled him.

Jackie’s lips twitched when he heard all of that. Even he had to be somewhat impressed by Elder Rick’s silver tongue.

Harold abruptly looked up at Elder Rick, but Elder Rick was already intent on clearing his own name and turned away completely, no longer looking at Harold at all.

Harold’s entire body froze as he realized he was done for.

He had wanted to beg Elder Rick to say something for them at that moment…but he understood that someone like Elder Rick would avoid anything that would implicate himself at all costs.

“Alright. With things as they are, everyone already knows that there’s no blackclothed man,” concluded Elder Baggin coldly. “Michael died by Jackie’s hand, so there’s nothing else to say.

“The culprit is Harold with Johnson as his accomplice. Both of you won’t be able to escape your punishment anymore. Men, lock them both up!”

Chapter 2617

After both Harold and Johnson were dragged away, Elder Baggin looked at Jackie with a genial expression. He saw and admitted to himself how memorable of a person Jackie was; he was no doubt impressive in every aspect.

Elder Baggin had wanted to say a few more words but stopped himself after thinking about it. After all, they had just sentenced people to a crime.

He coughed lightly before addressing Jackie, “You can head back for now. The matter has already been investigated. As for what punishment Harold and Johnson will get…

“You don’t have to worry about it; they’ll get what they deserve. I’ll have the punishment we decide on passed on to you via your runner disciple. You can go back now.”

Jackie nodded, not adding anything else to the conversation as he left the Elder Hall with Rudy in tow. The two of them went very quickly but slowed down in the middle, mainly because Rudy felt erratic.

Jackie, on the other hand, was rather calm and maintained a very casual expression the whole time.

“That shameless Elder Rick. He actually tried to pin the blame on us!” hissed Rudy. “When I heard his nonsense, I nearly rushed forward and fought him!”

Jackie looked at Rudy, a small crack in his expression as he seemed mildly irked. “I need to advise you on something: you should always think things through thoroughly before doing anything in the future. You should calm yourself and think of what the consequences of your impulsiveness would be.

“If you had rushed forward and picked a fight at that moment, they would’ve used that as an excuse to lock you up forever. Things wouldn’t end up well at all.”

Jackie could not help the frown from forming on his face at the thought of how Rudy could have cussed and shouted back there. With that, he grabbed Rudy’s arm and stopped the guy in his tracks.

“You’re not allowed to be so impulsive in the future. You doing that does nothing other than give me more trouble!”

Rudy’s face froze in guilt upon hearing this. He knew that Jackie was right. If he had been just a bit more reckless back then, he would have brought trouble to Jackie too.

However, Rudy felt like he had already done his best in controlling himself, and Elder Rick had gone too far. Just thinking about Elder Rick filled Rudy with anger, but in the end, Rudy merely sighed in worry.

“I think that Elder Rick will have a grudge against us from now on. Will he try to do anything to us?”

Jackie nodded and said without any hesitation, “That’s to be anticipated.’

Rudy got nervous the moment he heard that. “Well, what should we do? Are we supposed to just wait for him to try and pull something against us? Won’t we end up at a huge disadvantage?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, “You don’t have to worry about that. Even if he wanted to, he’d only be looking to cause me trouble. What of it, then? If he dares to do that to me, I guarantee you he won’t have a good time.”

Rudy nodded, trusting in Jackie’s abilities. As long as Jackie can scale the ranks, Elder Rick would not be able to do anything to Jackie.

Rudy sighed. “What kind of punishment do you think they’ll be given? Will they just be expelled?”

Jackie shook his head, thinking of Elder Baggin’s expression. Jackie felt like the punishment would definitely not be light, and merely being expelled was far too lenient.

Chapter 2618
Jackie turned to look at Rudy with a calm expression. “You’re seeing things too lightly. How could expelling Harold and Johnson be a punishment? Think about what they did.

“Even if Harold is talented, masters are the one thing Phoenix Valley doesn’t need. A master that hasn’t done anything wrong will naturally benefit Phoenix Valley greatly after they’re cultivated, but a master that has done much wrong is a tumor that needs to be removed.”

Rudy earnestly listened to Jackie’s words.

True, Harold had tried to use an assassin to kill another alchemist in Phoenix Valley due to his jealousy, and he had even bribed a deacon of Phoenix Valley. He had basically ignored all of Phoenix Valley’s regulations.

In truth, Jackie being dead or alive was not that important to Phoenix Valley. However, Harold’s actions were what broke through the bottom line.

If Phoenix Valley allowed that behavior, worse things would happen in the future. When Rudy thought of that, he could not help but say, “Those two are going to die, then!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he shook his head immediately, to which Rudy looked at Jackie with a strange expression. “They’ll survive the punishment?…”

However, Jackie turned before Rudy could finish and solemnly spoke, “Sometimes, death is actually a blessing. The two of them will definitely be made an example of.

“Based on what I know, Harold doesn’t really come from an impressive background. He merely used his talents to curry favor with a few elders in Phoenix Valley.

“This time, Elder Rick probably stepped up to help Harold because he promised Elder Rick a thing or two. He’d probably agreed to do a lot of things for Elder Rick after he became a seventh-grade alchemist.”

Chills ran down Rudy’s neck when he heard this, his lips twitching as he incredulously replied, “So you’re telling me the punishment will have them wishing they were dead?”

Jackie nodded. Even though the two of them had already been taken away, Elder Baggin had yet to specify Harold’s punishment. With what Harold had done, they would have to give Harold an incredibly harsh sentence as a warning to everyone in Phoenix Valley.

Everyone had to see the consequences that would befall those who did such things.

Jackie looked at Rudy’s pale face and furrowed his eyebrows strangely. “You look like you’re sympathizing with Harold. Do you think that punishment is too harsh?”

Rudy shook his head vigorously at that. “How could I feel that way? I’d rather he suffer alive! Though, I started to wonder what’ll happen if Phoenix Valley’s ruthless methods start to come our way…”

Rudy could not bring himself to continue his train of thought.

Jackie frowned, feeling like Rudy seemed to have an obsession with linking everything bad to himself.

Jackie turned around and said, “Cast aside all those nonsensical thoughts. You keep tying yourself to everything and causing your own mood to plummet. Aren’t you tired of it?”

Rudy took a deep breath, unable to say anything about it.

Jackie could not be bothered to dwell on the topic, so he looked up into the distance. “I’m going to the Hall of Wishes. Are you coming?”

Chapter 2619
Rudy had a long face when he heard Jackie’s words. “Jackie, can’t you just take a break? You’re already so talented, but you insist on being so hardworking still. Me? I’m like a pile of poo on the roadside!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow helplessly. “That’s why you should come with me. It’s pointless to stay here and whine about everything the whole day. Your talents are already lacking in the first place, and if you don’t start working hard and end up with a zero again in the next test, Elder Eliot may very well expel you!”

Rudy, however, nodded gleefully at that. “I wish he would! I can’t stand staying here anymore. So many things have been happening lately, and it feels like I’m constantly living in fear. I’ll start praying if I don’t leave this place soon!”

Jackie rolled his eyes and ignored Rudy.

The Hall of Wishes still looked the same as usual. However, for some reason, there seemed to be a lot fewer alchemists than usual that day. Jackie noticed it and thought about it for a moment before shaking off the thought.

Jackie did not want to waste any brainpower on useless matters at that moment. The only thing he wanted to do was to improve himself constantly.

He needed to get better to attract the attention of the higher-ups in Phoenix Valley. Only then would he be able to get even more resources, and even people like Elder rick would not be able to try anything foolish.

Others might have stepped back if they butted heads with Elder Rick; they would not have been so obstinate. Jackie did not think in that way.

Elder Rick was the one who provoked him first, so Jackie would naturally not bother

being polite with things.

Jackie entered a room in the Hall of Riches, and the pill aura was incredibly dense. After entering, he threw himself into forming pill runes. The most important part of alchemy was the formation and fusion of pill runes.

Jackie already knew how each pill rune was drawn, but his body could not completely keep up with his memories at that moment. All he could do was get used to it, one step at a time. That was why Jackie had still never refined seventh-grade pills.

However, after a period of hard work and practice, Jackie felt like his memories had already merged with his body to a certain extent. He was preparing to prove himself.

He focused himself as his hands constantly danced. Streak after streak of golden light flowed between Jackie’s fingers, the Pill

runes easily drawn out and floated in front

of him.

After four hours, 4500 pill runes were neatly arranged in front of Jackie, radiantly glowing bright gold.

“It’s wrong!” Jackie exclaimed. His fingers had slipped for a moment, and the rune under his finger suddenly let out a splutter as it shattered into a pure pill aura in a flash.

Jackie helplessly frowned as he looked up at the 4500 pill runes before him. Even though the pill runes did not crumble like the one before, Jackie could still feel like he was already at his limit.

If he continued to practice, he would only be able to make another 50 pill runes at most before everything crumbled.

Jackie took a deep breath as he retracted his right hand, and with that, all of the pill runes dispersed and turned into a pure pill aura. “It went better than I thought.”

Chapter 2620
The last time, Jackie had only managed to condense 2000 pill runes. After half a month of training, Jackie was able to form 4500 pill runes, more than double of what he had last time.

Others would no doubt think that he was lying if they found out how fast he was improving. After all, no one could achieve that at such speed.

Normally, one would first need to completely memorize a pill rune in their mind before they could condense it. After that, they would have to start practicing condensing the rune, stroke by stroke. Normally, even one pill rune would take a long time.

It took constant trial and error, learning from one’s mistakes before committing the runes to memory…but Jackie did not need that at all. He did not need to memorize any of the runes.

All of those memories were already integrated into his head. All Jackie needed was to synchronize his memories with his body. His rate of improvement was drastically higher than anyone else!

After understanding his limits, Jackie had accomplished what he wanted to in the Hall of Wishes. He planned on refining a seventh-grade pill after he went out.

The simplest seventh-grade pills required 3000 pill runes at 50-percent refinement. Jackie, however, had already successfully condensed 4500 pill runes.

All of them were already at 50-percent refinement, and a good amount of them were already at 60-percent refinement. As long as Jackie wanted to, he would easily be able to make a seventh-grade pill!

The moment he pushed the door open, Jackie

saw Rudy anxiously standing in front of the door. When Rudy saw Jackie walking out, he got so emotional that he almost cried.

A surprised expression flashed on Jackie's face, but he was not surprised because of Rudy's emotional expression. Instead, it was because Mr. Zayne was standing next to Rudy.

Jackie could not help but frown when he looked at Mr. Zayne. Even though Jackie was much more mature than Rudy, he could still not help but think about Grayson's matter.

That incident had something to do with Mr. Zayne, for sure. After all, Mr. Zayne was the one who had arranged their sleeping quarters back then. Mr. Zayne knew what happened after that as well, but he might never tell them both about it.

Mr. Zayne offered a smile when he saw Jackie walk out and nodded at Jackie. In contrast to the genial-looking Mr. Zayne, however, Rudy looked like he was about to collapse.

Both of Rudy's hands were trembling, and he looked like he had seen a ghost. Jackie sighed in exasperation.

Rudy was most worried about the higher ups at that moment. After all, he had no idea what was happening behind the scenes, while Mr. Zayne had a lot to do with all of that.

If the higher-ups decided to do anything against them, Mr. Zayne would be involved.

Mr. Zayne standing with them merely complicated Rudy's feelings at that moment. Jackie nodded at Mr. Zayne. Even though his emotions were in a complicated spot as well, he was still far calmer than Rudy was.

When he walked up next to Mr. Zayne, he calmly greeted Zayne, which elicited a raise of an eyebrow.

"You're much more reliable. This guy next to you, meanwhile, is exaggerating matters. When he saw me coming over while he was waiting for you, he turned pale as a ghost.

"I had only a word or two with him, and he already started to stammer. If you haven't done anything wrong, why are you so scared?"

Those words merely drained more of Rudy's color as he became paper-white pale.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2621 - 2630

Chapter 2621

At that moment, Rudy looked like he had ingested poison and awaited his passing. His entire body was trembling, which caused Jackie to frown. Rudy would have fainted if that persisted.

He reached out and pulled Rudy behind him. “Mr. Zayne, are you looking for me?”

Mr. Zayne nodded before he motioned to the door, indicating that they could not talk while they were outside. Jackie nodded before he left to the plaza in front of the hall with him.

Not wasting any time, Mr. Zayne immediately got to business after finding a secluded place. “There’s a tournament that you have to go to,” he spoke.

“A tournament?” Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he looked at Mr. Zayne.

Mr. Zayne took a deep breath before he nodded seriously. “The situation is quite urgent. You’ll know when you’re there. You’re the person most suited for the job right now. There’s no one else we can look for, so you’ll have to go…”

Advertisement

After saying that, Mr. Zayne had a strange expression on his face, and it was as if he was holding himself back from saying something. After a few moments of silence, he finally spoke, “Did you cross someone?”

Elder Rick’s face immediately came to Jackie’s mind the moment Mr. Zayne spoke those words. He knew that someone must have sabotaged him, and Jackie had to admit, he was rather curious.

Whatever it was, he was not at the stage where he was mortal enemies with Elder Rick, despite their conflict. Jackie had been thinking about it, and he decided that he would forget the matter as long as Elder Rick stopped giving him trouble.

However, he never expected to be implicated in just such a short time. Nonetheless, Jackie nodded without stopping. “Did Elder Rick recommend that I participate in this? Is there a problem with this tournament?”

Advertisement

Mr. Zayne raised an eyebrow, curious about Jackie’s incredibly quick reaction. However, he was a carefree person and did not go around in circles with Jackie.

He sighed as he spoke, mild irk present in his tone, “You’re right, Elder Rick was the one who recommended you. He said you were of the right age and even praised you a lot. Still, this looks like a death sentence to me.

“The tournament itself is fine. If you perform well, you’ll get a lot of rewards, and the eastern elders will look at you better. If you fail to do well, you’ll end up suffering.”

Even though Mr. Zayne had not been too

clear about the contents of the tournament, Jackie could pick out a few key points from those words.

First was that he was at the right age. Elder Rick had probably claimed that Jackie was the best among those in his age group. Even though the tournament itself might not have a problem, it must involve something incredibly important.

If Jackie ended up failing of any kind, Jackie would end up becoming the subject of a lot of public criticism. That was probably why Elder Rick recommended him so strongly.

He wanted the other elders to look down on Jackie and roughen Jackie’s path forward. Elder Rick would then be able to deal with Jackie easily without much opposition.

Chapter 2622
“The matter is already set in stone, and it cannot be overturned,” said Mr. Zayne, the helplessness evident in his voice. He stared at Jackie seemingly sympathetically as he added, “In a while, the other two will come over. I’ll introduce everyone.”

Advertisement

Jackie said nothing as he stood quietly, but Rudy struggled to remain calm. He pulled at Jackie’s arm and whispered, “If that’s the case, then you can’t go. We both know this is a trap. We should avoid Elder Rick. He’s so despicable, and we can’t let him get what he wants!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow before nodding as he whispered to Rudy, “You’re right, but he probably anticipated me rejecting to participate in this tournament, however. You’d be doing exactly what he wants.”

Rudy was baffled at this, his eyes widening at Jackie’s words. “What do you mean? If we

reject it, we’ll still be doing as he wants?”

Jackie sighed in exasperation as he nodded slightly before saying, “If I reject them now, I’d be rejecting the higher-ups. Those people won’t have a good impression of me

regardless. After all, I'm of the appropriate age and talent. No matter how you look at it, I have to give it a try."

Rudy's face soured as he heard that. He looked around anxiously as he scratched his head, trying to figure out a way to reject but to no avail.

It seemed like Elder Rick truly had trapped them with no room for escape, and whether they advanced or retreated, Elder Rick would still benefit from it.

Jackie reached out and grabbed Rudy. "Don't overthink it. No matter what, this warrants a try. Have a bit more faith in me. There are some things where the true victor can't be seen until the very last moment."

With that, Jackie said nothing more.

Mr. Zayne had been observing their conversation silently, not doing anything other than looking at Jackie meaningfully.

After Jackie and Rudy's conversation ended, Mr. Zayne cleared his throat before he piped in, "It hasn't even been that long and you've already offended Elder Rick. I always knew you weren't someone who is all that cautious. It seems like I wasn't wrong after all."

Jackie looked up at Mr. Zayne calmly. "I've always talked and acted upon the principles I've laid out for myself. I won't trouble anyone who doesn't trouble me. If Elder Rick hadn't tried to do something to me, I wouldn't have any problems with him."

Hearing that, Mr. Zayne let out a cold smile. "You're too overconfident. Don't think I don't know what's happened. Everything about you has started to spread, and everyone knows you're talented in every way.

"However, an elder is still an elder. He can't do anything to you publicly, but it won't trouble him whatsoever to bait and trap you behind the scenes, just like what happened today. If he hadn't recommended you so much, you wouldn't have been placed under the limelight."

Jackie nodded. Even if Mr. Zayne had not said that, Jackie understood the logic behind everything that had happened. He let out a small chuckle, but his composure never wavered.

"He can do whatever he wants to, but he needs to bear the consequences for anything he does," remarked Jackie, sounding awfully blunt.

Though Jackie was not trying to exaggerate, Mr. Zayne felt incredibly amused at those words. In the end, Mr. Zayne could not stop himself from laughing out loud.

Chapter 2623

Mr. Zayne laughed for a good while before he broke into a light cough, saying, “You’re the most confident sixth-grade alchemist I’ve ever seen! In so many years, I’ve never seen a sixth-grade alchemist that would dare challenge an elder and even declare that he’d get back at them! Curious am I to know where all that boldness comes from.”

Jackie did not answer, however, his lips curled into a smirk as he kept his silence. At that moment, Mr. Zayne would probably be amused if Jackie said he would even go against the world if needed.

After all, the elders were an unbeatable authority in Mr. Zayne’s eyes. Mr. Zayne had been in Phoenix Valley for so long but had never managed to get that title.

He felt like Jackie was not going to be a match for an elder. Even though Jackie was

talented, there were so many others with talent, too. In the end, how many of them would end up becoming an elder?

Mr. Zayne laughed for a long time before he stopped. He shook his head helplessly and said, “Since I was the one who brought you here, let me leave you with a reminder: you’d best not get too far ahead of yourself. After all…you’re just a sixth-grade alchemist.”

All of a sudden, they heard a series of footsteps, and all three men turned and spotted two men in green robes with seventh-grade alchemist badges on their chest walking toward them.

Mr. Zayne looked at the two of them and immediately composed himself. He let out a slight smile before he nodded at both figures.

The two of them bowed to Mr. Zayne and politely greeted him. Jackie narrowed his eyes. Even though the two of them had greeted Mr. Zayne, he could not feel much respect in their words. It was like the two of them did not think Mr. Zayne was that important at all.

Any regular alchemist would regard Mr. Zayne highly as a deacon, even though he had not become an elder yet, but the two of them were noticeably exceptions.

Of course, Mr. Zayne could tell that the two green-robed men were not that respectful, but he did not seem too displeased about it at all. He smiled as he introduced them to Jackie, “This is Claude Hodgins, and the one next to him is Benedict Malone. You’ll be heading to Sky Peak Pavilion with the two of them and have a small tournament there.”

Jackie nodded and greeted both green-robed men. The two of them nodded at Jackie as well, but their gazes were noticeably sharp.

They scrutinized Jackie and looked painfully

inquisitive, much to Jackie's discomfort.

Nonetheless, Jackie understood their intent. Mr. Zayne had said that the tournament was limited by age, which meant that the two of them were about the same age as him. Being a seventh-grade alchemist at their age naturally gave them sizable pride.

After Mr. Zayne introduced the three of them, he did not delay matters as he brought them to a small vessel. They headed toward the aforementioned Sky Peak Pavilion.

Jackie did not ask where it was but was instead thinking of the kind of tournament they would be going through.

It made sense why Mr. Zayne thought that Jackie would drag them down. After all, the other two participants were seventh-grade alchemists. Their arrogance was palpable, so they were probably quite capable even among seventh-grade alchemists.

After ascertaining that fact, Jackie relaxed instead.

There were four people in the small vessel. Other than Mr. Zayne, who was steering the vessel, the three of them took up a spot by themselves to rest.

Chapter 2624
Jackie had no intention to befriend the other two men, while these two looked down on Jackie.

After everything that had happened before, Mr. Zayne was noticeably much more careful. As they advanced, he would regularly stop and study their surroundings for any signs of ambush.

Jackie and the two green-robed men merely closed their eyes and rested in the vessel.

Initially, they were still quite composed, but Claude started to lose his patience after a while. Claude looked up at Jackie and said, "I don't know what Elder Rick was thinking for praising you so much. We seventh grade alchemists are the leads here. Make sure you don't drag us down and disappoint Elder Rick!"

Claude talked like he was lecturing Jackie,

which made Jackie frown. He loathed anyone who spoke to him in such a manner, and Claude acted like he was far above Jackie.

If Claude had said anything else, Jackie might not have reacted so badly, but Claude's tone sparked Jackie's fuse.

He looked up at Claude and said, “The one thing I hate the most is those who speak without knowing the whole situation”; you’re obviously that type of person.

“You’ve never seen how good I am before, but you’ve already judged me just by listening to what others have said. What a gentleman, you are. Elder Rick has a grudge against me; he was just praising me in an attempt to drag me down!”

Those words stunned Claude, while Benedict looked up from his seated position at Jackie with a strange expression. Elder Rick had a grudge against this guy? Jackie was recommended because of a grudge?

The two of them could not help but nod

after thinking about it. That made sense. After all, Jackie was only a sixth-grade alchemist, and a sixth-grade alchemist would not have the chance to do anything in this tournament.

They would have to rely on seventh-grade alchemists.

Jackie was only there to add to the numbers. Elder Rick might have said many nice words, but he had never claimed that Jackie would help them obtain victory.

“You’re really something else… I heard that you haven’t been in Phoenix Valley for that long, and you managed to get Elder Rick to hold a grudge against you and even try so hard to cause you trouble. You truly are commendable.”

These words were minced with obvious mockery.

Jackie sighed. He had just regained his bearings when things started to act up again, and he never even wanted to exchange words with these two men!

Even if they were seventh-grade alchemists, Jackie did not regard them that highly at all. However, since the two of them said so, Jackie could not hold back.

Claude looked at Jackie in disdain as if it was all Jackie’s fault that Jackie offended Elder Rick.

Jackie grunted lightly as he looked at Claude. “And what gives you the right to go on your merry way and give others snide remarks?

“You don’t even know what sort of relationship I have with Elder Rick, yet you can so boldly assume and imply that I’m the one at fault. Well, if you’re ever killed by an elder in the future, it’s definitely your fault!”

Claude widened his eyes, not expecting Jackie’s temper to be so bad. He had just said a few words but was shot back so viciously.

“I’ve never seen a sixth-grade alchemist as brazen as you!” spoke Benedict, frowning when he did.

Chapter 2625
Jackie smiled as he turned to look at Benedict. “Well, I’ve never seen seventh grade alchemists like you who don’t know how to mind your own business. The two of you look like you’re just too bored and have nothing to do. Do you think that you can go around and cause other people trouble just because you’re seventh-grade alchemists?”

Jackie had not even been able to finish his tirade when Mr. Zayne turned and shouted, “The three of you, keep quiet! We’ll be at Sky Peak Pavilion soon. Don’t embarrass Phoenix Valley!

“Whatever will happen, you have to remember that you’re from the same place. When you’re outside, you represent Phoenix Valley, I don’t care what you do inside Phoenix Valley, but when you’re outside, you’ll be punished for embarrassing the valley no matter who you

are!”

All three men fell quiet at Mr. Zayne’s words. Nonetheless, Claude and Benedict’s anger never subsided, and it showed on their face.

The two of them frowned as they glared at Jackie who merely shut his eyes and ignored them. Jackie shut his eyes, not wanting anything more to do with them.

Claude and Benedict, having known each other, would no doubt join hands no matter what happened.

After arriving at Sky Peak Pavilion, Mr. Zayne finally introduced the clan.

Sky Peak Pavilion was an eighth-grade clan, but they were not comparable to other eighth-grade clans. They had only been promoted less than two years ago, and Sky Peak Pavilion had just been a seventh grade clan before that.

Meanwhile, Unbreaking Pavilion that was

in conflict with the alliance was at the peak of eighth-grade clans, only one silver away from being a ninth-grade clan.

If Sky Peak Pavilion went to war with Unbreaking Pavilion, they would probably be decimated in less than a month.

After Sky Peak Pavilion was introduced, Jackie could not help but wonder…

What was the point of this tournament? They left for Sky Peak Pavilion and traversed such a large distance, so there had to be something important. What was so important? Jackie needed more time to figure it out.

Sky Peak Pavilion's elders were already waiting outside the mountain. When the vessel stopped, the elders got up to greet them. They exchanged many pleasantries with Mr. Zayne before the elders brought them into the Sky Peak Pavilion inner compound.

Sky Peak Pavilion might be an eighth-grade

sect, but their buildings were not all that impressive. They could not compare to Phoenix Valley.

Sky Peak Pavilion's elders brought them through a long path before they arrived at a spacious hall. There were quite a few people in the hall, but there were only two chairs in the center.

Jackie looked up at the two people who were sitting there. One of them had the special elder robes of Phoenix Valley on, and he was probably the elder from the east that Mr. Zayne had spoken about before.

The other one looked to be about in his late forties. He had a smile on his face, one that did not reach his eyes. He gave the impression of a scheming old fox.

Mr. Zayne bowed to the two of them. "Greetings, Elder Maurice, Master Forrest."

So that was Master Forrest from Sky Peak Pavilion. Looking at how respectful Mr.

Zayne was, Master Forrest most likely held a great position in Sky Peak Pavilion.

What followed was a string of empty pleasantries. They talked about how safe the journey was and asked about some things in Phoenix Pavilion. Mr. Zayne seemed quite familiar with these proceedings.

Jackie quietly stood by the side, not saying anything. It took a bit of time before they got to the main topic.

Chapter 2626
Master Forrest stood up as he waved at the three behind him and said, albeit with false humility, "These are the disciples the Sky Peak Pavilion has raised for many years. They can't compare to your disciples from the Phoenix Valley, but they are skilled in their own right. We brought them here today to hopefully show some of their skill."

Master Forrest continued to introduce the three. The man at the front was Conrad Suller, while the other two behind Conrad were Jameson Lagey and Bradley Cooper respectively.

Each of them was about Jackie's age and sported seventh-grade alchemist badges. After Master Forrest finished his introduction, Elder Maurice took the initiative to introduce his alchemists.

Elder Maurice walked forward and looked at

Claude and Benedict, both standing in front of Jackie, and he had a pleased expression on his face when he did.

However, his face froze the moment he looked at Jackie, especially at the sixth grade alchemist badge on Jackie's chest. He widened his eyes as his lips quivered slightly.

Thankfully, he was facing the Phoenix Valley representatives at that moment, and Sky Peak Pavilion's representatives did not see the change in his expression at all. Elder Maurice took a deep breath before he looked at Mr. Zayne with a questioning look.

It was evident he was asking why a sixth grade alchemist was there.

Zayne's lips froze. He knew before he came here that Elder Maurice would be enraged when he saw Jackie, but Zayne could not afford to offend either side, thus finding himself stuck in the middle.

No matter how versed Mr. Zayne was playing politics, there were some things he could not avoid. In situations like this where it was impossible to get on well with either side, he still had to perform his duties, regardless of how reluctant he was. The higher-ups were the ones who had arranged for him to do it.

Screwing up or offending either side were both incredibly bad scenarios for Zayne. Naturally, he did not want anything to go wrong.

Helpless, he pursed his lips as he returned Elder Maurice's gaze. There were some things that he had to make clear, or he would end up causing himself a lot of trouble.

It would be like telling Elder Maurice that the whole situation was like this because of him.

Mr. Zayne frowned and thought about it for a moment, trying his best to summarize his

thoughts before he gave a simplified version of the explanation he had in mind to Elder Maurice.

Elder Maurice's expression darkened in the blink of an eye. At the start, Elder Maurice was merely shocked that a sixth-grade alchemist was brought over, but after understanding the situation, Elder Maurice immediately understood how terrible the situation was.

With a frown on his face, he whispered, “This is a disaster! Does Rick not know how important this tournament is? Doesn’t he know what the consequences will be if we take the wrong step?”

Mr. Zayne was so afraid that he started to tremble after he heard that. “I don’t know about that, but Elder Rick vouched and insisted on nominating Jackie for this,” he answered helplessly. “He spoke of Jackie’s talents so greatly, and Jackie is at the right age, so everyone eventually agreed to his recommendation.”

Elder Maurice’s face grew hot red in anger. His right hand trembled, and he would have started spouting curse words had the situation allowed him to.

He took a deep breath, composed himself, and tried his best to calm his voice.

“He’s really out here trying to ruin things! If Jackie was at the peak of sixth-grade alchemists and only a hair away from being a seventh-grade alchemist, he might be able to get us some results in this tournament, but you told me that it hasn’t been long since he advanced to be a sixth-grade alchemist. How could he carry such a heavy burden? We’ll completely lose this tournament thanks to Elder Rick’s meddling!”

Chapter 2627
“We’ve never interfered with his grudges, but he’s been getting out of hand lately. He dares to use such an important tournament to deal with someone he doesn’t like! It’s practically an abuse of power! He’s gone too far!”

Mr. Zayne inwardly agreed with Elder Maurice; Elder Rick truly did cross the line this time. After all, this tournament practically gambled the benefits Phoenix Valley could have gotten.

If they did not win the tournament this time, Phoenix Valley would have to pay a greater price to get Sky Peak Pavilion’s help!

With that in mind, Zayne’s expression darkened in his state of exasperation. He was a deacon with a certain level of power in Phoenix Valley, but against those elders, he did not really hold any weight.

He never voiced his opinions so casually when facing the elders, even if he knew he was correct. That was why there was nothing he could do other than feel helpless at that moment.

Elder Maurice struggled to regain his composure and maintain a normal expression, but the more he thought about it, the angrier he became. He wanted nothing more than to rush back to Phoenix Valley and challenge Elder Rick to a duel to the death.

Mr. Zayne glanced behind him and saw Master Forrest looking at them curiously. After all, they had been whispering to each other for a long time.

Zayne let out a slight cough and said, “Elder… Master Forrest has been staring at us.”

Elder Maurice pursed his lips helplessly. After taking a deep breath, he finally suppressed the anger in his heart as he turned to look at Master Forrest.

“Some matters in the valley have arisen, so please forgive me, Master Forrest. There’s been more and more troublesome matters popping up.”

Master Forrest raised an eyebrow. Despite his mounting curiosity, Elder Maurice was still someone important, and he could not afford to make things too awkward.

Master Forrest let out a laugh before he nodded. “You’ll be here for a few days anyway, so a bit of a delay is not an issue. You can have your conversation more privately for now.”

Elder Maurice nodded and walked forward. He waved Jackie and the others over, and they nodded hurriedly. They followed closely behind Elder Maurice and arrived at the corner of the hall.

At that moment, Elder Maurice could no longer compose himself. He reached out and pulled Mr. Zayne toward him before hissing with gritted teeth, “I don’t care what Rick is thinking, but if this thing ends up dragging us down, I won’t let him off!”

Elder Maurice was already irate at that moment. He would normally never say something to a deacon, especially since Mr. Zayne was not that close to him, but Elder Maurice felt like he would die of frustration if he did not vent out his anger.

Zayne pursed his lips helplessly, knowing how angry Elder Maurice was.

There was no longer any way for them to change the situation. Jackie was already there, and they could not possibly make any last-minute changes. With that in mind, Zayne’s gaze swiveled to look at Jackie.

Chapter 2628
During the entire exchange, Jackie never lost his composure as he merely stood behind them quietly. Even if he heard some of the things they have said, he barely reacted to them. It was as if they were not talking about him at all.

Claude and Benedict, on the other hand, could not contain how pleased they felt. After being pulled over, they managed to hear some of the conversations despite Elder Maurice trying his best to lower his volume. Of course, they knew why Elder Maurice was so visibly irked.

Claude smirked as he looked at Jackie, the nuisance he was. If it was anyone else, Elder Maurice would not have been so angry, and the matter would not be in such a mess.

The moment he thought back to how arrogant Jackie was in the vessel, Claude felt a build-up of fury within him. Jackie ought to know to choose his battles; whom he could offend and could not.

He raised an eyebrow as he deliberately leaned toward Jackie, whispering so none could hear him, “Do you hear that? Elder Maurice is furious thanks to you. Someone like you will only drag us down in this tournament.”

Jackie pursed his lips in exasperation. Normally, he would ignore whatever people were saying, but Claude was like an annoying fly in his ears that would buzz to his ear, annoying him to no end.

He looked at Claude and lowly retorted, “Have you conveniently forgotten everything I have said before? You’ve never seen me in action before, so why are you setting that judgment on me already? You think I’ll drag you down? I think you’re just trash.”

Jackie might have lowered his voice when he said that, but he was not as afraid of others hearing him as Claude was. Both Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne had heard parts of it, even when they stood in front of them.

The two of them turned to look at Jackie at the same time, but Jackie’s expression did not change at all when he felt their eyes on him-still calm as usual. Meanwhile, Claude’s face had turned purple from Jackie’s words, and he was so angry that both his fists trembled.

He noticed that nothing he was saying to gain the upper hand was working against Jackie; that man did not seem to care what he was saying at all. Jackie seemed to be willing to say anything back at him, regardless of the situation they were in.

Claude almost spat out blood in anger. If Benedict had not pulled him back, Claude would have started a fight with Jackie on the spot.

Elder Maurice narrowed his eyes as he appraised Jackie. Mr. Zayne frowned, obviously having something to say. However, with his cautious nature, he swallowed his words.

The atmosphere was suddenly incredibly quiet. Elder Maurice let out a small laugh as he walked toward Jackie. “You don’t seem scared at all, are you now?”

Jackie stared straight into Elder Maurice’s eyes. Even though he could not really hear everything Elder Maurice had said earlier, he knew where Elder Maurice stood.

As long as he was not on the same side as Elder Maurice, Jackie might have a bit more room to maneuver in the coming events. With that, Jackie sported a proud expression for the first time as he nodded slightly. “Of course not. If I were afraid, I wouldn’t have come.”

Elder Maurice raised an eyebrow at this, a curious expression etched onto his face.

After all, Jackie had a sixth-grade alchemist badge on his chest, but he spoke even more proudly than a seventh-grade alchemist.

Elder Maurice frowned as a thought sprung in his head. This kid before him must have been very confident in his skills, provided he was not just being overly proud.

Even though he usually met the latter, he was hopeful that Jackie was the former at this point. Elder Maurice took a deep breath as he said seriously, “You’ve had a rift with Elder Rick, haven’t you?”

Chapter 2629
It might have been worded as a question, but Elder Maurice’s expression clearly said that he knew what went down.

Jackie, not bothering to hide the truth, nodded. “Yes, we had some conflicts before. There was an alchemist who felt like I insulted him after I didn’t give my task to him at the task hall, so he arranged for an assassin to kill me.

“After the matter was exposed, he tried to have Elder Rick speak for him, and to fulfill his promise to that person, Elder Rick twisted the truth completely. I exposed him in the end, however.

“The two alchemists who tried to have me killed are already locked up, leaving Elder Rick rather humiliated by the matter. Having lost whatever good things and benefits he had due to that stunt, he decided to trouble me.”

Of course, Mr. Zayne had briefly gone through this matter with Elder Maurice, so Elder Maurice more or less knew what had happened.

After Jackie relayed his story, he suddenly raised his voice and said in a righteous tone, “Before I entered Phoenix Valley, I thought that the higher-ups would never resort to favoring anyone like this, even if there was some competition inside. It looks like I was far too naive.

“I feel like someone like Elder Rick doesn’t deserve the position of an elder at all. His moral character isn’t worthy, and I’ll never acknowledge him.”

The temperature dropped as he said that. Even Claude and Benedict widened their eyes and looked at Jackie in shock.

Truthfully, they shared the same sentiment, that Elder Rick did not deserve to be an elder. Regardless, Jackie actually dared to voice it out, which surprised them.

After all, Jackie was still an alchemist in Phoenix Valley, but he had just voiced his displeasure and even questioned the higher-ups.

He even questioned their moral compass, something no ordinary person would ever do. Even if Claude was downright vain, he would never question another elder in front of another!

Worse still, Jackie spoke so confidently, so boldly, and his entire posture reeked of pride!

Benedict frowned. “Jackie, how dare you? Even if an elder does something wrong, it’s not your place to question them!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he turned to look at Benedict. “I’ve seen many dogs like you. Even if you continue barking, I’ll never agree with you.

“Don’t act all holier-than-thou when this doesn’t even concern you. If it weren’t for the evidence I had in hand, the attempt to assassinate me wouldn’t have been cleared, and I would’ve been the unfortunate one!

“This doesn’t concern you at all, so you obviously don’t care about it. You can talk to that elder without a care in the world to suck up to him, but if you’re trying to stop me with your actions, then that’s the wrong move!”

After he said that, Jackie walked forward, forcing Benedict to take a step back. Benedict never expected Jackie to be so resolved. All of a sudden

“Well said!” spoke Elder Maurice affirmatively, which startled everyone present. Jackie, on the other hand, raised an eyebrow.

Well, it seemed like he had taken the right

gamble.

Chapter 2630
Elder Maurice was already infuriated by Elder Rick for meddling in his affairs. He was already planning on fighting back against Elder Rick, hence why he could boldly applaud Jackie’s words.

Jackie had earned an ample amount of Elder Maurice’s favor.

Elder Maurice looked up slightly. “Even though I think you’re right, you still need the right to say those words. If your pride is just an empty tin can, your words are all meaningless without the power to back up your claims.”

Elder Maurice put his hand on Jackie's shoulder as he added, albeit with a relatively firm voice, "If you do well this time, I'll make sure to support you. If you don't do well, you won't just have made an enemy of Elder Rick, but me as well."

Elder Maurice's words placed an invisible pressure against Jackie. Additionally, his words also sparked interesting expressions from the rest of their companions.

Claude felt like Jackie had gone overboard with bragging this time, and he might have just rocked a boat he should not have. Jackie could not possibly do well, so Jackie would ultimately disappoint Elder Maurice in the end. Moreover, Jackie had carried himself so haughtily before, acting like Elder Rick did not faze him.

With that in mind, he could not help but let out a cold laugh. Claude narrowed his eyes and looked at Jackie as if he was looking at an idiot.

Not only did Jackie's self-righteous words fail to get him out of his predicament, but they merely ensnared him into a deeper pit. If he did not produce any results, Elder Maurice would never forgive Jackie.

Claude and Benedict exchanged glances; it was obvious how happy the both of them

were.

Jackie nodded. "I'll say the same thing as I've said. If I can't do it, I wouldn't have come."

Elder Maurice patted Jackie lightly on the arm. "Good! Very good! Remember what you said. Don't end up shooting yourself in the foot!"

After saying that, Elder Maurice no longer wasted any more time, turning and walking back toward the center of the hall.

All this while, Master Forrest looked like he had returned to his seat and was enjoying his tea, but his gaze had always been on Elder Maurice and the others.

After he saw Elder Maurice bringing the other four back, Master Forrest immediately put down the cup in his hand as he put a smile on his face, standing up to greet them.

At that moment, Elder Maurice had already

composed himself. He looked at the people from Sky Peak Pavilion and extended his hand forward to introduce those from Phoenix Valley.

There was nothing too special about Claude and Benedict, since both of them had seventh-grade alchemist badges on their chest. When it came to Jackie, however, a few of them suddenly had a meaningful look in their eyes.

In truth, they had already noticed Jackie before. After the introductions, their curiosity deepened. After all, other than Jackie, everyone else participating in the tournament was a seventh-grade alchemist.

Sky Peak Pavilion was a far cry from Phoenix Valley, and Phoenix Valley was a major camp of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance.

Phoenix Valley had produced countless talented alchemists, but they had actually

sent a sixth-grade alchemist, which greatly shocked everyone.

Feeling everyone’s gazes, Elder Maurice’s anger was triggered once more, but this time, it was aimed at Elder Rick.

Jackie was at the right age, sure, but he was just a sixth-grade alchemist. Phoenix Valley had so many alchemists, and it should not have been hard for them to choose three alchemists who were suitable!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2631 - 2640

Chapter 2631

They could have found a better alchemist from Phoenix Valley had they tried to. However, Elder Rick had deliberately caused a scene and insisted on recommending Jackie, evoking everyone's doubt and ridicule.

Master Forrest had a smirk on his face as he walked toward Jackie, saying as he turned to look at Elder Maurice, "This guy is obviously an excellent sixth-grade alchemist. I had thought that everyone participating this time would be seventh grade alchemists."

Elder Maurice steeled himself, refusing to show any unsavory expression. He let out a laugh as he answered, "Jackie truly is excellent among sixth-grade alchemists, but this is just a small tournament, so we didn't really put much thought into who we sent here."

Elder Maurice had not dared to be too confident. After all, he was not sure where Jackie's skills lay. Even if Jackie had assured him earlier, Elder Maurice could not trust Jackie wholeheartedly.

The vagueness of the answer intrigued Master Forrest. His gaze moved around as he looked at Jackie with an even more curious expression. The three participants behind Master Forrest, too, looked at Jackie peculiarly.

Elder Maurice, not willing to continue dwelling on the topic, took a deep breath and raised his voice, saying, "Alright, it's almost time. Let's start the tournament. The rules will remain the same: best two out of three. As for what we're betting on, I won't repeat it. If we lose, we'll be willing to pay up."

Advertisement

There was weight in Elder Maurice's words, and his earlier confidence had seemed to have dissipated. Elder Maurice had always been very confident in the alchemists produced by Phoenix Valley, but Jackie's abrupt appearance had shattered his confidence.

Whatever would transpire from that moment onward was obscure, and he was no longer as proud.

Jackie, meanwhile, frowned, wondering what it was they had betted on. Even though Elder Maurice did not say anything, Jackie guessed that it had something to do with the conflict against the Unbreaking Pavilion.

After all, that was the biggest incident in Middle Province at that moment. The tournament should have something to do with the war, and maybe even some exchange of resources.

Advertisement

As for the exact details of the deal, Jackie could not guess it. No matter what, if he lost the tournament, Elder Maurice would not be able to handle the matter easily and would surely exact his anger against Jackie.

Master Forrest nodded. “Of course we’ll pay up if we lose, but could I ask you a few questions before we start?”

Master Forrest’s sudden question caused Elder Maurice to raise an eyebrow. Even though he did not say anything, Elder Maurice knew that Master Forrest was not someone who did things for a reason.

The questions would definitely not be easy to answer.

However, Master Forrest had just afforded them a bit of time to smooth things out before, so it would seem petty of him if he did not let Master Forrest speak.

Elder Maurice was forced to nod. “Go ahead.”

Master Forrest’s lips curled up into a smile that could only be described as awfully pleased. “Middle Province has descended into utter chaos now. Everyone has their own thoughts, and the main cause is the conflict between the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance and the Unbreaking Pavilion.

“Even though everyone knows that, we don’t really know why you started fighting. Ever since the matter started, I’ve been incredibly curious as to why you started the conflict with the Unbreaking Pavilion and why it escalated to the point a war broke out.”

Chapter 2632
Master Forrest had dug up and questioned something everyone present wanted to know, and even Mr. Zayne did not know the details. All he knew was that war had already occurred, and the higher-ups had no intention of stopping it. It looked like they were willing to fight until they had nothing left.

Advertisement

Upon Master Forrest’s question, everyone turned to look at Elder Maurice with questioning gazes.

Elder Maurice pursed his lips helplessly.

He knew the old fox would ask that question. Thus, he let out a slight laugh as he looked up and said, “I thought all of you already knew. Isn’t it simple? It’s because of the Valley of Enlightenment, of course, a place with incredibly rare resources. The two of us

have one key to the place each,and it’s because of this key that the conflict has escalated to such a state.”

Alas, Elder Maurice’s answer failed to satisfy everyone’s curiosity. It was a very standard and official answer, yes, but meaningless at the same time.

All of them knew that opening the Valley of Enlightenment required two keys. One of the keys was in the hands of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, while the other key was in the hands of the Unbreaking Pavilion.

Only by combining the two keys would the Valley of Enlightenment be opened, but that was not where the problem was. Normally, both sides would sit down to negotiate such a situation.

At the end of the day, no one knew what was inside the Valley of Enlightenment before it was opened.

War invoked so many forces, what more with the fact that both the Alliance and the Pavillion were major powers. If they fought to the brink, then it would be a bitter end.

If they end up accidentally wasting too much of their power, the other forces in Middle Province would definitely be staring at them intently. The moment one side could no longer hold on, it was very possible that other forces would jump into the battle.

A fight between two parties made it easier for a third party to win. No one believed that the higher-ups of the two forces did not know such a simple thing. If they knew, they would not have started a war so easily. A war would never start for any small matter.

That should have been a win-win situation. As long as both of them sat down to negotiate, they would run almost no risk of a third party benefiting, even if they did not agree to all terms.

However, over half a month after, the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance and the Unbreaking Pavilion both declared war, shocking all the forces in Middle Province.

None of them could figure out why both sides were fighting.

Master Forrest laughed as he raised an eyebrow. “I know the two of you have a key each, but you could all have just sat down and negotiated for a solution. Why do you have to go to war?”

After saying that, Master Forrest suddenly showed a worried expression, as if he was worried for the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. “If you start a fight just like that, you might end up being laughed at by other forces. You might just draw attention to yourselves!

“If you use up too much, they’ll act at the right moment. Then, the consequences won’t be so easily predicted. The Middle Province Alchemist Alliance’s tens of thousands of years of tradition could possibly disappear in a flash!”

Elder Maurice frowned slightly before he nodded with a nonchalant expression. “Master Forrest is right. We’ll make sure we keep our guard up and not hurt ourselves too much.”

Master Forrest continued to speak with concern, “When it comes to war, it’s never easy to control. After all, the moment you start fighting, both sides will end up losing resources.

“Unbreaking Pavilion is one of the best clans among the eighth-grade ones. Even though the alliance isn’t that weak, you still can’t look down on them. The moment your resources are depleted to a certain level, the other forces will all jump in.

“You know how those people in Sable Pavilion are. They’re just hiding in the darkness with their eyes on both parties”.

Chapter 2633
Elder Maurice frowned. Even though Master Forrest’s words seemed to be driven by concern for the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance, Elder Maurice could see the true nature behind those words.

Sable Pavilion was an existence among eighth-grade clans that was on par with the Unbreaking Pavilion. The Sable Pavilion and the Unbreaking Pavilion were the two strongest eighth-grade clans around.

Master Forrest’s words were not wrong; Elder Maurice and the others knew it as well. Ever since the war broke out, Sable Pavilion had been quietly looking into things.

Elder Maurice pursed his lips helplessly as he said, “We know of everything you spoke of. Thank you for your advice.”

After that, Elder Maurice fell silent, not willing to speak anymore. However, Master Forrest was fully intent on digging out the truth behind the scenes and showed no signs of stopping. Even the tournament had turned into an afterthought.

“The Valley of Enlightenment must be an astounding place if it can cause all of you to fight even with the potential consequences. Let me guess… Could there be saint-level treasures within?

“Oh, might there be some treasures left behind by an ancient ancestor instead? Will you be able to dominate Middle Province if you got it?”

Master Forrest's eyes nearly popped out of their sockets as he spoke, and it was evident just how excited he was.

A human's greed had no limits. Even though Master Forrest knew that there was no way for him to participate in it, he refused to give up on that hope. Even if he could not get the best treasure, it was decent enough if he could just get a little and improve himself.

Sky Peak Pavilion and Phoenix Valley shared a decent relationship. Sky Peak Pavilion had spent a long time trying to figure out the true reason for the conflict, but the Phoenix Pavilion's higher-ups had been incredibly tight-lipped.

Though they could not find the truth behind everything, Master Forrest refused to give up.

He wanted to know the sort of treasure that had caused two massive forces in Middle Province to end up in an all-out war before they even sat down to negotiate. Both of these forces had been incredibly quiet toward Sky Peak Pavilion.

They would only be able to get a sliver of information no matter who they asked, or even just the official answer. The other forces were all restless beyond relief.

Everyone wanted to find out the secret behind all of it. If they knew the secret, they

would be able to take advantage the moment there was a chance!

Elder Maurice looked at Master Forrest's excited face. So excited, in fact, that Master Forrest could not contain his expression. He longed to know the truth.

The more he acted like that, the calmer Elder Maurice was.

"Master Forrest, you're misunderstanding things. Both keys need to be combined if we want to open the valley, but both of our sides are already enemies at this point. How could we work together to open the gate?

"How could we know what's inside before we open it? Maybe you're right; maybe there's a really valuable treasure inside or something amazing left behind. Until the valley is open, however, this is all just speculation."

Chapter 2634
"Impossible!" exclaimed Master Forrest with widened eyes.

He took a deep breath before he said, "A war wouldn't have broken out if you hadn't known what's inside. The two sides are fighting because what's inside is far too valuable.

“You want it for yourselves; that’s why you just started a war right away! We’re not little children here! Do you think your words will throw me off?”

Elder Maurice frowned, feeling like Master Forrest was borderline obsessed at this point. He seemed insistent on getting to the truth right there, but Elder Maurice did not get angered at all. Instead, he looked at Master Forrest earnestly.

“The Valley of Enlightenment is definitely part of the reason our two forces are fighting, but there are many more complicated reasons as well. As for the actual reason, I can’t tell you-it’s Phoenix Valley’s secret.”

Master Forrest’s face darkened, not trusting what Elder Maurice said. However, Elder Maurice had no obligation to reveal the secret to Master Forrest. Just sparing him so much time on the matter was already incredibly polite to Master Forrest.

Elder Maurice took a deep breath before he said seriously, “Master Forrest, you’ve already asked the questions you wanted to, and I’ve answered everything. As for whether you believe it or not, that’s not something I can control.

“It doesn’t matter if you believe it or not, for all of this is the truth. Today, I brought our people over not because I wanted to answer your questions. It’s late. Should we start the tournament?”

Elder Maurice’s words completely stuffed

Master Forrest’s questions back into his mouth. Master Forrest’s face stiffened, finally realizing that he had gotten a bit too excited.

The most important thing he had to do that day was to hold the tournament for the younger generation. If the Sky Peak Pavilion lost, their future negotiations would involve much higher prices for them to pay.

Master Forrest took a deep breath as he repressed his skittishness. He forced out a smile as he turned to face everyone. “Elder Maurice is right; those questions aren’t the main focus of today. The tournament is more important!”

That signaled the end of the questions.

Even Jackie let out a regretful look on his face. He wanted to know so badly why the two forces went to war, too.

This question had been in his head for a very long time, and he would often find himself wondering about the truth behind everything. He kept on feeling like the matter involved a lot of things behind the scenes.

There had to be an immense reward awaiting them if the two forces were willing to ignore the inquisitive looks of others as well as potentially damage their foundation. After all, the Unbreaking Pavilion was at the peak of the eighth grade clans.

Even though the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance had its roots in Middle Province for a very long time, the Unbreaking Pavilion clearly had a very strong foundation to dare to go to war against them.

No one knew how long the war would last and how many people it would involve, and neither did they know if it would end up involving themselves. Jackie was both concerned and doubtful as he thought of everything.

Even though he was not as cowardly as Rudy, he was not so carefree that he had no concern. If the two sides continued fighting in such a state, Jackie would end up involved eventually.

Chapter 2635
That was not something Jackie wanted to see happening.

He let out a sigh as he looked at Claude and Benedict next to him. The two of them had regretful looks on their faces. It seemed like they did not know the secret behind the truth of the war.

Jackie turned to look at Mr. Zayne. Even though Mr. Zayne did his best to compose himself, Jackie still managed to see a hint of curiosity in his eyes. It seemed like Mr. Zayne was out of the loop, too.

The higher-ups kept everything tightly under wraps, much like a secretive massive chessboard. If the two forces were really at the stage of being such irreconcilable enemies, the secrets should not have been guarded so strictly.

The only reason left, then, was that the secret involved incredible benefits for either side. Jackie became even more confused as he thought about it, feeling like there were far too many things hidden from everyone.

As Jackie was deep in his thoughts, Master Forrest had his subordinates bring in the tools required for the tournament. There were a total of six condensation cards, and each card had 2000 pill runes within.

Not a single rune in them was complete. Some lacked 80 percent, while some lacked half.

Jackie immediately knew what the first match would entail the moment he saw it. It was like the test that Jackie had gone through in the Elder Hall back then. The six of them would all have to fill up 2000 pill runes.

Just like Jackie had thought, Master Forrest, acting as the host of the tournament,

started to read out the rules as he pointed at the six cards, “Everyone should be familiar

with the first match today. You should have gone through this test plenty of times back at your respective places.

“The requirements for the match are more or less the same as what you’ve experienced. The six of you will have a condensation card each. There are two thousand pill runes that are incomplete within them.

“The runes are a lot more lacking than the ones you would’ve had to fill before. After you fill up the runes, you have to achieve a sixty-percent refinement rate. Any pill runes with a fifty-percent refinement rate will be marked as failures.”

Everyone nodded at that. Even though they had all gone through this test before, only a fool would not know that the test they were about to go through would be far harder than anything they had gone through.

Claude glanced at the condensation card and could not help but whisper, “My gosh,so many of these pill runes are incredibly hard to understand! Almost half of them are pill runes that are only used in eighth grade pills and above. This test cannot be underestimated…”

Benedict frowned and said, “The degree of incompletion isn’t uniform either. Some of them are even lacking as much as eighty percent. We only have twenty percent of the pill rune to figure out what it is, and we still need to fill it up. This is a little too hard.

“If it’s only half incomplete, I’d be quite confident, but now? I don’t even know how I’ll perform!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at the condensation cards. He had to say that he did not blame Benedict for losing his confidence. He had gone through the same test in the Elder Hall before, but it had been far easier.

Even though the pill runes were incomplete that time as well, the degree was just half or

60-percent at most. At the very least, they could figure out what the original rune looked like from the parts that remained.

A pill rune that only had 20-percent was only left with a corner. The difficulty was raised several times. Even very skilled seventh-grade alchemists were not necessarily able to figure out what the original rune looked like just from 20 percent of the rune, let alone with limited time.

Due to how young they were, they had not been seventh-grade alchemists for that long. They were very talented but lacked the time put into the craft.

Chapter 2636
After the six contestants saw the runes that they needed to complete, all of them had concerned expressions except for Jackie.

All of them were really worried and scared that they would not perform well. Other than Jackie, the other five contestants were considered quite skilled back at their irrespective forces.

They were quite confident in their own skills and were always proud of themselves when they went out. However, this time they looked like they were in trouble.

Conrad from Sky Peak Pavilion frowned and said, “Isn’t this test a bit too hard? Two thousand pill runes, it would already be amazing if I managed to complete eighty percent of them.

“If seventy-five percent of those runes I completed were passable, then I would have performed beyond any expectations. This

will probably be the worst result I’ve gotten since I became an alchemist.”

Conrad’s words resonated with everyone around him. All of them nodded, but Jackie was the only one who quietly observed the condensing card.

Jackie was constantly searching for those incomplete runes in his memories. He had already shut himself out from whatever anyone else was saying.

At that moment, Master Forrest suddenly said, “This tournament means a lot this time. It would be meaningless if we used only easy questions.”

After that, Master Forrest looked over at Bradly. Bradley merely nodded without much emotion on his face. He looked exceptionally calm, which Elder Maurice and Jackie both caught.

The two of them frowned at the same time, feeling like that expression must mean something. Master Forrest let out a cough

and said, “You’ll have fifteen minutes to prepare yourself. After all, the tournament is an important matter this time. All of you have to maintain a calm state.”

After saying that, Master Forrest turned around and sat on his chair. He sipped on some tea that was brought over. Master Forrest seemed incredibly calm and collected to any outsider.

He had calmly explained the rules and sat back down. He even continued casually sipping his tea. In Jackie's eyes, there was definitely something up. He frowned as he turned to look at Elder Maurice next to him.

Elder Maurice had his eyebrows furrowed and were deep in thought as well. With the two of them behaving like that, Jackie immediately knew that something was wrong. Even though there was nothing odd with how Master Forrest was acting, he was being far too composed.

It was as though the tournament did not seem to matter at all to him. Master Forrest had been in Sky Peak Pavilion for so many years. He did not rise to power purely because of his skill, but his scheming ways as well.

It was a tournament that involved many benefits. Even Elder Maurice was nowhere near as calm as Master Forrest. It was as if the results were not that important at all. Thinking about that, Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked over at the three contestants on the other side.

There did not seem to be anything wrong with them. The one called Bradley had left the most profound impression on Jackie. It was not only because of the look Master Forrest had shot Bradley.

Ever since he saw Bradley, Jackie noticed there was not much emotion on the guy's face. Even when he was introduced to everyone, people were looking at him with a confused gaze, but he maintained a calm expression.

Chapter 2637
Bradley acted as if everything that was happening around him was not that significant. The more Bradley acted like that, the more suspicious Jackie was. Could something be different about Bradley?

Before every test, the contestants would always be given fifteen minutes to calm themselves down. That amount of time was not too long, but it was not that short either.

Claude and Benedict had not found anything wrong with the situation. Ever since Master Forrest announced that the fifteen minutes had started, the two of them had their eyes shut as they started to prepare themselves.

However, Jackie was different from the two of them. Jackie did not need to prepare as they did. He had always been the most composed one. At the start, five of them were silent, but after a while, Elder Maurice could not hold it in.

He turned to look at Mr. Zayne and lowered his voice, "Actually, I've never thought we would ever lose in this tournament. After all, Sky Peak Pavilion might be an eighth grade clan, but they still focus on martial arts.

“Phoenix Pavilion doesn’t only have martial artists, but large amounts of alchemists as well. I’ve never thought for a moment that our alchemists would lose to them. That has never changed.

“Even though Jackie appeared, I feel like our chances of winning are still very high with Claude and Benedict. Yet, just look at Master Forrest, he looks like he’s incredibly confident. I refuse to believe he’d be so idle if he did not prepare anything!”

After saying that, Elder Maurice’s lips were pursed into a line. He narrowed his eyes slightly as various thoughts danced in his

head. Mr. Zayne frowned slightly, feeling like something was wrong as well.

At that moment, Master Forrest was idly holding his teacup and leisurely sipping his tea. He looked like a customer at a teahouse. However you looked at it, it seemed like he was not concerned about the results at all.

Mr. Zayne took a deep breath and whispered back, “I think they must have made some preparations. After all, this involves a lot of benefits. If they lose, they’ll end up paying a greater price.

“Since he represents Sky Peak Pavilion, he would naturally want the best for them. He doesn’t need to think about anything else. The fact that he’s so calm means he’s confident in this tournament. He has definitely come prepared!”

When Elder Maurice heard that, his expression soured. He even clenched his fists slightly as his breathing quickened a little.

Elder Maurice felt incredibly helpless. He felt his composure coming and going in waves. He was the person in charge of the tournament this time. If they lost the tournament and Phoenix Valley ends up having to pay a greater price, he would definitely be berated harshly. He would be given the relevant punishment as well.

Those were actually secondary, he was more afraid that his position would be threatened. Thinking about that, he could not help but curse Elder Rick for being so petty and despicable.

If someone else was there instead of Jackie, he might be more confident. Even though Jackie had given his guarantee before, Elder Maurice was not someone who just believed the words of others.

He would not believe in Jackie before he witnessed Jackie’s skills for himself.

“This time, defeat is absolutely not allowed! Do you all hear me?!” Elder Maurice said in a low voice.

Chapter 2638
After noticing that something was wrong, Elder Maurice pulled the four of them aside to an empty space. He was not in the mood to be drinking tea with Master Forrest. His emotions were all over the place at that moment.

“We have to think of a counterplan!” Elder Maurice said indignantly.

Mr. Zayne’s lips twitched in mild exasperation as he carefully said, “Things have already advanced to this point, what kind of counterplan could we have? We can’t possibly have a change of contestants at this point.

“Actually, I was very curious about this. If this tournament is so important, why didn’t we send alchemists from the inner valley?” Mr. Zayne’s words caused Elder Maurice to feel even more helpless.

When Jackie heard that, he perked up his

ears as he looked toward Claude and Benedict. Turns out the two of them did not come from the inner valley.

That was actually incredibly strange to Jackie. The two of them had acted so arrogantly that Jackie had thought that they were from the inner valley. After all, the inner valley was the core of Phoenix Valley.

Only the best of Phoenix Valley gathered there, but after Mr. Zayne’s words, Jackie finally realized that he was completely wrong. The two of them were not from the inner valley but were alchemists from the outer valley.

However, Jackie had never met the two of them before! Elder Maurice shook his head helplessly and replied, “This is something out of my control. With how complicated the current situation is, we can’t use the power of the inner valley. We can’t have them reveal themselves, they have to be our last line of defense!”

Mr. Zayne obviously could not tell the meaning behind that explanation, and only saw that Elder Maurice was filled with a sense of helplessness. After Jackie heard those words, he frowned as well.

He thought about those words in his mind over and over again. Why could they not use the power of the inner valley? The inner valley was full of secrets, but seventh grade alchemists were not some secret that nobody knew.

Why were they unable to leave the inner valley? Why were they the last line of defense? Jackie got more confused the more he thought about it. Mr. Zayne’s lips twitched, not knowing what to say.

Elder Maurice looked even more worried at that moment. He felt like he was going to start growing gray hair. Initially, Claude and Benedict were still standing by the side as they rested and listened to Elder Maurice.

The more they listened, the more it felt off. Mr. Zayne's words seemed to be questioning their skills and talents. Claude could not accept that.

Claude let out a slight cough as he said, "I doubt those people really amount to anything. Even though we're not from the inner valley, it's only a matter of time before we get in. Mr. Zayne, you don't have to look down on us like that…"

Mr. Zayne's lips twitched when he heard that, almost rolling his eyes at them. Elder Maurice let out a small laugh as he said without any mercy, "Do you think the inner valley is somewhere you can just get into if you want to? Even though you're both seventh-grade alchemists now, the test to get into the inner valley has never been about how good you are as an alchemist, but about your actual talent!

"Even a sixth-grade alchemist can be chosen to enter at any time if they're talented enough. The two of you have been in Phoenix Valley for quite some time, but you've never received the test before. That proves that you have no right to enter the inner valley."

Elder Maurice's words held nothing back as they damaged their pride. Claude widened his eyes in disbelief, while Benedict was so angry his fists were clenched up and shaking.

If Elder Maurice had not been the one speaking, the two of them would definitely have kicked up a fuss. After hearing those words, Mr. Zayne let out a cold smile.

Chapter 2639
Even though Mr. Zayne did not say a word, Claude could sense the mockery behind his cold smile. At that moment, Claude felt even more unhappy with the situation.

Neither of them knew how to get into the inner valley, and they had never received the test before. The two of them had thought that it was because neither of them had any noticeable breakthroughs as seventh-grade alchemists.

Yet, it seemed that it was purely because they were not talented enough! When Jackie heard that, he got even more curious about the inner valley.

Jackie had not planned on staying in Phoenix Valley for that long. He felt like Phoenix Valley was an incredibly dangerous place. If he stayed there for too long, it was possible he would end up being pulled in, but Jackie was beginning to sway from that decision.

He really wanted to see why the inner valley was so mysterious. Even with so much at stake, the higher-ups of Phoenix Valley were not willing to send them. There had to be a reason for that.

Jackie narrowed his eyes as various thoughts swam in his head. While he was occupied with his thoughts, Mr. Zayne suddenly let out a surprised exclamation.

The few of them followed his gaze curiously. Mr. Zayne faced forward as he looked in the direction of the members of the Sky Peak Pavilion. Jackie followed his gaze and noticed that Mr. Zayne was staring at Bradley.

Mr. Zayne frowned as he scanned Bradley up and down a few times. He looked like he had seen something through Bradley. After a while, Mr. Zayne finally said, “I keep feeling like I’ve seen Bradley before! As for where I met him, I can’t really recall. Why do I keep feeling like he looks really familiar?”

After that, Elder Maurice hurriedly asked, “He looks familiar to you? You’ve seen him somewhere before?”

Mr. Zayne did not answer Elder Maurice immediately and merely continued staring at Bradley. He looked like he wanted to skin Bradley alive.

After a moment, Mr. Zayne finally slapped his head in realization.

“I remember now! It’s the test from the inner valley a year ago! Bradley was there! Elder Maurice, weren’t you sent off on an errand then? The few of us were left behind to help out.

“The guy had a very good showing that time. I was sure he would be accepted into the inner valley, but his family suddenly changed their mind. They paid a very big price to bring Bradley out!”

Those words caused everyone there to widen their eyes. That piece of news was too shocking. Turns out that Bradley was also part of Phoenix Valley before and had even taken the test.

“He had performed excellently in Phoenix Valley and was just a step away from being accepted into the inner valley before he was brought away by his family. They had paid a large price as well.”

Elder Maurice’s expression changed immediately to those words. He quickly pulled Mr. Zayne’s arm and said, “Keep your voice down! Tell me about it in detail!”

Jackie was suddenly speechless at Elder Maurice’s words. It was obvious Elder Maurice did not want everyone else to hear it. Mr. Zayne proceeded to whisper into Elder Maurice’s ears after that as they talked in private for a long time.

Chapter 2640
Their expressions turned more serious the more they spoke. Elder Maurice in particular had his brows furrowing tighter and tighter.

Even though it was not clear what they were talking about, a lot could be learned from Elder Maurice's expression. If Bradley really was that talented, then it would be over for them in the tournament.

Elder Maurice had been incredibly confident in their lineup, but there was no way he could keep up his good mood after knowing Bradley's talent.

Claude stood by the side as he whispered, "Even though Bradley is quite talented, it doesn't mean we've lost…"

He was not willing to admit defeat. Even though he had never participated in the inner valley tests, Claude did not feel like he lacked any talent. He had always done very

well in Phoenix Valley and had done much better than his peers.

He did not know how one gets qualified to get into Phoenix Valley, but he felt that he was more than qualified to take the test and enter Phoenix Valley.

Jackie could not help but let out a cold smile at those words. He had seen many people like Claude. All of them felt like their talents were better than everyone else, and that no one could beat them.

Everything was good and all the honor belonged to them. However, Jackie felt like they had that attitude only because they were arrogant.

After entering Phoenix Valley, Jackie had asked Lou how one could get into the inner valley. Lou had said assuringly that he did not know how to get into the inner valley because that was a big secret.

The inner valley would constantly observe all the alchemists in the outer valley. The ones they thought were qualified would go through a test to enter. There were times when even excellent, high-ranked alchemists were not accepted by the inner valley.

The inner valley never had any sort of testing standards, nor had anyone ever seen how they were chosen. The more secretive it was, the more curious Jackie got about the inner valley.

Elder Maurice said in anger, "No wonder that guy's still in the mood to drink tea. He was already prepared! However, what's wrong with Bradley? He actually didn't want something as amazing as the inner valley!

“He’s now suddenly at the Sky Peak Pavilion and one of their alchemists. What sort of place is the Sky Peak Pavilion? They’ve never produced any notable alchemists before, so why would he choose this place?”

Elder Maurice got angrier the more he thought about it. He was already struggling to even keep his voice down. Mr. Zayne frowned and said in exasperation, “There’s definitely something happening behind the scenes that we don’t know about. We did not care about it that much that time, since there are already so many masters in Phoenix Valley, but I never expected him to be standing on the opposite side of us, helping the Sky Peak Pavilion fight over our resources!”

Elder Maurice’s face darkened a little, “The Middle Province Alchemist Alliance has always been the gathering spot for the alchemists of Middle Province. Every single alchemist would fight incredibly hard to enter the alliance.

“Yet this brat is trying to go against the grain! If he ruins things for us today, I’ll make sure he pays!” Elder Maurice was incredibly furious.

There were too many variables at this point.

Even though the test has yet to start, Elder Maurice was already worried about the final result. Everything pointed to the tournament that day spiraling out of his control.

After he sighed, he suddenly turned to look at Jackie and the others. He reached out and grabbed Jackie’s arm before exclaiming, “The first test determines the total scores of everyone. You must not drag us down, understand?!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2641 - 2650

Chapter 2641
Jackie nodded, not saying anything more.

He had thought that the results would be individually scored. He had thought that all he needed to do was to make sure his own results were better than his counterpart. He never expected that the scores would be totaled up.

Claude could not remain calm after hearing that and questioned, “So the results of the test are totaled? Then this guy…”

He did not continue what he said, but there was no need. Everyone naturally knew what Claude was thinking about. In Claude’s eyes, Jackie would definitely drag them down.

If the tournament had been an individual one, Claude would not have been so emotional, even if he would still be angered that Jackie would drag them down. However, if all of their scores were totaled together, then even Claude and Benedict would be dragged down if Jackie did not do well!

Elder Maurice would report the total score when he reported to the higher-ups. Then, the two of them would look really bad, so how could Claude calmly accept that fact?

Advertisement

Elder Maurice frowned as he replied to Claude unhappily, “Is there something wrong with your head? Of course, the score will be totaled.

“If it was an individual contest, and one person exceeded everyone’s scores by an immense amount, but the other two did not do well, how would it be judged? How would you gauge the scores of the alchemists from both sides?

The others immediately understood after hearing Elder Maurice’s explanation. The tournament was not just down to individual skills. The scores had to be totaled up to really show the average strength.

It had always been a battle between two forces, so it was naturally the total score that would be judged. However, Claude suddenly felt like he was being dragged down even harder. He got furious even looking at Jackie.

Advertisement

He panted roughly as his face scrunched up in anger, “Jackie! No matter what, you have to do your best. If you drag the two of us down and both of us end up in trouble, I absolutely won’t let you off!”

Jackie frowned speechlessly. There were times when he really wanted to rush toward Claude and give him a slap on the face to wake him up.

He grunted lightly as he said coldly, “Can you act a bit more normal? Can you just listen to what I’ve said to you before?

“How do you know I will drag you down? In my eyes, you’ll be the one dragging us down. Please look at yourself in the mirror first!”

Claude almost got a stroke with how angry he was at Jackie. His entire body even started to shake. Claude had continuously challenged Jackie but never seemed to get the upper hand.

Claude was like a stubborn child. No matter how much he suffered from it, he would still confidently mock Jackie the next time.

After that, he would be shouted back at by Jackie, and end up angering himself greatly. Benedict grabbed Claude’s arm helplessly.

“Stop trying to talk to him. This guy’s just never been punished before and doesn’t know his place. He probably thinks he’ll get good results in the tournament, which is why he is so confident. He’ll face reality in just a moment!”

Chapter 2642
Benedict’s words successfully consoled Claude and calmed him down.

Advertisement

Jackie raised an eyebrow after he heard Benedict’s words. He retorted, “The two of you are just annoying clowns in my eyes. You’re right, the tournament is about to start. The truth will be revealed soon, just don’t cry then.”

After saying that, Claude and Benedict’s eyes widened, unable to believe what they heard. Was that guy crazy? He actually thought they would cry?

Even Benedict, who had a good temper, was almost unable to take it anymore and about to rush forward to fight Jackie. However, he was held back by Elder Maurice.

Elder Maurice frowned and started berating the three of them, “All three of you, shut up! Don’t you know where you are? Why are you trying to start a fight and embarrass yourselves?

“You should be focused on yourselves and your thoughts should all be about the tournament. I don’t care who’s bragging or not. I won’t let anyone off if they drag us down!”

Right after he said that Master Forrest's voice was heard on the other side, "Time's up, contestants, prepare to start."

Master Forrest snapped them out of that tense atmosphere. Claude and Benedict glared at Jackie before they turned around and headed toward the center.

Sky Peak Pavilion's stewards gave each of them a condensing card. All three of them got the same condensing card.

In order to ensure fairness, the three cards had just been made by Elder Maurice and Master Forrest earlier. After accepting the card, Jackie looked it over once.

Elder Maurice announced the last rule,

"You only have six hours! Once the six hours are over, we'll keep your condensing cards even if you haven't finished. Everyone heard me?"

The six of them nodded at the same time. After looking at their nod, Master Forrest suddenly had a glint in his eyes, as if he thought of something.

"That's right, the condensing card in your hands was made with a special array. It has a few additional functions compared to the cards you've gotten before," After saying that, Master Forrest deliberately paused for a moment.

Everyone looked at him strangely. Master Forrest seemed to be trying to bait everyone in. When he saw how everyone was looking at him, Master Forrest let out a smile as he continued, "The condensing card has a very special function. If the runes you completed don't reach sixty percent refinement, the moment you complete them, the runes will crumble by themselves.

"That means that the runes that you can complete will all have a sixty percent refinement. The moment you complete it, the results can be announced!"

The moment they heard that everyone's eyes widened. Why was such an important piece of news left to the last moment to be announced?

Jackie frowned as he turned to look at Elder Maurice. Elder Maurice merely looked forward without a change in expression. It was obvious that he already knew about that piece of news. If he already did, then why did he not let them know before?

When Master Forrest saw everyone's curious reactions, he smiled and explained, "We did so deliberately. The reason is simple, we want to test your adaptability.

"Announcing this at the very last moment will allow us to see what your mind is capable of when you're facing unpredictable dangers.

A successful alchemist requires not only talent and ability but composure to face danger as well. There's no need for any more talking, we will start now!"

Chapter 2643
After Master Forrest said that the others all looked at him with a dumbfounded expression, other than Jackie and Bradley. It was obvious they did not understand what Master Forrest meant.

Why would the last point be about testing their composure? What was there to test? The others did not understand, but Jackie immediately understood it.

After struggling to condense a rune, an alchemist would definitely be affected mentally if a rune they had so painstakingly formed crumbled because it was not at sixty percent refinement.

The more runes that crumble, the more the alchemist would panic. They would then make more and more mistakes and it would affect their final results. It seemed like it was a test that Elder Maurice and Master Forrest both agreed on.

"Alright, stop with the errant thoughts, it's time for the test to start! The clock has started ticking. You only have six hours, so stop wasting your time on needless thoughts!"

Those words caused everyone to compose themselves and immediately put their full focus on the cards in their hands.

Jackie frowned as he looked at the condensing card. To Jackie, even if the runes in the card were left with twenty percent, Jackie would still immediately know how to complete it.

After all, that ancient warrior was a top alchemist in a first-grade world. All of the runes were as easy as ABC in his eyes.

If it were not for the fact that his memories were still not fully in tune with his body, even ninth-grade pills would be incredibly easy to refine for Jackie.

Jackie did not start condensing the pill runes immediately. Instead, he started by looking

at how many pill runes were at the highest difficulty. He did not want to be like the others and start with the easiest runes.

Completing pill runes was quite different from refining pills. When refining pills, not only did one have to maintain the pill, they needed to condense pill runes as well.

The moment one pill rune went wrong, all of their hard work would be wasted. That was why it was so hard to become a highgrade alchemist.

On the condensing card, condensing pill runes were different. The pill runes on the card were independent existences. Even if the pill condensing went wrong, one would be able to start over without affecting the other pill runes.

Jackie's biggest problem was not that he did not recognize the pill runes, nor was it that he did not know how to draw them. It was that his body could not keep up with his memories.

His hands would not be able to keep up with his mind, which was why he would make mistakes. However, the tournament was actually a good chance for Jackie to practice. After all, even if there were mistakes, he could start over!

With that in mind, a sliver of a smile appeared on Jackie's mouth. At that moment, he suddenly heard Elder Maurice's anxious voice.

"What are you looking at over there? Do you think six hours is very long? Why aren't you starting yet?!"

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly. He had been focused on finding out which pill runes were the hardest to refine. He had forgotten that everyone else had already started while he was still looking around.

Elder Maurice who was already not very trusting of him in the first place suddenly lost his cool. Jackie's lips twitched as he put his gaze on the thousand and twentieth pill rune.

Chapter 2644
That rune was the hardest one to refine among the two thousand runes. Jackie let out a faint smile as his right hand constantly danced. A golden glow constantly flowed out from his fingers.

As he moved his fingers, a faint golden pill rune slowly appeared in his hand. However, just as he was going to complete his final stroke, his hand slipped again, missing out on a stroke.

The pill rune immediately let out a bang as it suddenly disappeared. Jackie's performance caused everyone to widen their eyes. Even if Jackie did not turn around, he could still feel the gazes of others.

Elder Maurice's temper boiled over. For Jackie to fail on the first rune was way too weak of him.

If that continued on, it would already be quite decent if Jackie was even able to complete a hundred pill runes in six hours!

Thinking about that, Elder Maurice suddenly felt ill. Mr. Zayne could not help but frown as he looked at Jackie speechlessly.

Mr. Zayne was somewhat familiar with Jackie, but he had never really seen Jackie's skills for himself. Yet, what he saw then was Jackie failing at the very first rune.

Jackie's failure had successfully attracted the attention of the other five contestants. All of them looked over, and Claude could not help but let out a laugh.

Claude had already completed five pill runes at that point. Looking at how Jackie had failed on the very first rune, he was incredibly amused.

Jackie had been so proud of his skills earlier as if he was the best in the world. No matter what Claude said, Jackie would just shoot him down. Yet, when it was time for them to show their skills, Jackie was performing so badly.

Elder Maurice frowned as he glared at Claude. Claude was taken aback by that, was it wrong for him to laugh? Jackie had said so many horrible words before, did none of them hear them?

Jackie had bragged and placed himself on such a high pedestal, but ended up only having that little bit of skill. What was wrong with him laughing? Claude could not help but snort, "I thought this guy was so amazing, so he was just talking up a storm the whole time. He doesn't have a single bit of skill, but managed to brag so much!"

Elder Maurice frowned and scolded him, "Shut your mouth, you're not doing that well either!"

Claude pursed his lips, not really happy about it. He wanted to add a few more words, but he knew that the tournament was more important. He wanted to use his skills to deliver a blow to Jackie.

Master Maurice let out a laugh as he said in a warm tone, "There's no need to be so nervous. Even though this tournament is a more formal one, it doesn't mean you'll always be stuck at this level your whole life. You have to compose yourself for this tournament."

They sounded like words of consolation, but they were filled with deep mockery. Everyone present had been able to tell that much. Elder Maurice was so angered that his face was turning red. He really wanted to shoot down those words.

However, Jackie was still an alchemist on their side in the end. If Jackie was only at that level, there was nothing he could say that would be convincing. All it would do was get him laughed at.

Hence, Elder Maurice was forced to swallow his anger as he glared viciously at Jackie. Jackie heard all of the mockeries around him, but not a single word affected Jackie's mood.

Jackie did not care how everyone else looked at him. After the first rune broke down, he tried again immediately. This time, he slowed himself down and allowed his body to follow his memories.

Chapter 2645
Yet, even after he slowed down, he still failed at the very last stroke. After it crumbled again, Jackie could not help but frown.

It really was the hardest pill rune. Even an eighth-grade alchemist might not successfully refine it in his place.

Jackie had the help of the memories and knew where he had gone wrong and how to correct it. After a long time, Jackie finally condensed the pill rune successfully.

After the pill rune was filled up, the condensing card did not make the pill rune disappear, which meant that the refinement rate was at sixty percent. That pleased Jackie quite a bit.

After all, The Way of the Divine Void Pill was at a much higher level than any normal Way of the Pill. The higher the rank, the more stable the pill runes are, and the higher the refinement rate.

A sixty percent refinement rate was actually not that hard for Jackie. Jackie might have gotten good results in the test the last time, but he still only ended up in fifth place. Yet, that did not mean that it was the extent of his abilities.

He had placed himself at that level because he did not want to attract too much attention. If he did too well, he might end up being noticed by the higher-ups and be used as a lab rat.

He had not planned on entering the inner valley then. After all, Jackie felt like Phoenix Valley was an incredibly dangerous place. However, Jackie's opinions had changed, and there was less of a reason for him to hide his abilities.

After condensing the pill rune, Jackie looked toward the second one. It was also one of the harder ones.

At that moment, Benedict said anxiously,

"Was that not at sixty percent? I clearly got it to sixty percent!"

After completing a pill rune earlier, Benedict saw it crumble in the condensing card because it was not at sixty percent refinement. It immediately affected Benedict's mental state.

Elder Maurice frowned and shouted, "Calm down! If you keep being so anxious, it will affect your final results! As an alchemist, composure is very important as well!"

As he said that, Elder Maurice's voice was incredibly serious. In truth, even though the contestants were not in a very stable mental state, they still had much more control than Elder Maurice.

Elder Maurice was trying his best to look like he did not care about the results that much, but inside, he was on the edge of exploding at any time!

Mr. Zayne clearly felt Elder Maurice's anxious mood. His lips twitched helplessly.

If Phoenix Valley really lost the tournament, Elder Maurice would definitely be scolded when he returns.

Mr. Zayne would not be spared either. Thinking about that, Mr. Zayne started to regret accepting this task back then. No one knew there would be so many variables.

Phoenix Valley was not performing too well, so Master Forrest was naturally incredibly happy. At that moment, his smile almost reached his ears.

After he looked at Bradley, he let out a smile as he said, "Not bad! You've already completed a hundred. Continue with your hard work."

Those words successfully demoralized the other contestants even more. Everyone had been focused on the condensing cards in their own hands, none of them were focused on the results of the others at that moment.

However, Master Forrest's words successfully announced to everyone that Bradley had already completed a hundred pill runes. Most of them were only at forty or fifty, Bradley' was almost double theirs.

Chapter 2646
Master Maurice had deliberately said so to cause the others to lose their composure. Those who were not able to calm themselves even started to pale.

Everyone knew that the tournament was incredibly important. If they ended up dragging their side down, they would definitely be punished. At that moment, everyone could not help but stop, except for Jackie who was still calmly condensing pill runes.

All of them looked over at Bradley who was in the same state as Jackie. No matter what happened around him, and what anyone else said, he remained calm while condensing pill runes.

Even Master Forrest's praise earlier had failed to distract Bradley. It was as if the person being praised was not him.

Master Forrest let out a laugh as he continued, "Of the six contestants, two of them are the most composed. The first is Bradley from the Sky Peak Pavilion, while the other one is Jackie from Phoenix Valley."

Master Forrest sounded like he was praising Bradley, and had brought Jackie up as well. However, everyone knew that Jackie had only managed to condense ten pill runes at that point. There were ninety pill runes between the two of them.

However, Jackie remained incredibly composed. Even if Elder Maurice was already so infuriated that he was about to berate and curse at Jackie, Jackie acted like nothing of the sort was happening.

One of them was at rock bottom, while the other was at the top. Praising them together was actually the same as insulting Jackie.

Elder Maurice got so exasperated that he almost lunged over. Elder Maurice had been holding back the whole time so Jackie could do his best.

Even though Jackie was condensing the pill runes at a snail's pace, Elder Maurice did not say anything too bad. However, he was beginning to lose control.

Elder Maurice frowned and said, "Jackie, don't forget what you told me earlier!"

Jackie had naturally not forgotten his promise to Elder Maurice, but Elder Maurice was clueless to what Jackie had planned. Jackie had always been someone who did as he pleased. Others did not need to know what he was thinking, as long as he fulfilled his promises.

Jackie frowned as he said somewhat coldly, "I'll naturally not forget what I said before. The tournament's just started. You don't have to be so anxious before the final results are out."

Elder Maurice's temper flared even more at those words. He felt like Jackie's actions were a direct challenge to him, and he started to wonder if there was something wrong with Jackie's head.

Otherwise, how could Jackie remain so calm at such a time?

Elder Maurice narrowed his eyes, “How many pill runes have you condensed so far? Look at how many everyone around you already has. If this continues, don’t you think your results will drag everyone down?”

If he was not forced to, Elder Maurice would not have said all of that in front of the Sky Peak Pavilion. After all, it was thought he had no confidence in his own people. Jackie pursed his lips helplessly, feeling Elder Maurice’s anger from his words

However, Jackie was not willing to allow that old man to ruin his plans. He looked up to face Elder Maurice earnestly and said, “I’ll say the same thing. The tournament’s just started, and the victor hasn’t been decided yet. You don’t have to panic so much. I have my own plans, you just have to wait for the results.”

Chapter 2647
Jackie’s words were like adding oil to the fire. Elder Maurice got so angry that his veins started showing on his head. He clenched his fists tightly, resisting the urge to beat Jackie up.

“Don’t try to give me any excuses. If you continue with this pace, there’s no way you will get good results. You have to remember your promise to me.

“If you drag everyone down, then you better think about what you’ll face when you get back.

Jackie nodded seriously, feeling helpless about Elder Maurice’s temper. “I’m perfectly in control of my own pace. You don’t have to worry. It’s only going to take six hours. Just calm yourself down first. After six hours, you’ll see the results for yourself. There’s no need to lose your temper right now.”

Claude and Benedict had been fully concentrating on filling up the pill runes. when they heard Jackie and Elder Maurice’s conversation. The two of them could not stand it at that point. Jackie was acting far too arrogantly.

He was so disrespectful to Elder Maurice. His skills were clearly not up to par, but he still tried to act as if he would definitely achieve a good result. Claude frowned as he stopped working on his runes.

He looked up at Jackie and said, “Jackie, you’ve gone too far. Don’t we know where we are right now?

“If you’re really as skilled as you said, how could you only manage to condense so few pill runes at this point? If you continue at this pace, it would be amazing if you manage to condense a hundred pill runes!”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows. He really did not want to waste his time on them. Jackie

felt like he was just talking to a brick wall at that point. They would never understand anything he said.

Jackie clearly voiced, “You shouldn’t be in a hurry to judge me either. You aren’t saying any of this for the sake of Phoenix Valley, but for your own satisfaction. You just want to make things worse for me, but I’ll still say the same thing. Before the results are out, don’t be in such a hurry!”

Mr. Zayne pursed his lips speechlessly. He felt incredibly humiliated at that moment. They were fighting internally in front of Sky Peak Pavilion, and no one was willing to admit defeat.

Elder Maurice felt like Phoenix Valley could not continue going on like that either. It was better if they did not fight on the spot, but he could really not control his own temper.

Jackie’s performance was far too bad. It was far worse than anything he had anticipated.

However, that brat remained stubborn and unwilling to admit defeat. He insisted on them to wait for the results after six hours.

He maintained his incredibly confident facade. Elder Maurice had never seen an alchemist like Jackie in so many years of organizing tests of various sizes.

With Jackie’s pace, there was no way for him to catch up, but Jackie did not seem to think that was the case at all. Master Forrest smirked as he tried to play the part of a mediator, “Elder Maurice, don’t be angry. Jackie is probably just incredibly confident in his own skills. That’s why he’s saying this.

“Even since I saw Jackie, I’ve felt like he was an incredibly confident person. I believe he will definitely be able to create a miracle,” Those strange words were all heard by Jackie, and Jackie just felt like Master Forrest was incredibly nosy.

Chapter 2648
He wanted Phoenix Valley’s internal conflict to escalate. Then, he would be able to enjoy the commotion from the side. The more Phoenix Valley embarrassed itself, the happier Sky Peak Pavilion was.

Elder Maurice almost exploded at Master Forrest’s words, but he suddenly snapped out of it at that moment. He constantly remembered that Master Forrest did not have any good intentions.

Of course, he would not fall for Master Forrest’s trick. He let out a cold snort as he turned his head over and said, “Phoenix Valley knows what our own standards are. Master Forrest, you should focus on yourself.”

Master Forrest's mouth stiffened as a sharp look flashed on his face. However, he still shut his mouth up and did not continue to instigate Elder Maurice.

It was not because Master Forrest was afraid of Elder Maurice, but because Master Forrest felt like Phoenix Valley would definitely be humiliated after the six hours were up. The Sky Peak Pavilion would definitely win against Phoenix Valley.

If he mocked them then, Elder Maurice would not be able to be so hard-headed. At that point, Mr. Zayne could not hold back anymore, he pulled at Elder Maurice's sleeve before saying, "The tournament is still going on. Everyone, don't waste your time."

That successfully served as a reminder to Claude and Benedict that what they were doing was the most important. Since that kid was stubborn, then they would wait until the official results were out before they berate him.

Jackie let out a helpless sigh as he suddenly did something that shocked everyone. He took his condensing card, turned around and headed toward the corner of the hall.

Everyone's eyes widened as they looked at Jackie in confusion. Elder Maurice shouted, "What are you doing?"

Jackie stopped at Elder Maurice's yell, not really caring about what Elder Maurice was saying. Instead, he stopped to look around before he decided the distance was far enough. Then he turned to face everyone, "I need to do this in silence. This spot is suitable for that."

Everyone was speechless when he said that, feeling like Jackie was acting stranger by the minute. Elder Maurice's temper flared up again, his calm demeanor that he had just regained was gone again.

He felt like Jackie's every action was mocking him. Master Forrest could not help but laugh, Jackie was far too hilarious.

Could he really think that he would get a good result? He was just insulted a bit earlier, but he actually chose to leave the center to find a corner to continue.

It was like he wanted to show everyone that his results were very important and that he was incredibly confident in himself. Even Conrad could not help but say, "What's this guy doing? Does he think he's a master?"

Jackie had naturally done that for his own reasons. After Elder Maurice compared his results to everyone else, he forgot about his position as an elder and the pride of the valley as he started to berate Jackie. Jackie could not completely ignore it.

However, answering Elder Maurice would just waste his time. He also needed to constantly listen to the mockery around him. Jackie had actually treated the tournament

as an incredibly good chance to train. It was not worth it for him to waste any time on that at all.

That was why he had decisively chosen to stay away from those people. They could talk as much as they wanted, as long as it did not affect him.

Even Master Forrest was speechless, feeling like Jackie was far too strange. He let out a laugh as he shook his head.

Elder Maurice was already so furious that he did not know what to say. The time was still ticking, and eventually, Elder Maurice and Master Forrest composed themselves.

Chapter 2649
At that moment, Elder Maurice had already pinned all his hopes on Claude and Benedict. He prayed in his heart for the two of them to perform better.

Since he was no longer at the center, Jackie managed to get the peace he wanted. Of the two thousand pill runes he needed to complete, the harder ones took up a quarter of them.

Jackie put all his focus into those incredibly hard pill runes. Even if he failed, again and again, it did nothing to diminish Jackie's confidence.

He would immediately try again after he failed. After all, he had the support of the ancient warrior's memories. The memories were his best teachers. He immediately knew where he went wrong and knew where he should focus on for the next attempt.

After two hours, Jackie had managed to complete a hundred pill runes. Of those hundred pill runes, not a single one was easy. Even though he had constantly been completing the runes, Jackie still took care to constantly keep track of the time.

There were only four hours left. If Jackie kept on focusing on the harder pill runes, his final results would probably actually end up really bad.

He needed to pick up the pace so he could show some good results in the end. Jackie put all his thoughts into refining the pill runes, completely ignoring everything that was happening around him.

Compared to Jackie's focus and composure, it was a completely different atmosphere at the center of the hall. That was because Master Forrest started to proudly praise Bradley's results again.

"Not bad! You managed to get four hundred and fifty pill runes in just an hour. It's the

best result here. As long as you keep at it, you'll be the best performer!"

Those words were honest praise from Master Forrest. After all, Bradley's results actually were the best of everyone present. As long as Bradley kept it up, Sky Peak Pavilion would win.

Phoenix Valley was the core of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. As long as they defeat Phoenix Valley, Sky Peak Pavilion's name would soar, and they would be able to attract even more talented alchemists.

He would also be bolstered by this and gain an even higher position in Sky Peak Pavilion. Compared to Master Forrest's excitement, the faces of the contestants were even more interesting.

Even the two from Sky Peak Pavilion could not resist stopping what they were doing as they looked up at Bradley. Claude got so anxious that his hands started to shake, and his expression turned into one of panic as well.

He looked at his own condensing card. He had only completed two hundred and ninety pill runes. They were over a hundred runes apart. Even though only two hours had passed, the distance between the two of them had grown.

Claude was starting to feel disheartened. Could he catch up to Bradley? Would he be able to catch up to Bradley if he did his best for the next four hours?

At that moment, Claude no longer hoped he could do better than Bradley, but only that he could catch up to Bradley. However, the more he thought about it, the less possible it felt.

Benedict's right hand clenched tightly. The pill rune he had just completed suddenly exploded in the air. He was not in a much better mood than Claude.

Chapter 2650
Two of them knew very well that they had encountered an opponent that they could not defeat! On top of that, they had someone dragging them down. It seemed like Phoenix Valley's hopes of winning were getting murkier and murkier.

Elder Maurice took a deep breath. He looked like his own father had just died. Mr. Zayne frowned as his mood sank as well.

Even though only two hours had passed, there was more and more of a gulf in the results. Of the five in the center of the hall, the four who were not Bradley had more or less even results.

They were all at less than three hundred runes completed. They were at least a hundred runes behind Bradley. Furthermore, Bradley showed no signs of slowing down. At that moment, he had ignored all the noise around him just like Jackie.

His hands constantly moved with a faint blue glow. His fingers constantly danced around as the pill runes he condensed floated around like spirits.

Elder Maurice looked at Bradley and whispered, “We’re done for this time. We don’t even have to wait four hours to know the results.”

After that, he could not help but turn to look at Jackie in the distance. At that moment, Jackie looked more or less like he did before. Jackie’s emotionless expression caused Elder Maurice to clench his teeth.

He had already resigned himself to his fate, he did not even have the heart to berate Jackie anymore.

Mr. Zayne sighed in exasperation. He did not know what else to do. When he first met Jackie, he had thought that Jackie had a bright future. Jackie did everything with an incredibly calm demeanor.

Those sorts of people would usually always end up being very successful. Yet, he felt like his earlier judgments had all been wrong. Jackie’s various actions were all incredibly confusing to him.

Even Mr. Zayne started to suspect if something was wrong with Jackie mentally. Otherwise, Jackie would not have done something so nonsensical. Jackie clearly knew his skills were limited, so why did he brag so much, as if he would definitely deliver the results.

Elder Maurie had already lost all hope. After a sigh, he started to plan how he would explain himself when he was being judged by the other elders. He tried to think of ways to reduce his punishments.

After all, the tournament was incredibly important this time.

Phoenix Valley might not have been pulled into the war on the surface, but they were still the core of the alliance in the end. The stability they had was just a facade. If they paid a heavy price this time, the following days would be even harder.

The elders would definitely not let this matter rest. Thinking about that, Elder Maurice got so angry that he whispered to Mr. Zayne, “I won’t let that Rick off. It’s not the first time he’s done this. I can forget about what he did before, but this is such an important matter, and he actually used it to settle a personal grudge by recommending this mindless brat!

“He’s mostly responsible for this, I’ll definitely make him pay!”

Mr. Zayne nodded. With Mr. Zayne’s personality, he would not add anything even if Elder Maurice was criticizing another elder like that.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2651 - 2655

Chapter 2651

At that point, even Mr. Zayne was furious. When the results are out and if they lost, they would have to pay a large price. At the same time, they would completely lose their dignity as well. Sky Peak Pavilion would definitely announce this news everywhere.

When the time comes, Phoenix Valley would both lose material and its dignity. This matter would definitely cause large waves within Phoenix Valley. Since he was a part of it, he would definitely not be able to shed any responsibility and get punished for it.

He might not even be able to keep his current position. Just thinking about that gave Mr. Zayne a headache. He started to hate Elder Rick as well.

“Before, he never did anything clean either. If we want to deal with him, we’ll have to dig everything up.

“No one ever did anything about it before because he never caused anything particularly bad even by using official matters to settle his personal grudges. It’s different this time. If we lose, we’ll all be affected, and he won’t get off easily!”

Elder Maurice nodded at that, already planning out how he would deal with Elder Rick when he got back to Phoenix Valley. At that moment, Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne were already resentful of Elder Rick.

Advertisement

If Elder Rick did not recommend Jackie, they might still have had the chance to turn things around. However, at that point, it would already be a miracle if Jackie did not drag them down, let alone turn the tables.

Jackie was already incredibly far away from the center at that point. None of them knew how many pill runes Jackie had already completed, but none of them wanted to know either.

Even if they did not bother looking, they could guess that Jackie was probably not even at a hundred pill runes. Based on his earlier speed, it would already be impressive if Jackie managed to complete three hundred pill runes in six hours.

Jackie would definitely drag everyone down with his results, and cause them to lose the tournament. The two of them had increasingly sour looks on their faces, while Master Forrest had a devilish smile.

Advertisement

At that moment, Master Forrest was already thinking about how he would use this win to climb to greater heights. Then, he would definitely have all those people who had targeted him or looked down on him before, look at him with looks of admiration and jealousy.

Master Forrest got more and more excited as he thought about it. He could not stop himself from smiling. Elder Maurice saw the huge smile on Master Forrest's face, and his heart exploded in anger again.

There was nothing else to say at that moment. At the most, he would only end up being a joke to others. He tried his best to compose himself. When the fifth hour started, there were some of them who were already on the brink of collapsing mentally.

Among them, the one who was the least stable mentally was Benedict. His face constantly paled as he clenched his teeth and battled the condensing card in his hand.

It was not far away from the end of the time limit. Everyone was trying their best to get through the last stretch. At that moment, Benedict had already completed six hundred pill runes, but that was already his limit.

There was not one rune from the remaining thousand and four hundred that he could

complete. Each time he tried to complete a new one, it would not achieve high refinement, or would collapse due to him drawing the rune wrongly.

Completing six hundred pill runes was not a good result for Benedict. He did not pay any attention to the three from the Sky Peak Pavilion, but he could see how Claude was doing.

Claude had already completed six hundred and forty pill runes and was still continuing, but Benedict was already at his limit. Even though the two of them had been good friends for many years, Benedict had never thought that Claude would do better than him.

Advertisement

Chapter 2652
Witnessing Claude achieving better results heavily affected Benedict's mental state. His forehead was full of sweat as his hands constantly moved, a faint red glow danced between his fingers.

Each time he was about to complete a rune, he would fail because for some reason or another. Even if he managed to complete a rune, it would be destroyed by the condensing card due to the lack of refinement.

The more it happened, the more frustrated Benedict became. His unstable mental state caused his progress to come to a sudden halt. Seeing Benedict in such a horrible state made Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne even more nervous.

Even though they were already sure that they would lose the contest, if their results were bad, their punishment would be even more severe. If that happened, it would be much harder for them to shed any responsibility.

Elder Maurice took a deep breath as he frowned. He tried his best to maintain a gentle tone, “Benedict, keep your composure. Don’t let your anxiety get to you. You know that being anxious won’t help you, and will only worsen your condition. Once you get back to Phoenix Valley, you will be punished even more for it!”

Those words caused a jolt in Benedict’s heart, but they also helped motivate him. He bit his lip as he used the pain to sober himself up, tightening his mental state.

Master Forrest furrowed his eyebrows slightly as he grunted, “You’re already at eight hundred and eighty. With a bit more work, you’ll be at nine hundred.”

Master Forrest’s words were clearly to disrupt the other contestants. Just as he wanted, those words managed to trigger the four participants that were at the center. They all widened their eyes as they looked at Bradley in disbelief.

The longer the tournament got, the harder it was. Completing each run just got harder and harder.

Naturally, they knew that Bradley would have been better than everyone present, but they never expected that Bradley would already be more than two hundred runes away from any of them.

If he worked a bit harder, it was even possible for him to pull ahead by three hundred runes.

That distance had dealt a heavy blow to the contestants who had initially been very confident in themselves. All of their faces turned red, and even their breathing got erratic.

Elder Maurice was so furious that he clenched his right hand and turned to look at Master Forrest. Elder Maurice did not want to say anything to Master Forrest since he felt like Phoenix Valley was going to lose.

However, Elder Maurice could not stand Master Forrest constantly trying to disrupt the mental state of the other contestants. After all, he did not want his own alchemists to end up with bad results because of their mental state.

Elder Maurice frowned and said, “Master Forrest, you should really watch your words. If you want to praise your own alchemists, you can do that after the results are out. Why do you keep trying to affect everyone’s mental states?”

Master Forrest raised an eyebrow before he said in a nonchalant manner, “Didn’t we already agree that we would also be testing everyone’s ability to keep calm? There’s nothing wrong with what I said. Who’s to blame if they allow themselves to be distracted?”

Elder Maurice’s face darkened and he said angrily, “You…”

Right after he said that he was stopped by Mr. Zayne who was standing next to him. Mr. Zayne grabbed Elder Maurice’s arm and whispered, “Elder, don’t get too angry. Forrest is an old fox. If you keep trying to go against him, you’ll just make yourself angrier. The results are already clear, so we should focus on the future.”

Chapter 2653
After saying that, Mr. Zayne had a helpless and bitter expression on his face. Elder Maurice let out a long sigh. Mr. Zayne was right, there was no reason to fight at that moment.

Time was still ticking away. Not long after that, Master Maurice’s loud voice was heard, “Time’s up! Everyone can stop now.”

Everyone, including Jackie who was further away, stopped. Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly as he looked up, worriedly. He looked toward everyone in front of him.

He suddenly regretted insisting on wasting his time on the more complicated runes. He had calmed himself down and started to complete the runes while ignoring everything else in the world. Even though he trained by himself, he was far from the center and did not know how everyone else did.

He was suddenly worried that his results would end up dragging everyone else down. If it ended up being like that, then he would really be humiliated.

At that moment, Master Forrest waved at him with a smile. Jackie nodded and returned to his original spot with his card in hand.

At that moment, Jackie placed his card close to his chest, not letting anyone else see his results. He looked at everyone else’s condensing card with an inquisitive gaze.

What made Jackie curious was the fact that everyone else did the same thing, hiding their cards to their chest, not showing their results to anyone. That deepened Jackie’s worry.

However, his worries only lasted for a moment. He clearly remembered Elder Maurice telling them that the tournament was in three parts, and they were just on the first segment.

Even if he did badly in the first segment, he would not be dragging the team down if he made up for it in the latter two parts.

Elder Maurice emotionlessly stood in front. When he saw Jackie's calm demeanor, his rage soared. At that moment, he really wanted to ask Jackie where Jackie got all his confidence.

Even when the results were about to be announced, he still managed to look so carefree!

Jackie felt like Master Forrest was looking at him with an incredibly warm gaze as if he was an alchemist from the Sky Peak Pavilion. Master Forrest let out a slight cough after looking at Jackie before shifting his gaze to Jameson.

"We'll start from you. Show us your results. Let me repeat it again. The results this time will be based on your totals."

Jameson's eyes shifted worriedly. He was not very confident in himself, but since Master Forrest had chosen him to be first, he did not delay things at all.

After taking a deep breath, he handed over the condensing card in his hand. He showed his results to everyone present, and Master Forrest did not seem surprised at his result at all.

After all, Master Forrest had been in front of the five participants and had easily been able to see their results.

Master Forrest said, "Five hundred and fifty runes. This result isn't bad, but it's not good either. Continue working hard. Next!"

After he said that, he shifted his gaze to Benedict. Benedict's expression stiffened as he gulped, shooting a glance at Elder Maurice.

Chapter 2654
The result could no longer be changed at that moment. No matter what his results were, it was already fixed. If he hesitated or tried to make excuses, he would be looked down on. So, he took out his condensing card and showed everyone.

Master Forrest said emotionlessly, "Six hundred pill runes. Phoenix Valley is currently ahead, next!"

Next was Conrad from Sky Peak Pavilion. His face stiffened as he reluctantly showed his results to everyone. Master Forrest coldly announced, “Six hundred pill runes, also an average result. Now Sky Peak Pavilion has one thousand one hundred and fifty pill runes.”

After that, Claude revealed his own results in a resigned manner. When Master Forrest saw Claude’s results, his lips curled up into a smirk.

“Not bad, you completed six hundred and fifty pill runes. It’s the highest so far. In total, Phoenix Valley has one thousand, two hundred and fifty pill runes. You have a hundred more than Sky Peak Pavilion, it’s quite a good result!”

As he said that, Master Forrest’s smile threatened to split open his face.

His meaningful smile was far too obvious. When everyone from Phoenix Valley saw that, they were infuriated. Master Forrest was starting to cross the line. He sounded like he was praising Phoenix Valley, but it was all just mockery.

Everyone knew that Bradley’s results were the best among everyone there. He had yet to announce Bradley’s results. What were a hundred pill runes?

Jackie was the only one left from Phoenix Valley who had not shown his results. Everyone other than Jackie knew that Jackie’, results did not need to be announced at all.

Jackie was going to drag them down in the end.

It would be a miracle if he was even able to complete four hundred pill runes. After all the results were totaled, Phoenix Valley would definitely lose. Elder Maurice’s lips twitched as the flames of anger in his heart raged again.

Mr. Zayne sighed as he wiped his face with his hand. Everyone had a sense of inevitable defeat around them. Phoenix Valley’s atmosphere was already at its lower point.

Other than Jackie, everyone was wondering what kind of punishments they would face when they got back to Phoenix Valley. Even though Jackie was the main culprit for dragging them down, all of them still carried some of the responsibility.

Elder Maurice was worried that he would not even be able to keep his position as an elder. After all, if they lose this tournament,Phoenix Valley would end up suffering in many ways.

The fact that something like that happened in such a crucial moment would definitely infuriate the higher-ups. The more depressed Phoenix Valley’s end felt, the happier Sky Peak Pavilion’s side got. Master Forrest could not even hide his smile anymore.

He turned to look at Bradley and said, “It’s about time you show us your results.”

As that was said, the calmness he had when he read everyone else’s results had vanished. Master Forrest was looking at Bradley with a look that was close to worship, but Bradley was definitely worth getting that look.

After all, his results were definitely something to be proud of. Furthermore, Bradley was incredibly calm. Even though he knew that his results were better than everyone else present, he did not show too much emotion on his face at all.

Chapter 2655
Master Forrest allowed him to flip over the condensing card in his hand. With a flick of his right hand, he immediately showed his results to everyone there.

Master Forrest’s face lit up with a smile before he announced, “He completed nine hundred and fifty pill runes! What an excellent result. Adding it to the prior results, we have a total of two thousand and one hundred pill runes. If Phoenix Valley wants to beat this result, Jackie must complete at least eight hundred and fifty pill runes.”

Those words were practically a death sentence to everyone from Phoenix Valley. Jackie needed eight hundred and fifty pill runes to even force a tie with Sky Peak Pavilion. Before all this, Phoenix Valley had come with the confidence to win.

After all, Sky Peak Pavilion was not that

specialized in cultivating alchemists, nor did Elder Maurice believe that any talented alchemists would be at Sky Peak Pavilion. After all, for so many years, the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance was where master alchemists gathered.

Everything that had happened that day had given him a vicious slap on the face. Phoenix Valley was no match for Sky Peak Pavilion, and they lost in a devastating manner at that. He would definitely be heavily berated by the higher-ups when he reported that result and his position as an elder might even be at risk.

The more Elder Maurice thought about it, the more despondent he got. He even expected his life to end up miserable in the future as he got more and more depressed. After Master Forrest announced Bradley’s results, he could no longer hold back the joy in his heart.

He was practically wagging his tail at that point. He said with a smile on his face, “The results aren’t fully read out yet, you don’t have to be so sad. Don’t you still have Jackie?

“Just look at Jackie right now, he’s not worried at all. If he had such an expression on his face, he must be incredibly confident in his abilities!”

Master Forrest was doing his best to praise Jackie at that moment, but his praise was practically just throwing insults at Phoenix Valley. Elder Maurice shook in anger when he heard that.

He immediately turned to look at Jackie. Just like Master Forrest said, Jackie looked incredibly calm at that moment. It was just the same as Bradley's expression. Jackie had clearly seen how amazing the results of everyone else were, but he did not seem to care at all.

Elder Maurice had concluded that Jackie must be crazy. At least, Jackie did not seem to think the same as anyone else. Jackie's result was clearly going to drag everyone down, and he would definitely end up being punished, but he did not seem to know any of that.

Jackie suddenly let out a slight smile and replied when he heard Master Forrest's words, "Master Forrest, you're right. I am very confident in my results."

Jackie stunned Master Forrest at that moment. He had wanted to praise Jackie a bit more to deal a bigger mental blow to Phoenix Valley.

After all, it was just the start of the tournament. There were still two more tests waiting for them. The more unpleasant the condition Phoenix Valley was in, the more it would affect the final results, and the more likely Sky Peak Pavilion would win.

However, he never expected that Jackie would suddenly say something like that. It was no longer a matter of self-confidence, but something was definitely wrong with his head.

Master Forrest was speechless for a moment before he said, "Did you hear what I said earlier? If Phoenix Valley wants to beat Sky Peak Pavilion, you need at least eight hundred and fifty pill runes! Without that amount, Phoenix Valley can't win!"

Jackie nodded slightly, but still maintained his nonchalant expression. Claude and Benedict, who were in a stupor and silent before, could no longer remain calm when they saw how Jackie was acting.

Claude shouted out, "Jackie! Is there really something wrong with your head? Did you really complete eight hundred and fifty pill runes? Even if you want to brag, you should do it in the right place."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2656 - 2660

Chapter 2656

“Your results are about to be announced, but you still insist on trying to brag. Do you assume we’ll think you’re amazing if you do that? Or maybe you think it will change your results?”

Jackie narrowed his eyes. Claude really was noisy. He really did not want to concern himself with those people and turned his condensing card around with his right hand before pointing at the number on the card.

“One thousand and two hundred pill runes. On top of their earlier results, Phoenix Valley’s total should be at two thousand four hundred and fifty pill runes, a total of three hundred and fifty pill runes higher than yours! So…we’ve won the first round!”

Jackie’s words were clearly heard by everyone. The noisy hall suddenly turned silent. There were even those who had forgotten to even breathe.

Everyone gaped slightly as they looked at Jackie’s card with disbelief. After a long while, Master Forrest was heard again, “Impossible! Did you complete one thousand and two hundred pill runes? How did you do it? How could you have done it?! You must have cheated! You absolutely cheated!”

Jackie lightly grunted unsurprisingly at how Master Forrest reacted. Anyone could guess that Master Forrest would say all of that after seeing his results.

Advertisement

Jackie rubbed his chin, saying righteously, “Master Forrest, you need to take responsibility for what you say!

“You claim I’m cheating? Then tell me how I cheated. Are you saying I didn’t complete the pill runes or that there’s something wrong with the condensing cards?”

Those words successfully shut Master Forrest up. His lips stiffened as he walked forward, wanting to shout out something, but he was not able to find anything to say.

That was because he could not think of any way to rebuke Jackie. The condensing cards had been personally made by Master Forrest and Elder Maurice. In order to prevent any cheating, they had chosen the runes on the spot.

Advertisement

There was no way to cheat in this test at all. Since Jackie completed those pill runes, it meant that he had the ability to.

Furthermore, even though Jackie had been competing in a corner earlier, he had been observed the entire time.

If he had done anything suspicious, he would have been noticed immediately. Even if Jackie did anything suspicious, Master Forrest could not figure out any way that Jackie could cheat.

Master Forrest gulped as he shuddered.

Elder Maurice's eyebrows threatened to pop out of their sockets. His beating heart got erratic as he broke out in cold sweat.

He was dumbfounded at Jackie's results and even suspected that he was hallucinating. He was worried that he was dreaming because it was far too absurd.

A sixth-grade alchemist, one who had just shown so many mistakes, had been able to complete a thousand and two hundred pill runes in a short six hours.

He had a total of two hundred and fifty pill runes higher than Bradley, who everyone had had their eyes on. Mr. Zayne grabbed Elder Maurice's arm so tightly that it caused Elder Maurice to frown.

However, Mr. Zayne was far too emotional to notice that. He took a deep breath as he said emotionally, "We won! We really won!"

Advertisement

He was far too excited. Their earlier despondent mood suddenly lifted up. He almost lost control of himself. At Mr. Zayne's words, Elder Maurice snapped out of his thoughts.

Chapter 2657
He nodded and replied excitedly, "Yes! We won! We have completely won! We got three hundred and fifty points more than they did!

They had thought that defeat was certain, but managed to gain a surprise victory. Even though it was only the first part of the competition, Jackie's results proved that they would definitely win if he continued!

With that in mind, Elder Maurice looked up at Master Forrest. The moment he thought of how often Master Forrest had mocked him, he felt his anger soaring. Now that he had the chance, he would not let it go.

"Master Forrest, your eyes really are sharp. I wasn't like you and could not tell how special Jackie was at a glance. He was able to beat you so decisively. Even though Bradley performed quite well, he's still a distance away from Jackie!

“It’s all thanks to you for saying all of those words to console us. It led me to believe that Jackie was someone extraordinary!”

After Elder Maurice said that, Master Forrest almost spat out a mouthful of blood. He had thought that Sky Peak Pavilion would definitely win this time. Not only would they be able to gain a lot of resources, but they would also be able to bolster their reputation.

The moment the tournament was over, he would spread the results far and wide. The fact that Sky Peak Pavilion stood on top of Phoenix Valley would definitely cause them to be regarded much higher by everyone else in the future.

After all, Phoenix Valley was at the core of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. It was a place dedicated to cultivating alchemists. However, the best-laid plans of mice and men often go awry, so Jackie had not been crazy after all.

Jackie had been so calm and had said so many strange things completely because he had been confident in his own talent and ability.

Jackie let out a smile as he looked at Master Forrest, “Thank you so much for the earlier praises. I have absolute confidence in myself as well. The Sky Peak Pavilion has talented alchemists, but they aren’t really much to me.”

Jackie was no idiot. Of course, he knew that Master Forrest’s earlier words had all been to humiliate him, so he had the perfect chance to fight back.

Master Forrest was so angry that his whole body shook. He almost collapsed on the floor at that moment, but thankfully Bradley was right next to him and reached up to help the swaying man.

At that moment, Bradley’s expression finally changed a little. From the moment Jackie announced his results, Bradley suddenly had a sharp expression on his face as he stared right at Jackie’s condensing card.

After Master Forrest steadied himself, Bradley finally said, “You completed a lot of very hard pill runes. You really are quite skilled.

“Why do you still have a sixth-grade alchemist badge? You should already have been a seventh-grade alchemist with your capabilities a long time ago. Why do you need to do that…”

Bradley frowned as he said all of that. He felt like Jackie was someone who enjoyed fooling others. Jackie clearly had skills that far exceeded a regular seventh-grade alchemist, so why did he still have a sixth grade alchemist badge on?

Bradley refused to believe it was not intentional. Jackie frowned as he replied to Bradley’s questioning look, “I’ve never taken part in the seventh-grade alchemist test, so

I naturally won't have the badge. What does the badge on my chest have anything to do with anyone else?

"I haven't been in Phoenix Valley for that long. Even those from Phoenix Valley don't really know me, so stop looking at me with that accusing look. If you have lost, then you have lost! Are you refusing to admit defeat?"

Chapter 2658
Those words successfully caused Bradley's expression to change drastically, particularly the last sentence. It caused Bradley's breathing to accelerate. Even though he was not someone who was very emotional, he had constantly been put on a pedestal by others for many years.

His talents surpassed so many alchemists that he never believed he would lose to anyone. Hence, when he was mocked by Jackie like that after he lost to Jackie, he suddenly lost his composure.

Bradley's mouth stiffened, "It's still only at the first stage of the tournament. There are still two more stages. Don't think you can beat me later just because you've beaten me now."

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said casually, "Then let's wait and see, I don't really think you're that good anyway…"

Jackie was intentionally provoking Bradley. After all, he had been angered so much earlier, so it was only fair that he got to vent his frustrations a little. Bradley's words earlier had basically offered himself to Jackie on a silver platter.

He had already been angry, and Bradley looked and talked to him in such an accusing way. Elder Maurice had already forgotten how angered he had been earlier. He walked right over to Jackie.

He reached out and took Jackie's condensing card and looked it over before he said in surprise, "You completed half of the easier ones and half of the harder ones. Even the best of seventh-grade alchemists would not be able to do what you did!"

After saying that, Elder Maurice patted Jackie on the shoulder emotionally.

Due to the limits of age, they were all still not at the level of being at the peak of seventh-grade alchemists. After all, standing at that peak meant that they were just a hair's breadth away from becoming an eighth-grade alchemist.

An eighth-grade alchemist represented an alchemist that was already on the path to becoming a master. An eighth-grade alchemist would be incredibly respected even in the inner region of Middle Province.

Eighth-grade pills could even be auctioned off for good prices. The path that Jackie had set for himself initially was to become an eighth-grade alchemist before constantly refining pills to be auctioned off.

He would take any amount of spirit crystals he could get. After all, Jackie needed far too many of them. In Jackie's eyes, being an eighth-grade alchemist was just a starting point.

After all, he had absorbed the memories of that ancient warrior. Even ninth-grade alchemists were nothing to him. Jackie's words thoroughly angered Bradley.

Bradley's personality should have been an incredibly calm one. However, even if he had been insulted before, it had never been as disdainful as how Jackie was looking at him.

Furthermore, he had never felt that sort of feeling constantly boiling in his heart, like Jackie had numerous times before. It caused Bradley to suffer so much that his breathing was erratic.

Mr.Forrest frowned, "It's alright, this is just the first stage of the tournament. There are still two stages left.

"Even though you won the first stage, it doesn't mean that you'll win the other two stages.

"Our alchemists are only slightly below yours. If you give them some time, they'll absolutely surpass you!"

Chapter 2659
Master Forrest could not bear to just look on as Bradley was constantly getting angered by Jackie. After all, they still needed Bradley to help pull them back in the remainder of the tournament. However, looking at what happened earlier, the other two events did not look too good for them.

Yet, he could not just give up all hope. Before organizing the tournament, Master Forrest had promised the other elders that Sky Peak Pavilion would definitely win.

After all, they had Bradley as their assassin, and Master Maurice had looked into what was happening within Phoenix Valley. He had already guessed that it was very unlikely that the alchemists from the inner valley would appear.

It would definitely be alchemists from the outer valley. The difference in talent between the two valleys was night and day, they were not comparable at all. As long as the alchemists that came were from the outer valley, he would not need to worry about anything.

Things happened just like he expected. A total of three came, but none of them seemed particularly strong. It went just as planned, but he never expected that his trump card would have been trumped by theirs.

Jackie was an incredibly dark horse that caught everyone off guard. At that moment, Master Forrest had already thoroughly hated Jackie. If Jackie was not there, he would absolutely not lose this tournament.

All of his beautiful dreams from earlier had been shattered the moment Jackie announced his own result. Jackie let out a cold laugh, finding it funny how Master Forrest was trying to protect his golden goose.

Thinking about Master Forrest's mocking words from earlier, Jackie decided he could not just let them go and refuted, "I don't know if I would ever agree with that. He's obviously going to improve if you give him time, but are you saying I'll just never improve?

"No matter how much he improves, I'm just going to stay the same? Don't you think that's hilarious?"

Master Forrest's face darkened as he clenched his fists together.

Elder Maurice was incredibly amused by that. All the anger he had accumulated earlier disappeared in an instant, and his mood completely recovered.

However, Master Forrest was not someone who only knew how to throw his temper around. He clearly knew that there was no reason to continue fighting with Jackie, just like how he had forced Elder Maurice into a corner earlier…

He had been in a position of absolute advantage, even if Elder Maurice talked his tongue off, he would only be laughed at. Yet, the situation had changed, and he was now the person who was being humiliated.

Master Forrest took a deep breath, "In preparation for the second test, we'll give you an hour of rest. In an hour, the second portion will continue. I'll announce the rules then!"

After that, Master Forrest coldly sat back down. Jackie raised an eyebrow, he would definitely be seen as too stubborn if he insisted on continuing to mock Master Forrest.

Elder Maurice would definitely stop him as well. After all, they were not enemies. Jackie's lips twitched as he stopped reluctantly.

Since they had an hour to rest, he would naturally not waste his time on those from

Sky Peak Pavilion. He turned around and walked toward a corner in the hall.

He wanted to find a place to rest for a moment. At that moment, Jackie was in the center of the five of them. No matter where he went, Elder Maurice and the others followed. The five of them found a quiet spot far away from the center.

Elder Maurice had a very happy expression on his face. It was as if he had found light in the darkness. Mr. Zayne was not much different and felt like Jackie was his lucky star.

Chapter 2660
Compared to the excitement from those two, Claude and Benedict were keeping a much lower profile. The two of them hang their heads low at that moment, not daring to say anything.

After all, they had insulted Jackie before, and the words they said had been incredibly harsh.

“What happened? Why wasn’t I humiliated?” Jackie suddenly said to Claude, causing Claude to stiffen. He had thought that Jackie would let him off if he did not say anything, so he was caught off guard by Jackie’s sudden question.

If it had been in the past, Jackie would not have bothered to waste his time on them. However, as time passed, he slowly started to develop a belief.

The more chances he gave others, the more they would try to cross the line. In his mind, Claude’s disdainful attitude constantly appeared.

Claude kept on acting as if he had the moral high ground and kept on trying to fault Jackie for every little thing which greatly annoyed Jackie.

Claude let out a slight cough, “You were definitely not humiliated. We never expected you to be so talented. Even Bradley wasn’t a match for you.”

Jackie let out a cold smile as he started to raise his voice, “Don’t always try to judge others by your own standards. I kept on repeating that before, but you kept on ignoring it. You weren’t judging me for Phoenix Valley’s sake, but for your own personal satisfaction. Someone like you isn’t worthy of remaining in Phoenix Valley.”

Jackie had really gone overboard with his words. Claude suddenly looked up at Jackie with wide eyes. Jackie merely looked back with a cold smile. Claude had planned on merely quietly accepting everything since Jackie was definitely extraordinary.

With Jackie’s results, he would definitely be heavily rewarded when he got back to Phoenix Valley. Then, Jackie would rise through the ranks. Being accepted into the inner valley was an eventuality.

Claude did not know what kind of special rights the inner valley had, but anyone would tell you that the inner valley was the core of Phoenix Valley. As long as Jackie entered

the inner valley, Jackie would be able to deal with Claude very easily the moment Jackie amassed enough power.

That was why Claude had not planned on continuing to fight Jackie. Even if he had to be insulted by Jackie, he had planned on acting like nothing happened, acting like he was deaf.

However, Jackie's words were clearly a threat to Claude. Jackie said that he was not worthy of continuing to stay in Phoenix Valley, so was Jackie planning on getting him kicked out? Looking at Jackie's unwavering gaze, Claude felt like it was even more of a possibility.

He started to breathe faster, "What do you mean I'm not worthy of staying in Phoenix Valley? You're not the one who makes that decision. You're threatening me right now!"

Jackie scoffed as he said in a low voice, "I'm not planning on threatening you at all, because you're not worth me doing that. I don't know if you're deaf, but didn't I already tell you why you're not worthy of staying in Phoenix Valley?

"Someone selfish like you probably doesn't even care about the valley's reputation. You teamed up with outsiders to insult me! You're not worthy of staying in Phoenix Valley at all!"

Claude was scared stiff at that. Jackie did not seem to be joking at all. The moment Jackie got back and told everyone what had happened, Claude would not be able to get away scot-free.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2661 - 2665

Chapter 2661

If Jackie was actually someone who only knew how to brag like what Claude had claimed then Claude would have been fine no matter what he said. However, Jackie had just shown off his worth, and everything Claude had said would definitely be a huge problem if it got out.

Claude had mentally collapsed at that point. He gulped as he said, “Why do you have to be so petty? I might have said some nasty words earlier, but it hasn’t caused you any harm.

“I only said all of that because I didn’t know who you were. If I knew you were as skilled at this, of course, I wouldn’t have said anything!”

That excuse annoyed Jackie even more. The moment Jackie remembered the look on Claude’s face earlier, Jackie’s cold smile deepened, and refuted, “You’re calling me

petty? You claim that you just said a few harsh words… You’re really good at pushing responsibility away from yourself.”

The panicking Claude replied, “What is it that you want? In the end, I didn’t cause you any harm, so why are you hounding me like that?!”

Advertisement

If it had been in the past, Jackie would not have bothered with this, and would probably have just let him off. However, this time it was different. Jackie still needed to deal with that troublesome Elder Rick when he got back to Phoenix Valley.

If he did not teach Claude a lesson, he might be seen as someone with too soft of a backbone, so Jackie was resolved to not let Claude off easily.

That would just be sharpening Elder Rick’s knife for him. Claude was already trembling at that point, he was desperately trying to find some allies.

He abruptly looked up at Elder Maurice and shouted, “Elder Maurice! He’s threatening me at this point. I know I went overboard with what I did before, and I can apologize to him, but it’s too much for him to want to chase me out of Phoenix Valley!”

Advertisement

Elder Maurice raised an eyebrow, seemingly thinking of something. After thinking about it for a long time, he did not say a single word.

Claude had been waiting for Elder Maurice to stop Jackie, but Elder Maurice seemed to be thinking about something incredibly difficult. Looking at how Elder Maurice was acting, Claude immediately understood that Elder Maurice did not plan on interfering, and was allowing Jackie to do as he pleased.

Mr. Zayne had his head lowered, looking like he did not want to care at all. Claude's heart chilled when he saw how the two of them were acting.

The Hestia continent really was a place where the strong ruled over everything. After Jackie showed his skills, the two of them were immediately placed in different positions. Even if Jackie was acting like that, the two of them did not seem to have any plans to stop him, even as higher-ups of Phoenix Valley.

They were allowing Jackie to continue threatening Claude like that. The more Claude thought about it, the more anxious he got. He nervously turned to look at Benedict, but Benedict was desperately trying to inch away to the side at that moment.

It was like he was trying to make Jackie feel like he did not exist at all. That way, he would not be targeted by Jackie. Seeing how Benedict was acting, Claude fell into despair.

Everyone went their own ways whenever there was trouble. After he was targeted, even his so-called brother refused to stand up for him. In order to avoid being targeted by Jackie, Benedict did not even dare to raise his head.

Chapter 2662
Claude's shoulders shook as he started to lose his footing from shock. Jackie smiled as he said, "Don't even think about working together with Elder Rick against me when you get back. If you dare to do that, the one who falls will be you!"

Claude shuddered, losing all hope. Jackie continued to say, "Just focus on obediently completing the tournament and stop with all your nonsense. I could treat you as if you don't exist if you did that. However, if you try to cause me more trouble, I'll immediately make you wish you were dead."

Advertisement

Claude looked up at Jackie, seemingly finding a chance of survival. Even though Jackie did not say he would let him off, at least there was a chance.

Claude had really been thinking that he would definitely join Elder Rick's camp for one last struggle if Jackie really wanted to force him into a corner. Even if Elder Rick looked down on him, as long as he showed that he was useful, Elder Rick would protect him.

However, Jackie had seen through his thoughts immediately. If he really did that, Jackie would definitely kill him first. Those words had completely dashed Claude's hopes. However, right after that, Jackie had pulled him back from the dead.

Claude's mental state was in constant fluctuation at that point. The moment Jackie said that, he immediately nodded and replied, "I won't anymore! I'll quietly complete the tournament. I won't say another word that I don't need to say!"

Jackie grunted and said nothing else. Time passed very quickly, and an hour went by in a flash. The five of them returned to the center of the hall instead. At that moment, Master Forrest had already recomposed himself.

Sky Peak Pavilion had returned to how they were at the start. Bradley seemed intent on keeping his gaze forward, not willing to talk to anyone. Master Forrest still had a smile on his face, but this time his smile looked incredibly forced.

There were a few red veins in his eyes. Even though he had already composed himself, Jackie could not help but feel like he was trying to force himself.

Master Forrest looked at Phoenix Valley's group, and his gaze stopped on Jackie for a very long time. Jackie raised an eyebrow, ignoring everything Master Forrest was doing.

Master Forrest said, "Time's up, the second stage of the tournament is about to start. This time, it's very simple. We just need all of you to refine a middle-level seventh grade pill in one day."

After he said that, all of the participants looked up strangely. Even though a middle

level seventh-grade pill was not easy for them to refine, it was not that difficult either.

They even had a whole day. It was more than enough time. Practically everyone there would be able to do it. Master Forrest was immediately able to guess their thoughts when he looked at their expressions.

His lips curled up into a cold smirk and said, "The first stage was already so hard, do you really think the second stage will be that easy?"

Naturally, none of the participants thought that the difficulty would be reduced, but they felt like refining a seventh-grade pill could not possibly be anything that hard.

Master Forrest continued, "The pill you have to refine is called the Three Suns Pill."

The moment he said that, everyone was

stunned other than Jackie and Conrad. Conrad widened his eyes as he said, "You mean the Three Suns Pill that had always had its refinement process kept a secret?"

Chapter 2663
Master Forrest looked at Conrad approvingly, “That’s right, you’re quite knowledgeable. The Three Suns Pill’s recipe has always been a secret. Alchemists like you would never be able to obtain the refinement method without first becoming a core member of any clan.

“It’s because the Three Suns Pill can quickly heal any injuries a person suffers from. It’s a secret that’s rarely passed on. Today, you’ll have to sign a contract if you want to take part in the second stage. Only those who have signed it will be able to get the recipe for the Three Suns Pill.”

Even though Master Forrest did not explain the details of the contract, anyone would be able to figure out that it was probably a contract to swear them to secrecy. When it came to that, there was not a single one of them who was not willing.

After all, obtaining the recipe for the Three Suns Pill was definitely a good thing to any alchemist. They could use that to make more spirit crystals from then on. However, Jackie was different, since the Three Suns Pill was something he already knew how to make.

After all, the ancient warrior used to stand at the pinnacle of alchemists. Pill recipes like that were not worth anything to the ancient warrior at all.

Furthermore, the effects of the Three Suns Pill were nothing that incredible. It was just to treat internal injuries, but for some reason, it had become a secret in the Hestia Continent. If a contract was not signed, it was impossible to tell how valuable it was.

There were so many pills that were more effective than the three Suns Pill, but only the Three Suns Pill was kept a secret.

After everything that had happened earlier, Master Forrest was in no mood to waste any time.

Since everyone had agreed to sign the contract, they proceeded with everything. The contracts were handed over to be signed. Jackie was already quite familiar with contracts, they were something that could not be changed.

The moment a contract was signed, it would be enforced by the laws of the world. If a contract was violated, one’s soul would get impacted by the backlash. Even a god would not be able to help.

However, there was nothing Jackie could do at that moment. He was forced to follow the crowd and sign the contract. After the contract was signed, Master Forrest continued the announcement, “The Three Suns Pill’s recipe is on this plaque in my hand. The plaque has the ability to store information. All you need to do is send out your senses, and the plaque’s contents will be revealed in your mind’s eye!”

As he said that, he distributed the plaques to the six participants. The moment they got the plaques, the participants all threw their divine senses inside. They were all quite composed. After they looked through it, they failed to see what was so special about the Three Suns Pill.

Even though the Three Suns Pill was considered a middle-level seventh-grade pill, the fact that it was being used for the tournament naturally meant that it should have something special about it. Yet, when they looked at it, no one could figure it out.

It was just a very simple seventh-grade pill. The ingredients needed to refine the pill were not that special either.

Master Forrest continued, “Refining the Three Suns Pill requires two Lorn Roots, a Starlight Grass, a Black Frost Flower. They’re all commonly seen ingredients.

This time, we’ve prepared enough for all of you. No matter how much you use up in the

day, you can continue trying it as long as the time limit still isn’t up.”

The moment he said that, everyone’s eyes widened as their confusion deepened.

Chapter 2664
An unlimited amount of materials meant that they could comfortably ignore any mistakes they made. All they needed to do was to refine it in a day.

That felt far too relaxed. The first stage had been so tense, but the second stage became much more relaxed. No one could believe it.

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he started to ponder on the question with the plaque in hand. Even though Master Forrest had made everything seem so relaxed, Jackie felt like the second stage’s test would definitely not be so simple.

At that moment, Bradley said, “What is the target for the test? Are we competing to see who refines the pill the fastest?”

Master Forrest nodded, “That’s exactly it. Whoever makes the pill the quickest will be the one who scores the highest score.”

However, the moment Master Forrest said that Claude refuted, “This isn’t fair, We’re all alchemists. We all know that testing an alchemist on the speed an alchemist can refine a pill is absolutely not the right way to gauge the level of an alchemist.

“The only way to test an alchemist is to see the quality of the pill they refine. Many high-level alchemists often use up a large amount of time refining a pill to make sure they put their full focus on it. Testing an alchemist this way won’t be able to test how good an alchemist is.”

Claude was absolutely right. Just as he said, testing the level of an alchemist could not be done through the amount of time an alchemist used. The thing that needed to be tested was the quality of pills that were refined. It was something every alchemist knew.

Claude knew that Master Forrest was an alchemist who should already know that. The tournament had been set by the higheroups from both ends as well.

However, he was too emotional at that moment, and could not really stop himself from asking.

Master Forrest raised an eyebrow as he looked at Claude with some disdain, “Do you really think I wouldn’t know something as basic as that? Since time is the criteria for this contest, there’s naturally a reason for it. You’ve all looked at the contents of the plaque earlier, but did you notice anything different?”

Everyone looked up and exchanged looks. Their eyes were all filled with confusion, obviously not having noticed anything.

Master Forrest let out a smile as he explained, “Have you thought about why we wanted to choose the Three Suns Pill?”

Of course, they had but try as they might figure it out, they could not understand why the Three Suns Pill was chosen.

Master Maurice held up two fingers, “There are two reasons. The first reason is that the Three Suns Pill is a secret pill. None of you would have ever refined the pill, so it’s completely new to all of you.

“What we’re testing is how long you need to figure out a new pill recipe.

“Meanwhile, the second reason is the main reason we chose the three suns pill. You’ve already looked through the contents earlier, and you’ve naturally seen what runes you need for the Three Suns Pill. You need a total of three thousand and three hundred pills runes.

“Out of those runes, only sixty of them are ones you’ve never seen before. The Three Suns Pill’s recipe is kept a secret precisely because of that.”

Chapter 2665
After Master Forrest’s words, everyone took up the plaque in their hands and at the same time looked through the contents. They had seen that there were three thousand and three hundred pills earlier, but since time had been limited, they did not look at it in detail.

After looking at it for a while, Bradley was the first to react. There was a look of shock on his face, “There are sixty ancient pill runes?”

Master Forrest nodded, “There really are sixty ancient pill runes. Even though it’s not that many, memorizing them and being able to draw them in one day won’t be a walk in the park.

“Ancient pills have their own unique forms and are different from the usual runes we see. However, the principles behind drawing them are the same. As long as you’re talented enough, you’ll definitely be able to completely memorize and draw them out.”

Master Forrest lifted everyone’s confusion at that. No wonder the Three Suns Pill was chosen, it was to test these abilities in the participants. Sixth-grade or above pills all required pill runes to be carved in them during refinement.

Each pill recipe would record in detail what runes needed to be carved. The Three Suns Pill might not be high-ranked, but sixty pill runes needed to be carved in.

They were all ancient pill runes. They had not even finished memorizing all the basic pill runes in the Hestia Continent, let alone ancient pill runes.

The sixty ancient pill runes were completely foreign to them. Hence, the key part of the test was to see if they were able to memorize and carve out those sixty ancient pill runes in a day!

They would also need to properly learn the recipe for the Three Suns Pill at the same time. After all, they had never refined the pill before. It was inevitable that some mistakes would be made. There were so many hurdles to overcome that even Bradley felt the pressure.

Only then did they understand what the key point of the test was. All of their confusion had disappeared, replaced with heavy pressure on their shoulders.

Other than Jackie, everyone present had a smile on their faces. Even if they were confident in themselves and confident in the fact that they would end up becoming one of the top alchemists of their own forces, they were a bit apprehensive about the Three Suns Pill.

That was because the Three Suns Pill was far harder than they had anticipated. Even though a whole day sounded like enough time, it included the time for them to get familiar with the recipe as well as remember how to carve those sixty ancient runes.

Benedict said with a dark look on his face, “Isn’t this too hard? Those ancient runes are so different from the runes we know now.”

“It’s incredibly hard to memorize them in a short time, and we need to do it in a day. I feel like…” Benedict might not have continued, but everyone knew what he wanted to say. That was because everyone wanted to say that they did not have the confidence that they could do it.

Benedict suddenly felt like he was incredibly useless. Even though they won the first stage, the person who contributed the most had been Jackie. All Benedict did was rely on Jackie.

This time, the test was different from the last. If he really failed to refine a Three Suns Pill in a day, he would really end up dragging his team down.

Claude’s expression was incredibly dark as well. He had the same worries as Benedict. He was also worried that he would be unable to refine the pill in the end while the Sky Peak Pavilion would succeed.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2666 - 2670

Chapter 2666
Both Claude and Benedict would end up shouldering the responsibility should they fail the tournament.

With that in mind, Claude felt his heart burdened deeply. He looked up as he shuddered, shooting a glance at Mr. Zayne and Elder Maurice.

The two of them were not relaxed either, but they focused fully on Jackie. Jackie had become their greatest hope.

Claude, noticing that both men did not gaze at him in disappointment, sighed in relief. He walked to Benedict and whispered, “It’s different this time. Before this, it was Jackie who’d shoulder the blame if we lose, and we won’t be implicated heavily. However, if we don’t manage to stave off the pressure this time and end up dragging the team down, then we’d be the one to blame. The consequences won’t be pretty.”

Hearing that, Benedict shuddered involuntarily. His mood sank as he felt tears pooling in his eyes. Alas, no one could help the two of them at that moment.

Both Claude and Benedict felt their chests tightening rapidly.

Advertisement

Perhaps both men were far too nervous that Elder Maurice averted his gaze from Jackie and gazed at both Claude and Benedict. When he saw their expressions, he knew what the two of them were thinking.

He could not help but frown as his expression turned cold. “Both of you must do your utmost best. This portion is just as important as the last. Even though we won the first portion, we’ll still have to go through the second part if we lose this one.

“I trust you’ve heard everything Master Forrest and I have said before; this is a best of three. If we win both stages, then we won’t even have to go through the last stage.

“However, if we lose, we’ll have to go through the third stage. If the two of you drag us down right now, rest assured you’ll be hearing from me when we get back.”

Advertisement

Those words caused Claude and Benedict to stiffen, and they felt, at that moment, just how severe the issue was.

Elder Maurice was right. If they won this one, they would not have to compete anymore.

The tournament was incredibly important, and the two of them suddenly felt a lot more nervous. Their bodies suddenly shuddered.

In truth, the ones from the Sky Peak Pavilion were not much better. After all, they had ended up losing in the first round, despite thinking that they had a sure win. The pressure greatly increased for them in the second stage. If they lost this time, they would have lost the tournament completely.

Not only would their reputation be affected, but they would have to pay up a lot of resources as well.

This was tremendously important to Sky Peak Pavilion, so much so that they would end up being punished, especially the organizer, Master Forrest.

Before the tournament, he had assured and swore to the higher-ups that they would win. Out of the blue, however, a dark horse joined the fray, and the results were out of their expectations. Master Forrest refused to accept this, but the dread he felt was undeniable.

Bradley's calm expression had vanished completely, replaced with a frown on his face. The pressure was evident.

Even though he was exceptional, Jackie had been a foil to him. He would still receive punishment if they lost, even if he did his best.

Advertisement

In truth, Bradley did not really care if he

lost at all.

The most important thing was the fact that he was not as talented as Jackie. Bradley had thought that he was the best there was with his talent, but Jackie had somehow soundly beaten him.

Chapter 2667
During the first stage, Jackie had produced 300 pill runes more than he did, much to Bradley's bitter disbelief.

Master Forrest could immediately tell what Bradley was thinking. He walked next to Bradley and whispered, "That brat might be talented in a way, but this stage is different from the last. Even though you've never seen these sixty ancient pill runes before, you've still carved other ancient pill runes before.

"As long as you can maintain your calm, you'll surely refine them. Furthermore, I have faith that you'll be able to do it in less than a day!"

These words, though uttered as compliments, were not blind praise.

It was just his inner thoughts. Bradley was no ordinary master. The Three Suns Pill should not be anything incredibly hard for Bradley. As long as Bradley was at his usual standards, He would be able to finish. refining the pill in one day.

Bradley would probably not even need a full day. The main focus of the tournament was Jackie and Bradley, and it all depended on which of them could refine the pill faster. Master Forrest did not want to admit it, but Jackie was very talented as well. He would probably be able to refine the pill in a day.

However, this was something they could not ignore. This time, they were competing in terms of speed.

Both sides thus began consoling their representative before the match started, most likely driven due to the pressure.

Elder Maurice patted Jackie by the shoulder and whispered, “You don’t have to feel any pressure; just do as you usually do. As long as you’re in your usual form, you’ll no doubt wow the crowd!”

Jackie’s performance had been far too great last time. Even Elder Maurice, who was usually quite modest, could not bear to be all that modest. With Jackie’s performance last time, Jackie should be able to get a good result in the match.

Furthermore, Elder Maurice felt like Bradley was no match for Jackie.

Mr. Zayne nodded and said, “You’re our key participant this time. As long as you do well, we’ll be able to win.”

Despite their praises, Jackie remained visibly passive. In fact, he felt somewhat… exasperated. There were some things he did not want to say, but Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne were expecting too much of him, so he had to say something.

After a deep inhale, Jackie commented, “Don’t hope so highly. The key this time isn’t on me or Bradley, but on Claude and Benedict. We’ll both naturally be able to finish refining a pill, but it’s not a done deal for the four of them.

“Claude and Benedict are at the same level as Conrad and Jameson. The key point will be who manages to refine a pill among them.

“Even if Bradley and I both manage to refine a Three Suns Pill in the shortest amount of Time, it’d be completely pointless if the other four can’t even succeed,”

Jackie’s words served as a reminder to Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne. It was then did they realize that Jackie was right. The key for the match was not on Jackie and Bradley.

The two of them were exceptional and would no doubt be able to refine a pill in a day, but such a case was uncertain for the other four participants.

The tournament might look into everyone's results, but being able to, or even failing to, refine a pill depended on their skills individually.

Chapter 2668
Internalizing that fact, Elder Maurice's expression scrunched as though he had swallowed a bitter pill.

At the same time, both Benedict and Claude had overheard Jackie's words, and their expressions soured even more. The pressure had already gotten to them at that point, but with Jackie's no-nonsense statement, the pressure felt even worse.

The worst situation would be if not a single one of the four of them managed to refine the pill after a whole day; that would be absolutely embarrassing.

Elder Maurice's lips twitched helplessly. "You two will have to work hard as well. I've seen the sixty ancient pill runes, and it's not too hard to draw them, in fact. As long as you manage to compose yourselves, you'll surely succeed!"

Elder Maurice looked at Claude and

Benedict seriously as he spoke, but Claude had a twisted look on his face, not knowing what to say in response.

Master Forrest cleared his throat before saying, "Alright, time's up. The timer will start from now on. I've already had my people prepare the ingredients-they're right behind you. We've even prepared the best furnaces for you, so you can show us what you've got now!"

Master Forrest then waved at the entrance of the hall. All of them looked over and saw a group of burly men carrying specially made wooden planks. With a shout, they walked in at the same time.

Jackie and the others were stunned, momentarily unable to guess what those planks were for. Master Forrest had probably been too emotional before and was not in the mood to explain at all.

Master Forrest ordered the men to place the planks in the right place. Astoundingly

strong physically, the muscular men quickly brought in the planks and arranged them accordingly and made up a total of six small rooms.

Even though the tops were sealed off, there were six isolated spaces. There was no need for Master Forrest to explain anything at that point. All of them knew what the small spaces were for.

After all, refining pills was something that did not allow for any distractions.

Spectators would have no effect on the first stage's results. Even if they were distracted, they would be able to get good results if they composed themselves. However, refining pills was different, and everything would be in ruins if they made a mistake. They would not only waste time but their resources as well.

Even though the Three Suns Pill was a seventh-grade pill that was not all that valuable to any large forces, the materials needed to make them were provided bountifully. If they wasted the ingredients haphazardly, it would still be a large expense nonetheless.

Jackie could not help but let out a small laugh as he looked up at Master Forrest and Elder Maurice. He could not help but lament that even powerful forces could not use resources recklessly.

The six individual spaces were not large, but there was enough space for them to do anything they needed to. Each entrance had its label.

Master Forrest furrowed his eyebrows as he pointed to those labels. "We'll go with your results from the first stage: Jackie will be number one, Bradley will be number two, and so on. All of you know your results better than I do, so go on."

Master Forrest fell silent afterward; it was evident how bad his mood was. Everyone could remember how pleased Master Forrest had been during the first segment.

Chapter 2669
Jackie had the urge to burst out laughing at the decline he was seeing.

It was about time, and they could not delay for much longer, so Elder Maurice turned to look at Jackie with a frown.

The moment Jackie looked at Elder Maurice, he knew the elder had a lot to say. Jackie pursed his lips helplessly, knowing that Elder Maurice was disconcerted. The tournament was incredibly important, after all.

If they won, they would not even need to compete in the third stage; they would win over Sky Peak Pavilion with two wins out of three possible ones. However, if they lost, there would be too many variables that would follow.

Elder Maurice's conflicted expression was awfully visible, and Mr. Zayne was no different. He, too, wished for the tournament to be a success.

After all, they would have to bear the wrath of Phoenix Valley's higher-ups if they lost, and no one would be able to come out of it unscathed. Mr. Zyane had planned on not saying anything to not give Jackie too much pressure, but the pressure he felt was too much to bear.

Before Jackie walked into the room prepared for him, Mr. Zayne suddenly walked forward and whispered, "You were right before. The key to this match isn't you, but…"

Jackie frowned as he sighed helplessly. "Mr. Zayne, it's pointless for you to worry. Just wait for the results. I can only tell you that I'll do well, but I can't guarantee what'll happen with the others.

"It's a competition in the end, and the results won't all be totaled together but counted individually. The one I'm facing is Bradley. As long as I beat Bradley, I'd have done my part. As for everything else, that's out of my control."

It was as if Master Forrest had heard what the two of them were saying as he suddenly spoke, "All of you should have an understanding of how the results will be counted this time."

Jackie frowned. Master Forrest had brushed past the topic earlier, not going into it in detail. Master Forrest let out a smile as he glanced at Jackie, moving forward.

He slightly raised his chin as he said, "The six of you will be refining the Three Suns Pill together. The target is to successfully refine the pill, and the one with the shortest time taken will be ranked higher.

"If the six of you all manage to refine the Three Suns Pill, then all of your times will be added together and the side with the lowest total time will win.

"However, if not everyone succeeds in refining it, then the side who refines the most pills will win. Have I made it clear enough?

"Feel free to voice out any opinions you have. Of course, I'll just give it a listen. After all, both I and Elder Maurice set these criteria."

Jackie sighed internally. Master Forrest was clearly aiming those words at Phoenix Valley. The rules were very much in Sky Peak Pavilion's favor.

Jackie's skills were already plain for all to see, and as long as he performed like he usually would, he would be able to beat everyone there. However, this match was incredibly special.

Only if everyone managed to refine the Three Suns Pill in a day would the time be used as a metric.

However, if not everyone managed to refine the Three Suns Pill, then the side with the most pills would win. Even though they had not started, Jackie was sure that there would be those who would fail.

Chapter 2670
The Three Suns Pill might not be difficult for Jackie, but it was different for the others. After all, there were 60 ancient pill runes among those that the Three Suns Pill needed.

Those ancient pill runes were distinct from modern ones. They would not only need to memorize them in a short amount of time but also successfully carve out those runes with a refinement of over 50 percent.

Anyone with a subpar talent would be stuck there. After all, they have never refined Three Suns Pills before. The first refinement would take a while to get used to, but they unfortunately had a time limit to it.

All these setbacks made the competition all the more difficult.

Jackie did know what Claude and Benedict's final results would be. After all, he was not

sure what their level was at.

Even though he had already seen them completing the pill runes, no one would know if they would be able to successfully refine the pill based on the results of the first segment.

The second segment was a bigger test of one's talents.

Jackie sighed helplessly. Bradley and himself would no doubt be able to refine the pill, of course, but even if he managed to beat Bradley, his efforts would go to waste if Claude or Benedict hindered them.

Jackie shook his head in exasperation, and Mr. Zayne sighed heavily as well. He knew that Jackie was right. Jackie's job this time was to eliminate Bradley.

The true key of the match was the four others. If they failed on that front, they would lose the match, but Mr. Zayne did not have much hope for Claude and Benedict.

Even though they were somewhat talented, it did not mean that the talent would shine through at such a key moment. Mr. Zayne looked at Claude and Benedict, his entire being haunted with worry. He had a lot of things to say, but the words never made it out of his mouth.

After all, there was no point to saying anything else at that moment. Claude and Benedict were already incredibly nervous, and they both knew very well that they could determine the outcome of their match.

Jackie sighed, not saying anything else as he entered the first space. Everything was already prepared inside, including a furnace about half as tall as him. Giving it a good once-over, Jackie deduced that it was well made and probably cost a lot of money. Apart from that, the materials for the Three Suns Pill were right next to it. Just counting the Lorn Roots, there were eight of them.

Jackie took a deep breath. Since the planks encased him, no one could see his expression. At that moment, Jackie thoroughly relaxed.

The match might be an incredibly harsh test for anyone else, but it was not difficult for Jackie at all.

He grabbed onto the plaque again as he sent his senses inside. The refinement process for the Three Suns Pill revealed itself. Jackie already had that memory in his mind.

Even though the ancient warrior already stood at the peak of alchemy at the end of his life, even in a first-grade world, getting to the peak required him to start from the bare basics.

The Three Suns Pill was nothing to the ancient warrior, but he had nonetheless refined it before in his youth. All Jackie needed to do was make use of that memory. He did not start off refining the pill right away but instead tried to carve the 60

ancient runes.

He needed to first master that before he started the refinement. It would make things much easier. To Jackie, ancient runes did not exist because they were called ancient runes, simply because they were inherited from second or first-grade worlds.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2671 - 2675

Chapter 2671
They were not common in third-grade worlds at all, so they would naturally be seen as pill runes from ancient times. To Jackie, however, those runes were just like any other runes-there was nothing special about them.

His hands moved as faint golden pill runes were formed through his fingers. When he was carving the fortieth pill, Jackie made a mistake after his body could not keep up with his memories, and the pill rune suddenly collapsed.

All of the pill runes in the air suddenly turned back into pill aura. Nonetheless, he remained expressionless as he raised his hand to continue drawing, after the pill auras merged back into his surroundings.

He did not need to remember the pill runes and only needed to focus on having his body keep up with his memories.

Compared to how calm Jackie was, however, Bradley was no longer as composed as he was before.

In truth, Bradley was somewhat similar to Jackie in some ways. The two of them never reacted too emotionally to any major events, always incredibly composed. At that moment, Bradley was not capable of keeping his cool.

Advertisement

After all, Jackie's talents had overshadowed his, and everyone could see that. It was impossible for him to deny it. Jackie singlehandedly trampled the pride nurtured after being put on a pedestal for so long.

However, Bradley had never been someone who wasted too much time on words. He wanted to use his skills to prove that Jackie, while talented, would not always be better than him.

Even though it was his first time refining a

Three Suns Pill, he had already used ancient runes before. He was much more familiar with ancient runes than any ordinary person, so he believed that he would take the least amount of time to refine the Three Suns Pill.

Advertisement

He had chosen the same method as Jackie and did not start refining the pill at the very start. Instead, he decided to deal with the ancient runes first. He threw his senses into the plaque before he started to memorize those runes.

Even though there were only 60 ancient runes, time was nonetheless limited. He needed to assign the time for other matters as well and, at the same time, was worried that Jackie would be faster than him.

At that moment, Bradley was incredibly anxious, and every participant was fully focused on the refinement process.

Meanwhile, the higher-ups in the hall were all trying to look into the spaces.

After a while, they finally composed themselves; only Master Forrest's face remained sour. The first loss had really dealt a blow to him.

Even though the second segment was advantageous to Sky Peak Pavilion, he could still not relax. So what if they won the second segment? They would still be at a tie with Phoenix Valley.

He did not want that. He wanted to squash them.

Elder Maurice, on the other hand, did not reveal too much emotion on his face. It was impossible to tell what he was thinking.

After a long time, Mr. Zayne whispered, "We have to make some plans, regardless if we win or lose."

Advertisement

Chapter 2672
Elder Maurice felt rather incredulous at Mr. Zayne's words and turned to look at him. "What do you mean? What plans?"

Mr. Zayne took a deep breath as Jackie's face surfaced in his mind. "Elder Rick really went too far this time. It'd be great if we win, yes, but we may just lose, too. These two are possible entirely.

"We need to consider the consequences of those two results and prepare ourselves for them. From the start, the two of us were allowed the thought of defeat to destroy our rationality. We've never really thought about the problem.

"Now that all of them are fully focused on refining the Three Suns Pill, we have the perfect opportunity to think about what we should do after we get back."

Elder Maurice furrowed his eyebrows as he looked at Mr. Zayne. He never really had

much of an impression of Mr. Zayne before this since the man had always been a private person.

After their interaction extended, Elder Maurice immediately felt like Mr. Zayne was not a simple-minded person. Even though the guy was just a deacon at that moment, he would be an elder eventually if his intelligence was anything to go by.

He was smart and level-headed when facing problems. He was always very logical when he spoke as well.

Elder Maurice sighed. “Elder Rick will no doubt be bitter. After we head back, we have to make sure to embellish the matter.

“You’re right: we have to be prepared for the results, win or lose. Let’s put winning aside for now. How will we deal with the higher-ups’ anger if we lose?”

Mr. Zayne nodded before he said decisively, “If we’re talking about responsibility, then Elder Rick has to take up eighty percent of the responsibility if we lose. The five of us will only need to take up twenty percent.”

Elder Maurice raised an eyebrow at that, looking at Mr. Zayne approvingly. “You’re very right about that, but there’s a detrimental issue here. Elder Rick recommended Jackie, who’s the most talented person of the three. He was the one who helped us win the first part of the tournament.

“What do we say if we push eighty percent of the responsibility onto Elder Rick? In truth, him pushing Jackie to participate was a good thing!”

Elder Maurice was right. Elder Rick might not have had good intentions initially, but the results were still good in the end. Jackie did not disappoint them and had even helped them obtain victory.

However, if they ended up losing in the end, citing Jackie as the problem would not be very convincing. Elder Rick might actually use it to turn things around.

Mr. Zayne raised an eyebrow as he said. confidently, “This problem is actually quite simple. We just need Jackie to go along with it.”

Elder Maurice’s eyes brightened as various schemes popped up in his head, but he did not voice out his thoughts immediately.

Meanwhile…

Master Forrest looked on as Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne whispered to each other. His heart boiled in anger, feeling like the two of them were deliberately putting on a show for him.

After all, he had mocked them quite a bit at the start, but since they had gotten a pass, they would naturally get back at him several times over. Master Forrest was no longer in the same position as before, which caused him to suffer a lot.

He loathed Jackie, and his hatred ran deep. Had Jackie not participated, no issues would have risen in the tournament. He had a trump card in Bradley and would not have needed to worry about the second possible result.

“Elder Maurice, are you not very confident right now? Didn’t you say that you’d definitely win before? Didn’t you say that Jackie would beat Bradley?” said Master Forrest coldly.

Chapter 2673
Master Forrest was filled with too much hatred at that moment and, even when knowing his words were futile, spoke so spitefully. All of his hatred came from Jackie at that moment, so he naturally hated Elder Maurice as well.

Elder Maurice chuckled coldly as he turned to look at Master Forrest with disdain. To him, Master Forrest was like a clown. He looked at Master Forrest and immediately noticed hatred clouding the man’s eyes.

Elder Maurice let out a laugh. “And why wouldn’t we be? After all, the results were clear for all to see. Weren’t you praising Bradley to the heavens earlier? All that, yet Jackie still bulldozed him in the end!”

Master Forrest grew furious at those words. He started to shudder as he glared at Elder Maurice and gritted his teeth. How he wanted so badly to go over and give him a good punch!

Elder Maurice looked at Master Forrest with contempt. The two of them did not continue speaking, since they were still higher-ups of their respective sides. If they continued bickering, it would look far too embarrassing, so they had to cease.

Time ticked away, and after four hours passed, a sound came from the first room. All of them looked over to see a hand slowly pushing the door open.

A familiar figure walked out from within with a box in hand. When they saw Jackie, their eyes widened at the same time.

Elder Maurice looked over with some worry as he said, “Did something happen? You came out so quickly…”

Elder Maurice was more afraid than anyone else that something might have happened to Jackie. Even if Jackie would not be the key to the final result, Jackie was still Elder Maurice’s trump card.

Jackie would be able to cancel out Bradley in the second segment, but if anything happened to Jackie, then no one would be able to stop Bradley. Similarly, Mr. Zayne looked at Jackie worriedly as well.

On the other hand, Master Forrest looked rather pleased as he gazed at Jackie, truly hoping that something had happened to Jackie.

When Jackie walked out, he looked at everyone calmly. He let out a snort as he walked over to Master Forrest-who was the tournament's organizer, after all-and passed him the box in his hand.

Master Forrest frowned as he looked at Jackie with a puzzled expression. Everyone else looked over curiously as well.

Jackie smiled as he opened the box in front of everyone.

A dense medicinal smell immediately

revealed itself. When they clearly saw what was inside, almost everyone was stunned. At that moment, not one of them cared about how they should act, their lower jaw hanging open as they looked like they had seen a ghost.

Master Forrest even forgot to breathe. His eyes were wide open, and Jackie even wondered if his eyes would pop out with some force.

After a long while, Master Forrest pointed at the thing in the box and said, "What's this?"

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly, feeling like Master Forrest had been dealt too big of a blow.

He smiled and answered, "Don't you recognize the Three Suns Pill?"

Of course Master Forrest knew the Three Suns Pill. Even if he closed his eyes, he would have been able to tell that it was the Three Suns Pill from the smell alone.

How? It did not even take that long! Had Jackie really managed to refine the pill in just four hours?

Chapter 2674
At that pace, even Master Forrest had to be shocked. It was not like he had never met masters before, but it was the first time he had ever met someone like Jackie.

The match was incredibly difficult this time. If Elder Maurice had not signed a secrecy contract before, he would have suspected that Elder Maurice had revealed the contents of the test to Jackie beforehand.

Master Forrest took a deep breath as both his hands trembled slightly. “Four hours…”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he nodded. “That’s right, four hours.”

Master Forrest gulped, his breathing a little erratic. “You’re far more capable than I thought. Are you from the inner valley?”

Jackie shook his head, not bothering to explain himself. He did not care if Master Forrest believed him or not.

Jackie looked at Master Forrest coldly and said, “What should you be doing as the organizer of this tournament right now?”

Those words caused Master Forrest’s face to stiffen. He looked at Jackie hatefully, but said nothing else. He took the box from Jackie’s hands, and put the successfully refined Three Suns Pill in his hand.

To Master Forrest, it was very easy to see if the Three Suns Pill was a success or otherwise. He kept on praying in his heart that Jackie’s Three Suns Pill had a defect, and that it was not at a 50-percent refinement.

Alas, after studying it, he was disappointed to find that Jackie’s Three Suns Pill was an incredible success and had even reached 60-percent refinement. Master Forrest had a sour look on his face and, after a long while, declared rather reluctantly, “There are no problems. This is a successful Three Suns Pill.”

Despite his chagrin, there was nothing he could do at that moment. The results were clear for all to see, and he could not possibly do anything at that moment.

At the same time, Elder Maurice was rather emotional to even speak at that moment. He felt like he had found a piece of treasure. Even Mr. Zayne looked at Jackie emotionally.

Even though they knew that Jackie was not the key to the match, they still felt relief and a storm of emotions. After all, Jackie was far too talented. Even if they lost this time, they should still win the last round if Jackie performed as he always did.

Elder Maurice walked over to Jackie and patted him by the shoulder. “Well done! Even I can’t compare to your talents. When we go back, I’ll immediately recommend you to enter the inner valley!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and nodded, not saying anything else.

Mr. Zayne, meanwhile, looked even further into the future. He was already trying to figure out how he would gain Jackie’s favor.

He already saw how bright Jackie's future was, and as long as Jackie could maintain his talent, Jackie would be a key figure in Phoenix Valley, or even the master of the valley.

"Don't be too happy now. Even though Jackie successfully refined the Three Suns Pill, don't forget that he might not be the one to shift the tides this round.

"The remaining four are the ones who will decide the round. If Claude and Benedict aren't successful, what use is there with Jackie being this capable?"

Chapter 2675
All Master Forrest thought of at that moment was to rain on Phoenix Valley's parade; he did not want to see them being too pleased with themselves.

Elder Maurice coldly looked at Master Forrest after that.

As an elder, he could not just look at Master Forrest insulting Phoenix Valley and not do anything about it.

Elder Maurice chuckled. "How do you know if Conrad and Jameson will be able to refine it? During the first segment, the two of them were weaker than Claude and Benedict.

"They only managed a thousand and fifty pill runes between them, while our side had a hundred more. Can't you see the relative strengths?"

Master Forrest almost lost his rationality in

his anger. He no longer cared if continuing the argument would be good for him or not. All he wanted to do was vent his frustrations and suppress Phoenix Valley.

He narrowed his eyes and remarked, "Elder Maurice, surely you know that completing pill runes might be a proof of talent, but it has not much to do with being able to refine a Three Suns Pill."

Elder Maurice frowned. He was about to rebuke Master Forrest's words but was not given a chance as Master Forrest continued, "Elder Maurice, just think about it. What's the second portion? Sixty ancient pill runes. They've never seen those pill runes before at all. They're fighting to see who can memorize and carve out those runes the fastest.

"They also need to be able to adapt to the refinement process very quickly. After all, they only have a day! Even though Claude and Benedict both exceeded our representatives by a hundred pill runes, it still doesn't mean that you'll be better than us in the second segment!

"You might only have gotten a hundred more than us just because Claude and Benedict have studied more than Conrad and Jameson. They might have just put all their efforts into condensing pill runes normally!"

Elder Maurice felt like Master Forrest was just pushing it at that point. No matter the reason, Master Forrest just wanted to prove that Sky Peak Pavilion was better.

“Let’s not entertain that notion,” sneered Elder Maurice. “Jackie’s already refined a pill, while your side hasn’t even completed one. Just like that, we’re stronger than you!”

The two of them were arguing intensely, with neither of them giving in at all.

Jackie frowned, feeling rather irked. If this continued, they would end up arguing for

hours, and Jackie would get incredibly annoyed.

He hated people arguing around him, so he interrupted their fight as he interjected, “There’s actually no point to the two of you saying all of this. Why don’t we just wait for the final result?”

Thankfully, Jackie’s words silenced both Elder Maurice and Master Forrest. Regardless, even if they had stopped arguing, it was easy to tell from their expressions that neither of them were willing to give in.

After a few more hours, in the second room…

Bradley’s eyes were bloodshot as veins surfaced on his eyeballs. Excitement racked his being, all because he was so close to success.

At that moment, the sides of his furnace were covered with dust, a reminder of his failures. Even though Bradley was talented, he had never refined at Three Suns Pill before.

There would always be unexpected problems when an alchemist started refining a new pill. It would lead to failures, but he was not disappointed by it at all. He continued to look for the problems and focused on the refinement.

At that moment, he was already at the last step to successfully completing the Three Suns Pill. He had already condensed three thousand 280 pill runes and was only 20 runes away from successfully refining the pill.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2676 - 2680

Chapter 2676

Despite Bradley's calm exterior, the sweat on his forehead revealed how anxious he was at that moment.

After all, this was a very important moment for him. As long as he completed the last 20 pill runes, he would be able to successfully refine the Three Suns Pill, and he would then pat his chest and guarantee that he was the fastest among the other participants.

Only those who had tried this before would know how arduous the test was. Even though Jackie had talent, Jackie could not have possibly been faster than him.

Bradley had a nervous look on his face as he condensed the pill runes. He could not help but mumble to himself, "If I hadn't had experience with ancient pill runes, I wouldn't have been able to condense and refine them in such a short time."

Since refining pill runes required using true energy, Bradley had expended most of this internal energy, and even his internal organs were starting to hurt.

He endured the pain, regardless; the only thing on his mind was condensing the pill as fast as possible. That way, he would be able to squash Jackie with his prowess.

Advertisement

He remembered how Jackie humiliated him before this, and he would surely return the favor. Even though Jackie's results were higher than his in the first portion, he would use his results in the second stage to beat Jackie!

The thought of winning back his pride and returning the shame Jackie had caused him made Bradley smirk.

Meanwhile…

Jackie was already losing his patience outside. The tournament was still on, and he could not do anything by himself. He had nothing else to do but stare into space silently.

Advertisement

It was not long until an idea occurred to him, and he abruptly turned to look at Master Forrest. "The materials were all meant for us anyway. Can I just continue refining a few pills?"

The moment he said that, everyone was stunned, and even a few of them looked at Jackie speechlessly, feeling like what he said was rather moronic.

The competition was still on and everyone was working hard to refine the Three Suns Pill, yet that brat wanted to go inside and refine a few more pills. Jackie was a stark contrast to everyone else!

The participants who were still in their respective plots would no doubt retch blood if they had heard Jackie's words.

Master Forrest's lips twitched. He wanted nothing more than to scream profanities at Jackie…but he knew this was no suitable time to do so. He did not want to let Jackie do as he pleased, too.

Master Forrest wanted to reject Jackie's request when the latter quickly interjected, "Surely you can't be that petty, are you, Master Forrest? After all, the materials are all already here. After I refine them, I'll give you one and keep the rest for myself."

Jackie was obsessed with wanting to earn more spirit crystals, and he did not-would not care if Master Forrest hated his guts on it.

Master Forrest nearly shot up in anger upon hearing Jackie's new remark. Jackie had shut him down with those words before he could say anything, and if he disagreed, people would think he was a cheap person!

Jackie had also said that he would give Sky Peak Pavilion one of the pills he refined, which was rather…gracious on his part.

Advertisement

Master Forrest would be a little petty if he refused, but if he agreed, his frustration would only be fueled even more. After all, Jackie had floored Sky Peak Pavilion through and through, and it was good enough that they were not causing Jackie trouble.

They just had to cater to Jackie again.

Master Forrest's expression started to darken as his fury slowly rose from his chest. All of a sudden, Elder Maurice piped in, "Master Forrest, you're still the host. Are those materials really worth that much to Sky Peak Pavilion?

"It's prepared for the tournament anyway, and you'll even be getting a free pill. Instead of just leaving them there, you might as well allow Jackie to continue refining them. With Jackie's standards, he won't waste the resources!"

Chapter 2677
Master Forrest's expression completely darkened at that point. Elder Maurice was basically in cahoots with Jackie, putting him in a bind and forcing him to agree!

Master Forrest, though incredibly frustrated, relented with a nod. If he did not, Elder Maurice would no doubt spread the word about this, and he would gain a reputation for being petty. He could not allow his reputation to be ruined, and to add worry into the mix, the materials were not prepared with his own resources, too!

Master Forrest had to give his consent, though with a mere nod, after careful deliberation.

Jackie smiled. He did not want to give up any chance to make any spirit crystals, and the Three Suns Pill could be sold for a good price.

Before, Jackie had been refining sixth-grade pills. Even though the Three Suns Pill was a seventh-grade pill, the secrecy behind the recipe meant that it was much more expensive than regular seventh-grade pills.

After seeing Master Forrest nod, Jackie wasted not a second longer, not wanting to give Master Forrest the chance to revoke his permission. He immediately re-entered the room and threw himself into refinement.

Master Forrest was left outside, gritting his teeth in anger.

After a moment, shuffles were heard from the second room before the door opened, revealing an exhausted but excited Bradley.

He walked out of the room emotionally. He was different from Jackie in that he did not place the Three Suns Pill into a box to preserve the medicinal properties, but instead held it in his palm.

He had rushed out of the room impatiently and ran up to Master Forrest. When he saw that there were no other participants around other than himself, he was so exhilarated that he could not even speak.

It was just as he had expected; Jackie was not as quick as him. He was the fastest out of all the participants. He could beat Jackie with his talent!

He had won the second stage. He had defeated everyone and proved his capabilities!

Bradley’s breathing grew erratic at these thoughts, and the excitement on his face was plain for all to see.

Master Forrest frowned slightly, feeling like Bradley was a bit too highly strung, but he did not get a chance to say anything about it before Bradley hastily placed the Three Suns Pill into Master Forrest’s palm.

“Master Forrest, kindly inspect if the refinement was a success for him!”

With Bradley's abilities, there was no real need to test it. Nonetheless, it was still a tournament in the end. Even though he knew he refined it perfectly, he needed Master Forrest to determine the results.

Master Forrest furrowed his eyebrows and looked at the Three Suns Pill in his hand, and had no real problems with it of course. He nodded and said, "The refinement is a success. Fifty percent refinement, and there are no blemishes. It's a very standard Three Suns Pill."

Bradley let out a sigh, feeling his entire body relax. The pressure he had felt before suddenly had left him, and his inner peace returned.

He turned to look at Mr. Zayne and Elder Maurice. Sure, they were not Jackie, but he was their subordinate, nonetheless.

Bradley said proudly, "Jackie can surely refine a Three Suns Pill, given his talent. Alas, his talent in refining pills is still a step below.

"Even though he's better than me at completing pill runes, I've already said before that the results of the first stage don't mean he'll be stronger than me!"

Bradley grew haughty as he spoke, and he could not deny the thrill he felt in regaining the respect for himself once more.

He wanted to say this all over again when Jackie finally stepped out of his confinement. He wanted Jackie to know that he was more talented than he was!

Chapter 2678
Bradley had pride. After Jackie had overpowered him before, he refused to admit defeat, even though he did not say too much about it. Even if Jackie's results were better than his, Bradley believed that he was more talented than Jackie.

The reason Jackie's results were better than his was that Jackie was just slightly more talented in condensing pill runes, but that was all. Jackie would not be able to one-up him in any other situation.

His hypothesis had been proven right, and the pride in his heart soared once more, evident by how radiant he looked.

However, Bradley was surprised that Master Forrest did not praise him after all that he said.

Sure, they should not go overboard with the praises and congratulations, but Bradley felt like Master Forrest would have at least said something along the line. After all, Master Forrest regarded him so highly…but nothing came after he waited quietly for a moment.

Bradley could not help but frown as he looked up at Master Forrest, who looked back at him speechlessly with furrowed brows. Master Forrest's lips twitched, as if he had something to say but could not.

The conflicted expression on his face looked downright uncomfortable.

The curiosity in Bradley's heart rose even more when he saw how Master Forrest was acting.

At that moment, he suddenly heard a huff.

Bradley turned his head and saw Elder Maurice's lips curled into a smile as he started to laugh. When he saw Bradley's gaze, Elder Maurice realized that it was unbecoming of him and composed himself after a slight cough.

Still, he could not completely hide the smile on his face.

Mr. Zayne's eyes were averted as well. Looking closer, there was a dense sense of amusement in his eyes, which stunned Bradley. Why was everyone reacting that way?

Should they not have acknowledged his talents and offered a few words of praise? Even though they were on opposite sides and unlikely to praise him that much, they should not have been laughing either.

Something was wrong, and Bradley could feel it.

Elder Maurice, worried that it would turn into even more of a joke, reached out to grab Bradley's shoulder. "You weren't the first to come out; Jackie's results were better than yours. He'd already refined the Three Suns Pill fourteen hours ago."

At those words, Bradley felt like he had been struck by lightning as his whole body

stiffened, his eyelids blown wide open.

Master Forrest's heart wrenched when he noticed Bradley's reaction.

After all, Bradley was someone he had grown up with pride. Others might not know about Bradley's pride, but after being with him for so many years, Master Forrest knew how Bradley was. He might not talk much normally, but it did not mean he was without pride.

In truth, Bradley was far more prideful than anyone there, and it was because of that pride that he could not accept a result like that.

Master Forrest took a deep breath before he consoled him, “There’s always a mountain higher, always someone who’s more talented. Back then, you were too sheltered in an environment. Meeting someone like Jackie is good, in fact, to broaden your horizons.

“I don’t think he’s more talented than you.

As long as you have enough time, Jackie’s just a small blip in your road to maturing.”

Even though he was not willing to, he had to acknowledge Jackie’s talent. Jackie was the most talented person Master Forrest had ever met.

Jackie had outstripped anyone he would consider a master, and he had taken just four hours to complete the Three Suns Pill that all of them regarded as incredibly difficult. Compared to Jackie, everyone else was far more inferior.

Chapter 2679
They were not even qualified to be spoken about in the same conversation as Jackie. The difference in talent between them and Jackie was like an insurmountable gulf, but he still could not admit that Jackie was far better than Bradley.

Bradley suddenly coughed violently and slumped over as his breaths became uneven. His coughs seemed so startlingly terrible that it looked like he could cough out his lungs.

Even though Bradley was just at the early stage of the innate realm, he was already at the innate realm. His constitution was fundamentally different from that of a regular person. Without being injured, he would never get sick.

Since his coughing could not have been caused by sickness, then there was only one other possibility.

His emotions had run too wild, and it affected his whole body, causing him to cough violently.

Master Forrest looked at Bradley worriedly as he held Bradley’s arm while he patted Bradley’s back.

Bradley’s breathing got worse as he coughed. It looked like he was incredibly ill at that moment. Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne exchanged a look of surprise at that.

They never expected Bradley to be affected so much. Even though Jackie’s results were better than his, Bradley’s results were not that bad either. If Jackie was not there, he would have taken first place.

However, the moment Bradley found out that Jackie had been 14 hours earlier than him, Bradley looked like he was about to die. The reaction startled them both.

Mr. Zayne whispered in exasperation, “This brat is a little too frail. Even though it’s quite a blow, we’re all warriors here. Unless a knife is held to our necks, nothing else matters! To be so emotional just because Jackie was better than him…”

Master Forrest nodded at that. Bradley’s actions caused them to look down on him with disdain. Even if it was a big, emotional blow, he did not have to end up in such a state. Master Forrest looked at Bradley with pity.

He knew how bad Bradley was feeling at that moment, thus he helped Bradley up while assuring him, “It’s fine. It’s fine, even if you lose. You don’t have to think too much about it.

“It’s just a small bump in your road to success. You’ll be fine after it passes.”

Bradley was caught in a coughing fit for a good while before he slowly recovered. At that moment, his face was as white as paper, his eyes already bloodshot. Without context, anyone would definitely assume that Bradley contracted some incurable illness.

Bradley’s hands trembled as he was seized in his emotional state. At that moment, his mood had hit rock bottom as an untold amount of thoughts raged in his mind.

Master Forrest’s words of consolation echoed in his head…but they failed to convince Bradley. The man had been too emotional earlier, and had not recovered that much.

It took a long time before he finally said, “You’re right.”

That was all he said, and nothing else.

Meanwhile…

Elder Maurice frowned at their insults at Jackie. Initially, Elder Maurice did not want to disarray that brat’s emotions even more, so he did not stop them.

However, the two of them kept on going, referring to Jackie as ‘a blip on the road’ and

‘a stepping stone’. How could Elder Maurice stand it?

Chapter 2680
Thus, Elder Maurice chuckled humorlessly as he looked at Bradley. “You can’t beat him, so you say he’s just a blip on the road. You seem to think that all you need to do is get over this, is that right? Can you use your head when you’re saying all that?

“Jackie isn’t just a blip on the road to you; he’s a mountain that you’ll never scale. There’s such a huge gulf in your results, so how could you agree with Master Forrest?”

Master Forrest's face twisted in rage at Elder Maurice's words. It had not been easy for him to console Bradley, but Maurice just had to come out and ruin everything!

Master Forrest immediately knew what Elder Maurice was up to.

The second match was still underway, and the results were not certain yet. No one knew if a third round would have to be carried out. As long as there was a third round, Bradley would still be Sky Peak Pavilion's trump card.

If Bradley completely collapsed, then the results of the third round would be obvious.

Master Forrest would not let Elder Maurice get what he wanted. He squinted as he pulled Bradley behind him, sporting a snide smile. "Stop with your petty schemes. Don't assume that everyone here is an idiot. The results of the second round aren't out yet. We don't know who the victors will be.

"Even though Jackie's talents are a little better than Bradley's right now, what of it? No one knows how they'll develop in the future.

"Jackie might just be peaking right now and might not improve afterward. Bradley will surely be able to keep on improving and become a real grandmaster!"

Master Forrest was already struggling to keep his composure at that point. He knew his words were not very convincing and were no doubt a bit petty.

All thoughts of that flew out of the window, however, as anxiety slowly crept into Master Forrest's mind.

Sure enough, Elder Maurice got riled up. Master Forrest's words had crossed the line.

Just as he was about to shoot back at Master Forrest, a sound was heard from the first room again. A familiar figure opened the door and walked out confidently.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he looked at everyone somewhat unpleasantly.

He had been immersed in refining pills, but the noise outside had annoyed him. Even though the rooms had sound-canceling effects and he could not hear what they were talking about outside, it still affected Jackie in the end.

Elder Maurice looked as Jackie walked out and saw what Jackie had in hand. He let out a pleased smile as he said, "Did we disturb you? We apologize. Master Forrest really doesn't know how to keep his cool and likes to talk so much nonsense. How many pills did you refine?"

Jackie nodded at Elder Maurice before he raised his right hand, revealing three Three Suns Pills in his palm. Jackie passed one over to Master Forrest.

“As per our prior agreement, no matter how many pills I’ve refined, I’ll give the Sky Peak Pavilion one.”

Master Forrest’s expression soured as he looked at the Three Suns Pill in Jackie’s hand. Even though the Three Suns Pill was more expensive than a regular seventh grade pill, it meant nothing to him.

Looking at the Three Suns Pill in Jackie’s hand, all Master Forrest felt was shame, and it was as if he had just been slapped on the face a few times.

Unable to stomach the feeling, he pushed the Three Suns Pill back with a frown.

“We don’t need your charity,” remarked Master Forrest coldly. “Since we’ve already agreed to it, the pills are yours. We won’t take a single one. The Three Suns Pill might be pricey, but it’s only a number worth noting for you.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2681 - 2685

Chapter 2681

“This sum is nothing to the Sky Peak Pavilion. Won’t we be laughed at if we accept your pill?” spoke Master Forrest, though stiffly and through gritted teeth.

He looked at Jackie as if Jackie was a mortal enemy.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. Master Forrest was acting like a brainless shrew, he thought to himself. It seemed like he could do anything at that moment.

Jackie was not someone who would force others. Since they did not want it, he kept it for himself. The spirit crystals he would gain would be his own, so Jackie calmly placed the Three Suns Pills that he refined into a box before keeping it in Mustard Seed.

Only then did Jackie look over at Bradley behind Master Forrest. Bradley’s eyes were

wide at that moment as he looked at Jackie with a complicated expression.

Advertisement

There were many complicated emotions playing in his mind at that moment, and hatred was the most prominent one.

Jackie did not feel like bothering to see what Bradley was thinking at that moment. After all, to him, Bradley did not amount to anything much other than having a bit of talent.

What Jackie truly cared about were the masters in the inner valley. Even though Bradley was talented, he was nothing compared to them.

Ever since he knew more about the inner valley, Jackie had been trying to figure out what level the alchemists there were already at. Regardless, Jackie had a cheat in hand and did not think much of the alchemists in the Hestia Continent.

Advertisement

Granted, he needed a lot of time and effort to absorb his memories, so he might not

actually be at the level of the masters within the inner valley at that moment. After all, Phoenix Valley was the core of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance.

The inner valley was the true trump card of Phoenix Valley, where the most talented alchemists of the Hestia Continent gathered.

All of a sudden

“I’ll definitely beat you! Don’t get so full of yourself!” roared Bradley fiercely.

It seemed like his lungs would lurch out of his abdomen with how he yelled.

Frowning, Jackie was speechless, feeling like Bradley had joined Master Forrest, descending into madness. Jackie had never really bothered with him at all.

In fact, he was just amused upon hearing that declaration.

“I’ve heard words like that countless times throughout the years, but no one has ever

Advertisement

been able to actually do it,” mused Jackie, “Even if you destroy your throat with all that screeching, it won’t be convincing at all. A loss is a loss.”

Jackie’s simple words had destroyed Bradley’s mental defenses. The latter suddenly widened his eyes as he lost his footing and fell on the floor.

Master Forrest hurriedly bent down and helped up Bradley, who, at that moment, looked pathetic and frail,

He looked like he would shatter with just a touch,

“Have you been too used to everything going your way? You’re just going to crumble the minute something goes wrong and you can’t take it?” commented Mr. Zayne incredulously.

Bradley merely looked down and said nothing.

Master Forrest looked up at Jackie angrily,

“Don’t think you can do anything with the talent you have. The third stage of the exam won’t be testing your talent in alchemy. Even if you have the talent, you won’t be able to use it at all!”

Based on the earlier agreement, Master Forrest should not have revealed the contents of the third stage so quickly.

However, Master Forrest was already too emotional and had lost his filter.

The third stage would not be testing alchemy, was it? That made Jackie even more curious…

Jackie narrowed his eyes as he started to speculate on what the third stage could be.

Chapter 2682
Meanwhile, Bradley fell into complete silence with his head hung low, seemingly to have been suppressed. Jackie, on the other hand, glanced at him for a moment before he ignored Bradley entirely.

The two sides faced each other, and after over 15 minutes of silence, the tense atmosphere gradually subsided. Master Forrest was visibly worried over Bradley, fretting that Bradley might have melted under the pressure, and thus did not have the time to bother with Phoenix Valley's representatives. His full focus was on Bradley.

Elder Maurice looked at Jackie, and the latter could practically feel the pair of eyes on him. "If you have anything you want to say, just go ahead," said Jackie, mildly irked.

The agitated Elder Maurice let out a light cough and spoke, "I just can't seem to relax. Claude and Benedict aren't reliable. I'm worried that we'll lose."

Jackie gave a light nod.

Elder Maurice's worry was warranted. After all, no one could tell what level Claude and Benedict were at. Almost 20 hours had passed, but no significant movement came from the four rooms. It was natural to be worried.

Mr. Zayne, on the other hand, was more composed. He took a deep breath. "I don't think you need to be too worried. Even though they're not that talented, what about the two from Sky Peak Pavilion? The four of them are more or less the same. I feel like all of them will fail. In the end, it'll be Jackie against Bradley."

Jackie nodded, feeling like Mr. Zayne's analysis was reasonable-the four of them were indeed more or less the same. The contest was incredibly difficult this time, and even Bradley needed 18 hours of hard work to complete a Three Suns Pill.

For the few of them to successfully refine it, a day was probably not enough.

Elder Maurice thought about it and nodded. "All we can do is pray that the four of them won't succeed. If we only compete with Jackie's result, we'll definitely win."

The next period felt agonizing. After all, there was only roughly two hours until the end of the round. Representatives from both Phoenix Valley and Sky Peak Pavilion held their breaths with their eyes glued on the four doors.

Everyone tried to see what was happening inside, whether or not anyone managed to refine a Three Suns Pill.

Time passed as it should, no matter how anxious everyone was. After over two hours, Master Forrest announced darkly, "Time is up. Bring everyone out right now. They're to come out no matter the results."

The stewards standing guard immediately moved when they heard that. Four of them all went in front of the doors and calmly pushed them open, summoning the four that were still fighting inside.

When the four of them knew that the time was up, their expressions stiffened, with only Conrad not having much of a reaction.

“Time’s up?” bleated Claude, sounding rather panicked. “So quickly?”

The steward nodded seriously, not wasting any time reasoning. After that, he turned. and motioned Claude out with his right hand.

Claude knew the time was already up and was forced to walk out in frustration.

When he came out, he looked at Elder Maurice, whose gaze was fixed on him. He gulped unconsciously, and Elder Maurice immediately had an idea of what had happened.

The footsteps could be heard as all of them walked out of their rooms. None of them had happy looks on their faces.

That actually had Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne breathing sighs of relief. If they were all bad, then Phoenix Valley had won this round. After all, Jackie only took four hours to complete the task.

Chapter 2683
Master Forrest had a bitter look on his face when he saw Elder Maurice relaxing. If none of the four of them managed to refine it, they would lose the second stage. Phoenix Valley would completely win this best out of three contest. If everything went that way, Sky Peak Pavilion was done for. He could even imagine how their people would deal with him once the news got out!

After all, he had promised and bragged so much. He practically guaranteed that they would win!

Claude and Benedict walked to Elder Maurice, visibly dejected and deflated. Elder Maurice let out a cold laugh. “It went just like I thought it would…but it’s not too bad. The two of you are trash, but so are the other two.”

The two of them lowered their heads and

said nothing else. After a moment, Claude suddenly said, “Then…if all four of us failed to refine the pills, how will the result be determined?”

Mr. Zayne let out a snort as he said proudly, “Of course we’d win. Do you think Jackie is as bad as the two of you? You didn’t even manage to refine a single Three Suns Pill in

twenty-four hours while Jackie already refined it in four hours, and continued to refine a few more pills."

Those words completely stunned Benedict and Claude. The two of them suddenly raised their heads as they looked at Mr. Zayne in disbelief for a good while before their eyes trailed to Jackie.

Jackie looked the same as he usually did, still passive. No one could affect him.

Gazing at Jackie, Claude hoarsely asked, "Is that true?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow. "What do you mean by that? You don't believe it?"

Claude violently shook his head. Of course he would not dare question Jackie, but Mr. Zayne's words came too much of a shock to him. Anyone who had gone through that round knew how hard it was.

The two of them had fought a great battle in that room; they had failed so much that they had gone numb. They were only surviving by sheer force of will. In such a nerve-wracking environment, it was easy to lose track of the time.

When the steward opened the door, the two of them felt like they were still detached from reality. A wave of disappointment washed over them. The only thing in their mind at that moment was of them lamenting why the round was so difficult.

For Jackie, however, it came as a breeze. Claude was even starting to wonder if they were even part of the same contest. Otherwise, there would not be such a huge difference.

Elder Maurice stared at Claude, feeling like the two of them were like an eyesore. Still, it was good that they did not drag the team down despite their lack of results. They had easily won this round again.

Out of the blue, Master Forrest suddenly exclaimed, "We won!"

Everyone there basically heard his yelp.

Jackie turned his head with a frown and saw that Master Forrest's defeated look had turned into one of happiness.

He had a pill in hand as he added, "Conrad successfully refined a Three Suns Pill. I checked it earlier, and there is a fifty percent refinement rate!"

Hearing such words, Elder Maurice immediately rushed over and snatched the Three Suns Pill from Master Forrest's hand, to which Master Forrest raised an eyebrow at the rudeness.

Master Forrest finally had the chance to say something.

He rubbed his chin as he said, “Why did you snatch the pill from me? Do you think I’m lying?”

Chapter 2684
Elder Maurice inspected Conrad’s Three Suns Pill closely and noted the faint pill aura floating around it. It clearly looked like a pill had just been refined, and that was something that could not be faked.

He suddenly looked up at Conrad who, at that moment, sported a smile on his face, evidently pleased with himself. Mr. Zayne rushed over as well and also looked at the Three Suns Pill a few times.

Mr. Zayne might not be an alchemist, but he nonetheless knew the basics. Even he could tell that the pill was the real deal.

It really was just refined, and the handiwork was sloppy, only barely passing the mark. It was a far cry from the Three Suns Pill that Jackie refined.

Jackie walked over and only needed a glance to see that they had lost this round.

It seemed like a sure victory for Phoenix Valley, yet the tables were turned so abruptly. It was obvious that Elder Maurice could not really accept it. Even though they had won the first stage, no one knew if they would lose the third stage just like they did the second.

At that moment, Elder Maurice felt incredibly conflicted-it was like he had been thrown into cold water.

On the other hand, Master Forrest started to get excited. His initial hopelessness had been wiped away, and it was like he had found a new reason in life.

“Have you finished looking? Did we win the round?” spoke Master Forrest who was positively beaming. The moment he thought of the words Elder Maurice said to him earlier, Master Forrest felt like fighting back.

He coldly smiled and said, “Elder Maurice, you were too confident earlier. After all, this

tournament tests everyone’s results. You just have one exceptional alchemist. No matter how strong Jackie is, he’s still just an alchemist.

“Our side is different. We have one gem, but the others aren’t weak either. Next time, you should think about your overall scores before you try to brag. You’d do well to avoid shouting so much, or you may have a bad time in the end.”

Master Forrest would not have been so straight with his words had this happened before, but at this stage and round, he was already full of anger and frustration. With how the results suddenly turned, he naturally wanted to retaliate, to shove back all the negativity to his adversary.

Elder Maurice's face reddened in anger; gone was his relief as it was replaced with boiling-hot anger. He suddenly turned around and glared angrily at Master Forrest.

Elder Maurice had never been someone particularly emotional, yet ever since they got to Sky Peak Pavilion, everything that had happened there had strained his mind. The rapid rise and fall of his moods were something he could not handle.

Mr. Zayne, too, visibly glowered. If he had been important enough, he would have rebuked it.

Alas, he was merely a steward of Phoenix Valley.

He was nowhere near as high up as Elder Maurice, so there was no way he would be allowed to say anything of such nature.

Elder Maurice panted in anger, antagonized by Master Forrest's words.

Jackie frowned as he reached out and grabbed Elder Maurice's arm. He shot him a look to calm him down.

Jackie suddenly laughed as he looked at Master Forrest. "Aren't you bragging as well? Even though you have an exceptional student as well, the other two aren't that much different from our alchemists."

Chapter 2685
"It's not like I didn't see Conrad's results from before. He finished six hundred pill runes, and he's not even as good as Claude from our Phoenix Valley. I am a bit suspicious, admittingly.

"Since he didn't have good results before at condensing pill runes, how did he manage to remember and condense sixty pill runes in such a short amount of time?"

After hearing that, everyone looked up.

"Are you questioning the integrity of the tournament?" growled Master Forrest. "You think that Conrad cheated?"

Jackie shook his head. "I'm not questioning anything. It's just that I feel that his results are a bit strange based on what we've seen."

Jackie then looked at Conrad. Even though Conrad tried his best to compose himself,

Jackie could detect a trace of guilt in his eyes.

Conrad looked like someone had stabbed his back as he suddenly shouted, “Are you the only one who can refine a Three Suns Pill, and everyone that does is considered to have cheated?!”

Jackie calmly shook his head at that accusing tone. “Of course I don’t mean it that way. It’s just that your results in the first stage were far too bad. If you had results like Bradley, I wouldn’t have been suspicious at all.

“You managed to refine a Three Suns Pill now, but your results in the first stage weren’t that great. Even though the results of the first stage do not directly affect the results of the second, they’re still connected.

“The first stage tested whether or not you have talent in condensing pill runes. I’m not trying to insult you for the sake of insulting you. The four of you were at around the same standards.

“You were not even a match for Claude, so how did you suddenly improve so much in the second stage, exceeding everyone else and completing a Three Suns Pill?”

Jackie’s words sounded very logical, and his tone was very even. He was not targeting them out of malice or deliberately causing any trouble. He really did have his suspicions, which was why he asked those questions.

Master Forrest reached out and stood in front of Conrad. “You truly are eloquent, Jackie, but aren’t you just targeting us for the sake of doing that at this point? If someone from Phoenix Valley had completed a Three Suns Pill, you wouldn’t be asking those questions.”

“It’s only because you lost that you’re trying to cause all this trouble. Is everyone from Phoenix Valley just sore losers?”

“Who’s a sore loser?” snapped Elder Maurice. “Is there something wrong with what Jackie said? It’s strange from the start! The four of them are more or less at the same level, and Claude had a better result than them in the first stage!

“All of a sudden, in the second stage, he had no way of achieving a fifty percent refinement rate. Even forty percent was impossible for him. That was why he couldn’t refine a Three Suns Pill.

“If the other three had a different reason for being unable to refine the pill, Jackie wouldn’t have asked this question!”

Master Forrest was no idiot. He knew that Jackie’s arguments were, in fact, quite reasonable.

This was precisely why he would not allow Jackie to question things. He wanted to guarantee that Sky Peak Pavilion won the second stage.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2686 - 2690

Chapter 2686

Only then would they successfully proceed to the next stage. Master Forrest suddenly laughed out loud at those words and replied, “Stop trying to find excuses. The Three Suns Pill is right in front of you, and we won the second round fair and square. If you’re not willing to admit defeat, then find a way to deny the results! You’re crossing the line!”

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly at those words. He could tell what Master Forrest was thinking. Master Forrest pinned them into trying to find trouble, and he would keep up with that accusation that they did not actually have a legitimate question.

That way, Master Forrest could guarantee the results of the second portion of the tournament. Jackie looked over to Conrad again. At that moment, Conrad had his head held high and body straight as if he wanted to show everyone that he had won fair and square.

Jackie shook his head helplessly, “Conrad really did refine a Three Suns Pill, but I suspect that he has seen the recipe before this.

“He has also practiced forming ancient pill runes. Otherwise, he would never be able to leave them in the dust in such a short time.”

Jackie spoke in an incredibly confident tone as if there was no room for doubt.

Advertisement

“I’ve never seen it before!” Conrad shouted. At that moment, his face was red like a cooked lobster.

His furious face looked like he would kill the next person who questioned him. It was obvious he was incredibly frustrated.

Everyone present was intelligent, and they could immediately tell that something was wrong. Master Forrest’s mouth stiffened as he turned to look at Conrad, realizing that Jackie could have guessed right.

However, he would not allow Jackie’s speculation to bear fruit. The moment Jackie could prove that the first stage had not been fair, the second stage’s results would not account for, and Phoenix Valley would win.

Advertisement

Master Forrest thought quickly and said, “Jackie, I know what you’re thinking right now. Are your two teammates dragging you down? If they are dragging you down and making you unhappy, you should be accusing them instead!

“What does it have to do with us? The loss was caused by those two. If any one of them managed to refine a Three Suns Pill, you would have won!”

Hearing those words, Jackie could not help but look at Master Forrest in admiration. He could think on his feet and manage to change the point of focus swiftly.

He wanted everyone to feel like Jackie’s words were because of his good results being held back by his teammates. That was what caused Jackie to be furious and looked for trouble.

Claude and Benedict had been quietly hidden at the back. The moment they heard Master Forrest’s claim, their bodies shook.

The two of them were extremely afraid. If Conrad had not successfully refined a Three Suns Pill, they would not have technically dragged the results down. Yet, Conrad had successfully managed to refine the pill.

It meant that the two of them were the cause of their loss. If Master Forrest had not said those words earlier to distract Elder Maurice, the two of them would probably be in a difficult situation.

Chapter 2687
They would be scolded and severely punished when they got back. Jackie let out a slight sigh as he glanced at Claude and Benedict behind him. They were both like obedient little dogs at that moment, no longer daring to say anything.

Jackie turned around to face Master Forrest and said, “Don’t try and shift the focus. The two of them might have dragged our overall results down, but I think it’s a completely different matter to Conrad’s problem. I refuse to believe that he’s never seen the recipe for the Three Suns Pill before!”

Advertisement

Master Forrest narrowed his eyes and replied, “Conrad had never seen the recipe before, and I didn’t reveal the contents of the examination to him either. If you don’t believe me, you can ask Elder Maurice.

“When we were setting the rules for the tournament, both of us signed a contract. If

If I violated the contract, I’d immediately be rejected by heaven and earth, and my soul would be ripped apart!”

Jackie nodded, ” I don’t think you leaked the questions to Conrad, but I refuse to believe he’s never seen the recipe for the Three Suns Pill before. He must have drawn those sixty ancient pill runes before. As for whether or not he had succeeded before, I wouldn’t know.”

Due to the confrontation between the two parties, the atmosphere around them suddenly fell to a freezing point. They were actually stuck in a difficult predicament. Jackie might be sure that Conrad had definitely gotten the recipe beforehand, but he did not have concrete proof.

Looking at Conrad, there was no way Conrad would tell the truth. Since that was the case, the simple deduction could not possibly overturn Conrad's results. After Elder Maurice realized that, he looked at Jackie helplessly.

Even though he was not willing to recognize Conrad's results, there was no way anyone would take a step back in this situation. If they insist on this, it would just be a waste of time.

Elder Maurice sighed as he walked to Jackie and whispered, "They won't admit to it. Let's forget about it…"

Jackie nodded. In truth, before he even revealed his questions, he already knew that there was nothing he could do if he had no evidence. Yet, he still brought the issue up.

It was just to stop Master Forrest's rapidly increasing arrogance. Master Forrest would have constantly mocked the Phoenix Valley if he had not suddenly questioned them.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said loudly, "Whether or not you've looked at the Three Suns Pill's recipe before, you should know yourself the best, Conrad. I don't have any proof right now, so I naturally can't overturn your results.

"However, don't think that your cheating will help Sky Peak Pavilion win this tournament. You might have won the second round, but there is still the third round."

Jackie's words let Master Forrest breathe a sigh of relief. After all, he could already tell from Conrad's earlier reaction that Conrad was feeling guilty.

If Jackie insisted on investigating the matter, the truth would be revealed. If that happened, Phoenix Valley would have won.

Since Jackie decided to relent, Master Forrest seized the opportunity to stop things in their tracks, "Alright, since the result of the second round is acknowledged by everyone, let's stop wasting time and hurry into the third round!"

Jackie let out a cold snort. Elder Maurice glanced at Master Forrest in disdain. Even though he had advised Jackie to give up earlier, Elder Maurice was still feeling incredibly conflicted.

He knew what the third round was. He was afraid that they would end up losing in the third round like they did. If you end up with Sky Peak Pavilion winning two rounds out of three.

Chapter 2688
Then he would have no explanation when he got back and the punishments would definitely come their way. Thinking about that made Elder Maurice feel incredibly frustrated. Master Forrest led everyone to the back of the hall.

There was a hidden back door toward the side of the hall. When everyone arrived in front of the hall, Elder Maurice pointed at the door and said, “Behind this door is an isolated world that we made specifically for this tournament. A mature Phoenix is guarding the Green Phoenix Fruits within. Once the Green Phoenix Fruit ripens completely, it will collect the fruits.

“There are a total of six fruits within. Your task is to pick one of the Phoenix Fruits,” The moment he said that, everyone froze.

Not a single one of the participants would have guessed the content for this third challenge. After all, they were alchemists that did not have much in terms of fighting ability.

A mature Phoenix was already at the spring solidifying realm. Spring solidifying realm beasts were like nightmares to alchemists. Asking them to retrieve the Green Phoenix Fruit from a phoenix was practically suicide.

Green Phoenix Fruits were absolute treasures for phoenixes to increase their power. Fighting over a Green Phoenix Fruit was equivalent to hurting a phoenix’s child. The phoenix would immediately attack.

With their strength, there was no other possibility. The third round was practically a suicide mission. The five other participants were filled with confusion and distress other than Jackie.

The first one to voice out a question was Benedict. His strength was only at the early

stage of the innate level. In the eyes of a spring solidifying realm beast, he could not even be considered an ant.

He gulped as he said, “Phoenixes are already at the spring solidifying realm. Us stealing its Green Phoenix Fruit would practically be suicide isn’t it?!”

Master Forrest looked down at Benedict in disdain before he said coldly, “There’s no need to worry about your lives. Strong warriors are hiding inside. The moment you face a life-threatening situation, they’ll immediately save you.

“This tournament isn’t to test your strength. It’s to test your composure in the face of danger, as well as your accumulation of knowledge. If you have both, you’ll definitely succeed in getting the Green Phoenix Fruit. If you don’t have both, then you’ll never get it.”

Master Forrest's words caused Benedict's eyes to redden. Elder Maurice immediately

frowned and said, "Do you think we don't know you have no strength? As an alchemist, you don't just need talent in refining pills, you also need a mature mind.

"Only then would you be able to go far. Don't assume that being an alchemist means you're safe. An excellent alchemist doesn't just need success when it comes to refining pills, he also needs to be able to recognize valuable materials.

"The more valuable the materials are, the stronger the beasts that guard them will be. It's not reliable to just rely on warriors to pick the materials either. No matter how strong they are, they won't be able to recognize the materials as well as us!"

Hearing that, Jackie immediately understood the reason for the third stage of the tournament. The first and second stages were to test the capabilities of the alchemist. The third stage was to test their adaptability.

They would naturally not be able to defeat a phoenix, so they needed to obtain the Green Phoenix Fruit. It would require them to use their minds.

Chapter 2689
Only an alchemist who fares well in every aspect would be able to walk further in the path of alchemy. It seemed like all three rounds in the tournament were going to be incredibly difficult. Jackie could not help but glance at Elder Maurice and Master Forrest.

At that moment, Jackie really approved of the tournament, but the others were not feeling the same. After Benedict was scolded, the others were naturally too afraid to voice their opinions again. They were forced to grumble about their complaints.

Especially Claude, who regarded his body more than anything else. Jackie who was standing next to Claude could hear everything Claude was mumbling.

Claude said unhappily, "There's no point testing that anyway. We won't go into the wild regularly. Even if you go to Grand Yorn Mountain, there will be many warriors next to us to guard us.

"Why do we have to do something as suicidal as fighting over a Green Phoenix Fruit with a phoenix. Even if there are guards, there's always a chance that we might get hurt…"

Jackie looked at Claude speechlessly after hearing those words, but Claude had his head down guiltily. He was unwilling to voice his own opinion, nor was he going to calmly wait for the next round.

Of the six participants there, only Jackie and Bradley seemed calm. Jackie looked at Bradley and noticed that Bradley's strength was not that good, only at the early stage of the innate level.

His strength was nothing compared to Jackie. On top of that, he had fully focused on alchemy, and never had a chance to learn any strong techniques.

Facing a spring solidifying realm beast, Bradley would be incredibly lucky if he lasted a few seconds, let alone stand a chance. However, he still managed to maintain a calm look as if he was very confident about the round.

Jackie was even more curious about Bradley's reaction. Could Bradley already have figured out how to deal with the problem? Feeling Jackie's gaze, Bradley suddenly turned to look at him.

Matching Jackie's gaze, he suddenly let out a cold smile. Pride started to exude from his body again. He was showing Jackie how confident he was, rendering Jackie speechless.

Jackie felt like Bradley was way too obsessed with defeating him!

Master Forrest had seen everything that happened. He suddenly laughed as he said meaningfully, "This tournament isn't just testing your skills in alchemy. I have to remind you that no matter how accomplished you were before this, you might not be able to achieve a good result here.

"This round will be testing your brain and adaptability. No matter how strong you are, you have to be careful…" Even though it sounded like Master Forrest was giving them a reminder, no one there was stupid. All of them could tell who those words were meant for.

He was trying to tell everyone that no matter how strong Jackie had been before, he might not be able to get a good result this time. After all, what was being tested was not their talent as an alchemist.

Elder Maurice was furious but did not say anything else. If the tournament was still testing alchemic skills, Elder Maurice would have been incredibly confident. He would definitely be sure that Jackie would give a perfect result.

However, this time, adaptability and knowledge were being tested. Even if Elder Maurice knew how to obtain victory, he did not say anything.

Chapter 2690
Thanks to the contract they signed, they would immediately receive backlash if they revealed the answer, so all he could do was silently cheer for Jackie.

When nobody refuted Master Forrest's statement, he suddenly lost interest. He could not be bothered to continue speaking nonsense and announced the rules for the next round.

"All of you listen up. Once the round starts, all of you will go in one by one. No matter what you do, as long as you get the Green Phoenix Fruit, it'll be considered a success. Whichever side obtains the most Green Phoenix Fruits will win."

After announcing the rules, no one had a relaxed expression. Jackie was no exception, but he was not worried about himself. After all, he was very confident in his own skills. He was worried that the results would end up like the second stage.

No matter how well he did, it was still useless. If two out of the three people from Sky Peak Pavilion obtain the Green Phoenix Fruit, then everything he did would be wasted.

Jackie turned to look at Claude and Benedict. Their emotions were written on their faces. After all, they had already dragged the team down during the second stage. If it happened again in the third stage, there would not be any good consequences waiting for them.

It would be fine if they were just punished, they could even be kicked out if the punishment was harsher. They might not be able to find anywhere else that would house them if they were kicked out of Phoenix Valley. The more they thought about it, the more worried they got. Their mood sank more and more as well.

Claude was so pale he seemed to have just fallen incredibly ill. At that moment, he was suffering inside, but there was nothing he could do.

The two of them had thought that Jackie would be the one dragging them down. If the reason they lost was Jackie, even if they would be punished, it would not be that harsh. However, the situation has completely reversed, and they were about to go crazy.

They were under far too much pressure. It was not just because they were worried they would drag the team down. The difficulty of the tournament had completely exceeded their expectations as well, which affected their mental state even more.

Elder Maurice looked at the two of them being so depressed and immediately felt a wave of hopelessness. He looked like he could faint at any moment. Elder Maurice had suddenly lost all his confidence.

In the end, he was not the one competing.

Even if he got so anxious to the point of fainting, it was completely pointless. Elder Maurice snorted and said, "What's the point of you feeling down? Do you still have the time to be worrying about your feelings? You'd better hurry up and think about how to get the Green Phoenix Fruit!"

Elder Maurice was really incredibly angry at that point. The two of them were far too absurd. When they encountered something difficult, they only knew to feel bad for themselves. They did not have any tolerance for it at all. Elder Maurice was starting to regret not using the inner valley.

After all, this tournament would not have been an issue at all if the inner valley was involved. Mr. Zayne was forced to shake his head and sigh at everything. Even with Jackie leading the way, it seemed difficult for them to win.

After all, the last two rounds were not as simple as adding the score together. They focused on completion. Claude and Benedict had been performing far too badly.

Mr. Zayne could not help but lament, “We should actually be thankful that Elder Rick recommended Jackie back then. Without Jackie, we would have been even more humiliated. Our punishment would be far worse.”

Elder Maurice sighed helplessly. Even if he was not willing to admit it, Elder Rick really did play a key part this time. Elder Rick’s intentions might have been to punish Jackie, but after Jackie came, he saved the tournament for them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2691 - 2695

Chapter 2691

Jackie was still alone in the end. Elder Maurice felt incredibly suffocated, and Mr. Zayne merely shook his head silently.

Master Forrest pointed at Jameson, who was standing there quietly, “This time, let’s go with the one with the worst results.”

Jameson’s face darkened. Master Forrest had not minced his words at all. It greatly embarrassed Jameson, but Jameson had nothing to say back. After all, there was nothing he could say. He walked out of the crowd and reluctantly stood in front of the door.

Master Forrest pointed out a finger and said, “One hour! Everyone has one hour. If you can’t manage it within one hour, or end up being heavily injured by the phoenix, you’ll be considered a failure. Understand?”

Everyone nodded earnestly. Master Forrest raised an eyebrow as he said bluntly, “Why aren’t you going in yet? There’s no point in dallying around.”

Of the three participants from Sky Peak Valley, Jameson had performed the worst. Master Forrest naturally did not regard him that highly. Jameson’s lips twitched helplessly. He pushed the door open and walked inside.

Advertisement

When the door was opened, the participants all saw the scene inside. There must be an illusory array inside because what they saw was a large plain. On the plains was a phoenix that was the size of three humans crawling around the plains. Next to the phoenix were six Green Phoenix Fruits. After the door was shut, they stopped being able to see through. After they averted their looks, they felt even more apprehensive.

Jackie was the calmest person there. He had seen the phoenix earlier, and the phoenix was at the early stage of the spring solidifying stage which was a relief to him.

To some people, the hour was just time to chit chat. However, they could not discuss their strategies, so they were forced into some pointless topic, like words of encouragement.

Since Conrad had been the key to the Sky Peak Pavilion turning things around and winning the last right, Master Forrest’s attitude toward him had improved by several times.

Advertisement

“Don’t be so nervous later. The more nervous you are, the easier it will be for you to make mistakes. You have to calm yourself down,” Master Forrest said gently.

Conrad nodded at that, and patted his chest in reassurance, “Don’t worry, I’ll definitely do well. I definitely won’t drag us down! I’ve already thought of a plan, I’ll definitely get the Green Phoenix Fruit.”

The more confident Conrad was, the more worried Phoenix Valley got. Elder Maurice’s face was stiff. If Conrad really did manage to get a Green Phoenix Fruit, then they would lose again.

They would have to pay up a lot of resources. It would be the worst result. When they got back, he might not even be an elder anymore.

Elder Maurice looked on as Claude and Benedict still shivered away. They did not possess any form of bravery, let alone confidence. Just looking at them caused Elder Maurice‘s anger to soar.

Chapter 2692
“What are the two of you doing? At the start, weren’t the two of you full of confidence and promises? You felt like you’d definitely be able to win, and insulted Jackie for dragging the two of you down. Why are you so different now? Where’s your bravado? Summon all of it out right now! ” Elder Maurice was far too angry, and his temper was evident from those words.

Mr. Zayne and Jackie looked at Elder Maurice helplessly, feeling like Elder Maurice was doing the exact opposite of what he wanted to. No matter how angry he was at the time, he should not have voiced it at that moment. After all, they were about to enter the part of the tournament that would determine their victory. Anything he said at that moment would just be for the sake of venting.

Even if Jackie did not want to say anything at that moment, he was forced to step up. He pulled Elder Maurice’s arm and said, “Elder, please don’t be angry. Anger is pointless right now.”

He walked forward and stood in front of Claude and Benedict. Jackie was incredibly frustrated by the two of them. After all, the two of them had acted so arrogantly before, opposing him at every turn. Yet, it was not the time to think about that.

Advertisement

If they continued to allow the two of them to spiral downward, it could very well affect the results of the third stage. Jackie really did not want to be dragged down!

He let out a slight cough and lightened his tone, “I know the two of you are under a lot of pressure right now, but you need to know how important this is. If the two of you continue letting your mental state go on a downward slope and lose in the end, the two of you know very well what kind of consequences you’ll face! It’s no longer the time to be so conflicted. Summon all of your courage. Even if the final result ends up not being ideal, you’d at least have tried…”

Bang!

At that moment, a huge noise was heard from the door, causing Jackie to stop his motivational speech. Everyone looked toward the door.

In a moment, Jameson was dragged out by two stewards of the Sky Peak Sovereign. Jameson’s eyes were half shut, and he constantly groaned. He had many injuries on his body, and his arm was full of blood. If the two deacons had not been carrying him, he would not have even been able to stand.

The moment they saw Jameson’s condition, all of the participants let out a shiver. That was a little too absurd, but even after not entering for that long, Jameson was actually injured to that degree.

Master Forrest did not waste any time and immediately summoned up some errand disciples to bring Jameson in for treatment.

When everyone saw Jameson being escorted away, they did not feel that great. They were not sympathetic to Jameson, but rather it was just because they were about to encounter that very same scenario themselves.

Based on the results, the next would be Benedict.

Benedict gulped a few times as his eyes continued to dart all over. Countless thoughts were circulating in his head, and he even had the urge to give up on the contest.

Elder Maurice berated, “Don’t have any wild thoughts! It’s almost your turn. You have to do your best. If you actually dare to lose this round deliberately, I’ll immediately tell the valley master. Don’t even think about getting out of this unscathed!”

Benedict’s whole body shivered at that, and he almost cried. The mood turned serious again as Master Forrest’s gaze swept over everyone, not saying anything unnecessary, “Next! Benedict! Go inside and remember, you only have an hour.”

Chapter 2693
Benedict took a deep breath as stomped his feet silently. He gave up any words of protest. He would have to go in eventually anyway, and would just be scolded if he continued to drag things. He walked in front of the door with reddened eyes.

When he pushed the door open, he basically had the resolve to die. When everyone saw the door close, their moods all sank.

Even Conrad, who had been so full of spirit, shut his mouth as he looked at the door with a conflicted expression. He believed that everyone who entered that door would have their own plans. After all, it was impossible to take it by force!

Only by relying on schemes and tricks would they be able to do anything. However, no one had the confidence that their plans would succeed. Time ticked away, and after about half an hour, there was movement behind the door again.

Benedict walked out clutching his arm. Even though he did not need anyone to help him out, he was still injured in multiple places. When he got out, Benedict moaned, “I didn’t even dare to get too close. Thankfully, the phoenix is being held back by a chain, or I wouldn’t even have had the chance to come out.”

When he said that, everyone’s moods sank even further. However, Jackie raised an eyebrow. Earlier, Jackie had been curious. Since it was a spring solidifying realm beast, it would definitely attack viciously if it was angered. Even though Jameson was carted out with his body covered in heavy injuries, he did not die.

Jackie felt like they would have at least ended up with a broken limb or two even if they were saved, but Jameson’s condition had been better than Jackie expected. On top of that, Benedict’s injuries led Jackie to be even more sure that the phoenix was restricted in some way. Otherwise, the two of them would have only been able to come out with even heavier injuries. If unique chains were restricting the phoenix, then it really should be safe.

In truth, there was no need to ask about the results. Benedict definitely did not manage to get a fruit either. Elder Maurice sighed. Even though he did not expect anything, he was still a little disappointed to see that Benedict really did return empty-handed.

The next to enter was Claude. At that moment, Claude was incredibly tense, seemingly about to snap at any moment. He felt like there was a huge boulder on his shoulders, about to squash him at any moment. However, no matter how bad his mental state was, he still had to go in. If he returned empty-handed as well, Elder Maurice would definitely blow up.

Before he entered, Elder Maurice suddenly grabbed Claude’s arm and said, “Listen here, you‘re not allowed to fail this time!”

Claude widened his eyes suddenly, looking like he was about to cry. At that moment, he had already lost all his confidence after the last two rounds. Elder Maurice had even told him that he was not allowed to fail, causing him to feel like it was difficult to even breathe.

After Claude entered, Jackie looked at Conrad again. In truth, Jackie did not have much faith in Claude either. After all, that guy was only confident at the start. There was no way he could defeat a phoenix with his meager smarts.

He would probably end up just as heavily injured as Jameson. If Claude lost, then only Jackie would remain. If Conrad managed to pull off an unexpected win like during the second stage, then they would be done for. Jackie was actually quite worried at that moment. Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne were feeling the same as well. The three of them all looked at the door anxiously. They really wanted to see what kind of plan Claude had in mind and whether he had any hopes of winning.

Chapter 2694
Master Forrest was in a really good mood at that moment. He had even started to see hope for victory again. They had thought that Jackie would ensure that Phoenix Valley would have a very high chance of winning, but no one expected that the two other than Jackie would be such heavy burdens. It ended up with them having a chance at victory.

Master Forrest had been quietly waiting at the start, but he got more and more excited as he thought about it. He could not help but look at Elder Maurice and say, “Elder Maurice, you must know a lot about your own alchemists. Do you think Claude will be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit?”

Elder Maurice knew that Master Forrest was incredibly pleased, but he could not just remain silent, since it would make him seem nervous. He lightly snorted and answered, “I do know about my own alchemists, but alchemy isn’t what’s being tested this time. Are you telling me you’re able to see what’s going to happen?”

Hearing that, Master Forrest let out a smile, “I really can. Bradley will definitely be able to get a Green Phoenix Fruit! As for Conrad, he should be able to as well!”

Master Forrest was clearly not sure if Conrad would be able to win, but he still said it in determination. Elder Maurice felt a little speechless at that.

Everyone waited for the results. Claude’s results were incredibly important. If he successfully managed to get a Green Phoenix Fruit, then Phoenix Valley‘s victory would be assured.

Phoenix Valley and Sky Peak Pavilion had a win each under their belts, so the third stage was pivotal in determining the winner. Even though everyone tried their best to control their emotions, they were still unable to hide their nervousness.

After winning the second stage, Master Forrest’s once extinguished enthusiasm soared again. He looked like he was about to soar into the sky as he constantly uttered some unpleasant words. However, he had already pushed away all those emotions. He merely stared at the door in anticipation, eagerly waiting for the result.

Probably because the atmosphere had been far too tense, or maybe because he felt like he was being ignored, but Jameson suddenly shouted out, “Master Forrest, don‘t worry. There’s no way he’ll get a Green Phoenix Fruit. Just look at how he was when he went in. He doesn’t really have a plan at all. I’ll definitely do better than he did. During the second round, my results were much better than his. The third round will be the same!”

After he said that, Jameson straightened his back as if no one on the Hestia Continent could beat him.

Everyone looked at Jameson when he uttered those words. Jackie frowned slightly, that guy was getting too pleased with himself. Ever since he won in the second stage, he had let it get to his head. He was even able to say something as blindly confident as that.

Elder Maurice looked at Conrad with a steely look on his face, resisting the urge to rush over and slap him. Mr. Zayne frowned, really wanting to mock Conrad, but not saying anything in the end.

Master Forrest glanced at Conrad. He felt the same way as everyone else, that Conrad had let it get to his head. However, having confidence was a good thing, and Conrad might actually have a perfect plan to get the Green Phoenix Fruit.

With that in mind, Master Forrest reached out and patted Conrad on the shoulder, “It’s good that you’re this confident, but you have to be careful. Even if you’ve already planned everything out, you have to move carefully and not make any mistakes.”

Those words sounded fine, but Conrad felt like Master Forrest was saying that because he was not that confident in him. Conrad was brimming with confidence at that moment, so he naturally got angry when he felt Elder Maurice looking down on him.

Chapter 2695
Conrad held his head slightly higher and said, “I’ll definitely be careful, you don’t have to worry. There won’t be any mistakes, I’ll definitely get the Green Phoenix Fruit. My plan is perfect. After all, the phoenix is being tied by a chain. All I have to do is…”

Conrad did not manage to finish his words when he was stopped by Master Forrest, “Shut up. You can‘t break the rules like this. Even if you already have your plans all figured out, you can’t reveal it prematurely and affect the results of others!”

Conrad‘s face stiffened, realizing that he had slipped up a little. Thankfully, Master Forrest stopped him, or he would actually have revealed his plans.

If someone else heard his plan and followed it accordingly, everyone would be able to get their hands on the fruit.

Conrad hurriedly nodded, “You’re right!”

As he said that, there was a glint in Conrad’s eyes. He was full of confidence as if any problems would not be hard at all for him to deal with.

Master Forrest’s lips twitched speechlessly. He felt like Conrad was being overconfident at that moment. If he had not stopped Conrad earlier, Conrad would really have blurted everything out. However, Master Forrest was very happy with Conrad’s current state, and he was a bit more confident. He had not been that confident in Conrad during the second stage, but Conrad had proven his abilities with his skills.

It had changed Master Forrest’s views on Conrad. Even if Conrad rendered him speechless, it did not change his confidence in Conrad.

Compared to Master Forrest‘s calm attitude, Elder Maurice was in a completely different state. Elder Maurice had his eyebrows furrowed at that moment, his mood was at its lowest point. His eyes would constantly dart toward Conrad.

Various thoughts flashed in his head. The more confident Conrad was, the worse he felt. After all, Conrad had been a key factor in the second stage. If Conrad had not refined a Three Suns Pill, the second stage would have been theirs. After all, Jackie had performed too well. However, Conrad managed to turn the tables at the very last moment.

With how confident Conrad was, Elder Maurice started to worry. He was worried that the results would end up like the second stage, and be overturned because of Conrad. No matter how good Jackie’s results were, it would be useless.

Elder Maurice got more and more worried as he thought about it. It was not just Elder Maurice who felt that way. Even Mr. Zayne was looking at Conrad with worry. At that moment, he felt like Conrad was a ticking time bomb that could blow up at any moment. Then, Phoenix Valley would not be able to gain any advantages.

Mr. Zayne whispered in worry, “Do you think his plan really will be that perfect? Perfect enough to get the Green Phoenix Fruit?”

Elder Maurice sighed as he said helplessly, “Even though this brat looks like he’s just bragging, we can’t make any conclusions at the moment.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2696 - 2700

Chapter 2696
Elder Maurice sighed as he continued, “After all, he had won the second stage for Sky Peak Pavilion. I don’t know if this kid actually has the skills.”

Mr. Zayne shook his head helplessly and replied, “Even though the core of this stage isn’t alchemy, I feel like we can‘t look down on this brat. We’ll have to count on Claude to get a good result. Only then will we have hope to win this tournament.”

Elder Maurice nodded and let out a wry smile, not saying anything. What followed was a strange silence between everyone. Jackie had not spoken the whole time either. He merely stood on the spot calmly, as if nothing would affect him at all.

Once an hour passed, there did not seem to be any movements behind the door. Everyone had lost track of time with how quiet it was.

Elder Maurice suddenly said, “Time’s up. Two of you, go bring him out!”

The time limit was set at an hour. If the participant did get the fruit within an hour, they would be cleared out and be considered a failure.

Advertisement

The moment Master Forrest said that the two stewards pushed open the door and entered the realm. When Claude was brought out, he did not have any injuries on him but was in a terrible mood.

His head was down, and he looked like his whole family had died. When he walked out, he did not even dare to look up at Elder Maurice and the others.

Master Forrest could not hide his smile anymore, “An hour’s already passed, and you did not get a Green Phoenix Fruit. You’ve already lost, do you acknowledge this?”

Claude nodded sadly. Master Forrest let out a pleased smirk but still said, “There’s no need to be so depressed. You’ve done your best. I think Elder Maurice won’t blame you too much, since you’ve tried your best.”

Advertisement

Those words caused anger to boil in Elder Maurice again, which had been precisely Master Forrest’s intention. Even Jackie frowned when he heard that. Claude did not even dare to breathe after he heard that. He knew that he had committed a very big sin. In truth, he had clearly known that he would not be able to succeed after half an hour. To avoid getting injured and to avoid Elder Maurice blaming him, he chose to stay inside

for the whole hour. He only walked out after Master Forrest had announced that the round was over.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, somewhat speechless at Claude. Claude was even worse than he had expected.

There was not a single scratch on his clothes, it was obvious how safe he had been inside. No wonder that guy had been cursing how dangerous the test was. It seemed like he really valued his own body. At least Benedict had done his best and was even injured from it Claude had actually done nothing at all.

Thinking about that, Jackie shook his head helplessly.

Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne were no idiots. They naturally knew what had been on Claude's mind. On top of that, there were also those words Master Forrest had just said. Elder Maurice was starting to feel like he wanted to kill Claude.

Chapter 2697
It was no longer a matter of just dragging them down. It was a problem with Claude's own attitude as he had crossed the line. Even Mr. Zayne hated Claude at that point.

He shuffled over to where Phoenix Valley was. He knew that there was no way he would be able to avoid any consequences. After taking a few deep breaths, he slowly raised his head. When he saw Elder Maurice's infuriated expression, his whole body shivered as he took a step back.

Elder Maurice coldly said, "You've really disappointed me this time. Do you still remember what I told you when you entered? I guess you completely ignored it. You didn't even try at all, and only thought about not getting yourself hurt…"

Claude hurriedly shook his head at those words and replied, "It's not like that. Elder Maurice, how could I dare to do that? I've already done my best. I've tried every possible plan, but it's useless. I'm only at the early stage of the innate level, how could I dare to stand up against a spring solidifying realm beast. I tried using my smarts. I don't know how the others got injured. They must have made a mistake somewhere."

Advertisement

"I wasn't injured purely because I was incredibly careful. That's how I came out untouched by that spring solidifying realm beast…" As he said that, tears started to form in Claude's eyes. It was as if Claude would start crying if he was questioned more.

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly, feeling like Claude thought everyone else was stupid. He felt like he was the only smart one. It would have been better if he had not said anything, but he made Elder Maurice even angrier after he did. Elder Maurice had not planned on saying anything too unpleasant initially.

After all, it was not just Phoenix Valley gathered there, but Sky Peak Pavilion as well. If he said too much he would just be laughed at.

Yet, Claude had added oil to the fire at that point, not reflecting on his mistakes. He was even trying to find excuses, so Elder Maurice was naturally infuriated.

“Why were you in such a rush to defend yourself after you came out? Do you think we‘re all stupid? You know yourself what you’ve done. If you really did put in the work, you wouldn’t have walked out unscathed!”

Hearing that, Claude felt even more wronged as he replied, “I really did do everything I could, but this isn’t a test of my alchemic abilities, but my adaptability. I did my best and couldn’t get the results you wanted. I really was very careful, and that’s why I wasn’t injured. It’s not because I wasn’t working hard.”

Elder Maurice felt that explanation was not convincing enough. Even though Benedict had failed earlier, Elder Maurice had not been so angry. It was because Claude really had a problematic attitude.

Master Forrest was no idiot, he naturally knew what Claude was thinking. As someone from Sky Peak Pavilion, the more Claude acted like that, the happier he got.

Master Forrest frowned as he said with a concerned look, “I can tell that you’ve definitely done your best. Otherwise, you would have come out way before. You wouldn’t have stayed in there for an hour. It’s because you were doing your best that you worked till the very last moment!”

Hearing that, Claude nodded immediately as he thankfully looked at Master Forrest, “Master Forrest is right. If I wasn’t doing my best, I wouldn’t have stayed in there for so long. It’s because I was trying to do as much, that I fought till the last moment…”

Chapter 2698
Jackie was suddenly speechless when he heard that. Claude was really acting as the pinnacle of stupidity.

Did he really think Master Forrest was trying to help him?

Master Forrest was clearly trapping him, but that brat still decided to jump onto Master Forrest’s words. He added oil to the fire once again and did nothing else. Elder Maurice was about to explode from Claude’s actions. His fists were constantly trembling as he clenched them, showing how furious he was at that moment.

Jackie felt like Elder Maurice should be trying his best to control himself. He was forcing himself not to send a punch right over and lost control entirely.

Conrad suddenly laughed and said, “No matter how hard you worked, you still returned empty-handed. What’s the point of saying so much?”

Right after he said that he turned around and walked toward the door. Looking at Conrad’s confident demeanor, everyone started to have complicated feelings in their hearts.

After Conrad opened the door, he turned to flash a confident smile at everyone. When he saw the complicated expressions on the face of those from Phoenix Valley, Conrad‘s mood improved. After that, he closed the door, and the atmosphere cooled down.

Jackie took a deep breath and looked at the still unsettled Claude, and was even more speechless.

Claude’s eyes constantly moved. It was obvious that he was still trying to clear his name and shed all responsibility.

In order to stop Elder Maurice from blowing up and losing control, Jackie could not stop himself from stepping up.

“You said you tried every method. There must have been dangerous plans among those. If you took the risk, you’d naturally encounter danger. There are incredibly strong warriors around you to prevent you from dying anyway. Yet, your clothes are still clean and intact. It means you’ve done nothing at all. You’re just saying all that to shed your responsibility,” Jackie said all of that with a firm tone, leaving no room for doubt. However, Claude still shook his head violently, not agreeing with what Jackie had said.

“I really was not injured because I was very careful. I know you’re very strong. In terms of alchemy, you leave us in the dust. However, the third round isn‘t about testing alchemy at all. It focuses on your adaptability and knowledge. It’s something Master Forrest said. Don’t think you’ll be able to win in the third round just: because you’re a good alchemist!” Claude’s eyes got redder and redder as he said that. He was incredibly emotional.

At that moment, Claude was doing everything he could to avoid responsibility. He did not want to get injured but did not want to be blamed either. He definitely did not want to be punished for dragging the team down.

Jackie’s words had been incredibly accurate earlier. If he admitted to it, it would definitely be bad for him later.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly, feeling like Claude was not acting like an alchemist of Phoenix Valley at all. Instead, he was acting like an alchemist from Sky Peak Valley, trying to cause Phoenix Valley trouble. Jackie was incredibly angry at those words, let alone Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne.

Claude‘s words were just trying to discredit Jackie. To Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne, Jackie was not just their stabilizing factor, but the biggest chance for them to turn the tables.

Chapter 2699
He was the one who gave the two of them hope. Claude‘s words were basically denying that hope from the two of them.

How could Mr. Zayne and Elder Maurice stomach it?

Even Mr. Zayne could not help but narrow his eyes and say in a low voice, “You’d better watch your mouth! Just because your results are bad and you didn’t do your best, you’re trying to discredit Jackie too! If Jackie wasn’t here, we’d have already lost, thanks to your bad results. How dare you question him?”

Claude was already getting desperate at that moment. Jackie’s earlier threats were no longer working. He only had one thought in his mind at that moment which was to rid himself of all the blame.

He took a deep breath and raised his voice a little, “You’re right. If not for Jackie, we‘d have already lost! But we can’t just say he’ll do well in the third round just because he did well in the earlier two. I’ve said it before, he’s an incredibly good alchemist, but this isn’t a test of alchemic skill. So what if he’s a talented alchemist? I don’t know much, but I know something very well. He’s not been in Phoenix Valley for a long time and has never gone to Grand Yorn mountain with the guards. He definitely doesn’t have the necessary basic knowledge! Since he knows nothing and has never been in the world, how could he possibly get his hands on the Green Phoenix Fruit?!”

“Shut your mouth!” Elder Maurice’s veins were already starting to pop. He had practically shouted at Claude with all his might.

Claude was completely exposing Jackie at that moment. He even mentioned when Jackie entered Phoenix Valley.

Sky Peak Pavilion’s group could not help but be curious and suspicious at that. They were curious about when did Jackie enter Phoenix Valley and suspicious about the fact that he was so good despite not having been there for that long. After all, no matter how talented one was, one would not be that strong without going through systematic growth. However, Jackie’s skills were already far above the five alchemists.

Even though the other five alchemists were not that amazing other than Bradley, they could still already be considered top alchemists. Otherwise, they would not have been chosen to participate in such an important tournament. All of them were masters, but they were unable to even put up a fight in front of Jackie.

Claude's words sparked a sense of curiosity in everyone. Elder Maurice was so furious that he was about to walk over and slap Claude a few times.

Even Benedict, who had been grabbing his arm quietly by the side, could not help but look at Claude speechlessly. Benedict felt like Claude must have gone crazy. Otherwise, he would not have said all that.

He was practically digging a ditch for himself. He would definitely be punished even more when he goes back. He was really helping the outsiders.

Yet, Claude did not seem to realize how horrible the things he had said were. He continued to shout, "Was I wrong? He might be strong, but the third round isn't what he's good at. He's never been to where beasts are found to collect materials. He wouldn't know the basic knowledge and habits! If he doesn't know, how could he get the Green Phoenix Fruit from the phoenix! It's not like you don't know what is being tested!"

Chapter 2700
Elder Maurice was about to go mad. He shouted again, "Let me say this one more time, you'd better shut up right now! If you say another word, I'll kill you!"

Elder Maurice was not joking at that point. If Claude continued talking like that, he would really do something to Claude, no matter where they were.

Even if Elder Maurice killed Claude, the others would not say anything at all. After all, Claude was an alchemist of Phoenix Valley. Claude was suddenly woken up by those words. Chills went down his spine, and he immediately shut his mouth. However, just because he said nothing, it did not mean the matter had passed. After some silence, Bradley suddenly said, "You'll lose for sure!"

He had said that in a very matter-of-fact manner as if he was speaking the truth! Jackie could not help but look up at Bradley and noticed that Bradley's gaze was on him as well. The two of them met each other's gazes.

Jackie said in exasperation, "The results are still not out yet. I don' t know where you got the courage to say you'll win."

Bradley laughed as he ignored Jackie's accusation and replied, "Those four pieces of trash won't be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruits. In the end, it's between the two of us!"

Bradley had said that in a very firm tone. Jackie was a little speechless, but he more or less agrees with what Bradley had said. Yet, Jackie knew that Bradley had said that because he did not want to compare himself to the others but only Jackie.

Master Forrest frowned as he looked at Bradley unhappily. Conrad, who he had his hopes on, was currently in the realm. Bradley's words had clearly lumped Conrad in as a piece of trash as well.

Bradley completely disregarded everyone else.

Claude and Benedict had startled expressions. It was the first time they had ever been called trash. Even though the two could not be compared to that group, they were still nowhere near 'trash'. However, no matter how unhappy the two of them were, they did not dare to say anything at that moment. After all, Bradley's results were far above theirs.

Master Forrest let out a slight cough and said, "Those words definitely crossed the line a little. I don't disagree with your evaluation of others, but Conrad should do alright."

Bradley replied rudely at that, "No matter how well a piece of trash performs, how good could they get? He just happened to show off some talent during the second stage. Have you forgotten how badly he did in the first stage? Trash is trash. Even if they do well sometimes, they're still trash!"

Master Forrest's face soured at those words. It was the first time he had been shot down like that. Bradley rarely voiced his opinions, and usually had a face of nonchalance.

No one expected that he would say all of that. Bradley let out a grunt before he looked up and focused on Jackie, "The third match has always been a battle between the two of us. Even though you did well in the earlier two rounds, you definitely won't beat me this time. You'll lose terribly!"

As he said that, Bradley's voice had a chilling tone to it.

Jackie frowned helplessly, feeling like Bradley had gone a bit mad.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2701

Chapter 2701
Especially when Bradley was facing Jackie. It was as if the only thing Bradley wanted was to defeat Jackie.

Jackie frowned and said, “Don’t you think what you’re doing is really funny? Do you still remember what you said in the earlier two rounds? You gave the same evaluation and said the same words. Do you think you’ll be able to beat me just because you repeated it again this time?”

Bradley clenched his teeth and said, “This time, we’re not competing in terms of alchemy, but common knowledge and intelligence. How could you get the Green Phoenix Fruit with your meager skills? If you want to defeat the phoenix, you’d have to know its weak points. Don’t think I don’t know what you’re thinking about. Earlier, when Master Forrest was announcing the rules, you immediately looked doubtful when the phoenix was mentioned.”

“It proves that you don’t know about the phoenix at all. If you’ve never even heard of it, then how would you be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit from it?!”

Jackie pursed his lips in speechlessness. However, thinking about it, the results might actually go the way Bradley had predicted if he had purely been an alchemist. Jackie would not have been able to achieve good results from the third stage.

At Jackie’s silence, Bradley continued, “If you came from the inner valley, I wouldn’t have dared to judge if you‘d be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit or not. After all, the inner valley cultivates their alchemists on a whole different level. In order to raise complete alchemists, they would even bring those alchemists to Grand Yorn Mountain to collect materials and allow the alchemists to find hidden materials through practical experience.”

Advertisement

“An excellent alchemist doesn’t just need to be much better at refining pills than others. They also need to have very in-depth knowledge of materials and be able to get those materials for themselves. That’s the reason behind the third round of the tournament! You’re not from the inner valley, and you haven‘t been in Phoenix Valley for that long. You’ve never had the chance to receive proper training in this department.”

“You naturally won’t be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit!” As he said all that, Bradley was brimming with confidence.

He had pride in him that could not be ignored. Jackie raised an eyebrow at that, remaining silent.

Jackie did not really care about Bradley's words, but Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne were definitely affected by them. That was because both of them felt like Bradley's words were quite reasonable.

Advertisement

The two of them knew nothing about Jackie's background. Jackie had not gone through any systematic education. It was already a miracle that Jackie was as skilled as he was. They did not think Jackie was all capable. The results of the third round were really uncertain. The two of them could not help but start to feel afraid…

Afraid that Bradley had really predicted the results. Even if Conrad could not get the Green Phoenix Fruit, Jackie would still end up losing to Bradley in the last stage. Then, all their hopes and dreams from earlier would be dashed.

The more Elder Maurice thought about it, the more worried he got. He could not help but look at Jackie. Jackie turned to look at Elder Maurice at that.

"Don't listen to his words. He's not me. Just care about the final results. The person you should really be worried about right now is Conrad," Right after Jackie said that, a loud bang was heard from behind the door.

The few of them looked over at the same time and saw a figure slowly falling against the door.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2702

Chapter 2702
That figure looked a lot like Conrad, who had entered the realm earlier. After a few moments, the door opened, and Conrad was dragged out by two stewards.

At that moment, Conrad was no longer brimming with confidence like he had been before. Instead, he looked like a wild dog that had just been violently beaten up. He could not even stand on his own. He sustained quite a number of wounds on his body. Some of them were so deep that the bone beneath was exposed.

He looked like he was in an even worse state than Jameson had been. Conrad was constantly crying out in pain as he was being helped out. Cold sweat riddled his forehead.

At that moment, everyone suddenly heard a cold voice that said, "Just like what I've thought, a piece of trash."

That voice had naturally been from Bradley. He merely glanced at Conrad before averting his gaze, as if looking at Conrad would taint his eyes.

It was obvious from how Conrad looked that he had failed. Master Forrest's mood suddenly plummeted. He had thought that Conrad's would fare well and that he would be able to get a Green Phoenix Fruit.

Advertisement

He never expected that Conrad's words were all just empty hot air. He never had that skill. However, he could not berate Conrad at that moment, or he would just end up being laughed at by everyone.

He furrowed his eyebrows as he ordered the stewards nearby to bring Conrad out, and treat his injuries. In truth, Jackie had really wanted to mock Conrad at that moment. After all, Conrad had bragged so much earlier as if he wanted to tell the world that he was the very best. Conrad had even mocked Phoenix Valley. However, Jackie managed to hold back from speaking. After all, it would feel like he was just rubbing salt on their wounds if he did.

Looking at the state Conrad was in, Elder Maurice would have been incredibly happy. Conrad had failed to get the Green Phoenix Fruit. The final results would be between Jackie and Bradley.

Yet, ever since Bradley's earlier words, Elder Maurice had started to worry about Jackie. He was scared that Jackie would lose his bearing in the end.

Advertisement

Looking at Conrad being carried out, Elder Maurice could no longer stand it as he whispered to Jackie, "Do you think you can do it?"

Jackie nodded, not saying anything else. However, the more Jackie acted that way, the more anxious Elder Maurice got various thoughts started to surface in his mind.

Jackie knew that Elder Maurice was very nervous, but he did not say anything much. Sometimes, people could not be calmed down with just a word or two. He could not be bothered to waste his time talking too much.

At that moment, Bradley spoke again, "It's finally my turn now. Just like I said. These pieces of trash did not even have to enter. It was always just a waste of time!"

After he said that, he walked right through the door.

At that moment, Bradley was just as confident as Conrad had been when Conrad walked in. However, Bradley had more of a reason to be more confident than Conrad did.

Conrad's confidence had come from ignorance, but Bradley actually had the skill to back up his confidence. When the door closed behind Bradley, everyone took a deep breath.

Not a single person wondered if Bradley would be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit. In everyone's eyes, it was something that would happen for sure. Even Elder Maurice was sure that Bradley would be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit and complete the task of the third stage.

After Bradley entered, everyone suddenly fell silent. Not a single person spoke as they all looked at the door quietly.

Advertisement

After a while, Master Forrest suddenly said, "He'll definitely be able to get a Green Phoenix Fruit. After all, he was in Grand Yorn Mountain looking for materials for a long time."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2703

Chapter 2703
"He's seen many strong beasts before. Even though there were people protecting him, he has learned and gained a lot of experience!"

Master Forrest caused Elder Maurice to be even more worried. Elder Maurice did not have the confidence that Master Forrest had because he was clueless about Jackie's skills.

Before he met Jackie, he did not even know Jackie existed. If it were not for Mr. Zayne telling him about Jackie, he would not have even known What Jackie had experienced. In truth, Elder Maurice really wanted to thoroughly investigate and ask if Jackie could actually get the Green Phoenix Fruit at that moment. Yet, due to the rules, Jackie's plans could not be revealed to him. All he could do was patiently wait for Jackie to complete the third stage.

At that moment, Elder Maurice felt like there was a large stone on his chest, causing him to not be able to breathe properly. Mr. Zayne was not much better either. The two of them were constantly looking at Jackie.

When the door finally opened, Bradley had his head held high as he walked out with a Green Phoenix Fruit in hand.

Everyone had their eyes on Bradley at that moment.

Advertisement

The Green Phoenix Fruit was only the size of a thumb. It had a cold aura about it. At that moment, Bradley's right hand had a glove that was made of special material. That glove was capable of withstanding the bone-chilling cold, which is why he dared hold the Green Phoenix Fruit on his palm.

If he had just held the Green Phoenix Fruit with his bare hands, he would have suffered from frostbite. After all, he was only at the early stage of the innate level.

Jackie did some calculations in his head. It had only been a little over half an hour since Bradley entered the door. It was already considered quite fast.

He heard a series of footsteps coming in. Jackie looked up and noticed Conrad and Jameson limping over after their treatments. The two of them had already been given recovery pills and were already in a much better condition. They still needed rest but insisted on staying for the sake of being able to see the final result.

Advertisement

At that moment, the six participants were all gathered there. Everyone had their eyes fixed on Bradley's palm.

Claude's month was wide open, it looked like he could swallow an egg whole.

"He really did it… He's really amazing!" Claude lamented.

At that moment, the others were far too shocked. They no longer cared about anything else as they started to discuss among themselves.

"How did he do it?! I tried before, but that phoenix was way too fierce. As long as I got even remotely close to the Green Phoenix Fruit, it would lunge over with its talons. My thighs were practically ripped apart! If it didn't have that chain on, I'd have been eaten on the spot!"

"I hate that we still can't discuss this. The moment Jackie completes his round, I want to investigate this to the end! It's too unbelievable. I thought that none of us would be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit!"

At that moment, Bradley did not care what everyone was saying about him at all. Whether it be praises or envy, none of it reached Bradley. At that moment, Bradley merely had his gaze fixed on Jackie.

He reached out his right hand with a cold smile as he waved the Green Phoenix Fruit in his hand and said, "So? Was I right?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2704

Chapter 2704
Jackie raised his eyebrow, speechless.

That brat had to brag every single moment.

Jackie sighed, “Even if you got a Green Phoenix Fruit, it still took you a while to get it. Do you think you can beat me?”

After Jackie said that, Bradley suddenly laughed. The laughter was thick with mockery and incredibly exaggerated. Even Master Forrest who was in front of him could not help but frown.

It was the first time he had ever seen Bradley laughing like that. Before this, Master Forrest would have already found it strange if Bradley spoke more than absolutely he needed to, let alone laugh. Ever since he got to know Jackie, and since Jackie’s results kept on heating Bradley’s, Bradley seemed to have become a completely different person.

Bradley laughed for a long time before he stopped and said, ” Jackie! Has anyone ever told you that overconfidence is not a good thing?!”

Advertisement

As he said that, Bradley had an incredibly proud look on his face. At that moment, all he wanted to do was trample all over Jackie. He would only be able to gain the dignity he had lost if he stomped on Jackie with his feet. Bradley actually viewed his pride and dignity as something more important than anything else. Jackie had beaten him over and over again, causing Bradley’s pride to be dealt a blow it never had before.

Bradley took a deep breath before he held his head up high and continued saying, “Don’t think you can do whatever you want just because you have some talent in alchemy. Don’t think you’re unbeatable. What do you think I managed to win the third round with?”

As he said that, Bradley waved the Green Phoenix Fruit in his hand again. Everyone looked at the fruit as it shook around. Including Jackie, everyone wanted to know what method Bradley had used to get the Green Phoenix Fruit.

With him being only at the early stage of the innate level, there was no way he could have gone against a spring solidifying realm beast head-on. The only thing he could do was to use his brains. However, without seeing it for themselves, there was no way they could determine what sort of method Bradley had used.

Advertisement

Jackie frowned, speechless at how crazily Bradley seemed to be targeting him. He had never even regarded Bradley as anyone significant. To him, Bradley was just a pebble by the road that could be kicked aside at any time. Yet, that pebble was acting like an annoying fly, constantly circling around him. Even if Jackie did not want to bother him, he was still annoying enough.

Jackie frowned and said, “The third round isn’t testing alchemic ability, but it’s still related to alchemists. I know you didn’t use your alchemist abilities to get the Green Phoenix Fruit, but you can’t assume I won’t get it because of that.”

Jackie had not bothered to say anything, but Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne standing behind him were already incredibly tense after Bradley‘s words. He did not want Elder Maurice to continue being fixated on this. Jackie might not have bothered if it was anyone else, but Elder Maurice was still his superior. He could not just ignore Elder Maurice like that.

Jackie had only one thought in mind at that moment, which was to destroy Bradley’s arrogance and shut him up.

Bradley coldly laughed as he started to look even more crazed as he replied, “You know very well that I didn’t rely on alchemy to win this time. Talent in alchemy will only help you with the first and second rounds.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2705

Chapter 2705
“The third round doesn’t rely on that, so it’s impossible for you to get the Green Phoenix Fruit. Stop trying to act so pleased in front of me. I know you’re just pretending right now. You can trick others, but you can’t trick me!”

Jackie’s lips twitched speechlessly. He was not planning on lying to anyone at all. Bradley put himself up on too high of a pedestal.

He coldly snorted as he said, “I don’t know where you got the bravery to assume all of my thoughts from. Why do you think everything I’m doing right now is to trick others? Why do you assume I won’t be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit?! I’m the only one left right now anyway. You’ll see for yourselves if I can get it or not!”

Jackie no longer had the patience to talk to that group of people. He felt like saying another word was a waste of his time. After he finished his sentence, Jackie was about to walk through the door when Bradley blocked his way.

Jackie frowned as he complained, “What are you trying to do? I’m trying to take part in the contest. Are you trying to stop me?”

Bradley shook his head as he said seriously, “I hate looking at pretenders the most. Don’t think I don’t know what you’re planning to do. You plan on going in and getting injured before you faint and get dragged out. You’ll be able to spare yourself from awkwardness then. Even if we have a lot to say, there’s nothing we can say to someone who’s already fainted.”

Advertisement

Jackie speechlessly looked at Bradley. He felt like Bradley’s mind was like an inexplicable maze. Bradley even managed to think of things that had never crossed his mind before. He was even speaking with such certainty.

Bradley was sure that he would definitely let himself get injured after entering the door, using the chance to be carried out to save himself some awkwardness. He would not get any response even if he wanted to mock Jackie. Bradley only had one thing in mind at that moment, which was to regain all his lost dignity.

The source of that would be from Jackie.

Jackie let out a slight smile, “Is there something wrong with you? Why are you so sure I can‘t get the Green Phoenix Fruit and complete the third stage?”

Advertisement

After Jackie said that, Bradley looked like a cat who just had its tail stepped on, his hairs were all standing up.

He raised his voice, “Of course, you won’t complete it! How could you complete it?! You’re just someone with some talent in alchemy. You can’t do anything else!”

Bradley was practically screeching out his words. He looked a little crazed at that point. After everyone looked at Bradley, they did not know what to say. Even Master Forrest was frowning as he looked at Bradley with a conflicted expression.

He held his head high and shouted, “You asked me how I got the bravery to assume that you can’t succeed earlier?! Let me tell you where my courage came from right now!”

After saying that, he suddenly turned around and looked at everyone.

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly, not saying anything as he just crossed his arms. He quietly waited as he listened to what Bradley had to say.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2706

Chapter 2706
Bradley said loudly, “I was able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit because I spent a whole year training in Grand Yorn Mountain. I saw countless beasts during that time and collected a lot of materials. Even though I had people to protect me, I’ve encountered danger and almost lost my life a few times! These experiences might have been dangerous, but they’re a valuable treasure to me. If not for those experiences, I would never have been able to achieve such a result in the third stage!”

After he said that, Bradley abruptly turned around with widened eyes as he asked in an accusatory tone, “That’s why I have the courage to judge you! Have you ever entered Grand Yorn Mountain?”

Jackie even nodded. He had indeed entered Grand Yorn Mountain before. He had even stayed there for two or three days.

Seeing Jackie nod, Elder Maurice suddenly breathed a sigh of relief, feeling like his prayers had been answered. Mr. Zayne was in more or less the same mood as Elder Maurice was.

When the two of them heard Bradley’s accusations toward Jackie, there was a knot in their hearts. When they saw Jackie’s nod, they suddenly relaxed.

Since he has entered Grand Yorn Mountain before, he had naturally gone through various trials that involved various beasts. On top of that, Jackie’s expression was incredibly calm which showed that he was confident. Their confidence in Jackie was suddenly back.

Advertisement

Master Forrest and Bradley suddenly took a deep breath when Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne breathed that sigh of relief.

Jackie had entered Grand Yorn Mountain before? Would he not have some understanding of beasts?

Could he really be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit in the third stage?

Just thinking about that possibility caused their expressions to sour immediately. Their earlier calmness had already disappeared as well. However, Bradley was not willing to admit defeat. He quickly followed with a question, “How long were you in Grand Yorn Mountain?”

Advertisement

Jackie frowned, counting it in his mind before saying, “About two or three days!”

Those words caused everyone’s moods to turn around again. Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne, who had already breathed a sigh of relief, started to tense up again. Meanwhile, Master Forrest and Bradley relaxed.

Two or three days was not enough to do anything in Grand Yorn Mountain at all. The two of them felt like Jackie had probably just passed by Grand Yorn Mountain. They probably did not have any practical or valuable experience.

Bradley laughed and said, “What’s the point of being there for just two or three days? You probably never even met any of the common beasts, let alone accumulate any experience. The third stage is testing your common knowledge and intelligence. No matter how many plans you have, they’re all useless without basic knowledge.”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. In truth, he did not really want to hide anything, but there were some things that would not be believable even if he mentioned them. He had experienced a similar situation before. Even if he said the truth, everyone else would just laugh at it. They would say mean things and laugh by themselves.

Ever since he experienced all that, Jackie learned his lesson. No matter how loud the accusations got, he would not reveal the whole truth.

Bradley continued to shout, “What could you possibly do in two or three days?!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2707

Chapter 2707
Jackie smiled lightly, not denying anything.

What had he experienced in the two or three days in Grand Yorn Mountain?

First of all, he encountered trouble in the skies of Grand Yorn Mountain, and the spirit vessel fell from the air. The three of them arrived at the outer area as the spirit vessel fell, thanks to their luck. They were only around the outer area and the edge, and most of the beasts there were only at the early stage of the spring solidifying realm.

At the time, his relationship with Rudy and Grayson was incredibly bad. If the situation had not been so dangerous, the three of them might have actually fought each other on the spot.

After experiencing the attacks from the one-eyed snow wolf, and meeting Hansel, as well as a lot more things, the three of them finally arrived at the territory of the Seven Absolutes Pavilion’s Middle Province Alchemist Alliance branch.

In truth, all those things they had experienced were actually quite interesting. It was not as useless as Bradley claimed. However, he would not bring those up in front of all of them.

Advertisement

Bradley suddenly took things further at Jackie's silence by saying, "Did you finally realize how ill-prepared you are and how impossible it is for you to get the Green Phoenix Fruit?

"If you know you can't do it, then stop pretending that you can do anything. You'll definitely lose in this tournament. You'll definitely be carried out in the end!"

Bradley's words were as if he was incredibly sure of himself as he spoke. Jackie's eyes glinted when he heard all of that, finally understanding Bradley's plan. Bradley was trying his best to attack Jackie's self-confidence. He wanted Jackie's self-confidence to plummet, affecting the final results. In terms of composure, Bradley is already incredibly crazed. It was exactly because of that Jackie did not realize Bradley's plans underneath that crazed exterior.

Jackie thought about it and finally let out a helpless smile.

Advertisement

In the end, Bradley was still not that confident in himself. If Bradley really was that confident, he would definitely not have said that at the time. He would not have tried so hard to insult Jackie. He wanted Jackie to admit that Jackie was not that capable. He just wanted to use that last chance to ruin Jackie's confidence and mess up Jackie's plans, influencing the final results.

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly, feeling like Bradley's actions were really indescribable.

Did Bradley really feel like it would affect him?

Probably because Bradley's actions were far too obvious, but even Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne had realized Bradley's goal.

Elder Maurice furrowed his eyebrows as he walked to Jackie's side, putting a hand on Jackie's shoulder and voiced out, "Don't think that everyone will listen to you just because of what you said. Don't think that everyone will feel like what you said was right. Didn't you swear that your results would completely trounce Jackies before? Yet, your results in the end never stood up against Jackie. It's not like Jackie doesn't know the rules, and it's not like Jackie doesn't know what he'll be facing. Yet, he's still confident. It shows that he had his own plans. Isn't it too absurd that you're using that little bit of information you have to determine if he will win or lose?"

With that in mind, Elder Maurice had his gaze fixed on Bradley‘s body, deliberately letting out his aura to push Bradley back.

Master Forrest hurriedly rushed in front of Bradley when he saw the situation, putting himself between them. He unleashed his aura to match Elder Maurice’s. In a flash, the two of them were at odds.

Jackie merely twitched his lips speechlessly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2708

Chapter 2708
In truth, the solutions seemed very simple in Jackie’s mind. All he needed to do was to hurry up and participate in the third stage. After the results are out, they would naturally shut up. Yet, Bradley had made an adamant judgment that Jackie would fail the third stage. Then he would also try to leave hastily after he was out to prevent himself from being laughed at.

If that happened, Bradley would not have had the chance to regain his dignity or laugh at Jackie. So, before Jackie entered, he wanted to laugh and insult Jackie in front of everyone, as well as attack Jackie’s confidence.

Jackie could see all of that through Bradley’s actions.

Elder Forrest did not want the atmosphere to get too awkward. After all, Sky Peak Pavilion was still working together with Phoenix Valley. If the two sides ended up fighting, it would be bad for future developments. Master Forrest took a deep breath as he glanced at Jackie. He knew Bradley’s plan.

He really wanted to continue with Bradley’s plan as well and accomplish Bradley’s role, so he let out a laugh, “You’re definitely incredibly talented!”

He had said that right at Jackie. As he said that, Master Forrest’s expressions were strangely warm as if he was an elder who was consoling Jackie. However, to Jackie, he looked like a wolf that was staring at a sheep and definitely had no good intentions.

Advertisement

Master Forrest had always been a schemer. Jackie never listened to any of his praises. As usual, Jackie remained silent as he quietly looked at Master Forrest.

At that moment, Master Forrest did not really care about Jackie as he continued, “Before the first round started, I’d thought that you had been forcibly brought over to make up for the numbers. Yet, the truth proved me wrong. I actually failed to see how exceptional you are. In terms of alchemy, even Bradley isn’t a match for you. You’re

way too excellent. So excellent that even I have started to envy you. Why aren't you an alchemist from the Sky Peak Pavilion!"

As he said that, he was actually somewhat truthful, even if he did not have any good intentions. After all, Jackie had done far too well. If the two others had not dragged him down, Jackie would have been enough to bring Phoenix Valley to victory. That fact had no room for doubt.

Elder Maurice frowned as he said unhappily, "Stop saying all these ill-intentioned words. Do you think I don't know what you're doing? You're the host of the tournament. You should be ushering Jackie in right now instead of wasting your time like this!"

Advertisement

Master Forrest laughed as he nodded earnestly, "You're right. I'm really wasting everyone's time right now, but I have my reasons for doing so. Please do listen…"

After his explanation, Master Forrest did not stop at all as he continued, "Even if you got good results in the first two stages, you won't be able to show off that much skill in the third stage. However, I still trust in you. Since you're so confident in yourself, you must have a perfect plan. However, you should keep in mind that the proof of the pudding is in the eating…"

"I can understand why you're so confident since you're extraordinarily talented! However, we don't think your talent in alchemy will allow you to get the Green Phoenix Fruit. You're such a proud person. Why don't you use that pride to show us what you're capable of!"

Everyone widened their eyes at those words, suddenly understanding why Master Forrest had said so much.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2709

Chapter 2709
Jackie could not help but laugh at those words.

So Master Forrest had said all that so he could have everyone enter the door to see the process of him getting the Green Phoenix Fruit. It would give him pressure and would let Bradley vent a little as well. As long as Jackie did not do well, Bradley would be able to mock him on the sidelines. Only Master Forrest would think of a plan like that.

Bradley looked at Master Forrest gratefully. If the situation had allowed it, he would have shot Master Forrest a thumbs up. That suggestion had been too perfect.

As long as Jackie agreed, they would be able to pressure Jackie and Bradley would be able to witness Jackie‘s failure personally. This would enable Bradley to gain all the confidence he had lost previously.

It would definitely be better for his future. Even Bradley had been able to see through it, so Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne naturally could as well. Their faces were steely as they stared at the Sky Peak Pavilion.

The two of them felt that the people from Sky Peak Pavilion really do feel like everyone else were idiots. To think that such a low-leveled tactic would work out, was a complete joke!

Advertisement

Elder Maurice stood in front of Jackie as he said, “Aren’t you violating the rules at this point? Why did everyone else manage to enter the realm so easily? You singled Jackie out to prove things to you. Don’t think we don’t know what you’re trying to do. You’re just trying to attack Jackie’s confidence and bolster the confidence of that brat of yours!”

Master Forrest did not get angry at those words but laughed instead. He opened up his hands and said plainly, “I don’t have any of those intentions at all, but aren’t you very confident in Jackie? Since you’re so confident, let’s witness his victory together. What’s wrong with that?”

“Didn’t you hear what I said earlier? I said all that just to satisfy Jackie’s self-confidence. I don’t mean anything else by it!”

At that moment, Master Forrest was basically saying everything he could to accomplish his goal.

Advertisement

Elder Maurice started to pant in anger after hearing that.

Mr. Zayne merely frowned and said, “Impossible! This is absolutely impossible! If this whole group enters, it’ll absolutely affect Jackie’s results. You’re just doing all this to affect Jackie’s final results!”

Hearing that, Master Forrest continued to shake his head earnestly as he said, “The barrier behind the door was erected by both of us. After entering, there’s a three-foot-wide buffer. As long as you stand inside the area, you‘ll both be safe and be able to see everything that’s happening within the realm. However, the people or beasts within the buffer would not be able to see the people within the area. So, Jackie won’t be able to see us but we can see him. That way, it won’t affect his results!”

Initially, they had erected the buffer just in case of any emergencies. If the phoenix managed to escape the chain, they would still be able to run to the buffer and assure their safety. After all, behind the buffer was a natural barrier!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2710

Chapter 2710
“As long as you’re standing within the barrier, they would not be affected in any way,” Master Forrest emphasized his words.

They would also be able to see what was happening within the array. It had to be said that the buffer was incredibly well-made. It gave them the perfect opportunity to witness Jackie’s competition!

Elder Maurice’s face darkened, “Stop trying to twist the truth. Haven’t you wasted so many words just to witness Jackie competing? So what if Jackie has confidence? Does he need to let you look at him just because he is confident? Why does everyone else get to complete the round alone, but Jackie doesn’t get the same chance?!”

“You clearly have ill intentions for doing so. Stop trying to make yourself seem so nice!”

Master Forrest let out a cough as he had a wronged look on his face as if he had been framed for something massive. He looked up at Elder Maurice, “Please don’t accuse me like this. I’ve never said anything bad about Jackie from the start. I just raised the suggestion because he seemed so confident. In truth, we can all just stand at the buffer. It won’t affect Jackie at all. We’ll just be able to quietly spectate him.

“Even if we said anything, it would not affect Jackie. You’re so fervently trying to stop this just because you aren’t confident in Jackie. Why are you insisting on pinning the blame on me instead?”

Advertisement

When Elder Maurice heard that, he almost spat out blood in anger. Jackie frowned as he reached out and pulled at Elder Maurice’s hand. He looked up with a consoling expression at Elder Maurice. The matter would only cause constant arguments if it continued. He really did not want to bother with them at all at that moment

Jackie looked up at Master Forrest and said sternly, “Since you want to watch me so much, just head inside and watch. I’ll give you the chance to witness it together so you won’t end up trying to argue the results.”

After he said that, everyone‘s eyes widened.

Master Forrest’s eyes had a strange look to them. Even though he had tried his best to push things forward, he had not had a hundred percent confidence. After all, no one

there was an idiot. He clearly had ill intentions, everyone could see that. However, as long as it was still remotely possible, Master Forrest would do his best to make it happen. However, he never expected that Jackie would agree before he even exhausted all his avenues.

Advertisement

Jackie had agreed to it too easily, causing Master Forrest to stumble a little.

Elder Maurice turned back emotionally at that and said, “Are you crazy? They clearly don’t have good intentions. They’re trying to disrupt your performance!”

Mr. Zayne walked over with a worried look as he said, “Even though you can’t see them, you‘ll still be able to hear any loud discussions. This group wants you to fail. They’ll purposely waste their voices to affect you! What are you going to do then? You’re not responsible if you agree just like that!”

Jackie sighed, understanding Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne’s worry and fear. However, he had never been worried about it.

He smiled bitterly and replied, “Don’t think about it too much. The fact that I agreed means I have my reasons for doing so. Since they are so eager to see how I perform then just let them look. You have to understand, I’ve never been someone who lets the words of others sway me. There’s only one reason I’d agree to that. I don’t care if they’ll affect me at all. Even if you start fighting in the buffer, it won’t affect my results at all.”

Jackie was incredibly resolute as he said that, leaving no room for doubt.

Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne could not help but frown. They still had a lot to say, but since Jackie had already said so much, it would not look good if they were not willing to let it go.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2711

Chapter 2711

They were forced to swallow all their words as they looked at Jackie. Master Forrest was ecstatic. His smile was so wide that it threatened to split his face.

If it had been the right place to do so, he would have started to clap in celebration. He had been so obvious with what he was doing, but the brat had still fallen for it! He would do everything he could to affect the brat's performance the moment the round started.

It was obvious without even thinking about it that the brat would definitely try to use the knowledge he had to get a Green Phoenix Fruit. Only, they did not know if Jackie's method would be effective or not.

No matter what method he had in mind, Master Forrest decided that he would definitely do everything he could to disturb Jackie. Jackie immediately saw through Master Forrest's thoughts, and a smile of disdain formed on his face.

At that moment, Bradley had a pleased expression on his face as he gave way to Jackie. Jackie looked coldly at Bradley. Bradley had reverted back into that emotionless master.

Sure enough, a good amount of his earlier temperament had been faked. It was all done in order to provoke Jackie. Jackie could not help but shake his head at the thought, tossing all those thoughts to the back of his head.

Advertisement

He started to walk forward and pushed the door open. Everyone else followed closely behind him. The buffer was about three feet away from the door. Any forward would be an isolated barrier.

It was an isolated space. Everyone could see the scene within the space. In the illusory realm, a large phoenix was patrolling within. At that moment, the phoenix's eyes were half open and it had a lazy look on its face, but no one dared to underestimate it.

After all, the phoenix was already in the spring solidifying realm. If it had not been restrained by a chain, it could have rushed over and ripped half of the people there apart. Jackie looked at the phoenix and sighed.

The phoenix might have already matured, but it was still not that old. It was still only at the early stage of the innate level. As Jackie walked forward and entered the illusory realm, he suddenly heard a wave of discussions.

Advertisement

He immediately knew that Claude was talking. “He’s far too confident. A phoenix isn’t that easy to deal with. If he insists on forcing it, it won’t end well for him.”

Those words might sound like it was advice for Jackie to not be impulsive, but it was

filled with a sense of mockery. Jackie smiled coldly as he turned around abruptly. Claude seemed like he would never stop.

Jackie had already warned Claude before, but Claude seemed like he had already forgotten it. Jackie was not someone who forgives so easily. He had only temporarily let Claude off because of the special circumstances.

However, he was already at the last round, and the brat no longer had any use.

Jackie suddenly smiled coldly as he said in a low voice, “Remember everything you said just now. Don’t regret it later.”

After saying that, Jackie turned around and walked into the illusory realm. The illusory realm was so realistic that Jackie was actually fooled.

After entering the formation, he was fully submerged in the illusion. After that, even the ground behind him turned into a green plain. Sensing that someone had entered,

the phoenix’s eyes slowly widened.

Advertisement

The phoenix was blue but had no wings. Instead, it had two talons both front and back. Its sharp claws had a vague chill to them, even if one was not near them.

The sharpness of the talons could be felt from the coldness. Jackie turned to look and found that he could not see the people within the buffer, but he could still feel their gazes on him.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2712

Chapter 2712
The moment Jackie entered the formation, the people in the buffer had all lost their reservations. After all, only Jackie had yet to finish the third stage.

Everyone stared at Jackie with widened eyes, especially Bradley. Other than excitement, there were no other emotions in his eyes.

At that moment, his mood turned incredibly complicated. He had already used every trick in the book that he could. He was certain that Jackie would never be able to get the Green Phoenix Fruit simply because Jackie just did not have the ability to!

Jameson said, agitated, “What do you think Jackie will do to get the Green Phoenix Fruit? My mind is a mess at the moment…”

“I’d already tried everything I could. I even went in and put my life on the line. In the end, I got injured, and couldn’t even get my

hands on the Green Phoenix Fruit. The phoenix is just way too smart!”

Advertisement

After Jameson said that, everyone nodded except for Bradley. During the round, they had thought of various plans before, but everything went down the drain after they entered the illusory realm and faced the phoenix.

Not a single one of them managed to get through. Jameson, Conrad, and Benedict all got injured while deciding to put their lives on the line. At that moment, the few of them had complicated feelings in their hearts.

Conrad stared at Bradley, and after a long time, he finally summoned up the courage to ask, “Bradley… Now that Jackie’s entered, there’s no need for the rules anymore. Could you help answer our questions? How did you get the Green Phoenix Fruit?”

Conrad was incredibly curious about it. He knew what Bradley was like. Even though

Advertisement

they were all alchemists from Sky Peak Pavilion, Bradley looked down on them.

Conrad might not be willing to accept it, but he did not dare to say anything in front of Bradley’s immense talent. Just asking the question had taken him a lot of courage. After all, Bradley had always only cared about himself.

If Bradley did not want to say it, one would only be faced with cold words even if one asked. Bradley’s mood was quite complicated and a little worried at that moment. After hearing Conrad’s question, he looked up into Conrad’s eyes and swept over the other participants.

Everyone looked at him with excitement. It seemed like everyone really wanted to know how he got the Green Phoenix Fruit. Bradley raised an eyebrow and let out a cold laugh, “Since you all want to know so much, I’ll tell you.”

After saying that, Bradley looked toward the illusory array. At that moment, Jackie was not moving at all, just like before. No one knew what he was thinking. The phoenix had already opened its eyes and was locking gazes with Jackie.

If the phoenix had not been chained, it would definitely have rushed over and torn Jackie apart. After looking at him for a few moments, Bradley finally answered, “The method is actually very simple. I spent so long in Grand Yorn Mountain, and I’ve met phoenixes like this before. They like eating cold energy, so any materials with cold energy are incredibly alluring to the phoenixes. I used a freezing pill.”

The moment he said that all the participants widened their eyes. At that moment, they were not filled with curiosity, but confusion, Claude was the first to speak, “All of us are aware of that special point of phoenixes. I might be an alchemist focused on refining pills, but I’ve at least memorized the introductions to

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2713

Chapter 2713
“I’ve already seen the introductions on phoenixes in ancient archives before. Phoenixes’ liking of cold energy is the first trait listed. I tried to use that point. After entering the door, I took out ground frost pills that are dense in cold energy.

“The effects of ground frost pills shouldn’t be worse than freezing pills. In the buffer zone, I mixed poison with the pills and tossed them out. However, the phoenix did not fall for it at all. All the phoenix did was glance at the pills and shut its eyes, ignoring them!”

After Claude finished talking, everyone nodded in agreement. It was obvious that everyone more or less knew of that special characteristic. They had tried to use it to their advantage but did not succeed.

Conrad said, “I threw quite a few pills with cold characteristics. It wasn’t just pills, but

weapons as well. Yet, they never managed to attract the phoenix.

“The phoenix would just look at it before turning around. It didn’t look like it wanted to eat them as well! We knew about freezing pills as well. Furthermore, freezing pills aren’t actually that dense in cold energy. Why did yours end up working, while ours didn’t despite our various tries?”

Advertisement

Conrad’s last words were precisely what all the participants were thinking. All of them widened their eyes as they looked at Bradley curiously. Even Elder Maurice, Mr. Zayne, and the others were looking curiously.

Bradley coldly laughed, “What do you think phoenixes are? Even though they’re beasts, don’t assume that beasts lack intelligence.

“Do you think they’ll obediently fall for it just because you threw in some pills with cold energy? Do you think they’d end up consuming poison so obediently?!

“The phoenix is already matured and is already at the spring solidifying realm. There’s no way it could be that dumb. At the very least, it wouldn’t fall for such a shallow trick. If you don’t understand, think about it in another way.

Advertisement

“If you were the phoenix, and some alluring pills suddenly got tossed in from the outside, would you just dumbly run over and eat everything?!”

Those words caused their faces to redden. Bradley had hit their weaknesses on the spot. Be it before or after they entered the illusory realm, they had never considered the phoenix’s intelligence.

They only thought about using the special characteristic of the phoenix to lure it to eat the poison. They would then have the best chance to get close to the Green Phoenix Fruit.

They forgot something important. Even though phoenixes were beasts, they were

still not beasts of low intelligence. Before it was caught by Sky Peak Pavilion. It had been staying in the incredibly dangerous Grand Yorn Mountain.

Grand Yorn Mountain was a gathering spot for beasts. An unknown number of beasts dwelled within, and an unknown number of beasts died every day. If it were not smart enough, it could not have possibly survived on Grand Yorn Mountain for that long.

Shallow tricks like that would not be able to even fool beasts. After Bradley said that, everyone’s minds were finally enlightened. Claude said miserably, “Since it’s so intelligent and its skills are far above ours, how could we have gotten the Green Phoenix Fruit with only an hour’s time!”

Claude started to complain again. Even though the others did not continue with his words, most of them agreed with his views. There were way too many problems that were in front of them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2714

Chapter 2714
For them to get the Green Phoenix Fruit was already a task that was considered arduous. Master Forrest let out a cold laugh when he heard Claude’s words and said,

“Don’t just complain if you can’t do it. Each round had been arranged to be incredibly strict and difficult. You should never have participated if you don’t think you have the skill.

“Just because you can’t do it doesn’t mean others can’t. Didn’t Bradley successfully acquire a Green Phoenix Fruit?”

Those words felt incredibly insulting. Claude could not help but shudder at them. Elder Maurice frowned as he berated, “Just shut your mouth. Every time you open your mouth, you’re either trying to accuse someone or complain. Had I known of your character, I would never have allowed you to attend this tournament!”

Claude was incredibly reluctant to just let Elder Maurice berate him like that, but he did not dare to say anything. After all, he was still the cause of all this.

After they returned to Phoenix Valley, Elder Maurice might embellish the report about him if Elder Maurice did not like him. Then, he would end up being punished more than he should. For the sake of his future, he was forced to swallow his anger.

Conrad did not really care about what the people from Phoenix Valley were arguing about. The only thing he wanted to know was how Bradley ended up getting the Green Phoenix Fruit.

Advertisement

He limped forward next to Bradley and said, “If you just used the freezing pills, the results would have been the same as ours. Since you managed to successfully get the Green Phoenix Pill, then you must have used a different method, right?”

Bradley glanced at Conrad bofor calmly, “It’s true that the freezing pills were only part of the ruse, but they were incredibly important. Have you forgotten what the freezing pills are used for?”

Conrad frowned, thinking for a moment before answering, “Freezing pills can be consumed and used externally. Consuming them can help restrict any fire-based poisons.

“Used externally, it will automatically release dense cold energy into its surroundings! However, is that capable of going against the phoenix?’

Advertisement

Bradley nodded. He had never planned on keeping this a secret anyway. After all, the method Bradley had used was not a special method at all. It was just that all the others. were too stupid, and used dumb methods instead.

He calmly said, “The phoenix isn’t stupid. It naturally won’t entertain any pills that are just casually thrown out. However, I didn’t throw the freezing pills for the phoenix to eat.

“I didn’t put any poison into the pills either. I threw the pills in purely for them to release cold energy.

The other participants were all confused by the explanation. Not a single one of them understood what that would do. Yet, Master Forrest and Elder Maurice immediately did.

When they designed the tournament, they had acted through how finishing the third stage could be done. Bradley’s method was the one they had thought of, and it was simple and reliable.

Even Elder Maurice could not help but nod at it. Bradley was definitely much better than anyone who was average in terms of both talent and skill. He had relied on his own skills to get the Green Phoenix Fruit. Thinking about that, Elder Maurice started to get worried about Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2715

Chapter 2715
He did not know if Jackie had the skill. Bradley did not care what everyone else was thinking as he continued explaining, “The freezing pills can’t just release cold energy, they also numb the sense of smell. With those two effects, of course, I could deal with the phoenix!”

Hearing that, the others still did not really understand. Bradley frowned as he cursed in his heart. All of them were idiots. After that, he patiently continued explaining.

“Even though the phoenix won’t consume the pill, phoenixes have always liked places with dense cold energy. After the freezing pill lets out the cold energy, the phoenix would still slowly get nearer to the pill, even if it won’t eat it.

“That’s the effect I wanted. After tossing the freezing pills in, I scattered in some bewildering powder. In order to not attract the phoenix’s attention, I scattered them on the wild grass.

“The bewildering powder had always been colorless and possessed a mild smell. With the attraction of the freezing pills, on top of the scent numbing effect, the phoenix would not be able to smell even if i was close.

“Naturally, it would not be as alert as before. The phoenix is still a spring solidifying realm beast. A small amount of bewildering powder won’t have much of an effect, so I quietly waited in the buffer.

Advertisement

“I only dared to walk in after over half an hour. When I entered the illusory realm, the phoenix immediately rushed at me when it noticed me. Yet, it had already inhaled a lot of bewildering powder, so it did not have the strength to attack at all.

“I took advantage of its weakness to rush to the Green Phoenix Fruit and got myself one,”

As he said that, he shook the Green Phoenix Fruit in his hand. He had explained so much that anyone who still could not understand was probably mentally challenged.

In truth, the method was not that difficult, but the rest of them had not thought about it at all. They even neglected a very important problem. After all, they had not been in Grand Yorn Mountain that much compared to Bradley.

Advertisement

Bradley understood the habits of beasts very well. Even though they knew that beasts could be intelligent, they habitually ignored the fact. They thought of the phoenix as some wild animal that only knew how to kill. That was the reason for their failure!

Claude grumbled, “Why didn’t I think of that!”

Bradley could not help but laugh coldly when he heard that, “I managed to think of that method so quickly purely because of my experiences in Grand Yorn Mountain.

“Even if I had people protecting me, I still encountered various dangers. These beasts are all cunning. I had the protection of the buffer and the phoenix was chained.

“I just needed some small tricks to get it. It’s just that the rest of you are too dumb. That’s the only reason you felt that this stage is too hard!”

After Bradley said that, the other participants all turned red in their ears. Even if they did not like it, they still could not find any retort to Bradley. That was because they really were too dumb if anyone looked at it from Bradley’s shoes.

After a moment, Benedict suddenly said, “What method do you think Jackie will use? Could he end up using the same method as Bradley? Utilizing the fact that phoenixes like cold, and putting poison in it to get the Green Phoenix Fruit!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2716 - 2720

Chapter 2716

Bradley's lips twisted to a frown before they formed a cold smile. " Jackie doesn't have what it takes. I was only able to think of this method because I encountered beasts on Grand Yorn Mountain, and for quite an extended period at that.

"Just think about yourselves, and you'll be able to guess how Jackie is thinking. He'd only been on Grand Yorn Mountain for two or three days, and he hasn't had the chance to change his views at all. Whatever he's going to do next will only be what you're capable of, more or less," spoke Bradley, sounding so sure and firm in his words that none rebuked him.

They thought Bradley was making sense, anyway.

If Jackie had spent a lot of time in Grand Yorn Mountain like Bradley had and knew how cunning the beasts there were, he would be able to obtain a green Phoenix Fruit like Bradley had.

Conrad smiled and said, "I think he'd be more or less like us, just using a few pills with cold attributes, or maybe a few treasures to attract the phoenix's attention.

"Nonetheless, the phoenix is a beast seasoned with experience, and it won't be baited with just that. Everything he does will be useless. His result will ultimately be like ours, and he'll return empty handed."

Advertisement

Elder Maurice frowned when he heard that, coldly glancing at Conrad, but he said nothing in the end. The elder even had to admit that Conrad…made sense.

After all, only Bradley had dwelled at Grand Yorn Mountain for a significant period, and only then had Bradley been able to figure out a method. Jackie, on the other hand, did not have Bradley's experience and naturally would not figure out the method.

Even if Jackie had something similar to Bradley in mind, the beast would naturally be more guarded after what Bradley did and would no longer fall prey to Jackie's actions if he imitated Bradley.

Elder Maurice was frustrated that his mind had not worked quickly enough. It had taken him this long to realize something was wrong. If he had thought about it earlier, he would not have allowed Master Forrest to arrange things like this.

Advertisement

Jackie should have been the first to enter.

The phoenix would not have been as alert as it was already, and Jackie would have the highest chance of success!

Alas, it was all too late,

Jameson raised an eyebrow and said,

“Regardless, Jackie was overconfident. All of us more or less have some self-confidence,

but we would all wait in the buffer for a while for the sake of safety, composing ourselves first before hiding and moving accordingly.

” Jackie, on the other hand, just rushed without a care in the world and, because of that, is locking eyes with the phoenix right now. His thoughts truly boggle me!”

Everyone focused on Jackie, who merely stood still before the phoenix after he finished. He crossed his arms as if he was thinking about something, but he did not move immediately.

His behavior merely confused everyone else even more.

Advertisement

Conrad burst into cackles. “I think he’s starting to regret things! Everyone’s naturally more excited when they get in. He just wanted to deal with the phoenix as soon as possible.

“He rushed in without a care in the world and now he’s in a panic, not knowing what

to do. Just look at how he’s just staring at the beast!”

Chapter 2717
The others nodded in agreement and even sympathized with Jackie.

Meanwhile, Bradley’s lips curled into a cold smile as he stared at Jackie’s figure, able to guess what he was thinking of-conflict and agony.

Jackie seemed plagued with worry as he stared at the phoenix in the illusory array.

He looked at the phoenix, then at the five remaining fruits before he silently calculated what the fruits would be worth.

He did not know if he would be able to take those fruits after he took them, and if Sky Peak Pavilion would keep them for themselves.

Furthermore, the phoenix was a spring solidifying realm beast, its core capable of

fetching a pretty price. Other than the tournament, earning spirit crystals was the only thing in Jackie's mind.

Spirit crystals were his biggest motivation.

Despite that, however, Jackie was worried that Sky Peak Pavilion would stop him from bringing it back. The thought echoed in his mind as he thought about it a few times, and he grew more conflicted every second.

He did not care about how much time had passed. So long as he beat Bradley's record, Phoenix Valley would be able to secure their victory. Not that long had passed at that point, too; he had much time to spare in the limit he set for himself.

After deliberating things, Jackie decided to turn and walk toward the barrier.

Everyone in the barrier suddenly widened their eyes in confusion when they saw Jackie walking over. Was Conrad right after all?

Did Jackie regret his decision and wanted to return?

After entering the buffer, the illusion disappeared, revealing the scenery of the actual world to Jackie. Seeing everyone's expressions, Jackie did not feel like anything was strange at all. After all, they did not understand how he worked.

Master Forrest smiled as he spoke, albeit with contempt, "Why have you returned? Did you not figure out a good plan? Are you back here to think about another plan? Perhaps you were just too impulsive and shouldn't have rushed out."

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not caring for Master Forrest's mockery at all. He did not even look at Elder Maurice before he cleared his throat and said, "If I get all five Green Phoenix Fruits, will they all be mine?"

The moment he said that, everyone was stunned. They looked at Jackie with widened eyes, speechless.

"What is he saying?" blurted Claude.

Seeing everyone's reaction, Jackie frowned before he repeated his words.

Master Forrest's lips twitched. "What did you say? You want all five Green Phoenix Fruits, and you'll want to take them all? Am I hearing things correctly?"

Jackie nodded. “Yes, I came back to ask you this. If I got all five Green Phoenix Fruits, will they all be mine? After all, I’m the last participant, and no one else will be taking part.”

Master Forrest’s lips twitched, finding himself at a bit of a loss. He had thought that Jackie returned because Jackie did not know what to do, but he never expected this to be why Jackie returned!

Chapter 2718
What fueled Jackie to even think he could get a Green Phoenix Fruit and even claim the remaining ones for himself? Jackie’s way of thinking was too much for a regular person to comprehend!

Bradley snorted, mockingly saying, “Do you even realize what you’re saying?”

Jackie shrugged. “Of course I know what I’m saying, but it’s more important if you lot understand what I said. I don’t need to repeat my question; you just need to answer it.”

He did not want to waste time nor did he want to bother with everyone.

It was only then did Master Forrest conclude Jackie was socially inept, or something of the sort. Otherwise, Jackie would never have asked such a question.

If Master Forrest thought that Jackie was that capable, he would never have agreed to letting Jackie have all five Green Phoenix Fruits.

Nonetheless, Master Forrest nodded generously. “Alright, I agree. As long as you can get those five Green Phoenix Fruits, they’ll all be yours!”

Jackie sighed in relief upon hearing that, but he only took a breather for a moment. He had not returned to the buffer for that alone.

Jackie continued, “If I end up using too much force and the phoenix dies, I shouldn’t have to take responsibility, right? After all, the goal of this round is to collect the Green

Phoenix Fruits by any means necessary. As long as I get the fruits, I’ll have succeeded. Killing the phoenix should be considered a method, yes?”

Just like before, confusion swept the people present at Jackie’s question. Even Elder

Maurice could not stop himself from frowning. He looked at Jackie speechlessly, not knowing what game Jackie was trying to play or why Jackie had returned.

Master Forrest’s lips twitched as he looked at Jackie incredulously. “Didn’t I mention this before? As long as you can obtain the Green Phoenix Fruit, it doesn’t matter what method you use. As long as you can get it, you will pass.

“I’ve also said that it doesn’t matter what method you use. Naturally, it means you’re allowed to go ham and kill the phoenix.

“Hearing this question, are you planning on fighting the phoenix? Let me remind you: the phoenix isn’t a beast with a warm temperament. If you provoke it, it’ll try and kill you, even putting its life on the line. Don’t end up losing yourself for your results!”

Jackie nodded before holding his head up high. “Don’t worry, that won’t happen.”

With that, Jackie turned and walked back into the illusory realm, leaving everyone speechless behind him.

Benedict could not help but say, “What is he trying to do? Jackie looks so desperate to me right now. Is he going to just try to poison the phoenix?

“The phoenix’s intellect level doesn’t matter. It won’t just hide if it sees someone trying to poison it. I think that Jackie’s just panicking at this point, trying every single method he can.”

Conrad nodded thoughtfully. ” Jackie has already given up, I think. I genuinely don’t know what he’s up to.”

Meanwhile, Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne looked at Jackie in worry, wondering what Jackie wanted to do. They were also trying to guess what method Jackie would use to get the Green Phoenix Fruits.

They worried he would be injured if he used too intense of a method. To the two of them, Jackie was already someone who meant something much more to Phoenix Valley. If Jackie ended up with an injury that he could not recover from, Phoenix Valley might consider them both as criminals.

Chapter 2719
After all, Jackie was far too talented. Even if he was in the inner valley, he would be able to scale up the ranks easily. Losing the tournament would already be a big crime, and if they failed to protect Jackie, their punishments would no doubt multiply.

Elder Maurice could not help but shudder at the thought as he turned to look at Mr. Zayne, who was already staring at him. They could see the helplessness in each other’s eyes.

At that moment, Claude raised his voice, to which everyone heard him say, “Wait, what? What’s he doing? He pulled out his weapon!”

All eyes turned sharply in Jackie’s direction soon after. At that moment, he had already retrieved his gray sword from Mustard Seed and held it tightly by the hilt.

Those plans that they were all talking about could really have worked, but Jackie did not need them. The phoenix was just an early stage spring solidifying realm beast; it was not worth much of his attention and effort.

He held his sword in his right hand as his left hand constantly moved, forming seal after seal. A streak of light in gray formed in the air as Soul Swords were formed, one at a time.

In the blink of an eye, everyone watched as 75 Soul Swords were formed in the air. Everyone knew what Jackie was planning.

He was actually planning on facing a spring solidifying realm beast head-on. Was he crazy?!

“I think he’s run out of options,” blurted Claude. “He’s trying to fight a spring solidifying realm beast? He’s crazy! An innate stage fighter is trying to fight a spring solidifying realm beast? Does he think he’s a master martial artist?”

Since Jackie had deliberately left behind his internal injuries, none of them managed to see how strong he was. However, in their eyes, it was not important at all.

After all, Jackie appeared to everyone as an alchemist, and any warrior who decided to embark on the path of an alchemist would never be establishing their roots in martial prowess. Furthermore, his age was a limit, so he would only be at the middle stage of the innate level at most.

For a warrior who was at the middle stage of the innate realm at most to face a spring solidifying realm beast head-on was an insurmountable hurdle since the warrior would not be able to have any strong skills and abilities.

This summed up to one thing: Jackie practically signed his death wish.

Master Forrest took a deep breath as he incredulously remarked, “Does he not want

to live anymore? Or, is he that confident that he can beat a spring solidifying realm beast?”

Even Master Forrest and Bradley were confused by Jackie’s action. Something had to be wrong with Jackie’s mind, they thought -bad enough that he would think of fighting a spring solidifying realm beast!

It was like Jackie wanted to die that badly!

Sky Peak Pavilion was not the only party dumbfounded at the turn of events.

Even Elder Maurice gaped at the sight, his entire body trembling at the sight. That was the moment he felt the most conflicted in his entire life.

He had the urge to pull Jackie out at that moment, yet he was scared that Jackie had his own plans. It might all just be a ruse to attract the phoenix's attention for Jackie's other plans.

If he just rushed in, he might disrupt Jackie's plans and lead to Phoenix Valley's failure.

However, if Jackie truly planned on fighting the phoenix and he lost control of the situation, he could be killed by any stray talons. If that happened, they would not be able to walk away unscathed!

Even Mr. Zayne was beginning to lose his composure.

Chapter 2720
Mr. Zayne turned to look at Elder Maurice with a concerned look on his face, "What do we do? What is Jackie trying to do? What kind of plan does he have?! I'm not so sure about this anymore. He's facing a spring solidifying realm beast here!

"In the eyes of a spring solidifying realm beast, Jackie is just an oversized ant at the innate level, and he won't be able to take a single blow if he just rushes up to the best! S-Should we go and pull him out of there?"

Mr. Zayne knew that they would automatically lose if he did that, but a loss was a loss. If Jackie died in this event, the punishment that awaited them would be unimaginably harsh when they returned. They might even end up suffering corporal punishment apart from being demoted!

The moment he thought of the punishment he could get, Mr. Zayne automatically shuddered, mentally prepared to blame Jackie for everything.

Elder Maurice thought for a long time before he shook his head. "I trust in Jackie; he's a very prepared person after all. Don't you remember? All of us doubted him during the first stage, but he'd never been that emotional.

"Someone like him does everything incredibly seriously. If we just rush in like that, we'd just ruin his plans. We have to be confident in him, come what may!"

Mr. Zayne nodded, feeling like he was practically forced to think in such a way. He silently prayed for Jackie, hoping that he would not just dive in for a fight. That would just kill him!

Jackie waved, condensing the 75 Soul Swords into a massive Soul Sword that floated in front of him.

The massive Soul Sword glowed a dark

color, but it suddenly turned into dots of light in a flash. It merged into the gray sword in Jackie's right hand. At that moment, Jackie was already almost at the perfect stage of Destroying the Void.

As long as Jackie managed to condense the final 25 Soul Swords, he would be able to reach 100 Soul Swords, the strongest state of Destroying the Void. An ultimate god level technique was something no one could easily contend against.

Only the best disciples of eighth or ninth – grade clans would be able to train in techniques of that level at this age.

At that moment, the phoenix was aroused from its lethargic state, rising from the ground. As it stood, it measured up to about 9 meters tall, and compared to the beast, Jackie was like a rat facing a cat.

The phoenix roared as its disdain-filled eyes stared right at Jackie. While it might not be as sharp as a human, it was still perceptive in its own right.

Even though it could not see how strong Jackie was, it had seen the other participants who had entered, as well as their level of capabilities. With that, the phoenix had lumped Jackie into the same level as them and saw him merely as an ant at the innate level.

The phoenix felt incredibly amused that the ant dared to raise a weapon against itself. The cry it let out right after might have been due to how amused it felt as it stared at Jackie.

It raised its head arrogantly and lengthened its claws, but Jackie did not even blink at the phoenix's reaction. His lips curled upward as he aimed his sword right at the phoenix's head.

Under everyone's widened eyes, he shot forward like a cannonball at the phoenix.

Everyone saw the scene, and their hearts started to beat rapidly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2721 - 2725

Chapter 2721

“Has Jackie lost his mind? He’s insane right now, he has to be, for trying to take on that phoenix! Does he think he can kill a spring solidifying realm beast?”

“He’s done for… Jackie won’t survive this at all! He was way too cocky in wanting to face a spring solidifying realm beast, even if he’s a credible alchemist!”

Bradley snorted at this. Jackie, to him, was a dead man already, he could never survive going up against a phoenix. Forget surviving the encounter, Jackie would just die with the swipe of a talon!

Elder Maurice was near tears at this point, overridden with anxiety. He was close to rushing in to save Jackie.

The deacons that were standing guard, meanwhile, were all stunned as well. They were responsible for ensuring the participants’ safety, which meant that they would be liable if anything happened to Jackie. However, Jackie’s actions exceeded their expectations.

He actively chose to go toward the beast!

Advertisement

Alas, Jackie cared not what the others were thinking, he focused solely on the phoenix before him. In just a flash, he was less than a meter from it.

The black sword in his hand swung forward, just in time as the phoenix swung its sharp talons. In the eyes of the phoenix was immense disdain, feeling like Jackie was too desperate to meet his maker.

One swipe, and that man was done for, the phoenix knew that much!

A second later, the phoenix’s talon clashed against Jackie’s sword, and, in the process, Breaking the Void staggeringly destroyed its claw. The gray energy let out an enormous shockwave, turning into a rotting power that sliced the phoenix’s talon in two. The wound visibly turned black at a rapid pace, bubbling as if it was poison.

Advertisement

The phoenix cried out in immense pain, no longer sounding prideful of itself. The cry it emitted this time was of pure agony due to the pain. The phoenix had been too sure of itself. It had thought that it would be able to kill Jackie with just a talon, but in a surprising turn of events, its talon had been the one that was ripped into two in the end.

With that, the part that was cut off fell onto the grass as well.

Jackie chuckled darkly. This phoenix was the most foolish beast he had ever met. It was far too arrogant, thinking that everyone else was stupid.

Why and how would Jackie dare step up against itself if he was not a capable person? He did not have a death wish, of course!

Jackie was already in the same realm as the beast and had already broken into the spring solidifying realm days ago. On top of that, not only did he have an upper ultimate god technique in his arsenal, but Destroying the Void was also already above the second stage. Jackie would even dare to face a late stage spring solidifying realm beast, let alone one at an early stage.

The beast finally realized its error at that moment, and it no longer wanted to prolong the battle as it began to back away despite the special chain that restrained the beast. Fortunately, it was long enough that it granted the phoenix much room to back up.

The phoenix, at that very moment, wanted nothing more than to avoid confronting such a powerful person… Yet Jackie would not give it a chance to do so.

Chapter 2722
After all, the core of a phoenix would be worth quite a lot.

Jackie activated the laws of space as he flickered before the phoenix, much to the phoenix's despair.

Advertisement

Although desperate, the phoenix still had pride in itself. Despite knowing that it could die in Jackie's hands, the beast refused to admit defeat or beg for mercy. With that, the phoenix used up every bit of its power to use its natural-born skill, ready to gamble on its own life just to potentially injure Jackie.

The phoenix's eyes suddenly glowed in an icy-blue color as cold energy condensed from its stomach. It suddenly opened its mouth as it shot out an immense cold energy at Jackie. The cold energy was incredibly unique, so much so that the surrounding temperature plummeted harshly when it shot out the energy. If one were to look closer, however, the cold energy looked like it was blue flames instead.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, immediately recognizing the attack as the phoenix's natural-born skill, the Ice Flame. He let out a smile, not surprised by this act at all. He activated Destroying the Voice once more, and the black energy formed into a blade as it clashed against the phoenix's Ice Flame.

Everyone heard a clash, and Ice Flame was split into two by Destroying the Void. Ice Flame exploded in waves, dispersing before it could even graze Jackie.

The pitch-black aura was raring to go still, even after destroying Ice Flame. It did not slow down as it headed right for the phoenix's head. The phoenix let out an ear-piercing cry that reverberated across the air.

The pain of a soul was not something a human or beast could withstand. The phoenix itself was already far weaker than Jackie in the first place, and its cry of agony did not last that long before it collapsed soundlessly. Its body convulsed and slowly stopped moving. The phoenix's blue eyes had lost their light, and it died.

Jackie merely cocked an eyebrow, his expression barely changing. Even as he watched the phoenix breathing its last, he calmly retrieved a dagger from Mustard Seed and slashed at the phoenix's stomach. With a slash, the beast's faint blue blood stained the grass. Jackie did not even blink as he reached out into the phoenix's stomach for a moment. With a twist of his hand, the faint blue core was in Jackie's hands.

Everyone had seen what happened, and everyone practically lost their minds with widened eyes and gaping mouths. It was as if they had seen a ghost!

Even Master Forrest had nothing to say.

Everyone fell silent. Even the deacons that were in hiding for protection were all dumbfounded, and they were stuck in a flabbergasted state from the moment Jackie slashed at the phoenix's talons.

None of them could escape their deep shock.

It took a long time before Bradley broke the silence, blurting, "Am I seeing things? The phoenix lost to Jackie?! I'm probably seeing things… This is all an illusion!"

As he said that, Bradley still maintained his earlier expression, his eyes nearly popping out of their sockets. He had never lost his composure so much before. It was mainly because what had happened was far too unbelievable. It was something that he would not have even dreamed of because it was too absurd.

Master Forrest's lips twitched. "This has to be an illusion, yes! What alchemist is this formidable? Isn't this guy just at the innate level? How could an innate level warrior torture a spring solidifying realm beast to death?!"

Chapter 2723
"The phoenix was no match for him at all… That brat managed to kill a phoenix so easily that it died in just two moves! This is far too absurd!"

Everyone felt their hearts quivering upon hearing Master Forrest's words.

It truly was far too absurd. If they had not witnessed it firsthand, they would never have believed it happened. They were not able to see Jackie's skills up until this very

moment. However, from what Jackie had shown, he had already broken through the spring solidifying realm.

Was he not an alchemist?

When could alchemists ever walk so far as a martial artist, or have that much talent?

Before Jackie entered, everyone knew of Jackie's physical age. In a limited time, not only did Jackie become so accomplished in alchemy, but even his martial arts did not fall behind. It was far too inconceivable. Jackie's results needed immense amounts of talent.

Even Elder Maurice could not believe what he had seen. He genuinely thought Jackie would perish in that fight, knowing that the phoenix was in the spring solidifying realm. However, everything that had happened after exceeded his assumptions.

After a long time, Elder Maurice suddenly turned to look at Mr. Zayne, who also shared his shocked expression. It was safe to say that he, too, did not know Jackie had that skill.

Elder Maurice grabbed Mr. Zayne's arm. "You were the one who brought Jackie into Phoenix Valley back then. Do you not know anything about him at all?"

Mr. Zayne gulped, his face etched with conflict and shock. He smiled bitterly and said, "I had thought that I understood him quite well, but I stand corrected. I had judged Jackie by my own metrics. I really never expected him to be so strong of a fighter. With his skills, he'd be a top-tier disciple even among the warriors of the outer valley."

Bradley's eyes glinted with derangement as he snarled, "He's not an alchemist; he can't be! If he's an alchemist, then something is wrong somewhere, believe it. There's definitely something wrong with him!"

Before this, Bradley's 'meltdowns' were more due to him acting out of bitterness, but it was genuine at this moment, seeing as Jackie constantly one-upped him every time in every shape and form.

He could not accept it at all.

Master Forrest frowned. Even he knew that Bradley could no longer stand it. In truth, he was already at rock bottom as well, but he could not allow Bradley's meltdown to regress into a much darker state.

Master Forrest took a deep breath. "Calm down. Haven't you heard that there's always a mountain higher? Even if you go completely crazy, you can't overturn his results."

Those words seemed to be a splash of cold water upon Bradley's frantic heart. He froze as both of his hands shook slightly. He knew that he had lost his composure, but he could not possibly compose himself.

It was not just Bradley, all of the participants were in a similar state as well after seeing Jackie's results. They initially had better control over their mental state, but the aftermath of Jackie's short-lived battle with the phoenix sent them into a frenzy of discussions as well after Bradley lost control.

Claude raised his voice, saying, "Now I'm wondering if I'm dreaming. Jackie is already at the spring solidifying realm. No wonder I could never see how strong he was… He purposely hid his skills from us!"

Chapter 2724
Conrad was about to die from jealousy, deeply envious of all of Jackie's accomplishments. Jackie was not just better at alchemy than everyone else, but he was even an accomplished fighter.

God truly played favorites, and Jackie was the apple of his eye. He seemed like a speck of insignificant dust, while Jackie was akin to the brightest sun in the sky.

Conrad was in an incredibly unstable mood at that moment. In his arduously bitter state, he spoke, "Did he hide his strength to surprise everyone? I got to hand it to him, he did it. Our jaws are about to hit the ground. You know, that'd be ridiculous if he did."

Elder Maurice heard that and immediately retorted, "Don't speak nonsense just because you're skill-less. Jackie hid his strength, but he didn't know what the contents of the tournament would be! He didn't know he'd be facing a phoenix. The proof is in the pudding, and you can try all you want to smear Jackie, but it's pointless!"

Conrad's face reddened at that. He knew that the words he said earlier were twisting the truth, but he still could not stop himself. He had been berated in front of everyone and felt incredibly embarrassed.

Meanwhile, Master Forrest coldly looked at Conrad. If word about what happened here were to spread, everyone would think that Sky Peak Pavilion were sore losers, and they even tried to smear their opponents. It was definitely not a good look.

Conrad immediately shut his mouth upon noticing Master Forrest's sharp gaze on him, not daring to say anything.

At that moment, Jackie had obtained five Green Phoenix Fruits and was walking toward everyone with the phoenix core as well. When he left the illusion and went into the buffer, he immediately saw everyone within the buffer looking at him with complicated expressions.

Elder Maurice was in no rush to praise Jackie. He merely looked at Jackie with a measuring expression as though he was an incomparable treasure.

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly, not caring about how everyone was looking at him. He merely opened up his palm in front of Master Forrest. "You agreed to this before. These are all mine."

Jackie's words caused Master Forrest's face to sour. Back then, he had thought that Jackie was just bragging when he said all that. Alas, it seemed like Jackie had said all of that because he knew how confident he was in himself and his skills.

With that in mind, Master Forrest felt a little depressed. Everything he had said came back to haunt him fervently, and he felt like an utter fool. His body stiffened, almost losing his composure. After calming himself down, he finally mustered a smile… One that looked incredibly forced and ugly.

"I have said that, yes, and I'm a man of my word. Everything there is yours. "

Jackie nodded. With these words, everything in his hands was his for sure. He had thought that the tournament would have just been a way for him to escape danger, but he had actually won himself a reputation and a small fortune.

After placing everything in Mustard Seed, Jackie was noticeably much happier. In contrast, however, everyone else looked much more tormented.

Chapter 2725
Master Forrest should have announced the results of the tournament at this point, but he was far too depressed.

The tournament was a pivotal event, and not only did it involve the reputation of their clan, but other benefits were at stake as well.

Master Forrest had thought that victory was already assured, but he did not expect a dark horse to throw his plans into disarray. He had only managed to win one out of three rounds! He did not know what to tell his higher-ups at all, and he could already see the miserable fate that would follow.

Regardless, he could not get too emotional at that moment. He had fallen silent for far too long, and Jackie did not want to remain there for that long anymore.

When the spectators did not say anything, Jackie turned around and faced Master Forrest. "Shouldn't you be announcing the results? I believe I didn't use up that much time this round."

Master Forrest bitterly closed his eyes and, after keeping his silence, announced, “The third round has ended with Phoenix Valley’s victory. Phoenix Valley won this tournament two out of three.”

This announcement caused everyone present to feel a wave of emotional shifts.

Claude and Benedict felt like their experiences the past few days had been far too exciting, filled with ups and downs. The two of them had thought they would be the main pillars of the tournament, that Jackie would definitely drag them down, but they never expected the truth would end up being the complete opposite.

In the end, they were both the trash bags of the group. They should have been happy about the final results. After all, they would have been given harsher punishments when they got back. However, Jackie’s results have been far too good, and compared to him, they were mere garbage. They had not been useful at all throughout the tournament!

Despite the humiliation they both felt, Sky Peak Pavilion’s representatives were in even greater pain. They had thought that they would win the tournament, but they had lost terribly. Great punishments were sure to await them, and even Bradley would not be able to avoid punishment.

Master Forrest would take the brunt of the punishment. Even his position probably would not be guaranteed. The result was both expected and unexpected for Elder Maurice and Mr. Zayne. The two of them had complicated feelings as well. However, they could not say anything at that moment.

The Elder Hall in Phoenix Valley was a picture of silence. Normally, many low-leveled alchemists entered and exited the Elder Hall. Even though it was called the Elder Hall, its practical use was as an education center for low-leveled alchemists.

That day, the Elder Hall finally lived up to its name. At that moment, there were seven chairs in the hall, and there was an elder on each one.

From their attire, it was clear that the ones in the middle were from the inner valley. Four outer valley elders sat by the two sides. It was clear who held the higher position by where they sat. The seven elders had gathered there for the sake of Sky Peak Pavilion and Phoenix Valley‘s tournament. The tournament had been held at Sky Peak Pavilion, and this day was the day the tournament officially ended.

Earlier, Elder Maurice had already sent news that they would return to Phoenix Valley in about half an hour. However, Elder Maurice only said that the tournament was over and that they were on the way back. He did not reveal the results of the tournament. The seven elders drank tea as they discussed the results of the tournament, and all of them believed that their chances of winning were safely high. After all, none of them thought anything of Sky Peak Pavilion.

Sky Peak Pavilion might be an eighth-grade clan, but they never prioritized cultivating alchemists. Even if only alchemists from the outer valley had been sent this time, they were still the best of the outer valley.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2726

Chapter 2726
Apart from Elder Baggins and Elder Eliot, the others looked much at ease.

Elder Eliot sipped at his tea, frowning in concern, which did not go unnoticed by Elder Baggins. Even though Elder Eliot did not say why he was concerned, it was obvious from a glance.

Elder Baggins sighed in helplessness. “Rick had crossed the line this time. It’s not the first time he’s incorporated his grudges into official matters.

“We can ignore what happened before since it didn’t cause any trouble, but I can’t believe he actually got worse. He tried to cause trouble in such an important tournament! Is he not worried that something detrimental could happen? Can he bear the consequences?”

Elder Elliot nodded in agreement. “Doesn’t he know how important the tournament is?

It involves the interests of the Whirling World! Both the inner and outer valley elders all know how important this tournament is, yet he threw all caution out of the window and just had to recommend Jackie to participate!

Advertisement

“Even if Jackie is talented, he’s just a sixth grade alchemist. If anything happens, it won’t just cause us to lose out on a portion of the Whirling World’s resources; it’ll humiliate us greatly!

“Everyone knows that Phoenix Valley is the foundation of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. We’ve cultivated so many alchemists and accepted many alchemic masters. If we lose to Sky Peak Pavilion just like that, Phoenix Valley’s reputation will go down the drain if the truth is spread. We won’t be able to recruit more alchemists when that happens, too!

“That chain reaction will impact us.”

“Anyone can tell what sort of predicament we’d be in if we lost the tournament, yet it still wasn’t enough to change his mind. The only thing he’s cared about this whole time is to quench his thirst for vengeance without bothering to look at the bigger picture!”

Advertisement

Elder Eliot had always been a straight-laced person, strictly loyal to Phoenix Valley and always placing the Valley’s best interests in mind. Of course, most of the elders were

like that as well. Their benefits would only be assured if Phoenix Valley's position remained at its current position.

Alas, some elders did not view Phoenix Valley that importantly, instead prioritizing themselves and their revenge.

Elder Eliot grew angrier at the thought, while Elder Baggins was frustrated at Rick.

Usually, Elder Eliot and Elder Baggins would never refer to Elder Rick without his

title, but such respect was disregarded due to the antics he had dished out.

Before, Rick had helped Harold and Johnson for the benefits he would gain for himself, but he never expected Jackie would have something up his sleeves. In the end, Rick's plan backfired.

Rick, a man who had always been petty, held a grudge against Jackie because of that.

Elder Baggins and Elder Eliot had witnessed what happened. They knew of Rick's grudge against Jackie, yet during the final selections, the two of them had not been in Phoenix Valley as they had matters to attend to. They had no idea that Rick would persistently recommend Jackie just because of the anger he felt toward Jackie.

If they had known, they would have stopped it for the sake of Phoenix Valley. After all, Rick was just causing trouble at that point.

Advertisement

Elder Eliot looked over, noticing Rick was right in front of him, and felt even more frustrated at that.

At that moment, the one closest to Elder Eliot was Elder Baggins, and Rick sat relatively far from them, so Rick had no idea what they were talking about.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2727

Chapter 2727
Elder Eliot frowned as he muttered under his breath, "Look at how Rick can still drink his tea and chat away. It seems like he doesn't know how bad the consequences of his actions can be.

"If we lose, Phoenix Valley will be hurt gravely, be it in terms of our reputation or our offers. Things would be much harder for us in the future. We're already in a dangerous position in the first place. Do you think he's just stupid or overly selfish?"

Elder Baggins sipped his tea and grumbled, “It’s probably a mix of both. Others don’t know, but we as elders know what’s at stake here. The main rights to the Whirling World have always been in the hands of us and the Unbreaking Pavilion.

“The only reason Sky Peak Pavilion is competing with us is to gain more benefits in the Whirling World. If we lose, we’d just be giving Sky Peak Pavilion a piece of what’s ours for no reason.

“Worse still, our reputation will crumble, too! Anyone with half a brain would understand how important this is, but Rick doesn’t seem to care at all. He’d do anything to get rid of Jackie, not bothering to think things through, even using this tournament! It’s obvious that he’s aggressively vain!”

Elder Eliot had a bitter look on his face as he asked, “Does he not know that we’ll find the root cause of the loss if he loses in the tournament? The merit logs clearly wrote that he was the one who recommended Jackie. Rick wouldn’t be able to escape it. Does he think he won’t be held responsible?”

Advertisement

Elder Baggins raised an eyebrow and snorted. “He’s not that stupid; he knows that he’ll have to take responsibility. He’s being this relaxed, drinking his tea and chatting his minutes away, probably because he doesn’t think we’ll lose at all.

“If the final result is a win, he won’t be punished. Instead, Jackie will look like he dragged down everyone. Jackie would be punished, even if they won the tournament. Elder Maurice, who brought them to Sky Peak Pavilion, would start to hate Jackie because Jackie had failed the team.

“The merit logs will make Jackie’s bad result seem even worse, and he might even be kicked out of Phoenix Valley because of this.

“Rick would’ve won.”

Advertisement

Hearing that, Elder Eliot’s scowl deepened. The others did not know, but Elder Eliot had witnessed first-hand Jackie’s talent and skill. If Jackie was punished because of this, it would be quite a big blow to Jackie.

Phoenix Valley might actually lose an incredibly rare master because of it.

Elder Eliot took a deep breath. “What do you think Elder Maurice will write in the merit logs?”

The merit logs were something Phoenix Valley had specifically to determine rewards and punishments. As long as one participated in a tournament, be it within Phoenix Valley or not, the person hosting the tournament or the one in charge of the team would write everything in the merit log after the tournament.

It would detail the happenings of the tournament as well as each person's contributions, and the higher-ups of Phoenix Valley would then use the information on the merit log to determine whether to reward or punish people.

Of course, those who performed exceptionally would be blessed accordingly; those who failed the valley would be punished.

Elder Eliot had a decent relationship with Elder Baggins and Elder Maurice, and he knew how Elder Maurice was. If Jackie truly had failed the team, Elder Maurice would be very critical toward him, which would ultimately lead to Jackie's punishment, affecting his growth.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2728

Chapter 2728
Elder Eliot had thought that it would not take long for Jackie to get tested for the inner valley.

If Jackie passed the test, he would become an inner-valley alchemist. He would no doubt become an elder in the future, given his capabilities and talents. Alas, such ideals might not be certain after this hurdle.

Elder Maurice could not help but feel a sense of pity, sighing in the process.

He was silent for a long time before he said, "I still don't understand something. Since this tournament is so important, why didn't we use the alchemists of the inner valley?

"Even though the outer valley's alchemists are no weaker than the alchemists inside, I'm just worried that anything unexpected could happen. I'd use inner valley alchemists if it were up to me..

"It might look like overkill, but it's better to be a hundred people, just to be certain. It's nothing to be embarrassed about, really."

Advertisement

Elder Baggins raised an eyebrow as he glanced at Elder Eliot. He sighed lightly as he responded in exasperation, "Do you think we don't want to use the inner valley alchemists? Do you think Sky Peak Pavilion is foolish?

“What’s the point of this tournament if we used alchemists of the inner valley? Sky Peak Pavilion might as well just pay us and be done with it.

“Of course, we want to use our inner valley alchemists. We even talked about it at Sky Peak Pavilion. However, they know about the structure within Phoenix Valley. The outer valley and inner valley are two different worlds.

“Because of this, the higher-ups of Sky Peak Pavilion were adamantly against it.

Advertisement

They said that there was nothing to discuss if we used inner valley alchemists. After much debate and discussion, we were forced to use outer valley alchemists.”

Elder Baggins’ words surprised Elder Eliot. He put his teacup down as he straightened his back, frowning.

“That makes sense, but why didn’t I know about this before? What’s the point of keeping this news such a tight secret? I thought we were just trying to show off, which is why I’ve complained about sending the outer valley alchemists to participate.”

Elder Baggins let out a helpless laugh. “You’re simplifying things too much. We can’t use the inner valley lately, either, or our rivals will catch on. It might cause even more problems.

“I’m a little concerned with Claude and Benedict, but there’s nothing much we can do about it.

“There are no other candidates we can choose. Most of the good sprouts have all been chosen by the inner valley, and everyone left is flawed.”

Elder Eliot nodded. If he knew something like this would happen, he would have left a few good students behind. At the very least, they would have been able to deal with the tournament easily.

Elder Eliot sighed before he suddenly looked up at Elder Baggins.

“Why do I feel like you’re not really confident in the two of them?”

Advertisement

Elder Baggins had not wanted to say it, but since the topic was brought up, he decided to be upfront about it.

“I’m quite worried, to be honest,” he replied. “I keep feeling like the situation seems to be progressing very well because we haven’t found the main issue. Sky Peak Pavilion

aren’t idiots, even if we don’t think they’re a threat. “Sky Peak Pavilion already had their eyes on this for a long time. If they weren’t confident, they wouldn’t have agreed to the tournament. Don’t forget that they’d be owing us a lot of things if they lost.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2729

Chapter 2729
“Are you saying they don’t know Phoenix Valley is the foundation of the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance? They obviously know that many excellent alchemists are a part of Phoenix Valley. The fact that they agreed to the tournament means that they’re prepared!”

Hearing that, Elder Eliot’s expression darkened, agreeing with Elder Baggins’ point. Everything had happened far too quickly, and the negotiations went well without a hitch.

With the problems Phoenix Valley had been going through, they did not care about the details.

Thinking of this, he started to feel like everything before them was more than just a smooth-sailing event but a massive trap prepared by someone else instead, just waiting for them to fall into.

With that in mind, Elder Eliot became even more unsettled.

Elder Baggins took a deep breath as he turned to look at Elder Turner, who held the highest position among the seven elders and was Phoenix Valley’s decision-maker.

Advertisement

The elder was sipping tea as he listened to the elders around him, smiling as he spoke. Compared to the surrounding elders, his expression seemed more refined and

solemn.

Looking at him closer, they noticed how furrowed his eyebrows were, as though he was thinking of something that plagued him. Seeing his expression, Elder Baggins’ heart stopped. He felt like a storm was brewing.

Right at that moment, Elder Eliot shot up from his seat and rushed toward Rick.

Advertisement

Elder Baggins hurriedly stood up when he saw Elder Eliot, reaching out to stop him,

but Elder Baggins was a step too late. Elder Eliot stormed right before Rick, who was talking to Elder Kesh about their students. with a pleased expression.

He was baffled to see Elder Eliot going to him, mainly because he could not understand why Elder Eliot seemed so furious.

Rick frowned. “Elder Eliot, did you need something?”

Elder Eliot suddenly sported a small smile as he composed himself, pointing to an area. “I have something I want to talk to you about alone, Elder Rick. Could you come with me to discuss things over there?”

Rick frowned.

He had always been a person with a keen eye. Even though Elder Eliot had composed himself quickly, Rick noticed his initial expression.

Even though he did not know why Elder Eliot seemed this enraged, it would not be anything good, that was for sure. Also, he would come off pompous if he rejected Elder Eliot’s request. Thus, even if he did not want to, he had to stand up from his seat.

Elder Baggins furrowed his eyebrows as he watched Elder Eliot walk to a corner of the hall with Rick, feeling unsettled.

Advertisement

Elder Baggins knew Elder Eliot very well. He was always a straightforward and loyal person.

Elder Eliot was liable to say something inappropriate that would instigate Rick.

Someone as vindictive as Rick would look for revenge in the future if Elder Eliot offended him.

Elder Baggins, growing concerned at the sight, decided to follow them, leaving the remaining four elders rather baffled. Nonetheless, they were intelligent folks and made no comments about this exchange.

Only Elder Kesh was somewhat invested in this situation, with sharp eyes fixed on Rick’s form for a good while.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2730

Chapter 2730
At that moment, Elder Rick, Elder Eliot, and Elder Baggins were at a corner of the hall.

No one would be able to hear them, so long as they kept their voices down.

Rick’s lips twisted to a small frown as he stared at Elder Eliot unpleasantly.

Elder Eliot had never been one to twist his words. Thus, rubbing his chin, he began, “Why are you using an important official matter for revenge? You recommended Jackie. Don’t you know how important this tournament is? We have to send our people into the Whirling World. If we lose out on a portion of the rights, do you know how much it’ll impact Phoenix Valley? If we, Phoenix Valley, lose to Sky Peak Pavilion, it’ll hurt our reputation a great deal! You’re crossing the line here!”

Elder Eliot wanted to call Rick despicable and shameless, betraying his own clan, but

he swallowed these harsh words. After all, he did not want to make a complete enemy out of Rick.

Advertisement

Alas, Elder Rick had been triggered.

Elder Baggins signed helplessly. He knew that Elder Eliot would make grating remarks, being the ever-so-honest person he always was.

Rick smiled coldly. “You’re quite hasty, Elder Eliot. Why would you think I’m trying to use official matters for vengeance? Isn’t Jackie the best choice?

“With the age restrictions and the fact that we can’t use the inner valley’s alchemists, we need to choose the best candidate from the outer valley. I felt like he was the most suitable person, so I recommended him. Taking revenge using official matters is just baseless speculation from you.”

Advertisement

Elder Eliot saw red at this accusation. “You’re still trying to twist things around! There’s no one else here. Elder Baggins and I clearly saw what happened between you and Jackie. Who wouldn’t know of your petty thoughts? If we lose this time, you won’t be able to get out of it unscathed!”

Rick snorted coldly, saying nonchalantly, “Don’t worry. We definitely won’t lose this time. Furthermore, all this ‘revenge against Jackie’ talk is all in your mind. I bear no hatred toward him, and despite the small conflict we’ve had, I never took it to heart.”

Rick was not speaking a word of truth at all at that moment, and when Elder Eliot heard these words, he disliked Rick even more.

Before this, he knew not much about Elder Rick and felt he was just somewhat of a petty person. At this point, however, Elder Rick looked more than just bitter.

He was even despicable, shameless, and selfish to the max.

Elder Eliot heaved in anger. “Why are you so sure that we’ll win this time? Even though Phoenix Valley has many prodigies, do you think it’s something Sky Peak Pavilion doesn’t know?

“If they weren’t already prepared beforehand, do you really think they would’ve agreed to the tournament? Don’t use your own judgment on everything

Before he could finish, Rick raised his hand to stop him. “Don’t speak of all this nonsense. I’m very sure of us winning because I know Claude and Benedict very well.

“Even though they’re both not qualified for the inner valley, they’re still the most talented in the outer valley. I refuse to believe that Sky Peak Pavilion can recruit prodigies better than these two, so stop worrying so much!”

Advertisement

Rick sounded all too sure of his words as though he had seen the tournament’s results, but Elder Eliot and Elder Baggins did not take him seriously. In fact, they thought Elder Rick’s words of conviction were a joke, that he was much too confident to the point of arrogance.

He assumed that prodigies would only be in Phoenix Valley, never accepted by other forces, and that attitude itself was already problematic.

Elder Eliot was so enraged that his entire body trembled.

If not for the fact that he could hold himself back, he would have rushed over and s

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2731 - 2735

Chapter 2731
Elder Eliot snorted, ignoring Elder Rick's question.

However, this did not deter Elder Rick as he pursed his lips, looking like he suddenly thought about something. "That brat is the best candidate, but at the end of the day, he's just a sixth-grade alchemist, and he'll no doubt affect the team negatively. If he does, and even if our valley wins by then, he'd receive punishment. It's quite a pity, since Jackie is quite talented."

His snide remarks sounded harsh to the ear. Elder Rick had just so firmly said that he did not have a grudge against Jackie, yet he so openly said such things! No doubt was he a bitter person, through and through.

Elder Eliot felt a surge of rage in his heart. Just as he was about to shout and curse, however, he suddenly heard footsteps coming from the distance. All of the elders looked toward the source of the noise at the same time.

They saw Elder Maurice walking in with Mr. Zayne, both seemingly calm as they headed into the hall. Far behind them were Jackie and the others. At that moment, their expressions were incredibly serious, but Elder Maurice walked in with a stern look.

At that, Elder Turner and the others started to feel worried. Before Elder Maurice even arrived at the middle of the hall, Elder Turner had rushed up to greet them.

Elder Rick, Elder Eliot, and Elder Baggins walked away from their little debate at the corner.

Elder Maurice saluted Elder Turner before passing him the golden scroll in his hand. Everyone who saw it knew that it was the merit log Elder Maurice had prepared.

Everything that happened in the tournament was recorded in the scroll, as well as the evaluations on the three participants.

Elder Rick shot Jackie a venomous look the moment he arrived at the center of the hall. At the same time, Jackie looked his way, too.

Elder Rick snorted as he looked at Jackie confidently, his expression seemingly conveying that this was the day Jackie's life would end.

Elder Eliot looked at Jackie pitifully. Even if Jackie was talented, the main forces of the tournament were still seventh-grade alchemists. No matter how good he was, Jackie was still a sixth-grade alchemist.

Jackie was fated to fail the valley, no matter how hard he tried.

“Let’s not talk about anything else for now,” said Elder Turner anxiously. “Did you win?”

Even though Elder Turner seemed calm, he was, in fact, just as anxious as Elder Eliot and Elder Baggins were. He knew very well that Sky Peak Pavilion was not a part to scoff at they must have had a trump card.

He did not know if Elder Maurice and the others would be able to deal with it. If they lost the tournament, it would be a massive blow to Phoenix Valley. It was even possible that it would cause them to lose the battle against the Unbreaking Pavilion.

Elder Maurice sighed before he looked up and said, “We won!”

Those words felt like waves that splashed everyone, and the atmosphere inside the hall suddenly got livelier at Elder Maurice’s words.

Elder Turner breathed out a sigh of relief as he happily patted Elder Maurice on his shoulder. “Very good! Very well done!”

Elder Rick smiled. It went exactly as he thought it would.

There was no way Phoenix Valley could lose in the tournament. No matter what sort of trump card Sky Peak Pavilion had, Phoenix Valley would never take it lying down!

With that in mind, he turned and looked at Elder Baggins and Elder Eliot in disdain as he whispered, “I told you you were worrying too much, but you didn’t listen to me.”

After that, Elder Rick turned to look at Jackie once more, all too excited in wanting to see Jackie receive a hefty sentence. He wanted to see Jackie groveling on his knees, begging for mercy, yet would still face the repercussions of failing the team.

Even though he had used official matters for his revenge this time, so what? He accomplished his goals!

Chapter 2732
After all, the winner of the tournament was Phoenix Valley. Even though Elder Rick was the one who recommended Jackie, Phoenix Valley suffered no losses.

Even if Elder Turner decided to pursue the matter, Elder Rick could push the responsibility aside by saying he just wanted to recommend the best candidate. Nothing could hinder him by then, but the same thing could not be said for Jackie.

Jackie had offended Elder Maurice, and with Jackie soiling the group’s results with his performance in the tournament, he would be punished. Elder Rick just needed to fan the flames by the side, and Jackie would suffer consequences he surely could not handle. He could even imagine Jackie being chased out of Phoenix Valley.

If Jackie was chased out of Phoenix Valley, Rick would have him assassinated. No matter how much potential Jackie has, he was nothing more than a vermin he disliked. He was, after all, a person that would rather kill his opponents than forgive them.

Jackie would not live another day, and he would make sure of that.

Elder Rick grinned maliciously at the thoughts and ideas that came swirling in his mind.

Elder Turner carefully read through the merit log and started to frown. It seemed like something had greatly angered him, much to Elder Rick's glee.

It had to be about Jackie's horrible performance. Elder Turner would not give Jackie any leeway when assigning the punishments, no doubt!

Thinking about that, Elder Rick looked at Jackie again.

However, he had his head down the whole time, not revealing his expression. It seemed like nothing around Jackie had anything to do with him at all. He could not help but feel his head thump at Jackie's calm expression.

At that moment, Elder Turner finally spoke, "Not bad! Still, it went much worse than I thought it would. Claude, do you have anything to say?"

Despite Elder Turner's words sounding polite, Claude's entire body shuddered.

Unlike Jackie, he had been in Phoenix Valley for a long time, and thus knew of the power Elder Turner held.

He also knew that Elder Turner was not someone who forgave any wrongdoings. Anyone who got to his seat would definitely not be simple characters.

Claude's whole body shuddered as he hurriedly knelt on the floor. "Elder Turner, I've done my best. I just never expected them to have a trump card to ruin our results!"

Claude's words caused confusion among the elders around them.

Since they won the tournament, should it not be Claude and Benedict being praised? Without the two of them leading the progress, how could they have won?

Moreover, why was Elder Turner talking to Claude in such an accusing tone?

Met with everyone's bewilderment, Elder Turner said, "I don't care about how hard you tried. I want you to tell me why you decided to go against Jackie during the tournament against Sky Peak Pavilion.

"You constantly caused trouble for Jackie, and you even helped outsiders ridicule him!"

Claude felt like a bucket of cold water had been thrown on his head, and he could not help but tremble. The consequences would come eventually, but Claude never expected

that Elder Turner would ask him something so direct in front of so many people.

If the question was purely about the results and him dragging the team down, Claude would have something to say, but Elder Turner had highlighted how he, Claude, had purposely made things difficult for Jackie.

To this, Claude suddenly had no idea what to say.

Only Elder Maurice and the others knew what Elder Turner was talking about. The other elders had their eyes widened in confusion. It was completely different from what they expected.

Chapter 2733
What? Claude helped outsiders and joined them belittling Jackie? He was just there to fill up the numbers! Should they not be talking about how Jackie had soiled the valley's good name with his poor performance? Why was Elder Turner defending Jackie against Claude?

The elders were baffled by the sudden turn of events.

Meanwhile, Elder Rick's eyes widened as he stared at Elder Turner. He wanted to say something at that moment, and he even wanted to snatch the merit log from Elder Turner to see what had actually happened during the tournament.

Nonetheless, he knew that he would be overstepping his boundaries if he did that. With Elder Turner's temper, things would not go well for him. With that, Elder Rick swallowed his words.

Claude shivered as cold sweat started to form on his head, his eyes reddening in the process. He wanted to explain himself at that moment, but he did not have the words to do so, believing it would not be appropriate. He was worried that he would just make matters worse.

With that, the hall fell into silence.

Elder Turner let out a sneer as he coldly remarked, as though he was making a final judgment of Claude. "Do you have nothing to say for yourself? Well, I wouldn't know what to say, either. After all, nothing you did was right."

Claude could hear the anger in Elder Turner's words and quickly prostrated himself. He quickly crawled toward Elder Turner, crying as he did.

“I was triggered, but only at that moment! You can’t blame me for this… Jackie was the start of it all, not watching his words carefully, and that was why I fell out with him!

“It wasn’t what I wanted. I thought he’d” Elder Turner snapped, his lips fixed into a frown, “Shut up right now! These are all excuses. You’re just trying to push responsibility away from yourself.

“Elder Maurice had tried to stop you, but you never ceased with your words, and now you don’t want to accept the consequences. Do you think you can just do whatever you want?!”

The situation had exceeded the elders’ expectations. Elder Rick had been able to listen in quietly, but Elder Turner’s words that followed flabbergasted him entirely.

Why was Elder Turner defending Jackie? Even though they did not know what happened, they were no fools. If Jackie truly had besmirched Phoenix Valley’s name with his individual result, Elder Turner would not have berated Claude in front of everyone no matter what Claude did.

Elder Turner’s attitude was clearly not trying to brush things off, but instead to seek justice for Jackie.

Elder Rick could no longer sit still and watch.

He pretended to clear his throat. “Even though I don’t know what happened, I can’t just listen on silently. Claude doesn’t strike me as a person who’d act rashly. Didn’t he say that before? Jackie was the one who started everything, which is why Claude acted the way he did.”

Elder Rick’s words were not to help Claude, but to target Jackie instead. Nonetheless, Claude felt like he found a savior with the way Elder Rick had spoken.

He raised his voice and said, “Elder Rick is right; I didn’t intentionally say all of that! I just unwittingly revealed when Jackie entered Phoenix Valley. It was just then and acted impulsively.

“If Jackie had just been friendly with me from the start, nothing like that would’ve happened! After all, we’re both on the same side, so how could I betray him?”

Chapter 2734
Elder Turner turned to glare at Rick, and this was the first time Elder Rick saw Elder Turner use such a merciless expression against him.

That look held a trace of warning as if Elder Rick would be punished on the spot if he continued to intervene.

Elder Turner's attitude shook Elder Rick of all his confidence.

Elder Turner shifted his gaze and raised his hand to call the deacons behind him.

"I don't want to listen to any more of your nonsense. You've already crossed the line with your antics. Bring him to the reflection hall. As for the punishment, I'll talk about it with the elders first."

A few deacons immediately pinned Claude down on the floor. Claude struggled as he continued to cry out, but the deacons stuffed a piece of cloth in his mouth, silencing him from the 'explanation' he tried to conjure, save only his muffled cries.

In a few moments, Claude was dragged away. Everyone else merely watched, not knowing what to say. Still, the other elders wanted to ask what Claude had done.

Why was the one punished not Jackie?

However, everyone could tell that Elder Turner was furious at that moment and thus kept their silence.

Benedict, who had been standing behind Claude, was scared, pale, and trembling entirely. Even though he did not reveal Jackie's origins in front of everyone in Sky Peak Pavilion, he could not deny that he had also joined in ridiculing Jackie.

After Claude was dealt with, he should be next.

Benedict felt like his breathing was starting to get erratic. He could faint at any moment.

Nonetheless, the one dealt with the worst mental blow was not Benedict.

It was Elder Rick.

At that moment, Jackie, who had been silent the whole time, suddenly raised his head and looked at Rick. "Elder Rick, aren't you disappointed? Why isn't Elder Turner punishing me for dragging the team down but dragging Claude away instead, you may ask?"

Elder Rick frowned and denied this comment, saying, "What are you saying? Why would I be disappointed?"

Jackie sported a small smirk as he answered, "You don't have to hide anything. Your grudge against me is quite public, so there's no need to act like it doesn't exist. I wasn't the one who wanted to participate in the tournament, but Elder Rick recommended me, insisting unceasingly."

The elder in question held his head high. “That’s right-I was the one who recommended you. After all, the tournament has a lot of requirements. There’s an age limit, as well as a restriction on outer valley alchemists. You fit all the requirements.

“Of course I recommended you. Even though you’re a sixth-grade alchemist, I believed that you wouldn’t drag the team down as long as you’re willing to.”

Jackie laughed as he looked at Elder Rick as if he was looking at a dead man. “You recommended me in hopes that Elder Turner would be punishing me. Don’t talk as if you’re thinking for the sake of Phoenix Valley. Back then, I didn’t know how important the tournament was at all.

“The moment I understood how important it is, I realized that benefits were so important for you. You don’t care about Phoenix Valley at all!”

Jackie raised his voice as he said that, revealing Elder Rick’s inner thoughts.

The elder’s face darkened as he immediately denied it.

“Don’t think you can say whatever you want! Just because you’re not punished, it doesn’t mean you can insult me so brazenly!”

Chapter 2735
However, the moment Elder Rick spoke, Elder Turner interjected, rebuking, “Jackie is right. You did all of that just to settle your grudges. After Elder Maurice investigated the matter, it’s been proven that you did everything for that reason. Rick! How dare you!”

Elder Turner’s tone sounded demanding, imposing; it was obvious just how angry he was. Elder Rick panicked at that moment, never expecting Elder Turner to point the gun at him so quickly.

The other elders were completely baffled by this, not knowing what was happening at all, especially with Elder Turner. Everything Elder Turner had done seemed to be for the sake of protecting Jackie, much to their confusion.

Why did he want to protect a sixth-grade alchemist? Was there something to Jackie

that they did not know about?

Before anyone could voice their questions, Elder Turner said, “You know better than anyone what you’ve done. Don’t even think about denying it.

“You never knew whether Jackie had the ability of a seventh-grade alchemist at all. Even though you didn’t know it, you still recommended Jackie for the sake of humiliating him. As an Elder, don’t you know how important the tournament is? For the sake of your revenge, you didn’t care about anything else!”

Elder Rick trembled at Elder Turner's words. Judging by his behavior and words, Elder Turner was planning on punishing him!

At that moment, Elder Rick no longer cared about his dignity and immediately went down on his knees.

He raised his voice as he explained, "I didn't! I just felt like Jackie was suitable. Didn't we win this time? Phoenix Valley wasn't affected by this, which means that nothing is wrong with the recommendation!"

Elder Turner sneered. "No, there wasn't. It's good that you recommended Jackie; it's because of him that our valley has turned the tides in the tournament!"

After he said that, Elder Turned showed the merit log to all the other elders, letting the elders look at how the tournament went.

When everyone saw Sky Peak Pavilion's hidden trump card, they took a deep breath. After that, they saw Jackie turning the tables during the first round, pulling up the results of the other two with the highest scores present, winning the stage.

Even though they lost the second stage, Jackie was not the cause of it. Instead, Jackie's results were incredible.

When the third stage came, nothing unexpected and unsavory happened, and Jackie dominated the round.

After looking at everything, all the elders understood why Elder Turner had that attitude.

Heck, they would have done the same thing.

Jackie's talent was already able to compare with the top masters of the inner valley. He was even an excellent fighter.

He was practically a demon!

Elder Rick's eyes widened as he looked at the log, shaking his head vehemently. "Impossible! This can't be! He's a sixth grade alchemist, so why was he able to complete a thousand and two hundred pill runes?!

"How could he remember and condense sixty ancient runes in such a short time? This doesn't make sense at all! He must've cheated, he had to!"

Elder Rick had cracked due to the pressure. He did not want to admit to Jackie's talent and face further consequences as well.

Meanwhile, Elder Baggins and Elder Eliot looked on quietly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2736 - 2740

Chapter 2736
The two of them were witnesses to the incident. With how arrogant Rick was acting earlier, the two of them were incredibly happy about Rick's current state!

Elder Eliot was incredibly angry the moment he thought about how Rick was acting earlier, so he sneered as he said, "Elder Rick, don't be so emotional. Didn't you say earlier that you'd be the one laughing till the end as long as we won this tournament? Why are you in such a panic now?"

Rick was not in the mood to exchange words with Elder Elliot at that moment. His only thought in mind was to push away the responsibility, but Elder Turner had never liked to dwell on things like this.

He coldly glanced at Rick, not even giving Rick the chance to speak before getting the

deacons next to him to drag Rick away with a wave of his hand.

Everything had happened far too quickly, and some of them could not really process things. Elder Rick, who had always acted so proudly, was actually being dragged to the punishment hall. They could not help but feel like everything was happening too strangely.

Elder Turner turned to look at Jackie before reaching out to pat Jackie on the shoulder, "You did very well. Even though he was the one who made a mess of things, Phoenix Valley would be in a terrible situation if it weren't for you.

"Don't worry, you'll be well rewarded. You can head back now, I'll have someone send the reward to your courtyard."

Jackie nodded. He never wanted to stay at the Elder Hall for too long anyway. He did not like being in crowds. With Elder Turner's words, he hurriedly turned around to leave.

When he passed Elder Maurice, he nodded at Elder Maurice. The elder whispered to him, "If anything happens, I'll have someone relay everything to you. Don't worry."

The courtyard looked the same as before. Lou stood right in front of the entrance. As a runner, he did not really have much to do.

He suddenly widened his eyes when he saw Jackie. He smiled in greeting, and Jackie nodded before asking, "Did anything happen the past few days? Where's Rudy?"

Even though Jackie did not care about Rudy, Grayson's incident still happened. If Rudy disappeared as well, then it just means that the matter got more complicated.

Lou immediately replied, “Rudy is in the room. He just got a task from the task hall and finished it two hours ago. He’s resting in the room after handing in the task and asked me not to disturb him.

Jackie nodded. Since Rudy was safe, there was nothing to worry about. However, the door to Rudy’s room opened the moment Jackie entered the courtyard.

Jackie turned to look and saw Rudy walking out with a look as if he had just woken up. He took two steps out before seeing that Jackie was back, and his eyes widened. He shouted, “You’re back!”

Jackie nodded helplessly. He really wanted to take a good rest on his bed at that moment, instead of wasting time with Rudy. However, Rudy looked like he was incredibly excited to see Jackie as he rushed toward Jackie.

Rudy grabbed Jackie’s arm and said, “Come here, I have something to tell you.”

The courtyard might not be that big, but it still had everything. There was a little gazebo in the middle that Jackie and Rudy were both sitting in.

Lou prepared a pot of tea for them. Jackie frowned and said, “Don’t be so secretive, just tell me what you want.”

Chapter 2737
Rudy pursed his lips, cursing that Jackie was still the same as always. He said after a slight cough, “Let’s forget about me for now. I want to talk about you first. You didn’t tell me you were back. Who won the tournament? Did that Rick guy cause you trouble?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow before quickly telling Rudy a summary of the story. When Rudy heard that Rick was already locked up in the punishment hall, he danced happily.

After they drank their tea, he finally composed himself. Jackie sighed in exasperation as he said with a serious tone, “Don’t be too excited. You said you had something to tell me. Tell me what it is before you celebrate.”

Rudy knew that Jackie did not like having things hanging, so he said, “Do you know about the Whirling World?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking at Rudy curiously. It was obviously the first time he had heard of such a thing. Rudy was quite pleased as he continued.

“I knew you wouldn’t have heard of it. After all, you’ve been busy with the tournament the past few days. Right after you left, the Whirling World spread around the whole Phoenix Valley.

“It’s said that news of the Whirling World has spread around the outside world as well. Everyone seems very excited about it. I think you’ll definitely go there as well!”

Jackie was a little stunned hearing everything. “The Whirling World? What sort of place is that? Why do you think I’ll definitely go? Stop with the nonsense, hurry up and explain everything from the start!”

Rudy nodded, holding back the excitement in his heart as he told everything he knew to Jackie. After Jackie had left, news of the Whirling World started to spread in Phoenix Valley.

The so-called Whirling World was a world that existed outside of the Hestia Continent. It was not really a complete world and was said to be a part of the Valley of Enlightenment.

The Valley of Enlightenment was the reason for the war between Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion. The two forces both wanted the Valley of Enlightenment for themselves, which was why they were at war!

The Whirling World was a part of the Valley of Enlightenment, and it was already opened. Anyone who met the conditions could enter. Hearing that, Jackie was even more confused.

Jackie frowned and asked, “If the Whirling World is a part of the Valley of Enlightenment, then why can’t the valley be entered yet if the Whirling World is already opened? Hasn’t the valley remained closed because Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion haven’t discussed things yet?”

Rudy nodded, earnestly explaining, “The Whirling World is a part of the Valley of Enlightenment, but there is a natural barrier between it and the valley. No one actually knows how the Whirling World was opened.

“However, even if it was opened, the valley is still closed. Entering the Whirling World isn’t equal to entering the Valley of Enlightenment. Opening the Valley of Enlightenment still needs the keys from both sides.”

Jackie could not understand what was happening as he listened. Doubt started to form inside him, but he knew that Rudy would not be able to answer any of his questions if he pressed on. After all, Rudy’s knowledge was limited.

Jackie nodded and said, “Then why are you so sure what the conditions to enter the Whirling World are? Do you need some form of entrance plaque?”

Jackie thought about when they entered the Hidden Place for Resources. They needed an entrance plaque to go through the wormhole.

Chapter 2738
Rudy shook his head and answered, “There’s no need for any such thing. Anyone who meets the conditions can enter. The conditions are very simple. You can’t be over sixty.”

Hearing that, Jackie straightened his body, “You can enter as long as you’re not over sixty years old?”

Rudy nodded earnestly at that. He had already looked into it and was very versed in the requirements.

Jackie took a deep breath as he said after some thought, “The Whirling World probably has a lot of valuable things inside. Otherwise, you wouldn’t be telling me so much.”

Rudy nodded earnestly as his smile deepened, “Someone’s already entered. However, it’s said that you can only return after two years. An illusion was transferred out, though. There are a lot of amazing things inside.

“There are various famous materials. From the scenes inside, the Whirling World must have already been closed for many, many years.

“Those materials are all incredibly old. There’s also an ancient city within. There are a lot of places where the treasure can be found!”

Jackie narrowed his eyes. No wonder Rudy was so excited. The Whirling World did seem like a great place. He took a deep breath, starting to feel excited as well at Rudy’s words.

However, Jackie had always been a calm person. The more exciting it was, the more he needed himself to be calm. He took a few deep breaths, tossing aside the excitement before he said, “Continue your introductions. Tell me all the important things.”

Rudy nodded, “I think there’s one most. important point. Everyone’s strength will be restricted when they enter. Those in the spring solidifying realm will be suppressed to the late stage of the innate realm. Everyone who isn’t at the late stage of the innate realm will be raised to that level as well!”

Jackie had calmly listened to everything before that, but those words actually caused Jackie to suddenly straighten his body as he widened his eyes.

The restriction part really was too surprising. Everyone’s strength would be restricted to the late stage of the innate realm. That meant that what would be used inside were the skills and techniques they had.

Rudy continued, “After the news, everyone started to get excited. Everyone younger than sixty years old has been racking their brains for a way in, even despite needing to stay there for two years.

“The resources inside are far too bountiful compared to the outside. Everyone wants to enter and fight for the resources. Moreover, no one has heard of any danger. There’s nothing else alive in there. If we enter, the only danger would be other people!”

Jackie took a deep breath. The Whirling World was far too surprising. It was basically a natural battlefield. There was nothing else inside but human fighters.

Everyone was being forced to the late stage of the innate level. It meant that everyone was basically fighting with their talent!

There were so many resources to attract large numbers of fighters as well.

Rudy said excitedly, “Should we go in? I actually really want to go, even if I know that I might be killed if I enter with my meager skills.

“I just really don’t want to stay here anymore. After all, I’m an alchemist. All the fighters will have a use for me. They wouldn’t move against me easily. I’ll just refine pills when I enter, getting some spirit crystals where I can… It would still be better than staying here.”

Jackie frowned as he looked at Rudy curiously, “Did something else happen? Were you threatened by someone?”

Rudy shook his head, saying after a deep sigh, “I haven’t been threatened. I just feel like Phoenix Valley was never a good place for me.”

Chapter 2739
“Even now, we don’t know why Grayson was taken away. Nor do we know if we’ll end up like Grayson. Furthermore, my little levels of talent won’t be properly cultivated in Phoenix Valley. It would be better if I go somewhere else. Once I get out of the Whirling World, I’ll be completely free!”

Jackie frowned, looking at Rudy earnestly, “Your thoughts are reasonable. Since you want to leave so much, why don’t you just go back…”

Before Jackie could finish, he was interrupted by Rudy. Rudy anxiously said, “I would have gone back early on if it were that easy. With your talents, you can firmly make a place for yourself in Phoenix Valley.

“Even if you did anything suspicious, people wouldn’t do anything too bad to you thanks to your talents. I’m different, I’m expendable.

“The moment I mention wanting to leave Phoenix Valley, I’ll definitely be captured. The Whirling World is just an excuse for me to leave Phoenix Valley. There’s no way for them to know what I’ve encountered in Phoenix Valley anyway.

“No matter if I survive it or not, in two years, I’ll immediately leave Phoenix Valley and head back to Golden Pills!”

Jackie could understand Rudy’s sense of helplessness. Since he already made his decision, Jackie had nothing else to say. He took a light sip of his tea as he raised his head and contemplated his own troubles.

Rudy had been waiting for Jackie to say something else, but Jackie seemed to be earnestly tasting the tea, so he was a bit exasperated, “Jackie, could you tell me if you’re going or not?”

Jackie frowned, thinking about it for a while before he shook his head earnestly, “I won’t be going. I still have other things to do here. Two years is far too long. Even if the Whirling World’s resources are so plentiful that they will attract most young people.

“However, the Whirling World isn’t really a certain thing. I still have so many questions that are unclear. I just don’t really plan on going in there right now.”

Hearing that, Rudy suddenly panicked. He had thought that Jackie would definitely follow him into the Whirling World after he explained everything about it.

He might be useless, but Jackie was an incredibly rare master in every way. Jackie’s skills would definitely be able to protect him. He might be able to get something from following Jackie.

He would be able to guarantee his safety as well. That was already more than enough

for Rudy. After receiving blow after blow, Rudy was no longer the same as he was before. He just needed to live his life peacefully. He did not have any other thoughts in mind.

He never expected Jackie to reject it. Looking at Jackie’s expression, Jackie seemed certain that he would not be entering, which Rudy could not really accept, “You’re not going in? There’s everything inside. There are many things inside that masters would go crazy for. Many materials are waiting inside for you.

“There are also resources left behind from experts countless years ago. Don’t you want to go inside and fight for them? Even if you’re not going to do much, you’ll be able to find a lot!” Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Rudy meaningfully. From his words, Jackie saw through Rudy’s plans.

He sighed helplessly, “I have my own considerations. I know that the Whirling World is a good place, but it’s too uncertain for me. Just think about it. Everything that’s happened recently is still a mess.

“No one knows what will happen after we go in. Many people might die inside. I don’t want to be a lab rat. That’s why I don’t plan on going inside.”

Rudy’s face stiffened, suddenly not knowing what to say. Jackie’s words were actually reasonable. There were still many things that were unclear.

The Whirling World was a part of the Valley of Enlightenment. Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion were fighting tooth and nail for the Valley of Enlightenment.

On top of that, Phoenix Valley’s plans caused much doubt and alarm. The Whirling World, which was related to the Valley of Enlightenment, might not be as good as it sounded!

Chapter 2740
The Whirling World was an irreplaceable choice for Rudy. After knowing the world’s rules, Rudy was even more determined to enter the Whirling World.

As for those problems that were there, he had been too excited to think about them. Jackie’s words were like a bucket of cold water on his head. His whole body stiffened.

He wanted to retort, but he did not know what to say, because all of his replies were too far-fetched. Jackie’s words had been straight to the point, and all of them were problems that could not be ignored. Rudy suddenly started to hesitate.

Jackie looked at Rudy and shook his head slightly. He could understand Rudy’s helplessness, but could not enter the Whirling World with Rudy just because of those doubts.

That place was incredibly dangerous to Jackie. After a moment, Rudy said in a low voice, “I understand everything you’re saying, but I really don’t want to continue staying in Phoenix Valley. I feel like Phoenix Valley is a beast that will swallow me whole at any moment.

“I’m full of fear every day as long as I am in Phoenix Valley. My goal was to come here and to be cultivated well, yet I only noticed after coming here that there are far too many masters in Phoenix Valley.

To be raised better and get more resources means I will have to work my hardest. Yet, an alchemist like me doesn’t have any hope to get anything good anyway!”

After saying that, Rudy smiled bitterly as he looked out the gazebo and said in a shaky tone, “You’re right! Yet, Phoenix Valley isn’t really a great place…”

He lacked confidence in his words. He knew he was forcing things, but he really wanted

to enter the Whirling World. Yet, he was afraid that he would not be able to stay there alone for that long. So, he really wanted Jackie to go in with him.

After a period of time interacting with Jackie, he knew that Jackie did not really have a good temper, but Jackie was not someone despicable or shameless. As long as he obediently followed behind Jackie, he would be protected.

Jackie let out a light smile, not saying anything. Jackie looked out of the gazebo. When Rudy saw that he was not getting a response, he coughed awkwardly.

“If you’re not entering the Whirling World, what do you plan on doing?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said in a firm tone, “I already thought about it during the tournament. I’m waiting for the inner valley test. I want to see what type of place it is.”

Rudy felt a chill in his heart at those words.

To Jackie, the inner valley was better than the Whirling World. After all, the inner valley was still part of Phoenix Valley.

As long as Jackie did not do anything too bad, the higher-ups would definitely take good care of Jackie and raise him well. After all, the inner valley is the true core of Phoenix Valley.

Jackie turned to glance at Rudy, having not planned on revealing the matter. In the end, Rudy was the person who was the friendliest to him in Phoenix Valley. After thinking about it, he still revealed his innermost thoughts.

“There are many reasons I don’t want to enter the Whirling World. After all, the safety of the place isn’t guaranteed for us. Even if many scouts have gone in, there’s a two-year restriction for going into the Whirling World.

“No one knows if any massive changes will happen within the two years, or if there will

be any hidden plots. I feel like the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley have a massive secret hidden.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2741 - 2745

Chapter 2741
“The secret is probably related to the Whirling World. Even if there are valuable treasures in the Whirling World, I have to put my life first.”

Rudy took a deep breath and nodded before he said, “You’re right. Are you planning on staying in Phoenix Valley and never entering the Whirling World?”

Jackie sat up straight and thought about it for a while before he resolutely shook his head, “If I’m sure that the place isn’t that dangerous, or if I know the secret behind the place. As long as I have certain assurances, I will enter. It’s definitely not possible right now.”

Rudy sighed miserably, looking incredibly deflated. To Rudy, Phoenix Valley had become a prison where he was trapped in.

Jackie looked at Rudy before saying, “The inner valley is the core of Phoenix Valley. Only by becoming an inner valley alchemist will I be able to have access to some of Phoenix Valley’s secrets. There are many reasons I want to enter the inner valley. The first is to increase my skills as an alchemist. After that, I want to find out the secrets that those people are hiding.”

Rudy sobered up at Jackie‘s words. Thinking about it, he did feel like there are a lot of things that they always wanted to find out about, that really did need Jackie to figure out what is going on.

Jackie continued, “Just looking at Grayson’s matter. We’ve already investigated it, and you can’t even sleep without thinking about him. You’ve been obsessed about where Grayson is and if he‘s even still alive. Yet, we’re alone in Phoenix Valley. Just being able to take care of ourselves is good enough. We don’t really have the ability to look into Grayson’s disappearance, which we’ve always wanted to find out about…”

“We don’t have any clues. We can’t even make the most basic of guesses. So, if we really want to understand everything, we have to first make sure we have more power. We need to have the right to even know about it!”

Rudy no longer had anything to say back to that. All he could do was nod earnestly. Jackie’s decision was definitely right.

At that moment, frantic steps could suddenly be heard from the entrance of the courtyard. Lou was rapidly approaching with a panicked look on his face. Jackie and Rudy frowned at the same time.

When Lou arrived next to Jackie, he whispered, “A steward came over earlier to say that Elder Maurice is waiting for you at the Elder Hall. He has something to say to you.”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows. He had thought that it would take at least a few days before Elder Maurice approached him for anything. They would at least need to wait until everything blew over. After all, Elder Rick was still in the punishment hall.

Jackie nodded at him, not saying anything else as he followed the steward who conveyed the news into the Elder Hall. At that moment, there were two chairs and a table in the Elder Hall. There were various fruits on the table, and even a fragrant tea was prepared.

Elder Maurice smiled at Jackie when he saw Jackie arriving. He motioned for Jackie to sit in front of him.

Jackie curiously looked at Elder Maurice, not sure why Elder Maurice summoned Jackie to the Elder Hall. After all, the Elder Hall was not personal space. Normally, the Elder Hall would be completely shut if nothing was happening. Jackie would not have been summoned there to talk about any private matters.

That was why Jackie had thought that he would be facing more than just Elder Maurice for this conversation.

Chapter 2742
He had thought that many elders would be waiting for him in the Elder Hall. Yet, when he arrived at the Elder Hall, he only saw Elder Maurice there.

Was it really necessary to use the Elder Hall for a personal meeting between the two of them?

Jackie felt stranger and stranger as he thought about it, but he did not reveal his thoughts on his face. He politely greeted Elder Maurice before sitting down as Elder Maurice indicated.

Elder Maurice poured Jackie a cup of tea, “This tea is a high-grade spiritual tea. Even the elders are only allowed to take it out when there are guests.”

Jackie hurriedly said, “You’re an elder, we should follow the rules and not waste…”

However, before Jackie could finish, he was interrupted by Elder Maurice, “There’s no need for such empty pleasantries when it’s just the two of us. I called you here because of a personal matter.”

Jackie nodded, motioning for Elder Maurice to continue.

Elder Maurice took a sip of tea before saying, “Have you heard about the Whirling World? “

Jackie was taken aback, not expecting Elder Maurice to mention it immediately. Jackie nodded, not really planning on hiding it. Elder Maurice glanced at Jackie before saying, “What do you plan on doing after this?”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, answering honestly, “I’ll wait for the inner valley’s test. I want to enter the inner valley.”

Elder Maurice raised an eyebrow, having already expected that answer. He did not continue talking immediately but paused for a long time before saying, “You should put entering the inner valley aside for now. In two days, you should enter the Whirling World. Don’t ask me why. This is for your own sake. That place has much more for you to gain than risk. With your skills, you’ll definitely be able to make something of yourself there.”

Elder Maurice’s words stunned Jackie for a moment. Jackie frowned, having already considered what Elder Maurice would want to talk to him about. Yet, he never expected that Elder Maurice had wanted to ask him to enter the Whirling World. Jackie started to be suspicious of Elder Maurice’s intentions then.

Elder Maurice looked right at Jackie after he said that. When he saw Jackie’s expression, he knew what Jackie was thinking.

Elder Maurice let out a wry smile as he explained, “Don’t speculate too much. I’m doing this for your sake. The Whirling World has its dangers, but the potential benefits are much larger.

“We already sent out people inside to scout. It won’t just be the outer valley sending a lot of people inside, even the inner valley will be sending most of theirs.”

Hearing Elder Maurice’s words, Jackie relaxed quite a bit. If he was going to be the only one to enter, Jackie would definitely suspect that Elder Maurice was plotting something. However, if even inner valley alchemists were entering, it meant that the Whirling World was not as dangerous as he thought.

Jackie looked up and asked earnestly, “Elder Maurice, why did you call me over to talk about this? Do you want me to hurry up and go inside? In truth, I was planning on becoming an inner valley student first before going in, if I was ever going to go in.”

Elder Maurice sighed. He knew Jackie’s personality. If Jackie did not clearly know everything, Jackie would definitely not go inside. Elder Maurice poured himself some tea before he started to speak.

Chapter 2743
“I do want you to hurry inside as soon as possible. If you don’t go in quickly, you might very well be dragged into certain things. I don’t know how the following days will go.”

Elder Maurice had a strangely apprehensive look on his face as he said there. It was as if there were a lot of difficult matters in front of him. Jackie frowned, not saying anything as he waited patiently.

Elder Maurice continued after a moment, “Phoenix Valley is basically right next to a massive storm right now. If we’re not careful, we’ll be dragged inside. No one knows what the final results of that will be. Even if you seem to only have Elder Rick as an enemy publicly, that’s just what’s known. Sometimes, talent is a double-edged sword. It will attract the attention of the higher-ups and give you better resources, but you’ll also invite the envy of others if you’re too talented…”

“In my eyes, the inner valley is even more dangerous than the outer valley. I knew you’d want to enter the inner valley after you got back, but that place is like a sinister sea. The moment you enter, it’ll be very difficult for you to get out. It would be better for you to venture into the Whirling World. There is a strength restriction there. As long as you’re smart enough, you’ll be able to accomplish a lot inside.”

Elder Maurice was quite sincere in his words. As he said that, he looked at Jackie earnestly. Jackie frowned, thinking about Elder Maurice’s words in detail for a while.

Elder Maurice did not reveal everything, but he still gave Jackie a lot of information. The inner valley was a battlefield that was not fought with weapons. Even though Jackie knew that he could not rely on the words of one person to make his judgment, Elder Maurice’s expression really looked like he was incredibly serious.

Thinking about Elder Maurice’s temper, he was definitely not someone who enjoyed putting on false pretenses. The thought played around in Jackie’s head for a long time.

Elder Maurice knew Jackie’s inner conflict, and he said helplessly, “I know you still want to enter the inner valley to witness what the inner valley really is like. After all, from the news you’ve gotten, becoming an inner valley alchemist will mean you will get a lot of tutelage and resources. However, I’m telling you that this is all just on the surface.

“After you enter the inner valley, you’ll be forced to join a team. The inner valley is split into various factions. It’s not all lumped into one like the outer valley. If you want to continue in the inner valley, you’ll have to pick a side and fight for…”

As he said that, Jackie suddenly raised a hand to stop Elder Maurice. Just hearing all of that caused Jackie to have a massive headache. He hated being involved in random problems when all he wanted to do was improve himself. If the inner valley really was a place full of such schemes, Jackie suddenly lost a lot of interest in entering it.

Jackie looked at Elder Maurice with a deep look before he said, “Thank you for wanting to help me. As for when I will enter the Whirling World, I need more time to think. However, I have another question before that. If you don’t know, you don’t have to answer.”

Elder Maurice raised an eyebrow, shooting Jackie a look to continue. Jackie sighed before he said seriously, “Back when we first entered Phoenix Valley, we came as a group of three. After that, one of us went missing. Do you know of someone named Grayson?”

Chapter 2744
The moment Grayson’s name was mentioned, Elder Maurice’s expression changed. His eyes narrowed while his head leaned back a little. Jackie looked at him and was sure that Elder Maurice knew about Grayson.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he said seriously, “I’m very curious. Where is Grayson right now? Is he still alive? Even though I didn’t really have a good relationship with him, we still entered Phoenix Valley at the same time. The three of us went through some things. After entering Phoenix Valley, only he disappeared. I really want to know why he disappeared. Does it have anything to do with me?”

Elder Maurice sighed helplessly, “If he doesn’t really have a good relationship with you, then you shouldn’t look into this anymore. He’s already been completely locked up.”

“Why was he locked up?” Jackie could not stop himself from raising his voice a little. The question had been in Jackie’s head for a long time.

Why was Grayson the only one locked up after what they went through?

Elder Maurice looked at Jackie helplessly. There were some things he was not supposed to mention. However, He could very well lose Jackie’s trust if he did not tell the truth. To Elder Maurice, Jackie was worth a lot more.

Thinking about it for a long time, he chose to answer in the end, “I’ve heard about what happened to you. When you were first supposed to enter Phoenix Valley, you were ambushed midway. Two deacons even lost their lives. We captured Grayson because of that,” After saying that, Jackie was noticeably excited.

He wanted to raise his voice to ask why, but Elder Maurice did not give him the chance. Elder Maurice sighed before saying, “Grayson was the one who leaked your journey…”

After Elder Maurice said that, Jackie was stunned.

Grayson had leaked their journey? He was the cause of the ambush by their enemies?

That was too unbelievable.

Grayson’s face reappeared in Jackie’s mind. He kept on feeling like Grayson would not be someone who would do something like that. Grayson was part of a fifth-grade clan and was incredibly valued by the Rosefinch Pavilion. After being tested and entering Phoenix Valley, he should have been treated very well.

After thinking about Grayson's origins more and more, Jackie could not figure out why Grayson would do such a thing.

Why would Grayson leak their movements? Why would he allow that group to ambush them?

What exactly was the reason for that?

Furthermore, Jackie was even more curious as to why the enemies were trying to kill them. If the ambush had happened at West Cercie State, Jackie would have thought they were attacking him.

After all, Jackie had been in West Cercie State for quite long. Yet, the vessel being attacked happened when he had not been in Middle Province for that long. Practically no one knew about him. Even Grayson and Rudy were just somewhat talented alchemists. They were no one notable at all.

Since Grayson was the person to leak it, then Grayson should not have been the reason for the ambush. Then, it must have been because of Rudy. Yet, after interacting with Rudy for so long, Jackie did not feel like Rudy had anything about him that was worth assassinating. Rudy was incredibly ordinary as an alchemist and horrible as a fighter. He did not come from a notable family either. So, Jackie could not figure out why anyone would want to kill Rudy.

After so long thinking about it, he was forced to conclude that the reason they were ambushed was because of the two deacons that died. They must have had a secret they were hiding.

Chapter 2745
However, Jackie clearly remembered the elder only telling them two deacons were going to follow them only when they left the alliance branch. Before that, they did not know who the two deacons protecting them towards Phoenix Valley were at all.

Could it be because of the Scarlet Blood Crystal?

Jackie's lips twitched, suddenly feeling his mind overheat. No matter how he thought about it, he could not understand anything.

Elder Maurice interrupted Jackie's thoughts. "I don't know about the details, but he's definitely the leaker. Even he himself admitted to it."

Jackie sighed as his head swayed slightly, forgetting about the problem.

On The way back from the Elder Hall, Jackie was fixated on it completely. He wondered if he should tell Rudy the story as well. Jackie felt like Rudy would probably collapse mentally if Jackie revealed the truth.

After thinking about it, Jackie decided to conceal the news for the moment. He would tell Rudy at the right moment. When Rudy found out that Jackie would follow them into the Whirling World, he was so happy he started to dance.

Rudy had been dreaming about leaving Phoenix Valley, so that chance was naturally something he had been longing for. After five days, Jackie left for the Whirling World. It was not even a part of Hestia Continent through a transfer array. They were in a limitless, barren land. Rocks of varying sizes littered the whole place. There were still a few trees around, or Jackie would have wondered if he came to the wrong place.

Rudy frowned and said, “So this is the Whirling World. It looks so different from how I thought it would. Why is it so barren? I thought that the Whirling World would be filled with life, there should have been materials everywhere.”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly, feeling like Rudy really was someone filled with imagination. He explained helplessly, “The Whirling World is massive. Didn’t we already hear about that before? It’s about the size of the Middle Province. If there are materials everywhere, every single warrior in the world would try to get in. It could even lead to a massive clan war. After all, resources as abundant as that would be able to birth countless experts!”

Rudy nodded meaningfully, feeling like Jackie was right.

Jackie sighed as he looked at the sky.

Clouds filled up the sky. Even though it was very bright around them, they could not see the sun behind the clouds, which caused Jackie to be curious.

Rudy anxiously asked, “Where should we go next? Could there be any remnants of the ancient city here? Should we try to find some clues here to give us a starting point?”

Jackie nodded, looking around his surroundings before finding a direction to lead Rudy away. Before Jackie could take two steps forward, he heard a string of footsteps. Jackie frowned as he stopped.

“Alchemists! You’re two really fat sheep. It was worth waiting here for two days!” A scarred man who had a blade in hand was walking towards Jackie as he said that.

Behind the scarred man was a tall and lanky man. Looking at the way they were dressed, it was obvious they weren’t good news. They had bones that were carved from spirit crystals around them and had quite a few scars on their faces. They really looked like thugs from novels.

Looking at the two of them, Rudy hid behind Jackie in fear.

“Let the two of them live. Since they’re alchemists, we should use them well. We’ll need to stay here for two years anyway. Let’s make them our slaves and have them make us pills till their souls dry up!” The tall and lanky man said with a cold sneer.

The scarred man nodded in agreement, “How lucky are we? Alchemists aren’t just big fat sheep but also the best candidates for slaves. When they make a lot of pills, we can even sell them to make more spirit crystals!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2746 - 2750

Chapter 2746
The two of them fearlessly discussed what to do with Jackie and Rudy right in front of Jackie and Rudy. They even mentioned wanting to turn them into slaves.

Rudy's face was steely, he was so angry his whole body shook. Yet, he did not dare to say anything at that moment. All he could do was place all his hopes on Jackie.

Jackie frowned, not saying anything as he calmly looked at the two bandits.

The tall and lanky man saw that Jackie's expression was incredibly calm as if nothing was happening. The man could not help but let out a cold laugh, "I can't believe you're actually so brave. Could the two of you think that you'll be able to run just because the two of us are currently at the late stage of the innate level?"

Jackie frowned, still not saying anything.

The tall man let out a cold laugh as he continued, "This is the Whirling World. I guess you still haven't fully memorized the rules since you just arrived here! Let me tell you right now, our strength is just restricted to the late stage of the innate level thanks to the Whirling World's rules! The both of us were already at the spring solidifying realm a long time ago in the Hestia Continent!"

The mention of the spring solidifying realm caused Rudy's heart to thump loudly. He was just the early stage of the innate realm, it was a far cry from the spring solidifying realm. In Rudy's eyes, the spring solidifying realm's experts were unbeatable.

With that in mind, he could not help but look up at Jackie. He had seen Jackie fighting before and knew that Jackie was already at the spring solidifying the realm as well.

Could Jackie fight two against one?

They were two spring solidifying realm fighters in front of him. Could Jackie beat them?

Rudy got more and more nervous as he thought about it, and could not help but grab Jackie's sleeve.

Jackie let out a laugh, "So you're just two pieces of trash not worth looking at. You're just hiding here to ambush weaker fighters and steal spirit crystals."

They were at the entrance of the transfer array. Anyone who wanted to enter the Whirling World would need to go through that large transfer array. The Whirling World only had about two dozen or so entrances. The entrances were all basically destinations of the transfer array.

Normally, there would be two separate transfer arrays. One for entering, and one for exiting, but there was only one to the Whirling World. Only entering was possible.

Each entrance had a few designated spots, and the two bandits deliberately hid in the dark knowing that. They observed those who entered the Whirling World. If the newcomers were strong or had the numbers advantage, they would keep hiding. If they met anyone who was weak or who looked particularly tempting, they would jump out to rob them.

The two of them happily ran out of their hiding spot the moment they saw Jackie and Rudy's attire. Alchemists were normally never poor. Furthermore, alchemists fully focused on refining pills and were normally not that strong.

The scarred man snorted, "These two are just pretending to be calm! I refuse to believe they didn't know the rules of the Whirling World before they entered!"

The tall man nodded meaningfully. The two of them exchanged a look, seeing the ferocity in each other's eyes. The two of them did not want to delay anything. After all, the place would see newcomers every now and then. If anyone else came, it could easily cause a disruption in their plans. It was possible that those two fat sheep would run away. In order to prevent any surprises, the two of them decided to take action immediately.

Rudy could immediately tell that the two of them were about to take action. He was so scared he started to pale as he whispered into Jackie's ears.

Chapter 2747
"The two of them are about to attack! What should we do?"

Jackie sighed helplessly, "Go and hide for now. Find somewhere further away. Don't get hurt from the shockwaves!"

Those words successfully calmed Rudy down. Jackie was basically his stabilizing factor. Jackie had always been a logical person. As long as Jackie was calm, there was nothing to be afraid of.

Rudy hurriedly ran to the side, not forgetting to shout as he did, "Be careful! These two are still in the spring solidifying realm in the end. Don't underestimate them, going one against two!"

Rudy actually knew that everything he said was useless, but he could still not stop himself. After all, he had not done anything to help at all.

The scarred man could not help but laugh coldly at Rudy, "You should worry about yourself!"

After he said that, the scarred man and the tall man rushed right at Jackie. The two of them held a long blade in hand, rushing at Jackie with similar weapons.

The scarred man and the tall man ended up splitting up, one heading to Jackie while one rushed towards Rudy. The two of them planned on finishing the fight quickly. Jackie raised an eyebrow.

They were actually not bad. They did not delay things and decided to just hurry and end the battle. If they had been facing the usual weak alchemist, things would have gone the way they wanted.

The one rushing towards Jackie was the scarred man. At that moment, he had a pleased smile on his face. He held his sword in both hands as he slashed right at Jackie. His sword was filled with a bloody aura, and the bloody aura formed the shape of many skulls in the air. The skulls were like angry spirits in hell. They seemed to only be willing to rest after ripping Jackie to shred.

Jackie snorted as his gray sword appeared in his hands. Seventy-five Soul Swords were condensed in a flash. With a clap, the seventy-five Soul Swords condensed into the gray sword in Jackie's hand. After the swords merged with the sword, they let out a black glow. Jackie narrowed his eyes slightly as he exploded forward!

The scarred man never expected Jackie to dare to face him head-on. He had thought the alchemist would know his place, and frantically run away. However, the thought only lingered in his mind for a short moment, since Jackie was already right in front of him.

The scarred man let out an angered roar as the bloody aura's skulls slashed down at Jackie with his sword!

The scarred man was incredibly confident in his move. Even though he had never joined any clans, he was still lucky enough to find a few lower Earth Grade skills. He had already gotten that skill up to the first stage.

The scarred man felt like even inner disciples within those clans were no match for him, let alone an alchemist that was not even at the spring solidifying realm!

That technique was all he needed to kill that alchemist who did not know his place! With that thought in mind, a slashing sound could be heard at the next moment.

Chapter 2748
Right after that, a soul-tearing energy went through the sword in his hand into his body. The scarred man widened his eyes, full of disbelief. The skill he had thought would kill Jackie instantly had disappeared immediately after clashing with Jackie's sword. It could not even hold on for a second.

The soul-tearing pain immediately spread throughout his body. It was the first time the scarred man felt such pain. After that, the man fell from the air with a bang. He violently fell to the stone ground.

Jackie let out a cold smile.

Did the guy not pause to consider that Jackie entered the Whirling World because he had the skills?

If someone really did so, it proved that his opponent was dumb. However, the world was filled with idiots. Even though his whole body was reeling in horrifying pain, the scarred man obstinately looked at Jackie.

At that moment, the scarred man no longer regarded Jackie as lightly as he did before. Instead, he looked at Jackie as if he was looking at a monster.

Was Jackie really an alchemist? Why was an alchemist so strong?

His lower Earth grade technique was not able to hold on for a single second before it was completely shattered by that alchemist's skill. He even wondered if the alchemist was using a Heaven Grade technique.

He shouted with the last of his energy, "Who the hell are you? You're definitely not an alchemist!"

What were the scarred man's last living words?

In the next second, his soul was completely destroyed by Destroying the Void.

At that moment, Rudy shouted miserably, "Jackie, save me!"

Jackie frowned, exploding forward toward the direction. He did not take long to deal with the scarred man, and thankfully, Rudy had run far enough that the tall man had not caught up with Rudy yet. Everything had happened too quickly, and the tall man had yet to notice that the scarred man was killed instantly. At that moment, Rudy was the only person in the tall man's eyes.

Jackie took a deep breath as he activated the laws of space. With a speed indiscernible to the eyes, he rapidly approached the tall man.

The man sneered, "There's no point shouting! No one can save you!"

However, the moment he said that a cold voice was heard behind him, "Is that so?"

The man's whole body stiffened as he abruptly turned around. He noticed Jackie, who should have already died to the scarred man, already right behind him. The tall man

was full of shock, but his shock did not last that long. The two of them had wanted to deal with Jackie and Rudy as quickly as possible.

Jackie naturally wanted to deal with them quickly as well. They were in no man's land. It was better to leave as soon as they could!

"How are you here?!" The tall man shouted.

As he shouted, he noticed the scarred man lying down on the ground, unmoving, behind Jackie. At that moment, the tall man realized that they had targeted the wrong people. Those two alchemists were no simple characters.

The tall man felt a chill around his body. He abruptly looked up and shouted, "Stop! I have something to say!"

Chapter 2749
Jackie narrowed his eyes, naturally not answering his question. With a wave of his sword, a pitch-black slash headed right toward the tall man's forehead.

The tall man raised his sword to stop it, but his skill was nothing compared to Jackie's Destroying the Void. With a clash, the slash shattered the tall man's sword. The black glow entered the tall man's forehead in a flash.

Jackie did not hold back at the slash. Before the man could even cry out in pain, his soul was completely shattered. He fell from the air and slammed onto the ground just like the scarred man.

Looking down, his chest was no longer moving. He was already dead. Rudy was so scared his breathing had even stopped. He was shuddering and sobbing, not reacting to anything at all.

Jackie grabbed Rudy's arm, "Quit dreaming. Let's leave this place right now!"

Rudy was pulled by Jackie just like that, as they ran toward the northern direction. The two of them advanced for three hours before they stopped. Only then did Rudy snap back to reality.

Jackie glanced at Rudy, "It's not like you've never had your life on the line before. It's just two people, do you need to react like this?"

Rudy shuddered, slowly composing himself. His body was still trembling slightly, but he slowly started to speak, "I was just frightened. I never expected to encounter something like this the moment we entered the Whirling World. If you were any later, I'd definitely have been killed by that guy. This is the closest I've ever been to dying!"

Those words actually reminded Jackie that, even though Rudy knew how to fight, he was still an alchemist in the end. Rudy merely learned combat to extend his life. He had never gone through a true battle. The only time he had truly seen a big conflict was the experience before they entered Phoenix Valley. It might have been an incredibly trying time, but Rudy's life had not been directly threatened.

It was different this time. The tall man's sword had been aimed right at his head.

Jackie remembered that Rudy's whole body had been stiff earlier, probably going numb from fear. Jackie's lips twitched helplessly as he reached out to pat Rudy on the arm.

"I thought you were already mentally prepared before coming in. I can't believe you don't seem prepared for what we'll encounter at all. Battles like this are just appetizers!"

"They're just appetizers?" Rudy's mouth was gaping wide, tears were threatening to fall from his eyes.

Looking at him, Jackie felt even more helpless. It seemed like Rudy was really inexperienced. After all, Jackie had encountered all sorts of battles before. Before he entered the Whirling World, he had naturally expected even more battles over resources. Rudy did not know that. Rudy had thought that he just needed to play his part and he would be able to peacefully go through two years. Then, he would be able to safely return to Hestia Continent and live his peaceful days.

Realizing that he had been wrong in his thoughts, Rudy almost cried. He swallowed as he said, "I can't believe this place is even more dangerous than Phoenix Valley. I wouldn't have come here if I knew. If it weren't for you, I'd have been split into two just now!"

He was even more scared as he thought about it. His whole body shuddered. Jackie did not know what to say at that point. Rudy had entered the Whirling World without understanding anything, he really was special.

Chapter 2750
Ruddy stammered out, "Can we no longer go back?"

Jackie nodded, speechless. He did not really want to say anything else. Rudy looked up hopelessly at the sunless sky.

Jackie could not stop himself from rolling his eyes, not bothering with Rudy anymore. He started to continue moving forward. He needed to find somewhere to make camp at that moment, or at least find others who had entered the Whirling World as well.

He wanted to talk to them, to ask them if there were any dangers around. No matter how bad Rudy felt, Rudy still knew that he could not leave Jackie at that moment. Otherwise, he would probably end up being killed by someone before the next day.

He ran after Jackie, “Actually, we could have followed a larger team here. After all, the more people we have, the stronger we would be!”

For safety’s sake, Elder Maurice had arranged for a large team from Phoenix Valley to enter the Whirling World. Basically, every major force had that arrangement. After all, there was strength in numbers. Even those who had ill intentions would not offend them. However, Jackie rejected it.

Rudy had planned on following the larger group into the Whirling World, but Rudy had rejected it after Jackie did as well. Compared to anyone else, Rudy felt like Jackie was more reliable.

Jackie glanced at Rudy, not hiding his thoughts, “Even though following a large group will give us more assurances, there will be a lot of trouble as well. You would need to accept any arrangements, and fight against everyone else. There is strength in numbers, but who knows what kind of trouble will pop up in the face of any valuable resources. Moving alone is much better. “

Jackie hated fighting against others the most. The Phoenix Valley’s group were all scheming sorts. He did not want to bother those people. Moving alone was Jackie’s favorite thing anyway. So, when Elder Maurice suggested that he move with the large group, Jackie rejected it without a second thought. Rudy sighed helplessly, Jackie was right in the end.

He did not want to mix around with people he did not know. Someone like him, who was not really that strong in martial combat and alchemy, would basically be cannon fodder for those people.

The two of them no longer dwell on the specifics. After determining a direction, they continued to move forward. Before coming over, Jackie had found out what he could about the Whirling World.

The Whirling World was incredibly large. Even if it was not as big as Middle Province, it was almost that size. After walking for a long time, they still saw only desolate wastelands. They did not know when they could get out, nor did they know when they would find traces of the ancient city.

It took them till noon the second day to get out of the wasteland. Morning of the third day, they saw remnants of a small city. The moment they saw the city walls, they could not control their excitement. After making sure that it was a city wall, the two of them moved forward impatiently.

Rudy’s face was all smiles, “I thought that we would have to walk a few more days to see anything! It would be better if he had a map, but we’re just moving around blindly. We really did manage to find it. How lucky we are!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2751 - 2755

Chapter 2751

Jackie smiled but said nothing as the two of them continued walking for another hour before reaching the city. From a distance, many people were seen gathering at the city gates. Those people were dressed in various sorts of clothes, but all of them were merely standing around the gate and not entering. Jackie frowned and hastened his pace.

“This is too much! The city is a remnant left behind from ancient times. What does it have to do with you? What gives you the right to ask for an entry fee that’s so expensive! You’re asking for ten thousand spirit crystals! It’s daylight robbery!”

“Exactly! You’re being too heavy-handed! All of us just got into the Whirling World as well. You were just a step faster than us. What gives you the right to claim the whole city?!”

“That’s right! This is too much! The Unbreaking Pavilion might be an eighth-grade clan, but still, you can’t do this!”

Both of them could hear sounds of quarreling from afar. Upon hearing the words ‘Unbreaking Pavilion’, Jackie was immediately on alert. He looked toward the front.

He saw five men in similar-looking black clothes standing in front of the city gates. The five of them had their heads held high, their expressions were incredibly arrogant!

The disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion who stood at the front let out a cold laugh, “Don’t you know the early bird gets the worm? I already told you before, the Unbreaking Pavilion has claimed Black Sun City. This whole city is our territory now! If you were here earlier, you could have taken over Black Sun City as well. However, we got here first, so let’s not waste time on nonsense!”

“I’ve already told you the rules. As long as you pay ten thousand spirit crystals, I’ll let you in. If you don’t want to pay the tax, then get lost!”

The disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion did not care for the warriors in front of them. After all, they were one of the top clans in Middle Province. As a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion, they had a sense of arrogance to them, regardless of what their ranking within the clan was. They did not regard anyone else highly at all.

After the person spoke, the warriors outside were all incredibly indignant. Their faces reddened in anger.

“This is too much! What do you mean by arriving first?! This city should be shared between all of us. You can’t just claim the whole city for yourselves just because you got here first! Don’t you think you ‘re crossing the line?!”

The disciple that stood in front sneered as he said with disdain, “Crossing the line? What line? Why don’t you look at yourselves in the mirror first? Do you even have the right to say any of that in front of me? I’m already being very nice to you by standing here and talking to you so calmly! If I had my way, I wouldn’t let you in even if you gave us ten thousand Spirit Crystals! It’s only thanks to the mercy of our senior, Philip Devine, that you even have the chance to enter!”

Jackie’s lips twitch helplessly. He never expected to encounter something so troubling the moment he found a city he could settle down in. He looked at those Unbreaking Pavilion disciples earnestly.

With just a look, he could tell that they could back up their words. They were all incredibly arrogant and probably had some skill. They would naturally not be bothered with those warriors who looked like mere wanderers.

Rudy might not have any skills, but he was still incredibly furious after he heard what the disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion said. He whispered to Jackie, “This is too much! Just because they were a little earlier, they took over the whole city and are refusing to let us in! Aren’t they afraid that all the warriors here will work together and fight them?”

When Rudy said that, his entire body was trembling. He looked very eager to rush over and start cursing at them.

Chapter 2752
Jackie let out a laugh and replied, “Of course, they’re not scared. There might be a lot of warriors gathered outside the city, but they’re just cannon fodder in the Unbreaking Pavilion’s eyes. They’re not worth noticing at all. It would be incredibly difficult for them to group together in the first place. If all of them really attacked, the Unbreaking Pavilion would not be worried anyway. Even though everyone’s strength has been suppressed to the late stage of the innate realm, everyone’s skills and cultivation levels are different…”

“To be able to become a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion means that all of them are definitely talented and skilled. Facing wandering warriors like these, they can win even if the numbers were stacked three to one. Naturally, they aren’t scared!”

Even though he did not want to, Rudy had to admit that Jackie was speaking the truth.

Rudy sighed helplessly, “Even with the suppression of the laws, the techniques and skills that we’ve learned can’t be restricted. Those with Earth level techniques are naturally much stronger than those with only Red level techniques!”

“I was only at the early stage of the innate realm before this, and only have a middle-level yellow stage skill. If you weren’t by my side, I would have been an ant that could be stepped on at any moment!”

In truth, Rudy knew that it was best to shut his mouth during times like this, but he could not help but feel a bit indignant. He felt like the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion were absolutely shameless to be preying on the weak like that!

“You can’t do this! You’re really crossing the line!”

“So what if we enter?! We’re not asking for anything amazing. At least give us some scraps!”

“You’re trying to claim everything for yourself! This behavior of yours can’t be justified!”

Everyone tried to fight for themselves emotionally. They felt like they had been deeply insulted, and wanted to fight for their own benefits.

In Jackie’s eyes, it was absolutely pointless to say anything even if he yelled until his voice turned hoarse.

In the eyes of the Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples, all of them were just grains of sand that could be stepped over at any moment.

Rudy felt that what everyone said was right, and could not help but voiced out, “That’s right! They really are crossing the line. Even if they want to take all the best things for themselves, they should at least save some scraps for the rest!”

Jackie did not say anything at Rudy’s words. He merely looked at those disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion. The ones who stood in front were clearly starting to get frustrated. He felt like that group of people were really not showing any respect.

He raised his voice and shouted angrily, “Stop talking so much, I’m about to go deaf! If you’re not happy with it, then fight with us! However, you’d better know what kind of consequences are waiting for you if you do!”

The moment he said that the emotional crowd suddenly went quiet. At that moment, everyone was dead silent as they all exchanged looks with each other, not knowing what to say.

Jackie sighed in exasperation. They really were useless. They had been so emotional when they spoke, but all of them decided to cower in silence when it was time to stand up. No one wanted to take the lead.

In truth, they knew very well that even if they fought, they would not be able to do anything to the Unbreaking Pavilion with their skills.

Anyone who decided to take charge at that moment would just be pure cannon fodder. Hence, no one else dared to say anything.

Chapter 2753
Rudy felt especially frustrated and said, “They’re being way too cowardly about this. Won’t they win if they all charged together? Even if the Unbreaking Pavilion is strong, they should at least be able to do something with their numbers. They shouldn’t just take these insults!”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. Rudy was really just there for the show. Nothing was happening to him, so he naturally felt like everything was fine.

He had not been whispering earlier, and someone next to Jackie heard it. The person had a gray robe on and looked at Rudy angrily after he heard that

He said rudely, “Brat, you‘d better watch your mouth. If you think we’re scared, why don’t you stand up and take the lead? Lead us into a fight with the Unbreaking Pavilion. If you have the guts to do that, you’ll have my respect!”

Of course, Rudy did not dare to do that. He did not have the skills or the guts. Rudy let out a laugh as he walked toward the gray-robed man. Even though he had heard about what happened from the quarrel, the two of them were still new to the Whirling World. They still did not know much about the Whirling World, so he wanted to take the chance to learn more about it.

“Could you tell me your name? The two of us are alchemists from the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance. We just arrived here, so I want to clarify a few things,” Jackie was incredibly polite, and the gray man immediately calmed down to talk to Jackie when he saw that.

The man was called Robert Mason. He was a wandering warrior that did not belong to any clans. After hearing about the Whirling World, he had entered the place with a few friends. Yet, they were attacked by bandits the moment they entered, and he was the only one who survived among the three of them. Jackie did not tell him that they were from Phoenix Valley. After all, Phoenix Valley was in a precarious position at that moment.

Rudy had been silent the whole time, not saying anything. After all, Robert had just mocked him earlier. However, Jackie ignored Rudy’s feelings as he earnestly asked a few questions that Robert answered.

He had already arrived at Black Sun City a day ago but was stopped outside the gates. Ten thousand spirit crystals was a large sum to a wanderer like him. Even if he could afford it, it would end up costing him his whole fortune. Naturally, he was not willing to spend that money on the entry tax.

“Actually there were even more people here yesterday. After fighting over it for a long time, they were not able to enter at all. Most of them have already dispersed. I’m

already injured, so leaving this place will be incredibly dangerous. That's why I decided to stay."

Jackie nodded as he looked at the crowd that was still just as emotional, but unwilling to speak up. Jackie then asked, "Did everyone gather and make a scene here yesterday as well?"

Robert shook his head and replied, "That didn't happen yesterday. Everyone's just getting impatient today. After all, it's starting to get dangerous outside. Hence, entering the ancient city would guarantee us temporary safety."

Even though Robert did not voice it out, Jackie could still imagine what was happening. Outside the city was the vast Whirling World. The fewer people that were around, the easier it was for conflict to happen. Everyone knew that those who did not walk the righteous path liked to hide in the wilderness, killing anyone who passed by.

Jackie suddenly remembered what Elder Maurice had said to him back then.

He had said that the Whirling World might not have any beasts, but that did not mean that the place was safe. In this world, the most terrifying thing was the human heart. The Whirling World truly revealed how despicable the human heart could be. It was actually quite a joke. Even without any beasts around, more warriors actually ended up dying.

Chapter 2754
Robert sighed as he let out a cold smile, "Just look There's a reason for all this noise. A few days ago, a group of people entered Black Sun City before the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion did. There was news from within Black Sun City that there are a few amazing things left behind from the ancient civilization. I heard that the most valuable thing was the true energy fields. Each of those fields has its own traits."

"I'm a wood element specialist. I wanted to use the wood element's true energy field to practice but was blocked by these guys. The outside of the city has been getting increasingly dangerous day by day, and with what's inside Black Sun City, no one really wants to give up on entering. Even though no one has stood up yet, they've still not dispersed. This time, they don't want to give up so easily!"

Jackie could feel everyone's determination as well. Everyone knew that the person who took the lead would be targeted, but even if no one took the lead, they did not want to give up just like that. They were not willing to fork out ten thousand spirit crystals either. After all, it was not a small sum!

Rudy reached out to pull at Jackie's sleeve and said worryingly, "What do we do? Should we go inside? If we want to, we'd have to pay a ten thousand spirit crystal fee. I might be able to afford it, but it's no small sum…"

Jackie could not help but roll his eyes at Rudy's words.

Rudy was just trying to get Jackie to think of a way to get everyone in. Robert just mentioned that there were true energy fields inside. They were something incredibly beneficial. It caused Rudy so much excitement that Rudy started to breathe faster.

Jackie snorted, ignoring Rudy. Rudy suddenly got anxious when he saw Jackie's reaction, unable to stop himself from saying, "This group is just going too far. Even though I don't know how good the true energy fields will be for us, it's still definitely an amazing place. Otherwise, they wouldn't have taken over the whole city. Honestly, this isn't worth that much to us."

"After all, I'm an alchemist. Increasing my strength just gives me a bit more support. It's different for you. You're not only talented as an alchemist but as a martial artist as well! The true energy field is something you definitely need. It would be an incredible loss for you!"

Rudy got more and more excited as he spoke. Jackie could not help but raise an eyebrow. Rudy's overexcitement was beginning to cause Jackie some doubt.

In truth, Rudy had been right. The true energy fields were amazing for martial artists, while they were not that useful for alchemists. Rudy was someone completely focused on alchemy, so Rudy was very different from Jackie.

Jackie did not know if Rudy was excited on Jackie's behalf or because Rudy had some other thoughts in mind.

Rudy started to get even more nervous when he saw that Jackie was still so calm after he described things to that degree. He was about to say a few more words when Jackie raised a hand and interrupted him, "You want to enter Black Sun City that much, but don't you know that we can't enter at all? Unless we defeat those people, we won't be able to enter at all…"

"It would be easy for me to deal with them if they didn't have the numbers, but there are so many of them. If we fight, and the people here don't help, there's no way for us to win at all. Why don't you just give up on those thoughts!"

After Jackie said that, Rudy anxiously said, "How could they not help us? Even though some of them are incredibly insignificant, they'll definitely join you in the fight if you take the lead! The disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion were so harsh with their words. Everyone here is furious. They just don't have the guts to stand up to the Unbreaking Pavilion by themselves. As long as someone leads them, they'll definitely follow the leader!"

Chapter 2755
Rudy was incredibly firm with his words. He narrowed his eyes as he looked at the disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion in hatred.

Jackie was speechless when he saw how Rudy was. He did not know why Rudy was so angry that he needed to go against the Unbreaking Pavilion that badly.

Jackie helplessly pursed his lips as he patted Rudy on the shoulder.

“It’s not easy to take the lead in this. You can’t read their minds. You can’t be sure they’ll follow if I start fighting. Nothing right now is certain!”

Rudy had wanted to counter Jackie’s words, but Jackie shot him a look. Rudy was crossing the line. Rudy was insisting that Jackie take the lead and fight against the Unbreaking Pavilion.

He did not know if Rudy was too confident in him or Rudy just purely hated the Unbreaking Pavilion.

Just as the two of them were still on the problem, the city gates suddenly opened from within. Everyone immediately shut their months as they looked toward the city gates. They saw two Unbreaking Pavilion disciples in luxurious clothes slowly walk out of the city.

The two disciples were in black clothes as well, the patterns on their clothes were similar to the ones on the disciples standing outside. It was obvious they were from the same clan. However, the two of them were dressed much more luxuriously than the disciples outside. They were even adorned with jewelry. When the two of them walked out, the five disciples on the outside had a sudden change of expression.

Back when they were facing the wandering disciples on the outside, the five of them were incredibly arrogant.

Yet, when facing those two, they suddenly became obedient dogs that had their tails wagging. It was a far cry from their earlier demeanors. Yet, no one dared to say anything at that moment. That was because the two of them were clearly no ordinary disciples.

One of the disciples that stood in the front earlier saluted the two of them as he said respectfully, “Philip, Derrick, hello! Did something happen inside? Why did you come out here?”

Philip frowned, his expression was quite dark. He let out a sigh as he walked forward, “Something really did happen.”

After that, he deliberately lowered his voice. All of the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion gathered together as they started to discuss the matter. They did not want the wandering warriors to hear their discussions, but those warriors could tell from their faces that something had definitely happened that caused some difficulty for the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion.

Jackie frowned as he stared at the few of them, feeling like something bad had definitely happened for those two to walk out.

After a while, Philip finally determined their next actions.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2756 - 2760

Chapter 2756
He nodded at his other disciples and said, “Let’s do it this way. After all, these people will die elsewhere if not here anyway. Let’s just have them help us!”

Derrick laughed and said, “Philip is right. After all, these pieces of trash are going to die anyway. We might as well make the most out of them.”

The other disciples all laughed at Derrick’s words. It was an incredibly meaningful sort of laughter. Derrick turned around to look at all the wandering warriors outside.

Those wandering warriors were not part of any clans and had entered the Whirling World just to look for some resources. They wanted to strengthen themselves, but they were still just insignificant ants in his eyes. They could be killed effortlessly by a wave of his hand.

Philip exchanged a look with Derrick who was next to him before the two of them walked forward. Philip let out a small cough before he announced, “I’ve heard all your pleas earlier. My fellow disciples have conveyed your thoughts to me. Even though some of you were a bit harsh with your words, I have to admit that what you said was right. It really isn’t right for us to do this. I’ve talked about it with my fellow disciples, and we plan on loosening the restrictions for you to enter Black Sun City!”

After hearing that, the wandering warriors all started to get excited. No one expected that the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion would be so reasonable. Although they had been crying out crazily earlier, they never expected to get an actual response.

After all, those people were usually so high up on their perches that they were oblivious to those wandering warriors. They looked down on wandering warriors, even lower than dirt. After seeing the responses of the wandering warriors, Philip’s smile deepened.

After a moment, he continued, “There’s still something I have to say. It’s impossible for us to read the human heart. Even though I trust that you won‘t cause any trouble for us, we still have to take precautions. Before loosening the restrictions, I‘ll need some proof!”

After saying that, Philip paused. He observed their reactions and they were well within his expectations.

There were traces of doubt within their confusion. Philip saw through all those reactions. He forced a somewhat pleasant smile on his face as he continued, “I’ll need to pick out a few people to test if you’ll cause trouble to us at all. If there’s no trouble, only then will I loosen the restrictions to entering Black Sun City. All of you will have the right to enter. You won’t need to pay that many spirit crystals either.”

After he said that, the wandering warriors were even more excited. All of them started to talk amongst one another.

“It looks like our number really accounts for strength! Even though those disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion are all usually so arrogant, they can’t just ignore so many of us gathered here. They’re worried that we’ll do something, so they’re loosening their restrictions! We’ll be able to enter Black Sun City to train without any trouble soon!”

“I can finally use the legendary true energy fields. I wonder how much I can improve with that!”

The discussions were not spoken about in hushed tones at all. It was easily heard by all the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion. Based on the past behaviors of those disciples, they would have definitely reacted to those words. Yet, they did not seem to react that much. It was as if they did not care about what was being talked about at all.

Jackie’s eyebrows were furrowed tightly. He was the most clear-minded person present. No matter how nicely the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion put everything, Jackie felt like there was some sinister plot hidden behind it.

Those disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion would absolutely never be bothered by those wandering warriors, nor would they be bothered with their opinions as well.

Chapter 2757
Even though those people were a pretty substantial force if gathered together, they were still just a speck of dust in the eyes of the disciples of Unbreaking Pavilion. For the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion to suddenly change their mind definitely meant that there was a plot underfoot!

Rudy raised an eyebrow and said, “Even the disciples of a large clan would be scared at times. They know that it won’t end well if they end up fighting!”

Robert agreed with him after hearing that, “We can finally go in. I’ve already waited here for so many days. I thought that they would never give in and I would never be able to actually experience a true energy field in my life. I can’t believe they’re actually somewhat considerate!”

Rudy and the other wandering warriors thought the same. They thought that the Unbreaking Pavilion took a step back because they were worried that the gathered wandering warriors would try to fight against them.

He excitedly discussed things with Robert. The unhappiness between the two of them earlier was suddenly wiped clean.

However, the more Rudy talked about it, the more he felt like something was wrong. That was because Jackie, who was standing next to him, had a frown on his face the whole time. It was as if he was thinking about something serious.

Rudy had been so excited, but Jackie did not say a single word.

Jackie was acting far too strange. After interacting with Jackie for so long, he more or less understood Jackie's temper. The moment Jackie had an expression like that, it meant that something terrifying was about to happen.

He took a deep breath as he turned to whisper, "Did something happen? Why do you look like this? They've already given in. We will be able to enter soon. Aren't you happy about that?"

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation as he turned to look at Rudy and replied, "Why are you still unable to think for yourself after so long? Do you really think the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion are so nice? Why would he be afraid of all these riff-raff? If their thoughts are really as they said, then they would never have been so stubborn to start with. They must have their reasons for doing this. Keep your excitement in check!"

Rudy frowned, feeling like Jackie's reaction was unreasonable. It clearly looked like those disciples were giving in, yet Jackie somehow felt like they were just putting up an act.

As Rudy was thinking about it, Philip started to pick out the people. Earlier, his words seemed reasonable and noble. He would first pick out some people to experiment with to see if they would cause the Unbreaking Pavilion any trouble.

As long as those people behaved, Philip would loosen the restrictions to enter the city. They would all be able to enter. With that reasoning, the wandering warriors naturally allowed Philip to pick them out.

Philip walked around the wandering warriors. His sharp gaze fell on everyone. He appraised everything seriously as if he was shopping. He would pick out a person every few steps he took. After a moment, he pulled out five warriors from all of them. Those five would be the test subjects to first enter Black Sun City.

The five of them were worried that they would still need to pay the entry fee if they entered then, but Philip generously said they could enter for free.

Chapter 2758
"You're just: entering as an experiment. As long as you're obedient and don't cause us any trouble, you'll be able to peacefully train in the true energy fields. You'll be sent out safely as well. You're the leaders of the pack, so we won't ask you for any spirit crystals. You can enter the city for free!"

After the few of them heard Philip's words, they were incredibly excited. One of the men in purple clothes actually walked forward and shook Philip's hand in gratitude.

Philip and the others gave out a happy look in response to everyone's excited expressions.

Jackie could even feel a pleasing aura from them. At that moment, Jackie felt incredibly strange witnessing the atmosphere between the wandering warriors and the disciples of Unbreaking Pavilion. Ever since he arrived at Hestia Continent, he learned the meaning of what survival of the fittest meant. No one would ever change, nor were they capable of changing.

As disciples of an eighth-grade clan, they would always have an arrogant air to them when they faced the wandering warriors. Jackie felt like the attitude the Unbreaking Pavilion's disciples had toward the wandering warriors earlier was not surprising.

Instead, their current reactions had Jackie feeling incredibly uneasy. Those wandering warriors had actually thought that the Unbreaking Pavilion was afraid of them and bothered with their opinions.

Jackie felt incredibly amused at that. However, it was pointless for him to say anything at that point. He merely looked on silently as he waited to see what the Unbreaking Pavilion would do next.

After choosing the people, Philip and Derrick led the five of them into Black Sun City. As they entered the city, the other wandering warriors were even loudly shouting at them.

"You absolutely must not break any rules! Otherwise, we won't let the five of you off."

"Even if you see any treasures, don't be greedy. They're still an eighth-grade clan. With your talents, you're not a match for them at all! Know your place. We'll only be able to enter if you're obedient!"

"You won't like the consequences if you break the rules and cause us to not be able to get in!"

The five of them nodded fervently, slapping their chests in the guarantee. They would absolutely be obedient and not cause any trouble for the Unbreaking Pavilion. They would give a chance for everyone else to enter Black Sun City.

After the five of them disappeared behind the city gates, everyone started to have a relaxed expression on their faces. Everyone had just happened to gather there by chance, so they were not very familiar with the five of them. However, they knew very well that the five of them would try to not cause any trouble no matter how daring they were.

Compared to the excitement the rest of the warriors felt, Jackie was much calmer. He stood on the spot like a pillar as he continued looking toward the entrance of the city gate. No one could tell what he was thinking.

Rudy was happily discussing how they would increase their strength when they entered later on. Even though he was purely an alchemist, he still wanted to see how much the true energy field could help them. Even though Jackie was next to him in the Whirling World, he could still end up in danger if he was not sufficiently skilled.

If he improved himself however much he could, it might actually be useful at a crucial moment!

He was incredibly happy, and Robert was as well. However, Jackie was the complete opposite of them, he was so silent that it actually attracted suspicion.

After Rudy talked about it for so long, he tried to pull Jackie into the conversation, but Jackie ignored him.

Chapter 2759
He seemed to be pondering an incredibly hard question. He frowned as his eyes darted all over the place.

Rudy said somewhat helplessly, “What exactly are you thinking about? Don’t you feel happy? Even though what you said earlier was reasonable, didn’t the disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion do exactly as he said and pulled a few people in as a test? As long as the five of them are on their best behavior, we’ll be able to enter. The number equals strength. Even if they want to do anything weird, they would still need to consider the fact that there are so many people waiting out here!”

As he was saying that, Rudy was filled with confidence. It was as if he was a ferocious beast that no one would dare to touch.

After Jackie heard that, he was completely speechless.

If Rudy already had that thought, let alone everyone else. Jackie could not help but turn around to look. Everyone present looked incredibly excited as well. It was obvious that they were not worried that anything bad would happen.

Jackie could not resist shaking their head at how they were. He whispered, “Can you use your head and think about it? Didn’t you notice something weird about the five that Philip picked out?”

Those words ruined all of Rudy’s excitement and he started to feel goosebumps around his body.

His mouth stiffened as he said, “What’s the problem? Did you notice something? I thought five of them looked pretty ordinary. They were all regular fighters! Just tell me, I can’t wrap my head around it!”

At that moment, Rudy looked incredibly honest. He really could not see anything amiss at all.

Jackie sighed in exasperation as he frowned and said, “The cultivation levels of all five of them were not particularly good. They were probably only in the innate realm. When Philip picked the five of them out, I purposely paid attention to them. Their energies were all not very stable. It was obvious that they had been forcibly raised to the late stage of the innate realm. It means their true levels aren’t at the late stage of the innate realm.”

“They are considered merely ants if compared to the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion. If they wanted to do anything to those five, the five of them would be obliterated with just a wave!”

Jackie’s words caused Rudy to shudder as he had not realized that at all. He had been too happy earlier, thinking that the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion would definitely keep their promise and allow everyone there into Black Sun City. However, Jackie’s words gave Rudy a moment of realization.

He took a deep breath as he said anxiously, “Were all five of them not at the late stage of the innate realm? All five of them? Are you sure?!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Rudy with some praise. That question meant that Rudy was at least not a complete idiot. Rudy immediately saw through the key point of the problem.

Jackie nodded and said, “All of them!”

Those words were like large boulders on Rudy’s heart.

If all five of them were not at the late stage of the innate realm, then everything that had happened earlier was definitely problematic. The disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion clearly had ill intentions. If they really planned on doing an experiment, they would have grouped in some warriors of stronger levels as well. Yet, they did not do so. Even those wandering warriors that were stronger were still nothing in front of the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion.

They would not have caused that much trouble!

Chapter 2760
Rudy felt a chill down his spine as he reached out to grab Jackie’s arm and said, “What are they trying to do?”

Jackie took a deep breath as he said with a sliver of uncertainty, “They were probably speaking half-truths earlier. The five of them should have actually been pulled inside for an experiment. As for what kind of experiment it is, that’s hard to say.

“We won’t even know if they’ll end up dead or alive. If I’m not mistaken, Philip will still be coming out later, but not the five of them.”

Rudy’s body stiffened as his breathing sped up. His eyes darted all over as his heart started to race. After a long time, he whispered into Jackie’s ears, “Why don’t we leave this place? I feel very unsafe. Even if Black Sun City has true energy fields, we’d actually need to be able to get in there. The disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion are all bad people. Who knows what sort of plots they have up their sleeves!”

In truth, Rudy had been so excited earlier purely because he had been too angered by the Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples. He merely wanted to push Jackie toward leading the warriors around here to cause some trouble in order to teach those people a lesson.

Rudy had wanted them to know that even weak warriors were not to be trampled over. However, he was beginning to get worried. The Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples were too deep in with their scheming. Rudy might be dragged into it at any moment.

No matter how angry he was, the anger had all been swept away by his worry. After all, the true energy fields were only able to increase a person’s strength. It was actually not that useful for Rudy. He did not know what those people were planning, so it was far better to leave as soon as he could!

Rudy really was beginning to feel afraid. He was afraid that the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion would suddenly attack them.

After considering his own strength, he knew that he would merely be cannon fodder among them!

He could die at any moment of carelessness. He had been so excited in urging Jackie to go against the Unbreaking Pavilion purely because of his anger. He had not fully considered the circumstances. After thinking about it in detail, he finally started to feel afraid.

He took a deep breath and said, “Let’s hurry up and leave this place. It’s not easy for us to deal with them. What if they suddenly attack when they come out? What would we do then? Everyone’s already let down their guard against the Unbreaking Pavilion! If the Unbreaking Pavilion suddenly attacks, they would definitely panic. They were already the weaker side to start with. It probably wouldn’t take very long for most of them to die!”

As he said that, he looked around his surroundings. The wandering warriors were just like him earlier. They were all gathered together to discuss how they would be training earlier. Some of them were already incredibly relaxed.

They had completely thrown away all sense of alarm. If anything happened, it would not take too long for most of them to meet their end.

Jackie smiled bitterly, starting to feel like there was something wrong with Rudy's head. Rudy had just been urging him so excitedly earlier, and now Rudy was trying to leave the place like an incredibly scared bird.

Jackie let out a small sigh as he said, "I'm not planning on leaving this place. I want to see what these people are plotting."

Hearing that, Rudy's heart almost jumped out of his throat. He reached out and pulled at Jackie's arm, "Don't do that! Later, if…"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2761 - 2765

Chapter 2761
Jackie turned and looked at Rudy with a sharp gaze, “If you think that leaving is the right choice. You can leave yourself. Don’t try to change my mind.”

Before entering the Whirling World, Jackie had actually not wanted Rudy to come along with him. After all, that guy was just a burden to Jackie as he was completely useless. Rudy was also incredibly annoying, constantly chatting all the time. Yet, Rudy was like a fly that could not be chased away. No matter what Jackie said, Rudy did not want to follow the larger group.

Jackie was practically forced to bring him along. Even so, it did not mean that Jackie would be affected by Rudy. Every decision Jackie made had his own considerations. If he would be affected by someone else so easily, then he would have just followed the larger group.

Jackie’s words caused Rudy to completely shut up. Rudy finally sobered up. He understood Jackie somewhat and knew that Jackie was not someone who was easily swayed.

This time, he no longer dared to say anything else. He was forced to take a deep breath to control his apprehensive mood. Time ticked away, and after a long while, the closed city gates were opened again. Philip’s figure appeared in front of everyone once again.

This time, Derrick was not with Philip as Philip walked out of the city gates alone.

All of the wandering warriors looked toward Philip. They had greedy looks in their eyes as they wanted to enter Black Sun City.

Philip had a smile on his face as he faced everyone to announce, “They did not do that well. Even though they did not do anything major, they were all so shifty-eyed all the time. My fellow disciples and I couldn‘t really relax,”

Philip let out a long sigh. Those words unsettled everyone there.

What was that supposed to mean? Will they not be allowed inside?

Someone started to say, “What do you mean by that? Of course, they’d be shifty-eyed! Who wouldn’t feel greedy looking at so many valuable things? They aren’t saints. They didn’t do anything excessive, right? It means they don’t have the guts to do anything! They didn’t cross the line!”

“That’s right! We’re not saints here. They just took a few additional looks, what kind of trouble would that cause? We won’t let you use an excuse like that against us! Don’t try

to stop us from going in with that kind of excuse! You're just going against your promises!"

At that moment, no one really cared about what happened to the other five or why the other five did not come out. Instead, their full focus was on whether or not they could go in!

They thought that Philip was just saying that because he did not want to let them in. They thought that it was all just excuses!

He just wanted to go against the earlier deal. The disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion never wanted to let them in.

Philip took a deep breath before he motioned for them to stop. He temporarily halted their emotional roars. He smiled lightly as he said, "I didn't say you were all not allowed in. Can you please let me finish speaking before you get so excited!"

Philip purposely let out a helpless expression after he said that. He only continued speaking after everyone was thoroughly quiet. "I have thought about this matter for a long time. After all, we already made a deal with you. They might look sketchy, but they did not really do anything, so it wasn't too bad…"

"However, my senior was still worried, so we decided to let a few more people in first. If the few who go in this time aren't as sketchy as the last time, then we'll be sure that all of you won't cause us any trouble."

Chapter 2762
They were going to give the wandering warriors another chance! Everyone was thoroughly consoled by those words!

When they heard what Philip had said initially, they had thought that the Unbreaking Pavilion wanted to go against their words. However, when they heard that there was still another chance, they relaxed.

Everyone had thought that having their eyes on any of the valuables inside would be something incredibly normal. With Philip's warning, the next few who entered would definitely need to avoid doing so. As long as the Unbreaking Pavilion could not find any faults, everyone would still be able to enter Black Sun City.

There was only one thing everyone was focused on at that moment, which was whether or not they could enter Black Sun City and train using the true energy fields. They did not really care about anything else. As Philip said all of that, Jackie's frown never disappeared.

Rudy had completely lost all hope at that point. When he saw Philip walking out alone, he felt a chill in his heart. Jackie had been right when Philip appeared again, the five who previously were with him no longer were.

Rudy thought that if he asked where the five of them were at that moment, Philip would definitely tell everyone that the five of them were already training in the true energy fields. That was why they were not with him.

Rudy could tell that the answer would be just a bunch of nonsense. After being sure that there was something wrong with Philip, Rudy's earlier excitement was all thrown aside.

He reached out and pulled at Jackie's arm. He whispered and said, "What's the point of him doing this again? Were those five not enough? He's trying to pick out even more people. What kind of experiment are they doing?"

As he said that, Rudy was shuddering. If Jackie had not spoken, he would never have known about the hidden plot.

If Philip had chosen him, he would have happily entered Black Sun City behind Philip. He could not imagine what sort of disaster would await him. Jackie sighed before shaking his head.

"How could I know what kind of experiment they're doing? You just need to know that the consequences of going inside definitely won't be good. The fact that he's looking for more people definitely means that those five were not enough, and they needed more people."

Rudy's face darkened at that. Ever since entering Phoenix Valley, Rudy had been tortured in every way. He was firmly on the side of the weak. In Rudy's eyes, all of the wandering warriors gathered there were all weak and were in the same situation as him.

Seeing the weak being bullied by the strong caused Rudy's mood to sour incredibly.

At that moment, he really wanted to reveal the truth. He really wanted to tell all the wandering warriors that the Unbreaking Pavilion did not have good intentions and that they should not enter the city. However, Rudy knew that no one would believe him no matter what he said.

Rudy sighed helplessly as he whispered, "Are we going to just look on like this? Are we going to let more people go in and die?"

Jackie smiled coldly, "We won't just be looking on. Don't worry, we'll be able to join soon enough."

Jackie's words were quite meaningful, but Rudy felt his head spin as he looked at Jackie in confusion. However, before Rudy could even ask what he meant by that, he saw someone walking toward them.

Rudy looked over and felt his heart thump. The person walking towards them was Philip. At that moment, Philip still had a casual smile on his face. He looked like a friendly big brother.

Philip walked toward Jackie as if he already had a target. After arriving in front of them, he raised his hand and pointed at Rudy, and said, "You!"

After saying that, Philip turned to look at Jackie.

Philip could not help but frown when he saw that he could not figure out Jackie's strength. A sliver of doubt flashed on his face, but it quickly disappeared after he saw the badge on Jackie's chest.

Chapter 2763
He nodded slightly and said, "You as well. The two of you come together."

Jackie let out a cold snort. This guy did exactly what Jackie thought he would.

Philip was choosing the ones with the weakest strength. Since Jackie had deliberately left behind internal injuries, others were not able to see through his strength, which was why Philip was suspicious.

After seeing that Jackie was an alchemist, Philip's doubts disappeared. After all, alchemists were never strong, that was something everyone knew.

After choosing the two of them, Philip did not doubt that the two of them would follow him at all. He turned around and continued choosing the others.

Rudy started to panic as he looked over at Jackie. He reached out and pulled at Jackie's sleeves, "He wants both of us to go with him! What should we do? Are we just going to walk to our deaths?! Why don't we leave this place? I know you always have your own thoughts in mind, but it's not the time to be stubborn. We can't possibly fight against so many disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion!"

Rudy really was beginning to panic, and even his breathing started to get erratic.

Jackie helplessly pursed his lips as he turned around, patting Rudy on the shoulder.

"You don't have to say or do anything. Just leave the rest to me!"

After that, Jackie followed behind Philip and walked into the center of the group. Rudy's eyebrows were furrowed tightly as he followed reluctantly. However, he was already

used to following Jackie. Even if he was reluctant, he knew that he would definitely die if he left Jackie's side. After a moment of conflict, he followed along.

At that moment, Philip had already finished choosing the candidates. This time, he had picked out seven of them.

"Alright! Seven of you, follow me. Remember what I said earlier. Don't be as sketchy as the ones before, or my senior won't like it! If he feels like you guys will be trouble again, all of you will be chased away immediately!"

After saying that, Philip turned around and walked toward the city gates. At that moment, Jackie suddenly spoke, "I have a question. Could you please answer me?"

Philip froze in place at Jackie's words. He frowned and turned around somewhat impatiently. At that moment, he really wanted to enter and quickly solve those pending problems. He was not in the mood to answer any questions at all. However, he knew very well that he could not afford to act suspiciously in any way in front of all of them. Otherwise, the wandering warriors could very well find something out. He could not afford any accidents.

So, Philip controlled himself as he looked at Jackie, "You can ask me anything. I'll tell you anything that I can answer."

All of the wandering warriors were very happy with that answer.

Jackie's lips curled up as he answered meaningfully, "What kind of experiment will we have to go through after we enter? I'm guessing the earlier five are all already dead? Could you tell us how they died?"

Jackie's words stunned everyone present. Everyone looked at Jackie with a strange expression, wondering if something was wrong with Jackie's head.

After Jackie said that, Philip's expression suddenly changed. He frowned as he said, "What do you mean by that?! How are those five dead? What kind of nonsense are you saying? Are you trying to look for trouble?"

Jackie let out a light laugh. He was not bothered by Philip's attitude at all!

Chapter 2764
At that moment, Philip looked like a rattlesnake that had been startled. He immediately adopted a battle stance as he rushed in front of Jackie with widened eyes.

He said in an accusing tone, "It looks like you're just trying to cause trouble! I can't believe someone's trying to go against our deal even after the Unbreaking Pavilion decided to treat you all so sincerely. Didn't you hear our earlier offers? You just suddenly ran out and said all that. Are you just trying to stop everyone from entering

Black Sun City? I don't know what your intentions are. Why are you trying to disrupt our relationship with the wandering warriors?!"

It could be said that Philip's mind worked very quickly. After a few words, he twisted the problem into Jackie stopping everyone from entering the city. Since it concerned their own benefits, the wandering warriors were naturally swayed.

After Philip said that, some people lost their patience immediately. "What are you talking about, brat? Don't think that you can cause trouble just with a few words. We have brains too. You were just standing by the side and did not see anything at all. How are you so certain that the five who entered are all already dead. Even if you want to accuse people, you should find a more logical reason!"

"That's right! There's probably something wrong with his head. Does he really think that we'll rally behind him after making such an accusation? Why is he even trying to do this? Isn't it better for everyone if we get to enter Black Sun City together?"

"Who knows what's wrong with this guy…"

Various insults started to be flung at Jackie.

Jackie did not really have much of a change in expression at that. After saying all that, he already anticipated that the wandering warriors would have a negative reaction. However, Rudy could not really take it. It was clear that the rest of them were dumb.

Jackie stood up for the sake of justice, but the rest of them were slandering Jackie in disbelief instead. It was at that moment: that Rudy realized why Jackie acted that way. Even if Jackie really stood up and led the way like Rudy wanted, against the Unbreaking Pavilion, the wandering warriors would all have their own intentions in mind.

As long as the Unbreaking Pavilion made them an offer, they would turn around and bite Jackie instead.

The more Rudy thought about it, the more Rudy felt like he had been stupid. He coldly snorted and said loudly, "You're really a bunch of idiots that are helping the people who're trying to harm you. Do you really think the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion are good people?!"

"Do you think they would care about your opinions? Why don't you use your brains and think? How do these high-level clans usually look at us?! Why would they suddenly be concerned with us like that?"

Even though Rudy's words sounded harsh, it was the truth. As he shouted that, the ones who were shouting out suddenly went quiet. The atmosphere suddenly turned a little strange.

Philip frowned as he looked at Rudy coldly and said, “What are the two of you trying to do? You’re just trying to cause trouble. You don’t have any proof and are just spreading lies when you say the five of them are dead. Don’t you think whatever that you have said sounds like a joke? Even though the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion are usually not willing to mingle around with all of you, it doesn’t mean we’ll just kill other warriors randomly. Do you think we’re serial killers?”

The other disciples behind Philip rushed over as well.

They supported Philip by saying, “You wandering warriors are crossing the line. You started out demanding an explanation from us and to let you into Black Sun City. After we followed what you wanted, you suddenly jumped out and said we killed your compatriots!”

Chapter 2765
“You’re really crossing the line here. Learn some basic respect! I’m very curious. You, who asked the questions just now, why do you think those five are already dead? Did you see it? Or did you hear it? You don’t know anything, and you’re trying to slander us for some reason! I don’t know what you ‘re hoping to get out of this!”

The Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples all worked together as they accused Jackie over and over. The wandering warriors that stood at the front had very puzzled looks on their faces. They could not really understand what was being said and did not know who to listen to.

They felt like the Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples were reasonable, but Jackie and Rudy were not unreasonable either. The wandering warriors that had been causing such a ruckus earlier were instead the quietest at that moment. They did not know which side to support.

Philip narrowed his eyes as he coldly looked at Jackie.

Jackie could see an unrestrained killing intent in Philip’s eyes. If the situation had allowed it, Philip would definitely have attacked Jackie.

Jackie let out a laugh as he raised his head and said, “Sure enough, no one in a high position is ever a saint. You’re not just talented, you have a way with your words as well. You’re so good at twisting the truth.”

Jackie was very calm as he spoke as if he was having a normal conversation.

Philip frowned as he lightly snorted, crossing his arms. He wanted to see what Jackie was planning.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he continued, “You‘re right. I definitely didn’t see you do anything to those five, nor did I hear their cries. That’s not why I determined that the five of them were in danger.”

Philip let out a cold laugh and replied, “Then tell me how you determined that we did something to the five of them. I’ve seen many liars, but it’s the first time I‘ve seen one as calm as you.”

Jackie did not care that Philip had called him a liar at all, he remained as calm as usual and answered him, “Those five were chosen carefully by you. All of them were not that strong, and their internal energies were a mess. It’s obvious that they were all warriors who were forced to rise to the late stage of the innate level.”

“Those warriors were all just cannon fodder in your eyes. There are so many wandering warriors around, and many of them have already broken through to the spring-solidifying realm. Yet, you deliberately chose the weakest five.

“And now, the seven you’ve picked are in the same situation as the other five earlier! I was only chosen by you because of my sixth-grade alchemist badge. You determined that I’m weak due to my status as an alchemist. That’s why you chose me!”

Jackie’s words were all true.

Philip and the other disciples’ expressions slowly darkened as Jackie spoke. They had thought that Jackie was just looking for trouble without any evidence, but now it seemed like Jackie was definitely not an ordinary person!

After the wandering warriors heard Jackie’s reasoning, they started to feel like something was wrong as well.

Someone started to discuss loudly, “This guy’s right. I know two of the ones that were chosen earlier. Before entering the Whirling World, they were only at the early stage of the innate realm!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2766 - 2770

Chapter 2766
“The tallest one among the five was named Mitchell O’Connor, and he’s from my hometown. He‘s not that strong and was only at the early stage of the innate realm. I had told him not to come into the Whirling World, seeing as no one knows what awaits us.”

Jackie began to seem more trustworthy as everyone chimed in. Gazed pointed toward the Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples shifted to a much more serious look compared to the excitement earlier. Everyone was elated to hear that the Unbreaking Pavilion was going to loosen the requirements to enter the city, happy that they seemed to have been acknowledged somehow. Alas, it seemed as though there was more to it behind the scenes.

This group from the Unbreaking Pavilion who thought they were better than everyone else never truly considered the others as important at all! It finally made sense why their disciples were strangely unresponsive to their harsh words. It was as though the Unbreaking Pavilion accepted all their mockery!

Growing panicked, Philip retorted, “You’re all just blindly accusing now. I’ll have you know that I did choose those who weren’t very skilled, but that’s just so we could quickly eliminate any problems.

“If the five of them had been looking for trouble, we’d be able to get rid of them incredibly quickly if they were weak enough!”

Such words seemed more plausible than the last, but Jackie guffawed mockingly at this. Raising his voice, he debated, “What childish excuses you have. Everyone didn’t suspect anything initially solely because they were too excited to think about it properly. They didn’t properly put your words into consideration. You claimed that the five of them were allowed inside as an experiment, that you wanted to see if they would cause any trouble after they went inside. Don’t you think that’s a very naive reason?”

“You ‘ve already said everything. Anyone with any measure of intelligence wouldn’t cause you any trouble at that moment. The five of them knew they weren’t strong. They’d be no match for the disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion. How could they possibly dare cause you any trouble unless they don’t want to live anymore? Moreover, you’ve even said that you wanted seven more people. You even gave the reasons so clearly. What’s the point of the experiment as well? It’s as if you gave the full answer to a test before the test was even given! What’s the point of the test at all?”

Jackie’s words had stirred all the wandering warriors around him. They had been too excited earlier, so they never realized how much of a joke the reasoning the Unbreaking Pavilion had offered. At this moment, they finally realized that their motive and reasoning were filled with plot holes.

The reasons Philip and the others had said were practically tailor-made to pull more people inside. Everyone had finally realized this, and they were no longer excited. They might have been quite emotional, but no one had reacted too violently. After all, the Unbreaking Pavilion's disciples had just stopped them from entering Black Sun City. They had not been attacked at all.

The Unbreaking Pavilion's behavior had crossed the line; they did not seem to have any respect for the wandering warriors at all. It was as if the warriors were just livestock for slaughter!

How could the wandering warriors accept this?

Philip swiftly turned toward Jackie and scowled at him with intense hatred.

If Jackie had not popped up all of a sudden and revealed the truth, the seven new chosen warriors would have been led into Black Sun City, and their problems would have been solved!

"You filthy brat!" hissed Philip. "Don't know what sort of consequences your actions will bring? Don't think that I won't do anything to you just because there are so many wandering warriors gathered here. No one comes out well after offending the Unbreaking Pavilion."

Chapter 2767
Jackie squinted at Philip's words but did not respond. Instead, he raised his hand and retrieved his weapon from Mustard Seed. The moment he held the black sword, Jackie's aura completely changed. It was as if he was a spear that stood in the middle of heaven and earth; unbending and unyielding.

Philip looked at Jackie and suddenly laughed. "What? Are you planning on fighting me?"

The wandering warriors were shocked to see Jackie pulling out his sword, not expecting Jackie to dare challenge Philip. Even if they were at odds with each other, none of the warriors there would have dared challenge Philip alone.

After all, Philip was a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion, and the other disciples called him their senior, treating him with wholehearted respect. It meant that he was at least an inner disciple in the Unbreaking Pavilion. No matter how justified they were, it did not change the fact that their skills would not be enough against Philip. They would be forced to use their numbers advantage to even push them into fighting him.

None of them would dare to go against Philip alone. Surprisingly, someone actually did dare to, and it was a sixth-grade alchemist!

"Is he crazy?" a black-robed wandering warrior said. The others next to him broke into a flurry of discussions.

“Who knows what’s on his mind. Looking at him, is he planning on fighting to the death against Philip? Philip is a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. He has to be incredibly talented to be a disciple of an eighth-grade clan! This guy is a lunatic, I tell you. Why else would he dare point his weapon at Philip?”

At that moment, Philip had a mocking smile on his face as he looked at Jackie like he was looking at an idiot. It was the first time an alchemist had ever challenged him. He had encountered a myriad of opponents in his life, but it was the first time he had ever seen someone like Jackie.

The disciples behind him burst into cackles, believing Jackie was a complete tool. Who did he think he was to be so bold against the Unbreaking Pavilion?

One of the disciples behind Philip walked forward and said loudly, “Do you think you’re worthy of fighting against Philip? Do you want to fight that badly? Fight me, then. If you can survive three exchanges from me, I’ll admit defeat!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, nodding after some thought. “You seem like you want to die so badly, so I‘ll grant you your wish!”

Everyone there was stunned at Jackie’s words. He even seemed very confident in saying these things too. No one could understand where Jackie harnessed that energy from and how he did it.

The Unbreaking Pavilion disciple squinted, feeling like Jackie’s words were even more humiliating than just being mocked. At this point, the last string of his patience had snapped. He wanted nothing more than to trample on Jackie and show him it was meant to be powerful. The disciple swiftly launched toward Jackie. With a slash, his curved blade headed right toward Jackie’s throat.

The wandering warriors gaped at how nimble and quick the disciple moved. Truly, the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion were special.

Just with his speed alone would completely defeat most of the people there!

Chapter 2768
At that point, some had already grieved silently for Jackie, thinking that Jackie would not be able to avoid the attack.

Jackie merely released a small sigh as he stood perfectly still. When the disciple appeared in front of him, Jackie swung his weapon, not holding back in his attack.

Everyone heard something cracking as crack lines formed on the Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciple’s curved blade. The cracks rapidly and visibly expanded. In the next breath, the curved blade shattered into pieces. Everything happened so quickly that no one could react on time.

Jackie merely scoffed as he thrust his sword forward before he activated the laws of space. The blade looked like it was less than a meter away, but it pierced into the disciple's throat a second later.

Blood spurted from Jackie's opponent, though Jackie swiftly evaded before that could stain his clothes.

The Unbreaking Pavilion's disciple had lost every ounce of his pride at this minute, his eyes widening in shock as he unconsciously grabbed his pierced throat. He could not believe his face.

He pointed at Jackie with his right hand, obviously having something he wanted to say, but how could he?

Jackie had impaled his throat!

Gurgling pitifully, his body stiffened before he fell to the ground. To this, Jackie merely raised an eyebrow as he stood in place, all while keeping his sword away. Jackie had just used one attack to handle his opponent, and he did not even have much of a change in his expression the whole time!

Everyone around him was silent again as everyone gaped, unable to believe the sight before them.

"You murderer!" shouted Philip.

Jackie let out a laugh. "Why are you so good at twisting the truth? He challenged me, and I merely accepted. Since it's a challenge, a fight to the death is only normal!"

Philip's anger surged to the point that his entire body trembled. Looking at the corpse of his junior, he felt himself slowly being swallowed by the emotions that stormed within him. Shock, sadness, anger-these emotions haunted him repeatedly. He huffed roughly.

Meanwhile, everyone reacted as they began to comment on the short-lived battle.

"Isn't he an alchemist? Since when were alchemists so strong?"

"He must've been pretending. I refuse to believe an alchemist can be so strong. Earlier, he killed a disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion so effortlessly. Anyone who can enter the Unbreaking Pavilion, even from a runner disciple to an inner disciple, would all be very talented!"

"The Whirling World restricted everyone's levels to the late stage of the innate realm. Everyone's fighting with their own skills and techniques. Him killing his opponent in one strike means that his skills are way better than his opponents!"

“It made sense why he’s so calm from the start. If I was that skilled, I wouldn’t be afraid of this group, either!”

Jackie ignored the hatred he felt from the Unbreaking Pavilion as he turned to face the wandering warriors. “The Unbreaking Pavilion never planned on letting us into Black Sun City from the start. Even if we enter, we’ll only be dispensable for whatever plan they have.”

Chapter 2769
“Black Sun City doesn’t belong to the Unbreaking Pavilion, it belongs to all of the warriors in the Whirling World! Hear me, everyone! Let’s kill our way into Black Sun City!”

His words ignited the wandering warriors’ wrath as they believed in Jackie’s words. Even if the warriors were not that skilled, they refused to be overpowered like some animal. They refused to be the Unbreaking Pavilion’s stepping stone!

“You’re right. Black Sun City doesn’t belong to the Unbreaking Pavilion, it belongs to everyone in the Whirling World! The Unbreaking Pavilion is despicable and shameless. They’re trying to wear us all down, and we can’t just ignore that! The five who have gone in before us may have fallen, so let us seek justice for them!”

“That’s right! He’s right! We have to reclaim Black Sun City. The city doesn’t belong to the Unbreaking Pavilion!”

Jackie’s war cry had stirred the wandering warriors’ battle spirit. For so many years, they had been put down by high-grade clans, but all that had changed. Jackie was giving them a chance to turn the tides. None of them wanted to be cattle for slaughter No more!

Meanwhile, rage seized Philip like never before. Jackie had used the awe after revealing his true skills to thoroughly gain the respect of the wandering warriors. The matter had already advanced to a stage he never wanted it to, and this fed the flames of hatred he harbored toward Jackie.

He clenched his teeth and snarled “I’ll make sure you regret this, you insolent boy!”

Jackie let out a light laugh, not caring about his threat at all. Instead, he turned to tell everyone, “All of you, deal with those four! Leave Philip to me!”

They had strength in numbers, and that was an indisputable, useful fact. True, the wandering warriors alone would not be enough, but with all of them joined, they could no doubt deal with the Unbreaking Pavilion’s four disciples.

The disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion started to panic. They never expected the wandering warriors to band together to stand up against them!

Jackie activated the laws of space and appeared in front of Philip in a flash.

At that moment, Philip was forced to push his anger back as he fought Jackie with all his might. Despite underestimating Jackie initially, he had to admit that Jackie was capable of going toe-to-toe against him. After all, Jackie had killed his junior without even struggling. Even if his junior had underestimated Jackie before his fatal defeat, it was impossible to have done that without skill.

At this point, Philip was desperate to end Jackie for good. His hands constantly moved as he used spell after spell, distorting the space between his hands.

“Spatial Distortion!” shouted Philip.

What ensued was the sound of something rustling as the quiet space started to twist. It was as if a massive hammer had smashed into space and launched an attack.

Jackie frowned slightly.

Eighth-grade clans were impressive, undeniably. The skills and techniques they had hidden were not something ordinary clans could compare to. Spatial Distortion was definitely at the middle stage of the earth level. Looking at how familiar Philip was with the skill, he was at least at the second stage of mastery.

The shattered space turned into small shards. With a wave of Philip’s hand, the shards moved next to him. Jackie chuckled darkly as he condensed 75 Soul Swords in an instant.

Chapter 2770
With a wave of Jackie’s hand, the 75 Soul Swords shot into Jackie’s gray sword. Jackie used an upper ultimate god level technique and was already at the third stage!

Jackie was barely fazed, even if it was a chosen disciple standing in front of him. So what if Philip could be a chosen disciple?

Everyone in this world had been restricted to the late stage of the innate level. They were fighting with the strength of their techniques, and in terms of technique, Jackie had never lost before!

Philip was, of course, already at full strength after witnessing Jackie’s skills. The spatial shards violently spun around him as he controlled them. The shards disturbed the air around them, turning into a tornado with Philip at the center.

“Die!” roared Philip as he leaped and rushed toward Jackie.

The dancing spatial shards looked so dangerous, it was like they could destroy anything in the world. The violent wind stirred the sand on the ground, but the moment the sand touched the spatial shards, it disappeared.

“Die!” repeated Philip, screaming as though he was a deranged beast.

Jackie squinted at the raging winds before sighing and rid of the thoughts he had before. Raising his sword in his right hand, he swung the sharp end toward Philip. Destroying the Void turned into about a meter-long ray as it slashed right at Philip’s Spatial Distortion. The black-colored aura clashed with the spatial shards, and terrifyingly loud crackling echoed in the air.

The clash of the two skills caused incredibly strong shockwaves, and everyone else stopped mid-fight just to witness what was happening. The spatial shards that reflected the sunlight clashed against the pitch-black sword slash. While the slash looked inactive, it was obvious how it persistently pushed back against the shards.

The spatial shards that seemed to be able to destroy everything in the world suddenly disappeared after meeting the slash.

Jackie’s tearing slash was so sharp that the spatial shards failed to stop it!

“What?!” snapped Philip.

His powerful attack, the very technique he had been so proud of, was basically minced by Jackie!

Who was he? Why was he so strong?

Alas, Philip did not have the chance to ponder on the questions for too long as the pitch-black sword aura had been so quick that it appeared in front of him in a blink.

He was too late to react. The slash audibly cut through Philip’s clothes and pierced his chest, and at that very moment, a searing pain overtook him as he felt his soul being ripped apart. He had never felt such pain in his entire life. It was as if thousands of ants were biting at his soul!

“Argh!” a cry of agony pierced the atmosphere.

Nonetheless, Philip, being the proud man he was after being fed with many praises, tried to bite back the rest of his scream. It would be too humiliating for him if he did not. He could not stop himself from shouting at that moment. The pain caused him to lose all sense of rationality.

Jackie laughed coldly. If the battle had not been in the Whirling World, he might have needed to use some more effort to deal with that guy. Regardless, everyone was

restricted to the late stage of the innate realm in the Whirling World, and they were fighting with their martial skills!

Jackie's skills were undeniably much stronger than Philip's. Jackie would not even have been afraid of dealing with five or six disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion!

Meanwhile, the Unbreaking Pavilion's disciples were flabbergasted when they saw Philip struggling and screaming in pain on the ground. The scene felt so surreal. Philip had always been an existence that outer disciples practically revered, and he had never looked so pathetic before!

"Who is he? Is he from an eighth-grade clan as well? Is he from a ninth- grade clan?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2771 - 2775

hapter 2771
“How would I know the answer? I’ve seen most of the disciples from high-grade clans before, so why have I never seen this guy? Where is he even from?!”

The Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples felt their hearts quivering ominously as they talked about it.

Jackie was far too strong. It was one thing that Jackie had killed a fellow disciple in one attack, but Philip losing to him was an entirely different story. Philip had flat-out lost in a contest of strength, and his other four companions lost all hope at the sight.

The Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples were not the only ones terrified at this. In fact, a few of the wandering warriors were, too. At that moment, the warriors were certain that Jackie was not an alchemist despite the sixth-grade alchemist badge, but a truly strong warrior instead.

Frowning, Jackie sternly spoke, “Why haven’t you dealt with the remaining four swiftly? Do you want them to run away and report what’s happening here?”

With that, the warriors snapped out of their shock as they put the thoughts aside, continuing to fight.

The next part of the battle passed by very quickly. To cover all his bases, Jackie had attacked all four of them. They did not even have the chance to beg for mercy before Jackie killed them all.

Five corpses were kicked aside, and Jackie did not spare them another glance. Once everything was dealt with, he quietly looked at the city gates of Black Sun City. Even if those five have been dealt with, it did not mean they were in the clear.

He took a deep breath before he asked the warriors behind him, “Do you know how many of them came?”

This was Jackie’s main concern. The guards of the gates were not the ones to be worried about, but instead, the disciples inside were. The one called Derrick did not follow Jackie out again, so that meant Derrick was still inside.

When Derrick came out earlier, Jackie had taken note that Derrick’s strength was nearly on par with Philip’s. The regular warriors would be no match for him. Jackie was the only one who could deal with Derrick there. However, Jackie was not sure if there was anyone stronger than Philip within the city.

At that moment, Jackie had turned into the leader of the wandering warriors.

Those who knew of the information answered, “There should be around fifteen of them.”

“Yes, that should be about right. When they first came, they tossed out all the wandering warriors in the city. They were so fierce, too! Anyone who didn’t listen would be attacked. We were weak then and didn’t have a leader like you, so we didn’t dare stand up against them.”

Jackie could not help but raise an eyebrow at their answer. Only 15 men, yet these warriors were intimidated?

Jackie had thought that there would be at least four or five dozen warriors in the city!

Rudy had hidden far away earlier. After all, he was not well-prepared with skills and would only slow them down. Since everything had settled, he returned to Jackie’s side.

He immediately knew what Jackie was thinking and thus whispered, “There are so many valuable things in the Whirling World. The Unbreaking Pavilion wouldn’t let a large group of disciples just gather at one place unless it was a large city. Black Sun City obviously isn’t one.”

Jackie nodded, Rudy had a point. It was a small place, after all. No matter how strong the Unbreaking Pavilion was, they would not focus all their power on a small city. That would be too disadvantageous for them. Jackie agreed. If there were only a dozen or so people left in the city, he was confident enough to not be afraid if anyone stronger than Philip was inside.

With that, Jackie turned to face the wandering warriors behind him and spoke, “I know all of you just want to use the true energy fields within Black Sun City to raise your skills, but they’re still inside. We have to be very careful. There’s no telling what’s going on inside. We’ll have to send in some scouts to take a look.”

Everyone took a step back upon hearing Jackie’s suggestion.

Chapter 2772
The fact that about a dozen disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion were in the city terrified the wandering warriors. After all, they only managed to kill the five outside because they had outnumbered them. With double the numbers inside, they might not be able to succeed. Furthermore, everyone could tell that the disciples in the city would be the stronger ones. Their strength could not be measured, and perhaps even all of them might be as skilled as Philip!

There might be a lot of wandering warriors, but they were not strong enough to fight all of the Unbreaking Pavilion’s disciples. Only Jackie, in fact, was truly powerful. The moment they thought of how strong the people in the city could be, the warriors backed away. No one wanted to be the scouts that would be dispatched into Black Sun City.

Feeling helpless, Jackie's lips twitched at the warriors. He never planned on asking them to infiltrate the city, anyway. After all, they were no idiots. Everyone knew that the first to go in would be cannon fodder.

While Jackie could keep his calm, Rudy, who stood next to him, could not. Many of the warriors would have been tricked by the Unbreaking Pavilion had it not been for Jackie.

Who knew what would befall them then?

All that, yet the wandering warriors dared to retreat at such an important time!

Enraged, Rudy turned around, his eyes wide open as he snapped at the warriors, practically shouting, "Do you know what would've happened to you had Jackie not intervened? Don't you think retreating now is a little shameless?"

The warriors fell silent at this, not daring to say anything. After all, their lives were on the line.

After a while, one of the warriors finally spoke, "There are about ten of them inside, and they'll know something happened if they see all of us enter. They'd attack us on sight. Whoever is the first to go in will die, and to add into the mix, we're not that strong. Them attacking us will spell the end of us all. Is it wrong that we don't want to die?"

The others agreed with this.

"That's right, we just don't want to die! Is there anything wrong with that? The person leading into the city will die the worst kind of death. We're retreating to protect ourselves!"

Rudy's face reddened in anger upon hearing these words. He realized how much of a joke his earlier thoughts were. These warriors were useless, chickening out when the moment needed them the most.

Rudy clenched his fists tightly, wanting nothing more than to pull that person up by the collar and shake him. Meanwhile, Jackie sighed helplessly, already expecting this reaction.

The wandering warriors were all not affiliated to any force, and their lives were their invaluable treasure. It was natural that they would not want to rush in first. However, Rudy did not know this, which only led him to feel anger and disappointment.

Jackie reached out and pulled Rudy, who was facing the wandering warriors, causing him to head toward the city gates.

“I’m doing this right now not because of what you’ve said,” said Jackie loudly. “I have my goals, and no one can disrupt my plans. You don’t have to feel guilty. Just leave the rest to me.”

Rudy pursed his lips helplessly. He knew that Jackie had always been a stubborn person, and Jackie could not possibly go against what he believed in. However, Rudy still felt like he was at fault.

He wanted to get the wandering warriors to stand up for themselves, but he never expected them to be so heartless.

Chapter 2773
Jackie turned and faced the wandering warriors. Raising his head, he loudly spoke, “Everyone, settle down. I know your concerns, so I‘ll be the one to lead the way into Black Sun City while you‘ll all follow. However, there’s one condition you need to obey. If you turn and flee the moment anything happens, you’ll make an enemy out of me, too. I’ve always kept true to my word, so you’d do well to heed them!”

Jackie thus walked toward the city gates alone.

Everyone felt their hearts skipping a beat upon hearing Jackie’s words, and they believed his words were true. After all, someone as talented as Jackie would be able to do anything he said he would. Everyone exchanged a complicated look with each other, but they no longer dared to discuss anything else at that moment.

They looked on as Jackie entered Black Sun City and, without much of a choice, followed after him. They were then met with a small plaza about 30 meters wide, and on the plaza were lights of various colors.

Jackie stood in the middle of the plaza as he curiously looked at everything before him. It was incredibly different from what he had expected. The moment he entered the city, he had been met with a small plaza that had various lights around it.

The beams of light were of various colors and never intersected. They formed their own groups and never touched each other.

Jackie looked to the left and noticed that it was illuminated with parallel shades of black and green. Before him was a red light, an orange light, and a purple light.

The lights were not that bright and had a soothing effect as they fell on everything. It seemed to calm their souls even, which shocked everyone who entered Black Sun City. It was far different from what they expected. The plaza seemed relatively large, so there was enough space for everyone to enter. Oddly enough, it seemed somewhat cramped, too.

Jackie stood in the center and observed everything. “Why is it like this?” he mumbled to himself.

Meanwhile, Rudy was so shocked at the sight that he was speechless for a good few minutes. Before entering Black Sun City, he had wondered what it would look like inside. What he did not expect was the city to have lights of different colors. There were not even any buildings in sight, either.

After the initial shock, the wandering warriors started to talk.

“Is this Black Sun City? Why don’t I see anything other than these colored lights? I thought it would be an endless city!”

“Who knows? Aren’t there supposed to be energy fields inside? Where are the true energy fields?”

Everyone speculated endlessly yet could not come to a certain answer.

Rudy tugged at Jackie’s sleeve and whispered, “Thankfully, there are no disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion on guard here. I thought we’d be in a big battle the moment we entered.”

Jackie nodded, having the same thoughts as Rudy. He was not as positive as those wandering warriors. He had made full preparation before they even entered.

Chapter 2774
Jackie would have attacked the moment he spotted any disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion on guard. Only that way would he be able to seize the initiative. However, he never expected the plaza to be so empty, and all he could see were the lights that he could not figure out the purpose.

Where were the ten disciples? Could they have entered the lights?

Rudy frowned and said, “Why do you think Philip was roping in people? What were they for?”

Jackie shook his head. He had thought that he would get an answer after entering, but his questions merely grew at this point.

All of a sudden…

“What are you doing?!” came a shout.

Jackie immediately turned to look and saw a green-robed wandering warrior stretching a finger to touch the lights outside the plaza. He was touching a white-colored light out

of curiosity, not really wanting to really touch the light. The shout scared him, however, and his hand shook.

His finger touched the white light before him in the process, and everyone immediately held their breath. The white light suddenly turned green.

The next second, the green light enveloped the person, and everyone watched the green-robed man shouting out for help with all his might, but no one stepped forward to save the man. In just seconds, the green-robed man was sucked into the green light and vanished.

Everyone shuddered at that sight. No one expected the lights around the plaza to be capable of that. They then thought of those disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion.

Could they have gone somewhere with that method?

The expressions of the remaining wandering warriors darkened. Everything had happened far too quickly, and they did not even have the time to fully process it. Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he stared where the green-robed man disappeared. After a short moment, the green light shifted to its original white color. It was as if nothing happened.

Rudy‘s face paled in fear as he grabbed Jackie’s arm. “The lights can eat people! I’m lucky that I was far away…”

Jackie frowned, not answering Rudy. He merely thought deeply about another problem. After a long time, he raised an eyebrow. If he wanted to clear his doubts, he would need someone else to touch the light.

He turned to look at where the green-robed man disappeared. “Does anyone know him? Is he a wood element specialist?”

Everyone had their own attributes that they were good at. When choosing skills and techniques to master, they would be more inclined toward their specialization. That was why warriors were separated into their respective elements. There were fire element warriors, spirit element ones, and even wood element ones.

Jackie’s question was quickly answered. “He’s my friend, and his name is Bobby! You’re right, though, he was a wood element warrior. How did you know that?”

The person looked at Jackie curiously. It was not just the person who answered who was looking at Jackie curiously, but Rudy was as well. How did Jackie know what that warrior was specialized in?

Was it because of the green robes?

Chapter 2775
Jackie let out a light laugh as he explained, “You don’t have to worry about how I determined what his specialization is just yet. All you need to know is that Bobby is safe. He’s been transferred into the true energy field. If he’s smart, he’ll probably start training immediately.”

Jackie then fell silent as he once more turned to look at the lights around him. Meanwhile, everyone began to ramble about the events.

A few of them had asked Jackie questions, but Jackie ignored all of them as he merely observed the lights. Even though Jackie was just speculating, he was their leader for the time being, so his words obviously carried some weight. If Jackie was right, that Bobby was already in a true energy field training, would they not be at a disadvantage if they entered late?

The wandering warriors were all eager to get started, knowing that they could be losing out. No one wanted to give up on any potential rewards!

A short while after that, someone else finally took a step forward. He had gray clothes on and a beard. He walked to the nearest light before him, and this caught Jackie’s attention.

The person reached out at the red light, and the moment he did, the red light immediately turned yellow.

What happened next was just like what happened to Bobby. The yellow light enveloped the person’s body, and the person was sucked in immediately. The light turned back to red after the person vanished from sight.

Jackie let out a sigh of relief. It was just as he thought!

With the first, there would naturally be the second. The other wandering warriors started reaching out toward the lights, and it was not long until their numbers dwindled. From the initial fear came the calm, after all.

Rudy, meanwhile, felt restless. He whispered into Jackie’s ear, “Since everyone’s already entered, we should go.”

Rudy had thought that Jackie would have done something after three people were sent in, yet Jackie made no moves whatsoever, still composed and standing still. Instead, it was Rudy who started to get anxious.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy. “There’s no need to panic. They’re all not using their heads because they’re worried about losing out. They entered so impatiently, but they forgot that the ten disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion are still inside.”

Rudy felt like his head was doused with a bucket of cold water, snapping him out of his restlessness upon realizing Jackie was right. Disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion were still inside, and it would not end well if they were to meet.

Rudy was incredibly conflicted as he grabbed Jackie's arm. "Then, what do we do?"

Jackie turned and looked at Rudy, helplessly pursing his lips. He had not planned on bringing Rudy along. Rudy, truthfully, was slowing him down. Nonetheless, there were times when Jackie had to be worried for Rudy. After all, they were companions.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2776 - 2780

Chapter 2776

Jackie weighed the situation carefully before he earnestly responded to Rudy, “You can’t enter with me. If my judgment is correct, we’ll end up in different spaces. You’re an alchemist without much of a need to improve your strength. Once I enter, head out of the city and find a safe place to wait for me. If I’m not out within ten days, continue on your own.”

Jackie then took out a sound transferring array from Mustard Seed and placed it into Rudy’s palm. “I‘ll contact you with this when I’m out.”

Rudy touched the sound transfer array in his hand as nervousness bubbled at the pit of his stomach. “I want to…”

“There’s a limit to how nosy you can be,” interjected Jackie before Rudy could continue. “With your skills, you won’t be able to survive the moment you enter anywhere remotely dangerous. I’ve already said that the two of us will end up in different spaces. You won’t be able to survive on your own!”

Rudy’s lips twitched at this, but he had to admit that Jackie had a solid point. The only thing he could do was ride on Jackie’s coattails, and that anytime Jackie reaped a reward or two, he could get a little.

Rudy was no fool, he knew that things would go sour for him very quickly. He knew that Jackie was doing this for his sake.

Pondering on this for a while, Rudy asked, “How do you know we’ll end up in different places?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he asked earnestly, “What attribute do you specialize in as a warrior?”

Rudy’s brow raised at this question. “I’m a metal-attribute warrior.”

Jackie nodded and let out a slight laugh before he said, “I’m confident we’ll be teleported to different places. I’m a soul attribute warrior while you specialize in metal. Trust me, only those with the same attribute will end up together, while those with different attributes will be separated.”

“Why are you so sure?” Rudy asked curiously.

Jackie let out a sigh before he answered, “Anyone with half a brain can figure it out. I won’t waste any more time with you. Just do what I told you to do.”

In the end, Jackie pushed Rudy out of Black Sun City. This city was unsafe for Rudy. Even though Rudy was not willing to at all, he knew that it was the right thing for him to do.

With Rudy out of the city, Jackie was the only person left in the plaza. He faced the light beams of different colors at the plaza and quietly looked on for a while. After that, he walked right toward the black-colored light, not hesitating at all to reach his right hand out.

The moment he inserted his hand into the dark-colored light, a pitch-black ray enveloped Jackie. He then felt his body go light as he was sent into a different space. Jackie knew that he was being teleported, but he had no idea where he was headed to.

A short while passed, and the pitch-black light finally dispersed. He could finally feel solid ground under his feet. By the time he got a clear look at his surroundings, Jackie was stunned.

At that moment, there was a massive hall in front of him. On the uppermost part of the hall were carvings of dragons and phoenixes, with the words “Purple Soul Hall” engraved on them. The entire hall was surrounded by dense gray energy. The energy even had a faint purplish glow to it.

Jackie frowned as he looked at the gates in front of the hall. At that moment, the gates were closed, and he was unsure if anyone else was inside.

Jackie turned to his back and saw that the direction he had come from was just pitch-black. He stood before the hall for a long time before he headed toward the gates.

Chapter 2777
Jackie was on his guard as he approached the gates. Despite his wariness, he pushed open the door to the Purple Soul Hall.

With a creek, the insides of the hall were fully displayed to Jackie. In front of a massive stone plate were two men dressed in black clothes. Looking at the patterns on the men’s clothes, it was obvious that the two of them were from the Unbreaking Pavilion. Jackie’s brows furrowed as he stopped in his tracks immediately.

The moment Jordan Fisher saw Jackie, he burst into laughter and walked up to Manfred Plume, patting his shoulder. “I won!”

Jordan then opened his hand and wiggled his fingers. “You bet five thousand spirit crystals. Hand them over.”

Manfred let out a snort, bitter about his loss but complied with their bet nonetheless. “I can’t believe that brat Philip managed to find a soul attribute warrior. I thought there won’t be any soul attribute warriors in that group of trash.”

“We’re lucky, then!” said Jordan with a pleased expression. “I thought there won’t be any soul attribute warriors among that trash as well. I was planning on leaving if no one came in within two hours.”

Both Jordan and Manfred talked so openly, not even bothering to lower their voices. Jackie had heard all of it, and his thoughts were thoroughly cleared up after hearing all that.

It seemed like they still did not realize that something had happened outside. They thought that Jackie was ushered inside by Philip. Of course, it was rather easy to understand why they would think that way. He would probably have thought that way in their position as well. If he had not suddenly appeared outside of Black Sun City, those people would all have probably followed Philip inside and been sent here.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, not bothering with both Manfred and Jordan as he instead stared at the massive stone plate behind them. The stone plate was exuding a purplish-black glow.

The words “Purple Soul Plate” were written on it, which was obviously the name of that plate, and a lot of words were carved into the plate as well. Jackie took a good look at it, and his expression immediately changed.

Many of his earlier questions were answered at that moment. What was on the stone plate was none other than the rules to obtain rewards. The Purple Soul Stone connected to another space, and as long as two people placed their hands on the stone plate, they would be transported!

Countless purple soul beasts were waiting for them in the other space, however. Whoever killed even more purple soul beasts would be rewarded by entering the next space.

It was a competition that rewarded the person who did better. However, the difference between this and other competitions was the fact that the one who lost would immediately be punished. It was a fatal punishment as well.

On the bottom of the Purple Soul Plate was written in large golden words, “The winner will earn endless rewards. When the defeated return to Purple Soul Hall, they will be attacked by lightning, and their soul will disintegrate”

Jackie finally understood why they wanted to send the wandering warriors into Black Sun City. The ones they chose were all weaklings, too. They wanted to cheat.

If it was a normal competition, they would not have been so afraid, but the price the defeated had to pay for this one was far too great. It was thus natural that they did not want their fellow disciples to die. It just so happened that many wandering warriors were

outside of Black Sun City, and the Unbreaking Pavilion were elated to send these people to die in their stead. It would even allow them to win countless rewards.

Manfred smiled and said, “I’ll give this chance to you and wait a little longer. Philip might still be able to find some more soul attribute warriors.”

Jordan looked at Manfred with a look of gratitude. “Well, thank you, then! You know as well that I’ll be sent somewhere else after handling things here. I‘m a bit short of time, so thank you for understanding.”

Chapter 2778
Manfred and Jordan carried on with their conversation, seemingly not caring that Jackie could hear them. After all, Jackie would die in their hands in mere moments, and dead men would tell no tales.

Jordan turned to look at Jackie. “You don’t seem afraid. Could my junior have told you everything before you entered?”

Jackie’s calmness piqued Jordan‘s curiosity. After all, anyone would be able to understand what they were talking about, so long as they could think straight, that was. Furthermore, the Purple Soul Plate was right behind them, and the rules were explained. Anyone literate would be able to understand the rules. As long as they understood the rules, they would be able to figure out what awaited them.

Oddly, Jackie seemed all too calm even when hearing and reading everything. It was as if he did not know anything as he stood on the spot, which made Jordan both curious and suspicious.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. “Why would I be afraid?”

Those words stunned Jordan and Manfred. This man could actually say something that serious! It was as if the two of them were not disciples of an eighth-grade clan, but runner disciples of some insignificant small clan. Jackie did not seem to regard them highly at all!

His attitude rendered Jordan and Manfred speechless, and they wondered if he was sane at all.

Manfred laughed in frustration. “Is there something wrong with your head? Don’t you know where we’re from? You even asked us why you’ d be afraid. Do you truly think you’d survive a battle against Jordan?”

Jackie let out a snort, not wanting to bother answering Manfred. Naturally, he did not care about either Manfred or Jordan. Even though the two of them were from an eighth-grade clan, they were probably inner disciples. Jackie might be a little worried had they been chosen disciples instead.

It was understandable why Manfred felt insulted by Jackie‘s lack of response.

No low-class warrior had ever underestimated him ever since he became a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. Any warrior of that class would always try to butter him up in hopes of gaining some sort of favor.

This fool before them had the robes of an alchemist and even had a sixth-grade alchemist badge. Anyone would be able to figure out that the guy was at the middle stage of the innate level at best, yet an alchemist at that level was actually facing him with such an arrogant attitude.

Manfred was enraged at the thought. So what if the guy was an alchemist?

It was not like Manfred had never seen other alchemists. Even seventh-grade alchemists would never dare ignore him!

Manfred walked toward Jackie and stopped only when he was a meter from Jackie. His sharp eyes measured Jackie.

Jackie’s lips twitched somewhat helplessly. Everyone seemed to love looking at him with that expression.

Manfred narrowed his eyes. “It’s the first time I’ve ever seen someone as bold as you. Don’t you know what’s about to happen to you?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not wanting to bother dwelling on Manfred’s question. After all, no matter what he said, Manfred would never think that Jackie had a chance to win.

Jackie merely let out a smile as he changed the topic, saying, “Do you have the map of the Whirling World?”

He asked a question, but his tone was very firm. The thought already passed Jackie’s mind when they were talking to each other so carelessly.

Chapter 2779
In truth, the Whirling World had not been opened for too long. From how large the Whirling World was, no one could have explored the entire realm. Many things were only in the preliminary stages. However, based on Manfred and Jordan’s conversation, it seemed like they had figured out everything about the Whirling World, which piqued Jackie’s interest as questions surfaced in his mind.

Jackie had stunned Manfred yet again. He felt like Jackie’s thoughts jumped far too quickly, and that something must be wrong with his mind.

Jordan, who had just been enjoying the show by the side, raised an eyebrow. His lips twitched as he said, “Why are you asking that?”

Jackie composed himself and answered, “I’m just curious. In the end, this match is a fatal one where someone will surely die, and the defeated will forever keep this secret. Since that’s the case, what do you have to hide?”

Jackie maintained his casual self as he spoke, it was as if he was not the one who was going to die. Jordan exchanged a look with Manfred. Both of them were speechless.

This man was mind-boggling, be it in the way he spoke or in his expression, different from regular people. It was as if Jackie was filled with confidence no matter what he did, but where did his confidence stem from?

He was just an alchemist. Did he think he could beat experts of the spring solidifying realm?

Even though the thought constantly played in both their minds, Jackie’s words had effectively convinced them.

Jackie was right. He would die by their hands, anyway, and he could not possibly tell secrets afterward. There was no reason they could not tell him some things. He was going to die, after all, there was no problem for them to brag a little.

Jordan walked over slowly, heading toward Jackie as he said, “We do have a map of the Whirling World in our hands, and it’s a complete map, too. How did you know that, though?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said seriously, “I guessed it from how you were speaking just now, but didn’t the Whirling World just open up? How did you get the map? Does Phoenix Valley have a map, too?”

The questions made Manfred and Jordan second-guess themselves, but it was only for a brief moment as they were, at this point, already confident in themselves. Instead, they answered Jackie truthfully.

Jordan said, “The Whirling World might’ve just opened not too long ago, but haven’t you heard that the Whirling World is actually in the Valley of Enlightenment? Since it’s in the Valley of Enlightenment, then we have a way to get a map of the Whirling World. Phoenix Valley has it too, of course. This was always a plan from Phoenix Valley and us, the Unbreaking Pavilion.”

Jordan’s answer completely stunned Jackie. He could not believe that he had been right, but there was a chill in his heart because of it.

This journey to the Whirling World had been plotted by the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley all along. These two forces that were publicly mortal enemies were, in fact, working together in secret. Everything they did might have just been a smokescreen to hide from everyone else in Middle Province.

The more Jackie thought about it, the more anxious he got. Everything he did not understand before suddenly became somewhat clearer.

This explained why both the Phoenix Valley and Unbreaking Pavilion were at war, despite possible scrutiny from others. It was no wonder they seemed locked in an incredible battle on the surface, but it still did not affect their foundations. It was all just a ruse. They could have been working together from the start!

Chapter 2780
Everything had been done just to prevent other forces from messing things up after knowing the truth. Everything felt like a joke the more Jackie delved into the matter. Both Phoenix Valley and Unbreaking Pavilion were utterly despicable!

Jackie sighed as he raised his head and asked again, “The grudge between the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley had just been a ruse after all? Do all of you disciples know that?”

Jordan raised an eyebrow, a bit alarmed by Jackie’s question. Wandering warriors typically would not have asked something like that, but at the thought that Jackie was to meet his demise soon, he did not bother thinking too deeply about it.

He thus nodded without any hesitation. “It’s not like every single disciple in the Unbreaking Pavilion knows about it, though, there aren’t many who know. It’ s basically some chosen disciples as well as the more valued inner disciples.”

Jordan raised his head proudly at his own explanation. It was obvious that the two of them were among the valued inner disciples.

Jackie did not feel more relaxed at the answer. Instead, he felt anger for being toyed around with.

The elders knew everything, but they did not even let him look at the map even if he knew. Even if they could not give the whole map to Jackie, they could have at least let him look at the important places.

He had entered the Whirling World without knowing a single thing. Even though Jackie was not afraid, he had his concerns. The elders of Phoenix Valley knew that, but they still hid the truth from Jackie.

Jackie felt like he had been completely fooled. He could understand the fact that he had not been in Phoenix Valley for that long and that they could not possibly tell him everything, but they could have at least given Jackie some help.

They did not tell him anything at all!

In truth, Jackie had not gained that much from Phoenix Valley. He did obtain a promising amount of spirit crystals from refining pills, but that was down to his hard work. He even had to pay certain fees for them. He single-handedly obtained victory for Phoenix Valley against Sky Peak Pavilion, too. Without him, Phoenix Valley would have lost that tournament. Not only would Phoenix Valley lose a lot of resources, but it would also decimate their reputation.

Jackie had contributed a lot to Phoenix Valley, but they did not seem to appreciate that at all. They knew the truth, but they did not give Jackie any help nor a hint.

To this, Jackie could not help but feel bitter. He sighed as he looked up at the Purple Spirit Plate in exasperation.

“You’ve asked so many questions, and we’ve answered all of them. You have to answer the questions I ask you now,” said Jordan with a raised eyebrow.

Jackie nodded and turned to look at Jordan.

With a smile, Jordan narrowed his eyes and sized Jackie up as he asked, “What‘s all this confidence about? Do you not understand the meaning of fear?”

Jackie raised his head and answered Jordan, “Courage is something that comes naturally. I might end up afraid if I’m facing a formidable warrior, but I don’t feel much facing the two of you.”

Even though Jackie’s tone was as calm as usual, Jordan and Manfred could still feel the disdain in his voice. This guy was underestimating them!

What gave him the right to do so?

Jordan and Manfred got angrier the more they thought about it. This fool was just too bold. Jordan had not wanted to be too petty with someone who was about to die, but he found himself struggling to hold back from pulverizing Jackie. He wanted Jackie to know how close to death he was.

Looking at Jordan about to make a move, Jackie suddenly let out a sneer as he pointed at the Purple Soul Plate.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2781 - 2785

Chapter 2781
“Read the rules before you attack. Anyone who makes a move in this hall will be attacked by the Purple Soul Hall’s aura without prejudice. Torment will befall upon their soul.’’

Jordan felt as though he was dunked in cold water upon hearing those words, and it snapped him out of his angry trance.

Manfred hurriedly grabbed onto Jordan’s arm from behind him. “Don’t get so worked up, Jordan. Black Sun City is a treasure left behind from ancient times. Our levels of strength are so weak right now, and we can’t possibly go against the laws of Purple Soul Hall.”

Jordan’s face stiffened as he forced himself to withhold his anger. He looked at Jackie coldly, gritting his teeth as he snarled, “I won’t bother with a dead man like you!”

Jackie laughed, unfazed by his words.

Manfred frowned as he said, “You’re looking rather confident, brat! Are you possibly planning on not putting your hand on the Purple Soul Plate and not fighting against us?”

Jordan’s eyes widened at Manfred’s guess. He felt like that could very well have guessed Jackie’s intentions, which made him internally panic.

He shouted, “Keep dreaming! Even if we don’t actually attack, he’ll still be able to force you into the Purple Soul Plate without using any skills. Don’t think of trying any petty tricks!”

Manfred nodded seriously.

At that moment, he suddenly had a thought in his mind. He retrieved a pill from his storage ring as he said with a cold smile, “This pill is called the Soul Melting Fill, and upon taking this, you’ll feel your soul burning as though grilled in the flames of hell if you don’t take the antidote within an hour. That pain isn’t something you can compare to physical pain, of course. Even sturdy, trained men will suffer immensely after taking this pill and follow our instructions in the end! You can’t escape it!”

Jackie laughed at their threats, not taking their words to heart. From the start, he had not planned on avoiding the life-and-death battle at all.

The Purple Soul Plate wrote that only the victor would be able to obtain the treasures within the Purple Soul Hall, and Jackie did not enter Black Sun City just for sightseeing. He was looking for treasures to help improve his strength.

He raised an eyebrow and said, “You don’t have to waste your time to think of all that; I’ve never planned on not participating in this match. Everything that needs to be said has been said. There’s no need to delay things anymore.”

Jackie thus walked toward the Purple Soul Plate. While the other two were still stunned, he placed his hand on the plate. The Purple Soul Plate suddenly shot out rays of purplish-gold light the moment Jackie put his hand on it, and it illuminated Jackie’s right hand.

Jackie turned around with a frown. “I’m ready. Are you two still going to waste time?”

Manfred and Jordan finally reacted.

Jackie’s behavior exceeded their expectations. They were both so sure that Jackie would try something against them, but the fool was actually even more eager than they were!

Jordan frowned. Since Jackie had already done that, they would seem petty if they wasted any more time.

Chapter 2782
Jordan turned to nod at Manfred as he then walked to the other side of the Purple Soul Plate, placing his hand on the plate as well. Just like what happened before, the purple rays of light enveloped his hand the moment he did.

A thunderous rumble was heard, and the three of them were taken aback at the same time. Before they could even react, two rays of dark purple light covered Jordan and Jackie. The next second, both of them disappeared from the hall.

It was an incredibly barren world. Other than the yellow soil on the ground, Jackie and Jordan could not see anything else. Raising their heads, all they could see was the purple sky that encompassed everything. They had already read the rules on the Purple Soul Plate, and Jackie knew that they would be sent to a different world for a battle to the death. Nonetheless, he was surprised that the battle was done individually.

At that moment, a deep voice was heard in the skies, saying, “The duration of the match will be the length of a candle. In the time it takes for a candle to burn out, whoever kills even more Purple Soul beasts will win!”

Jackie sighed, feeling the heat of the moment slowly getting to him. He might have been nervous during competitions that he had faced before, but he never felt the pressure he was feeling at this very moment. It was probably because of the time limit, as well as the fact that he could not see Jordan.

Suddenly, a dark purple-colored mist started to appear around him. The mist suddenly moved, covering everything with Jackie at the center.

Jackie frowned, pulling out a dark gray sword from Mustard Seed as he readied himself. He started to hear something crackling, sounding like something had shattered. The deep purple mist around him grew denser soon after, and Jackie's eyebrows furrowed even more tightly.

After a few moments, the mist suddenly dispersed. It was then did Jackie notice that a myriad of beasts, all formed with purple-hued gems, had formed around him. The gems were transparent, too. If Jackie did not see the facial features of the beasts on the heads, Jackie would have thought they were all just an ore.

Those must have been the Purple Soul beasts that the Purple Soul Plate talked about. The Purple Soul beasts were about the height of half a person, with rows of teeth lining up in their mouths. These beasts stared at Jackie pointedly, as though they were staring at their prey. They looked like they wanted to tear him apart.

"Middle stage of the innate level… Late stage of the innate level! There are even spring solidifying realm beasts!" said Jackie to himself.

At a glance, there were over 100 Purple Soul beasts around him, and most of the Purple Soul beasts were at the middle or the late stage of the innate realm. There were fewer spring solidifying realm beasts, but their number was nothing to scoff at.

Jackie felt like he was in trouble. He could very well struggle if these beasts rushed at him altogether.

It was hard to fight outnumbered. No matter how strong he was, there were too many beasts he had to face!

Jackie took a deep breath and removed the troubling thoughts from his mind. His hands constantly moved as seals formed quickly, and in a flash, 75 Soul Swords appeared in front of Jackie.

Jackie waved, and the 75 Soul Swords merged into one, turning into a grayish-black light that condensed around his gray sword. The gray glow started to hum.

Jackie made sure he was in his best condition, and ten of the Purple Soul beasts started to rush at Jackie.

Chapter 2783
Of the ten beasts, nine were at the middle stage of the innate level and one at the late stage. All of them bared their fangs as they viciously stared at Jackie.

Jackie sighed in relief upon recognizing the situation, and his worry that all these beasts would jump him altogether was false after all. With all of them split into batches, the battle would be much easier for him. He rushed forward with both his hands on the sword's hilt. He shouted out as he swung toward the ten Purple Soul beasts. Destroying

the Void turned into a slash that sped toward the ten Purple Soul beasts at a visible pace.

The black slash turned into a crescent shape in mid-air, looking to be about 9 meters wide. Even though no intense energy fluctuated from the slash, it moved forward constantly.

The ten Purple Soul Beasts, however, acted as though they were not concerned about dying, that Jackie was all that they needed to deal with.

The rumbling slash clashed against the ten Purple Soul beasts, but the sharp slash broke through the Purple Soul beasts' defenses in a flash.

What surprised Jackie was that the bodies of the Purple Soul beasts looked solid, but they crumbled like paper after they were hit with Destroying the Void.

Destroying the Void was a soul attribute attack that could slash through a person's body and straight toward the soul, but it did not truly deal that much physical damage.

This technique should have hit the Purple Soul beasts like before, hitting their souls by passing through their bodies… But it did not happen like Jackie thought it would.

Destroying the Void started to display an immense destructive power when it slashed against the beasts. The creatures did not even last for a few seconds before they shattered under the might of Destroying the Void. The ten beasts disappeared into thin air. The speed was so quick that it surprised Jackie.

"Is their body compositions different from what I expected?" said Jackie with a frown.

Meanwhile, in another isolated space, ten Purple Soul beasts were attacking Jordan, who bravely faced them with a determined expression. He was incredibly close to Philip, and they even used the same skills.

Spatial shards surrounded Jordan. The Purple Soul beasts lunged toward him, but try as they might, they could not come close to him. The sharpness of the spatial shards was not something regular middle or late stage innate realm beasts could withstand.

Those spatial shards were also able to strike at the soul. Jordan's specialty was not spatial attacks but was, instead, soul attribute attacks. Otherwise, he would not have been sent to the Purple Soul Hall. However, soul attributes were far too rare and were incredibly hard to learn as well. That was why he took great pains to choose a combination technique to reduce the difficulty.

"Die!" Jordan shouted angrily.

The spatial shards suddenly exploded, and the Purple Soul Beasts disappeared after that.

Jordan could not help but laugh as he looked at the corpses on the floor. The ten Purple Soul beasts might have been a little difficult to deal with, but he swiftly ended them in mere seconds.

He estimated that he should be able to kill 80 or 90 of them in the time it took for a candle to finish burning. Jackie's image flashed in his mind, and he cursed at him, the fool who just loved to brag.

With Jackie's bit of strength, it would be impressive enough if he could even kill ten of the beasts. After all, Jackie had only been at the middle stage of the innate level in the real world at most.

Chapter 2784
If the Whirling World had not forcibly raised his strength, he might not have been able to face even ten Purple Soul beasts. Jackie might have been injured or died fighting the beasts!

Jordan snorted in disdain.

While Jordan relished being self-gratified, Manfred was frozen outside. His eyes were about to pop out of their sockets because the Purple Soul Plate before him had changed drastically. The results were shown in detail.

The words that were on the Purple Soul Plate were all gone and were replaced with two sets of numbers instead. The left side displayed the number 10 while the right side displayed 20.

Manfred remembered that Jordan had placed his hand on the left side of the Purple Soul Plate, and Jackie placed his hand on the right. This meant that Jordan's results were on the left, while Jackie's results were on the right.

Jackie had twice Jordan's score, and there was no mistaking it for Manfred. He remembered what he felt like when the two of them entered. He had been so certain that Jackie would lose, but not only would it not be Jackie struck by the Purple Soul Lightning, but Jordan, instead, would be!

Manfred was frozen in place, refusing to believe what he was seeing. He even started to wonder if he had remembered things wrongly, that Jackie's score was on the left while Jordan's score was on the right. His lips quivered, and his eyes reddened.

"How is this happening? Is something wrong with the Purple Soul Plate?" Manfred tried feeding himself with excuses.

As time ticked away, the numbers on the Purple Soul Plate constantly changed as both Jackie and Jordan did everything they could to kill the Purple Soul beasts.

The two of them were confident in themselves. Even though they could not see the results of their opponent, they believed that their opponent was not as good as they were. Jordan, in particular, was killing the Purple Soul beasts while assuming Jackie would collapse with injuries.

He believed that Jackie would not even be able to hold on until the candle's flame went out, believing the beasts would end him before then. The more he thought about it, the happier Jordan was and executed skill after skill quickly. Even though he was constantly expending his true energy, Jordan did not care at all.

After all, Jackie's results would be inferior to his, anyway. There was no real reason for him to kill as many Purple Soul beasts as he could.

Jordan's lips curled up as he suddenly shouted, "You're done for here, you fool! I have an earth rank technique, while you're a mere alchemist. You probably have a yellow level technique at most! You're a whole different level from me. How could you think you wouldn't need to be afraid? What made you even think you're stronger than me?!"

Jackie was just a clown. He had the gall to be so cocky just because he did not know his place. Unfortunately for Jackie, he did not know how strong the Unbreaking Pavilion's disciples were.

He probably realized how useless he was. Jordan would no doubt walk out of this space with a dead Jackie once the whole duration for this challenge ended!

In the other space, Jackie unleashed more of his slashes as he found himself already in tune with the battle. Even though there were a lot of Purple Soul beasts, it was always a fixed number of beasts that came at him. All of it was within the realm of Jackie's capabilities.

He killed the Purple Soul beasts batch by batch. After all, he used an ultimate god level technique, and the technique was already at the second stage.

Even if the Purple Soul beasts he faced doubled, he would be able to handle it.

Destroying the Void was far too strong, and the bodily composition of the Purple Soul beasts was very weak to spirit-based attacks as well. The power Destroying the Void had was evident against these beasts. The moment they were hit by the slashes, they would crumble like paper.

Chapter 2785
Jackie's attacks sped up by the minute, not at all fazed by the spring solidifying realm beasts. After all, he was capable of killing early-stage spring solidifying realm beasts

and warriors when he was at the late stage of the innate level. His strength might have been tamed at that moment, but he was much stronger than before!

Back in Purple Soul Hall, Manfred covered his mouth, finding himself unable to muster a sentence for a long while.

The difference in both men's results was only widening. The candle was about to finish burning, and the left side was at 71 beasts while the right side showed 200.

Jackie and Jordan must have swapped positions for the results to make sense, but Manfred was still racked with worry. If nothing was wrong with the Purple Stone Plate, with the left side representing Jordan while the right side representing Jackie, then everything would be done for. The loser of this competition had to pay with his life!

Manfred mumbled to himself, "There's something wrong with the Purple Stone Plate, there must be! Their positions must've been switched. Yes, that must be it! Otherwise, how could that brat's results double Jordan's?"

"It's impossible! That man is nothing but an alchemist, while Jordan is an inner disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion and a top-ranking one, at that. How could he compare to Jordan?!"

Manfred rambled on as he tried to hype Jordan. Time was almost up, and the results of the right and left sides were more or less certain.

The left side stopped at 80, while the right side stopped at 240. It was evident how both men were worlds apart. At that moment, Manfred's breathing grew erratic as he silently prayed.

At that moment, the Purple Soul Plate emitted a purple glow, and a beam of light appeared where Jordan had disappeared earlier. Manfred's heart jumped as he stared at his direction with widened eyes.

He silently mumbled, "The left side must be Jackie's score. It had to be!"

Once the purple light dispersed, Manfred spotted a very familiar figure. On Jordan's face was a wide smile as he looked every bit the part of a victor. Once the light dispersed, he saw his junior staring at him with wide eyes.

He had thought that Manfred would be looking at him with happiness and respect, but Manfred was instead looking at him with a look that was far different from what he expected. Manfred's eyes were incredibly wide, and there was a trace of disappointment and even hopelessness on his face. This stunned Jordan.

Why was Manfred looking at him like that? Could something have happened?

At that moment, Jordan could not help but be a bit worried. Before he could figure out what happened, the purple glow on the right side dispersed as Jackie‘s figure appeared before Jordan. At that moment, Jordan’s face soured as if his father had just died.

The clown had survived after all?

He should consider himself lucky that he managed to survive against an attack by ten Purple Soul beasts!

He must have been frantically running for his life in that space. Otherwise, Jackie could not have stayed alive!

With that thought in mind, Jordan sneered and stared at Jackie disdainfully.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2786 - 2790

Chapter 2786

“Brat! You must have had a difficult time being chased after by the Purple Soul beasts. Don’t think I don’t know how pathetic you looked while you were being chased just because you’re acting like you don’t care.”

Jackie looked at Jordan speechlessly after he heard that. After that, he looked at Manfred, who was in front of Jordan. Their expressions were incredibly different at that moment. Manfred’s lips were constantly twitching and looked like he had a lot to say.

Jordan was not in the mood to care about Manfred at all. Instead, Jordan had his eyes on Jackie. He wanted to see how Jackie would be killed by the lightning. He wanted to see if Jackie could still remain calm if that happened. From the moment he saw Jackie, Jackie had a look of incredible confidence from the moment he walked in. Even though Jordan thought it was funny, he still really wanted to see Jackie stumble.

Jackie did not die in the isolated space, which Jordan felt was a huge pity. However, Jordan was incredibly confident at that moment. Even if Jackie did not die in the isolated space, Jackie was about to die right there!

Jackie would die anyway, there was no room for Jackie to struggle.

What shocked him was the fact that Jackie did not show any signs of fear after hearing that. Instead, Jackie looked like he was incredibly amused. Jackie’s lips curled up slightly as Jackie looked at him with a mocking expression.

After a moment, Jackie suddenly said, “Don’t you know your own results? Do you not know how many Purple Soul beasts you killed?”

Jackie’s words caused Jordan to feel incredibly strange.

What did Jackie mean by that? Jackie was acting like He was the victor, while Jordan had lost.

Jordan was incredibly frustrated with Jackie. He turned to look at Manfred, wanting Manfred to start mocking Jackie as well. Yet, Jordan was stunned again when he saw Manfred’s expression. It was because Manfred was looking at him with a look of hopelessness. Anyone could tell that Manfred had a lot he wanted to say, but could not.

Jordan started to get confused. Why was Manfred looking at him like that? Was there something he did not know?

Jordan frowned, unable to stop himself from raising his voice as he said, “Manfred, why are you looking at me like that? Could something have happened? Just tell me! Are you really hiding things from me?”

Manfred's body shook as he turned around to glare at Jackie viciously. In his eyes, Manfred looked like he wanted to tear Jackie apart.

There were some things he definitely should say, but he could not bring himself to. After a few moments, Manfred pointed behind Jordan, "The Purple Soul Plate has your results. You should be the one on the left, while Jackie's the one on the right. Just take a look yourself!"

Jordan was taken aback again by Manfred's words.

What was Manfred saying? Why did he need to look at the results? Were they not obvious? Could Jackie be better than him?

However, Jordan did not say anything else to that. He turned to look at the Purple Soul Plate behind him. At that moment, there were two numbers on the plate. On his side was clearly an eighty, meanwhile, two hundred and forty was on Jackie's side. When he saw that, Jordan felt like he had been struck by lightning, he could not even blink.

Jackie's words flashed in his mind. Did he not know how many beasts he killed?

Of course, he did.

He had killed exactly eighty. It was exactly like the numbers on the Purple Soul Plate. Yet, Jackie's side was clearly two hundred! There was no need for any explanation, and Jordan finally reacted.

No wonder Manfred was reacting like that. Jackie had actually killed two hundred Purple Soul beasts!

Jackie had won!

The truth was right in front of Jordan, and Jordan could not bring himself to accept it.

Chapter 2787
How did Jackie manage to kill two hundred?

In the isolated space, Jordan might have been certain that he would win, but he did not slack off. He still did what he could to kill the Purple Soul beasts.

After a candle's worth of time, his true energy had been completely depleted! Eighty beasts were already his limit, but he never expected Jackie to double his count!

Jordan shook his head crazily, "Impossible! How could you have doubled my number?! You're just an alchemist. I'm a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. I'd already reached the middle stage of the spring solidifying realm in Hestia Continent! Among the inner

disciples, I'm one of the top! How are you stronger than me? There has to be a problem. The Purple Soul Plate must have a problem!"

He refused to accept the truth and was even sure that the Purple Soul Plate definitely miscounted. Otherwise, their results could not possibly be so different. How was this alchemist stronger than him at all? How did Jackie kill more than twice his number?!"

Even Manfred refused to accept that fact, but Manfred did not know what to say. Manfred had personally witnessed the results growing further and further apart. He had personally seen Jackie leaving Jordan in the dust. At that moment, he wanted to console Jordan, but he did not know what to say.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not caring about how crazily Jordan was acting. He merely looked at the ceiling of the hall. That tournament concerned their life and death. The person who lost would have to pay with their lives.

Did the plate not say that the loser would be struck by the Purple Soul Lightning? Why was nothing happening?

Just as he was thinking about that, a purple cloud suddenly formed in the skies. Everything had happened far too suddenly. Before Jackie could react, a flash of purple lightning shot down from mid-air. It precisely struck at Jordan.

Jordan was still trying to deny Jackie's results and did not notice the changes in the sky. With a crack, Jordan's body turned black immediately. His eyes widened, and his whole body froze in place!

Jackie turned to look over, and found that Jordan's chest was no longer moving. Another string of thunder strikes as countless flashes fell from the skies followed. All of them struck Jordan on his body.

Jackie did not even hear any cries of agony from Jordan.

With a thud, Jordan's body fell right to the floor of the hall. At that moment, Jordan's body was burnt to a crisp by the lightning. There was no way to even tell what he had looked like before. A burnt smell came from the corpse.

Jackie could not help but raise an eyebrow as he took a step back. At that moment, Manfred was already about to go crazy. He had just witnessed the senior he had respected so much get struck to death alive. There was no way to even stop it!

After a few more moments, the lightning stopped, and Jordan was utterly dead. With a thud, Manfred knelt next to Jordan. Tears had started to fall from his eyes.

Jackie turned away, not wanting to bother seeing their emotional state. He lamented in his heart that the laws of the Purple Soul Hall were really tyrannical. The loser had to die!

At that moment, the Purple Soul Plate suddenly released another purplish gold glow. A bundle of light shot out from the Purple Soul Plate. Jackie looked over and saw that the glow was slowly floating towards him. Jackie raised an eyebrow as he reached his hands out, and the light fell into his palm. After the light dispersed, Jackie saw its original look. It was actually ten purplish-gold gems.

The voice was heard again, “To the winner goes Purple Soul Gems. The Purple Soul Gems are valuable gems from first grade worlds. Absorbing them will increase your aura!”

Jackie’s eyes had a look of surprise in them. The moment he heard the words the Purple Soul Gems, Jackie immediately recalled what the benefits of absorbing Purple Soul Gems were.

Even if they were not as amazing as the Shattered Soul Crystals Jackie had absorbed before, they were still incredibly valuable treasures. There were ten Purple Soul Gems, and each one of them was the size of half a palm. Jackie could not even hold on to the ten of them properly!

Chapter 2788
Those Purple Soul Gems would definitely help Jackie complete Destroying the Void after Jackie completely absorbed them. When the time came, he would definitely have a strong foothold in the Whirling World. After all, the Whirling World focused on the skills and techniques of the warriors there. All of their power levels had been restricted to the late stage of the innate realm. They could not use their realms to trample over their opponents and had to use the skills and techniques they knew.

With that in mind, Jackie could not hold back the smile on his face. He had always been an incredibly calm person, but he was beginning to lose his composure as he placed the Purple Soul Gems into Mustard Seed. He was constantly thinking about where he needed to go next and what challenges he would face.

At that moment, a low shout was heard next to him, “You despicable, petty man. You killed Jordan, but you benefitted so much from it. I won’t let you get away with this. I absolutely won’t!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Only he was left alive in the Purple Soul Hall along with Manfred. Even if he did not look over, he still knew what kind of expression Manfred had at the moment.

Manfred continued to shout as loud as he could, “Don’t think you’ve gotten what you want after getting the reward. After leaving the Purple Soul Hall, you still need to face my fellow disciples. They definitely won’t let you go. They’ll completely destroy you!”

Jackie turned and saw that Manfred‘s eyes were thoroughly reddened. At that moment, Manfred had his teeth clenched, looking like an angered lion. Manfred looked like he wanted to rush over and rip Jackie apart.

Jackie shook his head speechlessly.

Jackie said with a cold smile, “Even if you’re angry at your lack of ability, can you think about things before you go crazy? Did I cause his downfall? He’s clearly the one who’s skills were lacking. He lost so completely. Who can you blame for that? How dare you call me despicable?”

Ever since he arrived at Hestia Continent, Jackie had gone through many things. He had heard a lot of people shouting at him angrily. He was already used to it, but even after getting used to it, he still hated people blaming him for no reason. Even shouting at people needed some brains. It was the two of them who wanted him to compete against them. Yet, after losing, Manfred was blaming Jackie for being despicable.

Jackie really wondered where Manfred got the courage to shout at Jackie like that.

Manfred’s lips stiffened, not knowing What to say back at Jackie. Yet, he was not willing to admit defeat, so he stood up from the ground and glared at Jackie, not averting his gaze for a single second.

“The Unbreaking Pavilion is one of the top clans of Middle Province. Don’t think that you can be pleased with yourself just because you won the match and you got the rewards! The Unbreaking Pavilion won’t just sit down idly and suffer this. After we leave this place, I’ll definitely make sure you suffer. You’ll know how strong the Unbreaking Pavilion is!”

There were fifteen disciples who went to Black Sun City. Even though their skills were uneven, none of them were runner disciples. They were all outer and inner disciples. Even an outer disciple was more than enough to face a regular person. Even though Jackie was strong enough to get twice the results of Jordan, that did not mean anything!

Numbers were still absolutely. After leaving the Purple Soul Hall, he would definitely gather all his fellow disciples to surround Jackie. No matter how strong Jackie was, there was no way Jackie could escape from so many attackers. Furthermore, Manfred had resolved silently that he would not let Jackie die so easily. He would make sure Jackie’s life was absolute torture to pay his respects to Jordan!

Manfred’s eyes were so venomous that Jackie pursed his lips helplessly. Jackie let out a cold smile as he continued speaking.

Chapter 2789
“Five of those fellow disciples of yours are already dead. Otherwise, how could I have appeared here?”

The moment he said that Manfred felt like a bucket of cold water had been poured over him. Philip’s image suddenly flashed in Manfred’s mind. If the guy really was just an unskilled alchemist like they had thought, then everything would have been fine. Yet, Jackie was so strong, and suddenly appeared in Purple Soul Hall!

Something must have happened outside.

Manfred suddenly looked up, “What did you say? What did you do outside? Did you kill my fellow disciples? Did Philip die by your hands?!”

Manfred seemed to have been immensely shocked. He took a step back as he looked at Jackie with clenched teeth. He was already regarding Jackie as his mortal enemy. He wanted to rip Jackie to shreds.

“Jackie, right?! I won‘t let you off! I absolutely won’t!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, feeling like Manfred was already about to go crazy at that moment. He really did not want to bother dealing with Manfred anymore. At that moment, the sounds of some mechanisms moving around could be heard around the Purple Soul Hall, stunning the two of them.

The two of them looked around excitedly. There were still no changes in their surroundings, but the clicking and clacking never stopped. The sounds were a clear sign that something was about to change.

As the two of them were filled with confusion, the purple mist was suddenly shot out around them. The two of them immediately moved to the center, trying to avoid the purple mist.

No one knew what the purple mist was. At that moment, they put aside their combative hearts as they stared at the surroundings. Manfred might have been full of anger and hatred at that moment, but he still tossed those emotions aside. After all, his own life was more important. He had not even been in time to retrieve Jordan’s corpse or move it away from the purple mist.

When Jackie saw how selfish Manfred was, he suddenly felt incredibly amused.

Manfred looked like he was ready to fight against Jackie to the death earlier. It was as if he had deep ties with Jordan. Yet, all those ties seemed to have been forgotten at a crucial juncture. Jackie was already used to people like that. He merely felt that it was amusing.

In a short time, the purple mist had already surrounded everywhere except for the two of them.

Slowly, Jackie noticed that the purple mist seemed to have a mind of its own. It deliberately avoided their bodies, only covering everywhere else.

Jackie frowned. At that moment, the gray mist had obscured his sight of everything except for himself. Yet, he could still hear his surroundings.

Manfred was noticeably more anxious than Pane was. After Manfred's vision was obscured, Manfred started to gulp audibly…

Chapter 2790
"What the hell is this?! Why is there so much purple mist? What is it trying to do?! Could this mist be poisoned? Will I die of poisoning here?!"

He had already let fear and shock fill up his heart. He did not even care for his own dignity anymore. He was terrified that he would die there. Jackie did not say a single thing as thoughts flashed in his mind. He still remembered what he read on the Purple Soul Plate. After winning, he would get a reward and be sent to the second location.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a howling wind could be heard next to him. The gust of wind came incredibly suddenly. Both Jackie and Manfred lost their footing in the wind. Thankfully, Jackie was always on alert and was not blown to the ground.

Manfred was not that lucky. After the purple mist had surrounded Manfred, Manfred was only left with fear and shock in his mind. He did not fall on the ivory floor of the Purple Soul Hall, but on mud instead. Looking around, the ceiling of the Purple Soul Hall had turned into a blue sky. They were in a large valley, situated in the middle of it. Around them were large mountains.

Manfred mumbled to himself, "Where is this place? Was I transferred?"

That thought also flashed in Jackie's mind, but he discarded that notion after thinking about it for a moment. Jackie was certain that he had not been transported. The whole time, space did not distort at all. It was his surroundings that changed, and not himself.

Manfred climbed up from the ground as he looked around himself in a panic. Jordan's corpse had already disappeared as if it was never there.

At that moment, Manfred regretted things a little. Earlier, he had been in a panic to protect himself. He had not even retrieved Jordan's body. Jackie frowned as he looked around his surroundings. When he looked right in front of him, his entire body stiffened.

The growls of two wild beasts were suddenly heard. Manfred naturally heard it as well. When they looked towards the source of the sound, they saw two Purple Soul beasts that were taller than humans in front of them.

The Purple Soul beasts had clearly noticed the two of them. Yet, for some reason, they were merely blaring their teeth at Jackie and Manfred in a warning. They did not move at all.

Jackie immediately pulled out his gray sword from Mustard Seed, preparing for battle.

Manfred did not know what the Purple Soul beasts were, but could still feel how strong the beasts were, “They’re actually… At the middle stage of the spring solidifying realm!”

Regular Purple Soul beasts were only about as tall as half a person. The purple on their bodies were not as dense as the two beasts either. Those two Purple Soul beasts had obviously already completely matured and were already at the peak of their skills. Even Jackie had to take a step back facing those two Purple Soul beasts. Being restricted by the laws of the world, Jackie was only at the late stage of the innate realm.

He might not be afraid of early-stage spring solidifying realm Purple Soul beasts, but it did not mean he could face those two middle stage ones calmly. Manfred gulped, his legs already feeling like jelly.

They were two middle stage spring solidifying realm beasts. They were much stronger than he was at that moment. If they faced each other in battle, he might not even be able to run!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2791 - 2800

Chapter 2791
Manfred thought about it for a moment. He felt like there was a high chance that he would die to those beasts.

At that moment, the cold voice resonated again, “There are two battles in the Purple Soul Hall. Each battle needs two participants. After the victor is determined in the first battle, you will get time to rest. After the time is up, the second stage commences! It‘s already time for the second stage. For this round, you only need to touch the Purple Soul fruit to win.”

After the voice spoke, a purplish-gold glow could be seen behind the two Purple Soul beasts. After the glow dispersed, a tree that was about the size of half a man appeared in front of the two of them.

There was a Purple Soul fruit that was about the size of a fist. Even though the two of them were not close to the fruit yet, they could still feel the energy flowing. Within the fruit even from a distance. The massive fruit would be able to attract attention where it was, considering the massive amount of energy that was inside.

Even the strongest of clans would fight over it. When Manfred looked at the fruit, even his breathing quickened. He curled his fists up as he resolved himself to get the fruit.

If he ate the fruit, he would definitely be able to completely reforge himself and improve. After exiting the Whirling World in two years, he might even be able to become a chosen disciple.

Only a chosen disciple could truly be considered someone who was at the core of the Unbreaking Pavilion. At the worst, they would be an elder in the future. Thinking about his bright future, Manfred could not even hold back the smile on his face. He even forgot how hard it would be to obtain the Purple Soul Pruit. The cold voice continued to speak after the two of them showed their interest.

“The second match will be the final match you will go through in Black Sun City. Whoever touches the Purple Soul fruit will be the victor. The victor will be sent out of the Purple Soul Hall immediately. You‘ll be sent to the plaza that you arrived in, and the Purple Soul fruit will be your reward!”

Manfred got even more excited after hearing that. Jackie raised an eyebrow, feeling like there was something hidden behind that. He sighed before he asked loudly, “What will happen to the person who remains?”

In truth, Jackie was just asking casually. He did not expect the cold voice to respond to him. After all, Black Sun City was a city left behind from ancient times. All of the mechanisms here had gone through tens of thousands of years.

There was no way anything was alive. Yet, he was in disbelief that he got a response. The cold voice calmly said, “The person who remains will stay here forever! If the two of you touch the fruit at the same time, the two of you will be determined to have won together. You will both be sent out to the plaza, and the Purple Soul fruit will be split in two.”

The earlier part was exactly what Jackie had guessed, but the latter part had a lot more. Even though it did not sound like much, Black Sun City was definitely not a paradise.

The one who lost the first match would have his life immediately taken. The rules had been so cruel, so how could the second stage be merciful?

If the two of them touched the fruit at the same time, they would be determined to have won together and be sent out at the same time. That was definitely not something that sounded like what the Purple Soul Hall would do.

Jackie felt that things were more and more strange as he thought about it. After the voice finished saying all that. It completely disappeared. The voice did not say what would happen to the two Purple Soul beasts, but anyone with half a brain knew that the beasts would immediately attack the moment they got close to the Purple Soul fruit.

Chapter 2792
Just as Jackie was deliberating the problem, Manfred’s voice was suddenly heard.

“Bastard! Even though we have deep grudges, I can temporarily forgive you for the sake of our lives. The two of us have to work together to solve this problem. We’ll only be able to leave this place if we work together! Didn’t that voice say earlier that the two of us would be sent out together if we touched the Purple Soul fruit at the same time? The fruit will be split into two as well. It would be fair for both of us!”

Hearing that, Jackie glanced at Manfred. He saw that Manfred was looking at him quite sincerely, as if he really meant it.

Jackie could not help but snort, not answering Manfred immediately.

Manfriend was infuriated when he saw that Jackie was acting up even just giving a response. Jackie was so disrespectful!

Even though he sounded nice, he had another plan in mind. As long as Jackie agreed to deal with the Purple Soul beasts together, he would definitely do something to Jackie after they successfully injured the Purple Soul beasts and got closer to the Purple Soul fruit.

He had to be the first one to touch the fruit. He would be the only one to escape and take the fruit for himself. Even though the rules had been clear and sounded fair, he did not want Jackie to gain anything from it!

The Purple Soul Fruit could only belong to him. He was also going to be the only person to escape this place!

After making a decision, he said again, “There‘s no other way around it! You’ll only be able to leave this place if you work with me. You can‘t deal with two Purple Soul beasts alone!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he turned to look at Manfred. He suddenly let out a light laugh as he said in a cold tone, “I don’t trust you. Who knows if you’ll do something to me after we work together?”

Manfred froze at those words. He could not believe that Jackie actually saw through his plans. However, Manfred would not admit to it even if Jackie was right.

He patted his chest in guarantee, “Don‘t worry! I never go back on my words!”

The guarantee was worthless to Jackie.

Jackie sighed as he looked at the two Purple Soul beasts. After thinking about it for a moment, he turned to look at Manfred.

“We can attack together. It will be down to your own skill to get the Purple Soul fruit.”

Manfred was unhappy to hear that. Even though he had never seen Jackie‘s true skills before, it was easy to tell that Jackie was stronger than him from the results of the first round.

He was no match for Jackie at all. If the two of them attacked together and ignored one another after that, he would be no match for Jackie.

Manfred rejected it immediately, “No way! You’re stronger than me. If we both attack, but you ignore me, the person who loses out will be me!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he let out a cold sneer. Just as Manfred was about to try convincing him, He suddenly shot forward at Manfred.

Chapter 2793
The laws of space activated. He was already quite close to Manfred to begin with. With Jackie‘s sudden actions, he was in front of Manfred in a second.

Manfred never expected that Jackie would suddenly attack him. Before he could do anything, he felt a sharp pain on his back. A massive force was felt behind him, and he shot forward right at the two Purple Soul beasts like a sack that was being thrown.

Manfred immediately understood what Jackie was doing. He could not help but curse out loudly, “You despicable and shameless person! I won’t let you off lightly. I’ll rip you to shreds!”

Jackie had already heard words like that so many times. He just let the words brush past him, not caring at all. Manfred was still an inner disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. Even though he could not react to Jackie’s initial attack, he was still able to quickly adjust himself and stop the forward flying momentum. However, everything was already too late.

The moment Manfred shot towards the two Purple Soul beasts, had already judged that Manfred was planning to steal the Purple Soul fruit, and immediately attacked. However, Jackie was disappointed to see that the Purple Beasts were actually attacking too different targets. Jackie frowned helplessly, not expecting his plan to fail like that.

He had thought that he would be able to get the Purple Soul fruit easily with Manfred as a shield. The beast on the left rushed right at Manfred, while the one on the right charged at Jackie incredibly quickly.

It was the first time Jackie was facing a beast that was in the middle stage of the spring solidifying realm. His strength was even being restricted. He did not dare to hold back at all.

Seventy five Soul Swords condensed into one in the air. With a wave of Jackie’s right hand, the giant soul sword completely fused with his gray sword. Destroying the Void was Jackie’s greatest trump card.

The beast opened its mouth as it roared angrily at Jackie. It bared its claws at Jackie, causing his eyebrows to furrow. Jackie clutched his gray sword tightly, slashing right at the beast’s claws. Destroying the Void turned into a slash, clashing with the beast’s claws in the air. With a massive clash, the beast retreated a few steps backwards.

The technique’s shockwaves hit him, causing Jackie to take a step back. His eyes had been on the beast‘s claws the whole time. He wanted to see if he could injure the beast with a full force attack.

The beast’s right claw was trembling slightly. On closer look, there were numerous scars on the right claw. The wound had grayish black remains on it, looking like it was poisoned.

The wound on the white claw was constantly recovering, but it was incredibly slow. The Purple Soul beast let out a cry of agony. Its eyes were full of rage, as if it had been angered by Jackie.

Jackie frowned. The results were a far cry from what he expected. He had thought that the strike would at least be able to stop the beast from being able to use its right claw. Yet, the right claw was just injured. The bones did not break at all.

Jackie sighed as his expression soured. It looked like he needed to change his plans. He had to end things quickly!

The thought had just flashed in his mind when the beast started to attack again. Even though Jackie's strike had injured the beast, it did not affect the strength of the beast's next attack at all.

Chapter 2794
The Purple Soul Beast could think for itself as well. It could tell that Jackie was still not used to his current strength. It wanted to use that change to attack him again. At the very least, it wanted to injure Jackie.

The Purple Soul beast was incredibly quick. It caused Jackie's heart to race as he narrowed his eyes and activated the laws of space immediately. He quickly changed directions in mid-air, and kept a distance from the beast. He could not let the beast get too close. Otherwise, he might lose his life that day!

The beast had incredibly strong defenses, and the beast had yet to use its natural born technique. The beast merely used its claws to slash at Jackie. Clashing against Destroying the Void, it might have been injured, but the results were much worse than what Jackie expected.

It was obvious that Jackie would not be able to kill the Purple Soul beast quickly, so Jackie was forced to get closer to the Purple Soul fruit with all his might!

"Ah..!" A cry of agony was heard behind Jackie.

Even if Jackie did not turn around to look, he knew that Manfred was definitely in a bad state.

Just as Jackie guessed, Manfred was in a horrible state. His arm had five slash wounds from a Purple Soul beast's claw. Fresh blood stained his clothes red as Manfred cursed in pain. However, he was forced to frantically run away as he cursed.

Thankfully, Manfred specialized in speed, or he would not have lasted that long. Manfred clenched his teeth as he retreated, trying to plot in his mind as he ran. If he wanted to live, he had to retrieve the Purple Soul fruit. He hated Jackie immensely at that moment, so he did not forget to try and figure out how he would harm Jackie as he retreated. He wanted to trap Jackie here forever.

If Jackie had not suddenly attacked him earlier, he would not have faced the Purple Soul beast's attacks without any preparation, causing his arm to get injured.

He roared angrily, “Just you wait, Jackie! I won’t let you off easily!”

He was incredibly quick, but the Purple Soul beast was not slow either. The two of them were about twenty feet apart. As Manfred fled, he constantly changed directions, trying to get closer to the Purple Soul Fruit.

The valley was oval shaped. In order to get enough distance between them, Manfred was running around the edges of the valley. The Purple Soul fruit was being guarded towards the eastern side of the center.

Manfred was already trying to get closer to the east side. As long as he could maintain a safe distance from the beast, he would be able to successfully get the Purple Soul fruit.

As long as he could get the Purple Soul fruit, it would not be long until he got out of there successfully!

After making up his mind, he coldly glanced at Jackie. He noticed that Jackie was still fighting against the other beast, and was instantly elated!

So what if Jackie was stronger than him?

He was faster than Jackie! As long as he touched the Purple Soul Fruit, Jackie would remain here forever!

He excitedly changed his directions in an instant. Yet, at that moment, the Purple Soul beast suddenly seemed to speed up!

Thirty feet of distance was suddenly shortened to twenty feet. Manfred was immensely terrified at that. He immediately tried to hide somewhere else, barely avoiding being attacked. Yet, at that moment, he was already further apart from the Purple Soul fruit, and was forced to look for another opportunity.

Something strange happened at that. After Manfred changed his directions, the Purple Soul beast lowered its speed. It was then did Manfred realize that the Purple Soul beast would suddenly attack as long as he got close to the fruit, and he would have to change his directions!

Chapter 2795
That caused Manfred to lose some hope. He could not just keep running like that. His true energy would be exhausted eventually. The Purple Soul beast was stronger than him and definitely had more true energy.

The moment his true energy ran out, he would be faced with death. However, the purple soul beast would definitely suddenly attack him if he wanted to get close. He would have to change directions for the sake of his life. The more he fled, the further he would be. Manfred hopelessly found that it was a vicious cycle.

At that moment, he looked toward Jackie. He noticed that Jackie was constantly adjusting his distance from the beast, and constantly attacking the beast. What shocked Manfred was the fact that the beast attacking Jackie already had two slowly blackening front claws. It was as if some sinister energy had tainted them.

At that moment, Jackie did not even think about anything around him. His full focus was on the beast in front of him. The laws of space constantly activated beneath his feet. He had already used Destroying the Void three times! Each time, a new wound was added to the beast.

Slowly, the beast was getting fatigued. It was not because of the loss of true energy, but because of its injuries slowing it down!

Jackie activated the laws of space, pulling himself a hundred feet apart again to give himself some breathing room. He frowned as he formed seals in his hands again. He was already almost depleted of true energy at that moment. After all, he had to use the laws of space while he constantly attacked. It used up too much true energy!

However, Jackie did not really care about that at that point. He shifted to a very good place this time as he constantly got closer to the Purple Soul fruit.

“Take this!” Jackie roared as he sent another slash at the Purple Soul beast.

The gray slash contained the laws of space as well. It clashed against the Purple Soul beast’s claws in a flash. With more cracks, the Purple Soul beast’s front claws suddenly seemed to weaken. It looked like it was about to shatter.

The black scars littered its two front claws. The beast roared in pain as the pain thoroughly angered it. The beast even started to ignore its injuries as it frantically rushed at Jackie. However, its claws were already heavily injured at that moment. Even if it frantically rushed at him, it was still a lot slower thanks to its injuries.

After realizing that the Purple Soul beast had started to slow down, Jackie suddenly let out a victorious smile.

He had worked so long for that precise moment. With a cold grunt, Jackie turned and charged right at the Purple Soul Fruit. No matter how loud the roars behind him were, Jackie was not affected at all. After all, the Purple Soul beast could not keep up with Jackie at its current speed.

After a short moment, Jackie was finally next to the Purple Soul Fruit.

Everything had been seen by Manfred, causing Manfred to go crazy!

He never expected Jackie to suddenly change directions after fighting the Purple Soul Beast for so long, suddenly getting close to the Purple Soul tree. He just needed to reach out to touch the Purple Soul Fruit!

“No!” Manfred let out a loud shout.

The moment Jackie touched the fruit, Jackie would be determined the winner, and he would forever remain in this space!

If he was alone, he would just be waiting for death. After Jackie left, the two beasts would rip him apart after his true energy was depleted.

Chapter 2796
However, there was nothing he could do no matter how loud he shouted. Jackie had already reached his hand out towards the Purple Soul fruit. As he reached out, Jackie turned to look at Manfred as well.

Manfred could see a deep look of mockery in Jackie’s eyes.

Jackie was looking at Manfred like Manfred was the village idiot. It was then that Manfred realized that Jackie had always regarded him as an idiot.

During the start of the round, Manfred had even tried to bring up an alliance, trying to say that the only way to win was by working together. In truth, he had other plans, and Jackie had already seen through them. In the end, he became a tool to attract attention! Manfred felt like he had been played like a clown!

However, it was already too late to say anything. Jackie‘s hand had already touched the Purple Soul fruit. The moment Jackie touched the fruit, a bundle of purple mist enveloped him, and he disappeared the next second.

Manfred shut his eyes in hopelessness. There was no way Manfred could escape anymore. When space started distorting, Jackie finally breathed a sigh of relief. The last battle had been incredibly difficult. It was far more difficult than the first round. Thankfully, he still won in the end. In truth, the rules of the second match were both testing a person‘s character and a person’s ability.

Even though there was a rule that allowed them to share the Purple Soul fruit, many would choose to take the Purple Soul fruit for their own when faced with its allure.

Jackie never planned on working with Manfred from the start. Manfred already hated Jackie so much that there was no way he could work with Manfred. At a crucial moment, Manfred would definitely have done something to Jackie.

That was something anyone could have figured out. So, after Jackie heard that suggestion from Manfred, he immediately thought of another plan. He would have

Manfred draw fire while he tried to get close to the fruit. Yet, he never expected the two Purple Soul beasts to have been explicitly prepared to target both of them. Facing even one Purple Soul beast had not been as easy as he thought it would be.

After the thought flashed in Jackie's mind, the purple mist surrounding Jackie slowly dispersed as he dropped to the ground on his feet

When he could see clearly again, he noticed that he had already arrived at the small plaza from earlier. He was the only person in the plaza at that moment. It was so quiet that he could hear himself breathing.

Around the plaza were still the multicolored lights. Jackie sighed, relaxing. He wondered how many people would escape Black Sun City. Other than the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion, there were a few dozen wandering warriors that entered Black Sun City. In the end, he did not know how many people would make it out.

Warriors of different attributes would end up in different places. He did not know if those places would have different rules from the Purple Soul hall. Various thoughts played in Jackie's head for a long time. He finally shook his head and discarded them.

No matter what, life or death depended on themselves. Jackie reached out his right hand. The Purple Soul fruit that had a faint purple glow to it was in his palm. The dense fragrance of the fruit assaulted his nose, enhancing his appetite.

If Jackie had not been composed enough, he might have eaten it in one gulp. He hurriedly put the fruit into Mustard Seed. The Purple Soul fruit was definitely amazing, but if he swallowed it whole now, he might end up exploding thanks to an overload of energy. He did not want to commit a low-grade mistake like that.

After entering the Purple Soul Hall, he lost track of time. He did not know how much time had passed, nor did he know where Rudy was.

Chapter 2797
Jackie gave the plaza one last glance before he headed to the city gates. He did not just gain a lot from Black Sun City, he had gotten a few pieces of important news as well. He was forced to replan his future moves.

After exiting the city, Jackie immediately used the voice transfer array to contact Rudy. In just a moment, Rudy was seen running towards him.

Rudy widened his eyes as Rudy measured Jackie a few times, "You're actually fine! I've really been letting my thoughts wander these few days. I've been constantly worrying about you!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, "These few days? How long was I in there for?"

Rudy raised four fingers, “It‘s been four whole days. I‘ve been waiting outside the city the whole time. I was worried that someone would notice me. I even set up a simple obscuring array. I was so scared the past four days! I noticed that no one has come out of Black Sun City at all in those four days. You’re the only one who’s come out!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as his thoughts wandered. He did not expect four days to have passed. Even though he did not really keep track of time after entering the Purple Soul Hall, he thought it would only be a day at most. Yet, four days had passed in the actual world.

Could time have been distorted in the Purple Soul Hall?

However, there was no point in dwelling on that problem. What Jackie noticed was another one.

He frowned as he asked earnestly, “No one’s exited in the past four days? Other than me, no one has come out, even the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion?”

Rudy nodded seriously, “If I had seen anyone else come out, I wouldn’t be so worried about you. Your skills are plain to see after all. Even the strongest among those disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion is no match for you. Yet, days passed, and no one came out at all. It was only natural that I started to worry. There’ve been quite a few people arriving in Black Sun City the past few days as well. All of them entered so happily, but none of them came out!”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, “Didn’t the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion come out initially? They had definitely communicated about the rules before. Otherwise, Philip would never have sent in any replacements based on the rules inside!”

Jackie’s words caused Rudy’s eyes to widen as Rudy anxiously asked what was inside. Jackie sighed, not hiding anything from Rudy as he told Rudy everything that happened.

After Rudy heard that, he gaped as he looked at Black Sun City with an expression full of fear. He never expected the rules in the city to be so tyrannical that the loser would lose their lives. Even though the rules did not say that the loser would die in the second round, the results would still be the same as in the first round. Someone would lose their life, and someone would get a reward and escape!

Rudy shuddered slightly, “No wonder no one’s come out. It seems like most of them are probably already dead. Soul attribute warriors are fewer in number compared to any other attribute. Only three of you were in the Purple Soul Hall.”

Chapter 2798
There are many more warriors for the other attributes. It’s possible that a large portion of them end up dying every round. Those wandering warriors went in so excitedly, but

there were actually no true energy fields inside for them to improve themselves with. Instead, they entered a palace that wanted their lives!

Rudy got more and more afraid as he thought about it. He got so apprehensive that he paled.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, patting Rudy on the shoulder, but Rudy did not relax at all…

Rudy turned and pulled at Jackie's arm, "It's thanks to you stopping me earlier. Otherwise, I would definitely have died already!"

At that moment, Rudy's thoughts were all over the place. After saying that, he changed the topic, "There's still something I don't understand. Didn't someone say that there were true energy fields inside Black Sun City? No one said that it would be dangerous. Based on what those people said before, the true energy field seemed like a paradise for increasing one's strength. However, there were no true energy fields after you went in, and just match after match! Were those people lying? Or were you all sent somewhere different because of your different attributes?"

Jackie shook his head, answering sincerely, "After I entered, I haven't heard anything about true energy fields. Where did the news come from? Could the true energy fields have just been a broad term?"

Rudy shook his head, "Do you mean the true energy field is the whole Black Sun City?"

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly, "I actually don't know. After entering the Purple Soul Hall, I didn't really think about that anymore. Who knows what true energy fields mean? Who knows where the rumor came from?"

Rudy frowned, they could not figure out what the true energy fields were in the end. However, they were not really in the mood to figure things out at that point.

Thinking about it, Rudy said helplessly, "It's not like I have to figure out where the true energy fields are exactly. I just feel like there's something off about the whole thing. There are so many secrets in front of us, but we can't figure things out at all."

The moment secrets were brought up, Jackie's expression changed. He raised an eyebrow as he told everything he found out from those two to Rudy.

Rudy was stunned after he heard that. After a moment, he finally said, "So the higher-ups of Phoenix Valley already had a map of the Whirling World, and probably know a lot of the secrets of the world. Why did they not tell us anything at all? We ended up having to struggle in this world like headless flies. Black Sun City's secrets might even already have been known by the higher-ups. We were just kept in the dark."

Jackie nodded, “I agree with what you said. There are some things that were completely hidden from us, but we’re already obvious to all those people. For some reason, they were not willing to tell us anything.”

Rudy was furious when he heard about it, “Aren’t they just despicable? Even if they don’t want to give us the complete map, they should have at least given us some important information. They could have told us where the more dangerous places were or where there were more valuables. We would be able to save some effort. Yet, they did not tell us anything. Could it be because we’re not in the inner valley and not a core member of Phoenix Valley?”

Jackie shook his head, having already thought about the matter many times. There was a lot of speculation each time. He let out a sigh as he frowned.

Chapter 2799
“I think the most basic reason is that we’re not with the larger group. That’s why they kept those secrets from us. Listening to what Jordan and Manfred said, it‘s actually something a lot of people already know. Jordan is an inner disciple, but he knows about it. So it means the secret is not so tightly guarded.”

“The inner disciples of Phoenix Valley probably know about it as well. The alchemists that are with the larger group should already know about most of it.”

Rudy pursed his lips unhappily, “So we were excluded because we decided against following them. Doesn’t Elder Maurice favor you alot? Even if he couldn’t tell you everything, he should have at least told you some of it. Yet, he did not mention anything from the start. It’s as if he doesn’t know much about the Whirling World at all.”

Jackie shook his head, reaching out to pat Rudy on the shoulder, “Don’t let your thoughts wander so much. We’ll find out some things eventually. Honestly, my ties with Phoenix valley are over. Phoenix valley did not really give me any resources, and I’ve already paid back any debts I could have had. Since they don’t trust me so much, I won’t bother with certain things.”

Jackie naturally meant something behind his words, and Rudy realized it as well.

Rudy turned to look at Jackie and whispered, “Are you going to leave Phoenix Valley after the Whirling World just like me?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, “I probably won’t go back… However, I’m not talking about going back to Phoenix Valley or not. I’m talking about what we should do if we meet anyone from Phoenix Valley after this.”

Rudy looked up at that, saying, “Will we still meet people from Phoenix Valley?”

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation. He kept on feeling like Rudy's head was only half working. Sometimes, Rudy seemed alert, but other times Rudy seemed like a complete idiot.

Jackie helplessly explained, "If we continue going forward, we'll definitely meet Phoenix Valley's people. Phoenix Valley already knew the secrets beforehand, they should know where the key places in the Whirling World are as well. They might already be waiting in all those places. As long as we keep on going forward in the Whirling World, we'll meet them eventually."

Rudy sighed, pursing his lips unwillingly, "I really don't want to interact with them at all. I keep on feeling like they're even more threatening than other clans."

After saying everything he had to say, Jackie did not really have any reason to stay.

He turned to look at Black Sun City again. Black Sun City still looked the same as before. Its grayish black walls covered the whole city. Initially, Black Sun City represented a sliver of hope. Yet, it now seemed like a wild beast waiting for prey to enter its mouth. Four days was not too long, and not that short either. He did not know how many people had entered the city, but only Jackie had exited.

Jackie refused to believe that he would be the only person to make it out of the city.

Chapter 2800
What could not be denied was that many people will definitely die inside. Jackie could not help but shake his head at that thought, discarding those notions.

He raised his head at Rudy, and Rudy nodded. The two of them started walking away from Black Sun City.

Right as they took a few steps away, the rumbling was suddenly heard from Black Sun City. It was as if a mechanism was moving. Jackie immediately grabbed Rudy's arm, preparing for any danger. Yet, the expected danger did not happen. After the rumbling, a faint purple glow was seen from Black Sun City. The light gathered into an orb and formed in mid-air.

The orb was incredibly radiant. Jackie could not even keep his eyes open when he tried to look over. After the light was formed, it suddenly sped at him!

Jackie took a step back, but he remained in place after feeling no trace of an attack from the orb. He frowned in alarm as the orb stopped in front of him. He could hear a splashing sound next to his ears, as if a creek was flowing under his legs. Before he could see what had happened, the purple light dissipated, and a token floated in front of him.

Jackie grabbed that token in his palms. When he touched the token, a surge of the information entered his head.

Rudy anxiously stood behind Jackie, only looking with one eye as he processed everything that had happened in fear. When the token fell in Jackie's palm, Rudy saw the words "Thousand Leaves City".

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he stared at the token curiously. After a while, he sighed with a look of realization on his face**.**

Rudy hurriedly asked, "What happened? What's this token? Where is Thousand Leaves City? Are we going there next?"

Jackie nodded, placing the token into Mustard Seed before he looked at Rudy excitedly, "I finally know the real rules of the Whirling World!"

Rudy was stunned at that. Rudy widened his eyes as he looked at Jackie curiously. Jackie ignored him as he told Rudy all the information that had just gone into his mind.

There were countless cities in the Whirling World. They were spread out all over the world. There were a total of nine levels to the cities. Black Sun City that they had just left was a level nine city.

The Thousand Leaves City is a level eight-city. People can only enter a level eight-city after passing a level nine city.

Jackie could not suppress his excitement as he said, "With this token, we can enter Thousand Leaves City. Without it, we'd never be able to enter the area Thousand Leaves City is in. Without the tokens, you would only be able to constantly walk around level nine cities, even if you constantly advanced in the Whirling World. There would be no way to reach level eight cities. It also means that those without tokens for level seven cities will never find one!"

Hearing that explanation, Rudy gaped, feeling like the Whirling World was incredibly mysterious.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2801 - 2810

Chapter 2801

He could not help but take a deep breath and said, “That means that we’ll have to constantly go through the tests of the different leveled cities in the Whirling World if we want to get closer to the important areas. Only those who pass the tests can get to the core of the Whirling World!”

Jackie nodded. Based on the information he had gotten, it really seemed to be that way. It appeared that they would constantly be facing challenges after this. Only by passing the challenges would they be able to continue advancing.

Two years was not a short time, but it was not that long either. Jackie could not help but wonder if he could really enter a level one city in the Whirling World within two years. He did not know if there would be other ways to get into the Valley of Enlightenment in a level one city. He did not know what plans the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley had.

Rudy looked up at Jackie, his lips twitching helplessly.

After a long time, Rudy said, “Don‘t just be excited for yourself. I know you ‘re very strong, but I still feel like it’s better if you don’t enter any level one cities. It’s obvious that there will be a lot of amazing treasures inside. You might be able to get treasures left behind from ancient times, but I feel like the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley are definitely plotting something.”

“They definitely won’t leave anything good behind for others. At the end of the day, we are still not alchemists from the inner valley. Phoenix Valley doesn’t really see us as one of their own. We‘d never be able to get our hands on those good things. If we fight against them for it, we might get dragged into trouble. It‘s probably better if we get what we need from level two or level three cities…” Rudy said all of that with a worried expression on his face.

Compared to Jackie’s excitement at the future challenges, Rudy only felt fear. He could not help but turn around and look at the distant Black Sun City. Black Sun City alone was already a place that he could never hope to overcome, let alone the Thousand Leaves City that was a whole level higher.

He did not have the guts nor the skill. His ability to go forward was entirely reliant on Jackie. Without Jackie, he would die a horrible death.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy before he pursed his lips helplessly and said, “I understand your worries. There are still two years anyway. Even though the Whirling World is full of challenges, there should be safe spots. The moment we find somewhere safe, I’ll have you stay there.”

Rudy was not very comforted by those words. After entering the Whirling World, they encountered bandits. Without Jackie, he would have died at the transfer gate.

The moment Rudy realized that fact, he started to regret entering the Whirling World. Even though Jackie's suggestion was very intriguing, all he wanted to do at that moment was to stay safe until he could leave the Whirling World.

He knew very well that the moment he was left behind, Jackie would continue forward alone, facing all future challenges by himself which was not a good thing for Rudy.

Rudy did not answer Jackie and instead changed the topic, "Take out that token of yours. Don't we need to follow the instructions of that token to enter Thousand Leaves City?"

Jackie shook his head and replied while pointing at his own temple, "As long as the token is with me, the path will be shown to me without me needing to look at the token."

Chapter 2802
The journey that followed was comparatively a lot more mundane than before. Along the whole way, they did not encounter a single person even though they did not advance that quickly. After all, even if the Whirling World was devoid of beasts, there were still people with ill intentions around. They needed to be on alert at all times.

Two days passed by in an instant. The two of them had passed an unknown distance. Jackie knew the way, but Rudy did not. It was only when Rudy saw a tall tower in the distance that he knew that they had arrived at their destination. Even though there was still a very long way to go, Rudy still got excited when he saw the tip of the tower. He pulled at Jackie's sleeve and pointed at it.

"That should be Thousand Leaves City!"

Jackie nodded with a sigh as he confirmed the path they would be taking to make sure that it really was Thousand Leaves City.

Rudy sighed as he lamented, "We're finally here. I've been bored to death just walking for the past few days."

Rudy had nothing else to say as he looked at the walls around Thousand Leaves City. Jackie quietly looked at the city, and could not stop himself from wondering what challenges they would face next. At that moment, footsteps could be heard coming from a distance.

The two of them looked over and saw a white-clothed man with a warm smile on his face. The man walking toward them was the first person they had seen in two days. The person did not look like he was planning anything bad, but Jackie could not help but feel like the person had ill intentions.

The man arrived in front of Jackie and Rudy and greeted, “I‘m an inner disciple from the Deer Pavilion. My name is Anthony Brown…”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, trying to remember that name. He had only been in Middle Province for a short time and had yet to memorize all of the clans there. Thankfully, Rudy has heard of the clan before.

Rudy knew that Jackie definitely did not know about the Deer Pavilion after seeing Jackie’s look of confusion. He lowered his voice and explained, “The Deer Pavilion is from the inner region of Middle Province. They’re among the best of the Seventh-grade clans.”

Jackie nodded slightly, understanding what was happening. Probably because he had mostly interacted with eighth-grade clans recently, the moment he heard that the Deer Pavilion was a seventh-grade clan, the only thing that flashed in his mind was ‘weak’.

After Anthony told them where he was from, he earnestly looked at the two alchemists. When he saw that the two of them did not seem surprised at the mention of the Deer Pavilion at all, he started to feel a little frustrated.

Anthony let out a slight cough as he said, “Have the two of you never heard about the Deer Pavilion? Haven’t you heard about a clan that‘s about to be promoted to an eighth-grade clan in the inner region? That’s the Deer Pavilion.”

Jackie and Rudy nodded slightly, not revealing much on their faces. Rudy felt like there was something wrong with the guy.

Does being promoted to an eighth-grade clan soon not mean they were still a seventh-grade clan?

Why was he saying all of that with such an arrogant look on his face?

It was no surprise that Rudy and Jackie did not react to the Deer Pavilion being a seventh-grade clan. After all, so many things had happened recently, and they had been interacting mostly with forces at the peak of Middle Province. Even though a seventh-grade clan was not bad, it was nothing in their eyes.

Anthony had looked so proud when he introduced his clan because the Deer Pavilion was somewhat famous in Middle Province. Even though eighth-grade clans were powerful, they were incredibly rare in the inner region. The inner region was mostly home to seventh and sixth-grade clans.

The Deer Pavilion stood at the peak among the seventh-grade clans, which meant that they were in the upper echelons of Middle Province’s inner region. Normally, revealing that he was from the Deer Pavilion earned him looks of respect. Yet, these two

alchemists did not seem to care that he was from the Deer Pavilion at all. He could even see a look of disdain on the shorter alchemist.

Anthony suddenly felt frustrated at that.

Jackie was a little speechless at Anthony. After the guy said where he was from, he suddenly paused. He did not say why he was there, it seemed like that had been all Anthony wanted to say.

Jackie did not waste any time as he coughed out, “Do you have anything you need from us, the disciple of the Deer Pavilion? Do you need directions…”

Chapter 2803
Anthony only reacted after Jackie’s question. He had lost his composure a little earlier. He coughed somewhat awkwardly as he said immediately, “Only one thousand spirit crystals are needed. My senior is almost here. He only needs one thousand!”

Those words stunned Jackie and Rudy.

One thousand spirit crystals? What senior?

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, “What do you mean?”

Rudy said as well, “That’s right! What do you mean? We never said we were buying anything from you?”

Hearing that, Anthony immediately realized that those two alchemists did not know anything at all. He was even happier at that point. It was better if they did not know the prices. If he had met some sharper alchemists, he might have had to negotiate for a long time.

Anthony hurriedly explained, “The two of you probably want to enter Thousand Leaves City, right?”

Jackie nodded. Anthony’s question was a waste of time.

Why would they even be there if not for Thousand Leaves City?

Anthony had a kind smile on his face as he explained everything. Everyone who entered Thousand Leaves City actually needed to go through a test.

There was a huge rock that was taller than a man in the center of Thousand Leaves City‘s gates. The rock was made of a special meteorite. Even with the token to enter the city, one still needs to go through the rock’s test. On the top of the rock was a colorless crystal. In order to enter the city, one would need to light up the rock before they were allowed to enter Thousand Leaves City!

Jackie nodded and said, “So only the strong can enter the city!”

Anthony nodded seriously, “Yes! You have to hit the rock with all your might and the colorless rock will light up in red if you have the right to enter. Otherwise, you’ll only be able to stay around the level nine cities.”

Rudy’s expression changed at that. He turned around to look at Jackie worriedly. It was probably incredibly easy for Jackie to enter the city, but it was practically impossible for Rudy.

Even if he had not tried it, he already had no hope. Even his strength at the late stage of the innate level was only there because the Whirling World had forcibly raised it. He was a helpless mortal compared to the other warriors in that world.

He had thought that he would be able to follow Jackie till the end, but he did not expect there would be a qualification test to enter a level eight city.

After Jackie heard that introduction, he frowned as well. If that was the case, it really was possible that Rudy would not be able to continue the journey with Jackie. Rudy would need to stay among the level nine cities, and never be able to step into a level eight city.

Just as the two of them were mulling over it, Anthony spoke again, “The two of you don‘t have to worry! Even if you can’t meet the requirements, you can still go in with our help…”

When Jackie heard that, he immediately turned to look at Anthony. At that moment, Anthony still had a warm smile on his face, but Jackie could feel something hidden behind that smile.

Jackie nodded without showing any emotion, “How would we be able to get in? Please teach us.”

When Anthony saw that Jackie was being more polite, the smile on his face deepened. “Helping you two to get in… Is actually not that easy. Normal folks would never be able to help you, but the disciples of the Deer Pavilion are quite special.”

As he said that, there was an arrogant look on Anthony’s face.

Jackie refrained from showing any emotion as he nodded, motioning for Anthony to continue.

The colorless crystal on the rock did not just glow red, but purple as well. Glowing red meant a bare pass while glowing purple meant that someone was exceptionally talented. They would be able to bring another person inside.

Chapter 2804
After explaining for so long, Anthony saw that the two of them finally understood. He immediately gave them an invitation, “Bringing the two of you inside is absolutely possible. Normal wandering warriors wouldn’t be able to do it. Only the disciples of the Deer Pavilion will be able to do so. My senior disciple will be here soon. As long as each of you gives me a thousand spirit crystals and guarantees that you’ll help us refine pills after we get the materials, we’ll bring the two of you with us!”

After saying that, Anthony raised his head slightly, waiting for their answer. He was incredibly confident in himself and his clan. As a clan that stood at the top of seventh-grade clans, they were still at the top of Middle Province, even if they could not compare to eighth-grade clans. Other than the strongest of disciples, no one dared to look down on them.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Anthony meaningfully and asked, “So you’re so intent on bringing us in because you want us to help you refine pills for free after you get the materials?”

Jackie had been incredibly sharp with his words. If all Anthony wanted was one thousand spirit crystals, then Anthony would not have needed to talk to them in such a friendly way, nor would Anthony explain things to them so patiently.

It was impossible for him to not have any ulterior motives. Just like Jackie had thought, Anthony had demands other than the one thousand spirit crystals.

Alchemists have an incredibly special existence in the Hestia Continent. No matter how many amazing materials warriors obtain, they could not consume them directly. They needed the power of alchemists to refine those materials into pills to increase their strength. They were like doctors of the mortal world. They were even more important than doctors.

There was an age restriction in the Whirling World. Becoming an exceptional alchemist required a lot of time, which conflicted with that. It was very hard to find a good alchemist in the Whirling World.

Jackie let out a light laugh after that before he turned around and whispered to Rudy, “This guy wanted us to work for him from the start. No wonder he’s acting so friendly. Even though we weren‘t being that friendly to him, he still patiently explained everything to us.”

Rudy nodded. Even if he was not the smartest, he understood the key takeaways from that. Ever since he entered the Whirling World, Rudy could understand how normal warriors felt.

If they wanted even better resources from the Whirling World, they needed to be even stronger. They definitely needed stronger and stronger pills. The Whirling World had

already been empty for tens of thousands of years, it was not known how rich the resources here were. However, without an alchemist helping them, they would only be able to stare at those materials!

Rudy thought about it and pursed his lips, “He wants us to give him a thousand spirit crystals, and still wants to take advantage of us…”

Rudy got angrier as he thought about it. No matter what pills alchemists refined, they would be able to obtain certain rewards after refining them. One pill was worth at least a few hundred spirit crystals. Anthony was smart. He did not just want them to give him spirit crystals, he even wanted them to work for him. That was only because Anthony could bring them both into Thousand Leaves City! It was as if the two of them would never be able to get into Thousand Leaves City without him.

Anthony merely looked on quietly by the side as the two of them mumbled to each other, not knowing what they were saying. They did not give him an answer which made Anthony a little more nervous.

Chapter 2805
He furrowed his eyebrows as he said anxiously, “The two of you have been talking for quite a while. Shouldn‘t you give us an answer? Even if you’re sixth-grade alchemists, you can’t really do much in the Whirling World. If you don’t work with us, we’ll just work with higher-level alchemists when we meet them!” Anthony said those words with conviction as though it was a warning.

He was trying to make himself look as good as possible. It was as if the chance would be gone if the two of them did not hurry up and agree.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. He was not some inexperienced child.

How could he just believe Anthony’s words so easily?

Anthony had definitely not been lying when he was talking about the rules, but the subsequent part was uncertain.

Jackie nodded at Anthony, “I’ll give you an answer right now. The two of us have already made a decision. We won’t rely on anyone else, and won’t work for anyone either. Thank you for telling us the rules of Thousand Leaves City. If I have the chance, I’ll definitely repay you in the future.”

After saying that, Jackie shot a look at Rudy. The two of them turned and continued walking toward Thousand Leaves City.

Anthony’s eyes widened, not expecting Jackie to reject him so thoroughly. There was not even any room for negotiation. Anthony frowned as his expression darkened

immediately. He rushed over and stood in front of Jackie, blocking Jackie's way, "Are you suspecting that what I said earlier was all a lie?"

Jackie shook his head, answering honestly, "I'm not doubting those rules you explained earlier at all."

Anthony got even angrier at Jackie's reply and said, "Since you know it's real, why are you rejecting us? I can guarantee you that the prices I'm giving you are already the cheapest. When you arrive at Thousand Leaves City, you'll meet others. Not a single one of them is reliable! Once they meet an even better Alchemist, they'll toss the two of you aside or even use you as cannon fodder. Don't think about looking for others just because you're not happy with my price!"

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly, not expecting that Anthony would think that way. He looked up and said earnestly, "I'm not planning on getting anyone else to help us get into Thousand Leaves City. Thank you for your concern. I'll remember the favor. As for everything else, there's no need for you to worry."

After Jackie said that, he did not push Anthony aside. Instead, he walked around Anthony and headed toward Thousand Leaves City.

Rudy closely followed behind Jackie. He followed everything Jackie wanted, not voicing any opinions.

Anthony looked at the two of them rejecting him so thoroughly again. Anthony was stunned on the spot as he looked at Jackie, wondering if something was wrong with Jackie's head.

Chapter 2806
He had said things so clearly. He did not even have any intention of negotiating things.

Did he really think he could enter Thousand Leaves City by himself as an alchemist?

He could not be as certain about other things, but there was a piece of common knowledge in the Hestia Continent. No matter how exceptional the alchemist was, they would throw most of their time into alchemy, neglecting their training. It meant that alchemists were all not very strong. Even though Jackie looked like he was at the late stage of the innate level at that moment, Anthony was sure that Jackie's actual skill was not at that level. At most, Jackie would only be at the middle stage of the innate level.

Someone at the middle stage of the innate level was actually talking to him so arrogantly. He did not plan on getting anyone's help to enter Thousand Leaves City!

Anthony wanted to laugh at that thought. The brat was too arrogant. Who did he think he was?

Anthony coldly snorted and said, “Just you wait! You will regret this when you see what’s waiting for you. Once you see how difficult being acknowledged by the rock is, you won’t be able to keep up with your arrogant ways!”

Jackie and Rudy then continued their journey to Thousand Leaves City.

When they were about a thousand feet away from Thousand Leaves City, Jackie could see a large crowd gathered in front of the city. They were all warriors who wanted to enter Thousand Leaves City. Other than endless wastes, they had only seen Anthony for the last two days. Rudy could not help but get excited when he suddenly saw so many people in front of him.

He pointed at the crowd and said, “Initially, I didn’t think that there would be that many people wanting to enter the Whirling World. After all, there are many uncertainties about the world. Now it seems like all the warriors who meet the criteria have entered!”

Rudy got more and more excited as he spoke. He felt like he had participated in the biggest spectacle among younger warriors in the Hestia Continent. It was as if they were all the most talented young people in the Hestia Continent.

Compared to Rudy, who was so excited, Jackie seemed much calmer. He raised an eyebrow and looked over to see a flood of heads in front of the city. He also saw the rock that Anthony had talked about earlier.

The rock to enter the city was at the center of the plaza in front of the city. There were many people queueing up in front of the rock. Everyone was incredibly eager to get the qualification to enter the city.

After Jackie let out a sigh, he pulled at the excited Rudy and headed toward the city gates.

There were two groups of people within the plaza. There was a group of idle people standing at various spots in the plaza, while the other group was queuing up in front of the rock. Those that were in various places were either chatting or resting. They seemed to be waiting for something as they stood at the plaza and looked in the distance.

After Jackie arrived at the plaza, he did not head to the queue immediately. He wanted to observe things first, so he pulled Rudy to a corner and settled down. Even though the rock was no challenge to Jackie, he still wanted to observe the surroundings before entering Thousand Leaves City.

Rudy blinked as he looked at Jackie curiously. He quietly asked Jackie, “Aren‘t we going in immediately? Do you feel like there’ll be danger in Thousand Leaves City?!”

Jackie was a little speechless. His lips twitched as he replied without turning his head around, “Isn’t what you said just stupid? It’s not like I didn’t tell you about what happened in Black Sun City. Black Sun City was just a level nine city while this one in front of you is a level eight city. If there’s no danger inside, I’ll eat a cockroach!”

Chapter 2807
Rudy immediately froze at those words. He frowned as he looked at the city gates in fear.

At the moment, the gates were partially shut, leaving only enough room for one person to pass. Many people were trying to get in, but there were also a lot of them who were looking at the city gates with concern. Ever since he arrived at the plaza in front of the gates, Jackie had only seen people enter. He had not seen a single person coming out.

That basically meant that Thousand Leaves City was several times more dangerous than Black Sun City. With Rudy’s meager skills, he would not be able to do anything.

The more Rudy thought about it, the more worried he got. There were countless treasures in the Whirling World. It was an amazing place for most warriors, but with the resources came unavoidable danger.

For those that were strong, the danger would turn into an opportunity. However, the weak would just be putting their life at risk. It was like a beast with an open mouth that could swallow them whole at any moment.

Rudy frowned and turned to look at Jackie in concern, “Should I not enter this time as well?”

Jackie shook his head and answered, “Since I can bring you in, I’ll definitely bring you inside. If there’s any danger that I can’t deal with inside, I’ll figure out a way to get you out or find somewhere safe to hide you.”

Jackie’s words alleviated a lot of Rudy’s worries. However, he still could not help but feel waves of fear facing Thousand Leaves City.

“Lost again! This guy has tried three times, and he failed to get the crystal to glow red each time. He refuses to leave after he fails, and he’ll just try again. Do you think I should applaud his courage or do you think I should say that he’s an idiot?!”

There were two muscular, shirtless men standing in front of Jackie. The two of them were looking at the Rock and discussing things with great interest.

Jackie could not help but look toward the position of the rock. There was a large-mouthed man at the rock. The man’s face was reddened at that moment, and he looked a little crushed mentally. His whole body was shocking as he let out an angry roar, “Why can’t I do it?! I‘m just a little off. Why won’t it let me enter? I’m clearly not weak!”

There was a trace of arrogance in those words. Others felt incredibly amused watching him. The two men standing in front of Jackie could not stop laughing after hearing that.

One of them shook his head and said, “This guy really is confident in himself. He thinks that he’s just a little off, but he’s actually lacking a great deal. On average, only half can get into the city. The other half would be disqualified. Who does he think he is… It’s as if it’s down to his luck that he can’t get into the city. What a joke!”

The other person nodded and said with a cold smile, “People like him are pretty common. They all think they’re better than others, but so many masters entered the Whirling World this time. Their meager talents might seem incredible when they’re at insignificant places, but they’re just ants among masters. Some of them aren’t even worthy of being called dust!”

Those words were very straightforward, but they were honest words after all. From the numbers gathered at the plaza, a lot of people came to the Whirling World. Furthermore, Jackie had found out how many people Phoenix Valley was sending into the Whirling World before they entered.

Chapter 2808
After he found out about the numbers, Jackie was quite surprised. Phoenix Valley had practically sent two-thirds of their number into the Whirling World. Furthermore, most of them that were being sent in were the ones that were incredibly talented. The ones that remained were those that were not very gifted.

If Phoenix Valley were willing to send in so many of their own as a major force in Middle Province, then the other forces would definitely do everything they could to enter the Whirling World.

Thousand Leaves City was just one among the many level eight cities. There were still over a hundred level eight cities that were just like it. Those cities were all similar to Thousand Leaves City whether it be in terms of size or the various rules. A further thought was the fact that those of them in front of Thousand Leaves City were just a tiny portion of the people who had yet to enter the city. From that, it was obvious how many had entered the Whirling World.

Thinking about that, Jackie sighed as he looked at the discussions in front of him. They were either saddened or excited. Jackie was also one of them at that moment. He started to feel uneasy about his future.

How far could he go in the Whirling World? What sort of difficulties would he face?

“That big mouth is quite pitiful…” Rudy mumbled softly.

He looked at the man with sympathy. At that moment, the man had already been tossed aside by the person behind him. Other than Rudy, there was practically no one who was sympathetic toward that man.

They merely felt that the large-mouthed man's words and actions were funny. It was clearly the man's fault for not having the skills, but he seemed intent on blaming everything else except for himself. He was at the lowest of the low in the Whirling World and would be relegated eventually.

The man stood there with a despondent look on his face after being tossed aside. He looked like he had been given up on by the world.

He trembled as he continued mumbling to himself, "Will I not be able to get in? So many people have clearly gotten the right to enter. I'm not weak within my clan! Why can't I even get through the city gates!"

He felt deeply impacted. He looked like he had aged ten years on the spot. Rudy felt incredible pity for him as he could not resist comparing himself to the man. Rudy felt like he was not much better.

Without Jackie, he might not even have survived Black Sun City. The more Rudy thought about it, the sadder he got. He even started to wonder if he could even survive the next two years. He wondered what he would be like when it was time to leave the Whirling World.

Jackie patted Rudy on the shoulder, stirring Rudy from his thoughts.

Jackie said helplessly, "It's not the time for you to let your thoughts wander. If you have time to feel sorry for others, why don't you think about your next course of action? Since you can't really grow in the path of a warrior, then throw everything you have into alchemy. Remember, you are an alchemist first and foremost."

Jackie's words caused Rudy to have a moment of realization. Rudy had been worried about all the wrong things. Ever since he entered the Whirling World, he had forgotten about his identity as an alchemist. What was abundant around them were warriors who were looking to increase their strength.

Rudy nodded earnestly.

"I am Joe Candor, an inner disciple of the Compass Pavilion. Might I ask the two of you where you're from?" A cool voice suddenly spoke next to Jackie and Rudy.

The two of them looked over at the same time. They saw a handsome black-robed man looking at the two of them with a soft smile.

Chapter 2809
Jackie frowned, not really liking people who start off their introductions with their origins. However, he refrained from being too rude before the person made his intentions clear.

Rudy‘s lips twitched as he whispered to Jackie, “The Compass Pavilion is an eighth-grade Clan. He should be quite strong if he’s an inner disciple there.”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, not expecting that the Compass Pavilion would be an eighth-grade clan. He had bumped into the disciples of quite a few high-grade clans recently. He was starting to grow numb to disciples of eighth-grade clans.

Jackie nodded at him and introduced himself. However, he did not reveal where he was from. After all, being an alchemist was already enough of an introduction. He did not want anyone to know that he was from Phoenix Valley.

Phoenix Valley was not in the best of positions at that moment. If he revealed that he was from Phoenix Valley, it was very possible that he would invite unnecessary trouble. Joe did not force Jackie to reveal his background when he saw that Jackie had no intentions of doing so, and merely nodded at Jackie warmly.

His eyes glanced across Jackie and Rudy, seemingly thinking about something.

Jackie frowned, not enjoying being looked at like that. However, he did not want to say anything at that moment. He merely quietly waited for Joe to reveal his intentions.

After a moment, Joe nodded at the two of them, “I saw that the two of you were hiding here after you arrived. Are you hoping that someone will bring the two of you inside? You shouldn’t rely on that riff-raff around here… They don’t have the skills nor the confidence. My junior disciple and I are from the Compass Pavilion, an eighth-grade clan. We definitely have the skills to bring the two of you into Thousand Leaves City.”

After saying that, Joe extended five fingers to Jackie, “Since the two of you are already sixth- grade alchemists at such a young age, you must be very talented in the field.

“I’ll give the two of you a discount. You only have to give me five hundred spirit crystals each, and I’ll bring both of you inside. However, there’s another condition. If I need any pills refined, you will have to help me out.”

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly. It was the same request again.

Rudy furrowed his eyebrows, feeling like these guys were just trying to get free labor from the two of them, no matter how nicely they spoke.

After all, alchemists were incredibly rare in the Whirling World. They would be incredibly useful at the right moments. That was despite the fact that seventh-grade alchemists were what everyone really needed at that moment. However, thanks to the restrictions

in place, most seventh- grade alchemists were already over the age limit. There were very few people who were able to become seventh- grade alchemists in sixty years.

The seventh- grade alchemists that entered the Whirling World were all already part of their respective forces. They would only be used at important moments. Even Joe was not able to have easy access to a seventh-grade alchemist despite being from an eighth-grade clan.

Within Hestia Continent, Joe looked down on sixth-grade alchemists. After all, sixth-grade alchemists were not incredibly useful for him. Yet, the whirling World greatly lacked alchemists, so he could not afford to be picky.

The conditions he mentioned were already quite lenient. There were already other alchemists that went into Thousand Leaves City with the warriors. Quite a few of them had to pay two thousand spirit crystals and even needed to refine a lot of pills. It was something that could not be helped. After all, alchemists did not have the skill to get past the city gates.

Joe noticed that Jackie remained quiet. Jackie still felt like the price was too high.

Chapter 2810
He furrowed his eyebrows before he said, “There have been a few alchemists that have been brought in before you guys. All of them had to give at least a thousand spirit crystals. I’m already being very nice by offering you five hundred spirit crystals.”

Jackie and Joe’s conversation attracted a lot of attention from the bystanders. Quite a few of them looked over. Some busybodies even started to surround them. They wanted to see how much two alchemists would have to pay to be brought into Thousand Leaves City.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. He coldly looked at everyone that was gathered around and said, “Refining pills for free for you is already an incredibly big payment. You’re actually still asking for fees. You’re really trying to bully people with your positions.”

Those people were trying to take advantage of the fact that alchemists had no other choice, especially those who were alone and did not have large groups to protect them. They were basically tasty sheep in the eyes of those people. They set a price that the alchemists would be forced to pay. They would even need to commit to long-term labor.

Jackie let out a laugh.

From Anthony earlier to Joe who was in front of him, all of them tried to make it seem like they were doing the alchemists a favor. It really rendered him speechless.

Rudy lightly snorted, feeling the injustice of it all as well. However, Hestia Continent had always been an unreasonable place. The ones who made the rules were the strong. The weak did not even get the chance to talk back.

Joe raised an eyebrow as he studied Jackie. The surrounding crowd could not help but laugh, feeling like Jackie's words made no sense at all!

Did Jackie think that he was the only alchemist in the world?

Jackie was still voicing his opinions despite such a great offer!

Joe had a sneer on his face as he said, "So you're not planning on entering? It's the first time I've seen someone like you, who doesn't even know how to appreciate what's given. Remember! Alchemists are weaklings in the Whirling World! You don't have the ability to enter, so don't try and argue so much!"

Jackie laughed as he turned away from Joe, "I refuse!"

Jackie's words were incredibly firm. After that, he shut his mouth, not saying another word. Everyone was stunned as they looked at Jackie like they were looking at an idiot.

Did this guy know what he was doing?

Joe's earlier terms had actually been incredibly good, but Jackie actually refused to accept it and said such harsh words in response.

Did Jackie think that he could enter Thousand Leaves City with his own skills?

Everyone merely looked at each other, feeling like his actions were even more absurd than the large-mouthed man earlier.

Everyone was gossiping in their hearts, "Hey, brat! Do you think you'll actually be able to enter Thousand Leaves City with your skills?"

Jackie glanced at that person, not even bothering with an explanation. He felt like those people were all just wasting their time.

"Just look at how he's not saying anything. Is that silent acknowledgement?! The world really is full of miracles. I have never seen an alchemist as confident as him," The person emphasized the word alchemist.

After all, everyone knew that there were no alchemists who made it to the late stage of the innate level before they were thirty…

Joe suddenly laughed as he looked at Jackie with an incredibly disdainful look. Jackie really was an idiot. He wanted to see what sort of tricks Jackie could pull.

“You’re actually here!” A familiar voice was heard by Jackie.

Jackie turned around and saw Anthony looking at him with a meaningful expression. Anthony probably has just arrived, but he probably knew what was happening from the discussions around them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2811 - 2820

Chapter 2811
Anthony's lips twitched helplessly, feeling like Jackie really did do things his own way.

Jackie was incredibly overconfident.

Anthony clearly knew Joe as he walked over and greeted Joe. After the two of them exchanged pleasantries, Anthony said meaningfully, "Joe, don't be angry. This guy has a bit of a temper. Earlier, I met the two of them while I was waiting for my senior. I gave them an incredibly good invitation as well, but they tossed me aside without even looking at him."

After that was said, there was a roar of laughter around them. Jackie really was something else.

Who did he think he was? Did he really think he would be able to enter the city with just his skills as an alchemist? He clearly did not know his place.

Rudy's face was starting to redden at how he was being treated. He was practically shaking in anger. He was about to argue when Jackie pulled him back. There was no need to waste their time with people like that.

There were more and more people gathering at the front of the city, and more and more gazed toward them. Very quickly, the two of them became the focal point of the whole place.

Jackie hated being the center of attention, but trouble always came looking for him. It was something he could not avoid.

His lips twitched helplessly as he turned to look at Rudy and whispered, "I will look for somewhere with fewer people to discuss our plans after entering Thousand Leaves City. That's already been messed up by these people, so… There's no reason to wait anymore."

After he said that, he immediately walked toward the group in front of the rock from before. The queue was already incredibly long at that point. Jackie casually brought Rudy over, causing everyone to widen their eyes.

"He's really queuing up?"

"My gosh, I was just joking. I can't believe he's actually so overconfident that he thinks he can enter the city!"

“He’s clearly gone crazy. Only half the people who tried can enter the city. Who does he think he is? Does he think he’s a disciple of a seventh-grade clan? He actually thinks his skills would be able to let him in!”

Jackie ignored all the mockery thrown at him. He felt like they were just the words of ignorant people. His gaze was fully focused on the rock in front of him.

There were some people who used everything they had and still could not get the rock to glow red. Some others got in with merely a light punch. In the end, there was only one requirement to get into Thousand Leaves City and that was skill.

Absolute skill!

“I refuse to believe it!” A man with a goatee sent out punch after punch.

He seemed incredibly confident but failed to light up the crystal in the end. He looked at the rock hopelessly. The reality was that cruel! He did not have the right to enter Thousand Leaves City! It was just a level eight city, yet he could not even enter. He had thought that he would be able to show off his skills in the Whirling World, but all it did was showcase how useless he was!

The man shouted, “I refuse to believe it! How could I not be able to do it?!”

Yet, he could not do it no matter how much he shouted.

The ones behind him started to get unhappy as he shouted. Someone frowned and said, “Hurry up and leave! This isn‘t a place for you to vent. Don’t you see that there are still so many people behind you?”

The man’s lips stiffened as he composed himself. He sullenly left the place under looks of disdain. No one had much sympathy for the weak After all, it was survival of the fittest.

Rudy took a deep breath as even his muscles stiffened, “How cruel…”

Jackie nodded, not saying anything.

Rudy looked at the people around them and curiously asked, “Why are there more people gathered around than those that are queueing up? Why aren’t they entering? Or were all of them rejected?”

Chapter 2812
Jackie looked around and said after some thought, “They should be waiting for people. It seems like the situation in Thousand Leaves City is probably complicated as well. They wouldn‘t be waiting here otherwise. Some of the people here are the rejects, but

most of them should be waiting. Joe hasn't gone in yet as well? He's a disciple of an eighth-grade clan."

Rudy nodded slightly. After a while, he asked curiously, "They're waiting for their fellow disciples to gather before they enter. Could it be that the challenge in the Thousand Leaves City requires more people to gather together to get better rewards?"

Jackie shook his head, "Nothing is certain. Let's not think about it before we enter the city. However, there's something that everyone agrees with. There's strength in numbers. When it comes to fighting over resources, having more fellow disciples will give you more advantage and confidence. They might be gathering because of that."

Rudy sighed with a sullen look on his face. The rejected warriors only made up a part of those gathered there. After all, most of them had probably accepted their fate and left the plaza, returning to level nine cities. However, there were still some warriors who did not accept their fates. They stayed behind and kept on trying. The more Rudy thought about it, the sadder he got. He had already grouped himself with the failures.

He looked at Jackie and could not resist saying again, "The world of a warrior is so cruel. Being an alchemist suits me better."

Jackie could not help but laugh at that thought. Before, he did not feel like Rudy was that naive, but he finally understood Rudy' s attitude after those words.

Rudy might like to put up false pretenses, but there was actually nothing much in his head. If Rudy had not met Jackie, he would have just been cannon fodder no matter where he went.

Jackie did not shoot back at Rudy and merely nodded, not saying anything else. However, that did not stop others from doing so.

Anthony was queueing up behind Jackie, and actually walked right over when he heard Rudy's earlier words.

Anthony smiled coldly, "Being an alchemist is obviously suited to you. Those who can't amount to much in the path of a warrior all end up trying to be an alchemist."

Jackie frowned.

Anthony was not much different from all those people he had met before. They were all flies that Jackie could not get rid of. It was exactly because of that reason that he rejected Anthony's suggestion.

Anthony felt like Jackie had insulted him, and was just trying to cause Jackie trouble. He deliberately raised his voice as he said that, intending for everyone around him to hear it. Mocking laughter immediately followed.

“It’s incredibly laughable for an alchemist to try and get the right to enter the city. Does he think that queuing up proves something? If he can’t do it, then he can’t. So many people have been rejected. How is he so confident?”

“I still don’t know about Jackie, but that one called Rudy is clearly incredibly weak. If Rudy manages to get into the city, I‘ll call him my father!”

“They’re all just incredibly pampered alchemists. They don’t know about the outside world at all. They think that they are better than us warriors just because they‘re a little skilled!”

“That’s right! A disciple of an eighth-grade clan is actually offering such tempting conditions and these two actually ignored it. Who gave them that courage?!”

Chapter 2813
“He gave himself that courage! It’s obvious that he’s just an alchemist from an insignificant place. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be acting so arrogantly, thinking that he’ll be able to enter the city himself!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow at all the discussion, pretending that he did not hear anything. He did not want to bother arguing with those people. But, Rudy’s determination was not as strong. Facing all those words, Rudy’s anger spiked.

“You’re the ones who are ignorant! You don’t know how strong Jackie is. Riff-raffs like you all aren’t even qualified to fight against Jackie!” Rudy was incensed.

He had completely forgotten everything Jackie had told him. He was practically arguing for the sake of arguing at that point. Jackie could not help but frown as he pursed his lips.

Rudy always acted however he wanted without consideration for the time and place. When the people around them heard those words, all of them laughed uproariously as they looked at Jackie and Rudy in disdain.

Practically no one agreed with those words at all. It only attracted more disdain and mockery. Joe walked over and stared at Rudy with narrowed eyes.

Joe had not planned on doing anything initially. Joe had just wanted to quietly wait until the results were out to prove how ignorant those two alchemists were. Yet, no one expected that Rudy would utter something as absurd as that. Rudy was practically framing Jackie as some amazing disciple from a ninth-grade clan.

Joe sneered as he said, “You really are inexperienced. Just listen to what you’re saying. Even a chosen disciple of the Compass Pavilion would not have dared to claim that he was unbeatable, that no one here was capable of facing him. After all, there’s always

someone better out there. For an alchemist like you to dare make such wild claims. You really don't know your place!"

Everyone nodded at those words. Those two alchemists really did not know basic common sense. They had probably never even gone through actual battle before. They merely thought that they had a bit of skill that would allow them to do what everyone else could not.

Jackie sighed helplessly, turning around and glaring at Rudy.

He frowned and said, "I tried so hard to stop you, but I still failed to stop your mouth. You insist on saying everything I did not want you to say. What's the point of saying all that? Will everyone else believe you? Is there any point in venting your frustrations? You'll just invite even more negative opinions! From now on, you'd better shut your mouth. Swallow every single word you want to say!"

Rudy pursed his lips with some difficulty. He had to admit that Jackie was right. That group of people looked down on them, to begin with. No matter what he said, everyone would merely treat his words as jokes.

Rudy decided to just shut his mouth, not even raising his head. He looked like a child that had done something wrong.

Jackie turned to look at those people who were still mocking them. He smiled coldly and said, "People often say whatever they want to. Before the results are out, I think it's better if you don't be so obstinate!"

Jackie's words incited even more laughter.

Someone pointed at Jackie and said, "What?"

Chapter 2814
"Whatever, what's the point of arguing with someone so ignorant? We'll know how much of a joke his words were in just a moment. That large-mouthed guy from earlier failed to get in even after three tries. I'm willing to bet that they wouldn't be able to get in even if they stayed here and constantly tried for two years!"

Jackie let out a laugh as he turned to look at Joe. The disciple of the Compass Pavilion had a noble air to him, it was obvious that Joe came from a notable family.

Jackie let out a laugh, "Are you so sure that I'll definitely fail to get in?"

Joe raised an eyebrow, not expecting Jackie's sudden question. Joe nodded without any hesitation. It was something that Joe did not even need to think of.

If two alchemists could get the right to go into the city, then those rejected warriors were far too pathetic.

Jackie laughed, “Why don’t we make a bet? If the both of us manage to enter Thousand Leaves Pavilion together, you’ll give us ten thousand spirit crystals!”

Just thinking about the nine ninth-grade spirit crystals he needed to gather gave Jackie an immense amount of pressure. Jackie was not willing to give up any chance he had to make more spirit crystals. That guy had mocked him quite a bit earlier, and was now right up in his nose, looking at him with a mocking expression. Jackie had to teach him a lesson.

Joe widened his eyes as he laughed uncontrollably. He felt like the alchemist in front of him was such a joke.

Did Jackie not know what he was saying?

Did Jackie know how ridiculous he sounded to everyone there?

Jackie asked again after noticing Joe’s lack of a response, “Are you willing to take the bet?”

Jackie repeating his words caused even more clamor in the crowd. They felt like Jackie as an alchemist was far too amusing. Ignorant was no longer enough to describe him. His self-confidence was through the roof.

Joe laughed for a long time before he nodded, “Sure! Since you insist on this bet, I’ll give you what you want. If you win, the two of you get to enter Thousand Leaves City and I’ll give you ten thousand spirit crystals on the spot, but if you lose…”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he answered, “If I lose, I’ll give you ten thousand spirit crystals too!”

Those words successfully silenced the crowd. Everyone looked toward Jackie, and quite a few of them had their lips pursed. They felt like Jackie was crossing the line at that point.

Was Jackie really that much of an idiot?

Jackie did not bother with what everyone around him was saying and merely waited for Joe to nod. Joe furrowed his eyebrows, no longer knowing what to say. Ten thousand spirit crystals were no small number to Joe. Since Jackie wanted to offer him that sum for free, he would naturally accept the offer.

Joe smiled and said, “Alright! Let’s make it so! Everyone here can be a witness.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and replied, “I don’t trust human witnesses who could suddenly defend the person who lost. Why don’t the two of us sign a contract? We should write down everything in the contract. After the results are out, anyone who goes against the contract after it ends will be punished by the heavens!”

Jackie spoke all of those words as if he was dispensing justice. There was once again a lot of clamor within the crowd. They could not stop themselves from starting to curse again.

Chapter 2815
“This guy is just too confident in himself. He even wants to sign a contract because he feels like everyone bearing witness is not reliable enough! If he loses, he needs to pay ten thousand spirit crystals. There’s no chance for him to even get out of it!”

“Before, I thought that the guy might have some other goals for acting that way, but now it seems like he’s just being way too overconfident. He feels like he can actually get into the city. There really are all sorts of people. It’s a miracle someone like him exists!”

“There’s no way around it. People who come from backwater places like him always feel like where they came from can represent the whole Hestia Continent. Even disciples of eighth-grade clans aren’t a match for him!”

Joe looked at Jackie speechlessly, suddenly feeling like everything he had done was incredibly petty. However, since everything had already progressed to this degree, he would not look good if he did not agree.

Joe nodded, taking out a contract from his spatial ring. Since the guy wanted to offer up his spirit crystals on a silver platter, there was no reason for Joe to refuse!

It was not that difficult getting the contract signed. All they needed to do was clearly write down the conditions on the paper before signing with their blood. It did not take that long for their contract to take effect.

With everyone else as witnesses, the two of them completed the contract without any delay. When the blood stained the paper, everyone’s moods were a little complicated. They watched Jackie with conflicted expressions. They felt like Jackie was being too overconfident. However, even if they could make out Jackie’s worth, everyone clearly saw Rudy next to Jackie.

Rudy’s strength back in the outside world was definitely no stronger than being in the early stage of the innate level. In the eyes of everyone there, it was considered trash. Even if Jackie had the ability to enter the city, Rudy definitely did not.

If it was just Jackie, people might have doubts, but the contract clearly states that the two of them will manage to enter the city. The results were clear, there was no other possibility!

“There’s something wrong with this guy’s head, or he wouldn’t do something so crazy. He’s just giving Joe his spirit crystals for free!”

“Who knows where this guy got all his confidence from…”

After signing the contract, Jackie averted his gaze, not wanting to waste any more effort on everyone there. He had wanted to bet twenty thousand spirit crystals, but he was worried that Joe would not be able to pay up such a huge sum. He hated getting tied down by the details, so he decided to just cut it in half. It was possible Joe did not have twenty thousand spirit crystals, but Joe definitely had at least ten thousand.

Probably because Jackie was being too calm, the discussions around them started to quiet down. Everyone quietly waited for Jackie’s turn, eagerly looking forward to Jackie’s results.

Time slowly passed away, and it was finally Jackie’s turn. The rock was more or less the same height as Jackie. The black rock was filled with blood-red patterns. On top of it was a colorless crystal. The person before Jackie had managed to get the crystal to light up red, earning the right to enter the city.

After the rock let out an intense light, a token shot out. On the token was the words ‘Tower Entry Token’. The person excitedly danced on the spot after getting the token.

Chapter 2816
He did not enter Thousand Leaves City immediately with the token like everyone else. Instead, he stood by the side and looked at Jackie with intrigue. It was obvious that he wanted to stay and watch the show. Jackie ignored everyone else, focusing solely on the rock. In truth, he was not entirely sure how much he needed to show for the colorless crystal to light up purple. After all, he did not just want to enter alone, Rudy had to come with him.

Thinking about it, he decided against holding back. His hands started to form seal after seal, and the power of Destroying the Void condensed into his fist.

At that moment, grayish-black energy emerged from Jackie’s right fist. There were no energy fluctuations from this energy, and it did not look to be anything extraordinary about that energy. Everyone peeled their eyes open as they looked at Jackie in anticipation, waiting for him to unleash a full-powered strike, only to find that the crystal did not react at all.

They wanted to see Jackie crying in despair after his failure. They wanted him to regret his ignorance.

Jackie frowned as he slammed his fist on the rock violently.

Everyone heard a boom, and the rock slightly quaked. Everyone's eyes widened as the crystal on the rock suddenly glowed a vibrant purple color so bright that it hurt the eyes of everyone staring at it. All of them either covered their eyes or averted their gazes.

There had been quite a few people who made the rock glow purple before, but the light had never been so intense. It was as if the rock had its fill of power!

"Goodness! Is something wrong with the rock? Why is it glowing so intensely?!"

"Who knows? I can't look anymore; I'm going blind!"

The vibrant light laser for a moment before it dissipated. The moment it vanished, two rays of light shot out and landed on Jackie's hands. He noticed a purple tower entry token, as well as a purple band, had appeared.

When Jackie touched the entry token, a wave of information flowed into his mind. Jackie sighed lightly, lamenting the fact that the Whirling World truly was a mystical place with its complete set of rules.

The information had been incredibly rich, describing Thousand Leaves City's various rules in detail.

If he had only managed to get the rock to glow red, he would only be able to get a tower entry token. If he had made it purple, he would get a band alongside that. There was only one use for that band, which was to choose out a helper. It would allow the person to enter Thousand Leaves City with the owner of the token, even allowing the entrance of this assistant.

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he pushed the band into Rudy's hand, motioning for Rudy to hurry up and put it on. Rudy excitedly slipped the band on his wrist, wiping away his dejected expression. Regardless of what had happened, he managed to gain entry into Thousand Leaves City, which was a better fate than those rejected entirely. He might even get some benefits from it.

The mere thought gladdened Rudy, and he could barely fight off the grin on his face.

Being happy was not enough, however. After reveling in delight for a few seconds, he turned to look at all those who doubted them so vehemently. At that moment, everyone had their mouths shut, and the whole place was silent. Even their breathing had slowed.

Remembering everyone's faces, Rudy slowly turned to look at Joe.

Chapter 2817
The confident look on Joe's face was wiped off at that moment, replaced by a look of utter disbelief as he stared at the crystal.

Though the crystal returned to its original state, no one could forget how intense the purple light was when Jackie activated it. Joe's breaths grew labored at this point.

Rudy sneered, "Now that the victor has been decided, shouldn't you hand over ten thousand spirit crystals?"

Those words were like a hammer on Joe's head that snapped him out of his trance.

What had he done?

Jackie had set a huge trap for him, and he jumped into it so willingly and confidently!

Joe was so angry that his entire body stiffened. Even though 10000 spirit crystals were something Joe could afford, it was no small amount. Even if it was to pay off a bet.

He pointed at Rudy and said, "You 're both in cahoots to trick me. You're scamming me off of my spirit crystals!"

At the moment, Joe only had one thought in mind, both Jackie and Rudy had laid out a trap that he, without knowingly any better, jumped in. He felt humiliated and enraged altogether. He felt worse than being slapped on the face a few times, and he wanted to kill Jackie for it.

Jackie's lips twitched speechlessly. Joe actually said he was scamming Joe, but where did that come from?

Jackie frowned and said coldly, "Just admit that you're a sore loser. Why are you talking about anything else? You said that we're scamming you, but did I force you to take the bet? Didn't you think I was weak and couldn't get to enter the city? You were the shortsighted one here. You said I was ignorant earlier, so why are you calling me a scammer now?"

Joe's face reddened at those words. He was right, but it did not change the fact that Joe felt like he had been lied to.

Joe took a deep breath and spitefully snapped, "You're both scammers. You can't be alchemists! Your clothes are for the sake of lying to people! You wear them to entice people into taking up your bets!"

Rudy got incredibly furious after hearing that.

Why was this man so unreasonable?

"Stop with all your lies!" lambasted Rudy. "We're both alchemists. We even managed to get sixth-grade alchemist badges from the Middle Province Alchemist Alliance! Don't you see the badges on our chest? Jackie's just that strong. He's much better than

anyone else both in alchemy and in combat. I've told you so, but you refused to believe me, even saying that I'm crazy!"

Rudy then pointed at everyone around him. "I heard everything earlier. Did you all not say that?!"

Various remarks and comments were thrown around earlier, but the contents were more or less the same. Rudy was right, they had thought that Rudy was crazy earlier. They claimed that there was something wrong with Rudy's head.

They just never expected Jackie to be so skilled!

Everyone felt awkward upon hearing Rudy's words… And to think, they had been so happily discounting Jackie!

Chapter 2818
Rudy smiled in glee, feeling like he had regained his lost honor. He then pointed at a muscular man who had criticized Jackie the most earlier.

This man was the same man who had criticized others in front of Jackie, and Rudy remembered the nasty things the man had said.

Rudy pointed at the guy and said, "You said that something's wrong with Jackie's brain, didn't you? That he's not skilled and that he's ignorant. Well, do you still think that now? Who's the ignorant one now, huh?"

The man's face reddened as his lips twitched. Everything he had said and done came back at him and made him a fool.

Everyone was dead silent at that moment. Those who had so happily criticized Jackie earlier turned mute, not even daring to utter a single word.

Rudy snorted coldly, not bothering with them as he turned to look at Jackie.

Naturally, Jackie did not bother with these people. Jackie looked at Joe and reached out. "The two of us signed a contract. If you want to go against it, you'll get a backlash from the laws of the world. I don't have time to waste on you. Just hurry up and pay me."

Jackie's words deeply humiliated Joe. He was so angry that he was trembling, but there was nothing he could do. He struck a wager with Jackie and lost terribly. He even signed a contract, so it was too late for regrets.

Joe angrily took out 10000 spirit crystals from his storage and handed them to Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow at this and actually started to count the spirit crystals in front of everyone there. Only after he made sure the number was correct did he put the crystals in Mustard Seed.

Joe felt like he had just been slapped a few times. His chest heaved in anger as he glared at Jackie with gritted teeth. It was as if Jackie was his mortal enemy. Nonetheless, he did not say anything even as he quaked in anger. Skill trumped debate, after all, and Jackie had silenced everyone with his results. At that moment, there was no point for Joe to say anything. He would just be laughed at.

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he turned and began to walk toward the city gates.

Anthony hid at the back, not daring to say a single word. He was worried that Jackie would humiliate him by bringing up what he had said earlier.

After all, he had treated Jackie as a pure alchemist back then and felt like Jackie's actions were a complete joke.

Anthony had a bitter feeling in his heart as he watched Jackie walking away. He had thought that there was something wrong with Jackie's head, but Jackie, surprisingly, had the skills.

Compared to Jackie, he was useless. It made sense why Jackie did not even bother with him. With absolute skill, he even brought Rudy with him into the city, and he did not truly need the help, either.

Both Jackie and Rudy were at a massive round plaza. After entering Thousand Leaves City, 99 ivory steps greeted them. The two of them slowly walked up. After they got up to the plaza, they finally saw how large it was. Everywhere they looked, there were people. They could not tell how many people were there.

The plaza was even bigger than the whole of Black Sun City!

Rudy gaped at the sight. "This is the biggest plaza I've seen in my life!"

Chapter 2819
The plaza was crammed with people. A few were resting while others were gathered in groups, chatting away.

"There are so many people here. There are at least ten thousand people!" exclaimed Rudy with widened eyes. "Just Thousand Leaves City alone has so many people. If you add up the people from all the level-eight cities, there would be at least a few hundred thousand!"

Saying that, Rudy started to get excited.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy. “There should be at least twenty thousand people here. After all, these are just the people who remained at the plaza. Don’t forget those who’ve gone inside.”

Jackie looked toward the most important part of the plaza. The round plaza was definitely enormous, but compared to the Thousand Leaves Tower that was in the middle, it paled in comparison. The Thousand Leaves Tower was at the heart of the plaza. The tower was so tall that it touched the clouds, and it was probably able to fit tens of thousands of people!

Compared to those who were resting outside, there were probably even more people in the Thousand Leaves Tower.

With that in mind, Jackie started to get excited as well.

Everyone that was gathered there had gone through selections. No one here was subpar except for those brought in by someone else. They would need to go through even more selections before they could enter a level seven city.

The selection process did not seem that strict to Jackie, but it had reduced quite a few people.

Jackie could not imagine how many would remain when it came to the level two or even level one cities. It did not matter which cities they started from, but anyone who could arrive at a level two or level-one city would be the elite among elites. They would at least be chosen disciples in various big clans. He wondered when he would face challenges like that, but those challenges were all chances in Jackie’s eyes.

Rudy sighed as he straightened his back. “Are we going inside right now? I’m starting to get impatient. I am curious, though; why are these people lounging around? Shouldn’t everyone enter?”

Rudy was riddled with questions.

Rules of Thousand Leaves City had all been transmitted into Jackie’s mind the moment he got the entry token. Thus, he turned and looked around before saying to Rudy, “It’s not that they don’t want to enter, but that they want to make sure they’re at their best before they enter. After all, you can’t leave after entering the tower. There are only three results after you go in.”

Saying that, Jackie paused as his eyes gleamed with intent for battle. Rudy shuddered as he looked at Jackie.

Letting out a slight cough, Rudy carefully asked, “What are the three results?”

Jackie took a deep breath as he said slowly, “Either you die inside, or you reach the third level and leave Thousand Leaves City for the next city. The last possibility is to get to the seventh level and obtain various treasures before leaving for the next city.”

Rudy felt as though a bucket of cold water was poured onto his head. He instantly stiffened at the implication and could not help but shudder. Even though Jackie was relaxed as he spoke, Rudy could tell that the first result was what the majority would go through. Rudy had felt how cruel the Whirling World was in Black Sun City. However, he did not expect that Thousand Leaves City would be much crueler. He believed that each level in Thousand Leaves City would just see more and more people die.

Most of them would probably die here!

Chapter 2820
Rudy grew fearful as he thought about it.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, immediately understanding what Rudy was thinking. He smiled as he patted Rudy on the shoulder. “Even though people will die, it’s not as many as you think.”

After saying that, Jackie did not bother explaining as he pulled Rudy to a more secluded area and rested.

Rudy sat next to Jackie and looked at Jackie in surprise. He did not want to bother Jackie with his question, but in the end, he succumbed to his curiosity. “I thought you’d go in immediately. Aren’t you well-prepared?”

Jackie shook his head. “I’m not in a bad condition at the moment, but I want to find somewhere safe to increase my strength.”

Jackie thus took out the Purple Soul Gem from Mustard Seed and placed it in his palm.

Rudy nodded before asking, “You said that not that many will die, but I feel like a lot of warriors won’t make it to the third floor. Since they can’t get there, they‘ll die…”

Jackie did not go into detail in his response, and Rudy could not figure things out, feeling as though their situation was a strange one.

Jackie looked at Rudy and could immediately tell that he would ask until everything clicked for him.

Jackie was forced to patiently explain everything. The rules of the Thousand Leaves Tower were rather simple, in fact. One just needed a victory to climb up a level, and a person needed to fight on every level. Only after winning would one be able to advance.

Hearing Jackie's explanation, Rudy was even more confused. He widened his eyes as he asked, "Do you mean you won't be kicked out if you lose? You can still wait in the Thousand Leaves tower for the next battle, and you can leave after winning two?"

Jackie nodded. After entering Thousand Leaves Tower, an opponent would be automatically chosen. Win or lose, they would be assigned another opponent after the battle ended. Some people might have lost because they were facing opponents far stronger than they were, so constant battles like that meant they still had a chance to win. That was why Jackie said there would be three results and that not many would perish.

However, Rudy shook his head firmly at that moment. "I still think that many will die. The opponents won't know each other anyway, and they won't bother holding back. Killing your opponent seems to only be a natural outcome."

Young warriors were all bloodthirsty, they could easily kill their opponents if they were not careful. Furthermore, they were all in the Whirling World without the protection of the clans, so they could fight without inhibition.

Jackie smiled and said, "You're right, but the Whirling World won't let people get slaughtered even if the rules here are cruel. As long as you voice out your surrender, the Thousand Leaves Tower will determine that the match has ended. The rules want a result, not corpses."

Hearing that, Rudy breathed a sigh of relief. There would not be a river of blood if that were the case. He sighed and said helplessly, "If you weren't here, I'd never have been able to witness all this!"

Even though many forms of danger were in the Whirling World, Rudy gained a lot of experience. He might have lived in Middle Province before, but thanks to his background, he had not gotten much experience. He never knew there were so many prodigies in the world.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2821 - 2830

Chapter 2821
Rudy straightened himself and said, “Thankfully, I’m here with you. Otherwise, I’d never be able to leave the Thousand Leaves Tower.”

He shook the purple band on his wrist as he looked at Jackie happily. The rules had actually been a huge advantage for Jackie. At that moment, he was just Jackie’s subordinate and could advance without needing to fight. As long as Jackie won, he, too, would move forward.

Jackie laughed before composing himself and focusing on the Purple Soul Gem in his hand. Even though the gem was not comparable to the Shattered Soul Crystals, it was an amazing treasure in its own right. He had nine of them in hand, and if he absorbed all of them, he would surely see improvements.

Time ticked away as Jackie formed seals with his hands, absorbing the pure soul energy from the gems while condensing Soul Swords. Jackie had already condensed 75 before, and he set a goal for himself this time. He had to complete Destroying the Void before he entered Thousand Leaves Tower. He would condense 100 Soul Swords. Even though he did not think the tower would be that difficult, it was better to enter the tower in his most capable and strongest form.

Rudy quietly looked on as Jackie formed seals. Even after knowing him for so long, Rudy did not know what kind of technique Jackie had. He merely assumed that Jackie probably had an upper earth level technique, but a guess was just a guess.

Five days passed by in a flash. Rudy tried to train himself during that time as well, but he was never that gifted in combat. After working for a long time without any results, he decided to focus on his alchemy after the fourth day.

Jackie opened his eyes on the fifth morning.

“You’re finally done training!” chirped Rudy excitedly.

“I thought I would have to wait for another five or six days. I was getting bored.”

Jackie let out a small chuckle before he calmly stood up from the ground. He dusted his clothes before he started to head to the tower gates without any delay.

Rudy followed after Jackie, and he could tell that Jackie was in a good mood. “Did you have any improvements? You broke through?”

Jackie nodded, much to Rudy’s glee. The stronger Jackie was, the safer he would feel and be.

Rudy widened his eyes and giddily asked, “Do you think your true skills are at the middle stage of the spring solidifying realm?”

The middle stage of the spring solidifying realm was an unattainable level for Rudy, but it was just part of the journey for Jackie. Even though the Whirling World restricted their power, it did not mean they could not break through. As long as they had the ability, it was possible. It was just that they would be restricted to the late stage of the innate realm. Their strength would return after they left the Whirling World.

Jackie shook his head. “There‘s been no change, but I’m almost there. My martial technique has improved. I’ve already perfected it.”

Jackie did not hide anything from Rudy when it came to these things. After all, Rudy was on the same boat as him, so there was no reason for him not to.

Rudy gulped at Jackie’s words in shock and hurriedly walked to Jackie’s side. “T-The upper earth level technique you’re practicing is already at the third stage?”

Chapter 2822
Jackie raised an eyebrow before saying, “It’s not an upper earth level technique…”

Those words confused Rudy even more. He wanted to ask more questions, but Jackie stopped him. “You just need to know that I’ll be able to bring you to a level-seven city. There’s no need to ask anything else.”

After saying that, Jackie entered the tower.

Rudy followed closely behind, still stupefied. He might be an alchemist without any martial talent, but he had basic knowledge. The skills that Jackie had shown before meant that Jackie did not have an ordinary technique. To him, a middle stage earth level technique was rather ordinary.

Inner disciples of eighth-grade clans all mostly practiced those techniques, but they were still no match for Jackie. This meant that Jackie’s technique was stronger than theirs, or he would not have won in such an overwhelming manner.

Since Jackie had denied that it was an upper earth level technique, there was only one explanation for it, it was a lower ultimate god level technique!

Every warrior in the Hestia Continent knew what an ultimate god level technique meant. Rudy widened his eyes and gaped, not daring to believe what he was thinking.

High level techniques were not something easily learned. So many prodigies have tried to learn high level techniques, only to be met with failure. It was far too difficult. Without being at a certain level of strength, it was impossible to grasp the intricacies of the

techniques. Only those who could get to certain levels were able to try higher level techniques.

Rudy had seen many masters in this period. Whether it be inner disciples of seventh-grade clans or eighth-grade clans, not a single one of them would dare to try a lower ultimate god level technique. It was not due to the lack of resources, but due to a lack of courage.

Practicing a technique that was too powerful for them would only invite all sorts of trouble, and they would end up wasting a lot of time. Compared to wasting their time that way, it was better to master a technique they could grasp to strengthen themselves.

To Rudy, only those who were already at the divine solidifying realm or the late stage of the spring solidifying realm would attempt ultimate god level techniques, and success would not even be guaranteed by then.

How could a warrior at the initial stage of the spring solidifying realm successfully learn one?

Jackie never lost his calm when he used the technique. It was obvious that Jackie had reached at least the second or third stage of the technique.

Rudy did not want to think about it anymore; it would only baffle him even more. He began to admire Jackie even more at this point. To him, there were no limits to Jackie's talent.

After the two of them entered the tower, they heard a clamor in front of them. Looking forward was an uncountable mass of people. Jackie had been right, there were more people within the tower than at the plaza. They were all in high spirits, filled with battle intent.

Rudy could not help but take a deep breath as he went on full alert. He might not need to fight, but the atmosphere still affected him. He even began to feel fear too. Jackie, on the other hand, was not affected at all. Instead, he seemed even more spirited as he walked over to the inside of the tower.

Rudy frowned, hurrying behind Jackie. The tower had seven levels, and they were currently at the first.

Chapter 2823
The moment he got the token, all the rules of the tower were transmitted into his mind. It might be Jackie's first time in the tower, but it already felt like a familiar place. He was not anxious at all. He wanted to walk around for a bit before doing anything else.

Rudy, on the other hand, merely followed after him. Several times did he think of stopping Jackie, wanting to ask a question or two, but Jackie never looked his way. He felt like he would just annoy Jackie if he interrupted what he was doing.

After a long time, they were finally back at where they entered the tower. Rudy could not hold on anymore as he hurried to Jackie's side. "Where are we going next? Didn't you say the battles will start after we enter? Why do you seem so idle?"

Jackie smiled and said, "There's no need to panic. I just wanted to look around before I queue up."

Rudy did not know about the rules of the tower and thus blurted, "Queue? What queue? Do you need to register for the battles?"

Jackie laughed as he patiently explained after patting Rudy on the shoulder, "There are seven arenas on the first level of the Thousand Leaves Tower. You saw it just now. Intense battles are going on in each arena."

Rudy nodded. They had walked a full circle around the tower just now and had seen everything. He did count seven arenas earlier, and each arena was surrounded by uncountable numbers of people.

The design of the arena was incredibly unique as well. It looked like a coliseum. There were spectator stands around the arenas filled with people cheering excitedly. Each battle was incredibly exciting, whether it be for the participants or the spectators. Everyone was filled with excitement, and the thirst for battle was thick among them. It was, simply put, a huge coliseum, but instead of battling beasts, extraordinary warriors duke it out in the arena.

Jackie continued to say, "If you want to take part in a battle, you just need to use the entry token to queue up. I've just entered, so I'm not in such a hurry. I just want to have a look around."

Rudy nodded before turning around to look at the arena closest to them. It was the largest arena he had ever seen and the largest audience as well. He estimated the number of people. He felt like each arena could easily house tens of thousands of people, and all of the arenas looked full.

The booming cheers and shouts of people huddled at the same spot made Rudy's head buzz. The total number of people added up in all the arenas would already have exceeded a hundred thousand.

Rudy pursed his lips in surprise at that.

For many years, he had put all his focus on alchemy. Even if he took part in a tournament or went somewhere else, he had never seen so many people in one place

before. Even since he entered the Whirling World, However he felt like he had been buried in a mass of people. He had never truly felt for himself how many people were in the Hestia Continent before.

He sighed at those thoughts.

Chapter 2824
“Before, those people called the two of us ignorant, and I didn‘t want to admit it. I feel like I have to admit it now, but it’s only applicable to me. I know that there are countless warriors in the Hestia Continent, but I’ve never really felt it before. I even thought that there won’t be that many people entering the Whirling World thanks to its restrictions. I know now how narrow-minded I was. The Hestia Continent is massive, home to countless warriors. Just the Middle Province alone has at least a hundred million people…”

“Even with the age restrictions, there are still countless warriors who can enter! Even after being filtered out, there are still so many who can enter the Thousand Leaves Pavilion. It’s possible that we’ll encounter countless people in the end. I understand now what it means when they say that there’s always a mountain higher!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, feeling like Rudy’s moment of realization came genuinely from the heart. He had to agree that Rudy was ignorant. Even Jackie had never seen so many people in one place before.

Jackie smiled, about to say something when they were interrupted by sounds of excitement.

There were two people who were similarly dressed, evidently from the same clan. However, Jackie was not familiar enough with Middle Province and could not tell where they were from.

The shorter man frowned and said, “Have you gotten your number called? Why don’t you wait for the time being? Why are you so anxious? A level-eight city is not easy, let alone a level-seven one. It‘s not good for you to do everything alone. Why don’t we wait for the rest of the team and our fellow disciples to gather before we move to the next city?”

The taller man shook his head. “There is strength in numbers, but there won‘t be enough resources to go around. Do you think I’ll be able to get any of the good stuff? I‘m used to moving alone. I’ll just feel restricted if I go with them. My number is already up. Once I win, I’ll go to the second floor.”

The shorter man frowned unhappily, obviously not agreeing with his fellow disciple’s opinion. Nonetheless, he did not dwell on it. “What number did you get? Who are you up against?”

The taller man sighed as he shook the token in his hand. “The fourth arena. I’m the seventy-eighth battle.”

After the shorter man heard that, he frowned anxiously. “The fourth arena is already at the seventy-third round. It won’t take that long for it to get to your turn. You still haven’t told me who you’re facing.”

The tall man pursed his lips helplessly. “Paul Mason from the Deer Pavilion.”

The mention of the Deer Pavilion caused the shorter man to pause. Rudy and Jackie exchanged glances at that, too.

It was the Deer Pavilion, Anthony was from the Deer Pavilion, too. The first time they met Anthony, he had very arrogantly told them that he was from the Deer Pavilion. They stood at the top of seventh-grade clans.

The shorter one sighed and pursed his lips. “I can’t believe you‘re meeting an inner disciple from the Deer Pavilion right away. I’ve heard of Paul before. Among the inner disciples, he’s not that amazing, but he‘s still in the middle. You have to be careful. I heard that this guy doesn’t have a good temper. He kills without a second thought.”

The taller man nodded, he frowned as he said seriously, “I’ve met all sorts of people before. Even though we’re not that strong among seventh-grade clans, we’re still quite a bit stronger than sixth-grade clans.”

Chapter 2825
“We have some amazingly talented disciples with us as well. Even though disciples of the Deer Pavilion have always been strong, I’m not worried at all. If he tries to kill me, I won’t let him off easily. I’ll make sure he pays the price, even if I have to die!”

The shorter man immediately got nervous at that. He reached out and pulled at the taller man’s arm. “Don’t be so hasty. No matter what, your life is the most important. As long as you’re alive, you’ll have the chance to reclaim what you’ve lost!”

The taller man nodded slightly, but Jackie could tell that he probably did not pay the shorter man’s advice any mind.

The moment they were in the arena, the taller man would not hold back if Paul tried to kill him. It might even turn into a battle to the death.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything, but Rudy started to get anxious.

Rudy whispered to Jackie, “Don’t be reckless if your opponent turns out to be strong, your life is what matters most. We can take revenge later, so don’t be reckless!”

Jackie knew what Rudy was worried about, and turned to look at Rudy, “Don’t you know my personality? If the opponent insists on troubling me, I won’t hold back. However, I’m not a reckless person. You don’t have to tell me any of that. I know it all for myself.”

Rudy helplessly pursed his lips.

With Jackie’s personality, Rudy really had been wasting his time. Jackie had never been someone who looked for trouble. Every time Jackie took action or was angered, it was because the other party had been trying to cause him trouble.

Rudy sighed helplessly at that, not able to say anything. At that moment, he suddenly heard shocked cries as discussions started to be heard.

“Another one died! They just went ham in the area the moment they started fighting. They did not know how to surrender, either. It was a battle to the death!”

“Just look at all the blood on the floor, it stained the arena completely. Fights have always been bloody, and someone dying is normal!”

“I wonder what kind of opponent I’ll face. Whoever it is, I hope they’ll remember to be considerably patient and not take my head!”

As everyone discussed the matter, someone grabbed the corpse and tossed it aside. The person should have been a wandering warrior without any fellow disciples. There was naturally no one who wanted to deal with his corpse. The corpse was tossed out of the arena like it was trash.

Rudy frowned as he looked at the corpse, mumbling to himself, “How cruel!”

At that moment, the corpse’s ribs were exposed, and it looked like a balloon had exploded inside the ribcage. The victor laughed as he walked out, not even giving the corpse another look.

It was a world Where the strong ate the weak, the survival of the fittest. That was the most basic rule of the Hestia Continent. No one cried out for the corpse at all. Most of them were instead encouraging the victor, making a chilling sight.

Chapter 2826
Rudy was a complete weakling when it came to combat. Looking at this scene, Rudy could only feel goosebumps on his skin.

Jackie turned and shot a look at Rudy. The two of them headed toward the spectator stands of the third arena, where cheers and shouts for the battle still echoed. Some of them were so excited that their eyes reddened, but overall, everyone was thrilled.

Jackie brought Rudy to a secluded corner without a good view over the arena, seeing as the good spots were taken up already. He could not be bothered fighting over them with the crowd. After all, he was not as passionate about watching the battles as the others were. He merely wanted to watch a match before he queued up for his battle.

Since there were so many of them and only seven arenas, the turnover speed of the matches were swift. The moment Jackie and Rudy sat down, a new match was about to start.

“Good man! We’ve got a good show to watch this time. The one in black clothes is Cody Stone from the Unbreaking Pavilion, while the one in white is Vale Monet from the Compass Pavilion. Both of them rank around the same in their respective clans and are both among the top inner disciples.”

“It’ll be an intense fight for sure. We were just looking at wandering warriors before. Even though it was entertaining, it was starting to get bland. A battle between two juggernauts will spice things up!”

Cody and Vale both stood at opposite ends.

Everyone quieted down as they whispered their thoughts to each other, and this was how Jackie got around to learn who the two competitors were.

Rudy whispered, “So the Unbreaking Pavilion is against the Compass Pavilion. Both of them are eighth-grade clans, but to be frank, the Unbreaking Pavilion is much stronger than the Compass Pavilion. It’s just that we don’t know who’s stronger between their disciples.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking closely at Cody and Vale. The two of them did not like each other, evident just by analyzing their demeanor.

Normally, both sides would immediately attack after getting to the arena to save time, but for some reason, Cody and Vale merely looked at each other when they got on, not attacking.

The spectators did not urge them to start either. Everyone seemed to be waiting for them to roast one another. To the spectators, as long as the two of them were talented enough, they could give the competitors some time.

They wanted the atmosphere to be even more tense. Only an intense battle would excite them enough; fights that were not borderline fatal were boring.

Jackie could understand the mentality, but he did not like it.

Rudy obviously did not understand why the two of them were not fighting immediately. After all, many awaited their turn, and only once these two were done would they have their turn. He was baffled as he watched Cody and Vale merely staring at one another.

Rudy frowned before he whispered to Jackie, “Why aren’t they fighting yet? What are they just looking at each other for?”

Jackie laughed. “They want to waste their time on words, and they want the battle to be even more intense.”

The moment Jackie said that, Vale from the Compass Pavilion finally spoke.

“Other than within my clan, I’ve never shown any mercy when I’m fighting anyone else. You have to remember to surrender when we fight, or your life may very well be done for!”

Those words excited the crowd even more. The challenge within the words was plain for all to hear. He was clearly telling Cody that he would lose.

Chapter 2827
Cody lightly snorted as he sneered, disagreeing with what was said.

“You should be telling yourself that. The Compass Pavilion might be an eighth-grade clan like the Unbreaking Pavilion, but everyone here knows that the Compass Pavilion’s title is a hollow one. They’re a level below our clan. Don’t think that you can challenge me so carefreely just because our clans sound like they’re equals!” snapped Cody.

He was not just targeting Vale but was also insulting the whole Compass Pavilion.

Vale was so furious that his face reddened and his lips twitched. There were a lot of people in attendance, including the disciples of the Compass Pavilion. When they heard Cody saying such foul words about them, they started to shout indignantly.

Vale pointed right at Cody. “You’re full of crap! The Unbreaking Pavilion is just slightly stronger than the Compass Pavilion. Just give us a bit of time, and we’ll make up for the difference!”

Exasperated, Jackie’s lips twitched. He never expected that these two would start arguing. He hated those who go on ranting without any reason, there was no point at all. It was better to let their fists talk.

Both Vale and Cody eventually stopped, probably because both sides had been critical of each other. It was not out of peace, however, as they sprang into action and attacked one another.

Vale let out a furious roar as he pulled out a golden sword from his spatial ring. A ball of fire shot out from his body which enveloped him.

Everyone heard the cry of a bird after that as a three-legged golden bird appeared behind Vale. The bird opened up its wings, its flames burning brightly.

“My golden bird will take out the sun!” Vale let out a roar as the bird flapped its flaming wings, merging with Vale’s blade in a sea of fire.

Vale was furious as he swung down toward Cody.

Cody pulled out his weapon as well; it was an incredibly long spear. His hands shook as the spear quickly shrank to normal size, buzzing as Cody met Vale’s attack with it.

The next moment, the crowd burst into a flurry of noise once more. Some of them recognized the level of the skills Cody and Vale used and started to discuss things excitedly.

“The golden bird is a middle earth level technique. I heard that Vale has already mastered it to the second stage! I wonder what level Cody’s skill is. Does anyone know Cody? Do you know what kind of technique he uses?”

A few shook their heads at the question. Even if they knew Cody, no one knew what kind of technique he used, knowing only the fact that he would typically use a spear.

Right at that moment, a loud explosion was heard on the stage. The spear clashed against the sword, and both of them retreated a step, neither gaining an advantage. From that alone, it was clear that the two of them were somewhat equal skill-wise, with none triumphing over the other. The audience was much more excited then. There were even some who wanted to set up bets to let everyone bet on the winner.

Vale frowned. Even though the two of them had both retreated, he was far from happy.

Chapter 2828
Cody’s words were downright provocative toward the Compass Pavilion. He had wanted to quickly end the fight for the Compass Pavilion’s reputation, but he never expected the attack to end up with a draw, even when he did not hold back.

This, in turn, made Cody worry. However, he did not care about anything else at that moment as a thought flashed across his mind. No matter what price he had to pay, he had to win this battle. It was not just a personal victory but also for the sake of his clan’s reputation!

Rudy, meanwhile, was entirely focused on alchemy, and the battle between Cody and Vale was merely something for him to watch. He could only see that the two of them seemed evenly matched, and a true victor could not be determined at this point.

He listened as the crowd continued to talk. Some of them said that Vale was stronger, while others said that Cody was no weakling and that he would come out as the winner. Various judgments were cast at that moment, which caused Rudy's ears to buzz listening to all of it.

He could not help but turn to glance at Jackie. All he saw was Jackie looking at the arena calmly, his expression undisturbed. It was as if he would not even bat an eye if someone died in the arena.

Rudy did not truly trust everyone else's judgment, but he would with Jackie's.

He whispered and asked, "Jackie, who do you think will win?"

Jackie pointed at Cody and replied, sounding rather sure of himself, "Cody seems to have the advantage."

This stunned Rudy. After all, both of them had taken a step back after the clash. It did not seem like Cody had gained much of an advantage, so why did Jackie say that Cody had the upper hand?

Jackie did not want to explain himself, but Rudy looked at Jackie with wide eyes. He even looked like he would ask more if he did not get an answer, and this made Jackie frown helplessly.

"Cody obviously seemed much more relaxed after the two of them clashed. It doesn't seem like he used his full power," Jackie explained calmly.

Rudy, not agreeing with Jackie's opinion, asked with furrowed eyebrows, "Are you looking at their expressions? How could you determine who's stronger between them like that? After all, everyone's different, so even their expressions…"

"Just shut up for now," interrupted Jackie curtly. "There's no way to prove anything even if we talk about it more. Just wait and look at the results."

Rudy's mouth stiffened as he reluctantly closed his lips.

The battle stopped for a moment as Cody and Vale stood at their respective sides, staring at each other. They were only pausing for a moment to look for weak points, but Jackie felt like Vale seemed to be in a panic at that moment.

Vale inhaled deeply, hiding his feelings as he raised his head. His anger at that moment was evident in his reddened eyes.

Cody snorted as he raised his eyebrow. "Aren't you going to attack again? Are you scared now?"

Vale's hands trembled as he nearly exploded with curses. Cody was downright infuriating! Everything he said made his temper soar.

Vale snorted loudly and said, "You're talking about me? Do you think I'm the only one in the arena? You haven't attacked me at all, so what right do you have to criticize me?"

Cody laughed, not taking it to heart. "I'm giving you a head-start. After all, you're nothing to me. If you still refuse to attack, the spectators might call you out for wasting time!"

Vale had still been able to compose himself and not let Cody's words get to him earlier, but upon hearing those words, Vale almost lost his sanity.

Vale let out an angered roar and rushed forward again!

Chapter 2829
Vale wanted to go all-out. He would make his opponent eat his words, and then some!

The crowd was abuzz again, but the difference was that the disciples of the Compass Pavilion, who had been enraged initially, slowly fretted at the situation. It was plain from an outside view that Cody had said all that earlier with the sole intention of angering Vale and making him lunge.

It was obvious that Cody had planned something else, but it was too late to do anything. Vale had already made his move, and no amount of warnings or yells could reach him at this moment.

Rudy, too, felt like something was wrong as he mumbled, "Cody is a little too good at getting under people's skin…"

Vale shouted angrily as he formed seals with his hands. Red runes constantly flowed between his fingers as a vibrant golden bird formed again. The bird cried out as its wings flapped. Heat waves were sent out of his body as even the surrounding air started to distort from the heat.

The spectators closer to the stage retreated as sweat dripped down from their heads.

To deal his strongest blow, Vale used up all the true energy in his body. In turn, the golden bird behind him was almost twice the size of the one before!

Compared to how frantically Vale was acting, Cody was noticeably much calmer. He merely grabbed the spear tightly with both his hands with a resolved look on his face.

"Die!" screamed Vale as he shot right at his opponent as fast as a cannonball.

Cody snorted as he lunged forward, rushing right at the three-legged bird. This time, he had a change of plan. He did not face Cody directly and instead rushed upward toward the bird!

Everyone's eyes widened as he struck with his spear repeatedly at the neck, abdomen, and left claw of the bird. His speed was so terrifyingly quick that only afterimages could be seen. Even Vale had failed to react!

An explosion was heard mere moments later.

Vale had only managed to react when his true energy was already too unstable for him to control, and Cody obliterated his golden bird with a strike at its vital point.

Under normal circumstances, Vale would never have given his opponent the chance to strike at his technique's weakest points even if his opponent saw through it. However, Cody had been far too quick.

Cody had been so swift that no one could react before the attack was done. The golden bird had been destroyed in three strikes, dispersing into energy.

Vale's eyes widened as he looked over in disbelief.

Cody merely sneered, believing that showing mercy was just opening himself up to be backstabbed. With that, he struck with his spear again, spearing Vale's stomach.

Everyone heard a crack as Vale's whole body was sent flying in one strike toward the pillar at the stage quickly. With a loud impact, Vale crashed right into the pillar and slowly slid toward the ground as blood seeped from the corner of his lips. His bones were completely snapped as he suffered numerous internal injuries. This was only with Cody holding back.

With Cody's temper, he could have killed Vale off with one blow. After all, Vale had been too prideful before with his arrogant words.

Chapter 2830
Nonetheless, many eyes were on Cody, and he could not afford to worsen the relationship between their two clans. He could not cause a rift between the clans just for a moment of excitement. Of course, he did not let Vale get away unscathed. Vale would be rendered useless for a good few months after that strike.

Cody's speed had stunned everyone, especially the last three strikes that no one had been able to react to. They felt chills down their spines, and some of them were even rendered speechless by the shock. Prodigies looked amazing, wherever they were.

The crowd was mixed, with about half of them being wandering warriors and half of them being disciples of clans. Regardless of who they were, however, most of them were average in skill. They started to get excited after seeing such shocking attacks.

“My god! Cody is so strong! He managed to undo Vale’s strongest attack in three strikes, all while looking composed from the start. It’s just like he said, Vale was nothing to him.”

“That’s right! I underestimated him big-time. I thought that he was at the same level as Vale and that it‘d be an intense battle. I never expected Cody to be so strong. He seemed to know the bird’s weak point incredibly quickly. He attacked so swiftly before Vale could even react, destroying the bird immediately!”

“It’s so frustrating comparing myself to him. Even though Cody’s incredibly strong, Vale was no slouch either. I was up there, I’d be done before I could even launch a second attack!”

Their discussions filled the air, but Jackie remained as calm as usual.

Rudy widened his eyes as he gaped slightly, not knowing what to say. He turned to look at Jackie somewhat reluctantly.

“How are you always able to get it right?”

Jackie let out a light laugh as he calmly answered, “You’ll understand in time. The results of this battle weren’t that hard to guess, though. Calm yourself and observe their slightest reactions. You’ll be able to see who’s more confident then.”

Rudy nodded earnestly, feeling like Jackie was right, but he asked again, “But the warriors gathered around us have all probably been through many battles as well. Why couldn’t they see it? All of them seemed rather confident in their guesses, yet most of them turned out wrong. Even those who were right merely guessed without assurance.”

Jackie calmly answered, “Didn’t I already say it? You need to have a calm mind. Just look around you. Other than a few exceptions, most of them are all riled up from the atmosphere of battle. How could they calm down to see who’s stronger?”

Rudy slapped his thigh. “You got a point. Everyone was too emotional at the moment!”

Rudy then looked around him. Even though the battle had ended, the excitement did not leave the people. The unexpected result merely threw them into silence before they burst into discussions once more.

The result had been out of their expectations, but it was enough to excite them. After all, Cody’s final attack was beautiful. Compared to the emotional Vale, Cody had control over himself the whole time.

Even though Vale had used all his true energy to launch his strongest attack, Cody still saw it coming. Cody had launched the last three strikes all too calmly, correctly hitting all of the golden bird’s weak points.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2831 - 2840

Chapter 2831

“He’s so strong! Cody really is so strong! He is no doubt an inner disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. I’ve never seen any inner disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion fight before, so this was an eye-opener!”

“I can’t compare to him. Vale was strong, but he was no match for Cody!” Jackie heard it all, and to him, it was too much noise.

At that moment, a few disciples wearing the clothes of the Compass Pavilion rushed through the crowd and ran to the arena, seemingly furious. As they pushed the crowd away, they showed no signs of civility. The surrounding warriors were angered, but everyone held their tongue. After all, the Compass Pavilion was an eighth-grade clan. They might not amount to much against the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion, but they were significant before most of the warriors there.

These disciples rushed to the stage with fervor, but the arena had been shielded by the laws. They were not able to enter before the time was up!

Vale struggled as he spat out a mouthful of blood. Even though Cody did not reap his life, the injury he sustained was nothing to scoff at. Vale struggled to raise his head as his eyes reddened.

He glared at Cody as anger and shame sizzled in the pit of his stomach. He was full of negative thoughts in his head. It was not his image and pride that he minded, it embittered him because this battle involved their respective clans.

He had lost, and his clan had been humiliated. His anger grew the longer he entertained the thought. He spat out another mouthful of blood.

Cody raised an eyebrow as he casually spoke, “Are you not going to surrender? The barrier hasn’t fallen, so the laws see that you can still fight. If you refuse to surrender, then I’ll attack again. Don’t blame me if you die because I was too heavy-handed then. Even if you have any complaints in hell, you need to know that you caused your demise.”

Vale gritted his teeth in fury. “You despicable person! You deliberately said all that to anger me! I won’t let you off. Don’t think you’re fine just because you got to the second level. There’s still a long time, and we’ll be waiting for you after this! I don’t represent the might of the Compass Pavilion. I lost and embarrassed my clan today, but that’s because I was too weak! My fellow disciples will make up for my mistakes in the future!”

“Remember what you’ve said, Cody. Don’t regret it later!” screamed Vale, which, in the process, caused his fatigue to worsen.

At that moment, the barrier around the arena suddenly cracked as the power separating it from the outside world disappeared.

Vale had been judged to no longer have the ability to fight on, and with results determined, the barrier collapsed. The moment the barrier fell, the disciples of the Compass Pavilion who were surrounding it rushed forward. All of them had steely looks on their faces. Unable to change the result of what happened, they were forced to carry their fellow disciple down for treatment.

Vale fell unconscious after using the last of his strength to say his piece.

Cody sneered at this, and he could not help but feel Vale was far too annoying for his good. Even after losing the match in such an embarrassing manner, he still attempted to regain his honor so pathetically.

Chapter 2832
Vale had even threatened Cody by saying there was still a lot of time left, and Cody was not one to let things slide. Cody was, however, the type to get back at his offender several times over when provoked.

The disciples of the Compass Pavilion hurriedly helped up Vale. Just as they were preparing to leave the stage, Cody purposely raised his voice, wanting everyone to hear him, “If you’ve lost, you’ve lost. Do you need to be such a sore loser? All that bragging yet you’re still so weak in the end, yet you dare say you’ll get back at me? How shameless can you be? Do you think the Unbreaking Pavilion has no powerful individual just because you have strong disciples with you? For so many years, the Unbreaking Pavilion has stood over the Compass Pavilion. When have you ever won?”

The audience immediately responded as their cheers got louder, cheering for the Unbreaking Pavilion.

After all, Cody from the Unbreaking Pavilion had won, and warriors only cared about the victor. They did not care for those who tried to salvage their honor after defeat.

Hearing the people’s contemptuous jeers, the expressions on the faces of the disciples of the Compass Pavilion soured.

At that moment, the disciple of the Compass Pavilion who stood at the front suddenly shouted, “I will admit, the Compass Pavilion is slightly weaker than the Unbreaking Pavilion. Regardless, the Compass Pavilion is still an eighth-grade clan! What are you insignificant worms crying out about?!”

At that moment, a few disgruntled shouts were heard in retaliation.

“Why are you trying to be so stubborn? In the end, the Compass Pavilion has been defeated! Even if the Compass Pavilion is an eighth-grade clan, it doesn’t mean that all

of you are strong. So many wandering warriors and disciples of clans are gathered here, and no doubt some of us are capable of going toe-to-toe against you. If you don't believe it, just wait and see! "

"That's right! Why are you so arrogant toward us? You just think we're weaklings you can push around! The Compass Pavilion is strong, sure, but you use that strength to bully others without remorse. It doesn't mean the disciples of the Compass Pavilion are all stronger than us!"

After the disciple at the front heard that, he was so angry that his face reddened. His hands trembled slightly as he started to breathe more heavily. He was already at the limits of his anger.

Behind him came an anxious voice, "Don't waste any more time on them, Vincent! There's no point arguing with these insignificant guys. We need to get Vale treated!"

Vincent turned to look at his fellow disciple angrily, before looking at the unconscious Vale. He scowled, "Vale is an utter embarrassment!"

Jackie glanced at the angered Vincent from the stands, not agreeing with his behavior at all. It was useless, even if he tried to fight for Compass Pavilion's reputation.

Warriors never bothered with words. Gaining a massive victory was the best way to silence the non-believers. Vincent and the others did not stop at the arena as they left with Vale in tow, leaving only Cody on stage. Cody waved at the air, and a radiant red light fell from the skies.

The red light fell into Cody's palm. Once the light faded, a red token appeared in front of everyone. It was the token to get through to the second stage.

Chapter 2833
Each time a participant climbed another level, they would be given a token of passage.

Receiving this token, Cody could not fight back the grin on his face. Even though it was just a simple battle, he did not just win that battle, he also obtained honor from his clan. The elders would surely reward him once he returned to the clan. He was incredibly happy as he slowly walked off the stage.

Jackie let out a sigh as he turned to look at the spectators that were slowly cooling down. These people had been so riled up during the match, and the warriors only remembered the most exciting points, forgetting Vincent's unsuppressed rage.

Based on Vincent's temper, he would no doubt get back at those who ridiculed him and his clan. Even if those warriors did and said nothing to provoke him, Vincent would still be ruthless. It was not just Vincent, of course, the other disciples of the Compass

Pavilion would do that as well. After all, the Compass Pavilion's honor had been tainted during that last battle, and it was only natural they would try to regain their dignity.

It was not just Jackie who realized that, but the other more even-minded people within the audience as well.

"Good luck to whoever's meeting the disciples from the Compass after this. You guys were so immersed in all that cheering and shouting while the disciples of the Compass Pavilion were so humiliated! They'd want to win back some of their honor. It's not that easy to meet their disciples, and it's more likely for us wandering warriors of lower-level clans to meet them!"

"That's right! Quit thinking about getting some cheap thrill. Don't forget the group of disciples from the Compass Pavilion that came out earlier. All of them can't be trifled with, especially that guy called Vincent. He'll surely be ruthless against anyone after these fools provoked them!"

Slowly, the people began absorbing the truth. However, even if they agreed, not many of them thought anything of it. After all, there were a lot of people in attendance, and the Compass Pavilion did not have nearly as many disciples. It was an incredibly small chance to encounter them.

Woe would be the person who encountered them, for they would be met with death. It had nothing to do with most of them, though, so all they cared about was their temporary fun.

Some of them even said loudly, "Those words at Vincent weren't wrong earlier! It was clearly them who were lacking in skill. They decided to shout at us just because they couldn't beat the Unbreaking Pavilion! Why do we need to tolerate that?"

"That's right! Even if they're from eighth-grade clans, they're vastly outnumbered. If they keep challenging us, we'll just attack them as a group. Should we be afraid of them?"

The discussions were incredibly intense, and a collective sentiment started to form. When they were in the Hestia Continent, they always felt like they were beneath the disciples of high-grade clans. After all, they had a lot of resources, and their talents and futures were promising as well. Most importantly, they had an incredibly powerful clan to back them up.

The wandering warriors had no power or skill to go up against those disciples, but it was different here.

The Whirling World had its restrictions, and the forces backing them could not enter the Whirling World. Even if their individual skills were incredibly strong, there were more wandering warriors and disciples of lower-grade clans. As long as they worked together, disciples of the high-grade clans stood no chance!

They even started to feel arrogant, wanting the disciples from the more notable clans to submit to them!

Rudy just felt a deep sense of amusement from hearing everything.

Chapter 2834
He might not be skilled and was probably the weakest among the weak, but he at least had some basic knowledge.

No one here was united. There was not a person among them that would truly dare do anything against a disciple of an eighth-grade clan. After all, they could only be in the Whirling World for two years. The moment two years passed, nothing good would await them if news of this battle and its outcome were to spread. An order to kill them might even be issued.

They were merely chatting away, saying anything that came to their minds at that moment. In truth, not a single one of them would dare to do anything. That was the tragedy of the weak.

Rudy said helplessly, “Is this what it’s like being weak?”

Jackie turned and glanced at Rudy. “Isn’t that obvious?”

Rudy immediately shut his mouth. After a period of silence, Rudy finally got serious. He turned and looked at Jackie earnestly. “The match is over. Are you going to queue up now?”

After watching the match, Rudy decided to stop dwelling on his thoughts. He wanted to go up to the second level to look at what was there.

Jackie nodded, taking out his entry token. The purple entry token glowed in a purple glow. He used his true energy, putting the energy into the token. The token let out another glow as information was transmitted into his head.

Rudy widened his eyes. “Have you queued up? Which arena will you be in? Which battle are you? Who‘s your opponent?”

Speechless, Jackie raised an eyebrow as his lips twitched.

Rudy, noticing Jackie’s expression, was overtaken with emotions as he grabbed Jackie’s arm and shook it.

“Tell me! Is your opponent a difficult one? Who could give you a difficult time?”

Jackie sighed, not knowing what to say. Eventually, he shrugged and replied, “It’s at this arena, match number ninety-one.”

“Ninety-one? Cody‘s match was the eighty-third, and that means it’s almost your turn. I thought that we’d have to wait for a long time. I was worried we‘d have to wait till tomorrow!”

Jackie nodded before saying, “Those people really know how to brag. There aren’t that many people who are queueing up. Everyone seems to just want to watch the show, staying for a few days at the first level. After they have their fill playing around, they‘ll queue up.”

At that moment, an angry roar was suddenly heard from afar, “Who‘s Jackie?!”

That demand was screamed with unrestrained fury, as if whoever said it held an immense grudge against Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he turned to look in the direction of the voice, and Rudy similarly turned, baffled.

Was it one of the people they had a conflict with when they entered the city?

However, those people had clearly been shocked by Jackie, and they would not possibly trouble Jackie after entering the Thousand Leaves Tower.

The two of them looked over, and could not help but be stunned when they recognized that man all too well. It was Vincent, the man who shouted at everyone when he was on stage.

Vincent, meanwhile, looked around at all the spectators, trying to find Jackie.

At that moment, everyone realized that Vincent had queued up, and his opponent was someone called Jackie. They began mourning for Vincent’s opponent.

At that moment, the Compass Pavilion needed an incredible victory. It needed to be an absolute victory that came at the cost of their opponent‘s life. Only then would they be able to wipe away the humiliation they had gone through. At the very least, they would be able to win a bit of their honor back. On top of that, Vincent had shouted at all the spectators. The person who fought against Vincent would surely face his full wrath.

Not everyone was as skilled as Cody.

Chapter 2835
Most of the audience was not too noteworthy.

Compared to Vincent, they were far weaker. Even if they had been so arrogant earlier, they could not deny Vincent’s strength. Being able to become an inner disciple and to be considered Vale’s senior meant that he was someone extraordinary.

“I don’t know who that unlucky guy is, but I’ll mourn for him in advance. It looks like the arena is going to be bathed in blood again.”

“Maybe Jackie’s from a large clan. If that’s the case, he’ll be able to keep his life.”

“Have you ever heard of a disciple from a big clan called Jackie? I sure haven’t…”

Everyone began talking about Jackie. Some felt bad for him, but more of them were happy about his misfortune. After all, they were just spectators.

Rudy pulled at Jackie‘s shirt. “I now know why you didn’t tell me who your opponent was. It’s Vincent. We’re quite lucky to have met him. Are you stronger than he is?”

Rudy was quite confident of Jackie’s skills, but he did not know Jackie’s true strength overall. When it came to things like this, he was always full of questions.

He did not have the confidence in that question. He was afraid that Jackie would tell him that he was unsure of himself, or that Jackie would die if he went into the arena.

Jackie looked at Rudy helplessly. “Before you ask that, can you think of who I’ve faced before this?”

Jackie’s words gave Rudy a reminder. A few images flashed in Rudy‘s mind. When he remembered all the things that had happened before, he let out a sigh of relief as he gained more confidence in Jackie.

Jackie completely ignored Vincent’s shouts. Even if Vincent lost his voice shouting, he would not answer. If he exposed himself at that moment, Vincent would no doubt run his mouth and talk nonsense, like an annoying fly buzzing at his ear. He hated unnecessary arguments like that. He would rather have a proper fight than an argument.

Jackie did not want to bother with him, but Vincent never stopped. When no one answered, Vincent started to suspect that Jackie was not at that arena.

Just as he was about to go to a different arena, a familiar figure stood up from the stands, pointing right at Jackie. “This is Jackie!”

Jackie frowned, not expecting that Joe was not far away from him. After sitting among the spectators, Jackie had not paid much attention to his surroundings other than glancing down a few times.

Joe pointed Jackie out in front of everyone before he pulled his hand back. After that, he huffed as he sat back down, not saying anything else.

Being pointed at among the crowd, Vincent naturally looked toward Jackie. He narrowed his eyes slightly as a dangerous look flashed in them. He looked at Jackie like he was looking at prey, seemingly about to pounce at his throat at any moment.

“So you’re Jackie! Are you deaf? Didn’t you hear me shouting for you? Are you scared? So what if you are? You can’t refuse to get in the arena. If you do that, the laws will have you killed immediately!”

Chapter 2836
Jackie sighed as he looked at Joe in frustration.

Joe had already thoroughly angered Jackie. Although the two of them previously had a conflict outside the city gates, and Joe had said those disgusting things to Jackie, but Jackie did not really care about it at all.

Jackie decided to forget about it, not wanting much to do with Joe, but he never expected that Joe would cause him trouble at such a time. Jackie sighed again, adding someone else to his list of must-kill. He really could not afford to just forget things. When it came to people like that, he had to make them pay with their lives whenever he had the chance. Otherwise, they would just bring him an immense amount of trouble!

Many gazes were directed toward Jackie after Joe pointed him out. Everyone merely looked at Jackie with interest.

Earlier, Jackie had not said anything when Joe was shouting around. They felt like it was because he was afraid, and felt that Vincent was right as well. Jackie had on an alchemist’s robes. He did not look like he was from the big city as well. Someone like that would definitely be terrified if they faced Vincent.

“Who’s that? Does everyone know him? Where is he from? He’s wearing an alchemist’s robe. Could he actually be an alchemist?”

“An alchemist actually passed the entry requirements? It looks like he does have some skills to be able to pass. However, he’s still an alchemist, in the end, there’s no way he can compare to an inner disciple from an eighth-grade clan. This kid is so unlucky!”

“I can just imagine how badly he’s going to be beaten up, but there’s no way around it. No matter where you are, the strong rule over the weak. Only the strong are able to survive. If you have no skill and no background, you’ll just be trampled over! If this kid knows what to do, and tries to curry some favor, his life might be spared.”

Everyone might be discussing things among themselves, but the gist of it was all the same. Not a single one of them felt that Jackie would be able to get out unscathed. There were even those who were starting to advise Jackie to give in and try to curry some favor to calm down Vincent’s anger. He might be able to survive the match if he did that.

There were those who asked Jackie to surrender quickly.

Rudy‘s lips twitched, obviously wanting to say something to defend Jackie at that moment. After going through so much, he already had a different attitude toward things. He knew that there was no point in saying anything.

Jackie sighed helplessly, not wanting to argue with Vincent. It was not that Jackie was afraid of Vincent, but if he answered Vincent, the two of them would not stop arguing.

There was still some time away from their match, and arguing would take up a lot of effort. However, Vincent was obviously not going to let Jackie off easily. Those ignorant fools who shouted at him while he was on the stage before had thoroughly angered Vincent.

Vincent’s anger was at its peak. Even if Jackie did not respond, he was not going to let things go.

He smiled coldly and said, “If you’re so scared, you shouldn’t have come into the Whirling World in the first place! The Whirling World isn’t a place for you alchemists. I hate cowards that don’t speak like you. Do you think I’ll let you off just like that? The less you say, the more I want to kill you. I’ll make sure I beat you until you’re begging for mercy! I won’t spare you no matter how badly you beg!”

Vincent was venting out his anger. After all, that brat in front of him looked to have no skills or background. He could say anything he wanted. The guy would not dare to say a single thing.

Vincent’s words got worse and worse, and Rudy was not able to hold it in anymore. Even though his mind told him not to say anything at that moment, he could no longer stand what Vincent was doing.

He abruptly stood up from his seat, wanting to shout back. However, Jackie reached out and stopped him.

Jackie shook his head at Rudy, motioning for Rudy not to speak. Rudy was forced to sit down awkwardly, feeling like he had been angered a lot that day.

Chapter 2837
However, right as he thought that Jackie would remain silent, Jackie suddenly turned to look at Vincent.

“I’m ignoring you because I think you’re a complete idiot. It’s a waste of time talking to an idiot like you! I just can’t believe that you’re so brainless that it makes me sick. I ignored you, and you still decided to yap away!”

Jackie's words successfully pulled everyone into a strange silence. After the match between Vale and Cody, a new set of warriors quickly went on stage, and everyone started to cheer for them.

Yet, Jackie's words had even stopped those cheers. Everyone turned around as they looked at Jackie strangely, wondering if he had gone crazy.

Jackie was calling Vincent an idiot?

Did Jackie not know that Vincent was from an eighth-grade clan and an inner disciple of the Compass Pavilion?

There was something wrong with his head. Why was he challenging Vincent without any fear?!

Even Vincent was stunned by Jackie's words. He never expected that Jackie would even dare to answer him with harsher words than he had used. Vincent trembled in anger as he pointed right at Jackie's face, "What did you say?!"

Jackie's lips twitched as He rolled his eyes, "Are you deaf or something? Did you not hear what I said earlier? It's fine if you didn't, I don't have the time or energy to repeat myself for an idiot. You can just ask those around you."

Jackie's string of words rendered everyone silent again. He did not seem to care about what he was saying at all as if Vincent really was a complete idiot in his eyes. He merely said what was in his mind, and everyone around him widened their eyes, not knowing what to say.

It took a long time before someone spoke, "Hey, are you crazy? Why are you angering Vincent like this? Once you get on stage later, you might be tortured to death. Aren't you afraid of dying?"

"That's right! Aren't you afraid of dying?"

Everyone started to ask Jackie if he was afraid of dying.

Jackie did not answer them and merely turned his head away to look at the stage again. He just wanted all of them to shut up. He did not want to waste any time talking to them.

Vincent's face was fuming in anger, feeling like his honor had been spat upon. He immediately stomped his feet.

How could he tolerate such behavior?

Vincent had always been someone who really cared about his reputation, and was incredibly arrogant.

Vincent shouted, “You‘re a mere alchemist, and you dare to act so arrogantly. Are you daring enough to tell me where you’re from? I want to see what clan’s alchemist would dare challenge me like that!”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. It seemed like Vincent did not just want to kill him, but also cause trouble for where Jackie was from. Vincent really was easily angered.

Jackie snorted. He had not wanted to care about Vincent, but Vincent was just like an annoying fly that was constantly sticking around him.

Chapter 2838
He turned to look at Vincent again as he said, “What does where I come from have to do with you? Why do you have so much to say?! Can you just shut up? Leave it all to the fight!”

After saying that, Rudy almost gave Jackie a thumbs up. Those words had successfully caused Vincent to pale. If Vincent continued to speak, it would make Vincent seem unreasonable. After all, Jackie already said to leave everything to the fight!

Vincent was forced to swallow his words as he looked at Jackie furiously.

He was already thinking about how he would torture Jackie when they are on the stage later! He would not give Jackie any chance of surrendering. He would not let Jackie die so easily either. He would properly torture Jackie until he was begging for mercy. Then, he would kill Jackie in one blow when he was at his lowest!

Rudy whispered to Jackie, “You’re amazing in every way. You’re even talented with your words. I was almost angered to death by you back then, but now that it’s on others, I feel so happy…”

As he spoke, his shoulders constantly shook in laughter. Jackie let out a small laugh, not saying anything as he waited quietly.

His words earlier were all for the sake of shutting Vincent up. Vincent had definitely gone quiet, but the discussions around them did not stop.

“Is there really something wrong with this guy’s head? Doesn’t he know the consequences that await him? Or did he already think of a way to deal with Vincent? Maybe he’s just really confident in his abilities. He might feel like he’ll be able to win, or at least be Vincent’s equal?”

“He’s just an alchemist, how could he possibly be Vincent’s equal? He‘s probably just crazy. How could he have said all that if he wasn’t?”

“I think he’s just accepted his fate. He would die when he gets on the stage anyway, so he decided to just anger Vincent a bit to make himself feel better.”

After that person spoke, everyone nodded. They felt like that was probably what Jackie was trying to do. Otherwise, there was no reason for him to talk back against Vincent.

“I actually don’t think that he’s making empty threats. Maybe he actually did figure out how to deal with Vincent?”

“You’re really something else. Aren’t skill and strength the most important things in a fight?”

“Don’t be in such a hurry to deny me. Just think about who‘s in the same clan as Vincent. Vale had already shown his most favored skill in the golden bird. I heard someone tell me that Vincent uses the bird as well. Since the two of them use the same technique, then as long as Jackie’s as fast and accurate as Cody, it’s not impossible for him to destroy the bird!”

That person’s words suddenly attracted everyone’s attention. Some people started to whisper among themselves, feeling like Jackie was acting like that because Jackie actually had tricks up his sleeve that allowed him to deal with his opponent.

He wanted to mimic Cody and use the same means to destroy the golden bird, which was why he talked so much! Many of them agreed with the sentiment but did not think Jackie could do it.

Some even laughed wildly as they said, “This guy is obviously stupid. Cody could destroy the golden bird thanks to his skills. If Cody was not that strong, there was no way he could have destroyed the golden bird even if he knew its weakness without Vale even being able to react!”

“You’re right! He’s a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion, while this guy is just an alchemist that’s slightly stronger than usual. Everyone knows that alchemists don’t really practice martial arts. They put most of their focus on alchemy. There’s no way they could be that strong!”

Chapter 2839
“Furthermore, he did not want to tell anyone where he came from. He’s obviously a wandering warrior!”

Everyone present seeped into the conversation again. They seemed to be saying anything that was on their mind, and practically everything that could be said was said. However, the core of the conversations was still the same. All of them felt that Jackie thought that he could destroy the golden bird which was why he spoke so arrogantly, not caring for Vincent at all!

Rudy felt the flames of anger in his heart after hearing the constant discussions. None of these people knew anything, but they were just saying whatever they wanted to. It was despicable.

At that moment, he could not say anything and was forced to quietly wait by the side. After a good while, the discussions did not stop and instead became more intense. Everyone started to question where Jackie was from, not seeming like they would stop.

Rudy got more and more frustrated and angry as he listened on. He could not stop himself from whispering, “These idiots don’t know anything! They just know how to speak blindly!”

Jackie let out a slight laugh as he said casually and said, “There’s no need to care about them. Let them say what they want. It won’t change the results in the end.”

Time slowly ticked away. Match ninety ended, and ninety-one was about to start. Vincent stood up from the stands impatiently.

His eyes never left Jackie from the start. His eyes were filled with rage, wanting to rip Jackie apart. He already despised Jackie to the bone, even more so than those who challenged him earlier.

Jackie sighed as he stood up from his seat casually. He did not even bother looking at Vincent as he walked toward the stage.

Everyone was focused on Jackie as he was way too mysterious. No matter if he was putting on a show or not, he still managed to compose himself. He did not seem to care how angry Vincent was. Jackie did not even bother sparing Vincent a glance. It was as if he was a wild dog that had been tied up, only able to bark wildly.

On the stage, Jackie stood on the west while Vincent stood on the east side. The two of them stared at each other, tension incredibly thick. The silent crowd started to cheer again.

Some of them were cheering for Vincent, while there were those cheering for Jackie as well.

Rudy remained seated in his original position as he looked at Jackie with some worry. Even if he trusted that Jackie had the skills to beat Vincent, he was still worried before he saw the actual results.

Vincent let out a cold laugh as he looked at Jackie, “Don’t think I’ll be scared just because you’re acting like you don’t care! You just look like a joke in my eyes and nothing else! I don’t even need to tell anyone how trashy alchemists are. It’s something every warrior in the Hestia Continent knows. Are you worried I’ll cause trouble for your clan if you tell me where you’re from? Don’t worry about that, I’ll definitely make sure they pay the price with your life!”

Vincent even yearned to pull every hair out of Jackie and skin Jackie alive.

After hearing that, Jackie laughed coldly, “You’re just a joke to me. Where did you learn to speak like that?”

Vincent’s face reddened again at Jackie’s insults. His composure from earlier disappeared. He has never been mocked like that before that day. The person mocking him was even an alchemist!

Vincent took a deep breath as he forcibly quelled the flames in his heart!

Chapter 2840
Vincent had never been so angered before. Even if he had heard harsher words or been mocked worse than this, he had never felt as angry as he had that day.

Jackie did not seem to care about him at all, even while Jackie mocked him. It was as if he was not worth Jackie’s notice at all. Being ignored while he was being mocked, he felt incredibly horrible.

Vincent’s lips twitched as he narrowed his eyes, staring at Jackie viciously as he shouted, “Did you hear their discussions earlier? I really do use the same technique as Vale, but don’t think that you can break the technique like how Cody did earlier. Let me tell you, this is impossible!”

Jackie’s lips twitched as he said nothing. He did not want to waste time on Vincent at that moment. It was just a fight. He had to go through many more fights later. This was just the first level of the Thousand Leaves Tower. He had never really thought much about the first battle.

Instead, Vincent seemed unrelenting, insisting on arguing with him. Jackie sighed as he said earnestly, “Why do you have so much to say? Why are you so sure that I’m thinking of doing that? How do you even know what’s on my mind?”

The way Cody broke the golden bird earlier was definitely interesting, but Jackie had never thought about following Cody and using the same method at all. However, Vincent was convinced that Jackie was planning to do so.

After hearing Jackie‘s words, he laughed arrogantly as he pointed at Jackie’s head, “You’re refusing to admit it? Everyone heard it. If you try to use the same method as Cody earlier, they’ll be the witness to it! How do you plan on explaining yourself then?”

Jackie frowned, not even wanting to bother Vincent. He felt like Vincent was already thoroughly obsessed, and would not listen no matter what he said. He did not want to bother dealing with someone like that. He could think however he wanted to.

Vincent laughed wildly as he continued, “Even if you plan on using the same method as Cody, you won’t be able to destroy the bird! I’m not Vale, and you’re not Cody. Even if

Cody is the one standing in front of me today, he won't be able to beat me, let alone you!"

As he said that, the disdain in Vincent's eyes was incredibly evident. It was as if Jackie was just a bug that could be stepped on at any time in Vincent's eyes.

Jackie sighed as he said, "Have you gone mad? You're just wasting everyone's time if you continue talking. There are still others waiting for their turn after this!"

Jackie did not want to waste his or anyone else's time, especially on Vincent. Yet, at that moment, Vincent seemed intent on regaining his honor no matter what Jackie said.

Vincent sneered, "I won't let you die so easily. You'll pay for what you said earlier! You'll die an incredibly painful death!"

It was a curse from the bottom of his heart. Jackie could no longer take it as he proceeded to pull out his sword from Mustard Seed. The gray blade caused a chill in everyone's hearts.

The blade had taken countless lives, and the ones who died from the blade were mostly talented warriors!

It gave the blade an impressive aura around it even without any true energy being sent inside.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2841 - 2850

Chapter 2841
However, Vincent was even more unimpressed by everything. At that moment, he was already thoroughly crazed. He took a breath as his hands constantly moved, forming seal after seal. After that, a massive three-legged bird appeared behind him. The bird was covered in flames. It was at least twice the size of the one Vale had condensed!

That alone was proof that Vincent had not been bragging earlier. Vale really was no match for Vincent. If Vincent had been the one against Cody earlier, the victor would not have been certain.

Jackie estimated things in his heart, and felt like the two of them were probably about equal. The thought flashed in his mind as Vincent roared angrily, lunging forward like a diving eagle as he rushed right at Jackie. The heat waves hit Jackie before Vincent was there. It was incredibly hot, enough for the heat to distort the space around them again. Jackie was at the center of the heat waves. He felt a power that could light him up, get closer and closer!

Jackie remained calm as he formed seal after seal. Eighty Soul Swords were condensed by him in an instant, and all of them merged into a large blade that merged with his gray blade.

Jackie had already perfected Destroying the Void. That was why he did not really care that he was facing an inner disciple of an eighth-grade clan. If he used all his power, he might attract the attention of others. So, he had used twenty fewer Soul Swords. He heard a cry next to him.

The three-legged bird had raised its head. Its flaming eyes stared right at Jackie. Everyone around them looked on with widened eyes, afraid to miss anything interesting. They wanted to see Jackie falter and see Jackie completely trampled on by Vincent.

Someone started to shout, “This guy really is trying to mimic Cody! He’s actually standing in place. Is he really trying to attack those weak points? He doesn’t have the speed to do that, nor does he have the skill! Where did he get his courage from?!”

“That’s right! He’s just an ignorant country bumpkin. He thought that he could copy how someone else succeeded, ignoring his own skill!”

“Cody won because of his immense speed and the fact that he could hit all of those weak points so quickly. Those without the strength to do so wouldn’t be able to do anything even if they hit those weak points!

“There‘s only one reason for that. The weak points of the golden bird are only worth anything in the hands of the strong. Weaklings would not be able to deal a powerful enough blow to the bird even if they knew where to hit!”

At the moment, many of them agreed with that sentiment. If Jackie was doing what they expected, then Jackie would definitely lose. He would definitely be tortured by Vincent as well!

Vincent said with a face full of excitement, “You’re dead now, brat. As long as the bird hits you, even God wouldn’t be able to save you!”

Chapter 2842
Jackie let out a slight laugh, not answering Vincent. Instead, he grabbed his sword with both his hands and raised his blade high up, slashing right at the head of the bird!

The black slash might not have any intense energy fluctuations, but it surged right at the bird!

The bird cried out again.

Jackie could even see a look of disdain in the bird’s eyes. The bird might just be an image of the technique Vincent had condensed, but it still carried Vincent’s emotions. After all, the technique was a middle-stage earth technique.

Vincent seemed to have reached the second stage of mastery, and was not far away from the third. He was definitely an inner disciple that was even higher ranked than Vale. The guy would probably end up becoming a chosen disciple in a short span of time. He definitely had a lot of potentials.

The thought flashed in Jackie’s head as Destroying the Void arrived right in front of the bird.

The bird spat out a sea of flames in disdain, but the slash did not seem to do much damage at all.

Vincent let out a sneer and a thought flashed in his mind. However, before the smile could even be wiped from his face, he heard a howl next to him…

He could not help but look up to see the flames that the bird sent out earlier had been sliced into two, dispersing into the surroundings. The slash had gone right through the bird’s head right after the bird launched the attack!

The bird cried out in agony. Even though it was formed of energy, it still contained a sliver of Vincent‘s soul!

The next second, the pain of a soul being destroyed wracked its body. Vincent’s eyes widened as the bird he was so proud of, that won every battle it fought, fell. The black, unassuming slash contained an unrivaled power within. It was enough to slice his bird into two!

His technique had been broken by Jackie so easily. It had only taken one strike for his bird to turn into energy, dispersing everywhere. Only the waves of heat proved that the technique was ever there.

Vincent widened his eyes as he looked at the scene in disbelief. He wondered if he was seeing things.

How could something so absurd happen to him?

That kid was clearly an alchemist, so how was his technique broken so easily?!

He was using a middle-stage earth rank technique, and it was already at the second stage of mastery. He was not far away from completing the third. Vale was nothing in his eyes, but Jackie had broken his technique!

Vincent shook his head crazily, refusing to admit that what he saw was real. However, before he could shout out anything, he felt a chill in his chest. He looked down to see a gray sword pierced through his chest. A wave of sharp energy suddenly started to rot his body. The pain caused him to lose all rationality.

With a chattering sound, Vincent's wound started to turn black and rot at a visible pace. His soul had been torn apart at the same time.

Chapter 2843
The pain caused him to go crazy. He had suffered various injuries before, but they had never been as painful as what he was feeling then. It was as if he had been thrown into a pot of hot oil and cooked alive.

"What power is this?! Why is it injuring my soul?! Take it away! Take it away now! " Vincent was grasping at straws at that moment.

The intense pain had caused him to forget all his earlier arrogance. He had said that he would have Jackie begging for death, but now he was asking for mercy from Jackie instead.

Jackie let out a smirk at his shouts before he said lazily, "Don't you think you're being really funny right now? You're the one who said you would have me begging for death earlier, but now you want me to let you go. Do you think I will?"

Vincent's mind was no longer working properly at that moment. He merely begged Jackie to let him off, even killing him would be better. The pain of his soul rotting away was too much for him to bear. He had never felt such pain before and he thinks that even the strongest man alive would not be able to bear that torture!

Jackie ignored all the pleas as the crowd fell into silence again. From the moment he easily destroyed the bird to him piercing Vincent's chest in one strike, their eyes had all widened in disbelief.

They did not know what to say at that moment. Other than shock, they were not feeling anything else. It took a long time for them to react to what they had just seen.

Someone shouted loudly, "Who exactly is this Jackie? Is he a chosen disciple from some clan? Why is he so strong? Is he wearing alchemist's robes to trick everyone?"

"Who knows? From what he's shown us today, he must be the disciple of a high level clan!"

"No wonder his words had been so harsh earlier. Even I was surprised but he was actually not putting on a show. He really did have the confidence and the skill to back it up!"

Those who were mocking Jackie earlier had their mouths shut at that moment. They were all afraid that what they had said earlier had been too harsh. Jackie had actually easily dealt with Vincent!

Vincent's cries of agony were constantly heard from the stage. The disciples of the Compass Pavilion panicked as they rushed to the stage again. In just a few honors, they had lost twice, and both times were incredibly humiliating.

Vincent's arrogant words had all been hit back at him, it was far too embarrassing. No matter how the disciples of the Compass Pavilion felt, they still carried Vincent away as fast as they could.

After all, they would definitely be punished when they got back if they did nothing! However, the arena could not judge that Vincent could no longer fight at that moment, so it kept the stage sealed.

Vincent continued twisting and turning in agony on the stage, causing everyone around them to shudder.

Everyone had been anticipating that Vincent would completely destroy Jackie with his skill, but Vincent had actually been no match for Jackie at all. They were on completely different levels!

"I can't believe I couldn't see it! I thought the guy was just pretending, but I was just being ignorant! Talent like this would shine no matter what clan they are from!"

Chapter 2844
"You're not the only one who failed to see it. No one here managed to at all!"

Vincent had been in pain for long enough to finally control himself. He struggled as he widened his reddened eyes to glare at Jackie hatefully as if he wanted to rip Jackie to shreds. He panted loudly, saying after a long time, “I won’t let you off! You definitely used some sinister trick. You’re not an alchemist…”

In truth, Vincent did not really know what he wanted to say. It was just that his dignity did not allow him to admit that Jackie was strong. He refused to admit it despite all the evidence in front of him. Blood flowed out of his wounds as he slowly felt his energy draining away. His eyes started to blur as the barrier finally fell with a crack.

The disciples of the Compass Pavilion rushed over, and Jackie put his blade back with a bang,

Vincent fell heavily on the stage, and the disciples of the Compass Pavilion scrambled to help him up. His injuries were even worse than Vale’s, so much so that his life was already in danger. Those who knew medicine tried to check for his pulse, and their expressions changed abruptly.

The man looked up and glared at Jackie while he shouted, “How dare you? You actually tried to kill him! Are you not afraid of our clan’s revenge?”

Jackie snorted at those words, completely unperturbed. He did not want to bother with those idiots at all. He turned around and quietly waited for the token to fall into his palm.

That disciple saw that Jackie was ignoring him, and his face immediately twisted. He suddenly felt like he had been deeply humiliated as he stood up and continued shouting at Jackie, “The Compass Pavilion will not forget this. You were so ruthless this time, the Compass Pavilion will definitely make you pay. Remember this!”

Jackie took a slight breath as he slowly turned to look at that person. That person looked like he was speaking with the moral high ground, and Jackie absolutely hated people like him. “You’re the only ones allowed to do that? Are you deaf? Didn’t you hear what Vincent said to me earlier? He said he wanted to make sure I begged for death before killing me. Is he the only one allowed to do that, while I’m not allowed to retaliate? If he’d already said that he would do so, he should have been prepared for similar consequences!”

The person’s expression darkened after hearing Jackie’s words. However, that person was incredibly arrogant. It was also because Jackie had an alchemist outfit on the whole time, causing the guy to feel like Jackie was just an alchemist.

The guy raised his voice, “Stop trying to talk your way out of it! Surely I don’t have to teach you the value of leaving yourself a way out. You’re the one who decided to act so ruthlessly, so don’t blame anyone else!”

Jackie laughed at those words. He felt like the group was completely beneath him. They only acted like they were better than everyone else because they were from Compass Pavilion.

They were the only ones allowed to look at others in disdain, and the only ones allowed to cross the line when dealing with others. When others fired back in a similar way, they felt like they had been ridiculed and wanted to take revenge several times over.

Jackie hated that sort of attitude the most. He coldly looked at that person and replied, “You’re the biggest joke I’ve ever seen. Do you think I’m scared of the Compass Pavilion?”

Chapter 2845
Those words felt like a bucket of cold water was poured on that person. That person suddenly realized that someone with Jackie‘s talents could not possibly come from a small clan. Jackie had definitely been cultivated carefully by a big clan if he was so skilled.

The guy might actually not be afraid of the Compass Pavilion at all. That person felt like a large stone was on his chest, stifling his breathing as he could not say anything at that moment. Jackie looked on as that person’s face stiffened and let out a cold laugh before he turned around again.

There was a radiant red light as the token to the second level slowly fell into Jackie’s palm. Jackie smiled, not looking at the crowd anymore as he started to walk up the spectator stands. After winning that round, he did not want to bother remaining in the first level anymore.

When Jackie slowly walked up, the crowd’s discussions once again reached its loudest point. Everyone looked at Jackie with curious and shocked expressions, as if they wanted to see something from Jackie’s body.

“Where is Jackie actually from? Could he be from a ninth-grade clan? Or is he a chosen disciple of another eighth-grade clan?”

“I don’t know, but I’ve never seen him before. I’ve never heard of Jackie either. I’ve mostly heard of all the talented disciples before, and I’ve seen pictures of them too. There’s no one that’s even close to Jackie. He might just be the personal disciple of some powerhouse.”

“It’s getting more and more interesting. It looks like many incredibly talented warriors all entered the Whirling World. If even they‘ve entered, then the Whirling World must definitely have very valuable treasures inside. I can’t wait to continue looking!”

“What can you look for? You’d be lucky enough to survive two years in this world safely…”

No one was lowering their voices as they talked. After all, no one dared to say anything bad about Jackie at that point.

Whether it was praise or any other discussions, Jackie did not care at all. He merely cared about moving forward.

As Jackie stood next to Rudy, he was surprised to find that Rudy was frowning with a sour look on his face. His eyes were darting around, looking like he was thinking about something important.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he asked in a low voice, “Did something happen?”

With how Rudy usually was, Rudy would definitely have stood up happily to greet Jackie after he won so convincingly.

Rudy would probably also have shot back at all those insults that were targeted at Jackie earlier. Yet, he was acting far too strange at that moment. It was obvious that something had definitely happened.

Rudy sighed as his expression darkened. However, he did not answer Jackie immediately. Instead, he forcibly composed himself as he stood up and pointed far away. “Let’s leave this place first!”

The way to the second level was on the westernmost side of the first level. As long as they headed in that direction, they would arrive at the border between the two levels. With the entry token, they would naturally be able to enter.

Jackie was not in a hurry to ask what had happened.

When the two of them entered the second level, it was no longer as noisy as before due to the decrease in numbers. Only then did Jackie whisper, “What exactly happened? Even your expression has changed?”

Rudy took a deep breath, as he started to sway a little. He looked up at the layout of the second level. It was almost the same as the first level. There were also seven arenas, and each arena had a lot of space for spectators.

Chapter 2846
Since there was already another round of selections, there were much fewer people on the second floor than on the first. Rudy composed himself for a bit before turning around and saying seriously, “I saw Grayson just now…”

Those words caused Jackie to suddenly stiffen. He repeated in surprise, “You saw Grayson? Are you sure you weren’t seeing things?”

Jackie's first thought was that Rudy was mistaken, mistaking someone else as Grayson. After all, Grayson had been gone for so long. Grayson had disappeared right after they entered Phoenix Valley.

Rudy sniffed as he frowned and thought for a long time, "I'm sure I wasn't wrong. That person's definitely Grayson, whether it was his figure or his face, I'm certain that it was Grayson! I can absolutely guarantee it!"

Rudy rarely said things with such conviction, so Jackie had to believe him. No wonder he looked like that.

Jackie frowned and turned to look at the passage they had just gone through. If Rudy was right, then Grayson should still be on the first level.

What shocked Jackie was the fact that Grayson was definitely a true and blue alchemist. Grayson did not have the skills to get into Thousand Leaves City, so someone must have brought him in.

Who brought him into Thousand Leaves City?

Before, they had gotten the same answer no matter where they asked. Everyone said that Grayson had already been locked up. It was because he had been the culprit behind the ambush that time since he had been the one to leak the information.

After hearing all of that, Jackie had not believed it immediately but did not question it either. After all, that ambush had been incredibly sudden. There were various spots that were incredibly questionable. If Grayson really had been the one to leak the information, many things would have been made clear.

Since he betrayed Phoenix Valley, how was he at the Whirling World?

After all, the Whirling World was closely tied to Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion. Jackie could still not figure out the reason.

Jackie took a deep breath as his expression darkened. If he added everything from before to what was happening now, everything became a mess. He could not figure anything out, but he still had to think about it. After all, the matter could very well involve the two of them.

Rudy frowned before he said with a conflicted expression, "I wanted to go grab him and asked what happened. However, I thought about it and held back. I keep feeling like something was off about Grayson, and did not want to expose myself in front of him. Before, he was the one with the secrets and hiding from us. Now we can be the ones who hide from him. Since I saw him, we can take the chance to catch him off guard!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Rudy with some praise. The guy was getting smarter. He was not as reckless as he was before, acting in accordance with his feelings no matter what he did.

Rudy pulled Jackie further inside. The two of them went through the crowd and found a corner.

He whispered, “If I’m really right, and that person is actually Grayson, then Phoenix Valley must be keeping a massive secret that can’t be known by anyone else. It might end up involving the two of us. I’m so anxious right now. I really want to go and grab him by the collar to ask him what’s happening.”

Chapter 2847
“However, even I know that we’d just be alerting the enemy before we need to if I do that. In the end, the consequences might be severe. It’s better if we properly plan on how we should approach him right now!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not really agreeing with Rudy’s thoughts. If it had been before, Jackie might not have bothered to explain things to Rudy, but Jackie already trusted him and saw him as one of his own, so he felt like he owed Rudy an explanation.

He reached out and patted Rudy on the shoulder, saying seriously, “We should talk about this another time. It’s enough that we know he’s in the Whirling World. There’s no need to question him for now.”

After he said that, Rudy could not take it at all. Grayson’s disappearance had been clawing at Rudy since he found out. He thought about it practically every day.

He looked over and said emotionally, “Why don’t you want to question him? What’s holding you back?”

Jackie turned and looked at the warriors on the second level around him, he said earnestly, “You have to always remember why we’re in the Whirling World. Grayson is definitely not here because of his own abilities, Phoenix Valley’s higher-ups must have allowed it. Even so, we shouldn’t get ourselves involved before we have a certain level of skill. Whether it be Elder Maurice or the other elders, or even Mr. Zayne, all of them will hide the truth to the end.”

“They were not willing to reveal anything to us at all, so there must be a massive plot behind this. Since that’s the case, the two of us will probably not be too involved in it. As long as it doesn‘t endanger us, we shouldn’t try to do anything against them for the moment. We should improve ourselves first.”

Rudy knew that Jackie was being very logical, but Rudy was not willing to remain silent and act as if nothing had happened.

Jackie sighed helplessly.

Just a look at Rudy's expression revealed that Rudy was not willing to do so. However, he had to stop Rudy from doing anything. Since the higher-ups had hidden this massive secret, they could not show their hand before they were able to protect themselves.

Jackie knew that Rudy's thoughts were complicated at that moment, so he pulled Rudy towards him, "Alright, let's not think about all of that for now. I'll bring you to the tower market. There are a lot of good things over there. We can even buy anything that catches our eye."

After saying that, he ignored Rudy's expression as he pulled Rudy towards the market. The market was at the westernmost end of the second level. It was a place that was unique to the second level.

The tower market was a small plaza. They were still a little bit away from the market, but they could see it from afar. It was filled with people as quite a few warriors headed toward that place. Everyone was talking to each other, asking about certain valuable goods and how many spirit crystals they cost.

Initially, Rudy was still filled with thoughts about the conversation earlier, but with the surrounding conversations getting louder, Rudy started to get curious.

He whispered into Jackie's ear, "What's this market? We can buy things there? Could the Whirling World be doing business with us warriors?"

Rudy was a bit confused.

When Jackie heard that, his lips twitched speechlessly, "The Whirling World has existed for countless years. How could there still be any life left to do business with us?!"

After saying that, Jackie patiently explained where the market came from. The Whirling World had existed for tens of thousands of years, and Thousand Leaves City had as well. No one knew what had happened between then and now. No matter what, everything from back then had been preserved. Even the arrays within the cities were not eroded by the passage of time.

Chapter 2848
The market was a location for deals that were left behind since ancient times. After getting the entry token, the information would be sent into the token holder's mind. Everyone knew what the place was used for. Anyone who was looking for a deal would naturally enter.

After everything was explained, Rudy completely forgot about what he was thinking about earlier.

Jackie let out a sigh of relief.

Rudy had been fixated on Grayson's matter, which Jackie was helpless to do anything about. He did not really want to explain too much to Rudy. Jackie felt like there was definitely something hidden behind everything.

Before they had a certain level of skill, he did not want to rush to uncover the mystery. There were some things that they could do nothing about even if they knew the truth. The two of them arrived at the market as they chatted.

At a glance, there were at least a thousand people there. Countless stalls were set up everywhere, and there were all sorts of things being sold. There were high-level technique manuals, various pills, and even some people offering to help in settling personal grudges.

There were all sorts of things on display, greatly surprising Rudy. As looked all around, he suddenly stopped and frowned, "Even though I don't really know what's going on outside, I still have some knowledge of things. I feel like the things on sale here are all quite expensive, some of them are being sold at several times their prices. There's clearly a problem…"

After saying that, he was worried that Jackie would not believe him, so he pulled Jackie towards a stall by the path. He pointed at a pill there, "Look, isn't that the snow pill?! Ten thousand spirit crystals is already an incredibly high price, but it's being sold at twenty thousand here. The price is doubled! Isn't that too absurd?!"

Rudy was incredibly confused as he frowned and asked.

Jackie reached out and pulled at Rudy speechlessly, not wanting him to be pointing everywhere.

The person at the stall had clearly seen Rudy pointing at him, and heard what Rudy said as well. He suddenly said unhappily, "What are you saying?! My prices are already the most reasonable in the tower. If you don't believe me, go look around yourself. If you don't want to buy anything, stop spouting nonsense! Even though we can't fight in the tower, I can still make you pay after we get out!"

Rudy hid behind Jackie in shock, finally knowing some fear.

Jackie frowned and looked at the person, "Since you've already set up a stall, you should naturally be willing to have your prices be talked about. If you can't even bear to listen to that, then you shouldn't set up the stall. Why do you care if I want to buy it or not? If you want to settle any grudges, then take out your entry token. Why don't we find an arena nearby to fight?"

That person‘s face darkened. He saw that Jackie had alchemist robes on, but still had an extraordinary aura about him. It was obvious that Jackie had an amazing background. Any alchemist who managed to enter the second level would either have the skills or the backing. That person just wanted to set up his stall for two more days and did not want any more trouble. So, he merely glared at Jackie angrily, not saying anything else.

Jackie was not someone merciless, and he did not want to waste any more time either. After looking at Rudy, he pulled Rudy toward the other parts of the market.

Rudy‘s head was lowered throughout as his face was full of regret. He felt like he had not been any help to Jackie recently, and was always holding Jackie back. He was not that smart, and would constantly do stupid things.

The market was not some place where he could just casually point around. He had not even lowered his voice earlier, letting the other guy hear everything. Anyone with just a bit of temper would definitely have gotten incited.

After the two of them walked for some distance, Jackie said coldly, “In the future, think things through before you do anything!”

Chapter 2849
Rudy nodded frantically, “I won’t cause you any more trouble in the future. I swear!”

Jackie glanced at him and did not say anything else. Even if Rudy swore, he still did not think that Rudy would not make any more mistakes. After all, the guy never thought things through.

The market was a mess, and there were all sorts of things for sale, both good and bad. Jackie looked at everything to see if there was anything he liked.

As they walked, Rudy suddenly said, “You didn’t answer my question. Why are the prices so different from outside? Why are people still willing to buy them for such a high price?”

Jackie turned around and looked at Rudy helplessly.

The guy always asked things with a curious expression. If Jackie did not answer, Rudy would just keep on barking. Even if Jackie scolded him, he would still keep asking. To save himself any further trouble, Jackie patiently explained, “The Whirling World only allows warriors that are younger than sixty years old to enter. So many people entered in such a short time, and they can’t go out in two years.

Comparatively, the number of resources will be a lot shorter. The prices will naturally be different from the Hestia Continent. The price of pills rose by so much thanks to the lack of alchemists in the Whirling World. Even if they had brought their own supply of pills

before they entered, it would already have been consumed. Alchemists are a very special profession. Normally, only those at a certain age can become a seventh-grade alchemists. Eighth-grade alchemists…”

As that was said, Rudy suddenly reacted to Jackie’s words, “I understand now! Pills are consumables, and they’ll eventually be depleted. Even if there are a lot of materials in the Whirling World, it’s impossible to do anything with them unless there are high-level alchemists around. That’s why the price of pills rose by so much!”

Jackie nodded, “It’s just a week in, and there’s still a long time away from the full two years. The further back it gets, the more pills will be used, and the more expensive pills will get. I thought about this before I entered the Whirling World. When the time comes, we can take out some time to refine pills and sell those pills for massive profits!”

Thinking about that, Jackie‘s lips curled up. Even though he had earned a pretty sum from the task hall, the number was still nothing compared to what he really needed.

He needed to take the chance to earn spirit crystals. Only with massive amounts of spirit crystals would he have the right to buy ninth-grade spirit crystals, which was his biggest goal in the Hestia Continent.

Rudy looked at Jackie curiously, “Jackie, you seem to really need spirit crystals? Is there something you need to buy?”

Even if Rudy was sometimes slow and made a lot of mistakes, he was not a complete idiot. After being with Jackie for so long, he knew Jackie quite a bit. Jackie seemed particularly obsessed with spirit crystals, never letting up any chance to earn more.

Chapter 2850
Jackie nodded, not being in the mood to explain things to Rudy.

The two of them walked forward for a while when Rudy suddenly stopped, reaching out to grab Jackie’s arm. He shot a look at Jackie.

He whispered, “Look at that guy in black clothes. There’s only a piece of paper in front of him and nothing else!”

Jackie noticed it after Rudy brought it up, and the two of them walked toward the man.

At that moment, the man had sat cross-legged and was closing his eyes to rest. Even if Jackie approached him, the man did not seem to have any intention of opening his eyes. He did not have anything in front of him other than a massive piece of paper. On the paper, it was written very clearly that he needed a seventh-grade alchemist to help him refine a blood condensing pill.

The blood condensing pill was a middle tier seventh-grade pill. It could help a warrior quickly suppress any internal injuries and replenish their blood. It was considered a necessary pill for any warrior. The man needed a seventh-grade alchemist to refine twenty pills. The materials needed for the pills would all be prepared by the man, and they were not allowed to fail more than five times! It meant that the man would only prepare twenty five portions of the materials.

What moved Jackie the most was the reward. It was clearly written that after the task was completed, the alchemist would be paid sixty-seven thousand spirit crystals!

The price was quite alluring.

After looking at that, Rudy excitedly whispered to Jackie, “That means that each pill is over three thousand spirit crystals. The price is quite decent, and most importantly, he wants twenty in one go. After refining it, we’ll be able to get sixty-seven thousand spirit crystals right away. Jackie, do you want to accept this?”

As Rudy said that, he seemed incredibly emotional.

Jackie sighed as he thought about it for a while before nodding, “It won’t need that much time anyway. There’s a time limit on it, saying we need to give out the goods in a week. It won‘t affect us too much if we stay here for an extra week.”

Rudy looked so excited that it seemed like he was the seventh-grade alchemist when he heard that Jackie was going to accept the assignment. Since they were already sure, then there was no need to hesitate.

Jackie said, “I’ll take up your business. You can close your stall now.”

The man slowly opened his eyes when he heard that. His sharp eyes gave Jackie a once over, stopping at the sixth-grade alchemist badge on Jackie’s chest.

He coughed lightly as he said raspily, “I hate unnecessary trouble the most. You‘re a sixth-grade alchemist, so how can you refine a middle-tier seventh-grade pill? Or do you have someone amazing behind you? If you’re not the one doing the refining, call the other guy over. I have to see the guy for myself, or I won’t be able to relax giving you the materials. Otherwise, I’d lose out on a lot if you end up failing in the end.”

Rudy was not happy to hear that, so he said with a frown, “So what if he‘s a sixth-grade alchemist. He might have a sixth-grade alchemist badge on, but he’s been a seventh-grade alchemist for a long time. He had been training in isolation before this, so he never took the test. If he hadn’t left for the Whirling World in a hurry, he would have a seventh-grade alchemist badge on his chest.”

There was some truth to those words, and they were meant to make the man accept the business quickly.

After the man heard Rudy’s explanation, he sneered in contempt.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2851 - 2860

Chapter 2851

He did not even bother looking up, “No matter what you say, there’s no way I’ll make a deal with a sixth-grade alchemist. I only have twenty-five sets of materials. If you end up ruining them, I won’t have anything left.”

“Who’s going to ruin them?!” Rudy was getting a bit excited at that moment.

His face reddened and he wanted to argue with the man until the end but was stopped by Jackie.

In truth, what the man said was reasonable. If Jackie were in his shoes, he would also be worried that his materials would be ruined. Deals could not be done so easily. After all, the materials needed for the blood condensing pills were incredibly expensive. It was natural that he did not want to take the risk.

After Jackie pulled Rudy back, he straightened his body and said earnestly, “I will sign a contract with you. If I don’t finish refining the pills based on your requirements, not only will I reimburse you for all your losses, I will pay you an extra hundred thousand spirit crystals as well. What do you think?”

Jackie’s words finally caused the man to get serious. If they signed a contract, then there would be no room for any regret. The conditions that Jackie mentioned also moved the black-clothed man.

Even if Jackie did a blunder, the man would still be compensated for his losses. He would also get an additional hundred thousand spirit crystals. Even though that was not a lot of spirit crystals to the man, it was still not a small sum.

He thought about it for a moment before nodding and adding, “If you mess things up, there should be a time limit to pay me back. I’ll give you five days. If you don’t refine twenty blood condensing pills in a week, you have to complete your end and pay me back for my losses within five days. That’s with the hundred thousand spirit crystals!”

Jackie nodded, lamenting that the guy was quite sharp to have added in such an important clause. Without a time limit, Jackie could drag things on forever even if he really messed things up.

After the two of them decided on the contents of the contract, the man happily took out a scroll for the contract. They looked at the contents and sealed the contract with their blood. The contract took effect immediately.

Normally, warriors would not agree to contracts so easily. That was because contracts could not be changed the moment they were written. If they fail to uphold the contract, they would be punished by the world itself. It was something fatal. However, if the

warriors were very confident, getting into a contract was not a big deal. The man looked through the contents in great detail and asked Jackie to look it over as well. After the two of them were sure that the contents were right, the man cut his finger with a knife.

Just as he was about to drip the blood onto the scroll, an unfriendly voice was heard, “Hold on! Why are you in such a hurry? I’m telling you this out of kindness, but sometimes even contracts aren‘t useful! This guy is just a sixth-grade alchemist, he will definitely mess things up for you. It’ll waste so much of your time, why don’t you rethink things…”

As the person spoke, he walked next to Jackie. The person was already there earlier, but his gaze had been on other stalls. Jackie did not pay much attention to the person.

After the person walked over, Jackie noticed that the person had on clothing that was similar to his. The person had a seventh-grade alchemist badge on, so he was obviously a seventh-grade alchemist.

Chapter 2852
Jackie frowned. The person did not look like he had good intentions. It was obvious that the person was there to look for trouble. He had clearly just been walking around, but he was acting like he had just gotten there. He deliberately interrupted them at a key moment.

Rudy frowned and said, “Stop trying to cause trouble. Both sides have already agreed to the deal, why are you trying to get in the way?”

The man sneered, not even bothering to look at Rudy as he saluted the black-clothed man, “I am Manse Noble, an alchemist from the Compass Pavilion.”

After saying that, he even pointed at the seventh-grade alchemist badge with his finger, “Even if you’ve already negotiated things, you should look at who you’re dealing with. This person’s only a sixth-grade alchemist… It’s very likely that he’ll make a mess of your things. Why don’t you give the deal to me? I guarantee that I’ll be able to complete twenty blood condensing pills in seven days!”

After Manse said that, the black-clothed man was suddenly hesitant. After all, no matter what Jackie said, he still had a sixth-grade alchemist badge on his chest. He really cared if he could get twenty blood condensing pills in a week.

No matter what Jackie had said, there were too many uncertainties. If Jackie really made a mess of things, then he would be delayed even more. Even if he can be compensated, he still had important things he needed to do.

Manse immediately smiled at the black-clothed man’s hesitation. He pulled out a fan from somewhere and fanned himself as he said, “You haven’t signed the contract

anyway, so you still have time to decide. I can even accept less of a reward. You were offering sixty-seven thousand, but I just want sixty thousand."

Rudy got anxious at those words as he shouted, "You're trying to steal this deal!"

Manse turned around calmly as he nodded, saying without any hesitation, "That's right! I am trying to steal your business!"

After saying that, he looked at Jackie with a challenging expression, as if he was telling Jackie to hit him if Jackie was unhappy. However, the tower did not allow fighting in the market, so they had to bear it. The moment Jackie tried anything, he would trigger the laws of the tower, and would immediately be struck by lightning and killed!

Rudy was so furious his face turned purple as he breathed erratically. He wanted nothing more than to choke that person to death.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows and said calmly, "You came here just to cause me trouble, right?"

Manse shook his head, "Who do you think you are? You're not worth me doing that!"

It was obvious then that it had definitely been Manse's intentions. Jackie immediately understood. Manse had said that he was from the Compass Pavilion, and Jackie had just offended the Compass Pavilion.

Those guys from the first level were probably incredibly unhappy and asked for a fellow disciple from the second floor to help them vent.

Jackie snorted as a flash of unhappiness appeared on his face. At that moment, he was a little angry. He hated those flies that he could never get rid of the most. The Compass Pavilion was just like flies in Jackie's eyes. Yet, Jackie did not want to let go of that deal so easily.

He looked up and stared at the man earnestly while he voiced out, "He might be a seventh-grade alchemist, but you can't be sure that he'll definitely manage to complete this task. After all, there are good and bad seventh-grade alchemists!"

Chapter 2853
"The fact that I'm signing a contract with you proves that I'm incredibly confident. If I can't finish the task as stipulated, I'll compensate you with enough spirit crystals! I was already willing to do that, so why are you still hesitating?"

The man's face stiffened, suddenly finding himself in a difficult situation. In truth, he was actually leaning towards Manse. After all, Manse had a seventh-grade alchemist badge on his chest.

No matter what Jackie said, the man only saw a sixth-grade alchemist badge on his chest, so there was a lot of uncertainty. The allure of a hundred thousand spirit crystals was huge, but he did not want to waste time!

After Manse heard that, he let out a laugh, “I really don’t know where you’re getting all your confidence from. A mere sixth-grade alchemist actually dares to accept an assignment meant for a seventh-grade alchemist. I think you should know your place before you take up this task. A hundred thousand spirit crystals might not be much to you, but you’ll end up wasting someone else‘s time!”

Manse turned Jackie into a rich kid who never lacked spirit crystals in just a few words. The moment he said that the black-clothed man’s eyes glinted as if he suddenly understood everything.

The man looked at Jackie with a meaningful expression as he pulled the contract away.

“Jackie, I’m sorry, but I think Manse is right. You probably don’t really need spirit crystals if you signed such a contract with me. If I had a lot of time, I wouldn’t have minded making this deal with you, but my time is limited. I have to pick Manse, who’s better.”

Manse’s smile deepened after he heard that, but Rudy curled his fists in anger as he stared at Manse viciously.

Rudy suddenly turned to look at the black-clothed man, “There’s an order to doing business. We already agreed to the terms and were about to sign the contract. Why are you suddenly going back on your words!”

The black-clothed man raised an eyebrow as he said nonchalantly, “I just set up a stall here. No matter what you said, I’m still worried you’ll make a mess of the deal.”

Rudy got even angrier after he heard that. He pointed at the man, wanting to continue arguing with the man. However, Jackie pulled Rudy back again. Since the man already made his choice, Jackie would not force it.

Jackie turned and pulled Rudy out of the market.

Rudy was incredibly unhappy, mumbling as he was being pulled by Jackie, “That Manse deliberately came over to cause us trouble! That brat is so despicable. If the laws weren‘t there, I would definitely teach him a lesson. We’re both alchemists, he’s definitely not stronger than me!”

Jackie sighed helplessly as he said without turning around, “He really was there to cause me trouble, but I’m not someone who’ll just take it sitting down. They’ll pay the price.”

After that, Rudy started to be a bit hesitant as he whispered, “Are we going to make the Compass Pavilion our enemies?”

Jackie nodded, saying earnestly, “They were the ones who acted like this first, so I can’t be blamed for retaliating. You have to understand something. Taking a step back doesn’t mean I’m giving up. I just want them to let their guard down!”

Rudy took a deep breath, not continuing. He suddenly felt conflicted. He actually wanted to tell Jackie to just let it go. After all, they were facing an eighth-grade clan.

Chapter 2854
There were countless disciples from the Compass Pavilion. Each one they killed would be replaced by another. However, he could understand Jackie. Even if he said that Jackie would not listen to him. Just as his thoughts were wandering, a familiar figure appeared in front of them.

He suddenly stopped as he grabbed Rudy’s arm, “Look at that person!”

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he followed Rudy’s fingers. He saw a familiar figure walking forward.

Jackie did not have the chance to react before Rudy hurriedly said, “That’s Grayson! It’s him!”

After saying that, he let go of Jackie before Jackie could react. He rushed over as Jackie frowned, cursing Rudy for being so impatient.

By the time Jackie reacted and tried to grab Rudy, he was already in front of Grayson. Rudy reached out and grabbed Grayson’s arm. Grayson turned around in surprise to look at Rudy. At that moment, Rudy was so emotional that he ignored everything else.

“Where have you been?! Why are you here? What happened to you?!” Rudy’s words flowed out as he poured out everything that was on his mind.

His eyes widened as he asked everything in an accusing tone. Jackie‘s face reddened in anger, not expecting Rudy to be so reckless.

After seeing Grayson, Rudy lost all of his earlier rationality and rushed right in front of Grayson.

Jackie angrily pulled at Rudy’s arm, pulling Rudy back. Grayson first looked at Rudy with a confused gaze. After Rudy said that, a sharp look flashed in Grayson’s eyes, “You have the wrong guy. I don‘t know you two at all.’’

After saying that, Grayson turned around and left.

Staring at Grayson's departing back, Rudy had a mystified look on his face.

What did Grayson say? Did Grayson not know him?

Why did Grayson say that? What was Grayson hiding?

As those thoughts flashed in his mind, he suddenly heard a scolding.

"Did you forget everything I told you before? I told you not to act recklessly, so why did you rush over?!"

Rudy turned around to see a furious Jackie. It was the first time he saw Jackie so angry.

Rudy shrunk back as he mumbled to himself, not able to say anything.

Looking at Rudy like that, Jackie got even angrier. He pushed Rudy away as he quickly walked forward towards Grayson.

Seeing Jackie push him away, Rudy started to panic. He hurriedly followed behind Jackie, afraid that Jackie would not bring him along anymore.

As he walked, he said, "He suddenly appeared in front of me and I immediately panicked. I lost control of myself. I really want to know why he disappeared. After all, this problem has bugged me for a long time. I was only thinking about asking him then, losing all other considerations."

Jackie sighed as he stopped, turning around to look at Rudy seriously, "Then did you get your answers?"

Chapter 2855
Rudy shook his head. He had gotten nothing. Grayson had even said that Grayson did not know them.

"What is this guy trying to do? He actually said he doesn't know us, and even looked at us like it was the first time he met us!" Rudy said with some difficulty.

There had clearly been no one around Grayson, so why did he not tell the truth?

After all, those gathered here were all unrelated people. There was nothing wrong with voicing out any difficulties.

Jackie no longer knew how to teach Rudy a lesson. Rudy had clearly said that he would not be impulsive anymore, and always think things through before doing anything, but he forgot everything the moment he saw Grayson, rushing over to grab Grayson.

Jackie frowned, “If you make a mistake like this again, I’m leaving by myself. I won’t bring you along anymore. You’re really holding me back at the moment. I clearly told you before that you shouldn’t involve yourself in or talk about this. Even if we saw Grayson, I told you not to ask him anything in case we alert our enemies. There are a lot of things we can’t control. You’re really an idiot! Did you see what uniform he was wearing?”

The last sentence was practically said by Jackie through clenched teeth. Rudy frowned, thinking about it in detail before he suddenly widened his mouth. His eyes threatened to pop out of their sockets, “He was wearing the clothes of a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion!”

Jackie nodded as various emotions played in his eyes.

Grayson really had been wearing the uniform of an inner disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. Those clothes were not something just anyone could wear. Furthermore, Jackie had felt a strong aura from Grayson earlier. Even though it might not be that strong in Jackie’s eyes, Jackie was still sure that Grayson was already at the spring solidifying realm.

He had not planned on saying anything to Rudy, but he was worried that Rudy would cause trouble again, so he said, “He should already be in the spring solidifying realm.”

The moment he said that Rudy gaped, “What did you say? He’s already at the spring solidifying realm? You’re talking about Grayson?!”

Jackie nodded, “Even though the laws are restricting him, and we can only see that he’s at the late stage of the innate realm, just from his aura alone, I can tell that he’s already at the spring solidifying realm. It looked like a lot had happened. There must be a reason he said he did not know us. After you said those words, his eyes had a sharp look. It was like he was looking at an enemy! It looks like it’s not just a secret hidden behind this. I told you to be careful, but you refused to listen. Now, we’ve already alerted him. No one knows what will happen after this!”

The more Jackie thought about it, the angrier he got. He had already been angered by Manse earlier, and now Rudy’s actions sent his rage to even higher levels.

Rudy’s lips twitched as he looked at Jackie apologetically. He had just wanted to ask Grayson some questions. He had not thought about anything else. He had not wanted to admit it when Jackie called him an idiot before, but now he had to. He never did anything right and made a mess of everything.

“What does he want exactly? What kind of secret does he have? Why is he looking at us like an enemy? Could he be afraid that we’ll say something?” Rudy widened his eyes and asked curiously.

Chapter 2856

Jackie shook his head, “I’m not sure about that, but what makes me even more curious was the fact that he really was looking at you in confusion earlier. It’s like he doesn’t know who you are at all. After you said all that, he looked at you as an enemy. It’s as if you touched upon his secret… Could he really not know us?”

“How could he not know who we are?! The three of us went through so much. Unless he lost his memories, how could he not know who we are? He even hates you so much…”

Rudy was very hesitant when he said the last words, but it was the truth.

Jackie turned around, full of suspicion in his eyes. At that moment, he really did not know what to think about the situation. He felt like there were traps everywhere, and problems that could not be solved.

After a long time, Jackie shook his head, “Let’s not think about this anymore. We need to hurry up and leave the second floor. We can make our plans after we reach the third.”

“Why are we in such a hurry to leave?” Rudy asked curiously.

Jackie sighed, “I want to distance myself from Grayson. We’ll only be able to get enough time to properly look into things if we’re away from him.”

The second level’s arenas had a lot fewer spectators compared to the first level’s. However, that was just in comparison. Looking around, the stands were still incredibly packed.

Jackie picked out the second arena to find a place to sit at. After that, he pulled at Rudy to sit with him. The two of them looked at the evenly matched fight on the stage, neither of them saying anything.

After a long time, Rudy said, “Why aren’t you queuing up? Didn’t you say you want to leave this place as soon as possible?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking around before he said, “I’m waiting for someone. The second level’s rules are a bit different from the first. They don’t arrange the matches for us, but we have to choose our opponents for ourselves.”

The moment he said that he saw a white-robed man walking toward them. The person had a clear look in his eyes and looked very polite. He sat down next to Jackie.

Rudy frowned at the sight. The two of them had chosen a place that was more secluded to save themselves any trouble. However, the person had sat down next to Jackie right after he arrived. However, they were in no position to say anything if he did not.

Rudy was just about to say something when Jackie interrupted him, “Enough with the nonsense. Look at the match first, that person is about to lose.”

Rudy raised an eyebrow, feeling like Jackie was speaking a bit strangely. However, he could not tell where the strange feeling came from. The match continued for a little longer, and a victor was decided. The black-clothed man fell to the ground, spitting out blood. The green-clothed man had won, and he shouted in excitement as he stood at the arena.

Once the black- clothed man was brought away, the person next to Jackie suddenly spoke, “I’m Walter Conch, could I know where you come from?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and smiled before replying politely, “My name is Jackie, I don’t come from any clan.”

Chapter 2857
Walter’s smile deepened after he heard that, “So you’re a wandering warrior, but you must be very skilled if you’re here.”

Words of praise started to be spoken. Walter had just started talking to Jackie, but he suddenly looked like a long-lost friend as he opened up his arms and spoke happily.

He asked Jackie what he had gone through, and which ninth-level city he came from. He asked Jackie where Jackie was going after as well. Jackie calmly answered all his questions. However, Jackie merely brushed over any sensitive topics, giving vague answers.

Rudy started to frown as he listened on, feeling like Walter’s friendliness was too sudden. Even if Rudy was not the most intelligent, he could still tell that there was something off about Walter.

Since Walter was on the second level, Walter had to be skilled. Normally, strong people would never waste time on anyone they did not know. It was not like they had nothing to do, so why were they wasting time on chit-chat. Walter even expressed his admiration for Jackie despite not knowing anything about Jackie. Those empty pleasantries sounded so fake. Anyone remotely intelligent could tell.

Rudy understood Jackie somewhat well.

Jackie hated dealing with things like this. He would typically already be incredibly polite if he even bothered answering a couple of questions. Yet, for some reason, he seemed to be patiently talking to Walter. He answered any questions Walter had as if he was a very friendly neighbor.

Rudy looked at the two of them chatting away happily, and he was more and more confused.

After they talked for a while, Walter suddenly said, “Both of us want to reach the third level anyway. Jackie, since you indulged me, why don’t I give you a chance. The two of us can go on stage together, and I’ll surrender to you and send you up. What do you think?”

Jackie did not even think about it and agreed, even saying, “Thank you so much, Walter. “

Walter waved it off, “No need to thank me. You get along with me so well. I’ve always been like this. I’ll treat anyone who gets along with me well.”

He talked as if he was a saint. Jackie nodded with a smile after hearing him, agreeing with his words.

Rudy was stunned. That person was definitely a big scammer, so why was Jackie accepting things so easily?

It seemed like Jackie was even looking at Walter like a brother.

Jackie took out his token from Mustard Seed, “Since the two of us are going to go into the arena, then let’s not wait anymore. Let’s start queuing now.”

When Walter saw that Jackie was so easygoing, he could not hold back his smile. His smile even threatened to split his face apart as he hastily took out his own token. After placing the two tokens together, a faint purple glow was seen where the tokens touched. Information was transferred to their minds.

The second arena, fight number seventy-three!

It was already the sixty-eighth fight, so there was not too long until their battle. After everything was done, Walter‘s expression suddenly changed. He started to look at Jackie with a harsher expression as well. However, Jackie acted like he did not know anything, even if he had seen the change in Walter, he acted as if nothing had happened.

Rudy’s heart stopped when he saw Walter’s expression. He felt like something was wrong, and took advantage of Walter being distracted to pull at Jackie’s sleeve. Jackie turned around and shot Rudy a look, motioning for Rudy to calm down.

Chapter 2858
After handling anything, Jackie seemed to have lost his friendliness. He turned away, no longer talking to Walter.

Walter could still hear it initially, but when he saw that Jackie was so calm, he could not keep his calm. He frowned and asked, “Are you really stupid, or is there something wrong with your eyes?”

The moment he said that the atmosphere that had been so warm earlier suddenly cooled down. Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything. Since both of them had accomplished their goal, Jackie did not feel like saying anything else. Walter felt like he had been challenged when he saw that Jackie did not answer, and did not even bother sparing him a glance.

He snorted coldly, “Do you feel like you really made a friend?”

Jackie was speechless as his lips twitched. He turned to look at Walter, “Did you want to see me being incredibly terrified after you revealed your goals? Did you want me to regret everything I did?”

Jackie’s words completely stunned Walter.

So Jackie had seen through everything? Then why did Jackie agree to meet him in the arena?

Walter sneered as he said, “I’m a chosen disciple from the Compass Pavilion!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, having already guessed that. Since their inner disciples were no match for him, then the Compass Pavilion would definitely have sent a chosen disciple at him.

After Jackie heard that, he remained calm as he stared at the battle in the arena, in no mood to care about Walter at all. Walter narrowed his eyes as a harsh look flashed in them. His actions had already thoroughly trampled on Walter’s fragile pride. Sometimes, ignoring them was a better way of angering people.

Walter snorted, “Don’t think that you can’t hide your fear just by doing this. Could you not know how strong a chosen disciple from an eighth-grade clan is?”

Jackie sighed helplessly, not really wanting to bother with Walter. He did not care if he was from an eighth or ninth-grade clan. They were all the same to him.

Rudy could suddenly not stand it after hearing Walter‘s words.

Earlier, he had been guessing who Walter really was. After all, Walter’s actions were vastly different from what he saw in normal warriors. After Walter revealed where he was from, Rudy was even more nervous.

Rudy gulped as he looked at Jackie.

Jackie was still sitting there incredibly calmly, not reacting to anything Walter said. His actions actually got Rudy even more anxious. He had a lot to say, but he did not dare to be too direct in front of Walter. He was forced to whisper to Jackie, “You’ll be going to the stage in a bit…”

Before he could finish, Jackie stopped him with a hand. He knew better than anyone that he needed to go onto the stage. There was no need for any reminders. At that moment, footsteps could be heard from a distance. Jackie looked over and saw a few familiar figures that were getting closer to them. Those figures looked like they obviously had ill intentions. There was hatred and anger in their eyes.

The one in front of Manse, who had been causing him trouble earlier. He even saw Vale in the crowd. Vale was still incredibly pale, obviously not having recovered from his heavy injuries. However, even injured, he still managed to get to the second level. It was obvious that he had taken a lot of high-grade pills.

Chapter 2859
Jackie raised an eyebrow, not reacting to those unwanted guests. They were in the spectator stands, where fighting was restricted. If they dared to do anything there, the ones who would end up being punished were them. Since they could not fight, he did not care. It was obvious why all of them were there.

Manse let out a snort as he said mockingly, “You’re really something else. Since you know everything, why are you still acting like you don‘t care? Do you really not know what a chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan represents?

“Don’t think that you can’t act so arrogantly in front of the disciple of the Compass Pavilion just because you beat Vincent. Vincent might be a little skilled, but he’s not that great among the inner disciples! Now, you’re challenging one of the strongest disciples of the Compass Pavilion!”

As they said that, they started to surround Jackie. Even though they did not attack, they were still acting very aggressively. Jackie frowned. There was still some time until the seventy-third match. He had planned on quietly watching the fights. He never expected so many flies to appear.

Jackie sighed. It seemed like it was useless even if he shut his eyes and mouth. They would always trouble him if he did not shut them up completely. He looked towards the seventh-grade alchemist, Manse. The guy was in front of everyone and looked like the leader.

Jackie coldly smiled, “It’s the first time I’ve seen an alchemist talk about warriors so confidently!”

Alchemists were often incredibly weak. That was something every warrior in the Hestia Continent knew. Yet, Manse seemed to be criticizing warriors like nothing. It was as if he was actually stronger than even chosen disciples.

Manse’s expression darkened as anger flashed in his eyes. Before he came, he had heard from the other disciples that Jackie was not only somewhat skilled, but good with his words as well. They advised Manse against engaging Jackie in a battle of words.

Manse had not believed it then, but it seemed like Manse had to now. Manse coldly snorted, “Brat! Don’t be so pleased with yourself. Once you get on the stage, you’ll realize you offended someone you shouldn’t have. You’re not someone who can stand the consequences!”

Jackie’s lips twitched speechlessly. It was the same speech again. Every time he met someone who could not deal with him, they would always say the same thing. He coldly smiled, “Vincent said that too, but how did he end up?”

Their expressions soured at that.

Rudy could not stop himself from giggling, which caused their expressions to darken even more.

Walter said, “Don’t be so pleased with yourself! I’ve always been someone who paid back all my debts. I don’t believe in letting people off. I won’t kill you easily. I’ll spare your life and slowly torture you. I‘ll seal off all your movements, making you unable to fight. Then, I’ll use flames to harm your skin. Once you’re completely burnt, I’ll give you pills to treat yourself. After you recover a bit, I’ll grill you alive. I’ll make sure to torture you until you’re begging for death. I‘ll show everyone what the consequences of offending the Compass Pavilion are!”

The venomous words caused Rudy to frown. He shuddered, feeling a chill around his body.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, feeling like it was the first time he had heard of such cruel torture.

Chapter 2860
He turned to look at Walter and saw that Walter was looking at him incredibly earnestly at that moment. Walter seemed like he wanted Jackie to believe that what he said would definitely happen.

Jackie took a deep breath. He had to admit that Walter was stronger than everyone else. However, Jackie was not referring to martial strength, but that Walter‘s ability to piss people off was far greater than anyone else. Jackie was not easily angered, but he was furious after those words.

Jackie let out a cold laugh, “You better remember what you said.”

Walter raised an eyebrow, “Of course, I’ll remember everything I said.”

Jackie nodded before he looked back at the evenly matched pair on the stage. Everyone was silent again. Walter had an unhappy glint in his eyes when he saw that Jackie was looking away again. He had obviously said everything he did earlier with his own goals in mind.

He wanted Jackie to be filled with fear and worry. He wanted to look at Jackie's panicked look. He wanted Jackie to beg him, but he did not get any reaction other than a cold laugh. It caused Walter to wonder if what he said earlier had not been cruel enough.

Manse's expression darkened as well. He wanted to see Jackie's terrified expression, just as Walter did. He wanted Jackie to be begging for mercy but never expected Jackie's reaction to being so small. Manse took a deep breath as he sat down next to Walter.

Walter was the only thing between Jackie and Manse.

Jackie could not be bothered dealing with those people. After looking at the battle in the arena, he did not want to say anything else at all. However, the ones around him were not willing to waste their time like that.

Manse took a deep breath, "You're the most arrogant alchemist I've ever seen."

Jackie frowned. He knew that Manse would not just let things rest. As he mockingly said that, Jackie snorted, not really caring as he said, "Since you're so confident in Walter, why don't we make a bet?"

Rudy was immediately excited when he heard there would be a bet. In a short few days, it was already the second time Jackie was betting against someone. The person before had lost ten thousand spirit crystals, so he wondered how much Jackie would set the bet at this time.

Manse furrowed his eyebrows, not expecting that Jackie would suddenly bring up a bet. However, he never believed that Jackie had any chance at all, so he was naturally happy to bet against Jackie.

Manse nodded without any hesitation, "Let's bet if you want to. How much do you want to bet?"

Jackie raised nine fingers, "What about ninety thousand spirit crystals? If I manage to beat Walter in the seventy-third match, then You will give me ninety thousand spirit crystals. If I lose, then I'll give you the same amount!"

Manse waved it off as he let out a cold laugh, "I'm okay with betting a hundred and ninety spirit crystals, let alone just ninety!"

Jackie suddenly laughed as he hurriedly took out a contract scroll and patiently spoke…

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2861 - 2870

Chapter 2861

“Since we’re betting, then we should do it properly. In order to stop you from going back on your words, let’s sign a contract. If you win I’ll give you a hundred and ninety thousand spirit crystals. If I win, you give me the same amount.”

Manse frowned, “You seem to really like signing contracts…”

Back at the market, he had robbed Jackie’s deal before Jackie could sign a contract with the black-clothed man. He did not expect that Jackie would want to sign a contract just because he wanted to bet with Jackie.

Jackie let out a slight laugh as he raised his head and looked at Manse seriously, “If you don’t want to sign a contract, then say it. There’s no need to try to get out of it. I just think that a contract is the best assurance.”

After saying that, Manse did not waste any more time talking to Jackie. Signing a contract was actually better for Jackie.

That idiot thought he could beat a chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan. Since he was so willing to offer out a hundred and ninety thousand spirit crystals for free, Manse would be dumb not to accept it.

Manse nodded, “Then let’s hurry up and sign it.”

In order to prevent any surprises, Jackie wrote down the contents of the contract at the fastest speed he had ever used in his life. He dropped his blood on it before handing it over to Manse. After Manse took the scroll, Manse dropped his own blood on it without any hesitation.

The words on the contract suddenly twisted and distorted, floating out of the scroll in mid-air. The power of heaven and earth descended upon it, fusing with those words. After a while, the words fused back into the scroll, representing the fact that the contract was sealed.

After doing all of that, Jackie smiled as he kept the scroll. There was no longer any way to change the deal after it was set, and it could not be delayed either. Manse’s expression soured even more when he saw how happy Jackie was acting.

He snorted and said harshly, “You’re the most arrogant person I’ve seen…”

Jackie turned to look at Manse, “The feeling is mutual.”

After saying that, Jackie went quiet again. They were surrounded by disciples of the Compass Pavilion. Everyone had traces of confusion on their faces after seeing what Jackie was doing.

They felt like Jackie was incredibly surprising. Initially, everyone felt like he was being so calm simply because he was too scared, and was forcing himself to put up a front. He did not want to show any fear in front of anyone. Yet, with what Jackie was doing, everyone suddenly knew that he was not putting up an act at all.

Jackie looked so unfazed simply because he was incredibly confident in himself. Possibly too much so.

Other than Rudy, everyone there thought that Jackie had no chance of winning. Jackie did not mind either. As everyone was in disbelief, a familiar voice was heard from below. Jackie looked down, and saw the black-clothed man walking towards them, “So it’s you guys! No wonder you were so against each other. There were grudges between you.”

The black-clothed man was the person that Jackie had wanted to deal with from before.

The moment they saw the man, Rudy was filled with anger. The man had clearly agreed to deal with Jackie but had pulled back. Rudy coldly snorted, “You have nothing to do with this, why are you interfering?!”

The man never expected Rudy to be so rude, and his expression darkened. The man might not be the strongest of warriors, but he still had his pride. He could not bear being talked to like that by a sixth-grade alchemist.

Chapter 2862
The man furrowed his eyebrows in anger, “Why do you care what I’m saying?! Do you want to die?! I happen to be lacking an opponent. Hand over your entry token. Let’s fight!”

Rudy snorted as he said nonchalantly, “Why are you pretending to be someone so strong in front of me? Don’t you see the sixth-grade alchemist badge on my chest? You’re trying to fight an alchemist? Why don’t we compete in alchemy?”

After he said that, the black-clothed man’s face reddened. If it were not because of the rules in place, the man would have already been choking Rudy.

Rudy saw that the man had nothing to say, and he started to get more pleased with himself. He had wanted to mock the man more, but was stopped by Jackie, “Why are you so hard to control? Shut your mouth from now on. No matter what happens, you’d better make sure your mouth is shut tight, understood?”

Rudy shrank back after being lectured by Jackie like that, not daring to say anything else. After all, he had greatly inconvenienced Jackie before.

The man snorted coldly before turning to look at Jackie.

He had more or less heard what was said earlier, and he looked at Jackie and said, “Do you really think you’re stronger than a chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan?”

Jackie frowned, not wanting to bother with it.

The man was not annoyed when he saw that Jackie did not answer him. Instead, he got even more interested in Jackie.

Time slowly ticked away. Either because of the bet or because of Jackie’s cold attitude, but it became strangely silent. There was no longer anything else being said. Right up to when the seventy-third match was about to start, Jackie did not hear anything else. Walter stood up and sighed as he shot a look at Jackie.

He said, “No matter who you see or what you hear, you’re not to leave this place.”

After saying that, Jackie headed down towards the stage.

Walter had wanted to say some more things to instigate Jackie, worried that Jackie would not follow him to the stage. Yet, he never expected that Jackie was more excited than he was. He had not even moved yet when Jackie was already walking toward the stage. Walter was naturally not willing to be left behind, and he walked even faster than Jackie.

After basically rushing to the stage, both of them each took one side. They looked at each other from the north and the south, and Walter impatiently pulled out his weapon, the Green Phoenix Whip.

The Green Phoenix Whip was incredibly cold. The whip constantly glowed in a faint blue hue. He glared right at Jackie and let out a cold laugh, “Do you still think you’ll win?!”

At that moment, intense discussions were heard around the crowd. There were those who knew who Walter was, but no one knew Jackie. After all, Jackie had not been in Middle Province for that long and had never been in the inner region. It was no surprise that no one knew him.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, “Can you not waste so much time talking like your fellow disciples? Just fight!”

After he said that, the crowd got excited. Someone shouted, “Who is this guy? He’s so daring. I don’t think he knows Walter! The guy is going to suffer now. Walter will definitely make him suffer for those words!”

“What do you know?! They came from the same place just now. They obviously know each other. The guy probably knows that Walter is a chosen disciple of the Compass Pavilion. He might be so arrogant because he’s confident!”

Chapter 2863
There were discussions everywhere, but Jackie ignored everything they said. He merely looked at Walter calmly. After Walter pulled out his weapon, Jackie slowly pulled out his gray sword as well. The sword had been with Jackie for a very long time, with Jackie never Liked changing his weapon.

The Green Phoenix Whip let out a crack as Walter gave it a wave. A cold chill was released from the whip, causing even space itself to distort.

Walter only had one thought in mind, which was to cruelly torture Jackie after beating Jackie up. He wanted Jackie to know the consequences of Jackie’s actions. Walter roared as he started to form some seals. Hexagonal ice appeared on his palm. After a short moment, a few hundred arrows were floating in front of Walter. He roared angrily as he pushed forward.

The few hundred arrows rushed right as Jackie, enveloping the whole place with cold air. He rushed right at Jackie with those arrows.

Jackie steadied himself as he held his sword with both hands. He calmly faced the countless arrows that were in front of him. The arrows were all suddenly sliced in half, causing the crowd to cheer.

“This kid is not bad! If I’m not mistaken, Walter is using the upper earth rank technique, the Sealing Ice! This guy actually managed to slice it in half. He’s quite strong!”

The moment someone said that someone started to counter him, “What do you know? The Sealing Ice is an upper earth rank technique. How many people in the Whirling World are capable of using that? That attack was just a bit weaker. Walter was not serious at all. If Walter really wanted to kill this guy, he would have no chance!”

After shattering the arrows, Jackie moved and used the laws of space. In a flash, he distanced himself from Walter, causing Walter to sneer.

He mocked, “I wondered how strong you were, but you’re nothing special!”

He had just been testing Jackie earlier, and did not use his full strength. Even though Jackie broke through his attack, Jackie merely broke through a part of it.

Jackie smiled, completely ignoring Walter’s mockery.

Walter flicked the whip in his hand, “This time, I want to make sure you wish you were dead!”

After saying that, Walter shot right at Jackie. The whip in his hand danced wildly, showing after images in the air.

Those after images turned into an incredibly sealing power. Walter shouted at Jackie, “I will seal you into an ice sculpture!”

After shouting that, Walter once again cracked the whip, and all the after images solidified. At an incredible speed, they suddenly surrounded Jackie like a web.

Without any special skills, it was impossible to escape. Jackie only had two ways to get out. Either he broke through the seal with absolute skill, or he used an incredible technique to get out.

Chapter 2864
The second choice needed an incredible mobility skill that normal warriors just did not have. The second needed immense skill. Everyone could not help but be worried for Jackie. There was no way Jackie could escape being sealed.

Everyone felt like Jackie would definitely lose. After being sealed up, Walter looked like he would not let Jackie off easily!

Jackie held his sword in one hand and formed seals with his other. A hundred soul swords fused into one, and the massive sword fused into his gray sword.

It was the first time Jackie unleashed the full power of Destroying the Void. Even though it was an upper earth rank technique, it was not much in Jackie’s eyes. That was because Jackie had already reached the third level of mastery, and the power was not something to be underestimated.

Jackie roared angrily as he slashed. A massive slash shot out of the gray sword. The webs of ice that surrounded him were already right in front of Jackie.

Everyone merely heard a crack, and the solid-looking ice was actually shattered by Jackie‘s slash. Furthermore, the slash did not lose any power at all after breaking through the ice. It continued rushing forward, completely shattering everyone’s expectations. Even Walter that was following the ice could not react in time!

Jackie had already mastered Destroying the Void. Even an upper earth rank technique like Sealing Ice was as fragile as paper in front of Destroying the Void.

Everyone had been anticipating Jackie being sealed up and left to Walter’s mercy like a lamb. Still, that notion had been completely destroyed. After the slash destroyed Sealing Ice, it continued right at Walter.

Walter only reacted by the time the slash was three feet away from him, but it was already far too late to do anything. Normally, Walter would definitely have defended

himself while he attacked, and would have been prepared for anything. However, he overestimated himself and underestimated Jackie. He had thought that there was no other possible result other than his victory.

After a slashing sound, the slash went through his chest. He felt an intense pain throughout his whole body. Walter suddenly widened his eyes as his whole body tossed around. The pain of a soul being ripped apart was something no one could stand.

It was as if a hundred thousand ants were eating at his soul. He even wanted to slice open his body and pull his soul out. However, there was nothing he could do at that moment. He could not even use his true energy due to the pain as he fell on the ground violently.

Walter cried out in agony. He constantly wailed as he said, “It hurts! Stop, please stop!”

Other than crying out in agony, he constantly begged Jackie to stop as well. He wanted Jackie to pull that power out of his body. He had never felt such intense pain before. In just a moment, he had already rolled around the floor ten times.

That majestic chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan looked even more pathetic than a beggar at that moment.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not bothering with those cries for mercy. He let out a smile as he said, “Didn’t you say you’d have me begging for death? Since you’ve already said that, why would I save you?”

Everyone present had heard those words. Everyone who had thought that Jackie would definitely die hurriedly shut their mouths.

Chapter 2865
“Isn’t Walter a chosen disciple of the Compass Pavilion? Why is he so weak?”

“Are you stupid?! Walter is not weak at all. His opponent is just too strong. Didn’t you hear that Sealing Ice was an upper earth rank technique? There are so many people here, and how many of them can learn a technique like that? This guy actually broke through it. It means that his technique is stronger than Walters!”

“Could he be using an ultimate god rank technique?!”

That was immediately shot down by everyone there.

“Are you crazy? How could you say that? Don’t you know what an ultimate god rank technique means? Unless you’re already at the divine solidifying realm or if you’re an incredibly talented late stage spring solidifying realm, you can’t possibly use such a technique.”

“Everyone’s here under the restrictions of the Whirling World. No one here is older than sixty. Do you really think someone who’s not even sixty can use an ultimate god rank technique?!”

“That‘s right! This guy probably has an upper earth rank technique as well. He was able to defeat Walter probably because he’s already mastered it!”

“If that’s really true, then this guy must be incredibly talented. No wonder a chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan lost to him! “

“It wasn’t a wasted trip to the Whirling World. I saw so many masters.”

Those spectators who had nothing to do with Walter were incredibly interested in the discussions. Those who were insulting Jackie earlier all changed their tones and started to praise Jackie. They all said that Jackie was a generational master. Even the chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan seemed normal in front of him. However, the disciples of the Compass Pavilion could not remain calm. They had been sitting in the audience incredibly confidently.

When Jackie broke through the ice, they gaped in disbelief.

Walter was in so much pain, that it was obvious that Jackie had dealt a fatal blow. All of them rushed over from the stands. Walter was a much more important person than Vincent was. If something really did happen to Walter, the disciples there would have to take responsibility as well.

Vale had not recovered yet, and he was the most shocked out of all of them. Among those people, he was the one who had met Jackie the earliest. Every time Jackie appeared, he would be shocked.

The few of them rushed over to the stage but were stopped by the barrier. The laws still felt that Walter still had the ability to fight. So, the shields were still up, but Walter was already in so much pain that he could not even think straight.

Jackie’s mastery of Destroying the Void was already on a whole different level. Even though Destroying the Void had already formed into a slash and went through Walter’s body, Jackie could still control it.

He did not let Destroying the Void destroy Walter’s body quickly. Instead, he had it slowly eat away at Walter’s soul. He wanted Walter to still be able to fight while Walter felt the intense pain.

The Compass Pavilion’s disciples started to panic when they saw that the barrier was still there despite Walter being in so much pain.

They shouted, “Hurry up and let him go! Jackie, don’t get too full of yourself. Don’t think you can do whatever you want after you win this. You’ve thoroughly angered the Compass Pavilion. We won’t let you off!”

Chapter 2866
“That’s right! Hurry up and let Walter go. If something happens to him, you’ll suffer greatly! Walter isn’t Vincent, and there may still be room for negotiation after you killed Vincent, but if you kill Walter, even God can’t help you. Once you get out of the Whirling World, the Compass Pavilion will hunt you down forever!”

The curses and warnings flew into Jackie’s ears. Of course, he had expected as much. The fact that he dared to make his move meant that he was not concerned.

To the wandering warriors, Compass Pavilion was a threat, but to Jackie, they were not that important. What could they do to him?

As long as he was strong enough and managed to join a stronger clan, the Compass Pavilion would not be able to do anything.

This thing was Compass Pavilion’s fault from the start, anyway, and Jackie never went against the rules at all. Had they not egged him on, Jackie would never have bothered with them.

Jackie let out a cold smile as he turned to look at the disciples from the Compass Pavilion. He deliberately raised his voice as he declared, “Listen up, Compass Pavilion! Don’t think that you can do whatever you want just because you’re from an eighth-grade clan. You were the ones looking for trouble from the start, targeting me after you lost your match. If you hadn’t bothered me to no end, I wouldn’t have bothered with you at all. You do whatever you want to just because you have a strong clan behind you, and it makes me sick!”

Jackie’s words managed to gain the support of the spectators as they clapped and cheered. He had voiced out their grievances, the disciples of higher grade clans truly enjoyed showing off!

It was also incredibly two-faced, too, that only they were allowed to look for weaker opponents. The weak were never allowed to fight back. Even talented warriors would not be shown mercy as long as those warriors did not have the right background!

Everyone was pleased to hear Jackie’s words, and they made it verbal.

“Get lost, Compass Pavilion. Do you think you’re the only ones who can show up like that? Are others not allowed to retaliate? We’ve all heard how Walter said he wanted Jackie to be begging to die before the battle started. Is Jackie not allowed to do the same to him? Does that warrant the Compass Pavilion hunting him down?”

“That’s right! You’re the only ones ever allowed to do anything! For so many years, you treated the weak just like this! Don‘t think that you can do whatever you want just because no one fought back!”

“Go to hell, Compass Pavilion!”

The curses were everywhere, and there were even those who started to throw dirty things their way.

The disciples of the Compass Pavilion glowered at this. They could not believe that Jackie’s words had riled up everyone else like this!

One of them could not resist shouting out in anger, “You trashy wandering warriors only know how to shout out during times like these. Once you’re out of the Whirling World, you’re nothing in front of us!”

Those words caused a greater reaction from the crowd. Quite a few of them were thoroughly angered, but thankfully, something held them back. They knew that they would be punished by the laws of the Whirling World if they fought, so they restrained themselves.

They cursed the disciples of the Compass Pavilion without stopping. Just like that, the second arena turned clamored like a night market. The constant arguments never stopped. There were too few disciples from the Compass Pavilion, and they were no match for all the spectators.

Chapter 2867
The spectators were a mix of all sorts of warriors. Some of them just loved to argue normally, and it finally served useful as they cursed the disciples of the Compass Pavilion to their hearts‘ content. Some of them even used their true energy on their throats, deliberately enhancing their voices. They were worried that the people next to them could not hear the vulgarities they were spitting out.

This, however, made Jackie’s ears hurt. He never expected the words he exchanged with the disciples of the Compass Pavilion to rouse the crowd so aggressively.

Jackie helplessly sighed, feeling like continuing would bear no fruit. They would not end up fighting anyway and could only fight with their words.

In the end, Jackie could no longer tolerate it. He went to the corner of the stage and stood there silently, not planning on killing Walter just yet. He wanted Walter to beg for death. That was the promise Walter had given him before, so he wanted Walter to get a taste of his medicine.

Time slowly ticked away, but the sound of the arguments did not stop. Walter's twitching slowly grew weaker, and the barrier finally fell. The Compass Pavilion's disciples hurried over and helped Walter up.

Vale frowned as he checked Walter's pulse. Even though he could still feel something, it was incredibly weak.

Manse hurriedly retrieved many pills from his spatial ring and stuffed them into Walter's mouth, but none of those pills could cure Walter's current injuries. After all, Jackie had already used Destroying the Void to destroy Walter's soul.

Some pills that were meant to just cure internal injuries could do nothing for a destroyed soul. Manse had fed Walter so many pills, but Walter showed no signs of improving, which caused Manse to panic.

Fear crept into his heart. If Walter truly died, they would all be implicated.

Manse turned his gaze toward Jackie and shot him a deadly glare. He looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart, but Jackie was already used to that expression.

"Are you not afraid of death, Jackie?!" shouted Manse. "The Compass Pavilion won't just take things lying down. We'll get our revenge for your actions. I'll make you pay!"

Jackie laughed and nonchalantly replied, walking toward Manse, "Walter's current state is me exacting my revenge against you. If you insist, however, I'll welcome it. Of course, that depends if you have the skills to do so. I never trouble those who haven't troubled me, and I'll return any offenses against me several times over. If you refuse to give up, I'll make you all pay the price!"

Manse cowered in fear as Jackie got closer. Even though Manse loves to shout and curse, he was still already thoroughly afraid of Jackie. He had not been that scared of Jackie after Vincent lost, but even Walter had lost so badly. Manse was forced to look at Jackie in a different light.

Jackie was deathly terrifying. His talents were practically demonic.

"Y-You can't do anything here," stammered Manse. "If you attack, you'll be punished by the laws. You'll be struck by lightning, you know?!"

Chapter 2868
Jackie let out a cold laugh. "I'm not planning on doing anything to you. I'm just here to remind you, didn't you forget something important?"

Jackie's words baffled Manse for a moment. Frowning, he recalled What it was that Jackie meant. He had struck a bet with Jackie, and bitterness crept into his being as he gritted his teeth.

Manse had betted against Jackie before because he was certain that Jackie could not win at all. He was so sure that Jackie would lose terribly and that he would easily get 190000 spirit crystals from Jackie. He never expected that he had actually dug his own hole.

Jackie won their bet!

Jackie extended his hand. “Hurry and pay up, I don’t have all day. I have things I need to do. I just wanted to bet ninety thousand spirit crystals, but you insisted on adding a hundred thousand to the bet. You set the bet to a hundred and ninety spirit crystals yourself, so give it here.”

Manse nearly spat blood upon hearing Jackie’s words. Despite his reluctance, however, it was what had happened. Jackie had only said 90000 spirit crystals were to be in the bet, but Manse was sure that Jackie would lose and added 100000 to it.

He shot himself in the foot!

Manse wanted to slap himself at that moment. 90000 spirit crystals might still be a sum, but it was not too bad. 190000, however, was a different story.

Alas, he and Jackie had signed a contract, and he could not back down even if he wanted to. If he did not pay up, the contract would immediately take effect, and he would not be able to bear the consequences.

What followed was a strangely smooth process. After Walter was brought out of the stage by the disciples of the Compass Pavilion, Jackie obtained the third token, and it was slightly more special. The entry token had turned into an exit token. That meant that he could get out of the city right after he arrived at the third level.

Jackie let out a sigh as he put the token into Mustard Seed before he brought Rudy to the third level. Compared to how noisy the first and second levels were, the third level was more vacant. Other than the exit and the entrance to the fourth level, there was nothing else on the third level. A few people were resting in the perimeter, though, seemingly wondering if they should head to the fourth level.

Jackie pulled out the entry token as he toyed with it in his hand.

If it were anyone else, they might have been worried about how difficult the fourth level could be, and they might be puzzled over whether or not they should ascend. However, he did not have that thought at all. If he did not go to the fourth level, no one there probably could.

Rudy did not even need to ask to know what Jackie was thinking. He looked at Jackie earnestly and was more than certain to follow him wherever he went.

Rudy looked at the other warriors that were on the third level and whispered with a laugh, “These people must be conflicted if they should head to the fourth level. After all, the second level probably wasn’t that difficult for them. Those who enter the fourth level are all quite strong. No one knows what will happen there and whether they’ll lose their lives.”

Jackie turned to look at Rudy and, after thinking, said, “Why don’t you stay here as well? I didn’t get any information from the exit token. I don’t know what sort of challenges are waiting there. You’re too frail, and I think you’ll be in danger if you tag along.”

Chapter 2869
Rudy shook his head vehemently at Jackie’s offer, not wanting to follow through. “I don’t want to stay here. If you go to the fourth level, you‘ll go to the fifth as well. There are seven levels in this tower. Who knows if you’ll just be sent out or transferred to somewhere once you conquer the seventh level? What will I do if I’m left alone here?”

Jackie nodded silently at Rudy’s words. Rudy’s concerns were not unwarranted, no doubt. If he headed to the seventh level in one go, the tower might see him as a perfect challenger. It might reward him immediately and instantly transfer him somewhere else. If he left Rudy there, he might not meet him again.

Jackie’s expression seemed uncertain even after a few seconds, and Rudy, fearing his expression, reached out to grab Jackie’s arm.

“I entered Thousand Leaves Pavilion as your dependent. Since I’m your dependent, I won’t be facing any challenges at all. As long as you continue climbing, I won’t leave no matter what dangers we face,” said Rudy earnestly. “Even if I am unlucky enough to die there, it‘d be my own doing.”

Ever since he knew Jackie, Rudy felt like he had constantly been in danger, but it was not in his hands to change.

While he knew nothing else, he was certain of one thing, Jackie was incredibly reliable, and he would only be able to survive if he followed Jackie. He wanted to get through these two years and leave the Whirling World to the Golden Pills as soon as he could.

Jackie nodded at Rudy’s words. The two of them arrived at the entrance to the fourth level where a few people gathered, yet all of them looked wary. After all, they did not know what the future had in store for them.

Jackie was about to enter the fourth level when Rudy grabbed his arm. He looked at Rudy with a frown.

Rudy took a few deep breaths before saying, “I know you’re very confident in yourself, but you still have to be prepared. Even though we’re still in the Whirling World, those

from the Compass Pavilion won't just sit there idly. They probably won't stand a chance against you alone, but if they come in groups, we'll have a hard time for sure."

Jackie nodded. He had already thought about that. If he was truly afraid of the Compass Pavilion, he would not have faced them so strongly from the start.

"I'm the same as always," answered Jackie. "I won't do anything to those who've done nothing to me. If someone wrongs me, I'll pay it back several times. If Vincent didn't cause me trouble, we wouldn't have been caught in a conflict. They were the cause of everything. I know they'll cause me more trouble, and I'll fight back. Don't worry, I won't put myself in danger."

Jackie's words were incredibly calm as if he was just talking about his meal. Hearing these words, Rudy felt more at. ease.

Chapter 2870
Rudy exhaled before he spoke, "When you were facing Walter just now, I noticed that Grayson kept looking at your battle. I was paying attention to him, and he noticed me later on. I couldn't see his expression because I was too far, though. His stare toward me felt so unnerving, as though I was about to be bitten by a snake. You were right, Grayson probably sees us as enemies."

Jackie nodded. Ever since Grayson appeared, a lot more questions surfaced in his head. Jackie did not believe a single thing those elders said anymore. There had to be an even bigger secret behind everything!

Jackie was about to say something when Rudy interjected, saying, "I know what you want to say, and I understand everything Without you saying it. I know my recklessness caused you trouble. I'll remember this in the future, and I won't cause you any more trouble."

Jackie felt a little more at ease to hear Rudy's promise. After all, Rudy was a naive fool who would let his emotions get the better of hint in many situations. Rudy eventually realized the errors of his ways.

After saying all that, Rudy seemed to have been relieved of a heavy burden as the two of them entered the fourth level.

They were greeted with an incredibly bright grassland, where a few people lingered around. Most of them sat on the grass, holding a crystal ball in their hands. Most of them had their eyes closed, and a few were whispering amongst themselves.

The atmosphere was somber and heavy. Even if there were any discussions, everyone's voices were muted. That was the fourth level of the tower, and it looked like they had entered a different world.

Rudy blinked as he looked at the purple crystal ball in Jackie's hands. After that, he, confused, looked at everyone who was sitting.

Before he could ask anything, Jackie pulled Rudy to a secluded corner to sit. After they settled down, Rudy impatiently said to Jackie, "What's all this? What's that ball in your hands? Why does the ball in their hands have a color to it that's different from yours? What's the fourth level?"

Rudy was filled with questions at that moment, and Jackie explained everything in detail. The moment Jackie entered the fourth level, a wave of information was transferred to his head, including the fourth level's rules, in detail.

The fourth level was not a battle between challengers. If they wanted to enter the fifth level from the fourth, they needed to kill a certain number of wind beasts.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2871 - 2880

Chapter 2871
After killing two wind beasts, the crystal ball would turn from blue to green. Then, warriors would face a wind beast that was a few times stronger. Only after killing that wind beast would they get to enter the fifth level.

Rudy frowned and repeated the information Jackie gave, “So, you’re saying that the fourth level has three stages, and as long as you pass, the crystal ball will change colors. There are three colors in total. Getting to the fifth level requires you to get through three stages!”

Jackie nodded at Rudy’s solid summary. He needed to do precisely that to get into the fifth level. Only after four wind beasts died would he be able to get to the fifth level.

Rudy nodded and smiled. “The fourth floor is probably not that hard for you. No matter how strong the wind beasts are, they’re just at the late stage of the innate level!”

At this moment, the people around Rudy and Jackie finally snapped. Even though they had picked out a more secluded spot, there were still too many people around. It was only comparatively secluded, too, and since they did not entirely lower their voices, a few people around them had heard the conversation.

A squinty-eyed man let out a laugh after he heard Rudy. “You’re just a dependent, no doubt. Where did you get the guts to say something like that? It’s as if the guy next to you can just pass on a whim!”

A white-robed man next to the squinty-eyed man nodded. “That person is so absurd. He doesn’t know how hard a wind beast is to deal with at all. Just look at what they’re wearing; they’re not from a major clan. If they’re not from an inner or chosen disciple from a major clan, they shouldn’t be so arrogant to assume that they can easily defeat a wind beast. Just look at those people who have their eyes shut. All of them have done everything they could, but those who can kill the wind beasts aren’t many at all! Where did you get the courage to say all of that?!”

More cries of anger arose from around them. After all, Rudy’s words did seem arrogant.

Rudy, in truth, was not an arrogant person, but Jackie had just given him too much confidence. He did not feel like he had said anything wrong, however, and the ignorant crowd was just bitter.

Rudy let out a light snort, raised his eyebrows, and said, “What do you know?”

However, he shut his mouth before saying anything. After all, his mouth had caused Jackie so much trouble before. It had left a deep impression on him, even if he was full of discontent.

He did not dare to say anything else, but his words had already evoked reactions from the people. They looked at Rudy with disdain and thought of him as just a fool who had never experienced the world before. Untrained people would always say ignorant things, after all.

Chapter 2872
“There truly are all sorts of people in the world. They don’t even know their place to have said such things!”

“Do you see the person in the white clothes over there? That person is from the Deer Pavilion and is even a chosen disciple. It took him an hour before the crystal turned blue!”

“Since you’ve been so arrogant, entertain me, how long do you think the brat next to you will take to turn his crystal ball blue?”

“That’s right! Enlighten us. You praised that man so much, so how long will it take for him to turn the purple crystal ball blue?!”

Everyone sneered at Rudy and persistently challenged him to tell them how long he thought Jackie would take to pass the first stage.

These people were not from notable backgrounds. Most of them were from sixth-grade clans or wandering warriors, and it would take them at least eight hours to even pass the first stage. They could not compare to talented prodigies at all.

Initially, Rudy did not want to bother with the crowd and remained silent. However, the people were like flies that buzzed at him mockingly.

Rudy looked at Jackie with a pleading expression.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said in a low voice, “You were the one who caused this. Handle it yourself.”

It was not the first time Rudy’s mouth had gotten him into trouble, and Jackie could not save Rudy every time.

Rudy sighed helplessly as he raised his voice to answer, “Since they took an hour, Jackie will only need half of that!”

At this point, Rudy was irked by these people. Instead of taking him seriously, however, they burst into cackles. They stared at Jackie and Rudy demeaningly as though they were both clowns.

“Do you know how long an hour is?” one of them sneered. “Do you know how long half of that is? Don‘t think that you’ll be able to kill the wind beast just because you’re a little

skilled. The wind beasts might be restricted to the late stage of the innate level just like all of us, but their skills aren't just there for show! Have you ever heard of the wind beast's killing technique?"

Rudy took a deep breath as he honestly shook his head. Of course he had never heard of it; he did not even know what a wind beast looked like.

Everyone was even more amused when they saw Rudy shaking his head and wanted nothing more than to bash his head in.

"The wind beast's killing technique is a middle earth rank technique. It's just like human techniques and is split into three stages. The first wind beast the warriors will meet has a skill equivalent to a second stage mastery of an earth rank technique, and it's already quite close to perfecting it! Surely you understand now!"

Middle stage earth rank techniques were more or less impossible for most wandering warriors or disciples of low-grade clans. Many of them could learn them but could not get to the second stage.

Some of them were merely just starting out in the first stage. Hence, many of them could not stand up to the wind beasts at all! Most of them would spend a lot of time dealing with the wind beast.

Chapter 2873
The wind beast's greatest weakness was its lack of intelligence, incapable of planning or scheming. As long as the warriors were smart enough, they would be able to kill the wind beasts eventually.

The squinty-eyed man snorted. "Surely you know the Deer Pavilion. You looked like you couldn't be bothered with the Deer Pavilion at all when I mentioned it. You know they are one of the strongest clans in Middle Province, no? Are you even from the Middle Province?"

With those accusations, the man seemed more and more certain that Rudy was an ignorant country bumpkin. Otherwise, Rudy would not have said such unintelligent words.

Rudy's lips twitched as he finally understood why Jackie always kept to himself; it was a complete waste of time arguing with such people. He had never planned on talking to them, but they seemed insistent on forcing him to talk.

Rudy frowned and said, "Of course I know that the Deer Pavilion is a seventh-grade clan in Middle Province. They even stand at the top of seventh-grade clans."

The squinty-eyed man quickly said, "Since you know that, why did you look so disdainful when I mentioned it?"

Rudy frowned, at this point, he wanted to bite back at the man, wanting to ask why he was so intent on looking at his expression. Already at his wits' end, he wanted to argue with everyone when Jackie stopped him.

"Why are you arguing with them?" said Jackie, not bothering to lower his voice. "It's a waste of your time. They don't understand what you're saying at all."

Silence fell upon them at that instant.

Jackie had not spoken at all from the start, and everyone had thought that Jackie just did not like bragging, yet Jackie had shattered their expectations. Rudy was already arrogant enough, but Jackie seemed even more so.

"How rude! Do you know what you're saying, you brat? I see ignorant folk like you all the time, but I've never seen someone ignorant be as arrogant as you are. You must have some skill, but since you're skilled, you should understand that there are always people stronger than you! There are countless masters out there! Don't you know how ignorant you are?"

Jackie's lips curled into a slight smile as he stared at the squinty-eyed man. "There's still no telling who the ignorant one is. You don't know anything, so why are you in such a hurry to judge me? Don't use your skills to judge others. If you're trash, it only proves that you're the trash. You can't just assume that everyone else is trash, too."

Those words thoroughly angered the man, causing him to shoot up from his seat as he squinted at Jackie.

Jackie snorted as he ignored the guy. So what if the guy stood up?

The fourth level prohibited personal fights. If the man attacked Jackie, he would be struck by lightning immediately. Sure enough, the man did not attack, though he struggled to stamp down his anger. It took a while before he finally sat back down.

The white-robed man behind the squinty-eyed man felt indignant when he saw how angry his friend was. The white-robed man looked at Jackie in disdain. "Didn't you say that this Jackie will be able to finish the first stage in half an hour, changing the crystal ball from purple to blue? Since the two of you are so stubborn, prove it to us with your skills. Let's see if you're truly gifted or just all talk!"

"Why do you care if I'm skilled or not?" quipped Jackie. "Even if I proved my skills, you're not worth me proving them at all!"

Jackie had experienced one too many scenarios like this, and it solidified him to not cave in to people such as these so easily.

Chapter 2874

The squinty-eyed man's expression stiffened, and everyone else reeled back in shock at Jackie's attitude. After all, they did not know how skilled Jackie actually was or where Jackie was from.

Anyone who entered the fourth level was not to be underestimated. They were worried that they had stumbled upon an actual threat and that they would be dealt with after leaving the tower. However, the squinty-eyed man was unwilling to admit defeat.

"Why are you so arrogant?" he snorted. "If you're that skilled, suit yourself. Just don't end up slapping yourself in the face after you've bragged that much! That'd be really funny."

Even though the man had whispered this, Rudy heard it all. He suddenly straightened his body and snapped, "What do you mean by that?"

Rudy was about to argue when Jackie frowned and pulled Rudy back. Rudy was forced to restrain himself.

Jackie let out a sigh, not wanting to waste time on those people. Just like what he had said, even if he got past the stage, he would have done it for himself and not to prove anything to those people. He thus took a deep breath as he transferred his soul energy to the crystal ball.

The next second, he felt like the whole world spun before he found himself in a foreign space, filled with purple true energy. At that moment, he heard powerful roars up ahead.

Jackie looked up to see a beast that was the size of two people baring its teeth at him fiercely. It looked like it would lunge at Jackie at any moment.

This was the wind beast.

The wind beast had a huge lion's head and a tiger's body. It was covered with green scales and had four powerful-looking claws. A majestic aura enveloped the beast that even though it was just at the late stage of the innate level, it was obvious from its aura that it was no ordinary beast at that level.

The wind beast narrowed its eyes as it measured Jackie. It seemed to be trying to determine if this prey was dangerous.

Jackie pulled out his gray sword from Mustard Seed with familiarity. His hands suddenly flew through many seals, and 80 soul swords materialized in the air. With a casual wave, it fused into a massive soul sword that fused into the sword in his hand.

Jackie was already incredibly familiar with Destroying the Void. He looked up at the wind beast in front of him. At that moment, instead of feeling daunted, Jackie felt carefree.

As he looked at the wind beast's movements, he calculated his potential moves. He had already mastered Destroying the Void at that point and would be choosing a different technique next. Naturally, he needed to pick an even stronger technique; he just did not know What skill he wanted to employ.

Destroying the Void was just an ordinary technique in the Divine Void World. It was not even a third-class skill. After all, it was just an upper ultimate god rank technique. It was nothing against someone that was truly strong. Since he needed to choose a new technique, he needed something even better.

As Jackie mulled over everything, the wind beast lost its patience. Its hind legs kicked out as it rushed toward Jackie like a cannonball. Its green eyes stared daggers at Jackie as it let loose a loud roar, causing even the air around them to tremble.

A green wind blade shot right at Jackie‘s neck.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he slashed with the gray sword with both hands. The slashes clashed incredibly quickly.

Chapter 2875
Jackie heard a loud explosion.

At that moment, he was not actually within the crystal ball. Instead, the crystal ball used Jackie's soul to recreate a replica of him to battle against the wind beast. The real Jackie was still on the fourth level with his eyes closed, still seated, his soul within the crystal ball.

Ever since Jackie closed his eyes and entered the crystal ball, Rudy had been staring at Jackie, expectation written all over his face.

The squinty-eyed man no longer wanted to say anything before the results were out, thanks to what Jackie said. However, when he saw Rudy's look of anticipation, he could not stop himself from mocking him.

“The more hope you have, the more disappointed you'll be. Surely you know that? Don't think that he'll be able to get good results here just because he's the strongest in your world. Even a chosen disciple of one of the strongest seventh-grade clans used up an hour before they got past the first stage. It'd be good enough if Jackie manages to do it in twelve hours. Of course, that's if he's smart enough to not let the wind beast get him!”

The white-robed man behind verbally agreed, saying, “That‘s right! But with how the guy was earlier, he's probably not that smart. If he's not intelligent enough, he'll only think of

facing the wind beast head-on. The wind beast's skill is an absolute killing technique. To be honest, it's even stronger than ordinary middle earth rank techniques. You should know what a technique of that level represents."

"This kid is obviously inexperienced. He's probably never seen the power of a middle earth rank technique before. If this kid insists on facing the wind beast head-on, he might be ripped apart by the wind beast's claws. If that happens, his soul will be damaged, and he'll wake up in a pathetic state."

Rudy shot these people a cold stare. He had just said a few words, yet it actually wounded their dignity!

This was why they held no reservations in mocking Jackie. It was the first time Rudy experienced how annoying people who overvalued their dignity could be.

"You ignorant fools only know how to insult others," sneered Rudy. "You haven't seen the results yet, so how do you know that the wind beast' s claws will rip Jackie? If you don't have the skills, don't use your perspective on others. Don't you know that…"

"What did you say, you brat?!" The squinty-eyed man almost jumped up.

Rudy's words hurt even more than what Jackie had said. If it were not for the restriction of the laws, the squinty-eyed man would have attacked Rudy.

Rudy smirked when he saw how furious the man was. The white-clothed man and the other spectators started to speak among themselves. Everyone felt like Rudy was far too obnoxious and that he needed a beating.

The white-robed man raised his voice and snarled, "You should be glad that there are laws protecting you on the fourth level. Otherwise, you won't be able to leave this place alive. You'd die a horrible death!"

Rudy had heard so many similar speeches that he felt impervious to them. It was like everyone who was against him would say something like that.

Jackie had heard more than he did, too.

Chapter 2876
Rudy sneered as he ignored the words aimed their way.

"You lot are just clowns to me!"

The squinty-eyed man's face reddened in anger. "You delinquents truly are a piece of work! If you truly think this guy can kill a wind beast in half an hour…"

Before the squinty-eyed man could finish, he heard sharp inhales from those around him. He thus stopped as he looked around at everyone.

He frowned and said, “Why do all of you seem so surprised?”

The white-robed man paled as he pointed at Jackie. “Look at him!”

The squinty-eyed man hurriedly turned to look in the direction the white-robed man was pointing. He saw Jackie staring at him with a cold gaze. In Jackie’s hand, the purple crystal ball had already turned from purple to blue.

He passed, and it did not even take him that long!

Everyone had only exchanged a few words, it had not even been 10 minutes. It was five minutes at most, but the brat had already passed!

The squinty-eyed man was filled with disbelief as his gaze toward Jackie lost all ounce of disdain, replaced with horror instead. Only someone immensely talented would have been able to do that.

He had passed earlier, yet it had taken him a great deal of effort to turn the blue orb to purple, passing the first stage. He remembered that the wind beast would not attack instantly after going into the crystal ball. Only after the two of them stared at each other for a while did the wind beast start attacking.

Warriors would usually not attack immediately after entering the crystal world unless there were special circumstances. They were one to observe their opponents, thus they waited for the wind beast to attack before they did anything. After all, they needed some time to acclimate themselves. If Jackie did what the warriors did upon entering the crystal ball and did not attack immediately, it meant that his battle would have ended earlier.

The squinty-eyed man shuddered at the possibility. He even started to wonder if he was dreaming. Otherwise, something so absurd would not have happened.

The white-robed man trembled as he said, “Could you be the chosen disciple of a ninth-grade clan?!”

That was the only thing he could deduce from this. To him, only chosen disciples of a ninth-grade clan could pass in such a short duration.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not really caring about their surprise, while Rudy was pleased. After all, all of these people had tried so hard to put them down and deny Jackie’s skill, much to his chagrin.

Rudy turned to look at everyone. “Didn’t I already tell you to not judge Jackie with your standards? You’re the ignorant ones here!” he spoke, enunciating his last sentence as he did.

To this, no one dared to retort and refute. Rudy was not too harsh with his words either, they truly were ignorant.

They never expected Jackie to really be so skilled. Normally, regular warriors like them would never be able to interact with talented warriors. They never expected to encounter such a demon.

Chapter 2877
‘Demon’ was the only way they could describe Jackie as his skills completely exceeded all of their expectations. After all, they had all gone through the first stage.

Jackie did not bother with any of their surprise at all as he closed his eyes again as his soul went through the crystal ball.

To Jackie, this was an insignificant place. His final goal was the sixth or the seventh level. Only by constantly moving up could he gain even more resources. Back when he was in Black Sun City, he had obtained the Purple Soul Fruit, Purple Soul Crystal, and other valuable treasures. An eighth-level city was a level higher than a ninth-level city where better treasures could be obtained.

Thankfully, he had picked a more secluded spot, so the commotion did not attract too much attention. Those people who saw Jackie’s skills did not dare spread the word around out of fear.

After five minutes, the blue crystal turned green, signifying that Jackie had passed the second stage and arrived at the third stage. Killing those two wind beasts was a breeze for him. After all, no matter how impressive those wind beasts looked, their techniques were only at the middle stage of the earth rank. There might have been one more beast compared to the first stage, but the level of the wind beast did not increase.

The third stage was different. The wind beast from the third stage had an upper earth rank technique. Regardless, Jackie broke no sweat for it, having mastered Destroying the Void.

At that moment, Jackie did not feel any pressure at all, just like during the first stage. He held his sword tightly, letting out another slash when the wind beast launched its upgraded technique at Jackie.

The gray slash clashed with the blade of wind. With a screech, the wind blade shattered, powerless against the slash. The slash suddenly appeared before the wind beast. With a cry of agony, the wind beast retreated backward while Jackie’s hands moved as he activated the laws of space.

The sword slash disappeared on the spot. When it appeared again, it was already at the wind beast's forehead. With a squelch, the wind beast let out a cry of agony as it collapsed onto the ground. After turning around, it finally stopped breathing.

Jackie let out a smile as the world before him started to spin. When he opened his eyes again, he was already out of the crystal ball. At that moment, the ball in his hand was already vermillion.

The vermillion glow was reflected on Jackie's clothes, looking very lively. Jackie raised an eyebrow, saying, "It was no challenge."

Everyone's expression twisted when they heard Jackie's first words, not even daring to compare themselves to him. Jackie had gone through every stage in the same duration. Each time, it was so easy that everyone wondered if the orb in Jackie's hands was different from theirs.

All Jackie's words did was make them bitter. The stages they could not pass, despite trying their best, were no challenge at all to Jackie. Compared to him, they were not even worth trash!

The squinty-eyed man's expression was sour. His lips twitched as he struggled to even find words to say. He wanted to disappear from the place.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as the ball in his hand glowed brighter and brighter, and it attracted a lot of attention. At that moment, some of them finally noticed Jackie.

"Someone else passed! How long has this person been here?"

"I don't know. He's sitting in such a secluded space. I didn't notice him, but regardless, he still passed. This stage is too hard, though. I feel like this level will eliminate half of us. I'm jealous every time I see someone pass."

Chapter 2878
There were a lot of discussions around them. The ones around Jackie could hear everything. When the question about how long Jackie had been in the crystal ball's dimension was asked, all of them exhibited poor emotions.

They were hesitant to say anything and were embarrassed beyond relief. They wanted to tell everyone that the person sitting here was a demon, but they were afraid that Jackie might just punish them for it. They were certain that Jackie came from a large clan, or he would not have been that strong!

The vermillion glow slowly faded with time, and once the glow vanished, the ball turned into a token. The token had a vermillion glow to it with the words "Entry Token" written on it.

Rudy looked at Jackie happily. “The entry token for the fifth level!”

Jackie nodded, not showing any emotion on his face. To him, he was bound to enter the fifth level. Only those around them would feel like Jackie had expended great effort to obtain the token.

Jackie did not delay as he stood up from the spot and shot Rudy a look. The two of them headed to the entrance of the fifth level.

The entrance of the fifth level was concealed, it was impossible to spot it if one did not know what they were looking for. Thankfully, the information was registered into Jackie’s mind before they entered, clearly showing the position of the entrance.

After they entered the fifth level, Rudy looked around and asked curiously, “This is the fifth level? Why isn’t anything here? I don’t even see anyone else.”

The fifth level was far too different from his expectations. It was not as loud as the first or second levels, and there were no grasslands like the third either. Instead, it was desolate. Whether it be the ground or the skies, it was completely white. It was so white that it was unsettling. Even if it was harder to get into the fifth level, there were a lot of them who passed and entered the fifth level.

Strangely, they had not seen another person other than one another after they entered.

It scared Rudy a little. He felt like he had entered a completely unknown world, and the mystery filled him with fear.

He could not stop himself from retreating behind Jackie as he then whispered, “Why is it so creepy here? It’s all white around us, but there are only two of us here. Where are the others who passed? Could the fifth level be a solo level? Would I drag you down by being here?”

Just as he asked that question, a flat voice was suddenly heard from the space around them. The voice was clear and cold, like an impartial judge.

“Ninety-seven. Once a hundred are gathered, the array will restart.”

The atmosphere fell into silence once more, which scared Rudy even more.

He raised his head to look at Jackie. “What? Ninety-seven? Why do they need a hundred to restart the array?”

Jackie looked at the entry token before saying after some thought, “If I’m not mistaken, the array will activate each time a hundred are gathered here. The array must‘ve been reactivated a few times already. I’m the ninety-seventh person upon entrance.”

Jackie's explanation was not that detailed, but Rudy understood. It meant that the array needed a hundred people to activate.

Chapter 2879
He frowned. "A hundred people? You'd have to wait a little longer then, no? I was looking around us when you were taking the test in the fourth level, but even until we left, only you passed. Based on that pace, waiting for a hundred people may take a long time. Wouldn't you be wasting a great deal of time? Before entering the Whirling World, I felt like two years was too long. Only after arriving here did I realize that two years is actually quite short. We're only in an eighth-grade city, and there are even more cities after this that we'll need even more time to challenge."

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked up to the skies.

They were on the fifth level of the tower, and no matter where he looked, all he saw was white. It was as if they entered a massive white box, and it was disconcerting. He sighed and said, "There are a lot of eighth-grade cities. Gathering a hundred people might not take that long…"

Jackie's words stunned Rudy, who frowningly looked at him in confusion. He had been about to ask a question when he suddenly heard a crackling sound.

The cold voice was heard again, "Array, activate!"

The moment the words were heard, the white disappeared as noises suddenly flooded the atmosphere.

Rudy jumped back in fright, and it took a while for him to look out around in fear.

They were in a barren land. The temperature had gone up a few degrees as well. Looking up, a faint yellow crescent moon hung in the sky. Rudy could only feel a barren sense from the environment.

The noise they heard was actually from other people. The two of them were not the only people there, there were 100 people, too. All of them stood not far away from the two of them, and everyone had looks of alarm on their faces. It was obvious that no one expected that to happen.

Compared to everyone else, Jackie was noticeably calm. Some people there looked foreign. It was obvious that everyone was meeting at the same time.

Rudy did not forget what Jackie had just said earlier. Not fully grasping what he meant, he asked in a whisper, "What did you mean earlier?"

Jackie sighed as he looked at the warriors around them. "It looks like I'm right… The warriors gathered here aren't just from Thousand Leaves City."

Rudy finally understood what Jackie had meant earlier. Jackie felt like the people gathered there were chosen from all the eighth-grade cities.

Rudy frowned, thinking about it for a while before he quickly nodded. Jackie was right, he believed. That was the only way that a hundred people would be gathered there.

Thinking about it, he felt like it was a bit unbelievable. “Before we entered Thousand Leaves City, we looked around us and didn’t notice any other cities. Even if it’s through a large-scale transfer array, it’d take a very long time…”

Before he could finish, Jackie raised a hand to stop him as he turned to look at Rudy. “I know what you want to say, but the Whirling World was left behind from ancient times. We can’t just judge it like that. They definitely used some special array to link up all the eighth-grade cities. All the eighth-grade cities will be transferred here on the fifth level.”

Chapter 2880
After saying that, Rudy gaped slightly in surprise. It really was a stroke of mastery. Even if Rudy had looked into arrays and formations before, he could not help but lament the fact that the ancient civilizations had such an amazing mastery of them.

He knew that any array in the current world could never do that, so Rudy lamented, “The ancient civilizations really were amazing. The things they do aren’t things that warriors like us can even imagine.”

Hearing his words, Jackie merely let out a slight laugh.

After absorbing the memories of the Divine Void World‘s ancient warriors, those amazing feats were nothing to him. In his memories, there were even greater feats.

“I thought that I won‘t be meeting any disciples from Phoenix Valley for a while,” said a man with the uniform of the Unbreaking Pavilion. His gaze was directed at a man in crimson robes.

Hearing Phoenix Valley being mentioned, Jackie and Rudy perked up in alert as they looked toward the man in the crimson robes. Thankfully, they had never seen the man before.

True enough, that man was wearing the clothes of a disciple of Phoenix Valley. With how he carried himself, he was someone at the peak of inner disciples, if not a chosen disciple.

The man let out a slight laugh. “I knew you wouldn’t have anything good to say after meeting me. You lost to me in the last round, Edgar Loupe. Are you that bitter that you can’t accept that?”

It seemed that the disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion was called Edgar.

Edgar narrowed his eyes like an angered tiger as he turned around and shouted at the crimson-robed man, “Cease your snippy remarks, Albert Hunt! Even if I lost to you by a hair strand, it was just because I was unlucky. It doesn’t mean I’m weaker than you. If the two of us face each other again, I’ll definitely win it convincingly. Don’t be so pleased with your past results!”

Albert snorted as he looked at Edgar condescendingly. “Are you such a sore loser? You talk like you’re stronger than me, but you lost to me! You say you lost by just a hair strand, but I think you lost by miles. You lost so completely, but you’re trying to be so arrogant here. Do you think that you can say whatever you want just because no one here saw our battle?”

Those words thoroughly angered Edgar. He rushed right forward and was only a meter away from Albert. He stared right at Albert, looking like he wanted to push Albert down with the pressure alone.

“You think I’m lying? You know yourself who’s the one saying whatever they want! How many times have you bragged in front of me just because of that one result between the two of us? I‘ve told you before: as long as there’s a chance for both of us to compete again, I’ll squash you!”

The tense atmosphere between the two of them attracted a lot of curious gazes. They had not lowered their voices, so everyone around them got the gist of things from their conversation.

One of them was from Phoenix Valley, while the other was from the Unbreaking Pavilion. The two clans were quite even in strength. Even though Phoenix Valley was not ranked among the clans, everyone in Middle Province with a bit of understanding knew that Phoenix Valley was no weaker than any eighth-grade clans. Even among eighth-grade clans, they would be at the peak, about equal to the Unbreaking Pavilion. The two forces had suddenly gone to war, so the warriors within those two forces would understandably have a lot of animosity among them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2881 - 2890

Chapter 2881
What the other warriors there never expected was the fact that the animosity between these parties would be so direct, they were right on each other's faces!

If not for the restrictions in place, they might have fought each other on the spot.

A few people started to whisper amongst themselves, and the two standing in front of Jackie, in particular, chatted interestedly.

"Even if we don't get anything from the fifth level, just this show alone would be worth it…"

"That's true. Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion are that hostile. I heard that they won't even bother talking and just jump straight into beating each other up unless rules prevent them. I wonder how many people have died recently."

"Did a lot of people die? Are they crazy? Don't they know that they'll just get taken advantage of by a third party? The two forces are fighting so intensely. If a lot of people die, other forces will definitely be paying attention. If the number of their elites waned down, they'll get attacked for sure. They'll disappear from the Hestia Continent completely!"

"I doubt the higher-ups of the two forces wouldn't know something so blatant that even you'd know. There must be something at work if the two forces are going to war. What is happening now, really?"

"Don't they both have the keys to the Valley of Enlightenment?"

"What do you know? If it's just for those keys, they wouldn't fight to such an extreme! Something must be happening behind the scenes."

Everyone else started to throw guesses while Edgar and Albert were bickering. Everyone was wondering what the reason for the war starting was. They would not believe the reason that those two forces had given up, it was too easy for such a guess. Anyone with the slightest common sense knew that those two forces would be taken advantage of.

Oddly, the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley did not care about using up important resources as they headed into war. There had to be a reason that the war was necessary. The reason had not been announced, of course, so it had to be a secret kept under tight scrutiny.

Some speculated further.

“I think that Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion must be fighting for a treasure that can make them a ninth-grade clan. Otherwise, there’s no way they are fighting over it so intensely.”

“Hey, you might be onto something here! Even if it’s not something that can make them a ninth-grade clan like you said, it must be something incredibly valuable.”

“Both parties refuse to spill anything, though. Many forces are trying so hard to find out what’s happening but have all failed to get even a single bit of news. It’s rather vexing.”

The discussions did not stop, and Rudy and Jackie merely listened in quietly from behind. After a while, the two of them discussed the matter as well.

The point Rudy was the most fixated on was that they had not figured out the reason for everything. All they knew was that the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley were just fighting outwardly when all this while, they had some sort of cooperation going on in secret.

As for what they were working on, no one knew that. Fights between two people were usually because of grudges, but clans would not let something like that control their emotions.

Chapter 2882
Rudy frowned and said, “Everyone here is talking with such interest, but none of them grasped the main point. None of them know that Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion are just fighting on the surface, putting on a show for the other forces in Middle Province.”

Jackie nodded. “Meanwhile, the other forces are probably all busy trying to figure out what’s so amazing that the two of them would start fighting. None of them have intervened, probably because they want to see if they can take advantage of the situation. They don’t know at all that they’ve been tricked. They’ve all been played like fools.”

Rudy let out a laugh as he nodded. “It’s nice looking at others’ fights. No wonder everyone loves to join in on everything. The arguments on the fourth level were because I couldn’t keep my mouth shut, so I’ll keep quiet this time. Even if I have anything to say, I’ll lower my voice and make sure no one hears me. That way, no one will trouble us, right?”

Despite his words, there was a sliver of uncertainty in his voice. He was already afraid of causing any trouble. Wherever he went, some lunatic would be hostile toward them, and as such, they never had a moment of peace.

Jackie knew what Rudy was thinking of when he looked at Rudy’s expression, so he let out a small smile as he nodded, patting Rudy on the shoulder.

“Don’t worry this time, no one here knows who I am,” assured Jackie. “As long as we’re careful, they won’t cause us any trouble. There’s only one goal for us, which is to get through the test on the fifth level and get to the sixth.”

Rudy nodded, patting his chest. “You’re right. Everyone here is from different cities. They’ve never met us and definitely don’t know us. They won’t cause us any trouble for no reason…”

Meanwhile, Edgar let out another shout, “Stop spouting nonsense at me! Do you think I don’t know that you put in so much effort just to meet me in the same city? Aren’t you here because you want to embarrass me? Let me tell you, you no longer have any grounds to humiliate me. You’re no match for me at all. I’ll just squash you!”

Hearing that, Albert could not stop himself from laughing as he looked at Edgar as though he was a fool.

“What are you talking about? Why would I bother trying to meet you? Who do you think you are?”

The two of them no longer cared about their station as they started to say whatever came to their minds.

Edgar’s face darkened as he sneered, “I heard that you never planned on entering Cloud City, but why are you here now?”

That was his strongest proof, but Albert seemed to disagree with a bewildered frown.

“Cloud City? I entered Crescent Moon City! It’s eighteen miles away from Cloud City!”

The two of them immediately calmed down after they said that. Everyone around them started to widen their eyes. The more quick-witted people, meanwhile, began questioning each other about their origins. Everyone was shocked upon hearing each other‘s responses.

They were all from different cities and had passed the tests for the fourth level and arrived in the fifth, hence how everyone was gathered here. After figuring things out, everyone had looks of shock on their faces, other than Jackie and Rudy.

Rudy whispered into Jackie’s ear, “These idiots finally figured it out. I thought that talented warriors would at least be close to you in intelligence. I thought that they’d figure out something was wrong when they got to the fifth level and figure out things about this place. I thought too highly of them, it seems.”

Jackie smiled, not saying anything.

Chapter 2883

Rudy seemed to have gained slight interest in the situation and wanted to properly talk about it with Jackie. “It’s so relaxing not being targeted by anyone,” he mused, “And we don’t have to argue with idiots! No wonder you always give me that look like I’m a fool… I finally understand now. These ignorant people don’t know what level you‘ve reached. Things we talk about might sound normal to us, but they’ll just think we’re bragging. They would just try to push us down…”

“You’re Jackie?” interjected a new voice, inquisitive, before Rudy could finish.

Jackie frowned as a flash of disgust crossed his face. At this point, he felt like he could rage if anyone, except for Rudy, called out to him.

Alas, he had to look up in acknowledgment.

The moment he looked up, he saw Edgar smiling right at him, much to Jackie’s surprise. After all, Edgar had just been intensely quarreling with Albert and looked like he wanted nothing more than to beat up Albert.

Jackie had just been exchanging a few words with Rudy when the guy ran right in front of him. At a glance, he looked like bad news already.

Jackie frowned, not. wanting to have much to do with Edgar.

If it had been any other warrior, they might have tried to curry favor with Edgar thanks to his background. However, Jackie could not be bothered with the guy and merely nodded coldly without saying anything.

Edgar did not have too big of a reaction toward Jackie’s attitude. It was a far cry from the explosive temper he showed earlier. He let out a smile as he walked two steps forward, standing next to Jackie.

At this moment, Jackie grew even more irked as he eyed the man coldly, asking, “How do you know me? I don’t think I’ve met you before. Do you need something?”

Edgar let out a laugh as he shook his head. “Why are you being so cautious? I’ve just heard that you’re very talented but don’t have much of a background. I wanted to invite you to join the Unbreaking Pavilion. You should at least be an inner disciple if you join the Unbreaking Pavilion! Of course, if you’re already part of anywhere else, then I won’t be saying this…”

Jackie frowned.

Edgar was trying to pull Jackie into the Unbreaking Pavilion?

No matter how Jackie thought about it, he felt unsettled. The goal was definitely not that.

Jackie took a deep breath. “I don’t come from anywhere, I’m already used to working alone. The Unbreaking Pavilion is large as it is, and I’d just be a small fish there. It‘s better for me to swim around among the normal warriors.”

Jackie was already being very polite, but Edgar decided to brush it aside as he said with amusement, “Oh, no need to joke around! We’re not idiots here. I heard that your skills and talents are all among the best. Even chosen disciples of high-ranked clans might not be able to beat you.”

The moment he said that, everyone turned around to look at Jackie with curiosity. Edgar’s evaluation had been incredibly high earlier.

If anyone else had said this, they might have doubted it was true. However, it was Edgar, a man from the Unbreaking Pavilion, who said this, so everyone believed it. After all, anyone who knew that Edgar was someone incredibly arrogant. He never admitted defeat to anyone, so Jackie must have been skilled enough to earn his praise.

Jackie let out a sneer when he heard Edgar’s flattery.

Edgar would not praise him for no reason. After all, he had interacted with disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion a few times, and not once did he have a good impression. He knew that everyone from that clan was insufferably arrogant. Edgar had a different goal in mind for sure.

Just as Jackie expected, Edgar continued, “You’re very strong and so talented! You have a lot of resources to support you and elders to teach you. I’ve already said all this to you, so are you going to insist on hiding things?”

Chapter 2884
Despite the smile on Edgar’s face, his eyes seemed to be scowling at Jackie. Even Rudy, standing next to Jackie, could see through his intentions.

Rudy frowned as various thoughts flashed in his head. First of all, he did not know who Edgar was. Furthermore, Edgar had not gotten through to the fifth level from Thousand Leaves City, but from another city instead.

Rudy would not be so confused if Edgar had been from Thousand Leaves City. After all, so many things had happened since they entered the Thousand Leaves Tower, and a few people had witnessed Jackie’ s strength. Even though they had some conflicts with the Unbreaking Pavilion in Black Sun City, the disciples that saw Jackie had all died. Even if those wandering warriors had told the Unbreaking Pavilion about Jackie, Rudy noticed just how eerily swift Edgar recognized Jackie.

That could not have happened, even if those wandering warriors had described how Jackie looked. After all, there was no way to perfectly describe how someone looked. Those thoughts constantly flashed in Rudy's mind, and he was filled with doubt

Edgar's words and actions were too confusing.

How did Edgar know who Jackie was? Could Edgar have known Jackie before entering the Whirling World?

Jackie raised an eyebrow and looked at Edgar, barely reacting to Edgar's words.

Edgar started to get angry when he saw that Jackie did not seem willing to play along, even after he had made things so clear. Even if Edgar had other intentions, he was someone of high status. He could not bear to be ignored like that.

Jackie was overstepping his boundaries.

Albert let out a sneer. "Edgar, he doesn't want to talk with you at all. Can't you tell? Do you think the Unbreaking Pavilion is the best clan in all of Hestia? Do you think anyone would join just because you asked them to? He has his own background if he's strong, so why are you rambling here?"

Edgar frowned as he shot Albert an angry look. The two of them were practically mortal enemies at that point, and Albert was, of course, happy to see Edgar suffering.

Albert smiled and walked over, giving Jackie a once-over. Nothing seemed out of the ordinary about Jackie, and he had seen how Edgar behaved. He knew Edgar had other intentions. Naturally, he would not let him get what he wanted.

He let out a laugh as he said, facing Jackie, "Haven't you heard that those with ill intentions never give off good vibes?"

After he said that, everyone knew that there were some intentions behind those words.

Edgar shouted angrily, "What do you mean? I'm just chatting with Jackie, not you! Ill intentions? You're the one with ill intentions. I just wanted to have a chat with him. Everyone respects the strong. I've heard about Jackie before, and I'm just that curious about him. That's why I wanted to talk to him a little."

Albert raised an eyebrow and said in disdain, "Only an idiot would believe that. You said all that earlier to try and figure out where Jackie is from!"

Chapter 2885
Albert's words exposed Edgar's motives, leaving the man completely furious.

At this point, asking Jackie more questions would be too obvious, and anyone would be on alert after that. Thus, Edgar could not proceed as he planned.

The desire to rip Albert to shreds thickened as he panted furiously, pointing at Albert. “Only petty men think everyone’s a thief. I never thought about that at all! I just wanted to have a chat with Jackie. Where did you hear that I’m trying to look into things?”

Albert raised an eyebrow, answering earnestly, “You were constantly asking where Jackie’s from. Didn’t you just say that he should just tell you where he’s from since things were already at that point? Isn’t that just you revealing your intentions? You don’t know him at all, yet you tried to be so nice to him. With your temperament, there’s no way you’d act like that without a goal!”

Those words deflated Edgar. He looked at Albert hatefully as he gritted his teeth angrily. However, there was nothing he could do.

Everyone around them could see for themselves what had happened, it was obvious what Edgar had been doing at that point.

Edgar truly did try to pry into Jackie’s background, but why the need to do so?

Jackie quietly stood by the side as he looked at the two of them arguing. He had already figured out what Albert‘s intentions were from Albert’s second question. Various questions and speculations started to surface in his mind.

How did Edgar recognize him? How was Edgar sure that Jackie was strong?

After all, Edgar was not from Thousand Leaves City, so he could not have gotten that information.

Why did Edgar want to know where he was from? What was the reason?

Various things played around in Jackie’s mind, and an ominous feeling rose in his mind. Edgar‘s actions made Jackie raise his guard. True, he had encountered a lot of things, and his skills had improved greatly. However, there should have been no way for Edgar to know who he was. After all, he had killed off all the disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion in Black Sun City.

The wandering warriors might have seen him, but they did not have any special ways to record what he looked like. Even those wandering cultivators could only convey how he looked by describing him or drawing him, but that was not enough for Edgar to recognize him at a glance.

Thinking about that, Jackie shook his head, denying that possibility. Edgar could not possibly recognize him through the wandering warriors, so who was the one who recognized him?

They could have gotten Jackie‘s name, of course, as his rough appearance through the wandering warriors, but that was not enough to recognize him at a glance. Since it was not the wandering warriors, it had to be someone he met in Thousand Leaves City.

Before entering Thousand Leaves City, he had some conflicts, but none of them involved the Unbreaking Pavilion. After entering Thousand Leaves Tower, he had not had any fights with disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion, but he did have an issue or two with the Compass Pavilion instead.

Chapter 2886
The more Jackie thought about it, the more confused he got.

Edgar and Albert who were next to him were already coming to verbal blows. The two of them could not stand the sight of each other, and Albert had even interfered with this.

How could Edgar take that?

Edgar shouted loudly at Albert, “Just you wait! I definitely won’t let you off. Even if we can’t fight here, I’ll find you when we get out! Don’t think you can continue bragging in front of me!”

Albert laughed, saying nonchalantly, “You talk like you’re strong enough to have me on my knees if we meet again. You’re clearly the weaker one because talking is all you do!”

Jackie frowned as he looked at the both of them arguing. He felt like his ears were buzzing. He turned around and walked in another direction as he did not want to bother with them anymore.

Edgar’s plans had already been exposed. It would only cause suspicion if he continued, and he would have nothing to gain, so Edgar did not stop Jackie from leaving.

Rudy followed behind Jackie, and the two of them found a spacious place.

Jackie had been frowning the whole time as various emotions flashed in Jackie’s eyes.

Rudy whispered the thoughts in his head, “What’s up with that Edgar person? How did he recognize you? How did you know you were strong? He even tried to figure out where you’re from. What’s he doing all this for? Albert was right, Edgar definitely had other intentions trying to approach you. It’s definitely nothing good!”

Jackie sighed as he turned to look at Rudy earnestly. In truth, he should be quietly thinking about things at that moment, but Rudy was right beside him and knew everything as well.

He felt like discussing things with Rudy might yield something as he said, “He should have not recognized me through those wandering warriors… “

After saying that, Jackie told Rudy about his earlier thoughts. After Rudy heard Jackie's explanation, he nodded earnestly, "You're right. We had a good look at all the wandering warriors then, if they had used any recording arrays, we'd have immediately noticed. Yet, everyone had been fixated on going into Black Sun City."

Jackie nodded as he continued, "The wandering warriors did not record my appearance, but someone else must have. Someone had definitely recorded my image and somehow sent the information over. That's how Albert recognized me all the way in Cloud City."

Rudy nodded, "Then the most important question is here. Who used an array to record your appearance?"

There was a special array that could allow a person's appearance to be recorded perfectly in it. It could even send that information out through special methods. However, the arrays were incredibly expensive, so regular people could not possibly own any.

The fact that Edgar recognized Jackie at a glance was definitely thanks to that special array. Someone had recorded Jackie's image and sent it to the other eighth level cities.

Chapter 2887
All of the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion probably already knew what Jackie looked like.

Jackie let out a sigh. He then said, "They know how I look and that I'm called Jackie. They know I'm skilled as well, but they don't know where I'm from. It means that they only knew of me from the Whirling World!"

Rudy nodded, looking at Jackie respectfully. He had been so confused about everything, but Jackie had started to analyze things earnestly. Everything Jackie said seemed logical.

Jackie continued, "If they did not know me from what I did in Black Sun City, then it had to be someone from Thousand Leaves City who recorded me and sent it over. Before we entered Thousand Leaves City, we met quite a few people, but there were no disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion among them. Even if I did well, there could not have been any disciples sending my image over… So I'm sure that the person who recorded my image must be a warrior we met after entering the Thousand Leaves Tower."

Hearing that, Jackie suddenly remembered Cody Stone.

After entering the Thousand Leaves Tower, Cody had been the disciples that had left the biggest impression on him. However, he had not had any conflicts with Cody. Cody

probably did not even know who he was. Cody had already gotten into the second level when he defeated Vale.

Thinking about that, Jackie said helplessly, “Could it really be because I’ve been doing too well? That’s why a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion took down my image and broadcast it. Do they really want me to join the Unbreaking Pavilion?”

Rudy nodded, feeling like that was the most plausible explanation. After all, they had not had any fights with the Unbreaking Pavilion after Black Sun City.

Jackie sighed again, “Even if it’s very possible, I don’t think it’s reliable. When has the Unbreaking Pavilion ever lacked disciples? Even if they did, they would not try to invite me to join like this. Furthermore, Edgar clearly had other intentions when he was talking to me. He definitely did not mean well. How could he be talking to me in that manner if he wants to be my fellow disciple..?”

After saying that, someone’s image flashed in Jackie’s mind. He stiffened suddenly as an answer that was closer to the truth appeared in his heart.

He widened his eyes as he said slowly, “We didn’t just meet Cody! There’s also Grayson, who was wearing the clothes of the Unbreaking Pavilion!”

The moment Jackie said that Rudy stiffened as well. He finally realized that there was Grayson.

On the second level, Rudy had been unable to control himself when he saw Grayson again and started to interrogate him.

Grayson had acted too strangely then. He was even wearing the uniform of the Unbreaking Pavilion. Rudy had not gotten any answers and had been lectured by Jackie as well. He had thought that it would all be in the past, but he never expected what happened today to be tied with that.

Rudy took a deep breath, “So you think that Grayson was the one who did it? He was the one who broadcasted how you looked using a special array?!”

Chapter 2888
Jackie nodded, saying quickly, “Do you remember how Grayson looked at you when you were questioning him? He looked at you as if it was the first time he had ever seen you. He did not seem to know the two of us, and looked at us like enemies when you questioned him!”

Rudy had a dark look on his face and replied, “That’s true! That’s what happened! So he recorded your image with a special array and broadcasted it. He really doesn’t know us, and wanted to figure out where you’re from…”

Jackie nodded. That should have been what happened.

That was the only reason he could think of after considering everything that had happened. However, a bigger question remained, what did Grayson go through?

Could Grayson have done all that just to try and figure Jackie out?

Jackie sighed…

“There are too many questions regarding Grayson. The information we can get is not enough to determine what happened to him. Why doesn’t he know us? Why was he looking into us? What does he want…”

After saying that, Jackie no longer knew what to say. He felt like more and more mysteries were popping up. It was like a dark cloud that would never go away, trapping him inside.

Rudy looked at Jackie, actually having a lot to say. However, he swallowed back his words after some thought, taking a long time before saying, “Should we just stop thinking about this? Edgar was only trying to look into where you’re from, and not anything else. Even if they want to do anything bad to us, it should take some time…”

Rudy saw a conflicted and exasperated look on Jackie’s face. It did not feel great. This time, Rudy clearly understood why dwelling on impossible problems was useless.

He turned to look around him. It still looked the same as when they first came in. It was already almost an hour, but nothing had changed. That wizened voice had not spoken.

After arriving at the fifth level, it was like the hundred of them had been forgotten. The ones who argued were arguing, and others talked among themselves.

Rudy frowned and questioned, “Strange, we’ve been in here for so long, so why hasn’t anything changed at all? Could there be no test on the fifth level?”

Jackie finally realized that they had already been there for a while. Usually, the test should have already begun. They had entered with so many questions, and warriors from other cities were all gathered there. It was like they had been forgotten. There were not even any changes in the environment.

People slowly started to react as well, as they started to discuss loudly, “Why hasn’t it started yet? Wasn’t the test supposed to begin when a hundred have gathered?”

“Why aren’t there any changes? Who knows what the fifth level’s test is? What was the array that was activated?”

“I don’t know. I only heard a voice before we came that a hundred were needed to restart the array. Yet, nothing seemed to have happened after reaching this place, other than everyone else suddenly appearing. I wonder if something happened…”

As everyone started to discuss the matter, they suddenly heard the creaking of mechanisms moving. Everyone suddenly froze as the noise of conversation disappeared.

Chapter 2889
All of them widened their eyes as they looked around. They were all on full alert, ready for anything to suddenly happen. After a few moments, that familiar voice was heard again. It was as deep and monotonous as usual…

“All members gathered, and the fifth level’s test will begin. All of you entered an illusory world, you’re not in the real world…”

Everyone froze at that. Even Jackie looked up in disbelief. They were not in the actual world, but an illusion.

Jackie never felt like he was in one from start to finish, because everything had felt so real. After absorbing so many memories of past heroes, he was very confident in his intuition. After all, he had all that experience to fall back on. Jackie would usually notice any hint of irregularity. Yet, he had felt like everything was normal after entering the place. Everyone he saw and everything he heard seemed perfect. There had been no way for him to know that he had been trapped in an illusion at all. The ones around him were incredibly surprised as well. “So I’m in an illusion? Then you’re all fake people? Only I’m real?”

“Dream on! You’re the fake one. This is probably not a complete illusion, but a partial one. We can talk to each other, but what’s in front of us might not be real…”

“What are you going on about…” Some felt like they had entered a solitary world, while some thought that they had entered the same illusion as everyone else.

The arguments were getting louder, but none of that affected Jackie. He was already sure that the illusion included everyone.

The deep voice was heard again, “You will be facing countless wind beasts later. Your current bodies are not your actual bodies at all. They were replicated with a special method. Your skills and techniques were not weakened at all. If you lose to a wind beast and end up being killed, you won’t experience actual death. You will just be kicked out! There is only one winner in this match… The first person to break past the array will earn the key to the sixth level.”

Jackie frowned, feeling like the words were a bit confusing. Only one person could be the victor. The person who broke the array would win, but no one mentioned any arrays.

After all the discussions, the noise slowly died again. A howl of wind could suddenly be heard, and everyone started to jump in alarm as they slowly formed a circle.

Jackie had been at a corner earlier, so he was the furthest away. He looked at Rudy helplessly. Rudy had really turned into a complete burden then.

The moment they started fighting, it would be hard for Jackie to protect Rudy. Rudy had felt that, and pursed his lips as he said earnestly to Jackie, “You don‘t have to care about me after the test starts. I wouldn’t be able to hold on for that long even with you protecting me anyway. It’s just an illusion, and I won’t actually die. I’ll just be kicked out.”

Chapter 2890
Even if he was not eliminated, it was useless for Jackie to keep guard of him anyway. After all, Rudy could not get the prize. Jackie nodded, if he really decided to ignore Rudy, then Rudy would definitely be eliminated.

A few familiar roars were heard in the distance. Green figures started to rapidly charge at them. A few hundred wind beasts were basically rushing at them with all their might. Those wind beasts were flaring their teeth with eyes full of bloodlust, looking like they wanted to rip everyone apart.

“What do we do?! Break the array? Is this an array? Do they want us to break out of the illusion or the array? I have no idea what’s happening, and the test has already started…”

“I haven’t figured anything out either. There was so much free time at the start, and nothing was said. Why is the test so rushed? We didn’t get any time to think about what array we were supposed to break at all. Could those wind beasts have all been formed by arrays?”

The warriors were all in confusion. The earlier announcement had been far too sudden. They were already in a state of panic before they could even make things clear.

Jackie stared at the wind beasts that were charging over, gripping his gray sword tightly. At that moment, he only had one thought in mind, which was figuring out how to destroy the array.

Were the wind beasts part of an array, or everything around them?

Unfortunately, the time was too short. The wind beasts had already arrived right in front of them.

Jackie frowned as he pushed Rudy behind him. The sword in his hand constantly danced, practically killing a wind beast each time he slashed. Thankfully, all of those wind beasts had been restricted to the late stage of the innate level, and their killing

techniques were restricted to the middle earth rank. No one who got to the fifth level was weak.

Those wind beasts were no match for the warriors alone, but they were charging up in waves. Even if the warriors could face the wind beasts, it was still quite a lot of pressure.

The roars of anger from the wind beasts and the crazed shouts of the warriors could both be heard. With the sound of weapons clashing against claws, the originally quiet surroundings became incredibly rowdy.

Practically everyone who arrived at the fifth level was a disciple from a high-grade clan. They were all elite warriors, and many wind beasts died within a short time.

There were still no deaths on the human side, but as time passed, some people started to lose control.

“It’s unending! After one dies, the second and the third charge forward. Just look! There’s still an unending flow of wind beasts charging right at us! What is happening? What array do we need to break?!”

“I’ve already stopped thinking about that. There are too many wind beasts. It’s impossible to kill them all!”

In order to stop themselves from getting injured by a sneak attack from a wind beast, everyone was wound up very tightly. No one had the time to even think about the array. It was a vicious cycle. They constantly fought and did not have the time to think of ways to break the array. Since they could not break the array, they would face an unending wave of wind beasts.

There were way too many wind beasts, and their true energy was limited. Their true energy would be expended eventually. When that happened, they would not be able to fight back even if they wanted to.

Jackie realized that as well, but he did not know what he needed to do at that moment. There should be an array, but he could not figure out what kind of array it was, or how he could break it.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2891 - 2895

Chapter 2891

There was only one thing he knew. It was impossible to break the array just by relying on constantly killing the wind beast.

“Jackie, why are the wind beasts not attacking me?” Rudy said to Jackie.

Jackie had pushed Rudy behind him earlier, but as time passed, Rudy realized in surprise that those wind beasts did not seem to see him at all. All of the attacks fell on the warriors that relied on themselves to enter the fifth level.

He was completely ignored as a dependent. Even without Jackie’s protection, the wind beasts ignored him anyway, not attacking him. That actually gave Jackie more room to relax, not needing to protect Rudy.

“Everyone, quickly figure something out! We can let this go on, or all of us will be eliminated!”

“I can’t hold on any longer…” A man from the Deer Pavilion let out a cry of misery.

Right after he said that a wind beast bit him on the arm. The wind beast’s bite was incredibly strong. With a pull, it ripped that man’s arm off.

The disciple of the Deer Pavilion let out a cry of agony. At that moment, his entire body weakened from the injury. He was pushed down by the charging wind beasts and had his head ripped off in a flash.

Everyone saw that sight and suddenly felt a chill on their backs. After that disciple died, the space in front of him suddenly distorted as he turned into gray specs of light, entering the distorted space in front of him. That meant that the person had already lost, and was kicked out. Other than Jackie, everyone had a dark look on their faces. That was just the beginning.

There were more and more people after that who fell to the wind beasts’ attacks either because they let down their guard or they had used up all their true energy. After they were killed by the wind beasts, they were eliminated in the same way. All of those warriors had managed to get to the fifth level because of their exceptional talents and extraordinary skills. All of them naturally had the arrogance of a strong warrior, so all of them wanted to be the sole victor!

Yet, the more they wanted to be the victor, the more they panicked. After all, they still had not figured out the situation at that moment.

The victor needed to break the array, but none of them knew what the array was! There was no way they could break the array. Just as everyone was feeling lost, a shout was heard in the distance, “I understand now. I remember! So, that’s how it is!”

Jackie was the one who said all of that. At that moment, he was waving his sword around and shouting in excitement.

After that disciple of the Deer Pavilion had died, Jackie had seen everything that had happened. He remembered something when he saw the disciple turn into gray specs of light and get absorbed by the space. It was thanks to the memories of the ancient heroes. Those warriors had seen uncountable arrays. After the array activated again, Jackie immediately figured it out. He had thought that the array was incredibly special, but it had been so simple. He suddenly felt like his judgment had been clouded by the excitement, but his sudden exclamation was met with eye rolls.

They felt like Jackie was just shouting for no reason. After all, no one even had any clues, but Jackie was shouting that he remembered it.

Everyone felt like Jackie was being too sly…

Chapter 2892
Earlier, Edgar had been fully focused on arguing with Albert, but he did not forget how disrespectful Jackie had been. Even with how humble and friendly he had been acting, Jackie still gave him the cold shoulder. It was deeply humiliating to Edgar.

Edgar immediately shouted back at Jackie’ s words, “What are you blindly talking about? Everyone here couldn’t figure anything out even after working together, but you claim to know everything! Even if you want to brag, you should do it at the right time. Don’t think that we’ll look at you just because you said something at this moment!” Edgar’s words infuriated Rudy.

Rudy shouted back, “What do you mean by this?! If Jackie said that, it means he’s sure. You’re just trying to be petty!”

Edgar let out a laugh and brushed it aside, “Don’t judge others by your own standards. Petty? Do you think Jackie is that righteous or noble? I want to see what he’s figured out. Don’t tell me he’s figured out how to break the array, I won’t believe it!”

A lot of people around them agreed with Edgar’s words, “Edgar’s right, we haven’t even found a single thing, but this guy suddenly shouted that he’s figured it out. What could he figure out?”

“I refuse to believe one person can suddenly figure everything out when the rest of us haven‘t made any progress!”

“This guy probably just had some flash of inspiration, and is trying to brag that he figured it out…”

Everyone else seemed to agree with that sentiment. They felt like Jackie had just merely had an epiphany, but he naturally did not care about how everyone else viewed him.

He sighed as he thought about similar arrays in his mind when he fought the wind beasts. After someone finally died, he felt something familiar and easily found the name of the array in his memories.

He suddenly widened his eyes as he muttered, “The Phantom Array!”

The Phantom Array was an array that could only be set up by warriors of first-grade worlds. Warriors of second-grade worlds did not have the ability. Yet, it appeared in the Whirling World, which proves that the whirling World definitely had a close relationship with first-grade worlds.

Those cities that remained or those ancient formations were all created by warriors from first-grade worlds.

With that thought in mind, Jackie’s eyes lit up in excitement.

The sounds of mockery could be heard around him. Everyone was looking at Jackie as they fend off the wind beasts, wanting to see what Jackie would do.

Jackie lightly snorted, ignoring everyone as he gripped the gray sword in his hand. Suddenly, the tip of his sword was pointed at his neck, looking like he was about to commit suicide.

Everyone was stunned at the sight. “What is this brat trying to do? Is he trying to kill himself? Is he giving up because he knows he won’t be able to pass?”

Chapter 2893
“That has to be it. That guy bragged so much earlier, but actually can’t back it up. So he’s trying to kill himself to avoid embarrassment.”

Those harsh words echoed around Jackie. Not a single person thought that he could do anything. Jackie did not care what everyone else thought. He merely took a deep breath as he moved his hand.

Everyone heard a piercing sound, and blood immediately flowed from Jackie’s throat. It was the first time he felt his life slowly slipping away.

That was the feeling of being close to death, but Jackie was not in a panic at all. Even though everyone had talked up a storm, feeling like his crazy actions were him giving up, no one expected Jackie to actually do it.

“This guy actually did kill himself. If he really wanted to give up and leave this place, he could have just stopped fighting and let the wind beasts finish him. Did he need to kill himself? Does he think it would look sad? So what if it did? Would we look at him in a better light?”

Jackie’s actions caused everyone a lot of surprises. They could not understand why Jackie did so. Even Rudy panicked.

When Jackie pointed the sword at his own throat, various thoughts flashed in Rudy‘s mind.

Rudy already knew not to question any of Jackie’s actions, he felt like Jackie was always incredibly logical no matter what he did, but Rudy never expected that Jackie would actually kill himself.

Could Jackie really have given up as they said?

However, Rudy immediately shook his head and threw that thought to the back of his head when the idea surfaced. Jackie was not someone who would do that. If he had a goal in mind, he would not change his mind easily.

With his body weakening, Jackie collapsed to the ground, and Rudy immediately helped Jackie up. Rudy could feel the blood from Jackie’s body constantly flowing out of the wound on his throat. If that continued, Jackie would lose his life in just a moment. Even though Jackie would not actually die, Rudy still started to panic.

Rudy’s voice was trembling, “What happened? Why did you kill yourself? Even if it’s an illusion, there was no need to kill yourself to leave…”

Rudy could not figure anything out at that moment. He did not know what Jackie was doing at all.

Could Jackie really have given up as everyone said?

After all, only by dying would they be eliminated and sent out of the illusion.

Jackie frowned as he rapidly lost his strength. Even his true energy dissipated. At that moment, Jackie did not even have the strength to talk to Rudy. He merely looked at Rudy before shutting his eyes.

Everyone started to laugh as they looked at Jackie like a joke. “That kid is something else. He acted like he had seen through everything, but he actually killed himself the next moment…”

“There must be something wrong with his head. Even if he wanted to be eliminated, there was no need to do something so crazy. What was the point other than letting us laugh at him?”

Edgar was laughing uproariously, but he was still fighting the wind beasts. He still had the time to mock Jackie, “There really is something wrong with his head. I thought he was strong at the start, but it looks like I was wrong…”

Right after Edgar had said that the creaking sounds of mechanisms moving could be heard. Everyone suddenly looked up, and a howling wind blew past them. All of the wind beasts suddenly stopped moving, as if a button to stop had been pushed.

Chapter 2894
The next second, the wind beasts suddenly started to explode one by one, turning into green specs of light, dispersing into the air. Everything had happened too quickly, and the warriors did not even have a chance to react.

“What happened? Why did those wind beasts suddenly explode into a green light?”

“I don’t know, could we have accidentally broken the array?”

“Maybe we’ve all lost?”

At the same time as everyone was celebrating the disappearance of those annoying wind beasts, they started to discuss why the wind beasts disappeared.

As everyone was wondering in confusion, the wizened voice was heard again, “The Phantom Array has been broken. The fifth level’s test has ended. The victor will be given one key!”

That answered the doubt in everyone’s hearts. When they heard that someone had actually broken the array, they all widened their eyes as they looked around at each other in confusion.

At that moment, they only had one thought in mind. They all wondered which master had broken the array when everyone else was at a loss. They still had not figured out what the Phantom Array was.

They did not know what grade the Phantom Array was, but it did not stop them from feeling shocked. Edgar frowned as he reluctantly looked around. He was a chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan. He should have been the most excellent one among all

the warriors. Even if the array had been broken, he should have been the one to break it, not anyone else.

He suddenly turned to look at Albert and relaxed a bit when he saw that Albert was also looking around in confusion. It meant that Albert was not the one to break the array. If Albert had been the one, then Albert would definitely not miss out on the chance to show off in front of him.

Who was it if not Albert?

He more or less knew all the chosen disciples from the high grade clans. However, other than Albert most of the faces here were foreign. Not a single one of them was a chosen disciple of a high level clan.

At the most, they were inner disciples. Just as he was busy puzzling things over, a faint golden light descended from above. The light slowly dissipated as it descended, revealing a golden key in front of everyone.

That was the key to getting to the sixth level. The rules had been incredibly clear. Only the person who broke the array could get the key, and the key would only allow one person to get to the sixth level.

Everyone had looks of envy on their faces. No one knew what would happen on the sixth level or what tests it would be, but everyone knew there would be amazing rewards. They would definitely benefit greatly if they had gotten the rewards for themselves.

With that thought in mind, some of them had the urge to steal the key.

With a boom, someone had lost his patience as a green-robed man shot forward like a cannonball, heading straight for the golden key to steal it. Even though he was afraid of the restrictions, he felt like it would have been too great of a benefit if he managed to get the key.

He was only one key away from getting to the sixth level. The greed got the better of him as he reached out for the key. In a flash, he was only three feet away from the golden key.

Chapter 2895
As he got closer to the key, the man’s smile deepened, “The key is mine!”

He let out an excited roar as he reached out to the key with all his might. Yet, purple lightning suddenly descended from the skies at that moment. Everyone merely heard a crack as the lightning fell right on the man.

The man let out a cry of agony as his whole body started to twitch. His skin started to blacken visibly as he was set on fire. He had already stopped breathing by the time his body hit the ground. He had been killed by the lightning that struck him.

Everyone shuddered when they saw the sight.

When the golden key had descended, everyone had greedy thoughts in their minds. However, the green-robed man had been the only person to try to steal the key. After all, everyone still had a line they would not cross. They knew that they could very well be punished by the laws if they made any moves.

When they saw what happened to the man, all of them were incredibly thankful that they did not attempt to steal the key.

At that moment, Jackie suddenly opened his eyes. The wound on his throat started to heal visibly, and the true energy and life force he had lost all recovered to the state they were in before they entered the Phantom Array.

Rudy widened his eyes abruptly as he looked at Jackie in disbelief, not knowing what to say at that moment.

Jackie was not in the mood to entertain Rudy at that moment. After he had enough energy, he jumped up on the spot and reached out for the golden key.

Everything that had happened attracted the attention of the other warriors. They did not realize that Jackie had recovered. When everyone saw that someone was reaching out for the golden key, everyone merely felt like the person was an idiot.

Did the person not see what had happened to the green-robed man?

However, they were shocked to see that lightning did not appear after the person grabbed the key. Everything was normal!

“Why didn’t the lightning strike him? This guy is trying to steal the key!” Someone shouted with widened eyes.

However, someone else immediately answered him, “Are you dumb? The key is meant for the victor. Since he was not struck by the laws when he grabbed the key, then it should be obvious who he is.”

The moment the person said that exclamations of shock were heard again. That was because Jackie had already turned around, and his familiar face was seen by everyone. They all widened their eyes as they looked at Jackie like they had seen a ghost.

They really were seeing a ghost.

Did Jackie not slash his own throat? Why was Jackie standing there as if nothing had happened, holding the golden key?

Could Jackie have been the one to break the array?!

Everything he had done earlier, really was to break the Phantom Array. Yet, that was a little absurd.

Could slashing one's own throat be the key to breaking the Phantom Array?

Various thoughts were formed and they felt like they were right.

'That brat might really have been breaking the array earlier,' Albert felt a twang of jealousy, but he did not see Jackie as his enemy in the end.

Jackie had the golden key and would ascend to the sixth level. Even if he did not like it, he still had to deal with Edgar first.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior chapter 2896 - 2900

Chapter 2896

He laughed as he said to Edgar, “You really were right. He really was breaking the array earlier. Jackie’s really something else. He’s better than you both in talent and intelligence!”

Edgar looked like he had been slapped by those words. He looked at Albert with a look of intense hatred.

Albert laughed it off, and as the two of them were about to quarrel again, the space around them suddenly distorted, surrounding everyone.

Jackie took a deep breath, not fighting back at the distorted space surrounding him. After a few moments, the space around him returned to normal. He opened his eyes again, and then he noticed that he had left that dark and yellow world, and arrived at a pitch black one. Thankfully, Rudy was by his side.

Rudy widened his eyes as he looked around in shock. The sudden distortion earlier had thoroughly scared him. Rudy reached out to grab Jackie’s arm, afraid that something was happening.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy, “Don’t worry, the space suddenly distorted earlier to separate all of us.”

Rudy nodded, widening his eyes as he still looked around in fear. At that moment, they were surrounded by darkness, but strangely enough, they could see each other clearly without any light.

After a while, Rudy said, “Are we in an illusion or the real world right now?”

The question startled Jackie as he frowned, activating his true energy. Nothing had changed, and even Jackie could not tell where they were.

Jackie shook his head, “I don’t know either”

Rudy asked again, “Is this the sixth level?”

Jackie shook his head again at that. Even though they might have been on the sixth level, he could not make that determination without more information.

Time slowly ticked away, and darkness shrouded both of them. As they started to feel lost, a figure suddenly appeared in front of them. It was a wise old man. The man had white robes on him and looked like a deity. His sudden appearance gave Jackie and Rudy a shock as they took a step backward.

The man slowly turned around, looking at both of them with an incredibly cold gaze. Jackie took a deep breath as he was suddenly on alert.

The man looked at Jackie for a while before saying with a cold tone, “Don’t enter the sixth level. Hold on to the key. Once you have the skills to challenge the sixth level, you may come again.”

Jackie was stunned by those words, and he was no longer on alert. From the voice, he could tell that the man was the one who was reciting the rules. If Jackie was not wrong, that old man should not be human, but a shred of will left behind from ancient times. It might even be a spirit vessel.

No matter what, it was still something left behind from ancient times to help activate the arrays. Jackie took a deep breath and said, “You think that I don’t have what it takes to enter the sixth level right now? I’ll definitely lose the test there?”

Jackie’s voice had a tone of arrogance to it as he asked. This whole time, he had never failed. Even though he did not know what the test for the sixth level was, he should be able to easily get through it with his current skills.

Chapter 2897
He did not think that the old man was definitely right. Even if the old man was something left behind from ancient times, it would not change Jackie’s thoughts.

The old man had a look of disdain on his face when he heard Jackie’s response, “Don’t think I don’t know what you’re thinking. You’re definitely a lot stronger than those ants outside, but you’re nothing in my eyes. I know you have an upper ultimate god rank technique, but so what? Your skills are nothing special if you compare yourself to ancient warriors.”

Jackie was stunned at those words. He had thought that the old man said that because the old man did not know anything about him, but the old man had actually seen through what level Jackie’s technique was in an instant.

Jackie was taken aback by that.

Thinking about it, it did make sense. The old man was something left behind from ancient times. No matter what the old man was, he could control Thousand Leaves Tower. Anything that happened within the tower would naturally not escape his gaze. As long as the old man observed Jackie’s skills, the old man would be able to make a judgment.

Jackie frowned and replied, “My skills are nothing compared to ancient warriors?”

Jackie was not willing to accept that fact at all. He had already perfected an upper ultimate god rank technique. Even in first grade worlds, he would amount to something,

let alone third grade worlds. However, the old man's tone made Jackie feel like he was nothing.

The old man seemed to not want to bother dwelling on the problem with Jackie.

The old man slowly turned away from Jackie, "During ancient times, there were countless amazing masters, but a calamity happened, and most of those masters were lost. I said so not because I wanted to insult you, but it's just that you really are quite ordinary compared to ancient warriors…"

Jackie took a deep breath, not countering with anything else. After all, he did not know what ancient times were like, nor did he know about how strong the warriors back then were.

Jackie calmed himself down, but Rudy looked like he had swallowed an egg whole. His mouth was gaping wide, and his eyes looked like they were going to pop out of their sockets. He could not believe what he had heard.

The old man actually said that Jackie was using an upper ultimate god rank technique and Jackie had silently agreed to it. It caused Rudy to doubt everything he knew.

Rudy had known that Jackie was strong, but he did not know that Jackie was strong enough to use an upper ultimate god rank technique. If Rudy told anyone that, they would probably think he was crazy. No one would believe what Rudy was saying.

It was an upper ultimate god rank technique, and Jackie actually managed to use it at the initial stage of the spring solidifying realm. It was too absurd… Even more absurd was the fact that the old man did not think that Jackie amounted to much despite that. He made the judgment that Jackie would not be able to pass the test of the sixth level. Little did Jackie know that Rudy's jaw was about to fall off from the surprise.

Only one thought was in Jackie's mind which was to know what kind of test awaited him. He wanted to know why the old man felt like him would not be able to pass. No matter what, Jackie had a lot of confidence in himself.

He took a step forward and said, "Could I trouble you to tell me what the test on the sixth level is? Even though I'm nothing to you, I still have some confidence in myself. If I can try it out, I would still want to…"

The old man raised a hand to stop Jackie before he could finish, looking at Jackie earnestly, "You definitely won't be able to pass. Once the golden key in your hands changes color, then you'll have the right to enter the sixth level, but that's just the right…"

It was a completely barren land. Jackie and Rudy had already spent a day and a night walking in that barren land. It was the second day since they left Thousand Leaves City.

When Jackie understood that he would not be able to pass the sixth level for the moment, he did not continue dwelling on it. Just like Jackie had thought before, the two of them were sent out of Thousand Leaves City immediately.

Chapter 2898
Jackie looked down at the entry token in his hand. The entry token could not help Jackie get into a seventh level city but was actually only a guide toward the next city. Without the entry token, there was no way he could find the seventh level city even with all the skills in the world.

Jackie slowly started to understand that the Whirling World itself was a massive array. No matter how strong one was, they were insignificant in the whole of the Whirling World. They would never be able to shake the laws of the Whirling World. Even if they had a map, they still needed to move according to the rules of the Whirling World, slowly advancing deeper inside.

The more time passed, the more curious Jackie got about the Whirling World. He wanted to see what lies at the end of the Whirling World.

What secrets were hidden there? What were the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley planning?

Those thoughts kept on circling Jackie's mind. From what he had gathered, the two forces definitely had an immense secret hidden.

Their plan might even involve the whole Hestia Continent. It was possible that every warrior who entered the Whirling World was just a chess piece for those forces. Jackie definitely did not want to be a chess piece. Even if he did not have the skills to be a chess player at that moment, he still did not want to be played around with by someone else. He wanted to slowly reveal the truth and walk his own path.

Rudy looked at the entry token in Jackie's hand and Jackie's resolved expression before asking, "What are you thinking about? Tell me where we're going. I asked you, but you refused to tell me. I'm getting frustrated now. Why aren't you telling me? I'll know eventually anyway."

Jackie looked at Rudy with a smile, "I'm not hiding anything from you. I just don't know anything yet myself. When the entry token fell into my hand, a lot of information fell into my mind like before. I found out the locations of all the seventh level cities in the Whirling World. I'm just trying to figure out what city I want to go to next."

Rudy frowned, saying, "What's there to figure out? Aren't all the cities there seventh level cities? Can't you just pick any random one? The difficulty should more or less be the same, so what's there to be conflicted over?"

Jackie let out a sigh as the token in his hand shook. He looked up into the distance, still seeing a vast expanse of nothingness. It was as if the barren lands had reached the end of the world.

He said in a calm tone, “It’s different, but there’s nothing else to think about now. We’ll be heading to Prosper City next. You’ll be able to show off your skills there. You won‘t be dependent on me.”

Rudy widened his eyes at Jackie’s words as he looked at Jackie with a confused expression, “What do you mean? I can show off my skills but I’d just be beaten up like trash. There’s nothing I can do…”

It was not that Rudy was putting himself down, it was just that Rudy’s mental state had suffered too much recently. Ever since they entered the Whirling World, he met so many masters. Even regular wandering warriors were able to beat him up easily.

Rudy had been living in self-doubt the whole time. Back then, he still had his arrogance and pride even if he lost to others, but that arrogance was slowly disappearing.

Jackie turned and looked at Rudy seriously, “Don’t look down on yourself like that. Everyone you’ve faced has been a warrior, but your true status is an alchemist. Prosper City is a city built for alchemists.”

Chapter 2899
Rudy stiffened at those words, suddenly getting excited and exclaimed, “A city for alchemists? Prosper City is a city for alchemists?!”

Jackie nodded as Jackie slowly raised his head, looking at the gray skies.

“The Whirling World is an incredibly special place. The other seventh level cities are more or less the same, but only Prosper City has an indication next to it. It’s written clearly that Prosper City was a city meant to test alchemists. All alchemists could head there.”

With Jackie’s confirmation, Rudy excitedly bounced around and cheered. He had an excited look on his face.

Jackie felt a little happy seeing how excited Rudy was. He had been wondering if he should head to Prosper City or somewhere else. In truth, Jackie had a lot of choices on hand. After all, he was not weak in any way. After thinking about it for a while, he decided on Prosper City.

Rudy was one of the reasons, but even more so was that he wanted to obtain the rewards from Prosper City. He might have done very well in Thousand Leaves City, but he had not gotten any rewards. Hence he wanted to get even more valuables from a seventh level city.

After thinking about it, he made Prosper City his mark. Prosper City had been built to test alchemists, so the contents would naturally target alchemists. The prizes awarded would definitely benefit alchemists as well. It might be some valuable and high grade materials. If it was useless to himself, he could sell them for spirit crystals. He could also use those materials to refine pills and sell the pills for even more spirit crystals.

For Jackie, the two most important things were to raise his skills and earn spirit crystals.

After Rudy danced around in excitement, he slowly started to calm down. However, he was still incredibly happy as he said, “Let’s hurry up and go! I can’t wait any longer. Do you know how stifled I’ve felt? Even though I’ve seen a lot moving forward with you, I wasn’t relying on myself in the end. It’ll be different in Prosper City. I can rely on myself for once!”

Jackie nodded as he patted Rudy on the shoulder, pointing forward and saying, “Prosper City is a distance away in this direction.”

Rudy nodded emotionally, and the two of them rapidly headed toward Prosper City.

“They really are a bit dumb. They should think about their orders before issuing them. How could Jackie possibly come to Prosper City? He’s so strong, that he would naturally choose other seventh level cities. Even though he has an alchemist’s robes on, no one knows if he deliberately wears them to trick others. He might’ve just bought that badge from somewhere.”

Chapter 2900
“When have you ever seen an alchemist that’s so strong? All alchemists throw themselves into the art, how could they have time to practice combat?!”

Gent Morales was an alchemist that was raised by the Unbreaking Pavilion. He had quite a lot of pride. The Unbreaking Pavilion was somewhere that cultivated warriors, so alchemists only took up a small percentage. When they were in the clan, they were respected because of their status as an alchemist. However, the chosen disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion would never bother showing respect to alchemists of their level. The chosen disciples felt like alchemists were just there to provide a service, and that alchemists were nothing that special.

That was why Gent did not really like warriors that much.

Mark Wright was the leader of all the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion for the trip to the Whirling World, and could naturally not let the emotions get the better of him like this.

Mark stared at Gent and said, “Since it’s an order from above, we have to obey. You don’t have to care if Jackie is coming here or anywhere else. We just have to listen to

the orders from the higher ups. As long as we see Jackie, we have to report his whereabouts. We can't let him have an easy time!"

Gent raised an eyebrow, "Who exactly did Jackie offend? Why are we even doing this? They're just issuing orders without explaining anything."

Mark frowned, feeling like Gent was crossing the line a bit. However, Gent really did have some skill, so Mark could not offend Gent too much.

Mark was forced to patiently say, "Only a few people know of the secret behind this."

Gent snorted as he looked at Mark, "I don't know if anyone else knows about it, but I know that you definitely do. I do know why even if you don't tell me. Many of our people died in Black Sun City, everyone's already saying that someone called Jackie did it. It has to be because of that, right? In my opinion, so what if all of them died? They just didn't have the skills, and were killed. We had so many people, but Jackie still escaped. Who's to blame but themselves for being trash?"

Mark angrily berated, "Shut up right now. This is not something you can talk about. No matter what, we just need to follow orders…"

After Mark said that, Gent's lips twitched unhappily, but he did not want to fight against Mark in front of so many people. That would be too mean. Even though Gent had always done whatever he wanted to, Gent still did not want to cross the line too much.

Mark glanced at Gent in disdain. If Gent had not been so skilled, Mark would not have chosen Gent to be a part of the team back then.

He did not want to bother sparing Gent another look as he turned and continued walking forward. There were twenty alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion who arrived at Prosper City. Those twenty alchemists were all excellent alchemists that the Unbreaking Pavilion had spent a lot of resources bringing up.

If not for that order, the twenty of them would have probably already entered the city. However, the order instructed them to stay out of the city for six days. It was already the third day, so some of them were a little frustrated.

Mark had already walked elsewhere because of how unhappy he was with Gent.

Some of the alchemists followed Mark as well. The alchemists of the Unbreaking Pavilion suddenly split into two factions. Those who remained were the ones who were unhappy about the order.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2901 - 2910

Chapter 2901
“I think there’s something else behind this,” whispered an alchemist from the Unbreaking Pavilion who seemed to be of no great rank

Gent raised an eyebrow before turning around. “Something else behind what?”

That person hurriedly replied, “The order to capture Jackieie alive. I don’t think it‘s because of what happened in Black Sun City.”

Right after he said that, Gent was taken aback for a moment. The others, too, started to discuss the matter.

“What could it be, then? You’re just speculating at this point. Don’t just say whatever you want to! Everyone knows about what happened in Black Sun City, but other than that, nothing else has been said.”

The average-looking man meaningfully persisted, “Of course, I’m not just saying it blindly. Just think about it, who was the one who issued this order?!”

Everyone fell silent at this. They exchanged looks among themselves, suddenly understanding.

A thought occurred to Gent at that moment. “It was Grayson…”

The man nodded, “It was Grayson. He usually would never bother with things like that, and he’s never issued any orders as well. He was never supposed to be in charge of Black Sun City anyway. With Grayson’s usual temper, he would never have bothered with anything like that. The people who died in Black Sun City would have been nothing of note to Grayson.”

The man’s words were echoed by the other alchemists who nodded vigorously.

Gent frowned, thinking about it for a while before nodding as well.

With how Grayson was, those things would never have prompted Grayson to act. He was never one to bother with things that were not related to him. Yet, this was an order from Grayson. It was clearly problematic just thinking about it.

Gent raised an eyebrow. “Is there something more to this incident? Could Jackieie have done something? I’m beginning to get excited at the thought of meeting Jackieie.”

The other alchemists nodded; they, too, wanted to see Jackieie.

At that moment, the average-looking man suddenly let out a low shout as he pointed in a direction. “Look over there! Isn’t that Jackieie?!”

The moment the man said that, all of the alchemists of the Unbreaking Pavilion looked toward where he was pointing at. True enough, they saw a familiar figure, followed by another one, and they slowly walked toward Prosper City’s plaza.

Gent’s lower jaw hung so low that an egg could fit his mouth. “It’s Jackieie!” he exclaimed.

Jackieie did not know at that moment that he had garnered massive attention. Rudy, meanwhile, had been quite happy the whole journey, and the two of them finally arrived at Prosper City’s Plaza after walking for three days and three nights.

Just like the cities before, they would need to pass the entry test if they wanted to enter Prosper City.

“I won’t drag you down this time,” assured Rudy. “If I can’t pass the entry test, then I’d be worthless for sure.”

Jackieie turned to look at Rudy as he pursed his lips. “You haven’t been a sixth-grade alchemist for that long, so don’t be overconfident. You still need time and experience.”

Chapter 2902
Rudy deflated as he looked at Jackieie. “I just feel like the entry test isn’t hard at all. We just need to complete thirty runes in the condensing plate to obtain the right to enter the city. Plus, we can bring a person along! What an easy test…”

Jackieie felt exasperated when he heard this. “You haven’t even seen what sort of pill runes you’ll need to complete. How do you know it’ll be easy?”

“It’s just an entry test!” refuted Rudy weakly. “How could they give out difficult problems? We just need to complete thirty pill runes, which I’m all up for. Don’t look down on me!”

Jackieie did not know what to say at that moment. He had never underestimated Rudy and was just speaking the truth. If Rudy continued to stand his ground on the matter, Jackieie had nothing else to say.

The two of them were talking to each other when Rudy looked up and saw the stone plate in front of them. They walked toward the stone plate and read the words on the plate.

[The price is set. Ten thousand spirit crystals per person.]

Stunned to have read this, Rudy turned and, with a frown on his face, said to Jackieie, “What’s this? An entry fee? Didn’t you say that we needed to pass the test to enter the city? Can we even pay to enter with spirit crystals?”

Jackieie walked over and looked at the stone plate before letting out a slight laugh. “Can you please use your head before you say anything next time? If ten thousand spirit crystals are enough to get in, then what’s the point of the test? Didn’t I tell you the rules before? There will be ninety pill runes on the condensing plate. You just need to complete thirty pill runes to be able to enter the city, and you can even bring one person in with you.”

“If you complete another thirty and finish with sixty, you can bring two other people inside. Completing an additional thirty pill runes for a total of sixty will allow you to bring two people inside. If you complete ninety pill runes, you can bring three people in. Prosper City isn’t somewhere only alchemists want to go, a lot of warriors want to get in, too. A place where a lot of alchemists go means there will be a lot of pills to be made. A lot of warriors who want refined pills will enter this place.”

Jackieie then pointed at the plaza where two plain groups were gathered. The first group wore alchemist robes and donned alchemist badges on their chests. The other group was dressed in various attires. They were all from different clans or even wandering warriors. They sat on the left side of the plaza, seemingly waiting to be chosen.

Just like Jackieie had said, it was not just alchemists that wanted to enter Prosper City. A lot of warriors wanted to enter the seventh level city built for alchemists as well. In the end, alchemists were meant to help warriors. Many of the warriors sat in front of the city, looking like merchants who were waiting for a deal. They wanted to enter Prosper City to buy a lot of pills, and they would sell the pills for a lot of profit once they exited. There were even some warriors that had been sent there by their clans.

Those disciples were probably all prepared to purchase a lot of pills, perhaps even ready for sweetened deals. It was the exact opposite of what had happened in Thousand Leaves City. The test in Prosper City was meant for alchemists, so regular warriors would not be able to enter, which meant that they could only rely on high-grade alchemists to bring them in. Thus, the stone plate stating there was an entry fee was placed upfront for these warriors.

Rudy thought for a long time before understanding the fact.

Chapter 2903
Rudy snorted as he turned to tell Jackieie. “These warriors are clever, I’ll give them that. Why did not one put up a plate like that in Thousand Leaves City? The moment it concerns their benefits, they put up the stone plate.”

Jackieie nodded. “In the end, the Hestia Continent is a place where strength matters the most. If the alchemists decide to retaliate, the warriors will probably attack them together. The alchemists aren’t that strong anyway. Since they have no way of fighting back, they were forced to lower their heads.”

Rudy frowned and said unhappily, “We alchemists are at such a disadvantage, but most alchemists come from larger forces. Are those forces not going to do anything about it?”

Jackieie did not even bother looking at Rudy. “Why don’t you put some thought into this? This is the Whirling World. Those who are truly strong can’t enter. The only ones who can help these alchemists are warriors that are currently being trained. However, most of those warriors have gone to other cities and won’t have the time to come to this place at all. That’s why the rules were established. Ten thousand spirit crystals are quite a large sum anyway, so they decided to accept it.”

Rudy refused to accept this. He felt that the alchemists were oppressed during what happened in Thousand Leaves City, and with the situation suddenly reversed, the warriors were still the ones to set the rules, much to his chagrin. However, he knew he had no say in this whatsoever.

Jackieie looked at the condensing plates where 30 condensing plates were present. Every plate had an alchemist going through the test in front of them. The condensing plates were different from the entry stone. The entry stone’s test only took a little while. It was just a punch in the end. However, it took a lot more time to go through the test for Prosper City.

Thankfully, the test was set to be less than 15 minutes, and anyone who took longer than that would be considered a failure. There were quite a few alchemists who entered the Whirling World. Even though a good amount of them had entered Prosper City already, even more of them were still outside.

The plaza was full of people. Coupled with the warriors who wanted to enter with the alchemists, it was bustling. When Rudy saw the situation, he lamented, “There are so many people here. I’d never seen so many people in one place before I entered the Whirling World, but I noticed it when we walked in. How many warriors entered the Whirling World?”

Jackieie let out a laugh, not answering Rudy. He walked toward the plaza in front of the city, not wanting to waste any time. It was just a seventh-level city, after all. After entering Prosper City, he would dedicate a certain amount of time to refining pills to make even more spirit crystals.

Rudy followed closely behind him, and the two of them entered the plaza together. However, just as Jackieie was about to enter, someone stopped him.

Mark stared right at Jackieie.

Jackieie frowned, able to tell at a glance that Mark did not have good intentions. However, even after thinking about it, he could not recognize him.

Mark let out a smile. “Jackieie, right? I’m an alchemist from the Unbreaking Pavilion, Mark Wright.”

Chapter 2904
A group of about 19 people came up behind Mark after he introduced himself, and they shot Jackieie a seemingly unfriendly gaze.

Jackieie frowned, immediately knowing that there would be trouble the moment he heard they were from the Unbreaking Pavilion.

Jackieie raised an eyebrow as he sneered, “Are you trying to cause me trouble? Feel free to try, but with just your group, you’ll just die on the spot if you try anything.”

Mark’s expression soured at those words. He had wanted to be cordial with Jackieie, yet Jackieie’s straightforwardness ruined that. Mark failed to even maintain his smile.

Mark snorted. “This is the entry plaza, and the laws of Prosper City protect it. If you try anything here, you’ll be struck by lightning before you can even do anything!”

Jackieie raised an eyebrow, knowing that was indeed the case. “We’ll fight outside, then,” said Jackieie. “All twenty of you can fight me at the same time.”

Jackieie was not worried despite their numbers. They might be from the Unbreaking Pavilion, but they were true and blue alchemists, and to him, they were mere ants.

They were just warriors that were at the early stage of the innate level, forcibly raised to the late stage by the laws of the world. Even if 20 of them worked together, Jackieie could easily overwhelm them all.

Mark grew angrier at Jackieie’s tone, so much so that he started to pant as he almost lost his composure.

“Stop trying to act like a hero,” scoffed Mark, his eyes narrowed. “Everyone knows how strong the disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion are. You won’t be able to beat twenty of us no matter how skilled you are!”

All Jackieie wanted was to hurry up and get rid of the problem, his words were not intended to solely humiliate anyone.

Hearing Mark’s words, Jackieie raised an eyebrow. “I’ll do it eventually. Don’t think that no one can stand up to you just because you’re a disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. Since you can’t stop me, move. If you want to continue spouting nonsense, just hurry back. Your words won’t affect me at all.”

Hearing Jackieie's words caught Mark off-guard. His hands trembled as he slowly turned pale. Jackieie had not bothered to hold back at all!

Mark narrowed his eyes. "Jackieie, this isn't a place where you can do whatever you want to. I know you're not weak, but this is Prosper City. I don't know where you got those robes you're wearing…"

Jackieie raised a hand to stop Mark before he could finish.

"Can you please shut up? These robes are mine. I got the sixth-grade alchemist badge myself. Are you the only one who can be an alchemist? You're not strong enough and chose the path of an alchemist. Does that mean that others aren't allowed to be good at both?"

Silence immediately blanketed the atmosphere as Mark's eyes widened, finding himself unable to reply. Mark's hands were clenched as they trembled. The other 19 alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion widened their eyes as well. They looked at Jackieie with gritted teeth but were tumble to say anything.

Rudy, meanwhile, could not stop himself from giggling.

Chapter 2905
Mark had to admit that Jackieie was talented with his words, able to choke anyone with his opinion.

They were already short on time, yet these men from the Unbreaking Pavilion had all the time to impede Jackieie's progress! He could not be bothered to even talk to them, so Jackieie held nothing back.

Gent blinked as his lips twitched. He had always been a prideful person and had always felt like he was very talented both in alchemy and his words. However, he could not help but admire Jackieie.

Jackieie had managed to completely stump that group just with his words. Gent then glanced at Mark, musing to himself how he might die out of anger toward Jackieie.

Right at that moment, someone walked over and said, "You're a bearer of misfortune. It's one thing that you've offended the Compass Pavilion, but you've even offended the Unbreaking Pavilion. You got surrounded the moment you entered. You've got some guts!"

Samuel Mckenzie laughed as he walked toward the gathering.

Mark took a few deep breaths before he composed himself. He barely managed to purse his lips at Samuel as he shook Samuel's hand. Even though the Compass Pavilion could not compare to the Unbreaking Pavilion, they were still an eighth-grade

clan. Any clans that were better than sixth grade would start to cultivate their own alchemists. The Compass Pavilion naturally had a lot of alchemists, too.

Samuel was the leader of the alchemists from the Compass Pavilion. When Jackieie had a conflict with the Compass Pavilion before, it was already passed around through sound arrays. Jackieie's appearance had been recorded as well.

Jackieie's conflict with the Compass Pavilion was already at the point where they were mortal enemies. Thus, when Samuel spotted Jackieie, he brought his men with him. They merely stood at the sidelines when Jackieie and Mark first had their exchange when eventually, they found out that Jackieie had a conflict with the Unbreaking Pavilion as well. The moment they saw that Mark was at a disadvantage, they immediately walked over to target Jackieie. Even though the Compass Pavilion's relationship with the Unbreaking Pavilion was not the best, even to the point where they had a few conflicts, they were both major forces and could not make enemies of each other.

The enemy of their enemy was their friend, and neither of them wanted Jackieie to smoothly go about his business.

Mark coldly looked at Jackieie. "You seemed proud of yourself when you were at the Thousand Leaves Tower. You thought that you could lord yourself over the Compass Pavilion just because you're a little skilled. You'll have to pay for that eventually. Your earlier arrogance will just bring you misfortune! If the city plaza didn't prohibit fights, I'll bring a group of people with me to beat you up right now. I'll make you regret living!"

Jackieie sighed, suddenly regretting the fact that he did not disguise himself before coming in. Troublemaking idiots would not have surrounded him at this moment had he did that. He was not afraid of being challenged, but just afraid of wasting time.

He lightly snorted as he turned to look at Samuel. "Stop talking like you're right. You were the ones who couldn't beat me in a fair duel and were trash for blaming others for beating you just because they're more skilled. Quit your nonsense!"

Samuel's lips twitched as his face scrunched in anger. He pointed at Jackieie's face. "You b*stard! I'll rip your mouth one day!"

Jackieie could not help but look at Samuel in disdain. "Can you just get lost? Stop trying to cause trouble for me. All you know how to do is to gang up on others. If you have the skills, come face me head-on. Are petty methods all you're capable of?"

Chapter 2906
Jackieie's words struck a sensitive nerve in Samuel. It was true that he did not have the skills to stand up to Jackieie. He was an alchemist and had naturally spent most of his time in alchemy, thus he could not stand a chance against warriors.

Jackieie was someone who had defeated Walter, who was a chosen disciple of the Compass Pavilion. Even a chosen disciple of the Compass Pavilion had not been able to beat Jackieie, let alone an alchemist like him. Even if all of the present disciples attacked Jackieie, they might still fail to defeat Jackieie.

Jackieie had said that he wanted to use numbers to his advantage, which was not wrong but Samuel refused to just accept defeat. Jackieie had pissed him off to a point of no return.

“B*stard! You’ll be hit by lightning one day! You’ll bow to the Compass Pavilion eventually. Once you exit Prosper City, you’ll die!”

Jackieie took a deep breath as he shot everyone a disdainful glare. He deliberately raised his voice as he replied, “I just said you’re using numbers against me. Do you admit that much? If you have the skills, then come fight me now. Otherwise, shut up and leave immediately. Stop wasting my time!”

Samuel went red in anger as he stared at Jackieie and shouted, “Just open your eyes and look around you! This is Prosper City, not any other seventh-level city. What‘s being tested here is alchemy! Do you really think you’re even better than us at that?”

Samuel’s words resonated with all of the other alchemists, and he was right, they were not in any other seventh-level city but the city specifically meant to test alchemists.

No matter how strong Jackieie was, he was just strong as a warrior. If he wanted to challenge them in alchemy, none of them would back down.

Mark sneered and continued, “Samuel is right. If you dare to, fight us in alchemy. Stop trying to use what you’re good at against us all the time. If it’s just skill, we’re naturally not at your level, but in alchemy? Heh. You have no right to be pompous toward us in this regard. Most of us here can complete sixty pill runes and perfectly pass the test, bringing three people into Prosper City. Can you do that?”

Mark then looked at Jackieie’s chest in disdain.

Jackieie had a sixth-grade alchemist badge on his chest while those gathered from the Compass Pavilion and the Unbreaking Pavilion were all mostly seventh-grade alchemists. Only a few of the lower-ranked ones were sixth-grade alchemists.

To Mark and Samuel, sixth-grade alchemists meant nothing. Even though Jackieie was an incredible warrior, he could not possibly contend against them in alchemy, and they strongly believed in this.

Jackieie let out a faint chuckle as he looked at them calmly. All of them had incredibly confident looks on their faces as though all too sure that they could beat him when it came to alchemy.

That confidence was a joke to Jackieie. With everything being said, Jackieie felt like he just could not escape some things, even if he wanted to. Initially, all he wanted was to scare away these pests with harsh words, but at this point, he knew that they would never relent. He would only be able to silence them with his skills.

Jackieie sighed as he monotonously replied, “Listen here, you guys are no match for me, whether it be alchemy or combat. The entry test is nothing to me.”

Chapter 2907
Mark and Samuel immediately cackled upon hearing Jackieie’s words. It was as though they were talking to a clown, one that had boastful words that meant nothing but overestimations.

Samuel laughed as he said, “Do you know what you’re even saying? Look at the badge on your chest before you speak. You’re just a sixth-grade alchemist, and you‘re already so arrogant! You should at least pick the right place to brag. It’s so easy for you to be exposed now. We’re just going to stand here and watch as you go to the condensing plates to go through the test. I want to see what kind of result you’ll get!”

Mark had a cold look on his face. “Didn’t you say that you would beat all of us? I can perfectly complete the test, can you? I can bring three people in easily! Can you?”

Jackieie merely raised an eyebrow at this and calmly nodded. This alone was enough of a response to Mark’s questions, relaying how the test was nothing worth worrying over.

He had gone through one entry test, and Jackieie had not been troubled at all. If he faced any difficulties doing the entry test, then he felt like he should not even enter the city. After all, there would be nothing to gain from entering.

“What a braggart! You’re so arrogant!”

“That‘s right. Who does he think he is to say that he can bring three others in? Does he think that the entry test would be that easy?!”

“Many sixth-grade alchemists got stuck here and barely managed to get themselves in. Anyone who manages to flawlessly pass the test would at least need to be a seventh-grade alchemist!”

“He’s way too arrogant. He doesn’t know what he’s saying at all! He doesn’t realize how funny his bragging is to us. Does he think we won’t expose him?”

The other alchemists lost their cool upon noticing Jackieie nodding, hurling jeers and insults. None of them believed him at all, instead thinking of him as a clown as they ridiculed him.

Through it all, Jackieie showed no reaction at all. In truth, he was more or less used to hearing things like this ever since he entered the Whirling World. Many did not acknowledge his skills, yet it did not bother him at all.

They were starting to cross the line with their words, but Jackieie merely replied calmly, “Remember the words you’re saying now, don’t regret them later. You’ll know who the clowns are in just a bit.”

After saying that, Jackieie did not bother sparing them another glance as he turned to look at Rudy, who was trembling in rage as he glared at all the alchemists. He firmly remembered Jackieie’s warnings and knew that he could not be reckless. At that moment, most of the things spoken were nonsense, and they had more people on their side. No one would believe anything Rudy said, anyway.

Since that was the case, they would just think he was speaking nonsense if he insisted. Hence, he decided against wasting his efforts.

When Jackieie looked over, he hurriedly turned away.

Chapter 2908
Jackieie reached out and patted Rudy on the shoulder, pointing at the condensing card. “Have a go at it. If you pass, we’ll be able to bring four people inside and get forty thousand spirit crystals. Even if you fail, you don’t have to feel bad. We’d have two less people to bring in.”

Rudy frowned as he looked around with concern. In truth, he had a lot he wanted to say. He was not too confident, but with them being surrounded, it was not the time for him to say anything. He was forced to swallow those words.

He nodded vigorously and sighed, walking right to the nearest condensing plate. That condensing plate had two people queuing up for it, so it would be Rudy’s turn in just half an hour.

Jackieie looked at Rudy and felt rather proud. The older version of Rudy would have fought back after hearing what the alchemists had to say, which, to Jackieie, was irrational behavior. Rudy being able to control his emotions meant that he was maturing.

Rudy and Jackieie’s actions seemed to amuse the group of alchemists a lot.

Jackieie’s resolute words that he would pass the test flawlessly caused the alchemists to wonder if something was wrong with Jackieie’s head as they laughed at him and mocked him.

Samuel let out a laugh as he sneered, “You‘re the most confident warrior I‘ve ever seen. Are you so sure you can pass the test perfectly? We didn’t say all of that just to scare you earlier. Without being at the level of a seventh-grade alchemist, you can‘t possibly

wing it! There are ninety pill runes, and you should already be thanking your ancestors if you managed to fill up thirty!”

They were no match against Jackieie in terms of combat, but they were confident in themselves when it came to alchemy-certain that they would put that brat, Jackieie in his place.

They would not have talked to Jackieie so confidently if they were in any other city. However, they were in Prosper City, the turf of alchemists. They would never think that they would lose to someone else!

Mark looked at the badge on Jackieie’s chest and said, “It’s impressive enough if you can get to the level of a sixth-grade alchemist. Don’t think that you’re just as skilled in alchemy just because you have a lot of talent as a warrior! Alchemy and combat are two very different paths. Alchemy tests one’s talents even further. Don’t think that your talents in combat will transfer to alchemy. I‘ll be the first to tell you that you don’t have that talent or ability!”

Mark’s grudge toward Jackieie ran deep due to the words that provoked him. This was his chance to get back at Jackieie. Naturally, he held nothing back.

Jackieie glanced at Mark

Mark looked very well-kept and was obviously the leader of the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion. To him, however, he was nothing special.

If Mark was in Phoenix Valley’s outer valley, he would only rank among the top five at most. However, Phoenix Valley‘s true strength was in the inner valley, and this guy would not even have the right to enter the inner valley. Jackieie would have not bothered with alchemists of the inner valley, let alone Mark.

Mark noticed how Jackieie blatantly ignored him after a mere cold glance, and he felt downright humiliated.

Chapter 2909
“You b*stard!” snarled Mark. “You still think that you can do as you please, but you’ll quickly realize otherwise!”

Jackieie merely sported a small smile, not caring about what Mark was saying at all.

Gent, on the other hand, merely pursed his lips helplessly as he looked at Mark, who was next to him. He wanted to tell Mark at that moment that there was no point saying anything then, it was better to wait for the results before silencing Jackieie with it.

Jackieie could not be bothered continuing to talk to them, so he closed his eyes and let them say what they wanted to.

Time slowly ticked away, and after half an hour, it was finally Rudy's turn to go through the test on the condensing plate. At that moment, Jackieie slowly opened his eyes. Rudy straightened his back as he silently tried to motivate himself.

The more he acted like that, the less confident he seemed. He had encountered too many masters recently, so Rudy's confidence was already shattered. Right before he got to the test, Rudy turned to look at Jackieie.

Jackieie merely nodded at Rudy silently. With that, Rudy took a deep breath before he entered the area of the test.

To preserve the fairness of the test, the candidate and the condensing plate would be shrouded by a gray barrier the moment the test started. Outsiders would not be able to see the contents of the test and would not be able to affect the results of the tested participant as well. They would only be able to see the final results after the barrier vanished.

The two who came before Rudy had both failed. One of them managed to get 28 pill runes, but the last two did not reach a 50-percent refinement rate, so they had lost the right to enter.

Another participant had completed 35 pill runes, but 10 of them were not at a 50-percent refinement rate. In the end, he only scored 25 and failed to enter.

The two participants thus left the condensing plate dejectedly, evidently in despair for their future. Only then did they realize how bad they were, not even able to get the right to enter the city.

Rudy felt the pressure heightening when he saw the two participants before him leaving empty-handed. With so many people focused on Rudy behind him as well, he felt like two boulders were crushing his shoulders. However, he could no longer back down. He could hear the wind in his ears as the gray barrier sealed him and the condensing plate within. Only he and the condensing plate in front of him were left in the world.

With a flash of golden light, 90 incomplete pill runes appeared on the condensing card. As long as he completed 30 of them, he would be able to enter the city without needing to rely on Jackieie. He silently motivated himself as his hands started to move constantly. Waves of dense pill aura were condensed into pill runes.

Jackieie frowned as he stared in the direction where Rudy was isolated by the barrier, feeling rather worried. Even if he could bring Rudy in if he failed, failure would be too heavy of a blow for him, and Jackieie did not want to see him in that depressed state. After all, the two of them had established a firm friendship along the way.

Chapter 2910
When Gent saw the concerned look on Jackieie's eyes, he let out a laugh and sneered,

“Let me guess, your friend is a pure alchemist? His aura is quite erratic, and it’s obvious he was forcibly pulled up to the late stage of the innate level by the laws. He’s not like you at all.’’

Jackieie raised an eyebrow as he glanced at Gent.

Gent was right, Rudy had been forcibly leveled up.

Gent let out a snort as he said, “He’ll fail very badly, and so will you. Even though I haven’t gone through the entry test, I’ve talked to a lot of alchemists that have. Most of the ninety pill runes that needed to be filled up are those that only seventh-grade alchemists can fill up. That’s Why you shouldn’t dream so loftily. Before you brag, you should look at the badge on your chest.”

Gent was astounded at how ignorant Jackieie seemed. That man was confident to the point of arrogance, saying things that all of them felt were a joke with such a calm expression.

Anyone who did not know who Jackieie was might have thought that he could achieve what he had claimed!

Jackieie raised an eyebrow, not even turning around. “Don’t judge others by your standards. I’ve already said that numerous times, and each time I’m proven right.”

Right after he said this, the gray barrier suddenly dispersed. A familiar figure appeared in front of everyone, and the condensing plate revealed the results in large golden words.

Rudy had completed a total of 36 pill runes, but nine of them were not at a 50-percent refinement. It meant that Rudy had only completed 27 pill runes in the end. He was only three pill runes away from passing. He looked like all the energy had been sucked out of him as he looked visibly miserable.

Jackieie frowned, half-expecting this outcome yet half-expecting it was not the case. In truth, he himself did not know if Rudy would be able to enter the city on his own. To him, Rudy was quite decent. However, the results were shown to everyone, and Rudy was just a little away from getting the right to enter the city.

Jackieie helplessly sighed as he felt sympathy in his heart. He could feel how hopeless Rudy felt at that moment. They had encountered too many things lately, and Rudy’s confidence had received heavy blows. It had been Rudy’s chance to prove himself, but he did not expect the result to be like that

Jackieie ignored the mockery from the side as he walked over to Rudy.

He reached out and pulled Rudy over from the condensing plate, patting him on the shoulder as he earnestly spoke, “You’ve just become a sixth-grade alchemist not too long ago, you know? You‘ve been constantly improving. As long as you have some time, you’ll be able to enter by yourself, no doubt.”

Rudy could not even look up as he wallowed in misery.

“You don’t have to console me, Jackieie,” rasped Rudy. “I know I’m just trash. I couldn’t see it when I was in Golden Pills, but ever since I left Golden Pills, I realize how large the world is. I‘m not. even at the level of the worst alchemists. Why should I even bother living?”

Jackieie frowned, not expecting Rudy to be so depressed that he was starting to question his reason to live.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2911 - 2915

Chapter 2911
He hurriedly said, “No one you’ve faced so far is trash. The real trash is all still in its own small little places, not here. You’re already different from them. You’re on another level. All you need now is time. Trust me…”

Before he could finish speaking, more mockery could be heard. The person who spoke was Samuel. After Rudy’s results were out, he could not stop himself from laughing out loud.

The results deepened the negative perception of Rudy and Jack.

Rudy‘s results had been far too bad. It was not even comparable to the weakest among them. He had been completely unable to gain entry into the city himself. They had Rudy pinned as an alchemist that was from an insignificant place. They did not know how Jack was so confident. His follower was already so bad, but he actually said that he would pass perfectly.

Samuel maintained his smile and said, “Tell me, Jack. Who gave you all your confidence? How can you possibly think that you’ll pass perfectly? I think it would already be quite decent if you could get the same results as your follower. I’m even beginning to suspect that you’re not an alchemist at all. You might not even be able to complete ten pill runes.”

Gent did not even bother hiding anything, “You should be from an insignificant place. You should be proud if you can complete twenty seven pill runes.”

Initially, all of them thought that Jack came from somewhere amazing thanks to Jack‘s amazing strength. However, they could not find any chosen disciples called Jack after investigating the matter. In the end, the conclusion they arrived at was that Jack was not from anywhere notable. That was why they were not afraid to make a move on Jack and capture Jack alive to look into what secrets he held.

After they saw that Rudy only managed to complete twenty-seven pill runes, it reinforced their guess. The two of them must have been from some corner of the middle kingdom and did not really know much.

Jack was probably so strong just because he had been incredibly lucky, and managed to gain the inheritance of some hero.

There were certain amazing heroes that failed to find anyone to inherit their skills, so they would find a secluded place before they died and leave behind their most valuable treasures and techniques. They would hope that someone would find it and inherit their techniques. Jack must have found some hero’s inheritance. That was why he was so strong. That was also the reason the higher-ups wanted to capture Jack alive. After

capturing Jack, they would torture and interrogate Jack to see if they could gain anything from him.

Jack grabbed Rudy‘s shoulders and raised his voice, “Don’t be sad. There’s nothing to be sad about. As long as you have enough time, you’ll trample over all those who laughed at you.”

After that, Jack turned around, ignoring everyone as he walked to the end of the line, queuing up to take the test. There were some things that were pointless to be said.

Seeing Jack said nothing and going to queue up, the alchemists looked at him with an even more amused gaze. Coincidentally, there were also two people in front of Jack.

The two of them had already seen that the large group had a grudge against Jack. Even if the two of them did not know the details, they knew that the ones against Jack were the Compass Pavilion and the Unbreaking Pavilion.

They were two eighth-grade clans. When the two of them saw that Jack was going over to queue up, they started to whisper amongst themselves, discussing where Jack was from and if he could pass the test perfectly.

Chapter 2912
The whole thing had been heard by Jack. He merely thought that it was annoying, and decided to close his eyes and rest, not wanting to bother with what anyone else had to say.

As time passed, half an hour was up. It was finally Jack’s turn to take the test. Of the two in front, one had succeeded and one had failed. From the percentage, it seemed like half of the participants would fail.

The alchemists who are able to enter Prosper City were all at least sixth-grade alchemists and above. Only those who were in the upper echelon of sixth-grade alchemists could enter Prosper City.

When Jack stepped in front of the condensing plate, the gray barrier immediately wrapped Jack within. On the condensing plate, sixty incomplete runes appeared. Jack looked at the runes. There was a small portion that even middle-tier sixth-grade alchemists could complete, but most of them needed someone who was a seventh-grade alchemist or higher to complete. He even saw an ancient pill rune among them.

Pill runes that came from ancient times were both rare and hard to condense. To alchemists, it was quite a big test. Only alchemists with strong foundations would be able to complete ninety of those pill runes. Otherwise, even if they were seventh-grade alchemists, they would not be able to do anything when faced with an ancient pill rune.

Jack took a few deep breaths as he pushed all those unnecessary thoughts out of his head. His hands started to move constantly as he seriously started to complete pill runes. It started to get incredibly hot within the barrier, while it was strangely quiet outside.

Rudy was completely depressed at that moment and did not want to say a single word. Even if there were people mocking him, he did not want to say anything back at all.

They lost interest in continuing when they saw that Rudy had no retorts at all. The place started to fall into a strange silence and everyone looked at the gray barrier, waiting for Jack to come out.

After some time, Gent lowered his voice and whispered to Mark, “What do we do now? The only order we got was that we couldn‘t let Jack go. However, we’re no match for Jack at all. Prosper City prohibits us from fighting in the first place. We had a conflict with Jack earlier, but what do we do now…”

In truth, Gent was already a little lost at that moment. The orders from above were very clear. They were not allowed to let Jack go. They had also caused trouble with Jack, so what could they do after?

They were just a group of alchemists, so they were no match for Jack at all. Other than keeping an eye on Jack and causing Jack more trouble, there was nothing else they could do.

Mark frowned and thought about it for a long time before saying seriously, “We’ll just quietly wait for any changes. Let’s report the matter first and wait for orders. What we need to do now is make sure that we follow Jack tightly. No matter where he goes, we have to follow him. Especially if he enters the city. We definitely can‘t let him slip away. There are so many people in the city, we might really lose track of him if he wants to slip away. If we can’t find him, we’ll definitely be blamed.”

Gent nodded as his lips twitched helplessly, “Jack really is hard to deal with. If he really wants to slip away from us, we might really not be able to do anything about it…”

Mark let out a deep sigh, not saying anything. He did not actually have any better plans as well.

Gent looked at the gray barrier before letting out a cold laugh.

Chapter 2913
“However, I think that he shouldn‘t have such an easy time getting into the city. He might not even pass the test…”

Mark nodded, feeling like Gent could be right. However, right at that moment, the barrier suddenly disappeared. All the alchemists around them looked up at the condensing plate in front of Jack simultaneously.

The condensing plate displayed Jack's results, "Perfectly completed ninety pill runes, obtaining four entry tokens."

The golden words blinked five or six times before disappearing. Right after that, four rays of light shot out of the condensing card, falling into Jack's palm. When the lights dispersed, four entry tokens appeared in front of everyone. Jack raised an eyebrow as he kept his entry token into a mustard seed. He already had some clue about who he wanted to bring inside.

None of the alchemists were able to say anything when they saw that scene. They started to suspect if they were imagining things. Otherwise, how could they see something so absurd?

Gent suddenly slapped his chest. He was suddenly slapped in the face after saying that Jack would not even be able to enter Prosper City.

Not only had Jack managed to enter Prosper City, but he had also even managed to win three extra entry tokens to bring three other people in!

"Mark, pinch me now. I want to see if I'm dreaming! That guy actually managed to pass the test perfectly…" Gent was even starting to tremble as he spoke.

He actually did not want to believe that what was happening in front of him was real. It was too absurd. The guy clearly had the badge of a sixth-grade alchemist and was clearly on the path of a warrior.

How could he have such excellent results as an alchemist if he spent so much time on training?

Samuel took a deep breath and said, "Anyone who can pass the test perfectly is at least a seventh-grade alchemist. Could this guy already be at the level of a seventh-grade alchemist? Why would he have the badge of a sixth-grade alchemist if he was a seventh-grade alchemist? Is it because he wants to trick others?"

"Who knows what that cunning brat thinks? However, why is God so unfair? This guy is clearly a warrior and probably spent a lot of time on that. Yet, he managed to become a seventh-grade alchemist before he hit sixty years of age. Isn't that just absurd?"

Mark felt like he was about to go crazy. When he saw what Jack had done, his breath almost stopped. It was not just absurd, it had dealt him a heavy blow as well. His lips twitched slightly as his eyes widened.

Jack turned around to look at the dumbfounded alchemist again. He smiled and said, “I’ve already told you. Don’t be so quick to say who the clown is…”

No one dared to say anything back at those words anymore. They merely shut their mouths wisely. Results could prove everything, and it was impossible for alchemists to cheat. Even if they wanted to think up any excuses, they could not. They were forced to shut their eyes and say nothing.

Rudy finally found a bit of confidence back from that. Even though the confidence came from Jack, he was at least in a better mood.

Chapter 2914
He turned his head and looked down at the group, “I told you not to look down on others. Jack said to you that he could beat you in every way, and he definitely can. All of you only know how to use your mouth to insult others, saying we’re from somewhere insignificant. If we were, then what do you amount to? You can’t even compare to us…”

Rudy’s words were incredibly sharp. It angered the alchemists so much that they started to pant.

Mark was in a bad mental state at that moment, but he immediately retorted, “What do you mean we can’t compare? The brat might have some skill, but we aren’t weak either. I can complete the test perfectly as well. At least a third of my fellow students behind me can pass the test perfectly as well!”

As he said that, Mark found some confidence back.

This time, it was Jack’s turn to look at the group with a mocking smile, “A third? Aren’t you too overconfident in your fellow students? There are twenty in total including you. You should be counting your lucky stars if even two manage to pass perfectly!”

That was basically Jack shooting back at them for all their earlier insults.

There were a total of twenty alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion and a total of fifteen from the Compass Pavilion. Jack’s words had been targeted at the alchemists of the Unbreaking Pavilion, and Mark’s face reddened in anger again.

He looked at Jack furiously, feeling like he and his fellow students were all being underestimated by Jack. The test did not seem hard to him at all. As the leader of the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion, he could not accept being doubted like that.

Mark narrowed his eyes as his tone went cold, “I know you’re a decent alchemist, but don’t think that others are not at your level just because you’re good!”

Jack raised an eyebrow, not wanting to bother responding.

Mark felt like his honor had been challenged. Jack said that only two would be able to pass the test perfectly out of twenty of them. That in itself was an insult. However, it was just a simple entry test. All of them were alchemists that had been carefully raised by their clans. They had used up a lot of resources. He could not guarantee that twenty of them would be able to pass the test perfectly, but there had to be at least ten.

Mark said, “Don’t think that you can brag anyway you want and look down on others just because you have some skill. If you have what it takes, then wait right here and look at all of us taking the test. We’ll use our skills to prove that you are completely wrong!”

Jack’s lips curled up as he let out a smile of disdain. Mark’s words were probably not just to gain back some of his honor, but probably included other intentions as well. However, Jack could not be bothered exploring it. Since Mark wanted to prove himself so much, then Jack would play along till the end.

Jack smiled and said, “Alright, I’ll wait here and look at all of you take the test then. If more than two of you pass the test perfectly, then I will have underestimated you.”

All of the alchemists there were stunned at those words. They could not believe that Jack was actually so serious. The earlier conversation was definitely filled with emotion. Yet, they did not expect that Jack would actually have agreed. If more than two of the Unbreaking Pavilion’s alchemists passed perfectly, then Jack would have to admit that it was his problem.

Chapter 2915
He deliberately brought up a topic, “This group won’t let us escape their sights easily. If we leave their sights, they’ll definitely go crazy…”

After Rudy heard that, he was immediately pulled out of his pain. After all, that problem was even more pressing. He sighed as he said with concern, “What does that group want?! They’ve been trying to cause us trouble from the start. Could they really be planning on attacking us? However, Prosper City’s laws state that we can’ t fight privately. If they really pull any moves, they’d just die!”

Jack nodded. Various thoughts flashed in both of their eyes. In truth, he was still not sure at all, thanks to the lack of information. He had no way of telling what that group wanted as well.

If they really planned on anything, they should not hide before they had full confidence in their plan. The group was quite kind to alert Jack the moment he arrived in the city. The more Jack thought about it, the more he felt like something was off. It felt like they really were just there to cause trouble.

Rudy shook his head in frustration, feeling like his head was being surrounded by disgusting flies, “Why don’t we just go in right now. After all, they’re all queuing up. I

can‘t stand the thought of them constantly following us. I’ll definitely be feeling constant goosebumps!”

Jack nodded. It definitely felt bad being constantly observed, especially with Jack’s personality. He definitely did not want to go through something like that, but the circumstances were special.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2916 - 2920 -

Chapter 2916
After thinking about it for a long time, he frowned and said earnestly, “We have to just tolerate it for now. Since they want to follow us, let’s just let them. I really want to know what their true goal is, and if it has to do with Grayson or not!”

Before, Jackie had said that they knew far too little about Grayson. Even though Jackie had gone through a lot with Grayson and Rudy before, Grayson seemed like a completely different person other than his looks.

On top of that, Grayson had disappeared the moment they entered Phoenix Valley. Those higher ups also seemed incredibly strange every time they brought up Grayson. No matter how they thought about it, they felt like there had to be a massive secret hidden behind everything.

If the matter did not involve him, Jackie might not have been so anxious to figure everything out. However, as time passed, he slowly found that there was no longer any way he could avoid the matter.

Grayson already noticed him and had instigated the warriors and alchemists of the Unbreaking Pavilion to cause him trouble. If things were already at that stage, he would naturally have to figure things out.

Rudy looked at Jackie seriously, not wanting to add to Jackie’s troubles. However, looking at Jackie’s expression, it was obvious that Jackie had no way of solving those frustrations at that moment.

Rudy thought about it before saying, “Even if you seal my lips, I would also write it out. There are far too many questions in my head, such as why Grayson is in the Unbreaking Pavilion, and why he doesn’t recognize us. Why would he suddenly try to do something to us? Could it be because of what I did back then?”

Jackie sighed as he looked towards the others for a while before he whispered, “I’m thinking about these questions as well. However, there’s something we can be sure of even if we can’ t investigate anything at the moment. There’s only one reason Grayson would suddenly attack us. That’s because you suddenly pulled his arm and asked those questions. We basically alerted him from that moment on…”

Chapter 2917
After Jackie finished saying that, Rudy’s lips twitched. He knew that what happened that day was complete because he could not keep his mouth shut back then. He felt incredibly bad about that. Back when Jackie lectured him, Rudy was not exactly pleased about it. Yet, now it looked like he definitely deserved that scolding. If he had not pulled Grayson so impulsively, all of this would not have happened.

Jackie knew that Rudy was guilty about what happened, so Jackie shook his head and said earnestly, “It’s already too late to regret things. You just need to remember to think before you do anything in the future. Don’t act on your emotions alone. All we can do now is respond to things as they come. It’s like you said before, Prosper City prohibits fighting. They won’t be able to attack us there, nor would they have the guts to. I want to wait and see if they slip up and reveal what they’re planning to us…”

Various questions were on Jackie’s mind at that moment. He suddenly felt like he did not know what he needed to do next, and could only follow his intuition. Since they wanted to follow him so closely, he would let them.

Earlier, Mark’s words sounded like he really wanted to prove things to Jackie, but there was actually another reason behind them.

He wanted to provoke Jackie and have Jackie stay behind. After all, they had not gone through their tests yet.

Jackie could enter Prosper City at any time, but they still needed to take their tests and waste a great deal of time. If Jackie disappeared the moment he entered the city, then they might be left in an unfortunate spot. Time slowly ticked away, and Jackie felt like he was about to go to sleep waiting for them.

Rudy was incredibly tired as well, but Jackie had not given up on looking at the results of the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion. He remembered every result. After Mark participated in the test himself, Mark’s mood sank incredibly low.

The results of the test were just like Jackie had said. Only Gent and Mark had managed to get a perfect ninety. The others got eighty-seven at best. Most of them managed to get over eighty pill runes, while the others were just somewhat lacking.

Jackie smiled coldly, “The results were just as I explained. It looks like you know too little of yourself and those other alchemists behind you. I already told you, it’s not that I’m looking down on all of you. It’s just that you’re really not good enough!”

As Jackie said that, the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion were so infuriated that they wanted to rush up and choke Jackie. However, they could only dream of that. They were forced to seethe in anger quietly, not able to say anything back. That was because Jackie was absolutely right. He had even been able to guess the exact number.

Jackie laughed as he said coldly, “In the future, you shouldn’t set your sights too high no matter what you do. That’s because you’ll just end up falling tragically.”

Jackie’s words might not have sounded that harsh, but they felt like violent slaps on the faces of the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion.

Mark’s whole body was already trembling from the anger.

Chapter 2918
He had obviously been infuriated.

Jackie merely let out a light snort and retrieved his entry token from Mustard Seed and turned to look at Rudy, “The show’s already over. There’s no reason for us to stay in the plaza. Go pick out two people and get twenty thousand spirit crystals from them. Let’s hurry up and enter the outer city.”

Rudy nodded and immediately ran over to pick out two warriors who wanted to enter Prosper City. There were many to choose from. The warriors that were resting outside the city numbered at least over ten thousand. From there, it was incredibly easy to pick out two that were suitable.

After fifteen minutes, Jackie held the twenty thousand spirit crystals he had earned and entered the outer city of Prosper City with Rudy and two other warriors. Prosper City was split into the outer city and the inner city. When he got the entry token for the outer city, all of Prosper City’s rules went into his mind. Rather than the inner and outer cities, it was more like a massive marketplace.

The moment they entered the city, they saw many stalls of various sizes set up right in front of them. There were many people walking along those stalls.

Everyone was browsing and looking for something they liked. There were various things on sale. It was not just pills or materials, there were even technique manuals or some broken down ancient weapons.

The moment Rudy entered the city, he could not help but exclaim, “Oh my, this place is massive.”

The place was at least ten times larger than the plaza outside of the city. There were a lot of alchemists and warriors gathered there. Of course, the warriors were naturally all there for business. The inner city was where the alchemists would go through their actual tests. Regular warriors would not enter the place easily. Rudy stood on his tip toes as he looked around.

All he saw was people. Many warriors and stall owners were shouting out their prices intensely. Most of the warriors there were not that strong. They only went there to try out their luck and earn some spirit crystals. After all, the Whirling World lacked a lot of resources compared to the outside world. High-grade alchemists were incredibly rare in the Whirling World, and pills were necessities for warriors. If they bought a lot of pills from this place, they would definitely be able to earn a lot of money by selling them in other seventh-level cities.

Jackie had perfectly passed the entrance test, and obtained entry tokens for three other people. Since Rudy had not passed, they wasted one of the entry tokens.

There were only two warriors who entered with Jackie. After they entered with Jackie and Rudy, they exchanged a few pleasantries before going their own ways, not saying anything else.

After all, it was just a one time deal. Only Rudy and Jackie were left. After entering the outer city, the two of them were in no hurry to look around for things they wanted to buy at the stalls. Instead, they looked for somewhere secluded and stopped for a rest. It was mainly because Rudy had a lot he wanted to say. Enemies had surrounded them at the plaza in front of the city, so he could not have said anything without fear of being overhead.

It was only the two of them at that moment, so Rudy no longer had those reservations. He sighed and said seriously, “They followed so tightly behind when we entered. Those flies won’t let us go just like that.”

Jackie nodded, “Since I agreed to look at all of them take their tests, I naturally have no intentions of giving them the slip. They think that I’m an idiot to argue with them, and probably think that I’m too prideful…”

Chapter 2919
Rudy let out a laugh when he heard that, “They don’t know anything about you at all. There’s no way you would waste your time on something so petty.”

As the two of them talked, they saw Mark, Gent and the others entering the city. The group’s eyes were wide as they entered, hurriedly looking for Jackie among the crowd. They had thought that Jackie would jump into the crowd the moment Jackie entered the city, so they were all looking forward. Yet, Jackie and Rudy had not walked further inside at all, and had instead headed to the more secluded city walls.

Rudy looked on as the group struggled to find them.

All of them started to panic, and he laughed as he pointed at them, “They’re all in such a panic. What do you think they’ll do if they still can’t find us after a while?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, “Who cares what they‘ll do? We won’t deliberately hide ourselves. If we want to find out what’s happening behind all this, we’ll have to make them slip up. The more they do, the more obvious their goals will be, but it’s quite funny seeing them panic like that as well. Let’s just wait here for a moment. We’ll make our appearance after they fumble about for a bit more.”

Rudy was very amused as he looked on next to the city walls with Jackie. They watched as the Unbreaking Pavilion and Compass Pavilion’s alchemists were frantically trying to find them. Taking the opportunity, Jackie gave Rudy an introduction to the rules of the outer city.

Rudy started to get annoyed hearing the numerous rules there were, “Isn’t this just a large marketplace? Why are there so many rules?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and looked into the distance. The outer city was far too large. Jackie was unable to even estimate how many warriors were gathered there.

“Even though the outer city is a massive marketplace when compared to the inner city, Prosper City is still a city built for alchemists. Anyone who enters Prosper City would need to go through tests that are targeted at alchemists. Just look at the various stalls set up around the place. Those stalls are only obtainable after going through certain tests. Otherwise, you wouldn’t even have the chance to peddle your wares.”

Rudy’s lips twitched when he heard that even setting up a stall needed tests. Rudy sighed, feeling like he did not belong anywhere.

He said helplessly, “Even setting up a stall needs a test. It’s so hard to relax around here.”

After saying that, Rudy could not help but look around at the various stalls. After some observations, he could see the difference between the stalls. The stalls were all of various sizes. Some stalls were only five square feet large, and various things were placed all around, looking incredibly packed. Some stalls were a bit bigger, possibly at around ten square feet. They could even see a few stalls that had tables and chairs around, but not many people could enter those stalls.

Jackie pointed at the stalls and introduced to Rudy, “There are three levels to the stalls, high, middle and low. The low-tier stalls are the smallest, and are only around five square feet in area.”

Chapter 2920
“The highest amount they can deal with has also been set at a hundred thousand spirit crystals. The middle-tier stalls are about ten square feet, and the limit of any transactions is set at two hundred thousand spirit crystals. The highest level stalls are those sects with their own tables and chairs towards the top. Anyone able to open up a stall there are definitely people with incredible backgrounds. There’s also a limit to the deals that can be done in the high-tier stalls, but it’s not an upper limit. Instead, there’s a lower limit. Any transactions done there can’t be lower than four hundred thousand spirit crystals.”

Rudy’s mouth was wide open after hearing the explanations.

The rules were not too complicated, and anyone with half a brain could understand it. However, the meaning behind all that was different.

Rudy took a deep breath as his mouth twitched slightly, “The high-tier stalls are all at least four hundred thousand spirit crystals! Isn’t this sum just far too big? Maybe it’s nothing much to high-grade alchemists, but it’s definitely not the case for people like us.

Any warriors or alchemists who can enter the Whirling World are all younger than sixty. With those conditions, there can’t be any alchemists who are particularly amazing! Since they won’t be that high grade, the deals practically will never reach that number. We’re talking about four hundred thousand spirit crystals!”

As he said that, Rudy excitedly raised four fingers with his hands, waving it in front of Jackie, “Four hundred thousand spirit crystals. I’d have to save up so long for that! If I manage to get that amount in ten years, it would already be an amazing achievement!”

The more Rudy thought about it, the more horrified he was.

Every transaction that was done in the high-tier stalls were all done in amounts that he would not be able to get even after ten years of saving up.

The moment he thought about that number, he felt like there was a huge gulf between him and those people.

Jackie looked up at the sect that stood at the highest point by itself. Most of the sects were empty, but some of them had been taken up as well. Those people all wore incredibly expensive clothes and sat idly on the stone benches.

Compared to the low and middle tier stalls, there were at least less than half the number of people browsing the high-tier stalls. After all, there was a lower limit to the spending there. However, those people were in no hurry at all. After all, as long as they managed to seal just one deal, they would be able to get at least four hundred thousand spirit crystals.

Just one deal would have them set for years.

Rudy frowned, “Why don’t we set up a stall…”

As he was saying that, he suddenly felt like he was being an idiot again. Jackie and himself did not have anything amazing to sell. There was nothing they could do even if they got a high-tier stall.

Jackie immediately knew what Rudy was thinking when he saw Rudy’s expression.

Jackie let out a laugh and said, “We might not have much use for any stalls, but we can help people get stalls and ask for a fee…”

When Jackie said that, Rudy started to get a little confused. He frowned as he looked at Jackie with wide and curious eyes.

Jackie did not bother stalling and continued, “Do you think that everyone with a stall is an alchemist? Look closely at what they’re wearing. Most of them are warriors who’re here to make money or warriors from larger clans who’re here to buy pills. There are very few stalls that are actually manned by alchemists.”

Jackie’s words caused Rudy to have a moment of realization.

He suddenly looked around. The stalls were all very neatly arranged, and there was a stone road in the middle for customers to walk through.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2921 - 2930

Chapter 2921
The outermost section consisted of low-tier stalls.

The middle section consisted of middle-tier stalls. There were nine levels among the middle-tier stalls, and after those nine levels were the higher-tier stalls. All the sects were built at the highest points.

It was a deliberate way to show off how special the high-tier stalls were. Those who had stalls up there were mostly not alchemists, just like Jackie had said. Instead, most of the people shopping around there were alchemists.

The ones sitting down on the high-tier stalls were not alchemists, which confused Rudy even more.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he decided to explain it to Rudy, “Everyone who enters the outer city will have an outer city entry token in their hands. With that entry token, we can head to the testing area to officially take part in the tests. Only by passing the test can one use their results to get a stall. There is not a rule against taking the test for someone else this time, so many warriors used this method to get high-grade alchemists to help them get stalls. That way, the warriors got the stalls, and the alchemists got some spending money.”

Rudy suddenly understood everything after that explanation. He could not help but say excitedly, “If that’s the case, won’t we be able to get a sum of money? The stalls of different levels definitely need different amounts of money. How many spirit crystals would we be able to get from low-tier stalls?”

Jackie shook his head, “That, I do not know. I just happened to see that most of the people manning the stalls were warriors. Then I thought about the rules of the outer city and guessed that they must have gotten those stalls using that method. We’ll need to go looking around to be sure.”

The testing area of the outer city was right at the center of the outer city. The test over there was in the same style as the entrance test. There were also a row of condensing plates there. The condensing plates would give different problems for the test participants to solve.

The outer city’s condensing plates did not just have the participants fill up runes, but also ask the participants to condense pill runes needed for pills of certain levels. It was much harder than the entrance test. A lot of alchemists faltered here, not even managing to get a low-tier stall.

When he heard about the rules of the outer city, Rudy was quite excited. He had already given up on himself at that point, feeling like there was nothing he could do with his meager abilities. However, he was following Jackie.

Someone as talented as Jackie would definitely be able to make some waves in the outer city. He could stay by Jackie's side, gaining some experience as well as riding on Jackie's coattails.

He looked up at Jackie and said, "What do we do next?"

Jackie took a deep breath. He had wanted to go to the outer city's testing area to check out the prices of stalls. However, he shook his head after thinking about it. The testing area might already have been taken over by those annoying flies.

They would be noticed immediately if they went. Even though there were some things that he had to do, Jackie just felt incredibly annoyed when he thought of those people. Those people would find them eventually.

After thinking about it, Jackie said, "Let's go walk around first. Let's see if there's anything we need around those stalls."

Chapter 2922
Rudy hurriedly nodded his head. The outer city was just like a massive gathering place. There would naturally be tests to face, but he would be able to see a lot of things.

Jackie led the way as Rudy followed. The two of them looked around the low-tier and middle-tier stalls. There really were many things around that Rudy had never seen before, and they managed to see what most of the owners were selling.

In truth, most of the goods for sale were still focused on pills. Many stall owners had the pills they needed written clearly there. Those owners would provide the materials, needing alchemists to help them refine the pills. Some of the stall owners had found rare materials in the Whirling World. They wanted to obtain pills from alchemists by bartering.

After looking around, Rudy hurriedly followed Jackie and whispered, "The prices here are not just two times higher than in the outside world. Look at those spirit gathering pills. In the outside world, one pill should just be about three thousand spirit crystals, but they're going for six thousand and five hundred here! The prices are so different…"

Jackie nodded, "Things are more expensive when they're rare. Pills are consumables, and alchemists are rare in the Whirling World. Of course, I mean high-grade alchemists."

Saying that, Jackie paused as he thought about his next words before saying, "Did you notice that there are also some pills that are worth the same as the outside world?"

Rudy nodded. He had observed everything in great detail and noticed that lower quality pills were almost the same price as in the outside world.

Jackie continued, “Lagarior and middle-tier sixth-grade pills are not too useful in the Whirling World, so the prices are similar to the outside world. That’s because no one is lacking pills of that grade. The higher the grade of the pill is, the more drastic the increase in price.”

The two of them walked around the stalls as they chatted, not really finding anything they were interested in after a long time. Rudy had been quite interested, wanting Jackie to accept a few assignments to refine pills, but Jackie had shook his head and refused all of them.

Refining pills took a while. Even though Jackie had planned on dedicating some time to refining pills for money before they entered the city in exchange for spirit crystals, Jackie decided against that idea after knowing about Prosper City’s rules. There were even faster ways to make large amounts of spirit crystals, so why would he waste time on refining pills?

There were probably some alchemists who would take refining pills as a way to train themselves, but it was not that important to Jackie. After absorbing the memories of that ancient hero, he did not need to refine great amounts of pills to train himself.

After walking for a long time, Jackie did not see anything that he was interested in. Even though there were a lot of high grade combat manuals, those were not that valuable to Jackie. After all, there were a lot of techniques and skills in his mind, uncountable amounts of high-grade techniques. He would naturally not need to choose random techniques that were sold here.

After walking around, Jackie sighed, feeling like his standards were too high. Otherwise, he would not have been unable to find anything he was interested in at all.

Chapter 2923
Rudy frowned as he followed behind Jackie. He could still understand why Jackie refused refining pills at the start. Jackie had probably felt that the rewards for refining pills were not enough. However, after walking around and seeing all the prices on display, Jackie did not seem interested in anything.

Rudy felt a little helpless at that. He frowned as he walked in front of Jackie and whispered, “There are quite a few good deals here, why didn’t you accept the jobs? With your skills, you should be able to refine seventh-grade pills without any problems. They will provide you with the materials as well. You just need to spend some time refining it, so why don‘t you accept it?”

Jackie turned to look at Rudy as he said plainly, “It’s too much of a waste of time. I don’t want to waste time in the outer city. The test in the inner city is what’s important. Only by passing the tests in the inner city will I be able to get Prosper City’s rewards.”

Compared to those spirit crystals, the rewards of Prosper City were much more interesting to Jackie. He had constantly been keeping the time in mind as well. After all, they were only able to stay in the Whirling World for two years. He would have to leave after that.

If he spent too much time on seventh-level cities, he would have too little time after that. He might end up losing out on good things because he did not have enough time, which he definitely did not want to happen.

That was why Jackie decided against wasting time on refining pills after thinking about that. After all, refining pills was not the only way to obtain spirit crystals in the outer city.

After Rudy heard that, he was suddenly a little speechless. He found that he was understanding Jackie less and less.

Rudy was just about to retort when he saw Jackie’s eyes light up, seemingly seeing something interesting. Jackie quickly rushed towards the easternmost stall. The stall was a middle-tier one, and was ten squared feet in size, but there was not much displayed there.

There were a few stone pieces around, and a request for pills. Jackie looked at the owner of the stall. The person had white robes on, and looked very handsome. However, he looked a bit unfriendly. This person clearly felt that someone was approaching, but he did not even bother looking up as the person closed his eyes and rested.

Jackie did not mind the person’s attitude as he looked at the goods on display. Jackie did not look at the request for pills at all, and immediately looked at the few rock fragments.

Rudy saw that Jackie’s eyes were on the few stone fragments that were glowing with a faint red glow. He was incredibly curious about those stones, wondering if they were anything amazing. He had never seen them before, and the fact that the stall owner placed them on the floor meant that he did not know what the value of those shattered stones were. They did not know, but Jackie knew the stones very well.

The fragment was something incredibly useful to Jackie on the road to getting stronger. Those fragments would be rare even in first-grade worlds. Jackie took a deep breath as he called out the words Shattered Soul Crystals in his mind. Those fragments were treasures to soul-attribute warriors. The fragments contained pure soul energy.

After absorbing the stones, not only would it help a soul-attribute warriors understanding and use of soul-attribute techniques, it would also improve the strength of a warrior's soul.

In the West Cercie state, Jackie had gotten two shattered Soul Crystals. If not for the two crystals, Jackie would not have managed to avoid the difficult situation back then, and would not have gotten to Middle Province.

Chapter 2924
That white-robed man casually put those incredibly valuable Shattered Soul Crystals on the floor. It was obvious that they did not know the value of the Shattered Soul Crystals at all. Even so, he could still feel the energy flowing within. He knew that they were valuable, which is why he had them on display.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he suppressed the excitement in his heart. No matter what, he had to get those Shattered Soul Crystals. But, he could not be reckless, because that would cause the white-robed man to realize how much Jackie wanted those crystals. Then he would increase the price, which Jackie would have to suffer in silence.

Thinking about it, Jackie picked up the pill request by the side. Almost every stall owner would have the pills he wanted written down on the stall. After that, they would specify the rewards. If the alchemists feel like the rewards were enough, they would take up the business.

The white-robed man opened his eyes, measuring Jackie. His gaze stopped at the sixth-rank alchemist badge on Jackie's chest. The badge was too eye catching.

When the white-robed man saw it, there was a glint of disappointment in his eyes, suddenly losing all interest.

The white-robed man frowned, saying in a cold tone, "If you can't do it, just put it down. I don't need any sixth-grade pills."

Jackie raised an eyebrow before sighing. He had not really cared about the badge on his chest initially. After all, he had actual skill. He knew better about his own skill than anyone else, but after arriving at the Whirling World, Jackie started to regret not getting the seventh-grade alchemist badge back then. He would not have needed to waste so much time in the Whirling World otherwise.

If not for the Shattered Soul Crystal, he might not have bothered explaining. However, he was forced to calm himself for the crystals. He smiled and said, "I can refine the Soul Nurturing Pills!"

Each stall owner would write down all the pills they needed on pieces of paper. Jackie was holding the request for Soul Nurturing Pills.

The white-robed man needed ten Soul Nurturing Pills. He would provide the materials as well as a reward of five thousand spirit crystals per pill. The price was not that high, but not low either. The ten pills would get Jackie fifty thousand spirit crystals.

The white-robed man looked at the sixth-grade alchemist badge on Jackie' s chest in disdain at those words.

"I hate wasting time on others. You should look at the badge on your chest before you say anything. The Soul Nurturing Pill is a middle-tier seventh-grade pill. I need to provide the alchemist with seventh-grade snake grass, pink grass, phoenix claw herbs and seventh-grade follower, the silver silk flower. Just those materials alone are worth a lot. Do you think I'll take the risk and offer this business to a sixth-grade alchemist?"

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly. At that moment, he wanted to rip the badge on his chest off. That badge constantly caused him problems. Ever since he had the badge, he was constantly looked down on. The badge was not indicative of his actual skill, so how could Jackie be happy with getting looked down on like that?

However, he could not just leave at that moment. After all, the Shattered Soul Crystals were there, and he had to have them.

Chapter 2925
Jackie had already mastered Destroying the Void. He had not planned on raising his skills yet, and had planned on focusing on obtaining valuable things. However, his experience in the Seven Leaves Tower had told Jackie that it was a bad idea.

Destroying the Void was an upper ultimate god rank technique. At Jackie's age, being able to use such a technique and even perfecting it already put him far above anyone else. In his eyes, he was practically unbeatable in the whirling World. Yet, after he got the key from the Thousand Leaves Tower, the old man told Jackie that Jackie's skills were not able to pass the test of the sixth-floor at all.

Jackie could not obtain the real treasure. It caused Jackie to be doubtful and filled with introspection at the same time. He could not stop improving himself, so Jackie had already been determined to never stop moving forward while he was on the way to Prosper City.

He needed to choose a new technique to master. This time, he definitely had to choose a technique that was better than an upper ultimate god rank technique, which left storm god rank techniques. Furthermore, Jackie planned on choosing a soul-attribute storm god rank technique. After all, mastering Destroying the Void had helped Jackie have an even deeper mastery and familiarity with the soul attribute. It was greatly beneficial to Jackie to choose another soul attribute technique. No matter how he looked at it, he could not let the Shattered Soul Crystals slip away.

The thought played in Jackie' s minds a few times before he completely composed himself. Even if he could not really stand the sight of that white-robed man, he was forced to patiently and warmly say, "Even though I have the badge of a sixth-grade alchemist, just think about it. If a sixth-grade alchemist doesn't have some skill, how could I have passed the entry test? I even passed with a perfect score. Seventh-grade pills are nothing for me."

After saying that, Jackie looked at the Shattered Soul Crystal, acting like he did not care, "Do you know what these stones are? They look quite nice and shiny."

After saying that, Jackie took up a crystal and looked at it under the sun. In truth, Jackie did not even need to look at it in detail to know that those spirit crystals were quite pure. However, he still had to put on a show. He could not let the white-robed man realize that anything was off. The moment the white-robed man had any doubt, it was possible that he would not be able to get the Shattered Soul Crystals. Jackie pretended to be interested.

"How about this? I'll only take forty thousand spirit crystals from you for ten Soul Nurturing Pills, and you give me these pretty crystals too?"

After saying that, he looked up and waved at Rudy, "Don't you think these crystals look good? Didn't my wife say that she wanted some pretty stones as decorations? I think this would be good."

Rudy immediately caught on. He did not know who Jackie's wife was, but he immediately answered, "I think they're not bad. She'll definitely be very happy with those crystals."

The two of them talked, and the main topic was still the crystals. The white-robed man frowned. Since he had dared to display those crystals, it meant that he had constantly tried to appraise them before.

Chapter 2926
The conclusion was that he did not know what they were at all but could still feel that a lot of energy was flowing within those stones. However, he had studied a few times yet failed to discover what kind of warrior could absorb those stones. He could not determine the price nor did he know if he would ever be able to sell it, which was why he placed it on the stall. He never expected that it would attract the attention of the two guys in front of him.

Jackie turned and looked at the white-robed man again. "Is it a deal?"

The white-robed man raised an eyebrow, acting like he did not care as he picked up a Shattered Soul Crystal and looked at it closely. Even after seconds had passed, he failed to see anything.

He took a deep breath and nodded after thinking about it. In truth, he never thought that he would be able to sell those stones. After all, he was not dealing with idiots. At the same time, he never thought someone would be interested in them the first day he set up his stall.

He feared that he would lose the deal or that he would be making a huge mistake, but he did not hesitate too much. He was still too afraid that Jackie would end up losing interest in the end, which would end up costing him 10000 spirit crystals.

To the white-robed man, it was a good deal.

He sighed and said, “You said that you can refine middle seventh-grade pills, but I honestly can’t believe that. After all, you have a sixth-grade alchemist badge. Can you tell me why you still have a sixth-grade alchemist badge, even though you have the skills of a seventh- grade alchemist? Normally, any alchemist with some skill will hurry and take the test the moment they’re good enough. Why didn’t you do that?”

Jackie looked up and said earnestly, “I just didn’t have the time to. I had a lot going on recently, and I went to an incredibly important place for a competition. I wasted a lot of time, which ended up in me not having the time to be tested. However, I’ve successfully refined a seventh- grade pill during the competition.”

The white-robed man frowned, still not believing him.

“You can say anything you want to, but I’m not so easy to fool. If you have the skills of a seventh-grade alchemist, how can you prove it? I won’t believe it if you’re just relying on your words.”

Rudy’s face soured at the white-robed man’s harsh words. He felt like the man was just looking for trouble, but he no longer acted on impulse after Jackie’s repeated lessons, so he forced himself to reel himself in.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not feeling like those words were too excessive. “We can sign a contract,” he calmly offered.

“Even if we don’t sign a contract, Prosper City itself has its laws. If I don’t complete our deal in the amount of time necessary, we‘ll be judged by the laws and be struck by lightning.”

The white-robed man frowned, not able to answer the question at that moment. After a while, the white-robed man finally made his decision. “You’re right. You’ll be turned to ash if you fail the deal, anyway. No one would be able to save you.”

Jackie sighed in relief upon noticing that the white-robed man was finally convinced. This man had been more stubborn and interrogative than he had expected. He had not seen anything of value after looking at them so many times, but the white-robed man

immediately felt like something was wrong the moment he saw that Jackie wanted them. Try as he might, the man just could not figure out why.

Jackie nodded and kept the request for the pills in Mustard Seed. The white-robed man did not continue talking as he retrieved 15 boxes from his storage ring. Each box emitted a faint cold aura.

Chapter 2927
The white-robed man pointed at the boxes and said, “There are fifteen portions. Make sure to use them wisely, and remember that you can only make five mistakes. If you make any, I won‘t provide more. You should just buy them yourself.”

Jackie nodded, 15 sets of materials already proved that the white-robed man was rather generous. A few shrewd merchants would only provide three extra sets, which meant that only three mistakes were allowed. Already figuring out how much time he would take to refine those Soul Nourishing Pills.

Just as he put the boxes into Mustard Seed, he suddenly heard an unfriendly voice, “Hold it! I’ll be taking up this deal. Put down the boxes in your hands! I’ll refine the Soul Nourishing Pills!”

Jackie could tell who it was without even turning around.

Mark was sweating bullets, followed by a group of alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion. All of them looked at Jackie like they were looking at prey.

Mark let out a laugh as a look of disdain flashed in his eyes. He walked forward and said to Jackie, “Did you think that you managed to escape? I can assure you that it’s not possible. You can’t do it! Even if you run to the ends of the world, you can’t run from us!”

Jackie frowned, not bothering to respond as he put the 15 boxes into Mustard Seed.

Last time, he had been a step late in signing the contract and had his deal ruined. This time, he would not allow something like that to happen.

Mark noticed how Jackie blatantly ignored him and put the boxes right into Mustard Seed, much to his chagrin. He turned to look at the white-robed man. “What are you doing? Didn’t I tell you to hold them? Why didn’t you stop him? Don’t you see that he has a sixth-grade alchemist badge? Let me tell you, this brat is a scammer! He plans on leaving Prosper City right after he gets your materials, and the laws won’t be able to do anything to him by then!”

The white-robed man started to panic after hearing that. If what Mark said was true, he would suffer a huge loss!

The white-robed man immediately looked at Jackie and demanded, “Is that true, you brat? Are you planning on running off with my materials?!”

Jackie looked at Mark speechlessly, not understanding how that man’s brain managed to fabricate such a lie so quickly. It definitely made Jackie look at Mark differently.

He laughed as he looked at Mark coldly. “I really have to reevaluate you. Your talent at lying is amazing! Do you think the laws are so trivial? Do you really think I can run just because I want to? I never planned on running in the first place. I wanted to find a peaceful place to refine the pills, but if you’re pestering me so badly, I can just do it here!”

Jackie had done nothing wrong, so he was not afraid of being questioned at all.

Did they not say he would run away with the materials?

He would complete everything right here, then. There was no way he could run with so many people looking at him!

Chapter 2928
Hearing Jackie’s words, the white-robed man slowly started to relax. If Jackie wanted to refine pills in front of him, he could keep an eye out for any irregularities.

Mark narrowed his eyes and snorted, “Earlier, the stall owner had been resting and didn’t see your initial expression. My fellow student did. He was observing you for a moment after he found you before he turned to let me know. Before the stall owner opened his eyes, you had zeroed in on the stones!”

Mark immediately knelt and put the stones in his palm, looking at them closely. At the same time, he looked up at Jackie in a challenging manner.

Jackie’s lips twitched as he cursed himself for being too careless. The stall owner had been napping and ignoring everything else that was happening, so Jackie had not bothered to hide his thoughts.

He had been fully focused on the Shattered Soul Stones, but he never thought that someone had been observing him even though the stall owner had not seen him.

Rudy cursed internally. Mark had ordered people to keep a close eye on Jackie.

The secondary orders had been to constantly cause Jackie trouble and not let him have a moment of peace. As long as Jackie suffered, a portion of his task was done. With those orders, he had to disrupt everything Jackie wanted to do.

Jackie took a deep breath as he felt his anger slowly spilling over at that moment. He could not control his anger from surging to his head. He was already tempted to rip Mark apart.

For the sake of the Shattered Soul Crystals, however, he swallowed his anger. Negotiating with the white-robed man had gotten him to lower his guard. He never expected that everything would be ruined by a few words from Mark.

Mark placed the Shattered Soul Stone in his hand onto the white-robed man's palm.

"You better take a good look at it. It's something amazing. Otherwise, this guy wouldn't have been staring at them the whole time. The deal with the Soul Nourishing Pills was done to trick you."

Mark's words were all true, but Jackie could not admit it at that moment. If he did, he would not be able to get the Shattered Soul Stones. Everything he had done before would be ruined.

At that moment, Jackie was already looking at Mark in a completely different way. He had never been like that. He had gotten the urge to kill someone plenty of times before, but Jackie had never taken it too seriously.

This time, he was already dead-set on killing Mark.

It was not exclusive to only Mark but to all the alchemists around him as well, including Grayson. He did not care what reason Grayson had, but the moment Grayson got this group to cause trouble, Grayson was immediately on Jackie's hit list.

Rudy's face reddened as he tried his best to soothe the anger in his heart

Jackie forced out a laugh. "I know I've had some past conflicts with you, but you can't just do this to me just because of that. You said that I was staring at those stones. In that case, can you tell me what they are? What's so special about them?"

Mark snorted as he took out his trump card. "Since it's nothing special to you, why don't I buy it with twenty thousand spirit crystals? The deal you made with this brat earlier was to accept forty thousand spirit crystals instead of fifty. The other ten thousand is the price of those stones. I'm offering twice the price for them!"

Saying that, Mark stared at Jackie and smiled pleasantly.

Jackie had humiliated him at the plaza before, but At this moment, he finally got his revenge.

Chapter 2929
Jackie took a deep breath as his hands started to tremble. He knew that talking no longer counted in this matter.

Rudy could finally not hold back anymore. He looked at the white-robed man. “You’ve already agreed to the deal, and you can’t go back on your promise. If you do, you’ll be punished by the laws of Prosper City! Lightning will strike you!”

The white-robed man frowned, but Mark interrupted it with a laugh. “The laws of Prosper City are very clear. The laws go in line with the requests on the pill request. Things that aren’t on it don’t count. Earlier, you just had a verbal agreement. The pill request slip never stated that you’d exchange ten thousand spirit crystals for those stones. Since that’s the case, you wouldn’t be going against the rules, and you won’t be struck by lightning!”

As he said that, Mark had a pleased smile on his face.

Gritting his teeth, Rudy wanted nothing more than to punch that pleased smile out of Mark’s face and beat him up. He had controlled his temper the best he could.

Suddenly, Jackie took a deep breath and understood something. He turned to look at the white-robed man earnestly. “You’ve already agreed to this. Even though you didn’t write it in the request slip, a promise is still a promise. If you go back on your word, you’ll be offending me!”

The white-robed man raised an eyebrow, not caring about Jackie’s threat. He laughed and said, “You might have a bit of a background, but since I have a stall here, it means that I have mine, too. Don’t think that you can threaten me with just a few words. I might have agreed earlier, but it’s not like I can agree to a higher price. It’s like what this man said earlier; we just had a verbal agreement. It wasn’t on the request, so it won’t be against the rules.”

The white-robed man had wanted to even get rid of the whole agreement. In the end, Jackie had already put the pill request into Mustard Seed.

If Jackie did not refine the Soul Nourishing Pills, he would be judged for violating the contract by Prosper City and Jackie would be punished.

At that moment, Jackie could not let things progress as they were. His earlier experiences were still in his mind. At that moment, he was determined not to let the same thing happen. However, he never expected it would be so quick.

Jackie thus smirked, not willing to take a step back.

“Listen here. If you offend me, you’re offending a future ninth-grade alchemist. If you don’t believe me, you can follow me somewhere. Once you see it, you’ll believe everything I’ve said!”

Everyone was stunned when he said that.

What was Jackie saying? Jackie was marketing himself as a future ninth-grade alchemist!

Was he insane?

Did he not know what it meant in the Hestia Continent?

The number of ninth-grade alchemists in the continent could be counted with just one hand. Out of millions of alchemists, it was already impressive for them to even produce five ninth-grade alchemists.

Chapter 2930
Jackie actually claimed that he would become a ninth-grade alchemist in the future. He had lost his mind!

The white-robed man did not even bother to hide his laughter when he heard Jackie’s bold proclamation. “You should at least think about your words before you try to brag, you brat. A ninth-grade alchemist isn’t something you can become just because you said so!”

Jackie let out a cold laugh, having foreseen this happening. Their cackles did not affect Jackie at all as he pointed at the center of the outer city.

“If you don’t believe me, just follow me there. If you have the finances, you can make another deal with me!”

Jackie’s words confused some of them. Even Mark raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie warily.

Jackie took a deep breath and said, his tone as cold as ice, “I’m giving you one last chance. If you take it back, I won’t let you back out without suffering the consequences. No matter what kind of background you have, there’ll only be one ending!”

The white-robed man frowned as he sneered, “I’m not one you can scare so easily. I won’t just believe anything you said!”

However, there was a trace of guilt in the white-robed man’s eyes as he said that. After all, Jackie had been eerily calm the whole time. On top of that, he was not sure where Jackie was from. If Jackie was from somewhere impressive that he could not afford to offend, he would be done for!

With that thought in mind, he raised his voice and said, “Since you want me to see your skills so much and prove yourself, I’ll go with you. I want to see what you can do.”

Jackie suddenly relaxed at those words. He turned to look at Mark, who was frowning as he stared at Jackie. He opened his mouth, wanting to say something, but he visibly decided against it. He wanted to see what Jackie would do as well.

Jackie snorted as he walked to the center of the outer city, and the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion and the white-robed man followed him. No one said anything as they internally began thinking of what Jackie would do.

When Jackie brought them in front of the condensing plate, everyone was stunned.

The white-robed man frowned and said, “You want to take the outer city test and get a stall?”

Jackie nodded. There was a stone plate next to the condensing plate. The stone plate had a lot of words on them.

Jackie frowned and walked over, seeing what he wanted to see. It was just like Jackie had thought. Since there were some holes in the rules, many alchemists would help warriors get stalls. They had even specially set up prices. All the prices were on the condensing plate. That meant that no one could just set the prices as they pleased.

A lower-tier stall was worth 100000 spirit crystals, while a middle-tier stall was worth 150000 spirit crystals. Meanwhile, a high-tier stall was 500000 spirit crystals!

Seeing the drastic difference in price, Rudy whispered, “A middle-tier stall is just a hundred and fifty thousand spirit crystals. A high-tier stall surges all the way to five hundred thousand! Isn’t this difference a little too big? It’s several times more! These prices are a little absurd, if you ask me!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2931 - 2940 -

Chapter 2931

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he turned to look at Rudy, whispering, “You might think it’s absurd, but it’s completely reasonable since the rules have been written here. They have to be there for a reason, so you don’t have to question them.”

Rudy clamped his mouth shut. Even though he was displeased about it, he had nothing else to say.

When Jackie saw that high-tier stalls were worth 500000 spirit crystals, Jackie suddenly felt more spirited.

“What are you trying to do?” Mark frowned when Jackie ignored his question.

Instead, Jackie turned to the white-robed man, pointed at the stone plate, and said, “If I get you a high-tier stall, can you give me five hundred thousand spirit crystals?”

The moment he said that, the white-robed man’s lips twitched, feeling like Jackie was messed up in the head. Jackie had just said that he would become a ninth-grade alchemist, and at this very second, Jackie said that he would get a high-tier stall.

Did he think that anyone could get a high-tier stall? That was putting things too simply!

The white-robed man took a deep breath, stopping himself from cursing as he said, “Do you really think you can get a high-tier stall?”

Jackie nodded earnestly.

The white-robed man raised an eyebrow, stopping his inner thoughts. “Just look at those high-tier stalls, only four people have them at the moment. Do you know what that means?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and merely replied, “It means that people have gotten the high-tier stalls before.”

He knew that the white-robed man would say what he did not. The white-robed man felt quite speechless at Jackie’s words, feeling like Jackie was a complete clown that did not know what he was saying.

The white-robed man did not want to waste any more time on Jackie since he wanted to continue manning his stall, but he felt like Jackie was too much of a joke. If he did not explain things to Jackie properly, Jackie might refuse to give up.

They could not fight here and could only use their mouths. To save himself the trouble, the white-robed man was forced to quell his anger and continued to explain, “Listen here. Ever since Prosper City was opened, only two people have gotten high-tier stalls before. Each high-tier stall is worth five hundred thousand spirit crystals, and it’s in high demand.

“The two that managed to get the high-tier stalls were all incredibly talented alchemists, and five hundred spirit crystals is no small sum for any alchemist. If the difficulty didn’t change, the two alchemists would no doubt stay here and earn money by getting high-tier stalls for warriors.”

At that moment, the white-robed man deliberately paused for a moment, seemingly wanting Jackie to understand what he had just said. However, Jackie’s expression seemed to be completely still as no strong reaction escaped him.

This exasperated the man as he said, “Don’t you think it’s strange? It’s something so easily done, so why don’t they stay here and continue earning spirit crystals? Why did they choose to continue to the inner city?”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. He hated being led on like that.

“Oh, I’m very curious,” he replied. “Why don’t you just tell me?”

The more Jackie was like that, the more exasperated the white-robed man felt. However, he did not want to continue arguing with Jackie and thus continued on.

Chapter 2932
“That’s because as long as you help someone cheat the system once, the condensing plate will remember it. When you try it again, the condensing plate’s question will become more difficult. So, the two of them only managed to get two high-tier stalls each. After that, they couldn’t continue because it became too hard. In the end, they only managed to earn a million each.”

After that was said, Jackie frowned as various thoughts surfaced in his mind.

He was impressed by Prosper City’s various rules. It ensured that warriors could set up stalls and tested the alchemists as well. It even restricted alchemists from doing so and not stopping.

It was different from what he had thought earlier. Jackie had thought that being able to cheat the system like that was a huge flaw in Prosper City’s design. At this moment, it seemed like he was the flawed one. He was the one who failed to see that it was not a flaw but a design choice instead.

After thinking about it, he looked up at the blue sky. The people of Whirling World were indeed impressive.

Just as he was thinking about it, the white-robed man said impatiently, “Do you understand what I mean now?”

Jackie nodded. He understood that the white-robed man meant well in telling him this, not to brag.

Jackie did not intend to go back on his word, however. He took a deep breath and queued up at the condensing plate nearest to him.

When everyone saw the sight, they gaped, not knowing what to say.

As he watched Jackie lining up nonchalantly, Gent furrowed his eyebrows and said in exasperation, “Did he even hear what everyone has said?”

After saying that, the alchemist behind him spat, “That guy has said everything to him so clearly. In so long, only two people managed to get high-tier stalls. This brat is actually going to participate in the outer city test so confidently. Does he really think he can be the third alchemist in Prosper City to get a high-tier stall? How could he even think of attempting?”

It was the same sort of discussion.

Rudy was already frustrated at this point, listening to them.

Jackie had already used his skills to shock so many people before, but they seemed to have forgotten that as they ran their mouths at Jackie.

Jackie had already warned Rudy against quarreling without purpose, but Rudy could not hold himself back after hearing these insults.

He chuckled sardonically as he turned to look at the alchemists. “Are you people struggling with memory loss? You’ve said all of that before, but when you saw Jackie’s results, why did you stop? Didn’t you laugh at Jackie for not knowing his place before, and that he won’t be able to get a perfect score on his entry test? You even evaluated yourselves so highly, saying that half of your twenty will be able to pass perfectly. All that, and Jackie was right in the end, and only two of you managed that!”

Rudy was not lying at all, and the alchemists knew this, reddening at his words.

They shut their mouths immediately, unable to say anything about that.

Everything had happened exactly as Rudy had said. They had cackled at Jackie and were more than certain that he would not pass the test perfectly, yet Jackie demonstrated his skills so flawlessly that they felt like they had been smacked!

Chapter 2933
Right after these alchemists bragged about themselves, Jackie's prowess humiliated them entirely.

Even worse was that Jackie had been right. Out of 20 among them who took the test, only two passed. The others might have been just a little bit off or a lot, but not one of them had a perfect score.

Mark's prideful expression was wiped away in an instant.

Rudy's words blatantly put them in an awkward spot, just as he planned on harassing Jackie with his fellow disciples to expose Jackie to the white-robed man.

Not wanting Rudy to be satisfied with himself, Samuel snorted as he raised his voice, saying, "Jackie merely made a blind guess, that is all. The others don't know, but you do. The twenty alchemists who took part in the test were all stellar alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion, and they wouldn't lose to anyone. I saw that a few of them were just a sliver away from passing the test perfectly. Heh! Jackie was just lucky to be right."

Samuel raised his chin, sounding sure of himself when he spoke. Initially, the white-robed man felt rather wary after hearing what Rudy said and started to doubt the alchemists from the Unbreaking Pavilion. However, his suspicions were cast aside after hearing what Samuel said.

Alchemists that were raised by the Unbreaking Pavilion could not be underestimated, that was for certain. Even if Jackie had been right, he probably got lucky at the time.

Samuel had seen that quite a few of the Unbreaking Pavilion's disciples were short by one or two pill tunes to perfectly pass the test.

Mark turned to look at Samuel with a look of gratitude. The two of them seemed to share a laugh at that moment. He never expected that Samuel would step up and speak on their behalf. Samuel took the words right out of his mouth!

Of course, Samuel jumped into the verbal exchange for the sake of humiliating Jackie, but since he, in a way, did him a favor, he acted as though he intended to side with Mark as though he was generous. When he saw Mark's thankful look, Samuel nodded benevolently.

Anyone who did not understand the relationship between the Compass Pavilion and the Unbreaking Pavilion would have thought that the two of them were sworn brothers.

Looking at their faces, Rudy's cold smile deepened. He snorted as he said, "It's just as I thought. The two of you just have one thought in mind at the moment. You think that the enemy of your enemy is your friend, but you both are just animals to me-two dogs that can only bite people."

Those words were incredibly harsh. Gent immediately rushed forward furiously, but the student behind him pulled him back, stopping him from starting a fight. If he was the one who started the fight, he would be punished by Prosper City‘s laws, and by then, they could only watch as lightning struck him, leaving nothing but ashes behind!

Chapter 2934
Gent felt like he was losing himself due to the anger raging within him.

That jerk, Rudy called them dogs! No one could bear an insult like that.

Mark and Samuel both stepped forward at that moment, but as compared to Gent, the two of them seemed much calmer.

Mark said coldly, “Do you know what you’re doing? You’re declaring war against the Unbreaking Pavilion and the Compass Pavilion. Who do you think you are? Do you think that the combined might of two eighth-grade clans won’t be able to do anything to you?!”

The white-robed man was completely stunned as his eyes widened. The man speechlessly looked at Rudy, lamenting that he must have been insane. Otherwise, Rudy would not have dared to say something so disrespectful.

It was already at the point where things could never be mended.

Did Rudy plan on declaring war on two eighth-grade clans? Was he from such an incredible background that he did not care about two eighth-grade clans?

Unless Rudy was from a ninth-grade clan, even gods would not be able to save him!

Rudy merely maintained a calm face in front of their emotions. He let out a laugh as he said nonchalantly, “We’re already enemies anyway. Both of you have been working together to cause us trouble. Would you even back away and let us breathe? Since you’ll be constantly causing us trouble, why wouldn‘t I dare? Your two clans are like headless flies, constantly flying around and buzzing at our ears at this point. It’s so disgusting and annoying! If you really have the skills, defeat Jackie. Samuel, everything you said earlier was just utter crap!”

After saying that, Rudy deliberately paused for a moment before he said seriously, “Since you passed the test perfectly, you should know why the disciples behind you didn’t pass like you did. Forget about anything else, the Condensing Plate at the entry test will materialize one or two ancient pill runes. Those pill runes are what eliminated most of them! That was how Jackie determined that only two of you would be able to pass.”

Samuel’s expression darkened. Of course he knew about the ancient pill runes. After the test, he had even had a hushed discussion with Mark about it. Even though they did

not know why ancient pill runes would appear in a mere entry test, it did not stop them from knowing that it was why Jackie made that judgment.

What he said earlier had just been to break Jackie's momentum, yet Rudy had seen through it immediately. The two of them never expected that Jackie would tell Rudy all of that.

In truth, Jackie did not willingly divulge that information. Instead, Rudy persisted in wanting to know everything after they entered the outer city. After all, he had been too curious, so he explained everything.

Samuel felt even more embarrassed at that point. After all, he was the one who said everything so confidently at that moment. It was then did it reach Jackie's turn for the test. The first person had gotten a gray token, and the second one had as well. When the two of them saw the token in their hands, they looked visibly depressed as they walked away dejectedly.

After understanding the rules of the outer city, Jackie knew why they looked like that.

There were three prizes if an individual got good results in the outer city test. The rewards were stalls of various sizes.

Chapter 2935
The worst alchemists would be awarded a gray token meant for low-tier stalls. Even though low-tier stalls were still worth a sum of money, they were not worth as much as higher-tier ones. Those who did slightly better would be able to get bronze tokens meant for middle-tier stalls. Even higher up were golden tokens for high-tier stalls.

From the start, only two people had gotten golden tokens.

When Jackie stepped into the test area, the same thing from the entry test happened. A barrier separated him from the outside world, and no one could interfere or affect him at all.

Jackie looked up at the glowing condensing plate in front of him. All of the pill runes that were either complete or incomplete from before disappeared as new questions appeared.

All of the pill runes totaled up to 90, the same amount during the entry test. Jackie took a deep breath, earnestly looking at the pill runes he needed to complete.

What shocked Jackie was the fact that those pill runes had not just been seen by him before, but even left a deep impression in his mind. Of course, those impressions were not his, but the memories he inherited. It was because he knew everything that he was so surprised. That was because the pills runes were incredibly difficult. Even an eighth-grade alchemist might not be able to complete all of them.

With that in mind, Jackie took a deep breath, already committed at that moment. 500,000 spirit crystals were at stake. If he could not even get that, it would be much harder for him in the future. He was facing the challenge with all his might inside. Outside the barrier, things were much calmer.

Rudy raised his eyebrows as he distanced himself from the crowd. He did not want to bother wasting his time on them.

It was just like what Jackie had told him, wasting his time on people like Mark and his 'companions' were pointless. They would not listen to the truth and would insist on following their feelings. Still, Rudy could not stomach how pleased they were with themselves.

So many things had happened that wore out Rudy's patience. Even if he knew that there might be a major plot behind everything, he did not want to see people like these men so haughty.

Gent took a deep breath. Rudy's words had, admittingly, aggravated him. Even though he knew that whatever he said would not stand up to Jackie actually convincing everyone with his results, he did not want to see Rudy happy, even if for a moment.

He snorted and said, "I'll admit that Jackie might be a little skilled. He might even have the skills of a seventh-grade alchemist, but so what? There are many seventh-grade alchemists in Prosper City. Even if it was me, I wouldn't be able to get a golden token and get a high-tier stall. Only alchemists from the inner valley of Phoenix Valley or alchemists with extraordinary talents could do that!"

Chapter 2936
"Even if he's a little talented, there's no way he can get a golden token. You're only so confident because you don't know what a golden token actually represents!"

He said those words in an incredibly firm and convincing manner. Even the white-robed man who had been silent the whole time nodded along. After being in the outer city for some amount of time, he knew very well what a golden token represented.

Only those whose talents and skills stood at the peak could get a golden token. He had seen countless alchemists take the outer city test. All of them had been incredibly confident as they took the test. Most of them had only obtained gray or bronze tokens.

There had only been two people who ever managed to get the golden tokens. The white-robed man had heard about the two of them. It was just like Gent had said, they were no ordinary people. One of them came from Phoenix Valley's inner valley, while the other came from a ninth-grade clan. Those were incredibly talented people.

Who did Jackie think he was?

Pondering about that, the white-robed man shook his head, feeling like Rudy was being overconfident.

Samuel snorted as he shrugged and said to Gent, “There’s no point saying all of that, this guy won’t listen to a single thing. He has complete blind faith in Jackie. He feels that Jackie would definitely be able to get a golden token, becoming only the third person to do so.”

After saying that, Samuel let out a mocking laugh. The alchemists from the Compass Pavilion behind him all let out similar laughs as well.

They were all mocking Rudy for his ignorance. After they started laughing, the alchemists of the Unbreaking Pavilion started to laugh as well. Some of them did so in incredibly exaggerated manners.

Mark raised his eyebrows and did not hold back as he guffawed right at Rudy.

Rudy merely frowned, not really affected by their laughter. At that moment, he was incredibly calm. It was as if nothing around him could affect him at all. He suddenly understood why Jackie always had a cold look on.

No matter what happened outside, Jackie would not let it affect him. It was not that Jackie was cold, but because he was determined and had enough confidence. No matter how much others laughed at him, he still kept calm.

Suddenly, some rustlings could be heard from afar.

Everyone was familiar with the sound of those mechanisms. It was a sign that the barrier was giving out. Everyone turned to look, and Jackie‘s figure appeared in front of the alchemists again. At that moment, his back was incredibly straight, as if it was not that hard at all.

Rudy took a deep breath as he walked toward Jackie. A light slowly formed from the condensing plate. Everyone looked on as a golden token shot out of the condensing plate, landing in Jackie’s palm.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he opened his hand to look at the token. The golden token had the words ‘high-tier stall’ written on it. It was actually incredibly simple, but there was a sense of majesty toward it that was hard to beat.

The test earlier had been nothing to Jackie. As long as he had skills that were above a seventh-grade alchemist, he would have been able to finish the test perfectly.

Jackie let out a sigh of relief, having been affected by Gent’s earlier words.

Chapter 2937
However, Jackie had once again shown Rudy that all those worries were pointless with the skills he possessed. He smiled as he grabbed the golden token in Jackie's hand, turned around, and displayed it in front of everyone, "What do you think?! Do you have anything else to say now?!"

As he said that, he walked toward Gent who had been the one with the most to say earlier. He placed the golden token in his palm, looked right at Gent and said, "Didn't you say that Jackie could never manage to get a golden token? Then what's this in my hand? Is everyone hallucinating?"

Gent was about to spit out blood at those words. It had completely ripped apart his earlier arrogance. He had thought that, even if Jackie was talented, Jackie would only be around his level. Yet, he realized that he was greatly mistaken.

No wonder Jackie had always looked at them with that attitude previously. Jackie had never regarded them seriously.

Gent's lips twitched, not saying anything. In truth, compared to the others, Gent was already in quite a good state. Mark's eyes were so wide that they threatened to pop out of their sockets. His eyeballs were full of veins. He had a look of disbelief on his face as he stared at the golden token in Rudy's hand. He refused to believe that it was real.

How was Jackie so strong in both combat and alchemy? It was a tough pill to swallow.

Mark realized miserably that he had been completely trampled over by Jackie. He was not a match for Jackie at all. He reached out and tried to snatch that golden token away from Rudy, but Rudy frowned and took a step back.

Rudy raised his voice and said, "You're planning on breaking the rules? Mark, think it through. You know the consequences of breaking the rules!"

Mark only reacted after he was shouted at, realizing what he had done. After that, he pushed himself back with some fear. At that moment, he was about to go crazy as his breathing got erratic, "Are you an eighth-grade alchemist?"

After a moment, Samuel said, "Who are you? I refuse to believe you have no background. I refuse to believe that you got to where you are by yourself. I'm starting to suspect that you're not even from the Hestia Continent!"

Those words sounded incredibly sure.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything. At that moment, all of the alchemists there were going a little crazy. What had happened had exceeded anything they could have imagined.

How did Jackie reach that point? It was far too unbelievable.

If they had not witnessed it for themselves, they would definitely have thought that Samuel was exaggerating. Yet, after witnessing everything for themselves, they had to agree with what Samuel said.

Jackie was far too strong, so strong that they did not know what to say.

Chapter 2938
Looking at everyone's crazed expressions, Jackie knew that it would be taken as a silent acknowledgment if he remained silent. He did not think much about it, it was up to them what they wanted to think. However, he felt that he would end up becoming a lab rat to major forces if he remained quiet. If they wanted to dig out his secrets and did something to him, then it would be disastrous.

Jackie took a deep breath and looked at everyone there, "Please stop those idiotic thoughts in your heads. Don't just place random judgments on anyone you want. Don't use your limited brains to judge the whole Hestia Continent. There are many like me in the Hestia Continent, you just haven't met them before!"

Samuel frowned, pausing for a moment before shaking his head vigorously, "There's no way! There's no way someone like you can appear in Hestia Continent, who's so extraordinarily strong in both alchemy and combat. You're not like someone from the Hestia Continent at all!"

Jackie frowned, suddenly feeling like he would not be able to talk his way out of it. He furrowed his eyebrows as many thoughts flashed in his head. He could not let them continue on that train of thought. If he allowed it to continue, it would cause a lot of unnecessary problems.

This time, Rudy was even quicker than Jackie. He felt if Samuel continued speaking like that, the larger forces might all end up going against Jackie. He took a deep breath and raised his voice, "You're just saying all that to save your dignity!"

Samuel frowned as he tried to explain, but was stopped by Rudy, "Stop with your stupid thoughts. Don't you think what you're trying to say is hilarious? All of you were laughing so much earlier, saying that Jackie could not have done it at all. I just mocked you a little, and you immediately tried to find some incredible excuse to gain back your dignity."

After saying all of that, Rudy glared at Samuel as he pulled Jackie's arm, "We should stop wasting time on them."

Jackie nodded in agreement. He turned to look at the white-robed man.

At that moment, the white-robed man was completely different. He was already looking at Jackie with a look of complete respect. Ever since Prosper City was opened only three people had gotten a golden token. The outer city test was a test of skill and talent. The fact that Jackie managed this meant that his talents and skills were absolutely at a heroic level.

The white-robed man no longer bothered with those alchemists around him. His only thought in mind was to curry favor with Jackie.

He walked up to Jackie and said, “I’ll buy the golden token from you for six hundred thousand spirit crystals. Even though the regulated price is five hundred thousand, I can pay six hundred thousand. As for those stones, I don’t need your money. I’ll just give it to you. We‘ll perform our business as usual. I’ve said some harsh words earlier, I hope you can forgive me…”

At that moment, the white-robed man completely threw his dignity aside. His only thought was to get closer to Jackie. The white-robed man had quite a lot of spirit crystals since he came here for business thanks to his clan. He was not that skilled himself, so all he could do was seize opportunities as they came.

Chapter 2939
Otherwise, he would not have abandoned the other seventh-level cities to come here. Faced with an alchemist who would definitely achieve a lot in the future, he would naturally try his best to curry some favor. After all, those alchemists would definitely be of great help in the future.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Since that person was so understanding, it saved him a lot of time. He could not be bothered to dwell on what happened before. He nodded at the white-robed man and handed the golden token in his hand.

Everything after that went smoothly. Those alchemists that were trying to cause trouble earlier had all completely shrank back. They no longer dared to do anything to Jackie. However, Jackie knew that it was just a temporary silence. After all, their grudges were still there.

The inner city’s entrance was at the most internal spot of the outer city. At noon on the sixth day, Jackie brought Rudy to the inner city’s entrance. It was a massive circular passage.

The passage was obscured by a very colorful barrier. There were a lot of serious-looking alchemists standing outside of the passage. Most of them were frowning as if they had encountered an incredibly difficult problem.

Those people gathered around the entrance of the passage, seemingly talking about something.

When Jackie saw the scene, he could not help but frown as well.

Rudy whispered, “Could something be going on in the inner city? Why do they look so put off?”

Jackie sighed, not denying it. The two of them slowed down as they slowly walked toward the group. When they were closer, they could hear the conversations that were going on.

A black-robed alchemist frowned as he talked to a handsome man in front of him, “I think you shouldn’t be too rash. This situation is quite special. I can‘t believe other continents are involved. You know as well that the Hestia Continent was separated from the other continents after the major incident thirty thousand years ago. We’ve been sealed off all the while, but the other continents are different…”

Before he could finish, the man interrupted him, “Do you think I don‘t know what you’ve said?! We still need to take part in the end. If there’s no one from the Hestia Continent at all, we’d become a laughing stock!”

The black-robed man shook his head helplessly, saying sadly, “In the end, Hestia Continent still loses to them…”

The handsome man was incredibly unhappy, and it was clearly written on his face. He said vehemently, “I don’t think we lost at all! It’s just that Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion are just completely shameless and despicable. They actually hid something so important from us. Otherwise, we wouldn’t be caught off guard. There are still a lot of excellent alchemists who are not at Prosper City!”

The black-robed man did not agree with what the handsome guy said. He took a deep breath and said, “I know you don’t want to lose to anyone, but there are some things that we can’t do by ourselves. The news has already spread, and all the alchemists that can get here are already here. Anyone who has the slightest bit of skill has all come over for more potential rewards. There should be some who are still not here, but it‘s just a small portion.”

Chapter 2940
The handsome man wanted to say something in response, but could not find anything to say after a long time.

The news really had been broadcasted a while ago. All the alchemists that came from major clans had all already rushed over. Anyone who could help had already done the best they could. After all, it was an incredibly important event. Those who were in the top three would get incredible amounts of resources.

The black-robed man frowned as he patted the handsome guy on the arm somewhat dejectedly, “I know it’s hard, and I know you don’t want to just let it go, but you might

end up becoming a joke if you make a mess of things. I'm not trying to insult you. There are so many people and so many excellent alchemists. Your skills are only average among them. What can you do even if you take part? You'd just be making up the numbers…"

"If any accidents happen, you might very well end up being targeted. Just look at how everyone is acting inside…"

The handsome guy said resolutely, "I, Aaron Fox, have never retreated ever since I started alchemy. This time would be no different!"

It turned out that person was called Aaron.

After hearing the two of them talk, Jackie could somewhat grasp their personalities. Aaron seemed like a person of upstanding character who holds to his values. He seemed to be very righteous. It seemed to be worth getting to know him.

Jackie planned on entering the inner city but did not know the situation at all. Everything would be much easier if he had someone to guide him. He thought about it for a moment before bringing Rudy over.

Jackie saluted Aaron before saluting the black-robed man next to him. After giving a brief introduction, he spoke, "I just arrived at Prosper City. I want to take the test for the inner city, but it seems like the situation in the inner city is incredibly different from what I expected after hearing your conversation. It might even involve other continents…"

It was the first time Jackie had ever heard about other continents while he was in Hestia Continent. Before that, Jackie had never heard of other worlds being mentioned. Hestia Continent was considered the lower end of middle-tier worlds and was a third-grade world. Above were second-grade worlds and first-grade worlds.

Jackie never expected that the inner city would be related to other worlds. After being in Hestia Continent for so long, Jackie already planned on taking a look at other worlds if he had a chance.

Limiting himself to one place could very well limit his development. Jackie was still considered quite weak. Furthermore, he was only staying at Hestia Continent because he wanted to enter Wild Gorge Pass.

Aaron was an easygoing person and knew that Jackie was one too from the conversation. Jackie did not seem like someone petty at all, and would probably not stab any friends in the back.

Aaron smiled and said, "Did you come to Prosper City yourself?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not expecting that to be Aaron’s question. He patted Rudy on the shoulder, “I came with my fellow student.”

Aaron looked at Rudy and saw the sixth-grade alchemist badge on their chests. He had a curious look on his face, but the black-robed man was not as nice as Aaron.

The moment Jackie walked over to chat, the black-robed man was already looking at them alertly. After hearing what Jackie said, coupled with Jackie’s expression, the black-robed man’s alert was coupled with suspicion.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2941 - 2950 -

Chapter 2941
The black-robed man asked, “The two of you arrived at Prosper City by yourselves?”

Jackie immediately understood what the black-robed man was thinking. After all, they would have had to pass the test of an eighth-level city to arrive at Prosper City. Before that, they would have to get past a ninth-level city. It was impossible for alchemists to reach this place alone.

They had to have strong warriors protecting them. The two of them had also only reached this place thanks to the protection of others.

Jackie coughed before finding a reason, “We separated from the others after coming out of the eighth level city…”

The black-robed man frowned, “So that’s what happened. No wonder you don’t know anything. The news is already out. As long as you’re not a wandering warrior, you should have already received the news.”

After saying that, the black-robed man measured them with even more suspicion.

Jackie was starting to get a bit confused at that point since Aaron was nowhere near as suspicious as the black-robed man.

He felt like the black-robed man was just talking a lot, but failed to get to the actual point. Aaron decided to just clear Jackie’s questions, “Every clan’s warriors or alchemists would have gotten a sound transfer array notification from their fellow disciples, asking all the alchemists to head to Prosper City!”

Jackie frowned, feeling a little exasperated.

As an alchemist from Phoenix Valley, all of them had an identification token with them. Not only could that token keep track of merit points, but it could also even be used to transfer information at important moments. Yet, that token had lost its effect since they entered the Whirling World. There was no information sent over at all.

After hearing that, a thought flashed in Jackie’s mind. It looked like Phoenix Valley had already given up on Jackie. Regardless of what the reason was, they did not regard Jackie as a part of them.

With that in mind, Jackie felt a chill in his heart. Even though he had not planned on staying in Phoenix Valley for that long, he had not expected that Phoenix Valley would betray him either. He had even been a great help to Phoenix Valley, but Phoenix Valley

had never spent anything on nurturing Jackie. The spirit crystals Jackie had gotten in Phoenix Valley had all been earned by Jackie himself.

After entering the whirling World, Jackie found out about a lot of secrets. Most of those secrets involved Phoenix Valley. Even though Jackie was disappointed that Phoenix Valley had hidden so much for him, he would have still helped them if they were in trouble.

Jackie completely discarded the thought at that point, he would sever all ties with Phoenix Valley!

Rudy had clearly seen the dark look on Jackie's face and was trying to guess what he was thinking. After all, Rudy's identity token had not worked at all as well.

Aaron was quite carefree and did not notice Jackie's mood at all as he continued, "It's been five to six days. All the alchemists that should be here have already arrived. After all, this event concerns the distribution of resources. Everyone did their best, but the results were not amazing. They only got one bronze treasure and black treasure."

Chapter 2942
"Compared to the two other worlds, Hestia Continent is way too bad! It's the seventh group today. If you want to take part, there are only five spots left! The mood is not the greatest at the moment. The six earlier groups had performed poorly. Not only did they lose badly, but they were also mocked terribly by the alchemists from the other worlds as well. The alchemists on our side aren't really treating the contestants that well either. Everyone feels like they're not good enough, and won't get good results if they join, so all of them became cowards. No one is willing to participate…"

Jackie was confused as he listened. He asked doubtfully, "Which continents are we competing against? What are bronze and black treasures?"

Aaron slapped his forehead, "I forgot that you just got here and don't know anything. Whatever, you should be planning on entering as well, right? If that's the case, let's talk as we walk."

After that, Aaron motioned to the black-robed man saying that he would definitely participate. The black-robed man was a bit panicked but understood that he had already said everything he could. Aaron was someone who would not go back on his decisions. Unless he did not want to participate himself, nothing could stop him from joining. He sighed helplessly, nodding and not saying anything.

Aaron walked in front while Jackie and Rudy followed him. They talked as they walked, and Jackie was also paying attention to the other alchemists around the passage.

Some of those alchemists came from the inner city, while some of them had just arrived. None of them looked like they were in a good mood, and all of them were talking to each other. Those discussions fell into Jackie's ears.

"Rudeus Grint's horse face looks at other alchemists like he's looking at crap. I refuse to go in and suffer. With my meager skills, I only barely managed to pass the entry test anyway. I only managed to complete thirty-one pill runes."

"I don't want to go either. The atmosphere inside is too heavy. The alchemists from White Marsh Continent are all so crazy. They're a lot weaker than the alchemists from the Chaos Continent, but they act so pleasantly with themselves just because they're better than us. They keep causing us trouble!"

"We can't touch that Heaven Array, and can only see the images that they're deliberately sending over. We can't even mock them back and have to suffer from it."

"Which of those at the center aren't the top from their respective forces? They're all incredible masters, but their faces are already pale with anger thanks to being mocked by the White Marsh Continent's alchemists. They're about to erupt at any moment."

"The only way for them to vent is on us insignificant characters. We wouldn't dare to fight them head-on either, and we're forced to just lower our heads and accept it! I don't want to get shouted at for no reason, so I'm forced to hide here…"

Jackie had heard of the name Rudeus before because he was far too famous. Jackie's name was probably about to be spread around as well since only three people have gotten the golden tokens before. One of them had been Rudeus from the Scarlet Pavilion. The Scarlet Pavilion was the only ninth-grade clan in Middle Province. It was the strongest clan in all of the Middle Province and even Hestia Continent. It was an immovable existence.

It was no surprise that he managed to get the golden token. After all, he was an alchemist from a ninth-grade clan. If he was not good, then other alchemists would all be trash.

The circular passage was very long.

Aaron never stopped talking. It was not just about the rules, he talked about a lot more as well. Rudy hit it off quite well with Aaron, and the two of them chatted as they walked.

Chapter 2943

Jackie had been far too quiet, but Aaron did not seem to mind. Just by listening to their conversations, Jackie slowly understood. The various rules after entering the inner city were making the Whirling World more and more interesting.

The inner city was actually an immense palace. There were already over ten thousand alchemists gathered there. The center of the inner city had a massive array that was about a hundred feet in length. The array was called the Heaven Array. It was an ancient array that had already been lost to the Hestia Continent. The alchemists gathered in the inner city all sat around the array.

Aaron raised an eyebrow and said, “The ones who are sitting in the innermost circle are the alchemists with incredible backgrounds and amazing skills. The one at the center is Rudeus from the Scarlet Pavilion. The one right in front of him is Mitchell Turner from Phoenix Valley. The two are said to possess the same level of skills. Before entering this tournament, their names have always appeared next to each other. They’re the model examples for all young alchemists…”

“Even the alchemists that were a generation older treat them with respect as well. However, after this tournament, Rudeus’ name is going to be listed behind Mitchell’s.”

Jackie nodded before asking, “Did Rudeus get a bronze treasure while Mitchell got a black treasure?”

Aaron’s eyes lit up as he nodded vigorously, “You’re so smart.”

Jackie sighed helplessly, feeling a lot better about Aaron.

Mainly, Aaron seemed to be a little dumb when it came to talking and doing things in general. Even if interacting with someone like him would take a bit more effort, he would still not need to be worried about being betrayed.

It let Jackie relax quite a bit. The three of them talked as they walked forward. In fifteen minutes, they finally entered the inner city. It was just like Aaron had said, the whole inner city was basically a massive palace.

Jackie looked up and saw that the ceiling had been carved with various beasts. There were uncountable pillars in the inner palace. Looking inside, a large group of alchemists was gathered in front. There were at least ten thousand of them.

Jackie frowned. He did not like going to crowded places at all. Every time he did, he did not feel like himself. However, he had to go in even if he did not like it. There was at least ten thousand people inside.

After he entered, it realized it was not that crowded at all. Everyone took out mats from their storage spaces and placed them on the floor, sitting down. Those who were friendlier with each other would sit closer, while those who were not that friendly would sit further apart.

Jackie looked at everyone, and noticed that all their expressions were all incredibly serious. He looked up at the centermost position.

After Aaron's introductions, Jackie saw the leaders, which were Rudeus from the Scarlet Pavilion and Mitchell from Phoenix Valley. The two of them sat facing each other in the middle of the array. They had incredibly dark looks on their faces, it was as if their fathers had just died.

As usual, Jackie did not want any unnecessary clamor, and sat down at a comer.

Aaron had been planning on sitting further inside, but Jackie didn't want to. Aaron did not know anyone else, so he sat at a secluded spot with Jackie. Even though everyone there was not that strong, it was still possible to hear what was spoken from afar if one did not deliberately lower their voice.

Chapter 2944
Rudy whispered into Jackie's ears, "Why does this place feel like a funeral?"

Jackie could not stop himself from letting out a laugh. He looked up at everyone, and it really did feel like it was a funeral.

Everyone was incredibly sullen and miserable. They were in incredible pain.

Aaron smiled as he whispered, "I don't think that this is a funeral at all."

Rudy raised an eyebrow and said, "Then what is it?"

Aaron coughed and said seriously, "It's like all of them ate a bucket of crap."

The three of them let out slight laughs. After a moment, Aaron continued, "I think that the reason they're suffering so much isn't that the other worlds are too strong or that they are too weak, and that they dragged Hestia Continent down. It's just because all of them have been shouted at by Rudeus."

Jackie raised an eyebrow, "They were shouted at by Rudeus? Is he allowed to do that? Even with his status, surely the alchemists here are all no regular alchemists? Middle Province isn't owned by Scarlet Pavilion!"

Jackie's face was puzzled. Ever since he came to Middle Province, he had started to learn about the various forces. Even though Scarlet Pavilion was the strongest in Middle Province, the other clans would not just take it lying down either. Lately, the Unbreaking Pavilion had been trying to become the second ninth-grade clan, splitting up the resources of Middle Province.

The Unbreaking Pavilion was very strong. Normally, they only treated Scarlet Pavilion with surface level respect. If Scarlet Pavilion really crossed the line, they would not just take it lying down. They would even fight back.

The other eighth-grade clans might not be as good as the Unbreaking Pavilion, but they would still not just take things lying down. Dignity was incredibly important to those of them from high-grade clans. Some of them saw it as more important than their own lives.

Because he understood that, Jackie was curious.

When he saw how serious everyone was, how could they have just taken being scolded like that lightly?

Aaron could tell what Jackie was puzzled about, and explained to Jackie, “I said this earlier on, but this happened slowly. Initially, Rudeus would not have shouted no matter how angry he was, but with the continuous losses, our results were so bad that White Marsh Continent’s alchemists kept on mocking them. That was why Rudeus erupted.”

Jackie still felt like it was quite unbelievable. After all, he had seen how much they valued their dignity, especially those who were more skilled. They had all already gotten used to being praised. As long as they got rejected or things happened in ways they did not want, they would immediately explode. They would feel like they suffered the greatest humiliation.

Rudy thought about it and said, “I feel like he‘d probably just said a word or two and vented his frustrations. Surely it’s not that bad…”

The moment he said that Rudeus started to speak. His voice was very somber. Rather, his whole person was in an incredibly heavy mood. He suppressed his anger, but his arms were still shaking.

“The seventh group! There are still two hours left. Only five people have taken the challenge tokens right now. Is there anyone else?”

No one answered.

The alchemists that were sitting in front started to retreat with guilty looks on their faces.

After a moment of silence, Rudeus could not hold back anymore and shouted, “Are all of you just trash? If you just wait around, you won‘t be able to get anything anyway!”

The moment he said that the silence broke. After all, this involved their personal benefits. The alchemists toward the back started to mutter amongst one another.

Chapter 2945
“But the rules are very clear. You‘ll get your pick of the treasures first, but you only get to pick one. We get to pick from the rest. The rules can’t be ignored. We want to help, but our skills are limited…”

“That’s right. If we were good enough, we’d naturally be willing to go, but we really can’t do it. Didn’t us weaker alchemists join the six groups earlier as well? Our results were too bad, and we were even mocked by those people and completely humiliated Hestia Continent.”

“Yeah, right. We’re just worried about the humiliation. If not for that, any of us would be willing to contribute.”

Rudeus merely laughed coldly at those words. He looked at those people who only knew how to take the resources. When they were asked to help, they would come up with various excuses. Rudeus felt his rage boiling.

He stood right up, and his sharp eyes stared at everyone as he shouted, “You’re all just trash. All you want is a part of the resources, but you’re not willing to do anything for it at all! You’re just shameless! Absolutely disgusting! I feel disgusted that I’m from the same continent as all of you!”

Those words were incredibly harsh, but even so, no one shouted back at him. They just muttered in silence.

Rudy was dumbfounded at the sight. He never expected that Rudeus’ words would be so harsh. He had even called the other alchemists trash that contributed nothing, calling them disgusting.

Rudy said as he licked his lips, “God… I’m still too inexperienced. I can’t believe Rudeus actually said all of that. I couldn’t even bear to listen.”

Aaron was very calm. After all, he had already heard all of that before. He had gone over to talk to his fellow students, and Aaron slowly understood what was in Rudeus’ mind. Aaron explained, “The others don’t fight back… Because it’s all the truth. Didn’t I tell you the rules of the competition before?”

Jackie and Rudy nodded at the same time, thinking about the rules that they had already been told. They immediately understood why Rudeus was like that.

The competition was actually very simple. Eleven groups had the chance to take part. Each group would consist of ten alchemists. It meant that each round would have thirty participants.

The thirty alchemists would all be tested at the same time, and they would be given placements. In the first place, one would get a golden treasure, which had the best resources. The second place would get a bronze treasure, which was one level lower than the golden one. The third place would get black treasures.

When Jackie entered, six groups had already taken part. The Chaos Continent was the strongest and had obtained four gold, four bronze, and four black treasures.

It was no wonder that White Marsh Continent regarded the Hestia Continent as worthless. That was because White Marsh Continent was a third-grade world just like Hestia Continent, but the results between the two continents were drastically different. The Hestia Continent had not even obtained a single golden treasure.

Rudeus shouted at everyone so viciously because he had gotten a bronze treasure after seizing second place in the second group. Meanwhile, Phoenix Valley's Mitchell had gotten third place in the third group. After that, they had gotten nothing.

The two treasures had been obtained by Rudeus and Mitchell, but the rules were in place. Even though they had gotten the treasures through their own hard work, they still had to share them with everyone.

Chapter 2946
No one responded to Rudeus's raging, probably because no one dared to. After all, with the situation as it was, no one had any right to talk back to Rudeus if they wanted resources. After all, the biggest amount of reward had been earned by Rudeus.

Anyone who wanted to retaliate refrained in the end. They were not willing to offend Rudeus, and did not know what to say anyway.

Rudeus had an incredibly dark look on his face as he shot his sharp gaze across everyone there, "The seventh group is about to start. If no one participates, we would only be sending in five out of the possible ten. Wouldn't we become a joke?! White Marsh Continent already regards us as a joke, and insults us without holding back. If we can't even get the proper number of people, how would they look at us?!"

After Rudeus shouted at all of them, the response was still merely silence. At that moment, no one dared to step up.

Jackie could not blame Rudeus for getting so furious.

Rudeus did not want to be looked down on. If there were not even enough people to participate, it would be far too humiliating. Rudeus had been insulted by White Marsh Continent's alchemists quite a bit. This time, they had even more reason to mock the alchemists of Hestia Continent.

Rudeus was about to collapse from anger. His hands trembled and fire could be seen in his eyes.

Jackie frowned, feeling like all the alchemists there were crossing the line. It was like Rudeus had said. Everyone was fighting for their own benefits, but when it was time for them to actually do something, no one actually dared to step up.

Rudy frowned as he said in exasperation, "This group really is something else. Are they really that afraid? Isn't it just a tournament? There are so many alchemists here, why

did they all refuse? They would rather be berated by Rudeus than step up and participate?”

Aaron sighed at that. He was planning on stepping up. He had been planning on participating. He did not know what the results would be, but at the very least, he dared to step up. Even if he would be humiliated by White Marsh Continent, it was still better than not doing anything at all.

After Rudy voiced the question, Jackie merely frowned and did not reply.

Rudy saw that Jackie was not answering, so Rudy turned to look at Aaron. The moment he looked over, he saw Aaron suddenly stand up.

Aaron let out a slight cough as he tidied himself up, walking right toward the center. The inner city was large enough that they did not need to squeeze. There was a lot of space to move around.

Aaron took big strides all the way toward the front of the Heaven Array. At that moment, there were five miniature arrays on the Heaven array. Anyone who wanted to participate merely needed to pick one up, and it would be counted as a registration to compete. He calmly picked one up in front of all those alchemists. The small array was green in color and had a green glow to it. It looked like an ancient green gem and had several runes on it. It looked very nice.

Aaron grabbed the array and faced the angry Rudeus, saying, “I’ll take part!”

Jackie had thought that Rudeus would have a much better expression since Aaron had stepped up and volunteered by himself, but he never expected that Rudeus’ face would still be furrowed up tightly. He looked at Aaron with no trace of warmth. It was like he was looking at trash.

Chapter 2947
That disdainful gaze was obvious to Jackie even despite the distance. Logically speaking, Rudeus should have been happy that someone wanted to participate. After all, he had been shouting at everyone for so long, but no one had been willing to volunteer. Aaron’s actions could be counted as breaking through the silence. At the very least, they would not be laughed at by White Marsh Continent’s alchemists for not having enough people.

Aaron had clearly felt Rudeus’ disgust and mockery as well. It caused Aaron to feel both frustrated and confused. It was as if he had been wrong to do what he did.

Rudeus snorted, “With someone like you?”

Those words definitely stunned Aaron. What did Rudeus mean by that?

At that moment, the alchemists all looked at Aaron as well. They had looks of mockery on their faces as well.

Aaron's lips twitched as he said, "Didn't you say that everyone could take part? Since no one's taking part, can't I?"

Jackie felt like Aaron was being very reasonable. Both Jackie and Aaron knew that Aaron did not have the skill to get a treasure. He could not even get a black treasure.

He merely did this so the alchemists of Hestia Continent would not be completely humiliated. Yet, Rudeus still had the same attitude, and everyone else looked at Aaron with deep mockery.

Rudeus coldly snorted as his sharp eyes measured Aaron, "Even if you're just making up the numbers, you should at least have the skill to do so. Trash like you will just drag Hestia Continent down. It's better if you don't even go. Put down the array in your hand, you have no right to participate!"

Those words completely stunned Aaron. He was very straightforward, and he usually never let a word or two of mockery get to him. However, Aaron really was starting to panic at that point. He paled, feeling like he was being made out to be a clown.

He started to get laughed at, "Who does this guy think he is? Does he really think he's qualified to make up the numbers? Does he think that he'll look very nice if he stepped up at that moment?"

"Why doesn't he look at himself in the mirror first? Even if we did not have enough people to participate, it's still better than throwing actual trash in!"

"He's probably feeling very pleased with himself right now. He probably thinks that he's helping Rudeus at the moment and that he might become a part of us. Why doesn't he just think for a moment? If trash like him dare to step up, why aren't we participating?"

"That person clearly doesn't know his place. Something must be wrong with him. He's not even a seventh-grade alchemist, but he wants to take part. He's just going to embarrass us all…"

Aaron's lips started to turn purple as he felt a chill in his heart. It was as if he had been thrown into ice water. He sniffed, feeling like he was being an absolute joke.

As he was being stunned, Rudeus immediately shouted, "Why haven't you put it down?! Get lost!"

Aaron shuddered as he immediately placed the array down. He then turned and ran back with his tail between his legs.

Chapter 2948
Jackie's expression darkened.

It was no wonder that no alchemists were stepping up even though so many alchemists were present. It was actually because of Rudeus' high requirements. Average alchemists would have no right to participate.

Aaron seemed to have lost all hope at that moment. He had been humiliated by Rudeus like that in front of so many alchemists. He did not even have any will to fight back Even if he was incredibly carefree, he still had the urge to slam his head into a wall.

He felt like he had never been so humiliated in his life. He felt like everything he had done before was just a complete joke. He had a completely hopeless look in his eyes as he quickened his footsteps. He was afraid that he would hear the mockery around him if he slowed down. However, just as he was hastily walking forward, he suddenly felt his arm being grabbed. He turned to look and saw Jackie grabbing him with a frown on Jackie's face.

Jackie let out a sigh and pulled Aaron toward where he had been. After that, Jackie pressed at Aaron's arm, having Aaron sit back down. They were already sitting in a very secluded area in the first place, so it was easy to avoid everyone else's gaze.

Rudy looked at Aaron with some worry. Jackie sighed as he patted Aaron on the arm.

He whispered, "You did nothing wrong. You didn't know they would do that. You just wanted to step up at the right time and fight for Hestia Continent."

Rudy hurriedly said, "They really are too much! They're just a bunch of dogs who look down on others. If you knew that was how they would act, you would never have wanted to help them!"

Rudy's anger toward Rudeus was already at its peak. He felt like Rudeus had crossed the line too much. Even if Aaron was not good enough to participate, there was no need to make things so ugly. Even though Rudy only knew Aaron for a short time, Rudy already regarded Aaron as a friend. He really liked Aaron's personality.

Aaron's eyes were completely red, and his body was still shuddering. He was like a rabbit that had been frightened and looked incredibly pitiful.

Rudy got even angrier at the sight, "That Rudeus, I was still somewhat sympathetic of him earlier, but I can't believe he's actually like this!"

Aaron sighed with a bitter look on his face and said, "I thought of things too simply. I actually expected that he would mock me like that. An alchemist at Rudeus's level wouldn't regard us as anything worthwhile at all. As long as we do anything wrong, or do anything that he doesn't like, he will start to mock us…"

Jackie frowned as he looked at Rudeus.

Rudeus still had a sour look on his face as he looked at all the alchemists around him in disdain. He was still feeling frustrated at the lack of stronger alchemists participating.

Jackie sighed as he whispered, “You did nothing wrong. Every alchemist has the right to take part in the tournament. If there had been any restrictions, they would have been written in the rules. However, Prosper City has no such rules. Rudeus is just doing things as he please, not considering anyone else.”

Aaron shook his head, somewhat accepting his fate, “I just didn’t think things through. All alchemist like me that was raised by wandering warriors has no right to represent Hestia Continent in something like this.”

Jackie frowned, wanting to console Aaron, but Aaron interrupted him, “Thank you both. I know the two of you are trying to fight for me, but I’ve already thought things through. I just didn’t know my place earlier.”

Chapter 2949
Rudy sighed. He had a lot more he wanted to say, but he swallowed his words.

In truth, Aaron’s thoughts were not completely unreasonable, but Aaron had not done any of that to show off. He had wanted to help Rudeus and had not thought about anything else.

At that moment, Rudeus could be heard again, “Let me warn all of you! If you try to retreat again, I won’t be so kind to you when the resources are being distributed. You’re not getting anything for free!”

Rudy rolled his eyes, whispering, “What does this guy want? He doesn’t want anyone to step up and insists on having those cowards compete. With his temper, anyone who steps up probably won’t meet his standards anyway! Rudeus would just berate them without holding anything back. If this continues, even alchemists with enough skill won’t want to step up anyway. They would just be cursed at and insulted!”

Jackie could understand what everyone was feeling. It was not like everyone enjoyed being shouted at, but Rudeus’ temper was just too strange. He was probably already too used to being pampered. He felt like he was above everyone else, and that everything he did was right. If anyone did not meet his standards, they would be berated. It was as if it was completely deserved.

Jackie let out a snort as a look of disgust was on his face, he turned to look at Aaron, “Help me with this question. Are the treasures distributed evenly no matter what you get?”

Aaron shook his head before nodding, “I don’t know how I should describe it, but it’s not an even distribution. Those who get the treasure can choose the best thing first. The rest will be given to everyone else.”

Jackie nodded and immediately asked again, “Then how many times can one person take part?”

Aaron was a bit taken aback, “One person can only take part once, that’s why Rudeus is in such a panic to find people. After all, six groups have already been sent in. Sixty of the alchemists gathered here have already taken part.”

Jackie nodded as his eyes darted around. Rudy frowned as he looked at it. After knowing Jackie for so long, Rudy could guess what Jackie was thinking from his expression.

Rudy had a moment of realization when he looked at Jackie. He took a deep breath and grabbed Jackie’s arm, “You are…”

Before he could finish, Jackie nodded earnestly, “Stop right there. Why did I come here? Is it to lower my head for others?”

Rudy panicked a little hearing that, “But…”

Jackie shook his head, “There are no buts. There are some things you can‘t just hide away from. The chance is right in front of me, if I don’t seize it, it would be my fault for losing out on it.”

Aaron was confused listening to the two of them talk.

Jackie turned to look at Aaron and asked, “How much do you know about White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent?”

Chapter 2950
Aaron blinked, answering seriously, “I don’t really know that much… I’ve only read about them in ancient books.”

At that moment, Jackie went straight to the key point, “Hearing what you said, are none of the other worlds cut off from the outside world like Hestia Continent is?”

Aaron nodded as he looked at Jackie in confusion. He felt like everyone should have known this since it was basic knowledge. Yet, it seemed like Jackie did not know about it at all. He was not someone who dwelled on problems like

these.

After thinking about it, he answered sincerely, “Hestia Continent used to be open to the outside world as well. It had regular contact with other worlds and even had large transfer arrays that could send us out to other worlds. However, something huge happened thirty thousand years ago which cut off Hestia Continent’s ties with the outside world. Even though news can still travel around, most of the channels were shut off.”

In truth, Aaron did not know much about what happened back then either. After all, he was not even older than sixty years old, and merely got the news from ancient books. The difference between third-grade worlds was not too large. They would have Lies with each other, and they could even travel between the worlds. As long as you had the resources, you could take large transfer arrays to other worlds.

Thirty thousand years ago, Hestia Continent always maintained a relationship with the outside world. They exchanged resources as well. Hestia Continent was considered to be at the lower end of third-grade worlds.

Aaron said seriously, “I’ve seen records about White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent. It’s clearly written that those two continents should have been at the same level as us. We should all have been at the lower middle end of third-grade worlds.”

After Aaron said that, Jackie suddenly said thoughtfully, “So that’s what happened. The Whirling World linked us with those two continents probably because the Whirling World thinks that the three worlds are at almost the same level and that it would be a fair fight.”

Aaron had a look of realization on his face when he heard that. He straightened his body and said, “You’re very right. I think we’re competing against White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent because of that too. However, the two continents have already improved by quite a bit. Chaos Continent can already be ranked as a mid-tier third grade world. Even White Marsh Continent is a bit stronger than Hestia Continent. We’re forced to stay at the bottom.”

Jackie nodded. No wonder there was such a huge difference. Thirty thousand years was enough to change a lot of things.

Rudy sighed and said, “If we had not cut off our connection to the outside world, we might be very different right now.”

Aaron nodded, “Probably. At the very least, we wouldn’t be so bad.”

Jackie looked up at the carvings on the ceiling. The carvings filled up the whole ceiling and were rich with content. There were massive beasts and warriors in strange clothes. A lot of stories were illustrated there, enough to make one dizzy.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2951 -

Chapter 2951
After staring at the ceiling for a long time, Jackie took a deep breath and said, “What happened thirty thousand years ago? Have you ever heard about the Divine Void World?”

“The Divine Void World?” spoke Aaron and Rudy simultaneously.

It was obvious that both of them had never heard that name before.

Aaron shook his head. “I’ve never heard about it… Where is that place?”

Jackie frowned, falling silent for a moment. Even though Aaron had never heard of it, it did not mean that what happened 30,000 years ago had nothing to do with the Divine Void World. Jackie even started to think that the Whirling World was closely related to the Divine Void World.

There were far too many secrets in the Hestia Continent, and those secrets usually involved the Divine Void World. For instance, what he experienced in West Cercie State was closely related to the Divine Void World.

He remembered those questions he had that had been impossible to answer. He was finally slowly getting some clues.

If the Hestia Continent had nothing to do with the Divine Void World, he would probably not have arrived at the Hestia Continent back then. After all, Mustard Seed had been on autopilot back then. He had chosen a third- grade world but never specified which one. In other words, Mustard Seed had chosen Hestia for Jackie.

After Jackie thought about it for a moment, he turned to look at Aaron. “Continue… What happened back then? Why did you suddenly stop?”

Aaron let out a cough before saying awkwardly, “I just say that you were deep in thought, and I was worried that I’d interrupt you…”

Rudy was very curious as well. He might be from Middle Province, but he rarely looked at ancient books. He did not even know some of the clans that were in Middle Province. Back then, he had always been in his own little circle, so he excitedly asked, “Hurry up and tell us! I want to hear it.”

Aaron nodded and continued.

30,000 years ago, a powerful sound echoed in the skies of the Hestia Continent as though proud, valiant warriors were battling in the heavens. The skies rumbled with thunder, and the whole continent was submerged in the pressure that those supreme beings exuded.

At that moment, every warrior was stricken with fear. No one knew what happened, and no one knew what could happen next. It seemed like the end of the world as thunder and lightning reigned supreme. Numerous areas were rendered to ashes in the aftermath.

It continued for a whole three days when all of a sudden, the lightning stopped on the fourth day. Some of the stronger warriors flew into the skies at that moment, wanting to see what happened, but they suddenly found themselves unable to fly any higher. They were shocked to find that the entire Hestia seemed to have been surrounded by a massive barrier. Even the strongest warriors of the continent were stopped by an invisible barrier after flying to a certain height, unable to continue flying.

All of the warriors were shocked as they hurriedly contacted other worlds. They wanted to invite the best of other worlds to see what happened.

They were plunged into hopelessness when they realized that even the transfer arrays were useless. They would be stopped by an invisible force midway, unable to continue their journey. Even using high-level sound arrays, they could not transfer any information.

Aaron helplessly explained, “The warriors back then, be it the strong or the weak, were mystified, not knowing what had taken place. The only thing they were sure about was the fact that contact with the outside world had been cut off by a barrier they couldn’t see. No one could get out…”

After hearing that, Jackie and Rudy were dazed. They felt like what happened back then was really strange.

Jackie frowned and said, “Didn’t you say we could still transfer information?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2952 -

Chapter 2952
Aaron nodded. “We’re already able to transmit information now, but it was impossible back then. Back then, all communication with the outside world was cut off. The fact that we can even transmit a little bit of information now is due to thirty thousand years of constant hard work, allowing some array masters to communicate with the outside world through some special sound arrays. Only then did we find out that White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent, who were at the bottom like us back then, are already completely different…”

Aaron‘s expression turned sullen at this. He felt like the Hestia Continent would probably be different if not for that special barrier cutting off the outside world.

After all, it was not just communication that happened with the outside world back then; people could move around and resources could be traded. They could even get things from other worlds. However, Hestia became an isolated place after all forms of communication were cut off. The people knew nothing of the outside world and were forced to remain behind closed doors.”

Rudy raised an eyebrow and said, “I want to know what happened back then. Who could be so powerful as to seal the whole Hestia Continent? Why did they erect that barrier? There’s the Whirling World as well. Hestia is supposed to be sealed in, so why are we able to communicate with the other worlds after coming here? Also… Why were those two other worlds able to improve so much in thirty thousand years? What happened to them? What happened to the other worlds?”

Rudy felt like he had a lot of questions at that moment. After knowing what happened back then, he started to lose a bit of his calm. He felt like there were definitely a lot of secrets hidden behind everything.

Those secrets might even involve some things that were taking place at this moment. He could not help but suspect that the Unbreaking Pavilion and Phoenix Valley might know the truth behind everything. They had probably arranged this trip into the Whirling World because of what they knew.

Something was off about the Whirling World. With all those questions on his mind, Rudy voiced his thoughts.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy and said, amused, “Are you trying to look for answers from the two of us? Do you think we’d be able to answer them?”

Rudy’s lips twitched, laughng it off after realizing that he had been foolish for asking in the first place. After all, none among them would have been able to answer his questions.

Jackie sighed as he looked at Rudeus again. He already understood what he could, and he could not possibly answer the questions he had that could not be answered.

With that, Jackie stood up and walked forward, baffling Rudy and Aaron as they looked at him with widened eyes.

Jackie turned around and nodded at Rudy.

“Don’t you want to think it over first?” fretted Rudy.

Jackie, however, merely smiled and shook his head. After that, he turned and walked to the center of the Heaven Array again. He was firm in his footsteps as be ignored the looks sent his way.

Jackie blocked out his surroundings as he looked at the Heaven Array. Whatever was said from the people around him or the looks they gave him could not get to him whatsoever.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2953 -

Chapter 2953
Jackie had carefully thought things through before he stood up.

Everyone else doubtfully watched as he stood in front of the Heaven Array. He reached out to grab one of the small arrays in front of him. After grabbing that plate, he wasted no time putting it into his storage space before he turned and started to walk back. The way he behaved and walked was so languid that everyone was baffled.

Just as Jackie made his third step, Rudeus said, “Stop right there! Who are you? You’re trying to just walk away after taking an array?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, turning around after he stopped.

He calmly looked at Rudeus. He already expected that Rudeus would react like that before he came, and he already knew what he wanted to say.

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he calmly replied, “Why can’t I go? Are these arrays yours? Everyone here is qualified to take part in the competition. As long as there are arrays and spots left, any alchemist here has the right to take part. It’s unreasonable for you to be the one to decide if someone can take part or not.”

Despite how his words actually held reason, everyone was stunned to hear Jackie uttering them. No one expected that someone with the badge of a sixth-grade alchemist would talk back to Rudeus like that in front of everyone.

Rudeus narrowed his eyes, suddenly laughing. Only, his laugh did not reach his eyes, and there was a sharpness to his laugh.

“There really is a first time for everything. I’ve seen a lot of stupid things, you know. Who do you think you are to question me?! Yes, I am going to judge if you’re worthy or not just by myself! If I say you’re not qualified, then you’ re not. If I want you to put down the array, you’d do well to listen!”

At that moment, every alchemist looked at Jackie. Expressions on their faces varied as they started to talk.

“Is this kid crazy? He’s talking to Rudeus so bluntly!”

“Does he not know who Rudeus is? Insulting Rudeus is equal to insulting the Scarlet Pavilion. Does he not know that the Scarlet Pavilion is a ninth-grade clan, the strongest force in Hestia?!”

“He can’t possibly not know. Anyone with half a brain knows that Scarlet Pavilion shouldn’t be offended. Rudeus will definitely remember this guy for speaking without reserve toward him. I think this guy must be crazy!”

“I think so, too. Just listen to what he said earlier! Even if it sounded reasonable, it just sounds like him being petulant, if you think about it. He’s just a sixth-grade alchemist, so what gives him the right to say all of that just because he wants to compete?”

Many questions began to surface, and everyone felt like Jackie had crossed the line with his behavior and words.

Jackie merely snorted at these remarks, however, as he was unfazed. It was a waste of his time to argue with those people, so he decided to ignore them.

At that moment, Rudeus walked toward Jackie, narrowing his eyes as he looked at Jackie coldly.

“Didn’t you hear what I said earlier? I told you to put down your array. You have no right to represent Hestia in competing against the alchemists from other worlds!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2954 -

Chapter 2954
Jackie watched as Rudeus walked toward him with a passive expression.

He looked up slightly as he spoke as though proud and faultless, “You don’t have the right to determine who takes part in the competition. Don’t think that you can do whatever you please just because you’re from a ninth-grade clan!”

At this point, Jackie's behavior enraged Rudeus to the point of no recourse, feeling like everything Jackie said was unbearable. He even felt like stabbing Jackie with a thousand blades.

Mark was sitting in the fourth row, watching as everything happened with a stunned expression. As an alchemist from the Unbreaking Pavilion, he needed to sit there. Moreover, he represented Hestia as well. He had been part of the third group, which meant that he represented Hestia in the tournament. His results had been one of the worst, being completely trounced by alchemists from the other two continents.

Regardless, he could not leave immediately. After all, the competition included the whole continent, and he had to stay for the entire time. At that moment, he did not just represent alchemists but even the Unbreaking Pavilion behind him. He had to stay, he was the leader of the Unbreaking Pavilion's alchemists and represented his clan.

When he saw Jackie, he was completely stunned.

Jackie had floored him before this. Everyone else did not know of Jackie's abilities, but Mark knew them all too well.

Jackie was more than qualified to take part in the competition, and his results would not be bad. They would be better than Mark's, at least. As for whether Jackie could get a treasure, that much was uncertain.

Mark stared at Jackie, gaping the whole time. He gulped as he looked at his fellow students around him, noticing that they were gaping at him too as various feelings flashed in their eyes.

Those who knew Jackie knew how strong he was. It was the right decision to let him take part. After all, he had gotten a golden token. The only thing they did not know was how Jackie compared to Rudeus and Mitchell. However, there was one thing that they were certain of. Jackie taking part in the competition would not shame Hestia whatsoever. Instead, it would bring honor to the continent.

On the other hand, Rudeus' behavior was wrong in their eyes. However, even if they knew the truth, they would not help Jackie say anything. After all, they were enemies. It would be best for them if Jackie's journey was made difficult.

At that moment, whether it was Mark's or even Samuel's group, all of them remained completely silent, not saying a thing.

Rudeus and Jackie were both at a standstill. Rudeus did not want Jackie to join the competition, already thinking that Jackie was incapable of anything. He believed that Jackie would only humiliate Hestia if Jackie joined. Alchemists from other continents would belittle Hestia if Jackie joined, and he would drag everyone else down with him!

That was why Rudeus was adamant against allowing Jackie to participate.

To Jackie, however, Rudeus was just making a fool out of himself. He had no reason nor the right to reject any alchemist. Rudeus might have gotten impressive results and a bronze treasure, but did it matter any more than that?

Even though he obtained a bronze treasure, it did not mean he was the leader of all of the alchemists in Hestia. Upon noticing that Jackie was firm in his actions, Rudeus felt his anger spilling from his chest.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2955 -

Chapter 2955
Rudeus squinted angrily at Jackie and cleared his throat, sneering, "If you insist on being stubborn, don't think that I can't do anything to you just because you refuse to give up, you brat. I decide if you get to participate!"

Jackie smirked upon hearing this, sneering to himself at how stodgy Rudeus was. Just because Rudeus had gotten a bronze treasure and was from a ninth-grade clan, he felt entitled enough to think that everyone had to obey whatever he said.

Anyone who went against Rudeus' word was basically slapping him on the face, and Rudeus would use other means to handle them. Jackie, however, was not someone who would bend to another person's will.

Jackie let out a laugh as he raised his voice and retorted, "Please stop thinking that you get to boss around everyone just because you're a little skilled. I said that I'd take part in this competition, so I will. You have no right to determine who can participate or who can't. Stop trying to act like your threats will affect me. If you have the skills, go ahead and come at me!"

Even if Rudeus attacked, Jackie would barely blink.

Jackie might be an alchemist, but he was far from a traditional one, his skills were far stronger than anyone present. Even warriors from a ninth-grade clan barely amounted to Jackie, let alone an alchemist.

Rudeus' face reddened in anger as his eyes reddened. He never expected that an alchemist he had never seen before would boldly challenge him. Jackie did not seem willing to budge at all. Even with his status on full display, he refused to cooperate!

The atmosphere became even tenser at this point, and the discussions around them grew louder.

"This guy is insane! Is he not afraid that Rudeus will come for him someday? Even if Prosper City has laws in place that stops Rudeus from attacking him, nothing good will be waiting for this guy once he steps out of Prosper City."

"Doesn't he know what a ninth-grade clan represents? Rudeus has a good standing in Scarlet Pavilion as well, and quite a few of their chosen disciples are close to Rudeus."

"Those people will come for anyone who offends Rudeus if they find out that someone had crossed him!"

"Something's wrong with this boy's head. It's like he's so sure he'll be safe and that no one will get back at him. If he leaves Prosper City, he'll suffer greatly!"

Some of the people shouted at Jackie.

“Just put it down if he wants you to. Do you know what you’ re doing? Even if we can’t fight inside the city, the laws don’t exist outside of Prosper City. Are you that sure you’ll be safe afterward? Aren’t you afraid that they’ll seek revenge?”

Jackie merely raised an eyebrow at those words, not bothering with them at all. Even if they want to take revenge on him, they would have to look at themselves in the mirror and deliberate their choices. Ever since Jackie entered the Whirling World, he lost track of how many people he had offended there. He knew that there would be those looking for revenge, but he could not care less.

His principle had always been to never harm those who never harmed him, while those who hurt him will receive damage tenfold. As long as anyone dared to cause him trouble, he would get even.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2956 -

Chapter 2956
After all, no one knew who would suffer the heaviest losses.

At this point, Rudeus was already trembling with anger. Jackie had humiliated him in front of so many people and spoke so crassly toward him. With that, Rudeus wanted nothing more than to end Jackie. He even started thinking about how he would capture and torture Jackie after they left Prosper City.

Meanwhile, Jackie no longer wanted to entertain Rudeus' antics, so he lowered his head and looked at the alchemists who sat on the mats. Even though the center was more of a tight fit compared to the outskirts, there was some space left.

Rudeus would no doubt continue pestering him, so rather than letting Rudeus follow him, Jackie decided to just sit at the vacant spot.

The seventh group was about to start anyway. He would have needed to come over again. It would save them from noticing Rudy as well.

Looking at how nonchalant Jackie was acting, Rudeus' anger soared to new heights. His entire body burned with the urge to rush up to Jackie and smack his face. Alas, he could not.

Rudeus took a deep breath as he slowly composed himself. He knew that he would only embarrass himself if he went after Jackie at this moment, knowing that he would not cooperate. Jackie would definitely take part in the competition.

Rudeus took a deep breath and was forced to turn and head to his original position.

At that moment, Mitchell, who had been silent the whole time, suddenly spoke, "Why do you insist on participating? Are you trying to make a name for yourself, or do you really think you'll be able to get the treasure?"

Mitchell came from Phoenix Valley, but his alchemy skills were, in truth, not as good as Rudeus'. He was from the inner valley and was an alchemist that Phoenix Valley took great pains to guide and improve. He had been silent the whole time in large part because his skills were no match for Rudeus. Even though he did not want to admit it, the results have been clear for all to see.

Rudeus had gotten a bronze treasure, while he only got a black treasure. Even though he was not on the best of terms with Rudeus, he did not want to see Jackie acting like he owned the place.

Who did Jackie think he was, carrying himself so pridefully?

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking at Mitchell meaningfully. At that moment, there were a lot of alchemists that had similar-looking robes behind him. All of them had reddish-orange patterns on their robes. He had seen those patterns in Phoenix Valley before, so Jackie knew who they were, more or less.

If it had been before, Jackie would not have been too harsh on them since they were from Phoenix Valley. No matter what kind of conflict they had, Jackie would have tried his best to forgive any transgression against him. At this point, however, he had abandoned those sentiments. After all, Phoenix Valley had betrayed him first. Phoenix Valley had hidden a massive secret and never provided anything for him.

They never treated Jackie like one of their own. Seeing their unfair treatment, Jackie decided to respond in kind.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2957 -

Chapter 2957
Jackie snorted and replied, "I'm aiming for the treasure, of course. Just spare your breath, there's no point in you saying anything to me. No matter what you say, I'll still participate."

Mitchell's lips twitched as he hissed, "Don't you know that you'll embarrass Hestia by doing this? You have a sixth-grade alchemist badge! They'll not only mock you for participating with a sixth-grade alchemist badge, but also the whole Hestia Continent! I don't want you dragging us down with you!"

Exasperated, Jackie inhaled deeply as his lips twitched. He touched the sixth-grade alchemist badge that was on his chest and realized that the badge had never once benefited him. Nonetheless, he had no intention of ripping it away.

He looked at Mitchell and curtly replied, "I won't embarrass Hestia. As for the rest, you're the one who thinks you'll be embarrassed. Stop wasting your time, I won't listen anyway. "

After saying that, Jackie closed his eyes and pursed his lips, looking as though he was shutting out the entire world from his senses.

Looking at this, Mitchell was rendered speechless.

The alchemists from Phoenix Valley behind him whispered to Mitchell, "Mitchell, just ignore him. This guy looks like he's lost his marbles. Rudeus said so much earlier, but this guy didn't listen at all, and he's barely unfazed by the threats as well. Since that's the case, there's no point wasting your breath."

Mitchell's lips twitched, but he had to admit that those words were true. There was no getting through to this guy.

Just as Mitchell was about to shut his eyes and rest as well, the Heaven Array's mechanisms suddenly moved. A green light glowed on the Heaven Array, attracting everyone's attention.

Jackie looked over as well and saw that there was a figure on the Heaven Array. He could immediately tell that it was not an actual person standing on the array, but an image that someone had sent over.

That person had white robes on and looked quite different. However, his face seemed visibly taut, and it was obvious that he came with no good intent.

Mitchell and Rudeus' gazes soured when they saw the image.

"Ethan Loewe, do you have nothing better to do?" hissed Rudeus through gritted teeth.

Ethan let out a laugh and shrugged. “Aren’t I doing official business right now? I just want to see if you’ll be able to gather enough to participate in the seventh round. If you can’t, well, that’s a shame. After all, I still want to get to know more alchemists from Hestia. We should exchange pointers and elevate our skills.”

Although Ethan’s words seemed innocent enough, the way he spoke sounded incredibly sinister, coupled with the obvious smirk on his face.

Jackie frowned, immediately understanding why Rudeus and Mitchell’s expressions soured so much. This probably was not the first time Ethan downplayed alchemists from Hestia with his words.

Rudeus took a deep breath, doing his best to suppress the rage in his heart. “The people who will be representing us, and whether we’ll get enough people, have nothing to do with you. If you have the time to care about us, care about the White Marsh Continent first. Even though our results aren’t much, you alchemists from White Marsh Continent are just a little stronger than us. You can’t compare to Chaos Continent at all!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2958 -

Chapter 2958
Ethan’s expression stiffened upon hearing Rudeus’ words, and a sharp glint flashed in his eyes. Not only was the Heaven Array a large transfer array, but it could also transmit a person’s image. Without the person being sent over, they could talk to those around the Heaven Array.

This was the power of an ancient array.

Ethan seemed to have been angered by Rudeus’ words.

Snorting, he retorted, “You speak as if we’re that bad. Even though we’re not as good as Chaos Continent, we still managed to get golden treasures, and not just one at that. Meanwhile, you’re far different. You claimed that you’re only a bit worse than us. Is that true, though? None of you obtained a single golden treasure yet! Do you really have the right to say such words?”

Those words were definitely a slam on the pride of every alchemist in the inner city. It completely humiliated them, causing Rudeus to shudder in anger. He had been insulted by Ethan before as well, but Ethan had not been so venomous with his words before.

Rudeus came from a ninth-grade clan and received showers of praise from a young age.

Naturally, he was never humiliated before. Worse still, he had no other words to throw at Ethan, who seemed visibly prideful the moment he brought up golden treasures.

He looked at all of the alchemists from Hestia in disdain. “I’ll be part of the seventh group. I don’t know who’ll be competing against me, but let me warn you, none of you will be getting the top-three spots. I think you should just wake up and give up on this competition. After all, this has always been a competition between White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent. Hestia is just here to make up the numbers with you trash bags.”

Ethan cackled maniacally before his image flashed and he disappeared. At that moment, no one could hold back.

Everyone cursed Ethan for being despicable and shameless. They jeered at how arrogant he was, saying that all he knew was to brag. Even the most composed of the alchemists present could not hold back their anger after all that humiliation.

“This guy has crossed the line! It’s like he thinks no one can beat him. He’s clearly never taken part in the competition at all, but he constantly taunts people. He thinks he’s unrivaled!”

“How could someone actually skilled be like him? All he knows is bragging. I think he won’t even be able to get the first three places. He doesn’t have the skills, so he’s just trying to bolster his pride by gloating in front of us!”

“He’s just an arrogant and despicable lowlife. If I can meet him face-to-face, I’d rush over and give him a good few sobering slaps!”

Even though all of them knew that Hestia could not compare to White Marsh Continent, they were not willing to swallow Ethan’s words. They felt like Ethan’s constant taunts were fueled by his vanity. They believed that Ethan was not talented enough to make it into the top three spots and merely wanted to mock them to bolster his self-confidence.

Rudeus was seething at this point, his eyes completely red as he felt like he had never been so humiliated before.

On the other hand, Jackie lightly sighed. He knew very well that Ethan was not completely wrong. If the situation continued, Hestia might not even be able to muster enough people. After all, Rudeus was standing in front of them, insisting that only skilled and willing alchemists be allowed to participate.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2959 -

Chapter 2959
For others, taking part in the competition meant that Rudeus might very well humiliate them, and no one wanted to bear that humiliation. Of those present, only two of them had gotten treasures while the rest returned empty-handed.

Every one of them knew how difficult the competition was, so everyone became cowards. No one was willing to stand up at such a time.

Jackie looked at Rudeus before turning to look at Aaron.

At that moment, Aaron was conversing with Rudy. The two of them were hidden in the darkness, trying not to interact with anyone else. There must have been a few alchemists present that were like Aaron, but thanks to Rudeus’ poorly chosen words, no one was willing to step up.

Rudeus trembled with anger and looked like he was about to collapse at any moment.

Jackie did not want to care about anything, but thinking about it, he would need to meet the alchemists from White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent when the competition started. If they truly could not get enough people, they would be the laughingstock for everyone else.

To avoid that, and also because Jackie did not want Rudeus to just do as he pleased, Jackie said to the people around him, “Rudeus might be exceptional, but he’s not the boss of everyone here. We can’t just let him pick and choose who can take part just because he wants to. Even if the competition is hard, it’s a good opportunity to challenge yourself. As alchemists, we shouldn’t let go of any chance to improve ourselves!”

What greeted him was silence and gazes of various emotions. Some were exasperated, while some were disgusted, but they were all directed at Jackie.

Jackie was not fazed, having anticipated these reactions before he even spoke.

Rudeus, enraged and unable to tolerate Jackie’s sudden burst of words, stood up. He was like an angered lion, clenching his fists tightly as his true energy circulated his body, ready to attack at any moment.

Nash Skye, who was also from the Scarlet Pavilion, reached out and grabbed Rudeus by his arm. He was afraid that Rudeus would not be able to control his temper and attack Jackie.

After all, Prosper City had its laws, and the moment Rudeus broke those laws, he would be punished. It was a punishment no alchemists could withstand, and he would be turned to ashes.

“Don’t fall for it, Rudeus!” warned Nash anxiously. “This guy is trying to anger you and make you attack. You’ll be punished by Prosper City if you do!”

Those words were like a bucket of cold water on Rudeus’ face. He suddenly calmed down from his anger, realizing that he had been acting too recklessly. If Nash had not been there to hold him back, he might have attacked Jackie. After all, Jackie’s words had been even worse than adding oil to the fire for Rudeus.

Rudeus took a few deep breaths before he quelled the anger in his heart. At that moment, however, Rudeus’ hatred toward Jackie became concentrated.

Nash looked over and scoffed. “Don’t think that you can challenge us as you please, you brat!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2960 -

Chapter 2960
“Rudeus’ behavior in arranging things this way is because he doesn’t want Hestia to be humiliated. If everyone participates so brazenly like you are, won’t it show the other two continents that our alchemists are all so bad?!”

Hearing that, Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said loudly, “Stop looking for excuses, I won’t be convinced just like that. You keep on saying you don’t want Hestia to be humiliated, but what you’re doing will only embarrass us even more. There are so many alchemists here. Is it that hard to pick out a few seventh-grade alchemists? The fact that the seventh-grade alchemists are all unwilling to step up is purely because they’d be humiliated by Rudeus if they didn’t satisfy him.”

“Who’d want to step up just to be berated? You’re stopping others from taking part and humiliating our continent even more! In your eyes, sixth-grade alchemists are nothing, but what about seventh-grade alchemists?! Surely it won’t be hard to pick out a few seventh-grade alchemists when there are over ten thousand of them here! Why can’t we even pick out ten? Simply put, no one wants to be scolded!”

“The standards you uphold are hilarious. As long as they have a seventh-grade alchemist badge, they won’t be mocked when they enter. After all, the badge doesn’t explicitly say how skilled a person is. Even if the alchemists from the other continents are skilled, there’s no way there will be a lot of eighth-grade alchemists. After all, there’s an age restriction!”

Jackie’s words were quite logical, and the other alchemists slowly became convinced. Everyone slowly felt like Rudeus’ earlier arrangements were too tyrannical and too reliant on him alone.

Many alchemists were present, including seventh-grade alchemists. It should not be difficult to pick out 10 of them to compete. The reason why no one stepped up was simply because of Rudeus’ horrible temper. If they were not to his standards, they would be shouted at.

There should have been a lot more people willing to participate. After all, no one wanted Hestia to be humiliated.

Rudeus was shaking in anger as he looked at Jackie with even more hatred in his eyes. If it were not for Jackie, he would not be questioned like that!

Jackie did not care how angry Rudeus was at all. Instead, he turned and raised his voice to speak to all the other alchemists, “You can compete if you want to. It’s a rare chance to train yourselves. After all, you’re not competing with the alchemists of Hestia but those from other worlds instead. Even if you’ll be mocked, it’s fine! Just imagine that they’re dogs that only know how to bark!”

“Hey, that guy has a point, this is a rare chance! We can’t just listen to Rudeus‘ arrangements. Even though I’m not an eighth-grade alchemist, I’m still a seventh-grade alchemist.”

“My skills are decent. There’s no way I‘ll get a treasure, but at least I can train myself. I’ll only be able to improve if I do that!”

“Even though this guy is insufferable, he’s being logical here. We can’t just follow what Rudeus wants, we should think for ourselves!”

Slowly, the alchemists’ stance shifted as they gravitated to accept Jackie’s view and that Rudeus should not have a final say in everything. After all, Rudeus was only concerned with himself.

After a short while, a tall man stood up from his mat. He walked over to the Heaven Array and grabbed a small array before putting it in his storage space.

The man told everyone, “I won’t let this chance go. I’ve decided to take part in the seventh group!”

After saying that, he turned and walked back to his spot. Slowly, everyone started to move, and the remaining arrays were quickly taken.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2961 - 2965

Chapter 2961

The ten spots were finally fixed, and Jackie decided to shut up after that. He looked up and glanced at Rudeus who was staring back at him with an angry and venomous gaze. If looks could kill, Jackie would have already died a thousand times.

He let out a laugh, not caring about Rudeus. After all, Rudeus was just an alchemist who posed no threat to him.

Jackie then turned to look at Rudy who was waving to him. The moment he saw Rudy, he knew that Rudy had something to say. The round was about to start, and Jackie did not have much time left. After frowning and thinking for a moment, he stood up and walked over to Rudy. It was a very secluded place. Anyone not taking specific notice would not have seen that corner. When Jackie walked over, he had naturally attracted some attention, but that did not bother him.

When he arrived in front of Rudy, he sat down on the mat before saying, “You have something to say?”

Rudy took a deep breath before nodding seriously and said, “I feel like you shouldn’t be so reckless. Don’t offend those people too much. I know how you are, but I feel like you’re still a bit too reckless. Rudeus already sees you as an enemy, and definitely won’t let you off. If he joins hand with those people from the Unbreaking Pavilion, it will start to get a lot harder for us. They might even work together to set a trap for you. If we aren’t careful and get caught by them, it would be disastrous!”

Rudy’s words were sincere from the heart, and not exaggerated at all.

Aaron nodded in agreement as well. After chatting with Rudy, he somewhat understood Jackie’s situation and knew of his grudges against the Unbreaking Pavilion. On top of that, there was also Rudeus from the Scarlet Pavilion.

Jackie had seemingly insulted all the biggest forces.

Jackie sighed as he let out a laugh of exasperation. Thinking about it, it really was so. However, he was never the instigator of anything. They were the ones who wanted to cause Jackie trouble, and he was merely retaliating. If he could not even do that, then he would be too suffocated.

Rudy said with some worry, “I feel like they’ll start working together to cause you trouble. What should we do about it?”

Rudy knew very well that, even if Jackie begged for mercy in front of Rudeus, Rudeus would definitely not let Jackie off. Furthermore, Jackie was not the sort to do that anyway. The bridge was already burned between the two of them.

The conflicts between them would only deepen. Jackie was already mortal enemies with the Unbreaking Pavilion, and the Compass Pavilion as well. If they added the Scarlet Pavilion to that, then the future days would be much harder.

Rudy's lips twitched, imagining a scenario where their enemies had the upper hand.

What would the two of them end up like?

It would definitely be excruciating. They would definitely be tortured in various ways.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, reaching out and placing it on Rudy's shoulder, "Don't let your thoughts wander. Do you think I haven't thought about the fact that they might set a trap for me? They will definitely do that, but it's not like we have no counter to that. I've already thought things through, so you can relax…"

Jackie did not go into detail about the plans that he had.

When Rudy heard what Jackie said, Rudy got even more worried. That was because Rudy could not figure out what sort of plans could possibly save them from such dangerous situations. He felt like the future was uncertain, and that there was no way to handle it.

After thinking about it for a while, Rudy said seriously, "I know that you've always had your own thoughts. I just wanted to tell you that I think we should just avoid warriors or alchemists from these major forces if we can in the future. We shouldn't make enemies of them."

Chapter 2962
Rudy had once been someone who did as he pleased as well, but he slowly understood that he could not keep on doing that. It was not good to make enemies out of those large forces. If they really focused on dealing with Jackie, their future days would prove to be very difficult.

Before, he had never bothered to think too deeply about those things, but he slowly realized that things would just get worse if he acted without any regard for the future. He was forced to try and advise Jackie to not be too reckless. After all, Scarlet Pavilion was the only ninth-grade clan in Hestia Continent, making them the strongest. Even in the Whirling World where everyone was restricted to the late stage of the innate level, Jackie still needed to be careful to not make too much of a scene despite his skills.

What would happen after they leave the Whirling World?

Were they just not going to be in Middle Province anymore?

Jackie's skills definitely meant that he would reach greater heights in his life. Middle Province was where most of the masters in Hestia Continent gathered. If he offended all

the major forces, then Jackie would not be able to remain in Middle Province in the future.

Rudy was just someone insignificant, so he did not really need to think about that. Even if he did not continue remaining in Middle Province, he could just make a living elsewhere. However, Jackie could not do that.

After Jackie heard Rudy's words, he raised an eyebrow and patted Rudy on the arm, "I know what you're worried about, but you don't have to be so concerned. I haven't offended all of the major forces, and there are some things that you have to think deeper about. Those major forces will protect their own people simply because it benefits them more to do that. As long as my value is greater than those benefits, those major forces won't protect their own people to that extent."

Rudy could not understand what Jackie was saying.

He frowned as he looked at Jackie in confusion, "What do you mean? Are you planning on joining someone?"

Jackie shook his head before letting out a slight laugh. He looked up at the various carvings on the ceiling, only answering after a while, "I definitely won't join them even if they want me to. As long as you're willing to think about it, there are ways to settle everything. Even the major forces have to cooperate when it comes to certain things!"

Rudy was even more confused at that, but he knew that Jackie would never say empty words, nor did Jackie ever brag. Since Jackie said so, Jackie naturally had something in mind. He slowly tossed aside all his worries.

He looked up at the Heaven Array in the middle. With his skills, there was no way he could participate. However, he was still very curious as to what they would be competing at after being sent into that space.

Could it just be an alchemic test?

Various thoughts played in his head. Just as he was about to talk about it to Jackie, he heard footsteps as a familiar figure appeared in front of them.

Jackie looked up and frowned, sighing internally. It had taken a while for things to quiet down for him, but there were still some people who insisted on causing him trouble.

The person had black clothes on, and had a long face as well as a goatee. He was obviously not some ordinary person. That person was Samuel, the alchemist from the Compass Pavilion.

Samuel let out a slight smile as various emotions played in his eyes. He did not say anything, but instead took out a mat from his storage space and placed it right in front of Jackie. After that, he sat down, seemingly prepared for a long conversation with Jackie.

Jackie frowned, starting to plan on changing his spot. He hated talking to these people.

Chapter 2963
Samuel took a deep breath as his eyes darted all over Jackie's body. That searching gaze was obvious to everyone.

Jackie frowned, not saying anything as he waited for Samuel.

After a long while, Samuel said, "I really want to know where you're from. I want to know what gives you that fearlessness. I know you're talented, both in alchemy and in martial skills. Anyone who knows you will definitely admire you and even be jealous of you…"

Jackie chuckled, not expecting that Samuel's tone would be like that.

Samuel did not seem to wait for a response as he continued, "Back then, I said you must not have been from Hestia Continent. I didn't just say that casually, but it was a judgment I made after thinking about it deeply. I still think that there's no way you are as strong as you are without a major force behind you. After your words with Rudeus earlier, I got even more curious…"

Samuel's gaze was incredibly meaningful at that moment.

Jackie could understand what he was trying to say. Samuel felt like Jackie was definitely from the Scarlet Pavilion if Jackie had not been from a different world. Yet, Jackie had just clashed with Rudeus from the Scarlet Pavilion. It was enough to prove that Jackie had nothing to do with them.

Jackie let out a slight laugh, "Is that all you wanted to tell me? You want to know where I'm from?"

Samuel took a deep breath as he calmed down, "I actually have a lot of questions. I feel like you're really very strange. You aren't afraid of anything, but you don't seem to have anyone to rely on. You are exceptionally talented, but your origins are mysterious. I really want to know who you are. Why are you making an enemy out of all the major forces in Hestia Continent?"

After hearing that, Jackie could not help but let out a laugh. He took a deep breath as exasperation was written on his face, "Is there something wrong with your head? Could you think about things before you speak? Since when did I try to make an enemy out of any of the major forces? Was it not all of you who tried to cause me trouble first? I merely fought back against you, and all of you say that I'm trying to make an enemy out of you!"

Jackie could not stand those words.

In the eyes of those major forces, only they were allowed to harm others, and not the other way around. They could treat others as they pleased, but as long as anyone bit back, those people would be punished. Jackie could not stand and could not accept that kind of logic.

Samuel frowned as his eyes glinted in helplessness. After sighing, he said, “We’re all intelligent people here, so why do you need to say that? Do you not understand what I mean? These are all unwritten rules that everyone understands. It’s always been like this, and you’re the only want who wants things your own way! You insist on going against the major forces. You’re no idiot, there has to be a reason you’re doing this…”

Chapter 2964
Hearing that, Jackie suddenly laughed in frustration. This was the first time that he failed to stop himself from laughing. So in the eyes of those disciples from the major forces, everything was an unwritten rule that everyone had to follow. Anyone who did not follow meant that they were going against the grain and making an enemy out of the major forces.

Jackie took a deep breath as he looked away, not wanting to bother arguing anymore.

He merely said coldly, “You’ll pay for those thoughts…”

After saying that, Jackie shut his mouth, not wanting to go any further. He knew very well that they would not think that they did anything wrong, and would just think that the one in the wrong was him. Even if the other party would have to take a loss, it was still reasonable. The major forces were not allowed to suffer any losses at all.

Rudy got angrier as he listened. His arms started to tremble as the fire started to show in his eyes. If he had failed to maintain his sense of reasoning, he would have just rushed out and grabbed Samuel by the collar, slapping that man a few times to think about what he said!

Samuel laughed, “We won’t pay any prices, but you definitely will. You’ll pay a painful price. Don‘t think that you’ll be safe forever just because you’re safe now. Your life will end once you’re out of Prosper City. The major forces will definitely work together to hunt you. Even if you’re very intelligent, there’s no way you can avoid everything. Just you wait. Time will tell you how crazy you’ve been acting…”

After saying that, Samuel stood up and kept his mat, distancing himself from Jackie.

Looking at his retreating back, there was a glint of mockery in Jackie’s eyes.

Aaron had silently heard what they said, and slowly understood Jackie’s grudges against those major forces. He felt like Jackie was crazy.

Aaron was caught even more off guard at the fact that Jackie's eyes were actually looking back in mockery after hearing those threats. It was as if he did not care about them at all, and that this matter was insignificant. He was confused, but felt like Jackie was being too arrogant as well.

He whispered, "Aren't you afraid?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said calmly, "Why should I be afraid? I know very well that these people want to kill me, but they'll definitely pay the price for that. We still don't know who'll suffer in the end…"

Jackie shut his mouth after saying that, starting to close his eyes to rest.

Aaron's lips twitched as he looked at Jackie in shock. Jackie's thoughts were completely incomprehensible. He sighed internally, feeling like Jackie really was a madman.

Time slowly ticked away, and it came time for the Heaven Array to be activated. At the moment, there was a faint golden glow on the array. Everyone who was participating needed to stand on the array.

Jackie stretched as he slowly stood up. He shot a look at Rudy as he whispered, "Once I enter, you're not allowed to respond to any challenges. Just shut your eyes and rest."

Rudy nodded, merely looking at Jackie with worry.

Jackie did not hesitate as he walked right over to the Heaven Array. At that moment, the other participants all walked up as well.

Chapter 2965
This was different from the other groups. After all, so much had happened. Rudeus remained to stare at Jackie with venomous looks in his eyes. He looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

Jackie ignored it.

Another person to step on the array was Nash, who was from the Scarlet Pavilion as well. Nash was quite close with Rudeus. He was also the leader of the seventh group. After all, his status and skills were the strongest. After he got on the Heaven Array, Nash looked right at Jackie.

He narrowed his eyes as he glared at Jackie coldly. He looked like a venomous snake that was poised to strike at any moment. Nash had deliberately stood beside Jackie, and constantly shot cold looks at Jackie.

Jackie could not be bothered interacting too much with someone like that and remained quiet the whole time.

After a moment, the golden light shone brighter, and everyone was enveloped in it. After that, the ground beneath them started to feel empty. Jackie was very familiar with that feeling. It was the sign of a long-distance transfer.

After half an hour, the feeling slowly disappeared, and their feet touched the ground again.

When he opened his eyes again, he found that he was in a completely foreign space. He looked around and found that they still seemed to be in a massive palace, but there were no carvings around them. He turned to look behind him and found that the palace was absolutely massive. He could actually not see the end of it with his own eyes.

Other than Jackie, the other alchemists had already heard about the competition venue. They were not too curious about it as they chatted and walked down the array.

Jackie followed suit, noticing that there were two identical arrays not far away that were shining in vibrant golden light.

In just a few moments, people appeared on the first array. The ten of them were dressed the same way. All of them had white robes with mythical beasts stitched on. The other array had ten people as well. Those ten were all in deep-colored robes. They did not have much of an expression on their faces, looking incredibly cold. It was obvious that the first ten were from White Marsh Continent while the latter ten were from Chaos Continent.

The thirty participants had all already arrived, but the atmosphere was a little heavy. They were all alchemists from different worlds, but they exchanged no pleasantries. They seemed incredibly cold. Even the alchemists from the same world did not really talk to each other.

Any conversations were all whispered. Thirty of them walked forward in silence. After about five minutes, Jackie noticed that they were in front of thirty identical furnaces. That was definitely something prepared for the tournament.

The moment they arrived, a wizened voice was heard, “The competition will begin in two hours!”

After that, the voice went silent. Everyone exchanged looks as alchemists from different worlds immediately pulled away from each other.

The Hestia Continent took up the western end. White Marsh Continent was in the middle while Chaos Continent was in the eastern end.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2966 - 2970

Chapter 2966
Jackie was incredibly curious as he looked at the alchemists from the two other worlds. He noticed that, compared to the stronger Chaos Continent, the alchemists from the White Marsh Continent seemed a lot prouder of themselves.

They looked at the alchemists from Hestia Continent with looks that were full of disdain, especially the alchemist that stood in front of all of them. Jackie knew that person. It was Ethan, who had mocked them through the image earlier. He was the leader of the alchemists from White Marsh Continent.

To not stir any unnecessary trouble, Jackie remained standing at the end of Hestia Continent's group.

Right after the voice announced that the tournament would only start after two hours, Ethan had a look of impatience on his face. After a while, he actually shouted, "There's no need to prepare at all. Why do we need to wait for so long? Just start right now. After getting the golden treasure, I still have a lot more things I need to do."

He sounded quite arrogant and sure that he would definitely get the golden treasure. His words had even offended the alchemists from the Chaos Continent.

The one standing in front of the alchemists from Chaos Continent turned to coldly look at Ethan, "You're not that skilled, but you sure have a lot to say. You claimed that you would definitely get the golden treasure as if you're the best in the world."

Ethan's face darkened. He absolutely hated anyone who spoke back to him. No matter how unreasonable he was being, he did not want anyone talking back

He turned to look at who seemed like the leader of the Chaos Continent's alchemists, and coldly said, "I might not be considered the best, but I can obviously get the golden treasure if I'm competing against trash like you. You were just here to make up the numbers! Emilio Lawrence, we've known each other for so many years. I know very well how strong you are. Don't think that I'll look at you better just because you said that, and think that you can snatch the golden treasure away from me!"

At that moment, the atmosphere was incredibly heated. He was practically slapping Emilio in the face. Emilio might not be someone who liked unnecessary trouble, but he would not let someone just bully him like that either.

Emilio narrowed his eyes, "We definitely have known each other for many years, and I know that you have a few tricks up your sleeves as well. That's why I don't have to hear you brag! I heard that you're so pleased with yourself that you even transferred your image to Hestia Continent. All you're good for is bragging in front of them. In Chaos

Continent, you would just be a slightly talented alchemist. You would have nothing to brag about at all!”

Ethan’s face reddened when he heard that, and turned around to point at Emilio, “All I’m doing is speaking the truth, you just don’t want to admit it. That’s why you’re lying and saying that I’m bragging. All of you were just here to make up the numbers. Do you think you’re worthy of taking the golden treasure away from me?”

If not for the laws that were in place, the two of them could have very well started fighting. The atmosphere between the two continents started to get more and more heated. Comparatively, Hestia Continent’s side was a lot quieter.

Emilio’s words had not only mocked Ethan, but had insulted Hestia Continent as well. It was possible that, in those people’s eyes, Hestia Continent was trash, and Hestia Continent were the ones who were really just there to make up the numbers.

Chapter 2967
Nash took a deep breath as his face reddened a little.

He was suffering from the humiliation, but there was nothing he could say. After all, the difference in skill was on full display for everyone to see. There was nothing he could say that could change that. However, even if he knew that he could not compare to the two other worlds, he still suffered hearing what was said.

Someone frowned and said, “This is crossing the line. Even if we can’t compete for the golden or bronze treasures, we should still be able to at least fight for the black treasure. I feel that Nash is capable enough!”

After that person finished, the others nodded immediately. They knew very well that Hestia Continent would not be able to fight for the top two places, but they were still hopeful for the last prize. After all, it was not like they had never gotten the black treasure before. Nash was also an alchemist from the Scarlet Pavilion, so he must be talented and skilled. Otherwise, there was no way he could have been an alchemist at a ninth-grade clan!

Nash frowned, not saying anything. He was strangely quiet. The argument on the other side got more and more intense. No one wanted to give way. Even though White Marsh Continent could not compete with the Chaos Continent, Ethan felt like he was quite good.

He felt like he could defeat all of the other alchemists in this round, so he was acting very prideful. No matter what Emilio said, Nash would retort with even more, so they started to argue.

Ethan crossed his arms and said, “I wasn’t doing that at all, I was just trying to tell Hestia Continent to not waste their Lime. Was I wrong? It’s not like you don’t know how

bad Hestia Continent is. I'm just giving them advice out of the goodness of my heart. It's their fault for not wanting to accept my kindness!"

Emilio snorted as he said in disdain, "Just say that you're showing off, no need to pretend to be kind. If you really were trying to be kind, how could they not accept it? Why don't you turn around to ask those alchemists from Hestia Continent how they feel about your words?!"

Ethan said, "I don't care what they feel. I just have to know that I really was trying to be kind. They're the ones who don't know their place and insist on participating! They won't admit that they're trash. After all, trash usually tends to not be self-ware!"

The two of them were actually starting to insult Hestia Continent more and more as they argued. Ethan started to hold back less and less, and Hestia Continent's alchemists really wanted to slap the two of them.

The alchemists from Hestia Continent were about to lose control. Ethan really was crossing the line. When they were in the inner city, the communications he had sent over were just pure mockery, how could it be out of kindness?

He was deliberately trying to twist things around, even presenting himself as a good person. Even Jackie was feeling the anger. That person was way too disgusting.

Nash took a deep breath and finally took a step forward. After all, he was the leader of the alchemists from Hestia Continent. If he was forced to just swallow everything, even the alchemists from Hestia Continent would start to look down on him.

Nash looked up and said, "The rules are clear for all to see, so why can't we participate? We've even gotten treasures before. If all of the alchemists from Hestia Continent are trash, then there's no way we could have gotten two treasures. One of them is even a bronze treasure!"

Nash said that to defend Hestia Continent's honor. In truth, his words were completely reasonable, it was not like all of the alchemists from Hestia Continent were trash.

Chapter 2968
If they really were all trash, then how could they have gotten any treasures?

Yet, the moment he said that Ethan started to laugh in a very exaggerated manner. He turned to coldly look at Nash, "You only got two treasures, how did you even have the face to say that? Have you ever gotten any golden treasures? You haven't gotten a single one! White Marsh Continent has gotten two golden treasures, one bronze treasure, and three black treasures! Hestia Continent only has two treasures in total and not a single golden one. You're actually saying you're not trash?"

“Who else would be trash if not you? Based on what I know, those two treasures are already the limit of what Hestia Continent will be able to get. In the following few groups, you‘ll definitely return empty-handed. It‘s precisely because of that, that I asked that you do not waste your time. You’re such an eyesore!”

After Ethan said that, the other alchemists from White Marsh Continent behind him started to laugh as well. They looked at Hestia Continent with mocking gazes.

Jackie could not help but frown when he heard all of that. Ethan’s words did not seem to just be mockery, Jackie had heard something else from it as well. It was as if Ethan knew about Hestia Continent’s situation very clearly, like someone was giving him reports.

After Ethan said all of that, he still did not want to let Hestia Continent off. He felt like Nash trying to uphold Hestia Continent’s honor was a challenge to him, so how could Ethan let him off easily?

Ethan snorted lightly as he walked over.

All of Hestia Continent’s alchemists frowned at the same time as they looked at him in alarm, despite the fact that everyone knew that there was no way Ethan could attack them thanks to the restrictions. However, Ethan obviously looked like he did not harbor any good intentions.

Sure enough, after he walked over, he pushed Nash aside and looked right at Jackie.

He pointed right at Jackie’s alchemist badge and said, “I told you! You were all trash! You really are here to make up the numbers. You refused to admit it but just look at this person. Look at what’s on his chest!”

As he said that, Ethan deliberately raised his voice, letting everyone their hear him clearly. After that, he purposely moved aside, pointing at Jackie’s alchemist badge.

At that moment the alchemists from the two other worlds all saw the sixth-grade alchemist badge on Jackie’s chest.

“He‘s actually a sixth-grade alchemist. It looks like Hestia Continent has really run out of people. It’s only the seventh group, but do they not have enough people anymore? They don‘t even have any more seventh-grade alchemists left?”

Even the alchemists from the Chaos Continent joined in to mock them this time. Everyone looked at the alchemists from Hestia Continent with looks full of disdain.

Jackie’s sixth- grade alchemist badge really did make it seem like he was just here to make up the numbers.

Jackie's lips twitched as he was rendered speechless, suddenly regretting not getting a change of clothes. He had never cared about it but did not want to waste his time on those people and cause himself any trouble either. He had thought that no one would notice him if he was at the end of the group, but Ethan had actually rushed over and pushed everyone aside to point him out. It was as if Ethan already knew everything that happened in the inner city.

Jackie frowned as he started to look at Ethan inquisitively.

If Ethan did not know anything, there was no way Ethan would have pointed him out. After all, he had been standing at the back, not attracting any attention.

Chapter 2969
It seemed like someone really was giving Ethan information about what happened in the inner city. They had even told Ethan What he looked like, which was how Ethan managed to point Jackie out in the crowd.

Jackie took a deep breath as he frowned in exasperation. Trouble really did have a way of finding him wherever he went. He had thought that nothing troublesome would happen as long as he maintained a low enough profile.

The sounds of mockery were constantly heard, and Hestia Continent's alchemists were thoroughly embarrassed. All of them were incredibly angry as a few of them turned to glare at Jackie hatefully.

It was like they were trying to tell Jackie that he was wrong with their eyes.

When Jackie felt those gazes, he could not help but let out a laugh as he said, "What are you looking at me for? Am I the one mocking you? You don't dare to face them, so you're trying to face me instead?"

Those people really were strange. It was clearly Ethan who ran over and started to mock them. It was clearly Ethan who had looked for trouble first. Yet, they knew that they could not beat Ethan, so they turned to look at Jackie. It was as if Jackie had been the one who did everything.

Nash clenched his teeth and looked at Jackie hatefully, "I've never seen someone as shameless as you. Weren't you the cause of this? If you didn't insist on participating, would we have been insulted like this?!"

Nash was furious, his chest rising up and down rapidly. He was practically about to erupt. He cast all his anger on Jackie, as if Jackie had been the reason for everyone.

Jackie had insisted on participating even after they tried to stop him. So what if Jackie was here?

There was no way Jackie could get any results. It was completely useless.

They would just get humiliated even more. He was dragging down all the alchemists from Hestia Continent with him!

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking at Nash like he was looking at a stray dog by the streets. Ethan definitely knew something. He turned to look at Jackie curiously. There was not much mockery in his eyes, but instead curiosity.

Ethan was curious as to where Jackie got the courage to say all of that. He laughed and said, “Brat, you can really talk. You seem to not be willing to submit to anyone. Do you think you’re the best in the world?”

After saying that, Ethan could not help but to laugh. In his heart, he felt like Jackie’s actions were like those of a clown. He was merely trying to tease that clown.

Jackie looked up and glanced at Ethan, “Are you trying to make sure everyone knows that you exist? You’re just like an ant, scurrying everywhere you can. It’s like you have to tell everyone that you’re amazing. If you really have the skills, you wouldn’t need to show off like this at all! You just look like a joke to me.”

Those words immediately shocked everyone present, causing them to widen their eyes. They never expected that a sixth-grade alchemist from Hestia Continent would actually say something like that. He was practically cursing at Ethan, tossing Ethan’s dignity to the side.

Jackie had completely stunned Ethan.

Ethan’s lips twitched in anger, unable to even form any coherent thoughts.

After Emilio heard that, he looked at Jackie in surprise.

After that, he suddenly clapped in front of everyone, agreeing, “You really are quite brave. I have to say, your words are quite reasonable!”

Chapter 2970
As he said that, Jackie’s tone was incredibly calm. It was as if he was talking about something completely unimportant. Even though Ethan did not reveal everything, Jackie already managed to figure out the deeper meaning behind his words.

Naturally, they were not allowed to fight at that moment. Furthermore, if the alchemists really started fighting, the results were not completely certain.

So he wanted to say that, he might not be able to do anything to Jackie here, but he would not let Jackie off easily after Jackie returned to Hestia Continent. He would do everything he could to kill Jackie.

After what happened in Hestia Continent thirty thousand years ago, Hestia Continent had been isolated from everything else. No one could go into other worlds through that barrier. If he wanted to kill Jackie, he would have to use Hestia Continent' s warriors.

That was where the problem came from. Ethan was an alchemist from White Marsh Continent. Normally, he should not have anything to do with Hestia Continent, so why would anyone be helping him?

That involved a lot more things, but anyone with a brain could be able to understand many things from their conversation.

Ethan froze, not expecting Jackie to grasp things so quickly. Jackie had actually figured things out before he could say anything.

His lips stiffened as his eyes darted around. He suddenly regretted what he said. After all, some things should not have been revealed to the public. However, there was no way he could take back his words. Ethan did not try to explain anything, but the venom and hatred in his eyes deepened. He looked at Jackie as if Jackie was his mortal enemy.

Jackie snorted, looking away and saying plainly, “There’s no reason to continue fighting like this. My skills, and whether I’ll drag Hestia Continent down will be seen when the results are out. Since I’m here taking part, I’m naturally confident enough to get a good placement.”

Ethan’s eyes lit up when he heard that. He suddenly raised his voice as he said, “It looks like you really don’t know your place. Does a sixth-grade alchemist like you really think you‘ll amount to anything?!”

Jackie’s words had given Ethan a chance to fight back He let out a cold smile as he continued, “There really are all sorts of people in the world. Do you think you can just brag however you want to? Look in a mirror before you speak. You’re a sixth-grade alchemist, do you really think you can get any good placements? You’re going to refine sixth-grade pills?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2971 - 2975

Chapter 2971
After that, the alchemists from White Marsh Continent started to fight back. A sharp-mouthed alchemist immediately said loudly, “The alchemists from Hestia Continent don’t have any skills, but they‘re definitely good at bragging. Don’t think that we’re idiots that will believe you! “

“That’s right! Don’t you think that what you said is just hilarious? You actually told us to wait for the results to judge you. Who do you think you are? There’s no need to wait for any results!”

“If you were a seventh- grade alchemist, we might have had to think about it and see if really have the skills. Where does a sixth- grade alchemist like you get all your courage? Are sixth-grade alchemists actually that impressive in Hestia Continent?”

Those harsh words kept on being spoken. The alchemists of White Marsh Continent refused to let Jackie off easily. They did everything they could to criticize Jackie!

Not only did they criticize Jackie, but they also insulted all the alchemists from Hestia Continent as well. They did not bother holding back on their words at all.

The alchemists from Hestia Continent were incredibly furious listening to those words. All of them were incredibly indignant, and wanted to retort. However, they could not figure out what to say. After all, they were right.

Jackie definitely was a sixth-grade alchemist. As long as he had the badge of a sixth-grade alchemist on his chest, there was nothing they could say that would be more convincing. So, they really had nothing to say bag.

They were forced to keep their looks of indignance on their faces, unable to say anything. Since there was nothing they could say, they threw their hatred onto Jackie instead.

Chapter 2972
Some of the alchemists from Hestia Continent started to turn and look at Jackie, “Can you just stop talking so much? If you really have the skills, we won’t stop you from saying anything.”

“Can you just look at the badge on your chest before you speak? You’re not even a seventh-grade alchemist, so why are you saying all of that? You’re just embarrassing the whole Hestia Continent with you!”

“That’s right! It’s one thing to show off when you’re in the inner city, but you’re still so arrogant here. If you had a reason to be like this, we wouldn’t stop you. Yet, you have no right to be, so you’re just going to be mocked by others!”

Jackie sighed helplessly. Looking at those people, he had to admit that they had a point. After all, they did not know about him.

Jackie let out a laugh as he suddenly felt like he could not just get angered without being compensated. He looked at Ethan who was speaking the loudest. He said in his usual tone, “So you don’t think I can get a treasure, right?”

The moment he said that, Ethan laughed out loud again. Ethan’s stomach was starting to hurt from laughing so much as he pointed at Jackie, “Why are you so funny? Do you really think you can get a treasure?”

Jackie nodded calmly, “I think I can!”

The moment he said that everyone was stunned. They started to look at Jackie like they were looking at an idiot.

Did he know what he was saying? Did he know how hilarious what he said was?

Someone with a sixth-grade alchemist badge on his chest was actually saying that he would place in the top three in this round. Even black treasures were not something just anyone could get.

Among so many alchemists that Hestia Continent had sent, only one of them had gotten a black treasure!

Nash could no longer hold back as he frowned at Jackie, “Do you know what you’re saying? Can you just shut up and stop embarrassing us? Don’t you know they’re laughing at you?!”

Jackie nodded. He was no idiot. He could naturally tell that they were doing everything they could to mock him, but he was already immune to all of that. They could say whatever they wanted to, it was not like he had never heard anything like that before.

When Nash saw that Jackie nodded calmly, he was stunned before he said in exasperation, “You really are something else!”

Chapter 2973
Nash was being completely serious as he said that. He really did think that Jackie was a complete weirdo. Otherwise, he would not be acting so brainless.

He felt like Jackie was crazy, but he did not want one crazy guy to tarnish the reputation of the whole of Hestia Continent. He took a deep breath as he said seriously, “You’d better shut up right now. If you continue speaking, I won’t let you off!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not caring as he said, “What can you do to me? Are you planning on attacking me now? I have my own plans for saying this, it has nothing to do with you…”

After that, he looked at Ethan again. At that moment, Ethan was laughing vigorously.

Jackie’s lips twitched as he sighed. However, he composed himself after thinking about his earlier plan. He looked up at Ethan and said seriously, “Why don’t we make a bet then? If I get a treasure, no matter what kind, then I win. Otherwise, I’ll lose. Let’s bet a million spirit crystals!”

The moment he said that everyone went quiet. All of them widened their eyes as they looked at Jackie, stunned.

Not far away from Jackie, a handsome alchemist from Hestia Continent could not help but say, “You never cease to amaze me. Do you actually want to bet against them? Don’t forget that bets go both ways. You’ll have to give them a million spirit crystals if you lose!”

Jackie nodded, pursing his lips as he said in exasperation, “I’m not a three year old kid. Of course, I know that bets go both ways. Didn’t I already say that I lose if I don’t get a treasure? If I lose, I’ll give him a million spirit crystals. If I win, he’ll give me a million spirit crystals. It’s just that simple. There’s no need to explain…”

As Jackie said, the surroundings got even quieter. It was so quiet that one could literally hear a pin drop. Jackie’s actions completely confused them.

Could Jackie really be so confident, or did he have other plans?

Even Ethan did not know what to say. He frowned in silence for a long time before he said, “Are you crazy? Do you even know what you‘re doing? A million spirit crystals? Do you think that’s a small number? Can you even afford a million spirit crystals?”

Jackie nodded earnestly as he said in an incredibly calm tone, “Of course, I can. If you don’t believe me, we can sign a contract. No one can go against the bet as long as we sign it. If I lose, I have to give you a million spirit crystals!”

At that moment, everyone finally realized that Jackie was not joking. He was being serious. He actually did think that he could get a treasure.

Someone started to whisper, “Could this guy have been playing a fool all the while? Can he really get a treasure?”

“Impossible! If he really did have the skills, his fellow alchemists from Hestia Continent would definitely know even if we didn’t. It’s obvious from their faces that they don’t think this guy can do it!”

After that person said that, everyone nodded, feeling like that was an accurate read on the situation. It was the first time they met Jackie, but Jackie was from the Hestia Continent. The other alchemists there must definitely know who Jackie is.

Chapter 2974
Yet, the way they treated Jackie made it obvious that Jackie was no one extraordinary. It was instead that alchemists called Nash who was the leader of those alchemists.

Since that was the case, how was Jackie so bold?

The discussions around them intensified. In the end, Jackie’s attitude really confused them, since Jackie had spoken with such confidence.

He might have really been that confident the whole time as if he was really that skilled. After all, there was no way to take back the bet after it was signed, they would have to take out a million spirit crystals if they lost.

A million spirit crystals were no small number. Even a chosen disciple from a ninth-grade clan would have to think about it. They were all still young and had not gathered as much wealth as the older alchemists. At that moment, they were starting to get confused. Even Nash did not know what to do.

He felt like Jackie was completely insane, or Jackie would not have done something so crazy.

Could Jackie really just have too much money, or did Jackie have other goals in mind?

After thinking about it over and over, he still could not understand what Jackie was aiming for. There was no way Jackie could get a good result. Instead, Jackie was about to offer up a million spirit crystals for free.

Nash took a deep breath before he whispered to Jackie, “Are you actually crazy? Do you really just have nowhere to spend a million spirit crystals? If you don’t, you can just give them to me!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he glanced at Nash, not answering Nash. He had planned on raising the bet to two million spirit crystals but felt like it might cause trouble if he did so.

They would wonder if he could really take out two million spirit crystals and push the matter, insisting that he showed them. He could actually not do that. Even though Jackie had accumulated quite a lot of wealth, it was still not at two million spirit crystals.

After thinking about it, he pushed it down to a million. Jackie was speechless at the discussions around him. He could not be bothered talking to all of them and did not even have any intentions to argue.

He looked at Ethan and said firmly, “Stop wasting time, just tell me if you’ll take up the bet or not. If you do, let’s hurry up and sign the contract. If you don’t want to, then hurry up and say no.”

Ethan looked at Jackie with a completely different expression after that, ‘Is this kid being serious? Is something wrong with his head?‘

Thinking about it, he could not help but be sure of one thing. There was definitely something wrong with Jackie’s head, or Jackie would not have done that.

He sighed, since Jackie was willing to give him so many spirit crystals, it would be wrong of him to say no. Ethan nodded, “Since you want to give me spirit crystals, there’s no reason for me to reject it.”

After saying that, he pulled out a contract from his storage space. Both of them wrote down the bet on the paper clearly. After making sure that nothing was wrong, they dropped their blood on the contract. When their blood fused with the contract, it resonated with heaven and earth, putting it into effect.

After doing that, Jackie returned to his original spot, not wasting any time. At that moment, everyone was thoroughly confused at Jackie’s actions.

Chapter 2975
However, since Jackie had signed a contract, they could not say what they wanted to. They even started to anticipate the results of the round, wanting to see if Jackie could get a treasure.

Two hours were almost up. That wizened old voice was heard once again, and only then did they realize that two hours passed so quickly.

“Two hours is over, the competition will begin immediately! This time, the competition is very simple. Each of you will have to refine a Purple Sun Pill. It’s an ancient pill that is in the middle-seventh grade. The recipe for this pill doesn’t exist in third-grade worlds. You have five days to refine it. After five days, we will check your results!”

Everyone was stunned after the old voice said that. Every round was different, and they had been wondering what this round would be like.

After the announcement, all of them were alert. Most of them had only heard about the Purple Sun Pill for the first time, regardless of what the effect was, its grade stunned them. It was actually just a middle seventh-grade pill. Even though they heard that it was an ancient pill, they cared less about that fact and more about the grade.

Most of them should be able to perfectly refine the Purple Sun Pill. They would be competing on the refinement rate of the pill runes and the pill itself. After all, the better the refinement rate, the better the effect would be.

They could not help but start to whisper amongst themselves.

Jackie could not hear what the alchemists from the other two worlds were saying, but he could hear what the people around him were talking about Hestia Continent's side was noticeably a little excited, someone even said, "I asked my fellow student before I came. He told me that they had to refine an upper seventh-grade pill during their round. Upper seventh-grade pills are not too different from eighth-grade pills. I was actually quite worried. If I had to refine an eighth-grade pill, I probably wouldn't be able to…"

"I can't believe we're so lucky. It's actually a middle seventh-grade pill. I'm quite confident in pills at that level. We even get five whole days!"

Everyone relaxed when they heard that they would get five days, some of them even started to smile.

"I thought that it would be very hard, but I can't believe we're lucky enough to get such an easy test."

"If they ask us about it after we leave, we can at least say that we managed to refine the pill… It would be like the rest, not even being able to reach fifty percent refinement after trying so hard!"

"I'm a bit curious. Why is this test so relaxed? They gave us five whole days!"

"Who knows? Maybe the Purple Sun Pill is something very complicated that needs a long time to refine…"

No matter what they were discussing, most of them were in a good mood. Even if they had not seen the recipe, they were still given a lot of time. The level of the pill was not that high either.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2976 - 2980

Chapter 2976
On the side of Hestia, Noah was the only one visibly disconcerted. There was a frown on his face as he seemed to be deep in thought.

At that moment, a green light shone in the air as small jade tubes descended from the light, falling into the hands of all the alchemists present.

Jackie reached out and grabbed one. His divine senses entered the tube, and he quickly read the contents of it. The tube was, in fact, the recipe for the Purple Sun Pill. The contents were incredibly detailed and even specified certain important parts that needed to be focused on. Furthermore, the tube had various rules that were specific to this round.

All the materials had been prepared and were placed under the furnaces. Everyone had only two chances, so there were three sets of materials prepared. Failing the third time would mean instant elimination, and despite how well they performed, there would be no consideration given.

There was even a small paragraph written down. On it was the fact that the Purple Sun Pill needed a total of 5600 pill runes, out of which 983 of them were ancient pill runes.

The moment they saw that paragraph, everyone was flabbergasted. The relaxed atmosphere from earlier disappeared as everyone visibly frowned.

5600 pill runes were not much when it came to seventh-grade pills, but out of that number, 983 of them were ancient pill runes, which made things completely different. It did not raise the difficulty by just a level but several times over instead!

The jade tube illustrated all of the pill runes clearly. In particular, it paid special attention to the ancient pill runes.

They used their divine senses to look through all of the pill runes, but they regretfully realized that they did not know a single one of them. They had not even seen them before. That meant that they would need to learn all of the ancient pill runes from scratch. They only had a short five days to memorize and successfully condense those pill runes. They would also need to make sure they were at least 50 percent refined.

All this amounted to the spike of level difficulty that they could not accept. It was incredibly hard for alchemists to rank up. The difference between the two grades of alchemists was incredibly wide, and the key lay in pill runes.

After all, higher-level pills needed more pill runes to be etched into them. Even if they were not ancient pill runes, remembering and condensing 983 new runes was not something that simple.

Knowing all this, many of the alchemists present began fearing they would fail this stage entirely.

Jackie sighed as he pursed his lips helplessly. This explained why they were given five days for this round. With the difficulty of the test, five days was barely something to utilize, what with needing to memorize 983 new ancient pill runes in just five days. After that, they needed to condense those runes to a 50-percent refinement rate.

This was not easy at all!

The alchemists from the Chaos Continent could not keep their composure. Even though there was a difference in the skills of alchemists between the worlds, none of them thought that this round was an easy one.

Ethan and Emilio's faces sank.

Meanwhile, a few alchemists muttered among themselves, "I thought that we'd be getting a break by now, yet this is what happens!"

"Isn't this too hard? I feel like most of us here won't even be able to refine a Purple Sun Pill, let alone one at fifty percent refinement. Anyone who manages to get forty percent is impressive enough!"

"It seems like we're very unlucky. It' s not like we don't know what the earlier rounds had to go through. Compared to the earlier six groups, this group is noticeably several times harder!"

Chapter 2977
"They're going to ask us about the pills we refined and if we succeeded once we go back. They'd laugh at us if we answer honestly!"

"That's right! It's obvious that this round is set to make things difficult for us! I regret joining the seventh group now. If I knew it'd get this difficult, I wouldn't have joined. I should've just joined earlier or later!"

Complaints began to pop as they bemoaned their fate. Before this, they were convinced that they had gotten lucky. After all, they were given a lot of time, and the Purple Sun Pill's grade had been so low. When they knew that the Purple Sun Pill actually needed 983 ancient pill runes, none of them believed they were that lucky anymore. Instead, they felt like 'difficult' was a poor description of their predicament. They felt like they were being attacked by the difficulty instead.

Of everyone present, Jackie was the only one who showed not much of a reaction while everyone else was, interesting enough, panicked.

Ethan sighed as he looked at Emilio meaningfully.

When he saw that even Emilio looked like he was not relaxed, Ethan felt bitter. No matter what kind of bet he had made against Jackie before, his main competitor had been Emilio the whole time, and he did not want to lose to him whatsoever.

The golden treasure was his.

He wanted to earn glory for White Marsh Continent and be a hero for his continent. He would not allow Emilio to exceed him!

Emilio pursed his lips helplessly. He might not covet the golden treasure as much as Ethan did, but he still wanted to get first place. After all, not only would he be able to greatly benefit Chaos Continent if he did so, but the other alchemists would respect him as well as earning rewards for himself. As the one who won the golden treasure, he would be able to pick out the most valuable item from it.

Nonetheless, this task was proven to be immensely difficult, and he was not even sure if he would be able to succeed in the end. The more thought of it made his lips twitch as he silently motivated himself.

At that moment, Ethan coldly smiled and said to him rather proudly, “You don’t look like you’re that confident. With your standards, even refining a Purple Sun Pill at fifty percent refinement is a problem.

“Do remember that as long as the pill doesn’t reach fifty percent refinement, the pill will be discarded. The Purple Sun Pill will only be successfully refined if every pill is at fifty percent refinement!”

Emilio frowned as he turned to look at Ethan spitefully.

“You don’t have to tell me that. Isn’t this common knowledge? Stop trying to pick a fight!”

Ethan, however, did not reach aggressively and merely smiled as he sneered, “You’re just trying to hide your embarrassment with anger. Whatever, just don’t look like a fool afterward. If you fail to refine it, no one will have any results. I’d be the only one in the top three!”

With that, Ethan chuckled. He was very confident in himself, and even though the round was incredibly difficult, he had a feeling that he would be able to win flawlessly.

Emilio furrowed his eyebrows, hating Ethan even more at that point. He gritted his teeth and hissed, “Can you just shut up? Stop gloating before the results are even out. If you’re the one failing in the end, that’d be even more embarrassing!”

Both Ethan and Emilio hated each other, even at sight, and verbally attacked one another.

Jackie, however, was not interested in such arguments. Instead, he was trying to calculate how long it would take him to successfully refine the pill.

At that moment, he happened to see Nash looking over, his eyes inquisitive and hesitant. It was hard to tell what Nash was thinking. Jackie frowned, not asking anything.

After a good while, Nash asked, “You still look so confident, even at this point?”

Chapter 2978
Nash’s eyes widened as he questioned Jackie.

For a moment, Jackie did not know what to say. He assumed that no one would bother talking to him, seeing as he was the only odd one out with his odd behavior, yet Nash actually approached him first and asked him a question.

Jackie frowned. He did not want to have anything to do with Nash, but alas, Nash’s question attracted quite a few gazes. Practically all of the alchemists from Hestia next to Jackie turned to look at him curiously. Some of them began to approach him with questions, too.

“That’s true. Are you not scared? You’re just a sixth-grade alchemist. just five thousand pill runes should be difficult enough for you, let alone with nine hundred and eighty-three pill runes within. Are you not worried at all? Do you think you’ll be able to condense those ancient pill runes?”

“Surely you don’t think five days is a lot of time? Do you think that you’ll be able to condense nine hundred and eighty-three ancient pill runes in five days, and reach fifty percent refinement?”

“To be honest with you, I don’t know what’s going on in that head of yours. Even us seventh-grade alchemists feel like this round is much harder. We don’t even know if we’ll be able to refine the Purple Sun Pill in the end.”

“You don’t seem like you care at all. You don’t seem worried about the bet you made earlier. Is one million spirit crystals not important to you at all?”

“He’s probably in his ignorant little world. Anyone who knows a thing or two won’t be so confused!”

Nash looked at Jackie with a serious expression, trying to see something from Jackie's expression. After all, Jackie had heard everything, and Nash wanted to see past his expressions.

Would Jackie still be as composed after he had heard the truth?

After observing him for a while, Nash noticed with some shock that Jackie's expression did not change at all. It seemed like Jackie really did not care, and really was incredibly confident in himself.

Nash frowned. Minutes later, he chuckled and said, "I think I overestimated you. I thought that you had some other reason for doing anything, but this whole time, you've been acting like an idiot. You might not actually have any other reasons. You're just so confident in yourself thanks to your ignorance! You just don't know how things are."

Nash then turned, no longer bothering with Jackie. The other alchemists, too, looked away as they agreed with Nash's words.

Everyone believed that Jackie was just ill in the head and did not know common sense. Only people like that would be able to act nonchalant in the face of such a difficult challenge. Even they did not know if they would be able to successfully refine the Purple Sun Pill!

He was just a sixth-grade alchemist, yet he was barely perturbed that it seemed like he was an incredible talent. After going through vigorous discussions, the crowd slowly quieted down. After all, no matter what they said, they could never change the contents of the task.

Some of the alchemists had already accepted their fate as they paced around in concern. They noticed that all of the furnaces were exactly the same, both from the looks and the age. They casually picked out a furnace and decided against wasting any more time.

One individual planned on refining the Purple Sun Pill right away. He had just walked close to a furnace when the surrounding three feet around him were suddenly covered by a barrier, covering him in a flash.

Chapter 2979
The barrier of mist seemed ethereal as it blocked everyone's line of sight, leaving everyone stunned at the sudden change.

The familiar wizened voice was heard again. "After choosing a furnace, a barrier will be placed around you, cutting off all contact with the outside world. When you've refined a pill or decided to give up, you can get rid of the barrier."

Jackie raised an eyebrow at this and could not help but feel impressed by the competition's organizer. Everything had been properly arranged. With the barrier, he would be spared a lot of trouble.

He did not have to worry about anyone interrupting him. After all, he would be separated from the outside the moment the barrier was up. The person inside would not know how others were progressing and thus would not feel pressured. They would be able to get past five days peacefully.

Jackie let out a sigh as he frowned and looked at the furnaces. He could not control What everyone else was doing, but his only thought was just to quickly finish the round.

Jackie might have the memories from the past and be confident with those ancient pill runes, but he refused to kick things back and take a breather until the results were out.

He wanted to give himself enough time.

The furnaces were split into six rows of five. After thinking about it, he walked to the last one in the sixth row. He was already used to looking for corners. In the end, all the furnaces were exactly the same, so there was no difference no matter which one he picked. When he stepped within the 90-centimeter range from it, a bundle of mist rose around him, turning into a barrier that cut him off from the outside world.

At that moment, Jackie felt more relaxed than he ever had, despite the fact that he was already calm during this time. Unless anyone crossed the line with their words or directly affected Jackie's benefits, he would not bother with them, treating their words as nonsense. However, everyone was still too noisy, much to his chagrin. The barrier separated him completely from the outside world, which made Jackie quite happy.

Finally, he did not need to listen to their nonsense anymore.

The last furnace on the sixth row was incredibly close to where Jackie had been. After he walked over, the people around him had not even had the time to react before the barrier separated Jackie from everyone else. He was the second person to enter a barrier. When everyone else reacted, they felt their lips twitching.

Exasperated, Ethan snorted. "I guarantee that something is wrong with this kid's head. He seems more enthusiastic than anyone, jumping into the challenge after someone else started. I wonder if he's that confident or if he's just ignorant."

The alchemists from White Marsh Continent behind Ethan all discussed among themselves as well.

"Who knows what goes on in his head? It looks like he doesn't know what nine hundred eighty-three ancient pill runes actually represent. Otherwise, how could he be so confident? Even I'm not confident that I'll be able to perfectly condense nine hundred

eighty-three pill ancient pill runes in five days. We even need to guarantee that they'll have a fifty percent refinement rate!"

After saying that, he sighed. It felt as though he was shouldering two large rocks on his shoulders, causing him to not be able to even stand up straight. He could not handle the difficulty.

Chapter 2980
If he truly failed to refine a Purple Sun Pill, he would be laughed at after he got back to White Marsh Continent. Even if he said that it was much harder this time, no one would care. After all, the Purple Sun Pill was a middle seventh- grade pill. To them, it was not hard at all!

Thinking about that, he sighed as he looked up and said to Ethan, "Ethan, do you think that they'll still laugh at me ifI fail to complete the Purple Sun Pill if I tell them that it has nine hundred eighty- three ancient pill runes?"

That person truly cared about his dignity. He was worried that he would be laughed at.

Ethan snorted, not even bothering to look back as he replied, "You've forgotten how they are. Do you think they'll care about your excuses? Failure is failure. No matter how reasonable your excuses are, they'll still ignore them. You'd better make sure you can refine a Purple Sun Pill. Otherwise, you'll be laughing stock when you get back."

Ethan did not exaggerate anything nor did he have any intentions of poking fun at that guy.

When the alchemists from White Marsh Continent behind him heard that, they felt uncomfortable as though they had been splashed by a bucket of cold water.

He sighed and grumbled for a long time before they started choosing their furnaces. Time had already started to tick away, and they were already cursing that there was not enough time. If they delayed any more, it would affect their results. Moments later, everyone had chosen a furnace for themselves and entered the barriers, temporarily cutting off contact from the outside world.

Meanwhile, three sets of materials for Purple Sun pills had been taken out by Jackie in one go and placed on the table. The Purple Sun Pill was not a very high- grade pill, but it was still in the middle of the seventh grade. The materials needed were not cheap, either.

The first step of the refinement process was to turn all the materials into liquid.

Jackie picked up a purple maple stone and placed it in his palm. He looked at the other materials. Refining a Purple Sun Pill needed three purple maple stones, one red sun herb, two phoenix grasses, and three white spirit flowers.

The price of those materials was at least a few thousand spirit crystals altogether. After the Purple Sun Pill was refined, the price would increase by two or three times. He wondered if he would be able to bring the pill with him after he was done. If he could, he might be able to sell it for a good price.

Jackie looked at money like he looked at his life at that point. After all, the ninth- grade crystals needed far too many spirit crystals to buy. Jackie would never give up on any chance to earn more spirit crystals.

After looking at the materials, Jackie was in no hurry to start refining. Instead, he took out the jade tube and looked over at all the pill runes needed for the Purple Sun Pill, especially the ancient pill runes. Not only did Jackie know those pill runes, but he even remembered them as well. The only problem was that he had never refined them before, and his memories had not synchronized with his body. Because of that, Jackie was not sure how much time he would need to condense all those pill runes.

Jackie shut his eyes for a moment before taking several deep breaths and getting rid of all other thoughts from his mind. Afterward, he started to condense the pill runes.

His hands constantly moved as a faint golden glow could be seen on his fingertips. Drawing pill runes did not just need true energy; willpower was needed as well.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2981 - 2985

Chapter 2981
After two hours, 50 ancient pill runes had been perfectly condensed, with only two not condensed at fifty percent.

When he condensed the 57th pill rune, he made a mistake, causing all of the pill runes from before to collapse with an audible blast. Jackie frowned as he watched the pill runes regress into mere pill aura and sighed regretfully. The ancient pill runes were more difficult than regular pill runes, he would admit.

It seemed like he would need to spend a lot of time synchronizing his body and mind. Even though his pace could not be considered that quick, it was far better than everyone else's. Other than Jackie, the one most confident in his abilities among the twenty-nine other alchemists was Ethan from White Marsh Continent.

At that moment, Ethan sat cross-legged. He was not as lucky as Jackie to have the memories of an ancient hero. He needed to memorize all of the ancient pill runes before he attempted condensing them.

Time started to tick away. After a whole day, Ethan opened his eyes. He sighed as his hand constantly moved, trying to condense the pill runes. Try as he did, however, he could not catch up to Jackie's progress. After all, all he needed to train his body, while this was his first time trying.

After 15 minutes, Ethan finally managed to condense the first pill rune, but it was only refined at 30 percent. Nonetheless, he was satisfied, seeing as it was only his first try, and it was a very good sign of things to come. When he started drawing the second pill rune, he made a mistake and did not control the density of the pill aura properly, causing the pill rune to collapse.

Looking at the pill runes turned into pill aura, Ethan was not discouraged at all. He still had time and chances for blunders.

As they threw themselves into the task, three days went by in a flash. At noon on the third day, the barrier on the fifth furnace on the sixth row dispersed.

Jackie's figure appeared in the barrier. What was different from before was the fact that he held a purple-colored pill in his hand that emitted a dense fragrance.

Jackie frowned and turned around, looking at his surroundings and not knowing what to do next. After all, someone needed to appraise the pill after the pill was refined.

Just as Jackie was wondering where he needed to put the pill, the jade tube in Jackie's hand suddenly let out a purple glow. Before Jackie could react, it sucked the Purple Sun

Pill in Jackie's hand inside. After the tube sucked the Purple Sun Pill in, it shook vigorously.

Jackie frowned in bewilderment.

Right after that, the jade tube shot out as if it had been summoned. On the roof, another green glow appeared as it absorbed the tube that was flying over. Everything had happened in a flash, and Jackie widened his mouth slightly in shock.

He suddenly wondered if there was someone hiding behind that green light. After all, assessing pills was not something laws or arrays could do. It needed to be looked at in detail by an alchemist to determine if it was good or bad.

Chapter 2982
Not long after, the green glow disappeared after it had absorbed the jade tube as if it had never appeared before. Jackie raised an eyebrow, no longer dwelling on the question.

He left the furnace and headed to where alchemists of Hestia had gathered earlier. He turned to look at the barriers around the other furnaces. He was the only one whose barrier had dissipated.

It meant that he was the first one to finish refining the pill and leave the barrier. He made a mental calculation and realized that it was already noon on the third day. He felt like most alchemists would not give up that easily, so there should only be people coming out on the fourth day onward. Thinking of this, he took out a mat from Mustard Seed and placed it on the floor before he shut his eyes to rest.

Sure enough, Jackie's prediction came true. Even if they might not garner fruitful results, everyone did the best they could. They would not come out of the barrier unless they were forced to.

A whole day had passed before another alchemist's barrier was lifted. This alchemist walked out of the barrier with a dark look on his face. When one came, others followed.

Slowly, five alchemists were forced to walk away after expending all their materials.

Of those five alchemists, three were from Hestia, one was from the White Marsh Continent, and the last was from the Chaos Continent. As they stepped out, none of them looked the slightest bit joyful. They were not even in any mood to mock the others as they walked back to their original positions. The three from Hestia arrived in front of Jackie. After they measured Jackie for a moment, the three of them exchanged looks of curiosity.

The three of them did not say anything at the start. All of them retrieved mats from their storage spaces and sat down just like Jackie did. Only after that did they start complaining.

An alchemist in gray robes frowned and said, “It’s just like I thought, I couldn’t even condense a hundred ancient pill runes, let alone nine hundred and eighty three. I decided to just give it a shot in the end and ruined the three sets of materials. There was no point staying inside, so I came out.”

“Same here, more or less, just slightly better I suppose. I ended up successfully condensing two hundred pill runes, but a lot of them weren’t at fifty percent refinement.”

“I didn’t ruin those materials. There’s just half a day left after all. There was no point in staying inside, so I came out,” said a white-robed man next to the gray-robed man.

After the white-robed man sighed, he shook his head and lamented, “All I’m getting after participating in this competition is feeling like trash more and more. Even though I knew someone would be better than me, I didn’t think I’d be this bad!”

“We thought we were lucky when we heard that we had five days… Now, it’s obvious that we’re cursed. It’s not like we don’t know how the other rounds went. Compared to them, this round is noticeably harder. We’re just so unlucky…” The man spoke dejectedly as though he was useless, lamenting that his luck was horrible to encounter such a hard round.

The last alchemist, who was a man with a mustache, frowned. “None of our results are good, but it doesn’t mean that everyone here is trash.”

Chapter 2983
“The others might still be in their barriers, but it doesn’t mean they‘re better than us just because they haven’t stepped out. They’re probably so stubborn and want to keep trying until timeout.”

The gray-robed man nodded after hearing that. He patted the white-robed man on the shoulder and said, “There’s no need to be sad. There’s nothing to be that sad about. It‘s clear how difficult this task is. I refuse to believe that their results will be much better than ours. We stood no chance to get a prize, anyway…”

The white-robed man nodded, saying helplessly, “I just feel like I’m both unlucky and useless. This competition showed me how lacking I am. I’m going to work harder when I go back!”

The other two nodded, clearly feeling like they were lacking, especially when compared to the other two worlds. They would no doubt remember the humiliation their whole lives and use that as motivation to work hard.

Jackie merely raised an eyebrow as he quietly sat by the side silently.

The three of them had talked for quite a while before the white-robed man suddenly turned to look at Jackie.

Jackie frowned, helplessly looking behind him and considering leaving the place.

Just looking at the man, it was obvious that the man wanted to talk to him. However, Jackie could not be bothered to talk to those people.

Before Jackie could stand up, however, the man said, “Why are you still acting like this? I don’t understand how you can be this pompous. You’ll lose this time, and you’ll have to pay a million spirit crystals. Do you really think a million spirit crystals is nothing? Are you trying to lose so you can give Ethan those spirit crystals?”

The moment he finished, the gray-robed man turned around as well, chiming in as he scoffed. “I truly don‘t know what goes through your mind. I know most of the alchemists from large clans, but I’ve never seen you before. You’re probably not from a large clan, right? Since your background isn’t something worth noting, where did you get so many spirit crystals? Why are you trying to give them away?”

The three of them looked at Jackie with confused expressions. Their words were, in truth, not that ill-intentioned, they were truly just wondering what Jackie was thinking.

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly. He had not planned on bothering them and leaving. However, Rudy’s words surfaced in Jackie’s mind. He could not afford to just offend everyone.

Thus, Jackie took a deep breath and replied patiently, “How do you know that I’ll lose?”

This remark stunned the three men, their eyes widening as they could not muster a response.

Jackie actually felt like he would not lose! He actually thought he would win, and that Ethan would give him a million spirit crystals.

It was crazy and stupid! How could he say all of that so confidently?

The white-robed man helplessly turned around as he said, “Are you insane or something, Jackie? Why do you still think you cart win? If you can win, why are you here?”

Chapter 2984
Jackie pursed his lips, answering calmly, “Of course I think I can win. Just because I’m here doesn’t mean I’ll lose.”

This response silenced all three men instantly. They looked at Jackie speechlessly, feeling like they were talking to a wall.

All they were speaking were reasons and facts, yet Jackie refused to listen. The three of them sighed helplessly as they decisively gave up on talking to Jackie about this. They felt like Jackie would probably never listen to them.

There was only half a day left in the end. The competition was about to end, and Jackie would clearly see that he was useless without them needing to explain anything.

The three of them shook their heads silently as they turned and started to talk about other things.

As time passed, more people started to come out of the barriers, with most of them visibly despondent. Only some looked happy as if they were confident in their results.

The time finally came for the last two hours.

At that moment, out of the 30 barriers around the furnaces, 27 had already dispersed. Only three alchemists remained inside, still persevering.

The three of them were the three leaders of the competition, Emilio from Chaos Continent, Ethan from White Marsh Continent, and Nash from Hestia Continent. The three of them seemed to be intent on fighting to the last moment, not willing to admit defeat.

Another half an hour passed, and Nash's barrier finally dispersed, his figure revealed to the other participants. His expression, however, was worth noting. His face was slightly pale. With a sigh, the Purple Sun Pill in his hand was swallowed.

Just like the others, after the Purple Sun Pill was swallowed by the jade tube, it was absorbed into the green glow in the air. He started at the ceiling for a very long time, no one knew what he thought. After a while, he turned and walked toward where Hestia's alchemists had gathered. At that moment, everyone had taken out their mats and sat on the floor.

Compared to the inner city, everyone was more packed. There was not much space around them, and Nash had been the latest to arrive. He placed his mat on the front. His expression, though seemingly troubled, was not at all dark. In fact, it was like he was rather confident with himself, though he was not full of himself.

Another alchemist from Scarlet Pavilion started to chat to Nash in a lowered voice. The two of them mumbled to each other for a long time before they stopped.

Jackie merely sat at the back of the group quietly the whole time. He could not be bothered to talk to the rest of them and merely closed his eyes and rested until Nash walked out of the barrier.

When he saw Nash's expression, Jackie knew that Nash was not that satisfied with himself. His expression would be far different if he was.

Just as Jackie wondered if Nash managed to achieve his refinement goal, Nash turned to look at Jackie. Their gazes met, and neither one turned back.

Jackie could clearly feel how sharp Nash's gaze was, but he merely raised an eyebrow and said nothing.

Nash snorted lightly, saying "Sure enough, you didn't disappoint me. You're still the same. How long can you keep acting nonchalant?"

Jackie's lips twitched, unable to stop himself from rolling his eyes.

Nash was like an annoying fly that he could not chase away, that at any given time, he would spout nonsense whenever he could.

Chapter 2985
Jackie lightly snorted. "How long I can keep it up has nothing to do with you. You should focus on yourself. Are you confident that you can get the grand treasure?"

Jackie had not wanted to ask that last part, but he did not want to dwell on the problem with Nash, so he changed the topic. In truth, he was curious as to how confident Nash was.

Nash frowned as his expression stiffened. After a while, he confidently boasted, "I'm fifty percent confident!"

Everyone immediately got excited at that. Nash was not someone who liked to brag. Since Nash said he had a 50 percent chance, then he meant it. In truth, for the alchemists of Hestia, splitting a black treasure might make them happy, but it was still not enough to excite them.

The reason they got excited was that getting a black treasure would let them gloat a little and vent a quarter of their frustration, at least. After all, Ethan had insulted them so much earlier, even telling them to not participate in the later rounds.

He had spoken as if they were completely below notice. Even though they had not fought back at the time, everyone was still angered by it. They were, of course, excited at the fact that they might regain some of their dignity.

Some of them even started to congratulate Nash excitedly, “Since Nash says that there’s a fifty percent chance, it has to be true! Even though Nash is weaker than Rudeus, it’s not like they’re that far different. Since Rudeus managed to get a bronze treasure, it wouldn’t be surprising for you to get a black treasure!”

“That’s right! Even though the leaders of the two continents seem stronger, the others aren’t that special. If the two of them are fighting for the bronze and golden treasures, then the black treasure would be in our hands!”

Nash did not bother listening to those congratulatory words at all. He might have said the truth that he was 50 percent confident, but he was not someone who would just accept compliments like that without being 100 percent confident or before the results were out. His gaze was still fixed on Jackie.

Despite what Nash had said, Jackie did nothing but raise an eyebrow, which irked him.

What did he mean by his behavior? Did Jackie not agree with him?

Nash said in a low voice, “You think I don‘t have a fifty percent chance to get a black treasure?”

Jackie thought about it and nodded calmly. “I feel like you do have no chance of getting a black treasure.”

As he said that, it was like he had thrown a bomb into the crowd, and they erupted into chaos, insulting Jackie.

“Can you use your head a little, you brat? Nash’s alchemy is at the top of Scarlet Pavilion. If he can’t get a black treasure, no one else will apart from those two!”

“That’s right! Jackie, you‘re crossing the line here. You’re practically siding with the enemy at this point!”

Jackie barely reacted to these noises. After all, he had long anticipated their reactions. He looked around and said calmly, “I said what I have said, and it’s up to you if you want to listen. Let’s just all wait for the results, shall we?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2986 - 2990

Chapter 2986
Right after Jackie said that, the arguments immediately got louder, “You‘re just not willing to accept it! Are you looking down on Nash?! What is the meaning of this?!”

“Whatever, let’s not bother with him anymore. This guy keeps on doing strange things. It doesn’t matter What he’s thinking, as long as we think that Nash has a good chance of getting a black treasure!”

Just as the arguments were escalating, the final two barriers finally dispersed. Ethan and Emilio appeared in front of everyone. The alchemists from White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent immediately stood up and welcomed them.

Ethan and Emilio both had similar calm expressions. The two of them exchanged a look, and both of them could see the anger in their eyes. Ethan snorted as he held his head up high while he walked toward where White Marsh Continent was. Emilio frowned, not saying anything as he returned to Chaos Continent‘s position.

Ethan was the first to speak, “Don’t worry. The golden treasure front this round will definitely belong to us!”

The alchemists from White Marsh Continent started to cheer after he said that. All of them were incredibly excited as if they had gotten the golden treasure!

That was when Emilio‘s expression darkened. Ethan did not think much about Emilio at all. Otherwise, he would not have immediately said that after the round ended.

Emilio still represented Chaos Continent in the end. If he shut his mouth and ignored Ethan, he would end up being slandered and mocked for being too scared. He would end up embarrassing Chaos Continent.

He coldly snorted, “The results are still not out yet, and you’re already acting so pleased with yourselves. Even though I’m also very confident, I’m still trying to be humble before the results are out. After all, it’s very easy for people to bite back when you say things like that!”

Emilio chose his words carefully, leaving himself a route for retreat. If he acted like Ethan and said that the golden treasure was already his, he would be incredibly humiliated if he ended up with just a bronze treasure. However, he did not want Ethan to be too pleased with himself.

After Ethan heard that, he turned to look at Emilio. He was not as humble as Emilio and was incredibly confident in himself. He guffawed after hearing that.

He narrowed his eyes as he measured Emilio up and down, mocking, “You’re just not confident in yourself. Does that mean others aren’t allowed to be as well? You know what your results are. You must already know that you won‘t be able to get the golden treasure, but you don’t want me to get the golden treasure either. That‘s why you’re saying all this. Just take my advice and eat your words. I can guarantee you right now that you won’t get the golden treasure.”

“Even if we’ve never formally competed in any official capacity before, and the two of us have never truly been able to see who is stronger, the results are still obvious. You’re no match for me. I’ll trample all over you and get the golden treasure!”

As he said that, Ethan acted like a victorious general. He talked to Emilio in an incredibly cocky manner, causing Emilio to be shocked at how overly confident Ethan was.

Chapter 2987
Emilio was so angry that he started to pant. He looked at Ethan even more angrily.

Emilio had never hated Ethan so much before. Even if the two of them had never gotten along, it was just a competitive relationship. He had never hated Ethan as he did at that moment.

If he had the chance, Emilio would definitely make Ethan suffer and have him wishing he was dead. Ethan’s words had been too appalling, completely looking down on Emilio. It caused even the other alchemists from Chaos Continent to feel incredibly uncomfortable.

The Chaos Continent was the strongest out of all three worlds in the end, so they naturally had their own pride. After hearing those words, they could not stand it.

An alchemist behind Emilio immediately shouted, “Emilio just doesn’t want to have a petty argument with you, so he minded his words. I can’t believe you got so conceited. Before the results are even out, you‘re already so arrogant! The barrier obscured everything, so you didn’t know how the others did at all. How are you so sure that you’re in the first place?!”

Ethan raised an eyebrow, not even bothering to spare the others a glance. He said coldly, “I don‘t need to look at the results of everyone else at all. All I care about is my own results. My results alone are enough to completely beat all of you. Why would I need to look at anyone else?”

After saying that, Ethan laughed maniacally. The alchemists from White Marsh Pavilion behind him all went in time with him.

“Ethan’s right! There’ s no need to look at the other results at all!”

“Ethan is just that strong! All of you are just envious, but you’re acting so indignantly. It‘s not that he’s acting arrogantly, you’re just not confident enough yourself!”

When Ethan heard that, his smile deepened. Those words were precisely what he wanted to hear. He never felt like he was arrogant. He just felt like they were guilty. They knew what would happen if the results were not good, that was why they did not like how he was acting!

“In just a moment, news of me getting the golden treasure will be spread out. Before we head back, the alchemists on our side have already prepared to welcome us. This will be the third golden treasure for White Marsh Continent. No matter how strong Chaos Continent is, you’ll only have one more than us!”

When Ethan said that, he was acting incredibly proud. He felt like he was making a great contribution to White Marsh Continent. He was even beginning to think about how his fellow students would celebrate him when he got back. He thought about how enviously the other alchemists would look at him. He had already earned himself some glory before this, but it was not much compared to this one. When the time comes, he would be able to get amazing resources thanks to the golden treasure he got. It would improve his skills and status even more.

Just thinking about the future, Ethan could not stop himself from smiling.

All these pieces of trash did not understand him at all. The moment he said what he did, the alchemists from the other two continents could not help but frown, feeling like Ethan was too confident. After all, Emilio was still fighting against him. He did not know Emilio’s results but was acting happily as if he had already gotten the golden treasure.

Chapter 2988
Jackie did not react to Ethan’s arrogance at all. In his mind, Ethan acting so arrogantly was a normal response. His temperament was exactly like that. It would be strange if he did not act like that. Even though Jackie did not react to Ethan’s arrogance, he was still stunned by Ethan’s words.

According to what Ethan said, the news of the result would be spread before they even return. That meant that their results would be sent over through the Heaven Array to the inner city.

Looking at their expressions, the other alchemists definitely knew that as well. After all, six groups had already been through the competition. However, Jackie was caught off guard, since he had just entered the inner city not long ago. He was not aware that results would be sent back directly after the competition.

After thinking about it, he reached out and tapped his hand on the person in front of him. The one in front of him had talked to him before. It was the gray-robed man who had asked him where he got his courage from before this.

The moment the gray-robed man saw that Jackie was pulling at his sleeve, he immediately turned around with widened eyes. He looked at Jackie curiously. In the man's eyes, Jackie was an idiot who only did things by himself.

Jackie tugging his sleeve was nothing extraordinary. If it had been a stranger, the man would probably have ignored the person. However, since it was Jackie, he immediately asked excitedly, "Do you need something? Have you finally thought things through?"

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation. Even though the gray-robed man did not say anything further, Jackie obviously understood what he meant by that. However, Jackie did not want to care about that at the moment.

He let out a cough as he said seriously, "After the results are announced, will the results be sent back by the Heaven Array before we go back? Will all the alchemists in the inner city see it?"

The gray-robed man never expected that Jackie would ask him that. However, the gray-robed man was quite a simple man, and he was naturally curious as to why Jackie asked.

He honestly answered, "The details won't appear on the Heaven Array. The only thing that it will say is if you get a treasure. If we're lucky enough to get a black treasure, the word black treasure will appear on the Heaven Array back at the inner city."

Jackie was taken aback after hearing that. It was different from what he had thought. He had thought that after the results were announced, the details would be shown in front of all the alchemists. However, it just showed what treasure had been earned. Everything would still be exposed in the end anyway.

After thinking about that, Jackie looked up.

Why were they not announcing the results?

Ethan and Emilio had already been quarreling for a long time. They felt like their ears were about to fall off, but they still did not announce the results.

Jackie absolutely hated listening to others argue, and he hated hearing nonsense about him as well. He just wanted to know if he managed to get a treasure, and what kind. He did not have Ethan‘s confidence. After all, he did not know how skilled everyone else was. Even though he was already out on the third day, that had been after he did everything he could.

"You‘re still acting like this!" Just as Jackie was thinking about things, he suddenly heard Ethan's sharp voice.

Jackie frowned as he lowered his head helplessly. He saw that Ethan was staring at him with a mocking and curious gaze.

Chapter 2989
Jackie sighed helplessly as he muttered in his heart, ‘Why are the results not announced yet? Ethan would definitely not stop talking if they did not announce it soon!’

Jackie could not be bothered to listen, but it was not like Ethan would stop talking if Jackie ignored him. Instead, he would just be laughed at even more. To avoid all that trouble, Jackie turned to look at Ethan.

“How should I be acting? Are the results even out yet? Why are you trying to cause a scene like this…”

Ethan‘s face twitched in surprise as he looked at Jackie and replied, “Do you really think that you won’t lose? Do you still think you can win and get a treasure?”

The exasperation in Ethan‘s voice was incredibly evident. He really wanted to know where Jackie got his courage from. Even now, Jackie was still talking back to Ethan with such indignance. He seemed even more confident than Emilio, but no one knew where that confidence came from.

Ethan laughed in frustration as he looked at Jackie with a frown.

He thought for a long time before he said, “You really do surprise me. I’ve met some stubborn people, but no one nearly as stubborn as you before. Can you tell me where you got your confidence from?”

Ethan was being honest with his words. He really did not know how Jackie was so confident.

Could it be just purely blind confidence? Did Jackie think he was the best in the world?

It was the first time he had met someone like Jackie. Unless Jackie was just a complete madman and spoke without any reasoning, he definitely must have a source of confidence. Yet, Ethan could not understand how that could be the case for a mere sixth-grade alchemist.

Jackie lightly snorted, turning away. When it came to a question like that, the other party would not believe him no matter what he said.

He merely said coldly, “No matter how much you want to say, wait till the results are out to say them. Before the results are announced, I don’t want to waste any more time on you.”

Those words completely stunned everyone there, including Emilio.

Emilio blinked as he looked at Jackie speechlessly. At that moment, he was just as curious as Ethan. He wanted to know why Jackie was so confident in himself. Ethan's lips twitched as he started to be filled with exasperation. Jackie was way too unique. There was no way to deal with Jackie normally.

A sixth-grade alchemist like Jackie wanted to talk about things only after the results are out?

Even their leader, Nash, only had a less than fifty percent chance of getting a black treasure, let alone someone like Jackie. Yet, he seemed to be telling everyone that he had already secured the treasure.

Ethan let out a laugh, "Have you forgotten about our bet? You have to get a treasure for you to win, which means you have to place in the top three. You think you can beat the other alchemists here and place among the top three?"

Jackie took a deep breath, trying to make sure his tone was calm, "If I felt like my skills were not good enough, then I wouldn't have placed that bet against you. Since I've already placed the bet and signed a contract, I won't go back on it. Of course, I remember the bet. Now, can you shut up and just quietly wait for the results…"

Chapter 2990
Ethan's lips twitched as his expression darkened. He had been shot at by Jackie again. Every time, Jackie would ask him to shut up and stop wasting time. In truth, Ethan did not want to waste time on Jackie either. The main reason was that Jackie's actions had caused him to not be able to hold back. Furthermore, he really wanted to figure out what went on in Jackie's mind.

Nash frowned as his gaze constantly shifted between Ethan and Jackie.

He would look at Jackie for a moment before looking at Ethan. At that moment, his mood was complicated and exasperated. He felt like there was something definitely wrong with Jackie's head, and felt like he was definitely no match for Ethan.

It was a conservative estimate when he said he had a fifty percent chance to get a black treasure. In truth, in his own mind, he should have about sixty or seventy percent chance. After all, he came from Scarlet Pavilion and was only a hair away from Rudeus in terms of skill. He was incredibly confident in his alchemic abilities. He was not a braggart like Ethan, nor was he as strange as Jackie.

Looking at Jackie who was acting like he would definitely get a treasure, Nash suddenly wanted to shout at him. After all, in Nash's mind, the black treasure was his, it had nothing to do with Jackie.

Just as Nash was wondering if he should say something, the wizened and cold voice was heard again.

“The results will be announced right now. For various reasons, I’ll only announce the top three results that will win the treasures. In third place, the black treasure goes to Emilio from the Chaos Continent!”

There was a small pause after the voice said that, seemingly to give the crowd some time to react. The alchemists really did react, and it was a huge one as well. Emilio actually got third place?!

That was quite a lot different from what they had expected. Even though Emilio had gotten a treasure, everyone had thought that he would at least get a bronze treasure! Yet, the results were different from expected. He only got a black treasure and ended up in third place for the seventh group.

When Emilio got the result, he completely froze up. His eyes widened slightly as he was filled with disbelief. He could not imagine that he was actually that bad. He had actually gotten third place in this round!

He could already imagine how he would be mocked when he went back to Chaos Continent. After all, he was the leader of the alchemists from Chaos Continent this time. He could not accept the result at all.

His mouth trembled slightly, “How… How is this possible!?”

He was already a bit frantic. At that moment, someone started to laugh. Ethan, who was laughing and clenching his stomach, looked over at Emilio.

“I have to admit, what you said earlier was right. It’s better to not brag too much, or you‘ll end up embarrassing yourself. Haven’t you completely embarrassed yourself this time? You even said you wanted to fight me for first place, but you actually got a black treasure! You’re only worth competing with those alchemists from Hestia Continent…” Saying that, Ethan’s smile widened even more.

Emilio was so furious that his whole body was trembling, but there was nothing he could say. The results were already out, and the truth was on full display. Even if he tried to defend himself, it would just be seen as forcing things. He would just end up being laughed at, so he shut his mouth and took it.

The alchemists from Chaos Continent behind him did not look too happy. After all, Emilio was their leader. Even their leader’s results were so bad that there was nothing they could say.

At that moment, the alchemists from White Marsh Continent were all incredibly ecstatic. All of them started to praise themselves and threw insults to the other side. Only then could they win back the dignity they had lost to Chaos Continent before this.

All this while, White Marsh Continent had lost to Chaos Continent in all facets. Now, they finally had the chance to win back some dignity. Even if their total golden treasures were not as much as Chaos Continent's, the difference was not that great.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2991 - 2995

Chapter 2991
After this round, they would have gotten three golden treasures in total, while Chaos Continent would only have four. The difference would just be on e. As long as their alchemists worked a bit harder, they might even end up getting the golden treasure from the eighth group. Then they would be on equal footing with Chaos Continent. It would mean that their alchemists were no weaker than Chaos Continent's.

"This really vents out my frustrations! The alchemists from Chaos Continent always act so arrogantly toward us. They always feel like they're the best. Now it looks like they're nothing special. We just lost out to them because of some luck and time. In the rounds after this, we'll definitely win back all of our honor!"

"That's right! I've already said before this that we'll definitely win back everything we've lost! The Chaos Continent has already exhausted all of its talents, while we still have a lot of our top talents!"

The White Marsh Continent seemed to be celebrating as if it was a festival. The alchemists from the other two continents were much quieter. The quietest of them all was the Hestia Continent's side.

Nash had a hopeless look on his face. He had thought that he would be able to get third place, but that was actually the end result. Even though Nash was confident in himself, he was not confident to the point of arrogance. Even Emilio was only able to get third place, which meant that he was definitely out of the running. He wondered who the second and first place would be.

Hestia Continent's alchemists started to console Nash, "Nash, you don't have to be too sad. It looks like there's something off about this. Even Emilio was only able to get third place. There must be someone else who's amazingly skilled. It's all just luck!"

"That's right, it's just the seventh group. There's still more after this. We'll definitely still be able to get a treasure!"

Nash sighed deeply. The words of consolation did not get through to him at all. He merely felt helpless in his heart. After all, he had been sixty to seventy percent confident, only to end up having all his hopes extinguished. He felt incredibly bad, but there was nothing he could do about it.

Jackie frowned as he looked into the air.

After the wizened voice announced the results, it went silent.

Jackie only had one thought in mind at the moment, which was for all the results to be read out. Maybe sensing Jackie's hopes, the old voice could be heard again.

"The third place, Emilio's results are so. The Purple Sun Pill was barely successful. Of them, three thousand eight hundred and twenty pill runes are at sixty percent refinement. One thousand seven hundred and eighty pill runes are at fifty percent refinement."

The results were already so detailed, leaving Emilio no room to say anything. Hearing the results, Emilio sighed deeply.

After the old voice announced that, it did not stop like before. Instead, it continued to speak, "Second place, the winner of the bronze treasure is Ethan. Ethan's results are as follows. Purple Sun Pill was barely successful. Four thousand one hundred and twenty pill runes are at sixty percent refinement. One thousand four hundred and eighty pill runes are at fifty percent!"

The moment the voice announced that everyone's eyes widened as they wondered if they were mistaken. They wondered if the organizer had counted it wrongly.

Ethan was only in second place. That result was too absurd.

If Ethan was in second place, then who was first? Who had the right to be in the first place?

Ethan's body stiffened as he shouted out, "I'm second place? How is it that I am in second place?! My results are in the first place. You must have calculated it wrongly. Who could get first place other than me?!"

Chapter 2992
When he heard that he was in second place and only got a bronze treasure, Ethan went crazy. He could not accept that result, nor could he accept that he was not the best alchemist out of everyone there.

Apart from him, who else could get first place and win the golden treasure?

It was absurd! It was so absurd that all of the alchemists present could not accept or believe it.

Ethan continued to shout, "There must be an error! Other than myself, no one can win the golden treasure. Who could potentially be stronger than me?!"

There was only one thought in Ethan' s mind at that moment. He did not want to think about anything else, or any other scenario. Ethan was someone incredibly obstinate. At that moment, he was sure that they had calculated the results wrongly. He was certain that he had actually won first place!

Everyone’s breaths stopped. They might not be as emotional as Ethan, but they were still filled with curiosity and disbelief.

That voice did not care about Ethan’s reactions at all. It said with its usual calm tone, “The winner of the seventh group is Jackie White! Five thousand four hundred and thirty pill runes were at sixty percent refinement, and only a hundred and seventy pill runes were at fifty percent. His results are the best, and is undoubtedly in first place!”

All of the alchemists there were completely stunned. Almost everyone had their mouths opened in disbelief, wondering if they had misheard.

Jackie was iI first place?

His results were so amazing as well. There were 5600 pill runes, and he had successfully refined 5430 to a sixty percent refinement rate. Only 170 of them were at fifty percent refinement.

Those results definitely put him in the first place. That old voice had clearly announced the results of the top three places. It sounded believable, but they could not accept that Jackie was in first place. They started to wonder if they were hallucinating and if everything was an illusion.

Ethan widened his eyes, even forgetting to breathe.

His mouth trembled as he said, “What did you say? Jackie is in the first place? The golden treasure is Jackie?! What kind of joke is this? How could he be in first place, have you not seen his badge?! He’s a sixth-grade alchemist. How can a sixth-grade alchemist get the golden treasure?!”

At that moment, Ethan’s mind was in disarray, wondering if he had misheard, or if he was having a nightmare. His questions were not answered. It was as if the voice refused to acknowledge him. Ethan went even crazier at the lack of a response. He turned around violently and faced Jackie, pointing at Jackie’s chest.

“Just look! Look at what badge is on his chest! Even the other alchemists from the same world look down on him. He’s just a crazy guy who only knows how to brag. He’s just someone who acts strange. How can he get the golden treasure? Tell me how?!”

Ethan’s breathing got erratic as he shouted all of that. His entire body was trembling.

Normally, there would be a lot of discussions after the first three places were announced, but it was incredibly quiet comparatively. Only breathing could be heard as everyone fell silent, not knowing what to say because everything seemed too crazy.

Of the thirty alchemists present, only Ethan was still shouting. Even if he started to lose his voice, he still got no response. He was merely left with reluctance and even more questions in his mind. The lack of response got him even more anxious.

Chapter 2993
He walked over to where the alchemists from Hestia Continent gathered. He had a crazed expression on his face as he pushed past the alchemists in front of him until he arrived in front of Jackie.

The alchemists that were pushed away thought Ethan was acting rudely, but no one dared to say anything. Everyone knew that Ethan had completely exploded at that moment, and could even kill someone.

Ethan's eyes were completely bloodshot. Even the muscles on his face were trembling as he looked at Jackie with hatred as if Jackie was his mortal enemy.

He pointed right at Jackie's chest, "You're just a sixth-grade alchemist, how did you get the golden treasure ahead of me? It's not fair, there must be an error!"

Jackie frowned as he was filled with exasperation. He never expected Ethan to be so crazy. Ethan's expression was very strange like he was losing control of himself.

Jackie sighed helplessly as he said in a relaxed tone, "I might have a sixth- grade alchemist badge, but it doesn't mean my skills are that of a sixth-grade alchemist. I've been a the level of a seventh-grade alchemist for a long time, it's just that I never got to take the test after being delayed by some matters. That's why I still have a sixth- grade alchemist badge!"

Jackie explained things very clearly. When everyone heard that, they started to accept the truth. Only Ethan remained crazed.

He said loudly, "I don't believe it! I refuse to believe it. You're just a liar. A complete scammer. There's no way you got the golden treasure. Even if what you say is true, so what? You come from Hestia Continent. You have no right to get the golden treasure at all. There's no way an alchemist from Hestia Continent would beat me for first place. It's impossible!"

Jackie frowned, really wanting to slap Ethan awake at that moment. When the others heard what Ethan said, they all looked over. Even though Ethan's words had deeply insulted Hestia Continent, there was still some logic in it. Hestia Continent had never won a single first place in the last six groups.

They had only gotten second-place and third-place once respectively. That was why everyone looked down on Hestia Continent, feeling like they had long fallen behind.

Alchemists from Hestia Continent were only able to get black treasures at most. When the alchemists from Hestia Continent heard that, they started to lose their calm. Even if they had their doubts as well, it did not mean they would just let someone else mock them.

The gray-robed man who had talked to Jackie before could not stop himself from saying, “What do you mean by that? Can Hestia Continent never get first place? The first place can only belong to you guys? That’s absurd! Jackie’s the strongest from Hestia Continent. He never participated in the earlier groups, so we never got first place before. Now that he’s here, the first place is his!”

Chapter 2994
“The voice earlier has announced all your results. It’s not like you didn’t hear it. The results are right in front of all of us, so what are you even questioning? If you lost, then you lost!”

After the gray-robed man said that, the other alchemists from the Hestia Continent immediately joined in, “That’s right! If you have lost, then you lost. Are you a sore loser? The results are clear for everyone to see. You’re just not willing to believe it.”

“It’s not like your results are that bad. You managed to get four thousand one hundred and twenty pill runes to sixty percent refinement! It‘s just that Jackie’s stronger than you.”

“Of the five thousand and six hundred pill runes, five thousand four hundred and thirty of them were at sixty percent refinement. As long as he had enough time, he would probably have been able to get all of them to sixty percent refinement!”

“He came out on the third day. You only came out of the barrier at the very last moment! That’s the gulf between you two. Jackie just has a strange temperament. If he stayed till the last moment, he might actually have refined all of them to sixty percent!”

Ethan’s whole body trembled in anger after he heard that. Before, Ethan would always have something to say whenever anyone questioned him, but this time he did not know what to say.

They were right. The results were clear for everyone to see. There was a gulf between his skills and Jackie’s. There was no way he could change that. However, he refused to believe that those results were what Jackie had. After all, Jackie had left a deep impression on him. He would not easily believe that that was the truth.

Ethan started to pant roughly like an angered lion. After a moment, his tone calmed down a little, “You must have cheated, or you would never have gotten this result! You absolutely cheated. There’s no way you’re that strong! How did you get five thousand four hundred and thirty pill runes to sixty percent? That’s impossible. There’s no way you’re better than me!”

Those words were not convincing in the slightest. He was being a complete sore loser and was trying to force things his way after.

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly as he sighed at Ethan's stubbornness. He said, "Can you please be more realistic?! You claim that I cheated, then tell me how did I cheat? Did I already make the Purple Sun Pill beforehand? Or was it something else?"

There was no way to cheat at all unless Jackie had refined this pill before. Yet, to prevent that from happening, the voice had already said that the Purple Sun Pill did not exist in third-grade worlds. The Purple Sun Pill's recipe was a secret. It was the first time all of them refined it.

Ethan's words were stopped again.

Jackie snorted before continuing, "Didn't you say I cheated? Then tell everyone, how did I cheat? Maybe you could tell everyone how it would be possible to cheat? Aren't you just being a sore loser at this point? The results are already out, so what are you trying to argue for? Just compose yourself. I was already being nice by letting you do as you want before this. If you continue on, I won't be so kind anymore."

Jackie could not be bothered with Ethan's rambling anymore. If that guy really continued, Jackie had a lot to refute him.

Ethan's whole body was trembling as his mental state was on the verge of collapsing.

Chapter 2995
He wanted to use the excuse of Jackie cheating, but he could not figure out a way at all. That was because it was impossible to do so!

Since Jackie did not cheat, then the results were real. He really had refined 5430 pill runes to sixty percent refinement. Compared to that, Ethan had lost horribly!

Ethan's heart was thumping wildly as he looked at Jackie with clenched teeth. At that moment, the alchemists from White Marsh continent could no longer bear to let Ethan continue. After all, it was a little humiliating.

Two of the alchemists that were closer to Ethan stepped up and grabbed Ethan's arms. They pulled him back as they said, "Ethan, don't get too angry. This guy must have been hiding his skills the whole time. The results are already out, there's nothing more to say. Let's just go back!"

Ethan struggled and pushed the two of them away, "The results aren't set yet. I refuse to believe that this is his result. There must have been an error! I was the one who refined five thousand four hundred and thirty pill runes at sixty percent refinement! His result is mine, and my result is Jackie's!"

Jackie's lips twitched at that, not wanting to bother Ethan. Ethan would say anything for the sake of getting the golden treasure, even suspecting that their results had been flipped. He was already completely speechless at that point. He had not wanted to say anything, but no one knew what that guy would say if no one stopped him.

Jackie raised his voice and said, "Do you think that the laws of the Whirling World were created for my sake? The one who determined the results is close to me, so he wants me to get first place and swap our results?"

These questions caused Ethan to shut his mouth again.

Jackie was right.

Who was Jackie? How could he possibly have made the laws of the Whirling World twist to suit him?

If Jackie really had that ability, he would not have needed to compete with everyone else. He would have just gotten the resources for himself without that much effort.

The moment he said that Ethan swelled up like a tomato as he hung his head. The two alchemists behind him no longer dared to say anything. They did not want Ethan to continue causing a scene. It was already too embarrassing. They would only he laughed at if Ethan continued to struggle. They practically dragged Ethan back to his original spot.

When Ethan returned, Emilio actually walked over again. At that moment, various emotions were in his eyes. He was naturally not as crazy as Ethan, but he was not completely calm either. He earnestly looked Jackie over, trying to see if he missed out something.

After a long time, he had to admit that Jackie had not changed at all. Everything remained the same the whole time. Before, he felt like Jackie was crazy, but now he realized that he had just been ignorant.

Jackie really was that strong. He had said so many strange things simply because he was incredibly confident in himself.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 2996 - 3000

Chapter 2996
Emilio took a deep breath as he paled slightly, “So you were actually very confident. That’s why you made the bet against Ethan. That was why you looked down on all of us…”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and merely let out a faint smile.

After everyone heard Emilio’s words, they let out looks of realization. No wonder Jackie’s actions had been so hard to understand. Insulting Ethan and betting against Ethan. No matter what anyone else said, Jackie had been unfazed. At that moment, everyone had been wondering if Jackie had some sort of goal in mind. It was then they realized that Jackie had not regarded them as anything at all. Jackie had just been incredibly confident.

Jackie frowned, saying in exasperation, “I already made things very clear earlier, it’s just that none of you wanted to listen. You thought I was spewing nonsense. There’s nothing I could do about that.”

It was then did everyone realize that Jackie had definitely said that he would not have done the bet if he did not have the skills. At the time, no one believed in him. They even thought that he must have been crazy to say that. Now, they know that he was not crazy, it was them who was being ignorant.

Emilio’s lips twitched as his expression soured. At that moment, he did not know what to say. He felt like he was a complete clown in front of Jackie.

He took a deep breath as his lips twitched slightly, “I’m such a joke…”

When it was announced that he got third place, Emilio was actually full of disbelief. He had felt that, even if he could not get the golden treasure, he was not that bad to only get a black treasure. Now it seemed like he was not just bad in terms of skill, but in terms of evaluating others as well.

Emilio sighed as he composed himself. He turned around as he returned to his original spot somewhat despondently. If he had lost, then he could only accept the results as it is. He was not as much of a sore loser compared to Ethan. No matter what, he still managed to obtain a treasure. Even if it was just a black treasure, he would at least have something to bring back with him. Furthermore, things happened unexpectedly this time, so he would be able to explain things if the higher-ups asked.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, suddenly feeling like there was a gaze on him. He then looked up to see Nash looking at him with a complicated expression.

He was actually in a similar state as Ethan. His lips twitched and the muscles on his face were stiff. He was filled with disbelief, frustration, and anger. Nash had never expected that things would end up like that.

Jackie had gotten a golden treasure, while he had gotten nothing. Compared to Jackie, he was nothing. He had actually been the one to suffer a complete loss. There was no way Nash could accept that.

Nash took a deep breath as he asked with a trembling voice, “You were always just pretending. Who are you? And… Why..?”

Nash suddenly stopped as he said that. He still had a load of questions to ask, but his reason told him that the situation would go out of control if he asked the questions out loud.

The alchemists from the other worlds were still staring right at their direction. Even if he hated Jackie, he could not deny Jackie’s value. Just with Jackie’s skills, Scarlet Pavilion would happily accept Jackie. If Scarlet Pavilion‘s higher-ups really did so, then he would be in a difficult spot. So he forced down the anger and doubt in his heart as he stared at Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said calmly, “I’m just more talented than all of you. There’s nothing else to it.”

Chapter 2997
The moment he said that, chills could be felt in the air. Everyone’s face soured at the harsh words!

However, they were forced to hold back even if they wanted to mock Jackie. After all, Jackie’s skills had been shown for all to see. Unless they were stronger than Jackie, anything they said would just be a joke.

Everyone had seen that Jackie had actually gotten first place. The results of the top three had been shown to everyone. The numbers were incredibly specific, and there was no way it was fake. Everyone would constantly glance at Jackie, most of them with inquisitive looks.

Jackie did not care how others looked at him, ignoring everyone.

After Nash shut his mouth, Jackie only had one thought in mind. He turned around and walked toward where the alchemists from White Marsh Continent were.

At that moment, the alchemists from White Marsh Continent all looked at Jackie carefully. They were even a little afraid, not sure if Jackie would shoot back at them with some vicious words. If Jackie decided to mock them, they would be thoroughly

humiliated. However, Jackie did not even bother looking at the alchemists behind Ethan as he looked right at Ethan.

After reaching in front of Ethan, Jackie reached out and said coldly, “Have you forgotten the million spirit crystals?”

That served as a reminder to everyone. All of them suddenly remembered the bet Jackie had made against Ethan before. It had been clearly written that Ethan would have to give Jackie a million spirit crystals as long as Jackie got a treasure. Not only did Jackie manage to get a treasure, but a golden treasure. Jackie had stood on top of the three of them.

Ethan‘s face darkened completely when he heard that Jackie wanted his spirit crystals. His lips paled, and everyone gulped at how he looked. He looked like he was about to die from anger.

Ethan started to take deep breaths. He had never been so humiliated before. It was incredibly embarrassing. Not only did he lose to Jackie, but he also needed to give Jackie a million spirit crystals for no reason.

Looking at Ethan, it was obvious that Ethan was furious to the point where he had no intentions of taking out any spirit crystals.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and mocked, “What are you trying to do? Are you planning on going against the deal? Don’t forget, you signed the contract very happily…”

Those words caused Ethan’s face to sour even more. He remembered what he had said to Jackie before. At the time, Ethan had thought that Jackie was a complete idiot that was giving him free spirit crystals. Even if he had guessed that Jackie might have other goals, he never expected that Jackie actually had no other intentions. Jackie had merely bet against him because Jackie had been incredibly confident.

Ethan’s hands trembled, “I had no such intentions, I would never do that!”

Ethan felt like he was about to explode from the anger.

Jackie then let out a laugh, “Do you still remember how you talked to me then? You said I was something else for wanting to give you spirit crystals. I was wondering what sort of expression you would have when the results came up. I wondered if you would be as happy as back then when you gave me the spirit crystals. In my eyes, you were like a clown.”

Chapter 2998
After saying that, Jackie even waved the sixth-grade alchemist badge on his chest in front of Ethan.

Ethan lost his balance looking at that. If it were not for the other alchemists behind him, he would probably have tripped and fallen.

At that moment, everyone was looking at Ethan. He let out a bitter smile. There was no way he could back out at that moment. After all, he had signed a contract. With the laws of the world restricting him, there was no way he could violate them. He was forced to swallow his frustration and hatred as he took out a million spirit crystals from his spatial ring to give to Jackie.

Jackie had actually started counting it on the spot. After making sure that the number was right, he put the crystals into the Mustard Seed.

Ethan stood by the side, he was so angry that his whole body was trembling. He felt like he could pass out at any moment. This time, he was positively furious!

However, even if Ethan did die, Jackie would not care at all. After Jackie was done counting the spirit crystals, the Heaven Array in Prosper City's inner city started to glow in green. It was the sign that a message was being sent over.

Everyone reacted when they saw the glow. It looked like the round was already over. The results were out. If someone acquired a treasure, then the results would be sent before the green light disappeared. Everyone was already familiar with the sight. After all, six groups had already competed before this.

Everyone straightened their backs the moment they saw the green light, looking toward the Heaven Array. The green light got denser and denser, causing everyone's spirits to be lifted.

Some of them started to discuss, "I wonder what the results are. I wonder if we managed to get a treasure."

"With Nash, there's a big chance that we did. Even if Nash is not as good as Rudeus, he's not too much worse. If Nash performs as usual, and there's no one overly strong from the two other worlds, the black treasure will be ours!"

"There are too many conditions. I feel like the third place isn't that easy. Just look at Rudeus' expression. He's trying too hard to suppress his worry. We can see that he's not that confident in Nash."

"That's right, even Nash himself probably doesn't know if he can get third place. That Ethan guy had been so arrogant earlier. If we fail to win anything this time, he'll definitely not hold back and keeps on insulting us. How infuriating."

"That guy actually insulted us and told us not to participate. He said that we're all just here to make up the numbers. I get so angry just thinking about it!"

“There’s nothing we can do about it though. Hestia Continent really can’t compare to the other two continents, but that’s not our fault.”

“If the barrier hadn‘t appeared back then, we wouldn‘t be losing to them now. We might even be stronger than Chaos Continent. It’s all because we were completely sealed off. That’s why we became so weak.”

Discussions could be heard everywhere. Most of them did not have too much hope for the results. Many of them felt like the chances of getting a prize were too small. After all, the other two worlds were too strong.

Rudeus was furious listening to their complaints.

Chapter 2999
He had already been in a terrible mood thanks to Jackie. Those negative comments seemed to light up a fuse in him.

He suddenly stood up on his mat as he shouted at all the alchemists around him, “All of you, shut your mouths! The results have not been sent over, and you’re already saying such depressing things. Even if the results are good, they have been swallowed up by your depressing words! I trust Nash’s skills. Even if he doesn’t get a black treasure, he would have only missed by just a little!”

Everyone shut up after hearing that. No one dared to provoke him. They knew that Rudeus was in an incredibly bad mood at that moment.

Mitchell frowned unhappily as he looked at how crazy Rudeus was acting. No matter what Rudeus said before, he had more or less tolerated it, but he never expected that Rudeus would end up being so out of control, biting at everyone like a mad dog.

There was nothing too wrong with what everyone was talking about. All of it was the truth. Even he was not that optimistic about this round’s results. After all, there are a lot of talented alchemists from the two other worlds.

It was not easy to place in the top three among so many masters. He had participated in one of the rounds, and naturally knew how hard it was.

Mitchell took a deep breath, saying unhappily, “Rudeus, I know you’re in a bad mood, but there’s nothing wrong with what everyone is saying. No one wants to be pessimistic. If there really is reason to be confident, I trust that everyone would have gladly said so…”

Rudeus frowned as he looked at Mitchell darkly. His lips twitched as he snorted, “Stop trying to be so snide about everything. This time, Phoenix Valley has their representative in it too. Aren’t you worried? Wouldn’t you be angry with them when you hear such negative evaluations?”

Mitchell coldly answered, “Of course I want my fellow students to get good results, but the truth is clear for all to see. If I say that he’ll definitely be able to get a treasure, I’d just be bragging…”

Mitchell and Rudeus were arguing nonstop on one end, while Rudy and Aaron sat in their corner, starting to discuss things.

Rudy’s face was full of worry. He trusted Jackie‘s skills, but they were against two incredibly strong worlds. He did not know if Jackie would be able to get good results.

Possibly because of the worried look on Rudy, but Aaron could tell right away.

He said curiously, “I feel like Jackie should be able to get a good standing, I just don’t know how well he’ll do. I heard from the other alchemists that only the top three results would be announced, while everything else would be ignored.”

Saying that Aaron was worried as well. If Jackie did not get in the top three, then his results would not be shown. It would be useless even if Jackie had been in fourth place.

After Rudy heard Aaron’s words, he turned and said seriously, ” Jackie will definitely get a treasure!”

Rudy sounded incredibly confident, leaving no room for doubt. Aaron’s lips twitched helplessly, not knowing what to say. He wanted to ask Rudy how he was so confident that Jackie would definitely get a treasure.

Chapter 3000
Did he think the top three were all useless?

It’s not something you can get just because you want it. However, he knew that Rudy would definitely not be his friend anymore if he said all of that, so he was forced to swallow his words.

Rudy continued to say, “I’m just wondering which prize he’ll get, not if he gets one. If he doesn’t get a treasure, then he wouldn’t be Jackie anymore…”

After hearing that, Aaron was even more doubtful. He really wanted to give Rudy some advice, that the higher Rudy’s hopes were, the more painful it would be in the end. Rudy had very high hopes on Jackie.

Did Rudy not know what placing in the top three meant?

Hearing his words, it was like Rudy was even more confident in Jackie than Jackie himself. Before, Aaron had already been confused by Jackie‘s confident actions and words.

Looking at Aaron who seemed like he did not know what to say, Rudy snorted, “I know what you’re thinking. Honestly, I can understand, but you don’t know anything about us. That’s why you think we‘re crazy…”

The moment he said that, the Heaven Array suddenly let out a golden glow. The next second, the words ‘golden treasure‘ appeared in front of everyone. When they saw those words, all the arguments and discussions immediately disappeared. They could not believe their eyes.

It was the first time they had seen those words on the Heaven Array. In the last six groups, four of them saw nothing being sent back at all. This time, not only was something sent back, it was none other than the golden treasure that was sent back.

Everyone was so shocked that they did not know what to say. They could not even believe what was actually happening.

After a while, someone finally pointed at the Heaven Array, trembling, “Are my eyes deceiving me? It’s a golden treasure. An alchemist from Hestia Continent got a golden treasure. Is this real? Am I dreaming?”

“I’m wondering the same thing too. I suspect that I’m dreaming. All of us are!”

“Oh my gosh, we really got a golden treasure? Who got it? Was it Nash? His skills were actually that strong. He actually exceeded Rudeus and got a golden treasure! It’s unbelievable. I was ignorant to assume that he was weaker than Rudeus.”

“I thought the same too. I felt like he would be able to get a black treasure at most. A golden treasure is something unbelievable. I can’t believe this dream actually came true. It’s absurd!”

“It’s not just you who thinks it’s absurd. Everyone here does too!”

It was just like that person said. Everyone was filled with disbelief!

An alchemist from Hestia Continent had actually gotten first place! Before, the results of their earlier six groups had been abysmal compared to the two other continents. A golden treasure was something they did not even dare to think about, yet they actually managed to get it.

At that moment, there were many questions in everyone’s minds, but after a few minutes, they started to get excited.

A golden treasure was not just a little better than bronze or black treasures. Once the golden treasure was brought back, it needed to be shared with everyone. The victor could pick first, but could only choose one. The rest was left for everyone else. A happy

mood swept across the place. Even those who had been cursed and berated by Rudeus before were incredibly happy and pleased at that moment.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3001 -

Chapter 3001
The fact that Rudeus had gotten a bronze treasure was the main reason why he acted so arrogantly in front of everyone, cursing and berating them without them fighting back. It was because that bronze treasure was to be shared with everyone.

He had gotten something good with his skills, so they had no place nor reason to talk back to Rudeus. On top of that, Rudeus was the strongest one there. For all these reasons, the alchemists were forced to tolerate Rudeus' beratement.

All of a sudden, someone else entered the scene and came out to be better than Rudeus, earning a golden treasure that was a higher level than Rudeus' bronze treasure. No matter how they looked at it, Rudeus could no longer impose himself on everyone else. At that moment, his eyes widened as he looked at the words on the Heaven Array in disbelief.

Someone had exceeded him and gotten a golden treasure? He was not the strongest?

Who did better than him? Was it Nash?

No, Nash could not possibly have done it with his skills. Why else would Nash willingly be in his shadows?

He would always get to pick out the best resources before Nash could. If Nash was really stronger than him, Nash would not have willingly endured that!

The more Rudeus thought about it, the more conflicted he felt. His hands started to tremble as intense jealousy threatened to swallow him whole.

For all these years, he had always felt like his talents and skills were the best. In terms of alchemy, no one in Hestia was better than him. All of a sudden, someone appeared and got the golden treasure!

How could Rudeus bear with that?

He started to pant heavily. His expression changed from the initial shock, to anger, to one of apathy. The jealousy in his eyes threatened to leak out.

Mitchell did not look any better, either. He had thought that he was only behind Rudeus, but someone even better than Rudeus came into the scene. He, in turn, fell to number three. He could not really accept that, but compared to him, Rudeus was in a worse state.

He could not accept the fact, and Rudeus suddenly stood up from the mat, staring right at the words on the Heaven Array. “Someone got a golden treasure? Could the seventh round be especially easy?! Maybe the other two worlds didn‘t send any strong alchemists in!”

After he shouted that, the inner city fell into silence again. Everyone looked at each other, obviously seeing a lot from each other‘s eyes.

Rudeus’ composure was all over the place, and he could not control what he wanted to hide at all. It was obvious what he was trying to do the moment he spoke.

An alchemist from Deer Pavilion whispered to his fellow student, “He’s burning with jealousy at the moment. He doesn’t want to admit that anyone’s better than him! Does he think we’re stupid enough to listen to whatever he says?”

“Someone got a golden treasure, there’s nothing else to say. He said that the seventh group was easy. Well, in that case, we can say that the second group that he was a part of was incredibly easy, too!”

“That‘s right. He‘s already too used to showing off, so much so that he can’t accept the fact that someone else is better than him. He can‘t gloat around anymore.”

“Even if he wants to get angry at anyone from now on, he’ll have to hold back!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3002 -

Chapter 3002
“We were too nice to him before this, letting him curse at us for so long. He said so many nasty things, and we finally don’t have to bear with it anymore. If he continues shouting at people as he pleases, we have a reason to shout back at him and shut him up!”

Rudeus was seen to be the ‘leader‘ of all the alchemists before this. He did not just give our orders and set rules, but he also spat nasty words on the regular, cursing and berating others alchemists. The alchemists, at this point, refused to be bossed around. Before, they did not have a reason or standing, nor did they want to cause any trouble. At this moment, they finally had a reason. They would no doubt fight back if Rudeus continued his reign of terror.

Rudeus felt like he was struggling to even breathe as he stared at the words on the array with gritted teeth. If looks had power, those words would have had a hole pierced through them with Rudeus’ glare.

Mitchell let out a sigh, looking at Rudeus. “It looks like Nash is even better than you in alchemy, but I never thought that he’d be so patient. We thought of him very poorly, but he merely took it all in stride, putting up with your nasty temper.”

It would have been better if Mitchell had not said anything. The moment Mitchell did, it lit a fuse in Rudeus’ head.

He turned and shouted at Mitchell, “What kind of nonsense are you saying? When have I ever looked down on him?! I treated him incredibly well before! I‘ve never bullied him before, so stop trying to cause a scene! Furthermore, he might’ve gotten a golden treasure, but it doesn’t mean that his skills are better than mine. I know his skills better than you do. If he’s that better than me, then why isn‘t he my senior? It looks like his tournament round is probably much easier than ours!”

Rudeus practically screamed his last few words, wanting everyone to digest the fact that this result: did not prove Nash was better than him.

Mitchell merely snorted, and even his shoulders shock as he looked at Rudeus with disdain. Rudeus was a sore loser, not willing to admit that anyone was better than him.

The center of the inner city was incredibly noisy, but the discussions in the outer parts were no less loud. Even though Rudy and Aaron were in a secluded corner, they could hear the intense discussion.

A man in dark purple robes said excitedly, “Seems like the strongest are usually more humble after all. Nash had always just stood by Rudeus’ side before. Even when Rudeus was being unreasonable, Nash here with it as well. He never reacted too much to Rudeus’ attitude, and I thought that it was because Nash wasn’t as good as Rudeus. Nash was actually no worse than Rudeus all this time, and maybe even better. He was just hiding his skills and didn’t want to bother with Rudeus!”

“You’re right. I didn’t pay much attention to Nash before this. I felt like Nash might be stronger than Mitchell but was no stronger than Rudeus. It looks like I stand corrected.”

Rudy’s lips twitched, looking very impatient and disagreeing with their discussions.

Aaron looked at Rudy and asked curiously, “Why do you look like that? Do you not agree with everyone else?”

Rudy said, “Of course I don’t. Nash acted so humbly before solely because he knows he’s not as good as Rudeus. It’s nothing like what the rest of them are saying at all!”

Aaron frowned as he looked even more confused.

Rudy ignored Aaron as he continued speaking.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3003 -

Chapter 3003
“Just wait and see. Everyone will be shocked when the results are shown!”

Aaron’s lips twitched as he looked even more confused, “And why is that?”

Before he could finish asking, the Heaven Array let out another radiant glow. This time, everyone held their breaths, knowing that it was a sign that someone was transferred back.

After a few moments, 10 figures slowly materialized in front of everyone. Jackie stood behind the group as usual, maintaining a casual expression. The other nine, on the other hand, had strange expressions. Some hung their heads low, not daring to look at the other alchemists. Nash stood in front like before. Only, his expression was incredibly stiff. His face was pale as if he had been dealt a heavy blow.

The other alchemists were confused to see such expressions.

Why did those 10 alchemists look like that?

They got a golden treasure! Should they not be cheering? Why did it look like they had just suffered?

The first person to walk down the Heaven Array was Jackie. Those in front were too emotional and merely stood still like wooden puppets.

Jackie was much calmer than the rest of them. Since they were not moving, he decided to just walk down from the Heaven Array by himself.

The other nine saw that Jackie had walked down and exchanged looks between themselves. They sighed collectively as they walked down the Heaven Array.

The transfer this time had taken about 20 minutes. It had been faster than when they were sent to the competition. In truth, they had not had the chance to compose themselves. After all, they had just experienced an out-of-body expression that they struggled to comprehend.

When Nash walked off the Heaven Array, a few alchemists rushed over to welcome him. After all, Nash was the big contributor, having earned a golden treasure for everyone. Even though they had not participated in the competition, they would still benefit from him.

Before Nash could compose himself, congratulatory words poured out in front of him.

“Congratulations for returning victorious, Nash!”

“I can’t believe you’re so amazing, Nash. I was blind not to see it before!”

“It must not have been easy getting first place. That Ethan guy kept on mocking us so much before this, speaking as though he was the best in the world, but we finally ranked first!”

“That’s right. He won’t be able to show off now. Did you make sure to rub salt on his wound a little?”

Nash’s expression soured even more upon hearing these. If he was not concerned about embarrassing himself in front of everyone else, he would have pushed away everyone in front of him and run out. He did not want to appear in front of them anymore.

Slowly, everyone began taking note of just how bitter Nash looked, much to their bewilderment.

Was he not happy to be congratulated?

He had gotten a golden treasure, for goodness’ sake, and he should be happy!

However, Nash’s mood was strangely heavy, and they felt like something was incredibly off. Meanwhile, Rudeus merely stood behind everyone the whole time with a dark look on his face, not willing to say anything.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3004 -

Chapter 3004
At that moment, Rudeus should be standing in front of everyone and congratulating Nash, yet he was not able to say anything like that. He was not willing to let Nash stand head and shoulders above him. It made him feel a little helpless.

Regardless of how irked he was, his eyes were keen as ever to have noticed Nash’s peculiar expression. In his conflict, he felt helpless as if he had a lot he wanted to say but did not know how to.

Rudeus frowned as he started to walk quickly toward Nash. He pushed away the people trying to butter up Nash and said, “You’re not happy?”

Nash frowned as he looked up at Rudeus. At that moment, Nash looked like he had just swallowed a load of crap and could not spit it out. He looked like he was suffering immensely.

When Rudeus asked that question, Nash's expression soured even more as he said, "I… The person you should be congratulating… Isn't me!"

In truth, Nash wanted to tell them that they were congratulating the wrong person, that it was not him who had gotten the golden treasure, but everyone's gazes were fixed on him at that moment, and he found himself unable to speak clearly.

Rudeus frowned in confusion and unhappiness. "Just speak up. What's up with your expression? Are you so stunned that you don't know what to say after getting the golden treasure?"

Nash's lips stiffened as he paled even more. The other alchemists that participated in the round who were standing behind him had incredibly strange expressions on their faces as well. They seemed to be averting their gazes, looking like they were sick.

At that moment, Jackie walked out from behind everyone. He took out a golden ring from Mustard Seed and placed it on the Heaven Array. That was the golden treasure that Jackie had obtained.

At that moment, there were three rings at the corner of the Heaven Array, a black ring, a bronze ring, and the golden ring which Jackie had brought over. He planned the ring between the two other rings. The golden ring glowed faintly. It was a storage ring that was incredibly vast within and had various incredible resources inside!

Everyone's expressions began to shift at the sight.

Why was the golden treasure in Jackie's hands? Should it not be with Nash?

Just as everyone was confused, Nash could no longer take it as he tossed aside all his earlier awkwardness. "I didn't get the golden treasure. You're congratulating the wrong person. Jackie was the one who got first place and won the golden treasure!"

The moment he said that, all of the alchemists in the inner city fell into a strange silence. Jaws hung open in sheer disbelief, and they even wondered if Nash was crazy. He could not possibly spout such nonsense otherwise!

Rudeus' eyes widened. "What sort of nonsense are you saying? Jackie got first place?! That's a load of crap. How could he even think about getting first place? Just open your eyes and look. He has a sixth-grade alchemist badge on his chest. He's not a seventh-grade alchemist. This kid doesn't have any background or standing, so how could he beat you and get first place?!"

"Fair warning, Nash! Stop joking around, or I'll have to smack some sense into you!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3005 -

Chapter 3005

Nash's expression soured even more. Before that, Rudeus might have ordered him around, but Rudeus had never used such nasty words. Nash's skills might not be as good as Rudeus', but he was not someone Rudeus could just humiliate and insult as he pleased.

Nash frowned as he loudly refuted, "How could I be spouting nonsense? If you don't believe me, ask the other alchemists behind me that took part in the seventh round. Ask them if I'm lying!"

At that moment, everyone's gazes fell on the other alchemists from the seventh group. Everyone had strange expressions on their faces, but they knew very well that there was no way to avoid this. Even if they chose to remain silent, the truth would not change. When everyone looked toward them, they gave their most earnest nod, albeit a little forced.

A gray-robed man said helplessly, "Jackie was the one who got first place. He managed to beat Ethan from White Marsh Continent and Emilio from Chaos Continent, getting first place. He got the golden treasure?"

Fearing that people would not believe him, the gray-robed man recited all three of their results, especially Jackie's. The crowd were even more shocked after they heard that, wondering if they were dreaming.

Rudeus was dealt a heavy blow. After he took a few deep breaths, his lips trembled as he snapped, "Impossible! Absolutely impossible! He cheated, he must have! How could he get first place? How could he have beaten the best alchemists from the two other worlds? I don't believe it, I refuse to believe it!"

At that moment, Rudeus spiraled out of control. It was even harder for him to accept that than knowing that Nash had gotten first place.

In truth, Nash getting first place might have shocked Rudeus and made Rudeus jealous, but he could wrap his head around it one way or another. When he knew that Nash had not gotten first place, but Jackie instead, Rudeus could not handle it at all. He did not dare to believe it nor could he.

His breathing quickened as he stared right at Jackie and barked, "You must have done something! How could you have gotten first place? Tell me! How?!"

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he looked at Rudeus in exasperation. He knew that Rudeus might not be able to accept the truth, but he never expected Rudeus to end up acting as crazily as Ethan did.

He snorted as he said coolly, “Why do you think I can’t get first place? I’ve already said that I’d get a treasure, yet you remained adamant in believing against it. I don‘t really care if you want to believe it or not.”

Jackie could not be bothered explaining things to Rudeus, nor was he responsible for that. Whether or not Rudeus believed it had nothing to do with him.

Rudeus gulped as his eyes reddened. He looked like he was about to rush forward and fight Jackie to the death, but Nash reached out and pulled him back.

Nash could not possibly stand still and watch Rudeus break the laws. If Rudeus truly failed to control his temper and attacked Jackie, he would immediately be punished. Rudeus would never be able to leave the inner city alive by then!

Nash grabbed Rudeus’ arm tightly, worried that Rudeus would attack Jackie if he managed to break free.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3006 -

Chapter 3006
“He couldn’t have cheated,” said Nash. “This guy is that strong, there’s no doubt about that. If he hadn’t been there, I would’ve been able to get third place. Yet, I was pushed out of it because he was there, which means the results are right. This is reality, and you have to accept it even if you don’t want to!”

With how Rudeus was at that moment, even if Rudeus accepted that Jackie managed to get first place, Rudeus would not accept that Jackie was powerful. He would even say that the leaders from the other two continents were just too weak.

Nash’s words halted Rudeus’ thoughts. Rudeus might not know how strong the rest of them were, but he knew very well how skilled Nash was, yet Nash only got fourth place!

There was a big gap between Nash and the other three.

In truth, Rudeus was just a hair stronger than Nash. With that comparison, Rudeus could more or less tell. When the others heard what was said, they slowly began to accept that Jackie was just that skilled. Rudeus’ whole body trembled as Nash reached out to pull Rudeus back.

He could not allow Rudeus to stay. No one would know if Rudeus would snap.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not wanting to bother interacting with them too much. He walked away from the center where the most important alchemists were and headed back to his corner.

At that moment, Rudy and Aaron stood upright excitedly.

The one person who could accept that Jackie had gotten first place the most was Rudy. Before Jackie even entered, Rudy was already sure that Jackie would get good results. The truth proved to be just as he thought, and in fact, it was even better than Rudy had thought. Jackie got first place and a golden treasure!

Aaron no longer knew what to say. Even his expressions were a little twisted as he finally understood Rudy’s strange behavior and words from earlier. Rudy’s confidence in Jackie was not baseless.

In fact, Rudy knew that Jackie was that good, hence his confidence. After Aaron understood that, he took a deep breath as he viewed Jackie as though he was a beast.

There had been six groups prior, and 60 incredibly skilled alchemists had entered. Not a single one of them had gotten a golden treasure, but the man in front of him did. His

results were even quite a lot better than the second and third place. Jackie was an absolute monster in Aaron's eyes.

Jackie waved at the two of them and sat them down. He retrieved his mat from his storage space and sat in his old spot.

They were still at the fringe of the inner city, but thanks to Jackie, the corner had attracted the attention of all alchemists present. Everyone looked in their direction and constantly talked.

Jackie did not even need to think to know what they were talking about. They were shocked at his skill and curious about where he came from. He did not care about any of that at all. As long as all of them kept to themselves and did not challenge him, they could say what they wanted to.

Rudy lowered his voice and laughed. "It looks like this wasn't hard to you at all!"

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, shaking his head after thinking about it. "I can't say that it wasn't hard, it's difficult in its own right. It was just that it was easier for me than it was for everyone else…"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3007 -

Chapter 3007
Rudy continued excitedly, "They took five days, but you only used three. They can't compete with you no matter how you look at it!"

Rudy was over the moon as if he had been the one who had gotten the golden treasure. In truth, he had already come to terms with a lot of things. After all, he was worse than Jackie in many ways possible, so he was a burden for Jackie.

Still, Jackie never thought of giving up on him, causing Rudy to treat Jackie as his brother.

Jackie took a deep breath, frowning as he said, "If it wasn't for the fact that we can't distribute the resources at that moment, I'd leave right now. There's no meaning to being here. The remaining groups are all a complete waste of time."

Rudy raised an eyebrow. After being with Jackie for so long, he knew Jackie's temperament in not wanting to waste time.

After thinking about it, he frowned and said, "How many more days do we need to stay here? I remember that there are a total of eleven groups. There are still so many groups left. Can't we just split up the resources now and leave?"

Jackie shook his head. “The rules are clear, and even with a golden treasure, I can’t change them. I have to accept it.”

Rudy felt helpless after hearing that, but there was nothing he could do.

Time slowly passed.

After Jackie showed his skills, none dared to provoke him nor say anything to him. Even Rudeus, who had acted so arrogantly before, fell silent.

The eighth group started after four hours, and Aaron joined as well. Even though his skills did not amount to much, he was still willing to challenge himself. Despite the fact that Rudeus humiliated him before, no one dared to say anything to him this time since he was always beside Jackie.

It was only after Aaron entered the competition did Jackie start to speak. After all, Aaron was just an outsider to them. There were some things that could not be said in front of him.

Since Aaron was taking part in the competition, Jackie immediately whispered to Rudy, “We better plan our next moves out properly. First of all, we can’t use our actual names, and we’ll have to disguise ourselves. Our identities are already too sensitive. A lot of parties will be eyeballing us once word about what’s happened spreads.”

Rudy had already realized the severity of the matter. He nodded vigorously as he took a deep breath. “It’s only going to get harder from now on. Thankfully, the alchemists in the inner valley of Phoenix Valley don’t know us at all. Even if they look into us, they won’t find anything.”

Jackie nodded, but he did not relax at all. “Even if they don’t know us and can’t find out our true identities for now, we won’t be able to hide it after they return to Phoenix Valley. We shouldn’t just be thinking about the next year; we should be thinking about the future. I don’t think you should ever return to Golden Pills, too, since you may be apprehended.”

Rudy’s expression darkened, immediately realizing that Jackie was right. In the Whirling World, it was impossible to find out who they were due to the various restrictions. However, it would not be so simple once they were out.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3008 -

Chapter 3008
After all, they had been in Phoenix Valley for a long time. As long as their enemies decided to look into it carefully, it would be very easy to find out that they were from Phoenix Valley. Everything else would come spilling out soon afterward. The fact that

he was from Golden Pills would no longer be a secret. It seemed like there really was no way for Rudy to go back.

Thinking about that, Rudy felt somewhat hopeless. He had thought that he would be able to return to Golden Pills after two years, living the life he used to have-conflict-free and without dangers. He would be able to live his life peacefully if he kept to himself. Alas, everything seemed to have gone up in smoke, and he could never go back. If he did, he might be captured immediately and might even bring Golden Pills trouble.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he patted Rudy on the shoulder. “Don’t worry. Once we go out, I’ll make arrangements for you. It’ll be fine, even if you can’t go back to Golden Pills. Just go somewhere else. Of course, you still need to keep your identity hidden.”

Rudy nodded vigorously. The person he trusted the most in the world would have to be Jackie. He did not even trust his old master completely, but he trusted Jackie 100 percent. If Jackie was not there, he would already have been dead long ago.

Jackie let out a sigh, already making plans on what to do when they got out.

After a while, Rudy suddenly said, “Should we be looking into Grayson? I feel like we can get a lot of answers from him. Grayson is in the Whirling World. If we have the chance, we should just capture him!”

The moment Grayson was brought up, Rudy seemed completely rabid. Ever since they entered Phoenix Valley, Grayson’s secrets seemed to constantly surround them. Even as they spoke, they had no idea what was happening. The Unbreaking Pavilion suddenly decided to go against them, which definitely had to do with Grayson.

Jackie narrowed his eyes and earnestly thought about it before nodding. “If I get the chance, I won‘t let him go.”

The next four groups did not manage to get anything at all. By the time the eleventh group was over, 10 days had already passed. The Hestia Continent had a total of three treasures, a golden treasure, a bronze treasure, and a black treasure. Compared to the other continents, they did not get much, but it was better than nothing. Furthermore, they had been incredibly lucky to get a golden treasure. When it came to splitting up the resources, Jackie got the first pick.

Everything good had been placed in front of all the alchemists. There were two or three ninth-grade pills. There were also incredibly eye-catching treasures there. In the end, Jackie only chose a soul gem. Compared to the other things there, the value of a soul gem was not that great, but Jackie was firm in his decision. After all, the soul gem was the most valuable to him out of everything there. After this, Jackie would be training in the storm god rank technique, the Soul Sky, and the soul gem would allow him to level up.

After he made his pick, Jackie did not hesitate to bring Rudy out of Prosper City.

After another three days, Jackie brought Rudy to the level six city, the Hundred Beast City. At the plaza in front of the city, Jackie and Rudy had disguised themselves as they planned earlier.

Jackie had chosen a great time to leave Prosper City. Since he had been the first to choose from his treasure, he did not even bother hesitating before he left. If any of them wanted to pursue them, they would miss out on the resources.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3009 -

Chapter 3009
They would lose out on the chance to pick something good for themselves if they left with Jackie.

Taking that chance, Jackie easily brought Rudy away from Prosper City. The moment they left Prosper City's gates, a green light suddenly condensed a token in the air, falling into Jackie's hands. The token's instructions directed him to Hundred Beast City.

After spending three days on foot, Jackie and Rudy arrived at the plaza in front of Hundred Beast City. At that moment, the plaza was empty.

Looking at the empty plaza, Jackie suddenly felt a little odd. After all, the few city plazas before had been full of people. They had to even take a test before they entered, but Hundred Beast City's plaza was vacant.

Rudy raised an eyebrow. "No one's here? Do you not need to take a test before you enter?"

Jackie nodded. "It looks to be the case. Whatever, there's no need to think about it. We should just enter the place and see what the situation is."

Rudy nodded, following behind Jackie as they headed toward Hundred Beast City.

On the walls of Hundred Beast City, various kinds of beasts were carved. Some of the beasts seemed to be acting like humans, while some of the beasts had their teeth bared and acted like complete wild animals.

On both sides of the massive city gates were two statues. Those two statues were incredibly lifelike and looked about as tall as a human. However, their arms had a layer of black paint on them. They had skull masks, but there were no pupils in their eyes. It looked incredibly creepy.

Rudy suddenly felt like Hundred Beast City was incredibly evil. Just as the two of them were about to enter the city, the two statues suddenly moved. Rudy was so frightened that he shrieked and hid behind Jackie. His breathing quickened as his whole body shook in fear.

Jackie was immediately on full alert as well. He retrieved his gray sword from his storage space, clutching it in his hand tightly.

“Fear not, for we are the caretakers of Thousand Beast City. Produce fifty thousand spirit crystals to enter,” spoke the caretaker that wore a skeleton mask.

Jackie heard him speak and immediately reacted, giving the caretaker a once-over.

That skeleton-masked caretaker did not look like a human at all, no matter how one looked at it. Instead, it looked like a human that had turned into a demon. Upon closer inspection, Jackie was shocked to notice that the caretaker’s body was exchanging energies with the Hundred Beast City.

Hundred Beast City was slowly letting out energy, and the caretaker’s body was slowly pulsing with energy as well. There were two energies that were intersecting in the air. While Jackie did not understand what he was seeing, it confirmed what the caretaker was saying.

It seemed like he was indeed the caretaker of Hundred Beast City. However, after acknowledging it, Jackie felt even more confused.

Hundred Beast City had a caretaker?

He had thought that there would no longer be any signs of life left in the Whirling World after so many years. However, it was not the time to dwell on that.

After Jackie took a deep breath, he retrieved 100000 spirit crystals from Mustard Seed, handing them to the caretaker.

The caretaker took the spirit crystals and nodded at Jackie, retrieving two entry tokens from his storage space and placed them in Jackie’s palm.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3010 -

Chapter 3010
After doing all of that, the two caretakers stepped back, reverting to their earlier motionless state. If it was not for everything that happened earlier, Jackie would have thought that the two caretakers were just statues.

At that moment, Rudy had recovered from his fear and felt like he had embarrassed himself with his overreaction. He had just been like a scared rabbit, only knowing how to hide behind Jackie. He was not masculine at all.

Jackie looked at the city entry token in his hand. To be more precise, it was the entry token to the outer city.

After that, he looked at Rudy and said, “There’s no need to be afraid anymore. Let’s just get in.”

After saying that, the entry token in his hand suddenly glowed in white, and a sea of information entered Jackie‘s mind. There was information on the various rules of the outer city. He frowned as a flash of emotion was seen in his eyes. He started to get even more excited for Hundred Beast City.

The inside of the city was separated from the outside by a barrier. Only by getting past that barrier would they enter Hundred Beast City. The two of them had just passed the barrier when noise assaulted their ears.

“Why is it so noisy?!” yelled Rudy, though his voice was barely heard with such clamor.

What greeted them was a sea of people. They did not know how many people were gathered in Hundred Beast City, but all of them seemed to be incredibly excited, shouting out crazily. Everyone seemed visibly excited. Upon closer inspection, some bloodlust could be seen in their expressions, too.

Rudy gulped as he reached out and grabbed Jackie’s arm.

He shouted at Jackie, “There wasn’t a single person outside the city, so why are there so many people inside? There are tens of thousands of people here!”

Jackie sighed, answering loudly, “You underestimated everything. There are at least a hundred thousand people here!”

The moment he said that, Rudy’s eyes widened as he shouted, “What did you say? A hundred thousand? Why are there so many people?! This is a level-six city, not a level-nine city! There are so many warriors stuck in the outer cities, so why are there so many people gathered in Hundred Beast City? There were clearly only the two of us when we entered…”

Rudy was confused and shocked at that moment, swearing that it was desolate outside the city. Looking at the over hundred thousand people gathered there, he did not understand how there were this many people inside. No one even entered!

Jackie frowned as he answered after a long time, “We might have just been looking at an illusion just now…”

Rudy was stunned when he heard that. He was even more confused as he sputtered, “What do you mean? What we saw earlier was an illusion? It felt so real.”

Jackie still looked calm, not knowing how to explain it at that moment. He had only said that because of his intuition, feeling as though they were not seeing reality at that time.

Since he could not explain, Jackie said, “Let’s not dwell on that problem. What we need to think about is how we can benefit even more from Hundred Beast City and get even more.”

Rudy still wanted to get to the bottom of it, but since Jackie had said that, it would just annoy Jackie if he continued asking. With that, he decided to hold back his questions for the moment.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3011 - 3015

Chapter 3011
The noise got louder and louder making Jackie feel like it was way too annoying. What he hated the most was noise, but there was nothing he could do about it.

“Why are the odds one to three and a half for the beast, but when it comes to me it’s one to six? Even though you’re a caretaker, you shouldn’t be too excessive. Do you think I’m that weak? I have full confidence in dealing with those beasts. You’re just looking down on me! ” A burly man with a mustache shouted at a caretaker unhappily.

There were countless warriors in the outer city, and countless caretakers as well. The caretakers all looked the same, from what they were and what masks they had.

They did not have pupils, nor did they react at all to the man shouting at him. “These are the rules. If you don’t follow the rules, you’ll be dealt with immediately!”

The man looked like a frightened mouse and immediately shrank back the moment he said that. As soon as he heard the word ‘rules’, all of his hatred and unhappiness disappeared.

The skull-masked caretaker said to all of the warriors behind him, “The warrior’s odds are one to six, the beast’s odds are one to three and a half! Place your bet and leave, bets are open now!”

The moment he said that, the warriors gathered behind him with spirit crystals in their hands as they frantically started placing bets. Spirit crystals flooded the table.

The excited warriors did not really care about spirit crystals at all at that point. They were tempted to gamble their entire fortune away. Five thousand spirit crystals were thrown out like it was nothing, betting on the beasts. Most of the warriors had their money on the beast. The ones who thought the warrior would win were only a fraction in number. Only those who really wanted to take a risk would put their money on the warrior.

After all, the warrior’s odds were one to six. If the warrior really exceeded expectations and won, then they would stand to earn a lot!

The man looked at everyone frantically betting on the beasts, and his face soured quickly.

He angrily looked at those people and said, “You’re just a bunch of short sigh ted people! That birdlike beast is nothing. I’ll be able to defeat it in ten moves. Just you wait, I’ll win and show all of you that you don’t know what you’ re looking at!”

If he was not afraid of angering all the warriors there, he would have said some even nastier words. While waiting for them, the man got angrier and angrier. He turned around and left the betting area, heading toward the colosseum!

Looking at that scene had Rudy feeling a little numb. The entry tokens were still in Jackie's hands, so Rudy did not know what was happening at all.

Jackie let out a smile as he pointed at that colosseum and said, "You see that massive crowd? Beneath the spectator stands is the Colosseum just like the one in Thousand Leaves City. The colosseum is surrounded by spectator stands. It was designed in a circular fashion from the bottom to the top. The stage is not meant for battles between people, but battles between humans and beasts, that's why it's called a colosseum!"

Jackie pointed at the colosseum and said, "The outer city has a total of thirty- three colosseums, and each colosseum can fit three thousand and three hundred people. It's practically all full. Outside of each colosseum will be a designated betting area. Each betting area is occupied by caretakers. Warriors can place bets based on what they want!"

Chapter 3012
After that explanation, Rudy slowly understood things. He looked around and counted, and did see a total of thirty-three colosseums. Each colosseum had a betting area in front of them.

On average, each betting area had ten caretakers. The battles within the colosseum were intense, while outside of the colosseum, the warriors were crazily betting on their savings. It was no wonder that everyone looked crazy and bloodthirsty.

Everyone was shouting frantically. Hundred Beast City really did seem like an incredibly evil place. The warriors were frantic and the battles were intense. Death occurred constantly, and the colosseums were all stained red.

Rudy gulped, feeling a chill across his entire body. For other warriors, the atmosphere excites them. They loved the frantic atmosphere, were not afraid of death and merely looked for even stronger people. However, for someone like Rudy, he could only feel fear from the bottom of his heart.

Rudy's lips trembled slightly, "If you weren't here, I would have turned around and run. It would have felt challenging to you, but all I feel is fear!"

Jackie turned to look at him and said, "I don't feel challenged at all. I just feel like the people here have been infected by the crazed atmosphere."

The moment he heard that, they heard a collective exclamation in front of them. The tightly packed crowd suddenly parted to form a man-wide path.

Jackie and Rudy looked over at the same time. They saw a man in black clothes with an incredibly handsome face walk forward. His head held high, carrying a hint of pride on his face. He walked through the pathway that was formed. Other than the fact that he had a badge on his chest, he did not look that different from anyone else. When the person walked over, the discussions around them got louder.

“When can I get three wins in a row and get a black iron medal for myself? If I get one of those, I definitely won’t have it on my chest. I’d stick it on my head!”

“Oh please! Can you please have some self-awareness? You’re great at nothing but saying embarrassing things!”

“Is it that embarrassing? Don’t tell me you won’t show off if you get a black iron medal.”

“Of course, I would, but that’s something you can only get if you win three rounds in a row. Even disciples of high-grade clans would show respect to warriors with black iron medals! If I had one, I would definitely show off, but I won’t be as embarrassing as you.”

The two of them bicker with one another, not holding back their words. It was as if they were about to fight at any moment. After Rudy heard their discussions, he widened his eyes, his face was full of confusion.

He turned to look at Jackie. Jackie let out a laugh as he patiently explained, “When someone wins three rounds in a row in the colosseum, they will be awarded a medal. It’s the black iron medal that person is wearing. It’s a proof of individual ability, those who acquired a black iron medal won’t just be able to show it off, but they will also be able to enter the central city as well.”

Rudy raised an eyebrow, feeling even more curious, “The central city? Where is that? Is that in Hundred Beast City or outside of it?”

Jackie patiently explained, “It’s in Hundred Beast City. Hundred Beast City is split into three areas, the outer city, central city, and inner city. You need to win two rounds to enter the central city.”

Chapter 3013
When Rudy heard that, he slowly understood. He thought about it before saying, “If you want to enter the central city, you only need to win two rounds. There‘s no need for consecutive wins, but a black iron medal requires three wins in a row. It sounds incredibly difficult!”

Jackie nodded slightly.

Rudy turned to look at where the person was going. At that moment, the person had already disappeared into the crowd.

He frowned and sighed, “No wonder everyone reacted so much after seeing that medal on his chest. It looks like it’s something incredibly difficult to acquire for any ordinary person! “

Jackie nodded as he turned around, looking at where that person disappeared, “It’s definitely not easy. You don’t know the rules, but winning in the colosseum is already something that’s not easy. Not only do you need to be skilled enough, but you also need to be lucky too.”

The moment he said that, Rudy felt even more curious.

Jackie was in no hurry to explain, and instead patted Rudy on the shoulder, pulling him toward the thirteenth colosseum.

At that moment, an intense battle had just ended in that colosseum. Fresh blood littered the stage as a corpse that had been ripped apart by a beast lay on the battlefield in a horrible state. The stench of blood was difficult to bear, but the colosseum had already gotten used to that sight. The warriors in the spectator merely let out a few condolences.

After entering the thirteenth colosseum, Jackie pulled Rudy toward the front of the spectator stand. This time, he did not plan on staying in a corner. After all, he had already disguised himself and changed his name. No one would know that he was Jackie.

Rudy looked at the corpse that was filled with wounds. His lips trembled slightly. That corpse looked completely mutilated. There was not a single area that was in a good state. It was full of claw marks. Bone could be seen through many of the wounds.

After the battle ended, the beast turned into energy, absorbed by the laws of the stage. Their timing had been quite bad. They could not see what sort of beast it was that ripped someone apart to that degree.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, “Looks like that guy wasn’t lucky… He’s also not skilled enough, that’s why he died in such a bad state. If he was just a bit luckier, he might have been able to get off the stage alive even if he was not skilled.”

Rudy looked at Jackie curiously, “What do you mean by luck?”

Jackie looked at the corpse that was being carried off by the skull-masked caretaker. Those caretakers were like emotionless machines. No matter how horrible the situation was, they did not have a reaction at all. They mechanically brought the body away and cleaned up the colosseum. The stage that had been soaked with the stench of blood was once again completely clean. It did not seem like anything had happened at all.

Jackie sighed as he started to explain, “The rules of the colosseum are complicated, yet simple. The warriors who participate need to choose from five beasts. Of the five beasts, some are strong and some are weak. If you pick up a weaker beast, not only would you save yourself from being ripped apart, you would even be able to win. Some people are just unlucky, and end up picking the stronger beasts and end up being killed by them.”

After listening to the rules of the colosseum, Rudy’s mouth opened wide in shock. No wonder it was a colosseum. No wonder everyone seemed to be so excited by all the blood and gore.

Thinking about that, Rudy turned around and looked at the betting area. The place was already filled with people. Quite a lot of them had already used up their entire fortunes placing bets, but it did nothing to diminish their passion.

Chapter 3014
Rudy frowned, mumbling out, “No wonder there‘s a specialized betting area. Luck is so important, it would definitely stir up their gambling spirits.”

Jackie nodded, “In truth, a huge part of the reason why everyone is so crazy in Hundred Beast City is that the results aren’t just about skill, but luck as well. With good luck, even a crazy bet can win you a lot of spirit crystals. Your fortunes can increase by several times in just a moment. If someone bets on a warrior with 1 to 4 odds and they end up winning, his spirit crystals would quadruple in value. Just thinking about it would drive you crazy, no wonder everyone’s acting like this.”

Speaking of that, there was a hint of exasperation in Jackie’s tone.

On the way over, he had seen many warriors with different emotional states. Some of them were so happy that they were full of tears, excitedly dancing around. It was because they had won and gotten a lot of spirit crystals. Some of them were sobbing to the point where they were completely emotionless. They looked like they had completely lost all hope in life. It was because they had lost the bets, and their entire fortune.

What they had saved for many years was all gone just like that. They could not accept it. After all, the laws of Hundred Beast City were plain for all to see. No one had the power or ability to go against the laws of Hundred Beast City.

Rudy shook his head as he said seriously, “It’s just too crazy! I feel like everyone is slowly losing their perspective on life and death.”

Jackie nodded, not continuing to speak.

Time did not stop for anyone, even for a moment. After the stage had been cleaned up, the next battle started immediately. A masked caretaker slowly walked onto the stage.

At that moment, he held a scroll in his black hands as he walked to the center of the stage. He immediately unfurled the scroll, letting out a radiant golden light.

Five massive figures appeared in the air. Five of those figures looked different. Some were forty feet long and floated in the air, some were only the size of a person. The images represented different kinds of beasts.

Rudy widened his eyes as he looked at the five beasts. He suddenly did not know what to say. At that moment, he was too excited. He did not recognize a single one of the beasts. He had liked to read ancient books before. He learned about quite a lot of beasts from those books, but he had never seen those beasts before.

He could not help but turn to look around at everyone.

Jackie had a calm expression on his face, not showing much emotion. Rudy scanned his surroundings, he could see more or less the same expressions. No one knew those beasts.

Rudy frowned and said, “Jackie, do you know what those beasts are?”

Jackie sighed, doing his best to not have anyone hear him.

“I do, but only two of them. The one on the right seems like a three-legged golden bird beast. It‘s called a flying quill. The one in the middle is a fire and ice wolf. Those two beasts are normally in second-grade worlds…”

Rudy was surprised at Jackie’s words and said, “I was just asking, but I didn’t expect you to know. Jackie, you really are amazing. You’re not just strong, but smart as well. You even know beasts from second-grade worlds.”

Chapter 3015
Jackie’s lips twitched, not saying anything. After all, his secrets would be exposed if he continued to explain.

He could only recognize those two beasts because of the memories he inherited. However, even with the memories he inherited, he could only recognize two beasts out of the five there. Even incredible heroes from the first- grade world, the Divine Void World did not recognize every beast there was. After all, there were a few thousand first-grade worlds, let alone second-grade and third-grade worlds which were even more numerous.

There were countless beasts in every world. Adding up all the beasts from every world, there would be at least billions of them.

Rudy said, “Are these the images they need to fight in the next round?”

Jackie nodded, “The warrior that‘s about to fight will need to pick one of those five beasts. The five beasts have varying degrees of strength, but their realm has been restricted to the late stage of the innate realm. No matter which beast is chosen, it‘s considered fair. After all, we’re all restricted to the same level!”

Rudy nodded, lamenting, “Who set these rules? It’s both ingenious and interesting, and it can also stir the spirit of the warriors. Evert if it will make them more impulsive, warriors need their recklessness.

“When a warrior‘s strength reaches its peak, he‘ll be able to discover his complete potential. I think the person who designed the city must have had this in mind.”

Jackie nodded, agreeing with Rudy’s thoughts, “I’m now even more curious about the designers of the Whirling World. What sort of hero had his hands on it? I can’t imagine how strong the person who designed this place must have been. Not only did he design the skill-testing cities, but also constantly searched for warriors with potential. Those who are strong are even able to get various valuables…”

Rudy blinked and said, “That‘s right. The ones who are strong will slowly get stronger and stronger, while the weak will only get weaker. it really is survival of the fittest here.”

Saying that, Rudy’s expression was a little sad. He felt like he was undoubtedly at the bottom of this world. If Jackie had not been helping him or brought him along, there was no way he could have entered a level six city.

He would not have even made it into a level eight city, let alone a level six one. He would not have experienced so much!

After that, he looked at the five beasts and said, “Isn’t the person who set the rules worried that those beasts will be recognized at all? If someone happens to be as smart as you and knows a lot, wouldn’t it be unfair that they knew those beasts and knew which one was weaker?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, turning to look at Rudy. He had a firm tone as he said, “Don’t worry. In the whole city, no one will recognize any of these beasts other than me.”

Jackie’s firm tone caused Rudy to be even more confused.

He looked up curiously and asked, “Why are you so sure? I’m not doubting what you’ re saying, I just feel like the world is so vast. There are all sorts of people. There might be someone who knows just as much as you do, and can recognize a few beasts from the five?”

Jackie shook his head incredibly resolutely after hearing that, “There won’t be. It’s absolutely impossible.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3016 - 3020

Chapter 3016
The reason why he managed to recognize two of the five beasts was not because he was incredibly knowledgeable, but because he had memories of two heroes in his mind.

Those ancient warriors had lived for tens of thousands of years, going to countless worlds and reading numerous books. Even with all those conditions, Jackie only recognized two of the five beasts.

None of the warriors there were older than sixty years old. None of them had been to another world before as well. No matter how much knowledge they had, there was no way they would know about those beasts. After all, those beasts had never appeared on Hestia Continent before.

They lived in second-grade worlds, and not every second-grade world had them. They only existed in a few of those worlds. With those conditions in place, there was no way they could ever recognize those beasts.

The caretakers let out a cold announcement after showing those beasts, “The hundred and seventh battle. The challenger is Lesley King! You have five minutes to choose one of these five beasts to fight you. After you finish choosing, everyone can place their bets in the betting area. I am sure all of you are clear with the rules and there’s no need for me to go into detail.”

After the caretaker finished his sentence, he turned around and walked off the stage. A disciple from the Deer Pavilion then walked onto the stage with an excited look on his face.

That person was Lesley. Lesley looked at the beasts in the air. Before Lesley chose a beast, they would not disappear.

“Surely all of you know Lesley! He’s a chosen disciple from the Deer Pavilion. I heard that his standing back home was very high. His master is the head elder of the Deer Pavilion. Not only is he a disciple of the head elder, but he‘s also related to the elder. He was heavily nurtured since he was young, and had a very easy path his whole life. Don’t look down on the Deer Pavilion for being a seventh-grade clan, everyone knows that the Deer Pavilion is just a sliver away from becoming an eighth-grade clan.”

“He is definitely quite talented as well. If Lesley was in an eighth-grade clan, he should at least be top five among the inner disciples. With his skills, it should be easy for him to win!”

“I feel like he’ll definitely win as well. After he picks the beast and the betting is open, I’ll place my bet on him. I happen to have fifty thousand spirit crystals left. I’ll place all of them on him. I should be able to make a small fortune even if the odds aren’t good.”

“I plan on betting too. Let’s go together later. I wonder if the odds will be good. There were quite a few disciples from high-grade clans who only had minuscule odds earlier. Evert if there were rewards to be made, it would still be just a small amount. If the odds are good, I plan on placing as much as fifty thousand on him!”

“It’s a pity that the highest bet you cart make in the outer city is fifty thousand. If there was no limit, I would put my whole fortune on him. Even though I don’t like the Deer Pavilion, I have to admit that disciples from high-grade clans rarely disappoint. Talent is talent in the end. They are all definitely strong. I can’t just ignore the fact…”

“It’s good that there’s an upward limit, or you’d be seeing people committing suicide. Those gambling addicts would probably gamble away everything they had.”

“Don’t you feel like the rules are quite amazing? Not only are they preventing people from wasting all their money in one go, but it also allows most people to keep on gamble.”

Chapter 3017
Hearing the discussions around them, Rudy’s eyebrows remained furrowed, barely relaxing. His lips twitched as he turned to look at Jackie.

Jackie remained the same as usual, without a change in his expression.

There were some things that Rudy had not wanted to say, but he could no longer stand it. He looked at Jackie and did his best to lower his voice, “Do you think a betting area is good or bad for the warriors?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, thinking about it for a while before he replied in a low voice, “It’s more bad than good, but there are obviously many benefits for Hundred Beast City. With a fifty thousand limit, the warriors might participate in the bets, but it won’t cost them their whole fortunes. Then, the warriors can continue placing bets. Since it’s gambling, there are definitely winners and losers, but I’m sure that there are definitely more losers than winners. A lot of spirit crystals must have been taken by Hundred Beast City. They probably manage to accumulate tens of millions every day…”

Saying that, Jackie had a look of envy in his eyes. If he was able to earn so many spirit crystals every day, then he would not need to be worried about the ninth-grade crystals at all. After all, no matter how expensive the ninth-grade crystals were, each of them should only be around 100 million at most.

Rudy frowned, “Why does Hundred Beast City need so many spirit crystals? Could Hundred Beast City have someone who needs spirit crystals to train with?”

Jackie did not answer him immediately after that question, and instead thought for a while before saying, “Who knows? It’s a possibility, but. it’s not definitive. I have my own guesses. Every large array needs a lot of spirit crystals releasing energy to be used. I’m guessing that the spirit crystals are meant to maintain the Whirling World. Of course, that’s just a guess. I don’t know if it’s true or not.”

Rudy suddenly widened his eyes, saying emotionally, “It’s very possible. I feel like what you said should be the truth. How could I not think of that before? There are countless cities in the Whirling World. There are multiple arrays in every city. Since they are arrays, they naturally need power. The power can be absorbed naturally, but if the consumption is too big, the ambient energy might not be enough to sustain the arrays. They would need large amounts of spirit crystals! Spirit crystals are basically storages of pure energy after all. That guess should be right.”

Rudy could not stop himself from looking up into the sky. There was a gentle breeze in the air, and the sky was full of clouds. They could not even see the hot sun. Ever since they entered the Whirling World, he had never seen the sun or the moon at all, but night and day were clearly separated. There had been a lot of things happening, so Rudy never had the time to wonder how the Whirling World truly operated.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, patting Rudy on the shoulder as he nodded forward, “Let’s put those thoughts aside for now. Lesley seems to have already made his choice…”

At that moment, Lesley seemed quite anxious. It looked like he was incredibly conflicted, but no matter how conflicted he was at that moment, it could not help Lesley pick out the weakest beast at all.

He had to bet on his luck Even though the beasts all looked different, there was no way to use that to determine how strong they were. Some beasts were half the height of a normal man but were able to kill high-grade disciples in just one move.

Chapter 3018
Some beasts were dozens of feet tall and looked like they could destroy small mountains with a punch. Yet, their actual capabilities were incredibly weak and pitiful. With enough time, even wandering warriors could defeat them. Hence, unless Lesley knew the beasts well and what the beasts were capable of, dwelling on it was just a waste of time. In the end, just picking one by intuition was the way to go.

Lesley let out a sigh as his face paled a little. His eyes were focused on the flying quill. The flying quill looked like a three-legged golden bird but was incredibly colorful. It looked much prettier than a three-legged golden bird.

Lesley did not know what a flying quill was, but he knew that flying beasts were usually weaker. He felt like flying beasts were usually less adept at combat. However, at the final moment of selection, he chose the frostfire wolf!

When Lesley pointed at the frostfire world, the other four beasts suddenly disappeared. The frostfire wolf's figure slowly solidified. In a few moments, it let out a howl that resounded throughout the colosseum. An incredibly ferocious aura came from the wolf.

Earlier, Jackie had said that the beast in the middle was called the frostfire wolf.

When Rudy saw that Lesley had chosen the frostfire wolf, Rudy looked at Jackie excitedly and said, "He chose the frostfire wolf! Is it strong or not? Will it be stronger than Lesley?"

After he said that, Rudy shook his head, "It shouldn't be able to beat Lesley. After all, Lesley came from the Deer Pavilion and was even a chosen disciple. They said earlier that Lesley had a relationship with the head elder of the Deer Pavilion. The elder must have spent a lot of resources on Lesley. With so many resources on him, this kid shouldn't be bad!"

After all, he's a chosen disciple from one of the best seventh-grade clans. In terms of the whole Hestia Continent, he's considered quite outstanding. If he loses in the first round, it would be too crazy. Most warriors were average in skill. Those who lost were probably on the weaker end. When Jackie heard his words, Jackie let out a small laugh as a strange look flashed in his eyes.

At that moment, the skull-masked caretaker waved at the spectators, "The betting will begin! The warrior will payout 1 to 3, while the beast's payout is 1 to 3.2!"

Those odds got everyone quite emotional. They never expected the odds would be as high. In their minds, Lesley would definitely win.

If the results went as planned, then they would be able to make a hundred and fifty thousand spirit crystals by throwing in fifty thousand spirit crystals. Even though the beast's odds were better, the margin was negligible.

At that moment, the crowd was incredibly excited. The high odds caused everyone's gambling spirits to soar. All the warriors that still had money left rushed toward the betting area!

Rudy looked at Jackie emotionally, pointing at the betting area, "We should go over as well. We're already here anyway, so we should just take part. Fifty thousand spirit crystals are nothing to you. It doesn't matter whether you win or lose."

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he nodded and laughed. To Jackie at that moment, fifty thousand spirit crystals really were nothing. After all, he had won a million spirit crystals from Ethan. On top of his earlier savings, he had a few million on him. Those spirit crystals were enough for him to bet for several days.

To Jackie, it really was an insignificant sum. The two of them followed the rest to the betting area. Everyone had their money pouches out. Just as Jackie had thought, most of them were betting on Lesley.

Chapter 3019
The noise caused Jackie to frown. Thanks to the odds, everyone's spirits were burning as they discussed amongst themselves excitedly, "Why are the odds so good this time? The earlier few matches were all only less than two. This time, it's at three. The beast and the warrior's odds are not too different either. Anyone who likes gambling will be betting on this!"

"That's right. My fellow disciple is feeling incredibly frustrated in the spectator stands right now because he doesn't have any more spirit crystals. This is such a good chance. If we don't bet on this, we will regret later on. My senior even asked to borrow my spirit crystals, but I don't even have much left myself…"

"We'll definitely win this time! I know Lesley. He's very strong. He was given the best resources from a young age and he's related to the head elder of the Deer Pavilion. The head elder must have put in a lot of effort into raising him. After all, they're family! With so many advantages, there's no way he' 3 weak!"

"That's right! Lesley should be at the upper end of the warriors who entered the Whirling World. Even if he's still not as strong as the chosen disciples from eighth-grade clans, he shouldn't be that far off from them. Someone like him should be able to win as long as he fights normally. Black iron medals were prepared for people like him!"

The moment the black iron medals were brought up, the discussions got even crazier. These warriors all admired those who had black iron medals. Not only did black iron medals prove that the person was skilled, but they also proved that they were lucky.

Any time they saw someone with a black iron medal, their eyes would light up in jealousy and envy. Rudy took a deep breath. There were a few thousand people in front of him. By the time he could place a bet, two hours probably have passed. However, it did not cause Rudy to get anxious. Instead, Rudy got even more excited. From the initial fear and the later calm, it was followed by his current excitement. Slowly, Rudy was being swallowed up by the atmosphere, stirring his gambler's heart.

Fifty thousand spirit crystals were not that much for alchemists, so even Rudy could afford it. Rudy smiled and said, "No wonder there's no test to enter Hundred Beast City, you just need to pay the fee! If I was the one to set the rules, I would have done the same too."

Jackie laughed in amusement, "If you were the one setting the rules, you probably wouldn't even have thought of this."

Rudy's lips stiffened, wanting to retort. Yet, after thinking about it, he felt like Jackie was right. If he really had been the one setting the rules, he would probably not have thought about that!

Rudy frowned as the thought flashed in his mind. After thinking about it, he turned to look at Jackie, "Why don't we just place our bets together? If we win, you get the spirit crystals. I just want to have some fun. After all, I will end up listening to you on who to bet."

Jackie turned to look at Rudy, shaking his head immediately, "You can bet with me, but it's up to you how much you want to bet. If we win, just take the spirit crystals. There's no need for you to try to show your loyalty like that. Do you think I care about this amount?"

Jackie's words successfully tossed Rudy's thoughts aside. Rudy had said that because he felt like he had been useless to Jackie the whole time, and felt apologetic. As long as he could help Jackie, even if it was just for a bit of profit, he would be willing to do it. However, Rudy felt like he really had been a little too anxious after hearing that.

With his resources, Jackie would not care about that amount of spirit crystals at all.

As time passed, the group in front of him slowly dwindled to only about a hundred left. They started to be able to see what was happening in the betting area. Everyone was in an incredibly heated mood, but even though the atmosphere was very exhilarating, it did not affect the caretakers at all. They merely instructed everyone coldly and mechanically. The caretakers were completely emotionless.

At that moment, Jackie could see Lesley standing toward the east. There were five or six disciples from the Deer Pavilion around him.

Chapter 3020
The Deer Pavilion's disciples all had their backs straightened, but all of them had their arms crossed as well. They looked at everyone with disdain in their eyes. Even though the Deer Pavilion was not a top clan in Middle Province, they still stood at the peak of seventh-grade clans.

They were only a sliver away front becoming an eighth-grade clan. There were so many warriors there, and most of them could not compare to the disciples of the Deer Pavilion. Even if some did not like the disciples from the Deer Pavilion, they would still choose to shut their mouths to prevent any trouble.

The disciples from the Deer Pavilion were great at looking down on those lower than them. When they saw warriors wearing clothes from higher-grade clans, they would immediately wipe away their looks of disdain and put on a smile, as if they had seen a long-lost friend. However, when it came to clans that were lower than them or

wandering warriors, their looks would immediately change into looks of incredible disdain.

The closer Jackie got to them, the more they could see how those people enjoyed trampling over those who were lower than thorn. Rudy hated people like that. Even though he once used to be like them, he had experienced so much that the bad habit had been wiped away.

Rudy pursed his lips, whispering into Jackie's ear, "These guys are too much. Look at them, they're not even bothered to hide their expressions. They're just trying to trample all over anyone they can. It's disgusting! They aren't afraid of karma coming back to bite them at all…"

Jackie laughed when he heard that, "No one would dare to break the rules after all. This isn't somewhere you can fight each other. The first person to attack will just end up being punished by the rules. There are plenty of people like this. Even though Deer Pavilion isn't some major clan, they can't be completely ignored. Those who aren't at their level might not. like them but are still forced to bear with them… After all, they're just throwing judgmental glances. If they don't do anything excessive, then the disciples from the bigger Clans would not bother with them at all. So, most of the warriors are forced to just bear with it."

Rudy scrunched up his nose as he said unhappily, "They'll pay for it eventually. They'll be taught a lesson!"

Jackie frowned, saying after a moment, "I just hope that they won't have anything to do with us and that we don't need to be the ones teaching them a lesson."

After he said that, Rudy was taken aback as he looked at Jackie in confusion.

Jackie had clearly seemed to have anticipated something. He sighed lightly but did not explain too much.

At that moment, Lesley suddenly said loudly, "There's more of this filth. I wonder where you got the courage to bet fifty thousand spirit crystals on the beast. Do you think the beast can beat me?"

In front of the betting area, a man in green robes was so angered that his right hand started to tremble slightly.

Earlier, Lesley's words had clearly been targeted at that green-robed man. The man had just decided to throw a wild gamble. He merely wanted to try out his luck and win a hundred and fifty thousand spirit crystals. Even though a hundred and fifty thousand spirit crystals was not an astronomical number, it was still something quite substantial for that man. That was why he ended up betting on the beast. Yet, his actions had clearly angered Lesley who had just been quietly standing by the side.

Lesley seemed to have been deeply insulted, feeling like the green-robed man’s action was a slap to his face.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3021 -

Chapter 3021
Lesley let out a cold snort as he narrowed his eyes, measuring the green-robed man up and down. His anger from the very start turned into raw contempt as he said with a cold laugh, “Wandering warriors really are all dumb. Looking at what you’re wearing, it’s obvious that you’re not from any clan. You should just be one of the luckier wandering warriors. Someone like you just likes choosing something against the flow to show that you’re special. You’re actually just making a fool of yourself!”

The green-robed man’s expression darkened as he started to look at Lesley furiously. Lesley had not held back with his words at all, cursing the man out. Even if the man really was a wandering warrior without any affiliation, the man could still not bear to be insulted like that.

He took a deep breath and turned around to face Lesley, “Is there a rule that says that I have to bet on you? Betting how much and on who is a warrior’s personal choice. What does it have to do with you? There were a few people before who betted on the beast as well, so why didn‘t you say anything? Instead, you’re acting like you’ve been deeply insulted just because I’m betting on the beast, jumping out just to fault me!”

The more the man spoke, the angrier he got. Even if he had no clan, there were still various rules and restrictions in the Whirling World which meant that they could not just do whatever they pleased. It was because of that, the green-robed man dared to say his thoughts.

Those words alone did not manage to fully vent his frustrations.

He started to shout, “I know why you didn’t say anything to them. It’s because they come from a larger clan. You’re only daring to talk to me like this because I don’t have a clan behind me!”

The people there were no idiots. All of them knew that the green-robed man was speaking the truth. Those disciples from the Deer Pavilion were only good at bullying those who were beneath them. They only target those who were worse off than them and tried their best to curry favor with their superiors. Even if Hestia Continent is a place that embraced survival of the fittest, their actions were really despicable!

Lesley‘s expression darkened immediately. He never expected that the wandering warrior would dare to say something like that.

Lesley let out a cold laugh as he narrowed his eyes, “Very well! Since you’ve dared to come to the Deer Pavilion, you’d better remember this. From now on, you’re an enemy of the Deer Pavilion! I assure you, there’s no way you’re leaving the Whirling World alive. You’ll end up rotting in the Whirling World as a corpse!”

Lesley did not hold back from his threats. He looked like he did not care about what anyone else would think about that This person had challenged his dignity, so Lesley would not let the man off!

The green-robed man trembled slightly. Even if the man was furious, he still had some rationality.

Lesley's tone had been incredibly cold when he said that. There was not much emotion on his face. It meant that he had been calm and sure that he would pull it off. It seemed like the man's future was not. looking that bright. He might need to live in hiding from then on. The man's lips stiffened as his earlier anger suddenly disappeared completely.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3022 -

Chapter 3022
The fact that he had survived for so long without a clan was enough to prove that he was both lucky and somewhat skilled. At that moment, he did not dare to speak back at all. He was forced to swallow all his anger as he hurriedly turned around, not even looking back as he left the betting area.

At that moment, everyone around him looked at his retreating back. Everyone could only silently curse in their hearts, feeling disgusted at Lesley's actions. Yet, no one said anything at that moment.

When Rudy saw that, there was a look of doubt on his face. He whispered to Jackie, "Why do I feel like they're getting more and more scared? Do you still remember how the wandering warriors challenged the Unbreaking Pavilion's disciples in Thousand Leaves City? Then, there were so many people in the spectator stands, and most of them were shouting at the disciples from the Compass Pavilion. The Compass Pavilion is even higher up than the Deer Pavilion. The warriors had dared to speak out like that even to a clan that's at a higher level… Yet, all of them are acting like cowards right now, not daring to say a single thing. After being threatened, he was forced to run off with his tail between his legs…"

Rudy could not understand the attitude of the warriors there. He felt like there should not have been such a huge difference.

Could the warriors that had been eliminated be the ones that were the bravest?

Even though the warriors there were more skilled, they seemed more cowardly.

In Jackie's eyes, the situation should have been reversed. After all, the warriors that are gathered at Hundred Beast City should all have already gone through many tests before making it here.

Hundred Beast City was a level six city. Only warriors with intense dignity would want to strengthen themselves, so they should not have reacted like that.

Rudy could not understand at all.

Hearing Rudy's words, Jackie laughed as he narrowed his eyes at Lesley's position. He then said, "The situation is different. There would naturally be two different results. There had been so many spectators in Thousand Leaves City. It was practically full of warriors. During that time, everyone was incredibly excited. They had incredible numbers as well.

"They would naturally voice out their opinions against the Compass Pavilion. The situation this time is different. Everyone's queued up and not far away from Lesley. It would be very easy for Lesley to catch any one of them out and target them. No one is willing to be the one being sacrificed."

When Jackie explained it that way, Rudy suddenly realized that the situation really was like that. They were so close to Lesley at that moment, and all of them were queued up nicely. It was easy to be singled out. That was why those people were not willing to speak up even if they were angry. They were scared that they would catch Lesley's eye. Earlier, Lesley had threatened the man without holding anything back, which sounded off the alarm bells in their minds.

That green-robed man was worried that he would suffer from that day on. It was one thing if he could get to a level five city. If he did not get a token to lead him there, and if he remained stuck at the level six city, he would be in danger.

Jackie frowned, not looking like he was in a good mood. He seemed to have thought of a possibility.

He reached out, grabbed Rudy's arm and said, "In a bit, no matter what happens, do your best to control your anger."

Jackie's words had another meaning to them. Rudy turned around to look at Jackie curiously. However, Jackie merely shook his head, not explaining it.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3023 -

Chapter 3023
As time passed, it quickly got to Jackie‘s turn to place a bet. Jackie sighed as he looked at Rudy. The two of them already had their spirit crystals prepared. Since there was a limit to the amount, they could only bet fifty thousand spirit crystals.

After Jackie took out his spirit crystals, he did not hesitate to place the bet on the beast's side.

His actions attracted the attention of everyone around him. After all, what the green-robed man had just been through was still fresh on their minds. Yet, there was actually someone who dared to bet on the beast.

The person was dressed up ordinarily. He looked like a wandering warrior, just like that green- robed man! His actions looked exactly like a challenge to those around him.

Quite a few of them suddenly had a change of expression as they looked at Jackie in amusement. He raised his eyebrow, not caring about how everyone else was looking at him at all. Just like everyone had thought, Lesley started to frown.

He looked at Jackie, full of hatred, his expression just felt like a complete annoyance to Jackie.

Lesley snorted as he mocked, “It looks like you’re a special kind of an idiot as well! Do you think that betting fifty thousand spirit crystals on the beast will prove that you’re better than everyone else? Can you stop being so disgusting…”

Earlier, Lesley had called the man out for trying to stand out, but in Jackie’s eyes, the one trying to do that was clearly Lesley. It was like what the green-robed man said, betting how much and on who was the warrior’s own choice. It had nothing to do with anyone else. However, Lesley looked like a mad dog that only knew how to bite.

The moment he saw anyone betting on the beasts, he felt like people were looking down on him!

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Lesley calmly. Some thoughts were in his head. That guy really insisted on barking crazily like such a mad dog. Jackie really did not want to bother with him.

Jackie let out a laugh as he said calmly, “You really love bothering about random things. I want to bet on the beast because I feel like you can’t beat it. So what? I want to bet on the beast! What can you do about it? Don’t you think you’re an idiot? Why do you care about how I spend my spirit crystals?!”

Lesley was the one who came looking for trouble anyway. Even if they offended the Deer Pavilion, they were nothing to Jackie. He had already offended much stronger clans, so what was the Deer Pavilion?!

After Jackie said that, Rudy was so emotional that he was about to clap for Jackie. The warriors around Jackie clapped for Jackie in their hearts. Even though they were looking at Jackie and Lesley with amusement, they really regarded Lesley’s actions with contempt. They were very happy to see Lesley eating his own words.

Lesley’s lips twitched as he got even angrier.

Did Jackie not see how that green-robed man ended up?

Did he not hear what Lesley had said?

That brat was actually challenging Lesley like that!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3024 -

Chapter 3024
Lesley took a deep breath as his voice turned hoarse, “You brat, you should know your place! You’re now on the Deer Pavilion’s list of enemies as well! Unless you spend your whole life in Hundred Beast City, I’ll definitely have my men cut you apart the moment you step out of the city. I’ll make you regret everything you did today!”

The green-robed man had completely stopped fighting back the moment he heard those threats, leaving the place miserably. Everyone had thought that Jackie would do the same. After all, as wandering warriors, they did not have a clan behind them to support them.

After provoking the Deer Pavilion, they would definitely try to exact revenge. The future would be much harder!

After hearing what he said, Jackie felt like it was a huge joke. He was no longer afraid of anyone like that. It was just the Deer Pavilion. They were not even an eighth-grade clan.

There were so many restrictions in the Whirling World, how could they trouble Jackie at all?

Jackie let out a snort as he said coldly, “Then just try it out. Don’t cry when the time comes.”

After saying that, Jackie walked towards Lesley. His footsteps were firm and his body was straight. He looked like a general that had just won a war. Rudy followed closely behind him.

They were not that far from Lesley in the first place. After Jackie walked over, there were only three feet between them. The atmosphere suddenly turned incredibly tense.

Under everyone’s curious gazes, Jackie said, “Who do you think you are? Do you think bullying those beneath you will make you seem better than you are? Betting on whoever we want is our freedom. I bet on the beast not because I wanted to show off, but purely because I feel like you’ll definitely lose! “

As he said that, Jackie‘s tone was incredibly calm as if he was talking about what he was eating for that day.

Lesley's eyes widened as his arms started to tremble from his anger. No one had ever talked to him like that before. Jackie's words did not hold anything back at all. They merely told Lesley in an incredibly straightforward way that Jackie definitely thought that Lesley would lose.

After Lesley heard that, the flames of anger in his heart roared even greater. He clenched his teeth as he stared at Jackie, wanting to rip Jackie apart.

"If you think that, then you're just stupid. I'll use my skills to prove that your actions are complete idiocy!" Jackie snorted as a look of disdain flashed in his eyes.

He did not bother taking what he said seriously at all. He merely stared at Lesley coldly. The guy would definitely not be nice to him, so Jackie would not bother showing him any kindness either.

Their conversation caused the originally calm atmosphere to break out into discussions.

Everyone looked at Jackie with inquisitive and exciting looks. They really wanted to ask how a wandering warrior like Jackie actually dared to go against the Deer Pavilion.

Did he really not know what the consequences would be like?

Did he have someone behind him that could help him against the Deer Pavilion?

Someone whispered, "Who is this guy? Does anyone know him? Even if he's a wandering warrior, surely someone knows him!"

"I don't know either. I think this kid must have something wrong with his head. Otherwise, there's no way he would do something so absurd. Just listen to what he said earlier. Every single sentence directly assaulted Lesley's heart. If I was Lesley, I would definitely never let him off. He trampled Lesley's dignity right to the ground!"

"So what? Lesley was looking for it. Just look at how pleased with himself he had been earlier. He finally hit someone he couldn't deal with. He thought that he could do whatever he wanted just because he was from the Deer Pavilion. He never thought there would be someone who refused to back down, humiliating him in front of everyone!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3025 -

Chapter 3025
"No matter what, there's no way he can just let go of this. I wonder if this kid will be able to handle it…"

Jackie did not care about how everyone else was talking about him. He ack was already used to being the center of discussion. No matter what any of them said, it would not affect him at all.

Lesley felt like he was about to explode from his anger at Jackie.

The disciple from the Deer Pavilion behind him could not stand it at all. After all, Jackie's earlier words had not only insulted Lesley but had even looked down on the Deer Pavilion.

One of the inner disciples from the Deer Pavilion said loudly, "Brat! I'll remember you from now on. You dared to insult Lesley like that and insult the Deer Pavilion. I'll definitely make sure you pay for it a hundredfold!"

Jackie looked at that person up and down. He was just an inner disciple from Deer Pavilion, but he was already acting so arrogantly.

Jackie laughed as he looked over in disdain, "Why do you love to brag just like it? Before the results are even out, you're already praising yourself so much. You're even saying you'll make me pay a hundredfold? Who do you think you are? Do you think you have that ability?"

Jackie shot back without any reservation.

That inner disciple's expression stiffened as he started to pant roughly in anger. If not for the fact that he still had some rationality in him, he would have attacked Jackie right away.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not wanting to bother those people. He looked at Rudy, and Rudy immediately knew what Jackie was planning. The matter had already progressed here, and what needed to be said had already been saying. Jackie naturally did not want to waste any more time there.

Jackie raised an eyebrow at Lesley. After that, he turned around and headed back to the spectator stands. At that moment, Lesley was already trembling in anger. He suddenly turned to look at where Jackie had left.

Jackie had gray robes on that day. To not attract any attention, there was nothing special about those robes. There were not even any patterns on them. That was why Lesley was sure that Jackie was a wandering warrior.

Any disciples with the slightest bit of background would not lower themselves so much.

Lesley clenched his teeth and said, "Just you wait, I'll do what I said. I'll make sure you're begging for mercy!"

After he said that, he started to walk towards the thirteenth colosseum.

At that moment, Lesley was in no mood to stay there. He had stayed there to show off, but after what Jackie did, he would just become a joke if he continued staying there.

Jackie and Rudy had already found a spot in the spectator stands that were near the stage. They did not pick a secluded corner like in the past. After the two of them sat down, Rudy could no longer hold back from speaking.

He turned to look at Jackie, “This time, I won’t try to say anything. It’s just a Deer Pavilion, there’s no point trying to please them. Honestly, [he Deer Pavilion’s disciples are such a joke. Even though the Deer Pavilion is at the top of seventh-grade clans, they’re still just a seventh- grade clan. They can’t compare to eighth-grade clans! I don’t know how the Deer Pavilion educates their disciples. All of them seem to think the world of themselves. They’re so good at acting superior…”

Jackie nodded, “You’re right, these people think too much about themselves. They feel like they can act however they want to just because they have a tiny bit of skill! The Whirling World’s rules are emotionless!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3026 -

Chapter 3026
Thinking about how the disciples from the Deer Pavilion were acting, Rudy felt like they were a complete joke. He raised an eyebrow as he said, “Even the disciples from high-grade clans wouldn’t casually challenge other people and talk down to them. Even if they scorned others, most of them wouldn’t express it outwardly…”

“After all, most of the disciples from high-grade clans are of noble birth, and they wouldn‘t do things that stray too far from morality. Yet, those disciples from the Deer Pavilion don’t seem to care about that at all, they publicly stamp down on those they feel are beneath them! Don’t they feel like their actions reflect on them incredibly badly?”

Rudy could not understand why the disciples of the Deer Pavilion would act that way.

The higher grade a clan was, the less likely their disciples would do something like that. Even if they looked down on wandering warriors, they would not try to interfere with the choices of others like what had happened earlier. They would not have jumped out the moment others bet on the beats, trying to use their statuses to mock others.

Such behaviors were considered bullying, and those of high status would typically deter from that. At the very least, they would not do anything like that unless the other party had offended them first.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking up at Lesley who was walking onto the stage. “We could conclude that it’s just an individual’s moral problems had it just been Lesley, but it seemed as though the other disciples from the Deer Pavilion seemed unperturbed with what Lesley was doing at all-even joining in, I’d say. This proves that it’s how the entire Deer Pavilion acts. All of the disciples of the Deer Pavilion will do this.”

After hearing what Jackie said, Rudy warily spoke, “The Deer Pavilion isn’t a small clan. Why would they ignore their statuses and insist on bullying the weak to make themselves look larger than life?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he thought about it, saying in a calm tone, “That’s because the Deer Pavilion is in an awkward spot. They want others to think that they‘re an eighth-grade clan when they’ve yet to reach the standards. Everyone in the Deer Pavilion shares the same mentality. They feel like their clan is already at the level of an eighth-grade clan. An eighth-grade clan is already considered one of the greatest forces in the whole Middle Province…”

“Other than the ninth-grade clan, the Scarlet Pavilion, being able to stand over them, the other clans won’t be able to push them back. Since everyone else doesn’t think they’re an eighth-grade clan, they’re trying their best to prove it… Against warriors from weaker

backgrounds, they'll show off the best they can. Those with the least substance are often those who try to show off the most. That's probably how everyone from the Deer Pavilion is…"

After Rudy heard all of that, he thought about it in earnest before nodding solemnly. Jackie was right, the Deer Pavilion's warriors must all have thoughts like that in mind.

It was precisely because the Deer Pavilion is in an awkward spot. They were the greatest among the seventh-grade clans but have not been promoted to an eighth-grade clan, yet they felt like they had achieved that status. Since they were not acknowledged by others, they would not give up any chance they had to show off.

With that in mind, Rudy scoffed and remarked, "If they want to prove themselves that badly and show everyone that the Deer Pavilion is already at the level of an eighth-grade clan, they should be looking for eighth-grade clan disciples instead.

"They shouldn't be causing trouble for weaker warriors. Anyone with any ounce of intelligence would see the Deer Pavilion's actions as petty and dumb."

Jackie nodded. The situation really was like that, but the disciples of the Deer Pavilion did not seem to think so.

At that moment, another howl reverberated across the whole colosseum, attracting everyone's attention.

An icy-blue light shot over as the frostfire wolf descended from the air. The frostfire wolf was about 3 meters in height, and its entire body was covered by icy-blue and scarlet-red fur. It seemed to have heterochromia with one eye being blue, and the other being red.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3027 -

Chapter 3027
The moment its feet touched the ground, the frostfire wolf howled into the blue skies angrily as it unleashed its full might.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and looked at Lesley, who was in front of the frostfire wolf, with great interest.

At that moment, Lesley's expression was not the greatest. The wolf's power was immense, causing his confidence to be shaken a little. It barely chipped off that gargantuan ego of his, however, as he smirked.

"Stop trying to show off! You're just a beast while I'm a chosen disciple of the Deer Pavilion. I've killed so many beasts that I've lost count, and you'll be one of them!"

From everything that had happened earlier, it was easy to tell that the frostfire wolf was not an actual being. It had been condensed out of energy, but its skills were no different from an actual frostfire wolf!

A real frostfire wolf was incredibly intelligent, capable of understanding human speech. The energy-manifested frostfire wolf did not have that ability, but it did nothing to stop the frostfire wolf's intense animosity toward Lesley.

The crowd that had been quiet started to discuss the battle.

"Do you think this beast is strong? It doesn't look too different from a large wolf beast. Of course, I don't know how strong the beast's skills are."

"Will Lesley be able to deal with it? He has to win. I bet fifty thousand spirit crystals on him. If he wins, I'll be getting two hundred thousand back!"

"Who knows? The beast doesn't look that weak. It seems stronger than any ordinary beast, but there's no need to worry too much. Lesley is still a chosen disciple of the Deer Pavilion."

"If he's nowhere close to excellence, there's no way he could have gotten that position! Even if this beast looks a little strong, Lesley should be able to handle it."

The crowd got a little worried when the frostfire wolf unleashed its power. After all, almost all of them had betted their spirit crystals on Lesley. They naturally hoped that Lesley would be able to win.

Jackie had gone against everyone else's choice, betting his spirit crystals on the frostfire wolf, and Rudy had followed suit. Jackie was seated in quite an obvious spot, and everyone around him knew who Jackie was because of the earlier conflict.

Everyone talked about the match, and those who were around Jackie started to glance at him.

A muscular man with a mustache looked at Jackie with a raised eyebrow, asking, "Hey, why are you so confident that Lesley will lose?"

Jackie turned to look at the man. He could tell that the man was just asking out of curiosity and did not have any ill intentions. After all, Jackie did just bet his crystals on the beast decisively.

Thinking about what Jackie had said earlier, they did not think that Jackie's actions were just to stand out.

Jackie answered in a calm tone, "Lesley will definitely lose. There's no other possibility."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3028 -

Chapter 3028
Jackie had said that with full conviction as if there was no other outcome of the battle. After those around him heard that, the curiosity in their eyes deepened.

Jackie was that confident?

The man with the mustache frowned and followed up, “Why do you think that Lesley will lose? Is there a reason for that?”

Jackie already knew that they would ask something like that. He looked up at the stage and said calmly, “You’ll know why in just a bit.”

He had no intention of explaining himself. After all, if he did, it would reveal his secrets to the others, and he had too many secrets on him. The moment he revealed one, it would be easy to figure out his other secrets as well.

To prevent himself from becoming a lab rat, Jackie decided against saying anything. Those around him were no idiots, either, for the moment they saw that Jackie had no plans on explaining, they did not pester him.

Everyone held back on the gossip as they looked toward the stage again. Lesley had already pulled out his weapon, which was a chakram that was the size of two palms.

The green chakram had countless runes engraved on it, releasing a green glow. He placed the chakram in front of his chest as he held the two ends. Lesley narrowed his eyes slightly as he coldly looked at the frostfire wolf in front of him. The frostfire wolf let out another howl as its hindlegs bent slightly. The next second, he shot at Lesley like a cannonball.

Everyone heard a boom as the frostfire wolf left two craters where it had leaped off from. It was obvious how strong the wolf was.

The frostfire wolf was incredibly quick, so much so that it was difficult to track with the naked eye.

Everyone inhaled sharply at this, sweating bullets for Lesley’s sake, but Lesley’s expression remained calm. Even if the frostfire wolf was terrifyingly quick, he still looked incredibly confident.

Lesley let out a roar as he started to form seals with both his hands. Waves of green runes started to circle around the chakram. The green chakram suddenly glowed in an intense green. Right after that, the whole arena was covered up by the green light.

Everyone started to hear a crackling sound.

They looked in greater detail and noticed that the stage was beginning to crack as if something was frantically trying to burst out of the floor. They took a deep breath in their shock. After a moment, they saw countless vines starting to come out of the ground as though they had been planted on the floor.

Those vines broke out of the ground after hearing the summons. The frostfire wolf was incredibly curious about the sudden occurrence, and it started to slow down in its attacks.

That had been exactly what Lesley had wanted. He then roared again as he formed seal after seal with his hands. Those vines were like tentacles, shooting right at the frostfire wolf. There were too many vines, so much so that they covered up the whole stage. Even if the frostfire wolf was quick, it could not avoid them.

The frostfire wolf leaped into the air in a panic, but the vines were not slow either. After a roar, countless vines wrapped around the frostfire wolf's limbs, restricting its speed.

After wrapping around those limbs, those vines seemed to act like parasites as they climbed upward. The frostfire wolf was not able to struggle out before it was covered up by the vines!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3029 -

Chapter 3029
All of the vines on the ground were growing in the same direction. The vines that covered the whole stage seemed to have been greatly attracted to the wolf, frantically rushing toward the entangled beast.

After being wrapped up in one layer, even more vines started to pile on. In just a few moments, the vines had already covered up the frostfire wolf like a burrito. There were faint signs that the frostfire wolf was still constantly struggling within. Yet, the fines had covered it up too tightly.

The struggling merely caused the vines to shake a little. It was unable to break free at all.

The scene had quite a few people gaping and commenting on the situation.

"Lesley has this one in the bag for sure! Here I was, worrying that the beast would be too powerful and that this would be a difficult match. Now, it looks like I've underestimated Lesley. I can't believe he dealt with the beast so easily!"

“The beast seems a little weak It’ s much different from what I thought! Isn’t it going to use its natural skills?”

Those warriors who knew Lesley started to explain, “Oh, it’s trying, alright. Sadly, it can’t after being wrapped up like that by those vines.

“I’ve heard before that Lesley uses a middle earth-stage technique, the Sky Swallowing Vin es. Those vines won’t just stop movement, but any counterattacks as well! It’s not a hundred-percent reliable and can’t restrict opponents that are too strong, but it’s obvious that the beast’s skills aren’t enough. Now that its movements have been sealed, it can’t use its skills either! It seems like we know the winner already!”

“So it means that we’ve won… It’s a little boring, but at least we got to see something interesting. I can’t believe the Sky Swallowing Vines skill is so strong. It covered up the whole stage. There’s no way to even avoid it…”

“That guy from before insisted on betting on the beast. What a stubborn guy he was. I thought that he knew a thing or two about the beast, but it looks like he was just reaching!”

“Lesley won. Even though it was a little too easy, we got the spirit crystals, so it’s all fine.”

At that moment, a few warriors had stood up from the spectator stands, heading to the betting area. The odds had been one to three. They would get returns of 150000 from their 50000 bets.

Thinking about the spirit crystals they could earn, they were incredibly impatient to get their spirit crystals.

Rudy stopped his frown as he carefully looked at Jackie. He was still incredibly confident in Jackie.

Earlier, Jackie had chosen the beast, so Rudy decisively followed suit, not even asking a single question. However, it seemed like Jackie had been mistaken. That was no big deal, of course-everyone made mistakes.

Rudy lightly touched Jackie’s arm. “It’s just fifty thousand spirit crystals, I’ll take it as a bet of passion.”

Jackie turned to look at Rudy and merely raised an eyebrow, not saying anything.

Right at that moment, the stage suddenly erupted in a red glow. Everyone heard a massive explosion as they looked over with widened eyes. A bomb seemed to have gone off in the area the frostfire wolf had been wrapped up in. It suddenly exploded, causing the vines to be shattered, flying everywhere.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3030 -

Chapter 3030
Thankfully, the stage had been covered by a barrier, stopping the vines from shooting out to the spectators.

The next second, everyone saw a massive red-and-blue coated wolf walk out of the explosion. The wolf stood firmly on the ground as the vines around it had been blown away. It still had some green liquid on its body, but it did not affect the power it was exuding at all!

The scene made everyone's jaw drop. The frostfire wolf had actually managed to break free of the vines, turning the vines to dust!

The frostfire wolf shot out at Lesley again.

Lesley, at this moment, was too flabbergasted at the abrupt change of events. To show off his skills, he had held nothing back when he used the Sky Swallowing Vines earlier, but he never expected that the results would exceed any of his expectations. Even after all of that, he had failed to kill the beast. Instead, the beast had broken out of the trap.

Everyone held their breath in silence, all eyes wide open as no one was willing to miss out a single second.

Even if he was in a state of shock, Lesley quickly reacted. After all, he was still a chosen disciple of the Deer Pavilion. He had gone through a lot to reach his position. He had fought countless battles, so he was naturally able to react to any surprises.

He started to retreat a few steps, trying to distance himself from the wolf to plan his next action. The frostfire wolf let out an angry howl again as it opened its mouth, condensing energy within.

Everyone saw an icy blue glow and a scarlet red glow condense into two balls in the frostfire-wolf's mouth.

The two balls were incredibly hot, causing the surrounding air to burn. The frostfire wolf's eyes stared right at Lesley in the distance. Everyone watched as it unleashed the balls of fire!

The blue and red balls shot right at Lesley incredibly quickly as they rapidly fused. Even from far away, the power the balls contained could be felt.

Everyone widened their eyes at the sight, and a few of them started to breathe anxiously.

Lesley could obviously tell that he could very well lose if he got hit. Thus, he did his best to retreat, trying to create some distance as his hands constantly formed seal after seal. The vines on the ground rose again, trying to block the attack.

Alas, Lesley underestimated the speed of the attack, as well as how strong the attacks were. Any of the vines that even got close to the attack were turned to ash!

No matter how quickly Lesley was retreating, he could not avoid the attack. In just a few moments, the balls caught up to Lesley, and they hit him right after that. The icy blue ball and the scarlet red ball both had an incredibly explosive power that could not truly fuse. The attack exploded with a loud boom, completely blowing up where Lesley was. The scarlet and blue flames completely enveloped Lesley, and the force covered up the whole stage.

At that moment, the spectators were completely silent. They merely looked on in complete disbelief.

The victor was clear.

Everyone wondered if Lesley had been incapacitated from the explosion. Meanwhile, all of the disciples from the Deer Pavilion shot up as they looked at the stage with concern.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3031 - 3035

Chapter 3031
If they had not known that the stage had a barrier around it and that they could not get on, they would have rushed up there to protect Lesley!

The flames raged for a few moments before slowly receding. The frostfire wolf slowly got closer to the part that was burning the most intensely. After the flames receded, a charred, almost blackened figure was revealed, and everyone could barely recognize him.

The moment the sight registered, they forgot to even breathe.

Lesley had been burned to a crisp. Looking at him, there was no doubt that he had died. Cries of shock and agony could be heard in the spectator stands. Everyone turned to look at the source of the noise, and they saw that the place where the disciples of the Deer Pavilion were gathered rang out with cries. They knew very well that Lesley was dead.

It was far too unexpected. Everything had happened so quickly, so much so that they were caught off guard. They did not expect the beast's power to be so immense that it burned Lesley alive. Even Lesley's corpse was mutilated!

"Goodness gracious, that beast was that strong! Lesley was already quite strong, but he's blown up from just one attack. He died in such a bad state-completely charred. I can't even look at him!"

"Lesley probably never expected that he'd lose this badly. Honestly, I never thought that this beast would be so strong. It's unbelievable…"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not showing that much emotion on his face. He had expected this much, so he was not surprised at all.

The people around him, on the other hand, never expected this, which was why they were filled with surprise.

After it made sure that Lesley was dead, the frostfire wolf walked around in circles as its body started to glow radiantly. After that, it turned into pure energy and was absorbed by the surrounding array.

The moment the frostfire wolf turned into energy, the barrier around the stage disappeared as well. The disciples of the Deer Pavilion, who had been waiting around the stage, frantically rushed up. When they saw Lesley's blackened body, they looked like they had lost their fathers.

It was far too depressing. The results were something they could not accept. The disciple that mocked Jackie in the betting area immediately fell to their knees as tears flowed from his eyes.

“Lesley! How did this happen?!”

The other disciples from the Deer Pavilion all knelt down as well, crying out in agony.

“Rest easy, Lesley… No one expected the beast to be so strong. You weren’t too weak, you were just unlucky. If you chose any other beast, the results wouldn’t have been like that…”

The disciple who had mocked Jackie cried incredibly intensely as if he had lost his whole family overnight. The other disciples around him hurriedly helped him up, offering sincere consolation.

“Arne, don’t be too sad. We should bring Lesley’s corpse away for now…”

They did not lower their voices as they spoke.

Jackie was relatively close enough to the stage, so he had heard their conversation. Thus, he heard the name of this particular disciple, Arne.

Chapter 3032
He had also heard that Arne’s family name was King. It looked like he and Lesley were close and should have been blood relatives. No wonder the two of them acted the same way.

The match’s result was determined in the blink of an eye as the skull-masked caretakers started to walk toward the stage, coming up to clean the aftermath. If no one carried the corpse away, the caretakers would have gotten rid of the body like trash.

The disciples of the Deer Pavilion would naturally not let Lesley’s body be treated that way. All of them held their sadness back as they picked up Lesley’ s corpse and left the stage.

It was only then did everyone calm down from the shock. The battle had exceeded their expectations. They had thought that they had already seen the results, but the beast actually fought back and killed Lesley.

That beast’s strength had exceeded any of their imaginations. It was stronger than any regular beast!

“Lesley was too unlucky. It looks like that beast was probably the strongest among the five!”

When everyone finished lamenting, the truth started to hit them. At that moment, some could not resist cursing.

“I was so stupid to bet on him. I didn’t have that many spirit crystals left and thought that I’d win this time. I can’t believe I lost. Fifty thousand spirit crystals went down the drain!”

“Tell me about it… I thought that Lesley would win here! He bragged so much before, saying that he’d win. He even took offense to anyone who betted on the beast. No one expected him to lose so badly!”

“If he didn’t have the skills to back it up, he shouldn’t have been so arrogant! He gloated about himself so much that everyone believed him. Now, he’s not only defeated-he’s dead! It’s one thing to embarrass himself, but he even dragged everyone else down with him!”

“I wasn’t planning on betting on him. If he hadn’t been standing there staring at everyone, I would’ve placed my bet on the beast! It’s all his fault. If not for him, I would’ve made a fortune!”

“I’m so furious! Aren’t the disciples of the Deer Pavilion supposed to be all-powerful or something? Are they still parading themselves now? Bragging is all they know!”

The moment their benefits were concerned, everyone suddenly lost their earlier fear. Some of them had basically bet what little they had left on Lesley and ended up completely broke!

In truth, quite a few of them wanted to take a risk and bet on the beast, but Lesley had been looking by the side. Whoever betted on the beast would end up being mocked and stopped if their background was not strong enough. They were forced to remain silent as they betted on Lesley, but no one expected that the result would be like this!

Quite a few people frowned in anger.

Lesley had been way too full of himself before, which already displeased everyone. On top of that, Lesley had caused them to make a loss, so everyone suddenly exploded in anger. Since Lesley was dead, there was no reason for them to curse at him. All of the blame ended up being pushed to the Deer Pavilion instead as a few people started to shout at the disciples of the Deer Pavilion.

“You disciples of the Deer Pavilion are only good at bragging! We lost all our spirit crystals thanks to him! You have to pay us back!”

“That’s right, they should be paying us back! They bragged so much before and had everyone bet on Lesley. He’s not even all that strong! He got killed by the beast in one attack, and he calls himself a chosen disciple from the Deer Pavilion. He said that he’d win. What a joke!”

Quite a few of them hounded the Deer Pavilion to pay them back. Quite a few warriors had lost their whole fortunes due to this bet. Due to their trust that Lesley would win, they had lost all of their spirit crystals!

Chapter 3033
Facing the crowd, the disciples of the Deer Pavilion trembled in anger. They felt like everyone was causing them trouble for no reason.

At that moment, Arne was incredibly emotional. After all, Lesley had died such a horrible death. Thus, he was the first one to verbally engage with the crowd.

“You ignorant fools! You were the ones who were betting so frantically. Did we force you to go place your bets? You were the one who chose who to bet on, so what does it have to do with us?!”

The moment he said that, it was like he had thrown ice into a pot of boiling oil, and it suddenly exploded. Some of the warriors were so emotional that they started to quarrel with the Deer Pavilion.

“How dare you say that! The choice was ours, you say?! Were you not standing there and staring, mocking anyone who betted on the beasts?!”

After Arne heard these accusations, he laughed coldly as he said in disdain, “We were just speaking the truth. We never forced you to choose Lesley! In the end, you were the ones who took out your spirit crystals and betted on Lesley. Who is there to blame? You should’ve gone against us if you could!”

The moment he said that, some almost spat out blood in their frustration. This guy was crossing the line. He was actually accusing them of not being firm enough and for not fighting back!

Arne was basically saying that the Deer Pavilion never physically forced them to pick Lesley, and that they were the ones who placed the bet in the end.

He basically said that the Deer Pavilion was not to blame for anything. Even Jackie’s lips twitched in exasperation after hearing that while Rudy started to tremble in anger. His whole body started to stiffen.

Rudy turned to look at Jackie. “These guys are too much, especially that Arne guy! How could he say all of that? He’s pinning the blame on others. Even if they didn’t directly force others to vote for Lesley physically, they were standing at the side and threatening those who were of lesser backgrounds! If it wasn’t for that, quite a few of them would‘ve chosen differently! Didn’t they threaten us back then? They’re despicable!”

Rudy really felt like those people were completely shameless and despicable. Even at this state, they could still say things like that.

They were relying on the laws of the Whirling World. No matter how angry the warriors in the stands were, they could not do anything!

The man with a mustache who was sitting next to Jackie was completely red in anger. He gritted his teeth and looked like he was about to rush forward. Yet, he could not do anything.

He shouted out, “These despicable fools! They should go to hell. If we could attack them, no one would be able to stop themselves! The Deer Pavilion? The top seventh-grade clan? We don’t care anymore! They’re just way too shameless!”

Some of them could not stop themselves from using Jackie as an example.

A gray-robed man, who was sitting in front of Jackie, suddenly stood up and pointed at Jackie. “This guy was smart to not pick you guys, yet all of you mocked and threatened him because he didn’t bet on Lesley! Heck, everyone heard you people! There was that guy in the green clothes as well. These two are the perfect examples, so stop trying to talk your way out of this!”

Chapter 3034
Arne‘s words had been difficult to swallow, and they ignited everyone’s anger.

Everyone started to feel righteous indignation.

After the person in front of Jackie aired his grievance, his anger never left him as he looked at Arne with gritted teeth. It was as if he wanted to see how the Deer Pavilion would try to talk their way out of it.

It would have been one thing if he had not pointed Jackie out, but the moment Jackie became part of the topic, Arne’s anger boiled over.

Everything Jackie was etched into Arne’s mind vividly. He could not forget how Jackie had looked at them in disdain, completely looking down on them.

Jackie had even won the bet in the end, which caused Arne to hate Jackie even more. He narrowed his eyes, turning to look at Jackie. Anyone could see the venom in his eyes. He looked like a snake, ready to strike at any moment.

Arne snorted. “This guy was just pretending before this, I can‘t believe all of you couldn’t tell. Even if he won, it’s all because he got lucky. He just insisted on trying to go against the grain to make himself stand out. It’s not convincing at all to use him as an example. His conflict with us before this was just to make himself known. He’s a mere wandering warrior, so how could he be able to tell who’s stronger and who’d win?!”

Arne completely diminished Jackie's victory and even added snide remarks. He felt like Jackie had just been lucky, that he was just an insignificant guy who wanted to stand out.

Arne looked visibly disgusted when he spoke, too. It was as if Jackie was just a piece of trash thrown to the roadside.

Rudy was furious after he heard all of that. Arne was trying to twist the truth and went after Jackie altogether. He would not have been able to hold back no matter how good his temper was.

He immediately stood up from his seat and pointed right at Arne's face.

"You shameless, despicable person. How are you saying that we just relied on luck? Are you blind or something? Maybe there's something wrong with your head? You seem to have forgotten everything that happened. Jackie had already said that he had betted on the beast for a very simple reason, Lesley would lose! There were so many people around when he said that, and all of them had heard everything! You were standing nearby, so there's no way you didn't hear it!"

Rudy felt like he was about to get sick from the anger alone. He had met a lot of people who disgusted him before, but none of them could topple Arne.

Arne was not just disgusting but also revolting, he was a man who knew nothing but to slander others!

After Rudy said that, Arne's expression did not change.

"My ears are working just fine, thank you, and so are my memories. It's precisely because I remember what he said that I'm sure that he did all of that just to stand out! If he was so sharp, then have him tell us why he was so sure that Lesley would lose! What was the reason? Don't tell me it's intuition, because even a child wouldn't believe that!"

Arne pointed right at Jackie, which caused all of the warriors there to go quiet immediately.

A few of them looked at Jackie curiously, wanting to know how Jackie was so sure that Lesley would lose before the battle started.

Chapter 3035
Could he have the amount of insight and knowledge?

Was it just like Arne said-that Jackie had merely been lucky in his gamble and wanted to stand out by voting in favor of the frostfire wolf instead?

Arne narrowed his eyes as he looked at Jackie mockingly as though daring him to do something.

Rudy was so angry that he started to pant. His eyes turned red and his hands trembled, looking like he was prepared to rush over at any moment. He was not able to outspeak Arne.

Arne's ability to twist the truth was far above Rudy, and Rudy felt incredibly suffocated at all of that. The truth was clearly not that way, but Arne seemed to have turned Jackie into a show-off in just a few words.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and sighed helplessly as he looked up at the person in front of him. If that person had not pointed him out, he would not have been dragged into this. He was not someone who enjoyed unnecessary trouble like that. Furthermore, there would not be any results from these arguments at all.

They could not fight each other, after all, and all they could do was run their mouths. He never expected that someone would drag him into this, causing him to feel exasperated and a little angered at the same time.

He sighed as he looked up at Rudy, who was about to die from anger. He knew that there would probably be even more disgusting words thrown in if he did not say anything.

Jackie was not scared of trouble. He reached out and grabbed Rudy's arm, pulling Rudy back.

Rudy would not be able to beat Arne in a war of words, and he would only stand to lose if he continued. He was completely red in anger.

It was as if a fuse had been lit as he told Jackie, "This dog is crossing the line! If not for the various restrictions, I would've run up there and slapped that nasty face of his!"

Jackie sighed, he could understand Rudy's feelings and knew that he was standing up to shout at Arne because he was at his limit.

He said silently, "You can't beat him like this, so there's nothing worth arguing for."

After saying that, Jackie stood up himself and faced Arne.

Arne was noticeably looking for a fight when he saw Jackie standing up, as if he was prepared to go through three hundred bouts against Jackie with words.

Jackie lightly snorted and said in disdain, "You truly are Lesley's brother, Arne, both as stupid as each other! You were clearly the one trying to threaten everyone into doing what you want, but you pinned the blame on others. Lesley was the one who bragged

so much, which was why everyone thought that he would win! He said that he was a chosen disciple of the Deer Pavilion, but to me, that title was just an accessory…”

“Everyone knows that Lesley’s relationship with the head elder of the Deer Pavilion is really close. I had a very simple reason for thinking that Lesley would lose. That’s because I knew that Lesley didn’t have the skills of a chosen disciple at all. At most, he would’ve just been an inner disciple. He was merely given the title because of his relationship with the head elder!”

Jackie said those words righteously, leaving no room for doubt.

When everyone heard his explanation, their expression brightened as though something had clicked. His words made sense!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3036 - 3040

Chapter 3036
When Lesley had been introduced earlier, quite a few people had mentioned Lesley's relationship with the head elder of the Deer Pavilion. At that moment, everyone felt like the head elder would definitely nurture Lesley with the best resources since they had close ties to each other.

Lesley's skills then would definitely be better than any ordinary chosen disciple from a seventh-grade clan. Yet, the truth proved everything. He was already dead, his body was absolutely blackened. It proved that his skills were nothing much!

With Jackie's explanation, everyone started to agree with his statement.

Lesley became a chosen disciple not through his own skills but through other means. He did not possess skills at all, but he managed to trick everyone due to the fake position he held. It caused everyone to bet their spirit crystals on him!

Arne did not expect that Jackie would actually be able to explain it. He was aware of Lesley's skills, and the fact that he became a chosen disciple through his skills. He was not Lesley's brother, but his cousin.

The two of them had some conflicts before. They had been incredibly close in terms of skill. He had also gone through a lot as he grew. Even if they were related to the head elder and had access to better resources than ordinary folk, it did not mean that they became chosen disciples through illegitimate means.

If the head elder had dared to do so, then his position would be at stake. The head elder would definitely have not done something to harm his own prospects like that!

This time, it was Arne's turn to be incredibly furious. He stared at Jackie with widened eyes and said, "You're spouting nonsense! Lesley got to where he was through his hard work. He became a chosen disciple through his own skills. My fellow disciples can guarantee that!"

Hearing what he said, Jackie coldly laughed, "You're all from the same clan, you'd naturally protect each other. When you were trying to bully others earlier, Lesley had not been the only one. The whole group of you were lording yourselves over the wandering warriors… Everyone knows very well that you're all from the same nest! No matter what you say, your fellow disciples will definitely agree. Of course, they wouldn't help an outsider like me!"

Arne was so furious that his mouth started to tremble. He felt like he was trapped with no way out.

Before this, he had always been the one backing people into corners, but now that someone else turned the tables against him, Arne could not stand it. In his anger, he started to lose himself a little.

He clenched his teeth as he shouted at Jackie, “You’re a shameless and despicable man. You only know how to twist the truth! Based on what you say, doesn’t it mean that there’s no way for us to prove ourselves?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he coldly stared at Arne, “I’m not twisting the truth, so stop crying foul here. There are many things that can’t be settled with just a few words. I used my own judgment to bet on the beast, and I ended up winning. That’s why I can say all of this… If I had lost, you could say that I was wrong, but I did not lose!”

The moment Jackie said that, Arne looked like he had just been fed poison. His face turned incredibly dark. After Jackie said all of that, he felt like there was nothing he could say.

Rudy had the urge to clap for Jackie. All of the anger he had suffered earlier had dispersed. He quietly gave Jackie a thumbs up as he cheered for Jackie in his heart!

At that moment, the man with a mustache stood up and said, “I feel like this man is very reasonable! He just used his own judgment to place his bet on the beast. The truth proved that his judgment was right. What he said just now is naturally the truth. Lesley merely used his relationships to become a chosen disciple!”

Chapter 3037
“He’d probably been flattered too much to the degree that he doesn’t know his actual level. That’s how he managed to trick everyone to bet on him!”

“This guy is right! Everything has been proven! It really is too much. It’s so frustrating! We never had much as wandering warriors, but we were tricked by all of you into betting our money on a piece of trash!”

“I feel like coughing up blood just thinking about it! I was actually tricked by a piece of trash who only knows how to brag. It’s embarrassing just thinking about it!”

“Stop with the nonsense and pay me back for my losses. You were the ones who tricked us! Claiming to be a chosen disciple from the Deer Pavilion when he had gotten his position through other means! How shameless!”

“That’s right! Hurry up and pay us back. I don’t want to hear your explanations anymore! The more you try, the worse it sounds! All of you are just trash who don’t have the skills to back up your positions!”

In truth, everyone knew that there was a very low chance that they would be paid back. They still let out just to vent their frustrations.

Arne had never been so humiliated in his whole life. Facing all those accusations and doubts, he was incredibly furious. His body started to tremble from everything.

The Deer Pavilion disciples all turned red in anger as well. Everyone started to cry out for Arne and the rest to pay them back, feeling like they were a group of scammers!

Facing the noise that was getting louder and louder, Arne could no longer hold back. He shouted out, “Why would I have to pay you back? You bet the spirit crystals yourselves. It has nothing to do with us! What that brat said earlier was all just imagined by him. It’s not the truth at all!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, saying calmly, “How is it not the truth? Did I lose my bet? Did Lesley actually win his match? That beast was not all that strong, but Lesley still lost and died so horribly that even his corpse was charred. How many matches have gone on in the colosseum? How many of them were actually killed by the beast? One of them was Lesley. You claimed that it’s because he’s unlucky, but I feel like it’s just because he’s too weak!”

Jackie’s words were incredibly agreeable to everyone. All of them felt like Jackie was speaking the truth.

Arne was so furious that he kept on opening and shutting his mouth, mainly because he did not know how to respond. After all, Lesley really did die in the end. Even his corpse was completely blackened. It was definitely the truth. No matter what he says, there is no way to convince everyone!

Jackie looked at Arne with some disdain. That look seemed to be saying to Arne that Jackie had used Arne’s own methods against him.

At Jackie’s look, Arne suddenly froze. He felt like a volcano that had thoroughly erupted. He took a step forward and shouted loudly, “I will prove everything that I said! Lesley and I definitely became chosen disciples on our own merits! Lesley and I are about equal in strength. I’ll use myself to clear Lesley’s name!”

Chapter 3038
When Arne said all of that, he had a look of intense hatred on his face. It was as if Jackie was an incredibly disgusting person.

When Jackie heard Arne, he laughed and raised his eyebrow, “How are you going to prove it? Are you going to prove it through battle? Will you fight the beasts of the colosseum just like Lesley? If you win, will it prove that you are a legitimate chosen disciple? How convincing do you think that will be? After all, everyone knows that there’s always a chance that you get lucky and choose a weaker beast. Then, I don’t think it’ll show anything even if you win…”

Jackie's words cut off another one of Arne's plans. So what if he won? It would not prove anything in the end!

Arne felt incredibly frustrated. It felt like he could faint at any moment. He looked at Jackie with intense hatred. Jackie was just setting traps all over.

Everyone could see what Jackie was doing, but Arne could do nothing about it. He wanted to clear his and Lesley's name, so everyone would need to acknowledge it. Even if not everyone did, he at least needed the majority. Yet, Jackie's words had made things much more difficult for him. Arne took a deep breath as his eyes widened more and more, so much so that they threatened to pop out of their sockets.

After a long time, Arne suddenly let out a laugh. His laugh got more and more exaggerated.

When everyone saw how he was acting, they started to wonder if Arne had gone crazy from everything that was happening. Otherwise, why would he laugh so much at a moment?

After laughing for a long time, he finally stopped.

Jackie had been abnormally calm the whole time. No matter how exaggerated Arne was laughing, he did not show any emotion. He remained to look at Arne. He knew better than anyone else that Arne's smile was not genuine no matter how hard he laughed. It was not a burst of laughter that came from the heart at all. Instead, it was craziness that came after being forced into it.

Arne composed himself, he took a deep breath before glaring at Jackie with reddened eyes. He said loudly, "I'll start a black iron bet! Will luck still play a part?"

The moment he said that the whole place was shocked. Practically everyone had their eyes widened as they looked at Arne. Everyone outside of Rudy knew what such a bet meant.

The atmosphere had been silent, but it erupted once again.

"He's actually starting a black iron bet! It looks like he has gone crazy. Even putting his life on the line, he's trying to clear Lesley's name!"

"It looks like there's no other way to clear his name if he doesn't start a black iron bet!"

"He needs to fight three matches continuously and win all of them. It's been a while since Hundred Beast City was opened, but yet the number of people who have gotten the black iron medal can be counted with one hand. It looks like Arne really has been forced into a crazy way to prove himself!"

“He’s going a bit too far. If he gets unlucky, he may end up dying like Lesley. He’ll probably die just as badly. Putting his life on the line for some of his honor, is it really worth it?”

Chapter 3039
“I think it’s worth it! If they had not actually become chosen disciples through illegitimate means, they would definitely not be able to swallow these accusations. He would have to prove himself for sure!”

After hearing all of that, Rudy was incredibly puzzled.

What did they mean by winning three matches in a row? What was a black iron bet?

What did it have to do with the black iron medal?

He had heard from Jackie that getting a black iron badge meant you needed to win three matches in a row! Even knowing that he could not figure out what a black iron bet meant. Since it was a bet, why would it involve the medal?

However, Jackie did not have time to explain anything to him at that moment. When Arne self-righteously said that he would start a black iron bet, Jackie’s expression immediately changed. He had a smile on his face, but the mocking nature of the smile was obvious to anyone.

Jackie raise his eyebrow and said, “Starting a black iron bet really will clear your name and your dead brother’s. It will prove that the two of you did truly earn your spot as chosen disciples. However, you can’t tum back after you start it. Are you sure you can win three matches in a row? Will you be able to leave the stage alive?”

The moment Jackie said that, Arne suddenly raised his head and coldly stared at Jackie, “Stop looking down on others. Since I‘ve decided to do the black iron bet, it means that I’m confident that I’ll win! I know why you‘re saying all this. You want me to retreat and have no way to clear my name… I’m telling you, I refuse! Put your petty plans away! I want everyone to know how much of a joke your earlier words were. You’re just an insignificant man who won a bet through some luck!”

Jackie’s smile remained on his face, not having a rebuttal for those words. Jackie merely stood quietly by the side. Rudy, who sat next to Jackie, was incredibly curious after hearing what Jackie said.

The others did not know Jackie, but after being with him for so long, Rudy understood Jackie very well. With how Jackie was, there was no way Jackie would have said all of that.

In Jackie's heart, everything earlier was just unnecessary. Even if he wanted to anger the other party, he would not do it by offering advice. He had actually advised Arne against starting the black iron bet and even highlighted the negatives of the bet.

It was way too different from how Jackie usually acted. However, even if he had some suspicions, he could not just voice them at that moment. Since he had said all of that, Jackie naturally had his own plans.

With his heart already set, Arne probably thought that there was no longer any reason to continue talking to Jackie. He sat back down and looked away, no longer looking at Jackie. Only, the anger and hatred on his face did not diminish at all.

Jackie raised his eyebrow as he turned around and sat back at his original spot.

At that moment, the stage had already been cleaned up. It looked as good as new. All of the traces of the earlier battle had already disappeared. The next match was already starting, it was just that everyone was too preoccupied with the Deer Pavilion to notice. Only then did the crowd slowly compose themselves.

After Jackie sat down, Rudy asked impatiently, "What's the black iron bet? What does it have to do with the black iron medal? Why does he need to win three matches in a row? I couldn't understand everything that was said just now at all. Quickly explain it to me. I feel so frustrated."

Chapter 3040
Jackie nodded, smiling as he explained, "When we just entered the city, there happened to be someone walking over with a black iron medal. Those who win the medal are called black iron warriors. When normal warriors saw the black iron warrior, they gave way to him. Even though they were definitely a little jealous, they were mostly filled with respect… If all it took was just winning three matches in a row normally, they would not have been so respectful…"

Rudy was even more puzzled at that, but he did not interrupt Jackie, and quietly listened on.

Jackie continued to explain, "I said so much just to show you that getting a black iron medal is something incredibly difficult. In order to get a black iron medal, you have to start a black iron bet before the battle. A black iron bet is a leveled-up bet! The upper limit of the bet is raised to a million spirit crystals from fifty thousand!"

After hearing that, Rudy's mouth widened in shock

From fifty thousand to a million? That was a huge leap!

Rudy never expected that at all. No wonder it was called a black iron bet!

Even for those wealthy warriors from high-grade clans, a million spirit crystals was no easy feat. After all, it was definitely not a small number.

Rudy muttered, “Then you’d really go bankrupt if you lose.”

As an alchemist, Rudy was richer than any ordinary warrior. However, even after accumulating so much wealth, there was still no way he would take out a million spirit crystals in one go. That sum was enough to completely dry Rudy out.

Thinking about that, he shuddered.

Jackie continued to explain, “Starting a black iron bet will allow you to get a black iron medal after winning three rounds in a row. Normal matches will never give you a black iron medal. The moment you start the bet, you won‘t be allowed off the stage unless you win three matches in a row!”

Rudy frowned and said, “So what you mean is, even if you’re injured after winning one match, you have to continue forward. You need to continue with the next two battles. Only by finishing the three matches and winning all of them will you be allowed off!”

Jackie nodded. Rudy was getting smarter. He had just offered a few hints, and Rudy immediately understood the rules.

Rudy sighed and responded seriously, “Then the chances of dying must be way too high. It would be considered good if even half of the people who started a bet like that survived.”

Jackie nodded, pointing up three fingers, “You’re thinking about it too optimistically. Out of ten people who have started the black iron bet, only three survived.”

That means that there was a seventy percent chance of dying.

Rudy’s lips twitched, leaving only shock in his heart. No wonder everyone reacted that way after hearing that Arne would start a black iron bet. That was where the problem was.

To clear his name, Arne planned on never getting off the stage unless he died. It was enough to show how confident Arne was in himself, or Arne would have never started that bet.

Rudy blinked as he said excitedly, “The black iron bet is something good for us. We can put in a bet of a million spirit crystals. If the odds are good, we might be able to win a few million in one go!”

Even though he did not know why Jackie needed so many spirit crystals, Rudy would still be sincerely happy for Jackie if they won and got even more spirit crystals.

Jackie nodded, “It’ s definitely a good thing for us. “

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3041 - 3045

Chapter 3041
Rudy looked up at the stage where an intense battle was going on.

Since he had been fully focused on the quarrel with Arne earlier, he did not even know what the name of the person on the stage was. All he could see was that the person seemed to be in an even battle against the beast!

Rudy looked at the stage and said, “I‘m actually a little curious. Why were you so sure that Lesley would lose? Lesley died such a horrible death, but you didn’t react at all when you saw his corpse. It’s like you already knew that this would happen.”

Jackie let out a laugh as he said, “Didn’t I already tell you? I recognized the frostfire wolf. Naturally, I knew how strong it was.”

Rudy, who was like an incredibly curious child, responded excitedly, “Then tell me in detail. Just treat it as you expanding my horizons.”

Rudy had naturally seen how strong the frostfire wolf was, but Rudy did not know its exact strength.

Jackie nodded, patiently explaining, “The frostfire wolf’s natural skill is called the Frostfire Death. It’s an upper earth rank technique. Furthermore, that frostfire wolf had already mastered the skill to the second level. It was even close to getting to the last stage. No matter how powerful Lesley’s skill was, it was still just a middle earth rank technique. There was a whole level of difference, so there was no way Lesley would be able to stand up against the frostfire wolf.”

Rudy nodded, suddenly letting out a laugh, “I remember them calling Lesley’s technique the Sky Swallowing Vines. It’s supposed to be able to even swallow up the sky, how strong would it be? Yet, it was nothing impressive. After the frostfire wolf displayed its skills, the vines were completely blown away. The person who created that skill must have been quite amusing. It‘s such an impressive name, but its power is so weak. Was he not afraid of being laughed at?”

Jackie let out a slight laugh as well.

The name definitely was quite extraordinary. If it had been an ultimate god rank technique, then maybe the name would be more befitting. Yet, the technique was only a middle earth rank technique, but even at the upper ranks. It was still named in such a way, which was a complete joke!

Rudy turned to look at where the Deer Pavilion’s disciples were.

At that moment, the disciples of the Deer Pavilion had already wiped away their arrogant looks, remaining indifferent and modest. All of them had dark looks on their faces. After all, Lesley had died such a horrible death. Arne was the one who looked to be in the worst state.

The rest of them only had stiff expressions at most, as if they had a funeral within their family.

Arne looked like he had lost his whole family, and even he himself was ill. His face was absolutely pale. Even his lips were terrifyingly white. His lips were still trembling slightly as if he had a bundle of anger burning in his heart.

After seeing that Rudy raised an eyebrow as he said in amusement.

“I feel like Arne probably hates you to death. Didn’t he want to start a black iron bet? Why isn’t he doing anything right now? If we still need to wait some more, I’ll probably lose my patience. I’m planning on betting everything I have…”

Jackie let out a slight laugh. Even if he did not look at Arne at that moment, he could imagine how angry Arne was.

Chapter 3042
“He definitely hates me to the core, but that’s no big deal. In the Whirling World, there are already plenty of people who feel that way. I don’t really care if there’s one more. Furthermore, the two of us have already changed our looks. He doesn’t know who I am at all…”

“He probably isn’t planning on starting the black iron bet right now. The black iron bet isn’t a regular match, so he would take priority. The moment he registered with the outer city token, he would immediately get moved to the front of the line! The moment the match on the stage ends, it would be the warrior who entered the black iron bet next.”

Rudy said with some disdain, “That guy seemed so confident just now as if he was already in a hurry to start the black iron belt. Yet, it seems like he doesn’t even have the courage. He’ll probably need two days of rest before he starts the black iron bet…”

Jackie did not think anything of it. After all, one’s life was the most important. He raised his eyebrow as he took out the token that belonged to him.

After the intense discussions, everyone had already started to lower their voices as they mumbled to each other. Some were still fixated on discussing Arne and Jackie. Everyone’s eyes were already glued to the stage. No matter when, there was always noise around him.

Jackie hated environments like that, but there was nothing he could do about it. He looked at the warriors around him. Compared to himself, all of them seemed much more excited.

There were those who were still incredibly excited even after they had lost a lot of spirit crystals during Lesley‘s battle. Other than those warriors who had already lost all hope after losing everything they had, most of the others still had a look of bloodlust in their eyes.

Jackie let out a sigh, toying around with the outer city token in his palm. He suddenly felt like there was no reason to continue staying there. It felt like he was wasting his time.

After thinking about it, he made a decision. After all, Jackie felt like there was no way Arne would easily start the black iron bet. Even after bragging so much earlier, Arne still did not reach where he was by charging into everything recklessly. He was naturally incredibly careful. Even after he had said everything, he would not start the black iron bet easily.

If he wanted to wait for his match, Jackie did not know how long it would take.

He then let out a cold laugh before he started to threw his divine senses into the outer city token. Probably because Rudy had been too infuriated by Arne, he seemed exceptionally excited when he allowed Rudy to head out.

The colosseum’s battles were incredibly intense, but Rudy’s skills were much weaker than everyone else, so he could not really understand what was going on. All he could do was cheer in excitement, getting swept up by the crowd.

Jackie looked at Rudy and sighed in his heart. Thankfully, he would be able to bring along another person after he won. Otherwise, he really did not know how he would bring Rudy further inside.

The battle on the stage had gone on for about fifteen minutes before the warrior barely managed to obtain victory. After the battle ended, the warrior‘s limbs were full of blood as he fought to even stand on the stage. However, no matter what, he had still won his match. As long as he won one more, he would be able to enter the central city. The victorious warrior stumbled off the stage, his face full of excitement.

The skull-masked caretakers started to clean up the stage again as the next match was about to follow.

Before the next match started, the skull-masked caretakers would produce a scroll and allow the participant to pick out one of the five beasts from the scroll. No matter how intense the battle before was, the caretakers would still emotionlessly walk up the stage before the next battle.

Chapter 3043
At that moment, a caretaker walked up with an all black scroll in hand.

After someone saw the scroll in his hand, the person immediately shouted out in surprise, “Look! The scroll in the caretaker’s hand is pure black. The scrolls before had all been white, so why is this one black?”

“What are you saying?! The scroll is black! My god… It looks like it’s true!”

The moment they realized that the scroll in the caretaker’s hand was black, questions started to erupt everywhere. The warriors that understood what it meant all widened their mouths in surprise, unable to suppress their excited expressions.

Quite a few of them started to get excited. Everyone looked at the caretaker on the stage before looking at where the disciples of the Deer Pavilion were gathered. They seemed to have a lot to say, but they knew that the caretaker was about to say something in line with what they were thinking. So, they held back their excited emotions as they decided to wait for it.

After the caretaker arrived at the center of the stage, he unfurled the black scroll. The moment the scroll was opened, a wave of pressure shot out with the scroll in the middle. It flowed everywhere, causing every warrior to suddenly find it a little harder to breathe.

The skull-masked caretaker announced emotionlessly, “Everyone who wants to place their bets, you have an hour to make your decision! After an hour, the black iron bet will commence!”

The moment he said that, everyone was surprised. It was just like they had thought, the black scroll meant that this match would not be an ordinary match, but a black iron bet!

A lot of the warriors who had not been in Hundred Beast City for that long had never seen a black iron bet before. Even those that had seen before still got so excited that their faces reddened. Some of them were even dancing around.

A black iron bet represented fervor, courage, and bloodlust. It was a huge gamble that would not let the participant off the stage before the participant won. The limits were set at a million spirit crystals. Even the lower bet was set at fifty thousand!

If they won, they would strike it rich. If they lost, they would lose everything. No matter who started the bet, all of them had a fifty-fifty chance of winning and striking it rich.

How could anyone not be excited?

A lot of them started to breathe frantically. All of them wanted to say something but could not compose the right words.

Rudy could not help but widen his mouth as he looked at Jackie in confusion, “Looks like we were wrong! That guy really does have some courage. He actually started the black iron bet! It’s probably better this way. People who are acting on an impulse usually don’t end up well. I feel like he’s probably not that prepared. There‘s a good chance he’ll fail.”

Jackie looked at Rudy, smiling but saying nothing.

At that moment, everyone kept on looking between the caretaker on the stage and Arne. The caretaker showed no emotions, so there was naturally no way to tell anything. They were actually able to see some emotions on Arne, but it felt incredibly strange. That was because Arne’s face was in shock, and slowly turned into anger and awkwardness.

Chapter 3044
The people around them could not tell that the disciples who were sitting behind Arne were all incredibly anxious.

One of the disciples from the Deer Pavilion said anxiously, “Arne, how could you be so reckless?! Didn‘t we already talk about it? We’d wait one or two days before starting the black iron bet. Starting it now will just leave yourself ill-prepared. You should let yourself calm down first. Only then will you be able to act confidently on stage! We can’t afford any mistakes at all! We’d already discussed everything, so why did you suddenly start a black iron bet?!”

After saying that, the others from the Deer Pavilion started to complain as well. They felt like Arne was acting way too rashly.

Feeling the intense gazes from everyone, and listening to the complaints from his fellow disciples, Arne felt incredibly incredulous. His lips twitched in exasperation.

The moment he wanted to say something, the caretaker at the center of the stage said again, “The challenger for the black iron bet is called Lucius! Please head to the stage right now and choose the beast for the first match!”

The moment the caretaker said that quite a few people were stunned.

Were they mistaken?

The one who started the black iron bet called Lucius! It was not Arne!

Arne had been so arrogant, trying his best to tell everyone that he would start a black iron bet to clear his and Lesley’s name. Yet, the person who started the black iron bet was not him, but someone called Lucius.

Quite a few of them started to look all over, asking loudly, “Who’s Lucius? Do any of you know him? Have you ever heard of this name?”

“Anyone who would dare to start a black iron bet at this moment must be a disciple from a big clan!”

“Since they’re a disciple from a big clan, they should more or less be somewhat well known. I know most of the famous disciples, but I’ve never heard of anyone by that name!”

As everyone was discussing the matter, Jackie stood up from the crowd. He walked right onto the stage, stunning everyone, including Arne and Rudy.

All of them had their mouths slightly open as they looked at Jackie in disbelief.

That was Lucius?

He had started the black iron bet! A wandering warrior?

Various thoughts formed in their heads as they struggled to find the words. Rudy took a deep breath. No wonder Jackie had just remained smiling. Jackie had already known that the person who started the black iron bet was not Arne, but himself!

Rudy took a deep breath as he suppressed the excitement in his heart. He was a hundred percent confident in Jackie. No matter how absurd the things Jackie did seemed to be, he would feel that Jackie had his reasons. Furthermore, he felt like Jackie absolutely could start the black iron bet. Rudy knew him, but the others did not. All of them felt like the guy called Lucius must be mad!

To avoid any unnecessary trouble, Jackie had not only changed his looks but even his name as well. Hundred Beast City would not deliberately ask for a warrior’s true name after all. There was nothing wrong with giving himself a fake name. Jackie had no affiliation at all, so he could change it all!

When Jackie stepped onto the stage, everyone was in an uproar!

“Is this Lucius guy really crazy? Does he know what he’s doing? Does he know what will happen if he doesn’t win after starting the black iron bet? Why did he do that? He seems a bit too confident in himself. Even disciples from high-grade clans won’t easily start black iron bets!”

“That‘s right! Even chosen disciples from eighth-grade clans wouldn’t easily start a black iron bet before being absolutely confident in their skills.”

Chapter 3045
“Just look at Arne earlier. He kept saying that he would start a black iron bet, but he did

not start it immediately! In the end, it's because he's not confident enough in himself. How can a wandering warrior be so confident to think that he can win three matches in a row?"

"He probably let all the passion get to his head. He had just had a large fight with Arne, and he ended up with the upper hand. He probably didn't know what a black iron bet even represents, and what the results would be like. He just wanted to trample over Arne by doing this!"

"Even if he wanted to do that, surely there's no need for this? Is there really something wrong with his head? He's putting his life on the line just for some honor. It looks like this guy is just immature!"

"That's right, not only that, but he's crazy as well. It's obvious that he's not mentally sound!"

Everyone there exploded out in the discussion, saying anything they wanted. However, practically no one felt like Jackie had good prospects. After all, the difficulty of the black iron bet was something even disciples from high-grade clans did not dare to try out easily, let alone a wandering warrior without any background.

Jackie's actions looked like a complete joke to them.

Arne could not stop himself from laughing out loud. This time, his laughter was earnest. The chosen disciples of the Deer Pavilion around him all frantically laughed as well.

Arne raised an eyebrow and said, "He's the stupidest wandering warrior I've ever seen! This Lucius guy really is such a joke that I could not be bothered with him anymore. Does he think he'll show me up by doing this? Does he think that people will look at him in a better light because he started the black iron bet? Does he think that he'll be lucky enough to choose three weak beasts in a row?"

The warrior behind Arne laughed and said, "This guy started to get too pleased with himself after getting an advantage. He probably thinks that no one is a match for him! He's actually challenging something that even disciples of high-grade clans wouldn't dare to. Everyone can tell that he's just trying to stand out."

After saying that, he could not stop himself from laughing.

Arne snorted as he said, "Before this, I just felt like this guy is despicable. Now it looks like he's just a fool. I should not have bothered with an idiot like this! Now I just look petty. We should be taking care of mentally ill warriors like him."

After saying that, Arne could not stop laughing.

Jackie did not care about the laughter or discussions around him. At that moment, he was already on the stage, standing in front of the caretaker. He quietly glanced at the caretaker. It was the first time he was standing so close to one. He could not feel any warmth as if the caretaker was a complete machine.

After Jackie stood in front, the caretaker did not hesitate at all to wave his right hand, revealing five figures from the black scroll.

Jackie looked up and regretfully realized that he only recognized one of them from the five. He could not help but lament in his heart that there was so much to see in the world.

He recognized the creature called the Thousand Feathered Beast. It looked like a peacock, with radiant colors on its feathers. It looked incredibly beautiful but carried a dangerous aura as well. The Thousand Feathered Beast's skills were no match for the frostfire wolf, but not that far away. Jackie estimated that it was probably either the second or third place among the five beasts.

Jackie had never seen any of the other beasts before. He could not find an answer even after going through the memories that were left for him. The few beasts all had their own shapes and forms. There was a large rat, but it was dozens of times larger than any ordinary rat.

There was one with the head of a lion that looked incredibly robust. At that moment, the skull-masked caretaker said again, "Just like before, you have five minutes to choose. After five minutes, you have to choose one beast to fight against"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3046 - 3050

Chapter 3046
Five minutes was more than enough time. In truth, after looking at the five beasts, Jackie already had an answer in his mind. Even if he was a little unlucky and chose the strongest among the five, it was not a big issue for Jackie. No matter how strong they were, they should just be slightly stronger than the frostfire wolf. To him, that was no issue at all.

Compared to Jackie's lack of emotion, the spectators were incredibly excited.

When they saw that Jackie had started the black iron bet, they were so shocked that they did not know how to react. They had slowly begun to calm down, and when they saw the five images in the air, they felt like cursing in their hearts.

"This guy is for real! He's already choosing his beast. I feel like I'm seeing things. Ever since Lesley lost the match, I've already felt like I was dreaming."

"I feel astounded as well. I thought that the person who started the black iron bet was Arne, but I never expected it to be the wandering warrior who had been arguing with Arne. Do you think he really has something up his sleeves, or is he just overly excited?"

"Do you really think that he has any skill? How do you even begin to believe that? If he really had any skills, he would have been picked up by a clan as a disciple. How could he still be a wandering warrior?! Even a disciple from a major clan wouldn't casually start a black iron bet. Have you forgotten how hard it is? You have to have three matches in a row, and win all of them. Even if he's lucky enough to choose a weaker beast in the first round, there's no way he can be so lucky to choose the weakest beast every round!"

"Quite a few people have started the black iron bets before, but only three out of ten can walk off the stage and earn a black iron medal! Don't think that this guy is actually that skilled just because he knows how to talk a little."

"You're right, but I feel like there should be nothing wrong with Lucius' mind. Everything he said earlier seemed very well thought out and clear. He doesn't seem like someone who would act so rashly at all. There's no way he would do something so absurd. After all, in a black medal bet, any bit of carelessness would cost him his life. It's impossible he doesn't know that. Since he is aware of all these, there must be a reason why he's doing this."

"You're regarding that guy too highly. You can't say that he's all that reasonable, he just has a way with his words. I feel like this guy is probably just stupid. He might have done all of this because what Arne had said earlier was right. He might be doing this to stand out from the crowd and gain our attention!"

“That‘s right! Some people will do anything for attention. I feel like this guy doesn’t just love to brag, but has immense confidence in himself too!”

Slowly, all sorts of discussions surfaced. Some of them felt like Jackie’ s actions really did have some skill behind them to lead him to be so confident. However, most of them just felt like Jackie was a clown desperate for attention.

Even disciples from high-grade clans would not dare to start black iron bets so easily. He had dared to do so simply for the sake of attracting more attention. People like that usually end up dead, and would suffer a far worse fate than Lesley!

Rudy‘s face was cold as he listened to everyone. If not for Jackie‘s words, he would have already tried to argue against all of them.

Chapter 3047
Before, Rudy would try to correct the thoughts of others even if he was angered by the discussions. On the other hand, Jackie never wanted to bother with the hassle. Back then, Rudy felt like it was not right for Jackie to do that.

That way, everyone would misunderstand Jackie, and try to insult him.

Jackie should have tried to clear up his name. Yet, as time passed Rudy slowly understood why Jackie acted that way.

Facing a crowd like that, no matter how loud someone was and how much truth he spoke, it was completely useless. There was no way to correct their thoughts. There was only one way to shut them up, which was to use his own strength to force them to shut up.

The one who was the most excited among all of them was definitely Arne. He had been forced into silence by Jackie, but finally found a way for him to vent out his frustrations. When he heard the discussions around him, Arne immediately stood up in the stands.

He shouted out, “Anyone who feels like Lucius is skilled, can you please wake up? If Lucius is really that exceptionally talented, then how could he still be a wandering warrior? His clothes look like he’s a beggar on the streets. Have you ever seen a talented warrior who did not dress well and exude an impressive aura? How could they be like Lucius?” Arne insulted Jackie, saying that Jackie looked like a beggar.

It was obviously an exaggeration. Even though Jackie’s clothes were not that luxurious, they were still clean and tidy. The robes were not ripped anywhere at all, but in the eyes of someone from a high-grade clan like Arne, clean and tidy clothes like that still belonged to beggars.

People of noble birth naturally got to wear the corresponding clothes. Their full attire costs at least ten thousand spirit crystals! Rudy took a deep breath, feeling like he was

starting to lose control. Arne was far too despicable, even caring about what others wore and using that as an attack.

He loudly continued, “I already said that he was just trying to stand out and attract attention, but none of you believed me! Do you believe me now? How could an ordinary wandering warrior ever start a black iron bet! Does he think he’s a chosen disciple from a ninth-grade clan? Just think about how arrogant he was acting before. It’s like he thinks he is better than everyone!”

Arne was taking the chance to completely degrade Jackie!

He only had one thought in mind, which was to cause everyone to attack this Lucius!

The warriors on the stand might have felt that Arne’s words were a little exaggerated and doubtful, but they still agreed with some of his words. After all, the black iron bet’s difficulty was plain for all to see.

Almost everyone present would not dare to start a black iron bet. It was far too difficult. The most important point was that they would die if they did not win all three rounds! Unless they win, they would never be able to leave. They could not even surrender.

It was a battle that would not end. Anyone who was slightly average would never try the bet because it was far too dangerous. Even if winning the black iron bet earns them a black iron medal, the title of black iron warrior, an entry into the central city, and the respect of everyone, they would still not start the black iron bet!

Chapter 3048
The cruel reality was plain for all to see. They could not help but wonder if Jackie really was crazy.

The discussions around him did not affect Jackie at all. Two and a half minutes quickly passed by, and he raised an eyebrow, feeling like there was no reason to hesitate any longer. He turned to look at the caretaker, pointing right at the Thousand Feathered Beast.

Since he did not know the skill level of the other four beasts and what they were called, he would pick one he was familiar with. Even if he had estimated the Thousand Feathered Beast to be at the second or third among the five beasts, putting it at above average, Jackie did not mind. It would not affect anything at all.

The caretaker was different from the others. He did not care about Jackie‘s status or background. He was just a caretaker who upheld the rules. After Jackie made his choice, the other four figures turned into energy, disappearing into the air. Only the Thousand Feathered Beast remained, slowly solidifying. Its rainbow-colored feathers reflected the light intensely. It seemed like they were looking at a rainbow-colored phoenix.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, remembering that the Thousand Feathered Beast's natural skill was called the Deadly Plume!

Only, he did not know how much the Thousand Feathered Beast had mastered Deadly Plume. After the choice was made, the caretaker kept the black scroll and walked forward to make an announcement for all the warriors.

"You have an hour to make your choice. The black iron bet is different from the normal betting. The upper limit for a black iron bet is a million spirit crystals, and the lowest bet you can place is fifty thousand. Anyone who wants to bet can head to the betting area with your spirit crystals. We will announce the odds right now. The beast is one to two! The warrior is one to seven!"

The moment that was said, the spectators were in an uproar. Everyone had their eyes widened. It was the first time they had seen such high odds!

The difference between the two odds was three times more. Those odds could be absurd in the real world. It looked like even the caretakers felt like Lucius' chances of winning were incredibly slim. Otherwise, there was no way the odds would be so high.

If a lot of people bet on the beast, Hundred Beast City would probably lose a lot of money. They had set the odds so ridiculously possibly because they did not think that Lucius would win!

Hearing those odds, Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation. Even if he had never taken part in any battles, his aura should not be that weak.

Was there a reason for the odds to be so high?

However, that suited his intentions perfectly.

Since his odds were one to seven, then he just needed to bet a million on himself. After that, he would be able to get seven million spirit crystals for free after winning the black iron bet! Thinking about it made him happy. The more Arne laughed, the happier he was. He suddenly felt like even the caretakers were starting to get lovable.

He deliberately said loudly, "Everyone, did you hear that? It looks like even the caretakers feel that Lucius' acting absurdly. That's why they set the odds so high. They just want to attract more people to bet on Lucius to make more for themselves!"

Normally, high odds are meant to even out the betting pool. They could not have everyone placing their bets on one side. That way, Hundred Beast City would not lose that much if one side won. Pulling Jackie's odds so high was meant to attract more warriors to bet on Jackie.

Chapter 3049
Quite a few warriors shook their heads silently.

Practically no one felt that Jackie would win. The chances of him winning were so slim that it was negligible. Compared to the one to seven odds, they felt like one to two odds was not too bad. Even if they could not win seven times their bet, betting on Jackie was a sure loss.

“What are you even thinking about? Do you think that the one to seven odds is very attractive? Even if it’s rare, this guy will definitely lose. There’s no reason to bet on him at all! One to two odds might be much lower, but there’s nothing to think about considering the other option would lose!”

“You shouldn’t be so intent on gambling! That guy might be acting so confidently, but he’s still just a wandering warrior. You have to think things through. This is a black iron bet, there’s no way to get by with just luck!”

“Those who think that Lucius will win are just too crazy for money, but there’s no reasoning with people like that. You should think about it honestly and not take risks. Go ahead and bet your whole fortune on Lucius. When you lose, remember not to curse at others. It was your own choice!”

Slowly, those thoughts became the dominating ones. As long as anyone wanted to bet on Jackie, they would be seen as gambling addicts greedy for money. That was because the one to seven odds did not matter when the reality was right in front of them!

When Arne heard that there were still those who wanted to bet on Jackie, he was furious.

When they were betting on Lesley’s match, Jackie had not only bet on the beast but even mocked Lesley and cursed Arne as well. When Lesley lost and died, Jackie even mocked him alongside the crowd.

Arne would never forget that grudge. He would definitely not allow anyone to bet on Jackie. He was already certain that Jackie was just trying to show off and stand out. He would definitely not let anyone think highly of Jackie. He wanted Jackie to personally see how the crowd had forsaken Jackie. He wanted Jackie to hear how little everyone thought of him!

At that moment, Arne started to shout again, “Can all of you please wake up? Don’t get tricked by this guy. I already said it before, he merely started the black iron bet to show me up. It’s because i said I would start a black iron bet, so he tried to start it before me. He just wanted to show off and have everyone acknowledge him…”

“He’s just trying desperately to gain everyone’s attention. Otherwise, how could a mere wandering warrior attempt something as difficult as the black iron bet? Even if he’s confident in his skills, there’s no way he would risk his life on the black iron bet… He only has one goal in doing this. He wants everyone to acknowledge him! He did so before as well, so why are you betting on someone like him? You’ ll definitely lose. There’s nothing to hesitate about!”

After saying that, he walked out of where all the Deer Pavilion’s disciples were and headed to the center of the spectator stands.

He shouted out, “Someone said before! One to seven odds are high, but you’ll just lose no matter how much you put in. One to two odds might seem lower, but you’ll at least be able to win!”

“The upper limit of the black iron bet is a million spirit crystals. You’ll be able to get two million back if you put a million in! However, if you place a million on Lucius, you’ll just be throwing your spirit crystals away!”

“A warrior can only bet on one side! You have to be careful. After all, black iron bets don’t happen every day. It’s so rare that you might only be able to see it once a month!”

Chapter 3050
“Black iron bets have a very high upper limit. If you win, you’ll get many times your spirit crystals back. If you lose, you lose everything!”

Arne’s yelling slowly swayed the warriors who wanted to bet on Jackie. After all, his words sounded quite reasonable. Even if the odds were so high, there was no way Lucius could win the black iron bet.

No matter how much they bet on him, it would just amount to nothing. It was better if they bet on the beast instead. Even if they would only be able to make twice their bets, they were still betting a lot on this!

Looking on as people slowly stopped wanting to bet on Jackie, Arne was incredibly ecstatic. That was what he wanted to see!

As long as Jackie suffered, Arne would be happy. Not only did he want to watch as Jackie dies, but he also wanted Jackie to suffer as well. He wanted Jackie to regret going against him!

Arne turned to look at Jackie, who was still on the stage. He felt like Jackie had definitely heard everyone’s words, and was definitely suffering on the inside. Jackie’s expression was probably about to change. However, he was stunned when he saw Jackie’s expression because Jackie remained emotionless. Even if others did not acknowledge him, Jackie seemed incredibly calm, as if he did not hear anything. He did not seem to care that no one was betting on him.

Jackie immediately understood what Arne was confused about when he saw the look on Jackie's face. After all, Arne had been frantically shouting at the crowd to not bet on Jackie.

When Jackie thought about that, he almost failed to stop himself from laughing.

Arne really was simple-minded. He actually thought that Jackie had started the black iron bet just to show off!

Jackie had no intention of attracting any attention at all in making a bet. Even if that had been his intention, there was no way he would put his life on the line for that. Arne had not thought that far at all. Even if he thought about it, he would have denied the thought. He felt like Jackie was just a clown lacking attention. He thought that he would be able to deal a blow to Jackie by doing that.

Arne's eyes widened as he was first filled with doubts before he started to feel shocked. His lips twitched slightly.

After a long time, he said to Jackie, "What are you putting on a show for? Don't think that I don't know how badly you're affected right now just because you're acting like you don't care. You must hate me so much right now! You must be regretting ever going against me! You didn't get the results you wanted. Everyone will always look down on you. Don't think that people will bet on you just because you started the black iron bet. It's because you're just a complete idiot!"

Hearing his words, Jackie felt like Arne was a complete joke.

He raised an eyebrow and said plainly, "Is there something wrong with your head? How do you know what I'm thinking? Can you read my mind? In my mind, you're the idiot. It's actually laughable how stupid you are!"

Arne's eyes narrowed as he snorted, "Why are you in such a hurry to deny everything? I must have been right. You'll definitely lose, completely too!"

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation. Arne was already too far gone. No matter what he said, Arne would remain stubborn.

Jackie might not want to deal with a crazy guy like that, but he still remembered what Arne had done that day. When he had a chance in the future, he would make Arne pay back several fold.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, suddenly thinking about something. He laughed and said, "Since you're sure that I'll definitely lose, bet a million spirit crystals on the beast!"

Arne snorted, “Of course, I’ll be betting on the beast. I’ll be paying a lot too! Do you think everyone’s as poor as a wandering warrior like you?! Don’t just focus on other people’s bets. You must join too. Who are you betting on?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3051 -

Chapter 3051
Arne's eyes had a challenging glint in them. He wanted to see how many spirit crystals Jackie would take out and who he would bet on.

Logically, with how arrogant that guy was, he would bet on himself, but it was also possible that the brat would throw a curveball and bet his spirit crystals on the beast.

After Arne said all of that, he attracted the curiosity of all those around them as well. They wanted to see how much Jackie would bet and whether Jackie would bet on the beast or himself.

Facing the curious gazes of the crowd, Jackie maintained his composure, not caring what the others thought or said. They did not know Jackie's skills at all nor did they know what he was thinking. He did not want them to know more about him either.

He turned around and walked right over to the betting area outside of the colosseum. Jackie's actions caused everyone else to stand up from the spectator stands as well, following Jackie toward the betting area.

Rudy was practically jogging to keep up with Jackie's footsteps.

When he reached Jackie's side, Rudy hurriedly whispered, "Jackie, how many spirit crystals should I bet?"

Jackie sighed as he faced forward, thinking about it for a moment before he slowly said, "Do you trust me?"

Rudy was stunned when he heard that.

Was that not a silly question? If Rudy did not trust Jackie, why would he follow him everywhere?

Rudy frowned and said, "Of course I trust you. Who would I trust if not you?"

Jackie straightened his back, letting out a faint smile. "Since you trust me, then bet everything you have on me. The odds are one to seven, and it's an excellent chance."

Jackie only had an approximation of Rudy's wealth. He probably did not have a million spirit crystals, but Rudy definitely had 500000. After all, Rudy had already been an alchemist for a while, and he should have had some savings.

Rudy did not even need to think about it before he nodded after he heard that. "I was planning on doing that."

After the two of them finished talking, they arrived at the betting area. At that moment, a large group of warriors was right behind them. All of them curiously watched on as they looked at Jackie's every action.

Jackie did not care how heated their looks seemed to be.

He looked at the caretaker behind the long desk. He was like any other caretaker; standing with his body straightened and not showing a single hint of emotion like a machine crafted for the Hundred Beast City.

Jackie did not hesitate at all before taking out a million spirit crystals and handing them to the caretaker, saying, "I want to bet a million spirit crystals. All of them will be on me."

The caretaker mechanically collected the spirit crystals before writing down his name on the warrior's segment.

Jackie heard a collective gasp when he said that. Some people started to remark that Jackie was from a special place to be able to fork out a million spirit crystals. Others remarked that Jackie truly was demented to be so confident in himself. He did not seem to care about how hard the black iron bet was.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3052 -

Chapter 3052
With that, Jackie walked to the side.

Rudy, standing behind him, stepped up after Jackie placed his bet and did not hesitate at all as he took out all his savings from his storage ring. It was 67000 spirit crystals, all placed on Jackie. He then walked to Jackie's side.

At that moment, everyone started to look at the two of them differently as the discussions slowly got louder.

"They've been sitting together from the start. The guy beside Lucius had always been protecting Lucius. It was obvious that their relationship was quite close."

"Now it looks like they're not just close but incredibly slow. That guy took out an odd number of spirit crystals, so that has to be all that he has."

"He bet everything on Lucius! Isn't be afraid of losing it all? He heard everything we said earlier. Is he really that confident in this Lucius guy, and actually feels like Lucius can win the black iron bet?"

“Don’t overestimate those two. They must’ve come from an insignificant place. They probably don’t know how strong everyone else is. That guy next to Lucius probably has no real experience and is just blindly trusting him. He’s going to end up crying!”

“You’re right, these two are clearly just ignorant. Anyone with any intelligence wouldn’t do what they did!”

These people raised their voices as they talked, seemingly intending for the two of them to hear everything. However, both Jackie, who was Lucius, and Rudy acted like they heard nothing. It was a waste of time to fight against them.

Before the results were out, they had no way of changing the minds of those people at all. Anyone who still had any spirit crystals in hand came and placed their bets as well. After Rudy placed his bet, he merely stood by Jackie’s side.

The warriors from the spectator stands followed. When they placed their bets, they did not hesitate at all to bet their spirit crystals on the beasts.

A bald man who wore the uniform of the Rosefinch Pavilion took out everything he had, a total of 760000 spirit crystals, and bet them all on the beasts.

The bald man had an incredibly pleased look on his face, looking like a poor beggar who struck it rich overnight. After he pulled out all his spirit crystals, he mumbled to himself, “Seven hundred and sixty thousand spirit crystals are about to become a million and five hundred and twenty thousand in a snap! I’m about to become a millionaire!”

“After all my losses and wins, multiple bets after, I only managed to earn twenty thousand spirit crystals. I can’t believe my fortune is about to turn just like that!”

After he said that, he looked up at Jackie. “I should thank you, really. If you hadn’t started the black iron bet, I wouldn’t have been able to earn so many spirit crystals at once!”

The bald man’s smile was wide as he spoke as if he had just hit the lottery.

Jackie’s expression remained unchanged at those words. Rudy frowned as he looked at the bald man, irked.

The bald man was not expressing his gratitude at all. He was just mocking Jackie. Rudy coldly snorted as he turned away, not bothering with someone like that.

All of them were so pleased with themselves, certain that Jackie would lose. He would let them think what they wanted. Even though Jackie was going to go through three battles on the stage, Rudy was certain that Jackie would probably not need that much time.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3053 -

Chapter 3053
In two hours at most, they would see who would be the ones laughing.

The ones who took part in the bet took up two-thirds of the audience, and among them, only one of them was someone Jackie was familiar with. That person bet 100000 spirit crystals on Jackie. It was the wandering warrior who wore a green robe from before, the same man Lesley had berated.

The green-robed man had betted on the beast in the battle before the last, winning three times his spirit crystals. At that moment, he took out a portion of that and betted it on Jackie.

When the green-robed man shouted out that he would bet a hundred thousand spirit crystals on the warrior, everyone was stunned. They looked at the green-robed man with disdain and mockery.

“This guy’s gone nuts, just like Lucius. Both of them had been threatened by Lesley before, but this green-robed guy is a little smarter than Lucius. After being threatened by Lesley, he didn’t talk back. With what he’s doing right now, it’s clear that he’s coming for the Deer Pavilion!”

“That’s right. I don’t know what this guy is thinking. Is he not worried about being threatened again? Does he think that he should just double down since he’s already in a bad situation?”

Jackie looked at the green-robed man curiously, and their gazes met. He did not care about. what everyone else seemed to say as he maintained a calm expression.

When Jackie looked over, the man merely nodded at Jackie wordlessly. Jackie let out a sigh, a little gratified. Even though the green-robed man said nothing the whole time, Jackie could tell what he felt. He wanted to fight back. He did not want to be pushed down by disciples from high-grade clans anymore.

He was pitiful to not have any status or background, but he refused to give in. He bet those spirit crystals on Jackie as a way to fight back against fate.

Arne let out a cold laugh. “What a hilarious sight! It looks like you’re intent on fighting the Deer Pavilion to the end! Well then, I’ll fulfill your wish. You better remember this. Be more careful in the future. If you aren’t careful, we’ll slice you apart. Even if the Whirling World has a lot of restrictions, there are many places without any. From now on, you should be ready to die at any moment as long as you live in this world!”

The green-robed man's face darkened as a look of anger flashed in his eyes. However, he bit his words back, not saying anything.

He looked at Arne before walking right back to the spectator stands.

Looking at the man's figure, Rudy could not help but sigh. He whispered to Jackie, "I can understand what he feels right now. If you weren't around, I'd probably be in the same situation. I might not even be as well off as he is! When facing injustice, I might just accept it without a single thought of fighting back. He's actually willing to fight back!"

An hour passed quickly, and the people taking part in the bets had all placed their bets. Other than the green-robed man and Jackie's duo, the others bet their spirit crystals on the beasts. Even though the one-to-two odds were not as good as one-to-seven, all of them were sure that Jackie would lose. Being able to make money was still something!

On the stage, the Thousand Feathered Beast was already waiting.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3054 -

Chapter 3054
The Thousand Feathered Beast was about six meters tall and looked like a miniature mountain.

Jackie walked up to the stage steadily.

The moment he walked on the stage, the barrier around the arena activated, separating the stage from the outside world. No matter how powerful the attacks from the inside were, nothing would break through and reach the spectator stands.

The moment Jackie stood in place, the Thousand Feathered Beast moved. It flapped its massive wings, rushing into the air after an intense screech. Its sharp eyes remained fixed on him, even in the air.

Jackie narrowed his eyes slightly as he pulled out his gray sword from Mustard Seed. The black iron bet required him to win three consecutive matches in a row, and this was his first one. His hands constantly moved as he formed gray rune after gray rune. A hundred soul swords materialized from those runes. He reached out and fused them into his sword.

The gray sword started to vibrate from the energy within as the Thousand Feathered Beast constantly flew in the air, looking at Jackie. It let out another sharp cry, which caused his eardrums to thrum.

The next second, the Thousand Feathered Beast moved its wings and suddenly attacked.

It let out a rainbow-colored glow so vibrant that it was borderline blinding. It flapped its wings, forming miniature cyclones due to how fast it was. It then let out another cry as countless feathers left its body, rushing quickly at Jackie. Those feathers might have looked incredibly beautiful, but they had a killing intent that could pierce into anyone‘s soul.

It was the Thousand Feathered Beast’s natural-born technique, the Deadly Plume. The Thousand Feathered Beast’s feathers were filled with its essence. Whether it was defensively or offensively, it was dozens of times stronger than any ordinary weapon.

Jackie merely heard winds blowing as those feathers rapidly flew at Jackie at imperceptible speed.

He raised an eyebrow. Thankfully, he knew of Deadly Plume. He knew that Deadly Plume’s impressiveness came from its speed and power. He thus activated the laws of space, disappearing from the spot.

The moment Jackie disappeared, countless rainbow-colored feathers landed on his original spot. The speed and amount of those feathers would have at least covered up 15 meters around where Jackie had been.

In any normal retreat, even if Jackie had not been heavily injured, he would have sustained some injuries from not being able to avoid the speed and density of the attack. If he had been injured from the first strike, the future battles would be affected.

Jackie had a plan against that and thus avoided the attack.

Meanwhile, the spectators were so shocked that they did not know what to say. Their eyes widened, threatening to pop out of their sockets.

“My lord, this bird is so powerful! Its attacks are horrifyingly quick. It was so far from Lucius. Normally, as long as a warrior wants to avoid an attack from that distance, they should be able to, but that attack came at such a shocking speed.”

“If that brat didn’t have something up his sleeve to flicker away, most people wouldn’t have been able to avoid it!”

“That’s right. Could the guy have used something to shrink the distance? I feel like the space was distorted. Could he have used a spatial technique? Does he know spatial techniques? You really can’t judge a book by its cover. Regardless, this bird won’t be easy to deal with. It’s so quick that even if the attacks aren’t that strong, it’ll be hard to deal with!”

“That‘s right! This guy is that unlucky to pick the strongest beast out of the five. This bird doesn’t look any weaker than the wolf Lesley picked out earlier!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3055 -

Chapter 3055
The spectator stands had already blown up in discussion due to that exchange. They had never seen a beast that quick before. Even if the two of them were already at a safe distance, there was a very good chance that Jackie would not have been able to avoid the attack if he had not used the laws of space. He might have gotten injured, even, affecting the final results.

Looking at that exchange, they could not help but wonder if they would have been able to escape unscathed if they were on the stage.

Arne let out a cold laugh as he said, “Karma always finds a way to punish those who deserve it. This guy has done so many nasty things, so that’s why he’s being punished. He chose the strongest of the beasts, and he won’t even be able to win the first match. He might end up destroyed by the rainbow feathers on that bird in just a moment!”

The moment he said that, the other disciples from the Deer Pavilion behind him started to laugh. As long as Jackie met misfortune, they would be elated. Arne, on the other hand, looked like he had struck the lottery.

Rudy was actually not that far away from Arne, so Arne deliberately raised his voice to make sure Rudy heard everything.

Rudy, unable to stand it anymore, turned to Arne with a cold look and said loudly, “You’re right, karma always strikes back! The beast Lesley chose was even stronger than this bird. He died such a horrible death, and it just proves what you said is right!”

The moment Rudy said that, the crowd burst into laughter. Rudy’s words had truly stung, using Arne’s own words against him.

Arne’s face darkened as his prideful self faltered in a flash. He gritted his teeth as he stared at Rudy, looking like he wanted to rip him apart.

Arne’s lips twitched as he raised his voice. “You filthy mongrel. You’re just as wicked as Lucius. Just you wait! Once I get the chance, I’ll have the two of you begging me for mercy!”

Facing threats like these, Rudy’s heart would still shake a little, but he had already gotten used to it and started to even feel immune.

He did not even bother raising an eyebrow before he let out a cold laugh. “If you have the skills, then come right over. Stop bragging before you actually do something. Make sure you‘re not the one begging for mercy before you die!”

The two of them shot at each other back and forth, causing the atmosphere to grow tense by the minute. The warriors around them knew that those two would not be sitting if not for the rules of Hundred Beast City. They would not be able to forgive themselves if they did not start fighting right away.

Arne was already so furious that his hands were trembling.

“Alright, then! You’re just an ignorant cur like Lucius! I won’t even need a few days for me to show you who‘ll be crying!”

Rudy raised an eyebrow, deciding to just turn away.

Nothing would come from arguing like that. Both of them were just shooting words back and forth. Even if he beat Arne in a war of words, what did it mean?

It was not like he could do anything to Arne at that moment. All it did was push Arne back slightly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3056 -

Chapter 3056
Slowly, Rudy noticed that he was becoming more and more like Jackie. He slowly understood why Jackie was always so calm, and why none could get to his head.

Fwoop! Fwoop! Fwoop!

Countless rainbow-colored feathers viciously slammed onto the surface of the stage.

Jackie barely managed to avoid them all. He looked up at the Thousand Feathered Beast in the sky, noticing its sharp eyes still looking right at him. Even though it showed no emotions, the intense killing intent coming from it washed over Jackie like a wave.

“Is he only good at evading? It’s been a while, but he’s been dodging! Why isn’t he fighting back?! Has be given up on even fighting back because he knows he’ll lose?”

“Who knows what this kid is thinking. Does he think that the Thousand Feathered Beast will exhaust all its energy if he keeps on hiding like that? If that guy really thinks that way, what a joke this will turn out to be.”

“The Thousand Feathered Beast isn’t an actual beast at all. Its energy is inexhaustible thanks to the whole Hundred Beast City. The only one who’ll run out of energy is Lucius!”

Rudy listened to all of that with a calm outward expression. He might be curious as to why Jackie was not attacking, but he remained calm. After all, he trusted Jackie and knew there was a reason for everything he did. However, those around Rudy did not have his calm attitude at all.

The man with a mustache who was beside Jackie earlier turned to look at Rudy and said curiously, “Why is he not attacking? Won’t it just put him at a disadvantage if he keeps on doing this? Could he just be trying to drag things out because he knows he’ll lose?”

In truth, he had worded it very vaguely. What he meant to ask was if Jackie knew that he would die, and was just trying to stay alive for as long as possible.

No matter how dumb Rudy could be at times, he understood the meaning behind those words. He thus turned to look at the man and answered coldly, “We’ve got no reason to speculate before the results are out. Just keep watching.”

The man’s lips twitched, swallowing back the words he was about to say.

After avoiding another attack, Jackie looked up at the beast again.

‘It flew up again,’ he muttered to himself.

He had just been avoiding the attacks, but he had also been observing the movements of the beast. He still had a question he needed an answer to. He stopped as he grabbed his sword with both hands, slashing at the beast. Destroying the Void turned into a black slash that flew right at the Thousand Feathered Beast.

At that moment, the crowd burst into murmurs and gasps.

“He attacked! He finally attacked! I really don’t want to see the guy dying of exhaustion before he even launches a single attack!”

“Tell me about it. That’d make the battle way too boring. Only the beast was attacking, while the guy was dodging! It wasn‘t interesting at all!”

The gray slash traveled very quickly. In a flash, it appeared in front of the Thousand Feathered Beast.

Facing Jackie’s attack, there was no way the beast would not move. It stretched its wings as it shot into the skies. The slash whizzed past the Thousand Feathered Beast’s claws, not hitting it at all.

Everyone heard a boom as the slash hit the barrier.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3057 -

Chapter 3057
It was a barrier specifically made to cut off the stage and the outside world, protecting the spectator stands from being affected. When the slash hit the barrier, it caused small ripples before being absorbed.

Jackie let out a sigh as he frowned helplessly.

The Thousand Feathered Beast did not just attack incredibly quickly, but the speed at which it moves was not to be underestimated, too.

Earlier, the Thousand Feathered Beast had the chance to move away before he attacked, but it waited until Destroying the Void was coming at it before it fled.

Was it trying to show off its speed?

The beast was made of energy, incapable of thinking for itself!

Those thoughts floated in Jackie’s mind before he discarded them. It was not the time to think of any of that when the spectators saw what happened, they could not stop talking.

Even Arne lamented, “How quick! Lucius truly is unlucky, ’cause that bird is nimble. Attacks can’t reach it with how fast it moves! Even if Lucius has a way to run, his true energy will get exhausted in time. He’s bound to die, delivered like a slab of meat on the chopping block!”

A Deer Pavilion disciple quickly said, “You’re right, Arne! This kid is already meat on the chopping board waiting to be cut in half by that bird! He’s lucky, though. If he fell in our hands, we wouldn’t have let him off so easily!”

Arne pursed his lips as a look of disappointment flashed in his eyes. “You’re right. If Lucius ended up in our hands, he’d suffer a worse fate and would wish he was dead. Letting him die like this is too good of a fate for him!”

After saying that, Arne curled up his fists as he looked at Jackie‘s figure with venomous hatred.

Jackie narrowed his eyes slightly on the stage. He gripped his sword With both hands again as he stared right at the Thousand Feathered Beast. His right hand started to form even more seals.

Ample energy flowed into the gray sword as he activated the laws of space, pulling into a safe distance away from the beast again. This time, he planned on launching a long-range attack.

In truth, Jackie was in no hurry to end the fight. Even though he experienced quite a lot recently, he felt like he lacked experience compared to others. He did not want fights that were in his control to end too early.

He clenched his sword as he faced the Thousand Feathered Beast again. He let out a slash, this time only the size of a fist. Suddenly, it completely expanded in the air, turning into a massive slash that was nine meters wide!

Before, the Thousand Feathered Beast avoided Jackie’s attack because the attack was too small in scale. The Thousand Feathered Beast had avoided the attack so quickly, so Jackie decided to launch a huge attack this time. He wanted to see if the beast would be able to avoid it.

When the slash turned large, the Thousand Feathered Beast immediately felt a sense of danger. It flapped its wings against as it flew right up.

Since Jackie had launched a horizontal attack, the attack only expanded horizontally, yet the beast flew upward. Jackie’s attack slammed into the barrier again. After causing some ripples, nothing else happened.

The crowd fell silent for a moment after witnessing that before they erupted again.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3058 -

Chapter 3058
“There has to be something wrong with this guy! Doesn’t he know what expanding the range of an attack does? Every technique has its limitations. Unless they were large area attacks to begin with, expanding the area of an attack would mean decreasing the strength of a technique!”

“That’s right. If the strength of the attack had been a ten, the attack was probably only left with a five after what he did. He’s a wandering warrior, so how strong can the technique be?”

“If the attack had been at its peak, it might’ve been able to injure the bird. After he expanded the attack, the attack was only left with a strength of five! Even if it damaged the bird, the bird would only lose a few feathers at most!”

Arne started to cackle. This time, he did not deliberately laugh in an exaggerated manner but was really laughing at Jackie’s idiocy.

Everyone could tell that the technique Jackie used was not supposed to be a large area attack. He would just be reducing the damage it would deal by expanding it, which was completely foolish!

Anyone with a sliver of intelligence would never do it!

Arne laughed and said, “I’m beginning to suspect that this guy was just trying to entertain me when he started the black iron bet! Ever since he stepped on stage, everything he did has just made me laugh. First, he just kept on avoiding the attacks. After that, he impatiently countered. His attack wasn’t fast enough, but instead of changing his way of attack, he decided to expand his attack range. Does he think he’s using an ultimate god rank technique that would heavily injure the bird even if he expanded the area?!”

The other disciple laughed.

“He’d be extremely lucky to have access to a lower earth rank technique, let alone an ultimate god rank one! I think he‘s probably only good at running away. No wonder he was so arrogant. He probably thought that he’d be able to run away from all of us!”

Arne let out a snort. “Please! Even if he can run, it doesn’t mean we don’t have anyone here who specializes in speed. As long as we want to, we’d catch him! It’s all too late, though, ‘cause this guy will die here. There‘s no way he can survive!”

Rudy’s face was red with anger. He wanted to walk up to Arne and slap him right in the face. He did his best to hold back his anger, however. It was not that he did not want to

offend Arne, he just did not want to do anything pointless. Nothing would happen no matter how much they argued.

He meditated on this thought to suppress the anger welling up in him, trying not to lose his cool. Arguing with them would do nothing.

Just as Rudy was composing himself, Arne said again, “This is the dumbest person I‘ve ever seen. He thinks so much of himself and is so prideful! Lucius is probably regretting everything at the moment. He never expected the beast he picked to not only be strong but so quick as well. He knows that he’ll die if this goes on! That’s why he’s regretting things. He was too prideful, unable to see through his decisions!”

The other disciple joined in the hate train.

“I don’t think he’s that prideful, but he’s just very stubborn. He insists on showing off to the end. We already know what awaits him; he’ll have thousands of feathers pierced through him! He’ll die horribly!”

“He will. He‘s so confident in himself, there‘s no way he can accept the result,” Arne mocked.

Rudy could no longer hold back after hearing all that. He suddenly stood up and looked at Arne. “Before the results are revealed, can you please shut your mouths? Do you think you’re all smart? In my eyes, you’re the scatterbrained ones!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3059 -

Chapter 3059
“You know nothing about Lucius, so how are you so sure he’ll lose? Do you think everyone will end up getting burnt to a crisp like Lesley?!”

After Rudy said that, he looked at Arne coldly, causing Arne to turn purple in the face. “What did you say?!”

Rudy smiled coldly. “I‘m speaking human words. Do you not understand them? Can you shut that annoying mouth of yours? You might feel that it’s fine after you speak, but please be considerate of how others feel. I feel like puking the moment you open your mouth, do you know that? The things you say are far too stupid!”

The moment Rudy started talking, he could not stop himself. He recalled everything that Arne had said and got even furious. If he could, he wanted to kill Arne with his words.

Arne stood up from his seat angrily as the tension between the two of them rose instantly. The tension was so thick it could be cut with a knife, and a fight was bound to happen if nothing was done.

The disciples of the Deer Pavilion hurriedly pulled back Arne when they saw that the situation was not great. If they started fighting, it would be no joke. It would anger the laws of Hundred Beast City.

Hundred Beast City would not care about one's skill or background. As long as a person broke the rules, they would immediately be punished. If they were struck by lightning, they would end up just like Lesley. No matter how reluctant they were, they had to stand up and grab Arne's arm.

"Arne, calm down. Don't try to argue with someone like that. If you come to blows, then everything is over! Even if you were a chosen disciple of the Scarlet Pavilion, you wouldn't be able to stand up to the laws of the Whirling World. After all, the laws here ignore anything. If he died, nothing of value would be lost, but if you're dragged down with him, it wouldn't have been worth your life!"

Those words successfully calmed Arne.

He sighed as he looked back. "You're right, my life is worth so much more than his!"

After that, Arne shouted at Rudy, "Don't even think about dragging me down with you, you brat. I won't fall for your tricks. If you want to die that badly, run up to the stage and die with Lucius!"

After saying that, Arne let out a cold laugh, looking like he would not fall for any tricks. He sat back down, not bothering to look at Rudy anymore.

Rudy's lips twitched in exasperation, certain that Arne was of unsound mind. It was probably something that Arne would never change in his whole life as well. Since he chose to keep quiet, however, Rudy could not be bothered with anything else and returned to his seat.

Jackie could not hear anything from the spectator stands no matter how loud they were. At that moment, he had thoroughly figured out the Thousand Feathered Beast. He let out a cold smile before he gripped his sword with both hands.

He pointed his feet forward and rushed into the air, slashing right at the Thousand Feathered Beast again. He slashed from the lower left to the upper right angle. The gray slash turned into a massive nine-meter slash once again. This time, he had expanded the technique just like before. He knew that it would reduce the power of the attack.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3060 -

Chapter 3060
However, Jackie did not care. He even activated the laws of space around his blade, causing the original attack to only need to travel half the distance.

The Thousand Feathered Beast let out a cry and shot up into the air like before. This time, it was unfortunately not as quick to dodge as a fraction of the nine-meter slash pierced through its lower body!

The Thousand Feathered Beast's whole body stiffened as its wings constantly shook. It could not stop crying out in the air.

Someone shouted among the spectators, "It hit! The slash hit the lower body of that bird!"

"Something's wrong! Look! Why aren't there any wounds on the bird's body at all? It clearly hit the beast, so why isn't there any blood at all?"

"That's true! I feel like that bird just shouted out a few times! It's still flying upwards… So it's not affected at all!"

The Thousand Feathered Beast indeed flapped its wings to stay afloat.

Jackie's Destroying the Void did pierce the Thousand Feathered Beast's lower body. Other than letting out a cry of agony after being hit, the beast did not seem to have any other reaction at all. It caused quite a few people to be curious, too.

"It seems like the beast's defense is just too strong. Even if Lucius' attack managed to catch the beast, the beast's defense was top-notch, so it caused no great damage."

"Even if it's that strong, a few feathers should've fallen, but this bird didn't even drop a single feather. Isn't that crazy?"

"You 're right… I think it's a little absurd as well. Could this guy's offensive abilities be so weak that he can't even break a few feathers? Or perhaps this beast's defenses affect every single part of its body?"

The discussions on the spectator stands were intense as everyone was baffled at the sight.

Jackie's attack looked like it was quite powerful. Even if the power had been reduced because it was expanded, it still hit the beast in the end. It should have at least left a bit of a mark!

They were speechless at the fact that not a single feather fell from the beast. Other than a few cries of agony, it did not seem affected at all!

Arne laughed crazily again. "Hilarious! What kind of technique is this kid using? Is it even at the earth rank? He runs so fast, but I can't believe his attacks are so weak. He wasn't even able to break a single feather!"

The other disciples of the Deer Pavilion joined in.

“Arne’s right. Could this guy be using an elementary red level technique?! Otherwise, how could it be so weak? It’s so weak that I can’t even bear to look at it!”

“If it is that weak, why was he so pompous before his match? Where did he derive his courage?”

“Didn’t we mention it before? This kid probably came from somewhere insignificant. He probably thinks that his meager skills can bring him to great heights, that no one in the Hestia Continent is a match for him!”

“He’s just an ignorant fool who doesn’t know how vast the outside world is, and that’s why he dared to start the black iron bet. He thought he could win three matches in a row!”

The disciples of the Deer Pavilion were just filled with ill intent at that point. They were incredibly happy, incessantly saying that Jackie was completely useless. Compared to how excited the Deer Pavilion was, the other spectators were much calmer.

“I think I can see the end of it all, so there’s no need to fight anymore. I thought that he might actually be able to at least win one match before dying in the second round. I can’t believe he can’t even make it through the first!”

“I feel some sympathy for that green-robed wandering warrior, though. He earned quite a bit before but threw a hundred thousand spirit crystals in one go. He’s making such a huge loss. Luckily, I listened to your advice and didn’t bet on Lucius. Otherwise, I’d be crying right now!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3061 -

Chapter 3061
“That’s right, there is no limit to the black iron bet. There’s no guarantee you can even see one in a whole month. Many people would get instigated by the black iron bet and throw away their whole life savings, trying to earn a big sum.”

“One to seven odds is far too alluring. If Arne wasn’t making such a big fuss earlier, quite a few people might have bitten the bait and put a lot of spirit crystals on Lucius. Then, they’d really be suffering great losses!”

“That’s right, I almost put all my life savings on Lucius. After I heard what all of you said, I was lucky enough to realize my mistakes. I placed my bet on the beast. Even if the odds are only one to two, it would still double my spirit crystals! It‘s still a good thing…”

Just as everyone was busy discussing, the Thousand Feathered Beast suddenly fell from the air. With a bang, the beast’s massive body heavily slammed onto the stage, causing dust to fly everywhere!

As it flew in the air, the beast still had the strength to constantly cry out, but after it fell to the ground, it could only manage small frills. It seemed like it was dealing with a great deal of pain!

The beast constantly rolled on the ground. Its feathers and massive body shook. Jackie let out a cold laugh as he raised an eyebrow. He knew that most of the beast’s soul had already been eaten. No matter how much it tried to fly, it would be pointless!

Jackie raised the sword in his hand as countless strands of black energy condensed on the tip of his sword. He summoned his strength and slashed at the beast. The crowd heard a slash, and the blade pierced through the beast’s throat.

Blood suddenly shot out, staining the whole arena with the blood of the beast. The smell of blood filled Jackie’s nostrils, but he remained expressionless. After all, everything had been within his calculations.

Destroying the Void was a soul attribute technique. After mastering it, Jackie was already well versed in controlling the technique. He no longer wasted any energy on destroying physical flesh, but only focused on rotting the soul. Even though the Thousand Feathered Beast was still trying to fly upward, its soul had been constantly ripped apart and dissolved!

Slowly, the beast could no longer hold on after most of its soul had rotted away thus falling from the skies!

That scene stunned everyone there. Arne‘s smile froze on his face as be widened his eyes, staring at the corpse of the beast in disbelief!

How was that possible?

Why did the Thousand Feathered Beast fall from the skies?

Why did it constantly roll on the floor and cry out?

Why did the beast not avoid Jackie’s final strike?

With how fast the beast was, as long as the beast wanted to, the blade would have only struck the ground. It would not have been able to harm the beast at all. However, the beast looked like it was in such excruciating pain that it could not pay attention to its surroundings at all.

Everything that had happened was out of their expectations. It had happened too suddenly as well, causing the spectators and the warriors to all be speechless. Everyone was first stunned before they started to look at each other in confusion.

What happened? How did things progress to that stage?

Before Jackie dealt the final blow, there had been no wounds on the beast at all. Other than those few cries, it had been flying upward. There did not seem to be anything odd about it, but even despite all of that, the beast seemed to have had all its strength drained from it as it fell heavily from the air.

“What exactly happened? The beast was clearly fine, so why did it suddenly fall from the sky? Why didn’t it dodge the attack? Who can tell me what happened? Isn’t everything too sudden? I feel like Lucius was cheating!”

“I don’t understand either. Lucius clearly looked like he lost, but how did things suddenly change? Could Lucius’ attack have some other effects? We might not have seen the beast get injured, but it actually was!”

“Could it be a soul attribute attack? If it really was, then the outer injuries might not have been obvious. After all, those techniques attack the soul!”

The discussions could not stop. After all, everyone was far too shocked at what happened.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3062 -

Chapter 3062
Some managed to guess, but most of them were still trapped in confusion. All of them

frowned, anxious to know the answer. The passionate discussions did not stop things from going on as they should. After being sure that the beast was dead, the masked caretaker walked up the stage steadily.

He raised his hand and waved, “Challenger, please exit the stage. The stage needs to undergo maintenance. The second match will commence in five minutes.”

Jackie nodded as he turned around and left the stage. He looked around at the passionate crowd. At that moment, even the calmest warriors were deep in discussions.

Jackie had planned to return to the spectator stands since Rudy was still there. Yet, when he saw how thirsty everyone was for more information, Jackie immediately changed his mind. He did not want to bother talking to them at all. They could assume whatever they wanted to. After all, only one match had ended.

After three battles were all done would those people stop insulting him. Jackie knew very well that even though he had won the first battle, those people with sinister intentions would still be incredibly focused on belittling and insulting him.

A lot of people would probably just say that he got lucky, and that his luck would not keep on holding out.

Winning the first out of three did not mean anything. Only by winning all three in a row would he be able to truly prove his strength.

Thinking about that, Jackie let out a light laugh as he turned away, not even bothering to spare a second glance at the audience.

The warriors in the audience were about to go crazy. They had thought that Jackie would return to the spectator stands during the break. Then they would be able to get some answers to their questions. Yet, Jackie did not seem intent on returning at all.

He merely stood on the stage quietly looking at the caretakers cleaning up the stage as he waited for the second match to commence.

The warriors on the spectator stand pulled their hairs in frustration, really wanting to know the answer. They had complicated moods in their hearts.

“So in the second last attack, the beast really was injured. That’s why it kept on crying out as it flew, we just couldn’t see the wound!”

“I think so. Otherwise, Why would it suddenly fall from the sky as it was flying? It must have been too heavily injured to continue. Furthermore, when Lucius dealt that final blow, the beast would definitely have been able to dodge it if it still had any ability to react!”

“Even I would have been able to avoid that attack, let alone the beast, but Jackie still managed to pierce its throat, killing it right away. This means that the beast did not have the ability or awareness to avoid the blow at all. It was already so heavily injured that it only knew how to cry out in pain!”

“That‘s right. After it fell from the skies, it kept on struggling on the ground. If they did not have wings that restricted its movements, it might have been rolling all over!”

“It looks like it must have been hurting. Was it really a soul injury?”

“Do you even need to ask? Of course, it’s a soul injury. If it was a physical one, none of us are too blind to see the wound. There are so many people here, no one saw any wounds at all. They only saw the bird falling from the sky!”

“So there’s only one conclusion. The beast’s soul was injured. Lucius is a soul attribute warrior, that’s why we did not see a wound. The technique should be at a high grade as well. Otherwise, there’s no way the beast would have lost all awareness after falling and even get pierced in the throat!”

After all that discussion, everyone slowly got their answers. They started to understand that Jackie’s technique was a soul attribute technique. This soul attribute techniques or warriors that specialized in them were a minority on Hestia Continent. Only warriors that were talented in that department would choose to train in them, and even those who were talented would sometimes give up midway. That was because the soul attribute was far too difficult to learn and master.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3063 -

Chapter 3063
Many masters had failed in front of soul attribute techniques. They never expected that Lucius was a soul attribute warrior. It seemed like he definitely had some talent.

Initially, everyone was incredibly curious about Jackie. When Jackie started the black iron bet, they felt like he was just crazy and attention-seeking. They were then convinced by Arne’s words that Jackie was just someone greedy for pride and attention.

Everyone started to change their opinion toward Jackie. They felt like he had started the black iron bet because he actually was talented and skilled!

Those who had wanted to take a gamble and bet their spirit crystals on Jackie slowly started to have a change of heart.

“I think that Lucius might actually be able to win…”

“I think that things don’t always happen how you expect them to. Everyone might have bet on the wrong side…”

At those discussions, the spectator stands erupted again. That was because almost everyone there had placed their bets on the beasts. It was not an ordinary bet either, it was a black iron bet with a limit of a million spirit crystals.

Everyone felt like they would definitely win, so quite a lot of people placed their entire life savings on the beast. They felt like they would be able to double their fortunes. After Jackie won the first match, they started to get worried. Yet, the more that was so, the more manic they got. The moment someone said that Jackie might win, those crazed gamblers jumped out immediately.

“What kind of nonsense are you saying?! So what if he won the first match? Don’t forget that this isn’t just one round! You can’t just be sure after one match, he needs to win three in a row. What’ s the point of winning just one!”

“That’s right, it’s just the first battle. Can those idiots who are trying to hype Lucius up just shut your mouths? Didn’t you all bet on the beast as well? What good would Lucius winning get you? Your spirit crystals would all be gone!”

“Can’t you just be more patient?! That brat might have won earlier, but he was lucky enough to choose a weak beast in the first round! There’s no way he’d beat any of the stronger ones!”

“That’s right, that beast’s defenses were just too weak! He was lucky enough to win thanks to that one weakness. He’s a soul attribute warrior, there’s no way he’d be able to beat any beasts that were defensively stronger!”

“I’ll curse at anyone who says anything so depressing again! I don’t care which clan you’re from!”

“Everyone knows that soul attribute warriors fear defensive capabilities the most, and beasts are even stronger in defense than warriors. It’s just that that beast was a long-range attacking one.”

“Its power came at an amazing speed. In terms of its defenses, it was weaker than other beasts. That’s why it died so quickly!”

“You’re right! That guy only managed to win in the first round thanks to his luck!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3064 -

Chapter 3064
Those sentiments quickly became mainstream among the spectators.

In truth, the one with the most complicated mood at that moment was Arne from the Deer Pavilion. After witnessing Jackie's win, he was absolutely stunned. His mouth dropped and even his breathing became erratic!

He refused to believe what he saw was real, nor did he want to. When he saw the beast being stabbed in the throat, Arne immediately stood up from his seat. He reached out and clutched his throat as if he had been the one who was stabbed!

If the disciples behind him had not pulled him back, Arne might not have been able to control himself anymore. Thankfully, the discussions around them slowly calmed him down. Even if there was no one of any significance there, he had to say that they were right this time.

Lucius had only won because he was lucky to have specialized in the soul attribute while the opposing beast was not a defensive one. That's how Lucius won.

Luck would not always be on his side. The second match was about to begin, and there was still the third match after that! There was no way Lucius could keep on getting lucky! With that in mind, he slowly calmed his frantic heart down.

After taking a deep breath, he slowly looked up with a slightly purple hue on his face, "He only managed to win the first match thanks to luck, but luck can't always be on his side. The second and third matches will start soon! His luck has run out! He'll definitely lose, and he'll lose incredibly badly. He'll get ripped apart!"

Arne was basically chanting at that point as his hands slowly opened, raising his voice as he said, "A win is a win. It would be boring if he died in the first match anyway. We'll just let him suffer longer!"

The suck-up disciple nodded, saying with emotion, "You're right. If he died the moment he went on, it would be too cold of a fate for him. Things should drag out longer so his heart can suffer more. That would be better!"

Arne nodded vigorously, narrowing his eyes as he stared at Jackie's back, "You're right! Only then can our hatred be sated. Earlier, Lucius definitely heard everything I said when I stood in the middle of the spectators. He's only good at acting. He must be incredibly nervous right now. He's just forcing himself to look fine so he doesn't embarrass himself. He's actually incredibly scared at the moment. The longer time passes, the more he'll suffer!"

The more Arne thought about it, the more Arne felt like it was true.

Lucius must be suffering internally. He knew that he would die, but things were still just dragging on, his death looming over him.

The only reason why Lucius looked like he was calmly accepting everything was because he was a clown that wanted attention. That was why he started a black iron bet when he did not know what it was at all.

Lucius thought that he would be able to win with just a little bit of skill. Hearing everything that had been said, Lucius must have finally realized the truth. The more of the truth he saw, the more clearly he could see his end result, and the more he would suffer.

Thinking about how Lucius was suffering on the inside, Arne suddenly felt incredibly happy. He tossed his earlier anxiety aside as he looked toward Rudy.

Yet, Rudy was merely looking at the stage with a calm expression, not showing too much emotion. He clearly heard what everyone was saying, but he showed no reaction at all. Looking at how calm Rudy was, Arne snorted.

He could not stand how the two acted so nonchalantly. He raised his voice and said to Rudy, “Lucius’ friend, you look like you are completely fine. Aren’t you worried that Lucius will be ripped apart?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3065 -

Chapter 3065
Arne did not know Rudy‘s name at all, only knowing him as Lucius’ friend.

Initially, Rudy did not react at all. It took him a while to realize that Arne was talking to him.

Rudy turned around in frustration. When he saw how happily Arne was acting, he could not stop himself from rolling his eyes. He felt that Arne seemed like a mentally ill person. He loved jumping to conclusions without a shred of judgment.

Anything that was not good for Jackie would see him believing it wholeheartedly.

The reality was right in front of everyone, but they did not seem willing to accept it. Arne actually seemed so sure.

Rudy‘s lips twitched as he shot back, “Why are you so happy? Did Lucius lose?”

Those words completely stunned Arne, he did not know what to say for a moment.

Rudy snorted as he continued, “Anyone with some amount of intelligence wouldn’t be challenging me right now. If he already lost, then I wouldn’t be able to bite back at what you’re saying at all, but he clearly won his match. The second match is about to start, there’s nothing for you to be pleased about!”

After saying that, Rudy turned his head away again, not bothered with Arne. At that moment, the time was already up, and the stage had already been cleaned.

The caretaker took out his pitch-black scroll again. This time, a new batch of beasts appeared in the air in front of everyone.

Everyone straightened their backs and held their breaths as they looked at Jackie, anticipating his second choice.

Jackie looked up at the five beasts in the air. His lips twitched in exasperation, lamenting how many beasts there were. Out of the five beasts, Jackie only recognized one! He had never seen or heard of the four others before.

After looking at the true memories he had, he could not find any clue on the other four. He sighed as he walked on the stage again. The five beasts were all completely different than the five before.

After contemplating, Jackie’s eyes stopped on the second beast. It was the only beast Jackie recognized as the energy hound. It looked like a wolfhound but was full of spikes. It was five or six times bigger than a normal wolfhound.

Its actual shape was about the size of a small element. The energy hound specialized in attacks of rampant power, and it was much stronger in terms of defense than regular beasts. It was a purely savage beast filled with brute force. It was not that intelligent either.

Jackie calculated in his heart and felt like the energy hound was probably only at half the strength of the Thousand Feathered Beast. In the current batch of beasts, it probably was in the last place.

Thinking about it, he let out a smile as he did not hesitate to choose the hound.

Based on the rules, Jackie had five minutes to choose, and everyone had been waiting for the five minutes to run out so Jackie would make his choice. Yet, they did not expect Jackie to be so decisive.

Jackie had made his choice in just a few seconds. It felt a little too hasty.

Chapter 3066
Did he really think that he was lucky enough to pick the weakest of the beasts on a whim?

However, Jackie did not care what the others thought at all. He had his own judgments.

The caretaker next to him remained emotionless, looking like nothing that happened around him had anything to do with him at all. When Jackie chose the energy hound, the other four beasts turned into nothing, and energy turned into an image of the energy hound.

The energy hound solidified very quickly. It let out a howl that filled the whole arena. The next second, the hound dropped from the air.

Jackie was on the south side while the hound was on the north side. The two of them looked at each other from opposing sides.

The energy hound bared its sharp teeth as its blood-red eyes viciously stared at Jackie, looking like it was prepared to bite into Jackie's throat at the next second. As it howled, saliva could be seen dripping from its teeth. The spikes around its body constantly shook, like a wild dog that had seen meat!

At that moment, the spectators were abuzz again as everyone looked at the man and beast in anticipation.

"It's a beast that looks like a wolf and a dog. It looks like it has strong defenses. It clearly looks like a brute of a beast. Beasts like these are usually incredibly sturdy."

"Lucius is done for now! There's no way he can win."

"Soul attribute attacks struggle the most against defensively strong beasts. Out of the five beasts, there had clearly been those who looked weaker defensively, but Lucius still picked this one! I don't know what he's thinking!"

"He might just be too confident in himself right now. The earlier victory gave him so much of a rush that he can't even think straight anymore. He decided to just randomly pick a beast, not caring what he would face!"

"I think Arne's right. He's just too pleased with himself. All he wants is to show off in front of us. Just look at how he chose the beast immediately without any thought to it. He's trying to show us how smart he is by doing that, but I think he's just dumb!"

"You're all too right. I think so too. If he had just taken time and properly observed before making his pick, I wouldn't have thought so at all! Yet, now I can guarantee that it's exactly like you said! He thinks that he can win even if he randomly chooses the

beast. He would then stand on the center of the stage and tell everyone that he managed to win so easily, that he can win the black iron bet!”

“Oh please! If he wins, I’ll name my firstborn after him!”

Jackie’s decisive action had caused everyone to think that he was just a complete show off!

Everyone mocked Jackie for just choosing randomly and ending up choosing the strongest of the beast defensively. Jackie would definitely pay for his choice!

At that moment, if anyone turned to look at Arne, they would notice that he had his hands clasped together, muttering something. He looked like he was praying, or like he was uttering a curse. His eyes had veins in them at that point. However, he was already somewhat consoled seeing Jackie make the wrong choice.

Yet, he was still unwilling to relax. That was why he had his hands together, muttering, “He will lose! He’ll definitely lose! He’ll lose incredibly horribly. He’ll get ripped to shreds by that dog! He will die a horrible death, never resting in peace!”

He was sincerely chanting all of that, hoping that Jackie would lose. Arne’s hatred for Jackie was already at its limits. He no longer wanted to see Jackie getting any more victories.

If Jackie won this time, there was no way to explain certain things anymore.

Jackie calmly faced the hound‘s teeth. No matter how fierce the hound looked, he did not seem to react at all.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3067 - 3075

Chapter 3067
The hound's saliva was all over the floor which looked quite disgusting.

Since Jackie had not moved at all, the hound started to get anxious. It had been waiting for Jackie to make the first move but did not expect Jackie to be so patient, merely standing in place with his sword in hand, not moving at all. Slowly, the hound's patience wore off. Its hind legs bent slightly, looking like it was about to attack.

Looking at that, Jackie raised an eyebrow as his left hand constantly moved, forming seal after seal.

In the air, a hundred soul swords slowly condensed.

After being summoned by Jackie, those swords turned into black spots of light and fused into the sword in Jackie's right hand.

This time, he did not hold back at all. The upper ultimate god rank technique, Destroying the Void, had already been completely mastered by Jackie, and Jackie was using it in full force! The whole blade was filled with his full might.

With a howl, the hound could finally not hold back anymore as it shot right at Jackie like an arrow. Its mouth was wide open as it charged incredibly quickly!

With how powerful it was, each step it took caused the earth to shake slightly.

Looking at that, all of the warriors breathed a sigh of relief. It was just like they thought, that beast had an incredible defense, and that was perfect for going against a soul attribute warrior.

"This guy is done for! Unless his technique is an ultimate god rank technique, there's no way he'll survive this battle!"

"That's right! In front of a beast like that, the sword in Lucius' hand is just like a twig. It can't stop the beast's claws at all!"

As the hound started to speed up, Jackie could even feel the wind blowing in his direction. He frowned slightly as he shot forward as well!

Just as they were about to clash, Jackie activated the laws of space and disappeared from the spot. When he appeared again, he was already behind the beast. However, the beast's reactions were faster than any ordinary beast.

After Jackie disappeared, it was immediately on alert. The moment Jackie appeared behind it, its whole body turned around as its mouth bit right at Jackie.

Jackie retreated, slashing out as he pulled the distance. The gray slash suddenly struck the hound's forehead!

Jackie merely heard a small crack. He could not help but raise an eyebrow as he saw a drop of blood flow out from where the attack landed.

Being that, he licked his lips and lamented how strong the beast's defenses were. Beasts with weaker defenses would not even leave any wounds on their bodies after being struck by Destroying the Void. That was because they could not stop its power at all. It would go right into their souls.

However, the defenses on the energy hound had actually managed to block a small portion of Destroying the Void's power. Even though most of it still entered the hound's body, it was still enough to shock Jackie!

However, even if the hound's defenses were very strong, it could not completely stop Destroying the Void. Only a portion of its power had been used to break through the hound's defenses, and the wound on the hound's forehead was where Destroying the Void's power chipped off.

Chapter 3068
With a thud, the hound's body fell heavily on the stage.

Jackie looked at the hound's body, not showing much emotion at all. After all, he had already expected that result.

The hound was no match for the Thousand Feathered Beast, and its attacks only relied on brute strength. It was not going to trouble him at all. After the bound died, the barrier around the stage disappeared.

Jackie turned around slowly as he walked off the stage calmly. He knew that the caretakers needed to clean up the stage to revert it to its original state.

When Jackie walked off the stage, he was shocked to realize that the noisy spectators had turned completely silent. He looked up to see that all of the spectators had their eyes widened, and their mouths were gaping as well.

No one was talking anymore. It looked like the warriors on the spectator stands had all frozen in place. Even their breathing was shallow.

It took a long time before someone started to rub their eyes and pinch their arms, telling themselves that everything was real.

“I actually saw all of that. I’m not dreaming at all! Lucius won again! He won so cleanly this time…”

“Didn’t all of you say that the beast‘s defenses were incredibly strong and that Lucius could definitely not break through them? Didn’t you say that he would be ripped apart?”

“That’s right! Didn‘t a lot of people say that Lucius was definitely going to lose and that he had no chance? You all said that he would definitely get ripped apart by this wolf-like or dog-like beast. You said that he would end up even worse off than Lesley!”

“Come out and tell us what happened. Didn’t you say that the beast’s defenses were very strong? Why did it crumble like paper in front of Lucius? Lucius killed it in one blow!”

“During the first match, Lucius had fought for a long time and used a few skills. You said that he would definitely lose in the second match, but why did he win so easily? He won with just one strike. It was so easy! Tell me right now, what happened?!”

The ones who asked those questions were those who had remained silent before. They had only listened and felt like everyone else sounded reasonable. Some of them had initially planned on betting on Jackie, but had been stopped by those around them.

Slowly, they started to notice that Jackie‘s chances of winning were slowly growing. The second match that everyone thought would be so difficult turned into a match that ended so easily. It had not been difficult at all. It was as easy as drinking water.

That caused those warriors who had initially planned to bet on Jackie to start to lose their calm. They started to question those warriors who led the flow initially.

At that moment, all of those people had their mouths completely shut, unable to say a word at all. They had turned completely mute, not responding no matter what those around them said. It was as if they had not been the ones who had said anything before.

“All of you really know how to talk! Didn’t you analyze everything so well earlier? What’s happening right now? Are you not going to continue?”

Chapter 3069
“Shouldn’t you at least address the matter to us? I had planned on placing my bet on Lucius, but all of you did your best to stop me!”

“That’s right! Weren’t you so sure that Lucius would definitely lose in the second match? Weren’t you sure that he would lose incredibly badly too? You even analyzed everything so much, talking like you’ve personally witnessed it. Why aren’t you saying anything now?”

“Can you stop trying to hide?! I had planned on just gambling on Lucius, but you were the ones who laughed at me for trying to stand out from the crowd, and seemed so confident in your analysis!”

“Thanks to all of you, I have placed my spirit crystals on the beasts and took out my whole family fortune. Don’t think you can just avoid everything like this. If you don’t do something about this, I won’t let you off!”

Thanks to Jackie’s victory, those warriors that had been so sure that Jackie would lose did not dare to say anything anymore. However, when the shouts got louder and louder, some people could no longer stand them.

A gray-robed man let out a cold laugh and said, “You were the ones who bet on the beasts yourself, what does anyone else have to do with it? People can think what they want, you don’t have to follow them… In the end, you were the ones who weren’t resolved enough. You asked for an explanation, but how are you going to explain it to yourselves? Why do people owe you anything? Stop trying to force your way!”

The moment that person spoke, it caused even more people to stand up, “That’s right! What does anyone have to do with you staking your whole fortune on the beasts? No one forced you to do it!”

“Don‘t you think you’re acting like a complete joke? We said everything because we thought we were right. You didn‘t have to listen to us at all. We didn’t say you had to listen to us. You were the ones who insisted on doing that, so why does it concern us?!”

The man who was demanding an explanation earlier was shaking in anger after hearing all of that. He felt like he was being thrown under a bus, and hated himself for being weak-willed.

Why did he falter and insist on following the guesses of others when making a choice?

The more that person thought, the more furious he got. He could not even breathe properly at that point. There was no way anyone could ignore what had happened.

Those of them who had been certain that Jackie would die had long looks on their faces. After all, two-thirds of the warriors there had taken part in the bet. Some of them had even taken out all of their savings.

If they lose the bet, they would have nothing left. To them, it would be quite a big blow. Quite a few of them were beginning to get incredibly anxious.

The mustache man turned to look at Rudy anxiously. It was then did he realize why Rudy had been so calm the whole time.

Rudy already knew how strong Jackie was. That was why he never faltered no matter what everyone else said!

The mustache man took a deep breath and said, “Hey, it looks like you already knew how strong Lucius was.”

Rudy raised an eyebrow as he looked at the man, “Of course. I told you early on as well, but you didn’t believe me. You thought I was ignorant to say all of that.”

Those words rendered the guy speechless. That really had been the case. When Rudy said that he was incredibly confident in Jackie, everyone thought that he was crazy.

Chapter 3070
After all, Lucius was definitely a wandering warrior.

The mustache man felt a bitter taste in his mouth, regretting that he had bet on the beast. He should have ignited his gambler’s spirit and betted everything on Jackie.

If Jackie really won, he would have gotten seven times the crystals back. Just thinking about it drove him crazy. Even if he had not spent his whole fortune like some others, he still put in quite a bit.

A loss would be quite a big blow for that man. After all, he did not come from a large clan and had slowly accumulated his wealth. He had participated in so many bets before and had carefully made safe choices for all of them. This time, he had gotten a bit greedy, but he did not expect the results to end up like this!

The man felt a chill as he shook his head, shutting his mouth up.

Arne felt his whole body stiffen, not even feeling like he was breathing. He felt like everything seemed unreal as if he was in a dream. Otherwise, he would not have seen something so absurd!

His mouth trembled, taking a long time before he said, “This can’t be real!”

At that moment, his words did not sound convincing at all. Even the disciples behind him did not know what to say. If Jackie really won in the end, Arne felt like he would not be able to accept it!

He suddenly straightened his back as he raised his voice, “What they said earlier was all wrong! That beast wasn‘t strong defensively at all. It just looked like it was!”

“Lucius was just lucky! He picked another incredibly weak beast. That has to be the case! It’s definitely so! Soul attribute warriors are afraid of defensively strong beasts. That beast died so easily. It must be because it was weak. Otherwise, it would at least have taken a few more blows!”

After he said that, Arne's eyes slowly regained their color. He felt like he was right, that it was definitely so.

Jackie was definitely just incredibly lucky to choose another weak beast. Not only was it weak offensively, but incredibly weak defensively as well. The body just looked strong. After all, Jackie had fought the bird in the first match for so long.

The bird should not have been that strong defensively, only stronger than normal beasts in terms of its attack and speed. The second one had died so easily simply because it was just too weak. Not only was it weak, but it was also fragile as well. That was how it all happened.

Arne sighed, feeling like his guess was right. He could not overestimate Lucius.

Lucius was just a wandering warrior without a clan. He was just lucky.

Thinking about that, Arne could not help but curse, "It's so unfair. Why did fate allow him to win twice in a row?! He's just too lucky!"

The moment he said that the discussions around him started to quiet down quite a bit. A lot of them looked over with looks of pity. Some of them had hatred, but it was mostly exasperation and sympathy.

The warriors there all understood that Arne would definitely not be able to accept what happened with everything that had gone on between him and Jackie.

He had brought up the same argument from before, saying that Jackie merely won because of good luck. No one believed him anymore, feeling like it was completely unconvincing and hilarious given the circumstances.

Chapter 3071
However, Arne was not trying to convince those around him. He was only trying to convince himself.

He panted as he continued to say loudly, "The third match is about to start! He's already used all his luck on the second one. You absolutely won't win the third match! You can't get the black iron medal!"

As he said that, Arne's expression started to get more and more resolved. It was as if what he said would definitely happen. Even God would not be able to change it!

Everyone did not know what to say after they heard that. They even felt like Arne was quite pitiful at that moment. After all, Lucius was just a wandering warrior, but he had already won two rounds. He only had the last round left to win the black iron bet.

Luck would not always stick to one person. Even if they did not want to see Lucius winning, the reality was right in front of all of them. Even if they wanted to deny it, they had no reason to.

The second beast relied on brute strength to fight. Those beasts were usually stronger defensively than normal. It was an irrefutable truth.

Furthermore, so many of the warriors there had been at the colosseum for a long time. They had seen countless battles. Each time, even if there were weaker and stronger beasts, even the weakest one would have a baseline of strength.

The fact that Lucius managed to win two in a row meant that his skills were definitely much stronger than most warriors. Other than Arne, even those who did not want to admit that fact had been forced to. Even the disciples of the Deer Pavilion behind Arne had slowly accepted the truth.

Time flashed by, and the stage was quickly cleaned up.

Jackie steadily walked up the stage again. This time, the crowd was exceptionally quiet. Everyone was already looking at Jackie with a different expression.

The caretaker took out another black scroll. After opening the scroll, five new beast images were shot into the air.

Jackie looked up at those beasts in detail. He was thankful that he recognized two out of the five beasts this time. The first was a coral drake that was on the rightmost end, while the nine-tailed scarlet fox was on the left end.

The two beasts were at about the same level, they were both a bit stronger than the energy hound. If Jackie was arranging them in order, the coral drake should be in third, while the nine-tailed scarlet fox should be in the fourth.

The two beasts were not too different from each other. If the environment suited the fox, it would probably be able to fight to a draw against the drake or even have an advantage.

The coral drake specialized in poison. Its whole body was surrounded by poisonous gas. Weaker warriors would start to foam at the mouth the moment they got close to the coral drake. It would not take long for their bodies to turn purple from the poison and eventually die.

The nine-tailed scarlet fox specialized in illusions. Its natural-born skill was called the nine-tailed illusion. Some mentally or spiritually weaker warriors would immediately lose themselves in the illusions after it was used. The fox would then hide in the shadows and take the chance to bite the warrior’s neck, killing it in an instant!

Neither of the beasts was easy to deal with, but they were not too difficult for Jackie. He then decided in just a moment as he pointed right at the nine-tailed scarlet fox!

Chapter 3072
Just like before, compared to the others, Jackie had chosen the beast incredibly quickly. He clearly had five minutes to choose, but he merely picked one out swiftly. However, this time the spectators were strangely quiet. Not a single one of them voiced any opposing sentiments.

The truth was on display for all of them to see. The more they had doubted Jackie, the greater the blow had been on them!

When it came to this wandering warrior, anything could happen!

When the nine-tailed scarlet fox solidified, the spectators were already completely silent. The fox's body was completely red, and its fur was very bright. Compared to how ferocious other beasts looked, the fox looked much tamer.

On closer inspection, there seemed to even be a hint of human charm to the fox. However, no matter how nice the fox looked, it was still just a beast in Jackie's eyes.

After the nine-tailed fox dropped to the ground, it stood at the opposite end of the stage to Jackie. The fox was quite smart. Its intelligence was similar to that of a teenage human. Even if the nine-tailed fox was composed of just energy, it still retained some of the original fox's intelligence. It gave Jackie a glance over as an incredibly cunning glint showed in its eyes.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not paying what the beast did much thought. The fox paced around lightly, seemingly waiting for something, looking like it was trying to figure something out. However, no matter how far it walked, its eyes were always fixed on him.

Jackie narrowed his eyes, curious as to what the fox was planning.

Any other warrior would probably be on full alert at that moment, wary of any sudden attacks from the fox. However, Jackie did not care and was instead full of anticipation as to what the fox would do.

Feeling Jackie's emotions, the fox frowned slightly, feeling like he was different from other humans. At that moment, the fox narrowed its eyes as it suddenly turned red, as if they had been stained by blood.

Jackie suddenly felt everything change. The stage that originally only had the two of them was suddenly filled with scantily clad beauties. Those beauties were incredibly seductive, and their faces were covered by thin veils. The women laughed and played around.

He turned to look and noticed that some of the girls were already in front of him. He saw that the women reached out and begged for him to join them.

Jackie could not help but roll his eyes. Low-level illusions like that would not affect Jackie at all. Probably feeling Jackie's temperament, the women suddenly stiffened as their eyes filled with anger. They seemed angry that Jackie was not reacting. After that, Jackie heard several explosions as the beautiful women exploded into pink powder one after another, disappearing into the air.

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly, wondering if that was all. It felt a little too useless.

Did he already enter another illusion?

It did not even elicit any interest from Jackie.

Just as he was wondering if it had already ended, the spectators suddenly let out a few cries. He immediately turned around, finding that the silent spectators were suddenly in an uproar.

Quite a few of them stood up with looks of horror!

Right after that, a group of caretakers suddenly rushed up to the stands. Those caretakers had their swords in hand, all of them were filled with killing intent.

Chapter 3073
The spectators were all retreating. Some of them were shouting out while some of them were frantically rimning away!

At that moment, Jackie was in no mood to care about anyone else but merely looked over at Rudy.

Rudy seemed exceptionally pitiful in front of the crowd. He had a look of complete horror as he constantly begged for mercy. Since he was seated at the front, he had been the closest to the caretakers. At that moment, they were already in front of him.

The caretakers seemed to have gone mad, slashing at everyone they saw. Their skills were extraordinary. They were at least in the divine solidifying realm. Warriors at that level were absolutely impossible to defeat especially when none of them were over sixty years of age! No one had any ability to stand up to the caretakers!

The caretakers were incredibly quick. After cutting off two heads in front of him, Rudy was right in front of them!

If Jackie continued to not do anything, then Rudy would definitely die!

Feeling Jackie's gaze, Rudy looked over with an expression of complete helplessness. He knew he was about to die, and he begged for Jackie's help!

Facing that sudden development, Jackie merely stared coldly, not moving his body at all. Even if he saw someone about to kill Rudy, his expressions did not change. He did not react to anything that was happening at all!

The nine-tailed scarlet fox's eyes reddened more and more, so much that it was beginning to glow. At that moment, it was already using the nine-tailed illusion to the brink. The whole arena had been covered by a red glow.

At that moment, the stage was covered up in that light, but the spectators could still see the stage. Unlike what Jackie was seeing, the actual spectators were fine. Nothing had happened, and the caretakers were not on a rampage. Everything he had seen had just been an illusion from the nine-tailed scarlet fox. The spectators had not been hit by the illusion, so all they saw was a man and a beast facing each other.

The fox stared right at Jackie, and Jackie did not move at all. It was like his whole body had stiffened and was fixed in place.

Someone curiously asked, "Why isn't Lucius moving? It's like he's been pinned!"

"Who knows? Could that be his strategy?"

"Can all of you just use your brains?! Don't you see that the nine-tailed fox is already attacking!"

"What? The beast has already attacked? Why don't I see anything? All I see is a red glow surrounding the whole stage. Other than that, nothing is happening! I feel like Lucius is just standing there not moving. I don't feel anything else."

"You're such an idiot. Have you never heard of illusions?! It looks like this beast is good at illusions, and its natural-born skill should be at quite a high level. Lucius is not moving because he's in an illusion. That red fox is waiting for a chance. Once it's sure that Lucius is completely trapped in the illusion, it will launch its attack! If Lucius can't escape the illusion, he's dead!"

Arne naturally had some knowledge as a chosen disciple of the Deer Pavilion. When he saw that the red glow had enveloped the whole stage, he was certain that the beast was using an illusory attack.

Chapter 3074
He narrowed his eyes as he chanted at the stage again, "He'll definitely die! He won't get away this time! That fox will bite down on his throat!"

At that moment, Arne seemed like a scorned woman who only knew how to curse.

The nine-tailed scarlet fox finally moved. It was sure that Jackie was already trapped in the illusion, unable to escape for the moment. That had been the chance it was waiting for!

The nine-tailed scarlet fox opened its mouth, revealing a human-like sinister smile on its face. It suddenly shot forward at Jackie at an incredible speed!

Everyone held their breaths. The distance between the beast and Jackie got shorter and shorter. With how fast the fox was, it only took a while for it to be right in front of Jackie. If he did not wake up at that time, he would definitely die!

Everyone there, including Rudy, who was still absolutely confident in Jackie, held their breaths. Rudy might be confident in Jackie's skills, but he did not know if Jackie could withstand an illusion. After all, illusions were not physical attacks.

Rudy pursed his lips into a line, unable to stop himself from praying for Jackie.

"He's still not awake? Then… Lucius is dead! There's no way he can live!" On the spectator stands, someone could not help but shout.

At that moment, the nine-tailed fox was right in front of Jackie. It had its jaws wide open and would rip Jackie's throat off the next second. There was no hope anymore!

At that precise moment, Jackie widened his eyes in sudden and pierced his blade out. That strike had perfectly pierced the fox's throat.

The fox never expected that Jackie would actually wake up at that moment Even if it wanted to, it was already too late to dodge! Everyone heard a splash as blood spurted over thirty feet. The nine-tailed fox's eyes widened and Jackie saw a sliver of disbelief in them.

Jackie let out a cold snort, he knew what the nine-tailed fox was thinking at that moment. After all, the fox was already certain that he had been completely trapped in the illusion, unable to even struggle. That was why the fox attacked.

Yet, Jackie had actually broken through at the last moment, attacking so suddenly that the fox could not avoid it!

With a bang, the fox's body slammed onto the ground. It was in so much pain that its whole body twitched. Yet, it could not even cry out in pain since its throat had been pierced through, unable to make a sound.

Jackie let out a laugh as he said, "Your meager illusions are nothing in front of me. I'm a soul attribute warrior. If my soul wasn't strong enough, how could I practice soul attribute techniques?!"

Warriors with strong souls were the bane of illusions. As long as one's soul was strong enough, illusions would not affect them. Jackie had already mastered Destroying the Void and had absorbed so many soul fragments. His soul was already as strong as a city wall. The nine-tailed fox's illusions were nothing to him. It would never be able to break down those walls.

Jackie had deliberately let the fox think that he had fallen into the illusion, unable to get out. It was to get the fox to attack. In truth, Jackie had seen everything the fox did!

Jackie's explanation basically answered the fox's question. Its body shook a bit, seemingly wanting to say something, but Jackie clearly did not want to waste any time.

With another stab, the fox's body stiffened as it stopped breathing.

Chapter 3075
The moment the fox died, the barrier around the arena completely dispersed.

Jackie finally let out a sigh of relief as he breathed in the air from outside. It was finally done. Even though the three matches were actually not that difficult for Jackie, he did not want to waste any more time in the outer city.

After the fox died, its body turned back into energy and was absorbed by Hundred Beast city. Once the energy had been completely absorbed, a bundle of black smoke suddenly formed in the air. The smoke got denser and denser before it finally condensed together and formed a medal that was about the size of half a palm.

Jackie reached out and the medal fell into his hand. That was the famous black iron medal. It was the highest honor in the outer city. He had not felt anything when he saw someone else with it earlier, but now that he got it himself, he was actually quite elated. His lips curled up slightly as he walked over to Rudy.

Rudy was already waving his hands excitedly as he shouted, but Jackie could not hear him due to the distance.

Jackie merely nodded at him before he put the medal in his hand into Mustard Seed. He did not plan on wearing it since it attracted too much attention. It would only invite looks of envy and admiration from others, but he did not care about that.

No matter where he want, Jackie merely wanted to maintain a low profile. That was because attracting attention without a background would only invite endless trouble. If not because of that, Jackie would not have changed his name and his looks.

The three matches had already ended, so all of the arguments and fights before had lost all meaning. The results were out!

Jackie had won. He had won incredibly easily. Other than the first match taking up some time, the second and third had been quick. He had only used three attacks in total.

Compared to others who battled to their limits, he had won far too easily. It had been so easy that many of spectators could not believe what they saw was real. They felt like they were dreaming.

“He won! He actually won!”

“It was one to seven odds. I would be rich if I had just bet on him!”

Quite a few spectators were filled with regret at that moment. They were tempted to chop off their own hands, lamenting their choices.

Why did they decide to believe in others and bet on the beast?!

If they had bet on Lucius, then they would have been rich. Betting one million would have given them seven million back!

Just thinking about it got them emotional. The gap was so great that some of them could not calm down. Those who had been tempted to bet on Jackie were all furious.

“It’s your fault, you bunch of idiots! Otherwise, I’d be getting seven million right now!”

“I bet eight hundred thousand spirit crystals, and they’re all gone now. That was my whole fortune. I’m done for!”

Rudy felt a sense of relief hearing everyone’s regrets. They had all been so adamant that Jackie was worth nothing, saying that Jackie was just a clown that only knew how to show off. They finally knew who the real clowns were.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3076 - 3085 -

Chapter 3076
Thanks to the earlier frustrations he suffered, Rudy no longer wanted to bear with it anymore. He let out a cold laugh as he stood up from his seat.

Just like how Arne had acted before this, he headed right to the center of the spectator stands.

Rudy shouted out as he walked, “Do all of you know who you should be directing your hatred to? Who was it that did the most to instigate everyone, speaking like he knew the best in the world? He even threatened you all to not bet your spirit crystals on Lucius!”

His words were directed to Arne. With what Rudy said, everyone finally remembered what Arne had done earlier.

They immediately changed their target as they started to shout at Arne, “Arne, you dog! It’s one thing for you to think that Lucius wouldn’t win. Why did you try to get us to not believe in him as well? It‘s because of your grudge toward him. That’s the only reason you dragged us into going against Lucius as well!”

“Your hands are dirty! It’s because we listened to your baseless speculations that we ended up making the wrong choice. It’s all your fault!”

“That’s right! It’s all your fault! If it wasn’t for your incessant claiming that Lucius was just trying to show off and that he couldn’t possibly win, I would’ve placed my bet on Lucius!”

At that moment, Arne became everyone’s primary target. Thinking about everything he had done before, the warriors present felt like they had been tricked by him. If Arne had not insulted Lucius so much, not a lot of them would have placed their bet on the beasts at all.

At that moment, many of them had one thought in their minds. If they had betted on Jackie, they would have stood to earn a lot. Ever since they entered Hundred Beast City, they had never seen odds as high as that. The bets they put into would get them seven times the payout in a flash!

Just thinking about it made their eyes water.

Such a huge gift had slipped away right in front of their eyes, and it was all because of Arne. If it was not for him, they might have gritted their teeth and bet on Lucius back then. They would have been so happy that they would have forgotten their names!

If they had invested a million spirit crystals, they would have gotten seven million back, increasing the amount by seven times in one go!

Frustratingly, it had all gone up in smoke as they lost their bet.

If it had not affected their profit, they might have been afraid of Arne's background. Yet, at that moment, their wallets had been severely affected.

Many began to grow angry as they cast their worries aside. If the laws of the city had not been in place, a lot of them might have attacked Arne to vent their frustrations.

Hearing the complaints of everyone else, no one from the Deer Pavilion dared to say anything. After all, they knew very well that it was all thanks to Arne's actions. Even if all of them were crying for Arne's head, in the end, Arne had merely voiced his inner thoughts and had not pressured them to bet on the beasts.

The Deer Pavilion were convinced that their 'loss' was because of their own decision.

Of course, they did not dare to voice that at all. If they did, the situation could very well go out of control, and they might be berated by all of the warriors present right away. They were thus forced to hang their heads low and remain silent.

Pacing all those shouts, Arne's expression was devoid of emotion as his eyes lost their luster. He sat stiffly at the spectator stands, looking forward. If his chest had not been moving, the disciple behind him would have thought that he was dead.

The suck-up disciple looked at Arne with worry. Arne's state was incredibly strange and worrisome.

The fact that Lucius had won was something that Arne could not accept. Yet, Arne was completely devoid of emotion. His entire body was tense, and he barely reacted.

Chapter 3077
This greatly worried Arne's fellow disciples behind him. After looking at Arne for a long time, they noticed that Arne did not seem to hear anything anyone was saying at all, no matter how loud the shouts got.

One of them said with concern, "Arne, are you alright? Well, the kid just got lucky, I bet. Even if it's hard to get lucky three times in a row, it doesn't mean it's impossible. I just think that this guy only managed to win three in a row purely out of luck, but it doesn't prove that he's strong at all. Yeah, that's right, he's just lucky. We've already told our fellow disciples about him anyway. As long as the chance arises, we won't let him live!"

After hearing that, Arne's stiffened face finally moved.

After a long time, Arne slowly spoke in a raspy voice, "You're right, luck was just on his side! That's how he won three in a row…"

Arne was already at the stage where he would never accept the truth, even if it was right in front of him. Even if luck could only play a small part in winning three matches in a row, Arne still felt the same way.

At that moment, he heard a cold laugh next to him. Arne looked up and saw Jackie in gray robes, straightening his body as a hint of mockery could be seen in Jackie's cold gaze.

Arne's lips twitched as he shouted, "What are you looking at me for?!"

Jackie was exasperated by actions like these, but after everything that Arne had done, he would never let Arne off easily. Even if they could not attack at that moment, he would be fine as long as he could get Arne to be angrier, more unbridled.

Jackie laughed coldly before saying, "You said that something was wrong with my head, but I think you should look at yourself in the mirror. I've won three in a row and got a black iron medal, but you're still adamant that it's just because my luck is good like a stubborn mule! If there's nothing wrong with your head, then you must just be a complete idiot!"

Arne's face darkened as he shouted, "What did you say?! Who are you calling an idiot?!"

Jackie said calmly, "So you're not just an idiot, there's something wrong with your ears as well. Was I not clear enough with what I said?"

Arne was so angry he was about to spit out blood. He abruptly stood up as he glared at Jackie in anger, "You!"

"You should just shut your mouth," Jackie interjected curtly. "Have you even told the truth at all?"

Arne loudly said, "What have I ever said that' s untrue?!"

Jackie snorted. "Have you forgotten what you said? You said that I only started the black iron bet because I love being the center of attention and showing off. Do you think that all that is true?"

Arne's lips twitched. He did say that, but it was far less convincing at that moment. Yet, he refused to submit. "What I said is still true. You only started the black iron bet to stand out!"

After hearing that, Jackie could not stop himself from laughing. Even the warriors around them were laughing as well.

Arne's words were far too hilarious. Jackie had already proven everything with his skills. There was no need for any more explanations.

Chapter 3078
Jackie laughed and coolly remarked, "It looks like you'll never admit to anything. Honestly, it's fine even if you refuse to admit it!"

After saying that, Jackie took out his black iron medal from Mustard Seed. He looked at the medal and said, "Even until the end, all you've been was a complete clown. You tried to criticize me with your standards? Hilarious!"

Jackie looked right at Arne and said loudly, "That person who you claimed to only like to show off completed the black iron bet. Shouldn't it be your turn now?"

"Didn't you say before this that you'd start a black iron bet? Or is someone a wuss now? Were you just giving out empty promises? All you know to do is to run your mouth, but you don't have the skills to prove yourself at all!"

Jackie's words instantly reminded everyone that Arne had promised so much and said that he would start a black iron bet to clear his name.

Arne' s lips twitched as his earlier demeanor completely deflated. He started to pant roughly, not daring to look Jackie in the eye.

There was no way Jackie would let him off easily, however.

"Isn't it about time you put some action into your words? After all, you were claiming that you're oh-so- powerful, swearing that you got to your position legitimately. Don't tell me that you weren't being serious when you said you'd start the black iron bet?"

Arne's entire body trembled, feeling like he had been backed into a corner. Even if he did not say anything, Jackie would not let him off.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, continuing, "It seems that the Deer Pavilion's disciples are only good at bragging but never stay true to their word. Is this really the clan at the peak of seventh-grade clans? You've broadened my horizons today. The disciples of the Deer Pavilion truly are trash!"

The moment that was said, his fellow disciples could no longer hold back.

Jackie had dragged the whole clan into it, which they would not allow.

One of them stood up and said, "What kind of nonsense are you saying?! How dare you slander the Deer Pavilion!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow and nonchalantly shot back, “Who slandered the Deer Pavilion? Was what I said wrong? Did Arne not say he‘d start a black iron bet to clear his name? Has he started it?”

Jackie’s words shot down that statement completely. The disciple that said that panted heavily, unable to say anything. The rest of the disciples of the Deer Pavilion were completely reddened in anger. They had nothing to retort at Jackie’s words either.

Jackie laughed as he looked at Arne again. “Do you think burying your head in sand like this will make everything just go away? How could this pass on easily? You were the one telling everyone to not bet on me before this. A lot of them could’ve gotten back seven times their fortune, but your so-called ‘encouraging words’ changed that.”

After saying that, Jackie looked at the spectators. He glanced around and saw the bald man who had mocked him before.

He remembered how the bald man bet his entire fortune on the beast at the betting area, saying that he would be able to double it.

The bald man had a dark look on his face at that moment, having lost his entire fortune in a flash.

Jackie let out a smile as he walked two steps toward the guy. “Didn’t you bet seven hundred and sixty thousand spirit crystals before this?”

Chapter 3079
Jackie’s memory was impeccable. The bald man had shown off his fortune at that moment, saying that he managed to accumulate that many spirit crystals in all his years, confident that he would double it if he bet it all on the beasts.

It was impossible for him to even get back what he put in at that point, let alone double it. In just one turn, be was reduced to a mere beggar, so he was already mentally destroyed.

After the bald man heard that, he suddenly looked at Jackie with a complicated gaze. His lips twitched as he was filled with regret. He had planned on betting everything on the warrior, but after hearing everyone’s discussions as well as what Arne said, he changed his mind. If he had put his whole fortune on Jackie, he would have made over five million!

Just thinking about that filled his eyes with hatred.

He suddenly stood up and walked toward Arne. The bald man’s inner rage had completely exploded. He focused all that anger on him. If Arne was not there, he would not have lost everything.

He had to start all over! How could he not hate the guy?!

The bald man's eyes were red as he stared at Arne. He pointed at Arne and said, "You cowardly piece of trash! You were bragging so much, but now you're just trying to hide! Don't you think you're a joke? Since you had the gall to say that someone else loved to brag and that someone else was a clown who just wanted to stand out, then can you just look at yourself in the mirror? Who's the clown? Who's the coward?!"

The bald man was about to lose himself to his anger. The more Arne suffered, the happier he would be.

The disciples of the Deer Pavilion immediately stood up to defend Arne.

One of them shouted, "What are you saying?! Did Arne say he wasn't going to start the black iron bet?! He's just not ready yet; he'll do it after waiting for a while!"

The bald man was not sold on that at all. He sneered, "Who are you trying to fool? He's not ready, you say? What are you preparing? What's there to even prepare? Are you planning on waiting for a year or two when your strength is even better to start the black iron bet?"

"What kind of joke is that? Alright, then. Maybe I'll brag to everyone that I'll start a black iron bet too. When people ask me why I haven't started it, I'll just say I' m not mentally prepared yet!"

The bald man cackled obnoxiously. The disciples of the Deer Pavilion were about to go crazy from their anger.

Seeing this, Jackie nodded happily.

This was what he wanted to happen. Arne had constantly insulted him before, even saying that they would have him begging for mercy. He remembered everything they did and said, so he would never let them off the hook that easily.

Arne's lips twitched. His face was completely pale as he felt like he was about to go crazy. The feeling of wanting to beg for mercy, he was already feeling it before Jackie did!

Arne knew very well that there was no taking back a black iron bet. He would have to do what Jackie had done and win three matches in a row to get the black iron medal.

Arne did not have the confidence to win three in a row, nor did he trust in his own skills. If he happened to choose a stronger beast, he might end up like Lesley!

Chapter 3080
Alas, he could never take back what he said, and the warriors around him would not let him go easily after all that he had done either. He had to explain himself.

The bald man's actions only made the warriors around them happier. A lot of people there had pinned the blame for their loss of spirit crystals on Arne's words and threats.

When everyone saw that Arne failed to answer, a lot of them stood up like the bald man and hurled insults at Arne, saying he was scum and a complete fake.

Their provoking words caused Arne to tremble in anger. He looked at all of them who mocked him in hatred. After being shouted at for a while, Arne could finally not hold back. "Listen well! I'll start the black iron bet right now! I, Arne, am not some coward nor am I a fake!"

After saying all of that, he used the outer city token to register in front of everyone. After doing that, the skeleton-masked caretaker once again walked up the stage with the pitch-black scroll.

After doing all of that, Arne stared at Jackie viciously. He looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

Jackie let out a laugh as he said plainly, "Good luck, then… Hahaha!"

He then turned and went back to his spot where Rudy had been waiting.

After Jackie sat down, Rudy said eagerly, "I've gotten the spirit crystals. You have seven million while I have a total of four million six hundred ninety thousand. I've never seen so many spirit crystals in my life!"

Rudy was so excited that he could not keep his mouth shut. He only had about 670000 spirit crystals before this and had bet everything on Jackie for such a massive windfall. Rudy felt like he would be smiling even in his sleep that night.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. "That's nothing. You'll even be able to earn even more later. You'll have over ten million!"

Rudy was stunned to hear this. He had not reacted initially, but after a while, he straightened his body.

Rudy whispered, "You mean to say that you already know if Arne will win or lose?"

Arne had just started the black iron bet as everyone watched on. This time, not a single person dared to be certain about the results. After all, with what happened with Jackie, everyone started to feel like everything was possible. Even though they held Arne with

disdain, no one dared to be certain of anything at that moment, afraid that they would end up being bitten back.

At that moment, Arne had walked over to the stage with shaky footsteps. His demeanor was far different from Jackie's.

When Jackie was on the stage, his expression was passive though with a confident flair. Arne, on the other hand, had a sunken face as if he had just lost everything he held dear.

The caretaker opened up the black scroll and announced the rules just like before. Most of it was irrelevant, and only the last part was important.

"The warrior's odds are one to four, and the beast's odds are one to two. The warrior has five minutes to choose the beast he'll face!"

Images of five beasts then appeared in the air.

Chapter 3081
Jackie raised an eyebrow, not looking at the beasts for the moment. After the odds were recited, the spectators were in an uproar again as noises filled his ears.

"I thought Arne's odds would be like Jackie's, that it would be one to seven! I can't believe it's lowered by almost half. What is Beast City trying to do? Are they thinking that the chances of Arne winning are greater than Jackie?"

"Don't just blindly speak when you don't get it Do you think the caretakers are as stupid as you? The odds aren't just determined based on the skills of the warriors; it depends on our reactions as well. Hundred Beast City doesn't want one-sided bets. The high odds are to attract you to bet on the other side!"

After that explanation, everyone slowly started to understand.

"I can't believe the odds are so low that they're only one to four. If that's the case, then you can't break the ten million mark today."

Rudy could not hold himself back from laughing. "I wasn't planning on breaking that mark anyway. Even if I lose, it's no big deal, seeing as I made so much. I haven't learned a lot of skills, but I've learned to be happy with what I have."

If he had not been with Jackie, Rudy might have died a long time ago. At that moment, he was not just alive, but he also had so many spirit crystals. He just felt incredibly fortunate in his heart, not even thinking about anything else.

If he could win a bit more, then he would. Even if he lost, it did not matter. Jackie raised an eyebrow, not expecting that Rudy's attitude was already so good. He could still

remember how arrogant and how much of a show- off Rudy had been when he first met him.

That attitude was long gone, fortunately.

Jackie laughed as he patted Rudy on the shoulder. The warriors around them were already in intense discussions due to the odds.

Some of them felt like the odds were too low while others felt like it was just right. After that, they started to discuss if they should bet on the beast or on Arne.

Jackie frowned, feeling a bit suffocated. He turned to look at Rudy and saw that Rudy was unhappy as well.

He whispered, “After winning the spirit crystals, let’s leave the outer city. I’ve gotten sick of this place.”

Rudy nodded vehemently, sharing the same idea. He felt like the outer city was getting annoying as well and was anxious to enter the middle city to see some new things.

Jackie took out a token from Mustard Seed, and on it were the words Middle City. When he walked off the stage, the caretaker handed him that token.

After completing the black iron bet, he had earned the right to enter the middle city. He noticed that the rules were more or less the same as in Thousand Leaves Tower. As long as he had the entry token, he could bring a subordinate with him. With that rule, Jackie could bring Rudy with him.

With that in mind, he could not help but raise an eyebrow, incredibly curious as to the identity of the person who set the rules.

How were they able to consider everything so thoroughly?

After thinking about it for a while, Jackie slowly understood why those rules had been set.

It was probably thanks to the special role alchemists played. Regardless of the place, alchemists were special. After all, they put all their focus on alchemy. People were normally unable to divide their attention, so alchemists would naturally have neglected their combat abilities.

Chapter 3082
They could not possibly enter the Whirling World relying solely on their skills. Yet, with those rules in place, the stronger warriors could bring a weaker alchemist with them, traversing the cities of the Whirling World.

Right after he figured that out, Arne made his choice on the stage as well. Of the five beasts in the air, he pointed at the one in the middle.

Jackie was stunned when he looked at it. He had not looked at the five beasts earlier since he was wrapped up in his thoughts. Now that he looked over, Jackie was surprised to notice that he only recognized one out of the five beasts, and the one Arne picked happened to be the one he recognized.

“It’s a rockwind snake,” he remarked.

Jackie let out a snort as a hint of mockery flashed in his eyes.

At that moment, the masked caretaker announced that the betting area would be opened. Everyone interested in placing bets could head over.

Jackie silently stood up and brought Rudy to the betting area. They both took out a million spirit crystals each and betted them on the beast.

No one was surprised at Jackie’s choice at all, seeing as these two men were both at odds. It would be far too strange if Jackie bet on Arne.

After placing the bets, Jackie did not plan on going back to the spectator stands at all with how noisy it was. He did not want to listen to all the noise and constant discussions.

Jackie pulled Rudy to a corner of the betting area. “Let’s just wait here. The battle should be ending quite soon. Then, we can just get our spirit crystals and head to the middle.”

Rudy looked at Jackie curiously. Even though Rudy felt like Arne would lose, he did not think that he would lose that quickly. However, Jackie’s words seemed to imply that Arne would not just fail to win the first round but would lose terribly as well.

Jackie immediately knew what was on Rudy’s mind when he saw Rudy’s expression. He laughed as he explained patiently, “That guy chose a rockwind snake, a beast much stronger than a frostfire wolf…”

“Didn’t Arne say that Lesley and him were on comparable levels? Between the two of them, Lesley even seems to be the more senior one, which means that Lesley was a bit stronger than Arne. Lesley couldn’t even beat the frostfire wolf, let alone the more powerful rockwind snake!”

Rudy immediately understood after Jackie’s explanation. That was why Jackie was so sure that the battle would end very quickly. If the rockwind snake was stronger than the frostfire wolf, then Arne was about to lose horribly!

There was not much reason to return to the stands, and they would not need to listen to those discussions. The results were just as Jackie said. The battle had only lasted for less than five minutes before the results were out.

Arne had been bitten by the snake, and its venom spread throughout his whole body. Arne suffered from a horrendously painful death, spasming on the stage for a long time before he succumbed.

The disciples from the Deer Pavilion were thrown into chaos. Too much had happened on that day. They had lost two chosen disciples and lost a lot of spirit crystals to boot.

When Jackie activated the black iron bet, all of them had bet at least half a million on the beasts. Their spirit crystals were lost to that.

With Arne's black iron bet, they had betted on Arne as well. After all, there was no way they could bet on the beast since they were from the same clan. Even then, they lost!

Chapter 3083
Not only did their fellow disciples die, they even lost their spirit crystals. It was a ridiculously unlucky day for them!

Jackie stood at the entrance of the colosseum, looking at Arne's corpse being taken off the stage from afar. However, he merely raised an eyebrow as he said coolly, "Arne thought that he'd be very safe under the rules of Hundred Beast City. I've said before how ridiculous such thoughts were!"

Rudy giddily gave him a thumbs-up. " Jackie, you're amazing! You didn't even need to do anything. With just a few words, that guy died a horrible death. It's a relief that he's dead, to be honest!"

Arne was relentless in cursing them before, causing them trouble for no reason. They had no grudges against the Deer Pavilion, but just because they had not bet on Lesley, they ended up in conflict.

Their tragic state was all their doing.

After getting their spirit crystals, Jackie brought Rudy away from the outer city.

What Jackie was surprised at was the fact that the middle city was not in Hundred Beast City at all. If they wanted to enter the middle city, they would need to step into a large-scale transfer array and get sent to somewhere far away.

When he got the outer city token, Jackie knew that there was an outer, middle, and inner city. Jackie had thought that all three areas would be within Hundred Beast City itself, but it seemed to be different than what he expected.

It was a massive plain filled with people. Not only were these people from Hestia Continent, but a large number of them were from White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent as well.

The three continents were gathered there. Everywhere they looked, it was full of people. The warriors there were several times what they had seen in the outer city. It looked endless.

Jackie felt like what they had seen the most in the Whirling World was people. Back then, he did not have much of a grasp of numbers when it came to warriors, but after arriving in the Whirling World, he had a basic understanding of the number of warriors in Middle Province.

Rudy‘s jaw hung open in shock, and it took him a while before he said, “There are so many people! There should at least be a few hundred thousand or even over a million warriors here! Is this the middle city? It’s different from what I thought. I thought that the middle city would be an actual city as well, but this is clearly a massive plain…”

Jackie let out a laugh and said, “If there were city walls, how big do you think the city needed to be for so many warriors?”

Rudy’s lips twitched, thinking about it for a moment.

As he wondered how large the city walls would be, he felt like it was out of his grasp in a flash. All he knew was that it would need to be several times the size of the outer city.

Jackie patted Rudy’s shoulder. “Alright, let’s forget about that for now. We should wash away our disguises for now, no need for fake personas. There’s no reason to change our names either.”

Rudy widened his eyes in surprise. “Why? There are so many benefits to hiding ourselves. Why do you want to use our real names and looks?”

They were at different times. After entering the Whirling World, so much had happened. They had provoked so many enemies. Changing their appearances and their names would save them a lot of trouble, so he did not understand why Jackie wanted to use their actual looks.

Jackie frowned and sighed before he said, “There’s nothing we can do about it. I’ve thought about it, and I feel like using our original looks is much easier.”

Chapter 3084
“After changing our looks and names, they might not recognize us, but the skills and weapons I use will expose me in the end. In fact, we might just be caught off- guard if we continue to fake our identities. It’s better for us to just change ourselves back and face them head-on…”

“All of them are so used to flaunting themselves everywhere, relying on their backgrounds. However, as long as we’re strong enough, they’ll still fear us. What I want is for them to fear us so that they’d think twice before ambushing us.”

After Rudy thought about it, he felt like Jackie’s words were reasonable. Jackie had already shown what he could do quite a few times in Thousand Leaves City. As long as they remembered it, Jackie would immediately be recognized when he attacked.

Looking at this angle, there would be no meaning to them putting on a disguise and changing their names.

Rudy sighed as he said in exasperation, “I feel like they’re just a group of flies that we can never chase away. They’re so annoying. I only have one thing in mind at the moment, which is to capture Grayson and make him spill. After that, I want to just beat him up!”

Rudy already hated Grayson deeply at that point. The moment he thought of Grayson, he would start gritting his teeth.

When they were in Phoenix Valley, his sudden disappearance greatly unsettled Rudy. After entering the Whirling World, quite a lot happened because of him. Grayson was even in the Unbreaking Pavilion at that moment, constantly causing them trouble and even trying to kill them.

Just thinking about that caused Rudy to want no thing more than to drop everything and capture Grayson.

Nonetheless, he knew very well that he was too weak. He was far weaker than Grayson at that moment. Furthermore, he was not smart enough either. He might just accidentally fall for any of Grayson’s tricks. All he could do was to put his hopes on Jackie, hoping that he would be able to capture Grayson.

At the very least, they had to find out what happened. They had to find out how Grayson was alive and unscathed, and why he suddenly appeared in the Unbreaking Pavilion. They also had to find out why he did not remember the two of them. A lot must have happened in between all of that!

Rudy got a headache as he thought about it. He shook his head and said, “Whatever, let’s not think about this for now.”

Jackie left the transfer array with Rudy. The two of them headed toward the crowd.

“There are so many warriors from Hestia,” said Rudy as they walked. “Even if Hundred Beast City is a level six city, there are still so many of them! Today, I’ve truly seen how many warriors there are…”

Jackie turned to look at Rudy and could not help but laugh.

Rudy curiously looked up at Jackie, saying in confusion, “What are you laughing at? I was just pointing out something.”

Jackie pointed at the crowd in front of him and said, “Just look at what those people are wearing. Don’t those clothes look foreign? You must not have seen them before on Hestia.”

They have been in the Whirling World for a while, and they had seen many clan uniforms during that time. They could more or less recognize which uniforms belonged to most clans.

Rudy was stunned as he looked up at Jackie. “What do you mean? Are you saying that it’s not just the warriors of Hestia here?”

Rudy’s eyes widened in shock as he spoke.

Jackie nodded. He had not been able to explain that to Rudy.

Jackie looked around and the warriors around them, saying calmly, “The warriors here came from three worlds, and the Hestia continent is one of them.”

Chapter 3085
“There are also warriors from White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent. When I got the middle city entry token, the rules of the middle city had been transferred into my mind.”

Rudy’s jaw hung open in shock as he hurriedly looked at the warriors around him like a curious child, staring at one person after the next.

The warriors around them felt Rudy’s gaze and were suddenly on alert. They had sharp looks in their eyes.

Jackie hurriedly pushed Rudy. “Don’t gawk at people like that. It’s very rude, and you’ll end up causing trouble.”

Rudy nodded obediently, admitting that he did lose control for a moment. He was just too surprised and curious.

Jackie patted Rudy’s shoulder and pulled him to the side.

“Why are you so surprised, anyway? It’s not like you haven’t met warriors from White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent before.”

Rudy said excitedly, “You were the one who met them before, not me. It’s my first time seeing warriors from a different world. Of course I’m curious!”

Jackie smiled as he thought about how he had joined the seventh group in Prosper City, meeting alchemists from the other worlds. Yet, Rudy had only heard about it, never meeting them on his own before.

Rudy took a deep breath, saying curiously, “I wonder why we always find ourselves being grouped with those two continents. The tournament was one thing, seeing as there’s not much point in competing with ourselves. It’s more interesting to compete with other worlds…”

“Why are all the warriors grouped together again now? Could the Whirling World be opened to all the worlds?”

When Rudy said that, his head was full of questions.

He had not thought much about what happened before this, but since he was looking at the warriors from the other worlds right in front of him, Rudy could not help but voice out his questions.

Jackie sighed as he frowned. “I’ve thought about this before as well. Initially, I thought that the opening of the Whirling World was related to the struggle between Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion…”

“Yet, after I entered the Whirling World, we found out that Phoenix Valley had been in cahoots with the Unbreaking Pavilion on something, and no one knows about it. Everything we’ve heard before this had just been smoke and mirrors that they deliberately put out. We don’t know the actual goals…”

“After seeing the warriors of the other worlds, I’ve slowly understood the opening of the Whirling World is not something Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion can control at all. It looks like a lot of secrets are involved.”

Rudy nodded earnestly. “No matter how powerful Phoenix Valley and the Unbreaking Pavilion are, they’re just two eighth-grade clans in Hestia, and they’re nothing compared to the two other worlds! I think that the two of them just have a bit of extra information at most, but they can’t control the Whirling World at all.”

Jackie nodded.

As time passed, they encountered more and more things, and the questions in their minds started to be answered.

Jackie looked at the crowd as more questions surfaced in his head.

Those questions flowed in Jackie’s head chaotically, and he was unable to decipher them. All he could do was pull out a few clues from the chaos. If he wanted to figure out the unadulterated truth, he would need a lot of time.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3086 - 3090

Chapter 3086
Rudy reached out and grabbed Jackie's hand as a happy glint appeared in his eyes and said, "Most of those from our world probably don't know the truth. Even if they know some of it, their months are completely shut. They won't reveal the truth to us at all, but we can ask warriors from the other worlds! To them, the Whirling World might not be a secret at all!"

Jackie nodded, feeling like Rudy's mind was getting sharper. He had not even thought about that, but Rudy had.

He then nodded earnestly, "You're right! All that information is treated like a complete secret in Hestia Continent, but it might be common knowledge in the other worlds. After all, Hestia Continent had been sealed off for some unknown reason for so long!"

Thinking about that, Jackie immediately started to make plans on how he would get the information. Even if the primary goal at that moment was to continue advancing in the Whirling World, they could not just rush forward without any information. The more they knew, the more solutions they would have when they were in danger!

At the southeastern corner of the city, some of the disciples of the Pentagram Clan from the White Marsh Continent were gathered. They had emotional looks on their faces as they intensely discussed something.

"Trevor, just stop! I won't give up on entering a level two city!" Ethan shouted.

Trevor Henry frowned, feeling like Ethan was acting like an obstinate mule. No matter how nicely he put things, the guy refused to listen.

Trevor said in frustration, "Why do you think I'm trying so hard to advise you? Is it just because I like playing around? It's all for your own sake!"

"No matter how high your position is in the Pentagram Clan, you're still just an alchemist! You can't defend yourself at all! Don't you know what sort of place level two cities are? Do you not know how dangerous they are?"

"After entering, our fellow disciples will be struggling to even protect themselves. Would they have the ability to protect you? If there's any danger, you'll definitely be the first to die inside. Are you really happy being cannon fodder?"

A string of questions was shot over, but Ethan remained stubborn, refusing to submit!

He raised his voice and said, “I’m not an idiot. Of course, I know what a level two city is. I know it’s dangerous inside as well. I might be an alchemist, but I have my ways to protect myself!”

“Level two cities aren’t filled with danger everywhere. There are quite a few safe spots. After I enter, I won‘t be in danger as long as I stay in the safe areas! All of you can face the dangers. I won’t drag you down by going to dangerous places with you!”

Trevor felt like he was about to explode in anger at Ethan.

His lips twitched as he said, “You’re being too optimistic! There are definitely safe spots in level two cities, but they’re still level two cities in the end. Without the rules around, they’re complete hunting grounds!”

“In there, you’re just pure cannon fodder. You’re a big slab of meat! After all, everyone knows that alchemists tend to be rich. After you enter the level two city, as long as you stay in the safe spots, the dangers in the city would naturally not harm you…”

“What about outside the city? Will the other warriors just ignore a fat piece of meat like you? Won’t they attack you? We won’t be able to take care of you when we’re surrounded by danger at all. You‘ll just be forced to stay alone in the safe areas. As long as other warriors walk past, you should have no chance at surviving!”

The more Trevor spoke, the angrier he got.

His face was reddened, and the other chosen disciples of the Pentagram Clan spoke to Ethan as well, “Trevor‘s right. Ethan, why are you so insistent on entering a level two city? Can’t you just stay in a level three city? It‘s too dangerous there. Even warriors at Trevor’s level have to be extremely careful in level two cities…”

Chapter 3087
“Not only does he need to be wary of the dangers the level two cities themselves pose, but he also needs to be on guard against the warriors from the other worlds! Weak warriors are non-existent there. After you enter, there’s a high chance you’ll be in danger!”

“I don’t think it’s just a high chance, I think it’s almost assured! As long as you meet any danger, your chances of survival will be incredibly slim. Are you going to throw your life away in the whirling World? Don’t forget, there won’t just be warriors from White Marsh Continent in the level two city, there will be warriors from other worlds as well!”

“The warriors of the other worlds won’t know anything about the Pentagram Clan. They won’ t be afraid to attack you nor are they afraid of any revenge from the clan! In their eyes, you’re just an incredibly delicious piece of meat. Why would they ignore you?”

Ethan's lips twitched as he panted furiously. He started to walk forward, and the disciples behind him followed along.

The more Ethan thought about it, the angrier he got, "Do you just think that I'm an idiot? Do you think I'll go around provoking warriors from other worlds the moment I enter a level two city? As long as I don't wear my alchemist robes, would they know who I am? They won't try to attack me for no reason. Do you really think I want to die?!"

Trevor got even angrier after hearing that and replied, "I don't understand. Why are you insisting on entering a level two city? What benefits would it give you? Are you just trying to see how dangerous a level two city is?"

Ethan said indignantly, "Of course, I'm not entering a level two city just because I want some experience! Level two cities haven't seen any alchemists for countless years…"

"All those valuable materials are just like wild grass to all of you. Yet, I can tell at a glance which ones are valuable!"

Trevor pursed his lips as he looked at Ethan like a complete idiot. He was entering a level two city to get materials!

He was completely speechless. If he had not managed to retain his rationality, he might have grabbed Ethan's collar and slapped him a few times. He wanted Ethan to realize that valuable materials were nothing. If Ethan died, the materials would just be someone else's prize.

Ethan felt that no matter what he said, the disciples around him would not bring him into a level two city.

The more he thought about it, the angrier he got. He felt like he was being branded as a useless alchemist by them.

Ethan widened his eyes and said, "I know you see me as a burden! I know that I'm not as skilled as all of you! We all have our specialties. Not a single one of you can compete against me when it comes to alchemy!"

"The Whirling World only opens once every five hundred and thirty years! Surely you know what five hundred and thirty years mean without me telling you? So many masters have missed out on this… There is an age limit to enter the Whirling World, and so many people have been denied entry because of that!"

"I was able to enter because I was lucky. I can't just waste an opportunity like this!"

Trevor frowned and said, "Then tell me, around how many warriors enter the Whirling World each time? After two years, how many of them manage to stay alive?"

Ethan’ s lips froze at that moment!

The Whirling World’s death rate was as high as fifty percent. If six hundred thousand warriors entered, three hundred thousand making it out alive was already considered a miracle.

In certain cities, many matches ended in a lot of deaths. Even if the rules in the cities prevented killing, warriors would kill each other outside of the cities.

Death was a mainstay in the Whirling World, but Ethan felt like he was not that unlucky. If half of the warriors died inside, did that not mean the other half made it out alive?

He was sure that he would be part of the half that made it out alive!

Chapter 3088
The only reason they were trying so hard to stop him was that they felt like his skills were not good enough and that he would drag them down.

Ethan felt frustrated just thinking about that. He had become a disciple of the Pentagram Clan thanks to his status as an alchemist, but at that moment, he was the one being tossed aside.

The Whirling World only opened once every five hundred and thirty years. The chance to enter the Whirling World was something incredibly valuable to every warrior. The Whirling World was a miraculous world created by ancient heroes.

There were countless cities in the world, and each city had its own unique trait. Countless treasures were kept within the cities. The closer they got to the center of the Whirling World, the more treasures there were, and the more valuable. Even though a level two city was incredibly dangerous, there were still quite a few safe spots.

As long as he quietly stayed in a safe place and did what he wanted to do, he would not be in danger. It was something everyone knew, but they frantically denied him.

The reason was simple, it was just because they thought he was a burden! Ethan got angrier when he thought about it. When they needed him to refine pills for them, he had never said no. Yet, when he was asking them for help, they found all sorts of reasons to reject him.

Trevor was especially hateful. He was one of the leaders of the Pentagram Clan, and a chosen disciple as well. He had the power to make certain decisions.

Before, Ethan had always treated him politely and helped him quite a lot as well. Yet, that was the attitude Trevor was treating him with. It was as if he was a completely ignorant idiot.

Just as Ethan was feeling all that rage, he suddenly saw a familiar figure in the corner of his eye. His entire body stiffened immediately. He looked over and felt like a fuse had been lit inside him when he saw who that person was clearly. He almost lost his mind as his rage exploded.

He narrowed his eyes as he rushed over, grabbing that person's arm, "Jackie! I can't believe I'll see you here! I thought you would have already been killed by someone!"

Jackie's expression darkened as he pulled his hand away from Ethan's grasp with annoyance.

When he saw Ethan, Jackie felt incredibly annoyed.

During the seventh group competition, he had listened to a lot of nonsense from that guy. Now that he bumped into Ethan again, that fly that could not be chased away would definitely blabber on like before. He was absolutely annoying!

When Ethan saw Jackie, various feelings surfaced. He still remembered how Jackie had mocked him and challenged him. After getting the golden treasure. Jackie had looked at him with disdain as well. Jackie even said a lot of things that caused him to he laughed at.

At that moment, Ethan absolutely hated Jackie!

If he had not been delayed by certain things before, he would definitely have tried his best to look for the warriors he was familiar with in Hestia Continent and have them help him to kill Jackie!

Ethan was already furious at what had happened earlier, so when he saw Jackie, his anger reached its boiling point. Facing his own fellow disciples, there was no way he would go too far no matter how angry he was. Yet, Jackie was always an enemy. All of his anger condensed together immediately and it exploded right at Jackie.

When Jackie saw Ethan's slowly distorting expression, his lips twitched helplessly. He felt like the guy seemed to be ill.

Rudy looked at Ethan curiously. Ethan's face was unknown to Rudy, but with what Ethan said, Ethan must have a tremendous grudge against Jackie, which meant that Ethan was an enemy.

Chapter 3089
Jackie's lips twitched helplessly as he took a step back, stepping away from Ethan.

He felt like Ethan was acting like a mad dog that had lost all rationality. If he did not distance himself, he might end up getting bit.

‘So it’s you. That guy who loves to brag but doesn’t have the skill to back it up,’ That was what Jackie thought of Ethan.

He still remembered how Ethan had constantly declared that he was the strongest alchemist present during the tournament. He claimed that no one could beat him, but he got a bronze treasure in the end.

After he got the bronze treasure, he refused to believe the results. He claimed that Jackie had cheated, and said a lot of unbelievable things. What Jackie just said had definitely angered Ethan.

The embarrassing scene immediately appeared in his mind. Everything had been caused by Jackie. If it had not been for Jackie, he would not have embarrassed himself in front of the alchemists from the three worlds.

After returning to White Marsh Continent, he had been constantly mocked for what had happened in the tournament. He had even dragged down the Pentagram Clan with him. All the anger condensed together. If it was not for the rules of the middle city preventing any fights, he would have fought Jackie to the death on the spot.

At that moment, the other disciples from the Pentagram Clan walked over. They looked at Jackie curiously. When they felt Ethan’s anger, all of them automatically regarded Jackie as an enemy, looking at Jackie with an unkind expression.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, feeling even more exasperated. He could not believe that such a big coincidence had happened. Of all the people there, he actually met Ethan.

He looked at the people behind Ethan and sighed internally. It seemed like there was no way he could just brush this thing aside. Then, he decided to just not care anymore.

He had already offended so many people anyway, there was no harm in adding one more. Furthermore, they were from White Marsh Continent. The Hestia Continent had already been separated by an unknown barrier. Even if they wanted to cause him trouble in the outside world, they would not be able to.

That was unless they enlisted other warriors from Hestia Continent, but Jackie no longer cared about that. He would just let the storm intensify a bit more!

Ethan clenched his teeth and said, “It’s all because of you! Don’t think that I can’t do anything to you! I’ve already made plans for my revenge. You won’t be able to run away!”

Ethan stared at Jackie viciously, looking like a snake that had just been incited into combat. He looked like he was about to bite at any moment.

Jackie pursed his lips, feeling incredibly amused, “Can you think about your words before you speak? You said I harmed you, but how did I do that? Did I force you to tell everyone that you’ll definitely get first place in the group? Did I make you say that you’ll definitely get the golden treasure? Did I force you to insult me?”

Ethan’s lips froze, his face reddening at Jackie’s words.

After saying that, Rudy finally realized who Ethan was. Jackie had told Rudy about what happened at the tournament before. That hateful person turns out to be Ethan. No wonder Jackie said that Ethan only knew how to brag.

Thinking about how Ethan had only gotten second place in the end, Rudy felt like laughing.

Chapter 3090
The sixth-grade alchemist that he had looked down on had beat him to get first place, slapping him on the face viciously. Rudy could not stop himself from letting out a laugh, unable to stop the mocking smile from appearing on his face.

Looking at Rudy, Ethan almost stopped breathing from the anger. He was an incredibly prideful person. He could not stand being mocked by others at all.

His mouth dried in anger. He barely managed to gulp as he said, “I won’t let you off so easily! The two of you will die! I’ll let you know the consequences of offending me!”

Jackie’s lips twitched speechlessly. He had heard those similar words countless times. Many people had told him that they would make him pay the price before, and even worse had been said as well.

Jackie was already completely immune to all of them. Furthermore, Ethan was just an alchemist. No matter how strong he was at alchemy, he was still trash as a warrior.

He estimated that Ethan was probably a little stronger than Rudy. After all, he had a good background, but he was only a fraction stronger than Rudy!

Alchemists put most of their time into alchemy, so how would they have the time to practice combat?

Jackie completely disregarded Ethan’s threats!

He sneered and said, “I really want to see how you plan on dealing with me. What ability do you have to deal with me? Don’t tell me you’ll look for warriors of the Hestia Continent to kill me. You can’t do it!”

Ethan almost lost his mind after hearing that, “Why do you thinkI can’t do it?! Let me tell you! I absolutely can! I can easily find someone to kill you. You might be a little stronger

than me in alchemy, but an alchemist is still an alchemist. Facing strong warriors, you're just a big ant. You'll die with just a pinch!"

After hearing that, Jackie could not hold himself back from laughing either. After all, Ethan's words were exceptionally funny to Jackie.

He spoke as he laughed, "You speak like you're not an alchemist? I'm a large ant? I will die with just a pinch?"

Jackie was more and more amused as Ethan shouted in reply, "That's right! You're just an ant. Any strong warrior can kill you easily. I can as well! I heard that you have no background at all. You're just a wandering warrior…"

"You probably got some inheritance from someone, which is how you reached your heights in alchemy! You should have put all your focus on alchemy! You did not have time to practice combat at all. I'm different from you. I might be deeply into alchemy, but I never forgot to improve my skills as well! Killing a warrior like you would be incredibly easy for me!"

As he said that, Ethan's face was incredibly confident. It was like he was the absolute strongest, and everyone else was nothing to him.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and asked, "You think you can beat me?"

Ethan nodded vigorously, "Of course, I can beat you. Killing you is something incredibly easy for me, let alone just beating you."

As he said that, Ethan reached out three fingers, "I only need three moves. I'd cripple you in three moves!"

Jackie laughed as he took out the middle city token from Mustard Seed and played with it in his palm.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3091 - 3095

Chapter 3091
He pointed at the middle city token and said, “This is the surface level of the middle city. Further down, there are still the first and second underground levels. These three levels are filled with various challenges!”

“I think you already know most of those challenges. There happens to be a challenge that’s very suitable for the two of us! I just wonder if you dare.”

Ethan raised an eyebrow, narrowing his eyes before he said, “Are you talking about the death match? You want to start a deathmatch against me?”

Jackie earnestly nodded, “That’s right! Didn’t you say that you could kill me off easily? You love to brag so much, but I don’t believe you at all. You keep on saying that you were harmed or framed by others. Why don’t we just use the simplest way to prove it!”

After he said that, all of the disciples of the Pentagram Clan frowned.

Trevor pushed away the disciples in front of him, walking toward the two of them, “No! You can’t start a deathmatch!”

After saying that, Trevor stared at Jackie, “You must be that guy, Jackie, who got the golden treasure. I’ve heard quite a few people mention you before. You really are arrogant!”

“I don’t care what you think, nor do I care how cheap your life is to be able to start a deathmatch just like that. Ethan’s life is worth much more than yours! There’s no way he’ll start a deathmatch with you!”

When Ethan heard that, he started to get a little anxious even though it was what he wanted. He hated Jackie to the core at that point. With a chance to kill Jackie right in front of him, he would naturally not want to let it slip.

Ethan grabbed Trevor’s arm and said, “Trevor… Listen to me! This guy has no clan at all. His skills can’t even compare to our janitors! I’ll be able to kill him easily. Since he wants to die so much, we should just give him what he wants!”

Trevor was absolutely furious. If there were not so many people gathered there, he would have slapped Ethan.

“Shut up right now! Do you not know what a deathmatch is? The moment the death match starts, both of you have to go on the stage! It will be a fight to the death. Unless someone dies, the match won’t end! How old are you right now? Can you stop throwing

tantrums like a kid? Why do you need to personally fight him? Can you stop causing so much trouble?”

“Do you not know how important your life is? Why are you trying to fight to the death against an alchemist from the Hestia Continent? How could you do something like that?”

Rudy was more and more unhappy when he heard that. Everything that guy said had been insulting Jackie’s worth. He was crossing the line.

Rudy sneered and said, “You really are from the same clan! Both of you act exactly the same way, with a tendency to brag about yourself. Why are you talking about the worth of everyone’s lives? Who determines that worth?”

“How is Ethan comparable to Jackie? He’s far worse than Jackie in alchemy! He refused to admit defeat so he’s just rambling about! Now, he’s even claiming that he’s stronger than Jackie in combat! In my eyes, there’s only one thing he’s better than Jackie at, which is bragging!”

Rudy had already trained his mouth very well at that point. He scolded the two of them at the same time!

Trevor’s expression darkened as he turned around and looked at Rudy with the intent to kill. This killing intent Trevor let out crashed into Rudy like a wave.

Rudy was so scared he hid behind Jackie. After all, Rudy’s skills were far below Trevor’s.

The killing intent and power that Trevor sent out had Rudy clearly reeling, but Jackie was fine with it. Power at that level could not affect Jackie at all.

Chapter 3092
At that moment, Trevor was left with anger. He did not notice that Jackie had ignored his killing intent at all.

Ethan did not notice it either. Ethan only had one thought in mind, which was to kill Jackie personally. Otherwise, he would regret it forever if he let this chance go!

He could not let Trevor stop him.

At that moment, Ethan was starting to get anxious as he shouted, “Trevor, don‘t stop me! This guy is no match for me at all! I’ll definitely be able to handle him!”

Trevor frowned, “What will you handle? Your life is more important! Stop playing around!”

Ethan merely felt like Trevor was incredibly petty, only nagging him on one thing and another. Ethan felt like he could get nothing done.

Ethan waved his hands around and yelled, “Don’t try to stop me! I was the one who wanted to start the death match. Even if I end up in any danger, it has nothing to do with you at all. Everyone can be our witness. You won’t be affected!”

His words had been so determined that the other disciples of the Pentagram Clan did not know what to do.

Trevor was so angry that he started panting, he regretted bringing Ethan into his team at that point!

He felt like Ethan kept on causing him trouble!

Trevor absolutely did not want to let Ethan start a death match. Even though he felt like Jackie was not at Ethan’s level, something unexpected could always happen. Before the results were out, no one could be sure of what would happen. Even if Ethan won, there was still a chance that Ethan would suffer heavy injuries. That would be his responsibility as well.

It was completely avoidable. The most important task for Ethan in the Whirling World was to refine pills, not to fight against others!

Ethan seemed to see through Trevor’s thoughts. He laughed, saying, “I know what you’re thinking, but this is a personal grudge of mine! If I can’t settle this grudge, I’ll suffer my whole life! I will take responsibility for myself, you don‘t have to worry!”

Trevor’s face was completely red in anger. Since everything had reached a point of no return, things would probably get even worse if he continued to stop Ethan. As the leader, he had to maintain his image. He could not let himself lose his authority.

Trevor narrowed his eyes, saying angrily, “Alright! Since you want to start a deathmatch so much, there’s no point for me to stop you.

“However, remember what you said. It was all your own choice. We couldn’t stop you at all!”

Ethan nodded vigorously as he said proudly, “Of course, I‘ll take responsibility for myself!”

Jackie was starting to get impatient when he finally voiced out, “Since it’s already decided, let’s go over!”

The area where the death match was normally held was in the west. Since the middle city was incredibly large, they chose to use a transfer array to reach where the death matches were held to save time.

On the way, Rudy whispered curiously, “You still haven’t told me about the various rules of the middle city. What is a death match? Other than death matches, are there other things? Other than the surface, are there two levels underground?”

Rudy had felt incredibly puzzled trying to follow that conversation earlier.

Earlier, Jackie and himself had been talking about Grayson and had not been able to talk about middle city’s rules at all. He felt like there were far too many warriors in the middle city.

Jackie slowly explained, “Let’s not talk about the first and second underground levels for now. There are three challenges on the surface. You can look at them as three different games…”

Chapter 3093
In Jackie’s eyes, the various challenges, and matches in the Whirling World were more like games, the victor would get benefits while the losers would not get anything and even stand to lose their lives.

In the middle city, various matches were like games to level up, while more and more people dies.

“What are the three challenges?” Rudy asked with widened eyes.

Jackie answered, “From the most difficult to the least is the slaughter of gambits, the death matches, and the gentleman‘s bet!”

After hearing that, Rudy widened his eyes.

The death match was not the hardest. There was also slaughter of gambits after that. Just from the name, it sounded like it would involve a lot of killing.

Rudy was even more excited. Before Rudy asked anything, Jackie continued, “The middle city’s upper and lower limits are much higher than the outer city for gambling. The regular bets in the outer city were set at five thousand as a lower limit and fifty thousand at the highest! Black iron bets had a limit of fifty thousand spirit crystals to a million. You know all of that…”

“The slaughter gambit is even greater than black iron bets. Participating in the slaughter gambit has a lower limit of five hundred thousand spirit crystals, while an upper limit of two million!”

The moment he said that Rudy's mouth widened in shock. He widened his eyes as he put up five fingers and said, "The lowest is five hundred thousand! My gosh, are spirit crystals free? They're treating them like nothing!"

Jackie laughed before he explained, "I actually feel like the prices are quite decent. Do you know how the slaughter of gambit is done?"

Rudy shook his head, "You haven't told me, so how would I? However, just listening to the name tells me that it's going to be bloody!"

Jackie sighed and said, "It really is bloody. A total of ten people need to be gathered for each slaughter of gambit! Ten of them will be sent to an isolated space before the slaughter starts. The end result is nine deaths!"

Jackie's words stunned Rudy, "Nine deaths?"

After thinking about it, Rudy immediately understood, "You meant that only after one person is left standing will the match end, right?"

Jackie only nodded to answer Rudy's question.

Rudy felt a chill. No wonder it was called a slaughter of gambit.

For every ten participants, only one person would survive. It was definitely exciting, just thinking about it gave him goosebumps!

After ten of them were sent to the isolated space, they would immediately start killing each other like wild animals in an arena. Only one person would survive to leave the space.

Rudy's expression stiffened after thinking about it, "Isn't that too crazy?! No wonder it's more difficult than a death match. At the most, a death match would end up with both people dying! Each slaughter of gambit leads to nine people dying! Any warriors who would participate in something like this would not be weak To me, they would all be masters! Nine of them would die in one go, that's crazy!"

Now that he thought about it, a lower limit of half a million to place a bet was not much. After all, it was such a crazy bet!

Thinking about it, another thought surfaced in his head. Just those three bets on the surface were crazy enough, so what about the two levels underground?

Chapter 3094
Rudy was more and more excited as he thought about it and was filled with anticipation. If the death match was not about to start, he would have impatiently dragged Jackie down to the first underground level to see if anything was interesting.

The death match area contained three large colosseums. Other than the fact that it was twice as big, it was not much different from the colosseums of the outer city.

At that moment, there was a match that had just ended, the blood had yet to be cleaned off.

The participants of the death matches needed to register themselves with the betting area outside of the colosseum. There were masked caretakers there.

The two of them did not hesitate to walk over to the betting area. The caretaker still had a cold look on his face. The only thing different from the caretakers in the outer city was his eyes.

The caretakers of the outer city had pure white eyes, giving anyone an uneasy feeling whenever they looked into those eyes. The caretakers of the middle city were the exact opposite, they had pitch-black eyes. Looking into them made someone feel like their souls were going to be sucked in.

“Registration?” the caretaker said coldly.

The two of them nodded.

The caretaker then pulled out a yellow scroll from his storage ring, placing it on the table in front of them. After the scroll was produced, all they could see was that it was full of symbols they could not understand.

The caretaker pointed at the lower left corner of the scroll and said coldly, “Sign your names. You should already know the rules. The moment the death match starts, it won’t stop until someone dies…”

The two of them exchanged a look, not saying anything before they quietly signed their names.

Trevor’s face was incredibly tense. There was a bundle of fire in his heart. Compared to Jackie, he was angrier at Ethan. He had tried so hard to advise Ethan properly, but all of it fell on dead ears.

The death match was a completely unnecessary risk in Trevor’s mind. Even if Ethan had a grudge against that guy, there was no need for Ethan to do anything himself. In the end,

Ethan was still just an alchemist. If anything happened, it would affect their future plans. He was the best alchemist from the Pentagram Clan that entered the Whirling World. After this, they would need to rely heavily on Ethan for his pills. If not for the fact that he was an alchemist, they would not have brought Ethan with them. After all, Ethan was trash as a warrior.

He clearly knew his purpose in the team, but he insisted on acting so recklessly, starting a death match with an alchemist from Hestia Continent. In Trevor's eyes, it was all unnecessary trouble!

Trevor was unable to voice out his anger and he could do nothing about it. After all, he could not stop Ethan, and he could not ruin their relationship too much. Hence, he was forced to watch as Ethan caused all that trouble.

The two of them had finished the registration after they signed their names. The caretaker brought the two of them to the stage in the middle of the colosseum. There was not a single empty seat in the spectator stands at that moment.

It was a colosseum that was much bigger than the one in the outer city. There were over twenty thousand seats in the spectator stands. Even so, there were still a lot of warriors waiting outside the colosseum, waiting for people to leave so they could go inside to spectate.

Jackie looked up and saw the sea of people. He could even see the excited looks of the spectators.

After the two of them took their place, the colosseum was in an uproar. There were even those who started whistling.

"Wow! Two alchemists? That's… Rare!"

Ever since he took away his disguise, Jackie had put back his earlier gray alchemist robes. Only, he took off his alchemist badge.

Chapter 3095
After all, the badge had caused Jackie so much trouble. Even he was beginning to feel like the badge was unlucky, so he decided just not to wear it.

Alchemist uniforms were not completely standard. It was just that certain patterns on it were universally recognized. That was why Jackie and Ethan's clothes were different in terms of color and design, but everyone could still tell that they were alchemists thanks to the special patterns on their clothes.

"Even alchemists are starting to fight each other. Didn't alchemists used to say that they were incredibly calm, not as filled with bloodlust as the rest of us?"

"Oh please! Alchemists just love to make themselves look good! They keep trying to show us how different they are, claiming that they are so noble. They keep saying that they're different from us rough warriors!"

"It's such a joke, aren't they just trash-tier warriors? If not for the fact that we need them, they wouldn't need to exist at all!"

“That’s right, I just want to spit at any alchemists I see! All of them are scum! I tried asking a seventh-grade alchemist to refine a lower seventh-grade pill for me. The guy quoted me six figures right away! I was furious, it was practically daylight robbery! In the end, the guy even told me to screw off!”

The relationship between warriors and alchemists was a complicated one.

The warriors on the spectator stand all felt both interested and strange looking at the stage. It was like their own territory had been invaded.

Alchemists always say that they were noble. Whether it was how they talked or did things, they insisted on setting themselves apart from regular warriors. Furthermore, alchemists were incredibly rare in the Whirling World.

High-grade alchemists were treasures among treasures. The Whirling World only opened once every five hundred and thirty years. Each time it opened, many valuable materials would be available.

To quickly improve themselves, the warriors needed to get alchemists to refine the materials into pills. Yet, since the alchemists were rare, they would always quote incredibly high prices and acted like the warriors absolutely needed them. That was why a lot of warriors were frustrated. People had even died thanks to that.

Looking at Jackie and Ethan then, a lot of those complaints surfaced. Many of the warriors had a lot to say about alchemists!

However, they did not dare to just kill alchemists. After all, many alchemists had major forces behind them. The warriors were afraid of retribution!

Hearing those discussions, Jackie felt like the grudges between warriors and alchemists would probably completely explode given enough time.

There might even be those who would risk kidnapping alchemists to do forced labor. After all, they really needed alchemists to help them with refining pills, but the prices the alchemists offered were absurdly high.

Jackie felt like he not only needed to be wary of his enemies attacking him in the future but even warriors with ill intentions for alchemists. He felt like there were enemies everywhere.

Ethan looked at Jackie’s frown. It looked like Jackie was incredibly worried.

Ethan laughed and said, “It’s too late to regret everything now. The death match has already started.”

Jackie rolled his eyes, too lazy to bother with Ethan.

The caretaker put his hand up, and the crowd went quiet. The caretaker emotionlessly said, “The one on the left is Ethan and the one on the right is Jackie. I will now announce their odds!”

The spectators were completely silent at that moment. Those spectators were not just there to look at the fights. Betting was the most important and anticipated part!

The caretaker raised his voice, “Ethan’s odds are one to four! Jackie’s odds are one to two!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3096 - 3100 -

Chapter 3096
When the odds were announced, the warriors in the spectator stands thought nothing of it, but Ethan was the first to blow up. He turned to look at the caretaker. He almost went up and snatched the scroll from the caretaker's hands.

Why were his odds one to four?

Jackie's odds were half of his. Higher odds meant that the caretakers did not think he was as strong as the other side. That was why the odds were pulled up to attract other warriors to bet on him. That was to even up the bets between the two of them.

Ethan got frustrated just thinking about it.

Before they got on the stage, Jackie had coldly mocked him quite a bit, so Jackie was obviously pleased.

Ethan's face reddened as he said to the caretaker, "That's not fair! Lord caretaker, please look at it again. How could you have my odds so high against this guy? Do you think my skills are worse than his?"

"How are my skills not at his level? I'm an alchemist from the Pentagram Clan of White Marsh Continent. Even if I'm an alchemist, I didn't completely abandon combat! He's just a wandering warrior without any background!"

He did not dare to be too harsh with his words. He tried to hold back and did his best to reason with the caretaker.

The skull-masked caretaker did not show any emotion at those words. He stiffly and coldly turned to look at Ethan.

Feeling the caretaker's cold gaze, Ethan pursed his lips, suddenly regretting what he said.

At that moment, the caretaker said, "The odds are set by the caretakers. We have our own rules to follow, and you have no right to interfere. If you continue questioning the caretakers, you will be punished by the middle city's rules!"

Hearing that, Ethan shuddered. Even an idiot knew that the punishment was being struck by lightning immediately which would result in one getting burnt alive. There was nothing he could do against that. Ethan completely stopped questioning everything.

The caretaker pointed at the betting area, “The betting area has opened. Those who want to place any bets can go there. The rules are the same. You have an hour to make your choice. After an hour, the match will start!”

After saying that, the caretaker walked off the stage. The warriors on the stands had already placed a lot of bets and had accumulated quite a lot of experience.

After the announcement, no one stood up and went to the betting area immediately. They continued to make their observations on the stands of the two alchemists on the stage.

“Even though I hate alchemists, I have to say that they’re starting to look better after I have heard those odds!”

“The odds are incredibly high. In the few matches before, the odds have shifted around one point something to two points something. The two of them are at two and four. With odds that are so high, there should be a lot of itchy hands!”

“I’ve decided to bet anyway. I happen to have a million left on me! If I get it right, I’ll either double or quadruple my spirit crystals!”

“Stop talking about the odds for now. Let’s hurry out and figure out who will win.”

“Does anyone know either of them? I heard Ethan say that he’s from the Pentagram Clan of White Marsh Continent. Does anyone know him enough to explain to everyone what his skill levels are at?”

Chapter 3097
“I know him! My clan has a good relationship with the Pentagram Clan. I’d seen him a few times before, but I don‘t know what his skills are like. After all, he’s still an alchemist who focuses on alchemy. Normally, they never take part in fights between warriors, so I’ve never had the chance to see his skills!”

“Then who’s that Jackie guy? Does anyone know him? How are his skills? Which clan is he from?”

“Are you deaf? Didn’t Ethan say it before? That guy has no background. Since that’s the case, Ethan should have better odds, so why are Jackie’s odds lower? Quickly look into it. Why is this so?”

“I don’t know Jackie! Are there any warriors from Hestia Continent? Who knows Jackie?”

An intense discussion was starting among the spectators at the stands.

First, they looked into Ethan's skills. After finding nothing, they started to look into Jackie. However, there were far fewer warriors from Hestia Continent than in the other two worlds.

There were even fewer of them who knew about him. There were a few of them who did know about Jackie, but they were from the Unbreaking Pavilion and the Compass Pavilion.

The Unbreaking Pavilion and the Compass Pavilion absolutely hated Jackie. His image had been sent around to all the disciples within those clans. Almost every disciple knew Jackie. They had even received orders to notify the whole clan the moment they noticed Jackie. After all, not only was Jackie was mysterious, but he was also a huge bane for both of those clans.

The disciples of the two clans were stunned when they saw Jackie walking onto the stage. When they saw that his opponent was an alchemist from Hestia Continent, they exchanged strange looks between themselves.

They knew Jackie, but would definitely not reveal Jackie's true strength. They did not want others to know about him, nor did they want anyone to know about his true skills. Only then would they not be interrupted when they wanted to deal with Jackie.

They naturally knew who was stronger among the two alchemists standing there.

A disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion in dark black clothes said to his fellow disciples, "This is a great chance to make some money. We should really thank him. Everyone, don't be stingy. Those who can afford half a million spirit crystals take all of it out to the betting area. Let's place a bet!"

The Compass Pavilion was the same. All of them clenched their fists. Even those who did not have half a million in hand took out loans!

Those who wanted to bet on death matches had to bet half a million!

No more, and no less. It had to be that number. That was why the disciples who did not have half a million all took out loans.

To the disciples from those clans, it was free money. They would naturally not let it slip by!

Compared to the noisy crowd, the two of them on the stage were much quieter. Jackie could not be bothered with Ethan, feeling like Ethan was just an annoying fly.

Ethan was trying to find the chance to mock Jackie, but he knew that Jackie was not so fragile. Even if he wanted to mock Jackie, he had to say something that Jackie would not be able to form a reply to.

Yet, he could not figure out anything to say after a long time. He was a bit frustrated as he panted. His expression was rapidly souring.

Chapter 3098
He could not stand it anymore in the end.

He turned and said to Jackie, “These odds are nothing, so don’t be so pleased with yourself! Everyone makes mistakes. The results will prove everything!”

Jackie snorted, closing his eyes as he ignored Ethan which made Ethan even angrier.

He started at Jackie and said, “You can keep on acting like this. The more you act like this, the happier I am. That’s because you’re about to kneel and beg me for mercy soon! However, I’m warning you. I won’t let you off easy…”

“Even if you kneel and plead for your life in front of me, I’ll still torture you! I won’t kill you so easily. I’ll slowly torture you. There’s no time limit to the death match after all. I have plenty of time to slowly torture you! I’ll let you feel the greatest pain, and have you hoping for death. You’ll just see yourself slowly dying away!”

Ethan felt more and more excited when he said all that to Jackie. His smile almost split his mouth in half.

Jackie turned to look at Ethan, who was smiling sinisterly and just felt incredibly exasperated.

He felt like there really must be something wrong with Ethan’s mind. Talking to Ethan would only lower his own intelligence. Ethan saw that Jackie remained silent and merely looked at him with a mocking expression, and his rage burned even greater.

“I know you’re actually already scared. You‘re just pretending not to care. I’ve already seen through your thoughts. Don’t think that I can’t tell just because you’re acting this way!”

Jackie’s lips twitched, suddenly not knowing what to say.

He felt like Ethan was living in his own world, feeling like whatever he said was definitely right. Jackie only felt exasperation when dealing with those people.

In the end, Jackie retorted, “You can think what you want. I can’t be bothered with you, but can you just shut up? I feel like I’m fighting against a complete idiot listening to you speak!”

Jackie almost caused Ethan to start fighting right there and then. Jackie’s words had been too hurtful, completely damaging Ethan’s heart.

Ethan’s fists trembled in anger as his eyes almost popped out of their sockets. He clenched his teeth as he looked at Jackie, wanting to rush right at Jackie, “I will definitely have you begging for mercy!”

There was nothing else he could say at that moment.

Thoughts of how he would torture Jackie filled his mind. He wanted Jackie to beg for mercy, repenting for everything he did wrong!

The crowd was incredibly happy with those arguments. Since there was nowhere to sit, Rudy and the disciples of the Pentagram Clan were waiting in the betting area. The moment the caretaker announced the odds, Rudy impatiently put five hundred thousand on Jackie.

The disciples of the Pentagram Clan did not move at all. As the leader of that team, Trevor’s expression was incredibly dark.

Sometimes, the odds would reveal certain problems. Before announcing the odds, Trevor had already thought about it. He felt like the caretakers would not have their odds be too far apart. He felt like they should only be one decimal place apart at most, but the situation was unexpectedly worse than he thought. One side had double the odds.

What caused Trevor even more nervousness was the fact that Jackie was the one with one to two odds, while Ethan’s odds were one to four. From that, it was obvious that the caretakers felt like Ethan would lose.

With that in mind, Trevor became incredibly worried.

Chapter 3099
Yet, some things could not be said. After all, Rudy was still beside them. He could not put himself down!

Probably because they could see through Trevor’s worries, one of the disciples from the Pentagram Clan whispered, “Trevor, don’t worry. The caretakers aren’t gods. There’s no way they can tell which one of them is stronger just from a look…”

“They’re just relying on their intuition. If the caretaker actually understood the two of them, the odds would not be like that. The odds might even be the exact opposite!”

Trevor nodded slightly, “You’re right. It’s not like the caretakers can judge everything accurately. It’s probably because of Ethan’s bad temper. The caretakers probably feel like a bad attitude means having horrible skills. That’s why the odds are so high!”

The disciple behind him nodded vigorously, “Jackie’s just an alchemist. Didn’t Ethan say so before? Jackie has no background. An alchemist like him is lucky enough to be good

at alchemy. He definitely put most of his time into alchemy, not having any time for martial training at all! That's why we don't have to worry that much. I believe in Ethan!"

After saying that, the other disciples of the Pentagram clan expressed their support for Ethan. They did not know much about Jackie, but they knew Ethan very well.

Ethan's skills might not be comparable to notable warriors, but among alchemists, he stood at the top.

There was not a single alchemist from the Pentagram clan who could beat Ethan. Since that was the case, then Jackie was definitely no match for Ethan.

Trevor snorted and said, "I was overthinking things. I was just fooled by how he acted. He's just acting too calm, causing me to feel like he's hiding something…"

Trevor could not help but laugh after saying that, feeling like he was being naive to actually think that the guy was hiding something. Even if he did, he was still just an alchemist.

He was just an ant in front of Trevor, that Trevor could deal with easily!

Rudy had heard everything they said and almost laughed.

Facing other strong warriors, Rudy would not have dared to say that Jackie would definitely win, but if it was Ethan, he could confidently tell everyone there that Jackie would be the victor. That was because Ethan was the ant that could die at any moment!

Rudy laughed and said, "Since you're so confident that Ethan will win, then hurry up and bet on him. Could you just be saying that you support him, but actually thinking that he'll lose?!"

"What do you know?!" A disciple behind Trevor said loudly.

The disciple had widened eyes and rage on his face, "We're not as stupid as you, blindly trusting Jackie! We didn't place our bets because we were talking! Couldn't you see that?"

Chapter 3100
After saying that, the disciple pulled out half a million spirit crystals from his storage ring with a huff, betting it on Ethan!

After doing that, he coldly looked at Rudy, "Do you see it now? Don't try to be petty with us! I despise ignorant country bumpkins like you guys!"

Rudy sneered, already used to hearing words like that. Had it been in the past, he would have shouted something back, but at that moment, Rudy could not be bothered.

He turned to look at the two people who were standing on the stage. He tried to estimate the time it would take for the battle to end. With Jackie's personality, the fight would have a result soon.

Time ticked away, and the spectators were finally reaching their conclusions. Even though they were still discussing, most of them already knew who they were betting on. There was just some uncertainty left.

After all, the odds were so high at that time. If Ethan won, those that have bet on Ethan would be able to quadruple their spirit crystals. So, most of the warriors hoped that Ethan would win. After all, Ethan's odds were far higher.

Just thinking about winning four times the spirit crystals made them happy. If Jackie won, they would only be able to get a million from half a million, which was far less.

"No matter what, I feel like Ethan's more likely to win. After all, he's from the Pentagram Clan. It's one of the top eighth-grade clans in White Marsh Continent. As for Jackie, he's from Hestia Continent, and he's a wandering warrior. The two of them are from completely different backgrounds!"

"You're right, but the odds are so high. It means that the caretakers think that Jackie's more likely to win. Even though I don't know how strong he is, there has to be a reason for the odds!"

"The caretakers make mistakes. Don't regard the caretakers so highly, okay? They've made a few mistakes before by giving the loser much higher odds. So, before the results are out, everything is uncertain!"

"From their conditions, I think Ethan's better. After all, Ethan comes from a high grade clan, he's stronger than Jackie no matter how you look at it!"

It was obvious from their discussions that most of the spectators planned on choosing Ethan. After all, Ethan came from a high grade clan.

Jackie was from Hestia Continent and did not have much of a background. White Marsh Continent was already stronger than Hestia Continent.

In the eyes of the warriors, White Marsh Continent's eighth-grade clans were comparable to Hestia Continent's ninth-grade clans! Even though Ethan was an alchemist, he should still be stronger than a warrior from a small clan.

After Ethan heard the discussions, the rage in his heart started to get suppressed.

He coldly stared at Jackie, "Do you hear that? Do you still think you can win?"

Ethan yearned to see Jackie's hopeless expression. As long as he had the chance, he would say something to provoke Jackie. Jackie frowned, opening his eyes in frustration as he looked at Ethan, who was pleased with himself.

Jackie sneered, "Do you still remember how much you bragged in the tournament? You told everyone that you would definitely get the golden treasure, but what ended up happening?"

"You are behaving exactly the same today. Can you just stop bragging? I'm getting annoyed just listening to you!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3101 - 3105 -

Chapter 3101
Ethan's face reddened in anger, finding himself at a loss for words.

What Jackie said had been the truth. What happened during the tournament felt like it had only happened a day ago. No matter what he said, the truth was more convincing.

All Ethan could do was wallow in his rage. After all, he had no way to shoot back at Jackie. He felt like even his heart was beginning to hurt as the lust to kill Jackie rose in his mind.

He gritted his teeth and stared at Jackie. He only had one thought in mind at that moment, which was that he wanted the match to start as soon as possible. He was in a hurry to kill Jackie.

An hour was not too long. When there were only 10 minutes left, the spectators all stood up and headed to the betting area.

Of the warriors that were betting, almost three-quarters of them placed their bets on Ethan. A quarter of the warriors betted on Jackie.

Rudy merely stood quietly by the side and observed.

When the last person placed a 500000 bet on Ethan, the match was finally starting.

Rudy looked up at the stage. Since there was no space in the spectator stands, they were forced to stay in the betting area outside, tiptoeing to look at the stage. The view, while it was barely anything, allowed them to see the stage.

One of the disciples from the Pentagram Clan coldly stared at Rudy's back, thinking about what Rudy had said earlier. He was full of anger, incredibly unhappy with Rudy and Jackie.

Though the match was about to start, he did not forget to mock Rudy.

"The truth beats anything you can say. The crowd knows what they're looking at. To Ethan, Jackie's an ant that can be easily squashed at will. Let me give you some advice. The higher you put your hopes up, the more dis appointed you'll be. Don't be too disappointed when Jackie is on his knees begging for mercy later."

Rudy, upon hearing that, turned to look at that person coldly. "Truth be told, I have something to say to all of you as well. The higher your hopes, the more disappointed you'll be. I don't know how sharp their eyes are, but I know that all of you are cretins!"

It was like the tension between them completely ignited with this exchange. The disciples of the Pentagram Clan all reddened in anger as they started to hurl various insults at Rudy.

“Who are you calling cretins? The two of you are the idiots here, but you’re still so pompous! I have no idea how you’re this full of yourself!”

“I wonder if the two of them even have brains. They‘re probably filled with dog poop!”

Rudy’s lips twitched, suddenly regretting what he said. After all, they outnumbered him greatly, and he could not possibly defend himself on his own. However, the insults did not last for too long since the battle was starting.

Ethan narrowed his eyes as he stared at Jackie in hatred. He cracked his knuckles, looking like he was about to start a slaughter.

He took out a silver sword from his storage space. “You probably don’t know what kind of technique I’m using. Since you’re going to die today, I’ll satisfy your curiosity. It’ s an act of mercy for you…”

“Listen here! I‘m using a lower Earth-rank technique, the Pentagram Sword Style.”

As he said that, he deliberately raised his voice as well, making sure that all the warriors there could hear him.

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly, unable to stop himself from rolling his eyes.

Why did Ethen seem more foolish by the minute?

Chapter 3102
When did he ever wonder what technique Ethan was using?

For one, Ethan was just revealing his secrets, and Ethan insisted on dragging him in as well. Jackie was beyond baffled, truth be told.

The warriors in the spectator stands all erupted in conversation when they heard what Ethan said. Quite a few of them started to regret betting on Jackie.

“Ethan is using the Pentagram Sword Style! That technique was created by an old hero from the Pentagram Clan. I heard it’s quite difficult, even if the rank isn’t that high for us.”

“However, Ethan is an alchemist. The fact that he’s able to use the Pentagram Sword Style means that he’s quite talented! Most alchemists are only able to use elementary red-rank techniques! It looks like Jackie will lose this time for sure!”

Since no one knew where Jackie was from, most of them had lumped him as a wandering warrior. On top of that, he was an alchemist, so he had left an impression in everyone's hearts.

Before Ethan said that he was using a lower Earth-rank technique, quite a few people still placed their bets on Jackie out of curiosity. After hearing Ethan's declaration, however, they regretted their choice.

Alas, it was too late for them to do anything.

When Ethan heard what was being said, the smile on his face deepened.

"Do you hear that now, brat? Everyone's looking down on you. I've reached the preliminary level of the technique, and I'm very close to proficiency. It'll be very easy to deal with you!"

Jackie' s lips twitched helplessly, really not wanting to waste his breath on Ethan. "Alright, fine, you're amazing! Can you hurry and attack now? Stop wasting time!"

Ethan's lips stiffened. He had thought that Jackie would cower in fear after he told Jackie what his technique was. He never expected Jackie to be so good at keeping a straight face. No matter what he said, Jackie did not seem to care.

Ethan was furious he did not want to waste any more time either. Since his words were not enough to make Jackie feel any fear, he would use his skills to have Jackie kneeling before him!

Ethan let out a shout of anger as his aura erupted all around him. The sword in his hand started to glow in silver, and eight stars suddenly floated in the air.

"Taste the Pentagram Sword Style!" Ethan launched himself forward like a sharp blade, charging right at Jackie while he was covered in the silver glow.

Eight glowing stars followed Ethan, slowly fusing with him.

Jackie merely raised an eyebrow, not even moving where he stood. He held his gray sword with both hands, and as Ethan was rushing over, he started to form seals, causing soul swords to condense in the air.

When Ethan was only 30 meters away, Jackie let out a slash. The gray slash shot at Ethan at a speed invisible to the naked eye. Suddenly, the gray slash clashed with the silver light, and everyone started to hear something crackling.

The silver aura suddenly shattered. In less than a second, it completely disappeared. The moment the silver aura dispersed, cracks appeared on Ethan's blade as well.

Before he could react, the gray slash swiftly thrust into Ethan's chest. Ethan suddenly felt the pain of his soul being ripped apart from his chest. The pain caused him to suddenly lose his mind.

After a cry of agony, he collapsed on the floor, spitting out blood.

Chapter 3103
Thankfully, Jackie avoided it quickly, and no blood got on his body.

"Argh!" Ethan cried out in agony like a captured wild boar, frantically rolling around as though he had gone crazy.

The sight caused the rowdy crowd to fall silent instantly. Everyone widened their eyes, looking at the writhing, crying Ethan, not knowing what to say at that moment. Just from his cries, they could tell how much pain he was in.

Ethan must be feeling the pain down to his bone. Otherwise, a warrior would not have forgotten about their dignity and rolled on the floor like that, crying out in agony!

After a long time, someone finally said, "Aren't these two supposed to be far different in terms of strength? Weren't they both supposed to be alchemists? Why is Jackie so strong that Ethan couldn't even block a single strike?"

"Earlier, it was obvious that Jackie and Ethan were on completely different levels the moment Jackie attacked. No wonder Jackie was so indifferent from start to finish, not even reacting, he didn't think Ethan was worth noting. To Jackie, Ethan posed no challenge at all!"

"That's true! The difference in skill is too great, I'm regretting betting on Ethan so much, and now I've lost half a million for no reason! Why am I so unlucky? I haven't won a bet for a few rounds!"

"I'm more or less the same. I've lost a million and a half from three consecutive rounds! If this goes on, I'll probably stop betting on these death matches! I might as well go to the gentleman's bets. I might be able to win a few rounds there!"

"Didn't Ethan say that he was using a lower Earth rank technique? He even said that he wasn't far away from reaching the second stage of mastery. With those skills, he should've been one of the strongest alchemists! How did he die to Jackie in one blow? It doesn't make sense…"

After that person spoke, a man in blue robes suddenly shouted, "It makes perfect sense, Jackie was just stronger. If Ethan was using a lower Earth rank technique, then Jackie must've used a middle Earth rank technique! He's probably reached proficiency or even perfection with the technique. That was how be defeated Ethan in one blow!"

The moment he said that, everyone agreed with him. They nodded as they felt regret for betting on Ethan.

The spectators had only lost half a million, so they were not that shaken up. However, the disciples of the Pentagram Clan in the betting area had lost their calm. Just hearing Ethan's cries of agony rattled them to the core.

They looked like their father had died.

Trevor rushed right over, shouting to the stage, "Jackie, stop! Stop right now, do you hear me?! Stop right now!"

He shouted as cold sweat dripped down his face. No one knew better than him how bad the situation would be if Ethan died. He would definitely be questioned by the Pentagram Clan. After all, Ethan was no ordinary warrior.

He was an incredibly rare alchemist, so he was immensely useful. Back then, Ethan would have been in first place in the seventh group if not for Jackie. It was obvious that Ethan's skills in alchemy were stellar, he was just worse than Jackie.

Even if Trevor did not like Ethan, he could not just watch Ethan die. After all, he would be punished if he did. Even if his fellow disciples could vouch for him that it was Ethan's choice, it would be useless if he perished.

He would still be punished!

Chapter 3104
Even if Ethan was still alive at that moment, he was dangerously close to death's door. Trevor was so anxious his entire body was shaking, already predicting what would happen.

Jackie looked up upon hearing Trevor's voice and saw him standing beneath the stage with his pale, panic-stricken face.

Trevor was staring right at Jackie with a complicated expression. While he tried to come off as forceful, the pleading glint in his eyes was just as evident as though he was begging for Ethan's release.

The sight of Trevor merely amused Jackie, however. He could not be bothered with him, and nothing he shouted would affect the results of the match.

He slowly turned to look at Ethan, who was still rolling on the floor.

At that moment, Ethan's clothes were completely disheveled. His entire body was covered in dirt, and he looked to be in an incredibly bad state. Despite his appearance,

Ethan could barely care, the pain made him forget everything else as he wailed in agony.

The stage suddenly turned into a slaughterhouse.

Seeing that Jackie would not do anything regardless of what he said, Trevor started to panic. “We can talk about this, Jackie!” he said. “As long as you release him, I’ll do anything as long as it’s within my power!”

“You killing him won’t amount to anything but merely taking a life. This brat has suffered the punishment he should have. Just look at how much pain he’s in! You should‘ve already vented your frustration. Let him go! Just act like you didn’t see him today!”

Trevor finally lowered his head.

If this went on, Ethan would surely die. Since threatening Jackie was useless, he was forced to try coercing Jackie.

Ethan’s death would entail his misery after all, seeing as Ethan was special, a talented alchemist. As long as Ethan did not die, Ethan would be one of the top eighth-grade alchemists in the future.

Nurturing an alchemist required a lot of resources, and the Pentagram Clan had invested a lot in Ethan. If Ethan died, then those investments would go up in flames.

If the higher ups found out, they would no doubt be angered while he would get dragged into it. Even if Ethan had requested everything himself, even if Ethan had refused to listen to anything he said, the blame would still fall on him!

After all, he was Ethan’s team leader, and regardless of what happened, he would be held responsible if Ethan died. There was no telling how angry the higher ups would be and how he would be punished. Even if he was a chosen disciple in the Pentagram Clan, he was not the only one in the clan. It was not like he had no enemies in the clan either, and it would be the perfect chance to deal with him.

Those who were not on good terms with him would not let the chance to deal with him slip. They would try everything in their power to have the higher ups give him the death penalty!

Jackie raised an eyebrow curiously. He never expected that Trevor would humble himself and try to negotiate. He gazed at Trevor again, noting how bloodshot his eyes were and how his lips shivered. It was obvious how much he was begging Jackie.

Jackie let out a laugh before he said, “There’s nothing that I desire. You can give me whatever I’d want, anyway.”

Trevor's face darkened as he said loudly, "Do you know what you 're doing, Jackie? You're challenging the Pentagram Clan. If you kill Ethan, you'll be the enemy of the whole clan!"

Chapter 3105
"You'll always be pursued. Even if you're lucky enough to avoid it once, you'll never be at peace to the point you'll never be able to show yourself in public! It's a terrible fate. You have to think it through!"

Hearing that, Jackie was incredibly amused and looked at Trevor indifferently. "Don't you think you're being hilarious? If I hadn't prepared myself, how would I have started a death match with him? Do you think I started one so I'd die myself?

"Since I knew that he'd die, it's natural that I understood what'll happen if he did. So what if I offend the Pentagram Clan? If you want to kill me, you've got to have skills."

After saying that, Jackie ignored what Trevor was saying beneath the stage. Jackie acted like he did not hear anything, and the spectators erupted in discussions.

Most of the warriors had betted on Ethan, and as the results were the complete opposite of what they expected, half a million had gone down the drain.

Various complaints could be heard everywhere.

A lot of the warriors were more shocked at the result. After all, Ethan had lost far too quickly, having failed to even survive one strike from Jackie.

"I'm beginning to suspect that this kid isn't an alchemist," said a person among the crowd suspiciously.

Another warrior chimed in, "Why are you doubting that he isn't an alchemist? Those robes aren't something anyone can get. Those clothes all have special runes on them. Unless he stole someone's, there's no way to fake those robes."

The one who questioned Jackie explained, "If he's not an alchemist, why doesn't he have an alchemist badge on his chest? It's not like we've never seen alchemists before…"

"Other alchemists would always have alchemist badges on their chests; it's their symbol, and they wouldn't take it off easily. Just look at that seventh-grade alchemist badge on Ethan's robes!"

"However, this guy doesn't have a badge at all. Furthermore, when did alchemists get so strong? Even though we lost, our thought processes had been logical…"

“Ethan came from the Pentagram Clan, and he used a lower Earth rank technique, the Pentagram Sword Style. He had even reached the first level of mastery! I’ve met so many alchemists, and not a single one of them could compare to Ethan. Yet, this guy dealt with Ethan in one strike! Don’t you all think it’s strange? All of this proves that this guy isn’t an alchemist at all. He’s just like the rest of us, pure warriors…”

“He probably stole or borrowed those alchemist robes from someone else. There’s no way he’s an alchemist!”

“I think you might be right. There are some flaws in his disguise. It’s the first time I‘ve met such a strong alchemist. I think you’re right. This guy isn’t an alchemist at all!”

“Ethan’ s so unlucky!”

“You can’t say he’s unlucky either. He was the one who didn’t verify the facts. He didn’t check who the other person was before the death match, and everyone knows death matches aren’t something you play around with.”

“Yeah… The moment you get on stage, someone will have to die. In the worst cases, both of them will end up dying. The fact that he was this careless probably means he deserved his fate.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3106 - 3110 -

Chapter 3106
The discussions grew louder as some began to theorize that Jackie was not an alchemist at all since they did not know where Jackie got his robes from.

Quite a lot of them felt pity for Ethan's misfortune as well to have fallen for a trick.

Ethan thought Jackie was an alchemist, which was why Ethan started a death match, all while Jackie might not be an alchemist at all.

"This guy is too shameless! We're all warriors here, and we never fight against alchemists! After all, we have different specialties. There's nothing great about beating an alchemist, yet this guy even tricked them!"

"He truly is despicable. I wonder what's going through his mind!"

The discussions started to shift their attacks toward Jackie. After all, a lot of them had lost their spirit crystals, so they needed something to blame. Jackie became their prime target.

A lot of them frantically criticized Jackie, feeling like his victory was not honorable at all. They even described him as a despicable, disgusting clown. Those discussions rose among the warriors.

Some of them even started to attack Hestia, saying that the continent's warriors needed to prove themselves with alchemists!

At the start, the warriors of Hestia did not say anything. After all, they did not have anything to do with Jackie. Yet, when they started to move on from Jackie and attack Hestia, many decided to speak up.

A warrior from Hestia stood up and shouted, "I can prove that Jackie's an alchemist, so stop trying to find reasons to insult him! Before you learn the truth, don't act like you know everything!"

"Jackie participated in the treasure tournament before, and he even managed to get a golden treasure for Hestia. It's not just the warriors and alchemists from the Hestia Continent who know that; the alchemists and warriors from your own worlds should know as well!"

The moment that was said, the discussions quieted down quite a bit.

A warrior from White Marsh Continent said loudly, "Is what you're saying true? "

That person laughed coldly, saying in disdain, “Why would I lie? Jackie was a part of the seventh group. If you don’t believe me, you can look into this. It’s the truth. As long as you look into it a bit more, you’ll see that I’m not lying.”

The moment that person said that, quite a few of them looked into it. The results were immediately out, and the warrior from Hestia had not been lying after all. Jackie truly did take part in the seventh group, placing first and getting a golden treasure.

What surprised them even more was the fact that Ethan had been a part of the seventh group. Everyone slowly started to understand what happened.

Death matches were where grudges were settled, and the grudge between them had started from the seventh group. After figuring that out, those who were calling Jackie shameless all shut their mouths.

Quite a few of them lamented, “So Jackie is an alchemist. Why doesn’t he have his badge on?”

“Who knows? Isn’t this guy a little crazy? He’s not just talented enough to get a treasure in an alchemy tournament, placing first among so many alchemists, but he’s not weak as a warrior either. With his skills, most wandering warriors would probably fall to him! He’s really insane. It’s the first time I’ve seen such a strong alchemist!”

Chapter 3107
“I heard that this guy doesn’t have a notable background either. How strange is that? Does he have something unique that’s backing him up?”

“Even if he did, he’d need the talent in the first place. It looks like he’s hiding quite a few secrets. It’s a pity there are so many rules here. Even if I wanted to investigate this, I wouldn’t be able to…”

Jackie did not care what the spectators were talking about, but it did not mean that he did not know either.

It was understandable how he would invite a lot of interest with all the extraordinary things about him. However, they were in the middle city. Even if they were keen, there was nothing they could do.

They would only get the chance after he left, but he was no fool either. He would never give them the chance to do as they wanted.

At that moment, Jackie switched his focus on Ethan again. Under his control, Ethan’s pain slowly diminished, but it did not mean that the power that was rotting Ethan’s soul was already depleted. It was just decreasing the speed of the rot.

Slowly, Ethan regained some of his sanity. He opened his eyes and looked at Jackie weakly. When he saw Jackie's face clearly, the hatred in his heart soared. However, he quickly realized that he was a goner, and the fear of death filled his body. He did not want to die. He still had a beautiful future ahead of him!

As an incredibly talented alchemist, he would become an eighth-grade alchemist if he lived. He even had a shot at becoming a ninth-grade alchemist. If that happened, even the leader of the Pentagram Clan would treat him respectfully!

No one would dare to look down on him, and many would kneel before him!

These thoughts flashed through his mind as he lamented his deadly fate. The fear he felt sent chills down his spine, causing him to shiver.

Looking at him, Jackie laughed and said, "Are you horrified? I'm sure this doesn't feel good. I'll be honest with you… Even if you beg me, I won't grant you mercy…"

That was what Ethan had threatened Jackie with before the battle, and Jackie merely made him taste his medicine.

Ethan almost fainted from anger when he heard that. Fear and anger mixed together, and he spat out a mouthful of blood. He clutched his chest as he looked at Jackie with a complicated expression.

"Who are you?! Tell me who you are!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, scoffing, "Why are you asking that? Don't you know who I am?"

"You're not an alchemist, I know it! You're not Jackie… You're someone else in disguise! There's no way Jackie is this strong. He's an alchemist, but you're not!" Ethan spat out even more blood as he shuddered and spoke, clutching his chest.

Jackie was speechless. Ethan would rather claim that he was someone else in disguise than admit that he was better!

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, "Are you unable to accept that I'm better than you at everything? That's the truth. I'm better than you in every way…"

"Didn't you laugh at me and think that I was just giving up my life when I started the death match with you? All this while, you were the clown impatiently jumping to his demise!"

Jackie's words pierced through Ethan's thoughts.

Ethan’s eyes widened completely as the color drained from his face. He looked like he was a ghost that just crawled out of hell.

Chapter 3108
Jackie snorted, no longer wanting to waste his time on him, the power of Destroying the Void exploded within Ethan’s body with a wave of his hand. Very quickly, pain drowned Ethan’s senses.

This time, Jackie did not hold back, Ethan’s soul was torn to oblivion by Destroying the Void. In just a few seconds, his soul was completely consumed.

The stage’s barrier fell at that moment, signifying that Ethan had died.

Trevor was in sheer shock as Ethan’s corpse was brought down from the stage. His lips trembled as he looked at the lifeless body before him, and various thoughts surfaced in his mind. He was already imagining how he would be punished by the higher-ups.

He caught a figure slowly walking toward the betting area from the corner of his eyes. With the match already ended, all his rage had condensed into one point.

He rushed toward the figure. “Stop right there!”

Jackie stopped and slowly turned to look at the angered, pale-faced Trevor. With his lips twitching and his eyes widened, he looked at Jackie as if Jackie killed his own father.

Jackie barely reacted as he calmly faced Trevor‘s rage.

Trevor gritted his teeth and hissed, “Do you know what’ll happen now?”

It was the same old dance. Trevor had said everything before but was about to repeat himself.

“Do you have nothing else to say?” grumbled Jackie exasperatedly. “I told you that I know what’ll happen. I just don’t care!”

Trevor’s eyes were filled with anger. “You’ll regret this! You’ll be begging for mercy! You’ll pay for this!”

Jackie frowned as he scoffed, “Pay for what? Are you going to kill me? Will you, or maybe anyone else?”

“If I have the chance, I’ll kill you!” snarled Trevor.

Jackie’s lips curled into a smile of disdain. “With just your strength? You’re not that much better than Ethan, the way I see it. If you have the skills, come and kill me. What’s the point of playing around?”

With that, Jackie turned and walked toward Rudy, who was visibly happy and waving at him.

“I made another five hundred thousand!”

He felt like Jackie was his god of health. He had earned a few million spirit crystals in such a short time.

Before this, he only managed to make a few hundred thousand after saving up for so long, but it suddenly multiplied by so much. He was already a millionaire!

Rudy grew happier as he thought about it, so much so that his smile threatened to split his face apart.

Jackie patted Rudy on the shoulder. “It’s just half a million. You’ll make even more in the future!”

After hearing that, Rudy got even more excited. “What are you planning on participating in?”

Jackie raised his head slightly. He had figured out what to do before Ethan even started the death match. The death match had just been something unexpected.

After the death match started, Jackie did not even bother placing a bet. Even if he did, he would only make half a million. To him, half a million was an insignificant number.

Chapter 3109
As Rudy waited for Jackie’s next plans excitedly, another uninvited guest appeared in front of them. It was Trevor and the Pentagram Clan’s disciples.

The next death match had already started, and the spectators were focused on the next participants. No one was paying attention to this side.

Trevor‘s anger had slowly dissipated, but the sinister look in his eyes had deepened. He looked at Jackie incredibly venomously.

Rudy immediately recognized that these were the people that mocked him and called him various harsh insults. It was the perfect time to fight back.

He walked forward and said to them, “Next time, please look at yourselves in the mirror before you call anyone ignorant. Didn’t you say that Ethan was very strong? How did he die so badly? He was writhing on the floor for so long that his body was covered in dirt. He was no different than a beggar in the streets.”

The disciples immediately rushed forward when they heard that. Their faces were red, ready to fight Rudy at the next moment, but Rudy was not worried at all.

Middle city was not the wilderness. If they wanted to fight, they would need to be able to withstand a lightning strike first.

Trevor reached his hand out to pull them back.

It was not the time to be impulsive, and he had somehow accepted the truth. “Don’t be reckless, their days are numbered anyway. The Pentagram Clan will definitely get him back for everything he did today!”

Rudy and Jackie were already used to threats like that. Jackie looked at Trevor curiously, feeling something strange about what Trevor said.

After a moment, Jackie smiled and said, “It makes sense now…”

Rudy tilted his head and asked, “What?”

Jackie took a step forward, saying to Trevor, “No wonder you were so anxious. On the stage, you promised me so much just to make me stop. So it was because of that!”

Jackie had a smile on his face as he spoke.

Trevor frowned, and the rage he had suppressed once again boiled. His anger surged when he saw how Jackie was acting. He was tempted to start fighting with Jackie. Thankfully, he managed to suppress that urge.

“Stop trying to imply things!”

Jackie snorted and said, “I’m not. It’s not like I didn’t hear what you said to Ethan before. Your relationship with him is clearly nothing great, so why did you care so much about him being alive?”

“I thought about it, you know? It’s probably because you’ll be punished by the Pentagram Clan’s higher-ups for his death, isn’t it? Otherwise, you wouldn’t care that Ethan‘s dead.”

Trevor frowned as he got angrier. “What kind of nonsense are you spouting? I was anxious because he was a clan member! Stop trying to apply your standards onto others!”

Jackie sneered. “Am I? Stop trying to make yourself look good. Just look at your guilty expression, anyone can see it. Don‘t you hate me so much that you want to kill me yourself right now?”

Chapter 3110
Trevor’s lips twitched. Of course he wanted to kill Jackie with his own hands. If it was not for Jackie, he would not have been dragged into this mess, and he would not have

needed to bear with the anger of the higher-ups when he got back, suffering from heavy punishments!

Thinking about that, Trevor wanted nothing more than to rip Jackie.

Alas, even if he did, they were in the Whirling World. He did not have the skills to challenge the laws of the Whirling World at all!

Jackie let out a light smile, suddenly turning serious. “I’ll give you a chance to kill me.”

The moment he said that, all of the disciples there were stunned, not dating to believe what they had heard.

What did he say?

He was going to give Trevor the chance to kill him?

Was this guy mad? Was he suicidal?

Trevor frowned. “What did you say? You want me to kill you?”

Jackie’s lips twitched in exasperation.

This guy was really good at only catching what he wanted to hear. Jackie clearly said that he would give Trevor a chance to kill him, but Trevor thought that he wanted to die by Trevor’s hands.

Rudy could not stand it. “Are you deaf or stupid? When did he say he wanted you to kill him? He just said he’d give you a chance. Whether or not you succeed, that’ll be up to your skills.”

There was a glint in Trevor’s eyes. “If you’re just saying this for fun, I’ll look down on you. A man keeps his word!”

Jackie smiled coldly. “Of course I will. I’ve already participated in a death match, mind you. It’s quite boring. Why don’t we both head to the slaughter gambits and take part?”

The moment he said that, even Rudy froze.

Earlier, Rudy had thought that Jackie wanted to start a death match with Trevor. He never expected that Jackie did not have any plans to start a death match at all. Instead, Jackie had his eyes on the slaughter gambits. He wanted to play with something bigger!

The disciples of the Pentagram Clan all frowned.

Slaughter gambits were no joke. The moment one started, nine out of ten would die. Only one person would be able to get out of it alive!

Something as crazy as that was far too dangerous.

Normally, only adrenaline junkies or those who did not mind dying would participate in slaughter gambits. After all, only then would they be able to improve themselves. However, death was often the result In a death match, only two would die at most.

Starting a slaughter gambit meant that there would be nine corpses!

The disciples of the Pentagram Clan started to worry. The disciple behind Trevor said with a conflicted expression, “Trevor, this guy is crazy. Let’s just forget about it!”

“There’s no point arguing with this crazy man. He doesn’t care about his life, but we care about ours.”

“Your life is much more valuable than his. Slaughter gambits aren’t something to play around with. Everyone who participates in slaughter gambits are madmen who don‘t care about dying! You’ll be in constant danger the moment you step inside. No one knows what’ll happen…”

Trevor’s frown deepened, intensely conflicted at that moment. On one hand, he wanted to kill Jackie himself, but on the other, he was worried he might die to someone else if he participated.

Participating in a slaughter gambit was too dangerous for him. He might lose his life if he was not careful.

Trevor took a deep breath, saying, “There‘s too much uncertainty in a slaughter gambit. You might die to someone else before I even get the chance to kill you. There would be no point in me participating. Why don’t we start a death match? We can fight to the death on the stage!”

Jackie merely let out a cold laugh, having expected that Trevor would suggest that.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3111 -

Chapter 3111
He let out a laugh before he said, “I refuse! If you want to kill me with your own hands then participate in the slaughter gambit with me. Otherwise, you won’t get the chance.”

Jackie was very firm when he said that, leaving no room for doubt. After that, he turned around and walked forward. Rudy let out a smile as he followed behind Jackie, walking into the distance.

The disciples of the Pentagram Clan were left in disarray.

Jackie deliberately slowed down his footsteps as he walked.

Rudy whispered after he caught up, “Jackie, are you really going to take part in the slaughter gambit?”

Jackie’s lips twitched in exasperation, “Did you think I was joking?”

Of course, Rudy knew that Jackie was not the type to joke around. Since Jackie had said it, Jackie would do it. Furthermore, Rudy knew that Jackie had said all of that to get Trevor to participate in the slaughter gambit with him.

Once they were on the stage, there was no telling who would be the more powerful one.

In the end, Rudy was still a little worried. He scratched his head, thinking about it for a moment before speaking up.

“I’m not doubting your skills, but I feel like the slaughter gambit is a little dangerous. After you enter, you’ll be facing nine opponents. There‘s just too much risk, so I’m a bit worried…”

“Why don’t you do what he asked and start another death match? In a death match, you’ll only face one opponent. It’s so much easier than a slaughter gambit. I feel like death matches are easier.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, turning around to look at Rudy, “I’m not joining the slaughter gambit to kill Trevor.”

“Then what is your purpose for joining?” Rudy was even more confused.

Jackie sighed as he looked into the distance, “It’s for a bronze medal!”

After saying that, he took out the black iron medal from his storage. When Rudy heard what Jackie said, he was stunned but replied, “A bronze medal? There’s even a bronze medal?!”

Jackie nodded as he continued walking forward slowly.

He explained, “If you want to get the bronze medal, you have to participate in the slaughter gambit. I’ve already thought about it. The medals shouldn’t just be something to brag about. They must be useful later on!”

Jackie clenched the black iron medal in his hand, wondering what gathering the medals would yield.

Since there was a black iron medal and a bronze medal now, there should be a gold medal waiting for them in the end. The black iron medal was in the outer city, while the bronze medal was in the middle city, so the gold medal should be in the inner city. Jackie was already anticipating the challenges he would face in the inner city!

Rudy’s lips twitched as he lamented, “What kind of a hero created the Whirling World? Every stage is so bloody.”

Jackie continued, “Let’s not think about that for now. Let me tell you the rules of the slaughter gambit so you don’t complain later.”

Right after he said that Jackie heard some frantic footsteps behind him. He smiled, not needing to turn around to know who it was.

Trevor’s face was stiff. At that moment, he was feeling exceptionally turbulent . His face was somewhat twisted. He was still a little conflicted to make a decision.

Even though he was a chosen disciple of the Pentagram Clan, which definitely proved his skills, the slaughter gambit was still incredibly dangerous where only one out of ten survived. If he was careless, he could very well lose his life.

“I’ll participate!” Trevor said loudly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3112 -

Chapter 3112
Trevor was incredibly wound up when he shouted that as if he was ready to fight someone at any moment.

Jackie’s lips curled up into a satisfied smile. That was exactly what he wanted.

Trevor started to huff as he glared at Jackie, “I know you just want someone to die with you! Let me tell you, don’t underestimate a chosen disciple from an eighth-grade clan. You’re more than just a little weaker than me!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything about that. He did not want to bother explaining everything at that moment. Rudy furrowed his eyebrows. Every time he heard something like that, Rudy felt like jumping out to defend Jackie.

The whole time, he knew better than anyone how strong Jackie was. However, since Jackie did not say anything, he was worried that he would disrupt Jackie’s plans, so he kept quiet.

At that moment, the other disciples from the Pentagram Clan caught up. They had heard everything Trevor said earlier. They suddenly got incredibly noisy, and all of them were incredibly anxious.

The one closest to Trevor was an inner disciple of the Pentagram Clan, Evan Brown. Evan’s lips constantly shook as an anxious look appeared on his face.

He clenched his fists and shouted, “Trevor, you’re being too stubborn! You know better than I do what a slaughter gambit is! You and this brat won’t be the only ones taking part, there will be eight other people…”

“There’s no way to tell who the other eight will be. Are you going to agree to take part so easily? There might even be other chosen disciples. Once you enter, only one will survive out of the ten. I’ve never doubted your skills, but you have to think about this more. This guy is just crazy. Why do you want to go into this with a crazy person?!”

After saying that, Evan turned abruptly, glaring right at Jackie. At that moment, he looked like a lion that had been provoked.

“I know you want to die! Can you just die yourself? Why do you have to be so despicable and shameless that you insist on dragging someone else with you?!”

Jackie frowned as he scoffed in his mind. Sometimes, he really hated talking to those disciples from high-grade clans. No matter what they said, they always acted like they were above everyone else.

Everything they said was just to stand out from the crowd, acting like they were better.

Jackie coldly looked at Evan, “I’m not forcing him. I just wanted to give him a chance to kill me, and he agreed. If he didn’t want to, I wouldn’t force him either…”

“If I’m not mistaken, the leader of your team is Trevor, not you. Shouldn’t this be the leader’s decision? You really are crossing the line, trying to make the decision for him like that. It looks like you have even more power than him.”

Evan's face reddened in anger, "Stop trying to pick a fight! I have a great relationship with Trevor, it's not something a few words from you can shake! I don't want Trevor to take part in the slaughter gambit purely out of consideration for his life. You're the one insisting on dragging him to die with you!"

At that moment, the disciples of the Pentagram Clan seemed to all be glaring at Jackie viciously, as if they wanted to rip Jackie to shreds.

One of the disciples behind Evan said, "Is that all you've got? Let me tell you, there's no use trying to get us to fight each other! Trevor will definitely not die with you!"

"That's right! You're just a crazy guy. If you want to be crazy, no one will stop you, but don't just think you can drag Trevor along with you! Your victory earlier probably made you confident! Do you think that you're unbeatable right now?"

"Do you think that you can handle nine opponents by yourself? Is killing nine masters something that easy for you?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3113 -

Chapter 3113
Jackie laughed, suddenly feeling like they were incredibly amusing.

He put his hand on his chin, acting like he was thinking for a while before he said, "How did you know what I was thinking? If I didn't think I could beat nine other opponents, why would I participate in the slaughter gambit? Do you think I will die just like you were saying?"

After he said that, the disciples of the Pentagram Clan started to laugh, but the laughter did not reach their eyes. It was clear they only did that to mock Jackie.

Evan narrowed his eyes and said, "I've never seen anyone as full of himself as you. Did you think we were praising you? Do you really think you're unbeatable? That you can beat nine opponents by yourself?"

"How are you going to do that? You're an alchemist. You can't even challenge wandering warriors. How did you think you're good enough to fight against the masters from large clans? You'll just be cannon fodder in the slaughter gambit. You might not even be worthy of being called cannon fodder. You're just an idiot to all those masters!"

After Evan said that, the other disciples piled on, throwing in nasty insult after nasty insult.

At that moment, Trevor suddenly said, “Alright, that’s enough. I’ve already decided to participate in the slaughter gambit. Jackie, I don’t care what you‘re trying to do. I don’t care if you want to die or if you’re just crazy. Just remember this, you’re the one who gave me a chance to kill you…”

“Of course, I wouldn’t let such a good chance go. Even if there’s some danger, that’s not a problem. I’ve walked on the path of the warrior myself, and I’ve never admitted defeat. This time, I won’t lose either!”

After saying that, he walked right toward the transfer array. The Pentagram Clan disciples panicked at that moment as they hurried after Trevor, too focused on trying to talk Trevor out of it to bother with Jackie.

However, Trevor was already determined to kill Jackie no matter how dangerous the slaughter gambit was. Furthermore, he had a certain level of pride as a chosen disciple of the Pentagram Clan.

The slaughter gambit was sure death for any regular warrior, but he was not a regular warrior. Ever since he entered the Pentagram Clan, he had never slacked off. He worked himself to the bone and became a chosen disciple. He never got any help from the outside.

He had managed to get to where he was thanks to his own talent and pride. He never retreated before this, and he would not be afraid this time either.

So what if there was danger?

Danger and opportunity came hand in hand!

He refused to believe that the slaughter gambit would kill him. After affirming his own confidence, the words of advice around him became useless. He would definitely take part in the slaughter gambit and kill Jackie to relieve his anger!

Looking at Trevor leaving in a hurry, Jackie laughed and said, “I just needed to provoke him a little, and he stopped listening to anyone else. It looks like he’s quite confident in himself.”

Rudy raised an eyebrow and looked at Trevor, “He’s not just a little confident, but very much so. I have to say, the other disciples from the Pentagram Clan made sense…”

“Someone rational would be able to listen to them, but Trevor’s already possessed with thoughts of killing you. He would never let the chance to kill you slip. With your provocations, he became completely stuck on the idea!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3114 -

Chapter 3114
Saying that, Rudy could not stop himself from letting out a laugh, “It’s obvious how much he hates you. Even if he’s risking his life, he won’t let the chance to kill you slip away!”

Jackie let out a laugh as he said, “After all, he’s the leader of that team from the Pentagram Clan. Ethan being alive or dead definitely concerns Trevor…”

“Trevor would have to take responsibility regardless, but Ethan’s no regular warrior. He’s an alchemist that had a lot of resources given to him. If Ethan managed to stay alive, he would definitely become an eighth-grade alchemist in the future…”

“Trevor knows very well how valuable an eighth-grade alchemist is to a clan. It’s because of that he realized how much Ethan’s death would end up affecting him. He would probably not be able to be a chosen disciple anymore, and might even be punished even harder than that. He would not even be able to escape.”

Hearing that, Rudy frowned as he widened his mouth slightly, “No wonder that guy hates you so much. Before you killed Ethan, he even tried to sweet talk you. It’s actually a big deal!”

Jackie nodded, narrowing his eyes as he looked at the transfer array, “In the past, I was someone who let bygones be bygones, but it seems like that attitude can’t be used on disciples from high grade clans at all!”

The slaughter gambit was held in the western side of the middle city. The spectator stands were already completely full. Noise filled the air.

The slaughter gambit was split into three large areas, which were the viewing area, the betting area and the battle area. There were a lot of spectators filling up the spectating area.

The viewing area for the slaughter gambits was different from the spectator stands of the colosseums. The entire area was spread out in a fan shape and covered an extremely large area. There was no stage below, but a large transfer array.

On the transfer array was a massive open scroll. The scroll was two hundred feet long and seven feet tall. Every warrior in the viewing area could clearly see inside the scroll.

On the scroll were seven names. Those names were the ones who had already registered for the slaughter gambit!

Those seven had indicated which world they were from in red letters. Looking over, there were four from Chaos Continent and three from White Marsh Continent.

The seven participants were at an isolated area in front of the viewing area. That was the waiting area. There were ten seats in the waiting area, and seven were already filled.

The seven of them were seen resting. There was a tense atmosphere around them. Even those from the same world were not friendly to each other. After all, they were taking part in the slaughter gambit where only one could live. Other than themselves, everyone else was an enemy.

After being sent to the isolated space, it was every man for themselves!

At the spectator stand it was a completely different atmosphere. It was incredibly noisy and everyone seemed excitedly discussing among themselves.

“I think that Chris is stronger. I heard that he’s already even stronger than the direct disciple of the head elder of the Purple Cloud Pavilion. Some say that he’s the top three among the chosen disciples from the Purple Cloud Pavilion!”

“It’s rare to see anyone as strong as him. I don’t see how the victor will be anyone else but him.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3115 -

Chapter 3115
“You do make sense, but I think you’re being a bit rash. Chris’ skills and talents might sit at the peak, but there are those among the seven who can compete with him.”

After saying that, the person pointed at a handsome man clad in a white robe.

“Edward from the Nimbus Alliance. All of you should know him right? He’s the brother of the top chosen disciple from the Nimbus Alliance! I heard that he‘s not that far away from his brother in terms of skills. It’s just that his brother is a few years older and has been training for longer…”

“If he has enough time, Edward will be able to catch up. I heard from others that Edward should be among the top five in the Nimbus Alliance. Even if Chris is in the top three, those are two different clans…”

“They’re from different worlds as well. The Purple Cloud Pavilion is an eighth- grade clan from White Marsh Continent, while the Nimbus Alliance is an eighth-grade clan from Chaos Continent. Chaos Continent is a bit stronger than White Marsh Continent!

Even if the two clans have never competed with each other, I still feel like the Nimbus Alliance is stronger! Being in the top five might just be better than being in the top three!”

“I feel like Edward might be stronger than Chris despite being in the top five of the Nimbus Alliance compared to the top three of the Purple Cloud Pavilion!”

The person who said that was abnormally calm as if it was assuredly the truth.

After the others heard that, they nodded slightly, feeling like the person made sense. However, no one dared to say that it was definitely true. After all, they were from different worlds and clans.

There was no way to make an accurate comparison!

Furthermore, it would not be a battle between the two of them after they were sent to isolated space. It would be a ten-person battle royale.

There was no telling what could happen!

They might even make temporary alliances. Nothing was certain. The only way to be sure was to wait for the results. At that moment, they were constantly discussing things in order to have a better understanding of who to bet on. Everyone had their own choices in mind.

Everyone of them was only allowed to bet on one person!

“I feel like David from the Frenzied Blade Clan is quite strong too. He’s just not as famous as the other two. I feel like he can win. Otherwise, why would he take this risk as a chosen disciple of the Frenzied Blade Clan?”

Anyone who participated in the slaughter of gambits were either adrenaline junkies, those who gambled with their lives, or warriors immensely confident in themselves.

A lot of them were chosen disciples from major clans. They were confident in their skills, feeling like their skills would lead them to victory. They felt that they would be able to triumph over the other nine, becoming the sole survivor and earning a bronze medal!

The final winner would not just get a bronze medal, but also entry into the inner city. They would not need to try and accumulate points to enter like the other warriors.

They would need to fight on the surface and go through the two underground levels. Furthermore, there were other rewards outside of the entry token and bronze medal.

They would be able to pick one out of ten treasures. All those benefits were far too attractive. Most of the participants put their lives on the line precisely for that.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3116 -

Chapter 3116
Many wandering warriors had managed to get this far precisely because they were ruthless enough to charge forward without a care for their lives. They took up a majority of the slaughter gambit participants.

There were already seven participants registered for this slaughter gambit. Other than the three from major clans, the others were all wandering warriors who did not care about their lives!

All the warriors in the viewing area felt that those four had no chance of winning! If they really had the skill, they would have already become disciples of major clans. There would be no need for them to frantically fight for resources for themselves. The clans would have provided everything!

“It’s already six hours, why is it not full yet?”

“You must be new. It’s only been six hours. I waited for a whole day before ten people signed up.”

It was too difficult, and it was also the one that needed the most participants out of the three events. So, the time between slaughtering gambits was quite long.

Sometimes, they would be lucky enough to have it start in two hours. Other times, they would have to wait for the whole day. After all, it was far too dangerous. As long as they were sent to isolated space, only one would return alive.

The disciples of high-grade clans had always valued their lives highly. Normally, they would never participate in something so dangerous.

Anyone who participated would definitely be an immensely confident warrior. Even those desperate wandering warriors had a limit to them. Most of the time, they made up the majority of those that died. Since more and more died, their numbers dwindled even more.

The newer warriors at the viewing area would not know the situation. They would definitely complain after staying there for a while. Those who had already been at the viewing area for a few days were already used to it. They did not even feel like six hours was that long.

“That’s right, were there no participants from Hestia Continent last time?”

“There were none. It wasn’t just last time, but the time before that as well. What are the warriors from the Hestia Continent doing? Are they all staying at the gentleman‘s bets?” The person laughed out loud at that.

The gentleman’s bets were the easiest of the three on the surface, and the one with the most participants.

The slaughter gambits were the most dangerous, and the betting limits were also the highest. That was why it managed to attract so many warriors to watch and bet on.

“Hestia Continent’s warriors all value themselves highly. They would never participate in anything so dangerous. I was around the death matches for a while. It’s already amazing if you see one Hestia Continent warrior in ten matches there! “Most of them are gathered at the first underground level and the gentleman’s bets. After all, the difficulty is lower and the risk of dying isn’t that high!”

The warriors in the viewing area suddenly started talking about how the Hestia Continent was not participating in the slaughter of gambits.

The warriors of Chaos Continent and White Marsh Continent started to mock the warriors of Hestia Continent. They never cursed, but still managed to completely humiliate the Hestia Continent.

There were naturally quite a few warriors from the Hestia Continent among the spectators.

After hearing all of them, they were all furious. However, not a single one of them dared to stand up to fight for Hestia Continent. After all, it was the truth.

There had been so many slaughter gambits, but Hestia Continent’s warriors had only participated in a very meager amount. The last two matches had no warriors from the Hestia Continent at all.

They were forced to swallow all their anger!

A burly man started to laugh out loud after he heard the discussions, deliberately raising his voice, “What’s the point of talking about Hestia Continent? I already knew that they were a bunch of useless people! Hestia Continent ended up in last place in any tournament or competition…”

“As long as there’s a bit of danger, they run to hide like rats, running away faster than anyone else. The slaughter of gambits is too difficult for them to even dare to participate in!”

Chapter 3117
After the man said that, the other warriors started to pile on. They started to describe Hestia Continent's warriors as cowards and pieces of trash!

More and more nasty insults started to get thrown at the warriors of Hestia Continent.

There were a lot of spectators, and a lot of the warriors from Hestia Continent were fuming in anger. They wanted to rush forward and fight those warriors that insulted the Hestia Continent.

However, they knew that they would get struck by lightning if they tried. They would just end up being burnt to a crisp. They could not attack physically and verbally. After all, the facts were against them.

Quite a few warriors from the Hestia Continent started to think about leaving.

At the end of the day, they could not fight, nor could they argue. They were forced to sit down and be humiliated. At that moment, two names suddenly appeared on the scroll, as well as where those names were from.

The burly man looked at the scroll and muttered, "Jackie? Hestia Continent?"

At that moment, all of the warriors in the viewing area saw Jackie's name and where Jackie was from. He was actually from Hestia Continent!

Speak of the devil and he shall come. They had just been talking about it, and someone from Hestia Continent was actually taking part!

The warriors from Hestia Continent in the viewing area all breathed sighs of relief when they saw Jackie's name and continent!

Jackie's participation gave them some cover for the moment. Even if most of the warriors from Hestia Continent did not know who Jackie was, at least someone had participated.

They were happy as long as someone joined! It would spare them the insults from the other two continents about being cowards.

Beneath Jackie's name was Trevor's, who had registered with Jackie. After registering, the two of them walked toward the waiting area.

Since the spectating area was full, Rudy and the others were forced to wait outside for the results. The betting area was not too far away. If they tried, they could still see what was going on. It would just take some effort.

After telling Rudy some things, Jackie walked in. Trevor had been right behind Jackie.

Before they entered the waiting area, they heard the discussions from the viewing area. Even if Jackie did not want to care about what others were saying around him, they were so loud that he heard everything clearly, “Who is Jackie? Is he the one in front or behind?”

“He’s the one in front! I know the one at the back. It’s Trevor from the Pentagram Clan! He’s quite strong, but he’s a bit worse than Chris. Wouldn’t warriors like Trevor usually avoid the slaughter of gambits? What’s going on?”

To the warriors in the viewing area, warriors like Trevor, who was not at the peak, but not weak either, were really scared of dying. They would normally not take part in slaughter gambits. Even if they did, they would still see who else was taking part.

They would see if there were any strong opponents. If there were, they would give up or wait for the next round!

Chris and Edward were already two incredibly strong participants who had registered, did Trevor not see that?

Did he not care? Was he that confident?

Trevor frowned as he followed Jackie. Various thoughts were on his mind. He was starting to regret being so impulsive. He should have tried to find out who was already registered first!

Even if he was participating, he should have waited for one with weaker participants. He had been too impulsive, and registered right away!

He was suddenly a little regretful. After taking a few breaths, he looked up at Jackie. He saw that Jackie seemed to be walking very steadily.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3118 - 3120 -

Chapter 3118
Looking at Jackie's straightened back, Trevor suddenly felt like he was incredibly weak. Even an alchemist who was a wandering warrior was more confident than he was. He was too focused on worrying about everything. He did not look like a chosen disciple from an eighthgrade clan at all.

Thinking about that, he puffed up his chest and started to radiate confidence. It was like he had suddenly turned into the strongest chosen disciple of the Pentagram Clan. However, his confidence did not last long.

When the two of them entered the waiting area, Trevor immediately saw Chris. His confident expression froze. The worry, pain, and fear that he had suppressed suddenly resurfaced!

Chris was actually participating as well. Chris would be going into an isolated space with him and fighting it out in a battle royale?

They were both warriors from White Marsh Continent, so he naturally knew who Chris was. The Purple Cloud Pavilion was even stronger than the Pentagram Clan, and Chris ranked in third place among their chosen disciples.

He was barely in the top ten of chosen disciples from the Pentagram Clan. Comparatively, it was obvious which one of them was weaker. He knew better than anyone.

Trevor's lips trembled as words surfaced in his mind.

Why?

Why did he have to encounter Chris?!

Even if Trevor was confident in himself, it was not blind confidence. Trevor's face paled as fear rose in his heart, almost swallowing him up.

Compared to that, Jackie was emotionless. When they arrived at the waiting area, he chose one of the empty seats and happened to sit beside Chris.

Chris frowned as he appraised Jackie. No one had dared to sit next to him. After all, his skills were plain for everyone to see. The others had subconsciously avoided sitting next to him.

Chris had thought that the seat next to him would have been left for the last person. That person would not be able to choose and would be forced to sit next to him, feeling the immense power he gave out.

He never expected that this unknown warrior from Hestia Continent would sit next to him, ignoring his aura!

Disciples from highgrade clans were all incredibly particular about their dignity. Jackie's actions made Chris incredibly unhappy.

He snorted before saying, "Two more volunteers to die. How could someone like you dare to participate in the slaughter gambit? It looks like you're either sick of living, or you daydream too much!"

Jackie frowned, glancing at Chris. He did not expect that Chris would start causing trouble right as he sat down before he even said anything.

The look Chris had shot him earlier had been full of disdain and contempt, which made Jackie feel incredibly uncomfortable.

Jackie coldly looked at Chris, "Who do you think you are? Why do you care who participates in the slaughter gambit?"

Chris choked at those words. The other participants around them all looked over, opening their eyes from their rest.

Someone actually talked back to Chris?

He was even a warrior from Hestia Continent. Looking at his attire, he was definitely no one special. Jackie's clothes were the cheapest among the nine of them.

Other than Jackie and Trevor, the other participants were looking at Jackie strangely. They felt like Jackie was too ignorant to know fear, which was why Jackie dared to talk back to Chris so harshly.

Chapter 3119
Chris' face reddened in anger as he narrowed his eyes and glared at Jackie viciously.

Ever since he became a chosen disciple, he had never been spoken to like that. The feeling of his power being ignored caused Chris incredible fury.

"Do you know who I am? It looks like you want to die a horrible death."

Jackie raised his eyebrow in exasperation, saying calmly, "I don't care who you are. You can be whoever you want, but I just don't care. You shouldn't be trying to cause me trouble anyway!"

“People like you disgust me. Since you said that, you must be someone important from your continent. No one can ever offend you, which is why you said all of that. However, you’re nothing but air in my eyes!”

Jackie absolutely hated double standards where only one side was allowed to say anything. It had clearly been Chris who was looking for trouble. Jackie had merely spoken back, and Chris felt like he was being challenged.

Jackie had seen a lot. Every time he met someone like that, Jackie would be full of disgust. He would not hold back with his words. There would only be one person remaining after this match anyway.

Sitting in the waiting area, the others were his enemies. Since that was the case, he had no reason to hold back.

Chris’ lips shook as he looked at Jackie with clenched teeth. He looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

“Very well! In so many years, I’ve never met someone as daring as you. It looks like you really want to be tortured to death by me. I’ll make sure to fulfill that wish. Your death will be excruciating. I’ll leave you behind for last and slowly torture you!”

Those words had been squeezed out of Chris through clenched teeth. He looked at Jackie like a mortal enemy!

Jackie’s lips twitched in exasperation as he snorted, “If you have the skills, then feel free. Don’t just run your mouth. Anyone knows how to talk!”

The others around him all widened their eyes as they stared at Jackie.

This guy was too bold. He did not seem to be holding back at all.

Was he really not afraid of getting tortured by Chris?

If he was angering Chris like this, he would be Chris’ first target the moment they entered the isolated space. There were no rules on how your opponents needed to be killed. It meant that, as long as Chris captured Jackie, he would get to decide how he killed Jackie!

David from the Frenzied Blade Clan was seated next to Trevor. He could not help but say, “Are you just ignorant or are you crazy? Do you really not feel afraid at all that he’ll torture you? After entering the isolated world, no one will respond to your cries for help.”

Jackie looked at David and felt like David was talking too much. He felt like David knew nothing, and David’s words proved that.

He snorted and said, “Do you think I’m participating in the slaughter gambit to die?”

David raised an eyebrow and said loudly, “Of course. Do you think you can kill us?”

After saying that, David let out a laugh. His face was filled with disdain. Even though Hestia Continent was placed last among the three worlds, it was still a vast place. There were definitely some masters.

He had tried looking into the skilled warriors from the clans of Hestia Continent, but had never heard of Jackie. That was why he was sure that Jackie was probably not that strong even if Jackie was from a major clan.

Chapter 3120
Furthermore, the clothes Jackie was wearing were about the same as those wandering warriors in the viewing area.

Normally, disciples of highgrade clans would place great importance on their standing. They would be very particular about how they dressed. There was no way they would casually wear the clothes of wandering warriors.

That was why David even suspected that Jackie might be a wandering warrior. If Jackie really was a wandering warrior from Hestia Continent, his earlier words would be even more hilarious.

David could tell that the others present were smart. The others had glints in their eyes. Jackie raised an eyebrow, feeling everyone’s gaze and understanding what they were thinking.

He let out a snort before he started to laugh. When they saw that Jackie was laughing, they were a little stunned. It seemed like there really was something wrong with Jackie’s head.

Could he not tell that everyone was laughing at him?

Why was he laughing with them? Was he laughing at himself?

David said to Jackie, “Who do you think you are? Do you think that we can’t see through you?”

At that moment, Trevor, who had been trapped in his own fear, suddenly said, “There’s no need to guess. This guy isn’t just a wandering warrior without any background, he’s even an alchemist. However, he’s quite a good alchemist. He even got a treasure at the alchemist tournament.”

The moment he said that everyone was stunned for a moment before they erupted into laughter. So this guy was not just devoid of any background, but was an alchemist.

He had actually dared to take part in the slaughter gambit and even challenged Chris like that. The most hilarious thing was how he had asked them if they thought he participated in the slaughter gambit because he wanted to die. It seemed like the answer was clear.

Of course, he was going to die. An alchemist actually abandoned his own specialty of refining pills to participate in an incredibly dangerous slaughter gambit. He even thought he could win!

Just thinking about it made them laugh. The eight other participants had mocking smiles on their faces. Some of them were even laughing in an incredibly exaggerated manner.

Chris said, “It looks like there’s something wrong with your head. No wonder you managed to say all of that. However, I don’t care about all of that. The fact that you offended me means you’ll have to endure my wrath!”

Jackie took a deep breath, composing himself. If Chris had not challenged him the moment he sat down, he would not have bothered anyone there. At that moment, he knew that the others would just treat him as a joke no matter what he said.

Since that was the case, there was no point in him wasting any effort. He merely looked at everyone coldly, “Remember what all of you are saying at this moment. Once we enter the isolated space, I’ll repeat your words.”

The moment he said that, it invited even more laughter.

One blackrobed guy coldly snorted, “Are you threatening us? You’re saying that you’ll appear in front of all of us after we enter the space and repeat what he said. Do you think that’s much of a threat?”

That person felt like there was definitely something wrong with Jackie. Otherwise, there was no way Jackie would say something so absurd and hilarious.

Jackie scoffed, shutting his eyes and resting instead. He ignored everyone else.

He had already said his piece after all. Seeing how Jackie was, the rest of them lost interest. The laughter and mockery stopped. However, Chris still felt furious. Even if Jackie was an idiot, he remembered every single thing Jackie had said back.

Jackie was already shutting his eyes and ignoring everything, if he dwelled on the matter, he would only look petty.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3121-3125

Chapter 3121
He could not do anything in the waiting area but seethe in anger. He felt more and more uncomfortable, feeling like he had to vent all his anger.

He suddenly saw Trevor acting incredibly sullen. Chris frowned as doubt flashed in his eyes.

They were both disciples from highgrade clans from White Marsh Continent. He knew Trevor a little and the extent of his skills. If Edward and himself were not there Trevor might actually have a chance of winning. However, with him there, and Edward as well, Trevor's chances were minuscule.

Did Trevor not look into who was participating before he registered?

He seemed to just barge in hotheadedly.

Did Trevor look down on him?

Thinking about that, Chris suddenly found a target for his frustrations, "Trevor, is something wrong with you? Are you just as crazy as this guy?"

Trevor frowned as a look of unhappiness flashed in his eyes. Even if he was not as strong as Chris, the two of them were still chosen disciples from eighthgrade clans. It felt bad being talked to like that.

Trevor looked up at Chris and replied, "I'm not mad, nor am I sick of living. Or maybe everyone here's actually already sick of living."

Chris' expression darkened. Even Trevor had talked back to him. That intensified Chris' anger even more.

"You're another one who refuses to listen to reason!"

Trevor felt like Chris' words were incredibly funny.

How could someone with good intentions speak so nastily?

Trevor had just answered truthfully, but Chris felt like Trevor had insulted him.

Trevor glanced at Jackie and resolved himself. Everyone here was an enemy anyway, there was no reason for him to be nice to Chris. He would try for victory with all his might. He would not die here. He still had a bright future!

Chris was also his enemy. He would do everything he could to defeat Chris. Even if Chris was skilled, if Trevor put in everything he had, Trevor might actually stand a chance. After motivating himself internally, he found his lost confidence again. He straightened his body subconsciously.

He looked up at Chris, “Since we’re already in the slaughter gambit, everyone here is an enemy. This isn’t a tea party. I don’t have to treat you with respect, so watch yourself!”

Chris was really infuriated at that point. He felt like his dignity was being challenged over and over again. He clenched his teeth and looked at Trevor coldly.

He decided that Trevor would be his next target after he killed Jackie. He would use the same method to torture Trevor to death. He would have Trevor know the consequences of challenging his dignity!

After Trevor said that, the waiting room was in an incredibly tense atmosphere again. All of them looked at their fellow participants with alertness.

The viewing area was bustling. No one bothered to lower their voices there. The ones closer to the waiting area had heard some of the conversations.

Chapter 3122
What was said spread like wildfire everywhere. In just a few minutes, the altercations that had just happened were known by everyone.

Everyone was curious and shocked by Jackie.

Most of them felt like Jackie was either incredibly brave or just completely crazy.

Otherwise, how could he challenge Chris like that?

If Jackie had Edward’s skills, what Jackie said would have been nothing to shout about. However, he was a wandering warrior without any backing and was even an alchemist.

Where did he gain the courage to have an altercation with Chris?

Was he really not worried about being tortured to death?

“This guy’s head must be filled with paste. I was feeling glad that there was finally a warrior from Hestia Continent taking part in the slaughter gambit, but now it looks like they were better off without him. He’s embarrassing the warriors of Hestia Continent!”

The burly man who had mocked Hestia Continent before laughed maniacally as he said, “This guy is hilarious. Does he know what he’s doing? Does he know what’s waiting for him? Are the alchemists of Hestia Continent all either complete cowards or complete idiots?”

This time, the warriors of Hestia Continent were once again trapped in a state of silent rage. Quite a few of them started to curse at Jackie for his actions.

Just like the others had said, it would have been better if he did not participate. Before Jackie joined, those insults being thrown at Hestia Continent would probably have stopped after a while.

Jackie's appearance had not only done nothing to improve the situation, it had worsened it as well. Everyone started to talk about how the warriors from Hestia Continent were trash and complete idiots.

At that moment, a few anxious warriors were standing at the southwestern side of the betting area. Evan clenched his teeth, full of worry. At that moment, he really wanted to rush into the waiting area and pull Trevor out. It was only then did he find out that Chris from the Purple Cloud Pavilion was participating.

The warriors from the other worlds might not know of Chris' skills, but Evan was in front of the White Marsh Continent as well. He knew how strong Chris was.

There were so many experts in the Purple Cloud Pavilion. The fact that he managed to place in the top three among their chosen disciples meant that his skills were unquestionable.

He was not deaf either. He had heard a lot of the discussions from the viewing area. He found out about the one called Edward. Even if he did not know much about Chaos Continent, he had heard of the Nimbus Alliance before.

The fact that those two were a part of this slaughter gambit meant that it was far more dangerous than he had thought. Even if he was confident in Trevor, it did not mean he blindly believed that Trevor would win.

The situation was already incredibly bad. The opponents were strong. Unless Trevor made a breakthrough within this time or something happened when they entered the isolated world, causing both Chris and Edward to die together, Trevor's chances of winning were far too low.

Evan's lips constantly twitched, and his face was full of worry. The disciples behind him were all incredibly miserable as well.

"Evan, what do you think we should do? Trevor really was too impulsive this time. He didn't even bother to look at who the other participants were before he registered with that crazy guy. Isn't it too late now?"

"I don't care if it's late or not, let's rush in and pull Trevor out! The moment the slaughter gambit starts, it really will be too late!"

Chapter 3123

“I’m not trying to curse Trevor. I really am worried! The slaughter gambit itself is already a dangerous thing. There are even strong opponents this time. It doesn’t really look good. If we just stand here and do nothing, it’s very possible that…”

He did not dare to continue what he was saying but everyone there knew what he wanted to say.

Evan sighed as he glared at the waiting area. Various thoughts surfaced in his mind at that moment. He really wanted to rush inside and drag Trevor out no matter what Trevor said. Trevor’s life was more important.

Yet, he immediately shook his head and discarded the thought.

The slaughter gambit was not a game. The moment they registered and entered the waiting area, leaving would violate the laws of the Whirling World. Lightning would strike on them, and Trevor would die anyway!

Evan gulped as a hopeless look flashed on his face.

At that moment, anger ignited in his heart. He suddenly turned around to look at Rudy.

Rudy had a slight frown on his face, and his expression showed some worry. However, he was not nearly as worried as Evan.

It was obvious that Rudy was still quite confident in Jackie’s skills. The more Rudy acted like that, the angrier Evan got.

“The two of you are completely crazy! If Trevor ends up being dragged down by the two of you and dies, I won’t let you off! I’ll definitely rip you to shreds! No! Even that won’t satisfy my hatred! I’ll torture you to the brink of death!”

Even the most venomous words could not relieve Evan of his anger. That was because he was already panicking. He really did not know what to do with the situation.

In truth, he knew very well that all he could do was wait. That was because there was nothing he could possibly do. There was no way for him to pull Trevor out, and no way for him to stop the slaughter gambit.

Rudy frowned as he looked at Evan in disgust. He was worried about Jackie as well, but he knew Jackie incredibly well. He felt like Jackie would be able to overcome the hurdle.

Hearing Evan’s words, his indifference completely vanished, “Those with true power never show it! Don‘t think that you’re the only one capable of saying all those disgusting things!”

After saying that, Rudy paused as a look of mockery flashed in his eyes.

He continued, “Don’t you feel like your anger is at its limits? Let me give you some advice. You should try to keep calm right now. Once you see everything later, you‘ll realize that you won’t be the one being ripped to shreds. If you don’t believe me, just look at what happened to Trevor!”

Evan clenched his teeth and looked at Rudy.

The tension between the two of them was already at the point where they could fight each other to the death. However, they held back, knowing that they could not fight here. They still hated the other party to bits!

Time ticked away, and Jackie started to get impatient. He finally opened his eyes and looked at the viewing area. He measured the time and found that half an hour had passed.

Where was the last person?

Chapter 3124
There were so many warriors in the viewing area, and an unending flow of warriors came over from afar as well.

Jackie trusted in the allure of the slaughter gambit. There would always be those that are not afraid to die, feeling like they would be able to be the final victor.

Not only would they get a bronze medal, but they would also get an amazing treasure and the admiration of the crowd!

Yet, they were struggling to find the last person to register. Jackie sighed helplessly, not knowing how long he would need to wait.

As Jackie said, there was finally some movement on that massive scroll. The last name appeared. It was another warrior from the Chaos Continent!

That person was called Marko. He looked incredibly average. He was dressed somewhat well. At least, his clothes were worth several times more than Jackies.

When the person entered, the nine participants all sighed in relief.

Someone was finally there. They did not need to waste any more time. After Marko entered the waiting area, the ten participants were finally all gathered. The caretaker, who had been hidden the whole time, arrived in front of the array. He wore a skeleton mask, as usual, not allowing anyone to see his actual looks.

He announced in a cold tone, “The fiftythird slaughter gambit shall begin! The odds will be announced immediately. The same rules apply. One person is only allowed to bet on one participant! The bets are limited to half a million to two million spirit crystals!”

After saying that, the caretaker pointed at the massive scroll.

A golden light shot out of the caretaker’s finger, piercing into the scroll. The scroll started to glow golden.

Behind everyone‘s name, the odds appeared. At that moment, even the participants stood up to look at the scroll with widened eyes.

Quite a few of them started to read out the odds, “Chris from White Marsh Continent, one to one point seven, Edward from Chaos Continent, one to two point nine, David from Chaos Continent, one to three point five…”

Jackie looked up at his odds and pursed his lips in shock. This time, his odds were even higher than the last. It was already at one to seven point five. It was obvious how low the caretakers regarded him.

If the odds were low, it would mean that the caretakers thought he had a higher chance of winning. The higher odds meant that the caretakers did not regard him highly.

Jackie let out a laugh before he looked away. To him, the odds did not mean that he was being underestimated. Instead, it was an amazing chance.

The slaughter gambit’s upper limit was so high. He could bet two million in one go. Two million was no longer a number that Jackie could not afford. It was not even a large sum for Rudy!

It was not a lot to bet, but once he won, it would be a small fortune. He would make over ten million in one go.

Ten million was already worth the entire fortune of a chosen disciple from a seventhgrade clan!

Even Jackie was incredibly excited!

At that moment, a thought flashed in Jackie’s mind. Danger equal opportunity!

“How are my odds so high?!” Trevor said unhappily.

Jackie looked at the scroll and was slightly shocked at Trevor’s odds. Trevor‘s odds were definitely high. They were only a bit lower than his at six points eight. It was obvious from that that the caretakers did not regard Trevor highly either.

Trevor's lips twitched, "One to six point eight… What kind of odds are these?! Do they think before setting the odds?"

Trevor felt like he had been underestimated and instilled!

Jackie's odds were seven point five, while his were six point eight. He was only zero point seven away from an alchemist. There was no way Trevor could accept that.

Chapter 3125
However, he did not dare to run over to question the caretakers, so he was resigned to mumbling his discontent to himself in the waiting area.

Hearing Trevor's complaints, Chris let out a cold laugh and said, "Do you think the caretakers assigned you those odds for no reason? Do you think the caretakers are somehow targeting you?"

Trevor let out a scoff, not saying anything. He really did think the caretakers were targeting him. Otherwise, the odds would not be so high, only zero point seven away from Jackie.

He did not even dare to look at Jackie at that moment, worried that Jackie would mock him. He felt incredibly insulted at that moment.

When Chris saw that Trevor was not saying anything, he treated it as a silent acknowledgment.

Chris continued, "Don't flatter yourself too much. Who do you think you are? Do you think the caretakers would bother to target you? These odds are a reflection of the truth they perceive. They think you can't win at all!"

Chris' words were not exaggerated at all.

When Trevor heard that, he got even angrier. He stared at Chris angrily, but Chris glared right back at him.

The two of them started to dislike each other more and more, and were practically about to jump at each other!

At that moment, Chris had shifted his full attention to Trevor, not even bothering with Jackie. Chris did not say anything to Jackie, but there were always those who could not keep their mouths shut.

David let out a laugh as he said to Jackie, " Jackie, it looks like your odds are the highest here. If you manage to win in the end, those who bet on you will get seven times the returns! It's amazing. As long as you bet enough, you'd be able to get over ten million in one go! I'm so jealous…"

He said he was jealous, but he was actually mocking Jackie.

Everyone there knew that the higher one odds were, the less highly the caretakers regarded him.

The reason for Jackie's high odds was that he was not highly regarded. There were a lot of warriors present, but most of the spectators knew very well that no matter how many warriors were around, there would not be that many of them who placed their bets on Jackie.

Anyone who bet on Jackie was probably just wasting their spirit crystals.

Jackie's lips twitched speechlessly. He could really not be bothered with these people, but if he said nothing, they would just get worse.

Jackie was then forced to say, "Can you just shut up? Is being snide with others give you a sense of accomplishment? The final results are not out yet, so why are you mocking others like this?!"

Hearing that, David raised his head, deliberately raising his voice, "You're right, there's no reason to mock anyone, but there's no need for a reason when it's you!"

"The fact that an alchemist without any background is entering this is already funny enough. You're even so confident in yourself. I just feel like you're a complete joke. Participating in the slaughter gambit with you completely drags down our standards!"

Jackie took a deep breath as he said with a cold smile, "Don't cry later…"

After saying that, Jackie shut his eyes again as he quietly waited for the time to pass.

After hearing what Jackie said, David was stunned.

What did Jackie mean by that?

Why did Jackie ask him not to cry? Why would he cry?

Could Jackie really think that Jackie would have him begging for mercy?

Thinking about it for a while, he was sure that Jackie really did think that way!

David's lips trembled slightly, suddenly feeling like choking Jackie to death. He finally understood how Chris felt!

The spectators were in an uproar again.

Jackie and David had not lowered their voices when they talked just now, so the warriors in the viewing area had all heard that.

They were shocked at Jackie’s blind confidence. At the same time, they were filled with anticipation as well. They wondered who would dare to bet on Jackie!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3126 -3130

Chapter 3126
“Honestly, I think there’s something wrong with this guy’s head. He’s so crass with everyone! Does he think he’s the king of the world? Since when have wandering warriors been so arrogant? He’s even a wandering warrior that’s an alchemist. I wouldn’t have believed it if I wasn’t here myself!” remarked a warrior from White Marsh Continent.

His lips twitched as he stared at Jackie as though he was looking at an idiot.

Others chimed in, too.

“I knew something was wrong with this guy. He had been in front of Trevor just now, but he seemed even more confident than him. If I didn’t know any better, I would’ve thought he was an expert that made him so confident in himself!”

“It’s probably confidence derived from ignorance. Alchemists usually put all their focus on alchemy. They don’t know how strong warriors in the outside world are at all…”

“This guy probably has a high level of alchemy, so he’s now thinking he’ s not inferior whatsoever. That’s why he said all of that. He thinks everyone is beneath him!”

Some of them evaluated the situation with what they knew and could be considered unbiased. However, there were more of them who looked at Jackie through a different lens.

The first reason was that Jackie was from Hestia, and this was enough to make them look down on him.

On top of that, the things that Jackie had said showed that he was not willing to back down from any of the nine of them in the waiting area, which sparked fury.

“Can all of you stop evaluating Jackie so highly? You all say that he’s confident because his alchemy is strong, but that’s all nonsense! This guy is clearly just abnormal. What’s the point of judging him through regular logic?”

“If he was normal, how could he not know of the gap between him and regular warriors? The moment he said it all, he picked a fight with Chris. Who does he think he is?”

Everyone had conveniently forgotten that it was Chris who had picked a fight with Jackie, but everyone felt like Jackie retaliating meant that he started it. The double standard was real, and it was deeply rooted.

All of them felt like Jackie was just wrong to oppose him at all, because he was weak!

More people began to come up and mocked Jackie, saying that he was mentally deficient or just absurdly arrogant.

No one had anything good to say about him at all. Some of them had deliberately raised their voices, causing the ten in the waiting area to hear everything.

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly, having nothing to say to the warriors in the viewing area. He would have accomplished nothing, even if he tried to stand up to speak for himself against the crowd.

They would not listen to him anyway, so Jackie decided to ignore them. They could say whatever they wanted. Nonetheless, he remembered everything that was said. After the battle, he would do what he said, and repeat everything that was uttered.

"I wonder who'd even bet on Jackie? I respect anyone who'd dare to!"

"Who'd even bet on him, anyway? Isn't that just madness? Do they just have too many spirit crystals and need somewhere to spend them? The chances of him winning are practically zero."

"Unless the other nine die of mysterious causes, this kid can't possibly win. Even if he fought against the weakest among the nine, he won't have any chance to win at all, let alone against Chris!"

Chapter 3127
All of them did not just look down on warriors from the Hestia Continent, but also on alchemists in general as well. It was so natural to them, and those two labels stuck on Jackie.

Practically everyone felt like Jackie was a weakling that should not even be there.

Any of the warriors in the viewing area would be able to wipe the floor with him, so Jackie participating in the slaughter gambit was a joke.

"Alright, let's not focus on Jackie too much. There's nothing much to discuss. It's almost time, so we should hurry up and figure out who we're betting on. Should we bet on Chris from the White Marsh Continent, or Edward from Chaos Continent?"

"I've already decided long ago that my bet is on Edward. Even though Chris is in the top three of the Purple Cloud Pavilion, the two of them are from different continents. Edward's brother is the top disciple of the Nimbus Alliance, and there's no way he's that much worse…"

"It's worth noting that those rankings were determined half a year ago. To warriors that are constantly improving, those rankings are no longer valid references!"

“Do you like Edward that much? I feel like he’s not that skilled. Leaving the rankings aside, even when Edward participated in interclan fights in the past, his performance has never stood out that much…”

“Chris, on the other hand, has stood out a few times already in interdisciple competitions and has always remained in the top rankings. Everyone can see Chris’ results. For the warriors of White Marsh Continent, even wandering warriors have heard of him before.”

A warrior from Chaos Continent sneered, “Everyone from the White Marsh Continent has heard of Chris from the Purple Cloud Pavilion, but all the warriors from Chaos Continent have heard of Edward as well. You know, we’ve never heard of Chris before…”

“It’s impossible to compare the two continents like this. White Marsh Continent is far behind Chaos Continent in terms of overall power. The eighthgrade clans of Chaos Continent are quite a bit stronger than the eighthgrade clans of White Marsh Continent!”

“We were already displeased when you used the rankings for discussion, but now you’re bringing up interclan competitions. Edward didn‘t manage to stand out in them, but that’ s because there are so many masters from the Chaos Continent.”

“It’s nothing like White Marsh Continent; only a few of you are exceptional. If Edward was placed in White Marsh Continent, he would be even more famous than Chris!”

Warriors from the White Marsh Continent were provoked to have heard such words. Their initial calmness dissipated as the topics slowly got more serious in drawing comparisons between the two worlds.

A warrior from the White Marsh Continent immediately stood up from his seat and retorted, “Oh, please! Can you warriors from the Chaos Continent stop flattering yourselves so much? You talk about the massive difference in skill? Please, tell me how great it can be?!”

“You’re just a little stronger, but we’ll be able to catch up in just a little while. You speak as though the Chaos Continent has already leveled up to a secondgrade world. How could you not be embarrassed saying all this? What a joke!”

“That’s right. You even say that the Chaos Continent is filled with masters as if there are no masters in other worlds. If Edward didn’t perform well, it’s just because he’s not good enough. Even in White Marsh Continent, he won’t be able to stand out!”

The viewing area suddenly exploded into a flurry of debates. At that moment, it was no longer as simple as who to bet on, but protecting the honor of their respective worlds as well.

The White Marsh Continent and the Chaos Continent's warriors never had a good relationship in the first place. Thus, the viewing area erupted with noises, and the more hot tempered warriors were already quarreling with their counterparts.

Chapter 3128
If the laws of the Whirling World did not loom over them so intensely, the viewing area might have broken out into a brawl at that moment.

The warriors of the two worlds were in intense arguments, and only the warriors of Hestia looked on in amusement.

"You keep saying that Edward from Chaos Continent is stronger, so why are Edward's odds higher than Chris'?"

"Odds are just one thing, they're just the evaluations of the caretakers. The odds don't mean anything! Wasn't the fiftysecond slaughter gambit completely unexpected as well? Everyone thought that the winner would be Andrew, yet Craig came out as the winner instead!"

"That's right! The odds are nothing. In the fiftysecond slaughter gambit, Craig's odds were one point five points higher than Andrew's! In the end, Craig still won. Andrew was no match for him at all…"

"More importantly, Craig came from the Chaos Continent, and Andrew came from the White Marsh Continent. During that slaughter gambit, the warriors of White Marsh Continent bragged about Andrew a lot too. All of you seemed to feel like no one could beat him…"

"In the end, Craig from Chaos Continent won. The truth is the best proof. Your constant bickering is useless!"

After that person said that, the voices of the White Marsh Continent's warriors waned. After all, no matter what they said, the truth was still the more concrete proof. Nonetheless, a lot of warriors from White Marsh Continent did not want to give in.

"There's a victor every round. You can't just use the results of one round to prove your point. Have there not been warriors from the White Marsh Continent that won before?"

"There've been over fifty slaughter gambits, and the warriors of White Marsh Continent have won a lot of them! You're just trying to twist the truth!"

The arguments did not stop. In the end, the warriors from both worlds were practically digging out history to prove that their warriors were stronger.

Nothing fruitful was sown in the end, and none could convince the other party. There was only a short time left.

The betting area had opened, so all of the warriors who still had any spirit crystals with them stood up the moment the betting area opened, heading toward the place.

Due to the intense arguments, the warriors from the White Marsh Continent and the Chaos Continent did not care about who they had favored earlier. All of them betted their spirit crystals on warriors from their own continents, other than the warriors from Hestia.

Most of the warriors from the Chaos Continent placed their bets on Edward, while most of the warriors from the White Marsh Continent placed their bets on Chris.

The warriors from Hestia had more choices. Even though Jackie was from Hestia, those that voted for him were few to none. Even if his odds were the highest at seven point five, it remained the same.

As the warriors in the viewing area were heading to the betting area, the waiting area was strangely quiet. The arguments in the viewing area had been clearly heard by the warriors there.

At that moment, Chris and Edward had become the focal points. The two of them naturally did not regard each other highly, but they did not start quarreling right away due to their respective positions.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, curious as to why none of them seemed prepared to stand up.

Were the participants not allowed to place bets?

There was clearly no such rule, so why were they not going to the betting area to place their bets?

After waiting for a while, everyone remained seated. Jackie decided to just stand up as he walked to the betting area without turning around.

Chapter 3129
There was no such rule that prohibited the participants from betting, anyway, and Jackie would naturally not give up such a golden opportunity.

The other nine in the waiting area were stunned when they saw Jackie calmly getting up and walking toward the betting area.

Trevor frowned as he shouted at Jackie, “Are you really planning on placing a bet?”

Jackie could not be bothered to deal with him and merely strode toward the betting area.

Trevor reddened in anger at being ignored by Jackie again.

David frowned. “Just look at him. He must be going to place a bet. With how this guy is, he’s probably betting on himself. He feels like he’ll be able to beat the nine of us himself, kill us, and obtain the final victory before getting a seventime reward.”

Saying that, David could not help but let out a cold laugh as he looked at Jackie’s backwith a mocking gaze. He continued, “We can’t think of this guy in a normal manner. He’s a complete madman…”

The others exchanged looks as they saw looks of incredulity in each other’s eyes.

David lamented that there were all sorts of strange things in the world. He could not believe that he met someone as odd as Jackie in this slaughter gambit.

David genuinely thought that Jackie was crazy. If he was not, there was no way Jackie’s actions would make sense.

Chris’ lips twitched as he said in disdain, “What gave him the courage to think that he’ll be able to beat nine of us? Even among madmen, he’s the most arrogant!”

Chris felt like he should not have been so petty with Jackie, it was beneath him to argue with a madman. It was thanks to Jackie that his anger had risen when he had calmed down quite a bit. After all, to him, Jackie was no longer a normal person.

Even so, Chris did not plan on letting Jackie off. The things Jackie had said were still fresh in his mind, and he would not be able to forgive himself if he let Jackie off so easily.

Jackie walked into the crowd in the betting area with steady footsteps. At that moment, most of the warriors were queueing up, waiting to place their bets on the table.

Jackie then looked at the list on the table. On it was a recording of who had betted on who, and how much had been bet on each warrior alongside the odds.

There was not a single spirit crystal that had been bet on him. That meant that not a single person had chosen to bet on him. He let out a smile, not really caring about that.

Jackie’s arrival attracted quite a lot of attention. The warriors from the Hestia Continent looked at Jackie with a firm expression. Many of them stopped talking as they looked at Jackie like they wanted to lecture him and have him stop. However, they did not want others to know that they were from Hestia, so they swallowed their words.

The warriors of the White Marsh Continent and the Chaos Continent, on the other hand, looked at Jackie like they were looking at an idiot.

Earlier, everyone had heard all the discussions around Jackie. Other than Rudy, all of the warriors there felt like he was crazy. If Jackie was not crazy, he would have never said what he did.

Jackie did not care what the others thought of him, however.

After he arrived there, he looked around for Rudy.

Chapter 3130
Thankfully, Rudy had been waiting at a corner, knowing that Jackie would want to place some bets.

When he noticed Jackie looking around for him, he hurriedly stood on his toes and waved at him.

Rudy gushed, “Other than during the death match, your odds are always so high!”

Jackie’s lips twitched in exasperation and raised three fingers as he said, “I’ve only taken part three times.”

Rudy let out a laugh before he said earnestly, “This time, your odds are at seven point five. The upper limit for the bets is two million. I have a small fortune at the moment, so I’ll bet two million on you later.”

Saying that, Rudy could not help but look up with a cloudy expression. “Two million spirit crystals… I would never have dared to think about betting all of that in one go before this. It’s all so easy for me now, two million isn’t even a number that I won’t bear to part with…”

“I’m genuinely glad I followed you in Phoenix Valley back then!”

Compared to the past, Rudy was a different man. He had experienced so much and was still alive. He had even accumulated so many spirit crystals.

Before this, his life had not been that great. He could not spend so many spirit crystals at all.

His greatest ambition in life had just been to be a seventhgrade alchemist, and being able to save up three million spirit crystals was already a lofty dream of his. Yet, he had four to five million at that moment. If this continued, he would be able to get more than ten million, what more five million.

Rudy became excited at the thought, so much so that his smile threatened to split his face in half. However, after a short period of excitement, a sliver of worry flashed in Rudy’s heart.

He turned around and looked at Jackie seriously.

“You know this… I’m very confident in your abilities. However, I still feel like I should remind you. You need to be very careful once you enter the isolated space…”

“Chris isn’t someone who’s easily dealt with… He’s very strong and hails from the Purple Cloud Pavilion of White Marsh Continent. The Purple Cloud Pavilion is an eighth grade clan. Among the chosen disciples there, he’s ranked in third place…”

“I think that he’s incredibly skilled. I’m not saying you can’t do it, but you have to be careful against an opponent who’s that strong. You can’t make any mistakes!”

Jackie nodded, knowing that Rudy’s words were out of concern for him.

Once the slaughter gambit started, the 10 of them would be sent into an isolated space that was out of the Whirling World where a bloodbath would ensue as they duked it out. Only one of them would be able to survive, so the intensity was easy to see.

Rudy frowned and continued, “I thought about it for a while. After all of you are sent to the isolated space, some of them may team up. It’ll be a chaotic battle…”

“You’re very strong fighting individually, but you might not have an advantage in this scenario. Your opponents aren’t weak, either.”

Rudy’s worries made sense. Jackie smiled as he nodded earnestly.

After being sent to the isolated space, the 10 of them would be sent to 10 different spots, and not confined to one position.

The slaughter would not start immediately. The first thing they had to do was find the other participants. Some of them might just make allies out of one another for only a brief moment, serving their own purposes.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3131 - 3140

Chapter 3131
Once they have teamed up, they would no doubt eliminate other threats before turning against each other. Such a process was akin to raising vicious bugs that would attack the kings first to get even more resources.

Jackie patted Rudy's shoulder. "I'll keep your advice in mind."

With that, Jackie brought Rudy along to place their bets, and they both took out two million without any hesitation, betting it all on Jackie.

This attracted everyone's attention, and it sparked another wave of unsavory conversations from busybodies.

"I'm not surprised at what this guy is doing at all. It'd be more surprising if he bet on anyone else. He placed two million in one go, so it looks like he's very confident!"

"He took out two million so casually. It looks like he has a bit of a fortune."

"Have you forgotten that he's an alchemist? Could alchemists be less wealthy than us? Alas, this guy has gone nuts, and he decided to go to his death instead of properly focusing on his alchemy."

"Who knows what's on his mind? Does he really think he's that good, or does he just want to die?"

Jackie merely shut them out.

While his former self would try to argue with them, the current Jackie knew that no matter what he said, it would just be a waste of time. The truth would prevail, and he did not need to say anything to defend himself.

After placing his bet, Jackie returned to the waiting area and waited for the slaughter gambit to start.

When they saw that Jackie had returned, the nine warriors seemed to be looking at some rare animal. Jackie was, in truth, rather curious as to why they were not participating in the bet.

Was there an unwritten rule about it?

Were they not confident in themselves?

Jackie wisely chose not to say anything. He merely returned to his spot and shut his eyes to rest once again.

David's lips twitched when he saw Jackie closing his eyes. "You never fail to surprise me. I'm curious, how much did you bet on yourself? Surely you didn't bet two million, did you?"

Jackie sighed, not wanting to bother with David at all.

He ignored David and continued to rest, but David seemed adamant this time. He insisted on making things clear.

"Are you not answering because you're feeling guilty?" sneered David. "There's nothing to be guilty about. In the end, you'll die anyway. You only have this little bit of peace left, so what's wrong with answering my question?"

Jackie continued to ignore him, so David narrowed his eyes and said coldly, "I can't attack you if you don't answer, but it doesn't mean I can't do anything to you. I can continue pestering you until you answer me!"

Jackie opened his eyes exasperatedly as David sat down right in front of him with an expression of amusement. He sighed and lamented to himself how David was like an annoying fly.

David was so disgusting that Jackie could not remain calm. He knew that David would do what he said. If Jackie said nothing, he would continue annoying him!

For some peace and quiet, Jackie eventually answered, "I bet two million. Why are you so curious? Are you so sure I'll lose?"

Chapter 3132
David cackled upon hearing Jackie's response, and the thought that Jackie was an idiot solidified in his mind.

"Do I need to confirm that? Of course you'll lose, it's the unavoidable truth. It'll be a horrible death, too. Chris won't let you off. Even if he doesn't kill anyone else, he'll definitely kill you!"

Chris laughed and chimed in with a sinister tone, his expression cold, "He's right. After entering the isolated space, you'll be a sheep in a wolf's den. I'll look for you immediately, and once I do, you're done for…"

"You'll soon realize the severity of offending me. I'll have you experience the cruelest punishment in the world. I'll only let you die after I've tortured you enough."

Jackie's lips twitched, really not wanting to bother with all of them. He had heard so much nonsense, and not a single one of them was saying anything worth listening to.

He took a deep breath before he looked at Chris coldly. "These are all just empty words when nothing's done, so you should stop talking so much. Save some strength to think about your life!"

The moment he said that, the nine other participants were stunned.

What was that guy saying?

Did he even know himself?

He basically told Chris to think for himself!

Jackie was speaking as if he was the top chosen disciple from a ninthgrade clan and the rest of them were just weaklings!

David laughed after he heard that, looking at Jackie speechlessly. Jackie was incredibly calm facing all of them.

At that moment, the warriors who went to place their bets were already returning to the viewing area. There was not much time left until the start of the slaughter gambit.

Jackie raised his voice at that moment. "I'll say the same thing. Remember everything you've said right now. When we enter the isolated space, I'll repeat everything to all of you."

"Madman! You're crazy! I truly regret taking part in the slaughter gambit with you right now! Why was I trying to go against a madman?!" Trevor said loudly.

He was filled with regret at that moment. He had barely managed to motivate himself earlier, but when he saw Jackie's actions, all he had left, apart from desperation, was regret.

Jackie was insane.

Why was he so fixated on someone like that?

Chris rolled his eyes in exasperation, not knowing what to say at that moment. Even David shut his mouth, feeling like it was pointless to argue.

There was only one way to make this guy see the truth, and that was to kill him after entering the isolated space.

They were about to enter the space anyway. It was a natural slaughterhouse. They could do what they wanted without any fear. If he had the chance, he would teach the guy a lesson himself!

The masked caretaker slowly walked to the front of the viewing area again. At that moment, the 10 of them in the waiting area stood up as well.

The caretaker announced, “The slaughter gambit will officially begin! All participants, please step on the transfer array. You’ll be sent to the isolated space. In that space, you can kill each other without regard for the rules…”

“Only one person will return alive! The person who returns won’t just get the bronze medal, but the entry token for the inner city as well. They will also get a valuable treasure!”

At that moment, the 10 participants were already on the transfer array.

The array glowed in a radiant and colorful light. Vibrant spirit crystals were placed on the ports around the array, and each crystal was an incredibly rare and valuable crystal.

All 10 were visibly serious. Even Chris, who was incredibly confident in himself, seemed anxious. After all, only one of them would exit the isolated space alive.

Chapter 3133
It would be an intense bloodbath. No one knew what would happen in the process, hence why none of them could keep their internal composure. Even Jackie was not as calm as he looked.

At that moment, he thought of what Rudy said to him. If it was oneonone combat, he would not be afraid at all. However, he would need to face more than one opponent if he stumbled upon any ‘alliances’ during the gambit.

Knowing that he would face difficulty in facing off against several prodigies at one go, Jackie knew he would have to make proper plans upon entering. He could not let himself get into any situations like that.

Time slowly ticked away. All of the warriors in the viewing area looked at them expectantly. There were various emotions written on their faces, putting some pressure on the 10 participants.

With the sound of the mechanisms activating, the radiant glow on the transfer array brightened and enveloped everyone. When they lost the feeling of solid ground beneath their feet, the transfer officially started.

Space rapidly distorted as the 10 of them were sent somewhere far away. After 15 minutes, Jackie suddenly felt a flash in his eyes. He seemed to be flung away.

When he opened his eyes again, he was shocked to see that he was in the air with nothing beneath him, causing him to panic for a moment. He was freefalling!

Thankfully, Jackie reacted quickly enough. As he was 9 meters away from the ground, he activated his true energy and moved himself, landing firmly on the ground.

He noticed that he was in a desolate wasteland. His feet were on the driedup ground. There was an intense sun above him, and heat waves struck his body.

As a warrior, this did not affect Jackie that much, but it was enough to disconcert him. He sighed as he looked around himself, observing his surroundings. In the desolate wasteland, he saw nothing but himself. He could not even see any patches of grass.

At that moment, Jackie could not help but wonder if he was still in the Whirling World or if he had been sent outside of it.

Those thoughts did not dwell in his mind for too long. After simply getting his bearings, he started to head toward the west, all while making mental preparations.

Should he attack anyone he crossed paths with, or should he try to form temporary alliances, only fighting that person after they dealt with the stronger opponents?

At that moment, the warriors in the viewing area all had their eyes widened as they stared at the massive scroll in the air. The names on the scroll had disappeared, turning into 10 images that were shown to everyone. Everything the participants did would be shown on the scroll.

Rudy still did not have the chance to enter the viewing area, so he was forced to look in from the outside as he stood on his toes.

Thankfully, Jackie's image was in the lower right corner, and he could see it. When he saw that Jackie was in a desolate wasteland, Rudy could not help but frown in worry.

The other participants were either sent deep into a forest or some mountainous areas. At the very least, they had some cover, while Jackie was sent to the most unfortunate position. He was sent to an endless wasteland without any cover in sight.

Jackie was completely exposed in the wasteland, visible even from a long distance. This would make him an easy target.

Rudy was praying to himself at that moment, hoping that no one would find him. 'Let the others fight each other first…'

Once most of them had died off, Jackie could appear to pick up what was left. It would save time and effort!

Chapter 3134

It was a shoal filled with pebbles, but Blade slowly made his way across them all. With every step he took, he looked around to observe his surroundings. Even a slight breeze was enough to make him stop in his tracks.

As an assassin, his perception was far sharper than regular warriors, though this did not once let him lower his guard. After all, only one person would walk out alive from this isolated space. He was confident in his skills but not blindly confident.

If he faced someone as strong as Chris, he would not be able to defeat him in single combat. Thus, Blade planned on obtaining victory through strategy. Before entering the isolated space, he already had the start of a plan.

If everything went on smoothly, he would be able to emerge victorious. He would get the bronze medal and obtain a valuable treasure while Chris, Edward, and everyone else would die under his sword. All of the bragging they did would become a medal on his body.

Blade could not help but let out a smile at the thought. There was a reason he was so careful. Before he could carry out his plans, he needed to make sure he was safe.

He desperately prayed that he would not meet Chris or Edward. If he met either of them, everything would be for naught. He might die on the spot!

After all, facing someone as strong as them, he would not even get the chance to speak normally.

He took a deep breath and continued walking forward. After he got out of that shoal, which lacked places to hide, the first thing he needed to do was find a good hiding spot to conceal himself. He could not let anyone else find him!

Blade wanted to conceal himself first. Once everyone else killed each other, he would reveal himself. However, thinking about that, he would not be the only one with that thought in mind.

If everyone thought the same way and concealed themselves, would the slaughter gambit not go on forever, turning into a game of cat-and-mouse?

At that moment, a cold voice rang out, “I know what you’re thinking. “

Blade shuddered in fright. Even his breathing stopped. He looked toward the source of the noise and saw Chris walking toward him from a large tree.

He seemed composed as if he was walking in his backyard. Compared to how Blade was trembling, Chris was the picture of calmness.

A hopeless look flashed in Blade's eyes. He cursed himself for being so unlucky. He did not even make it that far before meeting the strongest of the 10!

Blade started to panic as his lips trembled. "What are you trying to do?"

The moment he asked that, Balde cursed himself for being stupid.

What else could Chris do in such a time and place?

Since the two of them had met, it would probably be a fight to the death. Unless their skills were at an equal level, only one person would leave this shoal.

Chris did not seem to have any intention of attacking immediately, however. He had a smile on his face, looking like a cat toying with a mouse.

He ignored Blade's question as he continued, "Weren't you thinking of hiding yourself and watching everyone kill each other? You're thinking you' ll stand a greater chance of winning if you jump out at the last moment, right?"

Chapter 3135
The moment that was said, Blade's lips twitched as he looked to the side.

Chris had accurately guessed what was on his mind, that was indeed what he had planned. Chris immediately knew that he was right when he saw how Blade reacted.

He laughed coldly and said, "Do you think everyone else is an idiot? If you have that thought, don't you think the others will think the same, too? Did you think I wouldn't be able to think of it since you did?"

"To stop something like that from happening, I left my aura on every one of you, allowing me to accurately determine everyone's position. Even if you grow wings, you won't be able to escape!"

The moment that was said, Blade was stunned.

Chris had left a tracker on him? Why did he not feel anything at all?

He started to pant roughly, using his perception to check his body. When his senses swept his body, he was shocked to realize that it was not only Chris who had left a mark on him.

There were other marks as well. It meant that his position was exposed to all of those people.

After realizing that, Blade's face paled. He only had one thought in mind at that moment, he thought too highly of himself.

There were a total of four marks on his body. After looking at it, he could tell that they were from Chris, Edward, Daniel, and Luther Moon.

Chris coldly laughed and said, “With your meager skills, you wouldn’t have realized that anyone left a mark on you at all. Other than the warriors with strong souls or those who are smarter, your positions are all obvious to me!”

After Blade heard that, his face turned from white to red.

He was furious at himself for being too cocky. He had thought that things would be easier than they were. He was so sure everything was according to plan!

He never expected that others had thought of his plans as well and had made the necessary countermeasures.

It was a joke that he never expected this, and he had allowed others to plant trackers on him without him realizing it at all!

Chris was right. Warriors with strong souls would have been able to feel it the moment a tracker was placed on their bodies. His soul was not that strong, so he was not able to feel what was done at all. Even if his soul was not strong enough, if he had been smart enough to foresee what others were planning, he would have been able to pay more attention before others placed any marks on him.

In truth, it was not difficult to find any marks like that.

As long as he had used his senses to scan his body, he would have noticed and been able to get rid of them. It would only take a bit of time.

Blade let out a wry smile. He would have slapped himself if he was not facing Chris at that moment.

Chris let out a cold laugh. “Another one who thinks too much of themselves. Do you truly think that others wouldn’t have thought of your simple plan? You thought you could just hide in the dark and watch the others kill each other before you jump out and the right time to kill the rest, winning it all…”

“I can’t help but say that it’s both hilarious and stupid. You’re not just lacking in skill but intelligence as well. You came into this slaughter gambit just to die,” Chris snorted lightly at Blade’s lack of intelligence.

He was merely a little stronger than Jackie. When Chris thought of Jackie , a cold smile crept on his face.

Thankfully, Jackie was not stronger than Blade. He could still feel the mark he had left on Jackie’s body, proving that he had not sensed it.

Chapter 3136
After dealing with this person, he would immediately head to where Jackie was and get rid of Jackie himself.

With that in mind, Chris walked forward and said, “You can either do it yourself, or I’ll help you. I don‘t have much time, so hurry up and make your choice. Don’t waste my time.”

Blade widened his eyes as a complicated look appeared on his face. He was filled with anger, hatred, and reluctance. When Chris said all of that, the disdain on his face was obvious.

In Chris‘ eyes, he was just an ant that could be killed off at any moment. It felt horrible being in that position.

Blade was an assassin, and he was far behind Chris in status. The assassin clan he was a part of was a force that hid in the darkness of White March Continent. They were not a clan that could operate in the light. Hence, when he registered himself, he merely registered himself as a wandering warrior.

Facing Chris, who was from a high-grade clan, he felt like he was lacking in comparison. However, it did not mean that he would allow his honor to be insulted by Chris like that nor would he kill himself so easily.

Blade‘s lips twitched as anger and hatred burned in his eyes.

He clenched his teeth as he shouted at Chris, “I‘ll admit that my skills are no match for yours, but don’t think that you‘ll be able to deal with me so effortlessly if I’m putting my life on the line. Even if I die, I’ll make you pay the price!”

After he said that, Blade bit the tip of his tongue, and his power erupted. He started to burn through his essence as his skin glowed blood red. He looked like air had been injected into him. Even his skin was slowly expanding, looking like it could explode at any moment.

Burning his blood essence was equal to burning his own life. He would improve his skills temporarily. It was something that would only be done when he was determined to put his life on the line. It meant that he wanted to die together with Chris!

Even if he won, he would lose a lot of his life because he had already burned his blood essence. Even if he survived, he would not live long!

Chris frowned slowly, coldly snorting as he said in disdain, “Do you think you‘ll be able to face me just by burning your blood essence? You think too highly of yourself. You’re just an ant in front of me regardless. I can kill you at any moment!”

“However, since you’ve done it, I’ll play around with you for a bit. I’ll let you know how big the difference is between us!”

As he said that, Chris took out a silver blade from his storage ring. The blade had a faint glow to it. Under the sunlight, it reflected a chilling glow.

Chris laughed before he said, “This sword is called the Frozen Star Sword. It’s something my grandfather personally crafted and gave me. In all these years, it’s gone through thick and thin with me, and I‘ve never lost! The Frozen Star Sword has slain countless masters. You should be grateful you‘re going to be killed by it!”

Those words infuriated Blade once again.

Chris actually said that he should be grateful. Blade was so furious his hands trembled. He wanted nothing more than to explode right now and drag Chris down with him!

The situation was completely shown on the massive scroll. The warriors at the viewing area all had their eyes widened as they looked at it with excitement.

It was the fifty-third slaughter gambit. They did not expect the first battle to involve the favorite, Chris!

Chapter 3137
All of the warriors in the viewing area started their discussions in excitement.

“I thought that the first thing Chris would do after entering the isolated space would be to look for Jackie!”

“He probably thinks that Jackie won’t be able to escape him. Killing off any opponents will bring him a step closer to victory anyway! I have to say, these warriors from high grade clans are all so careful. They actually left a mark on everyone so they can find their targets!”

After that person said that, he drew looks from everyone.

Someone laughed and said, “I guess it’s your first time watching slaughter gambits. It’s not the first time anyone’s left marks on their opponents…”

“It’s just that they never outright said it. Anyone who’s not a complete idiot would be able to tell after seeing what they did!”

“Oh, so that‘s what’s been happening! Any participants who are prepared would have already seen the earlier participants having marks left on them. They would definitely have immediately cleansed the marks on their bodies. Then wouldn’t it be a waste of effort?”

“I guess you’re not understanding something here. It‘s not that simple to remove a mark. You’d need to use up a certain amount of time. While you’re cleansing the mark, the person who left the mark behind will feel it Before the mark is cleansed, they’ll hurry over and kill that person!”

After those explanations, the spectators that had seen more than one slaughter gambit could not stop themselves from clicking their tongues.

They wondered what would happen if they were the ones in the slaughter gambit.

They thought about it for a long time, thinking of various possible scenarios. There was only one conclusion they landed at. They would all die, without a single doubt!

Facing disciples from high-grade clans, they would not be able to fight back. Even if they had some plots in their minds, they would immediately be eliminated due to the marks left on their bodies!

At that moment, someone said loudly, “I finally understand now. Those stronger warriors will get rid of the weaker ones first. They’ll leave the ones that are almost at their level behind to fight to the death at the last moment. It’ll spare them a lot of trouble! They’re all intelligent people!”

“Of course they are. If they only had the skills and not the brains, they would not have climbed to such high positions!”

Even though Rudy was outside of the area, he could still hear their discussions. Hearing what was said, his worry intensified.

He wondered if Jackie noticed it!

Initially, he had hoped that Jackie would hide back at the start and only reveal himself after they had killed one another off. Now that he thought about it, that plan was a joke.

Jackie definitely had marks left on him, not just one at that. That was because Jackie was the weakest in everyone’s eyes!

He was a fish that they could cut up at any moment.

Thinking about that, Rudy’s lips twitched, “You have to hold on!”

In truth, Rudy did not know how Jackie should hold on at all. He did not know if Jackie should try to remain hidden or hope that those who came to kill him did not form any teams.

Various thoughts surfaced in Rudy’s head. Even if he thought about it for a long time, there was nothing he could do other than wait!

Chapter 3138
At that moment, an anxious voice could be heard, “Trevor’s skills should be above average among the ten of them. As long as he uses some strategies, he should be able to win!”

Rudy turned to look and saw that Evan was looking at the scroll with hopeful eyes. His eyes were fixed on Trevor’s image.

At that moment, Trevor was in a forest. He was surrounded by a cover to conceal himself, so there were naturally no problems. Yet, Chris had said before that he had left marks on a lot of them.

No matter how much coverage he had, even if he hid deep in the mountains, he could still be easily found.

When Evan saw that Trevor had been sent to a forest, he was quite thankful. Yet, after hearing Chris’ words, those thoughts disappeared. However, he could not stop himself from cheering for Trevor.

As he cheered, he prayed in his heart that Trevor would be able to win the slaughter gambit

He did not care what they would get after the victory, nor did he care how others would look at Trevor with admiration and envy. He merely hoped that Trevor would be able to walk out of this alive!

Rudy lightly snorted in disdain, “Did you not hear them say that the stronger warriors will clear off the weaker warriors first? Your ideas won’t be able to last that much longer. Trevor will die very soon!”

“What did you say?! You’d better shut up!” Rudy’s words managed to anger Evan.

He looked like a cat that just had its tail stepped on. He turned around and glared at Rudy viciously.

He looked like he wanted to rip Rudy apart while he shouted, “You brat. Don’t think that I won’t be able to do anything to you!”

Rudy shrugged nonchalantly.

Of course, they could not do anything to him at that moment. If they did, they would break the laws of the middle city and get struck by lightning.

Evan was filled with anger at that moment. He was quickly losing his rationality at that moment. He was closer to Trevor than family. The two of them supported each other throughout their journey.

He treated Trevor as his own brother. With the situation at that moment, anyone who mentioned that Trevor would die would invite his wrath.

Evan took a deep breath before he walked over to Rudy, “After Jackie dies, you won‘t die immediately. Your life will belong to the Pentagram Clan. We’ll make sure you stay alive and have you begging for mercy every day until you pay back for your crimes!”

Rudy raised an eyebrow, already numb to these threats. No matter what Evan said, it would not affect Rudy’s mental state at all.

Evan let out a cold smile, “Do you think that you can just stay in the middle city, and I won’t be able to do anything to you? You’re being too naive…”

“You can only stay here for two months. After two months, you’ll be kicked out even if you refuse to leave. That’ll be the end of you!”

Rudy raised an eyebrow. He did not think that he would stay in the middle city for that long. Yet, Evan seemed to think that he would try to hide here where the laws would protect him just to stay alive.

Chapter 3139
However, Rudy had Jackie’s protection, so he did not care about their threats at all.

He felt like even an additional five days in the middle city might be too long. After all, they still needed to head to other cities. However, Rudy was a bit curious about what Evan said.

To Rudy, the various laws of the Whirling World were like an ancient manual that had never been read before. In truth, the Whirling World was full of mysteries to most of the warriors of Hestia Continent. Before this, they knew nothing. If it were not for the sudden opening of the Whirling World, they would not have known about the Whirling World at all.

The Whirling World was not a secret to the warriors from the other two continents. They knew a lot more about the Whirling World than the warriors of Hestia Continent.

Before participating in the death match, Jackie had talked to him about it before. If they wanted to know more about the Whirling World, they would have to learn about it from the warriors from the other continents. It would be easier than learning from the warriors from Hestia Continent. Even if the warriors from Hestia Continent knew the secrets of the Whirling World, they would not reveal it to Jackie and Rudy easily.

Rudy felt like it was a good chance to look into the secrets of the Whirling World.

Rudy let out a smile and said, “Are you so certain that I can only stay in the middle city for two months? There’s no such rule that says warriors will be chased out after staying here for two months!”

When Evan heard that, he had a mocking look on his face, “You really are an ignorant fool. The middle city is a sixth-level city. It will only be open for one year…”

“After the year is over, the middle city will be shut. No one can stay here. Even while it’s still open, it will clear out anyone without enough points every two months. With your meager skills, there’s no way you can gain any points. You’ll definitely be kicked out!”

After saying that, Evan stared into Rudy’s eyes, trying to find a hint of terror. To his disappointment, Rudy only showed confusion and shock. He was not scared at all.

Evan could not help but frown, feeling like Rudy was just like Jackie. There was something wrong with their heads. They were different from ordinary people!

At that moment, Rudy was in no mood to care about what Evan was thinking.

Earlier, Evan’s words had some information to them. He wanted to figure out what he could from all of that.

He would then be able to report it to Jackie after he got out.

After following and being under Jackie’s protection for so long, he had done nothing for Jackie. He was reluctant to let that continue. He did not want to be useless. Even if it’s just providing Jackie with some information, it was still better than nothing.

At that moment, there was an exclamation from the crowd.

Rudy’s attention was caught. He hurriedly looked up at the massive scroll in the air. He noticed that Jackie’s image was no longer just Jackie alone.

A young man in gray robes was standing in front of him. The two of them had a tense atmosphere between them!

Rudy could remember his name and where he was from. That person was Luther from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion of Chaos Continent. He was the last participant who joined the fifty-third slaughter gambit.

Chapter 3140
The crowd was abnormally hyped, “Oh my gosh! I thought that the first person to find Jackie would be Chris, who hates Jackie to the core. I can’t believe it’s Luther. Luther was clearly far away from Jackie, so how did he find Jackie so quickly? Did he leave a mark on Jackie?”

“Do you really need to question that? Of course, he did. I can‘t believe his target is Jackie! The two of them did not have any feud when they were in the waiting area.”

“Even if nothing happened between them, Jackie’s still an opponent. Don’t forget, nine people will die in this slaughter gambit. One dead person means one less opponent. They left their marks in order to clear out all the weaker warriors before they fought the ones at their level!”

In the isolated space, Luther looked at Jackie with a smile. He did not look like he was looking at an enemy, but an old friend.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. He was a little surprised that Luther was there.

Luther laughed and said, “Are you wondering how I found you so quickly? It’s nothing strange. I just left a mark on your body. You were the closest to where I was, so I came to deal with you first!”

Jackie smiled, not saying anything.

Luther expected that Jackie would react that way.

“You’re just like I thought, a pure madman. I won’t bother trying to argue with you, but let me tell you something. To stop the others from coming, you should clear the other marks on you for now.”

Jackie had already noticed those marks since his soul was incredibly strong. Yet, he did not bother clearing them immediately.

He wanted the others to find him quickly. He did not want to just stay idle. Those marks gave the others a chance to find him, which was a chance for him to find them as well.

However, since someone was already there, he would naturally need to clear those marks in case a whole group appeared. It would be harder for him to go against multiple opponents.

Jackie nodded at Luther. His hands constantly moved as he formed seal after seal, clearing the marks in front of him.

Luther raised an eyebrow, surprised that Jackie listened to him.

With how Jackie was, Luther would not have been surprised if Jackie had done anything other than listening. After all, Jackie was a complete madman.

Yet, Jackie had actually listened to him so obediently, clearing the marks in front of him. Luther frowned as various thoughts surfaced in his mind.

However, he quickly discarded those thoughts. It was pointless to try to understand a madman like that. He should just take everything in his stride!

While Jackie was clearing the marks left by the others, Chris was already fighting.

As an assassin, Blade’s speed and movement were top-notch.

At that moment, he had ignited his blood essence, using up his life force. His skills had improved by several times. His teeth were clenched as he glared right at Chris. He had discarded his life. He only had one thought in mind. Even if he died, he would drag Chris down with him. Even if he couldn’t he would heavily injure Chris and make Chris pay the price!

He pulled out his weapon. With a chakram in hand, he shot forward at an amazing speed. He turned into an afterimage as he rushed at Chris.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3141-3150

Chapter 3141
Chris' lips curled up into a smile of disdain.

The sword in his hand glowed in shimmering light. His left hand was forming seals that fused in the air. The seals turned into rays of silver light that fell on the Frozen Star Sword.

The spectators in the viewing area immediately recognized the power that was falling into the Frozen Star Sword. It was the power of starlight!

Someone asked loudly, "Does anyone know what level Chris' technique is?"

A lot of them shook their heads, including those from the same clan as Chris. It was obvious they did not know the name or rank of Chris' technique!

"Even the warriors from the Purple Cloud Pavilion don't know what technique Chris is using. They don't know what rank it is either… Is he that secretive?"

After someone asked, a warrior from the Purple Cloud Pavilion said loudly, "This has always been something that should be a personal secret. What's the point of having it known to everyone? Isn't it normal for us to not know?"

"No matter what, Chris' technique must be at a very high level. It might even be an ultimate god rank technique!"

The moment he said that it caused a ruckus. Quite a few warriors loudly rebuked, "An ultimate god rank technique? How could you even say that? Do you know what an ultimate god rank technique is?"

"Even warriors of the divine solidifying realm need a certain amount of talent to train in ultimate god rank techniques! No matter how strong Chris is, is he stronger than warriors of the divine solidifying realm? At most, it's an upper earth rank technique."

The warriors from the Purple Cloud Pavilion did not agree.

They felt like even if ultimate god rank techniques are atrociously hard to learn and that divine solidifying realm warriors still needed a certain amount of talent to learn, it did not stop miracles from happening.

In the eyes of the disciples from the Purple Cloud Pavilion, Chris could create miracles. More precisely, he was a miracle himself!

At that moment, Chris was already in a battle with Blade.

Blade’s speed was incredibly quick. In just a flash, he sent out three slashes at Chris.

Chris sent out his blade. Everyone heard a crack as those three slashes were shattered in an instant. They were not able to get close to Chris at all.

As those two techniques clashed, Chris took a few steps back. It was not because of the shockwaves, but because he wanted to distance himself from Blade.

Earlier, Chris had seen all the rage and reluctance on Blade’s face. The more Blade acted like that, the more Chris wanted to toy with him. He would slowly torture Blade.

After the three slashes were easily blocked by Chris, Blade’s face darkened!

Those slashes were not his full strength, but they were still at least sixty percent of his power. He had used those attacks to test Chris out, but he never expected Chris to break them so easily.

Blade sighed as he tried to encourage himself. It was possible that Chris merely looked relaxed on the surface. He might have actually used most of his power.

Chris had always been obsessed with how he looked. No matter how much power he was using, he would definitely act like he was incredibly relaxed. That was the only way Chris could damage Blade’s confidence even more!

Chapter 3142
Quite a few people would agree with that.

Burning his blood essence meant that he was using his life in exchange for power. He would be able to be several times stronger than usual.

Chris was the third-ranked Purple Cloud Pavilion chosen disciple. He should be the strongest among the ten of them. Even so, there was no way he was not being pushed back by Blade after Blade ignited his blood essence.

A lot of them agreed with that view, but there were some who did not, especially the disciples of the Purple Cloud Pavilion. When they heard all of that, they were incredibly amused.

One of the inner disciples of Purple Cloud Pavilion said, “Blade isn’t a wandering warrior. He’s an assassin. Assassins like him are like street rats in White Marsh Continent. He registered himself as a wandering warrior just because he was worried that his true identity would be looked down on!”

“However, it’s not like we’re looking down on them for no reason. Assassins don’t care about honor. They attack quickly and run away even quicker. They try to deal with their

opponents before their opponents can notice them. Their actual skills are not that strong."

"Face-to-face combat is their weakness! Fakes like Blade wouldn't even have the right to stand next to Chris if he wasn't a part of the slaughter gambit. Even after igniting all the blood essence in his body, he would still not be able to harm Chris at all. Don't worry, Blade will die in the end no matter what!"

"That's right! Who do you all think Blade is? He's just a little stronger than Jackie. As an assassin that lives in the sewers, who never dares to use his true identity, facing Chris head-on is suicide!"

Those who felt like Chris would be able to win without any harm to himself were incredibly one-sided in their thinking as they did not allow anyone else to question them. Even if others sounded reasonable, in those people's eyes, it was all ignorant.

They would not listen at all. Many of the warriors did not want to argue with those people, so they lowered their voices to talk to their friends.

"I feel like Chris will definitely get injured. No matter how strong he is, there's no way he's invincible. Blade might be an assassin, but he no longer has any regard for his own life. In such a situation, he'll do anything as long as he can drag Chris down with him!"

"Blade's already thrown his life away. If he can't even injure Chris after that, he'll definitely fall into despair. To avoid that, he'll do anything he can!"

"You're right. Chris will definitely get injured. I think that's a certainty. Only, his supporters just refuse to listen to anyone!"

The viewing area's discussions were incredibly heated.

In the isolated space, Chris and Blade were already at the final stage of their battle. The reason for that was Blade.

At that moment, Blade already realized that, if he did not immediately use all his strength to injure Chris, he might not have the chance anymore in his whole life!

Blade could not accept that he was still not able to injure Chris even after paying for all this power with his life. With that in mind, Blade started to go crazy. He let out an angry roar as he shot forward like an arrow, rushing at Chris once again. There was a crazed look in his eyes and he was determined to injure Chris at all costs!

He shouted out, "Die!"

The chakram in his hand sent out five slashes in a row. All of them emitted a chilling glint. The five slashes contained incredible killing intent. In a flash, they appeared in front of Chris.

Chris let out a light laugh as he formed seals once again, causing starlight to surround his body.

Chapter 3143
The Frozen Star Sword in his hand glowed. Chris did not even blink as he looked at the five slashes that were being sent to him. He snorted and let out a slash.

Five of Blade's slashes clashed with the Frozen Star Sword. In the blink of an eye, the slashes shattered and disappeared!

Chris raised an eyebrow as he snorted in disdain, "Whatever, I've already played around with you enough. I might end up losing the initiative if I waste any more time. I won't give anyone else the chance!"

He had felt that the mark he left on Jackie was slowly weakening. It meant that Jackie was clearing the mark, which made Chris incredibly unhappy.

Compared to killing Blade, Chris was more interested in slowly torturing Jackie. With that in mind, he no longer held back.

Chris sneered as the sword in his hand glowed again. Suddenly, spots of starlight began to appear in the air, slowly condensing into a stream that flowed into the Frozen Star Sword.

Chris narrowed his eyes and shot forward at Blade!

At that moment, Blade's heart was just filled with despair and shock. He had sent out five slashes earlier!

It was the strongest attack that he could use!

Yet, it was still easily broken apart by Chris. That caused Blade to fall into complete hopelessness. He had clearly burned his blood essence and paid with his life, so why could he still not beat Chris?

He could not even injure Chris.

Was he really just trash?

Various thoughts surfaced in Blade's head. Even when Chris rushed over, Blade was still filled with shock.

Chris was emitting an immense amount of killing intent that completely surrounded Blade. Only then did Blade react. Chris was already almost there. Blade's lips curled as he bit his lip, forcing himself to wake up!

Looking at Chris rushing over, Blade did not dare to have a moment of hesitation. He tried to move away from Chris' attack, but he was shocked to realize that he could not move his feet!

His feet felt like they had been trapped in quicksand. He frantically tried to pull away, but could not do it at all!

Blade looked down and noticed that both his legs had somehow been surrounded by starlight. It was the pure power of the stars. They felt like they weighed tonnes as they locked his legs in place!

Blade broke out in cold sweat as hopelessness surrounded his heart!

Slash!

Blade felt a chill in his heart as the blood in his body frantically flowed outward. He looked down, and the Frozen Star Sword had pierced deeply into his chest. His blood was frantically flowing outward.

At that moment, there was still a little bit of starlight on the sword, looking majestic and mysterious!

Blade's lips twitched. At that moment, various images appeared in his head.

From him getting abandoned when he was young to being adopted by an inhuman assassin. He had been placed among a group of children, having them kill each other. Only he had left the place alive!

He had gained a lot in his life and lost a lot of things as well. However, at that moment, none of that was important anymore. In the end, death was coming down on him. Only, he did not want to accept that he was dying like that!

Chapter 3144
Why was he still unable to hurt the arrogant Chris after using everything at his disposal?

Even if it was just a flesh wound, Blade would be happy. Yet, Chris remained unharmed in the end. He had not been able to touch Chris at all!

Blade fell heavily on the floor as he slowly closed his eyes.

Chris raised an eyebrow. The results had been obvious to him. Just like what he said earlier, even if Blade burned his blood essence, it was still nothing to him.

Blade had just turned slightly stronger, but Chris could still kill Blade easily. Chris had seen the look of reluctance on Blade's face before he died, which deeply amused him. Blade had thought too much of himself.

Chris was a chosen disciple of the Purple Cloud Pavilion!

How could an assassin who grew up in the dark harm him?

Chris let out a cold laugh, "Trash will be trash. Why didn't you just accept your fate?"

After saying that, Chris kept the Frozen Star sword and looked to the west.

There was where he had felt Jackie's mark last. He sighed as anger flashed in his eyes!

He would not allow Jackie to die in anyone else's hands, nor would he allow Jackie to stay alive until the end!

The isolated space did not have any time limits. That meant that he had more than enough time to torture Jackie. He would have that brat who did not know his place understand the consequences of offending him!

The warriors at the viewing area were shocked to see the final results!

From the images that were sent over, they could clearly see the reluctance on Blade's face. Even if they were in a different space, they could still tell what Blade was feeling. After doing everything he could, even burning his own blood essence to make Chris pay, the result was still so tragic!

He could not even hurt Chris!

No matter how strong the skills he used were, Chris had easily dealt with them. He had not even been able to get close to Chris, let alone hurt Chris!

"Chris is actually that strong! I thought that Blade would definitely be able to at least cause Chris some harm after burning his blood essence, but it looks like I was wrong! Chris really is a chosen disciple of the Purple Cloud Pavilion! With his skills, even if I had twice the blood essence to burn, I would still be no match for him!"

"That's right. It's not just you. Ninety-nine percent of the people here would not be able to beat Chris at all. Now it looks like Chris will be winning the slaughter gambit."

"Even Edward from the Nimbus Alliance should be quite a bit behind Chris! Chris is in first place for sure! If Edward knew how strong Chris is, Edward would definitely regret taking part in this slaughter gambit!"

“Isn’t that right? He’d definitely regret it! Edward is actually quite strong as well, but Chris is just far too impressive. I feel like he shouldn’t just be in third place among the chosen disciples of the Purple Cloud Pavilion anymore. After all, those rankings are already half a year old. He should already be able to face the second-placed disciple!”

After witnessing Chris’ skills for themselves, most of the warriors present were sure that Chris was definitely the strongest among the ten participants. Even Edward should be lagging behind Chris.

After knowing how strong Chris was, quite a few of the warriors who had bet on Edward started to regret their choices!

However, it was all already too late.

Chapter 3145
“Alright, this battle is already done and dusted. Jackie still hasn’t fought against Luther. Let’s look at their battle first. I wonder what the two of them are doing. They’re just standing there talking, not attacking at all. Luther’s in no hurry, and Jackie’s not afraid either. The two of them are so strange!”

After that person’s reminder, the crowd looked at Jackie again.

At that moment, Jackie and Luther were merely looking at each other in the isolated space. Neither of them seemed to be in any sort of hurry.

Jackie had already cleared all of the marks on his body. Luther looked at him with a raised eyebrow, looking like he had something to say. Jackie let out a slight laugh, knowing what Luther wanted to say. However, he did not want to waste any time.

Jackie looked right at Luther, “Alright, all the marks are cleared. Are you still not going to attack?”

Luther’s lips twitched. At that moment, he was even more certain that Jackie was crazy.

Did Jackie really want to die so badly?

Jackie was actually urging him to attack?

Luther had planned on finishing it quickly anyway. After all, he still had other things to do after killing Jackie. However, after seeing Jackie’s actions, Luther could not help but ask, “Do you really want to die so badly? Don’t you know what will happen the moment I attack?”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly.

He hated wasting time on meaningless conversations. However, Jackie had some questions for Luther as well, so he decided to just answer Luther.

“Can you stop imposing your own thoughts on others? In my eyes, you’re the one who’s in a hurry to die!” Jackie said what he thought.

Luther was furious after he heard that. Luther narrowed his eyes, “You really are a strange one. You don’t seem to care who you’re facing, you just want to challenge them regardless. Don’t you know what will happen if you act this way?”

“I was planning on killing you quickly so I can get other things done. I’ve changed my mind now. I can push the other things aside for now. Torturing you properly is my priority! I have to make you realize what all this nonsense you’re spouting will bring you!”

Jackie did not care about Luther’s threats. He heard threats like that a few times a day. Every time, it was more or less the same thing that was being said. However, the results were always the opposite of what they said.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he asked, “Why did you participate in the slaughter gambit? You’re from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion from the Chaos Continent. From what I know it’s a seventh-grade clan. Even though you’re a chosen disciple, you’re definitely at a disadvantage facing Chris and Edward…”

“Even if you played some tricks, they would be nothing in front of their absolute skill! You’re no match for either of them, so there’ll only be one thing waiting for you in the end, which is death! I refuse to believe you can’t see that, so why are you participating in the slaughter gambit?”

In the waiting area, Jackie had been waiting for the final participant the whole time.

When he saw Luther as well as Luther’s clan, Jackie immediately put the Dual Sovereign Pavilion at the same level as an eighth-grade clan, since he did not know about the Chaos Continent. However, Jackie found out from the warriors in the viewing area what rank the Dual Sovereign Pavilion was.

That suddenly sparked his curiosity.

Chapter 3146
The Dual Sovereign Pavilion was just a seventh-grade clan in Chaos Continent. Furthermore, Luther was not even among the top disciples of the clan.

Compared to Chris and Edward, he was lacking behind.

With those two there, it was a pipe dream for Luther to win the slaughter gambit. The slaughter gambit was unlike any of the other contests. If he wanted to win, the nine other participants needed to die. Only one person would be able to survive.

If you lost, you died. But under such a massive gulf in skill, Luther still participated. That confused Jackie.

There were two types of warriors who took part in the slaughter of gambits. The first were the daredevils who did not care about putting their lives on the line, the second was the warriors with absolute confidence in their skills. Furthermore, they needed to see who the other participants were before they joined.

If there were strong participants, many warriors would choose to delay their participation. After all, they would die if they lost!

Normally, disciples from seventh-grade clans, whether they were inner disciples or chosen disciples, would not participate in the slaughter of gambits.

Disciples of seventh-grade clans were definitely not in positions that were as high as disciples of eighth-grade clans, but they were still notable existences in their respective continents. As long as they put in the effort, their future would still be bright.

Hence, warriors like that usually treasure their lives a lot. They would not participate in such a dangerous contest. Most importantly, Luther had been the last participant.

He had clearly seen the nine other participants and had heard the discussion from the viewing area as well. He knew of the other participants, yet he still registered. If he was not suicidal, then it meant that he had his own plans and trump cards.

Jackie felt like he was facing a logical person, so he was curious as to what was going through his mind.

After Luther heard Jackie's question, he had a pleased smile on his face, "I knew someone would ask that. Since you're about to die to my blade, I'll be merciful and tell you. I just participated in the slaughter gambit to improve my skills and win. I have that confidence!"

As he said that, Luther seemed full of confidence as if he was just a short step away from winning. He seemed confident that no one would be able to stop him.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, getting even more curious. He never expected that Luther would be that confident in himself.

Did Luther not know how strong Chris was?

It was not just Jackie who was curious. Even the spectators in the viewing area found it strange after hearing Luther's words.

If Luther had said that he could definitely kill Jackie, that would make sense. However, Luther had said that he could win the slaughter gambit. His tone sounded like he could kill the rest of them at any moment.

It dumbfounded the spectators, "Isn't Luther too arrogant? Could he just be saying all of that because he wants to brag to Jackie?"

"Probably not. Just think about where they are right now. Luther was the last participant to sign up. He knew very well who the other participants were."

"Yet, even with Chris from the Purple Cloud Pavilion and Edward from the Nimbus Alliance there, he still registered without any hesitation! It means that he's immensely confident in himself! Luther isn't that bad of a warrior either. He's a chosen disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion, a seventh-grade clan in White Marsh Continent."

"Could he have some hidden trump card?"

"I don't think he does. Even if he does, it would just disintegrate in front of Chris!"

Chapter 3147
"Don't give him too much credit, he would only be more arrogant. If he was that strong, he would at least be in the top three of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion."

"Yet, based on what I know, he's barely among the top fifteen chosen disciples in his clan. Even if the rankings were from half a year ago, I doubt there would have been such a drastic change. Even if his skills improved rapidly, he'd still be among the top ten chosen disciples at most. Even at the top ten, it would still be a massive gulf from Chris."

"Don't forget, the Purple Cloud Pavilion is at a higher level. On top of that, Chris is in third place there! That difference isn't something that can be overcome in half a year!"

A lot of them agreed with that view.

They felt like Luther was just overconfident to the point of being delusional thinking that he would be able to win the slaughter gambit. The way Luther spoke, it was as if he had already beaten Chris!

When they heard all of that, they felt like Luther was a joke!

Someone said loudly, "Didn't this guy see his odds before he entered the isolated realm? Chris had one point seven odds, while Luther's is seven point three. He's only just a bit better than Jackie! How could he say he'll be able to win in the end?!"

“Are there any disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion here? Can you tell me what’s wrong with Luther? Is there something wrong with his head or does he have delusions of grandeur?”

The viewing area was incredibly noisy thanks to these discussions, but silence was all there was at the isolated space. Jackie had remained quiet after hearing Luther’s words.

Luther felt like Jackie was being incredibly amusing at that moment and said, “Stop trying to speculate. Just ask whatever you want to. I’m feeling generous right now. I’ll answer whatever you want!”

Jackie laughed, feeling like the situation was quite strange. However, since Luther had said so, he would not object.

He said straightforwardly, “Why are you so confident? Do you think Chris is no match for you? Edward as well?”

Luther put his chin up and said, “Yes! The two of them are no match for me!”

Luther pulled out a white sword and a black sword from his storage space as he replied to Jackie. He had one sword in each hand.

“Do you see these swords? Let me introduce them to you. The black sword on my right is called the Absolute Darkness Blade. The white sword on my left is the Absolute Light Blade! The technique I’m using is an upper earth rank technique called the Dual Absolutes. I’ve already reached proficiency, and am only a step away from perfection…”

The moment he said that Jackie raised an eyebrow in surprise.

Warriors who could practice an upper earth rank technique were definitely strong and talented. Upper earth rank techniques were the pinnacle for most warriors below sixty. After all, ultimate god rank techniques were too difficult.

Luther looked at the swords in his hand and let out a strange smile, “Do you know why I took part in this slaughter gambit? It’s because only this will make me stronger…”

“Only by threading the line between life and death will I understand what absolute light and darkness are! I’ve already been tethered between life and death countless times. It’s precisely thanks to that that I’ve been improving!”

Chapter 3148
Absolute light and darkness represented the powers of life and death.

To understand life and death, one had to first feel it. Only by wandering between the lines of life and death would someone understand them better. Only then would they be able to master it even more.

Luther let out a laugh before he said, “Chris and Edward are only so arrogant because they’ve already managed to master their upper earth rank techniques to proficiency, and are close to perfection…”

“They felt like no one other than them could possibly master an upper earth rank technique, let alone reach proficiency or perfection! Their thoughts are a joke. In my eyes, they’re just ignorant fools!”

The more Luther spoke, the more emotional he got.

He constantly thought about how Chris and Edward looked down on everyone else before they entered the isolated space. Just thinking about that, Luther was furious.

“Isn’t it just an upper earth rank technique? Do they think they’re the only ones who can learn them? They’re a little more talented than I am, but so what? With my own hard work, I managed to be just as accomplished as well…”

“This time, I‘ll be able to go even higher with this slaughter gambit. As long as I have a breakthrough, the two of them are no match for me!”

As he said that, Luther’s veins were bulging. His eyes threatened to pop out of their sockets, and he was practically shouting every word.

Jackie raised an eyebrow.

Luther’s words answered all the questions he had. Turns out, Luther joined the slaughter gambit to improve himself. He really did not regard Chris and Edward as anything notable at all. He felt like they were mere stepping stones for him.

It was obvious how hard Luther had worked to get to his level. The more murderous and hungry one was, the more accomplished one could be. However, they would also be exposed to even more danger comparatively.

It would be easy for them to fall into a bad situation. For instance, Luther had made an incredibly wrong decision at that very moment.

After Luther shouted everything out, he felt much better. Even if a complete madman was standing in front of him, at least he had an audience.

Luther composed himself and pursed his lips. He reverted to his calm demeanor and sighed, “Alright, you already know everything you should. Now, I’ll give you two choices. Do you want to die in front of me, or do you want my help?”

Hearing that, Jackie was amused. He raised an eyebrow, not wanting to say anymore.

Seeing that Jackie was ignoring him, Luther’s suppressed anger surfaced again.

Luther snorted, “I was being too nice to you! Since you refuse to accept my kindness, don’t blame me for being rude!”

After he said that, the blades in his hand pointed right at Jackie’s forehead.

Jackie did not react too much at that, but the spectators outside burst out in an uproar.

“No wonder this guy is so confident, he’s using an upper earth rank technique! I was even wondering before why Luther was participating in this. Does he really not know the dangers? Now it looks like this guy is just daring. In order to improve himself, he’s putting his life on the line!”

Chapter 3149
“However, he won’t be as lucky this time. So what if he uses the Dual Absolutes? He’s still not a match for Chris! As long as Luther faces Chris, Luther will realize how dumb he is!”

After the person said that, someone else rebutted, “That’s not certain. Didn’t Luther say that he’s already close to perfection?”

“As long as he goes through another life or death experience, he’ll be able to break through his limits and step into the second stage! Chris and Edward are definitely strong, but they’re still using upper earth rank techniques in the end… It’s just that the two of them have reached higher levels in their techniques. As long as Luther catches up, he might really be able to compete with Chris!”

The moment that was said, the disciples of the Purple Cloud Pavilion loudly shouted back, not allowing anyone to doubt Chris at all. They felt insulted that Chris was being compared to a disciple of a seventh-grade clan!

One of the inner disciples from the Purple Cloud Pavilion stood up from his chair and shouted at the earlier warrior, “Can you think before you speak?! Luther doesn’t even have the right to be compared to Chris! In Chris’ eyes, he’s not even an appetizer! Do you just believe everything he says?”

“I think this guy is probably just bragging. He’s just trying to get some praise from Jackie! If he’s really that strong, why isn‘t he even in the top ten of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion?”

“Training himself through life and death? That’s all just nonsense. He might actually be able to learn from being on the verge of death, but there’s no way he can directly advance a whole level…”

“Do you think it’s that easy to get from proficiency to perfection? Furthermore, he’s using an upper earth rank technique! If it’s that easy to level up, everyone would be a chosen disciple of an eighth- grade clan!”

After saying that, quite a few people reacted.

They felt like the disciple from the Purple Cloud Pavilion made sense. Going through life or death experiences can improve one's understanding and skill, but there is no way it would allow one to jump a whole level. However, there were those with an opposing view as well.

A warrior from the Chaos continent said loudly, "You're right, but you're too biased! Didn't Luther mention it earlier? His accomplishments have all come from brushes with death…"

"Since he's already at proficiency and close to perfection, he participated in the slaughter gambit in hopes of getting through this hurdle. As long as he gets through the hurdle and successfully perfects the Dual Absolutes, then he might really be able to stand up to Chris!"

When the inner disciple from the Purple Cloud Pavilion heard that, he suddenly shouted, "Nonsense! What do you know?! Even if he gets to perfection, there's no way he's worth fighting Chris!"

"Chris is already at perfection, and only a little away from complete mastery. If he can make a breakthrough, can't Chris as well?! Even if he passes the hurdle, he would just be at the same level as Chris. Chris has already been at this level for a long time, so how could Chris lose?!"

Chapter 3150
Everyone listened on as they argued nonstop. Many felt like both of them had their own points, but there was no absolute answer.

No matter how it was, they would have to wait for Luther to truly face Chris before they could get their answer. However, the crowd was inclined to believe that Luther would not be able to beat Chris even if he managed to get past the hurdle.

After all, they had just witnessed how strong Chris was. Even after burning up his blood essence, Blade was still unable to harm a single hair on Chris.

Luther was skilled, but there was no way he was that much stronger than Blade who used his blood essence!

"Even if this was discussed for a whole day, there's no way to get a conclusion before the actual results. Jackie's the one facing Luther right now! Why don't we talk about them first?!"

"There's nothing much to say about them. Jackie's just an alchemist who has his head screwed on wrong. Even if Jackie burned his blood essence ten times, there's no way he can face Luther. There's no reason to talk about their match!"

“That’s right. Jackie’s only good at talking. How could he be a match for Luther? Even if Luther was using a middle earth rank technique, Jackie would not be able to beat him, let alone an upper earth rank technique. There’s no way Jackie can beat him. Let’s not even talk about beating him, Jackie would be skilled if he can even surface three strikes from Luther!”

“But, if Jackie dies in Luther’s hands, Chris will definitely be furious. Chris is hurrying over right now. If he personally witnesses it, Chris would definitely not let Luther off. He might even attack Luther right away!”

The two in the isolated space could not hear the discussions outside at all.

At that moment, Luther was not willing to waste any more time. He wanted to cripple Jackie first before bringing him somewhere safe to be properly tortured!

He laughed coldly and narrowed his eyes. His hands constantly moved with the two swords, shooting out many slashes.

The Absolute Darkness Blade was black as ink, while the Absolute Light Blade glowed like it was reflecting the sun. Two different energies were constantly released by the blades, and the slashes merely stopped in the air, not rushing at Jackie. Instead, they slowly condensed together.

In just a few moments, the powers of light and darkness merged into a pentagram, appearing in front of everyone!

After finishing that, Luther said pridefully, “This is the power of absolute light and darkness. Even if it’s not truly life or death, it still has a portion of its power. It comes from pure light and pure darkness. When both these powers intersect, they can suppress everything!”

After hearing that, Jackie’s lips twitched as he said in exasperation, “Do you think everyone’s an idiot? Can you use your brain a bit even if you’re trying to brag? Suppress everything?”

“If it was truly the power of life and death, you might be able to do that. The technique you’re using is only harnessing a fraction of that power! It’s very far from the true thing! With your skills, you can’t even beat David, let alone me!”

Luther felt like he was about to get angered to death by Jackie.

The guy kept on saying the exact things that would anger him the most. He wanted to rip Jackie to shreds!

Luther widened his eyes and looked at Jackie with clenched teeth, “You say I’m bragging, but aren’t you bragging as well? Are you saying you’re far stronger than David? David’s no match for you?”

Jackie acknowledged honestly, “That’s exactly what I mean. He’s no match for me at all. Even Chris is no match for me!”

The moment he said that Luther’s lips twitched speechlessly. He was silently angry at the fact that he was actually being calculative with a madman.

From a madman’s perspective, everything they said was logical. Yet, Luther had still been infuriated by Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3151 - 3155

Chapter 3151
Luther snorted, and his expression soured. “I don’t care if you’re a madman; your end will always be gruesome so long as you cross me…”

“You have nothing but your foul mouth to blame. If you didn’t say so much, things might have ended better for you. I would’ve given you a quick, painless death!”

Luther readied himself as his hands quickly moved.

Waves of darkness and light condensed in front of him.

He pushed forward, sending the image right at Jackie. The pentagram formed of the powers of light and darkness constantly spun in the air. As it flew toward Jackie, it absorbed the power of light and darkness in the air!

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Just looking at the power of the pentagram, he could tell that Luther was either fourth or fifth in terms of power among the ten of them. This explained why he was this confident.

Alas, Luther was too naive. He thought of others too simply and thought too highly of himself.

Jackie let out a short laugh, temporarily discarding that thought. He had foreseen Luther’s plans, after all.

He did not want to stay there for too long as it would only attract too much attention, having provoked a lot of people.

These people wanted to kill him for the sake of their dignity. Jackie was never afraid of facing anyone head-on, but he was still worried that they would come after him as a group.

Jackie’s hands constantly moved as he formed seal after seal that slowly condensed in the air, turning into Soul Swords.

Having complete mastery of Destroying the Void, he did not hold back to finish the battle quickly. A hundred Soul Swords were formed in the air. With a wave, the swords condensed into one massive Soul Sword. He pushed forward, and the massive Soul Sword hurtled right toward the pentagram.

Jackie controlled the sword’s trajectory, aiming at the lower left corner to hit where the dark energy was condensing. That was the portion of the pentagram that was black.

He could feel dense soul energy at that part, and he aimed to test what would happen if soul energy clashed against soul energy.

When Luther saw that the Soul Sword was heading to where the power of darkness was condensed, he found it deeply amusing.

He shouted behind the pentagram, “You should forget about your tricks. The power of darkness and light can interchange with each other. Don’t think that you can destroy the whole thing by just destroying a part and not the whole! You can’t possibly counter me!”

As he said that, the Soul Sword was already right in front of the pentagram, accurately piercing through where the power of darkness was gathered!

Chapter 3152
When the Soul Sword and the power of darkness clashed, it caused no shockwaves. Instead, it was like two balls of flames clashing.

Since they were the same kind of energy, they would absorb each other instead of clashing.

Luther’s brow raised in shock at the sight. Amid his confusion, he suddenly felt a change.

He noticed that he had lost control of part of the pentagram!

Feeling it further, he was surprised to notice that the power of darkness had actually fused into the Soul Sword after they clashed, leaving the pentagram. It was no longer in his control!

The next second, Luther felt a chill in his heart. Looking down, he noticed a black energy sword pierced through his chest.

After the darkness left the pentagram, it fused into the Soul Sword, causing it to solidify even more. The pentagram had only been half a ureter away from Luther. He never stood a chance in avoiding it.

The pain of his soul being ripped apart from his heart caused Luther’s whole body to stiffen. His face started to twist as he fell from the air.

Jackie let out a slight laugh.

He never thought that Destroying the Void would seize control of Luther’s dark energy after clashing with it.

In the end, it was because the dark energy and Destroying the Void were from the same form of power, which was the soul attribute. Nonetheless, Destroying the Void's power and grade were far higher than the dark energy.

Destroying the Void was an upper ultimate god rank technique, while Dual Absolutes was only an upper earth rank technique. The two techniques were a whole level apart. Against Destroying the Void, Luther's power was as insignificant as an ant.

Luther was in so much pain that he spasmed on the ground vigorously; Destroying the Void was slowly eating away at his soul. The pain the soul could feel was far greater than any physical pain.

No matter how strong Luther's will was, it was insignificant against such pain. At that moment, he had lost even his most basic rationality. He constantly rolled on the floor as though seeking relief.

Try as he did, however, the pain of his soul being torn apart did not cease.

At that moment, Luther did not look like a chosen disciple from a seventh-grade clan at all, looking more like a common beggar seen on the streets. His body was covered in dirt as he spasmed pathetically.

Jackie's expression remained unchanged at the sight. After all, he had witnessed these scenes countless times. However, the warriors at the viewing area were not as calm as he was.

When they saw the Soul Sword piercing Luther's heart, their expressions stiffened. Their eyes widened as disbelief overwhelmed their features.

The sight of Luther dropping from the air and writhing on the floor deeply affected everyone there.

Everything had happened far too quickly and suddenly. It was completely different from the result they were expecting. No one could accept what happened that easily.

The crowd was completely silent. Even their breathing had become slower. The sight was far too unbelievable!

After a while, someone stammered, "Isn't Jackie an alchemist? Who said he was an alchemist? Since when did alchemists become so strong? He dealt with Luther in one strike! Isn't Luther a chosen disciple of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion?"

"Even if he isn't among the top chosen disciples, he's still a chosen disciple from a seventh-grade clan. How did this happen? How did he lose without a contest?!"

Chapter 3153
“You’re asking me? I have questions, too. I’m wondering if I’m hallucinating right now. Isn’t it all too absurd?!”

At that moment, the disciples from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion all stood up from their seats. They had heard all of the discussions, but their disciples did not participate, allowing others to say what they wanted.

Luther had told his fellow disciples before entering the slaughter gambit not to say anything no matter what they heard, hence their silence. However, the abrupt turn of events made them unable to retain their composure.

They had seen Luther’s tragic scene, which caused them to panic. They wanted to rush into the isolated space to save Luther. However, they knew very well that it was just a pipe dream.

They could not do anything outside, nor were they able to. They were forced to look on as Luther rolled on the ground and cried out in agony.

At that rate, Luther could die!

An inner disciple from the Dual Sovereign Pavilion shouted, “Liar! Jackie isn’t an alchemist! When did alchemists become stronger than us proper warriors?! He’s just been a wolf in sheep’s clothing the whole time. Who said he was an alchemist?!”

He was furious and reluctant to accept it.

Various emotions were present in the hearts of the disciples of the Dual Sovereign Pavilion. They wanted to rush into the crowd, pull out whoever had said that Jackie was an alchemist power, and smack them senseless.

They wanted an explanation as to what was happening!

Everyone in the viewing area had complicated expressions on their faces. After all, the result was too absurd.

Jackie’s odds were at seven point five, the highest among everyone. It meant that he was the weakest even in the eyes of the caretakers. Furthermore, everything he had said and done before had been far too crazy. Even though Jackie viewed everything he had done as normal retaliation, in the eyes of the warriors in the viewing area, his retaliation made no sense!

Disciples from high-grade clans did not allow their honor and pride to be challenged.

Everything that was happening caused everyone there to think that Jackie was just a deranged weakling, yet that weakling had shed the moniker in just one strike.

How could anyone digest the change so easily?

The change had been far too quick, and they were not given any time to prepare themselves before that chance.

“I don’t think he’s an alchemist either!”

“An alchemist can’t possibly be that strong. They put most of their time into mastering alchemy, so they should have no time to train at all, so their power should naturally be weaker than ours!”

“That‘s right! It looks like he was just faking it. No wonder he refused to back down to anyone. He was actually that strong. Luther was no match for him at all; he couldn’t even stand up to a single blow!”

“I feel like their exchange is too strange. Jackie let out that massive gray blade. After it pierced into the dark energy, it swallowed it up to strengthen itself. It pierced into Luther’s chest before he could react! Luther had no chance to fight back!”

After that person said that, the warriors around him asked curiously, “You feel like Jackie’s technique can swallow dark energy?”

“That has to be it!” came the reply.

“Otherwise, why did both energies fuse when they clashed?!”

“It looked like they fused, but how could two techniques fuse together? There’s only one reason that could happen, both techniques use the same energy. Thus, the stronger power managed to swallow up the weaker one, strengthening itself!”

Chapter 3154
That person’s eyes were sharp, and he immediately saw through the one most important aspect, two different techniques should not be able to merge.

The reason why Luther lost control of the dark energy was exactly what that person said, Destroying the Void was too strong. After piercing through the energy, Destroying the Void swallowed it to strengthen itself!

The viewing area was filled with fervent discussions. After all, they had just witnessed something that shattered what they had thought before.

Compared to the intensity in the viewing area, the betting area that Rudy was at was much calmer. Of course, the peace did not last that long.

Evan was panting roughly as his whole body quivered. It was not just Evan, even the other disciples from the Pentagram Clan behind him were all breathing erratically.

Compared to the others, Rudy was noticeably much calmer. He knew how strong Jackie was from the start, so Luther challenging Jackie amused him to no end. Luther had even bragged about how strong he was before.

After hearing all of that, Rudy almost lost control and laughed on the spot.

Luther did not have much longer to live at that point, and Rudy did not even blink an eye!

Evan's breaths grew labored. Even Rudy, who was a few meters away from him, could hear it.

Rudy turned and noticed Evan's eyes had reddened. His fists were clenched tightly, and he looked like he had seen a ghost. Rudy let out a cold laugh, recalling what Evan had said to him before.

Evan had said that he was an ignorant fool and that Jackie was a complete madman. There had been insults hurled at Rudy and Jackie.

Rudy only had one thought in mind at that moment, it was the perfect time for some revenge.

He sneered as he quickly walked to Evan. "Oh, what's wrong? Have you been poisoned? You look a little breathless. Why do you look so bad? Are you alright? Thankfully, I'm an alchemist. If you need any pills, I can sell them to you!"

The moment he said that, Evan almost lost himself in anger.

Evan was no idiot, and he could tell that Rudy had been mocking him. Evan gritted his teeth and looked at Rudy. He wanted to say something in retaliation but found himself unable to.

Rudy raised an eyebrow and said, "With the grudges between Trevor and Jackie, Trevor must be frantically searching for Jackie right now. When he finds Jackie, he'll definitely attack Jackie right away!"

"Trevor thinks that he'll be able to kill Jackie incredibly easily with his skills, so I'm really looking forward to them meeting each other!"

Evan continued panting. His eyes were threatening to pop out of their sockets. If he had heard what Rudy was saying before, he would have rebuked Rudy since he trusted in Trevor's skills. However, he no longer had that confidence.

Jackie had dealt with Luther in one strike, which meant that Jackie was stronger than most warriors. Even he did not have the confidence that he would beat Jackie.

Trevor was stronger than himself but not by a long shot. The chances of Trevor beating Jackie were not that much higher.

Evan's lips twitched, not wanting to see Rudy acting so pleased with himself at that moment.

He took a deep breath and said, "Stop gloating. Trevor's skills are stronger than Luther! There's no telling who'll win if he fights Jackie!"

Rudy let out a laugh as though he heard a joke. "Didn't you hear what Luther said just now? He was using an upper earth rank technique, and he was only a step away from the second level!"

Chapter 3155
"If I'm not mistaken, Trevor's probably at around the same level as Luther. Even if Trevor is stronger than Luther, he's that much stronger!"

Evan's lips quivered. "I'm telling you right now! Don't underestimate Trevor! I myself don't know how strong Trevor is right now. We haven't faced each other for a while. He told me that he has gotten quite a lot stronger since he entered the Whirling World, and if memory serves, he's already passed the hurdle and is now close to or at perfection with his technique! If Jackie fights him, it should be an even match!"

As he said that, his tone was strangely firm as if he had already seen the result.

Rudy was amused, raising an eyebrow as he said, "There's no point saying all of that. Trevor might even be killed before he even meets Jackie. Who knows?"

Evan was furious when he heard that and half-shrieked, "Is speaking nonsense your specialty?! I can assure you that other than Chris and Edward, no one can kill Trevor!"

Evan looked so emotional that it looked like he could pass out at any moment!

Rudy raised an eyebrow and laughed slightly, saying, "Alright. Let's wait and see!"

Jackie slowly walked toward Luther in the isolated space, coldly staring as he watched Luther writhing and rolling about.

At that moment, he could feel that a third of Luther's soul had already been consumed. Even if Jackie stopped at that moment, Luther would still die.

Jackie raised his hand and stopped Destroying the Void from eating Luther's soul, which allowed Luther to finally regain his sanity.

He was panting weakly as the light in his eyes slowly returned. After regaining a bit of himself, he stared at Jackie's calm face.

Luther felt his chest constrict, and he spat out the blood in his mouth. He started to twitch as his eyes were filled with anger and hatred. “Who are you?! “

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. Many had asked him that same question and why he was ‘in a disguise.‘

He felt helpless. He clearly never disguised himself, but none of them believed him when he spoke the truth, and they still questioned him in the end.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, starting to think about his interactions with Luther before entering the isolated space.

After thinking about it, he found that the two of them had not even exchanged a look after Luther entered the waiting area.

He sighed in exasperation, “We never even butted heads before, yet you came to me so ready to die. I tried to stop you, but you left me with no choice. You needed to die, anyway. There’s no difference if you died to someone else or in my hands…”

Luther had an intense fit of coughs as his whole body shook.

After coughing for a long time, he panted as he said, “I was too careless! Your disguise was too perfect. I thought that you were just a crazy alchemist! If I’d known that you were hiding your skills, I wouldn’t have lost to you!”

After hearing that, Jackie felt like it was a complete joke. Even as his death loomed near, Luther was still trying to fool himself.

Jackie calmly said, “Let’s not talk about if I disguised myself for now. Let’s talk about what would happen if you knew my skills…”

“Actually, there’s no need to think about it at all. You know very well that no matter how much more you know, you’re just too weak for there to be any changes.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3156 -

Chapter 3156
Luther looked at Jackie with gritted teeth as hatred oozed from his eyes. “No! It’s all because of your petty tricks. If I knew what you’re truly capable of, I would’ve been more defensive! Your skills wouldn’t have rendered me in a fatal state!”

“I can use that to improve myself, entering perfection with my technique! You wouldn’t last against me then, you’d die a horrible death! I just lacked a bit of luck and lost to you because of that!”

Jackie snorted, feeling like Luther was already in a state of complete incoherence.

Even with the state Luther was in, he still felt like he did not lose because of his skills but because of his rotten luck and someone else’s supposed disguise.

With how Jackie usually was, he was merely amused after hearing all of that.

He would not continue dwelling on the problem, because there was no meaning to it. However, Jackie was particularly annoyed that day.

He coldly looked Luther right in the eye and said in a low voice, “Guess… What level is the technique I’m using?”

Luther’s breathing got more erratic as he looked at Jackie. It was as if he could prove that he did not lose by doing that.

He narrowed his eyes and said with all his might, “Is there any need? It’s in the upper earth rank! If you… Managed to do that, you must already be at the second stage of mastery, right?!”

After he said that, Luther continued, “Why did you need to ask? Do you think that others can’t see it? Are you just trying to show off in front of me?”

In truth, Luther knew that Jackie was stronger than him, which was how he had lost so terribly.

After his dark energy had been pierced by the Soul Sword, he had completely lost control of it.

At that moment, he might have been panicking, but he still did everything he could to gain back control. Alas, it was all for naught.

He held onto his stubbornness partially because he did not want to see Jackie being too pleased. After all, he saw him as a madman who only knew how to brag the whole time.

In the end, he realized that Jackie was not a madman at all but an expert pretending to be weak.

Luther could not accept the fact.

Another part of it was also because he kept on feeling like he would have been able to level up his technique if he managed to toe the line between life and death. The battle would have been more righteous!

Jackie laughed and said, “Brag? What’s there to brag about? Since you’re being so obstinate, I’ll just tell you…”

As he said that, Jackie deliberately stopped.

Jackie slowly knelt until he was incredibly close to Luther. He could even hear Luther’s weak breaths.

Jackie deliberately lowered his voice as he spoke, “I asked that question because it’s impossible for you to get the right answer. In my eyes, you‘re not even an ant. It’s so easy to kill you. Even if you manage to level up, nothing will change.”

Luther widened his reddened eyes as he retorted viciously, “You’re bragging!”

Jackie laughed as he sneered, “Why do I need to brag? When we fought, you were the one constantly shouting at me. I’m just saying all of that to expose you a little.”

“Do you know how amused I am listening to you speak? Even if you burned your blood essence and leveled up just now, you‘d still be no threat to me at all. Your technique is absolute trash!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3157 -

Chapter 3157
Hearing all of that, Luther’s breathing grew erratic.

Blood oozed out of his mouth as he completely stiffened. He was already at the stage where he could die at any moment.

Jackie finished his words while Luther was still alive.

“Upper earth rank techniques are nothing to me because I’m using an upper ultimate god rank technique, Destroying the Void. It came from the first-grade world, the Divine Void World…”

Luther widened his eyes as he fell deep in shock.

After thinking for a while, he shook his head vigorously. “Nonsense! You… You’re lying! It’s impossible! It can’t be!”

Jackie laughed. “You’re about to die anyway. What’s the point of lying to you? Do you really think an upper earth rank technique would be able to take away control of your technique? You know very well that you didn‘t just lose control of the darkness, my technique devoured yours entirely!”

Luther’s lips trembled slightly as he shuddered. This time, he could not help but start to recount everything that had happened when he was facing Jackie.

Jackie was right after all. He did not slowly lose control of his technique, but it had instead been swallowed up by a massive power.

Thinking about it, his dark energy had probably been absorbed by Jackie’s technique and turned against him!

At that moment, Luther’s mind raced as various thoughts surfaced in his head.

What sort of technique would be able to swallow his like that?

He might not truly be using the power of life and death, but it still contained a sliver of it.

Normally, even if he lost, he should have lost because his opponent shattered his technique. It should not have been swallowed.

The fact that Jackie’s technique had swallowed his dark energy meant that the two attacks had the same source of energy. Otherwise, it would not have fused. It meant that Jackie’s technique was also of the soul attribute!

The power of darkness and the power of light cattle from life and death. Darkness represented death and was the soul attribute. On top of that, he had not felt any massive energy fluctuations when Jackie used his technique. There was only one explanation for that, which was that Jackie was using the soul attribute.

Only soul attribute techniques would have such weak energy fluctuations when used!

Luther’s expression soured as realization sank in. He paled as he thought about it emotionally.

The more he thought about it, the more he realized that Jackie was not lying.

Jackie truly was strong. Jackie was so strong that Luther could not believe it!

Jackie’s technique devouring him only meant one thing, his technique was so strong that his own technique stood no chance!

Luther's breathing got more and more erratic as his eyes darted all over. He felt like his mind was about to explode. He felt like he was being boiled alive.

He wanted to just die on the spot!

He looked up as he straightened his body, trembling as he shouted with all his might, "Who… Who are you?! You… You're not a normal person!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3158 -

Chapter 3158
Jackie slowly got up and looked down on the breathless Luther. "You don't have the right to know."

"I… I don't have the right?" sneered Luther bitterly.

He remembered everything he had said earlier and felt like he was the buffoon all along.

If he had heard Jackie say anything like that in the past, Luther would have refused to acknowledge it angrily. At this moment, however, he had to.

After breathing out his last breath, he held on and said one last sentence, "You're right, I really don't have the right to know…"

The moment he said his last words, Luther coughed out some more blood. The moment the blood left his mouth, Luther lost his fight, falling to the ground heavily as he breathed his last.

Jackie shook his head slightly.

If Luther had not run into him, Luther might have been able to level up as he expected. Even if he still died in the end, he would at least be able to accomplish his dream. However, Jackie did not feel any pity, this was the fruit of his labor.

If Jackie had really been complete trash like Luther thought, it would have been him dead instead.

He looked around and saw that it was still a desolate wasteland around him. After thinking about it, he flew up into the air and chose a direction before he shot forward.

All of the warriors in the viewing area became visibly solemn.

Luther was dead.

Before this, they were even discussing if Luther could reach the next level with his technique and challenge Chris and Edward. They were even discussing how likely it was that Luther could win. However, everything was overturned in just a flash as Jackie struck him down, sparing him not a chance to fight back.

It caused a great stir among all the warriors there.

“Luther must‘ve regretted saying everything he did. If not for that verbal spat before the battle, Jackie probably wouldn’t have tortured him so much…”

“That’s true. His corpse is just left there. Jackie didn’t even bother burning it or burying it. It looks like Jackie isn’t that tolerant.”

“Have you ever seen any powerful person being nice? You should wake up. Jackie isn’t a crazy alchemist; he’s an expert who didn’t mind disguising himself. I’m beginning to wonder if he’s even stronger than David!”

More of them started to accept that Jackie’s skills were definitely not average.

They also started to understand why Jackie acted like he did before such as angering Chris, ignoring David, and being impolite to everyone. They had thought that Jackie only participated in the slaughter gambit because he was crazy.

At this moment, everyone felt that it was no longer that simple.

A wandering warrior from White Marsh Continent mumbled, “It just doesn’t add up. Why did Jackie deliberately whisper to Luther before he died? What did they say for Luther to react like that? Thinking of Luther’s expression… It’s just off…”

After that person said that, many of the warriors with similar doubts started to speak up.

“That’s true. Luther‘s final expression really was strange! He first refused to admit defeat and was in disbelief, but all of a sudden, his expression changed as though realizing something and accepting his fate.”

“What he said in the end doesn‘t make sense with his temperament either. Jackie said, and I quote, ‘didn’t have the right’, and Luther actually accepted it just like that?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3159 -

Chapter 3159
“He had been adamant in saying that he only lost because of Jackie’s tricks and that he was just unlucky. Why did he suddenly accept the truth just like that? What did he say to him? Someone tell me! I’m so curious!”

Jackie had lowered his voice when he knelt and spoke to him. This meant that Jackie had told Luther a secret, and it shocked Luther so badly that he accepted his fate after knowing it.

It was a drastic change. He even accepted Jackie's ridicule. It meant that the secret must be incredible, enough for Luther to admit his defeat.

Because of that, everyone desperately wanted to know what was said, but they had not been there. No matter how they thought about it, they could not figure it out. All of them were frantically scratching their heads like monkeys.

In the isolated space, a man in light purple robes arrived just five minutes after Jackie left.

He shot over incredibly quickly. Chris had not stopped at all the whole way. He was worried that he would lose track of Jackie or that someone else would beat him to it.

Even from a distance, Chris could see someone lying down on the ground.

Before he could see who it was, he assumed that it was Jackie and thus cursed, "What dog killed my prey? They better not let me find out, or I'll tear them to shreds!"

Jackie had to die, but it had to be done with his hands to vent Jackie the hatred he felt.

Jackie's earlier actions had not only stomped on his dignity but insulted his character as well. Even if Jackie was crazy, Chris would never forgive him!

He had said that he would make Jackie pay for it. He would let Jackie know the consequences of offending him. He wanted to see Jackie struggling to survive, only for him to fail.

He glared at the corpse lying on the ground as a string of curses left him. Someone had stolen his chance of killing Jackie. No wonder the mark he had left on Jackie slowly disappeared, Jackie was already killed off!

Without Jackie's life to support it, the mark would slowly fade away.

It seemed like Jackie was unlucky and met someone else not long after arriving. There was no way anyone would spare Jackie if they saw him. It would not have taken long to kill him!

Thinking about that, Chris increased his speed as his mind raced.

Since they had left a corpse behind, he would be able to determine what kind of attack killed Jackie from the injuries. He would look for the person who had dared to steal his prey and have them pay dearly!

Chris was incredibly quick. He was constantly thinking about how he would check the corpse later. He did not notice anything strange until he arrived next to the corpse.

When he saw the somewhat unknown face of the corpse, he frowned.

“That’s… L-Luther?”

Luther had been the last participant, and there had been no conflicts between them, so Chris did not have a deep impression of him, only vaguely remembering his name.

This was Luther, not Jackie!

That had clearly been the last place he had felt Jackie.

He knelt to look at Luther’s corpse. Other than the fact that the clothes were somewhat ripped, there did not seem to be any injuries. It seemed like Luther had been killed in one blow. The person who killed him must be incredibly strong.

Was it Edward?

He did not expect Edward to be around the vicinity.

He shot out his perception of Luther‘s body. After checking it in detail, he could feel that strange energy was left in Luther’s body. The moment his senses touched that energy, it started to rot.

Chris was so shocked that he hurriedly pulled his senses back.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3160 -

Chapter 3160
“What is this?” gasped Chris as his eyes widened.

It was able to rot his senses. That was too strange!

He muttered, “Divine senses are part of the soul. This power is actually able to rot the soul. Could it be poison?”

He was immensely curious, so he sent out his divine senses again. This time, he did not dare to be as careless as the last time. He carefully controlled his senses, avoiding the mysterious power that was left in Luther’s body.

After moving around for a long time, Chris was shocked to find that two-thirds of Luther’s soul had been devoured, and only a third of his soul was left in his body. After a person died, their soul usually slowly dispersed in three days.

Chris had checked Luther's temperature earlier. Based on the heat, he had probably died not too long ago. In such a short time, if Luther's soul had not been affected by any outside influences, it should still be wholly within Luther's body. Even if Luther died, his soul would have slowly dispersed in three days.

There was no way only a third of the soul would be left like what Chris saw. The third of Luther's soul was in disarray as well. It meant that Luther suffered an attack targeting the soul…

"What a strange attack. Who did it? It can't be Edward… He uses wood-attribute techniques, far different from this strange energy! Who was it?

"Was it David, then? No, that can't be… Could there have been a hidden expert among the other few?"

Thinking about that, Chris frowned as alarm bells rang in his mind.

He slowly got up and walked around with an alert expression in his eyes. He looked around the desolate wasteland, but it seemed like no one else had been here.

There was nothing to obstruct his view around him. If anyone was close, they would not have been able to hide from Chris' eyes.

Nonetheless, he remained vigilant. After all, the energy that had attacked Luther was far too strange.

He gritted his teeth and hissed, "No matter who it is, they'll just die if they meet me!"

After saying that, he turned around and randomly chose a direction to head to. He left the cold corpse behind in the wasteland.

After two hours, Jackie stopped his movements. He was in a hilly area that was dense with grass, and the hills obstructed most of the view.

A breeze blew past, causing the wild grass to move slightly and rustle.

If they were not in an isolated space full of people who wanted to kill him, Jackie would probably have found a comfortable spot to lie down and rest.

The scenery was beautiful with the gentle breeze. It would be even better if there was a bit of rain.

At that moment, he suddenly heard the sound of a shoe brushing against grass from a distance. Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked over.

After a moment, he saw a familiar figure.

David was walking around calmly and slowly approaching him.

When David saw that Jackie was standing in the distance, David was stunned for a moment before he smiled. The smile threatened to split his face open.

“I heard a bit of rustling. Heh, it was you all along!” David said loudly.

He quickly rushed toward Jackie in delight as if he had found something amazing.

As he moved, he exclaimed, “I really am lucky! I was walking around for quite a long time, but I actually met you!”

“Do you still remember what I told you before we entered the isolated space? I’ll repeat it again. I’ll have you begging for mercy and regretting everything you said!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3161 - 3165 -

Chapter 3161
Jackie let out a slight laugh as he stood still on the spot.

His actions surprised David even more. He snorted, “So you weren’t just being stubborn. You actually think you’re capable of standing up to my strength!”

David was quite close to Jackie at that moment.

With that distance, Jackie would definitely not be able to escape if David did not want him to. Even with things already as they were, Jackie still planted himself on the spot, not moving. It seemed like Jackie really was confident in himself.

David’s lips twitched in exasperation, staring at Jackie like he was a complete idiot, “I’ve never seen an alchemist like you before. Even if you’re bursting with confidence, you should have a bit of common sense. You’ve put all your time into alchemy, so where did you get the skills to fight against me?”

The spectators in the viewing area fell into silence again. When they saw that David was the one who appeared, all of them shut their mouths.

David had even said that he would have Jackie begging for mercy.

The warriors in the viewing area all had complicated expressions on their faces. If they had not personally witnessed Jackie’s skills, they would definitely have felt some pity for Jackie.

David was definitely not a kind person.

Before they entered the isolated space, the conflict between the two of them was already incredibly heated.

The warriors at the viewing area knew that the two of them would have already attacked each other in the waiting area if not for the laws. Now that the two of them met, David would definitely do everything he could to torture Jackie!

Yet, they knew very well that David probably did not have the skills to be able to torture Jackie. The victor was not even certain!

They could somewhat guess that David should already be at the second stage of his technique, so he was stronger than Luther. Yet, there was no way he was that much stronger. Compared to David, Jackie might even be at an advantage.

At that moment, even the warriors from Chaos Continent were not that confident in David being able to win. The disciples from the Frenzied Blade Clan were all incredibly nervous.

They really wanted to tell David that Jackie was a wolf in sheep's clothing. They wanted to warn him against underestimating Jackie. Furthermore, everything about Jackie was incredibly strange. No one knew what Jackie was hiding.

The disciples of the Frenzied Blade Clan even felt like it might be better for David to meet Edward instead. That was because David at least knew of Edward's skills, but Jackie had disguised himself far too well.

Practically everyone was fooled!

However, David did not know how worried his fellow disciples were for him at all. He only felt like he had hit the Jackiepot at that moment. He was even already starting to plan out how he would torture Jackie. He would first cripple Jackie before using poison and whips on Jackie.

Jackie would suffer all sorts of pain, and when Jackie was about to die, he would give Jackie some recovery pills. He would not let Jackie die so easily, or he would not have enough fun!

Those ideas all surfaced in David's mind. His smile got wider and wider.

Ever since he met David, Jackie's expression did not change that much at all. When David arrived in front of him, Jackie calmly took his sword out of Mustard Seed.

Jackie had not reacted to everything David had said at all. He had even calmly pulled out his own weapon to face him. This caused David to feel like he had been challenged.

David's lips twitched before he said, "Brat, you never fail to surprise me! Every time I see you, I feel like beating you up. The fact that you're still alive is a miracle!"

Chapter 3162
After Jackie heard all of that, he just felt like David was getting more and more annoying. Every time he met David, David could not stop talking.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he gripped the sword in his palm.

"Why do you talk so much every time? You're not annoyed by it, but others are."

David's lips twitched as his face turned red in anger, "Brat! I've been nice to you, but you are constantly challenging me. Do you think that this is the waiting area? Do you think the rules will stop me from attacking you?!"

“Open your eyes and look around. This is an isolated space. The only thing you’ll get from provoking me is me torturing you longer!”

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly before he looked at David and replied, “There was someone before you who wasted a lot of time talking before as well. However, I didn’t have any past conflicts with him, so I let him off in the end…”

“You’re different, we’ve had too many conflicts. I won’t be so kind to you now that you’re in front of me!” Jackie said all of that in an incredibly casual manner.

David frowned in confusion.

He snorted before he said, “Are you crazy? Do you know what you’re saying? Don’t tell me you’ve already killed someone else before coming here?”

Jackie nodded, admitting to it honestly.

After David saw Jackie nod, he started to laugh out loud, as if he had heard a huge job.

He reached out and pointed at Jackie as he laughed, “It looks like there really is something wrong with your head. Are you hallucinating? You managed to kill someone? Who do you think you are? You’re a mere alchemist. How could you possibly kill any of the ten participants?”

Jackie let out a laugh, saying nonchalantly, “I’ll be kind this time. No matter what you say, I’ll answer you honestly. Not a single one of the participants is a match for me…”

“Other than Chris and Edward, killing the others will be incredibly easy! You’ll just end up dying after being tortured!”

After he heard that, David’s laughter got even more exaggerated. He felt like Jackie’s head really had been hit a few times too much for Jackie to say something so absurd.

Did Jackie think he was in the divine solidifying realm?

He actually said that the other participants were no match for him!

Did he think he was Chris?

Even Chris would not have said something like that!

David laughed maniacally within the isolated space, but the warriors in the viewing area were all silent. Looking at how exaggerated David was laughing, all of them had conflicted expressions on their faces. The more David laughed, the more clueless they felt David was.

Someone said helplessly, “David will regret this. I feel like Jackie is actually being honest with everything he said, and he might actually be able to do it. If David falls to Jackie, Jackie won’t let David off easily…”

“I can even imagine how David will be tortured. He‘ll definitely pay for everything he said!”

“Poor David. He probably won’t be able to accept that Jackie is stronger than him even in his final moments!”

The warriors from Chaos Continent started to discuss everything excitedly after they heard that.

The warriors from the Chaos Continent said loudly, “Oh please, the two of them haven’t even started fighting yet. We still don’t know who’s stronger and weaker, but you’ve already determined that David is no match for Jackie? Jackie has some skills, but compared to David, he should be an even match at most!”

“I feel like it’s probably not that bad. Jackie’s just exaggerating things. just listen to what he says. Other than himself, the other participants are no match for him at all? Who does he think he is? Does he think he’s better than Chris?”

Chapter 3163
” Jackie is strong, but Chris is not weak either! Unless he’s already completely mastered an upper earth rank technique, there’s no way he can do this!”

“I feel like Jackie really believes what he said, but it doesn‘t mean that he can actually do it. It’s because Jackie doesn’t know how strong the others are at all…”

“He’s so clueless that he‘s actually confident in himself. Jackie comes from Hestia Continent. They were sealed off by a strange power, isolating them from other worlds…”

“If it wasn’t for the Whirling World, they wouldn’t be able to meet the warriors from other worlds at all. So, Jackie doesn’t know how strong the warriors from the other worlds are at all!”

“I feel like that’s quite reasonable. I think so too. Jackie’s just saying that because he’s too ignorant! David should be about equal to him in strength…”

“There’s no way he’ll end the fight in one attack like last time. Luther had been stuck in a bottleneck with his technique anyway. That’s why Luther lost so quickly!”

The inner disciples of the Frenzied Blade Clan felt like their fellow disciple was being insulted, so they stood up and loudly shouted, “David uses a lightning attribute technique. If I’m not mistaken, Jackie probably uses a soul attribute technique!”

“Lightning attribute techniques are a natural counter to soul attribute techniques. Without that in play, the two of them might be even in terms of strength, but David’s technique counters Jackie’s. It’s very unlikely that Jackie will be able to win!”

“So that’s the case… David uses a lightning attribute technique. If so, then Jackie’s chances of winning should be thirty to forty percent at most. However, David will probably not be able to kill Jackie. He’ll probably just be able to heavily injured Jackie at most!”

“You’re right, that’s probably what’s going to happen. No matter what, we can‘t deny Jackie’s skills. Jackie might actually be able to win in the end…”

The discussions could not be taken back. Some people started to regret that they had not bet their spirit crystals on Jackie!

Jackie’s odds were the highest among everyone there. If Jackie was actually lucky enough to win, then those who bet on him would have hit the Jackiepot!

“I think you’re going too far there. Jackie might be strong, but his chances of winning, in the end, are minuscule. In my eyes, it’s absolutely impossible!”

“Chris and Edward aren’t the only ones who are strong. David is quite strong as well. Let’s look at what happens before we say anything else! I feel like there’s a good chance that David will just kill Jackie right here!”

Most of the warriors there might have acknowledged Jackie’s skills, but they still did not think that Jackie would be able to beat Chris in the end and obtain victory!

No matter how intense the discussions outside were, the two of them in the isolated space were not affected at all.

David was incredibly pleased with himself, feeling like he was incredibly fortunate to have met Jackie. However, there really was something wrong with Jackie’s head.

What Jackie said was too hilarious!

Jackie actually thought that he was unbeatable. Even a chosen disciple from the ninth-grade clan would not have dared to be as arrogant as Jackie. It was as if no one in the Whirling World was a match for him.

Jackie coldly stared at David, “Are you done wasting time? If you are, let’s start!”

After saying that, Jackie started to form seals. A hundred Soul Swords suddenly appeared in the air.

David immediately recognized that Jackie was using a soul attribute technique.

After seeing that scene, David laughed again, “You’re actually using a soul attribute technique. You’ll suffer even more now!”

Chapter 3164
After saying that, David retrieved a purplish-gold ring of thunder from his storage.

David waved the ring in front of Jackie and said, “Do you know what this is? An ignorant warrior like you probably doesn’t know what this is at all. You probably don‘t even know that ring-shaped weapons exist!”

Jackie’s lips twitched.

It was already the second time Jackie had seen a weapon like that. Even though he had not been in Middle Province for that long, he knew that weapons like that were not rare.

David felt like Hestia Continent was a completely rural countryside that had nothing. The weapons they regularly saw were probably weapons that the warriors of Hestia Continent had never seen before.

The viewing area outside of the isolated space was in a bit of an uproar thanks to what David said.

The warriors of Hestia Continent were so angry that some of them even started to curse at him on the spot, “Ignorant fool! What’s so special about ring weapons? It’s everywhere in Hestia Continent! He’s talking as if Hestia Continent has nothing at all!”

“That‘s right. So what if he came from Chaos Continent? He doesn’t know how to do anything other than speaking blindly!”

The warriors of the Chaos Continent immediately quarreled with the warriors from Hestia Continent in defense of David, “Is there anything wrong with calling all of you ignorant?”

“For so many years, all of you have lived in a closed-off world. You don‘t know how vast the outside world is at all!”

“That’s right, I feel like David is right. The only way we even met here is because Hestia Continent, Chaos Continent, and White Marsh Continent were on equal footing when the Whirling World was first created!”

“After so many years, Hestia Continent was sealed off the whole time. Your standards have fallen far behind ours. Can’t you even understand that? Don’t talk as if Hestia Continent is incredibly strong. Just look at this slaughter gambit. Of the ten participants, Jackie’s the only one from Hestia Continent! Doesn’t that prove how weak you are?”

Hestia Continent had fallen behind the other two worlds for various reasons.

That was something the warriors of Hestia Continent did not and could not deny. However, David mocked Jackie and said that Jackie could not even recognize ring weapons.

That crossed the line because ring weapons were not rare. Even if Hestia Continent had been sealed off for many years, they were not far behind to that degree.

David's words were a direct insult to the whole of Hestia Continent, so how could Hestia Continent's warriors accept that?

In the isolated space, Jackie coldly stared at David. He looked at the snide look on David's face, and could naturally hear what David was implying.

He snorted and said, "I can't believe you're so ignorant. Do you really think a ring weapon is a rare weapon? These things are everywhere in Hestia Continent, but I can't believe you think it's rare. You're really expanding my horizons here!"

Those words caused David's face to turn red. That pride he felt was suddenly completely deflated.

The warriors from Hestia Continent got excited in the viewing area after hearing that. Some of them even started to clap!

Someone loudly shouted, " Jackie is right! David's the one who's short-sighted. He actually thinks something that's found everywhere is rare. Who's the ignorant one now?"

Chapter 3165
After the warriors of Chaos Continent heard what Jackie said, their expressions soured.

They looked at the warriors from Hestia Continent who had gotten excited thanks to Jackie's words and really wanted to say something. However, they could not find anything to say at all, because it was impossible to counter Jackie's words!

David started to pant loudly in the isolated space, "Brat, you're still constantly trying to challenge me. Don't forget, this isn't the waiting area. We're already in an isolated space. Don't you know how bad things will end for you if you continue?"

Jackie snorted, "Then attack me. We've been stuck with you wasting time here. Are you done with your nonsense? If you are, then hurry up and attack. I don't want to waste any more time on you."

The moment he said that, David's temper soared even more. Both his hands trembled as he clenched the ring in his hand tightly, "Very good. Since you want to die so badly, I'll give you what you want!"

David shook the ring in his hand, and lightning started to ripple around the ring, letting out a crackling sound.

David looked at the ring and said, “This is something I spent a lot of money to buy from a master craftsman. It’s been with me for a long time, and a lot of warriors have died to the Thunder God Ring!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, so the ring was actually called the Thunder God Ring.

The name sounded like it was unbeatable. It was obvious that the name was given to make himself look better.

Even though Jackie did not know what the materials used to make the Thunder God Ring was, David was still someone who was not even in the divine solidifying realm in the end. He was just a young master.

There was no way the Thunder God Ring had been crafted with anything exceptionally expensive. Among the young warriors, the Thunder God Ring might be expensive, but when it came to the whole third-grade world, it was probably just average.

The Thunder God Ring was an incredibly exaggerated name!

Jackie said helplessly, “Aren’t you afraid that you can’t live up to the name? The Thunder God Ring? How arrogant!”

David raised an eyebrow nonchalantly, “I named it the Thunder God Ring because I’ll truly become the god of thunder in Chaos Continent eventually. You can’t begin to imagine my future accomplishments. It’s not wrong to name it that!”

“My technique is called Thunder Destroys All! Using the Thunder God Ring, the technique will be greatly enhanced! I thought that Chris would have found you before me, and I wouldn’t have had the chance to show you how strong my technique is…”

“I can’t believe fate brought us together to let you die in my hands. I’ll let you see what Thunder Destroys All is, and what an upper earth rank technique is!”

The moment he said that David’s hands started to move rapidly, forming seal after seal. The Thunder God Ring was like a beast with its mouth wide open, absorbing all of the seals within and starting to glow vibrantly.

The crackling thunder got even louder. Even the surroundings were stained in its glow. David’s feet slowly left the ground, and streaks of thunder started to emit from his body, resonating with the Thunder God Ring in his hand.

At that moment, David was already a man made of thunder that was glowing brightly. His whole body was surrounded by purple lightning!

Jackie raised an eyebrow, standing in place and not moving. Even though he asked David not to waste time, he was actually in no hurry to end the fight.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3166 - 3170 -

Chapter 3166
Even though David was nothing in Jackie's eyes, each battle was still a chance for him to improve himself.

Jackie's skills had already improved quite a bit, but he lacked experience. Hence, every time he met an opponent that was on the strong side, he would hold back, not giving up the chance to train himself!

After David rose into the air, he stopped. He looked down at Jackie with a cold smile, "Brat! You'll find out what happens when you offend me soon!"

Jackie could not stop himself from rolling his eyes after he heard that. Even now, David was still intent on wasting time.

Jackie could not be bothered to entertain him. He merely stood in place like an unmoving willow.

After feeling Jackie's gaze, David frowned. He clenched his teeth as he looked at Jackie, not saying anything else!

He let out an angry roar as he started to form seals with his hands again. The Thunder God Ring let out an intense glow, so bright that it forced people to shut their eyes.

They heard a loud crackling sound as a ray of thunder shot right at Jackie. Jackie hurriedly retreated, avoiding the strike!

David's lips curled up in disdain as he said, "You managed to avoid the first one, but you can't avoid the rest! Since you managed to avoid one thunderbolt, how about ten!"

After he said that, ten thunderbolts shout out with a boom, shooting right at Jackie again. Those ten bolts took up a large area, and they charged over incredibly quickly! Unless Jackie had a speed technique, there was no way Jackie would be able to avoid it!

At that moment, the warriors in the viewing area all held their breaths! If Jackie could not avoid it, he would definitely get injured from that attack!

Jackie activated the laws of space. When the thunder was only three feet away from him, Jackie disappeared from the spot, appearing two hundred feet away!

Right after that, a huge boom was heard. The spot Jackie was previously at, turned into a massive crater after being damaged by the thunderbolts!

David was stunned at the sight.

He had thought that he would be able to deal with Jackie in one blow. Yet, Jackie had actually managed to avoid it.

David came from the eighth-grade clan, the Frenzied Blade Clan. Even if he was not as high-ranked as Chris was in the Purple Cloud Pavilion, his skills were still regarded highly.

David immediately recognized that Jackie had used the laws of space.

He frowned as he coldly said, “I can’t believe you actually know how to use the laws of space!”

Jackie smiled lightly, not bothering David at all. In his eyes, being able to use the laws of space was something incredibly normal, but David did not seem to think so.

Jackie knew that David never regarded him as normal from the start!

The laws of space were something only masters could wield. David thought that Jackie did not have the right to use them at all!

The warriors in the viewing area were in an uproar again. They had witnessed Jackie’s skills before and had thought that his skills would be around David’s level.

They never expected that Jackie was able to use the laws of space. Even if it was just a minute, it was still far stronger than most warriors.

Chapter 3167
Even talented warriors were not able to master the laws of space after many years of training, yet Jackie could actually use some of it. He was even able to use the laws of space to avoid David‘s attack!

” Jackie’s skills far exceed my expectations. I thought he already revealed his strongest techniques to us, but it was just a small part! Jackie’s too strong!”

“It looks like Jackie actually has a decent chance of winning. After all, with the laws of space, he’ll be able to use it to get close to David as long as he manages to avoid David’s long-range attacks! He would be able to launch a sudden attack that David won’t be able to stop!”

“Now I’m sure that Jackie will win! Even if it’s just a small part of the laws of space, as long as he uses it well, he’ll be able to seize the initiative! It doesn’t matter if the two of them are about equal in strength, but as long as Jackie constantly avoids and dodges David‘s attacks, David‘s true energy will be spent eventually. Then, David will just be a fish on the chopping board!”

“What’s the point of his attribute countering Jackie’s? His technique is too amazing. David’s definitely in a rough position. If this continues, this might turn into a war of attrition.”

“If it becomes a prolonged battle, it would be a death sentence to David! After all, David’s Thunder Destroys All uses up a lot of true energy each time he attacks!”

The disciples of the Frenzied Blade Clan could not take it when anyone said that David would definitely lose.

One of the inner disciples said loudly, “What do you know?! Stop trying to curse David. Do you think David doesn’t know what you’re saying? Do you think he‘ll let Jackie keep on avoiding his attacks and use up his true energy? Anyone who can say something like that clearly lacks experience with combat!”

Everyone had their own things to say. The viewing area went into an uproar once again.

David did not know that arguments had broken out because of them since he was in an isolated space.

At that moment, he had electricity in his eyes as he coldly looked at Jackie, “No wonder you dared to act so arrogantly in front of us, saying you’re not afraid of anyone. It’s because you mastered a bit of the law of space so you can avoid my attacks!”

After he said that, David let out a cold laugh as he said with disdain, “That’s a naive thought! So what if you’ve mastered the laws of space? It’ll only let you run. If you can run, can’t I just stop you from running? Don’t think it’ll be that easy!”

Jackie looked up and said calmly, “I’m not the one thinking things will be too easy, but you.”

David’ s lips twitched as he was rendered speechless.

He found that he had no way of guessing what Jackie was thinking no matter what. He felt like Jackie kept on surprising him more and more.

David narrowed his eyes and said in a low voice, “I know how you’re planning on winning. Aren’t you planning on using the laws of space to constantly avoid my attacks and expend my true energy?”

“Then, you’ll wait until my energy is spent before you attack, right?”

Jackie’s lips twitched as he shook his head seriously.

He had never thought of doing that. He used the laws of space just because he wanted to see how strong David’s attack was, but David seemed to make his own conclusions!

David did not know what Jackie was thinking. He merely looked at Jackie's calm demeanor and got even angrier.

Jackie always looked like he did not care, as if anything that happened around him would not affect him at all.

David hated seeing Jackie like that. He narrowed his eyes as he formed seal after seal again, fusing the seals with the Thunder God Ring.

Chapter 3168
Suddenly, the Thunder God Ring glowed a lot more vibrantly. Many more thunderbolts shot out.

This time, Jackie was already prepared. After the thunderbolts shot out, he fixed his gaze right on them, preparing to avoid them at any moment. However, Jackie was surprised when the thunderbolts did not head for him at all, but the air around him.

After some crackling noises, countless thunderbolts struck his surroundings.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as surprise flashed on his face.

What was David trying to do?

As Jackie was feeling confused about it, he was shocked to realize that the area where the thunderbolts struck had countless small currents around them.

Those currents did not disappear immediately and instead seemed to linger in the air. Thunder constantly struck, and in just a moment, their surroundings were completely surrounded by currents!

David had a smile on his face as he shouted again, "Let's see how you avoid it now!"

The moment he said that Jackie understood what was happening. He frowned as he activated the laws of space again.

This time, it was not as smooth as usual. When he activated the laws of space, the small web-like currents were stuck in space.

The space that Jackie could use had a lot of electricity stuck in it. Jackie let out a low roar as he activated all his true energy to summon up all the laws of space he could control.

The space that was filled with electricity was incredibly hard to move in. When Jackie appeared again, he was only thirty feet away from his earlier position.

With Jackie's mastery of the laws of space, he would have been able to move at least two hundred feet in one go if the electric currents had not interfered. However, the currents present greatly affected Jackie's use of the laws of space. Even after giving everything he had, he was only able to move three hundred feet!

His ability to avoid any attacks had been greatly diminished.

"Hahaha," A string of laughter came from the air.

Jackie looked up to see David incredibly pleased with himself.

David said loudly, "Are you panicking now? I have already told you. Those meager skills of yours aren't even worth mentioning in front of me. Did you think that you're invincible just because you know how to use the laws of space a little? I still have my ways to deal with you!"

"If you have mastered the laws of space to a level worth nothing, I really might not be able to do anything to you. However, you only know a tiny bit of it! I just needed to use a few of my skills, and you're already captured in my net! Let's see how you'll avoid my attacks now!"

Seeing that, the discussions in the viewing area changed again.

A lot of the warriors from the Chaos Continent felt like they could finally breathe sighs of relief.

Those ignorant fools from the Hestia Continent had talked down on David so much for their own pride. It was the warriors from the Chaos Continent's turn to have something to say.

The warriors from Chaos Continent started to speak loudly.

Chapter 3169
"Did you all hear that? That's the gulf between them! So what if he knew how to use the laws of space a little? In front of true masters, it's all for naught! David has a way to overcome anything Jackie can throw at him! Even if Jackie has some skills, he won't be able to escape David's grasp!"

"Without the laws of space, Jackie will have to face David's attacks head-on. The countering of attributes isn't something that can just be played around with. Jackie is in trouble now!"

" Jackie's plans have all gone up in smoke. His movement has been confined to thirty feet. He won't be able to completely avoid David's attacks. Looking at him, it probably took a great deal of effort for him to even move that far."

“The true energy he needs to use the laws of space is probably now comparable to what David needs. Even if he wants to deplete David’s true energy, his own energy is depleting too! His plans have been foiled! I just wonder how long Jackie will be able to take David head-on.”

The warriors all felt like Jackie’s chances of winning were not that high at that point.

They felt like he probably only stood a twenty or thirty percent chance of winning. Unless Jackie still had other trump cards, Jackie would definitely lose. He might not die, but he won’t be able to avoid heavy injuries.

One of the disciples from the Frenzied Blade Clan said loudly, “Let’s see how much he wants to brag now! He completely looked down on everyone before this. He really deserves a proper beating! Now, David will be able to deal with him properly. There’s no way he’ll get to be that arrogant now! It would be best if he could be dealt with in one go. I don’t want to see his arrogance anymore!”

After he said that, a lot of the warriors of Hestia Continent were quite unhappy.

The warriors from Hestia Continent had felt that Jackie’s actions had been humiliating because they did not know how strong Jackie was before.

They had thought that Jackie participating in the slaughter gambit would only embarrass them. However, Jackie had used his skills to change their minds.

Jackie had suddenly become Hestia Continent’s biggest hope!

Jackie being insulted by the disciples of the Frenzied Blade Clan made the warriors from Hestia Continent quite unhappy, “The results are yet to be seen, so stop bragging! Even if it’s a bad matchup in terms of attributes, if Jackie manages to perform normally, it’s still impossible to tell who’s weaker! Jackie might still have some trump cards. David is no match for him at all!”

An inner disciple from the Frenzied Blade Clan countered, “What trump card? How could he have a trump card? Even if Jackie does have more trump cards, do you think David doesn’t? Jackie can’t win because he can’t win, there’s no need to argue about it anymore”.

“Even though the match hasn’t ended, the results are plain for everyone to see! Jackie will definitely lose. If you’re free to help Jackie argue, shouldn‘t you be praying for Jackie to not die from this instead? Otherwise, the consequences will be disastrous for Jackie!”

David was so happy at that moment that his smile reached his ears.

When he saw Jackie frown, he was happier than if he picked up a million spirit crystals on the street. He was already quite familiar with Jackie's temperament at that point. Jackie was really good at acting.

No matter what others said or what happened, Jackie was able to act like he did not care. Even though he was excellent at acting, Jackie actually started to frown, revealing his inner worries.

David guessed that Jackie must be incredibly terrified at that moment!

He was probably incredibly worried that he would lose and be tortured until he died. David was already dreaming about how Jackie would look as he kneels on the ground and begged for mercy.

That would feel great. He would definitely pay back for all the anger Jackie had caused him. Jackie would definitely be tortured!

At that moment, other than a slight frown, Jackie did not reveal much emotion.

He had not frowned because he was afraid that he would lose. Instead, it was just the first time he was not able to easily use the laws of space. His opponents before this had all not really reacted to this technique.

Chapter 3170
It was the first time Jackie had encountered anyone who could restrict his laws of space.

The fact that David could do it probably meant that Chris and Edward had their own ways as well! It looked like he would need to leave the laws of space for crucial moments in the future. He could not let his opponent's know of his abilities!

David narrowed his eyes before he started to form seals once again. He was eagerly looking forward to Jackie kneeling and pleading to him. He did not want to waste any time as his seals fused into the Thunder God Ring again!

The Thunder God Ring glowed as ten more thunderbolts were shot at Jackie!

The sounds of thunder resounded in his ears, and Jackie knew that he could no longer avoid them. He was forced to face it head-on!

He let out a sigh before he formed seal after seal, condensing forty Soul Swords in the air.

When he faced Luther, Jackie had not held back and formed a hundred Soul Swords to kill Luther immediately. However, he did not want to do that at that moment. David's skills were quite a bit better than Luther's.

To Jackie, David was quite a good whetstone to sharpen his battle experience. That was why he merely formed forty Soul Swords. He wanted to see what the result would be if he only used the first stage of Destroying the Void!

This place was different from before. Forty Soul Swords in the outside world was different from within the Whirling World.

After all, the Whirling World restricted everyone's abilities. Everyone had been restricted to the late stage of the innate realm. Back then, he had needed to use his techniques to make up for the difference in power.

Yet, everyone was on the same level there. It was a true test of technique against technique. He wanted to see what the results would be when a technique at the second stage of the upper earth rank went against an upper ultimate god rank technique.

With that in mind, he shot forward and rushed right at the thunder!

Quite a few of them widened their mouths in shock when they saw what happened.

Was Jackie crazy?

He was rushing right into the thunder.

Was he not afraid of being burnt alive?

Soul attribute techniques were naturally bad against thunder attribute techniques. Hence, Jackie's techniques were already handicapped. Even if Jackie was strong, the warriors in the viewing area all felt like Jackie was definitely going to lose!

He was definitely no match for David in a head-on fight. He was looking to die!

When David saw Jackie rushing forward, he laughed as he shouted, "Since you want to die, I'll grant you your wish!"

Jackie never cared about what his opponents had to say. His eyes were only looking at the thunder. He let out a shout, and forty Soul Swords condensed into one massive one, fusing into Jackie's sword.

With a slash, the sword clashed with the vibrant thunder. Everyone merely heard a boom as the two attacks clashed violently against each other.

Waves and waves of energy were pouring out. At that moment, everyone's eyes were widened. Even if the light was incredibly bright, hurting their eyes, they were still not willing to avert their gaze. They were worried they would miss out on any detail.

After some crackling noises, the gray slash sliced the thunderbolts in half!

The gray slash had noticeably lost a portion of its power, but it still raced toward David!

Jackie raised an eyebrow. It was just like he thought. The power of an upper ultimate god rank technique was not to be challenged. It was a whole level apart. Even if Jackie only used the first level, the result was obvious for everyone to see!

He let out a sigh as he changed his mind. He controlled the slash that was flying in the air and made it dissipate.

It was still not time for the final strike. He did not want it to end so quickly.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3171 - 3175 -

Chapter 3171
Jackie turned around and headed back to the ground, standing firmly.

At that moment, David was already stunned. He looked at Jackie in disbelief.

It was then did David realize that Jackie did not just know how to use the laws of space. Jackie was actually not weak either.

Otherwise, how could Jackie have split open his attack?!

David's lips trembled slightly as his expression stiffened. When he realized the fact, he was naturally not very willing to accept it However, he was still forced to!

David gulped as his expression darkened. He glared at Jackie through clenched teeth.

After a long time, he finally spoke, "So you're actually not that weak. Were you just putting on an act the whole time?"

Jackie was speechless after he heard that.

He had never tried to put on an act. He had even told all of them quite firmly that they were no match for him. Yet, they

always refused to listen. They felt like Jackie's words were a joke. They did not believe him nor accept what he said.

Now that they saw the truth, they ended up accusing him of faking everything. Jackie was incredibly exasperated at that moment, not knowing what to say.

After a long time, Jackie finally spoke, "What is wrong with your heads? Tell me, when have I ever put on an act? In the waiting area, I answered everything you asked me honestly, you were the one who refused to believe it."

David replied furiously, "Aren't you an alchemist?! How could an alchemist possess skills like that? What else could it be other than you putting on an act?!"

Jackie let out a laugh before he took out his sixth-grade alchemist badge from Mustard Seed.

He lifted the badge and shook it around, "Look closely! I've never put on an act. I really am an alchemist. I'm not just a sixth-grade alchemist either. Are alchemists not allowed to fight?"

David’s lips stiffened when he saw the sixth-grade alchemist badge and he gaped slightly.

He felt like something was stuck in his throat. He was unable to say anything. Upon closer inspection, David was sure that the badge was real.

It really was a sixth-grade alchemist’s badge. Even though they were from different worlds, the patterns and seals on alchemist badges were the same. There was no way to falsify it, and Jackie’s name was even on it.

David’s lips twitched as he struggled to find something to say. It was clear that Jackie was not lying. It was just that they misjudged Jackie because they were too stuck on their own impressions. However, they could not really be blamed for that.

In the first place, Jackie was from Hestia Continent. Just that alone would have invited them to look down on him.

Secondly, Jackie was an alchemist.

Whether it was in Hestia Continent, Chaos Continent, or White Marsh Continent, it was practically impossible for alchemists to be strong when it came to combat. That was common knowledge!

Alchemists usually put all their thoughts and focus on alchemy.

How could they have time to practice fighting?

If an alchemist was stronger than warriors that dedicated themselves to combat, it would be unreasonable!

Yet, everything that he had seen that day had shattered David’s preconceptions! Even if he hated Jackie, he still had to accept that truth. The viewing area once again exploded in an uproar thanks to Jackie.

Jackie had faced David head-on, and actually did not lose. They had also seen that the slash still had some power to it after breaking through the thunder.

However, it had just consumed too much energy to hold on to its form, causing it to disperse in the air. None of the warriors there realized that Jackie had been the one to disperse the slash.

Chapter 3172
Jackie had done that earlier to trick those who were watching his battle. He wanted everyone to think that the slash had expended all its energy and dispersed in the air instead of him dispersing it.

After all, if the truth was revealed, there would be no reason to continue the fight.

David was completely stiff. He remained floating in the air, but his eyes started to lose their calm for the first time. They quickly reddened as he started to look like a ghost that just climbed out of hell.

His lips constantly twitched, and he seemed like he was constantly burning with intense rage. He stared at Jackie viciously, wanting to curse at Jackie, but not able to find a reason.

All those things he had said to insult Jackie before this had suddenly lost their meaning.

Jackie was not trash, but a warrior that could stand on an even footing against him. Jackie was not just an alchemist, but a warrior that could rival him.

He could not help but place Jackie in the rankings of the Frenzied Blade Clan. Based on what Jackie had shown thus far, Jackie would at least be in the top ten!

Just thinking about that caused David's face to twist. All of that had completely shattered his prior experiences.

When were alchemists ever able to do all that?

Since when did alchemists end up being at the same level as him in combat?

The more David thought about it, the angrier David got. He really wanted to just slice Jackie up, but it was not that easy!

He composed himself for a long time before he widened his eyes and said, "Even if you weren't lying, you still intentionally put on an act before. You wanted to mislead us so you would be able to shock us at times like this. You really are full of tricks. I've never met a warrior as dishonorable as you before!"

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation when he heard that. Even if he did not lie, he was still putting on an act.

Jackie snorted, "You've already completely muddled up the truth. Since I didn't lie, how was I putting on an act? You've already been completely blinded by your hatred. You refused to acknowledge my skills, insisting on blaming me…"

"Why can't you just admit that you were blind? I've never hidden anything from anyone, it was just you who had thought that my actions were crazy. After that, you even constantly ridiculed me in the waiting area, saying that you'd show me your skills…"

As he said that, Jackie let out a laugh.

He looked at David coldly, “Well, I’ve seen your skills now. It’s nothing special!”

David was absolutely furious. His face started to swell in anger as he clenched his teeth, “Don’t think that you can win just because you were capable of facing me head-on. I still have some tricks up my sleeve. Don’t get too excited!”

David had said all of that through clenched teeth. It was obvious how angered he was.

They were facing each other in the isolated space, and outside the isolated space, the viewing area was in an uproar.

The fight was constantly changing, and their mood was with it. It started with everyone thinking they would be evenly matched to them siding with Jackie after seeing Jackie use the laws of space.

After that, they saw that David had suppressed Jackie’s technique, and the odds seemed to be in David’s favor. The situation had been overturned yet again. After experiencing everything, all of them were incredibly excited!

“Oh my! This is entertaining! I thought that Jackie rushing at the thunder would have been his last move! Yet, he was actually able to face that attack head-on without any fear!”

Skip to content

Chapter 3173
“You can’t blame us for being so excited. Even David himself was shocked. Just look at his expression. He clearly doesn’t want to accept the truth…”

“He finally realized that Jackie’s no pushover. Jackie won’t just focus on running away. Jackie’s skills are equal to his. Even with the advantage in attributes, Jackie managed to face one of his attacks without any fear!”

“That’s right. I feel like David ‘s just barely holding on. His mental state is probably already in complete disarray!”

“His face is already starting to turn purple. He must be suffering inside!”

As they said that, quite a few of them shook their heads helplessly, even starting to sympathize with David. After all, David had not seen Jackie’s duel with Luther earlier.

David had always felt like Jackie was just an ant that he could kill at any time. Yet, the ant had turned into a phoenix. Even he could not really face Jackie.

Would that not mess with his head?

“If I was David, I probably would not be able to keep it in! I’d go crazy with anger. After all, he’s ridiculed Jackie so much, but it turns out he was just the one who had been blind. Jackie really is strong, and he looks like a complete clown now!”

That person hit all the right points. Quite a few people agreed with him.

David’s expression was so sour at that moment probably because he was remembering everything he had said before. All of those words had come back to slap him in the face.

Jackie really did have the skills to not be afraid of everyone there, the others were just ignorant!

Those discussions turned into the main topic of conversation, causing quite a few people to lose their calm.

The ones from the Purple Cloud Pavilion and the Frenzied Blade Clan were the primary ones affected. After all, Jackie’s conflicts with Chris and the others had been seen by everyone. Their conversations in the waiting area had been spread everywhere too.

During that time, not a single person regarded Jackie nicely. In truth, nothing would have happened if no words were spoken, but Chris, Edward, David, and the others kept on ridiculing Jackie. They made Jackie seem completely useless.

Now that Jackie had proven his skills, everything they had said before this seemed like a complete joke. The disciples from their clans could obviously not remain calm.

One of the inner disciples from the Purple Cloud Pavilion said, “Before the conclusion, you shouldn’t be in such a hurry to praise him! This guy is a bit skilled, but so what? He’ll just die in the end anyway. His appearance just caused us some surprise!”

A warrior from Hestia Continent heard that and immediately countered, “Can you not be so stubborn? Even with what Jackie’ s currently shown, even Chris would need to think twice about facing him. The final victor isn’t certain yet! Best to watch what you’re saying right now because once the final results are out, those words might end up slapping you in the face!”

One of the inner disciples of the Frenzied Blade Clan said with a sour look, “Stop being so reactionary. Jackie is strong, but he’s not strong enough that he can ignore everyone. This is just the start. There are still many battles waiting for him!”

Chapter 3174
“It’s still early in the game. Don’t make conclusions so early. No matter what you say, we won’t believe you! You warriors from the Hestia Continent really are quite amusing. After so long, someone like Jackie finally appeared. All of you suddenly seem so proud of yourselves!”

The warriors from Hestia Continent were thoroughly angered by those words. They were not willing to just accept it and shouted back loudly.

“So what if we’re proud? Jackie is strong. Is there anything wrong with being proud of that? Do you remember how all of you seemed so proud of yourselves when you looked down on us?”

“Didn’t you act like that because you have some very strong warriors from your worlds? Now, look at how you’re acting. Are you the only one allowed to be proud? Who do you think you are?”

The tension in the viewing area was immense.

The warriors from all three worlds did not like each other. Those warriors wanted nothing more than to gather themselves to go against the warriors from the other worlds.

The place had lost control of itself!

At that moment, the ones feeling the most frustrated in the viewing area were the disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion of Hestia Continent.

Their disciples naturally knew who Jackie was.

Grayson had issued an order to capture Jackie alive no matter what. Yet, with what was happening in front of them, they were suddenly at a loss for what to do. Jackie’s skills had exceeded any of their expectations. If Jackie really managed to survive, his fame would soar. Then, many forces would throw olive branches at Jackie.

If that happened, it would become much harder to deal with Jackie. Yet, Grayson had issued a firm order. If they did not complete it, they would have to take responsibility!

An inner disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion clenched his teeth and said, “Why does it have to be Jackie?! The Unbreaking Pavilion must just be fated to have trouble with Jackie. Ever since we met Jackie, our troubles have never ceased…”

“First, so many of our men died in that level nine city. After that, So many things happened in Thousand Leaves City and Prosper City. We’ve never managed to gain anything from all of them. If he survives this, the Unbreaking Pavilion might end up being targeted by Jackie. It would be a big problem if that happens!”

A chosen disciple next to that man frowned and said, “You’re worrying too much. Even if he wants to deal with our clan, he’s just one man… We have so many men, why would we be afraid? As long as all of us remain united, he would have no chance to do anything to us!”

The inner disciple sighed as he looked at the chosen disciple, “I’m not trying to praise him at our own expense. It’s rarely a good idea to offend someone as talented and strong as Jackie.”

“You’re right, he’s alone, while the Unbreaking Pavilion has strength in numbers. However, that also means he has much more freedom! If he gets the chance to ambush our disciples, a lot of us will die!”

Those words were the crucial points of the conversation.

Just like that inner disciple said, the Unbreaking Pavilion had the advantage of numbers, but it also meant that they were not as flexible. Jackie was too strong.

If Jackie encountered any stray disciples, there would only be one result!

Over a long time, a numbers advantage would be useless. They would need to gather all the disciples together to stop Jackie from getting these chances.

After the disciples around him heard that analysis, all of them started to frown. It was definitely a problem they would have to face, and it was a serious enough problem that their lives were at stake.

Chapter 3175
After thinking about it for a long time, the chosen disciple said, “Let’s not jump into things too quickly. The slaughter gambit is still on. Jackie might not be able to leave this alive. There’s still one problem for him. Chris is very strong. It won‘t be easy for him to kill Chris!”

In the isolated space, David finally calmed down after a long mental struggle.

No matter how much he hated Jackie, he still needed to deal with what was in front of him. He had to kill Jackie, or the consequences would be horrible!

David took a deep breath before he raised his chin and said, “Aren’t you feeling pleased with yourself? You think that you can win just because you faced one attack from me. Let me tell you, it’s impossible!”

“I haven’t even shown you my last and strongest attack. I was planning on leaving it for Chris, but surprises always happen. I actually need to use it on you!”

After saying that, David’s whole body glowed brightly.

Everyone heard a shriek as six wings suddenly appeared behind David. Those wings glowed intensely, making him look like a god.

David formed seal after seal, and the wings constantly danced. Thunder constantly jumped around those wings! David's aura had changed. His sharp eyes were actually glowing purple.

He looked like a massive current himself, glowing brightly in the air.

He said loudly, "This is called the Wingest Thunder God Possession. It's the strongest attack I can use! It's also the second strongest attack within Thunder Destroys All!"

"Prepare to receive my anger, Jackie. You'll definitely not be able to stand up to this! Even Chris would need to retreat and avoid facing it head-on, let alone you, whose skills are countered!"

Jackie's lips twitched after hearing that.

He laughed and said, "You just love to brag so much! What do you think Chris would do if he heard what you said? Would he try to avoid facing you head-on after hearing that?"

Sure enough, Jackie was always able to strike David where it hurt. David was absolutely furious, wanting to rip Jackie apart. His hatred was already at its peak!

He already decided that he would even burn his blood essence if he could not kill Jackie with this move. After all, it was survival of the fittest within the isolated space. Even if he had to pay for it with his life, he would make sure Jackie died with him.

At that moment, David had already been driven completely crazy by Jackie. He was like Blade form before, willing to even discard his own life!

Jackie did not know what David was thinking, but it would not make a difference anyway. If David wanted to hurt himself, they would see if he could last!

Jackie took a deep breath, forming many seals with his hands.

Sixty Soul Swords suddenly appeared in front of Jackie. Those Soul Swords glowed dimly, like an arrow show out of hell. It was obvious they were dense with soul energy!

Jackie said loudly, "Come! I want to taste how strong your technique is. However, let me remind you, this is my last attack too."

David glared at Jackie hatefully. He shouted out, "Brat, I'll kill you!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3176 - 3180 -

Chapter 3176
The moment that was said, rumbling thunder reverberated across the sky. It was as if the sky itself was about to be split open by the thunder.

The six wings on David's back started to move faster and faster. Countless runes were released from the wings, heading toward the Thunder God Wing. The thunder started to take a reddish-gold color.

With David at the center, faint electricity currents surged at about 60 meters around him. They seeped into David's intense killing intent, and it made for an awe-inspiring sight.

Jackie took a deep breath as he adopted a relaxed expression. Even after that final attack, Jackie still planned on testing himself.

At that moment, he adjusted Destroying the Void to the second level.

The first level used 10 Soul Swords, the second used 50, and the third used 100 of them. Jackie had condensed 60 Soul Swords, enough to be at the second level.

The two of them looked up at the same time. Looking at David suspended mid-air, Jackie aimed to break that so-called Winged Thunder God Possession.

With a crackle, a 15-meter-long thunderbolt shot right at Jackie.

He frowned as he jumped into battle again, rushing toward the thunderbolt. He let out a roar as he slashed his sword.

The gray slash looked like a crescent blade in the night. It went at a speed invisible to the naked eye as it aimed toward the massive thunderbolt.

After that, intense crackling sounds could be heard. The spot Jackie was at was already covered in the golden glow. Everything happened so abruptly that the spectators could barely catch on and predict the outcome!

At that moment, a gray slash the size of a fist broke through the golden light and quickly sped toward David‘s chest.

David had already spent all his energy at that point and was in a very weakened state. When he saw the slash flying at him, he suddenly panicked. However, his battle instincts kicked in swiftly, and he managed to evade the attack.

Yet, Jackie had already imbued the laws of space into that slash. Despite the fact that the slash was still 15 meters away from David, it appeared right in front of him in just a flash.

David let out a cry as he frantically tried to avoid it. At that moment, he shuddered as he cried out. However, it was all too late.

With a thud, he saw the gray-colored slash piercing his heart. The intense pain caused his whole body to stiffen. After that, he lost all sense of reasoning as he fell from the air, much like Luther did. He plummeted to the ground and was evidently incapacitated beyond relief.

Jackie landed back on the ground as well. He looked on as David writhed on the ground in pain just like Luther had. Sure enough, most people reacted the same way when it came to pain in the soul.

The pain completely burned away all sense of reasoning. He was no longer even able to use the true energy in his body, which caused him to drop to the ground from the air.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Even the power of 60 Soul Swords could not be underestimated. It really was an upper ultimate god rank technique. Against such a technique, upper earth-rank techniques were nothing.

The Winged Thunder God Possession?

A fancy name it was, but it posed no threat at all to Jackie.

Jackie let out a laugh as he slowly walked toward David.

He controlled the power within David’s body, ensuring that Destroying the Void slowly consumed David‘s soul.

He still remembered what David had told him in the waiting area. David had said that he would slowly torture Jackie to the point he understood the difference between their powers.

Jackie remembered everything David said, and it was time for him to pay the price.

The situation was completely different from what David had said. Jackie was the hand that dealt judgment instead, and David slowly understood the immense difference between them.

Chapter 3177
David spasmed in agony as his snot and tears stained his whole face. He no longer carried the same demeanor as he did before.

It led everyone to sigh.

The warriors in the viewing area once again fell silent. No one could say anything about the result.

It did not matter if they had supported Jackie or if they had thought that he would lose. After witnessing everything that had happened, not a word came from them.

David had said that he had a trump card, but the warriors there did not react too much to what he said. After all, they felt like Jackie would also have a trump card as well. Now that they saw the trump cards of both sides, they could not remain calm.

David had sent out his strongest attack, and Jackie had faced it calmly. The results far exceeded their expectations. Jackie had easily dealt with David's strongest attack, winning the battle!

All this while, Jackie barely reacted against such a powerful attack, too. There was no difference from when he faced Luther!

A disciple from the Chaos Continent gulped and said, " Jackie's far too strong! I don't even think he has shown us everything. He might still be able to be even stronger…"

"That explains why Jackie acted so calm the whole time, he's been holding back. Even David's strongest attack was beneath his notice!"

"That's right! He's too strong! I don't even know if Chris would be stronger than him. Before this, I thought that Jackie wouldn't be able to compare to Chris even if he's somewhat skilled, but now, I think I may stand corrected!"

" Jackie didn't participate in the slaughter gambit because there was something wrong with his head or because he was ignorant. He really does have the skills to stand against Chris!"

"This fight was so entertaining, and I had a good time watching it. I'm really looking forward to Jackie's fight with Chris now. It's going to be entertaining for sure! It's just a pity that my one and a-half million spirit crystals have gone down the drain. I shouldn't have bet on David. I'm regretting it so much!"

Most of the warriors there had bet on either Chris, Edward, or David. After all, the three of them were recognized as the strongest.

Just thinking about Jackie's incredibly high odds, they deeply regretted their actions. With the odds being so good, they would have gotten back over three million even if they had just bet half a million!

A lot of them were filled with regret, and the ones who regretted it the most were the warriors of Hestia.

Back then, the warriors of the White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent had been fighting so hard to prove that Chris or Edward was stronger.

To stand up for a warrior from their own continent, they had bet their spirit crystals on someone from the same continent. The warriors of Hestia should have done the same, betting on Jackie in solidarity, yet they had thought that he was an embarrassment instead. They even wanted to say that he was not one of them!

Thus, all of them had bet on warriors from other worlds, but as they saw Jackie's skills, they deeply regretted their actions. They wanted to slap themselves in the face!

It was all too little, too late. They were forced to silently lament everything. If they had placed two million on Jackie earlier, they would have gotten at least 17 million once the slaughter gambit ended.

Just thinking about that large sum made them excited. Alas, there was no cure for regret in the world.

Chapter 3178
In the isolated space, Jackie calmly looked on as David writhed on the ground in pain.

He thought of how arrogant David had been before they entered the isolated space, and the memory only amused him.

Warriors like David loved to render their judgment on others so that they would be able to show how much more talented they were compared to everyone else.

Every time he bumped into someone like that, Jackie would want nothing to do with them. However, people like them would be relentless if he ignored them, and they would do everything they could to make him admit that they were more talented than him. Just because of that, they would form a grudge against him.

Jackie let out a laugh as he felt Destroying the Void consuming David's soul.

At that moment, David's soul had already been mostly consumed. At this rate, David was at death's door already.

He still had some things to say, so Jackie formed a seal and stopped Destroying the Void's power within David's body, causing it to dissipate. David slowly regained his sanity.

David was already on the brink of death at that point. He only had a few breaths left in him.

He opened his eyes with great difficulty and saw Jackie standing next to him. The first thing he did was to use his divine senses on his own body, which caused him to notice that only a third of his soul was left.

He realized that he did not have much time left.

No wonder Jackie stopped. Even at the end of his life, he was still deeply afraid of the pain. If he knew that he would not need to bear the pain much longer, he was still terrified. That was because the pain of his soul being torn apart was far too difficult to bear.

He would rather die than suffer the pain again. He gulped as his entire body shuddered.

His lips trembled as he feebly spoke, “Just let me die… I admit defeat!”

David no longer cared about his honor or dignity at that point, having discarded them at this point. The pain in his soul had caused him to toss aside his dignity as someone strong.

Jackie let out a laugh. “Then kneel in front of me right now, beg me for mercy like what you said I’d do before this. If you do that, I can consider letting you off.”

David‘s face stiffened and paled. His eyes were completely red, and he felt like he was about to go crazy.

Jackie wanted him to kneel and beg him!

Earlier, he did put his honor aside by admitting defeat, but that did not mean he had discarded everything. If he was to kneel and beg Jackie for mercy on the spot, it would completely shatter whatever honor he had left.

David felt like he would not be able to do that, even if he died, he would not do it.

David looked around him. Even though there was nothing around, David knew very well that all the warriors in the viewing area must be staring at him and Jackie with widened eyes.

If he did so, it would be him tarnishing the Frenzied Blade Clan’s reputation before he died. He could dishonor himself, but he could not dishonor his clan!

For the sake of dying a quick death, he would be forced to kneel in front of his opponent. The opponent was even from Hestia, a place that he had always looked down upon!

He panted roughly, already at the brink of collapse. He was deeply afraid of the pain of his soul being ripped apart, but he could still not bring himself to cross that line.

Various emotions surfaced in his heart, and David suddenly felt something up his throat. He spat out a mouthful of blood and coughed intensely as his whole body trembled.

Chapter 3179
Jackie looked at David, who was on the brink of death, and suddenly let out a laugh. “Do you still remember what I told you before?”

David coughed violently as he looked up slowly after hearing Jackie’s words, his expression muddled with conflict.

Jackie did not wait for David to answer as he continued, “I told you that I’d make you repeat everything you said after entering the isolated space. I kept you alive instead of continuing to torture you to death precisely for this!”

He slowly bent his knee as he spoke, staring right into David’s eyes. He looked on and said, “You said I was too arrogant, that a mere alchemist could never dare to challenge you. You said I didn‘t know my place and that you’d show me, through your actions, the gap between the two of us. Do you remember all that?”

Jackie was unperturbed when he spoke as if he was talking about what he had for dinner.

David’s lips twitched as he could not stop himself from thinking about what had happened in the waiting area.

He had held himself to such a high standard and treated Jackie like he was worthless.

To him, Jackie was nothing more than a joke. Yet that joke was torturing him to extremity at that moment. Even if he did everything he could, he was still no match for Jackie.

David’s whole body shook, and even the muscles on his face started to twist.

Jackie continued, “You said that there’s a gulf between the two of us. Can you please explain to me what the gulf is?”

“You even told me I didn’t know how strong true experts are. Can you please explain to me right now how strong they are? I really do not know.”

Hearing that, David’s breathing got even more erratic as his pale face slowly turned red. He felt like he was completely humiliated.

Hearing those words again made it look like he was being unbelievably arrogant. He wanted to defend himself, but he did not know what to say.

Jackie's words had naturally spread to the ears of the warriors in the viewing area. Hearing that, the warriors could not stop themselves from sighing.

Before entering the isolated space, Jackie's conversation with David had been spread all around the viewing area, and none believed in Jackie.

How the tables have turned. He had looked down upon everyone else because he did have the right to do so.

There truly was a gulf between Jackie and David, but it was Jackie who had the higher ground while David was merely dirt on the ground.

A wandering warrior in the viewing area could not help but shake his head and say, "This world really is full of surprises. I can't believe David was the conceited one! It's true after all that no one should ever be underestimated!"

A warrior of high status next to him said, "I always knew something was wrong with Jackie. By that, I don't mean he's a lunatic, but his actions are just far too strange."

"Made our conclusions about him far too quickly, and we didn't know anything about him, so he felt like everything he said was too much of a joke. However, I feel like anyone sane would not have done anything so absurd without a reason."

"That's why I felt like Jackie was hiding something. Now, it seems my guess is correct. However, he didn't really hide anything, it's just that I never imagined the truth!"

Chapter 3180
Before this, someone said that Jackie was an alchemist without any background. Could a wandering warrior really reach his heights? Not only is his alchemy exceptional, but his prowess is extraordinary too. He's no regular guy. Jackie can't be a mere wandering warrior!"

After that person said that, the wandering warriors around him shot back.

"Please don't mindlessly speculate. Just because you think it's impossible, doesn't mean others can't do it. So what if he's a wandering warrior? Are wandering warriors not allowed to be masters?"

"There are plenty of hidden masters among wandering warriors. Are disciples from high-grade clans the only ones allowed to be masters? I hate ignorant fools who like to assume things like you!"

The viewing area was filled with arguments, while David was barely holding on to his final thread in the isolated space. He had no response to what Jackie had said. He only felt like he was incredibly humiliating, and that he was a complete joke.

David slowly raised his head and said loudly, “Are you using a lower ultimate god rank technique?!”

Jackie was taken aback by his words. He never expected that David would say that after all he had said.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and laughed as he said, “Why do you say that?”

David took a deep breath before he summoned up the last of his remaining strength, “I’m no idiot… I felt how strong your technique was when I clashed with you…”

“I lost, and I’m willing to accept that, but I’m sure that even if I‘d perfected my Thunder Destroys All, I still wouldn’t be a match for you! That won’t be the case if your technique is the same level as mine… That’s why I’m sure that you’re using a technique higher than earth rank!”

After he said that, he laughed at himself, “I can’t believe I mocked a master among masters. After all this humiliation, I accept that I was ignorant.”

After he said that, the soul in David’s body could no longer hold on. It dissipated completely. With a thud, David fell to the ground, and he breathed his last.

Jackie merely chuckled. He knew that David did not need his answer, but David still guessed wrong, even if the answer was very close.

Destroying the Void was not a lower ultimate god rank technique, but a higher one.

Jackie shook his head slightly before he shot one last look at David’s corpse. After that, he turned around and headed in another direction.

The image of a person flashed in Jackie’s mind. The next person he needed to deal with was that person!

The isolated space was silent once again, but the viewing area had erupted with noises. David’s final words ignited the emotions of all the warriors in the viewing area.

After someone heard David‘s words, they said, “What did David say? Jackie’s using a lower ultimate god rank technique? Do my ears deceive me? A lower ultimate god rank technique?”

“You heard right. If you hadn’t, there’s no way the viewing area would be in such an uproar. It was a lower ultimate god rank technique!”

“David seemed very sure of himself when he said that as well. He was dying anyway, so there was no reason to fool around. What David said after that seemed logical as well. I feel like Jackie has definitely used a lower ultimate god rank technique!”

“What?! Is it true? I refuse to believe ultimate god rank techniques would be so easy to learn. Even divine solidifying realm experts might not be able to learn them! Jackie’s not even over sixty years of age, so can he really compare to someone in the divine solidifying realm?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3181 -3185 -

Chapter 3181
The only thing I can say is, there's always someone better. This guy is an absolute master!"

"Before arriving at the Whirling World, I had a feeling there would be a monster who was able to use a lower ultimate god rank technique gathered among all the masters in the Whirling World. I can't believe I saw one so quickly!"

"It's unbelievable. We thought he was a weakling with a damaged brain, but he's practically a god among us!"

Due to what David said, the viewing area was completely bustling. Compared to how excited everyone was, however, the expressions of the Unbreaking Pavilion's disciples were all sullen as if they were at a family funeral.

The inner disciple from before looked at the massive scroll in the air helplessly. After a long time, he slowly said, "What kind of misfortune have we brought on ourselves? A lower ultimate god rank technique? That's not something to be played around with. Can we even deal with it?"

Another inner disciple next to him said, "Of course we can't. Unless we attack him with great numbers, it won't be a problem for him to deal with us one or two at a time…"

"Even if we attacked him in a group, he can use the laws of space that he mastered to escape. We'd be the ones in danger!"

The one sitting in the middle of the disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion was their leader, a chosen disciple of the Unbreaking Pavilion. At that moment, his face was just as sunken as the others as if he had lost his whole family in a single night.

He frowned and thought about it for a while. "Let's stop discussing this. We should hurry and report the news. After Grayson learns about it, he'll definitely make the best decision. Then, we'll just have to follow his orders!"

Back in the isolated space…

David's corpse slowly got colder as time passed. Four hours after Jackie left, Chris arrived.

When he saw the lifeless body, he thought that the corpse might, again, be Jackie. However, he was stunned when he landed. No matter how he thought about it, he would never have guessed that the person who died was David!

Chris frowned as he hurried over. With a wipe, he noticed that David's corpse had already gone cold, much to his surprise. Even though only one person would survive the isolated space, David should not have died so quickly after entering the slaughter gambit with his skills.

Chris had assumed David would have been one of the last ones standing, one that he would battle and win against. Even Edward might not have the skills to kill David!

For David to have died so early into the match…

It made Chris have doubts.

Chris knelt and observed David's corpse. After his study, Chris was surprised to notice that David had died just like Luther did. There was no trace of any injuries caused by weapons on the corpse, and the soul had been torn apart.

From the attacks, the person who killed Luther and David should be the same person. When he realized that, Chris' expression changed.

He frowned as various thoughts surfaced in his head. That mysterious warrior had not just been capable of killing Luther, but David as well. This meant that the person's skills should at least be at his level!

Chapter 3182
He could not believe that an expert like that was hidden among the 10, but who was it?

Why had he failed to sense that person before?

Chris had a certain level of understanding of Edward. From the attacks, the two of them had not died to Edward.

Who was this, then?

How did this person hide everything so well that even Chris failed to notice?

At that moment, Chris was no longer in the mood to care about Jackie. The first thing he needed to do was to find this person before making his plans. He could leave the others aside for the moment, but this person had to die.

He could not leave this person to live on. If he did, unforeseen surprises might happen!

Chris' eyebrows furrowed tightly as his expression soured. He had thought that winning the slaughter gambit would be incredibly easy, but it seemed like he had been too optimistic.

He took a deep breath as he looked up. The clear skies had no clouds in them, and everything looked incredibly peaceful. However, he knew that the slaughter had already begun. If he did not want to die to that mysterious person, he had to make his moves carefully.

At the junction between the jungle and desert regions…

A dense forest was to the east, while to the west was an endless wasteland. The border was clearly defined, making for a magnificent sight. However, there were two people in there at that moment in no mood to admire the scenery at all.

Trevor frowned as he stared at Marco Reus in front of him unblinkingly.

Marco was truly a daredevil. He had no background and relied on himself to get to where he was. When he looked at Trevor, who was from a high-grade clan, Marco was filled with disgust.

He hated these so-called masters who grew up in a life of luxury. He felt that true growth only came from experiencing life and death, walking at the edge of danger.

Even if he knew that someone as strong as Chris was taking part in the slaughter gambit, he did not back down. Chris was strong, but Marco was no weakling either.

With a trick or two, Marco stood a chance to win in the end. As long as he could win, he would not only be able to greatly benefit from it, but win the applause of everyone as well. He would gain the admiration of everyone and gain irreplaceable glory!

Meanwhile…

Trevor might have a serious expression, but he was not too worried. He knew the person in front of him. Both of them came from White Marsh Continent, and he had heard of Marco’s name before.

When Trevor saw that Marco was looking at him in disdain, Trevor’s expression soured. Being looked down on by a wandering warrior was a massive insult.

Trevor snorted coldly. “Are you looking at me with that expression because you think I’m not that highly ranked? Are you looking down on me because my odds aren’t good?”

Hearing that, Trevor himself started to get angry. Marco was just a wandering warrior with no background.

How dare Marco look at him with those eyes? It was a joke!

Marco snorted before he said, “I am looking down on you? Yes! There‘s nothing about you that’s worth my notice. Even though you’re from the Pentagram Clan, you’re only in

the top fifteen at most. Among the ten warriors here, you're only average at most. Of course I'd look down on you!"

Chapter 3183
Those words triggered Trevor.

He was downright furious as he narrowed his eyes and said in a cold voice, "Even a wandering warrior like you dares to look down on me? True, my rankings aren't as good as the others, but that's something from half a year ago, and I've already improved greatly since then. I wouldn't even be afraid of David, let alone you!"

"If you were Chris, I wouldn't have said anything, but who do you think you are to look down on me? I'm already being very polite by not regarding you with contempt, but I can't believe you'd repay my kindness like that!"

Marco frowned and sneered, his anger starting to burn as his lips twitched slightly. "Don't think you can defeat me just because you're from a high-grade clan! Ever since I started as a warrior, I've killed so many so-called masters…"

"They might be talented, but their practical combat experience was dirt-poor. These daggers in my hands have drunk the blood of quite a few masters, and you'll be one of them!"

As he said that, he took out a pair of daggers from his storage ring, two of them were only about the size of a palm. They were small but incredibly sharp, quite different from regular weapons.

Normally, very few people used daggers as weapons since there were a lot of limitations. However, Marco had an affinity for using daggers and was very adept at using them as well.

He laughed and said, "You so-called masters always look at others with such arrogant expressions. Everytime I see you, I feel so disgusted. What gives you the right to be so arrogant? You're just warriors who got good resources…"

"Clans are like landlords in the mortal realm. You take up most of the resources and give them to your own disciples. Us wandering warriors are forced to struggle over what little remains, yet there are a lot of wandering warriors who carve a path for themselves with their own skills. If clans weren't around, all of you would be weaklings!"

Trevor was so furious that his lips trembled as he said loudly, "What kind of nonsense are you saying? Yes, clans do take a lot of resources, but that allows them to cultivate even more talented warriors."

"If you had the talent, you would've been accepted into a large clan. You clearly just failed the tests to enter the larger clans and aren't willing to enter a smaller clan at the

same time, that's why you're a wandering warrior. Yet, you make up all this faulty logic to defend yourself. What a joke!"

Trevor felt like Marco's words were a complete joke.

Major clans did take a lot of the resources, but that was so that they could give excellent warriors the chance to become strong.

Every year, countless warriors participated in the tests to join the major clans. Any warriors with confidence in themselves would take part. Even though he did not know what Marco had gone through, Trevor was still incredibly certain of one thing: Marco had definitely taken part in the tests for major clans before but failed.

That was why Marco had carved out all those excuses to save his dignity.

Marco's expression soured greatly. Trevor's words had hit him where it hurt. He narrowed his eyes slightly as he sentenced Trevor to death in his heart.

He raised his voice and said loudly, "Do you know what the consequences of your words will be?"

"I've always had an easy time killing others, and anyone who provokes me never gets a good ending. I'll make you regret what you said!"

Trevor's expression did not change, those words barely fazed him, too. He pulled out his sword from his storage ring.

Marco wanted to kill him, and he, likewise, wanted to kill him as well.

Chapter 3184
Marco's words had thoroughly angered Trevor, and they both regarded each other as mortal enemies internally.

The atmosphere suddenly grew tense as if they were both ready to attack at the next moment.

At that moment, footsteps were suddenly heard in the distance. The two of them paused at the same time as they turned and looked over. They saw a man in green robes walking over towards them slowly.

That person seemed incredibly calm as if he was admiring the sights. When Trevor saw who it was, his expression suddenly changed.

His lips twitched as his head filled with anger. "So it's you, Jackie! I can't believe you came looking for me before I even found you. It looks like you really want to die by my hands!"

When Jackie heard that, his lips curled up in an easygoing smile.

Trevor was right this time, Jackie really was looking for him. Before entering the slaughter gambit, Jackie had already planned on dealing with Trevor himself.

Trevor stared at Jackie with gritted teeth.

All their grudges from before this surfaced in his mind, causing Trevor to hate Jackie to the bone. Ethan had died at Jackie's hands, which meant that Trevor would be punished by the higher-ups.

This was why he had followed Jackie into the slaughter gambit. When Trevor saw the other participants, he started to hate Jackie even more. Because of Jackie, he had been too angry to even remember checking who the other participants were, which landed him in such a dangerous predicament.

After seeing Jackie, Trevor's hands shook as his true energy surged chaotically. Even the Polaris Sword in his hand started to hum. It was obvious that his anger was quickly eroding his rationality.

Marco narrowed his eyes before a chuckle escaped him.

"You really are a madman, always acting out of expectations. I guess you're here for Trevor?"

"Even if I look down on Trevor, I still have to admit that Trevor isn't as weak as you are. You looking for him here will just hasten your death. That's fine, though, at least you won't fall into Chris' hands. You know how much he hates you, and you'll only suffer unnecessarily if you walk into his hands."

Hearing the two of them speak, Jackie merely smiled as he looked at them calmly.

The noise in the viewing area quieted down, but when they saw that Jackie had found Trevor, the peace vanished instantaneously.

When they heard Trevor's words, they could not help but shake their heads internally. They could already see what kind of fate awaited Trevor.

Before this, two other people had said similar things to Jackie, yet both of their corpses had gone cold at this point.

Trevor' s grudge against Jackie had already spread throughout the viewing area before they even entered the isolated space. They knew that Trevor had participated in the slaughter gambit because he wanted to settle their score in the isolated space.

A warrior from White Marsh Continent shook his head slightly and spoke, “I thought that the two of them were just impulsive idiots, but it seems like Trevor is the only impulsive idiot. Jackie, on the other hand, participated in the slaughter gambit because he had the skills to!”

“There really are surprises everywhere. If someone told me before the slaughter gambit that Jackie has the skills to win in the end, I would’ve called them an idiot.”

“Isn’t that right? You’re not the only one who thinks that way. Everyone here thought that initially. The only thing I can say is that we really shouldn‘t be too quick to cast judgment on others.”

Chapter 3185
“I truly regret not just taking the chance and betting on Jackie back then. A warrior with a lower ultimate god rank technique. Other than Chris, no one has the right to face him!”

“I pity Trevor a little. He must be thinking that he’ll be able to squash Jackie like an ant and that his actions are driven by a mad mind. He’ll soon realize how laughable those thoughts are!”

“I’m beginning to feel bad for him. With Jackie’s temper, there‘s no way Jackie will let Trevor off easy. I’m certain that he’ll torture Trevor for even longer than he tortured David.”

No one had anything to say about that thought either. Unless Trevor was using a lower ultimate god rank technique as well, he stood no chance.

Everyone already knew the results of that fight.

The ones with the most complicated emotions at that moment were the other disciples of the Pentagram Clan. Evan and the others were still at the gambling area. Not a single person had left the viewing area, so there was no space for them there at all. All they could do was stand on their toes to watch what was transmitted on the scroll.

When they saw Jackie appearing in front of Trevor, Evan and the others felt a chill in their hearts. It was then did they realize how much of a joke their various actions were.

Back then, they felt like everything Jackie did was hilarious, but they realized that Jackie was not the fool in this story but they were.

They had actually made an enemy out of such an outstanding master. They were the ones who were unlucky!

At that moment, Evan felt his tears pooling in his eyes. He really wanted to rush into the isolated space to tell Trevor not to say anything and to run away. At least then Trevor might be able to stay alive.

If Jackie ended up fighting against Chris, Trevor might be able to find an opportunity and get out alive, but only one result awaited Trevor if he faced Jackie!

Evan‘s breathing got more erratic as he started to pale. The disciples behind him had similar expressions to Evan, and they were starting to lose hope.

An inner disciple from the Pentagram Clan said, “How did it get to this? Why is Jackie so strong? Isn’t he an alchemist? Where did he get so much time to learn everything?! This is unbelievable! Am I dreaming? I have to be!”

Evan glared at him viciously after hearing what he said. “What kind of nonsense are you saying? This isn’t a dream. Just pinch yourself and you’ll know!”

The inner disciple‘s lips twitched awkwardly. “It’s all too hard to believe! Could Ethan have been wrong? Maybe the Jackie he met before isn’t this one…”

“Whatever, just shut up!” Evan was already trembling in anger.

“Is this the time to say all of that? Rather than thinking about all of this, why don’t you think about how we’re going to report this to the main team when we meet them?!”

Evan and Trevor were both chosen disciples. With Trevor missing, he was the leader of the team.

At that moment, Evan was no longer hopeful. There was a very high chance that Trevor might never come back. Even when he was filled with pain, he needed to think about what he would do after this.

Trevor and Ethan were both extraordinary disciples. With both of them dead, it was quite a big blow to the disciples on the Pentagram Clan in the Whirling World.

At that moment, they needed a long discussion if they would seek Jackie for revenge or forget about it. After all, they were not in the outside world.

Going against a master like Jackie would have big consequences even if they had so many of them around!

At that moment, a familiar voice was heard, “I thought that Trevor would ‘ve been killed by someone else before met Jackie. It seems like Trevor is quite lucky. He didn’t even encounter a single battle after so many hours and managed to survive this long!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3186 - 3190

Chapter 3186
Rudy did not say all of that to challenge them, but merely because that was what he thought.

In the end, the fact that Trevor had managed to be safe for so long was because his skills were not that strong, but not that weak either. He came from a high-grade clan and although he could not compare to Chris, Edward, and their ilk, he was not weak

Chris and the others had seemingly left a mark on everyone else.

Trevor had basically been hoodwinked into this slaughter gambit. He had joined because he did not want Jackie to be killed by anyone else. He did not know that anyone would leave a mark on him, so he had not checked for them at all.

Naturally, they had yet to be cleared.

Everyone who left a mark on him knew where Trevor was at that moment, but he had not been targeted because he possessed skills and came from a good background.

Chris, Edward, and the others wanted to get rid of the weakest before the final battle started. That would prevent any unexpected situations and Trevor happened to not be among those. Furthermore, Trevor was from an eighth-grade clan.

Leaving him for the last was a form of respect toward the Pentagram Clan. However, Rudy did not think that deeply about it. He merely lamented Trevor's good luck.

Evan turned around to look at Rudy with a complicated expression. He still remembered how they completely looked down on Jackie and Rudy. On top of that, with Ethan's grudges against Jackie, they had automatically grouped those two as enemies.

Even Ethan starting a death match against Jackie had been just a nuisance in Evan's eyes. After all, alchemists were all weaklings in their eyes.

Yet, they never expected that their grudges against Jackie and Rudy would get deeper until they reached that state. There was no longer any way to repair their relationship. Furthermore, Jackie's abilities were unbelievable. Evan doubted that he would even be able to escape from Jackie.

At that moment, Evan was already starting to regret everything. If they had stopped any conflict with Jackie after the death match, things would not reach this point.

Yet, it was already too late. The slaughter gambit had already started, and Jackie was already standing in front of Trevor. The two of them were definitely going to fight.

Evan took a deep breath and said, “The two of you were just putting on an act all along! Your acting skills were too good, and you managed to trick all of us. However, even if Jackie is strong, you can’ t hide his underhanded tricks!”

“Don’t think that the Pentagram Clan will be afraid of you two because of this. We’re an eighth-grade clan in White Marsh Continent. We have plenty of strong warriors…”

“Even if we’re currently in the Whirling World and restricted by age, we still have many strong chosen disciples to support us. The strength of our top two disciples is much stronger than Chris. If the two of them were here today, you wouldn’t be so pleased with yourself!”

Hearing that, Rudy just felt incredulous.

He coldly snorted and said, “Idiot! You were the one who was being stubborn. You clearly refused to give us any leeway, and now you know the results of that. To regain your dignity, you can say anything. When did we ever put on an act?”

“Were we the ones who provoked you first? Do you have a goldfish’s memory? Don’t you remember how we met? Ethan was the one who ran up to us like a madman, spewing all these harsh words…”

“Ethan wanted to regain his honor which was why he started a death match against Jackie. Then, he wasn’t skilled enough and died in the arena. Was that us putting on an act?”

Chapter 3187
When that was said, Rudy had a look of disdain on his face. He hated those kinds of people the most, those who were sore losers.

Evan’s face reddened in anger. His chest rose and fell, looking like he was about to faint from his anger at any moment.

He paused for a long time before he said, “Stop trying to be obstinate. Even if Ethan’s grudges were not acting, what about after that? Wasn’t the slaughter gambit a trick you pulled?”

“He kept on saying that he would give Trevor a chance to kill him so that Trevor would fall for it! Both of you actually already knew what he was planning!”

He finally found a reason. When Evan said all of that, he looked like he had been deeply wronged, and was seeking justice for himself.

Rudy pursed his lips, unable to stop himself from laughing. He narrowed his eyes and looked at Evan like an idiot.

“You think that’s called acting? Jackie said he would give Trevor a chance to kill him, why is that called an act? Isn’t that a chance? A chance needs to be seized. Who can you blame but Trevor for not having the skill to seize it?”

Evan’s face darkened in anger. His rationality had been completely burned away by Rudy’s words. He reached out and grabbed Rudy by the collar, raising his right fist and aiming it right at Rudy’s face.

He was just about to send his fist over when the disciples behind him quickly pulled him back. They grabbed onto both of Evan’s arms, and someone even held onto Evan’s waist, pulling him aside.

At that moment, Rudy was infuriated as well.

After Evan let go of his collar, he adjusted his clothes in anger. He stared coldly at Evan and shouted, “You want to fight me? Come on then! If you don’t do it, then you’re just a coward! I can‘t stand people like you!”

Evan’s face reddened even more after hearing those words. His veins popped as he clenched his fists tightly.

He glared at Jackie with clenched teeth. Even if the disciples behind him were frantically holding him back, they could not stop him from struggling.

He had already lost all rationality at that moment. Even if he needed to pay for it with his life, he would teach Rudy a lesson!

An inner disciple that was pulling Evan’s right arm said bitterly, “Evan, calm down. This guy is trying to trick you, you mustn’t fall for his trap. The moment you attack, you’ll end up being punished. You won’t be able to survive it!”

Evan who was still struggling, shouted back, “Stop trying to stop me! So what if I die? Before I die, I’ll vent my frustrations on this brat! These two shameless and despicable guys have harmed us so much. We can’t let them be so pleased!”

The disciple that was holding onto Evan’s left arm was almost crying, “Evan, calm down! Jackie’s skills are unfathomable, do you think Rudy’s skills can be that bad? Before you hit him, you’d already have been punished…”

“Then you’ll turn into ashes, while he’d be perfectly fine. Wouldn’t that be completely pointless? He’ll end up being even more pleased with himself. Just think about it!”

Those last words successfully calmed down the rage in Evan. He panted heavily as his entire body shuddered.

Chapter 3188
The disciple was right.

Jackie was so strong that he could use a lower ultimate god rank technique, so how could Jackie's follower be any weaker?

The guy in front of him might even be his equal.

The moment Evan attacked, he would not just fail to kill Rudy, but he would die instantly from being punished by the laws as well!

That would be completely pointless.

He snorted lightly, "Let me go. I've already calmed down. I won't do anything reckless!"

After hearing Evan's words, the disciples holding him back slowly relaxed their hands and let go of Evan.

When they saw that Evan was no longer acting impulsively, they breathed sighs of relief.

If Evan died there, they would really not be able to explain anything.

Rudy smiled in disdain, "You really are a coward!"

Evan's anger soared again after hearing Rudy's words. However, he did not allow his anger to take over his rationality this time.

He could tell that Rudy had said all of that to provoke him into attacking so he would be punished by the laws. Evan let out a scoff, "I won't fall for your trick! We don't even know what will happen yet. We still don't know who will win!"

After hearing that, Rudy laughed again, "Then you can just wait and see!"

The gambling area was incredibly bustling, and the isolated space was similar. At that moment, Trevor looked incredibly happy as he narrowed his eyes and stared at Jackie.

"I thought that I would be able to kill you myself by participating in the slaughter gambit, but you just went crazy insulting everyone. I had lost any hope of killing you myself then…"

"I can't believe you want to die by my hands so much. You came looking for me before I even found you. Even luckier that you found me before Chris found you. It looks like Lady Luck is smiling upon me!"

As he said that, Trevor's smile was already threatening to split his face in half. Trevor's smile was incredibly sinister as if he had found his prey!

Jackie let out a laugh as he remained calm as if Trevor would not be able to affect Jackie no matter what Trevor said.

Marco frowned, feeling like Jackie was acting stranger and stranger. Ever since he stepped into the waiting area, Jackie had constantly surprised him.

He had already regarded Jackie as a complete madman.

Trevor had said so much, but Jackie did not feel threatened at all, remaining calm and quiet. There was even a smile on Jackie's face.

It was as if whatever Trevor had said just now and whatever was about to happen had nothing to do with Jackie at all.

Marco said curiously, "Could you really be crazy? Everything you're doing right now only makes you look like a madman. Don't you know what you're about to experience?"

"Do you think you can't escape Trevor? Don't you know the gulf between alchemists and true warriors?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he finally looked at Marco.

He did not have a deep impression of Marco. After all, the only ones who could leave an impression on Jackie were only the stronger ones.

Chapter 3189
In the waiting area, Marco had sat by the side, remaining quiet no matter what anyone said.

Jackie frowned, "I think you're called Marco, right? You're a wandering warrior from White Marsh Continent That makes the both of us wandering warriors, so why are you talking to me like this?"

Jackie had no intentions of challenging Marco with those words, he was just curious as to how Marco was so confident.

Both of them were wandering warriors without any background, but Marco acted like he was a master from a high-grade clan.

Marco's face darkened, getting angry at Jackie, "This has nothing to do with being a wandering warrior. You're a worthless wandering warrior, but I'm different! Furthermore, you come from the trashiest place, Hestia Continent!"

“Even though I’m a wandering warrior, I came from White Marsh Continent. White Marsh Continent has plenty of resources to improve my skills. Even without a high-grade clan to rely on, I can still carve a path with my own skills!”

“Hestia Continent has no resources nor do they have any masters. The limited resources have already been cleaned up by your major clans. There are no resources left for wandering warriors at all! What’s more, you’re only an alchemist and that makes it even worse for you!”

Saying that Marco raised his chin proudly.

Jackie scoffed, successfully getting angered by that guy. It was one thing to insult him, but Marco had even insulted Hestia Continent.

Jackie never expected that Marco would be so proud of his status as a wandering warrior and even insult him.

Jackie snorted as he looked aside, not bothering Marco at all.

When Marco saw that Jackie was completely ignoring him, Marco started to get angrier. If he was looked down on by others, he would prove them wrong with his power. Even if he was angry, it would not affect his rationality. However, he could not: stand being looked down on by Jackie.

Who did Jackie think he was?

Marco furrowed his eyebrows and walked forward, “Brat! You dare to ignore me? What gives you the right to do that? Today, even if Trevor doesn’t kill you, I‘ll be waiting by aside to get rid of you at any moment. I’ll slowly torture you after that. I have the time anyway!”

Jackie’ s lips twitched helplessly.

They were all familiar words and phrases. Anyone who had a grudge against him would always threaten him like that. He could even hear it a few times in a single day.

Jackie was already so numb hearing those words that it made him almost yawn. Marco said he had a lot of time, and Jackie naturally had the time to keep Marco company.

Since that was the case, Jackie turned around and said to Marco, “So what if I’m ignoring you? I’m not just ignoring you, I’m also looking down on you! We‘re both wandering warriors, but all you do is brag! You said that you carved a path for yourself by going through many hardships. What can’t you say?”

“Do you think we’re all idiots here? If you had enough talent, you would have been accepted by a high-grade clan. Did you need to suffer as a wandering warrior?”

Marco's face reddened in anger after he heard that.

Trevor could not help but laugh at the side. Earlier, he had struggled to come up with things to say against Marco.

It seemed like Jackie had quite a good mouth on him even though he was crazy. He had successfully shut Marco up.

Marco widened his eyes, "You've successfully angered me now!"

Jackie said in exasperation, "So what? Did I say anything wrong? You said you're stronger than me. How so? I have yet to witness that, so can't I look down on you?"

Marco was absolutely infuriated. He clenched his teeth and shouted back, "You dare look down on me?!"

Chapter 3190
Marco's actions were practically just asking for trouble.

Jackie let out a laugh, going along with Marco, "I do look down on you. The caretakers placed our odds so close together. It means that even the caretakers think that you're nothing special."

"My odds were at seven point five, while yours were at seven point one. There's only a difference of four decimal point, but you speak as if there's a massive gulf between us. Is there anything wrong with me saying you're bragging?"

Marco felt like he was about to explode from anger, "Stop using the odds, they don't mean anything! The fact that our odds are close is just a reflection of the caretakers' thoughts!"

"The caretakers merely use their surface level impressions to determine the odds. They don't know the difference between us at all. Even the warriors in the viewing area know more titan the caretakers. Just pull any of the warriors from the viewing area over. They'll be able to tell you who's stronger between the two of us! They'd be even more accurate than the caretakers!"

Marco's words had been heard by all of the warriors in the viewing area via the massive scroll.

All of those warriors had complicated expressions on their faces when they heard that.

Some of the warriors lamented, "We naturally know how the two of you compare. We are clearer than the caretakers as to who is stronger, it's just that it's completely different from what you think!"

“If Marco knew about the truth, he would definitely be filled with regret. Honestly, I agree with Marco’s words but in a different sentiment that the odds the caretakers set really are a bit off…”

“They’re underselling Jackie. If I was the one to determine the odds, I’d give Jackie the lowest. Even one point one percent odds would be too high!”

A man in blue robes looked like he wanted to say something, but stopped.

The man beside him looked over and said, “I know you’re close to Marco. Do you think he’ll be able to beat Jackie?”

As the man said that, he seemed to have a mocking look on his face.

It was no longer a question of whether or not Marco could win, but how long Marco could survive against Jackie.

The blue-robed man’s face darkened, knowing that he was being mocked. He snorted, not saying anything. When it was obvious that the blue-robed man would not answer, the man lost interest.

After that, with a serious tone, he asked, “Do you have any hopes for Marco? You have to answer me. If you don’t, I’ll keep asking questions and annoy you to death!”

The man was adamant that he wanted to chat with the blue-robed man. Even if the blue-robed man was not willing, it seemed like he had no choice.

He was forced to say, “All I want to say to him right now is for him to shut up!”

He really was quite close to Marco. The two of them knew each other since they were young.

They were friends who had gone through many things together. He was naturally worried now that Marco was in danger. After witnessing Jackie’s skills, the blue-robed man could already see how things would end for Marco. He had thought that Jackie would not trouble Marco so much since they did not have any conflicts between them, and would give Marco a quick death.

Yet, something seriously went wrong with Marco’s head.

Marco seemed insistent on offending Jackie, trying his best to show Jackie how much better he was than Jackie. He seemed to have successfully angered Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3191 - 3195

Chapter 3191
With Jackie's personality, he would definitely not let Marco off easily!

The blue-robed man had his hand against his forehead, "Marco, I'm begging you, shut up! If you keep on talking, Jackie might not even leave your corpse intact!"

The blue-robed man had always treated Marco like a brother. As he said that, the blue-robed man looked like he was about to start praying.

Even if the blue-robed man was incredibly conflicted for Marco's sake, Marco seemed to have no intentions of stopping within the isolated space.

At that moment, Marco only seemed to have one thought in mind. He wanted to kill Jackie himself, and torture Jackie to his heart's content!

Trevor could no longer wait. He felt like listening to their nonsense was pointless.

"Alright! I don't want to waste any more time listening to you two! Jackie! Every additional breath I let you take just makes me feel uncomfortable. It's time to settle our grudges!"

As Trevor said that, he formed seal after seal.

Countless seals started to merge into the Polaris Sword in his hand.

The sword started to glow in silver light. It started to glow brighter, and with a whoosh, a silver flame was formed on the sword. The flames burned more and more intensely. It had a strange glow, even distorting the air around it!

The silver flames soared higher and higher. After a few moments, it turned into a flaming beast!

The beast was the size of two fists. The moment it was born, it started to violently spit out flames around it. Its eyes glowed silver as he glared right at Jackie!

Trevor gently stared at the beast on his sword, "The technique I'm using is called the Polar Annihilation. My sword was made specifically for it. The power of stars has condensed fire into it."

"This flaming beast is made with starfire! Let me remind you, starfire is different from regular fire. The moment it touches you, it will burn you to the core. Unless it burns you to a crisp, it won't go out!"

Saying that, Trevor paused for a moment before looking at Jackie. He had a proud smile on his face, “You must have never seen anyone using an upper earth rank technique before! Before you die, I’ll let you witness one!”

Jackie’s lips twitched, not knowing what to say at that moment.

The warriors in the viewing area actually laughed after they heard that.

“What did Trevor say? Jackie has never seen an upper earth rank technique? I‘m going to lose my teeth from laughing too much. Even lower ultimate god rank techniques aren’t anything much in Jackie’s eyes, let alone upper earth rank techniques. Even if Trevor was using an ultimate earth rank technique, it would only be at Jackie’s level. What’s there to experience…”

“Trevor looks like he’s still being kept in the dark. He knows nothing about Jackie’s skills at all. I heard that Trevor joined the slaughter gambit for the sake of killing Jackie himself…”

“I guarantee you, that decision is the worst decision he’s made in his life. Even if the top disciple of the Pentagram Clan wanted to kill Jackie, the chances are probably low, let alone a chosen disciple that isn’t even in the top ten!”

Chapter 3192
Rudy started to laugh out loud when he heard that in the betting area. Even his stomach started to hurt. He felt like Trevor was acting like a complete clown at that moment.

Trevor thought that he would definitely win, but Trevor was actually nothing in Jackie‘s eyes!

David’s skills were far above Trevor’s, but David still died in Jackie’s hands without even managing to put up a fight!

Rudy laughed so much even tears started to fall. He rubbed his eyes as he looked over at Evan.

Rudy said to him, “You guys said we were ignorant fools before this. Who’s the ignorant fool now? Are upper earth rank techniques that rare? He wanted to show it to Jackie? That’s hilarious!”

Evan’s lips twitched, really wanting to shout something back at Rudy, but he struggled to find anything to say. After all, Trevor’s actions really were pathetic at that moment.

In the isolated space, Jackie was speechless for quite a long time before he slowly said, “So it’s an upper earth rank technique. How amazing. Come on and show me, then!”

Even though nothing seemed wrong about those words, Trevor was no idiot. He could tell from Jackie's expression that they were not sincere at all.

Jackie even seemed to be teasing him!

Trevor's eyes twitched as he decided against wasting any more time with the conversation. His instincts told him that he might actually be angered to death by Jackie if he continued. After all, even Chris had failed to beat Jackie's mouth.

Jackie did not care who the opponent was. As long as he did not like the person, the person would be thoroughly angered.

Trevor took a deep breath, not waiting any longer as he clutched the Polaris Sword tightly. His eyes had a violet glint on them as he slashed right at Jackie with one hand.

At that moment, he was so quick that only an afterimage was left. It was obvious that Trevor's technique focused on speed, but it was not that high ranked. Still, it was enough to deal with ordinary warriors.

Jackie snorted, feeling like Trevor did not practice what he preached. Trevor kept saying that Jackie was beneath Trevor's notice, but when Trevor attacked, he seemed incredibly serious.

It seemed like Trevor was afraid of any surprises as well, so Trevor planned on making sure his first strike hit. It would not kill Jackie immediately, but it would cripple Jackie.

With that thought in mind, Jackie merely stood on the spot, not moving. He started to form seals with both his hands, and gray seals started to form in the air.

Sixty Soul Swords were suddenly formed. Those Soul Swords looked like spirits dancing in the night, floating in the air.

Jackie clapped his hands together, and the swords merged into a massive Soul Sword, fusing into the gray sword in Jackie's hand.

Jackie was already incredibly familiar with Destroying the Void and could control everything easily. The killing intent coming from in front of him caused Jackie to raise an eyebrow.

If the person in front of Trevor had really been a normal alchemist, he might have been terrified. However, Jackie was not just an alchemist. Alchemy was just a way for him to earn spirit crystals.

He had never paid much attention to alchemy. Trevor roared angrily, "Die, brat!"

The beast around the Polaris Sword roared at Jackie.

From its silver eyes came a bloody glow!

Chapter 3193
The flaming beast charged right at Jackie.

Jackie let out a laugh as he shot out his blade. The gray slash pierced through the body of the flaming beast.

The silver flame that was burning intensely suddenly looked like cold water had been poured on it after being pierced by the gray slash. The flames were suddenly put off!

Everything had happened too quickly. It exceeded any expectations.

Before Trevor could even react, he felt a chill in his neck. Liquid started to flow out of his neck.

When he looked down, blood had stained his clothes.

Seeing that, he felt his mind go numb, unable to process what had happened. After that, another piercing was heard, and a sharp pain came from his wrist.

He looked down and saw that blood was frantically shooting out of his wrist. His tendons had been sliced by Jackie, and he lost control of his hand. He could no longer hold the Polaris Sword, causing it to fall to the ground.

The clanking of the sword assaulted Trevor’s senses. However, the pain did not stop.

Right after that, a piercing pain came from his legs. His legs lost the ability to support his body and he collapsed on the ground with a thud.

That was not all. He watched as the gray energy that came from Jackie started to seep into his body from the wound on his neck. After that, a wave of maddening pain was felt, causing him to cry out in agony.

He felt like his soul had been thrown into a nest of poisonous snakes. Those poisonous snakes bit him over and over again.

What was even more saddening was the fact that his arms and legs had been severed. He tried to move and escape the pain, but he was unable to even turn his body around. All he could do was twitch helplessly on the ground.

Cries of agony constantly came from his throat. He looked like he had been possessed by a demon.

Just looking at the sight would cause anyone to get goosebumps and retreat a few steps.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at the scene calmly. He did not show too much expression, because everything was in his control. Other than Trevor's cries of agony, he heard the heavy breathing of another person as well.

He looked up toward the sound. Marco, who was so arrogant earlier, had paled as his hands trembled slightly. He stared right at Trevor, who was completely submerged in pain.

Jackie let out a laugh as he walked forward. He did not forget that there was someone else there other than Trevor.

When he heard the footsteps, Marco looked like he had been summoned by the god of death. He abruptly looked up and stared at Jackie with reddened eyes and fear.

It had only taken a few seconds from the start of Trevor's attack to Trevor crying out in agony on the floor. Everything had happened far too quickly. Since he had not known about Jackie's skills, Marco was filled with shock.

His breathing got more and more frantic as he retreated subconsciously.

Marco gulped as he retreated and said, "So you've always just been in a disguise! Aren't you despicable?"

"I said everything I did because I didn't know anything about you. If I knew you were this skilled, I would definitely not have said anything. Can you just show me some compassion and let me go?"

Marco really was afraid at that point. That was because everything that had just happened seemed too terrifying for him.

He was not some inexperienced wandering warrior. After going through so many battles, he could naturally tell that Trevor might have said that he looked down on Jackie, but Trevor had definitely used his full strength in that earlier strike. Yet, he was defeated with just one blow.

Chapter 3194
Jackie had attacked so casually, and Trevor's technique was like a piece of broken paper in front of him, ripping apart easily.

That gray slash had pierced through the silver flames like a massive rain that completely extinguished the flames.

Jackie let out a laugh after he heard that, "Just listen to what you' re saying. Don't you think it's hilarious? If my skills really weren't up to par, would you let me off if I asked?"

“You would just humiliate me even more. You wouldn’t even hesitate to attack. Causing me more pain would make you even happier!”

Hearing that, Marco felt a chill in his heart. Jackie would definitely not let him off.

After understanding that, he did not hesitate anymore as he turned around to escape. He activated all of his true energy, even burning his blood essence!

As long as he still had a chance to escape, he would not give up. However, there was no way Jackie would let him. At the moment, the distance between the two of them was four hundred feet.

Marco had calculated it in his heart. Four hundred feet greatly benefitted Marco. As long as Jackie did not have any speed techniques, he would be able to run away.

However, the moment that thought flashed in Marco’s mind, he heard a gust of wind blow past him. He turned to look and his eyes widened dramatically.

Jackie had already arrived next to him!

The gray sword pierced forward without hesitation, aiming right for his chest. Marco felt a chill as his blood started to flow out. After that, a bone-piercing pain was felt.

His soul was slowly being ripped apart from his chest. The pain was something no one could bear.

With a thud, he fell from the air, landing heavily on the ground. Jackie followed down as well.

Jackie let out a mocking smile. Even though he had never learned any speed techniques, he knew how to use some of the laws of space. He only needed to use the laws of space twice to reach four hundred feet away.

Jackie let out a laugh as he grabbed Marco‘s collar, pulling Marco toward Trevor.

They were not too far away, and he only needed to drag Marco for a little bit before he tossed Marco at Trevor. Marco landed three feet away from Trevor.

At that moment, both of them were being tortured by the pain of their souls being ripped apart. Since Trevor‘s arms and legs had been snapped, he could only twitch. Marco was in a better state, but the pain still caused Marco to lose all his rationality.

Marco constantly rolled on the floor, and his tears constantly flowed.

In just a few seconds, the arrogant man had turned into someone who looked like a beggar on the streets, incredibly pathetic.

Jackie looked at the two of them and did not show much emotion on his face. To the cries of agony in the isolated space, the viewing area was strangely quiet.

The result was within everyone's expectations. Seeing the two of them in such a bad state, the warriors there could not even let out a sigh.

One of the victims was a chosen disciple of a high-grade clan. As long as nothing happened to him, his future would be incredibly bright.

The other did not have any noble status, but he was rich in combat experience. He had been several times more talented than ordinary wandering warriors. Yet, the two of them had lost to Jackie without a chance to even fight back.

After a long time, someone said helplessly, "Do you think Jackie was putting on an act earlier? Was his act just too good? None of them could tell at all. Or maybe it was because they had too many preconceived notions that caused them to be blinded from Jackie's true strength…"

Chapter 3195
"Just look at how combative Jackie was from the start. Does that look like he's putting on an act? We thought he was too arrogant then, not understanding his place…"

"Now, we finally see that we were the ignorant ones. Jackie had every right to say all of that! From the start, he had no intentions of hiding anything, it was just that everyone else failed to see that face!"

"They thought that Jackie was just a crazy alchemist. Thinking about it now, any alchemist with a shred of logic would not have participated if he was not suicidal. Even warriors like us wouldn't dare to participate in the slaughter gambits."

"All of us have been talking about Chris' skills. We talked about it so loudly as well. There's no way he did not hear our discussions, but he still didn't seem to care. It means that he really didn't care. It's not just the warriors in the waiting area that didn't see through him, but all of us as well!"

"You're right, we were too wrapped up in our own preconceived notions. On top of that, he's even from Hestia Continent. We didn't think there was any other possibility at all. It's a pity that they don't have the massive scroll to see what Jackie is doing as we do. If they knew of Jackie's skills, none of them would dare to face Jackie head-on!"

At that moment, Evan was about to go crazy in the betting area. From the image on the massive scroll, he could clearly see Trevor constantly struggling on the ground.

Trevor's tendons had been snapped by Jackie.

That sight was so cruel that many averted their gaze. Evan had encountered a lot to get to where he was, but he still failed to control himself after witnessing that scene.

Tears constantly flowed. He was actually crying. All the disciples behind Evan looked incredibly miserable as well. They seemed to have lost all hope.

They were done for now!

There was no other consequence that awaited Trevor. Evan took a deep breath. His whole body trembled, hating himself for not stopping Trevor back then.

At the time, he might have looked down on Jackie, but he still felt like the slaughter gambit was far too dangerous. Unfortunately, Trevor had already made up his mind. Trevor had refused to listen to anyone else and was adamant that he would follow Jackie into the slaughter gambit.

“Trevor, you were too impulsive. Jackie was setting a trap, but you fell into it just like that!” Evan’s voice was trembling.

Rudy‘s lips twitched when he heard what Evan said. He wondered that even at this point, Evan still threw all the blame on Jackie. Just hearing that made him angry.

He turned to look at Evan and said, “I admit that Jackie definitely did provoke Trevor a little, but you can’t call that a trap. You were the ones who provoked us first and kept on challenging us… We just fought back a little, and you’re already pinning all the blame on Jackie. Did you not do anything wrong at all?”

Rudy hated people who refused to take responsibility.

Hearing what was said, Rudy had the urge to rush over and slap Evan a few times to wake him up.

They still insisted on pinning all the blame on Jackie. They refused to think about it.

If Ethan had not tried to start any trouble from the start, the death match would not have happened.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3196 - 3200

Chapter 3196
After Ethan died, Trevor completely exploded. He did not hold back with his words at all and constantly challenged Jackie.

Trevor ended up falling to Jackie, but the blame was put on Jackie for plotting against them!

Evan abruptly turned his head around. His reddened eyes glared at Rudy viciously.

Rudy stared back without any fear.

Evan clenched his teeth and said, “You‘d better remember this. We’ll make sure you pay for what happened today many times over. Don’t think this is the end!”

Rudy pursed his lips helplessly.

Evan decided to just resort to threats since he knew he had lost when it came to words. However, Rudy no longer felt anything when faced with that.

He looked at Evan in disdain, “True, there’s no way this matter is settled here. You want revenge on us, but we want to teach all of you a lesson too. This is just the beginning! Things will be even more entertaining in the future. Let’s just wait and see!”

After Evan heard that, his heart started to beat rapidly.

Earlier, Evan had just uttered those threats out of habit. He knew very well that, with Jackie’s skills, all Jackie needed to do was hide in the Whirling World. If he attacked whenever he had a good opportunity, the Pentagram Clan would be in a lot of trouble!

Evan looked at Rudy and could even start to see the constant trouble they would be in. He suddenly started to regret those threats he said.

Even if it had been unintentional, it still brought on a world of trouble. He averted his gaze and started to think about how he would report the matter, and how he would withstand Jackie’s revenge.

In the isolated space, Jackie’s hands formed seal after seal, stopping the power of Destroying the Void that was within their bodies.

Only, both of their souls had already been half-eaten by the time he did that. It was already impossible for them to fight back. If they could even live for another day, they could be considered incredibly lucky.

After the pain subsided, the two of them slowly regained their sanity. The one who woke up first was actually Trevor, who was more heavily injured. His eyes slowly got clearer. After that, he started to get filled with fear.

He no longer looked at Jackie with disdain and mockery. Instead, his face was filled with fear, shock, and various complicated emotions.

After a long time, Trevor finally said, “You’re… Jackie?”

He was even suspecting that the person in front of him was someone else in disguise.

When did alchemists get so strong?

Various ideas surfaced in his head, binding him tightly.

Jackie narrowed his eyes as he looked down at Trevor, “It seems like you really have been treating me like a madman…”

Jackie’s tone was calm as if he was talking about something incredibly simple.

When Trevor heard that, it sounded like a resounding thunderstrike. At that moment, all those ideas in his head disappeared.

He could not even think clearly!

Chapter 3197
He panted roughly, so angry that tears were about to fall, “You were just pretending the whole time? You’re not an alchemist? It was just an act? You told me you would give me a chance to kill you, but you were just setting a trap!”

Reality was cruel. Even at the final moment, Trevor did not want to believe it. Yet, with everything that had happened, he was forced to.

From that exchange earlier, Trevor could clearly feel how great the gap between Jackie and himself was.

Jackie’s expression had been so relaxed. It had not taken much effort to launch that attack at all, but it had shattered Trevor’s technique which Trevor was so proud of.

The technique he used seemed as weak as paper in front of Jackie. Even if it was shocking, it was still the truth.

After Jackie heard that, he smiled and said, “Do you think that I said I would give you a chance to kill me because I really want to die? That I wanted you to kill me? You always felt that I was an idiot and that I was crazy. In my eyes, you were the crazy one…”

“Who would be so free to give their lives to their opponents? If I didn’t have the confidence, why would I have participated in the slaughter gambit? Do you think I didn’t know how dangerous the slaughter gambit is?”

“Am I not supposed to know the gulf between alchemists and warriors? Since I know, why did I do all of this? It’s such a simple question, but you didn’t bother to think about it. Who do you have to blame but yourself for your current predicament?”

Trevor was so agitated that he could not breathe properly.

He started to cough violently, like someone who was about to die after suffering from a terminal disease. His eyes were completely reddened. He had been so agitated by those words that he could not figure out anything to say.

Even though he hated Jackie to the core, he had to admit that Jackie was right. Unless there was something wrong with a person’s mind, no one would want to die to their opponents.

Jackie had clearly known what would await him by offending so many people, but he did not care. Unless Jackie actually had the skills to back it up, there was no way he would have done that.

In the waiting area, Trevor was surprised by all of Jackie’s actions. He could not understand it.

Did Jackie not know what would happen if he offended Chris?

Jackie did not seem like an idiot, so he definitely knew what would happen. Since he knew, why did he do all that?

Did he have any other reasons?

Was he so arrogant that everyone else was just beneath him?

Trevor even thought that the victory Jackie had gotten before had clouded Jackie’s judgment, stopping Jackie from seeing how much weaker he was than everyone else.

Thinking about it, those thoughts were all hilarious. The actual reason should have been easy to guess, but Trevor had allowed all his preconceived notions to cloud his mind.

He felt like Jackie was just lower than him, that Jackie was a weak alchemist!

“I can’t believe things ended up like this. You said you would give me a chance to kill you, and I believed it like an idiot!”

Saying that Trevor could not help but smile bitterly. His coughing intensified as even more blood flowed from his mouth, staining his clothes.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, “You thought that someone from Hestia Continent would definitely not be able to stand up to someone from White Marsh Continent. You thought that I was definitely an alchemist because others said so! It’s all because of your ignorance, and you’re paying the price now.”

Trevor’s lips twitched, unable to say anything.

Jackie smiled coldly and said, “You told me more than once that I would pay the price. You said I would be begging for mercy. I’ve always believed in dishing out what is given. You’ll be facing exactly what you said I would!”

The moment Jackie said that, Trevor’s body suddenly stiffened.

He widened his eyes as they filled up with fear. He struggled to get up to run, but all he could do was struggle on the ground like a worm since he had lost all his limbs. He could not escape at all.

Chapter 3198
Right at that moment, a swish was heard next to Jackie.

A ray of light shot up into the air from next to him.

Jackie looked over to see Marco’s right hand slightly curved. There was still some residual energy circulating in his palm.

After that ray of light shot into the air, it did not slow down as it frantic ally flew further and further away. It was as if it was trying to break the barrier that contained the space.

After a few moments, an explosion was heard from above. A wave of energy frantically expanded outward with the explosion at the center. The energy wave looked like a signal tower, traveling far away at speeds that were hard to perceive.

Looking at the scene, Jackie was not angry at all. Instead, he even had a slight smile on his face.

Marco was panting roughly. After using his sound wave array, he looked at Jackie with alarm. Before he activated it, he had already decided to end his own life the moment Jackie made any moves.

He would have to die in the end anyway. However, he never expected that Jackie would not be surprised at all when he saw the sound wave array go up into the air slowly. Jackie did not make any moves to stop it at all and merely looked on quietly.

When the sound array exploded with a massive force that spread out energy waves in all directions, Jackie did not even blink an eye.

It was like it did not matter at all!

Marco's lips stiffened as he looked at Jackie even more fearfully. At that moment, Jackie was like a monster that had just crawled out of hell in Marco's eyes. No matter what he did, it exceeded any expectations. It was like Jackie was not worried about anything at all.

After feeling Marco's gaze, Jackie looked back as well.

His lips curled up in a smile as he said plainly, "You must've used a sound wave array just now. It might not be able to convey any information, but it can allow people far away to accurately know your position. Are you trying to gather the remaining warriors so they'll work together to kill me?"

A sound wave array was different from a sound array.

Actually, a sound array could transmit sound through long distances, but both sides needed to have compatible sound arrays for information to be transmitted. Furthermore, one sound array could only communicate with another person.

The sound wave array was different. It could not communicate with someone, but it could transmit a person's position through sound waves. It was similar to a beacon.

When everyone felt the energy of the sound wave array, they would know that something had definitely happened at that position, but they would not know the details.

In truth, Jackie had actually felt Marco's movements earlier, but he did bother stopping Marco. After all, there was nothing much Marco could do anymore, and he could change positions at any moment.

The sound waves exposing his position was something both unexpected and accepted. It suited Jackie just fine.

Marco was so scared that his entire body shook.

Jackie lowered his head slightly, "There's no longer any reason to keep you alive, but Trevor still has to stay alive. That's because I still have some things I want Trevor to see!"

After an hour, Chris hastily arrived at where the sound wave had exploded from. He had rushed over, going through the forest before arriving at the border between the forest and the desert.

Chris immediately saw two people on the ground. He frowned as his face darkened considerably. It was another similar situation, it was just that he did not know if it was the mysterious warrior again.

He slowly descended from the air. He did not stop his feet at all as he quickly arrived next to Trevor and Marco.

When he lowered his head, he noticed that Trevor's eyes were still open, and his eyeballs were still moving.

Chapter 3199
Chris was surprised at the sight that Trevor was still alive.

That was completely unexpected.

Upon closer inspection, Trevor could not speak. Even though Trevor was alive, the tendons on his limbs had been severed, and even his tongue had been cut. He was practically a dead person.

He had wanted to ask a few questions when he saw that Trevor was still alive, but his hopes were dashed.

Trevor could not speak or even move. There was no way Trevor could relay any information. Chris looked over to Marco.

Looking over, he noticed that Marco had already been dead for quite a while. Upon closer inspection, he was certain that the two of them had died at the hands of the mysterious person as well.

Almost half of their souls had been consumed. The only difference was that both David and Luther had physical wounds on them.

Chris was filled with suspicion.

Who was it?

Who managed to kill so many participants in one go?

Furthermore, even David, who was quite strong, was among those who died.

Just thinking about that, Chris turned to look at Trevor who was on the verge of death.

At that moment, Trevor' s mouth widened, wanting to say something. However, with out a tongue, there was no way he could.

He had no way to use his hands either. All he could do was widen his eyes to convey his hopelessness. At that moment, Trevor even hoped that Chris would just end him there and then so he would not need to suffer any longer.

Chris took a deep breath as he slowly stood up. He turned around and looked all over, shouting, “Who are you?! Get out here right now! Since you have the skills, why don’t you come out and fight me?!”

His voice was loud and buzzed with true energy. It sent his voice traveling great distances, but no one responded. He could not even hear the sounds of leaves being blown by the wind. It was so quiet it seemed like he was the only person in the world.

After a while, a gust of wind was heard in the distance.

He abruptly looked up to see a familiar figure frantically rushing over. As he looked closer, he noticed that it was Edward.

At that moment, Edward had a frown on his face as he looked confused. When he saw Chris, the confusion on his face suddenly disappeared as he suppressed all his emotions.

After Edward landed, he did not say a single thing to Chris. He hastily went to the two who were lying on the ground. After checking them for a moment, he slowly stood up.

At that moment, he turned to look at Chris.

He took a deep breath and a complicated glint surfaced in his eyes, “This is the fourth!”

The moment that was said, Chris slowly understood.

It seemed like he was not the only one who had found David and Luther’s bodies. Edward had been behind him and saw their corpses.

When Edward saw that Chris did not show any emotion, he knew that Chris had seen everything as well.

When they saw David’s corpse, their first reaction was to suspect each other. However, after closer inspection, they denied the thought. After all, techniques that could consume the soul were not something just everyone could learn.

They had a certain understanding of each other and knew that the other party could not know it.

There came the problem. Since it was not either of them, then who could it be?

The two of them were supposed to be absolutely incompatible enemies, but they realized that they had a skilled opponent! If they did not deal with the opponent, they might end up suffering.

Edward was the first to speak, “Who is this person? The two of us don’t have a conclusion yet. Even though I would have never thought of working together with you, we might be forced to with this current situation!”

“Only one person can survive in this place. Why don’t we deal with this guy first before we have our match?”

Chapter 3200
After Chris shot him a deep look, Chris nodded.

He held the same disgust towards Edward, but if they did not work together, the situation would only get worse. After all, they had no way of knowing who, and how strong that person was.

If they would be at a disadvantage in head on combat, then it would be disastrous. Neither of them wanted to fall to something unexpected.

Chris frowned before he said seriously, “Let’s eliminate some candidates. Blade was killed by me, then I saw Luther and David’s corpses on the way. Other than the two of us, there are five others! Including the two lying down here, there are only three people left…”

“The remaining three are Jackie, Souza, and Rich! We can eliminate Jackie, so only Souza and Rich are left!”

Saying that Chris had a look of concern on his face.

Chris already knew the other two from before, and he had an estimation of their skills. He never expected that one of them was actually a hidden expert.

Edward frowned, pointing out two fingers before he pushed one down. He said in a sunken tone, “Rich is dead. I killed him, so he can be eliminated too…”

The moment that was said, Chris was stunned.

That meant that only Souza was left. Compared to Rich, Chris knew more about Souza since Souza was from the Frenzied Blade Clan of Chaos Continent. He was a fellow disciple of David.

The two of them were both closely ranked in the clan. They constantly fought over resources, and the two of them did not have a good relationship. That was why they had participated in the slaughter gambit together. It was probably to settle their grudges.

Chris took a deep breath as his eyebrows furrowed, “If I remember correctly, David’s ranked sixth in the Frenzied Blade Clan while Souza is ranked seventh. The two of them should be about equal…”

“Half a year ago, Souza had lost just by a single move to David during the Frenzied Blade Clan’s internal tournament. However, Souza was not willing to accept that result. He deliberately spread a rumor that he did not lose David. David merely used some shameless tactics to cause Souza to fail!”

Their relationship was something that was an open secret among the chosen disciples of Chaos Continent.

Anyone who knows either of them knows of their grudges.

Edward said, “If Souza really has the skills, he would not have lost to David half a year ago. Just looking at what Souza did after that, it’s obvious that Souza is a petty person…”

“If he really could beat David and even rival the both of us, there’s no way he would be able to hide it. He’d have spread it far and wide!”

Chris nodded. Even though Chris was an arrogant person, he was still intelligent. Even though Souza was the only target of suspicion, they felt like there were too many strange things about this. It went against Souza’s personality.

Edward took a deep breath and said, “If he concealed his true skills the whole time, he definitely has other intentions, even if it doesn’t match his personality. There has to be some other reason. Could he have kept it a secret all this while to shock everyone today?”

Edward was full of confusion, feeling like he could not figure it out. He sighed as he discarded the notion for a moment. No matter what the reason was, now that they knew he was the enemy, they would just have to kill him.

As for what caused his personality to change and for him to keep the secret for so long, they would figure it out after!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3201 - 3205

Chapter 3201
Both individuals fell silent after saying their piece. They had their opinions.

The situation was far too strange and absurd for them, so they had a lot of thoughts in mind that they had no answer to. They did not know what they would even talk about, either.

After the two of them were silent for a few minutes, they heard a gust of wind.

When the two of them looked up at the same time, they saw Souza, with a noticeable frown on his face, quickly heading toward them.

When he saw the two of them on the ground, his expression hardened. The moment he landed, he looked at Chris and Edward in alarm.

When Chris and Edward saw that it was Souza, the two of them exchanged glances, and they could see the complicated emotions in each other's eyes.

Nonetheless, they remained silent.

Souza had no intention of greeting them. After all, the two men before him were incredibly strong. If he did not use some tricks, he would not be able to defeat either of them in single combat.

He turned and walked over to the two bodies on the ground. After observing them for a while, his expression darkened.

He took a deep breath and turned to look at Chris. "Did you do this..?"

"I can't believe you know a technique that can eat the soul. I guess David died at your hand too, right?"

Chris furrowed his brow as he shot a look at Souza. He looked like he wanted to split Souza apart to look at his insides.

Souza had goosebumps when faced with such a look. He subconsciously took a step back before he turned to look at Edward.

He was shocked to notice that even Edward was looking at him with the same expression. It was as if he had a massive secret.

Souza gulped, "What's this look for?"

Chris snorted, raising an eyebrow. “Are you trying to tell Edward that I killed these two people and David?”

Souza’s lips twitched, feeling like the situation was a little strange. However, he could not tell what was so strange about it. He stared back and answered, “I was just guessing. You‘re the strongest here. The few that died all succumbed to the same technique, so I guessed that it’s you. Of course, you can deny it too. I have no way of making you acknowledge it.”

In the end, Souza did not dare to face Chris head on. He knew very well how strong Chris was.

When Chris heard all of that, he let out a laugh and had a strange glint in his eyes.

“Looks really can be deceiving. How did I not see it before? I can’t believe you’re such a schemer. You probably said all of that so you can work with Chris against me, right?”

Souza’s lips twitched as he averted his gaze guiltily. He did plan on working with Chris. After all, among the three of them, Chris was the strongest, Edward was the second, and he was the weakest.

He would naturally need to choose the weaker one to work with so he had the best chance of winning in the end.

When Souza averted his gaze guiltily, Chris let out a laugh. It was just that his laughter did not reach his eyes, and there was even anger in his expression.

“Very well! I’ve seen a lot today. I can’t believe your acting skills are so good. However, you’re overconfident. You think everyone else is stupid!”

Chapter 3202
Souza got more and more confused, feeling like there was something off about how Chris and Edward were looking at him.

It was hard to blame Souza for not understanding the situation. After all, he knew where he stood.

His skills were no threat to both men. Heck, they did not need to treat him with any sense of alarm. Yet, Souza felt like he could feel a touch of alertness in Chris and Edward‘s eyes, which somewhat baffled him.

Why was Chris cautious of him?

What was there to be cautious of?

He was the one who had to be careful about Chris, yet both men eyed him as though he posed an ominous threat. It caused Souza a great deal of confusion.

He took a step back as he looked at Chris and Edward in alarm.

Chris said lightly, “Do you think your petty tricks can fool us? You want to work with Edward to kill me before you kill Edward yourself, making you the victor!”

Souza frowned as his breathing quickened. He could not help but say, “What are you talking about? You speak as if I’m particularly strong…”

After hearing that, Chris let out a laugh of frustration.

He coldly laughed as he said, “Cut the crap, why don’t you. I’ve seen through you, there’s no point in acting anymore!”

Souza was more and more confused.

He said with a puzzled expression, “What kind of act am I putting up? I don’t understand what you’re both saying!”

Souza truly did not understand what they were saying, and the two of them had very strange expressions. He felt his heart beating quickly, feeling like he could not figure out the situation at all.

When the warriors at the viewing area heard their conversation, there were a lot of discussions.

“If I was Souza, I wouldn’t understand what they’re saying either. After all, he’s probably thinking that Chris and Edward are acting way too strangely…”

“They’re clearly so strong, but they’re acting so cautious around him. They’re even speaking with a hint of warning and alarm. It’d be so confusing!”

“I’m beginning to feel some pity for Souza. He’s probably very afraid right now because he can already feel that Chris might attack him. However, he can’t figure out Chris’ actions.”

A disciple from the Frenzied Blade Clan said, “I pity Souza. He doesn’t know what’s happening at all. If he knew, he’d definitely cry out that he was framed. If he really did have the skills, Souza would’ve let everyone know, considering how he is. Would he have hidden his powers?”

A warrior from White Marsh Continent said, “If I was Chris, that’d be my conclusion, too. I would’ve thought that Souza was the dark horse. After all, after eliminating everyone else, Souza and Jackie are the only ones left”

“Without looking at Jackie’s actions through the massive scroll, I would never have guessed that Jackie is this strong. Furthermore, Chris hates Jackie so much. He’s naturally proud, so even ifhe found some clues, there‘s no way he’d admit to how strong Jackie is!”

“You’re right. He had access to look at everything, so we know that Jackie is the secret master! Chris and the others only saw the corpses and don’t know anything else. On top of that, they had a fixed opinion of Jackie, so they automatically eliminated Jackie from their consideration and were left with Souza!”

“That’s right. No matter what Souza says, Chris and Edward would think that he’s lying. The more confused Souza acts, the more the two of them will believe their judgment!”

Chapter 3203
A disciple of the Purple Cloud Pavilion frowned and said, “Jackie’s been hiding for so long, not showing himself. Is he scared?”

The moment he said that, multiple sardonic glares were aimed his way.

The disciple’s lips twitched, knowing that what he said was not convincing at all. They were just words spoken out of envy and jealousy.

That person’s lips twitched and continued, “I just think that he doesn‘t need to hide and watch the show if he’s so strong!”

The moment he said that, someone pointed at the massive scroll and said, “Jackie has come out!”

The moment that was said, that disciple from the Purple Cloud Pavilion stiffened. His face heated up a bit, feeling like he had just greatly embarrassed himself. His words had been disproven in just a few moments.

In the isolated space, Jackie was slowly walking past a big tree to where Chris, Edward, and Souza were with a calm and nonchalant expression, as if he was not on a battlefield at all. He looked like he was just walking around and relaxing as he took in the scenery!

When he saw Jackie, Chris’ mouth twitched as the anger in his heart suddenly flared. Edward, on the other hand, raised an eyebrow as a curious glint flashed in his eyes.

Chris narrowed his eyes and sneered, “You’re still alive?”

At that moment, Chris was conflicted. He had hoped that Jackie would still be alive so he could deal with Jackie, but he also felt like Jackie was a piece of trash that should have been killed long ago. He could not believe that Jackie was still alive!

At that moment, other than Trevor who was not dead, there were only four others that could stand.

Jackie actually survived it all!

Jackie snorted, “If you’re still alive, then how could I die? I knew you’d be here, so I came out.”

The moment that was said, no one except Trevor could understand the other meaning to his words. However, all of the warriors in the viewing area immediately understood what Jackie meant.

A disciple from the Nimbus Alliance lamented, “They don’t understand what Jackie is saying. He has left too deep of an impression on everyone before this. Even after what he said, Chris and Edward still didn’t think that much about it!”

A warrior next to him chimed in, “That’s right. There’s something wrong with what Jackie said, and as long as they think about it, they would’ve noticed. Jackie said that he knew they’d be here, meaning that he was already there much earlier.”

“Other than that mysterious person who had hidden himself, who else could Jackie be? Jackie even said that he came out because of that, proving that he had been hiding there and had never left! It’s sad that neither of them managed to figure it out!”

The lips of that disciple from the Nimbus Alliance trembled.

“If only Edward managed to understand. He would at least have been able to be on alert against Jackie. He might not have that high of a chance going against Jackie alone, but if he worked with Chris or even if the three of them attacked together, Jackie would be no match for them! That’s the only way they stood a chance!”

“All of you can see it, but Chris and Edward can’t in the isolated space. The two of them are already too stuck on their opinions on Jackie, feeling like whatever he does is just crazy! They think that there’s something wrong with his head!”

Chapter 3204
A warrior from Hestia teased, “So impressions can kill. They stubbornly cling on to some of the preconceived notions, thinking that warriors from the Hestia Continent are all weak. They deserve to die!”

The moment he said that, he got angry gazes from disciples of the Purple Cloud Pavilion and the Nimbus Alliance.

One of the disciples from the Purple Cloud Pavilion shouted, “Stop being snarky! It’s just that Jackie was too good at acting, so he ended up confusing Chris!”

Hearing that, a warrior from the Hestia Continent immediately shouted back, “Acting? Since when did he pretend to be anything else? Has Jackie ever said that he was weak? Did he ever say that he couldn’t beat the others? Did he talk about his status as an alchemist?

“It’s clearly been others who were painting an image of Jackie, so how could you blame Jackie? They’re the ones who had trouble seeing clearly, but all of you are trying to say that others are acting. Aren’t you afraid that you’ll be laughed at?!”

The disciple from the Purple Cloud Pavilion’s face reddened in anger. He gritted his teeth as he looked at the warrior from Hestia. Even though the warriors from Hestia numbered less than the two other worlds, arguments were not something that could be won with numbers.

The warriors from Hestia had logic by their side. In the first place, Jackie never attempted to hide. Secondly, Jackie was strong enough that they were able to fire back at anything that was said.

At that moment, the warriors from Hestia realized that they finally had a standing. Before this, they kept on being mocked until their faces were red, but they never dared to talk back.

At last, they finally found a way to regain their dignity. Even the warriors who were not very talkative would add a word or two.

The viewing area suddenly turned into Hestia Continent’s home field. The warriors from the other two continents were forced to look on as the warriors from Hestia did what they wanted.

In the isolated space, Chris was already red in anger. It was not because of anything Jackie said, but because of his calm and casual behavior. The more Jackie acted like that, the angrier Chris got. The anger in his heart was about to override any rationality he had.

“Don‘t be so pleased with yourself, Jackie!” he scoffed. “Once I deal with him, you’re next. You’re smarter than some others, I’ll give you that. You cleared the mark I left on you not long after you entered the isolated space, making me lose for a while.”

Jackie let out a laugh after he heard that and confessed, “Actually, I wasn’t planning on getting rid of the mark. I was looking forward to you finding me, but someone else asked me to… To prevent any unnecessary trouble, I ended up clearing the mark.”

Chris looked at Jackie in disdain. “Bragging again, are we? Do you think we can’t see through your lies? Bragging is the only thing you’re left with right now, huh?”

“You weren’t planning on clearing the mark, you say? You were looking forward to me finding you? You’re able to say such arrogant words! Every participant is an enemy after entering the isolated space. Who’d remind you to do such a thing?”

“What would they gain from that? You were looking forward to me finding you? Did you want to die by my hand so badly? You can’t even lie properly! You’re clearly afraid of dying, but you insist on trying to defend yourself! How laughable!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, shaking his head helplessly. “I was telling the truth. It’s up to you if you want to believe it…”

The warriors at the viewing area suddenly fell silent after hearing their conversation.

Chapter 3205
After a long silence, someone said, “It looks like Jackie has been truthful all along. It’s just a pity that Chris doesn’t want to listen, and we’ve all had such a thought. We’d probably remain like Chris if we hadn’t seen him in action and think he’s just pompous!”

“I’ll have a bone to pick with anyone who says that Jackie’s putting on an act from now on. Is this called an act? He’s just telling the truth! It’s just that no one wants to listen to him!”

At that moment, Chris was stubbornly refusing to listen. He even felt like Jackie had probably hit his head too hard. Otherwise, there was no way Jackie would say things that were so hilarious.

Edward’s lips twitched, saying in exasperation, “Things have gotten this far, but you’re still so stubborn! Do you need to start banging your head against the wall before you realize how absurd everything you say is?”

“You truly have expanded my horizons. I’ve never seen someone as stubborn as you. You’re clearly afraid, and you know you’re no match for me, but you insist on putting up a front and even facing us head-on! I really don‘t understand what you’re thinking!”

At that moment, Edward did not think that there was something wrong with Jackie’s head; just that he could not figure out what Jackie was thinking.

He knew that others had left marks on him and gotten rid of them. It meant that Jackie did not want others to find him, so he had to be afraid. Yet, Jackie chose to walk out at that moment and kept on challenging Chris!

Did Jackie not know what his behavior would bring?

Was it just him stubbornly refusing to admit defeat, even though he already knew the result?

Even if he was going to be tortured, he still wanted to hold on!

Thinking about that, Edward let out a scoff as he shook his head in exasperation. He felt like Jackie was just someone who rendered him speechless.

Jackie looked up at Edward and said calmly, “You’ll find out in just a bit…”

Edward was even more speechless at that, and he started to wonder if Jackie truly was crazy.

What kind of nonsense was be saying?

Why was his tone even a little mysterious?

What was he trying to do?

He looked away and ignored Jackie. He had to first kill Souza with Chris before dealing with Jackie.

Jackie would only stop being stubborn after they let him feel true pain and death!

Chris had the same thoughts on his mind as well, so he temporarily put his attention on Souza again.

At that moment, Souza was not listening to their conversation with Jackie as well. Instead, he was thinking about how strangely Chris and Edward were acting earlier.

What did he even do?

During the start, he had been sent to a grassy, uneven-surfaced hill that helped him hide. Before participating in the slaughter gambit, he had known that others would leave marks on him, so clearing them was the first thing he did.

After that, he headed north the whole time, wary of any ambushes. He was also patiently observing his surroundings. He wanted to let others fight and swoop in to take advantage. He would either pick up what remained in the end or work with weaker opponents to kill the stronger ones first before be dealt with these temporary allies personally.

He had prepared some pills that would stimulate his potential for this slaughter gambit and had planned on using them during the last battle to raise his power. Even though it had sight effects, the side effects were irrelevant if he could win.

Yet, he never expected things to reach a stage he had never expected. Chris and Edward were acting far too strangely. His questions had gotten snide responses from Chris.

When he was deep in thought about the matter, Chris suddenly said to him, “Enough chit-chat. Let’s settle this, now!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3206 -

chapter 3206
Chris pulled out his weapon. It was a golden blade that had a reddish-gold python with its mouth open engraved on it. He held the sword in his right hand as he looked at Souza coldly.

Edward pulled out his weapon as well-a pair of icy blue gloves. Those gloves were made of celestial silk and had a blue glow to them.

Both men stood in front of Souza.

Souza went wide-eyed in disbelief when they pulled out their weapons. These two were going to work together to kill him?

He had been planning on allying with Edward to kill Chris and even tried to figure out what to say to Edward. His plans were ruined!

Everyone knew the grudge between them, yet they had actually put those grudges aside to face him. It was unbelievable!

Of course, two people working together to kill an opponent was something common in slaughter gambits. After entering the isolated space, quite a few of the ten participants were planning on doing that. Still, Souza could not shake off how odd this cooperation seemed.

There were usually conditions for working together. First of all, they needed to be facing someone who was incredibly strong that they could not just defeat alone. No matter what, Souza had some self-awareness. With his skills, he was no match for either of them in single combat, so they did not need to work together to kill him.

In the first place, they were not that friendly with each other, so the fact that they were working together meant that there was something they agreed on!

Souza's lips twitched as he spoke, "The two of you want to work together to kill me?"

Souza was internally speechless. He felt more and more confused, but neither Chris nor Edward were in the mood to explain anything to him.

It might have been Jackie's expression from earlier that had instigated them. The two of them were completely set on dealing with the hidden expert first before they properly tortured Jackie. They wanted to show Jackie his place!

Chris was the first to rush forward. He formed many golden seals with his hands, and a golden python appeared behind him. That golden python had countless runes circling it. Its bloody mouth was wide open, looking just like the carving.

Souza immediately recognized Chris' technique, it was the Consuming Slash, an upper earth rank technique. Even among upper earth rank techniques, it stood at its peak. It could even rival some lower ultimate god rank technique!

It was due to certain restrictions that the Consuming Slash had been designated as an upper earth rank technique, but its power could not be underestimated.

Souza felt a chill in his heart at the sight. He was going crazy!

Edward followed closely behind Chris. His icy blue gloves started to glow as runes started to dance around Edward like lively spirits. Three ice pillars appeared in front of Edward.

Souza's jaw hung open in shock. "Ice Breaker!"

Ice Breaker, too, was an upper earth rank technique, around the same level as the Consuming Slash. It was hard to tell who was stronger from the attacks they were using!

Seeing that the two of them were really attacking him at the same time, Souza almost bit his tongue in panic. He was not even thinking about retaliating. After all, he was already no match for either of them alone, let alone facing both of them.

He turned around and ran without any hesitation and frantically used up all of his true energy, not forgetting to summon a shield to protect him. However, Souza was not as fast as Chris and Edward. They were not that far apart in the first place.

In just a few moments, the two of them caught up.

Souza only heard a breeze before two dense killing intents surged from behind him. Even though he felt that they were right behind him, he did not even dare to look back. He was worried that he would lose the courage to even run away if he did!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3207 -

Chapter 3207
Chris smirked and thrust his sword forward. The golden python opened its venomous mouth wide and bit right at Souza.

Edward's three ice pillars followed behind it, and two techniques fell on Souza's back at the same time.

Jackie heard a loud bang.

Souza did not even have the chance to cry out in agony before he was blown up in the air. Right after that, the explosion from the two techniques launched shockwaves, causing another massive explosion as a crater formed on the ground.

Souza suffered a pitiful fate as these two techniques disintegrated him instantly. He did not even have a corpse left behind. Looking at the scene, Chris still did not relax at all. Instead, he frowned.

He turned to look at Edward and noticed that he had a serious expression, too.

Chris could not help but say, “This is weird. Why didn’t he fight back? With his skills, he should’ve at least stood a chance to survive if he fought back; that’s why I used all my power. It seemed like we’d gone overboard. I didn’t even need you to kill him… “

Saying that, Chris’ expression greatly soured. A thought surfaced in his mind that he did not want to acknowledge.

At that moment, they heard a gust of wind behind them, and Edward suddenly turned back.

At some point, Jackie had arrived behind him. The moment he turned around, Jackie’s sword struck!

A gray slash went right for his chest. Edward felt a chill in his heart, suddenly understanding everything. He was incredibly experienced in combat, so despite the sudden attack that came his way, he reacted instantly.

He formed seals with his hands, and countless ice pillars formed around him, turning into a shield of ice that protected him completely.

Chris chose that moment to strike. He struck out again, and the golden python widened its mouth to bite at the gray slash. The gray slash clashed with the golden python!

Chris heard a shatter, and the python was cut in half. The slash did not slow down and continued to head for the ice shield!

With a sizzle, it seemed to burn through the ice as a hole suddenly formed in the shield. Even though the slash’s momentum had slowed down significantly, a small fraction of its power remained.

After melting through the ice, it sliced right into Edward’s chest!

Edward let out a cry of agony as he spat out a mouthful of blood. The true energy in his body ran wild, and he could no longer control himself as he fell to the ground. However,

the energy that pierced Edward's chest had been greatly diminished due to the ice shield blocking a lot of the power.

It still ate Edward's soul, his injuries stabilized after he swiftly used his true energy to block Destroying the Void, disallowing his soul from being consumed entirely. Even though he collapsed on the floor, he ignored the immense pain as he frantically retrieved a pill from his storage space and used it.

On the other hand, Chris rapidly retreated in the air. When he saw that Jackie was no longer attacking, he landed three meters away from Edward.

At that moment, Chris' expression was incredibly sour, and he looked like he had lost his whole family in a single night.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, slowly landing on the ground as well. His earlier strike had just been a test!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3208 -

Chapter 3208
He had only condensed 30 Soul Swords, but it was equivalent to the first stage of mastery.

Using the first stage of Destroying the Void, he had stood up to Chris and Edward's full might. Jackie deliberately leaked out some killing intent so Chris and Edward had the chance to react.

He did so because he wanted to test how powerful 30 Soul Swords would be, but he was left with only disappointment. He had thought that he would be able to kill off Edward instantly with that attack, but not only had Edward survived, but he even managed to consume a pill to stabilize his injuries.

He could feel the power of Destroying the Void left in Edward's body being forcefully suppressed. Even though it was still eating at Edward's soul, the speed of consumption was much slower.

Jackie sighed as he shook his head in disappointment.

He had thought that an upper ultimate god rank technique would be unstoppable against the two of them, even at the first stage. The reality displeased him.

If Chris knew of Jackie's thoughts at that moment, he would have spat out blood in anger.

At that moment, Chris' mood was in disarray. He was not willing to believe everything that had happened, but he was forced to.

Both he and Edward had misjudged the situation. The hidden expert had not been Souza but Jackie all along. Chris could not accept that fact at all.

What was Jackie?

Was he not just an alchemist?

How was Jackie so strong?!

He was using an upper earth rank technique. Consuming Slash could even be considered a slightly weaker lower ultimate god rank technique.

Based on what he knew, the Ice Breaker that Edward used was about equal to his technique. They were both upper earth rank techniques close to ultimate god rank!

After feeling Jackie's killing intent, both Chris and Edward reacted immediately. He had first struck out and used a lot of power in his Consuming Slash. It was not at his full strength, but there was still 90 percent of his power.

Edward had erected his ice pillars in front of him.

Chris was certain that Edward had used his full might to block Jackie's attack, but Edward was still hit in the end.

When his Consuming Slash clashed against Jackie's technique, it was slashed in half instantaneously and quickly went through Edward's defenses. There was even enough power left to pierce into Edward's body, causing Edward to collapse on the ground, injured.

The scene replayed in Chris' mind in a loop. His lips twitched, and even the muscles on his face contorted. He felt like his heart was about to explode.

Chris took a deep breath as he gritted his teeth and said with reddened eyes, "So it was you! I can't believe it really is you! You put on such a good act. You fooled everyone!"

When he said that, Chris felt like spitting out blood. He did not want to see reality at all.

The hidden expert was actually Jackie, whom he belittled and ridiculed.

He had thought that Jackie was just an ant that he could kill at any moment, but Jackie had proven to be a lion that was at the helm of them all. Even though he did not want to admit the truth at all, Chris knew that he was no match for Jackie alone. Otherwise, he

would not have worked with Edward against Souza. It was precisely because they were not completely confident that they worked together to kill the hidden expert.

They just never expected that their guess would be so drastically wrong!

Jackie's sneak attack landed, causing Edward to not even be able to open his eyes as he used all of his true energy to suppress his internal injuries.

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation as he let out a small laugh. "This again. All of you keep saying that I lied to all of you. Why don't you just admit that something was wrong with your own eyes? I've never put on an act, you just didn't believe me!"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3209 -

Chapter 3209
Those words caused Chris' mouth to freeze.

In his mind, he could not help but recall everything that had happened.

In the waiting area, Chris thought that Jackie was challenging him by sitting next to him, which displeased him. That was why Chris had mocked Jackie on the spot, but all along, Jackie was not afraid at all.

For anything that he said, he would shoot back with something 10 times harsher. At the time, he thought that Jackie did not know his place and that he was a lunatic. He thought that Jackie was just recklessly arrogant without thinking about the consequences.

It seemed like reality was far different from what he expected.

It was not that Jackie did not know his place, but that he had absolute confidence in himself. He had never regarded Chris as a threat at all, which was why Jackie was so nonchalant, not even sparing him any dignity.

The mere thought had Chris enraged beyond relief and coughing cough violently.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, "You're all so incredibly strange. I was clearly just acting and speaking like I'm supposed to, but all of you thought I was crazy. Luther said that, and David said that too. The two of you probably think so as well…"

Saying that, Jackie could not help but let out a slight laugh. "You two probably think that only the White Marsh Continent and the Chaos Continent can produce masters, and all other alchemists are trash, right?"

Chris wanted to refute, wanting to say that indeed, only these two continents could produce prodigies, but he was coughing so violently that he could not say a thing!

The truth was slapping him in the face at that moment!

Jackie let out a scoff as he continued, “You said that you wanted to have me begging for mercy, that you’d have me on the verge of death. Do you know how amused I was hearing you say all of that?”

Chris’ face started to redden. He had never been so thoroughly embarrassed in his entire life. He really did say all of that, and he did mean it all. That was because he had never thought that Jackie would be stronger than him!

Alas, his thoughts were nothing but a mere joke in the end. He had used 90 percent of his strength, and Edward had defended with all his power, but they failed to completely stop Jackie’s attack!

Just from that alone, it was obvious that Jackie even had the potential to fight them two against one. They had vastly underestimated Jackie!

At that moment, Chris felt immensely afflicted.

The crowd in the viewing area grew rowdy right after Jackie’s sudden attack.

Someone loudly said, “His strength is absurd! Is this the power of a lower ultimate god rank technique? He managed to fight one against two so easily and managed to injure Edward, too. I’m certain that Jackie has mastered his technique to the second level, or he’d never be that strong!”

“If he’s already at that level, then Jackie’s skills would be a little horrifying. Even chosen disciples from ninth-grade clans won’tbe able to stand up against Jackie!”

“Most of the chosen disciples from ninth-grade clans would be no match for Jackie, only a few of them who are at the top rankings could!”

“He’s terrifying… He’s so scary! I never expected to see a battle of his level in the slaughter gambit!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3210 -

Chapter 3210
Upon hearing others saying that Jackie could fight two people on his own, the disciples of the Purple Cloud Pavilion lost their composure. The reality was in front of them, and they had to admit Jackie’s skills were overwhelming. However, that did not mean that others could flatter him without limits!

The more Jackie was praised, the lesser it made Chris look.

Those people were naturally unwilling to see that!

One of the chosen disciples from the Purple Cloud Pavilion said loudly, “You’re all shameless with your words. You actually think that Jackie can fight one against two? Have you gone blind? Didn’t you see that Jackie’s attack had been a sneak attack? Chris and Edward had to defend themselves in a hurry and didn’t show much of their skills at all. That’s why Jackie managed to get a slight advantage. You don’t understand anything, but you’re being so reckless with your words! What a joke!”

The moment that person said that, everyone frowned, but no one dared to fight back. After all, what the chosen disciple said did have some merit. Jackie did launch a sneak attack, and Chris and Edward definitely reacted in a hurry.

No one knew how much of their true power the two of them had used!

The disciples of the Unbreaking Pavilion and Compass Pavilion looked incredibly grim at that moment.

Jackie shattered their impressions repeatedly.

At that moment, they did not have the heart to listen to the discussions around them. As warriors of the Hestia Continent, they knew very well what Jackie’s skills represented. Even the top chosen disciple from the Scarlet Pavilion, the only ninth- grade clan in Hestia Continent, would be no match for Jackie, let alone them!

Quite a few of the disciples from those two clans started to regret ever making an enemy out of Jackie.

If Jackie managed to survive this easily, then the two clans would be in for a world of trouble!

One of the inner disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion said with a conflicted look, “Even though Jackie’s an enemy, we can’t ignore the truth. We have to redo all our plans. Let’s not provoke Jackie for the moment, and don’t provoke the disciple next to Jackie either… What we need to do right now is to distance ourselves from them…”

“Even though we can’t have any private fights in the middle city, Jackie could always fight us in public matches if he wanted to. We’d have no way to do anything about that!”

His words hit the point right on the mark. The other disciples around him nodded.

With the situation as it was, they had no way of following Grayson’s orders for the moment; they had to keep themselves safe.

After this, they would discuss their plans with Grayson when they met him.

In the betting area, Rudy idly looked up at Jackie calmly facing the other two on the massive scroll. Of course, he believed in Jackie's skills. He was just a bit worried before the slaughter gambit started.

He trusted Jackie regardless and believed in every decision Jackie made. It seemed like his confidence in Jackie had not been for naught.

Jackie's skills really did back it up!

Meanwhile, Evan's face was completely ashen. He had an incredibly dark look on his face, looking like he was someone who was about to die.

What happened to Trevor had been too cruel. He was even hoping that Trevor's death would come swiftly so he would not have to suffer all that pain anymore.

With the situation, even if Jackie ended up dying with Chris and Edward and Trevor ended up winning, there was no way Trevor could survive after being sent back!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3211 - 3220 -

Chapter 3211

Since that was the case, ending things quicker was the better option. At least he would no longer be in pain.

Thinking about it, the cause for everything was Jackie. Evan's anger surged in his heart. Even if he knew that he should not be challenging Rudy anymore at that moment, he could not stop himself.

Evan turned around and said angrily, "Of the ten participants, Jackie would be a prime candidate for being the cruelest! Not only is he cruel, but his methods are also ruthless as well. He's absolutely despicable!"

"Just because he's talented and strong, he does whatever he wants! Isn't he afraid of being punished eventually?"

Evan was panting when he said all of that. The anger in his head had already completely burned away all of his rationality.

Rudy raised an eyebrow, surprised that Evan still dared to say all of that.

He had thought that Evan would shrink after his warning, but he had still overestimated disciples from high-grade clans.

He forgot how arrogant they were!

Rudy scoffed as he said in disdain, "Can you think before you speak? If you want to call others cruel, why don't you look at yourself first? This is like the pot calling the kettle black!"

"If Jackie's skills weren't as good as they were, would he be in a better state than Trevor? Are you going to tell me that Jackie should spare Trevor out of kindness?"

When he said that, Rudy laughed coldly. He felt like Evan's actions were a complete joke.

Evan was trembling from the anger, and he no longer cared about holding back.

"Trevor just likes to talk a lot. He might hate Jackie, but he would have never used such an extreme method to torture Jackie!"

He was furious when he said that. He pointed right at the image on the massive scroll, "Don't you see what Jackie did earlier? Jackie first snapped all of Trevor's tendons, then

cut his tongue! There’s no way someone who isn’ t completely venomous and evil would be able to do something so cruel!”

When Rudy heard that he rolled his eyes and sighed, coldly answering, “Don’t you remember what Trevor said before? He said he would delay Jackie’s death, and slowly rip the flesh off Jackie!”

“I wasn’t the only one who heard that, you did too! We’re not saints here, so why are you trying to act like you’re so pure? Don’t you think it’s embarrassing?”

After saying that, Rudy turned away and decided to completely ignore Evan. Once Jackie was out, the first thing they would have to discuss is how they would deal with the Pentagram Clan. After all, they were already mortal enemies.

In the isolated space, Chris panted roughly, and his eyes were completely red!

He looked like a ghost that had just crawled out of hell. He had already asked everything he needed to ask, and he knew everything he wanted to.

It was not the time for him to let his emotions take over.

Only one person could survive the slaughter gambit. If he lost himself to his anger, then he would not be far away from dying. Even though Chris was incredibly arrogant, he still had a brain. He could not allow his emotions to control everything at that moment. He had to calm down.

Thankfully, Jackie was just standing in front of him with an idle look on his face.

Jackie did not seem to have any plans to attack immediately. That was a good thing for Chris as he took a few deep breaths, pushing down all of his emotions and forcing himself to calm down.

Chapter 3212

He turned around to look at Edward, who was still trying to completely suppress his injuries. Even if one of them had to die in the end, Chris was at least sixty to seventy percent confident that he would be able to win if the opponent was Edward. However, if he faced Jackie alone, his chances of winning were lower than ten percent.

Chris clenched his teeth with that thought in mind as he started to feel a little anxious.

Edward was trying his best to suppress his injuries, and Chris needed to buy Edward as much time as possible.

They would only stand a chance against Jackie if both of them attacked together!

Feeling Chris' gaze, Edward forced the pain down as he slowly opened his eyes to look back.

The two of them immediately conveyed their plans to each other in that brief moment. They knew that they needed to buy time. Edward was heavily injured at that moment, so the person who would have to do it was Chris.

Chris' lips twitched. He had always been an arrogant person. If he wanted to talk to someone, he would, if he did not want to, then his mouth would be completely shut. He had never engaged in any idle chit-chat before.

It was much harder considering the fact that the target was Jackie, who he had insulted before.

He was incredibly reluctant, but he could do nothing about it.

He took a deep breath and looked at Jackie, "I'll admit that I misjudged you earlier, but you have to admit that you deliberately hid who you were back then!"

Jackie scoffed at those words and then looked at Chris like he was looking at an idiot.

He had noticed Chris' look with Edward earlier. After all, the two of them were right in front of Jackie.

He was no idiot. He naturally knew that the two of them planned on stalling for time so Edward could suppress his internal injuries. Even if Edward could not completely recover, there was a chance that Edward could fight at seventy or eighty percent of his abilities. Then Jackie would be faced with two opponents!

They wanted to work together to defeat him, so Jackie decided to give them the chance. He could take that opportunity to train himself.

With that in mind, Jackie took a deep breath and decided to play along with Chris.

"What are you saying? Why would I admit to something I haven't done? I've already said it before, you were the one who was blind, so why are you blaming me?"

Chris perked up when he saw that Jackie had answered. He was worried that Jackie would have seen through their plan. It seemed like Jackie might be strong, but he was not intelligent.

Chris frowned as he said, "If one person couldn't tell, then that person was probably mistaken, but not a single one of the ten participants could tell. It means that you're a good actor!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, saying with not much emotion, “Absurd! You’re just trying everything you can to drag my reputation down, right?!”

The two of them constantly argued in the isolated space, but the warriors in the viewing area could tell what was happening.

Quite a few of them could see what Chris and Edward were planning, and a warrior from White Marsh Continent started to frown.

Chapter 3213

“Chris is forced to do this. Only by dragging things on will Edward have enough time to recover. If they faced Jackie alone, neither Chris nor Rudy would be a match for him. Their only chance is to work together!”

A warrior from Chaos Continent nodded vigorously, “You’re right! Jackie’s just too strong. Even Chris, who regards himself so highly, is being forced to lower his head to stall for time! They only have one way out at this point. If Jackie manages to see through their plans, then even that would go up in smoke!”

The discussions around the place started to intensify, “I can’t believe this is the current situation. If anyone had told me that Chris and Edward would be afraid of Jackie before the slaughter gambit started, even having to lower their heads to stall for time, I would have thought that the person’s brain was underdeveloped!”

“We weren’t the only ones who weren’t able to tell. Wasn’t it also the caretakers who made a mistake? Do you remember the odds they gave? Chris had the lower returns, with one to one point seven. Edwards was two point nine.”

” Jackie’s returns had been the highest with seven and a half. Less than three people have ever gotten those odds in all of the other slaughter gambits, and Jackie’s one of them.”

“Yet, Jackie’s the most absurd one of them all. His actual skills are even stronger than a warrior with one point seven odds! I’m really regretting not betting on Jackie before this. I’d be rich!”

”That’s right! I’m filled with regret right now too. It’s seven and a half times! I’d be able to get fifteen million spirit crystals in the end! That’s a profit of thirteen million! I’d be a rich man. Just thinking about it gets me excited! It’s a pity that I didn’t take the chance that was right in front of me!”

“It’s not just you. Everyone here is filled with regret. It’s a pity that we were just like the nine participants initially, unable to see Jackie’s potential. Only when we saw his true skills did we know how wrong we were!”

At that moment, a warrior from Hestia Continent said curiously, “There are so many people here. Who placed their bet on Jackie? I remember there were some bets on him!”

When that person asked, the viewing area fell silent for a long time before someone answered, “A total of two people bet on Jackie. The first was Jackie himself, and the other was his follower. I remember that that person’s called Rudy!”

The moment that was said, everyone sighed.

They still remembered how Jackie had been mocked when he bet on himself. They felt like Jackie’s actions were such a joke, and they wondered what he was thinking!

It seemed like they were idiots instead. Jackie had always known What he was doing. This time, Jackie would have earned thirteen million spirit crystals in one go if he won. That sum was no small number even in a ninth-grade clan!

After lamenting their fates, a wandering warrior from Chaos Continent suddenly asked, “I think that Jackie’s quite smart. How could he be falling for Chris and Edward’s plan to stall for time? Is he letting them do it on purpose?”

The moment that was said, the discussion started to die down. Everyone was exchanging looks with each other as various thoughts formed in their minds.

At that moment, Jackie was still constantly talking to Chris in the isolated space. They were just purely wasting time conversing.

Chapter 3214

Initially, Chris had been quite happy thinking that Jackie had not seen through his plans. However, he slowly felt like something was off.

Jackie seemed elated to let him waste time which caused Chris to be shocked.

Jackie was not stupid. He naturally had his own goals in doing that, so what was he planning?

Just as Chris’ heart was beating frantically, Edward finally managed to suppress his injuries. He had one hand on the ground, and his face was a little red.

He forced himself up. Even though his injuries were not completely recovered, he was no longer in danger of dying. He had to stand up to face Jackie even if he did not want to!

Edward was not as arrogant as Chris. He had just temporarily suppressed his injuries. If he did not get better treatment quickly, his injuries would definitely flare again. If that happened, then everything was over.

At that moment, Edward was very clear-minded. He knew of his injuries and knew what could end up killing him. Even if they managed to kill Jackie, there was still Chris waiting for him. The chances of him leaving the isolated space were less than thirty percent.

He was already prepared to die, it was just that he was incredibly reluctant. If he did not die, then his future would have been so bright!

Just thinking about that, Edward could not help but let out a bitter smile as he tossed those thoughts aside. Even if he would not be able to leave the isolated space forever, he still wanted to drag Jackie down with him!

If it were not for Jackie, he would have fought a final battle against Chris, and stood a fifty percent chance of walking out alive!

Yet, Jackie had changed everything, pushing him into the deep end. Edward put all his hatred and anger onto Jackie and started to look at Jackie like he was looking at his mortal enemy.

Jackie suddenly let out a laugh as he looked up at Edward and said, “It looks like you’ve successfully suppressed your injuries. You’re not bad. I thought that I would still have to talk to Chris for even longer…”

The moment that was said, Chris could not help but shudder as his eyes widened. His heart beat faster.

Jackie really did see through their plans!

Then why did Jackie play along with them?

Did he want to find out if Edward would be able to suppress Edward’s injuries?

Did he want Edward to work with Chris against him?

After those thoughts surfaced in Chris’ mind, fear started creeping in.

Chris had always been someone who did whatever he wanted thanks to his talent. He had never been afraid of anyone and had never shrunk back from anyone. Yet, he was feeling fear toward Jackie at that moment.

He looked at Jackie like he was looking at a demon who had just crawled out of a deep hole!

Chris loudly said, “So you want to fight two against one?”

Jackie nodded seriously, “There’s no meaning to fighting one on one. The two of you are quite decent. You can help me train!”

The moment that was said, Chris’ and Edward’s expressions darkened.

If that had been said before they entered the isolated space, the two of them would have treated it as a joke. Yet, they were forced to believe it this time.

During their earlier exchange, the two of them had not utilized their full potential, but they were uncertain as to how much of Jackie’s power he used.

Listening to Jackie’s tone, it seemed like Jackie felt even the two of them would not be difficult. Everything he said showed how confident he was.

The two of them gulped at the same time, regretting taking part in the slaughter gambit immensely. The two of them had been in the upper echelons of their respective clans in terms of talent and skill. As long as they survived, they would have been even better after they left the Whirling World!

Chapter 3215

They would have become elders in their clans or even started their own clans. All of these would have been easy to achieve. Yet, those beautiful dreams seemed further and further away!

At that moment, a cold chill was felt in the viewing area. Jackie’s words had proven what some among them had guessed.

Jackie had seen through Chris’ plans early on and had even played along with Chris.

How confident did Jackie have to be to do so?

Quite a few of them were so surprised they did not know what to say!

“I can guarantee you now that Jackie’s definitely already stepped into the second stage. He might not even be far away from the third stage. Otherwise, there’s no way he would be so confident. He completely disregarded his opponents!”

“You’re right. I think so too! No wonder Jackie was so arrogant before they entered the isolated space. He definitely had the right to act that way. If the others had known of Jackie’s true skills before this, there probably wouldn’t have been a single person with any courage to participate. Even Chris would have been forced to give up. It’s too late for regrets now!”

The disciples of the Purple Cloud Pavilion and Nimbus Alliance were so anxious that they jumped off their seats.

The slaughter gambit was already at its final moments, and Chris and Edward stood less than a forty percent chance of winning!

There were still those who remained stubborn, ”We haven’t seen the results yet, so why are you so quick to make your conclusions? What if Jackie’s just being too proud?! He might not actually have those skills, and is saying all of that to show off!”

Those words invited a lot of laughter, “With things already as they are, you should really stop making yourself look like an idiot. It’s because there are people like you who always have these thoughts that Jackie’s true skills were never seen through!”

At that moment, Jackie was already holding his gray sword in his hand.

The thirty Soul Swords earlier had not had the desired effect, but they did show Jackie the destructiveness of thirty Soul Swords.

He no longer wanted to waste any time. After completing the slaughter gambit, he planned on entering the inner city right away. While Jackie was happy with what had happened in the middle city, he got more and more curious about the inner city. He was looking forward to entering the inner city immensely. He wanted to see what challenges awaits him there!

As he thought about it, he formed seal after seal.

Countless seals were circulating in the air. After a few moments, fifty Soul Swords floated in front of Jackie.

Jackie clapped his hands, and the swords condensed into a large one. It fused into the gray sword in his hand!

Chris and Edward were already incredibly anxious.

The two of them exchanged looks before they summoned up all of the true energy in their bodies. Chris even took out a pill to stimulate his potential.

Jackie scoffed as he held his sword with both hands. With a slash, a gray-colored slash shot out like an arrow!

Chris formed his golden python again. The python opened its mouth wide, and its eyes were red!

Edward formed seal after seal, condensing a pillar the size of a person. It floated in the air, letting out a radiant blue light!

The two of them attacked at the same time, and in just a few moments, the three techniques clashed in the air.

The three of them heard a loud bang. When the attacks clashed, intense shockwaves were sent out, forming a crater on the ground in an instant!

Dust filled the air, obstructing any vision.

The warriors in the viewing area all had their eyes wide open, worried they would miss anything.

It was time for the final battle! The losers and winners would be determined in just a flash! However, the dust completely obscured everything, and no one could see clearly. Some people cursed at it, but there was nothing they could do!

Chapter 3216

“I can’t see clearly! I can’t see anything! Can someone tell me what’s happening? I feel like I’m going blind!”

“What are you panicking for? Do you think others can see if you can’t? It’s not like he can blow away the dust!”

Everyone was incredibly anxious as the dust slowly dispersed.

There were two more figures on the ground. Edward lay on the ground, covered in dust. He was not moving at all, looking like he had lost his life.

Chris was half on the ground, with one hand against it to support himself. His breathing was erratic.

After an intense bout of coughing, he spat out a mouthful of blood. At that moment, his hair was completely disheveled, and his eyes had lost their color. It looked like he could die at any moment.

Jackie remained standing on the spot. His back was straight as he coldly looked toward Chris.

The scene caused a chill in all the warriors in the viewing area. They no longer knew what to say. In truth, they had guessed that this would be the result, but witnessing it was a different matter entirely.

Jackie’s strength had exceeded their imaginations. He had actually held back before this. Even when the two of them had put everything into the attack, he had still easily dealt with them alone. It was hard to tell if one of his opponents was even alive, while the other was barely sitting up on the ground.

It caused everyone to shudder at the sight.

“I can’t believe Jackie was not threatened at all even though the two of them worked together. I finally understand why Jackie was so easygoing before this. If I had the skills, I would be even more arrogant!”

“What are you saying?! Arrogance is when you can’t back it up! Does Jackie not have the skills? We call that acting normally!”

The Purple Cloud Pavilion and the Nimbus Alliance had already fallen completely silent.

All of them stared at the scroll, stunned. They were incredibly saddened, but there was nothing they could do about it!

It was all done for. They had no chance of turning the tables at all. In the end, the winner had not been Chris or Edward. No one could believe that even the two of them working together had failed to beat Jackie.

That had shattered all expectations!

An inner disciple from the Purple Cloud Pavilion said, “We’re done for! We’re all done for! What do we say when we go back? We should have stopped him before he took part. The elders will definitely blame us!”

Another disciple next to him sighed, saying with a defeated expression, “The punishments will just be for the public eye. We’ll definitely be targeted in secret. Don’t forget how much the first elder loved Chris. We’ll be okay in the Whirling World, but once we come out and return to the real world, we won’t be able to get out of this unscathed!”

“It wasn’t our fault though. Chris was the one who said he wanted to take part. Were we supposed to stop him with our lives? Would we have been able to stop him?”

“We would not! So what could we have done? Even if the first elder wants someone should blame, he should blame Jackie. Why would he target us?!”

The disciple that voiced out the severity of the matter said with a frown, ”You’re looking at things too simply. No matter how despicable Jackie is, he’s still from Hestia Continent. The warriors there can’t come out, and we can’t go in either. If he wants to kill Jackie, we would need to use the local forces.”

“It’s not as simple as that. With Jackie’s extraordinary talents, there has to be some expert protecting him. It’s impossible for us to kill Jackie! The elder will know this too. He would have nowhere to vent his frustrations but us…”

“Furthermore, it’s not like the first elder has never done something like this. Something similar happened before this. The first elder couldn’t get the culprit so he threw all his anger at the disciples. During that time, all of the inner disciples were incredibly careful, but the first elder still managed to find reasons to compound their punishments.”

Chapter 3217

When that was said, everyone’s expressions were abnormally serious.

The Nimbus Alliance’s side was not much better. The disciples from both clans looked like they were grieving someone. They had incredibly long faces, looking like they were about to cry at any moment.

At that moment, Jackie raised his hand to brush off the dust in front of him. He raised an eyebrow and walked over to Chris step by step.

Chris clutched his chest and looked at Jackie in alarm. He had lost all the arrogance in his demeanor. His whole face was filled with fear.

Before, he was sure exactly how strong Jackie was, Chris still exuded arrogance. However, at that moment, he was already certain about everything. The arrogance he used to have was already completely thrown aside. He even wanted to ask for mercy, but he realized how much of a joke it would seem like.

In the isolated space, only one person could survive. Everyone else had to die!

Chris completely lost all hope when he thought about that. He even started to regret participating in the slaughter gambit. He had thought that victory was certain with his skills, but he never expected to be so unlucky to have actually met a hidden expert.

Jackie was already right in front of him.

Jackie let out a laugh as he said casually, “Do you remember what I said to you before? When we’re in the isolated space, I would repeat everything you’ve said to me back to you…”

Chris was stunned once again when that was said.

If Jackie had not reminded Chris, he would have forgotten that. He had thought that what Jackie said was really amusing.

What was the point of repeating what he said?

Was that considered a threat?

However, he finally understood what Jackie meant.

Chris' face was pale as he retreated. He did not want to be too close to Jackie. He wanted to be as far away as possible from Jackie.

Jackie lowered his eyes as he said coldly, "You told me that I was just an ant that you could kill at any moment. You said you would make sure I died slowly, that you would slowly skin me. You would let me know of the gulf between us…"

Chris' face was completely distorted. He had said all of that, and he even remembered how he had felt when he said that. At the time, he felt like everything that Jackie said was absolutely hilarious.

Jackie was like a crazy person!

His breathing got more and more erratic, but he could not say anything.

Jackie pulled out a knife from Mustard Seed, "I've always believed in an eye for an eye. I'll do exactly what you said you wanted to do to me…"

Chris broke out in cold sweat. Trevor's state showed that Jackie would absolutely do it.

He did not want to die a slow death!

He did not want to be tortured!

"You can't treat me like that! The elders of my clan won't let you off!" Chris was incredibly agitated.

Jackie let out a laugh. That threat did not work at all.

He scoffed before he said, "How would they reach me? Are they planning on breaking the barrier around Hestia Continent and going there to kill me?"

Chapter 3218

When Chris heard that, it was like cold water had been splashed on him.

Jackie started to form seals with his hands. He did not plan on actually torturing Chris slowly. He did not want to waste the effort. After all, the pain of one's soul being consumed was the greatest torture.

At that moment, Chris suddenly made his move. He slammed his hand into his mind with a bang. Then, blood spurted out and Chris' life ended.

With a thud, his body fell on the ground stiffly.

Jackie raised an eyebrow.

Chris really was decisive…

Jackie then looked to Trevor, who was still alive. Thanks to his tendons being cut off and his tongue as well, Trevor could not even end his own life. He had been forced to look on as everything happened.

When Trevor saw Jackie slowly walking to him again, he let out a despondent whimper. His body started to twitch violently, but there was nothing he could do. He no longer had the ability to even support his body.

Trevor only had one thing to say in his heart, “ Jackie is a demon! He’s a demon straight out of hell!”

Unfortunately, he could no longer speak. All he could do was make murmuring sounds.

When Jackie arrived next to Trevor, he saw Trevor’s expression of hopelessness.

At that moment, Trevor was already thoroughly in despair. It was either because Trevor was too afraid, or because too much of his soul had been eaten, but Trevor suddenly widened his eyes and started to cough violently.

Blood constantly flowed out.

In just a few moments, he lost all signs of life, closing his eyes. It meant that all nine of the participants were already dead. Most of them had died to Jackie, and he was the well-deserved winner.

The moment Trevor died, there was a vibrant bronze light in the air. The bronze light slowly condensed into a bronze badge.

Jackie knew that that was one of the prizes for winning!

He then reached out and let the bronze badge slowly fall into his palm. After that, the space around him started to distort, wrapping him within. Jackie did not protest at all. He knew that he would be sent out of the isolated space after the battle.

After a moment, the distorted space slowly stabilized to reveal a familiar sight. Looking up, it was the crowded viewing area.

Most of the warriors in the viewing area stood up when they saw him. They looked at him with intense gazes, completely different from the mockery they had before.

When he walked off the transfer array, he could hear loud applause. He looked up at the massive scroll. At that moment, the images from the isolated space were still being broadcasted. All of those corpses remained in their original spots. Out of ten people nine have died. The battle had been incredibly intense.

Rudy excitedly rushed into the viewing area, waving at Jackie. Jackie merely nodded slightly.

What happened after went remarkably well. The caretaker took out ten treasures for Jackie to choose from.

Jackie immediately saw a soul gem the size of a fist. He had already gotten another soul gem before this, but this one was smaller. It had only been a third of the size of the one in front of him at that moment.

To Jackie, the other treasures were not that useful. He needed treasures that could help him cultivate his soul.

After receiving the soul gem, Jackie put the bronze badge into Mustard Seed. He did not plan on wearing it on his chest to show everyone. He felt like maintaining a low profile was better.

After getting his prizes, Jackie immediately left the slaughter gambit.

At that moment, Evan and the others had already left. After all, Trevor was already dead. There was no other reason to remain there unless they wanted to face Jackie.

Chapter 3219

Facing Jackie was of no benefit to them anyway, and there was even a chance that they would get threatened by Jackie.

The Pentagram Clan was no longer as proud as before facing Jackie. After Jackie showed his true skills, they had felt the immense danger he posed.

Jackie brought Rudy along and left the slaughter gambit's area. However, They did not leave the middle city immediately. Instead, they stopped at a more secluded location.

Rudy said curiously, "Aren't you going to leave the middle city right now?"

Before this, the two of them had discussed when they would head toward the inner city. Rudy had thought that Jackie would immediately head to the inner city after obtaining the rights to. After all, Jackie was not the type to dally.

Jackie sighed before he said, "The further we go, the stronger the opponents will be. I have to make preparations for that. I've already perfectly mastered the skill I'm using. Even though it's powerful enough, I can't stop improving just in case anything happened!"

Jackie was planning on learning the storm god rank technique, Soul Sky, before entering the inner city!

The moment Rudy heard that, Rudy said, “You mean you’re planning on learning an even higher leveled technique?”

Jackie nodded.

He had already mastered Destroying the Void. Destroying the Void was an upper ultimate god rank technique. Higher than that was a storm god rank technique.

Normally, storm god rank techniques were no joke. Most divine solidifying realm warriors were unable to master storm god rank techniques. That was because storm god rank techniques involved using the laws of nature. It was incredibly hard to practice.

If one’s skills or talents were not at a certain level, it would be impossible to learn. However, all of that was irrelevant to Jackie. After all, he had inherited the memories of ancient heroes. All those difficulties were nothing for Jackie.

Jackie sighed before he said seriously, “We’ll meet even stronger warriors in the future. The warriors from White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent are definitely stronger than those from Hestia Continent, but in the end, they’re still just from third-grade worlds. There are still second-grade worlds after that. I can’t stop moving forward when there are still so many strong warriors waiting for me!”

Rudy’s lips twitched when he heard what Jackie said, “It’s so frustrating comparing myself to others. You’re already so strong, but you still feel like you’re not enough. It seems like I’m only suited for alchemy.”

Jackie let out a laugh as he patted Rudy on the shoulder, “Didn’t you say you found out some secrets related to the Whirling World?”

Rudy was immediately spirited when he heard that.

He took a deep breath before he said seriously, “I did manage to hear of some things. It wasn’t just Evan to told me some things. I heard some news in the viewing area as well. I’ve compiled the information…”

Saying that, there was a glint in Rudy’s eyes. He was finally of use!

He frowned and continued, “The Whirling World is a complete mystery to the warriors from Hestia Continent, but the Whirling World is common knowledge to the warriors from the other worlds. It opens once every five hundred or so years. It doesn’t just open for three worlds, but all third grade and second grade worlds!”

Jackie’s eyes widened at that. It opened to all third grade and second grade worlds!

Jackie’s breathing quickened at the thought.

What sort of hero created the Whirling World?

He had actually been able to connect all third grade and second grade worlds.

It was amazing!

Chapter 3220

Jackie took a deep breath before he looked into the distance.

After a while, he said, “The most important thing I can do right now is to improve my own skills. I’ll ignore all of that first.”

Rudy nodded before he looked at Jackie curiously, “Are you going to learn a middle ultimate god rank technique?”

He felt like he would never be able to learn an ultimate god rank technique his whole life, let alone one in the middle tier. He was both r.envious and curious when he faced Jackie.

He wanted to know how strong those techniques could be.

In the images from the massive scroll, Rudy had personally witnessed how strong Jackie was. Not a single person there had been a match for Jackie. Even when two incredibly talented warriors worked together, they were no match for Jackie.

He could clearly feel the change of attitude in the viewing area. The warriors went from their initial disdain to respect and admiration. There were a lot of changes that Rudy had seen. It caused Rudy to be grateful for Jackie and respect him as well.

Jackie let out a laugh and said, “I’ve never said that I was using a lower ultimate god rank technique.”

Rudy was stunned at those words.

He was already beginning to think of everything that had happened. It was true. Jackie had never said that his technique was at the lower ultimate god rank Rudy had just speculated on it.

After that, the opinions of the warriors in the viewing area confirmed his thoughts, but it did not seem the case from what Jackie said. It surprised Rudy.

He frowned and said, “You’re not using a lower ultimate god rank technique? Then what level is your technique? Could it be a middle ultimate god rank technique?!”

Jackie shook his head and he said plainly, “Guess higher!”

The moment he said that Rudy was stunned momentarily.

He widened his eyes as he looked at Jackie in disbelief, “What did you say? Guess higher? Are you telling me you’re using an upper ultimate god rank technique?”

His voice trembled when he said that, and his eyes threatened to pop out of their sockets.

He was full of shock and even started to breathe faster. He could not help but shake his head, forcing the shock out of his system.

He took a deep breath and said hoarsely, “Are you joking?”

Jackie sighed in exasperation, smiling as he said, “Why would I joke about that? When have I ever bragged to you?”

The moment that was said, all of Rudy’s doubts were gone. After interacting for so long, he had a deep understanding of Jackie. He never exaggerated. Everything he said was certain.

Just thinking about that caused Rudy to be filled with shock. He stood on the ground and stomped on it.

After that, he circled Jackie, looking like he wanted to say something, but he could not form the words. He circled Jackie excitedly again.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3221 - 3230 -

Chapter 3221

After circling him three times, Jackie could no longer stand it and grabbed Rudy's shoulder, "What are you being so excited for? I don't think it was that hard to guess…"

"If I was only using a lower ultimate god rank technique, I would not have won so easily against the two of them. Only upper ultimate god rank techniques would be able to be so powerful."

Rudy took a deep breath.

His eyes were still full of shock. At that moment, he felt like his brain had turned to mush. He frantically tried to compose his thoughts, but the thoughts constantly swam around his mind.

After a long time, he said, "That's how it is! So you told David the truth back then. That's why David was so shocked and agitated!"

Jackie nodded.

Rudy took a deep breath as he slowly composed himself. He slowly accepted the truth.

He looked up and looked at Jackie seriously, "It's never crossed my mind that I would ever know a warrior who can use an upper ultimate god rank technique! I've never thought that a master like that would ever appear in front of me. I thought it's something I would never touch, I can't believe…"

Saying that his voice started to shake again.

Jackie smiled helplessly, feeling like Rudy was being too emotional.

He tugged at Rudy's shoulder, "That's nothing. There are so many special things in the world. Even though I'm using an upper ultimate god rank technique, I wouldn't be considered all that talented in a first grade world…"

Rudy's lips twitched when he heard that.

He said in exasperation, "It's so frustrating comparing with others. If the other masters heard that, I don't know how many of them would be immensely jealous of you. All of them are struggling to climb up their own respective worlds, but you're already comparing yourself to first grade worlds."

Jackie laughed and said nothing. He did not offer up an explanation. After all, if he went any further, it would end up bringing up a lot of his secrets. Even though Jackie was willing to share some of his secrets with Rudy, it did not mean that Jackie had no reservations about him.

Jackie had never thought of stopping in a third grade world. He had always targeted first grade worlds. The Divine Void World was his greatest secret and his only goal. Back then, a lot had happened in the Divine Void World. All of his achievements were thanks to the Divine Void World.

Since he had promised the head of the Divine Void Clan, then he would definitely see it done!

At that moment, Rudy might not be as excited as before, but he was still shocked.

He frowned and said, “However, an ultimate god realm technique is hard to learn. It’s incredibly difficult to understand. Even divine solidifying realm experts were not assured of being able to learn them, so how did you? I’m not doubting your talent, I‘m just finding it hard to fathom!”

Jackie nodded. He would have felt mocked if anyone else said it, but if it was Rudy, then it was obviously pure curiosity.

Jackie took a deep breath and looked into the distance, “That’s one of my secrets. You’ll find out in the future. ”

Rudy nodded, not pursuing the matter. He was already much more obedient than before. Since Jackie did not want to speak of it, he would not ask. However, another question surfaced at that moment.

He suddenly looked up and asked Jackie, “Since you’ve already mastered an upper ultimate god rank technique, then you must be planning on learning something even better if you’re saying you want to go up a level!”

Jackie nodded calmly.

When Rudy saw Jackie nodding, his lips started to twitch again. He did not know what to say at that point. All those thoughts from before surfaced in his head.

He was shocked, and he started to fumble again.

After a long time, he finally said again, “I don’t even know what level is after the ultimate god rank. Compared to you, I feel like a joke.”

Chapter 3222

Jackie turned around and looked at Rudy meaningfully.

He felt like Rudy had been dealt some heavy blows. He never planned on doing all of that to Rudy, but it was all the truth.

He looked at Rudy earnestly, “Don’t worry, it’s not just you. There are plenty of people who don’t know what comes after the ultimate god rank. You’ve never been someone focused on walking the path of a warrior. Your talents lie in alchemy. ”

Jackie’s consolation proved useful.

Rudy nodded, “You’re right, I’ve never chosen this pass. Then why don’t you teach me right now? I really want to know what rank lies above it…”

Jackie said honestly, “Above the ultimate god rank is the storm god rank. The storm god rank isn’t split up into levels. There are no weak techniques in that rank.:

Rudy looked up and said, “The storm god rank… I feel like it’s so far away from me.”

After he said that, Rudy laughed in self mockery.

It was not just storm god rank techniques that were far away from him, even ultimate god rank techniques were far beyond his reach. Ever since he got to know Jackie, he noticed that he was demanding more and more of himself.

He should already have been considered quite exceptional if he managed to use an ultimate god rank technique.

Thinking about that, he shook his head.

He tossed those wild ideas aside before he looked at Jackie and said, “So you’re planning on learning a storm god rank technique?”

Jackie straightened his body and looked around.

The middle city was incredibly vast. Most of it was fairly deserted. Only a small area was filled with warriors. They were in one of the deserted areas.

Looking around, they were the only living beings around.

It should be very safe, but thinking about it, Jackie still shook his head, “Let’s go find somewhere to practice after we enter the inner city!”

Rudy raised his eyebrow in surprise. He looked around in alarm, but could not see anything other than the two of them.

Rudy said curiously, “It’s quite safe here, but you don’t seem to think so?”

Jackie took a deep breath, “It looks safe, but it doesn’t mean it actually is safe. After exiting the slaughter gambit, I keep on feeling like we’ve been followed by quite a few people. My performance had been too eye-catching. It’s caught quite a bit of attention…”

“Furthermore, I killed Chris and the others. The clans they’re from will definitely hate me. We’re surrounded by enemies at the moment, so it’s better to be safe. The inner city will be different…”

“There are various conditions someone needs to fulfill before they can enter the inner city. It’s not somewhere everyone can just enter. We’ll go in through a transfer array as well. As long as we’re careful enough and we move quickly, we can slip away from those eyes that are following us!”

After determining his plans, Jackie no longer hesitated to bring Rudy to the transfer array towards the inner city.

After obtaining the bronze badge, he had gotten the right to enter the inner city. Furthermore, the bronze badge allowed him to bring two others into the city with him.

The way to the transfer array was incredibly smooth. There were no sudden troublesome matters that popped up.

After a transfer of six hours, they arrived in the inner city. Six whole hours had been needed for the journey. It was a long distance transfer, and it was obvious how far they had gone.

Chapter 3223

In a small inn in the southwest corner of the inner city, Jackie and Rudy were enjoying some tea with great interest.

Rudy’s eyes were wide as he looked all over, observing everything in the place. He was filled with surprise and curiosity as if it was his first time in a city.

Jackie looked at him for a long time before laughing and said, “What are you looking at? What’s there to be so curious about?”

After hearing what he said, Rudy’s lips twitched in exasperation.

He lowered his voice as he leaned towards Jackie, “You’re asking me why I’m curious? How are you so calm? You don’t seem curious at all. It’s already strange enough that there’s an inn in the inner city, but the one manning the inn is actually a masked caretaker! Isn’t that to…”

Saying that Rudy was so surprised that he did not know what to say.

Jackie shook his head slightly, saying helplessly, “What’s there to be so surprised about? Every place has its own specialties. No matter what appears in the Whirling World, I wouldn’t be surprised. Since there are inns here, caretakers are naturally needed as well…”

”Those masked caretakers are basically the managers of the Whirling World anyway. They would appear anywhere if the place needed someone to man it. It doesn’t matter if it’s a betting area of a teahouse.”

Jackie’s words were reasonable, but Rudy still could not hold back his surprise. He sipped some more tea before he said, the inns here seem safe.

“You could use one of the rooms to practice a storm god rank technique.”

Jackie nodded. That was precisely what he was planning.

The inns had rules against private fights and barging into other rooms. With those two rooms, he would absolutely be safe if he wanted to practice a storm god rank technique.

The Whirling Worlds rules were not something that cared about your background. As long as you broke them, you would be struck by lightning and turn to ash. So there were no idiots who would decide to launch a sneak attack in the inns.

Rudy added some more tea for himself, lamenting, “It’s definitely safe, but it’s so expensive. just one night here costs a hundred thousand spirit crystals! Any ordinary wandering warrior would go broke after staying here for a few days?”

It was not a friendly price, but Jackie did not mind.

He had earned so much from the gambles anyway. He had tens of millions, so he could spend however he wanted to. Furthermore, Rudy was willing to share the expenses. After all, he had been completely useless the whole journey. If he even insisted that Jackie paid for this, he would feel too awful.

The two of them got a room in the inn.

They forked out a million right away, reserving a room for ten days. Jackie did not know how far he could get in ten days, but it would be fine as long as he showed some improvements.

As the two of them were walking up the stairs to the second floor, a quarrel was suddenly heard. The two of them looked over to see two men in deep gray robes arguing with each other.

The younger man on the left was grabbing the man on the right's arm and saying, "Can you please calm down?! This isn't the middle city!"

The older man said angrily, "I know this isn't the middle city, but so what?! That guy is going too far. If I don't teach him a lesson, he might act even more arrogantly the next time we see him! Can you stand it?"

Chapter 3224

The younger man sighed helplessly, not letting go of the older man, "Of course I wouldn't be able to stand it! Since they will continue causing us trouble, it means that we definitely can't fight them head on…"

"Can't we just avoid them? The inner city was so large. As long as we don't bump into them, we won't be troubled! We don't have that big of a grudge against them, it'll be fine as long as we avoid any trouble!"

Hearing that, the older warrior absolutely reddened in anger. He looked like he had been gravely insulted. He reached out and pushed to hand that was grabbing his arm away.

"Just listen to what you're saying! Do you not know shame?! Do you not have any shred of pride?! Does being from the Golden Continent mean that you're spared from anything you do? The Golden Continent is a second grade world, but there are so many clans there…"

"They're just a little stronger than Chaos Continent. If an eighth-grade clan from the Chaos Continent was in the Golden Continent, they would be considered a seventh or sixth grade clan. It's not that much different! He's just some small fry from an unknown clan. If he was in the Chaos Continent, he would be nothing. How could I stand it?!"

Hearing that, the younger man was even more anxious.

He grabbed the older man's arm again, and he practically shouted, "Who told you he was a small fry?! He's an inner disciple of the Azure Clan!"

When that was said, the younger disciple looked incredibly sour. His lips twitched slightly, feeling like he was about to spit out blood from the anger.

After the older man heard that, he suddenly stiffened. However, he quickly reverted to his earlier demeanor, shaking the younger man off again, "So what? We're just supposed to get bullied like that?"

The younger man saw that his words were completely fruitless. The older man was not listening to him at all.

The younger man suddenly felt like he wanted to spit out blood.

“You’re just refusing to listen to me, aren’t you? The Azure Clan isn’t some small clan. They’re above average in the Golden Continent. If we face them head-on, we’d just be causing ourselves trouble. Can you please wake up?”

“It’s not the time to be stubborn. Things will be better if we just take a step back We’re not some mortal enemies anyway. If we just let it pass, then things will go away. After all, second grade worlds are separated from third grade worlds As long as we avoid them, there won’t be any trouble in the future. Why do you insist on loolo’ng for trouble?!”

The moment that was said, the older man looked like he had exploded. His face was completely red, looking like he had just been viciously slapped by the younger man.

The older man clenched his teeth, “What did you say?! I’m insisting on causing trouble?”

He pointed at his own nose and his eyes widened in anger, “They’re the ones who had clearly caused us trouble first! The rules of the gamble are obvious. As long as both sides agree, then it can happen! I want to wager against him because he has something I want!”

“If it wasn’t for that, I wouldn’t have bothered with him. Just because I’m not from a ninth grade clan, he met me with a sneer. If you didn’t stop me, I would have fought him on the spot. Who cares about what clan he’s from? Is he allowed to do anything he wants just because of his standing?”

When the younger man heard that, his lips twitched slightly and his expression soured greatly. He took a deep breath, suppressing his urge to scold the older man.

He straightened his body and said, “How old are you now? In so many years, haven’t you experienced a lot? Why are you letting your emotions control you?! If he looks down on you, it’s just because he doesn’t know of you.”

Chapter 3225

“Just like you said, it’s purely because he looks down on your clan. So what? Isn’t that something normal when it comes to disciples of high grade clans? You’ve done this before as well. Are you the only one allowed to do it?”

“I told you to watch your temper before entering the inner city. After all, there are warriors from four worlds here! Even if the Golden Continent ranks low among second grade worlds, it’s still a second grade world. We can’t underestimate them!”

The younger man tried very hard to advise the older man, hoping that the older man would be able to accept his words.

The older man only thought of venting his frustrations. He could not stand what had happened. He felt like his dignity had been trampled on.

Jackie raised an eyebrow at the arguments below. His eyes had a curious glint in them. He had not expected there to be warriors from four worlds there. Even the warriors from Chaos Continent were not able to act like kings.

In the middle city, the warriors from Chaos Continent were stronger on average. That was because their world was the strongest one out of the three.

It was said that Chaos Continent was only a sliver away from becoming a second grade world. In just a few more centuries or millennia, they stood a good chance of being promoted. However, even with that possibility, they were still a third grade world. There was still a gap between them and the Golden Continent.

Rudy's expression darkened when he heard the conversation below. He looked up at Jackie with some worry.

Jackie's expression remained calm as if he did not really care about what was happening downstairs.

The two of them did not say much as they walked upstairs. When they got to their room, Rudy could not hold himself back from pulling Jackie to the table in the room, and sitting Jackie down before Rudy sat in front.

He held his words back, pouring some tea and putting a cup in front of Jackie before he took a deep breath and said, "Is the Golden Continent dangerous?"

It was a bit of a sudden question.

Jackie sipped some of the tea before he laughed and said, "Are you worried that I can't beat the warriors from Golden Continent?"

Rudy's lips stiffened, wanting to deny it. That was because it would look like he did not trust Jackie.

He thought about it for a while but still nodded. After being with Jackie for so long, he already saw Jackie as an elder brother. He did not want to hide these things.

When Jackie saw the node, he let out a laugh, "You don't have to worry. Even though I don't know how strong the warriors from Golden Continent are exactly, normal warriors are still no match for me…"

Rudy sighed before he gulped down his tea, pushing down his panic.

“I know that third grade worlds have never been your goal. Even second grade worlds are beneath you. You’ve always been looking at first grade worlds, but you still don’t know how strong the warriors of second grade worlds are. The unknown is dangerous…”

“You usually make a lot of enemies too. We should be careful. just like what that person below said, let’s not provoke them. We should just keep our distance!”

Chapter 3226

During that period, they had made a lot of enemies, whether intentionally or not. Even though they had been able to deal with it the whole time, Rudy was still a little afraid of the prodigies they knew nothing about.

Jackie took a sip of tea and said plainly, “Calm down. In the Whirling World, as long as we take precautions, we won’t find ourselves in any dangerous circumstances. However, if anyone provokes us, how can we not retaliate?”

Hearing those words, Rudy sighed helplessly. He knew that he would not be able to sway Jackie, but he really was worried.

The closer they got to the center of the Whirling World, the stronger their enemies would be. He could not imagine how strong the warriors in first-level cities would be.

Those chaotic thoughts surfaced in Rudy’s mind. While he was scared, he was incredibly worried as well!

Jackie sighed as he looked at Rudy, and gently placed the teacup on the table. “Don’t worry yourself for no reason before anything happens, there’s no point in that. You must be tired after the past few days, so go to sleep for now. Without permission, no one can come in here anyway. I’ll try mastering Soul Sky.”

Rudy nodded.

There was an order in things, and even though he was worried, he had to put them aside before anything transpired.

There was a bed and a couch in the room.

Jackie let Rudy rest on the bed while he used the couch.

The storm god rank technique, Soul Sky, was a soul-attribute technique. Even powerhouses of the divine solidifying realm were often crushed by storm god rank techniques as they were incredibly difficult to understand. just understanding the

contents would usually take up a large amount of time, let alone getting it to a proficient level.

Those without enough talent would not even be able to understand the techniques, but these did not trouble Jackie at all. With the memories from the ancient warriors, Jackie did not need to try before he got a complete understanding of Soul Sky.

The situational bottlenecks that stopped others were nothing to Jackie at all. He only needed to do one thing, which was to slowly start training on the technique from the start.

For others, storm god rank techniques were like massive mountains that needed a lot of time to climb.

Some of the places did not even have a path for the warriors to climb on, requiring them to carve out a path for themselves. However, it was more akin to an empty bottle to Jackie. He only needed to constantly add water to the bottle for him to train in the technique.

Storm god rank techniques were also split into three stages, and each stage had its own name.

The first stage of Soul Sky was called the Broken Soul Blade. If Jackie wanted to use Soul Sky against his enemies, he would need to get Soul Sky to proficiency. Only by getting it to that level would he be able to eliminate people with it!

Jackie took a deep breath and took out the bounty he had accumulated in Mustard Seed. He took out the Purple Soul Fruit, the Green Phoenix Fruit, and the two soul gems, putting them all on the table. No matter if those treasures were useful or not, he would absorb them first.

Only by accumulating enough power could him condense a Divine Soul. With a Divine Soul, he would be able to use the Broken Soul Blade!

Time slowly ticked away, and they had been in the inner city for 10 days. While they had paid for their stay, the results Jackie received were very unsatisfactory.

In 10 days, he had only been able to absorb one soul gem and one Purple Soul Fruit, and he only had a tenth of a Divine Soul. This was not what he anticipated whatsoever!

He had thought that absorbing so many treasures would have at least allowed him to reach 60 percent, but it was a huge difference!

Rudy had already rested enough at that time and was drinking tea on the table.

When Jackie opened his eyes, Rudy let out a laugh as he said, “I’ve already paid for the fees and added ten more days. You still have one soul gem that you haven’t absorbed. Good luck…”

Chapter 3227

Jackie was spared from the trouble of settling the fees for their stay thanks to Rudy’s proactive self. Thus, he nodded and continued to absorb the soul gem.

Meanwhile, Rudy leisurely drank his tea as he thought of everything he had experienced during this time. Even though he experienced a lot, his actual skills had not increased by that much. He specialized in alchemy, but even that was nothing special.

He had learned quite a lot from Jackie, but his talents were ordinary. There was a gulf between him and Jackie, and though he improved, it was not by much at all, which made him doubt himself.

After five days, Jackie finally opened his eyes again. He had absorbed all the treasures and had even absorbed some valuable pills, but he only had one-fifth of a Divine Soul.

Jackie shook his head regretfully, but there was nothing he could do. He fretfully realized that the slower his absorption was, the more treasures it meant he would need in the future.

Thinking about that, Jackie sighed helplessly.

True, he had much wealth on him at the moment, and he genuinely believed that even though he was far from his goal, he had thought that things were looking up. Alas, it seemed like that was all just a pipe dream.

After all, he needed to improve his strength and to do that, he would need a lot of treasures to support him. He could get them through competitions, but those did not yield that much.

If Jackie wanted to form a Divine Soul, he would need a lot of treasures. The remainder of those would require Jackie to spend large amounts of spirit crystals to purchase. just thinking about it caused Jackie to hurt physically, lamenting that he might need to spend all of his spirit crystals to get treasures soon.

Jackie sighed. “Sure enough, spirit crystals are never enough for warriors…”

Rudy raised an eyebrow when he heard that, wanting to ask Jackie something, but Jackie had already gotten off the couch. “If we’re lacking spirit crystals, then I’ll have to make more. Thankfully, there’s somewhere that we can make spirit crystals nearby. I might even be able to get some good things there…”

Rudy raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie's back curiously.

Jackie explained things to Rudy as he walked forward. "Do you still remember the argument we heard when we were going upstairs three days ago? That guy mentioned an attribute gamble."

Rudy suddenly recalled it when Jackie mentioned it.

"What's an attribute gamble? The name sounds so weird…"

Jackie laughed and said, "It's actually not that strange, the name's very straightforward. An attribute gamble just means you're gambling on everyone's attributes…"

"For instance, I'm a soul attribute warrior. When it comes to the soul attribute, control over it is many times stronger than other attributes. I'd be a soul attribute warrior. The attribute gamble is a competition over the control of various attributes."

Rudy's lips twitched at this. Even though Jackie had patiently explained it, he felt like he was still in the dark.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy and could immediately see that Rudy did not understand. He let out a laugh, not thinking anything of Rudy's comprehension abilities.

The moment they entered the inner city, all the rules had flooded into his mind. Rudy had been following Jackie in, so he had not gotten all that knowledge.

Chapter 3228

Rudy frowned and thought about it for a while before saying, "So, can I understand it as purely using attributes to attack?"

Jackie nodded. "That's basically it. Use the attribute you have the most control of to launch the purest attack."

Rudy was still a little doubtful. "I still can't understand. How strong would a pure attribute attack be?"

Jackie patiently explained, "All techniques have their own attributes. While you train in those techniques, you're also gaining an understanding of those attributes. The attribute gamble puts your control over those attributes to the test. If my control over the attribute is higher, my attack would beat a lower-level warrior, and I'd win. Can you understand it now?"

Rudy pursed his lips, feeling as though he had a slightly better grasp of the idea. He was just a bit puzzled at the details.

After thinking about it, Rudy shook his head. “Whatever. I should just watch before trying to understand it.”

Jackie smiled and agreed.

They were not far away from where the gamble was anyway. The two of them no longer wasted any time after they made the decision.

Jackie brought Rudy over to the Projne Area.

The Projne Area was to the east side of the inner city, and they encountered quite a few warriors that were heading there on the way.

Rudy could see the excitement and even fervency on their faces; such expressions were common in the middle city.

During the time, Rudy felt like their hearts were affected by all the gambling. He had thought that the warriors that entered the inner city were all incredibly strong and talented, so their hearts should be more firm, but it seemed he stood corrected.

Rudy frowned as he whispered, “I think everyone seems to be a bit crazy. They’re always immersed in the excitement.”

Jackie nodded, not surprised. “Isn’t that normal? No matter what kind of gamble it is, there’s always uncertainty and chances to turn the tide. Many people have made a lot of money from the gambles, while others have lost all their fortunes…”

“Ups and downs like these make it easy for someone to lose their rationality. Even warriors who are more resolute than others would get excited in such an atmosphere.”

Rudy nodded understandingly.

After about two hours, they finally arrived at the Projne Area which was split into three parts. The middle was the betting area, and a big row of Projne Sky Stones was present. Rudy counted a total of 33 of them.

On their way, Jackie explained the rules of the attribute gamble in detail.

Rudy looked at the row of Projne Sky Stones and excitedly repeated, “So both sides of the gamble just need to put their hands on both ends of the stone and use the attribute they mastered. The Projne Sky Stone will convert the attributes into an attack, and both sides will clash. The victor will be determined in a flash, right?”

Jackie nodded. “Not only do you need to circulate the attribute in your body, but you also need to inject it into the stone for the attack to materialize.”

Rudy nodded as he stared right at the 33 stones.

These stones were about the height of half a person, and all of them were colored like dust. On the stones were red-colored runes that covered the stones.

The center of the Projne Area had the stones, while the eastern side was called the eastern area where countless warriors were gathered.

The warriors that had walked with them earlier had all headed in that direction as well.

Chapter 3229

Rudy looked over and noted that the place was jam-packed with people. He estimated that there were at least 10000 people there.

He sighed, thinking that the inner city would have fewer people than the middle city since they were all elites. Alas, he stood corrected yet again. Compared to the eastern area, the western area had fewer people.

Rudy looked over and estimated that the western area only had about 1000 people there. It was 90 percent less than the western area.

The western area's warriors were all seated on mats. They were not as noisy as the eastern area, and the clothes they wore made them seem otherworldly.

What separated them from the warriors in the eastern area was the fact that they all had a whiteboard in front of them, and a lot of words were written on them.

Rudy looked at the boards and said, "You still haven't told me what's the difference between the warriors in the east and in the west. What's written on the boards?"

Jackie explained, "To put it simply, the warriors gathered in the east are mostly warriors who still haven't figured out if they want to participate in the gamble, while the warriors in the west are those who are determined to participate. Since it' s a gamble, they naturally need someone else to compete against. The board in front of them has the gamble they want and the treasures as well."

Hearing that, Rudy blinked curiously. "You can even bet treasures?"

Jackie nodded, explaining in detail, "The attribute gamble isn't completely like the ones we've seen before. The attribute gamble has two parts to it. One is on spirit crystals, while the other one is on treasures. Technique scrolls can be used, too…"

"As long as it' s something valuable, it can be used as a bet. It also increases the challenge. Some people take out valuable treasures to stake so they can attract warriors who are interested to bet against them. If they win, they'll be able to get the

treasures and spirit crystals. Naturally, they'll have to fork out the same spirit crystals if they lose."

When Rudy heard that, he raised a hand to interrupt Jackie. "If you lose, you just need to pay with the same amount of spirit crystals, right?"

Jackie nodded and continued, "The attribute gamble is separated to the bet-setter and the bet-taker. The ones in the east are mostly bet-takers, and the ones in the west are mostly bet-setters. The ones who set the bets not only need spirit crystals but treasures as well. Meanwhile, the takers will only need to have spirit crystals."

"That's not very fair!" blurted Rudy.

Jackie laughed before he answered, "Just think about it, it's not that unfair. The bet-setters aren't idiots. If it wasn't fair, then the western area would be empty. There are over a thousand people there because they all feel like it's very fair. Do you know why?"

Hearing what Jackie said, Rudy was a little confused.

He could not understand, so he asked again, and Jackie did not begrudge him the answer.

"The reason's very simple… It's because the bet setters are all very confident in their skills. They agreed to the rules because they were worried that no one would bet against them. The bets are split into two parts, forcing the setters to produce treasures, because they need to attract people to take their bets."

After all that was said, Rudy said with half-understanding, "So they're allowing the setters to bait people into betting against them!"

Chapter 3230

Jackie nodded, letting out a laugh as he looked at the warriors gathered in the western area.

"The fish that take the bait isn't even fish sometimes but a beast that can't be swallowed. So, no one knows how things will end," he spoke.

Rudy nodded. Only then did he have a rough understanding of the rules of the attribute gamble.

Rudy glanced at the warriors in the western area once more and noticed that most of them had dark gold patterns on their sleeves. Noticing that, he tugged at Jackie's sleeve with surprise and pointed it out.

When Jackie saw those patterns, he immediately understood.

With a frown, he said, “They must be warriors from the Golden Continent.”

Rudy could not help but widen his eyes.

The two of them had talked about the Golden Continent. Even though they knew that there were warriors from that world in the inner city, Rudy thought that they would be very far away from him. He did not expect them to appear so quickly.

The warriors that were gathered in the western area from the Golden Continent were over 500. Most of them had their eyes shut and were resting, but even with their eyes shut, the air of arrogance around them was obvious.

Rudy hated arrogant people and thus frowned in displeasure. However, he did not say anything. He turned to look at the eastern area and noticed that the warriors of the Golden Continent only took up a fifth of the eastern area. In terms of total number, there were not that many of them.

What confused Rudy was the fact that warriors from the Golden Continent that were from the eastern area were not mingling with the warriors from the three other worlds. They even took up the centermost area, placing a clear border between them and other warriors.

The warriors of the Golden Continent in the western area were different, mixing with everyone.

Rudy asked in confusion, “Why are the warriors gathered in the eastern area all gathered together, and all of them…”

After saying that, Rudy’s lips twitched.

The warriors in the eastern area were not as quiet as in the western area. Very few of them were resting. Instead, they seemed to be in passionate discussions.

Thanks to the golden patterns on their sleeves, Rudy could immediately tell which warriors were from the Golden Continent. It was obvious how they looked down on everyone else.

Jackie looked over as well. He sighed as his gaze turned a little cold. “The warriors from the Golden Continent look down on warriors from the three other worlds. They made such a clear distinction between them because of that. They probably feel like the warriors from the three other worlds aren’t fit to stand with them.”

Rudy’s anger soared, feeling as though fire was coursing through him. “Disgusting. Who do they think they are? Even though the Golden Continent is a second-grade world, they’re the lowest among second-grade worlds! Do they think others don’t know that? Why do they insist on acting like they aren’t?”

Jackie snorted.

Looking at the arrogance on their faces, he felt like he would probably end up being in conflict with them. However, that was fine, he would respond appropriately.

“That’s not what they’ll think They think that they’re just better than others just by virtue of being from a secondgrade world. In their eyes, warriors from third-grade worlds are all a level lower than them. People like that aren’t easy to get along with,” Jackie said plainly.

Rudy’s lips twitched as he said with contempt, “Must they try to show off like that? It’s just disgusting. Just thinking about it makes me speechless.”

Saying that, he looked up at Jackie.

With Jackie’s temper, it was very possible that Jackie would butt heads with them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3231 - 3240 -

Chapter 3231

At that moment, a loud sound suddenly came from the east that caught their attention.

A man in gray robes looked incredibly furious as he looked at a warrior from the golden continent about six meters away from him.

“What are you acting so arrogantly? Don’t think that you can act like you’re better just because you’re from the Golden Continent. You might be from a second-grade world, but that doesn’t mean everyone is strong. There are the strong and the weak in every world!”

“You have strong warriors in your world, but does that mean Chaos Continent doesn’t? Are Chaos Continent’s warriors not allowed to bet against the warriors from the Golden Continent?”

When the warrior from the Golden Continent heard that, he held his head high as he looked down on the other man. “Of course you can, but that depends on who’s issuing the bet…”

“My fellow disciple is a chosen disciple, and he’s not someone warriors from the Chaos Continent can challenge. What are you making a fuss about? Know your place!”

The warrior from the Chaos Continent started to breathe erratically, and even his eyes reddened. “So what if you’re a chosen disciple? That would depend on what clan you’re a chosen disciple of. You look so weak that there’s no way your senior is much stronger. Furthermore, an attribute battle is focused on control over your attribute. Even if your senior is strong, it doesn’t mean he can win the attribute battle!”

That warrior from the Golden Continent narrowed his eyes angrily and snarled, “You insulted me and my clan?! Very well! I’ll remember you! just you wait!”

The warrior from the Chaos Continent snorted.

“I’ll wait, then!” he growled.

The warriors around that person immediately knew that the person was getting hot-headed and pulled at his sleeve, whispering something into his ears.

That person’s expression immediately darkened, but he was still indignant. Nonetheless, he no longer resumed his argument with the warrior from the Golden Continent.

The argument attracted a lot of looks, and it caused the unfriendly atmosphere to get even tenser.

The warriors from the Golden Continent looked down on the warriors from the third-grade worlds even more, and the warriors from thirdgrade worlds hated the warriors from the Golden Continent a lot more.

Rudy sighed. “The warriors of the Chaos Continent should’ve been the strongest among us, but they weren’t as arrogant. When the warriors of the Golden Continent appeared, they instantly acted like they’re different. They don’t have any grace at all.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and sneered, “The more they lack, the more they want to show off. The Golden Continent might be a second-grade world, but they’re at the bottom of that category. They’re definitely looked down on by warriors from other second-grade worlds…”

“Normally, worlds of different grades wouldn’t interact with each other. Since Chaos Continent was in the upper levels of the third-grade worlds, they were rarely looked down on. When they meet worlds that are weaker than theirs, they won’t need to show off that much, but the Golden Continent is different.”

Hearing that, Rudy immediately understood.

He laughed and said, “So that’s how it is. They’re looked down on when they’re among second-grade worlds, so they try to show off in front of us, making it look like they’re better… Disgusting!”

Chapter 3232

At this point, Rudy loathed the very thought of the Golden Continent warriors.

However, Rudy suddenly thought of something amid their conversation. He thus turned and looked at Jackie in confusion, “That warrior from Chaos Continent said that attribute attacks aren’t pure attacks. Even if you’re strong, your attribute attack might not be.”

Jackie nodded and explained, “That is the case, yes. That’s because your actual strength is determined by the technique you mastered and the control of your technique, but a highgrade technique doesn’t mean it uses a lot of your attributes.”

Rudy could understand only about half of that.

He frowned and asked, “So you’re saying that even if the level of the technique is high, it doesn’t mean that the technique uses a lot of a given attribute. Some techniques are lower in rank but use a lot more attributes. The warriors that use those techniques might even be able to release attribute attacks that are stronger than higher-grade techniques.”

Jackie nodded; that was exactly what he meant.

Attribute gambles could incite a gambler's heart even more due to how unpredictable they were.

Some people were incredibly strong in actual combat, but since their techniques did not use a lot of attributes, they might end up losing to others inferior to them.

The other gambles more or less put the onus on a person's true skills, but an attribute gamble was different.

Rudy said somewhat excitedly, "Then, I can try too, right?"

Jackie did not want to burst Rudy's excitement, but reality was cruel.

Jackie said helplessly, "Even though there's some uncertainty, high-grade techniques usually use a lot of attributes. After all, more of the element would usually cause the technique to be even stronger."

Rudy's excitement was dampened in an instant. "So… It's still a game for the strong in the end. It's just that the uncertainty exists between the strong, right?"

This time, Rudy's understanding was spot on.

Jackie nodded and said, "You're right, the uncertainty exists between the strong. If two people face off, their skills need to be similar for the weaker one to have a chance."

Rudy sighed helplessly, not knowing what to say. All he could do was lament the fact that the world belonged to the strong. The weaklings were better off not participating.

Jackie patted Rudy's shoulder. "Alright, don't think about it anymore. Let's go to the eastern area to understand the situation first."

Rudy followed after Jackie, arriving at the eastern area where most of the warriors were gathered.

The center was taken up by the warriors from the Golden Continent while the other areas were a mix of the three worlds. With the Golden Continent around, the warriors from the other three worlds became much friendlier with each other as though in unity. After all, the Golden Continent belittled them all.

The two of them had just stopped when they saw another argument flare up.

Chapter 3233

Logan Reaves was pulling back Justin Miller's arm.

“Justin, you’re crazy! No matter how amazing a White Phoenix Fruit is, it depends on who you’re up against. You can’t face Gale Hughes!”

Justin frowned as a glint of unhappiness flashed in his eyes. “If it was a matter of actual skill, I’d rethink things, but an attribute gamble is a battle over our mastery of attributes. How would you know I’m any weaker than him?”

“Gale might be from the Azure Clan of the Golden Continent, but he’s not a chosen disciple. He’s just an inner disciple.”

Hearing that, Logan’s face stiffened in exasperation as he let go of his hold on Justin. “So what if he’s an inner disciple? Don’t forget that the Azure Clan is a holy-grade clan. That means they’re even stronger than ninth-grade clans! Our clan, the Green Cliff Clan, is only an eighth-grade clan, we can’t compare to them at all! Their inner disciples are completely different from ours!”

Logan was very sincere with his advice, and his words were very reasonable.

Justin finally listened, but he refused to let the White Phoenix Fruit go.

He pursed his lips and said, “But… I really need a White Phoenix Fruit. If I win, the fruit will be mine…”

Logan scoffed, “What if you lose?”

He waved four fingers in front of Justin. “It’s four million spirit crystals, that’s not a small number! You probably only have five million in your storage space, so if you lose, you’ll be throwing away most of your fortune. That’s the fruit of your many years of labor! Are you willing to do that?”

These words were akin to a bucket of cold water on Justin.

He had a bitter look on his face as he sighed. “You’re right… The price of losing is too hefty. I can’t bear it…”

Rudy silently looked at Justin and Logan and suddenly realized that he was several times richer than a disciple from an eighth-grade clan. With that thought in mind, he could not help but lament that the gambles were involving larger and larger numbers.

The minimum bet for the attribute gamble was three million spirit crystals while the highest was four million. He had looked around earlier, and almost 90 percent of the warriors there were putting four million at stake.

That meant that the bet-takers would need to fork out four million as well, which was no small amount. Most of the people present needed to consider if they could really win before taking up that sum.

Rudy looked at Jackie and whispered, “No wonder you said you wanted to make some spirit crystals here. You can bet four million in one go, and you can participate in three attribute gambles in one day. If you win all three of them, you’d be able to make twelve million, even forgetting about those valuable treasures.”

Meanwhile…

Justin sighed, “Are we supposed to just watch as the chance slips away? I feel like I’m stuck here. There’s a good chance I’ll be able to break through it if I have the White Phoenix Fruit…”

Logan said in exasperation, “I know the White Phoenix Fruit contains the power of fire and wind which can let you go even higher, but your chances of winning aren’t great. As a matter of fact, you stand a big chance of losing. If you lose, you’d lose more than half your fortune!”

Justin nodded miserably, having accepted his fate rationally.

“You’re right, but I’m just reluctant. A White Phoenix Fruit is worth eight million. If I want to buy one, I’ll still need to save up for a long time, and it will be my whole fortune after I buy it.”

Logan sighed, understanding why Justin was so impulsive earlier. If it had been himself, he would not have been able to remain calm either. After all, the allure was too great.

Chapter 3234

At that moment, an unfriendly voice was suddenly heard by them.

A warrior from the Golden Continent suddenly walked over and looked at Justin. “You kept on staring at Gale just now. Are you thinking about wagering against him?”

There was a bit of a distance between the few of them and the center, but the warrior from the Golden Continent walked right over to them. His dislike for them was evident as he looked at them.

Looking at the scene, Jackie was speechless. it was just a few looks, and it was not like Justin was going to wager against Gale, yet this person decided to assert himself!

Rudy pursed his lips in disdain as he whispered to Jackie, “Does he have that much free time?”

Jackie felt that way as well. it was indeed exasperating.

“I am Lorien Miles, an inner disciple of the Azure Clan. The one who you were staring at is my senior, Gale.”

“Don’t look at me so incredulously; you should be flattered that I’m even talking to you. I just walked over because I can’t stand it anymore!” sneered Lorien, his eyes narrowed.

Jackie was even more speechless when he heard that.

It was obvious how absurd the warriors of the Golden Continent were with their behavior.

Normally, disciples from high-grade clans would keep to themselves, and unless they were challenged, they would not look for trouble. After all, stirring the pot like that was usually something for lowly gangsters. However, the warriors of the Golden Continent did not seem to care. As long as they did not like someone, they would walk over for ‘small talk’.

Jackie’s lips twitched.

It seemed all of them had something wrong with their heads. They had probably been bullied too much in the past and were looking for the chance to do the same.

They would naturally not let up any chances and would create chances at a whim. Justin’s expression soured at this exasperating confrontation. He did not expect that someone would want to cause trouble just because of a few words he had exchanged with his fellow disciple.

Justin took a deep breath and said patiently, “I did think about taking up the bet, but so what? He’s the bet-setter. There’s no rule to say who can’t take his bets.”

Logan was always mild-tempered. As long as the other person did not cross the line, he would rarely be involved with any conflicts. However, facing Lorien, he seemed to have lost that composure. He was never someone who looked for trouble, but he would not back down if someone else came looking.

Logan said with a low voice, “Don’t cross the line here. We didn’t do anything, and you’re trying to look for trouble. What do you want?”

Lorien did not expect that the other side would not be afraid of him at all. He felt like he was not being shown any respect, which caused him to become furious.

He snorted and narrowed his eyes. “Well, well… You’re not accepting my kindness, I see! Don’t think I don’t know about it. I’ve already had my eyes on you two. You held him back, but he said a load of crap. Even though I didn’t hear it, it doesn’t mean I don’t know what he said!”

“Weren’t you saying that you were equal to Gale? Gale’s just an inner disciple from the Azure Clan, but you’re a chosen disciple! it’s because you had such a hilarious thought that you thought you could face my senior!”

Justin was absolutely furious.

This man was becoming even more outrageous by the minute!

Even if he did think so, what of it?

It was absurd to want to pick on others' thoughts. Not only that, but he was also purely looking for trouble when there was none!

Chapter 3235

"Don't push your luck!" shouted Justin.

"So, what if you're from a holy-grade clan and a different world? This is the Whirling World, if you haven't noticed already. You can't do anything in the inner city no matter who you are!"

Lorien felt like he had been insulted by a low-class person, and his anger soared, "Push my luck, you say? I should be telling you that! I came here to warn you and everyone else as well: don't push your stupid thoughts on our world!"

"Even if Gale is an inner disciple, he's not someone weaklings like you can challenge. Even if the attribute battle is a bit special, you still don't stand a chance! "

As he said that, Lorien deliberately raised his voice so most of the warriors gathered there could hear him.

Rudy's eyes widened. "This guy is too much…"

The warriors around them could no longer remain calm at that. Lorien had truly crossed the line with blunt words slapping at the faces of all the warriors from the three other worlds. Even if he was from the Golden Continent, a secondgrade world, he had no right to be so arrogant.

It was no longer just sheer arrogance; it was like he was humiliating everyone.

Jackie finally understood why that warrior in the inn had been so angry that he could not contain himself.

The warriors from the Golden Continent really were absurd. They made everyone want to slap them on the spot.

The warriors around them could no longer stand it.

A warrior from the Chaos Continent said loudly, "Why are you running your mouth like that? So what if you're an inner disciple? If you're that strong, why aren't you taking part

in the attribute gamble? Who do you think you are, even restricting others from taking part?!”

“That’s right! The Golden Continent is too much. Even if you’re from a higher-grade world, you’re just at the bottom of second-grade worlds. Why are you acting like you’re all larger than life?”

Those words instigated all of the warriors from the Golden Continent, and they exploded as well. There was only one person talking, but almost every warrior from the Golden Continent started to speak at that moment.

“What do you understand? You’re just trash from third-grade worlds. You should be honored that you’re even standing next to us! You don’t have the right to, anyway!”

“Why don’t you talk to us when you’re from a second-grade world?! How dare you insult the Golden Continent? Look at yourselves in the mirror first!”

“A bunch of third-class trash. You’re all so ignorant in our eyes. How dare you try to judge us. What a joke. You say we’re arrogant, but that’s because we have the right to be. Why aren’t you showing off? That’s because you’re not skilled enough to do it. Just stand there and be good!”

The eastern area suddenly turned incredibly noisy as fights burst out everywhere.

If it were not for the rules, the fights would probably have turned into a war between worlds.

Jackie sighed, reaching up to rub his sore ears. He could not stand all the noise.

Rudy clenched his teeth in anger as well. He started to argue with the warriors of the Golden Continent as well. He was so riled up that he no longer minded his words and even cursed their ancestors.

Lorien was right in front of Justin and not far away from Rudy as well, so Lorien heard everything Rudy said.

“What did you say?!” he snarled. “You dared to curse my seniors?! Very well! You’re dead meat!”

Rudy was not afraid and instead said, “You want to fight me? Well, let’s see if you have the skills. Even Gale doesn’t have the right to, let alone you!”

Lorien laughed. “Who do you think you are? Don’t think I can’t tell that the energy in your body isn’t stable. it’s obvious that you’re just trash. I don’t know how you got into the inner city, but don’t think that we can’t tell what you are just because you know how to talk!”

Chapter 3236

Rudy's lips stiffened, unable to respond to that.

Lorien's eyes were sharp as he could immediately tell that Rudy's skills were not up to par.

Rudy had been greatly pushed back by that, but his heart was still angry. As his anger grew, he felt like he was going to get a heart attack anytime.

Facts hurt the most. Even if he knew that Lorien's words were over the line, there was no way he could respond to the truth. He stomped his feet angrily, and the noise around him got louder and louder, but he could still say nothing.

Lorien was amused looking at him stomping his feet angrily.

Lorien smiled snidely and said, "How dare trash like you talk so much in front of me? You must really not know your place. You act like we're equals, but you're just a rock by the side of the road, not even qualified to die under my feet!"

"If it weren't for the rules, you'd already be dead. However, you shouldn't be too pleased with yourself. There are a lot of fun places in the inner city. I have all the time in the world to torture you. I have already memorized you, and I'll have people constantly looking out for you. As long as we get the chance, you'll be buried alive."

Rudy's lips twitched, and his expression stiffened.

He had been threatened again. If he was a little insignificant guy with no one to rely on, then he would start living like a street rat from then on. He would be forced to be incredibly careful every day and probably find a place to hide, no longer appearing in public. Yet, he was not. However, he did not want to continue arguing with Lorien.

After being threatened, Rudy slowly calmed down. He knew that he had been impulsive just now. They already made so many enemies, his conflict with Lorien would just be adding to Jackie's troubles.

Thinking of that, he turned to look at Jackie with regret. Jackie happened to turn his head as well.

When the two of them exchanged a look, Rudy felt even more guilty. He pursed his lips and sent an apologetic smile.

Looking at him, Jackie knew that Rudy had finally calmed down. Moments ago, Rudy was ready to fight against anyone.

Jackie sighed, whispering, “What’s the point of regretting it? I already know what happened. If you regret it, then you should know what to do in the future. Regret is pointless…”

Rudy’s expression stiffened, not knowing what to say out of his guilt.

He suddenly remembered all the trouble he had caused Jackie due to his impulsiveness. However, he could not stop himself, especially when facing injustice. He would explode just like cold water in boiling oil.

Rudy said apologetically, “I’ll be careful in the future, it won’t happen again, Jackie…”

However, he was stopped by Jackie’s hand before he could finish, “It’s fine, there’s no need to apologize. Honestly, even if you weren’t impulsive, things would have still happened anyway.”

Rudy did not understand what Jackie meant by that and looked at him in confusion. However, Jackie did not plan on explaining anything to Rudy. He merely looked right at Lorien.

When Lorien saw that Rudy no longer dared to speak, he was very pleased with himself.

He held his head high as he looked at everyone arrogantly, “Gale might be an inner disciple, but he’s already mastered his upper earth rank technique to the second stage. He’s only a sliver away from perfecting it!”

“He’ll be able to make a breakthrough before too long! What about all of you? You’re all just trash. You might never even be able to learn a technique of that level your whole life!”

The moment that was said, the surroundings became quiet.

The arguments started to die down. Facts were the most convincing thing. Gale was an inner disciple, but his skills were already at the level of the chosen disciples of the best eighth-grade clans of their world.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. it was more or less as he expected.

Chris had been a chosen disciple of the Purple Cloud Pavilion and was among the top three at that. His skills were more or less at Gale’s level.

Chapter 3237

Gale was just an inner disciple of the Azure Clan. The difference between the two sides was obvious. The reality was more convincing than anything.

However, a warrior from the Chaos Continent loudly shot back, “So what? Chaos Continent is filled with warriors of upper-earth rank techniques. Even Hestia Continent has them, let alone us. You do have a lot of masters, but third-grade worlds have a lot too. If you say that we are all trash, then what are you?!”

“That’s right! You speak as if no one else can do it. Upper-earth rank techniques are nothing. Among the chosen disciples from ninth-grade clans in the Chaos continent, there are even those who know lower ultimate god-rank techniques! It’s just that they aren’t here today. Don’t talk as if masters only exist in the Golden Continent, okay?!”

“That’s right! Your world might be a second-grade world that’s a level higher than ours, but that’s just one level! The Golden Continent is far worse compared to other continents. You only know how to act like heroes in front of us!”

Those words were like an explosion that destroyed the earlier quietness.

The warriors of the Golden Continent hated being compared with other second-grade worlds!

All of them started to look ready for battle.

“You’re all just trash from third-grade worlds who only know how to talk up a big show. Can you look at yourselves before you speak?! You put up an act like that, so go challenge Gale if you have the skills! You don’t even dare to. Even if you do, you’ll just lose!”

“That’s right! The ones who are the loudest shouldn’t just focus on bragging. If you have the skills, then go take up Gale’s bet!”

The third-grade world warriors quieted down quite a bit again.

To challenge Gale, they would first need to be at his skill level. Most of the people present were not at that level. Those with the skills to challenge Gale were calmer, having their own considerations. After all, they could only issue three challenges a day.

If they stood up to challenge Gale, the pressure would be multiplied. They could not afford to lose, but attribute gambles were too uncertain. It was not true skill at stake. The others knew that very well, so no one stood up to accept the challenge.

When Lorien saw that there was no response, he started to laugh out loud. It was an incredibly exaggerated laugh that caused Rudy to be infuriated just looking at him.

Justin and Logan were incredibly angered as well. The warriors from Golden Continent were far too arrogant, but they could do nothing about it.

Lorien was very close to Rudy and happened to notice Rudy’s hateful expression.

He suddenly stopped his laughing as he narrowed his eyes, walking toward Rudy, “What? Are you not happy? If you’re not happy, then challenge him! If you don’t have the skills, then suffer in silence!”

Chapter 3238

Rudy almost spat out a mouthful of blood. He looked at Lorien with his teeth clenched, and his veins popped from the anger.

Jackie sighed helplessly, grabbing Rudy’s arm to stop Rudy from getting punished by the laws.

Jackie could tell that Lorien was deliberately provoking Rudy. The more unhappy Rudy seemed about the situation, the more arrogantly he would act in front of Rudy.

He wanted to thoroughly infuriate Rudy so Rudy would lose control of himself and launch an attack. That way, Rudy would immediately be punished by the laws of the Whirling World.

Jackie was incredibly calm at that moment. If that continued, Rudy really would not be able to handle it.

A White Phoenix Fruit was something amazing. It was worth quite a lot of spirit crystals.

He hated the noise around him, so he looked toward Gale in the west direction. He started to walk firmly toward the area until Jackie was right in front of Gale.

The warriors in the eastern area went completely silent. Both of Gale’s eyes opened to look at Jackie coldly.

Jackie said calmly, “I will challenge you as a bet-taker. I hope you won’t waste time talking, because I’m very short on time.”

Gale clearly heard those words, causing Gale to raise an eyebrow.

A flash of rage shone in his eyes. Even though his eyes had been closed, he still heard the arguments from the eastern area. He knew why they had been fighting, and the contents of the arguments.

He had thought that no one would dare to step up to challenge him. Even if there was anyone, it would be someone from the Golden Continent. He never expected that there would be an idiot willing to challenge him.

Gale narrowed his eyes, and his tone was incredibly cold, “What’s your name? Which continent are you from?”

Jackie calmly answered, “ Jackie, from Hestia Continent.”

When he heard Jackie’s origins, Gale started to laugh. However, his laugh did not reach his eyes. Gale’s eyes got even colder.

A piece of trash from Hestia Continent had actually dared to challenge him.

How bold!

He would not allow his honor to be challenged. Jackie challenging him was like a stomp on his dignity. Gale frowned as killing intent flashed in his eyes. He recalled what Jackie had just said, and the killing intent deepened.

That kid actually asked him not to waste any time. How arrogant. If it was not for the rules, he would have attacked Jackie right away.

Gale narrowed his eyes, slowly standing up from the mat. There was an aura of strength around his body.

He wanted to push Jackie back, but Jackie was not affected at all. Jackie’s expression remained calm. All of his actions and words were clearly seen by the man.

The western side was still quiet, but the eastern side had exploded.

Everyone was looking at Jackie strangely. He was just from Hestia Continent, so they felt like he was overestimating himself.

Who did he think he was?

Lorien was stunned. His lips twitched speechlessly. He turned to look at Rudy and saw that Rudy was incredibly excited. Lorien felt even more strange looking at Rudy.

Jackie had stood next to Rudy earlier, and the two of them had whispered to each other for a long time. It was obvious that they were close. Rudy was already a crazy braggart, but he did not expect Jackie to be crazier.

Rudy had just been bragging, but Jackie had gone and challenged Gale. That took a lot of guts.

Could four million spirit crystals be worth nothing to him?

Maybe he did so because he thought he would be able to earn the praises of the warriors from the third-grade worlds.

Chapter 3239

Lorien felt like it was hilarious, he looked at Rudy and said, “You’re just second-class trash that only knows how to brag, and he’s just an idiot who doesn’t think before he acts. No wonder you’re friends, you both are an amazing pairing!”

After he said that, the warriors from Golden Continent all laughed uproariously. They felt like Jackie’s actions were just crazy. They looked at Jackie like they were looking at an idiot.

Hearing all of that, Rudy was not angry at all. He was already used to words like that.

Every time, Jackie would use his abilities to shut those people up.

Rudy laughed coldly before saying, “Don’t speak too earlier. In a while, you’ll know who’s the second-class and who’s the idiot!”

Lorien scoffed as his lips twitched, not knowing what to say.

Rudy did not seem to care about what others were saying and merely looked at Jackie with anticipation. He had been waiting for Jackie to do something the whole time.

Winning everyone else’s praise was secondary to winning the spirit crystals and the White Phoenix Fruit.

Justin had even clearly stated the value of the White Phoenix Fruit. Jackie would be able to get at least seven or eight million after he sold it. It was no small number.

He could feel that Jackie was in desperate need of spirit crystals, so there was no way Jackie would give up such a chance! Jackie’s actions rendered those from the other third-grade worlds speechless especially when they heard that Jackie was from Hestia Continent.

They felt like Jackie was only going to embarrass them.

Anyone who stepped up at that moment should at least be a chosen disciple of an eighth-grade clan from White Marsh Continent or Chaos Continent, otherwise, the match would have no meaning. The results were obvious. Even if attribute gambles had some uncertainty, that still depended on both sides being equal in skill!

Most of the warriors of the inner city did not know who Jackie was. After all, Jackie had only gotten a name for himself in the inner city.

Those from White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent started to ask the warriors from Hestia Continent what clan Jackie was from, but they ended up with just a shake of the head. Even warriors from Hestia Continent wanted to know who that person who appeared out of nowhere was.

When they found no answer even after asking around, they determined that Jackie should be a wandering warrior.

That answer caused them to be even more exasperated.

They said that wandering warriors should just keep quiet and know their place, and they wondered why Jackie had to stand out at that moment.

Did Jackie think they would praise him?

A warrior from Chaos Continent said with exasperation, “This guy must be obsessed with showing off, but the more he acts like that, the more the opposite would happen. If he loses, he’d just embarrass all of us with him! I really want to call him back and ask him not to try to show off at a time like this, but I’m worried that he won’t listen! Then we’ d be laughed at by Golden Continent even more!”

“That’s right. it’s so frustrating. Is there something wrong with his brain? Was he kicked by a donkey or something? I wonder if he knows what he’s doing. If he knows that he’ll only embarrass himself by losing.”

“If he knew, he wouldn’t be doing this. A wandering warrior could never win. He’s just fooling himself!”

Chapter 3240

Compared to Gale, the other warriors from Golden Continent were not that angry.

They merely felt like something must be wrong with Jackie’s head. Otherwise, there was no way Jackie would do something like that!

A warrior from the Golden Continent laughed and said, “This person must be trying to make a name for himself by doing this, but he’s only going to embarrass himself. Just look at the expressions on those country bumpkins’ faces.”

“This is so hilarious. All of them are so embarrassed right now. They want to pull him back, but this guy looks like a complete idiot that wouldn’t care about what others say. He wants to become a hero like this, how funny! This is great, though, Gale will get four million spirit crystals for free!”

“That’s right. He’s just a mindless idiot. Just listen to what he said just now. He dared to tell Gale to shut up with such a commanding tone, and to not waste his time! I almost laughed when I heard that. Who does he think he is? Does he think he’s some fantastic hero?”

“He even said that Gale was wasting his time. I wonder what’s going on in his mind for him to say that. It’s no longer just a joke, this guy must be crippled in the head!”

“It would be praise calling him a cripple…”

Various insults were constantly being thrown around.

Rudy was able to take it initially, but his anger started to build. He was starting to lose his temper.

These people were really crossing the line with what they said.

He frowned and suddenly said, “What do all of you know?! it’s one thing that you’re ignorant, but you’re just throwing your judgment everywhere. Remember what you’re saying right now! Don’t slap yourself in the face later!”

Rudy’s words did nothing to stop the discussions and only made everyone else think that he was an idiot too.

The warriors from the third-grade worlds wanted nothing more than for someone to cover up Rudy’s face so he would stop saying such embarrassing things.

The warriors from the Golden Continent were all laughing.

One of them said in between laughs, “No wonder you have such a good relationship with him. Indeed, birds of the same feather flock together. Both of you are the same!”

“There’s probably something wrong with your head. You even asked us to remember what we said. We’ll listen to you then. We’ll remember everything we said, but what would that do? Do you think that would change the results?”

“Do you think that, if we remember what we said, then Jackie would be able to beat Gale? Don’t joke around so much! Both of you are absolute treasures. Did you come here to make us happy today?”

The eastern side was a complete mess, but the western side was so quiet that one could hear others breathing.

At that moment, the warriors of the western side all had their eyes opened as they stared at Jackie with a look of mockery. Gale felt like he had been challenged. That kid was challenging him and making a joke out of him!

Gale narrowed his eyes as he said in a cold tone, “Brat! Do you know what will happen if you offend me?”

Jackie took a deep breath. He was already used to hearing that. Many people had asked him if he knew what offending them meant.

What ended up happening to those who asked him that question?

Jackie saw everything clearly. Thinking about that, Jackie could not help but let out a laugh.

He had a relaxed look on his face as he replied, “Of course, I know! You act like you didn’t hear what I said. Let me repeat myself, I’m short on time. Once I gamble against you, I still have others to go against. Please don’t waste my time.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3241 - 3250 -

Chapter 3241

Those words ultimately set fire to the explosives.

Gale could no longer hold his temper as he stepped forward, “You brat! Don’t be so pleased with yourself! Don’t think that you can do whatever you want, and I won’t be able to do anything to you. The inner city is different from the middle city!”

“There are a lot of places where I can attack you. Unless you spend your whole life in places with restrictions, your end will be worse than death! You’ll be begging me for mercy!”

Jackie could not hold himself back from rolling his eyes. He had said so many times to not waste any time, but these people seem to always choose to not listen.

They seemed insistent on constantly talking to him, which only annoyed Jackie more.

He reached out and stopped Gale from speaking anymore, “Hey! Do you not understand what I’m saying?! Can you please shut up? No matter how strong you think you are, can you stop acting as if you’ve already won?! Can you brag after you’ve beaten me?!”

Gale’s lips twitched as he reddened in fury.

He wanted nothing more than to attack Jackie on the spot, but his reason told him that he should leave Jackie behind to slowly torture. He narrowed his eyes as he looked at Jackie with a threatening gaze.

After taking a few breaths, he slowly said, “Very good! Since you want to lose so much, then I’ll let you!”

Jackie nodded, not wanting to waste any more time.

After Gale agreed, Jackie turned around and walked right to the Projne Stones. Jackie arrived in front of the twenty-seventh stone. Every Projne Stone had a masked caretaker beside them.

The start of an attribute gamble was straightforward. One just had to report their names and put down the bets for the attribute gamble to start.

After the caretaker took down some simple notes, they gave up their spot.

Jackie arrived at the east of the stone, while Gale stood at the west of the stone. The two of them faced each other, and Gale looked at Jackie with an angered expression. Jackie did not even bother looking at Gale as if Gale was just air.

The caretaker shouted out, “The gamble will start! Both parties are to activate their attributes and put their attributes into the Projne Stone!”

Gale snorted and said, “Brat! You’re the most blindly confident piece of trash I’ve seen!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow and replied calmly, “You’re also the most annoying idiot I’ve seen!”

The two of them stared at each other, not giving way.

Gale had already been infuriated by Jackie enough and was impatiently summoning up all the elements that he could control in his body. He was a wood attribute warrior. He summoned up a green light from his body, and even his eyes started to glow green. He let out a shout and poured all of the power into his right hand before pushing it onto the Projne Stone.

Jackie was noticeably much calmer. Gray energy circulated his skin which was incredibly hard to notice.

He gently placed his left hand on the Projne Stone. The gray energy flowed like a river, violently injecting itself into the Projne Stone.

The crowd only saw gray energy and a green glow slowly rise from the Projne Stone.

Chapter 3242

Those two energies were incredibly full, and they looked evenly matched. Jackie looked at it calmly, while Gale had a smile of victory on his face.

Jackie could see that he was incredibly confident.

Right at that moment, the two forces of energy collided in the air. The gray energy was like an incredibly potent acid, immediately dissolving the green light.

That green light was completely dissolved by the gray energy in a flash. Only the gray energy was left floating in the air, not weakening at all.

Everyone saw the scene, and other than the emotionless caretaker and Jackie, they were all stunned. They had their eyes opened wide and their mouths gaping. Suddenly, there was complete silence.

Even Gale himself could not believe it and wondered if he was hallucinating. They rubbed their eyes to try and see things more clearly and still saw the gray energy remaining in the air.

At that moment, Gale realized he was not seeing things.

Everything he saw had happened!

Gale's face was pale as his lips trembled. His eyes had, at some point, reddened. He started to breathe incredibly erratically.

He did not want to believe what he had seen and wanted to prove that everything that had happened was just an illusion. However, as he thought about it, the more terrified he got.

Gale took a deep breath, "This is all fake!"

He practically shouted that out. His eyes constantly shook, and it was obvious how hard it was for him to accept the truth. Yet, even if he could not accept it, it was the reality!

Jackie raised an eyebrow, feeling amused by Gale.

He snorted and said, "It's useless even if you shout to the skies."

Jackie could not be bothered to argue with him, so he kept quiet after saying that.

The results of the attribute gamble were clear. It had been displayed in front of everyone, leaving no room for doubt. The caretaker stood up at that moment, and his cold tone made it sound like it had nothing to do with him. He was just the reader of the results.

" Jackie wins. He gets four million spirit crystals and a White Phoenix Fruit," After saying that, his white, pupil-less eyes coldly looked at Gale.

The attribute had clear rules. Once the victor was determined, the one who lost needed to hand over the stakes to the other party within five minutes. Otherwise, they would be punished.

Gale's lips twitched as he started to cough intensely. He even started to cough out blood, which stained his clothes. His expression paled a lot.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. He never expected it to be so hard for Gale to accept.

The attribute gamble was filled with uncertainty in the first place. Everyone who participated should already have adjusted their mentality. Even if they were unwilling,

they would be able to force themselves to accept it. After all, there was always a loser and a winner.

Chapter 3243

Gale's hands trembled as he stared right at Jackie, filled with reluctance. He heaved heavily.

His lips trembled slightly, "Why did I lose to you?!"

When he said that, Gale was already on the brink of a mental collapse. He was on the verge of exploding at any moment.

The warriors of the eastern side all had their eyes widened in shock, not believing what they had just witnessed.

A warrior from Chaos Continent shook slightly, "Pinch me. I need to see if I'm crazy. Otherwise, how could something so absurd happen? Is he really a wandering warrior from Hestia Continent? Since when are wandering warriors so strong?!"

As he said that, he even started to breathe more quickly. His face was full of disbelief.

A warrior standing next to him found it hard to speak at all.

The man took a deep breath, "It's not an illusion! If it was, then everyone here has been trapped inside. This is absurd! Isn't Gale using an upper ultimate earth rank technique? That guy earlier even said that Gale was already at the second level, only a sliver away from perfection."

"With skills like that, he should not have lost so quickly. If I didn't know anything before and merely looked at the match, I would have suspected that Gale was not using an upper-earth rank technique, but a lower-earth rank one. He lost too quickly!"

A lot of people agreed with what he said. Gale had lost far too quickly. He had not been able to even hold on before he was defeated. At that moment, the warriors from Golden Continent who had been so arrogant before looked like deflated balloons. All of them had sour looks on their faces.

The attitude they had earlier had completely disappeared. it was like they had all been violently slapped on the face.

The shock did not last for too long. After the shock disappeared, the warriors from the third-grade worlds regained their confidence.

They had been humiliated by the warriors from Golden Continent so much, and it was their turn to fight back.

A warrior from Chaos Continent laughed and said, “Now I have to admit that you’re all right. Gale’s powers are so extraordinary, so how could Jackie face up to him? Look, look at how badly Jackie lost.”

Those words immediately summoned the pride of all the warriors from the third-grade world. Quite a few people started to speak up, “That’s right! Gale‘s so strong. He’s so strong that I can’t even dare to look at him. How could Jackie be a match for him? That warrior named Lorien praised Gale so much. I didn’t agree at the time, but it looks like it’s true! Don’t you all think so?!”

“Of course. He’s a warrior from Golden Continent. How could he lose to a wandering warrior from Hestia Continent? That would be too hilarious!”

As they spoke, they laughed loudly. They were so happy it was as if they had picked up some high-grade pills on the road. They were so happy their smiles were incredibly wide. Compared to the warriors from the third-grade worlds, the warriors from Golden Continent were all furious.

Those words did not put Gale down at all, but it was still hard to listen to all the same. Their earlier comments had all been thrown back at their faces. They found it hard to even lift their heads.

Lorien had said that Jackie was not even worthy of facing Gale, but Gale had lost so completely to Jackie.

Gale did not even compare to Jackie at all.

He had been dominated by Jackie in an instant. Everything that happened earlier had been seen by everyone. Even if they wanted to say something back, they had nothing to say.

The warriors of Golden Continent were all completely quiet as if they had lost their ability to breathe.

The warriors from the third-grade worlds got more and more excited as they spoke.

The insults that had been thrown at them from before were all being hurled right back at the warriors from the Golden Continent’s faces.

Chapter 3244

“I remembered that someone said Jackie had no right to challenge Gale, that he did not even have the right to stand with Gale. it looks like that person was right. Look at how badly Jackie lost. I was too scared to even look.”

“He only lasted for a second before he was defeated. There was no chance at all. it was so quick I don’t even know what to say about it. I really want to console Jackie right now, since he lost so quickly!”

Everyone seemed incredibly happy being sarcastic.

The loser had clearly been Gale, but they were speaking as if Gale had won. Quite a few of the warriors from the Golden Continent were red with anger. They breathed heavily but had nothing to say at all. Their expressions were so dark it was like they had lost their families overnight.

Rudy’s smile was about to split his face apart.

Everyone was talking so happily, and he joined in as well. He had heard so many insults being thrown at Jackie from the warriors of Golden Continent earlier, and he finally had the chance to fight back.

Lorien was right in front of him and did not even dare to look over at him.

Lorien merely looked at the Projne Stone, stunned. It was like he had been dealt a heavy blow. He heard all the mocking words around him. At that moment, he was no longer as arrogant as before. He was like his backbone had been taken out from him, unable to support him anymore.

He felt like all of the discussions were about to be targeted at him, so he frowned and attempted to head back to the center, where the warriors from Golden Continent gathered. However, he had just taken a step forward when Rudy noticed him.

Rudy let out a cold laugh, “What? Are you leaving? Weren’t you acting so arrogantly earlier? Why are you trying to leave now? Didn’t you say that us warriors from third-grade worlds weren’t worthy of challenging the warriors from Golden Continent? Why aren’t you saying anything right now? We’re all waiting!”

“We’ll agree to anything you say right now. We won’t talk back anymore! I think you were absolutely right. The warriors from Golden Continent really are strong. Just look at how quickly you won!”

Lorien’s whole body stiffened, and his mouth constantly twitched. He did not even dare to look back.

He was caught off guard at that moment, not daring to walk away, but feeling like staying there was wrong as well. He suddenly regretted why he had been so antagonistic earlier, insisting on harassing those people.

Rudy would obviously not let him off easy. Just thinking about how Lorien had mocked him made him furious.

Rudy narrowed his eyes and stared right at Lorien's back, "Didn't you call us country bumpkins just now? Why aren't you saying that anymore? Are you suddenly feeling like the country bumpkins are stronger than all of you? The master you were praising was so weak!"

Lorien straightened his back, but not because of his pride. His whole body stiffened. He did not want to seem weak at that moment.

He wanted to say something back to win back some of his dignity, but he could not form the words. After all, nothing he said would be convincing at that moment!

Rudy scoffed before he continued to say, "Now, do you finally know who the ignorant ones are? Calling you ignorant is as good as praising you. At least ignorant people aren't delusional like you are."

Chapter 3245

"You're clearly just insignificant, but you think you can rule the skies. You think that no one can compare to you. Golden Continent might be a second-grade world, but you forgot something-information spreads. All of us know that you're at the bottom of second-grade worlds. Otherwise, you wouldn't have been sent here to compete with us!"

After Rudy finished saying that, the warriors from Golden Continent were all so furious that they were about to cough out blood.

If Jackie had not won, those words would definitely have them arguing to death. After all, they were all sensitive to that point.

Yet, all they could do at that moment was duck their heads. They knew very well that if they refused to admit it or bring up something else, the warriors from the third-grade worlds would smell blood and start attacking them verbally.

Hence, they were forced to bear with it. The eastern side was incredibly noisy, but Jackie's side was practically silent. He could feel like Gale was about to mentally collapse.

Gale was breathing louder and louder, and his eyes were incredibly red as if he could faint at any moment.

He knew he could not accept the truth, but did not expect him to struggle so much. It had already been quite some time, but he was still caught up in his own thoughts, refusing to admit or accept the truth.

Jackie did not bother reminding him that he would be punished if he did not produce the rewards.

Gale was more valuable staying there to Jackie anyway. After all, Gale had threatened Jackie earlier. If Gale had the chance, he would definitely attack Jackie.

Jackie would naturally not show any mercy to enemies like that. Thankfully, Gale still had a shred of rationality left, even if he was quickly losing it.

Right before the time limit was up, he weakly raised his hand and produced four million spirit crystals and a White Phoenix Fruit from his storage space.

The White Phoenix Fruit was placed in a special box.

Jackie took the box and examined the fruit in front of everyone. The moment the box was opened, a dense fragrance assaulted his nose. After looking at it for a long time, Jackie kept the White Phoenix Fruit.

Justin almost drooled at the sight. The White Phoenix Fruit was necessary for him to ascend. If the White Phoenix Fruit was sold in the market, it would be worth at least eight or nine million.

On top of the four million spirit crystals, Jackie's winnings amounted to twelve or thirteen million.

It attracted quite a lot of looks, and people were so jealous that their eyes threatened to pop out of their sockets. Even if they were jealous, they knew very well that if they were the ones standing in front of Gale, they would have been the losers.

Jackie laughed as he raised an eyebrow, "Not bad. The attribute gamble really is profitable…"

The moment he said that Gale spat out some more blood. His eyes were filled with rage. He wanted to rip Jackie's neck apart.

Jackie was already immune to looks of hatred like that since a long time ago.

After the bet was settled, Jackie walked right back to the eastern side.

He had just taken three steps when Gale shouted out to him, "Stay there! Who are you? You can't be a wandering warrior. Even worse is that you said you're from Hestia Continent! I don't believe it! It's impossible!"

Chapter 3246

Jackie's lips twitched as he turned to look at Gale in exasperation.

He sneered and said, “That’s the truth. Why would I lie to you? I know you’re in a complicated mood right now, but I don’t have the time to waste on you. If you want to keep on lying to yourself, there’s nothing I can do about it.”

Those words caused Gale’s chest to hurt again. Compared to being slapped on the face, this was more painful.

His hands trembled slightly and his hands were clenched tight, “Don’t even try to attack me in this manner. I admit that I lost, but you should stop lying to me. If you were a wandering warrior from Hestia Continent, there’s no way I would have lost so quickly!”

After saying that, Gale pointed at the thirteenth Projne Stone.

There were two people standing around the Projne Stone. One of them was from Chaos Continent, and the other was from Golden Continent. The two of them were in an intense battle.

They were frantically summoning all of the attributes that they had control of, injecting them into the Projne Stone. On the stone, two rays of light clashed. One was icy blue, while the other was mud yellow.

The two lights clashed in mid-air, not giving way to the other. The icy blue light suddenly let out an attack, taking away a part of the yellow light. The yellow light launched a counterattack at the blue light.

From that, it was obvious that the two of them were evenly matched, and the victor would need some time to be determined.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not understanding what Gale meant.

Was he trying to prove how quickly it had been?

Gale took a deep breath, his face was incredibly sour, “Do you see that?! This is what happens when your skills are close. If you are at the same level as me, then that would happen, but it clearly didn’t! The technique I’m learning is an upper-earth rank technique. If you can do this, it means you were using a lower ultimate god rank technique!”

“Since when have wandering warriors from Hestia Continent been able to learn lower ultimate god rank techniques? Don’t think that I’ll just believe your lies. Don’t treat me like an idiot!”

“Even if Hestia Continent has a barrier-breaking them off from the other worlds, I still have some basic knowledge. Unless you’re the top chosen disciple of a ninthgrade clan, there’s no way you’re this skilled!”

Jackie finally understood why Gale had said so much.

Gale was just trying to save some of his dignity. After all, it was far too humiliating to lose to a wandering warrior.

Losing to a master who had a lower ultimate god rank technique would give a completely different impression. At least he would have lost with dignity, and would not be laughed at.

At that moment, the warriors on the eastern side started to get serious.

The label of a wandering warrior had been stuck on Jackie, but it did seem like Gale could be right. Jackie could have just been putting on an act and not been telling the truth.

Jackie's lips started to twitch helplessly. He held his head up high and turned to look at the warriors on the eastern side.

At that moment, all of them had their eyes wide open as they looked at Jackie inquisitively.

Jackie smirked meaningfully, "If you don't believe me, you can go look into it. There are quite a few warriors from Hestia Continent gathered here. If I'm from a high-grade clan, then surely some of them recognize me."

Chapter 3247

After saying that, Jackie walked right back to the eastern side. He did not want to keep on wasting time.

The moment Jackie stepped into the area, he saw a familiar figure speed past him.

Upon closer impression, was that not Lorien, who had been so prideful earlier?

Yet, Lorien looked like a street rat at that moment, not even daring to raise his head as he walked past Jackie.

Jackie smiled before he coldly said to Lorien, "What? You were so proud earlier, didn't you say I had something wrong with my head? "

When Lorien heard that, he sped up. He did not even dare to stop. It was as if those words were spoken by a demon that was chasing him. Stopping would mean that he would get caught.

Jackie scoffed, not continuing. Just like Lorien had said earlier, there were plenty of places without any restrictions on this level. If he had the chance, he would get his revenge.

After returning to Rudy's side, Rudy gave him an enthusiastic thumbs up.

Justin, who had thought that Jackie was crazy earlier, shot Jackie a look of admiration.

Jackie did not care how the others were looking at him.

After the match ended, Jackie was already starting to think about who he would face next. After all, he could only conduct three gambles a day.

Before he left, he wanted to at least walk away with thirty million spirit crystals worth of assets. Only then would he get closer to his goals.

At that moment, some people tried to get closer, but Jackie's eyes were already on the western side before they could speak.

He wanted to see if anything interesting was happening there. There were over a thousand people and over a thousand boards. There should definitely be some treasures that could improve his soul there.

Just as his eyes were earnestly looking around, a cheerful laugh was suddenly heard, "Alright, that's it then! The Enlightened Soul Root is something amazing. Even in our world, the value can go up to thirty million. In the Whirling World where things are lacking, it can go up another ten million!"

Those words successfully attracted Jackie's attention.

He turned to look at the person who was talking, and saw that it was a tall man in a deep green robe.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and asked, "Who is that?"

Justin was right next to Jackie and immediately answered, "That person is called Viktor Kroole. He's from the Flying Cloud Clan of Chaos Continent. He's the top chosen disciple, so he's incredibly strong!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he nodded at Justin.

Justin's lips curled up excitedly. Jackie had a rough personality. He had looked away the moment someone wanted to get close, ignoring others completely, but he had actually nodded at him.

Justin suddenly felt like he was incredibly lucky.

Jackie did not know how much Justin's thoughts raced in just a short moment. His mind was fixated on the words, "Enlightened Soul Root…"

A treasure like that was even recorded in the books of first-grade worlds.

Enlightened Soul Roots had a lot of soul energy that could increase the speed of comprehension of a soul attribute warrior. After absorbing it, it can even raise a warrior's talents. It was something amazing and happened to be something Jackie needed.

Viktor had a high standing and was the first place among chosen disciples of the Flying Cloud Clan.

The moment he said that he immediately earned a lot of compliments around him. Viktor really enjoyed the feeling and had a bright smile on his face.

Chapter 3248

However, someone voiced his own opinion, "Dan Summers won't be easy to deal with. He's a chosen disciple of the holy grade clan, the Azure Clan. Even though he's not one of the top disciples, he's still a chosen disciple. You can't compare him to inner disciples."

That person was immediately criticized after saying that. A man who had a sharp nose coldly sneered and said, "Why are you trying to praise others so much? Dan is a chosen disciple, but isn't Viktor one too?"

"What's so impressive about being a chosen disciple? Didn't Gale brag so much earlier? He still ended up losing so badly, not able to stand up against Jackie at all. Golden Continent had just bragged too much before this. All of you have been fooled!"

Those words earned a lot of looks of approval, but a lot of them shook their heads to disagree as well. Even if they were not willing to admit it, Golden Continent being stronger than them was the truth.

They could not deny their overall strength just because their warriors were arrogant and shameless.

The Flying Cloud Clan was an eighth-grade clan from Chaos Continent, but the Azure Clan was two grades higher than the Flying Cloud Clan. There would definitely be differences between their disciples as well.

A warrior from White Marsh Continent frowned and said, "We're not trying to praise them, but we're just pointing out the truth. We can't deny the strength of Golden Continent just because Jackie managed to win. A chosen disciple is still a chosen disciple, they're stronger than inner disciples. "

Those words were immediately rebuked by the Flying Cloud Clan's disciples, "What kind of nonsense are you saying? Don't you know that Viktor is in first place in the Flying Cloud Clan?"

"Of course, we acknowledge the Azure Clan is stronger than the Flying Cloud Clan, but Dan isn't that high up among the chosen disciples of the Azure Clan. Viktor is the first place. Just because of that, don't you think Viktor will be able to challenge him? I feel like Viktor has a good chance of winning!"

The person seemed to leave no room for debate, and the warrior from White Marsh Continent did not know what to say. He did not want to debate any longer, so be shut his mouth.

The warriors from the third-grade worlds were split into two when it came to this.

One part of them felt like Viktor could beat Dan, while the other part felt like Dan was quite a lot stronger than Viktor. The two sides started to quarrel.

Of course, those words fell into the ears of the warriors from Golden Continent as well. The anger that they had suppressed surged again. The warriors of the Golden Continent felt deeply insulted. Even if Viktor was a top-chosen disciple, they did not think much about it.

After all, the Flying Cloud Clan was an eighth-grade clan. In their eyes, it was just a hero among lessors. All of them felt like they were above that.

Thanks to what Gale had said earlier, all of the disciples from Golden Continent thought that there was no way Jackie was as he appeared. They did not look at Jackie through a normal lens, so their prejudices against third-grade worlds remained.

After hearing everything that was said, they were once again agitated.

Someone started to shout at Viktor, " Jackie is Jackie. His circumstances are special. We should talk about things in isolation. So what if Viktor is the top chosen disciple, he still can't beat Dan!"

Chapter 3249

"That's right. If all of you can use lower ultimate god rank techniques, then we have nothing to say about it, but you can't. I'll admit that there are some strong warriors among you, but that's just because you have the numbers. There are bound to be a few exceptional ones…"

"Don't think that you can beat the Golden Continent because of that. Not everyone can challenge a chosen disciple from a holy grade clan!"

The atmosphere that had just calmed down exploded once again. After all, none of them liked each other. On top of that, the two sides were incredibly harsh with their words.

Jackie once again rubbed his ears in annoyance. He did not want to participate in those arguments, because they were pointless.

However, just because he did not want to argue did not mean that others would not point the gun at him.

Some of them deliberately targeted Jackie for the sake of Golden Continent' s dignity, "Even if it's Jackie, he won't be able to beat Dan. Gale might have lost, but that was just because he had a moment of carelessness, and did not use his full abilities. Otherwise, there's no way he would have lost so quickly!

" Jackie did it, and Dan can do it as well. He can completely defeat Gale too! There's always been a gap between chosen and inner disciples anyway. The two of them are so far apart that Dan can deal Gale a complete loss even in Gale's best state, but Jackie can't! So, Dan is stronger than Jackie!"

Those words were completely biased, and rendered people speechless. However, the moment it was said, the other warriors from Golden Continent all agreed. They even made it worse and worse.

They were even starting to change the facts of Jackie's match against Gale. They did everything they could to argue that Gale only lost so quickly because he had not been prepared. it was the result of underestimating his opponent.

It did not mean that Gale was weaker than Jackie, but the gulf between Gale and Dan was evident.

Gale was the tenth place among the inner disciples, while Dan was a chosen disciple. Even though he was not among the top chosen disciples, his skills were still evident. If Dan faced Gale, Gale would lose badly.

All of them were sure that even Jackie would be no match for Dan, and that Jackie would lose even more horribly!

They had been mocked so much by the warriors from the third-grade worlds earlier, so they were using the chance to vent out their frustrations. They started to get louder and louder. Some of them deliberately raised their voices so everyone could hear them!

The arguments were getting more and more intense. They were even at the stage where they were about to fight each other!

Viktor loved being praised and hated it when others doubted his skills. When he heard all of that, he was furious.

His expression started to sour and he suddenly raised his voice, “What do you know?! You’re only good at bragging! Didn’t you praise yourselves so much earlier? Everyone saw what happened after that. it’s not even been that long, but you’ve somehow gotten worse!”

His words caused the fighting to stop quite a bit. After all, the main character had stepped up.

Due to what happened before, the warriors of Golden Continent did not dare to be too stubborn. However, not long after that, they heard a low voice from afar.

Chapter 3250

“We really can’t show you guys any mercy. You’ve only won one match, and you’re already so arrogant. Do you all think that you’re unbeatable now? How dare you challenge me? it looks like I’ve been sitting down here for too long. I haven’t been saying anything, so all of you have gotten too pleased with yourselves!”

The voice was getting closer.

Jackie turned to look and saw a muscular warrior from Hestia Continent walking over from the western side.

It seemed like that person was Dan. He had a threatening aura around him, and it was obvious that he was used to being in command.

When that person walked over, he deliberately stopped his gaze on Jackie. His sharp eyes coldly observed Jackie, like a lion looking at its prey.

His lips curled up into a strange smile, “Don’t be too happy with yourself, you just beat an inner disciple. In the eyes of chosen disciples, inner disciples are just ants. You just beat an ant. You are still trash in our eyes.”

When Dan said that, his smile was full of bloodlust.

He looked like a demon straight out of hell. He did not care if Jackie answered him or not. It was like Jackie really was an ant that could be killed at any moment, completely beneath his notice.

He walked steadily past Jackie and no longer spared Jackie a glance.

He stopped in front of Viktor. At that moment, Viktor was not exuding his earlier arrogance. His eyebrows were furrowed and he looked very serious, but he was full of fighting spirit as well.

Looking at him like that, Dan scoffed in disdain, “You really are a piece of trash that thinks too much of yourself. Do you think that you can increase your chances of winning by acting like this? Jackie’s just an ant that can be killed at any moment in my eyes, and you are too! You’re even smaller than he is.”

He reached out and a golden cyclone formed in his palm. The cyclone spun wildly, and with a hang, it exploded a meter away from Viktor’s face.

The energy dispersed outward, and the warriors that were closer to the explosion could feel how strong the pressure had been.

Quite a few of them took steps back, and some of the weaker warriors even paled and started to sweat. Dan smiled as his cold eyes looked at Viktor. He was incredibly threatening.

He was not attacking, and merely exerting some pressure, so he was naturally not punished for it.

Viktor took a deep breath, not backing off from that pressure at all. He could tell that Dan was incredibly talented, but he was as well. Even if Dan was a chosen disciple from the Azure Clan, he was not one of the top ones.

He might be from an eighth-grade clan, but he was the top-chosen disciple of the Flying Cloud Clan. In Viktor’s eyes, he was comparable to Dan.

Attribute gambles were uncertain, and he was very confident in himself. He never thought he would lose!

Viktor narrowed his eyes, looking right at Dan, “You have power, so what? Do you think you can scare me away like that? Do you think that anyone not from the Golden Continent is a coward? Did you really think we’d run away from some little tricks?”

Dan frowned as anger flashed in his eyes.

A surge of killing intent leaked out from his body. Dan had just disliked Viktor initially, but he was intent on killing Viktor after that. Since this kid was not willing to accept his kindness, he would not hold back.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3251 - 3260 -

Chapter 3251

Dan narrowed his eyes. “It looks like you’re really overestimating yourself. You shouldn’t have the right to challenge me, but I have a kind heart, you see. I pity you empty-headed trash bags. You’re just ignorant, not knowing how vast the world is!”

“I was just trying to expand your horizons. I have to be a little harsh and remind you though, don’t cry if you lose later.”

Viktor felt like he had been slapped listening to these words. His face turned red with anger as he glared at Dan.

Gritting his teeth, he growled, “To hell with your kind heart. Stop acting like you’re above everyone else! Aren’t you just scorning warriors from third-grade worlds because of your origin? Let me show you how ignorant you are!”

The tension between the two men was so palpable that it could be cut with a knife. They looked at each other with hatred, and it was evident a fight would easily break out.

Jackie merely crossed his arms as he quietly looked at the two of them talking.

Things had gone silent, and no one moved. They merely glared at each other, using their expressions to show how angered they were. Jackie felt like the two of them looked incredibly hilarious.

They stared at each for over ten seconds before Jackie could not stand it anymore and said, “Viktor, right? Do you have a moment to spare? I want to bet against him too after you go against him. Can you stop looking at each other? If I didn’t know any better, I would’ve thought you admire each other instead.”

The moment he said that, he attracted a lot of looks as they stared at Jackie in surprise.

If they had not seen Jackie’s skills, they would not have tolerated his words and attitude. After all, those words sounded too arrogant.

A warrior from the Hestia Continent said, “No wonder the warriors from the Golden Continent look at Jackie like they want to rip him apart. No wonder they’re so angry. He’s just infuriating when he talks.”

Jackie impatiently hurried Dan and Viktor, asking them not to waste any more of his time. It was like everyone else was just there to give him what they had.

How could anyone stand it?

Sure enough, Dan looked furious as he glared at Jackie heatedly.

He took a deep breath as he said to Jackie, “I was being nice to you, yet you took it for granted. You dare ask me not to waste your time? Who do you think you are? So what if you have a lower ultimate god rank? In the western area, at least ten percent of the people there have learned lower ultimate god rank techniques!”

Right after he said that, most of the warriors around him bit their tongues.

Indeed, comparing oneself to others was incredibly frustrating. There were over 1000 people in the western area, and 10 percent meant that there were over a hundred. Even among so many warriors in the eastern area, it would already be quite impressive if there were 20 who could use ultimate god rank techniques.

Yet, there were over a hundred in the western area.

Sure enough, there was a difference in skill, and it was impossible to ignore the difference in talent.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not really reacting to what he said.

Lower ultimate god rank techniques meant very little to him after all.

Chapter 3252
After all, Jackie used an upper ultimate god-rank technique, and he had already mastered it. After that, he would be trying to learn a storm god rank technique. Even though he had failed to get to the first stage, getting there would not be a problem as long as he had enough time.

Dan could not keep his composure when he noticed how calm Jackie’s expression was, unlike how surprised the warriors around him were after noticing the difference between themselves and their counterparts.

He frowned and got even more furious at how obstinate Jackie seemed to be. Had it not been for the restrictions, he would have taught this imprudent brat a lesson.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as a flash of unhappiness appeared on his face. He suddenly regretted what he had said earlier.

It was not because he was afraid of offending Dan but because he noticed that his words had the opposite effect of what he wanted. He had not managed to provoke Dan into going against Viktor right away.

Instead, Dan straightened himself and glared right at Jackie unmovingly. Just from looking at Dan, Jackie knew what Dan was thinking.

Dan loudly said, ”Why would I listen to you? Who do you think you are?! Do you think I’m obligated to start the attribute gamble immediately just because you asked? it looks like you really thought too highly of yourself…”

“You still want to bet against me after I go against him? What arrogance. I’ll have you realize the contrast between us soon enough. You’ll lose tragically!”

“I refuse to listen to you. In my eyes, you can’t even compare to an ant by the side of the road!”

Jackie’s lips twitched in exasperation.

It seemed like he could not provoke others like that, however he wanted to. After all, he did not know how others would react. The person right in front of him was acting completely differently than what he wanted.

Jackie frowned as he said coldly, “So you’re insisting on wasting my time? Aren’t you in a hurry to let me know how big the difference is between us? Hurry up and gamble against him, then. Otherwise, gamble against me!”

He could do three gambles in one day.

Jackie had already planned out his time before he went to the area, and he had other things he needed to get done. He did not have the time to waste there.

Dan scoffed, raising his head slightly and completely ignoring Jackie.

Jackie took a deep breath as his lips twitched. At that moment, he heard the comments whispered around him.

“What is going through Jackie’s mind? It looks like his previous victory got to his head and he’s starting to cross the line. it’s a good thing that attribute gambles don’t involve life and death. If he lost, he would just lose four million spirit crystals. Jackie’s quite lucky!”

“You think he’s lucky? I don’t think so. Jackie caused himself a lot of trouble this time. Do you think he’ll have good days ahead after being so rude to a chosen disciple of the Azure Clan?”

”Do you think the Azure Clan would let him off? Just watch! He may be safe for now, but there’s danger everywhere in the future. This will be his last peaceful day. The only way he can survive is if his skills are so extraordinary that no one from the Azure Clan can stand up to him.”

A warrior from White Marsh Continent was the one who said all that.

He naturally had a negative opinion of warriors from the Hestia Continent. Even though Jackie had won some glory for the third-grade worlds, some of the warriors from White Marsh Continent still did not approve of Jackie.

They even felt like Jackie had just been lucky enough to win.

Chapter 3253
The warriors from the Golden Continent could not stomach Jackie's words at all, thus they began shouting at him.

"Do you hear that?! You've offended the Azure Clan! You won't have good days ahead of you. You better kneel and beg us for mercy right now. Go and apologize to everyone, and we might forgive you. Otherwise, you'll be beaten around like a street rat in the future!"

Jackie let out a laugh when he heard all that.

He coldly looked at the ones who had spoken, and there was an underlying threat in his words as he spoke, "Just with your strength?"

Jackie scoffed, not regarding these people as worth his notice at all.

Unless they attacked him altogether, none of them would be a match for him in single combat. Even if a chosen disciple of the Azure Clan was in front of Jackie, he would not even blink an eye.

The noise around Jackie got even louder due to his words. A lot of them were talking among themselves excitedly, and a lot of them thought that Jackie was crazy.

They felt like Jackie did not know his place at all to insist on going against the Azure Clan. A tragic fate awaited him.

It took a really crazy person to want to stand up against an entire clan alone.

The warriors who approved of Jackie shook their heads silently. Those who did not approve of Jackie started to criticize Jackie constantly, believing that he was just digging a deeper hole for himself. There was only death waiting for him.

There were even those who started to wonder how horribly Jackie would end up dying. He heard it all but ignored them, despite how annoying they were to hear.

Rudy had taken it all to heart, though, and his face reddened in anger, wanting nothing more than to start arguing with all of them. However, he knew that he was not great with his words.

Jackie had not even spoken, so he might end up disrupting his plans if he did. Thus, he clenched his fists as he stared at all these blabbering fools.

Jackie scoffed as he coldly glanced at Dan, ignoring everyone else.

He turned around and started walking tight to the western area, earning frowns from onlookers in the eastern area.

The warriors in the western area were in no mood to continue resting either. All of them looked up at Jackie in confusion.

A warrior from the eastern area said, “Is he trying to challenge someone else?”

“That looks like the case, but who’s he going to challenge?”

“Even though I think that Jackie’s unbelievably arrogant, he definitely has some skills. Half of the warriors in the western area aren’t a match for him, at least.”

“Are you worried for the warriors in the western area? There’s nothing to worry about. They’re not idiots. Jackie already showed his skills earlier, so most of them know of his skills. If they don’t think they can beat Jackie, they can just reject the gamble. Attribute gambles need approval from both sides to start anyway.”

Jackie slowly walked to the western area.

At that moment, most of the warriors there had their eyes opened as they stared at Jackie alertly.

Jackie, however, was oblivious to those gazes. They could think whatever they wanted of him. He already had a plan in his mind.

He did not want to waste anymore time, and talking to Dan was a waste of effort.

Since Dan did not want to take up Viktor’s challenge immediately, Jackie would need to choose a new opponent. He did not even look at the warriors in the western area and merely looked at the boards in front of them.

Chapter 3254
“A Frost Flower? This thing isn’t cheap, but it’s not that useful to me.”

Frost Flowers were incredibly beneficial to female warriors, but all Jackie could do with one was to sell it.

There was no other use for it, so he looked at the next warrior. He continued walking forward, remembering all the treasures he was interested in and planning on making a final evaluation later.

No one could understand what Jackie was doing. Most of the warriors in the eastern area were dumbfounded.

They did not know what to say, “Does he think he’s shopping? He’s just walking around and choosing what he wants! That’s way too arrogant! Even a top-chosen disciple wouldn’t dare to do that!”

“I think it fits his personality quite well. Hasn’t he always been like that? He just does whatever he wants. His actions are probably angering all of the warriors in the western area. He’s offended everyone at this point!”

“ Jackie doesn’t seem to care at all; he looks like he’s just intent on saving time, even. I just want to open up his head to see what he’s thinking.”

The warriors of the western area glared at Jackie angrily. Even if he wanted to take up one of the bets, he should do it from far away.

Walking around among everyone, slowly deliberating, made it feel like he was not respecting them at all. They could not accept that.

All of them had dark looks on their faces as if they had just ingested some poison. The way they looked at Jackie was strangely united as their fury could barely be masked.

Meanwhile, Jackie did not seem to care about what anyone else was thinking.

There was a simple reason why all of them were so angered by Jackie’s actions. It was because all of them felt like he was not worthy of doing so. If it had been the top disciple of a holy grade clan doing so, they would have accepted it with no qualms, not even daring to say anything about it.

They looked at Jackie with such anger simply because they felt like he had no right to choose among them like that.

Jackie did not care at all. Those people would not dare to attack him no matter how much he angered them anyway, lest they incur the consequences of violating the laws.

Anyone who did that would get struck by lightning and turned to ash.

Jackie walked around for a long time before he finally stopped.

He raised an eyebrow and mumbled to himself, “There’s a Spirit Rose Fruit here. Not bad.”

A Spirit Rose Fruit was between seven to eight million in value, and it had the same effects as a soul gem. Should he absorb it, it would turn into pure soul energy to enhance his strength.

After looking around, the Spirit Rose Fruit was the only thing that caught Jackie's eyes while the rest were not that helpful to the soul.

After deliberating his choices, Jackie eventually chose the Spirit Rose Fruit. After all, there was also an Enlightened Soul Root waiting for him. Both of those treasures were incredibly useful to Jackie.

He had already condensed a fifth of a Divine Soul. After absorbing those two treasures, his Divine Soul would improve greatly. Thinking of this, his lips curled up into a rare smile. However, the owner of that board was incredibly unhappy.

Chapter 3255
Nevada Lloyd had a frown on his face as he stared at Jackie angrily.

When he saw the smile on Jackie's face, Nevada's rage soared even more.

He shot up from his mat, narrowed his eyes as he looked at Jackie, and gritted his teeth. "Are you planning on challenging me?"

He was practically hissing at this point, and it was obvious how angry Nevada was at Jackie.

Jackie looked like he was grocery shopping, making a huge round before stopping in front of Nevada. His behavior made Nevada feel insulted, even though he had been chosen. He felt like he was trampling all over his dignity!

The more Nevada thought about it, the angrier he got. His hands even started to shake slightly. He looked at Jackie as if he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

Meanwhile, Jackie looked right at Nevada.

Nevada's sleeves had golden patterns on them, meaning Nevada was from the Golden Continent. Yet another person who thought too highly of himself.

He snorted and said, "You're just sitting here, and you already set up a board. The bet setters are naturally the ones who would be sitting here…"

"As a bet-taker, shouldn't I be challenging you? If I'm not allowed to challenge you, why didn't you just write it down on the board that you won't accept challenges from anyone stronger than you?"

Those words infuriated Nevada even more. His lips twitched, and even his body started to quake. "You think too highly of yourself! Do you know who I am? I'm from the White Phoenix Clan, a holy-grade clan. I'm a chosen disciple!"

He had practically shouted out those words as if he wanted to prove how laughable Jackie's actions were. He wanted to scare Jackie as well, not wanting him to take things too far. Being chosen by Jackie like that insulted Nevada greatly.

Jackie did not even bother raising an eyebrow at those words. He looked at Nevada calmly as if he was spouting nonsense.

Noticing how passive Jackie was, Nevada nearly hyperventilated in anger and finally understood Dan's anger.

Nevada pointed right at Jackie's face. "You brat. You've already offended the Azure Clan! Are you going to offend the White Phoenix Clan too? Are you not worried that you're making so many enemies for yourself?"

Hearing that, Jackie said in disdain, "I think you're the one who thinks too highly of himself. Do you really think you're anyone impressive? Even if there are a lot of chances in the inner city, grouping up to attack still isn't allowed…"

"Unless you get your friends to attack me with you, you'll need to fight me alone. The White Phoenix Clan and the Azure Clan are both beneath my notice."

Jackie was merely honest with his words and was not exaggerating anything at all. When Nevada heard this, however, he was deeply angered. After all, Jackie had insulted both himself and his clan.

He took a deep breath and snarled, "You think you can face all of the disciples from the two holy-grade clans alone?!"

Nevada scoffed upon hearing Jackie's words. He felt like the man in front of him could no longer be described as just arrogant. Jackie was already at the level of being crazy.

Did he not know what he was saying?

One person going up against two holy-grade clans… He had said it so casually, too!

It was as if Jackie could easily do it!

Did he think that he was a chosen disciple of a major clan from a first-grade world?

Nevada sneered and said, "Do you even know what you're saying?!"

Of course, Jackie knew what he was saying and implying. Thus, not wanting to dwell on the problem, he chuckled and said, "Don't you want to show me my place just like Dan? Hurry up. I'm in a hurry to know!"

Chapter 3256
Rudy could not stop himself from laughing when he heard that.

He understood how exasperated Jackie felt. He truly did not want to waste any time and effort on those people.

It was obvious that Jackie had other plans in mind. Unfortunately, those people did not understand at all. They only felt like Jackie was being absurd.

Nevada was completely stunned. His lips twitched as he panted and shouted, “You’re sick!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, wanting to curse back at Nevada but decided against it after some thought.

There was no reason for him to talk back at all at that moment. No matter what he said, those people would only think he was crazy anyway. Even the warriors from third-grade worlds were already cursing him.

“Does he lmow what he’s saying? Isn’t he being too rough with his words here? You guys were right after all; his previous victory got to him so much that he’s forgotten his place. He talks as if he’s better than even chosen disciples!”

“That’s true, I really don’t know what he’ s thinking. He’s gone too far. Does he think Hestia is a second-grade world? Even if he’s strong in the Hestia Continent, he’s just strong among weaklings. He won’t amount to much in the Golden Continent, but he’s trying to challenge the warriors from two major clans in the Golden Continent. If I wasn’t hearing it myself right now, I wouldn’t believe it.”

“Don’t forget what kind of place Hestia is. It’s just stuck in its own corner after being trapped by some unknown barrier thousands of years ago. They were cut off from the other worlds. If it wasn’t for the Whirling World, they probably wouldn’t know what the warriors from the other worlds are like at all.”

“ Jackie’s skills stand at the top of the Whirling World. He’s already used to being the king and has turned ignorant because of it. He doesn’t understand how different the Hestia Continent is from the other worlds at all. He’s not confident but conceited!”

“He doesn’t know his place at all. He’ll know how absurd he’s been acting after he suffers defeat later.”

The Golden Continent’s warriors were all rendered speechless from anger.

They affirmed that Jackie was a complete madman, and everything he said infuriated them. Even though they knew that Jackie did not know what he was saying, they could still not stop their anger from boiling over.

Dan laughed in frustration and sneered, “It’s obvious how empty his head is if he can say these things. Even I wouldn’t dare to act that way, saying that I’d be able to beat all of the disciples from two holy-grade clans in duels. It’s crazy how arrogant he must be to be able to say that…”

Viktor shook his head silently, looking at Jackie with a sliver of pity. Even though Jackie’s words were incredibly absurd, Viktor did not want to mock Jackie like everyone else.

He agreed with how everyone was judging Jackie and assumed that he grew up sheltered. He did not know how large the world actually was, either. He probably never encountered any trouble, so he must have felt like he was unbeatable.

Dan could no longer stand it.

If he continued waiting, he would just hear more and more ridiculous things from Jackie. Even though Jackie was incredibly hilarious, they were infuriating as well.

He turned around to look at Viktor. “I won’t bother with that idiot for now. I’ll deal with you first!”

Viktor frowned, looking at Dan unhappily. Dan was really crossing the line.

He took a deep breath and said angrily, “You keep on saying that others are acting arrogantly, but aren’t you?”

Chapter 3257
Dan scoffed at Viktor’s words. “That’s because I can walk the talk. The two of you just somewhat excel in your own worlds, but you’d be nothing if you were in the Golden Continent. I’ll show both of you how different warriors from a second-grade world are from you.”

There was no point in talking after all that happened. Dan turned and walked towards the Projne Stones, and Viktor followed closely after.

Seeing the movements from the other end, Jackie started to get anxious.

He looked at Nevada, who was flushed red with anger, and could not help but frown. “Are you done being angry? Do you even have the right to be?”

Nevada widened his eyes and snapped, “What did you say? I have no right to be angry?!”

Nevada was already confused by the way Jackie thought about things. This guy was even trying to argue about him getting angry!

Jackie took a deep breath and said coldly, “If you think you can beat me, you’d obviously have the right to be angry, but you don’t. Don’t think I’ll believe anything you say. If you want to prove yourself, then quit wasting time talking. Hurry and accept my challenge!”

Nevada’s face darkened completely as his lips trembled. “Alright. Since you want to lose so badly, I’ll give you what you want!”

At that moment, Nevada was too furious to even be rational. He only had one thought in mind, which was to quickly end the battle. He wanted this idiot to know how much stronger he was!

There were a total of 33 Projne Stones, all set up in a row. At that moment, Dan and Viktor had already walked over, both reeking with hatred for each other. The atmosphere was incredibly tense.

Jackie did not want to waste any time. After Nevada agreed, he immediately walked over. Nevada was so angry that he stormed forward. Every step he took caused the ground to shake slightly.

The warriors in the eastern area looked on with great interest. Even though not everyone was interested in participating in the attribute gambles, they were keen on watching something interesting, and a show as interesting as this one was something that happened less than once a month.

All of them looked on with great interest, and discussions filled the eastern area again.

“Do you think that Jackie can win? Nevada is a chosen disciple. I wonder if he’ s stronger than Dan.”

“We’d have to ask the warriors of the Golden Continent about that. We’ve never been to the continent, so we wouldn’t know what it’s like there.”

The warriors of the Golden Continent were quite willing to explain it to everyone.

A disciple of the Azure Clan said loudly, “Dan is, of course, a bit stronger. The White Phoenix Clan is a holy-grade clan like the Azure Clan is, but its overall strength is weaker than the Azure Clan. In terms of standings, Dan is also quite a bit higher than Nevada…”

“The two of them had met at a friendly tournament two months before the Whirling World opened as well. The two of them faced each other, and Dan was the clear victor.”

After that person said that, everyone looked toward the disciples of the White Phoenix Clan. The disciples of the White Phoenix Clan did not look that happy, but no one

actually voiced any objections. It seemed as though this statement was not a lie after all.

Dan's abilities were at a higher level. Even if Jackie managed to beat Nevada, it would not mean much.

At that moment, Nevada was facing Jackie. Jackie was toward the eastern side of the Projne Stone, while Nevada was toward the western side.

Chapter 3258
The two of them faced each other. Compared to how furious Nevada was, Jackie seemed incredibly calm as if everything that happened was within his control.

The caretaker walked forward and stood between the two of them. Just like before, he calmly announced the start of the gamble.

At that moment, Viktor and Dan were facing each other as well, and only a Projne Stone stood between them. They could see what the situation was on the other side with just a glance.

At that moment, Dan put his full focus on Viktor.

Viktor had his eyebrows raised as he looked at Dan seriously.

Dan narrowed his eyes. "I know you're very confident. Do you use a lower ultimate god-rank technique as well?"

Viktor did not bother hiding it as he nodded. The technique he used was called Flaming Skies and was a lower ultimate god-rank technique. The fact that he was the top-ranked chosen disciple in an eighth-grade clan meant that he was more talented than any ordinary warrior.

To many warriors, ultimate god-rank techniques were far from their reach, but to geniuses like them, it was just a stepping stone.

Dan sneered and said, "So what if you know a lower ultimate god-rank technique? You think you're the only one who could do that? I use a lower ultimate god-rank technique as well, and I can even tell you that I've already gotten my Golden Meteor Technique up to the second stage!"

Viktor's confident expression stiffened when he heard this. His eyes widened slightly as he gulped, and even his breathing got a bit faster.

Dan was already at the second stage of his technique and that was something Viktor did not expect.

Only those who could use lower ultimate god-rank techniques knew how difficult to master and understand ultimate god-rank techniques were.

He had gone through so many bottlenecks just to get where he was. He knew that he would be able to get to the second stage as well, but on Viktor's estimation, it would take at least one to two more years. He never expected that Dan would already be at the second stage with how young Dan was.

This explained why Dan was so arrogant; he had the skills to back his words!

Viktor's lips twitched, suddenly losing his confidence.

Jackie, however, remained calm when he heard all of that, as if everything Dan said was nonsense.

Nevada could clearly see Jackie's expression as he stood before him. When he saw that Jackie was still calm, he sneered, "What are you acting like that for? I refuse to believe you're not afraid to face such a strong opponent. Unless you're heartless, there's no way you can stay composed!"

When Jackie heard that, his lips twitched in exasperation. He snorted before he said, "Well, I would be scared if I were. There's nothing to be scared of since I'm not."

Nevada quivered furiously again as he stared right at Jackie. He looked at Jackie and gritted his teeth, having a lot to say. In the end, he held back.

With how Jackie was, Jackie would have a lot to counter him no matter what he said.

He was not as good as Jackie with his words, so he swallowed everything he wanted to say. He merely looked at Jackie hatefully.

Jackie's words were naturally heard by Dan as well. Dan frowned as he looked at Jackie with annoyance.

He sneered, "Keep showing off while you can, you brat. You don't have much time left to do that, anyway. In just a moment, you'll realize that you're just a clown to us no matter how much you Show off. In the future, you'll realize what the consequences of your actions today will bring you!"

Chapter 3259
After saying that, Dan sneered as he looked away.

Jackie sighed in exasperation. These people were a joke, so much so that he found himself unable to muster a word.

At that moment, a thought suddenly surfaced in his head.

If he performed too well, Dan might harbor suspicions about him and would refuse to accept his challenge. If that were to happen, he would just lose the Enlightened Soul Root. Compared to the Spirit Soul Fruit which was worth seven to eight million, the Enlightened Soul Root was worth more to Jackie.

He could not possibly lose the chance of getting the Enlightened Soul Root!

After making that clear, Jackie raised an eyebrow as his gaze darted around and made a decision; he could not win the attribute gamble by a landslide like before. It would only alert Dan.

Jackie scoffed, no longer hesitating as he summoned the soul energy in his body. A gray energy circulated in his palm. He no longer looked at anyone as the gray energy frantically shot into the Projne Stone. Seeing that Jackie had already started, Nevada wasted no time as well.

He closed his eyes slightly as green-colored energy circulated in his body. Nevada was a wind attribute warrior. The wind attribute in his body was brought out like a small cyclone with Nevada at the center.

Nevada took a long breath as he put his hand on the stone, and the green energy frantically entered the Projne Stone. Two waves of energy rapidly took shape. At that moment, everyone widened their eyes as they observed everything that happened.

Since Jackie acted first, both Dan and Viktor stopped talking and looked over. Both of them planned on starting their attribute battle after watching Jackie’s. The gray energy clashed with the green energy, and the two seemed evenly matched, much to Nevada’s surprise as his eyes widened.

He admitted that Jackie was somewhat skilled, but he did not expect Jackie to be able to match him!

Nevada did not hold back at all with the intention of winning the battle quickly and making himself look good.

The gray and green energy clashed, and both energy tried to overwhelm the other, even trying to absorb each other. However, their skills were close, and both were evenly matched. it was impossible to tell who was winning at that moment.

Dan raised an eyebrow, knowing where things stood at that moment. He scoffed as he looked at Jackie like he was looking at a dead person.

The eastern area was abuzz with noise again. A lot of them had thought that Jackie would be no match for Nevada, so they never expected that Jackie would be evenly matched with him!

Jackie was no weaker than Nevada. A lot of the warriors from the Golden Continent could not stay calm when they saw that. After all, Nevada was the chosen disciple of the White Phoenix Clan, a holy grade clan. The fact that Jackie was on par with him meant that Jackie had the skills of a chosen disciple of a holy grade clan.

A lot of them could not accept the fact. After all, the Hestia Continent was an insignificant place in their eyes.

A warrior from the White Marsh Continent sourly commented, “ Jackie’s probably the strongest person from the Hestia Continent. With his skills, he’s probably an incredibly powerful person in a small place like Hestia!”

The warriors from Hestia Continent were displeased by this remark, and a lot of them wanted to counter his words. However, they had to admit after thinking about it that the person’s words were reasonable, regardless of his tone.

Chapter 3260
A few people agreed with that thought, and they got deep into the conversation.

“I feel like you’re being a little extreme with your words, but you have to admit that it sounds pretty reasonable. Before coming to the Whirlng World, Jackie’s environment had been too stifling.”

“He doesn’t understand how the world actually is at all. He’s too conceited and doesn’t even know how to act more politely in the face of those stronger than him. It’d be strange if nothing bad happens to him.”

“You’re right! He’s just too crazy. We have to admit that he’s strong, but there’s always someone stronger. Just because he’s strong, it doesn’t mean he’s unbeatable!”

“If he understood that, he probably wouldn’t have acted like he did.”

As they said that, a few of them started to lament the fact that Jackie was just too ignorant because he was confined by his world. He did not know how vast the universe truly was, and because of that, he did whatever he wanted and offended many.

Some of them even started to discuss how Dan would deal with Jackie.

“Dan isn’t an idiot. Jackie is untouchable in the Projne Area, but the inner city isn’t just limited to the Projne Area. Can’t he attack near the Red Sun Monument?”

“With how Jackie is, he’ll definitely try out his hand there. Then, Dan can just make sure he has people there or even do it himself. No matter what, Jackie’s days are numbered.”

That person was incredibly confident as he said that as if he could read Dan’s mind.

Rudy merely looked at those people with a cold frown. Even though he did not know what the Red Sun Monument was, he knew very well that these people could only dream on if they thought Jackie would die.

Jackie would not let anyone who tried to attack him off the hook.

Compared to how noisy the western area was, it was much quieter around the Projne Stones. Dan and Viktor were both frowning as they observed Jackie. Neither of them expected the stalemate.

After all, Nevada was from a holy grade clan and was a chosen disciple at that. His skills could not be underestimated. Even if Jackie had shown exceptional skills before, he could not be compared to Nevada.

Yet, reality had proven that to be false.

The match was in a complete stalemate, and it seemed like their skills were on the same level. They even saw Nevada starting to sweat.

Nevada was starting to pant and he frantically circulated the power in his body.

Time slowly tickled, and Nevada got more anxious for every minute that passed.

His lips twitched slightly, no longer looking at Jackie with the same casual look from before. He was both shocked and serious.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Nevada. “What is it? Are you scared? It’s written all over your face.”

Nevada glared at Jackie hatefully. True enough, he was scared.

Nevada immediately stood on his toes and started to shout at Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3261 - 3270 -

Chapter 3261
“What would I be scared of?! The two of us are evenly matched. I am not at a disadvantage, why would I be scared? Weren’t you bragging that you’d definitely win before this? Open your eyes and look. The two of us are evenly matched. You’re not winning against me!”

“Don’t act like you’re so confident. You’re acting so calm just to trick me. Do you think I’ll fall for it?”

When Jackie heard that, his lips twitched in exasperation.

He laughed slightly and said, “Do you think I can’t win?”

Nevada scoffed and said, “Of course! Of course, you can’t win and you’ll lose terribly. No one can save you!”

When he said that, Nevada was furious. He looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

Jackie coldly stared at him, suddenly revealing a meaningful smile.

At that moment, the evenly matched battle suddenly lost its balance. The gray energy swallowed up the green light.

Nevada started to panic. His eyes widened as he started to breathe erratically. He frantically poured the attributes in his body into the Projne Stone.

Yet, no matter how hard he tried, the green light kept on being swallowed up by the gray light. It hardly slowed it down, it seemed like the gray light was slowly eating up the green light.

The balance had been broken, and Nevada was in complete panic. He frantically clenched his teeth, and his veins popped. His expression started to look a bit crazed.

Everyone could see what was happening, and quite a few of them started to lament what was happening.

A warrior from the Golden Continent said, “Crap! This kid managed to turn things around. I actually thought that Nevada had a high chance of winning. After all, he comes from the White Phoenix Clan and is even a chosen disciple. Compared to a brat who came from somewhere no one knows about, he’s so much higher in status. I can’t believe this is the result. Did Nevada underestimate his opponent?”

The moment that was said, the warriors from Hestia Continent were furious.

They were being insulted at every end. Even when they had someone like Jackie, they were still constantly mocked. They could no longer contain their anger when they heard what was said.

Those people were going way too overboard.

A warrior from Hestia Continent said, loudly, “What do you mean by somewhere no one knows about?! Do you think you can call us that just because Golden Continent is a second-grade world? You’re nothing in the eyes of other second-grade worlds! You’re only capable of looking down on others, while you’re blind to your faults!”

After that was said, a lot of mocking laughter was heard. The laughter was obviously targeted at the warriors from Golden Continent.

The warriors from the third-grade worlds regarded the warriors from Golden Continent with complete disdain. Everything they said seemed to trample all over the third- grade world.

They constantly tried to show off who they were. The warriors from Golden Continent were flushed red with anger at those words. Their eyes threatened to pop out of their sockets.

The warriors from earlier glared at the warrior from Hestia Continent and shouted, “Very well! I’ll remember you. You actually dared to speak up against me. Who do you think you are?! Do you think you’re worthy?! You guys only have a golden egg which is Jackie. Everyone else is trash!”

After saying that, he did not have enough as he shouted, “Even Jackie’s just slightly better than others. For him to win this match doesn’t prove anything. I’ll only admit he’s good if he can win three gambles!”

“That’s impossible just because the third gamble will be against Dan! He’s no match for Dan at all, stop dreaming!”

Chapter 3262
The warrior from Hestia Continent narrowed his eyes as he twitched, feeling like he was about to spit out blood in frustration. The group from Golden Continent was insulting them way too much!

Before that, they would just accept it. However, Jackie’s Victory has sparked their pride. They would no longer just tolerate it.

A warrior from Hestia Continent shouted back, “Even if it’s Dan, he won’t be able to beat Jackie at all! Do you remember what you said earlier? All of you said that Gale would be able to beat Jackie easily! What happened in the end? Jackie managed to defeat him in an instant.”

“He was not able to fight back at all! Then you kept saying that Nevada would win. Just look! Does he look like he’s winning?!”

Those words were directly shouted at the warriors from Golden Continent. Reality trumped anything that was said. The warriors from Golden Continent were suddenly silent.

However, they still had not admitted defeat. They glared coldly at the warriors from Hestia Continent. In their eyes, those warriors were just like dogs on the street. They looked incredibly disgusted.

Right at that moment, an angry shout broke the momentary silence.

Everyone hurriedly looked over. The battle had already ended at that moment. Only a gray light remained in the air. The green light had been completely defeated by the gray.

Nevada roared angrily, and his face looked incredibly unhappy.

Sweat flowed down from his forehead, and his eyes were completely red. He looked incredibly furious.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he calmly retracted his hand, looking at Nevada go crazy quietly.

At that moment, Nevada was not willing to face his defeat as all as his heart was filled with hatred and anger. He went completely crazy.

Both Viktor and Dan looked at Jackie with complicated expressions, especially Dan. He seemed to look at Jackie inquisitively. His eyes were fixed on Jackie as if he was trying to figure something out from Jackie’s expressions.

Dan frowned and said angrily, “What are you going crazy for?! If you have lost then so be it. You’re looking like a sore loser at the moment. Stop embarrassing Golden Continent. Hurry up and shut your mouth!”

Nevada’s face was completely red, and he looked exceptionally angry. There was nothing he could do about it.

In truth, he was not that far beneath Dan, but since he had lost to Dan before, he had some apprehension toward Dan.

He took a deep breath and composed himself. He slowly straightened his posture and stopped screaming. Only, his eyes remained fixed on Jackie.

He looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart while Jackie's expression remained calm. After all, he had never regarded Nevada as anyone worth his notice.

Dan took a deep breath and said meaningfully, "You're even harder to figure out than I thought, but its just a bit harder. I've already figured out your skills. You won't be happy for much longer!"

As he said that, Dan no longer looked at Jackie, but instead at Viktor. Dan decided that he needed to deal with what was in front of him first.

He looked at Viktor coldly, "It's your turn now. I'm in no mood to waste any time. I want to deal with that brat after dealing with this quickly!"

Chapter 3263
Those words ignited the anger in Viktor's heart.

Who was he looking down on?!

It was as if Viktor was a piece of trash that could be dealt with at any moment.

Viktor said furiously, "Stop trying to act like a hero here! If you want to deal with Jackie, you'd better beat me first!"

Both of their eyes looked incredibly confident in themselves. Dan no longer wasted any time as he started to circulate his attribute, pouring it into the Projne Stone.

Viktor immediately followed suit. The two of them refused to give in, and they had the determination to beat their enemy.

In a flash, those two rays of light rose slowly from the Projne Stone. Dan was a metal attribute warrior, while Viktor focused on the fire attribute. The red glow slowly rose, but it did not look weak at all. When the two energies clashed, the red energy started to shake immensely.

The golden light seemed like a golden python that suddenly attacked the red light.

After a loud boom was heard, half of the red light was seen being ripped apart by the golden light.

When everyone saw that, they took a deep breath.

Dan was actually that strong. They had thought that the match would be similar to Jackie and Nevada's, with the two attacks clashing in air for a long time before there was a result. Yet, it seemed like Viktor was no match for Dan at all.

It was not long before the red light could no longer hold on. The golden light attacked and gained Victory while the red light stood no chance at all. Slowly, the red light got smaller and smaller and completely disappeared from air.

Viktor was panting, completely stunned. After the match had started, he summoned up all the power he could and poured it into the Projne Stone. Unfortunately, no matter how hard he tried, he failed to change the results.

It was obvious that he was no match for Dan at all. Dan calmly stopped his attacks, not looking happy about the win at all. That was because everything had been within his expectations.

That warrior called Viktor was just a complete idiot, thinking he would be able to show off in front of Dan just because he was the strongest from his clan. Little did he know that he was no match for Dan.

Dan was actually a little unsatisfied with the result because he had beaten Viktor slower than how Jackie had beaten Gale.

Gale had not even lasted a few seconds against Jackie before Jackie had completely won the match. Yet, Viktor had lasted a few seconds longer than Gale, and it has caused Dan to be unhappy with his win.

At that moment, Viktor would have probably spat out blood if he knew what Dan was thinking. Even though he did not, his expression was still incredibly dark after the loss.

The warriors that had been rooting for Viktor were all completely ashen on their faces as well.

The warriors from Golden Continent celebrated happily, praising Dan, “Dan, you’re so amazing! Viktor was no match for you at all. Just look at him, he looks completely deflated. Jackie bragged so much earlier. Let’s see if he can continue!”

The person who said all of that had obviously wanted Viktor to hear it. He had intentionally raise his voice, and just like he wanted, Viktor had heard everything.

Viktor felt his chest tremble as blood flooded his throat. He had not been able to hold on for all that long before he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 3264
His whole body started to shudder, and his expression looked defeated. He had climbed too far earlier to only fall from a greater height. He had only managed to survive a few seconds before he completely lost to Dan.

He did not want to admit defeat, but there was nothing he could do.

Dan sneered and said, “Do you still think you’re at the same level as I am? I told you out of the kindness of my heart earlier that you’re not even qualified to wipe my shoes with your meager skills, but you refused to listen. Have you accepted the truth now?”

Hearing that, Viktor was absolutely furious. His breathing became erratic as he clenched his fists tightly. He stared at Dan with hatred. Yet, a loss was a loss. He would just get laughed at if he refused to accept his defeat. However, Viktor was not someone who could just accept all those insults.

After taking a few deep breaths, he said coldly, “I’ve definitely underestimated you, but don’t think that you won’t ever lose just because of that. I’m just a small part of the Chaos Continent. There are plenty of geniuses other than me. One of them will defeat you! I only lost to you once. There’s still a lot of time. I’ll win eventually!”

After he said that, he took out four million spirit crystals and handed them to Dan before turning around and walking out of the Projne area. He did not even glance at the eastern area, probably because he felt like he betrayed their hopes, or maybe because he felt like it was incredibly humiliating.

He left without any hesitation. Jackie looked at his retreating back, and could not help but sigh internally, understanding how he felt.

At that moment, Jackie suddenly heard an incredibly unpleasant voice, “What? Are you scared? If you’re scared, you can beg me for mercy. You can decide against this gamble.”

Jackie immediately understood what Dan was trying to do.

He smiled and turned to face Dan, “Are you worried that I won’t keep my word and run away from the bet?”

Dan merely raised an eyebrow and smiled, remaining silent. However, anyone could still understand what he was thinking.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and walked over to the Projne Stone in front of Dan. The two of them faced each other.

Dan raised an eyebrow in surprise. He did not expect Jackie to be so bold. Jackie had clearly seen how strong he was but was still standing in front of him. He could even feel how calm Jackie seemed to be.

Dan’s lips twitched, and he could not help but say, “You’re really good at keeping up an act!”

Dan meant what he said. He felt like Jackie was too good of an actor. After witnessing his skills, Jackie should have been completely terrified.

He actually dared to stand in front of Dan like that. Dan did not feel like Jackie was being bold, but that he was incredibly good at acting. Jackie was just holding on for the sake of his dignity.

Dan sneered as he looked at Jackie mockingly. He wanted to rip off Jackie's mask to see what Jackie felt.

Dan took a deep breath before he nodded earnestly, "I was worried that you wouldn't gamble against me anymore. Compared to the four million spirit crystals, I would be even happier after I get to see your masked being ripped off!

"I hate people like you who refuse to accept reality. You're clearly terrified, but you insist on being stubborn, acting like you're not scared at all. Do you think we're all idiots that would be tricked by you here?"

Jackie's lips twitched in exasperation. He had to say that Dan had a very rich imagination.

At that moment, the eastern area was once again deep in discussion. The warriors from Hestia Continent were all fighting for Jackie's name.

Chapter 3265
" Jackie has never been afraid! He's always been like this and has never put on an act. Dan's just assuming things!"

"Stop trying to make yourselves look good. Open your eyes and see. Can't you tell that you have it wrong? Do you really think that Jackie's not putting up an act? Even Viktor has lost to Dan, how could he win?!"

"Even though he won earlier, he just beat someone Dan has already defeated before. If Dan was facing Nevada, he wouldn't have taken long to win in the first place. Don't forget how long Jackie took against Nevada!"

"That's right. The truth is clearly displayed in front of all of you. You warriors from Hestia Continent are just acting like you didn't see it to put Jackie on a pedestal. You're speaking all sorts of nonsense!"

The eastern area was boisterous. Even though the warriors of Hestia Continent were only a few, they had finally found the chance to speak up after being pushed down for so long.

They naturally seized the chance, not holding back as they argued against the warriors of Golden Continent. They shouted until their throats were sore, but they were quite excited.

Even though they did not actually think that Jackie could win, they just did not want to listen to the warriors from Golden Continent constantly slander and insult Jackie like he was not worth anything at all. They were insulting Hestia Continent as well, which the warriors could not accept.

Jackie raised his eyebrow in mild surprise when he saw that some were speaking up for him. It was not like the warriors from Hestia Continent had never been on his side, but it was usually after he had already won.

It was the first time they were defending him before the results were even out. Even though that would not make Jackie feel touched, he was still a little enlightened nevertheless.

Dan took a deep breath and sneered at Jackie, “Do you enjoy having others protect you? The more they do so, the worse your defeat will look. You’ll definitely lose later. You’ll know in just a moment. Those protecting you will end up using harsh words to insult you later. Don’t cry when that happens.”

Jackie could not help but frown when he heard that, getting more and more displeased with Dan.

That guy was incredibly frustrating and kept on acting as if he stood above everyone else.

If it was not for the restrictions, he would have punched Dan right in the face to wake Dan up.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, discarding all those stray thoughts. It was because he knew very well that the best way to shut Dan up was to hurry and start the gamble.

“The Enlightened Soul Root is something good. It’s a waste that it’s in your hands,” as he said that, Jackie revealed no emotions.

It was like he was talking about something incredibly simple.

He suddenly looked up and stared right at Dan, “I should be thanking you for giving me what I need the most.”

When he heard that, Dan was stunned. After that, the anger shot right to his head.

Jackie was too arrogant. He had basically declared that he would win and that he would get the Enlightened Soul Root.

After the brief surge of anger, he was speechless.

Chapter 3266
He suddenly laughed, “There really are all sorts of people around. I’ve never seen someone as blind as you!”

He still had a lot to say, but Jackie was obviously not going to listen.

Jackie raised a hand to stop him, “Okay, stop wasting our time. Since you want to prove yourself so much, hurry up and start the attribute gamble!”

A warrior from Golden Continent shouted, “He’s so arrogant! This guy’s ego is out of control. He’s talking as if no one is a match for him.”

Another warrior from Golden Continent said in exasperation, “I’ve never seen a warrior from a third-grade world as arrogant as he is. He’s acting as if he is from Golden Continent, while Dan’s the one from Hestia Continent!”

“It’s alright, let him show off for a bit longer. Reality will slap him in the face soon. He’ll realize who’s actually the strong one!”

Rudy stood by the side, quietly listening to all those discussions. Before, he would have been angry and might even try to fight on behalf of Jackie, but he was completely calm at that moment.

They could say what they wanted, and he would just ignore everything.

Jackie did not waste any time as he circulated the soul attribute in his body again. He summoned up all the soul attributes he had mastered. He was not only at perfection for Destroying the Void at that moment but had also started to learn the storm god rank technique, Soul Sky.

With those two techniques, Jackie’s mastery of the soul attribute was at new heights.

In truth, Dan had been right. Jackie had been putting on an act, but it was different from what he thought. He could only take part in three attribute gambles in one day, and this was the last one.

He did not plan on continuing to stay in the Projne Area, so there was no longer a need to continue acting.

Jackie laughed as his dense soul energy was shot right into the Projne Stone. Standing on the other end, Dan did not know what was going through Jackie’ s mind.

At that moment, Dan only had one thought in mind, which was to completely defeat Jackie. He wanted that guy to know his place, and realize how absurd his thoughts were. He wanted Jackie to realize how large the gap between them was.

Dan’s technique was called Golden Meteor. It was a lower ultimate god rank technique. He was already at the second stage of the technique, and his mastery of the metal attribute was already incredibly strong. Thats was why Dan was so confident.

A golden glow circulated his hands then he let out a shout, and the metal energy circulated wildly around his body.

After a few moments, the black and golden energies clashed in the air. A cyclone formed as the energies faced each other, wanting to swallow the other at any moment.

“You’ve lost!” Dan shouted at Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. He did not want to bother Dan. The victor would be determined very soon.

Right at that moment, the two energies clashed with a boom. The golden energy let out a vibrant glow. Yet, it still failed to stand up to the gray energy.

The gray energy started to frantically swallow up the golden energy after they clashed. Even though they were a distance away, cracks could be heard.

Chapter 3267
The Golden energy was being broken down and absorbed in a blink of an eye. In just a few moments, it was gone. The loss happened so quickly that Dan did not have the time to react at all. In just half a second, the golden energy was completely swallowed up by the gray energy.

Only the gray energy was left in the air. Everyone had seen the whole thing unfold before their eyes, but other than Jackie and Rudy, no one could accept it. Even the warriors from Hestia Continent were too shocked to say anything. After all, it was too crazy.

It was completely different from what they had expected. Dan had actually lost! He had lost so quickly. Even Gale had lasted longer against Jackie. Yet, when Jackie was going against Nevada, it had clearly lasted for a long time.

Everyone was sure that Jackie’s strength was about Nevada’s level at that moment. Dan was stronger than Nevada, that was something everyone knew. That was why they were sure that Dan was stronger than Jackie. However, that idea did not last that long before it was completely overturned by Jackie’s show of strength!

They could not accept it. Dan was completely stunned. His eyes widened as he stared at the gray energy in the air. His whole body was frozen.

The caretaker finally broke the silence, “The bet-taker, Jackie, has won. Bet setter, Dan, please prepare your payment.”

Those words woke Dan up from his stunned state. He finally moved his eyes before he violently shuddered. Even his breathing started to get erratic.

He suddenly raised his head as he glared at Jackie, “Impossible! This is an illusion! There’s no way it’s real! You’re clearly just Nevada’s equal, so how did you beat me?! I lost so quickly! That’s completely impossible, it’s not real! You must have cheated, right?!”

Jackie looked at him speechlessly. He could feel how mad Dan was.

Dan had been certain that Jackie would lose, and had seen Jackie’s true skills. Yet, the final results were completely different than expected. He could not accept it and did not want to either.

Jackie laughed and said calmly, “You said I was putting on an act. I didn’t want to correct you because you were right. In truth, you were worried I wouldn’t bet against you, and I was worried about the same thing. That’s why I pulled a little trick to make you feel like I wasn’t skilled enough to beat you.”

The moment he said that there was a ton of clamor. Dan’s face became incredibly pale as he froze. Even his eyes stopped moving around.

“What did you say?! Did you trick me earlier? The only reason you matched up evenly against Nevada was that you didn’t want me to know your true skills, so you put on an act! No wonder you looked so calm. You never thought you’d lose! What a complete joke!”

As he said that, Dan’s eyes started to water. He was already on the brink of crying. After all, he had been smacked in the face by reality. He had looked down on Jackie and thought Jackie was beneath him, but all of his words that targeted Jackie should actually have been aimed at himself.

It was just too much of a joke. He could not accept it at that moment. After a moment of silence in the eastern area, they broke out into discussions again after the conversation between Jackie and Dan.

The warriors from Hestia Continent said excitedly, “See! I told you Jackie won’t lose, but all of you tried to say otherwise. You even said that there’s something wrong with Jackie’s head. Who’s the stupid one now?”

“You were all the ignorant ones, feeling like being from Hestia Continent means he’s worse than all of you. The one you looked down on just beat Dan whom you were all so proud of! Don’t you feel embarrassed?”

Chapter 3268
The hardest thing to accept was, when an opponent you looked down on completely

defeats you. It was hard to even uphold your dignity at that point. After all, Dan had lost completely and so quickly. He had been defeated in just a few seconds. There was nothing much to talk about.

The warriors from Hestia Continent were all incredibly excited, happily venting their frustrations.

“Aren’t you all very strong? You said that we weren’t even worthy of wiping your shoes. You acted like you were unbeatable. Can you please explain to me how Dan lost so badly? He didn’t even manage to last that long before Jackie wiped the floor with him. I’m just very curious. Since you’re all so knowledgeable, can you explain things to me?!”

“That’s right. All of you are so smart. You spoke like you knew everything before this. You acted like Jackie’ s not worth anything at all. Why are all of you so quiet now? I really want to hear the explanation for everything that happened earlier. I can’t understand it. Did Dan purposely lose to trick Jackie?”

When he said that, he could not stop himself from laughing.

The other warriors from Hestia Continent laughed as well. Jackie’s Victory had not only won Hestia Continent some pride, but the other third-grade world warriors all also took the chance to fight back as well.

A warrior from Chaos Continent scoffed and said, “The warriors from Golden Continent are just so used to claiming that they’ll win before the battle even starts. They always try to insult the warriors from other worlds, speaking like we’re not worth noticing. “They’re just happy to praise themselves, but reality’s smacked them in the face this time. After being praised so much, Dan still lost so thoroughly. What a joke!”

Another warrior next to him said with a laugh, “The warriors of Golden Continent kept on claiming that they’re just born better. They didn’t even let us talk back to them. If they see anyone wanting to challenge Golden Continent, they jump out to mock them…”

“They don’t seem to care how strong the other side is. They think they‘re stronger anyway! Now it seems like bragging is all they know. Even after bragging so much, they still lost so badly!”

Lorien hid in a corner at that point, not even daring to show himself. He was even glad that he returned earlier. If he had still been standing among the third-grade world’s warriors, he’d ended up being the target. Everyone who had not liked him would start to mock him frantically. He would lose all his dignity at that point.

Yet, even though he was hidden, he still felt incredibly embarrassed. Just as he frowned and tried to shrink into the crowd, a familiar voice was heard.

“Lorien? Why aren’t you defending Dan? Didn’t you mock Jackie and say that he had no right to challenge Dan at all earlier? You even said that I didn’t even have the right to think about it because none of the warriors from the third- grade worlds are worth it!”

“Why are you being a coward right now?” Justin walked right over to where the warriors from Golden Continent were and shouted.

He had been mocked quite a lot by Lorien, but he was forced to grit his teeth and accept it. Since he had the chance, he would not let Lorien off easily. Everyone immediately remembered Lorien after he was mentioned.

Chapter 3269
They still remembered how full of himself he had been, speaking as if the warriors from third-grade worlds were all just trash in the sewers.

He did not hold back with his words at all and frustrated a lot of people. Even Rudy, who had just been standing by the side, could no longer take it.

He walked over and stood behind Justin, “Didn’t you say that you were amazing? Why are you hiding behind? If you have the skills, come out and repeat what you said. If you have forgotten, I can repeat everything for you!”

Lorien shrunk back, not daring to reveal himself. He tried his best to squeeze backward, not wanting to pull out at that moment. However, the warriors from the third- grade worlds would not let him off easily.

Rudy sneered and said, “Why haven’t you come out yet?!”

Suddenly, Lorien shouts back angrily, “I refuse to come out, so what can you do about it? Why do I have to come out?!”

Rudy laughed coldly, “So you’re just planning on staying at the back like a coward?”

Lorien had nothing to say at that.

The warriors from Golden Continent all had looks of defeat on their faces at that moment. No one dared to say anything to defend Lorien. They were already thoroughly humiliated by what happened.

Some were starting to curse Dan for losing so quickly. They did not even have any excuses. it was far too embarrassing. They felt like they had never been so embarrassed in their lives.

At that moment, Dan was as pale as a sheet of paper. Even his lips had lost their color, making him look like he was ill.

Jackie sighed in exasperation. He did not want to keep looking at Dan acting like that.

He reached out and said to Dan, “Have you forgotten that you need to pay up after losing a bet? Are you planning on going against the bet? I would love to see that. I would get to see you get struck by lightning.”

Dan’s lips twitched as he looked at Jackie hatefully. It was as if Jackie was his mortal enemy.

Jackie was already used to being looked at like that. Dan could look at Jackie however he wants to.

Dan took a deep breath, and his hands trembled. He reluctantly pulled out the spirit crystals and Enlightened Soul Root from his storage space. The Enlightened Soul Root was placed in a box about the size of half a person.

Jackie’s lips curled up, not even looking at Dan as he kept the spirit crystals and Enlightened Soul Root.

He said very happily, “Thanks!”

That felt like a stab right into Dan’s chest. Dan felt his chest heat up then proceed to spit out a mouthful of blood.

Jackie’s lips twitched in exasperation. Dan was weaker than he thought. He had just said a few words, but Dan looked like he was about to die.

How could he amount to anything if he acted like that?

Even if he was talented, he was so easily affected. It would definitely stop him from climbing to greater heights. However, Jackie would not voice out those thoughts. He just coldly looked at Dan before walking away, leaving Dan behind.

Chapter 3270
Jackie waved at Rudy, and Rudy immediately followed behind Jackie. Since all three chances have been used, there was no longer any reason to stay there. Jackie had already gotten everything he could and he was contented.

Everyone looked at Jackie as he leave and remained silent for a long time. Jackie’s appearance had left a deep impression on them.

Jackie and Rudy went back to the inn instead of going anywhere else.

Jackie rented the room for another five days. After the two of them entered the room, Jackie eagerly took out the Enlightened Soul Root.

The Whirling World was filled with challenges everywhere. There was danger and opportunity in every corner. He needed to constantly improve himself. He eagerly wanted to see how powerful the Broken Soul Blade could be. The more Jackie thought about it, the more excited he got.

Rudy saw Jackie opening his eyes and immediately wanted to ask how much Jackie had trained. However, Jackie was in no mood to answer that as he pulled Rudy away and left the inn, not even settling the rest of the fees before that.

The two of them headed toward the north. After walking for a whole day, they saw a massive conical tower in the distance.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and pointed at the tower, “That’s the Red Sun Monument.”

After Rudy heard that, he said in shock, “The Red Sun Monument? It looks like a massive tower with four sides. Each side is a massive slope, and they all look the same. Why is it called a monument?”

Jackie laughed.

The shape of the monument really was unique. It looked like a pyramid from Cathysia. In Rudy’s eyes, it was just a large pointed tower.

Jackie patiently explained, “It’s because its surfaces are smooth. Our task is to climb it.”

Rudy was stunned, “Climb it? We’re supposed to climb the Red Sun Monument?”

Jackie nodded, explaining the rules to Rudy.

After Rudy heard that, his eyes widened as he failed to suppress his shock, “So that’s the case! You can only get the gold medal by climbing five hundred meters up the Red Sun Monument!”

The Red Sun Monument was five hundred meters tall. Every thirty meters was separated into an area, with five hundred meters being its peak. It was incredibly difficult to pull off, and most people would stop at the final stage, unable to advance.

Rudy sighed and said, “Is it really that amazing? I want to try to climb it too!”

Jackie smiled and said, “Everyone is free to climb. You can try it out, and come down if you think you can’t make it.”

Rudy was incredibly excited when he heard that he could try. The whole journey, he had just been like a follower to Jackie. He had witnessed Jackie’s achievements, but never had the chance to try anything. The further they went, the more difficult the challenges would be.

With his skills, he was forced to just hide behind Jackie. Since he had the chance, he was naturally happy to try it.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3271 - 3280 -

Chapter 3271
Jackie reached out and patted his shoulder, “Don’t force it. If you feel like you can’t advance anymore, then hurry on down. Don’t have any regrets. Even though I still haven’t experienced the Red Sun Storm, it can’t be underestimated. If you refuse to retreat down, your body may suffer something that you can’t recover from…”

“Then you’d need to spend a lot of spirit crystals to buy pills to recover. Even if you don’t buy pills, you’ll have to spend spirit crystals to get the materials to refine your own pills. Then wouldn’t you just be wasting time and effort?”

Rudy nodded, slapping his chest in guarantee, ”Don‘t worry, I won’t be stupidly stubborn.”

The Red Sun Monument was so hard to climb because of the Red Sun Storm. There was a dense storm around the monument, and the storm constantly poured from the top to the bottom. The higher people climbed, the more intense the storm would be. It would be harder to climb as well. True energy would need to be used, and techniques as well.

The Red Sun Monument truly tested a person’s skills. The higher one could climb, the more their skills were proven. The inner city was mostly filled with strong warriors.

Anyone who had a bit of skill would gather at the Red Sun Monument to prove themselves by climbing. Certain positions in the Red Sun Monument would gain rewards. From the one thousand four hundred meters mark, every thirty meters climbed would yield an additional reward.

That was why so many people choose to climb, putting their lives on the line. It was also to gain fame for themselves and their own worlds. The two of them walked as they chatted. When they were a few hundred meters away from the monument, they started to hear a lot of noise.

Looking up, it was filled with people. Just from a glance, Jackie estimated at least ten thousand warriors. With so many gathered there, it was as noisy as a market.

Jackie frowned at the noise, rubbing his ears. He hated noisy environments. The more people there were, the more annoying it was.

Jackie hated talking to others.

Looking at Jackie’s expression, Rudy immediately knew what Jackie was thinking.

He smiled and said, “Climbing the Red Sun Monument is a personal accomplishment anyway. The two of us won’t go looking for any trouble, and they shouldn’t have any conflicts with us.”

Jackie frowned, not answering Rudy immediately. Instead, he looked at the Red sun Monument.

On the monument were countless minuscule words. The Monument took up a vast palace. From a distance, all he could see were the words carved at the very bottom. It was actually the names of the four continents.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, muttering under his breath. Even though Jackie knew that climbing the monument involved no one else, he immediately understood that there was no way there would not be any conflict when he saw what was carved on the Red Sun Monument.

He did not know what they were thinking. All of them had actually carved their own continents on the monument. Naturally, they did so because they wanted to gain some honor for their continent, but it would stir up competitive spirits as well. They would end up constantly fighting.

As long as there was competition, there would be conflicts.

Rudy naturally realized that as well. He walked forward and looked up with widened eyes. The higher one went on the monument, the less Hestia Continent appeared, and Golden Continent appeared more and more.

From that, it was evident that Hestia Continent’s abilities were the weakest among all the worlds gathered.

Chapter 3272
At that moment, an unfriendly voice was heard, “Why are you here? This is the Golden Continent’s place. You‘re not from Golden Continent, so get lost!”

The warriors of Golden Continent all had gold patterns on their sleeves. Just by looking at the sleeves. It was clear if someone was from Golden Continent.

Rudy’s lips twitched as he looked around and noticed that they were surrounded by warriors from Golden Continent. He hurriedly retreated, returning to Jackie’s side before he observed his surroundings. He noticed that the crowd was separated into four parts.

The center positions were occupied by the warriors from Golden Continent. To the left were the warriors from Chaos Continent, while on the right were the warriors from White Marsh Continent. The warriors from Hestia Continent were mostly gathered in the westernmost area. They took up the least space and looked pitiful.

Rudy sighed, “It really is survival of the fittest in this world, but that’s so rough. We have been pushed to a corner no one wants.”

Jackie did not say anything as he turned around and walked toward the warriors from Hestia Continent.

Rudy sighed before he followed behind Jackie. The two of them had just reached where the warriors from Hestia Continent were when they heard some people arguing.

“How could we just leave that be?! They’re just trying to bully us. The warriors from Chaos Continent are clearly right beside them, but they walked past them and came straight for us. Are we just going to let that be?”

“Those two culprits are still at the one hundred and eighty meters mark, looking like they had already won. They don’t seem intent on leaving! They even said that any warriors from Hestia Continent can challenge them if we think we have the skills. It’s crossing the line!”

“Darien, you should make the decision! You’re the strongest, and you’re a chosen disciple of the Scarlet Pavilion. We’ll listen to anything you say!”

The Scarlet Pavilion was the only ninth-grade clan on Hestia Continent. They were naturally the strongest.

Jackie frowned as he slowly walked over, seeing the two corpses on the ground.

Those corpses had robes of the Scarlet Pavilion on. They died quite tragically. One had large holes in his chest, and the blood had already dried up.

The other one had both legs snapped, and all his tendons had been severed. He looked incredibly pitiful.

The warrior called Darien frowned as he looked at the two corpses sadly. From his expression. It was obvious that the two that had died were close to Darien when they were still alive.

Darien took a deep breath as his lips trembled slightly, “Do you think I don’t want revenge? I want to kill those dogs, but if we do that, we’d be challenging the Golden Continent.”

Chapter 3273
“Then there’ d be even more of them targeting us. There’ll be even more of our men dying at the one hundred and eighty meters area. Unless Hestia Continent’s warriors stop climbing the Red Sun Monument, this will keep happening.”

Quite a few of them fell silent when that was said. There was a trace of sadness in their eyes.

All of the warriors gathered there stood at the peak of Hestia Continent. They had power and were incredibly talented. Yet, they could do nothing about their situation.

They had been suppressed immensely during this period, but there was nothing they could do. It was because they knew very well that there would be severe consequences if they pushed back too far.

There were already fewer warriors from Hestia Continent, to begin with, and even fewer of them entered the inner city. Hence, they were forced to just bear with it.

A warrior from the Compass Pavilion shook his head and said, “Even if we wanted revenge, there’s still the question of who would get it. Both Wilde and Lester are from the White Phoenix Clan. The White Phoenix Clan is a holy grade clan. They’re not people I can touch. I’ve heard that the two of them are chosen disciples. None of us would be able to beat them!”

Those words caused the warriors from Hestia Continent to be even more miserable.

The reality was too cruel. Even if they wanted to revenge, they could not get it.

It was possible that Darien would be able to face one of them, but Darien was the only one at that level among the warriors gathered there.

Other than Darien, who would deal with the other one?

There was suddenly a heavy silence. Everyone looked incredibly defeated.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he listened to their conversation. He completely understood what had happened.

Climbing the Red Sun Monument was not just a contest against the Red Sun Storm. At one hundred and eighty meters and three hundred and sixty meters, they would need to participate in fights. Of course, both sides would have to agree.

Only after beating a warrior would you be allowed to continue climbing. At the one hundred and eighty meters point were two warriors from Golden Continent, Wilde, and Lester. They had deliberately hidden their identities, acting like they were weak. They had gone to the two warriors from Scarlet Pavilion and challenged them.

The two warriors had been fooled by their disguise, and they ended up fighting. By the time they realized they had been fooled, they had been completely beaten and killed. They had been tortured as well.

Wilde and Lester were clearly very strong. They could have defeated their opponents quickly, but they had deliberately dragged it on, injuring their opponents everywhere before they killed them.

At the time, everyone had seen everything clearly. It did not involve the other third-grade worlds, so they merely shook their heads in silence and uttered a few words. The Golden Continent had been incredibly excited. They had even mocked the warriors from Hestia Continent.

The warriors from Hestia Continent were furious. They wanted Wilde and Lester to stop the torture, but the two of them ignored it. They slowly tortured the two warriors from the Scarlet Pavilion in front of everyone.

The warriors from Hestia Continent were so angry because they had witnessed all of that.

After Jackie sighed, he shook his head silently.

The warrior from the Compass Pavilion had been right. Even if they wanted to revenge, they had no one who was able to do it. They would just be sending in more people to die. After all, Hestia Continent was too weak. They were forced to lower their heads at times.

An inner disciple from the Scarlet Pavilion said miserably, “Hestia Continent wouldn’t be in this state if not for that unknown barrier. At the very least, we’d be as strong as White Marsh Continent!”

Chapter 3274
Everyone else naturally agreed with that, but there were no hypotheticals in the world. The reality was right in front of their faces.

Rudy had a dark look on his face. At some point, his eyes had reddened. His hands were clenched tightly as he looked at the corpses on the ground.

He turned to look at Jackie. He knew that there were some things he could not say. However, he could not hold it in as he was just too infuriated.

He whispered to Jackie, “These warriors from Golden Continent should die! They should all just die!”

It was obvious how furious the warriors from Hestia Continent were, but there was nothing they could do.

There were quite a few warriors who entered the Whirling World from Hestia Continent. The strongest one was not there, and Darien was in second place. However, even if

that person was there, it would not change much. After all, the situation was not looking good.

A disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion sighed and said, “There’s nothing we can do at the moment. The rules are there after all. As long as we don’t agree, they can’t fight us. We just have to be careful. After all, we can’t just leave like this. It would be even more humiliating if we did.”

Those words might be hard to listen to, but it was the truth.

Rudy sighed as he looked up at the one hundred and eighty meters area.

Two people were sitting there. They looked quite average, but the arrogance on their faces could not be hidden. The two of them seemed to be waiting for something.

Rudy clenched his teeth as he looked at them. He took a deep breath. It was a pity he did not have the skills, or he would not hesitate to rush over and fight the two of them.

Rudy sighed and said calmly, “The two of them are a bit pitiful. If only they had been a bit smarter.”

Fighting was allowed at the one hundred and eighty meters area, but there were rules.

First of all, both sides needed to be willing to fight. The moment they start, no one could interfere, which was how the situation happened.

If the two warriors from the Scarlet Pavilion had known that Wilde and Lester were from the White Phoenix Clan, they would not have fought. They would probably not have accepted the challenge if they knew that their opponents were from Golden Continent in general. They would have thought about it before doing anything, and would not have fought.

However, those cunning and sinister men had hidden the golden patterns on their sleeves, acting like normal warriors.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, “All we can say is that the two of them were naive. They never expected that warriors from Golden Continent would be so despicable and shameless…”

“They might’ve thought that those who were strong would not do anything like that. It was obvious that they thought too highly of these people. As long as it makes them happy, these people will do anything!”

Rudy was even more furious at that moment.

He turned around and wondered, “If they wanted to show off, wouldn’t killing warriors from Chaos Continent or White Marsh Continent be more notable?”

“Isn’t it a bit beneath them to target Hestia Continent? Don’t they know that the more they act like this, the more disgusted others would be at them? Are the warriors from Golden Continent all so despicable?”

Jackie scoffed and narrowed his eyes slightly, saying coldly, “They don’t care about that. As long as they get to show off and trample over their opponents, they won’t care about anything else. The weaker their opponents, the happier they are…”

“They are clearly twisted in the head. After all, worlds are usually separated. Before entering the Whirling World, Golden Continent was probably always among other second-grade worlds.”

Chapter 3275
“When they’re with those worlds, Golden Continent stands at the very bottom. They’ve always been bullied, so their hearts are already twisted. Since they have the chance right now, they would naturally want to show off. The weaker their opponents are, the happier they are.”

Rudy’s lips twitched as he reddened in anger. He started to feel disgusted at all the warriors from Golden Continent.

He looked at them like nasty bugs in the sewers.

Jackie turned around and smiled before he said, “I know what you want to say after this. You don’t even have to mention it and I’ll do it. If those two guys that died were from the Unbreaking Pavilion or the Compass Pavilion, I might not have done anything, but they were from the Scarlet Pavilion. Even though there’s some conflict between us, it’s not too bad. There’s nothing wrong with helping them. ”

With Jackie’s words, Rudy’s lips trembled emotionally.

Darien frowned, and he was incredibly conflicted inside. At the moment, he had a lot of responsibility for himself, but he had the impulse to forget about everything and kill those two.

However, he knew very well that he did not have the skills. He got frustrated just thinking about it.

At that moment, he happened to spot someone.

That person had green robes on and an aura that seemed to separate him from everyone else. When he saw who it was, Darien’s lips twitched, “ Jackie?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Darien with some surprise. He could not believe Darien actually recognized him.

Darien took a deep breath. He seemed to be deliberating something. After thinking about it, he walked forward.

He walked right to Jackie, “I knew I’d see you here, but I’m a bit at a loss after seeing you myself.”

Darien looked at Jackie with sincerity and seriousness.

Jackie was surprised at his enthusiasm. Everyone else noticed Jackie as well. All of them looked over, and other than a small portion of the warriors, they looked at Jackie incredibly eagerly. It was like they were welcoming a hero.

Jackie did not know what to say when faced with those unfamiliar faces.

Rudy shrank behind Jackie as he was already used to being insulted. It was the first time they were welcomed so warmly. Even though those looks were aimed at Jackie, Rudy still felt awkward.

Darien gulped and composed himself.

“You don’t have to be surprised. We’ve already heard about you. We’ve talked about your skills as well. You showed your true skills in the slaughter gambit. You killed them all. You’re a hero for Hestia Continent!”

Jackie was caught off guard by that. In truth, he expected something similar, but just never expected it to have spread so widely. Every warrior from Hestia Continent seemed to know him.

The slaughter Gambit saw him beating everyone from the Chaos Continent and White Continent, winning in the end. After Jackie left, the news spread like wildfire.

Jackie’s strength slowly spread to everyone.

Chapter 3276
Darien became desperate. “I know you’ve had conflicts with certain people. More accurately, it’s with certain clans. However, you don’t need to care about that; it’s not an issue anymore. Those who offended you won’t trouble you no longer.”

Hearing those, Jackie felt even more bewildered.

Darien sounded very confident and firm. Jackie could hear from his words that, as long as Jackie could help the Hestia Continent, all those past conflicts would not matter.

The Scarlet Pavilion would help sort everything out and would make sure Jackie was happy. That was how the strong were treated. As long as a person was powerful enough, even eighth-grade clans would not dare challenge him or her.

Jackie let out a slight smile.

He did not really care about that. After all, if these people dared to come after him, Jackie would spare no effort in taking revenge, and they would pay dearly for their transgression.

Though, if he did not accept it, it would still not look great. Revenge was served when it was deserved, but he still had to do the things he needed to.

Jackie's lips curled up into a faint smile. "I don't really care about smoothing things out. After all, those small fries are nothing to me."

When he said that, the disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion and the Compass Pavilion glowered, looking as though they had tasted something terrible. Still, Jackie could care less about what they thought.

He let out a laugh before he added, "If I don't like those people, I can just kill them. After all, we can fight at the hundred and eighty meter range as long as both sides agree, right?"

Darien nodded vigorously as he looked at Jackie anticipatingly.

Jackie let out a laugh before he turned to look at the 180-meter area. At that moment, those two had their eyes shut while they rested, looking like they were not afraid of anything at all.

Jackie scoffed as a cold glint flashed in his eyes. He turned around and nodded to Darien. "Don't worry, just leave this to me."

With that, Jackie pulled Rudy into the crowd. "Just help me take care of him."

Jackie thus headed to the Red Sun Monument without even turning. He would not hold back against these shameless, despicable men.

Watching Jackie's back, Darien frowned as was riddled with slight worry. He had never seen Jackie in action before. All he knew was that Jackie's skills were comparable to chosen disciples from holy-grade clans.

Sending Jackie over, Darien was not hoping he would kill them at all. All he wanted was for Jackie to scare off the Golden Continent's warriors so they would realize that Hestia had no pushover.

A disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion said anxiously, “Didn’t we say that we wouldn’t do anything for the moment? Wouldn’t having Jackie go there just show that we’re challenging the Golden Continent? They won’t just let it rest like that!”

They had talked about doing that, and Darien had planned on doing that as well. However, the moment Jackie appeared, Darien forgot about everything other than the hatred in his heart.

The corpses of his fellow disciples-all covered with wounds, and one, in particular, physically gutted-flashed across his mind. During the match, he was already on the ground and was barely holding on, but Wilde still did not relent.

The memory of how Wilde still resumed his attacks was forever etched in Darien’s mind. How could Darien not be filled with hatred? These despicable guys should be sent straight to hell!

However, he was not skilled enough and had responsibilities that stopped him from doing what he wanted. He was forced to swallow that anger in consideration of the bigger picture.

Chapter 3277
Darien suddenly turned around. His fists were clenched tightly, and his eyes were reddened as he stared at the disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion who just spoke.

“I’ve given it a thought. Try as we might, these shameless guys won’t let us off, and backing off will only keep them coming back. We should fight back whenever possible. We have to make them realize that offending us comes with a price!”

With a frown, the Unbreaking Pavilion disciple sneered, “Do you think that Jackie can win? Alright, he’s stronger than me, but Wilde and Lester aren’t weaklings! Those two are chosen disciples from a holy-grade clan. I think Jackie won’t be able to shock them at all. Instead, he’ll end up drawing even more hate.”

The moment he said that, everyone around him started to frown.

Rudy could not stand it.

This man was clearly not happy that Jackie was heroically trying to help them out, hence his pessimistic words.

If it was before, Rudy might not have said anything, but Jackie had stepped up to help them get revenge, only to receive such a crude comment.

Rudy could not stand that at all!

He stepped forward and looked at that guy coldly. “Those two despicable men are appalling, but you’re not far off from them. You’re just saying that because you don’t want everyone else to have a good impression on Jackie. After all, you’re from the Unbreaking Pavilion, and we don’t get along that well!”

“I’ll remember you, brat. You’ll take responsibility for what you said!”

The moment that was said, the disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion immediately shrunk back. After all, he knew very well that Rudy was close to Jackie and was always with him.

If Jackie really ended up targeting that man, he would not be able to fight back. His lips twitched, unable to say anything back.

Rudy took a deep breath as he held his head high and said to everyone, ”You don’t know him at all. I’ve known him for so long, and I know what he’s like. He never does anything he’s not sure of, so since he agreed to this, it means he’s confident. You can keep those petty words of yours!”

No one dared to say anything at that point.

Darien hurriedly stepped up and said, “Don’t be too angry, they’re all like this. They never watch what they say. We all believe in Jackie, don’t worry.”

As he said that, Rudy suddenly raised his hand to stop Darien. “There’s no need for flattery. I know very well what’s happening. Everyone just shut up and watch.”

At that moment, Jackie was already climbing the Red Sun Monument.

The moment his feet landed on the monument, a violent energy came from above, causing Jackie’s body to sway. However, he quickly stabilized himself.

He was at the lowest part of the monument and was only dealing with the weakest of the Red Sun Storm. He took a deep breath and started to climb toward the 180-meter area.

He looked around and made estimations. There were about a few thousand people climbing the monument, but most of them would probably stop before the 300-meter mark, unable to continue. However, Jackie was not really affected by the Red Sun Storm at all.

The area that would have Jackie using his techniques to protect himself would probably be above the 360-meter area.

He steadily continued to walk up.

Most of the warriors around him were from the Golden Continent and Chaos Continent. There were relatively fewer people from White Marsh Continent.

Warriors from the Golden Continent only talked to others from the same world.

When they looked at warriors from other worlds, disdain would flash in their eyes. It was as if these people were not worthy of sharing the platform they were on.

The warriors from White Marsh Continent who used to enjoy showing off were quiet as sheep, probably because they had been constantly embarrassed. After all, the Golden Continent was there.

Chapter 3278
“Those people are crossing the line. They’ve driven them to desperation! I was looking at the Hestia Continent earlier, and oh, were they pissed. Thank goodness they haven’t been causing us any trouble, or we won’t be able to do anything about them. We’d only be able to hold it in.”

“I really don’t know what they’re thinking. Why do they have to be so irksome?” A warrior from White March Continent lamented as he climbed.

The one climbing, his fellow disciple, shook his head and said helplessly, “Warriors from the Golden Continent are like mad dogs that’d try to bite anyone who they think is inferior to them.”

“Hestia can’t do anything, but watch what happens when they’re forced into this situation. Nobody knows if they’ll end up going for us later on. Even though I, too, look down on the warriors from Hestia, I won’t harass them randomly. After all, no sense of accomplishment comes from bullying those weaker than you.”

The other man nodded vigorously. “You’re right. The warriors from the Hestia Continent are recognized as the weakest by everyone. They’re at the bottom of the four worlds. It’s nothing much to mock them a bit, but why would the Golden Continent be so fixated on confronting them? Where’s the sense of accomplishment in that?”

“I really don’t know what’s going through their minds. You’re right, they’re just a bunch of mad dogs!”

Jackie nodded when he heard all of that.

They were right, the warriors from the Golden Continent were indeed mad dogs that lacked even a sliver of honor.

Even though the warriors from the White Marsh Continent look down on Hestia too, they would not go looking for trouble randomly. As long as the warriors from the Hestia

Continent avoided them, they would just suffer some ridicule. No one would behave like the Golden Continent's warriors.

The other man snorted and lowered his voice. "They don't act like the strong at all. As long as it makes them happy, they can do anything. What do you call that apart from crazy?"

"Even though we look down on Hestia, I look down on how the Golden Continent is acting as well."

"There's no moral character in how they act at all. The Golden Continent is stronger than the White Marsh Continent, sure, but we don't target the weak to bully like they do. Just look at Wilde and Lester. They're sitting at the hundred and eighty meter area and aren't making a fuss. They even announced that any warriors from Hestia could come to challenge them!"

"What's the point in fighting till the end with the Hestia Continent? What's the point in suppressing those inferior? If they have the skills, they should go challenge the strong. They should be challenging other second-grade worlds, but they chose the lowest among the third-grade worlds. There's nothing worth showing off about that at all!"

The area Jackie was climbing in was not isolated.

There were no warriors from the Golden Continent at all, which was why these two men could talk so brazenly. Even if they lowered their voices, it was just for a few specific words. Everyone else could hear the rest of the conversation.

A noble-looking warrior from the Chaos Continent, donning the robes of the Purple Cloud Pavilion that only chosen disciples could wear, joined the discussion as well.

That person raised an eyebrow and said coldly, "How would they dare challenge other second-grade worlds? All they can do is parade themselves. Do they think others don't know about them? The Golden Continent stands at the bottom rung of second-grade rules and is regularly mocked and targeted when standing with them."

"That's why they're this twisted. They do everything they can to show off to those they believe are inferior. The weaker their opponents, the more they'll bully them. They don't have a moral character at all!"

Chapter 3279
The moment he said that, everyone around them laughed. Even though they did not dare to say anything out loud, everyone was aggravated with how those from the Golden Continent behaved, believing they were nothing but mad dogs.

When Jackie heard that, he smiled and shook his head.

They were only at a level six city, and there were still five other levels ahead. They would meet stronger worlds, and the Golden Continent would not be able to show off for much longer.

The higher they climbed, the stronger the Red Sun Storm was. Waves of energy crashed into all the warriors there, so much so that those who were not strong enough slowed down in scaling upward.

At the 150-meter area, a few of them stopped to rest.

Jackie, on the other hand, was barely worn-out as he walked leisurely even with the Red Sun Storm. It was as if the storm did nothing to him at all, and in the end, he finally arrived at the 18o-meter area.

A few warriors were already there, and a lot of them were fighting. Energies of various colors clashed in the air.

Some warriors were on the ground with severe injuries while some had bloodied mouths. Though there were corpses, there were not many. After all, there was not much of a reason to kill anyone, this was just a match of strength.

The 180-meter area was very large, but Jackie did not bother looking around him. His sharp gaze had locked onto Wilde and Lester.

At that moment, Wilde and Lester were still acting the same. They still had their eyes shut as they rested. Their surroundings were empty as none dared to get

close to them.

Jackie smirked as he walked toward them.

Below the Red Sun Monument, a lot of people were looking up to see what was happening at the monument except for the warriors from Hestia. The first person to notice Jackie was a warrior from the Chaos Continent.

“Look at that guy, he’s walking toward Wilde. It seems like he wants to challenge him. What’s he doing? Who is he? What continent is he from?”

The moment that person said that, a few people looked toward Jackie.

When they saw Jackie walking over so confidently, some of them were stunned.

Jackie did not have golden patterns on his sleeves, so he was not from the Golden Continent.

After asking around, they found out that Jackie was not from the Chaos Continent or the White Marsh Continent. That left only one thing…

Jackie was from Hestia!

After confirming the answer, they were even more surprised. A warrior from Hestia was walking right to Wilde and Lester…

Was he trying to challenge them both?

Everyone shook their heads at that possibility, thinking that Jackie did not know his place.

The warriors from Hestia frowned anxiously. They stared at Jackie's figure and constantly prayed that Jackie would win. He had to reclaim even a fraction of dignity for Hestia and take revenge for the two dead warriors.

Chapter 3280
At that moment, Jackie merely had a simple thought, he just wanted these two arrogant warriors to die. He was used to offending people anyway, and there was no harm in offending a few more.

Wilde, seated cross-legged with his hands on his knees in a casual manner, could make out the sound of steady footsteps. When he opened his eyes, he saw Jackie's calm face.

Wilde raised an eyebrow as a sneer appeared on his face.

What was this guy doing?

Did he not see that everyone avoided him and Lester out of fear?

Lester opened his eyes as well, looking Jackie over with disdain as though Jackie was insubstantial.

Jackie was amused by their expressions, and he stopped when he was 90 meters away from them. He coldly looked at the two of them, and the two of them looked at Jackie as well. Their gazes met, and it looked like they would start fighting at any moment.

Wilde raised an eyebrow and said, "Are you here to fight, brat? Where are you from?"

Jackie's lips curled up into a small yet calm smile.

"My name is Jackie," he answered truthfully, "And I come from Hestia."

The moment they heard that Jackie was from Hestia, their smile widened.

Wilde chuckled. “I thought that the warriors from Hestia won’t dare step close to me. What are you here for? Don’t tell me you’re here to challenge us.”

Jackie snorted as he looked at them in complete disdain, “You’re not worthy of challenging me. I’m here to kill you.”

Everyone was flabbergasted upon hearing Jackie’s reply.

Did Jackie know what he was saying?

He dared to say something so brazen to the warriors from the Golden Continent?

Did he not know how those guys acted?!

Those from the Golden Continent would always torture their offenders to the point of insanity of even death!

Was there something wrong with Jackie?

Did he not know fear?

He had the gall to be so bold!

Wilde was taken aback. He rubbed his ears, not believing what he heard.

Was this guy crazy?

He dared to act so arrogantly toward them!

He did not know his place and seemed to be unaware of the concept of death!

Lester laughed. “Do you know what you’re saying right now? You said that you’re here to kill us? You? Do you know who we are? Do you know what a holy-grade clan is, and what a chosen disciple is?”

Jackie looked at Lester as though he had a second head growing out of him. “Do you think we’re all as ignorant as you are? How could I not know that? Are you trying to say that you’re a chosen disciple from the White Phoenix Clan, a holy-grade clan from the second-grade world, the Golden Continent? What of it, then?”

Everyone was stunned when they heard that. A few of them stared at Jackie wide-eyed in shock

Jackie was way too daring to have said that. He did not even spare the Golden Continent any form of respect!

The warriors from Hestia looked visibly conflicted. They were happy that the warriors from the Golden Continent were being insulted, yes, but they worried that challenging them too much would cause even more trouble.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3281 - 3290 -

Chapter 3281

The demeaning disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion that tried to stop them earlier frowned and said, “ Jackie’s a little crass with his words right now. Isn’t he worried that it’ll backfire on him? With how the warriors from the Golden Continent are, they won’t ever forgive him. He might even drag us down with him!”

“Can you just shut up?” Darien immediately shot back at him after hearing that.

“Stop trying to praise others at our own expense. Even if we gave in, would the warriors from the Golden Continent let us breathe? Don’t you see how desperate of a situation they’ve forced us into?”

“If we don’t fight back, they’ll just get worse. Those warriors from the Golden Continent don’t have any grace at all. They’ll just keep on trying to prove themselves to us!”

The disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion pursed his lips, not daring to say anymore.

The Golden Continent’s warriors were in an uproar after what Jackie said.

An inner disciple from the Azure Clan said loudly, “How dare you talk back to the warriors from the Golden Continent like, you brat?! You have guts, alright. Even being stabbed a thousand times won’t be enough. Death awaits you, just you wait!”

If this guy was not just all talk and wanted to challenge Wilde or Lester, then he was done for.

When the warriors from the Chaos Continent gathered, all of them shook their heads, lamenting the fact that Jackie was far too arrogant. He was practically playing around with his own life for a moment of fun, and seemingly did not care about the consequences at all.

A warrior from the Chaos Continent said, “Even though this guy is crazy, I won’t deny his words were satisfying to hear. Wilde’s nose looks like it’s going to go crooked!”

The moment he said that, a warrior from the Chaos Continent immediately stopped him. “You should keep quiet. Those guys have sharp ears. If they hear that you’re insulting them, they’ll come for you. You forgot how they are. Since we can’t offend them, we should avoid them. Don’t talk so loudly!”

At that moment, everyone knew that they could not treat the warriors from the Golden Continent normally.

All of them were far too despicable and only thought about themselves. They were a group that could not be crossed whatsoever lest it invited endless trouble.

Hence, everyone swallowed their words. Despite their grievance, they would just lower their voices, not letting anyone else hear them. Everyone had been tortured too much by the Golden Continent, and their anger toward the continent only accumulated.

At that moment, Wilde was enraged.

He looked at Jackie murderously, already wanting to kill Jackie. He was even already thinking about how he would torture Jackie later.

Unfortunately, Jackie was unfazed by his expression. Instead, he laughed and said, “I don’t know why the Golden Continent thinks so well of themselves. Do you think you’re better just because you’re from a second-grade world? From what I know, you’re among the worst of the second-grade worlds.”

“Your sense of superiority hinges on you facing weaker worlds, and that’s not true superiority at all. With enough time, third-grade worlds will be promoted to second-grade worlds while second-grade worlds will fall to being third-grade worlds. You won’t last long on your high horse.”

Jackie said all of that incredibly calmly as if it was something that would definitely happen.

The moment he mentioned that the Golden Continent was the worst among second-grade worlds, the disciples were enraged. It was their secret that they could not accept.

Chapter 3282
Wilde opened his eyes wide as he looked at Jackie, gritting his teeth. “Insolence! How dare you? It seems you’re looking forward to dying, so I’ll grant your wish. Didn’t you want to challenge me?! Come at me right now!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not even looking at Wilde. “I don’t have much time, and I don’t want any surprises. As long as both sides are fine, then any kind of battle is okay. A one-on-one battle isn’t interesting at all. If we’re going to fight, both of you should come at me. I have no problems going one against two at all.‘’

The moment he said that, everyone was shocked by Jackie again.

As his lower jaw hung wide open, Wilde, thinking that he misheard things, said, “You want to fight against us, one-on-two? You, alone?”

This whole situation felt absurd to Wilde.

Jackie nodded and said honestly, “Yes, I want to fight against the two of you on my own. You both should be happy and agree. After all, with how the Golden Continent acts, you don’t seem to care about how absurd or dishonorable it is at all. You just care that you’re happy.”

Wilde and Lester were both infuriated.

Lester looked at Jackie speechlessly as though this man had lost his mind. “Who do you think you are? Even the top disciple from my clan won’t dare to speak like that. You’re just a warrior from Hestia, yet you’re talking like you’re a hotshot! A little baffling, don’t you think?”

Lester felt like Jackie’s words were a joke. His arrogance was unwarranted!

Jackie sighed, already expecting that reaction.

He pursed his lips and let out a calm smile, ignoring the misunderstandings and mockery of others. “No one can change how you want to think, but you just have to remember one thing: I still want to climb the Red Sun Monument, and I don’t have time to waste on you both. If you want to fight, then do it quickly. If you don’t have the guts to, then shut up.”

No one expected that Jackie would go further with his words.

He looked like he did not have a care in the world! It was like he truly did not regard the two chosen disciples from the White Phoenix Clan as worth his notice at all.

The Hestia Continent exploded at that.

With Jackie asking to fight both of them at once, their discussions were suddenly split into two.

One half felt like Jackie was too arrogant and that he had to be crazy to do something like that. It was one thing to insult their opponents, but he dared to face them both at once!

They spoke as if Jackie was completely reckless.

The other group supported Jackie and heralded him as their flame of hope. From what they had heard from others, they knew that Jackie was not reckless. Everything he did was always very logical, and he had never miscalculated things before. This was no different.

A lot of them were like Rudy and believed in Jackie somewhat blindly, regardless of what everyone else was saying. Even before the outcome was produced, they felt like Jackie would win and would not do anything stupid.

Darien was one of those people.

As a chosen disciple from the Scarlet Pavilion, he was the leader among the warriors from Hestia who were gathered there. At that moment, he was surprised at Jackie's actions but did not doubt Jackie. He still trusted Jackie.

Darien had been greatly interested in Jackie when he heard of Jackie's accomplishments. He had his fellow disciples look into everything about Jackie.

When he found out everything Jackie had done, his confidence in Jackie became unwavering.

The disciples from the Unbreaking Pavilion started to move again.

One of them said loudly, " Jackie is insane, I called it. Does he know what he's doing? Does he think he's the top disciple of a holy-grade clan? He dared to challenge both Wilde and Lester alone… Does he think they're useless? He might not even have been able to win two against one, but he's offering to fight them both. He doesn't know his place at all. Just look at how everyone's laughing at him!"

Chapter 3283
A chosen disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion scoffed and said, "They were already looking down on Hestia to begin with, and this will just make it worse. They'll keep on insulting us!"

"I just heard someone say that the Hestia Continent only has fools. Our situation was precarious before this, and now it's going to be worse. This guy is…"

He had worse to say, but seeing that Rudy was still there, he was worried Rudy would remember him for his choice of words.

He thus swallowed his words, but everyone knew what he wanted to say. The situation was an awkward one.

Rudy was initially silent, but when everyone's looks were focused on him, he could no longer stay silent. He sighed helplessly as he turned to look at everyone behind him.

After a few seconds of silence, he said, "I never wished for you to trust in him, but you could at least try to stop dampening the mood. I've said this before, Jackie never does anything he's not confident in. Since he's said it, he'll see it through. Everyone should just shut up, or you might have to suffer the consequences later."

As he said that, Rudy straightened his body and planted himself firmly on the ground. In the end, they only dared to talk about Jackie when he was not around. After all, all of them already knew how strong he was.

Even those who made snide remarks acknowledged that Jackie was a powerful character. However, they did not think that Jackie was able to stand up one against two.

They felt like Jackie had a death wish instead.

That disciple from the Unbreaking Pavilion pursed his lips and said unhappily, “You just have too much blind faith. He might just be hot-headed at the moment and didn’t think this through at all. He’s just thinking…”

Rudy frowned and, glaring at him sharply, declared coldly, “I know what you’re thinking, but don’t worry, things won’t go south like what you’re expecting. If Jackie loses, well, your words will be great to hear. If he loses, you’re going to be the unlucky one.”

All of the discussions from earlier were suppressed from then on, and no one dared to speak ill of Jackie anymore. That person had been scared silent from Jackie as well. He shrunk back, losing all his confidence.

At that moment, Jackie stood before Wilde and Lester. He had an easygoing expression on his face as though his opponents were nothing worth fretting about.

Wilde was so angry he did not know what to say.

Ever since he entered the Whirling World, this was the craziest thing he had encountered.

This brat, who came out of nowhere, was not just challenging the two of them but saying such arrogant words as well.

He truly did have a death wish!

Wilde’s sneer deepened. “Do you know the consequences of bragging in such a manner, brat?”

Jackie’s lips curled into a sneer as well. “Of course I know. Can you stop wasting time? If you’re not happy about it, just attack. As long as both sides are willing, even one against three is allowed.”

Lester could no longer tolerate Jackie’s attitude. “Can you stop acting like you’re the strongest warrior? I really don’t know if you’re crazy or just stupid. You asked us to stop wasting time? The nerve.”

Wilde took a deep breath and pulled out a meter-long sword. “Since you’re so eager to die, I’ll grant you your wish!”

Chapter 3284
All Wilde wanted was for Jackie to die a horrifying death. He could imagine how he

would torture him in a moment. However, just as he was about to raise his sword, Jackie suddenly reached out and stopped him. “Wait!”

Wilde raised an eyebrow and snorted, “What? Are you afraid? It’s too late to regret. You already agreed to fight us both altogether. The moment you do, the rules no longer restrict us. I can attack whenever I want!”

Wilde’s lips curled up slightly as his face twisted in excitement.

He did not blame Jackie for raising his hand to stop them. After all, in his eyes, Jackie’s actions were just absolutely crazy.

In the end, he felt like Jackie had just been trying to act like he was better than he actually was.

How could a warrior from the Hestia Continent face them both at once?

Jackie would be no match even for one of them, let alone two!

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, “No, I’m not scared. I just want to make a final check. Both of you are going to fight, right? Both you and Lester agreed to fight me, right?”

Hearing that, Wilde frowned again, looking at Jackie in confusion. He never expected that to be what Jackie wanted to say.

Jackie actually wanted to check to see if they both agreed to fight him as though worried he would miss out on such an opportunity.

At that moment, Wilde was certain that Jackie was deranged. He would never have said such things otherwise.

Lester shrugged. “You really opened my eyes. You said that to make sure that the rules won’t stop you from fighting the two of us?”

The situation felt so surreal to Lester. It was so hilarious that he did not know what to say.

Jackie was actually very straightforward. He nodded honestly after hearing that. It had been precisely what he thought.

Based on how the two of them were, it was not entirely possible that they would attack him together. Even though the warriors from the Golden Continent always did things as they pleased, he was still a madman in their eyes, an ant they could kill at any moment.

It was rather embarrassing for them to attack him together.

If he revealed his true skills and the other got intimidated, wanting to retreat, it would be a waste. To prevent that from happening, Jackie emphasized it again for the rules that those two had agreed to fight him altogether.

Then, no matter what happened, he could fight without any reservation.

Lester, on the other hand, felt like Jackie was brain-dead, and he was not the only person who had such a sentiment.

Everyone who heard what Jackie said thought so as well. They felt like he was seriously ill. The Golden Continent's warriors did not know what to say.

An inner disciple from the White Phoenix Clan raised an eyebrow and said, "Is he drunk? Just listen to what he' s saying. It's crazy. Listen to his tone. It's like both of them won't be able to beat him!"

"Even if he's drunk, any sane person wouldn't brag like that. This guy must be crazy-only demented people would say something like this."

A warrior from the Golden Continent next to him nodded vigorously. "I think this guy must be crazy, too. No functional person would do what he's doing."

Chapter 3285
Hestia Continent's side visibly soured as doubt clouded them, not understanding what Jackie was thinking.

At that moment, their common sense told them that just one was hard enough to deal with.

Fighting the two of them together left Jackie at a huge disadvantage. However, Rudy was still around, and they did not dare to be reckless with their words.

They were forced to suppress their doubts as they quietly looked toward the Red Sun Monument. The Red Sun Storm constantly flowed downward, and wave after wave of energy hid Jackie, Wilde, and Lester.

Jackie's expression was calm. Neither the Red Sun Storm nor the two before him were able to shake his tranquility.

Wilde could no longer stand it, he could not stomach anything from Jackie any longer. He would use his skills to prove to him how crazy he was with his words and behavior.

Wilde let out an angry roar as he held his sword with his left hand. He formed seal after seal with his right hand, and countless seals materialized with a vibrant glow, condensing behind Wilde. Three blurry figures solidified, standing behind Wilde.

Three stern-looking white-haired deities with massive wings appeared behind Wilde. They appeared like deities that mastered life and death. Jackie looked at everything interestedly, still maintaining his calm.

A massive force exuded from those three deities. It was as if the person standing before them was a weak madman that would be suppressed by the force and would be forced to his knees. However, Jackie did not even raise an eyebrow at the power. It did not affect him at all.

Wilde was already deep in his rage at that moment and did not care about such a small detail. He only had one thought in mind, which was to incapacitate Jackie before slowly torturing him.

“Die!” roared Wilde.

He held his sword with both hands and swung toward Jackie.

The three deities behind him looked like they were summoned as they suddenly leaped forward, fused into that technique, and charged at Jackie.

Jackie sneered as he quickly formed seals. 60 Soul Swords were immediately formed and merged into one.

He snorted as he pushed his hands forward, sending the massive Soul Sword right at Wilde.

The two of them were not that far away, and the techniques were executed quickly. The two techniques clashed against each other, and with an explosion, the white glow clashed with the gray one, forming blinding streaks of light.

At that moment, no one could see what was happening. Everyone widened their eyes, ignoring the bright light as they tried to see what was happening.

A cry of agony came after the glow was gone that shocked the warriors from the Golden Continent.

The voice was horrifyingly familiar to them.

Not another second later, the light dispersed, and they were surprised to see Wilde collapse on the ground. His body twitched, and his mouth was wide open. It was like he had been poisoned.

Lester reacted the quickest. When he saw what happened, he immediately rushed over, helping Wilde up from the ground. However, the moment he helped Wilde up, Wilde merely fell to the ground, unable to control his body as he spasmed violently.

Chapter 3286
Lester suddenly panicked.

He was the closest to Wilde, and he could clearly see that even though Wilde's eyes were open, but his pupils were distant.

It was obvious that he had lost his senses. His mouth was wide opened as incomprehensible groans came out of it. His body twitched uncontrollably as if he was in extreme pain. Lester's face was pale in fright, not believing what was happening. He pinched himself and felt the pain, so he knew that he was not dreaming or hallucinating.

His breathing slowly got more erratic as his hands constantly shook. He tried to help Wilde up again but failed after trying for a while.

Unless he held onto Wilde, Wilde would just fall on the ground. However, he was in danger at that moment and to prevent Wilde from getting injured, he lay Wilde on the ground.

Lester slowly looked up at Jackie, who was still standing in the same spot. He had lost the disdain on his face as it had turned into fear.

Jackie's expression was calm as if he had not done anything. The more Jackie acted like that, the more scared Lester was.

"What are you?!" Lester asked loudly.

He knew Wilde. Even though Wilde looked down on Jackie, he did not hold back. Even so, Wilde was still no match for Jackie. He had been dealt with in one attack and had been heavily injured to the point of losing his mind.

How could Lester not be afraid?

He even doubted where Jackie came from.

Every warrior who saw what happened was filled with horror and shock. It had completely shattered their expectations. Wilde, who they thought would definitely win, was no match for Jackie at all.

Jackie had heavily injured Wilde in just one strike, and his whole body even started to twitch.

The warriors from Golden Continent all had their eyes widened as they looked at everything in disbelief. It was too crazy.

A warrior from Golden Continent breathed erratically as he said, "What happened? How is this guy so strong? Wilde was using a lower ultimate god rank technique, but he was

no match for this kid at all. What kind of technique is this guy using? Could it be a lower ultimate god rank technique too?”

That person spoke incredibly loudly, and everyone heard it.

A warrior from Chaos Continent shouted at him in disdain, “How are you so clueless? Do you really need to ask that? Isn’t it obvious?! If Leslie is using a lower ultimate god rank technique, then the technique that beat him won’t be of a low rank!”

A warrior from White Marsh Continent suddenly pushed back the shock in his heart when he heard that conversation, adding on to the warrior from Chaos Continent, “Are the warriors from Golden Continent only good at being proud of themselves?”

“Are you the only ones allowed to learn lower ultimate god rank techniques? Are other warriors not qualified to? Even if Jackie’s from Hestia Continent, there are strong warriors everywhere. You are so short-sighted. You only see yourself, but no one else!”

The warriors from the third- grade worlds all agreed with that statement, ”That’s right! All they care about is themselves. They think that everyone else is trash, but they ended up being no match for trash, losing in just one attack. They can’t see their own flaws. What a joke!”

“Do they think they’re stronger than us in every way just because they’ re from a second-grade world? It’s such a joke hearing that. Just their mindset alone is far behind other worlds.”

“They’re all just so stubborn, thinking that all their warriors are unbeatably strong. They think that the warriors from third-grade worlds can’t beat them at all. Let’s see if they’ll keep showing off after this.”

Chapter 3287
The warriors from Golden Continent were furious from being mocked, but there was nothing they could say.

They had no way to retort, but it was just temporary. Very quickly after, they began to throw insults again.

A wandering warrior from Golden Continent said, “You were always just trash anyway! They’re always some standouts among the trash, but it doesn’t mean that you’re no longer trash. Even all of you warriors from third-grade worlds added together wouldn’t be as strong as Golden Continent…”

“There’s no point saying these useless things. Just look at the Red Sun Monument. Who left the most names on the monument?”

Most warriors could not even reach the four hundred and eighty meter mark at all.

When they were at the end of their strength, they would carve the name of their continent where they stopped.

Looking at it, the monument was filled with names from various worlds, but Golden Continent had the most.

From the lowest to the highest level, the other worlds had a lot fewer names. Hestia Continent had the fewest, especially at the higher points. There were only a few at the four hundred and twenty meter mark area. The overall strengths of the continents were obvious from that.

The moment that person said that, the other warriors from Golden Continent agreed.

A disciple from the Azure Clan loudly told the warriors from the other worlds, ”Stop trying to show off in front of us. If you can, try to show us your skills and leave your names on areas that are higher up. Otherwise, stop with your mockery… Like another guy had said, Jackie’s victory means you have one outstanding figure among you. There’s always someone good among trash!”

When Rudy heard that, he found that the warriors from Golden Continent were really annoying.

He raised an eyebrow and suddenly shouted, “You should stop talking about all of this. Wilde lost, and he’s just barely alive. There’s still Lesley. Very quickly, you’ll see what ends up happening to those two that were mocking Hestia Continent so much earlier!”

At that moment, the warriors from Hestia Continent were high in spirits.

No matter what anyone else said, they finally got their revenge. Darien was particularly happy. He clenched his fists together and his eyes reddened, too emotional to say anything. Hestia Continent had been too humiliated earlier.

They had been tricked and were challenged by the person who tricked them. Their whole world was being trampled over. Darien had suffered from being humiliated like that. He still remembered how arrogant Wilde was toward them.

An inner disciple from Scarlet Pavilion said, “Serves him right! He spoke like we are not worth anything at all before this. He even said that we are not worthy of standing next to them. Let’s he how he can show off now. He can’t even stand up!”

“That’s right! Wilde is only good at being arrogant and ignorant. He thought that no one from Hestia Continent would be a match for him, and now he’s done for. Jackie would never let him off easily!”

Chapter 3288
Lesley could no longer hear any of the discussions coming from below because he was just filled with fear at that moment as he looked at Jackie's calm face.

His hands started to shake, along with his entire body. He looked like he was about to faint at any moment. He slowly stood up and stared at Jackie.

He coughed a few times before he summoned up the courage to say, " Jackie! You were just pretending earlier to get us?"

Jackie immediately laughed when he heard that.

He had heard that argument very often. Clearly, Lesley was short-sighted, thinking that he would definitely be weak.

When reality had proven otherwise, those people said he was acting.

Jackie said in exasperation, "Have I ever said I was weak? Have I ever said I wouldn't be able to beat you two? I made everything so clear, but you thought I was bragging. You're the one who can't use your brains properly, and now you're saying I was pretending…"

"Don't you think it's hilarious?"

Hearing that, Jackie's expression had a piercing mockery to it, "Who do you think you are? Why do I have to put on an act in front of you? Do you think I would be as shameless as you two? Ignoring your status to accomplish your goals?"

Lesley's face reddened at those words, unable to say anything back.

The warriors from below felt like Lesley's words were very stupid as well.

Just like Jackie said, he had never hidden who he was and even said that he would be able to stand up to both of them. However, Lesley and Wilde did not believe that Jackie was capable of doing that. They even felt like there was something wrong with Jackie's head. Yet, Lesley could still say things like that. It felt like a joke.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Lesley, "Don't think too highly of yourself. The two of you are just ants in front of me. You were the ones who thought that you were exceptional…"

"Now, you're going to suffer the consequences of your actions. Don't blame anyone else!"

Lesley took a deep breath as he took a few steps back. He wanted to escape the one hundred and eighty meter area so Jackie would not be able to attack him, but he knew very well that Jackie was no idiot.

Jackie could see everything he was doing. The moment he ran, Jackie would definitely attack without any hesitation.

If Wilde still had any ability to fight, he might have been able to run, but Wilde was not in a good state himself that the only thing he could do was twitch in pain. He could not even stand up, let alone work with him against Jackie.

Lesley was starting to regret not attacking Jackie together with Wilde.

If the two of them worked together, they might have been able to overpower Jackie. Even if they could not kill Jackie, they would at least be able to escape. The situation at that moment was the worst-case scenario for them.

Lesley took a deep breath as he started to try to threaten Jackie, “You can’t touch me. If you stop, this matter can be dropped here. If you kill both of us, the Golden Continent won’t just take it…”

“They definitely won’t let you off! You’ll be targeted everywhere. Then, you’d just be like a rat, having to hide everywhere you go!”

Jackie laughed after he heard that which left Lesley stunned again.

He had thought long and hard before he said that. In his mind, even if he could not cause Jackie to reconsider immediately, he could at least make Jackie worry a bit. However, Jackie had actually laughed so casually. It was like he did not care about what Lesley had said at all, and even felt like it was a joke.

Lesley’s lips twitched as he roared, “What are you laughing at? Do you think it’s that funny?”

Chapter 3289
Jackie scoffed, ”You really do think too highly of yourself. Do you think I didn’t consider that before this? Since I’ve attacked the two of you, I’ve naturally already thought about this. Let me tell you honestly, Golden Continent is nothing to me. Where do you think this is?”

“Even if you want to kill me, you’d need the skills to do so. With the rules in place, you can’t just rush at me. You’d only be able to fight me alone, which leaves me with no worries. Alone, none of you are a match for me.”

The moment he said that everyone took a deep breath.

If Jackie had not revealed his skills, the other warriors would have thought that Jackie was crazy to say that. However, there was nothing they could say after seeing Jackie's actual skills. He did have the right to act so arrogantly.

The warriors from Golden Continent could not help but say, "He's only won once, and he's already forgotten his place? He says that no one can stand up against him from Golden Continent. He's too arrogant. Lesley is only ranked thirty-two in the White Phoenix Clan."

"There are a total of thirty-three chosen disciples in the White Phoenix Clan. Lesley is behind Wilde. They are the weakest chosen disciples in the clan. There are still the other thirty- one disciples and none of them are weak."

"Any of the top twenty disciples would be able to beat Jackie easily! Don't think that a small victory like that means can do whatever he wants!"

"You're right, he has only beaten Wilde. There are plenty of warriors stronger than Wilde in Golden Continent. Even in other second-grade worlds, those warriors would be able to make a name for themselves. This guy is too arrogant! He doesn't know his place at all!"

Nevada looked over from afar, hearing the noise from a distance.

After the loss a few days ago, he had been deeply affected. He had just gotten out of his misery when he arrived at the Red Sun Monument, planning on using the monument to prove himself.

The arguments were getting louder and louder. He made out the name Jackie from everything he had heard.

The moment he heard that name, it felt like a nail violently rammed into his heart, making him feel incredibly bad.

He suddenly opened his eyes and rushed into the crowd. He found a fellow disciple that he knew and asked about what had happened. He asked why people were talking about Jackie, and the disciple told him everything.

When Nevada heard that, his face was incredibly pale. He suddenly looked up to see that familiar figure. When he saw Jackie, he looked like he was suffering a great deal

He could not help but say, "Lesley isn't a match for him. Even I lost to this guy. Didn't I already send the news to not casually offend anyone? You insisted on causing trouble for Hestia Continent, and now look, he's going to suffer!"

Nevada had a very sour look on his face.

When someone heard that even Nevada, who was ranked in the twenties in the clan, had lost to Jackie, they were shocked. They never expected that Jackie really was that capable.

Lesley was probably filled with regret at that moment. It was because he had trampled over Hestia Continent that Jackie took action.

Chapter 3290
Lesley took a deep breath and retreated again, “Are you really planning on offending Golden Continent? As long as you stop now, everything can still be discussed. We can still smooth things out, and you won’t have any trouble thrown at you.”

Jackie laughed, not caring about that at all.

Lesley refused to give up. Things had ended too badly for Wilde. There was a bloody lesson right in front of him.

Lesley did not want to die and did not want to be tortured. As long as there was a sliver of hope, he would not give up on it. However, Jackie’s various responses caused Lesley to lose hope. At that moment, the White Phoenix Clan disciples could not bear to look on.

The moment Jackie attacked, Lesley would definitely die. Even though they had been the ones to cause this, they could still not bear to watch as their fellow disciple dies.

An inner disciple from the White Phoenix Clan shouted at Hestia Continent, “You’d better talk to Jackie. He should know when to stop. Otherwise, the White Phoenix Clan won’t let him off! Not only that, we won’t let all of you off either!”

Darien was furious when he heard that.

Those people were too despicable. They had been the shameless ones that trampled on Hestia Continent’s dignity, but they tried to threaten others when they could not win.

Darien would not relent. However, he’s not relenting did not mean that everyone else was not worried.

A disciple from the Company Pavilion said, “Why don’t we talk to Jackie? If he goes too far, then we won’t be able to salvage the situation. The warriors from Golden Continent are shameless, but they’re powerful. It would be easy for them to go against us, and we would not be able to fight back.”

Lesley’s gaze shot right over, staring at that disciple from the Company Pavilion.

His rage burned, but he did not say anything. It was because that person had voiced his own concerns. After all, Hestia Continent was far behind Golden Continent in strength.

If Golden Continent targets them, they would not be able to do anything. However, there was no way Darien could ask Jackie to stop. He had been too furious about things earlier.

When the warrior from Golden Continent saw that Hestia Continent was not reacting, he immediately went on, “You’d better be smarter about things. There’s still room to pull things back right now. You’ve already heavily injured Wilde. It’s already revenge. If you cross the line, we won’t let you off!”

Jackie could hear everything that was being said. He turned to look at the person who was talking, and the sneer on his lips intensified.

Jackie said, “It’s already too late for threats. Let me make things clear. If any of you dare to target Hestia Continent, then I’ll target all of you. If you have the skills, then we can face each other head-on. We’ll see who suffers greater losses.”

The moment he said that the expressions of the warriors from the Golden Continent changed.

They never expected that Jackie would be so stubborn to even say something like that.

Jackie refused to budge.

When Nevada heard that, he sighed and said helplessly, “You shouldn’t waste your time. If this guy would listen to you, then I wouldn’t have lost to him. He’s not afraid of anything, and he is a man of his word. If we target Hestia Continent, we’ll definitely suffer his wrath.”

Darien clenched his fists tightly. Jackie’s words gave him a lot of support.

He turned to look at the warriors from Hestia Continent and said, “If we take a step back, they’ll just want even more from us, don’t you understand that? We weren’t the ones who started this. It was Golden Continent who forced us into a corner. Even if we take a step back, do you think they would let us off easily?”

“If Jackie let Wilde and Lesley off, they would see it as a sign of weakness. With how these guys are, they’ll just continue bullying us and forcing us into desperation!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3291 - 3300 -

Chapter 3291
Darien was incredibly emotional as he said that.

He took deep breaths, and when everyone heard that, they could not help but nod in agreement. Facing Golden Continent, taking a step back would only make them think that Hestia Continent was afraid.

Golden Continent would definitely seek revenge.

Things would then be much harder for them in the future. However, if they stayed resolute and let Jackie lead the charge, things would be better. At the very least, the warriors from Golden Continent would think about the consequences before trying to put them down.

At that moment, Lesley was going crazy.

He realized that everything he said was useless. He could not sway Jackie at all.

Jackie did not want to waste any more time. He looked at Lesley coldly as he formed seals with his hands again.

Sixty soul swords formed in a flash, floating in front of Jackie. Those swords did not have any energy fluctuations at all. They were like an ancient well, but no one dared to look down on them. The power he had shown just now had even beaten Wilde.

Wilde and Lesley both practiced the Nine Cloud Annihilation technique, and the technique was well regarded in the White Phoenix Clan.

Quite a few chosen disciples used that technique, and Nevada was one of them. Nevada was stronger than them, ranking the twenty-seventh place. However, he was still not strong enough to face Jackie either.

Nevada shook his head helplessly.

When he saw that Jackie was about to attack again, he already knew what was waiting for Lesley.

Lesley’s whole face froze. At that moment, there was nothing he could say. After a short silence, he suddenly turned around to run. He only had one thought in mind at that moment, which was to try to run!

He would die if he stayed behind.

There was a howling wind next to him.

His speed greatly decreased thanks to the Red Sun Storm, but he did not care about that. Right at that moment, he felt the space behind him become unstable, like someone had distorted it.

He looked back and widened his eyes. He was shocked to notice that Jackie was already right behind him.

The sword in Jackie's hand aimed right for his back. Before he could even cry out, the sword had already pierced into his back. The pain of his soul being ripped apart was felt in his mind. It shattered all his sanity. He could not even circulate the true energy in his body as he collapsed on the ground.

With a bang, he slammed right on the Red Sun Monument, spitting out blood and was in a bad state.

Jackie slowly descended, looking at Lesley coldly, "Did you think you could run?"

He had no intentions of attacking again because the pain of one's soul being ripped apart was already the most painful punishment anyone could suffer from.

Jackie deliberately slowed down Destroying the Void, using the energy to slowly eat away at their souls.

Lesley started to roll on the ground, crying out in agony.

When everyone saw that, they felt chills on their backs. Even though they did not know what Lesley was going through, it looked like excruciating pain. Otherwise, there was no way Lesley would be rolling mindlessly on the ground like that.

Jackie's lips curled up into a faint smile, "I won't kill you immediately. Just like how you tortured the warriors from Hestia Continent earlier. There's still plenty of time. You can slowly enjoy it."

After saying that, he turned around and continued to climb up the monument, ignoring Wilde and Lesley.

Chapter 3292
At that moment, everyone had fascinating looks on their faces.

They stared with widened eyes as Lester constantly rolled on the ground. They also looked at Wilde, who was just twitching on the ground. Both of them were unable to utter a single word. However, the warriors below could all imagine what they were experiencing. It was definitely pain that pierced right into their bones. Otherwise, there was no way they would be tortured until they were acting like that.

The more cowardly warriors were all so scared that their faces turned pale. They covered their mouths with their hands, unable to say anything.

It was far too cruel. Even though Wilde and Lester would do anything for the sake of their enjoyment, the two of them still had some pride.

If they could control their own bodies or even had a sliver of sanity left, they would not allow themselves to be embarrassed like that.

A warrior from Golden Continent had his eyes wide open as he pointed at Jackie and said, “He’s just going to leave like that? I thought that the guy would cut those two apart. I can’t believe he’s just leaving them behind to die.”

After that person said that, Nevada’s lips twitched helplessly.

He turned to stare at that person, saying in a low voice, “Right now, the two of them are in far more pain than just dying. Since that’s the case, why would he waste his time on the two of them? Did you not hear what Jackie was saying? He kept on repeating that he wanted to use his time effectively.”

“It means that Jackie feels like his time is far more important than torturing the two of them. The two of them are in far more pain than any regular torture anyway…”

As he said that, Nevada’s voice trembled a little.

He was even thankful that he had only fought against Jackie in terms of their attributes during the attribute gamble, and that it had not been a real fight. In the end, he only embarrassed himself, but did not have to go through any actual injuries.

Nevada looked up at Jackie’s back, thankful for his luck. If he had been on the Red Sun Monument instead, he would not be in a much better situation than Wilde.

Just thinking about it caused Nevada to take a deep breath. However, the warriors around him were in an uproar.

Jackie had left without hesitation after accomplishing his goal, not even looking at the two of them on the ground.

What kind of person would be able to do something so cruel?

A warrior from Chaos Continent pursed his lips and said, “I’m nowhere near as strong as Jackie. No wonder he spoke like that earlier. We thought that he was crazy, but we were the ignorant ones. He always had a plan.”

“Honestly, Wilde and Lester were just far too confident. They did not even bother to think about why someone who knew their skills would dare to challenge them. They had

been far too arrogant and did not regard anyone well at all. That's how they ended up like this. They can't really blame anyone else."

After that person said that, the other disciples agreed, "That's right! In the end, they were just blind. They thought that they were unbeatable just because they were from Golden Continent. That's why they ended up in such state. If the two of them had been careful enough, they would not have suffered such a horrible fate."

"There's nothing that can be changed about it. They would not have bullied Hestia Continent like that if they knew such a fate was in store for them. Regrets do nothing though. You can't change what has happened."

Chapter 3293
Just as everyone was discussing, a warrior from Golden Continent brought a valuable recovery pill to Wilde and Lester. After all, they were from the White Phoenix Clan and were very notable chosen disciples. There was no way they could be allowed to just roll on the ground so pathetically.

The person checked their injuries first, and after checking on them, the person was shocked to realize that the two of them had heavy injuries to their souls.

Wilde's soul was already ripped apart by a third, and the remaining two-thirds of his soul were holding on bitterly, but not for much longer.

Injuries to the soul were the most troublesome, and Wilde was already heavily injured. Even if he took the recovery pills, it would just be a waste.

Lester was in a slightly better situation than Wilde, but not by much.

Their injuries were already at the level where nothing could save them. Only death awaited them. The warrior that tried to treat Wilde looked down helplessly.

Someone shouted out loud, "What are you waiting for? Why aren't you treating them?"

That person shook his head helplessly, explaining the situation.

When everyone heard that Wilde's soul was already ripped apart, and by how much, the Golden Continent's warriors all paled.

They widened their eyes, and they lost all their earlier arrogance. They were filled with fear. They were scared.

Only then did they find out that Jackie trained in soul attribute skill. He specialized in attacking the soul. No wonder the two of them were in so much pain.

It was because their soul had been ripped apart. Injuries to the soul were the hardest to treat, especially at their stage. Other than death, there was no other result. No matter how many pills they took, it would do nothing to help.

A disciple from the Azure Clan said with trembling lips, “That guy actually uses the soul attribute. No wonder this happened. I can’t believe such a genius appeared in such a desolate corner!”

As he said that, he was even feeling thankful that he did not offend Jackie. After all, Wilde and Lester’s situation was just too bad. They were forced to bear the pain, slowly feeling their souls being ripped apart.

Death was not far away, and no one could save them. It was truly agonizing.

The warriors from Golden Continent became a lot quieter. Even though they were still angry at Jackie, no one dared to say anything. They shut their mouths, but it did not mean that the warriors from the other worlds would.

A warrior from White Marsh Continent could not help but say loudly, ”Why do you keep putting down other worlds? No matter how bad Hestia Continent is, they are still a true third-grade world. Third-grade worlds have so many geniuses. Any one of them would be able to cause Golden Continent problems. Jackie is just one of them.”

“It’s because Golden Continent was far too arrogant that this happened to you. Things are already at this stage, but you aren’t even thinking of changing. You still feel like there’s no way other worlds could have strong geniuses.”

The more that person spoke, the angrier he got.

White Marsh Continent had been thoroughly suppressed by Golden Continent and had been infuriated by them constantly. They wanted to prove themselves as well but never had the chance.

Jackie had finally stood up for all of them.

Chapter 3294
Yet, the warriors from Golden Continent did not seem to even regret anything.

They were talking just like before, feeling like Jackie was just an exception, and the warriors from the third- grade worlds were still trash.

How could that warrior from Golden Continent stand it?

It was not just the White Marsh Continent, even Chaos Continent’s warriors could not tolerate it.

Quite a few of them started to shout at the warriors from Golden Continent, “As Jackie said, you’re regarding yourselves too highly. Golden Continent isn’t even a first-grade world. You’re an insignificant existence in second-grade worlds. If you give us another hundred years, Chaos Continent will be a second- grade world as well.”

“You’re just slightly stronger than us. It’s not like you’re that much stronger. Yet, you speak so arrogantly. It looks like you haven’t learned your lessons. Just you guys wait! Even more strong warriors will tell you how laughable you’re acting!”

“That’s right! Jackie had clearly trampled all over them with his skills, but they refuse to acknowledge that other worlds have countless geniuses. Just hearing their arrogance sounds like such a joke.”

“It’s as if they think that the strong can only exist in Golden Continent, and other worlds can be bullied as they please. Just open your eyes. Jackie from Hestia Continent. Hestia Continent is at the bottom of third-grade worlds, but someone as strong as Jackie still exists.”

“There’s no way White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent’s geniuses would be any less than Hestia Continent. Even chosen disciples from holy grade clans are no match for our geniuses!”

The warriors from Golden Continent had incredibly dark looks on their faces. They were not willing to admit that the other worlds had geniuses that could compete with their own.

They would be greatly impacted by that. They were incredibly prideful, so they would not be able to accept it.

However, even if they could not accept it, they could not voice out their arguments that loudly as well. After all, Wilde and Lester were still bitterly struggling on the Red Sun Monument, waiting for death.

They would not be convincing at all.

Nevada sighed and said helplessly, “The Red Sun Monument has both the hundred-and-eighty-meter area and the three-hundred-and-sixty-meter area to fight in. If we want to gain back our dignity, we’ll have to wait until Jackie gets to the three-hundred-and-sixty-meter area to challenge him. We’ll only be able to shut everyone up by winning there.”

Nevada’s words served as a reminder to the warriors from Golden Continent.

They thought about things and agreed with what Nevada said. The situation in front of them would yield no results even if they continued arguing with the third- grade world.

They were forced to wait for the next chance to fight Jackie. They had to win convincingly if they wanted their dignity back.

When Hestia Continent heard what Golden Continent was saying, they suddenly lost their earlier happiness.

A warrior from Compass Pavilion said helplessly, “Even though Jackie’s too strong for any normal person to challenge him, our earlier worries were not wrong either. These warriors from Golden Continent are like flies you can’t chase away…”

“As long as they have their eyes on you, it’d be incredibly difficult to get rid of them. They lost in the hundred-and-eighty-meter area, but there is still the three-hundred-and -sixty-meter area. As long as Jackie reaches that place, the warriors of Golden Continent will definitely challenge him.”

When he said that, he could not help but lament in his heart. He did not know what to do with the situation at all.

Darien sighed as he looked around behind him. He noticed that most of them had worried looks on their faces.

The clans that had a grudge against Jackie had temporarily put aside their hatred. They knew very well that Jackie was their shield and their support. If Jackie lost or fell, it would be disastrous for them.

Chapter 3295
At that moment, everyone with a brain knew that they could not let things drag on like that.

Darien took a deep breath and looked at everyone with resolve.

His voice was steady and powerful, “Everyone, don’t worry. We have to trust Jackie. He has always been someone who does what he says he will. He’s definitely thought about what you’re worried about.”

“He’s not worried at all, so why should we be? What we can do right now is to cheer him on as much as we can. No matter what anyone else says, we can’t falter.”

When the warriors from Hestia Continent heard that, they looked at each other and were silent for a long time. After a while, they all nodded.

That was the only thing they could do at that moment. Other than cheering for Jackie, there was nothing else any of them could do.

Jackie looked at Darien appreciatively. He did not expect Darien to have so much faith in him.

Rudy trusted Jackie so much because he knew of Jackie's skill and attitude after following Jackie for so long. He did not expect Darien to trust Jackie so much even though he had only heard of Jackie.

He laughed and patted Darien's shoulder, telling Darien firmly, "You really are the heart of Hestia Continent. You always make the right choice."

Darien let out a light smile and shook his head, " Jackie's very strong, and he always does what he sets out to do. It's not that I'm making the right choice, it's just that Jackie's given me a lot of confidence."

Jackie was clueless about what was being talked about below. Even if he did, it would not sway him. To him, the Golden continent was not a threat at all. The worlds that would threaten him were at least first-grade worlds. His future challenges would come from first-grade worlds.

To Jackie, what was happening was only an incredibly small annoyance. As long as he wanted to, he could cross it at any moment. Nothing would be threatening at all.

He slowly walked up the Red Sun Monument.

Possibly because the battle earlier had left a deep impression on everyone, no one dared to walk around Jackie. Hence, he got an incredibly large open space around him.

He was not like those warriors who loved to show off. They would try to climb Red Sun Mountain as fast as possible to prove their skills.

Jackie walked very slowly, and every step was firm. It was like he was climbing up a mountain.

Finally, Jackie arrived at the three-hundred-and-sixty meter mark.

The moment he stepped into the place, he attracted a lot of looks. Some crossed their arms as they looked at Jackie in amusement. That was because they knew that Jackie had deeply offended every warrior from Golden Continent.

With how Golden Continent acted, they would definitely not let it off easily. As long as there was a chance to gain back what they lost, they would seize it.

Chapter 3296
Of course, Jackie knew that very well, but he did not care whatsoever. He did not bother what everyone was talking about nor if anyone else saw him. As long as no one obstructed him, he would continue moving forward.

Finally, when Jackie arrived at the area, a black-clothed man blocked his path.

Jackie looked up and saw a resolute face. He raised an eyebrow with not much expression on his face.

The man looked at Jackie coldly. He looked like he wanted to stab Jackie a thousand times.

A few moments passed and Jackie still refused to speak.

In the end, the man could not help but say, “ Jackie, right? Let me introduce myself since you’re about to die in my hands. It would be disrespectful if I let you die without doing anything. I’m called Intet Kayn. I’m a chosen disciple from the White Phoenix Clan.”

“Those two pieces of trash are lost to you because they’re just complete trash. Don’t think that you can show off in front of Golden Continent just because of that insignificant victory.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow.

Intet was obviously someone with ill intentions. He had directly labeled Wilde and Lester as trash. At the very least, they were chosen disciples too.

Jackie had probably been too obvious with his blank expression, and Intet immediately understood what Jackie was thinking.

He snorted and said, “The two of them were just trash. It means nothing that you get rid of them so easily. They were at the last two places among chosen disciples. In my eyes, they were no different from inner disciples. I’m in fifteenth place. I’m more than enough to deal with you!”

“Don’t think that you’re unbeatable just because you beat the last-placed chosen disciples. The difference between chosen disciples is huge. Other than the last two pieces of trash, each place is drastically stronger.”

When Jackie heard that, he merely thought that Intet talked too much.

He just wanted to prove how much stronger he was compared to Lester and Wilde by saying all of that. He wanted Jackie to not look down on him which made Jackie roll his eyes in exasperation.

He laughed and said, “You’re so interesting. I haven’t even said anything, and you’ve spouted so much nonsense. Do you think I can’t tell what you’re trying to say? You’re worried I’ll look down on you, so use your skills to prove it. There’s no point saying all of that.”

“In my eyes, you’re no different from Wilde. Even though you’re ranked in the fifteenth place, you’re still from Golden Continent. Unless you’re from a first-grade world, your words are worth nothing.”

The moment Jackie said that Intet’s expression changed.

He was so furious that his hands trembled slightly. He could not believe that he had been insulted like that even after revealing his background. Intet panted roughly as he stared at Jackie viciously.

Jackie was far too used to looking like that. Sometimes, he would see them a few times in a single day.

Unless Intet could not hold back and rushed at him, it was no different for Jackie. The warriors below were shocked by Jackie’s words again.

Everyone was paying attention to everything he said.

Everyone was completely stunned by Jackie’s words. In their hearts, they wondered how Jackie kept on sounding more and more arrogant.

Chapter 3297
This time, even Nevada could not stand it anymore, “This Jackie. Did he let his earlier win get to him? He’s actually looking down on the whole of Golden Continent. It’s like the whole continent is beneath him. How arrogant!”

“That’s right. This guy is crossing the line. Every time I hear him speak, I want to rip his mouth apart. He keeps saying that others were thinking too highly of themselves, but he doesn’t look himself in the mirror!”

“He’s even saying that he only cares about warriors from first-grade worlds. He’s just a warrior from a third-grade world, but he’s acting so arrogantly. If I told anyone what I heard, they’d think that I was making things up. After all, it’s hard to find someone like him.”

Jackie did not care about what was being said below at all. Even if he heard them, he would still ignore them.

At that moment, Jackie was coldly looking at Intet who was in front of him. He saw Intet breathing roughly.

He scoffed as he said in a calm tone, “I’ll say the same thing. If you want to fight, I’ll do it at any time, but I’m very short of time. I don’t want you to waste any of it. I’ve always been someone who acts as I please. You’ll end up just like Wilde. You were the one who asked for it. It has nothing to do with anyone else.‘’

Intet's face twisted in anger at those words. Jackie was crossing the line.

He clenched his teeth and said, "Brat, I was being nice to you. Do you really think I'll lose to you like those two pieces of trash? You should be glad that the two of them underestimated you and didn't attack you together. Otherwise, you would have been ripped to shreds in that area!"

As he said that, his face was completely red. He wanted to rip Jackie apart.

Jackie's lips twitched helplessly, feeling like Intet would not listen to anything he said.

He was actually no different from Wilde. Even after witnessing Jackie's skills, they still thought that Jackie was not that strong. They thought that Jackie had just won out of luck.

If Jackie had faced both of them together, Jackie would not have won. Jackie was speechless at that thought. He did not care what they thought either. In Jackie's eyes, all of them just refused to listen.

He sighed as he did not know what to say to Intet. While Intet felt like he had been greatly insulted, and really wanted to kill Jackie at that moment.

He glared at Jackie, "Brat, you'll pay for what you said. You'll be crying and begging for mercy for just a moment! I won't give you any mercy even if you kneel down and beg!"

Jackie laughed as he said in exasperation, "I'll remember what you said. Let's see who'll be the one begging for mercy."

Intet's lips twitched, feeling like he no longer wanted to argue with Jackie. He would probably die from anger if they continued!

Chapter 3298
In Intet's heart, he was no match for Jackie when it came to words, but Jackie was definitely no match for him when it came to actual skills.

Jackie had easily killed Wilde and Lester, but he could do it as well. That was why Intet felt like Jackie was just a little stronger than Wilde.

He took a deep breath, already eager to see Jackie begging for mercy. He formed seals with his hands, and four long-haired deities condensed behind him. He was using the Nine Cloud Annihilation as well.

Nine Cloud Annihilation was a specialty of the White Phoenix Clan. Anyone who's strong would fight to learn the technique.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at the four deities behind Intet.

Just from the number of deities, Inter had managed one more than Wilde. However, it was still nothing to Jackie, because the Nine

Cloud Annihilation was still just a lower ultimate god rank technique in the en while Destroying the Void was truly an upper ultimate god rank technique.

Unless Intet was using a storm god rank technique, he would be no match for Jackie.

Intet let out an angry roar as he clasped his hands together. A shocking power poured into the sword in his hand. Intet widened his eyes, veins evident in them, and shouted, “Die!”

As he slashed his sword, the white slash turned a meter long, flying right at Jackie.

Jackie let out a laugh, judging that Intet was already at the second stage of the technique.

No wonder he spoke so arrogantly. There were probably less than ten disciples at that stage in the whole White Phoenix Clan. In truth, the chosen disciple rankings were no longer that accurate. After all, the whirling World had been open for almost half a year.

They were geniuses from their respective worlds, frantically growing after entering the Whirling World. If another ranking battle happened, there would definitely be changes. Intet might even be in the top ten spots.

Fighting Jackie, Intet was incredibly proud, but he did not dare to look down on Jackie. After all, he knew that Jackie had not shown his full strength earlier. So, Intet did not hold back.

The warriors from Golden Continent widened their eyes when they saw Intet’s true skills.

Someone said loudly, “Oh my! Intet’s already mastered Nine Cloud Annihilation to the second stage! We‘re definitely going to win!”

Even if he had mastered it completely, it would still be no match for Sixty Soul Swords.

Bang!

There was a massive bang, and two slashes clashed in the air. The incredibly bright light obscured their sight once again.

No one could tell what was happening, but they could vaguely hear someone cry out in agony.

Everyone's hearts almost jumped out of their throats. They did not even blink, worried they would miss something. The radiant light only lasted for a few seconds before it dispersed. Everyone could see everything in front of them.

Intet clutched his chest, and his eyes were wide open. His eyes were full of disbelief as his limbs twitched slightly. He was still conscious, but it was too painful.

All he could do was scream.

Chapter 3299
Everyone saw what was happening, and the place fell into a strange silence. Every warrior from Golden Continent was stunned. It was the same result. Even Intet had lost!

There were those of them who had said confidently that Jackie would only be able to beat the chosen disciples lower than the top twenty places, but they had been slapped in the face. Even the fifteenth-placed Intet had been no match for Jackie. Furthermore, Inter had shown off his full skills earlier.

He had clearly improved a lot. All of them believed that Intet was already in the top ten, but he was still no match for Jackie. He had still been killed by Jackie in one strike and they could not accept the fact.

They could still somewhat accept the last placed chosen disciples losing, but even Intet had lost. They could not believe it at all. Some of them felt like they had been slapped in the face several times.

Jackie smirked as he raised an eyebrow to look at Intet, who was twitching on the ground.

He controlled Destroying the Void's power, not destroying Intet's body, allowing him to remain conscious.

He slowly walked toward Intet.

At that moment, Intet had his eyes wide. His body twitched constantly. When he saw Jackie, he shook even harder. Fear enveloped the consciousness he still had, "Don't kill me! Don't torture me! I'm begging you! Don't torture me!"

Even though Jackie was controlling Destroying the Void to not engulf Intet's soul, it was still slowly eating away at it.

The deep, bone-piercing pain filled Intet with fear. He was even hoping for Jackie to kill him with one blow!

At that moment, dignity was nothing. He only wished that Jackie would let him off and not rip apart his soul.

Hearing Intet's begging, Jackie could not help but laugh, "Don't you remember what you said earlier? You told me that I would be the one begging and that you wouldn't forgive me…"

The moment he said that Intet's face paled. He had not believed that Jackie would be able to beat him at all. He felt like Jackie was no match for him whatsoever.

At that moment, Intet wanted to slap himself in the face.

Looking at Jackie's cold eyes, he shuddered. He regretted trying to challenge Jackie in the first place. When he saw what Jackie did, he only thought that Jackie was incredibly despicable.

He had also been very confident in his skills. Ever since he entered the Whirling World, he had made breakthrough after breakthrough. He did not think much of Jackie as well. It was not like Intet' s confidence was unreasonable either.

With Intet's skills, he would have definitely been able to rank within the top five in the White Phoenix Clan, but he did not know that even the top five would not be a match for Jackie.

Jackie looked at Intet and sighed, "Will you be like Lester? Thinking that I was putting on an act and that was the only reason you lost?"

Intet's face stiffened, unable to say anything. He felt like everything Jackie said was like a slap on the face.

Jackie had not been putting on an act at all. He had just been fooling himself the whole time.

Chapter 3300
Only, they were warriors from Golden Continent and kept on thinking that Jackie was just someone unbelievably arrogant. They never expected Jackie to actually have the skills to back it up.

At that moment, the warriors from Golden Continent were acting incredibly strangely. They had constantly been pushed back by Jackie. They were completely mute at that moment, unable to say anything.

They were able to forcibly regain their pride after the first loss, but after a second one, there was nothing they could say.

A warrior from Chaos Continent laughed out loud, shouting at the Golden Continent, "Come on, don't you all love to talk? You were casting so much judgment on Jackie, saying we're all trash? Why aren't you talking anymore? Can you finally tell who the real trash is?"

The warriors from Golden Continent all had sour looks on their faces. Even though they wanted to shout back, they were unable to say anything at all. After all, Jackie had kept on winning. Even Intet had been no match for him. Nothing they said would be convincing.

What caused them to lose all hope was the fact that Jackie had dealt with Intet just like how he dealt with Wilde. It looked like it had not taken much effort at all.

He had defeated Intet with one blow. They were no idiots. They had seen everything clearly. Intet had not held back at all. Even with his full might, he had still been no match for Jackie.

That caused them to despair. They were forced to lower their heads and admit defeat.

Nevada sighed as shock showed in his eyes, “Is Golden Continent really nothing to him?”

The moment he said that, Golden Continent turned even quieter. They thought that Jackie had just been speaking arrogantly because Jackie had never seen how strong the warriors from Golden Continent were, but they had nothing more to say.

Jackie’s strength had exceeded their imaginations.

It was as if Jackie could deal with anyone incredibly easily. They were unable to see how strong Jackie was at all. Darien’s fists were tightly clenched as he looked incredibly emotional. The stronger Jackie was, the safer the rest of them would be.

It was just like Jackie had said, if the warriors from Golden Continent wanted to take revenge on the warriors from Hestia Continent, they would need to consider Jackie’s anger first.

A disciple from Unbreaking Pavilion said, “I thought that I had a good idea of how strong Jackie was, but he’s actually even stronger than I thought. The fact that Hestia Continent managed to produce someone so strong is a blessing!”

At that moment, the warriors from Hestia Continent started to be thankful. They had thought that Golden Continent had forced them into a corner, but Jackie’s strength had appeared to save them.

They knew very well that they would not be bullied anymore as long as Jackie was still around. Every single warrior from Golden Continent would be fearful of Jackie.

The pain was slowly eroding Intet’s sanity. At that moment, he was already on the verge of no longer being able to say anything. He merely shouted out in agony. He was in too much of a pathetic state.

Quite a few people looked away. Intet used the last of his strength to plead to Jackie, “Let me go! As long as you let me off, I’m willing to do anything for you. Even if you’re not willing to let me go, please just kill me!”

Intet was already resigned to his fate.

Jackie might not let him go, but at least he might not have to die so painfully. His soul was being eroded constantly. His whole body was twitching at the pain of his soul being ripped apart.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3301 - 3310 -

Chapter 3301
Intet would accept anything, so long as Jackie ended this face-off quickly.

Jackie let out a laugh as he calmly said, “Let me ask you this… If the person on the ground was me right now, would you spare me a sliver of mercy? Answer me truthfully.”

Jackie’s tone was calm, but Intet could tell how apathetic was. If the positions were switched and it was Jackie on the ground instead of him, he surely would not grant him mercy.

He would not, for sure.

Jackie had constantly challenged and embarrassed the Golden Continent before this, and it was something no warrior from the continent could accept. Furthermore, they were proud and aloof. As long as they got the chance, they would not spare Jackie easily.

They would make sure he suffered the cruelest punishment in the world, to the point he would beg for death. Just thinking of this, Intet lost all hope.

Jackie’s intentions were clear; he would treat everyone how they treated him.

Intet’ s breathing sped up as hopelessness dulled his eyes. After a brief silence, he suddenly raised his hand to hit his head, wanting to end himself.

Jackie wanted to torture him, so it would be better for him to end himself so this torment would all end. However, Jackie seemed to have seen through his intention as he swiftly swung his sword and cut Intet’s arm from slamming against his head.

Intet no longer had any way of killing himself.

Intet looked up hopelessly. “You’re far too cruel! I can’t even kill myself? I’ll make sure to haunt you even when I die, Jackie!”

To this, Jackie merely smirked aloofly. “I hear this very often. If these curses actually work, I’d be dead by now. ”

After Jackie said that, he slowly got up.

Just like before, he no longer looked at Intet as he continued to advance, his steps firm and resolute.

Everyone swiftly made way for him as they gazed at him as though he was a god that could not be toppled. In their eyes, they looked at Jackie in a different light and would agree with everything he said. Even if Jackie said he was from a first-grade world, they would probably believe it.

A warrior from the Golden Continent said, " Jackie's just too cruel. I thought he'd show some mercy. Since those three are already dead, I thought he wouldn't continue torturing them, yet he didn't even give them a chance to end their own lives, just torturing them like this. Jackie's a demon!"

The moment this was said, the other worlds immediately fought back.

A warrior from the Hestia Continent retorted, "You truly are pigs. All you know is to look down on others. If Jackie was the one on the ground, would you guys from the Golden Continent let him off easily? You guys are the crueler ones and he's just behaving like you, yet he's the demon?"

Chapter 3302
A few among the crowd agreed with what the warrior from the Hestia Continent said.

A warrior from the Chaos Continent sneered as he said, "The warriors from the Golden Continent sure love their double standards. Only they're allowed to have prodigies and not other worlds. Only they're allowed to be cruel, and no other worlds can. Jackie did exactly what they did, but they see it as some heinous crime. It's like Jackie's a demon straight out of hell. What a joke!"

A verbal riot broke out in the area near the Red Sun Monument as they jeered at the Golden Continent. Even wandering warriors from Hestia raised their voices and cursed at the Golden Continent's warriors, calling them shameless and despicable, to which those from the Golden Continent heard it all.

The warriors from the Golden Continent were forced to lower their heads and accept everything. After all, they would just get laughed at if they tried to be stubborn at that moment.

Jackie did not care about the arguments that were happening below at all.

He only had one thought in mind at that moment, which was to climb the Red Sun Monument and get the golden badge.

He already had the black iron badge and the bronze badge. If he got the golden badge, he would have gathered all three. Even though the rules did not say what he would achieve if he managed to get all three badges, he had a feeling it would be something noteworthy. Jackie would even manage to get other valuable items in each area he crossed.

After half an hour, he arrived at the 420-meter mark when he suddenly felt the ground beneath him heating up before a ray of light shot up in front of him.

Jackie looked down and noticed that five million spirit crystals had suddenly appeared in front of him. He let out a smile.

Warriors who arrived at the 420-meter mark would receive five million spirit crystals. If he continued for another 30 meters, the Red Sun Monument would award him with five million spirit crystals and an eighth-grade pill.

Jackie took a deep breath and placed the spirit crystals into Mustard Seed.

He had accumulated quite a bit of wealth as he had about 40 million spirit crystals in total. Even chosen disciples of ninth-grade clans did not have as much as him!

However, it was still far from enough. If he wanted ninth-grade crystals, he would need even more.

He sighed as he continued upward.

Back at the foot of the monument, the discussions about Jackie's skills slowly dwindled.

They started to talk about how far Jackie would be able to climb. To regain a fraction of their dignity, the Golden Continent's warriors started to demean and belittle him.

"I admit he's very strong. He's probably able to place in the top ten of a holy-grade clan. Even so, he'll only be able to get to four hundred and eighty meters at most, no higher. After so long, only three people have managed to climb to the peak and obtain the golden badge."

"No matter how strong Jackie is, he'll never be able to face someone at the top three of a holy- grade clan. It's not like I'm trying to insult him, but he came from a meager place. He's a warrior from Hestia, and all of us know what Hestia's overall strength is like. They're at the bottom of third-grade worlds. Jackie being able to have those skills is already a miracle…"

These opinions were agreed on by all the warriors from the Golden Continent.

They started to add oil to the flames and said that Jackie would never be able to reach the peak. Even being able to reach the 480-meter mark would be a huge accomplishment.

A warrior from the Azure Clan said loudly, "Don't think that we're trying to insult Jackie. We're just saying things as it is. Just look at the four-hundred-and-twenty meter area. Only ten people from the Hestia Continent have managed to reach there…"

“Two hundred people from White Marsh Continent managed it, and three hundred and twenty-five from Chaos Continent got in. The Golden Continent already has over six hundred, so the overall strength of each continent is obvious here. That’s why we say that Jackie has a limit to how strong he can be. There’s no way he’s stronger than every warrior in the Golden Continent!”

Chapter 3303
After saying that, a warrior from the Golden Continent behind him said, “The four-hundred-and-twenty meter mark is just the start. Just look at the four-hundred -and-fifty meter mark. not a single warrior from Hestia got there. Only ninety-one warriors from White Marsh Continent entered…”

“The Chaos Continent only had a hundred-and-twenty-one, while three-hundred-and-nineteen people from the Golden Continent got through! There are fewer and fewer the more you look up.”

“At the four-hundred-and-eighty-meter mark, no one from Hestia entered, two from White Marsh Continent entered, and five from Chaos Continent got through. There were twenty-one from the Golden Continent! If you’re talking about the five-hundred-and-ten meter mark, there are only three. Not a single person from the third grade worlds reached it. Only three warriors from the Golden Continent managed to get there!”

Numbers and the truth were the most convincing, and the arrogance of the Golden Continent that was once suppressed only grew from then on. Even though Jackie had stunted their sharpness, the Golden Continent’s overall power was plain for all to see. They were strong, and there was nothing that could change this.

Only three people had been able to climb to the peak of the Red Sun Monument, and all of them came from the Golden Continent.

The warriors from the third-grade worlds had all stopped within the 480-meter area, and they had nothing to say about it. There was no way they could argue.

Darien sighed at the truth. He raised his head and said, “Even if he can’t get to the peak, Jackie’s results are inspiring enough. Being able to get to the four-hundred-and-eighty meter mark is something warriors from Hestia haven’t been able to do. We’re all proud of him!”

The warriors from Hestia all agreed with him when he said that. To them, the 480-meter area was something they could only look at. There was no way they could ever get there.

No warriors from Hestia even got to the 450-area mark. Rudy merely watched on quietly. No matter what anyone else said, Rudy still believed in Jackie. He knew Jackie would be able to reach the peak, and his faith in Jackie would not waver no matter what anyone else said.

Time slowly ticked away, and Jackie finally stepped into the 480-meter area, and the Red Sun Storm was incredibly intense there. It raged so forcefully that Jackie could barely steady his footing.

The frantic energy rained down on the participants' bodies. It was not something ordinary warriors were able to handle.

Jackie took a deep breath before he started to circulate his true energy to shield himself against the storm.

The tempest truly was intense, but it did not affect Jackie that much. After all, Jackie did not just have Destroying the Void, an upper-ultimate god rank technique, but the storm-god rank technique, Soul Sky as well. These two techniques meant that the storm could not harm Jackie at all.

Jackie did not stop as he continued onward, neither slowing down nor hastening his steps. Even other warriors that were climbing the monument stopped to look at Jackie wide-eyed.

Everyone wanted to see Jackie's final results. They wanted to see where Jackie would stop.

Since Jackie had not slowed down at all, the warriors from the Golden Continent could not take it.

A warrior from the White Phoenix Clan, with a sour look on his face, said, "How is this guy putting up such a good act? Is he not affected that badly? His footsteps never seemed to slow down. He's been advancing at the same pace as though the Red Sun Storm isn't affecting him at all."

Nevada felt a chill shoot down his back when he heard that. The longer it went on, the less willing he could accept the truth.

Jackie never seemed to be one for exaggeration.

Was he really that strong that only warriors from first-grade worlds were comparable to him?

Did he not care about the Golden Continent's warriors at all?

Chapter 3304
It was the scariest thing for them. Jackie never slowed down at all as he climbed the Red Sun Monument, and he barely reacted as well. It was as if the Red Sun Storm did not affect him at all.

Other than Jackie, everyone else would adjust their pace or slow down as they climbed the Red Sun Monument due to the strength of the Red Sun Storm. They would stop midway to regain their strength to continue climbing.

Jackie, however, never once stopped except when he would fight others. When they fought, not only did they need to use their true energy to fight each other but to withstand the Red Sun Storm as well.

His earlier battle had left a deep impression on everyone, causing them not to notice that the Red Sun Storm did not seem to affect Jackie at all.

A warrior from the Golden Continent sneered, his lips twitching as he did, “He’s just crazy. This guy is never normal in anything he does; he never ceases to shock us. Do you think he’s doing this to show off?”

After he said that, a warrior from the Golden Continent beside him immediately agreed. It was because Jackie had greatly impacted them.

Jackie had completely embarrassed them, so praising him would just be pouring cold water onto themselves. As long as they had the chance to insult Jackie, they would not let it slip.

“You’ re right. Jackie’s just not normal at all. I admit that he’s strong, but he loves showing off, too. I’m not trying to insult him or anything, but just think about what he’s said before this. No matter who he’s fighting against, he loves to irk his opponent, asking the other person to not waste his time.”

“Normally, anyone who says something like that is just trying to show off. He wants others to think that no one is worth his time. I acknowledge his skills, but I can’t say anything about his character. There’s nothing to be proud of for being strong. Being strong and being respected is what’s amazing. I won’t respect someone like this.”

As that person spoke, he rolled his eyes at Jackie’s back, but his words were met with angry retorts from warriors from third-grade worlds.

A warrior from the White Marsh Continent shouted at the warriors from the Golden Continent, “Do you have nuts for brains or something? It’s like you’re just saying anything that comes to your mind. You’re even saying that you’re not trying to insult him! Is Jackie wrong at all?! He told them not to waste his time because he never regarded them as worth his notice at all.”

“To Jackie, all three of them were just ants and barely posed a threat. There was nothing to say to them. Those three refused to back down and insisted on arguing against Jackie, spouting nonsense as they did. Even I felt annoyed listening to them!”

”That’s right! They don’t care about what they’re saying at all as long as they’re insulting Jackie. You warriors from the Golden Continent have no right to talk about respect at all. Before you speak, can you think about what you’ve done before this? Is it worth any respect?”

“If you hadn’t challenged Hestia and forced them into the corner, how could all of this have happened? Those three wouldn’t have been tortured so badly, watching as their lives slowly slip away. Those three had it coming!”

Chapter 3305
The warriors from Hestia Continent could no longer stomach such unjust treatment.

They wanted to keep a low profile, knowing they were supposed to be the weakest among all the worlds there, but there were times they had to stand up for themselves.

An inner disciple from the Scarlet Pavilion walked forward, his posture straight, as he looked at the warriors from the Golden Continent.

He shouted out, ”Are you really such sore losers? Fine, the Golden Continent’s overall strength is noteworthy, and you’re the strongest out of the four worlds here, but don’t forget that this is a level six city. There are still level five and four cities after this, and you’ll meet even stronger worlds. Will the Golden Continent still be able to act like this without any fear?”

“Don’t do unto others what you don’t want to be done unto you. You should show more restraint!”

The warriors of the Golden Continent glowered at these words that evidently struck a nerve.

A bulky warrior from the Golden Continent immediately looked over and glared at that inner disciple from Scarlet Pavilion fiercely.

“Who do you think you are, you brat? How dare you try and lecture us? We’ll allow Jackie to act arrogantly because he has the skills to, but this doesn’t mean just anyone can piss all over us! You should be happy that we can’t attack you right now, or you’d already be a corpse!”

After he said that, the other warriors from the Golden Continent looked at that warrior with the same cold gaze.

That person’s lips twitched as he took a step back.

Darien sighed helplessly as he pulled that person behind him, glared at that inner disciple, and whispered, “The Golden Continent’s warriors are all incredibly narrow-minded. They’ll remember you if you say something like that.”

Rudy walked over to Darien's side.

He looked at the warriors of the Golden Continent with a cold gaze as he sneered, "He's right, though. You were a bit too anxious. After all, this is probably the only place you'll be able to show off. If you continue forward, you'll meet even stronger second-grade worlds. If you compete against them, you'll end up in the same difficult situation."

Rudy did not know them, but they remembered that he was always after Jackie. They would not stomach any harsh words from anyone else, but they were silent when it was Rudy, ignoring it.

Rudy let out a laugh as he felt thankful that he could show off, all because of Jackie. He never doubted his decision to be by Jackie's side.

At that moment, Jackie was already at the 480-meter mark. His speed had not changed at all.

He took a deep breath as he frowned slightly. The moment he reached the area, the power of the Red Sun Storm seemed to be several times stronger.

Truth be told, Jackie already felt the Red Sun Storm growing stronger at the 450-meter mark, but he could still handle it. This time, it was far less bearable.

He was forced to use the true energy in his body, forming seals to condense Soul Swords to shield himself from the storm.

Chapter 3306
There were 60 Soul Swords in front of Jackie' s body, serving to reduce the power of the Red Sun Storm.

Jackie's actions elicited gasps of surprise.

A warrior from the Golden Continent could not help but lament, "He's finally using his techniques to stop the Red Sun Storm. If he didn't do that, I'd start wondering if the storm was avoiding him."

"In the end, he's not a god. No matter how strong he is, there's a limit. How strong do you all think his technique is?"

The moment that was said, everyone started to get curious. They could not resist discussing it. Most of them felt like Jackie should be using a lower ultimate god rank technique, which was why he was too strong even for Intet.

It was simple, Jackie had already reached the third stage of the technique. However, there were those of them who did not agree.

A warrior from the Chaos Continent said, “I think Jackie’s using a middle ultimate god rank technique. If you want to master a lower ultimate god rank technique, you won’t just need talent but a lot of time. Ultimate god rank techniques aren’t that simple.”

“If you want to master a technique, you’d need a lot of enlightening. Even if Jackie’s talents are monstrous, he’s still young. Unless he learned the ultimate god rank technique at an incredibly young age, there’s no way he’d be able to reach perfection!”

The man seemed incredibly sure of what he was saying, and it caused the others to ponder his words.

Slowly, about a third of them believed. They felt like Jackie was using a middle ultimate god rank technique. However, there were those who thought that the idea was far too absurd.

A chosen disciple from the Azure Clan frowned and said, “Aren’t you putting that guy on too high of a pedestal? Don’t you know what a middle ultimate god rank technique means? Only a genius at the very peak would be able to use one. Your reasoning seems a bit logical, but it’s still very absurd.”

“Mastering a lower ultimate god rank technique does need a lot of time and effort, but there are exceptions. Jackie might just be incredibly lucky and had a sudden moment of enlightenment, but a middle ultimate god rank technique is different.”

”Most geniuses of our age won’t be able to use one at all. Don’t think that a lower ultimate god rank technique is just one level lower than a middle ultimate god rank technique. Mastering a middle ultimate god rank technique needs you to have a deep understanding of the workings of heaven and earth. Without a certain realm, you can’t even begin to attempt it!”

“You’re right. All of them have just been blinded by the skills Jackie has shown, thinking that he’s unbeatable. All I can say is that you’re all ignorant. He’s not the only strong person in town. Third-grade worlds might not have many who are as strong as Jackie, but they’re all over the place in the Golden Continent.”

Chapter 3307
“We’ve seen so much more than all of you, and we can make better judgments. Don’t think that your meager bits of knowledge will be enough for you to be so sure about anything!”

“They don’t know how difficult middle ultimate god rank techniques are. One of my seniors tried to learn it before but was unable to do anything. His talents are among the top of the Golden Continent. If Jackie could do it, he’d be able to do it too. Alas, he was completely out of ideas when it came to a middle ultimate god rank technique.”

“There’s nothing that can be done about it. Third-grade worlds and second- grade worlds have an evident gap between them. If not for the Whirling World, they’d never be able to interact with us. These fools keep insulting us by saying we’re at the bottom of second-grade worlds, but even if we’re not highly ranked, we’re still one. What we’ve seen and what we know isn’t something any of you can compare to.”

When the warriors from third-grade worlds heard that, their expressions soured. They were once again angered by the warriors from the Golden Continent.

A warrior from the Chaos Continent growled, “You say that you know more than us, but why do you keep making the wrong judgments? Didn’t you repeatedly say Jackie would lose? You kept on saying that Jackie was no match for even the likes of Wilde.”

“Yet, what’s the outcome? Is Jackie the one on the ground? Stop trying to suppress us with those words. Just think about what you’ve said before this compared to the truth.”

No matter how many arguments there were, it did not affect Jackie at all as he zoned out from listening to the unnecessary commotion. He only had one thought in mind, which was to reach the peak of the Red Sun Monument and obtain the golden badge.

The further he went, the more intense the Red Sun Storm got.

At the last 10 meters, Jackie’s clothes were rustling from the Red Sun Storm. However, he never slowed down and never even stopped to rest.

At that moment, the arguments below the Red Sun Monument reached their peak. The warriors from the Golden Continent were adamant that Jackie could not be using a middle ultimate god rank technique. No matter what anyone else said, they stubbornly refused to listen, all while warriors from the other worlds frantically tried to defend Jackie.

They were sure that Jackie was using a middle ultimate god rank technique and pulled out various forms of proof.

They were getting exhausted talking, but the warriors from the Golden Continent refused to accept it. Right as arguments were reaching a boiling point, a clear voice interrupted all of them.

“ Jackie is at the peak!”

Those words completely silenced the crowd. Even their breathing slowed down.

Everyone looked up toward the peak and saw a resolute figure standing atop with a straightened back, akin to an unyielding tree. They held their breaths, realizing that their arguments meant nothing at all.

Jackie had once again used his skills to prove everything, regardless if he was using a lower or middle ultimate god rank technique. He was someone none of them could beat. Ever since the Red Sun Monument was started, only three people had reached the peak, and Jackie was the fourth.

Just that alone was enough to prove Jackie's talents and skills. He was a genius that stood out amongst geniuses. Even the warriors from the Golden Continent, who wanted nothing more than to put him down, all fell silent.

Jackie's eyes were sharp, and all he heard was the howling wind. He could not hear what anyone was saying at all.

Chapter 3308
At that moment, Jackie stood at the highest point where the Red Sun Storm was the most intense, having condensed 90 Soul Swords to endure the storm.

After a few moments, the peak of the Red Sun Monument started to glow in a reddish-golden light. Right after that, a small badge started to condense in the air, and a glint of excitement flashed in his eyes.

Reaching out and opening his palm, the golden badge fell into his hand. He pursed his lips excitedly as he grasped the badge.

Another light shone through as 20 million spirit crystals condensed in front of Fame. There was a small smile of excitement on his face as he put all those spirit crystals into Mustard Seed.

When he got to 420 meters, the Red Sun Monument awarded him with five million spirit crystals, and at the 450-meter area, he was given another five million and an eighth-grade pill. At 480 meters, he was given a million spirit crystals and a treasure worth 10 million.

When he got to the peak, he got the golden badge, 20 million spirit crystals, and a treasure with an indeterminate price.

Jackie had received a bounty this time. Just from spirit crystals alone, he had gotten 31 million. It had basically doubled his fortune, and he was getting closer to his goal.

He took a deep breath as he patiently waited for the last reward.

After a few moments, another golden glow appeared around him. It was so bright that Jackie had to shut his eyes. Once the light dispersed, a spirited grass appeared in front of Jackie.

When it materialized, the discussions below erupted again.

”Goodness! Is that a Seven Bone Soul Herb? That’s ninth-grade spirited grass worth at least thirty million spirit crystals, and it’s so rare that it’s almost impossible to find in the market!”

”I remember that Jackie’s a soul attribute warrior. With that Seven Bone Soul Herb, Jackie will level up a lot. Sure enough, it’s so frustrating comparing ourselves to others. Those who can get even more resources will only get stronger, while we only get what remains. We’ll never reach their heights.”

“He’s so lucky. The Seven Bone Soul Herb is incredibly valuable. My master tried to get one in an auction years ago but wasn’t able to get it, and he regretted it for a long time. I can’t believe he managed to get something so valuable.”

Everyone was incredibly jealous. Not only had Jackie gotten 31 million spirit crystals, but he even got a soul gem and a Seven Star Soul Herb. The soul gem was what Jackie got when he arrived at the 480-meter mark.

Those treasures were both treasures that were able to improve soul attribute warriors, which Jackie happened to be.

When Jackie walked down the monument, everyone looked at him with different expressions. Before, they had looked at Jackie as though he was a lunatic, but no longer did they look at him in such light. Instead, he garnered looks of respect and fear.

Jackie was already used to it.

After he went down, he exchanged a few pleasantries with Darien, addressing a few matters before he left with Rudy.

Jackie was in no hurry to head to a level five city. He brought Rudy to the inn they were in before. Even though his skills were still exceptional, they would be meeting more geniuses.

Jackie understood that the further they went, the more worlds would be gathered, thus he was in no hurry to leave. He wanted to improve his skills before he thought about anything else. He planned on absorbing the soul gem and the Seven Bone Soul Herb in the inn.

It took Jackie 10 days to fully absorb it all.

With the soul gem and the Seven Bone Soul Herb’s power, Jackie finally managed to condense a Divine Soul. He managed to reach the first stage of the storm god rank technique, Soul Sky.

Jackie happily clenched his fists. If he was somewhere that would allow it, he would have tested out the destructive capabilities of his technique.

Chapter 3309
Every stage of Soul Sky had its name, and the first stage was called the Broken Soul Blade.

Jackie was very eager to see its capabilities.

Rudy sipped his tea as he looked at Jackie's excited expression. He smiled and mused, "I suppose it went smoothly?"

Jackie nodded and smiled, not saying a word.

Rudy straightened his body and looked at Jackie as he said, "Where are we headed next? Will we be going to a level five city?"

Jackie looked up at Rudy before shaking his head seriously, to which Rudy pursed his lips. Even though Rudy had asked, he had been sure that they were headed to a level five city next. However, he never expected Jackie to shake his head in denial.

It surprised him, to be frank. "Are we not going to a level five city? Where are we going, then?"

Jackie did not bother answering Rudy and instead pulled out the three badges from Mustard Seed and placed them together.

The badges suddenly emitted a radiant glow as they surprisingly merged with a crack and turned into a single crystal badge.

Stunned, Ruddy took a deep breath, and his eyes bulged so much that they looked like they could pop out of their sockets.

The badges could be merged?

He stood up and walked over to Jackie, looking at the badge in Jackie's hand with widened eyes.

He pointed at it excitedly and said, "What is this?"

Jackie smirked. Even though he rarely revealed his emotions, he could not help but feel a sense of excitement this time. "This crystal badge can let us go anywhere. It can even send us to a level two city right away."

The moment he said that, Rudy covered his mouth in shock. This meant that they could go wherever they wanted to!

Jackie took a deep breath before he added, "Not only can it go to a level one city, but it can even take to other second and third-grade worlds."

Hearing that, Rudy was so shocked that he was momentarily speechless. “We can go to other worlds? We…We won’t have to return to Hestia? We can go anywhere?!”

Jackie nodded resolutely, his hands trembling from the excitement.

He said as he clutched the badge tightly, ”Based on the normal rules, every warrior that’s still alive when the Whirling World closes will be sent to their original worlds. However, with this badge, we don’t have to do that. We can choose any second or third-grade world we want. We don’t have to return to Hestia.”

Jackie was already tired of Hestia anyway. His goal had been the Valley of Enlightenment, but from what he knew, the valley was not in Hestia but somewhere outside of it.

The entrance to the Valley of Enlightenment was not just in Hestia, other worlds had entrances too. Thus, Jackie did not have any reason to stay in Hestia.

He wanted to see a new horizon, and he knew staying in Hestia would serve him no good.

Chapter 3310
Rudy excitedly walked around in circles. He looked at Jackie before looking at his own hand.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, immediately guessing what Rudy was thinking. Thus, he smiled and said, “If you’re willing to follow me still, I’ll take you along. You just have to make sure you don’t betray me.”

Rudy’s hand quivered, his face reddened a little, and he was shaking from excitement.

His lips moved, wanting to say something, but he could not figure out the words to say.

Jackie laughed and continued, “Are you worried that you might not get used to other worlds, and that Hestia might be safer for you? Yet you still want to see the wider world.”

Rudy lowered his head. Jackie had guessed exactly what was in his mind. He stood still, not knowing what to do or say.

Jackie stood up and patted Rudy’s shoulder, “Just say what you’re thinking and do what you want to do.”

Rudy looked at Jackie emotionally.

After a moment, he finally said, “I’m just worried about my future. I know that you’ll protect me as long as I’m with you, but I’m worried you’ll think I’m useless…”

Saying that, Rudy looked down again, not daring to meet Jackie's eyes.

Jackie smiled as he turned to look into the Whirling World's clear skies.

There was no night and day here, only blue skies above them. However, Jackie knew that everything was just part of a formation. The Whirling World was a massive formation that could only last for two years. After two years, they needed to choose somewhere else to go to.

Jackie sighed as he said seriously, "As long as you don't betray me, you can keep following me. People will always be useful, so you don't have to think too much about it. However, I have to tell you one thing: you're already linked to me. If you go back, you might get taken away if anyone sees you…"

Rudy's expression stiffened.

He pursed his lips, unable to say anything. It was what he was most worried about.

After going through so much, he was a completely changed man. He had put aside all the pride he used to have. After seeing so many strong warriors, he finally realized how vast the world was, and his talents were nothing compared to theirs.

He should have chosen to stay in a small place and live his life peacefully, but if he chose to return, he would lose Jackie's protection. He would also be taken away by larger clans because he was always with him and would, one way or another, make him spill Jackie' s secrets.

He could never go back on his own.

After thinking about it, Rudy finally said, "I'll follow you. I can't go back anymore, anyway."

The more enemies they made, the more Rudy realized that he could no longer go back.

Jackie nodded, patting Rudy on the shoulder wordlessly.

Three days later, Jackie and Rudy stood in front of a massive city gate and quietly looked at the massive sign on the gates.

"So this is Weinhord City!" said Rudy excitedly.

Weinhord City was a level four city. To save time, Jackie chose a level four city over a level five city.

The moment the crystal badge formed, the rules of the whole Whirling World went into his mind, and Jackie had a clear idea of the path forward.

There were a lot of people within Weinhord City at that moment as a few warriors had come from afar. Just the city gates had over a thousand people gathered there.

Rudy looked at the crowd and pointed at it. “I thought that there would be fewer people the further we went, but it’s actually the opposite.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3311 - 3320 -

Chapter 3311
Jackie smiled and said, “That’s because there were only warriors from Hestia Continent at the start. The warriors from the other worlds only came in later on. Slowly, we’ll start to see more and more warriors from other worlds. The Whirling World intersects with a lot of other worlds…”

“I don’t know how many different worlds we’ll interact with. We might even end up seeing warriors from first-grade worlds.”

When he said that, Jackie’s voice trembled slightly in excitement.

The crystal badge had instilled the Whirling World’s structure and rules into Jackie’s mind. He already knew what was waiting in Weinhord City.

After Jackie and Rudy spoke outside the city, Jackie brought Rudy inside.

A massive one-hundred-and-fifty-meter wide array was seen there. There were a few thousand people gathered around it. Two masked caretakers stood in front of the array. They had a pen and paper in hand, as well as many badges.

Jackie and Rudy saw the caretakers recording something when they arrived.

Rudy wanted to ask Jackie what they were doing when they heard an argument in front of them.

A tall, large man with a beard said emotionally, “Aren’t you belittling me too much? A hundred can survive. How are you so sure that I’ll die in there? I’m capable of protecting myself!”

The man next to the bearded man seemed to be his senior. His senior had small eyes and was wearing a green robe.

He said emotionally, “I’m not looking down on you, I’m just worried! Do you know what a slaughter game is? Anyone who takes part is confident in their own skills. Even our chosen disciples might not dare to participate, so what more an inner disciple like you?!”

When the small-eyed man said that, he looked incredibly exasperated. He looked at his junior like he was looking at an idiot.

Rudy raised an eyebrow, whispering, “Slaughter games? What does it have to do with the slaughter gambit?”

Jackie smiled as he patiently explained, “The slaughter gambit is slightly different from the slaughter game. They’re similar in some points. As long as you participate, you’ll go through a slaughter where many will die.”

After saying that, Jackie said in exasperation, “I feel like that hero who created the Whirling World is pretty bad at naming. Can’t he name things a bit better?”

Rudy was in no mood to care about that. He was incredibly excited when he heard that a lot would die.

He pulled at Jackie and asked, “Quickly tell me the rules, I’m so curious.”

Jackie nodded, simply explaining the rules. The slaughter game was different from the slaughter gambit. The slaughter gambit needed ten participants, but the slaughter game needed two hundred and twenty.

After two hundred and twenty participants registered, the slaughter game would start. All of the participants would start killing each other, and the game would stop when the numbers were reduced to a hundred.

Chapter 3312
After hearing the rules, Rudy widened his mouth in surprise, “So you mean a hundred and twenty warriors will die in one go?”

Jackie nodded. Compared to only one being left alive out of ten in the slaughter gambit, the slaughter game had a much lower percentage of dying. Only about half would die. However, the slaughter game would kill off about a hundred in one go. Looking at the numbers was enough to stun anyone.

Rudy took a deep breath as his expression froze, “Isn’t that way too many deaths? Even though only half of them would die, it’s still a hundred people. No wonder that guy spoke like that earlier.”

The bearded man was already getting impatient.

He turned over and faced the small-eyed man, “Hey, you should just relax. Even though my skills aren’t that amazing, I’m quite good at running away and protecting myself. As long as I’m careful, I’ll be able to survive.”

The small-eyed man’s lips twitched as he said with a resigned tone, “Why do you insist on taking the risk?! Honestly, even if your skills were as good as Chaplin, I would still try to stop you! The slaughter game isn’t something you can just fool around with. The moment you enter, no one knows who will die. A lot of it is luck!”

The bearded man scratched his head in frustration, clearly not listening to the small-eyed man. He felt like he was just being nagged and looked down on by the other guy.

The bearded man was feeling more and more frustrated when he suddenly turned around and said, “Hey, let’s not talk about what I’ll encounter when I enter. Let’s just talk about my abilities to escape. It’s the strongest among all of us. Even those weaker than me have dared to enter, why shouldn’t I?”

“For every person I kill, I’d get five million spirit crystals. It’s a whole five million. I worked so hard taking part in other gambles before this, and only managed to get three million in a month. It’s a big chance for us right now. I just need to kill one person to get five million. It would be as much as a whole month worth of work. Why wouldn’t I participate?”

It would have been fine if he did not say that, but the small-eyed man got even angrier when he did.

He no longer bothered to hold back. For the sake of his junior, he had held back some of his words, but his junior was far too stubborn and even doubted his intentions.

The small-eyed man sneered, his voice got colder and replied, “There are so many who have the same thoughts as you. A total of two hundred and twenty people are participating in the slaughter game, and it will only end when a hundred and twenty warriors die. Do you think you won’t be part of the one hundred and twenty?”

“Don’t forget, no matter how good you are at running away, there’s no way you can anticipate who you’re going to meet! Do you think the three other second-grade worlds are weak? What if you meet someone strong from one of them? Do you think your escaping capabilities would still be of any use?!”

The bearded man’s lips trembled, and his expression soured. He had nothing to say to that.

After Rudy heard that, he looked up curiously and whispered into Jackie’s ears, “Weinhord City has warriors from three second-grade worlds?”

Jackie nodded and explained, “There are a total of three different second-grade worlds and ten different third-grade worlds involved in this city. When you first enter the Whirling World, there are countless level nine and ten cities, but the lower number you go, the fewer there are. There is only one level five city.

“Weinhord City is a level four city, and there is only one as well. Of course, that’s because Weinhord City is the only one we can see. The Whirling World encompasses all third-grade and second-grade worlds. The other worlds must be in their own individual Weinhord Cities.”

Chapter 3313
Hearing Jackie’s explanation, Rudy was even more stunned.

He said in confusion, “What do you mean by the only Weinhord City? Other Weinhord Cities?”

Jackie smiled as he explained, “To us, there is only one Weinhord City, but there are actually countless ones. The warriors of these worlds gathered together and can only see one Weinhord City, but there are actually countless others that are open to the other worlds. Do you understand me?‘’

Rudy coughed as he rubbed his nose. In truth, he did not really understand, but he did not know where to start.

He shrugged and explained it in his own way, “So you’re telling me that there are countless Weinhord Cities. All of them are in different places in space and time. They face warriors from different worlds.”

Jackie looked at Rudy with some praise, nodding and saying, “Yes, that’s right.”

Rudy’s lips stiffened not expecting to get the right answer so easily. However, he did not really understand what he was saying either.

After thinking about it, he shook his head and decided to forget about it. He would figure out the answer eventually anyway. As he thought about it, the bearded man and the small-eyed man quarreled again.

After a long time, the beaded man finally said, “I know you’re worried, but that worry is unnecessary in my eyes. Danger and opportunity go hand in hand. If I keep trying to make sure I am safe, I’ll never improve.”

“You‘re right. If I’m unlucky and face someone strong immediately, I’ll just resign myself to my own fate. However, if I’m lucky and careful enough, only acting when I’m sure of the situation, then I have a high chance of succeeding.”

The small-eyed man was even more exasperated when he heard that. He felt like everything he said earlier had just been completely ignored.

He was preaching to the choir, but he could not stop himself from continuing, “The slaughter game is in an isolated space. Everyone will be sent in at random. You don’t know who you’ll meet. You’re right, you will have much higher chances if you’re careful and don’t take any chances, but I don’t think you are this time. If you were careful, you wouldn’t be participating in a slaughter game where you have a fifty percent chance of dying.”

The small-eyed man had known the bearded man for many years and understood him very well. He was just saying that he would be careful.

The moment any profits appeared in front of him, he would forget about anything else. He would not be able to survive if he lost control.

The small-eyed man took a deep breath and said helplessly, “You think I’m looking down on you because I’m stopping you, but I’m doing this for your sake. Once you meet anything dangerous, you’ll realize how sincere I’m being.”

The bearded man wanted to say something else, but the small-eyed man stopped him.

The small-eyed man walked over and said sincerely, “There are three second-grade and ten third-grade worlds in Weinhord City. Both of us are from a third- grade world, and we’re only around the middle of the ten third- grade worlds. There are so many warriors from different worlds here.”

Chapter 3314
“You have no way of telling who’s weak or who’s strong at all. The warriors from second-grade worlds will definitely try to kill as much as they can. After so many slaughter games, the warriors from second-grade worlds always take up the first three spots.”

“If you just look at the warriors from the third-grade worlds, we don’t just have a fifty percent chance to die. It’s as high as sixty or seventy. That’s because the chances of warriors from second-grade worlds dying is much lower than us. Most of the ones who die are from third- grade worlds.”

As he said that, the small-eyed man got emotional.

He frowned tightly, “I know you think you’re very skilled, but everyone who participates in the slaughter game thinks they’ll survive as well…”

“Entering the slaughter game doesn’t just require luck and skill, but smarts as well. If you are to survive, you at least need to excel in one of the three, but I don’t think you do.”

The bearded man’s expression darkened when he heard that.

His lips trembled as he stared with widened eyes, saying angrily, “You’re just looking down on me now! I’m good in all three aspects. You just want to say that I’m trash on every front and that I shouldn’t take the risk.”

The small-eyed man raised an eyebrow, not answering, but that counted as silent acknowledgment.

The bearded man was furious when he saw the response, feeling like he was being underestimated.

He scoffed and turned around, saying emotionally, “Stop looking down on me. I’ll prove myself with my skills! You’re just looking at everything through biased eyes.”

After that, he ignored the small-eyed man and made the decision to participate in the slaughter game. If he managed just to kill two others in the slaughter game, he would be able to get ten million spirit crystals.

It was no small number to him. It would be able to get him a lot of skills and materials. His skills would soar even more. Then, he’d be able to beat his seniors.

With that in mind, the bearded man tuned out everything else. He no longer listened to anyone and was determined to take part.

Rudy looked at the bearded man before he whispered a question after a while, “What are those rankings?”

Jackie turned to look at the transfer array, pointing above it and saying, ”After the slaughter game ends, the space above the transfer array will show a massive scroll. The scroll will show all of the warriors that are still alive, and the names will be listed in accordance with their results. The top three will be able to get even more rewards.”

Rudy took a deep breath, getting excited when he heard, “There are even more rewards?! No wonder so many warriors are so eager to take part even with the fifty percent chance of death.”

Jackie smiled and said meaningfully, “The fifty percent chance of dying is if you count all the warriors together. If you’re just talking about third-grade worlds, the death rate is as high as seventy percent. The slaughter games are a playground for the strong from the second-grade worlds.”

Rudy pursed his lips and shuddered.

He thought about how the warriors from second-grade worlds would constantly attack the third- grade world warriors with their weapons with proud looks on their faces.

Warriors constantly fell to them, and the ground would be full of blood. That was the true allure of the slaughter game.

Chapter 3315
Rudy raised an eyebrow as he pressed his forehead, no longer daring to think any further.

The more he thought, the crueler he felt the world was. He had always said that the world was a place of survival of the fittest before this, but he never truly felt the meaning of the phrase until that moment.

Rudy took a deep breath, “In the eyes of the strong, you’ll feel like all of this is right. However, in our eyes, we just feel like it’s crazy. The world is just too crazy. “Death doesn’t seem to matter in this world at all. No wonder I was too scared to try and survive in a large clan before…”

“The competition is too fierce. It comes with so many corpses, and so many people lose their lives so easily. I don’t want to be one of them, I just wanted to live my life carefully.”

Jackie smiled, not expecting that Rudy would have thought about it so much.

Jackie had felt like Rudy used to just do whatever he pleased using his position, but he learned humility after going through so much. He never expected that Rudy was already so humble that he was content with living a careful life.

The discussions around them caused the place to sound like a market. Everyone was discussing whether they should participate in the slaughter game.

A lot of people were tempted to try it out but were worried that they would be unlucky enough to meet someone strong. However, a lot of them still felt like they should try their luck.

They felt like they would not be so unlucky that they would become cannon fodder the moment they entered, but practically everyone seemed to think like that.

Everyone had the same idea that they were the special ones that would not die. However, Jackie felt that that way of thinking would push them right into their deaths.

Slaughter games were the playground of the strong. The weaklings were only there to be killed.

Weinhord City had warriors from three second- grade worlds. Those warriors would forget about their dignity for the sake of spirit crystals, slaughtering everyone they saw in sight.

For the sake of getting a high ranking in the slaughter game, they would not care about the lives of the weaklings. Their lives were just stepping stones.

Just as Jackie was deep in thought, the caretaker knocked on the desk, “The time is up. Registration is starting!”

The moment the caretaker said that the place became much quieter. Most of them wanted to try it out, but they were too scared to just jump in.

Jackie reached out and patted Rudy on the shoulder, smiling as he said, “Take part in this with me…”

The moment Jackie said that Rudy shook his head vigorously, “Absolutely not! What’s the point of me entering? I’ll just drag you down. I’m not useful at all anyway. I would be too much of a piece of trash if I even dragged you down.”

Jackie smiled, saying nonchalantly, “Don’t worry. Since you agreed to leave with me, I don’t mind if you know some secrets. Just think about you entering as a chance to widen your horizons. The moment you’re in any danger, I’ll pull you into an isolated space.”

By isolated space, he was referring to the Mustard Seed.

Before this, he still had some doubts about Rudy, and Mustard Seed was his greatest secret. His family was stored inside. To prevent any mishaps, he had kept the secret incredibly strictly.

Rudy never realized anything. However, since he had already dragged Rudy into the Whirling World with him, he felt obligated to bring Rudy with him when he left the Whirling World.

Hence, he was forced into figuring out a way to leave. The crystal badge did not show how many people he could bring, but Jackie guessed that he was only allowed to go alone.

Chapter 3316
If that was the case, then Rudy would still need to return to Hestia Continent. However, if he could place Rudy in Mustard Seed, then Jackie would not have to worry about that.

Mustard Seed was a treasure from the Divine Void World. It was an isolated space. If Rudy was placed in Mustard Seed, Jackie would not have to worry about bringing him away.

When Rudy heard what Jackie said, he gaped in surprise.

He was no idiot. He naturally knew that Jackie had some secrets as he excelled at everything. He was much better than everyone else no matter if it was in alchemy or in martial arts. Jackie could no longer be described as just a genius.

He was a monster!

Even geniuses from first-grade worlds were probably only just comparable to Jackie’s level. There was no way a genius like Jackie was someone who grew up in Hestia Continent.

Jackie definitely had an immense secret behind him. However, Rudy never tried to look into that secret, acting like he did not know anything.

It was precisely because of that, that Jackie's trust in Rudy grew. Rudy took a deep breath and nodded vigorously. Since he would not drag Jackie down, expanding his horizons was a good thing.

After an hour, Jackie and Rudy stood on the transfer array with the other participants of the slaughter game.

The moment the array was activated, Jackie placed Rudy in the Mustard Seed to stop Rudy from being sent to a random position like the other warriors.

The transfer did not take that long. The moment it was completed, Jackie was dropped into a forest. The forest was quite sparse, and would not obscure himself. It was easy to look far ahead.

Jackie was not worried to take out the Mustard Seed. Instead, he looked around to see if there was any potential threat. Just as he was looking around, he suddenly heard footsteps.

He looked toward the sound of the footsteps and saw a man in green robes walking over slowly. He had a smile on his face as he stared right at Jackie as if Jackie was easy prey that could be killed at any moment.

The man smiled and raised an eyebrow, "I am Guzman Gomez from the second-grade world, Sacred Water Continent. You're my first prey. As a reward, I'll let you die knowing how you did."

Guzman had a smile on his face. The excitement on his face was incredibly evident. He felt like he was incredibly lucky to be sent right next to a prey.

To most of the warriors from second-grade worlds, the warriors from third-grade worlds were just prey they could kill at any moment.

They needed to kill a lot of warriors from third-grade worlds to place highly on the leaderboards. That way, they would be able to gain a lot of spirit crystals and gain some honor for their own worlds.

Jackie sighed, not having much to say to someone like that.

Since the other party felt like he was prey, then Jackie had nothing much to say about it. Jackie took out his sword from Mustard Seed. He looked incredibly calm, revealing no emotions.

Guzman frowned, not happy with Jackie's reaction at all.

Jackie should have been constantly trembling when Jackie saw him, completely filled with fear, but why was Jackie not reacting at all?

Jackie even slowly took out his own weapon. Guzman was both curious and angered. To him, it was an insult that Jackie was not trembling in fear. He narrowed his eyes and took out his own weapon.

It was a golden chakram. There was a dragon and a phoenix engraved on it, and it emitted strange energy.

It was obvious that the weapon was not cheap at all. However, no matter how strong the weapon was, skills were needed to back it up.

Chapter 3317
Jackie was not the slightest bit threatened. He merely stood in place with a calm expression, waiting for Guzman to make a move.

Jackie's actions infuriated Guzman. He felt like he was being challenged.

Guzman snorted, "Brat, what are you pretending for? Do you think I'll think you're better than you are just because you're acting like this? Stop trying to put on an act. It's useless against me. No matter how calm you act, I'll still kill you in the end."

Jackie' s lips twitched helplessly.

He thought that Guzman would attack faster if he acted like that. He did not want to waste any time with nonsense, but it seemed like he had to. Sure enough, those warriors who thought too highly of themselves never liked to see his calm expression. They felt like he was challenging them.

Jackie sighed in exasperation as he raised an eyebrow and looked at Guzman, "You're just like the rest of them. You just love annoying me with your nonsense. How do you know if I'm putting on an act? Do you think I can't kill you just because you think you're capable of killing me? Aren't you just a warrior from a second-grade world? There's no difference in my eyes."

Jackie was not there to broaden his horizons.

He had the same plan as the warriors from the second-grade worlds. He wanted to get to the top three placings in the slaughter game. Then, he would be able to get additional treasures.

Upon hearing Jackie's words, Guzman widened his mouth in surprise, wondering if he had misheard things. Otherwise, he would not have heard something so absurd.

In Guzman's eyes, warriors from third-grade worlds would never dare to challenge him like that. All of the warriors from third-grade worlds should be self-aware enough to lower their heads to him. Yet, he met such an arrogant one.

His lips twitched as a cold glint flashed in his eyes.

Jackie laughed as he was already used to seeing those looks.

He continued, “You warriors from second-grade worlds sure love to leave marks on your clothes to show off how special you are. Golden Continent’s warriors leave a dark gold pattern, while warriors from the Sacred Water Continent always leave blue clouds. That’ s how you recognized that I’m from a third-grade world.”

“You try your best to show that you’re special. You think that warriors from third-grade worlds are just livestock you can kill as you please, but that’s a hilarious thought in my eyes. Every world has its strong warriors. You feel so pleased with yourselves just because you haven’t met someone truly strong from a third-grade world.”

Guzman’s hands were trembling from anger. That brat was actually lecturing him and humiliating him.

To him Jackie needed to die!

He snorted and said, “Brat, do you know what kind of consequences you will suffer because of this? I planned on giving you a quick death because you’re my first prey.”

“I’ve changed my mind now. Giving you a quick death would be a reward, and I’m taking it back. I will teach you the consequences of offending me!”

Guzman thought that Jackie would pull back after he said that. At the very least, he felt like Jackie would not dare to clash against him. Yet, Jackie actually laughed after hearing that, and the laughter was full of mockery.

Jackie laughed as he said, “I hear these things so regularly. Everyone wants to torture me until I die and have me begging for mercy, but the one suffering, in the end, is always them. I’ll admit that second-grade worlds are a bit stronger than third-grade worlds overall, but the warriors at the peak of third-grade worlds can still get rid of you easily.”

After saying, that Jackie no longer wanted to waste any more time. He did not have a good impression of second-grade worlds after interacting with Golden Continent.

They have always looked down on warriors from third-grade worlds and even felt like third- grade worlds were just full of trash. Even though Jackie did not think of Hestia Continent as his home, he still came into the Whirling World from Hestia Continent.

He needed to help Hestia Continent gain a bit of honor.

Chapter 3318
Guzman never expected that he would be so infuriated by someone from a third-grade world.

He kept on thinking about what Jackie had said just now. It seemed like everything Jackie had said had trampled all over his dignity.

Guzman would not be able to take it even if a warrior from a second-grade world said that, let alone someone from a third-grade world. His hands trembled as he sentenced Jackie to death in his mind.

Jackie was amused by how angry Guzman looked.

He did not continue wasting time. He formed seal after seal with his hands, and ninety Soul Swords condensed in front of him. The gray Soul Swords were neatly lined in front of Jackie, emitting a dim energy.

When Guzman saw that, he was surprised.

He scoffed, “So you’re a soul attribute warrior. Do you think you’re worthy of using it?”

After saying that, Guzman formed seals as well. A radiant glow shone from the golden chakram, and blood-red runes started to surface around it, slowly covering the glow in red. It was as if he had dipped the chakram into a pool of blood.

Jackie raised an eyebrow at that, suddenly understanding why Guzman said that earlier.

He said that Jackie was not worthy of using soul attribute techniques because Guzman was using one too. In Guzman’s eyes, Jackie was not worthy of using soul attribute techniques.

The soul attribute was a noble one, and Jackie was only from a third-grade world, not worthy of being associated with it.

Guzman smiled and said, “Brat, you’ll find out soon what being tortured is like. You’ll regret everything you said earlier!”

The moment he said that, an incredibly monstrous energy came out from the blood-red chakrams.

Red locusts began to condense in the air, and those locusts seemed to constantly distort in the air. It was so dense that it looked terrifying. They seemed to be mutually absorbing each others’ energies.

Jackie could feel dense soul energy coming from those locusts. His expression did not change as he looked at everything coldly.

Guzman was even furious when he saw Jackie's calm expression. He hated people who liked to put on an act.

He swore to himself that he would have Jackie reveal his true feelings. He wanted to make Jackie experience the greatest fear in the world. He wanted to rip Jackie's soul apart to teach Jackie the consequences of offending him.

Guzman shouted out angrily, "Die!"

He pushed forward, and those locusts frantically charged at Jackie. Those locusts were even faster than Jackie thought.

Jackie stood in place with his head held high with no plans of avoiding the locust. He stared right at those locusts charging at him.

Guzman laughed loudly, "You're actually not avoiding it! I guess you really do want to die! Since you want to be tortured, I'll fulfill your wish!"

Chapter 3319
Guzman's hands quickly moved, and countless seals formed between his fingers. The seals quickly fused into the locusts.

The moment they fused with the seals, the locusts let out a radiant red glow. It caused the whole place to be enveloped in that red light, looking like they were in hell.

The red locusts quickly charged right at Jackie.

Guzman coldly looked on as everything unfold. There was a smirk on his lips as he thought about Jackie's demise. In the next second, countless locusts surrounded Jackie, who still stood in place.

Seeing that, Guzman scoffed and said, "I've never seen someone who wants to die as much as you do. The technique I'm using, the Blood Curse is a lower ultimate god rank technique. There's no way useless trash like you have ever touched a technique of this level."

"How would you know how strong it is? Brat, when you're in hell, don't blame me. Blame yourself for being ignorant of how strong second-grade worlds are!"

The moment he said that, he heard a crack in front.

Guzman widened his eyes as a dark light appeared where the locusts were. After that, a stinging sound was heard coming from where the locusts were, sounding like red-hot steel being thrown into cold water.

The next second, he was shocked as his locusts suddenly turned into water after being touched by the black light. They quickly disappeared after that.

In just a few moments, the locusts had completely been extinguished.

Only a few of them managed to stay around, but it was no longer any threat. The locusts all turned into blood-red vapor, causing a mist to form around the area that obstructed Guzman's sight.

He could not see what was happening with Jackie, but there was no need to see anything at that moment. He was just full of disbelief. He could not believe that someone from a third-grade world had broken through his technique.

The next second, Guzman heard a gust of wind. In his years of experience, he dodged immediately and quickly retreated.

A slash was heard, and when Guzman looked over, he saw a gray slash go past where he had just been. It was incredibly quick, and all he saw was an afterimage before the place he had been earlier turned into a deep crater after a boom.

The deep crater sounded like it was being bathed in poison. Guzman broke out in cold sweat when he saw what happened. His heart constantly pounded.

At that moment, he realized that Jackie had been the one hunting him.

After a breeze blew past, most of the red vapor had been blown away. He could see more clearly, and a familiar figure stood not too far away.

Jackie still had his back straight as he held the sword in his hand.

Jackie had not moved at all and merely looked at him quietly, waiting for Guzman to make his move.

Guzman held his chakram tightly as his legs shook from the nerves. However, he did not move at all, looking at Jackie the same way.

Jackie smirked as he said, "It looks like I have underestimated you. I can't believe you reacted so quickly. I thought you would have died after that strike."

Chapter 3320
Those words caused Guzman to pale. He took a deep breath, realizing that he was in a serious situation. He had underestimated Jackie's strength and overestimated his own.

Guzman frowned and said, “You were hiding your skills!”

Jackie felt incredulous when he heard that.

He had just met this person, and they had just fought once, so how did he conceal his skills?

However, Jackie did not want to bother with it.

It was a common problem with all the warriors from the second-grade worlds. As long as their opponents were not pushovers, they would blame their opponents for putting on an act or concealing their skills. It was an attempt to hide the fact that they had made a bad judgment.

Jackie scoffed as he said in disdain, “The fact that you said that just proves your stupidity.”

Guzman’s lips stiffened, unable to say anything back.

Jackie continued, “You said that your Blood Curse was a lower ultimate god rank technique and that someone like me would never have seen it before.”

The moment Jackie said that Guzman’s face darkened. It was like a slap on the face.

The fact that Jackie had managed to break Blood Curse meant that his technique was no lower than a lower ultimate god rank technique. Jackie was not weaker than Guzman either. After all, he had not held back earlier.

He knew very well that Jackie’s skills exceeded his expectations. There was a good chance that he would end up falling there.

Jackie walked forward and got closer to Guzman.

Guzman’s face paled again as he started to retreat.

Jackie smiled coldly when he saw that, “What are you so afraid of? Actually, I was quite happy when you walked forward earlier. I just got here and someone already came to die. You’re just five million spirit crystals in my eyes, so I was quite lucky.”

The more Guzman heard that the more offended he felt. He had been the one who thought that way, but he was actually the ignorant one.

Guzman’s face soured. He was forced to try and escape the situation. He had no confidence that he would beat Jackie. After all, he joined the slaughter game to kill others and earn a high rank, not to be killed and become someone else’s reward.

Guzman tried his best to compose himself, calming himself down.

He looked up at Jackie and raised his voice, “Even though we’ve clashed, it won’t be an easy win for either of us. The slaughter game is filled with danger. You’ll be at a huge disadvantage if you sustain heavy injuries to kill me.”

“With your skills, you can deal with anyone else easily. We should just stop here. You and I can go find weaker opponents. It would be better for both of us.”

It sounded quite reasonable.

If Jackie’s skills were around Guzman’s level as Guzman guessed, then Jackie would really have considered that. A hard-fought victory would be dangerous. However, Jackie’s skills far exceeded his imagination.

Those words failed to sway Jackie’s decision.

He smiled and said calmly, “I’m sorry, I’m not interested in that suggestion at all. Don’t put your own standards on others. I already told you, you’re nothing in my eyes.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3321 - 3330 -

Chapter 3321
Guzman could not hold his anger back after hearing that.

He clenched his teeth and looked at Jackie, raising his voice, “Brat, don’t try to overestimate yourself. I know you’re skilled, but you won’t be able to deal with me that easily at my full strength. Even if I die, I’ll drag you down with me!”

Jackie could not help but laugh when he heard that.

He looked at Guzman with an expression full of mockery, like Guzman was an idiot. He did not want to continue talking to the man.

Jackie wanted to use Guzman to train himself too.

He then took a deep breath before he shut his eyes. His hands constantly moved as he formed seal after seal. This time, his seals were different. They looked much more complicated than before.

A meter-long blade slowly condensed in front of Jackie. It was the storm god rank technique, Soul Sky’s first level, the Broken Soul Blade.

To learn the Broken Soul Blade, Jackie had absorbed countless treasures. They were worth at least seventy or eighty million spirit crystals. Just thinking about it could make hurt someone. However, Jackie felt like it was all worth it when he saw the Broken Soul Blade successfully condensing.

He narrowed his eyes and pushed forward. The Broken Soul Blade flew right at Guzman.

Guzman broke out in cold sweat. Even though his heart told him he could not be afraid, and that he might not lose in a head-on battle, he did not have the courage in the end.

The moment the Broken Soul Blade flew over, he abruptly turned around and fled toward the east.

He no longer cared about his dignity at that moment. Even if news got out and ruined his reputation, he still did not mind as surviving was more important. He did not want to turn into five million spirit crystals in Jackie’s hands. However, the reality was different from the imagination.

He frantically ran away, but he was still a step slow in the end. The Broken Soul Blade was right behind him, and Guzman felt a crazy power right behind him, constantly emanating.

At that moment, he did not even dare to turn around. He focused on running away, but he was not able to at all.

As a piercing sound was heard, a massive pain was felt in his chest. He was shocked to realize that the blade had pierced through his heart from his back. The pain of his soul being ripped apart started to come from his chest.

He was in so much pain that he cried out in agony, unable to control his true energy. He fell to the ground with a slam.

Jackie slowly walked over to Guzman. When he arrived in front of Guzman, he took Rudy out of Mustard Seed.

Rudy had seen everything that had happened through Mustard Seed.

He shook his head in exasperation, “You warriors from second-grade worlds sure love to show that you’re strong than others. You’re always so certain that warriors from third-grade worlds are just stepping stones for you. In my eyes, those thoughts are what kills you.”

At that moment, Guzman no longer had his earlier temperament. He could not tell what was happening around him at all thanks to the pain in his soul. He could only roll around on the ground, trying to relieve the pain.

Guzman had completely lost all his rationality from the torture. He just rolled around on the ground mindlessly.

Rudy shook his head helplessly, feeling like Guzman was actually a bit pitiful.

Meeting Jackie was the unluckiest thing that had ever happened to Guzman.

Chapter 3322
Jackie raised an eyebrow and turned to look at Rudy, “Normally, I’d torture him with the exact method that he threatened to do to me. It’s just a pity that I’m short on time. I don’t really know how much I can earn. Every second I waste might be five million spirit crystals less.”

Right after he said that, he pointed forward, and the blade pushed forward.

Guzman let out a final cry of agony before his body stopped moving.

Jackie said, ”You’re lucky…”

He did not bother sparing the corpse another glance as he brought Rudy forward.

The two of them had walked for some time when Rudy finally broke the silence. “Do you have any plans? I feel like you’re definitely going to aim for the top three standings, but the top three standings don’t care about your skill. It’s down to how many people you kill. Should we figure out a plan to find even more targets?”

Jackie turned to look at Rudy.

He took a deep breath as he looked into the distance, “I did have a plan before this, but the plan has been shelved. I have a new plan now. I won’t kill everyone I see, it’s too cruel. I’ll just keep moving like this, killing whoever tries to do anything to me.”

Jackie said it in a carefree manner, but it was exactly something Jackie would do.

Rudy sighed, really wanting to see who the next unlucky person would be.

Jackie’s skills were enough to beat any participant in the slaughter game. Only tragedy awaited anyone who would dare to challenge Jackie.

Just as he was thinking about it, they heard some commotion in the distance.

Jackie and Rudy both looked toward the source of the sound. They saw two figures charging right at them.

The closer the two of them got, the more Jackie could make out what they looked like. The person in front was a handsome man in dark red robes. However, no matter how good he looked, he was definitely in a bad state at that moment. There were many injuries on his body, and blood constantly flowed.

His pale expression showed pain.

It was obvious that he was being tortured by the injuries. Even so, he still clenched his teeth and rushed forward.

Behind him was someone in blue robes. The person behind him had blue robes with clouds embroidered on the neckline. Looking at that, Jackie knew that the person was from Sacred Water Continent.

The warrior from Sacred Water Continent had a pleased smile on his face as his hands constantly moved, sending slashes at the person who was running away.

Even though the person in front was in a bad state, he still managed to constantly dodge and avoid most of the strikes. However, a few strikes still landed on him.

The blood-red slashes easily cut open his skin, causing the blood to flow out.

The warrior from Sacred Water Continent did not look like he was in a hurry at all. Even though most of his attacks were being avoided, he did not seem to care and seemed to find joy within.

Rudy looked at the scene and grabbed Jackie's arm tightly.

There was a sharp glint in his eyes, "The person behind is doing it on purpose! He's treating the person behind as prey and just playing around. This is too much!"

Rudy's hands shook. He looked incredibly angry at that moment. Even his breathing had sped up.

As the two of them got closer and closer, Jackie was surprised to find that the person in front was wearing robes from Phoenix Valley.

Chapter 3323
After the constant attacks from the warrior from Sacred Water Continent, his robes were incredibly ripped. Hence, Jackie and Rudy had no way to see it from a distance.

Rudy furiously said, "It's actually Alfred Long! I can't believe we're seeing him here! He's a chosen disciple from Phoenix Valley!"

Back when both of them were in Phoenix Valley, the alchemists and martial artists had been separated.

Rudy had never interacted with the warriors before, even though Jackie had. However, at the Hestia Continent's area under the Red Sun Monument, Rudy had seen quite a few chosen disciples from Phoenix Valley.

Those chosen disciples did not recognize Jackie and Rudy and did not know who they were. Jackie had entered and left in a hurry, so he did not recognize any of them even though he had earned their respect.

Rudy was different. When Jackie was climbing the Red Sun, he had gotten to know quite a few of the warriors there since he had been around. So, he immediately recognized Alfred. He still remembered how proud and proper Alfred looked when he first met the man.

Rudy could not believe the state Alfred was in. He was completely covered in cuts and bruises. He looked like he was about to collapse at any moment. However, he still held firm.

He clenched his teeth and refused to give up on running away.

Rudy's hands trembled as his anger burned. Even though he did not really care about Phoenix Valley, he could still not stand it.

He could not stand a chosen disciple from Phoenix Valley being treated like that, and could not bear warriors from Hestia Continent being treated like that either.

The world was cruel, that was something he was acutely aware of. However, he could not bear it when he saw that cruelty in action.

He turned around and grabbed Jackie's arm, "Let's save him. It's too pitiful!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, saying calmly, "It does look pitiful, but it really isn't. Since he agreed to participate in the slaughter game, then he needs to bear with this. It's not a game for children. He'll meet various different kinds of people, and death is unavoidable."

Rudy nodded.

He looked at Jackie earnestly as he said anxiously, "You're right. This place is full of death. The slaughter game is somewhere you need to be prepared to die. I wouldn't have anything to say if he had just been killed."

"But just look at that. He's being tortured and humiliated. I know that he's probably already prepared mentally since he agreed to participate, but he probably never expected these people to be so evil, chasing him around like a cat toying with a mouse, constantly torturing him."

Jackie sighed. In truth, he would have interfered even if Rudy did not say anything. He patted Rudy on the shoulder before shooting forward.

It was only when he felt the gust of wind did Alfred realize that there was someone in front of him.

He widened his eyes. When he saw the person that was in front of him, Alfred's eyes suddenly lit up. He could not help but shout, " Jackie!"

The tone of that shout stunned Jackie. After all, he might have already cut ties with Phoenix Valley, but he was still someone who entered the Whirling World as an alchemist from Phoenix Valley.

Technically, he could be considered a part of Phoenix Valley too.

Chapter 3324
Could that guy know who he was?

That thought was quickly discarded from Jackie's mind.

Rudy and he were not in the main group. Other than a very small number of alchemists, no one would know the two of them. Furthermore, any warriors who managed to enter a

level four city would definitely be a chosen disciple of Phoenix Valley. They would never have had the chance to interact.

That person probably shouted that way because Jackie was the shield of Hestia Continent.

With that in mind, Jackie was already next to Alfred, shielding Alfred behind him.

He looked at the warrior from Sacred Water Continent coldly.

That warrior smirked at Jackie. “You know him? He’s a warrior from Hestia Continent too? That’s great then. I’ll deal with you two together. If not for the slaughter game, you wouldn’t be worth ten million spirit crystals. You should thank the slaughter game for your value!”

The warrior was basically calling Jackie and Alfred trash.

Alfred was already used to it. He had been chased by that person the whole time and had heard various things that person said.

When Jackie heard it, he looked at that person, “I just need one strike to deal with someone like you. I didn’t need to waste my time, but I changed my mind. I can’t just let you die so quickly after what you said.”

Jackie’s eyes were cold. Even Rudy shuddered when he saw that expression.

He could tell that Jackie was angry. They had encountered a lot in the Whirling World, but Jackie rarely got angry.

Each time, the person who angered Jackie would pay a heavy price. However, he did not bother wondering how Jackie would deal with that man.

Rudy rushed over to Alfred and took out a robe from his storage space before putting it around Alfred.

Alfred looked at Rudy tearfully. It was like he found his family. He sniffed and wiped away his tears, “Thank you both! I’ll definitely repay you!”

Rudy stopped him, “That’s not the time for this. Who is that guy? What’s his name?”

Alfred sniffed and turned to look at that warrior hatefully, “That person is called Raul Ochoa. He’s an inner disciple from a holy grade clan. I’m no match for him. I was unlucky enough to meet him the moment we entered.”

“He told me where he was from and attacked me right away. If he just killed me immediately, I would have nothing to say. After all, fifty percent of warriors die in the slaughter game, and it’s even higher for us from third- grade worlds…”

“I came here knowing that I might die, but I can’t believe Raul decided to humiliate me before engaging in this game of cat and mouse. I was chased by him all the way here before I met you two.”

Saying that Alfred looked at Raul with deep hatred.

Jackie sighed as he patted Alfred on the shoulder, “Treat your injuries. Leave everything else to me.”

Chapter 3325
Alfred looked at Jackie full of hope. To him, Jackie was a hero of Hestia Continent.

He was someone unbeatable, so what if he was facing a disciple of a holy grade clan?

Even chosen disciples from holy grade clans were no match for Jackie, let alone an inner disciple.

Rudy helped Alfred to sit up, producing a pill from his storage ring for him. Raul looked at everything with interest. He did not even react when Alfred recovered, allowing them to do so.

He looked incredibly confident as if he was telling the three of them that he was in control no matter what they did. They would not be able to escape him.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Raul with some interest.

Raul walked forward, looking at Jackie, “It looks like you’re quite a bit stronger than that guy.”

Jackie merely smiled, not bothering to respond.

Raul was not annoyed by it and merely said to himself, “Three of you would be worth fifteen million and I’ll be able to get fifteen million in one go. I haven’t even been here for that long, I’m so lucky. As long as I keep up with this luck, I’ll be able to finish in the top ten rankings.”

Jackie sneered as he said, “Sacred Water Continent is a second-grade world. Each warrior from your world looks down on warriors from third-grade worlds just because you have a bit of skill. You always face everyone with that attitude, but it will lead to your death…”

Raul laughed at Jackie’s words, looking at Jackie like an idiot.

He pointed at Jackie and said, “Don’t you think you’re being hilarious? If you came from Chaos Continent, I might agree. After all, Chaos Continent is going to be promoted to a second-grade world soon, but how dare someone from Hestia Continent speak like this?!”

“Where did you get your courage from? It’s not like you don’t know what sort of place Hestia Continent is. Hestia Continent is at the bottom of third-grade worlds. Even if you’re the strongest in the continent, you’re no stronger than a wandering warrior from Scared Water Continent.”

Alfred widened his eyes when he heard that.

He looked at Raul and angrily shouted, “You called me ignorant just now, but it looks like you’re the ignorant one. Don’t beg for mercy later!”

He had been in too much of a rush to speak and ended up coughing intensely. He had been tortured quite a lot while Raul insulted Hestia Continent the whole time.

He said that anyone from Sacred Water Continent would be unbeatable in Hestia Continent.

Alfred was someone who would not allow Hestia Continent to be insulted. He was going to retort, but he had been beaten down by Raul. Yet, he still refused to admit defeat.

He admitted that he was weaker than Raul, but he still had his pride. He refused to lower his head. Jackie’s expression was calm, but a cold glint flashed in his eyes.

Raul laughed even harder as he pointed at Alfred, “You just refuse to admit that the warriors of Hestia Continent are all ants that can be killed easily. I know you’re proud, but so what? Pride is useless to me. Pride is only useful when you’re strong. Otherwise, you’d just look like an idiot!”

Jackie raised his hand to interrupt Raul.

He coldly looked at Raul, “I’ll remember everything you’ve said. Don’t cry later on, and don’t beg for mercy…”

Chapter 3326
Raul pursed his lips in exasperation.

This kid was truly something else…

He initially thought that Jackie was just a brainless fool with how Jackie looked down on him. Surprisingly, Jackie proved to be much worse over time.

Raul narrowed his eyes. “I had planned on torturing both you and Alfred slowly to death, but I’ve changed my mind now. Punishing you as gently as I did with Alfred would be too kind for you, so I have a hundred crueler ways to deal with you. It’s the price you pay for being arrogant.”

Jackie calmly listened to everything he said.

A thought flashed in his head, and he suddenly smirked and said, “I saw you attacking earlier. You were using a soul attribute technique. Are you a soul attribute warrior?”

Guzman had been from Sacred Water Continent and had used the soul attribute as well.

The man in front of him also used the soul attribute, so Jackie could not help but wonder if the Sacred Water Continent had a lot of soul attribute techniques and soul attribute warriors.

Raul raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie with interest, wanting to see what he would say.

Smiling, Jackie said calmly, “What a coincidence; I’m a soul attribute warrior as well and use a soul attribute technique. Since that’s the case, why don’t we compete? If I lose, I’ll give you something. If I win, you’ll give me your treasure.”

Raul did not expect that Jackie would dare to challenge him, and moreover, he could not believe that he was a soul attribute warrior as well. In Raul’s eyes, the soul attribute was sacred.

Warriors that were not talented were not worthy of the soul attribute at all, and all soul attribute warriors were incredibly talented. However, he was forced to revise that opinion.

To him, Jackie was from Hestia and thus had no right to use the soul attribute. However, there was no way Jackie was lying at that

moment.

When he realized that, Raul stared at Jackie unhappily, “Even you can learn the soul attribute?”

Upon hearing this, Jackie could not help but chuckle.

Not too long ago, a warrior from the Sacred Water Continent had said the same thing. Jackie had spoken back at that moment, but when facing Raul, he only felt amused.

After all, that warrior was going through excruciating torture as his soul was being ripped apart at that moment, and it would not be long until he perished.

With that thought in mind, a message suddenly flashed in Jackie‘s head.

The message indicated that Jackie had obtained five million spirit crystals. His eyes lit up as he understood what happened.

It seemed that Guzman was dead, and five million was given to him as a reward for that. Once he left the isolated space, the spirit crystals would appear before him.

Jackie took a deep breath as he stared at Raul with interest. “You’ll know whether or not I’m worthy of the soul attribute soon enough. However, it would be meaningless if we just fight over it.”

“A spatial ring is someone’s personal space. Other than the owner, no one else can open it. The moment that person dies, the spatial ring’s space will collapse. All the treasure inside will turn to dust as the space collapses, leaving nothing behind. However, if we take it out beforehand, it won’t disappear from that. Why don’t we make a bet?”

“I’ll take out a treasure, and you need to take out one of equal value. We’ll treat it as a bet. If you win, you won’t just get to kill me, but you’ ll get my treasure as well. If you die, the same will apply for me. What do you think?”

Chapter 3327
Jackie felt that his funds were far less than forgivable.

Time was slipping away, and a few months had already passed in the Whirling World. The Whirling World was only open for two years, and he would need to return to the real world afterward. Thus, he wanted to gain as much wealth as he could before he was forced to leave.

Even though challenges lurked at every corner of the Whirling World, Jackie felt like it was comparatively safe because of the age restriction.

There was not a single warrior in the Whirling World that could kill him. However, without those restrictions in the outside world, Jackie would truly be in danger. That was why he decided to accumulate as much wealth as he could before he had to leave.

Raul’s lips twitched in exasperation as he truly believed Jackie was incomprehensible. This man did not seem to show any emotion at all when he spoke!

Yet, Raul could still feel the pride behind Jackie’s words. It was as if no one in the Whirling World was worth his notice, much to his chagrin.

Raul wanted to personally shatter that very pride so he would know how the world truly worked.

With his meager skills, Jackie would not be able to even challenge him, let alone all of the warriors in the Whirling World.

Raul nodded and said, “Since you want to offer me your treasure that badly, I’ll agree to it. How about this, whatever the value of the treasures you take out, I’ll take out treasures worth twice as much.”

When Jackie heard that, he smirked as he looked at Raul.

He knew that Raul decided on this because he wanted to show off his wealth, but Jackie did not mind. He would let Raul show off as much as he wanted to. After all, the more Raul showed off, the better.

This way, Jackie would be able to get better things.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at the treasures he had accumulated in Mustard Seed. After looking for a long time, Jackie realized in exasperation that he could not find anything noteworthy at all.

He had used up most of his treasures to practice Soul Sky, thus having used up everything of value he had.

What remained were just spirit crystals and treasures that did not amount to much. He would naturally not be able to take those things out.

Thinking about it, Jackie pursed his lips and took out thirty million spirit crystals, placing them in front of him. Everyone except for Rudy was stunned by the sight.

Raul raised an eyebrow as he looked at Jackie exasperatedly, proudly remarking, “These are your treasures? Thirty million spirit crystals?”

Jackie coughed awkwardly. He had shown it anyway, so they could think what they wanted to.

Jackie cleared his throat and said, “I’ve sold all my treasures recently, and the most valuable thing I have are these spirit crystals. It’s a handsome sum nonetheless, and it’ s easier to make a judgment. Didn’t you say you’ll put in double the value of whatever I take out? I’ve taken out thirty million spirit crystals, so you need to put out at least sixty million.”

Chapter 3328
Raul cackled as he cast Jackie a disdainful look.

Jackie, on the other hand, merely inhaled deeply and ignored his blatant mockery.

Alfred and Rudy were actually not too surprised at what was happening. The two of them knew who Jackie was.

In Alfred's eyes, Jackie was not from any clan either. He was a wandering warrior that relied on his skills and talents. Rudy, of course, knew Jackie better, and he knew that the most valuable things in Jackie's storage were those spirit crystals. He had used up everything else that was valuable.

Raul took a good few seconds before he could compose himself after his laughter.

When he finally stopped, he looked at Jackie tauntingly before he retrieved a box from his storage ring. He slowly opened the box, and the dense smell emanated.

Everyone's eyes widened at the sight.

Alfred stiffened and said somewhat excitedly, "Is this… An Azure Soul Fruit?"

Raul nodded proudly. "The Azure Soul Fruit is a holy-grade fruit worth at least seventy million on the market. It's a treasure my master gave me. It's not something I'd show to just anyone, but I wanted to let you take a look today."

The Azure Soul Fruit was worth even more than the Enlightened Soul Root, and it was something difficult to come by, even with the spirit crystals in hand.

Compared to spirit crystals, Jackie needed things that could boost his soul attribute even more.

Jackie inhaled deeply as he suppressed the excitement he felt. "I'm impressed. You truly are a warrior from the Sacred Water Continent. You definitely have the assets!"

Jackie would not praise just anyone, so Rudy raised his eyebrow curiously when he heard his remark.

He could not help but smirk, knowing that it was solely because of the Fruit.

Jackie could barely wait to start, and the same went for Raul as well. The two of them had talked for so long and even brought out something good to gamble on with.

He took a deep breath as his hands constantly moved to form seal after seal.

Storm god rank techniques no longer relied on weapons to be used. The higher grade the technique was, the more redundant weapons were.

Multiple seals formed before Jackie, and they glowed in a faint dark color the moment they were formed.

They quickly merged with the other seals around them, forming stronger ones. In just a few moments, a blade appeared in front of everyone.

It was the Broken Soul Sword!

If anyone was to look at it closer, they would see that seals were floating around the Broken Soul Blade.

Raising an eyebrow, Raul used his divine senses to look into the blade, and he was shocked to notice that immense energy was circulating the blade. It was obviously not going to be easy to deal with.

He raised an eyebrow as he felt the early signs of nervousness creeping into his mind. However, he quickly squashed the feeling and told himself that he was just being too careful.

Even if Jackie was somewhat talented, he was, at the end of the day, just a man from Hestia. Hestia sat at the bottom of third-grade worlds, and their people could never compare to those in the Sacred Water Continent.

With that very thought, Raul snorted and formed seals with his hands.

Seconds later, a bountiful energy was condensing behind him.

Chapter 3329
With Raul as the center, his surroundings started to dim as though night was falling.

A blood-red moon slowly rose behind him, staining the darkness in red.

Raul scoffed. “I plan on ending this quickly so you’ll know what being truly strong means!”

Raul had planned on going easy instead of showing his full strength, but he changed his mind the moment he sensed the dense energy in the Broken Soul Blade.

He was worried that something unexpected would happen. Even though it was incredibly unlikely, it was better to be safe and merciless than sorry.

Raul let out a shout as his hands moved again. The sun behind him started to turn into a blood-red blade. Like an arrow, it shot right at Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow before he slowly pushed forward, sending the Broken Soul Blade toward Raul at an imperceptible speed.

The two techniques clashed in the air, and as a result of the collision between the black light and the strange red hue, their surroundings darkened. Even though the lights were not bright, this still obscured their sight.

Everyone merely watched as it cracked.

A second later, a pitch-black blade shot right at Raul's chest at blinding speed.

To end the battle quickly, Jackie used the laws of space on the Broken Soul Blade, speeding it up even more.

Raul never expected that the Blood Moon Slash, the technique he harbored great pride in, would lose to Jackie's technique, and so quickly at that. He did not have the chance to react at all as The Blood Moon Slash failed to mitigate the Broken Soul Blade for even half a second before it shattered and disappeared into the air.

"Argh!" An intense cry of agony was heard as the Broken Soul Blade pierced Raul's chest.

After that, the pain of his soul being ripped apart spread from his chest to his whole body.

As a soul attribute warrior, Raul knew what he was experiencing, and he used whatever senses he still had left to activate his through energy to try to stop it.

Alas, no matter how strong his true energy was, it was nothing against the Broken Soul Blade. It disappeared in an instant, and he was powerless.

Very quickly, the pain eroded all his sanity. He fell to the ground and writhed in pain as cries of agony were ripped out from him. It did not even sound like something humans could make.

Rudy was already used to the sight. After all, no one was able to stand the pain of their soul being ripped apart.

Raul's reaction was only warranted, but Alfred did not feel that way.

Raul had been so proud, yet there he was, writhing on the floor like a worm. It was obvious how much pain he was in.

Alfred could feel a chill behind his neck, and he thanked his luck that he was from Hestia as well.

If he had been Jackie's enemy, he would have suffered the same fate as Raul did, twitching on the floor and crying out without any dignity.

Alfred pursed his lips and looked at Jackie in a different light. His earlier worship had turned into fear and respect, and he finally realized how strong Jackie was.

Jackie walked over to Raul and merely watched as he spasmed without restraint.

He slowly knelt and stopped the Broken Soul Blade's energy with a wave.

Chapter 3330
A large percentage of the pain Raul felt disappeared that very moment, and he slowly recovered bits of his rationality.

He trembled as his eyes widened, and what he saw was Jackie reaching toward his sleeves, taking out the box with the Azure Soul Fruit.

The scene greatly affected Raul, and he started to twitch again.

His lips were pale as he gritted his teeth and glared at Jackie, wanting nothing more than to rip Jackie to shreds.

He was angry beyond relief, but there was nothing he could do to turn the tables, and he acknowledged this with despair.

Looking into himself, he realized that his soul was already ripped apart and a third of his soul was gone. Unless he had a sort of divine medicine, he would never survive this. He would just be in even more pain after that.

When he realized this, Raul was filled with pain and hopelessness. His whole body was twitching tightly, and his eyes widened. He looked like someone suffering from dementia.

Jackie could tell that Raul had resigned himself to his fate, and he scoffed. "Didn't you say I wasn't worthy of soul attribute techniques? Where's all that talk now?"

Raul rested his gaze on Jackie for a long while before all of a sudden, his body started to tremble.

At that moment, he remembered everything he had said to Jackie, and he knew even begging Jackie would never grant him mercy.

Jackie had said that he would be the end of him, but Raul thought it was all crap talk, if anything.

He had been the ignorant one, but he acted so arrogantly in front of the stronger one. Only then did he realize how ignorant he was.

He had underestimated Jackie and judged him poorly. No matter what Jackie said, he never realized something was wrong.

This was how he ended up in his predicament.

Raul's breathing got quicker as his face paled. He looked like someone at death's door.

Jackie snorted before he slowly stood up. Reaching out, he activated the Broken Soul Blade again, and pain completely took over Raul's senses, sending him into a frenzy of pain once more.

He could not even think of anything else as he convulsed in a worm-like manner.

Jackie stared at Raul aloofly. After stopping for a few moments, he turned to look at Rudy and Alfred, shooting them a look before he turned around and walked into the distance.

Rudy and Alfred exchanged complicated glances. However, neither of them said anything as they followed closely after him.

Jackie did not actually know where he was going either.

The space was very large, and he just wished he would be lucky enough to meet a few warriors from second-grade worlds. As for the warriors from third-grade worlds, Jackie would not do anything as long as they left him alone.

The second-grade worlds, however, were different. He believed that the warriors from these worlds would immediately attack them when they saw them. After all, these warriors would immediately think that they were better and would think of Jackie and his companions as easy prey.

Alfred and Rudy quietly followed behind Jackie, not saying anything as he looked down. It was not long until Alfred‘s silence faltered.

He looked at Rudy and said softly, “I'll only cause you trouble if I follow you. I can't help you with anything right now. This place is filled with danger, and I'm injured all over. I won't be able to hold on for a few more days, and I can't protect myself…”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3331 - 3335 -

Chapter 3331
Alfred could not bring himself to continue after that. He felt like he was a burden and knew this, but if he chose not to follow Jackie, he would no doubt suffer.

Rudy could see how helpless Alfred felt and could feel Alfred's inner turmoil.

If he was as talented as Jackie, he would have been able to shield Alfred and assure him from worrying. However, Rudy was a burden to Jackie as well. If he dragged Jackie down with more burdens, he would be too disgraceful.

Rudy sighed helplessly, saying softly, "Since Jackie hasn't asked you to leave, it means you can still follow us, so long as you don't betray us…"

Saying that, Rudy looked at Jackie guiltily.

All this while, Jackie heard them mumbling behind them, so he turned to look at the conflicted Alfred. Even though he did not hear what they were whispering to each other clearly, he could tell what they were talking about from their expressions.

Smiling, Jackie simply said, "I can't guarantee that I'll bring you out alive, but I'll do my best. I don't even know the dangers awaiting us. After all, this slaughter game has a death rate as high as eighty percent for warriors from third-grade worlds…"

"Don'tworry. IfI die, it's just because I'm unlucky," interjected Alfred gently, anxiously.

"You've protected me once, and I'm already incredibly grateful for that. If the circumstances aren't good, you can abandon me at will."

He was sincere in what he said.

The slaughter game was not just any game, death was everywhere. Before they entered, Alfred had mentally prepared himself. It was just that he did not want to be tortured and toyed around with by warriors from second-grade worlds.

Jackie nodded slightly at that and said nothing else.

Rudy merely sighed lightly, feeling the cruelty of the world. However, there was nothing he could say about it. After all, it was Alfred's choice. Opportunity and danger always came hand in hand.

Right at that moment, Alfred suddenly shouted, "Look over there!"

As he said that, he rushed ahead and pointed forward.

Jackie turned to see a few corpses lying around some rocks. Frowning, he walked forward into the scene.

They were at a small beach made of gravel, and stones of various sizes were scattered all around.

A total of three corpses were spotted on the ground, and the blood that oozed from these bodies flowed between the rocks and stained the whole area.

Jackie walked closer to better inspect the situation and was shocked to see the state those corpses were in.

They had been tortured so badly that there was not a single patch of unblemished skin on them. One of the corpses even had their innards exposed.

Rudy could not help but look away from the scene and covered his mouth. It was not that he had never seen corpses before. As a matter of fact, he had seen a lot of dead people, but he rarely saw corpses that had been tortured to death.

All of the corpses were from third-grade worlds, so a thought surfaced in their minds.

Chapter 3332
Unless someone harbored venomous vengeance against these three warriors, this had to be the work of a warrior from a second- grade world. Only they would be so sadistic to warriors from third-grade worlds.

After inspecting the corpses, Jackie relayed his findings, albeit in a cold tone. “These people were first heavily injured before they were tortured to death. It looks like it was done by a warrior from a second-grade world…”

Jackie was sure of this.

Rudy and Alfred nodded in agreement as well.

The heavy injuries meant that the corpses had been no match for their opponents. They had been dealt a heavy blow before being tortured to death.

If Jackie had not saved Alfred, he might have shared a similar fate.

The thought of this made Alfred’s breathing quicken. His face paled once more, and he started to tremble with anger.

Death was something common to warriors and many were accustomed to it, but torture was an entirely different story. Torture was something devoid of dignity.

Judging by the state of these corpses, they must have been in great despair before perishing.

Alfred took a deep breath, and his voice trembled slightly as he growled, “These animals! They crossed the line! Even if it’s a slaughter game, they shouldn’t be toying with their enemies!”

Rudy nodded fervently at this.

He gritted his teeth and looked at everything, but there was nothing he could do. He did not have Jackie’s talent. In fact, he was far worse than a warrior from a second-grade world. Facing them, all he could do was feel angry.

Sighing, Jackie slowly stood up as anger flared in his heart.

He realized that he was finding it hard to control his emotions ever since he entered Weinhord City.

“Why do these dogs act like this?” muttered Rudy. “Do they feel happy torturing others? Are they sick in the head?”

Jackie shook his head. Even he did not know what the warriors from second-grade worlds were thinking.

Although if they looked down on warriors from third-grade worlds, they should have taken care of their reputations by just killing their opponents. Alas, that was not the case.

Torture was time-consuming, and unless they were sick in the head and enjoyed looking at others die slowly, they would not do that.

Jackie sighed and shook his head again. “I don’t know what they’re thinking either. Whatever, there’s no point in knowing anyway. Let’s move forward. It looks like these people have formed an alliance and will jump at anyone easy enough. We’ll have to be careful after this. I’m not afraid of facing anyone alone, but I need to be careful against a group.”

Jackie was not worried about facing one or two opponents, but if it was three or four, he might struggle.

They had three with them, but other than himself, the other two were of no help at all. They might even end up holding him back.

Jackie sighed. He would need to be extremely careful after this.

Rudy frowned. He intended on asking Jackie to put him into Mustard Seed but decided against it, not wanting to reveal this secret to Alfred.

The three of them walked forward for a few dozen kilometers. The more they walked, the more shocked they were.

They had seen at least 10 corpses along the way, and every one of them seemed like something straight out of a horror house, having been tortured to death.

These warriors, all seemed to have come from third-grade worlds.

An uneasy feeling surfaced in Jackie's head. It seemed like this slaughter game was much more serious than any of the earlier ones.

These warriors from second-grade worlds were all crazy.

Chapter 3333
At that moment, footsteps were heard coming from afar, and Jackie, Rudy, and Alfred jumped at the sound alertly.

Jackie frowned as he looked in the direction of these footsteps, but before they could see clearly, someone shouted out, "Don't be alarmed! The four of us are from third-grade worlds."

At that moment, a genial-looking man in gray robes came out with three warriors from third-grade worlds behind him.

The group walked toward Jackie gingerly.

Jackie stared at the person for a good while before nodding at him. After the four of them walked over, they greeted each other before revealing their origins.

Their group had been temporarily formed. The one who first walked was called Frederick Gaunt from the Lycan Continent, a third-grade world. The three behind him were Len Davis and Trent Walker from Chaos Continent, as well as Conor Rice from White Marsh Continent.

The four of them happened to meet and decided to form a small alliance. They approached Jackie and his company because they wanted to team up with them and face the hunting alliance together.

The moment they mentioned the hunting alliance,

Jackie raised an eyebrow. A thought flashed in his mind.

Before Jackie could ask, Frederick patiently explained, “Those insolent people from second-grade worlds formed a hunting alliance to keep themselves safe. All of them split up into smaller teams to kill off the warriors from third-grade worlds.”

“They see us as prey, as animals. Not only are they killing us, but they’re torturing us as well. It’s not like we have any grudges against them, but they’re adamant in doing this!”

Frederick’s eyes reddened as he spoke, and it was obvious how angry he was with the way he gritted his teeth.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows, not entirely understanding the entire story. However, he did not voice out his questions and kept quiet.

Frederick sighed and saluted Jackie again. “Moving alone is incredibly dangerous. Why don’t you stick with us? We’ll put discussions about rewards aside for now. Survival is the most important part.”

Jackie could tell that Frederick regretted taking part in the slaughter game. He probably never thought of how sick in the head warriors from second-grade worlds were.

After deliberating on the situation, Jackie gave them a small nod.

The hunting alliance had split themselves up into small groups, and if he fought them alone, he might put himself in danger.

Teaming up would no doubt reduce the casualty, even if only by a little. At the very least, everyone else would be able to stall their opponents and buy him some time.

Jackie agreed to it with that in mind.

Conor, from the White Marsh Continent, looked at Jackie meaningfully before he looked at the two behind Jackie. He could not tell how strong Jackie was, but he had an idea of the other two.

One of them seemed to be heavily injured. The person’s face was pale and his breathing was not steady. The other was not injured, but his internal energies were not stable. It was obvious that he was weak. From what Conor could see, that person would probably have failed to even get into a level-eight city.

There would only be one way for that person to enter a level four city, which was that someone strong had brought him all the way.

Raising an eyebrow, Conor said, “You can join us, but not these two. This may sound harsh, but it’s just facts. The two behind you won’t be able to help us and will only hinder us. We can’t carry extra baggage.”

The moment that was said, Jackie's expression turned cold.

Chapter 3334
Conor looked at Jackie's cold expression and scoffed.

Squinting, he said, "It looks like you don't agree with me. Well, there's nothing we can do, then. After all, this group was formed with only one purpose in mind, which is to get out of here alive. Every additional burden means another layer of danger, and anyone can see this logic."

Jackie coldly looked at Conor before he said plainly, "If that's the case, then there's no need for us to work together."

With that, Jackie turned around to leave.

A flash of surprise could be seen in Conor's eyes, which Jackie noticed and internally scoffed at.

He knew what was on Conor's mind.

In Conor's eyes, they were doing Jackie a great favor by letting him join. Conor thought that Jackie would be defenseless without the help of the group, but Jackie did not seem to think that joining the group was a necessary choice.

He did not see joining the group as asking for protection but merely cooperation. Since they could not come to terms, he could leave at any moment. Even though joining the group would help him when he needed it, he still needed to rely on himself in the end.

Jackie was confident that he would be able to survive even without the group and would be able to get good results.

When Conor saw that Jackie had downright declined their offer, his plans were thrown off. Even though he never saw Jackie fight before and had no way of telling how strong he was, his intuition told him that Jackie was somewhat on par with him.

Jackie joining the group would make them feel safer, but he had two men he had to lug around. That was something Conor would not agree to.

These two had no use other than being cannon fodder; they might even end up dragging everyone down at a critical moment!

Conor felt like Jackie was probably a smart person. Leaving those two behind and joining their group was the wisest choice.

He thought that Jackie would agree if he stated the pros and cons, yet the man rejected him without even blinking, much to his surprise, and chose to continue with those two burdens.

When Frederick saw Jackie leaving, he hastily called out to him. “Wait! Conor was just making a suggestion, and we can still talk about things. It’s not easy to find a team like ours.”

“I know all of the warriors who joined the slaughter game have some confidence in their skills, but confidence won’t be enough to get you out safely, given the current situation. Didn’t you see all those corpses as you walked?”

Jackie frowned and looked at Frederick.

He was no idiot. He could tell that Frederick had the same idea as Conor. Frederick wanted to convince Jackie to leave Rudy and Alfred, prioritizing his own life. Despite his wavering heart, Rudy remained silent as he stared at Jackie with a frown.

He trusted all of Jackie’s decisions. Even if Jackie left him at that moment, he would just lower his head and accept it.

Rudy believed that Jackie would not do that, however.

Jackie merely looked at Frederick quietly, but seconds later, he merely shook his head, not even bothering to explain things as he turned around and walked toward where he came from.

Frederick started to panic at that. His intuition told him that Jackie was not inadequate whatsoever, and at such a dangerous moment, more strength would only ensure their safety.

With Jackie’s actions, it was obvious that Jackie was a righteous man.

After thinking about it, Frederick rushed over to Jackie. “Since you insist on bringing the two of them, I’ll agree to it!”

Chapter 3335
Conor was displeased to hear Frederick’s words. “We won’t benefit from having these two dragging us down!”

Frederick turned and looked at Conor unhappily, saying loudly, “It’s not the time to be stubborn. Even if they’re not strong enough, anything that happens will be their problem. It’s not like we’re splitting up the resources. There’s no reason not to have a few more.”

Conor raised an eyebrow, somewhat accepting Frederick’s point of view.

Just like Frederick said, it was not like they were fighting over profit. They were not splitting up any spirit crystals, so one more person just meant one more scapegoat.

If there was any danger, they would not need to care about those two.

After Conor thought about it, he nodded at Frederick.

Conor thus turned around and grabbed Jackie's arm, but the latter merely pushed his hand away.

"I'm not joining your group. I'm just cooperating with you," he spoke, his tone apathetic.

Nonetheless, it clearly showed them where he stood. He did not want them to think that they were doing him a favor. In Jackie's eyes, it was just a choice.

Frederick raised his eyebrows slightly and knew he would not be easy to deal with. However, he had to accept anyone with the situation as it was. After all, things were getting even more dangerous the longer they stayed. They had common enemies and needed to bolster their own strength.

Frederick nodded vigorously, agreeing with Jackie.

With that, Frederick's small group of four turned into seven. Of course, to some of them, their group only had five members while the other two were useless.

Jackie did not care about their thoughts. They were just cooperating, after all.

He pulled Alfred away and lowered his voice, saying, "As long as you have the chance, make sure to try and recover so you can face the dangers ahead."

Alfred nodded, feeling incredibly grateful. If he was to put himself in Jackie's shoes, he might have left the other two behind. After all, his life was the most important. However, Jackie did not do this, and it showed his moral compass.

Knowing this, Alfred's respect for Jackie grew.

The seven of them headed east, but they did not actually know where they were going. They just knew that they could not remain in the same place in case they ended up being trapped.

Time slowly ticked away, and four hours had passed in a flash.

Frederick frowned as he constantly swept his senses around, worried about anything that might happen.

He then reached out and motioned for them to stop, turning to look at the other six. “The forest is dense here, so we’ll have a lot of cover, and it’s a good place to rest. As long as we’re careful, we won’t get ambushed. Let’s rest here for now and continue forward after a bit.”

Jackie looked around and noted that it was indeed a vast sea of trees.

Just two hours ago, they had traversed the gravel before they arrived at a densely packed forest, one with gargantuan trees that obstructed one’s sight.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3336 -

Chapter 3336
The air around them was quite humid, but it was definitely a safe spot.

Conor stood in place and said as he looked around, “Even though we have a lot of cover, we’re definitely not completely safe. We should split up and keep watch separately. The moment we see any movement, we should notify everyone else…”

All of them nodded in agreement.

Before the slaughter game ended, they needed to be on high alert. If they fell into any traps or ended up surrounded, then the consequences would be dire.

Those warriors from second-grade worlds were all sick in the head. They would hunt and torture the warriors from third-grade worlds with the cruelest methods.

No one wanted to die so horribly, so they were all on full alert. After Frederick thought about it, he decided to rotate the watch. After a certain interval, he would send a different person out as a scout, observing the surroundings for any movements.

The moment a dangerous situation was noticed, they would tell the rest with a sound array.

Conor looked at Jackie, as did Rudy and Alfred who were behind Jackie. He said coldly, “The three of you will be counted as one. that’ll be more fair to all of us.”

Jackie nodded immediately. It was precisely what he wanted.

He would not be able to relax if Rudy was scouting alone at all. After all, Rudy was no match against anyone with his skills.

Alfred lowered his head regretfully, feeling like he was useless. The first person to take watch was Len from Chaos Continent, while Jackie was the next.

Each person kept watch for two hours.

Jackie patted Alfred’s shoulder, getting Alfred to try and recover while he had the chance.

Alfred nodded, not hesitating at all to sit down and try to recover with a large amount of pills. After Len left, six of them were left behind. They sat down in a circle, but Jackie did not rest. Instead, he looked at his surroundings with open eyes.

Even though he had joined the group, he did not trust anyone other than Rudy, including Alfred. He brought Alfred along, but it did not mean that Jackie trusted Alfred completely.

It was just that Alfred was from Phoenix Valley, and had never betrayed them. Even though he was looking around, his awareness was focused on the others. If anyone decided to do anything to Rudy, Jackie would react immediately.

As time passed, Conor suddenly spoke after an hour, “What do these people actually want? Why are they trying to kill off all the warriors from third-grade worlds? The slaughter game is just a test. They can just kill anyone they want if they want to rank highly. Why do they have to torture the third-grade worlds?”

Conor could not figure it out at al. He could not understand why the warriors from the second-grade worlds were acting like that.

Would it benefit them at all?

Or were they all just crazy?

Frederick sighed as his expression soured, “Who knows how they’re thinking? I’m only sure of one thing. They’re definitely getting something out of this. Even though we hate them a lot, it’s not like all of them are sick in the head.”

“The stronger a warrior is, the colder they usually are. Unless we had some deep seeded grudge, there’s no way they’d be torturing us like this. Torturing someone takes time. If they want to rank highly, they would have to make sure they’re not wasting any time and to kill as many as possible. Aren’t they just defeating the purpose by doing so?”

When he said that, everyone had some worry and fear on their faces.

Even though they hated the warriors from the second-grade worlds, they had to admit that those warriors were strong. If they did not work together, they would not stand a chance.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3337 - 3338 -

Chapter 3337
Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything. However, various thoughts surfaced in his head.

He was also trying to guess what the warriors from the second-grade worlds were trying to do. He agreed with Frederick.

The warriors from the second-grade worlds were all arrogant, but it was not like all of them had a screw loose.

Torturing people to death was both cruel and a waste of time. They definitely had a reason for doing it. It was just that none of them knew what it was at the moment, and had no means of guessing.

After another hour, Len returned.

Len sat back with the group with a thankful look on his face. Jackie did not even pause before he stood up and brought Rudy and Alfred along to keep watch.

As Jackie left, Conor scoffed and said, “What an idiot. I don’t know what he’ s thinking about bringing those two along. It’s not like this place is some charity. Bringing those two along just means he’s putting himself in even more danger.”

“With how he seems to be acting, he’ll definitely try to protect the two of them in the face of any danger. That would just be endangering himself.”

Frederick shook his head, retrieving some water from his storage ring and taking two gulps, “Everyone has their own choices. Even though I don’t agree with his choice, it’s not something we have to bear with. Let him do what he wants to.”

Jackie walked forward for a bit more before he stopped.

That was where they were keeping watch. Rudy had a long face as he mumbled, “That Conor sure talks a lot. He thinks that he can make all the decisions just because he has some skill.”

Alfred looked at Rudy for a moment, but did not say anything. He did not dare to voice any opinions.

Jackie smiled and said, “Conor is just saying all of that because he thinks that what he thinks is common sense. He feels like everyone should make the same decisions as him.”

Rudy scoffed, throwing the thought aside. It was because he was slowly realizing that he was in no place to say anything. Jackie would not be wrong choosing to save them or to give up on them.

At that moment, they suddenly heard footsteps from afar.

Jackie looked up and did not hesitate to burn up the sound array, sending the message to the others.

Alfred and Rudy immediately stood behind Jackie. They looked at the source of the sound in the alarm. As the footsteps got closer, they saw who had come.

There were two people who appeared, and both of them wore different masks. They looked to be dressed similarly, and had blue clouds on their clothes.

Rudy frowned, “More warriors from the Sacred Water Continent…”

He did not have a good impression on the Sacred Water Continent.

Those two should have already noticed them early on, but they had walked over to reveal themselves, letting Jackie and the others hear their footsteps before walking over in broad daylight. It seemed like the two of them did not regard Jackie’s party as anything at all.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he stared at those two coldly.

Their masks were both different. The one on the left had a black panther mask on, while the one on the right had a mask with blood red clouds.

Chapter 3338
The man in the panther mask suddenly laughed, “How lucky are we? Only one of these three can fight. The other two are trash!”

The man with the clouds on his mask scoffed, “Don’t be so happy. The other four might be even more trash. We should deal with this place quickly. He’s still waiting for us to report on the numbers. We should use the same method as before and get a bit more Heartblood.”

The two of them were talking without any fear, not caring that Jackie and the other two were listening at all.

Rudy locked right into the key words.

He looked at Jackie and whispered, “What’s Heartblood?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as various guesses surfaced in his head. All those things he did not understand from before started to make sense the moment he heard the word Heartblood, but it was not the time for explanation.

He turned to shoot Rudy a look, making Rudy retreat for the moment. Rudy hurriedly pulled Alfred back. Even though he did not want to admit it, the two of them were just burdens. They were useless during moments like these.

To stop their opponents from suddenly attacking, Rudy and Alfred did not retreat two far.

They merely made sure to get a few dozen meters away.

The two masked men still talked amongst themselves even when they saw Rudy and Alfred retreating, not caring at all.

Rudy sighed, lamenting how useless he was. Even their opponents did not care about it. It was not that they did not see what was happening, but they did not care. In their eyes, only Jackie was really an opponent.

Even if Rudy and Alfred frantically ran away, they would not be able to escape the masked men.

After their conversation, the masked men finally looked at Jackie. They looked at Jackie like they were looking at a death row inmate.

Jackie coldly met their gaze, not showing any emotion the whole time. It was like the two standing in front of him were not strong opponents at all. They were just weaklings he could get rid off at any moment.

The panther-masked man was unhappy about that.

He had already killed two since the slaughter game started. Every person he met would always tremble in fear and look at them in alarm.

Yet, Jackie was incredibly calm, as if nothing would affect him at all.

The panther-masked man scoffed, “Brat, aren’t you afraid? Are you just pretending? Or is there something wrong with your head?”

In the panther-masked man’s mind, Jackie could only be so calm for one of two reasons.

One, he was pretending to be calm to put on an act. Two, there was something wrong with his head, and he did not know what he was facing at all.

Jackie took a deep breath and said calmly, ”You’re the third and he’s the fourth.There’ll still be the fifth and sixth after this. I just don’t know how many I need to kill to place in the top three.”

Jackie’s words managed to stun them.

The panther-masked man blinked, not believing what he was hearing for a moment.

What was that guy saying?

He said that they were going to be his third and fourth?

There would even be a fifth and sixth.

Did this guy really think he could kill them?.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3339 - 3340 -

Chapter 3339
The panther-masked man's lips twitched, feeling like he had heard a great joke, "Are you crazy? Have you been scared dumb? Who gave you the courage to think that you'd be able to kill the two of us!"

"You wouldn't even be able to face us one-on-one, let alone two against one. Even two of you wouldn't be able to face me. I've seen quite a few warriors from second-grade worlds, but you're the first one who's so arrogant."

As he said that, he narrowed his eyes and looked at Jackie with a cold expression. That look seemed like he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not really wanting to bother with him at all. He was incredibly calm at that moment, not showing any changes at all.

The panther-masked man felt more and more annoyed by Jackie. He pulled out his sword from his storage space.

"Brat, You'll pay for everything you've said! I was planning on just torturing you for an hour before letting you die, but I've changed my mind. Since you're so arrogant, I'll make sure to torture you for two hours to clam myself!"

Those words were like nothing to Jackie. It did not cause him to react at all. Jackie stood there as calmly as ever.

The cloud-masked man frowned at how Jackie was acting.

He whispered to the panther-masked man, "I think this guy is a bit strange. We should be careful when we act."

Hearing that, the panther-masked man did not think much about it.

He scoffed and looked at the other man in disdain, "Can you stop being so paranoid about everything? What part of this guy looks threatening? There's clearly just something wrong with his head. Even if he was threatening, would he be able to beat the two of us?"

The cloud-masked man sighed.

He felt like something was different about this guy. He could not tell how strong that guy was at that moment, but his intuition told him that Jackie was stronger than an ordinary third-grade world warrior.

However, he still chose to shut his mouth. He mumbled to himself that, even if Jackie seemed a little strange, Jackie was still from a third grade world.

The panther-masked man said coldly, "You're just too overly careful. I'll admit that they have some strong warriors in third-grade worlds, but it's nothing like ours in number.

We've already looked up all the pictures of the strong warriors from the third-grade worlds before this anyway. It's the first time I've seen this face."

The cloud-masked man took a deep breath and nodded earnestly. He really was being overly cautious.

At that moment, Jackie finally said something, "I have a question. Could you two help me answer it?"

The two of them were stunned when they heard that.

The panther masked man's lips twitched helplessly, feeling like Jackie was acting stranger and stranger. He was even asking them a question in a situation like this. However, since they were about to torture him to death, there was no reason not to answer a question.

The panther-masked man raised an eyebrow as he nodded with interest. He wondered what kind of question it would be.

Jackie said slowly, "Why are you trying to kill warriors from third-grade worlds? I know that the slaughter game is a deathmatch in itself, but killing is the main draw. If you want to get the rewards, you can just kill your opponents. There's no need to torture them to death unless you have some deep grudge. The two of you don't look sick in the head, so why?"

Chapter 3340
The panther-masked man smirked and revealed a cruel smile, "You're the first warrior from a third-grade world to ask me that. Since you're about to die, I'll be merciful and answer your question."

"It's because we'll only be able to get your Heartblood by torturing you. We need a lot of Heartblood. Killing you will get us five million spirit crystals as a reward. With your Heartblood, someone will exchange it with us for a large amount of spirit crystals. The Heartblood from a single person can get you like six million spirit crystals."

Jackie's eyes widened as anger slowly burned in his heart.

His calm exterior was finally starting to crack.

So the torturing of the warriors from third grade worlds was for the sake of their Heartblood. Heartblood could get them spirit crystals.

Jackie took a deep breath, suppressing the anger in his heart. He continued with a low voice, "Do you need to torture someone to get their Heartblood?"

The panther-masked man answered with a laugh, "Of course you do. Only when a person experiences true hopelessness will their blood start to flow frantically. A lot of bleed essence will flow into the heart. The more pain and despair there is, the more Heartblood there will be. That's why we're willing to slowly torture you with our time."

Jackie's expression soured greatly when he heard that.

The answer had successfully ignited his fury.

Those people did not View warriors from third grade worlds as people at all, but prey to be hunted. Before they were killed, all the value had to be extracted.

Jackie's breathing got quicker. There was a cold glint in his eyes.

Rudy and Alfred started to tremble when they heard that answer too. They were both furious, wanting nothing more than to rush in to fight to their deaths. That answer was far too cruel and unacceptable.

Anger and rage slowly accumulated in their hearts.

Rudy could no longer control himself.

He shouted out, "You're so despicable and shameless! For the sake of Heartblood, you tortured so many innocent people to death. Don't you think that's cruel?"

The panther-masked man laughed out loud at Rudy's question. He felt like the three in front of him were incredibly amusing.

He coldly looked at Jackie and the others, "Who do you think you are? Torturing you is despicable and shameless? Don't flatter yourselves. You should be thankful that you became spirit crystals for us. This world has always been survival of the fittest. You're no match for us, so we can naturally treat you however we want."

Those words cause the three of them to get even angrier.

Rudy was so angry his hands were shaking, "That's too much! What is he trying to say? Does he think we're subhuman?"

Jackie nodded. After taking a few breaths, he composed himself.

He narrowed his eyes, not wanting to say anything else. Their opponents had run our of patience as well. They wanted torture the three of them sooner to get more Heartblood.

The masked men exchanged a look, and the two of them split up, one to the right and one to the left. They started to get closer to Jackie.

The cloud-masked man pulled out a sword from his storage space as well.

The two of them were like soldiers in the night. They were surrounded with murderous intent. Any warriors who were weaker would have collapsed when surrounded by that intent. Yet, it was nothing to Jackie at all.

Jackie did not pull out a single weapon.

He merely looked at the two of them coldly, forming seal after seal with hands. Those seals constantly danced around in the air, slowly merging together to form a Broken Soul Blade.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3341 - 3350 -

Chapter 3341
The moment the Broken Soul Blade solidified, wind howled around it. With the Broken Soul Blade as the center, the air around it constantly moved.

The power constantly clashed and fused, turning into a vortex of power. Looking at that scene, both the masked men frowned at the same time. However, they did not retreat.

The panther-masked man said in a low voice, “I have to say. This guy really does seem a little dangerous. We mustn’t delay it anymore. Let’s end things quickly.”

The moment that was said, the two of them rushed right at Jackie. They attacked with their swords in hand at the same time.

There was a cold look in Jackie’s eyes.

He looked like a death god in the dark as he pushed his hands forward. The Broken Soul Blade shot forward at the two of them like an arrow.

With two clear twangs, the two of them felt their arms go numb. It was as if the swords in their hands had clashed with a large mountain. Right after that, a strange energy rapidly climbed up the swords in their hands.

It was a rotting force that caused them to freeze. The swords in their hands seemed to constantly crumble like hot steel that was thrown into ice. They paled as they quickly retreated, but it was already too late.

That energy had already climbed into their hands, entering their body through that.

The two of them felt like their souls were being bit apart by ten thousand ants. The pain was indescribable.

Suddenly, the two of them cried out in agony. Everything had happened too quickly. They were already on the ground before they could even react.

With a clang, the pain had caused them to lose control of themselves. They could no longer even hold their swords.

The panther-masked man shouted loudly, “What is this?! It hurts! Why is it so painful?!”

The two of them cried out in agony as they rolled on the ground. Their arrogance from just now had completely disappeared.

Jackie scoffed as he looked at the two of them with a cold expression in his eyes.

The two of them might be from a holy grade clan, but they were definitely not chosen disciples. At the most, they were just inner disciples. Jackie would not even be afraid to go against two chosen disciples, let alone inner disciples.

He had spoken so much with the two of them earlier merely because he wanted answers.

Jackie took a deep breath as he slowly walked towards them.

The two of them were already rolling on the ground, looking like pathetic beggars.

Rudy rushed over as well. He was quite happy looking at how much of a pathetic state the two of them were in.

He could not stop himself from punching the panther-masked man in the face, but that little bit of pain was only able to cause the masked man to flinch a little. After all, he was going through the most painful thing in the world, so being punched was nothing at all. On top of them, he had already lost his senses. Other than crying out in agony, he did not react at all.

Rudy huffed and said, “Let’s see if you can still show off and act arrogantly in front of us? Aren’t you so amazing? Why can’t you toot your own horn anymore?!”

Alfred rushed over angrily as well, kicking the two of them.

After torturing them for a moment, Jackie dispelled the energy in their souls for a moment.

When the pain diminished, the two of them slowly came to their senses.

Chapter 3342
As the pain slowly diminished, they started to weakly open their eyes.

The moment the panther-masked man looked at Jackie, his whole body froze as it shuddered slightly. He looked at Jackie like Jackie was a death god from hell.

His breathing got more erratic, and the muscles on his face refused to cooperate. He tried to retreat, but his body could not respond after the intense torture he had been through. He only managed to move a little to the back before he collapsed.

The other one was full of fear as well, not even daring to look at Jackie.

Rudy was incredibly happy at the state they were in.

He scoffed as he said to the two of them, “Didn’t you say us warriors from third grade worlds were all trash? Do you still think so? Say something. Why are you acting like you’re mute? Weren’t you having a lot of fun earlier? You said we were all prey that you could hunt at any moment.”

The two of them gulped. They knew better than anyone else what they had said.

The panther-masked man took a deep breath as his expression slowly turned more serious.

He had to admit that he made a mistake. And that he had fallen into Jackie’s hands.

If it were anywhere else, the panther-masked man might have tried to beg for mercy, but where they were at that moment, there was no coming back from a heavy injury.

Since he was going to die for sure, then he decided to not hold back. The man sneered, but he started to cough violently after being tortured for so long.

As he coughed, he shouted out, “I’m not wrong! The warriors from third grade worlds are all just animals waiting for us to slaughter!”

Rudy and Alfred stiffened in anger. They never expected the panther-masked man to remain stubborn even at this stage.

Rudy stamped on the panther-masked man‘s chest, sending him to the ground.

They were surrounded by grass, or it would have caused a lot of dirt to fly up.

The panther-masked man’s face twisted in pain as his breathing sped up. A mouthful of blood came out of his throat as he started to cough intensely again. However, he refused to submit no matter how much he coughed.

With one hand to support him, he tried to stand up again. Alfred rushed over and kicked him on the chest again. The man fell on the ground, but he did not continue struggling to get up.

He coughed violently as he sneered.

Since he was already lying on the ground in such a pathetic state, he did not care anymore, ”What? Are you feeling guilty after what I said? Are you refusing to admit that you’re just our prey? So what if you hit me?! If you can, kill me right here!”

Rudy was so angry that he wanted to do it, but Jackie stopped him.

The panther-masked man did not look like an idiot. He must have his own reasons for saying all of that. Rudy clearly did not realize that.

When Jackie pulled Rudy back, Rudy mumbled, “Jackie, why are you stopping me? Do you not hear what this guy said? If we don’t teach him a lesson, he’ll let it get to his head! Let me beat him up properly and we’ll see if he’s still going to be stubborn!”

Jackie sighed helplessly.

He lowered his voice and said, “Don’t get angered by him. He wants to use you to end himself. He doesn’t look like an idiot at all. Hurry up and go to the side. I still have some things to ask him.”

The moment Jackie said that, Rudy slowly realized what was happening.

He turned to look at the panther-masked man on the ground to see a sliver of disappointment in the man’s eyes. Even though the man wiped it away very quickly, Rudy still caught it.

Chapter 3343
Rudy's lips twitched. He had almost let his emotions carry him away.

If Jackie had not stopped him, he would have fallen for it. That guy just wanted to anger him to the point where Rudy would end him while Jackie was distracted. He did not dare to kill himself, because he was worried that Jackie would react in time.

It would be the worst for him if Jackie managed to react in time when he tried to kill himself.

Rudy sighed, not wanting to continue on with this. He was afraid that he would be tricked again. So, he rubbed his nose and stood back

Jackie coldly looked at the panther-masked man.

He knelt down slowly as he said plainly, "Do you really want to die right now?"

The panther-masked man's lips stiffened as he looked at Jackie in alarm.

After a long moment, he said in a low voice, "I can't believe I was so unlucky to meet such a master. I'll admit that there are masters in third-grade worlds, but meeting someone like you is not even a one in twenty chance. I can't believe I was so unlucky to meet one…"

"I'll admit it! I'll admit your talent and skills are amazing, but I won't retract my words. You warriors from third grade-words are just prey. As long as we want to, we can slaughter all of you!"

As he said that, he looked right into Jackie's eyes.

When Rudy heard that, he clenched his fists, wanting to rush forward and slap the person. However, he held back after what happened earlier, looking at the panther-masked man in anger.

Jackie smirked as he said, "Are you not afraid I' ll torture you?"

The man's hands shook, but he quickly calmed down.

He took a deep breath as he looked at Jackie with a cold gaze, "What's the point of being afraid? If I'm afraid and I beg you for mercy, would you let me go? It's impossible. I know my place. Since that's the case, why would I toss aside my dignity to beg you?!"

After saying that, he struggled to get up from the ground. He supported his body with one hand as he looked up at Jackie shakily with a resolved gaze.

He said with a hoarse voice, "Even if you torture me, you can't torture me for that long. Don't forget, your companions are being attacked right now. If you're too late, they'll all die. Are you going to just let them die?"

Jackie raised an eyebrow after he heard that.

He looked at the masked man with some interest. That guy was definitely quick with his words. In the end, the guy was afraid of Jackie torturing him. Otherwise, he would not have said all of that.

He wanted Jackie to quickly end him and head over to help his companions.

Jackie scoffed, saying with disdain, “They aren’t my companions. We’re just working together. We’ve only known each other for half a day…”

The moment he said that, Jackie looked as the man’s body completely stiffened, not expecting Jackie’s relationship with them to be so shallow.

Chapter 3344
Jackie reached out and patted the masked man on the back, “You give me a good reminder though. If I’m there too late, the battle would have ended, and I wouldn’t be able to get anything. You have three of you there. On top of the two of you, there are five in total. Five million per person, I’d be able to get a total of twenty five million.”

The moment that was said, the masked man’s eyes stopped moving.

His mouth widened as he recalled what Jackie had said earlier. The two of them had thought that there was something wrong with Jackie’s head.

Jackie had said before that there would be five and six after they were three and four.

They thought that Jackie was just crazy at that moment, or Jackie wouldn’t have been so arrogant. Now, he realized that Jackie was not arrogant, but rather just confident in his skills. He had been the ignorant one.

Jackie slowly stood up, “I do plan on going there quickly, I just don’t know if I’ll make it in time.”

Hearing Jackie’s words, the two masked men shuddered, unable to say anything. Before they say Jackie’s true skills, they had thought that everything Jackie said was a joke. Yet, when they saw how strong Jackie was, they could not longer laugh. They were even worried for their companions.

If Jackie rushed over and the fighting had still not ended, then he would completely clean up the place. The three of them would not have had the time to recover after a battle.

There was no way they would be a match for Jackie.

Their companions would also look down on Jackie thanks to his background as well. They would end up just like the two of them, turning into his rewards. The two of them felt a chill in their hearts.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he turned around. Whether the group of four could survive was not as important as the companions of the masked men were still there. As long as the three of them were still there, then Jackie was confident in dealing with all three of them.

Alfred was observing Jackie's expressions, and could guess what Jackie was thinking. He took a deep breath. He was still a little afraid when it came to Jackie, but his intense hope had won over that fear.

He stepped forward and said to Jackie, "Can I stay behind? I want to get their Heartblood. Even though I don't know what's the point of it, it has to be useful since they offered such a high price. I might as well stay behind and get their Heartblood for you…"

As he said that, his voice shook slightly.

He looked up at Jackie with worry. He would immediately shut up if he realized anything was wrong, but Jackie seemed calm. He could not see any unhappiness.

Alfred mustered up the courage to continue, "I know it's a little cruel, but these two treated others just the same way as well. Don't do unto others what you don't want done unto you, I don't think it's wrong…"

Thinking about that, a sliver of hatred flashed in Alfred's eyes.

If Jackie had not suddenly appeared to save him, then he would have ended up like those dead warriors from the third grade worlds. After being cruelly tortured, his Heartblood would be retrieved and sold at a high price.

Just thinking about it, Alfred could not suppress his rage.

Jackie laughed and patted Alfred on the shoulder, "You'll be in danger if you stay behind alone."

Alfred shook his head in determination, "I'll leave as soon as I can. If I really do end up in danger, then I'll just chalk it down to being unlucky. There's nothing much to say about it."

Chapter 3345
Jackie raised his eyebrow with some surprise. He quite liked Alfred's personality.

Since Alfred was already determined, Jackie decided to agree with it. Hearing Jackie's conversation with Alfred, the two on the ground looked horrified.

The two of them exchanged a look, and they saw despair in their eyes. Alfred slowly turned around and retrieved a dagger from his storage ring. He coldly looked at the two of them on the ground.

He let out a faint smile, "It's my turn after this!"

Not far away, the four who were originally sitting down and resting were already nowhere near as calm as they were.

At that moment, only three of them were holding on as one of them lay out on the ground. Conor lay on the ground hopelessly. He clutched his bleeding chest as he breathed erratically. Blood flowed from his lips to stain his clothes.

The attack was incredibly sudden. The three of them had lost any initiative in the ambush. On top of that, their opponents were incredibly strong. They were no match for their opponents at all. Even though their opponents had one less fighter than them, they could still not gain an advantage.

A man in a tiger mask quickly stabbed him in the chest. His blood frantically spurted out. After that, someone else had hit him in the chest, causing him to fly and crumple on the ground with heavy injuries.

He realized hopelessly that, unless a miracle happened, the four of them would die here.

At that moment, Conor suddenly thought of Jackie. He felt like Jackie was incredibly lucky to have managed to avoid this. He even started to hate Jackie for not being a proper scout.

If Jackie had realized that their opponents were near, they would not have been ambushed like that, and would not have lost so completely.

Based on how these people had been acting, he would definitely go through excruciating torture.

Thinking about that, Conor felt even more helpless. He clenched his teeth and immediately made a decision. Rather than being tortured by those people, he felt like ending himself would make his death cleaner.

At that moment, footsteps could be heard from afar.

Everyone there looked towards the source of the sound. When they saw Jackie and the others rushing over quickly, the three masked men immediately gathered at the center in alarm.

When they saw Jackie, everyone there was shocked.

Frederick was the first to react. He had a happy look on his face as he shouted at Jackie, “These people aren’t weak! Be careful!”

Everyone knew that, even if he did not say that, Jackie would have realized it just from the situation. However, Frederick still wanted to say it to leave a good impression on Jackie.

He wanted to show Jackie that he cared for Jackie as his companion. In truth, Frederick was afraid that Jackie would turn and run if Jackie thought that he would not be able to win. Then, they would have no hope at all.

Jackie obviously knew what Frederick was thinking. He scoffed and did not answer Frederick. Instead, he looked at the three masked men.

The three masked men looked at Jackie in alarm and suspicion.

A man with the mask of a green dragon said to Jackie, “You’re still alive?”

Chapter 3346
Jackie raised an eyebrow, acting like he did not know anything as he asked curiously, “Why wouldn’t I be alive?”

When he said that, the three of them were taken aback.

The man in the tiger mask frowned and said, “What are six and seven doing?! Are the two of them slacking off?”

A man with a black snake mask shook his head, “I don’t think so. They might not be that reliable normally, but they still know that this is important. They wouldn’t dare to slack off right now. They must have failed to kill this guy because of something unexpected.”

The tiger-masked man’s eyes shone in fury, “What kind of surprises could there be?! The two of them are just so unreliable. What do we do now? Another two appeared…”

The snake-masked man shook his head as he looked at Jackie before looking at Rudy behind Jackie.

After he looked at Rudy, the snake-masked man scoffed as he said with disdain, “The guy in front will be a bit troublesome, but the guy behind is just trash. Haven’t we already investigated it? The three of them were from Hestia Continent. How could such a useless place have anyone strong? Don’t worry, leave this guy to me. The two of them will just delay us a little.”

Conor looked at Jackie’s figure and scoffed in his heart.

He looked at Jackie’s figure and scoffed in his heart. He suddenly felt a little glad.

He thought that Jackie had been lucky enough to escape, but Jackie had actually ran right back to them. There was no one else to blame but himself. In Conor’s eyes, Even if Jackie was here, they would not be able to survive.

Their opponents were very strong. Conor felt like the three of them were probably from a holy grade clan. They might not be chosen disciples, but they were at least inner disciples. The three of them all used lower ultimate god rank techniques. They were no match for those masked men at all.

The tiger-masked man looked at Jackie coldly. He found it stranger and stranger.

Jackie was acting too calmly. He did not seem afraid to face the three of them at all. It was as if he felt like the three of them were not worth being scared of.

The masked man frowned and said, ”Brat, you’ve got some guts. You don’t seem afraid at all even facing the three of us. Should I be praising you for being bold, or should I just say you’re ignorant?”

Hearing that, Jackie’s lips curled up into a smile.

He was saying the same thing as the other two, with practically the same expression and tone.

Everyone was stunned when they saw Jackie smiling.

They felt like everything Jackie did was strange. It was like Jackie was completely crazy. It was one thing to not be afraid of a strong opponent, but Jackie was actually smiling. The more they looked, the crazier Jackie seemed.

The snake-masked man gave Jackie a once over, wanting to say something. However, he remained silent in the end.

The man in the dragon mask was furious.

He stepped forward and shouted at Jackie, “What are you laughing about? Do you think what we’re saying is funny?”

Jackie nodded sincerely. Of course, he did.

Would he laugh if he did not?

When Jackie nodded, everyone was stunned again. He actually nodded. He really was crazy, or he would not be doing any of that.

Chapter 3347
Frederick suddenly frowned as he looked everywhere.

Various thoughts surfaced in his head. He wanted to say something, but he felt like there was nothing he could say that would help. In truth, what he wanted to do was to rush over and shake Jackie awake.

Jackie had laughed enough and did not want to waste anymore time.

He had the confidence to win if he was up against two opponents, but if it was three, it would take more effort.

He turned to look at those three who were still standing, and he said, “Can the three of you try to hold two of them back? Just five minutes should be enough…”

Frederick widened his eyes at that, feeling like Jackie really was going crazy.

Did Jackie think that he could deal with one of his opponents in five minutes?

Who did he think he was?

Could Jackie really have gone mad?

Of course, he could not say that at that moment, and was merely starting to panic, not knowing what to do.

Frederick was one thing, but Conor could not take it anymore. Even though he was on the ground and heavily injured, he still shouted, “Are you crazy? Do you know what you’re saying? Do you really think you’re a match for any of them?”

Jackie frowned as he looked at Conor in exasperation.

Before he could say anything, Rudy could no longer hold back. He had not liked Conor from the start. Conor had mocked them the whole time, and even asked Jackie to toss him aside. He already hated Conor.

He narrowed his eyes and said to Conor, “Just because you can’t do it, it doesn’t mean Jackie can’t. You were bragging so much earlier, so why are you on the ground right now? You’d better just shut up and stop annoying us.”

Conor was so infuriated by Rudy that his hands shook. He spat out another mouthful of blood as his eyes reddened.

He rushed at Rudy and shouted, “What did you say?! I won’t let you off!”

Rudy did not even bat an eyelash at those threats.

He scoffed and said in disdain, “You won’t let me off? How are you going to do anything to me? Are you going to stand up and fight me? Can you even do that anymore?”

Conor shook in anger. He started to hate Rudy even more than the three masked man. He wanted to just rip Rudy apart at that moment.

Jackie sighed in exasperation. He looked at Conor coldly.

Before this, he would not have bothered to waste any time on Conor. However, Jackie had gotten sick of listening to Conor’s words, so he happened to get set off at that moment.

He took a deep breath and looked at Conor like he was looking at a beggar by the streets, “From a certain angle, your attitude is pretty similar to the warriors from second-grade worlds. You’re just too weak… You’re as weak as paper. Even calling you trash would be praising you…”

“Rudy’s right, you just love to brag. You were so arrogant earlier, so I thought you’d at least be in second place among the four of you, but now it seems like you’re the weakest.”

Jackie was being honest with his words.

Conor had been so annoying because Conor looked down on the weak. When he found out that Jackie was from Hestia Continent, he quickly made his judgment. No matter what Jackie did, he would disapprove.

Chapter 3348
He was no different from those warriors from second-grade worlds who love to show off how strong they were. The only difference was that Conor was not as strong as them. Yet, he acted in the same way as them.

Conor’s expression darkened. He looked at Jackie with clenched teeth, and his hatred for Jackie soared.

“I won’t let you off even if I have to haunt you!” Conor said hatefully.

“Have you wasted enough time?” the tiger-masked man said with a frown.

Jackie was acting too strangely, so the man wanted to end things quickly. He did not want to waste any more time.

He stepped forward and walked towards Jackie.

As he walked, he said, “Brat! Didn’t you say you wanted a duel? You even said you’d deal with one of us in less than five minutes. I’ll give you a chance!”

As he said that, he looked at fame with a cold gaze.

The man was already thinking about how he would torture this guy who did not know his place. He wanted Jackie to know the gap between them. He meant to wake Jackie up.

Frederick and the others exchanged a worried look with each other.

They did not think that Jackie could win, and felt like Jackie’s actions were all absurd. However, Jackie did not care what they were thinking at that moment.

The tiger masked man walked over, and Jackie merely said coldly, “The three of you deal with the other two. Help me stall for time.”

Frederick’s lips twitched helplessly.

In the end, he could not stop himself from saying, “Are you able to?”

Jackie could not be bothered to answer Frederick.

He started to form seals with his hands, and after a few moments, the Broken Soul Blade appeared in front of him. The vortex of energy constantly spun around him.

Ever since he learned a storm god rank technique, Jackie had experienced how terrifying it’s power was. Even at the first stage of Soul Sky, its power had already exceeded Destroying the Void.

The tiger-masked man could not help but sneer when he saw that Jackie was already starting to attack, “Do you want to die that badly? I’ll grant you your wish! Let me tell you, I love to torture people I don’t like. I really dislike you!”

“When you’re screaming in pain as I torture you later, you’d better not beg for mercy from me. It’s useless even if you do that!”

As he said that, he looked right at Jackie.

He was surprised when Jackie acted like he did not hear that threat at all. It was as if Jackie felt like his words were not worth listening to at all.

His whole body shook as he retrieved a sword from his spatial ring. Since Jackie seemed to show no emotions at all, he would use his actions to show Jackie how being tortured felt like.

He shot forward as his blade glowed in a cold light.

A massive force started to circular his sword. He aimed his sword right at Jackie's head. With a slash, the attack charged right at Jackie.

Jackie's expression did not change. Just like before, he pushed his hands forward, and the Broken Soul Blade charged forward rapidly. The gray blood's energy clashed with the other man's attack. With a massive boom, they started to hear cracks.

Before anyone could react, the masked man's sword shattered in the air.

The masked man widened his eyes and mouth as he looked at everything in shock. However, the shock did not last that long.

After the Broken Soul Blade Shattered the sword, it charged at the masked man's chest without stopping.

Chapter 3349
It was so quick, and they were not far away with. Even a chosen disciple from their clan would not be able to avoid it, let alone the tiger-masked man.

The man let out a cry of agony in the air. He clutched his chest with his hands as his face suddenly paled.

Right after that, he seemed to lose all his energy as he fell to the ground. With a bang, the man fell face first onto the ground.

Frederick was stunned. He had his mouth widened as he held his weapon with both his hands. His whole body stiffened.

After a long moment, he rubbed his eyes to make sure he was not dreaming.

Then, he let out an elated expression as he said, "He's actually so strong! We really picked up a treasure! It looks like we're saved!"

As he said that, he sounded a little choked up.

Before Jackie appeared, he had already planned for the worst.

In the worst case, he would just kill himself before he fell. Then, he would not need to be tortured. However, he felt reluctant to even entertain the thought, but there was nothing he could do about it.

Reality would not change just because he was reluctant. He just never expected to suddenly see a glimmer of hope.

After the masked man fell on the ground, he constantly rolled around in pain. He could not stop his cries of agony. Other than Jackie, the others shivered when they heard those cries.

It was easy to see how much torture the masked man was going through from those cries.

The other two masked man started to look at Jackie differently. The disdain was already gone from their faces. All there was left was fear and shock.

Jackie walked forward and looked at the two of them, “You asked me why I was laughing earlier. Let me explain it to you know. It’s just that the two of you said the exact same thing as the other two masked men earlier.”

The moment he said that, the two remaining masked men could no longer remain calm.

They suddenly understood everything. Their companions had not gone and done something else, but had died to Jackie.

The two of them took a step back. They no longer had any other thoughts in mind.

They just wanted to hurry up and leave. Jackie was too horrifying. Their companions had already died to him, so the two of them would definitely struggle. Even if they were lucky enough to not die from Jackie, there was still the other three.

If all four of them worked together, it would be incredibly difficult for the two masked men to run.

They exchanged a look, and could see what each other was thinking. Neither of them spoke as they started to retreat, attempting to distance themselves from Jackie.

However, Jackie was no idiot. He would not let them just run like that.

He looked at Frederick, “What are you all staring at? Don’t you see that those two are trying to run? Go stop them!”

Only then did Frederick react.

He immediately moved to stop the two of them, but the two of them were already ready. If they did not run at that moment, they would not be able to again. For the sake of surviving, they put in everything they had.

Frederick and the others attacked with full force as well, but they were still beaten back by the two.

Jackie could not help but shake his head at the sight. However, the two of them were still delayed enough to give Jackie enough time to do something.

Jackie activated the laws of space and disappeared from the spot.

When he appeared again, he was behind the two of them. They were terrified when they saw Jackie suddenly appearing.

Chapter 3350
The two of them never expected Jackie to be so quick. In just a blink of the eye, he was already behind them.

The dragon-masked man shook in fright. His eyes looked like they were going to pop out of their sockets.

Before he could cry out in agony, he felt a chill in his chest. With a squelch, he saw that his chest had already been pierced by Jackie. Blood flowed out like a fountain, staining his clothes.

Jackie expression was still cold.

After that stab, he quickly pulled out his blade and sent out another stab.

The snake-masked man cried out in agony as well. The two of them were no match for Jackie. More precisely, they had no right to even face Jackie.

They were just bugs that could be killed at any moment in Jackie's eyes. They were not even able to withstand Jackie's attacks, let alone fight back.

Earlier, Jackie's stabs had contained the powers of Destroying the Void and Soul Sky. Even if the two of them had used any protective techniques, they would not have been able to stop Jackie.

With two thuds, their bodies violently fell on the ground. Pain flooded their minds as they cried out in agony.

Those three who had been so arrogant earlier had become wretched dogs that were just writhing on the ground.

Soul attribute attacks left no room for doubt. No matter how strong one was, they would still not be able to withstand injuries to their souls.

Jackie slowly descended, and calmly kept his blade. He walked forward and slowly got closer to the three who were struggling on the ground.

Frederick and the others were stunned.

All of them had widened eyes as their lips twitched. They could not believe what they were seeing. They even forgot to breathe at that moment. After all, everything Jackie had done seemed unbelievable to them.

Jackie looked so unremarkable. He did not seem like some great warrior at all. He also lacked the pride of a great warrior.

Frederick's lips twitched as he whispered to Len next to him, "This is a miracle. I thought we were dead for sure. I can't believe we accidentally managed to save ourselves."

Len's pale face was gradually regaining some color.

He had been seeped in despair earlier, and had already planned on killing himself. After all, he knew very well that he would have to wait to be tortured the moment he was too injured to move. He did not want to die in such a pathetic manner.

Len took a deep breath. His hands were clenched tightly as he turned around and said emotionally, “We really were lucky. If Jackie wasn’t here. We would have been dead. We might even have been tortured.”

Saying that, he gulped emotionally. Tears were gathering in his eyes and his breathing got quicker.

He reached out and grabbed Frederick’s arm.

He said through clenched teeth, “These despicable men look at us like we’re prey. They think that we’re just livestock that they can slaughter however they want. They think we’re all trash! We finally managed to get one back!”

They had been struggling the whole time. Even though they did not say anything, they felt a lot of pressure in their hearts. It was like a large stone was pressing down on their hearts, suffocating them.

Len sniffed and continued, “Even if I don’t want to admit it, that’s still the truth. We have some strong warriors in the third grade worlds, but we still end up in a pathetic state facing the second grade worlds.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3351 - 3360 -

Chapter 3351

”Those two were like mountains planted right in front of us. Even though they knew that we have excellent geniuses in third-grade worlds who can squash them, they acted like they’d never met any! Well, they finally met one now, and I feel so much better.”

Frederick nodded emphatically.

Their group was made to go against the Hunting Alliance. They might not be willing to admit defeat, but some things would still come true even if they did not expect it, just like Len had said. They finally managed to vent some of their frustrations.

Jackie looked at the three that were on the ground with a cold look, his smirk matching the apathy on his face.

No one knew what he was thinking, but when they saw Jackie’s expression, it was obvious he was in an unforgiving mood.

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows as he looked toward the east where they had just come from.

Frederick looked at Jackie before he whispered to Len, “Why do I feel like he’s waiting for someone?”

The moment he said that, he could hear footsteps coming from the east. Everyone was on alert as they looked toward the direction before spotting a familiar face running towards them with a happy look.

He ran as he waved, “Don’t be afraid, everyone, it’s me!”

It was Alfred. Even though he had not recovered, he had already forgotten all about the pain in his body in his apparent excitement.

As he ran over, he looked toward Jackie, visibly worried as though Jackie would vanish if he was to take his eyes off of him.

Jackie’s lips curled up, liking Alfred’s personality more and more.

When he arrived next to Jackie, he started to pant, having ran his entire way here. He pulled out two bottles from his storage ring like he was offering a treasure, putting it in Jackie’s hands.

“I got some. There’s quite a lot!”

Jackie nodded gladly and said, ”Did you manage to find out about anything?”

Alfred nodded vigorously. He wiped away the sweat on his forehead as he took out a map, placing it in Jackie’s hands.

Jackie opened up the map and took a look. His lips slightly curled up, “Not bad. If they’re not lying, then it’ll be much easier to proceed!”

Alfred slapped his chest and spoke with assurance, “Don‘t worry, I used special methods to make sure this map is real. After carefully looking at it, I can verify that it’s real. Even if there’re any errors, it’ll be from their own mistakes.”

Alfred excitedly added, “The two of them still died to you. I didn’t do anything in the end, so they still died to your technique.”

Alfred deliberately lowered his voice when he said that, so no one heard him at all.

Jackie was pleased with how self- aware Alfred was being and thus nodded at him. “You’ve done well. Saving you was the best decision I’ve made recently.”

The praise caused Alfred to blush elatedly. The two of them talked, and everyone else wondered what they were speaking of.

Frederick was all curious about everything Jackie did at that moment. As the two of them talked, he tried to listen to everything they said. Alas, Frederick regrettably realized that he did not understand what they were talking about.

Chapter 3352
Frederick turned to look at the others and saw that both Len and Trent were confused as well. He then let out a slight cough and sighed helplessly.

At that moment, he was not in a good position to walk forward and ask, having a feeling that Jackie might not even answer him if he did.

Jackie put the map into Mustard Seed with a smile before he walked toward the three.

As Jackie was talking to Alfred, Rudy had run over and gathered the three individuals writhing on the floor.

At this point, they had lost all rationality, and Rudy, allowed to do with them as he pleased- practically dragged all three to the same spot.

Jackie walked over to the three of them, and with a wave of his hand, the energy in their bodies gradually slowed down. The pain decreased, and they slowly regained consciousness.

The first to sober up was the snake-masked man. The moment he did, his eyes fixated on Jackie.

He managed to collect himself, and while various ideas floated in his mind, all of them pointed to one thing, his days were numbered. Jackie would never let him go, so he would surely die.

Thinking about that, the snake-masked man let out a bitter smile, already conceding.

Jackie let out a laugh before he looked at the man. “I thought you’d beg for mercy.”

Hearing that, the snake-masked man snorted and said, “Even if I kneel and beg you, you won’t let me go anyway. I’m no idiot. If our places were swapped and I’m the one in your shoes, I wouldn‘t forgive you either. In the same way, you won’t let me off no matter how much I beg. If that’s the case, why would I waste my breath?”

Jackie pursed his lips and nodded. “You’re right. You seem much more logical than I thought. Even when you’re staring at death, you’re still level-headed. That’s quite rare. ”

Staring at death…

These words slammed into the snake-masked man unforgivingly. He started to cough violently, looking like he was about to die at any moment.

Blood flowed from the corner of his mouth. Even if he did not check his body, he knew that his soul was almost entirely corrupted. Unless he had a divine pill of sorts, he would not be able to survive the day.

The other two had regained their conscious thought as well. They looked at Jackie in fear as all of their earlier arrogance disappeared.

The tiger-masked man pointed at Jackie with a shaking finger. “You…You lied about yourself!”

Jackie rolled his eyes at this.

Excuses, again. Every time someone lost to him, excuse after excuse would come his way, and at this point, Jackie was too lazy to argue after hearing so much.

He took out the two bottles that Alfred had given him, shaking the bottles in front of them. “What do you think these are? ”

The three of them stiffened at the sudden question, looking to be on full alert.

No matter what Jackie did or said, it was definitely not to their benefit whatsoever.

The snake-masked man gulped. “How could we know what’s inside? Just tell us. We’re all sitting ducks for you to do whatever you want to, anyway.”

Chapter 3353
Jackie raised an eyebrow as he shook the bottle in his hand. The contents sounded liquid-like, given the minute sloshes heard.

“I asked you to guess because you’re very familiar with this…”

The tiger-masked man and the dragon-masked man looked at Jackie suspiciously. They wanted to know what Jackie was up to, but they wisely kept their mouths shut and waited for him to speak.

The snake-masked man, however, was different. When Jackie brought up how they would be familiar with the substance, he quickly frowned as a terrifying thought surfaced in his head.

His breathing slowly sped out and he said in a raspy voice, “It’s Heartblood. It’s their Heartblood!”

Jackie had a flash of surprise in his eyes as he gave the man a thumbs-up. “You’re smarter than I thought. You reacted so quickly. Many people can’t compete with you in that department.”

Jackie’s response proved that the snake-masked man had guessed right. The man’s face turned pale at that moment as he lost all his rationality in his anger.

He shouted right at Jackie, “How could you do that? You tortured them to death?!”

Jackie would not have blinked even if he shouted until his throat was hoarse. He was amused by what the snake-masked man said.

He snorted as he looked at the man coldly. “Don’t you think your words sound ironic? I suppose you three are the only ones allowed to be cruel, huh? You’re the ones allowed to torture us with cruel methods, but you’re complaining when I did the same?”

The snake-masked man trembled in anger as his face turned from hot red to pale white.

The tiger-masked man and the dragon-masked man were still stunned as they looked at the bottles in Jackie’s hand in horror.

Their fellow disciples had been tortured to death by Jackie, so what awaited them?

Were they going to be tortured and have their Heartblood retrieved, too?

Just thinking of this made them both tremble, and they looked like they were about to faint at any moment.

Frederick covered his mouth in surprise as his opinion of Jackie shifted once more. He had thought that Jackie was a morally upright person, but he had just seen Jackie’s cold and emotionless side. Jackie was capable of doing anything.

Frederick whispered, “We absolutely can’t offend him!”

When Trent and Len heard that, they nodded vigorously in agreement.

Jackie shook the bottle in his hand and said, “Do you think I’ll be able to get twelve million spirit crystals with this Heartblood?”

That caused the three of them to shiver again. They felt like the person in front of them was not just strong but hard to decipher as well. They could only describe Jackie as a demon that crawled out of hell.

“You won’t be able to!” snarled the snake-masked man. “You’re not a warrior from a second- grade world, you’ll just end up being surrounded if you go there! You should just throw the Heartblood away. It won’t be of use to you!”

Jackie laughed as he slowly stood up.

“I’I refuse to. Do you think I don‘t know what you’re thinking? You’re just saying that because you’re worried that I’ll torture you the same way I tortured the two of them. I regret to inform you, however, that I’ll be retrieving your Heartblood even if it was useless to me. You’re just paying for what you’ve done.”

Chapter 3354
After that, Jackie turned and shot Alfred a look. Alfred nodded before he rolled up his sleeves and walked to the three of them in excitement.

Not bothered with doing things like this, he slowly walked to Frederick, followed by Rudy.

Jackie had just been about to say something when he was interrupted by an unhappy voice, “Did you need to do that? What was the point of putting on a show in front of us? Was it fun acting?”

The person who spoke was Conor, who was heavily injured on the ground. He was helped up by Trent and was walking over when he accused Jackie loudly.

Jackie looked at Conor incredulously.

Conor sounded terribly slighted, as though Jackie owed him a hefty amount of money. His tone even baffled Trent, who stared at Conor incredulously.

How could he dare to speak to Jackie in that tone?

Frederick frowned unhappily.

As the leader of their group, he had to speak up when the time was right. “Conor, are you dizzy? What act are you talking about? How could you say something like that? I saw you crumble on the ground with heavy injuries just now. You must’ve hit your head. You should just take some rest.”

Conor’s face was incredibly dark when he heard that.

He scoffed and said nonchalantly, “It seems like you just go wherever suits you. You didn’t have this attitude before this, but you’re now lecturing me. You seem to think you’re being very reasonable, but am I wrong?”

“Was Jackie not putting on a show from the start? If we knew that he was this strong, how could we have sent him to stand guard? We wouldn’t have suffered all of this, and I wouldn’t have been heavily injured!”

As he said that, Conor glared at Jackie viciously as if he was the one who wronged him, as though his injuries were all due to Jackie.

He looked at Jackie with anger and hatred, rendering Jackie speechless.

With how Jackie was, he would not have bothered with Conor if he remained quiet by the side. After all, Jackie’s time was valuable, and he did not want to waste any time on useless people like Conor.

Conor would be dealt with by someone else eventually, anyway.

Yet, Conor was even trying to cause him trouble at that moment, acting so proudly that those who did not know the situation would have thought that he was the one who defeated the three masked men.

Rudy was so angry he was at a loss for words.

He curled up his fists and rushed forward, pointing at Conor. “Who do you think you are? What gives you the right to know what Jackie’s level is? He never acted from the start!”

“Why don’t you just call yourself ignorant? You can’t even see further than your own nose! You’re full of problems but just love talking about others. You should just shut your mouth, or you’ll end up no better than those three.”

When Conor heard that, not only was he not scared, but he even started to laugh.

Even Jackie was confused by the way he was acting.

Did Conor think that he would let him go no matter what he said?

Frederick frowned as he grabbed Conor’s arm. “Can you not talk so much? Are you trying to kill yourself here? Do you want someone to do it for you?”

Conor pulled his arm away as he looked at Frederick in disdain. He mentally rebuked the man and thought him to be a person that would latch onto whoever was stronger.

Chapter 3355
At this moment, Conor decided to not have anything to do with Frederick anymore. He was forced to team up with them due to the circumstances, but once they were out, he refused to say another word to him.

Frederick could see the disdain in Conor’s eyes, and no matter how mild-tempered he was, he would not tolerate such behavior. He scoffed and turned around, no longer bothering with Conor.

Trent looked at Conor exasperatedly, wondering if the man had hit his head too hard. Otherwise, he would have never jeered at Jackie after seeing what he was capable of.

He should be respectful toward Jackie instead, yet Conor seemed intent on offending Jackie as much as he could. Even Trent was frowning at what Conor was saying, let alone Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Conor coldly. “You sure dare to talk. Aren’t you afraid that I’ll attack you?”

Conor scoffed as he turned away. ”I know you’re not that type of person. Even though you’re skilled, you’re a man with proper conduct. It’s not like I’m provoking you. I’m just speaking the truth.”

Even Jackie could not understand what he was thinking at that moment.

Not provoking him?

His words were actually demeaning him!

Conor looked like he wanted to shout at Jackie and berate him for not telling him the truth, yet he even tried to say that Jackie was ‘a man with proper conduct‘.

Conor wanted to tell everyone that Jackie would not be acting properly if he did anything to Conor.

Hearing that, Jackie sneered. It was the first time he got so angry that he smiled.

Trent and Len looked at Conor as their lips twitched, truly believing he was a fool, through and through.

Len took a deep breath and exasperatedly demanded, ”Do you really think that way? Are you not joking?”

Conor’s face darkened when he heard that.

He shouted, “Why would I be joking? Am I wrong? If Jackie was honest with his skills in the first place, nothing would’ve happened. With him in front of us, we’d be safe. I wouldn’t have needed to get so injured! Who else would I blame?”

That was rotten logic, of course. Trent wanted to correct him, but he did not know what to say, knowing that Conor might not truly listen to any sort of reasoning. Even Rudy could not be bothered arguing with Conor.

Jackie could not stand it as he sneered. “You really do think you’re special. Why do I need to tell you about my skills? Why do I need to protect you?”

“Because we’re a team!” yelled Conor. ”Since you agreed to join this team, you have a duty to protect everyone else!”

Jackie let out a slight laugh, not wanting to bother arguing with that idiot.

No matter what he said, Conor would just think that he was wrong. Since that was the case, Jackie would grant Conor his wish.

Jackie slowly pulled out his sword from Mustard Seed.

Conor frowned, confused by his actions.

He truly believed Jackie would be of some virtue, at least, but as he felt a burning pain in his chest, he realized that Jackie’s sword had pierced through his chest.

Chapter 3356
The blood flowed as the pain registered in Conor’s mind.

Frederick and the others froze, and their expressions were unnatural. Even though they felt like Jackie would punish Conor in some way, they did not expect Jackie to outright kill him.

Conor fell to the ground the moment Jackie pulled out the sword, and he was in so much pain that he clutched his chest, trying to stop the bleeding to no avail. After all, he was already heavily injured. Coupled with that strike, no one could save him.

The color in his cheeks slowly diminished. “You dare to kill me?!”

Jackie was exasperated as his lips twitched.

He said, “Why can’t I? Why wouldn’t I dare to? Who do you think you are? I don’t know why you’re so sure that I won’t do anything to you no matter what you do.”

Blood flowed out of Conor’s mouth. He started to cough as he reached the end of his life.

As he opened his mouth, all that they could hear was the sound of blood flowing out as no proper words could be formed.

Everyone merely watched as Conor shut his eyes and passed away.

Jackie turned to look at Rudy, saying sincerely, “In the end, he never answered. What made him so certain that I wouldn’t attack him?”

Rudy frowned, deliberating on the question before he said, “He must’ve thought that you were a righteous person. Even if you kill people, you’d only kill those that needed to be killed. He felt like he did nothing wrong and that you’re the one in the wrong. That’s why he was that fearless.”

Hearing that, Jackie felt even more helpless. “He acted without regard for anything because he believed in my character? He felt like I’d forgive him no matter what he said?”

As he said that, Jackie scoffed at how ridiculous Conor was. Jackie’s moral character was only applicable to his friends. To everyone else, he did not care in the slightest.

Conor had already provoked Jackie before yet still hoped that he would save him. Jackie felt like it was a complete joke.

He did not regret killing Conor this quickly. In fact, he thought he should have left Conor alive to slowly be tortured. Only then would Conor realize how laughable his thoughts were.

At that moment, Alfred was already done as well. The three masked men could no longer hold on as they died at the same time.

Alfred took the bottles that contained the Heartblood and happily walked over to Jackie, who then placed the bottles in Mustard Seed. Even though he did not know what they could be used for, they must be incredibly useful if such a huge price was being paid for them. He would keep them and see what happened.

Meanwhile, four men in cotton robes were walking out of a valley a distance away. Their clothes seemed to be of good quality, but they were in completely different states.

The first two looked completely disheveled. Their clothes were completely ripped, and blood flowed down their robes. They had chains on their limbs, and they had an ashen look on their faces. They looked like they were about to die.

The two behind them looked to be in a much better state. Their limbs were free from chains, their bodies uninjured, and their clothes not tattered. As they walked, they chatted.

If Jackie were there, he would be able to tell that the two in front were from third-grade worlds while the two behind were from the second- grade world, the Sacred Water Continent.

They had clouds on their robes and looked incredibly arrogant.

“I don’t know what they’re thinking. It’s not like they need the spirit crystals, but they insist on having us send these over. Can’t we just get the Heartblood? Why do we need to go through so much trouble? We’ve been through so much trouble on the way. Even if we send them into their hands, we’d just get a few words of praise. I refuse to do something so tedious in the future!”

As Edson Chavez said that, he had a frustrated look on his face, evidently displeased by his situation.

Chapter 3357
Hector Moralex let out a slight laugh as he shook his head helplessly. “Can we really do anything about this? Since we’ve agreed, we should just do a good job. Stop nitpicking and complaining. Even if we’re just praised a little, it’ll be worth it if they just remember us. In the future, they can help you with anything you want easily.”

When Edson heard that, he shrugged nonchalantly. “What could I possibly need their help with? I’m pretty sure that they’ll act like they don’t know me if anything really happens. If I ask them for help, it’ll be a miracle if they don’t curse and swear at me, let alone help me.”

Hector nodded, feeling rather dejected upon hearing this. Even if he did not want to admit it, he could not change the truth. In the eyes of those geniuses, they were just there for labor meant to work for those geniuses.

The more Edson spoke, the angrier he got. He just started to complain loudly.

“It’s not like we had a choice on whether or not to agree back then. If we didn’t agree to them, it’s obvious how bad the consequences would be…”

“I looked around at that moment. Out of a hundred people, ninety-nine of them weren’t willing, but they were forced to agree in the end…”

Hector shook his head. “Whatever, pay it no mind for now. We should focus on transporting these guys.”

After saying that, Hector looked toward the two in front of them. One of them was walking with a straight back.

Pursing his lips, Hector proceeded to take a whip from his storage ring.

With a crack, it violently smacked against the man's back.

The man let out a cry of agony as he fell forward slightly.

Hector let out a satisfied smile at that. "Christian Skye, are you still refusing to admit defeat? You'll be horribly tortured soon. Rather than acting so proud, you should think about what you're about to go through."

Christian took a deep breath as hopelessness flashed in his eyes.

Still, he refused to accept defeat this way. He had gone through numerous trials and tribulations from a young age, yet he survived with all, gritting his teeth. Christian was not afraid.

He would not bend down to those demons in front of him.

Jackieson Hue, who was next to him, gazed at him worriedly before whispering, "Why are you being stubborn with them? You'll have an easier time if you just follow what they want. It doesn't mean that you're throwing away your dignity; you're just forced to do that. If we want to run, we can't be stubborn with them. It won't do us any good!"

Jackieson did not want to resign himself to his fate. Even though he was held captive by warriors from second-grade worlds, he was persistent in trying to find escape routes.

Christian sighed as he said, trembling, "But our chances of running away are very slim. The two of us are already heavily injured, and we're no match for them. Unless a miracle happens and a strong warrior from a third- grade world saves us, we won't be able to survive."

Saying that, Christian started to pale. He knew what his situation was.

He felt helpless, but there was nothing he could do about it.

Christian clenched his teeth and said, "These despicable men… I won't ever forgive them. I wish I could return the pain I'm suffering right now a hundredfold!"

Jackieson sighed.

Would they even have a chance?

Even if they did, how would they get their revenge?

As they thought about it, a figure suddenly appeared in front of them.

The two of them were stunned as they stopped in their tracks.

Both Edson and Hector shut their mouths as well.

The four of them looked forward and saw a man in deep gray robes standing right in front of them resolutely.

Chapter 3358
Whoever this newcomer was, he did not have the marks of any second-grade world on him. It was obvious that he was from a third-grade world.

Hector and Edson looked at that person.

Someone who suddenly appeared like that was ill-intent, for sure. However, when they asked for the person‘s identity, they felt all too amused.

This man jumped straight into danger!

Was he there to give them free rewards?

Jackieson and Christian stared right at the man. He looked incredibly calm as if he was untroubled by whatever it was that took place between them.

The kind-hearted Christian felt moved upon realizing he, too, came from a third-grade world. He raised his neck as he mouthed out some words without making a sound. Christian wanted him to leave.

Jackie’s lips curled up into a smile.

Just for that alone, he would save these two.

Jackie had not appeared here by coincidence. When he had Alfred stay, it was not because he wanted their Heartblood. Since time was tight, Jackie needed some information that he did not have the time to retrieve, so he left the task to Alfred.

Alfred did not betray Jackie’s expectations.

He had managed to obtain everything Jackie wanted and even made a map for Jackie. No matter how the other side looked at him, Jackie still remained calm.

He took the map out of Mustard Seed, matching it against the terrain a few times to make sure he was not wrong, and noted he would reach his goal in just another 10 kilometers.

The four of them appearing must have meant that they were going to the same place as he was.

Hector saw Jackie calmly taking out the map, looking around as if he was determining his location.

His face darkened as he looked at Jackie with a cold gaze.

What was this guy trying to do?

Jackie was ignoring him and Edson, both from second-grade worlds, and was still looking at his map!

Hector scoffed as he narrowed his eyes. “Are you just being an idiot, or are you too prideful for your own good, brat? Do you think that the two of us won’t do anything to you if you don’t attack?”

“Just look at where you are. I’ve never seen someone voluntarily giving themselves up like you are.”

Jackie’s expression remained flat as though everything Hector said were mere nonsense.

After he determined his location, he slowly put the map back into Mustard Seed.

He slowly said, “Let me give you a kind reminder, you’re the one being very prideful here. Do you really think that you can beat any third-grade warrior you meet in the slaughter game?”

Jackie wondered why the warriors from second-grade worlds were so confident.

When they faced him, they seemed to be so sure that he was a weakling before they ever saw him do anything. It was because of that attitude that every second-grade warrior who crossed Jackie paid with their lives.

When Hector heard that, he laughed as he looked at Jackie mockingly. “Are you trying to tell us that you’re a great genius from a third- grade world that can kill us?”

He laughed uproariously. It was like Jackie had said an incredible joke.

Edson, too, felt like it was hilarious as well. They looked at Jackie like they were looking at a brainless animal.

Chapter 3359
After having his fill of laughter, Edson jeeringly remarked, “Do you think we’ll just believe what you say? If you were a genius or someone slightly strong, we’d be able to tell in an instant. We’d have been on guard, but you’re not. You’re just an idiot trying to act like you’re strong in front of us!”

Hearing that, Jackie had a curious glint in his eyes.

There was a thought in his mind.

Could these people have looked into all of the geniuses of third- grade worlds?

Could they have remembered everyone who was skilled?

Comparatively, he was sort of a dark horse that had suddenly appeared, so he was not among those geniuses. That was why no one knew him.

Hector raised four fingers. “In this slaughter game, there are only four noteworthy warriors from third-grade worlds, and we’ve memorized how all four of them look like. As long as we meet them, we’d be on guard. However, not a single one of them looks like you.”

“Stop with the act; don’t think that we’re idiots. We didn’t just take part in the slaughter game for those five million spirit crystals, and we have more important things to do.”

Jackie slowly nodded.

If he did not know those secrets, he might not have understood what they meant. However, he knew very well what they meant after he found out about the Heartblood.

The Heartblood was incredibly important to them.

They had spent a great deal of effort crafting a map of the slaughter game. After that, they put up a gathering point and sent out a lot of strong second-grade world warriors inside the slaughter game to retrieve the Heartblood.

They had to have some grand plan for it, and to prevent unnecessary events from happening, they would naturally have observed the participating warriors from third-grade worlds.

The moment they saw any strong warriors from third-grade worlds entering, they would immediately take note and notify all participating second-grade world warriors, thus preventing bigger problems from arising.

Jackie sighed as he started to look around.

He did not know why they were collecting so much Heartblood, but he had decided to find out before having them pay for it. If it was something beneficial, he would take it for himself.

After thinking about that, Jackie no longer hesitated.

He looked up at Hector and Edson, coldly saying, “I’d advise the two of you to treat this seriously, then I’d at least have a good time killing you. If you look down on me, then it’ll feel like I’ m just killing livestock. It’ll be too boring.”

The moment he said that, Edson and Hector’s expressions soured.

Hector said with a huff, “Brat! You’re really crossing the line here. Since you want to die so badly, I’ll grant you your wish!”

Christian started to try and struggle against his chains, but the chains were made with a special material.

He was heavily injured as well, so he was not capable of running, though he still tried to put up a fight.

He struggled as he shouted at Jackie, “Just hurry and leave while you can! Are you crazy?! You’ll be tortured if they capture you!”

Jackieson shook his head helplessly.

He sighed, already resigning Jackie to a fate that was worse than the two of them. If they were going to be tortured for four hours before they were killed, then Jackie would be tortured for eight.

Chapter 3360
The two warriors behind them were not easy to deal with.

They were vicious and never regarded warriors from third-grade worlds as people. They merely treated them as livestock that could be killed at any moment.

Christian was struggling immensely, causing Hector to frown as he whipped Christian again.

Christian fell to the ground as his back burned hotly.

Jackie frowned, and his calm expression finally turned serious.

Those second-grade world warriors' hands were all stained with the blood of third-grade world warriors.

Jackie was someone who would ignore anything that was not too outrageous. After all, it was his belief that the world was branded with the 'survival of the fittest' notion, and death was common news. However, he could not remain calm at the current situation.

Jackie's hands moved as he formed countless seals that materialized in the air, quickly fusing together.

A faint black glow could be seen from the middle of the fusion, and a one-meter-long blade appeared in front of everyone.

Edson and Hector exchanged an incredulous look. They felt like Jackie was crazy and refused to drop whatever facade he crafted.

They had seen through him, but he still insisted on acting like he was an amazing genius. It was both hilarious and frustrating.

Hector scoffed as he took out his weapon, rushing forward. They would be too kind to him by facing him at the same time, and Hector planned on finishing things in one blow to show Jackie the gap between him and geniuses from second-grade worlds.

Jackie sighed helplessly when he saw Hector attacking alone.

The moment Hector attacked, Jackie could tell the limits of Hector's strength and estimate who he was. Even if he was from a holy grade clan, he would only be an ordinary inner disciple.

Hector could not be anything spectacular at all.

Jackie pushed his hands forward, and his Broken Soul Blade shot forward like a cannon, swiftly clashing with the sword in Hector's hand.

Everyone heard a crack as the sword shattered the moment it clashed.

Before everyone could react, the gray Broken Soul Blade had pierced through Hector's chest. The man had not even been able to cry out in agony before he fell to the ground.

The Broken Soul Blade had not diminished in strength after piercing through Hector and continued to charge toward Edson, who was not far away.

The horrified Edson lunged upward, trying to turn around and run immediately.

Hector had not held back earlier, but his weapon had been shattered right away, and he was basically punctured before slamming onto the ground.

Edson was no match for Hector, so there was no way he could fight against Jackie.

It was madness incarnate!

Jackie had not been acting or putting on a show; he really was that strong.

They were screwed, and they could never survive this! Edson was completely terrified at that moment.

He regretted doubting Jackie. If he had, he might have been able to leave. Yet, he practically stood no chance at that moment.

As the thought surfaced in Edson's mind, he felt a chill in his chest before pain flooded in his mind.

He looked down to see the same gray blade piercing through his chest. The pain of his soul being ripped apart started to spread from his chest, and his cries of agony soon followed.

The intense pain rendered him incapable of thought as he collapsed on the ground, and he then began to spasm, as did every other warrior who had been hit by the Broken Soul Blade-unable to control himself at all.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3361 - 3370 -

Chapter 3361
Jackie sighed helplessly. If it had been the two of them together, the battle might have been a bit more interesting. Yet, those two had been too confident.

They had dared to charge at him alone, so killing them was as simple as chopping up vegetables. It had not been interesting in the slightest.

Both Jackieson and Christian were stunned. They froze as their eyes widened.

Their lips constantly twitched as they looked at the two who were rolling on the ground. They did not know how to react at that moment.

Everything that had happened was just too much of a shock for them.

The chains on their arms were cut from the middle, and their arms were suddenly free. Turning around, they noticed that the chains had all been cut by Jackie, which was when they slowly started to react.

Christian's eyes were completely wide as he stared right at Jackie, unable to say anything.

Jackieson was the first to react.

He rushed to Jackie and greeted him, "Thank you, hero! Could I know your name?"

It was Jackie's first time being called a hero.

He could not stop himself from letting out a laugh before he shook his head and said, "I'm not a hero. I just couldn't stand the sight of these people."

When Jackieson saw that Christian was not doing anything, he hurriedly tugged at Christian's sleeve so he would thank Jackie with him.

Only then did Christian snap back to reality. Jackie shook his head, telling them they did not need to be that courteous. It was no big deal to Jackie. Even without the other two, Jackie would have killed Edson and Hector anyway.

He waved to those who were hiding by the side, and all of them appeared.

This time, it was not just Alfred and Rudy who came over. Even Frederick's group did as well. Christian and Jackieson were stunned when they saw so many people appearing at the same time.

Jackie gave a few brief introductions before having the two of them immediately rest to recover.

They nodded.

Jackie frowned as he looked into their injuries. After looking at them, he shook his head helplessly.

He had planned on bringing them with him, but their injuries were far too severe. Bringing them along would increase the risk too drastically, so he decided to find a safe spot for them to wait for the end of the slaughter game.

The two of them have complete trust in Jackie. No matter what Jackie said, they would follow. They found a relatively secluded spot to rest momentarily.

Jackie took out the map from Mustard Seed and showed it to everyone.

He pointed at a marked place and said, “The goal is to get to this place. It’s about ten kilometers away. It is called a small gathering point by those people. Part of them would bring heavily injured third-grade warriors over to be exchanged there…”

“After that, the ones who took the warriors would bring the injured third -grade world warriors to the endpoint. This is where we need to strike. We can save the warriors and kill the others as well. ”

After witnessing Jackie’s true skills, none of them dared to go against Jackie’s ideas.

No matter what Jackie did, they would follow him obediently. That was the advantage of the strong.

Jackie had already killed a total of seven warriors.

Chapter 3362
In order to earn more spirit crystals and end up in the top rankings, he needed to kill even more warriors from second-grade worlds.

He would end the lives of those arrogant people. That was Jackie’s final goal.

Len sighed as he summoned up the courage to say, “I’m not being cowardly, but I just feel like this is too dangerous. I know that Jackie’s talents are exceptional, but there’s always strength in numbers. If our goal is the final point, there’ll definitely be a lot of strong warriors there. It will be hard for you to avoid danger once you’re there.”

Jackie nodded, not disagreeing.

Len was right, but Jackie had already thought about that.

He looked up and told everyone, “That’s why we’ll need to work together to prevent me from getting too outnumbered. I know you’ll say that it’ll be difficult to gather the warriors from third-grade worlds. In the first place, finding them won’t be easy, but I don’t think it’s too big of a problem, since we still have enough time.”

The moment he said that everyone looked at each other.

Rudy was the closest to Jackie, so he would naturally not hold back on asking questions unlike the rest.

He turned to look at Jackie and said, “There’s still enough time? Why do you say that? The slaughter game will end when there are only a hundred left. I feel like quite a lot have probably died. It should be ending not too long later.”

The slaughter game had a total of two hundred and twenty participants, and only a hundred of them would be able to survive.

They had seen so many corpses, coupled with the ones that Jackie had killed, there should have been at least three to four dozen dead. Moreover, adding up the corpses that they did not see, Rudy felt like there should be at least sixty or seventy that were already dead.

Only another fifty or sixty needed to die for the slaughter game to end.

It probably would not take that much time, but Jackie seemed to think that they would still be in the slaughter game for quite a while.

Jackie let out a laugh as he looked into the distance.

His tone was soft but exceptionally firm, “We’ll still be here for at least a week.”

Everyone was stunned at those words as they looked at Jackie with confused expressions.

At that moment, no one voiced any questions and merely waited for Jackie to answer.

Jackie’s skills were amazing which caused Jackie’s words to sound more convincing.

He sighed and said, “Those two did not kill Christian and Jackieson right away, and instead took them to be exchanged. After that, they would be taken to somewhere further away…”

“Normally, they would not need to go through so much trouble at all. Even if they wanted the Heartblood, there’s no need to transport them so far away and let them live till the final destination. They have to have a reason for that…”

“Of the corpses we’ve seen and the ones that have died at my hands, there are about thirty to forty people. Normally, your guess would be right. There should be a lot more corpses that we didn’t see. However, due to the current situation, I disagree with your thinking…”

“There are probably a lot of warriors from the third-grade worlds that have been injured and are being sent to the final destination where we can’t see them. They would die immediately and will be slowly tortured.”

Chapter 3363
When Rudy heard that, he shivered.

He absolutely hated the warriors from second-grade worlds. They could no longer be called human, but demons that crawled out of hell.

However, Rudy still asked, “Why do they need to go through so much trouble? What’s the advantage of delaying things for so long? If they want the Heartblood, wouldn’t it be simpler for them to get it right after they deal with the warriors? There’s no need to waste so much time and effort.”

Jackie took a deep breath and said with some uncertainty, “I think that they’re purely doing it to delay things. Only by delaying the time long enough will they be able to kill all of the warriors from third-grade worlds and obtain even more Heartblood…”

“Just think about it. Those warriors from the second-grade worlds gathered so much information to be able to pull this off. They even put in so much effort to create the maps and offered so much spirit crystals as rewards.”

“Everything points to the fact that they have some grand plan. Since they had spent so much effort and so many spirit crystals, they would naturally need to make things thorough…”

“They won’t allow any warriors from third-grade worlds to step out of space. I feel like those madmen might even start attacking the warriors from second-grade worlds in the end.”

Len’s lips twitched as he rubbed his head, unable to stop himself from saying, “If your guess is right, then it’s just crazy. I don’t even want to think about what’s going to happen next. ”

Frederick sighed, “They’re all madmen in the first place. To accomplish their goals, they’ll stop at nothing. They kill people like livestock, so we can’t think of them as regular people. I even feel like nothing they do will be normal.”

As he said that, Frederick was full of hatred.

Everything they did showed that they did regard warriors from third-grade worlds as humans.

They merely saw them as sacrifices to extract every bit of value from. Frederick absolutely hated them just thinking about it.

Jackie looked up slightly and said, “All of the warriors from the third-grade worlds who entered this space have been remembered by the warriors from the second-grade worlds. They’ll count the numbers, and they won’t let anyone off.”

Jackie’s guess caused distress to everyone there. Even though it sounded absurd, the fact that he was saying it made it even more believable.

It might very well be the truth.

If all of that were true, then what awaits for them would be several times more dangerous than they thought. Even if they hid, the madmen from the second-grade worlds would just slowly stall for time until every single one of them was found.

They would not have anywhere to hide, and only cruel torture awaited them.

Jackie sighed helplessly, “That’s why my plans aren’t for the sake of revenge, but because we have to do this. Even those four who are incredibly strong will end up being killed after being pursued by large numbers of warriors. Even they wouldn’t be able to escape, so we’re doing this for self-preservation.”

Jackie’s words served as an alarm in their heads. Even if they were scared, they had to put all of that aside.

It was because they were already forced into a corner. There was no point in continuing to hide. They would be found in the end.

Jackieson asked shakily, “Are you sure they won’t let anyone off? If they just can’t find someone, will they continue to stall for time until the last person is found?”

Chapter 3364
He had naturally said that because he still had some hope in his heart. After all, Jackieson’s skills were not great.

In the group, he was only stronger than Alfred and Rudy. Facing warriors from second-grade worlds, he was just cannon fodder. He was also heavily injured at that moment, so there was no way he would be useful at all.

Jackieson felt like the only thing he could do was to find a safe place to hide and wait for the end result.

Jackie looked at Jackieson helplessly, saying in a cold voice, “There’s no way anyone will be let go. Just think about it. The warriors from the second-grade world are using cruel methods that can’t be tolerated. If the news gets out, what will the warriors from third-grade worlds do?”

“They’ll definitely team up to go against all the warriors from second-grade worlds. Then, things won’t be good for them in the future…”

“To stop something like that from happening, there’s no way they can spare anyone. The slaughter game has a high death rate in the end. The warriors from third-grade worlds have a sixty to seventy percent chance of dying…”

”If it got any worse, it’d be seventy or eighty percent. As long as no one mentions anything, the warriors from the third-grade worlds won’t find out about this secret for the moment. Even if they did notice, it would require the other worlds to realize something was wrong too.”

Jackie’s explanation caused everyone to understand.

Rudy frowned and said, “So they’ll stall for time as long as possible, and not let anyone who finds out about this survive. It’s pointless to hide. They’ll do everything they can to find those who are hiding.”

Jackie nodded.

After that, he said the horrifying truth again, ”They’re incredibly prepared. Before the slaughter game, they must have already thought about all the potential problems…”

“They would have thought about people hiding from them as well. They won’t let anyone go, so they must’ve figured out a plan against that too. They might have brought in something special to find the hidden warriors.”

Jackieson’s expression stiffened as he started to pale.

He looked down with a pained expression, “Why are they doing this?! Why do they need to be so cruel?! Do they see everyone else as animals?”

Christian frowned and said, ”Are you trying to reason with the warriors from second-grade worlds? If they had any humanity, they wouldn’t have done all this. The fact that they’re doing this means they don’t see us as human at all.”

“They’re killing us like livestock. They won’t feel guilty about it at all. Why are you being so naive right now, asking why they’re being so cruel? Do you even need to ask?”

Jackieson gulped, going completely silent.

Christian clenched his fists tightly, ”Those people will pay! Even if I die, I’ll drag them down with me. These animals need to die!”

Jackie looked at Christian and patted Christian on the shoulder, “You probably won’t die. As long as all of us work together, we won’t die here. What we need to do right now is fight back! We need to find all of the warriors from third grade worlds that are still alive to launch a counterattack. If things go on, our only end is death!”

Christian nodded vigorously, “You’re right! If we don’t fight back, the end will just be even worse!”

Len looked at Jackie before he looked at the emotional Christian, “How are we going to find the other warriors? We were only able to form our group out of coincidence as we happened to meet on the road…”

“Are we going to scatter all over and try to find warriors from third grade worlds to convince them to join us?”

Chapter 3365
Jackie shook his head, saying seriously, “That would be too dangerous and inefficient. The more time we delay, the more dangerous it will get. We need a better way.”

Rudy got excited at that, ”What way?”

Jackie glanced at Rudy, not answering his question.

At the valley ten kilometers away was a meeting point for the second-grade world’s warriors. At that meeting point were two warriors with bamboo hats.

They looked incredibly lazy as they chatted. They were disciples from the same clan. The older one on the left was called Manuel Herro, while the one on the right was Marc Loon.

Manuel shook his head and said, “I don’t know what those big shots are thinking. Is there a need to make such a big fuss? We’ve basically been laboring so much because of that…”

“I wasn’t even planning on taking part in the slaughter game. A test like this isn’t worth it for me, but I was still forced to come here.”

Marc sighed helplessly, ”Why do we always end up in difficult things together? You were forced in, but so was I. That person said that I would have to give a lot of Heartblood if I didn‘t join this.”

“However, if I joined, I won’t need to offer a lot of Heartblood, and I would get rewards as well. He made me choose, but isn’t he just threatening me? Did I really have a choice? I just had to lower my head and say yes.”

Manuel sighed before his eyes lit up and he said, “Do you know why they need so much Heartblood for? Is it to activate some treasure or make some weapon? Maybe it’s to lure out something amazing.”

Marc smiled in exasperation, “Manuel, if you don’t know, then how would I? All we can do is listen to them. At least the ones who are dying aren’t warriors from second-grade worlds. ”

Manuel nodded with a smile, ”You’re right. We’re not the ones dying anyway. The warriors from the third-grade worlds should just die. It’s better if all of them die…”

“They still don’t know what they’ll be facing in the future. I don’t know what the point of the Heartblood is, but there‘s something I did find out. Those people already decided that they would not let any warriors from third-grade worlds leave this place to prevent any third-grade worlds from seeking revenge after finding out. Even though we wouldn’t be scared of that, it’s still unnecessary trouble.”

Marc raised an eyebrow, “Are they even worthy of revenge? They’re just trash. We don’t have to bother with them at all. There’s an uncrossable gap between second and third-grade worlds. The difference in strength is immense. They would pay a drastic price if they wanted revenge. I don’t think they would dare to do it.”

Saying that, both of them got a bit excited.

In their eyes, warriors from third-grade worlds were completely beneath their notice.

The third-grade worlds were not worthy of standing on the same field as them at all. They were enjoying criticizing the third- grade world. They insulted the third-grade world constantly.

After talking for a long time, Manuel interrupted Marc.

“Let’s stop talking about that first. We can’t forget our job. We’ll be punished if there are any mistakes. It’s already four hours, where’s Hector? Could something have happened along the way?”

Marc smiled and said, “How could anything have happened? Hector is still an inner disciple of a holy grade clan. Among the warriors from the third-grade worlds, only the strongest of them would be able to stand up to Hector… I think you’re being too worried.”

Manuel nodded slowly, “You’re right, but for some reason, I have an uneasy feeling in my heart. Could I just be overthinking things?”

Chapter 3366
Marc let out a laugh before he nodded and said, “You’re just overthinking things. This is just a simple exchange job. What sort of accident could happen? The two of them must be late because they’re slacking off.”

Hearing Marc’s words, Manuel felt a bit exasperated.

He turned to look at Marc seriously, “I feel like you’re being so optimistic. Even though the warriors from the second-grade worlds this time are stronger than usual, there might still be some accidents that can happen. The third-grade worlds still have some strong warriors on their side.”

When Marc heard that he shook his head in an uncaring manner, “What sort of surprises could there be? You’re right, there are some strong warriors from the third-grade worlds, but we already know about all of them. We can just avoid them if we see them. Those two shouldn’t be that stupid…”

“As for the rest, you don’t have to be concerned. The two of them are still from a holy grade clan. They aren’t even regular outer disciples, but inner disciples. Normal warriors from a third-grade world wouldn’t be a match for them at all. There shouldn’t be any surprises.”

Manuel nodded, feeling like Marc made sense. However, he still could not stop himself from worrying.

He kept on feeling like something unexpected might happen, but he could not say why. The strange feeling kept on persisting. Then, they suddenly saw a figure slowly walking toward them.

The person’s clothes were familiar.

They had gray robes with blue clouds on them. It looked like a warrior from the second-grade world, the Sacred Water Continent.

Looking at that figure, Marc pointed over with a smile, “Speak of the devil, isn’t that Hector? That’s strange… Why is he alone? Where is Edson?”

“Where are the people they’re supposed to be sending? Didn’t the sound array say that they managed to capture two warriors? Why is he alone? Did something really happen?”

As they said that, both of them froze as they started to go on alert.

It was still far away, and Marc shouted at the person, “Hector, what’s your situation?! Why are you alone? Where did Edson and the ones you captured go?”

The person did not answer Marc and merely continued to slowly walk toward them. That was when both of them started to feel like something was amiss.

Manuel frowned as he stared at the person.

After observing the person, he whispered, “There’s something wrong with this person. He’s not Hector. Just look at how he’s lowering his head and not letting us see his face!”

The moment he said that, the person in front of them looked up.

They saw that it was not Hector. It was a man wearing Hector’s robes. The man looked a few years younger than Hector.

His gaze was firm and his footsteps were steady. Even when he was being observed, his expression did not change. It was like nothing that was happening around him mattered to him at all.

Marc turned to look at Manuel. Both of them felt something off.

Marc narrowed his eyes and said coldly, “Who are you? Why are you wearing Hector’s clothes?”

The person who was wearing Hector’s clothes was Jackie.

He had put on a disguise to get closer. He thought that he would have been noticed immediately, but those two had let down their guards too much.

When he walked over, they had not tried to check him with their senses at all. Instead, he was allowed to get closer to them.

It was only when he was thirty meters away did they notice something wrong.

Chapter 3367
Manuel frowned as he coldly looked at Jackie, “Speak when you’re spoken to! Who are you?!”

Jackie smiled, not continuing to go forward as he straightened his body, letting the other two observe him.

Manuel’s lips twitched, “Did I jinx it? I was right, something did happen to the two of them!”

The moment he said that, Marc produced a patrol charm from his spatial ring.

His hands started to form seals that went into the patrol charm. The charm glowed yellow before it started to crumble, fusing into the surrounding space. A strong sensory wave exploded outward incredibly quickly.

Jackie could clearly feel that wave observing his body before it started to stretch further back.

After taking a breath, the wave stopped. With Marc at the center, he had managed to observe a kilometer-wide radius.

Marc said in surprise, “There’s no one! Other than this brat, there’s no one hiding around us!”

The patrol charm was a high-grade array that would scout everything within a kilometer when it was activated. Every living being would be sensed. After using it, Marc was shocked to notice that there was only one person there. No ambushes were lying in wait.

He was so shocked that he did not know what to say.

Manuel turned around after Marc said that. He had a look of surprise in his eyes as well. Both of them felt like it was unbelievable.

They thought that Jackie was just a scout and that there should have been quite a few people lying in wait around them, trying to surround them. Expectedly, that person was acting alone.

What was he trying to do?

Was he trying to face both of them?

Was he that confident in himself?

Marc scoffed and said to Jackie, ”Brat, did you come alone?!”

Jackie nodded calmly, admitting it without any hesitation.

Marc was speechless when Jackie nodded.

That guy really was honest. Jackie had actually answered him just like that.

Jackie’s expression was incredibly calm as well as if he was not afraid that they knew.

Marc had a look of disdain on his face, “Where did you get those clothes? What are you here for? Don’t tell me you’re here to kill us?!”

Jackie laughed as he answered the man slowly, “These clothes are Hector’s. You’re right, I did come here to kill you, but I don’t plan on killing you immediately. I need some information from the two of you. I’ll only kill you after I learn what I need to.”

Both Marc and Manuel were stunned when they heard what Jackie had to say, as well as Jackie’s calm expression when he said all of that.

They were confused and shocked, finding something incredibly odd about what was happening.

Marc said, “I don’t know this kid. I’ve never seen him from the images they sent. Did I forget, or is this guy just crazy?”

Chapter 3368
Manuel turned to look at Marc.

He took a deep breath before he shook his head, “You’re not mistaken. I’ve never seen this kid either. However, we can’t underestimate him. Everything about him is strange. We shouldn’t fall for his tricks.”

Marc frowned as he said in an incredulous tone, “What kind of tricks can he have? This kid might seem a little strange, and his words might be hilarious, but there’s no way he can face the two of us alone. No matter what, we’re still from a holy grade clan, and we’re above average among the inner disciples.”

“Unless it’s one of those four, we don’t have to worry at all. I feel like Hector and Edson must have stumbled upon something problematic on the way, and Hector must have died for this kid. He should be a little skilled, but that victory went to his head. He must think he can beat the two of us alone, and came here for the rewards…”

After he said that, Marc started to laugh at Jackie mockingly.

He felt like Jackie was just an idiot who had let one win go to his head, thinking that no one could beat him.

Manuel did not agree with Marc’s thoughts.

He turned to look at Marc seriously as he said quickly, “Don’t be too optimistic. Be careful. Even though what you said sounds reasonable, it doesn’t mean it’s the truth. What if this kid is so skilled that both of us can’t defeat him?”

Marc frowned as he looked at Manuel unhappily, “Manuel, you’re being too careful lately. What I’m saying is the answer, there’s no way it’s anything else. If he’s really that strong, why didn’t we get any of his images? Today, the leaders have made so much preparations.”

“How could they have missed out on anything? All of the exceptional geniuses have been noted down by them. They’ve already looked into all of the participants from the third-grade worlds carefully. After figuring things out, they managed to determine the four most dangerous ones as well as two stronger ones. This kid isn’t among them!”

Manuel gulped as he said anxiously, “That’s not a guarantee! We should still be careful. Let’s attack together later. You have to use your full force! We need to kill him in one blow!”

Even though Marc felt like Manuel was being an overly cautious coward, he still nodded in the end, indicating that he would put his all to prevent anything unexpected.

Jackie calmly stood in front of them, not showing any emotion as he listened to their discussions.

Marc looked at Jackie for a while, and could not help but ask, “Brat, looks like you’re very confident. Do you think you can kill both of us?”

Jackie laughed as he said calmly, “Killing both of you is just too easy. I just listened to the two of you talk because I wanted to see how you would decide to attack. You’d better attack me together. That would be a bit more interesting for me.”

Both of them were stunned when they heard Jackie’s words. He was really crossing the line.

They exchanged a look of anger and no longer waited. The two of them rushed at Jackie at the same time.

When Jackie saw their attack, he finally moved. His hands constantly moved as he formed seal after seal, condensing into a blade in the air.

His expression did not change as he pushed his hand forward. The Broken Soul blade shot right at the two of them. With a boom, their techniques clashed in the air.

Right after that, two cries of agony could be heard.

Chapter 3369
Manuel and Marc clutched their chests at the same time as their expressions twisted in pain. Both of them collapsed on the ground at the same time, and the swords in their hands shattered from Jackie’s broken Soul Blade.

The two of them constantly writhed on the ground like a worm that had been cut into two.

Jackie smiled, not hesitating to walk toward both of them.

At a cave ten kilometers away, Rudy and the others were sitting down cross-legged. A few of them had serious expressions on their faces, especially Jackieson. He had a hint of hopelessness on his face as well.

Jackie had left alone to deal with the two who were at the meeting point while the rest of them were made to stay in the cave.

Frederick and Len were not there but had gone to contact others. The ones who remained had sunken looks on their faces. As time passed, all of them started to feel like Jackie’s guess was the actual truth. However, the more certain they were of it, the more fear they felt.

They were in a battle to death with only one side who could win and have the right to leave this space.

Jackieson regretted participating in the slaughter game. He had thought that he would not die if he was just a bit careful.

After he entered, he found that the situation was incredibly different.

If Jackie had not saved him earlier, there was no way he would still be alive.

The more he thought about it, the more his body trembled in fear.

Christian was not much better either. At that moment, he was constantly thinking about what Jackie had said the other day.

As the few of them were deep in their thoughts, Christian suddenly voiced a question, “Why are they just leaving the corpses there for all to see? After they have killed and gotten the Heartblood, they could have just dealt with the bodies…”

“Even if they just burned the bodies away, it would be better than just putting those bodies on display. At the very least, we wouldn’t have overthought things, and we would not have been able to figure things out…”

“Wouldn’t it be easier for them if we did not know anything? Jackie would not have been able to guess their goal.”

When that was said, everyone looked up at the same time.

Christian was right, but the others could not figure it out.

Rudy said with a frown, “They have to have a reason that they’re doing this! There’s no way they would make such a rudimentary mistake with such an intricate plan. We just can’t figure out why.”

Trent said, “I feel like anything they do would be beyond my comprehension. They’re not even humans in my mind anymore. They’re just a bunch of deviants. I wouldn’t be surprised no matter what they did.”

Rudy was a bit exasperated when he heard that, “Even if they are, we should still try to figure out what they’re thinking. Knowing your enemy is the first step to victory. Only by figuring things out will we be able to figure out a plan. I don’t thinkI can, though. Why don’t all of you discuss it together.”

The others exchanged looks of helplessness.

Chapter 3370
Jackieson said, “I just can’t understand anything they do anyway. I can’t figure out why they would do this and let us figure out their goals. Would they have anything to gain from that? I feel like there are only negatives…”

“We’ll end up fighting back, and the more cowardly ones will end up hiding, causing them even more trouble. Dragging things might not be good for them.”

Christian nodded emphatically, feeling like Jackieson was right.

After Trent thought for a long time, he suddenly said, “Don’t use our logic on them. Since they’ve done it, it must benefit them in some way. When we notice something wrong with the situation, we won’t just fight back. We will also start to feel fear. We’ll constantly be tortured by fear.”

”Fear and pain are things that can speed up blood essence flowing into the heart. That’s also why they’re torturing us. Pain will cause blood essence to flow into our hearts and form Heartblood.”

When he said that, everyone widened their eyes.

Rudy nodded and shot Trent a thumbs up.

“You’re still the most reliable one. Why didn’t I think about that? That has to be the reason. All these people are putting in so much effort to gather even more Heartblood. Even though we still don ‘t know what it’s used for, there has to be a reason they’re putting in so much effort for it!”

Jackieson’s expression froze as he started to tense up.

He said in a rough tone, “Those despicable animals are even worse than I thought. In order to torture us, they’re tryng everything they can. We shouldn’t fall for it…”

“We really are living in fear at the moment. We’re afraid of the future and afraid of the uncertainty of death. It causes us to feel even more tortured. I can even feel my blood essence flowing into my heart, fulfilling their wishes!”

As he said that, pain could be seen in Jackieson’s eyes.

Jackieson hated the warriors from the second-grade worlds incredibly deeply. He wanted nothing more than to rip them apart, but his abilities were limited, so he was forced to suffer in this endless pain.

Christian sighed as he looked into the distance, “This has always been a world where the strong dominated. I thought that I was already used to cruelty, but it looks like I was too naive. I never expected this world to be so much crueler than I had thought.”

No one could hold back from sighing. No matter what they did, there was no way they could change the situation in front of them.

They were forced to hope that someone as strong as Jackie would be able to turn the tables. At the very least, they wanted to leave this place alive.

Trench said helplessly, “I wonder how Jackie is doing. Could he have stumbled on anything inconvenient?”

In truth, Trent wanted to ask if Jackie would be in danger, but he changed what he said. After all, someone as strong as Jackie would not be in any danger unless Jackie wanted to.

He was worried that something unexpected would happen to Jackie because Jackie was the hope in his heart. If anything happened to Jackie, then they would lose their last flicker of hope.

Trent despaired just thinking about it.

Right at that moment, they heard footsteps coming from outside, and everyone was on full alert.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3371 - 3380 -

Chapter 3371
Len was the first to stand up.

He took out his weapon from his storage space and stared out in alarm. When he saw that Jackie was the one there, he let out a sigh of relief.

Jackie was dragging Manuel and Marc into the cave, with both of them completely tied up. He tossed the both of them inside, and they let out cries of agony as they started to roll on the ground.

When all of them saw that sight, they were completely relieved.

Jackie had perfectly accomplished his task, getting the two of them back here without being injured at all. Even though they expected the result, they were still a little worried before they saw it for themselves.

Jackie looked over at them and merely nodded before he walked over to Marc and Manuel.

He kicked Manuel, causing Manuel to grunt before he rolled on the floor.

Jackie controlled the power of the Broken Soul Blade and had not destroyed Manuel's soul too much. At that moment, both of them were still conscious.

Manuel was trembling in pain, but he clenched his teeth and bore with it, not crying out in agony.

When he was tossed into the cave, he looked around and seemed to have figured something out when he saw so many warriors from third-grade worlds gathered there. He looked down, gesturing like he was not willing to talk.

Marc was not as resolved as Manuel was.

He was crying out in pain, pleading to Jackie, "Please let me go! Once I get out, I won't say anything! As long as you let me go, I'll give you anything you want!"

Seeing his fellow disciple being so soft, Manuel scoffed as he said in a low voice, "Even if you get on your knees and beg, he won't let you go. Where do you think this is? If he kills you, he'll get five million as reward and add another body to his name. Just think about it. If you were him, would you let yourself go?"

Marc shut his eyes despondently, not willing to believe it. However, his reason told him that Manuel was right.

If he was in Jackie's position, there was no way he would let him off.

Marc bit his lips and he shut his mouth hopelessly. He silently bore with the pain.

Jackie laughed as he coldly looked at Manuel. He slowly knelt and looked into Manuel's resolute eyes.

"You're more stubborn than I thought. I definitely won't let you go, but there's something both of you need to understand. I can kill you quickly or I can slowly torture you until you die. It's your choice to make."

The moment he said that, Marc started to shake in fear as he looked at Jackie with an open mouth.

He could not find the words at that moment, even forgetting to ask for mercy. All he could feel was hopelessness and despair.

Manuel looked at Jackie coldly, refusing to say anything.

Jackie did not plan on listening to them and merely said, "Both of you, listen up, tell me everything you know, and I'll end you quickly. If you lie or refuse to talk, then what awaits you is endless torture… I have all the time in the world. I can slowly play around with your two."

Marc gulped as he tried to shrink back, yet he had been tied up very well. He was not able to move much at all.

At that moment, the cave was incredibly silent. No one spoke.

Rudy and the others quietly stood behind Jackie, and Marc and Manuel were both in a complicated mood.

Chapter 3372
After a long moment, Marc said as he trembled, "I don't know a lot. What do you want to know…"

Before he could finish, Manuel stopped him, "Are you really that spineless? They haven't even started torturing us, and you're already in such a hurry to help them. Don't let me look down on you!"

Hearing that, Marc was anxious as well.

He mumbled, "What's there to be stubborn about? It's not like I'm betraying our clan, I just don't want to sell my soul for them. I was threatened to come into this place in the first place!"

"Why do I need to help them guard their secrets?! In the end, I'll die anyway, so why don't I die a quicker death? At least I won't be tortured. It's not like doing this will…"

Hearing that, Manuel scoffed, "You really are spineless. Even if it's not for their sake, you have to remember that you're a warrior from a second-grade world. You're not on these people's side. For the sake of your dignity, you shouldn't toy around like that. You're just saying whatever they want you to do, what a coward!"

Marc's face reddened in anger, unable to say anything.

Rudy frowned as he snorted before he said, “Will things end well just because you Show some backbone? At least being spineless will grant him a quick death. If you clench your teeth and bear with it, you’ll just be tortured for even longer.”

“Once we capture even more people, we’ll manage to figure things out eventually anyway. You being stubborn just feels like a joke to me. It’s one thing if you want to be a joke, but you‘re even forcing someone else to follow you. What kind of hero do you think you are?”

Manuel clenched his teeth and said, “We’re just prisoners that you can do anything you want with right now anyway. You’d seem to be in the right no matter what you say, but don’t be so pleased with yourselves. You wanted the truth, right?!”

“Then let me tell you! None of you will be able to leave this place alive. Once I die, you’ll be following me! Remember! It’s all of you!”

After saying that, Manuel started to laugh out loud in a cruel manner.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he started to show some interest.

Manuel’s words had the opposite effect of what he wanted. He had wanted to threaten Jackie and the rest of them, but the moment he revealed the truth, it had proven Jackie’s thoughts were right instead.

Jackie narrowed his eyes and looked at Manuel coldly.

He said slowly, ”Actually, I already knew about that even if you didn’t say it. Didn’t you already plan to not let a single warrior from third-grade worlds walk out of this place?”

“If we die, it would save you a lot of trouble. The warriors from second-grade worlds who entered this time were all meticulously chosen by certain people. All of them are skilled and intelligent. In order to get even more Heartblood, you’ll stoop to any method…”

“I know that they’re controlling the number of deaths. By doing so, they would have unlimited time to use. After all, only after a hundred and twenty people die will the slaughter game end. You’ll use this time to the fullest, finding every single hiding warrior and making sure you torture every single one of them to obtain even more Heartblood!”

As Jackie said that, Manuel’s expression gradually darkened. That was because everything Jackie said was completely true.

When Jackie saw that Manuel’s face was darkening, he felt like everything he had speculated was completely true.

Chapter 3373
He really did hit it right on the mark. Those crazy people were far too cruel.

Jackie took a deep breath as a resolved look showed in his eyes. All of his decisions were right. There were no problems at all. It looked like he would be fighting a long battle with those people after this.

If they wanted to survive in this place, they would have to make those people pay. That way, they would be able to reduce the losses and end the slaughter game faster.

The others could see that as well.

Jackieson's face was as white as a sheet of paper. He started to get emotional again as his hands trembled. He even started to lose his footing a bit as he took a deep breath. Barely managing to stop himself from falling to the ground.

The others had sour looks on their faces as well.

Since Jackie's thoughts had been verified, it meant that they had a bitter battle ahead of them. A lot would die from the battle, but dying was still better than being tortured to death. At least they would not go through so much pain before they died.

Jackie sighed as he slowly stood up. He had a dark look on his face as well.

No matter how strong Jackie was, he could not stand up against absolute numbers. That was the truth. He needed others to help him to end the game.

Jackie took a few deep breaths as he composed himself, lowering his head as he asked again, "Just tell us everything you know. I actually already know a lot…"

"If you don't tell me more, I won't have the patience to play around with you anymore. I'll just start letting you suffer to pay for those dead souls!"

Marc was so scared that he almost stopped breathing.

He hurriedly said, "I'll talk! I'll tell you everything, but I don't know that much. I don't know if you already know what I do…"

Marc no longer cared about anything else at that moment. Just like he had said earlier, he did not want to suffer for those people. Even if he kept his mouth shut, he had nothing to gain for it.

What awaited him was incredibly cruel and torturous. He could not even stand thinking about it.

At that moment, Manuel was in no state to stop him. He was deep in shock, and various thoughts were swimming in his head.

Manuel was in a panic at that moment.

Marc said anxiously, "I actually don't know a lot! I just know a little. The strongest geniuses of Sacred Water Continent and Golden Continent are all working together. They threatened us and made us listen to them, helping them obtain Heartblood."

"We might be inner disciples of holy grade clans, but we're still not on their level in the end. If we didn't follow what they wanted, we would just be targeted by them. That's why we ended up coming into this place to help them do all these unbelievably cruel things…"

Jackie could not help but sneer when he heard all of that.

Marc was quite smart to try and clear his own name, but Jackie was not someone who would believe in someone's innocence from a few words.

Marc only regretted what he did because of his current situation. He was surrounded by warriors from third-grade worlds that would torture him at any moment.

Jackie shook his head and said, "Continue!"

Marc gulped, continuing, "Our task was to receive those people… Those…"

Chapter 3374
Before he could finish, someone could be heard from outside, "We found someone!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, stopping Marc from continuing as he stood up to head out of the cave.

He saw an excited Frederick leading a group of people over.

When the group entered the cave, the spacious cave suddenly felt a bit small. Frederick excitedly introduced everyone to Jackie.

The one in front was the strongest disciple from Frederick's clan. He was one of the four strongest third-grade world warriors that entered the slaughter game.

His name was Agelt Wryn. Just from his attire alone, it was easy to tell that he was no ordinary person.

Jackie nodded at that person.

Before they got there, Frederick had already talked about Jackie and described Jackie's skills as well. Even though Agelt felt like Frederick was exaggerating things, he trusted that Frederick would not exaggerate by that much. Hence, he knew that Jackie was definitely no ordinary warrior.

When it came to the strong, they all had very similar attitudes.

Agelt ignored all of those people behind Jackie, and merely nodded at Jackie to show respect.

Jackie nodded at him as well. Agelt motioned with his hand for them to sit down to talk.

In order to ally himself with even more warriors from third-grade worlds, Jackie had thought of a plan.

He wanted all of them to use sound arrays to broadcast Jackie's hypothesis, doing as much as they can to contact even more warriors. Then, they would find a place for them to gather.

Frederick was lucky enough to meet one of his fellow disciples that could contact Agelt.

After everyone sat down, Agelt anxiously said, “Are you sure they’ll try to kill all of us?”

Jackie nodded seriously as he looked at Agelt meaningfully.

Sure enough, it was just as he thought. Those stronger warriors thought about escaping before fighting back when they heard about this.

Agelt had asked that question simply because he wanted to know if he would be able to survive if he did not participate.

When Jackie nodded, Agelt’s face paled a little. However, those who were strong were naturally more confident.

He took a deep breath and said helplessly, “So we’ll have to face them to death! Either they die, or we do!”

Jackie nodded again.

A warrior from Chaos Continent behind Agelt frowned and said, ”These dogs are really crossing the line here. Just because we weren’t fighting back, they act however they please. They’re even trying to kill all of us off. I’ve already made my decision. Even if I die, I‘ll drag a few of them with me! I won’t let them have all their fun!”

The moment he said that, quite a few people agreed with him. All of them raised their hands, indicating that they would make their enemies pay even if they had to die.

When Jackie saw how invested they were, he suddenly felt more confident.

It seemed like they were still quite intelligent. They knew that it would be an intense battle and that a lot would die. They could very well die themselves which was why they said they would drag a few down even if they had to.

Agelt turned to look at them with a slightly cold expression before he looked back at Jackie, “Do you have any good plans?”

Jackie looked up and said seriously, “The plan is simple, we break them down one by one, and then we fight them to the death. Even if these warriors from second-grade worlds are all strong, there are not many who are well and truly skilled…”

“I’m more worried about fighting an all-out battle. Their numbers far exceed ours, we’d end up being on the defensive side. So we have to focus on eliminating them one by one after this. That would take some pressure off of me.”

Chapter 3375
After Jackie said all of that, the others did not feel anything wrong, but Agelt frowned as an unhappy glint flashed in his eyes.

He felt like Jackie was being arrogant.

Jackie did not seem to care about anyone else at all, wanting to use his own strength to solve the problem. Everyone else would just assist him.

Agelt took a deep breath, thinking to himself that Jackie was unbelievably arrogant.

Jackie wanted him to be a support member?

What gave him the right to decide that?

Agelt had never seen Jackie's skills and merely felt like Jackie was just a better-than-average warrior that could not be compared to himself.

Jackie saw the unhappiness and disdain in Agelt's eyes and knew what Agelt was thinking. However, he did not care.

As time passed, Agelt would find out who to put his hopes on.

That warrior from White Marsh Continent rubbed his face and sighed, "I don't know how many have been taken away by them, and what they're going through… I was almost captured earlier. Thankfully, I was smart enough to run without a second thought the moment I saw someone coming over…"

"My fellow disciple thought I was being paranoid and didn't flee with me. In the end, he was captured, and I don't even know if he's dead or alive."

As he said that, he clenched his fists furiously.

Alfred said angrily, "I'll make sure these despicable animals pay the price! I'll make them beg for mercy!"

He had been tortured initially. If Jackie had not saved him, Alfred would probably have been captured and sent to a certain location, going through various forms of torture.

They wanted to kill all of the warriors from second-grade worlds. They wanted the warriors of second-grade worlds to feel the fear and pain they have experienced.

After an hour, Len brought some men over as well. Jackie was happy to see that Len had also found one of the four strongest warriors.

That person was Braum Rock from Chaos Continent.

Braum, was different from Agelt. Braum already knew about Jackie. After all, White Marsh Continent and Chaos Continent had been with the warriors of Hestia Continent in the level seven cities.

Jackie had given the warriors from those two continents a deep impression. It was natural that Braum knew of Jackie.

Agelt was from Lycan Continent, he had never heard of Jackie at all and naturally knew nothing about Jackie.

The moment Braum entered the cave, he saluted Jackie immediately and was very friendly.

Jackie was surprised at how Braum was acting.

At that moment, there were thirty-two people within the cave. Other than the two on the ground, everyone was from a third-grade world.

Braum exchanged some pleasantries with Jackie and moved on. All of them were in a circle as they discussed their plans.

Braum said immediately, “Jackie, you’ll be our main force, so just say what you want to. As long as we don’t see any problems, we will follow your plans.”

Hearing that, Agelt looked at Jackie with surprise before he looked to Braum.

No one knew what he was thinking at all.

Jackie nodded and did not bother to hold back as he repeated the earlier plans.

After that, Jackie took out a map from Mustard Seed, putting it in front of everyone, ”This a simple map. The most skilled warriors from the second-grade worlds are gathered in this forest…”

“The place is incredibly strategic, so let’s leave this till the end. We’ll clean up the warriors from second-grade worlds elsewhere for now!”

Braum took the map and looked at it in detail, “All these meeting points are placed in good locations. It looks like they’ve thought about every decision carefully.”

Chapter 3376
In truth, Jackie’s plan was very simple. To beat the greatest numbers, they had to slowly eliminate their opponents before engaging in the final battle.

After Jackie gave an overview of his plans, he said something very important.

“During this period, if they can’t stand us fighting back, then they’ll give up on controlling the numbers, letting the death toll reach a hundred and twenty, so the slaughter game will end. If we kill enough of them, the number might reach a hundred and twenty as well, and the game will end, signifying we’ve achieved our goa.”

”Even though everyone’s furious at the warriors from the second-grade worlds, you have to remember one thing, everything we’re doing now is for the sake of leaving this isolated space so we won’t be tortured and killed by then. As long as we’re alive, there’s still a chance for anything. Don’t just focus on killing, and don’t ignore your life.”

As long as enough people die, even if they did not reach their final battle, they would still be able to leave this place.

Once they got back to Weinhord City, they would not be able to do much of anything due to the laws of the city. Then, news of what happened would spread, and all of the third-grade worlds would be wary of them, preventing unnecessary deaths.

When Jackie said that, everyone nodded simultaneously.

Agelt took a deep breath as he frowned and said, “I really wonder why those guys need so much Heartblood. What’s the use? Could it open some treasure?”

Jackie glanced at Agelt silently. However, his words stirred the curiosity of everyone else as they discussed the possible uses of Heartblood.

Jackie could not help but scoff internally.

Agelt had other intentions for asking that, and they were not innocent.

The warriors from second-grade worlds deployed cruel methods and had such a detailed plan, and it gave Agelt the impression that Heartblood was very useful. It might end up leading to some treasures. He wanted a hand in it as well, so he could benefit from it.

Jackie did not bother discussing that with them and merely listened as they talked about it.

A warrior from the Lycan Continent said, “These guys must’ve found out a secret or something. Heartblood has to be a substance of great importance, or they wouldn’t have spent so much effort to gather so much Heartblood. We should question them after this…”

“We need to be as cruel to them as they are to us. After that, we’ll be able to dig out all the secrets. We can announce it to everyone so their plans will fall apart!”

“You’re right! That’s what we should do! If Jackie hadn’t guessed their intentions and gathered us here, we’d still be in the dark right now. We’d just be waiting for them to slaughter us!”

“Those despicable guys need to pay the price. Otherwise, they’ll just think that third-grade worlds can be bullied. They’ll look down on us in the future no matter what happens!”

“I never liked them in the first place; these guys are only good at bullying the weak. It’s not like we don’t have powerful people in third- grade worlds. Just because they’re from second- grade worlds, they think they’re better than us and look down on us…”

“I admit that there are strong warriors among them, but it’s not like all of them are strong. There are still a number of them who are barely noteworthy, but even those warriors look down on us. It’s not like they’re better than us, we’re just from different places!”

Chapter 3377
The crowd got more excited as they talked.

All of the hatred in their hearts was voiced out. Ever since they interacted with the warriors from second- grade worlds, nothing good ever happened as they ridiculed them.

Before, they had to just accept most of it as long as it did not cross the line, but as they felt even more pushed to the corner, they wanted to fight back.

Whether it was in this space or after they went out, they would no longer hold back out of fear. That was because they knew very well that fear would just cause them to retreat even more, giving everything to those arrogant warriors from second-grade worlds.

Rudy, sitting behind Jackie, felt that it was pointless as he watched everyone being emotional.

He whispered to Jackie, “I feel like they just like talking. Once they go out, they’ll start considering a lot more things. They’ll never actually end up becoming mortal enemies with the warriors from second-grade worlds. After all, wanting to really fight back comes with a price…”

“They’ll probably hesitate when their lives are at stake. There’s no meaning to what they’re saying now.”

Jackie chuckled at Rudy’s words. He turned and gave him a nod, feeling like he was finally maturing. Rudy was no longer the brat from before that believed in everything everyone else said.

Rudy coughed before he continued to whisper, “Agelt doesn’t seem like someone we’ll get along with. I can see from his expression that he doesn’t really want to lower his head to you…”

“It’s honestly not that important to us, though. He just needs to be useful at the right times, though we can’t lower guard down around him. I feel like he’ll want to compete against you in the future. You should be careful.”

Jackie nodded. He had thought of that as well.

He whispered back, “As long as he doesn‘t hold us back when it matters, let him. He’ll understand how laughable his actions are in the future.”

Rudy nodded. The two of them exchanged a look, and various emotions could be seen from that.

60 kilometers away from the cave, at a shallow river, six warriors from second-grade worlds gathered. All of them had serious frowns on their faces.

Manson Rose took a deep breath. “Is there still no news from that side? How many have we lost contact with?”

Hirving Ochoa solemnly replied, “A total of ten are missing. Five of them are escorts, while the other five are meant to exchange prisoners. Those ten haven’t been contactable practically within the same day. I’ve tried my best to reach them, but there’s no news at all. We should make preparations for the worst.”

Marson raised an eyebrow and said, “It looks like those animals have learned to fight back, working together against us. However, the more they do that, the worse their fate will be. Those ten are about average in skill. They’re nothing compared to us. We’re prepared as well, so these things won’t happen.”

Uriel Masquez, who was standing at the back, said with a worried expression, ”Those who went missing are all pretty decent. Even though they’re in the middle of inner disciples, a few of them are still among the top fifty. We can’t find them anymore…”

“It means that those third-grade world fools managed to gather a portion of their forces. They reacted quite quickly. We thought they’d only notice what we’re doing around the third or fourth day.”

Chapter 3378
Manson laughed and said, “We underestimated them, alright. No matter how their skills are, they’re quite smart. Still, does it matter that they’re working together? They barely pose a threat! Those who have died were cannon fodder to us anyway. They won’t affect the greater plan…”

“Those animals who are fighting back need to pay dearly, though. Those who’ve killed warriors from second-grade worlds will suffer a fate worse than the other warriors. We’ll make sure to drag out the time and slowly torture them!”

Uriel was always a worrywart. He felt like with what was happening, even they needed to be careful.

He walked forward and said to Manson, “You’re right, Manson, but I still feel like we should bolster our defenses. Even though they’re just fools from third-grade worlds, it won’t be too easy to deal with them if too many of them gather.”

Manson looked at Uriel, smiling as he said, “You’re being too cautious. Even if a lot of them are gathered together, it’s not like we’ll meet them. There are dozens of warriors from second- grade worlds still living right now, and we’re just some of them.

“Unless we’re incredibly unlucky, there’s no way we’ll meet them. Also, these people will need to gather a lot of numbers to turn the tides in their favor. They can’t afford to split up, so the chances of us meeting them are even lower.”

Uriel could not say anything to that. He actually wanted to argue, but he was not as authoritative as Manson.

If Uriel continued, he would definitely be upset. However, Uriel still felt like Manson was taking things too easily. Even though those warriors from third-grade worlds were not that strong, there was still strength in numbers.

If enough of them were gathered, they would still be a threat.

Hirving turned and patted Uriel on the shoulder. “When did you become so cowardly? Even if those people charge in right now, do we not know how to run? Sure, it’s a little embarrassing, but it’s still better than dying. Then, we can spread the news and gather a lot of people too. We won’t be afraid of them in that scenario. There’s honestly nothing much to worry about.‘’

Uriel sighed helplessly, having nothing else to refute with. All they could do was wait at that moment.

Manson took out a piece of paper to note down those who were missing.

“Make sure to always remember your task, it’s the most important. Bring these people back so he’ll know what’s happening.”

Uriel accepted the piece of paper. He wanted to look it over when they suddenly heard footsteps from the distance.

The six of them looked up at where the footsteps were from, and they saw five men slowly getting closer to them.

Out of the five, they recognized two of those men. The first was Agelt from the Lycan Continent, and the other was Braum from the Chaos Continent. The two of them were two of the strongest warriors from the third-grade worlds that had entered.

When the party of six saw who was there, they froze.

Manson turned around angrily. “You really jinxed it! Ugh! There’s no need to fret, though, we have six on our side while they have five. Of those five, two of them are somewhat strong, while the others are nothing to worry about.”

Uriel’ s lips twitched as anger flared in his heart, but he did not say anything.

Manson was crossing the line. Uriel’s worries had clearly been right, but this guy was blaming him for j inxing it!

It did not matter. It was not the time to think about that.

Manson narrowed his eyes slightly before he took out a sword. The others pulled out their weapons as well.

Jackie stood in the middle, trying not to stand out.

Chapter 3379
Braum walked in front, and Agelt was right behind him.

The two of them looked incredibly confident, and their murderous intent soared as they got closer.

When they were about 30 meters away, Braum stopped in his steps, which the others followed. The two sides looked at each other, and the atmosphere was incredibly tense as though an intense battle could happen at any moment.

Manson scoffed. “Did you come here to challenge us?”

Manson sounded unhurried in the way he spoke, not regarding his enemies as worth his notice at all.

Braum scoffed. “A fight to the death against you? Don’t be too arrogant. We just came here to kill you. It’s better to be the one doing the killing, after all.”

Manson chuckled at this and sneered, “I know you’re a decent fighter and that you’re confident. You might be able to win against an ordinary warrior from a second-grade world, but I’m no ordinary warrior…”

“I’m a chosen disciple of a holy-grade clan in the Sacred Water Continent. Your small tricks barely intimidate me!”

Jackie could not help but raise an eyebrow when he heard that.

They had already planned everything out before this and expected these warriors to be stronger than the ones from before.

Just as Jackie expected-they were not inner disciples but chosen disciples instead. However, Jackie estimated that they were not high up in the rankings.

So what if they were chosen disciples?

He had killed plenty.

The Sacred Water Continent was just slightly stronger than the Golden Continent, so there was nothing much to be concerned about.

Jackie’s expression did not change, but everyone else stiffened. When they heard that the one in front of them was a chosen disciple, they suddenly felt a lot of pressure on their shoulders.

A few of them turned to look at Jackie slightly. When they saw that Jackie was still calm, they let out a sigh of relief.

Hirving scoffed and said, “Since you want to die so badly, we’ll grant you your wish. We’ll be able to help my eldest senior solve a problem too. Once you die, the warriors of the third-grade worlds will lose their heads. Everything will be solved!”

Jackie took a deep breath as he walked forward ahead of the rest.

He looked at Manson, pointed at him, and said, “Leave him to me. Help me hold the others back. I’ll need about five minutes.”

In truth, five minutes was too much, but to prevent any unexpected surprises, that was the time Jackie gave.

The others did not feel anything about that, but Agelt looked like he had been deeply insulted. He turned around to look at Jackie unhappily.

He said coldly, “What’s the meaning of that? I don’t care if you want to deal with the one in front, but what do you mean by helping you hold the others back? Do you think we won’t be able to handle the rest of them? That we’ll need your help?”

Braum frowned, wanting to say something when Jackie stopped him.

Jackie was very cold at that moment, like a crescent blade.

“I know you’re not happy about me, but you need to choose the right time to voice your bitterness. Look at the situation! Is it the time to talk about that? Just do what you’re told. If you don’t believe me, you’ll see the aftermath. The truth will answer all of your questions.”

“If you’re not willing to play along, just leave. I won’t stop you.”

Agelt clenched his hands in anger. He took a step forward and was about to argue when Braum stopped him.

He looked at Agelt unhappily, and said in a similarly cold voice, “Jackie’s right. Look at the situation. What’s the point of arguing? Handle the matter first.”

Chapter 3380
Agelt gritted his teeth as he looked at Jackie, behaving as though he had been gravely insulted.

Jackie did not want to see how emotional he looked, though.

This guy was even more uncooperative than he thought!

Why was he trying to fight at a time like this?

His arrangements were fine. It was the most reasonable arrangement based on his skills. He knew that Agelt was not happy about it, since he felt like he was no weaker than him and did not need to listen to him.

Agelt felt like Jackie’s tone was arrogant as well.

Jackie took a deep breath as he ignored Agelt. When Agelt saw that Jackie was looking away as if he was causing trouble for no reason, he grew even more furious.

He glared at Jackie and said, “I know it’s not the time for this, but you keep having this attitude about you. You speak like you’re the leader. Anyone who can lead me at least needs to be stronger than I am. You don’t have the right!”

Braum’s lips twitched helplessly. Agelt was sick in the head, he had to be!

He grabbed Agelt’s arm. “If you keep this up, we’ll all die here! Can you just shut up and let us deal with this before you speak?!”

Agelt scoffed as he turned his head away unhappily. He did not continue causing trouble, but he was still unhappy.

Meanwhile, their six opponents were momentarily baffled.

Manson smiled and said, “I can’t believe you’re all uncoordinated. You want to work together to fight us with just that? You’re all useless! Fighting you will only stain our hands. You’re nothing worth our notice at all!”

Hirving nodded from behind Manson, scoffing as he continued, “You really are a bunch of dogs not worth our time. Trying to beat us with just you? You’re just a small fry, and just swimming around in the pond is already difficult for you. You’d just be eaten up by a bigger fish the moment you’re thrown into a river!”

Jackie looked up at the six of them coldly. He had already planned things out, and he had told the others some of it while keeping some of them to himself.

He took a deep breath, not angered at their opponent's words at all. Instead, he smirked.

He held his head high and said, "You can't be the judge of whether or not we're weak. In my eyes, you're the animals. You're just dirt that I can disperse any time I want to. I can make you disappear from this world at any moment, and I'll use the cruelest way to do it as well- just like how you did to others."

As Jackie said that, Manson and the others started to laugh out loud. They looked at Jackie like a complete idiot. Manson was laughing in an especially exaggerated manner.

As he laughed, he pointed at Jackie and said, "Do you even know what you're saying? I can't stop laughing. When did a piece of trash like you dare to challenge us? You're not worthy! I've finally seen how deep ignorance can go!"

Hirving nodded and sneered, "He's not just ignorant, he's completely dreaming, too. Who does he think he is? Is he the top disciple of a holy- grade clan? He's so arrogant!"

"If you were a warrior from a first-grade world, I might actually be inclined to believe you. Someone like you saying what you just said is just a joke. I really don't know what's in your head. Do you think you're unbeatable?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3381 - 3390 -

Chapter 3381
Agelt scoffed as he coldly glanced at Jackie, mentally telling himself that Jackie deserved the insults.

This man really did not know his place and seemed capable of saying anything.

Jackie, however, remained calm, as if everything they said was just nonsense that could not affect his composure at all.

He chuckled and said, “I know you don’t believe me, but that’s fine. I’ll prove to you which one of us is the fool here.”

After saying that, Jackie took a step forward and said to Manson loudly, “Didn’t you think you were stronger than me? Why don’t we have a match to prove it?”

When Jackie said that, he had an abnormally serious look on his face. He did not seem to be joking at all.

He only noticed after they arrived there that they had six opponents while there were only five on their side. Other than himself, Jackie did not feel like anyone on his side would be able to defeat their opponents, so he devised a new plan.

Before the two of them fought, Jackie wanted to try to eliminate the strongest one before dealing with the rest. For the sake of the bigger picture, he had to take every step carefully.

No one else knew what Jackie was thinking.

Jackie bemused Agelt. He did not think that Jackie would be able to kill Manson and instead felt like he himself would be the one to clean up after everyone, being the determinant of this whole battle.

That had been Agelt’s thoughts the whole time, so when he heard what Jackie had said, it provoked him enough to stand out and voiced his complaints. However, the others did not know what Agelt was thinking at all. Even if Jackie knew, he would just think that Agelt was dreaming.

Manson’s smile disappeared as he narrowed his eyes, glaring right at Jackie. “Brat! You’re even more outrageous than I thought. Do you think you can really beat me?!”

Jackie nodded emphatically and added, his tone serious, “If I didn’t think I could face you, I wouldn’t have asked for it. If you don’t think you can beat me alone, you can always get another team member. I can deal with two of you at once.”

Manson was red with fury. “How dare you?! You’re unbelievably arrogant. Who do you think you are, taking on two of us at once? Are you done bragging? There really are miracles everywhere! You’re the biggest idiot I’ve ever seen!”

As he said that, Manson's voice shook a little in his rage. He felt like everything Jackie said was an insult to his dignity. There was no way Manson could stand it. Other than Braum, everyone else thought that Jackie was crazy.

He had to be crazy to have said this, possibly trying to anger them, which he succeeded in doing. Manson was quite angry, and he could no longer stand it as he rushed right at Jackie.

In the air, his hands constantly formed white seals. Those seals distorted in the air, fusing into the surrounding space. A second later, snowflakes of various sizes started to appear as the surrounding temperature started to drop.

Every breath they took produced white clouds.

Chapter 3382
Manson stood among the snowflakes before he quickly charged right at Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he started to form seals with his hands. In just a moment, the Broken Soul Blade appeared right in front of him.

Jackie was insignificant, Manson mused to himself, so much so that he could be killed with just a pinch like an ant. He clapped his hands, and all of the snow in the air fused into one, forming a triangle. It had an incredibly cold aura as it charged right at Jackie.

Jackie pushed forward, and the Broken Soul Blade shot forward like an arrow, shooting right at Manson. In a flash, the two techniques clashed.

Everyone heard a cracking sound, and the ice started to shatter into countless fragments.

Those fragments shot out incredibly quickly, and with the cold energy within, they formed large craters on the ground when they landed. Everyone rushed to avoid them when they saw that.

Countless craters were formed as dull explosions were heard.

By the time they looked over, the proud Manson had already fallen to the ground. He had a look of pain on his face as his whole body trembled. His mouth was open as he let out cries of agony.

No one knew how to react to that sight.

Manson actually lost!

He lost after a single strike, leaving him no room to fight back at all. At that moment, Manson lost all his dignity as he rolled on the ground.

Jackie saw that sight several times a day and was already used to it, but the same could not be said for the others.

Braum's expression did not shift too grandly, he knew Jackie was no normal human. Regular chosen disciples from holy-grade clans were no match for him. Meanwhile, the

others struggled to accept that Jackie had beaten Manson, especially Agelt. His eyes were completely wide, and his lips twitched.

He looked at Manson crying on the ground in agony before looking at Jackie, who was still as calm as ever.

He started to feel like the world was an illusion and started to doubt reality itself.

Was he dreaming?

He pinched himself, and the pain told him that everything was, unfortunately, real.

Jackie was actually that powerful, and he was not bragging at all!

Manson really was no match for Jackie!

Agelt took a deep breath, feeling like he had a moment of realization. This explained why Jackie's tone had been so arrogant, he was so talented and capable that it translated into his actions.

Jackie did not care about what the others were thinking at all. His gaze was fixed on the other remaining opponents.

Hirving was stunned, evident in his demeanor. His mouth was wide open, and he looked like he was frozen in place.

Looking at that scene, Jackie frowned as he turned to say to the ones behind him, "What are you doing just standing around? Attack! If even one slips away, it'll bring us trouble!"

Jackie then quickly activated the laws of space and disappeared.

Uriel was the first to react. The moment he saw Jackie disappear, a sense of danger filled his head.

He did not even bother thinking as he grabbed Hirving and turned around to run.

At that moment, he did not care about Manson anymore, he brought it upon himself after all. The fact that Jackie had heavily injured Manson meant that they were no match for Jackie at all.

He had not been lying.

Chapter 3383
With his skills, he could have faced two of his opponents at once. On top of that, he had help by his side. If they did not hurry and run, then endless torture awaited them!

Uriel pulled at the others and started to frantically run away.

Jackie picked up the pace of his pursuit.

At that moment, Uriel and the others scrambled away like dogs. They were frantically retreating, not even knowing where they were heading. All they knew was that it was the only way they would be able to survive.

After a few moments, Hirving felt a gust of wind behind him. He turned to look and was absolutely terrified when he saw that Jackie was already behind him.

Jackie aimed the sword in his hand at Hirving's back, and he let out a cry of fear as he sped up. Yet, Jackie was even faster than he was.

Intense pain spread throughout his being from where his chest was pierced.

As he looked down, he saw that a gray sword had pierced him, and blood stained his clothes. The next second, the intense pain of his soul being ripped apart spread from his chest to his whole body. He looked like a deflated balloon as he crumbled and fell to the ground.

Jackie pulled out his sword and continued to pursue the next one. After an hour, other than Manson who was still struggling on the ground, everyone had died to Jackie's sword.

When the dust settled, Jackie's companions exchanged looks of shock. They had come as a group but were useless as Jackie settled them all.

All they did was stand by the side, intimidating their opponents. They stopped their opponents from attacking Jackie together. After all, It would be hard for Jackie to handle six at one time.

Jackie's expression remained unchanged after he wrapped up everything.

He arrived next to Manson before he lifted Manson up and said without turning his head back, "Let's head back. This guy still has his uses. Knowing your enemy is the key to victory. We need to get even more information out of his mouth if we want to be sure of our win!"

Jackie's words were like gospel at that moment.

Everyone listened to him. Even Agelt listened wholeheartedly. They followed behind Jackie, arriving at their cave gathering spot Where Rudy and the others remained.

After all, they were inferior in terms of battling and would only be a burden if they followed. It was better for them to wait at a safer location.

When the warriors in the cave saw that Jackie and the others were back, they got up excitedly.

They were even more excited when they saw that Jackie brought someone with him. After they entered the cave, the warriors waiting there started to ask about the situation.

Some of the warriors that were closer to Agelt hurried forward and said, "Agelt, you've worked hard. Everyone else did, too. You must've had a great victory. You even caught a hostage. With you around, even warriors from second-grade worlds stand no chance!"

Agelt pursed his lips awkwardly, not wanting to accept the praise. After all, they had done nothing other than say a few words. All the glory belonged to Jackie. Yet, there were some who could not tell that Agelt was feeling awkward at that moment.

One of them tried his best to flatter Agelt and said, “You’re not injured at all. It looks like the battle ended very quickly! They’re not on your level, huh? Did they get scared the moment they saw you?”

Chapter 3384
Agelt frowned when he heard that, cursing the guy in his mind. He felt so awkward that he did not know what to say.

To stop himself from being in a similar situation, Braum stood up and said, “We didn’t do anything at all. All six of them died to Jackie. His skills are beyond imaginable. None of them were a match for him at all.”

The moment he said that, the cave fell quiet.

Quite a few of them were so shocked that their jaws hung open as they turned to look at Jackie.

At that moment, Jackie did not care about what anyone else was saying at all as he dragged the whimpering, struggling Manson to the deepest part of the cave.

The pain in Manson’s soul rendered him unable to think properly. Jackie waved his hand, controlling the power of the Broken Soul Blade so it no longer ripped Manson’s soul.

The pain slowly decreased, and Manson slowly recovered. He panted heavily, looking like his head had just been shoved into water.

Cold sweat stained his clothes, and his face was white as paper. When he saw his surroundings, his entire body stiffened. If it was not for the fact that he was still breathing, Jackie would have wondered if he was dead.

Manson gulped as he started to retreat backward.

Jackie smiled as he patted Manson’s shoulder, saying coldly, “You wouldn’t be able to do anything now, even if you could shrink your points. You should be able to tell. I didn’t kill you and brought you back instead for a reason. Why don’t you guess why I did this?”

Manson’s lips stiffened as he looked at Jackie in dread.

He had too much fear in his heart and knew what he was going to face soon. He looked to the corner and could not help but shudder. This time, it was not from the pain, but from the intense fear.

Jackie scoffed and said, “You better know your place. I’m still feeling patient right now, but if you avoid any questions or try to lie to me, my patience will vanish in the blink of an eye. I told you that I have all the time in the world and hundreds of ways to torture you. If you want to experience it, I don’t mind giving you a taste.”

At that moment, Manson shuddered even more.

He did not even dare to look at Jackie. Thinking about how he had laughed at Jackie when he warned him before their battle, he suddenly realized that he had been the laughable one.

He had been the ignorant one, and Jackie had not lied at all. Manson was the one who walked into the pits himself.

These thoughts surfaced in his head as his breath grew labored, but there was nothing he could do.

He was already right on the chopping board at that moment, and he could not even kill himself.

On the other hand, Jackie was in no hurry when he saw that Manson was not talking. He instead reached out to grab Manson's shoulders.

Jackie continued, "I just want to ask a few simple questions. If you answer me, I'll kill you quickly. If you grit your teeth and refuse, that's fine too. I'll just have to waste some more time…"

"You felt what I can do just now. Didn't it hurt? If you don't answer me, you'll be in even more pain later. If you lie, the pain will increase by five times."

Jackie was expressionless even as he threatened Manson.

When Manson thought of the pain he had felt earlier, he could not help but start twitching.

Chapter 3385
The pain was too inhumane to bear.

It hurted so much that Manson could not even form thoughts or control his body. It felt like he had been thrown into a pot of oil and fried a thousand times. Even being in hot oil would have felt better.

"What do you want to know?" said Manson raspily. "I… I don't know that much. I might be a chosen disciple, but I'm not that high up in ranking, so my position isn't that high either. I know very little about the important secrets…"

"In truth, there are some things I do want to know, but I never had the courage or the means to find out. You… You shouldn't hold out too much hope."

Jackie sneered as he stared at Manson and spoke, his tone so cold that Manson shuddered, "Don't try to brush things over here. I'm not one you can sway with a word or two. You should come clean and tell me everything I want to know."

"You're lying when you say you don't know and you don't dare to find out. Since you're being dishonest, then I'll give you what you want!"

The moment he said that, intense pain wracked Manson's soul again as though being slowly ripped apart.

He could no longer control his body as he spasmed on the floor.

Everyone took a few steps back when they saw what was happening. Even if they hated warriors from second-grade worlds, Manson's cries of agony were straight out of a nightmare, so much so that everyone felt a sort of sympathy for him.

Those warriors who were mentally weaker hid behind others. They started to look at Jackie with even more respect.

After five minutes of pain, Jackie controlled the power of the Broken Soul Blade to not hurt Manson's soul anymore.

Manson slowly started to breathe normally again, but his face was incredibly pale as if all the blood had been extracted from it.

"Now, answer me. What's the use of Heartblood? Where are the leaders of the second-grade worlds?" Jackie interrogated.

"How are their skills and what are their names? Tell me everything you know. Don't try to be stubborn. I can tell you that I have all the time in the world to waste on you. If you don't mind the torture, you can continue being stubborn."

Manson's entire body shook as he immediately said, "I'll talk! I'll tell you everything I know! Don't torture me anymore!"

Jackie smiled and said, "Let's see how you perform."

At that moment, Jackie might have a smile on his face, but he looked like a demon straight out of hell to Manson.

Manson's body shook, and his voice equally quivered as he whimpered, "I'm not lying. I really don't know that much. I want to know what Heartblood is used for. I did try to find out, but no one is willing to tell me!"

100 kilometers away from their location, at a cave 10 times bigger than Jackie's, a lot of warriors were gathered there.

A small number of them were from second-grade worlds, while most of them were from third-grade worlds. However, there was not a single warrior from a third-grade world that was standing.

All of them were lying in the freezing cave, their bodies shivering vehemently. They were chained up as numerous wounds decorated their bodies.

The warriors from second-grade worlds took amusement in torturing them.

Chapter 3386
The warriors from the third-grade worlds that were lying on the ground were mostly already

tortured to the point that they had lost their sanity, but they remained alive. Those warriors from second-grade worlds would not allow them to die.

When they noticed anyone about to die, those people would be fed pills so they could be kept on the brink. They were strictly controlling the number of deaths.

In the center part of the cave saw three people sitting down. Three of them had different clothes on. When the other warriors from second- grade worlds looked at those three, they had fear in their eyes. It was obvious how highly regarded those three were.

The one on the left was from the Golden Continent. He was Jake Hall, a chosen disciple from a holy grade clan that was ranked tenth place in his clan.

The one from the middle was from Sacred Continent, called Guardio Montes, who was also from a holy grade clan, ranking ninth among their chosen disciples.

The one on the right was called Florian Banes. He was from Golden Continent, but from a different holy grade clan than Jake. Florian was the eleventh place in his clan.

The three of them were close in terms of skill. If they were to get down to it, Guardio was slightly stronger.

He sat in the middle and was the leader of this particular task in the slaughter game.

A warrior from Sacred Water Continent rushed over to Guardio's side, whispering for a long time into Guardio's ear.

Guardio's frown gradually deepened.

After hearing what that person said, Guardio waved the person away.

When the person left, Guardio said coldly, "It looks like we've underestimated these guys. We thought they were just little fish, but they're biting back right now. Already twelve of our warriors have disappeared. They're moving really quickly, and are leaving no trace behind."

Jake scoffed and said, "They're just biting at nothing. Fighting back like that will only give us some small losses, nothing of notice at all. We didn't care about them before because we thought they were not strong at all. Now, it seems like it's time to teach them a lesson."

Florian nodded as a cold glint flashed in his eyes, "Leave this to me. I want to deal with them myself. I'll skin all of them alive so they know what the consequences of going against us are!"

Guardio looked at Florian, frowning as he said, "Don't be too careless. Don't forget, a chosen disciple is among those who went missing. If they weren't skilled, they would have died before they could do that. Now that all those people are missing, they're probably not in any good condition. We need to increase our alertness to prevent any mistakes."

Florian scoffed, not paying it any mind, “They’re just trash. How big of a splash could they possibly make? As long as I’m there, none of them will be able to run. Manson and the others should already be dead…”

“However, I feel like Manson probably didn’t lose because of his skill, but had been tricked instead. No matter how much you look down on them, they’ re still somewhat smart. Manson’s an impulsive guy, he was probably tricked quite easily.”

Jake nodded, agreeing with what Florian said. Guardio felt like they were looking at things too lightly. Even though Manson was impulsive and arrogant, Manson was still no idiot.

He would definitely unleash his full strength when faced with danger, but they still lost contact with him in the end. It meant that the situation was worse than they thought.

Guardio took a deep breath as he said seriously, “Don’t think that they’ll be easy to deal with. Even though they’re from third-grade worlds and we’ve looked into them, there might still be some mistakes. If some expert managed to sneak in, then the situation would be much more complicated.”

Florian looked away, clearly not agreeing with what Guardio said. However, he could not say anything back

Chapter 3387
The two of them went silent again. After a long time, Jake said, “How much more do we need? After this round of torture, we still need to go on…”

“This task is so troublesome that I’m regretting accepting it. If it wasn’t for the fact that I’ll be able to pick out two treasures for myself once the Vibrant Hall opens, I wouldn’t have accepted this task.”

Florian joined in on that, “Obviously! If it wasn’t to open up the Vibrant Hall, I wouldn’t be wasting my time here. I don’t have that free time.”

Jake sighed and said, “Those warriors from third-grade worlds are no idiots. Once the slaughter game ends, they will notice something amiss after a day or two. Then, things will be a lot more difficult if we want to do anything else. Even so, we have to keep on doing this.”

Florian sighed, saying unhappily, “Those small operations already got us the Heartblood of two hundred people, but the higher-ups said that two hundred is far from enough. Opening the Vibrant Hall needs at least over a thousand. Even two or three thousand might not be enough…”

“We would need at least four to five thousand to completely open the Vibrant Hall. Otherwise, the place would not have been sealed for that long. Even after two five-hundred-year cycles, no one has opened it before. We’re putting a lot of effort into opening that place up.”

Jake shook his head and said, “There’s nothing we can do about it. If we left it aside, the warriors from the other second-grade worlds would not. Then, they might end up opening it before us. We would only get the scraps that are left behind.”

Guardio sighed as he said with a lowered voice, “It’s a task from the higher-ups and we’re forced to complete it. You know how those guys are. We’ll end up being punished if we don’t complete it. If that happens, we should be happy if the punishment isn’t too bad. We wouldn’t even have the time to consider our own benefits.”

Thinking about all of that, Jake was incredibly frustrated, but there was nothing he could do.

Just as everyone was lamenting their situation, Florian suddenly heard a noise by his ear. He looked over toward the noise, and a voice entered his head.

Florian suddenly stood up as he looked in that direction.

The others looked at Florian, and Guardio said, “Who sent you a sound transfer?”

Florian clenched his teeth as he said in anger, “It’s from Manson’s sound array, but the person who sent it isn’t Manson. It’s the piece of trash that captured Manson. He wants to come and find me! He wants to challenge me to a duel to the death!”

Florian scoffed with a look of disdain.

That guy really did not know his place. Issuing him a challenge?

Did he think that he could defeat Florian just because they managed to capture Manson?

Manson was nothing to Florian. Anyone who could capture Manson was nothing to Florian either.

He sneered and said, “Since he wants to die so badly, I’ll grant him his wish! I’ll let him suffer the consequences of challenging me!”

After he said that, Florian rushed to find the person who sent him that message, but Guardio stood up to stop him.

Florian looked at Guardio and said in confusion, “Why are you stopping me? ”

Guardio’s lips twitched helplessly, internally cursing Florian for being a numbskull. He had clearly said that the situation was unusual, yet, Florian was still being led around by his own emotions so easily.

Guardio said, “What if it’s a trap? Are you going to just rush in?”

Chapter 3388
Not only was Florian not thankful at all after hearing that but absolutely furious as well.

He felt like Guardio was looking down on him by saying that.

What could he even amount to if he could not even deal with riff-raff from third- grade worlds?

Guardio was doubting his skills by saying that.

Florian scoffed and said, “They’re trying to trick me? Do you think they can? Even if it is a trap, it will be broken through in front of absolute skill…”

“None of them is a match for me. On top of that, I won’t be bringing any fewer men than they have with me. Only torture awaits them. They’ll be slaughtered like nothing!”

As he said that, Florian was incredibly prideful. It was as if no one was a match for him at all.

When Guardio heard that, his lips twitched helplessly. He still had a lot to say, but it was obvious that Florian would not listen.

Florian wanted to walk into a death trap. His own biases made him look down on third-grade world warriors, and made him feel like those warriors could do nothing to him. That was why he was so prideful.

Guardio knew very well that it would be hard to change those thoughts. However, he was forced to deal with their current situation.

If Florian actually dies in a trap, then their slaughter alliance would have lost a key general. The situation would be even worse. Even after he had said so much earlier, the other two did not listen at all.

It made Guardio frustrated and exasperated.

Guardio took a deep breath before he placed his hand on Florian’s shoulder, saying seriously, “I know you have the ability to deal with any problems, and I know you’re not that much weaker than I am, but even if I was the one going, I’d still be incredibly careful…”

“Looking down on your opponents can destroy all your plans, don’t you know that? Even if those warriors from third-grade worlds aren’t as strong as us as a whole, you still can’t ignore them and feel like you’re invincible!”

As he said that, he was interrupted by Florian, “I know what you want to say. You want me to regard them with caution, but I can’t do that. That would be an insult to ourselves. I’ve interacted with quite a few warriors from third-grade worlds after entering the Whirling World…”

“Not a single one of them was a match for me. They come from places with no resources. There’s no way they can compete with us at all. I just need to point my finger, and they’ll be so scared that they start shaking. If I need to regard these people highly, then what’s the point of me learning how to fight?”

Florian seemed incredibly firm with what he said. It was as if anything else Guardio said would be an insult to him.

Guardio’s lips twitched in exasperation. He was so angry he did not know what else to say. Florian’s words seemed reasonable, but he was actually just forcing out excuses.

He was making excuses for his pride. In the end, he was just arrogant. He could not look at things calmly.

The matter was incredibly important, and Guardio did not want any mistakes. Yet, those two did not seem to have the same attitude.

Guardio could not stop himself from getting angry.

“Even if you’re right, can’t you think about it? Are all of them really trash? Is there not a single one of them that could be stronger than you? As long as there’s just one, then you might never come back. I’m just concerned for you as well as the bigger picture…”

“Can you not be stubborn? This is not somewhere you can do anything you want!”

Right as he said that, Florian’s expression changed. He frowned as he looked at Guardio angrily.

The tension between them was incredibly thick. Jake saw that the situation was bad and immediately stood between the two of them, trying to diffuse the situation.

Chapter 3389
Jake said in exasperation, “Don’t get so emotional. If the two of you end up fighting, wouldn’t it just benefit our enemies?”

“Both of you, calm down! We can’t get emotional with this. Guardio is right, but Florian has his points too. Both of you have your own logic, but thoughts can’t solve problems. We should stop fighting and figure out a solution.”

Guardio took a deep breath as he said, “There’s only one solution, which is to treat this seriously. We have to gather our forces. We have a strong fortress here that they won’t be able to attack.”

Guardio’s suggestion was reasonable, but in Florian’s eyes, it was completely different.

Florian said angrily, “Why are you acting like such a coward? You second guess and doubt everything. Just listen to what you are saying. You want to strengthen our base so they can’t attack? Who do you think they are? Who do you think we are? Why are you praising them at our own expense?”

“You act like they’re so strong and we’re so weak. Turn around and look. Those lying on the ground are all warriors from third-grade worlds. These pieces of trash can’t even fight back against us at all, but you seem to think they’re unbelievably strong!”

When Guardio heard that, he shook in anger. He felt like Florian was a complete imbecile, prioritizing his pride and dignity over anything else.

At that moment, Guardio was furious, “Since you think that the warriors from third-grade worlds are all trash, then tell me how those twenty warriors died? Why did Manson fall to them? Isn’t Manson a chosen disciple? If they’re so weak, how did they get him?”

Hearing that, Florian’s expression stiffened.

He wanted to retort but was stopped by Guardio, “Stop trying to argue. The normal warriors from third-grade worlds really aren’t anything, but you have to admit that they do have strong warriors among them.”

“The situation is as it is because something unpredictable is with them. That unpredictable factor is affecting the whole situation. If you’re impulsive, you’ll fall into their trap. They sent you a message precisely because they want to lure you out to deal with you!”

Guardio was practically shouting all of that. He was angry as well, but Florian seemed intent on not listening.

Florian felt like Guardio was just looking down on him, and that feeling blinded him.

He replied angrily, “You might be scared, but we’re not! I refuse to believe that they’ll kill me if I go there.”

After saying that, Florian pushed away Jake and Guardio.

At that moment, he was acting completely from the anger in his heart, and would not listen to any advice. Even Jake felt that Florian was being too emotional. However, Jake knew that Florian would no longer listen to anyone else.

Florian was intent on proving that he would not fall for a trap, and would kill all of their opponents. Guardio’s lips twitched, not continuing to stop Florian as he stood in place.

Chapter 3390
Looking at Florian’s retreat, all Guardio could do was sigh.

Jake turned to look at Guardio, sighing helplessly, “Are we being too careful? Florian’s not weak. If we don’t hold back, there are not many warriors from third -grade worlds that could match up with him…”

“Before he started the game, we’d already looked into all of the participating warriors, estimating their skill. All of those skilled warriors are already in our records. Florian might be impulsive, but he’s not stupid…”

Before he could finish, Guardio stopped him.

Guardio turned around and said, “Why is your head still trapped in the air as well? With how things have gone, don’t you see that there’s a new variable among the third-grade worlds?”

“We never noticed it before. You’re right, we already looked into all of them before the slaughter game started, but there might be some slips. If that person who we missed out on is incredibly strong, even stronger than me or you, then we’d be done for if we don’t treat this seriously!”

Jake’s expression stiffened. He whispered, “Really? Is there really a new variable?”

Guardio took a deep breath before he said in exasperation, “I believe there is, so we should plan for the worst…”

“To prevent any surprises from stopping our flow of Heartblood, we can’t leave this place. I couldn’t stop Florian, so it was time to figure out a new plan. We have to plan for the end…”

Florian brought six men out of the cave.

He started to head toward where the sound had been transferred from. He was filled with uncontainable rage. He wanted to kill all those who challenged him. However, he still maintained his rationality, no matter how angry he was.

Time slowly ticked away, and they finally arrived at a lush green plain.

The plains were limitless. There was nothing to hide in at all. The green grass had even filled up the whole field. There was not a single tree in sight. Florian took a deep breath when he saw the plains.

It was a good place for a challenge. It was impossible to hide there.

Florian turned to the warrior behind him and said, “All of you, don’t worry. I won’t let my anger control me. If there are too many opponents, we can just retreat without consequences. If they don’t have that many people, then we can just charge forward and move them down. Let them feel how much better we are, and let them regret everything!”

All of his fellow disciples nodded as they agreed with Florian, “Florian, you’re amazing! You’ll definitely lead us to victory! These third-grade world warriors will quickly find out how wide the gap between us is. We’ll have them regret going against us!”

Facing those words of respect, Florian was enjoying things immensely. He hated Guardio for overthinking things, always nagging and holding back. It was not fun at all.

Unfortunately, Guardio was the strongest of the three and also the leader of this task.

In the past, Guardio would probably have been more polite no matter what Florian said. Guardio had nagged Florian to be careful.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3391 - 3400 -

Chapter 3391
This time, he had gone against Guardio, so he had vented some frustrations.

As those thoughts ran through his mind, a group of figures was walking toward them from a distance. It was too far away, and they could not tell how many people there were.

Florian could not stop himself from feeling a little worried. Even though he was smart enough to retreat if there were too many enemies, he did not want to leave just to be laughed at by Guardio.

After five minutes, the figures got clearer. At that moment, he could tell how many people there were.

Florian smiled excitedly, “There are only eight of them! This is good! We don’t have to retreat, then. We can kill them all!”

The warriors next to Florian looked excited as well. If they obtained a complete win, they would be able to earn themselves some praise from their fellow disciples. After another five minutes, their opponents arrived in front of them.

The two sides faced each other, and Florian immediately looked at Jackie, who was standing at the front.

He pointed at Jackie and said, “Were you the one who sent the message? You were the one who said all of that?”

Jackie nodded honestly. He looked right at Florian before he looked at the warriors behind Florian.

Jackie’s tone was calm, “Are you the only one here? Did Guardio and Jake not come with you?”

Jackie had gotten a lot of information from Manson. Other than the most important thing, he already knew everything else he needed to. He knew that the person standing in front of him was Florian, a holy grade clan disciple ranked at eleventh place.

Florian was a proud and arrogant person, someone with more brawn than brains. Hearing Jackie’s words, Florian’s anger surged again.

He scoffed, “Brat, who do you think you are? Do you think we need so many to deal with you? You should be proud that I’m here to kill you, and yet you still want the three of us to face you? You’re overestimating yourself!”

A warrior behind Florian said, “That’s right! Who do you think you are?! Do you think you’re the top disciple of a holy grade clan?”

“Florian will easily kill you. There’s no need for the rest of them at all. Even I can kill you easily, let alone Florian!”

Jackie did not look angered by those words at all. Instead, he felt even calmer. He loved facing opponents like that.

The more they looked down on him, the easier things were for him. He looked at Agelt and the others next to him. Even though he had never seen Agelt or Braum fight before, he could estimate their strength.

They should definitely be capable of stalling for time, but expecting them to win was impossible. They would only be good for stalling, and Jackie would need to do the rest. Furthermore, Jackie did not trust them.

Jackie took a deep breath as he coldly looked at Florian, “No matter how much you like to brag, I still think that you’re a group of trash… You’re Florian, right? You sound so proud of yourself. Arrogance needs to be backed up. Why don’t you fight me yourself?”

“If you can beat me, I’ll acknowledge your pride, but if you can’t then I’ll do what I want with you.”

Jackie planned on using the same strategy against them. If he dealt with the strongest one, then the rest would be easy to deal with.

Chapter 3392
When Florian heard Jackie’s words, he scoffed in anger.

He had the same reaction as Manson. The two of them had more or less the same personality. Jackie expected that response as well.

Florian laughed as he said, “You think I’m the one heaping praises on myself? It’s funny that you say that because I should be the one saying that to you! You’re hilarious. I wonder what’s in your head!”

As he said that, Florian coldly looked at Jackie as if he was a complete idiot.

No matter how Florian looked at him, Jackie still had the same calm expression on his face. It was like nothing would affect his mood at all.

Jackie calmly continued, “Everyone knows how to brag, but not many can back it up. I’m still going to say the same thing. If you’re so arrogant, then use your skills to prove yourself. Otherwise, you’re still just a braggart…”

After he said that, Jackie walked forward.

His hands constantly moved, forming seal after seal. He was about to attack, which stunned Florian. His lips twitched, not expecting that Jackie was being serious.

Florian thought that Jackie had just been trying to mess around. He never expected that Jackie would actually stand out to fight him alone.

Florian got frustrated as he thought about it. He felt like he needed to teach Jackie a lesson. However, before he did anything, Florian felt like there were still some things he needed to make clear.

He scoffed as he raised an eyebrow, saying, “Fighting you alone would be doing you a favor. However, I feel like I should grant you your wish since you want to die so much. I’ll teach you a lesson myself. But, you need to answer one of my questions before that.”

Jackie laughed and said, “Are you trying to ask me how Manson fell to my hands?”

Florian’ s lips froze as surprise flashed in his eyes.

Jackie was smart, guessing what he wanted to say before he even said it.

Jackie continued, “Manson fought against me. He lost, and I captured him. That’s what happened.”

Florian sneered, “I refuse to believe that! No matter how weak Manson is, he’s still a chosen disciple of a holy grade clan. Even though he’s not that highly ranked, his skills are still solid!”

“You must have used some tricks to capture him, and I think that you probably want to do the same to me! However, you should stop with those thoughts. In front of absolute skill, your tricks are all worthless!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, almost starting to laugh.

He really did use some tricks. And Florian was right, Jackie was using the same tricks on Florian. It was a pity that Florian did not believe him when he was being honest.

Since that was the case, Jackie did not want to waste any time.

He laughed and said, “You can think whatever you want, but I don’t really like listening to pointless chatter, nor do I like listening to people bragging. If you’re really so strong, show me!”

There was no need to continue after what was said.

Florian had completely been angered by Jackie’s casual attitude. Jackie’s words were incredibly harsh to his ears.

Florian said, “Since you want to die in my hands so much, I’ll grant you your wish!”

Chapter 3393
After saying that, he rushed into the air, constantly forming seal after seal.

Suddenly, thunder roared in the skies as purple lightning filled their surroundings.

Florian’s voice could be heard, “The technique I’m using is the lower ultimate god rank technique, the Army Destroyer. I’ve already reached the second stage of the technique,

and I’m just a sliver away from mastering it. Many geniuses have died from this technique. You should be proud that you’re facing it!”

When Jackie heard that, he laughed as he slowly formed his response.

The Broken Soul Blade was formed and floated in front of Jackie. Florian’s words did not affect him, but they instilled fear in Agelt and the others.

Even though they were using lower ultimate god rank techniques as well, they were very far away from reaching the third stage. To them, it was incredibly far away. They would need months and years to reach that level, but Florian was just a sliver away.

The gap was right in front of them, forcing them to admit that their skills really were inferior to warriors from second-grade worlds. That feeling was suffocating.

Agelt turned to look at Jackie’s straightened back and suddenly regained his confidence. Even though he was not as strong as them, there was someone from the third-grade world that was stronger.

The moment the Broken Soul Blade was formed, Florian could immediately tell that Jackie was using a soul attribute technique.

He suddenly laughed, “You’re actually a soul attribute warrior! The heavens do smile upon me. Lightning techniques counter soul attribute techniques in the first place. Unless your technique is higher level than mine, you’ll just die even quicker. You won’t even be able to fight back as you’re turned to ash!”

Jackie smiled as he said, “Why do you like talking so much?”

Florian was immensely angered by that.

Jackie’s words were just far too direct, and everything he said just infuriated Florian.

Florian let out an angry roar as his hands started to form seal after seal again. The thunder in the air started to gather, fusing to form various figures. Those figures had various weapons in their hands and formed ranks in the air. They looked like a thundering army.

Florian let out another angry roar, and those soldiers started to raise their weapons to charge at Jackie like they had received an order.

Florian’s thunder army immediately charged at Jackie.

Jackie frowned a little as he charged right at that army.

The Broken Soul Blade expanded in the air, growing by at least ten times. Soul energy covered its whole body. In just a flash, the army clashed against the Broken Soul Blade, causing crackling sounds to be heard.

The purple light filled every inch of the place, blinding everyone’s eyes with how bright it was.

The ones standing below had to use their hands to shield themselves against the light. All they could hear was the crackling and explosion of thunder, like countless cannons exploding around them.

Agelt felt his hands going numb. The lightning had even affected him. Thankfully, he was not the main target and had merely been affected by the shockwaves.

The situation merely lasted for a few moments before the stray lightning slowly disappeared.

Chapter 3394
The crowd was finally able to open their eyes to get a look at the situation.

When they saw what had happened, all of them widened their mouths in shock, especially the second-grade world's warriors on Florian's side.

They saw Florian lying on the ground. A gray blade was stuck to his cheek, and he constantly twitched. Jackie stood next to him, looking down at Florian coldly.

Jackie never spends too much strength in any battle. After all, there was a massive gap between him and those people.

Jackie slowly kneeled, looking at Florian's painful struggle. At that moment, Florian still had a sliver of rationality to him and was able to hear what Jackie was saying.

Jackie's voice was very low as he whispered, "You're right, the lightning attribute naturally counters the soul attribute, unless the technique I'm using is of a higher level than yours, there's no way I can win. You were right…"

"What I'm using is of a higher level than yours. You're only using a lower ultimate god rank technique, while the Soul Sky that I used was a storm god rank technique. It's an entire realm higher than yours! That's why you're not a match for me at all. Manson could not even touch me."

Jackie's words sent Florian deep into despair. If he had not seen Jackie's skills, he would have thought that Jackie was lying when he heard that. Yet, he had to believe it at that moment.

The skill Jackie had used was definitely a whole realm higher than his own. Otherwise, there was no way he would have lost so completely.

Jackie's lips curled up into a smile of disdain, "Those people died at my hands just like that. Your fellow disciples died to me as well. This is the consequence of you second-grade world warriors being so arrogant and looking down on everyone else!"

Florian opened his mouth but found himself with nothing to say.

His eyes were about to pop out of their sockets.

At that moment, he regretted his decision to face Jackie alone. If he had not done so, three of them working together should have been able to beat Jackie. Yet, he had blinded himself, refusing to listen to anyone else. That was why all of this had happened to him.

When Jackie finished saying all of that, he slowly stood up to look at the other warriors from second-grade worlds.

Only then did they realize that the tables had turned. The little sheep they thought they could just slaughter at will had turned into bloodthirsty wolves. The six of them paled as they started to panic.

They exchanged looks of fear with each other.

Jackie laughed as he turned to look at Agelt and the others, “Hurry up and attack. We can’t give them any chance to survive!”

At the massive cave fifty kilometers away, both Guardio and Jake sat at their original spots, like they had been doing before.

As time passed, Guardio felt more and more unsettled, feeling like something had happened.

After an hour, Guardio opened his eyes as he looked at Jake, saying, “Contact Florian. See if you can reach him.”

When Jake heard that, his expression stiffened. Even though he did not like hearing such depressing thoughts, he still did it. He took out a sound array from his storage ring, forming a few seals before the array burned up.

He transmitted what he wanted to say into the sound array, “Florian! Report your location! If you’ve dealt with them, then come back now!”

The sound array burnt up, and they quietly waited.

After ten minutes, they still did not receive a response. Jake started to panic at that.

Chapter 3395
If they had lost contact with Florian as well, then the situation would be incredibly bad. It proved what Guardio had said before.

Compared to how panicked Jake was feeling, Guardio was much calmer. He had already guessed that it was possible, so he was still calm.

It was because he had already expected it when he tried to stop Florian, but Florian refused to listen. As time passed, Jake got more and more nervous. He could not even remain seated.

He stood up from the mat and paced around anxiously.

After another ten minutes, there was still no news.

Then Jake, who was in complete panic, looked at Guardio said, “You were right, there really is an unknown variable among the warriors from the third-grade worlds. There’s someone who we didn’t account for among them, and he’s our biggest threat!”

“Even Florian fell to him! Who is that person?! I have an even more depressing thought. What if it’s not just one person, but two or three of them?!”

Guardio shook his head and said, “No need to panic. There should only be one person. If there were two or three, then we wouldn’t be sitting here so safely right now. They should already be here!”

Jake looked at Guardio with some surprise, “How are you so sure?”

Guardio shook his head, “Manson isn’t an idiot. Even though he doesn’t know much, Manson should still know our names and our backgrounds. He should have spat everything out after being tortured a little…”

“It’s precise because he revealed everything that Florian received in that message! Since they already know everything, but never changed their plans, it means that they don’t have the confidence to beat all of us. They might not even have the courage to appear in front of us. So, I’m guessing that there shouldn’t be that many! There should only be one!”

Jake felt like Guardio’s analysis was reasonable. Before that, he even felt like Guardio was being too careful, just like Florian did. He finally understood that he and Florian had been the impulsive ones.

They were not just impulsive, but stupid. They fell for their opponent’s plan, and Florian was done for. They had basically lost an arm, and the situation would only get worse.

Jake started to panic.

He walked around in circles as he started to say anxiously, “What do we do next? We can’t just let them strike at us! We need to figure out a way. We can’t lose any more men!”

Guardio took a deep breath as his eyes flashed helplessly, “We have to make plans for the worst case scenario. The hunters have become the hunted. If we keep insisting on following our earlier plans, then we’ll have to pay a painful price.”

Jake frowned and said, “what do you mean? The worst case scenario? Don’t scare me…”

Guardio shook his head as he said slowly, “The worst-case scenario is us killing off these warriors from third-grade worlds. After all, there’s only one way to leave this place. Once a hundred people have been shaved off, we’ll be able to leave this place since the game will end. However, we’ll have to bear with their anger after we’re out. It’s still better than dying.”

The moment he said that Jake looked like he had been slapped a few times, “You’re saying that we have to end the game to save ourselves?!”

Guardio nodded helplessly. Jake looked incredibly deflated as he sat back down on the mat.

His lips trembled as he said, “How could this be? I don’t want to! I want to meet him! Whether it’s just one person or two, we should still see who that person is!”

Chapter 3396
Jake understood what Guardio was saying. When he heard that, he knew that Guardio was already preparing for the worst, to cut their losses down to the lowest possible number. Yet, no matter what, Jake still wanted to see that person.

He wanted to remember what that person looked like, and wanted to remember this defeat forever. Guardio sighed, not answering Jake.

Jake said quickly, “I know you want to end this slaughter game, and increase the death toll to a hundred and twenty. Since you’ve already decided to do that, I won’t say anything. I just have one request, I need to see this person… We at least need to see what he looks like and learn his name. After we’re sent out, we’ll be blamed immediately. It would be too late to look into things.”

Guardio looked at Jake meaningfully while feeling frustrated.

He wanted to see who that person was as well, but to stop any unexpected surprises, it was better if he ended the slaughter game right away to keep their losses as low as possible.

At the very least, they could still use this as an excuse when they got out. Otherwise, those people would not let him and Jake off easily.

The plan was supposed to be foolproof, but it had completely crumbled. They only got half of the expected Heartblood, so that person would definitely be unhappy.

He would definitely be punished. Guardio sighed before he said seriously, “We can’t let our emotions dictate what we do. I know you really want to meet that person, but if we see him and any accidents happen, then we would suffer losses that we never should have.

“We’ll be questioned after we get out, and our punishments would be even worse. The original punishment was already hard enough for us to bear, if it was any worse, don’t you know how badly we’ll suffer?”

Those words caused Jake’s mouth to freeze. He looked incredibly ashen as he sighed despondently.

Those guys would never hold back to accomplish their goals. The three of them had been ordered to complete the task, and it was not something they could refuse.

If they did well, they would get amazing rewards. If they did not, they would immediately be questioned and even locked up. Then, once they left the Whirling World, nothing good would be waiting for them.

The moment Jake thought about the future, he felt like those originally bright skies had been completely covered by dark clouds. The future was so dark that he might fall into a pit if he was not careful. Jake felt more and more scared, but he did not want to give up.

He clenched his fists tightly as he clenched his teeth and said, “It’s already so bad anyway. So what if it gets worse? To prevent any unexpected accidents, we can make a new plan. I don’t want to leave just like that…”

“Even if I know I’m not a match for him and the two of us can’t fight against him together for the sake of the plan, I still want to meet him. I want to know who forced us to this state.”

Guardio sighed helplessly, not expecting Jake to be so stubborn. He did not want to go on anymore and merely nodded slightly, agreeing to Jake’s request. Jake narrowed his eyes, thinking about Florian.

He said, “That person won’t kill Florian so quickly. He’ll probably spend some time finding out even more things from Florian’s mouth. Do you think Florian can hold on?”

Chapter 3397
Guardio raised an eyebrow. He had never cared much for Florian, feeling like Florian was just a hotheaded man who did not care for anything.

The truth had proven that Guardio’s judgment of Florian had been right. Florian was just a simple-minded person.

If he was just a bit smarter and a little less arrogant, that would not have happened to him.

At that moment, Florian had already been dragged into the cave where Rudy and the others were.

Jackie dragged Florian into the cave like a pig. At that moment, Florian had already regained his rationality. However, his soul was so damaged that he was already a cripple. Unless he takes a miraculous medicine, he would not live for longer than two days.

Everyone looked on as Jackie threw the man inside, and all of them clenched their fists emotionally.

Manson had already told them everything he knew. At that moment, they knew that Florian was one of the three leaders of the alliance.

So many third-grade world warriors had died at Florian’s hands.

They would not be angry if those warriors had just been killed with one strike, but they had seen how warriors from third-grade worlds were tortured. Their bodies were full of scars, and their eyes widened before they died. They were tortured inhumanely.

All those sights were deeply ingrained in the minds of all the warriors from third-grade worlds.

He was the one who had organized their actions.

A warrior from Chaos Continent could not help but walk a few steps forward, trying to beat him up, but he was held back.

“Calm down, we’re all angry here. You don’t have to be in a rush to beat him up. The fact that Jackie brought him back alive means that Jackie has his own plans. If you ruin his plans, you’d be in the wrong!”

That person realized that he was acting too rashly. He was still angry, but he merely stood by the side and stared at Florian with widened eyes. Everyone else was looking at Florian furiously as well.

If looks could kill, Florian would have already died a thousand times.

Jackie knelt next to Florian and coldly looked at him. Florian’s lips trembled slightly as he panted, wanting to retreat. However, he was someone who would rather lose his life than his dignity, so he did not retreat backward. Instead, he looked Jackie right in the eye, not admitting defeat.

Jackie smiled, “You’re quite stubborn. Aren’t you worried that I’ll torture you later?”

Florian clenched his teeth and said, “What kind of nonsense are you saying?! I’m already a sitting duck right here. You can do whatever you want to me. Just torture me however you feel like. However, I won’t admit defeat no matter what!”

“Don’t even think about getting any news from me. So what if you’re strong? There are people stronger than you from the second-grade world! They’ll take revenge for me!”

Florian had said all of that angrily as he stared right at Jackie.

Jackie sighed helplessly.

Florian was more stubborn than the others he had captured before. Even if he understood that he would go through excruciating torture, he refused to admit defeat.

Jackie had no reason to care about Florian’s stubbornness.

He said calmly, “There are only two paths in front of you. You can answer whatever I ask without lying.”

Chapter 3398
“The second option would be for you to remain stubborn until the end, but I’ll make sure you endure the most painful torture in the world. I don’t plan on killing you either. I’ll let you leave this slaughter game alive. You’ll get to have your fellow disciples take care and try to cure you…”

“However, I’ll let you know something. Your soul’s already injured. Unless you have some divine medicine, you’ll only be a walking dead man. You’ll be tortured every moment you’re alive. I’ll sever your limbs, so you won’t even be able to die.”

“Your fellow disciples will probably not bear to just kill you like that. You’ll watch as you keep on suffering, trying to use every way they can to save you. It will be useless! There’s still a year and a half until the Whirling World closes. You’ll be living through torture for all that time…”

Every word Jackie said felt like a needle piercing into Florian's heart.

No matter how much Florian could bear, he could not help but shudder after he heard that.

Just thinking about how he would be tortured for a year and a half filled Florian with dread. He wanted to kill himself right there. It really was an excruciating torture.

To stop Florian from killing himself, Jackie even wanted to sever his limbs. That was unbelievably cruel.

Florian clenched his teeth and said, "You're shameless and despicable! You're so sinister! Are you not afraid of retribution for doing this?! You'll pay for it!"

Florian frantically cursed at Jackie. At that moment, that was all he could do.

When Jackie heard that he sneered and said, "Don't you think your curses are a joke? Comparing methods, you're far crueler than I am. Countless warriors from third- grade worlds have been tortured to death by your hands. How could you say all of that?"

"If we're really talking about retribution, you deserve several times more than anyone else. You wouldn't be able to repay it all in your lifetime!"

Florian's mouth froze, unable to say anything. His curses had incited the anger of the other warriors from third-grade worlds.

A warrior from the Lycan continent shouted, "You warriors from second-grade worlds are so shameless. You're the only ones allowed to kill us with cruel methods, but we're not allowed to fight back? As long as we fight back, you say that we're cruel?"

"Can you use your brain before you speak?! Who can be crueler than you guys?! All those corpses on the ground that have been tortured by you to their death! Your situation is so much better than theirs!"

A warrior from White Marsh Continent nodded and said, "These people really are exasperating. They can do anything they want to others, but others can't fight back at all. Anyone who fights back is wrong. An attitude like that is so disgusting."

"The warriors from second-grade worlds have lost quite a bit. They've paid a price for their actions! When we get out, we need to tell everyone their plans. Then, we'll be prepared for anything they want to do!"

Jackie quietly listened to everyone. After a moment, he looked down at Florian again.

Chapter 3399
"I have more than enough time to play with you right now. Keeping quiet will do you no good. You're not gathering the Heartblood for yourself anyway. You're probably gathering it for your fellow disciples, right? Are you trying to be loyal to them by not saying anything?"

Jackie's tone was very calm while saying that as if he was not talking about anything important at all.

Jackie knew very well that Florian would slowly lower his guard if he said that. It was because someone as arrogant and prideful as Florian could never truly be loyal to anyone. He definitely did it for his own benefit.

Sure enough, Jackie was right. Florian's expression changed when he heard that.

He slowly lost his stubborn expression as his eyes started to dart around, and various thoughts surfaced in his head.

That was right!

Was he just showing his loyalty to his eldest senior by being stubborn?

Why did he need to do that?

He never got any benefits usually, and he would only be remembered when there was something for him to do.

Furthermore, he was even forced to agree to be harshly punished if he could not finish the task.

Just thinking about that, Florian felt incredibly unhappy.

Why did he need to be loyal to that person?

Why did he need to suffer so much for the sake of that person?!

What was he going to get out of it?

Just looking at how Jackie was smiling while saying all those horrifying things like severing his limbs and torturing him just made him feel like he would go crazy.

Paying a price like that all for the sake of protecting a secret that was not even his own!

How was that worth it at all?

Florian took a deep breath as he thoroughly resigned himself.

His tone was somber and had a hint of reluctance, "You're right. Even if I keep my secrets, no one will think I did well anyway. Why do I need to do so much for him when he doesn't do anything for me normally?"

When Jackie heard that, he felt relieved.

Florian frowned and said, "You have to promise me. As long as I tell you all my secrets, you will give me a quick death! I don't want to live anymore anyway."

Jackie nodded in agreement.

After a sigh, Florian continued, “You want to know what Heartblood is for, right? Let me tell you truthfully. There’s only one use for Heartblood, which is to open the Vibrant Hall! The Vibrant Hall hasn’t been opened in a thousand years…”

“Legend has it that there are countless treasures within. After entering the hall, anyone who passes the tests will get even more. Some people soared in skill because of these treasures, greatly changing their own levels. Their powers soared so much that they became top disciples of their clans…”

Saying that, Florian had an incredibly serious tone. It was obvious how important the Vibrant Hall was to him.

He thought about his situation and felt like all of that no longer had anything to do with him.

He said with an ashen look on his face, “Opening the Vibrant Hall needs a lot of Heartblood. Since it is the essence of a person-there is tremendous power in it…”

“Wanting to open the Vibrant Hall needs at least the Heartblood of three to four thousand people. You can’t use Heartblood from regular warriors either. They need to be stronger ones! There’s no point in killing lower-level warriors.”

Chapter 3400
Hearing that, a look of surprise flashed in Jackie’s eyes, but he quickly pushed it down.

Florian continued to say helplessly, “I should have been able to follow them inside and obtain some treasures after completing the task, but it has nothing to do with me anymore. If you manage to get in, take as much as you can. Everything inside is amazing! Plenty of warriors have had their fates changed because of the Vibrant Hall!”

Jackie frowned as he asked something important, “Where’s the Vibrant Hall?”

Florian answered, “The Vibrant Hall is among the level two cities. As long as you enter a level two city, you’ll be able to find it. That’s because the Vibrant Hall is the most obvious place in the level two cities. Even if you find it, it doesn’t mean you can get in. You still need a lot of Heartblood to provide the energy…”

“We planned out everything precisely because of that. Second-grade worlds are competing with other second-grade worlds as well. In order to not let these things fall into the hands of the warriors from other worlds, the Golden Continent and Sacred Water Continent temporarily worked together to form this plan…”

“Unfortunately, way too much Heartblood is needed. Even after so long, we’ve only managed to gather the Heartblood of a few hundred people. There’s still a long way until we reach our goal.”

Jackie quietly listened to everything Florian said, and his expression got more and more serious.

He had a thoughtful look on his face, feeling like he needed to make some plans early on. Since there are so many amazing things in the Vibrant Hall, Jackie could not miss it.

He had to enter the Vibrant Hall when it opened no matter how dangerous it was.

Florian took a deep breath as he looked at Jackie, “Can you kill me now? I don’t want to live anymore!”

Jackie nodded, taking out his gray sword from his storage ring.

As he was about to attack, a wisp of fire suddenly appeared in front of Florian.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Someone had activated a sound array, constantly sending messages to Florian. However, only Florian could hear it, no one else could.

When Florian heard that, his expression changed.

Jackie was curious about that.

Florian never reacted to any of the earlier messages, but he seemed to have heard something amazing this time. He first frowned before he looked at Jackie in surprise, like he did not know what to say.

Jackie frowned and said, “Just tell me what you want to. There’s nothing to hold back on anymore anyway.”

Florian thought about it and agreed, so he started to speak, “Guardio invited you to meet at the place from earlier. He said he doesn’t want to fight you but just wanted to see you satisfy his curiosity…”

Hearing that, Jackie was surprised.

He knew that the other two already knew that Florian had been captured. Jackie had thought that they would start being careful after knowing that. Yet, they had actually invited him to meet them.

They said they wanted to satisfy their curiosity.

What was there to be curious about?

Jackie could not help but scoff, feeling like they were being absurd.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3401 - 3405 -

Chapter 3401
Nonetheless, Jackie decided on going.

That place was a wide-open field with nowhere to hide anything, and he was very confident in his abilities. Even though the other two might be a bit difficult to handle, the two of them were no match for him if he used the full extent of his abilities.

The other warriors could be dealt with by those who went with him.

After two hours, Jackie arrived at the arranged place where Guardio, Jake, and five other warriors waited.

When he saw how serious all of them looked, Jackie could not help but wonder what they were thinking.

As he thought about it, he continued walking toward them. After another five minutes, Jackie stopped about 60 meters in front of them. Since he was standing the furthest in front, the two of them stared at him.

When Jackie stood still, Jake shouted out hoarsely, “I was wondering who it was. So it’s you!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow curiously, not expecting the man to recognize him. He looked at Jake, thinking about it for a while before noting that he had never seen him before.

Jake did not wait for Jackie to ask any questions and added, borderline shouting, “Who did the screening? How did they miss out on such a big problem?!”

Jake was incredibly emotional, so much so that his hands were clenched and his whole body was trembling. Moreover, he looked rather crazed.

Guardio looked at Jake in confusion. He did not recognize Jackie at all; it was his first time seeing Jackie.

When he saw how emotional Jake was, the curious Guardio reached out to grab Jake’s arm. “Who is this person? Why are you so emotional?”

Jake replied, “Do you remember me telling you that I had three juniors who lost to a warrior from a third-grade world? It’s this guy. His name is Jackie. His image has already been circled around our clan!”

“Every single warrior from the Azure Clan knows who he is! I shouldn’t have slacked off when they were doing their checks. I should’ve followed them and looked through every

single person. If I was doing the checks, I would've seen him immediately! This guy just brings disaster!"

Just thinking about Jackie's record, Jake could not help but shiver.

Both the 33rd and 32nd-ranked disciples had fallen to him even when they attacked Jackie together. After that, a chosen disciple ranked in the top 20 but whose true strength was in the top 15 had lost to him as well.

Just with those results, Jake believed that Jackie would at least be ranked in the top five in his clan.

He would definitely not be able to stand up against Jackie.

Jackie had completely turned the tides just with his own strength, which made Jake even more sure that Jackie was the scourge of the Azure Clan.

Jake's hands trembled slightly. "I can't believe it's you! I thought that you wouldn't arrive in Weinhord City so quickly, but I was wrong. I can't believe we were unlucky enough to meet you!"

Jake's lips trembled as he spoke. His expression looked so sour that it looked like he had eaten a fly.

He turned around and said helplessly, "If it were anyone else, the two of us might've been able to face them together. If it's Jackie, then forget about it. I don't have the confidence. Even if the two of us work together, I'm still not confident in beating him. This guy really is a variable. Not only that, but he's… He is a complete monster, too."

Chapter 3402
"You must be thinking that Jackie must be from the Chaos Continent or Lycan Continent at worst, but that's not the case. This person comes from the weakest continent there is, Hestia!"

Jake's expression was completely twisted as he said all of that.

When he found out the information, Jake refused to believe that a brat from Hestia was able to cause the Azure Clan so much trouble. Even chosen disciples were no match for him.

He knew very well the kind of place Hestia was. It was a completely resource-deprived place. He thought that the strongest warrior from that place would only be able to be a runner disciple or an outer disciple, yet all of the sudden, a phoenix from a garbage dump raised and became a dark horse.

When Guardio heard that, his eyes widened abruptly. “What did you say? This guy is from the Hestia Continent?!”

As he said that, his face was full of disbelief.

Knowing the sort of place Hestia was, he was completely mystified that such a worthless place produced a warrior as strong as Jackie, and the shock was evident on his face. Even him working together with Jake would not be able to beat him!

He did not doubt the truth in Jake’s words. He knew that no matter how flawed Jake was, Jake was a prideful warrior, so the fact that Jake said all of that indicated that it was true.

Guardio’s lips twitched, and he started to look at Jackie with a completely different expression. Even his emotions started to feel a bit twisted.

The fact that he could not even stand up to a brat from a worthless third-grade world kept on echoing in his head.

He could not accept it, but there was nothing he could do about that. The truth was right in front of him. Unless he was crazy enough to try to work with Jake to fight Jackie, he would need to accept it.

There were thousands upon thousands of warriors in Weinhord City’s Three Deer Stage. Among those warriors, a third were from second-grade worlds while the rest were from third-grade worlds. They were all gathered there to witness the final results of the slaughter game.

The ones who survived the slaughter game would be sent to the Three Deer Stage, and the top-three placements would be revealed in a massive scroll.

Some of the warriors gathered there were waiting for their fellow disciples, while the others were just there to watch the show.

Most of the warriors from third-grade worlds looked visibly grim. They had been pushed around by the warriors from second-grade worlds, and each time they looked at a warrior from a third-grade world, they would feel incredibly uncomfortable.

As time slowly passed, the warriors gathered gradually lost their patience, especially the warriors from third-grade worlds.

A warrior from the Lycan Continent said to his fellow disciple, “What’s taking so long? Why hasn’t it ended? It’s already a day later than any other slaughter game before! Did something happen? Is the situation completely messed up? Why aren’t they out yet? We were told to wait for their triumphant return, and I hope nothing bad happened.”

His junior next to him frowned and said, “There shouldn’t be any problems. They just have to wait until a hundred and twenty people die for the game to end. Perhaps the ones who entered this time are closer in skill, so the battles last longer. That might be why it’s been dragged on for so long.”

The moment he said that, the warriors next to them joined the conversation as well. Even though they did not know each other, it did not stop them from talking.

A warrior from the Chaos Continent said, “Something unexpected must’ve happened for the time to drag on, I can almost feel it. Still, it shouldn’t be so long. At the very most, it’d be half a day. It’s already a day, but there are no signs of them coming out. I wonder how much longer we’ll have to wait. I’m starting to get anxious.”

Chapter 3403
The one standing next to him nodded. “I’m anxious, too! Everyone waiting here is anxious. I’m worried that we’ll get some bad news. I should’ve stopped my junior back then. I shouldn’t have let him join this stupid slaughter game. The death rate is depressingly high, and it’s too dangerous…”

“It’s not like there are no other ways to earn spirit crystals. What need was there for him to take such a huge risk to join the slaughter game?!”

The moment he said that, there were calls of agreement throughout, and more of them started to discuss it.

”That’s right… The death rate in the slaughter games is way too high. Even though the game will end once a hundred and twenty people die, most of them who’ll die are the warriors from third-grade worlds, and they have a seventy-percent death rate. Just thinking about such a high number of deaths makes me shudder!”

The moment that was said, everyone’s expression soured. Even though they did not say anything, their hatred for warriors of second-grade worlds still reached its limit. The warriors from second-grade worlds and the warriors from third-grade worlds were already reaching the peak of their conflict.

A warrior from White Marsh Continent said curiously, “Did you notice? They seem much quieter this time…”

That person was referring to the warriors from second-grade worlds.

He would naturally not name any names, worried about being targeted, so he chose to be vague in voicing his thoughts. The others naturally understood, and they started to talk about it.

“That’s right. Before this, the Three Deer Stage will have a lot of warriors gathered here when the slaughter game is about to end. They’d try to show off in front of us, and always try to mock us…”

“I don’t know what happened this time. Those guys might still be gathered together and separated from us, but they’re not actively running their mouths, accusing us of ‘not knowing our place’. It’s strange. Did they have an epiphany or something?”

The moment that person said that, someone immediately shot back, “Even if pigs can fly, these people will never gain any self-awareness without a prompt. They’ll do whatever they can to push us down as long as they get the chance to. They just want to show us how noble they are. There must be something wrong going on here.”

“What could be happening? I think it’s because the warriors from second-grade worlds who entered this time are all just not that strong. The ones in the top three might be warriors from third-grade worlds. They anticipated the result, so they aren’t daring to act arrogant!”

“I think so too. Why else are they so quiet? They’re gathered here, but they’re not talking or loudly shouting at anyone. It’s like they’ve become mute.”

The discussions were heard by the warriors from second-grade worlds, and their anger soared. They did not act as arrogantly as before because they did not want their plans to be exposed.

They wanted to avoid any trouble as long as it was possible, hence their silence. Unexpectedly, these useless third-grade world warriors belittled them!

They felt like they were completely smeared. The warriors from second-grade worlds could no longer remain calm.

An inner disciple from a holy grade clan suddenly shouted at the warriors from the third-grade worlds, “What do you know? We just don’t want to bother you guys. Are your ears itching because you haven’t been shouted at? Will you only be happy if we mock you a few times?”

“The top three places in the slaughter game will always belong to the second-grade worlds. There’ll never be anyone from a third-grade world! You’re dreaming here. You’re just lumps of trash bags! All you’re good at is bragging!”

This time, the warriors from the third-grade worlds were in a complete uproar.

Those words were just far too ugly. The insults had never been so bad before.

Chapter 3404
The warriors of third-grade worlds were enraged to have been insulted by such words.

They wanted nothing more than to fight all the warriors from the second-grade worlds, yet they knew very well that the warriors from second-grade worlds were stronger than them on average.

However, there were warriors from over ten third-grade worlds there, and they had the upper hand in numbers, so a clear victor could not be easily decided if they ended up fighting.

Those from second-grade worlds had pushed them down too many times, so they had piled up a lot of anger.

A warrior from the Lycan Continent shouted out loudly, “I know that second-grade worlds have a lot of strong warriors, but do you think there are none from third-grade worlds? We have powerful prodigies, too. We have more prodigies than you, too!”

“Don’t think you can keep waving your ‘we’re from a powerful origin’ card to our faces. We haven’t done anything against you before this just because we don’t want the trouble, but you kept trying to cross the line!”

Everyone around him agreed, cursing at the second-grade world warriors for not knowing their place. Ever since they started to be grouped up with second-grade worlds, they had been looked down on in every front.

Those warriors from second-grade worlds were clearly not that god-like, but they relished in acting as though they were superior.

No matter what the actual situation was, they decided that they were better than warriors from third-grade worlds just because of where they were from.

A warrior from a third-grade world shouted, ”It’s not like every one of you is a genius, so why are you acting like you’re an omnipotent being? You keep trying to show off in front of us.”

“You do have strong warriors on your side, but do you think we don’t? You have so many wandering warriors, which is pretty much the same as us. I really don’t know where you get your sense of superiority from!”

When the warriors from second- grade worlds heard that, they refused to show any weakness.

A warrior from the Golden Continent said loudly, “We’re just stronger than you; that’s why we’re superior! We’re a level higher than you. Curse your luck to have been born in a third-grade world, then. If you hailed from a second-grade world, I’d look at you as an equal!”

When that was said, it ignited the anger of third-grade world warriors. The arguments got more and more intense. If it was not for the fact that they still knew to hold back, they would have started fighting on the spot.

A warrior from the Sacred Water Continent frowned as he lowered his voice, saying, “Why are all of you quarreling with those scraps? What’s the point? Will you be able to win anything?”

“In the end, the results are what matters. Just let them say whatever they want…”

“They’ll just be slapped in the face anyway. Do you think they can even dream of being high up in the rankings? Ever since the slaughter games started, no third-grade world warrior has been able to climb on that board. They’re just dreaming by saying all of that. Just let them dream on.”

After that person said that, quite a few warriors from second- grade worlds agreed.

A warrior from the Sacred Water Continent said, “They’ re just being loud right now because they don’t know anything. Once the slaughter game ends, they’ll be stunned when they see who survives.”

Chapter 3405
Saying that, the warriors from second-grade worlds immediately lowered their voices, not wanting those from third-grade worlds to hear them.

“Lance is right. Do we really need to waste our time and effort on them? Let them feel with themselves for now. They’ll be crying soon enough.”

An inner disciple from Azure Clan laughed and said, “Even before the results are out, we already know who’ll be in the top three. They’re all blindly trying to guess like idiots. They’re even saying that their men, too, can be at the top of the slaughter game rankings! I can’t believe they’re not afraid of being laughed at!”

An outer disciple of Azure Clan laughed and said, “The results aren’t out yet, so they can say whatever they want. These people are already used to living in filth. They sure love dreaming. We shouldn’t be so petty with them.”

“Guardio will be in first place, Jake will be second, and Florian will be in third place anyway, and that won’t change! Let them feel happy about themselves for now. There’s no point for us to stoop to their level.”

“You’re right. They can say whatever they want to, ’cause it won’t happen anyway. We should just keep quiet so we don’t stir their suspicions. Their happiness won’t last that long, and their laughter will die down soon enough.”

Slowly, the warriors from second-grade worlds no longer bothered quarreling with the warriors from third-grade worlds.

The warriors from the third-grade worlds no longer bothered arguing since the other party was quiet, but their suspicions remained as they could not shake off the feeling something was amiss. However, they could not figure it out.

Time slowly passed, and after another hour or so, the Three Deer Stage finally showed some movement.

A vibrant light suddenly surrounded the whole stage, causing everyone to hold their breaths. Everyone knew that the results were about to be announced.

A massive scroll materialized at the center of the stage slowly flying into the air. After that, the scroll was slowly opened. The slaughter game only announced the top ten rankings, and it would start from first place.

Their shock was only warranted when they saw Jackie's name.

A warrior from Hestia said as his lips trembled, "Jackie is in first place…With twenty-one kills! He hails from Hestia, and he's in first place! Quick, have a double-take! Did I misread that? Am I hallucinating?!"

His fellow disciple next to him said, "No, you read right! Just look at everyone else's faces. They look the same as you! If it's a hallucination, then everyone must be hallucinating at the same time!"

Jackie's name was in first place, while Guardio was in second place, and Jake was in third. In fourth place was someone called Chandler.

The warriors from the second-grade worlds were all stunned. Florian's name was nowhere to be seen among the top ten at all!

Where did he go?

A chosen disciple from Azure Clan said stiffly, "Could something have happened to Florian?"

"Impossible! Florian ranks at the eleventh place among chosen disciples. With his skills, there wouldn't be any problems for him to sweep the slaughter game. There's no way anything happened to him! Florian must've had some other plans and ignored the rewards!"

After that person said that, everyone else was quiet.

No one agreed with him, and no one spoke. Everything in front of them had stunned the warriors from second-grade worlds. They could not believe what they were seeing!

All of them had stiff expressions on their faces.

At that moment, a warrior from a third-grade world said loudly, “Do you see that? Who’s in first place?! I’ve already said that there will be a warrior from a third-grade world in the top three! You refused to believe it and even tried to insult us!”

“Open your eyes and look! Who’s in first place?! Is it a warrior from a second-grade world?!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3406 - 3410 -

Chapter 3406

“You were so happy with yourself and tried so hard to push us down, so why the silence now? Weren’t you so sure that the first three placings would all be warriors from second-grade worlds?”

“Why aren’t you saying that anymore?! How does it feel to slap yourselves in the face? Did it feel good?”

Right after that was said, the expressions of the second-grade-world warriors soured.

They had just been talking about how warriors from the third-grade worlds would not be able to say anything after the results were out, but to their utmost shock, their words came to bite them in return.

It was Jackie’s name instead listed in first place.

The warriors from the Golden Continent were already very familiar with Jackie’s name.

The warriors from Azure Clan all had dark looks on their faces when they saw Jackie’s name. It was like their families had been killed overnight.

An inner disciple from Azure Clan said, “That’s Jackie! Could it be that guy who defeated three of ours in the level six city?!”

Another disciple next to him said, “Not only did he defeat three, but there’s already four if you count Nevada as well. If he was in the Azure Clan, he’d probably be ranked in the top five. I don’t think it’s a surprise that he’s in first place.”

Most of the disciples from Azure Clan agreed with that assessment. After defeating three chosen disciples from Azure Clan, all of them had a deep impression of Jackie, and they tried to estimate his skills.

After thinking about it, they came to the conclusion that Jackie’s skills should be among the top five of chosen disciples in a holy grade clan. Regular chosen disciples would be no match for Jackie.

“I have an uneasy feeling in my stomach. If Jackie’s here, then could Florian not be in the rankings because he… He died to Jackie?!”

The moment that was said, everyone exchanged looks with each other.

Quite a few people wanted to disagree with that loudly, but they could not bring themselves to open their mouths to say it because they felt like it was a definite possibility. The possibility was quite large as well.

Jackie was an unknown variable to their plans this time, and this man would no doubt hinder their plan.

After a frantic wait, the space around the Three Deer stage started to distort as a sign that there were people being transferred over. After a few moments, 100 survivors stood on the stage.

In the very middle was Jackie, wearing his gray robes. Not too far away from Jackie was Jake and Guardio, their expressions hardened. If anyone looked closer, they would notice that the two of them seemed to be forcing themselves to remain calm.

At that moment, the warriors from the third-grade worlds were in an uproar. There were those who loudly shouted at anyone they recognized on the stage.

A warrior from Hestia cheered loudly, “Alfred! Over here! We were waiting for you! I know you’d come back safely!”

Alfred immediately looked over when he heard the cheering.

When he heard what his fellow disciple said, Alfred let out a wry smile. If Jackie had not been there, he would have already been tortured to death.

How could he have gotten out so easily?

Just thinking about that, Alfred could not hold back his hatred. He turned around and gave Jackie a deep bow.

Before they got out, he had told Jackie everything he wanted to say. Jackie asked not of any sort of gifts in return and only wanted Alfred to live on properly.

After that bow, he turned around and walked down.

Chapter 3407
The surviving warriors from third-grade worlds emotionally returned to the people they knew.

Meanwhile, second-grade world warriors looked visibly troubled when they saw that many third-grade world warriors had survived.

They knew that their final goal in the plan was to not let any warriors from third-grade worlds survive, using the cruelest methods they could to get even more Heartblood. Alas, it all seemed for naught as many from third-grade worlds had survived.

In fact, the losses the second-grade worlds suffered were even higher than the warriors from third-grade worlds' this time!

When they realized that, the warriors from second-grade worlds could no longer keep their composure.

"What's happening?" asked one of them. "Why did so many of them survive?!"

"Did any of you see Hirving? How is he not here?!"

"It's not just Hirving, Uriel's not out either! Both of them are chosen disciples! How could they not have survived? What happened? Why did it come to this?!"

The Three Deer Stage only sent out the warriors that survived. If a person was not there, it meant that the person was dead. However, a few warriors from second-grade worlds could not accept this fact. After all, many of the warriors who did not make it out were incredibly strong, even stronger than most of them there.

Regrettably, not that many of them managed to walk out of the slaughter game alive. Quite a lot of them could not accept it.

How did it get to this?

What happened in that isolated space during the slaughter game?

Jackie calmly walked down the Three Deer Stage, and a happy-looking Rudy was following behind him.

Rudy had naturally trusted Jackie's skills and that Jackie would be able to get him out of the slaughter game. However, before he came out in the end, he still had his worries. After all, the slaughter game was a plot this time.

Jackie needed to deal with far too many people, and any small mistake would throw all of them into danger. Thankfully, he dealt with all the problems, and they managed to get out easily.

After walking down the Three Deer Stage, the warriors that gathered around it made a path for them. Walking through the crowd, Jackie could hear their whispers.

"Jackie killed twenty-one people! One person gets him five million spirit crystals! Just from this slaughter game alone, he managed to get a hundred and five million! Goodness… That's a hundred and five million!"

"I've never seen so many spirit crystals in my life!

“It’s so frustrating comparing myself to these people. Most people would be thankful enough just to survive the slaughter game, but not only did he escape unharmed, but he even managed to make a hundred and five million spirit crystals! That’s too big of a difference!”

“Let’s not think about that anymore. I heard one of my seniors mention that they only managed to get out of the slaughter game thanks to Jackie’s help. Otherwise, not a single one of them would’ve made it out…”

“Really? Did something happen?”

Hearing all those whispers, Jackie’s face betrayed no emotion. Yet, Rudy’s lips curled up as he walked by his side.

After the two of them walked out, Jackie headed straight for the nearest inn. Getting out of the slaughter game was within his expectations, but getting out of it safely had consumed much effort. He planned on resting for two days before making plans for the future.

Chapter 3408
The inn was not far away from the Three Deer stage, and it took Jackie and Rudy only an hour to reach their destination.

Jackie did not say another word as he took out the spirit crystals to get a room for 10 days.

When the two of them went upstairs, Rudy could no longer hold back as he gushed, “Those two were so scared of you! I thought that they wanted to see you because they wanted one final showdown. I didn’t expect that they weren’t lying at all.”

“They actually were just curious and wanted to see how you looked and what your name was. After that, they told their subordinates to kill all of those that were still being kept barely alive, sending the number of deaths to a hundred and twenty to end the slaughter game…”

As he said that, Jake’s expression flashed in Rudy’s mind.

When Jake looked at Jackie, Jake looked like he had swallowed a fly. He looked to be suffering incredibly.

He seemed furious at Jackie, but there was nothing he could do. When he knew that Jackie had been the one taking the charge with everything, Jake already knew that there was no way they could turn things around, they had lost.

The plan could no longer go on, so they quickly ended the slaughter game to keep their losses to a minimum.

Rudy laughed as he said, “That Guardio had such a long look on his face. He looked at you as if he wanted to rush forward and bite you. He must hate you immensely right now. He must be thinking that they would’ve finished their tasks easily if you weren’t around. Not only did they fail their task this time, but they‘ll be punished when they get back, too!”

Rudy‘s smile threatened to split his face apart.

He narrowed his eyes and continued, “These presumptuous guys think that they can rule over the Whirling World just because they’re somewhat skilled. What a joke! I think they’re like a bunch of shrimp who only dare to bully the weak. When facing anyone strong, their pride completely evaporates. It‘s hilarious!”

Jackie nodded with a slight smile.

Rudy sat on the chair and continued, though this time sounding somewhat irked, “They’ve suffered this time. Jackie, you need to be prepared. You’ll end up on their hit list, and they‘ll do their best to cause you trouble everywhere.”

Jackie nodded. “They’ll try to figure out a way to kill me. However, ever since I arrived at Hestia, my enemies never stopped coming for me. If they want to kill me, they‘ll have to pay the price for it with their own flesh. I’ll make sure they understand that nothing good comes from trying to go against me!”

The Whirling World’s various rules meant that most places within the cities prohibited any fighting.

If they wanted to kill Jackie, they would need to operate within the rules. However, Jackie viewed the rules as tools for him to do what he wanted to. If they fought within the rules, it was hard to say who would win.

Rudy poured some tea for Jackie. “Do we have any plans after this? There are still a few places in Weinhord City. Are we going to continue staying here, or are we going to leave for the next city? With your Crystal Badge, we can go wherever we want anyway.”

Jackie shook his head. “We won’t leave Weinhord City for now. There are still a lot of great places we should go to. Also, I feel like they‘ll try again since their plans failed this time. I’m not trying to be righteous, but I want to make them feel fear.”

When Rudy heard that, he raised an eyebrow curiously. “What are you planning to do to intimidate them?”

Jackie let out a smile as he said slowly, “It’s very simple. They’ll keep trying to challenge and target me after this. I‘ll take the chance to inflict a little bit of pain on them.”

Chapter 3409

“Once enough of them try their luck, they’ll need to think of the retribution they’ll have to go through if they continue to target me. These people might hate me, but as long as I can make them feel fear, they’ll have no choice but to concede and zip it.”

Rudy nodded vigorously after he heard that, saying in approval, “You’re right! That’s exactly what you should do! You should make them feel pain. Make sure that they know they’ll just keep suffering if they continue. They‘ll realize how stupid everything they’re doing is once they see that they‘ve suffered too much.”

Jackie sipped his tea while saying, “We’ll be facing more of them in the future, and we’ll be facing even more warriors from second-grade words. We have to enter the Vibrant Hall. Once the news spreads, countless people will want a piece of the pie. Warriors from third-grade worlds will join too.”

Rudy‘s lips twitched as he straightened his body and said, “Warriors from third-grade worlds? Do they not know their place? If they join, they‘d just be cannon fodder…”

“Vibrant Hall is among the level two cities. Weinhord is just a level four city, and three second-grade worlds are already gathered here. If they continue advancing, even stronger second- grade worlds will be competing against us. The dangers and death rates would just keep increasing.”

“Those who aren‘t strong enough have to either stay in lower-level cities or end up being cannon fodder, easily killed by the strong. Even I can see that, so why can‘t they? Why would they still try to interfere? Do they not want to live anymore?”

Jackie sighed as he looked out the window. “Any warrior will be beguiled by treasures. Even though everyone realizes this, it’s hard for them to not be tempted by this…”

“Those who are confident in their own skills might say that they won‘t dare to participate, but their hearts are most definitely intrigued. They’ll all just wait for a chance. Even if they know that they may die, they‘d still want to try.”

Hearing that, Rudy sighed, he felt like Jackie was right.

A lot of warriors were crazy fanatics who would disregard their lives for treasure and resources, thinking they would have a strike of luck.

As long as they managed to survive, they would be able to get the treasures and their abilities would soar, earring admiration everywhere.

Rudy sighed and said, “These people insist on trying their hand at something that’s almost certain death, but I’m not surprised at all. I suddenly feel like I‘m the smartest person.”

Rudy had resigned himself to his fate. After all, he completely relied on Jackie to reach where he was. He would not even dream about touching something like that.

The next day, Jackie brought Rudy downstairs to drink some tea while they listened in on conversations to gather some information.

The inn was a great source of information. Many warriors gathered here to drink and talk, saying things that they did not necessarily have to.

Jackie looked downstairs and noted that they were all warriors from third-grade worlds, and not a single warrior from a second-grade world was in sight.

It seemed like the warriors from second-grade worlds wanted to separate themselves from the warriors from third-grade worlds no matter what, just to show off their status.

Chapter 3410
They would always choose to gather where warriors from third-grade worlds were not present.

To prevent any trouble, Jackie put on a disguise as he and Rudy sat at a corner of the inn, and the two drank tea as they listened to the discussions.

A man wearing black robes loudly ranted, “This is too much! What more do they want?! They‘re showing their hands now. Do they think we’ll still fall for it? I can’t believe they can be so cruel!”

“Killing is killing. None of us have clean hands anyway. However, they don‘t care what they do for the sake of their goals. They tortured so many third-grade world warriors to death for the sake of their Heartblood!”

“To stop the information from getting out, they even tried to kill all third-grade world warriors in that slaughter game! Their methods are cruel, and their hearts are despicable! I hate that I’m too weak to kill them all myself!”

A bearded man next to him sighed and said, “Those guys act so fearlessly probably because they feel that we won‘t dare to fight back. They don’t even think we‘re people at all. They look at us like livestock that they can kill at any time!”

“As long as it benefits them, they’d probably be willing to even eat us alive! This has nothing to do with cruelty. In their eyes, cruelty doesn’t exist. They just think this is all natural!”

These third-grade-world warriors were furious as they lamented and ranted. All of them gritted their teeth as they spoke, wanting nothing more than to find a warrior from a second-grade world to fight them to the death.

Even Rudy's face was turning red in anger. His eyes looked like they were going to pop out of their sockets.

He gritted his teeth and said, "I say we exact vengeance on those men given the chance. What do you say, Jackie? These warriors from second-grade worlds have gone too far!"

Jackie pursed his lips helplessly. "I don't know how many times I've heard you say they've crossed the line within a day. Can't you say anything else? Don't think about it anymore. In the eyes of second-grade-world warriors, it's not crossing the line at all. It's just that it makes us angry hearing about that. There's no need to try looking for revenge; we should just do what we need to."

Rudy nodded seriously.

The others grew rowdier.

The purple-robed man said angrily, "They won't stop here. They'll try everything they can to collect even more Heartblood! Who knows how many will die because of them!"

The others nodded at that person's words.

A lot of them started to lament the fact that they could not control their own fates.

The bearded man said, "Thankfully, Jackie managed to safeguard them. If he wasn't there, those people wouldn't have walked out alive. If they all died, we wouldn't know what happened to them even if we noticed. Then, we'd have nothing to say!"

The moment that was said, everyone's expressions darkened.

The purple-robed man sighed before he said, "What do we do now? Are we just supposed to wait and pray that they don't continue targeting us? Are we not going to fight back?"

Someone else replied, "Of course we want to fight back! Everyone here does! Yet, the truth is right in front of us, and there are always some problems we have to consider. The warriors from second-grade worlds are just stronger than us as a whole. We'll have to pay a huge price to fight back."

"The only thing we can do is to avoid any of the plots and stop ourselves from becoming their prey. We should always be on the alert and watch out for each other. They wouldn't be able to kill us if they tried."

"So we're just supposed to bear with it? My senior was tortured to death by them! Can't I take revenge?"

“None said that you can’t, but the price of revenge is steep. We need to act when the time is right, and not fight every battle we see. We have to think about things clearly! We also need a leader that can face them!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3411 - 3415 -

Chapter 3411
The moment that was said, everyone widened their eyes. Everyone knew who would have to be that leader.

The bearded man touched his beard and said, “Other than Jackie, no one else has the skills to do it. As time passed, I learned a lot about Jackie. Even though he’s from Hestia Continent, talent surpasses anything. He’s never lost before. I heard those warriors from second-grade worlds say that Jackie’s skills should be at the level of a top-five chosen disciple in a holy grade clan.”

The others agreed, “Of course, it has to be Jackie! No one else would be able to lead us other than him! Where‘s Jackie, though? Up till now, I‘m not even sure if he‘s still in Weinhord City!”

Jackie immediately lowered his head in the corner. Thankfully, he had put on a disguise before he left the room, and no one recognized him.

Rudy immediately lowered his head as well.

He whispered to Jackie, “They want you to be their leader? Do you even want to do that?”

Jackie’s lips twitched somewhat helplessly when he heard that.

He turned around to look at Rudy, “Let them say what they want to, why are you thinking that was as well? Do you really think I would be a leader? Would it benefit me at all? Would they really be willing to follow me?”

“Of course, Iwill be doing some things, but I‘ll never be that so-called leader. It’s something that requires so much effort, but for no benefit. I don’t even plan on returning to Hestia Continent after leaving the Whirling World, so the position is pointless to me.”

Rudy nodded immediately, “I wasn‘t thinking properly. I just wanted revenge, to make those warriors from second-grade worlds pay!”

Jackie sighed helplessly, reaching out to pat Rudy on the shoulder, “Why are you so adamant about making them pay? There’s no way we can kill all of the warriors from second- grade worlds. In the end, we’ll still need a conclusion. What we want is to make them feel enough pain that they‘ll be scared of my abilities.”

Rudy nodded, not continuing to dwell on the issue. However, the people around them started to argue yet again.

A warrior from White Marsh Continent raised his voice and said, “We can‘t put all our hopes on Jackie. We don‘t even know where he is right now. To a genius like that, he’d only be concerned with treasures. He probably wouldn‘t want to be a leader even if we make him ours. If he doesn’t want to do it, there’s nothing we can say.”

“You‘re right, but we have to try no matter what! Don‘t you know this? There are already problems at the Demon Spirit Kingdom!”

The moment that was said, a wave of surprise was felt. Everyone turned to look at the person who was speaking.

That person had green robes on, and he coughed awkwardly when everyone turned to look at him, “Do all of you really not know?!”

The person next to him said in confusion, “What kind of problems could there be with the Demon Spirit Kingdom? You only need to kill demons and beasts to earn rewards there! You don‘t need to kill anyone, so how could there be problems?”

The man in green robes sighed, “So you really don‘t know? Those people really are despicable. As long as they can attack, they don‘t care about anything else! It’s true that you just need to kill demons and beasts in the Demon Spirit Kingdom.”

“However, the rules state that only the top three can get prizes while up to thirty can participate! These depraved guys started to form groups of twenty to enter after the last time. After that, they would attack the warriors from third-grade worlds! Since those warriors did not know that they would be attacked, they panicked and suffered total losses!”

Chapter 3412
Quite a few people were stunned when they heard that.

Someone asked loudly, “Doesn’t the Demon Spirit Kingdom prohibit fighting each other?”

The green-robed man nodded and said, “It’s true, there is a restriction against fighting each other. That Demon Spirit Kingdom saw ten warriors from third-grade worlds enter, and not a single one of them was left alive…”

“On top of that, their plans are already known to all of us, so we’re suspecting that they came up with a plan to work together and kill all the warriors from third-grade worlds. This time, there’s no one like Jackie around to save them, so not a single person survived!”

A warrior from Lycan Continent trembled in anger, “Did they not give any explanations? Did no one question them?”

The man sighed helplessly, “We have questioned them, but that was the extent of it. No one dared to do anything else. They gave their reasoning as well, but that reasoning was just exceptionally hilarious. They actually said that the warriors from third-grade worlds that entered this time were all killed by the beasts due to their lack of skills. The warriors from second-grade worlds didn’t do anything at all!”

“It’s all a load of crap! What kind of excuse is that?! If there are those not skilled enough who end up being killed by beasts, there‘s no way all of them would! There would definitely be a few left alive! Do they really think we‘d believe in that reasoning?”

The man shook his head, “Of course, no one believed it. They voiced out questions, and the warriors from second-grade worlds answered. Only, their answers were as good as nothing!”

“They merely claimed to not know anything and blamed us for not looking at ourselves in the mirror. They blamed us for insisting on going to such a dangerous place despite being so weak, and claimed that the dead had nothing to do with that!”

The moment that was said, the sound of a cup being shattered could be heard.

Someone violently threw the teacup on the ground, causing a commotion . The warriors in the inn were all furious after hearing that.

No one would believe such a ridiculous reason. They still insisted on acting that way. It proved that those people did not treat the warriors from third-grade worlds as humans at all.

The anger surged in their chests, and no one could remain calm. Even Rudy started to pant angrily as he stared right at the teacup in front of him, not saying anything.

Jackie sighed slightly, sipping some of his tea.

The tea was actually quite fragrant, but other than himself, no one there was really enjoying the tea. They had all been taken over by anger and wanted nothing more than to rush out to demand some justice.

However, Jackie felt like those thoughts were quite amusing.

Their skills were not up to par, and there was no way to fight such a huge group battle anyway. All they could do was show their anger, but there was no way they could act on it.

The green-robed man saw that the crowd was starting to get angry, and he felt like his words had affected the confidence of the warriors from third-grade worlds, so he hurriedly said, “However, their plan only worked once. We thought of a way to counter that. In the future, we will always only register as groups of twenty…”

“Once we enter the Demon Spirit Kingdom, we will determine each other’s locations through sound transfer arrays, and start hunting in groups. It‘s no longer about the results, and instead about keeping alive.”

Chapter 3413
“The warriors from second-grade worlds are still trying to do something, but their numbers are much fewer, and we’ve been on high alert. They might have tried, but they haven’t succeeded yet!”

The green-robed man’s words did nothing to calm the crowd. A warrior from Lycan Continent said helplessly, “Are we just going to keep getting pushed around like this? They challenge us everywhere, but we‘re just forced to think of ways to stop them. Will it keep on being like that?”

Those words frustrated everyone even more, but they could not figure out any way to solve the problem.

They really wanted to say that they would fight those warriors from second-grade worlds with their numbers, but none of them could voice it out.

In the end, Weinhord City did not allow fighting other than in specific areas or special matches.

Various restrictions stopped them from using their numbers to their advantage. Yet, the warriors from second-grade worlds could use their skills to keep on attacking them.

All of the warriors from third-grade worlds started to feel tired.

Rudy said, “Jackie, do you think there’s any way to solve this?”

Jackie shook his head, “There are no solutions. This world is a world where the strong eat up the weak anyway. The Whirling World’s various rules target the individuals, and not the groups, while the only advantage the third-grade worlds have is numbers…”

“Whether it’s in terms of overall strength or number of geniuses, the second-grade worlds still hold a huge advantage. On top of that, the warriors from second-grade worlds are very ambitious. They won’t stop until they get enough Heartblood. So, just like what they said, they‘re only going to suffer and figure out ways to deal with it after that. Only then will they be able to reduce their losses!”

Rudy‘s lips trembled, not wanting to accept the truth, but there was nothing he could do about it.

As someone weak, he could empathize with how helpless everyone else was feeling there. The part that Rudy could not accept the most was that the warriors from second-

grade worlds did not even see warriors from third-grade worlds as humans, but as livestock that could be dealt with any way they wanted.

He could not accept that at all. Just thinking about it made Rudy incredibly furious. However, his abilities were limited, and there was nothing he could do. So, he was forced to suppress the anger in his heart.

Slowly, Rudy started to lose control of his anger.

Jackie saw the dark look on Rudy's face and could tell what was on Rudy's mind.

He pushed the tea in front of Rudy.

"Don't think too much. In the future, you'll see even more things. If you keep on having this attitude, you'll just end up getting angrier and angrier. There are even more things that can't be solved in the world. Unless you have abilities that defy any expectations, you should just forget about it."

Rudy nodded but no words came from his mouth.

Jackie drank his tea and said, "I'll go somewhere after this, but let's return to the room so I can absorb the hundred-soul herb."

The hundred soul herb was his final reward in the slaughter games. He was allowed to choose one reward from ten treasures, and Jackie immediately had his eyes on that. The hundred soul herb was not the most valuable among those treasures, but it was the most beneficial to him.

At that moment, he had already reached the first level of master of Soul Sky and could use the Broken Soul Blade, but that was just the start.

He was still very far away from the second stage. He needed a lot of soul attribute treasures to support him. Only with those would he be able to improve even more.

Chapter 3414
Absorbing the hundred soul herb took two days and two nights.

The moment he finished, Jackie opened his eyes as a hint of exasperation flashed on his face. Rudy was always by Jackie's side.

When he saw the look on Jackie's face, he asked curiously, "What? Did something bad happen?"

Jackie shook his head as he sighed, slowly standing up. The exasperation on his face got even thicker.

Rudy felt even more curious at that, “If there are no problems, then what’s with the expression?”

At that moment, all of the energy had already been extracted from the herb by Jackie. The herb had already turned into gray ash.

Jackie looked at those ashes and said, “The hundred-soul herb is worth sixty million spirit crystals, and it’s something you might not even find if you can afford it in the Whirling World. Yet, it‘s not as useful as I expected after absorbing it. If I need to walk ten steps to get to the second stage, I haven’t even managed to take the first step…”

“I need to absorb another one for me to truly have taken that first step, but what about the nine other steps? Just taking this one step would already cost me sixty million!”

“Do you know what sixty million is?! It’s a third of everything I have! I felt exasperated because I realized that the resources I‘ll be needing in the future will only get more and more. I don’t really know how to feel.“

Jackie was being truthful. A hundred soul herb was considered a holy grade item, and it was worth around 55 million to 63 million spirit crystals. Even though the price was uncertain there was no way it would be lower than 55 million. The normal price should be as Jackie said.

That price was quite expensive to Jackie. After all, even after spending so long accumulating spirit crystals, he only had about 170 million.

Jackie‘s savings were already immense compared to anyone else, but it was far from enough for Jackie.

Jackie needed at least fifty of such a valuable treasure. His future training would need even more valuable treasures.

Just thinking about that gave him a headache. He needed to find a solution to that problem.

Rudy licked his lips by the side. Jackie‘s fortune was already something Rudy felt like he would never be able to get.

If Jackie gave Rudy all his spirit crystals, Rudy would even start laughing in his sleep. That amount of spirit crystals was a sum that Rudy felt he would never be able to finish using. Yet, Jackie felt like it was not enough.

Rudy could not help but shake his head at the difference.

After a moment, Rudy said, “Then we have to figure out a way to make even more spirit crystals!”

Jackie took a deep breath and said seriously, “Other than the resources I need for training, I still need 900 million spirit crystals to buy ninth-grade crystals.”

That was the first time Jackie had mentioned that to Rudy.

Rudy‘s mouth widened at that, “What did you say? You still need 900 million?! Oh my god, isn’t that too much?! How long would you need?”

Jackie took a deep breath as he quietly poured himself some more tea, taking a sip as he said, “As long as I constantly improve my alchemy, making more spirit crystals won’t be a problem when we leave the Whirling World.“

Rudy did not know much about the path of a warrior, since his talents were limited, but Rudy was still a little confident when it came to alchemy. Hearing Jackie say that, he straightened his body.

Chapter 3415
“You want to make 900 million from alchemy? You should know better than I do how hard that is. If you want to get to that point with alchemy, you’d at least need to become a ninth-grade alchemist. Even that might not be enough. A holy-grade alchemist is more like it!”

“You know what a holy grade alchemist is better than I do. Hestia Continent doesn’t even have a single one. It might not even have a ninth-grade alchemist. Improving your skills in alchemy doesn’t just need talent, you need a lot of time as well…”

“You need to keep on trying and trying, learning from your errors to improve. I know that you’re incredibly talented in both alchemy and combat, but alchemy is different from fighting. You can‘t become a holy grade alchemist in a short time with just your talents.”

Rudy looked at Jackie seriously as he said all of that.

In truth, Rudy felt like he was wasting his time. If he thought about it, Jackie would have too. However, he did not know how Jackie wanted to make so much through alchemy despite knowing that.

Rudy felt like it was not realistic at all. Becoming a holy grade alchemist needed a lot of time. One needed to constantly refine pills to accumulate enough experience through their errors to improve.

In the end, he knew that there had never been a holy grade alchemist in Hestia Continent.

It was far too difficult to achieve. It was a height not achievable for the alchemists of Hestia Continent.

Jackie sighed as he looked at Rudy, “Of course, I know that. However, this is the only path I have. After all, I‘ve never thought about entering any clans or groups. I can only rely on myself.”

Ever since entering Hestia Continent, Jackie had entered two clans but had failed to benefit much from them. Instead, he felt like his freedom had been restricted, and he had been tied down. Yet, sometimes, he felt like he needed to give as much as he took from the clans.

After all, clans were no idiots. They needed large amounts of resources to raise a warrior, so they naturally needed something in return.

Jackie felt like he could not make himself part of a clan, and there was no way he would allow a clan to be the one to raise him, so he needed to rely on himself in the end.

He was already prepared. When it came to becoming a holy grade alchemist, others might think that it was something impossible, but it was the opposite for him. As long as he wanted to, he could do it in a few years.

After all, he had absorbed the memories of an ancient hero. As long as he completely synchronized the memories with his body, it would not be difficult to become holy grade alchemy. He could even improve on those memories.

Jackie reached out and patted Rudy on the shoulder, saying seriously, “We’ve already known each other for so long. You know me quite well. When have I ever said something I could not do?”

Rudy said seriously, “Of course, I know you‘ll be able to do what you set out to do. I‘m not saying you can’t become a holy-grade alchemist, I’m just saying you’ll need a lot of time…”

“Once you become one, you’ll just get more and more spirit crystals. I just feel like the pace of your growth as an alchemist might not be able to catch up to the spirit crystals you need.”

Jackie nodded, saying with a smile, “Don‘t worry, it will. As long as I want to, any amount of spirit crystals isn’t a problem…”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3416-3420 -

Chapter 3416
Rudy felt like Jackie‘s words seemed incredibly confident, and his admiration for Jackie reached its peak.

The next following day, Jackie brought Rudy to the Demon Spirit Kingdom to sign up.

The Demon Spirit Kingdom was one of the tests for warriors in Weinhord City. Countless demon spirit beasts would appear there. Those beasts came in various shapes and sizes, but all of them sported a pair of green eyes.

The task for the warriors was to exterminate those beasts. After that, they would be ranked based on the number of beasts they managed to kill, and only the top three would be rewarded.

Similarly, the beasts would attack the warriors as well, and there was a chance to be killed by the beasts if one was not careful. Quite a few warriors died in the Demon Spirit Kingdom. However, the numbers kept on rising, and most of them were warriors from the third- grade world.

On top of what had happened in the slaughter game, the warriors from the third-grade worlds were on high alert.

They could tell that the sudden rise in deaths was the doing of the warriors from the second-grade worlds. The aim was to gain even more Heartblood to open the Vibrant Hall.

The Demon Spirit Kingdom was on the westernmost side of Weinhord City. From afar, quite a few people gathered there for registration could be seen.

When Jackie and Rudy arrived, the registration area was incredibly noisy. Quite a few people were shouting at one another with red faces.

Jackie frowned, not expecting such an explosive sight to greet him the moment he arrived.

There were two sides of people standing in front. Looking at their attire, it was clear that the ones on the left were warriors from third-grade worlds, while the ones on the right were warriors from second-grade worlds. Both sides were shouting at each other, and it was incredibly noisy, making Jackie annoyed.

Rudy widened his eyes and said, “What are they fighting over? Why are they talking about queueing up and ruining the rules?”

Jackie raised his hand and interrupted Rudy's questions, "Just listen for a bit. If we can't understand, then we'll ask others."

Cloud Cummer from a third- grade world was so frustrated he felt like crying, "You're just too much! Why are you acting so high and mighty when you cut the queue? The ten of us came together to participate in the Demon Spirit Kingdom! Why are you trying to stand between us?"

"No matter what, there are rules to be followed. Why are you warriors from second-grade worlds so shameless? Are you throwing away your dignity just for your goals?"

The one standing in front was Stephen Flynn from Golden Continent, he scoffed and said, "Stop talking about all this nonsense. So what if we cut the line? Does it cause you to lose anything? We just want to take part in the Spirit Demon Kingdom as fast as possible. We're just killing beasts anyway, and not you guys. Why are you being so worked up for? Stop being shameless!"

When Cloud heard that, he was furious. Kesh Burr, who was right behind him, was absolutely furious as well.

"Stop with your nonsense! Don't think that we're stupid. Do you think we can't tell what you're planning? Why aren't you trying to cut the queue in front of us? You insist on cutting right at the eleventh place. You're not just doing it alone, you're even bringing fifteen others with you!"

"You already know we're on alert against you. Every time we take part in the Spirit Demon Kingdom, we'll join in groups of twenty. If you want to participate, you'd only be able to get ten people in. Just the ten of you won't be able to do anything to twenty of us, so you never got a chance!"

Chapter 3417
"You're so nervous that you're even cutting the queue!"

"If fifteen of you squeeze in, then only five spots will be left! You'd have a much easier time doing whatever you want to! If we enter, just surviving will be a problem!"

"That's right! Kesh is right! You warriors from second-grade worlds never have any good intentions. All you think about is how to kill us off! Yet, you have the gall to pretend as if nothing happened!"

"Do you think everyone else is an idiot who can't see what you're trying to do? Aren't you just cutting the queue because you want to ruin our plans? You won't dare to do anything against twenty people, but you would if it's fifteen! The moment we enter, you'll definitely attack us!"

Hearing that, Jackie finally understood what they were fighting over.

Rudy curled his fists up in anger, “These warriors from the second-grade worlds really are doing whatever they want now. In order to get Heartblood, they’re even doing something as shameless as cutting the queue. They’re doing everything they can to achieve their goals!“

Rudy was already panting in anger. His eyes were so wide they looked like they were about to pop out of their sockets.

The actions of the warriors from second-grade worlds were no longer just despicable, they were just absolutely shameless!

Yet, the caretakers did not stop their actions. After all, they were just quarreling. They still knew how to hold back from outright fighting.

Rudy’s face was red, “What do you think should be done now? If fifteen of them enter, there’s practically no hope of making it out alive!”

Jackie nodded.

They‘re already doing something so shameless, so they must have definitely already planned things out. To get the Heartblood, they were practically doing anything they could do. Since they had already planned everything out, there was no way they would let any of those fifteen come out of the Demon Spirit Kingdom alive.

He was absolutely speechless at their actions, but there was no clear solution to what would happen.

Rudy lowered his voice and said, “Those warriors from the third-grade worlds who have already registered and the other ten are quite dumb. Since the queue was cut, they should have just cut it back and it would have been done?”

Jackie frowned, “I thought so as well, but the fact that twenty-five have already registered must mean that those people could not get their places back. Something must have happened there…”

Jackie quietly looked at the warriors from the third-grade worlds who were still quarreling without stopping. They were intensely quarreling that the loudest ones were starting to feel their voices go hoarse, feeling incredibly frustrated. After all, this was a matter of their life and death. They were in an incredibly desperate situation.

Kesh pointed at the warriors from the second-grade worlds and said, “You shameless, despicable fiends! You’ll pay for this eventually! You‘ve done so many despicable things, but you’ve paid quite the price for them. Don’t think that the warriors from third-grade worlds are easy to bully. You’ll pay for everything you did! You’ll definitely regret it!”

When Stephen heard that, he started to laugh. There was disdain in his eyes.

He then gave the other party snort of disgust, “I really don’t understand what you’re saying. What will we be paying for? What kind of shameless things have we been doing? Is registering for the Demon Spirit Kingdom something shameless?”

“You call others despicable and shameless, but I feel like you’re just a bunch of idiots. What are you even saying? We haven’t bullied you guys at all…”

“Let’s not even talk about what we‘re doing for now. You can’t make us pay for anything anyway! Even if there are some losses, it’s nothing to us warriors from second-grade worlds.“

Chapter 3418
Stephen was speaking in an incredibly annoying manner.

He had clearly done something so shameless, but he acted like there was no such thing. He was even snidely insulting the warriors from the third-grade worlds for being too weak to make the warriors from the second-grade worlds pay.

The men who had already registered got more and more frustrated. They wanted to just fight on the spot.

Kesh loudly shouted, “Don’t force us into a corner! If you force us, we could do anything. We‘ll just make sure we die together! Don’t think we‘re scared of you!”

Eduardo, who was behind Stephen, was a chosen disciple from Sacred Water Continent. When he heard Kesh’s words, he started to laugh loudly.

“Just listen to what you’re saying. Are you trying to tell us that animals will bite back when they’re cornered? What of it? There’s no use, we‘ll just kill all the animals anyway. We’ll be able to deal with it.”

Eduardo had just called all the warriors from third-grade worlds animals, which completely ignited the anger in their hearts.

Quite a few of them started to curse.

“You fiends! You’ll be killed by someone else eventually. You tortured others to death, and you‘ll be tortured to death one day. Stop trying to sound so smug. If you have the skills, let’s just fight outside the city…”

“The second-grade worlds get to have a complete battle with the third-grade worlds. There are no rules or restrictions there, and we can kill each other all we want. Then, you‘ll finally lose more men!”

When Eduardo heard that, he said with contempt, “So you‘re just planning on swarming with numbers? You‘re not fighting in terms of skill but in terms of numbers? Don’t you think that’s just a complete joke?”

“The reason there are fewer second-grade worlds in Weinhord City isn’t that there are fewer warriors from second-grade worlds, but just because there are a total of three second-grade worlds in this city, while there are ten third-grade worlds!”

“If you have the ability, then say that once you’re in level three cities. You’ll finally realize who has more men!”

Kesh waved it off, “Stop with all that, what is the meaning of this right now!”

Stephen raised an eyebrow. He was the leader of the warriors from second-grade worlds who were taking part in this test. He had the absolute final say in everything.

He said with a cold smile, “We’re not trying to do anything. You should spare your efforts. There’s nothing to fight about. We‘ve already registered, and the laws stop us from giving up our spot. Anyone who goes against that will be killed. So, we’ll definitely be taking part, and all of you will too. There’s nothing else to say about it. Don‘t waste your time.”

The moment he said that, everyone suddenly went quiet. Even though Stephen was a hateful person, what he said was right. There was nothing else to say about the situation.

It could no longer be changed, and they had to accept it. They were forced to enter the Demon Spirit Kingdom.

Kesh sighed. His face was completely ashen as if the end was coming.

The ten of them who had already registered had painful looks on their faces. It was like they had lost their families.

Eduardo snorted and said, “Let me remind you, there are still five spots left. Rather than quarreling with us, why don’t you talk to your fellow disciples and friends to quickly take up those five spots? Otherwise, we‘ll take up the last five spots, and you’ll only have ten to our twenty.”

The moment that was said, everyone‘s expressions changed again.

Cloud’s hands were trembling. The problem really was very difficult. If no one else from third- grade worlds registered, then the ten of them would end up facing twenty warriors from second-grade worlds.

The situation would be horrible.

If they were split evenly, they would still have a chance of surviving.

If it was ten against twenty, then they were practically assured of dying. Cloud and the rest turned to look at the other ten warriors who had been planning to register.

Chapter 3419
Yet, those ten immediately averted their gazes. They either looked down at the ground or started to look left and right. At their expressions, Cloud's group felt a chill in their spines. All of them knew it was a fiery situation that they could not jump into.

No one dared to be the hero at a time like this. Saving the others was basically the equivalent of jumping into a volcano. When it concerned sharing benefits, everyone acted like good friends. When it came to their own safety, all those friendships were thrown out the window.

Cloud's lips trembled, "What is the meaning of this? We said that we would share everything and survive this together! Why aren't you even willing to sign up now?"

The other ten all looked incredibly reluctant. Even though Cloud and the others were questioning them, they still refused to sign up in such a situation.

Those warriors from second-grade worlds were obviously already prepared.

They planned on killing everyone who entered. If that other ten signed up at that moment, it would be the equivalent of throwing their own lives away. They were naturally reluctant to do that.

Looking at that scene, Eduardo started to laugh out loud.

"It looks like your good friends aren't even looking at you anymore. All this talk about revenge and paying the price, you can't even do that. They're already sure that you'll die inside. Even though we won't do anything, they still think you'll die. Your brothers don't have any faith in you at all…"

The moment he said that, Eduardo heard a low voice, "The two of us will sign up!"

That voice attracted everyone's gaze.

The crowd had been too focused on quarreling, so they never noticed that someone had walked over to sign up. When they turned to look, they saw two figures standing there.

After Jackie wrote his name down, he calmly turned around. His familiar face appeared in front of everyone.

The warriors from second-grade worlds started to panic at that. Eduardo still maintained his mocking expression, but it was obvious that his face had stiffened when he saw Jackie.

Cloud's lips troubled as he said in disbelief, "Jackie?"

Jackie nodded, calmly looking at Cloud. When Cloud saw Jackie nod, no one could remain calm.

Eduardo looked like his tail had been stepped on, "You want to take part in this? Why are you taking part in the Demon Spirit Kingdom?! How can you…"

Before he could finish, Jackie interrupted him, "Am I not allowed to participate? Which rule in Weinhord City states that I can't?"

The warriors from the second-grade worlds started to panic at that. All of their faces froze, and they looked like they had eaten a fly.

Jackie's appearance had thrown their plans into disarray. With him around, it was hard to say who would survive.

Eduardo's hands trembled, "What is the meaning of this?! Are you insisting on going against us?"

When Jackie heard that, he showed a confused expression, "What do you mean? Why would I take part in the Demon Spirit Kingdom going against you warriors from second-grade worlds?

"Didn't you say you wouldn't do anything? I've never been someone to do anything to those who don't touch me. If you won't do anything, then I won't do anything either. Since we're just going to coexist in peace, why would you think I'm going against all of you?"

Hearing that, quite a few warriors from third-grade worlds could not hold back their laughter.

Jackie's words hit it right on the spot, using what those warriors from second-grade worlds had said right back at them.

Chapter 3420
The warriors from the second-grade worlds all had dark looks on their faces at Jackie suddenly joining. Stephen even looked like he wanted to rip Jackie apart.

He stared at Jackie viciously, and his lips trembled slightly, wanting to say something, but unable to find the words to say.

Facing the trash from the third-grade worlds, he would say anything he wanted to, but facing Jackie, there was nothing he could say. That was the power of the strong.

Jackie' s existence gave the warriors from the second-grade worlds a sense of pressure and the warriors from the third-grade worlds some motivation. They were suddenly reinvigorated and fought to sign up. In just a few moments, the five remaining spots were filled up.

After the registration was complete, the final names were settled. There were fifteen warriors from second-grade worlds and fifteen warriors from third-grade worlds.

If Jackie had not appeared, no one would have thought well of the third-grade worlds. Yet, Jackie was like a flag that stirred up the confidence of the warriors from third-grade worlds, pushing down the warriors from second-grade worlds at the same time.

The situation had suddenly changed. Cloud looked at Jackie emotionally and had a lot to say, but the words were stuck to his throat.

Kesh clenched his hands tightly. All that hopelessness had disappeared, thanks to Jackie joining.

Jackie did not react at all to what everyone else was doing. There were only two goals in his participation in the Demon Spirit Kingdom in such a flashy manner.

The first was to win the prize at the end by killing a lot of beasts. The second was to shock the warriors from second-grade worlds, letting them know that there would not be any good consequences waiting for them if they targeted him.

There was still an hour until the Demon Spirit Kingdom would start. Everyone waited there, and the discussions never stopped.

Jackie stood by the side, closing his eyes to rest. He did not care about what anyone else was saying at all, pretending that he did not hear anything.

After Stephen was silent for a long time, he could no longer remain calm. In just ten minutes, he had heard a lot of frustrating discussions, saying that the warriors from second-grade worlds were very unfortunate this time and that a lot of them would die. There were even those who said that he would definitely die.

After Stephen heard all of that, the anger in his heart kept on burning. He had still been able to bear with the first few words that were said, but after a while, Stephen could no longer hold it in.

He shouted at the warriors from third-grade worlds, “What are you being so pleased with?! Jackie might be strong, but it doesn’t mean anything. If the fifteen of us work together, we’ll be able to handle anything…”

“So what if Jackie is strong? They’d only be able to come at us if all fifteen of them are strong. Otherwise, they’ll only be able to protect themselves. If the fifteen of us work together, no one will break through our defenses!”

He said those words in an incredibly resolved manner.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, opening his eyes to look at the angry Stephen. Feeling Jackie’s gaze, Stephen looked over rudely.

Their gazes met in the air. Jackie merely smiled, not saying anything. Stephen felt like Jackie was feeling weak because Jackie did not say anything, and he suddenly felt encouraged.

He shouted at Jackie, “I know you‘re strong, but the fifteen of us aren’t weak either. If we work together, even the top five in our clan would be afraid!”

After Jackie showed off his skills, a lot of people started to speculate that Jackie’s skills would put him in the top few places in holy grade clans.

Quite a few of them felt like Jackie should be in the top five, while there were even some who put him in the top three.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3421-3425 -

Chapter 3421
Stephen said that to dispel some of Jackie's pressure. He was trying to bolster the morale of the warriors from second-grade worlds. He could not allow them to keep continuing that way.

Jackie could not help but let out a cold smile when he heard that.

While keeping his eyes close, he said, "You're just like all those fellow disciples of yours. Your words are just nonsense. What's the point of saying all of that? Are you trying to act like you're very capable in front of me? Are you trying to stand up for yourselves?"

"You should just forget about it. No matter what you say, it won't affect anything. If you're really that confident, then come look for me the moment you enter the Demon Spirit Kingdom! Use your skills to prove your worth."

After Jackie said that, Stephen's expression stiffened.

The corner of his lips trembled. That imperious aura of his was suddenly completely extinguished by those words.

Facing Jackie alone?

He would be crazy to do that!

Even though Stephen was confident in himself, he would never dare to face Jackie alone.

Jackie's skills could be in the top five or top three in a holy grade clan. Even if he was a chosen disciple, he was not ranked that highly. Facing Jackie head-on was suicide. There was no other result.

He had remained stubborn just because all fifteen of them were quite good in skill.

All fifteen of them would not be afraid of Jackie alone!

Seeing Stephen's expression stiffened and not saying a thing, the warriors from third-grade worlds were in an uproar.

They had constantly been beaten down by the warriors from second-grade worlds earlier, and it had been incredibly suffocating. Since they had the chance, they would naturally need to fight back.

Kesh shot right back, “You’re feeling good about yourself, aren’t you? Go on, continue showing off! Why aren’t you saying anything else? Didn’t you say you were very strong? Jackie’s willing to fight you, so why won’t you answer?”

“Are you not daring enough? Don‘t you warriors from second-grade worlds always look down on us, saying that third-grade worlds are trash? Jackie’s inviting you to a match as a warrior from a third-grade world, why won’t you agree? Where did that aggressiveness go to?”

Stephen‘s face reddened in anger. His lips constantly twitched, really wanting to shout back at them, but there was nothing he could say.

Did he really dare to talk back to Kesh?

Of course, he did not!

He was not daring enough to face Jackie. However, he was not willing to just shut up like that. He did not want to seem so weak in front of the warriors from third-grade worlds.

Eduardo frowned as he grabbed Stephen’s arm.

He whispered, “Let’s not quarrel with them. In the end, the results will do the talking for us. They must feel like Jackie will lead them to victory. With him, they‘ll be able to fight back against us. Then, let’s use our skills to prove that even him, won‘t be able to touch us if we work together!”

Hearing that, Stephen‘s expression slowly calmed down.

He shut his mouth, so there was no reason for the other side to continue as well. The conversations slowly died down, but the hatred in everyone’s eyes was incredibly terrifying.

Time slowly ticked away. An hour quickly passed, and the skull-masked caretaker announced that the Demon Spirit Kingdom was starting.

All of them slowly snapped out of their thoughts.

Chapter 3422
At that moment, everyone’s expressions were serious.

Various emotions were running through their faces, but no one spoke at all. Everyone silently went on the transfer array, looking at the space distort as their bodies got completely enveloped by the spatial power.

When everyone was almost sent off, Stephen suddenly said, “We‘ll see who the idiots are! You won’t get what you want!“

The moment he said that, everyone‘s figures disappeared on the transfer array. All thirty of them had been sent to a separate space.

The moment they were being transferred, Jackie put Rudy into Mustard Seed while everyone else was distracted. They would not be sent to the same place, but to various locations around the Demon Spirit Kingdom. With Rudy‘s skills, there was no way he would be able to survive alone, so keeping Rudy by his side was better.

After ten minutes, the distorted space slowly disappeared.

When his feet landed on the ground, Jackie finally saw his surroundings clearly. It was a dense forest, and the trees obstructed most of the sunlight.

It was quite dim around them, and the air was very humid. A wet rotting scent assaulted his nose.

Jackie frowned as he sent Rudy out of Mustard Seed.

Rudy widened his curious eyes as he looked at the trees around them.

He said in surprise, “Why are there so many vines?! All these trees are completely wrapped in vines!”

Jackie was no stranger to forests. He had gone into quite a lot of forests where the sun did not reach the ground. However, this forest still stirred the curiosity in him.

The massive trees had thick vines around them. They climbed the trees which made the trunk appear full of green leaves. Even the ground had countless vines. It was like a forest that was covered in vines.

It was green everywhere, and the floor was a bit damp, but to warriors like them, the dampness did not affect them at all.

Jackie patted Rudy on the shoulder, “Stop gawking. We need to meet up with them to avoid any trouble.”

Before entering the Demon Spirit Kingdom, he had already discussed the matter with the other warriors from third-grade worlds.

They would leave their own marks on each other, determining each other‘s location in the Demon Spirit Kingdom before they gathered toward Cloud. Jackie felt where Cloud was, and it was about fifty kilometers away from him.

Comparatively, he was not that far away from Cloud. The furthest one was about a hundred kilometers away.

Rudy nodded, and the two of them started to walk toward Cloud.

To prevent any surprises, the two of them did not fly in a rush, and instead slowly moved forward in the dense forest. Even though the dense forest that stopped them from going too quickly, it still did not take them that long to get close to Cloud.

Jackie leaped ten meters away, and Rudy followed behind him. The trees swayed thanks to Jackie, and the leaves started to rustle a little.

Rudy had just been about to praise Jackie for being so strong that Jackie got a tree to sway when Jackie stopped in his tracks.

He stopped in surprise as well.

He quickly rushed to Jackie‘s side and looked at Jackie curiously, “What is it? Why did you suddenly stop?”

Chapter 3423
Jackie frowned as he started looking all over.

He looked to the left, then to the right, then repeated again.

Looking at Jackie, Rudy realized that Jackie had noticed something, so he wisely shut up.

After looking around, Jackie turned to look behind him, “I felt a strange divine sense sweep across my body just now. There must be something observing us from our surroundings…”

Rudy raised an eyebrow, whispering, “Is it Stephen’s men? That would be such a coincidence that we’re so close to them.”

Jackie took a deep breath as he looked around again, saying, “It’s probably not them! It wasn’t a human presence. I’ve been training for so long in the soul attribute, I can clearly feel other people…”

”What I felt just now was different. It fluctuated very weirdly. It didn’t feel human at all. Don’t forget what we’re here for.”

When Rudy heard that, he immediately reacted. He gaped as he quickly looked around himself.

He widened his eyes and asked, “So you’re telling me that it was a beast?”

Jackie nodded, taking a deep breath as he let out his senses, sweeping their surroundings. Yet, he did not notice anything, which Jackie found even stranger. Rudy's mouth twitched, and he looked a bit out of place.

He whispered to Jackie, "Those beasts can use divine senses? It looks like they must be quite intelligent creatures…"

Being able to use divine senses meant that their soul was not weak.

If their soul was strong, then they would be quite intelligent as well. Many beasts are not able to use divine senses because of their souls. The fact that this one could meant that it was probably quite intelligent.

Jackie sighed as his expression turned serious.

He nodded, "I underestimated these beasts. What is it trying to do?"

The moment he said that, Jackie's expression changed.

He had been constantly using his divine senses around him. At the last second, he felt four strange shapes quickly coming toward him. Jackie frowned as he walked to the side, pushing Rudy behind him.

After a few moments, Rudy's eyes widened immensely. He had never seen those things before. It was four things that looked like humans but were not.

Rudy took a deep breath, guessing that those four were demon spirit beasts. Those beasts looked incredibly different from what Rudy thought they would look like.

The four beasts were all about a hundred and ninety centimeters tall. They looked incredibly strange and had human-like features. Yet, their skin was of various colors.

The two in front had six wings on their backs. Their bodies were full of strange patterns. They looked like dragonflies with human faces.

Of the two behind, the one on the left looked like a frog with a human face. It was dark green, and its body was covered in a layer of mucus. The mucus even bubbled, looking like they were going through chemical reactions, making for quite a creepy sight.

Chapter 3424
The one on the right had dark skin and sported four claws. It looked like a black panther.

Rudy's lips twitched and he said, "What the heck are these things?! Why do they look like this?!"

It was hard to blame Rudy for reacting like that.

He had seen quite a few beasts before, but in Rudy's mind, beasts should look like beasts, and humans should look like humans. Once beasts reached a certain level, they would be able to turn into humans.

They were definitely not like those four in front of them, not human nor beasts. It looked incredibly disgusting.

"You didn't make a mistake this time, but can you really not tell how strong this kid is?" the beast that looked like a dragonfly said to the other one that looked similar to it.

The one called Orgh frowned, unhappily looking at the beast next to him, "It's not like I made a mistake last time. That person's reinforcements were very far away. No matter how hard I try, my divine senses can only reach two kilometers! It's not like you weren't there, Stye, so why are you being so snide?!"

Style snorted, "I'm not. The last time, if Olalo hadn't been quick with his help, we'd have died to that brat! We wouldn't have had the chance to make up for the mistake! This time, you'd better focus. If you make another mistake, I won't be able to help you with the king!"

The four demon spirit beasts were talking in front of Jackie and Rudy without any fear at all. They did not seem to care about Jackie and Rudy at all.

Rudy was confused by the conversation.

Jackie's expression was cold as he remembered everything that was being said.

He felt like the situation was strange. They entered the Demon Spirit Kingdom to hunt these beasts, but judging from what the beasts were saying, it was as if the humans were the prey.

Rudy whispered to Jackie, "Jackie, why do I feel like it's a bit strange? These beasts don't seem afraid of us at all?"

Jackie nodded as he took a deep breath, "The situation's definitely strange. Didn't we hear at the inn that these beasts are all very smart? To kill them, we'd need to attack from a range…"

"It' s because those beasts would run the moment they see anyone. Yet, it doesn't seem like the case at all. Not only are they not running, but they're also even discussing things right in front of us!"

Rudy nodded emphatically.

His heart beat quickly, “What do we do? Should we meet with the others first? We shouldn’t fight these beasts. After all, it’s you going one against four… No matter how strong you are, they have the numbers. I’ll only drag you down!”

Jackie frowned as he lowered his voice and said, “Stay quiet and observe the situation. I’m in no hurry. If the situation is bad, we can run then.”

Jackie had a trump card, which was the laws of space. If he could not beat them, then he could put Rudy into Mustard Seed and use the laws of space to run, but that was only if things got desperate.

Ever since he mastered the Broken Soul Blade, Jackie was incredibly confident in his abilities. Unless his opponent was several times stronger than he was, he was not worried.

Chapter 3425
The four beasts were completely ignoring Jackie and Rudy as if they were already certain that the two of them would not be able to reveal any of their secrets.

Orgh shouted, “Olalo, you speak up! Stye is just purposely trying to blame me! It’s already not the first time he’s spoken like that! It’s so annoying! Once I get the reward and my skills improve, I’ll never stay on the same team as you again!”

Stye seemed agitated when he heard that.

His wings started to speed up, “Improving your skills? With your talents? Can you not joke around like that so much?”

Listening to their conversation, it was evident that their intelligence was on par with humans.

Jackie frowned as he whispered to Rudy, “These demon spirit beasts are far too different from what we’ve heard of from others. I feel like these beasts aren’t just as intelligent as humans, but their skills don’t seem average either. They even managed to form groups and move around like humans. Why didn’t we ever hear of that? Is our information lacking, or did anyone not know about it at all?!”

The situation was far too different from what Jackie expected. He even sniffed a plot at hand.

After the four beasts quarreled for a long time, the one with a panther body finally roared impatiently.

“Can the four of you shut up?! What’s the point of arguing so much right now? If you screw up the task, the king won’t let any of you off! The two of you have quite a lot of blood in you. The king might just suck it all dry!”

The moment that was said, the two beasts immediately stopped bickering.

The threat behind those words was incredibly heavy to the two of them. Not only did they shut up, their lips even trembled slightly. There was fear in their eyes.

It was obvious that the two of them were incredibly scared of that so-called king.

Jackie frowned. From their words, he realized that something was wrong. After they stopped fighting, the beasts looked at Jackie and Rudy again.

The panther-like beast was called Setia and was the strongest amongst the four, “A human that we can’t see through, and a human piece of trash. How did the two of you end up together?”

It was speaking to Jackie. Rudy’s face darkened when he was called trash. Even though he was self-aware, he still did not like being called trash.

Jackie frowned as he looked at the beast, “You don‘t seem to be afraid of humans? The information I received was different. Did you just hide it too well?”

The four beasts started laughing out loud when they heard that. Their laughter was heard throughout the forest.

Rudy could not help but shrink back when he heard that. They were beasts with human heads, and they were laughing so hard. It was an incredibly chilling sight.

Orgh said as it laughed, “You humans really are simple-minded. You think whatever anyone lets you see is real. We’ve been in this space for so many years. We’re no longer those demon spirit beasts that only know how to run away…”

“We’ve already gained intelligence no lower than humans. As long as we absorb enough blood, our abilities will improve! You see us as prey, and we see you as prey too!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3426-3430 -

Chapter 3426
Orgh might not have explained things in great detail, but Jackie understood just thinking about it.

The fact that the beasts said that the humans believed whatever they saw, meant that the beasts deliberately created a false image of themselves and fooled the humans who managed to get out.

It seemed like a few humans had been hunted down because of this, and the brass absorbed the blood of the humans to nourish themselves.

Jackie took a deep breath as a vicious glint flashed in his eyes.

Were his opponents unlucky, or was he?

After learning a storm-god rank technique, those beasts could not tell how strong Jackie was, but it barely concerned them as there were four of them against Jackie and Rudy. Even though they did not know how strong Jackie was, they knew how strong Rudy was.

In their eyes, Rudy was a weakling that could be dealt with in one blow. Thus, their only opponent was Jackie, and only one outcome was possible no matter how strong he was.

Setia sneered, “Alright. You’ve asked your questions and we were merciful enough to satisfy your curiosity before you die, so be prepared to die!”

The moment that was said, the four beasts charged at Jackie at the same time.

The two dragonfly-like beasts in front buzzed their wings, causing shockwaves to come out from the wings. These waves were visible enough that they could be seen with the naked eye, and they were strong enough to devastate anything they grazed. Even massive trees were turned into nothing but mere logs!

Jackie grabbed Rudy and placed him in Mustard Seed. It was better, after all, for Rudy to be in Mustard Seed, away from harm’s length, as he would only be distracted.

He then retreated, pulling away from the four beasts. His hands formed seals that then fused in the air, quickly becoming a blade. The Broken Soul Blade floated in front of Jackie.

He furrowed his eyebrows as he sent the Broken Soul Blade right at Orgh.

Orgh smirked disdainfully as it faced the Broken Soul Blade, musing that Jackie was putting up a pitiful fight before dying. Jackie, to Orgh, was worth no notice whatsoever. However, disdain held no other power than existing as a mere feeling.

It still generated shockwaves with Stye next to it to try and destroy the Broken Soul Blade. A surge of immense energy burst out, right at the Broken Soul Blade.

The Broken Soul Blade was like a slash that could not be stopped. The moment it clashed, it immediately broke the energy wave into two parts. The energy wave had no way of destroying the Broken Soul Blade at all. After the energy wave was split into two, the Broken Soul Blade continued to go right for Orgh.

Orgh let out a cry of anguish as the Broken Soul Blade pierced its chest. There was a sizzling sound as its soul started to rot from its chest. Green blood evaporated into mist the moment it touched the Broken Soul Blade, dispersing into the surrounding air.

Orgh wailed in anguish as it fell to the ground. It lost all rationale as it rolled on the ground in pain. The other three beasts widened their eyes.

The four of them underestimated their opponent!

They thought that Orgh and Setia's attacks would have been enough against Jackie's technique, yet their attacks did nothing to even slow it down. The sight rendered them stunned, and by the time they regained their senses, it was already too late.

The other three beasts were stunned as they looked at Jackie with widened eyes.

Chapter 3427
Jackie raised an eyebrow as his confidence surged.

Despite their appearance, these four beasts barely lived up to their imposing features. Their skills were just around the level of low-ranked chosen disciples in holy-grade clans. It was no wonder they were not worried about surprises when they saw Jackie and Rudy.

Other than Jackie himself, any other warrior who entered the Demon Spirit Kingdom would be no match for the four of them.

Jackie took a deep breath, no longer hesitating as he used the Broken Soul Blade again.

At that point, Stye, Setia, and Olalo, after knowing how skilled Jackie was, instantly became defensive. When they saw Jackie attacking again, the three of them met Jackie's attack at the same time.

Four techniques clashed in the air with a boom before the beasts were sent flying.

Jackie quickly activated the laws of space with his sword in hand. He disappeared from his spot, and when he appeared again, he was already right next to Stye.

Stye's eyes widened in disbelief. It stared at Jackie, who had suddenly appeared, but Jackie did not look away at all as he stabbed Stye. The blade pierced its chest, and it ripped out a cry out of Stye.

"H-How is this possible? How are you so strong?! Even the three of us together are no match for you!"

Jackie did not answer Stye and instead went straight for the next one. In mere seconds, the three remaining beasts were all dealt with by Jackie.

Rudy appeared from Mustard Seed again. He looked at the four beasts lying on the ground, bleeding, and he covered his mouth in shock.

"It wasn't even that long, and these four are already dealt with! Jackie, you're so amazing!"

Jackie smiled wordlessly.

He quickly walked toward Setia who, though with a large hole on its chest, was still alive. Alas, the rapid blood loss guaranteed that Setia would not survive.

Jackie knelt and coldly looked at Setia. "I have many ways to torture you. If you don't answer my questions, I'll take my time with you."

Setia laughed when it heard Jackie's words.

Hearing the laugh, Jackie realized something was wrong, and tried to do something immediately. However, he was already too late.

Setia's throat moved, looking like it had swallowed something. In just a few moments, black blood flowed out of its nose. It was dead.

Jackie's lips twitched as he looked at the other three who died in a similar fashion. They must have swallowed a pill that could kill them instantly.

Jackie almost cursed at the sight.

Rudy frowned. "These guys are so sly. They came prepared, having suicide pills in their mouths to swallow should things go south!"

Jackie took a deep breath, saying helplessly, "We didn't know that the beasts would be so decisive. To not reveal any secrets, they already had poison in their mouths. We couldn't have stopped that."

However, it meant that the beasts were hiding a massive secret. The more Jackie thought about it, the more he wanted to find out.

Rudy burned the corpses of the beasts, and he only followed Jackie after making sure there were no traces of their activity left behind.

Chapter 3428
The journey that ensued was much calmer in comparison to Jackie and Rudy. There were no more strange divine senses sweeping through them and no sudden attacks to delay them.

In just 20 minutes, they saw Cloud.

They had gone through a dense forest the whole way. The vines were covering every single three, and greenery filled every corner of the Demon Spirit Kingdom.

To allow the warriors from other third-grade worlds to quickly find him, Cloud found a relatively spacious spot. Even though it was still covered with trees, it was not as densely packed. There was more of a distance between each three.

Rudy and Jackie were about 100 meters away from Cloud when they saw him. Cloud immediately opened his eyes to look over when he heard movement.

When he saw that it was Jackie, the look of concern on his face quickly turned into one of happiness.

To Cloud, or perhaps every warrior from a third-grade world, Jackie was the key factor in all of this. With Jackie around, it was as if they no longer had any problems.

Cloud waved at Jackie. ”Jackie, over here! ”

Jackie nodded and quickly made his way toward Cloud.

When he arrived next to Cloud, Cloud greeted, though his voice feeble with emotions, “Was your journey safe? Did you run into any trouble?”

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Of course he had, and luckily, it was he who ran into trouble and not anyone else. Any other warrior who participated in the Spirit Demon Kingdom would have died if they met that situation.

Jackie did not plan on saying this, so he instead shook his head at Cloud. “I did meet some trouble. Let’s talk after everyone’s here.”

Hearing that Jackie had indeed encountered trouble, Cloud’s eyes widened. However, since Jackie had said so, he did not voice any questions.

Jackie had told Cloud to not get excited and to wait for everyone to be gathered, thus Cloud nodded, though not without doubt.

He had thought that he would be the fifth or sixth to group up with Cloud, but he ended up being the first. It seemed like he was the quickest.

Jackie took out two mats from his spatial ring and placed one down for Jackie. Jackie nodded, and all three of them sat down.

Giving Jackie a once-over, Cloud noted that Jackie's clothes were still intact, and his energy was very stable. Jackie did not look like he had gone through a battle.

This confused Cloud even more. Anything that Jackie would call 'trouble' would not be a small matter.

Did Jackie meet Stephen's group, or did something else happen?

Jackie shut his eyes and rested. Various thoughts surfaced in his head, including everything the Demon Spirit Beasts had said, and he even recalled a few key phrases.

It was definitely no simple matter, and it involved a massive secret. If they did not deal with it well, it could bring them a huge problem.

Jackie did not care about a few strays. After all, the four beasts together were no match for Jackie. He was worried about the Demon Spirit Beasts they called king.

When Orgh and Stye were arguing, Setia mentioned the 'king' to shock them. The two of them were scared stiff when they heard that they would be absorbed by the king if they did not do well. Jackie even recalled how Orgh shivered at the name. It was obvious how threatening this 'king' was.

Whether it was the humans or the beasts, both sides respected the strong. The fact that the king was so feared meant that he had to be incredibly strong.

Thinking about that, Jackie lost a bit of confidence.

Who would win if he went against the king?

What level was that king at?

Chapter 3429
This thing was not widely known among humans either.

When they were in Weinhord City, Jackie had listened to others discuss the Demon Spirit Kingdom quite a bit, but none of them mentioned the king of the Demon Spirit Kingdom. None of them had mentioned that the beasts were sentient either.

He did not know if he had missed out on such an important detail, or if the beasts hid this so well that it was not spread out at all. It was better if it was the former. It if was the latter, then it would be more troublesome.

Thinking about that, Jackie's lips twitched. It was as though trouble followed him wherever he went!

However, Jackie did not dwell on it too much. He was not someone who would flee from problems. Since there was an issue, he would just need to figure out a solution. In his mind, there were no problems that could not be solved.

Rudy, on the other hand, was a bit uneasy. He was not as confident as Jackie. He, too, listened to everything the beasts had said, and he guessed that the beasts were holding a huge secret. However, he could not figure it out just from what he learned earlier.

He wanted to ask them more questions, but those beasts killed themselves before Jackie got the chance to interrogate them.

Rudy was more frustrated as he thought about it, and he opened his eyes to look at Jackie next to him.

He coughed as he rubbed his nose, asking, "What do you think those creatures were planning? I've been trying to figure it out, but to no avail. The more I think about it, the more frustrated I am. I can't calm down at all!"

Cloud was even more suspicious when he heard that.

A plan?

Could Stephen and the others be planning something?

He looked over to see Rudy looking at Jackie hopefully. Jackie slowly opened his eyes.

He took a deep breath and said, "Don't dwell on it if you can't understand. We know too little right now, and using what we know to speculate would just be pure guesswork. Rather than thinking about all that, it's better to think about how we can learn more."

Rudy's lips twitched as he sighed before he said, "I'm just so curious. It's so different from what I thought. I feel like their plans will involve us! If we don't quickly figure it out, we might end up being caught on the back foot!"

Jackie nodded. "Of course it's going to affect us, but you can't figure it out anyway, so don't worry yourself like that. Let's wait for everyone to finish gathering for now."

Cloud could not understand what was going on, and he said anxiously, “What are you two talking about? A plan? What can’t you figure out? What happened that’ll affect us? Did Stephen’s group try something again?”

Jackie looked at Cloud and said, “It has nothing to do with Stephen. It’s something else.”

Cloud was even more stunned when he heard that.

It was not Stephen?

Then who could it be?

Seeing that Cloud was so anxious, Rudy said clearly, “It’s because of those Demon Spirit Beasts! Those beasts aren’t simple beasts! We were hunted by them on the way here! If Jackie wasn’t strong enough, we’d have died!”

Chapter 3430
Cloud’s eyes widened in sheer shock when he heard that. He was even more confused after that explanation.

Was it possible for the Demon Spirit Beasts to try and kill humans?

Since when did these beasts, those that would run the moment they saw humans, even, get so bold?

Hearing Rudy’s tone, it was like the beasts that tried to kill them were special.

Jackie seemed to realize something when he saw Cloud’s open eyes.

He stopped Rudy from continuing and he looked at Cloud with an earnest look. “Why are you so surprised? Are the Demon Spirit Beasts that weak to you? Did you know that the Demon Spirit Beasts have a leader they call the king?”

Hearing that, Cloud was even more confused.

He took a deep breath before he answered, “A leader? A king? What exactly happened? From what I know, those beasts are just prey. Their skills are average, and they’re rather timid to the point of fleeing, so we need to pursue them if we want to kill them.”

Hearing Cloud’s words, Jackie and Rudy exchanged a meaningful look. The two of them fell silent together. There were various thoughts in their heads.

Rudy got more scared as he thought about it, and Jackie had many complicated thoughts.

The two of them had differing expressions, but Cloud was even more shocked to see that. Their expressions meant that what they said was very important and hard to deal with, and it affected them.

Cloud had a stomach full of questions. He got more and more anxious thinking about it, yet neither Jackie nor Rudy explained themselves.

After a moment, Cloud could no longer stand it. “Can the two of you tell me what’s going on? I’m so confused…”

Right as he said that, they suddenly heard some rustling. When the three of them looked over, they saw a familiar figure quickly coming over.

It was Kesh!

Cloud held back the questions for the moment as he stood up to greet Kesh.

Five minutes later, four others appeared. A small wave of people had gathered.

After some pleasantries, Cloud had them sit. Everyone saw that something was off with Cloud’s expression. He looked anxious and doubtful.

Cloud did not bother with what the others thought of him. All he wanted to know was what happened to Jackie.

Looking at how Cloud was looking at him, Jackie knew how anxious Cloud was. However, Jackie was in no hurry to answer and looked at the rest instead.

“Did you have a safe journey? You didn’t encounter any dangers, did you? Did any divine senses sweep over you?”

Everyone shook their heads.

Kesh said, “The journey was very quiet. I went very slowly, worried that I’ll meet any unnecessary problems.”

The others conveyed that their journey was completely safe as well. Other than the vines that were everywhere that obstructed their sights, it was all uneventful.

Hearing what everyone said, Jackie’s frown never relaxed.

The others looked at Jackie with confusion when they saw Jackie’s expression. He no longer hesitated when he saw all the confusion. He told them all about what he had experienced.

If it had been anyone else who said it, they would probably not have believed him. However, Jackie had been the one to say it. Even if they did not believe it, they would force themselves to.

Cloud frowned, and his eyes widened. “Jackie saw beasts that had human heads and beast-like bodies. They had intelligence that matched humans, and they got a king, too!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3431-3435 -

Chapter 3431
Cloud's lips trembled slightly as he spoke. It was obvious how shocked he was.

Jackie merely nodded, adding no comments to Cloud's remarks.

Suddenly, everyone exploded into conversation upon hearing the information Jackie conveyed to them.

They never saw it coming, and it far exceeded all of their prior knowledge. It had even burned away their confidence. All of them had ashen looks on their faces.

A mustached warrior from a third-grade world blurted, "Where the heck have we come to? Four Demon Spirit Beasts, equal to holy-grade clan chosen disciples in skill, came out of nowhere! Isn't that too horrifying?! We would've died if we were the ones to encounter them!"

"Why is this happening? Is the Demon Spirit Kingdom that difficult? Why does no one know that the beasts look like this?! Have you ever heard of Demon Spirit Beasts having human heads and animal bodies?"

All of them shook their heads when they heard the question.

They had looked into the Demon Spirit Kingdom before they joined for their own safety, but no one had talked about any beasts looking like that before!

Kesh inhaled deeply. "Quite a few people have come in before. I've asked them about it, and they've all said that the Demon Spirit Beasts don't look that much different from the usual beasts we've seen. The only difference is the fact that all of them have a few wings!"

"They described these beasts as being swift and agile, so much so that it took a lot of effort to catch up to these beasts and kill them! Those who came to the Demon Spirit Kingdom before all say that the Demon Spirit Beasts are nothing special, and that it's not hard to kill them. The only difficult thing is catching up to them…"

"They said that those beasts run at the sight of any human. They're incredibly cowardly, and don't look that intelligent!"

Jackie had a serious look on his face after hearing what was said.

After contemplating in silence, he then spoke, his voice stern, "It's not that the ones who participated in the Demon Spirit Kingdom have never seen the beasts with human faces

and beast bodies, but that everyone who has seen them has died. That's why this has always been a secret, until me."

The moment that was said, everyone's expressions darkened even more. The more they listened, the more they realized the gravity of the situation.

It was possible that the warriors who they thought had been killed by warriors from second-grade worlds had actually all died to those Demon Spirit Beasts!

They never expected that they would not just need to face one danger in this place, but this unexpected threat as well.

Suddenly, everyone started to regret taking part in the Demon Spirit Kingdom.

The warriors from second-grade worlds were already a pain in the neck, but these difficult Demon Spirit Beasts appeared out of nowhere!

Some anxiously clutched their hair, while some covered their faces. Everyone was in a bad mood. At that moment, they were incredibly frustrated that there was nothing they could do about it. They did not even have a solution.

The mustached man said, "I have a solution. Hurry up and end this so we can leave this stupid place! Once we're back in Weinhord City, I'll just find a place to stay. I won't join any stupid games anymore. This place doesn't suit me!"

Chapter 3432
The moment that was said, everyone nodded.

Cloud said somewhat helplessly, "Let's not talk about this for now. We should just think about how we're going to face these dangers right now. No matter what, we need to stay here for two days and two nights. We'll only be able to think about anything else after that."

That was possibly the only thing they could be thankful for.

The Demon Spirit Kingdom had a time limit. Once everyone spent two days and two nights there, the final rankings would be counted, and the first three places would get the rewards and spirit crystals.

"It's because of these rewards that so many warriors signed up for the Demon Spirit Kingdom. If they knew how dangerous the situation was, they wouldn't have participated even if the rewards were several times better!"

When the man heard what Cloud said, he sighed. "I can't figure out anything better. I feel like we're in a depressing situation. The most important thing is the fact that we

don’t know what those beasts want at all. What kind of secrets are they hiding, and what will they do to us? If we don’t even know that, how will we figure anything out?”

Rudy frowned. “So what we need to think of right now is how we’re going to find out even more secrets. We need to dig all of these secrets out. Only by knowing their plans will we be able to counter them!”

Everyone else nodded, feeling like Rudy was right.

Kesh looked at Rudy and said, “We’ll need to capture them if we’re going to dig out their secrets. We need to hunt these beasts and disable them from killing themselves before we get them to talk!”

Rudy nodded. That was the only thing they could do at that moment. The only problem was, they did not know where they could find those Demon Spirit Beasts.

The mustached man said, “Where are we even going to find them? The Demon Spirit Beasts know the geography here. I bet they already know where we’ll be sent to when we’re sent over here while we don’t know anything about them. If it wasn’t for what you went through, we wouldn’t even know they existed…”

Everyone felt helpless when that was said, and it felt as though they had hit a dead end with no way out.

Jackie frowned as he looked to the distance.

As time passed, more and more people gathered.

Jackie counted until a total of 13 people gathered. Two were not present. He estimated the time in his head. Even if they had been far away, they should have already been there.

Why were the final two so late?

He frowned and told Cloud, “Who are the last two who haven’t arrived?”

If Jackie had not joined abruptly, Cloud would have been the leader of the second-grade world warriors. He was familiar with everyone who had joined.

After looking from left to right, Cloud frowned and said, “It’ s Collin and Simon. Why are they not here yet? Could it be…”

Before he could finish, Jackie said anxiously, “Hurry and look into where they are, now!”

They had all left marks on each other to determine their locations.

The moment Jackie said that, everyone shut their eyes and tried to feel where Collin and Simon were. However, all of them widened their eyes in shock.

Cloud paled a little. “I can’t feel the marks on them anymore. Can any of you still feel them?”

Chapter 3433
Everyone shook their heads.

Jackie could not feel the marks he left on them as well. It was obvious that something had happened, and everyone shivered at the possibility.

They never expected something to happen so quickly.

Kesh frowned and said, “Could it be those people?”

He was referring to the warriors from second-grade worlds.

However, Jackie shook his head firmly. “It’s probably not them. Even though they’re our enemies and won’t show us mercy, they probably won’t delay anything for the sake of safety. They try to gather together as fast as possible. They’re worried about me, so they’ll be exceptionally careful. Even if we’re going to fight, it’ll be in the future, not now.”

Everyone nodded at those words, agreeing with what Jackie said.

Jackie narrowed his eyes slightly. “The two of them are probably done for. It looks like those beasts didn’t just hunt me but others as well. I doubt they sent fewer members to hunt the others. The outcome is inevitable, they couldn’t have survived.”

“I just never expected them to be so smart, removing all the marks on the ones they killed. It means they knew that we left marks on each other before they attacked. To hide their secrets, their every move is conducted meticulously. They’re not leaving anything to chance!”

Everyone frowned when they heard what Jackie said.

Kesh sighed before he said, “Collin is from my clan, and we’re rather familiar with each other. I know he’s always been a careful person. If he met any warriors from second-grade worlds, he would’ve turned and run. This meant that whatever danger he encountered this time spared him no chance to run whatsoever.”

The moment that was said, everyone grew somber as their expressions darkened even more. The situation

had gotten even worse.

Jackie frowned as he thought of other possibilities and situations. However, it did not mean he managed to figure anything out.

Instead, the thoughts caused his mind to be in more and more of a mess. He could not understand the secret behind everything.

Cloud said helplessly, “We have to stay in groups from now on. As long as we don’t act alone, they won’t have a chance to do anything. We can take the chance to capture a few beasts as well. No matter what, we need to find out what they’re plotting!”

Jackie smiled wryly. If only it was so simple.

The situation was very bad for them at that moment. If they wanted to find information for certain situations, they would need to pay a price. It did not help that they had to be on the lookout for second-grade world warriors as well.

They needed to constantly be on alert lest they indirectly placed themselves in danger.

The mustached man saw that everyone was in an incredibly heavy mood and felt like it could not continue. “Let’s not be too disheartened, everyone. Where there’s a will, there’s a way! As long as we have the determination, these problems will be solved!”

Jackie looked at the man. “You’re right. Everyone, don’t be too depressed, it won’t solve any problems. From now on, we need to be on high alert. Otherwise, we might end up suffering.”

Everyone looked at each other. Despite the despondent feeling they had, they were forced to muster their spirits.

No one wanted to die here, whether it was to warriors from second-grade worlds or to the Demon Spirit Beasts.

Chapter 3434
As everyone struggled with the depressing feeling, Jackie suddenly looked to the distance. He narrowed his eyes slightly as he looked right to the west.

Everyone looked over as well, and they saw a group of people heading right for them.

Jackie frowned, not expecting them to be so quick.

Stephen had a dark look on his face. He seemed angered, like he had suffered some grief. The 13 men behind him did not look that happy either, equally solemn as though they had just gone through a funeral rite.

All 14 of them stopped in front of Jackie and the others, looking like they were about to fight.

Everyone on Jackie's side stood up and looked at Stephen and the others alertly.

Stephen's group stopped about 100 meters away from Jackie, and Stephen shot Jackie a cold stare. "Seems like I was right; you are here!"

Jackie could clearly see Stephen's twisted expression as the man spoke through gritted teeth, glaring at him so pointedly. It was obvious how angry Stephen was at him.

Facing Stephen, Jackie frowned, rather confused by Stephen's behavior.

As an enemy, Stephen hating Jackie was natural, but the hatred he exhibited at that moment seemed far beyond relief. It was as if something had happened.

The situation was a bit strange.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything as he quietly waited for Stephen to continue.

Stephen got even angrier at Jackie's nonchalant demeanor.

He scoffed and said, "I'll admit that you've won a small battle, but so what? Only one of us died while fourteen of us are still here. You won't be able to kill us all alone!"

Jackie was surprised at Stephen's words. The other warriors exchanged looks with each other as well.

Earlier, Jackie had not mentioned any warriors from second-grade worlds when he talked about what happened in the Demon Spirit Kingdom.

Could something have happened in between?

Jackie had met a warrior from a second-grade world and dealt with him. Everyone looked at Jackie, but he merely had a look of confusion in his eyes, much to everyone's bewilderment.

Before Jackie could even say anything, Rudy hurriedly said, "What nonsense are you spouting now? Killed one of yours? Even though it's not that hard, it doesn't mean we should accept blame for something we didn't do!"

Stephen sneered coldly, "Don't try and fool me with that act! I've already determined that one of ours has died! The mark I left on him was forcefully removed by Jackie! Don't think I'll believe anything you say!"

Eduardo, standing behind Stephen, chimed in. "Stephen's right! Don't act like you don't know anything. You think we don't know what Jackie did?! Just because he was unlucky enough to meet Jackie, it doesn't mean we'll just let this go! We'll have our revenge!"

“We already have fourteen people gathered here, and you won’t have the chance to do anything anymore! Even if someone has to die, it’ll be you third-grade world warriors!”

Rudy was in utter disbelief. Since when did they meet anyone?

Stephen and his lackeys seemed so sure of themselves as though they had witnessed everything for themselves.

Chapter 3435
Rudy sneered and said, “Why would you think Jackie had a hand in whatever it is you’re accusing him of? I’ve been with Jackie the whole time. Even though there was a small problem between our travels, we never met any warriors from second-grade worlds!”

“This has nothing to do with Jackie at all, so don’t try blaming Jackie!”

Eduardo’s expression soured. “Like we’d believe you! Who else but Jackie could’ve done it? Even if Carlton was not as strong as I am, he was still a chosen disciple from a holy-grade clan who was at my level. His skills weren’t to be underestimated, and no one other than Jackie would’ve been able to face him alone! There’s nothing that would have threatened his life other than Jackie!”

Stephen looked at Jackie coldly, slowly saying, “You’re still not going to admit it? I thought that you’ll always admit to anything you did happily. I can’t believe you’re willing to put on a show like this, acting innocent after you killed someone!”

All the warriors from second-grade worlds looked at Jackie incredibly angrily, feeling like he was shameless by refusing to admit he had killed someone.

A warrior from a second-grade world, who was wearing a deep blue robe, gritted his teeth and said, “I’ll admit that you’re so powerful that even Carlton isn’t a match for you, but so what? At least his moral standing is better! If he killed someone, he wouldn’t pretend to be innocent like what you’re doing!”

Jackie’s expression darkened as he heard that.

At that moment, he had guessed what had happened, and the other warriors from third-grade worlds did too.

Cloud said loudly, “It’s not like you witnessed it, so why are you slandering Jackie? What do you mean, he’s not willing to admit it? Jackie’s never been someone like that. If he said he didn’t do it, then he didn’t! This Carlton guy didn’t die at Jackie’s hands. He was killed by beasts!”

After Cloud said that, the others nodded as well.

All of them had guessed the only potential truth, Carlton, and the missing Collin and Simon, had died to the Demon Spirit Beasts.

If Jackie was not as skilled as he was, they would never have known the truth.

Carlton was not as skilled at Jackie, so the consequences were obvious. However, the warriors from second-grade worlds did not know about this. Based on their assumptions, they were sure that Jackie killed Carlton.

When Stephen heard what Cloud said, he got even angrier. He looked like he was ready to explode at any moment.

Stephen said angrily, “What did you say? Carlton died to Demon Spirit Beasts? Please, Cloud! Is your head alright?! Do you think we’d believe that?”

“How could you give such an absurd reason?! A Demon Spirit Beast, capable of killing him? What do you think those beasts are?! Do you think I don’t know how powerful they are?”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3436-3440 -

Chapter 3436
Stephen was fuming in anger as he spoke. His hands constantly trembled.

He felt like Cloud was treating the warriors from second-grade worlds like idiots. He was crossing the line!

Those Demon Spirit Beasts were as cowardly as rats, running at the sight of any human.

If Carlton crossed paths with them and they were not fast enough, they would be killed by Carlton immediately. How could he have been the one to be killed by them?

Eduardo was about to laugh from frustration, “Cloud! Just because Jackie’s around, doesn’t mean you can live without fear! Jackie is strong, but as long as we all attack together, we can still kill you!”

Cloud’s lips twitched in exasperation. He could feel that Stephen and the others were so angry because they felt like he was deliberately insulting Carlton, but he really did not have any intentions like that. He was just speaking the truth.

Kesh was even more exasperated. He reached out to pat Cloud on the shoulder, gesturing for Cloud not to continue.

He took a step forward and said to the warriors from second-grade worlds, “Cloud isn’t trying to play around with all of you. He’s speaking the truth. You have people who have gone missing on your side, so do we. We only have thirteen of our men. Two of them had gone missing.”

“Just like Carlton, the marks we left on them have been forcibly removed as well. We should be suspecting that you’re the ones who did it, but we don’t! It’s because something happened to Jackie when he was coming to meet the rest of us!”

Stephen and the others did not know what they were saying at all.

Stephen scoffed before he said, “Don’t try to confuse us with some weird excuses! The truth is right in front of us. Unless you have proof, no one will believe you!”

Kesh was just about to say something when Jackie stopped him.

Jackie coldly looked at Stephen and the others, and a thought surfaced in his mind. Even though he did not really want to do that since he really did not like them, the situation forced him into it.

After all, he did not know what would happen after they found out what was going on in the Demon Spirit Kingdom.

He did not know how strong the so-called king was, and if he could even go against it. Before all those questions were made clear, he needed to make plans for every situation.

Jackie coughed as he frowned and said, “Let me ask you something! Tell me, if you say that I killed Carlton, then why wouldn’t I admit it? Why would I act innocent in front of you guys?”

Eduardo scoffed, “How would we know that? We’re the ones who should ask you that. Why aren’t you admitting it?”

Jackie took a deep breath. It took patience dealing with idiots.

Jackie replied, “Because it was not me! Just think about it. Carlton should be dead, but he did not die to me instead he was killed by the Demon Spirit Beasts! We have two over here in the same situation. I was hunted by beasts on the way here!”

When that was said, all of the warriors from second-grade worlds opened their eyes in disbelief.

Chapter 3437
“You’re actually making up stories for your act. The Demon Spirit Beasts hunting you down? Those beasts who run away at the sight of any human? Do you think we’d believe you if you just randomly made a story up?”

“Those lies are really unbelievable! Do you think we wouldn’t look into the Demon Spirit Kingdom before we came here?” Stephen asked.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly. He never expected those people to be so stubborn.

He turned to look at Cloud, “I don’t want to waste time on them. Tell them what I told you before.”

Cloud nodded, patiently telling the warriors from second-grade worlds what had happened to Jackie. He even described the appearance of the beasts.

Stephen’s expression hardened a bit when he heard what was told. Eduardo did not believe it at all, and even felt like Jackie had a plot behind the story!

Eduardo sneered and said, ”You really know how to make up stories. If I wasn’t smart enough, I would have believed you. You even gave it so much detail so it’s more believable!”

“Unfortunately, I’m not that foolish. I won’t just believe anything you say! If the Demon Spirit Beasts really have such a large secret and have always hunted humans, why hasn’t there been any information?!”

Cloud was exasperated.

He frowned and said, “These beasts are as intelligent as humans. To conduct their plans, they would naturally not allow information to leak out. If the matter was spread to humans, it would be much more difficult for them to continue!”

After Cloud said that, Eduardo started to laugh out loud. He had a look of ridicule in his eyes.

It was obvious that he did not believe Cloud at all.

Eduardo said as he laughed, “Such an absurd reason? I almost believed you! What a joke! There are no perfect secrets! If the beasts really are as you say, this would definitely have started spreading! Someone would have seen it before!”

”You even talk about kings? That’s even more unbelievable. The Demon Spirit Beasts do not organize themselves. They’re all incredibly low in intelligence. It’s nothing like you said!”

After Eduardo said that, Jackie sighed at him helplessly.

There was no point talking to someone like Eduardo. Once he was certain that you were lying, he would not believe anything unless he witnessed it for himself.

Jackie waved it off, “You can believe it or not, that’s not important. So what if you think Carlton died to me? Can you really get revenge for him?”

Jackie’s tone was cold and confident.

Eduardo was suddenly red with anger.

Jackie was right. Even if Carlton had really died to Jackie, what could they do?

Were they going to face Jackie head-on?

That was a joke!

Even two or three of them together would be no match for Jackie!

On top of that, Jackie had warriors from other third-grade worlds around him!

A battle would definitely bring heavy losses they would not be able to take.

At that moment, Jackie already had a plan in mind. If it was not for the plan, he would not have bothered talking to them.

For the plan to go smoothly, he was forced to patiently talk to Stephen, “I’m not lying, I don’t need to either. The Demon Spirit Beasts have a terrifying secret that they’re hiding. It might even end up involving all of us!”

Chapter 3438
Stephen immediately asked after hearing what Jackie said, “What do you want to say?”

Jackie took a deep breath and said in a serious tone, “We should have a temporary truce! No one is allowed to touch anyone! We should be on alert against those beasts.”

The moment that was said, everyone was stunned.

Everyone fell into silence. Jackie could not help but smile wryly. He had expected this silence. The second-grade worlds’ conflict with the third-grade worlds was already something incredibly evident.

They were practically mortal enemies who hated each other to the bone. It was hard to accept a truce, but there was nothing they could do to face this situation.

The third-grade world warriors were still fine. After all, they completely believed what Jackie said.

But, the warriors from second-grade worlds were different. They were more apprehensive.

In the first place, they doubted what Jackie had said. Even if it was true, his suggestion might have a plot behind it. After all, their relationship was incredibly tenuous. In their eyes, it was only natural if it was all a plot.

Stephen frowned, not saying anything. He was deep in thought, constantly weighing the benefits of the plan.

Everyone behind Stephen had bitter looks on their faces, clearly not knowing what to do.

Eduardo was furious at how uncertain they looked, ”What are all of you doing?! Are you really going to believe Jackie’s words? Don’t forget who he is! He’s not our friend. He’s our number one enemy. Are you really going to believe our enemy just like that?”

“We’re just going to stop because they said so? He must be scheming something in his head! He might want to kill us all off!”

“What he said earlier was all just a lie! Demon Spirit Beasts?! A king?! I refuse to believe it!”

The warriors from second-grade worlds did not know what to say at how frustrated Eduardo was.

A warrior from Golden Continent said meekly, “You’re right, but what if what he said is true? What do we do? If we end up getting hunted by those beasts, we won’t be able to do anything about it…”

After that, he did not dare to continue, because Eduardo was looking at him furiously.

He shouted out, “You’ve all been brainwashed by Jackie! So what if it’s real?! The Demon Spirit Kingdom has opened so many times. Every time, there are survivors.”

“We have so many warriors from second-grade worlds here. Nothing will happen if we’re careful! If the fourteen of us stay together, no one will be able to harm us.”

Eduardo got angrier and angrier as he spoke. He hated everyone for being so easily swayed by Jackie.

He took a deep breath and said, “No matter how strong this king is, he won’t touch us if we don’t do anything to him. We just need to survive for two nights, and we’ll be able to leave this place.”

“I don’t know if the Demon Spirit Beasts have any schemes, but this kid is definitely trying to harm us and kill us all. Listening to him is suicide!”

Chapter 3439
Eduardo got more and more emotional as he spoke. He wanted nothing more than to grab them by the collar and shout right into their faces.

Jackie’s lips twitched helplessly.

Eduardo was too stubborn. If he did not care about his plans, Jackie would have just shut up and forgotten about Eduardo.

However, with his plan in mind, Jackie could not help but say, “We’re just going to not do anything to each other, how could this be a scheme? If you feel like it’s one, then how will it cause you any losses?”

Eduardo raised an eyebrow and said, “Of course, it will. Otherwise, you wouldn’t have gone through such pains to craft this story so that we can believe you. Out of the blue, you suddenly asked for a truce, I refuse to believe you’d be so nice.”

“Let me tell you, I’m not like the rest of them who’ll believe anything you say. You can forget about it. I won’t fall for it.”

Jackie rolled his eyes in exasperation. He knew that it was a complete waste of time talking to that guy. Eduardo would not believe him anyway.

He turned to look at Stephen, who was still deep in thought instead. Stephen had his head lowered at that moment, it was hard to tell what he was thinking.

Jackie said to Stephen, “Have you thought about it? There’s honestly nothing much to think about. It’s not like you’ll suffer any losses if you do what I’m suggesting. Everyone can just gather here and wait for two days and two nights. Once the Demon Spirit Kingdom ends, everyone will get out safely. Then, it’ll all be done. There’s nothing to think about at all. ”

That was Jackie’s plan.

In the next two days, everyone would peacefully get along, and not attack each other. There were so many people there. Any intelligent Demon Spirit Beasts would not attack them. Once they were sent out, nothing here would have anything to do with Jackie anymore.

At the most, he would just let people know what he knew so that everyone would be more cautious.

Stephen looked up after Jackie spoke. He could not figure out any flaws in it.

If Jackie was not lying, his suggestion would be the best idea.

They would gather there, not hunting any beasts and not caring about their results. They would just quietly wait for the Demon Spirit Kingdom to end and get out peacefully. However, Stephen was worried that it would be a plot from Jackie. They might not escape unscathed.

Jackie sighed helplessly, ”I know what you’re worried about, but there’s no need for that. I don’t want to fight you at all right now. You have fourteen men with you anyway, you’d be confident enough to face me. I’ll be right here, you’ll be able to see everything I do.”

Jackie’s words were slowly convincing Stephen.

After thinking about it, he finally nodded. If Jackie was being truthful, then they could absolutely not afford to be careless. In the end, they were in Demon Spirit Beast territory.

If the beasts really had so many experts, then even fourteen of them might not be able to stand up to the beasts. Working with the warriors from third-grade worlds was the safest choice.

Eduardo almost exploded when Stephen nodded!

He grabbed Stephen's arm and shouted, "What do you mean?! Do you believe this brat too? He's lying to you! Are you crazy? He's our enemy! How could you listen to our enemy, not attacking just because he asked you to? Aren't you worried…"

Chapter 3440
Before he could finish, Stephen interrupted him, "I know your concerns, but I've already thought it through. We won't suffer any losses from a truce. He will just be there, and we'll see everything he does. As long as we remain on alert, no surprises will happen."

Eduardo paced around on the spot angrily. He felt like Stephen was crazy to believe Jackie. He refused to believe what Jackie had said at all.

In his eyes, Jackie was an expert at scheming. Nothing Jackie said could be believed.

Eduardo was just about to say something when Stephen raised his hand to stop him, "Don't say anything else right now. What's the point of fighting them anyway? Ever since Jackie joined, I haven't even considered getting a prize from the Demon Spirit Kingdom."

"Don't forget, only the top three places can get rewards, there's no reason not to get along."

In truth, Stephen was a bit guarded with his words for the sake of his own dignity. After all, he did not want to admit that he was weaker than Jackie, even if it was the truth.

Jackie's sudden entry had completely shattered Stephen's confidence. They would need to beat Jackie to place in the top three.

As the leader of the team for the Demon Spirit Kingdom, he needed to think about the bigger picture.

He could not forget everything for the sake of the rewards. If too many people died, he'd be questioned even if he won. It was better if they held a truce so everyone could get out safely.

Eduardo felt like he was going to die from his anger. He knew Stephen somewhat well. Everything Stephen said indicated that he had already decided to follow what Jackie wanted.

Just as he was about to explode in anger, they heard the sound of a bird from the skies. Everyone looked up to see a massive sparrow fly past. It looked like a very ordinary beast.

That beast was about the length of two people, while its wingspan was as large as five to six people. It flew by and looked at the people below. After that, it cried out a few more times as it headed toward the west.

Everyone had seen that, and Jackie frowned, saying, ”Something feels wrong…”

Eduardo sneered in disdain, “What’s wrong about it? This doesn’t make sense with your lies, right?! Just look at that beast that just flew past. That’s a Demon Spirit Beast. It’s completely different from what you described. It has no human head!”

Jackie did not bother with Eduardo at all. He looked up at the sky until the beast disappeared before he averted his gaze.

Eduardo stomped on the ground, “That beast is quite slow! We’ll still be able to catch up if we go for it now! I know you’ve already decided to listen to Jackie’s plans, siding with the enemy. I’m fine if you don’t want rewards! However, I want my rewards. Otherwise, why did I enter the Demon Spirit Kingdom? Don’t you think it’s stupid to waste two days just like that?”

After he said that, Eduardo turned to look at the other warriors from second-grade worlds, “I don’t know what the rest of you think, but I’m sure that Jackie is lying. You shouldn’t listen to him. I don’t care if they don’t want any rewards, but there are only three spots for the rewards. Who wants to come with me?”

With Eduardo’s personality, he felt like it would be better for him to go alone, but it was unsafe to hunt alone, so he wanted to encourage others to go with him.

Most of the warriors from second-grade worlds were much more apprehensive after hearing what Jackie had said. They felt like it was better to stay there. However, there were some who thought differently.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3441-3445 -

Chapter 3441
Thorn was from a holy grade clan. He was not a chosen disciple, but he was ranked highly among inner disciples. He walked to Eduardo's side.

"Eduardo, I'll go with you! I don't believe what Jackie had said either. I came in here for the rewards, and I don't want to waste my time!"

Eduardo's smile almost split his face apart when someone went to his side.

He reached out and patted Thorn on the back, "You're making a smart choice!"

The moment that was said, a few more beasts flew by above them. Those beasts were not that quick, and they did not seem to have noticed the humans below them.

Eduardo was incredibly excited at that, and he threw aside all his reservations.

"Let's go! It'd just be a waste of time to continue waiting here. We just need to be a bit more cautious, and nothing will happen to us. Once the Demon Spirit Kingdom closes and we're safe with our rewards, they'll definitely be incredibly jealous!"

Thorn was equally as excited. After he nodded, he left with Eduardo.

Jackie's expression never changed. He would not stop the two of them from going anywhere. Even if two fewer people meant less help, those two would only cause trouble if they stayed.

Stephen was different. Once the two of them left, it would be dangerous for their team regardless of if they returned or not. The danger would not just be from the Demon Spirit Beasts, but Jackie's group as well.

Jackie was no slouch.

The warriors from second-grade worlds would have two fewer people, which meant that they would only have twelve of them. Their numbers would weaken their group as a whole.

Stephen frowned as he said to Eduardo, "I know you won't listen to anything I say, but you have to make one thing clear! We're a team, you can't just throw us aside for yourself…"

"Your skills are in second place in this team. You'll be needed for anything important! If you take him away, you'd just be harming your own people!"

When Eduardo heard that, he said casually, “Then you can just follow me over there! I told you not to listen to our enemies. If you insist on being stupid and staying with them, then you’d have been killed by your own stupidity! You can listen to Jackie if you want, I won’t listen to him!”

After he said that, Eduardo turned around to leave.

Stephen frantically stood in front of him, “Listen to me! Jackie doesn’t seem to be lying. If he was, he wouldn’t have made such a detailed story up. The Demon Spirit Beasts really can absorb human blood!”

Stephen was basically talking to a wall at that moment. Eduardo refused to listen, even feeling like Stephen was trying to harm him.

Eduardo reached out and pushed Stephen away, “You’re not my master! We’re not even from the same clan. You have no right to make any decisions for me! I know what you’re thinking. You can’t get the rewards, so you don’t want me to get them too! I won’t be so dumb!”

Those words were incredibly harsh. Even though they had known each other for quite long, they were not from the same clan. Hence, the trust was comparatively lower.

Chapter 3442
Things had already escalated to that degree.

If Stephen continued to convince Eduardo to stay, he would really end up being suspected of trying to drag Eduardo down. Stephen definitely did not think that way as his body stiffened and his breathing started to quicken. His anger was starting to get to his head.

The more he looked at Eduardo, the more he wanted to punch Eduardo in the face. That brat really was getting too arrogant. Stephen was trying to give some advice and had given Eduardo very solid reasoning. It was one thing to not listen, but it was another to twist his intentions.

Stephen looked away, “Whatever! If that’ s how you really want to think, then I have nothing else to say. You’ll think that I’m trying to drag you down no matter what I say anyway…”

“Since you’ve made up your mind, I won’t stop you. However, if you regret it and rejoin the team, you can’t be so stubborn anymore. You have to listen to me for everything! You can’t have your own opinions anymore!”

Eduardo scoffed, letting out a look of disdain. Once he killed enough Demon Spirit Beasts, he might decide to return to the team. Whether or not he listened to Stephen would depend on how he felt.

However, for the sake of his freedom at that moment, Eduardo nodded. Stephen finally looked more relaxed after that, but he was no idiot. He knew that Eduardo was not so easily convinced. Eduardo might just be agreeing for the sake of convenience.

Stephen had already decided to not stop Eduardo. He took a step back and gave way.

Eduardo finally let out a smile as he turned to nod at Thorn. Thorn excitedly followed.

The two of them started to rush in the direction where those beasts went. Everyone looked as if they disappeared and suddenly did not know what to say. A few warriors from second-grade worlds felt very conflicted.

They felt like staying and leaving both had their own merits. After all, if the team was not moving, and they left to kill the Demon Spirit Beasts, they would definitely end up in the top three. Those amazing treasures would be theirs. However, if what Jackie said was true, then it was very possible they would lose their lives.

All of them frowned at the thought. They looked on as those two left.

Both Eduardo and Thorn sped over quickly. They went through the dense forests excitedly, especially Thorn.

He felt like his big break was right in front of him. As long as he seized the chance, he would get closer to becoming a chosen disciple. Then, he would get whatever he wanted. All those people who had looked down on him would kneel before him.

Thorn got excited just thinking about it.

As they sped forward, he said to Eduardo, “Eduardo, you’re so smart! Everyone’s been fooled by Jackie. They believe anything he says. Demon Spirit Beasts with human heads? Those are all lies. They don’t exist at all.”

“He must have some big plot behind everything. They aren’t killing beasts at all. If just the two of us are doing it, then we’ll share all the treasures later!”

Eduardo laughed out loud. He was incredibly happy at that moment.

”You’re right! Those people are afraid of everything. Jackie just spoke a few words, and they didn’t dare to do anything because they were afraid of dying! We really managed to profit this time. We’ll both improve greatly if we get these treasures! They’ll all be green with envy!”

Chapter 3443
Thorn nodded enthusiastically, his smile was almost about to split his face.

At that moment, they suddenly heard some rustling next to them, as if something was speeding through the leaves.

Both of them were stunned. A look of happiness flashed in Eduardo's eyes.

Luck was on his side!

They had just been there for not that long, and they already met a Demon Spirit Beast. No matter how many they meet, all of them would die for him.

As he thought about it, he said to Thorn, "Take out your weapon! Don't let any beasts escape us!"

Thorn nodded. Suddenly they hear the sounds of gears moving.

Eduardo stiffened, feeling like that sound was a bit strange. The next moment, he widened his eyes so wide that they looked like they were going to pop out of their sockets. It was because he saw a massive pincer rapidly approaching him.

Eduardo jumped up and immediately avoided it. However, he had just taken two steps back when he felt his leg tighten.

Looking down, a long and sticky thing had wrapped around his leg, causing Eduardo to be immensely shocked.

He shouted out, "What is this thing!?"

He did not think too much about it since it was a dangerous situation. He took out his weapon and cut it to release his leg.

His sharp sword slashed at that thing, but it did not break at all. The sword ended up getting stuck on it, causing Eduardo to be completely stunned.

Right after that, he heard even more rustling. When he looked up, his breathing stopped!

What were those strange-looking things?!

More than ten beasts with human heads were in front of them. All these beasts had unique appearances. They looked at Eduardo and Thorn with a sharp glint in their eyes.

Three of them had toad-like bodies. They opened their eyes and spat out their thin and sticky tongues. That was when Eduardo realized what was wrapped around his foot!

Eduardo said, "So it's true!"

He had not believed what Jackie had said just now, thinking that Jackie had been spewing nonsense. He thought that Jackie had only been so detailed because it was a trap, and whoever fell into it was an idiot.

He thought that he was the smartest one, always on alert. Only then did he realised that Jackie had not been lying!

He had been the idiot!

At that moment, he heard a cry of agony by his side.

Eduardo looked back and saw that Thorn's whole body had been captured by a tongue.

A spiked beast floated in front of Thom. It slowly cut Thorn's body apart, and blood began to flow out. Blood stained Thorn's clothes, causing him to struggle and shout out in agony.

Eduardo was looking at it all and felt a chill throughout his body. As a chosen disciple, he experienced a lot of hardships. With all his experience, it was obvious what he needed to do next.

Chapter 3444
He could no longer help Thorn. He needed to quickly escape himself. Otherwise, what happened to Thorn would happen to him!

Eduardo roared angrily as he formed seal after seal. The seals quickly fused in the air. The light around him began to dim as if the sun was setting. Of course, the darkness only surrounded Eduardo.

Countless seals fused into pitch-black seeds. Those seeds quickly spun in the air, absorbing all the light around him like black holes.

Eduardo shouted out, "Break!"

Those black seeds quickly charged at the tongue that was holding Eduardo's foot. The moment the dark seeds touched the tongue, they started to swallow everything.

The tongue was constantly being pulled. It lasted for just a moment before it was destroyed. In the end, the tongue fell, letting go of Eduardo's foot.

When Eduardo saw that, he finally breathed a sigh of relief. He did not even bother thinking as he immediately sped away. However, he had only escaped for a moment before he was caught by a tongue again.

At that moment, Eduardo was already struggling crazily.

Unfortunately, his luck had abandoned him. It was not just his left foot that was caught, but his right as well.

He turned to look, and five of those toad-like beasts had their mouths open, spitting out five tongues!

Their eyes were looking right at him!

Eduardo's heart chilled at that scene. Before he could keep struggling, his hands were wrapped by the tongues. At that moment, all his limbs had been locked in place. Even his waist had a tongue on it.

His breathing was frantic as he cried out. He tried to get his friends to save him, but it was wishful thinking. They had advanced so quickly earlier. He was already twenty kilometers away. No one would hear him even if he ruined his throat by shouting!

At that moment, the place where the warriors had gathered was abnormally quiet. The decision from earlier had been agreed to by everyone. All of them set aside their grudges for the moment, and no one made any remarks since. None of them showed much emotion on their faces.

However, they still had their conflicts in the past. Even if it was a truce, they did not sit together. Instead, there was a fixed meter gap between them. They sat on two sides. Jackie was at the center of the warriors from third-grade worlds.

Meanwhile, Stephen was at the center of the warriors from second-grade worlds.

Time slowly passed. After about an hour, the silence was broken by Jackie. He opened his eyes and looked toward Stephen.

"Check to see if the two that left just now still have their marks on."

The moment he said that everyone opened their eyes at the same time.

Stephen frowned, not wasting any time in letting his senses out to feel the mark he left on Eduardo and Thorn.

After a few moments, Stephen's eyes narrowed as he said in a hoarse voice, "I can't feel them anymore…"

The moment that was said, everyone's hearts jumped in fear.

The warriors from second-grade worlds all sent out their senses to try to feel the two of them as well.

All the warriors had placed their marks on each other before they left. Everyone was trying to feel the mark they had left on Eduardo and Thorn.

Chapter 3445
Stephen turned to look at the others behind him.

Everyone had an incredibly serious expression on their faces. Stephen felt his heart sinking. It meant that no one could feel the mark. It meant that Eduardo and Thorn were definitely not in good condition!

A warrior from a second-grade world said with a trembling voice, ”It’s only been an hour! How did they…”

He was right!

Only one short hour had passed, and something had already happened. It was too quick.

Stephen’s heart pounded rapidly. He could not calm down. However, he knew that the situation would only worsen if he did not calm down. He took a few deep breaths, composing himself.

Jackie looked at Stephen coldly, regarding Stephen in a better light.

He really was the leader of that team. He always kept himself calm in every situation. Sometimes, impulsiveness would not solve problems, and would only exacerbate the problem.

After five minutes, Stephen looked at Jackie, “I’ll admit, I doubted your words before this, but that doubt is gone now. The situation now is terrible!”

Stephen was incredibly frustrated. Those two were probably already dead. In truth, he was not too sad about that.

He was sad because the two of them dying meant that the warriors from the second-grade worlds were weaker. They were even less of a match for Jackie’s faction. After that, they might end up being cannon fodder for Jackie.

Stephen really hated Eduardo at that moment. That guy could die due to his arrogance if he wanted to, but his death had caused a result like that. All the warriors from second-grade worlds had to shoulder it.

Stephen took a deep breath and said, “What do we do next? If we just sit here patiently and don’t get tempted to go hunting for the beasts, there shouldn’t be any more problems.”

Jackie shook his head, “I don’t think it’ll be that easy. Even if we just sit here, things can still happen.”

The moment that was said, Stephen was stunned, “Things will still happen? What will happen? They probably won’t move so easily when we have so many gathered here!”

Jackie shook his head helplessly, “They’ll definitely attack. No matter what kind of price they have to pay, they’ll try to kill all of us.”

When Jackie said that, he left no room for doubt.

Stephen and the others felt their hearts racing as they paled.

A warrior from a second- grade world asked loudly, “Why do you say that?! Why would they want to kill us no matter the price?!”

As the intense debate went on, the beasts already had some new movements.

A team of fifty Demon Spirit Beasts with the beast Karsh as the leader was rapidly approaching their location.

Karsh had just let a few lower leveled demonic beasts observe the humans from the air. After determining the numbers and position of the humans, they stopped about a kilometer away from where Jackie was.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3446-3450 -

Chapter 3446
Karsh said loudly, “Move based on what we planned! Remember, before we attack, don’t let yourselves be seen. The moment you notice anything, send out a message!”

All of the beasts answered at the same time, “We will follow the orders of the great leader!”

Forty-something beasts left, leaving five behind.

Karsh had a long body. Its upper half looked more or less like a human, while the lower half of its body looked like an incredibly big praying mantis. It frowned, looking in the direction where Jackie’s group had gathered, not saying a thing.

Mijas raised an eyebrow and said, “I don’t know what the King is thinking. Why he panic? Didn’t we say we would slowly pick them off? Why are we going to kill them all off this time?”

Karsh’s lips twitched in exasperation when he heard that. It turned to look at Mijas, wanting to smack the other party on the head.

It said coldly, “Are you stupid? Do you not know of Setia and the others disappearing? Other than seeing some remnants of battle, the four of them have completely disappeared! They’ve definitely died, so the king is making us spare no one.”

Mijas still did not understand. It frowned in thought for a while before saying again, “If they died, then they died. Isn’t it normal for one or two to die for every task? Even though all four of them died this time, it’s still not completely unacceptable.”

“They were just unlucky to meet someone that killed all four of them, but surely we don’t need such drastic actions? Surrounding such a large group of humans, we’ll definitely have to pay a huge price. It’s not worth it for those four.”

At that moment, even Besant by the side could not stand it.

Besant frowned and said, “Who told you we’re doing all this to avenge those four? Do you even have a brain?!”

Mijas was clearly angered at being called brainless.

It scoffed and said, “Then what’s the reason? Stop trying to act like you’re so smart, okay? I only asked because I can’t understand. ”

Besant scoffed and said, “You’re still unhappy? What other reason could there be? Of course, it’s to stop those people from spreading our secret out to other humans. After they get out, they’ll definitely start spreading what happened here. Then, our plans will be revealed to everyone, and it’ll be much harder for us to do anything!”

“That’s why we’re willing to pay such a huge price to kill the humans who know about the secret. We need to bury the secret in the Demon Spirit Kingdom!”

“Furthermore, the king just needs the blood of ten more humans. To make a breakthrough and level up. Then, even if stronger humans enter, they won’t be able to cause us any trouble!”

Mijas’ lips twitched. It suddenly found itself at a loss for words. So that was the reason.

Why did it not think about it?

It had thought that the king was looking for revenge, which Mijas found very strange.

Since when was the king so compassionate?

Karsh reached out and interrupted their discussions, “Let’s not waste any more time. That guy is a little strong. We have to use our full power later. We can’t let him escape. We’d still have a chance to cover it up if the others escaped, but if that guy escapes, it’ll be hard to kill him again!”

That person Karsh was referring to was known by everyone. They gathered there precisely because of that person.

Chapter 3447
Mijas’ lips twitched, “The humans aren’t just going to sit there either. We managed to smoothly complete all our tasks before this because the humans didn’t know we were hiding our skills. Furthermore, we had the advantage in terms of numbers before this. We’ve already lost some of those advantages.”

“That guy has definitely told our secrets to everyone. They’ll definitely be on guard. We won’t have it so easy this time. A lot of us will definitely die for this, especially to kill that guy! I can’t even guarantee that I’ll be able to survive!”

Saying that Mijas felt a chill in its heart. It knew that the task was incredibly difficult this time.

A lot of them would probably die to the humans. However, it was forced to perform this task. It was a possibility that they might not survive the task, but if they went against the king’s orders, they would definitely be killed by the king.

Besant frowned, “Don’t be so depressing. Don’t think of our opponent that strong.”

“This time, we brought fifty with us. I just got a message from the king. To guarantee the success of this task, he sent another thirty. We have so many of us, if we still can’t deal with them, we’d have to just accept that we’re unlucky.”

Karsh turned to look at the ones behind it, “Don’t be so depressing. At this moment, we have to toss aside those thoughts. We have to use our full potential!”

At that moment, Jackie did not know that they had been surrounded by the beasts. He held up a piece of paper and listened to everyone else as he drew on it.

Stephen had an anxious look as he stared at the piece of paper in Jackie’s hand. His eyes trembled slightly, it was obvious how distraught he was.

After Jackie drew for a long time, Stephen could finally not resist asking, “We’re going to move locations right now?”

Jackie nodded, not even looking up as he said, “After we determine our location, we’ll make a move immediately. We can’t stay here for too long. It’s not like you haven’t noticed it. A few more low-leveled beasts have been flying by. They’ve already confirmed our location, and are observing our every move!”

Stephen no longer dared to doubt Jackie’s words. After all, they’ve already paid the price for doing so.

He frantically walked around on the spot, his mind constantly thinking about what Jackie had said.

Jackie said that the beasts will definitely try to trap them. Stephen asked why Jackie was so sure.

Jackie answered in a serious voice, “It’s because they are aware that we already know their secret. To hide their secret so they can kill even more humans in the future, they will definitely not let us go. They will figure out a way to make all of us stay here!”

Everyone felt a chill when they heard that.

They finally understood how dangerous their situation was. Even though so many of them were gathered there, it was still not safe.

Jackie frantically drew on the paper to figure out the geography of the place. He wanted to find a place that was easy to defend and hard to attack.

He frowned and asked, “That large, circular lake, is it in the west? Are you sure it’s directly west?”

Jackie was speaking to one of the warriors from a second-grade world.

Chapter 3448
That warrior nodded emphatically, ”I’m sure it’s in the west. At that time, I was scared of any danger, so I went around my surroundings. I confirmed that the lake is right there!”

Jackie nodded before he drew the lake on that piece of paper.

They had been sent to various corners of the Demon Spirit Kingdom and had gathered there together. In order to quickly find a place that was easy to defend, Jackie had everyone tell him what they saw on their way over.

Jackie stared at the western side for a moment before he frowned and shook his head, “No! That place is only good because it gives us a wide vision, we can’t say it’s that easy to defend. If they suddenly attack, we’ll only be able to retreat in one direction as we fight. We’ll definitely suffer heavy losses…”

After Jackie denied that position, he asked everyone else again, “Did you see any valleys or caves on the way over? Even mountaintops are fine.”

Kesh glinted in his eyes as he raised his hand excitedly, “I remember somewhere! That place should be quite easy to defend!”

Jackie nodded, allowing Kesh to continue. Kesh took a deep breath and recalled what he remembered.

“That place is a somewhat tall mountain range. There’s a canyon behind it. The canyon is so narrow that only two people would be able to walk through at a time. Do you consider that easy to defend?”

Jackie had a sparkle in his eyes as he straightened his back and nodded, “Of course it is! Why didn’t you say so earlier? Did you not remember it?”

Kesh shook his head.

He took a deep breath before he said, “I didn’t mention it earlier because I felt like the place was a little strange. When I stood at the mountain range, I could see the end of that canyon…”

As he said that, he paused and frowned, “There was mist at the end of the canyon. It covered the whole area and seemed endless. I found it strange, so I wanted to see if there was anywhere else…”

When Jackie heard that, he raised an eyebrow.

He drew the mountain range on the map, but he did not say anything. He looked at every position in detail, and he thought for a moment before he pointed right at the mountain range, “Let’s take a gamble then! We’re leaving for this place now!”

Everyone exchanged looks of worry with each other. However, they could do nothing about the matter.

Everyone was already treating Jackie's words as gospel. After all, those who did not listen to Jackie ended up dying. They naturally refrained from voicing any dissent.

After they moved for about a kilometer, they suddenly noticed eight Demon Spirit Beasts with human heads in front of them.

Other than Jackie and Rudy, it was the first time the rest of them had seen the beasts that looked like that.

Everyone was stunned as they pulled out their weapons and prepared for battle.

Those beasts did not hesitate at all when they noticed the humans. They tossed out a signal array. The signal exploded in the air like fireworks, and the shockwaves were transmitted out.

Chapter 3449
Jackie's lips stiffened, "Let's deal with it quickly! Kill them!"

They could not afford to hesitate at that moment. Everyone knew that they had been surrounded by the beasts. If they delayed any longer, the other beasts would definitely surge over.

To prevent that from happening, they had to deal with the battle quickly!

Jackie formed seals with his hands, and a hundred Soul Swords condensed in the air.

There were a lot of enemies, and Destroying the Void attacked in a wider area!

Before Jackie could use his skill, a large pincer came from the left. Stephen happened to be standing there.

Stephen raised his sword and slashed down. Snow danced around his sword as the temperature around them dropped rapidly. The blade clashed against the pincer.

The pincer was sent flying back, and the snow on the sword scattered as well.

Stephen stiffened. Even though he did not use his full power, it was still seventy to eighty percent of it. He never expected a third of his technique to have been blown away as he struck his opponent!

It was obvious how strong their opponents were.

He was a chosen disciple from a holy grade clan. Even if he was not among the highest ranked, normal warriors were no match for him! Yet, a random Demon Spirit Beast was already so powerful. It shocked him quite a bit.

Stephen clenched his teeth and his expression turned serious.

Jackie had not been exaggerating at all. The situation was even more serious than what he had said.

At that moment, Jackie let out a shout. Stephen looked over to see a large gray blade in front of Jackie. The blade was condensed through a hundred Soul Swords.

Jackie pushed forward, and the blade shot forward like an arrow, charging right at three beasts.

Those beasts all looked similar. They had two massive pincers as hands. The pincers were their weapons. Those beasts used their pincers to clash against the massive Soul Sword!

The others attacked at the same time as well, facing the other beasts.

At that moment, all of them heard a sizzling sound.

Quite a few people turned over to look. That massive Soul Sword immediately wrapped around those pincers the moment they clashed. The pincers turned black and started to sizzle!

In just a few moments, their pincers had turned completely black and watery.

The three beasts let out cries of agony as they were surrounded by the rotting properties of Jackie’s soul attribute.

They started to emit gray smoke and looked like they were decaying.

Stephen and the others froze at the sight, especially Stephen. His lips trembled slightly as he looked at everything in disbelief.

He had just clashed against those massive pincers, so he knew how strong they were better than anyone else. His technique had almost been broken through, but those beasts crumpled like paper facing Jackie’s attack!

Quite a few warriors from second-grade worlds shrunk back at the sight, incredibly glad that they were working together. Otherwise, they would definitely not be at an advantage if they fought. It was even possible they would all be killed by Jackie.

Jackie had dealt with three in one go, so the others were not worth mentioning anymore. In just a few moments, they had eliminated all the Demon Spirit Beasts!

Chapter 3450
With a wave of his hand, Jackie led everyone and continued westward. Once he and the others left, forty Demon Spirit Beasts gathered where the battle had been ended.

Karsh stood in the middle of the beasts.

Its eyebrows furrowed tightly as it looked at the battlefield angrily.

Their companions had been slaughtered by the humans, and their corpses were left scattered all around. It was obvious how intense the battle had been.

Mijas' lips trembled, and his voice shook a little, "Eight of ours didn't even manage to delay them at all! They're so strong!"

If it was any other moment, Karsh would have berated Mijas for praising their opponents, but it could not say anything at that moment, because it thought the same too.

Those humans were stronger than they thought!

Even though the humans had more numbers, they still had eight of them!

It was perfectly possible to stall for a moment, but reality ended up being completely different. Their companions had been killed in just a few moments. The opponents left immediately without any delay, not even taking care of the corpses.

Even Karsh was panicking. Besant walked over to Karsh and said seriously, "The situation is worse than we thought. It's obvious they know that we're surrounding them if they suddenly move like this. What do we do next?"

Karsh took a deep breath. He had a dark expression on his face, "What else can we do?! Issue the order. Call out two times the amount of lower leveled beasts and have them search everywhere! We have to find them! If they escape, our days will be much harder ahead!"

Besant nodded and immediately turned to spread the order. Karsh had a frown as it looked to the west, "They're heading toward that direction, but if I was them, I would probably change course. When we search, we can't leave out any directions."

"Even if there's still over a day, it's perfectly possible for them to hide for that long if they do it well. We can't relax at all. You know how the king is. If we fail, he'll eat us all!"

All of the beasts stood up, not daring to delay things at all.

After two hours, Jackie and the others arrive at the place Kesh talked about.

They were among mountains.

In front of them was a dense forest, and behind them was a canyon. To hide, Jackie and the others were behind the mountains. They could observe the forest constantly and could retreat into the canyons whenever they wanted.

Jackie hurriedly arranged for men to constantly keep watch. He sent out his divine senses, looking through every blade of grass around them.

Rudy looked at Jackie with some worry. He felt like that was the most dangerous situation they had ever been in in the Whirling World. It was not that there had been no dangers before this, but that Jackie had always been in control.

It was different this time. Even if Jackie was not afraid of most of those beasts, there was a king that had never appeared to back them.

That king was what Jackie was afraid of. He could feel that Jackie did not know if he was even a match for that king. That was why Jackie was in such alarm.

Thinking about that, Rudy took a deep breath and sighed.

The others were in no better state. Even though they had arrived safely, Jackie had guessed everything. The situation really was bad. If Jackie had not been so decisive, they might have ended up being eaten by those beasts. Even if they broke through in the end, they would have suffered heavy losses.

Stephen sat on the ground despondently. There were various thoughts in his head.

Jackie suddenly said to Stephen, ”Speak up if you have something to say. Don’t just stand there looking frustrated.”

Jackie felt a bit helpless at how depressed everyone was acting. It was not good for them. If they lost their confidence in battle, the consequences would be dire.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3451-3453 -

Chapter 3451
Stephen sighed helplessly, feeling like he was nothing compared to Jackie.

“How strong do you think their king is? Will you be a match against him?”

That was what Stephen was most worried about.

They might be able to take care of the beasts should there not be an overwhelming number of them, they were only concerned if they could stand against the king. That was because Stephen had no way of knowing how strong that king was.

He did not know if their strongest fighter, Jackie, would be able to stand up to him. If he could not, then the king would kill all of them if it decided to attack.

Just thinking about it terrified Stephen. He never expected himself to end up being in such a terrible situation.

They thought that their biggest enemy in the Demon Spirit Kingdom would be Jackie, yet in a twist of fate, Jackie became their pillar of hope, and their opponents became the beasts they thought were mere prey!

Jackie sighed.

Not being the one to exaggerate the truth, be said slowly, “I don’t know. All we know right now is that this king exists, and we don’t know anything else about it. I don’t know if I’m a match for him either…”

“It’s because I don’t know that I brought all of you here. Everyone should be on their guard, or the situation will only get worse!”

Everyone nodded, but their expressions did not improve at all.

Cloud shot Jackie a meaningful look. Even if he knew that it was best not to cause any trouble at that moment, he was just too worried.

He leaned over and said, “What do we do if we notice them coming? Are we going to retreat or fight them before we leave?”

Jackie frowned, thinking for a moment before he answered, “It depends on the situation. We’ll see how many there are.”

After he said that, Jackie looked into the skies.

He saw that there were no clouds at all and continued, “Don’t just pay attention to the ground, look up as well. The moment you notice any lower-leveled beasts flying over, take them down at once. Don’t let them off! We can’t let those beasts report on our situation!”

Everyone nodded. They suddenly felt like they were surrounded by problems everywhere.

Rudy whispered to Jackie, “If we can’t hold this place, are we going to retreat into the fog? I feel like it’s even more dangerous!”

Jackie turned to look at the end of the canyon. It was shrouded with the fog, obscuring their sights.

Jackie said seriously, “If there’s nothing else we can do, then that’s our only choice. Make sure you follow me closely then. We were sent everywhere in the Demon Spirit Kingdom except for the fog. It means that place is problematic!”

“I’ll have some people check to see if it’s poisonous. If it’s not, we’ll be able to enter. Even if it might end up being more dangerous, it’s not like we have a choice.”

Rudy’s expression darkened as his heart started to beat rapidly. A tremendous sense of danger enveloped his body. He looked at Jackie helplessly.

After a long time, he said, “Let’s hope we’ll never meet that king.”

Jackie smiled and patted Rudy on the shoulder, not saying anything.

Chapter 3452
Jackie frowned as he looked at the skies.

At that moment, there were three lower leveled beasts at his feet, and all were dead. In four short hours, three beasts had already flown overhead.

To prevent unnecessary troubles, they killed everything they saw.

The situation seemed worse than before. Even if none of the lower-leveled beasts managed to escape them, the Demon Spirit Beasts would surely notice their absence and would attempt to locate the others afterward.

Stephen looked at the dead beasts.

After a moment, he slowly said, “We thought that those things were Demon Spirit Beasts. No one expected that the higher-leveled beasts merely used those things to trick us!”

“We were fooled! We thought that humans were the ones who killed our fallen brethren, but we were just prey from the beginning!”

Stephen felt more amused at how he thought of things before this. He was so full of himself.

Kesh’s expression started to darken.

He looked at Jackie and said with some worry, “We can’t just continue like this. It’ s time we figure something out.”

Jackie nodded. He looked around him. After looking around, he slowly knelt and touched the soil.

The area was full of small hills, and the ground was covered with weeds.

After he observed it, he stood up and said, “We’ll dig a hole here…”

Pointing east at a hill, Jackie added, “This place can obstruct their line of sight. Even from the air, they won’t have much line of sight. Later, we’ll set up some shelters and block the whole place up. Once we’re done with them, they won’t notice us unless they come here themselves!”

Everyone walked over and looked at where Jackie was pointing. After looking at it for a long time, they were sure that it was the best place to hide.

With their actions determined, everyone rolled up their sleeves.

It did not take long for them to finish digging a cave. They emptied out the hill and dumped the soil into the canyon below.

The cave was just nice for about all 20 of them. After they finished digging, Jackie had everyone hurry inside before he put up stray mats around them to cover the hole as best as he could.

Jackie was the last one to enter the cave.

The moment he entered, someone started to complain, “This sucks! I thought that we’d be able to kill everything in sight after we entered, but we’re forced to hide to this degree.”

“Once we get out, I’ll let everyone know of the situation. We’ll gather our strongest and enter the Demon Spirit Kingdom to kill all those disgusting beasts!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow. It was obvious that person was from a second-grade world.

How typical of them. As long as they felt like they were suffering, they would do their best to get revenge.

Stephen saw that Jackie had entered and immediately said anxiously, “Do you have any plans after this? Are we just going to hide here? I feel like even if we’ve set up a ruse like this and dug up such a large cave to hide in, we can’t be at ease. I feel like they’ll eventually find us!”

Jackie nodded, “They’ll scour the whole Demon Spirit Kingdom as much as they can, no doubt. They’ll probably not leave a single stone unturned, carefully checking through everything!”

“They lived here all this time, so they know about the place very well. It‘s only a matter of time until they find where we’re hiding.”

Chapter 3453
Everyone started to get agitated when Jackie said that.

They thought they were safe in the cave and that they would be able to wait until they were sent out, yet they underestimated the beasts. Even with these arrangements, their safety was still not guaranteed.

All of the warriors were anxious as they started to discuss things.

A warrior from a second-grade world said with a dark look on his face, “Jackie, since you already know they’ll find us, then you should have a plan, right? What are your plans? You can just tell us, and we’ll all just go along with it.”

The warriors from the second-grade worlds could not be too intimate with Jackie since they still had a conflict with the third-grade worlds, but they could not afford to be disrespectful either. Otherwise, it would be too late for regrets if Jackie decided to use them as cannon fodder.

Thinking about it, they decided to treat Jackie with more respect. Jackie’s skills did warrant this respect, after all.

Jackie sighed as he said with a frown, “We don’t know what sort of skills they possess. They might not even need to look through everything to find out where we were. Compared to waiting for them to attack us, it’s better for us to seize the initiative…”

“We need them to suffer casualties and deplete their resources. The less they are, the safer we’ll be!”

As he said that, Jackie looked around the cave again, “I had all of you dig this cave both to hide ourselves and to set up a place to rest. I decided to bring a group of elites out to kill them and cause panic.”

Everyone widened their eyes at Jackie's words.

A warrior from a third-grade world said in a shaky voice, "Jackie, you'll bring the strongest warriors out and leave the rest of us here to wait for your return?"

Jackie nodded.

The others felt some panic seeing Jackies' answer.

A warrior from a second-grade world said anxiously, "If we stay here and we're noticed, we're all done for. We won't even be able to fight back!"

If the strongest ones left, then it would be like they had lost their roofs during a storm. It was a horrible situation just thinking about it. Even the warriors from third-grade worlds could not stay calm.

A third-grade world warrior in black robes said with some worry, "I know we're basically burdening everyone at the moment, but hey, we have our uses, too! If they attack us, we'll be able to relieve some of that pressure. You can't just leave us here."

The more they spoke, the more worried they were. It was as if the ones that remained were just trash to be abandoned by the strong.

A warrior from a second-grade world said, "Did you already make plans for the worst? You're planning on throwing those you think aren't useful aside and using your limited powers to protect yourselves?"

Jackie furrowed his eyebrows at their words. "What are you even talking about? We're not leaving to escape! We're trying to exterminate as many beasts as we can."

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3454- 3455 -

Chapter 3454

“I’m guessing that these Demon Spirit Beasts aren’t that many, there can’t be endless amounts of them. The more of them we kill, the higher your chances of survival! I acknowledge something else, too, even the stronger among us won’t be able to escape just relying on ourselves!”

Jackie’s words calmed them down a little, but it was still not enough.

He then continued, “All of you take turns to be on the lookout, and utilize our geographical advantages as well. The moment you notice anything, swiftly send us a message right away and retreat to the end of the canyon. Don’t hesitate for even a second. We’ll be back as soon as possible!”

After saying that, Jackie pointed out a few men. “Cloud and Kesh, as well as Stephen and Trey. The four of you will come with me.”

All five of them, including himself, were the strongest of their entire alliance, and they could stand their ground as long as they were facing less than 15 opponents.

Cloud, Kesh, Stephen, and Trey immediately nodded.

Jackie looked at Rudy. “You should stay behind. The moment you notice anything wrong, retreat into the fog. We can communicate through sound arrays.”

Rudy nodded vigorously. In truth, he did not want to stay with these people, and he was far safer if he was with Jackie. However, he did not object to the other party’s arrangements either.

He could tell that Jackie had other intentions with this arrangement.

Everyone knew he was close to Jackie. The fact that Jackie left him here was an assurance to those who remained.

About 50 kilometers away from them.

Karsh frowned as it listened to reports from its subordinates, which was a snake-bodied beast reported.

“There’s nothing wrong with the other directions. Only three lower-leveled beasts that went to the west have yet to return. ”

Karsh nodded. Its cold eyes looked toward the west as it said, “I thought that those people would change directions, but they’re still in the west.”

Mijas, standing behind Karsh, said, “I feel like those humans aren’t running without a goal. They must’ve determined where they wanted to go before they started to run.”

Karsh looked at Mijas with some praise. It was the first time Karsh noticed that Mijas had a brain. Before this, no matter what Mijas said, it sounded like an idiot.

Karsh sighed, “Gather all the Demon Spirit Beasts. We’ll head to the west now!”

The beasts behind Karsh acknowledged it.

Karsh had a deep frown.

Standing at about a meter and a half, it straightened its back and thought for a moment before it said coldly, “Isn’t the misty canyon toward the west? Are they aiming for that place?”

Mijas and Besant froze at this. Their eyes darted all around as they exchanged a meaningful look.

Karsh said, “I sure hope not. If those humans rush in, we’d have to leave without anything. Of course, I don’t think they’ll be so impulsive. “

Chapter 3455
After another two hours, the Demon Spirit Beasts gradually shrank their area of search and slowly zoned in on the misty canyons.

Karsh looked at the hill in front of it with a dark expression.

Mijas said anxiously, “What do we do next? Are we going to surround the place?”

Karsh took a deep breath and said, “The situation isn’t in our favor. It’s an important moment for the king, so we can’t make any mistakes.”

Karsh then turned and looked at its subordinates closely.

“Are all of you sure that they’re here? Have you checked everywhere else carefully? Were there no errors? If we’re wrong and we waste a lot of time, allowing these humans to escape the Demon Spirit Kingdom, it won’t end well for any of you. The king won’t let you off the hook!”

The subordinates answered respectfully, “Understood! We’ve looked everywhere else and have even sent out those with strong divine senses to sweep the area, noticing nothing amiss afterward. In the end, we’re sure that they’re in front! They’re either at the hills or in the canyon.”

Karsh nodded, yet his gaze was dull with slight worry. “How many are here?”

Besant said respectfully, “Including us, there are ninety-three. The thirteenth prince is here too.”

Hearing that the thirteenth prince was present, Karsh had a conflicted look on its face.

Its lips twitched as it said unhappily, “Why is he here? Does he think this place isn’t enough of a mess?”

Besant hurriedly shot Karsh warningly due to its choice of words.

Karsh took a deep breath, and its expression soured.

The task was already a heavy burden that greatly stressed it out, yet the thirteenth prince added to that stress.

Karsh was incredibly unhappy about it, but it did not dare say anything. After all, the thirteenth prince was not a title to be trifled with. Even if it was the leader, it had to watch its words.

“We’ll do what we planned to do. Split into nine smaller groups and disperse to nine positions. We’re not to give them a single opening to run to!”

Mijas and the other beasts nodded emphatically.

Karsh added right after that, “Don’t be too rash with your actions. We’ll make our move once we know where they are. Mijas, go talk to the thirteenth prince and have him bring a group to the east. Don’t do anything without my orders.”

Mijas nodded and turned around to make arrangements.

The thirteenth prince frowned as it listened to Mijas’ orders. Even though he did not want to bother with Mijas, it was still necessary to keep up appearances.

After it nodded, Mijas left.

Looking at Mijas leaving, the prince said coldly, “You sure love to act superior in front of me, yet you’re as obedient as a dog before my father. Once I ascend to the throne, none of you will be able to escape!”

The thirteenth price had two loyal underlings next to it. One of them was a beast with a leopard’s body.

It smiled. “Trash like them won’t live that long. You don’t even need to do anything, they’ll die to someone else soon.”

The other beasts behind them nodded. All of them started to say what the prince wanted to hear.

“That’s right! He dared to tell you what not to do as if he’s your leader. They’re not worthy, and they really don’t know their place. You’ll absorb all of their blood eventually.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3456 - 3460 -

Chapter 3456
A snake-bodied beast bent down and said, “Don’t pay too much attention to these underlings, they’ll meet their end eventually. You came to do your best so the king will know that you’re more capable and loyal than the other princes.”

The thirteenth prince nodded, composing itself.

The task at hand was more important. It could deal with the others another time. The king had a lot of children, and the thirteenth was only one of them.

There were not enough resources to go around. If it wanted to grow strong quicker, then it would need to gain the favor of the king so it could get even more resources. Otherwise, it would not have just left his life of luxury to kill the humans itself.

The snake beast smiled and said, “Don’t worry, all of us here have been with you the whole time, loyal only to you. The task this time is very important, and the king is observing it closely…”

“We’ll gladly risk our lives to make sure you complete the task well. When you kill those pests with your own hands, the king will look at you differently!”

That was what the prince was most concerned about. It did not care about the arrangements that Karsh had made for it. It could ignore the requests to not act recklessly. It would hide by the side and find a chance to kill those humans.

The prince heard that one of the humans that came this time was incredibly strong, so much so that regular beasts were no match for him.

The thirteenth prince was intrigued by this and wanted to kill that person itself. It would bring the human’s head to its father and earn some glory.

Suddenly, the rustling of leaves could be heard from above. All of the beasts there looked up to see five men in robes slowly descending.

There were a total of five of them, and the one in front was empty-handed. The others all had their weapons out, and they seemed prepared.

The thirteenth prince was stunned to see them.

Were those five of the runaway humans?

They dared to show themselves!

The thirteenth prince frowned and shouted, “Had enough of hide-and-seek, have you? You’re sick of living, huh? Nice of you to come to your own death.”

Jackie landed on the ground and faced the prince.

The five of them had been hiding the whole time and had overheard the whole conversation between the prince and Mijas.

Jackie looked at the prince and knew that this beast was different from the rest, being the offspring of the so-called king.

From the earlier conversation, it was obvious that the thirteenth prince was ambitious.

Jackie wanted to launch an ambush. After all, any regular beast would probably immediately release a signal if they appeared like that. However, after understanding the prince’s personality, Jackie decided to simply reveal himself.

The thirteenth prince was proud and narcissistic. Unless it noticed that it could be in danger, it would not release any signals.

In the eyes of someone like that prince, giving out a signal was basically a cry for help. It would deal with anything it thought it could deal with alone.

The prince looked at Jackie coldly. “You humans are really strange. You change your mind so often. Are you planning on fighting to the death by coming out like that? You should just forget about it. The five of you are no match for us.”

The snake-bodied beasts looked at Jackie and the others before leaning in closer to the prince, whispering, “Should we signal the others, my liege? It’s better to be safe…”

Chapter 3457
Hearing that, the thirteenth prince glared at the snake beast unhappily and sneered, “What signal?! Open your eyes and look. We have nine of us, and they’re only five. I’m right here as well.”

“Do we need to ask for help? If the nine of us can’t deal with five of them, don’t even bother with the signal. We should just die!”

The snake beast did not dare to speak anymore after being scolded like that. The prince did not lower its voice when it spoke, and Jackie heard everything.

Jackie could not help but smile. It was just like he expected.

He found himself sometimes intrigued by those narcissistic sorts. Even though they spoke harshly, their actions did end up sparing him a lot of trouble.

Jackie took a deep breath as he turned to Stephen and said, “The prince and the two behind him are mine…”

“We’ll do what we’ve planned. I’ll be the main attacking force while you guys guard my back. Buy me some time, we’ll deal with everything so they won’t have the chance to send out any signals.”

Stephen and the others nodded. Jackie no longer hesitated as he formed seals that danced in the air, forming a blade.

After absorbing the treasures he had gotten, Jackie’s Soul Sky improved, and the Broken Soul Blade was much stronger.

A storm god rank technique was terrifyingly strong. To prevent anything unexpected from happening, he wanted to deal with the prince before the rest.

The prince smirked when it saw that Jackie was attacking. “You really don’t know your place! Since you want to die so badly, I’ll grant you your wish!”

The prince looked different from the other beasts. It looked quite similar to a human, but it was two and a half meters tall and had greenish-gay skin like tiles on a floor. Its hands constantly moved, forming seal after seal as well.

Suddenly, thunder roared as sparks formed around it.

The prince let out a shout and raised its hand. A bow of thunder formed in its hand. It narrowed its eyes slightly as it pulled the bow. Countless sparks gathered on the bow, crackling.

At that moment, the prince looked like a god of thunder. It aimed its bow and arrow right at Jackie’s forehead as it shouted, “Die! ”

The arrow shot out, and Jackie pushed forward as well.

The Broken Soul Blade shot forward incredibly quickly.

The two attacks clashed with a loud noise.

The thunder and the dense black color clashed together, and no one could tell what was happening. Probably because they were confident in the prince, and also because they knew how narcissistic the prince was, but the other beasts did not attack.

Stephen and the others did not attack since the beasts were not moving. The battle suddenly became a duel.

Two sides stood on different ends as they looked at the fight. No one could tell what the situation was.

Chapter 3458
Then, there was a cry of agony, and a figure shot out right after that, rolling on the ground.

The thirteenth prince clutched its chest as it spasmed on the ground frantically, rolling and writhing as it did.

At that moment, all of the beasts panicked as they rushed to the prince's side.

"My liege, are you alright?!"

"Hurry and help the prince up!"

"Ah! Look! The prince's chest is turning black!"

The cries filled their ears. If the prince was still conscious at that moment, it would be scolding them for spouting so much nonsense. However, the pain filled his mind, and he could not even form the most basic of thoughts. All he could do was roll on the ground.

Jackie's hands started to move again, and 100 Soul Swords appeared in front of him. He clapped his hands together, and the Soul Swords fused.

Jackie shot a look at Stephen and the others.

Stephen and the others acknowledged it, and the five of them attacked the remaining beasts at the same time.

Suddenly, there were sounds of battle everywhere. In just a few moments, they had handled all of the beasts!

Stephen and the others might not be as strong as Jackie, but they were capable of facing the Demon Spirit Beasts that were not too strong.

Thanks to Jackie's terrifying abilities, he helped the others once he killed three himself, and the battle was immediately over. Other than the prince, the other beasts were all dead.

Jackie knelt next to the prince and looked at its condition.

He raised an eyebrow and said, "Not bad. His defenses are stronger than normal humans. If a human had been dealt this blow, half their soul would be gone, but he only lost a third."

Stephen and Trey felt a chill when they heard that.

Jackie had killed the prince with one blow. The opponent did not even have the chance to fight back, yet Jackie still praised its defenses.

They felt thankful that they were on the same side as Jackie. If those beasts were not around, they would probably be the ones who were dead. With Jackie's skills, dealing with them was no problem at all.

Jackie took a deep breath as he slowly stood up. "Let's bring him back. I want to interrogate him."

They dealt with the other corpses before they brought the struggling prince away.

It took some time before the other beasts realized that something was wrong.

After another 10 minutes, Karsh and the other beasts gathered at their spot. Karsh came to observe the traces of battle himself. When he felt the lightning around him, Karsh stiffened.

He turned around and shouted angrily, "Let me ask again… Did any of you see the thirteenth prince?!"

All of the beasts shook their heads.

Frantic footsteps were heard.

Besant rushed over to Karsh's side and whispered, "I looked around and couldn't find the prince and his men. It seems like they disappeared…"

Besant felt incredibly anxious when it said that. There were traces of an intense battle here, and they noticed remnants of electricity.

The thirteenth prince's constitution was unique, and it had a close relationship with the lightning lament. Its natural-born technique was the blade of lightning.

Chapter 3459
The site of the battle had been cleaned up, but it was impossible to remove all traces of battle. Even after looking around another two times, they could still not find the prince and the others.

It was obvious to everyone that the prince's group must have been ambushed by the humans, and from the looks of things, it did not end well for the prince.

Karsh's hands trembled slightly as anger boiled in its heart. It hated those humans, and it hated the prince for insisting on following them. It was one thing that the prince had gotten itself killed, but the rest of them would be punished as well!

The thirteenth prince might not be the most excellent of the princes, but the king still placed a lot of importance on the prince. The fact that the prince died while serving under Karsh meant that the king would surely put Karsh into judgment.

Karsh started to breathe a bit quicker, and its eyes reddened.

At that moment, the other beasts did not even dare to breathe. They knew how severe the problem was. Karsh would be bearing the brunt of it!

Karsh turned to look at Mijas. "I remember the prince was still fine when I sent you over fifteen minutes ago…"

Mijas nodded. It meant that the battle should not have happened that long ago.

Karsh added, "We only noticed the signs of battle five minutes ago. It means that everything happened within five to ten minutes."

Karsh was trying to make sure how fast the battle lasted.

The more it thought about it, the more sour its expression was. It was even starting to grit its teeth.

Mijas stood by the side in confusion.

It whispered to Besant, "Karsh doesn't look happy at all. Did he figure something out?"

Besant's lips twitched, wanting nothing more than to hit Mijas on the head.

"We noticed something off five minutes ago, and everything is cleaned up. It means that the battle was over incredibly quickly, and they cleaned up the scene too! Everything was done very efficiently. Do you think this is a good sign?"

Mijas finally reacted to that.

It nodded, only half-understanding it. "Karsh is worried that these ambushes won't stop happening…"

Besant nodded.

Mijas looked around. "What do we do next?"

Besant sighed. “It’s because Karsh doesn’t know what to do next, hence the frustration. They have the advantage at the moment, while we have the numbers. It’ll be easy for them to continue attacking us like this.”

“If we want to reduce our losses, we’ll have to gather everyone together, but we won’t be able to surround them that way…”

Besant paused, looked around, and said, “That’s not even what Karsh is the most frustrated about.”

Mijas was even more confused when it heard that. Its mind was slow in the first place, and Besant was being vague, causing Mijas to get anxious.

It reached out and grabbed Besant’s arm. “Get to the point, why don’t you? What’s the point of keeping things to yourself?”

Besant’s lips twitched, knowing that Mijas would grow irate if Besant did not explain things clearly.

Besant was forced to explain, “If you’re ambushed, what would be your first reaction?”

Chapter 3460
Mijas paused for a moment before it finally slapped its leg in realization. “The prince didn’t give us a signal!”

Besant nodded, lamenting that Mijas finally realized the situation.

Calling for allies when one was ambushed was basic knowledge, but all of them knew of the prince’s temper.

The thirteenth prince often resorted to doing things alone just because it had some skills. On top of that, the prince barely faced any repercussions for his mistakes, solely because he was the prince, which only worsened his attitude.

As long as the prince felt that it had an advantage, it would attack without bothering to notify its allies. That was what Karsh was most angry about.

If the prince had given them the signal, they would have rushed over, and the losses could have been kept to a minimum. The prince did none of that!

It caused the situation to escalate to that level.

The more Karsh thought about it, the more frustrated it was.

It faced Mijas and Besant and said, “This is just very troublesome. If the prince had just been killed, then it‘s not that bad. I’m worried that he’s not dead and that the enemies have him. The situation will be bad in that case…”

At that moment, Jackie and the others returned to their hideout in the cave.

When Rudy and the others saw them returning triumphantly, they were all excited.

Jackie did not bother talking to them as he dragged the prince, who was still writhing in pain. He tossed the prince inside and followed over.

The cave was not that big, but there was enough space for one more. All of them looked toward the prince.

The ones who did not follow Jackie were all very curious about what happened outside. Stephen was in no mood to explain things to them. His eyes never left the prince.

Cloud was different as he patiently told everyone what happened.

Jackie waved his hand and temporarily stopped the power of the Broken Soul Blade.

When the pain diminished, the prince slowly opened its eyes. It was a bit startled. After all, it was surrounded by humans the moment it opened its eyes. It even wondered if it was dreaming. However, all that confusion disappeared the moment it saw Jackie’s face.

It could not help but shudder. All of its arrogance had vanished.

Jackie laughed as he coldly looked at the prince, asking, “Do you want to guess why I kept you alive?”

The prince, despite his pompous nature, was an intelligent beast.

The fact that it was still alive meant that they wanted to know what he knew.

The prince gritted its teeth as it stared at Jackie. It did not say anything and looked like it was going to defy Jackie until the end.

Jackie let out a laugh as he took out a short dagger from Mustard Seed. He placed the dagger right against the prince’s neck.

“I’m not really a nice person, and time is ticking. You’d better be smart about things, or I’ll make you… You remember how pained you were just seconds ago, don’t you? Do you want to try it again?”

The prince’s lips trembled as all its muscles shuddered in his fear.

Thinking about the pain, it could not stop itself. That pain caused it to lose control, and the prince even felt like it was worse than being thrown into boiling oil.

Its hands trembled as it lowered its head and said, “I don’t know anything!”

Jackie laughed, kneeling next to it as he then said, “Do you think I’ll believe you? You’re the thirteenth prince. You’re a noble that’s high up in your society. No one will believe you if you say you don’t know anything.”

At that moment, the prince wished that it was not sought after that badly. It would have just been killed off instead of being tortured.

Stephen, however, was not as patient as Jackie.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3461 - 3465 -

Chapter 3461

The pressure slowly got to Stephen. He urgently wanted to know how he could make sure he was safe.

Jackie frowned and pulled Stephen away.

He said unhappily, “Control your temper. You’d be doing what he wants if you kill him!”

Stephen’s hands trembled, and his expression remained incredibly angry. His lips were trembling from anger as he stared at the prince viciously. He slowly calmed himself at Jackie’s words.

Jackie sighed in exasperation, nodding at Stephen.

There was no need for Stephen to care about it at all. Stephen understood what Jackie meant, and he was forced to retreat while controlling his temper.

Jackie looked at the prince again, “I’ll give you one last chance! If you don’t say anything, I’ll let you live!”

Those words stunned the prince, but Rudy understood what Jackie meant because Jackie had threatened others like this before.

Before the prince could ask, Jackie continued to say, “I’ll use my technique to slowly eat your soul away. Without your soul, you won’t be able to use your power, and won’t even be able to control yourself. However, I won’t kill you. I’ll snap all your limbs and toss you outside.”

“You’ll live. As the prince, your race won’t give up on you. You’ll live like that, but all your former competitors will mock you mercilessly. It will be like hell on earth.”

Jackie’s words were like nails slamming into the prince’s heart.

The strong ruled the Demon Spirit Kingdom. Without his strength, he would live a pathetic life.

Behind all that talent and who he was, he had offended many people everywhere. They would definitely not let go of the chance to torture him. He would not even be able to kill himself and would be forced to bear the humiliation.

Thinking about that, the prince could not help but shudder.

The fear was worse than the pain of his soul being eaten away just now. He started to breathe faster as he slumped down, thoroughly defeated by Jackie.

Jackie smirked.

The others could do what they wanted, but he did not want to meet Jackie ever again.

Jackie was just too scary, whether it was his methods or his skills, both of them caused Stephen to feel great fear.

The prince was finally subdued. It gulped and said, “Ask me whatever you want. I’ll tell you everything I know, but grant me a quick death.”

Chapter 3462
As Jackie’s interrogation continued, Karsh’s side looked like they were in complete panic.

The other beasts looked incredibly anxious as well. They did not dare to say anything for fear of interrupting Karsh’s thoughts.

All of the Demon Spirit Beasts realized how serious the problem was. Those humans were different from what they had expected.

If the matter was not resolved soon and the humans managed to safely leave the Demon Spirit Kingdom, then Karsh’s life would be at risk.

Besant frowned, standing by his side. It was hard to tell what Besant was thinking.

Mijas looked at Besant and whispered, “Don’t you think Karsh looks anxious? You’ve always been smart. Go give him some suggestions.”

Besant rolled its eyes, glaring at Mijas, “Just shut up! Don’t push me into the pit of fire. There are no correct suggestions right now. I don’t have any good ideas either. If we gather all our forces, the humans might just take the chance to escape.”

“After all, we haven’t even been able to tell where they are. If we split up, it’ll be more dangerous. There are a few incredibly strong geniuses among those humans. If we split up, it would just be an open slaughter for them. More and more beasts will die. It would be the death of us too!”

Saying that, Besant could not help but sigh, feeling like the future was not very bright. Everything they could do seemed wrong.

Mijas could not accept it and clenched its teeth wanting to say something. Yet, it was too simple-minded to figure anything out.

Besant took a deep breath and said, “More importantly, time is of the essence. If Karsh can’t decide, then the situation will only get worse.”

The time was tight for two reasons.

Firstly because the Demon Spirit Kingdom was only open for a limited amount of time. After another day, the kingdom would close again. Those humans who are alive would be sent out, and the secret would be exposed. Then, their future would be tumultuous.

On the other hand, they were worried that the humans would attack again, launching another ambush. There were fewer humans than beasts, and the humans were in unknown locations.

It was very easy for the humans to take advantage of any opportunities. The more beasts that died, the more they would be responsible for it.

It was no wonder that Karsh was so frantic. Mijas looked at Karsh, and could not figure anything out.

It said helplessly, “The king still doesn’t know anything. I wouldn’t dare to think of what would happen to us if he knew. Even if he can’t do anything to us now, once everything is over, we’ll be in for a world of suffering.”

Chapter 3463
Besant shook its head helplessly. It was something unavoidable.

It was a blood-red lake that constantly rippled. A thick smell of blood filled the whole place.

Anyone who did not have strong willpower would be completely shaken by the place and start vomiting or even fainting.

At the center of the lake was a round stage that was about hundred and fifty meters wide. There was a Demon Spirit Beast that sat there with its eyes shut. Other than having horns on its head, it was no different from a human.

It had white skin and even wore a human robe. If it did not have those horns, even Demon Spirit Beasts would not be able to tell what it was.

The Demon Spirit Beast had a dark cloud above it, and thunder constantly flashed within those clouds. Frantic footsteps could be heard, and the beast widened their eyes as it looked toward the distance.

Outside the Blood Lake, a beast with a snake’s body kneeled, “My Lord! The situation is bad! The thirteenth prince is lost. Those humans are too cunning. They ambushed us. The leader is completely unable to make a decision right now.”

The beast beneath the clouds was the king of the Demon Spirit Beasts, Diante. Diante breathed out dark coloured gas, and its golden eyes glinted danger in them.

“They’re all trash! All those assurances Karsh gave before they mobilized was just a load of crap. It was easy to say, but he’s useless at everything! What’s the point of having him around!”

The snake beast knelt on the ground, looking down with its body trembling slightly.

At that moment, it was filled with fear. Facing the king’s rage, he could not utter a single word.

Diante shut its eyes again and shouted, “Tell Karsh that he needs to deal with them in six hours! If he can’t, then he’ll be facing me!”

The snake beast immediately nodded its head frantically as it retreated into the fog.

Diante took a deep breath as it looked up at the thunderclouds.

It mumbled, “There’s still a bit left! I just need thirteen more humans! Once this is finished, I won’t be afraid of anything. No one will be able to touch me. Once I get out of the Demon Spirit Kingdom, I’ll be able to do whatever I want in the vast world!”

When Karsh heard Diante’s orders, its body completely stiffened. It merely nodded, not saying anything. However, it was obvious that Karsh was starting to feel the pressure.

He was panicking.

Six hours was not long, but it was not a short time either. If their opponents were not so difficult, it would be enough.

When Mijas heard that order, its face reddened in panic as it started to walk around in circles.

Chapter 3464
Besant placed its hand on Mijas, “Just keep quiet! Stop making a scene!”

Mijas’ lips trembled a little, “I’m just panicking, okay? What do you think we should do?”

Besant sighed, “What else can we do? Let’s take things a step at a time. I think Karsh has already thought about it.”

At that moment, Karsh suddenly said, “Gather everyone right now! We’ll head to the highest point!”

All of the beasts were stunned upon hearing that order.

Besant said anxiously, “If they’re not at the highest point and are gathered anywhere else, wouldn’t they have the opportunity to slip away if we gather everyone up? If they manage to slip away from our sights because of that, then the situation would be disastrous!”

Karsh said, “Do you think I didn’t think about that? This is the only choice we have. We don’t have any time to delay things anymore. We’ll just have to take a gamble! If we win, then it’s all good. If we lose, than half of us here will probably die!”

No words

Karsh took a deep breath and waved, “Alright! This isn’t the time to be unsettled! Hurry up and follow my orders!”

No words

Karsh looked at the peak of the mountain.

No words

It turned around and looked at all the other beasts. It could not hesitate at all at that moment.

It pointed at the top of the mountain, “Advance with me!”

With that order, all of the beasts followed behind Karsh, advancing toward the highest point.

No words

It widened its eyes and shouted at Karsh, “Here! They’re over here!”

The moment that was said, all of the beasts rushed over. Karsh was at the front, and its eyes were fixed on the cave.

The cave was completely covered up. If they had not looked at it closely, they would not have been able to tell that there was a cave. It was obvious that it had been dug out as cover.

No words

No words

Chapter 3465
Karsh could not let anyone slip through!

No words

No words

No words

Karsh's hands trembled, and its breathing started to get erratic. It constantly looked around.

"They've left… When did they leave?!" Its voice turned hoarse, and it was in despair.

Besant froze, feeling like the situation was slipping away from their control. At that moment, it could not say a single word.

Besant merely watched as Karsh froze on the spot it stood. Karsh started to breathe heavily, and its hands shook slightly. Even its weapon was shaking.

After a few moments, Karsh turned around and shouted at the beasts behind it, "Hurry up and go out! Look at the surroundings! Make sure you check everything! They should not have left that long ago, they might still be nearby! All of you remember this, if those humans escape, none of us will get out of this unscathed!"

No words

No words

If it did not make sure to carry out the next steps, then only death awaited him. Diante would even eat him alive.

No words

Karsh stood next to the cave, coldly looking on as the other beasts searched. After a while, the only conclusion was that the humans had already left the place, not leaving a single trace behind.

Karsh was furious at that.

It clutched its fists, "How could this happen?! This should not be possible! Before we gathered, all of us were spread out everywhere. They did not have the chance to escape then. After we gathered, we had our eyes on the peak the whole time, but we didn't notice anything amiss.."

"There's no way they could have left during that time, but they still disappeared. Where did they go?!"

Karsh could not understand it. It had made the final decision after thinking about it deeply. It had gambled that the humans would be at the peak, and it had been right. However, the humans had already left.

When did they leave?

Thinking about it for a while, Karsh could not understand when they did so. They should not have had the chance to!”

Karsh panted roughly, its entire body was trembling.

Besant was panicking as well. It rushed over and looked down from the highest point before looking at the cave again.

It said, “They left, but they did not leave in our direction!”

After it said that, Besant pointed at the fog.

Karsh’s eyes widened as it suddenly turned around. Only then did it realize that it had panicked too much, and did not realize that point.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3466 -3470 -

Chapter 3466
Those humans did not just need to pass through them to leave. They could go through the fog behind them as well.

Karsh's voice was low, and it trembled a bit, "How likely do you think it is that they're already within the fog?"

Besant looked at the cave, and its voice sank a bit as well, "There's a ninety percent chance! I've already examined everything just now. All the soil was freshly dug up, and the footprints were just left behind as well."

"The cave should be recently made. They dug it up to avoid us finding them. Yet, they're not here right now, and we were always down below. They did not have the time to escape, so there was only one possibility. They entered the fog!"

No words

No words

Karsh was starting to panic, "If they find the Blood Lake, then we're all dead!"

Entering the fog was even worse for them than losing a lot of their numbers to a massive battle.

Diante's temper was intense. As long as it was not happy, none of them would get out of this unscathed.

Besant hurriedly said, "There's actually no need to worry! The Blood Lake is at the most important point of the fog. Even we rely on our memory to get there. There's a good chance we could end up lost as well. Because the humans have never entered, unless someone leads them, there's no way they will reach the Blood Lake!"

Karsh took a deep breath, not saying anything.

At that moment, all it could do was constantly pray that the humans were unlucky enough to get lost in the fog and that none of them would get close to the Blood Lake.

Karsh looked up at the fog and said, "The Sky Locking Array should have already been activated. No one can enter Blood Lake, but they can still get close to it. As long as none of them disturb the king's trial, we should be able to make up for our faults!"

"Listen to my orders right now! All beasts are to follow me into the fog and look for the humans! The moment you find them, immediately issue a signal!"

All of the beasts nodded at the same time. All of them entered the fog at the same time.

At that moment, Diante was already preparing to undergo a trial at the center of Blood Lake.

No words

Right at that moment, it heard footsteps from afar again. Diante frowned as anger surged into its mind.

It wondered which beasts dared to get close to the Blood Lake at that moment. They must not be afraid of it getting angry and killing them!

No words

Chapter 3467
The person appeared to be in a green robe and had a handsome face. That person walked right to the edge of Blood Lake.

Diante frowned, “A human?”

That person was none other than Jackie.

He smirked as he looked at Diante in the middle of the Blood Lake. He narrowed his eyes slightly.

The prince was honest and had not lied. The so-called king really was there, and it was an important moment.

No words

Jackie looked up at those runes and smiled, saying, “This is a perfect time, I wasn’t off by even a second!”

That was the Sky Locking Array. It was an array Diante put up to ensure he was not disturbed during the trial.

No words

The trial was about to start, and Diante was about to enter its weakest state. However, it was still able to fight back.

Diante coldly stared at Jackie.

It suddenly smirked, “Brat! What are you called? In so many years, you’re the first person who managed to get into Blood Lake alive. I can’t believe you’re so bold!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he smiled at Diante, “I heard that the Demon Spirit Beasts had a king. I was surprised, honestly. I’d already messed up all those guys, but the king had never once appeared. Now, I finally understand…”

After the prince had been subdued, it had told all its secrets to Jackie.

The king had actually never made an appearance to protect itself. It was about to go through a trial by lightning.

No words

Normally, that so-called king should have already died many years ago.

No words

Jackie had found it strange when he heard that the beasts had a king. That was because it was completely different from what he expected. It went against the laws of the Whirling World as well.

The Whirling World had so many rules in place. Even if they killed each other or anything else, it was all within the rules. Nothing ever exceeded the rules.

No words

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, “I thought you were absorbing the blood to make yourself stronger, but you’re actually using it to defend yourself against the lightning.”

No words

At that moment, there was a layer of blood above Diante. It was very dense, and there was about fifty or sixty people’s worth of blood.

Chapter 3468
No words

At that moment, all of the blood in their body had been extracted. They were assuredly dead.

Jackie sighed, “So from the very start, the prey was actually the hunter, and the hunter was the prey. I suddenly find it quite funny.”

No words

Diante narrowed its eyes, immediately seeing through everything, “It looks like that disloyal son of mine told you everything. They really are all trash, both Karsh and the

thirteenth! They can't help me during an important moment, and are just burdens! Once I go through this trial, I'll slowly make them pay!"

Jackie ignored it and continued speaking, "As long as you go through this trial and absorb the blood of another thirteen humans, you'll be able to use the dense blood to finish an array. The lightning won't be able to sense you anymore, and you can get out of here."

There were two uses for human blood.

No words

With enough blood to cover every area of its body, it would even make the laws think it was human. Then, it could use that to get sent out of this place.

No words

It said loudly, "It's just like you say. As long as I have enough blood, I will be able to leave this place. With my current abilities, it will be incredibly easy to deal with you humans! I've been trapped here for so many years. I'm already tired of all these restrictions! Once I get out, I'll constantly grow stronger and become one of the strongest beings!"

No words

Jackie could not stop himself from laughing. "You really are something else! I can assure you, this place is even safer. You'll only die if you leave this place. Don't think that humans are that weak."

Jackie was being truthful.

The outside world was vast, but that small Demon Spirit Beast regarded itself too highly.

No words

Jackie scoffed, not wanting to dwell on the problem anymore. At that moment, he leaped up and headed for the stage at the center.

Diante looked at Jackie coldly, not attacking.

When Jackie got to the edge of the stage, Diante snorted and looked at Jackie in disdain. It pointed at its chest. There was a faint red glow there. It said coldly, "Are you trying to kill me for this blood essence stone?"

Chapter 3469
Diante laughed when it heard that. It started to look at Jackie like an idiot.

Diante looked at Jackie in interest, “Do you know why I haven’t attacked you?”

Jackie answered, “It’s because you’re confident in yourself. You think that I won’t be able to harm you even if you’re going through a trial. After all, I’m alone here.”

Diante nodded.

No words

No matter how strong Jackie was, there was no way Jackie would be a match for him. He had gone through so many trials. He was not something humans could defeat!

No words

Jackie sighed helplessly.

No words

The clouds above them continued to darken, and the sound of thunder was more and more frequent. It meant the trial was about to begin.

Jackie looked up into the sky, and various emotions flashed on his face.

Diante raised an eyebrow and said, “I can actually attack you right now, but I don’t plan on doing that. I want to kill you when the trial is going on so you’ll know how dumb your earlier ideas were. I want you to know what hopelessness is. You’ll taste the difference between the two of us!”

Jackie laughed and shook his head slightly.

No words

It wanted to prove that, even when it was weak, Jackie was no match for it!

No words

Diante was confused, not understanding what Jackie was doing.

Jackie did not bother explaining either as he coldly looked at Diante.

No words

Jackie merely watched quietly, as if he was waiting for something. Right after that, many footsteps could be heard from afar.

Jackie looked over and saw countless beasts gathering around.

Those beasts widened their eyes when they saw Jackie on the stage. All of those beasts' lips were trembling, especially Karsh's. That was the worst-case scenario.

He never would have expected the human to enter the Blood Lake, let alone go as far as the stage at the center, standing in front of Diante.

Karsh was starting to feel hopeless.

The lightning constantly descended, and Diante calmly withstood the strikes.

When Jackie saw that Karsh and the others were there, he finally made his move.

He took a deep breath and started to form seals. A blade slowly formed in front of him!

Chapter 3470
The moment Karsh saw Jackie moving, it was stunned.

No words

Jackie was even on the stage in the middle, standing not too far away from Diante.

Karsh's lips trembled as it said, "Crazy! That guy is crazy! What's he planning to do? Fight the king? Just him alone? Did he think that the king would be no match for him because of the lightning?"

As it said that, Karsh could not help but sneer.

That guy was too naive. So what if Diante was going through the lightning trial?

No words

Diante could still fight even during the trial!

Mijas blinked, "Is he trying to kill the king to get the blood essence stone?"

No words

There had to be a reason behind everything.

No words

Besant's lips twitched, "He really is crazy!"

As it said that, its expression was a bit twisted. It widened its eyes as it looked at the lightning strike the stage. The sounds filled up the air as the lightning constantly fell.

No words

Jackie constantly formed seals.

At that moment, he was incredibly serious. It was probably the most dangerous battle he would go through in the Whirling World. In truth, he was not confident. After all, he did not know how strong Diante was.

No words

Life was filled with danger anyway. If he succeeded, he would rise even higher. If he lost, then he would descend into hell.

Diante laughed, “Brat! Since you look so calm, you must think you can kill me with those skills of yours.”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything.

Diante did not seem to care that Jackie was not answering it as it said, “Let me tell you this. Thanks to the restrictions, I haven’t broken through the final stage of the innate level just like you. However, my powers have long since exceeded it…”

“The moment I get out of the Whirling world, I’ll be able to reach the divine-solidifying level, and I’ll have the ability to protect myself no matter where I go.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3471 - 3475 -

Chapter 3471
“I managed to become the king of all these beasts thanks to my technique, not because of my level! I’m different from you humans. I can’t use techniques other people created. I can only rely on my own natural-born ones!”

“I’ve already reached the storm god rank with my technique! You’re a mere human who’s nothing more than an ant in my eyes. I can kill you with just a flick!”

No words

No wonder the beasts were all so afraid of it. No wonder it was so fearless.

No words

Jackie frowned and took a deep breath, “What stage have you gotten to?”

No words

Diante scoffed and said, “I’m only one step away from the second stage. Brat, are you scared now? It’s already useless, though! You’ll definitely die at my hands today!”

No words

So what if Jackie knew?

It was still the truth that could not be changed.

When Jackie heard that, he took two deep breaths and tossed all the uncertainty and fear away from his mind. He started to form even more seals, not wasting any time as he prepared to fight.

No words

Diante suddenly felt offended by that. However, it only lasted for a moment before it forgot about it. Its right hand condensed the blood to shield against the lightning while its left hand started to form seals.

No words

The snakes started to gather together incredibly quickly. The greenish-gray glow flashed on those snakes.

No words

Diante sneered, “This is my natural-born technique, brat! Even though I’m not in my best state right now, you’re still no match for me! As long as you touch the poison gas, it will break through your true energy. Your body will rot away after being contaminated, and nothing will be able to save you!”

A sinister glint flashed in Diante’s eyes.

No words

Chapter 3472
The broken Soul Blade started to buzz!

No words

All of the beasts widened their eyes at that moment. Even though they felt like Jackie would be no match for Diante even if there were two Jackies there, they were still interested.

Mijas raised an eyebrow, “This brat is dead! Nothing can save him!”

The moment Mijas said that the Broken Soul Blade clashed with the green sword!

Bang!

No words

Rocks flew all around the stage from the explosion. A crater had formed on the ground. The poisonous liquid dripped on the stones, quickly melting the stones! Jackie clutched his chest and started to cough a few times.

No words

His hands started moving again, forming seals that started to merge in the air. A hundred Soul Swords floated in front of Jackie.

Jackie clapped his hands together, and a hundred Soul Blades merged into one. It went into the sword in Jackie’s hand.

Jackie’s expression turned cold. At that moment, he tossed all thoughts aside as he looked right at the center of the stage. He shot forward like an arrow.

No words

At that moment, Diante was no longer as confident as before. It clutched its chest with its left hand, and there was even green blood flowing out of its mouth. Its whole body was trembling.

No words

Thankfully, it was not at full force, and Diante quickly had it under control.

No words

Diante was panicking at that moment.

It did not expect Jackie to be so strong! Diante shouted at Jackie, “Stop right there!”

Jackie completely ignored Diante. If he stopped at such a good chance, then he would really be a fool. With a squelch, the slash went right into Diante’s left chest. Destroying the Void’s power suddenly started to rip into Diante’s soul.

No words

Jackie clenched his teeth and sent out another strike. He needed to kill Diante before Diante could fight back!

Diante was a threat to him. He could not let Diante live for a second longer.

While Diante was suffering from the pain, Jackie slashed right at its throat. After his strikes, Diante could no longer sustain the blood.

No words

Chapter 3473
No words

How could he forget this?!

No words

The most important reason for killing Diante was the blood essence stone in Diante’s body. If such a valuable stone was scorched to crisp by his carelessness, then even Jackie would feel emotional.

No words

There was pure silence outside the Blood Lake.

No words

Were they hallucinating?

Their king had been killed?

By a human at that?!

Mijas' voice trembled as it said, "Didn't the king say that his technique was already at the storm god rank? How did that brat beat the king? Could he be using a storm god rank technique as well? How?"

No words

The king was so strong. Even when the king was not at full power, Diante was still far above a mere human.

That brat really was strong, but he should not have been able to compete with the king.

How could this be the result?

Besant looked at the shocked Mijas and sighed, "Who are you asking? Who do you think can answer you?!"

Quite a lot of warriors had gathered around Weinhord City's transfer array toward the Demon Spirit Kingdom.

No words

Slowly, everyone there started to wonder who would be in the top three and obtain the rewards. Those discussions disturbed the short silence.

No words

Meanwhile, the warriors from the third-grade world said that the warriors from the second-grade world only knew how to brag. They did not think of who was in the Demon Spirit Kingdom. With Jackie there, no one would be able to take the first place away. With Jackie there, even survival was a problem for the warriors from second-grade worlds.

No words

A warrior from Golden Continent shouted, "Stop mentioning Jackie! Is he a god? Do you think the warriors from third-grade worlds will be fine just because he's there? Stop joking! No matter how strong Jackie is, he's still alone."

Chapter 3474
"None of the warriors from second-grade worlds who entered this time might be a match for Jackie head-on, but all fifteen of them will be together! Even Jackie won't be able to do anything to them…"

“You should be more aware. Jackie might end up being reckless and losing his life. It’s not impossible!”

No words

A warrior from a third-grade world shouted, “Stop with your nonsense! Even if your whole family dies, Jackie will still be fine. You’re just jealous of Jackie’s skills. He’s strong enough to beat all you warriors from second-grade worlds up!”

Suddenly, the atmosphere was incredibly tense. Both sides could not stop cursing at each other.

No words

At that moment, they did not hold back. Their words were incredibly harsh, and the warriors from second-grade worlds were furious.

No words

They forgot about time after arguing for a while. It was only when the transfer array started to glow did they realize time was up.

A warrior from a second-grade world said, “No matter what all of you say, it won’t change the results! Quickly count how many warriors from third-grade worlds I left. I think you should be thankful if there are even five left!”

No words

They immediately shouted back, “Stop with your nonsense! Who knows how many will die? I think none of the warriors from second-grade worlds will survive!”

No words

After counting the numbers, quite a few of them let out sighs of relief.

No words

The warriors from third-grade worlds were just about to gloat when they froze. That was because they saw all the warriors from second-grade worlds turn to bow at Jackie before they walked back.

No words

It was not just the warriors from third-grade worlds that did not understand, the warriors from second-grade worlds did not understand either. All of the warriors there exchanged looks of surprise. They were incredibly confused.

No words

Chapter 3475
No words

Jackie did not bother looking at how the others were reacting to them. He turned to nod at Cloud and the others before he left with Rudy without even turning around.

No words

All of the warriors in Weinhord City were shocked.

No words

That explained why Stephen was so respectful to Jackie. As for what happened after that, Jackie did not care and did not want to know. He already got what he wanted, and was not in danger anymore. Even if he suffered some injuries, the injuries were nothing to him.

No words

After five days, Jackie was done.

No words

Soul Sky improved as well, and he was another step closer to the second stage.

No words

When they arrived in front of the level three city, Chaos City, they finally saw people passing by.

Rudy stood in front of the walls and looked at the massive sign, mumbling, “Chaos City! Just the name itself is chaotic enough. I wonder what’s inside…”

Jackie walked next to Rudy and said one word, “Killing.”

Rudy raised an eyebrow, looking at Jackie curiously.

No words

Just looking at the name felt like it would be a slaughterhouse inside. On top of what Jackie said earlier, Rudy shuddered even more.

Jackie looked at Rudy and slowly explained, “Chaos City has fifty-three third-grade worlds and twenty second-grade worlds. It’s true chaos inside. There were two level

three cities. One is Cloud City and the other is Chaos City. Most warriors actually go to Cloud City. It’s much safer there, and there’s no non-stop killing.”

Hearing that, Rudy understood something else.

He widened his eyes slightly as he asked nervously, “So you’re saying that it’ll be very dangerous inside and that many people will die.”

Jackie nodded, patting Rudy on the shoulder as he slowly explained the rules of Chaos City.

No words

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3476-3480 -

Chapter 3476
Chaos City encouraged killings, so much so that every person or beast killed within its vicinity would yield rewards. Most rewards were spirit crystals or materials, but the most valuable rewards were golden keys.

The golden keys would unlock a random reward. There was a chance to get a golden key just by killing one person or beast, but there was also a chance of not seeing a single golden key after killing a hundred.

However, the moment a person got one, they could head to the Stage of the Nine, using the golden key to open it.

The stage would give out a valuable reward based on the number of golden keys. The more golden keys one had, the greater the value of rewards. Thus, death was a common occurrence in Chaos City.

Warriors who wanted to gain something from the danger all frantically went inside. They got to enjoy killing for treasures within.

Hearing Jackie talking about the rules of Chaos City, Rudy's jaw dropped in surprise, and he struggled to shut it.

"My, my… That's absurd, no? Encouraging killing? Weaker warriors will easily die if they enter! Isn't this absurd?! I saw many subpar-looking warriors entering just now. Are they all crazy? Aren't they afraid of being killed?"

Rudy felt rather bewildered. The rules sounded ridiculous, yet many people entered the City. Rudy felt like they had all lost their minds in the pursuit of treasures.

Since killing would yield the keys to opening the Stage of the Nine, then Chaos City basically became the playground for the powerful.

The strong could kill the weak as much as they wanted, and warriors who were just average in skill would just be slaughtered by the strong. Yet, Rudy could not understand why there were still so many warriors who entered that did not seem to be that strong.

Jackie laughed, patting Rudy on the shoulder. "You can't think of it that way. The strong wouldn't bother killing the weak because it's a waste of time…"

"They'd rather use that time to deal with the other strong warriors. Didn't I tell you before? You can't put the golden keys into spatial storage. You can only hang it on your person."

“If someone who has golden keys dies, their keys will be taken away by their opponents. Just think about it. If you’re the more powerful individual in this game, would you go on a killing spree against the weak to get the keys that you might not get, even if you killed a hundred other warriors? Or, would you kill the warriors that already had golden keys with them?”

Spatial storages collapsed with a person’s death, and everything inside would disappear. No one would be able to get anything from it. However, the golden keys were not allowed to be put inside, and one had to carry them around. The strong would only look at the warriors with golden keys on them and would not waste time on regular warriors.

Jackie laughed and continued, “Those with golden keys will also be surrounded by a red aura. The more keys they have, the more circles will be glowing around them.”

Rudy immediately understood.

Those warriors with golden keys were like torches in the darkness. The strong would be completely fixated on them, ignoring all the weaker warriors.

Then, even if a weak warrior happened to get a single golden key, it would not attract that much attention since there were just too few. It would be obvious from the number of golden circles.

Rudy nodded emphatically. “So that’s it! That explains why many people are rushing in even though it’s so dangerous…”

“It’s actually not as dangerous as I thought. As long as you’re not that unlucky, it won’t be too dangerous to get treasures from the Stage of the Nine…”

After understanding the rules, the two of them stopped hesitating as they walked into Chaos City.

It was a completely gray world with a blood moon hanging in the sky. The ground was black and cracked due to the dryness. Just walking on it gave out a crackling sound. The atmosphere was filled with the aura of death.

Chapter 3477
Warriors that were more cowardly would immediately have a mental collapse just from the aura of this place alone.

Rudy’s skills were below average, and he would be able to stay at a level eight city at the most. He had relied on Jackie to get this far. Even though he was not that cowardly, he was still affected by the atmosphere.

His hands trembled slightly, and his breathing grew erratic. He followed closely behind Jackie, not even daring to breathe deeply, and a dreadful feeling, as though he was about to die, encompassed him. He felt like he would be killed at any moment, leaving the world forever.

Rudy's voice trembled slightly. "Jackie, walk slower. I can't keep up. This place is just too scary. Chaos City is a completely different world than I thought…"

Jackie did not know how vast Chaos City was, but he could not see the city walls after entering. It was an endless wasteland around them. The blood moon hung in the air, and everything felt very ominous. It was as if zombies would jump out at any moment.

Jackie smiled helplessly. "If you can't take it, enter Mustard Seed for now. I can handle things myself."

Jackie saying that was a bit redundant. Even if Rudy was next to him, he would not be able to help anyway. He was a burden that could just help with a couple of words at most. He might not even say the right things.

Rudy's hands shook constantly, and he nodded after thinking about it. There was no point in him staying outside anyway; he would just gain some experience at most.

At that moment, Jackie raised his head and coldly looked forward. Rudy immediately hid behind Jackie, not even daring to look past his shoulders. Footsteps could be heard from the front. Two figures, one plump and one slim, slowly got closer.

The fatter one crossed his arms as he smiled at his skinny companion. "I told you our luck will hold out! You refused to believe me! Just look at those two in front of us. One of them is clearly trash. I can't tell how strong the other is, but it's obvious he's from a third-grade world. How lucky we are!"

The two of them talked to each other without fear, completely looking down on Jackie and Rudy.

The skinny man nodded and looked at Rudy, who was behind Jackie.

After looking at Rudy for a long time, he looked at Jackie and said, "Brat. What were you thinking of, coming to a place like this? You came with a useless person, too. Are you just looking to die quicker? Even though we might not earn anything much from killing the two of you, some spirit crystals are better than nothing!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at the two in front of him coldly.

The fat man laughed. "Let me teach the two of you a lesson today, especially in what 'regret' means. Warriors of your caliber should have just gone to Cloud City. You

might’ve been able to survive that way. You insisted on coming here, so don’t blame us for this!”

He took out a meter long sword from his spatial storage as he said that. He had a big smile on his face, looking at Jackie like a trapped rabbit.

The thin man took out his weapon as well. It was a golden whip.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, finally responding to the two of them, “Just our luck, then. We bumped into two warriors that have nothing.”

The two of them looked aggressive, but they did not have any golden circles around them, signifying they did not have any golden keys. If those two had not challenged them, Jackie would not have bothered to even fight.

The two of them were stunned at what Jackie had said.

Was he insane?

Did he just say they had nothing?

What was the meaning of that?!

However, Jackie did not give them any time to think. He formed seals with his hands, and 100 Soul Swords materialized in the air. He waved, and the swords merged into two swords. He then aimed one at each person.

Chapter 3478
Seeing Jackie preparing to attack, the fat man cackled as though mocking him for not knowing his place.

Every warrior from a second-grade world had special marks on their clothes. Warriors from the Golden Continent had dark gold patterns, while warriors from the Sacred Water Continent had blue clouds.

There were intricate patterns on those symbols to prevent replication from other parties, and warriors from second-grade worlds and third-grade worlds knew those symbols by heart.

The fat man and the thin man both looked at Jackie and Rudy, and they could immediately tell that they were from third-grade worlds. Their origins were like a label of strength, and both men looked down on warriors from third-grad e worlds.

Even though they knew not every warrior from a third-grade world was weak, not many of them were powerful either. It was unlikely for them to meet any powerful ones,

anyway. Furthermore, Jackie, though both men could not deduce his prowess, brought along a good-for-nothing warrior with him.

Even if they could not see how strong Jackie was, they deduced he could not possibly be any stronger, seeing as his companion was squashable.

Chaos City was not a charitable place. It was impossible to tell how many people entered and how many people died there. Everyone knew how dangerous that place was, but Jackie brought a useless companion with him. It meant there was no one strong enough for Jackie to bring along. Otherwise, he would have brought a better companion!

They probably failed to see how strong Jackie was because of some special object that could block their senses, but that was not important. All they needed to do was kill both men to get their rewards.

Whether it was spirit crystals or some materials, it was better than nothing. The two of them never planned on getting any valuable treasures in Chaos City. They just wanted to kill a few men to earn some rewards.

If they happened to get a golden key, they would make their way to the Stage of the Nine to get their treasures. They did not want to carry a key with them while they looked for another one at all.

The two of them knew very well that they would not be able to survive any strong warriors with their skills. Bringing a key along everywhere was equivalent to signing a warrant for one’s death!

The fat man looked at the Soul Sword that was aimed at him and laughed. “What kind of technique is this? I don’t feel any energy from it at all! Is it really that pointless?”

In their eyes, energy fluctuations represented the strength of a skill, and Jackie’s technique did not have any energy fluctuations at all. At least, the two of them could not feel any. On top of that, this whole situation only seemed more hilarious when they noted Jackie’s origin.

How could dolts like them dare to enter Chaos City?

Jackie smirked, not bothering to respond to what the two of them were saying.

When the fat man saw the smile on Jackie’s face, he was furious.

How dare Jackie laugh at them?

It was like he was mocking them for being ignorant!

The fat man gritted his teeth and spat, “Brat! How dare you? You’re mocking us?! I planned on just killing you quickly, but I’ve changed my mind now. I’ll torture you before I kill you so you know the consequences of mocking me!”

Chapter 3479
The moment he said that, the fat man started his attack.

He formed multiple mud-colored seals that danced in the air.

Crackling could be heard around him, and the seals formed a layer of a brown glow above him. Right after that, rumbling could be heard. Rocks could vaguely be seen moving within the glow.

He pushed forward, and the flow shot toward Jackie.

The fat man shouted, “Let’s see if I can bury you alive!”

Countless rocks formed within the muddy glow. Swiftly and burning hot, these rocks shot toward Jackie.

Jackie smiled. Ever since entering the Whirling World, he had seen many things and experienced a lot of battles.

He could immediately tell that the fat man’s technique was not at the ultimate-god rank and was still at the upper earth rank. Whether it was second-grade worlds or third-grade worlds, there were only a certain amount of geniuses. In the end, geniuses took up the minority.

Jackie had mostly met the strongest warriors from each world, so they naturally used higher-level techniques. However, most warriors still had an average skill level. Even though his opponent was from a second-grade world, not everyone from a second-grade world came from a holy-grade clan. The fat man was probably from a lower-level clan.

Even though he was still impressive to most, he posed no threat to him whatsoever.

The thin man attacked as well. He started to form blood red seals, and the seals danced between his fingers like flowing blood, constantly fusing together.

In just a few moments, he formed a curse that was about the size of a palm. The thin man shouted and pushed forward, and the blood curse shot right at Jackie.

It started to expand in the air, becoming the size of half a person. The two of them attacked at the same time, cutting off any path for Jackie to retreat.

The two of them wanted to end things in one attack. Even though they spoke as if they were not afraid of anything, they still did not hold back at all in fear something unexpected could take place.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he pushed his hands forward, shooting the Soul Swords forward like arrows toward his opponents. Three techniques clashed in the air at the same time as countless rocks slammed into the Soul Sword.

The fat man was smiling, already certain that his attack would pulverize the gray sword. However, his smile did not last for even half a second as the Soul Sword did not stop at all, piercing through his technique and unleashing gray-colored energy. The energy completely swallowed up all his rocks.

His attack failed to stop the Soul Sword!

Against the Soul Swords, it would have been useless no matter how many rocks he managed to form.

The moment they touched the sword, they were completely swallowed up, disappearing into the air.

The Soul Sword shot right at the fat man, not stopping at all. The large blood curse also clashed against a Soul Sword. With a crack, it shattered, unable to stop the Soul Sword as well.

Those two techniques did nothing against Destroying the Void, they had not been able to stop it at all!

The fat man and the thin man were not that far away from Jackie. They were confident in themselves before, but even with the two of them working together, they failed to stop Jackie's attack.

Chapter 3480
It was because of that that Jackie's two opponents failed to react when the Soul Sword was in front of them.

The fat man's smile froze on his face as his eyes widened and his whole body stiffened.

With an audible squelch, the two Soul Swords pierced through their chests, and only then did they realize that they made a grave mistake. Even with both of them using their full might, they were no match for Jackie at all. They failed to even slow down Jackie's technique!

How drastic was the difference between them needed to be for such a result?

Pain spread from their chest to their whole body, and the fat man could no longer laugh as he collapsed to the ground. His whole body started to twitch in pain. The thin man fared no better than his companion. His lanky body constantly rolled on the ground as he cried out in agony.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, amused by the two of them that were on the ground.

Rudy sighed in exasperation. “And to think these two said they were lucky!”

Just thinking about that, Rudy could not stop himself from laughing.

He quickly walked to the two of them and said to the fat man, “Do you still think you’re lucky?”

Jackie raised his hand and controlled the power of Destroying the Void, lowering its strength. The two of them regained some conscious thought.

Rudy asked again, and when the fat man heard that, he spat out a mouthful of blood.

He shuddered and said, “Please have mercy! I was just speaking nonsense! Please spare the both of us… We were ignorant! Please ignore what we said. We won’t trouble you anymore!”

Jackie’s strength left the two of them with no thoughts of even trying to fight back at all. The two of them completely forgot about Jackie’s background, and all they wished for was for Jackie to let them go.

Jackie laughed, not even saying anything.

With his sword in hand, he slashed at their next, killing them instantly. Right after that, two glowing lights slowly condensed from their chests. The fat man condensed a piece of purple gold while a golden key was on the thin man’s chest.

When he saw that golden key, Rudy’s eyes widened. “Wow, it’s a golden key! Aren’t we just too lucky? We found a golden key after just two people!”

Jackie smiled, pleased with the outcome. He never expected to get a golden key after dealing with both of them.

He reached out and held the key, and his body suddenly had a golden circle around it. It was not that bright, but it was still visible from far away.

Rudy touched the golden circle curiously but did not feel anything at all. It was purely just a sign.

Rudy looked on as he said, “You’re like a human lighthouse, you know? It looks like we’ll be attracting a lot of people from now on. It’ll be fine if there are only a few, but it’ll be troublesome if there are more.”

Jackie smiled and patted Rudy’s shoulder. “It’s just one golden circle. It’ll only attract some small fish. We met so many geniuses before, but those people are a minority in their worlds.”

“Don’t think they represent the normal standards from their worlds. It’s only when there are a lot of those geniuses that I’ll be troubled. I don’t care about these scumbags at all.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3481 - 3490 -

Chapter 3481
Jackie's words boosted Rudy's confidence, so much so that he wanted to give him a round of applause. These words were what the strong would say!

Jackie tied the key to a string and hung it on himself. After that, he took the piece of purple gold that was only about the size of a fingernail.

Rudy did not recognize it. He looked over curiously and pointed at the piece of gold. "What's that? Is it a valuable spirit crystal?"

Jackie shook his head. "This is a piece of purple gold that has a lot of spiritual energy in it. It's more or less the same as a spirit stone, but it's more valuable than one. A piece of gold the size of a fist is worth about ten million spirit crystals. This one here should be worth a million."

Rudy gaped at that. A piece of gold the size of a fist was worth 10 million spirit crystals!

It was really hard to fathom.

Back then, Rudy lived a very ordinary life. Even though he thought that he was much better off than others and had a lot more potential than his fellow disciples, he realized how much of a joke his thoughts were after entering Phoenix Valley.

During that time, he thought that 10000 spirit crystals were already a huge sum, and a million spirit crystals was a number he would not even dare to think about.

The purple gold was used in more or less the same way as spirit crystals. The spiritual energy could either be absorbed or used as currency.

Jackie looked at Rudy and said, "Purple gold is considered a more luxurious form of currency in second-grade worlds. Normal clans still use spirit crystals as currency, but some larger clans use purple gold as their most common form of currency."

Rudy nodded, his eyes fixed on the purple gold. In truth, he had a lot of spirit crystals at that moment-about 10 million spirit crystals. However, it was at this moment he knew.

10 million spirit crystals were only able to get a piece of purple gold the size of a fist.

Rudy suddenly felt like he was poor again. He shook his head, cursing himself for being greedy.

After Jackie kept the purple gold, he burned the two corpses and looked to the distance.

It was a complete wasteland, and there was not even wild grass around them. There was a sinister aura everywhere as if cruel things had happened in the land.

Rudy followed Jackie's gaze and shuddered. "I got the chills. I feel like there are horrors all around this place. I'm not a complete coward, but I still feel a chill behind my neck. Where are we going next? Should we go look for the Stage of the Nine? We can just use the golden key to get treasures right away."

"I know you have bigger goals, and you'll want to collect more golden keys to get more valuable treasures. One golden key is nothing, but we can give it a try to see what kind of treasure we'll get."

Jackie smiled and said, "We're walking targets now, and trouble will probably come find us in just a moment. We can wait to go to the Gate of the Nine."

Jackie was the one who determined their destination.

There was nothing else in the sky other than the blood moon. There were not even trees around them.

Rudy could not even tell what direction they were going in. Jackie did not explain it. He merely advanced behind Jackie.

Chaos Continent seemed isolated from the whole Whirling World. They had not even seen any city walls since they entered. It was like a complete wasteland in front of them.

After about four hours of walking, they finally saw people ahead of them.

Chapter 3482
Those people could see the faint golden circle around Jackie from afar. Every warrior who entered Chaos City knew what those rings represented, so upon seeing Jackie, they turned around to leave, not wanting to cause trouble.

Rudy said emotionally, "We've walked for so long before we saw a single person. This place is quite desolate. Didn't you say fifty third-grade worlds and twenty second-grade worlds were gathered here? Why haven't we seen anyone after walking for so long?"

"Is Chaos City just too large, or are there just too few people here? We saw quite a few people entering just now, but who knows where they went."

Jackie smiled and explained, "Chaos City should be in an isolated space. Don't forget, the city walls disappeared just after we took a few steps into the city. It means that the city gates are in a separate space."

“You end up in a new space just after taking a few steps. The city gates are basically a simple transfer array, and we were probably sent to a random location within the space. That’s why we didn’t see anyone when we got in…”

“Chaos City is massive, but as long as you keep walking further in, we’ll see more people. We’re heading toward the center of Chaos City.”

Rudy nodded, thinking about what Jackie said. “So you’re telling me that the city is basically one huge circle. The further inside you go, the more people there will be.”

Jackie nodded, that was basically the gist of his words.

Rudy nodded.

Furthermore, there were more Stages of the Nine the further they went. At the centermost spot, there was a 300-meter wide stage.

He nodded thoughtfully at this. It seemed like they would be meeting more people.

Just as he was thinking about that, they suddenly saw six people ahead of them. Those six were split into two small teams of three, and they were rapidly getting closer to Jackie.

Rudy immediately knew that they did not have good intentions and immediately hid behind Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at these six ahead of them.

The one in front of the group to the left had two golden circles around him. There was someone with one golden circle behind that man, and the last one did not have any.

The group on the right was the same as well. The one walking ahead of them had two golden circles, the one in the middle had none, while the one at the back had one. Each golden circle represented a golden key, so there were six golden keys between the six of them.

Jackie stood there in place, not moving as he looked at those people rushing over with strange expressions on their faces. They all seemed to have a look of hatred, and the group on the left seemed to be looking at the group on the right in anger.

They stopped about 50 meters away from Jackie.

Vicenze Claw narrowed his eyes as he hatefully looked at Aurum Sun on the right and said, “Why are you so annoying? You go everywhere we do. Can’t you make your own decisions? You can only be so shameless. Do you think you can succeed just by executing the same plan? We won’t let you get what you want this time!”

Aurum scoffed, looking at Vicenze in disdain. “Stop your nonsense! Shameless methods? Chaos City is all about one’s skills. If you can’t get the keys, then it’s because you’re useless. Shameless methods? You talk like you’re doing amazing charity. What a joke!”

Chapter 3483
Vicenze’s face reddened in anger as he said through gritted teeth, “We were the ones who killed those people. While we were getting rid of the last one, you suddenly rushed out and took the keys. Stealing from others… Is that a skill?”

Goldstein, who was behind Vicenze, was absolutely furious. “You’re so shameless! You were already hiding by the side long ago and waited for us to fight until only one was left before suddenly jumping out. What’s the difference between you and bandits? You even claim to have done all this with your skills? Is being shameless a skill?!”

Aurum thought nothing of those words and replied in a pleased manner, “It is a skill! If you were strong enough, you would’ve noticed us, but you didn’t have the skills to notice us.”

“It’s only normal that we managed to take advantage of you. If you’re not happy about it, why didn’t you just fight us back then and take the keys back? If you’re incapable of reclaiming the keys, then stop with your nonsense!”

The person behind Aurum, Tony, laughed. “Aurum is right! If you don’t have the ability to get it back, then stop harping. You’re acting like you suffered greatly. Chaos City has always been a place where the strong triumphed over the weak. If you want to talk about justice, then you should have gone to Cloud City. It’s much safer there!”

After saying that, he looked at the team on the left with a mocking expression.

Vicenze and the others shook in anger.

The last person in the group on the right, James, snarled through gritted teeth, “Shameless men truly are capable of anything! Are you not afraid of the consequences? You’re even trying to make up reasons to steal what belongs to others! How disgusting!”

“The battle used up a lot of our true energy, yet you ran right after you stole our things. We’d be at a disadvantage if we followed! Do you think we’re dumb? You just happened to find the best timing to take action!”

The two sides faced each other, and both sides had anxiety and impatience on their faces.

Rudy’s lips twitched at the situation!

The six of them completely ignored Rudy and Jackie as they fought among themselves. It was like Jackie and Rudy were already dead and free for them to handle as they pleased.

Jackie looked at Rudy and could not help but smirk.

He whispered, “I told you we didn’t need to look for the Stage of the Nine yet, there will be people looking for trouble on the way. It’s better for us to collect more golden keys before we go looking for the stages.”

Rudy looked at Jackie worriedly and looked back at the two groups before he whispered, “There are six of them. Will it be troublesome?”

Jackie stared at the six men. They were shouting at each other and were not paying attention to Rudy and him at all.

Jackie smiled and said, “At most, the six of them are just outer disciples from holy grade clans.”

Rudy relaxed when he heard Jackie’s words. He paid attention to their bickering once again.

Rudy felt like the two sides might end up fighting each other before they spared Rudy and Jackie a glance!

Chapter 3484
Jackie raised an eyebrow as he sighed in frustration. These people seemed to have a lot of time, but he did not have the time to waste on them.

“Can all of you just shut up? Do you have a lot of time on your hands?” said Jackie, his tone cold. “Since you’re giving me six free keys, I’ll do you the honor of fighting you head-on.”

Jackie’s words stopped them from bickering.

The six of them looked at Jackie at the same time with strange looks on their faces. They never expected their prey to talk to them like that. It was hilarious!

Vicenze scoffed and said, “Hey, do you know what you’re doing? Are you crazy, or just stupid? Do you not see the patterns on our clothes?! You’re just a lowlife from a third-grade world, but you dare to challenge us? I feel like my eyes have been opened today!”

The exasperated Aurum said incredulously, “What did you say just now? We’re giving you six free keys, you say? Do you think you can actually beat us all? It’s six against one. Are you crazy?”

There truly were wonders everywhere.

A brat from a third-grade world was actually speaking so arrogantly as if the six of them were sitting ducks.

Tony laughed when he heard Jackie's words. Jackie had to be stupid to have dared speak like that to them!

Jackie did not care about their laughs. He was already used to it and rather desensitized to all of that. If he had heard all of that back before, he might have been angered, but Jackie was incredibly calm at that moment.

He smiled and said, "You think I'm prey? You think victory against me is already in the bag-that not only will you get a key, but you'll even get two rewards. If you're lucky enough, you'll get an extra key out of it."

Vicenze raised an eyebrow. "It looks like you have some intelligence. You know what we're thinking, but since you know, why the brazenness? Do you think we won't fight you?"

Jackie calmly looked at the six of them. Jackie's words just now had stopped their argument. All of them were looking at Jackie like he was crazy.

Jackie took a deep breath and said, "With your talents, you probably only have upper earth rank techniques at best. It won't be that much trouble."

Jackie's words greatly amused them.

Was he mocking their upper earth rank techniques?

He must be an idiot to have spoken so boldly!

The six of them were at a loss for words.

Aurum said in exasperation, "Are upper earth rank techniques that weak? You talk like you know a lower ultimate god rank technique!"

Aurum was irate at Jackie's words. Where did this insolence masked as bravery come from that he could talk to them in such a manner?

Tony was behind Aurum, and the man behind Tony was Luca.

Luca frowned and stared at Jackie, giving him a once-over.

"Should we be careful about this guy?" he spoke, sounding rather worried. "This guy doesn't look like he's crazy. He might be talented."

Aurum completely disregarded Luca's advice as he pointed at Rudy next to Jackie.

Chapter 3485
"These two are from a third-grade world. Even if I can't tell how strong this guy is, the one next to him is just a lowlife. Even if he's a bit skilled, he wouldn't have said something so arrogant! This guy is probably just trying to scare us with his words!"

Luca, still a bit worried hearing this, pursed his lips. "Why don't we attack them altogether? After that, we'll face each other for the rings"

Aurum looked at Luca silently, but his action looked like he was blaming Luca for being cowardly. He felt like he was shameful.

Tony was a straightforward person, and he turned around to look at Luca unhappily. "The six of us, face him alone? How could you say that? You're fueling his pride here. He should be honored if even Aurum dealt with him. This guy is just a madman, yet you're believing him? Are you crazy, too?"

Luca's lips twitched as he immediately shut his mouth and said nothing else. After all, he would just get berated even more if he continued.

Jackie sighed, no longer caring about what the six of them were saying.

His hands started to form seals, and the Soul swords quickly formed. 10 Soul Swords represented the first stage of Destroying the Void. He had split 100 Soul Swords and fused them into three massive Soul Swords.

Each of the Soul Swords was capable of unleashing power equal to the first stage of an upper ultimate god rank technique.

He looked up at Aurum and the others before looking at Vicenze's group.

He raised an eyebrow, aiming the Soul Swords at Tony, Vicenze, and Aurum.

When the six of them saw that, they were speechless.

Jackie really was something else. Even if it was not one against six, he was still targeting three in one go, much to their bewilderment. It looked like Jackie was not pretending at all, he was just crazy.

Vicenze said in exasperation, "There is something wrong with his head after all. I'd praise him a little if he could face one of us, but he wants to face three of us simultaneously."

All of them were speechless, feeling like there was something wrong with Jackie.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, saying calmly, “You’d better hurry up and attack. Otherwise, you’ll lose your chance!”

Tony narrowed his eyes. “You really are arrogant, brat! Do you know what you’re saying?!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, nodding coldly, “I asked you to hurry up and attack, or you’ll lose your chance. I’m not joking.”

Tony was furious. He felt like he was being challenged. He rolled up his sleeves and prepared to teach Jackie a lesson. Aurum and Vicenze took out their weapons as well. Even if they were not taking it seriously, they still had to take Jackie’s attack.

Jackie pushed his hand forward, and the three Soul Swords shot forward. The three of them attacked at the same time, aiming right for the three Soul Swords!

With a few explosions, a cry of agony could be heard. Tony had rushed forward, blade in hand, but he had been sent flying by the Soul Sword.

Chapter 3486
Tony was thoroughly shocked.

Right after that, he felt a chill in his chest. The Soul Sword had pierced through his chest, and the pain of his soul being ripped apart was felt. He suddenly lost all ability to even think as he collapsed onto the ground.

The other two were in just as bad of a situation. The two of them had not been treated seriously at all. Even though their weapons had not been sent flying, they had not been able to stand up to the attack.

All three of them were stabbed with the Soul Swords in their chests at the same time.

Destroying the Void’s power instantly penetrated their bodies. The pain in their chests spread to their entire body. They cried out in agony at the same time, writhing on the floor like worms.

Everything had happened far too quickly, and the other three did not have a chance to react at all. All three of their eyes were completely widened, and they were gaping as they saw their teammates falling to Jackie’s attack.

They were in so much pain that rolling on the ground was all they could do. It was far too shocking.

The other three were in disbelief that they felt like they were dreaming.

Did Jackie defeat the three of them in one go?

Even though Aurum had underestimated Jackie, he had still used at least eighty percent of his strength!

Even so, he was still no match for that person! Jackie was actually much stronger. No wonder he had acted like they were beneath him earlier. Everyone thought that he was crazy, but they finally realized otherwise.

Jackie had looked down on everyone because he really did have the skills. He might be a warrior from a third-grade world, but he was no ordinary warrior. He was probably one of the strongest warriors in his world!

Even if he was in a second-grade world, he would still be the chosen disciple of a holy grade clan.

The truth was displayed for all to see. The other three suddenly found themselves breathing incredibly quickly as they shuddered.

Jackie was terrifying!

He was a demon. Why were they so unlucky to meet a monster like that?

Goldstein exchanged a look with James. Both of them could see the fear in their eyes. Even Goldstein's eyes were trembling.

He lowered his voice and did his best to control his trembling, "Run!"

He merely said that before he started to run without hesitation, using all his true energy as he crazily ran away.

It was obvious that their opponent had the skills to easily kill them. If they stayed on, they would only die. If they tried to run away, they would still have a sliver of hope. After all, they were in Chaos City. Death was the main theme. If it were anywhere else, they might have considered begging for mercy, but it was useless there!

The three of them ran as fast as they could, scattering!

At that moment, they discarded every thought but themselves. Surviving was better than anything. If they stayed behind, they would just be slaughtered by Jackie. Rudy blinked in surprise, mumbling to himself as he looked at them running away.

"I thought they would work together to try and fight back, but they turned out to be cowards. They ran away almost immediately…"

Jackie did not hear Rudy mumbling to himself. The moment the three of them ran, he immediately followed. They were in Chaos City. The more he killed, the more rewards he would get.

Chapter 3487
These people were going after Jackie anyway, so it's only natural that Jackie took their life instead!

Jackie activated the laws of space and disappeared from the spot. The next moment, he was already a hundred meters away.

The three of them were quite smart as they did not escape in the same direction. Jackie was alone, so he could only go after one of them. However, Jackie had already seen through their plans.

He raised an eyebrow as he scoffed. Before the three of them had started running, Jackie had already placed a mark on all of them. He could determine their location at any time. Furthermore, he was very quick.

James was running toward the southeast. He did not even dare to look back.

He clenched his teeth as he mumbled to himself, "We're so unlucky! Why did we encounter such a huge problem so soon?!"

Jackie had immediately gotten rid of the three strongest ones there almost effortlessly.

Aurum, Vicenze, and Tony were all stronger than he was. However, they were still no match for Jackie. They did not even have the right to face Jackie.

The three of them had been dealt with so easily even when they were working together. They would be nothing in front of Jackie if it was a duel. James was incredibly worried.

If they had just listened to Jackie and realized that Jackie would not be easy to deal with, they might have had a chance if all of them worked together. However, it was already too late. Vicenze was done for!

The more James thought about it, the more scared he got. Jackie was not just a mere problem in his mind anymore.

Just as he was thinking about it, he suddenly heard the wind howling next to him.

He looked over and his eyes were so wide they almost popped out of their sockets. At some point, Jackie had actually caught up to him.

He looked at the smirk on Jackie's cold face. It was a smile he would never forget. The gray sword in Jackie's hand stabbed out the moment James looked back.

With a pierce, he felt his back hurt as blood began to shoot out. He cried out as he collapsed onto the ground.

Jackie kept his sword and landed on the ground as well. He walked over to James and looked at James with a frown. When he saw the golden key that was with James, he did not hesitate to take the key for himself.

James was writhing on the floor in pain. Jackie did not even bother sparing him a second glance as he stabbed James right in the chest, ending his life.

A flash appeared, and the reward for killing James appeared in front of Jackie. It was another piece of purple gold. This piece was smaller than the last one. It was only about half the size of the last one. It meant that the prize for killing James had only been five hundred thousand spirit crystals.

Jackie raised an eyebrow at the reward, feeling like he had lost out. However, he did not think too much about it. After all, he still had two targets to deal with.

He immediately turned around and went for the next target.

Luca had been the one to run the fastest and was also the most anxious one. He had warned Aurum and Tony to not underestimate Jackie. It was a pity they did not listen.

They felt like he was being too careful, but they were the ones who were probably at their last breath. Luca could not help but shudder as he thought about Jackie's cold and calm face.

Jackie really was that strong. A genius among geniuses!

Chapter 3488
He had been telling them the truth, but no one believed him. They ended up suffering great losses. They had thought that there was something wrong with Jackie's head.

Right then, Luca really wanted to grab all of them by the collar and tell them that was the consequence of pride!

They had been the ones with something wrong with their heads!

Luca furrowed his eyebrows, feeling like something had changed about the space around him. He had used the law of space before, so he had a natural sensitivity to that.

A few moments ago, there had been a slight space distortion behind him. It was like something had ripped space apart to chase after him. Luca shuddered.

'Could that guy be using the law of space techniques?'

The moment the thought flashed in his head, he felt a painful stab in his back. He turned around to see a familiar face.

Jackie was looking at him with a cold expression. The sword in Jackie's hand was stabbed into his back, and blood dripped out.

Luca reached out and said, "Why are you so strong?! Who are you?! There's no way you're a warrior from a third-grade world! Warriors from third-grade worlds can't be as strong as you!"

At that moment, Luca already knew that he was done for. He only had some questions on his mind that he was asking with his dying breath.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said coldly, "I'm from Hestia Continent. My name is Jackie White."

He quickly revealed who he was. Luca's eyes widened even more when he heard that Jackie was from Hestia Continent.

His lips twitched, "What did you say? You're from Hestia Continent?"

Luca had already read about the various levels of power in the different worlds. Luca had seen Hestia Continent's name a few times. When they entered Hestia Continent, he had even looked into it, so he understood more about Hestia Continent than any other world.

He was interested in Hestia Continent because of the massive barrier that had suddenly appeared to cut Hestia Continent out. Hestia Continent was completely isolated. Their resources were limited.

There was no way they could cultivate such an incredibly strong warrior!

Yet, Jackie had no reason to lie to him. He took a deep breath, full of disbelief and having no choice but to believe Jackie.

Jackie was actually from Hestia Continent!

A warrior from that unassuming place had actually killed him so easily!

That was absurd. He could not accept it, but it was the truth.

With another grunt, Luca spat out a mouthful of blood as he dropped. His golden key was taken away by Jackie as well.

The reward for killing Luca was an eighth-grade herb. Compared to that small piece of gold, this was clearly several times more valuable.

The last target was Goldstein, who was already seven or eight kilometers away.

Jackie frowned, suddenly wondering if he should continue to give chase. Goldstein did not have any golden keys. The six of them had six keys between them, but not everyone had a key. Vicenze had two, and Aurum had two as well.

The other two were with Luca and James. Tony and Goldstein did not have any keys on them. If he chased after Goldstein, he would just get another reward.

Chapter 3489
Goldstein was already too far away. It would require some effort to catch up.

After thinking about it, Jackie decided to give up. The most valuable thing in Chaos City was the golden keys. He had gotten six from this battle, which already satisfied him. If he wasted any more energy chasing Goldstein, it would not be worth it.

Thinking about it, he shook his head and returned to the scene of the original battle.

At that moment, Rudy was kneeling next to Vicenze, supporting his head on his hand while mumbling something. To not waste any time, Jackie rushed over and left Rudy there.

Even though Jackie had dealt with them quickly, he still regretted it when he saw Rudy.

Rudy was just too weak. Jackie had left Rudy alone just like that. If anyone had suddenly jumped out to attack Rudy, he would not even be able to fight back.

If anything similar happened in the future, he would need to properly make arrangements for Rudy first.

Rudy immediately waved at Jackie excitedly when he saw that Jackie was back.

Jackie nodded at Rudy, not wasting any time as he walked right to Vicenze. He reached out and grabbed the two keys from Vicenze before turning around to take the keys off Aurum’s body as well.

After that, he killed the three of them. The rewards were a piece of purple gold the size of a fingernail, a seventh-grade pill, and a seventh-grade herb. All three rewards were nothing amazing to Jackie.

Jackie sighed, smiling as he said, “I was just too greedy. I thought I would be able to get another key if I killed all five of them.”

Rudy looked up and smiled, saying, “Didn’t you tell me getting keys was all about luck? If you’re lucky enough, you’ll get a key just after one kill.”

“Sometimes, you get so unlucky that you don’t even get a single key after a hundred kills. We were already lucky enough to get a key after just two kills. On top of that, you just got six keys, which makes seven total!”

At that moment, there were seven golden circles around Jackie. The golden circles were quite eye-catching on top of each other. At that moment, Jackie really was a human lighthouse. The glow on his body was visible from four kilometers away.

It would probably not take too long for those looking for danger and profit to come to try to kill him for the seven golden keys.

Jackie took a deep breath, putting the keys in his palm.

Jackie frowned and said, “It’s not going to be easy dealing with too many people. We need to figure something out. We can’t just be a lighthouse that constantly attracts those people.”

Rudy was like an accessory to Jackie. Other than being able to talk to Rudy, Rudy was quite useless. When more opponents came about, even Jackie would find it difficult, so he needed to figure something out.

After Jackie thought about it, he suddenly turned around. He put the six keys in his hand into Rudy’s, and suddenly, there were six fewer circles around him. Rudy started to glow, and he was stunned as he looked at Jackie in confusion.

Jackie did not explain anything as he sent Rudy into Mustard Seed with a wave.

Rudy suddenly disappeared, and the glow was gone.

Jackie widened his eyes in excitement, lamenting that Mustard Seed was so amazing that even the laws of the Whirling World were unable to sense it.

Chapter 3490
The Golden Key could not be placed into any regular spatial storage, but Mustard Seed was different. Even with the Whirling World’s strict laws, it could not restrict Mustard Seed. It was an amazing piece of treasure.

Rudy was taken out of Mustard Seed again which greatly confused him. Jackie briefly talked about the situation, and Rudy was incredibly excited thinking about it. That meant they were no longer just walking pieces of bait. Putting the golden keys into Mustard Seed meant there would be no problems no matter how many golden keys they collected.

After four hours, Jackie and Rudy advanced about fifty kilometers ahead. It was still a complete wasteland around them. Other than the blood moon in the skies reddening a

little more, there were no changes at all. The deeper they walked, the more apprehensive Rudy felt.

He was worried that another group would appear.

Jackie did not put all the golden keys into Mustard Seed, leaving one on him. That was to attract weaker warriors to come to fight him over the key. They would think that he was the prey, but in Jackie's eyes, they were the prey.

After advancing for another kilometer, they saw the distant figure starting to get closer to them.

When the person saw Jackie, he immediately stopped. Even though it was very far, and they could not even see that person's expression. However, it was obvious from that person's actions that he seemed a bit fearful of Jackie.

Since he was fearful, he would probably not attack out of a sudden.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, ignoring that person. If the other party did not attack Jackie, he would not attack them.

As he walked forward for another five minutes, the person that stopped in the distance suddenly started to walk toward Jackie and Rudy quickly.

Jackie frowned as he looked at the approaching person. That person was incredibly tall and well-built. There was blood flowing from his forehead, and his lips were bloody too. His body was quite damaged, so he had probably just gone through a battle not too long ago.

When that person saw Jackie's face, he seemed to be trying to determine who the other party was. Jackie raised an eyebrow, not saying anything.

After a few more moments, that person greeted Jackie, "Are you from a third-grade world?"

There were differences between warriors from third-grade worlds and second-grade worlds. It was obvious just from the attire. Jackie did not have any special markings on his clothes, and he was with Rudy, who was not that strong. It meant the other person was quite sure that Jackie was from a third-grade world.

Jackie turned to look at that person as well. That person did not have any special markings on his clothes either, so that person was also from a third-grade world. The person seemed polite in Jackie's eyes, so he nodded honestly.

That person took a deep breath and introduced himself.

That person was from a ninth-grade clan in Sky Peak Continent and was a chosen disciple. His name was Chad Lee.

Sky Peak Continent was around the same level as Lycan Continent. They were not at the top of third-grade worlds, but not weak either. Chad was definitely among the stronger warriors around.

He was a lone warrior, and would regularly move alone. Before he came into Chaos City, he never thought of advancing with anyone else. However, after he entered, he had to lower his head.

When he saw Jackie from afar, he did not greet Jackie because he was uncertain. He only went closer to Jackie after seeing what Jackie wore.

Rudy blinked as he said, “So you came here to form a group with us?”

Chad nodded, he looked at Jackie helplessly, “For you two, advancing with someone you don’t know probably doesn’t seem safe, but I can guarantee you that I won’t do anything that crosses the line if you don’t stab me in the back. Those pieces of trash are just trying to cause trouble for the warriors from third-grade worlds.”

As he said that, he took off the key he had hanging around his waist, “Some warriors from second-grade worlds are so shameless that they’re just staying put in one place to steal from us third-grade world warriors. I was planning on exchanging my keys for some treasures at the Stage of the Nine earlier.”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3491-3500 -

Chapter 3491
“Yet, I was ambushed by the warriors from second-grade worlds who were hiding there. If I wasn’t skilled enough, I would have died there!”

“An ambush is one thing, but they were acting so arrogantly! They asked me to just be obedient and give them my golden keys and kill myself! It’s like giving the keys to them would be an honor to me!”

As he said that, Chad twitched slightly as he started breathing heavily. His eyes were full of anger. Even Rudy was clutching his fists in anger after hearing that, let alone Chad himself.

Jackie frowned, rubbing his head helplessly. No matter where he went, as long as the second-grade world and third-grade world warriors were in the same place, there would be conflict!

The warriors from second-grade worlds all looked down on warriors from third-grade worlds. Even if their actions were shameless, they would think that the warriors from third-grade worlds deserved it. They would always look down on the whole of Whirling World from their high pedestal.

Rudy scoffed, “Those dogs! They’re so disgusting!”

Jackie pursed his lips and looked at Chad, “Remember what you’re saying now. We’ll only be able to form a stable team if we don’t betray each other…”

Chad looked at Jackie in surprise. He had thought that it would take some time to convince them all, but Jackie had agreed so quickly.

Chad immediately said, “Don’t worry, I’m not that sly of a person!”

Jackie nodded, not saying anything else.

Chad went toward the Stage of the Nine again. He had two golden keys with him and planned on exchanging them for treasures before he did anything else. Of course, he definitely wanted more golden keys, but he would attract too much trouble if he had too many. It was better to exchange two keys for some treasures first.

When Jackie heard his plans, Jackie did not disagree, indicating that they could go to the Stage of the Nine.

Chad frowned and said seriously, “We’ll have to be careful! The closer we are, the more bandits there will be! All of them are from second-grade worlds! Even though they are

bandits, they insist on looking good. They keep preaching about the survival of the fittest, and challenge you to take it back from them!”

Chad got angrier and angrier as he spoke.

Jackie nodded, looking at Chad, “Why don’t you try and recover first? Don’t worry, I’ll protect you. No one will be able to hurt you.”

Chad wiped the blood off his face with his sleeve, not really looking like he cared, “They’re just minor injuries. It’s fine.”

Jackie did not insist further after Chad said that. The three of them advanced to the Stage of the Nine together. There were countless stages all over Chaos City. The location of each stage was transmitted to their brains after they entered Chaos City.

Every warrior in Chaos City would clearly know the location of every stage. The one closest to them was about ten kilometers away. They were in no hurry and moved slowly in that direction.

That was to prevent any sudden ambushes. With Jackie’s skills, it would be no trouble dealing with some minor annoyances, but he was afraid of any unexpected incidents. If someone strong suddenly showed up, it might be difficult.

The three of them chatted away as they went. Rudy and Chad had a long conversation.

In truth, Chad was not someone who spoke a lot, but they were talking about the warriors from second-grade worlds the whole way. Chad suddenly found himself having a lot to talk about due to his hatred for them.

Chapter 3492
The two of them were just cursing at the various despicable things that warriors from second-grade worlds did.

Jackie merely followed behind them, not saying anything. The way forward was still an endless wasteland. It was as if there was no end in sight.

“I really don’t know how those disgusting people can bring themselves to be so shameless! Do they really think we’re scared of them? Of course not! We just don’t want any trouble, but those people think we’re scared of them and end up just getting worse and worse!”

“Just wait! We’ll end up with a full-blown war eventually! Then, we’ll pull something big and they won’t be able to walk out unscathed. Let’s see if they can still be arrogant then!” Rudy said viciously.

Most of the second-grade worlds were indeed stronger than third-grade worlds in overall strength, but so what?

They had strength in numbers! Even if their average warrior was not as strong as a warrior from a second-grade world, they could make up for it with their numbers. The total number of geniuses would be comparable.

If it was an open war, it was hard to say who would win! Rudy favored the combined strength of third-grade worlds more. He felt like they would definitely win by sheer numbers!

Chad nodded and agreed, “That’s right! We have so many people, and we’re not just going to sit quietly and get pushed around! It’s just that we’re not working together right now. If we end up being forced to work together by them, then the warriors from second-grade worlds won’t be able to keep on smiling!”

Chad hit the most important point. If they really did all work together, then the warriors from second-grade worlds would not be able to handle them.

However, the third-grade worlds all had their camps with their plans. Even if they formed teams, it was just temporary. The moment their interests were at stake, any alliances would suddenly fall apart.

It would be different if the warriors from second-grade worlds forced them into a corner. If they were forced to, then any plans could be tossed aside. Everyone could work together to fightback until the end. Then, any advantages the warriors from second-grade worlds had would shatter, and they would not be able to be so arrogant anymore.

He had seen too many similar things along the way.

Rudy felt like the various actions of the second-grade worlds showed that they had never treated warriors from third-grade worlds as humans.

They tortured them for heart blood and stole from them when they wanted golden keys.

Those shameless and despicable guys did so many atrocious things, but they still did not seem ashamed at all. They spoke as if the warriors from third-grade worlds are indebted to them.

Rudy felt like it was enough, and wondered if they could just fight a large battle. He wanted to see those shameless guys suffer massive losses and pay a price. He wanted them to see the corpses of their allies piling up. Only then would they know how stupid they had been.

Being arrogant only brought death.

The two of them spoke more and more intensely, and Jackie merely listened quietly behind them. He found himself completely speechless.

They were being too absolute with their words and thought of everything too idealistically. The warriors from second-grade worlds would pay a heavy price, but would the warriors from third-grade worlds not?

There were a lot of warriors from third-grade worlds, and a lot of strong ones too, but if they start fighting, the number of casualties would not be lower than the second-grade worlds.

Calmly looking at it, anyone would know that a true war was impossible. The warriors from second-grade worlds only acted so fearlessly because they knew that.

Jackie smiled helplessly, “The two of you should quit dreaming. Pay attention to your surroundings.”

“Haha, there are another three! Three keys! Not bad!” Fareed walked out from a crater on their left with his hands on his waist.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked forward. There was a huge crater that had been dug up about a hundred meters away from them. The crater was incredibly deep, capable of fitting ten people. They had been vigilant about their surroundings earlier but had failed to notice that crater.

They never expected anyone to dig up a crater to hide there.

Chad’s expression stiffened as he said with clenched teeth, “It’s these guys again!”

Chapter 3493
Jackie looked at Chad curiously and asked, “Do you know them? Were they the group that attacked you?”

Chad shook his head, “No! But they’re definitely here to steal our keys. They’re all the same!”

It was no surprise that warriors from second-grade worlds looking to steal their keys were there. After all, they already knew about it before. However, Jackie never expected them to appear so suddenly from a crater they had specially dug up.

Fareed dusted off the dirt on his clothes as he smiled, looking at the crater behind him, “Why aren’t you coming out yet? Are you waiting for your birthday?”

Someone inside cursed, “Idiot! What do you know?! Do you know how to launch a proper ambush?! Don’t you know how to attack quickly and end things quickly?”

Fareed rolled his eyes, “Quit trying to act like you’re so smart in front of me. There are only two of them! The other one is complete trash. Why do we need to ambush them?! Just come out.”

Mikael, who was in the crater, jumped out after activating his true energy. After a few moments, he landed on the ground next to Fareed.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he said casually, “Is it just the two of you? Is there no one else inside?”

He looked forward, but the crater was too hidden. He needed to get closer if he wanted to look into the crater.

Fareed was speechless.

Was that guy crazy?

It was one thing to not be afraid of them, but he was talking to them in such a dismissive tone. It was as if he was not bothered by them at all. Even if another two jumped out, he would still not care.

That attitude really riled Fareed up.

‘That guy was acting too carefree!’

‘Did he think warriors from second-grade worlds were beneath him?’

Fareed already thought of a hundred ways to torture Jackie to make Jackie regret it.

“Oh, there really are all sorts of people in the world. I haven’t met people who want to die as badly as you! Brat, do you even know the consequences of your words?” Fareed asked.

Jackie’s expression was completely calm.

It was like the two in front of him were just beggars by the street who would not threaten him at all, “What would the consequences be? Tell me…”

Jackie’s nonchalant attitude deeply struck them. They felt like they were being looked down on.

A warrior from a third-grade world actually dared to do that!

Fareed looked at Jackie coldly, “Brat, you’ll regret this!”

Rudy was speechless as he listened. Anyone who did not do what warriors from second-grade worlds wanted would be threatened by them with regret!

Regret?

Jackie and Rudy would not know the meaning of that word!

The ones who regretted it were always those who went against Jackie!

Rudy raised an eyebrow and said, “Are the two of you not tired of acting like clowns? Stop talking about regrets! If you have the skills, then attack! If you don’t, then just wait for your death!”

Fareed and Mikael were stunned at those words. That was usually the tone warriors from second-grade worlds would use. Now that it was directed back at them, they were furious.

Chapter 3494
Chad’s expression was still incredibly cold as he stared at them with hatred.

He could no longer hold back, “You dogs! Don’t think you can do whatever you want just because you’re from a second-grade world. What do you think second-grade worlds are?”

“All you do are shameless things and go around acting like you’re strong. Regret?! What regret? You two bandits aren’t worthy of saying things like that!”

Chad had practically shouted everything out. He felt incredibly good about it. Those shameless dogs disgusted him!

Even as bandits, they were trying to act like they were superior!

It was a joke!

Being shouted at like that, Fareed could not remain calm. He had planned on trying to get a feel of Jackie and Chad first. After all, the two of them were worried about surprises as well.

They were so proud of themselves, but they never expected the warriors from the third-grade worlds to fight back so intensely!

Fareed could bear being shouted at by the strong. He would clench his teeth and swallow his pride when he was shouted at within his clan, but he could not accept suffering from it by warriors from third-grade words!

He attacked right away. He wanted those two to pay!

His target was Chad. After all, Chad's words had thoroughly infuriated him just now!

He started to form seals with his hands, and an intense golden glow started to shine. Countless golden seals reacted with each other. They formed an intricate pattern, and slowly condensed into seven golden pythons. The seven pythons all had their mouths wide open. They had fangs that were soaked in venom.

Those snakes flashed as their eyes stared right at Chad.

Chad shouted and attacked at that moment as well. All of his anger toward the warriors from second-grade worlds had accumulated in his heart. He had already hated them to the bone.

His true energy roared frantically, and seals flowed out of his hands. Blood-red seals fused into a large blood-colored blade!

Chad looked incredibly crazed. Those warriors from second-grade worlds never treated them as humans, doing whatever they wanted, as if they were livestock for the second-grade worlds to be slaughtered at any moment!

What gave them the right?!

Chad got to where he was all from his own skills, were warriors from second-grade worlds supposed to just be better?

He wanted those guys to pay a painful price!

He wanted them to know that those despicable thoughts would lead them to their deaths!

Chad shouted and pushed forward. The sword carried a bloody aura as it slashed right at the pythons!

Jackie did not make a move. He had his attention on the two that were fighting and was prepared to make a move at any moment. He had some of his attention on Mikael as well, preventing Mikael from doing anything.

Chad was incredibly angry at that moment and needed to vent. Jackie felt like the other party was more than capable to deal with Fareed, but he would not be able to deal with two of them.

The pythons had their mouths open as they bit down on the sword.

Rudy looked at the explosive power and was a bit afraid. He looked at Jackie and started to panic a little when he saw that Jackie was not planning to attack.

“Jackie! Why don’t you help out?”

Chapter 3495
Jackie turned to look at Rudy, “He can deal with it. That bandit isn’t from a high-grade clan. Even if warriors from second-grade worlds had messed-up minds, disciples of high-grade clans would never become bandits.”

Rudy took a deep breath, feeling like Jackie was right. It was not like every warrior from a second-grade world was strong. Normal warriors made up most of them. It was just that they acted very arrogantly so they could feel special in front of warriors from third-grade worlds.

With a bang, the two techniques clashed in the air. The first three pythons disappeared immediately, being sliced into pure energy. The other four managed to withstand the first blow.

The pythons then wrapped around the body of the sword while the sword constantly released sharp energy, trying to slice through the snakes. The pythons’ bodies were constantly broken apart, but they constantly regenerated!

The four pythons wrapped tightly around the sword, and the blade constantly moved. The energy was bursting out everywhere, and the pythons cried out in the air. Yet, they did not relax their grip at all. The two techniques clashed against each other, and it was hard to tell who was winning.

Mikael had a look of surprise on his face. He did not expect Fareed to be so closely matched with that guy.

He turned to look at Jackie, and there was a look of alarm on his face. He was getting impatient and wanted to help Fareed deal with that warrior. However, there was still another standing there.

If he attacked, that person would not just stand by idly. It might end up becoming a battle between the five parties. Even though the one on the left did not seem strong at all, there was still strength in numbers. If the one on the right was as strong as the one that was fighting, he might not be able to handle it, and it would be trouble.

At that moment, Mikael was already thinking about retreating. After all, he was not absolutely confident. He felt like they might have bitten off more than they could chew.

At that moment, Fareed shouted out angrily, “Brat, I can’t believe you’re actually quite decent! No wonder you were so arrogant to talk to me like that! However, don’t be so pleased just yet! You’ll be dying today!”

After that, Fareed let out a roar, forming even more seals that constantly flew in the air. Fareed pushed forward, and the seals shot into the four golden pythons.

Chad pursed his lips as his eyes started to redden.

The golden pythons became even stronger after absorbing those seals. The sword had originally still been able to constantly shake and unleash its sharp powers. Yet, it was already completely held by the pythons at that moment. It could not move at all, and could not unleash its destructive power!

Rudy was getting anxious.

He turned to look at Jackie and said, “Jackie! You should attack now! I think Chad’s about to lose.”

Jackie shook his head, still looking up without any intention to attack.

Rudy gulped, wanting nothing more than to help. In truth, he had only known Chad for a few hours, but because they were quite compatible, he had already considered Chad as a friend. On top of that, those two would be even more arrogant if Chad were to lose, which Rudy did not want to happen.

Mikael looked over and saw Rudy’s anxious expression.

He said, “What’s the point of being nervous? That guy can’t possibly beat Fareed. You should just surrender. Stop struggling for no reason. Knee! and beg us, and hand over your keys then we’ll make sure you die quickly!”

Chapter 3496
“What utter nonsense!” Rudy furiously shouted, “What are you even talking about, dog?! The one who should be begging is you!”

Rudy felt like he was going to die of anger. After that, he turned to shoot Jackie a pleading look, hoping that Jackie would do something in time. However, Jackie’s expression did not change, and his body did not move at all.

Rudy pursed his lips. If Jackie did not lend a helping hand, Chad would lose. That would be really embarrassing. Chad was already injured in the first place. Any additional injury would inflict emotional wounds as well!

He felt like he could no longer wait, and was just about to say something to Jackie again when an intense red light shot out in the air.

Chad let out a furious roar as his whole body started to glow red. His hands constantly moved, and blood-red seals were constantly formed!

Countless seals began to surround the sword. The sword started to glow intensely, and its power constantly exploded outward, causing the python to start to crack. The speed of its recovery could not catch up to the speed it was being torn apart.

The four pythons started to struggle intensely, and Fareed started to panic. He hurriedly formed even more seals, but before he could send them to the pythons, the blood-red sword exploded intensely.

There was a sudden boom, and the python was completely blown apart. The blood-red sword had managed to escape, and the red energy constantly flowed to the tip.

Chad shouted out, “Die!”

The blood-red sword shot forward at Fareed like an arrow.

Fareed jumped in fright, and he hurriedly tried to protect himself as he retreated. However, it was already too late.

The two of them had not been far away from each other in the first place. With the fact that their techniques had clashed in the middle, Fareed did not have much time to react!

The sword pierced right through Fareed’s protection, and Fareed let out an angry roar as he frantically retreated. Yet, it was all for naught. No matter how much he tried, he could not make enough distance.

Fareed’s cries of anguish could be heard as the sword pierced into him. The energy shot right into his body, and it sucked his blood dry.

Fareed’s blood turned into the power of the sword, and it suddenly became much stronger! At that moment, no one could save Fareed. His true energy could no longer be used, and his body could no longer support itself. He let out a cry and fell to the ground.

With a boom, Fareed collapsed on the ground heavily.

Mikael was shocked. Fareed had clearly been inches away from winning, but the guy had turned the tables, exploding out with such terrifying power that destroyed the golden pythons!

The loss had come far too quickly. Mikael had his mouth open wide, unsure of how to react!

Rudy clapped frantically, incredibly happy about it. He had thought that Chad would lose, and he was about to ask Jackie for help again. Yet, the tables had turned so quickly. Defeat suddenly turned to victory, and Fareed was on the ground!

He turned around and looked at Mikael proudly, saying, “Did you see that?! Who’s the one who should be kneeling and giving up their golden keys?”

“So what if you’re from a second-grade world?! You still lost to us. All you do is brag. You just like to constantly talk, but you still lost so badly. Don’t you think it’s embarrassing?”

Mikael took a deep breath. His face was completely red. Of course, it was embarrassing. Mikael wanted to dig a hole for himself and hide in it!

Chapter 3497
However, he still had his wits about him. It was not the time to be overcome with emotion. He looked at Jackie and turned around to run without a second word!

Jackie scoffed as he shot forward and gave chase. He had not attacked earlier because he wanted to see Chad’s abilities. There was no way he could let this guy run away.

Mikael said as he ran, “Just you wait! I’ll bring my fellow disciples over! Then, you won’t be able to get out of this!”

The moment he said that Jackie suddenly stopped chasing after him. He looked at Mikael retreating, not moving at all. It was like he had been stunned in place by Mikael’s words.

Chad and Rudy were both stunned at that.

Why was Jackie not chasing after them?

Chad said anxiously, “Why did you stop?! You have to get him! Did you not hear what he said? He’s going for reinforcements!”

Chad was practically shouting that out. Even after seeing his abilities, that guy still wanted to get help. It meant that his fellow disciples should be quite strong.

If the two of them were not far away and managed to hurry over in time, then they would be in a difficult spot. Even though he had beaten Fareed earlier, he had been forced to use his trump card. If there were warriors that were stronger than Fareed, he would not be able to beat them.

Rudy did not say anything at all.

Compared to Chad, he knew Jackie much better. No matter how fast Mikael had run, he would not have been able to get away if Jackie did not want him to.

He did not understand why Jackie stopped his pursuit, but Rudy trusted that Jackie had his own reasons.

Jackie turned to look at Chad and said, “I heard what that guy said. It’s precise because I heard that so I stopped chasing. Let’s just wait here for his fellow disciples.”

Chad was stunned by Jackie's words. He looked at Jackie in confusion, suddenly not knowing what to say.

Was Jackie's head alright?

Did Jackie know what he was saying?

They were getting reinforcements, but Jackie was not leaving and instead waiting for them to come over.

Did Jackie feel like they did not have enough enemies?

Did Jackie think he was not in enough anger?

Chad's look had been quite obvious, and Jackie could naturally tell what he was thinking.

Jackie smiled and said, "I have my own plans. You don't need to worry."

That caused Chad to feel even more unsettled instead. Chad felt like Jackie was a mystery.

Chad's lips twitched as he hurriedly said, "That guy will definitely be bringing reinforcements that are stronger than him. You should be stronger than Fareed, but I'm only good enough to defeat Fareed. If any more came, I won't be able to defeat them. If you have the skills to fight more than one, then I can help you hold Mikael back. It's just that, I don't think you can."

He did not hold anything back and was incredibly straightforward. He had not known Jackie for that long and had never seen Jackie in action. Even so, Chad estimated that Jackie should be more or less at his level.

Even if Jackie was stronger than him, he would not be that much stronger. After all, they were from third-grade worlds.

Unless Jackie was a top-chosen disciple, he would not be that much different.

Chapter 3498
Jackie nodded emotionlessly after hearing Chad's words, "I know. Don't worry, there won't be any surprises."

Chad's lips were constantly twitching in exasperation, feeling like Jackie was very conceited. Jackie might really be strong, but going against more than one opponent?

Various thoughts surfaced in Chad's head. He had never liked to overthink things.

If he could not understand it, then he would just forget about it. He felt like his mind was going to get overworked, so he decided to just forget about everything. Since Jackie was confident, then he would just listen to Jackie. After all, if anything happened, he would not be the only one in danger.

When Jackie saw that Chad had stopped saying anything, he stepped forward and looked toward where Mikael had left.

Time slowly ticked away.

After about ten minutes, three figures started to speed over toward them from a distance.

The three of them were running side by side. The one on the left was Mikael. His previous expression filled with shock had disappeared. Even though there was still hatred on his face, it was mostly filled with excitement for revenge.

Jackie smirked as he let out a faint smile.

Fareed had already been dealt with. The two keys Fareed had were taken by Chad and he was planning on giving one to Jackie. After all, without Jackie's help, Chad would not have been able to face Fareed alone.

However, Jackie refused it as Chad had fought that battle himself. It was just a key anyway. He had a bigger goal in mind. He did not care about one key.

Mikael shouted out from far away, "You really are bold! You actually didn't run away!"

The three of them stopped about eighty meters away from Jackie and the rest.

Mikael looked at them with an expression full of hatred.

Jackie felt like he already saw them as mortal enemies. The other party looked like a wild dog who had found a strong master at that moment.

"You didn't even bother running! Do you think the three of you can face the three of us? My fellow disciples here are both stronger than Fareed! Fareed just underestimated you just now. Otherwise, he would not have lost!" Mikael sneered at Jackie.

He held his anger while speaking.

Rudy started to laugh out loud, saying mockingly, "How could you even bring yourself to say that? Did you forget how frantically Fareed tried to block that attack just now? He was practically using all his strength, but he still wasn't a match for my friend! What are you even talking about right now?"

Mikael's face reddened in anger. He looked at Rudy and clenched his teeth in anger.

Mikael said, "How dare you laugh at me? Very well! I'll remember you! Keep laughing. You can laugh as much as you want! You won't be able to laugh anymore soon. I'll teach you the consequences of laughing at me. I'll make sure to skin you alive!"

As he said that, Mikael's face was full of venom as he glared right at Rudy as if Rudy had killed his whole body.

Rudy rolled his eyes, not caring about it.

Beside Mikael were his elder brothers, Josui and Joaqim. The few of them were brothers not by blood, but by circumstance.

Mikael was the youngest and was basically an errand boy. A few of them were basically bandits and targeted warriors from third-grade worlds.

Jackie looked at Chad, who was breathing heavier and heavier.

At that moment, Chad's fists were clenched tightly as he looked at them with clenched teeth. His anger had almost swallowed up his reason.

Jackie raised an eyebrow. Before he could figure out the reason for Chad's anger, Joaqim spoke.

Chapter 3499
"I was wondering who it was, turns out it's you. I thought you only knew how to run, and I was thinking you wouldn't show up here anymore. I never expected you to be so bold to return again. You even brought two helpers along."

"Did you think that these two helpers would help you beat us? Stop joking around! Even if you bring four more over, it would be nothing. In front of us, all of you are nothing!" Joaqim said indifferently to Jackie.

Jackie immediately understood Chad's rage.

Chad's injuries had been inflicted by them, and he had probably been humiliated quite a bit as well. It really was a coincidence.

Chad furrowed his eyebrows tightly, and his eyes reddened, "You shameless and despicable bandits! I won't let you go!"

Joaqim started to laugh, not hiding his mockery at all, "Who do you think you are? You won't let me off? Are you worthy of saying that? You're just a defeated warrior. If you weren't so good at running away, you'd already be a corpse right now. Since when did

you get to be so arrogant?! If you have the skills, then don't run away. Let's fight right here!"

Chad's face was red. Even though his heart was filled with anger and his whole body was trembling, the truth was still the truth. He really was no match for them.

Not too long ago, he had been forced to run away with his tail between his legs just to stay alive. Otherwise, he would not have been here with Jackie.

Jackie coughed slightly, turning to say to Chad, "Calm down. What's the point of getting so angry? Just leave everything to me. You just need to help me hold back Mikael at most."

Chad looked at Jackie in surprise. He had a lotto say, but he swallowed back his words.

He looked at Jackie firmly, and after a moment, he said, "I trust you!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow at that, praising Chad's personality. He smiled, not saying anything else as he turned to look at Joaqim and the others.

At that moment, Josui laughed, "You won't be able to escape this time! He needs to properly torture you. Even though I don't know how Fareed lost to you, he's still our younger brother. We need to seek justice for him."

Jackie had not planned on saying anything, and wanted to fight right away, but he could not stand it after hearing Josui.

He said in exasperation, "Justice? How can you even say that? What justice? Bandits have a sense of justice now?"

Fareed and Mikael had hidden in a corner to rob others. Fareed lost his life because he was not skilled enough, so he deserved it.

That guy said he wanted justice! It was a joke.

Jackie took a deep breath, saying to Chad, "What are those two called? Do you know what clan they're from?"

Chad nodded, introducing them. He did not know what clan they were from, but he knew their names.

Jackie scoffed. The one called Joaqim had a disgusting aura about him.

Jackie was absolutely disgusted by how narcissistic the warriors from second-grade worlds had always acted.

Joaqim narrowed his eyes, “Yes, we’re seeking justice for him. Do you have anything to say about that? You trash from third-grade worlds were meant to be our prey anyway. So what if you’re killed?! The fact that you dared to go against us is a great crime! You should be punished with death!”

Even Jackie could not remain calm at that.

Rudy jumped in anger, shouting out, “You dogs! Prey? Who do you think you are? I’ll make sure you kneel in front of me later!”

Rudy was furious, and Chad was even more so. His hands were trembling, and his face was full of rage.

Jackie sighed as he reached out to grab Rudy’s shoulder, “There’s no point trying to argue with them. Since they’re so arrogant, let’s get rid of that arrogance with our own hands!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3501-3510 -

Chapter 3500
When Jackie said that, he had not lowered his voice.

The two in front of them had been able to hear everything clearly. Joaqim scoffed, looking at Jackie in exasperation. Jackie really was brave to have dared to say all of that. He was looking down at them.

Did he want to get rid of their arrogance himself?

How absurd!

Josui sneered, “You really do see something new every day. I’ve seen arrogant warriors from third-grade worlds, but it’s the first time I’ve met one as arrogant as you!”

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking at them coldly. There were three golden rings around both Josui and Joaqim. It meant they had three rings each.

They had six in total, which was great news for him.

He smiled and turned around to look at Chad, “Just keep an eye on Mikael. Leave the rest to me.”

Jackie’s voice was calm, but his gaze was firm.

Chad’s lips twitched. His experience told him that Jackie was acting a bit overly arrogant. His opponents were using lower ultimate god rank techniques!

Jackie would already be quite capable if he was able to beat them one on one. One against two was crazy.

However, Jackie’s calm tone and resolved look made it so Chad had nothing to say.

He merely nodded and whispered, “Okay, but you need to be careful! Those two aren’t easy to deal with! Fareed used a lower ultimate god rank technique, and those two are stronger than him.”

“They’re naturally using lower ultimate god rank techniques too. Fareed was not even at the first stage of proficiency. Those two are stronger than Fareed, so they should already be over the first stage. Lower ultimate god rank techniques can’t be underestimated! You have to be incredibly careful!”

Jackie nodded slowly. Rudy smirked when he heard Chad.

He let out a confident smile as he patted Chad on the shoulder, “Don’t worry, they’re just ultimate god-rank techniques. They’re nothing to Jackie!”

Rudy was not exaggerating at all.

Lower ultimate god rank techniques really were nothing to Jackie. After all, he had two techniques. The weaker one was Destroying the Void, which was already at the upper ultimate god rank technique. And he had already mastered it.

Chad did not know all of that. He felt a bit confused at Rudy’s confident smile and felt like it was all very strange.

He looked at Rudy before looking at the calm Jackie, suddenly not knowing what to say.

Joaqim and Josui had heard all of that, and they felt deeply amused.

Ultimate god rank techniques were nothing?

That was not just mere arrogance. They even felt like the guys in front of them were really crazy. They were living in a dream.

Not even chosen disciples from holy grade clans could say anything like that, so where did those two get all the confidence from to say such absurd things?

It was like lower ultimate god-rank techniques were beneath them.

Joaqim’s lips twitched, “Those two really are crazy! They don’t know their place. Do they think they’re unbeatable just because they beat Fareed?”

Mikael’s lips were twitching as well.

He looked at them with exasperation as he scoffed and said, “Hey, guys, are you delusional? Did you say that lower ultimate god rank techniques are weak? You’re talking like you know upper ultimate god rank techniques!”

Chapter 3501
Jackie took a deep breath, deciding that he no longer wanted to waste time on them.

He shot up into the air as he formed multiple seals, materializing 100 Soul Swords in front of him.

The Soul Swords glowed with gray runes and radiated with the power of the soul that flowed within the Soul Swords. If one was to look closer, it was as if countless little snakes slithered around the Soul Swords.

Joaqim and Josui exchanged looks and saw the disdain they felt for the other side.

Joaqim scoffed and said, “Leave this to me! If the two of us attack together, we’ll just embarrass ourselves.”

With that, he leaped into the air.

Josui, on the other hand, stood still with his arms crossed, showing no indication that he would do anything. He had a cold smile on his face as he looked at Rudy and Chad.

While Chad sighed in relief, knowing this was no two-against-one battle, and felt slightly less burdened, Rudy shook his head.

If it was one-on-one combat, this battle had no more meaning to Jackie.

Jackie looked at Joaqim in the air and raised an eyebrow in exasperation.

Joaqim scoffed, not wasting any time talking as he started to clench his fists. Two red flames rose from his hands, floating around his skin. There was an intense energy within.

Narrowing his eyes slightly, Joaqim shouted, “My technique is a lower ultimate god rank technique, Explosive Fists, and I’ve trained it to the first stage. Even those from holy grade clans know to respect me!”

“You’re just a brat from a third-grade world, yet you speak so arrogantly! It’s time for you to experience how big the world is, brat!”

Joaqim clenched his fists tightly as he activated his true energy and charged at Jackie. His fists contained explosive energy, and the flames were charging at Jackie quickly.

Jackie smiled, fusing 50 Soul Swords into one to form a giant Soul Sword. He pushed forward, and the gray Soul Sword shot out as well. In a flash, the flaming fists and the giant Soul Sword clashed.

The intense flames seemed to have been extinguished the moment they clashed against the Soul Sword. Those fists were no match for Jackie’s Soul Sword at all! The energy within the Soul Sword did not even seem to have diminished at all as the Soul Sword shot forward, not slowing down.

Joaqim’s eyes widened in disbelief.

The Soul Sword was incredibly quick, and it did not take that long for it to reach Joaqim. He let out a roar as he started to form more seals.

The flames around his fists burned even more intensely. He gritted his teeth as his fists shot right at the Soul Sword, but it was still not enough to stop it. No matter how

intensely the flames burned, they were extinguished the moment they clashed against the Soul Sword.

“Ah!”

Joaqim let out a roar as he swung his fist again. The Soul Sword finally clashed with Joaqim’s actual hands, but it pierced right through his fists.

Chapter 3502
Joaqim merely felt like his hands were ripped by a formless energy. Even though there were no wounds on his hands, his soul felt like it was ripped apart from the inside.

The Soul Sword harmed a person’s soul, and Joaqim looked on as the Soul Sword pierced through his hands right into his chest.

A wave of unbearable pain started to spread from his chest, and Joaqim’s eyes widened as his muscles began to pulse from the intense pain. He could not even control his own breathing. His true energy stopped circulating, and he started to fall down.

With a boom, he slammed onto the ground face-first.

Everyone looked at the scene with widened eyes.

Joaqim lost in mere minutes!

How Joaqim struggled to survive was etched into their eyes. Even struggling so frantically, Joaqim was still no match for his opponent. They were not at the same level at all. Even more terrifying was the fact that Jackie had not used his full strength.

Of the 100 Soul Swords he formed, Jackie had only used 50 of them!

The thought crossed Josui and Mikael’s minds, both shell-shocked by the turn of events. They finally realized that they had crossed someone far too powerful for themselves. Jackie had not been bragging at all, lower ultimate god rank techniques were indeed nothing to him.

Mikael’s whole body was trembling. He did not even dare to look up. He did not even have the courage to look at Jackie. He felt like his body was completely submerged in ice, and it was so cold that his whole body was frozen.

Josui was not much better. He seemed to have lost the ability to even think.

When Joaqim fell to the ground, he did not faint on the spot. Instead, he spasmed on the ground, writhing like a worm as he groaned in pain.

They knew Joaqim. If he was conscious, he would have never allowed himself to act in such a sorry manner. Joaqim had way too much pride for that.

The fact that he was in such a state meant that he was already at the limits of pain.

Josui shuddered as his hands trembled.

Was Jackie even human?

Could that guy really have an ultimate god rank technique?

That was absurd!

Were warriors from third-grade worlds that strong?

Josui gulped, and he even started to breathe frantically. His fear did not last that long. A gust of wind blew over, and he looked up.

At some point, the 50 other Soul Swords had condensed into a giant Soul Sword and quickly charged at him!

Josui shrieked as his face twitched in fear. He was so scared he was about to pee in his pants!

At that moment, he ignored everything as he turned around to run.

There was nothing he could do, his opponent was too strong. Even if he was the top disciple of a holy grade clan, he might not even be able to beat that guy!

What else could he do but run?

Alas, he underestimated Jackie's skill. The Soul Sword had the laws of space within, and its speed was doubled.

Josui frantically ran, but he only lasted a few seconds before the sword caught up to him.

The sword violently pierced into Josui's back. With a cry of agony, he fell to the ground.

Chad's jaw dropped, and his eyeballs were about to pop out of their sockets. He still remembered how Josui had been so prideful and disdainful.

Chapter 3503
Chad recalled how he and Josui laughed at warriors from third-grade worlds, deeming them worthless. They had been so harsh with their words, but in a shocking twist of fate, it was them writhing on the floor like worms.

It had not even been that long, but the situation was overturned too swiftly.

Chad's lips trembled as he recalled what Jackie had said before, and his words were etched into his mind.

Before the battle, he did not lack confidence. Chad even wondered if Jackie was crazy. After all, he believed so strongly that Jackie could not possibly beat two of them at once.

Chad took a deep breath. His hands constantly trembled, and he was so emotional that he was at a complete loss for words.

Jackie activated the laws of space, appearing next to Josui. At that moment, Josui was completely lost in the pain.

Jackie reached out and grabbed the golden keys from Josui's waist. Three golden keys shone brightly. Jackie held them all and looked at Josui coldly. Without any hesitation, he put them on himself.

Meanwhile, Mikael gulped as he looked at Chad, then at Jackie. At this very moment, he realized he could no longer escape.

He was in an incredibly awkward position at that moment. Chad and Rudy were to his left. He was in the middle while Jackie was to the right. Even though there was some distance between them, it meant nothing when taking Jackie's speed into thought.

Jackie would instantly appear next to him if he wanted.

Mikael's lips trembled slightly as a wave of calmness washed over him. After all, the realization of having no more options settled in his mind, and he could not even beg for mercy.

Chaos City was a place where death ruled supreme. If he died, they would be able to get rewards. Just from that, there was no point in him begging for mercy.

Beads of sweat formed on Mikael's head. He felt a chill in his heart as his whole body stiffened. His anxiety commanded his breathing, resigning himself to fate.

When he looked to the right at Jackie, he gritted his teeth and made a decision.

He was going to die anyway. He took out a spirit carving charm and held it in his palm.

When Chad saw that, he immediately shouted, "Jackie, he's trying to record how you look and transmit it! Stop him quickly!"

The spirit carving charm was a special array. It was so expensive that normal warriors could not afford it. The one in Mikael's hand was given by his father. There was no way he could have been able to afford it himself.

The spirit carving charm was special. It was similar to a sound transfer array but much more complicated. He could record a person's appearance and quickly send it to the person he wanted to. Mikael felt like he was about to die anyway, so he wanted to do something before he did.

He wanted to transmit Jackie's appearance, letting all the warriors from second-grade worlds know that Jackie was a bringer of disaster. He wanted them to take revenge for him!

The thought of this scattered his fear and calmed him, and he regained control over his anxiety.

Mikael's hands constantly moved as he formed seal after seal. The seals started to quickly flow in the air, and the spirit carving array quickly absorbed them inside. After that, there was an intensely bright light as the charm was burnt.

Chapter 3504
Jackie frowned, activating the laws of space again.

In just a moment, he appeared next to Mikael, but it was too late. The charm was already burnt, and Jackie's image had already been sent out as the charm turned to ash.

Mikael's lips curled up into a smile as he turned to look at Jackie.

He had a crazy look on his face as he sneered, "They'll avenge me for sure! They definitely will!"

The moment he said that, he slammed his fist onto his head, and an explosive force killed him.

Rudy stomped his feet on the ground anxiously, incredibly frustrated.

"That dog!" he snarled. "We should've killed him first! No, that would've been too nice for him, still… We should've slowly cut him into pieces!"

Chad sighed. It was too late. Jackie's face had been identified, and Mikael killed himself before they could do anything. Everything was finished, and the outcome could no longer be reversed.

Rudy gritted his teeth and said, "This guy really is decisive! He killed himself the moment he did what he wanted! He's bold, I'll give him that…"

Rudy practically hissed these words through gritted teeth in his rage.

Chad looked at Rudy and shook his head, saying, “I don’t think he was brave”

Rudy frowned, thinking about those words and admitting that Chad was ultimately correct in his assumption. He would have done the same thing had it been him in Mikael’s shoes, at least he would suffer less.

Rudy sighed as he walked to Jackie’s side and worriedly asked, “What do we do now? Do we need to disguise ourselves?”

Jackie looked at Rudy. With what happened, they would need to disguise themselves if they wanted peace of mind.

However, he shook his head after deliberating on the matter. He turned and walked to Joaqim and, reaching out, grabbed the three keys on Joaqim’s waist. This meant Jackie had seven golden rings on him.

Jackie deliberately held one key for the sake of attracting enemies while he kept the other six keys in Mustard Seed.

In total, Jackie had 13 keys. That number should be enough to get a good treasure, but it was still far from Jackie’s goal.

Chad walked to Jackie and looked at the golden rings around Jackie in admiration. He had given himself a goal before this. He wanted to get at least five rings for it to be worth it.

Jackie had gotten six rings so easily. With Jackie’s skills, obtaining 10 more would be all too easy for him.

Chad could not help but lament the gap in their skills.

Jackie turned to look at Chad, smiling wordlessly.

Rudy said, “Where do we go next?”

He was looking forward to what they would do next.

He had been rather worried when they first entered Chaos City and when he found out about the rules.

He wondered how many battles they would have had to fight to get even one key, but it seemed as though his worries were unnecessary.

Chapter 3505
As long as an individual was strong enough, keys would come to them with no sweat. It had not been that long, but Jackie managed to collect 13 keys.

Rudy believed that it was just the start.

Jackie took a deep breath and looked into the distance. “We’ll continue walking to the Stage of the Nine. It happens to be toward the middle anyway.”

Chaos City was like a huge circle. The closer to the center it was, the more people there would be. All of the warriors who entered Chaos City only advanced in one direction, which was the center.

The Stage of the Nine that was closest to them happened to be closer to the center compared to them. All they needed to do was to continue advancing.

After dealing with the three, Jackie and the others continued forward.

At that moment, Chad seemed to be a lot calmer as his worries were cast aside. With Jackie by his side, they were in no immediate, fatal danger unless they were unlucky enough and met a top chosen disciple from a holy grade clan or a gang of warriors from second-grade worlds.

Anything else would just be free kills for them.

After a while walking forward, Chad said with excitement, “We have about three kilometers to go! I can’t wait. I wonder what kind of treasure I’ll get with three golden keys? I bet the price should be over ten million. Otherwise, it won’t be worth me fighting so many battles.”

Rudy nodded. “I think so, too. A golden key won’t be so valuable on its own, but three should be enough.”

As the two of them talked, an explosion ahead of them went off.

The three of them were stunned, and they immediately headed toward the source of the explosion. The explosion was a distance away from them. They could see the shockwaves from the explosion but could not tell what happened.

Before the three of them could discuss what could have happened, more explosions happened. They could see energy waves of different colors, and it was obvious that a battle had taken place.

The three of them exchanged looks of surprise.

Jackie frowned. “Let’s go take a look! Two of you, be careful and follow closely behind me. If anything happens, leave me and run.”

Rudy and Chad nodded. There was no need to say anything at that moment. Jackie was the strongest among the three of them, and he could definitely buy them some time should anything dangerous happen.

The two of them would already be lucky enough to defend themselves. They had to run away while Jackie was buying them time.

They quickly advanced, and the closer they got, the more shocked they were. As they got closer, they could see countless figures moving around. It was an all-out battle with more than a hundred people.

The battle was incredibly intense, and both sides were fighting with their lives on the line.

To prevent anything unexpected, the three of them stopped about a kilometer away from where the battle took place, and they could see the situation clearly.

After observing the battlefield, Jackie determined that it was a battle between second-grade and third-grade worlds.

The warriors from third-grade worlds were on the left, while the other side was on the right.

The two sides looked incredibly furious. Attacks of various attributes clashed in the air, and the ground was full of craters.

Dust and energy flew everywhere, and the ground was littered with corpses. Fresh blood flowed all over like a river. It was a shocking sight.

Chapter 3506
Rudy covered his mouth. “What’s going on?! They actually started fighting!”

Back then, they had discussed the possibility of an open war between second and third-grade worlds.

At that moment, Jackie had determined that it would probably not happen. After all, the third-grade worlds all had their own plans, and even if they did not like the warriors from second-grade worlds, they would not start fighting so easily.

If they did, warriors from third-grade worlds would suffer a greater aftermath than those in second-grade worlds. Since that was the case, they should not have started an open battle so easily!

Jackie took a deep breath as he looked at the intense battlefield, not knowing what to do. Something unforgivable must have happened, or such an intense battle would not have happened. With another massive boom, Jackie saw a warrior being blown to bits. His arm had been split in two, and his other body parts were catered everywhere.

A few others were harmed by the shockwaves, but even so, the battle continued. No one stopped. Everyone was incredibly murderous.

He could vaguely hear people shouting.

“You despicable animals! Just because we haven’t fought back, you think we’re worthless?! Did you think we’re just livestock for you to do whatever you want with?! Let me tell you: Even if I die today, I’ll drag you down with us!”

“Who do you think you are?! Do you think you have more geniuses than us? We outnumber you by a great deal! When it comes to geniuses, we have no fewer than yours! You tortured us before, and we didn’t do anything about it. You came to Chaos City to do the same thing! I’ll make you people pay dearly for your transgressions!”

The warriors from second-grade worlds did not back down as they retaliated loudly.

“You’re right, you are livestock to us! We can kill and torture you as we please! We need a lot of Heartblood, so are we supposed to torture ourselves? Don’t talk about numbers”

“That’s right! We kill you because we have the skill! You don’t have the skills to kill us! Stop calling us despicable. You’re weaklings, so you should serve the strong. It’s your fate! You can’t escape it!”

Jackie immediately understood what happened.

It appeared the warriors from third-grade worlds had noticed that the warriors from second-grade worlds were torturing them once again.

The warriors from third-grade worlds could not accept the fact.

They were fine being killed, but they were not fine being tortured for Heartblood. The warriors from third-grade worlds were left alive to slowly be tortured until fear filled their bodies, when the blood essence in their bodies would rush to their hearts.

The more fear there was, the purer the Heartblood would be. It was because of that that they used such cruel methods of torture.

The warriors from second-grade worlds did not regard the warriors from second-grade worlds as humans at all. It completely angered every warrior from third-grade worlds. They had finally been backed into a corner.

The anger had accumulated far too great, and it was completely ignited.

The battle started, and it was incredibly intense. However, every warrior from a third-grade world had thrown aside all their own considerations, fighting this battle for their sake, and the sake of their own people.

Rudy's hands trembled as fury burned in him. "They're at it again! I thought they'd stop after we exposed their plans and not use such cruel methods again. I can't believe I overestimated them…"

Jackie sighed as he turned to look at Rudy.

His voice was cold as he remarked, "They have to open the Radiant Hall, and it needs a lot of Heartblood. Just like that man said, they can't do it to themselves, so we're the natural targets."

Chapter 3507
The moment that was said, Chad said in a trembling voice, "It's Quinton! Jackie, look! My elder disciple has been surrounded! Please, help him!"

Many people were on the battlefield, and it was hard to tell them apart. A few people were at the fringes of the battle as well.

Comparatively, they were more split up, and it was a battle between teams. Teams from second-grade worlds would face similar teams of warriors from third-grade worlds. The closest battle to Jackie and his companions was about 100 meters away from them.

Chad immediately spotted his familiar fellow disciples. Quinton led his disciples and was fighting a small team from a second-grade world in an intense fight.

Quinton's side was on the losing end, alas. They had been surrounded by a team of eight.

Chad could tell that their opponents planned on finishing them all-no survivors allowed. He panicked at that.

Quinton was responsible and did his role as the top disciple, protecting all the injured disciples. He himself fared no better, with all the wounds on his body, but he merely gritted his teeth and stood his ground.

Quinton knew that they were no match for their opponents; they were far too inferior skill-wise. Even if they had two or three more people, the outcome would not change whatsoever.

The leader of the team from the second-grade worlds was called Brian Delly, who hailed from a holy grade clan. He was highly ranked among chosen disciples and felt like Quinton was beneath his notice.

Quinton clutched his chest as he tightly held his weapon in his other hand. He had bloodshot eyes as he protected his fellow disciples, planning on fighting back until the end.

Brian laughed as he looked at them in disdain. “You’re planning on fighting until the end? Do you think you can drag us down with you? Forget about it. You think you’re worthy?”

“All you’re worth is being tortured by our hands. Even though we can’t get your Heartblood if we kill you like that, it doesn’t matter. We’ll get what we need. I still have plenty of chances to kill your other companions!”

Quinton and the others were furious when they heard this.

Kane, who was behind Quinton, shouted, “Let’s fight them to the end, Quinton! I don’t care about anything else. I don’t even care if I die. I want to make them pay!”

“That’s right!” sounded the resounding cries of his Quinton’s companions. “Who cares about death? I’ll take one down with me. If I die, I die! If this goes on, we’ll die somewhere else anyway!”

Quinton frowned, helpless at how fearless his fellow disciples were acting. He did not want them to die here, but there did not seem to be any other possibility at that moment.

He gritted his teeth and shouted, “You’re right. Very well! Let’s fight! We have to drag them down, even if we die!”

Brian and the others sneered at those words. In their eyes, the warriors from third-grade worlds were not even worthy of touching them. They would not give those warriors any chance to fight back.

They and these third-grade warriors were nowhere at the same level. As long as the second-grade world warriors were quick, warriors from third-grade worlds would not even last a few seconds!

Chapter 3508
Quinton and the others decided then and there that they would die together. They coldly looked at their opponents.

There was no other choice in that situation for them. Even if they had to sacrifice themselves, they had to injure their opponents in some form. They could not surrender as nothing good would come of it.

Quinton took a deep breath and composed himself. Nothing was left except for resolve.

He looked at Brian's mocking expression. Quinton knew what they were thinking, and he knew that they scorned warriors from third-grade worlds.

That did not matter. If they fought back with full force, they would be able to make their opponents suffer the consequences of such actions.

Quinton took a deep breath and shouted, "Hear me, brothers! We'll burn our blood essence and charge forward. Even if we lose our lives, we have to make sure they suffer for all their crimes against us. If we can only drag one of them down to hell with us, then so be it!"

All of them nodded, their eyes burning with resolute and sheer rage.

They were committed to dying for their cause when a familiar voice suddenly rang out, "Quinton, don't be rash! I've come to save you! They won't be able to hurt you!"

Hearing that voice, all of them looked to the source.

Quinton's lips twitched when he saw a familiar figure. He saw Chad waving at them frantically.

He frowned, immediately shouting, "Hurry and leave! Flee this instance! You're the only one left! You have to leave Chaos City!"

Their clan had sent in over 30 disciples, yet only about a dozen of them remained.

Chad had always liked to move alone like a lone wolf, ignoring everything and going around on his own.

It had been a few months since Quinton last saw Chad, and the irony was that they finally reunited in such a grim situation.

Quinton had thought that Chad would at least survive for their clan, but there he was.

Was that any different from suicide?

Not only did he not run off, he even remained and claimed he could save them!

Quinton was incredibly anxious, yet Chad actually sighed. He was so reliable regardless of the situation.

If Chad had been alone in that situation, he would have run for the hills. However, Jackie was with him. What he would have been afraid of was no longer that scary.

Kane frowned as his expression darkened. “What are you so excited about? Hurry and run! If we told you to run, forget about saving us! Do you think you’re unbeatable?!”

They were already resolved to die, and they did not want to drag another person with them. To them, Chad was like the last sprout of hope left. If Chad died as well, then the clan would be deeply affected after the Whirling World closed.

After all, the clan had sent all of their disciples with high potential inside the Whirling World. If no one was left, then a whole generation would be gone, and the clan would be greatly weakened.

Any survivor would be good. Even the disciples that were not friendly with Chad did not want Chad to act stupidly.

At that moment, they wanted Chad to abandon them. All of them were focused on Chad, and they did not even notice the two men behind him.

Chapter 3509
“Hahaha!” Brian cackled as he looked at Chad as though the man was a complete idiot.

Did this fool just say he would save Quinton?

Him, alone?

Was he planning on turning the tides alone?

That was absolutely hilarious!

The other warriors from second-grade worlds started to laugh as well.

Brian said as he laughed, “And how do you plan on saving them, brat? Are you thinking of facing off against more than one of us? Or maybe you plan on facing all of us? Do you think you’re the top disciple of a holy grade clan?”

The expressions of all who heard that changed.

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Brian with interest.

Chad looked at Brian hatefully and gritted his teeth.

He pointed at Brian and said, “Don’t think you can win this battle! It’s impossible! The third-grade worlds have talented people everywhere, and some of them are incredible leaders. If they gather, warriors from second-grade worlds will be powerless before their might!”

Chad had not been able to say anything like that before because he had never seen anyone that amazing from a third-grade world before. Even though he knew that third-grade worlds had unbelievable talents as well, he had never seen them. Ever since Jackie appeared, his courage was reignited.

When Brain heard that, he burst into laughter once more.

The other warriors from second-grade worlds were laughing in an exaggerated manner as well, all while sneering and taunting them.

“You warriors from third-grade worlds really know how to console yourselves. Leaders, you say? Talents? Those so-called talented leaders you have look ordinary to us. The second-grade worlds have true talents.”

“Just a few of them will be able to kill all of you. Just look around! See who has the most deaths?! I won’t waste any time with you. After killing you, I’ll deal with the other pests from third-grade worlds!”

The moment he said that, his eyes suddenly shifted toward the figure next to Chad.

This man had four golden circles around him, meaning he had four golden keys.

Brian raised an eyebrow, immediately focusing on Jackie and deducing afterward that he was no doubt from a third-grade world. If that were the case, Jackie would have to die as well, and those rings would be his.

Brian smirked as an excited look flashed in his eyes.

Chad had three circles around him, which made for a total of seven keys between the two of them. There were also the golden keys on Quinton and the rest.

The battle was incredibly profitable.

Brian looked at Jackie and said, “Not bad! Looks like you’re lucky enough to get four golden keys, but this luck is mine now. The two of you have seven keys in total. The rest will be given to my fellow disciples, but the ones you have are mine.”

As he said that, his smile was so wide it reached his ears. It was obvious how happy he was.

When his fellow disciples heard that, they widened their eyes.

Brian did not want the keys on Quinton and the others, and it was all theirs!

To them, these were glad tidings!

Chapter 3510
Brian's companions immediately gushed with flattery.

"Brian, you're so generous and heroic! We're so lucky to be able to work with you!"

"Thank you for your generosity! In the future, we'll be completely loyal to you!"

There were various words of flattery that Brian deeply enjoyed.

In truth, Brian was not that generous. He wanted to keep all the keys to himself, but he knew that he would lose respect if he did so. He might end up being stabbed in the back.

His fellow disciples were all cunning. If he took everything for himself, the consequences would be dire. Seven keys were already quite a lot, and the rest of them were not that much anyway. He would absolutely make sure he profited.

While Brian and his lackeys felt gratified, Quinton's side wallowed in despondence.

All of them frowned, cursing their situation.

Quinton did not know what to say at that moment. At Brian's words, the rest of them noticed Jackie as well.

Seeing as Jackie had been with Chad, and Jackie was from a third-grade world, Quinton could guess that the three of them formed a temporary alliance to get by. He knew Chad very well. If Chad had not been forced to, he would not have forced a team.

That was because Chad felt it was troublesome. However, when Chad joined a team, he would not mistreat his teammates.

Quinton took a deep breath and said to Chad helplessly, "Don't be an idiot. Hurry and flee. You don't need to care about us just make sure you survive!"

Quinton had no other thought than to make sure Chad managed to escape at that moment.

The further Chad ran, the better. He did not want Chad to come back at all. All he wanted was for Chad to remain safe until Chad could leave the Whirling World.

Chad naturally knew of Quinton's worries and thus emotionally yelled, "Don't worry, Quinton! I said I'll save you, so believe in that!"

He reached out and patted Jackie on the shoulder. "He can save you!"

Brian could not resist laughing again, feeling like they were clowns.

No matter how much he and his companions laughed, however, Jackie remained calm the whole time as he looked at Brian coldly.

Brian had four golden circles around him.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said, with a tone of disappointment, “Why do you only have four golden rings?”

Brian was trying to show his superiority in every way, so why did he only have four keys?

Someone as strong as him should have at least ten.

Brian suddenly stopped laughing at Jackie’s words. His lips twitched, wondering if he had misheard.

What did Jackie say?

Did he just ask why he only had four keys?

In such disappointment, at that?

Was that guy planning on killing him to take his keys, but lamenting that he had too little?

Brian’s lips twitched as he stared at Jackie. When he realized he was not mistaken, he did not know what to say.

What an arrogant man.

Was he crazy?!

When Quinton heard Jackie, Quinton widened his eyes as well as he looked at Jackie in confusion.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3511-3520 -

Chapter 3511
Kayn's lips twitched as he whispered, "Does this guy who's with Chad know what he's talking about…"

Quinton narrowed his eyes, "Let's not be in such a hurry to judge. Chad is not someone who makes rash judgments. The fact that he said that means that this guy definitely has some skills. Chad saw it for himself before, but I just don't know if those skills are enough to get us out of this."

Kayn widened his eyes as he looked at Quinton in exasperation, "Quinton, what are you even saying? Our situation isn't something just one or two people can help with."

"Unless this guy is unbelievably strong that he can beat two or three people by himself, no one will be able to save us. We shouldn't put our hopes in the two of them."

Quinton sighed, suddenly not knowing what to say.

Brian's closest friend, Andor, looked at Jackie in disdain, "Brat! You really don't know your place!"

Jackie completely ignored Andor as he looked at Brian, "You still haven't answered me. Why do you have four golden keys? Those disciples next to you even have three each. As their leader, you should have at least double what they have, so why do you only have four?"

Jackie looked at Brian in confusion. His tone was completely calm as if Jackie was in no danger at all.

Brian looked at Jackie coldly and started to laugh.

He narrowed his eyes and a cold look flashed on his face. It was as if Jackie was genuinely asking those questions.

Genuinely lamenting that Brian only had four golden keys completely trampled over Brian's dignity. That piece of trash from a third-grade world actually dared to talk to him like that.

The more Brian thought about it, the angrier he got.

He could not help but clench his fists, "Brat! I've seen people asking for death, but none are as suicidal as you! So what if I have four? Do you think you can take it for me? I've been busy with some tasks before this and did not have the time to fight for any golden keys, that's why I only have four. How dare you look down on me?!"

Jackie raised an eyebrow, saying casually, “I’m not looking down on you, I’m just curious. Whatever! Four keys are still four. This won‘t be the only battle anyway.”

Brian was even more confused by Jackie’s words.

Did Jackie know what he was saying?

Was there something wrong with his head?

It was like Jackie was an emissary sent to save the world, and would be able to turn the tables alone. Jackie spoke with a tone as if everyone was beneath his notice.

Brian was utterly speechless. Andor was even more furious.

He turned to look at Brian and said, “Brian! Leave this kid to me! I want him to know how hilarious his thoughts are!”

Saying that Andor pulled out his weapon, preparing to rush over. However, he was stopped by Brian.

Brian looked at Jackie, “Leave him to me! I want to teach this guy a lesson personally!”

Jackie’s words had thoroughly angered Brian.

Brian was someone who dealt with anyone who offended him on his own, so he would not leave Jackie to Andor.

Chapter 3512
Brian took a deep breath before he turned to look at Andor and said, “Help me keep an eye on them. Leave these two to me!”

Quinton started to panic when he heard that.

If Brian was fighting himself, then Chad would have no way to escape. After all, Chad’s skills were not even at Quinton’s level.

Brian was a chosen disciple of a holy grade clan. Whether it was talent or ability, he was far above any regular warrior. On top of that, he had been angered by Jackie’s words, and would definitely not hold back.

It would be incredibly difficult for Chad to flee.

Quinton’s lips twitched, already grieving the two of them.

Kayn could not help but curse, “What are these two thinking?! Do they know what they have done?! He asked them to run, but they refused. Do they think they’re heroes? That

guy next to Chad, what is that guy saying? Does he insist on thoroughly angering Brian?”

The other disciples next to Kayn cursed as well. The situation was already quite bad, but they still insisted on making things worse.

They did not know what Chad was trying to do at all. Quinton was the only one who kept on looking at Jackie. He kept feeling like Jackie was skilled. It was just that he did not know if that skill would be useful enough for this battle.

Of course, he did not voice any of that out and merely prayed in his heart silently that he was not mistaken.

Brian was thoroughly angered at that moment, and only had one thought in mind. He would show that brat what being truly strong meant!

He started to form seals. Quinton and the others panicked when they saw that Brian was attacking right away and immediately pulled out their weapons.

At that moment, Chad suddenly said, “Quinton, don’t fight! You still don’t know who will win! Just wait and see!”

Chad was incredibly confident as he shouted that. Even Kayn could hear the confidence in Chad’s voice.

Kayn’s lips twitched as he shot Jackie a meaningful look.

Could that guy really be so strong that he was good enough to face Brian?

However, Kayn had never seen Jackie before.

The strong warriors from all the third-grade worlds were known amongst them. After all, there were only a few dozen that were truly strong. None of them looked like Jackie at all. Kayn and the other warriors could not stop themselves from being worried, but Chad’s words stopped them from doing anything.

Since Chad said so, they would wait and see. A miracle might happen.

When Brian heard Chad’s words, his eyes lit up in mockery, “You really don’t know your place!”

At that moment, Brian no longer wanted to waste any time talking.

He formed seals with his hands that danced in the air. Suddenly, howling winds were heard as the surroundings dimmed. With Brian in the center, the surroundings turned gray, as if they had entered hell.

Winds were blowing at the dirt on the ground, and the surroundings turned blurry. Right after that, white figures started to appear from the ground. Those figures were human-shaped, but they were transparent as if they were just white shadows.

Slowly, the number of white figures increased. One could even see organs on those figures, but those organs were distorted.

The mouths were incredibly large, with two long fangs protruding out. They were like evil ghosts from hell.

Brian formed even more seals, and the ghosts seemed to have heard summons as they started to gather where the seals were.

Slowly, everyone started to hear cries of agony. There were those of men, women, and children. Various cries were heard. It was as if they were in hell. Brian let out a roar, and all of the ghosts gathered together and started to fuse into a massive sword.

Brian sneered and said, “My technique is the lower ultimate god rank technique, Evil Ghost Slash! For the sake of this technique, we’ve refined over a hundred souls to turn them into evil ghosts for my use! Brat, you’ll become one of them soon! I’ll take out your soul and refine it every day. You’ll be tortured like you’re in hell!”

Chapter 3513
Everyone started to shudder when they heard about the evil technique.

Brian was not human!

That guy was a complete monster. No ordinary person would use such a sinister skill. Many people must have died for Brian to use the technique.

In truth, death was not that hard to accept for warriors. Death was just death, but torturing the soul after death was something most warriors could not accept. It was not something anyone could do.

Jackie could not help but be affected by the sight. He took a deep breath and formed countless seals. This time, he would be slaying an evil monster!

That guy could not be allowed to live a moment longer.

That thought had just flashed in his mind when he heard Rudy say, “Jackie! You can’t just let him die like that. You should let him survive until the Whirling World closes!”

Rudy was practically shouting those words across. He never felt like he was some morally upright hero, but he could just not accept such cruel methods. He could feel those souls that were refined by Brian were probably all talentless and powerless warriors like himself.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, nodding after some thought.

Rudy was right, he could not just die like that. He should suffer first.

Jackie shot forward and started to form seals. A gray blade appeared in front of him.

Broken Soul Blade had tremendous soul attribute power within. Storm god rank techniques were just far above ultimate god rank techniques, let alone lower ultimate god rank ones!

The ghostly sword slashed right at Jackie. He did not even blink an eye as he pushed forward, shooting out the Broken Soul Blade.

Suddenly, the Broken Soul Blade clashed against Brian's technique. With a massive boom, the sinister howling intensified. It sounded like nails running through glass, and quite a few people covered their ears.

Brian's technique shattered in sudden.

The ghostly sword form from dark spirits was no match for the Broken Soul Blade at all.

In next second, the Broken Soul Blade completely consumed Brian's technique!

It happened in just a flash!

No one there expected the situation to happen so quickly.

Brian still had his pleased smile on his face, as if he would kill Jackie in one blow when the Broken Soul Blade appeared in front of him. His whole body froze as he felt a chill in his heart. His eyes widened.

His mouth opened slightly and he was full of disbelief!

He had actually lost so quickly, not even slowing down his opponent's attack! Brian shuddered, unable to accept the truth.

Yet, at that moment, he did not have the time to feel shocked as he immediately reacted.

He started to form seals again, and the sinister wind started to howl as the white figures stood in front of him as shields. As he summoned up those souls, he frantically retreated.

The moment the Broken Soul Blade clashed with the shields, Brian could hear clear cracks. He was shocked to notice that the shields had been absorbed the moment they touched the Broken Soul Blade.

Chapter 3514
After swallowing those souls, the Broken Soul Blade went right through Brian's chest.

Brian's technique was a lower ultimate god rank technique, and he was not even at the second stage.

Jackie's technique was a storm god rank technique. Even though he had not reached the second stage with it, there was still a world of difference between the two techniques.

Brian's technique was not a match for Jackie's at all. They were at completely different levels.

Evil Ghost Slash and Soul Sky were both soul attribute techniques. When Evil Ghost Slash touched Broken Soul Blade, it was immediately swallowed up. Evil Ghost Slash had not been able to fight back at all. The pain of his soul being ripped apart spread throughout his whole body.

Brian let out cries of agony and even started to roll around. His body constantly writhed as his muscles spasmed from the pain. It looked like he had lost control of himself.

In the end, he has not lasted more than three seconds.

When Broken Soul Blade's energy spread throughout his body, he could no longer control himself as he lost control of his true energy and fell to the ground.

The warriors below all had widened eyes and opened mouths except for Rudy and Chad. The others could not accept it at all. Brian was a chosen disciple of a holy grade clan. The title was not just for the show.

To be a chosen disciple of a holy-grade clan, one would need a lot of talent and skill. They needed to go through a lot of hardships to earn the title and stand over anyone. They needed to earn everyone's respect, but Brian was now in an incredibly pathetic state. Even with his full might, he had failed to stand up to a single attack from Jackie.

Jackie was just too strong.

It had shattered any of their expectations. Jackie was so strong that everyone widened their eyes, unable to accept it.

Andor and the others had been incredibly relaxed at first, waiting to watch the show. Yet, their bodies were completely frozen at that moment.

Kayn's lips twitched as his eyes widened, "Chad's teammate is so strong! What kind of skill is that?! He must at least be the top three disciples at a holy grade clan."

Quinton took a deep breath, nodded slowly, and then proceeded to shake his head. His eyes constantly moved as various thoughts flashed in his head. He was excited yet incredibly emotional. He was worried that what he saw was all a dream because it was far too unbelievable.

Quinton had thought that Jackie was strong, but he never expected Jackie to be that strong. Even Brian had not been able to stand up to a single blow.

Kayn blinked in confusion and said, “What do you mean, Quinton? Do you agree with me or not?”

Quinton took a deep breath and his voice trembled, “I agree that he’s strong, but I don’t think he would only be in the top three. Just think about it. Jackie’s attack had been so casual, and even though Brian had used his full force fueled by his anger, Brian was still no match for Jackie.

“He sent out countless souls and shields, but it was useless. They were destroyed by Jackie immediately. How strong could Jackie be?! I’m sure that he’s not just in the top three, he might even have the skills of a top disciple.”

As he said that, Quinton’s voice was trembling. Kayn nodded slowly. It was not like they had not seen strong and talented warriors, but it was the first time they had seen someone at Jackie’s level.

Chapter 3515
Hilariously, he had even doubted Jackie before and thought that there was something wrong with Chad, saying things that did not make sense.

Assuming that Chad did not realize the severity of the situation at all, it seemed like he was the one who was a joke. He had failed to see how exceptional Jackie was.

At that moment, the other disciples behind Jackie could no longer stay calm.

They finally recovered from their shock and started to ramble, “Quickly, pinch me! Am I dreaming right now?! How is this guy so strong? I thought he was just bragging!”

“It’s not just you. Everyone here thought he was bragging. When the duel started, I thought he was done for it, but instead, Brian was the one who fell! Just look at Brian’s sad state. He’s probably the one who believed in that guy’s words the least, and now he lost so badly.”

Everyone there had wondered if there was something wrong with Jackie when they heard his words. They assumed that he must be delusional, or he would not have said something so absurd.

He had even remarked that Brian had too few golden keys.

Everyone thought that it was too arrogant of Jackie to say that. He must have not realized what being a chosen disciple in a holy grade clan meant. Yet, it seemed that they were the ignorant ones.

Jackie's words came from the confidence in his skills!

If they were as strong as him, they would have said the same things.

Jackie then slowly walked over to Brian, who was constantly writhing on the ground.

At that moment, Brian could not even think straight thanks to the pain. His whole body was constantly twitching, and he could not process a single thought.

Jackie's lips twitched as he reached out and grabbed the four keys from Brian's waist.

He raised an eyebrow, "You said you were from a second-grade world and a chosen disciple of a holy grade clan. You have amazing talent and ability, so why do you only have four golden keys? You said you were delayed by some matters, so I guess I was just unlucky to have done all that only for four keys. What a pity."

To prevent any unnecessary trouble, Jackie had kept all the keys he had gotten into Mustard Seed, only leaving four with him. On top of those four keys, he had a total of seventeen.

Earlier, Jackie was just filled with pity. Someone so strong should have had ten keys at least. He sighed as he shook his head helplessly.

When others saw that, their lips twitched, not knowing what to say.

If Brian was aware enough at that moment, he would have spat out blood and fainted at Jackie's words.

Kayn's lips twitched, lamenting, "So that person wasn't trying to anger Brian. He really did think that Brian was useless."

Another warrior behind Kayn said, "He said that he was unlucky enough to only get four keys from Brian?! My god, it's so frustrating. We were happy enough to see a miracle just now, hoping that we could escape Brian and survive this battle, but this guy just thought about the keys Brian had, and even truly felt that Brian had too few keys with him!"

Chapter 3516
The more they talked about it, the more absurd they felt the situation was. They wondered if they were dreaming. Otherwise, how could the situation be so surreal?

The warriors from third-grade worlds finally had a new lease on life, and they suddenly felt a glimmer of hope for their future.

The warriors from second-grade worlds were incredibly worried at that moment. They no longer had any of the pride they had before, and they all looked like they were prepared to retreat.

Jackie suddenly turned around to look at Andor.

That guy had been so arrogant earlier and did not hold back with his words. Looking at how he was treated, that guy was probably strong, second only to Brian. Since that was the case, he needed to be dealt with next.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, not stopping for a moment as he charged forward.

He started to form seals as a hundred Soul Swords formed into one massive Soul Sword!

The scene caused the team from the second-grade world to panic. Jackie had attacked them without any warning.

At that moment, they were still in shock. Jackie’s decisiveness shocked them again, but their experience in battle quickly made them react. The pride they had earlier had been completely discarded. The only thing on their mind was to survive, so they hurriedly scattered.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, forming even more seals.

The Soul Sword split back up into a hundred. Clapping his hands together, forty Soul Swords merged into one, while the remaining sixty Soul Swords merged into three different ones.

Not a single warrior from a second-grade world was innocent in Jackie’s eyes. Their hands were all stained with blood. Looking down on the lives of warriors from third-grade worlds and torturing them to death. There was no way Jackie would let any of them go easily.

The Soul Sword formed from forty swords shots at the strongest one there, Andor. Jackie even applied the laws of space, so the attack would be much faster.

They were not that far in the first place. Jackie had attacked so quickly that the opponents did not have any time to react.

Andor clenched his teeth and started to run away frantically. At that moment, he did not even know where he needed to run, he just wanted to distance himself from Jackie.

When he heard the sound of howling wind, Andor let out an angry scream in his heart!

‘That guy is a monster!’

Why were they so unlucky to meet him?!

Brian might not be at the top of the top among the chosen disciples, but he was not at the bottom either. Compared to Brian, he was not as strong. Brian had lost so badly, so there was no way he could do anything. He could not think about anything else but to run away as far as possible!

He suddenly felt an incredibly fast source of energy going for his back which made Andor start to sweat. He soon realized that the situation was bad, and he had to put his life on the line.

Andor clenched his teeth and started to ignite his blood essence.

The blood essence in a warrior’s body was incredibly limited. Once it was lost, there was no way of getting it back.

At the very least, he would no longer be able to get stronger. In the worst-case scenario, he would die. However, burning his blood essence could still increase his skills temporarily.

Andor had burned his blood essence but did not even think about fighting back. Instead, he sped himself up. Unfortunately, the Soul Sword had the laws of space incorporated. It was horrifyingly quick. Even after the blood essence increased his speed, Andor was still not fast enough.

He suddenly felt a chill on his back, and an intense pain burst out!

He looked back slightly. Before he could even see his injuries, he noticed a fellow disciple of his not far away with a gray sword on his back.

Chapter 3517
There were not many energy fluctuations from the sword, but it contained immense destructive power.

That fellow disciple cried out in agony, and started to fall, collapsing on the ground and then dying.

When Andor saw that, he felt completely hopeless. He saw that the wound on his back was from a similar gray sword as well. The pain was just as unbearable!

“Ah…” Andor let out a cry of agony as he fell to the ground.

Jackie had instantly killed four in one go. It completely stunned everyone there!

Quinton looked around and the anger he had suppressed surged up.

He turned to look at his fellow disciples, “What are you waiting for?! Kill them! Those dogs never thought of letting us off!”

Kayn and the others had been forced to a desperate corner. They had planned on dying with their opponents after being thoroughly humiliated. That feeling was like a fire that completely ignited in their hearts. They could never forget it.

Looking at them flee like dogs, they were naturally happy to give chase! They wanted those animals to feel how it was like to be desperate!

They immediately raised their weapons, planning on killing the few warriors that were still alive.

Jackie frowned and immediately stopped them, “Everyone, come back! Don’t go over!”

Jackie was already a true hero in everyone’s eyes. He was a genius that no one could compare to.

At those words, everyone stopped. All of them turned to look at Jackie.

Quinton looked over, puzzled, “Why shouldn’t we give chase? The ones remaining aren’t strong at all. We can definitely kill them all!”

The hatred had accumulated too much, and Quinton and his men could not bring themselves to let those men off.

Jackie sighed as he slowly walked in front of them.

“Don’t chase the poor. Those people are running right into the fray. If you give chase, you’ll head right into the whirlwind of battle. In the most central location, warriors are dropping like flies. If you go in, you might end up getting caught up in it all.”

Quintons’ expression stiffened. He was incredibly reluctant, but he had nothing to say.

Jackie’s words were reasonable. Those men were smart.

For the sake of getting away from Jackie, they had thrown themselves into the center of the battle. The main battlefield was a complete mess filled with corpses everywhere. They would get caught if they were not careful.

The warriors there did not care who they were killing. Rushing in was definitely not wise. However, Quinton was still unhappy. Those despicable men had forced them into such desperation.

Brian had even said that he would not let Quinton and his men die easily. Brian would make them pay a final price, extracting the Heartblood from all of them. It was as if the warriors from third-grade worlds were just livestock.

It was only when they were forced into a corner did they think of dragging their opponents down. Even if they lost their lives, they would bring down whoever they could.

Those arrogant warriors from second-grade worlds would be dragged down to hell with them. Quinton was incredibly unhappy to see them get away.

Chapter 3518
Even without Quinton saying anything, Jackie could feel the hatred in Quinton's heart.

At that moment, Chad had walked over to Jackie's side. Even though Chad was not that intelligent, he could still feel Quinton's rage and reluctance.

If Jackie had not appeared, Quinton would have been dead.

However, Quinton needed to keep his calm at that moment. The battlefield was no playground. If they rushed in blindly, they could very well die. Even if they were filled with hate, they needed to survive for revenge.

Chad said, "Quinton, calm yourself down, those men won't be able to survive! Isn't Brian still alive? Andor's not dead either. The both of them just can't control themselves at the moment. You can do whatever you want with them, just don't rush in. It's too dangerous over there."

They were at the edge of the battle, far away from the center. However, it was still not that far, and as they spoke, they constantly heard explosions coming from within.

Various energies were clashing in the air, and techniques of various attributes constantly fought against one another.

Death was everywhere. Just turning over, they could see someone exploding into pieces, and another person having his head cut off.

Quinton sighed, knowing that he had been too impulsive earlier. His hatred had clouded his eyes, and he had lost his judgment. Thankfully, he was already composed.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, “Hurry up and tend to your injuries. You can do whatever you want with those two. This is a battle between worlds. After you’re done here, you’re needed on the main battlefield!”

Quinton nodded.

Rudy looked at the intense battlefield with a serious expression.

He turned to look at Jackie, and his voice trembled, “This is horrible! When will the battle end? How will we know when It ends?”

The participants numbered in the hundreds, and the death toll was already at three digits. There were corpses everywhere, and both sides were already filled with killing intent. Rudy felt like the battle would never end if this continued.

There were still warriors from various worlds who were constantly joining in, so the scope of the battle constantly expanded. If that continued, Rudy could not imagine how many more would die.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, “There are only two things that will end this battle.”

Rudy’s ears perked up as he looked at Jackie earnestly.

The others looked over and waited for Jackie to explain as well.

Jackie sighed as he said seriously, “The first situation will be if the balance of the battle is lost! There are more and more warriors from third-grade worlds, and the second-grade worlds had suffered too many losses for there to not be any other possibilities.”

“Then the warriors from second-grade worlds will realize that they need to leave the battle! Then, the battle will end. Of course, there’s the opposite as well. The third-grade world’s warriors start to diminish to a number far lower than the warriors from the second-grade world. Then, the ones who will suffer will be us.”

“The second situation will be for truly strong warriors to appear. Those warriors will be enough to tip the scale!”

As he said that, Jackie paused for a moment, thinking for a bit before continuing, “This battle might be fought among hundreds of warriors, but truly strong warriors won’t need too long to turn the tide…”

“Among the hundred here, the truly strong warriors should only number less than twenty. Those warriors are the true main characters of the battle. The fact that the battle is being dragged on means that they are fighting on equal ground at the moment.”

Chapter 3519
Rudy frowned, feeling like he only understood half of it.

Rudy agreed with the two possibilities of how the battle would end, but he could not understand how the battle was in the hands of so few people. He felt like it was just a completely chaotic battle.

Everyone was already filled with rage. No one cared who was weaker or stronger, they just wanted to see blood being spilled.

About five hundred meters away from Jackie, and the heart of the battle, there were over ten warriors gathered there. Strangely enough, all of them were not attacking at all.

Just slightly outside of that center, everyone was fighting without regard for their lives, but the ones there were not fighting at all.

Chulanne clutched his chest as blood flowed out. He had been careless earlier and had been struck by Thamus. Luckily, it was just a slight injury that would not affect the overall battle. However, the situation was not looking good.

The warriors from third-grade worlds were slowly losing their ground. If their top disciple did not arrive soon, then they would probably end up losing soon enough and more people would die.

Harold anxiously helped Chulanne up as he said, “Are you alright?”

Chulanne shook his head slightly as he glared at their opponents.

The center of the battle was naturally split into two sides. The warriors from third-grade worlds were in the east while the warriors from second-grade worlds stood in the west. The two sides faced each other, and both sides had a murderous aura about them. Neither side was willing to give an inch.

The battle was not just for them, but for the worlds that they belonged to. Hundreds of lives had been lost, so it could not end easily. Both sides seemed incredibly imperious. Chulanne was the leader of the warriors from third-grade worlds, he felt like his burden was incredibly heavy.

If the warriors from third-grade worlds lost, then he would just die as a punishment. Even though the situations seemed even, the warriors from third-grade worlds were slowly losing ground.

Harold frowned, “How long more does he need to get here?”

Chulanne sighed as he looked into the distance. He had used the sound transfer array earlier, and the eldest disciple had said that he was hurrying over. Yet, there was no indication of his location or how long he would need.

They were forced to clench their teeth and hang on.

Thamus was the leader of the warriors from second-grade worlds this time. He was the strongest person there. He was a top-five chosen disciple, and he was from one of the top second-grade worlds.

His status as a chosen disciple meant a lot more than a chosen disciple from Golden Continent. He was no regular warrior from a second-grade world, and he was very confident in himself and this battle.

Even though they had lost quite a lot on their side, it was still at an acceptable level. There were a lot who had died this time. After the battle ended, he could look for those warriors who were still barely alive to collect their Heartblood. It would be worth it.

Cadian came from the same world as Thamus. The two of them were from the same clan. Cadian was only slightly weaker than Thamus and was ranked slightly lower. However, faced with these warriors, he was still one of the strongest ones there.

Chapter 3520
Cadian scoffed and said, “Thamus, what do you think those pieces of trash from third-grade worlds are thinking right now?”

Thamus smiled, his face full of disdain as he said coldly, “Do I even need to guess? They have their thoughts written on their faces. Aren’t they just waiting for reinforcements? It looks like the guy they are waiting for is quite strong. There might even be more than one…”

“But there’s something wrong with their brains. They can ask for help, so can’t we do that too? Even though I can’t mobilize the strongest ones, our top disciple is coming over. As long as he’s here, it’ll be much easier to deal with these pieces of trash.”

Cadian nodded.

He had an excited look on his face, “These simpletons really think that they’ll have a right to do anything after this battle, that we’ll be afraid of them. What a joke. Compared to those that died, the Radiant Hall is far more important.”

“We’ve expended so many resources to open the Radiant Hall. How could we give it up so easily? They’ll always just be livestock to us, for us to do whatever we want with.”

Thamus smiled, very pleased with himself, “He should be here in just a few minutes. We’ll let them be happy for a bit. They won’t be able to laugh anymore soon.”

The moment that was said, the explosions around them weakened a bit. The sounds of shouting got louder. A few of them turned to look and saw that a small group of people had gathered together in the chaos.

A one-eyed warrior shouted at the group of warriors from third-grade worlds, “It’s you! Stop putting on an act! Don’t think I don’t know it’s you!”

Jackie sighed helplessly. He already had a mask on, not wanting to be recognized. However, he was still recognized.

For the sake of ending the battle quickly and so the warriors from third-grade worlds could win, Jackie led Quinton and the others toward the center of the battle. He was quite well-known among the warriors from the second-grade worlds.

Golden Continent and Sacred Water Continent practically all had Jackie’s image in their hearts. To prevent himself from being attacked en masse, Jackie had put on a mask before entering, but he was still recognized.

The one-eyed man said, “My fellow disciple was just careless enough to die to you. I thought you’d be more careful after your image was transmitted, and you wouldn’t dare come here. I can’t believe you’re so bold. I really benefited this time!”

When that was said, the one-eyed man stared right at the circles around Jackie’s body with his one working eye. To not expose his secrets, Jackie had not put the four keys into Mustard Seed in front of everyone.

At that moment, there were eight golden rings around Jackie. It was incredibly eye-catching.

He then raised an eyebrow, smiling coldly, “Which one is your fellow disciple? I’ve killed so many warriors from second-grade worlds. How am I supposed to know which one he is?”

Jackie’s tone was calm and casual. The one-eyed man was furious when he heard that.

He clenched his teeth and shouted, “Brat! How dare you act so arrogantly! Don’t think you can do what you want in front of us just because you’re a little skilled! I’ll make sure to kill you today!”

In truth, the one-eyed man did not care about taking revenge for his fellow disciple. He only cared about the rings around Jackie, the eight golden keys. To everyone there, each key was incredibly valuable.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3521-3532 -

Chapter 3521
Eight golden keys would yield quite a valuable treasure, so a lot of them were quite tempted by the sight.

When the one-eyed man said that, the other warriors around him laughed.

One of them straight up said, “Stop trying to act like you’re such a nice person. You’re just after this guy’s eight golden guys. You just didn’t want to look bad. Do you think you’re worthy of getting those keys? So many people are targeting them! This guy’s keys won’t be yours!”

The battle was continuing, and Jackie’s appearance was just a distraction that caused the fights to temporarily stop. However, many of them knew very well that it was just temporary. After the one-eyed man was mocked, he stared at the person angrily, unwilling to admit it.

He wanted to argue, but he was interrupted by someone else, “Stop with that nonsense! Anyone capable will get those keys. If you have the skills, then go fight over it yourself!”

Jackie was quite exasperated. He was still standing right there, but everyone was talking about how they would distribute the keys he had. Jackie felt quite amused.

Quinton and the others raised their eyebrows. None of them said another word.

Those people really needed to look at themselves in the mirror if they wanted to take what belonged to Jackie.

The warriors from third-grade worlds had temporarily reached a consensus to work together, so naturally, none of them would try to take Jackie’s keys. The earlier discussions were all from warriors from second-grade worlds.

Chad scoffed, “They really are ignorant. How dare they try to even touch Jackie? They really want to die!”

Chad’s words were only heard by a few people next to him, so they did not gain that much attention.

The warriors from second-grade worlds were still trying to fight over Jackie’s keys. At that moment, they heard a boom from afar. Everyone looked over to see a golden glow speeding over.

Chulanne said emotionally, “Robert! He’s finally here!”

When the warriors from third-grade worlds heard that it was Robert, they were incredibly emotional.

Jackie knew very little of the third-grade worlds. After all, he had always acted alone. Even if he had worked together with the third-grade worlds before, he had never asked about the strongest warriors from third-grade worlds.

“This is great! Robert is finally here. Everything will be fine now. Those dogs are going to die! They pushed us back for so long, it’s time for us to fightback! They won’t be able to get out unscathed this time!”

“That’s right! I was still wondering if one of the strongest will come to save us. Even if Robert isn’t the best among them, he’s still more than enough for this battle!”

Robert was like a pillar of strength to the warriors from third-grade worlds that were gathered there. He slowly descended, and everyone started to calm down.

Jackie raised an eyebrow, looking at Robert curiously.

Listening to everyone’s discussions, it seemed like Robert was among the strongest warriors from third-grade worlds. It was just that this was the first time Jackie heard of his name. He had never heard anyone mention the name before, but from the expressions, it was as if Robert was someone everyone should know.

Chad gulped as he said in a low voice, “I can’t believe it! I thought they didn’t care about us at all!”

“When we were being pushed down, those people acted like they did not see anything. They never helped us fight back. I thought that, even if all the warriors from third-grade worlds were slaughtered, they would just look on from the top, acting like they did not know anything and see anything.”

Chapter 3522
Quinton turned to stare at Chad, “What kind of nonsense are you talking about? The situation further in is even more complicated. I heard that the fighting there is already at a stage where there’s no winning. No one is willing to give in, and more people are dying.”

Chad raised an eyebrow, clearly not agreeing with what Quinton said.

If it was before, Chad would have not dwelled on the problem. Yet, ever since he got to know Jackie, he felt like a lot of things had been cleared up.

Was Jackie weak?

Even compared to those self-proclaimed heroes, he was no slouch.

Yet, Jackie never looked down on him. Jackie would not ignore any cries for help and let the warriors from third-grade worlds be oppressed.

Comparing the two sides, Chad could no longer hold it in.

“The situation there is even more complicated, but it’s not like they can’t help us at all. They clearly just aren’t willing to. The moment they have to give anything up, they just don’t care about us.”

“Even though we can’t say that what they’re doing is wrong, they keep on putting themselves on such a high pedestal. They just give us all sorts of orders, and they punish anyone who doesn’t follow what they want! They abuse their power but are never responsible when they need to be. Who do they think they are?”

As he said that, Chad never lowered his voice, and the people around them could hear everything clearly.

Quite a few of them looked around, but no one voiced out to agree or deny it. Everyone knew the situation, but no one wanted to talk about it. If they were heard saying anything, the consequences would be bad.

Chad did not care at that moment, he felt like they could do whatever they wanted to. He just needed to voice out his thoughts.

Quinton anxiously pulled Chad’s arm, “Shut up! What are you talking about?! Do you think you’re qualified to talk about this?! The strong have their own things to do. You’re not them. You wouldn’t know.”

Quinton was trying to stop Chad.

Chad raised an eyebrow, deciding not to continue for Quinton’s sake, but he was still unhappy.

Rudy looked at Robert and raised an eyebrow, whispering to Chad, “What’s this about the inside and outside? Are the stronger warriors all inside?”

Chad nodded, “The inner region is the main battlefield for fighting over rings. I heard some of them even have fifty rings on them. Compared to the inner region, the outer region isn’t worth anything. They wouldn’t easily come to the outer region, and would only fight over the keys in the inner region.”

“Even if the outer region is suffering heavy losses, and even if we’re currently going through a large-scale fight here, to the strong, it’s just as simple as a few people dying. It’s nothing worth thinking about…”

As he said that, Chad paused.

There was a serious expression on his face before he added, “I’m actually very surprised that Robert is here. With how he is, he would never have come here so easily. Something must have happened inside, or he must think that this battle will affect his own profits…”

Rudy nodded.

Chad’s words were very reasonable. Those so-called strong warriors never bothered with anything unless it concerned themselves. Otherwise, they would not care about the deaths of other warriors from third-grade worlds.

Chad narrowed his eyes slightly as he continued, “Even more despicable is the fact that they just casually issue orders whenever they think we’d be useful. It’s as if we’re just their slaves.”

Chapter 3523
“When our lives are at stake, they’d just casually ignore it. They would not interfere unless it affected them. To them, the number of deaths is not significant enough for them to bother with.” Chad said that with rage in his eyes.

When it came to those who called themselves strong, he had a lot of negative opinions about them. Every time those stronger warriors needed them, they would appear and act like they were superior.

When the regular warriors needed the stronger warriors, they would act like superiors and not care about the death of regular warriors at all. The two of them whispered to each other for a long time, and Quinton stood there, frowning.

He reached out and grabbed Chad’s arm, whispering, “Can you please be quieter? Stop saying whatever comes to your mind. Don’t forget, there are eyes and ears everywhere. If what you said gets out, those people will end up targeting you. Do you think you’ll be able to escape the consequences?”

Chad sneered, not caring at all, “Let them if they want. Do you think I’m scared of them? When we need them, they’re never around. When we don’t need them, they appear in front of us to show off. It’s disgusting.”

Quinton frowned as he clutched Chad’s arm tightly, “Stop with your nonsense! Keep these words to yourself in the future! Don’t say it out loud!”

As they were arguing, the battlefield had become incredibly tense.

When Robert landed, Chulanne and the others rushed over to Robert. All of them looked at Robert like he was the light at the end of the tunnel.

Chulanne was finally able to relax.

He exclaimed, his eyes appearing reddened, “Robert, you’re finally here! If it were any later, I don’t even know if I’d be able to see you again. Those despicable guys are trying to push us down, torturing us to no end. They are so cruel! They don’t treat us as human beings at all!”

Chulanne became increasingly emotional as he spoke. His voice was turning hoarse. He had three fellow disciples who had just left the squad for two hours, but when they saw them again, they were already corpses, mutilated beyond belief.

Even though they were dead, their eyes were still wide open. The fear in their eyes was evident. It was not the first time warriors from second-grade worlds did something like that. On their way, they saw countless corpses in similar horrible states.

Those warriors from second-grade worlds treated them like livestock to be killed at any moment. All of the anger that had been accumulating exploded, starting this massive battle.

Robert raised an eyebrow as he coldly looked at Chulanne, ”Don’t they do this often? Do you not know about it? Since you know, then you shouldn’t be splitting up. Warriors from third-grade worlds should just gather together, then they would not have any chance to do anything.”

“What’s the point of fighting this battle? What can you prove? I always thought that you were meticulous when you did things, and I thought you would never do anything impulsive. It looks like I was wrong, you’re also one of those people who let your emotions get to your head.”

Chulanne was stunned at those words. His eyes widened, and his lips trembled. He wanted to explain, but he was stopped by Harold.

Chapter 3524
Harold pursed his lips, hurriedly saying in a respectful tone, “You’re right, Robert, but we didn’t have a choice. Too many of our fellow disciples have been tortured to death, and they even formed groups to rob us. We’ve already been forced into a corner. If we don’t fight back, we’d have to just let them do whatever they want to us.”

Robert narrowed his eyes as he looked at Harold.

He had a hint of disdain in his voice, “What do you mean you were forced into a corner? There were clearly other things that could have been done, but you chose this. You just insist on causing us more trouble.”

After he said that, Robert turned to look at the warriors from second-grade worlds, ignoring the rest of them.

Chulanne's hands were trembling from all the emotion whirling in him. His initial excitement had turned into shock and frustration.

He felt like he was about to be filled with so much frustration that he would explode.

What did Robert mean by those words?

Was Robert blaming him for starting this fight and dragging Robert into it?

Chulanne's fists clenched tightly, and all the muscles on his body were incredibly tense as well. The wound on his chest even widened because of his heavy breathing, bleeding again.

His face was even beginning to pale from the anger. Harold held Chulanne's wrist tightly, not wanting Chulanne to act rashly.

Chulanne turned around, and his eyes were full of rage. Harold naturally knew why that was the case. However, they could only remain silent then.

All Harold could do was shoot Chulanne a look to hold himself back. They needed to rely on Robert at that moment!

Jackie was not too far away from them. He could clearly see Chulanne's every action. Even if he could not hear what they were saying, he could still read the situation from Chulanne's expression.

He raised an eyebrow. Those so-called heroes really were not great people.

It was just like Chad said, when those people were not needed, they loved to show off their power. The moment they were needed, they were the first to run away, coming up with various excuses for their actions. They were never at fault, it was always someone else.

Even if so many warriors from third-grade worlds had died, it was just a simple number in their eyes.

Thamus narrowed his eyes, "I was wondering who it was, so it's you. It looks like things aren't going that well inside."

Thamus' words had another meaning behind them. Others did not understand, but Robert did.

Robert smirked viciously, "I thought you would be completely terrified when you saw me, I can't believe you can put on such a good act. Aren't you afraid that I'm here?"

Thamus' face froze as he angrily shouted, "What nonsense?! Who's the scared one? You should be the one pissing in your pants! Don't think you'll be able to turn the tables alone! Who do you think we are? Don't you see how many warriors from second-grade worlds are gathered here?!"

Robert scoffed, "Don't think I don't know what you're trying to do. Don't worry, I won't let you pull off your petty tricks!"

He started to form seals immediately after which produced sounds of explosions within his hand. Balls of fire formed around his hands, and the surrounding air seemed to dim.

Everyone was illuminated by the orange glow.

Jackie looked up slightly at the immense pressure, pursing his lips with some surprise.

Chad said in surprise, "So it's the middle ultimate god rank technique, Crimson Meteor."

Chapter 3525
Thamus frowned as a reluctant look flashed in his eyes. He could not help but look to the back, wondering where his eldest disciple was.

Robert could see what their plans were and knew they were waiting for reinforcements.

He would obviously not give them the chance as he wanted to deal with all of them before the reinforcements could arrive.

Thamus once again looked back at the orange-red glow. Robert's technique was known to warriors from both the third and second-grade worlds.

He used a lower ultimate god rank technique, so he was no match for Robert. None of the second-grade world warriors there was a match for Robert at all.

Thamus clenched his teeth and said to Cadian, "We have to work together later! Stall time as long as possible! Otherwise, we'll all die here!"

No matter how intense the earlier battles were, they had been on an even playing field. Robert's appearance had shattered that balance. The technique he used was a middle ultimate god rank technique. It was enough to fight even two of Thamus.

On top of that, there were the other warriors from third-grade worlds as well. Robert would just need to deal with the stronger ones, and the others would have no ability to fight back. Only death would await them.

Cadian's hands trembled as he said with worry, "Thamus, how long do we need to stall for?"

Thamus's lips twitched, clenching his teeth as he said, "For as long as possible!"

Both of them started to form seals as they pushed out all the true energy in their bodies, planning on fighting Robert to death.

At that moment, an icy blue ray descended from the skies.

Suddenly, the temperature dropped. Thamus widened his eyes as he turned to look behind him.

A man in blue robes rushed over from afar. The man seemed to have a vicious look, and his whole body was covered in icy blue energy. The person was incredibly quick, arriving in front of everyone in a flash.

Thamus said excitedly, "Horace, you're finally here! If you were any later, these pieces of trash would have tried to pull something!"

Horace smirked as he said coldly, "Don't worry, the pieces oftrash from third-grade worlds will never amount to anything in front of us. They'll always be our prey!"

Looking at who it was, Robert's expression stiffened.

That nonchalant attitude of his had completely evaporated as he said, "It's actually this guy!"

Horace was someone who was among the stronger warriors from second-grade worlds. He was ranked in the top three of his holy grade clan!

His skills were incredibly powerful. All the warriors present had heard of Horace before.

Quinton stiffened, "We're done for! I can't believe it's him…"

Jackie raised an eyebrow as he looked at Quinton curiously. After that, he looked at the warriors from third-grade worlds around them. None of them looked happy about the situation.

When they saw who had arrived, their excitement completely disappeared. All of them had stiff expressions. It seemed like Horace was not weak. He was definitely stronger than the arrogant Robert.

Chapter 3526
Even Robert's expression stiffened.

With his hands, Horace formed ice-blue seals that danced and fused in the air. He pushed his hands forward, and an icy-blue light appeared behind him.

A massive snowflake that was about three or four people tall appeared. It had countless seals etched on it, and the snowflake slowly spun behind Horace, who had a sinister smirk on his face.

When everyone saw the scene, they froze.

Someone said in a low voice, “A world avatar! Horace managed to form a world avatar! We’re doomed! We’re done for now!”

Rudy merely stood by the side, puzzled as he heard everyone talking about world avatars, the power of avatars, and ice avatars.

He never heard about world avatars before, but listening to how everyone was speaking, it seemed like it was a big deal.

To not make himself seem like a complete fool, he immediately looked at Jackie with curiosity.

Jackie let out a smile as he patted Rudy on the shoulder and explained in a whisper, “World avatars are basically manifestations of special powers after absorbing the laws of heaven and earth into your body. Forming a world avatar will strengthen your body and increase the explosiveness of your techniques.”

Rudy was still puzzled as he listened on, but he more or less understood the gist of it. It was like giving a boost to one’s skills.

If that person was using a lower ultimate god rank technique and mastered it to the first stage, the technique would be as strong as if he had mastered it to the second stage with the help of a world avatar.

Rudy frowned and asked, “It looks like a world avatar should be quite hard to learn. Even after meeting so many people, it’s the first time I’ve ever seen anyone using one.”

Jackie nodded, continuing to explain, “Forming a world avatar is the equivalent of being enlightened in the laws of the world. This Horace is using an ice avatar, which means he was enlightened in the laws of ice, condensing it within him to form the avatar…”

“Comprehending the laws of ice requires a high level of understanding. You need to be in the right place at the right time as well. Regular folk will never get to achieve this. Even some warriors at the divine solidifying realm won’t be able to successfully form one if they’re not talented enough.”

Rudy blinked. In truth, even if Jackie did not explain the last few sentences, he would understand regardless of how difficult it was.

Even with so many geniuses within the Whirling World, they had only seen one person who ever mastered it in so long. It was obvious how difficult it was.

That explained why everyone was so shocked. Even Robert's expression darkened at that moment. With a world avatar, the battle suddenly became much harder for him.

Robert also had some difficulties he could not voice out. He could not reveal all his emotions on his face, or it would greatly damage his dignity.

No matter how strong his opponent was, he was a leader among the third-grade worlds. If he revealed his fears, it would greatly damage his reputation. If the matter ever spread to others, he would not be able to accept the embarrassment.

The beautiful seals constantly fused around that massive snowflake. It let out a vibrant and light blue glow, completely surrounding Horace with the light.

Horace's smirk grew malicious. Even if Robert was able to keep his composure, he could still see the fear that he so desperately tried to hide. He loved seeing those expressions on the faces of his enemies.

It stroked his ego to great lengths every time he saw it.

Chapter 3527
Horace never thought of third-grade-world warriors as people at all. In fact, he saw them as mere lambs for slaughter, so these 'lambs' trying to fight back against him was a tremendous insult to him.

He would use the cruelest methods to punish the lambs who tried to retaliate, he wanted them to regret even thinking about it. He loved seeing fear, panic, and pain on the faces of his enemies.

Horace got more excited.

"Hahaha! Are you afraid now? You should keep your cool, because even more horrifying things will come. You haven't seen anything yet!"

To the third-grade-world warriors, Horace was like a wild beast that crawled out of hell, and they felt chills just looking at him.

Meanwhile, warriors from second-grade worlds were all smiles, evidently elated.

With Horace around, everything was in their grasp with no possible overturn of events. They would be triumphant and trample on the warriors from third-grade worlds, who would surely submit their golden keys to them.

A warrior from a second-grade world loudly gushed, “Horace is amazing! Those third-grade-world warriors are already too scared to even say anything! They look like they’re about to piss in their pants!”

“Exactly! They were so arrogant before this, but now, they look like they’re about to cry. It’s just the start! You’ll quickly know how it feels to be in hell! You’ll never be able to fight back!”

Thamus let out a deep breath as he looked at the world avatar behind Horace with admiration and security. He wondered when he would ever be able to form one.

Rudy was in no mood to bother thinking about how the people around him were feeling. His thoughts were fully on the world avatar. To him, no one was as talented or as capable as Jackie.

A world avatar might be something incredible to most of them, but it should not be that hard for Jackie to master. However, Rudy was sure that Jackie did not have one.

His eyes widened as he asked, “Jackie, why don’t you have a world avatar? Could it take a lot of time to master?”

Rudy had tremendous confidence in Jackie and felt like he did not have a world avatar purely because he did not have the time. It was not a matter of talent at all.

Jackie raised an eyebrow and said with a smile, “A world avatar doesn’t just need time and talent to learn. You need to be in the right place at the right time as well. You need to find somewhere dense with the laws of your attribute.”

Rudy looked at Jackie, still not understanding what he meant.

Jackie continued to explain, “To comprehend the laws of the world and condense a world avatar, you have to be ridiculously talented. Even the laws of the world can be split into attributes. For instance, the martial techniques I’m learning are of the soul attribute. If I want to learn the laws of the world, I’d need to head to somewhere incredibly dense in soul attributes.”

Rudy grew even more confused as he listened, but Jackie did not get frustrated as he merely worded things better for his companion.

The laws of the world encompassed a lot of things.

Comprehending the laws of the world did not mean understanding everything, but only a small part of it.

Chapter 3528
Everyone had attributes they were good at, so when choosing the laws to comprehend, they would usually choose the ones they specialized in.

Jackie used Horace as an example.

Horace was well-versed in ice techniques, so it was only expected that he chose to comprehend the laws of ice and naturally formed an ice avatar.

Only then did Rudy understand the gist of it all.

Understanding the laws of the world merely meant understanding a certain attribute. That was because the laws of the world encompassed everything. No one could ever understand everything, so they were forced to choose one, which was what they were best at. That way, they could be enlightened to a certain degree and form a world avatar.

Jackie patted Rudy on the shoulder and continued, “World avatars are separated into nine stages. Horace probably only managed to learn the first stage.”

Rudy blinked, asking curiously, “If you form a world avatar and reach the first stage as well, whose avatar would be stronger?”

Jackie smirked slightly and said with absolute confidence, “Me, of course. The powers of various avatars are different. Not only do laws naturally interact with each other to affect their power, but the purity of various avatars is different as well, and it affects the power.”

“This guy might have a world avatar, but it’s not that pure. Even if he steps into the second stage, he won’t be able to beat the first stage of my avatar.”

The moment Jackie said that, Rudy relaxed.

Jackie had not formed a world avatar purely because he had not found a place with the laws of the soul. Only if he found a place like that would he be able to absorb the laws of the soul that formed in the world, successfully condensing a world avatar.

To Jackie, there was no such thing as lack of comprehension. After all, he had the memories of the ancient seniors.

He never had a problem when it came to comprehending anything. Those ancient heroes had reached the ninth stage of the world avatars when they were alive.

With all that experience in front of him, he just needed to slowly advance, and he would be able to form a world avatar.

Jackie sighed helplessly. “It’s just a pity that I haven’t found anywhere like that. Compared to the five basic attributes, the laws of the soul are hellish to understand. It’s incredibly rare for any natural place to have them too.”

As he said that, he lamented, “I wonder if I can find anywhere like that in the Whirling World.”

The Whirling World was incredibly vast. It was a completely isolated space and was different from regular worlds. Jackie did not know if there was anywhere with natural laws of the soul.

Jackie forgot to whisper the last few words amid his lamenting, and Quinton and the others had heard it all.

Quinton turned and said excitedly, “There is! Of course there is! There even is one in Cloud City!”

When Jackie heard that, his eyes widened, turning around to look at Quinton.

Quinton, seeing Jackie’s anxious expression, cut to the chase and answered, “There’s somewhere called Cloud Valley in Cloud City. It’s filled with various laws. Quite a few warriors enter and end up staying there for one or two months to use those laws to form world avatars. There’s somewhere rich with laws of the soul as well! It’s at the western side.”

Chapter 3529
After Quinton explained things, Chad added, “Horace never mentioned successfully forming a world avatar before. He suddenly brought it out, so I think he must’ve just formed it not too long ago. I feel like he must’ve formed it in Cloud Valley.”

Jackie took a deep breath. It had been something he had been worried about for a long time.

He had been worried that he would not be able to find anywhere with the laws of the soul, but there was one such place in Cloud City after all! It seemed like his next stop would be that place.

He needed to form a world avatar before concerning himself with anything else. With the help of a world avatar, his skills would be much better. Then, he would be even more confident when the Radiant Hall opened.

As they talked, the battle was starting to take place. The two reinforcements were incredibly strong, but Robert was severely doubtful of himself. After seeing Horace’s world avatar, he felt like Horace would not let him off if he lost to him.

If he died, they would start to slaughter all the warriors from third-grade worlds, which would spell the end of the third-grade world warriors. He could even imagine how terrible the situation would be.

Chulanne clenched his fists, lacking confidence as well, but alas they did not have any other way out of the situation. He had hoped that Robert would be able to defeat Horace. After all, without them actually fighting, Chulanne did not want to judge who was stronger so quickly.

Horace looked at Robert coldly. “I’ve never liked you. You even dared to steal our keys before this! Looks like you’ve got some guts! I’ll use this chance to properly deal with you before I deal with the rest of them. All of you will die by my hands! You won’t even have a chance to struggle!”

As he said that, he started to form seals again.

A crescent moon suddenly appeared above Horace, and the moon emitted an ice-cold glow.

Horace scoffed. “The technique I’m using is the middle ultimate god rank technique, Frost Moon Slash! With the ice avatar, I’ll be able to use this technique to the strongest! Unless you’re using an upper ultimate god rank technique, you stand no chance of surviving.”

The moment that was said, Robert gulped.

His technique was a middle ultimate god rank technique as well, but he did not have a world avatar, so he could only use the technique to the second stage.

Horace was probably at the same level, but with the world avatar’s help, his position was elevated to a whole new stage.

Robert’s lips twitched, realizing how much of a dangerous situation he was in.

The warriors from second-grade worlds were akin to hungry wolves. In their eyes, he was just fresh meat that they could, at any moment, rush in and go for the kill. Any moment of carelessness might cost him his life.

Various thoughts surfaced in Robert’s head, and he felt a chill over his body.

He turned to look at Chulanne and the other third-grade world warriors behind Chulanne. All of them were looking at him with hope, as if he was their guiding light.

Yet, he found it hard to accept those looks at that moment.

His lips twitched as he made a decision. His true energy circulated in his legs before he stamped forward, shooting himself into the air.

As his companions hopefully watched on, he immediately turned around and ran, not even sparing another glance to the warriors from third-grade worlds beneath him.

Chapter 3530
Everyone watched on as Robert flew away, unable to react or utter a word as some jaws slackened in surprise as well.

Chulanne's eyes looked like they were about to pop out of their sockets. Looking at the retreating figure, he finally reacted.

Robert was a complete coward. When the situation grew dire, he tossed all of them aside and left!

He did not even bother saying anything and merely shot them a glance!

Slowly, the rest of them started to react as well. The warriors from second-grade worlds burst into laughter as they jeered, "This guy actually ran! He ran just like a dog!"

"What could he do if he didn't? Was he really planning on facing Horace head-on? As if! He's just a pest from a third-grade world. Even if he has some skills, he's just slightly better than the rest of his pesky companions. He's no match for Horace at all!"

"He'd just be waiting for death! He doesn't want to die with the rest of them, so he decides to flee. Honestly, he made the smartest choice."

Chad's lips froze. He was absolutely furious. "That dog left us and fled on his own! He dared to do that! He was all smug as if we were the ones dragging him down. The moment he saw that he'd lose, he turned and ran! This is absolutely absurd!"

Chad's hands were trembling in anger as he breathed heavily.

It was just too much. The warriors from second-grade worlds were despicable, but Robert was even more so compared to them. He was absolutely disgusting.

Chad, meanwhile, felt like he was going to gag. Jackie, too, was at a loss for words. Everything just seemed too surreal.

He thought that Robert would immediately attack, but Robert actually turned around and ran, not even bothering about his reputation!

It was such a despicable, shameless act that all the warriors from third-grade worlds were plagued with sorrow. No matter how loudly the warriors from second-grade worlds were laughing, there was nothing they could do.

Horace was speechless. He could have chased after Robert, but he remembered his task.

Robert came second. Dealing with those who were fighting back was the most important thing to be dealt with. If he chased after the other party, things might end up ruined, so he controlled himself.

Horace's lips twitched. "He really is an embarrassing fool, through and through. I even thought he was skilled. I can't believe this…"

Chulanne was so furious that he was about to faint.

He clenched his fists tightly as he said through gritted teeth, "That dog! He dared to say that we gave him trouble! He acted like he was our savior, but he left us behind and fled at the sight of danger! How despicable!"

Even the mild-mannered Harold cursed, "Vermin! Just you wait! If I survive this, I'll make sure you pay!"

Everyone hated Robert to the limits at that moment. In truth, they already knew what awaited them, but they were just too furious at how Robert had abandoned them so easily.

Horace did not even see the warriors from third-grade worlds as humans. To him, even those who stood at the top of the third-grade worlds amounted to almost nothing.

Chapter 3531
Rudy, on the other hand, was not as angry as everyone else from third-grade worlds. He was merely disgusted at Robert's behavior and abhorred those like that.

He remembered how everyone looked at Robert with so much hope. Anyone who had just a bit of kindness in their hearts would never have done what Robert did.

Rudy's lips twitched as he said, "This guy's heart must've been fed to the dogs, or perhaps he was just a dog all along. How could he do something like that?"

The warriors from third-grade worlds merely felt despair and hopelessness.

They could see how ruined their future was. These second-grade-world warriors would never let them off the hook, and they did not want to be killed off just like that.

They could scatter and flee, but it would be too tragic and dishonorable.

Chulanne took a deep breath before he suddenly shouted, "I don't know about you, but you can run now if you wish. It's fine to run, and it's fine to stay as well!"

“I’ll stay and fight these despicable men until I draw my last breath. Even if I die, I won’t go down without taking a few of them with me!”

Chulanne’s loud proclamation reached the ears of every warrior, and his words even sparked a fiery hope within them.

“That’s right! Even if I die, I must drag them down with me! It’s just death no matter what I do! They’ll get to us anyway, so I might as well die with honor!”

Even though a few of them wanted to leave after losing all hope, most of them had reached their breaking point and would rather die than live on the run, being worried about being killed at any moment.

Horace started to laugh out loud as he looked at Chulanne in disdain. “You’re still thinking about taking us down? Do you think an ant like you can even do that? I won’t deal with the rest of them for now-let me kill you first!”

“Come at me then!” roared Chulanne. “Don’t think that I’m afraid of you!”

Horace started to form seals with his hands, and the crescent moon in the air got brighter.

The ice avatar behind Horace was putting a large amount of energy into the crescent moon. The Frost Moon Slash grew fuller with energy until it looked like it was going to explode.

Chulanne narrowed his eyes slightly. He had dismissed the thought of death. He knew that he would not be able to survive if he fought Horace, but he no longer cared about that.

He started to form seals with his hands, wanting to burn his blood essence when all of a sudden, a figure suddenly rushed out from the crowd.

That person was forming seals with his hands, and a broken blade appeared in front of him, containing dense amounts of soul energy.

That person was Jackie!

Before everyone could react, he jumped out from the crowd and rushed right at Horace.

Horace frowned in surprise at the sudden appearance. “Another suicidal brat!”

It was not that difficult for Horace to kill one or two of them at all. He sneered as he shot the crescent moon right at Jackie!

Jackie’s expression was calm as if the attack was beneath his nofice.

Everyone’s eyes widened at the sight. Chad was starting to shake in nervousness. He was confident in Jackie, but that did not mean he could not worry. After all, Horace wasjust too strong. He even had a world avatar!

Chad took a deep breath. “He’ll be fine! Horace is no match for Jackie!”

Quinton and the others next to him had their fists clenched as well.

Jackie was their final hope!

Chapter 3532
However, other than a few of those in third-grade worlds, the others did not know who the one rushing forward was at all.

All of them felt like Jackie must have been forced to the point of insanity and wanted to end his life quickly. Otherwise, he would never have rushed forward so blindly.

As those thoughts floated in everyone’s minds, Jackie’s Broken Soul Blade clashed against Horace’s Frost Moon Slash.

As these two techniques came to blows, a series of explosions were heard.

Two intense energies clashed in the air, trying to devour each other. Shockwaves were produced, and the warriors closer to the center were blown back by the energy. The clash was too powerful, and everyone could even see a small energy cortex being formed at the center of the clash.

Everyone’s eyes widened as they looked to the middle.

In the middle of the clash, a sudden shout was heard by everyone.

Everyone perked up unblinkingly. Even with the explosions, everyone could hear that Horace was the one who shouted.

What happened?

Why was Horace so shocked?

He sounded as though he was surprised.

The next second, a cry of agony was heard as a figure shrouded in a faint blue glow started to free-fall. With a boom, that person plummeted to the ground!

Everyone’s eyes were about to pop out of their sockets at that moment, because the one who fell from the air had not been the hotheaded man who rushed forward but Horace instead.

Whatever world they were from, Horace was a transcendent figure to all warriors. Horace was far stronger than them, and they would never be able to catch up to him.

Not a single warrior there was a match for Horace, but the scene in front of them indicated that Horace had lost!

“Hah! Is the one who’s on the ground Horace? Have I gone blind? Am I hallucinating? How could he have lost to that guy?”

As that was said, he paused, not knowing how to continue.

Someone around could not help but say, “Why is he on the ground? Did his technique backfire on him?”

The person could only think about it that way. After all, he could not believe that someone had been able to beat Horace. In just one strike, Horace’s attack crumbled, so they wondered if Horace’s technique rebounded on him.

That was the only excuse that person had to calm himself down from the shock.

At that moment, it was not just one person who was full of disbelief. Every single person had a face full of disbelief, including Chad. This was far too unexpected.

Even Horace, who had been so arrogant and strong, was suddenly defeated in one blow by someone who appeared out of nowhere.

He was writhing on the ground like a worm, not getting up even after so long.

Was this real?

They could not even believe it. They felt like they were dreaming.

Jackie slowly landed on the ground as he glared at Horace, who was on the ground and clutching his chest.

It was not just the warriors from them, even Horace had no idea what had happened.

The two techniques clashed, and it never seemed like an even battle from the start. Jackie’s technique broke right through his, and that broken blade quickly shot right at him, rendering him unable to react.

To him, Jackie was not beneath an ant.

The fact that Horace was even bothering to deal with Jackie should already be considered as honoring Jackie, but Horace ended up losing so badly!

That broken blade contained the power to devour souls!

Thankfully, Horace was skilled. The moment the blade touched his chest, he swiftly summoned up all the true energy in his body to shield his chest. Seconds later, however, he heard a cracking sound from his chest as the power of his ice avatar was slowly devoured!

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3533-3534 -

Chapter 3533
Even if he expended all the power in his body, Horace would still fail to deflect Jackie's gray blade.

It broke through his defenses and pierced his body. The pain of his soul being torn apart caused him to cry out in agony as he fell from the air.

Horace was someone who placed a lot of importance on his dignity. As long as he could still control himself, he would not have let himself look like that.

However, facing Jackie's power, all he could do was push all the true energy in his body to fight against that energy. Otherwise, he would not live to see another day!

Horace clutched his chest and trembled, staring right at Jackie. "Who are you?! Where did you come from?!"

Anyone as strong as him should not have been here. They should have been fighting in the inner region.

Why would they have much time to spare and come here?

The person in front of him was someone he had never seen before either. When it came to the strongest warriors from third-grade worlds, he should have at least seen recordings or drawings of them, even if he never met them before.

He had no idea of the man's identity.

He was so sure that he had never seen the person before, so where did this man come from?

Jackie let out a laugh as he quickly walked to Horace.

Horace's heart was beating rapidly as he started to crawl backward frantically, shouting, "Stop right there! Don't come any closer! Don't think you can do whatever you want just because you defeated me!"

"I have other cards up my sleeve. If you push me into a corner, even if I have to burn my blood essence, I'll fight you! You'll end up injured, no matter how strong you are! Nothing good will come for you!"

Horace's eyes went wide as he tried to puff his chest. In truth, however, Jackie could see the fear he so desperately tried to hide.

Horace was afraid. Even though Jackie's attack had not killed him immediately, Jackie still managed to harm Horace's soul gravely.

Without miracle-working medicines, he might never be able to improve anymore in his life.

Jackie let out a laugh as he said in a nonchalant manner, "Do you think your threats will work on me right now?"

Every other mini-battles stopped as everyone looked in his direction. Whatever world the warriors were from, all of them felt like everything seemed like a dream.

Warriors from second-grade worlds were already deflated. Their eyes started to dart all over as a sliver of apprehension appeared in their eyes.

Thamus and the others, who had been smiling earlier, suddenly found themselves staring at Jackie. Even though they still held their weapons tightly, it was obvious that they were filled with fear and anxiety.

Cadian stood behind Thamus and said in a trembling voice, "Thamus, who is this person? Where did he come from? I remember he came from the crowd, so it must mean he's been here all the time…"

Chapter 3534
As that was said, Cadian's mind was a complete mess. He found himself scrambling for words as his anxiety skyrocketed.

Everything that happened overturned the scenario once again, all too swiftly.

Thamus' expression was dark.

With a sword in hand, his eyes reddened. "I don't know! Regardless, he's from a third-grade world, which means he's against us… Have you seen him before? We've all seen the images of all warriors from third-grade worlds that are slightly famous, but I've never seen this guy before. This has to be my first time…"

Cadian nodded before he suddenly had a thought.

He recalled something important as his voice raised, "Is this Jackie?!"

Everyone's eyes widened at the question.

Some never heard of Jackie before, but the others had Jackie's name etched into their minds. Warriors from the Golden Continent and Sacred Water Continent, in particular, greatly suffered due to Jackie.

With Cadian's words, the short silence shattered as an uproar occurred among the warriors.

"He's Jackie! He might be wearing a mask, but I know that figure anywhere! The mask only covers half his face. From his lower face and his technique, I'm sure this is Jackie!"

Those who never heard about Jackie started to ask around, wondering who he was and why those who knew of Jackie were so excited. Those who knew of Jackie suddenly gossiped, telling everyone about him with their own flair added in.

Everyone started to understand that Jackie was no simple person.

Cadian knew of Jackie because he had a good friend from the Sacred Water Continent. After Jackie had pushed them back so badly, his friend told him all about Jackie.

Jackie was from Hestia, a continent considered to be on the bottom of third-grade worlds, and none of them even bothered to rank any warrior from Hestia highly.

Chaos City had 50 third-grade worlds and 20 second-grade worlds within. Compared to before, there were just too many strong warriors within. The fact that most of them did not know who Jackie was was only natural. After all, Jackie only ever interacted with three second-grade worlds before.

Cadian told Thamus about Jackie in the quickest way possible.

Thamus took a deep breath as he looked at Jackie with a different expression, shocked at the fact that someone so strong appeared from such an insignificant third-grade world. Even Horace with his avatar was no match for Jackie.

It was obvious how strong he was. He had seen his prowess and noted that Jackie did not use an avatar.

It was possibly because Jackie did not think Horace was worth using an avatar on at all, or that Jackie did not have an avatar yet.

Regardless, Jackie's strength was already etched into his mind. Horace's whole body was trembling, partly because of the pain, and partly out of fear. He had heard the discussions around him and realized that Jackie was a monster.

Even though the Golden Continent and the Sacred Water Continent were not among the best second-grade worlds, the fact that Jackie managed to push two worlds down on his own was enough to state his abilities and talents.

Horace lamented, "Curse my luck!"

He felt like he was just insanely unlucky to meet someone like that.

Jackie smiled. “Not bad. You have twenty golden keys with you. It looks like the inner region must be a nice place…”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3535-3536 -

Chapter 3535
Jackie's words felt like a nail was hammered into Horace's heart.

This brat viewed him as a mere treasure chest of golden keys!

Horace raised his voice and said, "Let me go, and I'll act like nothing happened! You can do whatever you want with them! If you insist on coming for me, you'll pay the price. Don't think that…"

Before he could finish, Jackie vanished from the spot, much to Horace's horror as his eyes widened.

Something was wrong.

He frantically retreated, but the next second, Jackie appeared in front of him with a dagger in hand.

The moment he looked up, Jackie raised the dagger and stabbed it right into his throat. Blood spurted everywhere, and Jackie calmly avoided the splatter.

Horace did not even get the chance to cry out in agony before he died.

Jackie sneered. He would not waste his time listening to this man nor would he let that man escape. Even before Horace died, he would never have expected that Jackie was not just incredibly strong but could use the laws of space too!

After having dealt with Horace swiftly, Jackie calmly looked at the warriors behind him.

At that moment, a few of them could not even speak.

Chulanne finally let out a sigh of relief, recovering from his shock. Everything happened too quickly, and it seemed too surreal. He thought that he was going to die, but he had been saved by someone so monstrously strong.

Robert, who only knew how to act superior moments before his death, seemed like nothing compared to Jackie.

Chulanne was too emotional. Suddenly, tears filled his eyes and he started to cry.

Harold was not much better. He was so sure that many warriors from third-grade worlds would die with them, but Jackie descended like a god and saved them.

Harold’s hands shook as he said to Chulanne, “Chulanne, we’re saved! We don’t have to die. It’s time for these dogs to pay!”

Chulanne nodded emphatically as he said, choking on his tears, “Finally, we won’t be toyed with anymore! We can finally fight back!”

The moment that was said, Jackie shouted, “What are you waiting for? Leave the two in front of me! The rest will be up to all of you! Don’t let a single one of them run away!”

Jackie’s words stirred the hearts of everyone there.

All of the warriors from third-grade worlds suddenly had a boost of morale. They summoned up their true energy, and the battle continued!

Jackie already had his eyes on Thamus and Cadian.

The others could run away, but he could not let the leaders run. It was obvious how many warriors from third-grade worlds had died at their hands without even needing to hazard a guess.

Jackie was no dispenser of justice, but he had basic kindness. Those who did not view warriors from third-grade worlds as humans at all should not be allowed to live!

He shot forward, charging right at Thamus and the rest. They were incredibly scared and immediately turned around to run!

Chapter 3536
At that moment, they had nothing else on their minds except for their own survival.

The warriors from second-grade worlds had always been the aggressors anyway, so they did not have that much hate in their hearts. They just thought about their own benefits.

The warriors from third-grade worlds had been forced to a level where, even though they could still run, they had all abandoned the thought of living such a pathetic life. They had been forced to the point where they would rather die while dragging their enemies with them.

Back then, the warriors from third-grade worlds had already hit rock bottom. The warriors from second-grade worlds were not in the same situation. They were never tortured to death, and they had always been the ones throwing their power around.

The moment they saw that they had no way of winning, they naturally thought of running away first. They did not care about anyone else but themselves.

Thamus retreated frantically. He immediately attacked anyone that was in his way, no matter what world they were from!

He raised his sword, “Don’t stand in my way!”

He slashed his sword forward, not even looking back as he continued forward. Cadian was even more ruthless, constantly slashing his sword in front of him, worried that anyone would stop him and delay his retreat. At that moment, he did not care who it was.

Anyone who stood in front of him would die!

There was suddenly a river of blood as countless died and got injured. However, those people had not been able to run that far away. In just a few moments, Jackie caught up with them and did not hesitate to attack!

A hundred Soul Swords condensed into two massive ones. Each one shot right at their hearts!

With those stabs, the two Soul Swords violently penetrated their backs.

The pain of their soul completely swallowed their thoughts as the two of them shouted out in agony. They immediately stumbled.

Jackie deliberately spared their lives, continuing to pursue them. The two of them were the main instigators of everything. He would not allow them to die so easily, so Jackie wanted to keep them alive until the end. Without a strong pillar to lead them, the warriors from second-grade worlds fell like flies.

Jackie had sucked away all of their confidence.

Most of them ran away without fighting back. The warriors from third-grade worlds would naturally not let them off as they started a frantic pursuit.

Chulanne and the others had reddened eyes. Before this, they had been forced into desperation by the warriors from second-grade worlds. If Jackie had not appeared, the warriors from third-grade worlds would have already died.

Hatred and anger piled up in their hearts, and they exploded at that moment.

Chulanne raised his hand, “Warriors from third-grade worlds, listen to this order! No one is to let any of these dogs go! We’ll let them have a taste of pure suffering!”

At that moment, all the warriors from third-grade worlds were already going crazy. Their hatred and suffering had clouded their rationality. They did not care about anything else.

They just wanted to make the warriors from second-grade worlds pay, to make them feel pain.

With Jackie at the helm, the warriors from third-grade worlds were much safer.

In the next hour, most of the ones who died were from second-grade worlds!

Finally, the warriors from third-grade worlds had won the battle. Even though a small number of warriors from second-grade worlds managed to flee, it was a negligible number. Most of them had died there, and the corpses piled up into mountains.

A little creek made up of blood had formed there. Many had lost their lives.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3537-3538 -

Chapter 3537
Jackie took a deep breath.

From that moment on, the warriors from second-grad e worlds would have to think about the consequences before they did anything despicable. They would not dare to treat warriors from third-grade worlds as livestock anymore.

Not long after, Jackie and Rudy bid their farewells with Chad and the rest, leaving by themselves.

Before they left, Chulanne and the others expressed their immense gratitude.

Jackie shook his head, saying it was nothing. He never liked the warriors from second-grade worlds anyway, so he had been completely willing to help them.

He had earned quite a bit from the battle. Most importantly, he had managed to gain a lot of keys. There had been a total of over a hundred keys there, but Jackie merely took only forty-one keys, leaving the rest to everyone else.

Rudy had something to say about that.

He whispered to Jackie, “You were the key to this battle. Without you around, the warriors from third-grade worlds would have been the losers. Why would you split the spoils evenly with them? You should have taken the majority of the keys. At least, you should have taken eighty!”

Jackie smiled and shook his head, “This is already a lot. After all, there are so many of them there. If I took eighty keys in one go, it would be too immoral. I don’t want to do it either. We have more chances in the future. The inner region is even more interesting than the outer region. There are more chances to get golden keys, so there’s no reason to be fixated on this.”

Even though Rudy still felt like Jackie had taken too little, he knew that Jackie had always acted however Jackie wanted to. Since Jackie had said that, Rudy decided against saying anything else.

Chad had wanted to continue following Jackie, but Jackie still rejected it after some thought.

In the end, he only trusted Rudy. Even though Chad had some skills, he would just be a burden if they continued advancing. After all, the ones in the inner regions were all

incredibly strong warriors. He would only be able to protect Rudy, another person would be too much.

Jackie's goal was the centermost point of Chaos City, so he did not bring Chad along in the end.

After leaving the main group, Rudy was in a good mood. He followed behind Jackie and continued walking forward as they chatted.

He then raised six fingers.

He waved them in front of Jackie, "I counted it all, and you have sixty -two golden keys right now! With so many golden keys, you'll definitely be able to get an incredibly amazing treasure, but I don't think you'll be exchanging them immediately, right? You should just accumulate another thirty or forty."

Jackie turned to look at Rudy, shaking his head before he said, "I was adjusting the direction just now. Even though we're still moving toward the inner region right now, we're going slightly off-center. We're going toward the southeastern side."

Rudy widened his eyes, looking at Jackie in confusion.

Jackie smiled and explained, "That's because there's a stage of the Nine about three kilometers further ahead."

Rudy was stunned at that.

It turned out they were going toward a stage of the Nine. They had been aiming for one of them while they were advancing with Chad anyway. They only stopped because of the massive battle. After dealing with that, Rudy had thought that Jackie had decided against going to the stage.

Jackie patted Rudy on the shoulder and said, "I wasn't planning on going to the stage of the Nine before this, but I suddenly acquired so many golden keys. After finding out how complicated the situation is in the inner region, I'll need to get even stronger to gain more benefits. So, it's better to get my treasure first."

Chapter 3538
Jackie had already thought things through before he started moving. Rudy nodded, feeling like Jackie's words were reasonable.

The two of them continued advancing for another three kilometers and saw the stage of the Nine from afar. The stage was about ten meters wide and was adorned with bright crystals. It looked like a large transfer array.

The two of them arrived in front of the stage, and Jackie said to Rudy, "Wait here."

Jackie then walked up the stage. Possibly because of how many warriors had been in the battle earlier, both of them had thought that there would be a lot of warriors around the stage.

Yet, they noticed there was no one there when they arrived. It spared quite a lot of trouble. Jackie took out all sixty-two keys and put them all at the center of the stage.

The stage suddenly glowed white, and the sixty-two golden keys fused into a golden liquid, flowing into the stage of the Nine. A sliver of information appeared in Jackie's mind.

Jackie's body stiffened before he let out an expression of pleasant surprise. The stage of the Nine was quite kind. It did not randomly give out prizes, but would let the warrior choose what attribute they wanted the prizes to be.

Jackie chose the soul attribute without any hesitation.

The stage of the Nine let out a golden glow. After the light disappeared, three treasures appeared in front of Jackie.

Rudy was incredibly excited when he saw that. Rudy had never seen any of the three and did not even know what they were called or what attributes they were.

Rudy said excitedly, "You got all of them? You managed to get three treasures in one go. That's not bad!"

Jackie smiled and shook his head, explaining, "I only get to pick one out of the three. It's not that amazing."

He then looked at the three treasures, pointing at them from left to right, "This pill is called the Seven Soul Nurturing Pill. It's an amazing holy-grade pill worth an exorbitant amount of spirit crystals! I might not be able to afford it even if I used everything I had."

"The one in the middle is the Nine Soul Herb. It's worth an incredible amount as well, and the last one is a Soul Crystal. You can't even find them in third-grade worlds. You can only buy them in second-grade worlds. They're worth an incredible amount as well."

All three of those items were amazing treasures.

Jackie wanted all of them, but he was forced to settle for one with the keys he had. Even though Jackie did not talk about what they could be used for, the price was enough for Rudy to understand how incredible they were!

Rudy took a deep breath and said excitedly, "It's a pity that you can only pick one. If only you could take all of them."

Jackie raised an eyebrow, saying firmly, “Don’t worry. As long as I have enough time, I’ll be able to get all of them.”

It was just the beginning. He had not been in Chaos City for that long. He even planned on staying for a week in Cloud City next, going to the Cloud Valley. A week would be enough time for him to gain enough golden keys.

After thinking about it for a moment, Jackie placed his hand on the Soul Crystal.

The others were incredibly amazing as well, but compared to the other two objects, the Soul Crystal was much more useful to Jackie at that moment. The Seven Soul Pill was used to repair injuries to the soul but Jackie did not need that at the moment.

The Nine Soul Herb might also increase the power of the soul, but it was not as effective as the Soul Crystal. In the end, Jackie chose the Soul Crystal. The Soul Crystal lit up, and Jackie could feel the energy flowing within when he held it.

When Jackie chose the Soul Crystal, the other treasures immediately disappeared.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3539-3540 -

Chapter 3539
Jackie took a deep breath before he walked down the stage of the Nine.

Rudy was already getting quite anxious waiting below. His eyes were fixed on the Soul Crystal in Jackie's hands.

Jackie sighed, "Let's find a safe place for me to absorb it before we do anything else."

The inner region was different from the outer region. The fights there were more intense, and death happened more frequently. There were not just enemies, but various beasts as well.

Hearing the other warriors from third-grade worlds talk about the inner region, the beasts inside were all incredibly large, and could easily kill warriors.

The chances of getting golden keys would be greatly increased.

Jackie and Rudy chose a spot that was in between the outer and inner regions. To avoid being disturbed, Jackie had set up a formation around them.

After a whole day, Jackie had completely absorbed the Soul Crystal.

Jackie looked on as the Soul Crystal crumbled away after being completely absorbed. The Soul Crystal had brought him a tremendous breakthrough. No wonder it was worth so much.

After absorbing it, Jackie successfully reached the second stage of Soul Sky from the first. The first stage was called Broken Soul Blade, and the second stage was called the Soul Burst Ring.

Jackie was anxious to try it out and see how strong the Soul Burst Ring was.

Jackie took a deep breath as he looked at Rudy, saying, "We're going forward!"

The closer they got to the inner region, the more barren the land was.

He believed that his name had probably already spread across Chaos City after that large battle. To prevent any unnecessary trouble, Jackie and Rudy put on their masks.

The blood moon in the sky looked more and more vibrant. It was so red that it seemed like blood could drip out at any moment.

Rudy frowned, “Another three passed! The further inside we get, the more people there are Yet, no one has tried to cause us any trouble at all. Why is that so?”

He had thought that the further inside they got, the more people would try to attack them to get the golden keys. Then, they would be able to counterattack and gain all their opponent’s keys. Yet, the moment they stepped into the inner region, they had met a lot of people, but none of them was bothered with Rudy and Jackie.

Most of them merely glanced at them before advancing, ignoring them. Rudy was both surprised and frustrated.

They continued moving forward for twenty kilometers, but nothing had happened.

Jackie pursed his lips when he heard Rudy, “Have you forgotten that we’ve already exchanged all of our golden keys? We don’t have a single golden ring around us right now, so they naturally wouldn’t bother with us. It’s completely pointless for them to fight us.”

Rudy had a look of realization, finally recalling that they had exchanged all their golden keys for treasures.

At that moment, the two of them were empty-handed. Unless there were some really bored people, not one would be interested in the two of them at all.

Rudy slapped himself on the forehead and laughed, “I actually forgot about that. We should have left one key on us back then. We might have been able to attract some opponents with that.”

Jackie smiled and shook his head, “Just look at the warriors that passed by. They had at least six or seven keys with them. Warriors like that would not be interested in warriors with one key at all. If you want them to attack us, we’d need to have at least ten golden keys on us.”

Rudy nodded.

Right at that moment, heavy footsteps were heard from afar. It was like something massive was getting closer to them.

The two of them looked toward the source of the noise at the same time.

Chapter 3540
It was the first beast Jackie had seen in Chaos City.

The beast’s massive claws caused the ground to rumble. Even from afar, Rudy was shocked by its massive size.

Rudy's mouth widened, "It's huge! It's the size of a small mountain! It's the first time I've ever seen a beast so big!"

Jackie laughed and said, "It's not that big. Most of Hestia Continent's beasts aren't small either. You have never seen them before because you rarely venture out."

The beast was about fifteen meters tall and thirty meters long. It was massive but quite agile. It ran incredibly fast and seemed to strangely defy its size.

Jackie did not say that for the sake of teasing Rudy.

Hestia Continent really did have a lot of large beasts. However, those beasts usually lived deep in the forest, and rarely interacted with people.

Rudy was a normal alchemist, and he would normally just interact with the materials for his pills. He did not know much about beasts in the first place.

Rudy's lips twitched as he looked at the beast that was running over, "What is that thing called? Is it found in Hestia Continent?"

The beast had a goat's head and the teeth of a hound. It had a layer of the incredibly hard outer skin, and its limbs were thin and filled with gray fur. It looked quite strange.

Jackie said, "This beast is called the Flaming Rhino. An adult Flaming Rhino would be at the divine solidifying realm at least, but in the Whirling World, both man and beasts were all restricted to the final stage of the innate level."

Rudy blinked and said, "Then, is it dangerous? Of course, no beast would be able to threaten me. I'm just asking if this beast is considered strong by normal warriors."

Jackie nodded, "Of course it is! It has a natural-born technique, the Flaming Horn, which is already at the middle ultimate god rank. Regular warriors are no match for it at all. This guy has incredibly thick skin and an incredibly strong defense as well. Normal warriors would not be able to break through its defense at all."

The Flaming Rhino was getting faster and faster. After their short conversation, the Flaming Rhino was already less than a kilometer away from them.

"Jackie, look! I was wondering why this guy looked crazy. It's just constantly running forward! It even used its skill earlier. So there are actually three men around it!" Rudy said in surprise.

Jackie saw it as well. As the Flaming Rhino charged forward, there were a few figures around its head and waist.

As it got closer, Jackie figured out that the three men were constantly attacking the Flaming Rhino. Three differently colored energies were constantly being unleashed, clashing into that rhino's body.

The rhino raised its head and let out a roar!

At that moment, the Flaming Rhino was clearly angered. Even though it had an incredibly strong defense. It was still injured after the constant attacks. Its thick back had fresh wounds on it.

Suddenly, the Flaming Rhino no longer ran forward. It stood in place and its belly started to suddenly expand as it took a deep breath. It was as if there was liquid moving inside its belly as it started to rumble.

Jackie heard someone shout, "Not good! Get away!"

Suddenly all the three men scattered.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3541-3542 -

Chapter 3541
The Flaming Rhino opened its mouth, and it shot out balls of fire.

The balls of fire were a purplish-red color and extremely hot. The surrounding air started to distort when the flames passed through!

The earth itself started to shake as the balls of flames struck the ground, exploding and forming massive craters!

Most of the balls of fire had been targeted at those three. Thankfully, they had reacted in time. Other than the man with a black mask who did not manage to avoid it in time, resulting in the flames burning his arm, the others were fine.

However, the situation did not look good. At the moment, the Flaming Rhino was already completely agitated. It would not let those three puny humans off.

The man in the black mask looked at his burnt arm and his eyes lit up in rage. He took out some medicine from his spatial ring to apply it to his wound.

“How long are the two of you going to be stubborn? Can’t you just work together as I said? This guy isn’t a beast we can take on alone!” The black-masked man said while holding back his anger.

A bald man coldly looked at him, “Stop trying to fool us! Are you joking? Isn’t working with you just walking into a trap?! The three of you are from second-grade worlds, wouldn’t I be crazy to work with you when I’m from a third-grade world? Compared to the two of you, I think that the beast is easier to deal with!”

The three of them did not know each other and only happened to bump into each other while trying to kill the Flaming Rhino.

The bald one was from a third-grade world, while the other two consisted of a handsome man in white robe and a mysterious man in a black mask.

The white-robed man scoffed in contempt, “Stop trying to play the victim. My goal is this big guy. You only have three golden keys with you, do you think we want you?!”

The bald guy was very unhappy to hear that.

He ignored the wild beast as he shouted loudly, “Don’t act like you’re so innocent. Do you think we don’t know how many despicable things you guys have done? How many

warriors from third-grade worlds have you tortured? You've got no right to look down on me."

"So what if I have three keys? With how you guys are, would you let me go? Working with the two of you is just crazy. Once we kill the Flaming Rhino, the two of you will definitely work together to torture me! Don't even think for one moment that I'll believe you."

The black-masked man started to get anxious at that, "Then what do you want? Even if we aren't working together, aren't we still attacking the Flaming Rhino at the same time? I just want you to listen and attack the rhino's weak point, and not blindly attack."

The bald man scoffed, narrowing his eyes as he said, "I'm not blindly attacking!"

He did not continue with his words. He knew that once the beast died, the other two would definitely start to attack him, killing him for his keys before they split the spoils.

He was attacking the Flaming Rhino, but not hitting the rhino's weak points at all. He was merely attacking where the skin was thicker. He would just thoroughly anger the rhino.

He had been looking for the chance to kill one of those two. Only then would he be willing to talk about working together.

The white-robed man coldly looked at the bald man, his eyes were full of hatred.

Chapter 3542
The black-masked man had not been able to see through the bald man's intentions, but the white-robed man had. Yet, he could not explain things in front of the bald man. After all, if he did, then there would be no way they would ever work together.

The Flaming Rhino was incredibly hard to deal with. Its natural-born technique was already at the upper ultimate god rank.

The three of them would never be able to take on the rhino alone. Only by the three of them working together would they be able to beat the rhino.

The white-robed man scoffed as he muttered, "I guess you have a brain."

The bald man was right. The white-robed man definitely did plan on immediately getting rid of that piece of trash from the third-grade world if they worked together and managed to kill the rhino.

The white-robed man looked down on warriors from third-grade worlds.

Even if that warrior was skilled, the white-robed man would still look down on him. He felt like warriors from third-grade worlds were all beneath him. Working with the bald man was a forced option.

Even two of them together might not be able to beat the Flaming Rhino. They needed help from a third person to kill the beast. Furthermore, the white-robed man planned on dealing with the bald man before dealing with the black-masked man as well. Even though they were both from second-grade worlds, it meant nothing in front of profit.

Only he was the most important want. He wanted to benefit from everything. The bald man was clearly not going to play along, which infuriated the white-robed man. He clenched his fists. Looking at the bald man venomously.

The black-masked man frowned and said, “Baldie, can you not let your thoughts wander like that? I’m not planning on taking it all. Once we kill the beast, we can split everything evenly. The two of us won’t work together against you. You don’t have to worry.”

The bald man started laughing when he heard that.

His face was full of disdain as he said, “Do you think I’m a three-year-old child? Do you think I’ll believe anything you say? You say you won’t work together against me, but will you actually keep to your promise? Don’t think I’m a fool.”

“We all know how you guys are. You don’t see us as humans at all. In your eyes, I’m prey as well. The moment you are done dealing with the Flaming Rhino, I’ll be up next.”

As he said that, the bald man had a mocking look on his face. He was no idiot, so there was no way he would work with the other two.

The black-masked man frowned angrily, “Then what do you want? Are you just planning on wasting your time? What are you planning!?”

The bald man said in disdain, “Why do you care? I just won’t work with the two of you.”

The white-robed man narrowed his eyes, already completely angered. Since the third-grade world warrior was not going to play along, then he would not hold back.

The white-robed man turned to look at the black-masked man, “Hey, stop wasting time with this brat. He’s clearly intent on going against us. Since that’s the case, what’s the point of leaving him around? Let’s kill him before we deal with this beast!”

No. 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3543-3544 -

Chapter 3543
The moment that was said, the bald man's expression darkened.

He stared at the white-robed man hatefully, "I was right. You despicable and shameless men will do anything. One second, you're asking to work with me, the next second, you want to kill me! It would be stupid of me to work with you!"

The bald man had his teeth clenched. He never liked the white-robed man. The man only looked at him with disdain. He was no idiot, he had naturally seen through it. If he had really worked with the two of them, then he would be crazy!

The black-masked man still wanted to work with the bald man. He was not as greedy as the white-robed man. He merely wanted to get rid of the beast. Yet, the white-robed man had said something like that and completely destroyed any chance for negotiations.

The bald man never trusted them to begin with. It was all done for, at that moment.

The black-masked man was frustrated, but he knew that there was no longer anything he could say. Just as he was thinking about everything, he happened to see two figures in the distance.

The three of them had been fully focused on the Flaming Rhino and had not paid attention to their surroundings. Only then did the black-masked man notice the two figures looking at them.

One of them was a man in dark green robes, while the other was a man in light blue robes. The two of them were not that far away, and he could clearly see that the two of them were looking over with interest as if they were watching a show.

The masked man frowned, not happy about being stared at like that. However, when he saw what they were wearing, he had a sudden thought in his mind, finally finding a solution.

At that moment, the white-robed man and the bald men were looking at each other with animosity. The atmosphere was incredibly tense as if they were about to fight at any second.

The black-masked man hurriedly said, "Hey, baldie. Didn't you refuse to work with us because you were alone? Just look over there! Those two are from third-grade worlds. If the three of them join, then you would have one extra person by your side. Wouldn't it be easier to work together then?"

The black-masked man knew what the bald man was worried about. After all, the bald man was probably uncertain because it was two against one. If two others joined the bald man's side, then those worries would be gone!

The white-robed man frowned, glaring at the black-masked man unhappily, "Are you crazy? Three of us splitting the spoils is already bad enough, but you're adding two more! What would we even get if we split it five ways?"

The white-robed man refused to agree at all. The Flaming Rhino was incredibly strong. They would be able to get at least six keys after killing it. It was already not enough for three of them. Adding two more would make things worse.

The white-robed man was planning on stealing the rewards from the beast and the three keys the bald man had as well. If he could, he would take the keys from the black-masked man too!

There were not that many people, so he would be able to get what he wanted with just some small tricks. Adding another two would make things harder.

After all, the warriors from third-grade worlds were incredibly united at that moment, especially when facing warriors from second-grade worlds.

At that moment, the white-robed man could not help but curse the black-masked man!

The bald man looked over and immediately made his decision.

He turned around and nodded, "Alright, if those two join, then I won't be worried about you two stabbing me in the back!"

Chapter 3544
Jackie was not standing that far away, and the three of them were not that close to each other in the first place.

They were practically shouting at each other, so Jackie had heard everything clearly. He did not expect the topic of the conversation to shift to him.

Jackie smirked, unable to stop himself from letting out a slight laugh.

The white-robed man reddened in anger as he shouted crazily, "What kind of stupid idea is this?! Are you crazy? The three of us would already be struggling to split these rewards. If another two join, then what would we even get?! It would be better to just give up on killing the beast."

The three of them were fully focused on each other, and none of them were attacking the Flaming Rhino.

The Flaming Rhino finally got a chance to rest and recover. Earlier, the Flaming Rhino's back and stomach had been injured. At that moment, it was panting roughly, using its true energy to heal itself.

The Flaming Rhino had a certain level of intelligence as well. Even if it was not as smart as humans, it was still capable of thinking.

Its eyes were constantly darting between the three in front of him. It knew that it was their target, and knew that it was no match for the three of them working with each other. So, it was trying to look for a path of escape, but it was not like it could just flee immediately.

It was quick, but not as quick as those humans. The moment it tried to escape, the three of them would notice, and it would die.

Hence, the Flaming Rhino was constantly trying to figure out how it could manage to escape. Everyone there, whether man or beast, was basically plotting something of their own.

The white-robed man felt like his plan was about to be foiled, and he was incredibly unhappy about it. He was like an old lady in a market as he frantically shouted, asking if the black-masked man was crazy.

The black-masked man felt quite exasperated. He really wanted to kill the beast in front of them.

The beast was not made from true energy, but an actual, living beast. If they managed to kill it, they would not just be able to get the rewards, but even retrieve its spirited core and other useful materials.

Considering how thick its skin was, it would be worth quite a bit. Furthermore, the spirited core was incredibly useful.

The golden keys were not that important compared to that. What he wanted the most was the beast's spirited core. Of course, he knew that the rewards would greatly diminish if they split it five ways.

Yet, the rewards were not as important to the black-masked man, so he did not mind splitting it more.

Rudy stood next to Jackie and listened to everything, feeling incredibly annoyed.

He turned to look at Jackie, but Jackie's expression was calm.

Jackie did not look like he had anything to say, and Rudy did not know what Jackie's plans were, so he whispered, "Jackie, why don't we work with them?"

As he asked that, Rudy's mouth froze, feeling like he had said something wrong.

Why would they work with those three?

With Jackie's skills, did he genuinely care about them?

Jackie's skills were far superior to all three of them.

Jackie could not help but laugh, saying in exasperation, "Don't be stupid."

Rudy nodded, "I just got too dizzy listening to them…"

The moment he said that, the bald man's voice was suddenly right next to them, "Are the two of you willing to work with us?"

Those two warriors from second-grade worlds did not look at the bald man as a threat at all. They wanted him to die, so there was no way the bald man would want them to live.

The bald man was naturally happy to have more helpers by his side.

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3545

. . .

Other than the few warriors from third grade worlds who stood at the peak, the other warriors from third-grade worlds all hated
the warriors from second-grade worlds to the bones. Those shameless and despicable things treated warriors from third-grade worlds like animals.
They had done so many disgusting things to the warriors from third-grade worlds. Furthermore, they constantly looked down on
warriors from third-grade worlds as well, looking at them with expressions full of disdain.
Those feelings caused the bald man to utterly hate the warriors from second-grade worlds. No matter who it was, as long as he
had the chance, he would not let them off easily!
Jack smiled and shook his head at the bald man, “I don’t plan on working together. I can deal with this big guy. Just help me hold
the white-robed guy back later. You can have all the golden keys on him.”
Jack was incredibly calm when he said that, as if he was just talking about his next meal.

All of them were stunned when they heard that. All of them had their eyes widened at what Jack said. He was planning on killing the Flaming Rhino alone? He did not plan on letting the white-robed man off?! Was that not crazy?
The white-robed man's expression darkened as he looked at Jack viciously.
He shouted out, "Brat! You shouldn't daydream like that! You can deal with a beast that has a middle ultimate god rank technique
alone? Not only that, you'll deal with me too?! You really are crazy. If I didn't know better, I would have thought that you were the
strongest person from the third-grade world!"
Jack's lips pursed.
To prevent any unnecessary trouble, he had already put on a mask. At the moment, those three did not know what he looked like
at all.
Rudy scoffed, looking at the white-robed man in disdain, "Warriors from second grade worlds really are all the same. Weren't you
just acting so angry earlier because working with us would ruin your plans? Weren't you planning on taking everything for
yourself?"

The white-robed man did not seem guilty at all of being exposed. He did not think there was anything wrong with his plans at all.
Instead, he looked at Jack in disgust.
He snorted, “You trash from third-grade worlds only know how to insult others! What plan could I have had? Stop trying to frame
me! You’re just delusional, and you think you’re so special that people would target you. Don’t be so disgusting! Who do you
think you are?”
Rudy scoffed, “Every time I listen to you guys speak, I feel like slapping you with a shoe. You act like you’re so noble, but the
things you do are so shameless!”
“You looked at us with such disdain earlier. Are you looking down on us? We look down on you two as well! You’re just like a
worm that’s slightly larger than usual. Just looking at you makes me want to puke!”
Rudy even gagged a few times after he said that, causing the white-robed man to tremble in anger. In the white-robed man’s
world, only he was allowed to look down on the warriors from third-grade worlds, and not the other way around.

He looked at Rudy with clenched teeth, wanting nothing more than to rush over to rip Rudy apart. He felt like his dignity had
been trampled over, which was not something he could stand.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3546

• • •

“Brat, how dare you talk to me like that?! It looks like you’re already sick of living. Since you want to die, I’ll grant you your wish.”

The moment he said that, he was tempted to start attacking, but he looked at the bald man and the black-masked man.

After thinking about it, he held back. If he attacked in this situation, it was very likely he would be at a disadvantage.

The two around him could decide to take the chance to attack him at any moment. Then, he would lose everything. However, it

was not like he could just take those words. The white-robed man felt like he was going to faint from the anger.

Jack coldly looked at the white-robed man, “You should be honored that I’m even bothered to talk to a clown like you.”

There were plenty of people like the white robed man in second-grade worlds.

He had met so many of them. Those people always looked down on the warriors from third grade worlds and acted like they

were the only ones allowed to feel superior. Every time Jack met them, he felt he was rendered speechless.
The white-robed man grew furious, “What did you say?! Who are you calling a clown? The clown is clearly you!”
The white-robed man absolutely hated those two in front of him.
He clenched his teeth and said, “The two of you are only good at bragging! Who do you think you are, saying that you can deal
with this Flaming Rhino alone? Please look at yourself in the mirror before you say things like that. Do you think you’re that
strong? It’s a complete joke!”
The bald man looked at Jack meaningfully.
He had been silent the whole time after hearing what Jack said. He merely constantly tried to measure Jack, feeling like Jack
was hiding something. Even though he felt like Jack’s words were a bit absurd and exaggerated, he still did not say anything.
Jack’s lips curled up as he smiled.
He turned to look at the bald man and said, “If you insist on working with me, then do as I say. Restrict this guy for the moment
and don’t let him cause any trouble. Stop him from running away as well.”

The bald man frowned and thought about it. After being silent for a few seconds, he slowly nodded, agreeing.
Jack nodded at the bald man and ignored the other two.
His hands started to move as they formed seal after seal. Countless seals started to glow in black light, fusing in the air. After a
few moments, a round ring about the size of two palms appeared in front of Jack. That was the Soul Burst Ring.
The Soul Burst Wrong was formed with countless seals, and the gray seals had special blood-red seals mixed within. Both seals
resonated with each other, giving out a mysterious and sinister aura.
Jack shot up into the air, and the ring slowly spun in front of Jack.
It started to cause the energy around it to spin as well, and even the air started to get distorted.
Jack looked right at the Flaming Rhino, and the Flaming Rhino was looking at Jack carefully at that moment as well. Its intuition
told it that Jack would not be easy to deal with, and it started to retreat.
Jack smirked and said, “This is my first time using this technique. I planned on leaving it for the warriors from second grade

worlds, but not many of them can really withstand this. You'd be the perfect test subject."
The moment Jack said that, he pushed forward. The Soul Burst Ring rapidly spun, forming a cyclone as it quickly shot at the
Flaming Rhino.
"Brat, how dare you talk to me like that?! It looks like you're already sick of living. Since you want to die, I'll grant you your wish."
The moment he said that, he was tempted to start attacking, but he looked at the bald man and the black-masked man.
After thinking about it, he held back. If he attacked in this situation, it was very likely he would be at a disadvantage.
The two around him could decide to take the chance to attack him at any moment. Then, he would lose everything. However, it
was not like he could just take those words. The white-robed man felt like he was going to faint from the anger.
Jack coldly looked at the white-robed man, "You should be honored that I'm even bothered to talk to a clown like you."
There were plenty of people like the white robed man in second-grade worlds.

He had met so many of them. Those people always looked down on the warriors from third grade worlds and acted like they
were the only ones allowed to feel superior. Every time Jack met them, he felt he was rendered speechless.
The white-robed man grew furious, “What did you say?! Who are you calling a clown? The clown is clearly you!”
The white-robed man absolutely hated those two in front of him.
He clenched his teeth and said, “The two of you are only good at bragging! Who do you think you are, saying that you can deal
with this Flaming Rhino alone? Please look at yourself in the mirror before you say things like that. Do you think you’re that
strong? It’s a complete joke!”
The bald man looked at Jack meaningfully.
He had been silent the whole time after hearing what Jack said. He merely constantly tried to measure Jack, feeling like Jack
was hiding something. Even though he felt like Jack’s words were a bit absurd and exaggerated, he still did not say anything.
Jack’s lips curled up as he smiled.

He turned to look at the bald man and said, “If you insist on working with me, then do as I say. Restrict this guy for the moment
and don’t let him cause any trouble. Stop him from running away as well.”
The bald man frowned and thought about it. After being silent for a few seconds, he slowly nodded, agreeing.
Jack nodded at the bald man and ignored the other two.
His hands started to move as they formed seal after seal. Countless seals started to glow in black light, fusing in the air. After a
few moments, a round ring about the size of two palms appeared in front of Jack. That was the Soul Burst Ring.
The Soul Burst Wrong was formed with countless seals, and the gray seals had special blood-red seals mixed within. Both seals
resonated with each other, giving out a mysterious and sinister aura.
Jack shot up into the air, and the ring slowly spun in front of Jack.
It started to cause the energy around it to spin as well, and even the air started to get distorted.
Jack looked right at the Flaming Rhino, and the Flaming Rhino was looking at Jack carefully at that moment as well. Its intuition

told it that Jack would not be easy to deal with, and it started to retreat.
Jack smirked and said, “This is my first time using this technique. I planned on leaving it for the warriors from second grade
worlds, but not many of them can really withstand this. You’d be the perfect test subject.”
The moment Jack said that, he pushed forward. The Soul Burst Ring rapidly spun, forming a cyclone as it quickly shot at the
Flaming Rhino.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3547

. . .

The Flaming Rhino let out another roar as it unleashed its natural-born technique. A massive ball of fire was spat out from its
mouth, and the two attacks clashed in the air.
They had thought that it would unleash a massive explosion, but strangely enough, the moment the flames touched the Soul
Burst Ring, the attack seemed to lose its effectiveness.
It was quickly neutralized by the Soul Burst Ring, and before anyone could react, the Soul Burst Ring had already disappeared.
The next second, the Soul Burst Ring shot right at the Flaming Rhino. The rhino had already reacted. It was no match for Jack at
all. Its attack had actually been so insignificant to Jack. It did not even think as it turned around to run, practically using all its
strength.
It knew that it would be dead if it was not able to flee. However, it underestimated the ring’s speed.

The Flaming Rhino had just turned around when the Soul Burst Ring already reached its body. Suddenly, the Soul Burst Ring
expanded, completely surrounding the rhino. After that, an explosion was heard by everyone.
It was as if a hundred bombs had been thrown at the rhino. The intense explosions caused the Flaming Rhino to fall. Its thick
skin had been burnt to a crisp, and it had stopped breathing.
Jack took a deep breath, looking at his own hands. That power was completely expected. After all, it was a storm god-rank technique. The power the second stage could unleash
was far higher than the first stage.
The other three were all stunned, especially the white-robed man. His mouth was completely opened wide.
The three of them had failed to deal with the beast, but Jack had dealt with it all by himself so effortlessly. It was as if it had been
no trouble at all. The white-robed man’s lips shook as his heart filled up with fear.
Jack had not been bragging. Jack really had the skills. He was in danger!
At that moment, the white robed man did not even dare to look at Jack.

Looking at the corpse of the Flaming Rhino, the white-robed man felt a chill in his heart. He started to panic as he retreated. At
that moment, various thoughts started to surface in his mind.
If he did not run at that moment, he would probably never have had the chance to run again.
He completely discarded all his pride and arrogance. All he wanted to do was to survive at that moment.
The black-masked man
was doing no better. He looked at everything with a dumbfounded expression.
If Jack was in a second-grade world, he would be one of the top warriors as well. He had actually gotten involved with someone
like that. Even if he had not spoken as harshly as the white robed man, warriors from third-grade worlds and warriors from
second-grade worlds were mortal enemies!
The black-masked man took a step back. He no longer cared about the spirited core. He just wanted to live.
Jack had a smirk on his face.
The black-masked man and the white robed man exchanged a look. Two of them turned around at the same time as they fled in
opposite directions!

The bald man finally snapped out of his shock, clenching his teeth as he chased after the white-robed man!
Jack smiled and formed some seals again. A hundred Soul Swords condensed into one, aiming at the white-robed man’s back
as it shot rapidly forward!
He had added the laws of space to the Soul Sword as well, so its speed doubled!
The white-robed man was frantically fleeing. Even though he did not turn back, he could still feel the killing intent.
He knew the bald man would not let him go!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3548

. . .

The white-robed man thought about fighting for his life.
The bald man was at his level at most, anyway. He had already met one monster, he doubted there would be a second one. He
constantly thought about what to do and clenched his teeth when he made the decision. As long as the bald man caught up, he
would attack immediately and hope to catch the bald man off guard.
That monster had asked the bald man to keep an eye on him, so the monster would probably not attack.
He had just been thinking about it when he felt a pain in his back.
Before he could even turn around, the bald man was already in front of him. He had already planned everything out, but at that
moment, his body was in too much pain for him to even move. Even though he did not turn back to look, he could clearly feel a
sword piercing his back.

The sword was made of energy. After it stabbed into his back, the energy exploded, frantically ripping his soul apart. He turned
over slightly and happened to see the bald man's sneer.
At that moment, the bald man's eyes were full of disdain.
The man raised an eyebrow, looking at the white-robed man, "Weren't you acting so arrogantly earlier? Why can't you say
anything anymore?"
The white-robed man twitched as he looked at the bald man hatefully, but there was nothing he could do.
The bald man's eyes flashed in hatred, "For so long, you shameless dogs were the ones pushing us down. Did you think we
wouldn't fight back? You were looking down on us? Who do you think you are?!"
As the bald man said that, he took out a dagger from his spatial ring. He waved it in front of the white-robed man, and the dagger
glinted in a sinister light.
He smirked as he said, "What do you think I'll be doing now?"
The white-robed man had already been struck by the massive Soul Sword. His soul was in so much pain that he had never felt

before, constantly being ripped apart.
If Destroying the Void's full power had been unleashed, the white-robed man would have lost all rational thought to the pain. He would not even have been able to control his own body, let alone talk.
However, Jack deliberately controlled Destroying the Void's energy. When the massive Soul Sword pierced into the white-robed man's body, it did not unleash everything immediately. Instead, it was slowly devouring the white-robed man's soul.
The white-robed man was sweating in pain, but he still retained his rational thought. Looking at the dagger in front of him, the man felt a chill in his heart. His lips were twitching as his eyes trembled. He did not even dare to look up, feeling only fear at what was going to happen.
The bald man said, "What? Are you scared now? Weren't you so arrogant earlier? You looked down on us as if no one from third grade worlds could face you. Why are you suddenly different now?"
As he said that, the bald man stabbed forward. Blood sprayed all over as a cut formed on the white-robed man's face. He let out a cry of agony as his whole body trembled. His

fear caused him to want nothing more than to flee. However, he clearly knew that there was no way he could flee. The bald man would not let him go.
The white-robed man said shakily, “Let me go! I’ll give you anything! As long as you let me go… We can talk about it!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3549

. . .

The bald man sneered as he said, “Then, take out everything you have in your spatial storage, and I’ll consider letting you. go.”

The white-robed man’s eyes widened when he heard that.

Normally, even if a warrior were to die, they would not take out their fortunes from their rings. It was a final form of dignity for the
warriors, not leaving anything behind for their opponents even if they died.

When a warrior dies, their spatial storage would collapse, and their opponents would get nothing.

The white-robed man clenched his teeth in refusal!

The bald man raised an eyebrow, not surprised at all.

He scoffed, “Since that’s the case, then we’ll slowly have fun. Honestly, I’m very interested in collecting Heartblood.”

Those words felt like a bucket of cold water being poured on the white-robed man. He felt like his whole body was frozen. Since

the Soul Sword was in the white-robed man's body, Jack allowed the bald man to do whatever he wanted.
He looked at the Flaming Rhino. At that moment, the beast was already dead, and its massive body was on the ground.
Jack walked over to the Flaming Rhino, and a faint golden glow was slowly condensing above the Flaming Rhino. Eight golden
keys formed, causing Jack to raise an eyebrow as they fell into Jack's hands.
Killing one rhino had given him eight keys. Sure enough, the inner region was the main event of Chaos City.
Jack looked up and saw where the black-masked man was fleeing toward. Earlier, the two of them had run away in opposite
directions.
He only attacked the white-robed man, not bothering with the black-masked man.
At that moment, the black-masked man was already gone.
Rudy looked on as Jack looked toward the direction where the man had fled and said curiously, "Why didn't you kill him just
now?"

Those two warriors from second-grade worlds were insignificant ants to Jack. They were not worth being afraid of at all, even
two against one. However, Jack had let the black-masked man go and only dealt with the white-robed man, which made Rudy
curious.
Jack turned around and smiled, “The white-robed man was targeted because he kept on trying to challenge me. The black
masked man did not do that. It’s fine to let him go. After all, this is Chaos City.”
Rudy nodded as Jack was right.
It was not a regular city, Chaos City was full of death. Regular warriors were grouped with masters. Anything that happened there
would not be strange at all.
That guy never crossed the line, so it was fine to let him go. Even if he managed to guess Jack’s true identity, it was still fine.
After all, Jack’s name was already known everywhere. Adding one more story to his name was no big deal.
Not only had the Flaming Rhino rewarded Jack, but its body had great uses as well. The core could be sold for a high price, and
the skin was good material for weapons. It was just as valuable.

Jack briefly tidied up the scene.
Ten minutes had passed, and the bald man was done as well. The white-robed man was already dead, and he had died a
horrible death similar to the warriors from third grade worlds who were tortured to death.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3550

• • •

The white-robed man had definitely tortured a lot of warriors from third-grade worlds to death.
He looked down on the warriors from third-grade worlds and felt like he was too noble to be compared to them. The fate that
befell him was ironic since he ended up just like those he tortured.
The bald man collected some Heartblood and walked right in front of Jack, saluting Jack before producing the five golden keys
he got from the white-robed man, “Lord Jack, please have these…”
‘Lord Jack?’
He had never revealed his identity before, but the bald man actually recognized him.
The bald man saw Jack’s expression and guessed what Jack was wondering,
He let out a smile and said, “I more or less know all the top warriors from third-grade worlds. Their voices are familiar to me. It’s
the first time I ever heard your voice. On top of that, you are wearing a mask…”

“I heard of the recent news and managed to determine who you are from that. Only Jack who had easily killed Horace would
have such extraordinary skills.”
Jack smiled, not accepting the golden keys, “I already told you. Once he’s dead, the rings on him will be yours.”
The bald man shook his head, “I already took the reward for killing him. I got two golden keys. These five are what he gained
before. I’m already happy with two keys. If you hadn’t appeared, I don’t know what would have happened.”
The bald man was not trying to flatter Jack, he was merely speaking the truth.
If Jack had not appeared, the bald man did not know if they would end up working together or if he would manage to kill one of
them.
Jack did not dwell on it, accepting the keys after nodding. With the eight he had gotten, he had accumulated thirteen.
The bald man bowed, “I can’t believe I was so lucky to meet you when I was in danger…”
All of the warriors from third-grade worlds were already referring to Jack as Lord Jack.

Jack’s skills along with his heroics had earned him that title. At least, the other strong warriors from third-grade worlds were not worthy of it.

After all, those people always held themselves above everyone else, not caring about others at all. They only cared about their own benefits. After a few more pleasantries, Jack and Rudy parted ways with the bald man, continuing toward the center.

The deeper they walked, the more dense the aura of death was. Even the redness of the moon in the skies turned thicker.

Rudy’s lips twitched as he constantly shuddered. The aura of death was too heavy, and he was a little too weak to handle it.

However, he did not want to go back to Mustard Seed, feeling like he was gaining experiences every moment he stayed out,

“Jack! Look over there! Two people are rushing over!”

Rudy pointed at the figures in front.

The further in they went, the more people there were. In just three kilometers, they had already witnessed around seven or eight warriors rushing toward the outer region in a rush. Looking at Jack and Rudy, they merely spared them a cold glance before continuing forward.

To attract attention, Jack had put seven keys on himself, but it had failed to attract them.
He frowned, feeling like something was wrong, “Something might have happened.”
Rudy’s lips twitched, “Could another large battle have started? The third-grade worlds started fighting the second-grade worlds
again, and this time the scale is very large, and too many have died for the people in the inner region to ignore.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3551

• • •

Jack frowned and said, “It’s definitely possible, but I don’t think it’s very likely. Alright, let’s not blindly speculate. We’ll know the
moment we enter…”
Right after he said that, another person ran toward them.
When that person saw Jack’s group, he had a look of surprise on his face before a sneer was present on his face. The one who
came out from the inner region was quite close to Jack this time and quickly arrived in front of him.
He sized up Jack, and Jack could see the amusement in his eyes. It was as if he was mocking Jack’s every action and thought
he was an idiot.
Jack was very curious. ‘Why did he look at me with such a peculiar stare?’
The two of them clearly did not know each other.
Just as Jack was confused, that person said coldly, “Another idiot!”
Jack frowned as he started to form seals. The Broken Soul Blade appeared in front of him.

When that person took a few steps forward, Jack immediately attacked. The Broken Soul Blade that was full of energy appeared
in front of that person, causing the man to completely stiffen and widen his eyes, counter-attacking right away.
The weapon he took out of his storage ring was a spear about a meter and a half long. The man thrust his spear forward,
clashing with the Broken Soul Blade.
Alas, the spear's energy could not break the Broken Soul Blade at all. The man heard what sounded like something cracking
before he looked down and noticed that it came from his fracturing long spear.
His eyes widened, immediately realizing he was no match for Jack. The two of them were not even at the same level!
Jack controlled the Broken Soul Blade and clashed with his opponent's attack but did not continue the attack. The blade merely
floated in the air, still in front of his opponent.
That person's eyes widened, realizing that Jack did not want to kill him and merely wanted to block him. His hands trembled as
his heart beat rapidly.
If Jack wanted to kill him, he would have been a dead man.

Jack was a master among masters, and the man felt like he needed to be careful or he would forfeit his life.
The man’s voice quivered as he stammered, “W-What do you want?! I was just talking without thinking. Please forgive me… Just
let me go, I’m insignificant anyway!”
Rudy remembered the man’s mocking expression from earlier, but he no longer acted the same way after being humbled the
hard way.
Rudy scoffed. “You’re definitely insignificant!”
Jack was in no mood to waste any time and immediately said, “Why did you look at me like that just now? Why are so many
warriors running out?”
That person said respectfully, “It’s just pure chaos inside right now. A lot of the beasts are starting to fight back. The more
intelligent ones are leading the less intelligent ones and frantically killing humans. For the sake of the blood beads, they’re really
going all out!”
It was not just Rudy, but Jack was surprised to hear that, too.
The beasts working together to fight the warriors?

It was something Jack never thought was possible. The fact that so many people were running out meant that something had
happened inside.
They thought it was a battle among warriors, which was expected, but it turned out to be a skirmish between humans and
beasts.
What were blood beads?
Jack had never heard of this before.
That person could tell from Jack’s curious expression that he probably did not know what blood beads were.
To get on Jack’s good side, that person started to explain in detail.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3552

. . .

When humans killed beasts, Chaos City would give them rewards.
Some of the rewards were pills or materials, while some of them gave out purple gold. The most valuable rewards were the
golden keys.
Beasts, too, would earn something when they killed humans, but they would only get one reward. The moment they killed
humans, the beasts would get a blood bead.
After absorbing the blood bead, their defenses would be strengthened, and their wisdom would be increased. It was basically a
spirited pill for beasts. Thus, while humans were trying to kill the beasts for rewards, the beasts were eliminating humans for the
same reason. The stronger the beasts, the more intelligent they were.
The strongest ones would sometimes be even more intelligent than humans. The strong ones would naturally not be willing to
just be prey for the humans, thus a large battle broke out.

At the deepest parts of the inner region, every single corner was filled with bloody slaughters. No one knew the number of beasts
and humans that have perished.
It was not just a complete battle between humans and beasts either.
The petty schemes between humans never ended. Warriors from third-grade worlds and warriors from second-grade worlds hated each other, as they always did. They constantly
tried to sabotage each other just to gain the upper hand.
The inner region was no longer a place normal warriors could stay. Even warriors that were slightly more skilled than average did
not dare to stay there for too long. Only the cream-of-the-crop warriors dared to stay in the deeper regions. Even so, death
loomed large.
After hearing that person’s explanations, Jack allowed the man to walk free.
The man frantically ran away, not even remembering to thank Jack.
Jack took a deep breath. He had not expected the inner region to be in such a chaotic state. Even he needed to be careful, or he
could very well lose his life.

Jack was confident in his abilities, but it did not change the fact that he stood alone. If had to fight off one too many warriors, he
would not be able to handle them. If he was ambushed, the situation would be terrible as well.
Jack frowned as he looked forward. It was a complete wasteland in the distance.
Rudy said hoarsely, “How did things end up like this? No wonder so many of them booked out of there. If it was me, I wouldn’t
even have been able to run away.“
Jack frowned, not dwelling on the problem. “Let’s forget about that for now and advance. Just remember to be careful.”
Rudy nodded.
He knew Jack was not someone who gave up easily.
After entering Chaos City, Jack was determined to venture into the deepest corner. No matter how dangerous it was, he would
give it a shot.
With Jack’s tremendous skills, the danger would be lowered. The two of them advanced for two more kilometers.
At that moment, the ground started to have cracks on it, and even the air was drier. It felt like they had entered hell.

Right at that moment, they could hear thunderous stomps coming from afar as if they came from very large feet.
Rudy looked over and saw a massive object getting closer to them.
The massive object had a figure in front of it. It was too far, so they could not tell what that person looked like.
Jack raised an eyebrow. “It’s a Crimson Tortoise.”
A Crimson Tortoise was about equal in strength to a Flaming Rhino. It was not a beast a regular warrior could handle.
It was the second beast they had encountered, and every one of them was strong. He did not know if it was a coincidence or if
the beasts were all just at that level of strength. If it was the latter, then the situation deeper into the area would only be worse.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3553

. . .

Rudy looked at the Crimson Tortoise excitedly.
The Crimson Tortoise was massive, and it was the size of a small hill. It had very thick limbs and a thick shell on its back.
Its whole body was fiery red, and the beast even had hair on its head that was made of fire. Its whole body felt like it was filled
with explosive energy.
Rudy patted Jack on the shoulder excitedly. “This is practically a free meal for us! That guy in front won’t be able to beat the
Crimson Tortoise.”
Jack nodded, standing in place as he waited for the Crimson Tortoise to come their way. Yet, he was surprised when the
individual suddenly changed directions when they were getting closer.
The Crimson Tortoise behind him changed directions as well, heading toward the west.
Both Rudy and Jack were stunned.
They truly believed the figure and the tortoise would come their way so Jack could deal with the tortoise, yet they so abruptly

switched directions midway.
Rudy got anxious at that. Their prize had been right in front of them before it literally walked away. There was no way he would
be able to stand that.
He had just wanted to say something when they suddenly heard some swishing sounds next to them. Rudy looked over and saw three unique-looking warriors quickly speeding over from afar. In just a few moments, the warriors
landed in front of them.
The one in front had a scar that went down to the bone. Of the two behind him, one of them had triangular eyes, while the other
one had a large, flat face. The three of them were dressed up in third-grade world warrior attire and had excited looks on their
faces as they stood in front of Jack and Rudy.
The scarred man had a large red sword in hand. He had a bloodthirsty smile as he said, “Not bad! It’s another fat sheep! The brat before this gave us five golden keys, and you’re
giving us seven right away. Our profits today will be great!”
The scarred man laughed arrogantly as he looked at Jack.

He was completely bloodthirsty as if Jack was a lamb for slaughter that had been gifted to him. He looked like he wanted to just
eat Jack. Rudy's lips twitched.
'Robbers, again…'
Still, this would work in their favor.
Jack smiled as he looked at the three in disdain.
"You sure are confident…"
The scarred man scoffed. "Brat, this isn't the outer region. You sound like you're skilled or something, but nothing you do will
topple the three of us!"
The triangular-eyed man sneered as he added, "Big brother, why are you wasting time on them? Just kill them. All of the thirdgrade
world trash that's slightly more talented will behave this way."
The scarred man raised an eyebrow. "I just feel like this guy is interesting. The brat next to him is clearly just a pest that doesn't
even have a stable foundation. I wouldn't even want that guy as a slave, yet I can't see through this guy. It doesn't matter. No
matter how skilled he is, he's still alone. How gutsy he is to come into the inner region alone!"
As he said that, the scarred man had an inquisitive tone to his voice.

Any warrior who managed to get here should not be stupid.
The inner region was incredibly dangerous, and everyone knew that. Even so, Jack came with nothing but a useless companion.
lf Jack was not immensely skilled for them both, then he was just plain stupid.
The scarred man was suddenly worried.
If Jack was hard to deal with, then would the situation not be bad for them?
The two behind him did not have the same realization. They just felt like there was no need to waste any time on Jack. They just
wanted to kill him and move on to the next target.
The flat-faced man said in exasperation, “How could he be interesting? I can’t tell at all. All I see is an arrogant fool. He’s
probably never been properly beaten up before. Let’s teach him a lesson and show him what kind of place this is!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3554

• • •

The two of them only had their eyes on the seven keys Jack had. They wanted to slay Jack swiftly so they could get them.

The scarred man frowned as he turned to look at the other two. “Just wait for a moment, there’s no reason to be in such a hurry.

Something is wrong with this guy.”

The triangular-eyed man said unhappily, “Please! You’re just being too careful. What kind of problems could this guy have? I, for

one, feel like he deserves a beating! Let’s not waste more time. Let’s just deal with him and move on to our next target.”

The scarred man motioned for the triangular-eyed man to be quiet before he suddenly said, “Do you know Jack, brat?”

Jack was stunned when he heard that.

The scarred man was quite sharp, he tried to guess who he was.

Jack had a mask on and was moving in the inner region alone, so the scarred man could not help but wonder if he was the

rumored man.

Jack’s name had been spread all around Chaos City, so much so that even the warriors that stood at the top of second-grade
worlds were wary of him. His skills were not to be underestimated. A warrior like the scarred man was nothing in front of him!
Even though the scarred man felt like he was probably not that unlucky to meet someone like Jack, he still felt the need to ask.
Jack pursed his lips and slowly took off his mask. A familiar face suddenly appeared in front of all three of them.
The three of them were immediately stunned. Their jaws slackened, and they were so shocked that their jaws were about to hit
the ground. The scarred man slapped his face, cursing his rotten mouth.
It was Jack!
He was that unlucky, and they even ran their mouths claiming his keys were theirs for the taking!
At that moment, the scarred man saw himself as a total fool.
Jack was above them all. Even though there were three of them and Jack was alone, they were still no match for Jack.
The other party could kill them off easily, and that was the undeniable truth. They were the ones who would be giving their keys

to Jack.
The scarred man felt like he was about to stop breathing. His whole body trembled.
The triangular-eyed man’s lips twitched. “Am I seeing things? Why do I feel like I just met that bringer of disaster, that he’s right in
front of us? Am I dreaming?”
The triangular-eyed man felt like crying at that moment.
The scarred man was not even in the mood to answer.
He stepped back and shouted out, “Run! Get away!”
As he shouted, he summoned his true energy and frantically fled. Unfortunately, Jack would not give them the chance to live.
Anyone who dared to rob him would pay the price.
Jack quickly formed seals, and the Soul Burst Ring immediately appeared in front of him. The Soul Burst Ring spun rapidly, and
Jack let out a cold laugh as he pushed his hands forward, sending the ring at the three of them.
The ring expanded in the air, suddenly covering the three of them.
Seconds later, a deafening explosion resonated throughout the skies. The three of them were blown to dust, and only their

golden keys remained. The golden keys were made of special materials. Even if Jack’s technique was at the storm-god rank, it
could still not damage the keys.
Jack smirked as he looked at the 15 keys scattered on the ground and slowly walked over to collect them. Coupled with the 13
keys he had, Jack had 28 golden keys.
Rudy laughed excitedly. “We’ve managed to get twenty-eight golden keys, and it didn’t even take that long. I thought you’d need
to spend an entire day to reach this number. I don’t get angry at all when I see people coming to kill us. After all, they’re
practically giving away their golden keys to us.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3555

• • •

Jack lifted his head and looked around before he told Rudy, “We continue forward.”

The moment that was said, they heard heavy footsteps from ahead, and it was obvious that it was not a human’s. It must be from a massive-sized beast.

Jack once again looked over, seeing an Ice Toad leaping over from afar.

Strangely enough, someone was in front of the Ice Toad, which reminded them of the figure with the Crimson Tortoise. Jack frowned, immediately feeling like something was off.

“There’s another one, and there’s someone in front of this one too,” remarked Rudy warily. “What is happening?”

What made Jack and Rudy even more curious was the fact that the massive toad actually changed directions as well, going in the same direction as the Crimson Tortoise. Even Rudy realized something was wrong.

“There has to be a problem,” insisted Rudy. “Something’s happening! Jack, let’s go take a look!”

Jack nodded. “Let’s go there right now.”

The two of them increased their pace, following the massive Ice Toad. The toad was not that quick, so the two of them were able
to follow closely behind.
There were positives and negatives about massive beasts.
Normally, the larger beasts were very sturdy and strong, but they rarely moved quickly on account of their size.
To not attract attention, Jack and Rudy made sure to keep some distance. The two of them followed the Ice Toad for four
kilometers, and everything the persona and the beast did were seen by them.
Rudy's eyes widened as he said, "Is he activating a transmission rune?! This person is strange. I feel like he's not that slow. If he
wanted to flee, it wouldn't be too difficult…"
"He just keeps running forward and attacking behind him, angering the Ice Toad before he quickens his speed to avoid the toad's
attack. After that, he'll slow down and keep an even pace. It's like he's just luring the beast forward, but where to?"
Jack frowned, suddenly having a thought in his mind.

To keep the element of surprise, the two of them kept their distance, so he could not see what that person was wearing and if
they were from a second or third-grade world. Regardless, something was amiss with that individual.
Rudy frowned and asked, “What do you think he’s saying through the transmission rune?”
Jack took a deep breath as he continued forward, saying in a low voice, “He might be trying to confirm his location. After all,
there’s still a Crimson Tortoise that’s around the same level. The fact that they’re acting similarly means they must have the
same goal. I wonder whose plan this is…”
Rudy nodded, feeling like Jack was right. The man probably tried to determine the other person’s location.
Rudy had various thoughts in his mind, but he was not as smart as Jack.
After a long time, he could not figure it out. “What exactly are they doing? Jack, do you know?”
Jack shook his head. “I have some guesses, but without any evidence, I can’t be sure. Let’s not throw out any wild guesses.
We’ll see where they’re going.”

Time slowly ticked away. Two hours passed before the Ice Toad finally slowed down. The person in front of the toad once again
started to communicate. This time, he activated two transmission runes at the same time, seemingly making a final confirmation.
Jack did not want to get too close, so he started to slow down.
Rudy frowned and said, “It should be around here, but I don’t see anything at all. I don’t even see that Crimson Tortoise.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3556

• • •

The moment Rudy said that, a rumble could be heard from ahead of them. Lifting his head, he spotted the Crimson Tortoise he had just talked about.

The massive shell was filled with red-colored seals, and its whole body was surrounded by heat waves. In front of the Crimson Tortoise was a man in gray robes, the man they had seen.

Rudy's lips twitched. "It's a plot! This is definitely a plot!"

Anyone would have been able to figure that out. It was just that Rudy could not understand why they were doing that. He anxiously pulled at his hair, and his heart was beating rapidly, getting more and more anxious as he thought about it.

Rudy looked at the two that were far away. "Those two are warriors from second-grade worlds, and they must be plotting against those from third-grade worlds. Surely we can't just do nothing about it!"

After that was said, Rudy shut his mouth and held his tongue. Even though the two of them were from Hestia, a third-grade
world, they could not stick their hands into everything as though they were saviors of third-grade worlds.
The other warriors from third-grade worlds would not truly appreciate them, anyway. It was a world where the strong were
worshiped; hard work got nothing. When there were no benefits for themselves, it was better to not interfere with anything.
Jack turned to look at Rudy. “We’ll look at the situation for now, but let’s keep following them. If we’re patient enough, we might
gain something. We came here for ourselves, not to save anyone. It’s not like anyone will thank you for it, anyway.”
Rudy hurriedly nodded, no longer daring to say anything.
The two that were far away started to close in. The one in front of the Ice Toad made a hand signal to the one in front of the
Crimson Tortoise.
Jack and Rudy could see the other man nodding. The man in front of the Ice Toad immediately changed directions to head
southeast.

The one with the Crimson Tortoise went northeast. The two of them seemed to be heading in two different directions at a 45-
degree angle, but Jack was almost sure that they were headed to the same place.
Rudy said anxiously, “Jack, they separated. Who are we going to follow?”
Jack took a deep breath as his eyes darted around. Various thoughts formed in his head. It was an important moment. If he was not careful, he could very well lead himself to
disaster. He needed to keep absolutely calm to make the best decision.
After a few moments of silence, Jack pointed forward. “We won’t follow either of them. We’ll go east!”
Rudy was stunned. His lips froze, and he was going to ask the reason.
However, Jack did not plan on explaining as he shot forward, going as quickly as he could toward the east.
Rudy opened his mouth but did not say anything in the end, only following Jack.
He was sure that Jack knew where to go, but not the reason they were going there. He did not know why Jack made the

decision. It was clear that following one of the two was the safest choice, but Jack never made the wrong decision before.
Rudy swallowed his questions.
As they proceeded eastward, Rudy was surprised to notice that the wastelands were starting to change in shape. Small hills
began to be seen. The ground was uneven as if it had been smashed out by something.
Rudy looked down to inspect it as he went forward. Some of those craters were formed by attacks, while some were natural.
They were heading trite toward the east, which happened to be right at the center of Chaos City.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3557

. . .

It meant that they were constantly advancing deeper into Chaos City.

Rudy remembered what those people had said. The inner region was in complete chaos, and a few people had perished inside. Warriors below average did not dare to go in.

Even those who were slightly stronger did not dare to stay there for so long, while a lot of warriors frantically escaped the place.

Those words played in Rudy’s heart. The more he thought about it, the more worried he got. Even though Jack was powerful, he
could be threatened if there were too many people. Rudy was worried that their opponents would pull off petty schemes. That way, he really wondered if they could get out of it.

He sighed, telling himself that he could not possibly convince
Jack to turn back. Moving forward was the only option.

Just as he was thinking about all of that, Jack suddenly stopped. He turned and grabbed Rudy’s arm. The two of them landed

back on the ground.
Rudy said nothing as he followed Jack down. When he landed, he finally realized how special this place was. The ground might be completely barren without even a single
blade of grass, but it was still uneven. The craters were one thing, but there were a lot of hills in front to obstruct their vision as
well.
He looked up and could only see a few dozen meters around him. If he wanted to look further, he would need to go up in the air.
Jack frowned and said, “Two kilometers forward, I see eight warriors from third-grade worlds gathering. They’re doing something,
but I can’t tell what it is.”
Rudy blinked and asked in confusion, “I doubt the warriors from third-grade worlds would do anything to us if we flew over, so
why did we stop?”
Jack took a deep breath, and there was a cold glint in his eyes as he said, “I think they’re the targets.”
Rudy was stunned at that, not understanding what Jack said.
Jack grabbed Rudy’s shoulder. “Don’t ask for now. You’ll find out soon.”

Rudy nodded and shut his mouth. After another five minutes, he suddenly heard a familiar rumbling as heavy limbs stepped on
the ground.
Rudy’s eyes widened. “It’s true! Should we go up and take a look?”
The moment he said that, there was more rumbling coming from the exact opposite direction of where the first sound came from.
A massive object was rapidly heading toward them.
Jack was right. The two humans in front of the beasts were aiming forthis place, and their target was the eight warriors.
Jack took a deep breath, rushing forward. “Let’s go take a look!”
Rudy nodded, following Jack as they quickly headed toward where those eight were.
***
Dagda King opened up his flask and took a few gulps of alcohol. His face was a bit red, and there was hatred in his eyes.
“Those shameless, despicable men. They’re so depraved that they’ll stop at nothing!”
Airn, who was next to Dagda, frowned and said, “Are we just going to wait and see? They’ll do something to us, and all we can

do is react instead of fighting back? Didn’t we win that major battle before this? Those guys must’ve suffered heavy losses!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3558

• • •

“Of course, if Jack hadn’t appeared, we might’ve lost, but a win is still a win. It bolstered our morale, so why are we afraid now? If
we work together and make them suffer a loss again, they won’t dare to cross the line!”
All eight of them were from the third-grade world, the Fire Continent. They were very famous, and all of them were among the
top of the continent. They were proud of themselves, and anyone from the Fire Continent was respectful of them.
However, ever since they entered the Whirling World, they found themselves suffering more each day. So many warriors were
stronger than them, especially those from second-grade worlds who insulted them at every chance.
It was not like all the warriors from second-grade worlds were stronger than them either. In fact, most of the warriors from
second-grade worlds were not even a match for them. However, those warriors still loved to gloat and show off, which disgusted
the eight of them.

The eight of them had formed a team within Chaos Continent. Even though they had earned quite a bit, it had not been smooth
sailing. Thankfully, the eight of them united made a solid team, so they had not suffered major losses. It was just that they were
unsettled, and the fear of the future caused them to be in a bad mood.
Dagda looked at Airn. “In the end, the third-grade worlds are lacking a true leader. We’re all scattered, and everyone is afraid of
losing something. Unless they’re forced to the limits, there’s no way they’d work together against the second-grade worlds.”
“This place is also close to the deepest part of the inner region. All the warriors here are incredibly strong yet even more petty
than average. Working with them would be even more difficult. For those reasons, it’ll be very difficult to fight back against the
second-grade worlds!”
A man in green robes who was next to Airn was a fellow disciple of Dagda’s. That person had a sad look on his face.
“The ones who are the strongest don’t care about everyone else at all. Even if all the warriors from third-grade worlds died before

them, they wouldn’t care as long as they could benefit from it. After all, they’re all selfish, and regular warriors already know that.
Other than Jack, the regular warriors don’t have any hope for the strongest warriors at all.”
The moment Jack was mentioned, the eight of them had a new topic of conversation.
Airn raised an eyebrow and asked, “I heard that Jack is from Hestia, the continent surrounded by a special barrier. If not for the
Whirling World, they would still be cut off from the other worlds. I heard that resources are incredibly scarce there…”
“They don’t really interact with other worlds as well. Other than Jack, all of them are very mundane. Do you think Jack is the
diamond among coal? Maybe Jack is just an unknown variable, or maybe he has some secrets.”
Dagda shook his head. “Who knows? We’re just guessing right now. It’s not like we’ve seen Jack before. Honestly, I really want
to meet him. I feel like he must have a very unique past.”
The man in the green robes shook his head. “Let’s forget about Jack for now. We should think about what we’re doing next. I

don’t think we can stay here anymore. Who knows what will happen if we do? It will probably not be anything good…”
“When we came over, didn’t we see so many corpses on the road? None of them looked like their death was easy. It’s obvious
they were tortured by warriors from second-grade worlds for Heartblood.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3559

• • •

“They killed so many at once and put them so obviously for all to see. Isn’t that just to make sure that warriors from third-grade
worlds see it to inspire fire and cause us to produce even more Heartblood?!”
Saying that, the green-robed man’s face soured. He gritted his teeth, and there was hate in his eyes.
“Those dogs… They should all go to hell!”
As time passed, the inner region’s battles grew even more intense. The number of deaths rose rapidly, and the warriors from
second-grade worlds used even more ruthless methods.
Many warriors from third-grade worlds had died. Just thinking about that made the eight of them furious.
Unfortunately, even with the eight of them together, they were unable to get revenge. If they were not careful, they might even
die.
Dagda sighed. “Let’s go in a bit and leave this place…”

Dagda was the strongest among the eight of them, followed by Airn. Thus, the two of them made all the decisions. Dagda
decided to leave, and among the other seven, four of them silently agreed. The other three, however, seemed not too pleased
with the decision.
One of them said, “I feel like we don’t have to be in such a hurry. I know it’s very dangerous inside, but we’re only on the
outskirts. We aren’t really going that deep. Even though it’s dangerous here as well, the danger level isn’t as high.”
“The inner region’s deepest parts are the true hell. I know that this place will slowly become incredibly dangerous too, but it’s still
safe now. We’ll have to leave eventually, but it’s probably not right now. We’ve been here for a week, but we haven’t even gotten
fifteen golden keys on average.”
“Even if we’ll get some good things, I still feel a bit reluctant to leave right now. It’s a bit of a pity. Even if this place is dangerous,
there are a lot of opportunities here too. If we stay for a bit more, we’ll be able to get more keys. Why don’t you think about it
again, Dagda?”

When he finished saying that, the other two nodded in agreement.
In the end, they were not very happy with the number of golden keys they earned. They would only reap more rewards if they
had more keys.
They had taken such a huge risk, and had fought so many battles and experienced so much, but they were just going to bring a
little over ten keys back. They were a bit reluctant to accept that.
The others who agreed with Dagda were not very happy as well, but they were more worried about the dangers they might meet
if they remained there. If they encountered anything they could not handle, there would be nothing they could do about it.
Dagda sighed. “I know what you’re all thinking, but I’ve made my decision after much deliberation. We can’t stay here anymore.
Those dogs will just get more vicious…”
“Don’t forget how much Heartblood is needed to open the Radiant Hall. Tons and tons need to be poured into it. They should’ve
gathered quite a bit already, but it’s still far from enough. If the circumstances permitted if, they’d even kill their own. For the

Radiant Hall, they've thrown everything else aside, focusing on doing everything they can to obtain the Heartblood. It's just too
dangerous to stay here."
The three of them exchanged looks of helplessness. After thinking about it, they nodded.
Dagda was right. No matter what happened, the warriors from second-grade worlds would probably not give up on opening the
Radiant Hall.
It was said that the Radiant Hall had treasures that could even strengthen a person from their very roots. Those treasures were
incredibly valuable.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3560

• • •

Right at that moment, they suddenly heard rumbling from a distance. It was like massive hooves were racing across the grounds.

They noticed it at the same time, and all of them stood up to look into the distance. Yet, their vision had been obscured by the
hills.

Dagda frowned as he patted Airn on the back. “I’ll go take a look. All of you, wait here!”

The moment he said that, Dagda shot up into the air to look at the situation. Looking around, Dagda’s heart almost jumped out of
his chest

A mature Crimson Tortoise was rushing toward them from the left, while a massive Ice Toad was leaping their way from the right.

There was even a Red Fox Beast charging at them from behind.

The three beasts all had warriors who were wearing the same clothes in front of them, leading the beasts with the eight warriors
at the center!

Dagda’s face darkened, immediately realizing how bad the situation was. It reeked of a plot.
The eight of them had probably been targeted by the warriors from second-grade worlds. Their Heartbloods were probably the
cause of this ambush.
About one kilometer away from Dagda, Jack and Rudy stood on a hill, frowning as they looked right at Dagda’s direction. They
could see Dagda in the air at that moment.
“It’s true after all. This is really happening!” exclaimed Rudy anxiously. “To kill others, there’s nothing they won’t do!”
Right after he said that, Rudy turned to look at Jack. He wanted to ask Jack if they should save those eight pitiful warriors, but he
swallowed his words before he said that. He did not want to disturb Jack’s thoughts.
Jack narrowed his eyes. “This isn’t right. We can’t be reckless right now.”
Rudy looked at Jack curiously. “What’s wrong?”
Jack took a deep breath as he turned to look around. However, the hills obstructed most of his vision, and he could not see
anything at all.
He frowned, thinking about it seriously. “In the first place, they shouldn’t be doing all this just to kill those people.”

Jack was incredibly sure as he said that, and Rudy blinked, asking, “And why isn’t killing their sole purpose? What else do they
want? Could they be aiming for Heartblood?”
Jack nodded, answering, “Their main aim should be to get Heartblood. Let me ask you, how have the warriors from secondgrade
worlds been treating the warriors from third-grade worlds? Do they hate the warriors from third-grade worlds as much as
the other way around?”
Rudy thought about it earnestly and shook his head. “No. There’s not much hatred in it. The warriors from second-grade worlds
just treat third-grade-world warriors as lambs for slaughter. They see warriors from third-grade worlds as livestock, and nothing
comes from true hatred.”
Jack took a deep breath and nodded honestly. “That’s why there’s something wrong.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3561

. . .

When that was said, they suddenly heard a few explosions.
Jack and Rudy immediately looked toward the source of the explosions. The three beasts had already started fighting with the
eight warriors, and energy waves of various colors could be seen. Even if it was a distance away, Jack could tell that those eight
warriors were no match for the three beasts.
After all, those three beasts were not weak. Their natural born techniques were at the middle ultimate god rank. If the three
beasts were warriors then, they would stand at the top of the hierarchy.
The eight warriors might not be weak, but they were still not at the level of those three beasts. Thankfully, they had numbers so
they started with an equal playing field. However, that would not last long and would soon be quickly destroyed.
Rudy frowned and said anxiously, “What’s wrong with the situation? Jack, my brain is full right now. Just tell me. I can’t figure it

out.”
Jack nodded, “Heartblood can only be collected when a person is alive. Once they die, it would be of no value no matter how much is collected. So, they have to keep those warriors alive if they want Heartblood…”
“Those beasts aren’t warriors from second-grade worlds. The beast has a natural animosity toward humans. The moment the beasts attack, they attack to kill their foes. If they kill the humans, they would also get blood beads. I already said it, those warriors want to collect Heartblood, they aren’t just looking to kill.”
Rudy understood it immediately. If they were aiming for Heartblood, then they would need to guarantee that the group of eight was not killed by the beasts. However, there was no way those there would be able to accomplish that. That was why Jack said there was something wrong with the situation and did not attack immediately.
Rudy said seriously, “So, you think people are lying in wait here?”
Jack took a deep breath, “Yes! It’s no Ionger just a suspicion. I’m already sure of it. The two who were leading the beasts earlier

had been constantly communicating to exchange their locations, but they should have been communicating with the other warriors from second-grade worlds as well.”

Jack paused as he narrowed his eyes and continued, “This is such a huge plot, but it’s only targeting those eight warriors. Even if they kill all eight of those warriors and gather all the Heartblood, there are still some things I can’t figure out…”

Rudy widened his eyes, “I think it’s very worth it! Jack, just think about it. The eight of them have quite a lot of golden keys. When the eight of them die, not only would you get the Heartblood, but the golden keys as well…”

“The three beasts aren’t cheap either! After killing the eight warriors, I doubt they’ll let those beasts off!”

Jack turned around in surprise. He nodded slightly, “You’re right! You hit it right on the head. The eight of them are definitely the goal, but the three beasts are as well. After killing the three beasts, not only would they get rewards, the beasts have cores that can also be sold at high prices. It’s definitely worth it!”

Rudy nodded. Jack narrowed his eyes and looked around, “Let’s not go over. We should look for the ones that are hiding first!”

Bang!

The fox swiped on the ground, sending up a dust cloud.

Thankfully, Dagda had been quick to dodge, or it would have been his blood instead of dust!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3562

• • •

The Red Fox Beast was incredibly hard to deal with. It was quick and its claws were incredibly sharp. Regular weapons could do nothing against the claws at all.

Dagda clenched his teeth and his eyes reddened. He clutched his left arm. No matter how fast he dodged, he had still been
injured by the sharp claws even though he did not get killed by the fox.

Thankfully, the wound was not too deep and did not affect his ability to fight. However, it meant that this battle would not last too
long. There might be eight of them, but they were still no match for the three beasts.

Beasts had never lived together harmoniously, but when they faced the same opponents, they would work together.

Airn wiped off the sweat from her forehead. The Crimson Tortoise’s natural-born technique was nothing to be trifled with.

Every time it used the technique, it would dramatically increase the temperature. Earlier, he had just narrowly avoided a blast,

but he still failed to avoid the high temperatures. If he had not dodged far enough, even his eyebrows would have been burned.
The eight warriors were all in a circle. They worked together to fight and left no holes. That was the only way they had barely
managed to hold on.
Airn panted while saying, “Dagda! Figure something out! We can’t hold on much longer. We won’t be able to beat them. We have
to escape!”
Dagda nodded, he was looking for a chance as well. They were being attacked in three directions by the beasts, so the only way for them to escape was toward the south.
However, the three warriors from second-grade worlds were standing there and looking on coldly. Dagda did not know how strong those three were, but they were definitely not slow. They must have learned some highly ranked
speed techniques which was why the three beasts had not managed to catch up. The eight of them ended up being the targets
instead.
The three warriors did not leave and merely watched on coldly. It was obvious that the three of them had deliberately lured those
beasts there.

If the eight warriors escaped in that direction, they would definitely be stopped. Then, they would face attacks from all four sides,
and the situation would be disastrous.
The person behind Dagda was the one who had voiced out against leaving before. That person had a sour look on his face, “I
regret everything so much! I can’t believe these guys are so despicable. Even before he stepped into the deeper parts of the
inner region, they’re still using such despicable methods against us!”
Dagda shouted out, “Is it the time to say this? Just shut up!”
Four hundred meters away from the battle, there was an intricately laid concealment formation.
The formation had three people inside who were coldly observing the battle. They were waiting for the perfect moment when
both sides were heavily injured. Then, they would rush out and attack both sides with the other three.
The six of them would be able to get everything they wanted. The one standing at the front was Goran Minsk, from the secondgrade
world, Triflame Continent.
Behind him were his fellow disciples, Morrison and Reyes.

Goran raised an eyebrow and said, “I think they’ll be able to last for five more minutes. Do any of you want to take a bet? I’ll bet
three golden keys.”
Morrison smiled and shook his head, saying, “Goran, you’re too rich. You just took out three golden keys to bet just like that. I
can’t afford it. If I lose, I’d be gutted.”
Reyes scoffed at Morrison, saying with disdain, “And you get so unhappy when I call you stingy. Can you really not afford three
golden keys? You have over thirty on you. You’re already feeling the pain with just a tenth of your keys.”
Morrison’s lips twitched as he looked at Reyes unhappily, “I don’t spend recklessly as you do. I just like to take care of my money
properly. Three more golden keys might actually get me a higher-ranked treasure. It might be worth several times more.”
Ryees scoffed, “Dream on! Do you think the ones who designed the Whirling World are idiots? With just three keys, you want a
whole different level of treasures?!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3563

. . .

“Do you really think your intelligence can compare to the ancient heroes? It’s one thing to talk about it when it’s just us, but make
sure you don’t let any outsiders hear you. Otherwise, they’ll definitely laugh at you. They’ll even wonder if there’s something
wrong with your head. They’ll start questioning how people even get into our clan.”

The moment that was said, Morrison was practically stomping his foot in anger.

His face reddened as he pointed at Reyes, “What did you say, you…”

Before he could finish, he was interrupted by Goran, “Alright, both of you shut up! Why are you fighting right now?”

Just as they were quarreling, Jack slowly closed in on their position with his mask on. With the concealment formation, the three
of them could not be seen by anyone outside at all. That piece of land would seem completely empty. Of course, that was if the other side did not touch the formation.

The moment it was touched or anyone walked into the area, they would feel something wrong. Anyone with higher soul energies
would even be able to see through it immediately.
When the three of them saw that someone was there, they immediately shut their mouths as they stared at the person. That
person had green robes on and a white mask. He was alone, and there did not seem to be anything off about him.
It was just that the person was walking slowly as if he was just sightseeing. They were less than a few hundred meters away
from the battle. Anyone would be able to hear what was going on.
Goran raised an eyebrow as he coldly looked at Jack, observing his every move.
Jack had clearly heard what was happening.
Any normal person would have gone to check on the sounds, but this person did not seem to be in a hurry at all. No matter how
intense the explosions got, the person did not seem to react at all.
Walking past the concealment formation, Jack did not avert his gaze as he continued walking forward.
Seeing no reaction from Jack, Goran relaxed.

That person was probably just passing by, and would not interrupt their plans. Goran decided against doing anything about it.
Jack had gone around in one big circle before returning to his original spot, and Rudy had remained hidden the whole time.
When he saw that Jack was back, he ran over excitedly.
“Did you find them? You went over so boldly, did you really not alert them?”
Jack walked to Rudy’s side, “I found them! Don’t worry, they won’t be alerted. Those people have big plans, so they would have
planned everything. There’s no way they would just hide in a corner. They would have to put up a concealment formation…”
“Those on the inside could see outside, but those on the outside would not be able to see inside. If I was a normal warrior, I
would not have found their hiding spot but it’s because I’m no normal warrior. A simple concealment formation like that is full of weaknesses.”
Rudy widened his eyes. He had never heard of any weaknesses before. In his eyes, a concealment formation was an incredibly
high-ranked one. It was incredibly valuable as well.

Furthermore, he had seen in books before that it was impossible to notice without actually touching it or having high soul energy.
Why was it full of weaknesses in Jack’s eyes instead?
It was a completely different evaluation.
Was he just inexperienced?
In truth, it was not that Rudy was inexperienced. It was not just he, even warriors from third or second-grade worlds would not
have understood Jack.
Jack only said there were a lot of weaknesses with the help of the memories he had obtained. With those memories, the
concealment formation was useless in his eyes.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3564

. . .

After all, Jack’s memories were from experts at the peak of a first-grade world. Those experts had to go through a lot to get to
their level. What they had seen and experienced was not something normal warriors would ever encounter.
Those guys thought that their concealment formation would be able to block anyone’s perception, but in his eyes, it was
completely useless. Concealment formations had a unique energy fluctuation. Jack’s soul was incredibly strong, and he
immediately felt it.
The spot of the formation did not seem to fit with the surrounding area. Simple formations like that would be impossible to deal
with by anyone else, but they were just filled with holes in Jack’s eyes.
Just by using his soul to change a few of the energy runes, he would be able to see inside immediately.
He had clearly seen those three observing him in earnest. The three of them had robes that were special to warriors of secondgrade

worlds. On top of that, it was easy to tell from the pride on their faces that they were no ordinary warriors, and were not
weak.
Rudy stood there quietly, looking at Jack’s ever-changing expressions.
He frowned and said anxiously, “They won’t hold on for much longer! Should we go help them?”
Explosions were constantly heard ahead, and various waves of energy constantly clashed in the air. The eight warriors were
getting weaker and weaker. Even if they were barely holding on, Rudy was sure that they would not be able to last much longer.
If they did not do anything, it would be impossible to save those eight warriors. However, when Rudy said that, he felt a bit guilty.
He was feeling anxious, but he could not help at all. They would need to rely on Jack to turn the tables.
Rudy pursed his lips, suddenly feeling like he was completely useless.
Just as he wanted to retract his words, Jack suddenly said, “Go into Mustard Seed for now. Leave the rest to me!”
After that, Jack waved, and a dense power of space started to wrap around Rudy, suddenly causing Rudy to disappear.

They were in a dangerous area after all. If a strong warrior spotted Rudy along the way and decided to kill him, there was no way
Rudy could even fight back. After all, Rudy's skills were only sufficient for level nine cities.
Jack turned to look at the distant battle. At that moment, all eight warriors were already injured, and they seemed to all be barely
holding on.
He could even tell that the strongest one among the eight was clenching his teeth with reddened eyes.
Jack sighed as he activated the laws of space, disappearing from the spot.
Dagda's hands trembled slightly. The pain in his arm told him he was losing time. If he did not end the battle quickly, than he
would not be able to bear his injuries anymore. It might just end up dying right there!
Airn's eyes were red.
He had already planned for the worst, "Dagda! We have to launch our final assault or we won't have any more time! We've
already expended at least a third of our true energy. If we keep going like this, we'll just die! No matter what, we should at least
try something. Even if we have to die, at least we'll die a good death!"

Dagda looked at Aim emotionally. Various emotions were running through his head. His memories constantly surfaced. He had
left his family to participate in his clan’s tests, and from his talent, he had become an inner disciple, slowly climbing upward.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3565

. . .

Many geniuses had lost to him on his road to improving himself before he became a chosen disciple, and was sent to the
Whirling World by his clan. He still remembered what the head of his clan told him before he left.
He was told to watch out for danger. Even though there were opportunities where there was danger, he still needed to watch out
for himself.
His life was the most important. He was told to make sure he left the Whirling World alive. He had assured everyone that he
would not disappoint them and that he would become someone truly strong after going through the Whirling World.
Those dreams he once had were quickly disappearing. Even though he did not want to admit it, the reality was right in front of
them.
The chances of them making it out alive was probably only at thirty percent. Even thirty percent could be considered an

overestimation. The other warriors around him were also starting to tear up.
They could guess what the results were as well.
Death was something they found hard to accept.
Even though they knew that the Whirling World was a place filled with death,
they felt true fear when it was right in front of them.
Dagda took a deep breath and forced himself to throw those thoughts aside.
He shouted out, “We can’t go on like this. I’ve already looked at them just now, and the Crimson Tortoise should be the weakest
one. It’s our only chance, so listen to my orders later!”
The green-robed man was on the verge of tears, “I feel like it’s too dangerous! We might not be able to do it!”
He really was scared at that point. After all, it was the most dangerous situation he had ever been in.
Airn’s lips stiffened as he turned around to glare at the green-robed man coldly, “This is our last chance! Toss your fear aside.
Even if we die, we have to at least try!”
Airn’s words stirred their hearts.
All eight of them clenched their teeth as they tried to compose themselves, waiting for Dagda’s orders.
Dagda stabbed his sword forward again, and a red glow shot out right at the Ice Toad’s massive tongue.

The Ice Toad’s tongue could shoot out as far as twenty meters. There was a sticky and disgusting liquid on it, and it was also
incredibly frosty. The liquid would stick to anything the tongue hits, and ice would form around the place it touches. Unless they
tore away their flesh, they would be completely wrapped up by the long tongue, never able to get out.
Forcing the tongue back, Dagda panted. At that moment, he was still recovering his strength. Right as he was at his weakest, the
fox launched forward to strike him.
Dagda’s expression darkened. It was very possible that he would not be able to avoid that strike.
Airn was on the other end, and would not be able to get to him.
The green-robed man who was closest to Dagda immediately helped. However, before the man could even do anything, two
fireballs the size of his fists were launched at him.
The green-robed man was forced to defend himself, losing the chance to help Dagda.
Dagda’s heart chilled at that, feeling that getting struck by the fox would at least cause him to lose half of his fighting capabilities.

In such a serious situation, it was as good as losing a whole limb. He had lost sight of any chance at victory. Yet, no matter how
dire the situation was, Dagda did not want to give up just like that. He held his breath and planned on blocking the fox.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3566

. . .

At that moment, the fox’s head was incredibly close to Dagda. Its sinister eyes were filled with murderous intent.

Its sharp claws hit Dagda’s sword, and Dagda could clearly hear his sword starting to crack the moment it was hit as if it was
about to crumble.

Dagda closed his eyes, knowing that he was at his limits.

He took a deep breath and summoned up all his strength, “I’ll fight you to the death! Even if I die, I’ll make sure to cause you
some serious injury first!”

Dagda was already prepared to risk everything, but an intense howling wind was suddenly heard coming from afar. Right after
that, he heard the fox cry out in agony.

Dagda suddenly opened his eyes. He saw a man in dark green robes holding a gray sword in hand, hitting the claws away in one
blow. The fox’s main weapons were its sharp claws. That man had actually sliced the fox’s right claw in half from one strike!

Blood splattered everywhere. Dagda had not been able to react at all when the blood splattered all over his body. A thick smell
assaulted his nose, but it did not affect Dagda at all. Dagda looked at that man as if he was looking at a god.
The others finally reacted as well. All of them widened their eyes as they looked at that man in surprise!
Airn could not help but say, “So strong!”
They had fought the fox for so long and had not been able to do any significant damage to the fox at all. Yet, that man had sliced
away one of the fox’s claws the moment the man attacked. The gulf between them was obvious.
Dagda’s voice was a bit hoarse, but he still said, “Thank you so much!”
Jack turned around and nodded slightly, not saying anything.
The three warriors from second-grade worlds who were looking on could not remain calm at that moment.
The three of them had tried so hard to lure those beasts there so the three beasts and eight warriors would battle it out and end
up injured so they could reap the benefits.
Yet, someone had suddenly appeared and disrupted their plans.

The one in the middle was a short-haired man. The short-haired man stared coldly at Jack, and his eyes were full of anger.
Jack scoffed at the short-haired man.
Jack was a man of principle. If the other side did not do anything to him, then it did not matter if they were from third or secondgrade
worlds, He could not attack them first. However, this time, he had been disgusted by their despicable methods.
Those arrogant men had always treated warriors from third-grade worlds as prey that they could do anything with. The methods
they used were so underhanded. Other than those incredibly selfish warriors from third-grade worlds, anyone else would not be
able to remain calm at the sight.
The short-haired man let out a smile of disdain as he looked at the other party. Jack wore a mask, so he could only see Jack's
cold eyes.
The short-haired man said, "You're a bit skilled, but don't be too happy! No matter how skilled you are, you won't be able to get
out of this alive since you decided to interfere. You'll die here just like those eight pieces oftrash. It'll be the price you pay for
interfering with us."

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3567

. . .

The short-haired man’s tone was incredibly cold. When the eight warriors heard that, their expressions darkened greatly.

Airn shouted, ”You’re the ones who shouldn’t be so pleased with yourselves! Even if I have to die today, I’ll make sure you pay
the iron price!”

Air felt like he was going to blow up from his anger. Those guys talked in such a disgusting manner. At that moment, he truly did
want to put his life on the line to make those three pay.

Jack smirked, not saying anything. The others could not understand what the short-haired man actually meant, but he
understood. Other than those three, there were still another three who were hiding in a concealment formation not far away.

If the six of them attacked together, it really would be difficult. It was because of that, the short-haired man was acting so
arrogantly.

However, Jack did not mind. Even with another three, he would still have the ability to make them pay a painful price!

The fox temporarily stopped attacking after half of its claw was lost. It retreated and licked its wounds, but its eyes were full of rage. Jack had thoroughly angered the beast, and with the beast's temperament, there was no way it would let Jack off.

It suited Jack perfectly. The other two beasts had stopped for the moment because of what happened as well. The intense battlefield suddenly turned strangely quiet, but everyone there knew that it was just a temporary peace. It would not take that long for the peace to be broken!

The three in the concealment formation were stunned when Jack appeared. After all, Jack had just passed by earlier and did not seem to act strangely at all. Yet, Jack had suddenly appeared just like that, which caught them off guard.

Reyes frowned and said, "What is happening?! Why did this guy suddenly appear there?! Wasn't he moving forward? Why did he suddenly turn around? Did he suddenly change his mind? Was he not planning on interfering, but ended up deciding to?"

Morrison turned and rolled his eyes at Reyes, “What are you even saying? He’s already on the battlefield anyway, so what’s the
point of trying to figure out why? Right now, we need to figure out how to deal with this!”
Reyes was speechless after Morrison’s words.
Goran sighed and said, “Is this the time to fight? Keep quiet!”
Morrison knew how to read the mood and immediately decided against continuing to exchange words with Reyes.
He said, “What do we do now? Should we go there right now? I feel like the other three might not be able to handle the situation.
That guy doesn’t seem weak. He managed to slice the fox’s claws in one slash. That’s not something an ordinary warrior can
do.”
Goran nodded as various thoughts surfaced in his head.
After a moment, he said coldly, “We’ll wait a bit more! This isn’t the time to strike! We need to wait until both sides are heavily
injured before we reap the benefits, and not join in too early, dragging ourselves inside. The three of us aren’t as fast as the other

three. If we join now, we could very well end up injured. Don’t forget what we’re meant to do, and don’t forget our goal.”
Morrison nodded seriously, feeling like Goran was right! The situation was not that bad at the moment.
Jack turned to look at Dagda.
At that moment, his back was facing the three warriors, and only the eight warriors from third-grade worlds were facing him.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3568

. . .

Jack lowered his voice and said quickly, “Listen to my orders after this!”

Jack had said it incredibly quickly, and normally, the other side would hesitate. He could clearly tell that Dagda had some
hesitation on his face.

It was expected. Even though Jack had just saved him, it was not like Dagda would completely believe Jack. After all, Dagda
was also afraid of being used as cannon fodder. In this situation, it would be incredibly easy to sacrifice the eight of them.

Even though Jack could see Dagda’s hesitation, Dagda still nodded after a few seconds of silence. There was no other way around it. Without Jack around, he might have already lost the ability to fight, and the eight of them
would have met a cruel death.

Jack raised an eyebrow as he raised his hand to take off his mask. His face was completely revealed to the eight of them.

When they saw Jack’s face, all of them widened their eyes. Airn gaped, feeling incredibly stunned!

Dagda almost lost his voice, “It’s you…”
It turns out to be Jack!
The Jack that regular warriors from third-grade worlds all regarded as a hero. He had saved the warriors from third-grade worlds
more than once but was like a lone wolf that rarely moved in any groups.
After accomplishing something, Jack would immediately disappear. No one knew where he was going. They could not believe
how lucky they were to meet Jack at such a crucial moment!
Airn was starting to breathe heavily. He admired Jack a lot. He knew that Jack was from Hestia Continent.
The fact that Jack managed to reach such heights in terms of skills truly was worthy of respect. Even if Jack had some secrets,
he still needed to rely on his own talent.
Jack frowned and said, “Don’t act surprised! We can’t let them guess it!”
The moment he said that, all of them realized that Jack had taken off his mask after turning around to not alert their opponents of
his identity. He planned on catching them off guard.
When Jack saw that the eight of them were very obedient, he quickly assigned their tasks!

All eight of them nodded, assuring that they would do their best to accomplish those tasks. With Jack by their side, all of them
were full of confidence.
Jack turned around again, and the three beasts were starting to move again.
Earlier, his sudden attack had instilled fear in those beasts, but it could still not dissuade the three beasts from wanting to kill the
humans. Unless they felt that their lives were in danger, they would absolutely not turn around and run!
After all, they would be able to get blood beads just by killing humans. After absorbing the blood beads, they would become even
more powerful. Humans were basically moving treasures in their eyes that they would not let go of easily!
Jack ignored those beasts as he looked at the three warriors!
The short-haired man stared right at Jack. If looks could kill, Jack would have already died a hundred times.
Jack shot Dagda and the others a look, and the eight of them nodded at the same time.
Jack smirked as he started to form seals. A ring that was the size of a head appeared in front of Jack. Red runes that constantly

changed were on the ring, and the glow illuminated his face, giving Jack a sinister look to him.
He shot forward incredibly quickly. His target was those three who were incredibly quick!
The other eight would hold back the three beasts so the beasts would not trouble Jack.
The three of them were stunned when they saw Jack rushing at them alone. They had seen Jack giving out orders as well, but
they never expected Jack to ask the eighth warriors to hold back the three beasts while he attempted to fight the three of them
alone!
At that moment, they felt incredibly amused.
The other party might be skilled, but they had three of them, while he was alone. They felt like he was just committing suicide by
rushing at them!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3569

. . .

The short-haired man scoffed while he started to form seals.

Countless seals began to fuse into the sword he had in hand. The three of them were not afraid of Jack at all, feeling like Jack
was acting too boldly!

However, just in case, the three of them still planned on attacking with all their might. They pulled out their weapons at the same
time, activating their techniques as they attacked Jack!

Jack did not even blink. If he had not gotten Soul Sky to the second stage, Jack might not have been so confident. However, it
was different from before. He had a storm god rank technique.

The three in front of him only had lower ultimate god rank techniques that were at the second or third stage at most. Even if the
three of them attacked together, they were still no match for Soul Sky.

The Soul Burst Ring rapidly expanded in the air, completely surrounding the three techniques that were rushing at Jack!
The three of them felt a wave of tempestuous energy charging at them! Before they could react, they heard three explosions
near them!
They looked on as their own techniques were utterly destroyed, disappearing, and they were completely stunned.
They knew that the person in front of them would not be easy to deal with, but they never expected him to be so strong!
Even the three of them working together was no match for him at all. After the Soul Burst Ring destroyed those three techniques,
it continued to charge at them.
The three of them had just spent all their power and were incredibly weak. They tried to summon up their true energy to protect
themselves, but it was completely useless!
The Soul Burst Ring enveloped them and exploded again! The three of them died in an instant.
Jack had only used a few seconds to do all of that.
The other warriors were still holding back the three beasts. The explosions

attracted their attention, and they looked over to see those three arrogant warriors being completely blown apart, falling onto the
ground with blood splattered all over.
Dagda was completely stunned, and was almost hit by that red fox’s remaining claw! All of them were gaping as they looked at
Jack in disbelief.
They knew that Jack was incredibly strong. They had heard quite a few stories about Jack, but personally seeing it was
completely different. The three of them were at a loss for words from the shock.
It was not just them who were shocked. Goran and the others were completely frozen as well, unable to say anything.
When Jack rushed forward, they thought that he would die. After all, Jack was going against three enemies alone. Yet, it had
been the complete opposite. Jack fought against those three and won without any pressure at all.
Morrison could not help but say, “That’s a monster! My god! He’s absolutely a monster!”
Those skills would even be able to stand up to those at the top of second-grade worlds. Most importantly, warriors of that caliber,
should not all of them be in the deepest part of the inner region?

Why did one of them suddenly appear here?
The three of them were shocked and confused!
Reyes said, “What do we do now? Should we give up? Or should we go over?”
Morrison was incredibly anxious at those words, “What are you even saying?! Go over? Do you want to die?! Didn’t you see how
those three died?!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3570

. . .

The short-haired man scoffed while he started to form seals.

Countless seals began to fuse into the sword he had in hand. The three of them were not afraid of Jack at all, feeling like Jack
was acting too boldly!

However, just in case, the three of them still planned on attacking with all their might. They pulled out their weapons at the same
time, activating their techniques as they attacked Jack!

Jack did not even blink. If he had not gotten Soul Sky to the second stage, Jack might not have been so confident. However, it
was different from before. He had a storm god rank technique.

The three in front of him only had lower ultimate god rank techniques that were at the second or third stage at most. Even if the
three of them attacked together, they were still no match for Soul Sky.

The Soul Burst Ring rapidly expanded in the air, completely surrounding the three techniques that were rushing at Jack!
The three of them felt a wave of tempestuous energy charging at them! Before they could react, they heard three explosions
near them!
They looked on as their own techniques were utterly destroyed, disappearing, and they were completely stunned.
They knew that the person in front of them would not be easy to deal with, but they never expected him to be so strong!
Even the three of them working together was no match for him at all. After the Soul Burst Ring destroyed those three techniques,
it continued to charge at them.
The three of them had just spent all their power and were incredibly weak. They tried to summon up their true energy to protect
themselves, but it was completely useless!
The Soul Burst Ring enveloped them and exploded again! The three of them died in an instant.
Jack had only used a few seconds to do all of that.
The other warriors were still holding back the three beasts. The explosions

attracted their attention, and they looked over to see those three arrogant warriors being completely blown apart, falling onto the
ground with blood splattered all over.
Dagda was completely stunned, and was almost hit by that red fox’s remaining claw! All of them were gaping as they looked at
Jack in disbelief.
They knew that Jack was incredibly strong. They had heard quite a few stories about Jack, but personally seeing it was
completely different. The three of them were at a loss for words from the shock.
It was not just them who were shocked. Goran and the others were completely frozen as well, unable to say anything.
When Jack rushed forward, they thought that he would die. After all, Jack was going against three enemies alone. Yet, it had
been the complete opposite. Jack fought against those three and won without any pressure at all.
Morrison could not help but say, “That’s a monster! My god! He’s absolutely a monster!”
Those skills would even be able to stand up to those at the top of second-grade worlds. Most importantly, warriors of that caliber,
should not all of them be in the deepest part of the inner region?

Why did one of them suddenly appear here?
The three of them were shocked and confused!
Reyes said, “What do we do now? Should we give up? Or should we go over?”
Morrison was incredibly anxious at those words, “What are you even saying?! Go over? Do you want to die?! Didn’t you see how
those three died?!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3571

. . .

The three beasts were too strong. No matter how well the three of them worked together, they were unable to gain an advantage.

They were holding on, but it did not mean it would last forever. As time went on, the eight of them would gradually lose.

Jack looked on for a moment before he said to Dagda, “Alright, it’s time!”

The moment that was said, Jack attacked again. A hundred Soul Swords condensed into a massive Soul Sword, shooting right at the Ice Toad. The Ice Toad was not as intelligent as humans, but it still had a certain level of intelligence.

Earlier, Jack had dealt with three humans in one blow. The three beasts remembered it clearly, the Ice Toad naturally did not face Jack head on, and immediately dodged to the side.

There was immediately an opening amongst the three beasts, and the eight warriors slipped out of the opening, breaking
through the beasts. Jack nodded at the eight warriors and immediately turned around to rush at the concealment formation!
The eight of them quickly followed behind Jack. The three beasts chased after them, and the three warriors in the concealment formation widened their eyes. They were being
led toward them! What were they going to do? Did they notice them?
The three of them suddenly broke out in cold sweat as their eyes widened. Their hearts were racing, feeling like it was going to
jump out of their throats the next moment.
Morrison was completely terrified, “What are they doing?! Did they notice us? That’s impossible! Concealment formations can shield us from most senses. That guy clearly just walked past us just now, not touching the formation at all. He could not have
noticed us!”

Reyes frowned, his expression darkened as well, “He didn’t notice us? Then what are they doing?! That guy should be able to deal with those three beasts with no problem at all, but he refused to kill them, and led them to us instead!”

Goran’s heart was beating rapidly. His eyes were about to pop out of their sockets.

At that moment, he deeply felt what the true meaning of panic was. He did not know if he should flee the concealment formation right away or gamble his life and remain put. He was not sure if those people were targeting them, and if those people noticed them or not!

The moment they left the concealment formation, they would lose their only security net. All of them would be revealed, and the moment they were, the other side would not let them off. After all, they were so close, that guy would definitely start to attack them.

If they did not speak at all, they might be able to stay there! He wondered if they should gamble on the other side to not notice

them. If that were the case, then staying there would be the safest!
Time was going by quickly, and the more they waited, the more tense the situation was.
Just as he was hesitating, Jack and the others already appeared in front of them. At that moment, Jack suddenly raised his hand, and Soul Swords appeared.
The three of them immediately understood that Jack had already noticed them a long time ago. Looking at the attack that was coming toward them, the three of them did not even think about it as they immediately fled the concealment formation. The three of them suddenly appeared, and Dagda and the others were stunned.
Airn’s lips twitched, “So they really are here. Those dogs were lying in wait to ambush us. ”
The battle earlier had happened too quickly, so they had not been able to think about the details, and had not bothered to think about their opponents’ goals.
Looking at the three that were concealed, they were suddenly furious. When Jack told them about it, they might have believed

Jack, but there was still a sliver of doubt in their minds.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3572

. . .

When they saw it, they suddenly felt their blood boiling. They were incredibly heated up!
Jack raised an eyebrow as he immediately went for those three. Those three were terrified when they saw Jack coming for them
and attempted to scatter.
However, Jack was already prepared. He activated the laws of space and suddenly disappeared. When he appeared again, he was already in front of Morrison.
Morrison was so scared that he almost cried when he saw Jack. He widened his mouth, wanting to scream, but his terror had
seized all his strength, and he was not even able to make a single sound.
Jack smirked, not intending on attacking. Jack merely stood in front of him.
Morrison held his breath, looking at Jack doubtfully.
Why was Jack not attacking?

However, the moment the thought surfaced in his head, he felt a cold chill from behind him. Morrison turned around only to see a sticky tongue with cold energy around it shooting toward his waist.

By the time he raised his weapon, the tongue was already wrapped around him. Morrison felt an unbearable icy frost starting to spread from his stomach to his whole body. He did everything he could to struggle, but he failed to free himself.

The tongue continued going around his body. The long tongue was like vines that were holding Morrison firmly in place!

The icy tongue was not just full of cold energy, but poisonous as well. Morrison's whole body was frozen solid, and his face was completely pale. His hands shivered slightly, and it felt like all the blood in his body was frozen.

Jack saw that Morrison was unable to escape and immediately turned to look at the other two. Jack had told Dagda and the others to hold the other two back and leave one to himself.

Dagda and the others did their jobs very well. The eight of them were split into two groups, with four stopping Goran and the other four stopping Reyes. However, compared to how easily he had dealt with things, the situation there was more complicated.

After all, they were not as quick as Jack was, and were not able to force their opponents to be exposed to the beasts.

To quickly resolve everything, Jack shot forward and immediately rushed over to help the eight of them.

He sent Reyes and Goran right into the range to attack the beasts. With Jack's help, everything was resolved incredibly quickly.

Jack did that because he wanted the three of them to get a taste of their own medicine.

Did the warriors from second-grade worlds not want to let the beasts fight the warriors from third-grade worlds until both sides were heavily injured?

Hence, Jack would let the three of them die to those beasts, but not that easily!

When the three of them were about to lose their lives, Jack dealt with the beasts, letting them live. At that moment, the three of
them no longer had any ability to fight back. They were not far away from death!
Jack tossed the three of them on the ground, coldly looking at them.
At that moment, they had already lost all hope.
Jack took off his mask, and when they saw his face, they were shocked.
Goran had been completely burnt by balls of fire, but his throat was still fine.
When he saw Jack’s face, Goran shouted crazily, “It’s you! It’s actually you!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3573

. . .

It was actually Jack, the unbeatable warrior that was beating all the warriors from second-grade worlds.

He had heard about Jack, and the other party's various exploits were known to them. Ever since Jack appeared, not a single warrior from a second-grade world had ever beaten Jack.

Jack was like a curse. All the warriors from second-grade worlds that had faced him had lost.

Before entering Chaos City, he even told his fellow disciples, "I hope I never meet Jack in my lifetime. That guy is a complete anomaly. His skills can't be underestimated, and whoever meets him will just be unlucky."

Reyes had said casually, "The Whirling World is so big, and the third-grade worlds only managed to produce one Jack. We won't be so unlucky to cross paths with him!"

Yet, it seemed like they really were that unlucky!
Jack looked at their complicated expressions and smiled, “You know who I am?”
The three of them were speechless. They did not just know the other party, they had constantly heard of Jack. His face had already been spread around all the second-grade worlds. Practically every warrior from a second-grade world knows him.
He was already regarded as a star of calamity in the second-grade world.
Jack took a deep breath, looking into the distance as he said calmly, “You warriors from second-grade worlds always seem to have a superiority complex. You never see others as human at all. Now, I’ll leave you to the eight of them.”
The eight of them were incredibly eager.
If Jack had not appeared, they would not have been able to leave this place alive, and they would have been tortured until they died as the warriors from second-grade worlds extracted every last bit of value out of them.

Just thinking about that, the eight of them were absolutely furious and filled with hate.
Hearing that, Goran and the others were terrified. They knew that the eight warriors would not let them off easily, and they would be slowly tortured for a long time. At that moment, the three of them wanted to kill themselves.
Jack immediately understood what they wanted to do from their expressions, and raised his sword to sever their limbs. They
would not be able to commit suicide with that.
He smiled before turning around to look at Dagda and the others.
At that moment, Dagda was full of admiration and respect for Jack. In their eyes, Jack was an unbeatable god and the hope of all
the warriors from third-grade worlds.
Jack nodded Dagda, “I’ll leave these men to you. I still have other things to do, so I’ll take my leave.”
Dagda felt a sense of pity when he heard that. They still wanted to stay with Jack. After all, it was incredibly hard to meet someone as strong and talented as him. Furthermore,

Jack also saved their lives. However, they merely expressed their thanks in the end. It was because they knew that they were
just people who Jack had happened to save by chance.
For Jack to spare the time to talk to them was already something they were grateful for.
After five minutes, Jack finally stepped into the deepest parts of the inner region. It was even more of a barren land there, and
the smell of blood was even thicker.
He pulled Rudy out of the Mustard Seed and told Rudy about what had happened earlier.
Rudy said emotionally, “We gained quite a lot this time! You gained another seventy-one golden keys! On top of the twenty-eight
from before, you have ninety-nine total! My god, you managed to get even more than before so quickly. If you use the golden
keys at the stage of the Nine, you’ll definitely be able to get something much better than last time!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3574

. . .

Rudy got more and more excited as he spoke. Even his hands were trembling.
Jack nodded with a smile, “I’ll leave five keys for you. You can go exchange something as well. Even though you’re an alchemist, it’s not bad to strengthen yourself.”
Hearing Jack says that, Rudy became emotional as tears threatened to fall. Jack did not blame him for dragging Jack down, and even gave him something!
For him Jack really was his great benefactor!
***

The two of them advanced as they talked and slowly realized that something was wrong. There were more and more corpses on the ground. Sometimes, two or three corpses would be scattered around, and other times, they would see seven or eight corpses stacked together, tainting the ground full of blood.

Those corpses had not been buried or burned at all. Upon closer inspection, they noticed that the corpses had died horribly.
The corpses were riddled with wounds. Some wounds were from claw marks, while others were bite marks. Some of them even had their stomachs opened up with their guts spilled out.
Rudy had seen many corpses before, and his ability to withstand sights like those was already quite high. However, even he was having a hard time. He felt like he was about to puke at any moment. It was just too disgusting! How did things end up like that?
Before this, around three-quarters of the dead were warriors from third-grade worlds, and only a quarter of them were from second-grade worlds. However, after entering the deepest part of the inner regions, he was shocked to notice that it was now half and half. Neither side seemed to have an advantage.
Two-thirds of the dead had probably come from the beasts. The wounds on their bodies were too obvious.

It was immediately recognizable. It seemed like the beasts in the deepest parts of the inner region were even fiercer than they had thought.

Rudy said after a long time, “Isn’t this too crazy of a sight? No wonder those who were inside were running away so frantically!

So many people have died. Other than the warriors that are stronger than normal, who would continue staying inside? It’s just too dangerous.”

As he said that, he even wondered how many people were left in the deepest parts of the inner region. After all, so many have died.

Only those who were incredibly brave or unconcerned about their lives would remain inside. Everyone wanted valuable treasures, but they would need to keep themselves alive to have them.

No matter what, warriors valued their lives. Unless they were really obsessed with treasures at the expense of everything else, they would probably not remain there.

Jack sighed as he looked into the distance. There were no traces of life to be seen anywhere near them.

He frowned and said, “There should still be some people who are remaining in the deepest parts. They probably feel that danger comes with opportunity and them being in such a dangerous environment would mean that they would gain much more than everyone else, bringing them to greater heights.”

Many people felt that way. Jack had encountered quite a few.

Rudy raised an eyebrow, wanting to say something when he suddenly saw two people frantically running outward in the distance.

It seemed like the two of them were like those Jack and Rudy had met. They must have not been able to stand the dangers of the deepest parts anymore and were fleeing fortheir lives. Of the two, one of them looked thin and a bit weak, but Jack and Rudy would not judge from appearances.

After all, in the martial world, appearances could be deceiving.
Anyone who could run out of the inner region would probably be at least somewhat skilled.
The other one seemed muscular but
had an incredibly small nose. His face looked very strange.
The two of them looked at Jack and Rudy, widening their eyes. After that, they exchanged a look.
Jack could see exasperation and mockery in their eyes. It was as if they were saying that he and Rudy were just suicidal.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3575

. . .

Seeing that expression, Jack was not surprised at all. Instead, he felt like it was quite normal. As they walked into the inner region from the outer region, he had seen so many with looks like that.

Rudy was clearly a bit uncomfortable. Those two were clearly not interested in him and Jack. Even if Jack had thirteen keys on him, and thirteen rings were glowing around Jack, the two of them still ignored him.

Jack raised an eyebrow as he used the laws of space, disappearing from the spot as he appeared in front of them.

The skinny man and the small-nosed man were both shocked as they looked at Jack in alarm.

The thin man immediately pointed his weapon at Jack, “What do you want?!”

Jack raised his hands in mock surrender as he said sincerely, “I don’t have any intentions. I just wanted to ask you two things.”

The small-nosed man frowned and said unhappily, “We have no interest in answering any questions, ask someone else.”
After he said that, the two of them planned on circling around to continue forward.
Jack was exasperated as he took out two pieces of purple gold the size of a thumb, “This is the fee.”
The two of them were stunned. The skinny man raised an eyebrow, grabbing the purple gold quickly.
He coughed and said, “Fine, what do you want to ask? Our time is limited. We don’t want to stay here for too long, so hurry up.”
Jack nodded, asking seriously, “What’s the situation inside right now? Is it too bad for even those who are a bit skilled?”
The small-nosed man looked at Jack with a complicated expression, as if he was confused.
He coughed and said seriously, “I would advise you against trying to go in to try your luck, and this guy with you will probably be
of no help. You’d just end up going in alone. The situation is incredibly bad inside. You’ll be in great danger if you go in alone. I’ll

just tell you straight up, you'll die if you go in. There's no other possibility."
The man said that incredibly firmly.
Probably because of the purple gold, there was atone of sincerity in his voice.
Jack nodded, asking, "Why is it so bad? Are the third-grade worlds and second-grade worlds fighting an open war?"
The skinny man sighed, "It's not just that. They're all crazy. Not a single person there is normal. For the sake of treasures, they're all going crazy."
To leave that place as soon as possible, the skinny man spoke very quickly.
He told Jack about everything, and after he finished, Jack and Rudy both frowned.
None of them expected the situation to be that bad.
Warriors from second and third-grade worlds already had a deep conflict with each other after everything that has happened. It was something that would never go away. They saw each other as enemies and wanted to kill each other. No one was willing to give way.

Even more, resources meant even more competition. There were many incredibly strong warriors in the deepest part of the inner region, and the fighting was even more intense. For the sake of beating their opponents, they were willing to resort to any means necessary, including using beasts.

Unbeknownst to them, however, the beasts had other plans.

The beasts that were at their peak were no less intelligent than humans. The strongest beast in Chaos City was a Black-scaled Tiger. Its natural-born technique was at the upper ultimate god realm, thus most of the warriors were no match for the tiger at all.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3576

. . .

It was also quick-witted with more than enough intelligence to scheme against humans.
The warriors from second-grade worlds tried to use the beasts against those from third-grade worlds and thus contacted the tiger
to work with them. They would tell the beasts where all the warriors from third-grade worlds were, allowing the Black-scaled Tiger
to lead a horde of beasts to kill the third-grade-world warriors.
However, the beasts had to keep the warriors alive so the warriors from second-grade worlds could retrieve the Heartblood. After
that, the beast could kill the warriors from second-grade worlds for the blood beads.
The second-grade-world warriors' offer was accepted by the Black-scaled Tiger, but oddly enough, the warriors noticed that
many of their own died as well and it was at the hands of beasts.

They slowly realized something was wrong, and when they investigated the matter, they were furious.
The Black-scaled Tiger was working with those from third-grade worlds as well!
Both sides provided information about each other, and the Black-scaled Tiger pretended to work with them.
It might have seemed that the tiger was accommodating all their requests, but the humans had, in fact, been duped!
The humans were infuriated. They cursed the Black-scaled Tiger for being shameless and despicable, but the tiger was not a human in the first place, having no sense of morality.
Everything it did was in consideration of its own benefits, it did not care what the humans said at all. It did as it pleased, gaining massive benefits.
In the end, humans died in massive numbers, and the inner region was filled with blood. Too many humans had died, and they

could not bear their anger. There was too much hatred between all three sides, so they agreed to settle everything through one
battle.
Practically every warrior in the deepest parts of the inner region rushed to the largest stage of the Nine at the deepest parts of
the inner region. The battle immediately started, but the casualties skyrocketed dangerously.
Those who saw that the situation
was bad and felt like they would just end up being cannon fodder gave up and tried to escape.
Those two were among those that felt like they would not be able to gain anything when the large battle started and would die
instead. That was why they were fleeing in such a hurry.
The skinny man sighed, saying helplessly, “It’s complete chaos in there. Nowhere is safe in the whole inner region, so I don’t
even plan on staying here anymore. I even feel like leaving Chaos City. It’s just too dangerous here!”

“I saw so many corpses the whole way. Death is so common in Chaos City. I was so excited at the start, but now? I just feel exhausted.

“It’s much better for me to go to Cloud City. Even though the challenges there aren’t any easier, it’d at least be safer. As long as I don’t take any risks, I won’t be in any danger. It’s different here. Even if you don’t do anything, danger comes at you from all corners.”

After saying that, he sighed, as if he had comprehended something important in life.

He turned to look at Jack. “Hey, I think you should just leave this place with us. You’re just going to die if you go in there.”

Jack knew he was speaking sincerely, so he nodded. “Thank you for telling me that. We’re just going to take a look inside. If the situation is bad, we’ll come out. My skills are decent enough that I can take care of myself. I’ve been in Chaos City for so long that if I don’t take a look at the final destination, all my efforts will be for naught”

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3577

• • •

Hearing Jack's words, the skinny man made no arguments and merely nodded. After that, he walked toward the outer region
with the small-nosed man.
Looking at the two of them slowly leaving, Jack had various emotions in his eyes.
Rudy turned to look at Jack meaningfully. "Jack, why were you so polite? I thought you'd teach them a lesson, but you gave them
gold."
Jack smiled and patted Rudy's shoulder. "There's no reason to fight if the other side has no intentions of doing anything to you. If
I use strength in every situation, I'd be no different from the guys you hate. I only attacked that guy when we entered the inner
region because he had been rude. I would've treated him politely if he wasn't like that."
Rudy nodded. That was how the powerful ones should act, not like those second-grade world warriors who treated warriors from

third-grade worlds like trash.
As they advanced, more corpses were spotted on the ground.
Jack was beginning to feel numb looking at them.
The more they advanced, the worse the situation was. After they walked for another 10 kilometers, they started to see clashes of energy of various colors constantly clashing in the distance. They could even hear the roars of wild beasts.
The massive beasts constantly unleashed their attacks. The humans were not falling behind either, frantically unleashing their own. Seeing this, Rudy was shocked, even though he already expected it.
He pursed his lips, clutching his chest as he said, “What pressure! Even so far away, I can still feel the surrounding air tainted by the crazy amounts of energy. It feels like even the atmosphere is explosive and full of pressure!”
Jack nodded, his expression turning more serious.

Rudy gulped and said carefully, “Jack, I think we should be more careful. This is different from all the other times. The battle is several times more dangerous than the last one. None of these warriors or beasts are weak at all! If we join it, the chances of us getting out…”

Rudy stopped himself. He felt like he had said similar things so many times before, and each time, Jack had easily dealt with the problem.

Jack had never encountered anything he could not handle.

Rudy felt like he was just being a worrywart.

However, the moment he said that, Jack turned and said, “You’re right, we can’t participate in this straightforwardly. Battles of this level are like a tidal wave, and it’ll be very easy to end up trapped inside if we’re not careful. Even though it probably won’t cost my life, I may get injured in the process.”

During the battle from before, Jack’s participation had turned the tides since everyone there was not that strong.

The one ahead of them, however, was different. Even if Jack joined in, he was not confident that he would be able to determine
the winner. After all, everyone who participated in this battle was incredibly strong.
Rudy looked at Jack in shock and gulped. This was the first time he heard Jack treating anything so seriously. It seemed like
even Jack felt the pressure.
After all, this was a collection of the strongest warriors from second and third-grade worlds. Even Jack had to tread carefully.
Rudy frowned. “Then, should we just avoid this?”
To Jack, as long as they were not in the deepest parts of the inner region, there was nowhere that would be any threat to him.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3578

. . .

Jack shook his head. He had planned out his next steps. Whether or not he would succeed would depend on his luck, but as
long as he managed to do what he needed to, he would benefit a lot.
Jack took a deep breath before he said, his expression stem with resolute, “We can’t leave; we need to join them. Not only that,
but we have to emerge as victors.”
Rudy had a look of complete shock as he stared at Jack, realizing how committed he was. Earlier, Jack had just said that he was right, that going in would put himself in a lot of danger. This battle was already a huge
problem for Rudy. Participating was equal to throwing oneself into the problem with not much to gain from it!
Rudy’s lips twitched, suddenly finding himself at a loss for words.

Various thoughts played in his head. If they joined, Jack would definitely attract attention with his skills. His identity might even end up being exposed over some minute detail. Then, the warriors from second-grade worlds would do everything they could to attack Jack.

They could not even rely on the warriors from third-grade worlds this time. All of them who were in the battle were those who stood at the top and were selfish. They would not even blink when regular warriors died in front of them as long as it did not affect them personally, let alone Jack.

Meanwhile, Rudy supposed it was not just the warriors from second-grade worlds who hated Jack for various reasons.

A fraction of the third-grade-world warriors probably hated Jack too. After all, Jack was practically a god in the eyes of the regular warriors from third-grade worlds, and those who sat at the summit of these worlds never protected the regular warriors when it was needed.

Instead, a warrior from Hestia that appeared out of nowhere had saved them. The ones that stood at the top had lost a lot of their respect and authority from that.
Rudy was sure that all of those people probably pinned the blame on Jack. They were the ones at fault, but never would they concede to this.
The ones gathered there were all the warriors from third-grade worlds who hated Jack the most. The moment Jack's identity was exposed, he might end up getting attacked en masse.
Just thinking of this made Rudy anxious.
He looked up and said seriously, "Think this through, Jack. Didn't you say that you could be trapped in the tidal wave if you join?
It won't be easy for you to escape then. Just think about it, if your identity is exposed…"
Before Rudy could finish, Jack stopped him. He turned and patted Rudy on the shoulder. "I know what you're worried about, but I've already thought about it. Don't worry, I won't put myself in danger."

Jack stopped at this, not going into detail regarding his thoughts. However, Rudy was more worried because of that. He felt like he was at the edge of a cliff.

He understood how Jack was. Once he decided on something, nothing Rudy said would sway him. He knew that he should trust Jack’s decision, but he could not help but worry.

Just as he was panicking, he saw four people gathered together in the distance.

Rudy’s attention was suddenly attracted. He looked over and noticed that on the fringes of the battle were groups of two or three, or groups of four to five sitting on the ground together.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3579

• • •

Since it was quite far away, Rudy could not see what was happening. He could just vaguely make out that those who were at the corners did not look to be in a good condition. Some of them were clutching their arms, and some of them had their legs bandaged, too. They were probably warriors who, though injured, had survived, forced to tend to their wounds on the fringes of the battle.

Jack saw it as well. He frowned as his eyes roamed the area, looking like he was planning something important.

Rudy had just been about to ask Jack what he was thinking when Jack raised his hand and said, “Follow me there. Make sure you stay behind me. No matter what happens, don’t leave my side!”

Rudy nodded. At the northwestern corner of the battle, two groups of warriors were gathered.

There was a distance between them, since they were from second-grade and third-grade worlds respectively. They looked at
each other with animosity but did not attack. Both groups were injured and had been forced to leave the battlefield to recuperate. Resuming their battle would only result in
deaths.
There were only three warriors on the corner of the third-grade worlds. They were all from the same clan and had supported
each other the whole way. They were closely tied, but they did not get along that well. They only formed a group because they knew each other and were from the same clan. The three of them were above average
among warriors from third-grade worlds, or they would not be in the deepest parts of the inner region.
Early, they had been struck by a beast. An intense explosion rendered one of them heavily injured, while the other two suffered
minor injuries.

The one with the worst injuries was called Olesm, the youngest disciple among them. The strongest one among the three of them was the strongest chosen disciple from their clan, Calruz.

At that moment, he was clutching his injured arm. His eyes were looking right at the battlefield, and countless thoughts were running through his mind.

Toren frowned as he looked at Calruz. The three of them knew each other. After spending much time around each other, they knew of their tendencies. He immediately knew what Calruz was thinking.

Toren scoffed and said, “Can you stop worrying?! How many people do you think are thinking the same thing here? Do you think there’s no one else who’d want to pick up scraps? It’ll just lead to another intense battle. Those of them at the top aren’t idiots either.”

“Do you think they’d let us take advantage of the situation? We should just leave now with how the situation is! That’s the best

choice! Hesitating will just be wasting our time. You'll just end up pushing yourself further into danger! Can you just listen to
me?!"
Calruz turned around. His eyes had turned red at some point. Both of them seemed incredibly angry.
"Can you shut up?! Do you think I don't know how bad the situation is? Don't you think I don't know how dangerous it would be to
stay? I haven't decided yet because I have my considerations! What's the point of yapping around like you?!"
Toren's lips twitched in anger. If he was not propping up Olesm at that moment, he would have slapped Calruz.
"Calruz, can you just calm down? Look at how injured Olesm is! Do you think I don't know why you can't decide? I know you
don't want to leave because you think you don't have enough golden keys!"

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3580

• • •

Calruz gritted his teeth as he glared at Toren viciously, silently.

Toren took a deep breath, looking at the golden rings around Calruz, and he counted 23 of them. That was already enough. If they continued, they could very well pay clearly with their lives!

Toren continued, “Please, Calruz, can you not be crazy?! Twenty-three golden rings are more than enough! Compared to normal warriors, our treasures will be dozens of times more valuable than theirs! If we stay, we’ll lose our lives, and you won’t be able to exchange those keys if you’re dead! Why don’t you understand that?!”

Calruz gritted his teeth, thoroughly infuriated by Toren. “Do you think you’re smart? If we can’t even compare to normal warriors, then we should just kill ourselves! We’ve struggled so much to get to the inner region from the outer region. We spent so much

time and effort on so few keys! I don’t want to leave just like that!”
Toren did not know what to say at that point, believing that Calruz was lost in his mind. No matter what he said, Calruz would not listen.
Toren took a deep breath, gritted his teeth, and said, “I don’t care anymore. If you want to stay, then stay here alone. I’ll leave with Olesm. He’s already so injured, and he needs a quiet place for him to recover!”
Calruz turned around, no longer able to suppress his anger.
The three of them had managed to get to the deepest parts of the inner region alive because of their teamwork. If two of them left and left him behind, there would be no reason for him to stay. He might even end up getting killed!
Calruz frowned and grabbed Toren’s arm. “You dare?!”
Right at that moment, the three of them suddenly heard footsteps.

They turned around immediately to see a masked man in dark green robes slowly walking toward them. That person was walking in a very casual, confident manner as if there was not an intense battle going on around him.

Calruz frowned. “Who are you?”

Jack closing in naturally alerted them. If he had markings of warriors from second-grade worlds on him, they would have attacked immediately.

Jack immediately stopped, maintaining a safe distance from them.

Earlier, Jack had observed them for 15 minutes before he slowly walked over. He was about to say something when he suddenly heard a roar.

He turned around to see a golden python about 30 meters long and the thickness of two people quickly flying toward them.

That golden python also had two beasts that were at about the same level behind it. The golden python was probably in the middle in terms of strength when it came to three of those beasts.

Normal warriors were no match for it at all.
Even Jack was surprised by the beasts' sudden appearance.
After that, a few beasts started to leave the middle, attacking the warriors that were recovering at the sidelines.
Jack frowned, suddenly understanding what those beasts that had left the main battle were planning. Jack had observed things
for a long time. He had vaguely heard what the ones around him were talking about. They were just trying to decide what to do
next.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3581

. . .

Some had left the center of the battle after being injured, and there were those waiting at the sidelines for an opportunity to kill people and steal the keys once the battle was over.

A few had that plan in mind, but the beasts did not think that way.

Many people were gathered at the sides, most of them already injured. In the eyes of the beasts, they were blood beads that they could harvest!

The golden python and two other beasts rushed over, catching Calruz and Toren off guard as their eyes widened, and their hearts nearly leaped out of their chests. The two of them never expected danger to come so quickly!

If Olesm had not been so badly injured, they might have been able to deal with it. At worst, they could have fled as they fought

back. However, Olesm was injured, unable to even stand up straight, let alone help.
The two of them would need to avoid the attacks while they protected Olesm. This was the moment they believed their end had come.
Toren cursed at Calruz internally. The man's greed for the keys, resulting in his unwillingness to leave, landed them in the worst predicament possible!
The three powerful beasts charged at the three of them. The two of them who were still able to fight were already injured. The chances of them getting away was only 50 percent!
It was not the time to think about it.
Toren took a deep breath and suddenly turned to look at Jack, and said, "Hey, can you help us fight these beasts? We won't trick you, don't worry!"
Even though they could not tell how strong Jack was, there was no other option for them. Working with that person might give them a chance to survive.

Surprisingly, Jack raised an eyebrow and said very casually, “Can’t the two of you stand aside? Don’t waste my time.”
Calruz and Toren were both stunned by his words. They wondered if they had misheard it.
Jack asked them to give way so they did not waste his time?
What were they wasting?
Was he going to face those three beasts alone?
Was he crazy?
Was he daft?!
Calruz’s lips twitched as he shouted, “Are you crazy? You’re trying to fight three of them alone?!”
Jack frowned, not caring about the two of them as he pushed Calruz away from his path.
Calruz’s mind went blank. He never expected that Jack would push him aside. This man truly was planning on fighting the three beasts alone!
One person against three beasts!
No one knew where Jack had come from, but he was way too arrogant.
Did he even know how strong the golden python was?

Even if Calruz and Toren fought one golden python at the same time, no one could be sure who would win!
At this point, Jack had started to form seals. The seals quickly fused in the air, forming two rings the size of palms. The Soul
Burst Rings were completely gray, and there were small red runes on them that shone brightly.
He looked up at the golden python 10 meters away from him.
He smirked as he pushed forward. The Soul Burst Ring quickly shot out.
The python opened its mouth and expelled a golden beam.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3582

• • •

The two other beasts unleashed their attacks as well.

After a moment, all the attacks clashed in the air, causing a massive explosion that formed a crater on the ground. Dust flew all around them, obscuring most of their vision.

However, they could still hear cries of agony, and before too long, silence fell.

Slowly, the dust began to settle. They could once again see what was in front of them.

Calruz was stunned, still rooted where he stood after being pushed by Jack.

His eyes were fixed forward as he looked at the golden python's mangled corpse. Then, he looked at the corpses of the two beasts behind that were not whole either.

His eyes widened as his lips twitched. His heart was thumping wildly, and he even forgot to breathe. His hands trembled slightly as he looked at Jack again.

How was the other party so skilled?!

There was a massive gulf between them, especially skill-wise. He was like an ant on the ground, while Jack was like a golden phoenix in the skies.
Calruz broke out in cold sweat, quickly forgetting the words he wanted to say. Someone as strong as that never bothered with the weaker ones' survival. The moment they were provoked, they might attack right away!
Toren was quite scared as well, but he was thankful.
If Jack was not there, he and Calruz would have been dead!
Toren saluted Jack. "Thank you for saving us!"
Jack raised an eyebrow, merely glancing at Toren. He did not say anything and merely rushed forward.
Jack immediately took the keys without any delay. Coupled with the 99 keys he had, his keys totaled to 131 golden keys. The rewards for turning in those keys would be a big surprise for him.
To avoid any unnecessary trouble, Jack only had eight keys with him at that moment. On top of the thirty-three keys that he had

just gotten, there were a total of forty golden rings on him physically at that moment.
Calruz looked at him with a face full of admiration. However, he could only admire it. When faced with someone so strong, he did not even dare have any greedy ideas.
Jack took a deep breath as he looked around. There were a few warriors around them who noticed what happened, but there
were not that many, so it did not make too much of a commotion.
Jack relaxed at that. He turned around and looked at Calruz.
Calruz immediately straightened his back, stiffening as his eyes shook slightly. If the person in front of him took offense to his mannerisms, there was a chance that he would die.
At that moment, Calruz could only pray to himself.
When Jack was next to him, he first gave Calruz a once-over before looking at Toren next to him and Olesm on the ground.
Other than Olesm, the other two only suffered minor injuries.

Jack said in a serious voice, “I’ll give you a choice, work with me, and I’ll guarantee your safety. After that, I’ll give the two of you five golden keys each. Of course, you can choose to not work with me too.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3583

. . .

Calruz and Toren were so astounded that they did not know how to react.

A powerful warrior wanted to work with them. It was not just a simple order either, Jack would give them a reward. Even though it was only five golden keys, it was a decent reward.

Calruz coughed, carefully turning to look at Toren, unable to decide.

Toren did not even dare to frown, worried that Jack would be unhappy. He merely lowered his head slightly, thinking through everything Jack had said.

Toren wanted to leave immediately. It was just too dangerous there. It was no longer somewhere they could stay behind. In fact, he did not completely trust what Jack said that the other party would guarantee their safety. Even though Jack was incredibly strong, he could not gain Toren’s complete trust. After all, it involved his own life.

They were not at Cloud City but at Chaos City instead, where death was everywhere. They were at the most dangerous place in the whole Chaos City.
Nonetheless, he was worried that the man in front of him would kill the two of them if he did not agree. Toren's heart was conflicted as he started to breathe heavily.
Right at that moment, Calruz spoke, "Alright, I'll work with you, but you have to guarantee our safety! My fellow disciple won't be able to help you since he can't even stand up right now."
Toren looked right at Calruz.
If Jack was not right there, he would have slapped Calruz viciously-and a few times, for good measure. Calruz was so greedy for any profits or benefits. Even if they wanted to work with Jack,they should listen to what it entailed!
He did not even bother asking that before he agreed, which was foolish. Toren was so angry that his lips trembled.

Calruz looked at Toren and said casually, “Why are you so angry? This is the only choice we have anyway. Are you not going to agree? If you take too long, this warrior might get angry. Do you want to die?”

Toren clenched his fists, too angry to say anything.

If Calruz was not his senior, he would have attacked Calruz at that moment. However, since Calruz had already agreed, it was too late for Toren to say anything else.

He was forced to accept it. At that moment, he really did have no other choice.

Toren took a deep breath and put a smile on his face. “What do you want us to do?”

Jack pointed at the intense battle. “The two of you, lure the beasts here. You don’t have to fight with them, of course. After that, you can hide behind me and leave the rest to me.”

Toren gulped, breaking out in cold sweat again. The two of them needed to lure beasts?

That was not something easy. It was equal to putting themselves in the thick of battle!

Before he could say anything, Calruz spoke first, “Are we supposed to rush inside to attack the beast? We won’t be able to do that. The moment we step into the battle, we’d be surrounded by enemies. We won’t just be attacked by the beasts, and the warriors from second-grade worlds are no slouches either!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3584

. . .

Before he could finish, Jack raised a hand and interrupted him, “Don’t worry, I won’t send you two to your deaths like that. You
just need to look for chances to attack the beasts at the fringes.”
At that moment, Rudy had hurried over from afar.
Jack had arranged for him to stay at a safer spot earlier instead of bringing him along when he first attacked the golden python.
Since the situation was calmer, Rudy walked over.
He looked at Jack and noticed that he was getting even more confused.
Jack was just planning on dealing with the beasts that were at the sides, not wanting to bother with the strongest beasts that
were at the center. However, he clearly said that he wanted to be the final victor.

His words and his current actions were a bit conflicting. If it was anyone else, Rudy would have thought they were just bragging.
However, since it was Jack, he would not think that way.
Jack was not someone who would exaggerate things at all. No matter what, he had always said things as they were.
Since that was the case, Rudy was even more confused. However, it was not the time to talk about that. He merely looked on
quietly.
Since the two warriors had agreed to work with Jack, they were forced to agree to his plans. Furthermore, Jack had only told
them to lure the beasts at the fringes toward him, which was much safer.
Calruz and Toren exchanged a look. Even though they could see the reluctance and worry in each other's eyes, it was too late
for regrets. Thus, the two of them turned around and walked into the battlefield again.
After a few moments, two massive beasts chased after Calruz and Toren as they roared. Both beasts were evidently enraged.

One of the beasts was called the Silver Beast. It was not as strong as the golden python, but it was still at the same level as the
red fox.
The other beast was called the Thunderflame Wolf, and it was around the same level of the Silver Beast.
Both of them used middle ultimate god rank techniques. Calruz and Toren could work together against one, but they would not
be able to deal with two at the same time.
After the two of them used their attacks, they easily lured the two beasts toward Jack.
Jack raised an eyebrow as he stood in place, easily forming seals with his hands. In a flash, the Soul Burst Rings were formed.
His hands held up the Soul Burst Rings, aiming right at the two beasts before he pushed forward. The two rings expanded)
rapidly, surrounding the two beasts behind them.
Calruz and Toren had not even been able to react when they heard explosions behind them.

The two of them were pushed forward a few meters by the explosion. Turning around, they could see that the beasts that were chasing them had been blown to bits.
They were flabbergasted once more, deeply impacted. Beasts that were so strong in their eyes were as fragile as paper against god-like warriors. It really was frustrating.
To not attract the attention of certain people, Jack did not remain in one place for too long. He only remained at the fringes of the battle for an hour, but the rewards had been amazing.
He had killed almost 30 beasts. Other than the 32 golden keys he earned, he had gotten another 95 keys. On top of the 131 keys he had before, he had a total of 226 golden keys.
That number excited even Jack. However, he knew that he could no longer remain there. He was frantically killing beasts at the sides, and even killed a few stupid warriors from second grade worlds. He would definitely start attracting attention soon.

Those strong warriors were not just there for show. If they truly worked together against Jack, it would be troublesome. For safety's sake, Jack led Rudy away from the battle after an hour. However, they did not go that far, and only found somewhere comparatively safer.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3585

. . .

They were about two kilometers away from the battlefield, so they could observe the battle without getting involved.

Rudy looked incredibly excited. 226 golden keys were amazing. If all of them were used to exchange for resources, it would earn them a treasure that even a divine solidifying realm warrior would want!

With that in mind, Rudy was even more excited than Jack. After all, Jack was his greatest benefactor. The stronger Jack was, the safer he would be.

Rudy looked at Jack and said excitedly, “This was worth it!”

Jack nodded as he looked at the battlefield.

Rudy looked at Jack curiously, “I thought you’d kill those two.”

Jack shook his head.

He had been hiding by the side and only walked over because he was sure that the three of them already decided to leave. One

of those three, Olesm, was heavily injured as well.
Even though the man named Calruz was unwilling, he forgot all of that the moment the golden python rushed over. After the three of them finished their end of the deal, they would definitely leave right away, so he did not need to kill them to silence them.
Rudy frowned and said, “I thought you were planning on striking quickly, killing as many enemies before they noticed you so they won’t get to do anything. Even if they worked together, they wouldn’t be able to beat you.”
Jack could not help but laugh at that.
He turned and said in exasperation, “How could it be so easy? Do you think they’re idiots? I came out after an hour because I was worried they’d notice something strange…”
“Just look. Even after so many have died, even after I killed so many beasts, the battle hasn’t dissipated. There are still so many of them there. How many would I have to kill to turn the tides?”
To Jack, it was impossible.

Rudy raised an eyebrow. “Aren’t we going to leave? I thought you’d be in a hurry to leave Chaos City and go to Cloud City to get your world avatar…”
Jack looked at Rudy. “No, it’s still not time yet. Didn’t I tell you I’d be the biggest victor in the battle?”
Rudy was stunned again when he heard that. He looked at Jack with a puzzled expression. “You’re planning on continuing?”
Jack shook his head, but stopped himself and nodded. Rudy was confused at that.
Jack smirked and explained, “This battle will probably not last for much longer. All sides are keeping track of their losses. If they fight until only a few dozen from each side are left, the losses will be too disastrous. Eventually, they’ll realize that the battle is costing them just as much as it is their enemies. The moment they notice that, the battle will stop, and the strongest ones will try to save themselves…”
Saying that, Jack shut his mouth as a look of interest flashed in his eyes.

At that moment, his eyes were fixed on the most important figure in the battle-the massive Black-scaled Tiger.
The Black-scaled Tiger was more than six meters tall. Compared to the other massive beasts around it, it was not that tall, but was nonetheless massive against humans.
Its agile body constantly danced around the warriors, attacking them, its two claws filled with energy.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3586

. . .

The Black-scaled Tiger would send a warrior hanging for their life with just a slash whereas those even weaker warriors would
die from just one strike.
After the warriors die at the hands of the beasts, they would immediately form blood beads.
The tiger would get much more excited with each blood bead it acquires. Blood beads were like treasures for the beasts. After
absorbing enough blood beads, they would be able to level up their skills.
At that moment, the Black-scaled Tiger looked like a wolf in a rabbit den.
Jack quietly observed everything the tiger was doing. It reached out its massive claw and struck at a warrior before it opened its
bloody mouth to rip the warrior’s throat apart, using its natural-born technique to take the warrior’s life.

Rudy stood next to Jack, looking up at the battlefield in front of him. He could not tell what Jack was planning on doing, but his intuition told him that Jack had grand plans.
Time slowly ticked away, and the three sides slowly found themselves unable to go on for much longer.
After all, the number of deaths was rapidly increasing. If that went on, they would not be able to take it.
The warriors from third-grade worlds were the weakest, but they had the numbers as an advantage. The warriors from secondgrade worlds were strong, but they could not stand against the many opponents.
Furthermore, the warriors from third grade worlds already hated warriors from second-grade worlds to the bone. They fought with the warriors from second grade worlds with everything they had. The losses were immense.
Nothing needs to be said about the beasts. There were beast corpses everywhere on the ground. After all, the beasts were already larger than humans, and were not as afraid of death as humans were.

Most of the beasts were not as intelligent as humans, but it just meant the beasts fought with much more intensity. They did not care about their own lives once they started fighting, especially when the scent of blood around them started to thicken, stirring up their bloodlust.

There were corpses upon corpses on the ground. Just looking around, the ground was completely covered in blood.

Finally, a warrior from a second-grade world suddenly shouted loudly, “Let’s all stop! There will be no results if we continue fighting! Even more, we will all just die!”

As he shouted, he used his true energy which amplified his voice. Even though there was a distance between them.

Jack could clearly hear it. He raised an eyebrow.

Since it was too far away, he could not tell who had said that, but it did not stop Jack from guessing who it was.

Jack smiled coldly, “Sure enough, they get so scared the moment their lives are at stake. The battle is already at the point where

the strongest ones will start dying if it continues…”
“As the strongest ones from their worlds, they’re not only incredibly skilled but incredibly scared of dying as well. So many had
died before, forming piles of corpses, but they never called for the fighting to stop. When it’s about to be their turn, they
immediately shout for a ceasefire.”
Rudy took a deep breath. There was intense anger on his face.
Those guys were the most selfish. They were the ones who started the battle, but they were not the ones who had to sacrifice
themselves. Whether it was the warriors from third grade worlds or second-grade worlds, they were split into four kinds.
The first kind was the weaker warriors. Those warriors would not be able to enter higher-leveled. cities as well. Rudy was one of
them.
The second was the regular warriors. Those warriors made up about sixty to seventy percent of all warriors, and they were the
ones most likely to die as well.

The third was the ones that were above average. Those warriors were strong, and all had significant positions in their worlds.
The last kind was the warriors that stood at the top. They were the most selfish group. The one that happened to shout loudly
was one of those warriors. They were usually the strongest warriors of their worlds and had a lot of speaking power. They were
talented beyond compare, and all of them had a lot of power and influence.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3587

. . .

However, those people were usually narcissistic, regarding everyone else as beneath them.

Rudy had thought that those warriors might not care about the regular warriors, but would at least care about the warriors that were above average.

After all, those stronger warriors were only a bit weaker than those that stood at the top and had significant positions in their respective worlds. However, it did not seem like the case at all.

Most of the ones that had died during the battle were above-average warriors. They were stronger than normal warriors, or they would not have stayed in the deepest parts of the inner region. They were incredibly confident in their skills, and that was why they stayed behind.

However, that was also why they did not survive. Those warriors that stood at the top did not care about anyone other than themselves. They would only call for a stop when they were in danger themselves.
They had clearly seen so many of the stronger warriors die in front of them, but they had ignored all of it.
The more Rudy thought about it, the more saddened he was.
Those warriors that were above average were all incredibly well regarded in their own respective worlds. Even the external elders would have respected them. Yet, they had lost their lives there. It was such a tragedy, their lives were just about to start.
Jack asked, “I thought you would ask me how I’m sure that the one who shouted was one of the strongest warriors.”
Rudy smiled and answered, “That’s obvious. Only those people would have the authority to say something like that. If anyone else said that, they would just be ignored.”

Jack nodded. Earlier, he had just been waiting for someone to call for a stop. Even though they were too far for him to see them clearly, he could feel how rotten that person's heart was.

Jack sighed as he said sadly, "Honestly, those who are at the top are all winners. Even the strongest of the beasts are winners too. The others were just here to give their lives for the winners…"

Rudy blinked curiously. He looked at Jack with a questioning glance.

Jack sighed and he patted Rudy on the shoulder and said, "Just look at all those dead bodies on the ground. Who do you think will get the keys on their bodies?"

"Those humans that were killed by the beasts, who would get their blood beads? Those who were waiting by the side to pick up the scraps? Do you think they would dare? The strongest warriors are all still e, and not even that injured…"

Rudy's heart skipped a beat when he heard that. He had a terrifying guess in his mind.

He had never thought about that at all, but after what Jack had said, Rudy had a moment of realization. He opened his mouth,
not saying anything, but his silence trumped anything he could say.
Jack smiled and said, “You’re right, it’s possible for that to be their goal the whole time. They wanted to find a reason to start a
war so they could reap the benefits of it. It’s just that those who were following them had to suffer for that goal.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3588

• • •

“Even before they died, they probably never expected that they would just be crops to be harvested in the eyes of the top warriors. The top warriors had merely shouted and attacked a few times, but it was the others who lost their lives.”

Rudy was speechless for a long time after hearing that. He really had underestimated human nature.

Just like Jack had said, the true winners of the battle were those that stood at the time. They used their authority to carry out their despicable methods. however they wanted to, killing others to gain their keys.

Jack smiled as he narrowed his eyes and continued, “We need to wait! Once they leave, we’ll…”

Two hours later, the Black-scaled Tiger returned to its den.

It was a small valley, and it was at the center of the valley. It had used its sharp claws to dig out a cave. There was some wild
grass he had gotten from somewhere. After that intense battle, it had obtained a few dozen blood beads.
It absorbed a portion of it, and there were still twenty left. It felt like it would definitely reach a new level of power after absorbing
fifty of them.
It started to lick the wounds on its body. Even if it was the strongest among all the beasts, it had still failed to avoid getting
injured. After all, the attacks that were flying around did not care who they hit.
However, it had only suffered some minor injuries. It would be able to recover after some rest. The beasts that were in Chaos
City were not able to leave the place due to some restrictions.
The most terrifying thing was that they would also fall into a deep slumber when the Whirling World closed, all the way until it
was opened again and humans entered the world.

Just thinking about that made the tiger bristle with anger and hatred.
Its level of intelligence was on par with humans. There were some things that it realized just thinking about it.
It would not let those people get whatever they wanted! Even the heroes that created the Whirling World would not be able to subdue it!
It had just been a small beast initially, being born in this place.
Only a small fraction of its memories before he gained sentience remained, but those memories were enough to cause a chill through its body.
It could remember many other smaller beasts just like it. However, they had all been slaughtered by humans. Less than a tenth of them survived. It had started life in the outer region of Chaos City. As it slowly improved and gained the ability to protect itself, it slowly advanced inward.
Battle after battle, it had been fortunate enough to survive all this time, killing quite a few humans and being granted blood

beads. Its power and intelligence slowly increased after absorbing them.
It was slowly beginning to understand that it only existed for the sake of training humans. It was like a large grindstone that could kill the weak and make the strong even stronger. However, it was not willing to resign itself to that fate. It wanted to keep growing stronger. It wanted to break through its limits. Then, no human would be able to beat it!
No one would be able to treat it as a stepping stone. It would no longer be a training post for the humans, and the humans would be its stepping stone to the top!
Just thinking about that, the tiger’s eyes shone. It was suddenly filled with hope for the future.
Right at that moment, it could suddenly hear soft footsteps in the distance.
As one of the strongest beasts, it had a very high level of perception. It could hear even the most minute sounds from a great distance.

The tiger suddenly looked up, and its eyes were focused right on where the sound was from. It could see a green-robed man
slowly walking toward it from a distance.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3589

. . .

The tiger grunted, feeling excited.
Its food was walking right into its mouth, so how could it not eat it up?
Every time it saw a human, it would just feel excited. Every human was just a stepping stone for him to reach greater heights!
It slowly stood up on its limbs, trying to keep itself quiet so that humans would not notice him.
The person did not walk too slowly, or too fast. Every step was incredibly steady. The man did not have too much emotion on his
face, as if he did not see the cave at all. He slowly walked until he reached the front of the cave.
There were about six meters between him and the cave when he stopped. He looked right into the cave with his cold gaze.
The Black-scaled Tiger was already hiding and waiting for him. The tiger was amused that the man had actually walked to the

cave.
It was an incredibly short distance, the man would not be able to avoid any attacks. With that in mind, the tiger immediately launched itself forward, baring its large claws. It really wanted to see how shocked and terrified the fragile human would be when he saw it.
The human would definitely freeze up, and his eyes would widen. He might even pee his pants. The tiger had. seen plenty of human like that before. Other than those who stood at the very top, almost all of the warriors turned around and ran the moment they saw it, or they would freeze up completely, not even able to run away.
However, the Black-scaled Tiger never expected a calm expression to greet him the moment it was out of the cave.
There was no panic and no freezing. There was no fleeing at all. The human merely looked at it peacefully, and even smirked.
The tiger was immediately stunned!
What was wrong with this person?
Was he crazy?

Was he blind?
The tiger had planned on killing the man in front of it with one blow, but he was caught off guard.
Jack smiled and said, “You really are just slightly injured, just like those others…”
When the tiger left the battlefield, Jack quietly followed until the tiger reached its cave. Initially, the tiger even thought that Jack was blind.
However, hearing what that man said, the tiger immediately understood that the man already knew that the cave was its den.
The man had purposely come to face it!
When the tiger realized that Jack was no idiot, the tiger suddenly felt like it was being challenged. The tiger was already intelligent enough but was unable to transform due to lacking the power to do so.
However, it could speak human words and communicate with humans without issue. It was just that his voice still retained the unique traits of a beast.
Its voice was rough like a person with a cold, “What are you doing here? Are you trying to make a deal with me?”

Just saying that made the tiger feel amused. Those humans could be incredibly despicable with their methods. They did not care about their so-called fellow disciples at all. They merely cared about their own profits.

Jack sneered, “I’m not like them. I won’t play any tricks either. I just came here to send you off on your final journey…”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3590

. . .

Hearing that, the tiger was stunned.
Was it mistaken?!
This guy wanted to kill it?
On his own with no help?
Even though the tiger could not tell how strong the man was, it did not change a thing.
The Black-scaled Tiger ruled over the whole of Chaos City. Unless a few of the strongest warriors attacked it together, there was no way they could kill it!
That man that had come out of nowhere actually said he wanted to kill it!
It was such a joke. That person did not know his place!
“Brat, do you know what you’re saying? You want to kill me?! Just you alone? Do you not know who I am?” The Black-scaled Tiger started to suspect that the man did not even know how strong it was.

Jack said calmly, “You’re the Black-scaled. Tiger. Your natural-born technique is already at the upper ultimate god rank. You’re the king of the beasts in Chaos City, and you benefited a lot from the battle just now.”

The Black-scaled Tiger glared at Jack. Since the brat knew everything, why was that man challenging it, even saying he wanted to kill it?

Could that man really be that confident?

The Black-scaled Tiger could not help but feel alarmed. However, after thinking for a few moments, it felt amused.

How strong could the man be?

Could the man use an upper ultimate god rank technique?

Just as it was thinking, Jack’s hands moved, starting to form seals. The Soul Burst Rings slowly appeared.

The tiger was alarmed. That man was for real. He was not bragging about wanting to kill it!

Jack did not want to waste too much time there. After dealing with the tiger, he still had other things to do.

The Soul Burst Ring quickly spun in the air. Even the surrounding space was getting distorted. The Black-scaled Tiger began to use its own technique as well. A black vortex started to condense in front of its massive mouth!
The vortex seemed to swallow everything as it shot right at Jack.
Jack did not panic, pushing his hands forward as the Soul Burst Rings shot forward incredibly quickly. The black vortex clashed with the Soul Burst Ring in the air.
The two forces clashed with each other, and the black vortex tried to swallow up the Soul Burst Ring. However, the Soul Burst Ring was a storm god rank technique.
The upper ultimate god rank technique was no match for the Soul Burst Ring at all!
The black vortex immediately shattered into pieces upon contact. The power did not even last for that long before it was destroyed by the Soul Burst Ring!
The tiger’s eyes widened in shock.

It suddenly found itself unable to react when it witnessed what just happened. His skill which no one had been able to beat
before had actually been defeated so quickly.
Right after that, a gust of wind was felt. After destroying its natural born technique, the Soul Burst Ring did not slow down at all. It
charged right at the Black-scaled Tiger.
The tiger shook in fear, not daring to look down on the technique at all!
It turned around, wanting to or at least avoid the attack. Yet, it had been too confident earlier, not believing that Jack would be
difficult to go against at all.
Right behind the tiger was the cave it dug for itself. It went right into the cave the moment it fled!
The Soul Burst Ring shot in as well. Right after that, a massive explosion in the cave could be seen. The cave was completely
swallowed up by rubble.
Jack could vaguely hear the tiger crying out.
The tiger had been completely buried, unable to even move, but it was already too
late for regret.

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3591

. . .

It never expected the stranger in front of it would be so strong.
No wonder the man had been so confident, not even showing any emotion when he revealed himself. The intense explosion
heavily injured its whole body. It was just barely alive at that moment, and it knew that it would not remain alive for that much
longer.
Right at that moment, a crack could be heard next to it. It moved its head with great difficulty and saw Jack pushing down on the
rock that was on its body.
Jack still showed no emotion as he knelt next to the tiger, coldly looking at it, “Did you feel like you were the smartest one ever
when you made that plan with those shameless and despicable guys? You’re the final winner. How do you feel now?”

The tiger’s whole body twitched as it opened its mouth, trying to say something. However, nothing came out.
The tiger’s last impression of the world was the man calmly pulling out a gray sword from his storage space. The sword was
aimed right at the tiger’s throat.
***
After a day, Jack and Rudy arrived at Cloud City. The whole time, Rudy had been talking without stopping. He was just too
excited. Killing the tiger, Jack had actually been awarded fifty golden keys.
On top of the two hundred and twenty-six golden keys from before, Jack had a total of two hundred and seventy-six keys.
He put all of those keys on the biggest stage of the Nine without any hesitation, redeeming it all for treasure.
Rudy widened his eyes, “So, the supreme soul wisp should be worth a lot, right?”
Jack nodded. His keys had managed to get him a small bottle of supreme soul wisp. Even he did not know what that was used

for. That was his first time hearing of it, and even the memories of the ancient heroes yielded nothing. However, it was definitely something incredibly valuable.

Two hundred and seventy-six golden keys would definitely have given him something priceless!

Jack took a deep breath, suppressing his excitement.

They looked up at the massive Cloud City. After they left Chaos City, Jack, and Rudy immediately headed toward Cloud City.

There were many challenges in Cloud City, but they did not catch Jack's eyes at the moment. Nothing was as important as him forming his world avatar. His target was Cloud Valley which was within the city.

Cloud Valley was deep in Cloud City. He had heard that there were various challenges one had to go through to get to Cloud Valley. The only way to qualify to enter Cloud Valley was to pass those challenges.

Rudy turned around and looked at Jack. He knew better than anyone what Cloud Valley meant to Jack.

Forming a world avatar was the most important thing for Jack at that moment. Possibly because he had been in Chaos City for
too long, but Rudy felt a bit uncomfortable when he entered Cloud City.
There were so many people in Cloud City, and everyone no longer looked at each other with alarm and murderous intent, but
just calmness.
They were not allowed to fight in Cloud City without reason. Even though the warriors of the third-grade world and second-grade
worlds were still not friendly with each other, no one fought within Cloud City. Everyone had their matters and goals to attend to.
Jack walked past the crowded streets and went toward the northeast. Cloud Valley was in that direction.
The moment he stepped into Cloud Valley, Rudy was shocked to notice that Cloud Valley had even more warriors than Cloud
City did.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3592

• • •

“I can’t take it anymore! I’ve tried both sides, and nothing has happened. I should just go somewhere else. I think I can’t get a world avatar in the Whirling World,” A man in gray robes said sadly.

A man that was standing next to him patted the gray-robed man on the shoulder, “Don’t be sad. It’s so difficult. It’s already quite good if one out of five can succeed. Everyone’s just here to test out their luck like you. Only those with talent and skill can condense world avatars in Cloud Valley!”

As the man said that, he sighed as well. Even though he did not take part in the evaluation, he knew his place.

He was reasonably talented, but he was nowhere near good enough in front of all those masters.

Most of the warriors over there lamented the fact that they were not talented enough or not strong enough. They were not as

skilled as the others around them and lamented the fact that they could not condense a world avatar.
A world avatar meant a lot to every warrior. Condensing a world avatar would directly raise the level of a person's power.
Their battle ability would go up a level as well, and the benefits were long-term. A world avatar had nine levels. After reaching
each level, one would level up even more.
Condensing a world avatar needed somewhere that was full of the laws of the world.
Those places were incredibly rare, both in the outside world and the Whirling world! In the whole of Whirling world, only Cloud
Valley contained such a place, but one needed to obtain the rights to enter.
Rudy sighed. There was no way he would ever be able to form a world avatar in his life. He was just there to watch.
However, he could not help but rue the fact that those who would seem like absolute masters in front of Rudy did not even
manage to get into Cloud Valley.

Right at that moment, he heard an angry shout, “I refuse to believe it! This Killing Illusion Array might be able to trap me once or twice, but I’ll definitely succeed this time! I was just careless last time!”

A clean-looking man shouted out in frustration. He looked incredibly angry and his hands were tightly clenched.

It was obvious how emotional he was at that moment. The one in front of him was probably a fellow disciple of his.

That person frowned helplessly, “What’s the point of getting so emotional? If this array was so easy to get through, then there wouldn’t be so many who have failed. Each time, you’ll need to face at least two opponents…”

“By the time you reach the sixth stage, you’ll face a warrior that has already mastered the second stage of a lower ultimate god rank technique and one with the first stage. Even reaching that far means you’ll have already passed five stages. It wouldn’t be easy for anyone.”

“Whether you make it through or not, don’t get so emotional! You didn’t fail because you were careless or because you weren’t prepared enough. You just weren’t able to pass all six stages! By the time you reach the fifth stage, you’re already almost spent.”

The man clearly did not agree with what his fellow disciple said. He did not want to accept his own failure.

He clenched his teeth slightly, looking incredibly indignant.

He said, “You’re wrong! I’m the one who entered the illusion, not you! Don’t make such judgments. I was just careless, and that’s why I failed. If I had just changed the order a bit, it wouldn’t have ended like this.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3593

. . .

As he said that, his eyes were wide. His eyeballs looked like they were going to pop out of their sockets.

He had practically forced those words out through his clenched teeth. That person looked like he was going crazy. He tried reasoning with his fellow disciple that it was the wrong judgment, that he was not weak!

Everyone shook their heads silently when they saw how he was acting. It was because everyone else knew that his fellow disciple was right.

The man was not willing to admit to his own faults and face the truth that he would not be able to enter Cloud Valley.

Not being able to enter Cloud Valley meant not being able to comprehend the laws and condense a world avatar. To proud masters, it had a significant impact!

Many of them could not accept that fact!

Rudy sighed, looking up at Jack and sighing, “Actually, those masters don’t seem to be able to take much mentally. They can calmly face life and death, but they can’t accept it when they’re not as good as others. All of the warriors who are here are among the best warriors in their respective worlds…”

“Even if they did not stand at the top, they were warriors that were ranked highly. However, not even being able to enter Cloud Valley would definitely impact them greatly.”

Jack sighed, looking up at the warriors around them. His voice sank a bit, “Everyone has to face their own weaknesses. Pride is the greatest downfall of man. If they can’t even get past this, they won’t be able to do well in the future either as there’s always someone stronger.”

Second-grade worlds were not the end. There were also first-grade worlds after that. There would be even more masters there. Those so-called experts might not even be anything in first-grade worlds.

Jack shook his head with a smile when he thought of that.
He reached out and patted Rudy on the shoulder, “Alright, let’s go in!”
Rudy said, “To the Killing Illusion Array?”
Jack shook his head, “If we want to enter Cloud Valley, we’d need to obtain the Valley Entrance Pass. Only those with the pass
can enter Cloud Valley. Cloud Valley is actually in a different space, and this is only the entrance. There are two ways to gain a
Valley Entrance Pass. The first way is simpler.
“You’d need to test your body’s compatibility with the laws. If you have over sixty percent, you’ll be awarded a Valley Entrance
Pass. If you don’t have that high of compatibility, you’ll have to go through the Killing Illusion Array. Only by going through that would you be able to get the pass.”
The rules were actually very simple. There were only two options.
When Rudy heard that he widened his eyes, “The first method is actually that simple? Do you just need to test your

compatibility? Then, Jack, you'll have an easy time. I thought you'd need to go through a few challenges."
Jack shook his head and smiled, "Even though the first way is simple, not many can actually get a Valley Entrance Pass straight away. Even though I've always been confident in myself, I can't help but feel a bit worried…"
A person's skill did not mean that they would be compatible with the laws.
Jack had relied on the memories he inherited the whole time. It had nothing to do with his own body. As for his compatibility, he was not that confident.
After the two of them talked for a while, they walked to where they needed to test their compatibility. There were sixty-six stones on the massive plaza.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3594

• • •

The stones were around half the height of a person.
A warrior needed to stand on the stones to test their compatibility. There were nine crystals on the stones, and they would light
up based on how compatible a person was with the corresponding laws. However, the stones were not that efficient.
A warrior might not get their results immediately standing on it. They needed to wait for a while, sometimes up to five minutes.
Many warriors were waiting to be tested, and there were only sixty-six stones, so it caused a massive queue.
Thankfully, everyone knew that causing trouble would only waste more time, so everyone wisely queued up. The plaza was incredibly large, but the line spanned until the outside of the plaza.

Looking at the many people in front of them, Rudy widened his eyes, “How long will we have to queue up for? It’s not moving
that quickly either. I feel like we’d be lucky if it gets to us in ten to twelve hours.”
Jack nodded, looking into the distance. The stones looked like they were only the size of a nail from where they were.
He sighed, there was nothing to say about their situation. They were forced to queue up obediently.
Jack stood in front of Rudy.
Rudy had not planned on queuing up, but there was no reason not to take the test. He did not need to pay for it anyway.
The two of them stood at the back of the line for the thirty-seventh stone. Rudy looked over and did an estimation in his heart.
There were at least a thousand people in front of them. He took a deep breath. There was a lot of noise around them, and it filled
his ears. Rudy felt annoyed at that. After being with Jack for so long, he started to hate noisy environments as well.

After the two of them started queueing up, neither of them spoke. It was because both of them felt like they would not be able to hear anything even if they spoke anyway. Everyone seemed intent on chattering nonstop.
A man with a mustache shook his head and said, “If I fail here, I’ll go to the other side immediately! I wouldn’t try to test myself again! Stop wasting your time…”
“Do you think the stones would lie to you? If you can’t, then you can’t! You’re so far away from getting the pass as well, only two crystals lit up! What’s the point of queueing up again? I think you’re just refusing to accept the truth!”
The person that was being spoken to looked a bit ugly. His features all seemed out of place. One of his eyes was bigger than the other, and his mouth was even slanted. The ugly man sniffed in disdain.
He shouted, “What do you know?! Once you stand up there, you’ll know why I wanted to get tested again!”

The mustache man scoffed and looked at the ugly man. It was obvious that the ugly man was just trying too hard.
He narrowed his eyes and said, “Stop trying to twist things. If it’s really as you say, then wouldn’t more people queue up again?
You’re the only one being stubborn!”
The ugly man clenched his teeth, visibly angered at those words.
He said in a low voice, “Just shut up! The test of compatibility needs both your body and spirit!
During the test, I was distracted
by others and didn’t manage to activate my soul, that’s why I only got twenty percent! If you were me, you’d be unhappy as well!”
The mustache man laughed, saying in disdain, “Stop trying to come up with weak excuses for yourself! If you can’t, then you
can’t! Even if you take the test again, the results would be the same!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3595

• • •

The ugly man clenched his fists as he heard that, wanting nothing more than to punch the other man, “Just shut up! I’ll say this again, shut your mouth! Otherwise, I’ll rip it out!”
The mustache man laughed when he heard that, “What? You want to hit me? Let’s just forget about what would happen if you broke the rules, even without the rules in place, you would still be no match for me. Stop thinking so highly of yourself! You’re nothing in my eyes!”
The two of them started to argue more and more. The ones around them could no longer take their bickering.
At that moment, someone said loudly, “Hey, both of you! Shut up! Look who’s here!”
The two of them looked over at the same time. Jack was intrigued as well, and he looked toward where that person was pointing. A few men who were quite extravagantly

dressed walked over with their heads held high. Those men clearly did not have good intentions.
At that moment, someone said, “Those warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent are getting bolder!”
“That’s right! They’re relying on the fact that no one wants to offend those from their world. However, they can’t keep trying to push the boundaries. Once or twice is fine, but no one can stand it if they keep on doing this!”
“Hey, can you keep it down? Don’t you know how those from the Swelling Tide Continent and the Star Continent are?”
“Those people are really united. The moment they hear anything like this, they’ll definitely come looking for you! It’s one thing if they were just going to cause some trouble, but those people will stick to you like glue, constantly causing you trouble. No one can stand it.”
Jack raised an eyebrow. It was his first time hearing the names of those worlds.
Looking at how those warriors were dressed, they had special symbols on their clothes, so Jack immediately saw that they were

from second-grade worlds.
They looked like thugs on the streets. Everyone was obediently queueing up, but they did not seem to care as they walked
directly forward.
Jack’s intuition told him that there was only one thing they could be trying to do with the way they were acting.
Rudy frowned and said, “It’s warriors from second-grade worlds again! Each time they appear, they never fail to disgust me!”
Jack smiled and shook his head, not saying anything.
The few of them walked to the front of the line, and just like Jack expected, they pushed away the warriors that were queueing
up, blatantly cutting the line! The warriors around them looked furious but did not dare to say anything.
Quite a few warriors seemed incredibly angry, but no one said anything!
Jack frowned, closely observing everything but remaining silent.
A warrior in front of Jack had never seen that situation before.

He had just arrived at Cloud City not too long ago, and he asked curiously, “Are the warriors from Swelling Tide Continent really
so strong that no one dares to do anything to them?”
Everyone around them seemed to either smile bitterly or in exasperation at that.
A man in purple robes said helplessly, “No one would dare to do anything to them. Initially, some spoke up against it. That person
was immediately targeted by every single warrior from the Swelling Tide Continent. He was targeted everywhere he went. Those people stick to you like glue and they’re impossible to deal with!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3596

• • •

“Most importantly, the warriors from that world are strangely united! The moment you offend one of them, all of them will go against you. It’s because of that everyone just bears with it unless it harms them then no one would bother tolerating all that trouble.”

Rudy clenched his teeth. He hated things like that, but there was nothing he could do about it. It was not like he could suddenly make an enemy out of all the warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent. Hence, most of the warriors were just forced to accept this!

Rudy’s hands trembled slightly as he looked at Jack and said, “Luckily, we aren’t in the front right now! Otherwise, I’d be infuriated,”

Jack raised an eyebrow as he looked at Rudy calmly. Some things could really not be avoided.

As time slowly ticked away, a whole ten hours passed. It was finally almost their turn to be tested.
When there were only ten people in front of them, Rudy was already mumbling to himself excitedly, “It really is difficult! I counted it just now. The chances of passing are almost less than one in a hundred! It’s just so hard!”
Jack raised an eyebrow, not surprised by that at all. If it was that easy, there would not be so many people trying to pass the Killing Illusion Array.
Right at that moment, some commotion could be heard from afar.
Jack looked over and saw three warriors from Swelling Tide Continent who were walking past the crowd from a distance.
They were walking incredibly quickly, and the discussions that had stopped started again, “It’s Case Olsen! Didn’t all of them go toward the level two cities already? Why are they suddenly back?”
“I think they must have admitted defeat! There is always someone stronger. Even though they were among the strongest

warriors, it would be much harder for them to keep up with their arrogant ways in a level two city. That's why they came back.
They're probably trying to form a world avatar and increase their power before they try the level two cities again."
"You're right! I think so too. They were always so full of themselves before this. They must have found themselves lacking in the level two cities, but they weren't willing to give up, so they came back here to improve themselves…"
"What do you think is at the level of two cities other than the Radiant Hall? Why have so many struggled there? I heard a lot have died inside too."
"Let's not talk about that for now! Those three are clearly here to cut the line! They're right between our two lines! They'll be here soon. We can't let them hear us!"
Everyone immediately shut their mouths.
Jack raised an eyebrow. It was the first time he heard about Case Olsen, but from the discussions, he got the gist of who that person was.

Case had a frown on and looked incredibly unhappy as if everyone owed him a lot of money. No matter who spoke, he would beat that person up properly.
Quite a few of the warriors seemed terrified at the sight of Case!
They had even deliberately distanced themselves so the three warriors could advance quicker!
There were fewer and fewer people in front, and it was quickly about to be Jack's turn.
Rudy felt incredibly uneasy about that. Sure enough, those three stood right in front of Jack.
Case calmly looked at Jack as if he would slap Jack if the other party did not give way.
Case pointed at Jack, "Get lost and head to the back!"
Jack laughed. He could not believe how arrogant that man was. Even when cutting the queue, he acted like this!
Jack took a deep breath, pushing back his anger. He was rarely angered so quickly by anyone.

He looked up at Case and said coldly, “Who do you think you are? You’re acting so shamelessly, but you act like you’re in the right. Who gave you the courage to do that?”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3597

. . .

Jack had not lowered his voice when he said that, so everyone heard Jack clearly.
Quite a few of them widened their eyes as they looked over!
Who was that?
How could he talk to Case like that?!
Did he not know that Case was from a holy grade clan in Swelling Tide Continent?!
Case was among the top five chosen disciples there!
Normal warriors would never dare to provoke Case. Swelling Tide Continent was not just united, they were also among the stronger second-grade worlds.
Case widened his eyes in disbelief. He could not believe that someone had actually denied his order and even spoken to him so harshly!
Octavius, who was behind Jack, immediately stood forward.

He glared at Jack, “Brat! Do you want to die?! How dare you talk to Case like that?!”
Jack took a deep breath, already thoroughly angered. Jack was not afraid of anyone anyway, no matter where they were from.
He scoffed and said, “Who do you think you are? What gives you the right to have me make way for you like that?! If you want to get tested, shouldn’t you be queueing up? What’s the problem with what I said? Are you not trying to cut in line? Are you not shameless?”
The moment that was said, everyone around Jack suppressed their laughter.
Quite a few of them already disliked the Swelling Tide Continent. The whole continent tried to use their unity to do whatever they wanted.
No matter who had a conflict with them, those people would start acting like mad dogs! With all the laughter, the three of them looked absolutely furious!
Case looked at Jack with clenched teeth, “You should be glad for the rules in Cloud City! Otherwise, we’d have already ripped

you apart!”
Jack’s lips twitched helplessly as he evaluated the three of them, “Stop trying to disgust me. Who do you think you are?! Can you stop acting like a fly and disturbing me?!”
Case had already lost his temper completely. If looks could kill, Jack would have already died a thousand times. No one had ever talked to Case like that!
He needed to teach Jack a lesson and have Jack pay a price for his behavior.
He clenched his teeth and looked at Jack, “Brat! If you kneel and beg for mercy right now, I’ll leave your corpse intact! Otherwise, you’ll die a horrible death!”
Jack shook his head in exasperation, “I hear threats like that too often. Let me say it again! Can you please just get lost and stop disturbing me? I don’t care how strong the Swelling Tide Continent is. If you have the skills, then come fight me. However, let me warn you, once you do anything, it will be too late to regret it.”

Cloud City was not Chaos City. They could not attack in groups. Even if they wanted to cause him trouble, they would need to do
it within the rules.
There were some things they could not do at all. To Jack, it would be very easy to destroy them!
Case sneered at Jack’s words, looking at Jack, “What did you say? We’d regret it? Do you even know what you’re saying?”
Case even wondered if he had misheard Jack. Jack actually said they would regret it.
What a joke!
Was that guy crazy?

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3598

. . .

Case narrowed his eyes at Jack, and his anger soared. However, he slowly calmed down as time passed. Something was wrong with that guy!

It was not like Case had never seen any idiots or anyone trying to put on an act before. The person in front of him was acting too arrogantly. The man clearly knew who he was, and clearly knew that he was from Swelling Tide Continent as well as the consequences of offending him. That was something everyone there knew.

So how did the man dare to go against him and say all of that?

Was the man not afraid of them seeking revenge?

Was the man not afraid of being tortured?

Unless the man was one of those warriors who stood at the top, there was no other way the man would act like this. Or maybe the man was doing it on purpose!

Otherwise, where did he get all that courage from?
The strongest warriors in the Whirling World were not at Cloud City at all. They had all rushed over to the level two cities, and would not leave that easily.
Those at Cloud City were mostly just the stronger warriors. Looking at Jack, he did not seem to even be at that level.
Case took a deep breath as he started to say, “Aren’t you happy you got others to laugh at me? You accomplished your task, didn’t you!”
The moment he said that, the laughter diminished quite a bit.
Jack raised an eyebrow, not understanding what he was saying.
Case’s expressions had changed quite a few times, and it was unclear what he was thinking.
Jack did not expect him to say something like that. It was strange.
Case did not care if Jack answered him or not as he merely scoffed and continued, “You act like you aren’t afraid of anything, but

don’t think we’re idiots here. I know most of the really strong warriors, and not a single one of them looks like you. Don’t tell me I
don’t know you because you have a mask on. None of the truly strong warriors would hide their faces behind a mask!”
Jack frowned, completely speechless.
However, he was still curious as to what the other party was getting at.
Case started to raise his voice and say, “Could you think that the others here would regard you more highly because of your
actions? You’re just being a complete idiot now. Unless you’re one of those warriors who stand at the top, how could you have
the courage to challenge me and the whole of Swelling Tide Continent?!”
He said all of that incredibly pridefully.
The onlookers could not help but suddenly look thoughtful. Even though they did not like Case, they had to admit that Case was
right.
A normal warrior would not have spoken up so harshly even if they were feeling rebellious.

It was as if Jack did not care about revenge from the whole Swelling Tide Continent at all.
It was as if Jack was not afraid of anything, but was that possible?
Just like what Case said, Jack was either crazy, or Jack had other motives!
What could the motives be?
Jack could not help but laugh after hearing all of that.
Case really did have a strong imagination to think that he was trying to accomplish some task.
Case coldly said, “You must have been sent by Kendall! I knew he would try and do something behind my back, but I can’t
believe he was employing such a lowly method. Honestly, you’ve accomplished nothing other than disgust me! You’re just a dog
that belongs to Kendall, what’s the point of barking so loudly? It’s not like you can actually do anything to me!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3599

. . .

In just a few words, Case had designated Jack as a dog and determined that Jack was acting this way under orders.

Everyone was suddenly looking at Jack differently. Even though being a dog was honestly nothing much, it was still not the nicest thing to hear.

Rudy was so angry his face was turning red. Who was Kendall even?

Case had fabricated everything to insult Jack. That disgusting man was calling someone else disgusting instead! It was as if he was not the one in the wrong and he was not
the one acting shamelessly!

His skills in twisting the truth were admittedly admirable.

Jack scoffed as he looked at Case coldly, “Stop trying to smear me. You speak as if you’re telling the truth. You told me to not act

like everyone else is an idiot, but I should be telling you that instead. Did you forget how our conflict started? Even if you're an idiot, you should at least retain some memory!"
Hearing that, everyone immediately realized that they had only started fighting because Case had tried to cut in line!
Jack had been perfectly fine otherwise, but Case had come over to cause all that trouble.
If Jack really was there for a certain task, should he not have been the one to start the conflict?
This was more of a coincidence. There was no way anyone could determine who Case would end up trying to cut in the line. So, it completely invalidated what Case had been saying.
Case's lips stiffened, suddenly unable to say anything. In truth, he had actually believed what he said earlier, and he had not just been making something up. However, Jack's words gave him a moment of realization.
Jack continued, "You should just stop trying to make up lies with that empty head of yours. You and your people are already so

used to your tyrannical ways. Is it wrong if someone else doesn’t want to cooperate? Can you stop with your disgusting thoughts?! And you said I disgust you. You’re clearly the one annoying me like a fly!”

Case’s face was absolutely dark at that moment.

He said through clenched teeth, “Then tell me, what gave you the courage to go against me and the whole of Swelling Tide Continent?! Don’t tell me you don’t care at all. There’s no way anyone would believe that!”

Jack’s lips twitched as he smiled coldly, “I just don’t like your disgusting ways.”

After saying that, Jack could not be bothered to say anything else.

The person in front of Jack had already completed his test. Only three crystals had lit up, meaning that person was only thirty percent compatible with the laws, far away from the sixty percent needed.

That person shut his eyes sadly. It was just too improbable. It was too hard to get a Valley Entry Pass from the stones here.

That person sighed as he slowly walked away.
The moment that person walked away, Jack did not hesitate to walk up the stone.
He truly did not want to waste any more time on Case.
Case’s lips twitched as he stared at Jack furiously. That look was filled with intense hatred.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3600

• • •

All of the warriors there had the same thought in their minds, that Jack was done for, and that the Swelling Tide Continent would never let that go.

Jack’s actions had not only challenged Case but the whole continent. With how the warriors from that continent were, they would never let Jack off.

They would target Jack endlessly. Unless that masked man finally dies at their hands, they would never relent!

Some of the warriors were feeling sad for Jack while some were amused.

On the other hand, Jack did not care about how anyone else was thinking at all. At that moment, his full focus was on the stone.

After he stood there firmly, a faint energy enveloped Jack’s body, and an old voice could be heard in his mind, “Focus your full

attention! Summon up all your true energy and use all your soul energy to fuse with this energy!”
Jack took a deep breath, summoning up all his power as that old voice had said, putting it into that thin energy around him. Time slowly flowed, and the stone finally showed results after about five minutes.
He then looked down and raised an eyebrow. There was a glint of surprise on his face. After that, he heard some laughter.
“I was wondering how strong you were! You’re just trash! Only two crystals lit up. With compatibility like that, there’s no way you’re that strong! Brat, stop trying to put on an act in front of me! You’ve been exposed! You were just ordered to challenge me!
A complete dog!”
Octavius started to laugh as well, mocking, “This guy probably thought no one would be able to expose him if he bragged enough. It looks like he was just completely forcing it!”

“Two crystals being lit up means a twenty percent compatibility. Even though compatibility can’t determine a person’s strength,
it’s obvious how weak you are with that level of compatibility! If your compatibility is low, how strong would your technique be?”
Mastering a technique needed talent. A warrior needed to be strong in every way to master a high-level technique. Low
compatibility in a person meant that their comprehension was also bad.
They would not be able to comprehend the laws, and only beneath the laws were the attributes.
That was why Octavius said that low compatibility meant someone would not be able to master a strong technique. They were already limited in comprehension.
Jack sighed, he was actually surprised at the result. After all, he was using a storm god rank technique.
He should not have had such low compatibility, but that seemed to be the case. He was only twenty percent compatible.

Jack frowned thinking about it. He suddenly understood, he had not relied on his comprehension to reach where he was.
A person needed to advance on their own merits, but Jack's way forward had already been paved by the memories he had, and he just needed to walk along the path. That was why he had advanced so smoothly. All the hardships everyone had were nothing to Jack.
That was why Jack had never noticed his low level of compatibility. If he had advanced himself, he would probably still be at West Cercie State.
Jack sighed, not dwelling on it. There was no point as the results did not change what Jack needed to do.
He slowly walked off the stone.
Rudy was the next in line. He widened his eyes in disbelief.
Jack was surprised at the result, but Rudy had been completely shocked.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3601

. . .

Rudy had been with Jack for so long in Jack's journey, and no one knew Jack's talents better than he did.

With so much talent and skill, Jack was only at 20% compatibility. Rudy could not accept that at all. It felt too absurd!

How was that possible?

It was unthinkable!

Having low compatibility with the laws meant that it would be very difficult for Jack to master the attributes as he trained. That was because attributes were subsets of the laws.

Since it was hard to understand attributes, it meant that Jack would not be able to use high-level techniques at all. That was a natural consequence. Yet, the skills that Jack used were far greater than any ordinary person could imagine. Otherwise, he would never have been able to reach his heights. No one ever managed to defeat Jack.

Rudy gulped and blurted in disbelief, “The stone is probably damaged… The results aren’t accurate! They can’t be!”
When everyone around him heard that, everyone laughed in disdain. After all, they knew nothing about Jack and felt like Rudy refused to accept the truth.
Those stones were created along with the Whirling World, and if anything was wrong with the stones, it meant there was something wrong with the creator.
How was that possible?
At that moment, Octavius said coldly, “Stop wasting everyone’s time. If it’s your turn, then hurry up and get tested. What’s the point of saying all of that? Do you like wasting time?”
Octavius’ words were spoken with the intent of making everyone hate Jack and Rudy.
Rudy’s lips twitched as he turned and glared at Octavius.
Octavius scoffed before he held his head high and said, “What? Are you not happy? Am I not right? Aren’t you just wasting everyone’s time?”

Rudy took a deep breath and said, “I’m not going to do it anymore.”
Rudy thus gave his spot to the person behind him. He had just been there for fun, anyway. After all, he was not talented enough to be worth any notice. He would not get any decent results.
If all of the commotions had not happened, his results would just be him satisfying his curiosity. Unfortunately, many people were looking at them at that moment. If his results were bad, they would be mocked in various ways, which might also drag down Jack. Since that was the case, he decided against getting tested.
Octavius laughed. “It looks like you finally realize the kind of vermin you are. You don’t want to embarrass yourself in front of us, right?”
Case and Jimmy, who was behind them, laughed as well. The three of them had a very good relationship with each other.
Jimmy had been quiet all the while not because he was a good person, but because he had just been waiting for the right time.

He had wanted to continue with what Octavius was saying to make Jack look worse, but Jack had said something instead.
At that moment, he was already next to Rudy and patted him on the shoulder. There was no reason to continue arguing
anymore.
Jack looked at Octavius to say, “You’re going to target me, right?”
Octavius had thought that Jack would turn around and run away, seeing how embarrassing his result was, yet Jack actually asked that question, which only amused him.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3602

• • •

Octavius scoffed and said, “Do you need to ask? I told you you’d pay the price!”
Jack calmly continued, “Then, once I’m out of Cloud Valley, I’ll participate in the fog battlefield with all of you.”
It was not just Octavius, but everyone else who heard Jack was stunned as well.
What was wrong with this guy?
Was he unaware of what he said?
Did he forget the results?
He wanted to enter Cloud Valley with just 20% compatibility?
He even said that he would take part in the fog battlefield with them after coming out of Cloud Valley!
Was he crazy?
Case was speechless at that, already sure that Jack was crazy. There was no point in wasting his breath on a madman, but it
was not like he could just not say anything. He would end up losing his pride if he held back.

Case’s lips twitched, wanting to rush forward to beat Jack up, but he was forced to hold back due to the laws of the place.
He gritted his teeth and said, “Are you crazy? Do you know what you’re saying? Everyone saw your result, and you still want to enter Cloud Valley?”
Jack raised an eyebrow. “Did you drop your brain? There are two ways to enter the valley. Everyone else knows about that except you!”
Case‘s lips stiffened, feeling like he was about to faint from the anger. This guy called him brainless!
Of course he knew there were two ways to obtain the Valley Entrance Pass. If one was not compatible enough, they could try going through the Killing Illusion Array and needed to pass six stages for the pass.
This guy only had a 20% compatibility, yet he still wanted to try his luck on the Killing Illusion Array?!
Case refused to believe that guy would be successful. He did not even think about it, but the guy actually used that against him,

much to his anger. He started to pant as he looked at Jack intensely. He wanted to rip Jack apart.
Case gritted his teeth and said, “You only have twenty percent compatibility, and you’re trying to brave the Killing Illusion Array?!
You’re really confident in yourself, aren’t you? With that bit of compatibility, it’s obvious how weak you are. Even reaching Cloud
City is already your limit, and you’re still trying to take up the challenges. Just be honest, are you mad?”
Jack raised an eyebrow, his face devoid of emotions. It was as if nothing Case said would affect him.
All of a sudden, Jack smiled and said, “I know you won’t believe me, but that’s fine. As long as you promise me that you won’t
change your mind, you can think whatever you want to.”
Case’s lips twitched, looking at Jack like he was sick. Octavius and Jimmy were the same as well.
Everyone looked at Jack incredulously, feeling like he was psychotic.

Someone whispered, “Did this guy go crazy? He sounds like he’s certain he’ll be able to enter Cloud Valley. He even wants to go to the fog battlefield with those people. I don’t think he even knows what the fog battlefield is! How else would he be this cocky? Does he want to die that badly, or is he just too confident?”

The person next to him laughed and said, “I can assure you, he definitely knows the rules of the fog battlefield. Anyone who reached Cloud City on their own would have received information about the city.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3603

• • •

“Everyone knows of Cloud City’s various rules. Just look at how arrogantly he’s acting! He probably doesn’t think that the fog battlefield is dangerous at all. I think he’s just messed up. He doesn’t have blind confidence; he’s just bragged too much and isn’t willing to admit he’s wrong.”

After he said that, a lot of people around the man nodded in agreement. They felt like Jack deep down knew his place yet was stubborn to admit it due to his pride.

In the end, they were not allowed to fight without any reason there. No matter how angry the other party got, all they could do was say a few words.

Jack already offended them anyway, so he might as well say a bit more and it would not change anything.

Case felt like he would just get more frustrated arguing with Jack, but he still did not want to let it drop.

Case clenched his fists. “Remember what you’ve said! Fine, I’ll hold you to your word. If you have the ability to get in Cloud Valley…”

After he said that, he paused. His lips twitched as if he was embarrassed to even say what he was saying.

However, he forced himself to continue, “When you come out of Cloud Valley, I’ll wait for you at the entrance. Everyone here can be our witness! Then, we’ll go take part in the fog battlefield. It’ll be down to your skills if you can survive!”

Case then pushed away the next person in line, cutting in with his two fellow disciples. The person who was pushed away stiffened, his face evidently souring in displeasure but decided not to act on it. After all, he did not have Jack’s courage to face the Swelling Tide Continent.

Case quickly got on the stone. Jack raised an eyebrow, remaining in place and not leaving. He waited to see Case’s results.

Noticing Jack was waiting, Case scoffed and said, “Do you think I’ll embarrass myself like you did?”
Jack said in exasperation, “Why are you so full of nonsense? Can’t you just shut your mouth?”
Case was so angry that he almost lost his breath. He could not bear talking to this guy anymore. After all, no matter how angry he got, he could not attack him, so he was forced to swallow all his anger.
His results came out very quickly, revealed in just a moment.
Six crystals lit up around the stone, and the air around him let out a red glow as a Valley Entrance Pass materialized and fell into his hands.
Case smiled confidently. Sure enough, he got the pass just like he expected.
Geniuses were geniuses, and they could not be compared to those who faked to be one.
Case let out a confident smirk as he looked at Jack mockingly.
Everyone started to look at Jack below but saw that Jack’s expression was still calm, as if he had expected that result. Even

though Jack had a mask on, it only covered half his face.
They could still see Jack’s expression through his eyes and the other half of his face. Quite a few people raised their eyebrows,
and some began talking among themselves.
“Let’s not talk about anything else. When it comes to keeping their cool, I don’t think anyone here can beat this guy. If it was me, I would’ve dug a hole for myself in the ground from the sheer awkwardness, but he isn’t even batting an eye. I’m impressed!”
“What do you think he’s thinking? I think he’s just crazy. Even though the warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent are a brazen
bunch, he’s acting like he doesn’t care. Unless you’re incredibly skilled or you come from a powerful background, you can’t do
that. I don’t think he has either!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3604

• • •

“Who knows what he’s thinking? We’ve seen what happened anyway, and they’re not going to let him off the hook. He’s going to suffer now. None of the warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent are going to let him off! They won’t rest until they torture this guy to death!”

“He knew what’ll happen but still insisted on facing them head-on. What do you think he’s thinking?”

“Whatever, let’s stop guessing. Unless we’re him, no one will know what he’s thinking. We don’t need to know either. After all, he’s probably just a madman.”

Case walked down the stone, and Octavius went up right after that. The results came out very quickly as well. He managed to get his entrance pass in just a few moments. Everyone looked at them with looks of admiration, lamenting that the strong would always remain at the top of the pyramid.

When they went through the tests, only one out of a hundred was lucky enough to pass, but those two managed to get it in just
one try.
Prodigies would always be prodigies, no doubt.
Jimmy took a deep breath, suddenly feeling like the weight on his shoulders was heavy. His two elder disciples had gotten the
entrance passes. If he could not reach 60% compatibility, it would be so embarrassing.
After Octavius got off the stone proudly, Jimmy walked up the stone. He started to summon all the energy in his body.
After a few moments, the crystals that lit up gave an obvious result.
Jimmy’s lips stiffened. He had failed!
Only five crystals had lit up, but a failure was a failure. He had not gotten 60%. Compared to his elder disciples, he was still a
level lower!
Jimmy’s face reddened, feeling like he had never been so embarrassed before.
Case frowned. He could see Jimmy’s awkward expression and stiff body, and it was obvious what Jimmy was thinking. He did

not think much about it.
He raised his voice and said, “Come down! There’s nothing embarrassing about it. You’re just one crystal away. There are some who got two crystals and are still so confident.”
Jimmy looked at Case and said miserably, “I’m not crazy…”
No matter how difficult it was, he still had to accept it.
Jimmy walked off the stone with a depressed aura.
When he returned to Case’s side, Case glared at Jimmy. “What’s there to be so depressed about?!”
Case looked like he suddenly thought about something.
He smirked as he said, “I won’t waste my time on that brat. Since you can’t go into Cloud Valley, go look at that guy’s results. Isn’t he about to enter the Killing Illusion Array? You can go see how he does…”
No matter how angry he was, he needed to get his priorities straight. He came back to form his world avatar in Cloud Valley to

improve his skills, not to fight with a brainless twat.
He needed to enter Cloud Valley before anything else. Thus, he decided to have Jimmy keep an eye on Jack. They could not let that guy escape!
Jimmy naturally understood what Case meant and nodded, “Alright, don’t worry, Case.”
Case let out a cold smile before he turned around to look at Jack, saying mockingly, “Brat, you were so confident before this.
Make sure you don’t regret anything. Jimmy here happens to be free. He’ll see if you can get the entrance pass from the Killing Illusion Array.”
Jack’s only response was a cold nod.
Case stiffened. Every time he spoke to Jack, it was like speaking to a wall. Jack did not react at all, and the one who ended up frustrated was himself.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3605

• • •

Case’s lips twitched. He decided to turn away, shooting a look at Octavius. Octavius nodded, and the two of them took their
entrance passes and entered Cloud Valley.
Only Jimmy was left behind, facing Jack.
Everyone looked at them, amused.
Looking at the three men, some people felt like Jack was shooting his foot. The man surely did not expect anyone to stay and
keep an eye on him.
In truth, Jack did not even think about that at all. Since someone was there to look at him, he would simply allow it. It was not
troublesome, anyway.
Jack said calmly, “You can follow me if you want, but don’t start talking nonsense. I don’t have the time to waste on you.”
After saying that, Jack left without turning around. The Killing Illusion Array was right on the other side.

Jimmy’s lips twitched, wanting to ridicule Jack, but he did not want to be irritated in the process. Thus, he swallowed his words and followed behind, going toward the Killing Illusion Array. At that moment, everyone started to get interested.

Some people did not even bother queueing up anymore, deciding to follow them to watch what happened.

After all, Jack had been so confident as if everything he said would happen. Quite a few people wanted to see what would happen to Jack, and wanted to witness how many stages he would be able to get past in the Killing Illusion Array.

A few people followed Jack and the others to the point that, in the end, it became a large gathering of people. All of them gathered where the Killing Illusion Array was.

The Killing Illusion Array was at a large circular plaza lit up with vibrant lights. The plaza was very wide, and there was a sea of people there.

The whole plaza had countless illusory stones around them.

Anyone who wanted to pass needed to put five million spirit crystals or the corresponding amount of purple gold into those stones to activate the Killing Illusion Array. Then, the person going through the test would need to sit on the illusory stone upon activation to go through the test.

They did not need to undergo the tests physically, of course. The illusory stone would form an exact clone of the person, sending the person into the Killing Illusion Array to go through the test. No matter how much damage one suffered in the illusion, their actual body would not be harmed.

Jack told Rudy all about those rules on the way. As Jack's subordinate, Rudy did not receive all the rules when he entered Cloud City.

Rudy finally understood what the Killing Illusion Array was.

He smiled and said, "That's not bad. It saves time, effort, and trouble. Even if you get injured there, it won't be too bad."

Rudy was happy for a moment before he turned to look at Jimmy behind them in annoyance.

Even though Jimmy did not dare to do anything to them, he was like a fly on the wall, annoying him with just his mere presence.
Just looking at the guy made him think of how the three of them had humiliated him and Jack.
Rudy said, “They should be happy that we can’t fight here, or you wouldn’t let them off easily!”
Jack smiled and said, “This is fine. As long as they keep to their word, they’ll pay the price.”
Rudy looked up at Jack earnestly. “Jack, I wasn’t acting out back there. That stone must be broken!”
He knew very well how strong Jack was. He refused to believe Jack was so strong with only 20% compatibility.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3606

. . .

The moment Rudy saw only two crystals lit up on the stone, he was stunned.
He could not believe what he was seeing at all. After all, his experiences were far more convincing than anything else, so he found it hard to accept the results that the stone showed.
Nonetheless, everyone had a point-the creator of the stone was the same person who created the Whirling World. Even if everyone there was wrong, that ancient hero could not be. Otherwise, he would never have been able to make the Whirling World.
The world was able to host innumerable warriors, too. Those conflicting feelings continued the whole time, causing Rudy’s mind to feel scrambled. He did not know whether or not to believe the stone.

However, his past experiences told him that Jack's results could not be that bad. There were nine crystals on the stone, and Jack would have at least lit up eight of those crystals. Only that would reflect Jack's skills.

Jack smiled, saying calmly, "The stone wasn't wrong. I do have twenty-percent compatibility."

Rudy's lips stiffened, not knowing what to say. Even after Jack admitted it himself, he was still doubtful.

Alas, the truth was in front of him and Jack made no arguments, so he, too, had nothing to refute with.

He took a deep breath and said helplessly, "But you're powerful! Even if the strongest warrior from second-grade worlds stands before you, he'd still be no match for you. Even Case could light up six of those crystals, so there's no way you can't!"

Rudy's words carried all his suspicions.

Jack nodded. In truth, Rudy was not wrong. However, he really had too many secrets and had only been able to reach his heights due to those secrets. He did not need talent at all.

Others had to undergo many difficulties when it came to getting stronger, but Jack walked a paved path without any obstacles - all thanks to the ancient heroes that paved the way for him.

He just needed to take things one step at a time. Of course, there were some things that could not be explained, and it was not the time to explain them anyway.

Jack patted Rudy's shoulder. "I'll explain all of that in the future."

Rudy sighed. Even though he felt frustrated, it was not the time for any explanations.

At that moment, a sharp-nosed man shouted, "I already said to not put the third stage in front. Just follow the order we agreed on, and you'll succeed! You're like a stubborn mule… Look at what happened! You wasted five million spirit crystals! Do you not care about that?"

The sharp-nosed man was shouting at top of his lungs, and the one being shouted at looked smaller than he was. He had a pair of very small ears as well.

The small-eared man looked at the sharp-nosed man unhappily and said, “Your order is wrong too! Everyone has their own ways. I put the third stage in front because it’s the hardest for me! The second and third stages aren’t that hard!”

The sharp-nosed man’s lips twitched, looking like he was talking to an idiot.

He pointed at the small-eared man. “Is there something wrong with your head?! The third stage is the hardest, you say? Who told you that?!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3607

• • •

The sharp-nosed man put up two fingers. “Two lower ultimate god-rank techniques at the first stage! Three upper earth-rank techniques! It looks like a lot, but it’s not that hard!”

“You can slowly challenge a lower ultimate god-rank technique before challenging an upper ultimate god-rank technique. If you do that, the third stage will be very easy! You just need to have enough focus and attention on the first stage!”

The small-eared man started to look like he agreed with some of what the sharp-nosed man said, but he refused to admit he was wrong and thus stubbornly said, “The first stage should be the hardest, but I think…”.

Before he could finish, the sharp-nosed man interrupted, “Just shut up! Just ask anyone here. Who thinks the first stage is the

hardest?! Why are you arguing with me? Stop trying to be smart. Even when you lose, you refuse to admit it!”
“Don’t forget, you can only take part in the Killing Illusion Array three times. You’ve already wasted two chances, and you only have one chance left! If you still can’t do it, then it’s just not meant to be. You might never be able to form a world avatar!”
Hearing that, the small-eared man got anxious, unable to accept anyone telling him that he would not be able to get a world avatar.
Like an angered cat, he growled, “Don’t jinx me! I only did that after thinking about it deeply! Do you really think I don’t care?”
Saying that, the man’s eyes started to redden.
Rudy stood there, stunned. He did not understand at all, so he turned to look at Jack curiously.
Jack smiled as he slowly explained.
The Killing Illusion Array was split into six stages. The order could be determined by the challengers. They could choose the

hardest stage to start with and could also choose the weakest one to warm up for the next challenges.
As long as they could pass all six stages, the Valley Entrance Pass was theirs!
Those two were arguing so much because the order could determine one's success as well. After all, the moment the challenges started, they would not get any chance to rest. Some challengers who were confident with their stamina would start with the hardest stage so they would have enough stamina to slowly go through the remaining rounds. If they started from the weakest one and used up too much of their power and focus, they would not have enough strength when faced with the hardest stages. Thus, everyone would carefully pick their own order when it came to those challenges.
Jack put up six fingers. "The sixth stage is the easiest and requires you to kill three illusions that have mastered upper earth rank techniques. The fifth stage is one level higher, needing you to kill five of those illusions. The fourth stage is much harder, needing

you to defeat three illusions with upper earth-rank techniques and one with a lower ultimate god-rank technique.”
Saying that, Jack paused for a moment when he noticed that Rudy’s jaw slackened in shock. To Rudy, it felt like it was too difficult, and it was only the fourth stage!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3608

• • •

Jack smiled and continued, “The third stage is even harder, needing you to kill two illusions with the first stage of lower ultimate god-rank techniques and three with upper earth-rank techniques.”

He then put up two fingers and said, “The second stage is more than twice as hard as the sixth. You need to kill three illusions with lower ultimate god-rank techniques.”

Rudy’s lips twitched. In truth, if it was just one of them, the skill ceiling would not be that high. After all, most of the warriors gathered in Cloud City were not weak.

However, the challengers need to face three illusions with lower ultimate god-rank techniques at the same time!

The spike of difficulty was too high!

Quite a few of them failed at the second stage, let alone the first stage.

Jack said, “Actually, I feel like the first stage isn’t as hard as I thought. The challengers only need to defeat two illusions that have gotten their lower ultimate god-rank techniques to the second stage.”

Rudy’s lips twitched, saying helplessly, “When it’s you, it isn’t difficult at all, but other warriors will say otherwise. Even those among the upper end of the ladder will find it hard to complete all six stages!”

No wonder those two were arguing so much. Rudy sighed. If he had their level of skills, he might have struggled just to figure out the order. After all, it concerned their future accomplishments.

No one was willing to end up being much worse than all those around them just because they could not get through this.

Rudy looked at the sharp-nosed man and said to Jack, “You only get to challenge it three times?”

Jack nodded. There were a lot of stones around the plaza, but there were also a lot of challengers.

If the challenges were not limited, no one would ever be able to get their turn. With this rule, every warrior valued their
challenges a lot.
Some of them sat by the sides to calm themselves to prevent regretting their choices. They tried their best to play out the challenges, doing their best to make it as easy as possible so they could complete them. Unfortunately, a lot of the warriors just could not get through it no matter how well they arranged things. If they wanted to easily
get the Valley Entrance Passes, they needed to have enough skill.
Many of them would place the blame on whatever they could instead of recognizing that they themselves and the failings of their
skills and foresight-were the problem.
Those warriors that had been following Jack started to rub their hands as well, wanting to try it out. After all, they had three
chances. Even if they wasted one, they still had two more.

In truth, not many of them felt like they would be able to get the passes from their compatibility. After all, high compatibility
required a lot of talent.
They knew themselves how talented they were. Many of them had their hopes on the Killing Illusion Array, feeling that they would
be able to use their skills and their wits to obtain the Valley Entrance Pass.
Among them, a man in purple robes shook his head and said, “I’ll pass the first stage first. If I can’t even pass that, I shouldn’t
bother trying anymore.”
The first stage was the hardest, so many of them chose to put the first stage first. After all, their focus and power would be at
their highest when they first enter.
It was when they were at their strongest that they would be able to show their full strength.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3609

. . .

If they were not able to pass the first stage even with their full might, there was no hope of them passing anyway!

A white-robed man shook his head. “Hold on! You should start with the fourth stage to give yourself some confidence. There’s no limit to the time you can use during the challenges anyway, so you can recover as you fight! Just deal with the earlier stages first, and you can use your power in the first stage!”

“That way, your chances for success will be much higher. After all, if you do the first stage first, you’ll still need to be wary of the later stages, and you won’t want to use up too much true energy. You might look like you’re at full strength, but you’re actually holding back, and the skills you can use are limited!”

When that person said that, everyone else nodded, feeling like he was right.

However, someone else jumped out to refute him, “You’re right, but not quite so. You have to think about things holistically. If you put the first stage in front, you can measure your skills and see how likely it’ll be for you to pass, or how much hope you have…”

Those people discussed things for a long time, with some agreeing and others disagreeing. Everyone had their own views. After all, there was no perfect order.

After a long time, an unfriendly voice spoke up, “You’re all just unwanted vermin. Without enough skill, you won’t be able to pass no matter how you go through the stages!”

Jimmy let out a sneer as he looked at all the warriors around him.

When they heard Jimmy’s words, they felt anger in their hearts, but no one spoke. They were not as daring as Jack and dared not to offend the Swelling Tide Continent. Jimmy was quite high up in that world as well. He was skilled too, so it was not worth fighting him. Furthermore, they had nothing to say about Jimmy’s remark.

Skill was the most important thing to pass it. No matter how well one arranged things, they had no hope if they were not skilled
enough.
Jack raised an eyebrow, glancing at all of them silently.
Jimmy suddenly turned to look at Jack. All the hatred in his eyes was evident.
“Did you forget what you said just now, brat? Don’t regret what you said. I won’t allow you to go back on your word! Hurry up!
Don’t waste my time!”
Even though he had not passed the compatibility test, it did not mean he could not enter Cloud Valley. That was what the Killing Illusion Array was for. Jimmy trusted in his skills. He felt like he would be able to pass it very easily.
Case asked him to keep an eye on Jack, but he was more focused on the Killing Illusion Array. He thus decided to watch as Jack
joined the Killing Illusion Array.
Once Jack embarrassed himself, Jimmy’s task would be done. After that, it would be his turn to show off!

Jack’s lips twitched in exasperation.
Rudy was right, that guy was just like a pesky fly. Everything he said disgusted Jack.
Jack took a deep breath before he turned around to look at Jimmy coldly. “Can you shut up? I decide when I challenge it. If you want to challenge the Killing Illusion Array, I won’t stop you, but stop yapping at me.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3610

• • •

Jack had met many warriors from second-grade worlds with the same kind of attitude as Jimmy had. They always wanted to
show how special they were, and they would do their best to use their words to push others back.
He regularly had to deal with nonsense like that. He did not bother with it at all.
Jimmy’s lips twitched as he glared at Jack viciously.
He gritted his teeth and looked at Jack. “Fine, keep being proud of yourself! Let’s see how long you can maintain this farce! Once
you start, people will know you were just bragging! Let’s see if you still have the guts to talk to me like this afterward.”
Jack scoffed as he looked at Jimmy in disdain. He took out a piece of purple gold from Mustard Seed. It was not too big, only about the size of half a fist worth five million spirit

crystals. The illusory stone nearest to Jack happened to be empty.
Not wanting to waste time, Jack walked over, but the moment he did, he heard Jimmy speak, “You just love to brag, don’t you?!
Do you still remember what you said? You said so confidently that you’ll easily get the Valley Entrance Pass and then participate
in the fog battlefield with Case! I heard all of that!”
Jimmy deliberately raised his voice, attracting a lot of attention from the people around them. Not to mention, the Killing Illusion Array had a high level of eliminations as well. Everyone who challenged the array had a certain
amount of respect for it. Jimmy deliberately shouted all of that so everyone else would know that Jack was just an arrogant fool
who only knew how to brag.
Thus, a few of them started to look at Jack mockingly, chuckling at him as though he was a clown.
Some of them deliberately raised their voices as they talked.

“Where did this guy come from? There are so many people here. The only ones who would dare to guarantee they’ll pass are all the best warriors of their worlds. This guy doesn’t look like anyone notable at all. Everyone knows how to brag, of course. After all, talk is cheap.”

“What do you think the Killing Illusion Array is, brat? Do you think it’s like your home that you can easily get by? Stop joking around, okay?! Stop bragging so much! It’s one thing to disgust yourself, but you disgust others too!”

“That’s right! You even said you want to take part in the fog battlefield! Who do you think you are? Aren’t you afraid of dying? Aren’t you afraid they’ll take your Heartblood once you enter the Radiant Hall?”

“Forget about it, all he knows how to do is brag. He won’t listen to us. Look at him, he’s about to activate the illusory stone! He’ll know very soon how much of a joke his thoughts were.”

Jack took a deep breath, looking at all those who spoke coldly.

He hated those people who were just there to gossip. They clearly did not know the true situation yet talked without stopping the moment someone fanned the flames.
At that moment, someone shouted from afar. It was that sharp-nosed man.
The man was frowning. “I said it so many times, but you refused to listen to me! Do you even know how to think properly?!”
The man he was talking to was not the small-nosed man he had been lecturing earlier, but a square-faced man who challenged
the array a few moments ago.
The three of them were from the same clan and had come to Cloud City to face the challenges. The sharp-nosed man had been too loud, and he, too, attracted a lot of attention. Everyone who was looking at Jack looked his
way instead.
The square-faced man was sitting in front of the illusory stone. His eyes were shut tight as he tried to challenge the array.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3611

. . .

Unless they passed or failed, the challengers would not wake up. At that moment, the square-faced man seemed to be in a difficult spot. Even though his eyes were closed, they could see his eyeballs constantly moving about and the sweat forming on his forehead.

His arms were on his legs, and his fists were clenched tightly. He looked incredibly tense. He was already at the most important moment. There were six crystals on the illusory stone. It represented the six stages. Everyone could see the situation from the crystals on the stones.

The square-faced man had the third and fifth stones lit up, while the rest were dimmed. It meant that he had only passed the third and fifth stages. Even though his body would not be harmed, they could tell from the body condition he was in.

Everyone could tell that he was not really able to hold on. However, he had only been able to pass two out of the six stages.
If this went on, he would only be able to light up another stone at most before the square-faced man failed. That was why the sharp-nosed man was so angry.
He pointed out two fingers and said to the small-eared man, “It’s been so long and he only managed to pass two stages! With his energy reserves, he’ll only be able to last another five minutes at most before he fails! He should not have wasted all his time on the third stage!
“He should have dealt with the easier stages before dealing with the harder ones. Then, he can use up all his strength without any reservation. Only then would he be able to pass! Otherwise, all his efforts would be wasted!”
The small-eared man’s lips twitched, feeling frustrated. Earlier, he had just been berated. When the square-faced man’s results

were man, he was still the one being berated. He just felt incredibly frustrated, but there was nothing he could say about it.
The sharp-nosed man frowned and continued, “Time is our most valuable weapon! If we use it properly, we can pass! I’ve already told the two of you what to do so many times before you activate the illusory stones, but you refused to listen!”
The more the sharp-nosed man spoke, the angrier he got. He wanted to slap the two of them in their faces at that moment. In truth, the sharp-nosed man was not just berating them for the sake of it, he had his reasonings.
After activating the Killing Illusion Array, they needed to use every second wisely. They could not waste too much time on the easier stages. Wasting time was equal to wasting energy. Then, when they reached the harder stages, they would not be able to use their full power.
They would already have used up most of their strength and lost because of that. There were quite a few complaints about them.

Someone was covering his face and sighing, “I didn’t know how to plan things out properly. I shouldn’t have wasted so much time on the fourth stage. I used up most of my true energy on that stage. After that, I didn’t really have the strength to win anymore…

“The first time I tried, I didn’t have any experience and I did the same thing. Before you challenge the Killing Illusion Array, you have to think things through. However, I never expected myself to waste so much time on the easier stages, causing myself to lose…”

When Jack heard all of that, he glinted in his eyes. He turned to look at Jimmy, changing his mind.

He had planned on activating the illusory stone and challenging the Killing Illusion Array right away. However, it would be less amusing if he did that.

The fog battlefield was a fun thing. He felt like he needed to make those guys be more careful, so the fog battlefield would not be that boring.

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3612

. . .

If he did not make them pay the right price, they would not be afraid. He had to make sure they felt enough pain so they would
not cause him any more trouble in the future.
In Jack’s eyes, the warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent were like troublesome wild dogs. He had to make sure they
suffered enough. pain so they would not cause him trouble in the future.
With those thoughts in mind, Jack made his decision. He turned to look at Jimmy.
Jimmy raised an eyebrow and looked at Jack. He had no idea what the other party wanted and why Jack was looking at him?
Jack smiled before turning around and walking a few steps forward causing Jimmy to frown. Could the guy be regretting things and not planning on challenging the Killing Illusion Array?
Everyone else was curious too.

Jack suddenly laughed and said, “Why don’t we make a bet?”
Jimmy’s lips twitched.
What was he trying to do this time?
He looked at Jack with hatred. Jimmy was certain that Jack was not going to challenge the Killing Illusion Array because Jack would certainly fail, and all his words would be exposed.
He must be trying to set a nice stage for him to retreat.
Jimmy would not let Jack get what he wanted.
Jack had said such nasty things earlier and embarrassed them, so there was no way he would just let it slide.
Jimmy smirked and said, “What do you want to bet? Let me make things clear, no matter what you say, don’t even think about escaping. You have to challenge the Killing Illusion Array!”
Jack nodded, “Don’t worry, I’ll definitely challenge it, but it’ll be boring if I challenge it just like that. Why don’t we make a bet on

top of it? I'll put forty million spirit crystals at stake. If you win, then I'll give you forty million. If you lose, you have to give the same to me."

Jimmy raised an eyebrow, saying nonchalantly, "Fine! What do you want to bet on? As long as you take on the challenge, I'll join you till the end."

Jack said, "We'll bet on the time! You want to challenge the Killing Illusion Array anyway. Let's bet on who can finish it in the least amount of time."

The moment Jack said that, everyone was stunned again. They thought that Jack really knew how to put on a show.

Jimmy scoffed, looking at Jack in exasperation. He felt like Jack was just there to be laughed at. It seemed like Jack wanted to bet on who would complete the array in the least amount of time.

The bet did not seem like much, but why was Jack so confident he would win?

In Jimmy's eyes, Jack should be happy if he was able to complete three stages, let alone all six of them. Jack even wanted to

see who took the shortest amount of them.
Jimmy was so speechless he did not know what to say.
One of the warriors that came with them could no longer take it, saying, “Hey, you sure know how to talk! You even want to
compete to see who would take the shortest time. You should be worried about passing in the first place!”
“That’s right! This guy talks up a storm. Does he think he’s that amazing? He even wants to bet forty million spirit crystals. Do
you think he’s actually crazy or is he just that confident?”
“I think he’s actually crazy. Anyone with just a bit of intelligence would not do that. With just twenty percent compatibility, there’s
no way he’s that strong. He’s just a regular warrior. Jimmy might not be as strong as Chase, but he’s still one of the stronger warriors.
“He will definitely pass the Killing Illusion Array, and won’t even take that long. I don’t know what’s giving this guy the guts to
compete against Jimmy!”

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3613

• • •

“Does he even know what he’s doing?! He’s even betting forty million. How crazy!”
No matter what everyone else said, Jack did not show that much emotion on his face. He looked at Jimmy calmly, waiting for
Jimmy to respond.
Jimmy looked back at Jack with a speechless expression as if Jack was crazy.
However, his exasperation was one thing. Forty million was no small number. Since the guy wanted to give it to him, he had no
reason to refuse.
Jimmy scoffed and nodded, “Since you want to gamble so much, I’ll grant you your wish. We’ll do as you say. If I lose, I’ll give
you forty million spirit crystals. If you lose, you have to give me forty million!”
Jack nodded calmly, not looking worried at all.
Jimmy’s lips twitched as he looked at Jack, feeling like there was something

wrong with Jack. From the first moment he talked to Jack, Jack had never acted normally. Jack had practically offended everyone he could. Jack took out four pieces of purple gold from Mustard Seed that were worth ten million each. He put them in his palm.
“You have to try to win. If you win, these pieces of gold are yours.”
When Jack said that, many others felt incredibly exasperated.
Jack never relented, as if he was just trying to tempt Jimmy into doing his best. He did not sound like he thought Jimmy could win at all. It was as if Jimmy was an ant that could be killed at any time in Jack’s eyes.
Jimmy looked at Jack and was speechless, “Looks like you really are crazy.”
Initially, everyone thought that Jack had something up his sleeves, but slowly, they started to agree that there was something wrong with Jack’s head. Otherwise, there was no way he would say anything like that.
Jack scoffed, not caring about it. For the sake of his future plans, he would bear with whatever this guy said.

He pointed at the illusory stone and said, “You can go first. Don’t worry, I won’t try to run. I’ll wait for you here.”
Jimmy raised an eyebrow, not believing what Jack said at all. He even felt like Jack was doing all of that in order to escape.
The moment he activated the Killing Illusion Array unless he passed or failed, he would not be able to abandon it in the middle.
Jack was planning on running away during that period when he could not do anything.
Jimmy scoffed, “Brat! I was wondering what you were putting up an act for, so that’s your plan…”
Jack interrupted him before he could finish, “Just say it if you don’t have the guts! I don’t mind going first anyway. I’m just worried you won’t want to bet against me after that.”
Jimmy could not help but laugh when he heard that. The other party really did have a screw loose, or he would not have said something like that.
The ones around them could not help but laugh.

“Every time you say something, you render us speechless. Do you think that Jimmy will not want to compete against you once
he sees your results? That he’ll be too scared to bet against you?”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3614

• • •

Jack turned to look at the person that was talking.
That person came from a second-grade world and did not look too great. His mouth was exceptionally big.
That person had mocked him quite a bit before this. Every time Jack said something, that person would add a few words.
Jack narrowed his eyes, remembering how that person looked. If he had the chance, he would definitely make sure the
bigmouthed man regretted what he said.
Jack turned around and looked at Jimmy, “I’m not trying to provoke you, I just think that you might not have the guts to challenge
me anymore if I go first.”
Jimmy was getting frustrated when he heard that, “Hey, brat, stop trying to talk as if you’re some amazing master. No one is
going to question you if you don’t say anything. Can you please look at yourself in the mirror?!”

“Are you even capable of achieving any results with your meager skills? I don’t even think you can pass three stages, let alone
six!”
Rudy could no longer hold back.
He started to shout, “Stop looking down on others! If you think he’s wrong, then do as he says and use your results to shut us up. Otherwise, you’re just feeling guilty!”
Jimmy’s lips twitched. If he did not do as that guy said, then he was feeling guilty.
Was he the one who was afraid of taking up the bet?
What a joke!
How could those two even say that?
Everyone else around them did not even know what to say to that.
They felt like the situation was getting more and more absurd. No one knew where those two got the confidence to say all of that.
Jimmy scoffed, “Whatever! I would be stupid to keep on arguing with you. Since the two of you want to see my results so much,

I’ll grant you your wish. I’ll take the challenge first, but everyone, don’t let them run. If I win, I’ll split ten million with all of you!”
Everyone got interested when they heard that. Even though there were quite a few of them gathered there, ten million was not a small number. It was a nice little bonus.
Quite a few of them guaranteed, “Don’t worry! Leave this guy to us. Even if he wants to run, we’ll surround him and not let him leave until you come out with the Valley Entrance Pass.”
Jimmy relaxed when he heard that. He turned to look at Jack coldly. After that, he did not waste any more time as he walked right over to the illusory stone.
Jack should have been the one sitting there, but it was fine. Jack would be challenging it eventually anyway. He would use his skills to show everyone how much of a piece of trash Jack was.
Jimmy sat in front of the illusory stone. He took out a small piece of purple gold from this ring and put it into the stone. Colorful light then shone out of the stone.

After that, Jimmy slowly closed his eyes, and his clone formed in the array!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3615

• • •

The illusory stone had been activated, and everyone surrounded Jimmy, watching the crystals on the stones.

At that moment, not a single one of the crystals lit up, but everyone knew that all of them would eventually.

The large-mouthed man said in admiration, “Which stage do you think he’ll challenge first? Even though none of the stages will be that difficult for him, we can use this as a reference. After all, it’s still not an easy challenge, and he needed to bet on time too.”

As he said that, he started to laugh. The others around him laughed as well. After all, those warriors that knew of the whole situation just felt like Jack was acting in an absolutely absurd manner.

Someone there said, “Hey, everyone, stop laughing. If this guy wins, I’ll write my name backward from now on. Jimmy probably

doesn’t really care too much either. As long as he doesn’t run, let’s leave him be. We should be looking at how Jimmy’s
challenging everything.”
All of them nodded, feeling like that person was right.
Jimmy might be very angry, but he probably did not see Jack as a challenge at all. After all, the guy was just acting like a
complete clown.
No one believed a single word that guy was saying.
Jack did not care about what everyone else was saying at all, but Rudy whispered unhappily, “These idiots have no eyes. You’ll completely shock them later!”
Jack smiled, “Ignore them, you don’t have to care about how they are.”
Rudy nodded, not continuing. However, he still looked unhappy.
After about five minutes, the fourth crystal on the illusory stone lit up.
Everyone widened their eyes, mumbling, “So he chose the fourth stage first! The fourth stage isn’t easy. He passed it so quickly!”

“That’s right! Three illusions with upper earth rank techniques and one illusion with a lower ultimate god rank technique. Many people have been stuck there. I can’t believe he put that stage first. It’s obvious how confident he is. He didn’t even waste that much time.”

Everyone looked at the illusory stone. eagerly, even forgetting about Jack. He was able to peacefully sit there.

After another five minutes, the third crystal lit up.

Everyone was surprised. Many of them put the third stage in front because the third stage had the most numbers even if it was not the strongest.

If the third stage was toward the back, they could easily waste a lot of time. It was better to have it in front so they could use the fastest time possible to get past it!

After another five minutes, the second crystal lit up. At that moment, a lot of them held their breaths. The hardest stages were the

first three. Jimmy had already passed two of them. As long as he maintained his condition, it would not be hard for him to pass everything, nor would it take that long.
At that moment, quite a few people had looks of admiration and jealousy on their faces.
They were regular warriors who found it incredibly hard to pass the challenges, but it did not seem difficult to Jimmy at all. Jimmy was just that much stronger than them.
They were nothing compared to Jimmy. Even touching Jimmy’s feet was a bit of a stretch.
They lamented the gulf in talent.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3616

. . .

Time ticked away, and after another five minutes, the crystals showed no signs of changing.
Everyone started to wonder what was happening.
The initial progress had been so quick, so why did everything suddenly stop?
Has Jimmy run out of energy?
It did not sound possible. Jimmy was not weak, and the Swelling Tide Continent was one of the stronger ones as well. Jimmy
should not be stuck there.
Then, everyone suddenly noticed that Jimmy was frowning. His hands were clenched tightly. It was obvious he was not in a good condition. Even though the physical body did not need to fight, the physical body still controlled the clone.
The clone would affect the physical body's mental condition. It was obvious that Jimmy was facing something difficult which

shocked everyone. However, it did not last for too long.
In just a few more moments, the crystal representing the first stage was lit up. Everyone suddenly realized what happened.
No wonder Jimmy had been stuck for so long, he had been at the hardest stage.
The first stage involved two illusions that were already at the second stage of mastery of a lower ultimate god rank technique.
Those illusions were attacking at the same time and applied quite a lot of pressure.
After the three hardest stages were dealt with, all that was left were the fifth and sixth stages.
In five short minutes, all of the crystals were lit up. Jimmy had used less than half an hour in total. The time could not be
considered very short among all those that passed, and could only be considered. average.
However, not many had actually passed in the first place. Those that passed were already among the strongest warriors.
The moment he passed, a radiant glow flashed, and the Valley Entrance Pass materialized in the air, falling into Jimmy’s hands.

Jimmy had a smile on his face as he looked at the pass in his hands. Even though he had been in a bit of trouble during the first stage, he still managed to hold on. He might have used a bit more time, but he was quite satisfied.

Once he enters Cloud Valley and forms a world avatar, his skills would improve to the next stage. Then, no one would dare to look down on him.

“Congratulations on getting the pass, Jimmy!”

“We were right. With Jimmy’s skills, the Valley Entrance Pass was already in the bag!”

There were congratulations everywhere. Jimmy could not stop the smile on his face. He loved being admired. Only the truly strong would receive that much admiration.

He might not be as strong as Case at that moment, but he had faith that, as long as he had enough time, even the strongest in the second-grade worlds would not be a match for him, let alone Case. He wanted to stand above everyone!

At that moment, he felt incredibly proud, as if everyone there was beneath his notice.

Right at that moment, Jack's voice was heard by everyone, "Since you've already completed the challenge, hurry on down. Stop taking up space. I still have other things to do, so quit wasting my time."

The moment that was said, the earlier atmosphere was completely broken.

Everyone turned to look at Jack incredulously. They found themselves speechless as they looked at Jack.

They could not understand what Jack was thinking. Jack never ceased to amaze everyone.

Did he not know how exasperating he was?

Jimmy was feeling incredibly frustrated. Jack constantly provoked him. Everything Jack said was worse than the other. This time, it ignited Jimmy's anger. He scoffed as he walked down the illusory stone to Jack.

He coldly looked at Jack, "Very good! You never cease to amaze me! I'm down now! Let's see what other tricks you have to pull!"

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3617

Jack raised an eyebrow, not even sparing Jimmy another glance as he walked in front of the stone. He ignored all the other noises as he sat down.

The discussions around him got louder, wondered what sort of excuse he would have, but he actually went over.

“What could his excuse be? With things at this stage, excuses are useless. He’s the one who brought this onto himself. He’s already said so many nasty things. He no longer has any path to retreat to. I want to see how he’ll act after his results are out!”

“I’m really looking forward to the results too. His expression will definitely be very interesting. He won’t be able to say anything then!”

“Who knows? This guy always surprises us. He might end up with a lot of excuses once the results are out, but it will all be useless then.”

Jack took a deep breath, not caring about what everyone else was saying at all. He shut his eyes, and his soul was sent into the illusory stone.

Suddenly, his body felt blank. When he opened his eyes again, he was in a foreign space.

It was a completely green grassland. The space was flat around him. Looking over, the grass extended all the way to the horizon.

At that moment, there was an old voice in Jack’s mind, “Choose your stage!”

Jack did not hesitate to choose the sixth one. That was because the order was not important to Jack at all.

After he chose the stage, six black figures appeared in front of him. All three of those figures had human shapes, but the details were blurry.

He could not see them clearly, but he could see the weapons in their hands. All of them had silver swords.

The next moment, they started to charge at Jack.

Those three figures were using upper earth rank techniques. They were nothing in Jack’s eyes.

Jack frowned slightly as he started to form seals. Ninety Soul Swords materialized in front of him.

Jack clapped his hands, and the Soul Swords condensed into three large ones. He pushed forward and struck all three of those figures.

In just a moment, the Soul Swords pierced into the figures. The figures did not even last for half a second before they turned into gray mist, disappearing into thin air.

At that moment, Jack was completely emotionless. However, the outside world was not as calm as Jack. It only took three seconds after Jack shut his eyes before the sixth crystal lit up.

Everyone had still been talking when someone exclaimed, “What?! That’s quick!”

They had still been insulting Jack when the sound attracted their attention. Everyone looked over to see the lit-up crystal, and they could not remain calm.

Even though it was the crystal that represented the sixth stage, it was still way too fast. They felt like Jack had just shut his eyes when the crystal lit up. That speed was incredibly quick!

The large-mouthed man pursed his lips, “There’s nothing to be surprised about. It’s just the sixth stage, no matter how fast he was. This guy must just be trying to shock us! He probably paid a large price to do this. He must have used up all his true energy! If I don’t hold back at all, I could finish the sixth stage that quick too!”

Read No 1 Supreme Warrior - Chapter 3617

Read Chapter 3617 with many climactic and unique details. The series No 1 Supreme Warrior one of the top-selling novels by Novels online. Chapter content chapter Chapter 3617 - The heroine seems to fall into the abyss of despair, heartache, empty-handed, But unexpectedly this happened a big event. So what was that event? Read No 1 Supreme Warrior Chapter 3617 for more details

Bình Luận (0)

Comment...

0/255

Send

Read Free Novels Online - Updated daily

Contact: admin@novelebook.com

Copyright © 2019-2020 novelebook.com

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3618

. . .

That large-mouthed man had practically shouted that out. He looked like he was worried that they would talk about Jack too much.

After all, he had insulted Jack too much earlier. He did not want to admit that he was wrong, so he frantically talked down to Jack.

He tried to find every excuse possible to show that Jack had managed to pass so quickly because Jack had not held back at all and that Jack would not be able to pass the later stages so easily. Jack would definitely fail!

With how frantically he was explaining things, quite a few of them agreed with him, feeling like he was right. After all, Jack never did anything normal.

Right at that moment, the crystal representing the fifth stage lit up!

The discussions stopped instantly.

Everyone widened their eyes as they looked at the second crystal that lit up, unable to say anything.
When the first crystal lit up so quickly, they could still use all sorts of reasons to convince themselves, but when the second one did just as quickly, they found themselves unable to say anything.
The reality was more convincing than anything else. Jack's speed rendered them speechless. Even if he passed the sixth and fifth stages, the shocking speed meant that his skills were not ordinary.
Rudy scoffed as he looked at the large-mouthed man, "Why aren't you saying anything now?! Didn't you love to harp on just now? You loved to mock him and constantly pile on. Why aren't you saying anything else right now? Have you realized that all those excuses you made are no longer convincing?"
The large-mouthed man stiffened. His expression was a bit sour. He opened his mouth, wanting to say something, but he was unable to give any explanation.

Jimmy frowned and raised his voice, “Don’t be so pleased just yet. This is just the start. He’s only passed the fifth and sixth
stages. The truly difficult stages are still to go. The fifth and sixth stages are easy. Most of the warriors here can pass it. He’s just
a bit quicker than normal, there’s nothing to be proud of!”
Rudy raised an eyebrow, not getting angered by those words. Instead, he looked very calm and confident. Jimmy scoffed,
continuing with disdain, “It’s just a small accomplishment, and you already look like you’re beside yourself. Trash really loves to show off!”
The moment he said that, the fourth crystal lit up as well. Jimmy’s disdainful look suddenly vanished. Everyone started to
whisper in a discussion.
When it was the sixth and fifth stages, all of them could use the difficulty to make excuses. However, they no longer had any excuses. The fourth stage was not that easy anymore. Quite a few people lost to that stage.

Jack had lit that crystal up so quickly. It meant that he was definitely stronger than most of the warriors there.
Even Jimmy found it hard to say anything. His stiff expression slowly relaxed, but he started to have a serious look on his face.
He never expected that brat to actually be somewhat skilled.
It might just be the fourth stage, but it was still so quick. Even Jimmy could not say that he would be able to pass the fourth stage
so quickly. Jimmy gulped, finally realizing the severity of the matter.
His attitude did not last for that long when the third crystal lit up. At that moment, everyone started to even breathe slower from
the shock.
A thought flashed in their mind. Everyone wondered if Jack had actually not bragging at all.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3619

• • •

He had been so arrogant earlier not because there was something wrong with his head, but because he really did have the skills to back it up. He had not been bragging but speaking the truth.

When they thought about that, everyone's expressions changed.

Someone mumbled to themselves, "What? Could this guy have been speaking the truth the whole time? If he was, then we can't underestimate this guy. Case might actually be nothing in his eyes."

Everyone nodded at that. Jimmy was not far away, so they did not dare to speak ill of Case too much. However, no one there was an idiot. They understood what it all meant.

Jimmy started breathing roughly as he looked at the illusory stone. At that moment, he was completely stiff.

He had complicated emotions, but he was doing his best to control himself. He could not reveal his thoughts, or he would end up being laughed at.
He clenched his teeth and whispered to himself, “This guy is a potential problem. I can’t let him live…”
The moment he said that, the crystal representing the second stage lit up. At that moment, quite a few people covered their mouths as they said in surprise, “What?! Isn’t this too crazy?! That guy really is that strong!”
“I thought he was just bragging before this, but he really does have the skills. I was even laughing at him just now. He’s already completed the second stage within such a short time. If he manages to complete the first stage with that speed, he would really be something else. With those skills, he’d be someone amazing no matter what world he’s from!”
“He has a mask, so we couldn’t see his face. Even if he’s a bit famous, we can’t tell who he is.”

Everyone slowly realized that the mask might not be hiding his ugly looks, but instead preventing anyone from recognizing him.
The most important question came up then. If he was doing that, then why did he not want anyone to recognize him?
Various thoughts surfaced in their heads as they started to guess wildly. Quite a few of them started to look at Rudy. In this world, strength was power and honor. They thought that Jack was weak before, so they did not care about Jack.
At that moment, they finally realized that Jack was strong. They no longer dared to discuss things so fearlessly. Even if they had anything to say, they would whisper so Rudy could not hear them.
Rudy’s face twitched in disdain. All of those guys just loved to bully the weak. Just like Jack said, there was no need to care about how they were acting. No matter how much he says, skills are the best form of proof.
Right at that moment, the last crystal lit up, and Jack slowly opened his eyes.

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3620

. . .

A vibrant glow condensed above him as the Valley Entrance Pass descended and slowly fell into Jack’s palm.

The pass was cold to the touch, and Jack could feel endless energy coming from it.

Jack smirked, revealing a smile. Those six stages were incredibly simple to Jack. Even the hardest stage was just two
opponents with lower ultimate god rank techniques.

He used a storm god rank technique. It was far more powerful than them. Those opponents were just like paper in front of him,
not a problem for him at all.

Jack looked up at everyone. At that moment, all of them had interesting expressions on their faces. They no longer looked at him
like an idiot and were instead full of respect and fear. Quite a few people even avoided his gaze.

That large-mouthed man from earlier looked like a dog that had just been beaten up. He hid behind and was too scared to show himself.

From the sixth stage to the first, Jack had taken less than five minutes. For anyone else, five minutes might not even be enough for one stage.

Jack had been a complete clown in their eyes, but he had turned into an ace suddenly. Jack scoffed as he slowly walked down the stone. He did not care about what those people thought. It was a waste of his time. However, he would not just leave it be.

Jack looked at the large-mouthed man behind everyone, and he said in a low voice, “Don’t think you’re safe just because you’re hiding behind everyone. Didn’t you have such a good time talking just now? You said I didn’t know my place wanting to compete with Jimmy. Do you still remember your words? A man’s words are worth everything. If you can, why don’t you repeat everything you said?”

The large-mouthed man shuddered in fear, not even daring to breathe. He did not even dare to recall everything he had said
earlier.
Anyone who passed was already stronger than he was, let alone someone who passed at such a shocking speed. It was as if
those six stages were not difficult at all.
It showed how strong Jack was. He even started to wonder if Jack would be able to defeat him with just one hand! Offending someone as strong as that really was a horrible decision. He was already starting to thoroughly regret it. He should not have
been so itchy with his words!
His lips twitched as he slowly looked up with an apologetic smile, “Sir, I had such foul behavior earlier! Just think of me as
nobody and let me go. I really didn’t mean to offend you. I was just blind, and didn’t know you were that strong…”
The large-mouthed man’s eyes were already starting to redden from the fear. He was worried that Jack would start targeting him.

Even though Cloud city was not somewhere you could kill without abandon, there was no way he would be able to hide forever, never taking up any challenges.
The moment he did, he would be in danger. It would be too easy for someone that strong to target him.
Furthermore, skilled warriors would definitely have followers. Those followers were probably not weak either. If he was targeted by that man and the followers, he would have to live his life in fear.
Suddenly, he tossed aside all his pride, practically begging Jack to let him off. Jack scoffed as a cold look was on his face, “Don’t ever let me see you again. If I see you, I’ll harvest your Heartblood.”
A vibrant glow condensed above him as the Valley Entrance Pass descended and slowly fell into Jack’s palm.
The pass was cold to the touch, and Jack could feel endless energy coming from it.
Jack smirked, revealing a smile. Those six stages were incredibly simple to Jack. Even the hardest stage was just two

opponents with lower ultimate god rank techniques.
He used a storm god rank technique. It was far more powerful than them. Those opponents were just like paper in front of him,
not a problem for him at all.
Jack looked up at everyone. At that moment, all of them had interesting expressions on their faces. They no longer looked at him
like an idiot and were instead full of respect and fear. Quite a few people even avoided his gaze. That large-mouthed man from earlier looked like a dog that had just been beaten up. He hid behind and was too scared to show
himself.
From the sixth stage to the first, Jack had taken less than five minutes. For anyone else, five minutes might not even be enough
for one stage.
Jack had been a complete clown in their eyes, but he had turned into an ace suddenly. Jack scoffed as he slowly walked down
the stone. He did not care about what those people thought. It was a waste of his time. However, he would not just leave it be.

Jack looked at the large-mouthed man behind everyone, and he said in a low voice, “Don’t think you’re safe just because you’re hiding behind everyone. Didn’t you have such a good time talking just now? You said I didn’t know my place wanting to compete with Jimmy. Do you still remember your words? A man’s words are worth everything. If you can, why don’t you repeat everything you said?”

The large-mouthed man shuddered in fear, not even daring to breathe. He did not even dare to recall everything he had said earlier.

Anyone who passed was already stronger than he was, let alone someone who passed at such a shocking speed. It was as if those six stages were not difficult at all.

It showed how strong Jack was. He even started to wonder if Jack would be able to defeat him with just one hand! Offending someone as strong as that really was a horrible decision. He was already starting to thoroughly regret it. He should not have been so itchy with his words!

His lips twitched as he slowly looked up with an apologetic smile, “Sir, I had such foul behavior earlier! Just think of me as
nobody and let me go. I really didn’t mean to offend you. I was just blind, and didn’t know you were that strong…”
The large-mouthed man’s eyes were already starting to redden from the fear. He was worried that Jack would start targeting him.
Even though Cloud city was not somewhere you could kill without abandon, there was no way he would be able to hide forever,
never taking up any challenges.
The moment he did, he would be in danger. It would be too easy for someone that strong to target him.
Furthermore, skilled warriors would definitely have followers. Those followers were probably not weak either. If he was targeted
by that man and the followers, he would have to live his life in fear.
Suddenly, he tossed aside all his pride, practically begging Jack to let him off. Jack scoffed as a cold look was on his face, “Don’t

ever let me see you again. If I see you, I'll harvest your Heartblood."
The moment that was said, the large-mouthed man's whole body stiffened. Those words were already a punishment to him. He
was going to leave, but he would have to leave Cloud City.
He was reluctant, but he was worried about the consequences of offending someone as strong as Jack.
The moment that was said, the large-mouthed man's whole body stiffened. Those words were already a punishment to him. He
was going to leave, but he would have to leave Cloud City.
He was reluctant, but he was worried about the consequences of offending someone as strong as Jack.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3621

• • •

If Jack ever saw him again, he would really die. With that in mind, the man clenched his teeth and straightened his body, guaranteeing, “Sir, don’t worry. I’ll get lost right now!”

After he said that, he did not even turn back as he left in a hurry. It got much quieter around them as everyone exchanged looks of worry, afraid that they would be targeted next.

Jack said coldly, “You should all be glad that we can’t fight in here, or you’d all be dead…”

All of them were gossiping about who constantly ridiculed Jack just now. They had talked badly about Jack so much that Jack was being truthful about what he said.

If they were in Chaos City, none of them would have been able to escape. Everyone got even quieter. Most of them did not dare to meet Jack’s gaze. That was the power of the strong.

Jack ignored them as he looked at Jimmy. He quickly arrived in front of Jimmy.
He reached out and said to Jimmy, “You’ve lost. Forty million spirit crystals. Surely you won’t go back on your word?”
The moment he said that, everyone else regained their interest as they looked over. Everything that had just happened had shocked everyone so they had forgotten about the bet.
They still remembered when Jack first brought up the bet. Jack had sounded crazy to everyone there. It would have been amazing if Jack could pass, but Jack even wanted to compete to see who was faster. It seemed like they were the crazy ones.
Jack was truly, undoubtedly strong! He bet against Jimmy because he was confident. His confidence had been proven right.
Jimmy had lost completely as he had needed half an hour, while Jack did not even take more than five minutes. It was obvious who was stronger.

At that moment, Jimmy’s expression was completely dark. He stared at Jack’s face as if trying to see into Jack’s mind.
Unfortunately, he was not able to see anything. He clenched his fists and pursed his lips. He was not happy, but Jack really was stronger than him. Even though he did not want to accept that fact, there was nothing he could do about it.
Jack let out a smile of disdain when Jimmy looked at him angrily, “Are you really going to go against your word?”
Jimmy was even angry at that point. He clenched his teeth and said, “Who said I was going to do that?! I just think you’re cheating!”
After he said that, he took out four pieces of purple gold and tossed them into Jack’s hands.
Jack raised an eyebrow, saying coldly, “Cheating? What? Are you still planning on insulting me?”
Jimmy narrowed his eyes and clenched his teeth as he looked at Jack.
He hated the other party!

If Jack had just been a bragging idiot, he might have been angry at what Jack said, but he would not have hated the man so much.

No wonder the man was talking so recklessly, not caring about the Swelling Tide Continent at all. Case was someone that could not be offended in the eyes of others, but he did not care at all.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3622

. . .

Everything that had confused him was immediately clear the moment he saw how strong the person was. He was no idiot and had not been purposely annoying them.

He truly did not care about Case, and truly did not care about any revenge from the Swelling Tide Continent.

Jimmy took a deep breath and his eyes shook slightly. He was starting to regret things. If Case saw that person’s abilities, Case would probably regret going against that person too.

Everyone knew of how the Swelling Tide Continent acted, but they were no idiots. They still held back when they were facing someone truly strong. After all, the strong were not to be offended.

If the strong really wanted to fight back, it would cause quite a lot of losses. After all, it was not that easy to kill someone that

strong, especially in Cloud City.
He clenched his teeth, looking at Jack with a hint of resolve. They had to kill Jack. If they knew how strong Jack was, they would never have offended Jack. However, since they already did so, they could not let Jack live. Otherwise, it would be dangerous for the Swelling Tide Continent in the future!
“You cheated and I fell for it! Are you really that poor? For forty million spirit crystals, you abandoned your pride as someone strong?” Jimmy glared right at Jack.
Jack raised an eyebrow as he let out an exasperated smile, “I cheated?”
Jimmy nodded, “You only lit up two crystals for compatibility! With your skills, how could you only be twenty percent compatible?
Who are you lying to?”
Those words served as a reminder to everyone. That was right! Everyone mocked Jack because Jack only got two crystals to light up. That was the result of a very average warrior.

Even though compatibility did not directly translate to skill, it was still a part of a person's talents. Such a low level of compatibility meant that a person's talents. were not great. If their talents were not great, there was no way they could be that strong.

It was because of what happened that everyone had the impression that Jack was a braggart and a madman!

Jimmy continued, "I don't have amnesia. I won't forget how you performed on the stone. Just to win, you truly don't care what methods you use!"

Jimmy's mind worked very quickly, immediately describing Jack as a despicable man who had no pride when it came to earning spirit crystals.

At that moment, quite a few people started to look at Jack with disdain. They were definitely scared of his strength and definitely did not dare to go against Jack, but acting as shamelessly as that definitely made them look down on him.

Jack did not care what the others thought about it, but he would not stand by as he was slandered like that.
Rudy was furious as well.
He rushed over and shouted, “Who cares about those spirit crystals?! It’s just forty million spirit crystals. You think it’s some amazing fortune, but it’s nothing to us. Who do you think you are?! Do you really think we’d try so hard to trick you just for that small amount?!”
Jimmy narrowed his eyes, looking at Rudy with anger and hatred. The two of them looked like they were going to fight at any moment!
Jimmy glared and said, “Am I wrong? You’re already panicking now! You’re already feeling guilty!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3623

• • •

What do you mean by that?!” Rudy clenched his teeth, “You’re just not being reasonable at all. You talk like we’re scamming you!
Tell me, how did this whole conflict even start? Were we the ones trying to cut the queue? Were we the ones who challenged you first?”
Jimmy shot back, “We were the ones who cut the queue! So what? Was I the one who mentioned the bet?”
“You!” Rudy almost bit his tongue in his anger.
Jack reached out and pulled Rudy back. There was no reason to fight like that.
In truth, it was still very rowdy everywhere else except where they were as it was dead silent because of the fight.
Jack took a deep breath and put on a calm expression.
Jimmy’s words had been nasty. He was just trying to accuse Jack without any regard for the truth. Any warrior who was not as

calm as he was would have probably been fuming in anger by then.
However, Jack never showed any emotion the whole time. No matter what Jimmy said, Jack was indifferent to it.
Jack's tone was calm, "You're not worthy."
It was just three words, but those three words alone had managed to clear most of his name.
That was right!
It was just that simple. Jimmy was not worthy!
Who did he think he was?
The two of them had yet to fight one another, but it was obvious who was stronger after the Killing Illusion Array.
Jack could definitely trample all over Jimmy. Even if Jimmy used his full might, he could not do anything to Jack. There was too big of a gulf between them.
Someone on the level of Jack would not care about forty million spirit crystals at all. There was no need for him to trick a warrior
that was weaker than him either.
Jack had woken everyone up. Jimmy's face looked incredibly dark. His heart felt like it was burning. No matter what he said, it

would not change the difference in their strength.
Strength was the most convincing thing.
Jimmy’s whole body was shuddering from the anger, but there was nothing he could do.
There was an insurmountable gap between them that no amount of words could cover.
Jack sneered, “I bet against you so you will feel how bad it was when you lost. I wanted to show you how much of a joke your
actions were in my eyes!”
Jimmy’s fists were tightly clenched while trembling. His lips were pursed, unable to say anything. The more he acted like that,
the more amused Jack was, “Remember our agreement. I’ll wait for you at the fog battlefield. I trust you won’t go against your
words.”
Jack looked at Jimmy one last time before bringing Rudy into Cloud Valley, no longer sparing Jimmy another glance.
Looking at Jack leaving, everyone was speechless.

Jimmy’s eyes widened as he clenched his teeth in hatred. That person said he would be waiting at the fog battlefield, that he
hoped they would not go back on their words!
What did that person mean?
It was obvious that the person wanted to kill him!
“You won’t get what you want! You’re stronger than me, but are you stronger than everyone from the Swelling Tide Continent?”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3624

. . .

Jimmy’s anger was already at its limit. He did not like being threatened, but he was powerless in front of someone so strong.

Various emotions overtook him, and it was all caused by that man. He would make that man pay. He would not let that man continue to show off in front of him.

Some sinister plots surfaced in his mind. He already knew how he was going to tell Case about everything.

If Jack knew what Jimmy was thinking, Jack would definitely encourage Jimmy. It was precisely what Jack wanted.

Jack wanted the experts of the Swelling Tide Continent to all appear at the fog battlefield. He wanted to leave a deep impression on them so every warrior there would tremble at the sight of him.

He needed to be thorough. Only when they truly felt the pain would they stop trying to cause him trouble. That was something he

had learned in the Whirling World.
With that in mind, Jack smirked. Ever since Case challenged him, his grudge against the Swelling Tide Continent had started.
The entrance to Cloud Valley was enveloped by a radiant and vibrant light. Looking around, there was nothing except that light.
Only one with the Valley Entrance Pass would be able to enter.
Jack looked at Rudy. While no one noticed, he pulled Rudy into Mustard seed again. They were completely shrouded in light, everywhere they went were lights of various colors.
The ground was not even either. Every step he took felt like he was going to fall at any moment. Jack reached out to feel around him. He could even feel waves of energy circulating around his fingers. The air was filled with different forms of energy.
The energy was incredibly pure, formed by the natural laws around them. It was the power of the laws of the world. To condense

a world avatar, he needed to absorb all that power into his body, controlling that energy and gathering it around his core.
He needed to control the energy and carve seals around his core with it. The first stage of a world avatar needed ninety-six
seals. Jack took a deep breath as he started to form seals. A Soul Burst Ring appeared in front of Jack.
The energy that was formed by the laws of the world would not flow into his body. He needed to control it himself, slowly drawing
it in. The Soul Burst Ring slowly expanded in the air, quickly becoming ten meters wide.
The massive ring surrounded a lot of energy that was formed by the laws. Jack focused on himself, using the Soul Burst Ring to
slowly absorb the energy into his body.
Crack!
Jack felt his bones crack. The energies were without form, but they felt solid and heavy the moment they went into his body. It
slowly reached his chest, and Jack felt like there was a massive rock pressing down on his bones.

His bones could not handle the weight and started to let out cracking sounds. Pain surged through his body. Jack clenched his teeth, immediately circulating his true energy to push a bit of the energy out.

His body had its limits. He could not absorb too much in one go.

Energy the size of a fist had been condensed to the size of a fingernail. He could not be greedy.

The energy was carefully moved to his core by Jack. Jack immediately activated all his true energy to carve the runes into his core!

All of the warriors who entered Cloud Valley would enter an isolated space. They would not be able to see or interfere with each other. At that moment, Case clenched his teeth as he slowly moved the energy into his body.

He was only using an ultimate god rank technique. He could control a lot less energy than Jack. He could control energy the size of a fist, but Case was only able to manage the size of a fingernail.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3625

• • •

Even so, he still felt like the energy was exceptionally heavy and hard to control.
When he carved the seals, he was so tired that he was drenched in sweat. No matter what world avatar it was, they still needed to carve ninety-six seals. At that moment, Case had already carved thirteen.
Those thirteen seals had a lot of flaws on them, but Case no longer cared about that. He wanted to focus on carving all of them first.
The world avatar had a unique point to it. Even though ninety-six seals needed to be carved, only fifty-seven of them needed to use a world avatar.
Of course, the more perfect the seals were, the stronger the world avatar would be. However, Case no longer cared about how perfect his seals are. As long as he could make sure that fifty-seven of the seals could be, it would already be quite impressive.

He did not know what was happening outside at all.
“Aren’t you going in?” A black-robed man from the Swelling Tide Continent looked at Jimmy and said.
The man might be from the same world, but he was no match for Jimmy and the others. He was just an inner disciple from a holy grade clan.
Jimmy was among the higher-ranked chosen disciples. The two of them were like an official and a commoner.
Jimmy took a deep breath. The other party had already entered Cloud Valley for two hours. He should have entered Cloud Valley as well since he had an entrance pass.
However, Jimmy stood in place, not moving as he looked right at Cloud Valey’s entrance, deep in thought.
The black-robed man felt like something was wrong with Jimmy. He wanted to curry some favor but was worried he would say the wrong thing.

Jimmy raised an eyebrow and said, “I’m waiting for Case to come out so we can make arrangements for the future.”
They could not let that man off. That man would bring disaster to them. Jack had not only humiliated Jimmy but threatened
Jimmy as well. With Jack’s skills, they could not let him off easy.
They had to kill Jack so nothing disastrous would happen. The black-robed man took a deep breath, feeling Jimmy’s expression incredibly scary at that moment. Jimmy looked like a demon that just crawled out of hell, and was waiting for his prey!
“In a bit, help me spread the news. Try to get the stronger disciples. If they don’t have anything important, ask them to hurry on over. We can’t let that man off, he’s too dangerous!”
The black-robed man nodded vigorously. He realized how serious the situation was as well. Jack was like a ticking time bomb in the eyes of the Swelling Tide Continent.

After getting the order, he did not hesitate at all as he gathered up their men to spread the news. Jimmy remained standing in
place.

Jimmy looked at the entrance and mumbled to himself, “Who are you? There’s no way you’re someone unknown. I’ll definitely
find out who you are. You went against the Swelling Tide Continent, you’ll have to pay the price!”

Jack took a deep breath. After working hard for two hours, he managed to carve three seals. It was just so hard!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3626

. . .

Every single one of the seals was composed of over 100 strokes.
Ishac needed to control the energy and slowly carve it stroke by stroke while making sure there was nothing left out in the middle.
Time slowly ticked away, and after six hours, Ishac only managed to carve 10 seals.
It was just too slow. To get to the first stage, he needed 96 seals, and with only 10 seals carved, he was 86 seals away. He felt like he had just taken one step in a long journey.
He was allowed to make mistakes with the seals as long as he could ensure that 57 of them could work properly, but he did not want any mistakes.
Everyone else was just not able to realize it when they made mistakes since they had no experience with carving the seals, but

Ishac was different. He had his absorbed memories, and the two heroes were top existences from a first-grade world. They truly stood at the peak and had formed all nine stages of their world avatars.
With so much experience, it would be such a waste if Ishac made any mistakes.
It came to the sixth day, and Case finally managed to form the first stage of his world avatar.
Even though he managed to carve out 96 seals, he was barely able to make do with 57 of them that were working.
Nonetheless, he was satisfied enough.
Furthermore, he was already at his limits.
Controlling the energy that came from those laws was not easy. He needed a strong amount of energy from himself to control it.
When he left Cloud Valley, the energy in his body was already spent. At that moment, he felt completely weak as he swayed in
his step, having to stop after every step just to catch his breath.

He looked like he had fallen deathly ill. However, no matter how bad his physical condition was, it could not affect his good mood.

No matter what, he successfully formed a world avatar, and his combat prowess in the future would increase by quite a lot with that in his pockets. Even his speed had increased. The mere thought pleased Case immensely.

Back in the outer world, noise filled his ears. A familiar feeling came back to him, and he slowly recovered from his euphoria.

Case was one of the strong, so he needed to maintain that image. To him, regular warriors were not even worthy of wiping his shoes.

Since he was powerful, he must not show an image of him being too ecstatic. He needed to keep up his image. No matter how happy he was, he needed to maintain an aloof image so everyone would feel how impressive he was.

“Case is out! Jimmy, look!” There was a voice from afar.

Case looked over and saw Jimmy standing at a distance, looking at him with a frown. He frowned as well, showing an unhappy look on his face.

Of course, Jimmy needed to maintain his image as well, but why was Jimmy looking at him like that?

Also, where was that brat?

Why did he not see the guy?

He told Jimmy to keep an eye on that man before he entered Cloud Valley, and he would make sure that brat paid his dues once he came out of Cloud Valley.

He wanted that hooligan to pay a heavy price and to know the consequences of going against the Swelling Tide Continent.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3627

• • •

Case was irked the moment he recalled Astor's face. In his impatience, he wanted nothing more than to see that man again.
At that moment, Jimmy hurried toward Case with an anxious look on his face.
Case frowned, feeling like something was wrong with Jimmy's expression.
Could something have happened?
At that moment, he was not in a good condition. Even though he had gained a lot, he had used up all his true energy. He felt like
he was barely keeping himself standing upright.
Jimmy could tell that Case was in a weaker state and swallowed what he was about to say.
He reached out to support Case, but
Case did not care about that at that moment.
He frowned and asked, "Where's that guy? Where's the masked guy? Don't tell me he ran away. Can't you even do something
that simple?!"

Case was absolutely furious. If that guy escaped, he would not let Jimmy off easily. After all, Astor had insulted and embarrassed him in public. Not only that, but Astor mocked the whole Swelling Tide Continent as well! The man would pay a hefty price for his transgressions, and he would make sure of that, or his anger would not be quelled.
Jimmy's lips stiffened. He had been berated by Case the moment he came out. He felt annoyed, but he did not dare to say anything. After all, Case's skills were there for him to see, and Case was his fellow disciple as well. No matter what, he could not retaliate.
Case got even angrier when he saw Jimmy not answering.
He gritted his teeth and said, "Speak up! What happened? Why are you the only one here? Where did that brat go?!"
Jimmy took a deep breath. "He didn't go missing. I just couldn't keep him here."
When he said that, Jimmy felt like he was in a difficult position. Things had already advanced to this level, and he felt very

helpless. He felt like there was nothing he could do. It was not like he could just forcibly stop Astor from entering Cloud Valley nor could he have followed Astor in.

After all, once anyone entered Cloud Valley, they would be sent to an isolated space. They could not interfere with each other and he could not possibly follow him, so he was only able to watch as Astor entered Cloud Valley, unable to do anything.

Case did not know what happened, so he got even angrier when he heard what Jimmy said.

“What do you mean, you couldn’t stop him? How could that happen?! Even if you couldn’t attack him, you could’ve followed him.

You could’ve had someone report to me after that! This guy wouldn’t have the guts to walk out of Cloud City. There are no rules outside of the city. If he left, he’d fall right into our hands!”

Jimmy shook his head as his expression twisted. It felt like anything he said would be wrong. After all, Case had not seen anything.

To Case, Astor was an insignificant ant that had just been bragging all the while. Without the rules in place, he would have
attacked Astor.
Jimmy sighed helplessly. “It’s not like that. He didn’t leave this place, but I couldn’t follow him either.”
Case was even more confused at those words. If anything, Jimmy’s words served to only confuse him. What exactly happened?
At that moment, Case had lost all his patience.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3628

• • •

Case straightened himself and frowned, saying coldly, “What happened?! Stop beating around the bush and tell me everything!”

Jimmy’s lips twitched as he tried to figure out what to say after that. He said helplessly, “After you entered Cloud Valley, that guy went to challenge the Killing Illusion Array. I was with him to see his results, but he asked me if I wanted to bet against him. The two of us would compete to see who needed less time.”

Jimmy was only embarrassed by the things he said, but had to fess up. He did not want Case to find out from anyone else, so it was better for him to just explain everything.

Case said with an exasperated look, “What? That guy wanted to bet against you? Isn’t he overestimating himself too much? Who does he think he is? The Killing Illusion Array isn’t something that easy to pass. He even thought he was faster than you?! What

a joke!”
Case was baffled by what Jimmy said, genuinely wondering if Abraham was deluded. Everything the guy did just seemed to be crazier by the minute. It was one thing to brag, but he even bet against Jimmy.
It was like he thought he was a strong warrior that could breeze through everything! Case felt more amused as he listened. If that
guy was in front of him at that moment, he would definitely be viciously mocked!
However, something felt off to Case.
He noticed that Jimmy’s expression was stiff. Should Jimmy not be laughing at that fool with him?
Why did Jimmy look so troubled?
Case frowned. “And what happened? What’s with that expression? Did that guy say some things to humiliate you again?”
That had to be it, that idiot’s lips spew nothing but poison. Even when Case argued against him, he himself nearly got run over.
That guy’s words were just so venomous!
Had Jimmy ended up embarrassing himself in front of everyone?

Jimmy took a deep breath, looking like he had summoned up his resolve. “He did humiliate me, but he won in the end!”
“What?” Case practically shouted that, his eyes widened in disbelief, wondering if he had misheard it.
What did Jimmy say? That guy… He won? How could that have happened?!”
Case took a deep breath as he grabbed Jimmy’s arm. “What do you mean, he won? Did he pass?”
Jimmy nodded. No matter how reluctant he was to say it, he had to. He pushed back the discontent in his heart.
“He won. He was faster than I was. He passed the six stages and got the Valley Entrance Pass. I couldn’t follow him in. You know this, too. In Cloud Valley, we’d be split up into separate spaces. Even if I enter, I won’t be able to follow him. He’s currently in Cloud Valley forming his world avatar.”
Jimmy’s every word felt like a strike of lighting to Case.

He could not believe what he heard was true. That brat who only had a 20% compatibility passed even faster than Jimmy did!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3629

. . .

Despite Jimmy's confession, Case felt it was too surreal.

'How? Who was that guy? That guy was just an insignificant man in Case's eyes. All he knew was to brag!'

Case took a deep breath. He felt like his eyes were about to catch fire.

"Tell me everything again!"

Jimmy could do nothing but repeat everything. Case was finally sure that he had not been hearing things, that everything he heard was indeed true. He gritted his teeth as his eyes widened in anger. He felt like his whole body was burning.

That guy who came out of nowhere was causing him trouble at every front! He was getting more and more troublesome as well. Case thought that he would just be dealt with easily, but he was actually so strong.

Even stronger than Jimmy!

Jimmy frowned as he grabbed Case's arm. "Case, we should forget about anything else for now. The main thing we have to do is focus on figuring out how to get rid of this guy. He's a seed of disaster and is an enemy. As long as he gets the chance, he'll seek revenge on us. We can't give him that . chance!"

Case's eyes lit up.

Jimmy was right, this guy would bring disaster. They could not let him stay alive!

Case needed to properly plan everything out. He needed a perfect plan to make sure this guy was killed in Cloud City!

At that moment, George had completed 94 seals in Cloud valley. The space did not have night or day, and he was not paying attention to the passing of time. He did not know how long had passed and was only focused on constantly forming his seals. Thankfully, he used a storm god-rank technique, which made it a lot easier for him to control the energy. He had so much

experience with him as well, so he could quickly identify any mistakes. Through his constant hard work, not a single seal had a flaw.

After an unknown amount of time passed, the last seal was finished. At that moment, George had 96 avatar seals glowing in a faint golden glow within him.

George took a deep breath, finally opening his eyes.

After all his hard work, the world avatar he formed was close to perfection. His avatar was able to unleash its full force. He could finally exit!

George slowly got up, but at that moment, his bones made snapping sounds.

Having sat for what seemed to be a long time, his body was completely stiff.

George smirked. After working so hard for the past few days, he finally had his reward. A world avatar with a storm god rank technique meant that he was practically unbeatable in the Whirling World.

Once he left Cloud Valley, he finally realized that the entrance and the exit were in the same spot.

Noise filled his ears once again, and George felt like he had just returned to civilization. There was a huge crowd in front of him as everyone talked about the order they took the Killing Illusion Array, lamenting their failures.

All of that no longer had anything to do with George. He had passed that step, moving on to the next stage.

George smiled as he tossed all those thoughts aside. His next objective was the fog battlefield. He did not know if those people would be waiting for him there. The moment that thought flashed in his mind, an unkind voice was heard.

George turned around and saw a familiar face. There was Case, with Octavius and Jimmy behind him.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3630

. . .

It was not just those three familiar faces either. Upon closer inspection, there were other warriors from the Swelling Tide
Continent behind them.
The three of them walked to Frank, blocking his way.
Frank smirked at this, and he wondered if someone was looking after him from above. He had just been wondering how much effort it would take to find those people, yet there they were, waiting for him and even
stopping him on his way.
Case looked at Frank with an expression that was no longer disdain. It was a complicated and serious look, as if Frank was a
different person.
Case took a deep breath. “Do you still remember what you said before this?”
Frank nodded. Of course he did, and very clearly at that.

“Are all of you planning on joining the fog battlefield with me?”
Case narrowed his eyes as he gave Frank a once-over. In truth, he had been trying to see how Frank would react to all of them.
They waited here because they wanted to take part in the fog battlefield, using the chance to eliminate a threat.
They had gathered all of their strongest to deal with Frank together. He thought that Frank would have figured out that he was waiting there with all those people for Frank.
Should Frank not be afraid at that moment? Why did he look excited instead?
It was as if they did not matter at all.
Case’s expression darkened. He knew how strong Frank was, and he could no longer laugh at him for being an ignorant fool. It seemed like Frank was just very confident.
Even after seeing all of them work together, Frank did not seem scared at all.
It seemed that he probably managed to form a world avatar at Cloud Valley as well and the mere thought frustrated Case. The

stronger Frank was, the more worried Case would get.
Case wanted to kill Frank as soon as possible.
Case scoffed and said, “You don’t seem afraid at all. Even though there are only twenty participants in the fog battlefield, there are many of us and only one of you. Are you not scared at all? Are you that confident to face so many of us?”
In truth, he should not have asked that. After all, they had the advantage. If he asked that, it was possible that Frank would just leave and not enter the fog battlefield with them. There would be nothing they could do about it. After all, they could not fight here nor could they force anyone to the fog battlefield.
However, Frank looked very amused, and Case hated facing confident expressions like that.
Frank smirked as he looked at Case’s group of three and the others behind them.
They all seemed to be warriors that were above average, but Frank did not care at all. He raised an eyebrow. “You expect me to

be afraid of you guys? You’re not worthy…”
Frank’s remark was akin to a slap on their faces, and their expressions swiftly changed.
What did that guy say?
They were not worthy?
That was a direct insult to their honor!
Not a single one of them could remain calm.
Octavius rushed forward, glaring at Frank and looking like he wanted to rip Frank apart. “What did you say? We’re not worthy?!
Do you think we can’t kill you with our numbers?! Who do you think you are? Even a deity would bow to all of us!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3631

• • •

Anderson scoffed as he shot Octavius, who was obviously in a state of irreversible rage and looking like he would blow up any moment, a glare.

Anderson said in exasperation, “Is your brain made out of mush? So many of you are working together, so I’d definitely be serious about it, but you can’t threaten me at all. Do you not know what kind of place the fog battlefield is? It’s fog everywhere, dampening your senses. Once you go in, it’s like there’s a blindfold over your eyes…”

“You won’t be able to see anything more than ten meters away from you. You won’t even be able to work together. At most, it’ll be two of you against me, though you’re all hardly worth fretting about. You won’t be of any threat to me at all if it’s just the two of you, so you’re not worthy.”

Anderson was merely being his honest self. Astor did think that they were just there as cannon fodder to him.
However, after they heard what Anderson said, all of them looked like they were about to blow up from the anger. They wanted to
fight Anderson to the death right at that moment as if they had been gravely insulted.
Unfortunately, Anderson was just speaking the truth.
Case was red with anger. Astor gritted his teeth as he looked at Adrian, his eyeballs threatening to pop out of their sockets.
It was obvious how angry he was. Nonetheless, he reached out and grabbed Octavius‘ arm, pulling the man back.
“It’s pointless to keep arguing here with him. Since he’s looking down on us, we’ll use our skills to teach him a lesson!”
The fog battlefield was on the eastern side of the city. The massive plaza it was on looked incredibly luxurious.
Compared to the other areas where challenges were, it had lesser people. However, every warrior who came to the plaza had a

murderous aura around them.
They looked like generals who had gone through a lot of war or assassins who had gone through life and death. Every one of them looked like they were about to kill someone the next moment.
The fog battlefield needed 20 challengers to start. Every one of them would receive a skeleton badge. After entering the fog battlefield, there were no longer any rules; people could do as they pleased.
They could kill their opponents whenever they wanted, and vice versa. Every warrior who entered the fog battlefield was incredibly confident in themselves. They felt like they would be able to achieve a lot in the fog battlefield, killing a lot of opponents to get the skeleton badges.
The skeleton badges were very useful. The more badges one had, the more valuable the rewards that would be received.
There was only one way to get a skeleton badge, which was to kill the person who had it and take it from them afterward.

There were no regulations on how many people would survive the fog battlefield. The only condition set in stone was that the more skeleton badges one had, the better their rewards would be.

Just that alone stirred many of the challengers into excitement. Hence, all of the warriors who stood on the plaza and wanted to participate were full of murderous intent. All of them looked like they would start a slaughter at any moment.

At that moment, a red-haired man was pulled back by a round-faced man on the side of the plaza.

“Are you crazy? You know what kind of place this is. Everyone here is insane, and you’re out here trying to fight against a bunch of crazies! You’d just be eaten alive. We should just take part in some normal challenges!”

The red-haired man was trying his best to pull away, but the other man was firm with his grip which prevented him from leaving.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3632

. . .

The red-haired man’s lips twitched. “It’s heaven spirit grass! The thirteenth disciple got a heaven spirit grass with just five skeleton badges! It’s a holy-grade item, yet it was easily obtained!”

“Even in the outside world, it’s worth at least seventy million spirit crystals, what more in the Whirling World! Do you know how much that is?! It’s more than everything I have!”

70 million spirit crystals were 70 whole pieces of purple gold!

That number might not be too large in the eyes of the ones on top of the food chain, but it was a substantial amount. When it came to warriors that were just above average, it was an incredible figure.

Most warriors at that level would be considered quite well off if they had 20 or 30 million spirit crystals. Most regular warriors did not even have 10 million! It was no wonder that man was so excited by everything.

The round-faced man frowned. “Don’t forget, he was just lucky to have been able to get five skeleton badges. George happened to stumble upon a few strong warriors fighting each other and hid by the side to take advantage of the situation!”

“If it weren’t for that, he would never have been able to defeat five opponents with his skills! George felt that way too. Did you forget? Anyone who enters the fog battlefield is prepared to fight with their lives at stake. Even being able to survive is something fortunate.”

The round-faced man seemed to be speaking from his heart.

All of the warriors who entered the fog battlefield had absolute confidence in themselves. They had supreme murderous intent and were not there to play around. It was very easy to lose one’s life there.

However, the red-haired man was unswayed. George forcefully pulled away, finally managing to escape.

George frowned and said, “I know you mean well, but I’ve made up my mind. I will be participating in the fog battlefield. I know my limits, and I won’t push my luck if I happen across someone powerful…”
“We’re surrounded by fog that cuts off our senses anyway. As long as I’m fast enough and hide within the fog, they won’t be able to do anything even if they want to kill me. Don’t worry, I’ll always prioritize my life. I’m going in to get lucky, not to kill myself.”
The red-haired man spoke like it would be easy, but the round-faced man still felt like his companion had lost his mind.
If it was that easy, many of the regular warriors would have stepped forward to challenge the fog battle.
They just needed to look for any easy advantages, anyway.
The round-faced man sighed helplessly, shaking his head and deciding against arguing.
George knew that whatever he said would be pointless. George would only be able to pray for his fellow disciple’s success, that he would not meet anyone strong

enough to kill him in a flash.
Suddenly…
“Look! Isn‘t that Case?” shouted one of the people present, and many were attracted by the shout.
Looking toward where that person was referring to, they saw 21 people walking over from afar. Of those 21 people, Case stood at the front toward the right. There were a few more familiar faces that quite a few people there
knew, but they were not known because they were amazingly skilled but for the fact that they were not to be provoked.
Any conflict with them would end up attracting a lot of trouble.
A few people frowned when they saw Case and walked to the corner immediately, not wanting to be too close to that group.
Case let out a smirk when he saw how everyone was looking at him. George smiled, looking pleased with himself.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3633

. . .

Case was pleased by how nervous people were around him, and it filled him with pride. The weak only knew how to fear the
strong, and he was feared because he was strong.
Joe looked at Rowan with a proud expression. Feeling Case's gaze, Rowan's lips twitched helplessly.
This man had no self-awareness at all. Everyone remembered him not because he was strong but because he was annoying. None of the warriors from the Swelling
Tide Continent had any real honor.
They were just like a beehive. The moment one of them was provoked, the whole swarm would attack. People did not want the
trouble and would naturally keep their distance, yet Case believed he was revered. Rowan just felt like Case was a joke.

Case even laughed at Bjorne, saying that there was something wrong with Rowan's head, but it seemed like the case was, in
fact, vice versa.
Rowan could not be bothered to entertain Case, and he continued watching forward.
Case was infuriated by Rowan's expression.
Joe had just composed himself, yet that nuisance managed to get on his nerves
again!
Joe made up his mind to make sure to show off in front of Rowan. Joe needed him to know how much better he was. Joe scoffed
and quickly walked forward, going to register his name.
Everyone around looked like they had been blown away by a strong wind as Case walked over. Everyone who was standing in
the middle immediately made way for Case.
Case walked in like a king, feeling like he was royalty, and he walked toward the registration area.
Rowan's lips twitched in exasperation, musing to himself how foolish Case was.

The caretaker at the registration area did not care who was there at all. They would merely do their job of registering people with flat faces.
Thankfully, the last fog battlefield had just ended. 20 of them entered, and only two survived. One of them had eleven skeleton badges while the other had seven. They managed to get some amazing things before they left, evidently pleased with themselves.
The treasure a person received was considered a private matter, and the victors could choose whether or not to announce their rewards. Those two chose not to tell anyone what they got, but it was obvious from their smiles that they obtained something amazing.
The reason why so many people seemed to know about the treasures there was because it was either announced by the victors or they got to know it from their fellow disciples.
Even without a lot of skeleton keys, the rewards were still of great value.
Just that alone attracted many people.

After one battle ended, a lot of them were still hesitating, wondering if they should sign up or not. Case was the first person to
sign up, while Rowan and the others followed behind.
Initially, everyone had their focus on Case.
A few warriors who wanted to sign up forgot about it when Case appeared.
Case and the others might be like annoying bees, but he was still strong. Joe could somewhat consider himself a top-tier warrior, so everyone was worried about his abilities.
Case had so many other warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent with him as well. They were very united. It was obvious they
were planning something.
At that moment, some of them started to notice Rowan.
Rowan wore regular clothes that did not have any of the markings of a warrior from a second-grade world, which meant that
Rowan was from a third-grade world.
A warrior from a third-grade world really stood out amongst so many warriors from second-grade worlds. On top of that, the

identity of Case and the others immediately caused everyone to link everything.
“Who is this person? Why is he signing up with Case and the others? Is he one of their subordinates?”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3634

• • •

“How could he be their subordinate?” someone shot back.

“Use your brain a little here. What kind of dog looks prouder than its owner? Ever since we saw this guy, he’s never even glanced at Case. Do you think a subordinate would dare to do that?”

After that person said so, quite a few people nodded in agreement. The masked man never said anything the whole time as if everything happening around him had nothing to do with him.

That calm demeanor was not something a subordinate would have. Since he was not a subordinate, who was he?

The Swelling Tide Continent’s impression of the other warriors was too deep. They would always stick together and would rarely interact with other warriors.

The moment they interacted with any outsiders, conflicts would somehow arise.

Could that person be an enemy of the Swelling Tide Continent?
That thought played in the minds of a few people, and all of them slowly felt like these men did seem to be at odds. Even the redhaired
man was no longer interested in talking to the round-faced man.
Richard walked to the middle of the crowd, looking at Josua and the others. A total of 16 of them had registered, and 15 of them
were from the Swelling Tide Continent and had notable prowess. Only Josua was from the third-grade world, Hestia.
Josua did not seem to care about the situation at all. It was as if the 15 warriors were not a threat to him.
The more Josua acted like that, the more frustrated Case felt.
Josua was just too good at acting. Even if it was one of the warriors who were at the peak, they would still think about it before
facing 15 other warriors. After all, even with the special nature of the fog battlefield, they were no idiots.

They naturally figured out a lot of plans to deal with their opponent. Anyone with just a hint of intelligence would know that.
Josua did not seem to be someone with an empty head, so Case felt like Josua knew this.
Yet, Josua insisted on putting up an act until the end.
Case gritted his teeth, loathing how irksome Josua was.
Who did he think he was?
Did he think his facade would fool others just because he looked unbothered?
When Josua had agreed to go to the fog battlefield with all of them, Case felt like there was something wrong with him. Richard refused to believe Josua was under no pressure at all even when faced with 15 of them.
However, the other party was not just good and pretending, but putting on a show as well.
Richard clearly saw a look of excitement on Josua's face earlier.
Facing 15 opponents, he was still able to look excited.
How could that not just be an act?

Even at that moment, that expression remained plastered on his face. Even those that were around them could not see any
flaws in the act. They were even wondering if Josua was a part of the Swelling Tide Continent's group, which could explain his calm demeanor. Case scoffed as anger surfaced in his eyes.

Richard suddenly said loudly, "Is it really worth dying for your honor and dignity?"

Richard had held back those words for a long time, worried that Josua would somehow regret his decision. However, it was all
already set.

Since Josua had signed up, Josua would not be able to flee. There was nothing for Case to worry about anymore.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3635

• • •

Furthermore, he absolutely hated Rowan's look of indifference.

Rowan's lips twitched helplessly. George turned to look at the sign-up sheet, only to notice that the 16 of them, including himself,
were the only ones who signed up.

There were four empty spots to be filled before they could start, and if no one signed up, they would be forced to wait. If he
ignored that guy, he would continue making a fuss. Even though Rowan did not want to bother, there was nothing he could do
about it.

Rowan said coldly, "Stop living in your own fantasies. How would you know what I'm thinking? What's this talk about dignity? It's all just your imagination. Do you think you're worthy of me putting my life on the line for my dignity?"

That group of people, especially Case, overestimated themselves too much.

They thought that he was only challenging them because he did not want to be embarrassed. It was as if they were so important.
In truth, Rowan merely did so because he wanted there to be more of a challenge in the fog battlefield. After all, it would just be nonstop killing once the fog battlefield started. If it was just going to be a one-sided slaughter, then it would just be too boring.
Rowan wanted to challenge himself on the battlefield, which was why he made the bet with Jimmy at the start. George wanted to stir Jimmy's thirst for revenge so Jimmy would exhaust all the power of the Swelling Tide Continent to face him in the fog battlefield. Of course, they would never have guessed Rowan's real intentions.
They would just try to understand Rowan's actions with their own mindsets. In their eyes, Rowan was just pretending to be larger than what he was and was a stubborn mule. Those words were more than enough to tell everyone around them what happened.

Quite a few of them looked at Rowan with surprise. Around two-thirds of them felt like Rowan was crazy to go against the Swelling Tide Continent so brazenly. Most importantly, he was facing 15 of them alone. It was just absurd!

No matter how confident he was in his skills, there was no way he should be doing that. Even though there was a dense fog around the battlefield, it was still not a guarantee that he would not battle anyone where he would not be at a disadvantage with how many his opponents were. Then, there would just be endless trouble.

A few people had left Cloud City just to avoid being targeted by Case. No one expected Case to be back and to have gotten into a fight with someone else so quickly. It was crazy!

All of them could see that Rowan's tone was incredibly calm as well. It was as if Rowan did not have fifteen opponents in front of him, but 15 ants that he could kill at any moment.

The crowd started to murmur among themselves.
“Do you think this guy is putting on an act, or is he skilled enough to go against fifteen people?”
“He’s obviously acting. Even the strongest warrior from the second-grade worlds would think before fighting fifteen opponents who are all above average. No one would act as if there’s no danger like this guy is doing. It’s like fifteen men are nothing to him.”

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3636

• • •

"You're right, but I still think that the guy should be quite skilled. He might actually be able to get out safe and sound."

"You should shut your mouth right now! Where do you think you are? Don't you know how Case is? Things won't end well for anyone who offends him. That guy is so rude as well. Case is already furious-there's no way Case would let that guy live!"

"I still feel like the masked guy isn't just putting on an act. If he was, he wouldn't be like this. I feel like he's not giving out the aura of someone who's hiding anything. Instead, Case is the one who feels like he's losing control of himself."

Case's eyes widened as he glared at Jack viciously. If looks could kill, Jack would have been dead a few thousand times already. It was not just him who was looking at Jack like that either. The others with him were also looking at Jack with a similar expression as if they wanted to chop Jack into pieces.

Jack was already used to getting looks like that. Ever since he came into the Whirling World, he would get those looks at least
five times a day.
Octavius felt like he was about to explode from anger. Every time Octavius saw how calm Jack was, he would feel insulted.
There had been quite a few people who had insulted them before, but whenever they were together, those people would always
be afraid. They would never remain that calm.
However, this guy was completely different. It was as if nothing they did or said
could affect that guy.
That guy was treating them as if they were just empty air. He did not care about them at all.
Octavius loved to see those people
who offended them fall into fear. However, this guy was just too good at keeping on his act. Ever since the start, he had been
calm and collected, which infuriated Octavius.
He clenched his teeth and told Jack, "Brat, keep putting on an act, you won't be able to keep it up for that long. You'll realize the
consequences of everything you did."
Jack raised an eyebrow in exasperation as he looked at Octavius' furious expression.
He merely felt that it was incredibly amusing.

Jack smirked and smiled calmly, "I hope that I'll meet you first the moment the battle starts. Let's see if you can keep talking like
this Jack's tone was incredibly calm, but it was filled with confidence which made Octavius stiffen. He coldly snorted as he
shouted as hard as he could, "Don't worry, you're the one who'll be crying in the end!"
He sounded like he had no confidence at all when he said that. Even if he hated that person, he could not ignore that person's
skills. Otherwise, they would not have gathered fifteen men to deal with just one person. If it was a straight-up fight, none of them
had a good chance other than Case.
However, everything would end on the foggy battlefield no matter what. There was no way that guy would survive.
Jack sighed, not wanting to bother with them anymore.
He said coldly, "Since you have so much confidence that you can kill me, can't you just shut up right now? Every time you speak,
it's as if there's another mosquito buzzing around my ear. It's really annoying."
Those fifteen men were furious when they heard what Jack said.

That guy actually said they were noisy like mosquitoes?
How dare he! Quite a few of them wanted to rush over in anger, but they were stopped by Case.

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3637

• • •

Case turned to look at his fellow disciples, "That's enough! There is no benefit in trying to argue with this guy. Since he's so
confident, let's use our skills to show him how much of a joke his confidence is. We'll continue on the battlefield."
Case had clearly felt how well Jack could speak before.
For everything Case had to say, Jack would shoot ten sentences back. Furthermore, everything Jack said would hit him precisely
where he was the most vulnerable. It greatly infuriated him.
They would just embarrass themselves if they continued speaking there. They would have the time to torture Jack later anyway!
They would use their skills to teach him a lesson! They wanted to show him what the consequences of his actions were!
The warriors there looked at Jack before looking at the other fifteen. Quite a few of them were really anticipating what would

happen after that. It was just a pity that most of them did not have the guts to participate. Joining the fog battlefield in this kind of
situation would just put them in a dangerous spot for no reason.
Once the fighting started, those who were just watching might end up being dragged in.
The foggy battlefield was not a place to spectate things. Everyone was an enemy the moment they stepped into the place.
Everyone would receive a skeleton badge once they join the fog battlefield. Every additional badge meant their rewards would be
even more valuable.
With that in mind, everyone who entered the fog battlefield would do their best to kill their enemies!
The red-haired man clenched his teeth. He looked at everything that was happening and made a decision. He walked right over
to the registration area.
However, he was stopped by the round-faced man again. The round-faced man really thought that the red-haired man was crazy.
Even if he wanted to challenge the fog battlefield, he should be challenging it at the right time.
Did he not see the conflict between that masked man and the warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent?

The round-faced man said in exasperation, "Is there something wrong with you? Do you want to join in this kind of situation? Are
you sick of living? You just want to die, right?"
The red-haired man frowned, wanting to push the round-faced man aside. However, the round-faced man still meant well, it
would be too rude of him to be so rough.
The red-haired man said patiently, "I'm not crazy, you're just not that smart. This is the best time to take advantage of the
situation. That brat will end up fighting those people, and both sides might end up heavily injured. I'd be able to take advantage
of it all!"
Hearing what the red-haired man said, the round-faced man no longer knew what to say. It was very easy to fall into danger
while waiting to take advantage of the situation. After all, the other challengers were no idiots either.
Even though the fog battlefield was able to mask any senses, it was not like nothing could be seen. There was a good chance any observers would be caught. Then, those observers would end up having their dreams destroyed.
It was often not good to have too much of a perfect picture of things.

The round-faced man said helplessly, "I think you shouldn't try to join in the commotion at this kind of time. It's very easy for you
to end up becoming collateral damage. Do you think they won't know what you're planning when they see you? On top of that,
your senses are blocked on the battlefield, you won't know where they're fighting at all..."
"If you wander around aimlessly, you might stumble into any opponents very easily. Do you think you'll be able to escape
unscathed if that happens? Stop using your earlier reasoning on me, it doesn't make sense at all. If you meet someone fast, you
wouldn't even be able to use the fog to hide. You wouldn't be able to run at all."

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3638

• • •

When that was said, even the round-faced man started to feel like giving up.
However, he felt like some things needed to be said, "Hey, don't blame me for nagging you. Don't forget what the master said. If
you don't come out of the Whirling World alive, he's going to hold me responsible!"
The red-haired man frowned as he pushed away the round-faced man's hand, "What you say might really happen, but I don't
think I'd be that unlucky. Alright, that's enough, I'm going to sign up right now!"
At that moment, the red-haired man was already thoroughly annoyed by the round-faced man. He no longer cared about
anything else as he walked over to the registration area.
The round-faced man sighed helplessly, but he did not stop the other man. He knew that it was already pointless. If he continued
to stop the other man, it would just cause the man to hate him and that would not be good.

The round-faced man said miserably, "I already did what I should anyway. Even if the results aren't ideal, it will no longer be my
fault. The red-haired man was not the only one with those thoughts. After about five minutes, a total of four others had registered.
After twenty of the warriors gathered, they stood on the transfer array."
All of them had differing emotions on their faces, but the calmest one was Jack. It was as if Jack was not going to the fog
battlefield that was full of death, but just a suburb in the countryside.
The moment the transfer array activated, Case looked at Jack and said in a dark and cold voice, "You'll regret this!"
Jack raised an eyebrow as he turned to look at Case, "Same to you..."
The moment that was said, the transfer array's activation was done. All twenty of them were wrapped up in distorted space and
sent somewhere faraway.
After about five minutes, Jack noticed that he had arrived in a completely blurry world. He was completely surrounded by white
fog. As he let out his senses, he realized that he could only feel things that were around seven meters away from him.

Jack's soul was strong, so his senses were naturally stronger than a regular person. Even so, he could only feel around such a
limited area. However, it was not enough to make Jack nervous.
Jack's lips curled up into a smile, it seemed like he would be having some fun!
He did not stop in place, and instead started to walk in a direction he had chosen!
The fog did not just obscure one's senses, it even stopped the sound from getting past. Even though the sound was not as badly
covered up, it was still incredibly muffled.
Jack would not even be able to hear a battle going on if it was a couple of hundred meters in front of him. Jack was no idiot. If all
fifteen of them fought him, it would definitely not be a good situation.
However, he did not need to worry about that on the foggy battlefield. Even if they had a lot of plans for dealing with him, there
was no way it would all take effect immediately.
Jack needed to use this opportunity to ruin their plans!
Octavius looked up, and everywhere was covered in white fog. The situation was worse than he thought, but it was still fine.

They had already prepared a plan. He took a deep breath as he counted his footsteps and walked fonNard. There should be a
pile of rubble in front.
As long as he saw that, it would mean that he was already very close to his goal. As he mumbled on, he quickly walked forward.
To stop any surprises from happening, he needed to be quick!
Right at that moment, a rock suddenly flew toward him from the left.

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3639

• • •

Octavius quickly looked toward the left in shock. All he could see was still white fog. Both his sight and hearing were obscured.

He cursed, suddenly on full alert. He wondered which idiot was using rocks to scout ahead.

He clenched his teeth. It was an urgent moment. No matter how much he wanted to beat up that guy, he still needed to get
things done beforehand. Just as he turned around and continued forward, another stone was thrown over.

That one was quick and vicious, there was even true energy around it. Octavius avoided it, but he heard a boom. A small crater
had formed on the ground!

Octavius clenched his teeth, no longer able to hold back as he walked to the left.

Before he completed his task, he would beat up that idiot who was throwing the stones! He walked very quickly, and he started to
vaguely make out a figure very quickly.

The person had a straight back and was wearing green robes. A sense of familiarity filled his mind as Octavius immediately
froze, realizing something wrong. Right at that moment, that person turned around.
Jack smiled, "Not bad! I can't believe it's you!"
At that moment, Jack still had a few more stones in his hand.
Octavius started to panic. Turns out, he had been the one throwing the stones. Octavius' hands trembled as he quickly retreated.
Various thoughts surfaced in his head.
That guy was not weak. Jimmy had been no match for him, and Octavius was just a bit stronger than Jimmy. If Octavius fought
the guy, the chances of winning were probably only around twenty percent, but if he ran at that moment, it was very easy for him
to get lost, which would ruin the final plans!
Just as he was mulling over it, Jack was already walking toward him. Jack maintained a smile on his face as if nothing that was
happening around him concerned him.
The smile angered Octavius. Octavius clenched his teeth, "You dog! Don't think I'm afraid of you just because you have some
skills! I'm telling you, even if it's one against one, I might not lose!"

At worst, Octavius could run away in the end. Just because he could not win did not mean he could not run! The fog obscured all
senses anyway. As long as he hid fast enough, he would be fine!
With that in mind, he immediately straightened his back. He did not want to look afraid!
Jack looked at Octavius preparing to face him and started to laugh. This suited him perfectly. If Octavius had turned around to
run, Jack would at least need to spend some effort. Since Octavius decided to fight him head-on, it saved a lot of time and effort.
Jack was very happy that Octavius did not seem to know his place. Jack hoped that the other warriors from the Swelling Tide
Continent would be like that too!
Octavius frowned, feeling incredibly furious when Jack laughed.
How dare that dog laugh at him! Was he being laughed at for not knowing his place?
Octavius got angrier and angrier as he thought about that.
He wanted to rush forward and just choke Jack at that moment. However, he knew that he was not facing an easy opponent. He
needed to deal with it calmly!

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3640

• • •

"Come," Jock said calmly.
Octavius found himself even more furious. How dare that guy talk to him like that!
It was as if he was being instructed.
Octavius clenched his teeth, unable to hold back anymore!
He started to form seals with his hands, and a tiger appeared in the air. A dragon was circling the tiger as well!
Octavius shouted, "I'm using the lower ultimate god rank technique, the Dragon Tiger Fist! I've already mastered it to the third
level! Unless you have a middle ultimate god rank technique, you'll be no match for me at all!"
Looking at the tiger and dragon in the air, Jack suddenly realized something.
He laughed and said, "Could you have failed to form your world avatar?"
Those words were like stabs in Octavius' heart.
Even his face was twisted! Jack was right. After a few days in Cloud Valley, he
had failed to even condense a single perfect seal.

Even though he had been able to form a few, the ones he formed were either problematic or useless. He had completely failed. It
was as if he had done nothing at all. Case had managed to succeed because even though Case had failed a lot of them, he still
succeeded with quite a few.
He managed to form fifty-seven usable seals out of ninety-six. As long as he had fifty-seven seals that could be used, a world
avatar could be formed. However, Octavius had clearly failed.
Even though he had successfully gotten a Valley Entrance Pass, he still failed in the end. It impacted him deeply. If it was not for
their plans, Octavius would have tried to find somewhere he could be alone for a few days.
Jack had exposed him right away. Octavius' anger soared. He clenched his teeth, "Brat! I'll destroy you!"
Jack immediately knew that he was right at Octavius' tone!
Jack smiled, no longer wasting any time on Octavius as he started to form seals in the air.
They condensed and formed a blade.
Jack had been using Soul Burst Ring against most of his enemies, and it was his strongest attack, as it was able to blow his

enemies apart every time. However, he decided on Broken Soul Blade this time.
There was a simple reason for that. Even though Soul Burst Ring could kill his opponents easily, it was far too destructive. It
would form a large crater around the area, and the explosion would be spread very far away.
Even though the fog battlefield was large and the fog did muffle some sound, he still wanted to be safe.
The Broken Soul Blade
floated in front of Jack. The blade was filled with countless seals. The power of the soul surged around the blade.
At that moment, Octavius was already going crazy with his anger at Jack. He clenched his teeth and launched himself forward,
charging at Jack like a fierce tiger.
He punched right at Jack's head!
Jack could clearly hear the roar of a tiger and dragon. Octavius was not weak, but he was nothing to Jack!
Jack scoffed, pushing his hands forward as the Broken Soul Blade quickly shot forward.

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3641

• • •

The Broken Soul Blade clashed violently with the Tiger Dragon Fist. An explosion was heard, and Octavius felt like he was
punching a steel mountain. After that, it felt like poisonous gray energy was climbing up his fist.
The Tiger Dragon Punch's power surrounded his fist, so every time he struck an opponent, he was always fine thanks to the
protection of that energy. However, his usually strong attack had completely burnt away when it touched that gray energy!
Octavius widened his eyes as he looked at his fist in disbelief.
Right after that, a bone-piercing pain started to spread from his fist to his whole body!
He could not help but cry out in agony as he rapidly retreated. He knew he was probably no match for his opponent, but he never
expected there to be such a wide gulf. His Tiger Dragon Fist had been no match for his opponent at all. Not only that, it had been
defeated in an instant!

Only then did he realize how idiotic his earlier decision had been. Octavius only had one thought in mind at that moment, which
was to run!
He needed to escape the place immediately. Otherwise, he would lose his life. He hated his opponent. If he could, he wanted to
rip his opponent apart. In the same vein, his opponent would never let him off! Octavius clenched his teeth and frantically held
back the pain as he turned around to flee. However, he overestimated his willpower. No one could withstand the pain of their soul
being eaten.
An intense pain had spread from his hand to his whole body. He had just taken a few steps when he completely lost control of all
his true energy. He immediately collapsed on the ground. After that, he could not even control his own body. He was like a beast
that was just crying out on the ground.
At that moment, Jack casually walked over. Octavius was rolling on the floor without any regard for his own image. If he could
still control himself, there was no way he would allow himself to show such a sight. However, he could not withstand the pain of
his soul being eaten away.

Jack smiled, walking to Octavius' side.
He took out two bodies from Mustard Seed, tossing them next to the other party so Octavius could see them clearly.
Jack controlled the power of the Broken Soul Blade, reducing the speed of his soul being eaten to allow Octavius a moment of
consciousness.
Octavius was panting. His whole body was full of sweat, it was like he had just been fished out of a pond. When he could control
his body, he immediately saw those corpses next to him. He widened his eyes, not even able to breathe anymore.
He was filled with fear as he shuddered. He knew those corpses very well. They were his fellow disciples who had entered this
battle with him. Yet, not too long had passed, and they were already dead. There was no doubt that Jack had killed them.
Octavius gulped, not even daring to look up, "Who are you?!"
If he had really seen Jack's skills before, he would never have joined Case in this battle against Jack. After witnessing Jack's skills, he finally realized how much of a joke his earlier thoughts had been. Jack was not just incredibly

strong. Jack's skills could be considered at the top of the second-grade world! He even wondered if six or seven of them working
together would be able to beat Jack!
Octavius shuddered. "I know I won't survive, but can you tell me who you are?! There's no way you're someone unknown! If
that's the case, why won't you show your face?"

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3642

• • •

Compared to his opponent, Octavius felt utterly insignificant. Even if there were two of himself, he would still not be able to win.
There was no way someone that strong was unknown. He just wanted to find out who that person was.
Jack smiled as he slowly pulled down his mask.
When Octavius saw Jack's real face, Octavius' eyes widened, "You're Jack?"
Jack nodded calmly.
Octavius' lips twitched, "I can't believe it's you. I heard you're from Hestia Continent?"
Jack had shown very good results in Chaos City. He had managed to resolve a large battle by himself. Hence, his name had
already spread everywhere. The most interesting thing about him was where he was from. Hestia Continent was a completely
useless place. Even among third-grade worlds, Hestia Continent was among the worst.
There was no way someone that strong could come from a place like that.

When Octavius heard about it, he found it hard to believe. He felt like it was just a rumor. He never expected he would actually
meet Jack and even die at Jack's hands.
It was absurd!
Octavius scoffed as his eyes reddened.
He sounded incredibly reluctant, "Why did you not show your face? If we knew it was you, we wouldn't have caused you any
trouble."
As he said that, he sounded like he was blaming and questioning Jack.
He felt like Jack had caused all of this because Jack had hidden his face, causing no one to recognize him.
Jack merely felt amused at those words, "If you don't want any consequences, then don't do anything that would bring them
about in the first place. The Swelling Tide Continent has waived its power around like nothing. So many people have been done
by you guys, and you guys have forced so many people to leave..."
"Most of those warriors you've bullied are just those who obey the rules and don't cause any trouble. They were forced to leave

Cloud City by you, and some of them have even died because of you. You should have known there would be consequences for
doing all of that. All of your sins have finally caught up to you."
Jack's tone was very slow. He showed no emotions and merely spoke as if he was just explaining simple logic.
Octavius started to catch as his body shook.
Even though Jack was controlling the power of the Broken Soul Blade to not destroy Octavius' soul that quickly, it was just
slowing the power down. It had not stopped at all. Octavius could still clearly feel his soul being ripped apart.
That pain caused his whole body to shudder. His muscles were moving uncontrollably. His expression was twisting beyond his
control as well. Octavius felt completely despondent. It was not just the pain, but also the fear of death descending upon him.
Jack looked down at Octavius coldly, "Do unto others what you want to be done unto yourself. You are just suffering from the
consequences of your own actions. There's nothing to be unhappy about. If it wasn't me, someone else would have done it."

Octavius's heart was beating rapidly at that moment as plenty of images surfaced in his head.
All those people who had offended him before. Octavius had dealt with them cruelly. When they took part in challenges, Octavius
would have people go over to constantly mock and provoke them.
They would never get a chance to escape. Some of them were even tortured to death, while some of them left Cloud City
completely.

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3643

• • •

He still remembered the expressions on their faces. It was the same as his at that moment.
Octavius smiled bitterly. No matter how unhappy he was, he had to admit that Jack was right. He reaped what he sowed!
"What's happening? Is it just too far?" Case frowned and said.
He had already arrived at the predetermined spot. There were eight others with him. Another six were still not there.
As time slowly dragged on, the situation seemed more and more problematic. After all, this was not a nice place. The fog
battlefield was full of the aura of death. Death was everywhere in this place.
For the skeleton badges, anything could be done.
Case sighed and continued, "We'll wait for a while longer. If they don't arrive, we'll just depart first. I trust in their skills. I've looked
at all the other challengers. Other than that guy, no one else is worth our notice. They're all just trash. If anyone met them, it

would take some time, but there shouldn't be any problems..." However, if they met Jack instead, the situation would be very
bad. But, Case felt like even if some of them were unlucky enough to meet Jack, it could not be all six of the missing ones.
The one behind Case at that moment was Maurice, who was from their clan.
Jimmy stood quietly beside Maurice. His expression was incredibly serious at that moment.
As time slowly passed, he constantly looked around, observing his surroundings. Yet, no one was there, which caused him to get
more and more anxious.
Maurice said, "What are you looking around for? Even if someone is here, you won't be able to see them at all. Once they're
close enough, everyone will see them."
Jimmy sighed, saying with worry, "Why isn't Octavius here? Could he have encountered any trouble?"
Maurice raised an eyebrow. He had been thinking about other matters and had forgotten about Octavius.
Jimmy had served as a reminder. Octavius should have already arrived after so long. The others who had not arrived were

mostly all weaker than Octavius. Even the strongest among the other five was almost at Octavius' level. With Octavius' skills, if there were no surprises on the way, he should have already arrived.
Did he meet some trash that he could not handle?
Maurice consoled, "There's no way anything would happen to him. Have you forgotten about his skills? He must have met a few
pieces of trash on the way. Even though ants are small, they're still worth something..."
"If he killed them, he would get the skeleton badges. He might be able to get something good from them. If I met any, I would
attack as well. It might waste some time, but it would be very profitable."
It was not just Maurice who felt that way. Other than Jimmy, the others thought so as well. Even though they had participated in
the fog battlefield to get rid of Jack, the rewards they could get were still something on their minds.
After solving the most important problem, they could profit from it as well. It was naturally a happy matter. They would definitely
have done it happily if they were in that position. It was just that they had a very easy time arriving at the gathering spot, not
meeting anyone else.

Jimmy looked up and said seriously when he heard that, "It's not like that! All of you would definitely do something like that, but
Octavius absolutely wouldn't."

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3644

• • •

"He would prioritize eliminating Jack over everything else. He would not let anything delay him. I've been with him for so long. I understand him the most here. Something definitely happened if he's still not here..."

As he said that, his voice started to tremble. Various uneasy thoughts surfaced in his mind.

There were some things he did not dare to say because he was worried he would jinx it, but the more he thought about it, the more worried he was that it actually happened.

Someone behind Jimmy laughed and said, "Jimmy, you're being too sensitive. It's not like you can read his might. How could you anticipate his every move? Even though Octavius is a very serious person, there's no way he wouldn't be tempted by such a large treasure. You're just overthinking things."

"Is that so? I don't think that's the case," A cold voice was suddenly heard in front of them.

Everyone stiffened and turned to look at the source of the sound at the same time.

A man in dark green robes and a black mask was walking through the fog toward them. Since the fog obscured their sight and
they were standing in a circle not too far from each other, Jack had only been seen by them because they were already within
seven meters of each other. When everyone saw who it was, practically everyone pulled out their weapons from their storage
spaces.
Jack was still very calm at their reaction. Everything was within his expectations.
Case looked at Jack with alarm. He held a round ring in one hand that had various beasts carved on it. There was even a dark
red glow to it. That was probably his weapon.
Case raised his weapon and aimed it at Jack, "Why are you here?"
The gathering spot they chose was not near the center of the fog battlefield at all. It was quite secluded to avoid being noticed by
Jack. Otherwise, it would affect their plans. Yet, even despite their careful planning, Jack had found them.
Jack did not seem to have accidentally stumbled upon them either. It was like Jack already knew they would be here.

The fog battlefield was filled with fog that obstructed sight and sound. If Jack had not known that they would be gathered there,
he would not have been so calm.
Jack said, "Don't think that you're so smart with your schemes. If you think everyone else is an idiot, you'll end up being an idiot."
Case's eyes suddenly widened as he shouted, "You interrogated and killed people!"
Case suddenly understood why Jack was there.
Jack probably already knew where they were gathering. It was obvious that he had found out from the other disciples that had
not arrived.
Jack actually used such a cruel method!
When the others heard what Jack said, they realized what happened as well. All of them started to look at Jack in anger, raising
their weapons at Jack in a challenging manner.
However, they were already acting from pure anger at that point.
Jack looked at all of their furious expressions. All of them looked like they were burning in anger as if their whole family had been
killed overnight.
Jack could not resist laughing at their expressions. However, the smile never reached his eyes.

His eyes were completely cold, "Why do you look like that? Do you feel very angry? What gives you the right to be so angry?"

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3645

• • •

Maurice clenched his teeth and said, "What kind of nonsense are you speaking? Isn't it obvious why we're angry? You've killed
our companions so cruelly, and you're asking us why we're angry?!"
Jack sneered as he coldly looked at the furious Maurice, "This is just retribution. You really don't need to be so angry."
Maurice's face reddened in anger as he said, "What retribution?! Stop trying to explain your actions."
Jack raised an eyebrow,
not angered by that at all.
Instead, he looked even calmer, "Just think about how many warriors you've tortured to death or forced out of Cloud City. Those
warriors were just as angry as before. Their anger was caused by all of you, so this is just what you deserve. There isn't anything
to get mad at."
Case was trembling from his anger, "Just shut up! Don't think we'll be afraid of you just because you're good at putting up an act!

No matter what you say, it won't change what's waiting for you!"
"Open your eyes and take a good look. You have nine enemies! Do you really think you're capable of defeating nine enemies?
Even if you're one of the top warriors, there's no way you'll be able to beat nine of us. We're not useless!"
Jack raised an eyebrow, looking at all nine of them.
To deal with Jack, Case did pull out all the stops as he had found so many strong fellow disciples. All of them were aboveaverage
warriors.
Case should have managed to obtain the first stage of his world avatar as well. Jack estimated that Case was probably not the
only one among them who had done so. Facing nine opponents really did pressure Jack a bit.
However, that was exactly what he wanted. After entering the Whirling World, Jack had found it hard to find any decent
opponents. With the suppression of the strength, very few people could truly threaten Jack with just their techniques alone.
Jack could have clearly not wasted any time in shutting those people up in the Killing Illusion Array, but he had deliberately bet
against Jimmy so Jimmy's anger would cause Jimmy to want revenge. It was all for this moment.

Jack took a deep breath and an excited look flashed in his eyes. It did look a bit strange, Maurice, in particular, wondered if he
was seeing things. Jack's eyes were actually lit with an eagerness for battle!
Did he really think he would be able to defeat all nine of them?
Did he just go crazy from all the pressure of facing such strong opponents or did he actually have that skill?
After the last thought flashed in Maurice's mind, Maurice shook his head. That was just absurd.
Jack might be able to beat two or three of them at once, and maybe even four, but it was impossible to beat all nine of them. The
nine of them were no weaklings. They had experienced many trials, and many geniuses had died at their hands!
The nine of them would even be able to defeat the strongest warrior in the Whirling World if they worked together!
Unless that guy had broken through the limitations of the laws, it was absolutely impossible to beat all of them!

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3646

• • •

There were only two ways to explain what that man was doing at that moment. Either he was really crazy, or he was
overconfident in himself, thinking he would actually beat everyone with his meager skills. Maurice could not help but let out a
cold laugh at that. At that moment, he only had one thought in mind. He wanted a complete victory. He wanted to show that man
his place so that man would realize how much of a joke his thoughts were.
It was obvious Maurice was not the only person who thought that way.
Case took a deep breath.
There was anger and mockery in his eyes, "Brat, I've seen many people who're filled with confidence, but it's my first time seeing
anyone with as much confidence as yours. Even those people who love to brag about themselves would never dare to say they
would be able to take on nine opponents at once!”

"We're no slouches either. Including me, three of us can form world avatars! If we attack with our full might, even the strongest
warrior in the Whirling World would have to run!"
"Who do you think you are? You just happened to have some skill, and you've already forgotten your place. I'll show you how
vast the world is today!"
"That's right, let's show him how much of a joke his thoughts are!"
There were a lot of agreements at that moment. Everyone had their fists clenched tightly, already thinking about Jack being
completely beaten up by that.
At that moment, the red-haired warrior had already snuck over from afar. Even though the fog had obscured sight and sound, it
was not like no sound could come out at all.
The red-haired man waited patiently like a thief. He was worried he would be killed by any of the strong warriors, but also eager to take advantage of the situation. He had been
lucky enough to actually stumble upon this place after wandering around.
Earlier, Jack had been talking to Case and the others, and in their anger, they had been incredibly loud. The red-haired man

happened to hear them, and he hurried over toward the source of the noise.
He did not dare to get too close, worried that he would be noticed. He merely hid by the side.
The red-haired man looked at the tension on both sides and lamented to himself, "This guy is just crazy. He thinks he can defeat
nine opponents by himself?"
The red-haired man felt that anyone who had heard that earlier conversation would be asking the same thing as well.
At that moment, Jack had a calm look on his face. He showed no emotion at all as if what was about to happen had nothing to
do with him.
Case and the others were already used to Jack acting like that.
They thought that Jack was actually just putting on an act and that Jack was actually incredibly anxious. Every time they saw
Jack's calm demeanor, they wanted to rip that fake mask off.
They finally had the chance. They were incredibly eager to step into battle.
Right before they fought, Jimmy suddenly shouted out, "Hey, did you see Octavius at all?!"

Jack looked at the anxious Jimmy and smiled, "I did see him. He was the one who told me the location. Otherwise, I wouldn't
have found you so quickly."
Everyone widened their eyes at that. Jimmy shouted out, "You're just a load of crap! Even if you caught Octavius, there's no way
he would be threatened by you into giving up our location!"

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3647

• • •

Jack laughed, remembering how reluctant Octavius looked right before he died.
Jack had let Octavius live for a bit longer because he wanted to show Octavius that Octavius deserved what happened and also
because he wanted the answers Octavius had.
The two he had killed before Octavius had been very stubborn. They had killed themselves while Jack was distracted. To prevent
that from happening, Jack had made sure to sever Octavius' limbs so he had no chance.
In truth, Octavius had folded before Jack tortured him for too long, telling him everything.
Before Octavius died, he even remarked that he deserved what happened.
Jimmy looked at Jack hatefully, wanting to rip Jack apart, "You're a liar! Octavius has always had a lot of willpower. There's no
way he would have done that. You must have gotten the information from someone else and you're just trying to smear him! I
won't fall for it!"

"Listen here, I'll definitely get revenge for Octavius! I'll make sure you pay the price. I'll have you go through the torture that's a thousand times worse than what Octavius went through!"

Jimmy was practically shouting all of that. He absolutely hated Jack. He wanted to rip Jack apart.

Jack scoffed, not caring at all.

At that moment, there was nothing else to say. All they could do was fight! Everyone was incredibly focused.

Case's hands started to move as countless seals formed in the air. A massive tongue appeared. The tongue was covered in a disgusting liquid, and there were countless thorns on it. On the tongues were various seals that looked disgusting and sinister.

Jack frowned, wondering what kind of technique it was to bring out something like a tongue. It looked like part of a monster's body. He wondered where Case learned something like that.

After Case finished that, he summoned up all his true energy again.

A blurry body formed behind him. The body looked like a dog with a lion's head. It looked like a beast, but it was too vague to tell.

Jack raised an eyebrow, seeing that it was Case's world avatar. Even though world avatars were manifestations of the laws of
the world, it was closely tied to everyone personally. Everyone would form a different world avatar. Case's world avatar was the figure of a beast. On top of the technique he was using, Jack wondered what attributes the world
avatar was.
However, it was not the time to ask any questions. The moment Case took action, his fellow disciples did as well. None of them held back as they summoned up their full strength!
They planned on dealing with Jack in one blow.
Jack took a deep breath, finally feeling some pressure that had eluded him for so long. He formed seals with his hands, and gray
seals started to resonate in the air. A round ring the height of half a person formed. Countless seals circulated the ring,
containing dense soul energy.
That was the storm god rank technique, Soul Burst Ring! Soul Burst Ring was still Jack's most powerful attack.
A storm god rank technique was not something a regular technique could compete with.

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3648

• • •

Even a beast the size of a small mountain would be blown into pieces by the Soul Burst Ring.
The Soul Burst Ring was practically unstoppable. No one had ever survived it.
Jack took a deep breath, summoning up all his true energy. Ever since he entered the Whirling World, he had never been so
excited. After all, he had nine opponents, and none of them were weak!
"Brat, die!" Case shouted.
He exploded with all his power as that sticky tongue shot at Jack. The seven other techniques launched forward as well.
Nine different forms of energy were all charging forward at Jack. The attack was devastating, causing even space itself to distort.
Jack frowned as he pushed forward, expanding the Soul Burst Ring to three meters.
The Soul Burst Ring was rapidly spinning as it expanded. Dark red runes were blinking the whole time like a lighthouse.

Suddenly, the nine techniques clashed with the Soul Burst Ring.
Everyone heard an intense explosion that even hurt their ears. The intense clash caused space itself to distort as countless
forms of energy clashed together, trying to swallow each other up.
Wave after wave of energy shot out!
Jack felt an impact on his chest, slamming right into his body. His protective true energy was broken apart, and one of his ribs
was broken from the attack!
He was blown right back.
The other nine were not much better. The intense explosion had sent them flying. Even the red-haired man by the side had not
been able to avoid everything. Even though he was a distance away, he was struck by the shockwaves and sent back several
meters.
He slammed into the ground, and he felt his organs shifting from the impact. He used his arm to support his body as he coughed
violently, spitting out blood. It hurt so much he wanted to cry.
His other hand clutched his chest as he looked up tearfully.

Looking at the fog in front of him, he never would have expected that to happen.
He thought it would be a completely one-sided affair. Nine attacks had shot forward. He assumed that the masked man would
never be able to hold on, that the technique that guy used would have been blown to pieces, and that guy would have to face
nine attacks.
The red-haired man could even imagine the guy being blown into pieces, but the reality was completely different from his
expectations.
That guy's technique had managed to hold up against nine different techniques!
It was not weak at all. He had really managed to go against nine people!
"This is crazy! It's actually happening!" The red-haired man said in a hoarse voice.
If he did not witness it himself, he would never have believed it.
The red-haired man gulped. His whole body was shaking. That masked man had not been bragging at all. The strong had just
been a vague idea in the red-haired man's head before this. He knew that they were more talented and better than him in every
way.

However, he never had an idea of how strong they could be. He finally got a clear idea of it all. That man had completely opened
up his eyes. He had been able to come to a draw against nine strong warriors! It was horrifying!
The red-haired man was not even an ant against a power like that!
He took a deep breath, suddenly realizing how much of a joke his earlier thoughts had been.
In front of someone that strong, he would be killed with just a finger even if the man was injured. Case spat out a mouthful of
blood. All the muscles in his body were trembling, and his organs were hurting. Even his true energy was erratic. He felt himself
unable to even control his breathing.

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3649

• • •

When he was struck by the shockwave earlier, he even wondered if he would die on the spot!
At that moment, he heard a raspy voice behind him, "Case, are you alright?"
Maurice barely managed to get up from the ground as he spoke to Case.
Case took a deep breath and tried to use his true energy to stabilize his injuries. After checking his body with his senses, he
found ou that they were only light injuries. He would be fine after a few days of rest, and he could still fight.
"I'm fine, what about the rest of you?"
Maurice checked on himself as well. He wiped away the sweat on his forehead, "I'm fine as well... I can still fight..."
After he said that, everyone else fell silent.
Everything that had happened had not just struck their body, but their spirits as well.
Nine of them had been fighting against one person, but both sides had been sent flying. That guy's technique actually held such

devastating power.
Even the nine of them together were just an even match. it was just horrifying to think about.
Who was that guy?!
How was he so strong?
He definitely was someone who stood at the peak!
"So he was not bragging..." Jimmy's voice was heard from behind.
He was on the weaker side, so he had been sent flying the furthest after being struck by the shockwaves. His injuries were
slightly worse than the others, but it was still manageable.
Everyone fell silent again. Jack was strong, but no one expected him to be this strong! Jack was so strong even nine of them
together could not kill him. Even though they saw Jack being blown away as well, they did not know how Jack was at that
moment.
They wondered if he had only suffered light injuries like them.
If that was the case, then they were in a bad situation.
Case took a deep breath as he said seriously, "This guy is tough... He's ten times tougher than I expected!" He was not

exaggerating at all. Jack really was much stronger than he had imagined. He thought that he would only see people at that level
in level one cities.
Case gulped, finally realizing what kind of person he was up against!
"Who is he?!" Maurice asked.
Someone that strong was just horrifying.
Why was he in Cloud City and why was he fighting them?
Someone that strong should already be fully fixated on the Radiant Hall.
Why was Jack in Cloud City?
Case took a deep breath, saying with a stiff expression, "That's not something we should be discussing right now. We need a
plan! No matter what, we've already made an enemy out of this man. Either he dies, or we do. Even if he's that strong, we still
need to survive!"
"Thankfully, we have the numbers. If we were just one man short, we'd all probably be dead! Listen here. No matter what, we
can't lose! I know you're scared, but even so, you have to toss that fear aside!"
Case was right. The situation they were in meant that neither party would be leaving this alive!.
There was no alternative!

They had to leave this place alive, they could not die here! Even if Jack was someone at the top of the top, they had to face him.
Case relaxed slightly when he saw that everyone was fired up. They could not let fear take over, or they would all be done for.

• • •

No.1 Supreme Warrior by Moneto

Chapter 3650

• • •

Jimmy then coughed violently. He was in the worst state among the nine of them. He was just barely able to keep fighting.
However, as time passed, he realized that his soul was being held back by a strange energy.
That energy was incredibly tyrannical, constantly attacking his soul. Even though it was not strong, it was very resilient.
Earlier, he had used all the true energy in his body to remove that energy, but he had failed to completely get rid of it. It seemed
like dragging the situation would only be bad for him.
Jimmy really wanted to leave the fog battlefield at that moment. He needed to quietly recuperate somewhere safe to get rid of
that energy.
He said anxiously, "How do you think that guy's condition is? I saw that he was sent flying by the impact. Could he be heavily
injured at the moment? Maybe he'll die if we pursue him right now."

Case frowned, taking a deep breath before he said, "I saw him flying as well, but it's hard to tell what his condition is like."
After he said that, Case stood up from the ground. He looked at the fog and said, "This might be our only chance! We can't let him escape?"
Following up with their attack was their only choice. If Jack realized that he could not beat the nine of them and chose to flee,
then it was not good news for their world.
That guy had a strong sense of revenge. As long as he left the place alive, it was possible he would want revenge in the future.
Then, many of them would end up dying at his hands.
Furthermore, Case was suspecting that the six who were not there had all been killed by Jack.
Even though he did not know how Jack had managed to find them through the fog, Jack was still too dangerous.
Jack was not just strong, but incredibly intelligent.
Case raised his voice and said, "Everyone, stand up! Follow me! We can't let this guy run!"
The nine of them struggled to stand up when Case said that. To prevent anything unexpected, they kept a tight group. The nine of them walked toward where Jack had been sent flying. With every step he took, Case felt his heart beat

a few times.
That masked man was the strongest opponent Case had ever met, and the most difficult problem as well. If Case had known
how strong that person was, he would never have dared to challenge him, nor would he have dared to cut the queue.
However, that was no longer something he could take back.
Suddenly, everyone heard a crunch coming from the front. They stopped at the same time as they stared forward.
They could clearly hear each other's anxious breaths, even hearing each other gulping.
Even though the nine of them acted like they were prepared for a fight to the death, they were still incredibly anxious. After all,
Jack was just too strong, the nine of them working together had not been able to kill him, and both sides had been injured again.
They were not sure ofthe injuries that Jack sustained and if Jack could still fight.
They never would have expected the situation to be so bad, it was completely different from what they expected.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3651

. . .

“I guess I still underestimated the nine of you,” a familiar voice was heard from ahead.
Morine appeared in front of them again.
At that moment, the nine of them were no longer as prideful in his presence. They seemed to all back off
at the same moment, a subconscious movement caused by their fear.
Case gulped. No matter how proud he was, no matter how much he looked down on warriors from thirdgrade
worlds, he had just seen Morine’s tremendous strength.
He could not look down on Morine at all.
He had to concede that he was incredibly strong.

He gritted his teeth and said, “If I knew your truest potential, I would’ve never gone against you. Ugh, can’t go back and change things now… There’s only one thing to do now.”

As he said all of that, Case’s eyes widened as he glared right at George.

At that moment, Morine’s complexion was slightly paler than before. He was clearly injured, yet he managed to somehow stand.

Case could not tell if Morine’s injuries were heavy, but the situation was bad for them. The fact that Morine did not run away and stood in front of them bravely meant that he was confident in himself.

If they had not witnessed Morine’s skills before, Case would have thought that Morine facing them headon was a sign of pure idiocy. However, he no longer dared to underestimate George.

Morine had already taught him a huge lesson; he already knew the consequences of underestimating him.
Of course, Case was glad that he had nine companions. If they had just one less person on their side,
they would never be able to stand against George.
Case took a deep breath and said, “You predicted our plan?”
This was what Case wanted to ask the whole time. It had been such a tense situation and the fight had
started instantly, so Case never had the chance to ask it. At that moment, he was still thinking about
starting the fight immediately, so he took the chance to ask what was on his mind.
Morine laughed, looking at Case like an idiot. “So you thought I was crazy the whole time to have

participated in the fog search battlefield with you? That I joined because I was just too arrogant and full of myself?”

Case’s lips twitched, not answering Morine’s question.

Morine did not need an answer either. He could immediately tell what the answer was from Case’s expression.

These people truly did think that way.

Morine burst into laughter, but his laughter was dark, dripping with disdain.

He took a deep breath and looked at them with amusement. “I wasn’t the one full of myself; you guys were. Those who don’t know their place would’ve died outside of Cloud City. How could they have been

able to survive until they reached this place? This is a level-three city, not a level-nine city…”
“One can only reach this place after going through various challenges. Do you really think anyone who
manages to reach this place would be a fool? You probably even thought that I stubbornly entered the fog
search battlefield with you because I didn’t want to embarrass myself, which is even more hilarious.”
“Who do you think you are to be worth me doing that? From the start, you were nothing to me. Fifteen
men are just fifteen skeleton badges. I’ll be able to get something amazing from it, though.”
The expressions of Case and the others darkened.
Morine finally voiced his inner thoughts, which humiliated them even more.

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3652

. . .

Before this, Case and the others were so confident in assuming that Chyntia was just full of himself, that
he had been caught up by his own words and forced to join the fog search battlefield with them.
Thinking about it, they truly did assume too much.
Chyntia had not felt like they were worth his notice at all. Entering the fog search battlefield with them was
just so he would be able to get the skeleton badges from them to exchange for treasures. They were the
pompous ones.
Case inhaled deeply. He felt his whole body tremble in utter humiliation.

Chyntia sneered and said, “Your so-called plan wasn’t smart at all. Anyone who thought about it would be
able to see through it. You gathered so many people, and it’s obvious that it’s a pact to kill me. Since you
want to work together, you’d need to gather yourselves, or it’d be useless. It’s not easy to gather in the fog
search battlefield.”
Chyntia reached out and touched the dense fog. “The fog obscures sight and sound, so the hardest part
of your plan is to gather. After all, the transfer array sent us all to different places.”
“Even though the fog obscured everything here, it’s not that large of a place, and the geography never
changes. A lot of warriors enter the fog search battlefield as well. Some of you probably questioned the

warriors who had entered before and drew a simple map. You used that map to find a gathering spot!”
It had been easy to figure out their plan. Chyntia had heard a lot of talk on the way from Cloud Valley. Some of the chatter involved people wanting
to buy maps. When he heard that, everything became clear.
Unfortunately, Case was too busy thinking of how he would torture Chyntia to death. Even after he heard
those conversations, he did not think too much about it. He never expected that Chyntia would be able to
guess their whole plan just from hearing that.
15 warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent entered the fog search battlefield. Chyntia happened to meet

one and learned where they were headed from there. After that, it went much easier. A total of six warriors
had died in Chyntia’s hands.
Case thought that his plan was foolproof, but Chyntia had seen through it from the start.
Chyntia raised an eyebrow as he looked at Case, the scorn in his eyes almost palpable.
Case took a deep breath. “You won’t beat us! No matter how strong you are, there are nine of us here.
You’re already injured, right? The injuries aren’t light either!”
“Stop acting all-powerful, thinking that you can fool us. While you were talking just now, you were trying to
regulate your breathing. You were trying to use your true energy to stabilize your wounds while talking to
us!”

Chyntia raised an eyebrow, not denying it. He had to say that Case's observational skills were decent.
Case was right, his injuries were relatively heavy. His injuries were even worse than Jimmy's. He
underestimated how strong the nine of them were together.
Even though the Soul Burst Ring had taken the brunt of the attack, Chyntia was still injured. When he had
been sent flying earlier, he felt his ribs breaking. He was only able to stand there because his injuries were
still not enough to be considered heavy and also because he wanted to complete his plan.
Case was not planning on letting him off, and he was not planning on letting them off either.
Case smirked as he looked at Chyntia with a sharp gaze.

“I can’t believe you accepted that. It looks like your injuries aren’t light after all! Since that’s the case, you
should understand the situation you’re in. If you want to blame anything, then blame yourself. You were
too confident in yourself. Otherwise, it’d be very easy for you to go against the Swelling Tide Continent
with your ability.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3653

. . .

Molie laughed. His expression returned to the calm one he always had.
Case’s words did not get that much of a reaction from Jordan.
Case was starting to feel frustrated again when he saw Molie’s expression. He hated seeing Molie look so
confident as if nothing that happened would affect him. He was always sure that Molie was just good at
keeping up an act, and he still felt that way.
After all, the nine of them had wounded Jordan. No matter how strong he was, it would not change the
truth. If Molie continued to fight against them, he would definitely lose.

The fact that Molie still had a look of nonchalance had to be faked.
Jimmy gritted his teeth and snarled, “Hey! I told you you’ll suffer, and now, it’s time. We won’t let you off.
You’ve killed six of ours, and we’ll make you pay for it a thousand times over. We’ll do everything we can
to get your Heartblood so you’ll learn the consequences of offending us. Even if you’re strong, we’ll still
torture you until you die!”
He hated the man in front of him.
Back at the Killing Illusion Array, Molie embarrassed him and even killed his best friend, trampling all over
their dignity. Everything made Jimmy ever more spiteful of Jordan. Before the battle, he had sworn to
himself that he would make Molie pay for everything a hundred times over.

When Molie heard that, the chill in Molie's eyes thickened. "Don't be too happy just yet…"
After he said that, Molie started to form seals with his hands.
All of them were stunned. They never expected Molie to throw caution to the wind like that, fighting them
even when he was injured and at a disadvantage.
The red-haired man by the side widened his eyes as he looked at them. When he saw that Molie was
attacking again, he was stunned.
Were the strong just not used to running away?
Molie did not seem to be a match for his opponents at all, so why did he not just run away?
It was not that shameful.
After all, there were nine opponents.

When it was nine against one, the nine would always be the ones who should be embarrassed. Yet, the
man was actually attacking again, not caring that he was at a disadvantage.
It was confusing!
Case scoffed and said, “I guess you are crazy! Since you want to die so badly, we’ll grant you your wish!”
He started to form seals with his hands, and a world avatar formed behind him.
Case gritted his teeth.
Victory was their only choice at that moment!
He tried to force out every inch of his energy. They could not let this person live.
The others had the same thought in mind.
All of them formed seals and condensed their energy.
Molie did not care what they were doing at all.

At that moment, he was in his own world. His hands moved as multiple seals formed in the air.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3654

. . .

Right at that moment, a black mist rose behind Marsha’s body.
The dense seals increased as well.
In just a few breaths, the gray mist was already taller than a person. Slowly, it formed into the figure of a
human that looked a lot like Joe.
At that moment, Marsha looked up and said coldly, “You’re not the only one who got something from
Cloud Valley!”
Right after he said that, he formed seals again. An intense power came from the world avatar behind
Morten, fusing with those seals he formed.

A world avatar was able to increase a warrior’s power. Furthermore, Marsha had fully completed his with
an error in any of his 96 seals. He took a deep breath, and a golden glow came from his eyes.
He shouted, “This is my strongest state!”
Case reacted at that point, but it was already too late. At that moment, he had launched his attack. Even if
he wanted to run, he could not possibly escape at such a close distance.
He never thought of this before. After all, he had thought that Marsha could not have been evenly matched
with five of them if he had not unleashed his full might. So, he never even thought of the possibility that
Marsha still had more left to show.
He never even considered if he had formed a world avatar.

Case gritted his teeth. He hated Marsha to the core, but it was all too late.
10 different techniques clashed, and this time, the collision was even more intense. 10 different forms of energy tried to swallow each other whole in the air. The Soul Burst Ring was like a
meat grinder, completely swallowing up everything!
The explosion was loud. All nine of them felt an immense force exploding in front of them, sending all of
them flying.
Case could even feel cracking sounds coming from his chest, and he spat out a mouthful of blood.
After a moment, he fell to the ground, gritting his teeth in pain. Even just moving a little, he could feel the
pain from his broken bones. It was not just his ribs at that moment; the other parts of his body were

heavily injured as well. His left arm was completely broken.
Case started to pant as he struggled to get up, but at that moment, he suddenly felt a strange energy
slowly creeping from his chest to his whole body. That energy was ripping his soul apart, causing him to
hiss.
The soul being ripped apart was no small matter. If too much of it was gone, he would become a cripple.
Case used all his true energy to push that power back. At that moment, he heard footsteps.
He looked up to see Marsha already next to him, the man’s expression calm as ever. This time, Marsha
had not been sent flying. The world avatar had bolstered the Soul Burst Ring and it was more than

enough against the nine other attacks, so Marsha had not been hit at all.
Marsha slowly bent down and looked at Case coldly. “You still thought that I was just stubborn because I
refused to leave after I was injured, right?”
The moment Marsha said that, Case felt mocked.
He suddenly laughed, feeling like he was a complete idiot.
Marsha had just said that he was no idiot, but Case still refused to change his thoughts. It seemed like
Case was the true idiot.
Marsha was right. Anyone who got into Cloud City was a capable person, and there was no room for error
on that. He had not left because Marsha was still confident. There was still a trump card that Case had not
expected.

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3655

. . .

The more Case laughed, the more exaggerated it became to the point he started coughing. He felt like he had lost all his strength as he collapsed. He raised his fist. “I can’t believe I’m dying here. I can’t believe I’m going to die to you like this. It’s so humiliating… I thought I was smart, but I was a fool all along!”

The fog search battlefield was open for one day.

After one day, everyone that was alive would be sent out one at a time. No one knew why the fog search battlefield had that rule, but unlike other challenges where everyone would be sent out together after the

challenge ended, they would be sent out one at a time.
After one person was sent out, the next person would be sent out after a period.
At that moment, a few people were talking in the plaza, debating on how many warriors would walk out
alive from the battlefield.
The round-faced man eagerly awaited. He merely hoped that the red-haired man would be self-aware
enough to avoid any danger. Otherwise, he would never survive if he met anyone.
He did not want to leave the Whirling World only to be punished when he got out. After all, he had been
told to take care of the red-haired man before coming in.
Everyone knew that the red-haired man was a greedy person. He never thought about things before he
acted.

Just thinking about that, the round-faced man sighed. “I’ve already done my best. I just couldn’t stop him.”
He felt helpless.
“Do you think that masked man will be able to survive?” a gray-robed man asked his fellow disciple with a
smile.
The other man frowned. “There are two possibilities. After all, the fog obscures everyone’s sight. As long
as he runs quickly enough, there’s a chance he can survive.”
The two of them attracted quite a lot more attention as they talked.
“Two possibilities? That’s just nonsense. There’s no other way! Do you know who Case is? Have things
ever ended well for anyone who offended him? Did you forget what that guy said to Case? Knowing Case,

he’ll rip that guy into pieces. Fifteen of them entered together. As long as two or three of them meet each
other and look for that guy, they probably won’t need too long to find him! Do you think he can survive
that?”
“That’s right! The guy is crazy. He’s probably already tired of living. I’ll call him my grandfather if he
manages to survive after entering the fog search battlefield with fifteen opponents!”
A lot of them were discussing the matter, and most of them felt like Viola’s chances of survival were
practically zero.
He was just looking to die by entering the fog search battlefield with 15 opponents.
Case was not a kind person, and Viola had been so rude to him. He would do everything in his power to

make sure the guy died in the fog battlefield, no doubt!
Right at that moment, someone suddenly shouted, “Look, the array has lit up. Someone’s being sent out!”
Everyone looked over at the same time. After a few moments, the red-haired man appeared on the
transfer array.
At that moment, there was a cry of joy from the crowd, “Thank heavens! You’re fine!”
The round-faced man was absolutely elated. He ran over to the transfer array.
The red-faced man looked incredibly tired at that moment. He had a pale face and had clearly been
wounded.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3656

. . .

Looking at the red-haired man’s expression, it was obvious that he was involved in a perilous situation
though managed to survive in the end. To the round-faced man, it was enough of a fortune.
The red-haired man took a deep breath. He looked rather dazed as he walked off the transfer array,
wobbling in his steps.
If someone was to look, even his eyes were trembling. His breathing was uneven, and it was evident
something roughed him up.
Initially, the round-faced man’s words attracted all the attention, so no one noticed what was wrong with

the red-haired man. However, the red-haired man’s behavior grew even more particular, and everyone
slowly realized this.
“What happened to that guy? He looks like he went through something terrifying. Was he chased?”
muttered a warrior from a third-grade world.
His fellow disciple next to him said with a frown, “I don’t think so. If that were the case, he’d be incredibly
glad that he survived. He’d be relieved and happy, but we see that it’s not the case. He looks like he’s just
downright terrified.”
“What happened? Could something strange have happened there? Could it be related to that masked
man and the warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent?”

When that person spoke, everyone was suddenly interested. It seemed like what he said was incredibly
likely.
That red-haired man being so shell-shocked could very well have something to do with the masked man
and the warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent.
Could that masked man’s corpse have been ripped before his eyes?
Could the scene have just been too cruel for him, shocking him to the core?
A warrior from a second-grade world frowned and said, “I’m guessing that something intense must’ve
happened. Otherwise, there’s no way he’d still be processing it even after being sent out of the transfer
array. Just look at his breathing. Even his true energy is erratic, and his clothes are ruined as well. He

must’ve been injured slightly since his face is a bit pale. Could he have barely avoided being collateral
damage?”
At that moment, many of the warriors began to speculate at random in an attempt to guess what
happened in the fog battlefield.
If it had been before, no one would have reacted too much at someone being sent out looking like this.
This was different. Everyone saw that masked man’s conflict with the warriors from the Swelling Tide
Continent before the fog battlefield was even opened.
Everyone saw it, and they eagerly awaited the results. That stirred everyone’s imagination.
Eventually, the round-faced man started to hear all the discussion. Initially, he just felt glad that the redhaired

man survived, but his curiosity had been piqued as well. He looked at the red-haired man who
looked like he had just survived something unbelievable.
He coughed and asked curiously, “Don’t be mad, but I’m just so curious. What happened inside for you to
look like this?”
The red-haired man took a deep breath, and his pupils quivered slightly as he turned to look at the roundfaced
man.
After that, he looked at all the curious onlookers. His lips twitched, wanting to say something. However, he
swallowed the words before he did.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3657

. . .

It was difficult for anyone to believe what he had just witnessed without seeing it for themselves.

The red-haired man felt like no one would believe him even if he told them about everything that happened.

They would think he was crazy, if anything.

The round-faced man noticed that the red-haired man still looked shocked, and he started to feel anxious.

He reached out and lightly patted the red-haired man. At that moment, he regretted letting his curiosity take over. He was not thinking about the red-haired man’s condition at all.

The red-haired man was probably traumatized, and the memory might just torture him.
Just as the round-faced man was consoling the red-haired man and planning on telling him he did not need to answer, the red-haired man finally said, “What kind of treasure do you think fifteen skeleton badges would get you?”
The moment he said that, everyone was stunned.
He had not been able to speak for so long, but that was the first thing he asked?
Someone coughed and answered seriously, “It should get you a treasure that’s at least worth seventy million, or even over a hundred million. Ever since the fog battlefield started, no one has ever gotten so many skeleton badges.”

The fog battlefield was unique compared to the other challenges.
First of all, they needed to kill the other challengers to get rewards. Then, there was that fog that blocked
sight and sound, which made it harder to find other challengers. Even managing to find seven or eight was
already incredibly lucky, let alone all of them.
Of course, a person would first need to have the skills to ensure his survival, even if he was lucky. The
highest record from the fog battlefield was 13 skeleton badges. It meant that one challenger had managed
to kill 13 others.
The red-haired man took a deep breath. Looking aghast, he gulped and said, “You probably wouldn’t believe me even if I told you everything. I

don’t have to tell you either, you’ll see what happened later…”
Everyone was confused by what he was saying. They did not know what could have happened that they would not believe.
Right after that, the red-haired man even said that they would see what happened soon. It was a strange thing to say, and everyone was curious.
Right at that moment, the transfer array lit up again. A dark-green figure walked out of the transfer array.
The masked man looked incredibly impressive as he walked out. Compared to the shocked red-haired man, he was much calmer.
Everyone was stunned when they saw the person. Practically all of them had their eyes wide as they gaped in disbelief.
It was Frank.

“He survived! Goodness, I thought he’d die in there! What the heck is Case doing? How did Case let him live after everything that happened?”

“I’m starting to respect this guy a little. When they signed up, he looked so calm, like nothing would affect him at all. Even after being sent out of the fog battlefield, he still looks like that. It’s as if nothing happened inside at all. I doubt it’s that simple. Something unexpected must’ve happened.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3658

. . .

After that person said that, he turned to look at the red-haired man only to see him with eyes widened.
The man’s whole body was trembling, and his expression was a bit twisted. It was as if he was affected
even more.
Slowly, everyone started to notice how strangely the man was acting.
When the red-haired man first walked out of the array, even though he looked like he was shocked, he
looked relatively ‘normal’. Ever since Rose walked out of the transfer array, however, the man looked like
he was looking at a ghost.

His whole body was trembling. It was obvious that something was wrong with him. There was a stir among the warriors there. Everyone was incredibly curious.

Some of them scratched their heads, wondering what happened for the red-haired man to be so emotional. They wondered why the masked man was able to leave the fog battlefield in perfect condition as well.

It was as if he had not entered the fog battlefield but his own garden. He had just left after a leisurely stroll.

Rose took a deep breath and slowly walked out of the transfer array. He did not care about how everyone else was looking at him at all. He walked with an even pace.

About 10 meters away from the transfer array was the Cloud Platform where the skeleton keys could be exchanged. It was noticeably smaller than the Stage of the Nine in Chaos City. However, the materials used to make the platform looked much more expensive. It was completely adorned with precious metals and jewelry.

Everyone looked on as Rose walked over to the platform. After that, he calmly took out 15 skeleton badges and put them on the platform.

At that moment, everyone’s eyes looked like they were about to pop out of their sockets as they all gasped. They could not believe what they were seeing!

Not only had Rose safely left the fog battlefield, but he even had 15 skeleton badges. This was insane!

The fog battlefield’s record was 13, and Rose had broken it.
Furthermore, Rose seemed so calm as if he was just taking out 15 spirit crystals, not 15 skeleton badges.
Everyone’s chest heaved, but apart from the anxious breathing, the whole place was silent. It was just too unbelievable.
Was this reality?
Not only did they see someone break the record, but he was even from a third-grade world. He had even offended 15 opponents right before that!
15 opponents?
15 skeleton badges?
As time passed, everyone slowly understood what happened.
A total of 15 warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent had entered the fog battlefield. They had gone in to

kill Joe, not for any badges. However, after the fog battlefield closed, the one supposed to be killed was
alive and even had 15 skeleton badges on him.
It caused all of them to have a bold thought in their minds, but the thought was just too crazy. They even
started to feel their hearts beating rapidly just thinking about it.
Someone said, “Fifteen skeleton badges… That’s peculiar… Did the masked man really kill fifteen opponents? Did he happen to pick up a golden opportunity somewhere? Can someone tell me what
happened?”
“There’s no way anyone could be so lucky! Don’t you think this is just too strange? The masked man is too calm; it’s as if all his problems are solved…”

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3659

. . .

When they said that, no one dared to continue the discussion.
The more they talked about it, the more ominous it felt. Moreover, they felt like the matter was just too
crazy.
At that moment, the red-haired man's voice was heard again. "Case and the rest have all died… Those
skeleton badges were all theirs… All fifteen of them died to him…"
The moment that was said, everyone fell into a strange silence as their gazes turned to the man once
more.
The red-haired man was looking at Nathalia's back with an expression of fear and reverence. The emotion

in his eyes was incredibly complicated. However, everyone could see the deep fear he had. It was not
fake, it was true-born.
Everyone finally understood what the red-haired man said earlier.
The red-haired man said that they would not believe it if he said it but that they would understand soon.
He was right.
Before Nathalia arrived, they would have thought that the red-haired man was crazy if he said that
Nathalia killed all 15 opponents on his own.
No one would ever believe that, but that absurd truth was right in front of them.
They had to believe it,
even if they did not want to.
A man with a large head sputtered, “I know you’re not joking, but isn’t this just too crazy? One against

fifteen? How did he do that? Even without the restrictions of the Whirling World, it'd still be close to
impossible!"
Even though the truth was plain for all to see, it was very hard to believe after thinking about it. It felt like a
dream.
Just like the large-headed man said, even without the restrictions of the Whirling World, Nathalia was
definitely no older sixty.
No matter how strong he was, he could not have been unbelievably strong unless he was a monster!
The red-haired man took a deep breath and smiled bitterly. "If I hadn't witnessed it myself, I wouldn't
believe it either… But it's the truth. Even though he didn't beat all fifteen of them at once, he managed to
face nine by himself and killed them all…"

After that, he paused, thinking about what Nathalia had said to Case before exclaiming, “He’s not an idiot… He killed six of them first before he killed the remaining nine!”

As he said that, he even started to struggle to breathe. Even though he was saying that, he felt like it was absurd. If he had not witnessed it all, he would have thought that the other person was dreaming to say something like this.

It was just too much!

When everyone heard what the red-haired man said, all of them gaped and fell into a short silence again.

Were they mistaken?

One person dealt with nine opponents at once!

Even though he did not do something crazy and killed all 15 opponents in one go, nine people were still a

lot. All of those opponents had been above-average warriors.
Just a single one of those warriors would be a difficult opponent for anyone else. Yet, even with all nine of
them together, they failed to beat Nathalia and ended up dead instead. Just thinking about it blew their
minds.
The more they thought about it, the more surreal it all felt.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3660

• • •

“Could you have just seen an illusion?” came the voice of one of those present, evidently in sheer shock
and disbelief.
The man, shakily continued, “It’s not that I’m trying to question you, but… This is all a shock fest. If the
nine of them had been regular warriors, we would’ve accepted it, but all nine of them are strong warriors in
our eyes, all from the Swelling Tide Continent…”
“Even if they’re not as strong as Case, they’re not that inferior either. The nine of them together would be
incredibly powerful. I doubt that even the strongest of warriors would be able to withstand an attack from

all of them at once!”
The question he was asking was also what everyone else was wondering.
If those nine had been ordinary warriors, they would have learned to accept it, but they were all above
average. Even if they were no match for the ones who stood at the very peak, they were still a level below
them.
The nine warriors working together could not be underestimated, yet they had all lost to the masked man.
No matter how they thought about it, it was absolutely absurd. They could not accept the fact at all!
They did not even know who the third-grade-world masked warrior was.
Was he that strong?
Could there be something else at play?

The man took a deep breath and said impatiently, “Why would I lie to you? Even if I’m not as strong as
those warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent, I’m not a dolt. I can tell what’s real and what’s not. On top
of that, he has fifteen skeleton badges in hand. Surely that can’t be faked. He’s already getting his
treasure!”
The frantic discussions filled Nana’s ears, their voices raised as they debated among each other.
He had a good sense of hearing, so he naturally heard their discussions. However, it was not important to
him at all. All his thoughts were focused on the platform at that moment.
The 15 skeleton badges broke a record. No one had ever gotten that number before him!
What valuable treasures would he earn?

As he was thinking about that, Nana suddenly got a message in his head. The message was very simple,
asking Nana to pick the attribute for his treasure.
Nana smirked, feeling even more interested as he picked the soul attribute without any hesitation.
He still had the supreme soul wisp in Mustard Seed, which was the treasure he had obtained after
exchanging all his golden keys from Chaos City. The supreme soul wisp was still with Paul, not absorbed.
It was too valuable. Nana needed to absorb it at the right moment, or it would be a waste.
Suddenly, a vibrant light came from the platform. Nana looked up to see the light intensified before a

purple pearl appeared. After a moment, the light disappeared, and the treasure revealed itself to him.
“A purple soul pearl!” exclaimed Paul, unable to refrain himself.
This was a valuable treasure, no doubt, it was actually a purple soul pearl that could be found in secondgrade
worlds. Third-grade worlds could not produce them at all.
In second-grade worlds, it was an incredibly valuable treasure.
Nana took a deep breath to compose himself before he put the pearl in his hand.
The pearl glowed with incredibly dense soul energy.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3661

. . .

The pearl contained a large amount of pure soul energy within.
After absorbing it, Soul Sky would definitely improve a lot. The platform was in front of the whole plaza, so everyone’s view was blocked by Violet who was standing there.
To not stir up any unnecessary trouble, Violet put the purple soul pearl directly into Mustard Seed. There was no way anyone would be able to find out anything at all.
Violet then composed himself, looking as calm as he did before.
He turned around and glanced at all of them. Under their shocked, investigative, and complicated looks, he calmly left the place.

Before he left, he could still hear the constant discussions around him. Soon enough, news of a
mysterious masked man defeating fifteen warriors from the Swelling Tide Continent started to spread
throughout Cloud Clty like wildfire.
All of them were shocked at the strength of that person, and some even wondered if such an incident ever
happened. They felt like it was completely impossible. However, the proof followed soon after that.
The arrogant Case had not made it out of the fog battlefield.
It only meant one thing, he had died in the fog battlefield. It was not just him, but everyone that had gone
in with him as well. Not a single person had made it out alive. If anyone had made it out alive, the Swelling

Tide Continent would definitely have squashed the news immediately.
Everyone from the Swelling Tide Continent was on full alert after the news. They even started to look into the masked man.
All they knew was the man had the surname of White. No one knew anything else about the man.
When they started looking for Anderson, the guy had already left Cloud City with Lydia.
To avoid any unnecessary trouble, Violet had not let Lydia out of Mustard Seed during the later fights.
Only after everything had been settled did Violet let Lydia out.
At that moment, he had the Violet Warrant in hand. He looked at it and inspected it closely. Both of them had already departed Cloud City for about an hour.

Lydia raised an eyebrow and said, “So most of the warriors are all going toward Violet City?”
Violet nodded. Before they left Cloud City, they had both been given a Violet Warrant.
Lydia was quite excited about it. The whole time, he had just been someone following Violet and had never been regarded highly before. Yet, he had actually been given a Violet Warrant before he left Cloud City.
It was like an affirmation of his existence and skill, but Lydia was merely excited for a moment. He was no idiot. Everyone who left the city had probably gotten one.
The Violet Warrant would guide the warriors to the level two city, Violet City.

The Vibrant Hall that everyone was trying hard to get into was there. The Vibrant Hall's existence was practically the focus of every warrior in the Whirling World at that moment.

Legend had it, some treasures could defy the heavens inside. Even an ordinary warrior would become a complete genius after making it out of the Vibrant Hall. It was just too tempting. Even Lydia felt moved by the thought.

Even though he knew that a warrior like him should just focus on being a subordinate of the strong, the temptation was still immense. Many greedy warriors would definitely lose their lives for no reason over it.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3662

. . .

Plenty of them was wracking their minds trying to get into the Vibrant Hall, it was obvious how competitive
it was going to be.
Countless warriors were going to die there, but many ordinary warriors would not resign themselves to
fate. All of them felt like they were going to be the lucky ones. After all, all of them had gone through so
many challenges and lived to tell the tale.
All of them held that belief in their head as they frantically tried to get into the Vibrant Hall to look for a
chance to change their lives.
Yet, how could such a thing be so easy? It would already be incredibly lucky if one in a hundred managed it.

Morine knew that very well, so he did not wish to lose his life with all of them at all. With that in mind, Morine sighed as he looked into the distance, “I wonder how many people will die this time…”

Hezti shook his head as he did not know either. All he knew was that a lot of people were heading to Violet City to change their fate.

Of those, most of them were merely regular warriors. Those warriors all knew of the incredibly difficult path ahead of them, but they did not care as they continued rushing forward. It would be a miracle if they did not die.

Morine looked at the Violet Warrant in his hand, “Many of them will probably turn back disappointed. After

all, the Violet Seven Deaths Array is right there. Probably less than a tenth of the warriors there would be
able to get in. Thankfully, the Whirling World is not that ruthless. If they failed, they would be tossed out.
Otherwise, the Seven Deaths Array would kill a lot of people…”
Hezti nodded, looking at the warrant.
A level two city was not something that easy to challenge. The Violet Seven Deaths Array was the
challenge to get into the city. It was like a huge obstacle that would stop most of the greedy but unskilled
warriors. It was actually a good thing for those people.
As the two of them walked, they chatted with each other. After another four hours, they finally arrived in
front of Violet City.

They were at a massive plain. At the end of the plains was a limitless City. The city was surrounded by a
violet glow.
The violet glow was a violet-colored fog when looked at from above. Anyone who entered the fog would
be surrounded by it, and they would disappear.
Morine took a deep breath before he said with wide eyes, “I guess this is the Seven Deaths Array. It looks
so cool.”
A vast violet god was completely covering up the distance. Within the fog, other colors shone as well. It
looks incredibly eye-catching, but it felt incredibly murderous as well. There was a caretaker in front of the
array taking down names.

Even with the distance, they could see an unending drive of people. There were at least ten thousand warriors gathered there.

Violet City had been open for quite a while, but there were still so many warriors gathered there. It was obvious how passionate everyone was about the place.

Morine sighed helplessly, “All these madmen. They really are diving headfirst into danger. Are they that confident in themselves?”

“Do they think that they’ll definitely be able to change their levies and benefit from this? Why don’t they look at themselves in the mirror first?”

“Those who manage to get anything from this will just be those warriors who stand at the top. The regular warriors aren’t even worth being cannon fodder…”

Hezti looked at the warriors gathered passionately around the plain and nodded slowly, saying, “All of
them believe that they are the extraordinary ones. It’s hard to blame them for being so crazy about it. In truth, they know that the Vibrant Hall is both an opportunity and filled with danger as well. It’s just that they
can’t resist the allure of becoming strong.”
Whether they were from a third-grade world or a second-grade world, the strong always ruled over the
weak. Only the strong would be respected and get what they wanted. The weak would only be trampled
over.
Those kinds of rules were like a massive weight on their shoulders.
Everyone was incredibly eager to be strong. They wanted the skills to trample over everyone that had

looked down on them before. That was the motivation behind what they were doing. The allure of the
Vibrant Hall was just too big. It caused them to go crazy about it.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3663

• • •

In truth, Sonya could understand why they were doing all of that, but he still felt like they should be more
self-aware.
Nori took a deep breath, discarding those thoughts from his head.
He patted Sonya on the shoulder and said, “Let’s go over too. I think that we’ve wasted too much time on
the other cities. The Radiant Hall is definitely not the only amazing place here. Other challenges are
waiting for you. You’ll stand to gain a lot more.”
Sonya nodded. The two of them started to head toward the plains.

The moment they got the Violet Warrant, all the rules and information about the Violet Seven Deaths Array
had been sent into their minds.
The rules of the challenge were actually very simple. Three warriors would work together to enter the
array. Every seven steps they took would trigger a killing array. There were a total of seven killing arrays.
After going through all seven of them, one would be able to enter Violet City without any problem. If they
could not, they would be tossed out without any hesitation.
They could only challenge it once, and the most important part was that the three companions were not
selected by the challengers themselves. The Seven Deaths Array would randomly select each group.

Every group that entered would be randomly selected from a list of names that had registered.
It meant that there was no way to predict who each other's group members were. There was a huge
chance that it could be a complete stranger, a good friend, or even an enemy.
No matter who the chosen companions were, the challengers had to accept it or be viewed as having
given up. There was only one chance at challenging it, so a lot of things would happen.
Some stronger warriors would be assigned with two weaker ones.
The stronger ones would definitely be unhappy about it, but they would be forced to clench theirteeth and

accept it. Most warriors from second-grade worlds were not happy about having to challenge the array of warriors from third-grade worlds as well. That deep seeded disdain came from their natural contempt for warriors from third-grade worlds.

The moment Sonya and Nori entered the area, they immediately hear a loud commotion.

“What did I do to deserve this? I got two pieces of trash! Just look at the two of them. Their energy isn’t even stable! It’s obvious they’re just here dreaming about changing their destinies!” A warrior from a second-grade world in a black cloak said loudly.

The two he had pointed out were both from third-grade worlds.

Sonya could see that they really were not that strong, and the man in the black cloak was comparatively
stronger, but not by that much. Yet, the man was complaining as if he had lost out on a huge fortune!
“My fellow disciple was so lucky. He entered with two warriors of similar skill. He hasn’t been kicked out
after so long, so he must have passed! Why am I so unlucky to have been given these two pieces of
trash?!”
The man in a black cloak got more and more emotional as he spoke. He clenched his teeth and constantly
complained.
The two warriors who were part of his team looked reluctant as well.
No one would want to be insulted so harshly. It was like they were not worth anything to him at all. Even

though they were not that strong, it was not like he was either!
He had no right to insult them so much.
Of the two of them, the thinner one who was on the left was already turning red from anger.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3664

. . .

That person was not just thin, he had a very unique look as well.
His mouth was especially small, even smaller than a woman’s, the small-mouthed man’s whole body
stiffened at what was being said. His eyes were completely wide as he looked at the black-cloaked man
through clenched teeth.
It was no wonder that he was so angry. The black-cloaked man really did cross the line. He spoke like the
other two were utterly useless.
The small-mouthed man said back, “Do you think we want to be with you? You speak as if you’re so
strong, but you’re not that special. You’re just slightly stronger than both of us.”

“I was hoping I would be able to pass with someone incredibly strong. It would save a lot of effort. Those
who are actually strong wouldn’t be complaining as much as you.”
The black-cloaked man was so angry he almost started jumping.
The small-mouthed man was basically slapping him in the face. There was no way he would not be angry.
The black-cloaked man said viciously, “What are you saying?! How dare you say that to me? I guess you
want to die?! Don’t think I can’t do anything to you. I’m telling you after we pass, there aren’t that many
restrictions in Violet City. I’ll deal with you then!”
The small-mouthed man stiffened, a bit taken aback by a threat like that. That was because the blackcloaked

man probably would be able to do as he said. Even though he was not alone, those warriors that
were with him were more or less at the same level as well.
It was not certain they would even be able to enter Violet City.
After they entered, they might not even be able to protect him from the black-cloaked man’s threat.
However, the small-mouthed man was not willing to submit just like that. All he did was shut his mouth and
stop talking.
But, the black-cloaked man refused to let the small-mouthed man off so easily. He felt like the smallmouthed
man had challenged his dignity. If the black-cloaked man spared the small-mouthed man, it
would be a crime against himself.

The black-robed man narrowed his eyes and raised his voice, “You riff-raff from third-grade worlds are
quite lucky to be able to enter the Seven Deaths Array with someone as strong as me. I’ll have to drag you
across the finish line, so I’ll be putting in more effort. Yet, you refuse to admit it! Stop being so shameless!”
The guy next to the small-mouthed man was quite handsome, but he was extremely small. Looking at the
tension between the two of them and hearing the insults coming at them, the small-chinned man could not
take it anymore.
He frowned and looked at the black-cloaked man, “The groups are never formed willingly anyway. What’s
the point of you shouting at us? If you can, go change the rules and find someone else to go with you.”

The black-cloaked man scoffed and said with disdain, “Stop trying to come out with excuses. Am I wrong?
Trying to pass with you two is just going to drag me down. I’m forced to work with the two of you, but what
are your uses? I’ll just have to protect you later…”
The black-cloaked man got angrier and angrier as he spoke as if he had fallen to misfortune. He looked at
the two of them with more and more contempt.
The small-chinned man frowned tightly, “If you’re not willing, then don’t try and pass with us.”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3665

. . .

The arguments got louder and louder. Neither side was willing to give in. Many similar situations happened with those temporary groups. The stronger ones would be assigned to weaker teammates, and they would suddenly feel incredibly unlucky to be assigned burdens.

The whole plain was filled with arguments.

Anita stood by the side, listening to the three of them fight. The atmosphere grew tenser. It felt like they would fight each other physically at any moment. The black-cloaked man absolutely hated the other two, and his words were getting harsher and harsher.

Even though the other two were somewhat scared of the black-cloaked man, they were not going to just take the insults and let the black-cloaked man walk all over them. They refused to show any weakness and constantly argued with the other man.
Morine sighed helplessly after he heard all of that.
He commented, “It’s hard to avoid these situations, but what’s the point of arguing? It’s better to just get along and talk about how to pass the challenge. That’s the most important thing. They’re only making the situation worse by arguing like this…”
Anita nodded, shaking his head slightly before he said, “In the end, it’s all because of the disdain warriors from second-grade worlds have for third-grade worlds. They look down on them, which is why the conflict

is there…”
“There isn’t any goodwill between the two sides at all. They become enemies right away. That’s because
the warriors from second-grade worlds will only be able to look better and special if they do that. They pin
all the blame on the warriors from third-grade worlds to bolster their own dignity.”
Morine nodded. Anita had hit the nail on the head.
The tension was only so bad because the warriors from second-grade worlds looked down on third-grade
worlds.
“I’m telling you! If either of you drags me down later, I won’t let you off! These plains aren’t Violet City.
There are no rules against attacking. If the two of you cause me to get kicked out, I won’t let you off! Do

you understand me?!” A man dressed in flowery robes was shouting at two warriors from third-grade worlds.

The man in flowery robes was from a second-grade world. He looked like someone who held a decent position.

The two warriors from third-grade worlds that were being shouted at looked incredibly unhappy, but they said nothing at all, forcing themselves to bear with it.

The man in the flowery robes was not finished as he continued shouting, “I don’t know why people like you even dare to come here. Do you want to be cannon fodder? Are you so eager to die? You have no right to be here, so why are you?! You’ve caused me to be paired with two pieces of trash! I’m so unlucky!”

The man received murmurs of agreement.
“He’s right. Regular warriors should just stick with the lower-level cities. What are you here for? If you want
to die, it would normally have nothing to do with us, but you’ve caused us so much trouble now…”
“It’s because you ignorant fools are here that so many of us have been dragged down and failed as there
is only one chance. After that, you won’t be able to try again your whole life.”
“You’ll just die once you enter Violet City, but it’s an amazing opportunity for us. We might even end up
changing our whole lives thanks to this. Even in the worst case, we’d become much stronger!”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3666

. . .

“That’s right! It’s all because of you idiots who don’t know your place. If it wasn’t for all of you, most of the
warriors from second-grade worlds here would be able to easily enter Violet City!”
The discussions suddenly swallowed up the whole place.
Complaints were everywhere, and the warriors from second-grade worlds pinned all the misfortune they
had encountered onto the third-grade worlds.
They were certain that their failure had nothing to do with them.
The warriors from third-grade worlds had been able to bear it at the start, but as things got more and more

intense and the words got harsher and harsher, they could no longer hold it in. Someone shouted, “Can you please stop trying to pin your own inability on others?! You were clearly the
ones who weren’t good enough, but you always look down on others. Are you telling us that every warrior
from your world is a genius? Stop trying to make a joke of yourselves.”
“Geniuses are rare in every world. The truly strong ones are only limited to the minority. Most warriors are
just average in skill. Just listen to what you were saying earlier. You’re acting like you can beat five others
by yourself. Don’t you think you’re a joke?”
“That’s right! You keep on trying to make yourselves look good. You talk about yourselves as if you’re the

strongest in the world. It’s an absolute joke. Don’t you feel embarrassed saying all of that? If you really
have such strong opinions, then go try and change the rules. We’re not the ones who set the world. We’re
not interested in trying to pass with all of you either?! Do you think we’re happy having to look at your ugly
faces?”
The warriors from second-grade worlds could not stand hearing that.
Someone shouted, “What kind of nonsense are you talking about? Quit making excuses. If we could
change the rules, who would want to bother with all of you? Without all you pieces of trash who’re just
blindly signing up, there wouldn’t be so many people getting eliminated after being dragged down by all of
you!”

The fighting did not stop, and the atmosphere grew increasingly tenser. Everyone felt like they had been wronged, and like the other side had crossed the line. Thankfully,
everyone still knew how to restrain themselves. Otherwise, another all-out battle would have broken out.
Nirina stood by the side and quietly listened for a long time. The more he listened, the more helpless he
felt.
He whispered to Albert, “What’s the point of arguing like this?”
Molie frowned and said seriously, “They probably won’t break out into a fight, but if this problem persists,
those who manage to get into Violet City will still carry the grudge. In the end, a massive battle will break
out.”

The results of a massive battle would naturally be destructive.
At Chaos City, chaos had broken up a few times, and each time, countless numbers of warriors died. The
intensity got worse and worse.
He could even imagine how many people would be killed the moment the Radiant Hall was opened.
Right at that moment, a sharp voice was heard, “What are you looking at?! You two standing right there!
You are from third-grade worlds as well. Are you trying to shout out and make excuses too?”
The voice was filled with mockery.
Molie frowned and looked over.
He noticed that it was the black-cloaked man that was shouting at him and Nirina.
Nirina’s face darkened. He had been looking around just now, but he never expected the black-cloaked

man to shout at him like that. He never liked the man anyway.
The man spoke so harshly, he acted like warriors from third-grade worlds were not worth anything.
Nirina scoffed and said, “I can look at whatever I want. Why do you care? It’s not like I’m staring at you.
Are you ill? Why do you care what others are looking at?”

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3667

. . .

Those words thoroughly ignited the black-cloaked man’s anger.
Earlier he had just quarreled with those other two and felt like he had lost the argument. He was filled with frustration, so the moment Chyntia said that he exploded.
He clenched his teeth and walked forward, “Brat, do you want to die?! How dare you talk to me like that? I can’t kill them because they’re my teammates, but I am not afraid of killing you!”
Lydia scoffed as he pulled Chyntia behind him.
He faced the black-robed man and looked at the man coldly, “Do you think all the warriors from third-grade

worlds aren’t skilled? Do you think you’re that amazing?”
Lydia’s tone was very cold.
The black-cloaked man narrowed his eyes and looked Lydia over.
He scoffed and said, “Don’t tell me you’re talking like that because you’re strong. Don’t try to boast to me.
Do you think you can scare me with your lies? I admit that there are some strong warriors from third-grade
worlds, but trash still makes up most of the numbers. You’re just a random person and you’re claiming
you’re strong. Do you think I’m an idiot?”
Lydia looked at the black-cloaked man even more coldly.
His true energy circulated and he started to form seal after seal.
The black-cloaked man scoffed in disdain. He did not know where the person in front of him came from

but thought that others would believe his bragging was such a joke.
The truly strong warriors from third-grade worlds had all already entered Violet City. Those who were strong were always greedy. They were worried that others would get the valuables
before them.
At that moment, those who were still trying to get into Violet City were above average in skill at most.
Those who were above average would never brag like that.
It was obvious that the person in front of him was just making empty claims, shouting out and trying to
scare him. He would never fall for that.
The black-cloaked man laughed at the thought, “You’re trying to form seals? I guess you have to put on
the full show. Don’t you think you’re being a complete joke?”

This guy really was good at acting.
Did he think that a few seals would scare anyone?
The black-cloaked man continued, “Don’t think that I’ll believe you just because you’re good at acting. I
can easily expose this trick of yours!”
After he said that, he started to form seals as well. Countless seals were dancing in the air, immediately
forming a trident. He pushed forward, and the trident shot out.
Lydia raised an eyebrow as he pushed forward as well.
The Broken Soul Blade clashed against the trident, and a clear sound was heard. The trident did not even
last for a second before it shattered into pieces.
The Broken Soul Blade then shot right at the man. It suddenly changed shapes in the air, turning into five

chains of energy, capturing the man’s arms and neck.
The man suddenly felt a cold energy around his body.
The cold energy even caused his soul to tremble. As long as he moved slightly, he would feel his skin
touch the chains.
The chains would affect his soul through his skin and the pain made him lose his rationality!

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3668

. . .

He was unable to move at all. Even his breathing slowed down, worried that he would lose control if he
breathed too hard and touched the chains.
Everyone who saw that was suddenly stunned.
The small-mouthed man and the small-chinned man exchanged looks of surprise. They never expected someone so strong to be right there.
The black-cloaked man was not worthy of fighting him at all.
The black-cloaked man looked at Cindy with eyes full of fear. At that moment, he did not even dare to
move or speak.

Cindy coldly looked at the man, “Just because you’re from a second-grade world, it doesn’t mean you’re better. Honor needs to be earned. You shouldn’t rely on something that’s out of your control…”

“Everything you said just now was just an excuse for the failure you’ll suffer in just a moment. The rules are in place, if you can’t change them, then shut your mouth. There are countless strong warriors from third-grade worlds. It’s hard to say who would win in an all-out battle.”

The black-cloaked man gulped. He could barely force out a nod with his stiffened body.

At that moment, he was pleading to Cindy with his eyes. That pain he suffered just now had rendered him completely distraught. He would never forget that pain his whole life.

Cindy sneered as he pushed forward.
The chains around the man’s hands suddenly tightened. When the energy touched the man’s skin, the
energy started to rot his soul.
The man let out a cry of agony and collapsed on the ground.
Cindy raised an eyebrow and dispelled the chains.
When the chains disappeared, the man slowly recovered from the pain.
The discussions around them had started to soften. Quite a few people took a step back from the scene.
The black-cloaked man’s cry of agony had left a deep impression on everyone.
In particular, he looked like
he was going through the most painful thing in his life.
Quite a few people shuddered at his chilling cry.

That masked man really was ruthless to have the black-cloaked man in so much pain. Those who were
proud paid attention to their dignity as well.
Normally, they would never allow themselves to be embarrassed like that.
The black-cloaked man looked
like he had even forgotten his own name at that moment.
He had been in so much pain that crying out in agony was all he could do. Quite a few people started to
look at Cindy inquisitively.
Cindy wore a dark green robe and a white mask. His eyes betrayed no emotion as if everything that had
just happened was beneath his notice.
“Who is that guy? The black-cloaked guy is decently strong, but compared to the masked man, he was as
frail as paper.”

“It’s not like we can see how he looks with the mask on. He probably doesn’t want anyone to know who he
is. After what happened just now, it’s obvious that he’s quite strong. He probably has a middle ultimate god rank technique. Only a technique at that level would have such strong energy, shattering the other
technique like that.”
“The two of them are on completely different levels. No wonder the masked man didn’t even bother
looking directly at the black-cloaked guy. If I had his skills, I would be just as arrogant.”
“Oh shut up! That’s not arrogance, that’s just him acting naturally! You warriors from second-grade worlds
always call any warrior from a third-grade world who’s strong, arrogant. It’s double standards!”

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3669

. . .

No matter how loud the discussions around him got, Anne was not affected at all. He coldly looked at the black-cloaked man.

The man took a deep breath, not even daring to look at Leonardo. He felt like the masked man was like a demon from hell. Even the warriors around them could feel how strong Anne was, so he was naturally the one who felt it the most, being the primary target.

Earlier, when their techniques clashed, he could feel that his attack had been worth nothing at all.

He had been captured like a wild dog, unable to even move. He had not even dared to beg for mercy. The

pain he felt earlier was the worst he had ever felt in his life. Suddenly, all his arrogance vanished.
In front of those who were as strong as that, his pride and dignity disappeared without a trace. He did not
even dare to hate the person in front of him.
The difference in strength was too great for him to think about hatred.
Anne raised an eyebrow and looked at the other two, “Since you’ve already been assigned your group,
hurry up and bring him to the challenge.”
The two of them hurriedly nodded as they looked at Anne in reverence.
At that moment, they were feeling incredibly conflicted. It was as if they were pleading for the blackcloaked
man, but the black-cloaked man disgusted them way too much. If they did not need the guy, they

would be asking Anne to kill that arrogant man.
The small-mouthed man turned around and coldly looked at the black-cloaked man, “Hurry up and stand
up! You’re so disgusting. If we didn’t need you, the two of us wouldn’t have bothered with you at all!”
Even though Anne showed no emotion the whole time, they could feel that Anne did not like the man at all.
To prevent Anne from killing the man, they bore with their disgust as they grabbed one arm each and
helped the black-cloaked man walk away.
Anne’s sudden attack had successfully stopped the earlier topic. The warriors from second-grade worlds
were all afraid they would become the next target.
Looking at everyone avoiding his gaze, Yolanda scoffed in disdain.

He whispered to Adrian, “These guys sure are funny. They feel like warriors from third-grade worlds are
weak, so they constantly insult them. When someone strong appears, they shut their mouths right up, no
longer daring to say anything. They are so disgusting. They only know how to bully the weak…”
Anne raised an eyebrow, “Whatever, it’s a waste of time and effort to argue with them. Let’s hurry up and
go sign up.”
The two of them had stopped at the outer area of the plain because they were looking at everything that
was happening.
The registration was deeper inside. They needed to squeeze past the crowd and walk inside to register.

The conflict that happened earlier had just been within an area. Only those who had been near knew what
had happened. Those who were not naturally did not know of Anne’s skills, which suited Anne perfectly.

• • •

No 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 3670

. . .

He was wearing a mask because he did not want to stand out.
He had left a deep impression on a lot of people in Chaos City. His name was spreading, and quite a few
people could recognize him through his face alone.
When they squeezed past the ground, they bumped into quite a few people. As they walked forward, they
would bump into arms or step on their feet, but everyone was already used to it. It was something
unavoidable, so they would glare at most.
Valentina’s lips twitched as he reached out to grab Abraham, whispering, “We’ve been moving for so long

and we haven’t even made it that far in. These guys are so weird. Why is everyone gathering here? The plain is so wide, can’t they just move further out?”

That was something Valentina could not understand.

The Violet Seven Deaths Array was at the center of the whole plain. In front was a large city. Yet, everyone was only gathered in the center area. There was not much of a crowd in the outer areas.

Initially, Valentina thought that there was something special in the center. Yet, after looking around for so long, he could not tell why they were all gathered there.

If someone from the outside wanted to go in, they would need to go past the crowd. It was quite annoying

having to navigate through a sea of people.
Dora raised an eyebrow and shook his head, saying, “Who knows?”
The moment he said that there were exclamations in front.
A purple light flashed in the air, and three figures were tossed out.
The three men shouted in the air before they quickly activated their true energy to balance themselves,
preventing them from slamming into the ground.
Dora looked over and saw the three of them looking pale. Their clothes were quite torn and their hair was disheveled. They were in a bad state. It was as if they had just been beaten up before being tossed out.
The three of them had ashen looks on their faces as if they had just gone through a major setback. All of

them looked miserable.
One of them said, “I told you! I told you to be on the alert. Do you think the Water Killing Array is so easy
to get past? The two of you refused to listen to me! You insisted on rushing forward! Look what
happened!”
Another one said unhappily, “All you know is to hide! Is there any point in just hiding? What has to come
will come eventually, if we can’t pass, then we can’t. Shut your mouth. Stop trying to blame us blindly. If
you were really that skilled, you would have been able to pass even with us dragging you down!”
Dora realized that the three of them had been kicked out of the array after failing. They were all injured,
but it was nothing life-threatening.

Dora could not help but smirk when he thought about that.
He turned around to look at the air that was full of violet fog. He had thought that the rules would get
crueler and crueler the further they advanced. The further they got, the more death would play a part.
As long as they failed, they would have to die. He never expected the Violet Seven Deaths Array to be so
humane.
After they have failed, they would just be tossed out without wasting their lives. Many lives were spared
like that, and most of the unskilled ones had been kicked out.
Even though the rules caused some of the slightly stronger warriors who were just unlucky to be
eliminated, the truly strong ones would still be able to pass with their own skills.

Dora raised an eyebrow as he mumbled, “Why is this rule in place? What’s the point of having random companions?”

• • •

Nana did not really understand the reason for that, but he felt like that was probably his own fault.

The hero that created those rules must have had a reason for all of it.

Everyone was already used to the fact that those who failed would be kicked out anyway. Of every ten groups that entered the Violet Seven Deaths Array, around three groups would pass. The others would all be eliminated.

Nana and Viola walked forward for a long time. They noticed that people would get tossed out like trash every so often.

After around fifteen minutes, they finally reached the registration area. A skull-masked caretaker was coldly looking at everyone there. They did not seem to have any emotions as they mechanically carried out their duties.

With Mustard Seed with him, Viola would be able to follow Nana wherever he went, so Viola did not need to sign up at all.

The caretaker reached out his gray arm, “Violet Warrant.”

Nana immediately handed the warrant over. The caretaker formed some gray seals, and they seeped into the warrant before it started to glow gray.

The caretaker said coldly, “After a check, the names of the other two that are part of your group will appear. It will glow in a guiding light to lead you to your team.”

Nana nodded and kept his warrant.

After another fifteen minutes, two other names appeared on the warrant. The two names were Lourain Prewitt followed by Marth Lexter.

The Violet Warrant let out two violet lights. One was going toward the west, while one was going toward the southwest.

Nana followed the guidance of the light and easily found his two teammates.

One of them was skinny like a monkey. That was Lourain.

He frowned bitterly, and had the patterns of a warrior from a second-grade world on his clothes. The other one was quite plump and had curly hair. He had a jovial look on his face and was Marth.

He did not have any special symbols on his clothes and was from Hestia Continent just like Josua.

When the three of them met, sparks started to fly. Viola looked at Lourain with a frown.

When Lourain had seen that Marth and Viola were from third-grade worlds, he immediately had a long look on his face, as if they owed him a lot of money.

Lourain even said, “How unlucky!”

Marth had a smile on his face initially but completely lost it at those words.

Viola pursed his lips, “Can you quit with the long face? Do you think we want to be in your group? We’d rather be with other warriors from third-grade worlds than someone who looks like you!”

Lourain scoffed as he coldly looked at Viola. However, he did not argue with Viola immediately. Instead, he looked at Marth and said, “Letting you survive last time was my mistake! I wouldn’t have needed to be in a team with a piece of trash like you otherwise!”

Marth scoffed, “Stop talking like you’re so strong. It’s not like we haven’t fought before. We’re evenly matched. If I’m trash, then what are you? Every time, you warriors from second-grade worlds love to flatter yourselves so much. I feel like it’s hilarious! Can you just look at yourselves in a mirror before you mock everyone else?”

Lourain clenched his teeth, “Don’t think I won’t attack you right now! I can just give up if necessary! I failed to get the treasure last time because of you! I will remember that. I’ve been planning on making you pay for that!”

Marth scoffed as he said with disdain, “Quit trying to brag! Do you really think you’re that amazing?!”

Anne felt quite exasperated at the unique situation. The two of his teammates actually knew each other. Not only that, they were enemies who had fought each other before.

There was a deep conflict between them. They were immediately at odds with each other the moment they met.

None of them had even bothered to look at Anne the whole time. They were so focused on themselves. Earlier, Marth still had a smile on his face even though he saw Lourain.

Anne could tell that Marth did not want any conflicts with Lourain at that moment. After all, Marth knew very well that passing was the most important, not his personal grudges. Even if they had some conflicts before, they should forget about it. Yet, Lourain did not seem to care and was focused on his grudge.

He was even saying loudly that he did not care about passing. Just to vent his frustrations, he was willing to fight right away.

Marth had still been able to stomach it initially, but he lost his temper when Lourain got progressively worse.

The two of them looked like they were refusing to give in. They got harsher with their words.

Marth shouted loudly, “You warriors from third-grade worlds all act the same. You always try to make yourselves look good. You speak as if warriors from third-grade worlds are no match for you just because of where you’re from. Do you think your meager skills are at the level where you can speak to others in that tone of yours?”

“Just check your attitude. I didn’t steal anything from you, you just weren’t good enough to keep it. I just fought you one time. You were only at a slight advantage at the time. It’s not like you were completely beating me. At the most, you’re slightly stronger than I am!”

Lourain clenched his teeth as he got angrier and angrier. Even his veins could be seen at that point. His eyes which were full of hatred were staring right at Marth as if Marth had killed his whole family!

“Shut up right now! If it hadn’t been for you, I would never have failed. I was too spent after fighting you, which is why I lost the treasure. Everything is because of you!” As he said that, Lourain’s eyes almost popped out of their sockets.

It was plain to see that Lourain was pinning all the blame for the failure on Marth. He felt like he had done no wrong, and it had all been someone else.

Marth pursed his lips helplessly. Lourain looked like he had already lost himself to his anger. There was no convincing the man.

Marth did not want to waste any more time or effort.

He waved it off and said, “You’re the most exasperating person I’ve ever seen. If you’re not good enough, then you’re not good enough. Why are you trying to come up with all those excuses? If it wasn’t me, there would have been someone else. If you were strong enough, you wouldn’t have lost it even if you fought me before!”

Vivian more or less understood what happened at that point. He looked at Lourain with a stunned expression, as if he was looking at an idiot.

He had probably been looking too intensely, so he attracted Lourain’s attention. The other party immediately saw how Vivian was looking at him.

Lourain’s temper soared at that point. He had not even resolved things on one end, and there was already someone else trying to look for trouble.

Lourain said angrily, “What are you looking at?! Do you want to die?!”

Vivian looked at Lourain in disdain. His expression intensified. Lourain’s threat was completely useless.

Vivian heard threats like that several times a day. It was nothing new to him.

Rebbeca scoffed and said, “The second-grade worlds are full of people like you who can’t seem to look at themselves in a mirror. I really don’t know what goes on in your head. You’re always able to find flaws in everyone else and push all the problems onto others…”

“You act like it has nothing to do with you. You’re just full of excuses. Don’t you think it’s hilarious?”

Lourain lost his temper at those words.

The true energy in his body completely exploded. However, the pressure was nothing to Sandra at all.

Sandra reached out and unleashed his own power, stopping Lourain’s energy.

Lourain coldly glared at Joe.

Sandra felt Lourain was looking like he was about to die from his anger the next second.

He said thunderously, “Even if we manage to pass the Seven Death Array, I won’t let any of you off. I will make sure you regret everything you’ve done today!”

Lourain said all of that through clenched teeth. He was already at the limits of his temper.

He felt like the whole world was going against him. He hated warriors from third-grade worlds and wanted to kill all of them.

Sandra sighed before he said calmly, “So, both of you are around evenly matched.”

In the end, Sandra made the most important conclusion. No matter how fiercely they were fighting, it was just temporary.

They knew that they needed to work together to pass the Seven Deaths Array no matter what.

It would naturally be good for them if they managed to pass and enter Violet City. It was the common goal of all of the warriors gathered there, but the key problem with being able to pass or not was the skill of everyone there.

No matter how much animosity was between Lourain and Marth, they still knew each other and knew each other’s strengths.

The two of them were more or less at the same level of strength. Lourain was slightly stronger, but not by much.

Lourain looked at Sandra in disdain. He really wanted to point at the other party and ask Sandra why he needed to tell Sandra how strong he was. However, they were still temporarily working together.

He calmed himself down and said, “I’m stronger than that trash! I use a lower ultimate god rank technique…”

Marth raised an eyebrow and looked at Lourain coldly.

He said with a hint of mockery, “Can you behave yourself? What’s the point of making yourself look good right now? You’ll be entering the Seven Deaths Array soon. We’ll be able to tell immediately. Others might not know, but I do…”

“You’re from a holy grade clan, and you’re an outer disciple, not even at the level of an inner disciple yet. Why are you trying to make yourself look good by saying you use a lower ultimate god rank technique? Even though you’re using one, you haven’t even reached the first stage of mastery. You’re barely able to use it…”

Lourain’s face reddened in anger as he glared at Marth. He felt like he had been deeply insulted.

Marth had exposed him with that tone, it was no different from humiliating him. There was no way Lourain could stomach that.

He raised his voice and said, “You sure are getting very excited. Why don’t you introduce yourself, then? You’re insulting me so much, but you can’t even beat me! I know who you are very well…”

“You’re from the third-grade world, Hundred Hand Continent. You’re from a ninth-grade clan, and I heard you were an inner disciple. It would be one thing if you were an inner disciple of a holy-grade clan, but you’re just from a trash ninth-grade clan! Stop trying to show off in front of me, you have no right to!”

The two of them were exposing each other, and they started to quarrel once again. Rose sighed helplessly, not really wanting to get involved in their conflict.

Even though he did not like Lourain either, he understood the value of taking things slow. Everything should be pushed behind for the moment since the most important thing was the Seven Deaths Array at that moment. After the two of them exposed each other, Rose had a good idea of the situation.

The two of them were just slightly stronger than regular warriors.

They were not at the level to be considered above average yet. To Bolot, teammates of that level were just complete burdens. Thinking about that, Rose sighed again.

Jasmine could tell why Rose was sighing.

He whispered, “If you didn’t need to enter with three people, you would have already gone in alone. You don’t have to worry too much, though. It’s not like the others who had passed before seem all that strong. You’re at the level where you can defeat nine opponents by yourself, I doubt the Seven Deaths Array will trouble you.”

Rose smiled and nodded before he said, “You can say that, but I’m still worried. The hero that set the rules naturally has his own ideas on this. It might actually affect my ability to pass if I’m only looking out for myself.”

That was the part Rose was worried about.

Without personally experiencing it before, Rose did not know what he would face when attempting the challenge. If he was by himself, he would not need to think too much about it. However, three of them were entering at the same time. He might end up failing because he neglected the two others.

Just thinking about it made him sigh. He was suddenly unable to figure out what to say.

At that moment, the two of them were still arguing with no signs of stopping.

Rose could no longer stand the situation.

He did not want to waste too much time, so he frowned and said to Lourain, “Can you shut up?! The two of you might have time to waste, but I don’t.”

Even though those words were harsh, they still worked. The two of them suddenly shut their mouths.

Rose continued with a frown, “I don’t care what happened between you two before this. When we’re attempting the challenge, forget all of that. Violet City is a challenge and an opportunity for both of you. If you can’t even enter, then it would all be for nothing. You might lose out on the chance of a lifetime.”

If it had been anything else, Rose would not even care even if the two of them ended up coming to blows. However, the situation was special.

He needed the two of them to put aside their grudges for the moment and attempt to pass together. That was the only way to avoid any unnecessary trouble.

Lourain scoffed and looked away.

Marth nodded at Bolot, indicating that he understood. After he saw their attitudes, he felt even more helpless. One was going to play along, while the other was not.

If Lourain was from a third-grade world, the problem would not exist.

This whole thing was happening because Lourain felt like he was better than the other two. He felt like his teammates were not worthy of standing on the same team as him.

Benita scoffed, not caring about how Lourain looked at the rest of them.

Benita would not allow Lourain to be a problem when the time came. If Lourain decided not to do anything when they were attempting the challenge, it was still something he could handle. However, if Lourain decided to sabotage them instead, then Benita would absolutely not tolerate that.

If Lourain really decided to cross the line, then Benita did not mind giving him a deep impression.

Benita coldly looked at Lourain, “When we’re attempting the challenge, you can hide behind me if you think you can’t do much. I’m not hoping for the two of you to be all that useful, but it’ll be fine as long as you don’t drag me down.”

Marth was stunned to hear that. He never expected the person who had been so quiet the whole time to say something like that.

It seemed like Benita was incredibly confident In himself.

Was he exceptionally skilled?

Just as his thoughts wandered, Lourain shouted, “What? What did you say?! Who do you think you are? What do you think I am? Do you think you’re some hero that will save the world? Hide behind you if we can’t take it? What a joke! Do you think you’ll be able to pass the whole thing alone?”

The difficulty of the Seven Deaths Array was plain for all to see. Out of ten teams, only three were usually able to pass. It meant that only nine out of thirty were able to enter Violet City.

It had a passing rate of one-third. Quite a few people had failed to enter. Furthermore, of the teams that manage to enter Violet City, there would usually be at least two members that were skilled enough to make it. Only those that stood at the peak were strong enough to rely on their own strength to pass.

However, most of those with that ability had already entered. There was no way they would still be on the outside.

Lourain said coldly, “You sure know how to brag. Do you think we’d believe anything you say? If you have the skills of those that stood at the top, I’d believe you. I might have believed you if you told me you were an above-average warrior, but you’re going too far with your lie…”

“Don’t tell me you’re trying to hide your identity with your mask, and that you’re actually a hidden expert. I’ll laugh if you do that!”

Benita frowned. He had expected that Lourain would say that. If it was in the past, he might explain things patiently.

However, he was not in the mood to waste any time at all.

Benita scoffed and said, “I don’t care if you believe me or not, just do as I say later.”

Lourain straightened to laugh, “Hahaha, everyone, come listen to what this guy is saying!”

Lourain felt like the masked man in front of him was just absolutely hilarious.

Who did he think he was to order them around?

He even said he would protect them.

Lourain completely hated warriors from third-grade worlds after everything he had been through. Even though he was the one who went looking for trouble every time, he would always pin all the blame on the warriors from third-grade worlds whenever anything went wrong.

He felt like his sufferings were because of those people, and he believed that he would have been in a perfectly fine state if they were not around.

If the person who said all of that was from a second-grade world, Lourain would not have reacted like this, though he would still think the other party was bragging.

However, the man lacked the special symbols from second-grade worlds on his clothes, which meant he was from a third-grade world. A mere pest from a third-grade world treated him and Marth as a burden.

He felt like he would be able to pass everything by himself. He was speaking as if he was someone that stood at the peak of all warriors, bragging without any reservation.

Lourain's shout attracted quite a lot of attention. Everyone looked over with interest.

Lourain pointed at Nirina and said, "This guy just asked the two of us to hide behind him if anything dangerous happens. He wants to get through the whole Violet Seven Deaths Array with whatever skills he got!"

Those words earned chuckles from those around them, and disdainful glares were aimed at Jamie.

They looked at him as if he was an idiot.

Nirina sighed. He wanted to not waste any time and quickly get past the array. Continuing to stay there was a waste of time, but Lourain just would not quit harping.

Nirina was naturally not trying to brag when he said all of that. He merely reminded them not to impede him should a critical moment happen, yet Lourain felt like Nirina was trampling on his dignity.

Nirina gritted his teeth, holding back his anger as he said, "If you don't believe me, do whatever you like, you don't have to hide behind me. There's no reason to make a scene at all. In the end, the three of us will be challenging the array together."

Nirina said all this to tell Lourain that it was wasteful to not make use of their time. It was better to hurry and attempt the challenge.

Once they entered the Seven Deaths Array, everything would be clear. Nirina wanted to beat Lourain up at that moment, but he needed Lourain to attempt the challenge with him.

Lourain shouted, "What reason are you talking about? I just want everyone to see how unlucky I am to have been assigned trashy teammates. One of them knows to blindly accuse people of things without any actual skill, and the other one is only good at bragging. You talk like you're the strongest in the Whirling World!"

Marth said coldly, "You're at it again! Before you call anyone else trash, why don't you look at yourself in the mirror? You're just slightly stronger than me. If I'm trash, then what are you? Can you stop being disgusting?!"

Marth looked at Lourain with disdain. He shut his mouth after saying that. He felt like continuing to argue against Lourain was a waste of his time and effort.

Lourain only knew to insult others when he clearly lacked the skill himself.

The warriors from second-grade worlds were strangely united when it came to this.

The moment someone felt like warriors from third-grade worlds were a burden, all of them would jump up and speak.

“Us warriors from second-grade worlds are so unlucky. These guys who don’t know their place are obsessed with the idea of passing the Seven Deaths Array. Even if they’re lucky enough to find someone strong enough to bring them through, what can they do afterthat? They’ll just be cannon fodder!”

“The Seven Deaths Array is difficult as it is. Will the challenges inside be easy? They’d be much harder, and the danger levels would soar as well. Expendables will die immediately, that’s just their fate!”

“Alas, none of them realize how dispensable they are. They think that they’d have the chance to change their destiny, that they’d breeze through the moment they entered. What a joke. There’s no way expendables would get the chance to change their destiny, only those with the ability would be able to get the chance. It’s far from their turn to even attempt it!” a short and muscular man shouted.

His words earned many nods from the warriors of second-grade worlds. All of them were complaining loudly.

“I don’t know what these expendables are thinking. Can’t they study their reflections? Violet City isn’t easy to enter, and even if they do, they’ll probably be killed and have their Heartblood pulled out to open the Vibrant Hall.”

“Back then, all the warriors from third-grade worlds seemed so offended the moment we mentioned the Vibrant Hall, but we weren’t wrong. Heartblood should be harvested from the weak. All of you are only worthy of being material to enter the Vibrant Hall. You aren’t even worthy of stepping into Violet City yourself!”

“That’s right! It’s fine if they can’t tell their place, but these people pulled us down with them! There’s only one chance. When we’re assigned trash, we have to resign ourselves to our fate. We’d have a good chance of getting past the Violet Seven Deaths Array with stronger teammates, but when we’re burdened like this, we don’t even have a fifty-percent chance!”

All the complaints started to fill the area.

Marsha had heard a few of them, but this time, Lourain had been the one to start it all.

Those people who thought they had been dragged down were casting blame on third-grade-world warriors.

Nori was starting to feel irked. He looked at all those who jumped out to blame others with disdain, and their skills could only be described as average.

They were definitely not that strong, so the biggest reason was still themselves.

However, they did not think that way at all. They knew that, even if their skills were not up to par, they just needed to push the blame away.

Nori said loudly, “You only have yourselves to blame if you can’t pass. My friend here will pass with his own merit!”

“Stop trying to brag! Passing on his own? Who does he think he is? Does he think he’s Seymour Flint? Even Seymour wouldn’t brag like this despite his skills! I think your friend doesn’t have any skill at all. He’s just good at bragging. In this case, none of us can compare to him!” sneered the short, muscular man.

His words elicited boisterous laughter from the people around him.

Nori was so angry that he curled up his fist and viciously glared at all of them.

Marsha reached out to hold Nori’s arm and calmly gazed at everyone.

“I’ll remember all of you. Those of you who enter Violet City, remember what I’m saying. You won’t find opportunity there, only misfortune. It’ll be the start of all your misfortune!”

“Oh, I’m so scared! Everyone, listen to his threat. He seems so certain that he’ll be able to enter. We still don’t know if we’ll be able to get in, but you definitely won’t be able to!”

“You think too highly of yourself. You seem to think that Violet City is like your backyard. Do you think you can just enter as you please? Stop joking around. Even many second-grade-world warriors failed and were tossed out.”

“With the three of your skills combined, other than the one from a second-grade world, the two of you should be proud of yourselves if you manage to stand firmly on the ground when you’re tossed out!”

Lourain started to laugh as he pointed at Geena and said, “Do you hear that? This is what everyone thinks. Stop thinking so highly of yourself. With your skills, I don’t even know if you can protect yourself. Who do you think you are, saying you’ll lead us to victory?”

“You!” Valentina was so angry that he wanted to rush over if it were not for

Geena grabbing him.

These people were crossing the line!

Geena raised an eyebrow before he patted Valentina on the arm, calming Valentina. It was not like they could attack these people anyway, arguing with these people was meaningless.

He coldly looked at them before he turned toward Marth, who had been quiet the whole time. In truth, he could tell that Marth did not trust him either.

Marth felt like Geena was bragging as well. After all, from Marth’s perspective, it was hard to believe the other party.

However, Geena had been so straightforward purely because he did not want to waste any time. Once they were attempting the challenge, they would know everything. It was just a pity that Lourain did not know when to quit.

Geena said coldly, “There’s no meaning in staying here other than wasting our time listening to all this nonsense. I have no time to waste. I don’t care if he’s coming or not at this point. Do you want to try it with me right now?”

If he could enter with just Marth, Geena would never have bothered staying. He deliberately raised his voice for Lourain to hear.

Sure enough, Lourain jumped. “What do you mean?”

Geena took a deep breath. “Aren’t you very confident in yourself? Since you are, prove yourself with your skills. Why are you wasting so much time talking and trying to get everyone to berate me? Do you think it makes you look talented? I think you’re just nervous. You’re too scared to attempt the challenge right now in case you end up exposed!”

Geena’s subtle instigation was useful against Lourain. He was never a particularly intelligent warrior anyway.

“That’s a load of bull! Since when was I nervous? You two are the ones who should be nervous. If you want to go, let’s go now! We’ll see the truth. Let’s see if you can still brag after that!”

After Lourain said that, he started to march toward the Seven Deaths Array.

Geena took a deep breath, finally relaxing. If they continued to argue, it would waste even more time.

Marth remained silent this whole time as he looked at Geena with a meaningful expression.

It was not long until he, too, walked forward toward the Seven Death Array as well after glancing at Geena once more. The two of them were in front while Geena walked behind.

While everyone was distracted, he put Valentina into Mustard Seed.

Mustard Seed was the only thing that could cheat the laws of the Whirling World.

Mustard Seed’s special storage space could fit over a thousand people. There was still a lot of spare space. With Valentina in Mustard Seed, Geena could bring Valentina along without being restricted.

The entrance to the Seven Deaths Array was about three meters wide and three meters tall. It was in the middle of the whole place.

After getting assigned to their groups, the challengers could go in whenever they wanted to within the next day.

Many of them were not very confident. They had not vented out all their complaints yet, which was why they remained outside for a long time. However, they were still limited to a day no matter what.

After a day, any challenger who had not entered would be considered to have forfeited, and they would lose their chance.

The three of them arrived at the entrance and looked at the violet glow in front of them. Lourain stood there, his eyes staring right at the entrance. Even though he did his best to try and make himself look calm, Hezti could still see the pressure getting to Lourain.

It was obvious that Lourain was not that confident.

“If you’re worried, you can stay out of this.” Hezti’s tone was cold.

Lourain sharply looked over and looked at Hezti with gritted teeth. “Stop trying to provoke me! I’m going to say this again. Even if you’re so nervous you piss your pants, I’m still fine!”

After that was said, Lourain walked in.

Marth followed closely behind, and Hezti did so too.

The three of them entered the Seven Deaths Array, and space started to distort around them. A violet light encompassed the trio, and it looked radiant.

Nonetheless, they knew danger lurked within the violet light. If they were not careful, they would fail.

Lourain took a deep breath and said in a low voice, “One array every seven steps! Both of you be careful. Don’t be overconfident. Failure is terrible.”

Hezti and Marth ignored Lourain. The three of them walked forward at the same time.

They were on full alert, ready for the array to start at any moment. The three of them took six steps forward. When Hezti was about to take the seventh step, Lourain reached out and stopped him.

“Why are you moving so quickly?! Didn’t I just tell you? You’ll activate one array every seven steps you take! The moment you take your seventh step, you’ll enter a killing array. Aren’t you going to compose yourself? What’s the point of rushing like an idiot?”

Lourain called Hezti an idiot, feeling the hatred and anger coursing through him.

He felt like he was unlucky that not only was his teammate a braggart, but he was a reckless idiot as well. He knew that the seventh step would mean starting the array, but he strode forward like it meant nothing.

Lourain wanted nothing more than to snap Hezti out of his grandeur with a good few slaps.

Hezti’s lips twitched, feeling like Lourain was like a pesky bee.

It was bad enough Lourain riled on for so long outside, but he still wanted to keep at it inside the array. No matter how well-tempered Hezti was, he would not be able to hold back.

He pushed Lourain’s hand away. Under two of their shocked gazes, he took the seventh step.

Lourain was absolutely furious. “What are you doing, you sicko?! Are you crazy?! If you don’t want to pass, then you should have just said so. I wouldn’t have wasted any time on you!”

Lourain felt like he was about to explode from anger. That guy was just too unreliable.

When the guy had been so confident, Lourain thought he would have some skill. At the very least, Lourain thought he would not be an idiot.

Marth frowned and looked at Hezti coldly. Not only did Hezti’s recklessness ruin his own chances, but Hezti was dragging them down too.

Originally, Marth had a decent impression of Josua. When Hezti took that seventh step, however, he began viewing Hezti from Lourain’s point of view.

However, that conflict did not last for that long. When Rebbeca took that last step, the killing array was activated.

A golden glow suddenly appeared in the violet light. The golden glow turned into a warm wind and quickly circled them.

The three of them immediately took out their weapons. Compared to how anxious the two of them were, Rebbeca was calm with a glint of curiosity in his eyes. He wanted to see how powerful the Seven Deaths Array was.

Crack!

The sound of weapons clashing against each other could be heard in front of them. The golden glow intensified, swallowing the violet light around them.

After a few moments, two massive, brightly glowing golden swords appeared in front of them. Upon closer inspection, they could see runes floating around the swords.

Lourain gulped and said, “A metal-type killing array!”

There were a total of seven killing arrays of various attributes within the Seven Deaths Array. He could not believe the first one they saw would be a metal type. Even though there was a distance between them and the swords, they could still feel the murderous aura coming from them.

Lourain gritted his teeth and said, albeit with a feeble voice, “What a dense killing intent…”

He looked over slightly to look at Rebbeca with hatred. It was all Rebbeca’s fault. If they had prepared more, it might have gone better. Yet Rebbeca activated the array before he could even compose himself!

Once they got out, he would teach that brat a lesson for dragging him down!

At that moment, Lourain despised Rebbeca immensely. It was even more intense than his hatred for Marth.

Rebbeca calmly looked at the two swords in front of them, his expression unwavering. It was as if there were not two swords filled with killing intent in the air, but just two toys.

Rebbeca took a deep breath. He held his sword with his left hand and formed seals with his right.

Countless seals started to form into a broken blade. The soul attribute violently circulated the Broken Soul Blade.

He pushed forward, and the Broken Soul Blade turned into a light that seeped into his sword, causing his sword to buzz.

“No wonder so many people passed. I guess it’s not that difficult…” he remarked calmly as though this challenge meant nothing to him.

Marth and Lourain, of course, were stunned to have heard this. The two of them looked over with widened eyes as they looked at Rebbeca incredulously.

“Brat! How are you still bragging right now?” Lourain snarled. “You don’t think it’s hard? Let’s see if you can still keep bragging when we’re tossed out later!”

Lourain was mystified by Rebbeca’s behavior. He felt like he had never been so bewildered in his life.

Rebbeca sounded as if he was talking about drinking water.

He was just too arrogant!

The two massive swords were right in front of them, about to attack at any moment. Yet, Rebbeca had been able to speak so calmly. Lourain felt like it was a joke, so much so that he did not know what to say.

Right at that moment, they heard a noise as the two swords charged at them.

Crack, crack!

The swords suddenly cracked as countless shards flew toward them like a typhoon. Those shards were not just violently spinning, but they were constantly merging together as well.

After a brief moment, it formed into 12 golden swords, each one aimed toward them in a semicircle. If it had been two massive swords, they would have been able to avoid them if they were quick enough, but 12 swords sealed off their fate.

Other than retreating, there was nothing else they could do.

When the thought surfaced, a massive wave of murderous intent came from behind them.

The three of them looked over, and Lourain's eyes almost popped out of their sockets as he gulped.

The golden swords were not just in front of them but behind them as well. At that moment, 12 golden swords were charging at them from the front, while two massive golden swords were charging at them from the back, preventing any form of escape. There was no way to avoid the attack.

They only had one choice, which was to face it head-on.

At that moment, Lourain and Marth were both anxious. They finally understood why many failed. It was just the first array, and it was already so difficult.

Lourain mumbled, "We're done for."

The moment he said that, he heard a gust of wind next to him. He looked over and was shocked to notice that Diana was charging right at the 12 swords. The aura around Diana's sword was faint. There was no murderous intent in it at all.

Compared to those 12 swords, Diana was like a fragile egg running toward a wall!

Lourain cursed, "You're crazy! Do you think you can beat twelve swords alone?!"

Lourain estimated that the 12 swords were possibly a lower ultimate god rank technique in power, probably at the second stage. Not only that, but they were probably only a step away from the third stage! The three of them would probably fail fighting against it, even if they worked together!

All that, and Diana ran head-first toward these swords.

Who did he think he was?

He was just a vermin from a third-grade world!

Just as he was about to curse at Diana for being an idiot, Diana's gray sword clashed with the 12 golden swords.

They heard the two forces clash and the golden swords actually shattered by a single slash from Ludwig.

They tore like paper!

Marth and Lourain were in complete disbelief. They thought that Diana would be decimated by the 12 swords or would, at the very least, be rendered incapacitated, too injured to fight. The three of them would be determined to have failed and tossed out.

Not only did this not happen, but the golden swords shattered to pieces and quickly dispersed!

At that moment, Diana shouted at the two of them, "Hurry, get here! There are two behind you!"

Diana spotted the two massive swords coming toward Marth and Lourain when he turned back, yet these two dolts forgot about the impending danger and even gaped at him.

Diana was speechless.

These two were too idiotic that he had no words to describe this feeling. The two of them only reacted when they were shouted at.

They quickly summoned all their true energy swiftly as they rushed toward Ludwig.

Diana used the laws of space under his feet and disappeared. After dealing with the danger in front of them, he had to handle the danger behind them.

He would rather put his hopes on Maurina than on them.

Diana's sword was full of the soul attribute. Soul Sky was a storm god-rank technique.

In Diana's eyes, lower ultimate god-rank techniques were as fragile as paper.

Lourain mustered an energy shield to stop the power of the massive golden swords, but alas, it could not even protect him.

It was not long until he felt his back burning in intense pain due to the gash inflicted on his back. He could not help but cry out in agony as he rushed toward Mandra.

Marth was not in a much better fate.

Thankfully, he was faster than Lourain was and started running a moment before Lourain. When Lourain was attacked, Marth managed to flee as he was faster.

Anita had arrived at that moment. Marth could feel that the space in front of him was distorting. The next second, a familiar figure appeared in front of them. Lourain was stunned by the sight.

Not only was Anita incredibly strong, but he knew the laws of space as well.

Anita was a monster. Most warriors were normally good at one aspect; either their attack power or their speed.

Someone who was good at both and better than others at it too was a monster among prodigies, a warrior that stood above everyone!

Lourain muttered to himself, ‘Who is he?!’

No ordinary person could have such terrifying power and be able to use the laws of space too.

Lourain finally understood why Anita wore a mask. He thought that Anita was just wearing a mask because he offended the wrong people.

Thinking about it, his assumptions were hilarious.

Even if he had enemies, those enemies would probably not dare to take revenge on him. An opponent of this level was something incredibly terrifying. If they wanted revenge, they would have to be as powerful, if not even more.

Furthermore, someone so strong would have outstanding talent.

As long as he had enough time, he would be able to climb even higher. If he was not killed off, he would be able to fight back if he was given the time to expand his skills. Then, endless trouble would come in the future.

Even if Anita had enemies, they would not easily act against him without absolute confidence that they could kill him immediately.

That meant only one thing, Anita wore a mask so no one would recognize him. That man was an expert everyone knew. If that man stood in the crowd, he would attract a lot of attention.

Tossing those thoughts aside, Lourain felt like his heart was racing rapidly. Before they entered, he had been so rude to Mandra.

Right at that moment, Anita rushed past him incredibly quickly. With the wave of Anita’s sword, the two of them saw the massive swords they deemed unbeatable cut in half by him.

The golden swords shattered in the air, turning into pure energy and dispersing.

Anita took a deep breath as he controlled his true energy and slowly descended.

Lourain felt his back burning. There was no need to even look to know that there was a large wound behind him. However, no matter how painful it was, he did not dare to turn around to look. He did not even dare to make a single move.

If he could, he would hide in a corner. He wanted Anita to forget he existed.

Those who were strong were usually vengeful people.

He offended Anita so much before this. If Anita wanted revenge, it would be as easy as killing an ant.

Against someone so strong, Lourain could not fight back at all.

While Lourain was overtaken with fear, Marth was so excited he wanted to shout.

The masked man had not been bragging at all, he was that strong!

Marth was so excited that he did not know what to say.

After a long time, he said, “I guess I was ignorant. What you said before wasn’t just empty words. I can’t believe…”

As he said that, his voice shuddered a bit. The Seven Deaths Array had a very low rate of success. Warriors that were stronger than Marth had failed, and even if it was possible, their circumstances dragged them back.

Regardless, many warriors failed. Marth had been hoping to luck into stronger companions, but he ended up with Lourain. On top of that, Cindy was from a third-grade world as well.

Before they entered the Seven Deaths Array, Marth had not been that hopeful and felt like his companions were just oddities. Yet, the person he thought was bragging was, in fact, truthful.

Marth was lucky enough to have someone this powerful as his teammate.

With someone as strong as that by his side, they would surely pass.

Cindy raised an eyebrow before he nodded at Marth.

Marth took a deep breath and said, “I was thinking that I was unlucky, but I can’t believe I was just ignorant!”

Compared to Hestia where information was cut off, Marth came from a continent where information about the Whirling World was everywhere. Marth decided to enter the Whirling World with a goal in mind; he had to get into Violet City. Only by getting into Violet City would he not waste this trip.

He had never thought about entering a level-one city. After all, it was so difficult there. With his skills, he would just be dead meat if he entered.

Violet City, fortunately, was slightly easier. Once he entered, he could keep himself safe if there were no accidents.

He thought that his dream was shattered. With this new twist of events, Marth was excited.

Cindy raised a curious eyebrow at Marth’s behavior.

The man had been calm before this. Even when he argued with Lourain, he was not that emotional.

Right at that moment, Marth suddenly shouted, “Lourain! Didn’t you say that Cindy was bragging, running his mouth? Where did all that go now? You said that warriors from third-grade worlds were self-unaware pests. Are you going to keep saying that?”

Lourain, who had been hiding in the corner, felt his whole body tremble when he was called out by Marth. Lourain looked up stiffly, gritting his teeth.

If looks could kill, Marth would have died a hundred times over.

He felt like ripping Marth apart at that moment.

Cindy had not even been looking at Marth, but Marth brought up something old that pushed Lourain into the fire. “Marth, just you wait! I won’t let you off!”

“What can you do to me?” scoffed Marth. “Are you going to kill me here? With just your skills? I’m just a bit weaker than you. Who knows who’ll win in the end!”

Lourain’s eyes widened in rage. “You dog!”

“Just shut your mouths,” hissed Jamie, his tone mature.

His single command immediately ceased the argument.

Lourain looked at Anita apprehensively, worried that Anita would bring up what happened before. After all, he had been rude to him before they entered the array. He did not even dare to think about what he had said before.

He could say everything he did with conviction in front of regular warriors from third-grade worlds without any worry. However, the situation was different.

Anita was no ordinary warrior; he stood at the top of the food chain.

Not only at the peak of third-grade worlds, but the absolute one, including second-grade worlds. Anita was probably one of the five or three strongest warriors in the Whirling World.

Someone as horrifyingly strong as that was someone he would not even dare to say anything in front of, let alone offend. Not only had he run his mouth, but he was harsh with his words as well. Lourain had offended Jamie, and knowing this, he felt like dying.

Anita turned to look at Lourain. “Do you think everything will resolve on its own when you’re hiding?”

Lourain trembled in terror and looked down at his feet. At that moment, his whole body was tense. He shrunk backward, but he did not dare to move too much.

He was like a tortoise hiding in its shell, and the mere sight was amusing. Anita remembered how arrogant he was before they entered the Seven Deaths Array.

He complained that the warriors from third-grade worlds were dragging him down and mocking him and Marth.

He held no reservations about his word choice back then, but at this moment, not a shred of his arrogance remained.

Anita had been forced to provoke Lourain just for the sake of stopping Lourain from wasting time. Yet, that earlier aura of his was completely gone.

Lourain knew that things would go the opposite way of where he wanted them if he acted the fool. He could not even muster up the courage to fight back at that moment.

Thus, he muttered, “Sir, please show some mercy. Just think of me as a crazy person. I didn’t mean what I said earlier! If I had known you were so strong, I wouldn’t run my mouth so foolishly. You’re probably wearing the mask because you don’t want anyone to recognize you. You must be someone incredibly strong and well -known. If you hadn’t had the mask on, I would’ve never dared…”

Lourain was quite choked up as he said that, looking like he was about to cry at any moment.

Marth’s quirked lips twitched wordlessly.

He laughed and said, “You’re an amazing actor, Lourain! I have to admit that I underestimated you before this. Not only is your mouth quite smooth, but you can act quite well. I really admire you!”

Lourain suddenly looked up and glared at Marth like a mad dog. He looked like he was about to bite Marth’s throat at any moment.

Anita’s lips curled up at the sight. Nonetheless, he did not plan on wasting any more time.

He wasted so much energy to silence Lourain and have that fool follow him into the Seven Deaths Array, so he would not let Lourain cause him trouble inside. After all, he did not know if he would break any rules if he attacked Lourain.

He would need to wait until everything was done before he made a move.

He told Lourain before that he would remember everything Lourain said. He had not been joking.

Anita smirked calmly. “Enough… I don’t want to waste any more time. We’ll talk after we get out.”

After he said that, the three of them advanced.

The earlier battle had moved them around quite a lot, so he did not know how many steps they had taken. He would have to take things one step at a time.

As Diana walked, he counted his steps. When he took the seventh step, a mature, old-sounding voice rang.

“Challengers, will you raise the difficulty? The difficulties are spread into the black-iron, bronze, or gold ranks. You’re currently at the black-iron rank. If you increase it to the bronze rank, the strongest one will get a special treasure. If you increase it to the gold rank, the strongest warrior will get three treasures and a special badge.”

All three of them were stunned to hear that.

They could choose their difficulty?

They were at the black-iron difficulty at that moment, and there were two other difficulty levels they could choose from. They never heard about that before.

Marth frowned and said, “So there are three difficulties Inside the Seven Deaths Array. Why haven’t we heard about this before?”

Lourain coughed as he said fearfully, “How strong were those people? How strong is this man?”

Those that barely passed wouldn’t have been allowed to choose their difficulties. After all, they’d have spent so much effort just to pass at this difficulty.

Wouldn’t it just be a waste of time to let them choose?

“The other difficulties will only be revealed to those that are stronger. Naturally, the news wouldn’t have been spread out.”

Even though Lourain was a petty man, his analysis had been spot on. It was just like he said; those who could just barely pass would not have been allowed to pick their difficulty. After all, it would be pointless.

Those who were powerful enough would have passed, so news of them being able to choose their difficulty would not have been spread to the entrance. After all, that place was filled with those who failed or those who had not challenged it yet.

Lourain turned to look at Anderson, who seemed visibly calm. Lourain’s gaze roamed everywhere, looking like he was thinking about something. He was probably deciding if he wanted to take on the bronze difficulty orthe gold difficulty.

It was a sure thing that Diana would increase the difficulty. After all, the black-iron difficulty was easy-breezy to him.

Earlier, he had only taken two attacks to deal with the metal attribute array. To someone as strong as Anderson, that level of difficulty was incredibly simple.

In truth, Lourain was doing as much as he could to make himself invisible. Even though Diana had not caused him any trouble yet, he was no idiot.

Diana’s words meant something. Diana was planning on settling the score only after they got out.

Naturally, he would not dare to act arrogantly in front of Diana anymore. It was just that there were some things he had to say. After all, this concerned him as well.

Lourain mustered up the courage and said carefully, “Sir…”

In truth, Lourain did not know how he should talk to Boneng. He was so worried that he would disgust Boneng. He did not want to seem disrespectful either, so he tried to maintain an even tone.

When he saw that Diana did not react in a negative manner, Lourain gulped and continued.

“Please don’t mind my crude mouth, but I feel like I have to say something. Our little team has some special circumstances. If you make it too difficult, the two of us would just be complete burdens. We would be completely useless.”

That problem could not be ignored as Marth frowned and sighed. Even though he was not willing to be called trash, he really was basically trash in this situation. He would not be able to help at all, and would only drag Diana down.

If Diana ignored them, it was very possible they would end up failing. So, when he chose the difficulty, Diana would have to think about that.

Diana nodded, and he furrowed his eyebrows even more tightly. If he would need to face the challenge for all three of them alone, he would easily be able to deal with a black-iron-level challenge.

However, if it was too difficult, then it might not necessarily work out. He did not know how much more difficult the gold difficulty would be. That was the uncertain point. If anything unexpected happened, he might stand to lose everything.

Hence, Diana needed to choose carefully.

Just thinking about that, he sighed. If it was just for treasure, Diana might have chosen the bronze difficulty since it was the safest choice. After all, the two of them would only drag him down.

However, the gold difficulty would not just reward him with treasures, but a special badge. The voice had not specified what kind of badge it was.

He did not know what the badge could be used for in Violet City, but since it was a reward for the gold difficulty, it would definitely not be something simple. It might prove to be incredibly important in the future. It was because of that, Diana was deeply conflicted.

Marth said helplessly, “Bokir, it’s not that I’m trying to decide for you, but I feel like your best choice is bronze. After all, the two of us will be useless. You don’t know how hard the gold difficulty will be. If it’s too hard for you, then wouldn’t we lose everything?”

Diana took another deep breath as his expression soured.

He glanced at Marth and nodded, signaling that he heard what was said. However, he had still not made a decision yet. Even if Diana did not say anything at that moment, the two of them could feel that Diana was deeply conflicted.

After around fifteen minutes, Diana finally said, “I will choose the gold difficulty!”

The moment he said that, two of them were stunned.

Lourain could not resist saying, “No! We can’t even take the black-iron difficulty, let alone gold…”

Marth was starting to sweat anxiously. Even his voice turned hoarse, “Bokir, you’re being impulsive. The two of us will definitely drag you down. This difficulty might be nothing to you, but the two of us won’t be able to help you at all. You still had time to think about us for the black-iron difficulty. If it’s the gold difficulty, you’d probably end up with both of us being corpses…”

The metal killing array was still fresh on their minds. That array had been nothing to Bokir, but to them, it was something completely different.

If the two of them had not run fast enough, Lourain would not have survived with just a wound on his back. Even though Lourain still felt his back burning, he had already taken a recovery pill earlier.

The golden swords were not something the two of them could handle!

However, it was already too late.

Diana already made his choice. There was no way they could take it back anymore.

At that moment, a green breeze started to flow around them.

The green breeze surprised the three of them. The appearance of the breeze told them that the array had been activated. They were about to face the challenge.

Lourain could even feel his heart beating rapidly. His mouth trembled slightly and he gulped.

This would be the greatest challenge he ever faced. He could die if he was not careful. Even though the rules clearly stated that they would not get injured or die from the challenge, there were no guarantees.

Rose had raised the challenge to the highest level.

Lourain felt like not many people would have dared to pick that. He had only been able to survive the black-iron challenge because of its low difficulty.

The gold challenge would be different. He might not even have his body left behind if he was not careful.

Just thinking about that made Lourain feel incredibly miserable.

He met someone as strong as Rose and no matter how he tried, he would still be a burden to Barne. Someone like him should have just remained where it was safer. To him, Rose was a magnificent existence. Compared to Edgar, he was so weak that he was nothing.

The sound of leaves rustling could be heard all around them. All of them were on high alert as they looked around their surroundings.

No one knew what would happen the next moment. It was possible that many lethal techniques would suddenly appear.

Lourain felt like his hands were trembling.

Just as he was on alert and his thoughts were trembling, he suddenly felt something beneath his feet.

Lourain hurriedly looked down. At some point, the ground was suddenly filled with vines.

The green vines were the thickness of a wrist. It was moving around their feet, growing around them.

Lourain shouted out, “What is this?!”

The three of them looked down at the same time.

Marth said with a hoarse voice, “It’s a wood attribute killing array!”

This time, they had encountered a wood attribute killing array of the gold difficulty. Just thinking about the wood attribute instilled a sense of life in someone.

Compared to the metal attribute, the wood attribute was much warmer. However, the three of them would definitely not ignore the danger just because of that.

Rose frowned and said immediately, “Two of you! Get up in the air right now!”

They did not know how the vines would attack. However, they needed to distance themselves no matter what!

The two of them did not think that much as they immediately gathered their true energy to their feet. They soared into the air. Yet, at that moment, the vines suddenly launched forward and grabbed their feet at an imperceptible speed.

The vines were just the size of a wrist, but their strength was not to be underestimated. The moment the vines curled around them, they were immediately pulled down. They started to slash down with their blades.

The sound of a sword hitting wood could be heard. In just a few moments, they already started to wrap around their legs and waist. The two of them were sweating in fear.

After that, they lost all rationality as they hurriedly struggled against the vines.

The two of them crazily started to form seals with their true energy. They were using all the energy they had at that moment, trying to use their greatest attacks!

The two of them were using lower ultimate god rank techniques. Even if they were not very versed in it, they were not weak either!

Lourain clenched his teeth.

His hands were still free at that moment, so held his sword tightly and frantically slashed downward. However, the vines felt like they were made of metal. No matter how many times he slashed at them, they did not break at all.

He could not control the vines continuing to climb upward either.

As time passed, the vines had already completely wrapped the lower part of his body and had even started to climb up his arms.

At that moment, he did not even have the freedom to continue attacking. The vines were harder to deal with than he thought. He was completely restricted, making him lose all hope.

He had still been able to deal with a bit of the black-iron difficulty.

The moment it was raised to gold difficulty, he was not able to defend himself at all. After all his effort, he could still not harm the vines at all. That caused him to feel completely hopeless.

Lourain gulped, unable to even speak.

Marth was not in a much better state. Both of them used swords, and both of them had the same reactions at practically the same time. He had frantically slashed at the vines around his body as well and had used all his energy. Yet, the result was the same as Lourain's.

No matter how much strength he used, it was still completely hopeless. He could not even slow down the vines which resulted in them feeling hopeless.

Lourain took a deep breath, muttering, "Am I going to die here?"

His whole body was restricted leaving only his head free from the vines. His whole body was wound up tightly by the vines which caused him to not be able to move.

The sword in his hand was surrounded by vines as well.

The two of them looked like green scarecrows and were just waiting to be slaughtered. The vines made it so they could not fight back at all. They had to resign themselves to their fates.

Lourain absolutely hated Leonardo. He was only in that situation because of the other's choice.

Omas was a genius, while he was just an ant.

Omas had chosen such a high difficulty. He might be able to deal with it, but the two of them could not do anything.

Just as Lourain was feeling completely hopeless, they suddenly felt an immense power that shook them to their souls suddenly coming at them.

Lourain looked over and saw an incredibly strong slash of soul attribute energy slicing the vines on his body.

He suddenly felt his whole body being let go. After that, liquid sprayed onto his face.

Suddenly, he could not even open his eyes. He could clearly feel the vines frantically moving around him. Through the sticky green liquid, he could vaguely see the vines frantically retreating.

The vines that had been slashed at so much by him to no avail had been sliced in half from that slash.

The vines that were the thickness of a wrist were barely held together by a shred of skin at that moment. He could clearly see the green and oily liquid that filled the vines.

Earlier, his face had been splashed by that oily liquid and it's.

Lourain widened his eyes. At that moment, all he felt was a shock. He had spent all his strength trying to deal with those things earlier, but he had not even been able to crack the skin.

However, against Stefan, those vines were absolutely nothing. They had been easily cut up by a single slash, forcing them to rapidly retreat.

That was the distance between Omas and him!

He had wondered how wide the gulf between him and those who were truly strong was. This was the first time he had clearly felt the difference.

Lourain's breathing got erratic. At that moment, he was already completely free to move around. Other than the liquid on his face, he did not feel anything wrong with him.

However, his heart went through a tremendous change. He hated himself for being so weak.

Just as he was thinking about it, Omas sent another slash over. However, he was not the target this time, but Marth.

With another squelch, Lourain looked over to see the vines being cut through like butter. After regaining his freedom, Marth slumped on the ground.

Earlier, Marth had spent all of his strength trying to deal with those vines to no avail. After regaining his freedom, Marth was already completely spent. That was why he collapsed on the ground like that.

He panted roughly, feeling completely weak.

In truth, Lourain was just in a slightly better condition than Marth. Lourain could barely support his own body. At that moment, they heard a soft shout.

The two of them turned over to look. The countless vines were soaring up in the air. Those vines rapidly rose, aiming for Omas who was in the air.

At that moment, Omas looked like a descending god.

His hands held his gray sword, and a terrifying amount of energy was coming from his body. He slashed out, and the power of the Broken Soul Blade solidified, piercing through one of the vines that were charging at him.

The vine was cut through in the middle, splitting up the vine like a worm. It fell and slammed on the ground heavily.

Omas struck very quickly. He managed to slash out ten times in a few short moments.

Countless vines were sliced apart, and all of them fell from the air. Suddenly, it was like raining vines. Countless vines snapped and slammed down onto the ground violently.

The two of them could no longer quietly observe the battle. They were forced to hide in a corner to avoid the vines. The vines constantly twisted around when they fell on the ground, looking incredibly horrifying.

The two of them could still clearly remember how they had been unable to move when they were wrapped around by the vines.

At that moment, they just wanted to hide as much as possible. The vines were just too terrifying. There were not just vines on the ground, it was also filled with green liquid.

The liquid was increasing in volume as more and more vines were being cut off. The two of them felt incredibly disgusted.

Lourain was the one who was disgusted the most since he had been unlucky enough to have the liquid splash on his face earlier. He wiped off a large amount of the green liquid.

Lourain looked at it and felt his stomach churning. He felt like he was going to puke the next moment. However, Marth did not see that at all. His eyes were firmly fixed on Omas who was fighting in the air against the vine.

Marth took a deep breath and said, “It looks like we’re just trash. Are those vines actually sentient? They know how to deal with the most difficult ones first. After that, both of us won’t be able to run away. The vines are completely ignoring us. They’re all only attacking Hezti!”

When he said that, he paused for a moment.

He widened his eyes as if he just remembered something.

“I think I heard of Hezti’s name before. I just don’t really remember it. If he hid his looks, could he be using a fake name too? If he didn’t fake his name, I’d definitely heard of him before. However, I’ve never had a good memory. I really can’t remember where I heard that name before…”

At that moment, Marth was stressing himself out.

Hezti’s name was so important to him at that moment. He really wanted to know who Hezti was. He wanted to know who that incredibly strong warrior who appeared was!

Why was he so strong, and why had he not stepped into Violet City yet?

Various thoughts surfaced in Marth’s head.

Lourain coldly looked at Marth, “Don’t be so emotional. So what if you know who he is? Will you be able to keep relying on him? Would he allow you to do that?”

“Even if you want to lick his boots, you would need to see if he’s willing to or not. Someone as strong as him only sees us as little ants. We’re completely useless to him, and will only burden him. You want to get closer to him, but he won’t bother with you at all.”

Marth’s lips stiffened before he turned to look at Lourain coldly.

At that moment, Lourain was like a piece of crap in Marth’s eyes.

Lourain completely disgusted Marth. The two of them had never gotten along anyway. They were enemies who would never be able to resolve their hatred for each other. Since that was the case, Marth decided not to hold back.

He scoffed and said, “Why are you trying to be so snide? Even if he doesn’t want to let me go along with him and even if he looks down on me, so what? At least I haven’t offended him.”

“At the most, he’ll just ignore me because I’m a troublesome ant. You’re completely different. You were so rude to him before this. You kept on mocking him and calling him an idiot. You even got everyone else to mock him with you. You mocked all the warriors from third-grade worlds. Someone as strong as him will probably remember all the grudges he has. Do you think he’ll let you off easily?”

Those words completely shut Lourain off.

Lourain’s face soured completely. He had said what he did to provoke Marth.

At the very least, he wanted to annoy Marth. Yet, Marth had managed to completely shut him up after a few words.

Lourain’s hands constantly shook. His eyes were reddened as he gripped the sword in his hand tightly. He felt like piercing forward the next moment, slicing Marth’s head off. He was so emotional because everything Marth said was true.

He had really thoroughly offended Hezti before this. He had even caused all the warriors from second-grade worlds to laugh at Hezti with him.

He mocked Hezti for not knowing his place and mocked the other party for dreaming. Back then, he had felt very good about himself.

All the anger he had felt for Marth had surged forward, but he never would have expected that the person he was certain was just bragging had not been bragging at all. He had been the clown the whole time.

The more Lourain thought about it the angrier he got. This matter had been weighing heavily on his mind the whole time. However, he was being laughed at by Marth, which immediately set him off.

Lorain raised his sword and aimed it at Marth’s head, “Brat! I think you’re just getting too ahead of yourself. Don’t think I won’t do anything to you. Even if I’ve offended him, I can still kill you before I die!”

He hated Marth to the bone at that moment. He wanted to rip Marth to shreds.

“Have you said enough?” Nirina’s cold voice was heard behind him.

Abraham stiffened and he quickly turned around only to see the vines that had surged upward earlier had all already been completely out up.

They were all on the ground.

After the vines were cut up, they lost all ability to fight. They were writhing on the ground like snakes that had been cut up in the middle.

Nirina stood not far away from him.

Nirina’s right hand still held the gray sword. The gray sword was dripping with green liquid.

Abraham took a deep breath, suddenly finding himself unable to speak.

Was it all over?

They had managed to pass the stage?

The fines were like badges on the ground that showed off Nirina’s excellence. In the whole Whirling World, Nirina’s skills were absolutely in the top five or even further in front than that. Warriors with that level of skill all stood at the top of the mountain, looking down on regular warriors.

They would not bother with regular warriors or even those that were above average. They saw those people as mere tools or stepping stones, or sometimes even slaves.

Abraham felt like he was very far removed from those kinds of people before. Even if he wanted to be a dog serving under them, they would not want him anyway. After all, Abraham was not even skilled enough to be considered above average.

He was only between the realm of a regular warrior and an above-average one. He thought in the past that he would never even be able to speak to someone at that level in his life because those people saw the rest of them as mere ants.

Yet, he had not only been able to talk to a warrior like that, he had offended one too. He had even mocked such a warrior relentlessly.

Just thinking about it made Abraham feel like he was dreaming. He felt like he must have been crazy before this.

Abraham gulped before he shut his mouth wisely, not saying anything else.

Looking at how obedient Abraham was being, Rose almost laughed out loud. He looked at Abraham with a mocking expression. He still remembered how arrogant Abraham had been, acting like warriors from third-grade worlds were not worth anything at all.

Yet, at that moment, Abraham was completely different. However, since Nirina had warned them against arguing anymore, Rose would naturally not dare to go against Nirina’s wish.

He looked up at Nirina and said, “Paul, have we passed?”

Nirina turned to look at the vines that were all over the ground, “We should have passed. However, it’s only two out of seven. There are still five killing arrays waiting for me.”

After saying that, Nirina looked at the other two with a frown, “It looks like the killing array is only aiming for me. Those vines merely restricted you earlier and did not attack me. It was completely different for me.”

“The voice earlier had been very clear. All the rewards would just be given to the one who is the strongest. Since that’s the case, the two of you should be safe. Later on, just focus on protecting yourself and hiding no matter what.”

The two of them nodded. In truth, they felt it as well. Those vines did not seem to have any intention of attacking them. The vines merely restricted their movements.

Right at that moment, all the vines on the ground no longer twisted around.

The wounds suddenly glowed green.

There was more and more green light coming from the wound. Slowly, all the vines dissipated into the air. Even the green iquid on Bolot's face turned into a green light and disappeared.

Looking at that, Rebbeca could not help but lament the fact that the hero who created this array must have been one of the greatest figures from ancient times.

Those vines from earlier felt incredibly real. If he had not seen that, he would not have believed that the vines had merely been formed with energy.

All of them looked at the scene in shock.

Diana gulped and said, "If it was me facing the attacks from those vines, I probably wouldn't even last a second…"

Bolot could not help but scoff at those words. He really wanted to viciously mock Diana.

Diana could not even handle the black-iron difficulty, let alone the gold difficulty. It was just impossible.

Rebbeca did not dwell on the Issue at all as his time was very valuable. He did not want to delay anything.

He said to the other two, "Follow me…"

After that, he started to walk forward. The moment the killing array ended, taking seven steps forward would trigger another one. Rebbeca knew of that, so he was already prepared after he took his seventh step.

Suddenly, he heard some splashing. It sounded like a river flowing past the shore.

Rebbeca raised an eyebrow, "A water attribute killing array."

Even though every stage seemed hard, it stirred Rebbeca's thirst for a challenge.

The sound of water got louder and louder. Initially, it was like a small creek. After that, it started to sound like a raging river. It slowly got louder and louder until it felt like they were at a waterfall that was hundreds of meters tall.

Diana said hoarsely, "Why do I feel like we're about to drown?"

It just sounded so realistic. It was quite scary.

Bolot frowned. With the sound of the water crashing, vapor started to fill up their surroundings.

Rebbeca held his sword tightly, preparing to fight at any moment.

The water vapor started to obscure their sight. Suddenly, Rebbeca felt like he had returned to the fog battlefield because the vapor was so thick he could not see ahead.

It then went completely silent. They could even hear each other breathing at that moment.

Bolot was so scared his lips were constantly trembling. Everything that was happening was just too strange. He was consoling himself by telling himself that he was just a spectator. As long as he did not provoke anything, he would not be targeted by the array.

However, the constantly changing environment caused him to be incredibly tense. He could clearly hear Diana's gulp at that moment. It seemed like Diana was not having a good time either.

Of the three of them, Rebbeca was the calmest. He had not shown much emotion the whole time. He merely looked at everything with a cold expression, maintaining an incredibly alert state.

The water vapor slowly gathered. In front of the three of them, three incredibly smooth mirrors appeared.

The mirror reflected their looks, which surprised Yolanda and Mandra even more. They stood there and watched their reflections with stunned expressions, feeling like they looked incredibly strange in the mirror.

Mandra could not take it anymore, “What’s happening? Why is it one way one moment, and another way the next!”

If it was just a pure attack, it would cause them to be fearful, but it would not torture them mentally. After all, they were not the main characters. Diana was the main target of the array, and they just happened to be there.

However, the constant changes felt a bit unbearable. It was as if they had walked into an incredibly scary world where the two of them had lost all of their skills. It did not feel good at all. It was complete torture.

“Holy crap!” Yolanda suddenly cried out. Mandra looked over and saw that Yolanda’s expression was quite twisted.

His eyes were completely wide as if his eyeballs were going to pop out of their sockets.

Mandra’s expression stiffened, “What are you doing?! What are you shouting at?! Are you just trying to scare me?”

He was actually incredibly terrified at the moment, but he still stubbornly tried to act otherwise.

Yolanda took a deep breath. He felt like he was in an incredibly bad state.

At that moment, even Diana saw it as well. Yolanda’s lips were trembling, even his eyes were as he said, “Mandra, look at those mirrors. I think there’s something wrong with them.”

Mandra was starting to feel anxious, “What’s the problem?! Can you please be clearer? Stop making me panic!”

Yolanda ignored Mandra as he said to Mandra, “My reflection in the mirror suddenly smiled at me just now. It really did! I’m sure I’m not mistaken. There’s definitely something wrong with the mirror. Just look!”

As he said that, Yolanda’s voice trembled. After all, that scene he had just witnessed just now was just too terrifying. It was like a nightmare!

The moment he said that, Diana did not really react.

However, Mandra’s face paled completely, “Stop joking around, it’s not funny at all!”

The moment he said that, he suddenly noticed that his reflection in the mirror moved by itself. It narrowed its eyes at him as if it was observing Mandra in reality.

It was just too terrifying for Mandra!

It was not just Mandra’s reflection that was moving, even Diana’s was starting to at that point. Diana’s reflection cracked its neck as if it was getting ready. Under Diana’s cold gaze, the reflection suddenly walked out of the mirror.

The reflection in the mirror did not just look exactly like Mandra, it was dressed exactly the same way too. Even the gray sword in Diana’s hand had been completely replicated!

“W-what exactly is going on?!” Mandra felt like he was going to go crazy.

That reflection of him walked out of the mirror with a strange smile. It was looking at him with mockery as if the reflection was there to replace him.

He took a deep breath, feeling completely off at that moment.

Why was all of that happening?

What was he supposed to do next?

Was Rose not supposed to be the target?

He was just tagging along for the ride, so why was he suddenly being treated the same way as Rose?

He was suddenly facing a replica of himself too!

Rose did not dwell on his thoughts like the other two were. The moment his replica walked out of the mirror, he immediately attacked!

He constantly formed seals that flew in the air. They fuse, and the Broken Soul Blade appeared in front of him.

The moment Rose moved, the replica started to move the same way as well. It started to form the same seals as Richard, and it created the exact same Broken Soul Blade.

When Rose saw that, even Rose had to raise an eyebrow. The copy could use Soul Sky as well. It was too shocking.

However, he did not think too much about it at that moment. No matter how many tricks the replica had, the array would be broken through as long as he dealt with his opponent!

He pushed forward, and the Broken Soul Blade launched ahead. He wanted to see if his Broken Soul Blade was stronger than the clone's!

Rose and the clone were not that far apart in the first place, so the two blades immediately clashed together.

There was an incredibly loud sound as the Broken Soul Blades clashed, immediately exploding!

The energy shockwaves started to spread everywhere. Rose felt himself being pushed away by the shockwaves, but he reacted quickly. He quickly activated his true energy to stabilize himself so he would not fall like a wet dog.

Rose's feet planted firmly on the ground, but the impact was so great that he had to try to maintain his balance. At that moment, Rose could feel his heart beating rapidly.

It was all just too surprising. Rose could not believe that the clone's skill was actually on the same level as his. Not only did the clone look exactly the same, but the techniques were the same too.

What could he do?

Ever since he entered the Whirling World, Rose had met so many opponents. Even though those opponents varied in strength, all of them had fallen to Rose in the end. When it came to single combat, no one had ever been a match for him. Yet, he had just encountered one.

It was just that his opponent was a complete clone of himself.

While he was shocked, he marveled at how special the array seemed. His replica had been sent flying just like he had. What surprised Rose was that the replica had been able to stabilize itself mid-air as well, landing firmly on the ground.

He could feel that the impact had caused the replica to adjust its balance as well. When Rose saw everything, he did not know what to say.

Facing his clone really did feel like looking into a mirror. Even their movements were exactly the same.

Rose was suddenly a little caught off guard. The metal and wood attribute arrays had been equally challenging, but Rose had not stumbled at all, maintaining his calm the whole time.

That was because Rose could figure out how to get past the array for both the earlier challenges. However, the water attribute killing array left Rose lost. The clone could use his own techniques, and the power behind the techniques was equal to his.

He was strong, but the clone was just as strong as he was. If that was the case, then he was completely stuck. If he fought his opponent in an intense fight, then both sides would end up heavily injured. Nori was not even sure if his clone could actually get injured.

After all, that was a clone made out of the water attribute. It was not a real person. Ever since he entered the Whirling World, he had never been caught off guard before. He was in a complete bind, unsure of how he needed to progress.

Right at that moment, he suddenly heard a shout from afar.

Josef was shouting as he fought against his replica. No matter what technique he used, his replica would fight back in the same way. Those techniques would clash in the air with no result at all.

No one could do anything to the other.

Josef was clearly very unhappy with the situation.

He shouted out as he attacked, “What is happening?! This fake me knows my techniques! It’s using it in the exact same way as I am! Surely it won’t kill me and replace me?”

The more Josef thought about it, the more horrifying it sounded.

He felt like he could be right. If it was really as he said, then it would just be too scary. His true self would tragically die in the killing array while his fake self would replace him!

Nori’s lips twitched when he heard what Josef said.

The replica was completely made with the water attribute. The moment it stepped out of the killing array, it would disappear.

There was no way it would be able to replace Josef like what Josef thought. If that array really had the ability, then it would be astounding. However, no matter what, the situation was not progressing well.

Nori did not know what he needed to do at that moment. He did not know how to breakthrough this killing array.

Lydia’s face was dark as he fought his own clone as well. Even though he was not shouting around like Josef was, he was worried just the same. However, he was not worried about whether or not his clone would replace him. It was just that the situation would be bad for him if it continued.

Lydia took a deep breath and shouted at Albert, “Albert, our energy is limited. If we keep at this, we’ll lose our energy eventually. Then, even trying to pass this stage would be hard, let alone the next one. The gold difficulty really isn’t easy. Each stage is harder than the next!”

When Lydia said that, it served as a reminder to Moses.

Lydia was right. There was no way they could drag the situation on. His clone was not a real person, but a clone formed with energy.

His true energy would be spent eventually, but his opponent would never be exhausted. If they dragged things, then they would lose.

Then, they would be tossed out by the Seven Deaths Array. They would be done for. The treasures and the Vibrant Hall would have nothing to do with him. Ever since he found out about the Vibrant Hall, Nori had already made it a goal for himself that he would get inside.

After all, there were amazing treasures that could increase one’s potential inside! If he failed to even get into Violet City, then it would all be for naught.

Nori suddenly regretted his choice. It was his first time feeling that remorse.

After all, this problem he was facing did not seem like it was possible to overcome at all. Even if Yolanda was incredibly skilled, he could not stop himself from panicking.

Just as he was thinking about it, his clone suddenly shot forward. The clone was holding the gray sword in hand, and the soul attribute was frantically surging around the sword.

Yolanda could clearly feel the power of the Broken Soul Blade behind it. The clone must have used the Broken Soul Blade while Yolanda was distracted, merging the technique with the sword.

The slash that was coming at Yolanda contained incredible energy.

If Barne was the one standing there, he would probably not even be able to move after the energy locked into him. After all, Soul Sky was already at the storm god rank. Normal warriors were not able to handle it at all.

Yolanda suddenly felt like the situation was unique. He had only ever used the Broken Soul Blade on his enemies before. He had never felt how it was to be locked into the Broken Soul Blade.

At that moment, he clearly felt how powerful the technique was.

Yolanda took a deep breath, not wanting to clash with his clone head-on. After all, Diana had just told him that continuing to fight like that would waste a lot of true energy. The moment they were completely spent, they would just be sitting ducks. There would be no way to turn the tables.

He could not allow such a situation to happen. Yolanda activated the laws of space under his feet, disappearing from the spot immediately.

He wanted to distance himself from his clone. When he appeared again, he was a distance away from where he was. However, Yolanda never expected the clone to disappear as well. Yolanda saw that and was immediately on high alert! There was something wrong!

Could the clone also use the laws of space?

The moment Yolanda thought about that, he suddenly felt a breeze behind him. He did not even think about it as he immediately rushed forward. At the same time, he pierced his sword backward.

The two swords clashed together, and the dense soul attribute exploded outward, causing shockwave after shockwave. Yolanda used that force to distance himself from the clone behind him.

At that moment, Yolanda's eyes were wide in disbelief. He was thankful that he had reacted in time. Otherwise, that strike would have opened up his back.

That was not the most terrifying part. He knew very well the destructive capabilities of the Broken Soul Blade. If a wave of that energy seeped into his body, he would lose his mind from the pain. Then, no one would be able to save him, and he would definitely lose.

It could use the laws of space. It was using it with such familiarity as well.

The clone was no different from Yolanda!

Even though the clone had managed to use the Broken Soul Blade with the same amount of power, Yolanda had thought that the clone was just able to replicate himself and the attacks he had. He did not expect the clone to even have his mastery and control of the laws of space.

Suddenly, he lost some of the hope he had. The difficulty of the water-killing array had greatly exceeded Yolanda's imagination.

It was an opponent just like him. All of his techniques belonged to his opponent as well. If that was the case, he did not seem to have a chance at winning at all.

Yolanda was out of ideas at that moment. He could not figure out how he could handle the clone. It was like an impossible question was right in front of him.

Yolanda took a deep breath, 'Could the water killing array be here as an insurmountable wall that the challengers will never be able to get past?'

That was the only thing he could think about at that point. Otherwise, he could not explain it at all. If this continued, he would not be able to triumph. His true energy would be depleted eventually. Then, he would end up being slaughtered.

Benita clenched his teeth at the thought.

He could not believe that he would encounter the greatest problem he had ever encountered there. It was possible he really had been reckless.

He should not have chosen the gold difficulty. That difficulty was meant to push challengers away!

With a bang, Bjorne and his clone took a few steps back. He was panting roughly, and his eyes were red. That earlier strike had truly shaken him.

Blood was flowing down from his wounds. The clone had wounds as well, but it did not bleed. Only blue-colored orbs of light were coming out of its wounds.

“How dare you mock me!” Bjorne widened his eyes.

He could clearly see his replica let out a sneer at how much he was struggling.

He could see that his clone was mocking him, and it infuriated Bjorne greatly.

That clone was despicable enough to laugh at him! Bjorne felt like he was about to completely lose his temper. Ever since he met Stefan, not a single good thing had happened.

At that moment, Bjorne was starting to lose control of himself.

He shouted loudly at his clone, “What are you smiling at?! Are you laughing at me?”

Jasmine could not help but roll his eyes at Bjorne when he heard that. Bjorne really did always have a screw loose in his head. The opponent in front of him was not even a real person, but an energy construct.

What was the point of shouting at it?

Bjorne did not care about what everyone else was thinking. The sneer on the face of the clone was already completely infuriating him.

“I’m asking you what you’re smiling at?! Do you think I can’t beat you? Are you smiling because you know everything I do? Good! Very good! You know everything I do, right?! Let’s see if you can use the sixth stance!”

The sixth stance was only something Bjorne could barely use. If he was lucky enough, he would be able to use it. If he was not, he would fail. His true energy would even go astray because of it. If Bjorne practiced for two or three more months, he would probably be able to use the sixth stance easily. However, he was still not familiar enough with it at this point.

However, Bjorne was already completely crazy with anger. He felt like the smile on that clone’s face was just laughing at him for not being strong enough. Even the clone was mocking him. There was no way Bjorne could remain calm at that. He just felt wave after wave of anger in his heart.

He needed to use his strongest attack. He did not care if he could use it properly or not.

He only had one thought in mind at that moment, which was to use all his strength to prove himself to that fake!

If he had said that out loud, Nana would definitely have mocked him. Even Anne would probably laugh at him. After all, the thing in front of him was probably not capable of sentient thought at all. It was just a body of energy.

There was no reason to try and pick a bone with something like that. However, he was already too angry to care.

Bjorne clenched his teeth and shouted out, “Take this!”

He started to form seals that danced in the air. A purple moon suddenly appeared.

Under the purple light, Bjorne’s sword glowed vibrantly. It was as if the sword had been covered in a purple sash. Feeling it, one could sense the rich amount of power around his sword. In particular, where the purple light glowed was filled with energy.

At that moment, Bjorne was just furious. He looked like his whole family had been slaughtered in a single day.

He clenched his teeth and rushed at the clone, “How dare you laugh at me?! Just die!”

He held his sword and raised it high, aiming right at the clone. When he struck down, a purple slash headed right for the clone’s chest!

The clone suddenly frowned like a human, as if it had encountered a problem.

It raised its sword and slashed forward as well, but it was still using the fifth stance. Right after that, there was a massive explosion. The replica had not been able to stand up to the sixth stance and was sent flying.

The replica flew far away and slammed into the ground violently.

Anne had seen it clearly. There was a wound on the chest of the replica that was leaking out a faint blue light. The clone had actually been injured.

Instead, the true Bjorne was standing there looking at everything with wide eyes and a stunned expression. Even he never expected that he would succeed with this attack.

Before this, every attack had been a draw. His opponent would be injured, but so would he. Every time, they used the same technique.

The fifth stance had been used so many times to no effect.

This time, he had used the hard-to-control sixth stance, but he thought that his opponent would have used the same technique as usual. Yet, it was different from what he expected. He had used the sixth stance, but the clone used the fifth stance!

Bjorne widened his eyes and muttered, “What is this…”

Suddenly, he found himself confused.

Anne straightened his body and widened his eyes. Countless thoughts flashed in his head.

Suddenly, he felt like he had been enlightened. All the problems had been solved.

So that was it!

That was how he could break the water-killing array. He had overthought things. He thought it was impossible, but it was just him overthinking!

Anne took a deep breath. He turned around suddenly and looked at his clone!

At that moment, his clone was looking at him coldly, trying to find an opening.

If there was, the clone would definitely attack immediately. Anne took a deep breath and started to form seals that twisted in the air. A small ring slowly materialized in front of Moses. It was the Soul Burst Ring.

Countless red runes danced around the Soul Burst Ring like a spirit in the night.

The Soul Burst Ring started to spin rapidly. It spun so fast

Molie frowned, “It’s all down to this!”

He rushed forward, running right at his clone. He pushed his hands forward, and the Soul Burst Ring exploded toward Moses.

When the replica saw Molie’s Soul Burst Ring, its eyes widened slightly. It seemed surprised and confused. However, it did not hesitate for too long. It merely stopped for a moment before starting to form seals again.

The Broken Soul Blade appeared right in front of it again.

Molie’s lips curled up at the sight. It looked like he was right! It really was just that simple.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the Broken Soul Blade and the Soul Burst Ring clashed together violently. All that soul energy in the Broken Soul Blade was crashing into the Soul Burst Ring without any reservation.

When the Soul Burst Ring touched the Broken Soul Blade, it suddenly expanded and swallowed the Broken Soul Blade Whole.

After that, there was an intense explosion. Two energies of the same power were trying to fight each other at that moment. It caused cracks to form in the surrounding space, and in the end, the Soul Burst Ring won!

The Broken Soul Blade shattered to pieces, turning into soul attribute energy. At that moment, the Soul Burst Ring’s remaining power quickly spun, absorbing the pure soul attribute into its body and strengthening itself.

The Soul Burst Ring immediately continued forward, charging right at the clone. At that moment, the clone had already spent its energy and was still not able to form the Broken Soul Blade again so quickly.

With a crack, the Soul Burst Ring enveloped the clone’s sword. A sharp and intense sound could be heard as the clone gritted its teeth and tried frantically to stop the Soul Burst Ring.

Right at that moment, the real Molie appeared in front of the clone, and wasted no time in attacking. His sword pierced right into the clone’s forehead. At that moment, the clone had just been fully focused on the Soul Burst Ring.

He could not fight back against that strike at all. Molie’s sword pierced right into the clone’s head, and a faint blue light frantically flowed out of the clone. Whenever the clones were injured, the blue light would disperse from the injuries, but it was never that much.

This time, it was different. The moment Molie pierced the clone’s forehead, the blue light surged out of the wound. After that, the clone exploded with a boom, disappearing and dispersing.

It had finally ended. Molie took a long sigh. He had been right. It was thanks to Frank that he figured it out. Without Frank, he would have probably taken a lot more time to figure it out.

Things went much better after that. With Molie’s skills, dealing with Frank and Valentina’s clones was incredibly easy. The two cones were dispersed into blue light.

After everything ended, all three of them felt reinvigorated. Frank wiped the sweat from his forehead. He had thought that they would fail.

He thought that they would have been thrown out like trash just like those before them. Not a single one of them could accept that.

The three of them were silent for a long time before Paul said, “I was so scared. I thought we would lose. I even started to feel like this stage was just to confuse us, that there is no way to pass at all!”

Rebbeca had thought so as well at one point. The same weapons, the same techniques, and the same person. It was the most equal of opponents. In that situation, they did not know how to pass at all.

Fiona coughed and said, “I guess I was overthinking. We thought the fake clone used everything we knew, but that was not the case. We just needed to use our strongest technique…”

Paul nodded. When they were at their wit’s end, they had managed to find a new lease on life.

Rebbeca shook his head, disagreeing with Fiona, “It’s not like that. If all of us had used all our power during the wood attribute killing array, then this stage would be completely impossible to pass!”

When Rebbeca said that, the two of them looked at Rebbeca in confusion, clearly not understanding.

Rebbeca took a deep breath before he continued, “Paul, you practically used all your strength during the wood-killing array. I think you never used your strongest technique because you haven’t mastered it fully.”

Rebbeca had been looking when Paul used the sixth stance. He could clearly feel that the energy in the strike was not too stable. There seemed to be many imperfections. It was obvious that Paul was just barely able to use it.

Paul nodded, admitting to it. Rebbeca continued, “So, you could have failed to use it. Then, the sixth stance is not really your strongest attack. The clone did not know it not because it’s your strongest attack, but because you’ve never used it.

“No matter how amazing the Seven Deaths Array is, there’s no way it can just enter our minds and look through our memories. It would be too absurd if it could. I don’t think it can at all. It managed to replicate our techniques because we used them before. I doubt it can replicate anything we never used before. That’s the way to get past the water-killing array.”

The two of them finally understood it after Rebbeca’s explanation. So that was the case! In truth, only that would explain everything upon closer thought. Earlier, they had just been too shocked by the array to think about it

Rebbeca was right. No matter how amazing the Seven Deaths Array was, there was no way it could peer into their minds to extract their knowledge. Even if it could replicate their techniques, it could only replicate those they had used before.

Thinking about that, the two of them could not help but sigh. The challenges were getting harder and harder. Thankfully, Rebbeca had held back before this. Otherwise, they would not have been able to pass.

Paul pursed his lips and said, “This is just too hard. It’s just the third array. There are still four after this. I wonder how hard the later ones will be…”

Rebbeca did not answer that question. Rebbeca merely sat down and started to rest. He had spent quite a lot of his strength in that big battle. Things would only get harder, so he needed to make sure he was in the best state to deal with the later challenges.